Martial World

Cocooned Cow

Table of Contents

Prologue: Magic Cube

Chapter 1 – Lin Ming

Chapter 2 – Peculiar Stone

Chapter 3 – Soul With No Master

Chapter 4 – Legacy Skill

Chapter 5 – Wager

Chapter 6 – Fighting Barehanded

Chapter 7 – Innate Divine Strength?

Chapter 8 – Qin Xingxuan

Chapter 9 – Inscription Technique

Chapter 10 – Heavenly Ladies Gathered in the Holy Land

Chapter 11 – Elder Senior Sister

Chapter 12 – Qin Xingxuan's Invitation

Chapter 13 – Inscription, Go!

Chapter 14 – Increasing Strength

Chapter 15 – Overwhelming Symbol

Chapter 16 – Frustration

Chapter 17 – Lan Yunyue

Chapter 18 – Sold

Chapter 19 – Muyi's Doubts

Chapter 20 – Inscription Skill

Chapter 21 – 'Inscription Apprentice' Symbol?

Chapter 22 – Strength and Delicacy

Chapter 23 – Xiantian

Chapter 24 – Understanding

Chapter 25 – World Peace is My Duty

Chapter 26 – Breakthrough

Chapter 27 – Examination, Start!

Chapter 28 – Conspiracy

Chapter 29 – Overturn the Cavalry

Chapter 30 – Beating the General's Son

Chapter 31 – Regretting Capture

Chapter 32 – Oppress with Others' Power

Chapter 33 – Strength Trial

Chapter 34 – Dream Trial

Chapter 35 – The Lake's Jade Platform

[Chapter 36 – Lin Ming’s Heart of Martial Arts]

[Chapter 37 – Invulnerable to Ten Thousand Evils]

[Chapter 38 – The Exquisite Pagoda]

[Chapter 39 – Unstoppable Force]

[Chapter 40 – Break Through the Fourth Floor]

[Chapter 41 – Fifth Floor of the Exquisite Pagoda]

[Chapter 42 – The First Place Candidate]

[Chapter 43 – Refusal to Accept]

[Chapter 44 – Killing You is Just Right]

[Chapter 45 – Shatter the Nine Paths of Truth]

[Chapter 46 – Two Top Quality Pills]

[Chapter 47 – Lin Ming’s Soul Talent]

[Chapter 48 – Inscription Master Examination]

[Chapter 49 – Bright Buddha Plucks the Lotus]

[Chapter 50 – Obtaining the Materials]

[Chapter 51 – Ranking Stone]

[Chapter 52 – Juniors of the Lin Family]

[Chapter 53 – Provocation]

[Chapter 54 – Unfair Gambling Bets]

Chapter 55 – Fight

Chapter 56 – Large Success of the True Essence Formula’s First Layer

Chapter 57 – Ranking War

Chapter 58 – The Ten Thousand Killing Array

Chapter 59 – The Gap Between the New and the Old

Chapter 60 – The Tiger Enters a Flock of Sheep

Chapter 61 – Spear

Chapter 62 – The Final Grade

Chapter 63 – Divine Weapon Hall

Chapter 64 – Complex Craft

Chapter 65 – The Heavy Spear, Penetrating Rainbow

Chapter 66 – Martial House’s Resources

Chapter 67 – Unknown-Grade Martial Skill

Chapter 68 – Lin Ming’s Wonderful Selection

Chapter 69 – Strength Training ‘Flow like Silk’

Chapter 70 – Icy Pond Waterfall

Chapter 71 – Cultivation Method Complete

Chapter 72 – Large Success of the Spirit Cure Symbol

Chapter 73 – Viscera Training Time

Chapter 74 – Steady Spear At The Waterfall

Chapter 75 – Day of the Gambling Match

Chapter 76 – Ling Sen, Ta Ku

Chapter 77 – When I Need to Draw it, I Will Draw it

Chapter 78 – Empty Hand Meets The Naked Blade

Chapter 79 – Flood Dragon Goes to Sea

Chapter 80 – Rudimentary Martial Intent

Chapter 81 – Strength Training's 'Flow Like Silk'

Chapter 82 – Powers Far and Wide

Chapter 83 – Struggle of the Princes

Chapter 84 – Gathering of Masters

Chapter 85 – Murong Zi, Bai Jingyun

Chapter 86 – The Limit of Killing Speed

Chapter 87 – Sweeping Away All

Chapter 88 – The Final Spear

Chapter 89 – The Result That Defies Heaven's Will

Chapter 90 – Cloud Prince

Chapter 91 – Challenged at Spear Point

Chapter 92 – Declined

Chapter 93 – Obstacle

Chapter 94 – Martial Intent Reappears

Chapter 95 – The Effect of a Heart of Martial Arts

Chapter 96 – Instructor Hong Xi

Chapter 97 – Seven Kinds of Martial Intent

Chapter 98 – The Force of Vibration

Chapter 99 – Fast Spear

Chapter 100 – Viscera Training, Large Success

Chapter 101 – Arrival of the Decisive Battle

Chapter 102 – The Focus of All Eyes

Chapter 103 – Gather Momentum

Chapter 104 – Amazing Spear

Chapter 105 – Torrential River Rope!

Chapter 106 – Rise to Fame!

Chapter 107 – The Pass of Desire

Chapter 108 – Grand Banquet

Chapter 109 – The Acacia Faction

Chapter 110 – The Seven Profound Decree

Chapter 111 – Wang Gan’s Calculations

Chapter 112 – Crazy Zhu Yan

Chapter 113 – The Tenth Prince's Decision

Chapter 114 – Yang Lin's Gift

Chapter 115 – Zhang Guanyu

Chapter 116 – Maddening Materials

Chapter 117 – Guest Inscription Master

Chapter 118 – Repairing the 'Superhuman Strength Symbol'

Chapter 119 – Flowers in the Storm

Chapter 120 – Icefrost Guard

Chapter 121 – The Vanished Blood Symbol

Chapter 122 – The Magic Cube Reappears

Chapter 123 – Three Kinds of Martial Skills

Chapter 124 – Violent Wind Tunnel

Chapter 125 – Masochistic Cultivation

Chapter 126 – Zhang Guanyu Moves

Chapter 127 – Despicable Means

Chapter 128 – Liao Wenyuan

Chapter 129 – Medium-Grade Human-Step Sword

Chapter 130 – One Tael of Star Obsidian

Chapter 131 – Resurgence of Wind and Clouds

Chapter 132 – Let’s See Who Is More Cruel

Chapter 133 – Digging Your Own Grave

Chapter 134 – Small Success of Movement

Chapter 135 – Body Inscription

Chapter 136 – Altering Muscle Stage

Chapter 137 – The Might of ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’

Chapter 138 – Heavy Profound Soft Spear

Chapter 139 – Two Geniuses

Chapter 140 – Blazing Fighting Spirit

Chapter 141 – Extreme Speed

Chapter 142 – Heavy Profound Soft Spear!

Chapter 143 – True Essence Manifestation

Chapter 144 – Ouyang Dihua

Chapter 145 – Heretical God Seed

Chapter 146 – Sorrowful Bai Jingyun

Chapter 147 – I’ll Waste You Tonight

Chapter 148 – Better Today Than Tomorrow

Chapter 149 – Life Death Contract

Chapter 150 – Pinnacle Movement Ability

Chapter 151 – Measure for Measure

Chapter 152 – Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead

Chapter 153 – Oppressing Aura

Chapter 154 – Qin Ziya

Chapter 155 – Miniature Thunder Fire Killing Array

Chapter 156 – Devouring Lava Fire

Chapter 157 – Flame Essence

Chapter 158 – Thunder Valley

Chapter 159 – Thunder Soul

Chapter 160 – The Power of Thunder and Fire

Chapter 161 – Swallowing the Blood Lingzhi

Chapter 162 – Trap

Chapter 163 – The Moment of Life and Death!

Chapter 164 – Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation

Chapter 165 – Hollow Flame Essence

Chapter 166 – Witch Sisters

Chapter 167 – Sending Sheep Into the Tiger's Den

Chapter 168 – Playing the Role of the Fool

Chapter 169 – Fatebound Heartcrush Bug

Chapter 170 – Sorcerer Pagoda

Chapter 171 – Killing the Double Devils

Chapter 172 – Na Yi's Hatred

Chapter 173 – Low-Grade Heaven-Step

Chapter 174 – Sorcerer Pagoda's Secret

Chapter 175 – Hungry Ghosts

Chapter 176 – Witch Slave

Chapter 177 – Legend of the Divine Kingdom

Chapter 178 – True Essence Bone Forging!

Chapter 179 – Three Astonishing Treasures

Chapter 180 – Confronting Houtian

Chapter 181 – Gravity Cage

Chapter 182 – The Mysterious Seventh Floor

Chapter 183 – Samsara of 100 Lives

Chapter 184 – Reverse Scale Blood

Chapter 185 – Unexpected Fusion

Chapter 186 – Wolf Toxin

Chapter 187 – Eternal Flame

Chapter 188 – Na Shui's Thoughts

Chapter 189 – Fire Worm Military

Chapter 190 – Samsara Martial Intent

Chapter 191 – Drain Your Soul

Chapter 192 – Lost Vermillion Bird

Chapter 193 – Killing Chi Guda

Chapter 194 – Sacred Flame's Flame Essence

Chapter 195 – Prestige of the Saint Beast

Chapter 196 – Thundercrash Mountain

Chapter 197 – Thundergrass

Chapter 198 – Thunder Lizard

Chapter 199 – Second Kill

Chapter 200 – Thunder Attribute Treasures

Chapter 201 – Nest Cavern

Chapter 202 – Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo

Chapter 203 – Near the Summit

Chapter 204 – The Woman In Red

Chapter 205 – Struggle of the Dragon and Phoenix

Chapter 206 – Flood Dragon's Cave

Chapter 207 – Plundered Treasures

Chapter 208 – Returning With Riches

Chapter 209 – Injured Maiden

Chapter 210 – Healing Wounds

Chapter 211 – Peculiar Young Boy

Chapter 212 – Thunder Soul Evolution

Chapter 213 – Magnetic Birth Stone

Chapter 214 – Life's Most Unforgettable Experience

Chapter 215 – Absorbing the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder

Chapter 216 – Controlling the Thunder Soul

Chapter 217 – Power of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder

Chapter 218 – Return to Sky Fortune Kingdom

Chapter 219 – I'll Let You Struggle In Despair

Chapter 220 – Suppression of Absolute Power

Chapter 221 – Killing Ouyang Dihua

Chapter 222 – The Spreading News of Death

Chapter 223 – Perpetrated By A Xiantian Master?

Chapter 224 – Lin Ming's Return

Chapter 225 – Start of the Qualifiers

Chapter 226 – Lin Ming VS Jiang Bin

Chapter 227 – Ling Sen’s Strength

Chapter 228 – Fighting Ta Ku

Chapter 229 – Over 10,000 Jins of Strength

Chapter 230 – Martial Intent Showdown

Chapter 231 – Divine Punishment Blade

Chapter 232 – Awakening Thunder

Chapter 233 – Earth-step Treasure

Chapter 234 – Profound Sky City

Chapter 235 – Conflict

Chapter 236 – Youthful Instincts

Chapter 237 – Soul Force Genius

Chapter 238 – Jiang Lanjian

Chapter 239 – Let Me Use The Seraphic Pond

Chapter 240 – Mountain Gate Trial

Chapter 241 – A Gathering of Heroes

Chapter 242 – The Martial Meeting Begins

Chapter 243 – Fairy Maiden Qinghong

Chapter 244 – Standing Out as an Amazing Talent

Chapter 245 – A Second to Defeat Wang Mu

Chapter 246 – Hope

Chapter 247 – Out of the Group Stages and Into the Top 100!

Chapter 248 – The Second Round Begins

Chapter 249 – Jingchan Duo

Chapter 250 – Lin Ming VS Bi Tinghua

Chapter 251 – One Willing to Fight, One Willing to Endure

Chapter 252 – Blood Sacrifice Soul Alacrity Law

Chapter 253 – Absolute Defense

Chapter 254 – Digging for Talent?

Chapter 255 – Entering the First Tier

Chapter 256 – The Final Competition Begins

Chapter 257 – Shield of Thunder

Chapter 258 – Strike of Thunder

Chapter 259 – Puppet Faction

Chapter 260 – Allow Me Three Moves?

Chapter 261 – What They Call Disparity

Chapter 262 – Three Moves To Defeat The Opponent

Chapter 263 – Genius of the Spear Path

Chapter 264 – Zhang Yanzhao's Blood Wave Saber

Chapter 265 – Saber like Tiger, Spear like Dragon

Chapter 266 – Blood King's Triple Murder

Chapter 267 – Azure True Essence

Chapter 268 – Abyssal Flames

Chapter 269 – Lin Ming VS Jiang Lanjian

Chapter 270 – Concept Showdown

Chapter 271 – Stealing From a Master

Chapter 272 – The Hero of Our Era

Chapter 273 – Sonic Attack

Chapter 274 – Insight

Chapter 275 – Pulse Condensation Breakthrough

Chapter 276 – Tempering Marrow Realm

Chapter 277 – Against the Fire Dragon

Chapter 278 – The Outcome is Clear

Chapter 279 – The Last Day

Chapter 280 – Soaring Strength

Chapter 281 – Entering the Top Three

Chapter 282 – Lin Ming VS Mugu Buyu

Chapter 283 – Puppet Battle Body

Chapter 284 – Evil Fire God VS Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder

Chapter 285 – Unstoppable

Chapter 286 – Closing the Curtains on the Final Act

Chapter 287 – Blue and Black Twin Swords

Chapter 288 – The Peak of All Battles

Chapter 289 – The Limit of Speed

Chapter 290 – The Second Sword

Chapter 291 – The Final Strike

Chapter 292 – Reward

Chapter 293 – I'll Use My Materials

Chapter 294 – Three Ranks of Human, Earth, Heaven

Chapter 295 – Heaven-step Talent

Chapter 296 – I Do Not Accept

Chapter 297 – Between Cloud and Mud

Chapter 298 – Convincing Strength

Chapter 299 – Heaven Opening Pill In Hand

Chapter 300 – Spear Refining Grandmaster

Chapter 301 – Triumphant Return to the Nation

Chapter 302 – Serpent

Chapter 303 – Come Back In 10 Years

Chapter 304 – There Is Always Someone Higher

Chapter 305 – Path of Refining as the Path of Martial Arts

Chapter 306 – Swallowing the Heaven Opening Pill

Chapter 307 – Medicine Strength Washing Marrow

Chapter 308 – Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle

Chapter 309 – Child of Flame

Chapter 310 – Divine Spear Complete

Chapter 311 – Return to the Southern Wilderness

Chapter 312 – Fire Worm Church Leader

Chapter 313 – Exterminating Chi Yue

Chapter 314 – Night of Flowing Blood

Chapter 314.2 – Absorbing the Earthcore Crimson Flame

Chapter 315 – Sect Destruction

Chapter 316 – Beast Tide

Chapter 317 – Returning Home

Chapter 318 – The Beast Tide Comes

Chapter 319 – Brutal Melee

Chapter 320 – Sweeping Away All

Chapter 321 – Hidden Murderous Intent

Chapter 322 – Beheading the Python

Chapter 323 – Uninvited Guest

Chapter 324 – The Girl in White

Chapter 325 – Beast Tide's Night Attack

Chapter 326 – Assassin

Chapter 327 – You Cannot Stop Me

Chapter 328 – No Path to Heaven, No Door to Earth

Chapter 329 – The Feeling of Being Ignored

Chapter 330 – Fight

Chapter 331 – Sludge Monster

Chapter 332 – Brilliance of Thunderfire

Chapter 333 – Lan Yi's Request

Chapter 334 – Moon Seizing Sect's Hidden Treasures

Chapter 335 – Concealment Technique

Chapter 336 – Sharing Secrets

Chapter 337 – Take Action

Chapter 338 – Speed of Life and Death

Chapter 339 – Barren Mountain Dead End

Chapter 340 – Shattered Crystal Blood Diffusion

Chapter 341 – With Effort, Everything Is Possible

Chapter 342 – Marrow like Golden Soup

Chapter 343 – Broken Bones

Chapter 344 – Thunder Breaking Demon Arts

Chapter 345 – Reborn

Chapter 346 – Location of the Hidden Treasure

Chapter 347 – A Storm Is Coming

Chapter 348 – A Young Girl's Desires

Chapter 349 – To Inherit

Chapter 350 – Dark Moon Island

Chapter 351 – Entering the Treasure Storeroom

Chapter 352 – Seclusion

Chapter 353 – Divine Phoenix Island

Chapter 354 – Parasol Tree Pavilion

Chapter 355 – Entering the Sect

Chapter 356 – The Birthday Banquet Begins

Chapter 357 – To See Blood

Chapter 358 – Skill Competition

Chapter 359 – Fury

Chapter 360 – Don’t Worry

Chapter 361 – Surrounded by Six Sects

Chapter 362 – Close Contact Combat

Chapter 363 – Special Body

Chapter 364 – Trap

Chapter 365 – I’ll Take All Comers

Chapter 366 – The Same Trick

Chapter 367 – Saint Rank Talent

Chapter 368 – Disdaining All Heroes

Chapter 369 – Battle Marathon

Chapter 370 – Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky

Chapter 371 – What Can You Do To Me?

Chapter 372 – Spear Dancing In the Clouds

Chapter 373 – Legend of the Saintess

Chapter 374 – Metal Essence

Chapter 375 – Spear Potential

Chapter 376 – Pale Youth

Chapter 377 – Demon Region's Saint Son

Chapter 378 – Purple Air Dawns from the East, A Pair Of Dragons Will Struggle

Chapter 379 – Spit In Your Face

Chapter 380 – Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder

Chapter 381 – Netherworld Emperor's Descendant

Chapter 382 – Thunder Soul Clash

Chapter 383 – Great Desolate Blood Halberd

Chapter 384 – Tempering Marrow VS Devil Arts

Chapter 385 – Battle of Kings

Chapter 386 – Action First, Consequences Later

Chapter 387 – Confrontation

Chapter 388 – Alliance

Chapter 389 – Celebration Party

Chapter 390 – Absorbing the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder

Chapter 391 – New Thunder Soul

Chapter 392 – Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm

Chapter 393 – Drops of Blood, Entering the Mystic Realm

Chapter 394 – Concept of Fire

Chapter 395 – Fallen Star Flame

Chapter 396 – Subdue

Chapter 397 – Ancient Phoenix Main Hall

Chapter 398 – Bloodline Test

Chapter 399 – Realm of the Gods’ Language

Chapter 400 – Final General Level Smelting Trial

Chapter 401 – Seven Days

Chapter 402 – News of Death

Chapter 403 – Endless Trial

Chapter 404 – Strange River

Chapter 405 – War Begins

Chapter 406 – Transfer Order

Chapter 407 – Rescue Letter

Chapter 408 – Exit

Chapter 409 – To the South Sea Battlefield

Chapter 410 – Destination: Blood Demon Island

Chapter 411 – Demon God

Chapter 412 – The Sound of Broken Jade

Chapter 413 – An Eternal Instant

Chapter 414 – Do Not Move, You Will Be Safe

Chapter 416 – The Feeling of Not Losing Her, How Blissful

Chapter 417 – Towards the Seven Profound Valleys

Chapter 418 – Seven Profound Valleys Banquet

Chapter 419 – Take Your Life

Chapter 420 – Those Who Block My Path Will Die

Chapter 421 – Sweeping All Away

Chapter 422 – Acacia Sovereign Ouyang

Chapter 423 – Purple Flame Crystal Conversion

Chapter 424 – Horrifyingly Fierce

Chapter 425 – Stones Dyed With Blood

Chapter 426 – Auspicious Sign of the Heavens

Chapter 427 – Changing Heavens

Chapter 428 – Opening the Magic Cube Again

Chapter 429 – Demon Emperor

Chapter 430 – Returning to Divine Phoenix Island

Chapter 431 – No Choice Left

Chapter 432 – I'll Compensate

Chapter 433 – Blood Red Jade Slip

Chapter 434 – Sitting and Gathering Treasures

Chapter 435 – Marriage Matters

Chapter 436 – Slaughtering Path of the Battlefield

Chapter 437 – Life Destruction

Chapter 438 – South Sea Wartime Alliance

Chapter 439 – First Class Soldier

Chapter 440 – The Killing Hunt Begins

Chapter 441 – Blood Drinking Seal

Chapter 442 – Fire Ax

Chapter 443 – Spiritual Forest

Chapter 444 – Zombie Guard

Chapter 445 – Behead

Chapter 446 – Demon Emperor's Letter

Chapter 447 – Might of the Halberd Arts

Chapter 448 – Blood Springs

Chapter 449 – Ancient Battlefield

Chapter 450 – The Ancient Array Opens

Chapter 451 – The World is About To Collapse

Chapter 452 – Hidden Death Traps

Chapter 453 – Ten Breaths of Time

Chapter 454 – The Title of Blood Demon

Chapter 455 – I Was Impulsive

Chapter 456 – Nirvana Dragon Root

Chapter 457 – Ancient Transmission Array

Chapter 458 – A Storm Is Stirring

Chapter 459 – Gathering of Lords

Chapter 460 – Breaking through the Void

Chapter 461 – Main World

Chapter 462 – Different Laws

Chapter 463 – Sorry, Please Make Way

Chapter 464 – Demon God Imperial Palace

Chapter 465 – Bloody Wilderness

Chapter 466 – Complete Suppression

Chapter 467 – Killing Strike

Chapter 468 – Nameless Manual

Chapter 469 – Arrogance

Chapter 470 – Fight

Chapter 471 – Renowned Name

Chapter 472 – Tragic

Chapter 473 – Slaughter

Chapter 474 – Continuously Killing Three People

Chapter 475 – The Traitorous Trio

Chapter 476 – Opening The Array

Chapter 477 – Lei Jingtian Approaches

Chapter 478 – Escape Symbol

Chapter 479 – Wait For Me There

Chapter 480 – I Will Walk My Life With You

Chapter 481 – The Desperation of Mu Qingyi

Chapter 482 – Crazy Plan

Chapter 483 – White Light

Chapter 484 – Into the Imperial Palace

Chapter 485 – Exposed

Chapter 486 – Trap Puppets

Chapter 487 – Toxic Gray Frog

Chapter 488 – Opening the Demon Emperor's Medicine Garden

Chapter 489 – Two Spiritual Roots

Chapter 490 – Xuan Wuji Destroys the Array

Chapter 491 – A Vow to Break the Array

Chapter 492 – Cosmic Melting Furnace

Chapter 493 – Terrifying Red Light

Chapter 494 – Opening the Ancient Array

Chapter 495 – A 10 Mile Distance

Chapter 496 – Under the Heavens, Who Can Stop Me?

Chapter 497 – The Second Nirvana Dragon Root

Chapter 498 – Entering the Cave Once More

Chapter 499 – Old Dog

Chapter 500 – Receiving the Furnace

Chapter 501 – The Great Escape

Chapter 502 – Absorbing the Nirvana Dragon Root

Chapter 503 – Refining the Dragon Root

Chapter 504 – Tempering Marrow Large Success

Chapter 505 – In the Rain

Chapter 506 – Your Thunder Soul Isn't Too Bad

Chapter 507 – Irresistible Power

Chapter 508 – End of the Road

Chapter 509 – Disenchanting Dream Light

Chapter 510 – Ten Year Period

Chapter 511 – Departing

Chapter 512 – Laws of Space and Time

Chapter 513 – Giant Demon World

Chapter 514 – Slap Yourself 50 Times

Chapter 515 – Get an Inch, Want a Mile

Chapter 516 – Qing He

Chapter 517 – The Third Thunder Soul

Chapter 518 – Rebel

Chapter 519 – Blooming Blood

Chapter 520 – Step Onto the Killing Path

Chapter 521 – The Six Elders

Chapter 522 – Polaris, Blood Slaughter Steppes

Chapter 523 – 12 Winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo

Chapter 524 – Muk Gu

Chapter 525 – Murder in the Streets

Chapter 526 – Soaring Red Light

Chapter 527 – Robbers

Chapter 528 – Polaris City

Chapter 529 – Polar Skysplit Tower

Chapter 530 – First Victory

Chapter 531 – Battle

Chapter 532 – Unchallenged

Chapter 533 – Seven Star Heavenly Demon

Chapter 534 – Remembrance

Chapter 535 – Threaten

Chapter 536 – Skysplit Tower’s Second Floor

Chapter 537 – Shattered Soul Domain

Chapter 538 – Strength of a Four-winged Heavenly Demon

Chapter 539 – Three Straight Wins

Chapter 540 – Top Grade Practice Area

Chapter 541 – Enlightenment Once More

Chapter 542 – Another Step Further

Chapter 543 – Fey King Battle Body

Chapter 544 – Measure for Measure

Chapter 545 – Bloody Battle

Chapter 546 – Great Harvest

Chapter 547 – Enhanced Concepts

Chapter 548 – Eighth Stage Life Destruction

Chapter 549 – Muk Gu's Suggestion

Chapter 550 – Xing Tian

Chapter 551 – Decided Battle

Chapter 552 – Middle Xiantian Realm

Chapter 553 – Fighting Xue Man

Chapter 554 – Supernatural Strength

Chapter 555 – The Power of Conception

Chapter 556 – Xing Tian Declares War

Chapter 557 – Ancient Tome

Chapter 558 – The Match Begins

Chapter 559 – Concept of Annihilation

Chapter 560 – Blood Demon Descends

Chapter 561 – King Emblem

Chapter 562 – Road of Emperor

Chapter 563 – The Eight Inner Hidden Gates

Chapter 564 – Nameless Divine Pill

Chapter 565 – Gate of Healing

Chapter 566 – Into the Third Floor

Chapter 567 – Concept of Thunder

[Chapter 568 – Self-created Style]

Chapter 569 – The First Match

Chapter 570 – The Wonderful Effect of Concepts

Chapter 571 – Demonic Gold Insects

Chapter 572 – Extreme Attack Speed

Chapter 573 – The Road of a Martial Arts Master

Chapter 574 – Late Xiantian Realm

Chapter 575 – Termination Emblem

Chapter 576 – Crush

Chapter 577 – 87 Slaughter Points

Chapter 578 – The Origin of the Black Glass Bead

Chapter 579 – The King's Cage

Chapter 580 – Qualification Trial

Chapter 581 – Purple Comet, Penetrating Rainbow

Chapter 582 – Titled Asura

Chapter 583 – Give You One Day to Leave

Chapter 584 – Opening the Cage

Chapter 585 – Heavenly Demon Force Field

Chapter 586 – Chaos Prison

Chapter 587 – Perhaps, Him Alone In 10,000 Years

Chapter 588 – King's Cage, 100 Days

Chapter 589 – Crisis

Chapter 590 – Betting It All

Chapter 591 – Break Through the Eight Inner Hidden Gates

Chapter 592 – Breaking Through the Last Cage

Chapter 593 - Asura of the Heavenly Demon Martial Intent

Chapter 594 – Return With A Blood Sacrifice To This Spear

Chapter 595 – Sacrifice To My Saber

Chapter 596 – To Use Fingers As a Spear

Chapter 597 – No Backing Down

Chapter 598 – Three Continuous Matches

Chapter 599 – Fighting Kai Yang

Chapter 600 – Instant Death

Chapter 601 – Saber Light Domain

Chapter 602 – Another Killing

Chapter 603 – Battle Spirit

Chapter 604 – Why Don't You Come Down and Play With Me?

Chapter 605 – Force Field in Full Bloom

Chapter 606 – Contract Beast – Isolation Dragon

Chapter 607 – A Beautiful Spear

Chapter 608 – Becoming A High Lord

Chapter 609 – High Lord Heian's Inheritance

Chapter 610 – You Either Leave Or Fight

Chapter 611 – Skysplit Tower's Tower Master

Chapter 612 – The Only Way Out Of This Desperate Situation

Chapter 613 – Demonshine, Go!

Chapter 614 – The Eternal Demon Abyss Erupts

Chapter 615 – Entering the Road of Emperor

Chapter 616 – Battle of Wills

Chapter 617 – One Light One World

Chapter 618 – A Shining Will

Chapter 619 – Lin Ming's Choice

Chapter 620 – Prime Emperor Force Field

Chapter 621 – Blooming In Splendor Through Competition

Chapter 622 – Forming a Battle Spirit

Chapter 623 – Exit

Chapter 624 – Entering the Eternal Demon Abyss

Chapter 625 – A Gathering of Elites

Chapter 626 – The Door In Space

Chapter 627 – Evil Being

Chapter 628 – Bloody Lands

Chapter 629 – Transformed Demon Bone

Chapter 630 – Capturing the Demon Bone

Chapter 631 – Departing Alone

Chapter 632 – Swallowing the Blood Demon Bone

Chapter 633 – Impacting the Bottleneck

Chapter 634 – Forming the Revolving Core

Chapter 635 – The Revolving Core Changes

Chapter 636 – Battle Spirit Protection

Chapter 637 – Power of the Revolving Core Realm

Chapter 638 – Three Thousand Boundless Worlds

Chapter 639 – Living Sacrifice

Chapter 640 – 10,000 Year Corpse Grass

Chapter 641 – The Eternal Demon Abyss Erupts Again

Chapter 642 – Straying Into the Forbidden Zone

Chapter 643 – Are We Out?

Chapter 644 – Quietly Approaching the Great Maw

Chapter 645 – Closed Energy Field

Chapter 646 – The Yellow Springs River

Chapter 647 – Ancient Beast

Chapter 648 – Corpse Devil

Chapter 649 – Two Spears Till Death

Chapter 650 – Great Lucky Chance

Chapter 651 – Heaven-step Demon God Bone

Chapter 652 – Goddess

Chapter 653 – Murder

Chapter 654 – Peak of Ten Wings

Chapter 655 – Black Hole Revolving Core

Chapter 656 – Opening the Goddess' Sarcophagus Once More

Chapter 657 – Leaving the Forbidden Zone

Chapter 658 – Killing the Monsters

Chapter 659 – The Return of the Polaris Tower Master

Chapter 660 – Invincible Aura

Chapter 661 – Glory of the Battle Spirit

Chapter 662 – Sentence You To Death

Chapter 663 – Heaven-step White Spear

Chapter 664 – The Tide Turns

Chapter 665 – Achieving 12 Wings

Chapter 666 – Spear Through the Black Robed Man

Chapter 667 – Planting the Slave Seal

Chapter 668 – Returning to the South Horizon Region

Chapter 669A – News of Divine Phoenix Island

Chapter 669B – The State of Divine Phoenix Island

Chapter 670 – Young Girl Incense Burner

Chapter 671 – You Are Lin Ming?

Chapter 672 – Soul Search

Chapter 673 – Mu Qianyu's Message

Chapter 674 – The Fifth Opening of the Magic Cube

Chapter 675 – Xuan Yuqie Makes Her Move

Chapter 676 – Revolving Core Mu Bingyun

Chapter 677 – Fighting the Giant Leviathan

Chapter 678 – Lin Ming's Counterattack

Chapter 679 – Severely Wounding Xuan Yuqie

Chapter 680 – Subdue

Chapter 681 – Mu Qianyu's Worries

Chapter 682 – Counterattacking the South Sea Demon Region

Chapter 683 – 10,000 Mile Raid

Chapter 684 – What Is There To Discuss?

Chapter 685 – Today My Only Goal Is To Kill

Chapter 686 – Pillage

Chapter 687 – Paying Respects to the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince

Chapter 688 – Towards the Yin Yang Profound Palace

Chapter 689 – Meeting Once Again

Chapter 690 – Kiss

Chapter 691 – A Night Of Tender Warmth

Chapter 692 – Negotiations

Chapter 693 – Conflict

Chapter 694 – Absolute Disparity

Chapter 695 – All Daggers Drawn

Chapter 696 – Broken Blade

Chapter 697 – Hall of Flowing Blood

Chapter 698 – Threaten

Chapter 699 – Traveling Far and Wide, Only To Find It So Easily

Chapter 700 – Divine Kingdom Crown Prince

Chapter 701 – Come, Let's Go And Pick Them Up

Chapter 702 – Xing Ji Arrives

Chapter 703 – Xing Ji, Who Nearly Vomited Blood

Chapter 704 – The Terrifying Defense of the Giant Leviathan

Chapter 705 – Returning Home

Chapter 706 – Reaching Black Hole Revolving Core

Chapter 707 – Xuan Wuji Leaves Seclusion

Chapter 708 – Breaking Through To Middle Revolving Core

Chapter 709 – Opening the Eight Inner Hidden Gates Again

Chapter 710 – The Death God Comes At Night

Chapter 711 – Sweeping Through The South Sea Demon Region

Chapter 712 – Thorough Slaughter

Chapter 713 – To Those Who Remain In the South Sea Demon Region, Death!

Chapter 714 – Name of the Death God

Chapter 715 – King Level Smelting Trial

Chapter 716 - Warriors of the Ancient Phoenix Clan

Chapter 717 – Qualify

Chapter 718 – A Shocking Trial Ground

Chapter 719 – Timeworn Phoenix City

Chapter 720 – Ancient Phoenix Totem

Chapter 721 – Test of Laws

Chapter 722 – Perceiving the Source of Fire

Chapter 723 – In Stark Opposition

Chapter 724 – Burning Heaven Totem Stone

Chapter 725 – Chaos Stone

Chapter 726 – God Transforming Mirror

Chapter 727 – The Red Woman

Chapter 728 – The First Concept – Sea of Burning Fire

Chapter 729 – Breaking Through the First World

Chapter 730 – A Strike To Shatter the World

Chapter 731 – Fusing Concepts, Creating a Move

Chapter 732 – Nine Layers of the Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle

Chapter 733 – Second World of the God Transforming Mirror

Chapter 734 – Heaven-Step Fire Essence

Chapter 735 – Peak of the Middle Revolving Core Realm

Chapter 736 – Leaving Seclusion

Chapter 737 – The Final Test

Chapter 738 – Blood of the Ancient Phoenix

Chapter 739 – 50 Breaths

Chapter 740 – Reverse the Chain of Stars

Chapter 741 – Trading for the Phoenix Blood

Chapter 742 – Late Revolving Core

Chapter 743 – Return to the Sky Spill Continent

Chapter 744 - The Bloodstained Deep Sea

Chapter 745 – Fighting Xuan Wuji

Chapter 746 – The Disparity Between Them

Chapter 747 – The 100,000 Mile Chase

Chapter 748 – Chase Through the South Horizon Region

Chapter 749 – The Death of Xuan Wuji

Chapter 750 – Returning to the Dimension

Chapter 751 – Collapse of the South Sea Demon Region

Chapter 752 – Lin Ming's Wedding, the Divine Kingdom Prince

Chapter 753 – The Mysterious Girl

Chapter 754 – Jade of the Goddess

Chapter 755 – Swords Drawn

Chapter 756 – Duel of Battle Spirits

Chapter 757 – Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, Feng Shen

Chapter 758 – The Wedding Night

Chapter 759 – The Young Girl's Mystery, the Forsaken God Clan

Chapter 760 – Wood Spirit Jade

Chapter 761 – Towards the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom

Chapter 762 – White Dragon Jade Row

Chapter 763 – How To Make Money

Chapter 764 – Ancient Jade Bracelet

Chapter 765 – Bid

Chapter 766 – Swindled

Chapter 767 – White Dragon Jade Card

Chapter 768 – Guru Blueway, Destiny Decree

Chapter 769 – Guru Blueway's Appraisal

Chapter 770 – Opening the Universe Melting Furnace

Chapter 771 – Heavencraft Trading Company

Chapter 772 – Skyflower Stones

Chapter 773 – Malice

Chapter 774 – Xiaoxiao

Chapter 775 – Saber Light

Chapter 776 – Sweep Through All

Chapter 777 – Bronze Battle Spirit Large Success

Chapter 778 – First Battle of the Destiny Decree

Chapter 779 – The Great Battle of Witch Creek City

Chapter 780 – Stepping Onto the Highest Stage

Chapter 781 – The Demon Emperor's Armor

Chapter 782 – Killing Corpsemancer

Chapter 783 – First Appearance On The Destiny Decree

Chapter 784 – The Crown Prince's Invitation

Chapter 785 – Let Me See Your Armor

Chapter 786 – Domineering

Chapter 787 – A Stipulation of Ten Moves

Chapter 788 – Slaughter Path Showdown

Chapter 789 – 8000 Mile Black Swamp

Chapter 790 – Heavencraft Xiaoxiao's Request

Chapter 791 – Refining the Fivefade Void Pill

Chapter 792 – The Gate of Wonder

Chapter 793 – Sky High Reward

Chapter 794 – Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division

Chapter 795 – 300,000 Spirit Essence Stones

Chapter 796 – Lin Lanjian

Chapter 797 – Robbery

Chapter 798 – Unbelievable Speed

Chapter 799 – Sudden Retaliation

Chapter 800 – Blood Washed Jagged Slope Mountain

Chapter 801 – Unstoppable

Chapter 802 – Killing Situ

Chapter 803 – Killing the Elders

Chapter 804 – Asura Divine Kingdom Emperor Uncle

Chapter 805 – The Glory of a Large Success Battle Spirit

Chapter 806 – Grind

Chapter 807 – New Destiny Decree, Title: Death God

Chapter 808 – The Trial of Life Destruction

Chapter 809 – The Second Revolving Core

Chapter 810 – Crisis

Chapter 811 – Killing Party

Chapter 812 – Death Swamp

Chapter 813 – Sea Serpent Gas

Chapter 814 – Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion

Chapter 815 – New Life From Destruction

Chapter 816 – Heretical God Sprout

Chapter 817 – Crazy Bi Ruyu

Chapter 818 – Lightning Tempered Body

Chapter 819 – Argent White Sword and the Lightning Source

Chapter 820 – God Forsaken Clan, Eightfall Thunder Emperor

Chapter 821 – Leaving the Thunder Dominion, Battling the Demon Envoy

Chapter 822 – The Splendor of Lightning

Chapter 823 – Hacking Apart the Divine Kingdom Imperial Scholar

Chapter 824 – Death Reaper Curse

Chapter 825 – The Asura Divine Emperor Moves

Chapter 826 – Forsaken God Clan, Dimensional Realm

Chapter 827 – Shibai

Chapter 828 – That is Not the Key Point

Chapter 829 – Confrontation

Chapter 830 – However Many Come, I'll Take That Many

Chapter 831 – Battle

Chapter 832 – The Coming Storm, The Rising Tide

Chapter 833 – Situ Yaoyue

Chapter 834 – Breakthrough, Begin

Chapter 835 – All Treasures Gathered

Chapter 836 – Purple Air Comes From the East

Chapter 837 – Golden Lighting Piercing the Sky

Chapter 838 – Silver Battle Spirit

Chapter 839 – Purple Lion Thunder Source

Chapter 840 – Forming the Spirit Body

Chapter 841 – Successfully Leaving Seclusion, Achieving Life Destruction

Chapter 842 – Peak of the First Stage of Life Destruction

Chapter 843 – Finger as Spear

Chapter 844 – The Day of the Fated Battle

Chapter 845 – In Sharp Opposition

Chapter 846 – Killers of the Asura Divine Kingdom

Chapter 847 – A World Stunning Spear

Chapter 848 – Five Poison King

Chapter 849 – Without Equal

Chapter 850 – An Aura to Wash Away the Clouds

Chapter 851 – Luosha’s Determination

Chapter 852 – Fighting Situ Luosha

Chapter 853 – The Glory of Thunder

Chapter 854 – Admitting Defeat

Chapter 855 – Yaoyue Fights

Chapter 856 – Extreme Violet Domain, Demon Moon Illuminating the Sky

Chapter 857 – A Bitter Fight

Chapter 858 – Cage of Darkness

Chapter 859 – Ancient Phoenix Saint Body

Chapter 860 – Great Desolate Blood Halberd

Chapter 861 – Suppressing Yaoyue

Chapter 862 – Dropping All Pretenses

Chapter 863 – All Parties Involved

Chapter 864 – The Side of Morality and Principle

Chapter 865 – Two Conditions

Chapter 866 – Divide the Void

Chapter 867 – The Miracle of Time Laws

Chapter 868 – Unapproachable

Chapter 869 – The New Destiny Decree

Chapter 870 – Myriad Spirit Pill

Chapter 871 – Sea Serpent Crystal

Chapter 872 – The Bronze Ghost Coffin

Chapter 873 – Opening the Gate of Pain

Chapter 874 – Comprehending the Laws of Time

Chapter 875 – Second Stage Life Destruction

Chapter 876 – All Heroes Gathered

Chapter 877 – Entering the Temple

Chapter 878 – The Link Between the Sea of Miracles and the Eternal Demon Abyss

Chapter 879 – Top Grade Spirit Vein

Chapter 880 – Master of the Bronze Ghost Coffin

Chapter 881 – Furious Battle

Chapter 882 – Divine Tree

Chapter 883 – Twelve Dao Fruits

Chapter 884 – Saint Artifact Treasure

Chapter 885 – Unreasonable

Chapter 886 – Two Years To Take Your Head

Chapter 887 – Electric Violet Kirin Clan

Chapter 888 – Electric Violet Inheritance

Chapter 889 – Masked Man

Chapter 890 – Ancient Devil

Chapter 891 – Seize

Chapter 892 – Bringing About One's Own Destruction

Chapter 893 – Narrow Escape

Chapter 894 – Preparation is the Key, Third Stage of Life Destruction

Chapter 895 – The Third Thunder Concept

Chapter 896 – The Capture Order

Chapter 897 – Target: Road of Emperor

Chapter 898 – Unstoppable

Chapter 899 – Once Again Into the Road of Emperor

Chapter 900 – Tempering the Battle Spirit

Chapter 901 – Secret of the Road of Emperor

Chapter 902 – 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array Formation

Chapter 903 – The Goddess In Ice

Chapter 904 – Reforming the Shattered Core

Chapter 905 – Departure, the Prime Emperor Force Field

Chapter 906 – If You Are Chaos, Then What Am I?

Chapter 907 – Three Force Fields Superimposed

Chapter 908 – Massacring Emperors

Chapter 909 – Sixth Opening of the Magic Cube

Chapter 910 – Fusing the Three Great Force Fields

Chapter 911 – I, Prime Emperor

Chapter 912 – Becoming the Steppes Master

Chapter 913 – Strange Black Bead

Chapter 914 – Returning to The Sky Spill Continent

Chapter 915 – Old Friends, Wrath

Chapter 916 – Taking Control

Chapter 917 – Kill, Kill, Kill!

Chapter 918 – Ten Steps To Kill One Person

Chapter 919 – Whitedemon Arrives

Chapter 920 – Massacre

Chapter 921 – Transcendent Divine Might

Chapter 922 – Fighting Whitedemon

Chapter 923 – Refine the Soul

Chapter 924(A) – Settling the Cycle of Karma

Chapter 924(B) – Settling the Cycle of Karma

Chapter 925 – Merciless Indifference

Chapter 926 – The End of Whitedemon

Chapter 927 – Once Again Battling the Purple Lion Thunder Source

Chapter 928 – Swallowing the Thunder Source

Chapter 929 – To Another Level

Chapter 930 – Dark Clouds

Chapter 931 – Inescapable Net

Chapter 932 – Postcelestial Dao Diagram

Chapter 933 – Lin Ming Returns

Chapter 934 – Counterattack

Chapter 935 – Command the World

Chapter 936 – Erase Them All

Chapter 937 – Failure at the End

Chapter 938 – Nine Furnace Great Array

Chapter 939 – Complete Massacre

Chapter 940 – Fighting Yang Yun

Chapter 941 – Insight Into Weakness

Chapter 942 – Coiling Martial Divine Furnace

Chapter 943 – Heaven Punishment Divine Thunder

Chapter 944 – Yang Yun's Death

Chapter 945 – Ashes to Ashes

Chapter 946 – The Highest Under the Heavens

Chapter 947 – Grandest Event Since Ancient Times

Chapter 948 – Incarnation of the Jade Slip

Chapter 949 – Towards the Divine Realm

Chapter 950 – Phoenix Cry Palace

Chapter 951 – Contention

Chapter 952 – Nine Divine Shifts

Chapter 953 – Saint Artifact Pavilion

Chapter 954 – Deliberately Creating Difficulties

Chapter 955 – Huang Yuehong

Chapter 956 – The Rules for Obtaining a Saint Artifact

Chapter 957 – Phoenix Blood Spear

Chapter 958 – Obtaining Treasures

Chapter 959 – Towards the Phoenix Blood Spear

Chapter 960 – Test

Chapter 961 – Break the World

Chapter 962 – Totem Stone

Chapter 963 – Silver Perfection

Chapter 964 – Saint Spear in Hand

Chapter 965 – Blinding Spear Light

Chapter 966 – Talent and Treasure That Arouse Envy

Chapter 967 – Ready to Fight

Chapter 968 – To Cause a Stir

Chapter 969 – Fairy Feng’s Summon

Chapter 970 – Top of the Storm

Chapter 971 – You Only Have Yourself To Blame

Chapter 972 – Making Enemies

Chapter 973 – To Provoke and Ignore

Chapter 974 – Ninefall Huo Yanguang

Chapter 975 – Nirvana Altar

Chapter 976 – Glory of the Phoenix Blood Spear

Chapter 977 – Third Level of the Concept of Fire

Chapter 978 – Overpower

Chapter 979 – Can Only Be Described As Miserable

Chapter 980 – Phoenix Plume Blood in Hand

Chapter 981 – Sixth Stage Life Destruction

Chapter 982 – Perfect Dantian

Chapter 983 – The Gate of Opening Which Enhances Perception

Chapter 984 – Movement of the Magic Cube

Chapter 985 – Strange Protective Charm

Chapter 986 – Opening the Gate of Opening

Chapter 987 – Enhanced Perception

Chapter 988 – The Smelting Trial Begins

Chapter 989 – Fire Spirit Star

Chapter 990 – Hell of Fire

Chapter 991 – Origin Energy Impact

Chapter 992 – Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron

Chapter 993 – Phoenix Heart Blood

Chapter 994 – Trial by Fire

Chapter 995 – Hells of Flame, Second Level

Chapter 996 – If You Want To Bet Then Bet Yan Littlemoon

Chapter 997 – Dare

Chapter 998 – Training Within the Hells of Flame

Chapter 999 – Burn the Body

Chapter 1000 – Concept Large Success, Blue Lotus Domain

Chapter 1001 – Smelting Trial Rewards

Chapter 1002 – Totem Tower

Chapter 1003 – 100 Foot Royal Skyseal

Chapter 1004 – The 12 Chaos Stones

Chapter 1005 – Lin Ming's Choice

Chapter 1006 – Lotus Blooming Step By Step

Chapter 1007 – Phoenix Blood Essence

Chapter 1008 – Gold Battle Spirit

Chapter 1009 – Headquarters Envoy

Chapter 1010 – Requirements for a Drop of Phoenix Blood Essence

Chapter 1011 – Lin Ming Leaves Seclusion

Chapter 1012 – To Find a Foil

Chapter 1013 – Illusionary God Combat Array

Chapter 1014 – Lin Ming's Turn

Chapter 1015 – The Origin of Burning Heat

Chapter 1016 – Another Breakthrough

Chapter 1017 – Bloom For Me, Heretical God Sprout!

Chapter 1018 – Fusing the Three Concepts

Chapter 1019 – Hells of Flame's Seventh Level, The Domain of God

Chapter 1020 – Seventh Stage Life Destruction

Chapter 1021 – Ten Thousand Flames Burning Sun

Chapter 1022 – Sevenfall Phenomenon

Chapter 1023 – Perfect Sevenfall

Chapter 1024 – Sacred Flame Testament

Chapter 1025 – Rushing the Illusionary God Combat Array

Chapter 1026 – Kill Them All

Chapter 1027 – How Hard Could This Be?

Chapter 1028 – Source of Phoenix Blood

Chapter 1029 – World of Will Projection

Chapter 1030 – The Power of Laws

Chapter 1031 – The One Thousandth Person

Chapter 1032 – Old Sorrows, New Hate

Chapter 1033 – Intense

Chapter 1034 – Scorching Blood VS Phoenix Blood

Chapter 1035 – Concept of Manifestation

Chapter 1036 – To Complete the Thousand Slaughter

Chapter 1037 – Phoenix Blood Essence

Chapter 1038 – Absorbing the Phoenix Blood Essence

Chapter 1039 – The Thoughts of God

Chapter 1040 – End of the Smelting Trial

Chapter 1041 – God Beast Mystic Realm

Chapter 1042 – Ancient Dragon Clan

Chapter 1043 – 12 People

Chapter 1044 – Can I Go With You?

Chapter 1045 – Together

Chapter 1046 – Black Coral

Chapter 1047 – Bizarre Enemy

Chapter 1048 – Asura King

Chapter 1049 – Supreme Dragon Bone

Chapter 1050 – You Two, Fuck Off!

Chapter 1051 – The Great War Begins

Chapter 1052 – Grandmist Battle Armor

Chapter 1053 – Sneaky

Chapter 1054 – To Play Both Sides

Chapter 1055 – Opportunity

Chapter 1056 – Dragon Bone In Hand

Chapter 1057 – Crazy Dragon One

Chapter 1058 – The Strong Asura King

Chapter 1059 – Change In the Dragon Bone

Chapter 1060 – White Light

Chapter 1061 – Revival After 50,000 Years

Chapter 1062 – Mo Eversnow

Chapter 1063 – Another Dual Cultivator

Chapter 1064 – The Bad Luck Dragon One

Chapter 1065 – The Wicked Cannot Be Saved From Their Sins

Chapter 1066 – Treasures of the Dead

Chapter 1067 – Leaving the Mystic Realm

Chapter 1068 – Marriage

Chapter 1069 – Secret of the Magic Cube

Chapter 1070 – Absorbing the Dragon Marrow

Chapter 1071 – Crossing Eightfall

Chapter 1072 – Display of Strength

Chapter 1073 – True Martial World

Chapter 1074 – Carefree Island

Chapter 1075 – Entering the Sect

Chapter 1076 – Riverbliss Jadeheart

Chapter 1077 – Reunion

Chapter 1078 – His Skin Is Not of Ordinary Thickness

Chapter 1079 – To Make Things Difficult

Chapter 1080 – Simulation Mystic Realm

Chapter 1081 – Perish Together?

Chapter 1082 – Easily Passing

Chapter 1083 – The Sad Brother Liu

Chapter 1084 – Resource Struggle

Chapter 1085 – Traitor

Chapter 1086 – The Eight Inner Hidden Gates, the Sixth Gate

Chapter 1087 – Dragon Bone Relics

Chapter 1088 – Six Gates Opened

Chapter 1089 – The Red Wilderness

Chapter 1090 – Purple Mountain

Chapter 1091 – The Enemy Raid in the Storm

Chapter 1092 – Entering the Sandstorm

Chapter 1093 – Ambush

Chapter 1094 – Counterattack

Chapter 1095 – Lure the Enemy

Chapter 1096 – Cut Them Down

Chapter 1097 – I’ll Cut It Off

Chapter 1098 – Reap the Spoils From The Wearied

Chapter 1099 – Sitting Back and Waiting

Chapter 1100 – Sweep Away the Fallen leaves

Chapter 1101 – If I Were You, I'd Have Already Killed Myself

Chapter 1102 – Collect the Spoils of Battle

Chapter 1103 – Sudden Attack

Chapter 1104 – What Do We Do?

Chapter 1105 – Aren't You The Best Evidence?

Chapter 1106 – Highest Elder

Chapter 1107 – Heroic Sacrifice

Chapter 1108 – Confrontation

Chapter 1109 – Crazy White Brook

Chapter 1110 – The World's Most Aggrieving Matter

Chapter 1111 – Face Even More Swollen

Chapter 1112 – The Power Behind The Throne

Chapter 1113 – Mo Riverbliss's Ambitions

Chapter 1114 – Ninefall Approaches

Chapter 1115 – Ten Severing Dao

Chapter 1116 – Attacking Ninefall

Chapter 1117 – Ninefall Realm

Chapter 1118 – Surging Origin Energy Clouds

Chapter 1119 – Where Lies the Limit?

Chapter 1120 – Double Phenomenon

Chapter 1121 – The Riddle of the Magic Cube

Chapter 1122 – Perfect Spirit Body

Chapter 1123 – Five Element Grand Tribulation

Chapter 1124 – Brutal

Chapter 1125 – Nine By Nine Life Destruction

Chapter 1126 – Boiling With Blood

Chapter 1127 – Large Success Battle Spirit

Chapter 1128 – Spirit Artifact Spear

Chapter 1129 – If The God Of Death Desires Me, I Shall Cut Down The God Of Death

Chapter 1130 – Refining Heavenly Tribulation

Chapter 1131 – Perfectly Crossing Tribulation

Chapter 1132 – Mystery of the Black Bead

Chapter 1133 – Divide

Chapter 1134 – Clearing the Snakes

Chapter 1135 – Immemorial Imperial City

Chapter 1136 – Taking the Treasures

Chapter 1137 – Private Trading Fair

Chapter 1138 – The Little Girl Who Eats Violet Sun Crystals

Chapter 1139 – News of the Violet Sun Stone Embryo

Chapter 1140 – The Mysterious Little Girl

Chapter 1141 – To Strike A Stone With An Egg

Chapter 1142 – Intimidating All Present

Chapter 1143 – Oppression

Chapter 1144 – Yan Littlefish

Chapter 1145 – Marvelous Ability

Chapter 1146 – Mysterious Land

Chapter 1147 – Divine Seal Art

Chapter 1148 – Ancient Spirit

Chapter 1149 – Horrifying Power

Chapter 1150 – World Calamity

Chapter 1151 – Refining the Stone Embryo

Chapter 1152 – Sacred Martial Mansion

Chapter 1153 – Grandest Event of All Ages

Chapter 1154 – The Yan Littlemoon of Years Gone By

Chapter 1155 – Boundless World Pill

Chapter 1156 – The Source of Wealth

Chapter 1157 – Necklace of the Goddess

Chapter 1158 – Sky High Pawn Price

Chapter 1159 – The Grand Auction

Chapter 1160 – Zhong Wenshu

Chapter 1161 – Auctioning the Boundless World Pill

Chapter 1162 – The Rise

Chapter 1163 – Crazy

Chapter 1164 – Divine Pill In Hand

Chapter 1165 – Crazy Cultivation

Chapter 1166 – Opening the Gate of Life

Chapter 1167 – Divine Spear Like Dragon

Chapter 1168 – Elementary Transcendent Divine Might

Chapter 1169 – Finally Stepping Into the Divine Sea

Chapter 1170 – Leaving Seclusion

Chapter 1171 – Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan

Chapter 1172 – The Burden of an Outer Court Disciple

Chapter 1173 – Divine Dream World

Chapter 1174 – Miraculous Dream Laws

Chapter 1175 – True Martial Holy Land

Chapter 1176 – Change of the Magic Cube

Chapter 1177 – Divine Dream Law

Chapter 1178 – The Slaughter Begins

Chapter 1179 – Merit Points

Chapter 1180 – Ranking

Chapter 1181 – Lin Ming's Whereabouts

Chapter 1182 – Lin Ming Makes His Move

Chapter 1183 – Combat At Last

Chapter 1184 – Who Gave You This Courage?

Chapter 1185 – Yin Yang Twin Swords

Chapter 1186 – Rising Ranking

Chapter 1187 – Goal: Nightmare Canyon

Chapter 1188 – Declaration of War

Chapter 1189 – Fighting the Three Prodigies

Chapter 1190 – Fighting the Three Prodigies (B)

Chapter 1191 – Strength Surpassing a 100 Million

Chapter 1192 – Soaring Merit Points

Chapter 1193 – The Heaven Defying Divine Dream Law

Chapter 1194 – Divine Seal Decree

Chapter 1195 – Lin Ming's Ranking

Chapter 1196 – True Martial City

Chapter 1197 – Empyrean Descendant

Chapter 1198 – The Mysterious Monster

Chapter 1199 – Towards True Martial City

Chapter 1200 – Rescue

Chapter 1201 – Murder

Chapter 1202 – Cultivating Essence, Energy, and Divine

Chapter 1203 – Highdragon

Chapter 1204 – Life Laws

Chapter 1205 – Suppression of Absolute Strength

Chapter 1206 – Highdragon's Death

Chapter 1207 – Wu Finalcloud

Chapter 1208 – Peak Battle of the True Martial Great World

Chapter 1209 – Strength Beyond Strength

Chapter 1210 – Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art

Chapter 1211 – Killing Wu Finalcloud

Chapter 1212 – Merit Points Over a Hundred Million

Chapter 1213 – Spirit Source

Chapter 1214 – The Last Round

Chapter 1215 – Nightmare Beast Tide

Chapter 1216 – Red-furred Monster’s Evolution

Chapter 1217 – Soul Life

Chapter 1218 – Fighting the Red-furred Monster

Chapter 1219 – Thunder Tribulation

Chapter 1220 – Eyes Blinded by Lightning

Chapter 1221 – First in a Great World

Chapter 1222 – Perfect Gold Battle Spirit

Chapter 1223 – Tian Mingzi

Chapter 1224 – The Final Result of the Preliminaries

Chapter 1225 – Fated Encounter

Chapter 1226 – Lin Ming, Dragon Fang

Chapter 1227 – Creating Techniques, Virtual Fire

Chapter 1228 – Divine Seal Altar

Chapter 1229 – Hard To Find Tickets

Chapter 1230 – The Semifinals Begin

Chapter 1231 – What is Pride

Chapter 1232 – Brutal Competition

Chapter 1233 – The Great Road Before Us

Chapter 1234 – Divine Seal Altar Artifact Spirit

Chapter 1235 – Without Weapons

Chapter 1236 – 20th Step

Chapter 1237 – The Battle Begins

Chapter 1238 – The One Who Should Be Sorry Is Me

Chapter 1239 – Crimson Strifecloud's Daughter

Chapter 1240 – Absolute Suppression

Chapter 1241 – Too Shameless

Chapter 1242 – Rapid Drop In Numbers

Chapter 1243 – Loose Tongues Lead To Trouble

Chapter 1244 – 15 People

Chapter 1245 – Variation Pupils

Chapter 1246 – Lin Ming VS Nether Limitless

Chapter 1247 Heroic Youth

Chapter 1248 – Violent Collision

Chapter 1249 – The Defeated Nether Limitless

Chapter 1250 – Lin Ming, King!

Chapter 1251 – To Climb the Peak

Chapter 1252 – Dragon Fang's Identity

Chapter 1253 – Comprehending the Concepts

Chapter 1254 – Power of Divinity

Chapter 1255 – Straight to the Top

Chapter 1256 – Climbing to the 33rd Step

Chapter 1257 – Tricks

Chapter 1258 – Heavenly Tribulation

Chapter 1259 – Absolute Slaughter Thunder Sources

Chapter 1260 – Dragon Fang, Defeated

Chapter 1261 – Lin Ming's Heavenly Tribulation

Chapter 1262 – Slaughter of the Dao Tablets

Chapter 1263 – Three Essences Gathered as One

Chapter 1264 – Absorbing the Law Runes

Chapter 1265 – Tribulation of Essence, Energy, Divine

Chapter 1266 – Middle Divine Sea Realm

Chapter 1267 – The Final Stretch

Chapter 1268 – Empyrean Phantom

Chapter 1269 – The Summit

Chapter 1270 – Bustling Like A City

Chapter 1271 – Finally Meeting

Chapter 1272 – Ancient Phoenix Blood Essence

Chapter 1273 – Middle Divine Sea Realm, Large Success

Chapter 1274 – Vast Universe World Finals

Chapter 1275 – Law Test

Chapter 1276 – Frost Dream, Xiao Moxian

Chapter 1277 – Child of the Dark Phoenix

Chapter 1278 – The Finals Begin

Chapter 1279 – Slaughter City

Chapter 1280 – Unchallenged

Chapter 1281 – Difference in Strength

Chapter 1282 – Easily Passing Qualification

Chapter 1283 – Empyrean Demondawn

Chapter 1284 – Lin Ming VS Frost Moon

Chapter 1285 – Ruling Spirit Art

Chapter 1286 – Three Swords

Chapter 1287 – Divine Seal 12 Children

Chapter 1288 – Battle of the 12 Children

Chapter 1289 – The Final Battles Begin

Chapter 1290 – Do You Accept Credit?

Chapter 1291 – Fighting the Monster Prince

Chapter 1292 – Might of the Heretical God

Chapter 1293 – Enraging the Monster Race

Chapter 1294 – Seeing Through the Laws

Chapter 1295 – Impossible to Unravel

Chapter 1296 – Duel of Two Stars

Chapter 1297 – In a Spark of Time

Chapter 1298 – The Greatest Battle

Chapter 1299 – Heavenly Dao Judgment

Chapter 1300 – Heaven Swallowng Demon Art

Chapter 1301 – Hang Chi

Chapter 1302 – Lin Ming VS Xiao Moxian

Chapter 1303 – Clash of Dragon and Phoenix

Chapter 1304 – Forcing Back Xiao Moxian

Chapter 1305 – Surpassing an Empyrean

Chapter 1306 – Might of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens

Chapter 1307 – White Hot

Chapter 1307B – Divine Dream Space

Chapter 1308 – Lin Ming VS Jun Bluemoon

Chapter 1309 – Another Victory

Chapter 1310 – The Wheel of Samsara

Chapter 1311 – Against Hang Chi

Chapter 1312 – Samsara To Samsara

Chapter 1313 – Minor Samsara Path

Chapter 1314 – Divine Seal Within Samsara

Chapter 1315 – Divine Seal's Soul

Chapter 1316 – Dream Cultivation

Chapter 1317 – Cultivating the Divine Seal Art

Chapter 1318 – The Climactic Battle

Chapter 1319 – Dreamsoul Immortal Melody

Chapter 1320 – The Final Pass

Chapter 1321 – Cultivation Great Success

Chapter 1322 – Awakening And Exiting

Chapter 1323 – Frost Dream's Identity

Chapter 1324 – Two Unrivalled Geniuses

Chapter 1325 – Dream Interpretation Scripture

Chapter 1326 – Eternal Darkness

Chapter 1327 – Final Chapter of the Dreamsoul

Chapter 1328 – The Final Result

Chapter 1329 – Secret of the Great Calamity

Chapter 1330 – The Mysteries of Empyrean Primordius

Chapter 1331 – Holy Land of Women

Chapter 1332 – Lin Ming’s Decision

Chapter 1333 – 100 Days Insight

Chapter 1334 – Soul Shifting Art

Chapter 1335 – Primordial Epoch Spirit Root

Chapter 1336 – Nine Stars Heaven Pill

Chapter 1337 – Eavesdropping

Chapter 1338 – Finding the Spirit Root

Chapter 1339 – Chaotic Space

Chapter 1340 – Murdering Others and Stealing Blood

Chapter 1341 – Drastic Measures

Chapter 1342 – Sitting On the Mountain and Watching the Tigers Fight

Chapter 1343 – To Ask A Tiger For Its Skin

Chapter 1344 – A Taste of Your Own Medicine

Chapter 1345 – Receiving the Spirit Root

Chapter 1346 – Refine

Chapter 1347 – The Final Gate

Chapter 1348 – Hunt of the Saint Race

Chapter 1349 – Jade Slip Incarnation

Chapter 1350 – Chased by Tian Mingzi

Chapter 1351 – Forcing Through the Void

Chapter 1352 – Identity Exposed

Chapter 1353 – Sky Spill Planet

Chapter 1354 – Gray Light Barrier

Chapter 1355 – Empyrean Primordius' Protection

Chapter 1356 – Nether Limitless Descends To the World

Chapter 1357 – Hand of the Devil

Chapter 1358 – Life or Death Crisis

Chapter 1359 – Burn

Chapter 1360 – Devil

Chapter 1361 – Once More Into the Blood Slaughter Steppes

Chapter 1362 – Into the Eternal Demon Abyss Once More

Chapter 1363 – Eruption of the Demon Abyss

Chapter 1364 – The Phantom within the Ancient Grave

Chapter 1365 – Blood Vitality Entering the Body

Chapter 1366 – Nine Stars Appear

Chapter 1367 – The Resurrection of Eversnow

Chapter 1368 – Tian Mingzi Arrives

Chapter 1369 – Exterminate Your Avatar

Chapter 1370 – Take the Memories

Chapter 1371 – Heaven Absorbing Demon Art and the Nine Star Heaven Pill

Chapter 1372 – Entering the Eternal Demon Abyss

Chapter 1373 – Crystal Bones

Chapter 1374 – Dao Domain

Chapter 1375 – 100,000 Year Corpses

Chapter 1376 – Black Dragon

Chapter 1377 – The Gate of Space and Time

Chapter 1378 – Suffer in Silence

Chapter 1379 – Three Years

Chapter 1380 – Trail of the Demon Bead

Chapter 1381 – Transforming the Divine Palace

Chapter 1382 – Essence

Chapter 1383 – Divine Transformation

Chapter 1384 – Child of the Dragon

Chapter 1385 – Departure

Chapter 1386 – The Sky Spill Grand Meeting

Chapter 1387 – You've Grown Up

Chapter 1388 – Returning Home

Chapter 1389 – Meeting

Chapter 1390 – The Day of Return

Chapter 1391 – Seeking an Audience with Divine Dream

Chapter 1392 – Drastic Change

Chapter 1393 – The Great Calamity Arrives

Chapter 1394 – Negotiations of the Saint Race

Chapter 1395 – Fears of the Saint Race

Chapter 1396– Reading the Memories

Chapter 1397- Arrival of the Saint Race

Chapter 1398 – The Goal of the Saint Race

Chapter 1399 – Conditions

Chapter 1400 – I Refuse

Chapter 1401 – Sneak Attack

Chapter 1402 – A 100 Year Agreement

Chapter 1403 – The Result of Negotiations

Chapter 1404 – The Elites of the Saint Race

Chapter 1405 – Irreproachable Stupa

Chapter 1406 – Imperial Prince Naqi

Chapter 1407 – Enlightenment Beneath the Bodhi Tree

Chapter 1408 – Witchplume, Blacksalt

Chapter 1409 – The Chaotic Blood War

Chapter 1410 – Attack and Defend

Chapter 1411 – Lin Ming Arrives

Chapter 1412 – Fight

Chapter 1413 – Horrifying Weight

Chapter 1414 – Challenging the Imperial Prince

Chapter 1415 – Fighting the Imperial Prince

Chapter 1416 – Naqi's Power

Chapter 1417 – Blue Soul Battle Spirit

Chapter 1418 – Suppressing the Imperial Prince

Chapter 1419 – Victory and Defeat

Chapter 1420 – Raging Undercurrents

Chapter 1421 – Bait

Chapter 1422 – Asura Road

Chapter 1423 – God Runes

Chapter 1424 – Transmission Accident

Chapter 1425 – Parting Ways

Chapter 1426 – Might of the Runes

Chapter 1427 – The First Rune

Chapter 1428 – Spiritas Slave

Chapter 1429 – The Final Trial

Chapter 1430 – City of Discord

Chapter 1431 – Receiving a Mission

Chapter 1432 – The Wheel of Destiny

Chapter 1433 – The Hunter Game

Chapter 1434 – Hunters and the Hunted

Chapter 1435 – Many Wolves, Little Meat

Chapter 1436 – Self Explosion

Chapter 1437 – One-star Asura

Chapter 1438 – Clear Out the Trash

Chapter 1439 – Golden Armor Warrior Array

Chapter 1440 – Gathering the Badges

Chapter 1441 – Weakness

Chapter 1442 – Clearing the Trial

Chapter 1443 – Drawing

Chapter 1444 – One’s Talent Arouses the Envy of Others

Chapter 1445 – The City of Discord’s City Lord

Chapter 1446 – Ancient Jade

Chapter 1447 – Encounter in the Great Desolate

Chapter 1448 – The Phoenix Within the Flames of Battle

Chapter 1449 – Fighting the Four Saints

Chapter 1450 – This Place Shall be Your Grave

Chapter 1451 – Back to the Wall

Chapter 1452 – Team

Chapter 1453 – Yet Another Monster Prince

Chapter 1454 – Monster Prince Duyu

Chapter 1455 – Weakness

Chapter 1456 – This Is It?

Chapter 1457 – Emperor Stone

Chapter 1458 – Prize

Chapter 1459 – Struggle of Dragons and Phoenixes

Chapter 1460 – Reach the Extreme

Chapter 1461 – The Asura Sutra

Chapter 1462 – Late Divine Transformation

Chapter 1463 – The Imperial Prince Visits

Chapter 1464 – Insurmountable

Chapter 1465 – Heavendevil City

Chapter 1466 – Tragic Death Valley

Chapter 1467 – Fatty Zhou

Chapter 1468 – Encounter at the Gates

Chapter 1469 – Entering God Burying Ridge

Chapter 1470 – Strange Death

Chapter 1471 – Old Enemy

Chapter 1472 – Inner Ridge

Chapter 1473 – Ghostly Steps

Chapter 1474 – Curse

Chapter 1475 – Instant Death

Chapter 1476 – Paradise Reborn

Chapter 1477 – Separate

Chapter 1478 – 10,000 Corpse Flowers

Chapter 1479 – Information Jade Slip

Chapter 1480 – Hunt

Chapter 1481 – Meeting Tian Mingzi

Chapter 1482 – Stake It All On A Single Throw

Chapter 1483 – Entering Tragic Death Valley

Chapter 1484 – Bones

Chapter 1485 – God Beast Tomb

Chapter 1486 – Lin Ming's Ambitions

Chapter 1487 – Demonic Tide

Chapter 1488 – Perfect Harmony

Chapter 1489 – Empyrean Divine Mist

Chapter 1490 – Grinding the Soul

Chapter 1491 – To Shake A Tree With A Gust Of Wind

Chapter 1492 – I Will Follow You

Chapter 1493 – Entering the Tomb

Chapter 1494 – Asura Sutra General Outline

Chapter 1495 – 33 Dao Diagrams

Chapter 1496 – Glow of the Five Elements

Chapter 1497 – Dragon Energy

Chapter 1498 – Breaking Through the Array Formation

Chapter 1499 – Ancient Bronze Temple

Chapter 1500 – Essence Spirit Embryo Stone

Chapter 1501 – Opening the Coffin

Chapter 1502 – Essence Energy Heaven Pill

Chapter 1503 – Swallowing the Sacred Spirit

Chapter 1504 – The First Avatar

Chapter 1505 – Becoming A Divine Lord

Chapter 1506 – Leaving the Valley

Chapter 1507 – Lure the Enemy

Chapter 1508 – Chaos Prison

Chapter 1509 – Blue Throne Bai Qi

Chapter 1510 – Provoke

Chapter 1511 – Absolute Killing Array

Chapter 1512 – Killing a World King

Chapter 1513 - More and More Murder

Chapter 1514 – Mister Ash Murder

Chapter 1515 – Violently Beating the Imperial Prince

Chapter 1516 – The Furious Ash Murder

Chapter 1517 – Angering One To Death

Chapter 1518 – Sacred Soul Primal Spirit

Chapter 1519 – Unimaginable

Chapter 1520 – Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel

Chapter 1521 – Crisis

Chapter 1522 – To Seek Survival In The Face Of Death

Chapter 1523 – Lin Ming's Counterattack

Chapter 1524 – Tragic

Chapter 1525 – Like Rain With Water

Chapter 1526 – Another Breakthrough

Chapter 1527 – Attacking the Dao Palace

Chapter 1528 – Dao Diagram of the Heavenly Dao

Chapter 1529 – Extreme Yin Blood Essence

Chapter 1530 - For Forever, My Blood Will Mark You

Chapter 1531 – Crimson Space

Chapter 1532 – Union of Phoenix and Dragon

Chapter 1533 – Xiao Moxian's Nirvana

Chapter 1534 – Opening the Dao Palace

Chapter 1535 – Refining A Star

Chapter 1536 – Facing a Great World King

Chapter 1537 – Fighting Tian Mingzi

Chapter 1538 – Hatred of 50,000 Years

Chapter 1539 – Young Demon God

Chapter 1540 – The Dust Settles

Chapter 1541 – Heading Deeper Into the Asura Road

Chapter 1542 – Divine Rune City

Chapter 1543 – The Qualifications to Enter the City

Chapter 1544 – Lin Ming's Goal

Chapter 1545 – Information About the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace

Chapter 1546 – Riddle of the Cultivation Method

Chapter 1547 – Divine Runic Masters Guild

Chapter 1548 – Broken Jade

Chapter 1549 – Buying Treasures

Chapter 1550 – Undying Medicine

Chapter 1551 – Sex Fiend Torchriver

Chapter 1552 – Divine Runic Master Shortcut

Chapter 1553 – Refine the Soul

Chapter 1554 – Heavenly Extreme Bliss

Chapter 1555 – Learning Skills

Chapter 1556 – Eternal Glory Cult Leader

Chapter 1557 – Thorough Mastery

Chapter 1558 – A Long Lost Feeling

Chapter 1559 – A Spring Rain

Chapter 1560 – Leaving Seclusion

Chapter 1561 – The Divine Runic Master Examination

Chapter 1562 – Soul Emperor Divine Void

Chapter 1563 – The Examination Begins

Chapter 1564 – Divine Runic Master Qualifications

Chapter 1565 – Continuing the Examination For A Second Grade Divine Runic Master

Chapter 1566 – Second Grade Divine Runic Master Examination

Chapter 1567 – The Third Step

Chapter 1568 – Completing the Main Body

Chapter 1569 – Perfect Pill Symbol

Chapter 1570 – Third Grade Divine Runic Master Examination

Chapter 1571 – Divine Runic Master Prodigy

Chapter 1572 – Entering the Guild

Chapter 1573 – News of Blood Moon

Chapter 1574 – Marvel Blue City

Chapter 1575 – Imperial Concubine Moon

Chapter 1576 – Blood Moon’s Conundrum

Chapter 1577 – Life-death Seclusion of the Emperor

Chapter 1578 – Summons of the Empress

Chapter 1579 – All Encompassing Net

Chapter 1580 – Swords Drawn, Bows Bent

Chapter 1581 – Blood Moon’s Crisis

Chapter 1582 – Assassin White Sky

Chapter 1583 – Life Seizing Jade Talisman

Chapter 1584 – Blood Splashing Through Arid Peace Palace

Chapter 1585 – Fighting White Sky

Chapter 1586 – Imperial Palace’s Great Chief Eunuch

Chapter 1587 – To Admit Defeat

Chapter 1588 – Cultivation Method In Hand

Chapter 1589 – Blood Moon’s Identity

Chapter 1590 – Hard to Believe

Chapter 1591 - The Treasure of Heaven’s Net

Chapter 1592 – Healing Wounds

Chapter 1593 – Blue Moon Sect

Chapter 1594 – Quiet Training

Chapter 1595 – Middle Divine Lord Realm

Chapter 1596 – Nirvana of the Mind

Chapter 1597 – Astronomically Expensive Materials

Chapter 1598 – Mission Division

Chapter 1599 – Fourth Grade Mission

Chapter 1600 – Three Billion Points

Chapter 1601 - Havoc Flame Symbol

Chapter 1602 – Suya’s Troubles

Chapter 1603 – Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol

Chapter 1604 – Handing in the Mission

Chapter 1605 – Special Effect

Chapter 1606 – Power of the Flame Symbols

Chapter 1607 – “Lin”

Chapter 1608 – Late Night Suya

Chapter 1609 – Cooperation

Chapter 1610 – Grandmaster Overflow

Chapter 1611 – Test

Chapter 1612 – Copy

Chapter 1613 – Array Destruction

Chapter 1614 – One Billion Point Reward

Chapter 1615 – Bankrupt Plan

Chapter 1616 – Lin Ming’s Conditions

Chapter 1617 – Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol

Chapter 1618 – Heretical God Tree Evolution

Chapter 1619 – Treasure Fair

Chapter 1620 – Divine Void Duke

Chapter 1621 – Jade Dragon Horn

Chapter 1622 – Suppressing Fullmoon

Chapter 1623 – Target

Chapter 1624 – Soul Recovery Symbol

Chapter 1625 – The Auctions Begin

Chapter 1626 – Encounter

Chapter 1627 – Grand Event

Chapter 1628 – Nameless Ancient Pill

Chapter 1629 – Ancient Pill In Hand

Chapter 1630 – Violet Gold Spear

Chapter 1631 – Lin Ming Strikes Back

Chapter 1632 – Insane?

Chapter 1633 – Promissory Note

Chapter 1634 – 1.99 Billion

Chapter 1635 – Auction of the Heavenly Fire Symbol

Chapter 1636 – Test

Chapter 1637 – Heavenly Fire Symbol

Chapter 1638 – Fire Symbol Reborn

Chapter 1639 – Doubts

Chapter 1640 – Exposed

Chapter 1641 – Stay If You Want

Chapter 1642 – Lin Ming VS Shadow Overflow

Chapter 1643 – Sky High Auction Bid

Chapter 1644 – Gathering of Greats

Chapter 1645 – Offensive and Defensive

Chapter 1646 – Conditions of an Empyrean

Chapter 1647 – Auction of the Jade Dragon Horn

Chapter 1648 – All Materials Collected

Chapter 1649 – The Dragon Egg’s Pulse

Chapter 1650 – Ancient Contract

Chapter 1651 – Attention of Peers

Chapter 1652 – Task Complete

Chapter 1653 – Celebration Banquet

Chapter 1654 – Soul Recovery Pill

Chapter 1655 – Seeing Empyrean Divine Mist Once Again

Chapter 1656 – Legend of the Spiritas

Chapter 1657 – Ancient Forbidden Land

Chapter 1658A – Entering Despair Valley

Chapter 1658B – Yin Yang Despair Valley

Chapter 1659 – Void Furnace

Chapter 1660 – Completing the Pill

Chapter 1661 - Forsaken Mortal Tomb

Chapter 1662 – Impacting the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace

Chapter 1663 – Breaking the Dao Diagram

Chapter 1664 – Receiving the Ravenous Wolf

Chapter 1665 – Preparation Is the Key to Success

Chapter 1666 – Late Divine Lord

Chapter 1667 – Soul Empress Sheng Mei

Chapter 1668 – Lin Ming Leaves Seclusion

Chapter 1669 – Asura Sea

Chapter 1670 – The Mystic Realm Opens

Chapter 1671 – Entering the Final Trial

Chapter 1672 – The Worries of Old Su

Chapter 1673 – Completion Percent

Chapter 1674 – Sinister Tricks

Chapter 1675 – Blue-clothed Figure

Chapter 1676 – The Gate of Laws

Chapter 1677 – Difficulty and Completion Percentage

Chapter 1678 – The Gate of Laws Opens

Chapter 1679 – Lin Ming's Choice

Chapter 1680 – Asura Difficulty

Chapter 1681 – The Narrow Road

Chapter 1682 – Reward

Chapter 1683 – Trial of Laws

Chapter 1684 – Black Asura

Chapter 1685 – Three Moves

Chapter 1686 – Profound Laws

Chapter 1687 – Pass

Chapter 1688A – Taunt

Chapter 1688B – The Shadow In the Vortex

Chapter 1689 – Flying Towards the Immortal Palace

Chapter 1690 – Entering the Planet Sized Immortal Palace

Chapter 1691 – The Immortal Palace

Chapter 1692A – The Blue Stone Road

Chapter 1692B - The Blue Stone Road

Chapter 1693 – Holy Scripture

Chapter 1694 – The Final Reward

Chapter 1695 – Asura Blood

Chapter 1696 – Rudimentary Dao Palace

Chapter 1697 – Black Dragon Spear

Chapter 1698 – Bloodthirsty Black Dragon

Chapter 1699 – Venturing Deeper Into the Fourth Level

Chapter 1700 – Plot

Chapter 1701 – Trap

Chapter 1702 – Demonic Energy Force Field

Chapter 1703 – Deal

Chapter 1704 – Cooperation

Chapter 1705 – Beatdown

Chapter 1706 – To Use Another's Knife To Kill

Chapter 1707 – Outplayed

Chapter 1708 – Killing the Crown Prince

Chapter 1709 – Killing and Sealing Them All

Chapter 1710 – Swallowing the Memories

Chapter 1711 – Receiving the Dragon Spear

Chapter 1712 – The Sky Piercing Steps

Chapter 1713 – Climbing the Divine Seal Altar

Chapter 1714 – Xiao Moxian's Change

Chapter 1715 – Sheng Mei's Thoughts

Chapter 1716 – The Final Trial's Fifth Level

Chapter 1717 – Overlord

Chapter 1718 – Undying Inferno

Chapter 1719 – Reaping Souls

Chapter 1720 – Wrath of the Phoenix

Chapter 1721 – Victory or Defeat?

Chapter 1722 – Completion Percent

Chapter 1723 – Undying Polar Ice

Chapter 1724 – Umbral Heaven Ice Array

Chapter 1725 – The Cold Plum Blossom Resists the Snow And Wind

Chapter 1726 – Lin Ming Makes His Move

Chapter 1727 – Turn the Tide

Chapter 1728 – Ice Egg

Chapter 1729 – Exterminating the Undying Polar Ice

Chapter 1730 – Souls of Ice and Fire

Chapter 1731 – Lin Ming's Completion Percent

Chapter 1732 – The Sixth Level

Chapter 1733 – 'Divine'

Chapter 1734 – Emperor Jade

Chapter 1735 – Soul Spring Divine Embryo

Chapter 1736 – The Second Avatar

Chapter 1737 – Three Years

Chapter 1738 – The Final Reward

Chapter 1739 – The Exit Opens

Chapter 1740 – Legend

Chapter 1741 – Law Proclamation

Chapter 1742 – To Settle All Ties

Chapter 1743 – Killing Shadow Overflow

Chapter 1744 – Leaving the Asura Road

Chapter 1745 – Return to the Divine Realm

Chapter 1746 – Monster Emperor's Grand Longevity Feast

Chapter 1747 – Xiao Moxian's Worries

Chapter 1748 – Greeting Divine Dream

Chapter 1749 – Towards the Monster Race

Chapter 1750 – Gathering of Greats

Chapter 1751 – Distress

Chapter 1752 – Poison

Chapter 1753 – Who Is He

Chapter 1754 – House Arrest

Chapter 1755 – Demondawn's Turmoil

Chapter 1756 – Thousand Mile Heartlink

Chapter 1757 – Longevity Feast

Chapter 1758 – Reunion of Young Elites

Chapter 1759 – Meeting The Saint Son

Chapter 1760 – War of Words

Chapter 1761 – Meeting Xiao Moxian

Chapter 1762 - The Method Of Becoming A True Divinity

Chapter 1763 – The Saint Son Proposes Marriage

Chapter 1764 – Lin Ming Proposes Marriage

Chapter 1765 – Spear Drawn

Chapter 1766 – No Road Out

Chapter 1767 – Nine Orifice Exquisite Pill

Chapter 1768 – Scorching Blood Sun

Chapter 1769 – Good Fortune Divine Art

Chapter 1770 – Seizing the Power of Good Fortune

Chapter 1771 – Golden Sandstorm

Chapter 1772 – The Might of the Spirit Bead

Chapter 1773 – The Eruption Within the Silence

Chapter 1774 – Peak Showdown

Chapter 1775 – Another Miraculous Move

Chapter 1776 – Victory or Defeat

Chapter 1777 – Change in the Inner World

Chapter 1778 – I, Holy Lord

Chapter 1779 – The Rewards of Victory

Chapter 1780 – The Flames of Hope

Chapter 1781 – Demondawn’s Advice

Chapter 1782 – Lin Ming’s Plan

Chapter 1783 – The Phoenix Clan’s Grand Celebration

Chapter 1784 – Return

Chapter 1785 – Thunder Punishment’s Inheritance

Chapter 1786 – Entering the Land of Inheritance

Chapter 1787 – Thunder Punishment’s Remnant Soul

Chapter 1788 – Thunder Punishment Sword

Chapter 1789 - Inheritance in Hand

Chapter 1790 – Destroying Thunder Punishment

Chapter 1791 – Opening the Extreme Polar Dao Palace

Chapter 1792 – Towards Soul World

Chapter 1793 – Dreamsoul Heaven

Chapter 1794 – The Human Race of the Soul World

Chapter 1795 – Akashic Dream Battlefield

Chapter 1796 – Zenith Palace

Chapter 1797 – Dispute

Chapter 1798 – Akashic Dream Battlefield Opens

Chapter 1799 – Stealing the Stage

Chapter 1800 – Entering the Battlefield

Chapter 1801 – Emperor God Wall

Chapter 1802 – Empyreans Involved

Chapter 1803 – Bait

Chapter 1804 – Reinforcements

Chapter 1805 – Weeping Blood God Springs

Chapter 1806 – The Soul Cave

Chapter 1807 - Spiritual Storm

Chapter 1808 –Kirin Fruit

Chapter 1809 – Cutting Down the Soul Beasts

Chapter 1810 – Decimation

Chapter 1811 – Mysterious Little Girl

Chapter 1812 – Hidden Treasure

Chapter 1813 – A Grand Killing Feast

Chapter 1814 – Blood Stains the Forest

Chapter 1815 – Kill Them All

Chapter 1816 – Brilliant Fireworks

Chapter 1817 – Killing the World Kings

Chapter 1818 – Empyrean Myriad Ghost

Chapter 1819 – Fighting an Empyrean

Chapter 1820 – Poison Laws

Chapter 1821 – Exterminating Myriad Ghost

Chapter 1822 – Chaos Demon God Retreats

Chapter 1823 – Hidden Treasures

Chapter 1824 – Ancient Ruins

Chapter 1825 – Middle Holy Lord

Chapter 1826 – Exit

Chapter 1827 – One Billion Merit Points

Chapter 1828 – The End of the Battlefield

Chapter 1829 - Fall of an Empyrean

Chapter 1830 – Guru Kunyuan

Chapter 1831 – Rapidly Rising Merit Points

Chapter 1832 – Next to Sheng Mei

Chapter 1833 – Golden Page

Chapter 1834 – Seventh Revolution Sheng Mei

Chapter 1835 – Reward

Chapter 1836 – Fallen God Mountain Range

Chapter 1837 – Jade Lifestone

Chapter 1838 – Enlightenment on the Shrine Platform

Chapter 1839 – Identity Revealed

Chapter 1840 – Surrounded

Chapter 1841 – Clash

Chapter 1842 – Killing, Killing, Killing

Chapter 1843 – Tragic

Chapter 1844 – Change

Chapter 1845 – Sheng Mei Arrives

Chapter 1846 – Chips

Chapter 1847 – All of You, Disperse

Chapter 1848 – First Wood Page

Chapter 1849 – Mysterious Woman

Chapter 1850 – Eye

Chapter 1851A – Moon and Star Struggle For Brilliance

Chapter 1851B – Life and Death

Chapter 1852 – The Concept of Death

Chapter 1853 – Overtake

Chapter 1854 – Enlightenment For 10 Years

Chapter 1855 – Golden Page In Hand

Chapter 1856 – Win And Lose

Chapter 1857 – Samsara of Life and Death

Chapter 1858 – The Old Youth

Chapter 1859 – Sheng Mei’s Sigh

Chapter 1860 – A Hundred Million Years

Chapter 1861 – Struggle

Chapter 1862 – Primeval Universe

Chapter 1863 – Entering the God Race

Chapter 1864 – God Race Royalty

Chapter 1865 – A’Gu

Chapter 1866 – God Race Headquarters

Chapter 1867 – The Goddess’s Necklace

Chapter 1868 – God Race’s Forbidden Land

Chapter 1869 – The Old God Sovereign

Chapter 1870A – Of the Heart

Chapter 1870B – Of the Heart

Chapter 1871 – Selfless

Chapter 1872 – Primordius' Heart

Chapter 1873 – Chosen

Chapter 1874 – God Decrees

Chapter 1875 – Smokeless

Chapter 1876 – Lin Ming's Request

Chapter 1877 – Repairing the Decree

Chapter 1878 – New

Chapter 1879 – The Celestials' Concessions

Chapter 1880 – Entering the Forbidden Land

Chapter 1881 – Tricks

Chapter 1882 – Cold Ice Mirror

Chapter 1883 – Ancient Geniuses

Chapter 1884 – The Past Versus the Present

Chapter 1885 – True Divinity Spirit Treasure

Chapter 1886 – Lin Ming Fights

Chapter 1887 – Another Battle

Chapter 1888 – Enigma

Chapter 1889 – Mysterious Woman

Chapter 1890 - Veil

Chapter 1891 – Reward

Chapter 1892 – Peak Holy Lord

Chapter 1893 – Six Supreme Treasures

Chapter 1894 – Lin Ming's Choice

Chapter 1895 – The God Sovereign's Decision

Chapter 1896 – The Giant Beast in the Blood Pool

Chapter 1897 – Raise the Sails!

Chapter 1898 – Killing an Empyrean

Chapter 1899 – Famine

Chapter 1900 – Asura Primal God Cannon

Chapter 1901 – Blast Through the Void

Chapter 1902 – Guide

Chapter 1903 – The Power of the God Decrees

Chapter 1904 – Good Fortune Saint Sovereign

Chapter 1905 – Asura Decree

Chapter 1906 – Blood Dyes the Starry Skies

Chapter 1907 – The Changes of Time

Chapter 1908 – Love and Pain

Chapter 1909 – Severing the Dragon

Chapter 1910 – Invincible

Chapter 1911 – The Final Counterattack

Chapter 1912 – Black Hole Disintegration

Chapter 1913 – Point

Chapter 1914 – The Strongest Joint Attack

Chapter 1915 – True Divinity Mark

Chapter 1916 – The Lurking Danger

Chapter 1917 – Return (A)

Chapter 1918 – Return (B)

Chapter 1919 – Reunion

Chapter 1920 – The Might of Divine Dream

Chapter 1921 – Emperor Shakya

Chapter 1922 – Absolute Victory

Chapter 1923 – Evacuate

Chapter 1924 – Astral Vault God King

Chapter 1925 – World Annihilation Crisis

Chapter 1926 – Feather

Chapter 1927 – Parting

Chapter 1928 – Soaring Feather God King

Chapter 1929A – A Beautiful Trap

Chapter 1929B – A Beautiful Trap

Chapter 1930 – Soul Source

Chapter 1931A – Love and Hate

Chapter 1931B – Love and Hate

Chapter 1932 – Sword Mountain

Chapter 1933 – How Can I Defy the Heavens?

Chapter 1934 – Old Friends Meet Once More

Chapter 1935A – Revisiting Familiar Lands

Chapter 1935B – Revisiting Familiar Lands

Chapter 1936A – A Snowy Night

Chapter 1936B – A Snowy Night

Chapter 1937 – The Passing of Life

Chapter 1938A – Live Without Regret

Chapter 1938B – Live Without Regret

Chapter 1939 – Dispersing Cultivation

Chapter 1940 – Understanding Life and Death

Chapter 1941 – Opening the Magic Cube Once More

Chapter 1942 – Restoring the Origin

Chapter 1943 – Grand Reincarnation Art

Chapter 1944 – A Single Life (1)

Chapter 1945 - A Single Life (2)

Chapter 1946 - A Single Life (3)

Chapter 1947 - A Single Life (4)

Chapter 1948 - A Single Life (5)

Chapter 1949 - A Single Life (6)

Chapter 1950 - A Single Life (7)

Chapter 1951 - A Single Life (8)

Chapter 1952 - A Single Life (9)

Chapter 1953 - A Single Life (10)

Chapter 1954 – Attacking World King

Chapter 1955 - Lin Ming's World

Chapter 1956 - The End of the First Life

Chapter 1957 - Returning Home

Chapter 1958 - The Second Reincarnation

Chapter 1959 - Return to the Divine Realm

Chapter 1960 - Reentering the Asura Road

Chapter 1961 - Famine’s Avatar

Chapter 1962 - The Final Trial Opens

Chapter 1963 - Entering the Gate of Laws

Chapter 1964 - Change in the Spatial Gate

Chapter 1965 - The Final Gate

Chapter 1966 - Debate In the Void

Chapter 1967 - Completing the Laws

Chapter 1968 - Entering the Immortal Palace Once More

Chapter 1969 - World Seed

Chapter 1970 - The Secret Treasure in the Swamp

Chapter 1971 - Demon Phenomenon

Chapter 1972 - Demon Relic

Chapter 1973 - Artificial Demon

Chapter 1974 - Slaughter

Chapter 1975 - Suppression Through Power

Chapter 1976 – Those Against Me, Die

Chapter 1977A – Stirring Up Trouble

Chapter 1977B – Stirring Up Trouble

Chapter 1978 – Fighting the Undying Polar Ice Once More

Chapter 1979 – Opening the Seventh Level

Chapter 1980 – Emperor Cemetery

Chapter 1981 – Guardians

Chapter 1982 – Empyrean Divine Seal

MW Chapter 1983

MW Chapter 1984

MW Chapter 1985

MW Chapter 1986

MW Chapter 1987

MW Chapter 1988

MW Chapter 1989

MW Chapter 1990

MW Chapter 1991

MW Chapter 1992A

MW Chapter 1992B

MW Chapter 1993

MW Chapter 1994

MW Chapter 1995

MW Chapter 1996

MW Chapter 1997

MW Chapter 1998

MW Chapter 1999

MW Chapter 2000A

MW Chapter 2000B

MW Chapter 2001

MW Chapter 2002

MW Chapter 2003

MW Chapter 2004

MW Chapter 2005

MW Chapter 2006

MW Chapter 2007

MW Chapter 2008

MW Chapter 2009

MW Chapter 2010

MW Chapter 2011

MW Chapter 2012

MW Chapter 2013

MW Chapter 2014A

MW Chapter 2014B

MW Chapter 2015

MW Chapter 2016

MW Chapter 2017

MW Chapter 2018

MW Chapter 2019

MW Chapter 2020

MW Chapter 2021

MW Chapter 2022

MW Chapter 2023

MW Chapter 2024

MW Chapter 2025

MW Chapter 2026

MW Chapter 2027

MW Chapter 2028

MW Chapter 2029

MW Chapter 2030

MW Chapter 2031

MW Chapter 2032

MW Chapter 2033

MW Chapter 2034

MW Chapter 2035

MW Chapter 2036

MW Chapter 2037

MW Chapter 2038

MW Chapter 2039

MW Chapter 2040

MW Chapter 2041

MW Chapter 2042

MW Chapter 2043

MW Chapter 2044

MW Chapter 2045

MW Chapter 2046

MW Chapter 2047

MW Chapter 2048

MW Chapter 2049

MW Chapter 2050

MW Chapter 2051

MW Chapter 2052

MW Chapter 2053

MW Chapter 2054

MW Chapter 2055

MW Chapter 2056

MW Chapter 2057

MW Chapter 2058

MW Chapter 2059

MW Chapter 2060

MW Chapter 2061

MW Chapter 2062

MW Chapter 2063

MW Chapter 2064

MW Chapter 2065

MW Chapter 2066

MW Chapter 2067

MW Chapter 2068

MW Chapter 2069

MW Chapter 2070

MW Chapter 2071

MW Chapter 2072

MW Chapter 2073

MW Chapter 2074

MW Chapter 2075

MW Chapter 2076

MW Chapter 2077

MW Chapter 2078

MW Chapter 2079

MW Chapter 2080

MW Chapter 2081

MW Chapter 2082

MW Chapter 2083

MW Chapter 2084

MW Chapter 2085

MW Chapter 2086

MW Chapter 2087

MW Chapter 2088

MW Chapter 2089

MW Chapter 2090

MW Chapter 2091

MW Chapter 2092

MW Chapter 2093

MW Chapter 2094

MW Chapter 2095

MW Chapter 2096

MW Chapter 2097

MW Chapter 2098

MW Chapter 2099

MW Chapter 2100

MW Chapter 2101

MW Chapter 2102

MW Chapter 2103

MW Chapter 2104

MW Chapter 2105

MW Chapter 2106

MW Chapter 2107

MW Chapter 2108

MW Chapter 2109

MW Chapter 2110

MW Chapter 2111

MW Chapter 2112

MW Chapter 2113

MW Chapter 2114

MW Chapter 2115

MW Chapter 2116

MW Chapter 2117

MW Chapter 2118

MW Chapter 2119

MW Chapter 2120

MW Chapter 2121

MW Chapter 2122

MW Chapter 2123

MW Chapter 2124

MW Chapter 2125

MW Chapter 2126

MW Chapter 2127A

MW Chapter 2127B

MW Chapter 2128

MW Chapter 2129

MW Chapter 2130

MW Chapter 2131

MW Chapter 2132

MW Chapter 2133

MW Chapter 2134

MW Chapter 2135

MW Chapter 2136

MW Chapter 2137

MW Chapter 2138

MW Chapter 2139

MW Chapter 2140

MW Chapter 2141

MW Chapter 2142

MW Chapter 2143

MW Chapter 2144

MW Chapter 2145

MW Chapter 2146

MW Chapter 2147

MW Chapter 2148

MW Chapter 2149

MW Chapter 2150

MW Chapter 2151

MW Chapter 2152

MW Chapter 2153

MW Chapter 2154

MW Chapter 2155

MW Chapter 2156

MW Chapter 2157

MW Chapter 2158

MW Chapter 2159

MW Chapter 2160

MW Chapter 2161

MW Chapter 2162

MW Chapter 2163

MW Chapter 2164

MW Chapter 2165

MW Chapter 2166

MW Chapter 2167

MW Chapter 2168

MW Chapter 2169

MW Chapter 2170

MW Chapter 2171

MW Chapter 2172

MW Chapter 2173

MW Chapter 2174

MW Chapter 2175

MW Chapter 2176

MW Chapter 2177

MW Chapter 2178

MW Chapter 2179

MW Chapter 2180

MW Chapter 2181

MW Chapter 2182

MW Chapter 2183

MW Chapter 2184

MW Chapter 2185

MW Chapter 2186

MW Chapter 2187

MW Chapter 2188

MW Chapter 2189

MW Chapter 2190

MW Chapter 2191

MW Chapter 2192

MW Chapter 2193

MW Chapter 2194

MW Chapter 2195

MW Chapter 2196

MW Chapter 2197

MW Chapter 2198

MW Chapter 2199

MW Chapter 2200

MW Chapter 2201

MW Chapter 2202

MW Chapter 2203

MW Chapter 2204

MW Chapter 2205

MW Chapter 2206

MW Chapter 2207

MW Chapter 2208

MW Chapter 2209

MW Chapter 2210

MW Chapter 2211

MW Chapter 2212

MW Chapter 2213

MW Chapter 2214

MW Chapter 2215

MW Chapter 2216

MW Chapter 2217

MW Chapter 2218

MW Chapter 2219

MW Chapter 2220

MW Chapter 2221

MW Chapter 2222

MW Chapter 2223

MW Chapter 2224

MW Chapter 2225

MW Chapter 2226

MW Chapter 2227

MW Chapter 2228

MW Chapter 2229

MW Chapter 2230

MW Chapter 2231

MW Chapter 2232

MW Chapter 2233

MW Chapter 2234

MW Chapter 2235

MW Chapter 2236

MW Chapter 2237

MW Chapter 2238

MW Chapter 2239

MW Chapter 2240

MW Chapter 2241

MW Chapter 2242

MW Chapter 2243

MW Chapter 2244

MW Chapter 2245A

MW Chapter 2245B

MW Chapter 2246

MW Chapter 2247

MW Chapter 2248

MW Chapter 2249

MW Chapter 2250

MW Chapter 2251

MW Chapter 2252

MW Chapter 2253

MW Chapter 2254

MW Chapter 2255

Afterword

Table of Contents

1. Prologue: Magic Cube
2. Chapter 1 – Lin Ming
3. Chapter 2 – Peculiar Stone
4. Chapter 3 – Soul With No Master
5. Chapter 4 – Legacy Skill
6. Chapter 5 – Wager
7. Chapter 6 – Fighting Barehanded
8. Chapter 7 – Innate Divine Strength?
9. Chapter 8 – Qin Xingxuan
10. Chapter 9 – Inscription Technique
11. Chapter 10 – Heavenly Ladies Gathered in the Holy Land
12. Chapter 11 – Elder Senior Sister
13. Chapter 12 – Qin Xingxuan’s Invitation
14. Chapter 13 – Inscription, Go!
15. Chapter 14 – Increasing Strength
16. Chapter 15 – Overwhelming Symbol
17. Chapter 16 – Frustration
18. Chapter 17 – Lan Yunyue
19. Chapter 18 – Sold

20. Chapter 19 – Muyi's Doubts

21. Chapter 20 – Inscription Skill

22. Chapter 21 – 'Inscription Apprentice' Symbol?

23. Chapter 22 – Strength and Delicacy

24. Chapter 23 – Xiantian

25. Chapter 24 – Understanding

26. Chapter 25 – World Peace is My Duty

27. Chapter 26 – Breakthrough

28. Chapter 27 – Examination, Start!

29. Chapter 28 – Conspiracy

30. Chapter 29 – Overturn the Cavalry

31. Chapter 30 – Beating the General's Son

32. Chapter 31 – Regretting Capture

33. Chapter 32 – Oppress with Others' Power

34. Chapter 33 – Strength Trial

35. Chapter 34 – Dream Trial

36. Chapter 35 – The Lake's Jade Platform

37. Chapter 36 – Lin Ming's Heart of Martial Arts

38. Chapter 37 – Invulnerable to Ten Thousand Evils

39. Chapter 38 – The Exquisite Pagoda

40. Chapter 39 – Unstoppable Force

41. Chapter 40 – Break Through the Fourth Floor
42. Chapter 41 – Fifth Floor of the Exquisite Pagoda
43. Chapter 42 – The First Place Candidate
44. Chapter 43 – Refusal to Accept
45. Chapter 44 – Killing You is Just Right
46. Chapter 45 – Shatter the Nine Paths of Truth
47. Chapter 46 – Two Top Quality Pills
48. Chapter 47 – Lin Ming's Soul Talent
49. Chapter 48 – Inscription Master Examination
50. Chapter 49 – Bright Buddha Plucks the Lotus
51. Chapter 50 – Obtaining the Materials
52. Chapter 51 – Ranking Stone
53. Chapter 52 – Juniors of the Lin Family
54. Chapter 53 – Provocation
55. Chapter 54 – Unfair Gambling Bets
56. Chapter 55 – Fight
57. Chapter 56 – Large Success of the True Essence Formula's First Layer
58. Chapter 57 – Ranking War
59. Chapter 58 – The Ten Thousand Killing Array
60. Chapter 59 – The Gap Between the New and the Old
61. Chapter 60 – The Tiger Enters a Flock of Sheep

62. Chapter 61 – Spear

63. Chapter 62 – The Final Grade

64. Chapter 63 – Divine Weapon Hall

65. Chapter 64 – Complex Craft

66. Chapter 65 – The Heavy Spear, Penetrating Rainbow

67. Chapter 66 – Martial House's Resources

68. Chapter 67 – Unknown-Grade Martial Skill

69. Chapter 68 – Lin Ming's Wonderful Selection

70. Chapter 69 – Strength Training 'Flow like Silk'

71. Chapter 70 – Icy Pond Waterfall

72. Chapter 71 – Cultivation Method Complete

73. Chapter 72 – Large Success of the Spirit Cure Symbol

74. Chapter 73 – Viscera Training Time

75. Chapter 74 – Steady Spear At The Waterfall

76. Chapter 75 – Day of the Gambling Match

77. Chapter 76 – Ling Sen, Ta Ku

78. Chapter 77 – When I Need to Draw it, I Will Draw it

79. Chapter 78 – Empty Hand Meets The Naked Blade

80. Chapter 79 – Flood Dragon Goes to Sea

81. Chapter 80 – Rudimentary Martial Intent

82. Chapter 81 – Strength Training's 'Flow Like Silk'

83. Chapter 82 – Powers Far and Wide

84. Chapter 83 – Struggle of the Princes

85. Chapter 84 – Gathering of Masters

86. Chapter 85 – Murong Zi, Bai Jingyun

87. Chapter 86 – The Limit of Killing Speed

88. Chapter 87 – Sweeping Away All

89. Chapter 88 – The Final Spear

90. Chapter 89 – The Result That Defies Heaven's Will

91. Chapter 90 – Cloud Prince

92. Chapter 91 – Challenged at Spear Point

93. Chapter 92 – Declined

94. Chapter 93 – Obstacle

95. Chapter 94 – Martial Intent Reappears

96. Chapter 95 – The Effect of a Heart of Martial Arts

97. Chapter 96 – Instructor Hong Xi

98. Chapter 97 – Seven Kinds of Martial Intent

99. Chapter 98 – The Force of Vibration

100. Chapter 99 – Fast Spear

101. Chapter 100 – Viscera Training, Large Success

102. Chapter 101 – Arrival of the Decisive Battle

103. Chapter 102 – The Focus of All Eyes

104. Chapter 103 – Gather Momentum
105. Chapter 104 – Amazing Spear
106. Chapter 105 – Torrential River Rope!
107. Chapter 106 – Rise to Fame!
108. Chapter 107 – The Pass of Desire
109. Chapter 108 – Grand Banquet
110. Chapter 109 – The Acacia Faction
111. Chapter 110 – The Seven Profound Decree
112. Chapter 111 – Wang Gan's Calculations
113. Chapter 112 – Crazy Zhu Yan
114. Chapter 113 – The Tenth Prince's Decision
115. Chapter 114 – Yang Lin's Gift
116. Chapter 115 – Zhang Guanyu
117. Chapter 116 – Maddening Materials
118. Chapter 117 – Guest Inscription Master
119. Chapter 118 – Repairing the 'Superhuman Strength Symbol'
120. Chapter 119 – Flowers in the Storm
121. Chapter 120 – Icefrost Guard
122. Chapter 121 – The Vanished Blood Symbol
123. Chapter 122 – The Magic Cube Reappears
124. Chapter 123 – Three Kinds of Martial Skills

125. Chapter 124 – Violent Wind Tunnel
126. Chapter 125 – Masochistic Cultivation
127. Chapter 126 – Zhang Guanyu Moves
128. Chapter 127 – Despicable Means
129. Chapter 128 – Liao Wenyuan
130. Chapter 129 – Medium-Grade Human-Step Sword
131. Chapter 130 – One Tael of Star Obsidian
132. Chapter 131 – Resurgence of Wind and Clouds
133. Chapter 132 – Let's See Who Is More Cruel
134. Chapter 133 – Digging Your Own Grave
135. Chapter 134 – Small Success of Movement
136. Chapter 135 – Body Inscription
137. Chapter 136 – Altering Muscle Stage
138. Chapter 137 – The Might of 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void'
139. Chapter 138 – Heavy Profound Soft Spear
140. Chapter 139 – Two Geniuses
141. Chapter 140 – Blazing Fighting Spirit
142. Chapter 141 – Extreme Speed
143. Chapter 142 – Heavy Profound Soft Spear!
144. Chapter 143 – True Essence Manifestation
145. Chapter 144 – Ouyang Dihua

146. Chapter 145 – Heretical God Seed

147. Chapter 146 – Sorrowful Bai Jingyun

148. Chapter 147 – I'll Waste You Tonight

149. Chapter 148 – Better Today Than Tomorrow

150. Chapter 149 – Life Death Contract

151. Chapter 150 – Pinnacle Movement Ability

152. Chapter 151 – Measure for Measure

153. Chapter 152 – Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead

154. Chapter 153 – Oppressing Aura

155. Chapter 154 – Qin Ziya

156. Chapter 155 – Miniature Thunder Fire Killing Array

157. Chapter 156 – Devouring Lava Fire

158. Chapter 157 – Flame Essence

159. Chapter 158 – Thunder Valley

160. Chapter 159 – Thunder Soul

161. Chapter 160 – The Power of Thunder and Fire

162. Chapter 161 – Swallowing the Blood Lingzhi

163. Chapter 162 – Trap

164. Chapter 163 – The Moment of Life and Death!

165. Chapter 164 – Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation

166. Chapter 165 – Hollow Flame Essence

167. Chapter 166 – Witch Sisters

168. Chapter 167 – Sending Sheep Into the Tiger's Den

169. Chapter 168 – Playing the Role of the Fool

170. Chapter 169 – Fatebound Heartcrush Bug

171. Chapter 170 – Sorcerer Pagoda

172. Chapter 171 – Killing the Double Devils

173. Chapter 172 – Na Yi's Hatred

174. Chapter 173 – Low-Grade Heaven-Step

175. Chapter 174 – Sorcerer Pagoda's Secret

176. Chapter 175 – Hungry Ghosts

177. Chapter 176 – Witch Slave

178. Chapter 177 – Legend of the Divine Kingdom

179. Chapter 178 – True Essence Bone Forging!

180. Chapter 179 – Three Astonishing Treasures

181. Chapter 180 – Confronting Houtian

182. Chapter 181 – Gravity Cage

183. Chapter 182 – The Mysterious Seventh Floor

184. Chapter 183 – Samsara of 100 Lives

185. Chapter 184 – Reverse Scale Blood

186. Chapter 185 – Unexpected Fusion

187. Chapter 186 – Wolf Toxin

188. Chapter 187 – Eternal Flame

189. Chapter 188 – Na Shui's Thoughts

190. Chapter 189 – Fire Worm Military

191. Chapter 190 – Samsara Martial Intent

192. Chapter 191 – Drain Your Soul

193. Chapter 192 – Lost Vermillion Bird

194. Chapter 193 – Killing Chi Guda

195. Chapter 194 – Sacred Flame's Flame Essence

196. Chapter 195 – Prestige of the Saint Beast

197. Chapter 196 – Thundercrash Mountain

198. Chapter 197 – Thundergrass

199. Chapter 198 – Thunder Lizard

200. Chapter 199 – Second Kill

201. Chapter 200 – Thunder Attribute Treasures

202. Chapter 201 – Nest Cavern

203. Chapter 202 – Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo

204. Chapter 203 – Near the Summit

205. Chapter 204 – The Woman In Red

206. Chapter 205 – Struggle of the Dragon and Phoenix

207. Chapter 206 – Flood Dragon's Cave

208. Chapter 207 – Plundered Treasures

209. Chapter 208 – Returning With Riches

210. Chapter 209 – Injured Maiden

211. Chapter 210 – Healing Wounds

212. Chapter 211 – Peculiar Young Boy

213. Chapter 212 – Thunder Soul Evolution

214. Chapter 213 – Magnetic Birth Stone

215. Chapter 214 – Life's Most Unforgettable Experience

216. Chapter 215 – Absorbing the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder

217. Chapter 216 – Controlling the Thunder Soul

218. Chapter 217 – Power of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder

219. Chapter 218 – Return to Sky Fortune Kingdom

220. Chapter 219 – I'll Let You Struggle In Despair

221. Chapter 220 – Suppression of Absolute Power

222. Chapter 221 – Killing Ouyang Dihua

223. Chapter 222 – The Spreading News of Death

224. Chapter 223 – Perpetrated By A Xiantian Master?

225. Chapter 224 – Lin Ming's Return

226. Chapter 225 – Start of the Qualifiers

227. Chapter 226 – Lin Ming VS Jiang Bin

228. Chapter 227 – Ling Sen's Strength

229. Chapter 228 – Fighting Ta Ku

230. Chapter 229 – Over 10,000 Jins of Strength
231. Chapter 230 – Martial Intent Showdown
232. Chapter 231 – Divine Punishment Blade
233. Chapter 232 – Awakening Thunder
234. Chapter 233 – Earth-step Treasure
235. Chapter 234 – Profound Sky City
236. Chapter 235 – Conflict
237. Chapter 236 – Youthful Instincts
238. Chapter 237 – Soul Force Genius
239. Chapter 238 – Jiang Lanjian
240. Chapter 239 – Let Me Use The Seraphic Pond
241. Chapter 240 – Mountain Gate Trial
242. Chapter 241 – A Gathering of Heroes
243. Chapter 242 – The Martial Meeting Begins
244. Chapter 243 – Fairy Maiden Qinghong
245. Chapter 244 – Standing Out as an Amazing Talent
246. Chapter 245 – A Second to Defeat Wang Mu
247. Chapter 246 – Hope
248. Chapter 247 – Out of the Group Stages and Into the Top 100!
249. Chapter 248 – The Second Round Begins
250. Chapter 249 – Jingchan Duo

251. Chapter 250 – Lin Ming VS Bi Tinghua
252. Chapter 251 – One Willing to Fight, One Willing to Endure
253. Chapter 252 – Blood Sacrifice Soul Alacrity Law
254. Chapter 253 – Absolute Defense
255. Chapter 254 – Digging for Talent?
256. Chapter 255 – Entering the First Tier
257. Chapter 256 – The Final Competition Begins
258. Chapter 257 – Shield of Thunder
259. Chapter 258 – Strike of Thunder
260. Chapter 259 – Puppet Faction
261. Chapter 260 – Allow Me Three Moves?
262. Chapter 261 – What They Call Disparity
263. Chapter 262 – Three Moves To Defeat The Opponent
264. Chapter 263 – Genius of the Spear Path
265. Chapter 264 – Zhang Yanzhao's Blood Wave Saber
266. Chapter 265 – Saber like Tiger, Spear like Dragon
267. Chapter 266 – Blood King's Triple Murder
268. Chapter 267 – Azure True Essence
269. Chapter 268 – Abyssal Flames
270. Chapter 269 – Lin Ming VS Jiang Lanjian
271. Chapter 270 – Concept Showdown

272. Chapter 271 – Stealing From a Master

273. Chapter 272 – The Hero of Our Era

274. Chapter 273 – Sonic Attack

275. Chapter 274 – Insight

276. Chapter 275 – Pulse Condensation Breakthrough

277. Chapter 276 – Tempering Marrow Realm

278. Chapter 277 – Against the Fire Dragon

279. Chapter 278 – The Outcome is Clear

280. Chapter 279 – The Last Day

281. Chapter 280 – Soaring Strength

282. Chapter 281 – Entering the Top Three

283. Chapter 282 – Lin Ming VS Mugu Buyu

284. Chapter 283 – Puppet Battle Body

285. Chapter 284 – Evil Fire God VS Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder

286. Chapter 285 – Unstoppable

287. Chapter 286 – Closing the Curtains on the Final Act

288. Chapter 287 – Blue and Black Twin Swords

289. Chapter 288 – The Peak of All Battles

290. Chapter 289 – The Limit of Speed

291. Chapter 290 – The Second Sword

292. Chapter 291 – The Final Strike

293. Chapter 292 – Reward

294. Chapter 293 – I'll Use My Materials

295. Chapter 294 – Three Ranks of Human, Earth, Heaven

296. Chapter 295 – Heaven-step Talent

297. Chapter 296 – I Do Not Accept

298. Chapter 297 – Between Cloud and Mud

299. Chapter 298 – Convincing Strength

300. Chapter 299 – Heaven Opening Pill In Hand

301. Chapter 300 – Spear Refining Grandmaster

302. Chapter 301 – Triumphant Return to the Nation

303. Chapter 302 – Serpent

304. Chapter 303 – Come Back In 10 Years

305. Chapter 304 – There Is Always Someone Higher

306. Chapter 305 – Path of Refining as the Path of Martial Arts

307. Chapter 306 – Swallowing the Heaven Opening Pill

308. Chapter 307 – Medicine Strength Washing Marrow

309. Chapter 308 – Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle

310. Chapter 309 – Child of Flame

311. Chapter 310 – Divine Spear Complete

312. Chapter 311 – Return to the Southern Wilderness

313. Chapter 312 – Fire Worm Church Leader

314. Chapter 313 – Exterminating Chi Yue
315. Chapter 314 – Night of Flowing Blood
316. Chapter 314.2 – Absorbing the Earthcore Crimson Flame
317. Chapter 315 – Sect Destruction
318. Chapter 316 – Beast Tide
319. Chapter 317 – Returning Home
320. Chapter 318 – The Beast Tide Comes
321. Chapter 319 – Brutal Melee
322. Chapter 320 – Sweeping Away All
323. Chapter 321 – Hidden Murderous Intent
324. Chapter 322 – Beheading the Python
325. Chapter 323 – Uninvited Guest
326. Chapter 324 – The Girl in White
327. Chapter 325 – Beast Tide's Night Attack
328. Chapter 326 – Assassin
329. Chapter 327 – You Cannot Stop Me
330. Chapter 328 – No Path to Heaven, No Door to Earth
331. Chapter 329 – The Feeling of Being Ignored
332. Chapter 330 – Fight
333. Chapter 331 – Sludge Monster
334. Chapter 332 – Brilliance of Thunderfire

335. Chapter 333 – Lan Yi’s Request

336. Chapter 334 – Moon Seizing Sect’s Hidden Treasures

337. Chapter 335 – Concealment Technique

338. Chapter 336 – Sharing Secrets

339. Chapter 337 – Take Action

340. Chapter 338 – Speed of Life and Death

341. Chapter 339 – Barren Mountain Dead End

342. Chapter 340 – Shattered Crystal Blood Diffusion

343. Chapter 341 – With Effort, Everything Is Possible

344. Chapter 342 – Marrow like Golden Soup

345. Chapter 343 – Broken Bones

346. Chapter 344 – Thunder Breaking Demon Arts

347. Chapter 345 – Reborn

348. Chapter 346 – Location of the Hidden Treasure

349. Chapter 347 – A Storm Is Coming

350. Chapter 348 – A Young Girl’s Desires

351. Chapter 349 – To Inherit

352. Chapter 350 – Dark Moon Island

353. Chapter 351 – Entering the Treasure Storeroom

354. Chapter 352 – Seclusion

355. Chapter 353 – Divine Phoenix Island

356. Chapter 354 – Parasol Tree Pavilion

357. Chapter 355 – Entering the Sect

358. Chapter 356 – The Birthday Banquet Begins

359. Chapter 357 – To See Blood

360. Chapter 358 – Skill Competition

361. Chapter 359 – Fury

362. Chapter 360 – Don’t Worry

363. Chapter 361 – Surrounded by Six Sects

364. Chapter 362 – Close Contact Combat

365. Chapter 363 – Special Body

366. Chapter 364 – Trap

367. Chapter 365 – I’ll Take All Comers

368. Chapter 366 – The Same Trick

369. Chapter 367 – Saint Rank Talent

370. Chapter 368 – Disdaining All Heroes

371. Chapter 369 – Battle Marathon

372. Chapter 370 – Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky

373. Chapter 371 – What Can You Do To Me?

374. Chapter 372 – Spear Dancing In the Clouds

375. Chapter 373 – Legend of the Saintess

376. Chapter 374 – Metal Essence

377. Chapter 375 – Spear Potential

378. Chapter 376 – Pale Youth

379. Chapter 377 – Demon Region's Saint Son

380. Chapter 378 – Purple Air Dawns from the East, A Pair Of Dragons Will Struggle

381. Chapter 379 – Spit In Your Face

382. Chapter 380 – Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder

383. Chapter 381 – Netherworld Emperor's Descendant

384. Chapter 382 – Thunder Soul Clash

385. Chapter 383 – Great Desolate Blood Halberd

386. Chapter 384 – Tempering Marrow VS Devil Arts

387. Chapter 385 – Battle of Kings

388. Chapter 386 – Action First, Consequences Later

389. Chapter 387 – Confrontation

390. Chapter 388 – Alliance

391. Chapter 389 – Celebration Party

392. Chapter 390 – Absorbing the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder

393. Chapter 391 – New Thunder Soul

394. Chapter 392 – Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm

395. Chapter 393 – Drops of Blood, Entering the Mystic Realm

396. Chapter 394 – Concept of Fire

397. Chapter 395 – Fallen Star Flame

398. Chapter 396 – Subdue
399. Chapter 397 – Ancient Phoenix Main Hall
400. Chapter 398 – Bloodline Test
401. Chapter 399 – Realm of the Gods' Language
402. Chapter 400 – Final General Level Smelting Trial
403. Chapter 401 – Seven Days
404. Chapter 402 – News of Death
405. Chapter 403 – Endless Trial
406. Chapter 404 – Strange River
407. Chapter 405 – War Begins
408. Chapter 406 – Transfer Order
409. Chapter 407 – Rescue Letter
410. Chapter 408 – Exit
411. Chapter 409 – To the South Sea Battlefield
412. Chapter 410 – Destination: Blood Demon Island
413. Chapter 411 – Demon God
414. Chapter 412 – The Sound of Broken Jade
415. Chapter 413 – An Eternal Instant
416. Chapter 414 – Do Not Move, You Will Be Safe
417. Chapter 416 – The Feeling of Not Losing Her, How Blissful
418. Chapter 417 – Towards the Seven Profound Valleys

419. Chapter 418 – Seven Profound Valleys Banquet
420. Chapter 419 – Take Your Life
421. Chapter 420 – Those Who Block My Path Will Die
422. Chapter 421 – Sweeping All Away
423. Chapter 422 – Acacia Sovereign Ouyang
424. Chapter 423 – Purple Flame Crystal Conversion
425. Chapter 424 – Horrifyingly Fierce
426. Chapter 425 – Stones Dyed With Blood
427. Chapter 426 – Auspicious Sign of the Heavens
428. Chapter 427 – Changing Heavens
429. Chapter 428 – Opening the Magic Cube Again
430. Chapter 429 – Demon Emperor
431. Chapter 430 – Returning to Divine Phoenix Island
432. Chapter 431 – No Choice Left
433. Chapter 432 – I'll Compensate
434. Chapter 433 – Blood Red Jade Slip
435. Chapter 434 – Sitting and Gathering Treasures
436. Chapter 435 – Marriage Matters
437. Chapter 436 – Slaughtering Path of the Battlefield
438. Chapter 437 – Life Destruction
439. Chapter 438 – South Sea Wartime Alliance

440. Chapter 439 – First Class Soldier
441. Chapter 440 – The Killing Hunt Begins
442. Chapter 441 – Blood Drinking Seal
443. Chapter 442 – Fire Ax
444. Chapter 443 – Spiritual Forest
445. Chapter 444 – Zombie Guard
446. Chapter 445 – Behead
447. Chapter 446 – Demon Emperor’s Letter
448. Chapter 447 – Might of the Halberd Arts
449. Chapter 448 – Blood Springs
450. Chapter 449 – Ancient Battlefield
451. Chapter 450 – The Ancient Array Opens
452. Chapter 451 – The World is About To Collapse
453. Chapter 452 – Hidden Death Traps
454. Chapter 453 – Ten Breaths of Time
455. Chapter 454 – The Title of Blood Demon
456. Chapter 455 – I Was Impulsive
457. Chapter 456 – Nirvana Dragon Root
458. Chapter 457 – Ancient Transmission Array
459. Chapter 458 – A Storm Is Stirring
460. Chapter 459 – Gathering of Lords

461. Chapter 460 – Breaking through the Void

462. Chapter 461 – Main World

463. Chapter 462 – Different Laws

464. Chapter 463 – Sorry, Please Make Way

465. Chapter 464 – Demon God Imperial Palace

466. Chapter 465 – Bloody Wilderness

467. Chapter 466 – Complete Suppression

468. Chapter 467 – Killing Strike

469. Chapter 468 – Nameless Manual

470. Chapter 469 – Arrogance

471. Chapter 470 – Fight

472. Chapter 471 – Renowned Name

473. Chapter 472 – Tragic

474. Chapter 473 – Slaughter

475. Chapter 474 – Continuously Killing Three People

476. Chapter 475 – The Traitorous Trio

477. Chapter 476 – Opening The Array

478. Chapter 477 – Lei Jingtian Approaches

479. Chapter 478 – Escape Symbol

480. Chapter 479 – Wait For Me There

481. Chapter 480 – I Will Walk My Life With You

482. Chapter 481 – The Desperation of Mu Qingyi
483. Chapter 482 – Crazy Plan
484. Chapter 483 – White Light
485. Chapter 484 – Into the Imperial Palace
486. Chapter 485 – Exposed
487. Chapter 486 – Trap Puppets
488. Chapter 487 – Toxic Gray Frog
489. Chapter 488 – Opening the Demon Emperor's Medicine Garden
490. Chapter 489 – Two Spiritual Roots
491. Chapter 490 – Xuan Wuji Destroys the Array
492. Chapter 491 – A Vow to Break the Array
493. Chapter 492 – Cosmic Melting Furnace
494. Chapter 493 – Terrifying Red Light
495. Chapter 494 – Opening the Ancient Array
496. Chapter 495 – A 10 Mile Distance
497. Chapter 496 – Under the Heavens, Who Can Stop Me?
498. Chapter 497 – The Second Nirvana Dragon Root
499. Chapter 498 – Entering the Cave Once More
500. Chapter 499 – Old Dog
501. Chapter 500 – Receiving the Furnace
502. Chapter 501 – The Great Escape

503. Chapter 502 – Absorbing the Nirvana Dragon Root

504. Chapter 503 – Refining the Dragon Root

505. Chapter 504 – Tempering Marrow Large Success

506. Chapter 505 – In the Rain

507. Chapter 506 – Your Thunder Soul Isn't Too Bad

508. Chapter 507 – Irresistible Power

509. Chapter 508 – End of the Road

510. Chapter 509 – Disenchanting Dream Light

511. Chapter 510 – Ten Year Period

512. Chapter 511 – Departing

513. Chapter 512 – Laws of Space and Time

514. Chapter 513 – Giant Demon World

515. Chapter 514 – Slap Yourself 50 Times

516. Chapter 515 – Get an Inch, Want a Mile

517. Chapter 516 – Qing He

518. Chapter 517 – The Third Thunder Soul

519. Chapter 518 – Rebel

520. Chapter 519 – Blooming Blood

521. Chapter 520 – Step Onto the Killing Path

522. Chapter 521 – The Six Elders

523. Chapter 522 – Polaris, Blood Slaughter Steppes

524. Chapter 523 – 12 Winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo

525. Chapter 524 – Muk Gu

526. Chapter 525 – Murder in the Streets

527. Chapter 526 – Soaring Red Light

528. Chapter 527 – Robbers

529. Chapter 528 – Polaris City

530. Chapter 529 – Polar Skysplit Tower

531. Chapter 530 – First Victory

532. Chapter 531 – Battle

533. Chapter 532 – Unchallenged

534. Chapter 533 – Seven Star Heavenly Demon

535. Chapter 534 – Remembrance

536. Chapter 535 – Threaten

537. Chapter 536 – Skysplit Tower's Second Floor

538. Chapter 537 – Shattered Soul Domain

539. Chapter 538 – Strength of a Four-winged Heavenly Demon

540. Chapter 539 – Three Straight Wins

541. Chapter 540 – Top Grade Practice Area

542. Chapter 541 – Enlightenment Once More

543. Chapter 542 – Another Step Further

544. Chapter 543 – Fey King Battle Body

545. Chapter 544 – Measure for Measure

546. Chapter 545 – Bloody Battle

547. Chapter 546 – Great Harvest

548. Chapter 547 – Enhanced Concepts

549. Chapter 548 – Eighth Stage Life Destruction

550. Chapter 549 – Muk Gu’s Suggestion

551. Chapter 550 – Xing Tian

552. Chapter 551 – Decided Battle

553. Chapter 552 – Middle Xiantian Realm

554. Chapter 553 – Fighting Xue Man

555. Chapter 554 – Supernatural Strength

556. Chapter 555 – The Power of Conception

557. Chapter 556 – Xing Tian Declares War

558. Chapter 557 – Ancient Tome

559. Chapter 558 – The Match Begins

560. Chapter 559 – Concept of Annihilation

561. Chapter 560 – Blood Demon Descends

562. Chapter 561 – King Emblem

563. Chapter 562 – Road of Emperor

564. Chapter 563 – The Eight Inner Hidden Gates

565. Chapter 564 – Nameless Divine Pill

566. Chapter 565 – Gate of Healing

567. Chapter 566 – Into the Third Floor

568. Chapter 567 – Concept of Thunder

569. Chapter 568 – Self-created Style

570. Chapter 569 – The First Match

571. Chapter 570 – The Wonderful Effect of Concepts

572. Chapter 571 – Demonic Gold Insects

573. Chapter 572 – Extreme Attack Speed

574. Chapter 573 – The Road of a Martial Arts Master

575. Chapter 574 – Late Xiantian Realm

576. Chapter 575 – Termination Emblem

577. Chapter 576 – Crush

578. Chapter 577 – 87 Slaughter Points

579. Chapter 578 – The Origin of the Black Glass Bead

580. Chapter 579 – The King's Cage

581. Chapter 580 – Qualification Trial

582. Chapter 581 – Purple Comet, Penetrating Rainbow

583. Chapter 582 – Titled Asura

584. Chapter 583 – Give You One Day to Leave

585. Chapter 584 – Opening the Cage

586. Chapter 585 – Heavenly Demon Force Field

587. Chapter 586 – Chaos Prison

588. Chapter 587 – Perhaps, Him Alone In 10,000 Years

589. Chapter 588 – King's Cage, 100 Days

590. Chapter 589 – Crisis

591. Chapter 590 – Betting It All

592. Chapter 591 – Break Through the Eight Inner Hidden Gates

593. Chapter 592 – Breaking Through the Last Cage

594. Chapter 593 - Asura of the Heavenly Demon Martial Intent

595. Chapter 594 – Return With A Blood Sacrifice To This Spear

596. Chapter 595 – Sacrifice To My Saber

597. Chapter 596 – To Use Fingers As a Spear

598. Chapter 597 – No Backing Down

599. Chapter 598 – Three Continuous Matches

600. Chapter 599 – Fighting Kai Yang

601. Chapter 600 – Instant Death

602. Chapter 601 – Saber Light Domain

603. Chapter 602 – Another Killing

604. Chapter 603 – Battle Spirit

605. Chapter 604 – Why Don't You Come Down and Play With Me?

606. Chapter 605 – Force Field in Full Bloom

607. Chapter 606 – Contract Beast – Isolation Dragon

608. Chapter 607 – A Beautiful Spear

609. Chapter 608 – Becoming A High Lord

610. Chapter 609 – High Lord Heian's Inheritance

611. Chapter 610 – You Either Leave Or Fight

612. Chapter 611 – Skysplit Tower's Tower Master

613. Chapter 612 – The Only Way Out Of This Desperate Situation

614. Chapter 613 – Demonshine, Go!

615. Chapter 614 – The Eternal Demon Abyss Erupts

616. Chapter 615 – Entering the Road of Emperor

617. Chapter 616 – Battle of Wills

618. Chapter 617 – One Light One World

619. Chapter 618 – A Shining Will

620. Chapter 619 – Lin Ming's Choice

621. Chapter 620 – Prime Emperor Force Field

622. Chapter 621 – Blooming In Splendor Through Competition

623. Chapter 622 – Forming a Battle Spirit

624. Chapter 623 – Exit

625. Chapter 624 – Entering the Eternal Demon Abyss

626. Chapter 625 – A Gathering of Elites

627. Chapter 626 – The Door In Space

628. Chapter 627 – Evil Being

629. Chapter 628 – Bloody Lands
630. Chapter 629 – Transformed Demon Bone
631. Chapter 630 – Capturing the Demon Bone
632. Chapter 631 – Departing Alone
633. Chapter 632 – Swallowing the Blood Demon Bone
634. Chapter 633 – Impacting the Bottleneck
635. Chapter 634 – Forming the Revolving Core
636. Chapter 635 – The Revolving Core Changes
637. Chapter 636 – Battle Spirit Protection
638. Chapter 637 – Power of the Revolving Core Realm
639. Chapter 638 – Three Thousand Boundless Worlds
640. Chapter 639 – Living Sacrifice
641. Chapter 640 – 10,000 Year Corpse Grass
642. Chapter 641 – The Eternal Demon Abyss Erupts Again
643. Chapter 642 – Straying Into the Forbidden Zone
644. Chapter 643 – Are We Out?
645. Chapter 644 – Quietly Approaching the Great Maw
646. Chapter 645 – Closed Energy Field
647. Chapter 646 – The Yellow Springs River
648. Chapter 647 – Ancient Beast
649. Chapter 648 – Corpse Devil

650. Chapter 649 – Two Spears Till Death

651. Chapter 650 – Great Lucky Chance

652. Chapter 651 – Heaven-step Demon God Bone

653. Chapter 652 – Goddess

654. Chapter 653 – Murder

655. Chapter 654 – Peak of Ten Wings

656. Chapter 655 – Black Hole Revolving Core

657. Chapter 656 – Opening the Goddess' Sarcophagus Once More

658. Chapter 657 – Leaving the Forbidden Zone

659. Chapter 658 – Killing the Monsters

660. Chapter 659 – The Return of the Polaris Tower Master

661. Chapter 660 – Invincible Aura

662. Chapter 661 – Glory of the Battle Spirit

663. Chapter 662 – Sentence You To Death

664. Chapter 663 – Heaven-step White Spear

665. Chapter 664 – The Tide Turns

666. Chapter 665 – Achieving 12 Wings

667. Chapter 666 – Spear Through the Black Robed Man

668. Chapter 667 – Planting the Slave Seal

669. Chapter 668 – Returning to the South Horizon Region

670. Chapter 669A – News of Divine Phoenix Island

671. Chapter 669B – The State of Divine Phoenix Island
672. Chapter 670 – Young Girl Incense Burner
673. Chapter 671 – You Are Lin Ming?
674. Chapter 672 – Soul Search
675. Chapter 673 – Mu Qianyu's Message
676. Chapter 674 – The Fifth Opening of the Magic Cube
677. Chapter 675 – Xuan Yuqie Makes Her Move
678. Chapter 676 – Revolving Core Mu Bingyun
679. Chapter 677 – Fighting the Giant Leviathan
680. Chapter 678 – Lin Ming's Counterattack
681. Chapter 679 – Severely Wounding Xuan Yuqie
682. Chapter 680 – Subdue
683. Chapter 681 – Mu Qianyu's Worries
684. Chapter 682 – Counterattacking the South Sea Demon Region
685. Chapter 683 – 10,000 Mile Raid
686. Chapter 684 – What Is There To Discuss?
687. Chapter 685 – Today My Only Goal Is To Kill
688. Chapter 686 – Pillage
689. Chapter 687 – Paying Respects to the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince
690. Chapter 688 – Towards the Yin Yang Profound Palace
691. Chapter 689 – Meeting Once Again

692. Chapter 690 – Kiss
693. Chapter 691 – A Night Of Tender Warmth
694. Chapter 692 – Negotiations
695. Chapter 693 – Conflict
696. Chapter 694 – Absolute Disparity
697. Chapter 695 – All Daggers Drawn
698. Chapter 696 – Broken Blade
699. Chapter 697 – Hall of Flowing Blood
700. Chapter 698 – Threaten
701. Chapter 699 – Traveling Far and Wide, Only To Find It So Easily
702. Chapter 700 – Divine Kingdom Crown Prince
703. Chapter 701 – Come, Let's Go And Pick Them Up
704. Chapter 702 – Xing Ji Arrives
705. Chapter 703 – Xing Ji, Who Nearly Vomited Blood
706. Chapter 704 – The Terrifying Defense of the Giant Leviathan
707. Chapter 705 – Returning Home
708. Chapter 706 – Reaching Black Hole Revolving Core
709. Chapter 707 – Xuan Wuji Leaves Seclusion
710. Chapter 708 – Breaking Through To Middle Revolving Core
711. Chapter 709 – Opening the Eight Inner Hidden Gates Again
712. Chapter 710 – The Death God Comes At Night

713. Chapter 711 – Sweeping Through The South Sea Demon Region

714. Chapter 712 – Thorough Slaughter

715. Chapter 713 – To Those Who Remain In the South Sea Demon Region, Death!

716. Chapter 714 – Name of the Death God

717. Chapter 715 – King Level Smelting Trial

718. Chapter 716 - Warriors of the Ancient Phoenix Clan

719. Chapter 717 – Qualify

720. Chapter 718 – A Shocking Trial Ground

721. Chapter 719 – Timeworn Phoenix City

722. Chapter 720 – Ancient Phoenix Totem

723. Chapter 721 – Test of Laws

724. Chapter 722 – Perceiving the Source of Fire

725. Chapter 723 – In Stark Opposition

726. Chapter 724 – Burning Heaven Totem Stone

727. Chapter 725 – Chaos Stone

728. Chapter 726 – God Transforming Mirror

729. Chapter 727 – The Red Woman

730. Chapter 728 – The First Concept – Sea of Burning Fire

731. Chapter 729 – Breaking Through the First World

732. Chapter 730 – A Strike To Shatter the World

733. Chapter 731 – Fusing Concepts, Creating a Move

734. Chapter 732 – Nine Layers of the Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle
735. Chapter 733 – Second World of the God Transforming Mirror
736. Chapter 734 – Heaven-Step Fire Essence
737. Chapter 735 – Peak of the Middle Revolving Core Realm
738. Chapter 736 – Leaving Seclusion
739. Chapter 737 – The Final Test
740. Chapter 738 – Blood of the Ancient Phoenix
741. Chapter 739 – 50 Breaths
742. Chapter 740 – Reverse the Chain of Stars
743. Chapter 741 – Trading for the Phoenix Blood
744. Chapter 742 – Late Revolving Core
745. Chapter 743 – Return to the Sky Spill Continent
746. Chapter 744 - The Bloodstained Deep Sea
747. Chapter 745 – Fighting Xuan Wuji
748. Chapter 746 – The Disparity Between Them
749. Chapter 747 – The 100,000 Mile Chase
750. Chapter 748 – Chase Through the South Horizon Region
751. Chapter 749 – The Death of Xuan Wuji
752. Chapter 750 – Returning to the Dimension
753. Chapter 751 – Collapse of the South Sea Demon Region
754. Chapter 752 – Lin Ming's Wedding, the Divine Kingdom Prince

755. Chapter 753 – The Mysterious Girl

756. Chapter 754 – Jade of the Goddess

757. Chapter 755 – Swords Drawn

758. Chapter 756 – Duel of Battle Spirits

759. Chapter 757 – Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, Feng Shen

760. Chapter 758 – The Wedding Night

761. Chapter 759 – The Young Girl's Mystery, the Forsaken God Clan

762. Chapter 760 – Wood Spirit Jade

763. Chapter 761 – Towards the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom

764. Chapter 762 – White Dragon Jade Row

765. Chapter 763 – How To Make Money

766. Chapter 764 – Ancient Jade Bracelet

767. Chapter 765 – Bid

768. Chapter 766 – Swindled

769. Chapter 767 – White Dragon Jade Card

770. Chapter 768 – Guru Blueway, Destiny Decree

771. Chapter 769 – Guru Blueway's Appraisal

772. Chapter 770 – Opening the Universe Melting Furnace

773. Chapter 771 – Heavencraft Trading Company

774. Chapter 772 – Skyflower Stones

775. Chapter 773 – Malice

776. Chapter 774 – Xiaoxiao
777. Chapter 775 – Saber Light
778. Chapter 776 – Sweep Through All
779. Chapter 777 – Bronze Battle Spirit Large Success
780. Chapter 778 – First Battle of the Destiny Decree
781. Chapter 779 – The Great Battle of Witch Creek City
782. Chapter 780 – Stepping Onto the Highest Stage
783. Chapter 781 – The Demon Emperor's Armor
784. Chapter 782 – Killing Corpsemancer
785. Chapter 783 – First Appearance On The Destiny Decree
786. Chapter 784 – The Crown Prince's Invitation
787. Chapter 785 – Let Me See Your Armor
788. Chapter 786 – Domineering
789. Chapter 787 – A Stipulation of Ten Moves
790. Chapter 788 – Slaughter Path Showdown
791. Chapter 789 – 8000 Mile Black Swamp
792. Chapter 790 – Heavencraft Xiaoxiao's Request
793. Chapter 791 – Refining the Fivefade Void Pill
794. Chapter 792 – The Gate of Wonder
795. Chapter 793 – Sky High Reward
796. Chapter 794 – Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division

797. Chapter 795 – 300,000 Spirit Essence Stones
798. Chapter 796 – Lin Lanjian
799. Chapter 797 – Robbery
800. Chapter 798 – Unbelievable Speed
801. Chapter 799 – Sudden Retaliation
802. Chapter 800 – Blood Washed Jagged Slope Mountain
803. Chapter 801 – Unstoppable
804. Chapter 802 – Killing Situ
805. Chapter 803 – Killing the Elders
806. Chapter 804 – Asura Divine Kingdom Emperor Uncle
807. Chapter 805 – The Glory of a Large Success Battle Spirit
808. Chapter 806 – Grind
809. Chapter 807 – New Destiny Decree, Title: Death God
810. Chapter 808 – The Trial of Life Destruction
811. Chapter 809 – The Second Revolving Core
812. Chapter 810 – Crisis
813. Chapter 811 – Killing Party
814. Chapter 812 – Death Swamp
815. Chapter 813 – Sea Serpent Gas
816. Chapter 814 – Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion
817. Chapter 815 – New Life From Destruction

818. Chapter 816 – Heretical God Sprout
819. Chapter 817 – Crazy Bi Ruyu
820. Chapter 818 – Lightning Tempered Body
821. Chapter 819 – Argent White Sword and the Lightning Source
822. Chapter 820 – God Forsaken Clan, Eightfall Thunder Emperor
823. Chapter 821 – Leaving the Thunder Dominion, Battling the Demon Envoy
824. Chapter 822 – The Splendor of Lightning
825. Chapter 823 – Hacking Apart the Divine Kingdom Imperial Scholar
826. Chapter 824 – Death Reaper Curse
827. Chapter 825 – The Asura Divine Emperor Moves
828. Chapter 826 – Forsaken God Clan, Dimensional Realm
829. Chapter 827 – Shibai
830. Chapter 828 – That is Not the Key Point
831. Chapter 829 – Confrontation
832. Chapter 830 – However Many Come, I'll Take That Many
833. Chapter 831 – Battle
834. Chapter 832 – The Coming Storm, The Rising Tide
835. Chapter 833 – Situ Yaoyue
836. Chapter 834 – Breakthrough, Begin
837. Chapter 835 – All Treasures Gathered
838. Chapter 836 – Purple Air Comes From the East

839. Chapter 837 – Golden Lighting Piercing the Sky
840. Chapter 838 – Silver Battle Spirit
841. Chapter 839 – Purple Lion Thunder Source
842. Chapter 840 – Forming the Spirit Body
843. Chapter 841 – Successfully Leaving Seclusion, Achieving Life Destruction
844. Chapter 842 – Peak of the First Stage of Life Destruction
845. Chapter 843 – Finger as Spear
846. Chapter 844 – The Day of the Fated Battle
847. Chapter 845 – In Sharp Opposition
848. Chapter 846 – Killers of the Asura Divine Kingdom
849. Chapter 847 – A World Stunning Spear
850. Chapter 848 – Five Poison King
851. Chapter 849 – Without Equal
852. Chapter 850 – An Aura to Wash Away the Clouds
853. Chapter 851 – Luosha's Determination
854. Chapter 852 – Fighting Situ Luosha
855. Chapter 853 – The Glory of Thunder
856. Chapter 854 – Admitting Defeat
857. Chapter 855 – Yaoyue Fights
858. Chapter 856 – Extreme Violet Domain, Demon Moon Illuminating the Sky
859. Chapter 857 – A Bitter Fight

860. Chapter 858 – Cage of Darkness

861. Chapter 859 – Ancient Phoenix Saint Body

862. Chapter 860 – Great Desolate Blood Halberd

863. Chapter 861 – Suppressing Yaoyue

864. Chapter 862 – Dropping All Pretenses

865. Chapter 863 – All Parties Involved

866. Chapter 864 – The Side of Morality and Principle

867. Chapter 865 – Two Conditions

868. Chapter 866 – Divide the Void

869. Chapter 867 – The Miracle of Time Laws

870. Chapter 868 – Unapproachable

871. Chapter 869 – The New Destiny Decree

872. Chapter 870 – Myriad Spirit Pill

873. Chapter 871 – Sea Serpent Crystal

874. Chapter 872 – The Bronze Ghost Coffin

875. Chapter 873 – Opening the Gate of Pain

876. Chapter 874 – Comprehending the Laws of Time

877. Chapter 875 – Second Stage Life Destruction

878. Chapter 876 – All Heroes Gathered

879. Chapter 877 – Entering the Temple

880. Chapter 878 – The Link Between the Sea of Miracles and the Eternal Demon Abyss

881. Chapter 879 – Top Grade Spirit Vein
882. Chapter 880 – Master of the Bronze Ghost Coffin
883. Chapter 881 – Furious Battle
884. Chapter 882 – Divine Tree
885. Chapter 883 – Twelve Dao Fruits
886. Chapter 884 – Saint Artifact Treasure
887. Chapter 885 – Unreasonable
888. Chapter 886 – Two Years To Take Your Head
889. Chapter 887 – Electric Violet Kirin Clan
890. Chapter 888 – Electric Violet Inheritance
891. Chapter 889 – Masked Man
892. Chapter 890 – Ancient Devil
893. Chapter 891 – Seize
894. Chapter 892 – Bringing About One's Own Destruction
895. Chapter 893 – Narrow Escape
896. Chapter 894 – Preparation is the Key, Third Stage of Life Destruction
897. Chapter 895 – The Third Thunder Concept
898. Chapter 896 – The Capture Order
899. Chapter 897 – Target: Road of Emperor
900. Chapter 898 – Unstoppable
901. Chapter 899 – Once Again Into the Road of Emperor

902. Chapter 900 – Tempering the Battle Spirit

903. Chapter 901 – Secret of the Road of Emperor

904. Chapter 902 – 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array Formation

905. Chapter 903 – The Goddess In Ice

906. Chapter 904 – Reforming the Shattered Core

907. Chapter 905 – Departure, the Prime Emperor Force Field

908. Chapter 906 – If You Are Chaos, Then What Am I?

909. Chapter 907 – Three Force Fields Superimposed

910. Chapter 908 – Massacring Emperors

911. Chapter 909 – Sixth Opening of the Magic Cube

912. Chapter 910 – Fusing the Three Great Force Fields

913. Chapter 911 – I, Prime Emperor

914. Chapter 912 – Becoming the Steppes Master

915. Chapter 913 – Strange Black Bead

916. Chapter 914 – Returning to The Sky Spill Continent

917. Chapter 915 – Old Friends, Wrath

918. Chapter 916 – Taking Control

919. Chapter 917 – Kill, Kill, Kill!

920. Chapter 918 – Ten Steps To Kill One Person

921. Chapter 919 – Whitedemon Arrives

922. Chapter 920 – Massacre

923. Chapter 921 – Transcendent Divine Might

924. Chapter 922 – Fighting Whitedemon

925. Chapter 923 – Refine the Soul

926. Chapter 924(A) – Settling the Cycle of Karma

927. Chapter 924(B) – Settling the Cycle of Karma

928. Chapter 925 – Merciless Indifference

929. Chapter 926 – The End of Whitedemon

930. Chapter 927 – Once Again Battling the Purple Lion Thunder Source

931. Chapter 928 – Swallowing the Thunder Source

932. Chapter 929 – To Another Level

933. Chapter 930 – Dark Clouds

934. Chapter 931 – Inescapable Net

935. Chapter 932 – Postcelestial Dao Diagram

936. Chapter 933 – Lin Ming Returns

937. Chapter 934 – Counterattack

938. Chapter 935 – Command the World

939. Chapter 936 – Erase Them All

940. Chapter 937 – Failure at the End

941. Chapter 938 – Nine Furnace Great Array

942. Chapter 939 – Complete Massacre

943. Chapter 940 – Fighting Yang Yun

944. Chapter 941 – Insight Into Weakness

945. Chapter 942 – Coiling Martial Divine Furnace

946. Chapter 943 – Heaven Punishment Divine Thunder

947. Chapter 944 – Yang Yun's Death

948. Chapter 945 – Ashes to Ashes

949. Chapter 946 – The Highest Under the Heavens

950. Chapter 947 – Grandest Event Since Ancient Times

951. Chapter 948 – Incarnation of the Jade Slip

952. Chapter 949 – Towards the Divine Realm

953. Chapter 950 – Phoenix Cry Palace

954. Chapter 951 – Contention

955. Chapter 952 – Nine Divine Shifts

956. Chapter 953 – Saint Artifact Pavilion

957. Chapter 954 – Deliberately Creating Difficulties

958. Chapter 955 – Huang Yuehong

959. Chapter 956 – The Rules for Obtaining a Saint Artifact

960. Chapter 957 – Phoenix Blood Spear

961. Chapter 958 – Obtaining Treasures

962. Chapter 959 – Towards the Phoenix Blood Spear

963. Chapter 960 – Test

964. Chapter 961 – Break the World

965. Chapter 962 – Totem Stone
966. Chapter 963 – Silver Perfection
967. Chapter 964 – Saint Spear in Hand
968. Chapter 965 – Blinding Spear Light
969. Chapter 966 – Talent and Treasure That Arouse Envy
970. Chapter 967 – Ready to Fight
971. Chapter 968 – To Cause a Stir
972. Chapter 969 – Fairy Feng's Summon
973. Chapter 970 – Top of the Storm
974. Chapter 971 – You Only Have Yourself To Blame
975. Chapter 972 – Making Enemies
976. Chapter 973 – To Provoke and Ignore
977. Chapter 974 – Ninefall Huo Yanguang
978. Chapter 975 – Nirvana Altar
979. Chapter 976 – Glory of the Phoenix Blood Spear
980. Chapter 977 – Third Level of the Concept of Fire
981. Chapter 978 – Overpower
982. Chapter 979 – Can Only Be Described As Miserable
983. Chapter 980 – Phoenix Plume Blood in Hand
984. Chapter 981 – Sixth Stage Life Destruction
985. Chapter 982 – Perfect Dantian

986. Chapter 983 – The Gate of Opening Which Enhances Perception
987. Chapter 984 – Movement of the Magic Cube
988. Chapter 985 – Strange Protective Charm
989. Chapter 986 – Opening the Gate of Opening
990. Chapter 987 – Enhanced Perception
991. Chapter 988 – The Smelting Trial Begins
992. Chapter 989 – Fire Spirit Star
993. Chapter 990 – Hell of Fire
994. Chapter 991 – Origin Energy Impact
995. Chapter 992 – Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron
996. Chapter 993 – Phoenix Heart Blood
997. Chapter 994 – Trial by Fire
998. Chapter 995 – Hells of Flame, Second Level
999. Chapter 996 – If You Want To Bet Then Bet Yan Littlemoon
1000. Chapter 997 – Dare
1001. Chapter 998 – Training Within the Hells of Flame
1002. Chapter 999 – Burn the Body
1003. Chapter 1000 – Concept Large Success, Blue Lotus Domain
1004. Chapter 1001 – Smelting Trial Rewards
1005. Chapter 1002 – Totem Tower
1006. Chapter 1003 – 100 Foot Royal Skyseal

1007. Chapter 1004 – The 12 Chaos Stones

1008. Chapter 1005 – Lin Ming's Choice

1009. Chapter 1006 – Lotus Blooming Step By Step

1010. Chapter 1007 – Phoenix Blood Essence

1011. Chapter 1008 – Gold Battle Spirit

1012. Chapter 1009 – Headquarters Envoy

1013. Chapter 1010 – Requirements for a Drop of Phoenix Blood Essence

1014. Chapter 1011 – Lin Ming Leaves Seclusion

1015. Chapter 1012 – To Find a Foil

1016. Chapter 1013 – Illusionary God Combat Array

1017. Chapter 1014 – Lin Ming's Turn

1018. Chapter 1015 – The Origin of Burning Heat

1019. Chapter 1016 – Another Breakthrough

1020. Chapter 1017 – Bloom For Me, Heretical God Sprout!

1021. Chapter 1018 – Fusing the Three Concepts

1022. Chapter 1019 – Hells of Flame's Seventh Level, The Domain of God

1023. Chapter 1020 – Seventh Stage Life Destruction

1024. Chapter 1021 – Ten Thousand Flames Burning Sun

1025. Chapter 1022 – Sevenfall Phenomenon

1026. Chapter 1023 – Perfect Sevenfall

1027. Chapter 1024 – Sacred Flame Testament

1028. Chapter 1025 – Rushing the Illusionary God Combat Array

1029. Chapter 1026 – Kill Them All

1030. Chapter 1027 – How Hard Could This Be?

1031. Chapter 1028 – Source of Phoenix Blood

1032. Chapter 1029 – World of Will Projection

1033. Chapter 1030 – The Power of Laws

1034. Chapter 1031 – The One Thousandth Person

1035. Chapter 1032 – Old Sorrows, New Hate

1036. Chapter 1033 – Intense

1037. Chapter 1034 – Scorching Blood VS Phoenix Blood

1038. Chapter 1035 – Concept of Manifestation

1039. Chapter 1036 – To Complete the Thousand Slaughter

1040. Chapter 1037 – Phoenix Blood Essence

1041. Chapter 1038 – Absorbing the Phoenix Blood Essence

1042. Chapter 1039 – The Thoughts of God

1043. Chapter 1040 – End of the Smelting Trial

1044. Chapter 1041 – God Beast Mystic Realm

1045. Chapter 1042 – Ancient Dragon Clan

1046. Chapter 1043 – 12 People

1047. Chapter 1044 – Can I Go With You?

1048. Chapter 1045 – Together

1049. Chapter 1046 – Black Coral

1050. Chapter 1047 – Bizarre Enemy

1051. Chapter 1048 – Asura King

1052. Chapter 1049 – Supreme Dragon Bone

1053. Chapter 1050 – You Two, Fuck Off!

1054. Chapter 1051 – The Great War Begins

1055. Chapter 1052 – Grandmist Battle Armor

1056. Chapter 1053 – Sneaky

1057. Chapter 1054 – To Play Both Sides

1058. Chapter 1055 – Opportunity

1059. Chapter 1056 – Dragon Bone In Hand

1060. Chapter 1057 – Crazy Dragon One

1061. Chapter 1058 – The Strong Asura King

1062. Chapter 1059 – Change In the Dragon Bone

1063. Chapter 1060 – White Light

1064. Chapter 1061 – Revival After 50,000 Years

1065. Chapter 1062 – Mo Eversnow

1066. Chapter 1063 – Another Dual Cultivator

1067. Chapter 1064 – The Bad Luck Dragon One

1068. Chapter 1065 – The Wicked Cannot Be Saved From Their Sins

1069. Chapter 1066 – Treasures of the Dead

1070. Chapter 1067 – Leaving the Mystic Realm

1071. Chapter 1068 – Marriage

1072. Chapter 1069 – Secret of the Magic Cube

1073. Chapter 1070 – Absorbing the Dragon Marrow

1074. Chapter 1071 – Crossing Eightfall

1075. Chapter 1072 – Display of Strength

1076. Chapter 1073 – True Martial World

1077. Chapter 1074 – Carefree Island

1078. Chapter 1075 – Entering the Sect

1079. Chapter 1076 – Riverbliss Jadeheart

1080. Chapter 1077 – Reunion

1081. Chapter 1078 – His Skin Is Not of Ordinary Thickness

1082. Chapter 1079 – To Make Things Difficult

1083. Chapter 1080 – Simulation Mystic Realm

1084. Chapter 1081 – Perish Together?

1085. Chapter 1082 – Easily Passing

1086. Chapter 1083 – The Sad Brother Liu

1087. Chapter 1084 – Resource Struggle

1088. Chapter 1085 – Traitor

1089. Chapter 1086 – The Eight Inner Hidden Gates, the Sixth Gate

1090. Chapter 1087 – Dragon Bone Relics

1091. Chapter 1088 – Six Gates Opened

1092. Chapter 1089 – The Red Wilderness

1093. Chapter 1090 – Purple Mountain

1094. Chapter 1091 – The Enemy Raid in the Storm

1095. Chapter 1092 – Entering the Sandstorm

1096. Chapter 1093 – Ambush

1097. Chapter 1094 – Counterattack

1098. Chapter 1095 – Lure the Enemy

1099. Chapter 1096 – Cut Them Down

1100. Chapter 1097 – I'll Cut It Off

1101. Chapter 1098 – Reap the Spoils From The Wearied

1102. Chapter 1099 – Sitting Back and Waiting

1103. Chapter 1100 – Sweep Away the Fallen leaves

1104. Chapter 1101 – If I Were You, I'd Have Already Killed Myself

1105. Chapter 1102 – Collect the Spoils of Battle

1106. Chapter 1103 – Sudden Attack

1107. Chapter 1104 – What Do We Do?

1108. Chapter 1105 – Aren't You The Best Evidence?

1109. Chapter 1106 – Highest Elder

1110. Chapter 1107 – Heroic Sacrifice

1111. Chapter 1108 – Confrontation

1112. Chapter 1109 – Crazy White Brook

1113. Chapter 1110 – The World's Most Aggrieving Matter

1114. Chapter 1111 – Face Even More Swollen

1115. Chapter 1112 – The Power Behind The Throne

1116. Chapter 1113 – Mo Riverbliss's Ambitions

1117. Chapter 1114 – Ninefall Approaches

1118. Chapter 1115 – Ten Severing Dao

1119. Chapter 1116 – Attacking Ninefall

1120. Chapter 1117 – Ninefall Realm

1121. Chapter 1118 – Surging Origin Energy Clouds

1122. Chapter 1119 – Where Lies the Limit?

1123. Chapter 1120 – Double Phenomenon

1124. Chapter 1121 – The Riddle of the Magic Cube

1125. Chapter 1122 – Perfect Spirit Body

1126. Chapter 1123 – Five Element Grand Tribulation

1127. Chapter 1124 – Brutal

1128. Chapter 1125 – Nine By Nine Life Destruction

1129. Chapter 1126 – Boiling With Blood

1130. Chapter 1127 – Large Success Battle Spirit

1131. Chapter 1128 – Spirit Artifact Spear

1132. Chapter 1129 – If The God Of Death Desires Me, I Shall Cut Down The God Of Death

1133. Chapter 1130 – Refining Heavenly Tribulation

1134. Chapter 1131 – Perfectly Crossing Tribulation

1135. Chapter 1132 – Mystery of the Black Bead

1136. Chapter 1133 – Divide

1137. Chapter 1134 – Clearing the Snakes

1138. Chapter 1135 – Immemorial Imperial City

1139. Chapter 1136 – Taking the Treasures

1140. Chapter 1137 – Private Trading Fair

1141. Chapter 1138 – The Little Girl Who Eats Violet Sun Crystals

1142. Chapter 1139 – News of the Violet Sun Stone Embryo

1143. Chapter 1140 – The Mysterious Little Girl

1144. Chapter 1141 – To Strike A Stone With An Egg

1145. Chapter 1142 – Intimidating All Present

1146. Chapter 1143 – Oppression

1147. Chapter 1144 – Yan Littlefish

1148. Chapter 1145 – Marvelous Ability

1149. Chapter 1146 – Mysterious Land

1150. Chapter 1147 – Divine Seal Art

1151. Chapter 1148 – Ancient Spirit

1152. Chapter 1149 – Horrifying Power

1153. Chapter 1150 – World Calamity

1154. Chapter 1151 – Refining the Stone Embryo

1155. Chapter 1152 – Sacred Martial Mansion

1156. Chapter 1153 – Grandest Event of All Ages

1157. Chapter 1154 – The Yan Littlemoon of Years Gone By

1158. Chapter 1155 – Boundless World Pill

1159. Chapter 1156 – The Source of Wealth

1160. Chapter 1157 – Necklace of the Goddess

1161. Chapter 1158 – Sky High Pawn Price

1162. Chapter 1159 – The Grand Auction

1163. Chapter 1160 – Zhong Wenshu

1164. Chapter 1161 – Auctioning the Boundless World Pill

1165. Chapter 1162 – The Rise

1166. Chapter 1163 – Crazy

1167. Chapter 1164 – Divine Pill In Hand

1168. Chapter 1165 – Crazy Cultivation

1169. Chapter 1166 – Opening the Gate of Life

1170. Chapter 1167 – Divine Spear Like Dragon

1171. Chapter 1168 – Elementary Transcendent Divine Might

1172. Chapter 1169 – Finally Stepping Into the Divine Sea

1173. Chapter 1170 – Leaving Seclusion

1174. Chapter 1171 – Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan

1175. Chapter 1172 – The Burden of an Outer Court Disciple

1176. Chapter 1173 – Divine Dream World

1177. Chapter 1174 – Miraculous Dream Laws

1178. Chapter 1175 – True Martial Holy Land

1179. Chapter 1176 – Change of the Magic Cube

1180. Chapter 1177 – Divine Dream Law

1181. Chapter 1178 – The Slaughter Begins

1182. Chapter 1179 – Merit Points

1183. Chapter 1180 – Ranking

1184. Chapter 1181 – Lin Ming's Whereabouts

1185. Chapter 1182 – Lin Ming Makes His Move

1186. Chapter 1183 – Combat At Last

1187. Chapter 1184 – Who Gave You This Courage?

1188. Chapter 1185 – Yin Yang Twin Swords

1189. Chapter 1186 – Rising Ranking

1190. Chapter 1187 – Goal: Nightmare Canyon

1191. Chapter 1188 – Declaration of War

1192. Chapter 1189 – Fighting the Three Prodigies

1193. Chapter 1190 – Fighting the Three Prodigies (B)

1194. Chapter 1191 – Strength Surpassing a 100 Million

1195. Chapter 1192 – Soaring Merit Points

1196. Chapter 1193 – The Heaven Defying Divine Dream Law

1197. Chapter 1194 – Divine Seal Decree

1198. Chapter 1195 – Lin Ming's Ranking

1199. Chapter 1196 – True Martial City

1200. Chapter 1197 – Empyrean Descendant

1201. Chapter 1198 – The Mysterious Monster

1202. Chapter 1199 – Towards True Martial City

1203. Chapter 1200 – Rescue

1204. Chapter 1201 – Murder

1205. Chapter 1202 – Cultivating Essence, Energy, and Divine

1206. Chapter 1203 – Highdragon

1207. Chapter 1204 – Life Laws

1208. Chapter 1205 – Suppression of Absolute Strength

1209. Chapter 1206 – Highdragon's Death

1210. Chapter 1207 – Wu Finalcloud

1211. Chapter 1208 – Peak Battle of the True Martial Great World

1212. Chapter 1209 – Strength Beyond Strength

1213. Chapter 1210 – Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art

1214. Chapter 1211 – Killing Wu Finalcloud

1215. Chapter 1212 – Merit Points Over a Hundred Million

1216. Chapter 1213 – Spirit Source

1217. Chapter 1214 – The Last Round

1218. Chapter 1215 – Nightmare Beast Tide

1219. Chapter 1216 – Red-furred Monster's Evolution

1220. Chapter 1217 – Soul Life

1221. Chapter 1218 – Fighting the Red-furred Monster

1222. Chapter 1219 – Thunder Tribulation

1223. Chapter 1220 – Eyes Blinded by Lightning

1224. Chapter 1221 – First in a Great World

1225. Chapter 1222 – Perfect Gold Battle Spirit

1226. Chapter 1223 – Tian Mingzi

1227. Chapter 1224 – The Final Result of the Preliminaries

1228. Chapter 1225 – Fated Encounter

1229. Chapter 1226 – Lin Ming, Dragon Fang

1230. Chapter 1227 – Creating Techniques, Virtual Fire

1231. Chapter 1228 – Divine Seal Altar

1232. Chapter 1229 – Hard To Find Tickets

1233. Chapter 1230 – The Semifinals Begin

1234. Chapter 1231 – What is Pride

1235. Chapter 1232 – Brutal Competition

1236. Chapter 1233 – The Great Road Before Us

1237. Chapter 1234 – Divine Seal Altar Artifact Spirit

1238. Chapter 1235 – Without Weapons

1239. Chapter 1236 – 20th Step

1240. Chapter 1237 – The Battle Begins

1241. Chapter 1238 – The One Who Should Be Sorry Is Me

1242. Chapter 1239 – Crimson Strifecloud's Daughter

1243. Chapter 1240 – Absolute Suppression

1244. Chapter 1241 – Too Shameless

1245. Chapter 1242 – Rapid Drop In Numbers

1246. Chapter 1243 – Loose Tongues Lead To Trouble

1247. Chapter 1244 – 15 People

1248. Chapter 1245 – Variation Pupils

1249. Chapter 1246 – Lin Ming VS Nether Limitless

1250. Chapter 1247 Heroic Youth

1251. Chapter 1248 – Violent Collision

1252. Chapter 1249 – The Defeated Nether Limitless

1253. Chapter 1250 – Lin Ming, King!

1254. Chapter 1251 – To Climb the Peak

1255. Chapter 1252 – Dragon Fang's Identity

1256. Chapter 1253 – Comprehending the Concepts

1257. Chapter 1254 – Power of Divinity

1258. Chapter 1255 – Straight to the Top

1259. Chapter 1256 – Climbing to the 33rd Step

1260. Chapter 1257 – Tricks

1261. Chapter 1258 – Heavenly Tribulation

1262. Chapter 1259 – Absolute Slaughter Thunder Sources

1263. Chapter 1260 – Dragon Fang, Defeated

1264. Chapter 1261 – Lin Ming's Heavenly Tribulation

1265. Chapter 1262 – Slaughter of the Dao Tablets

1266. Chapter 1263 – Three Essences Gathered as One

1267. Chapter 1264 – Absorbing the Law Runes

1268. Chapter 1265 – Tribulation of Essence, Energy, Divine

1269. Chapter 1266 – Middle Divine Sea Realm

1270. Chapter 1267 – The Final Stretch

1271. Chapter 1268 – Empyrean Phantom

1272. Chapter 1269 – The Summit

1273. Chapter 1270 – Bustling Like A City

1274. Chapter 1271 – Finally Meeting

1275. Chapter 1272 – Ancient Phoenix Blood Essence

1276. Chapter 1273 – Middle Divine Sea Realm, Large Success

1277. Chapter 1274 – Vast Universe World Finals

1278. Chapter 1275 – Law Test

1279. Chapter 1276 – Frost Dream, Xiao Moxian

1280. Chapter 1277 – Child of the Dark Phoenix

1281. Chapter 1278 – The Finals Begin

1282. Chapter 1279 – Slaughter City

1283. Chapter 1280 – Unchallenged

1284. Chapter 1281 – Difference in Strength

1285. Chapter 1282 – Easily Passing Qualification

1286. Chapter 1283 – Empyrean Demondawn

1287. Chapter 1284 – Lin Ming VS Frost Moon

1288. Chapter 1285 – Ruling Spirit Art

1289. Chapter 1286 – Three Swords

1290. Chapter 1287 – Divine Seal 12 Children

1291. Chapter 1288 – Battle of the 12 Children

1292. Chapter 1289 – The Final Battles Begin

1293. Chapter 1290 – Do You Accept Credit?

1294. Chapter 1291 – Fighting the Monster Prince

1295. Chapter 1292 – Might of the Heretical God

1296. Chapter 1293 – Enraging the Monster Race

1297. Chapter 1294 – Seeing Through the Laws

1298. Chapter 1295 – Impossible to Unravel

1299. Chapter 1296 – Duel of Two Stars

1300. Chapter 1297 – In a Spark of Time

1301. Chapter 1298 – The Greatest Battle
1302. Chapter 1299 – Heavenly Dao Judgment
1303. Chapter 1300 – Heaven Swallowng Demon Art
1304. Chapter 1301 – Hang Chi
1305. Chapter 1302 – Lin Ming VS Xiao Moxian
1306. Chapter 1303 – Clash of Dragon and Phoenix
1307. Chapter 1304 – Forcing Back Xiao Moxian
1308. Chapter 1305 – Surpassing an Empyrean
1309. Chapter 1306 – Might of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens
1310. Chapter 1307 – White Hot
1311. Chapter 1307B – Divine Dream Space
1312. Chapter 1308 – Lin Ming VS Jun Bluemoon
1313. Chapter 1309 – Another Victory
1314. Chapter 1310 – The Wheel of Samsara
1315. Chapter 1311 – Against Hang Chi
1316. Chapter 1312 – Samsara To Samsara
1317. Chapter 1313 – Minor Samsara Path
1318. Chapter 1314 – Divine Seal Within Samsara
1319. Chapter 1315 – Divine Seal's Soul
1320. Chapter 1316 – Dream Cultivation
1321. Chapter 1317 – Cultivating the Divine Seal Art

1322. Chapter 1318 – The Climactic Battle

1323. Chapter 1319 – Dreamsoul Immortal Melody

1324. Chapter 1320 – The Final Pass

1325. Chapter 1321 – Cultivation Great Success

1326. Chapter 1322 – Awakening And Exiting

1327. Chapter 1323 – Frost Dream's Identity

1328. Chapter 1324 – Two Unrivalled Geniuses

1329. Chapter 1325 – Dream Interpretation Scripture

1330. Chapter 1326 – Eternal Darkness

1331. Chapter 1327 – Final Chapter of the Dreamsoul

1332. Chapter 1328 – The Final Result

1333. Chapter 1329 – Secret of the Great Calamity

1334. Chapter 1330 – The Mysteries of Empyrean Primordius

1335. Chapter 1331 – Holy Land of Women

1336. Chapter 1332 – Lin Ming's Decision

1337. Chapter 1333 – 100 Days Insight

1338. Chapter 1334 – Soul Shifting Art

1339. Chapter 1335 – Primordial Epoch Spirit Root

1340. Chapter 1336 – Nine Stars Heaven Pill

1341. Chapter 1337 – Eavesdropping

1342. Chapter 1338 – Finding the Spirit Root

1343. Chapter 1339 – Chaotic Space

1344. Chapter 1340 – Murdering Others and Stealing Blood

1345. Chapter 1341 – Drastic Measures

1346. Chapter 1342 – Sitting On the Mountain and Watching the Tigers Fight

1347. Chapter 1343 – To Ask A Tiger For Its Skin

1348. Chapter 1344 – A Taste of Your Own Medicine

1349. Chapter 1345 – Receiving the Spirit Root

1350. Chapter 1346 – Refine

1351. Chapter 1347 – The Final Gate

1352. Chapter 1348 – Hunt of the Saint Race

1353. Chapter 1349 – Jade Slip Incarnation

1354. Chapter 1350 – Chased by Tian Mingzi

1355. Chapter 1351 – Forcing Through the Void

1356. Chapter 1352 – Identity Exposed

1357. Chapter 1353 – Sky Spill Planet

1358. Chapter 1354 – Gray Light Barrier

1359. Chapter 1355 – Empyrean Primordius' Protection

1360. Chapter 1356 – Nether Limitless Descends To the World

1361. Chapter 1357 – Hand of the Devil

1362. Chapter 1358 – Life or Death Crisis

1363. Chapter 1359 – Burn

1364. Chapter 1360 – Devil

1365. Chapter 1361 – Once More Into the Blood Slaughter Steppes

1366. Chapter 1362 – Into the Eternal Demon Abyss Once More

1367. Chapter 1363 – Eruption of the Demon Abyss

1368. Chapter 1364 – The Phantom within the Ancient Grave

1369. Chapter 1365 – Blood Vitality Entering the Body

1370. Chapter 1366 – Nine Stars Appear

1371. Chapter 1367 – The Resurrection of Eversnow

1372. Chapter 1368 – Tian Mingzi Arrives

1373. Chapter 1369 – Exterminate Your Avatar

1374. Chapter 1370 – Take the Memories

1375. Chapter 1371 – Heaven Absorbing Demon Art and the Nine Star Heaven Pill

1376. Chapter 1372 – Entering the Eternal Demon Abyss

1377. Chapter 1373 – Crystal Bones

1378. Chapter 1374 – Dao Domain

1379. Chapter 1375 – 100,000 Year Corpses

1380. Chapter 1376 – Black Dragon

1381. Chapter 1377 – The Gate of Space and Time

1382. Chapter 1378 – Suffer in Silence

1383. Chapter 1379 – Three Years

1384. Chapter 1380 – Trail of the Demon Bead

1385. Chapter 1381 – Transforming the Divine Palace

1386. Chapter 1382 – Essence

1387. Chapter 1383 – Divine Transformation

1388. Chapter 1384 – Child of the Dragon

1389. Chapter 1385 – Departure

1390. Chapter 1386 – The Sky Spill Grand Meeting

1391. Chapter 1387 – You've Grown Up

1392. Chapter 1388 – Returning Home

1393. Chapter 1389 – Meeting

1394. Chapter 1390 – The Day of Return

1395. Chapter 1391 – Seeking an Audience with Divine Dream

1396. Chapter 1392 – Drastic Change

1397. Chapter 1393 – The Great Calamity Arrives

1398. Chapter 1394 – Negotiations of the Saint Race

1399. Chapter 1395 – Fears of the Saint Race

1400. Chapter 1396– Reading the Memories

1401. Chapter 1397- Arrival of the Saint Race

1402. Chapter 1398 – The Goal of the Saint Race

1403. Chapter 1399 – Conditions

1404. Chapter 1400 – I Refuse

1405. Chapter 1401 – Sneak Attack

1406. Chapter 1402 – A 100 Year Agreement

1407. Chapter 1403 – The Result of Negotiations

1408. Chapter 1404 – The Elites of the Saint Race

1409. Chapter 1405 – Irreproachable Stupa

1410. Chapter 1406 – Imperial Prince Naqi

1411. Chapter 1407 – Enlightenment Beneath the Bodhi Tree

1412. Chapter 1408 – Witchplume, Blacksalt

1413. Chapter 1409 – The Chaotic Blood War

1414. Chapter 1410 – Attack and Defend

1415. Chapter 1411 – Lin Ming Arrives

1416. Chapter 1412 – Fight

1417. Chapter 1413 – Horrifying Weight

1418. Chapter 1414 – Challenging the Imperial Prince

1419. Chapter 1415 – Fighting the Imperial Prince

1420. Chapter 1416 – Naqi's Power

1421. Chapter 1417 – Blue Soul Battle Spirit

1422. Chapter 1418 – Suppressing the Imperial Prince

1423. Chapter 1419 – Victory and Defeat

1424. Chapter 1420 – Raging Undercurrents

1425. Chapter 1421 – Bait

1426. Chapter 1422 – Asura Road

1427. Chapter 1423 – God Runes

1428. Chapter 1424 – Transmission Accident

1429. Chapter 1425 – Parting Ways

1430. Chapter 1426 – Might of the Runes

1431. Chapter 1427 – The First Rune

1432. Chapter 1428 – Spiritas Slave

1433. Chapter 1429 – The Final Trial

1434. Chapter 1430 – City of Discord

1435. Chapter 1431 – Receiving a Mission

1436. Chapter 1432 – The Wheel of Destiny

1437. Chapter 1433 – The Hunter Game

1438. Chapter 1434 – Hunters and the Hunted

1439. Chapter 1435 – Many Wolves, Little Meat

1440. Chapter 1436 – Self Explosion

1441. Chapter 1437 – One-star Asura

1442. Chapter 1438 – Clear Out the Trash

1443. Chapter 1439 – Golden Armor Warrior Array

1444. Chapter 1440 – Gathering the Badges

1445. Chapter 1441 – Weakness

1446. Chapter 1442 – Clearing the Trial

1447. Chapter 1443 – Drawing

1448. Chapter 1444 – One's Talent Arouses the Envy of Others

1449. Chapter 1445 – The City of Discord's City Lord

1450. Chapter 1446 – Ancient Jade

1451. Chapter 1447 – Encounter in the Great Desolate

1452. Chapter 1448 – The Phoenix Within the Flames of Battle

1453. Chapter 1449 – Fighting the Four Saints

1454. Chapter 1450 – This Place Shall be Your Grave

1455. Chapter 1451 – Back to the Wall

1456. Chapter 1452 – Team

1457. Chapter 1453 – Yet Another Monster Prince

1458. Chapter 1454 – Monster Prince Duyu

1459. Chapter 1455 – Weakness

1460. Chapter 1456 – This Is It?

1461. Chapter 1457 – Emperor Stone

1462. Chapter 1458 – Prize

1463. Chapter 1459 – Struggle of Dragons and Phoenixes

1464. Chapter 1460 – Reach the Extreme

1465. Chapter 1461 – The Asura Sutra

1466. Chapter 1462 – Late Divine Transformation

1467. Chapter 1463 – The Imperial Prince Visits

1468. Chapter 1464 – Insurmountable

1469. Chapter 1465 – Heavendevil City

1470. Chapter 1466 – Tragic Death Valley

1471. Chapter 1467 – Fatty Zhou

1472. Chapter 1468 – Encounter at the Gates

1473. Chapter 1469 – Entering God Burying Ridge

1474. Chapter 1470 – Strange Death

1475. Chapter 1471 – Old Enemy

1476. Chapter 1472 – Inner Ridge

1477. Chapter 1473 – Ghostly Steps

1478. Chapter 1474 – Curse

1479. Chapter 1475 – Instant Death

1480. Chapter 1476 – Paradise Reborn

1481. Chapter 1477 – Separate

1482. Chapter 1478 – 10,000 Corpse Flowers

1483. Chapter 1479 – Information Jade Slip

1484. Chapter 1480 – Hunt

1485. Chapter 1481 – Meeting Tian Mingzi

1486. Chapter 1482 – Stake It All On A Single Throw

1487. Chapter 1483 – Entering Tragic Death Valley

1488. Chapter 1484 – Bones

1489. Chapter 1485 – God Beast Tomb

1490. Chapter 1486 – Lin Ming's Ambitions

1491. Chapter 1487 – Demonic Tide

1492. Chapter 1488 – Perfect Harmony

1493. Chapter 1489 – Empyrean Divine Mist

1494. Chapter 1490 – Grinding the Soul

1495. Chapter 1491 – To Shake A Tree With A Gust Of Wind

1496. Chapter 1492 – I Will Follow You

1497. Chapter 1493 – Entering the Tomb

1498. Chapter 1494 – Asura Sutra General Outline

1499. Chapter 1495 – 33 Dao Diagrams

1500. Chapter 1496 – Glow of the Five Elements

1501. Chapter 1497 – Dragon Energy

1502. Chapter 1498 – Breaking Through the Array Formation

1503. Chapter 1499 – Ancient Bronze Temple

1504. Chapter 1500 – Essence Spirit Embryo Stone

1505. Chapter 1501 – Opening the Coffin

1506. Chapter 1502 – Essence Energy Heaven Pill

1507. Chapter 1503 – Swallowing the Sacred Spirit

1508. Chapter 1504 – The First Avatar

1509. Chapter 1505 – Becoming A Divine Lord

1510. Chapter 1506 – Leaving the Valley

1511. Chapter 1507 – Lure the Enemy
1512. Chapter 1508 – Chaos Prison
1513. Chapter 1509 – Blue Throne Bai Qi
1514. Chapter 1510 – Provoke
1515. Chapter 1511 – Absolute Killing Array
1516. Chapter 1512 – Killing a World King
1517. Chapter 1513 - More and More Murder
1518. Chapter 1514 – Mister Ash Murder
1519. Chapter 1515 – Violently Beating the Imperial Prince
1520. Chapter 1516 – The Furious Ash Murder
1521. Chapter 1517 – Angering One To Death
1522. Chapter 1518 – Sacred Soul Primal Spirit
1523. Chapter 1519 – Unimaginable
1524. Chapter 1520 – Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel
1525. Chapter 1521 – Crisis
1526. Chapter 1522 – To Seek Survival In The Face Of Death
1527. Chapter 1523 – Lin Ming's Counterattack
1528. Chapter 1524 – Tragic
1529. Chapter 1525 – Like Rain With Water
1530. Chapter 1526 – Another Breakthrough
1531. Chapter 1527 – Attacking the Dao Palace

1532. Chapter 1528 – Dao Diagram of the Heavenly Dao

1533. Chapter 1529 – Extreme Yin Blood Essence

1534. Chapter 1530 - For Forever, My Blood Will Mark You

1535. Chapter 1531 – Crimson Space

1536. Chapter 1532 – Union of Phoenix and Dragon

1537. Chapter 1533 – Xiao Moxian's Nirvana

1538. Chapter 1534 – Opening the Dao Palace

1539. Chapter 1535 – Refining A Star

1540. Chapter 1536 – Facing a Great World King

1541. Chapter 1537 – Fighting Tian Mingzi

1542. Chapter 1538 – Hatred of 50,000 Years

1543. Chapter 1539 – Young Demon God

1544. Chapter 1540 – The Dust Settles

1545. Chapter 1541 – Heading Deeper Into the Asura Road

1546. Chapter 1542 – Divine Rune City

1547. Chapter 1543 – The Qualifications to Enter the City

1548. Chapter 1544 – Lin Ming's Goal

1549. Chapter 1545 – Information About the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace

1550. Chapter 1546 – Riddle of the Cultivation Method

1551. Chapter 1547 – Divine Runic Masters Guild

1552. Chapter 1548 – Broken Jade

1553. Chapter 1549 – Buying Treasures

1554. Chapter 1550 – Undying Medicine

1555. Chapter 1551 – Sex Fiend Torchriver

1556. Chapter 1552 – Divine Runic Master Shortcut

1557. Chapter 1553 – Refine the Soul

1558. Chapter 1554 – Heavenly Extreme Bliss

1559. Chapter 1555 – Learning Skills

1560. Chapter 1556 – Eternal Glory Cult Leader

1561. Chapter 1557 – Thorough Mastery

1562. Chapter 1558 – A Long Lost Feeling

1563. Chapter 1559 – A Spring Rain

1564. Chapter 1560 – Leaving Seclusion

1565. Chapter 1561 – The Divine Runic Master Examination

1566. Chapter 1562 – Soul Emperor Divine Void

1567. Chapter 1563 – The Examination Begins

1568. Chapter 1564 – Divine Runic Master Qualifications

1569. Chapter 1565 – Continuing the Examination For A Second Grade Divine Runic Master

1570. Chapter 1566 – Second Grade Divine Runic Master Examination

1571. Chapter 1567 – The Third Step

1572. Chapter 1568 – Completing the Main Body

1573. Chapter 1569 – Perfect Pill Symbol

1574. Chapter 1570 – Third Grade Divine Runic Master Examination

1575. Chapter 1571 – Divine Runic Master Prodigy

1576. Chapter 1572 – Entering the Guild

1577. Chapter 1573 – News of Blood Moon

1578. Chapter 1574 – Marvel Blue City

1579. Chapter 1575 – Imperial Concubine Moon

1580. Chapter 1576 – Blood Moon's Conundrum

1581. Chapter 1577 – Life-death Seclusion of the Emperor

1582. Chapter 1578 – Summons of the Empress

1583. Chapter 1579 – All Encompassing Net

1584. Chapter 1580 – Swords Drawn, Bows Bent

1585. Chapter 1581 – Blood Moon's Crisis

1586. Chapter 1582 – Assassin White Sky

1587. Chapter 1583 – Life Seizing Jade Talisman

1588. Chapter 1584 – Blood Splashing Through Arid Peace Palace

1589. Chapter 1585 – Fighting White Sky

1590. Chapter 1586 – Imperial Palace's Great Chief Eunuch

1591. Chapter 1587 – To Admit Defeat

1592. Chapter 1588 – Cultivation Method In Hand

1593. Chapter 1589 – Blood Moon's Identity

1594. Chapter 1590 – Hard to Believe

1595. Chapter 1591 - The Treasure of Heaven's Net

1596. Chapter 1592 – Healing Wounds

1597. Chapter 1593 – Blue Moon Sect

1598. Chapter 1594 – Quiet Training

1599. Chapter 1595 – Middle Divine Lord Realm

1600. Chapter 1596 – Nirvana of the Mind

1601. Chapter 1597 – Astronomically Expensive Materials

1602. Chapter 1598 – Mission Division

1603. Chapter 1599 – Fourth Grade Mission

1604. Chapter 1600 – Three Billion Points

1605. Chapter 1601 - Havoc Flame Symbol

1606. Chapter 1602 – Suya's Troubles

1607. Chapter 1603 – Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol

1608. Chapter 1604 – Handing in the Mission

1609. Chapter 1605 – Special Effect

1610. Chapter 1606 – Power of the Flame Symbols

1611. Chapter 1607 – "Lin"

1612. Chapter 1608 – Late Night Suya

1613. Chapter 1609 – Cooperation

1614. Chapter 1610 – Grandmaster Overflow

1615. Chapter 1611 – Test

1616. Chapter 1612 – Copy

1617. Chapter 1613 – Array Destruction

1618. Chapter 1614 – One Billion Point Reward

1619. Chapter 1615 – Bankrupt Plan

1620. Chapter 1616 – Lin Ming's Conditions

1621. Chapter 1617 – Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol

1622. Chapter 1618 – Heretical God Tree Evolution

1623. Chapter 1619 – Treasure Fair

1624. Chapter 1620 – Divine Void Duke

1625. Chapter 1621 – Jade Dragon Horn

1626. Chapter 1622 – Suppressing Fullmoon

1627. Chapter 1623 – Target

1628. Chapter 1624 – Soul Recovery Symbol

1629. Chapter 1625 – The Auctions Begin

1630. Chapter 1626 – Encounter

1631. Chapter 1627 – Grand Event

1632. Chapter 1628 – Nameless Ancient Pill

1633. Chapter 1629 – Ancient Pill In Hand

1634. Chapter 1630 – Violet Gold Spear

1635. Chapter 1631 – Lin Ming Strikes Back

1636. Chapter 1632 – Insane?

1637. Chapter 1633 – Promissory Note

1638. Chapter 1634 – 1.99 Billion

1639. Chapter 1635 – Auction of the Heavenly Fire Symbol

1640. Chapter 1636 – Test

1641. Chapter 1637 – Heavenly Fire Symbol

1642. Chapter 1638 – Fire Symbol Reborn

1643. Chapter 1639 – Doubts

1644. Chapter 1640 – Exposed

1645. Chapter 1641 – Stay If You Want

1646. Chapter 1642 – Lin Ming VS Shadow Overflow

1647. Chapter 1643 – Sky High Auction Bid

1648. Chapter 1644 – Gathering of Greats

1649. Chapter 1645 – Offensive and Defensive

1650. Chapter 1646 – Conditions of an Empyrean

1651. Chapter 1647 – Auction of the Jade Dragon Horn

1652. Chapter 1648 – All Materials Collected

1653. Chapter 1649 – The Dragon Egg's Pulse

1654. Chapter 1650 – Ancient Contract

1655. Chapter 1651 – Attention of Peers

1656. Chapter 1652 – Task Complete

1657. Chapter 1653 – Celebration Banquet

1658. Chapter 1654 – Soul Recovery Pill

1659. Chapter 1655 – Seeing Empyrean Divine Mist Once Again

1660. Chapter 1656 – Legend of the Spiritas

1661. Chapter 1657 – Ancient Forbidden Land

1662. Chapter 1658A – Entering Despair Valley

1663. Chapter 1658B – Yin Yang Despair Valley

1664. Chapter 1659 – Void Furnace

1665. Chapter 1660 – Completing the Pill

1666. Chapter 1661 - Forsaken Mortal Tomb

1667. Chapter 1662 – Impacting the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace

1668. Chapter 1663 – Breaking the Dao Diagram

1669. Chapter 1664 – Receiving the Ravenous Wolf

1670. Chapter 1665 – Preparation Is the Key to Success

1671. Chapter 1666 – Late Divine Lord

1672. Chapter 1667 – Soul Empress Sheng Mei

1673. Chapter 1668 – Lin Ming Leaves Seclusion

1674. Chapter 1669 – Asura Sea

1675. Chapter 1670 – The Mystic Realm Opens

1676. Chapter 1671 – Entering the Final Trial

1677. Chapter 1672 – The Worries of Old Su

1678. Chapter 1673 – Completion Percent

1679. Chapter 1674 – Sinister Tricks

1680. Chapter 1675 – Blue-clothed Figure

1681. Chapter 1676 – The Gate of Laws

1682. Chapter 1677 – Difficulty and Completion Percentage

1683. Chapter 1678 – The Gate of Laws Opens

1684. Chapter 1679 – Lin Ming's Choice

1685. Chapter 1680 – Asura Difficulty

1686. Chapter 1681 – The Narrow Road

1687. Chapter 1682 – Reward

1688. Chapter 1683 – Trial of Laws

1689. Chapter 1684 – Black Asura

1690. Chapter 1685 – Three Moves

1691. Chapter 1686 – Profound Laws

1692. Chapter 1687 – Pass

1693. Chapter 1688A – Taunt

1694. Chapter 1688B – The Shadow In the Vortex

1695. Chapter 1689 – Flying Towards the Immortal Palace

1696. Chapter 1690 – Entering the Planet Sized Immortal Palace

1697. Chapter 1691 – The Immortal Palace

1698. Chapter 1692A – The Blue Stone Road

1699. Chapter 1692B - The Blue Stone Road

1700. Chapter 1693 – Holy Scripture

1701. Chapter 1694 – The Final Reward

1702. Chapter 1695 – Asura Blood

1703. Chapter 1696 – Rudimentary Dao Palace

1704. Chapter 1697 – Black Dragon Spear

1705. Chapter 1698 – Bloodthirsty Black Dragon

1706. Chapter 1699 – Venturing Deeper Into the Fourth Level

1707. Chapter 1700 – Plot

1708. Chapter 1701 – Trap

1709. Chapter 1702 – Demonic Energy Force Field

1710. Chapter 1703 – Deal

1711. Chapter 1704 – Cooperation

1712. Chapter 1705 – Beatdown

1713. Chapter 1706 – To Use Another's Knife To Kill

1714. Chapter 1707 – Outplayed

1715. Chapter 1708 – Killing the Crown Prince

1716. Chapter 1709 – Killing and Sealing Them All

1717. Chapter 1710 – Swallowing the Memories

1718. Chapter 1711 – Receiving the Dragon Spear

1719. Chapter 1712 – The Sky Piercing Steps

1720. Chapter 1713 – Climbing the Divine Seal Altar

1721. Chapter 1714 – Xiao Moxian's Change

1722. Chapter 1715 – Sheng Mei's Thoughts

1723. Chapter 1716 – The Final Trial's Fifth Level

1724. Chapter 1717 – Overlord

1725. Chapter 1718 – Undying Inferno

1726. Chapter 1719 – Reaping Souls

1727. Chapter 1720 – Wrath of the Phoenix

1728. Chapter 1721 – Victory or Defeat?

1729. Chapter 1722 – Completion Percent

1730. Chapter 1723 – Undying Polar Ice

1731. Chapter 1724 – Umbral Heaven Ice Array

1732. Chapter 1725 – The Cold Plum Blossom Resists the Snow And Wind

1733. Chapter 1726 – Lin Ming Makes His Move

1734. Chapter 1727 – Turn the Tide

1735. Chapter 1728 – Ice Egg

1736. Chapter 1729 – Exterminating the Undying Polar Ice

1737. Chapter 1730 – Souls of Ice and Fire

1738. Chapter 1731 – Lin Ming's Completion Percent

1739. Chapter 1732 – The Sixth Level

1740. Chapter 1733 – 'Divine'

1741. Chapter 1734 – Emperor Jade

1742. Chapter 1735 – Soul Spring Divine Embryo

1743. Chapter 1736 – The Second Avatar

1744. Chapter 1737 – Three Years

1745. Chapter 1738 – The Final Reward

1746. Chapter 1739 – The Exit Opens

1747. Chapter 1740 – Legend

1748. Chapter 1741 – Law Proclamation

1749. Chapter 1742 – To Settle All Ties

1750. Chapter 1743 – Killing Shadow Overflow

1751. Chapter 1744 – Leaving the Asura Road

1752. Chapter 1745 – Return to the Divine Realm

1753. Chapter 1746 – Monster Emperor’s Grand Longevity Feast

1754. Chapter 1747 – Xiao Moxian’s Worries

1755. Chapter 1748 – Greeting Divine Dream

1756. Chapter 1749 – Towards the Monster Race

1757. Chapter 1750 – Gathering of Greats

1758. Chapter 1751 – Distress

1759. Chapter 1752 – Poison

1760. Chapter 1753 – Who Is He

1761. Chapter 1754 – House Arrest

1762. Chapter 1755 – Demondawn’s Turmoil

1763. Chapter 1756 – Thousand Mile Heartlink

1764. Chapter 1757 – Longevity Feast

1765. Chapter 1758 – Reunion of Young Elites

1766. Chapter 1759 – Meeting The Saint Son

1767. Chapter 1760 – War of Words

1768. Chapter 1761 – Meeting Xiao Moxian

1769. Chapter 1762 - The Method Of Becoming A True Divinity

1770. Chapter 1763 – The Saint Son Proposes Marriage

1771. Chapter 1764 – Lin Ming Proposes Marriage

1772. Chapter 1765 – Spear Drawn

1773. Chapter 1766 – No Road Out

1774. Chapter 1767 – Nine Orifice Exquisite Pill

1775. Chapter 1768 – Scorching Blood Sun

1776. Chapter 1769 – Good Fortune Divine Art

1777. Chapter 1770 – Seizing the Power of Good Fortune

1778. Chapter 1771 – Golden Sandstorm

1779. Chapter 1772 – The Might of the Spirit Bead

1780. Chapter 1773 – The Eruption Within the Silence

1781. Chapter 1774 – Peak Showdown

1782. Chapter 1775 – Another Miraculous Move

1783. Chapter 1776 – Victory or Defeat

1784. Chapter 1777 – Change in the Inner World

1785. Chapter 1778 – I, Holy Lord

1786. Chapter 1779 – The Rewards of Victory

1787. Chapter 1780 – The Flames of Hope

1788. Chapter 1781 – Demondawn's Advice

1789. Chapter 1782 – Lin Ming's Plan

1790. Chapter 1783 – The Phoenix Clan's Grand Celebration

1791. Chapter 1784 – Return

1792. Chapter 1785 – Thunder Punishment's Inheritance

1793. Chapter 1786 – Entering the Land of Inheritance

1794. Chapter 1787 – Thunder Punishment's Remnant Soul

1795. Chapter 1788 – Thunder Punishment Sword

1796. Chapter 1789 - Inheritance in Hand

1797. Chapter 1790 – Destroying Thunder Punishment

1798. Chapter 1791 – Opening the Extreme Polar Dao Palace

1799. Chapter 1792 – Towards Soul World

1800. Chapter 1793 – Dreamsoul Heaven

1801. Chapter 1794 – The Human Race of the Soul World

1802. Chapter 1795 – Akashic Dream Battlefield

1803. Chapter 1796 – Zenith Palace

1804. Chapter 1797 – Dispute

1805. Chapter 1798 – Akashic Dream Battlefield Opens

1806. Chapter 1799 – Stealing the Stage

1807. Chapter 1800 – Entering the Battlefield

1808. Chapter 1801 – Emperor God Wall

1809. Chapter 1802 – Empyreans Involved

1810. Chapter 1803 – Bait

1811. Chapter 1804 – Reinforcements

1812. Chapter 1805 – Weeping Blood God Springs

1813. Chapter 1806 – The Soul Cave

1814. Chapter 1807 - Spiritual Storm

1815. Chapter 1808 –Kirin Fruit

1816. Chapter 1809 – Cutting Down the Soul Beasts

1817. Chapter 1810 – Decimation

1818. Chapter 1811 – Mysterious Little Girl

1819. Chapter 1812 – Hidden Treasure

1820. Chapter 1813 – A Grand Killing Feast

1821. Chapter 1814 – Blood Stains the Forest

1822. Chapter 1815 – Kill Them All

1823. Chapter 1816 – Brilliant Fireworks

1824. Chapter 1817 – Killing the World Kings

1825. Chapter 1818 – Empyrean Myriad Ghost

1826. Chapter 1819 – Fighting an Empyrean

1827. Chapter 1820 – Poison Laws

1828. Chapter 1821 – Exterminating Myriad Ghost

1829. Chapter 1822 – Chaos Demon God Retreats

1830. Chapter 1823 – Hidden Treasures

1831. Chapter 1824 – Ancient Ruins

1832. Chapter 1825 – Middle Holy Lord

1833. Chapter 1826 – Exit

1834. Chapter 1827 – One Billion Merit Points

1835. Chapter 1828 – The End of the Battlefield

1836. Chapter 1829 - Fall of an Empyrean

1837. Chapter 1830 – Guru Kunyuan

1838. Chapter 1831 – Rapidly Rising Merit Points

1839. Chapter 1832 – Next to Sheng Mei

1840. Chapter 1833 – Golden Page

1841. Chapter 1834 – Seventh Revolution Sheng Mei

1842. Chapter 1835 – Reward

1843. Chapter 1836 – Fallen God Mountain Range

1844. Chapter 1837 – Jade Lifestone

1845. Chapter 1838 – Enlightenment on the Shrine Platform

1846. Chapter 1839 – Identity Revealed

1847. Chapter 1840 – Surrounded

1848. Chapter 1841 – Clash

1849. Chapter 1842 – Killing, Killing, Killing

1850. Chapter 1843 – Tragic

1851. Chapter 1844 – Change

1852. Chapter 1845 – Sheng Mei Arrives

1853. Chapter 1846 – Chips

1854. Chapter 1847 – All of You, Disperse

1855. Chapter 1848 – First Wood Page

1856. Chapter 1849 – Mysterious Woman

1857. Chapter 1850 – Eye

1858. Chapter 1851A – Moon and Star Struggle For Brilliance

1859. Chapter 1851B – Life and Death

1860. Chapter 1852 – The Concept of Death

1861. Chapter 1853 – Overtake

1862. Chapter 1854 – Enlightenment For 10 Years

1863. Chapter 1855 – Golden Page In Hand

1864. Chapter 1856 – Win And Lose

1865. Chapter 1857 – Samsara of Life and Death

1866. Chapter 1858 – The Old Youth

1867. Chapter 1859 – Sheng Mei's Sigh

1868. Chapter 1860 – A Hundred Million Years

1869. Chapter 1861 – Struggle

1870. Chapter 1862 – Primeval Universe

1871. Chapter 1863 – Entering the God Race

1872. Chapter 1864 – God Race Royalty

1873. Chapter 1865 – A'Gu

1874. Chapter 1866 – God Race Headquarters

1875. Chapter 1867 – The Goddess's Necklace

1876. Chapter 1868 – God Race's Forbidden Land

1877. Chapter 1869 – The Old God Sovereign

1878. Chapter 1870A – Of the Heart

1879. Chapter 1870B – Of the Heart

1880. Chapter 1871 – Selfless

1881. Chapter 1872 – Primordius' Heart

1882. Chapter 1873 – Chosen

1883. Chapter 1874 – God Decrees

1884. Chapter 1875 – Smokeless

1885. Chapter 1876 – Lin Ming's Request

1886. Chapter 1877 – Repairing the Decree

1887. Chapter 1878 – New

1888. Chapter 1879 – The Celestials' Concessions

1889. Chapter 1880 – Entering the Forbidden Land

1890. Chapter 1881 – Tricks

1891. Chapter 1882 – Cold Ice Mirror

1892. Chapter 1883 – Ancient Geniuses

1893. Chapter 1884 – The Past Versus the Present

1894. Chapter 1885 – True Divinity Spirit Treasure

1895. Chapter 1886 – Lin Ming Fights

1896. Chapter 1887 – Another Battle

1897. Chapter 1888 – Enigma

1898. Chapter 1889 – Mysterious Woman

1899. Chapter 1890 - Veil

1900. Chapter 1891 – Reward

1901. Chapter 1892 – Peak Holy Lord

1902. Chapter 1893 – Six Supreme Treasures

1903. Chapter 1894 – Lin Ming's Choice

1904. Chapter 1895 – The God Sovereign's Decision

1905. Chapter 1896 – The Giant Beast in the Blood Pool

1906. Chapter 1897 – Raise the Sails!

1907. Chapter 1898 – Killing an Empyrean

1908. Chapter 1899 – Famine

1909. Chapter 1900 – Asura Primal God Cannon

1910. Chapter 1901 – Blast Through the Void

1911. Chapter 1902 – Guide

1912. Chapter 1903 – The Power of the God Decrees

1913. Chapter 1904 – Good Fortune Saint Sovereign

1914. Chapter 1905 – Asura Decree

1915. Chapter 1906 – Blood Dyes the Starry Skies

1916. Chapter 1907 – The Changes of Time

1917. Chapter 1908 – Love and Pain

1918. Chapter 1909 – Severing the Dragon

1919. Chapter 1910 – Invincible

1920. Chapter 1911 – The Final Counterattack

1921. Chapter 1912 – Black Hole Disintegration

1922. Chapter 1913 – Point

1923. Chapter 1914 – The Strongest Joint Attack

1924. Chapter 1915 – True Divinity Mark

1925. Chapter 1916 – The Lurking Danger

1926. Chapter 1917 – Return (A)

1927. Chapter 1918 – Return (B)

1928. Chapter 1919 – Reunion

1929. Chapter 1920 – The Might of Divine Dream

1930. Chapter 1921 – Emperor Shakya

1931. Chapter 1922 – Absolute Victory

1932. Chapter 1923 – Evacuate

1933. Chapter 1924 – Astral Vault God King

1934. Chapter 1925 – World Annihilation Crisis

1935. Chapter 1926 – Feather

1936. Chapter 1927 – Parting

1937. Chapter 1928 – Soaring Feather God King

1938. Chapter 1929A – A Beautiful Trap

1939. Chapter 1929B – A Beautiful Trap

1940. Chapter 1930 – Soul Source

1941. Chapter 1931A – Love and Hate

1942. Chapter 1931B – Love and Hate

1943. Chapter 1932 – Sword Mountain

1944. Chapter 1933 – How Can I Defy the Heavens?

1945. Chapter 1934 – Old Friends Meet Once More

1946. Chapter 1935A – Revisiting Familiar Lands

1947. Chapter 1935B – Revisiting Familiar Lands

1948. Chapter 1936A – A Snowy Night

1949. Chapter 1936B – A Snowy Night

1950. Chapter 1937 – The Passing of Life

1951. Chapter 1938A – Live Without Regret

1952. Chapter 1938B – Live Without Regret

1953. Chapter 1939 – Dispersing Cultivation

1954. Chapter 1940 – Understanding Life and Death

1955. Chapter 1941 – Opening the Magic Cube Once More

1956. Chapter 1942 – Restoring the Origin

1957. Chapter 1943 – Grand Reincarnation Art

1958. Chapter 1944 – A Single Life (1)

1959. Chapter 1945 - A Single Life (2)

1960. Chapter 1946 - A Single Life (3)

1961. Chapter 1947 - A Single Life (4)

1962. Chapter 1948 - A Single Life (5)

1963. Chapter 1949 - A Single Life (6)

1964. Chapter 1950 - A Single Life (7)

1965. Chapter 1951 - A Single Life (8)

1966. Chapter 1952 - A Single Life (9)

1967. Chapter 1953 - A Single Life (10)

1968. Chapter 1954 – Attacking World King

1969. Chapter 1955 - Lin Ming's World

1970. Chapter 1956 - The End of the First Life

1971. Chapter 1957 - Returning Home

1972. Chapter 1958 - The Second Reincarnation

1973. Chapter 1959 - Return to the Divine Realm

1974. Chapter 1960 - Reentering the Asura Road

1975. Chapter 1961 - Famine's Avatar

1976. Chapter 1962 - The Final Trial Opens

1977. Chapter 1963 - Entering the Gate of Laws

1978. Chapter 1964 - Change in the Spatial Gate

1979. Chapter 1965 - The Final Gate

1980. Chapter 1966 - Debate In the Void

1981. Chapter 1967 - Completing the Laws

1982. Chapter 1968 - Entering the Immortal Palace Once More

1983. Chapter 1969 - World Seed

1984. Chapter 1970 - The Secret Treasure in the Swamp

1985. Chapter 1971 - Demon Phenomenon

1986. Chapter 1972 - Demon Relic

1987. Chapter 1973 - Artificial Demon

1988. Chapter 1974 - Slaughter

1989. Chapter 1975 - Suppression Through Power

1990. Chapter 1976 – Those Against Me, Die

1991. Chapter 1977A – Stirring Up Trouble

1992. Chapter 1977B – Stirring Up Trouble

1993. Chapter 1978 – Fighting the Undying Polar Ice Once More

1994. Chapter 1979 – Opening the Seventh Level

1995. Chapter 1980 – Emperor Cemetery

1996. Chapter 1981 – Guardians

1997. Chapter 1982 – Empyrean Divine Seal

1998. MW Chapter 1983

1999. MW Chapter 1984

2000. MW Chapter 1985

2001. MW Chapter 1986

2002. MW Chapter 1987

2003. MW Chapter 1988

2004. MW Chapter 1989

2005. MW Chapter 1990

2006. MW Chapter 1991

2007. MW Chapter 1992A

2008. MW Chapter 1992B

2009. MW Chapter 1993

2010. MW Chapter 1994

2011. MW Chapter 1995

2012. MW Chapter 1996

2013. MW Chapter 1997

2014. MW Chapter 1998

2015. MW Chapter 1999

2016. MW Chapter 2000A

2017. MW Chapter 2000B

2018. MW Chapter 2001

2019. MW Chapter 2002

2020. MW Chapter 2003

2021. MW Chapter 2004

2022. MW Chapter 2005

2023. MW Chapter 2006

2024. MW Chapter 2007

2025. MW Chapter 2008

2026. MW Chapter 2009

2027. MW Chapter 2010

2028. MW Chapter 2011

2029. MW Chapter 2012

2030. MW Chapter 2013

2031. MW Chapter 2014A

2032. MW Chapter 2014B

2033. MW Chapter 2015

2034. MW Chapter 2016

2035. MW Chapter 2017

2036. MW Chapter 2018
2037. MW Chapter 2019
2038. MW Chapter 2020
2039. MW Chapter 2021
2040. MW Chapter 2022
2041. MW Chapter 2023
2042. MW Chapter 2024
2043. MW Chapter 2025
2044. MW Chapter 2026
2045. MW Chapter 2027
2046. MW Chapter 2028
2047. MW Chapter 2029
2048. MW Chapter 2030
2049. MW Chapter 2031
2050. MW Chapter 2032
2051. MW Chapter 2033
2052. MW Chapter 2034
2053. MW Chapter 2035
2054. MW Chapter 2036
2055. MW Chapter 2037
2056. MW Chapter 2038

2057. MW Chapter 2039

2058. MW Chapter 2040

2059. MW Chapter 2041

2060. MW Chapter 2042

2061. MW Chapter 2043

2062. MW Chapter 2044

2063. MW Chapter 2045

2064. MW Chapter 2046

2065. MW Chapter 2047

2066. MW Chapter 2048

2067. MW Chapter 2049

2068. MW Chapter 2050

2069. MW Chapter 2051

2070. MW Chapter 2052

2071. MW Chapter 2053

2072. MW Chapter 2054

2073. MW Chapter 2055

2074. MW Chapter 2056

2075. MW Chapter 2057

2076. MW Chapter 2058

2077. MW Chapter 2059

2078. MW Chapter 2060

2079. MW Chapter 2061

2080. MW Chapter 2062

2081. MW Chapter 2063

2082. MW Chapter 2064

2083. MW Chapter 2065

2084. MW Chapter 2066

2085. MW Chapter 2067

2086. MW Chapter 2068

2087. MW Chapter 2069

2088. MW Chapter 2070

2089. MW Chapter 2071

2090. MW Chapter 2072

2091. MW Chapter 2073

2092. MW Chapter 2074

2093. MW Chapter 2075

2094. MW Chapter 2076

2095. MW Chapter 2077

2096. MW Chapter 2078

2097. MW Chapter 2079

2098. MW Chapter 2080

2099. MW Chapter 2081
2100. MW Chapter 2082
2101. MW Chapter 2083
2102. MW Chapter 2084
2103. MW Chapter 2085
2104. MW Chapter 2086
2105. MW Chapter 2087
2106. MW Chapter 2088
2107. MW Chapter 2089
2108. MW Chapter 2090
2109. MW Chapter 2091
2110. MW Chapter 2092
2111. MW Chapter 2093
2112. MW Chapter 2094
2113. MW Chapter 2095
2114. MW Chapter 2096
2115. MW Chapter 2097
2116. MW Chapter 2098
2117. MW Chapter 2099
2118. MW Chapter 2100
2119. MW Chapter 2101

2120. MW Chapter 2102
2121. MW Chapter 2103
2122. MW Chapter 2104
2123. MW Chapter 2105
2124. MW Chapter 2106
2125. MW Chapter 2107
2126. MW Chapter 2108
2127. MW Chapter 2109
2128. MW Chapter 2110
2129. MW Chapter 2111
2130. MW Chapter 2112
2131. MW Chapter 2113
2132. MW Chapter 2114
2133. MW Chapter 2115
2134. MW Chapter 2116
2135. MW Chapter 2117
2136. MW Chapter 2118
2137. MW Chapter 2119
2138. MW Chapter 2120
2139. MW Chapter 2121
2140. MW Chapter 2122

2141. MW Chapter 2123

2142. MW Chapter 2124

2143. MW Chapter 2125

2144. MW Chapter 2126

2145. MW Chapter 2127A

2146. MW Chapter 2127B

2147. MW Chapter 2128

2148. MW Chapter 2129

2149. MW Chapter 2130

2150. MW Chapter 2131

2151. MW Chapter 2132

2152. MW Chapter 2133

2153. MW Chapter 2134

2154. MW Chapter 2135

2155. MW Chapter 2136

2156. MW Chapter 2137

2157. MW Chapter 2138

2158. MW Chapter 2139

2159. MW Chapter 2140

2160. MW Chapter 2141

2161. MW Chapter 2142

2162. MW Chapter 2143
2163. MW Chapter 2144
2164. MW Chapter 2145
2165. MW Chapter 2146
2166. MW Chapter 2147
2167. MW Chapter 2148
2168. MW Chapter 2149
2169. MW Chapter 2150
2170. MW Chapter 2151
2171. MW Chapter 2152
2172. MW Chapter 2153
2173. MW Chapter 2154
2174. MW Chapter 2155
2175. MW Chapter 2156
2176. MW Chapter 2157
2177. MW Chapter 2158
2178. MW Chapter 2159
2179. MW Chapter 2160
2180. MW Chapter 2161
2181. MW Chapter 2162
2182. MW Chapter 2163

2183. MW Chapter 2164

2184. MW Chapter 2165

2185. MW Chapter 2166

2186. MW Chapter 2167

2187. MW Chapter 2168

2188. MW Chapter 2169

2189. MW Chapter 2170

2190. MW Chapter 2171

2191. MW Chapter 2172

2192. MW Chapter 2173

2193. MW Chapter 2174

2194. MW Chapter 2175

2195. MW Chapter 2176

2196. MW Chapter 2177

2197. MW Chapter 2178

2198. MW Chapter 2179

2199. MW Chapter 2180

2200. MW Chapter 2181

2201. MW Chapter 2182

2202. MW Chapter 2183

2203. MW Chapter 2184

2204. MW Chapter 2185

2205. MW Chapter 2186

2206. MW Chapter 2187

2207. MW Chapter 2188

2208. MW Chapter 2189

2209. MW Chapter 2190

2210. MW Chapter 2191

2211. MW Chapter 2192

2212. MW Chapter 2193

2213. MW Chapter 2194

2214. MW Chapter 2195

2215. MW Chapter 2196

2216. MW Chapter 2197

2217. MW Chapter 2198

2218. MW Chapter 2199

2219. MW Chapter 2200

2220. MW Chapter 2201

2221. MW Chapter 2202

2222. MW Chapter 2203

2223. MW Chapter 2204

2224. MW Chapter 2205

2225. MW Chapter 2206
2226. MW Chapter 2207
2227. MW Chapter 2208
2228. MW Chapter 2209
2229. MW Chapter 2210
2230. MW Chapter 2211
2231. MW Chapter 2212
2232. MW Chapter 2213
2233. MW Chapter 2214
2234. MW Chapter 2215
2235. MW Chapter 2216
2236. MW Chapter 2217
2237. MW Chapter 2218
2238. MW Chapter 2219
2239. MW Chapter 2220
2240. MW Chapter 2221
2241. MW Chapter 2222
2242. MW Chapter 2223
2243. MW Chapter 2224
2244. MW Chapter 2225
2245. MW Chapter 2226

2246. MW Chapter 2227

2247. MW Chapter 2228

2248. MW Chapter 2229

2249. MW Chapter 2230

2250. MW Chapter 2231

2251. MW Chapter 2232

2252. MW Chapter 2233

2253. MW Chapter 2234

2254. MW Chapter 2235

2255. MW Chapter 2236

2256. MW Chapter 2237

2257. MW Chapter 2238

2258. MW Chapter 2239

2259. MW Chapter 2240

2260. MW Chapter 2241

2261. MW Chapter 2242

2262. MW Chapter 2243

2263. MW Chapter 2244

2264. MW Chapter 2245A

2265. MW Chapter 2245B

2266. MW Chapter 2246

2267. MW Chapter 2247
2268. MW Chapter 2248
2269. MW Chapter 2249
2270. MW Chapter 2250
2271. MW Chapter 2251
2272. MW Chapter 2252
2273. MW Chapter 2253
2274. MW Chapter 2254
2275. MW Chapter 2255
2276. Afterword

Landmarks

1. Cover

Prologue: Magic Cube

In a vast expanse of misty snow, countless ice flakes were being blown in circular fashion by the freezing winds. They collided against one another in the middle of the air, releasing a spine chilling coldness, which threatened to freeze the human soul.

This is the Snowfall Realm, one of the numerous realms within the Divine Domain. The Snowfall Realm is ever snowing, turning any trace of water into frosty snow.

Within these desolate lands of snow, in a certain area, the snowflakes suddenly moved around in a spiral, as though it had been affected by something. The snowflakes melded with one another before gradually spreading out into a form of whirlpool. A glowing curtain, seemingly made of quicksilver appeared out of thin air. In the next instant, a woman wearing an ocean blue robe emerged from within.

This woman exuded an aura of eminence, her black hair descended like a waterfall, her entire body emanating an atmosphere of sacred purity. She was just like a blooming snowy jade lotus flower. However, the woman's face was pale and traces of blood could be seen from the corners of her lips, disrupting her gentle aura of spirituality.

The glowing curtain disappeared and the woman spat out a mouthful of blood, her consciousness becoming weaker.

"Sister!"

A clear feminine voice sounded out in the air and a white sphere of light emerged from the woman's body. The white sphere transformed into the body of a young woman. "Sister, how are you?"

"It is nothing," The woman in ocean blue dress waved her had. She who had been seriously injured was forced to create a fissure in space and teleport over through such a great distance to another realm within the Divine Domain. This had left her suffering from an even greater degree of injuries.

“Where is this?” The woman in ocean blue dress asked.

The young woman produced a jade instrument and used her spiritual awareness to probe it before replying. “Sister, we have arrived at the Snowfall Realm.”

“Snowfall Realm?” The blue dressed woman was momentarily shocked, then she gave out a sigh. “There are three thousand realms within the Divine Domain whereas I have travelled through the Void numerous times. And yet, I end up escaping into the one realm I did not want to end up in. My real name is Mu Qian Xue (snow)1, and this is the Snowfall Realm. Snow fall, snow fall, perhaps this is where I will fall…”

“Sister, you won’t, we…” Just as the young woman was talking, a violent fluctuation of energies suddenly appeared in the air. In the next moment, an invisible pair of hands tore down the space. Next, a man in black walked out from the tear in space and stood upright in the middle of the air.

After seeing the appearance of this man, the young woman’s face changed greatly and her words became lost within her throat.

The black man was handsome and outstanding in bearing, however, a crimson shade was emanating from both his pupils, granting him a fearsome visage. Seeing Mu Qianxue, he gave a light laugh. “Your Holiness, we meet again.”

Mu Qianxue’s countenance remained cold. Although she had expected that the other side would chase her, she did not expect that it would happen so fast.

The man continued “Your Holiness, for things to develop until such an extent is truly regrettable. I truly had no choice regarding the destruction of the High Verdant Sacred Lands. For beings such as you and me with such a kind of cultivation level, there is nothing in the world that we could not obtain. Thus, what you and I both desire is only absolute power and eternity. Why don’t Your Holiness hand over the Divine Magic Cube to me? We can study it together and explore the secrets hidden within the Magic Cube. We can be partners through it all, what do you think?"

Mu Qianxue channelled the divine energies within her body and coldly replied. "There is no need to talk about nonsensical subjects. Tian Mingzi, you may be capable of destroying the High Verdant Sacred Lands; but you will have to pay dearly if you wish to kill me."

"Is that so? Then I guess I will have to give it a try," The one called Tian Mingzi showed an air of indifference. His right had turned, and an ancient looking pagoda appeared in his hands. This is the Catastrophic Spirit Treasure, God Sealing Pagoda, capable of sealing gods and imprisoning demons. It could also serve as a vessel capable of accommodating ten thousand warriors. Half a month ago, this man had utilized this divine pagoda to transport ten thousand masters from all over the Divine Domain and brought them over to the High Verdant Sacred Lands, leading to its destruction.

Tian Mingzi tossed the God Sealing Pagoda into the air. Next, a golden light filled the area and ten thousand masters appeared within the Snowfall Realm. In just an instant, the skies were blotted by the countless shadows.

Ten thousand figures stood in the middle of the air, their gazes were all directed at the two helpless women standing upon the snowy landscape. Their eyes were filled with coldness and indifference.

Observing all this, the corners of Mu Qianxue's mouth curled into a sneer. She had been waiting for this exact moment: Dark Infernal Sacred Lands, Mystifying Primal Sacred Lands, Ancient Anarchic Palace, Malevolent Blood Island... all of you came together in concert to destroy my High Verdant Sacred Lands. As compensation, I will use my own soul to bury all of you today!

Tian Mingzi spoke out. "Mu Qianxue, in terms of your strength and Heavenly defying talent, you are someone who deserves my respect and admiration. But as of now, you are already grievously injured. There is no chance for you to win against ten thousand masters of the Divine Domain. I still advise you to just surrender the Divine Magic Cube. I will spare you and your sister."

Mu Qianxue ignored him. Focusing her mind, a one cubic inch grey coloured cube with black coloured inscriptions on its surface slowly appeared from Mu Qianxue's palm. This is the object that had shaken up the entire Divine Domain, the Divine Magic Cube.

Mu Qianxue infused all of her divine energies into the Divine Magic Cube. Even though the Divine Magic Cube had been with her for over a year, she still could not comprehend the profound mysteries within it. Perhaps the Divine Magic Cube is the crystallized form of what is left of the soul of a legendary True God that had fallen. It possesses the terrifying power to pulverize every single soul. However, Mu Qianxue's current strength was insufficient to fully control this power. If she were to use it, then her own soul would be devoured and sealed by the Divine Magic Cube.

"Yue'er, do not resist."

"Sister?" The young woman did not understand what Mu Qianxue meant. At that moment, a layer of light enveloped her body. This light was meant to pierce the Void and transport her through space.

Mu Qianxue wanted to first send her sister away. Once she activated the forbidden powers of the Magic Cube, the soul of every living being in the vicinity would be absorbed and pulverized. This was also the reason why she was unable to deploy the forbidden powers of the Divine Magic Cube back in the High Verdant Sacred Lands.

"Hehe, you want to send your sister away? How could I allow that?" Tian Mingzi moved both hands, forming a seal. He had wanted to freeze the surrounding Void space, however, his face suddenly changed. The Divine Magic Cube within Mu Qianxue's palm was seemingly condensing a horrifying amount of power that had instilled a sense of fear into his soul, causing it to tremble.

This is… Tian Mingzi's heart raced and his seal-forming pattern changed. He had sensed a life-threatening crisis heading his way.

The Worldly Primal Qi all went berserk in that one instant, creating an energy vortex on the surface of the Divine Magic Cube.

"Using my soul as the guide, I shall avail myself to the power of God, Soul Extermination!"

Mu Qianxue spat out those words in a cold and clear manner, following which her body was transformed into specks of starlight. Her soul and spiritual awareness were both transformed into light streams and were absorbed and fused into the Divine Magic Cube. Watching all this, Tian Mingzi's face changed greatly. Without any hesitation, he quickly ripped out a tear in space, intending to make a run for it. However, it was at this moment that the terrifying energies upon the Divine Magic Cube's surface exploded outwards.

It was as though the stars itself had exploded, the surrounding space transformed into an imagery of paper being torn asunder. It was only now that the ten thousand masters from the Divine Domain that had arrived upon Snowfall Realm realized the life and death predicament that they were in. Those of them with the ability to pass through realms all tried to escape through the Void. Unfortunately, it was too late. The surrounding space was decimated by the terrifying energies and the resulting spiral storm absorbed all of them, akin to scraps of paper being sucked in. Their bodies were transformed into dust and vanished while their souls were crushed by the spiralling storm into fragments. Those soul fragments were then absorbed into the Magic Cube.

The large-scale amount of spatial collapse rendered a huge chunk of the Snowfall Realm into a dead zone. This zone had turned into an area filled with space storms capable of destroying everything. As for the Divine Magic Cube, it devoured every single one of the soul fragments and was also propelled into the spiralling space storm, entering into the Void…

[1 The pinyin for 'snow' is 'xuě'.]

Chapter 1 – Lin Ming

[TL: Thanks to Kuma for suggesting MW. Also, since the MC for MW is not from modern Earth, there will not be any real world politics issue like in OEM.]

Chapter 0001 Lin Ming

Within the Sky Fortune City, the capital of Sky Fortune Kingdom, the Seven Profound Martial House stands before the Great Mountain Zhou. Seven Profound Martial House, it is the martial house set up by the Seven Profound Valley, a martial arts clan with over six hundred years of heritage. It is also the only martial house set up by them in the Sky Fortune Kingdom.

As one of the biggest martial house, Seven Profound Martial House possesses a great number of legacy martial skills and martial masters as its tutors. It was only natural that it would become the holy land of the many young aspiring martial artists. Correspondingly, the entrance qualifications for new recruits in Seven Profound Martial House were set at a high threshold. It would not be an exaggeration to say that only one in a million would be able to qualify.

Under the scorching heat of summer, a teenage boy stood within a forest of the Great Mountain Zhou. Both his fists were wrapped up with strips of cloth as he stood bare chested before a rough looking big tree. He threw punch after punch, striking heavily against the tree trunk.

“Peng!” “Peng!” Heavy sounds echoed out around the forest. The layer of bark on the big tree that were struck had sunk downwards noticeably, exposing its greyish wooden texture. On its surface, traces of blood could be seen.

This teenager’s name is Lin Ming. He possesses a Grade Three Martial Talent.

In Sky Fortune Kingdom, half of its citizens have no martial talent to speak of and are unsuitable towards the path of martial arts. As for the other half, at least eighty per cent of them have a Grade One Martial Talent. Even if these people were to practice martial arts, they would not be able to reach anywhere. One in ten of the remaining people have a ninety per cent chance of having Grade Two Martial Talent. If these people were to be diligent in their practice of martial arts, they have a chance to accomplish something in life. However, becoming a master of the martial arts would be near hopeless for them.

Lin Ming's Grade Three Martial Talent could be considered as a high-class existence. If one were to be boastful, one could claim that he is the cream of the crop. However, even with his martial talent, it would still be difficult for him to enter the Seven Profound Martial House!

Lin Ming was well aware of this. Together with his female childhood friend, the beautiful Lan Yunyue who also has a Grade Three Martial Talent, they had agreed to take the entrance assessment for the Sky Fortune Martial House even though it is nowhere near as good as the Seven Profound Martial House.

The Sky Fortune Martial House is part of Sky Fortune Kingdom. Since the day of its inception, it has only eighty years' worth of martial skills, legacy and foundation, a limited number indeed. Legacy martial skills are something of great importance to martial artists. Without a good set of martial skills, the goal of completing the final Physical Training Stage, the Pulse Condensing Stage or higher would be near impossible.

The Pulse Condensing Stage is a realm that most martial artists vied for. It is also the first turning point for cultivators of the martial way. Once the Pulse Condensing Stage is successfully attained, a martial artist's lifespan would be greatly increased. Additionally, they would also be granted the title of nobility, allowing them to live a life of prosperity, bringing a blessing to their descendants.

It is in this Pulse Condensing Stage training that the Sky Fortune Martial House falls greatly behind the Seven Profound Martial House.

Lin Ming's heart pulsed for the sake of the martial way. It was only natural that he too, desired to enter the Seven Profound Martial House. If his talent was insufficient, then he could only rely on his own diligence and perseverance to impress the examiners. However, the prospect of him entering was very low. Moreover, once he failed, he would have to waste half a year's time to wait for another opportunity. For martial artists, this amount of time is highly precious.

Placing all this into consideration, in addition to the fact that he had promised Lan Yunyue, Lin Ming decided instead to enter the Sky Fortune Martial House.

Lin Ming and Lan Yunyue had trained and played together for many years. Even though the both of them were still young and the topic of marriage never came up, those emotions have already begun budding. Lin Ming's parents on the other hand, had shown their approval and love towards Lan Yunyue. They would always invite Lan Yunyue to their house for dinner.

A mutual feeling of goodwill existed between Lin Ming and Lan Yunyue, leaving only a thin piece of paper between the two. Once they grow slightly older, this piece of paper would certainly be torn apart.

Lin Ming viewed the agreement between them both seriously. He had determined to charge towards the Pulse Condensing Stage even if he could only train within the Sky Fortune Martial House!

However, on the day that Sky Fortune Martial House held its entrance assessment, Lan Yunyue failed to show up.

At first, Lin Ming had assumed that Lan Yunyue was unable to arrive due to some matters. It was only later that he learnt of Lan Yunyue entering the Seven Profound Martial House. Additionally, the one who had ensured her success in becoming a disciple of Seven Profound Martial House was Zhu Yan, the genius Young Master of Green Mulberry City's number one family.

Although Lin Ming was only fifteen years old, he had accompanied his parents to do battle on the outside before. Thus, he has a greater level of maturity compared to others. He understood the meaning behind Zhu Yan's act of ensuring that the Seven Profound Martial House accepted Lan Yunyue.

For a great family such as the Zhu Family, their prerequisite in selecting future wives lied not in terms of appearances, but rather their martial talent. A highly talented wife would have a higher chance of giving birth to a martial genius. Although Lan Yunyue's family is only average, her Grade Three Martial Talent is very good considering her gender. In addition, Lan Yunyue herself is a beauty with an outstanding temperament. It was only natural that Zhu Yan would fall for her.

For Lan Yunyue, the difference between the Sky Fortune Martial House and Seven Profound Martial House is simply too great. The opportunities, honour, glory, and potential accomplishments that both could able to provide are simply incomparable. This is especially true regarding the extension of life that could be gained after one successfully reaches the Pulse Condensing Stage. Such a kind of temptation is simply irresistible for girls.

Faced with such appealing prospects, most females would have chosen to go with Zhu Yan as well. After all, Zhu Yan himself possesses handsome features; his family background and future are both far better compared to Lin Ming's.

Although he was able to understand, to say that this matter did not greatly affect Lin Ming would be a lie. He shut himself within his room for three days. After that, he walked out and proceeded to eat, sleep and train. Moreover, the intensity of his training had become much higher than before.

Before Lan Yunyue had left him, Lin Ming had already made the decision to break through into the Pulse Condensing Stage and pursue an even higher realm of martial cultivation. The current Lin Ming was no different. If he still had any doubts before, then Lan Yunyue's act of leaving him had hardened his resolve towards the Martial Way.

He made the decision to enter the entrance assessment for the Seven Profound Martial House, no matter how difficult the process may be.

"Peng!" "Peng!" The heavy sounds of fists striking against the tree trunk echoed continuously throughout the forest. The name of this tree is Iron Tree. Not only does it possess an extremely tough layer of bark, it also has strong regenerative properties. Many beginners of the martial way would choose this Iron Tree to train themselves.

After throwing out who knew how many punches, Lin Ming finally exhausted himself. Leaning upon a tree trunk, he sat down on a piece of rock and removed some herbs from a backpack placed on the ground. He smeared them onto the surface of his fists and kneaded. For those who pursue martial arts, frequent usage of body treatment herbs is necessary. Not doing so would cause internal injuries to build up. Once these internal injuries accumulate, there is a possibility of becoming a cripple or even death.

This herb is called Iron Thread Grass. It was given this name because the green juice produced from squeezing Iron Thread Grass could help heal wounds but would cause a terribly painful sensation akin to having iron threads brushing upon the wounds.

Lin Ming gritted his teeth as he endured the pain. He retrieved a white cloth from within the backpack and rolled it around his fists, bandaging it.

Truth be told, there were many other herbs that are more effective compared to the Iron Thread Grass. These herbs also has a milder side effect, but comes at a much higher price. Lin Ming's circumstances made it impossible for him to afford such herbs.

Lin Ming's parents run a restaurant within Green Mulberry City. However, this restaurant does not belong to them. It actually belonged to the Lin Family1 of Green Mulberry City.

Although Lin Ming's maiden name is also Lin, his family line had been separated from the Lin Family by several generations. The Lin Family placed some off their less important assets into the hands of their distant relatives for management. Lin Ming's parents livelihood were dependent on their management of this restaurant. Every year they would be given a fixed amount of income and some commission. This money was naturally enough for them to subsist on, however, it would be a stretch to use it to fund Lin Ming's pursuit of martial arts.

Lin Ming's parents had originally wanted Lin Ming to continue the family business and become a treasurer for the restaurant. However, seeing Lin Ming's ardent devotion towards the martial way, they instead chose to take out all their savings for Lin Ming to purchase healing herbs.

Since then, Lin Ming's family savings had decreased bit by bit. But Lin Ming on the other hand had remained at the first stage of Physical Training.

The Physical Training Stage is the first realm for those who pursue the martial way. It involves the primal tempering of their bodies and is separated into six stages. The first stage is Strength Training, second is Flesh Training, third is Viscera Training, fourth is Altering Muscle, fifth is Bone Forging and sixth is Pulse Condensing. After that, one would be able to step into the Primal Assemblage Stage.

After applying the Iron Thread Grass juice onto his wounds, Lin Ming rested for half a long hour (1 hour) to allow his wounds to absorb the medicinal properties of the herb. He then straightened himself and was about to continue training his fists when a fat youngster walked into view. This fat youngster was carrying a long sword with him. Seeing Lin Ming, he grinned and spoke. "Brother Lin, today is the registration day for the entrance assessment of the Seven Profound Martial House. Could it be that you have forgotten about it? Why are you still practicing your fists here?"

This youngster's name is Lin Xiaodong, he is slightly younger than Lin Ming. Growing up together, the two of them have a very strong bond of brotherhood.

Lin Xiaodong is a direct descendant of the Lin Family. However, even for direct descendants, there exists a form of ranking. As it happens, Lin Xiaodong is part of the lowest ranked ones. As for Lin Xiaodong's parents, they too were engaged in business and have a close relationship with Lin Ming's parents.

After seeing Lin Xiaodong, Lin Ming turned his attention back to the tree trunk and said. "The beginning part of the registration will have too many people. The queue would take up to one or two long hours. Going there now would be a waste of time."

"Damn it, you won't even let go of this small amount of time. Do you really have to go that far?" Lin Xiaodong spoke out in exaggeration and walked up to the tree trunk. Observing the indentations caused by the fists and the traces of blood, he turned to see Lin Ming's bandaged fists. He then let out a sigh of disappointment. "You really are crazy, to be able to damage Iron Wood to such an extent. However, with your current training methods, Iron Thread Grass alone won't be enough. If you keep this up, your hands would become crippled!"

Lin Ming did not say anything. The martial way is a constant struggle against Heaven. Considering his Grade Three Martial Talent, attaining the Sixth Stage of Pulse Condensation was incredibly hard. If he does not give it his all while he was still young, then he would have no hope at achieving his goal. Once he had given his all, there would certainly be the possibility of him becoming a cripple due to the accumulation of internal injuries. However, there was also the possibility of him attaining success before that happens. And once he could successfully enter the Pulse Condensation Stage, he could attain true primal tempering of the body and the internal injuries would vanish.

For Lin Ming, this was a battle with his back against the raging river2. This was also a gamble with his life on the line.

Lin Xiaodong gave a sigh and pulled out a bundle from his bosom. He unfurled the bundle layer by layer and said. "Brother Ming, take this."

Lin Ming turned around and was shocked to find a bloody crimson coloured ginseng lying upon the cloth bundle. Judging from its appearance, this strain of blood ginseng is at least a hundred years old. It is a high-grade medicine used for mending wounds and nourishing blood. A thin slice is enough for each use. In addition, the powerful healing properties of this blood ginseng are very gentle. This blood ginseng should be worth at least a hundred and fifty gold liangs, the equivalent of Lin Ming's family's annual income.

Lin Ming's body paused, and he shook his head. "I cannot accept this Blood Ginseng."

Even though they are close brothers, this Blood Ginseng is simply too expensive. Lin Xiaodong's position within the Lin Family is very low. Even though his family situation is much better when compared to Lin Ming's it would still be far from comfortable if their income were used to supplement Lin Xiaodong's martial training.

Lin Xiaodong forcibly pushed the Blood Ginseng onto Lin Ming and said. "I bought this Blood Ginseng for you. You know how I train, I fish every three days and dry the fishing nets every two days3. My body's injuries are no more than a fart's worth. Using this would be a waste. If you refuse then I would have bought this for nothing. I do not have much ambitions in life. I just want to continue holding on to my position as a direct descendant of the Lin Family. As long as I do not end up losing this position and my next generation could also successfully maintain their place in the Lin Family, that is enough for me."

Lin Ming stayed silent for a moment before keeping the Blood Ginseng. He then spoke out. "Very well, I will accept this Blood Ginseng. For the sake of this ginseng, I must break through to the Pulse Condensation Stage."

"Haha, now that is more like it. Not only should you break through into the Pulse Condensation Stage, you must also turn that son of a bitch, Zhu Yan upside down. That bastard has been an eyesore for a long time!"

Zhu Yan huh... Lin Ming sighed lightly. Zhu Yan had already been admitted into the Seven Profound Martial House. In addition, Zhu Yan is currently one of the high ranked disciples within the inner Heavenly Abode, his strength having reached the pinnacle of the Third Stage of Physical Training. Even so, Lin Ming had set defeating Zhu Yan as his objective. This decision was not due to Lan Yunyue but rather due to his pursuit of the martial way. This path required him breaking through one threshold after another;

conquering one mountain after another. As for Zhu Yan, he has the honourable spot of being the number one to be conquered.

At the foot of the Great Mountain Zhou lied a stretch of buildings extending up to twenty li (10km) in length. This is the area of operations for the Seven Profound Martial House and the Sky Fortune Martial House and today is the day of registration for those who wishes to take the Seven Profound Martial House's entrance assessment. A crowd was gathered on the field before the Seven Profound Martial House.

Even though Lin Ming and Lin Xiaodong had deliberately chosen to arrive late, they came to realize that they had underestimated the number of applicants. The applicants were all lined up in three lines, with each line extending up to several meters in length. Judging by the current queue, half a long hour (1 hour) would be needed before registration could be completed.

"We will have to wait," Lin Xiaodong gave a sigh and stood helplessly in line.

"En," Lin Ming nodded his head.

"Hey, there are very few people there," Lin Xiaodong pointed towards a small gate nearby. There were only a few people there. Furthermore, the ground was also paved with red carpet.

"That place is reserved for nobles…" Lin Ming noticed the writings on the sign.

Since the Seven Profound Martial House was built upon the grounds, buildings and resources of Sky Fortune Kingdom, it was only natural for them to give some face to the elite classes of the kingdom. In fact, many of the martial house's affairs would be handed over to the elites to manage. One such example would be today's registration for entrance assessment.

"Damn it," Lin Xiaodong muttered in discontent. Nobility was something that only the Imperial Family could grant and could be inherited. Even though the Lin Family is a wealthy family, it is not a noble family.

Lin Xiaodong was cursing off at the nobles while consoling himself when the doors of the gate opened. Two young males strode out from the gate; one of them was wearing blue clothes with a long sword attached to his waist. His hair was tied up into a gold coloured headgear and had a handsome appearance.

Seeing the appearance of this man caused Lin Ming to frown. This was none other than Zhu Yan.

The Zhu Family's daughter had married into the Imperial Family and had become the Eldest Prince's favoured concubine. With the Eldest Prince's position in the royal family, the Zhu Family soared to become the number one family within Green Mulberry City. Moreover, they were also granted the rank of nobility, thus allowing Zhu Yan to ensure Lan Yunyue's admittance into the Seven Profound Martial House.

"Damn, we end up meeting a detestable person," Lin Xiaodong muttered unhappily.

Zhu Yan was walking side by side with the other young man. A few other nobles waiting outside then chose to follow the two of them. It would appear that Zhu Yan was bringing the other young man to register. The two of them continued walking forward. At this rate, it was inevitable that Lin Ming and Zhu Yan bump into one another.

With his current position and strength, it was possible that he would end up suffering badly if they were to bump into one another. But, Lin Ming chose not to run and instead looked forward in a calm manner as Zhu Yan approached.

Zhu Yan's pace was disrupted after catching sight of Lin Ming and Lin Xiaodong. His first reaction was that of shock. After that, he frowned. Seeing Lin Ming made him feel uncomfortable. Although he had snatched away Lan Yunyue, she had refused to engage in any acts of intimacy before their wedding. Clearly, Lin Ming still exists within Lan Yunyue's heart, not to mention her feelings of guilt. The only reason she had chosen Zhu Yan was due to the Seven Profound Martial House. As a man, Zhu Yan was unable to tolerate the fact that his future wife's heart remained within the palms of another man.

“You are called Lin Ming, am I right? How unexpected, you would actually follow us all the way here. You, with a mere cultivation level of First Stage in Physical Training want to take the test to enter the Seven Profound Martial House?”

The meaning behind Zhu Yan’s words was obvious. He would never allow Lin Ming to enter the Seven Profound Martial House. Even though Lin Ming’s strength was of no threat to him, Lin Ming’s existence within the Seven Profound Martial House would make it impossible for Lan Yunyue to forget Lin Ming.

“Whether or not I manage to pass the assessment is my own problem. I am not here as a result of following anyone. I am here due to my pursuit of the Martial Way.”

“The Martial Way? A mere above average talent like you dared to utter the words of pursuing the Martial Way? Insolence!” Having said that, Zhu Yan’s finger released a light sound; after that, his long sword shot out from its sheath! Zhu Yan grasped onto the sword and slashed the air, releasing an intense sword qi, which created an air splitting sound. A barely visible wave flew outwards, directly cutting down half the canopy of a nearby tree.

The sounds of “pususu” could be heard as a large number of branches and leaves fell to the ground. The people around all stared with bulging eyes. Most of them were of roughly the same age as Zhu Yan and were not that much younger. However, Zhu Yan’s accomplishment in the Martial Way had already left them far behind.

The reason Zhu Yan unleashed this sword slash was to give Lin Ming a mental blow, and show him the gap between the two of them. “I am a Grade Four Martial Talent. I began training in martial arts since I was twelve, consuming countless medicinal pills in the process and have now entered the Heavenly Abode’s Sword Sect within the Seven Profound Martial House. I am currently at the pinnacle of the Third Stage of Physical Training. Even so, I am barely at the beginning stage of the Martial Way. And yet, someone like you with a mere First Stage in Physical Training dared to talk about the Martial Way?”

Zhu Yan’s manner of speech was so arrogant, it caused Lin Xiaodong to become enraged. “Surnamed Zhu! You are simply someone born two years earlier than us! What are you boasting about? If our age were reversed, this senior would use just one hand to toss you away!”

Zhu Yan frowned and turned to look at Lin Xiaodong. He took a step forward, the primal energies within his body exploded outwards as he asked. “Who are you?”

“I…” Due to the oppressive pressure sent out by Zhu Yan, Lin Xiaodong’s words were stuck in his throat. He took a step backwards, swallowed his own saliva and patted his chest before speaking. “This Young Master is called Lin Xiaodong, you better remember it!”

“Lin Xiaodong? Heng, those from the Lin Family that has the qualifications to talk with me can be counted with one hand. What makes you think that a clown like you have the qualifications to speak to me? That includes even you, Lin Ming! If not for Lan Yunyue, you have no qualifications to talk to me at all! I will give you this advice, a man must know his own limits. Someone like Lan Yunyue is not someone that you could match up to.”

A female with Grade Three Martial Talent with good looks and bearing is rare within Green Mulberry City. Most of them would only appear in great families. However, considering the conflicts of interest between the great families, they would never allow their talented females to be married off into other families, leading to the strengthening of their rivals’ bloodline. Thus, most great families would request that the male side marry into their family. This is the reason why Zhu Yan had said that.

“A thousand gold liangs! From today onwards, I do not want to see you face again!” Zhu Yan said as he pulled out a stack of gold bills from his sleeves.

The people around were rendered speechless. A thousand gold liangs is a very high sum of money, enough for a martial artist in the Physical Training Stage to buy up necessary high-grade herbs for training usage for up to three years.

“A thousand gold liangs? Do you take us for beggars?” Lin Xiaodong pushed back the stack of gold bills. Truth be told, he was simply putting on a brave façade. Even for him, a thousand gold liangs is a huge sum of wealth.

Zhu Yan flicked his hands and a powerful repelling force knocked Lin Xiaodong away. Zhu Yan coldly stared at Lin Ming, awaiting his answer.

Lin Ming took a deep breath before speaking out in a slow yet powerful tone. “Zhu Yan, I am not your match in terms of talent, I am even less so in terms of family support. However, the cultivation of martial arts does not depend only on talent and financial support; there is an even more important factor… the heart of a martial artist!”

“Your cultivation of martial arts is done for the sake of wealth, status and vanity. However, my cultivation of martial arts is done for the sake of pursuing the Martial Way. The Martial Way does not exist for those with talent, it does not exist for those with authority and it does not exist for those with money. It exists for those whose heart beats for the sake of martial arts! There will come a day when I will surpass you!” As he reached the end of his sentence, Lin Ming spoke out each word with emphasis and in a clear voice. Everyone who were standing nearby could clearly make out what he had said.

A Grade Three Talent wanted to chase after a Grade Four Talent. In addition, there was an enormous gap in terms of background between them both. This brat has gone mad!

Hearing Lin Ming’s words, Zhu Yan became momentarily stunned before laughing out. “Good! Very good indeed! I will be waiting for you!” After saying that, Zhu Yan kept the stack of gold bills. With a “weng” sound, the long sword returned to its sheath. Zhu Yan then gave Lin Ming a long look before turning away.

[1 It shares the same concept as a clan where everyone has the same maiden name, but are not of the same grandfather.]

[2 A position of no retreat. A strategy employed by famed General Han Xin of the Han Dynasty in the Battle of Jingxing.]

[3 ‘Fish every three days and dry the fishing nets every two days’ = ‘三天打鱼两天晒网’ = A very relaxed way of doing things.]

Chapter 2 – Peculiar Stone

[TL: Last chapter for this week.]

Chapter 0002 Peculiar Stone

“Brother Ming, you were truly domineering back then!” Lin Xiaodong said with gusto as they walked down the road.

Lin Ming remained quiet. The things that he had said back then had sounded grand and impressive, however, it would be extremely difficult for him to surpass Zhu Yan. The amount of effort that he would be required to pay would be colossal.

He has no fear of hard work or bitterness. But the same could not be said for internal injuries. Medicinal herbs were needed to heal those injuries and those medicines were undoubtedly expensive.

Lin Xiaodong was able to guess what Lin Ming was thinking and said. “Brother Ming, all you need to do is train hard. As for the financial side of things, I will figure it out for you. Just be rest assured, even though my grandfather’s position in the family is not high, it is still nothing to scoff at. Taking out a few hundred gold liangs is not impossible for me.”

Lin Ming stopped walking and turned around to face Lin Xiaodong. In life, there are many fair weather friends, but those who would offer help in times of need are rare. Between brothers, saying thanks would be hypocritical. Yet, Lin Ming still stopped and said in a serious tone. “Xiaodong, thank you”

“Enough, stop this. This is too much for me. I am not someone who pursues much in life. Taking the entrance assessment for the Seven Profound Martial House is simply a way to protect my father’s reputation. Brother Ming, I will bet on you. After you become a master in the future, you must help cover my ass a bit, hahaha.”

Lin Ming gave a hearty smile and laughed. “En! With a brother like you, I will definitely persevere onwards onto the Martial Way.”

By the time Lin Ming returned to his dwelling place, it was already evening. This room was one that he had rented. During this period of time, from the day that Seven Profound Martial House began its registration for entrance assessment until the day of its assessment, all the dwelling places within Sky Fortune City would be packed and inns full. The rental rates would undoubtedly increase by half. Thus, many applicants would choose to rent a room. Naturally, that in itself was not a cheap option.

Lin Ming had rented a single room of only ten square meters in area with a very simple set up. Just as he was about to begin his meditation upon the bed, someone knocked on the door.

Lin Ming opened the door to see the landlady standing there. The landlady is a roughly fifty years old woman with a somewhat obese body. The landlady’s face was usually fierce and harsh, but today she was sporting a pleasant looking smile, causing Lin Ming to feel that something was off.

“Landlady, is there anything?”

“This… little fellow, I am sorry, but can you please vacate this room.”

“En?” Lin Ming frowned. “Why?”

“Hehe, sorry, but I have rented this room,” A harsh sounding male voice interrupted. Lin Ming turned around and found a man with huge monkey like ears walking in from the hallway. The man was smiling in a seemingly playful manner.

Looking at him for a moment, Lin Ming recognized him as one of the underlings that had followed along behind Zhu Yan and the other young man. It appeared that he is the underling of the other young man. Back then, the other young man had remained silent and only looked at Lin Ming and Lin Xiaodong with an expression of contempt.

No doubt, the young man was currently trying to get in the good books of Zhu Yan by sending his own underling to cause problems for Lin Ming. All he needed to do was offer a rental fee several times higher than what he had and the landlady would naturally be willing to force him out.

Presently, the Seven Profound Martial House is holding its registration event, leading to difficulty in searching for a dwelling place. Finding another place to rent was easier said than done. But even if he did, there was no guarantee that this underling would not appear to cause problems for him again.

Lin Ming's face turned heavy and he gazed coldly at the landlady. "Back then we had agreed that I will be renting for five months. I have also paid you the five months' rent in advance. Currently, there is still three more months until the deadline. But, you want me to leave now?"

The landlady smiled apologetically. "This... Naturally, I am aware of this. How about this? I will return the rent for the three months back to you. How about that?"

"Ah! Return me the three months' rent? You have quite the calculative mind!" Lin Ming's anger had begun boiling. If this landlady had been forced to evict him due to the pressure of the other person, then Lin Ming would simply have left. However, her current actions and words have made him furious.

"Hey, what are you talking about. Back then, we had only talked about it and not signed off on anything. This room is mine. Who I choose to rent it to is up to me!" Considering Sky Fortune City's status as the capital city of Sky Fortune Kingdom, all the property owners here have a subconscious sense of superiority. To them, all those who came from the outside are but country bumpkins; they would look down upon them while speaking in tones of disdain towards them. Furthermore, this man beside her was obviously someone sent by a rich and powerful family. With someone like this backing her up, the landlady became more courageous.

At this moment, the man with monkey like ears laughed out arrogantly. “If you are sensible, then just get out immediately. I will tell you something else. This Young Master has my eyes on you. Even if you manage to find another place to rent, I will still be able to throw you out. Within this three months before the entrance assessment for the Seven Profound Martial House begins, you should just resign yourself to sleeping in the streets, haha!”

The man laughed.

For those who were born within the circle of elites, it was only natural for them to form an arrogant sense of superiority. However, even when they were expressing their arrogance, they would still maintain a certain bearing of grace and speech, just like Zhu Yan. This person standing before him on the other hand was revealing a naked form of arrogance, one befitting those of bullies who could only depend on others.

Lin Ming stared at the man with monkey like ears, his eyes turning colder with each passing moment.

“What are you looking at? Are you thinking about hitting me? Let me tell you, my Young Master is the second son of the lord of the Defence Army for Sky Fortune City. If you dare beat this Young Master, then this Young Master will…”

“Scram!” Lin Ming shouted and threw out a punch, striking the man squarely in this nose. With a “peng”, the man flew out followed by a series of crashing sounds. After which, the man lied on a pile of debris amidst broken furnitures and pots, his hair dishevelled and his face dripping with blood.

A fist capable of indenting Iron Tree struck the man squarely in the face. The result could be imagined, the man’s nose had totally sunk inwards.

The landlady became shocked, her eyes bulged out for several moments before suddenly shouted out miserably. “Help! Murder!”

The landlady rushed out, but her fat legs were unable to work properly and she fell on the floor with a plop.

Lin Ming stepped towards the man with monkey like ears. Even though his First Stage of Physical Training was only the beginner territory of the martial way, it was by no means worthless. After all, many people within Sky Fortune Kingdom were unable to train in martial arts. Lin Ming on the other hand was a good talent to begin with. In addition, he was very hard working. Amongst one thousand peers of the same talent, it may be difficult to find even one with the same level of strength as him. As for this man, he was simply an underling and did not take much effort for Lin Ming to deal with him.

The man kept moaning, he had never imagined that Lin Ming would actually beat him. He raised a blood-stained finger and pointed at Lin Ming. "You… you dare hit me, you… you are finished."

"I do not know what would happen to me, but I do know that you are finished," Lin Ming delivered a kick at the man's abdomen, causing him to cry out miserably. Once again, he flew out. Only this time, he broke through the door and ended up being kicked all the way outside the house.

Lin Ming did not say anything. He returned to his room and packed up his belongings and began to leave. The entire house had been reduced to a state of mess, causing blood to drip out of the landlady's heart. She timidly said. "You… you cannot leave like that, you… must… must compensate."

Lin Ming stopped walking, he turned around to face the landlady who was slumped on the floor like a human meatball. He asked. "Compensate?"

"Compensate… compensate…" The landlady's voice began losing its strength. She felt as though the gaze of the young man before her was just like a window into the nine infernal abysses, causing her to shudder.

Without saying anything, Lin Ming punched the walls, his fist penetrating through the brick walls of the house, causing the entire house to shudder and dust to fall off the ceiling. The landlady screamed out and fainted.

Lin Ming carried his luggage and walked out of the house without even glancing at the fainted man.

Lin Ming was well aware that after beating up this man, the person behind him would never let this go and would certainly bring upon Lin Ming no small amount of trouble. However, Lin Ming had no regrets.

As a man, there was a need to endure. If the person who had come today was a martial artist, Lin Ming would not have acted as he did and would have chosen to endure. This loss was one that must be endured. However, the one who appeared before him was a worthless underling, one who could only depend on the backing of his master. If Lin Ming had to endure what this kind of person had to say, then what was the point of him learning martial arts?

That was simply incompatible with the Martial Way within Lin Ming's heart.

Thus, Lin Ming left the neighbourhood. After a while, he put down his backpack and started considering how to solve his dwelling problem. As of now, all the inns were full; in addition, the prices were also far too expensive for him. Even though he has no objections to sleeping in the wilds, Lin Xiaodong would probably throw a fuss and insist on bringing him to his own abode.

If Lin Ming were to do so and the second son of the Army Lord sends his men there, Lin Xiaodong himself can forget about sleeping in his house. He will have to accompany Lin Ming and sleep on the streets.

Moreover, Lin Ming had just provoked a dangerous trouble. There was no guarantee that the Army Lord's second son would not send some thugs over. In these people's eyes, causing others to become crippled was no big matter. Lin Ming did not want to bring such a kind of problem to Lin Xiaodong.

If that is the case, then where could I go?

After contemplating about it, Lin Ming finally thought of a place – the most luxurious dining establishment in Sky Fortune City – Grand Clarity Pavilion.

The Grand Clarity Pavilion's consumer base are all of the highest class. In addition, they themselves possess a strong background. With such a strong base of power, a mere second son of an Army Lord could no nothing against it.

The reason Lin Ming wanted to go to Grand Clarity Pavilion was obviously not to spend money to rent a place. He was headed there to find work. Lin Ming's parents operate a restaurant, it was a given that Lin Ming would be able to cook, the taste of his cooking was quite good as well. However, he was not conceited enough to think that he could compete with those cooks in Sky Fortune City. After all, his forte did not lie in the area of cooking…

…

Grand Clarity Pavilion remained brightly lit even as Lin Ming arrived. It is the establishment with the best business in Sky Fortune City.

Lin Ming's clothes were too ordinary, causing all who saw him entering the establishment to look at him with a strange expression. A person with such a kind of clothes would usually be unable to eat within this Grand Clarity Pavilion. Furthermore, there was also the fact that Lin Ming is only a fifteen-year-old teenager.

However, the waiter maintained a favourable manner as he walked over and asked. "Little brother, are you here with your parents?"

Lin Ming shook his head and replied. "I am here for a job."

Hearing that, the waiter frowned. What kind of job could a mere fifteen-year-old kid do? Here, waiting requires beauties who are at least eighteen years old or handsome males who are at least twenty years old. As for cooking, what kind of cooking could a fifteen-year-old kid produce?

"Go away, don't cause a disturbance here," The waiter waved his hand impatiently.

"I can really work, just let me into the kitchen to try."

The waiter asked in an unhappy voice. "What can you do?"

Lin Ming smiled and replied. "Deboning."

"What?" The waiter became stunned.

…

Deboning is a biased line of work and not every restaurant would set up such a job. This job requires the meat dresser to cut up the quarry or hunted animals into pieces while removing its bones.

A master level meat dresser could cut up a cow with ease and skill, a good meat dresser could also cut up a cow, but would require a change of knife every year. Some meat dressers even need to change their knives once a month. In addition, the efficiency involved was low and they would need half a day to cut up a cow.

As for Grand Clarity Pavilion, their ingredients are not cow meat but Ferocious Beasts meat. The meat of Ferocious Beasts is delicious but their scales, skin, bones and tendons are exceptionally tough. Ordinary people would have to struggle to great lengths just to cut out a small part of it. Martial arts masters on the other hand would not be willing to lower themselves to do such a kind of job. Even if they were willing, someone who does not understand how the muscles, bone and tendons come together would not be able to do it. Using pure strength alone in the cutting up process would cause it to lose its delicious taste.

Deboning was how Lin Ming had first come into contact with the Martial Way. Within his parents restaurant, he trained himself in the deboning process every day for the past ten years.

It was a very tiring job! Lin Ming had never considered himself a genius in the martial way. All he could depend on was his own hard work, and continue training over and over again. That was how he managed to form his solid martial foundation, by slashing down the knife, slash after slash within the kitchen.

The waiter was unable to chase Lin Ming away and could only bring him over to the kitchen…

“Sister Lan, this little brother wants to apply work as a deboning worker.”

“Deboning worker?” Within the Grand Clarity Pavilion kitchen, a beautiful woman in her twenties wearing a gorgeous dress appraised Lin Ming. Observing the plain clothes on his body and the backpack he was carrying which made him appear like a refugee, she frowned. She then spoke in a dissatisfied manner towards the waiter who brought Lin Ming in. “What are you doing, bringing just anybody into the kitchen. Dong Zi, give him some silver and send him away.”

Obviously, this beautiful woman considered Lin Ming as a distressed child. As for the rebuked waiter, his face was bitter. Truthfully, he had tried to push Lin Ming out, but had discovered that Lin Ming’s legs seemed to have grown roots and was immovable.

A young man had moved over to drive Lin Ming away. However, at this moment, he suddenly felt his hands becoming lighter. He stared in confusion as Lin Ming had somehow taken away the boning knife that he was holding.

Before the man named Dong Zi could understand what had happened, Lin Ming said. “I am not here to beg for money. Sister, it won’t be too late for you to drive me away after seeing my craftsmanship.”

The beautiful woman was slightly surprised; it appeared that this little kid has some experience in the craft. She shot a look at Dong Zi and said. “How useless, you cannot even handle a little kid. Go to the storehouse and bring over a pig.” After that, she turned to Lin Ming and said. “If you can complete it in half a long hour (1 hour), then I will allow you to stay in Grand Clarity Pavilion.”

Dong Zi knew that he had lost face and turned shamefully to go bring the pig over. However, Lin Ming interrupted him. “No need, I will do that one.”

Lin Ming said as he pointed towards a Scaled Draconic Beast.

The beautiful woman became surprised. A Scaled Drconic Beast is a Level Two Ferocious Beast whose body is brimming with muscles. These muscles are extremely tough and could resist even normal sword attacks. However, using certain herbs and simmering it for three days and nights would produce a thick soup with delicious taste.

For such a kind of Ferocious Beast, even a deboning master would have a difficult time cutting it up. This kid is crazy.

“Are you joking? This Scaled Draconic Beast is worth over a hundred gold liangs. How do you plan to pay us if you end up ruining it?” Dong Zi spoke out in discontent. He was still unhappy at Lin Ming for taking away his knife.

The beautiful woman gave Dong Zi a glance and snapped. “If I let you ruin it, do you think you have what it takes to ruin it?”

Dong Zi suddenly found himself becoming speechless. The Scaled Draconic Beast is not the same as pigs, cows or sheep. Ordinary people would not be able to break its scales even with a knife. Ruining it was not something that normal people could manage to accomplish.

The woman turned to face Lin Ming and said. “I will let you cut!”

Lin Ming nodded his head and picked the best boning knife in the kitchen. He had only cut Scaled Draconic Beasts twice; both times were during the birthday some important figures in the Lin Family. After all, Ferocious Beasts was not something that an average person could afford to buy.

Taking a deep breath, Lin Ming carefully stroked the scales of the Scaled Draconic Beast, feeling the whereabouts of its veins. This process took up the time of an incense’s stick. In his mind, he formed a diagram of the veins. Comparing it with the diagram of his previous Scaled Draconic Beast, he confirmed it to be correct.

While waiting, some people became impatient and finally asked. “What are you doing? Why aren’t you cutting?”

“Stop trying to be mysterious and just cut it.”

It was only natural that these people would become impatient. A fifteen-year-old teenager claiming to be able to debone a Level Two Ferocious Beast, it could only appear to be a prank to them.

Lin Ming turned a deaf ear to these questions. He picked up the knife, his eyes becoming extremely focused. For him, the deboning process was the equivalent of a practice session.

After having confirmed the diagram of the veins, Lin Ming finally began. He did not use an axe or a slaughtering blade; he only used the hard to wield boning knife.

In the hands of Lin Ming, this ordinary knife turned into an exceptionally sharp weapon. The knife descended and the Scaled Draconic Beast’s scales were cut apart!

Observing this occurrence, the person who had been asking questions immediately shut his mouth. This feat alone would have required wrist strength of at least three hundred jin (181.4 kg). For them, the feat of dismembering a Scaled Draconic Beast would normally require either axes or saws.

The edge of the knife moved through the gap in the veins, cutting through it smoothly as though he was cutting through paper. Everyone could only hear the sounds of “shua shua” before the Scaled Draconic Beast’s white muscles were revealed.

Looking at how easily Lin Ming was cutting away, the man called Dong Zi rubbed his eyes. He suspected that there was something wrong with his eyes. Is this little kid really cutting apart a Scaled Draconic Beast?

Lin Ming moved gracefully. Occasionally, a few unavoidable tendons would interrupt his work. When that happened, he would use brute strength to pull it out. Thus, he ended up using about less than half a long hour to cut the Scaled Draconic Beast into pieces. Beside the pieces of meat, rows of ribs were laid down in order. These were the most valuable part of the Scaled Draconic Beast. The lengths of these ribs were all consistent, showing almost no loss during work.

This scene caused everyone to become astounded. What Lin Ming had done may seem easy, but everyone here knew that the dismembering of a Scaled Draconic Beast is a huge project, requiring around five strong men to work in tandem for around half a day. However, that teenager only has a slightly reddish face after completing the task. Judging by his looks, cutting up a few more would not be a problem!

As it was already night, the Grand Clarity Pavilion was no longer that busy, allowing many of its kitchen members to quietly watch the scene unfold. Then, Lin Ming placed down the knife and asked. “Can I work here now? My working hours must not exceed two long hours (4 hours) and my asking monthly salary is at five gold liangs. One more thing, you need to provide food and accommodation for me.”

The beautiful woman pondered this for a moment before nodding. “Deal!”

Lin Ming’s condition was not low; however, it was worth it. Judging by the speed Lin Ming had shown earlier, many things could be done within two long hours. Most importantly, his work was highly efficient, causing very little loss in key ingredients.

Thus, Lin Ming began working for Grand Clarity Pavilion. The two long hours he spent there was not a loss because it was also a form of training for him. Punching tree trunks was a form of training in brute strength, while deboning was a form of precision training.

On that very night, Lin Ming remained in the storehouse and cut apart three Level One Ferocious Beasts. After having done so, his entire body was drenched in sweat and his arms were feeling sore. He prepared to cut apart the last one before heading to his lodge to rest.

For the last one, he chose another Level Two Ferocious Beast – Goldback Pangolin, this Ferocious Beast has teeth that could crush stones and could drill through a mountain as though it was tofu.

Due to having consumed too much primal energies earlier, Lin Ming had to exert a great deal of strength in order to cut open the Goldback Pangolin's scaled abdomen. The reason he had chosen this Goldback Pangolin was to force himself to surpass his limits.

After cutting open the scales, his work became much easier. The knife-edge slid through the gap between the muscles of the Goldback Pangolin abdomen. However, it was at this moment that Lin Ming felt the knife being blocked. It felt as though the knife had run into something hard.

Bones? No, the central abdomen area should not have any bones.

If that is not it, then could it be rocks? No, the Goldback Pangolin may occasionally swallow rocks, but those rocks would have been crushed to smithereens. Even if it were not crushed to smithereens, the powerful acid within its stomach would erode it. Such a big rock could not possibly continue to exist inside, could it be…

Inner Core?

Thinking of this possibility, Lin Ming became excited. An Inner Core from a Level Two Ferocious Beast is a valuable item. Even if he does not sell it, he could consume it, bringing a considerable amount of benefit to his body.

Lin Ming slipped on a pair of gloves and carefully retrieved the hard item while avoiding the stomach acid. Looking at it, Lin Ming became disappointed. It was a square shaped object, which meant that it was not an Inner Core, because Inner Cores are all spherical in shape.

It really does look like a stone, but there is something peculiar about this stone…

The grey coloured cube seemed to have been neatly cut, with precise corners. In addition, the six surface areas of the cube were engraved with black coloured inscriptions, giving it a mysterious aura.

Metal?

Lin Ming carefully observed it. It did not seem to be metal, nor does it appear to be stone. Perhaps it is a form of jade?

[TL: It’s the All Spark…]

Chapter 3 – Soul With No Master

Chapter 0003 Soul With No Master

Lin Ming washed the stone with some water from the river. After hesitating for a bit, he raised an axe placed on the ground and used its blunt end to lightly strike down on the cube shaped stone. The stone remained intact without a single scratch on it.

This was to be expected. The fact that this stone was able to remain intact after being swallowed by a Goldback Pangolin was proof of its incredible durability. Lin Ming gradually increased the strength behind his strikes. Eventually, he struck down with all his might resulting in a dent being formed on the axe and the hammering anvil. However, not a single deformity appeared on the cube.

Holy crap[1]!

Lin Ming was stunned. He had expected the stone to be tough, but he could never have expected it to be this tough. How was this item created?

Lin Ming could not come up with an answer. This stone and its shape is too peculiar. Perhaps some refining master created this stone using some highly durable materials. Considering such a possibility, Lin Ming decided to pocket the cube. Even if he could not figure out what it is, he could still use it as a form of decoration.

After tidying up the tools, Lin Ming headed towards the room that Grand Clarity Pavilion had prepared for him and proceeded to rest.

After practicing his punches, he had engaged in deboning for two long hours (4 hours). Lin Ming was currently feeling quite tired.

After meditating and adjusting his breath for a while, Lin Ming slumped on the bed without taking off his clothes and fell asleep. The bed that Grand Clarity Pavilion had prepared for its staff was very comfortable. In addition, the second son of the Army Lord could not create any problems for him here.

Having reached this conclusion, Lin Ming was able to sleep soundly. In his sleep, he had a strange dream. He dreamt of a resplendent palace made of jade. Each pavilion was made of jade, its level of artisanship staggeringly high.

Wearing elegant dresses, a group of beautiful and seemingly good-natured beauties shuttled around the palace. Auspicious looking animals roamed the skies, creating the imagery of a world of immortals.

Lin Ming had never seen such a beautiful palace, not even in paintings. At this moment, the scenery suddenly transformed and the resplendent palace collapsed. Countless figures had appeared in the skies above. From amongst the countless figures, streams of light shot out. The streams of light were beautiful to behold; however, when it descended upon the lands, it caused the lands and mountains to be decimated!

The lands were split apart while the skies were covered with demonic flames. A huge spell array covering a surface area of hundreds of li (0.5 km) appeared out of thin air and multitudinous number of mysterious symbols covered the entire sky.

A war on this scale was something that Lin Ming could never have imagined! Masters! These are masters of an unimaginable realm of strength! This level of strength is something that those at the Physical Training Stage and Primal Assemblage Stage could not hope to compete against!

Everyone within this imagery are beings that Lin Ming would never have any chance of even glimpsing upon. However, how is it that so many God-like beings would appear here?

After that, the scene changed and turned into a world of snow and ice. A frightened looking woman held onto a one cubic inch cube, facing off against ten thousand figures standing on the skies.

This woman was actually standing just less than three feet from Lin Ming. Even though he understood that this was all an illusion, Lin Ming was able to feel an extremely powerful yet gentle and holy aura radiating from the woman's body!

What surprised Lin Ming most was that the cube that the woman was holding was the stone that Lin Ming had found within the Goldback Pangolin's abdomen!

The woman spoke out a series of words, but the words spoken were vague. Lin Ming could only make out two words – Magic Cube!

Magic Cube?

For some unknown reason, once he heard those words, Lin Ming's mind thought of the stone. Could it be that the stone's name is Magic Cube?

"Hong!"

An explosion! The space itself was rent apart, the skies were twisted into a raging whirlpool with seemingly infinite power, sweeping up all of Heaven and Land [2]. Everywhere it reached, mountains would collapse and skies would crumble. The icy glacier was instantly transformed into nothingness and the ten thousand figures were reduced into dust. Their souls were fragmented and absorbed into the cube!

As for Lin Ming, he found himself standing in the middle of the whirlpool, witnessing with his own eyes as everything were absorbed into the whirlpool. Everything around him was reduced to ashes while he himself remained unaffected. This feeling was simply indescribable and would likely be an unforgettable experience for Lin Ming!

Lin Ming felt himself drenched in cold sweat. At this moment, he suddenly found that he had arrived at an incredibly large and dark space. Here, various specks of light hovered in suspension, resembling pieces of broken mirror. The various specks were of varying sizes, some big and some small. The bigger ones were as big as a palm, while the smaller ones were only as big as a grain of rice. In the middle of all those specks of light, there was a sphere of light, which emitted a soft glow, a gentle and sacred glow.

Inexplicably, Lin Ming felt that the atmosphere around this sphere of light was very similar to that of the woman he had seen earlier. No, it was exactly the same!

Could it be that this sphere of light is the form left by that woman?

Lin Ming recalled that the woman had turned into a stream of white light and was absorbed into the Magic Cube right after the explosion happened…

A stream of white light… could it have transformed into this sphere of light? If that were the case, then this would be the space within the Magic Cube. That would mean that these specks of light…

Lin Ming gasped. Could it be that these specks of light were all the fragments of the countless figures that were absorbed by the Magic Cube after they have been crushed by that spatial storm?

Lin Ming was immensely shocked!

As of now, he clearly understood that the vivid scene he had just seen were true. Although he had told himself that he was simply dreaming, he was unable to believe that it was just a dream. Everything he had seen in this dream was too realistic and the image of the spatial whirlpool fragmenting the world was deeply engraved into Lin Ming's mind. As a mere ignorant teenager who had yet to achieve the Pulse Condensation Stage, how could he have a dream that involved such a great level of power?

Then, all those visions were true? This one stone cube had actually swallowed countless masters whose strength was at a level where he would have no chance of ever laying eyes upon?

Lin Ming could not imagine which kingdom could possess such a high number of masters whose strength could suffocate him to such an extent. He focused his eyes and peered into the dark space that was littered with countless specks of light. After hesitating for a long period of time, he extended his hand and gently touched a speck of light which was both the smallest and closest to him.

Upon contact, the speck of light instantly flowed into Lin Ming's fingertip. Lin Ming had no time to respond at all, as his head felt as though a heavy hammer had suddenly struck down on it viciously. He let out a cry and fell to the ground.

"A a a a!"

Lin Ming tightly gripped his head; he felt as though there was something desperately invading his mind. The piercing pain caused Lin Ming to wish he could crack open his skull and remove whatever was causing the pain!

He could not resist! Lin Ming felt as though he was about to be swallowed up!

Swallowed?

That is it! This must be the soul fragment's instinctive nature; it is trying to devour my sea of consciousness!

"Damn you!"

Realizing this fact, Lin Ming briefly panicked but immediately calmed himself. The thing threatening him was only a small fragment of a soul. In addition, its master had already perished. How could he lose to a minor consciousness that has no master?

Lin Ming suddenly shouted out, clenching his fists, his nails digging deep into his flesh and blood: Preserve my heart and mind! My heart that beats for the Martial Way!

I have sworn to pursue the extremities of the Martial Way, how could I allow my road to end here?

Lin Ming had no clue on how to get rid of that fragmented consciousness that had no owner. All he could do was grit his teeth and hold on with everything he had. Various disorderly images flowed into his sea of consciousness, causing him to undergo an inhuman amount of pain, threatening to render him unconscious. However, he kept gritting his teeth, maintaining his hold onto the vestiges of his consciousness and holding on to his unwavering Martial heart!

After who knew how long, this inhuman torture slowly faded. At last, Lin Ming woke up from his dream. He opened his eyes to see that it was already dawn and that he was drenched in cold sweat; his bed sheets were soaked and his palms were dripping with blood from being gripped too tightly!

Observing all this, Lin Ming was a hundred per cent certain that what had happened was no dream. No nightmare could produce such a kind of effect.

He calmly contemplated and could not help but feel scared. A person's soul consists of two parts: an imprinted consciousness and memories. Once the imprinted consciousness is erased, the soul would become ownerless. An ownerless soul could only act on instinct. Back then, the soul he had touched was only at half the size of a rice grain, its light dim. And yet, he had nearly been swallowed up by it, how horrifying! If he had touched an even bigger speck, it was likely that he would have turned into a basket case by now!

The cube is too dangerous!

As Lin Ming was contemplating about the matter, his face suddenly changed: Eh... my sea of consciousness...

There are a lot more things inside!

Arrays... inscriptions... engravings... various bizarre symbols, mysterious characters, plain looking and powerful weapon techniques...

What is all this?

Could this be the memories carried by the ownerless soul?

This thought cause Lin Ming to become startled. He was vaguely aware that this set of memories could prove to be an unimaginable mountain of wealth...

Although it had entered Lin Ming's sea of consciousness, the memories were complex. They were not something that Lin Ming could recall as and how he liked. Those memories needed to be further consolidated and integrated.

While doing so, Lin Ming ignored the memories regarding arrays and inscriptions. These memories were a little fragmented and disorderly. The memories appeared to be about a profession that engraves inscriptions onto weapons.

Lin Ming held no interest towards this profession. There was something else that he needed, something he desired for. He kept searching through his sea of consciousness and finally held his breath as he found it: Physical Training Stage Formula – Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians!

A Legacy skill!

What is the reason for the Sky Fortune Martial House to be far below the Seven Profound Martial House? The reason is Legacy!

#meme#iknowkungfu#

[1 Chinese profanities are not my strong suit, so I am just blasting away here.]

[2 It should have been Heaven and Earth, but that place is not Earth. Terra sounded too science-ish, so Heaven and Land it is.]

Chapter 4 – Legacy Skill

[TL: Warning, information dumping incoming…]

Chapter 0004 Legacy Skill

Sky Fortune Martial House has only eighty years of history. The Seven Profound Martial House on the other hand was founded by the Grade Three Clan, Seven Profound Valley. They possess six hundred years' worth of heritage and numerous Legacy skills!

Those who practice the Legacy skills from Sky Fortune Martial House have little hope of achieving Pulse Condensation Stage. However, the same cannot be said about the Seven Profound Martial House's Legacy skills. As long as one has a Grade Four Martial Talent, breaking through into the Pulse Condensation Stage using Seven Profound Martial House's manuals is not difficult at all!

As for Lin Ming, he has not even a decent training manual. All he had was a 'Beginners' Martial Arts' manual. Every day, he would train by punching tree trunks and debone animals. This was Lin Ming's martial way!

For the past few years, the only thing he could depend on was himself. He explored the aspects of martial arts himself through hard work and carved his way, step by step, until he reached the First Stage of Physical Training!

For him, legacies were an important existence!

Lin Ming was incomparably excited and he voraciously sorted out the knowledge regarding this Legacy skill. Not long after, this 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' surprised him yet again!

'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' is a pinnacle level Physical Training Manual from the Divine Domain. However, even though it is of the pinnacle level, it is only about Physical

Training and thus was not that valuable within the Divine Domain. The reason Lin Ming became surprised was because he had finally understood what the Divine Domain is.

The Divine Domain is a higher realm that possesses hundreds of millions of years' worth of Legacies. Physical training, martial arts, swordsmanship techniques, technical skills, arrays, all of it have been developed and honed to the extreme. It is a world reserved for the strongest of the Martial Way! Their abilities and might are not something that the current Lin Ming could hope to imagine!

Thus, this 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' is simply invaluable! Additionally, there are even more soul fragments stored within the Magic Cube. Once his strength had reached the sufficient level, he would be able to incorporate even more of them!

Considering all of this, Lin Ming's heart was incredibly excited.

Presently, what Lin Ming fear most would be for the skill manual to be incomplete. After all the soul fragment that he had absorbed was only a small speck. It would be an absolute pity if that was the case. Thankfully, as he continued incorporating the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians', he saw that it was intact. Everything from Strength Training, Flesh Training, Viscera Training, Altering Muscle, Bone Forging and Pulse Condensation were there.

This fact was surprising enough for Lin Ming. In Sky Spill Continent, Physical Training Manuals were generally for one stage only. For example, the 'Genuine Altering Muscle Channels' manual is specifically meant for the Altering Muscle Stage, the 'Golden Bone Forging Divine Formula' manual for Bone Forging Stage, the 'Divine Nine Pulse Skill' manual for the Pulse Condensation Stage and so on. However, this 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' is capable of propelling one from the Strength Training Stage to the Pulse Condensation Stage. But what Lin Ming found after this shocked him even more.

Within Sky Spill Continent, Pulse Condensation marks the end of the Physical Training Stage. After which, one will step upon the Primal Assemblage Stage. The Primal Assemblage Stage is divided into Post-Celestial Stage and Pre-Celestial Stage. For most people, Pulse

Condensation is a bottleneck, which they could not break through. These people would be forever stuck in the Bone Forging Stage.

Pulse Condensation is the limit for the veins within the human body. That is a commonly accepted knowledge. However, according to the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians', there exists another stage beyond Pulse Condensation – Tempering Marrow!

Above the Tempering Marrow Stage, there are actually others! Eight Gates of Hidden Celestial Stems! Using the Eight Trigrams to correspond with the movement of the Nine Celestial Bodies, one could open up eight gates within their bodies. Nine Variant Dao Palace! With it, one could break through the limits of the body and reach an even higher level of strength! [1]

Regardless of Tempering Marrow or the Eight Gates, neither one of them would affect a martial artist when entering the Post-Celestial or Pre-Celestial Stage. This gives one a far higher degree of martial achievement compared to others. The benefits are self-evident!

Realizing this, Lin Ming was rendered speechless from shock. This 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' is a timeless treasure!

Lin Ming was fervently excited to start practicing. However, before he began, he checked his pocket within his bosom for the Magic Cube. To his surprise, the cube had disappeared!

Lin Ming became fearful and cold sweat started coming out of him. His hand probed around and felt something strange on his chest. He took off his clothes and found a strange symbol on the skin of his left chest. The symbol is exactly the same as the mysterious symbol of the surface of the Magic Cube.

The Magic Cube entered my body? Lin Ming recalled that the holy woman had summoned out the Magic Cube from her palm. It was no wonder that she could do that. However, Lin Ming had no clue as to how to summon it.

Lin Ming tried to summon the Magic Cube, but to no avail. Lin Ming felt somewhat disappointed. After all, there were so many soul fragments within the Magic Cube. Back then, he had only touched the smallest and dimmest of fragment and had such a great harvest. If he could incorporate more of those soul fragments, then the amount of treasure that he could unlock would be simply unimaginable.

Thinking about that, Lin Ming suddenly gave a self-deprecating smile. He was being ignorant. If the smallest ownerless soul fragment had nearly swallowed his consciousness, then the bigger ones would likely be able to instantly exterminate him! Stop dreaming, Lin Ming!

It appeared that the secrets of the Magic Cube and the knowledge within the soul fragments would have to be left for when his cultivation had reached an even higher level. What he needed to do right now was to practice the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ as soon as possible.

Lin Ming stopped trying to summon the Magic Cube and began to explore the Legacy skill from the Divine Domain.

The essence of ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ is to transform the body into a divine weapon with amazing strength.

Additionally, the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ also emphasizes on techniques that utilizes strength. Its first layer of Strength Training is already far different from the norm.

Normally, once a person is capable of a force of a thousand jin (604 kg), that person would have achieved minor comprehension and could smash an Iron Tree with a punch. The Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians however, requires not only the training of strength, but also the training of precision, the control over the amount of strength used. Once major comprehension is achieved, one would be able to use their palm to turn a tree trunk into fine fibres!

Reading this part gave birth to a great sense of longing within Lin Ming. There was no doubt that training this ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ would make him far stronger than the average master!

…

Three days later

At the foot of Great Mountain Zhou, with the full moon suspended in the skies, Lin Ming stood upon a plain of grass with his eyes closed. He breathed following a specific rhythm, standing there for who knew how long. His entire being was still like a sculpture, illuminated by the moonlight.

He was practising the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’, a special method of circulating true primal energies derived from the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ manual. This formula is much better at utilizing the true primal energies to temper the body and forge the bones. Once major comprehension of this formula is attained, the resulting strength and durability would be greatly improved to a level surpassing those of the same realm!

Under the night’s blowing winds, numerous fine grasses came together to form undulating waves which danced about. Lin Ming’s breathing seemed to be in accordance with these undulating waves, as though he had become one with the surrounding environment.

A drop of dew rolled upon a leaf just above Lin Ming’s head. Condensing quietly, it eventually dropped down.

Lin Ming who was originally motionless suddenly opened his eyes. He stretched out his right hand, allowing the drop of dew to fall upon his fingertip. The drop of dew rolled down the finger onto his palms. Grasping the drop of dew, Lin Ming’s right hand suddenly formed a fist, his shoulder and thigh moved to position, and he threw out a punch.

“Boom!”

With a muffled bang, the thick tree trunk before Lin Ming was shaken, traces of a fist appearing amidst the swirling tree dust!

Lin Ming exhaled and let go of his fist, allowing the drop of dew to drop down. With a "pa da" sound, it fell upon the grass and was scattered.

A smile emerged on Lin Ming's face.

When 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' reaches a state of perfection, then the drop of dew would have shot out together without being splintered [2]. Although his current state of comprehension has yet to reach that far, he had still made some success.

In addition, the earlier punch had left a fist mark of roughly half a foot in depth upon the Iron Tree. Three days ago, his punch could at best only leave half an inch. His current achievement was all due to the 'True Primal Chaos Formula'.

In these three days, Lin Ming had been practicing this 'True Primal Chaos Formula' non-stop and had finally succeeded in reaching the beginning stage. Truthfully, Lin Ming was only able to train so well thanks to the memories of the senior [3]. The senior's experience and comprehension had greatly benefited Lin Ming's training. Even the circulating method of the skill had been deeply ingrained into the senior's soul. All Lin Ming needed to do was use his body to recollect them.

Due to how crazy his training schedule was, Lin Ming's consumption rate of medicinal herbs was also much faster. He had used up three slices of the Blood Ginseng. At this rate, the Blood Ginseng would be used up within less than half a month's time.

He now has the solution to training manuals, but still faced the problem of insufficient medicinal herbs…

Thus, two days went by and Lin Ming's strength kept growing. The current Lin Ming was able to debone Level One Ferocious Beasts effortlessly. For him, even dismembering five Level Two Ferocious Beasts was considered easy.

…

One morning, Lin Xiaodong came to the Grand Clarity Pavilion to find Lin Ming. Lin Ming had earlier informed Lin Xiaodong that he was working in the Grand Clarity Pavilion, although he omitted telling him the reason behind it.

“The Annual Martial Arts Fair?” Lin Ming felt shocked, hearing Lin Xiaodong’s proposal to go there.

“That is right, many martial arts masters and nobles will be there. As for the items that will appear there, there are no rare items, only extremely rare items!”

Lin Ming shrugged and replied. “How could we afford those items? As of now, I only have less than twenty gold liangs on me.”

“So what if we cannot buy it? We can just go look around. Just take this as an act of gaining experience. Besides, we will be entering the martial house soon. We must at least buy a good weapon before that. Even if I cannot afford the high grade weapons, I should be able to get our hands on some middle grade weapons.”

Not wanting to disappoint Lin Xiaodong, Lin Ming chose to go out with him. After all, it would be a beneficial experience.

As they were headed there, Lin Xiaodong kept talking non-stop about the fair. He was very familiar with the details of the fair, its distance from the Seven Profound Martial House, the areas that are considered sub urban and so on. As they were walking down an alley way, Lin Ming suddenly stopped and placed his hand on Lin Xiaodong’s shoulders.

“What is wrong, Brother Ming?” Lin Xiaodong asked.

“Someone is blocking the way,” Lin Ming touched his waist where his boning knife was strapped onto. Thanks to his training of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’, Lin Ming’s perception abilities have greatly increased.

He could guess who it was. A few days ago, he had beaten the man with monkey like ears. Now, the man's master has decided to show himself. This moment was something that Lin Ming had been preparing for.

Author's note: Eight Gates of Hidden Celestial Stems originates from Chinese traditional culture. It is not unique to mangas.

[1 I tried translating them the best I could but, they could be subject to changes if the author describes it in more detail in the future...]

[2 This part is a bit confusing.]

[3 The owner of the soul fragment that Lin Ming absorbed. That poor sod.]

Chapter 5 – Wager

Chapter 0005 Wager

Just as Lin Ming stopped moving, a slightly sharp voice sounded out in the alley. “Hehe, how unexpected, you have quite a high level of vigilance. You are called Lin Ming, right?” A teenager wearing silk clothing slowly walked out from the back of a residence, a contemptuous smile was etched on his face. Behind him, five eighteen-year-old teenagers followed. Most of them were all at the First Stage of Physical Training, only one of them was at the Second Stage. As for the teenager with silk clothing, he too was at the Second Stage of Physical Training.

Observing this situation, Lin Xiaodong suddenly panicked. He had recognized this teenager in silk clothing. He was the one beside Zhu Yan during the Seven Profound Martial House registration incident. Anyone could tell that this bastard was here to cause trouble.

They have a total of six people, two at the Second Stage of Physical Training and four at the First Stage of Physical Training. As for him and Lin Ming, they were both only at the First Stage of Physical Training. If things were to escalate into a fight, then they would certainly ended up being abused. The teenager in silk clothing must be a young master from one of Sky Fortune City’s great families. These people possess both authority and power. While they were not the type to kill indiscriminately, they were certainly capable of crippling others on a regular basis.

“What are you people trying to do?” Lin Xiaodong shouted out, traces of anger evident within his words.

“You will have to ask him,” The teenager in silk clothing pointed towards Lin Ming. “You are quite the impressive one, to beat up my underling until he was bleeding all over; two of his ribs were broken.”

For these young masters of great families, the lives of their underlings were of no consequence. However, their reputation was another matter. Moreover, the underling had reported that he had already spoken out the teenager in silk clothing's name, but ended up being beaten all the same. This was what caused the teenager in silk clothing to become enraged.

"You are quite the capable one, to claim to one day trample upon me, Wang Yigao! Today, I would like to witness with my own eyes how you plan to do just that!" The teenager in silk clothing said, his face turning savage.

Lin Ming had never heard of the name Wang Yigao before, nor have he ever said anything about trampling on him. The underling most likely fabricated this in order to provoke Wang Yigao. However, Lin Ming did not feel like explaining himself. No matter what he says, this was bound to end in a fight.

The 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' is indeed powerful, however, Lin Ming had only started practicing it for a few days. It would be simply too much to fight off so many people at the same time, especially when two of them are at the Second Stage of Physical Training. Not to mention, if Lin Xiaodong were to be taken hostage, then he would be in trouble all the same.

Considering the bigger picture, winning here would also bring him trouble. Once matters escalated and he was forced to beat up Wang Yigao, then the next source of trouble would come from Wang Yigao's father. This person is the Army Lord of Sky Fortune City. Lin Ming highly doubt that such a kind of individual would be interested in sitting down and engaging in a civilized discussion with him. For the current Lin Ming, this sort of person is an existence he could not afford to provoke.

What a pain in the rear...

Lin Ming pondered. Suddenly, a spark lighted up within his mind, he had thought of a way to resolve this problem. Facing Wang Yigao, he spoke. "Then, what do you want to do?"

"What do I want to do?" Wang Yigao was slightly stunned and instantly laughed out. "You actually asked me what do I want to do?"

The rogues he brought with him all laughed out in unison. In their eyes, Lin Ming was no different from an idiot. For him to be asking them what they wanted to do now was certainly the height of idiocy.

After laughing for a good while, Wang Yigao finally stopped and said. "I really am uncertain as to whether I should call you an idiotic pig or a pig like idiot. However, since you came forth with the question, then this Young Master will give you a chance. Don't you go around saying that this Young Master is being ruthless. Just get down on your knees and lick my soles clean. After that, break off one of your arm tendons and one leg tendon. If you do that, I will forget about it."

Hearing Wang Yigao's conditions, Lin Xiaodong became infuriated. "Damn it! Brother Ming, there is no need for us to talk nonsense with them. Let us fight them to the bitter end. Our Green Mulberry City's Lin Family is no pushover; let us see if they actually dare do anything!"

Lin Xiaodong knew that they would have to suffer miserably today. All he could do was bring out his family name and hope that the other side would show some fear. Some physical pain was not a problem, but if they ended up being crippled, that would be a huge blow to a martial artist. They may never be able to recover their original body state even with the help of rare herbs.

"Green Mulberry City's Lin Family? Heng, did you think I would be afraid of your Lin Family? Lin Ming, are you going to do it yourself, or do you want me to do it for you?"

"I dare you! Come, did you think this Young Master is afraid of you!" Lin Xiaodong stepped forward, one hand firmly gripping onto his sword hilt. Truth be told, he was currently feeling extremely flustered. However, he just happened to be the type who would rather die than lose face!

Lin Ming pulled Lin Xiaodong back and spoke to Wang Yigao. “So, what you wanted were those things you said earlier? Very well, as long as you can beat me in a martial arts duel, I will accept your conditions.”

“Brother Ming, you…” Lin Xiaodong became anxious. Even though he believe that Lin Ming would become a highly accomplished person in the future, the current Lin Ming is only at the First Stage of Physical Training. How could he defeat Wang Yigao who is at the Second Stage of Physical Training? Lin Xiaodong feared that Lin Ming would end up with broken tendons after he loses.

Lin Ming said. “Do not worry, I know what I am doing.”

“A martial arts duel? You think you are qualified to duel with me?” Wang Yigao had never expected Lin Ming to suggest something like this. Within Sky Fortune Kingdom, government officials would not intervene in the fight between martial artists because they simply lack the capacity to do so. Thus, the conflicts between martial artists would end up being settled in a martial arts duel. As long as both sides agree, they would place down the terms of victory and defeat. After the duel, the conflict would be settled between both parties and neither one of them would pursue the other anymore. After all, credibility was something important to martial artists.

Considering Wang Yigao’s level of strength, which was one stage above Lin Ming, he did not believe that he would lose. He simply felt that the act of engaging in a martial arts duel with Lin Ming was inappropriate.

Lin Ming replied. “There is no such thing as qualified or not. There is only the question of whether you dare or not.”

“Are you trying to say that I do not dare? That has to be the funniest thing I have heard this year. Very well, since you are going to be so reckless, then I will satisfy you!”

Lin Ming said. “Very well, let us proceed to the square.”

The alley they were at was too remote, with no one to bear witness. Lin Ming feared that Wang Yigao would go back on his words. However, if they were to duel before the many people of Sky Fortune City, even a thick faced Wang Yigao would have no way of denying the results. Unless, he no longer wants to live in Sky Fortune City.

A duel between martial artists is always a remarkable sight and the square would never be lacking in observers. In just moments, many people have started gathering there; even some martial artists were mixed in amongst the observers. Seeing the two contestants, the crowd started talking.

“Isn’t that Army Lord Wang’s son?”

“Indeed, this bastard is about to start bullying others again. I wonder which family’s child it is, to be so unlucky.”

“A First Stage in Physical Training going up against a Second Stage in Physical Training. That child is obviously going to lose.”

“It seems that this child is just a commoner. For a commoner to be able to attain First Stage in Physical Training is quite the accomplishment. A pity! It appears that he is going to become crippled…”

…

Wang Yigao’s reputation within Sky Fortune City was not good and most of the people held sympathy for those who are weaker. In their eyes, compassion towards Lin Ming could be seen.

The more people came, the more unhappy Wang Yigao felt. After all, a Physical Training Second Stager beating a First Stager was nothing to be proud of. In addition, there was the fact that his opponent’s identity was far below him. Thus, Wang Yigao did not want this scene to be witnessed by many!

Wang Yigao said impatiently. “What are you waiting for? Let us duel. After that, go break your own tendons. I will let you understand the gap between us.”

Seeing the high number of people gathering around, Lin Ming faced Wang Yigao and replied. “Naturally, we will start the duel. However, if I lose, I would be at your mercy. Then, what happens if I win?”

Win? This bastard thinks he can win?

Chapter 6 – Fighting Barehanded

Chapter 0006 Fighting Barehanded

Wang Yigao felt that this person before him must have some mental issues. While it is not impossible for one to defeat an opponent who is at a higher level of cultivation, that requires genius talent and pinnacle martial arts taught by masters. Lin Ming is a poor young man, for him to attain his current state of strength was already a great accomplishment. But considering his mediocre talent, he actually thought he could win? Could it be that he did not get enough sleep yesterday? Is he sleepwalking right now?

Wang Yigao asked with a smirk. “What do you want?”

“If I win, I want two hundred-year-old Blood Ginseng, and five hundred gold liangs.”

Two hundred-year-old Blood Ginseng, and five hundred gold liangs! The people around were all rendered speechless: This child is quite the high maintenance type! Two hundred-year-old Blood Ginseng would require up to three hundred gold liangs. All of it would sum up to a whopping eight hundred gold liangs! This is no small number; however, one needs to be alive in order to take it.

“Eight hundred gold liangs?” Wang Yigao coldly snorted. “You think you qualify? You think your arms and legs are worth that much?”

Within Sky Fortune Kingdom, the lives of nobles and commoners are not equal. Even if Wang Yigao were to kill someone, he would only end up being confined as punishment. After that, all he had to do was pay a compensation of two hundred gold liangs.

Lin Ming slowly replied. “For martial artists, their arms and legs are priceless. If you are unwilling, then I understand. All you need to do is break off your own tendons.”

“Screw you! You are asking for death!” Wang Yigao furiously roared out, pulling the long sword on his waist.

Lin Ming’s face remained expressionless as he spoke. “You have yet to answer my question.”

“Heng! A mere eight hundred gold liangs? I can give you a thousand gold liangs! However, do you think you can live to take it? This senior will cripple you. If you can still preserve your life after three moves, this senior will have my name read upside down! [1]”

Wang Yigao had become agitated, to Lin Ming’s delight: More money for the taking. “Very well, a thousand gold liangs it is!”

He had only finished speaking those words when Wang Yigao’s sword slash descended upon him.

A faint trace of golden light radiated from the sword, and a piercing sound resounded for dozens of metres.

A martial technique!

Martial techniques involve the use of primal energies to kill the enemy. When Wang Yigao claimed that he would kill off Lin Ming within three moves, he was not just being carried away by his emotions. Rather, he had confidence in his abilities, in his martial technique! The opportunity to learn these techniques is something that only the young masters of great families or disciples of martial houses could have.

Once the martial technique is employed, those who do not possess martial techniques would find it difficult to endure. This was especially true considering the difference in martial cultivation between Wang Yigao and Lin Ming. Wang Yigao had absolute confidence in winning with just one move. The reason he had said he would kill Lin Ming within three moves was simply him preparing a backup in cases of ‘what if’s.

Wang Yigao was correct in his assumption that Lin Ming had not learnt any martial techniques. Lin Ming could only resort to common moves to deal with Wang Yigao’s attack.

When the surrounding people saw this scene, they all felt that the outcome had been determined. As for Lin Xiaodong, his heart became nervous. How could Lin Ming block off this sword attack?

Lin Ming’s attention was focused upon Wang Yigao’s incoming sword slash. Since practicing the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ from the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’, his perception had increased by several folds. In Lin Ming’s eyes, Wang Yigao was a wild beast [2] lunging towards him! For the past few days, Lin Ming had been dismembering countless number of wild beasts. Even though the beasts were already dead, dismembering them still required him identifying the gap between the bones. Whenever his knife descended, it would be quick, accurate and vicious!

At the moment when Wang Yigao’s sword descended, Lin Ming’s knife shot out. There were no calculations or considerations within his move; it was based purely on instinct. The knife went through the loophole within Wang Yigao’s move, slashing upwards with a slight tilt.

Equipped with a dazzling sword, going against an extraordinarily common knife, yet the results was something that no one could have expected. Lin Ming leaned to the side and dodged Wang Yigao’s sword slash. The knife in his hands however, had incredibly stabbed into Wang Yigao’s ribs!

“Ping!” After suffering from a stab of the knife, Wang Yigao exclaimed, his body collapsing and tumbling down onto the ground.

What is going on? The surrounding onlookers were unable to understand what had just happened and were stunned.

Presently, a one-foot long hole had appeared on Wang Yigao's clothing, from his chest to his ribs. However, no blood was issued out. Instead, something silver shined through the hole.

"Flexible armour?"

Lin Ming secretly lamented. It turned out that Wang Yigao was wearing a flexible armour under his clothing. If not for the armour, that blow earlier would have dealt a heavy blow towards Wang Yigao's fighting potential.

"You!" Wang Yigao was both shocked and furious, his eyes turning blood shot. He had actually been hit! He was hit by someone whose martial cultivation level was one stage lower than him! In front of countless onlookers! For the prideful Wang Yigao, this was an unacceptable matter.

"I want you to die!"

Logically speaking, that strike earlier signified that Wang Yigao had lost. But, how could the enraged Wang Yigao admit his defeat? Wielding his sword, he once again aimed a slash at Lin Ming!

Another martial technique was launched!

As for Lin Ming, he was just like an experienced hunter, catching onto every weakness shown by a wild beast!

"Ping!" The scene from earlier replayed itself. This time, a slash tore open a hole on the right side of Wang Yigao's clothing, turning it into a waistcoat.

The surrounding onlookers were all stunned. They stared in disbelief at the outcome of the battle. How could this have happened? As the saying goes, 'one inch longer is one inch stronger'. Wang Yigao's sword has a far longer reach than Lin Ming's boning knife. In addition, Wang Yigao possesses martial arts techniques and has a higher level of martial cultivation. But, in this fight, he ended up being stabbed twice with a seemingly ordinary move.

“That child, both his body speed and his knife speed is faster than Wang Yigao!” A martial artist who was observing the duel commented. A Physical Training First Stager beating a Second Stager in terms of speed was an unusual occurrence!

Lin Ming’s speed was indeed faster than Wang Yigao. In fact, the disparity in speed was quite considerable. This was the results of practicing ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’! Before practicing it, Lin Ming’s knife wielding skill was already extremely accurate and insightful. However, his speed and strength was unable to complement it. It would only be natural for him to be unable to defeat Wang Yigao who was at the Second Stage of Physical Training.

But, with the existence of ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’, the situation was now completely different!

“A a a!” Mad with fury, Wang Yigao tore off his outer clothing, revealing a silver looking flexible armour. He had lost to a Physical Training First Stager brat. If he were unable to exact vengeance, then he would have no face to remain in Sky Fortune City.

“I will slaughter you!” Wang Yigao desperately poured out the primal energies within his body, causing his sword to emit an even brighter radiance than before. He slashed down onto Lin Ming’s head. If this strike were to connect, Lin Ming would certainly end up dying.

At this moment, Lin Ming made a move that surprised everyone. He threw away his knife and faced his opponent bare handed!

All the onlookers were unable to comprehend this move from Lin Ming. This slash from Wang Yigao was obviously the final blow, backed with every last drop of energy. So, why is this teenager throwing away his weapon at the most critical moment? Surely, the knife is stronger than a fist? In times of crisis, he could even use it to parry the opponents sword.

[1 In the old days, Chinese words are usually written from top to bottom.]

[2 The word used here is different from the word used for Ferocious Beast. Not sure if the author made a mistake.]

Chapter 7 – Innate Divine Strength?

Chapter 0007 Innate Divine Strength?

The strongest attacking method within the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ that Lin Ming practiced was not a sword attack, but a fist attack!

At present, the force behind Lin Ming’s strongest punch could leave a half-foot-deep indentation on an Iron Tree trunk. The durability of the Iron Tree was in no way inferior to steel. If the object being punched were stone, it would have been easily smashed to pieces!

Lin Ming kept his gaze onto Wang Yigao, his eyes locking onto Wang Yigao’s chest. Moving to the side, he threw out a punch!

“Peng!”

With a muffled sound, Wang Yigao spat blood out of his mouth and flew out. Even with the protection of the flexible armour, even with a martial cultivation of Second Stage of Physical Training, even with the training to toughen his flesh to an incredible degree, he was still unable to endure this superb punch from Lin Ming.

Observing Wang Yigao falling onto the ground like a dead pig, the surrounding onlookers were left speechless. Wang Yigao had threatened to defeat Lin Ming in three moves, but the result was the complete opposite. Lin Ming instead defeated Wang Yigao in three moves!

Within the exchange of three moves, each one had ended with Lin Ming being victorious. If not for the flexible armour, Wang Yigao would have lost early on. How was this a fight between a Physical Training First Stager and a Second Stager? This seemed to be the complete opposite!

“Senior Liu, what is your opinion regarding this incident?” In the midst of the duel, an elderly man appeared amongst the onlookers. In his younger days, this elder had once attained the Fifth Stage of Physical Training, Bone Forging Stage. He was only one-step away from reaching the Pulse Condensation Stage; however, he had ultimately failed to break through. A Bone Forging Stage martial artist has the same amount of lifespan as the common people. Naturally, their bodies could not withstand the ravages of time. Now that this Senior Liu's age had exceeded seventy, he no longer has any fighting strength. But, his perceptive eyes remained.

The elderly man pondered for a moment before replying. "That child is gifted with innate divine strength!"

The grade of a martial artist, be it Grade One Martial Talent or Grade Two is simply the measure of the speed and ease with which their body could absorb primal energies. The faster they could absorb primal energies, the higher their martial talent would be.

However, the martial artist's body strength is not included in the measurement for martial talent. That is because most people have the equivalent amount of strength.

Occasionally though, some people would be born with innate divine strength. Some are born with ten times the strength of the normal people, and others more!

With great strength comes great speed. Naturally, they would have an advantage in battles.

Yet, the number of these martial artists is small. In addition, not many of them are successful. After all, as martial cultivation progresses, the primal energies become more important and the effect that one's innate strength has becomes correspondingly smaller.

"So that is how it is…" The surrounding observers nodded their heads. This explanation was very reasonable.

Lin Ming picked up his knife and walked step by step towards Wang Yigao. The current Wang Yigao was in a miserable state. His clothes had turned into strips of fabrics, blood spilled from his mouth and his face was covered with dirt. Wang Yigao wanted nothing more than to kill himself. He had completely lost his face in today’s incident. He would likely become the laughing stock amongst his peers within Sky Fortune City.

Lin Ming spoke up. “You are the one who said it earlier, one thousand gold liangs, cough it out.”

Shit!

Hearing those words, Wang Yigao nearly spat out another mouthful of blood.

Oh, what a son of a bitch I am! Did I really have nothing better to do? Why did I have to turn eight hundred to one thousand? Even though Wang Yigao is a child of a great family, taking out one thousand gold liangs is no small matter!

Today’s incident was certainly the most miserable and unforgettable one in his entire life. With so many people bearing witness, Wang Yigao was unable to go back on his words.

Additionally, since it was the terms of a duel, he could not even think about exacting vengeance or risk being ridiculed by all. Unless, unless it was done in utmost secrecy.

“Money, bring out the money!” Wang Yiago shouted at his men! Today, he would have to admit his loss. But, this was not the end, he swore that he would hack Lin Ming to pieces!

The group of men were all shocked senseless by Lin Ming’s performance. Even if all of them were to gang up on Lin Ming, there was no guarantee that they could win! Is he really just a Physical Training First Stager?

“Xiaodong, collect the money,” Lin Ming said. One thousand gold liangs was no small sum. Even though Wang Yigao is rich, he would not have brought so much money with him. Thus, he could only pool them up through his men.

From the moment Wang Yigao vomited blood, Lin Xiaodong had been stunned. It was only after Lin Ming had called him that he finally reacted: Oh, my God! Is this for real? He actually won?

Furthermore, they had won a thousand gold liangs. A thousand gold liangs! All of Lin Xiaodong's wealth combined amount to no more than only two hundred gold liangs. Buying up a single Blood Ginseng took up more than half of it!

Looking at the gold bills within his hands, Lin Xiaodong's expression was one of shock. Then it turned into ecstasy before turning into one of laughter.

His eyes were never big to begin with. Now that he was smiling to such an extent, his eyes were almost unnoticeable.

"Haha, we are rich, we are rich! You are too kind, what could I say? Thank you so much for your generosity. Knowing that we were in a tight spot, you seniors have chosen to gift us with some spending money, thank you!"

"Especially brother Gao Yiwang who felt that eight hundred liangs was not enough and had insisted on giving out one thousand liangs. On behalf of the common people, I give you my thanks."

Hearing Lin Xiaodong's sarcastic words, 'Gao Yiwang' who was already seriously injured felt his mouth overflowing and spat out another mouthful of blood. Back then, he had said that if he could not kill off Lin Ming within three moves, his name would be read upside down.

Screw your granddaddy!

Wang Yigao furiously gritted his teeth. As for the others, their faces were contorted to the extreme. As it so happened, Lin Xiaodong's face was not the attractive kind. To them, Lin Xiaodong's current face was so disgusting, it could kill. After collecting the gold bills, Lin Xiaodong spit out some saliva onto his palms in an exaggerated manner and started counting the bills one by one.

"Twenty, thirty, fifty, hundred, hundred five, hundred seven…"

Lin Xiaodong counted the thick stack of gold bills three times, then said with a grin and squinted eyes. “Eight hundred and fifty gold liangs, one hundred and fifty short. I say, aren’t you all men of wealth? How is it that you cannot even cough out such a small sum of money?”

Hearing Lin Xiaodong’s words, Wang Yigao nearly vomited blood yet again. His face sank deep, he shook his right hand and a “ding” could be heard. His long sword was embedded in the middle of the square. “Verdant Sharp Sword, it can be sold for two hundred gold liangs in any weapons shop. We are leaving!”

Six of them came to exact vengeance on others. However, the end result was them having to hand over all their possessions, including their swords. This pathetic state was a first for Wang Yigao!

Seeing the Verdant Sharp Sword, Lin Xiaodong grinned. He has some knowledge regarding weapons and the Verdant Sharp Sword is truly an extraordinary weapon. At the very least, it is far better than the one he was using.

Lin Ming said. “If you like it, you can have it.”

Lin Xiaodong replied. “I cannot do that. Brother Ming, you do not even have a weapon yet.”

Lin Ming replied. “My fists are my weapons. For now, I have no need for a weapon. Later on, I will get myself a weapon that fits me. Even though this Verdant Sharp Sword is sharp, it is too light for my fighting style.”

Lin Xiaodong recalled the fearsome fist that Lin Ming had thrown back then and had to agree that this sword was simply insufficient to complement with Lin Ming.

“Very well, I will take this sword then. However, you sure are fearsome, Brother Ming. I never saw you as such a character before,” Ever since Lin Ming started practicing martial arts, Lin Xiaodong had never witnessed Lin Ming in action. How could he have known that

Lin Ming's strength had soared to such a degree. He believed this to be the results of Lin Ming's hard work.

Lin Ming explained. "Wang Yigao does not have a detailed grasp on his own strength, and is only a beginner Physical Training Second Stager. In addition, his foundation is also unstable. His level of cultivation is probably a result of stuffing himself with medications. Even his martial techniques were nothing of note. Beating him is nothing to be proud of, my first goal is Zhu Yan."

Zhu Yan is different from Wang Yigao. Zhu Yan possesses a high amount of strength and a solid foundation. His Grade Four Martial Talent is not simply for show. In addition, he is also quite the hard worker. Thus, the current Lin Ming had no chance of beating Zhu Yan.

Lin Ming accepted the gold bills, then split them apart and handed one stack to Lin Xiaodong without counting. "Use this."

"What are you doing? This gold were all earned by you. I have already taken the sword. As for gold, I have no need for it. With my way of practicing, ten gold liangs per month is the most I will need."

Lin Ming remained silent for a while, then without objecting, he kept the gold bills into his own bosom. Between him and Lin Xiaodong, such details were unnecessary.

"All right, let us go to the fair."

"You are right! Haha, I nearly forgot about it, the fair! Now we have the capital for it, one thousand liangs! Son of a bitch! This senior had never even laid eyes on such a huge sum of money before! This time, I will be making a splash!"

Chapter 8 – Qin Xingxuan

Chapter 0008 Qin Xingxuan

Lin Ming laughed out as well and said. “That is right, we’ll make a big splash. However, you will need to be careful when going out in the next few days.”

“Nn? You mean Wang Yigao?”

“En, he would surely exact vengeance. He would not do so openly, but rather in secret. This is a bridge that we will have to cross…” Lin Ming’s tone lowered as he said that. If Wang Yigao were to drop this matter here and now, then everything would end. However, if he were to secretly conspire against them or send assassins to target them, then Lin Ming had no scruples in giving Wang Yigao a taste of his own medicine. Naturally, Lin Ming would rather not have to resort to such measures. After all, Wang Yigao’s father is the Lord of the Defence Army for Sky Fortune City. Once such an incident is found out, everything would end badly.

…

The fair was held at the outskirts of Sky Fortune City; this place is where the biggest number of business transactions is conducted. There would be one summit of fairs held every year. In this fair, even martial masters of neighbouring kingdoms would come over to find and buy the items that they require.

As Lin Ming arrived at the entrance to the fair, he was shocked as he observed the bustling crowd of people and the high range of goods on display. This was a place of luxury, a world for nobles and masters. It would not be surprising to see a Pulse Condensation Stager randomly moving around the crowd of people.

As Lin Ming was observing the movements of the crowd, a disturbance occurred amongst them. Lin Ming turned his head to watch and was surprised to find a white luxurious carriage drawn by horses arriving at the entrance to the fair. The horses pulling the carriage were all the same precious type: Draconic Snow Horses. These horses possess great speed and endurance. One of them could fetch up to ten thousand gold liangs in price. Forget the Young Masters of wealthy families, not even the Young Masters of great families would be willing to purchase it.

What kind of personage could be inside it? For them to be riding in a carriage worth several tens of thousands in gold liangs, could it be that a member of the Royal Family is here? Lin Ming thought to himself.

At this moment, Lin Xiaodong spoke up. “Do you see that crest depicting a knight with golden spear on the carriage? That is the Marshal Quarters carriage.”

“Marshal Quarters? You mean Marshal Qin?” Lin Ming asked.

“Who else could it be? There is only one Marshal in all of Sky Fortune Kingdom.”

Within the military structure of Sky Fortune Kingdom, the position of a captain of ten thousand men is a great accomplishment. Next up would be the position of Major. Above Major is Colonel; above the Colonel is the General. Finally, above the General is the Marshal. In all of Sky Fortune Kingdom, only one person made it to the position of Marshal during the past eighty years.

A number of citizens of Sky Fortune Kingdom may not know of the current Emperor’s name. However, all of them knew the name of the Marshal.

The Kingdom Protector, Grand Marshal Qin Xiao; eighty years ago, Sky Fortune Kingdom suffered from an invasion led by the Eastern Sun Kingdom. Countless lives were lost and the Imperial Family had to take refuge in the South. Qin Xiao was the only one who had stayed behind. Commanding his Qin Army forces, he contributed meritorious deeds in succession, reclaiming lost lands and saving the northern population who were in dire straits. After three years, the Qin Army forces finally managed to defeat the Eastern Sun Kingdom. The capital was relocated and Qin Xiao was granted the title of Marshal in the very same year. At the same time, the veterans of the military were organized to establish the Sky Fortune Martial House.

Due to their limited foundation, the Sky Fortune Martial House is unable to compete with the Seven Profound Martial House that is established by a Grade Three Clan, the Seven Profound Valley. However, Sky Fortune Martial House also serves as the military academy for Sky Fortune Kingdom. Those who enter the military after graduating from Sky Fortune Martial House would certainly be able to attain a good position.

As for Qin Xiao, he is the Honorary Principal of Sky Fortune Martial House. His martial cultivation had reached the Post-Celestial Stage, middle phase. For the average martial artist, the Post-Celestial Stage and those beyond the Pulse Condensation Stage is something too far away.

Presently, the carriage had stopped and Lin Ming inhaled deeply: Could it be that Qin Xiao himself is inside? That man is a legend!

The carriage's curtain was pushed aside and Lin Ming became surprised. The one who had emerged was a young woman.

Seeing the young woman, Lin Ming felt surprised while Lin Xiaodong's eyes became glued straight at her. What is a beauty that can topple kingdoms? This is it.

The young woman was wearing a white dress, her black hair descending down onto her waist, her skin glistening with the lustre of beautiful jade, her appearance as mesmerizing as the full moon, her eyes shining like the waters of autumn. She has a fine raised nose, pointed chin and a slender jade like neck. There were simply no flaws that one could see. In addition, she exuded an aura of wisdom and purity, causing an inevitable thought to enter the minds of those who set their eyes on her: A peerless beauty.

Escorted by her bodyguards and maids, the young woman came out of the carriage and proceeded into the fair. Wherever she went, it would seem as though numerous colours had lit up in the area and peach flowers would blossom. As for the young woman, she seemed to be dancing within this beautiful image, leading to everyone seeing her becoming lost in a reverie.

All eyes were gathered onto her. Her carriage that cost several tens of thousands of gold liangs, her spectacular beauty, the Qin Family that had endured for over eighty years; any of these factors would have been enough to make her the centre of attention.

It was not until the young woman had disappeared from his sight that Lin Xiaodong was willing to turn away his gaze, a look of reluctance etched on his face.

Lin Ming asked. "Who is she? Do you know her?"

Lin Xiaodong answered. "I do know her, but she doesn't know me. She is Qin Xiao's granddaughter, Qin Xingxuan. Truly... perfect." While explaining, Lin Xiaodong praised. Lin Ming only gave an "oh". He had somewhat guessed her identity and had simply asked without any motives. Thus, he was not too surprised.

Lin Xiaodong glanced at Lin Ming and smiled as he continued. "That girl is a Grade Six Martial Talent."

"Wha... What?"

Lin Ming was dumbfounded. "Grade Six Talent? Are you certain?"

The highest talent that Lin Ming had seen before was Grade Four. As for Grade Five Talent, there was not a single one in Green Mulberry City. Perhaps these people do exist in Sky Fortune Kingdom, but their numbers would surely be limited. However, he had just been told that the young woman that had just passed by is a Grade Six Talent. For him, this was simply an unimaginable fact!

Li Xiaodong had already expected this reaction from Lin Ming and said. "I say, Brother Ming, don't you think that in comparison with her Grade Six Martial Talent, her looks are even more amazing?"

Lin Ming replied. “I think that her talent is even more amazing, a Grade Six Talent! This is simply unheard of! Speaking of which… what martial arts stage is she in?”

Lin Xiaodong shrugged. “I do not know about that. But, it must surely be unbelievably high. Considering that she is gifted with such a high talent and also born within a great family, a Physical Training Fourth or Fifth Stage is probably nothing surprising. However… Brother Ming, why do you only ask about these martial arts stuff? After seeing such a perfect beauty, aren’t your heart moved at all?”

The question surprised Lin Ming. He is not made of wood. A fair lady is beloved by all gentlemen; and Qin Xingxuan is indeed perfect. However, after what had happened with Lan Yunyue, Lin Ming had come to understand that a loving family that can last forever could only be attained after he has enough strength. With his current level of strength, such pursuits were meaningless. Turning around, he asked. “Why? Do you like her?”

“Nah, I am just an admirer. This girl is so far away from me, I cannot have those kinds of thoughts. I do not even know how many people within Sky Fortune City are hoping to be the lucky man; however, none of them is worthy. This girl would surely enter a true clan in the future, like the Seven Profound Valley. She had long since become a core disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House. Mortals like us simply cannot hope to match someone like her. But, what makes me most jealous is the fact that she is also an Inscription Master.”

“Inscription Master?” Lin Ming do not have much understanding towards certain unique professions. Generally, these unique professions have a high demand in qualifications and the number of people holding those professions is small. The amount of money spent on those professions is also much smaller, comparable to a drizzle when placed beside the expenses necessary for martial arts cultivation.

“En, an Inscription Master can utilize special ingredients to engrave arrays and symbols upon weapons. They can strengthen equipment by engraving a symbol on it. This profession requires a high level of talent and a strong soul force. But, once one becomes an Inscription Master, earning money would be as easy as eating and drinking!”

“Unfortunately, most martial artists would have no chance to come in contact with this profession. Even if they have the talent, they will have no chance of achieving success in their practice because the practice would involve too many materials. Naturally, that amount of money is only a drizzle for the Qin Family. It is said that Qin Xingxuan’s attainment in Inscription Techniques had reached a high level. She is unmatchable amongst her peers and could even beat many from the older generation.”

Lin Xiaodong had received a formal education in the Martial Way, thus leading to a higher level of understanding compared to Lin Ming. As he was eloquently explaining, he suddenly realized that Lin Ming had his head lowered as though he was deeply considering something.

“Brother Ming… Brother Ming, you are not feeling aroused, are you? Well, considering what a Heavenly beauty she is, this is normal.”

“Nothing,” Lin Ming waved his hand.

So, that is what it was! Those arrays, inscriptions, engravings, various symbols and mysterious characters, simple looking weapons that radiated a strong atmosphere that were within the soul fragment, they were all pertaining to inscriptions!

It turned out that those items that he had temporarily ignored actually had such a high value!

Chapter 9 – Inscription Technique

Chapter 9 – Inscription Technique

…

…

…

The truth was, at the time Lin Ming had thought of giving up on pursuing the path of being an inscription master. It was because he single-mindedly desired to practice martial arts, and the steps to being an inscription master were unfathomably difficult! One had to work themselves silly, and be able to comprehend thick and comprehensive tomes in short periods of time. It was also very serious and taxing in terms of spiritual consumption. Lin Ming did not have the energy to pursue both the martial path and inscription at the same time. But now things had changed, and that was because he needed… money!

For Body Transformation, there was no such thing as the good medicine, there was only better! What he was using right now were only budget goods! There was medicine in the world that was able to directly increase the cultivation level, and even to assist in breaking through bottlenecks. For this type of medicine, the price was of course astronomically expensive.

Not only that, but weapons, armor, martial skills, all of them needed money! For Lin Ming, the 1000 taels of gold that he had won was only a pittance. It was insufficient to help him break into the Pulse Condensation Period.

If he wanted to make money, he would therefore need to become an inscription master. Lin Ming immediately decided to rent a room, and began to fuse memories left over from the soul fragment.

These memories comprised the bulk of that little soul fragment, and they were also very obscure and difficult to understand. For Lin Ming, this fusion took several hours.

Lin Xiaodong was left by himself to stroll around the trade fair. It was hard to imagine that his friend had come all this way to unexpectedly cultivate! This dedication was something to at least be admired and supported. He truly was a martial nutjob.

In the afternoon, Lin Ming finally opened his eyes. Although he had a splitting headache, a devilish smile split his face his eyes were bright and wide with the wild color of joy!

The inscription techniques that originated from the Realm of the Gods were beyond exquisite and utterly profound. They was not something that the lower planes even dare hope to compare with!

The inscription techniques found within the soul fragment were unexpectedly amazing! They could increase the level of equipment; they could also increase the strength of medicines. One could also engrave the body itself to enhance the speed of cultivation!

This was the sum of countless millennia of knowledge within the numerous dimensions of the Realm of the Gods. And it was only a tiny fragment! The lower planes might possibly have had some similar techniques but most were without a doubt lost in the passage of time due to destruction of ancient sects or other such reasons.

Sky Spill continent’s engraving inscription technique can only increase the level of equipment; moreover, even it can only do so by a tiny amount! To compare this with the Realm of the Gods’ techniques was truly comparing the Heavens and Earth.

Lin Ming raised himself to stand. Suddenly a wave of nausea swept over him. The massive amount of information emerged from within the recesses of his mind. It was a pain that came with a certain virtue. He had spent three hours fusing with the soul, and had only managed to absorb half of the information so far. But in his mind he already had a clear plan.

First he would buy the materials and start from the very foundation to practice! In particular he would focus on increasing the efficacy of medicines and other compounded drugs, as well as the body engraving method. Lin Ming was ecstatic with the endless possibilities!

It had to be known that there existed certain pills, drugs and herbs in this world that were prohibitively rare and precious. Even if you had any amount of money you still might not be able to purchase medicine like them! If the engraving inscriptions for medicine were applied, then the strength of one impossibly rare medicine could become two! What kind of ridiculous concept was that!?

As for the bodily engraving inscription, there wasn't need to say anything about increasing the practice speed. It was equal to enhancing one's own grade of talent. It was truly a heaven defying technique!

However, thinking of the precious materials that he would have to buy, Lin Ming gave a forced smile as he recalled recent events. He had succeeded in obtaining more than 800 taels of gold, he must spend this wisely.

Sky Wind Grass juice, rank three desolate beasts' blood, long-tailed cicadas' molt, ice bound shrimp… Ling Ming purchased these materials in a frenzy. He could find only a few that matched those in his mind. Perhaps most ingredients he recalled were from the Realm of the Gods. If so, even in the Sky Spill Continent, much less the Sky Fortune Kingdom, it was possible that these materials did not exist.

Whether for better or worse, Lin Ming had gone all in on inscription. He purchased several symbol papers and headed back to practice his inscription technique. This truly was a money burning field. He must be successful in engraving these inscriptions and selling a few. Otherwise, he would not have any more follow up funds.

As Lin Ming was calculating, Lin Xiaodong arrived back from the trade fair. His eyes widened as he saw the massive pile of materials in front of Lin Mind. "You nutjob, what have you done!?"

Lin Ming did not know what to say, so he only replied truthfully, “I’m studying the engraving inscription techniques.”

“…Studies, what studies?” Lin Xiaodong asked with a whisper as his eyes widened to the size of eggs. He did not dare to believe his ears almost!

“Studying the engraving inscription techniques.” Lin Ming replied again.

“You’re s-s-s-studying the e-engraving inscription techniques!? Holy sh*t Brother! My brother, my own brother were you turned into an idiot this morning? With less than one thousand taels of gold you want to study the inscription techniques? And where would you get a teacher!?”

“I purchased a rare and precious book.” Lin Ming pointed to the table. Lin Xiaodong’s eyes bulged again as he read the thick letters.

‘Inscription Technique: Getting Started on the Path to Inscription.’

Lin Ming had bought the book mainly to understand the Sky Spill Continent’s inscription techniques and contrast them with the ones he acquired from the soul fragment.

As Lin Xiaodong saw this knockoff ‘Inscription Technique: Getting Started on the Path to Inscription’ he almost vomited blood. He was speechless. He immediately began to regret boasting about the greatness of inscription masters in front of Lin Ming. The regret was heart wrenching.

He turned to the materials again and Lin Xiaodong felt his heart bleed yet again. Although he didn’t want to know, he still turned to look at Lin Ming and asked: “This… how much did you spend on these materials?”

Lin Ming replied helplessly, “…About 70 taels of gold…”

Lin Xiaodong sighed. 70 taels of gold he could accept, but the tone of his voice indicated Lin Ming had not finished. The following words almost caused him to collapse in a fit of despair.

"...I have 70 taels remaining."

At this point, Lin Xiaodong's world turned black, and he slipped and passed out on the floor.

...

...

...

...

"This young and handsome master! This is a very good inscription symbol paper. It is a product of the famous Master Baihong! If you use it on a treasure, the strength and prestige is bound to increase by a minimum of twenty percent!"

At the trade fair's transaction hall, a man wearing formal clothes smiled as he introduced the goods to some juniors of large aristocratic families. After the inscription was drawn up it was placed on the symbol paper and could be used. One merely had to speak the command to mark the desired equipment. It was extremely convenient!

This transaction hall was not a place where one could casually stroll through, it required an admission of 50 gold taels! To the average martial artist, this was not a small number. It was enough for them to purchase medicinal herbs for half a month.

Lin Ming had paid the fee and entered. At this time the entirely of his fortune was a grand total of 75 taels of gold. He entered the transaction hall carefully and with the utmost caution. If he accidentally hit a bottle or pot, even if he sold his body to some old noble lady he would not be able to afford it!

Lin Ming wanted to see how inscription masters made money, but this was the floor where inscription products were sold so he could only spend the money to come here.

“This is Master Baihong’s work?” A young noble asked as he stepped forward. He was obviously attracted by the renown of this master’s work. “Do you have any proof, clerk?”

“Certainly Young Master, we have proof that even Master Baihong’s own master will approve. Be reassured Young Master, that the goods at this trading hall have their providence known! If not, then we will compensate at ten times the price!”

“…Hmm… how much gold?”

“1500 gold taels, if you have the VIP card we can also offer a 10% discount.”

“Mmm… I think that…” The young noble pondered this for a moment. Even if he was obviously rich, 1500 gold taels was not a small number.

Hearing this price, even though Lin Ming was prepared, he was still startled! 1500 gold taels! This was simply gold coins raining from the heavens!

But… since he was learning inscription techniques by himself, then it would be hard to turn a profit so early.

Thinking of this golden rain, Lin Ming became excited. He was already brimming with impatience to learn inscription techniques!

Chapter 10 – Heavenly Ladies Gathered in the Holy Land

Chapter 10 – Heavenly Ladies Gathered in the Holy Land

….

…

…

Although Lin Ming fused with the memories of the soul fragment, he could not make light of the difficulty of inscription. In order to obtain more knowledge to fill the gaps, he must practice body and mind spiritual coordination in order to fully integrate the soul’s memories within his body!

The materials for inscription were equal to his hard earned gold. He could not waste a single bit of them. At this moment, Lin Ming dared not use any of his precious materials, instead he gathered the true essence within his body to practice. He circulated the energy in his body, and every time it seemed to sync with the memories from the soul fragment, he carved that feeling into his mind.

This was a very tedious and spiritually taxing process, but in Lin Ming’s mind he could see tens of thousands of pages flipping one at a time, again and again, as his soul and body gradually acclimated and his movements became smoother.

The soul force required was excessively demanding. Every now and then, Lin Ming would take a short rest, and in the process he would read that alarming knockoff-like manual, ‘Inscription Techniques: How to Get Started on the Path to Inscription’, and he would feel relaxed. Although the manual could offer him nothing that he didn’t know from the soul fragment, it let him have a more solid and concrete understanding of the Sky Spill Continent's engraving inscription techniques.

At the end of a full day of practice, Lin Ming closed the 'Inscription Techniques: How to Get Started on the Path to Inscription' manual. In the manual was not a single description of anything resembling Sky Worm Silk.

The Sky Worm Silk was a top priority for Lin Ming. He had seen many materials in the Trade Fair, but had not seen this, though he had found a good trail of information. The Sky Fortune Kingdom did have Sky Worms, but they were generally used for making zither strings.

Lin Ming could not actually be sure that these two things were one and the same…

Because of the differences in quality of land and cultivation, materials identified in the Realm of the Gods might not necessarily be the same even though they shared the same name. The Sky Worm Silk in the Realm of the Gods could be completely different than the one in the Sky Spill Continent. Lin Ming identified not with the name, but with other factors such as appearance and smell. If these matched then it was most likely the same thing. But in Lin Ming's mind, he has only the memories of the Realm of the Gods' Sky Worm Silk, and since he has not seen the Sky Spill Continent's version, he could not be sure that they were identical.

Lin Ming thought very carefully about where he could find Sky Worm Silk, and finally concluded that he might be able to locate some in the Seven Profound Martial House.

The majority of martial artists may use the sword, sometimes the sabre, or bow, and so on, but ever-so-often there are those that use extremely rare and precious weapons. For instance, the zither!

The Seven Profound Martial House's name of Seven Profound naturally originates from the Seven Profound Valleys. But the Seven Profound Valleys' name also originates from a faction of seven people, each of which uses various weapons. One of them was a female, and her weapon happened to be the zither!

Therefore the zither is also a legacy inheritance of the Seven Profound Valleys, and has been passed down from generation to generation to the present day. Because of this, it is an established department in the Seven Profound Martial House!

But the difficulties of the zither are too many to count. The talent required was unbearably high, but the user also had to have a calm and regal temperament. Due to these requirements, this department of the Seven Profound Martial House had always been lonesome compared with the more popular departments. The vast majority, at least 99 percent of those who came to study the zither were women who came to cultivate their character and instrument skills, and held neither interest in bloody killing nor interest in the extreme studying of martial arts.

Lin Ming immediately set off. His destination was the Zither Department's Public Lecture Hall where they publicly lectured!

Each year, the Seven Profound Martial House that was set up in the Sky Fortune Kingdom selected top tier talents to enter the Seven Profound Valleys. At the request of the royal family, the Seven Profound Martial House also gave special permissions to non-students to enter the public halls where they were able to attend lectures.

However, in order to enter the public lecture hall one needed a special Pass Card! Otherwise everyone and their mothers and fathers and pet dogs would come. So the public lecture hall was waterproofed against anyone except those with permission.

The Seven Profound Martial House had laid down the rules for entry. One had to be at least the third stage of Body Transformation, part of the aristocracy, or a student of the Seven Profound Martial house or the Sky Fortune Martial House. Others did not have the privilege of entering the public lecture hall. The lectures were truly popular and in high demand, but the real content was still reserved for core disciples.

The Pass Card that Lin Ming currently had was borrowed from Lin Xiaodong. The Lin Family was very big after all, and many juniors and seniors that cultivated the Martial Path were naturally in the Seven Profound Martial House. With Lin Xiaodong's connections, obtaining a Pass Card wasn't too difficult.

As Lin Ming first went to visit Lin Xiaodong, who shouted. "Brother! My own, dear brother! Have you finally been cured of your idiocy?"

Lin Xiaodong truly did admire his brother's hard work and diligence towards inscriptions. In his heart, he had always believed that this big bro of his would reach the highest possible boundaries of martial artists and become a legend, known throughout the lands! But the engraving inscription techniques were something that were not achievable through just one's convictions. No matter how driven you were, you needed inborn aptitude!

If it was really possible to become an inscription master by tossing around 800 gold taels to purchase some materials and a copy of this truly shady manual, 'Inscription Technique: Getting Started on the Path to Inscription,' then inscription masters would be crawling all around like ants.

In Lin Xiaodong's eyes, for Lin Ming to study inscription was nothing but a pipe dream. Not only would he lose all of his money and become a beggar, but he would also waste valuable time!

But Lin Xiaodong was a true brother to Lin Ming. It wasn't possible to persuade him, so Lin Xiaodong could only helplessly lend Lin Ming the Pass Card as he considered his options.

He decided he would find an auspicious time and bring Lin Ming to the medical hall and find a renowned doctor. What else could be wrong with Lin Ming but that his brain had been muddled and his spirit was disturbed!

Then, Lin Ming arrived at the Seven Profound Martial House Zither Department Public Lecture Hall. It was a graceful building that was three floors high. The lecture area was spacious.

However, pitiful and occasionally thickheaded Lin Ming did not know that the Seven Profound Martial House's Zither Department Public Lecture Hall was equivalent to a ladies' restroom. It was a true holy land in which all men were expressly forbidden!

The reason for this was that the Zither Department's students were essentially all women. These women who wanted to study the Dao of the Zither tended to be from aristocratic families. In their entire lives they had been gradually influenced by the sweet melodies of music, and thus their appearances also were incomparably high! They were among the most beautiful specimens of womankind. The result of this was that many aristocratic young masters' hearts were disturbed and tempted with lewd thoughts, and had the night dreams that they would poach one of two of these beauties.

These young masters relied on their status to attain a Pass Card and could thus frequent the Zither Department to spy on girls with their dark and frankly dirty intentions. They did not come for the lectures, instead focusing their eyes on the female students' curves, especially those with luscious thighs and… rounder chests.

Even after the lectures were over they would follow them around and eat meals in their proximity, and badger them as the ladies went shopping! Finally the beauties of the Zither Department reached the limits of their patience! They had come here to learn the Dao of the Zither, and they needed to maintain a calm heart and peaceful mind, which was impossible with all of the lewd dogs hounding them about! Gradually the Zither Department began to prevent men from entering, in particular those shifty eyed male hooligans, and directly threw them out, relentlessly and without mercy!

Lin Ming entered the Zither Department Lecture Hall, but the lecture time had not yet started, and several female students were quietly inside, exchanging talk and zither skills with each other. In the center, a girl was playing a new tune. It was a nimble and fresh tune that was filled with elegance as the notes flowed out; it was a tempting tune that lingered on one's mind.

Lin Ming approached to take a gander. The string on the zither was not Sky Worm Silk, as he had anticipated. After all, Sky Worm Silk was an expensive and rare item. The strings were also especially fierce and tenacious. Someone whose cultivation was too low could easily be wounded trying to play on Sky Worm Silk. The young and fragile flowers of the Zither Department would have no way to use such powerful strings.

The girl who was playing the zither was too dedicated to her craft to notice Lin Ming, but the two other female students who were listening naturally noticed the presence of a male. They knitted their brows and frowned, but did not speak.

Every other period of time there would always be some men with evil intentions hovering like flies. They would wait for their turn and while pretending to be some zither enthusiast, they would come closer, only to look at the female students' chests. These sorts of men made the female students feel utter revulsion.

The female students who studied the Dao of the Zither tended to be thin skinned, and did not want to lose face over arguing against some dirty beast over whether their goods were ogled, so many sexual deviants would be intense and even maybe cop a feel with their hands or feet. It wasn't until a group of sisters banded together under the guidance of the Elder Senior Sister that all the perverts were shown the door.

Even so, there were still those utterly shameless and thick-skinned rogues and rascals, who even after being thrown out, would come crawling back with the excuse that they were true students of the Dao of the Zither, and that they wanted to study this 'Dao of the Zither' together with other female students, and that they certainly did not entertain any dirty thoughts. But they were without a doubt, shameless students who were only masters of the Dao of Depravity!

Because of this, the Elder Senior Sister also became equally ruthless, and on the second day, she set upright a bold sign above the entrance upon which was written, 'Men and Dogs, Do Not Enter."

The matter became increasingly serious, and was finally addressed through the intervention of high level members within the department. Men were therefore banned from the Zither Department Lecture Hall. The exception was that male students who came in could still enter, but under the absolute condition that their presence was determined by the Zither Department's female students. Any men that had a hint of lewd of evil intentions were instantly expelled and had all privileges forever revoked!

As such, over time, now the Zither Department Lecture Hall no longer saw even the shadows of men.

Lin Ming naturally didn't know the sordid history of the Zither Department and its war with all perverts everywhere. He looked around awhile and did not find a single instrument that used Sky Worm Silk, and so began to stroll around down one side of the hall to a collection of books, hoping perhaps that there was something here that was related to what he was looking for.

As he left, several students finished playing, and they looked at the distant Lin Ming that was standing near the bookshelves. They said with a whisper, "This fellow doesn't look like he studies the zither."

"Mm, I think I saw that little shifty-eyed rascal looking at Xiao Sian's hand a moment ago."

"Surprisingly he doesn't seem that old. He looks around 15-16 years old."

"Humph! This is our home turf here. A 16 year old male should already be married. Someone at my age might already be a mother." The girl who spoke was only a light 17 year old girl. In Sky Fortune City, 18 year olds will generally have married by then. In the more rural countryside, they would even marry one or two years in advance, so a 16 year old married man wasn't too rare.

"Whatever, it is not under our control. Elder Senior Sister will come to the lecture soon. If this fellow has any dirty thoughts, she will immediately ask him to leave."

Lin Ming had not heard these young girls' discussion; otherwise he would have been left speechless. He indeed did look at Xiao Sian's hand, but that was only because he was trying to ascertain the material of the strings!

He kept looking for the information on the Sky Worm Silk. Luckily the Zither Department Lecture Hall was very large, and even this one side had a good area set aside for a collection of books, each of which held a variety of musical knowledge and history.

Lin Ming of course was not interested in music whatsoever, he searched and searched and finally found what he was looking for! It was a manual named the 'Sky Zither List."

'Sky Zither List' was a an encyclopedia on ancient instruments of all sorts, that included origins, users, manufacturers, materials, and other arcane knowledge, all of which were described in minute detail. Of course in these rare materials were also included the Sky Worm Silk! Lin Ming was incomparably excited, and he began to read with vigor.

'Sky Zither List' introduced the Sky Work Silk's properties and gathering methods. The only fault so far was that was no available picture of the Sky Worm Silk, but Lin Ming was able to roughly determine that this was the Sky Worm Silk that he was looking for!

Lin Ming was just innocently and earnestly reading, and did not realize at all that the number of female students in the Lecture Hall began to creep up. They on the other hand did notice him in the corner by himself. In this group of heavenly beauties, the presence of a single man in his dirtied clothes was truly plain as day.

Luckily, Lin Ming had not looked around, as all of his heart's attentions were focused on the book. Even though the female students thought it might be fake, they did not have any evidence that they could use to throw him out.

Originally, the lecture would have proceeded smoothly, but there existed the Zither Department's legendary Elder Senior Sister, who retained an enormous prejudice against the entirety of men-kind!

In the social circles of aristocratic young masters, the Senior Elder Sister's name was like a thunderbolt that reverberated in their ears and caused their hearts to heat up with anger. That sign upon which 'No Man or Dog shall enter' was written was an insult to all of them, and caused them to feel the pain of losing so many chances with ladies of such… appreciable goods! They cursed her to remain a spinster for the rest of her life!

In fact, the Elder Senior Sister was a beauty among beauties. She was around 20 years of age, and had a flawless oval face, stature that belonged to royalty, long and slender thighs and legs that climbed to the sky.

It was a pity that the Elder Senior Sister had never shown any interest in men, and was easily irritated with a short temper. Any male who dared to gaze upon her majestic beauty would be sent a swift and decisive kick between their two legs!

After the Elder Senior Sister arrived, she instantly discovered Lin Ming! Her willow eyebrows instantly wrinkled, and she laid down her zither and arrived in front of him. She rapped her fingers three times on his desk and asked him, “How did you get in?”

Chapter 11 – Elder Senior Sister

Chapter 11 – Elder Senior Sister

…

…

…

When someone is angry, there can be differences in the projection of that anger. With just a few words, or a slight change in body language, the story told and the effect created would be drastically different. For instance, this Elder Senior Sister had her slender eyebrows pointing straight up, her waist was rigid and unbend-able, and in addition to the knocks on the table, the intense and murderous gaze, and the chilling tone used, her killing intent was soaring to the heavens! A young, simple-hearted male student who saw her would only be frightened out of his wits and cause a mess in his pants, timidly being unable to speak.

Lin Ming was also a bit confused, and wasn't sure if he came to the lecture in the proper way, so he asked a bit timidly, "Was I not allowed to come here?"

As soon as the Elder Senior Sister heard Lin Ming's words, her heart instantly raged with flames of anger! This little rascal! She did not believe that he could possess a Pass Card and still not know that the Zither Department had an unwritten agreement that all men could not enter! At this moment, a sweet and gentle voice sounded out, "Sister Ling, what is happening?"

Lin Ming looked towards that sweet sound and he was suddenly shocked! It came from a girl wearing a simple white dress, with hair like flowing ink. She was simply an elegant immortal beauty with incomparable grace. She was none other than Marshal Qin Xiao's granddaughter, the infamous Qin Xingxuan!

At the trade fair, Lin Ming had seen her from afar. In every single parameter, from her number one family background, her sixth grade talent, her peerless beauty and charm, her skill at inscription, and strength, all of this made even top tier talents feel inferior.

Although Lin Ming thought that with his stroke of heavenly luck, he was destined for greatness and would be able to become a hero of the entire Sky Spill Continent, at this moment Qin Xingxuan was an unattainable existence. Let alone him, before her presence even that spoiled bastard Zhu Yan would be nothing but a frog staring out of a well.

Lin Ming was astonished, he had not thought that he could see Qin Xingxuan at this moment, but his astonishment was seen by everyone, and especially the Elder Senior Sister!

Humph! This was his true sexual deviant nature emerging at last!

“The toad thinks he can eat some swan!” The Elder Senior Sister’s heart burned as she criticized him. The truth was that the girls’ thoughts were complex at this moment, although the Elder Senior Sister thought him a repugnant man, since Lin Ming did not respond after seeing Qin Xingxuan, she did not get the general feeling that he was some sort of pervert. This didn’t sit well with her. After all, all men were perverted!

She said to Qin Xingxuan, “This deviant little child snuck in to harass us women. I am questioning him. You, where is your pass card?”

The following few words were to Lin Ming, who could only scratch his head. When did he come here to harass girls? Why was he being accused of this?

He said, “I only came here to look up some reference books, please don’t accuse me of anything I did not do without evidence or proof. All you are doing is drawing absurd conclusions and insulting mine and your intelligence.”

“Looking at reference books? All you did was look at that ‘Sky Zither List’. Are you thinking that you are going to make a zither or something?”

Lin Ming didn’t have anything to say in response, so he casually said, “I just wanted to understand some things.”

“Humph! These shameless lecherous men have always said that they wanted to understand music, and used this as an excuse to take advantage! Such acts are really disgusting. So you have interest in zithers hmm? Good, then I ask you, how many notes does a zither have, and what are they? What king of zither material suits the treble notes, what kind of material suits the bass notes? If you can tell me and satisfy me with your answers, then I’ll believe you have an interest in music and you want to study the zither.”

Lin Ming froze on the scene. He knew only the most minimal details of zithers and music, much less zither knowledge of which he knew nothing!

“Humph! So you dare to lie in public! You just wanted to look at a book so you could appear as if you were acting casually. You little pervert, your real goal was to peek on us girls! I’ve seen your kind plenty enough. Hand over your Pass Card, scum!” The Elder Senior Sister put out her hand in front of Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was silent. His Pass Card was borrowed, and although the Seven Profound Martial House was lax in their use, he had to conform to the rules since he was here using the Pass Card.

But Qin Xingxuan said, “Sister Ling, consider this matter settled. This is only his first offense; there is no need to be so harsh on the boy.”

Qin Xingxuan also thought that Lin Ming was lying, and the truth was that he was indeed lying!

The Elder Senior Sister could naturally not disregard Qin Xingxuan’s words, so she said, “Xingxuan, your heart truly is too gentle, we really cannot afford to tolerate people like this. This kind of person, just taking his Pass Card is being lenient.”

‘Take my Pass Card?’ Lin Ming said with a shock. “You are also a student. You aren’t part of the school authority. What jurisdiction and right do you have to confiscate anything of mine?”

“Humph! What a smart mouth. I have the qualifications to confiscate the Pass Card and this was granted to me by the school authorities to me and me alone. In this Zither Department everyone must give me face. What I say goes. Here, I am the god! Now hand it over, or you’ll see what I can do!

The Pass Card was borrowed from Lin Xiaodong, naturally Lin Ming could not let it be taken, or else how could he face his brother who had taken such pains to get it for him!

Lin Ming did not have any choice but to admit his true purpose. In fact this wasn’t really anything. Inscription development was nothing new, and new materials being researched were a common matter, whether or not they succeeded.

Lin Ming said, “I am researching inscription techniques in regards to the Sky Worm Silk material.”

Researching inscription techniques? Using Sky Work Silk as a new material in some technique?

If these words came from the lips of an inscription master in their 50s or 60s, then the Elder Senior Sister wouldn’t be surprised, but to hear these words from a young boy of 15 to 16 years who was still wet behind the ears? The development of new materials and techniques? Were you kidding me? Was this a bad dream?

Only an inscription master who was practicing techniques and found his current materials inadequate would go to seek something new as a substitute. This 15 year old country bumpkin, at best his foundation would be reading some shoddy guide like ‘Inscription Techniques: How to get Started on the Path to Inscription.’ Even that would be considered good. So to develop new materials, on what basis was he not lying out of his ass again?

The Elder Senior Sister laughed out loud and said, “You think we are dumb or something? It’s true that I do not personally understand inscription at all, but unfortunately for you, you are out of luck! At my side is the greatest inscription talent in the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom, and even in several countries around! You want to show off your garbage skills before a true expert? I really am going to die smiling here. Xingxuan, I ask you, have you started to study new materials yet?”

Qin Xingxuan gave a straight look at Lin Ming. She was similar to him in age, and could not think that Lin Ming was saying anything that wasn’t a lie. She said, “Engraving inscription techniques are numerous and have profound diversity. Even just in primary materials there are recorded over 13,600 kinds, and in more advanced materials, become of their secrecy it is hard to state the number. Even these 13,600 materials are enough for an inscription master to learn for years to discover their effects, usages, mix ratios, structures, and other such things. My own talent is low, and I have not been able to find the use for all these primary materials, much less search for alternatives.”

The Elder Senior Sister laughed with a self-satisfied smile. “Ha-ha! The little perverted boy is spinning his web around and around and now it all comes crashing down! Spin some more boy, this big sis is waiting for you!”

Lin Ming heard this grossly exaggerated laughter and could only laugh to himself. This woman was certified crazy. A complete nutjob. Was she dumped by a man or something? She had some sort of psychological abnormality towards men.

He said, “I really am here to study. I am studying the inscription techniques and was suddenly inspired by a dream. Who said that I must succeed or would not succeed? Who said that a new inscription apprentice could not study new materials?”

“Humph! It seems you’re not scared of death until you see your own coffin! Good! Very good! This big sis is a reasonable human after all. Today I will let you sincerely convince Xingxuan here. The inscription technique I don’t understand, so you test him.

Qin Xingxuan was frustrated. The Elder Senior Sister was indeed paranoid of men, but looking at this young man, he had to be lying. He was young and wearing simple attire, so his family background can't be prominent. Did such a youth really have the financial resources and opportunity to learn inscription techniques? Why would you mercilessly expose the poor boy to this extent?

She said, "Sister Ling, please let this be considered as finished."

The Elder Senior Sister replied, "Xingxuan, you are just too kindhearted! You do not know how we were initially harassed by these scum, and our struggles to stop them! If we are tenderhearted and merciful, then there will be no end to their pestering!"

Qin Xingxuan didn't have anything she could further do except ask him a few simple questions. It would be fine if he could at least answer one!

"This fellow student, do you know who established the Sky Fortune Kingdom's inscription technique?"

Qin Xingxuan asked the most general question as possible. But even this caused Lin Ming to be silent and scratch his head. Who the hell knew what old fogy established the Sky Fortune Kingdom's inscription technique. And who even cared? The memory of the Realm of the Gods would not have such trivial knowledge, and even the manual 'Inscription Techniques: How to Get Started on the Path to Inscription' only spoke of the rudimentary knowledge, and did not expand on the history or the Sky Fortune Kingdom's inscription technique history.

Seeing Lin Ming stuck, the Elder Senior Sister's smile grew increasingly radiant. This only confirmed for her that the youth was nothing more than a pervert of the Dao of Deviants, and in her psychologically warped mind she wanted to torment the little rascal some more for fun.

"You don't know even this? Even I know you have nothing to say."

But Lin Ming reluctantly said, “I do not know history but I know a bit about pharmacology and material reactions.”

Pharmacology and material reactions? This was quite a broad and diverse field that not even Qin Xingxuan had begun to master, much less this youth. Qin Xingxuan thought that that there were some truly unreasonable people. If they were wrong first, then they just had to admit it and it would all be good. What was the meaning of continuing the deception further?

Therefore she asked a not so simple question, as she wanted to end this boring and insignificant interrogation. After all she came here to study the zither, and she was missing the lecture. Although Qin Xingxuan’s weapon was a sword, that didn’t stop her from playing an instrument either.

“Then this student, do you know the ‘shock’ inscription and the unique pattern and characteristics of it?”

Chapter 12 – Qin Xingxuan’s Invitation

Chapter 12 – Qin Xingxuan’s Invitation

…

…

…

The engraving inscription technique may use tens of thousands of different materials, from the common to the incomparably rare. These materials could be combined in a variety of different ways, and when supplemented by an inscription master, they would then be able to draw a myriad of arcane and profound inscriptions!

The inscription techniques contained 3600 foundation lines and 4900 foundation symbols. This myriad of lines and symbols could then be combined into a variety of permutations to trace and engrave the ever-changing inscription technique.

The ‘shock’ inscription was only a single one of the 3600 kinds of foundation lines.

Lin Ming naturally knew the ‘shock’ foundation line. In fact, he knew that the foundations lines were not limited to 3600, but there were actually 6000 different types. It was almost double the foundation lines that the inscription masters of the Sky Spill Continent possessed.

However, just like the Sky Worm Silk, Lin Ming was not sure that the Sky Spill Continent’s ‘shock’ line was the same as the one in the Realm of the Gods. He could only hope that there weren’t too many differences. He stretched out his right hand and the true essence gathered on his fingertips. With his hand he drew a series of brilliant lines in the air. They glowed with a silent and gorgeous light and finally coalesced into a complex diagram that shone in front of Qin Xingxuan and the blankly staring Elder Senior Sister.

Lin Ming had been practicing these inscriptions every day, and the soul fragments memories and his finally began to harmonize. The results of this were in two words, quite handy.

Lin Ming asked, “Was this the ‘shock’ symbol?”

Qin Xingxuan stared dumbfounded, and the Elder Senior Sister looked at her and noticed her expression. She was instantly able to determine that this young hooligan was not just doodling with his fingertips, but had drawn the ‘shock’ line and there was no mistake about it! Sh*t! This young hick pervert actually unexpectedly understood inscription techniques?! Wasn’t this just too preposterous?!

In Qin Xingxuan’s heart she was truly surprised and was trying to not reveal her complex emotions. There were 3600 foundation lines, and it was absurdly difficult for an amateur to remember them completely. It wasn’t too strange to say that Lin Ming knew this one foundation line, but what startled her was the ‘shock’ symbol he drew was completely correct; the energy was placed in the right spots and it was simply astounding. This could only the results of painstaking effort during practice!

With a bit of depression in her heart, she startled, “It is...”

Lin Ming said, “The ‘shock’ pattern is a sign of the killing god, its use typically will have it placed on a weapon. When a martial artist uses a weapon he will generally concentrate his energy on the weapon, and the energy will be used in a battle to defeat the enemy, but the increased effectiveness is limited. If the ‘shock’ line is placed on the weapon, then when a martial artist concentrates his energy in the weapon, it will flow through the ‘shock’ pattern and create a high speed vibration which increases the penetrating power, effectively increasing the degree of weapon sharpness...”

Lin Ming easily explained the ‘shock’ pattern as Qin Xingxuan had expected. If he was able to draw the ‘shock’ pattern with such skill, then he of course had to know the principles behind it! It would only be strange if he did not!

Qin Xingxuan’s competitive spirit was also aroused! She couldn’t let this boy outdo her! She asked, “Then, this fellow student, do you also know the ‘flag’ symbol drawing technique and principle behind it? She had abandoned the relatively simple foundation lines and raised the stakes to some of the more complex foundation symbols. However, this naturally could not confuse Lin Ming! In fact, Lin Ming’s understanding of foundation symbols was far more deep and profound than anything that could be offered in the Sky Spill Continent.

He calmly drew the ‘flag’ symbol in the air. Although the foundation symbols were somewhat complex, Lin Ming’s finger did not have the slightest pause, and in the blink of an eye, the complex inscription symbol sparkled in the air.

Now, even Qin Xingxuan was completely awed. The foundation symbol was far more complex with double the lines and even more so difficult to trace the energy in the symbol, but Lin Ming had done so with ease. This had already far surpassed Qin Xingxuan!

My god, this was a genius! Unexpectedly this random kid turned out to be a genius among geniuses in inscription talent!

But who did he study with to learn this godly engraving inscription technique? His appearance indicated he was not from some big aristocratic family. Was it possible that he was apprenticed to some ancient sage or extraordinary hermit who liked to live in the remote and secluded mountains?

Qin Xingxuan found that Lin Ming was filled with riddles, and she continued to test him. The more they exchanged the more she was surprised! This Lin Ming was not like he seemed! There were 3600 lines and 4900 symbols which added to more than 8000 different kinds, and he casually listed them, as if he were familiar with each one!

Compared to Qin Xingxuan’s surprise, the Elder Senior Sister was already floored by their conversation and remained confused on the sidelines as the two inscriptionists spoke to each other in what seemed to be a different and completely heavenly language; she could only look on at Xingxuan who showed increasing amazement and admiration.

The Elder Senior Sister understood Xingxuan very well. Do not be fooled by Qin Xingxuan's elegant and cool expression! She treated everyone with good manners and effortless grace, but the truth was that the natural sixth ranked talent and her immense strength had doomed her heart with the soul of arrogance. Before now, she had never given anyone of the same generation such a high appraisal.

Finally the Elder Senior Sister became numb. She only understood one thing; today it would be impossible to confiscate this boy's Pass Card!

Sh*t! To think she would make such a big mistake! She stomped her feet on the ground! To think that this random hick kind could actually be some sort of inscription talent!

This Elder Senior Sister was really going to go mad!

Gradually, Qin Xingxuan's expression grew increasingly respectful from the tone when the exchange started it became progressively humble. She found that by conversing with Lin Ming, her knowledge of symbols and energy structures insights had a broadened outlook due to his unique understanding and depth of knowledge. It was a great and rewarding feeling.

Qin Xingxuan was able to confirm her suspicions that Lin Ming was a rare talent that could only emerge once a century. But behind him was an even greater mystery! This shadow master who taught him could only be an Inscription Master of absolute knowledge and authority! Even if compared with her own teacher, it was like comparing a candle to the raging sun!

Exactly what kind of origin did this youth have?

Qin Xingxuan had great interest in Lin Ming, not mention the exchanges they had in which she just profited, but Lin Ming himself, and the mystery teacher behind him had extraordinary significance to the Qin Family!

With that thought, Qin Xinghuan said, "Fellow student, it's about time to begin zither lessons, so I'll have to excuse myself. It was very wonderful talking to you today. If possible, perhaps after the zither lecture ends, then little Xingxuan would like to ask you to go to the

Great Clarity Pavilion for a quick meal, and… explore… the principles of inscription techniques together. Is this agreeable with the fellow student?”

Qin Xinghuan’s sweet and dulcet voice was very persuasive, and coupled with her sincere expression and heavenly appearance; it was hard for any male to refuse.

The truth was that Lin Ming did not want to reject her. Not only was Qin Xinghuan’s background impressive and she herself beautiful, she was also rare in that she treated others well and did not have any airs of superiority. In front of such a girl it was impossible to have any hint of malice.

However Lin Ming was too tight on time and the exam for the Seven Profound Martial House was only three months away. He needed to make money during this period with the inscription technique to purchase the medicines he needed, and then engrave the inscriptions on the medicines and further his own cultivation as quickly as he could, all in order to enter the Seven Profound Martial House.

Even if he entered the Seven Profound Martial House he would still need strength. There was still that slimy Zhu Yan that would undoubtedly be eyeing him for a fight. If he didn’t increase his strength then he couldn’t even be considered a worthy opponent for Zhu Yan, and would be stepped all over miserably!

Lin Ming was simply uninterested to stay in the zither class, then have lunch with a beautiful woman, and after lunch continue chatting with the day disappearing without any of them keeping track, and then exchanging contact information with the aim of meeting again. For Qin Xingxuan this was good and dandy, but for Lin Ming he would learn nothing! After all, just in the exchange right now, it was Qin Xingxuan who had picked up all the advantages and insights, and there was no new knowledge or inspirations that she could confer upon Lin Ming!

So Lin Ming somewhat regrettably refused and said, “I’m very sorry but today I have some things to do, so I must hurry back.”

“Oh… I… well, I should have known.” Qin Xingxuan said with regret and her cheeks flushed red. She had asked him and had not considered the possibility of rejection. In fact, Qin Xingxuan since her childhood days had never once invited a boy of the same age as her to eat a meal! But she has been asked out countless times! All of which she rejected as she ate together with her close friend. When refusing others time and feelings, she had absolutely no feelings towards it. But this time she was the one rejected, and her number one discovery was that the taste of rejection was also very bitter, as if she suffered from an injustice. After all even though she came from a large aristocratic family, in the heart of her heart she was still a 15 year old young girl!

To Lin Ming’s rejection, the Elder Senior Sister’s brain short-circuited and she almost ran up to slap him around. In her mind was only one thought! This guy… this guy actually refused the one and only Qin Xingxuan!

My god!

Is such a thing even possible on this beautiful world!?

Is he really a man!?

Chapter 13 – Inscription, Go!

Chapter 13 – Inscription, Go!

…

…

…

“Hey you, stop! Stop, do you hear me! Do you even know who she is?!” The Elder Senior Sister yelled in utter disbelief. Although it wasn’t evident from just looking at Qin Xingxuan’s cool expression, but because they were the closest of friends, she knew what the poor girl was thinking. How could she let this little punk get away with harming the heart of her dearest friend? Why must men always be this cruel and thoughtless? This was what scholars called a true miscarriage of justice!

This man truly was a hateful specimen of all mankind. Let alone the most stunning beauty Xingxuan, even if a random girl plucked from the Zither Department were to be presented, she would cause hordes of men to run over like dogs. This boy didn’t know his own limits!

For any man to just simply reject Qin Xingxuan like it was just another day; this must have been a dream!

Lin Ming’s heart mourned. He certainly knew who Qin Xingxuan was, but it wasn’t like he could reveal his plans, so he tried to skirt around the subject, “Elder Senior Sister, I really do have something I must do, I’m not lying to you here.

“Who the hell are you calling Elder Senior Sister you little rascal? Look, I’m not going to quibble with you over such small matters, so I’m going to show some grace and lend you some servants to do whatever it is that you needed to do, however unimportant it may be.” The Elder Senior Sister stood in front of Lin Ming with her hands firmly set on her waist and blocked him from leaving. Although her family background wasn't anywhere near as grand as Qin Xingxuan's, she was also from an aristocratic family, and dispatching a few servants to handle matters in Sky Fortune City was simplicity itself.

Lin Ming was at a loss of words, this maiden was too overbearing and haughty, he said, "My business is cultivation, I just don't have the time in these few upcoming months to spare."

The Elder Senior Sister wanted to say something, but Qin Xingxuan interrupted her, "Let this fellow student leave, perhaps it is his master calling him."

In Qin Xingxuan's mind, with Lin Ming's accomplishments at his young age, he must have focused most of his life's attention on diligently practicing. In these cases it was only natural that his mysterious master would arrange harsh lessons for him every day.

Hearing these words of hers, Lin Ming felt relief in his heart. Although he had spoken the truth, and he was just a tad more mentally mature compared to these two beauties, he could not relax because of their overwhelming strength and backgrounds. With just a word alone, they could crush him!

As Lin Ming prepared to leave, Qin Xingxuan smiled and said, "My name is Qin Xingxuan, if fellow student is ever finished with his cultivation and has some time to spare, please come to the Marshal's Quarters to look for me. Your presence will always be welcome."

Lin Ming paused in his step, and told her his name, "Lin Ming."

Then Lin Ming walked away. Staring at his departing back, Qin Xingxuan could only sigh. What sort of characters were used to spell his name? Was it Lin as in forest, and Ming as in bright? With just these two characters, there would be too many duplicates in Sky Fortune City.

How would she find him in this city?

…

…

…

As he returned from the Seven Profound Martial House, Lin Ming had already decided what he needed. The Sky Fortune Kingdom did produce Sky Worm Silk, but it was mainly used for instruments. With his martial arts background, it was difficult for him to find and purchase. However, he could have Lin Xiaodong request the family to purchase some, as such a large family certainly had musicians and it would be easy to obtain as long as one paid the market price.

From the 'Sky Zither List', Lin Ming could tell the approximate price of Sky Worm Silk was about 20 taels of gold per foot. Although it didn't sound too expensive, it was because Sky Worm Silk was very thin and light. If calculated in weight, it wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that it would require over a 10,000 taels of gold to purchase a single pound!

Lin Ming only had 70 gold taels, so he could purchase three feet. At the trade fair he had spent 800 taels of gold to buy a massive pile of materials, but just three feet of Sky Worm Silk would cost 60 taels of gold. These three feet of silk would no doubt be light, and it only proved that it was prohibitively expensive.

Lin Ming tacked a calendar onto his bedpost with pages equal to the number of days he had left. He would rip one off every day. The first month he would spend practicing the inscription technique, and the other two months he would purchase the medicines he needed and then cultivate like a mad man! He believed that with elixirs and pills, he would be able to break through the First Stage of Body Transformation, and perhaps even reach the peak of the Second Stage!

If he could reach the peak of the Second Stage, then even if he couldn't exceed Zhu Yan, at least he would not suffer a disastrous loss.

After using his true essence to practice a hundred times, Lin Ming finally began the formal steps for inscription that involved materials. This was how most inscription masters started, but Lin Ming did not have the luxury to casually waste the materials he had! He had to treat each and every precious attempt with the utmost care. With this pile of materials that costed 800 taels of gold, he had to come out with at least a single viable inscription!

Inscription not only required good perception, it also needed a good teacher, financial support, and most of all, a powerful soul force.

Because in the inscription process, one had to control the engraving marks by using their soul force to draw the energy structure. Lin Ming's soul force had already been measured as a child, and it was also a third grade soul force.

The third grade soul force and third grade martial talent could be considered decent. To an aristocratic family with no history of martial arts, it was good, but it certainly wasn't anywhere near the top.

Martial artists in the Body Transformation stage did not have many reasons to use their soul force, so this was Lin Ming's first time utilizing this form of energy. He began to mobilize his soul force in accordance with the memories found in the soul fragment. He circulated this soul force in his body, familiarizing with it, and moving it with his mind.

All living beings had soul force, but being able to consciously move it was something that the average person did not dare to achieve. It required the soul law formulas, and needed daily rigorous practice. Many inscription masters had managed to memorize the varieties of symbols and basic structures, but if their time studying the soul law formulas was inadequate, it would result in them not being to use soul force. If one could not use the soul force, then the material could not be utilized. As a result, they would not even have the qualifications to waste these goods!

As soon as Lin Ming began to revolve the soul law formula, a feeling of deep peace came from the memories of the soul fragment; it filled him with a familiar sensation. This soul law formula that he used, the elder who the memories had belonged to, must have used it a truly terrifying number of times before his death. With this kind of familiar feeling, it was as if Lin Ming had been practicing inscription techniques for his entire life, and he felt his fatigue fade away. Not only that, but the majority of his soul force was retained and he did not need to worry about any negative influence from the memories.

He gently placed out his hand and the invisible soul force began to tug at the Sky Wind Grass roots and suck out the juices. Using his mind, Lin Ming began to practice changing the juice into various shapes under his control; sometimes he made it into thin strings, sometimes he condensed it into a crystal clear bubble.

This level of ease even caused Lin Ming to be surprised. He knew that in the cheap manual, it had stated that for those that could utilize soul law formulas, those with inborn talent of perception would only need one month, while those with lesser talent could practice for half a year and still have no results.

Each inscription master had their own personal soul law formula. The soul law formulas naturally had their different rankings, as some were worse and some were better. Inscription masters thus naturally regarded their own soul law formulas with great love and care! It was something that they might not even pass down to their disciples, because the soul law formula would directly influence the ability to utilize the soul force. It was of the highest importance to an inscription master!

Without a shadow of doubt, the ‘Overbearing Soul Tactic’ within the memories of the elder was at the apex of soul law formulas! Even the Sky Spill Continent’s greatest inscription masters were nothing but little bumpkin children compared to this great elder.

Adding that Lin Ming had a familiarity with the law soul formula that originated from the memories, in practice his third grade soul force talent was on par with a fourth grade talent, or perhaps even a fifth grade! These were the precious techniques that had been left by the memories!

His five fingers easily formed a simple seal, and a surge of soul force entered the drop of Sky Wind Grass juice. Lin Ming’s fingers drew a line in the air that shined with a sparkling light. The soul force interacted with the Sky Wind Grass juice and rapidly coalesced into a pleasant and mystical rune.

The rune was smaller than a fingernail, yet it contained a complex energy. Even within the same rune, because of the subtle differences in shape, technique, strength of the soul force, and other factors, ten thousand inscription masters would have ten thousand different manifestations. And within these there would be those of lesser or greater profundity. Lin Ming could not tell whether the symbol rune he created was garbage or treasure, but he was still satisfied with his result.

He began to create his next symbol rune. He had only used half a drop of the Sky Wind Grass juice, so he still had half a drop remaining. His fingers twisted as he formed another seal, and began to condense his soul force with the half drop into another seal. However as soon as the seal flashed, there was a slight murmur in Lin Ming's soul force which caused degradation in the output. Lin Ming could only gaze on as that half drop of liquid turned into floating ash.

Lin Ming could only sigh and bite his tongue. It required about a jin of roots in order to create that single drop, and it cost a few taels of gold for those roots. For the general populace, that was the monthly income of an entire family.

It was hard to imagine, but for those that had just begun studying inscription techniques, there was no way for their soul force to be stable, and thus failure was an everyday occurrence, and successes were the true miracles.

In the blink of an eye, a few taels of gold had evaporated into the air. In one day it was easy to spend a few hundred taels of gold on practicing inscription techniques. It truly was burning away money! With the taste of failure still fresh in his mouth, Lin Ming became increasingly cautious. He moved his fingers again to form a seal, and one by one, more inscriptions emerged from his hands. Of course, he failed more often than he succeeded, but as time went on the number of failures began to decrease.

As Ling Ming produced more runes, he began to discover than his own scant soul force was just too weak, and this was related to his First Stage of Body Transformation. Even with the top tier ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ and ‘Overbearing Soul Tactic’ supporting him, he couldn’t continue for much longer.

Using such little soul force, Lin Ming couldn’t form the runes as easily as he could before. Moreover, more faults began to show in them due to a lack of soul force, and with each fault that occurred, it was also a waste of soul force!

As his soul force became increasingly low, Lin Ming’s inscription process was only at the halfway point. However he began to have difficulties in sustaining the soul force, and without him sensing, the soul force in his body had become too exhausted and a wave of dizziness passed him. The runes in front of him began to vibrate, as they verged to on the border of being shattered!

Lin Ming’s heart jumped, and he quickly stabilized his soul force. In an instant his palms were covered in sweat. He had almost made a mess of things! How many tens of taels of gold would have disappeared!?

But Lin Ming could see that shining gold pot at the end of the sweat-covered rainbow. He slugged right on through!

Chapter 14 – Increasing Strength

Chapter 14 – Increasing Strength

…

…

…

Lin Ming spent half of his concentration on maintaining the integrity of the symbol runes with his true essence, and the other half of his concentration was directing the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' to speed up the rate of true essence absorption. With these two opposing thoughts in his mind, he failed his inscription!

After five consecutive failures and five piles of materials turned to ash, Lin Ming came to the realization that he was completely unable to complete the inscription before he ran out of true essence. After spending such a long time on these futile efforts, he finally cut off the soul force. The remaining seals in the air trembled, and then detonated in a succession of brilliant sparkles.

Looking at the beautiful brilliance, Lin Ming felt a stabbing pain in his heart. This was money! This was all his money…

Although he didn't expect the first time to be successful, but losing so much gold was hard on him. The only silver lining was that he had not arrived at the stage where he had to use his most rare and expensive material, the Sky Worm Silk!

His leftover material was about enough for ten more attempts. If he was unable to complete an inscription before then, then he would be dead broke and unable to continue any further.

Any other inscription master would have listened to his thoughts and coughed blood. Wanting to succeed in ten more attempts? What a fantasy! This was his first time attempting inscription, let alone completing an inscription in the next ten tries, a normal inscription student would have trouble even drawing up a successful line!

Lin Ming gathered the residual ashes of the materials, and began to recount his mistakes from a moment ago. The memories that he inherited from the elder weren't wrong, but it was just that the gap of soul force between them was simply too vast. He might not even be able to complete a simple inscription.

These inscription techniques in the elder's memory may have been considered simple and light by him, but in the Sky Spill continent, they were still incomparably complicated godly techniques. Once drawn, even the inscription masters of this land would be shocked!

After summarizing the reasons for his failure, Lin Ming began to plot countermeasures. He couldn't enhance his own soul force in such a short time, but what he could do was minimize the mistakes he made as much as possible. It was simply because each mistake was a waste of soul force. If he made less mistakes, then he would not only have more materials and thus money, but more soul force to use.

Thinking like this, Lin Ming gave up using materials and instead only practiced using his soul force again and again like an unthinking zombie.

His idea was very simple. Using soul force was free and it was easy on the body. If he practiced the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' well, then he wouldn't lose anything, but would also be able to practice at the same time. What could possibly be more perfect! It was as if these two were made for each other.

As long as he didn't waste any money, then he had no fears! It didn't matter if he practiced 100 times. If that wasn't enough he would practice 1000 times. If that wasn't enough he would practice 10,000 times, or 100,000 times or even a million times, until the process became a reflex, and then he wouldn't believe that he would fail again!

…

…

..

Sky Fortune City. Marshal’s Quarters

In Sky Fortune City, two complexes were considered the most grandiose and splendid architectural achievements, the Imperial Palace, and the Marshal’s Quarters, which was situated in the Sky Fortune City’s northwest corner. The Marshal’s Quarters was three miles long from one end to the other, and it was a thousand steps wide. There were rocky waterfalls with beautiful flowers, and a winding corridor garden, along with countless waterside pavilions. It truly was breathtaking.

Right now, in the Marshal’s Quarters library pavilion, was an elderly man wearing a long gown and carrying a gold gilded bird cage. Next to him stood a peaceful looking girl in white; it was Qin Xingxuan.

“Oh? So there is someone like that out there? Even you were humbly defeated by him?”

“Mm.” Qin Xingxuan politely nodded. The old man was her master, Sky Fortune City’s most prestigious and famous inscription master, Mister Muyi.

Qin Xingxuan had a very good memory; she completely recounted the events that had happened, even every word of Lin Ming’s. After the old man listened, his expression grew increasingly dignified. At first he assumed that his young student was in love and being modest about some boy she liked, but it seemed like she really was inferior. Moreover, that youth’s knowledge was too rich and experienced; it wasn’t likely to come from someone in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, but instead some ancient master from another, more developed land.

After she finished, she also described how Lin Ming drew up the foundation lines and symbols with such ease and fluidity. It wasn’t something that she was capable of doing.

“Being able to draw the foundation lines with soul force, but also not stopping and still being able to grasp the intricacies of the energy of each point… what is this?” Muyi said with surprise.

“Mm…” Muyi inhaled. He had always dreamt of performing this so called drawing by instinct, but one need millions, if not billions of attempts to even think of it. Did this young boy start practicing while he was still kicking around in his mother’s womb?

“You’re really sure that he is 15 or 16 years old?”

“Yes.” Qin Xingxuan replied with certainty.

“Marvelous, marvelous!” Muyi sighed, “Such a small age and he is already this accomplished. It truly is amazing; this is the first time in my life seeing such a heaven defying young talent! I thought I’d only hear of geniuses like this in legends. But I’m even more curious about who this boy’s master would be.” Muyi thought in vain. In his mind, he considered the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom, and even several nearby countries, but he could not think of any hidden inscription master who could compare with this elder.

Even though Muyi could not think of anyone, in terms of inscription knowledge he was considered the forefront expert in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, and even in neighboring countries he would be well compared to their own inscription masters. But compared to this mysterious elder, he could not say that he had any chance of winning!

Muyi said, “I cannot think of anyone who is capable of teaching such a talented disciple. But if I ventured a guess, then the young boy’s master might have come from some ancient clan.”

“Ancient clan?” Qin Xinghuan startled. Sky Spill Continent was vast, and had many thousands or millions of years of traditions of ancient clans. These clans had incomparably deep and profound heritages and legacies!

For instance, just the most recent clan of Sky Fortune Kingdom had established the Seven Profound Martial House. They were the Seven Profound Valleys. They likely had their own secret masters and legacies.

Twelve years ago, the Seven Profound Valleys' elders arrived at Sky Fortune Kingdom, and even the Imperial Family had to be respectful. Qin Xingxuan's master, Mister Muyi, was considered the top inscription master in the country, but to the large clans, he wasn't anything special.

Muyi said, "Xingxuan, if you see him next time, be sure to ask him to stay so that I can personally introduce myself. This youth isn't so simple. Even if he has a master that comes from some ancient clan, for him to have this degree of ability is simply heaven defying in this day and age. Also, be polite to him and treat him with respect. His master is a person of inconceivable skill, which the entire Sky Fortune capital cannot disrespect; nor afford to offend."

"Yes, Master."

…

…

…

As the day passed, Lin Ming tore off another page from the calendar. Lin Ming had been practicing inscriptions every day. Every sort of symbol and line and rune had been practiced god knows how many times, and each was thoroughly imprinted in his heart.

Using soul force day and night was very tiring to his spirit and mind, so his eyes were always red with exhaustion. His true essence had long been wrung dry. He was constantly like a lamp without any oil. But he had gained some benefits. Lin Ming discovered that besides the progress in his inscription technique, his perception had become increasingly sensitive.

Now he was still deboning in the Great Clarity Pavilion, but even if it was a second-level vicious beast, Lin Ming could easily perceive the entire structure of the beast, avoid the bones, and let his knife smoothly follow through the solid flesh of a second-level vicious beast. Lin Ming needed only an incense stick worth of time to completely finish!

At such a monstrous speed, the Great Clarity Pavilion's staff were astonished at first and didn't believe it, but after seeing it, they became numb to disbelief. Now in the Great Clarity Pavilion, Lin Ming had a much higher status. His work hours were optional and even rush hour was optional! His wages were no less than those of master chefs!

With such treatment, any employee would be satisfied. And although Lin Ming was privileged, he still kept deboning for two hours per day. It was also a form of practice to him; deboning was a good way to take advantage of the soul force utilization.

However, Lin Ming soon found himself not being able to work the two hours. There just weren't enough vicious beasts in the entirety of the Great Clarity Pavilion. Indeed, all of the storehouse's stocked goods were already sliced and prepped by Lin Ming. When Sister Lan, who was responsible for checking the kitchen daily, went to the ice storehouse, she saw that all of the vicious beasts had been turned into neat piles of meat and bone. Not only that, but each piece was uniform in size and marbling. Sister Lan was naturally speechless.

This young boy was simply a machine!

Finally, it was the last ten days of the first month. Lin Ming had prepared both his mind and the materials. It was time to start the inscription once again!

Chapter 15 – Overwhelming Symbol

Chapter 15 – Overwhelming Symbol

…

…

…

Today, Lin Ming had prepared as well as he possibly could; solely in the tracing of the lines and symbols, he was no less than those lofty masters!

Manipulating the Sky Wind Grass juice, Lin Ming opened both his hands and a single drop of emerald liquid flew into the air where it steadily remained.

Looking at this liquid green pearl, Lin Ming closed his eyes as his hands flashed and formed a series of seals. These movements had long ago been printed in his mind, and along with memories of the soul fragment, these complex signs were as instinctual as breathing.

With a deep breath, Lin Ming began. His ten fingers flowed like a branches in a storm, and they even collided with each other as his speed of seal formation was too fast. His fingers blurred as another drop of liquid from a different material flew into the air. With his soul force at full strength, Lin Ming rapidly formed the beautiful and mysterious inscription symbols. In order to preserve his soul force, Lin Ming had started working on another material before the first had finished!

In this high-intensity and highly complicated plan, Lin Ming's error rate was low extremely low.

When the inscription was half finished, Ming began to feel the strain.

When the inscription was two-thirds complete, Lin Ming felt that his soul force was reaching its end, and he began to revolve the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula.’

With that on his mind, the chance that a problem would arise also increased. Lin Ming clenched his teeth and pressed on. He still had to divide the several materials to use them to draw the final rune.

“Sky Worm Silk…has completed!” The tense Lin Ming finally let loose a breath of relief. Sky Worm Silk was what he lacked the most, he could now allow for failure here.

“There are five runes…” Lin Ming counted the number in his heart as his soul force reached the limit.

‘Four…Three…Two….”

“Success!”

Lin Ming finished the inscription at this moment. The sparkling runes shined and flashed for a brief moment as they coalesced into an inscription the size of a square inch. It hung there suspended in air.

Lin Ming had almost collapsed, but as he looked at this completed inscription floating in air, he felt nothing but absolute joy! This small inscription was like his precious child; he had spent a month of inhuman suffering and massive amounts of money to raise it up!

The elder had named this inscription the ‘Overwhelming Symbol.’ This title was a tad too vulgar and childish, but stemming from the respect that Lin Ming held for this elder in his heart, he did not change its name. It was the ‘Overwhelming Symbol!’

Lin Ming had bought fifteen of the cheapest symbol papers at one to two taels of gold per dozen. With just a slight bit of soul force, the ‘Overwhelming Symbol’ fell onto the symbol paper. Gold lines converged to form ancient runes on the symbol paper. The symbol paper truly was plain, and the overall effect made it look bland and unremarkable.

At the last minute of forming the symbol paper, Lin Ming changed the outwards design appearance with his soul force. It resembled a flame pattern.

This kind of design left on the inscription treasures would become a sign. His sign! Many inscription masters had their own personalized designs as a mark of their work.

Lin Ming decided on flames, as flames represented rebirth into nirvana.

Cultivating a martial path was a trial by fire. Pain was constant, and danger was ever present. Travelling down this path would burn one into ashes! Only those that have firm hearts and immeasurable wills would be able to be rebirthed through the flames, and become a dragon or phoenix that ascends like a god into the skies!

Lin Ming carefully received this precious symbol paper. He opened the window and the fresh air and bright sunlight sprinkled down on him and reflected on his bloodshot eyes. He was bone tired with exhaustion and wanted to go to sleep right away, but Lin Ming had an unprecedented sense of satisfaction.

Time left before the Seven Profound Martial House's exam – two months and ten days!

…

…

…

In the past five days Lin Ming had branded his last inscription onto the symbol paper. Thus, all his materials had been thoroughly exhausted. He had managed to altogether create four copies of the 'Overwhelming Symbol.'

Looking at these symbol papers, Lin Ming has an unforgettable sense of achievement. Now he wanted to sell these four symbol papers!

At the last trade fair, Master Baihong's engraved inscription had sold for 1500 taels of gold. Clearly this was affected by the renown of the inscription master. Lin Ming had not sold any inscriptions before so he was not famous or well known, but he was confident in his work. This inscription came from the Realm of the Gods! Its effect compared to that of Master Baihong's work was like the Heavens and Earth; there was simply no comparison.

In that elder's memory, the 'Overwhelming Symbol' was merely the most basic inscription, but it was enough to use on a superior piece of equipment, a third grade piece of equipment. If used on lower grade equipment, then the effect would increase by at least sixty percent!

Not only that, but the 'Overwhelming Symbol' also granted equipment an additional skill!

Some top tier inscription techniques can add additional skills to equipment. By concentrating soul force, it was possible to use these skills. They ranged from energy attacks, armor increasing shields, illusionary techniques, to demonic techniques and more!

Lin Ming's inscription, if engraved on a weapon, would give that weapon a skill called the 'instant violent strike.'

The small inscription rune was in fact a complex array. When the user concentrated a massive amount of soul force into the weapon, the inscription would absorb this energy, compress it to the limit, and then instantly erupt! In a close combat battle, this move was truly formidable in its lethality.

Lin Ming didn't actually believe his inscription was as amazing as the ones he recounted in the elder's memories. There was also definitely no way for a piece of equipment to achieve a 60% increase in power at his current level. As for that 'instant violent strike,' Lin Mind did not know if it actually would work because the inscription technique was too complex. After making the end product, all those runes and symbols were concentrated in that tiny inscription so it was difficult for even the creator to judge the ability of the end product. There were just too many possible structures, and a corresponding number of possible mistakes. In the worst case scenario the weapon might even blow up! As long as there was the tiniest of problems, the entire inscription would have to be sold at great discount.

Lin Ming finally had a night of full rest, and slept blissfully until the early morning. His soul force and energy were in peak condition. He asked Lin Xiaodong for some trade fairs and auction house addresses, and then departed with his symbol papers.

He had bought some new clothes included a hooded cape that covered his face. Although the trade fairs and auction houses always had a good reputation for safety, and wouldn't leak the identity of patrons, it was best to be careful. After all, if the four symbol papers were sold for any high price, then if that person were known, they might rob and kill them for their possessions.

Lin Ming first went to the official Sky Fortune City Auction Hall. There were many auction halls in Sky Fortune City, and there wasn't one that stood out among the rest, so he chose one with a slightly better reputation.

As long as these four symbol papers sold, he would be able to purchase the materials for medicine!

However as Lin Ming approached the auction house, he thought that it was just too simple.

Chapter 16 – Frustration

Chapter 16 – Frustration

…

…

…

The auction house had an extremely strict review process, in particular concerning the goods they sold; otherwise fakes and replicas would be manage to get through and the reputation of the auction house would suffer a loss. To an auction house, reputation was everything.

A middle-aged man greeted Lin Min; to be more exact, blocked him, and asked .”Sir, is there anything I can help you with?”

Lin Ming was wearing a clean and crisp robe and he looked like any other well-to-do citizen. However his height was shorter than an adult male by several inches. In addition, his voice had not yet fully matured, so it wasn’t possible to cover up the fact that he was a young boy of only 15 or 16 years.

Therefore Lin Ming simply said with his own voice, “I’m here for an appraisal of inscription runes.”

‘Oh?” The middle aged man looked at Lin Ming somewhat suspiciously. “Can I see your inscription?” In fact, this man’s manners were already very polite. A 15-16 year old coming into the auction house to appraise some inscriptions was already strange. The price frequently rose to over a thousand taels of gold. Most people would have well founded suspicions that this was a practical joke.

After Lin Ming pulled out the symbol paper, the middle aged man frowned as he noticed the shoddy quality of it. This was the most basic and cheap symbol paper that was available on the market at one or two taels of gold for a dozen. Although the cost of the symbol paper did not affect the quality of the inscription, it was still a sign of the inscription master's status. Naturally they would never use this kind of symbol paper! They would normally use high quality symbol paper that cost several taels of gold each, to show off the results of their inscription.

However there was a faint energy which emitted from the symbol paper and the middle aged man was able to determine that this was a complete and real product, not a practical joke. He looked at Lin Ming and asked, "Do you have some sort of certificate stating which inscription master created this?"

Lin Ming shook his head.

"Well alright, come with me."

The middle aged man led Lin Ming through the hallway to an appraisal room at the back of the auction house. The man in the appraisal chamber wore an unlined black garment, and looked to be a harsh grandfather in his 50's or 60's. Lin Ming also noted the sign in front of the man that wrote "Advanced Appraiser."

The black robed man took this symbol paper in hand and noted that the inscription was placed on inferior paper, but he didn't reveal any expression that indicated he was disgusted or skeptical. Instead, he maintained a tranquil and calm demeanor, and quietly slipped on a pair of white gloves and invested his full attention towards an earnest and practical appraisal of the work. This demonstrated that he was a true professional!

However the appraiser only just began when he raised his head, his face slightly more serious, and looked at Lin Ming. "If I'm not wrong, the one who created this inscription symbol, his strength should not exceed the third level of the body transformation stage?"

The inscription symbol would always carry a slight hint of the makers soul force. It was possible for an appraiser to judge the creators martial arts cultivation level through these traces. Since Lin Ming created the inscription paper, the soul force trace would naturally be weak, but since he practiced the overwhelming ‘True Primal Chaos Formula,’ the soul force was much thicker than the average martial artists. If the appraiser knew that the inscription was created by a mere boy at the first level of the body transformation stage, his chin would surely drop to the ground.

Lin Ming knew that there was no way to deny this, so he nodded.

The only man sharply inhaled, and then sighed, “To think there was such a talent within the young generation. A trivial little third level body transformation cultivation can draw an inscription symbol. It is shocking!”

Usually, the inscription masters tended to be of the older generation, and most were above the bone forging boundary. Many even broke through the pulse condensing boundary and some even at the pre-celestial boundary.

Perhaps this third level body transformation was just an inscription masters apprentice, and happened to get lucky and create a successful inscription. However this boy brought in four of the same inscription, which was truly amazing.

Lin Ming heard the old man’s praise and thought things were going well, but he didn’t expect the old man to change his mind. “It is a complete and real inscription symbol, but the creator is only an apprentice, therefore we are unable to identify the increase in strength it would provide or the integrity of the inscription. You must know that an apprentice’s soul force is generally limited in quantity and quality, and it is very difficult to complete the myriad and complicated inscription designs. Even If the symbol increased the strength by ten percent, if it cannot be placed onto superior equipment, then we cannot auction this as failed product would harm the auction houses reputation.”

Inscriptions were used only on superior equipment, because only superior equipment was sturdy and strong enough concentrate the soul force and energy of martial artists in battle. Since the inscriptions modified soul force, it needed to be at least that level.

Therefore the lowest quality goods that someone would place an inscription on were at least several thousand gold taels!

This equipment was not something the average person was able to obtain. Even the juniors of aristocratic families had to cultivate to at least the altering muscle or bone forging level to even be considered for having such a high quality weapon.

For instance, Wang Yigao had an excellent family background, but because his cultivation was low, even though he had used a fine blue sword, it did not necessarily mean it was a treasure. That blue sword was only two hundred taels of gold.

The number of times that you can engrave on a weapon was limited, essentially, it was only one time. After an inscription, another cannot be placed on. Thinking about it, who would spend several thousand taels of gold on a weapon, only to place on it an inscription of dubious origin?

Therefore the inscription market for apprentices was nonexistent.

Lin Ming had expected this result and said, “I only need to auction three, the last you can use for experiments.”

After the inscription is made, it is too difficult to test the result. Even the creator can only guesstimate its effectiveness.

When a martial artist purchased an inscription, he was basically gambling on his luck, so high level inscription masters were well received because they had the reputation to guarantee the effectiveness of their products. Very few people would purchase an unknown master’s inscriptions, much less an apprentice’s. It was just gambling with their own precious money!

The appraiser said, “Of course. However, the experiment needs to be done with your own equipment.”

Lin Ming suddenly turned silent. A weapon worth several thousand gold taels? He supposed it was impossible for the auction house to casually put up a weapon worth several thousand gold taels to test as an experiment.

If Lin Ming were an inscription master then things might have been different, because the masters have reputations and wouldn’t need have their inscriptions tested. Moreover, the auction house would be happy to be on good terms with such a figure and even provide their own weapons.

At Lin Mings moment of highest worth, he only had 800 taels of gold. Where would he get a weapon that was worth several thousand taels of gold to engrave an inscription on?

He did not bother arguing or saying anything else. He could have said that there was no way their equipment would have suffered a loss, but there was no reason to believe him, because the soul force on the inscription really was too weak.

So Lin Ming took his four symbol papers and turned around to leave the Sky Fortune official auction house.

…

…

…

“Sorry, but we need proof that the inscription association provides, or a signed notary provided to the inscription master…”

At the Sky Fortune City trade fair, the merchant had directly rejected Lin Ming after seeing his age.

This was a polite rejection. Afterwards Lin Ming went to several private shops and the attitudes of these people were even worse.

He tried the inscription transaction trading pavilion that was under the jurisdiction of the Trade Association. The store was opulent and luxurious with six floors, each filled with high class establishments and boasted an air of refinement. Everything was expensive nothing was cheap; the goods ranged from a few hundred to several thousand gold taels. Even the shopkeepers were needlessly arrogant. If a rich young master came, then they would be polite and offer tea, kind words, and never-ending bootlicking. But for the poor salesmen, they received nothing but a straight boot to the rear.

Some did not even bother saying anything, and just waved him away impatiently.

“Look kid, don’t make trouble here, you’re blocking my good business.”

“Hey you, this isn’t a place where a little boy should come to....oh, hey customer, what do you need! Come see...”

“Haha, child, don’t try to tease me here, I’ve already laughed today. This is just toilet paper! And you drew some small flames on this toilet paper. Did you think it was an inscription? Haha...”

Chapter 17 – Lan Yunyue

Chapter 17 – Lan Yunyue

…

…

…

…

In the span of an entire day, Lin Ming had visited two auction houses, a trade fair, and also five treasure trading pavilions that were set up by respectable families, and yet he hadn't found a buyer.

As he returned to the Great Clarity Pavilion, Lin Ming sighed. He hadn't expected that selling a few inscriptions would be so difficult.

However this was just a little setback. The dismissive taunts and jeers had no effect on Lin Ming, whos pain and suffering from cultivating martial arts had exceeded any psychological pain he would experience by several times. Even if it was Zhu Yan taunting him about Lan Yunyue, his poor family background, his lower cultivation, none of these could affect Lin Ming's heart of martial arts.

He placed away the symbol papers and began to practice the 'True Primal Chaos Formula.' Altough he had practiced the inscription techniques every day this month, he still managed to eek out some time to practice the 'True Primal Chaos Formula.' Now, with his hard work, the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' had already finished the entirety of the first level; his own martial arts cultivation was also at the peak of the first level of body transformation.

With the strength of nine stones and a fist that can shatter Iron Wood, this was proof he was at the peak of body transformations first level, strength training!

Nine stones was equivalent to 900 jins. This was the peak of body transformations first level. But the reality was Lin Ming's present strength was no less than a thousand jins. This was due to the influence that the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' had on his training, and not only that but his strength was increasing daily. Yet, Lin Ming was actually still stuck in the first level of body transformation.

After he circulated his soul force with the 'True Primal Chaos Formula,' Lin Ming began to focus on his understandings of bones. His own deboning time had already reached an extremely high degree of proficiency and speed; even a second-level vicious beast was not enough to satisfy his practice requests. Unfortunately, even at the Great Clarity Pavilion, level three vicious beasts were very rare. Lin Ming wanted to practice on these rare beasts but was unable to! So he thought of an idea, and began to instead use the flat back of the knife to debone!

Normally, someone who was deboning who would the sharpest knife they could, or even an axe or any other sharp instrument. Deboning would also often take the entirety of a day to finish a second level vicious beast. But Lin Ming actually used the very thick back of a knife to debone. It was absurdly difficult and impossible; the knife felt as if it were cutting into solid rock, and every inch required an extreme degree of effort and strength.

This was forcing Lin Ming to constantly be exhausting his physical ability to the limit while perceiving the skill.

Before, it took more time to eat a bowl of rice than to debone a second level vicious beast completely, but now two hours still wasn't enough time to finish. Even after he did, he was soaked in sweat.

Thankfully the results were still good and he neatly cut off the slabs of meat as he had before. If Great Clarity Pavilion knew that Lin Ming was finishing deboning these second level vicious beasts with just the back of a knife, they would not only check Lin Ming into the nearest hospital, but would also check themselves in!

After a night of practice, Lin Ming was weary to his bones. He had completely forgotten about the inscription matters and directly fell asleep.

…

..

…

After a night of deep rest, Lin Ming awoke before daybreak and headed to his secret place at the Zhou Mountains to practice his martial arts. With strike after strike, the sun began to rise into the sky. At this time, a young boy approached from the glade. He was a tall, healthy looking boy dressed in white. “Brother Lin, why did you ask me yesterday where to sell inscription symbols? Did you really finish engraving some?”

This boy was precisely Lin Xiaodong. Yesterday around this time, Lin Ming had asked him and he had answered without thinking. But after thinking about it more and more, he realized that there as no way that Lin Ming should have been able to create any inscriptions!

Although Lin Xiaodong did not have a deep understanding of inscription, he still knew it was impossible for Lin Ming to create a complete inscription symbol. It was likely some shoddy or half finished product, and if he brought something like that to the trade fair to sell, then the merchants would likely have had him beaten up for being some swindler.

Lin Ming smiled and nodded, “I finished some.”

Lin Xiaodong’s heart tightened, “You brought them to sell?”

“Mm. But I didn’t sell any.”

It was expected that he hadn’t sold any, these merchants weren’t fools. Lin Xiaodong sized up his friend with a bit of worry. His puppy dog eyes were filled with anxiety as he asked, “Brother Lin, you weren’t beat up were you?”

Lin Ming was stunned silent. This little brother of his truly had a wild imagination. He burst out laughing and clapped his friend on the shoulder, “I really did finish the inscription symbols, and I’m not some second hand swindler, why would I be beat up?”

As he said this he took out the four symbol papers which he had labored over the past month and showed them to Lin Xiaodong. He didn’t want him to worry over him.

However, as soon as Lin Xiaodong saw these four symbol papers, his face immediately stiffened in horror. The appearances of these symbol papers were truly…terrible too look at!

He guessed that Lin Ming’s inscriptions might be second rate, or even defective, but this was just too much! The paper was thick yellow; it just had the appearance of toilet paper that was used too many times. Only a fool would buy it. Lin Xiaodong had seen several symbol papers by inscription masters before and they were always on bright, clean sheets were shimmering colors.

Lin Xiaodong looked as if he had eaten spoiled porridge. He let out a dry smile. Oh brother of mine, sweet brother of mine! He did not have the nerve to embarrass Lin Ming, who was probably suffering. He could only think of the several hundred taels of material that had become over used toilet paper. Lin Xiaodong’s heart was in immediate pain. This really was a waste of money!

Lin Ming noticed Lin Xiaodong’s expression had changed, and he could guess what he was thinking at the moment. He simply put the symbol papers away. There just wasn’t any way he could adequately explain this to Lin Xiaodong in a way that he would understand.

“Brother Lin, I must say with your talent and effort, you will break through the pulse condensation period sooner or later. Why bother with this?” Lin Xiaodong decided to try the carrot approach to persuade his good friend. The stick obviously had not worked.

Lin Ming smiled and stayed silent. Lin Xiaodong wasn’t wrong. Even if he didn’t bother with inscription, it was only a matter of time until he reached the pulse condensation phase. Even the houtian phase or even the fabled xiantian phase wouldn’t be too difficult.

But cultivating the martial path was a daily struggle, and time waited for no man. If he didn’t improve his cultivation as fast as he could while he was young, it would only become increasingly difficult with age.

If he didn’t use special medicines or magical objects and only relied on his own diligent efforts, even if he had a solid foundation it would still take a massive amount of time. Time that Lin Ming could not afford to spend!

Therefore he needed to make money using the inscription technique and take as many shortcuts as he could.

He said, “Xiaodong, you head back first, I still have some matters to attend to.”

“Matters? Brother Lin, you aren’t thinking of selling these symbol papers are you?”

Lin Ming laughed and said with a smile, “Don’t worry about it too much, I already know how things are.” As he said this, Lin Ming had already passed several dozens of meters into the distance.

“F*ck!” Lin Xiaodong saw Lin Ming had disappeared and could only curse at his back. He knew Lin Ming had decided on his course and he couldn’t change it. Brother of mine, oh brother of mine, please be careful!

Although Lin Ming’s truly had the firm will and aspirations, some things were beyond even the control of the heavens…

…

…

…

Although there were many shops in Sky Fortune City, the number that had the qualifications to sell inscription symbols weren’t many. Including the auction houses and trade fairs, altogether there were less than thirty.

Within these, Lin Ming had already visited most of them, and without and exception had been rejected from all of them. It was just that he was only an apprentice. Occasionally an apprentice would luck out and create a complete product, but no one would want to waste their precious weapons on such a dubious product!

Lin Ming was a tad disappointed by this setback, but it didn't affect him. In his mind he knew that he only needed some more time and he would see the fruits of his labor.

"You want to sell us this inscription on consignment? Are you kidding me little boy? You're so young and yet you want to do something so dishonest. This simply cannot be sold. Go, go and do not delay me in doing business. You're blocking the way."

The storekeeper of Hundred Treasure Hall impatiently waved him away. The manners of private shop owners were always worse than the more professional auction houses. Lin Ming didn't take this too heart, but as he turned around he saw a familiar face. It was an extremely beautiful face, but one he was also reluctant to see.

Not too far from him were two girls wearing light yellow dresses. One of them was the one who had missed their promised meeting a few months ago, and had accompanied Zhu Yan to go to the Seven Profound Martial House, Lan Yunyue.

Lan Yunyue had also just arrived, and she looked down at the four sloppy symbol papers in Lin Ming's hand, and thought about the words that the storekeeper and just said. Her dewy complexion changed.

Lan Yunyue had not seen inscription symbol papers before, but even if she had she would not connect those fabled objects to these rough papers in Lin Ming's hand. She guessed Lin Ming was reselling goods...some goods didn't cost much, and they would try to buy up such things and sell them at the more common, lower-end markets for the price difference. This kind of work had low profits, and above all, it wasn't work one could hold their head high to.

Also…Lin Ming's family was not rich, and he had to support the expenses of cultivating martial arts along with daily expenses for living. He must have been short on money recently, and therefore tried whatever he could…

With that thought there, Lan Yunyue sighed. She did not know if she should say anything in this situation. She felt as if anything she said might possibly injure Lin Ming's dignity, but she also couldn't pretend that she had not seem him.

By now the storekeeper had seen Lan Yunyue, and his ugly mug immediately smiled in welcome. From the past to now, it was as if he were a completely different person. "This young lady, what goods were you looking to purchase? Yesterday you bought a sword; was it easy to use? Oh yes, and how about that young master that accompanied you yesterday, did you come together? I don't see him."

It was obvious the storekeeper's mention of young master was referring to Zhu Yan. Seeing that smile on the storekeepers face, Lin Ming also knew that the last time Zhu Yan had come here with Lan Yunyue, the storekeeper had made a fortune.

Lan Yunyue didn't think that the storekeeper would mention Zhu Yan at this time, which only made the situation more awkward and tense. She wanted to explain that she hadn't done anything with Zhu Yan, but she held the words on the tip of her tongue. Her face paled and she steeled herself. She was not a little girl anymore, and she had to be clear about these things. Sooner or later she would marry into the Zhu Family, and although she did not like Zhu Yan, but for her goals, she had caved into her destiny and had chosen the path of betrayal…

After a little more tense awkwardness, Lan Yunyue asked in a low voice, "It's been awhile…have you been well?"

"Alright." Lin Ming replied calmly. What was in the past was in the past, he did not wish to dwell on these matters.

Alright? If you were truly alright, then how could you be there? A fifteen year old boy suffering from the pain of cultivation, while also having to worry about his own livelihood, and experiencing the derision of others…was this really okay?

Lan Yunyue knew Lin Ming's stubbornness, but seeing his appearance like this, she could only urge, "You had not thought to turn back…?"

"Turn back? Turn back to where? Ha-ha, are you telling me to give up on martial arts?"

"I am not saying that. I am only saying that cultivating martial arts is dangerous to the body. If you don't have enough money to buy medicine, then it is easy to suffer permanent disability…" Lan Yunyue sighed, and her gaze fell on the symbol papers in Lin Ming's hand. "Money you make from reselling some small goods is not enough to support the needs of martial arts cultivation. I do not think that you have suffered from anything yet…I know that you are unwilling to listen but I do not want to think that later in life the only thing you'll be doing is lying down on a bed."

Hearing her heartfelt words, Lin Ming smiled and said, "Thank you for the advice, but I won't give up. I will never give up."

He lifted his hand and pointed at the beautiful burning flame image on the symbol paper and said, "The path of the martial artist is like this flame. Practicing the martial arts will only cause pain. The dangers are countless and the road is filled with obstacles. Everyone who walks down it will eventually turn to ash, but the true martial artist will be reborn from these ashes. Even if I was only a small and weak moth, I will walk into the flames without hesitation. I will fight my destiny for a one in a million chance that I will experience my own samsara and be reborn into a flaming phoenix. And even now, I am no longer a moth…"

Lin Ming spoke those words with a faint smile. He put away his symbol papers and quietly departed, leaving only the silhouette of his lonely, but proud back.

Lin Ming left the Hundred Treasures Hall like a moth to the light. This was his heart of martial arts. This was his Dao. He will persevere until the day he reaches nirvana. He will not rest until that day that he would soar into the skies.

Chapter 18 – Sold

Chapter 18 – Sold

…

…

…

Lin Ming's last stop was the Red Maple auction house. Lin Ming did not entertain any ideas of success, and as he thought, the auction house's beautiful auctioneer had come out herself to turn him down.

However this beautiful lady felt that Lin Ming had been treated a bit unfairly, so she gave him two suggestions. First, he should try the Inscription Association. Perhaps they would be interested in purchasing his symbol papers for collection or educative uses. Normally an apprentice level inscription symbol was relatively rare because of the low success ratio, but Lin Ming had four, so it was even more so. Secondly, he could try heading to the city square and peddling his goods there.

Lin Ming had not gone to the Inscription Association before. He did not have the credentials of a genuine inscription master, and even a top tier inscription master would be unable to see the mysteries behind Lin Ming's inscriptions. The difference between Sky Fortune Kingdom's inscription technique and those of the Realm of the Gods was simply too large.

The only thing Lin Ming could do was to go to the city square center, and hope to sell his symbol papers there. Unfortunately, it was impossible to get a decent price.

Although the city square was a lower tier trading center, it was still an official establishment propped up by the government. In here there were a variety of goods that could be sold on commission. The trading center would take in five percent, but the reputation of the center was well known, and there wasn't a fear of being cheated, so many people chose to do that.

The quality threshold to enter the trading center was low; as long as it was genuine and not a knockoff, then any goods could be sold at reasonable prices. Lin Ming's inscription symbols were naturally the real deal, this no one could deny, but it was just an apprentice's work so the value was low.

After the trading center's appraiser examined his goods, the fat man offered him a starting price of 100 gold taels.

Hearing this number, Lin Ming could only be stunned into silence. Your sister! What is this!

The materials for the inscription cost 7-800 gold taels, and the trading center offered 100 gold taels for one. If he sold it at 100 gold taels, Lin Ming would only receive 400 gold taels!

"So do you want to sell or not?"

Lin Ming clenched his teeth, "Yes, I will sell. I'll sell two."

Lin Ming had recently spent all his money. If it weren't for the large salary and good conditions of the Great Clarity Pavilion, he would have been starving on the streets.

Even if it was selling at a loss, he could accept selling two. As for the other two he would just wait a period. His heart wasn't willing to sell the last two at 100 taels of gold each.

"Leave your address behind" The fat appraiser said. The trading center was responsible for the sale of commission items only. Only when people have bought the item would they be paid. For Lin Ming, these two inscription symbols also didn't have a certainty to sell.

“A low rental is one gold tael, a medium rental is three gold taels, and a high rental is five gold taels for a lease of one month. If after that time period the item is unable to sell, the item goes off the shelf and the money is not refunded.” The fat appraiser said.

F*ck! Even this required money, his luck was really dog sh*t. He turned his head and thought about it. The high rent was obviously the best, followed by the medium rent. The low rental was probably some shady corner where no one would see his items.

Lin Ming fished out five gold taels from his pockets, and slapped three gold taels on the able, “I’ll take the medium rent.”

To think that matters would come to this. The inscription was without a doubt no worse than a masters, but now it sold for 100 taels of gold only, and he also had to pay five percent taxes along with a rental fee! And it also depended on whether someone bought his items!

Lin Ming sighed. It really was difficult being unknown.

He placed the two gold taels back into his pocket and forced a smile. Let alone buying any rare medicines to cultivate his martial arts, he would be lucky if there was enough food to put on the table.

Without the medicines and without any other materials, Lin Ming did not feel right asking his good brother Lin Xiaodong to borrow money. Therefore he stayed in the Zhou Mountains and practiced the “True Primal Chaos Formula”. The days passed one by one like this.

Already seven days had gone.

The city square trading center had always been a bustling place. Some people with good judgment would come here and window shop for some rare goods that were misplaced at a lesser price. It was a rewarding feeling to find a hidden treasure!

However these people would not normally look at medicinal herbs or inscription symbols. It was just too difficult to see their quality, so they often skipped these items.

Because of this hundreds and thousands of customers had come, but Lin Ming's inscription symbol calmly stayed on the shelf, as nobody asked for it.

But today, a tall, brawny man with a large upper body came strolling into the trading center. His whole body was wrapped with thick muscles and he had a rugged appearance. He was simply an intimidating man. He carried a four foot long sword on his back, and walked proudly like a tiger that was looking for trouble.

The person had cold eyes. His body was crisscrossed with scars; he was a man who had experienced countless life or death experiences. This man was a true killer; those little boys who trained at the Martial House simply could not compare with his presence.

Seeing this person, the fat appraiser shrank. This man was at the fifth level of body transformation! A powerhouse at the peak of bone forging!

This person was only a step away from the pulse condensation period. But this one step had too many people who were unable to cross over in their entire lives.

"What does the customer wish to buy?" The fat appraiser stood up and greeted.

The man did not say a single word and just looked around, so tactfully the appraiser also remained silent.

The man looked around the store and it didn't seem like anything caught his interest, until suddenly, he pointed at two yellow slips of paper that were pressed between panes of glass. "This is the inscription symbol?"

"Yes."

"It's 100 gold taels?" The man said with a hint of surprise. The usual inscription symbol cost more than a 1000 gold taels. 100 gold taels really was cheap.

The storekeeper said truthfully, “This is the product of an inscription apprentice. His cultivation level is only at the third level of body transformation. The increased strength it offers is probably only up to ten percent.”

“Ten percent…” The man frowned. This really was a low number. But alas, he could not afford to purchase inscription symbols worth more than 1000 gold taels.

This heroes name was Tie Feng. His background was common, and his salary was dependent on what the army provided for him. He had to provide for his elderly parents along with supplying his own medicine, so he could not spend any large amount of gold. Not even 1000 gold taels, but even 100 was a pretty hefty price.

One month ago, Tie Feng had accompanied the armed forces on an expedition and had taken the head of the enemy leader, who was also at the bone forging stage! He took his sword as the spoils of war. This sword was a treasure of the human-step!

The army’s rules were that treasures earned were one’s own. Like this, Tie Feng obtained a treasured sword. However, the sword had been damaged; the swords tip had broken off.

This incomplete treasure could only display a limited effect. When the martial artist concentrated his soul force in the weapon, because the sword was incomplete, the combat strength was also lowered.

Moreover, Tie Feng was also disappointed that the sword did not have an inscription symbol, so its strength as even lower by a level.

Tie Feng did not think of engraving an inscription on it, as he was unable to afford the high price, and also because the sword was damaged so one could say it was unworthy of something like an inscriptions symbol. But seeing this inscription symbol from an apprentice, he began to see the appeal of it.

Generally a symbol that increased the strength by 30% would take about 1500 gold taels. But this only increased a weapon by ten percent, so the price was only 100 gold taels. The ratio of effectiveness to cost was high, but more importantly, he could afford it!

Tomorrow was the third round of the army's martial arts tournament. His next opponent was a pretty difficult one. If he could raise his sword strength by just a bit, then his chances of winning would be much higher.

The tournament was required by all martial artists within thirty years of age. If one had a great result, they would obtain great rewards, or even a promotion in military rank!

Tie Feng's military exploits had already accumulated throughout the years. If he showed great results this time, he might even be raised to captain of ten thousand men. Moreover he wanted the rewards. Ten years ago his mother had picked herbal medicines so he could continue practicing his martial arts and had fallen off a cliff and broken both her legs. She had been confined to a bed since. Tie Feng swore to the heavens that he would buy the rare medicine Black Jade Paste for his mother. Black Jade Paste had the ability to heal broken bones if set properly. With it, he would be able to cure both his mother's legs, and she would be able to walk again! But the price of this rare medicine was 5000 gold taels. To the him now, it was simply an unimaginable figure.

With this in mind, Tie Feng must grasp victory with his own hands! Tomorrow was the third day of the tournament, and even Marshal Qin Xiao would attend in person. He was the number one figure in the land! There was no way he could lose with so much on the line!

For his family, for his mother!

Tie Feng clenched his teeth and said to the storekeeper, "This inscription symbol, I'll take it!"

…

"No way! Somehow, you managed to get back 95 taels of gold?" Lin Xiaodong looked at the banknote in Lin Mings hand and couldn't believe it was real. He couldn't say what he thought in his mind, that some pitiful fool and spent 95 gold taels to purchase a piece of toilet paper.

“It’s 92 gold taels.” Lin Ming said. The city squares trading center was very quick in terms of money. The next day after the purchase they had handed over Lin Ming his profit. It was originally 100 gold taels, and after taking out five percent, and three gold taels for the rent, there was 92 gold taels left.

An inscription symbol that should have had a minimum value of 1000 taels of gold only sold for 92. It really dumbfounded Lin Ming that the person who bought it profited so, but it was true that those who bought them took the risks.

90 taels of gold was not enough to buy any sort of rare medicine. It was only enough to buy the common kind that cured wounds. Lin Ming shrugged and went to the medicine shop to look for some materials.

What he didn’t know was that at this time in the armor grounds, there was a tournament of unmatched pomp and grand that was occurring, the grand assembly of martial artists!

…

At the Ten Mile grounds, wearing heavy iron armor under the blazing sun, ten thousand soldiers stood in a tight square formation. If one simply approached them they would feel the aura of war, as if they were drowning in some ancient battlefield as the god of death was galloping towards them. These were the Sky Fortune’s Kingdom’s most superb warriors. Even picking out one randomly, it wasn’t a joke to say that they could fight against ten other warriors!

Opposite of these soldiers were rows of seats. At the center of this sat a man wearing golden armor. Although the thick hairs at his temple were already greying, his expression was bright, and his eyes were sharp like a falcon. He gave a feeling of infinite power, a hero among heroes. This was the man whose strength had swept away the Eastern Sun Country 80 years ago, Marshal Qin Xiao!

His presence here showed how important this tournament was. The Qin family also came in attendance, including Qin Xingxuan and her master, Mister Muyi. Muyi was already 100 years old. His cultivation had reached the middle stage of houtian. He was also one of Sky Fortune highest masters, and was an inscription master. Even the King of Sky Fortune Kingdom had to treat him with respect.

Besides the Qin family, there were also thousands of other military officials.

Chapter 19 – Muyi’s Doubts

Chapter 19 – Muyi’s Doubts

…

…

…

The Sky Fortune Kingdom held martial arts in high esteem, especially in the military. A tournament would be held every three years, for the selection of talents into higher positions, and to raise the fighting spirit of the martial warrior.

The requirements for this tournament were that one had to be less than thirty years old and had achieved at least the third level of body transformation. Thousands of competitors would enter in, and after several tests and three rounds, only fifty would remain.

Now the third and final round of the competition was beginning. The competitors had gone through their rounds, and soon there would be only fifty remaining.

This was the last battle. The contestants would put forth all their hidden abilities and fight with all their might! The stage would fill with the aura of a raging fire as each man made their last stand!

However the start of the competition had not caused the higher ups to pay much attention. The competitors on the field so far either had low strength, or too much of a disparity between them. It had reached the twentieth round so far and there hadn’t been any rousing fights. All Qin Xiao cared about so far were the results.

The competition now had two sides. One was the son of a general, a handsome 29 year old man at the peak of bone forging. The past few years this man has gone on numerous missions and earned many medals and awards for his service. His strength had been strengthened by these events, and in his possession were even two treasures; a saber and a suit of armor. The saber also had an engraving on it from an inscription master; its strength was no small matter!

But on the other side was a birth soldier of humble origins. His name was Tie Feng. His talent wasn't outstanding, but he practiced diligently to the point it left one breathless. He was fearless in battle; not even the threat of death could cause him to waver. He had killed many enemies and earned himself many merits, even more so than the general's child! Now, Tie Feng was also at the peak of bone forging.

It was rare for two soldiers to have such a similar and high cultivation at their age. After slaughtering their enemies in the battlefield, in the future it was possible that they would enter the pulse condensation period and become pillars of the country!

As the referee announced the two competitors, a silver emblazoned general smiled with happiness and gratification. The one going on stage was his son!

"Haha, old man Li, your son really did you proud this time." Qin Xiao smiled as he said this. This silver emblazoned general had once been under his command and they were old friends.

"Commander is too polite. This poor son of mine has grown up with many rare medicines and still hasn't shown much promise; he really isn't making an effort to succeed." Although the silver emblazoned general said this with deprecation, he couldn't conceal his smile. He was very satisfied and proud of his son.

"Mm, this Tie Feng has had very good results, but he will find it difficult to win today."

Qin Xiao said so because of the difference in martial skills and the disparity in rare equipment.

The silver emblazoned general's son had two rare treasures, and they also had the engraving of an inscription master to bolster their strength. This Tie Feng came from a humble background; naturally he wouldn't have such things.

This battle didn't seem fair, but Sky Fortune Kingdom's tournaments have always been so. Treasures and equipment were considered part of a soldier's inherent strength! In the midst of the battlefield, because of the disparity in equipment, if you were cut down by the enemy, could you then complain that it was unfair?

It was impossible for the army to supply each soldier with rare equipment, thus is if a soldier wanted to prepare, then their family background also became a part of their strength, and even an important part.

When Tie Feng came on stage, he drew out his four foot sword. Qin Xiao turned to Muyi who was sitting beside him, "Mister Muyi, is that Tie Feng's sword also a treasure?"

Muyi stroked his beard and nodded, "Treasure indeed, but it is damaged."

"Oh, damaged?" After Muyi said that, Qin Xiao also saw that the sword missed the tip. It really was a damaged sword.

Muyi said, "Damaged equipment is of course worse than a whole one. Not only that but it is Tie Feng's only treasure, whereas Li Qi has two. Their two levels of cultivation may be similar, but Tie Feng's martial skill manual is inferior to Li Qi's'. This battle, Tie Feng will lose.

Qin Xiao said, "Although he will lose, that this Tie Feng managed to get this far with a damaged sword is also amazing. If in this next battle he can manage to take twenty moves, I might promote into the armies martial hall. Xingxuan, take a good look at this battle; you too will enter the fifth layer of body transformation. Although you practice a specialized martial skill for women, all creatures are the same, so if you watch carefully it will help you."

Qin Xiao's last few words were to Qin Xingxuan. She politely nodded and said, "Yes, grandfather."

As soon as the referee commenced the start of the fight, that man named Li Qi rushed forwards with several fierce strikes. He hoped to end the battle as soon as possible. He had the advantage in every aspect! The quicker he finished this, the better!

He began to utilize the secret skill passed down through the Li family, the 'Five Sacred Mountains Saber Art'! This kind of swordsmanship was overwhelming as if a mountain were falling down upon you. Each slash and thrust was accompanied by an incomparably imposing sense of power. It was able to instantly overwhelm anyone of a lesser cultivation level. Even with an equal cultivation, it was difficult to defend against this strike that crushed down on you like innumerable mountains. Most would just succumb to the demolishing heavy attack.

As soon as Li Qi wielded his saber, the air filled with the whistling of the wind, as if an entire orchestra were playing a battle song. The saber in his hand was 500 jins; it was the perfect combination to display the overwhelming power of the 'Five Sacred Mountains Saber Art!' If the enemy's weapon quality was less, then the weapon would simply break apart!

Tie Feng saw Li Qi's come chopping down and his eyes hardened, his complexion changing. He knew of Li Qi's secret move. He sunk his waist and steadied his legs. With both hands gripping the broken sword, his body erupted with a flood of turbulent true essence that poured into the blade!

Facing Li Qi's overwhelming strike, he could only meet him head on with all of his strength!

But as Tie Feng poured his true essence into the sword, his heart gave a slight skip. The true essence was flowing as if...as if it were much smoother than before!

Tie Feng had already had this sword for several months. Before now, when he poured his true essence into the blade, it was like pouring water into a drainage ditch. The sword couldn't absorb much true essence, and in fact wasted a lot. But this time the blade was sucking up his true essence like an eddying current. The smoothness of absorption was incomparable, and there wasn't a single feeling of waste!

How can it be like this?

Tie Feng didn't have any time to think with Li Qi's saber coming down on him, so he simply cried out and cut his blade upwards!

With his common low-grade army martial skill 'Total Annihilation Strike', he met Li Qi's secret high-tier martial skill passed down through his family, the 'Five Sacred Mountains Saber Art!' Their blades collided any a loud explosion filled the air. The collision of true essence erupted into the air, and the floor of the area was smashed apart. Li Qi was forced backwards three or four feet, but Tie Feng was also forced back a few steps!

Evenly matched!

Tie Feng gasped and looked at the blade in his hand, his face filling with color of disbelief. He had never fought before with Li Qi before, and had only heard of him. After that strike now, he finally realized how fearful this man truly was! Before, he would have suffered some light wounds, not how he had managed to keep that saber of his in check!

He knew with absolute certainty that it was not his own strength that increased, but this sword of his had changed…was it because of the inscription symbol from yesterday?

Tie Feng did not understand exactly how inscriptions worked, but knew that they could strengthen weapons. Tie Feng thought they might increase the sharpness of the blade, but after testing it out yesterday on several trees he did not feel anything different, so he had been disappointed. He had never realized that the inscription technique used true essence to enhance the strength of the weapon!

Was this really the inscription symbol of an apprentice? How could it be so fierce? Although he did not understand the pricing of most inscriptions, in his heart he absolutely knew that with such strength and such a powerful effect, there was no way that this inscription could be bought with only 100 gold taels!

With just a collision, Li Qi had been struck back down to reality. This man had taken his saber strike with that broken blade and had come out even…perhaps even higher! This man…was terrifying!

“Good!” Qin Xiao praised, “The ordinary army martial skill was able to keep off Li Qi’s ‘Five Sacred Mountain Saber Skill’ with a broken blade. This Tie Feng is good! Very good! Mister Muyi, what do you think?”

Muyi wrinkled his brow and was at a loss for words. Although he and Qin Xiao had about the same level of cultivation, he was also an inscription master, so his understanding of treasures naturally exceeded Qin Xiao. In that brief strike a moment ago, he clearly saw that Tie Feng’s broken blade was not any less amazing than Li Qi’s saber! And that was because the true essence that poured from that blade had even shocked him!

How could it be like this? Looking at the damaged blade, he could see that it wasn’t a high grade treasure.

Could it be because of an inscription symbol?

Chapter 20 – Inscription Skill

Chapter 20 – Inscription Skill

…

…

…

"Bang!"

As Mister Muyi was thinking, Tie Feng and Li Qi collided yet again in another dazzling shower of sparks. Both of them were violent and vicious warriors; each of their moves was met head on with another! But Tie Feng relied on a broken sword to evenly match Li Qi, and even the brilliance of the true essence that burst from his sword exceeded Li Qi's saber by far!

"!"

In the next clash, Li Qi made a careless mistake and was scratched by Tie Feng's sword. Although Li Qi's armor was also a rare treasure, the opposition's sword contained a dangerous true essence that pervaded and drilled through his body. Li Qi's face instantly turned ash white as he almost spit a mouthful of blood!

Even Qin Xiao noticed that the sword was strange. He looked and Muyi and said, "It looks to me like I underestimated that sword. What rank of treasure would it be in the human-step?"

Muyi replied, "It definitely is a lower rank treasure within the human-step…" He tapped his fingers against his arm rest as he pondered what the possible cause was. At this moment, Qin Xingxuan who had been carefully observing the battle, opened her mouth and said, "Master, perhaps on this treasure was engraved a symbol by a great inscription master?"

Muyi said, “I also suspect this. I was thinking which master’s skills this could belong to. Even if the sword were already damaged to this state, for it to be able to command such power…”

As they talked amongst themselves, the fight on the stage was reaching its finale. Li Qi had been injured and could no longer hold back anything else. It was time to use sixth type of the ‘Five Sacred Mountains Saber Skill.’ He had just learned this skill and was saving it as his killer move in the final match, but right now he had no choice but to use it otherwise he would suffer defeat.

Li Qi crossed his saber on his chest, and the true essence within him began to rumble as he said, “Tie Feng, I acknowledge your strength, you are a true master! With your ordinary martial skills you have pushed me to the point of hurting my pride and have me use my strongest blow. But it ends now! Get ready to meet my final strike! The black dragon will descend from the mountains!”

Li Qi cried out as he poured the entirety of his true essence into his saber. The black saber suddenly shined with a brilliant and haughty orange light. Li Qi lifted the saber high up above his heads and aimed at Tie Feng, then slashed downwards in a fierce divide! At that moment, several horrifying and faint shades emerged in the air. This was the claws of the black dragon!

“He’s already managed to form the black dragon’ shades. This Li Qi is truly accomplished in the Li Family’s saber arts. Tie Feng will find it impossible to resist this strike!”

As the black dragon rushed towards him, Tie Feng knew that this was Li Qi’s strongest move. Although the black dragon contained an energy that would frighten most warriors, at this moment Tie Feng felt nothing in his heart but an incomparable calm. Without the slightest hint of fear, he gripped his sword with both hands. He could feel the thick fighting intention from the sword as if it were an old friend.

F*ck your mom! You think you’ve won but I will be the winner!

Tie Feng's heart abandoned all needless thoughts. He let out a tremendous roar that cracked the air and compressed every last ounce of remaining true essence into his sword. The true essence in the blade had been compressed to its very limit! At this time it suddenly erupted with an overwhelming strength!

A dazzlingly bright light emitted from all degrees as a volcanic true essence erupted from that sword. It turned into a brilliant rainbow that shot forward like a blazing meteor straight into the black dragon's shade.

Overwhelming all opposition, overwhelming all enemies, overwhelming all creation.

This was the skill of the 'Overwhelming Rune' – Instant Violent Strike!

"Bang!"

There was a huge explosion and the inconceivable occurred. The black dragon shade had been cut in half by Tie Feng's blade! Li Qi was flung offstage upside down like a rag doll as he spit blood!

Qin Xiao's eyes lit as he saw this scene. True essence had condensed into reality! How was this possible?

That bright light was clearly true essence, but to use true essence like that required at least the pulse condensation period for martial artists to use. Tie Feng was only at the bone forging boundary, so how?

At this time on the field, as soon as Li Qi had been struck off stage, Tie Feng collapsed to his knees. His true essence had been completely spent. He supported himself with this sword as he kneeled. Both eyes gazed reverently at the flames that were traced from the inscription symbol. This symbol...did it help him itself?

He held out his hand and gently stroked the one inch wide flame inscription. A stream of fighting spirit continually transmitted from the inscription, and Tie Feng felt a very close, almost familial bond with it.

The referee hopped on stage and announced Tie Feng's victory. This was a stunning upset! The talented and rising star Li Qi had been defeated by Tie Feng!

Qin Xiao looked deep at Tie Feng, and said to Muyi, "It seems I was right just now. How did the true essence change shape? How did Tie Feng do this? It likely wasn't some martial skill."

"It appears so!" Muyi took a deep breath. His eyes showed a trace of shock. He said, "If I'm not wrong, then that is a skill of the inscription symbol. The inscriptions could change the flow of true essence and send out skills....in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, such techniques have been nearly all lost..."

"Skill of the inscription?" Qin Xiao was stunned. He did not completely understand inscription skills, but he had seen them before. Eighty years ago when he commanded the army to fight the Eastern Sun country, he had fought their generals and seen the skills of the inscription symbols at that time.

To think that after a period of eighty years, he would see it once again! He thought on this and then said to a soldier, "Pass down the order, have Tie Feng come to see me."

"Yes!"

...

Tie Feng had not thought that Marshal Qin would ask to see him personally. This was truly the greatest of honors! In ordinary circumstances, the military officers did not have the qualifications to see Marshal Qin directly.

Although he had passed through countless life and death situations, but as soon as he saw the marshal, an extremely heavy wave of pressure forced him to kneel. He said, "Tie Feng greets the marshal."

"Stand up." Qin Xiao waved. "I called you here to ask you a question. Where did your sword come from?"

“Reporting to the marshal, three months ago it was taken from the enemy after a battle.”

“Oh? Let me have a look.”

“Yes.” Tie Feng presented his sword. Qin Xiao flicked a finger on the blade as a clear sound rang in the air. Thought it was long, he could tell there was a trace of disharmony.

The sword was good, but it was broken!

Qin Xiao showed the sword to Muyi.

Muyi held the sword in his hands and locked his gaze onto the flame engraving. He reached out a hand and touched the inscription. He closed his eyes as he perceived the soul force.

Muyi stood still for a very long time. He had not said a single word but Qin Xiao patiently waited.

After a good period of time passed, Muyi finally opened his eyes. He turned and let Qin Xingxuan hold it. It was impossible for her to tell anything from it, but he only wanted her to be able to feel this master’s work.

Qin Xingxuan held the sword to her body and let her soul force sink into the flame engraved symbol. Because she was so focused, her pair of elegant eyebrows couldn’t help but gently twitch.

“How is it?” Muyi asked Qin Xingxuan.

Qin Xingxuan replied, “Xingxuan’s talent is too poor. I only sensed that it was full of incomparably mysterious symbols and lines. It should stem from the hand of a master.”

Muyi said, “It’s normal to not be able to tell. After the inscription is finished, the secret symbols and runes will be hidden in the treasure. It is difficult to see, especially with an inscription this complex and intricate. It is startling, but only if there were more than I could found out more secrets.

After Muyi said that, Tie Feng said, “Reporting to the marshal, Tie Feng purchased this inscription symbol at the shop. There were two for sale, but regrettably I only purchased one. If Master Muyi has a need, I shall go to the shop to purchase another.”

“Mm? Qin Xiao startled. “You bought this inscription? It wasn’t originally on the sword?”

“Yes. I personally engraved it yesterday.”

Muyi heard Tie Feng’s words and was immediately excited. He asked, “Where did you buy it at?”

“The city square.”

“City square?” Muyi paused. In his impression, the goods there were at most one or two hundred gold taels. How would they sell an inscription symbol, moreover, with Tie Feng’s family background, how could he afford it?

Therefore Muyi said with some doubt, “Your family is ordinary as far as I know. How did you afford such an expensive inscription symbol?”

Tie Feng hesitated and then said truthfully, “This is... at the time I purchased it, it was marked at 100 gold taels. In the end I was just able to afford this...”

“One hun-... how much was it? The usually calm Muyi’s eyes widened like saucers and he panted. “100 gold taels!? This sold at 100 gold taels!?!?”

Chapter 21 – ‘Inscription Apprentice’ Symbol?

Chapter 21 – ‘Inscription Apprentice’ Symbol?

…

…

…

Tie Feng had not expected Muyi to react in such a big fashion. He said, “Yes, it was 100 gold taels. The city squares storekeeper said that it was an apprentice who made it…”

“Apprentice?! Like hell!” Muyi was surprised, but thought this was impossible for an apprentice inscriptionist. It should be that the storekeeper made an error. But who would be so stupid and wasteful to just throw away gold like this. It really was a miscarriage of justice to take something of a great inscription master that was worth several thousand gold taels and to sell it like some common cabbage.

“Lead me to this place!”

“Yes, sir.”

Then, Mister Muyi took Qin Xingxuan along with him, and under Tie Feng’s directions, they rode a horse drawn carriage straight to the city square.

The horse drawn carriage of the Qin estate might not be known by everyone in Sky Fortune City, but most recognized the four snow white horses that drew it. As they passed the streets, pedestrians stopped to watch them, and stood aside as the carriage drove past; this was the respect given to Marshal Qin.

…

The bright summer afternoon brought several hints of laziness with it; it made a person's whole body weak and languid and not wanting to move. In the city square's trading center, the fat storekeeper that had received Lin Ming before, was sitting in a rocking chair at the entrance. He lay down with a leafy fan covering his face, and was in the midst of falling asleep.

Today's business was a bit slow, so the fat man was considering closing a bit earlier this afternoon. But at this moment, he heard a clear hoof beat that woke him up.

He opened his eyes uncomfortably, and was thinking of reprimanding these people. Did they not know that horses were not allowed in the city square?

However, as turned towards the sound, he saw immediately noticed the four snow white horses, each the highest breed of thoroughbreds, and also the golden shield symbol. He nearly almost rolled out of his chair.

"It's the Martial Quarters horse drawn carriage!"

The fat storekeeper hurried to stand. Why would the Martial Quarters come to the city square?

He was wondering about this, but then was astonished as this carriage swiftly came to a halt in front of his own entrance. My god...what is this...the master of the carriage was coming into his own shop?

When the carriages curtain was lifted, the fat storekeeper saw an old man and a beautiful young girl step out. His rolls began to tremble. Mister Muyi! Miss Qin! How did these two famous figures of Sky Fortune City, these living Buddha's, decide to come to his little temple?

"This is it?" Qin Xingxuan asked Tie Feng. When she had heard that the inscription symbol was on sale, she was also filled with excitement. Qin Xingxuan had an enormous interest in inscription since childhood, and after seeing Tie Feng and Li Qi fight, she yearned to learn that inscription technique!

“It is here.” Tie Feng said as he led them to the front. Together with Qin Xingxuan and Muyi, they entered the store.

The fat storekeeper had a body like a meatball, but he still stood as straight as he could as if his back was against the wall. He didn’t even dare breathe the same air as these two distinguished guests.

“Storekeeper, yesterday I bought an inscription symbol, do you remember?”

Tie Feng was at the fifth level of body transformation. He also resembled a walking steel golem; his whole body was covered with scars like he came from some faraway and dangerous battlefield. Naturally he left a deep impression on the storekeeper. The storekeeper nodded. “I remember, it was an apprentice’s inscription symbol, 100 gold taels...”

The fat storekeeper was afraid. Was there some problem with the apprentice’s inscription symbol? If it had any problems and these people came looking to account for it, then there was nothing he could do but lay down and die. Sh*t! He shouldn’t have let that boy rent a spot! But still, it was only an apprentice level inscription symbol, a second tier item. Why would the Martial Quarters be involved in this?

“I heard you have another one, where is it?” Muyi impatiently asked.

The fat storekeeper pointed at a shelf in the corner, where a rough yellow piece of paper was pressed behind a glass pane.

Muyi took three steps and arrived in front of the shelf. He lifted the glass and then cautiously held the symbol paper in his hand like a baby. He felt the soul force fluctuations that came from the paper, and then sucked in a breath of cold air; his eyes were filled with bewilderment!

“How is it Master?” Qin Xingxuan asked as she walked over.

“This inscription symbol....” Muyi took a few breaths to steady himself and calm down. Even he could not believe what he was saying. “In this inscription the soul force cannot surpass the third stage of body transformation; it...might even be lower!”

Qin Xingxuan felt her heart jump. She took the symbol paper and also examined it with her soul force. It really was as he had said!

When Tie Feng had said the inscription symbol was the work of an apprentice, Qin Xingxuan had not believed it was possible and assumed he had been tricked, but now she had been proven wrong...inconceivable!

She said, “Is it possible that an inscription master intentionally suppressed their true strength to the third level of body transformation, and created this symbol??

Muyi responded, “The pulse condensation period and the houtian stage have completely different qualities of soul force than someone in the lower levels of body transformation. Not only is it immeasurably difficult to suppress, but it may also cause harm to themselves. Not only is there no need or benefits to doing so, but it would also lower the quality of the inscription symbol. I truly cannot fathom the thoughts of the elder who created this.”

That fat storekeeper listened to the two discuss the symbol, and felt his brain short circuit from all the conflicting emotions. He had originally thought that the inscription symbol had some defect so they came to deal with him, but listening to these two, it seemed the inscription symbol had some significance, so they came to investigate.

This is Mister Muyi! He was one of the top three inscription masters in the entirety of Sky Fortune Kingdom! Even he was shocked by how strong this inscription symbol was.

The fat storekeeper felt a pang of regret. If he knew about this sooner, he would not have sold them at such a low price.

But...those symbol papers were sold by some shabby looking youth, how did he manage to obtain such a fierce inscription symbol?

“This storekeeper, do you remember who brought this inscription symbol in?”

“Yes yes, of course I remember,” The fat man nodded hurriedly, “A young boy of about fifteen or sixteen in ordinary clothing brought it in. I also have his address.”

As the fat man said this he quickly began flipping through his book of records. The trading center always kept a point of contact so they could deliver the sales of commission.

A fifteen to sixteen year old youth…as soon as Qin Xingxuan heard this, her mind jumped. Her first thought was that of Lin Ming, that young boy that had so thoroughly impressed her at the Zither Department. Was it him?

Body transformation third level or lower…inscription apprentice…this…was it possibly him?

Aware of these possibilities, Qin Xingxuan felt her heart tremble. If it was true, then the term ‘genius’ was insufficient to describe him; he could only be described as an once-in-a-lifetime monstrous talent!

The fat storekeeper was shaking as he rushed to find out the address. He looked at the shelf serial number and stuttered as he said. “Great…Great Clarity Pavilion. That boy lives in the Great Clarity Pavilion. That’s the address that he wrote down.”

“Great Clarity Pavilion? Let’s go.” Muyi said.

As soon as they boarded the carriage, Qin Xingxuan said with some concern, “This address was left down eight days ago. I don’t know if he is still staying at Great Clarity Pavilion, people do not usually stay there too long.”

Qin Xingxuan assumed that Lin Ming was a guest staying there. Great Clarity Pavilion was one of Sky Fortune City’s most luxurious restaurants. It had a feast hall and many guest rooms, but under ordinary circumstances it was only for temporary stays.

Chapter 22 – Strength and Delicacy

Chapter 22 – Strength and Delicacy

…

…

…

These days Lin Ming had been practicing deboning with the flat back of a knife. He had taken half of the 95 gold and used it to purchase medicines. Now when he was training, he was able to leave a seven inch deep indentation in the Iron Wood tree with each punch. His strength was not any lower than 1500 jins.

However, he had still not reached the boundary of formlessness as described in the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' manual, where each fist flowed like silk. The so called 'flowing like silk' was merely controlling one's own strength. As soon as he accomplished this as described in the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians', then, if he were to punch at the Iron Wood tree, he would leave the bark unblemished, but the inner wood be shattered! Lin Ming had still not reached this 'flowing like silk' boundary.

Lin Ming drank a bowl of medicinal soup, and stripped off his shirt. He had practiced deboning like this every day, and through this method, was slowly beginning to understand how to control his strength.

The kitchen was hot, and using the back of the knife, the strength Lin Ming consumed was increased by several times. He even activated the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' at the same time he was cutting. Rivulets of sweat quickly flowed down his body. At this time, he did not that his inscription symbol had already caused a not-so-small controversy.

…

…

“Mister Muyi, Miss Qin, I would like to personally welcome you to our establishment. If you would like to come in we have already specially prepared a private room for you.” Sister Lan had already received the news ahead of time and arrived at the main entrance to greet the esteemed guests. The Great Clarity Pavilion and other high class restaurants and special rooms prepared for dignitaries and other high profile guests. These guests often did not like to eat in the open, so in order to create a more comfortable environment for them, there were several private rooms that were set up.

“Xiao Lian, prepare the best blue spring tea we have any inform the kitchen to prepare well. Bring out the best dishes!” Although Great Clarity Pavilion often entertained many honored guests; Muyi and Qin Xingxuan were the absolute cream of society! Regard if it was the Martial Quarters or the Imperial Palace, they had several executive master chefs that were beyond the skills of Great Clarity Pavilion’s chefs; there was simply no need for them to come here to eat a meal.

Qin Xingxuan said, “It is unnecessary, this time my master and I have come here to look for someone.”

“Oh? Looking for someone?”

“Yes, I hear you have a fifteen to sixteen year old boy staying here. About as tall as me, and his last name is Lin.“ Qin Xingxuan said Lin Ming’s last only, because it was common practice for guest room’s to only have the last name registered. For instance, Mr. Lin. Qin Xingxuan guessed that Lin Ming might even be with his master, if so, the registration wouldn’t be under Lin.

“A fifteen or sixteen year old youth….” Sister Lan thought about this then asked Xiao Lian, “Have we recently had a young man stay here?”

Xiao Lian shook her head and said, “I don’t recall, but I will check the log book to see.”

After Xiao Lian left, Sister Lan entertained Qin Xingxuan and Muyi as they sat down. After a period of time, Xiao Lian came back saying, “I checked the log books, and haven’t seen any recording of a young man coming in recently.”

The Great Clarity Pavilion was an establishment mostly frequented by professionals and top-level figures on business. They tended to be older individuals. There were very few families that came in and of course rarely young men.

Muyi frowned and said, “Not in the last ten days? How? Eight days ago the young man was at the Great Clarity Pavilion.”

Sister Lan seriously thought of this and said, “Our Great Clarity Pavilion doesn’t have many young boys or girls that stay here. Perhaps, if you are looking for someone with the last name Lin, our kitchen does have one and he has been here a month, but…he shouldn’t be the one Miss Qin is looking for.”

Sister Lan thought that Qin Xingxuan and Muyi came to look for a junior of some aristocratic family. Although Lin Ming had an interesting story in the kitchen so far, his family background was ordinary and his martial arts cultivation was not high. He shouldn’t have had any dealings with the Martial Quarters.

“Kitchen?” Qin Xingxuan said with a hint of surprise.

“Mm. He is a deboner…he is a very responsible young boy…it’s a job where one slices the meat.” Sister Lan saw Qing Xingxuan did not know what the occupation of deboning involved, so she explained to her.

“Slicing meat? Not possible.” Muyi heard it and did not entertain any hopes. How could an esteemed inscription master be a meat slicer?

But Qin Xingxuan did not give up. She pressed on, “What name was he called?”

“I’m not very sure; he speaks very little. We only know his last name is Lin. He should be working in the kitchen at this time. Would you like to take a look?”

"Mm. Lead the way." Qin Xingxuan nodded as she stood up.

They followed Sister Lan and arrived at the Great Clarity Pavilion's kitchen. Upon opening the door, Qin Xingxuan felt a billow of hot air and steam wrap around her. It was late in the summer, and combined with the kitchen heat, it was unbearably hot.

Qin Xingxuan simply revolved her soul force and scattered the dry, scalding air, and entered the kitchen along with Sister Lan. The kitchen chefs widened their eyes in amazement; some of the young men's jaws almost reached the floor.

Great Clarity Pavilion had many esteemed guests entering and leaving, so these waiters and chefs had a broad experience and knowledge of who was important. Many of them recognized Qin Xingxuan and didn't believe their eyes. In the entire Sky Fortune City there was nobody who had not heard of her name or knows of her outstanding talent. Why would she come to the Great Clarity Pavilion's kitchen?

Sister Lan finally stopped and pointed at a room just off the corner of the kitchen, "Over there…"

Great Clarity Pavilion's kitchen was very large, and Lin Ming worked in his own little room. He would slice the vicious beast meat here and then have it sent off to the freezer for preservation.

The door opened and Qin Xingxuan peeked inside. She could only see a youth wearing just a pair of green pants. His slightly muscled upper back was bare, and he was holding a common bone knife as he cut into the body of a vicious beast.

The youth's back was facing Qin Xingxuan; viewed from behind, the young man had a symmetrically muscled and fit back, with skin tanned from the sun, and with a healthy sheen from exercise. Perhaps it was because of the kitchen heat or the maybe it was because the boy was working very hard, but his back was entirely covered with beats of sweat, and it gave off a daunting sense of strength.

Was he Lin Ming?

Qin Xingxuan was unsure, so she approached several steps. She saw the young man's profile; it was a young and tender face with a resolute expression. At first glance it was not noticeable, but looking a bit longer could cause the heart to palpitate and leave a sense that he was an unforgettably lofty character.

Although she only saw a small side of him, Qin Xingxuan recognized that focused and sharp look, and it began to overlap with the image she had of Lin Ming from the Zither Department. She did not know why but it caused her mind to jump and a slight flush crept up her neck.

She hadn't imagined the scene in front of her. The exquisite inscription symbol that required fine control of soul force and a delicate, gentle touch, was the same as this young man that was barbarically cutting the animal meat? These two completely contradictory ideas appeared in the same boy; the complicated and mysterious noble beauty, and the simple strength in contrast with each other gave her heart a momentary sinking feeling.

At this moment Lin Ming turned around. The kitchen had many people passing through, and when Lin Ming practiced he often ignored his surroundings, but he felt a difference that there were some people observing him. It might have been that there was someone coming to look for him.

But as he saw it was Qin Xingxuan, he paused. Qin Xingxuan? Why did she come to the Great Clarity Pavilion? For him?

Qin Xingxuan had noted the simple knife in Lin Ming's hand. It was less than a foot long bone knife, and there was nothing special or particular about it, but what astonished Qin Xingxuan was that Lin Ming had unexpectedly been using the back of the knife to cut the meat. This, this was really…

Her gaze moved to the cuts of meat that Lin Ming had sliced up. The sections were consistent, even, and neat. Were these made using the back of a knife?

“Miss Qin, were you looking for me?” Lin Ming asked. He saw Muyi from behind and his heart shrank. This old man gave him a feeling of absolute strength, as if some invisible and constant force was pushing down on him. His background was most likely a top powerhouse, perhaps some master in the pulse condensation stage or even the rarer houtian stage!

“Little brother, are you Lin Ming?” The old man asked Lin Ming with a smile on his face. Lin Ming nodded; he couldn’t conceal anything from a master at this level. He guessed it was because of the sale of the two inscription symbols were brought to this old man’s attention. Although he had already assumed that the inscription symbols would be brought to others attention, he didn’t think it would happen so quickly.

This kind of circumstance might be a stroke of luck, but it could also be a calamity. If it was luck, then his inscription symbol prices would sharply rise in prestige and price, and he would be able to obtain a fortune he could use to buy some medicines to cultivate. But if it were calamity, then because his strength was low, he would be like a rhinoceros that was hunted and killed for its horn. Lin Ming had no ability to protect himself and might even be put under house arrest by certain parties and forced to create inscription symbols all day.

Before Lin Ming had entered the auction house he had considered all these points. He had thought of changing his identity and looks, but he didn’t know any profound skills to do that, and moreover was only fifteen years old so any illusion would easily be broken.

Sooner or later his inscription skills would have attracted attention and there would have been major forces investing him. He was just a young boy at the first level of body transformation, and had no great background. Using some cheap parlor tricks to disguise himself from these major powers was no different from some moron spouting nonsense.

Therefore, Lin Ming did not plan to hide his identity, and thought of a different way.

Chapter 23 – Xiantian

Chapter 23 – Xiantian

…

…

..

Lin Ming knew it was useless to conceal who he was, so he decided that he would instead fabricate the identity of a master in order to placate any questions.

The inscription techniques were not possible to be self-learned, much less to the point that he had at such a young age. In the eyes of a reasonable person, it was most likely that Lin Ming had some sort of legendary inscription master backing him, even if this character did not actually exist.

Of course there were also risks. The world had many crazy people, some who would even disregard the existence of such a person. If Lin Ming ran into such a person, he would be in danger.

But Lin Ming didn't run from such risks, instead he faced them head on. He cultivated martial arts, how could he run from something just because there was the risk of danger? If he feared every shadow and shade, then it would be impossible for him to reach the peak of the martial path.

Muyi saw Lin Ming go on alert, and he said to everyone behind him, "Leave."

Quickly, everyone had left this small room included Tie Feng. Soon there was only Muyi and Qin Xingxuan.

Muyi circulated his soul force, and something an invisible bubble surrounded the entire room. “Little brother, I don’t have any ill intentions, this is merely my sound sealing skill. Under it, no one will be able to hear what we are saying. I just want to ask you, are you the one that created that flame engraved inscription symbol?”

It was a tradition for the inscription master to have their own personalized image that they used on the inscription symbols. It identified who they were, and represented the spirit behind their inscription path. Lin Ming’s was a raging flame that represented his desire to tread the martial path.

Qin Xingxuan held her breath, her eyes wide and unblinking as she waited for his answer.

Lin Ming hesitated, nodded, and said, “It was me.”

Since he decided to act, then he would do so thoroughly and completely. Only then would he be in a strong position and others would believe that the mysterious master behind him was a legendary figure that could not be offended.

Although they had already expected this, after hearing Lin Ming’s affirmation, Muyi gasped, and in particular Qin Xingxuan’s eyes widened with shock.

She was also an inscriptionist, so she knew! She knew that it was immeasurably difficult to become an inscription master at the tender age of fifteen!

Qin Xingxuan understood that for every mountain, there would always be a higher one. Sky Fortune Kingdom was only a small state in the entirety of Sky Spill Continent. If though she was talented herself and considered the best here, if she had left for other lands, then perhaps she would only be one in any countless number of talents.

But, Qin Xingxuan still had not left the country before. After all, even in the surrounded few countries she was the top number one talent; there was not a single contemporary around her that could compare with a tenth of her.

Sixth rank martial talent, in addition to an inscription talent that was second to none in Sky Fortune Kingdom, Qin Xingxuan was truly blessed by the heavens and had not found a match in those of her generation. She had never felt a half ounce of frustration at her age, so Qin Xingxuan had grown up with a self-belief of arrogance.

But today, she was suddenly defeated by a youth of the same age. Although his strength was less than hers, his talent and ability and accomplishments in inscription had outstripped her by miles.

Concerning inscription technique, it could be said that she was a little fledgling that hadn't learnt to fly, and he was a soaring eagle that rules the skies; the gap was simply too big!

She was frustrated, but Qin Xingxuan was not depressed or hopeless. She was actually excited, because now that she had found a goal, she could then strive to improve herself!

To this young boy, Qin Xingxuan was filled with curiosity. She also hoped to become his friend and compare notes with him in the future. She could learn from these exchanges and further increase her understanding of inscription techniques!

But she remembered that before, her invitation had been rejected. Qin Xingxuan felt wronged. Girls were naturally thin skinned, shy, and proud; beautiful girls from aristocratic families were all like this. Even if in her heart she wanted to become his friend, but because of that single time, she was not able to take her own initiative to invite him again.

After Muyi heard Lin Ming's answer, he finally managed to compose himself from the sense of disbelief he felt. This truly was unbelievable. He had originally guessed that the inscription symbol's creator did not have a cultivation that surpassed the third level of body transformation, but it seemed he was wrong.

Lin Ming's cultivation was only at the peak of the first layer, but because of his solid foundation and the density and precision of his soul force, it had given the illusion that it was higher than it was!

Because of this dense soul force, he was afraid that this youth practiced the top tier martial skill manual. The kind of skill manual that only the most ancient and powerful of clans would have.

Moreover this young boy was extremely assiduous and dedicated…for instance he had just cut apart that vicious beast now with the back of a knife. Perhaps this young boy came from an ancient clan, or had the backing of a supreme master!

Thinking of this, Muyi took a deep breath and asked with a respectful tone, “Excuse me for asking, by may I request the name of your esteemed master?”

Muyi had a high and aloof position with the Sky Fortune Kingdom. Even if he approached the emperor he would no need to bow. But from this respectful expression it was sufficient to see the deep awe and reverence he had for this supreme and mysterious master behind Lin Ming.

Ling Ming said, “This…sorry, senior, but my master once told me that to speak his name was a taboo. The truth is my parents do now know that I have apprenticed myself to a master. When I was twelve years old my master found me and taught me some skills.“ Lin Ming had lived in Green Mulberry City since childhood, so this was easy to investigate. He only said as little as he could to avoid being suspected.

Muyi said. “I apologize for being crass with my words. For a elder of such high skill, they tour the four corners of the world so it is difficult to glimpse their whereabouts. I should not inquire so rashly…it’s just that little brother’s inscription technique was so outstanding that it is unlikely to belong to someone from the Sky Fortune Kingdom. Likely is someone from an ancient sect…”

Muyi said that he did not want to ask who Lin Ming’s master was, but he was still vague and wanted to ask for some information. After all, a legendary master like this was rare to see even once; if one does, then perhaps it could be their own stroke of luck!

Muyi had already been stuck at the peak of the houtian boundary for a very long time. He had always wanted to pass the threshold to the next stage.

But without guidance, the single step simple an impassable ravine!

In the eight years of Sky Fortune Kingdom's history, there had been many pulse condensation martial artists. And in those were many talents that would even arrive at the houtian stage.

However, disregarding the peerless talents that had entered the Seven Profound Valleys, then Sky Fortune Kingdom had not had a single xiantian master!

If the step from bone forging to pulse condensation was a little stream to pass, then the path from houtian to xiantian was like a raging ocean! If one did not depend on the direction from a sect, then depending on one's own skill and personal discovery, the possibility to enter the xiantian stage was close to zero!

It was already too late for Muyi to enter into a sect. His only hope was to encounter a mighty elder who was able to give him a pointer or two, and thus also give him the hope that he could one day dream of crossing into the xiantian level.

He did not ultimately seek to enter the xiantian level; he only wanted to know the direction, to give him a goal so he wouldn't remain clueless and lost for the rest of his life.

Lin Ming said, "My master is a recluse, but he had once said that he had entered a sect."

After Muyi heard this he felt a bit envious. He did not have the good fortune to enter a sect, but Lin Ming's master had already left his sect. He said, "Your master's cultivation must have been very high if he left his sect to go travelling. He had probably reached the limit of some high boundary. Perhaps he was above the xiantian stage?"

To Muyi, the xiantian stage was an immeasurably distant ideal. For martial artists that were not in a sect, let alone the xiantian stage, the stages above it must be even more unimaginable.

Hearing Muyi’s question, Lin Ming finally understood the intentions of this old man. His interest in this so called ‘master’ of his was very strong. His eyes were eager and full of earnest. He must have been looking for some answers for his own cultivation. It was very difficult to practice oneself, after all Muyi was at such an old age; he had probably reached his own limits.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming considered the memories of the elder’s soul fragment. These memories, although there were some memories of martial arts cultivation, they were not complete. But there was not much value, so it was easy to say a thing or two.

Lin Ming said, “I don’t know what boundary master is at, but master once said the martial way is divided into two major parts. He was now contemplating the second part.”

“Oh? Which two parts?” Muyi’s eyes lit up. He feared missing even a single word, for he knew that the opportunity to listen to the words from a learned senior were truly precious.

Qin Xingxuan’s eyes were also bright, and she did not blink as she listened to Lin Ming with reverent attention.

Chapter 24 – Understanding

Chapter 24 – Understanding

….

….

….

Lin Ming said, “Martial arts are divided into two major parts. First cultivate the martial path, and then grasp the principles to attain enlightenment. To cultivate the martial path is to cultivate the body. To enlighten oneself is to cultivate the soul. Master often said that the life was a boundless sea of bitterness. Cultivating was the path of traversing the waters. To cultivate the body was to build a boat that could cross the sea, and cultivating the soul was to create oars to move the boat.”

“If one does not cultivate the body, then the boat would not be steady or strong; a storm would easily capsize it. If one does not cultivate the soul, then their motivation and will would not be enough, and even if their predestined death was near, they would be unable to arrive at the distant shores.”

“But the cultivation of the body and the cultivation of the soul is the difference in transition from the houtian to the xiantian stage. Before houtian, the martial artist will cultivate the body, after xiantian, the martial artist will cultivate the soul.”

“After xiantian, cultivating the soul! As soon as Muyi heard this he was startled, and felt that he would faint. No wonder all these years which he had been practicing he had actually been unable to take that tiny step. He realized that he had been headed the wrong direction the entire time. He had not imagined the xiantian stage to be like this. He muttered, “And what is the meaning of xiantian?”

Lin Ming said, “Master once said that the answer lies in how a baby breathes in the womb. He said that ‘when humans are babies in the womb, they cannot breathe through their nose or mouth, but must depend on the mother to give them sustenance through their connection only. This is how they breathe. This is the characteristics of xiantian. After the human is born then they can breathe through the nose and mouth. This worldly air is filled with impurities that gradually accumulate. This is the characteristics of houtian. In the xiantian stage the soul enters a state of incomparable tranquility and peace. They body changes the way they interact with their surroundings and the soul becomes aware of the world and is able to communicate with nature, even being able to actuate the power of the heavens and earth with soul force. That is the true xiantian. But from houtian to xiantian one must cut off every root in order to pass through and return to the state of being in the womb.”

“So…I see…that’s how it is…” Muyi muttered under his breath. His eyes showed both admiration and dismay. This young boy casually tossed out a few words that were akin to ancient enlightenments. If this boy had these teachings, guided by the top tier xiantian skill manual, then he would soon become a martial arts master!

The sects and clans were able to rely on their heritage and legacies; a martial artist that tried to fumble his way through would not find it possible to think of these things. Muyi lamented, “How laughable! To think that I reached pulse condensation at thirty six years of age and then reached houtian at fifty years of age, and afterwards I spent sixty years exhausting all my efforts to step into the xiantian realm! And I had been wrong the entire time! I had started down the wrong path all this time! I have wasted sixty years! Lamentable! Truly lamentable!”

Muyi face was excited and yet his emotions were complex. Lin Ming stood at the side and watched, his heart sighing. This old man did not inherit the legacies and yet had wanted to step into the xiantian boundary; this was naturally hopeless. One needed the legacy and understandings of a sect to accomplish this, but which sect would not stubbornly control their secrets from spreading?

Not only that, but from houtian to xiantian one needed to return their soul to a state of being in a womb. This required the most precious and rare of medicines. These medicines methods of production and rare materials were tightly controlled by the sects. Not to mention the common people, but even the royal family could not purchase it!

So even if Lin Ming told Muyi these memories of his, even if he wanted to use them to advance into the xiantian stage, it was simply not possible.

Therefor Lin Ming said, “Senior, I will say frankly that master once said that if one does not have the support of a clan, even if one obtained a skill manual that allowed them to enter the xiantian stage, it would still be impossible.”

Muyi said, “I know…I know…it’s just that I have long striven to reach the xiantian stage. It is my life long wish. Even if I cannot achieve this wish of mine, but to at least let me see its direction and to know where I was wrong, then I can also die in peace and without regret.”

Even though Muyi said these words easily, the tone behind them was lonely. Lin Ming also unavoidably sighed with emotion. If he hadn’t obtained that mystical magic cube, then perhaps he too would be like Muyi, after reaching the houtian stage he would forever try to track down that illusory lifelong dream of reaching the xiantian realm, and would eventually hold these regrets even when he died.

Muyi reflected for a long time, and finally said to Lin Ming, “Little friend, I feel like old friends even after meeting for the first time. If this little friend does not mind my old age, I would like to become good friends with you.”

Lin Ming also had a favorable impression of the Muyi who had earnestly pursued martial arts his entire life. He said, “Lin Ming also would like to become your friend.”

“Haha! Then no other day is as lucky as today! Let us go downstairs and feast at the Great Clarity Pavilion. We will drink wine and speak fast and free! How about it good friend?”

Lin Ming hesitated slightly, and then agreed. He also said, “Senior, about the inscription technique, I would like to ask senior to keep it a secret for me.”

Although Lin Ming created an imaginary master for himself, he also wanted to avoid those that were blinded by greed and took risks not matter what. It was therefore better to be low-key about these inscription techniques.

Muyi guessed correctly Lin Ming's worries and said, "Little brother Lin feel relieved. As long as the Martial Quarters of Sky Fortune City exists, I guarantee your absolute safety! As long as little brother meets any trouble at all, then just send me a sound transmitting talisman and I shall handle it personally. About this, but I may now know everything, but…why would little brother Lin have to sell the inscription symbol and also work at the Great Clarity Pavilion. Is it for practice?"

Listening to Muyi ask this, Lin Ming forced a smile and said, "It's because of economic reasons. Master taught me but never gave me any money. My family is ordinary, so it is not enough for me to cultivate the martial path.

"Like that, it must be a true martial artist's way. No anger, no extravagance, no greed, no laziness, and true hardship to forge the spirit. Your master must have consciously made this informed and experienced decision, as he naturally has his own reasons and truth. Such being the case, although I do not know if this goes against your masters opinion, but if little brother Lin would still like to sell your inscription symbols, I could buy them at market price. If it is that flame engraved inscription symbol, would 3000 gold taels be enough?

After Lin Ming heard this price his heart almost leapt out of his chest. 3000 gold taels!

3000 gold taels, but since he had three, that was 9000 gold taels! Although Lin Ming had expected his inscription symbols to rise in price, he had not thought he could receive 9000 gold taels!

What concept was 9000 gold taels! Lin Ming's family's restaurant was also valued at 3000 gold taels. If he could buy that restaurant then his parents would not have to work so hard every day.

He would have 6000 gold taels left over and could use it for medicines. He could buy any body transformation pill or altering muscle pill and eat them like rice!

As for blood ginseng and other medicines, he could eat one and throw one away, because to Ling Ming, creating another inscription symbol was an easy matter.

Ling quieted the excitement in his heart and said to Muyi, "Many thanks, senior."

Muyi naturally saw Lin Ming's joy. When Lin Ming had been with his master he had lived a simple and poor life, but now he had suddenly arrived at this lively capital city. A fifteen year old young man would find it hard to resist all the wonders and amazements and treasures that the world had to offer.

Muyi said, "Little brother Lin's inscription symbol is naturally at this price. Also, please do not call me senior. My name is Muyi, my full name is Mu Yi Zhuo, by just Muyi is fine."

"This..." Lin Ming hesitate slightly. Although he did not know who this old man was, he only needed to look at Qin Xingxuan attitude of respect to suspect that this man's status was high. But Lin Ming was not a person affected by conventions, since Muyi said so, then let it be so. He simply nodded in agreement.

Muyi smiled and said, "Xingxuan, let's have Great Clarity Pavilion set aside a room for a banquet. I'd like to have a drink with little brother Lin."

Qin Xingxuan had been silent. She had also been carefully listening to Lin Ming's explanation of what it meant to be xiantian. Now she heard Muyi say this, she said excitedly, "Yes master."

When the staff of Great Clarity Pavilion heart that Muyi was arranging a banquets and had asked Lin Ming to drink, everyone blanched. What kind of person was Muyi? He was the Martial Quarter's seat of honor official that was invited to serve at court. Qin Xingxuan's master was also the tutor of the crown prince. The crown price would ascend the throne in the future, and Muyi would be the emperor's teacher! Not only that, but Muyi's cultivation was immeasurably deep, and he was also skilled in inscription techniques and was skilled in astronomy, geography, and the ancient art of divination. He truly was an outstanding person! Even the emperor had to give him three points of respect.

But he actually asked Lin Ming, the deboning boy, to eat a meal. Moreover as the two left the kitchen it seemed they were speaking very familiarly like they were contemporaries. What sort of background did Lin Ming have?

If his real background was not small would he willingly come to the Great Clarity Pavilion for deboning work? As the saying goes, the gentleman stood far from the kitchen; the kitchen and especially the butcher's job was always despised and looked down upon by martial artists and the scholar. Lin Ming had deboning skills that they admired, but it was difficult to say that it was a refined work.

"What background is that that spareribs chopper little Lin?"

"I don't really know..."

The two waiters who were serving the guests could not help but chat amongst themselves while they were serving. They were both dedicated staff that served the high-level guests, and were each around twenty years of age, with outstanding looks and also proficient at the fine arts of poetry and painting. They first saw Muyi and Qin Xingxuan enter the Great Clarity Pavilion and were shocked. After all, this type of honored guests was rare, and once it happened there was a reward of ten gold taels for good service which was equivalent to two months of wages. But they had not actually thought that they came to look for Lin Ming.

The banquet dishes were simple, but very exquisite in taste and texture. The liquor was several hundred gold taels and was called red dragon liquor; it was specially prepared via a secret recipe and mixed in with a variety of rare herbs. A martial artist who drank this could cure their internal injuries and promote a stronger and fitter body along with a higher degree of cultivation. However the brewing method was complex and the materials used were precious. Let alone Lin Ming, even the juniors of the aristocracy could not afford to savor it.

In the banquet, Muyi wanted to ask Lin Ming if he would like to stay at the Martial Quarters, but Lin Ming thought it would inconvenient to practice martial arts there while preventing people from discovering his secrets, so he politely declined.

Muyi was forced to give up, but in light of these his opinion of Lin Ming was heightened. Before leaving, he left behind the 9000 gold taels along with a gold-purple VIP card. Through this card it was possible to receive a 10% discount from every shop that was under the jurisdiction of the chamber of commerce, and in Sky Fortune City nearly every large ship was under them.

He had finally managed to attain 9000 taels of gold. He looked at this thick gold banknote and felt very excited. His blood boiled and finally proudly raised his head!

9000 gold taels and he would send 3000 gold taels to his parents. He would have enough left over to buy medicine to easily break into the second stage of body transformation. If he obtained the precious medicines and increased their effect with inscription techniques, then later even breaking through the pulse condensation period would be an easy matter.

He has doomed to go far down the path of martial arts. If in the past Zhu Yan was like a mountain that Lin Ming could only cross with immense effort, now Zhu Yan could only be a stepping stone on his road of martial arts. Lin Ming would only step on it to reach a higher peak.

Lin Ming was in a sterling mood. He passed on a sound transmitting talisman to inform Lin Xiaodong. “Dongdong, let’s go, today I will treat you to some shopping. I’ll see you at the Hundred Treasure Hall’s entrance.”

Lin Xiaodong had helped Lin Ming many times. This type of sentiment was priceless! And now that his own situation was better because he had come into possession of riches, he would naturally help him back. A man must always repay favors!

“Go shopping?” After Lin Xiaodong sees the sound transmitting talisman, he thought to himself, this crazy guy also has money to use sound transmitting talismans?

Chapter 25 – World Peace is My Duty

Chapter 25 – World Peace is My Duty

…

…

…

After Lin Xiaodong arrived at the Hundred Treasures Hall, Lin Ming was already waiting there. “Brother Lin, what sort of thing did you want to buy? Did you manage to sell those three symbol papers?”

Lin Ming smiled and said, “I ran into some good luck and sold out.”

“Nooooooo!” Lin Xiaodong cried out exaggeratedly. What fool was taken advantage of? This could also be an omen! He was a bit worried and said, “Brother Lin, you sold so many, if people come to look for us in the future they might beat up us brothers…”

Lin Ming snapped, “Humph! You actually think I created some fake inscriptions to trick people?”

“I’m not saying you intentionally tricked people, I am just thinking what happens if your inscription symbols don’t work. If we spent a hundred gold taels today, when the time comes we may not be able to repay the money…”

Lin Ming smiled and shook his head, “Don’t worry, there is absolutely no problem. Let’s just go shopping.”

Lin Ming was saying this as soon as he stepped directly into the entrance of the Hundred Treasure Hall. Lin Xiaodong gave him a silly look. He thought that they would only meet here, and then perhaps go somewhere else like the city square or some other small place to go shopping. He did not expect they would go straight to the Hundred Treasure Hall. This place frequently sold items at several hundred or thousands of gold; it was one of the most luxurious shops in all of Sky Fortune City.

“My brother, my own dearest big brother, are we really going shopping here?”

“Mm. It’s here.” Lin Ming said as he entered the store. The shopkeeper somewhat recognized Lin Ming as he was also in ordinary clothing, and was young and small of stature. This was a very conspicuous look, and after a little thought, the shopkeeper remembered that Lin Ming was the youth who had tried to sell him inscription symbols a few days ago.

The storekeeper was immediately impatient and said, “You again, I told you that I will not take your inscription symbols.”

Lin Ming also naturally remembered this Hundred Treasure Hall’s storekeeper. Initially when he visited the private shops none of the storekeepers had treated him with respect. These storekeepers were in truth not the owners. The bosses were usually some rich character and would not often be in the store. They would hire some clerk or shopkeeper to take charge of the store’s business. Of course, their salaries were also tied to performance, so these shopkeepers would naturally treat the juniors of wealthy families with respect in order to earn some percentage of profits. Lin Ming still remained salty from the experience.

Lin Ming said, “My inscription symbols sold. I’m here today to do some shopping.”

Sold? The shopkeeper’s eyes showed a faint touch of contempt. With his experience this inscription symbols were not worth any money. With their cost, at most it would be a few dozen gold taels. This country bumpkin was truly a hillbilly. If he thought that a few dozen tales of gold made him a rich man then that really was funny.

What a ridiculous boy. The storekeeper did not throw him out though. Hundred Treasure Hall had not listed a rule that said only those with money were permitted to come.

Lin Ming look at the dazzling pavilion’s shelves that were stacked high with precious materials and rare goods; it really was amazing to see. The hundred year ginseng that Lin Xiaodong had purchased for him could only be considered inferior goods here.

There were also rare and precious medicines, materials, master class inscription symbols, even treasures that were several thousand gold taels.

Lin Ming casually said, “Xiaodong, is there anything you want to buy?”

Lin Xiaodong forced a smiled and said, “Brother Lin, what crazy song are you singing today, ah. Although it doesn’t cost anything to take a peek, did you not see the look the storekeeper gave us like we were some bumpkins? It really made my whole body uncomfortable.”

Ling Mind said, “He’s just a small minded idiot, there’s no need to care about what he thinks. If you aren’t going to choose something then I’ll help you. Or you buy a flexible armor.

Lin Xiaodong shook his head like a rattle. “Brother Lin, let’s not waste our time, if I choose something in the Hundred Treasure Hall then we won’t have the money to pay and they’ll come after us. Think about it. When that time comes, you will run faster, but I’m a bit fatter than you so I’ll fall behind and get beat up.”

Lin Ming couldn’t find the words to respond, so he said, “When have I wasted your time?”

“What time have you not thought of these evil plans? Ah, look at me I am an honest and good natured person, pity me…”

Lin Ming laughed and opened his clothes a little. Near his chest pocket there were the edges of golden banknotes. He said, “Well, is this not money?”

Lin Xiaodong saw those numerous golden banknotes in a red envelope and froze for a moment. He felt his mind go blank and his eyes were sluggish.

“They are banknotes worth 1000 gold taels each.”

It actually turned out to be 1000 gold tael banknotes! Moreover, he could see from the thickness that there was more than one, perhaps up to 10,000 gold taels!

Up to 10,000 gold taels! What was this?

Lin Xiaodong short-circuited and he swayed on his feet. “Brother Lin, you robbed people? It’s not right, even with your martial arts you should not steal so much…”

Hearing this Lin Xiaodong mutter, Lin Ming’s forehead was full of black lines. My god, this guy…he reluctantly said, “I got the money for selling inscriptions, you just do not believe me.”

“Inscription symbol? You said those three toilet papers were inscription symbols? You sold…how much did they sell for?”

“3000 gold taels.”

“3…........3000!?!?!?!?” Lin Xiaodong’s chubby face began to tremble. He was shocked, but still managed to lower his voice in fear that others would hear him. “You sold them for 3000 gold taels? You said you had practiced for one month and you could somehow create an inscription symbol that could sell for 3000 gold taels?”

Lin Ming nodded. Lin Xiaodong was his best friend and good brother. He did not want to hide anything from him, and furthermore could not hide. If he wanted help Lin Xiaodong with some money, then he would also need him to understand what happened. Moreover in the future he would most likely be contacted by Qin Xingxuan, Muyi, or other high-level persons, and it would be impossible to hide the truth from Lin Xiaodong.

“You are simply insulting my intelligence!” Lin Xiaodong exclaimed. “You’ve only practiced one month and you can create an inscription symbol like that? You think I am some little three year old that you can trick into thinking cabbage leaves are rare medicines or something?”

Lin Ming shrugged, “The facts are facts. If you do not believe me then there is nothing I can do.”

“Big bro, oh brother Lin, don’t play with me, just tell me what happened.”

Lin Ming sighed and said, “Good, I’ll tell you but you have to promise you won’t say anything.”

“This is a promise!” Lin Xiaodong immediately announced.

“Mm…well, the truth is I have a secret mater….When I was twelve years old, that year my master appeared and said that my talent was good, and I had good intelligence and a grand destiny. He wanted me to maintain world peace so he gave me the duty to do so and compelled me to work as his apprentice. Finally, I began to study inscription technique with him….”

“As if!” Lin Xiaodong felt like he had eaten a fly. “Brother Lin, can you be serious about it?”

Lin Ming said, “I’m not lying to you, I really do have a master.”

“Knock it off, if you have a master and studied inscription for many years then why did you ask me what inscription technique was?

Lin Ming said, “My master only taught me the skills and did not give me any money. As for the inscription technique, although I studied it I did not know if it was of any use until you told me, then I knew that I could use it to make money…”

“Damnit!” Lin Xiaodong felt as if the world had gone crazy. This is like casually picking up a little kitten to raises and feeding and petting it for several years and then finding it turn into the most beautiful woman, and then having her be the overthrown demon emperor’s legendary clan princess who just happened to fall in love with you! It was the exact same chance!

“Good. Well, uh…you understand now. Let’s go shopping.” Lin Ming pulled soulless Lin Xiaodong, and continued to select flexible armors.

Lin Xiaodong was not an ambitious person and he did not like to practice martial arts. He was just diligent enough to be able to preserve his status as a direct descendent in the Lin Family. Lin Ming thought a flexible armor would be good as a life insurance.

“What material is this flexible armor?” Lin Ming asked. The storekeeper impatiently looked at Lin Ming and said, “It is a high-quality treasure of the shop, the description is in the notes on display behind the table. Look yourself.”

His words contained a jeer that taunted Lin Ming for coming into a high-quality shop.

The shopkeeper had done enough business that he developed an innate ability to recognize who would purchase items and who wouldn’t. When some rich and powerful figure came to the store he would greet them and assist them, but those with no money he would ignore, not to mention Lin Ming would not only looked ordinary but had come in a few days ago trying to sell him some toilet paper. This kind of boy was impossible to be any sort of good character, so the storekeeper was impatient.

Lin Ming went to where the flexible armor was and read the description. This soft armor was made with 10,000 six foot long day ruler hemp. It had also been mixed with several thousand strings of Golden Wood Root silkworm silk and been made from combining over twenty advanced crafting techniques. The price was 392 gold taels.

This sort of excellent flexible armor was treasure. It could withstand attacks up to the fourth layer of body transformation. But after the fourth layer then it would be easily broken, so Lin Ming did not need it. It was something that much better suited Lin Xiaodong.

He continued to look until something caught his eye – it was a Golden Deer pill and Soul Gathering pellet.

Before now, Lin Ming had not taken any pills because the cost was simply too high.

Pills and pellets were made from combining medicinal herbs and raw materials from vicious beasts and then refining them. It was many times better than simply using medicinal herbs or vicious beast materials. Moreover, because of the formulas, it was possible to achieve effects which the medicinal herbs or vicious beast materials could not achieve by themselves.

Golden Deer pills were very rare; they were made from a hundred year old golden deer's deer embryo as the main ingredient and supplemented with a variety of herbs. Golden deer were rare and moreover mostly found in remote mountain forests. It was not easy for them to be difficult, and to take a golden deer's embryo was as difficult as it sounded.

Because the Golden Deer pills were refined from the deer embryo, they contained a rich and fragrant vitality. In addition they had not been contaminated by the houtian phase of air outside the womb. Thus it was possible to remove the impurities of the body and promote an increase in soul force and physical cultivation.

This kind of pill was a yellow rice sized grain valued at 200 gold.

The Soul Gathering Pellet also required precious raw materials to refine. Its main ingredient was hundred year old blood fungus and the main effect of the pellet was to increase the absorption of soul force and speed up a martial artist's cultivation.

This kind of pellet was at 200 gold also. Even aristocratic families' juniors had to use their savings to buy it.

Lin Ming stopped looking as he decided what he wanted to purchase.

He turned to the storekeeper and said, "I'll take this Golden Wood Root Silkworm Armor. Wrap it up for me. I'll also take six Golden Deer Pills and ten Soul Gathering Pills, as well at the materials on this list. Don't miss a single one.

Lin Ming said this and pulled out a list which had a variety of materials written on it. They were all used for inscriptions. He had taken a look a moment ago and saw that they were all sold here.

Chapter 26 – Breakthrough

Chapter 26 – Breakthrough

…

…

…

Having listened to Lin Ming's words and seeing this exceedingly long list, the storekeeper flushed red. Did this country bumpkin think that the Hundred Treasure Hall was somewhere that he could just play around in? Such a large order would cost several thousand taels of gold at the bare minimum! It was as if this young little boy was buying bok choy at the market! Spending a few thousand gold taels, not even the sons of those aristocratic families would be able to afford so much!

He waved the list impatiently and placed it on the counter, then said, "I'm going to give you two a warning, for anyone that intentionally causes trouble in the Hundred Treasure Halls, there will be severe consequences!"

"I'll warn your mom!" Lin Xiaodong slapped his hand against the storekeeper's hand. The storekeeper had only ever done business and did not have the talent to practice martial arts, and with a loud pat from Lin Xiaodong, he pitifully screamed.

"You!" The storekeeper could not believe this hooligan would dare to cause a scene in the Hundred Treasures Hall!

"Look you snobby little son of a bitch, us young masters have money!" As Lin Xiaodong said this, he reached into Lin Ming's robes and took the golden bank notes near his chest. He slammed them on the counter with 100 jins of strength, and the counter shook. With gold notes in hand, Lin Xiaodong's confidence shot through the roof. This storekeeper was already a sore in his eyes; how could he miss this opportunity to teach the rude man a lesson?

The storekeeper froze when he saw the golden bank notes. His eyes flashed as he fiercely calculated the total amount in that stack of bills. They were banknotes worth 1000 gold taels each! With that the total amount had to be at least several thousand taels! He immediately realized that the golden banknotes were the real deal. As long as he went to a bank that was part of the chamber of commerce, he could exchange them for gold taels.

The storekeeper was thoroughly shocked. He sized up Lin Ming and also Lin Xiaodong. These two little guys were by no means the children of an aristocratic family. Just a few days ago that Lin Ming was just a poor boy that was door-to-door selling symbol papers. Where did he suddenly come into so many riches? Did he actually sell those symbol papers?

It was impossible; an apprentice inscriptionist's inscriptions would be inconceivable to sell for that much money

Two upstart nouveau rich boys; he did not realize that they were suddenly high class characters and had been acting arrogant in front of them....in the storekeepers heart was only melancholy. But money was god, and this was a temple.

He rubbed his hand which had swelled like a grapefruit and put on a smile. Taking the list, he quickly scanned it. On it were listed materials that weren't cheap! In addition to those items that Lin Ming had wanted, he quickly calculated that this business transaction would almost be 6000 taels of gold!

This was equal to the price of two rare treasures! And with the commission he could earn 120 gold taels for himself!

This was not a small number! Although his heart was still a little resentful, it wasn't worth it with the amount of money on the line. So the storekeeper groveled and bowed and said, "My foolish self did not recognize such esteemed guests of honor had appeared. Please wait, I shall prepare everything immediately."

The storekeeper's keeper body was bloated like a pig with too much gas and yet he moved like the wind. Lin Ming wanted a variety of materials that were all in different sections of the store, but the storekeeper was quick on his feet and fast with his hands and soon gathered everything together. The storekeeper had a radiant smile as he said, "Two esteemed guests, please examine the authenticity of the goods. The total is 5800 gold taels."

Seeing the stacks of goods, Lin Xiaodong asked Lin Ming, "Is this everything, brother Lin?"

Lin Ming said, "Yes, it looks like this is it."

By now, Lin Xiaodong's mouth twitched and he slyly smiled and said, "I'm sorry, this is embarrassing but I would like to see a different storekeeper to pay."

The storekeeper's happy face instantly stiffened.

In such a high class store like the Hundred Treasure Halls, it was only natural that a storekeeper's worth was dependent on his ability to sell. Therefore, all the storekeepers here took commission on all items they sold themselves.

Lin Xiaodong understood this, and decided to give the slimy man a hard time. "Please move a bit faster, we'd like to finish this as soon as possible."

The storekeeper realized that Lin Xiaodong was messing with him intentionally, and his heart ignited with fury. If a junior of an aristocratic house had decided to play a joke on him then he would bear with it, but these two were only some newly minted hicks that came into some wealth. They didn't have the right yet to be so insufferably arrogant! How could he let himself be at their mercy? His voice was cold as he said, "In this Hundred Treasure Hall, I am the only one storekeeper. Who do propose I find another?"

"You little clown, don't try to lie to us. Hurry and go, otherwise I'll complain to your boss!"

"Go ahead!" The storekeeper sneered. Boss? The idiot thought that he could see the boss just because he wanted to? He was preparing a few more harsh words when his eyes suddenly caught on something. In the golden banknotes was a purple gold colored card. It was the card that Muyi had given to Lin Ming; the VIP card! Everyone who used one would automatically be given a ten percent discount on all shops that were under the government's jurisdiction!

It was the Martial Quarters and Imperial Family's purple gold VIP card!

The storekeeper's heart skipped a beat. This VIP card was given by the chamber of commerce to Royal Family and Martial Quarters to please them. To date, there had been less than 100 sent out!

The only ones that had the qualifications to own one of these was either a member of the Imperial Family or a top-tier figure within the Martial Quarters. Any of these figures could squish him like a bug!

He was finished! Everything was over! These two little punks absolutely had the background and qualifications to do as the wished! It might even be possible that they were the Emperor's little sons putting on some disguise and coming out of the Imperial Place to play around.

F*ck! His luck was such dog shit! The storekeeper despaired.

"Two young masters, this lowly one was wrong and foolish and deserves punishment! This lowly one will look for another storekeeper for you, please have grace and mercy and do not keep in your heart my pathetic transgressions." The storekeeper began to slap himself, and although it wasn't heavy, the fat on his cheeks jiggled.

Lin Xiaodong was dumbfounded. This guy, did he take some crazy pills?

The storekeeper moved with fear and trepidation and found another storekeeper to close the deal. He kept apologizing and finally also called a carriage to bring them back.

As they returned to Lin Ming's lodgings, Lin Xiaodong did not know that the reason for the storekeeper's actions was the purple gold VIP card. He thought that it was the gold that overawed the snobby storekeeper so his mood at the moment was excellent. "Haha, that was fun. Damn, remembering that storekeepers scared shitless expression really makes me want to laugh! Brother Lin, if you weren't in a hurt I would have complained to that Hundred Treasures Hall's boss and made that little snob pack up his bags and leave."

Lin Ming had actually been watching clearly, and knew that when the storekeeper had looked at the purple gold VIP card, his expression had greatly changed. He could not restrain a sigh of emotion as he thought that the Martial Quarter's power and influence that had accumulated over time was no less than that of the Imperial Family!

He said, "Little people have their little ways of living. Flattery and rudeness was what they were forced to learn in order to live. There's no need to be so ruthless towards them. Xiaodong, this flexible armor and these three Golden Deer Pills are for you." The Golden Deer Pills were able to remove impurities in the body. The first one was the most effective, and afterwards the efficacy halves. Taking more than three would generally be a waste.

As for the Soul Gathering Pellet, there was no limit to taking them, but it was only suitable for those that were diligent in practice; Lin Xiaodong naturally had no use for them.

The three Golden Deer Pills and flexible armor added to a value of nearly a 1000 taels of gold. To Lin Xiaodong this was a great sum of money, and he hesitated for a moment until he thought of Lin Ming's story. If it were true then 1000 gold taels was only a drop in the bucket compared to what he would make in the future. Thinking of these he accepted the items and smiled with a laugh as he said, "Then I will shamelessly accept them. Brother Lin, later you will become my protective umbrella, haha."

Lin Ming smiled and said, "We are brothers, there is no need for formalities between us. In addition…" Li Ming took out the remaining 3000 gold taels, "When the family messengers come next time to Sky Fortune City, help me get this to my parents and have them buy the restaurant."

Lin Ming's parents had invested more than half their lives into that restaurant, and naturally have a close attachment towards it. Lin Ming first thought of helping them by buying it.

"Alright, let me handle this matter."

As Lin Xiaodong left, Lin Ming returned to his room alone. He looked at the calendar and saw that the Seven Profound Martial House entrance exam was fifty days away. In these fifty days, he must be reborn!

Regardless of the Golden Deer Pill or the Soul Gathering Pellet, these medicines were not able to directly increase the cultivation of a martial artist. The former eliminated impurities of the body, and the latter made it easier to train with soul force. Combined together, they could increase the rate he could practice.

As for directly increasing ones cultivation, these medicines could be bought, but they had implications in that they created more impurities in the soul force. Although cultivation would increase quickly, the foundation would not be steady, and one would have to spend a massive amount of time to consolidate the foundation in order for it to be stable.

Therefore Lin Ming did not rush to buy this sort of medicine.

…

At the moment, Lin Ming was among the treetops, and had finally begun to take the first Golden Deer Pill.

Although the Golden Deer Pill was expensive, it was not really a rare medicine. Although Lin Ming knew how to increase the potency of medicine with inscription techniques, it wasn't necessary for the Golden Deer Pill, so he ate them directly.

Lin Ming had filled a large wooden barrel with water. He stripped himself and then jumped in. In his body, the medicine began to dissolve with him. He could feel a flow of heat circulating in his chest.

Lin Ming began to meditate and revolve the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’. The soul force stirred in his body and the Golden Deer Pull began to display their use.

With the onset of the effects, Lin Ming felt a slight tingling sensation and his body began to purify.

The body of a martial artist, ever since it comes from the womb, would constantly be exposed to the contaminated houtian air of the world. This kind of air was contained in every breath, in the grains they ate, in the rivers and streams and lakes they drank from. It was inevitable that the impurities would accumulate in the body. The Golden Deer Pills contained a hint of xiantian air from the deer embryo, and thus they could purify the body.

Lin Ming lay in the wooden barrel for the entire night. The surface of the water began to shimmer with greasy dark oil. This was Lin Ming’s impurities! An aristocratic family’s junior would begin this process as early as twelve years of age. They would practice martial arts after their body had been tempered and purified. Soaking in baths of rare medicines were commonplace for them, and they naturally had fewer impurities in their body, and it would be much easier to integrate the soul force. Even if they were a grade three talent like Lin Ming, he would find it difficult to keep pace with these juniors.

At dawn, Lin Ming finally opened his eyes. The Golden Deer Pill had been completely absorbed by him, and his body had been purified.

Lin Ming again revolved the ‘True Chaos Primal Formula’. It really was easier to circulate the soul force in his body! Lin Ming also found something else; it seemed the soul force had spread throughout his entire body. This was the starting stage of the Second Stage of Body Transformation!

Lin Ming had finally reached the Second Stage of Body Transformation!

Chapter 27 – Examination, Start!

Chapter 27 – Examination, Start!

…

…

…

Lin Ming exhaled slowly in relief. He had already long reached the peak of Body Transformation's First Stage, and was only a small step away from reaching the Second Stage. Even without the Golden Deer Pill, it would only have been a matter of days before he reached the Second Stage.

Body Transformation's First Stage was strength training where true essence mainly concentrated in the in the muscles, and with the advent of the Second Stage of Body Transformation, it began to proliferate and spread throughout the body. Not only would ones strength increase, but the body's fortitude would also rise a notch. Although one wouldn't become invincible, it wouldn't be difficult to say that the sword that would have easily pierced you before would only give you a slight injury. The combat effectiveness would also increase by a small margin.

However, Zhu Yan had only been at the peak of Body Transformation's Third Stage half a year ago. He had only reached the Second Stage of Body Transformation, and even though it was with the power of the potent 'Primal Chaos Formula', compared to Zhu Yan, there was just too large a disparity between them. And this was discounting the half year that Zhu Yan had been training. He was a fourth grade talent, so his practice speed was similarly quick.

Although he had not slept yet, Lin Ming had just broken through and was feeling refreshed and not tired or drowsy at all. He immediately ran outside and headed towards the Zhou Mountains.

The Great Clarity Pavilion was a few miles distance from the glade that Lin Ming usually practiced at. Even running there at breakneck speed, it would have taken the time to burn two sticks of incense to cross the distance. But now that he had broken through to the Second Stage of Body Transformation, time it took was less than half. Lin Ming was exceptionally happy at this moment.

After he reached his usual spot, Lin Ming tossed his knapsack on the ground. In it was the materials for medicines and also bandages. The medicine was not the cheap stuff; they were all rare and precious medicines. Even the bandages had been steeped in black bone grass juice which provided an extra healing effect. With this kind of luxurious medicine, he did not have to worry about internal injuries. Lin Ming was able to enjoy practicing with all his heart.

Lin Ming ate a soul gathering pellet to increase the rate he absorbed true essence. Lin Ming began to practice both the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' and the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians.'

In Sky Spill Continent, within those that practiced martial arts, having the strength of a 1000 jins was considered a small accomplishment. Then the martial artist would go through Altering Muscle, Bone Forging, and Pulse Condensation. By the time the Body Transformation was completed, a martial artists strength could amount to 8000 jins, in which a small percent who were born with divine heavenly strength, there strength could amount to 10,000 jins.

This was the limit of strength. Even if one were a houtian master, their strength would not grow; they could only raise their true essence.

Then the after reaching xiantian, including the levels above, they would understand the true essence, and cultivate the soul. This was considered the correct path of martial arts.

But recorded in the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians', having a strength of 1000 jins was only a beginning. Those who just entered should reach 10,000 jins, and those with a small bit of accomplishments could reach 100,000 jins of strength. As for the strength of the highest cultivators, there was no way to estimate. If they opened the Eight Gates of Hidden Celestial stems after the Nine Stars Palace, the body could borrow power from the heavens and earth. Their feet would crack mountains; their fists would break the sky. That sort of strength was not even describable with a strength of 100,000 jins, it could only be at least a million jins or above.

When Lin Ming saw this in the memories, he could hardly believe it. If it had been two or three times stronger than normal then perhaps he might have, after all this was the legacy of countless millennia from the Realm of the Gods.

But this difference of several thousand times was just too unbelievable. He was able to recall in his memories that in the sects, the custodians that swept the entrance and the little children that ran amok would have the strength of several tens of thousands of jins of strength. As for the true disciples, their strength would be above 100,000 jins.

The memories were so detailed that Lin Ming was forced to believe them. Even if Marshal Qin Xiao was compared, he would not even be able to compare with a simple floor sweeper.

However this sort of strength was very remote to Lin Ming, because if it was said that the step from Tempering Marrow to Pulse Condensation was difficult, then the step from Tempering Marrow to opening the Eight Gates of Hidden Celestial Stems and the Nine Stars Palace was even more so. Let alone Lin Ming, from his memories he knew that these sects had many disciples that were stuck at this stage. Compared to the Sky Fortune Kingdom, it could be said to be more difficult than ascending from Houtian to Xiantian.

Lin Ming thought all this and took a deep breath. It was premature to consider these possibly. What he had to do now was practice the basic abilities of the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’, and at least achieve strength training’s stage of ‘Flowing like Silk’.

‘Flowing like Silk’, where one could punch a tree and leave the bark untouched while turning the inside to pulp!

However the elder's memories were a bit blurry here, Lin Ming had not yet reached this stage and could only attempt to decipher the secrets behind it himself.

…

In the southeast of Sky Fortune City, there was a squad of armed guards that stood on alert. A youth dressed in the finest silk clothing and with a fine long sword strapped to his waist stood in the corridor and looked around as if he were waiting for someone.

As soon as an incense of time passed, another young man wearing a mail armor and helmet walked down the end of the hallway. He seemed to be a bit over twenty years old. Although his stature was not princely, his step was calm and his breath relaxed; he appeared to be a master.

The young silk robed youth saw this man and smiled joyfully. He immediately welcomed him, "Elder brother, you've returned. Father will surely be happy. He was very satisfied with your successes on the frontier these past three years."

The silk robed youth was all smiles. He was the man who had lost 1000 taels of gold to Lin Ming and had his name read in reverse, Wang Yigao.

Wang Yigao had been pitiful. Although he had tried to suppress the news and prevent it from spreading, his father had still found out. Regarding this matter, General Wang was furious.

He was not angry that Wang Yigao made a gambling bet, but that he has lost. Not only did he lose, but he had lost to a boy at the First Stage of Body Transformation and had his name called in reverse! He was simply a great shame to the family name.

Wang Juzhu had issued an order that he be confined for two months, and had just exited.

The two month confinement had been rough on Wang Yigao's life. He could not eat meat, he could not go to the brothel, he could not lead his little minions to terrorize others, and had to read military classics and complete daily schoolwork.

Wang Yigao hated these things with a passion, and all this was due to Lin Ming. He simply could not swallow this aggrievement.

But Wang Yigao didn't know of a way to deal with Lin Ming. He did not have any real power with the army, nor could he defeat Lin Ming himself. As for those scoundrels that were his friends, not a one of them was Lin Ming's match. Moreover his father had cut off his purse so he did not have the means to hire someone. Simply put, there was nothing he could do to Lin Ming.

Until today that is. His elder brother came back And Wang Yigao almost cried. He felt that his opportunity had finally come; therefore he waited a long time for his brother to arrive so he could complain.

Wang Yiming looked at the pitiful Wang Yigao. The two were both sons of the main family, and hd the same father and mother. Naturally he understood his little brother. He said, "You waited for me to discuss the matter of that bet you lost." General Wang had admonished and punished Wang Yigao about this, so naturally he was very clear about it.

Wang Yigao looked up, "Elder brother is perceptive of the smallest details, truly fierce!...you do now know, that boy is just too arrogant. First he hit my servant and then cheated in the bet. Not only that but he insulted our army family...."

Wang Yiming listened and knew that his little brother was shameless and concocting irrational explanations. He impatiently said, "Cut the crap. You think I don't know what you want? You want me to take revenge for you?"

"Elder brother is truly an unparalleled hero; taking care of that guy is just like lifting a small finger..."

Wang Yiming said, "I am a dignified military commander, and you want me to help you get rid of some kid at the First Stage of Body Transformation. Is this a joke that I should laugh at?"

Wang Yigao smiled a little. “Yes it is a bit overkill. One must not use the oxen knife to kill a chicken. Elder brother do you not have four strong armed guards? Letting them go is also the same…”

“My father is the captain of Sky Fortune City’s armed forces. The throne is about to be passed down, now is a sensitive time. You want me to use the armed forces’ guards to make an arrest in the national capital? You actually want to commit this sort of absurb matter? What do you think the results will be? I think your two months of confinement were not long enough!” Wang Yiming yelled these words and paid no more attention to Wang Yigao. With a turn of his heel, he departed.

Wang Yigao was left standing there to stew in his resentment. He had not that that even his own brother would so loudly upbraid him! He clenched his fist and teeth until he was shaking. “F*ck! Never have I suffered such an injustice in Sky Fortune City. Lin Ming, if I do no cripple you then my last name is not Wang!”

…

…

Sunrise, sunset, fifty cloudy days quietly passed….

In the Zhou Mountains, a young boy was shadowboxing in a glade. The mountain wind howled, but the sounds coming from the young boys fists overshadowed the mountains.

“Bang!”

As soon as the youth punched the wooden pillar in front of him, a ‘peng’ rang into the air. Even though the wooden pillar had been infused with special medicines to make it more durable, it broke in half with that single fist.

As the punch finished, not even waiting for the dust to land, he whipped his leg downwards and split the wooden pillar in half.

“Although I still haven’t been able to figure out ‘Flow like Silk’, I still have reached some small success with the first stage of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ and my Body Transformation’s Second Stage has consolidated very well; my strength should be at least 2600 jins.” This youth was Lin Ming. In these fifty days, Lin Ming had been constantly training in the mountains. He had unlimited precious medicines and had taken twenty of the Soul Gathering Pellets. Because of this massive gold consumption, Lin Ming had also sold an inscription symbol to pay for them.

However, even with so many medicines, Lin Ming had still not been able to break through to the Third Stage of Body Transformation, Viscera Training. ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ focused on building a solid foundation; it wasn’t something where one hastily progressed.

“It’s been fifty days. Tomorrow will the Seven Profound Martial Houses entrance exam. I should have no problem in passing.” Lin Ming said as he picked up his clothes from a large rock. He also took a quick wash in the river.

Under the shining sun, Lin Ming’s muscles were symmetrically solid. The light made his skin gleam with luster, and it was filled with an aesthetic strength. He was like a supple cheetah at the peak of his power. Just from looking at this back, it was hard to believe that this was the physique and spirit of a young fifteen year old boy.

After washing himself, Lin Ming put on his clothes and left the mountain. He launched himself quickly like a falcon chasing after a rabbit, his speed like a flash of light, and in a few breaths he vanished into the boundless forest.

Chapter 28 – Conspiracy

Chapter 28 – Conspiracy

…

…

…

Every year, at the beginning of fall and the beginning of spring, the Seven Profound Martial House would have their examination of potential recruits. This was also the most important day of those youths of Sky Fortune Kingdom who cultivated in martial arts.

To them, the Seven Profound Martial house was the final goal. If they reached it, they could become a dragon that could touch the skies with a single bound.

By entering the Seven Profound Martial House, resources were important, but it was the inheritance and legacy skill manuals that everyone obsessed over.

The inherited skill manuals had accumulated over many years and in them was the culmination of experiences that all the preceding martial art seniors had learned. Without these experiences, then if one were to try and learn martial arts themselves, it truly would be a moron talking nonsense on the streets.

But the available skill manuals were always very popular and dependable, but the true highest quality genuine goods could only be found and inherited in the sects.

This method of inheritance was strictly controlled by the sects. If they were to discover even a hint that a disciple had revealed the secrets of their skill manuals, then a light punishment would be the destruction of their cultivation. A heavy punishment would result in instant execution.

It was very difficult to inherit skill manuals. They were inconceivably hard to transcribe and duplicate. The martial arts path way profound and esoteric. The flow of essence and the feelings that followed; the route of cultivation. These true essence gathering skills were unable to be described with words; therefor the true rare skill manuals were not recorded in books and were unable to be transcribed paper.

Skill manuals were usually recorded on jade slips. In a each small jade slip contained a wealth of mysterious and arcane information. Even a manual could only contain a general idea of what can be explained inside. If one wanted to engrave the mysteries onto a jade slip, one must have complete understanding of the skill manual. This was truly difficult to achieve even then, and moreover had to spend a great deal of time and energy.

The skill manual could also not be understood by everyone. Even if they attained the jade slip, they might not be able to decipher the mysteries. It was just like a bank that released golden banknotes. Although it was money, those who did not understand it could only use it as tissue.

Therefore the jade slips that contained these ancient manuals were very few, and could not be obtained no matter the price on the market. This was also the reason that the Seven Profound Martial House were able to cause young martial artists to go crazy with the desire to enter. However, these selecting conditions were harsh, and every year there were inevitably a massive number of aspiring martial artists that failed to be elected.

Lin Ming himself had the highest quality Body Transformation skill manual – the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’, so he naturally did not have any interest in the Seven Profound Martial Houses inheritance or legacies. The reason he desired to enter was not because of Lan Yunyue. After he had decided to devote his life to pursue the pinnacle of martial arts, the matter of Lan Yunyue could no longer cause turbulence in his heart.

Lin Ming desired to enter the Seven Profound Martial House because he needed the practice resources. The resources were not medicines or herbs, but were special areas where one could exercise. These areas special areas were either created through array arrangements, or were special environmental areas which were formed by Xiantian practitioners. They were able to allow humans to cultivate with twice the result and half the effort.

But most important were martial skills. Martial skills were critical to a martial artist as they were directly linked to their level of combat strength.

Lin Ming also knew a few martial skills that he had absorbed from the elder's memory fragment. In those memories were three or four martial skills he had seen, but they were incomplete. The truth was that even though those martial skills were incomplete, they were in fact the top tier martial skills even in the Realm of the Gods. Needless to say even those incomplete versions were far superior to those of Sky Fortune Kingdom's.

But it was a pity that those three to four martial skills that Ling Ming knew were impossible to practice from the start. To even dare begin practicing them, he would need to be at least at the Xiantian stage. In those memories, the weakest of the martial skills were able to destroy mountains with a single stroke, let alone killing people, it would probably be easy to destroy the entire Sky Fortune capital city.

This sort of martial skill was almost an alien language to Lin Ming.

Therefor Lin Ming needed to take this entrance exam and enter the Seven Profound Martial House. He also had to attain a good result as with every year, the candidates with the top results were always richly rewarded.

Perhaps it was precious medicines or rare treasures. These medicines were often produced from within the sect – the Seven Profound Valleys. In Sky Fortune City, not even the richest man could buy these.

Even the juniors of aristocratic families would drool with envy at these coveted rewards. Lin Ming was also tempted. Before, his strength was low so he had low expectations, but at the present, the situation had turned so he had high aspirations for them!

At the first day of autumn, the square of the Seven Profound Martial House already had a sea of people crowded inside. Because there were too many candidates that would come to apply, the examination would always begin at sunrise and continue all day.

Lin Ming and Lin Xiaodong had not entered the square yet but were on the major road outside. Although there were relatively less people here, Lin Ming's ears still buzzed with the sound of discussion.

"They say that this time there are several top tier talents that have come, included that number one talent Wang Yanfeng. Fifteen years old, grade four talent, and his cultivation has already stepped into the Third Stage of Body Transformation. Truly a formidable man"

"Isn't it weird? Why would he not enter the Seven Profound Martial House earlier? Why didn't he come during the spring entrance exam?"

"I guess his goal is the Heavenly Abode. As soon he enters the Seven Profound Martial House he wants to enter the Heavenly Abode. How aggressive of him!"

"Hm, the Heavenly Abode is absolutely impossible. The only one these past years to enter the Heavenly Abode was Qin Xingxuan. The lowest cultivation for the Heavenly Abode is the peak of the Third Stage of Body Transformation, and usually inside are those at the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation. Not even this Wang Yanfeng has the qualifications to enter. I think the reason he waited such a long time is to take the entrance exam reward for first place."

Heavenly Abode....

Lin Ming muttered in his heart. Half a year ago Zhu Yan had relied on his peak of Body Transformation's Third Stage to enter the Heavenly Abode. Without a doubt, Zhu Yan's strength was truly outstanding even among those of equal cultivation. He could absolutely not be compared to a sack of potatoes like Wang Yigao.

As Lin Ming was lost in thought, he suddenly felt the gaze of someone fall on his body. Was someone observing him?

In the large crowd, there were many that were looking at him, but the average person could simply not discover these people and their intentions. But Lin Ming had practiced the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ so his perception was acutely keen, and even with so many people, he could feel a cold eye staring his way.

He pretended to be nonchalant as he turned his head. There was a blue carriage at the origin of that sight, but when Lin Ming turned to look the carriage’s curtain dropped back down.

Lin Ming sighed in his heart. He had not even begun the entrance exam and there were probably people plotting against him…

At this moment in the blue carriage, a youth in silk clothing and another gloomy looking youth were sitting inside. It was Wang Yigao and Zhu Yan.

“He…he won’t discover us.” Wang Yigao had been frightened the last time by Lin Ming. Even though he claimed publically that he wanted revenge, he was afraid of Lin Ming. Those three moves that caused him to suffer defeat had left a dark mark on his heart and tanked his self-confidence.

Zhu Yan frostily said, “Stop being so scared and suspicious, there are many people here, it’s not as if he has eyes on the back of his head. This guy, he even managed to break through to the Second Stage of Body Transformation!”

The gap between the First Stage and Second Stage of Body Transformation was not small. A fifteen year old that could achieve this was not simple, especially when considering Lin Ming and his poor family background and mere Third Grade talent.

“I think the guy probably practiced like a freak, otherwise there is no way. Even I only hit the Second Stage when I was sixteen years old. He probably overtaxed his body and received some permanent internal injuries. This kind of idiot, in a few years he won’t be any different from a vegetable.”

Wang Yigao viciously cursed. Zhu Yan despised this sycophant in his heart. Even with so many rare medicines supporting him he only hit the Second Stage when he was sixteen years old. Not only that, but his combat level a completely weak mess. If his father wasn't Sky Fortune City's army major, then Zhu Yan would be disinclined to even bother paying attention to him.

Zhu Yan said, "According to common sense it would be impossible for him to achieve this stage. Overtaxing the body and receiving internal injuries, then he would sooner or later be disabled, but if he had the support of 1000 gold taels, then it would be less certain...."

Hearing Zhu Yan say this, Wang Yigao's face instantly turned bright red. He thought that Zhu Yan did not know of the gambling matter, but it seemed he already did. Was there anyone who didn't!?

Damn! Damn it all! He really disgraced his grandmother!

Zhu Yan paid no attention to Wang Yigao. His expression was gloomy. Generally speaking, a sixteen year old boy, if his cultivation had surpassed the Third Stage of Body Transformation then he would enter the Seven Profound Martial House. Many disciples in respected families entered like this. To them, the massive amount of rare and precious medicinal herbs supported them, so this was not too difficult.

Regarding these matters, the Seven Profound Martial House did not mind the family helping. After all this too was part of a martial artist's strength. Family Background was equivalent to talent. Whether by virtue of their own talent, or virtue of medicines helping them, they were a master martial artist and could expand the strength and influence of the Seven Profound Martial House.

Those who relied on medicines had hopes to enter the Seven Profound Martial House, much less Lin Ming who's combat ability surpassed someone from the same rank, so his chances of entering were higher.

Zhu Yan did not want Lin Ming to enter the Seven Profound Martial House. He didn't fear Lin Ming surpassing him, after all he was only a Third Grade talent. Zhu Yan had absolute confidence in himself. Even if Zhu Yan jumped a level or defeated Wang Yigao it was no big deal. After all Wang Yigao was only at the Second Stage of Body Transformation and his combat level was piss poor.

He was confident that he would always keep Lin Ming under his boot. But if Lin Ming were to enter it would definitely arouse some mighty waves in Lan Yunyue's heart.

Lan Yunyue had not forgotten her former friendship with Lin Ming. Would it be the same if he entered the Seven Profound Martial House? Zhu Yan liked Lan Yunyue; half of this was because of her temperament and lovely appearance, and the other half was because of his possessiveness of all good things. He was absolutely unable to tolerate any other man being in Lan Yunyue's heart.

Because of his family, Zhu Yan had a small connection to the Royal Family, so he had some connections to the Seven Profound Martial House. However, the Martial House's inspections were a very public matter so it was impossible to prevent Lin Ming from entering. So the only plan that he had left was…to not let him participate in the entrance exam.

Chapter 29 – Overturn the Cavalry

Chapter 29 – Overturn the Cavalry

…

…

…

Zhu Yan pondered as he traced the ring on his finger. He said, “Brother Wang, Sky Fortune City is your domain, what kind of connections do you not have? Naturally you associate with superior individuals that are at the Fourth Stage or even the peak of the Fourth Stage.” Zhu Yan suspected that Lin Ming had a solid foundation and was stronger than he appeared. It would be impossible to have an expert at the peak of the Third Stage deal with him in an easy manner; it would be best to jump straight up and look for someone at the Fourth Stage to send him off.

Wang Yigao said, “I know many masters at the Fourth Stage, but…they are the guards of my father or brother. Because of the previous matter, my father already issued a decree. Now no one listens to me.”

People at the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation were usually not some fresh spring flower. This sort of person tended to be over thirty years old and often occupied a high position, or were some powerful persons personal guard. By Wang Yigao’s ability, asking them to deal with a fifteen year old boy was just not possible.

Zhu Yan thought of this and said to Wang Yigao, “This Seven Profound Martial House inspection, isn’t the one policing it Zhao Mingshan? He seems to have received a promotion from your father recently.”

Wang Yigao was surprised, but he nodded and said. “There is such a matter. Brother Zhao is usually very nice to me.” Zhu Yan had heard from others that Zhao Mingshan was the captain of Sky Fortune City’s Police Force. The City Police Force and the City Protection Army were two parts of a system. The City Police force was responsible for public security, such as catching thieves and maintaining law and order, and the City Protection Army was responsible for maintaining the emperor’s ruling power and suppressing rebellion.

“Ah, I know… I have an idea to make a cripple of you Lin Ming…” Zhu Yan peeked through the carriage curtain, and stared at Lin Ming like a poisonous serpent as his face began to darken.

…

Seven Profound Martial House’s inspections were divided into three parts, the Strength Trial, the Dream Trial, and the Exquisite Pagoda.

This morning was the first test, the Strength Trial.

Strength Training was the First Stage of Body Transformation. It was also the foundation of martial arts. If Strength Training was not solid, then the later stages of Flesh Training, Viscera Training, Altering Muscle and Bone Forging would all become useless.

Therefore, strength was very important to martial artists. The measurement for strength was also relatively simple. As long as the trial was done well, then a large number of applicants could be eliminated.

Because of this, for the last several years the Seven Profound Martial House had placed the inspection of strength as the first test.

The test was a special stone structure the height of a man. There was a beam of light at the top that was formed by true essence. As long as someone punched the stone, the beam would transmit a light that signaled the person’s strength. An inch high beam of light would be a bit less than 100 jin. If one managed a beam of light a foot high, then it would be 1000 jin and one would qualify. Anything below that was instant elimination.

But Body Transformation's peak of the First Stage of Strength Training was usually around nine stones. It was enough to break iron wood, but generally martial artists at the First Stage had around 900 jins of strength so they had a difficult time passing the first trial.

Lin Ming had already surpassed a thousand jins of strength early on in the First Stage. Presently he was a bit stronger than 2600 jins. This was because of the overwhelming prestige of the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians.' Naturally in this test, strength was his forte, and he would be able to fight for first place.

In the square, the trial had not yet started. Lin Ming was meditating on a stone platform off the road and controlling his breath.

Suddenly a rapid burst of sound came as a loud voice shouted, "Out of the way! Out of the way!"

Lin Ming opened his eyes and was surprised to see a twenty year old man bolting down the road on a horse. He wore thick shiny armor and his hand was a two meter long lance as thick as a child's arm. He dispersed the crowed by waving the lance around with one hand while wielding a horsewhip with the other.

"Dadada." The sound of the hoof beat was crisp in the air, and the people in the crowded major road scattered. Lin Ming frowned. Today was the date of Seven Profound Martial House's entrance exam. Sky Fortune City would send the City Police force here to maintain order. How did they allow someone to wildly buck into the crowd?

Lin Ming soon noted that although this person was aggressive in his manner as he waved his lance around, he actually did not bump into anyone. It looked as though this man's martial arts was decent, and he was also skilled at horse riding.

Lin Ming originally sat on the roadside, and did not get up. But at this moment he saw that the men sinisterly smile, and flicked his reins and turned and galloped towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's expression sank. He realized that this man was coming for him! The horse was coming faster and faster towards him. Not only was the man wearing armor, but the thick and long lance in his hand was at least 100 jins. In addition to the speed of the horses sprint, that lance would be able to pierce through a wall!

When he was less than ten meters away, the lance in the man's hand began to glow with a faint yellow light.

Martial Skill!

'They really think much of me, to actually use a martial skill.' Lin Ming thought as his eyes turned ice cold. He slightly opened his right and as the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' quickly revolved in him. Lin Ming's perception instantly reached the maximum limit. In his eyes, the lance speed had slowed down, and the noisy hoof beats disappeared.

When the man was within three meters, Lin Ming sprung from a sitting position, and he unexpectedly moved towards the man. Lin Ming had not attempted to dodge, but stretched out both hands and grasped the lance!

A hundred jin lance, a horses barreling force, it could even break down a tree. And this boy actually used his hands to grab it?!

With the lance in hand, Lin Ming circulated true essence throughout his hands and feet. His right foot took one step back and braced against the stone platform, and with both hands pulling, more than 2600 jins of strength instantly erupted!

"Up!"

Lin Ming called out, and the arms holding the lance suddenly rose up. The man only felt a brief sensation of strength as he was directly lifted from his lance and thrown off like a ragdoll!

The man felt dizzy, and there was a whistling sound in his eyes as his vision blurred from twirling in the air. The next moment he impacted the ground directly from behind with a malicious pain. His organs seemed to have misplaced themselves as he crashed into a tree and spit up a mouthful of blood.

Lin Ming tossed aside the 100 jin lance in his hand and sat back down. This man only had the strength of the Second Stage of Body Transformation. Although he also had the support from the horse, but compared with the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' that Lin Ming practiced, it was far from enough!

The crowd that had been watching was simply speechless. This man in armor had sprint at him with full speed but was still lifted up and tossed aside by Lin Ming! This youth was simply a vicious monster in human form!

Zhu Yan had been watching this scene from afar on his carriage. His face became increasingly gloomy. Wang Yigao this useless rice bucket! Even that person he knew was nothing more than a walking potato! He also had the strength of the horse supporting him yet he was the own that was thrown away!

However he had also expected this result. He just didn't think that Lin Ming's counter attack would have been so unexpectedly fierce.

Just then, a crowd of noisy footsteps could be heard approaching. "What the hell is going on, someone dares to attack others in public?!"

As soon as Lin Ming looked up, it was actually Wang Yigao that had brought a crowd to the scene. He sneered in his heart. Obviously this man had planned well for this.

Wang Yigao looked at the man who had been flung away by Lin Ming and he felt his heart jump. This strength was truly terrifying. But his mind calmed as he remembered the crowd of people he brought to support him. Wang Yigao was emboldened; he clenched his teeth and looked at Lin Ming ferociously. "Lin Ming you bastard. Again and again you fight my men! I already wasn't going to quibble over these small details with you, but this time you have gone too far!"

“Go! Bring him to me! Take him on! Kill him and I will take responsibility!” Wang Yigao heroically waved his arm. But unexpectedly, even after he gave the code word, no one moved!

Kill him and you will be responsible? What a shitty joke! If he kills us will you also be responsible!?

The majority of the crowed was only at the First Stage of Body Transformation and a few of them were at the Second Stage. However, they could be considered weaker than someone at the same stage. They had all seen the horrifying image of Lin Ming throwing off the man on a horse and it had been etched into their minds. Wasn’t trying to bring him down just courting death?

Lin Ming smiled and said, “How, after three months, have you group of lap dog minions not improved?”

Chapter 30 – Beating the General's Son

Chapter 30 – Beating the General's Son

…

…

…

As soon as Lin Ming mentioned three months, Wang Yigao lit on fire. This was the greatest humiliation that he had ever experienced in his life! "What are you waiting for! Go! Do you want me to deal with you later!?"

In this group of minions that followed Wang Yigao, there were those who bullied men and harassed women. Wang Yigao was the one who acted as their high umbrella! If Wang Yigao decided to kick them to the curb, not only would they not be protected, but there would be others who would take revenge and ferret out all of their criminal records. They would have no place left in Sky Fortune City.

Thinking of this, the group of people braced themselves and decided to bite the bullet. They did not dare to attack him and instead just rushed up to take a blow.

Lin Ming's eyes were cold. He used his right foot and picked up the lance. Firmly grasping it with his hand, he waved it towards the group of rushing minions. Each time he swept it towards them it was as if he were sweeping chickens! Five to six people flew into the air with each wave.

Moans of sorrow and pain began to linger in the air. These weaklings were truly pathetic; as soon as they hit the ground they began groaning.

Seeing this, Lin Ming did not have the words to say anything. He just lightly swept them, not even using a quarter of his strength, it shouldn't have hurt this much.

Although these small idiots were all just sacks of rice and were acting, when Lin Ming mowed down seven or eight people each time, it shocked bystanders, and they began to crowd around him.

In a flash, the only one left was Wang Yigao, who had begun panicking and sliding backwards. Seeing Lin Ming walk towards him, his outwards appearance was fierce, but he was close to fainting. He said, “Lin Ming what do you want!? I warn you not to act too rashly or else your death will be very ugly.”

Lin Ming looked at him as if he were some kind of bug and coldly said, “Even rotten leaves have clear veins. As someone who practices martial arts how could you lose your backbone like a coward? You bother me over and over, I’ve already put up with you twice. If I put up with you again, then for what reasons did I practice martial arts?”

As Lin Ming said this, he instantly arrived in front of Wang Yigao. Wang Yigao’s goose hairs rose and almost pissed his pants. He had one thought on his mind; this Lin Ming, was he crazy?! He dares to hit me!?

“You dare!? My father is…………!”

Wang Yigao screamed pitifully as Lin Ming punched his stomach. Lin Ming’s fist contained a hidden energy. Although he hadn’t achieved ‘Flow like Silk’, but he drew one step to achieve a hard and gentle movement. The fist’s energy penetrated into Wang Yigao’s organs and he coughed up a mouthful of blood.

Lin Ming used his other hand, aimed it, and slapped Wang Yigao’s right cheek with a ‘pa’ sound. Wang Yigao spun like a spinning top and fell with plop on the ground, seeing stars.

One side of his lip was split open by Lin Ming’s palm and a tooth had fallen out.

“You… you…” Wang Yigao covered his mouth. He looked at his bloody hands and his eyes turned red with anger. He had grown up in the general’s office since childhood and no one had ever dared to hit him. He stretched out his blood-stained trembling finger at Lin Ming. “I… I will kill you!”

“Kill me? Perhaps you won’t have this opportunity.” Lin Ming stepped forwards, his hand holding the lance. A murderous intent began to flow from him.

Feeling this killing intent and seeing that his neck was less than half a foot from the lance, Wang Yigao’s high confidence and anger completely shattered. He tumbled onto the floor and began crawling away as fast as he could while screaming, “Murder!”

Lin Ming knew that in the broad daylight he could not kill the son of the general. Although that punch was filled with a concealed energy, it was a very slow non-fatal attack and only let Wang Yigao feel pain. As for his split lip, although it would hurt, it could be cured with some medicines.

But on the main road, more hoof beats began to resound. Lin Ming looked and saw that a thirty year old man had arrived. He had a mustache and wore the clothes of a captain, with a sword hung on his waist. He rode here swiftly, and behind him were several additional officers.

Seeing these officers, it was as if Wang Yigao had seen the light. He shouted loudly, “Save me, he wants to kill me!” Then he rushed towards them.

Lin Ming saw these officers and he frowned. He suddenly understood the purpose of Wang Yigao’s actions. His goal had been to stir up some trouble. The truth was, he had not expected the man on the horse or even his minions could do anything to hurt him, but he had wanted to create some trouble so that the government that maintained the Seven Profound Martial House entrance examination would come and arrest him themselves.

Once he was arrested, he would miss the entrance exam. He might even be sentenced and jailed.

“What’s going on here?” The captain Zhao Mingshan said. He was thirty five years old and was at the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation and also held the post of the captain of the Sky Fortune City Police Force.

Zhao Mingshan asked those that were crawling on the ground like pitiful bugs. Those that were wounded began to crawl towards him as if they were re-energized. This was something that Lin Ming had already guessed earlier. They began to point at Lin Ming all at once. “He beat us up! He was plotting to kill our young master!”

“Your honor, please look at our bodies injuries. That guy was fighting with a lance, I luckily had quick reflexes and only received a bone fracture.” A man lifted up his shirt. A big blue line on the chest was visible.

Right now Lin Ming was also holding the lance. It could be said that ‘the evidence was conclusive.’

“Big brother Zhao, you have to call the shots for me, ah.” As soon as Wang Yigao opened his mouth, blood began to froth out. This fellow was just too pitiful, he totally did not have a dignified appearance.

Zhao Mingshan quickly handed over medicine to Wang Yigao. As the captain, Zhao Mingshan always kept medicine with him. Naturally it was not anything that was of low value. Even as he was howling and sobbing, Wang Yigao wiped the medicine on his mouth. The medicine was effective and Wang Yigao’s pain was alleviated just a little.

“Big brother Zhao, you must get justice for me!” Wang Yigao looked at Lin Ming with hatred. He did not think that Lin Ming would hit him! He decided that he would kill him. He would just need to get him in a jail cell and then he would find some way to deal with him. Kill him, cripple him, there would be no way to escape!

No, killing him was too easy. It was best to let him wallow in suffering!

This kind of matter was not something that Wang Yigao’s father cared about. He had lost the bet, and lost to a young boy at the First Stage, and had only gotten his name reversed. Wang Junzhu was of course furious about this.

And this bullying that also crippled several civilians, as long as he didn't cause his family to lose face, then Wang Junzhu would simply not pay attention. Thinking that he might possibly react to this matter was not necessary.

Thinking of this, Wang Yigao felt his heart finally be relieved. Although he had been hit, the pain was temporary. What was most important was that he release the anger in his chest. It was as brother Zhu had planned. As long as they could write 'the truth' of the incident, then they could use the hand of authority to oppress others!

Zhao Mingshan was not a fool. He had been in the Police Force for many years. He had been made captain because he was also smart and quick on his feet. He only looked at the scene and accurately guessed the majority of the situation. This young boy had offended the general's house. Although he might have only given him a hard time, this young boy had injured someone from the general's house to this degree; he estimated his life was over.

As a captain, he had to be cognizant of the influence of Sky Fortune City's major players. Zhao Mingshan's position in the government wasn't high; he absolutely could not stir up these powers, so like this, Zhao Mingshan had learned to survive in the cracks. With a matter like this in his hands, who was wrong and who was right, he did not look at the facts but at their backgrounds.

Not only did Wang Yigao's father, a general of the armed forces, promote him, but even if he did not then he would still have to look at General Wang's big name.

Wang Yigao may not amount to anything in the main house, and he may have been disciplined if he was inside, but he was outside now and so there were the concerns of face. If Zhao Mingshan gave the right order, then it would suggest that he was not one of General Wang's men.

In his heart he understood these things, so he was resolute in his decision. His waved his hand and an officer moved out and began to inspect the injuries of the men on the floor. He then inspected Lin Ming's lance, contrasted them with the scars, and said, "Yes, these wounds are from the lance."

Zhao Mingshan nodded and said to Lin Ming, “Name?”

Lin Ming already guessed what Zhao Mingshao had prepared to do. He defiantly stared at Zhao Mingshan and frankly replied, “Lin Ming.”

Looking in Lin Ming’s eyes, Zhao Mingshan felt a faint feeling of contempt that made him uncomfortable. He was also not feeling well as he said, “The evidence is conclusive, what do you have to say for yourself?”

“The evidence is conclusive?” Lin Ming sneered, “Have you tried asking the bystanders? You only listen to the statements of Wang Yigao’s party?”

Zhao Mingshan frowned, and thought that this fellow was not clear in the head. As soon as he appeared he had guessed that events would develop along this path, but now it looked as if this boy’s death was looming over him and he was still joking. This boy, why did he have to hit Wang Yigao? Did he not know that his father was the leader of Sky Fortune City’s armed guard forces?

Although General Wang did not tolerate the idiocy of his son, and would even punish him frequently, this did not represent that he would allow others to hit his son, as that was equal to slapping him on the face.

This boy Lin Ming couldn’t also be anyone with a background....looking at his clothes only confirmed that. This must have been some sort of personal matter.

Zhao Mingshan sighed and said, “I will certainly question the bystanders, but first I ask that you return with me to the office to record an oral confession. I will have someone stay here to record statements. You will be kept there until the examination is over.” As long as people were not stupid, they would not fight with the government and speak out of turn. If someone decided to have a big mouth, then they wouldn’t have a pleasant result.

“Let’s go!” As soon as Zhao Mingshan waved his hand, two officers walked up, twining rope around their hands. Wang Yigao revealed a fiendish grin on his face. ‘Fight with me? Haha, let’s see how you die now!’

As Lin Ming saw the two officers approach with rope in hand, Lin Ming shook his sleeves and coldly said, “You want to tie me up, but once you do, there won’t be a good outcome for you.”

Chapter 31 – Regretting Capture

Chapter 31 – Regretting Capture

…

…

…

As Lin Ming saw the two officers approach with rope in hand, Lin Ming shook his sleeves and coldly said, "You want to tie me up, but once you do, there won't be a good outcome for you."

"You want to get out of this situation? Don't even think about it! Once you're in my hands you'll never escape, haha!" Wang Yigao happily laughed to himself a few hundred times as the success of the situation got to his head. Even though he was the one that was injured, his smile was unsightly and moreover these would clearly contained the suggestion that he wanted some sort of 'accident' to befall Lin Ming in jail…

Wang Yigao turned his head and saw that Zhao Mingshan was staring at him with an ugly and disgusted expression on his face. Wang Yigao coughed, said with a bit of embarrassment, "Brother Zhao, I will let you investigate the situation. I was just a bit angry and overreacted. This little rat was just too damn arrogant."

Lin Ming dusted himself and said to Zhao Mingshan, "It is your responsibility to ensure the public safety of the Seven Profound Martial House entrance exam. Someone had just tried to run me through on this main road with a lance and you did not come, someone tried to plot my death by getting a bunch of morons to beat me and leave me disabled, and you did not come. And yet when I finally fight back with the lance, you finally come? And you don't even attempt to ask the crowd watching any questions and single handedly decided that I was the guilty one, are you playing with me?"

Lin Ming spoke, pronouncing each word unhurriedly, and each word was punishing and caused Zhao Mingshan's heart to sink. This kid really had some guts. How could he be so calm in this situation? What was he relying on?

Zhao Mingshan looked at Lin Ming and decided that he couldn't drag this matter on any further and began to say angrily, "This is official business! It's not up to the likes of you to comment on the process. Tie him up!"

When he issued the order, the rope had already wrapped tightly around Lin Ming's neck. Even though Lin Ming was capable, Zhao Mingshan was already at the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation, so he did not resist.

At this moment a familiar voice cried out from the crowed. "Make way, let me through!"

Lin Ming looked up and was surprised to see a plump youth twisting and squeezing his way past the mob of people. In his hand was a rattling lunch box. It was Lin Xiaodong. When Lin Ming had been meditating just a moment ago, Lin Xiaodong had gone to buy breakfast, and had just arrived back to see a commotion.

As soon as Lin Xiaodong saw the rope wrapped around Lin Ming's neck, his heart was suddenly inflamed. "Sh*t! Why the hell did you fuckers tie him up?!"

Zhao Mingshan did not know where this brave fat boy came from, and was preparing to wave the command to throw him away, when in the corner of his eye he saw light spark of light. As he turned his head he saw that a faint fire had ignited in Lin Ming's hand.

Sound transmitting talisman?

Zhao Mingshan's eyes widened. The talisman could record voices and transfer them; they were used to communicate. This boy had obviously used it just now without their knowledge and had recorded their conversation and transmitted it!

This guy!

Zhao Mingshan felt an inexplicable chill in the air as he looked at this youth. Today he had offended him, later he would come looking for revenge. It seemed he really did have to tolerate Wang Yigao's idiotic plans and kill him, otherwise there would be no end to his future troubles.

But…Who has he transmitted the talisman to?

Lin Ming had naturally sent the talisman to Mister Muyi. Previously, Muyi and Lin Ming had exchanged tips about inscription techniques and had become good friends. Muyi had told him that as long as there was the Martial Quarters, then he could guarantee his absolute safety in Sky Fortune City. As long as there was any trouble, he could just send a talisman to inform him.

Although Lin Ming was brave and courageous, he was not a hothead who would let his impulses rashly dictate his actions without paying attention to the possible consequences. Before he had struck Wang Yigao, he already had a plan for this situation. He wasn't going to let a little matter like this be something that could stop him, he would just simply owe Muyi a future favor.

Although Muyi was in the government and serving the court as the Crown Prince's tutor, he was not a court official. In his heart he was still a man of the world, and those that dwelled in that world valued loyalty and friendship above all else. Muyi was not a man who spoke or agreed to anything easily or thoughtlessly. When he had asked to be Lin Ming's friend, he had said so with all the conviction in his heart.

Hearing the recording from the sound transmitting talisman, Muyi had a good grasp of the situation that was occurring. He sighed with disgust. He had always been disgusted by the government officials or lesser officers who curried favor with powerful people. Not to mention that Lin Ming was his close friend, behind him was also a unfathomable master. Even if he were not related to this matter, he would still meddle in it.

Muyi was lax when it came to keeping up with all the bureaucratic nonsense, and didn't know many powerful people who could immediately handle this situation. The only one he could think of to deal with this was his student – the Crown Prince Yang Lin.

He sent a sound transmitting talisman to Yang Lin. Crown Prince Yang Lin had always deeply admired and respected his teacher. If Muyi requested a matter of him, he would naturally do everything possible to carry it out. So Yang Lin then sent a personal message to the minister of the Police Department.

The Emperor and the Crown prince used a unique purple gold sound transmitting talisman. At this moment, the minister was hugging a concubine and giggling and laughing while enjoying some romantic times with her. As soon as he saw the purple gold flash, he immediately rolled out of his chair.

This message was from the Crown Prince's sound transmitting talisman!

After he learned the reason why the Crown Prince had sent him a message, the minister felt as if someone had smashed a rock on his head. His legs turned to jelly and he felt suffocated as he said, "Forgive this lowly one for not being strict, my supervision was truly lacking." Each word he said caused his heart to skip a beat.

He certainly knew what sort of person Zhao Mingshan was. He was part of the General Wang's palace guard and the youth was a boy of indeterminate background. It was easy to see how Zhao Mingshan would handle this matter, but… this boy was unexpectedly a person of the Crown Prince!

Zhao Mingshan, you are your mom's drop dead bastard! You actually made I, your father, suffer such a mess!

…

"Like hell! Why did you tie him up!?" Lin Xiaodong huffed and puffed. Zhao Mingshan waved his hand and pointed at Lin Xiaodong, "Obstructing official business and insulting the captain of the Police Force! Officers, tie him up for me!"

Zhao Mingshan sent two officers to grab Lin Xiaodong. The officers were mostly at the Second Stage of Body Transformation, and they were not some walking potatoes like Wang Yigao; they had solid foundations and combat training.

Lin Xiaodong was only at the First Stage. But even though he could not resist, he still struggled a bit and screamed like an angry duck, “You dare to touch me!? You remember my face! I’ll pay this back to you with full interest!”

“Shut his mouth!” Zhao Mingshan said a bit frantically, and a man gagged Lin Xiaodong with a cloth strip between his lips. The result was that the steady stream of curses became an inaudible whining sound.

“Let’s go!” As soon as Zhao Mingshan waved his hand, they trotted down the road with Lin Ming and Lin Xiaodong strapped to the horses’ backs. In just a bit of time they were already several miles down the road.

Wang Yigao was behind them, he suddenly laughed and said, “Brother Zhao, put them down, let’s drag them through.”

He wanted to drag the two men behind the galloping horses. It was interesting, but Zhao Mingshan did not answer. At this moment, there was suddenly a red light in front of him that burst into a mass of light. It was a sound transmitting talisman.

The sound transmitting talisman directly transmitted the sounds to one’s mind, other’s would not be able to hear it.

The flash dissipated. Zhao Mingshan’s voice rang with the sound of the minister of the Police Department roaring at him at maximum volume. “F*ck your mom and listen to me! Release those people! Do you even know who is behind that boy!? It is the Crown Prince! Did you want to fucking revolt against me!? You even dare to touch someone that is the Crown Prince’s person!? Your fucking mom, do you even know how to spell the character ‘dead’?! If you want to die don’t drag me down with you! Zhao Mingshan, I swear to you if anyone comes troubling me I will kill you myself!!”

Zhao Mingshan was scolded so loudly that he thought his head would explode. His whole body stiffened and his mind blanked....Crown Prince?

Zhao Mingshan suddenly stopped the horses and looked to Lin Ming with his jaw agape. Lin Ming was also looking at him at him the same calm and indifferent eyes that he been all along, like he were some ordinary clown.

He remembered the sound transmitting talisman that Lin Ming had sent out... that was for the Crown Prince!?

What sort of existence was the Crown Prince? He was just a young police captain! He would probably never encounter anything that was related to the Crown Prince in his life! His heart was shocked with unspeakable words.

He finally understood the meaning behind Lin Ming's gaze.

"I do say, Brother Zhao, now is a good time. There isn't anyone watching, so in any case, let's drag them along, they shouldn't die." Wang Yigao said with a smile and a 'heh heh'.

I'll fucking drag your mom! When he heard Wang Yigao speak this nonsense he had an urge to draw his sword and chop him in half! If it weren't for this idiot then how could he have fallen into this predicament!?

"Everyone dismount. Release them."

As soon as Zhao Mingshan ordered this, his men were shocked. Wang Yigao was also shocked.

Release them?

Wang Yigao was not a total fool. He thought to that sound transmitting talisman; was it related?

However Zhao Mingshan said nothing else besides the order. Wang Yigao was very unhappy about this turn of events and was preparing to argue, but at that moment, another sound transmitting talisman also burst into flames in front of him. As soon as he heard the message, Wang Yigao almost dropped to the floor. This was the sound transmitting talisman that his father personally sent out! It only had a few words, “Return immediately to me!”

Wang Yigao was able to feel the chill in his father’s tone. He had no doubt that when he returned, he would be in for a world of pain.

Since one party was the Crown Prince’s person and the other party was the son of General Wang, the Police Department naturally sent out a sound transmitting talisman to explain the situation to General Wang. General Wang hadn’t felt such anger before. The throne was changing, and it was a sensitive time, and this Wang Yigao decided to annoy the Crown Prince! Although he didn’t know what connection this boy had to the Crown Prince, even if it was too much! Because of a small matter, it was enough for the Crown Prince to decide to select someone else for his position and remove him! He really wanted to kill this good-for-nothing son!

Zhao Mingshan saw Wang Yigao freeze with terror at receiving the sound transmitting talisman. He immediately barked at his men, “Why are you still holding them, release them now!”

After being reprimanded, the men began to panic. They went to untie the rope, but Lin Ming sneered, “You want to tie me up, so you tied me up. Now you want release me? I already told you; once you do, there won’t be a good outcome for you.”

Chapter 32 – Oppress with Others' Power

Chapter 32 – Oppress with Others' Power

…

…

…

Zhao Mingshan gaped at Lin Ming. He recalled that Lin Ming had once said the words 'You want to tie me up, but once you do, there won't be a good outcome for you.'

Faced with such a superior backing, Zhao Mingshan had no choice but to lower his head and play as a dog for this boy. Even though this was a heavy loss of face for him, it was nothing in comparison to keeping his own little life.

Zhao Mingshan immediately changed his countenance. His whole face locked up with a forced smile as he said, "It appears that we accidently fished out two dragon kings. These two fellow brothers, today was truly just a silly misunderstanding. I hope you can show some mercy and overlook my transgressions. You people, quickly untie these two fellows!"

Although he hadn't been untied yet, Lin Xiaodong's gag cloth was taken out, and he was a bit perplexed. But Lin Ming had given him all sorts of surprises these days, so he adapted quickly.

Was it that elusive and mysterious master that Lin Ming had spoken of?

To Lin Xiaodong, such a powerful and mighty being was only a foreign concept to him. But in any case, with someone like that backing them up, he had no need to fear these idiots!

“F*ck your whole family, f*ck your mom and your family you little mother fuckers!” Lin Xiaodong let out a string of epithets as the officers struggled to unwind the ropes that bound his large body. They were pushed aside by Lin Xiaodong as he rolled around.

“You think that you tie me up and let me go whenever you want?” Lin Xiaodong had originally suffered a loss of face, but now that he had the upper hand, he naturally would return the favor.

Zhao Mingshan had nothing he could do but to take the words and suffer silently. He smiled and painstakingly said, “Little brothers, I was blind and foolish, would you be merciful and overlook these matters today? I would truly be grateful if you somehow allow us to compensate you...”

Lin Xiaodong crooked his neck. These officers of the Police Department only had a tiny salary with a bit of gold that they scraped up off the books. Lin Xiaodong did not have a liking for any of this money, so what was the point of offering it to him?

At this time, Lin Xiaodong happened to see Wang Yigao off to the side. He was taking advantage of the distraction to make his escape. Lin Xiaodong angrily said, “Stop! Whose mother said to let that kid go! Return here right now!”

Wang Yigao nearly fell off of his horse as he heard these words. The turn of events and frightened him silly. His father was waiting for him to return home for punishment, this was an absolute nightmare.

Now even seeing Lin Ming made his heart shudder with dread. Forget retaliating, if he ever saw Lin Ming again he would make a full effort to scamper away. Not only did Wang Yigao fear Lin Ming, but he also didn’t know what kind of backing Lin Ming had. Whatever it was, it was greater than anything he could compare with!

Losing the only advantage he had, Wang Yigao finally realized he was completely inferior to Lin Ming.

“You...what do you want?”

"You want to get away? You think there is anything in this whole world that is that easy?" Lin Xiaodong had a sudden inspiration. He turned to several officers. "You there, beat this guy up."

Wang Yigao trembled as he heard this. Zhao Mingshan grimaced; now he really didn't know if he could preserve his own head. If they hit Wang Yigao any more, he really might die.

Zhao Mingshan looked to Lin Ming with a pleading look.

Lin Ming finally said, "Consider this finished. There's no point dealing with this kind of person."

He looked to Wang Yigao and asked, "I ask you, when you came up to stir trouble, I saw that there were also people spying on me from the blue carriage. Was that Zhu Yan?"

Wang Yigao felt his stomach fall. Did this man have eyes on the back of his head?

He had already thoroughly feared Lin Ming, but now that fear was deepening as terror filled his eyes.

He still didn't speak, so Lin Ming took a single step towards him, and coldly said, "Yes, or no?"

Wang Yigao's heart stopped and he clenched his teeth. He nodded.

"Today's matter was also thought up by Zhu Yan?"

Wang Yigao nodded again.

"Good. You may go."

Lin Ming was already thinking that this was the case. Zhu Yan did not want him to enter the Seven Profound Martial House. Wang Yigao was just a pawn that had been used to prevent him from taking part in the entrance exam; Lin Ming did not want to bother with such a small bit player again. The reason was because Wang Yigao's father was the general. Lin Ming also knew discretion, and he had already left behind some hidden true essence in him that would leave him confined to his bed for a period.

Zhao Mingshao breathed a sigh of relief as he heard Lin Ming. He hurried forward to personally untie them.

Lin Xiaodong flexed his chubby wrists and look at Zhao Mingshan who had jumped off a black maned horse. Lin Xiaodong had a sharp eye for money, and he understood at a glance that this horse was a superior breed. Although they couldn't compare with the snow white horses of the Martial Quarters, their value was no less than 500 gold taels.

"We're fine, you don't need to send us off. Leave behind two horses. That black maned horse is also nice. I'll take it."

Zhao Mingshao's mouth twitched as he heard this. This horse was his beloved and treasured beauty. But he clenched his teeth and said, "If these fellow brothers like my horse, feel free to ride her."

"Haha. Then don't mind me being impolite." Lin Xiaodong said. He leapt up and his pudgy body seated on the black maned horse. "Heh heh, let's go!"

As they left the group, Lin Xiaodong was in an excellent mood. "Sh*t, that was better than getting money! I've never felt so great in my life. Not only did that idiot 'Gao Yiwang' earn his lesson, but even the captain gave me his own horse. Haha, this is what they call the great life!"

Lin Ming smiled and said, "We borrowed others' power and influence today, but anyone can rely on connections to do that. If we really want to feel great, then we must get strong ourselves and depend on our own strength to intimidate the world. Then no one would dare to bother us. That feeling would really be great."

"Intimidate the world? Haha, Brother Lin, I don't have such grand dreams as you; I'm fine with relying on others' power and influence. How about this Brother Lin, when one day your name is known across the world, you cover for me. I'll tell them your name, and frighten them off."

"Okay!" Lin Ming laughed out loud.

The two were originally only brought three or four miles down the road. They galloped on their horses and in a short while arrived back at the square. In the square were still a sea of people; it seemed that the Strength Trial had just begun.

Lin Ming had forgotten about the blue carriage until now; he noticed that it was still sitting there. But now Zhu Yan had disembarked from it. He was holding onto a long sword while staring an ice cold gaze.

"It seems I gave you less credit than was due. You are quite talented." In a moment, Zhu Yan had transmitted his voice to Lin Ming. They were 200 meters away, but it was as if Zhu Yan was speaking right beside him.

This was a message sent with true essence. It required an extremely high degree of control of true essence to achieve. Zhu Yan must have reached the peak of the Third Stage in the last six months.

"Don't think that just because you reached the Second Stage of Body Transformation that you are anything special. Beating up some useless potatoes that are on the same level as you is no accomplishment at all. You said that one day you would surpass me? Good. I will wait for you. I will let you know the true difference between you and I, and you will learn that you are not destined to be an elite of this world.

"An elite of this world?" Lin Ming looked at Zhu Yan and smiled. "Certainly not of this world..."

Chapter 33 – Strength Trial

Chapter 33 – Strength Trial

…

…

…

The Seven Profound Martial House had a total of twenty stone pillars for the Strength Trial. After the exam begins, the candidates would divide into twenty teams as to reduce the congestion in the square.

The twenty stone pillars were set up in in front of the doors of separate entrances to the Seven Profound Martial House. At the top of each stone pillar was a shining light which was the mark of every candidate's destiny. Whether they would pass this gate or whether they would be tossed aside would all be decided by this one number.

A roughly thirty or forty year old woman stepped in front of the crowd and stood on a platform that had been set up. "Hello everyone. I am one of the supervisors for the Strength Trial. I would like to announce that the Seven Profound Martial House's examination has altogether three parts. For those who manage to qualify through the end, they will be given a official assessment based upon their age, talent, and result. The top ten will obtain an award, and the number one will be rewarded with a Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill!"

A Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill! The entire crowd gasped in surprise; even the juniors of the aristocratic families were flabbergasted. Those among them with lower strength were filled with regret. Their faces revealed sorry and depressed expressions as they were destined to never achieve first place. Those that were stronger straightened their backs. Their eyes shone with hope and they twitched around as if they were itching for a fight. They had assumed that this Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill was prepared especially for them.

Lin Ming had read through a medicinal manual before and had a rough sense understanding regarding the properties of the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill. This pill was about the size of a grape and was created by mixing a Crimson Gold Dragon's marrow with several species of rare and precious herbs. It would then be boiled and distilled into a pill that would be able to improve the physique, enhance cultivation, and even help break through bottlenecks.

The Crimson Gold Dragon was not a real dragon, it was a descendant that only shared some blood. Nevertheless, creatures that were related to dragons were not weak. Even Houtian experts would not be a match!

Sky Fortune Kingdom did not have many Houtian experts to begin with, and they also didn't have anyone that was capable of refining such a precious pill. Therefore Sky Fortune Kingdom was unable to produce the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill.

Without a doubt this medicine originated from the Seven Profound Valleys. Every year the Seven Profound Valleys would screen talents, and medicines were provided from the main school to attract talented youths to participate.

Perhaps to the Seven Profound Valleys, the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill was not particularly precious, but to those of Sky Fortune Kingdom, it was absolutely a valuable treasure that could not be purchased by money. Even a large aristocratic family would be terribly jealous of anyone who possessed such a treasure.

The beautiful supervisor did not seem excited or unhappy as she continued, "The second, third and fourth placed will receive a Golden Snake Scarlet Pill, and fifth to tenth will receive ten Soul Gathering Pellets!"

The Golden Snake Scarlet Pill was refined from the gallbladder of a hundred year old Golden Scarlet Snake. This kind of gallbladder was named because of its gold-red appearance. It was inferior to the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill, but it was also a rare and precious medicine which most people would never see.

But the fourth through tenth place only received ten Soul Gathering Pellets which were much less rare. Each pellet had a value of 200 gold taels, and ten of them would be equal to 2000 gold taels. But the two medicines given to those that ranked higher were at least 10,000 gold taels. In fact, even if one could pay several times over, they would still not be able to buy one.

The rich rewards made the talented candidates incomparably excited; they were impatient to go on stage and show off their skills. Looking at this eager crowd was a group of young men and women wearing silk clothing. They laughed contemptuously. In the group was a handsome youth wearing a jade belt and smiling.

The youth's entourage smiled and flattered him, "These people really overreach. This Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill is already in young master's pocket, winning is already a foregone conclusion. Do they also think to try and compete? Truly they do not know their place."

The youth faintly smiled and waved his folding fan. He didn't respond. He was a talent of the Yue Lu City's Wang family. He had a fourth grade talent, early Third Stage of Body Transformation cultivation, and had once taken the number one spot in Yue Lu City's elite competition. Yue Lu City was a big city, thus this number one spot held some weight.

On the platform the woman continued, "We will now begin the first round of the entrance exam. Please participate in the exam with your full strength. The light beam on the stone column will signal the strength of your attack. An inch represents 100 jins of strength. As long as you pass 1000 jins then you will pass this round! Each candidate will have three attempts. So long as you qualify once then you will pass. Everyone, we will now have a demonstration. Lin Sen, step forwards."

As the beautiful lady finished speaking, a man walked up on stage. He was tall and gaunt, almost appearing emaciated, with a pale, cold face and harsh eyes.

He wore a black suit and on his back was a three foot long knife. Even though it was broad daylight, when he stepped on stage, the temperature of the crowd plummeted several degrees.

"Is that Ling Sen?"

"Someone from the Heavenly Abode of the Seven Profound Martial House!"

This Ling Sen was obviously famous, but Lin Ming did not know of him. He turned and asked Lin Xiaodong, "Who is this Ling Sen?"

Lin Xiaodong might not be diligent when it came to practicing his martial arts, but he was extremely gossipy and curious about all matters, thus he knew about matters such as these. He said, "Ling Sen is one of the senior apprentices of the Heavenly Abode which is the fiercest department in the Seven Profound Martial House. He is twenty years old and is a fourth grade talent. His cultivation is at the peak of the Fourth Stage, and he just entered the Heavenly Abode last year. On his own initiative he requested to be sent to the warfront for one year, where he slaughtered countless people. Right now his combat ability is difficult to estimate, but people say that he will soon enter the Fifth Stage of Body Transformation.

Twenty years old and Fifth Stage of Body Transformation? Lin Ming was slightly startled. Generally, martial artists were considered extraordinary if they reached the Fifth Stage, the Bone Forging stage, by the time they were thirty. This Ling Sen was also overflowing with killing intent, it seemed he had killed many people in the battlefield. Compared to those with the same level of cultivation, this man was truly a master.

Ling Sen loathed demonstrations like this. However it was a tradition that the apprentices of the Heavenly Abode would show off for the candidates. This was for the sake of letting them know that there was always someone out there who was better, and they should never stop striving to reach the top.

Lin Sen Casually stood before the pillar and without even preparing, he casually waved his right hand. A 'Boom!' sound was heard, and the stone pillar fiercely shook. The light beam jumped high, stabilized, and finally stabilized at four feet and nine inches.

4900 jins!

In the field everyone was full of praise and astonishment. If Ling Sen had used his full strength, he might even surpass 5000 jins!

Seeing this result, Lin Ming's eyes widened. This Ling Sen's strength was almost double his own!

Lin Xiaodong said, "It's not anything surprising. He is one of the top talents in Sky Fortune City's younger generation. It would only be weird if he didn't have a result like this."

Lin Ming said, "One of the younger generation? Could Qin Xingxuan defeat him?"

Lin Xiaodong shrugged. "I don't know Qin Xingxuan's strength, but Qin Xingxuan is well rounded and studies all subjects. Ling Sen only focuses his training on fighting and killing, really he is a man who specializes in life or death battles. I don't think Qin Xingxuan could possibly win if their lives were on the line, but don't forget that Qin Xingxuan is only fifteen years old while Ling Sen is twenty."

Hearing this, Lin Ming nodded slightly.

Body Transformation had a total of six stages. The further you were, the more the gap between the stages increased. The strength of one in the Pulse Condensation stage could reach 8000 jins. Lin Ming was very far away from this state.

"Exam, begin!" At this moment on stage, the beautiful middle aged lady sent out the order to start the Strength Trial.

The young candidates were all very eager, each was itching to get up and test their strength. However when they actually tested their strength on the stone pillar, there were many who failed.

“900 jins, 850 jins, 850 jins, three times failed. Next!”

“950 jins, 900 jins, 900 jins, three times failed. Next!”

Many of the candidates had barely reached the Second Stage of Body Transformation. If they were in peak condition, then they might be able to hit 1000 jins. However they could not be at peak condition for every attempt. In addition, they also suffered from nerves and were unable to show their highest level of strength. These people were naturally eliminated.

“1000 jins, qualified!” Someone in Lin Ming’s light passed, and that man shouted happily as he danced around in excitement. The truth was that this man also understood, although he passed and barely qualified, he would most likely be eliminated during the second round. Even so, it was an honor for him to have passed the first round of the Seven Profound Martial House’s entrance exam at sixteen years of age.

“1300 jins, qualified!”

“950 jins, failed!”

When a result came out, those that failed would dejectedly leave in low spirits. The ones who succeeded were giddy. And among them were those that showed indifference. To these talents, passing this trial was a given.

A this moment, there was a commotion in front. Lin Ming looked ahead and saw that a youth wearing blue linen clothes was standing in front of the stone pillar, and was gathering his strength.

Lin Ming was curious about who this man was. He heard some people discussing, “That is Sun Ping from East Water City. He is at the Third Stage of Body Transformation. His strength is fierce!

As the discussion was occurring, Sun Ping shot forwards. He hit the stone column with a ‘peng’, and the light beam began to tremble as it shot upwards. It stopped at two feet and three inches.

“2300 jins!”

This was the first person who had passed 2000 jins. The crowd burst into exclamation.

Chapter 34 – Dream Trial

Chapter 34 – Dream Trial

…

…

…

"This Sun Ping has already been at the Third Stage of Body Transformation for a period of time, but still only managed to strike out with 2300 jins. He's also only seventeen years old; he isn't a threat to me." Wang Yanfeng said as he waved his fan. He narrowed his eyes as he gauged Sun Ping. The final evaluation of the entrance exam would be dependent on not only the results of the Trial, but of the age and talent grade of those who passed. The younger they were and the higher the talent grade, the higher the evaluation would be. In the many young martial artists and talents that participated in the exam, seventeen years of age was considered a bit old.

"Young master, it's your turn."

"Mm." Wang Yanfeng folded his fan and handed it to his attendant.

As Wang Yanfeng stepped in front of the stone column, many people begin to recognize him.

"It's Wang Yanfeng of Yuelu City!"

As the crowd began to spread the news, the nearby candidates turned their gaze over to him. In this group of candidates, Wang Yanfeng had the greatest chance of competing for first place. Not only was his strength formidable, but he was a youth of fifteen years of age.

And most importantly, Wang Yanfeng's talent was high!

Wang Yanfeng was a grade-four talent, but the truth was that the grade-four talents and above, was also divided into low, medium, and high quality. Wang Yanfeng was of the rare high grade-four talents.

Wang Yanfeng stood before the stone column and let out a single breath. The breath curled into the air like twin snakes; this was a sign of the Third Stage of Body Transformation, Viscera Training.

The surrounding crowd gasped in awe. “Seriously, he has just entered the Third Stage of Body Transformation and yet he can already breathe out the twin snakes, and he is only fifteen years old. This is truly talent that defies the will of Heaven.”

“Mm. Martial artists at Viscera Training have true essence protecting their heart and lungs and other five major internal organs. They can protect their frail internal organs from attacks, and moreover, their heart and lungs are strong. They have abnormal vitality and could prolong their breathing. Their muscles would naturally strengthen under these conditions and rise. This Wang Yanfeng already breathes snakes but has just entered the Third Stage, it truly makes one jealous.”

As this discussion continued, Wang Yanfeng had already struck out at the stone column. A ‘bang’ rang through the air and the stone column shook. The beam of light jumped up and finally settled at two feet four inches.

“2400 jins!”

Generally speaking, the average martial artist who had entered the Third Stage of Body Transformation would reach about 2000 jins. But Wang Yanfeng, he had just entered the Third Stage, was only fifteen years old, and yet managed to show a strength of 2400 jins. It really was shocking to all onlookers.

However, before the crowd had recovered their composure, there were cries of alarm and surprise coming from another side. A tall and burly youth had walked in front of a stone column and punched his fist. The light beam rose and fell two feet and four inches. 2400 jins!

Wang Yanfeng's record had just been born but was already rendered average by another youth. Lin Ming looked at that tall and burly youth and was startled to see that he was someone who was also at the Second Stage of cultivation!

It wasn't out of sorts to see someone at the Third Stage of Body Transformation reach 2000 jins, but 2000 jins at only the Second Stage? That was just too excessive.

By now Lin Ming had noticed that although the youth appeared to have a naïve and innocent appearance, his height was higher than those of his peers around him, and his muscled body seemed to be thicker and denser than an adult's.

Was this what they called inborn divine strength?

Those with inborn divine strong were several times stronger than those of their age. Although they were very rare, it appeared that this tall and burly youth was one such type.

Wang Yanfeng also saw that impressive youth and let out a light humph. He didn't give it too much thought. Inborn divine strength? Martial artists fought with not just their strength, but also with their martial arts and skills. Not only that, but the higher one's cultivation, the more important true essence becomes. Those who were born with this divine strength did not necessarily become some fierce martial arts figure.

…

The trial continued, and several youths past with a strength of 1000 jins that were at the peak the Second Stage.

The Seven Profound Martial House stipulated that the candidate's age must be between fifteen to eighteen years of age. It was easy for those of this age bracket to have had achieved the peak of the Second Stage of Body Transformation.

Occasionally there would also be those youths that had reached the Third Stage of Body Transformation. These youths had managed 2000 jins, and some even reached 2500 jins.

Now, it was finally Lin Ming's turn.

Before Lin Ming arrived at the stone column, he had already realized that this was a more serious situation than he thought. Although he was confident that he wouldn't lose to Wang Yanfeng, his natural talent was also far from his.

It was third grade compared to a high fourth grade. In the final evaluation, Lin Ming would suffer a great penalty!

In every round of this exam, Lin Ming had to put forth his whole heart and soul!

Lin Ming breathed lightly and let his entire body relax. He eliminated all distracting thoughts and sounds. The 'True Primal Chaos Formula' revolved silently in his body. Compared to a martial art at the same cultivation, his true essence was several times thicker in his muscles.

Strength Training's 'flow like silk', the principles of hardness and softness; Lin Ming engraved these thoughts onto his mind as he meditated with the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians.' His vision condensed and his relaxed body suddenly went taut like a longbow. His waist lowered and he thrust forwards with the strength of his thighs like a sleek and mighty leopard.

"Bang!"

The strike hit the center of the stone column. The light beam rose dramatically and crazily bounced up until it settled at 2700 jins.

Lin Ming's strength was 2600 jins, but if he put forth his full effort, 2700 jins was also possible.

"My god, 2700 jins!"

"This boy, this boy is simply a vicious beast in human form! A few hundred more jins and he would have caught up to someone at the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation!"

"No, this isn't right, it's just not right. The young fellow is only at the Second Stage of Body Transformation. Is he also someone with inborn divine strength?"

The crowd wildly discussed this, and some people had quickly recognized Lin Ming. "I know that person! Just half an hour ago on the main road he had used his strength of arm to throw off someone on a horse like a windmill! He threw off someone that was also at the Second Stage of Body Transformation and was holding a lance on a horse! The man was thrown but the boy hadn't been moved at all. I thought he was some demon child but it turns out he was also someone with inborn divine strength; no wonder he was capable of that!"

"Wasn't he arrested by the authorities? How did he get back?"

As people buzzed, the tall and burly youth who had beaten Wang Yanfeng and reached 2400 jins also looked at Lin Ming. The youth revealed a friendly expression as he happily smiled at Lin Ming. He had not thought that he would also meet someone with inborn divine strength at this examination, so he was quite sympathetic towards Lin Ming.

Wang Yanfeng looked at Lin Ming and frowned. This boy also had inborn divine strength? It truly was annoying. It was like these rare youths were crawling out of the woodwork like c*ckroaches.

"Brother Feng, this kid came out of nowhere and dared to steal Broth Feng's limelight. Brother Feng truly was robbed." A man at Wang Yanfeng's side said.

Wan Yanfeng said, "It's not anything special. Having this result at the Second Stage of Body Transformation is decent. Battle prowess doesn't depend on just strength. Although those with inborn divine strength are rare, not many of them have great achievements in the future."

Wang Yanfeng said this with a tone of exasperation. Although he had already determined that he would take first during this entrance exam, he was repeatedly overshadowed again and again by these fellow youths which made him feel extremely uncomfortable.

“What Brother Feng said is absolutely right. In the future what one will need to focus on is the true essence. The superiority of strength is only useful at the start. This kid will only be happy for a few years.” Wang Yanfeng’s entourage echoed.

After Lin Ming, it was Lin Xiaodong’s turn. As he approached the stone column he began to turn his neck back and forth and wiggle his waist. He continued this for a few minutes until the examination officials appeared to be increasingly annoyed and impatient. Then Lin Xiaodong finally cried out and punch the the stone column.

“Thud.” There was a dull thumping sound as the stone column’s light beam shook for a bit and then settled.

The examination supervisor frowned as he looked at Lin Xiaodong. “750 jins…but you also have two more opportunities.

The result was really bad considering that anyone less than 900 jins would not dare to register. No one wanted to idle in this huge crowd only to end up embarrassing themselves. But in Lin Xiaodong’s point of view this result was very good, and he had this natural shameless capability of ignoring the thoughts of others. He wiggled his waist and stretched his neck again, and then punched out again. ‘Peng!’

“700 jins.”

Another punch!

“750 jins.”

Without a shadow of a doubt, Lin Xiaodong had suffered a miserable defeat.

To Lin Xiaodong, this was a decent result. He was only fifteen years old and his father had decided that only when he was eighteen would he have any possibility of entering the Seven Profound Martial House. Lin Xiaodong had not planned on breaking through the Pulse Condensation period from the start, and his only ideal and wish was to preserve his position within the family.

“I gave you the Golden Deer Pills, did you not take any?” Lin Ming asked as Lin Xiaodong walked back.

“I ate them all; otherwise there was no way I would get past 600 jins.” Lin Xiaodong innocently shrugged. He left Lin Ming at a loss for words.

However Lin Ming also thought this was normal. After all, before he practiced the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’, his best result was 850 jins. His diligent and tireless training was far above Lin Xiaodong who had only managed 600 jins at the time.

It was difficult for someone with only a grade three talent and no formidable aristocratic background to enter the Seven Profound Martial House at fifteen years of age. Even the first round of the entrance exam was prohibitively difficult to pass.

The Strength Trial finally finished around noon, and the candidates were allowed a short rest before the entrance exam continued.

Because the rest time was too short, Lin Ming simply ate a small meal before sitting back in meditation and then hurrying back to the square.

The second inspection was the Dream Trial. It was a test of a martial artist’s heart.

For a martial artist, they needed not only talent and support of their background, but moreover, they had to be someone with an earnest and indefatigable martial heart.

Chapter 35 – The Lake’s Jade Platform

Chapter 35 – The Lake’s Jade Platform

…

…

…

The heart of martial arts was by no means anything that was greatly loyal or virtuous – or even good. Whether it be living buddhas that brimmed with righteousness or demon sect leaders with dark intentions, the truth was that the heart of martial arts judged neither good nor evil. It only resolved to ask whether one had the determination to tread the rocky path.

Practicing martial arts was a daily struggle. One’s life would be filled with misery, danger, enticements; if one’s mentality was not firm then it was easy to fall from the path of a martial artist and give up, thus wasting all previous efforts.

Some people only practiced martial arts for wealth and sensual pleasures. In the heart of these people they practiced martial arts without truly understanding what it meant. This would not affect them during an early period of cultivation, but as would be an insurmountable roadblock later. The Pulse Condensation Period was enough for one to have a sumptuous and luxurious lifestyle where one could drown in money and beautiful women. Sky Fortune Kingdom had many such warriors. Because Sky Fortune Kingdom would handsomely reward those who reached the Pulse Condensation Period, there were those who would suffer untold hardships to attain this goal, only to halt their path of martial arts because they could not resist the temptation of extravagance.

The Dream Trial did not examine one’s cultivation; it perceived one’s determination and heart of martial arts. Lin Ming had complete confidence regarding this. Even if he had not obtained the mysterious Magic Cube, he believed he still had a 120% chance to pass.

At this time, more than half of the candidates had failed the first trial, so after they had left the field, the square was much more spacious.

Pitiful and sad Lin Xiaodong had already lost the qualifications to enter so he could only stay on the main road beyond the square.

Lin Ming turned around to look at Lin Xiaodong. Although there were many people in the crowd, he still saw him.

Lin Xiaodong also saw Lin Ming and he gave him a thumbs up. Lin Ming smiled. When he turned his head he saw a figure in the crowd that caught his eye. The girl wore a form fitting daffodil yellow dress. She looked to be an aristocratic junior with a top hat made of swan feathers. She stood in an obscure corner and observed everything.

Lin Ming recognized this girl. She was Lan Yunyue.

Lin Ming quickly turned his eyes from her. He knew that if they saw each other it would only increase Lan Yunyue's embarrassment. It was better to have not seen at all...

In his heart Lin Ming had not blamed Lan Yunyue for anything. After all, there had only been a silent agreement between them, and they had not discussed marriage or anything like that to an extensive degree. Lan Yunyue had made the only choice that an ordinary girl could possibly make in her circumstances.

Lan Yunyue did not know that Lin Ming had already discovered her. Lan Yunyue had struggled in her heart for a long time as to whether to come here today or not. She did not want to see Lin Ming, but in her heart was a faint bit of worry, and she wanted to know whether or not he was well.

She could only remember back to two months ago when Lin Ming had been trying to sell several inferior and poor symbol papers. The scene in front of the shop had made her feel several points of pity.

Supporting one's own martial arts without depending on a wealthy family background, he didn't even have a particularly fearsome talent. He only had meager savings that he could use to rent a room, to buy a meal and some medicines. In these sad circumstances he could probably only afford iron thread grass, and perhaps even not that. And if so, then in his body he would have accumulated several internal injuries.

These thoughts caused Lan Yunyue distress. She liked his strength and his persistence. She remembered when she was a child; he had protected her from a large group of bullies. He had stood in front of her like a brave knight, arms spread wide, and taken the beatings. He had made her feel protected and safe.

But alas, such feelings were in the end unable to replace certain things…

She was an attractive girl and had the makings of an outstanding woman. Her natural talent was good and although she was not from an aristocratic family, her family was well off. Such a girl would inevitably have feelings of superiority, like a noble peacock confined to a playpen with chickens. She was unable to convince herself to settle in her ordinary life. A life where she would eventually marry Lin Ming and become the mistress of a family restaurant, a life where they would love each other and have little kids at twenty, and then he would gradually age and die, and she would be there by herself with even her looks having gone.

She did not want to have such a life. She did not!

Therefor she chose Zhu Yan. Not only because of the relations between the Zhu Family and the Imperial Family, but he could also help her enter the Seven Profound Martial House. He would give rare and precious medicines to Lan Yunyue and help her enter the Pulse Condensation Period. Under the enticement of the Pulse Condensation Period, Lan Yunyue was unable to withstand her desires.

This morning, Lan Yunyue was restless. She did not want to come, but ultimately failed to convince herself. So she had arrived this afternoon. She came thinking that Lin Ming would fail the Strength Trial. As long as Lin Ming failed, he would be able to give up his dreams and go home to a safe life. With this she would be able to relax and lay down all her worries. She did not actually think she would see Lin Ming in the qualifying team. This made her simultaneously surprised and worried.

Surprised because Lin Ming had unexpectedly managed to break through to the Second Stage of Body Transformation at only fifteen years of age and having no family background.

Worried because she could not conceive that Lin Ming could reach this stage safely; she only imagined that on his body were several internal injuries, and that he would be nothing more than a cripple by the time he was thirty....

....

In the morning, the beautiful lady supervisor of the Strength Trial appeared once again. She stared down at that crowd and saw that there were still many people remaining and thought this result wasn't too shabby. "Everyone follow me. We are now headed to the Sea Jade Platform."

The crowd of about a hundred boys and girls followed the beautiful woman supervisor as she passed through the mighty and intimidating gates of the Seven Profound Martial House.

The Seven Profound Martial House was nestled into the hillsides. There were no tall buildings or massive constructions inside, but endless stretches of land and streams dotted with gorgeously designed pavilions. These pavilions were carefully crafted, with smooth, fine lines and surrounded by a perfect blend of scenery. It really made one exclaim in amazement at the seamless craftsmanship and sense of natural aesthetic that went into its design.

The crowd people walked for about the time it took to drink a cup of tea, until they approached a deep green lake. It had a vibrant color like living jade. The surface had no trace of waves and was peacefully quiet. The lake was hedged by weeping willow trees, and even though it was autumn when the leaves of trees would fall, it amazed everyone that not even a single leaf had was floating on the calm lake surface.

In the center of the emerald lake, a jade platform had been carved out of pale white jade. The jade platform was joined to the shore by nine stone bridges. It was like a mystical fairy world come to life.

Lin Ming found that a few dozen meters from the jade platform was a pavilion that was floating in water. In the pavilion was placed a stone table that was covered with tea and dried fruits. Around the table were sitting several old men and a single girl who were looking towards them with great interest.

It was unexpectedly Qin Xingxuan and Mister Muyi.

Lin Ming slightly hesitated; why would they appear here?

Muyi had also discovered Lin Ming looking towards him, and faintly smiled back. Qin Xingxuan also had a friendly smiling face.

Lin Ming returned a smile out of courtesy. He had a faint suspicion that the other people accompanying Muyi were not simple. Among them were several, who it seemed from their breathing and appearance, were not any less strong than Muyi.

These people were masters!

Lin Ming wasn’t mistaken. These people were several of Muyi’s friends and several officials of the Sky Fortune Kingdom’s government. There were also elders from the Seven Profound Martial House. Exams were twice a year, and they would come to observe to see if there were any good seedlings among the candidates.

They were mostly looking for those with sufficient talent and who also had the pure heart of a martial artist. Every year, the candidates had to register their talent and other information in order to enter the entrance exam. Thus the elders did not need to measure as they had already looked through the files.

The candidates this time around were barely satisfactory. The strongest was a high fourth-grade talent.

Having a fifth-grade talent was a once in a decade event and wasn't a usual occurrence. The high fourth-grade talents were also good and the low fourth-grade talents could make do. The third-grade talents were somewhat inferior.

The first round of the exam was not anything important, therefore the Martial House's elders had not made an appearance. They have seen the talent already and this time they came to observe which one of these candidates had an especially strong heart of a martial artist.

"Come up. Defend your mind, sit in meditation, and once you cross the five trials then you will have passed." The beautiful lady supervisor said.

The candidates stepped onto the nine stone bridges one at a time. Their hearts began to drum wildly in their chest. During the first round their hearts had been filled with confidence. They knew the limits of their own strength. Only some of them had thought that they might be nervous and not able to display their full potential, but they knew in their hearts that they did not need to be too anxious about passing. But this time was the Dream Trial, and they were nervous.

Many of the candidates had never attempted the Dream Trial before, so they did not have an idea what sort of scene they would encounter at the end. But they had heard that this was the trial with the highest rate of elimination; it would reach as high as 90%!

In a group of ten, only one would pass!

One had to know that they were these were the most outstanding talents among those of their age. In a small town or small family or even in an entire city, they were the most splendid and majestic of their generation. They had constantly been revered and labeled geniuses since childhood, but even in such a group of people, most would be eliminated within the Dream Trial!

This trial was truly terrifying!

“Sit upon the jade platform. After ten breaths the trial shall begin!” The beautiful lady supervisor said. Even though she was separated by a far distance, her voice was clearly heard within every candidate’s ears. This method of passing messages via true essence was even more profound and powerful than Zhu Yan.

Lin Min suspected that this beautiful lady supervisor was a martial artist at the Pulse Condensation Period.

As Ling Ming stepped onto the jade platform, he scanned the distant crowd and discovered that among them was Lan Yunyue. She was leaning against a willow tree at was still gazing at Lin Ming not thinking that she had been sighted by him.

Lin Ming gave a single sigh and no longer looked. He sat cross legged on the jade platform.

Chapter 36 – Lin Ming’s Heart of Martial Arts

Chapter 36 – Lin Ming’s Heart of Martial Arts

…

…

…

After sitting down, Lin Ming discovered that although the jade platform was built from white marble, there was not the slightest chill in the air. Instead, there was an incomparably peaceful warmth that overflowed. Looking carefully, he could see that the jade platform had been engraved with a number of different lines and symbols. These were runes.

This large jade platform was a magic array. It was said these magic arrays were created by the Xiantian masters of the Seven Profound Valleys. In them, one would not even be able to differentiate between reality and illusion.

However Lin Ming did not worry. A dream world was still only just a dream world. As long as he reinforced his mind, even if the dream world was boundless and infinite, he would stand firm on the ground!

As Lin Ming sat on the jade platform, his mind filled with a bright light.

As the tenth breath ended, Lin Ming saw a blinding flash all around him and all the candidates disappeared from his vision, leaving only himself.

An endless prairie appeared before him, extending as far as his eye could see. At this moment a pack of vicious beasts each as tall as a man darted from the high grass and ran straight towards Lin Ming.

The several dozens of beasts were the same first level vicious beasts that Lin Ming had deboned before! As they ran together, the grass and the ground began to vibrate. An imposing force rolled towards him.

Lin Ming did not even blink an eye until the first beast lunged at him.

"Fu!"

The vicious beast pierced straight through his body. Lin Ming stood there still safe and sound. But when that beast had pierced him, Lin Ming felt a very intense shock and pressure. Although he knew it was only a dream, he could not rid himself of this feeling as if it were a fear that originated from his soul.

This was the effect of a magic array? Even though he knew it was an illusion, it was still possible to lose himself in it. And once lost, he would not be able to tell that it was an illusion.

If that happened, then the illusion would turn to reality. If the illusion killed him, then he might even die in this dream.

As Lin Ming safely passed this first round, on the jade stage a dozen bright lights flashed. In an instant, several people disappeared from the jade platform and stumbled onto the store. These people all had bone white expressions and their pale eyelids trembled. They had lost themselves in the dream, and once they were lost, they had fantasized that they had been ripped up and torn apart by the dream beasts and eaten, with even their bones crushed. Their fear had grown more and more intense until their minds had been broken and they passed out into reality.

At the pavilion, the elders of the Seven Profound Martial House slowly shook their head. The first round of the Dream Trial tested courage. The martial arts path was full of danger. If one did not have courage to face it, then what was the point of cultivating the martial path?

"Muyi, do you know how ferocious that boy is? He instantly passed." The man who spoke knew that Muyi had recognized Lin Ming and that they were acquainted with each other. But Muyi did not speak of Lin Ming's achievements in inscription techniques. This was what Lin Ming had asked of him.

Muyi had only said he knew Lin Ming, and he had come to this entrance exam to take a look at his growth.

The beautiful lady supervisor also stood in the pavilion. Because of Lin Ming's outstanding performance in the Strength Trial, she had kept note of him. She saw the Lin Ming had frowned for a brief moment, but had restored his calm and tranquility right after.

But looking at some other people, they had clenched their jaws tightly, and their faces were changing colors. Obviously they had been struck by these vicious beasts in the dream world and were struggling...

In the illusion, the higher one's belief in themselves, the stronger their heart would be. The opposite also held true. These candidates who struggled with the vicious beasts had some courage, but they did not have Lin Ming's dauntless heart. Lin Ming was like an immovable rock that had been tested by the passing of millennia. Whatever vicious or wild beast that jumped at him, he would remain steady and true, and the illusion had thus been broken.

"No wonder you especially came to see this boy, his heart of martial arts is indeed exceptional. It's comparable with Lin Sen." An old man said.

Muyi only smiled. He was not surprised that Lin Ming has passed the first hurdle.

Qin Xingxuan had also been secretly comparing herself. Although Lin Ming's talent was inferior to her by far, his heart of martial arts was surprisingly firm and steady. When she had participated in this trial, during this first round she has spent a period of time, but Lin Ming had only taken a few breaths of time.

At this point, Lin Ming had arrived at the second stage.

In this second trial the scenery shifted before his eyes and changed dramatically. Lin Ming instantly arrived at a battlefield that overflowed with murderous intent. Scenes of battle surrounded him. Mountains of bodies piled up to the sky and seas of blood flowed around him. Broken spears and swords littered the ground with the crushed bones of the dead.

On this battlefield, cries of war suddenly rang through the air. Vast plumes of smoke billowed in the distance. On both sides of Lin Ming suddenly appeared two armies of cavalry. Warriors wearing thick armor and grasping lances approached from his right and left. They had suddenly appeared, and Lin Ming had been stuck in the middle of them.

The two mighty forces rushed towards him. Their horrific war cries filled the air with overwhelming killing intent. Lin Ming remained motionless and focused his mind. During the first experience with the illusion, he had been surprised and his heart had fluctuated a bit. But this time he was prepared and he defended his mind.

As a result, as the armies approached him they turned into floating ashes. The illusion was broken again!

“Mm? Did he break it? Or not break it?” An elder looked at Lin Ming. This kid was weird. His expression had not changed even a bit. If he did not see the beams of light that emitted from the runes, then he would have thought the magic array was defective.

“This boy isn’t simple. I don’t know if he can continue and break the record. If he could catch up to Ling Sen then it would be a pleasant surprise.”

The five hurdles of the Dream Trial. The average person would take an hour to pass them. These past ten years, the one with the best result had been Heaven Abode’s Ling Sen. He had spent an incense worth of time to complete the trial. This surprised the elders of the Seven Profound Martial House, because except for Ling Sen, the fastest time was half an hour.

Ling Sen originally had no wants or needs. He was in essence closest to a cold blooded killer. As sayings went, this type of person who cultivated the martial path was truly fearful.

Ling Sen had proved this point. He was only twenty years old and was a medium fourth-grade talent. With this medium fourth-grade talent he had become an elder apprentice brother within Heaven's Abode. Many prodigies with high fourth-grade talent had been left in his dust.

"Now is not the time for flattery. It only becomes hard during the last three hurdles." An old man stroked his beard as he said this, "Ling Sen's record won't be broken so easily."

This time in the illusion, Lin Ming had arrived at the third trial. The thousands of soldiers and scenes of destruction had vanished. He had arrived in a luxuriously decorated tent. The walls and roof were draped with the finest silks, and a smoky, intoxicating fragrance drifted in all directions.

But beyond all the pink silk draping, a dozen impressive young girls danced in the background. Their slim and beautiful bodies were slender and smooth. Their flawless appearance shamed the night moon and the sweetest flowers. As they bounced up and down, they began stripping off their clothes and walking towards Lin Ming. In the next moment, abundant scenery filled Lin Ming's vision. There were boundless amounts of heavy breasts and fragrant buttocks that swayed in front of him. These beautiful women surrendered themselves to Lin Ming and draped themselves around him. Between their every breath, their tempting bodies released a seductive fragrance.

In that moment, Lin Ming felt a dryness and heat from his heart, and a slight stirring in his loins as his bodily blood flow sped up. But he quickly suppressed this heat and guarded his mind yet again.

However these young girls did not immediately vanish. Instead they were not happy, and pouted as they picked up their clothes. Even their anger was charming as they sashayed their buttocks back and forth as they made their way away from Lin Ming. As soon as they left, the surroundings changed again. This time it was a warm and intimate bedroom. Against a wall was propped a mahogany bed. Sitting on the bed was a woman in a scarlet lined cotton jacket and a feathered robe. She had a jade pin in her hair that was shaped like a flower. This woman was about twenty five years old. Even sitting there she released an elegant aura and temperament. Her appearance had changed from what he remembered. Although she had a more mature and seductive charm to her, this was clearly Lan Yunyue!

…Lan Yunyue…

Lin Ming was startled in his mind. Was this Lan Yunyue ten years from now?

“Behave, don’t cry…” Lan Yunyue softly hummed a sweet nursery song to a pair of two year old babies on the bed. These babies were a pair of matching twins. These babies’ features…were also somewhat similar to Lin Ming…

As if they knew that Lin Ming was looking, the pair of babies opened their wide and beautiful eyes and smiled innocently at him. The cry of innocent children echoed into Lin Ming’s ears and directly passed into his stunned heart.

Lan Yunyue also smiled at Lin Ming. Her delicate red lips parted slightly and she said, “Lin Ming, darling, it’s very late, you should rest.”

At this moment, seeing Lan Yunyue and the twin babies’ sweet smiling faces, Lin Ming’s heart of martial arts shook. A wife, children, and a rich and warm home…

Had he not once wished for such a life for himself?

Now he had obtained it, he could stop…

As this thought suddenly appeared, Lin Ming woke up. He fiercely bit the tip of his tongue and let the pain restore his state of mind.

The surroundings changed, and Lan Yunyue and the babies disappeared.

Gazing at the empty darkness, Lin Ming’s heart palpitated and he was covered in a sheen of cold sweat.

Almost! He had almost lost himself!

Thinking of the dream visions, Lin Ming breathed a sigh of relief. Everything, all of this and all of her were in the past!

Perhaps once in his heart he had held such desires, but those thoughts were in the past....

“In the past?”

An ethereal and faintly recognizable voice sounded from behind him. Lin Ming turned around. A woman stood there wearing an alluring cheongsam. She held a simple long sword in her hand with an imperious and mighty air, and had a brave and valiant appearance that accentuated her heaven gifted beauty.

“Qin Xingxuan?”

Lin Ming was shocked. This woman was clearly Qin Xingxuan, and was only a bit older, around twenty years old.

“Since it’s in the past, then how about you cultivate together...with me? We can explore the world of martial arts...together...how about it?” As she said this, Qin Xingxuan’s clothes unravelled into threads and vanished, revealing the most perfect and exquisite body that he had ever imagined possible. Lin Ming had a full view of this and his heart almost stopped as his eyes widened like saucers.

She slowly walked towards Lin Ming...

Chapter 37 – Invulnerable to Ten Thousand Evils

Chapter 37 – Invulnerable to Ten Thousand Evils

…

…

…

As this beautiful and impossibly exquisite example of womanhood stood before him, this image was unforgettably carved into his mind and he felt the tower of his will tremble in its firmament. His breath became shallow and blood rushed to his head. After all, when it comes to matters between men and women, Lin Ming was still only a young boy.

Qin Xingxuan reached her arms around Lin Ming. She was like a warm and fragrant jade that surrounded him and the delicate fragrance of her virgin body wafted into his nostrils and left a strong impact in Lin Ming's heart.

Fabrication!

Illusion!

Lin Ming squeezed his eyes shut and in his heart he began to revolve the 'True Primal Chaos Formula', He managed to hold down his quickly fleeing sanity.

"Lin Ming, do you not like me?"

This voice was gentle and soft like a spring rain. Lin Ming's eyelids jumped, but he remained unmoved as before.

"Ah…." With a gentle sigh, she let Lin Ming go. Qin Xingxuan stood up, her expression revealing some hidden bitterness, and she slowly departed.

The scene before him began to slowly fade away, and the world returned to tranquility.

The third hurdle had finally been passed.

Lin Ming breathed deeply, his heart still beating rapidly and his palms still wet with sweat.

This third trial was truly fierce! It had managed to find and unearth the moral flaw in his own heart of martial arts. It seems that he had been too naïve. There was no human between heaven and earth that was not without a single weakness.

“Mm. This boy has passed the hurdle. It wasn’t a short time; it took around half an incense stick of time.” An old man looked to his side where an incense burner stood. A single stick of incense in it had been burnt over halfway.

“This boy is different from Ling Sen. In Ling Sen’s trial, he only used several breaths of time, but this boy used half an incense stick. His heart was probably filled with a girl that he liked. However as it stands now, he probably won’t be able to break Ling Sen’s record.” The old man meaningfully smiled with a ‘ha-ha’ as he said this.

“Heh heh. Valiant heroes have loved beautiful woman since ancient times. This is normal. I like this normal part of a hot-blooded boy full of vigor. That young fellow Ling Sen made me feel overwhelmed; watching him only let me feel cold and uncomfortable.”

Several elder teased between themselves, because of the generational difference. Qin Xingxuan had digressed from conversation, and was peacefully sitting there while she looked at Lin Ming. In her heart a strange thought suddenly appeared; who exactly was the girl that had appeared in the dreams of Lin Ming?

The fourth trial. Lin Ming had fallen into the depths of hell. The surroundings were dark and dim. Lin Ming was immersed waist deep in a thick, crimson pool of blood. White skulls were piled high like mountains that emerged from a sea of blood. The overwhelming shrill cries of ghosts and endless devils that blotted out the sky rushed towards Lin Ming.

“Ten thousand ghosts want to stop me?” Lin Ming sneered and revolved the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’. His whole body began to shine with a brilliant golden light, and an overwhelmingly pure true essence emitted outwards.

‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ originated from the Body Transformation manuals found within the Realm of the Gods. It was said to have been created by a war-god Buddha and represented the purest light and Yang; it could pierce all evils, shatter all illusions, and cut away all demons within the heart.

Lin Ming disregarded these ghosts and demons and continued to revolve the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ to its limit.

‘My heart is at peace; not even ten-thousand evils can break me!’

Luminous golden light radiated out and all of the malicious ghosts and devils it touched disintegrated into ash!

“Damn! It’s over?”

In the five trials of the dreamland, the first tested courage, the second tested morale, the third tested temptation, the fourth tested one’s inner demons, and the fifth tested the will.

The first two trials were rather simple. The latter three were on a different level; how they appeared differed from person to person. Ling Sen had been stuck on the fourth trial that tested the demons in his heart. Perhaps it was because of Ling Sen’s bloodthirst, but the demons in his heart had been a terrifyingly difficult trial for him. Therefore he had slaughtered in that blood sea for half an incense stick of time, and only then did he barely cut away his inner demons.

“This Lin Ming; does he not have a single inner demon within his heart?”

“His heart and mind are pure. It is truly rare. Including the first four trials, only half an incense stick of time has passed. This is a good seedling,“ an old man exclaimed honestly.

…

As time went on, more and more candidates failed and appeared back on the shores of the lake. The first and second trials were easy, but from the third trial and on, the number of people being kicked out sharply rose, and the jade platform flashed with brilliant lights.

Lan Yunyue had been paying attention to Lin Ming from a distance. Lin Ming had not always been calm, but his expression was firm and did not resemble the other candidates who had fierce fighting expressions, horribly distorted faces, or were bone white.

At this moment, Lan Yunyue had a feeling that she couldn’t identify. She somehow knew that Lin Ming had passed, had crossed the trials of the dream realm, and was on the last step before the end.

The last trial of the dream. Lin Ming had still not left hell. He was still soaked in the oozing thick blood, but suddenly the blood sea became scalding hot as it bubbled.

The temperature had suddenly risen! The sanguine sea seethed with a dark fury, each bubbling pocket that burst open showered the air with a crescendo of blood. It was as if the blood sea had turned into a lake of flowing lava.

Lin Ming could distinctly feel the pain that gushed into his body; it was if he was being boiled alive in this sea of blood. Although he knew that it was merely an illusion, this kind of pain was incomparable, it was a throbbing misery that made him almost wish for death so that his suffering would end.

The first four trials were illusions, but he hadn’t anticipated that the fifth trial would be true pain. Lin Ming clenched his teeth and desperately clung to his consciousness. When he had practiced with only a tiny amount of iron thread grass to ease his pain, or when he had suffered the agonizing soul tearing pain of fusing with the soul fragment, he had shouldered the pain. This scalding sea of blood was nothing but a light summer day to him!

As Lin Ming thought this, the blood sea suddenly ignited. A combustion of black flames shot to the sky in a hellish inferno!

The flames surged towards Lin Ming. Lin Ming could clearly feel the waves of hot pressure pressing down on him. Seeing this flood of flames, an average person's impulse would have been to feel utter and complete horror.

Lin Ming suddenly gave a ferocious shout!

"My martial arts path is like a moth to the flame, you wish for me to turn to ashes in an ocean of ten thousand flames? I couldn't wish for anything more!"

Flames swallowed Lin Ming. In the next moment, everything turned to nothing, the world became void. Lin Ming stood up and looked around. He had returned to the jade platform. All around him were boys and girls that were grimacing in pain, or had lost all their color.

Seeing Lin Ming suddenly open his eyes and stand up, Muyi was startled. He looked at the incense burner, that incense stick still had a tiny bit left!

Frosty Ling's record had been broken!

Qin Xingxuan was also incomparably surprised. She had experienced the five trials of this dream realm before and knew exactly how fierce and powerful they were. Although her sixth grade talent was unprecedented in Sky Fortune Kingdom, talent was not much help in passing the trials of the dream realm. Qin Xingxuan had used less than half an hour, but Lin Ming had used less than an incense stick of time before he had awoken. Anyone would think this was absolutely impossible to believe.

"Extraordinary! Extraordinary! This is the first time I have seen someone with such a heart of martial arts! Yes, what was his score in the Strength Trial?" An old man asked the beautiful lady supervisor who had been in charge for then.

"2700 jins." Lin Ming had taken the first place in the Strength Trial, the beautiful lady supervisor remembered with certainty.

"Oh?" The old man's moved and he eagerly asked, "What is his talent?"

Listening to the old man, before the lady supervisor had even replied, Muyi had already said, “Grade three medium.”

“Only grade three?” The only man was surprised, and he began to shake in disappointment and sighed, “What a pity, what a pity!” A grade three talent wasn’t too bad, but it was inferior to the prodigies of the Seven Profound Martial House.

However Muyi said. “Sometimes talent isn’t everything. Just you wait and see, that Lin Ming is a dragon among humans.”

Muyi said this with confidence. When he had first seen Lin Ming’s talent grade, he had been greatly surprised and had thought that there had been some sort of mistake. But he knew that Lin Ming already had a great achievement that many people in their entire lives could not hope to reach. Since that mysterious elder had chosen Lin Ming, then Lin Ming must have extraordinary talents that he could not see!

Though Muyi spoke with confidence, the other man only shook his head. The role that talent played in a martial artist’s future was too vital and important. It was pivotal for their future achievements. With a medium grade-three talent, even if this boy had massive financial support backing him, he would only end up stuck at the Pulse Condensation Stage.

As Lin Ming left the stage, Lan Yunyue who had been distantly looking at Lin Ming, had eyes full of complex emotions. She had long known that Lin Ming’s will was firm and steady, but did not expect that he would have passed the dream trials so quickly.

She also now knew that for Lin Ming to give up the martial arts path was impossible. His own determination had reached the highest limit.

After Lin Ming left the jade platform, he was led to the resting lounge where he would later be escorted to the final trial – the Exquisite Pagoda.

Chapter 38 – The Exquisite Pagoda

Chapter 38 – The Exquisite Pagoda

…

…

…

The Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda was constructed by the masters of the Seven Profound Valleys. The mysterious and unknown materials that made it were from beyond the borders of the Sky Fortune Kingdom, and the light that filtered through it made it glitter like translucent gems in the daylight.

The Exquisite Pagoda had seven floors altogether. Each was engraved with subtle and meticulous formations; these were a magic array.

However this magic array was different than the one on the jade platform. The jade platform's was only an illusion array that provoked harmless dreams, but this Exquisite Pagoda's magic array was a killing one.

The killing array was able to utilize illusions to kill. Those who were trapped in the illusion and died, would truly die.

Of course, the Exquisite Pagoda was only used for the entrance exam, so a death inside was not real. Instead, those that were defeated would only be kicked out from the magic array.

Inside the Exquisite Pagoda, one would not be able to use rare weapons or armor. They would only be able to use ordinary weapons. The trial would depend on one's own ability to pass.

As time passed, the number of candidates on the jade stage began to decrease. Each flash of light that appeared signified that another candidate had failed. Out of the hundred people that had started, sixty or seventy percent had already been eliminated, which even included someone at the Third Stage of Body Transformation.

When he was ejected from dreamland, the Third Stage martial artist slumped his shoulders and looked dejected. This was his third time participating in the Seven Profound Martial House entrance exam, and he had not thought that he would be defeated this time around. He was already eighteen years old; this had been his last and final opportunity.

After less than a half hour had passed, a second person on the jade stage finally opened their eyes. That person exhaled a single long breath, and with a pale face and trembling legs, he stood up. His back was soaked in sweat.

This person was the high fourth-grade talent, Wang Yanfeng.

After he stood up he turned to looked for the tall and burly youth and Lin Ming who had stolen his spotlight during the Strength Trial. However, he only saw the suffering burly youth, and did not see Lin Ming. Wang Yanfeng's lips turned up to form a proud and happy smile.

However, when the staff led him to the lounge, he saw Lin Ming already inside and meditating in silence. His face darkened. He had thought that Lin Ming had already been eliminated, and hadn't thought that Lin Ming could possibly have passed the Dream Trial first.

This guy!

Wang Yanfeng felt a deep crisis in his heart. Without resting, he left the lounge and found his hanger-ons. He whispered to them, "Look up what talent this fellow is."

Lin Ming noticed Wang Yanfeng's hostility towards him. But this was normal. Each candidate was in competition with the others, and there was only one first place reward.

Slowly, the number of people in the lounge increased, and the second trial had reached its conclusion.

In the end, out of the candidates that had participated in the second trial, only 92 remained. Nearly 90% had been eliminated!

The candidates who had just barely managed to pass the Dream Trial were not given time to rest, the last trial would begin immediately.

If they passed this final trial, then they would be a disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House. If they failed, then all of their previous efforts would have gone to waste.

“The third trial – The Exquisite Pagoda.”

A loud and forceful voice resounded in the crowd. This time the supervisor for this trial was a tall, thin, middle-aged man. Though he looked ordinary, his body had an imposing manner that made one’s heartbeat speed up. Lin Ming only needed a glance to tell that this person was a master, perhaps even someone who was at the Houtian stage.

Lin Ming could not help but sigh. Before coming to Seven Profound Martial House, he had not seen many martial artists who were at the Sixth Stage of Body Transformation – the Pulse Condensation Period. But now he had seen at least five or six Houtian masters.

However this was also normal. In Sky Fortune Kingdom, Houtian masters would usually not be found at the Imperial Palace or even the Martial Quarters. Instead they would be at the Seven Profound Martial House. Here, most Houtian masters came from beyond Sky Fortune Kingdom, most were disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys.

“Follow me.” The middle-aged man said, and then turned around and walked away.

The 92 remaining candidates followed after him. Some onlookers also followed after. Not everyone could watch the second trial and third trial. These people following were either nobles or were students of the Seven Profound Martial House.

The middle-aged man's pace seemed slow, but the speed was similar to running. The candidates had to race forwards to keep up.

After a period of time about equal to how long it takes to finish a meal, they arrived in a valley of the Zhou Mountains. In this valley was a large and magnificent building. The building's entrance plaque had four calligraphic characters written with a large brush. 'Seven Profound Martial Pavilion'.

As they entered, they saw a building that was 200 feet high. This was the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda.

"Really high!"

This was Lin Ming's first thought as he entered. He had never seen a building that high before. It had seven floors, and each floor was about thirty feet high. It would take several men standing on each others' shoulders to reach the ceiling of one floor. The grandest temple of Green Mulberry City could only match up to a single floor of this Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda.

"Now, you can go in. There is no time limit. As long as you pass through the first floor you have qualified. The second floor is good and the third floor is outstanding. The fourth floor is for geniuses. As for the fifth floor...heh heh..." The middle-aged man slyly smiled and let the anticipating crowd hang onto his word, "It's simply impossible."

Hearing the words of this middle-aged man, some of the youths remained unconvinced. Wang Yanfeng saw these youths and sneered. What a group of idiots. As if the Exquisite Pagoda would be so simple.

The Seven Profound Martial House entrance exam had three trials. The first trial tested the foundation, the second trial tested the heart of a martial artist, and the third round was the most important; it was a practical test of combat prowess and degree of genius!

These genius talents, when compared to their contemporaries, had those with differing levels of combat strength.

The Exquisite Pagoda contained a killing array. The enemies inside came at various levels of strength. The magic array used the age of one's bones to determine which enemies would be faced. The older the bone age, the more difficult the opponent.

Because of this, there had only been one person who had reached the fifth floor. This person was not elder senior brother Ling Sen of the Heavenly Abode, but the girl who seemed to be like gentle water, Qin Xingxuan.

A sixth grade talent, this was not a joke. Many people did not know Qin Xingxuan's cultivation, but Wang Yanfeng knew. She was at the peak of the Fourth Stage of Body Cultivation.

She was similar to Ling Sen in cultivation, but she was younger than him by five years!

Although Wang Yanfeng was an arrogant man, he was not arrogant enough to think that he could match Qin Xingxuan. He would be satisfied with the fourth floor.

Looking at this Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda, Wang Yanfeng's heart surged with an overwhelmingly strong fighting spirit. For him, the first and second trials of the exam had been empty and he was unable to show his true strength, so those powerful feelings could go nowhere, but this third trial was a measure of true battle.

Strength, skill, agility, and combat skills were all involved inside. Wang Yanfeng was confident in himself. He would amaze the world with a single brilliant feat and become an overnight sensation in this third trial!

"Go in! The difficulty of the trial will be decided by your age." As soon as the middle-aged man waved his hand, the gate of the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda swung open.

Beyond the arched entrance, there was a brilliant light shining from inside. Lin Ming took a deep breath and slowly stepped in.

At this time, Qin Xingxuan had arrived and was watching the scene. She saw Lin Ming's fading back in the distance and kept her gaze on him as he vanished past the seven colored gate.

"Haha, Xingxuan, you are very concerned about Lin Ming."

Rather abruptly asked this question by her teacher, Qin Xingxuan lowered her head as she bashfully blushed. She said, "Xingxuan cannot hold a candle to the inscription technique and achievements of Lin Ming. But if we compare our fighting ability, then Xingxuan is a little confident."

"Mn, concerning fighting strength, Lin Ming is truly inferior to you Xingxuan. What floor do you think Lin Ming will reach?"

"This is...well, according to common sense, a fifteen year old at the Second Stage of Body Transformation would already have a very difficult time. But Lin Ming's strength is much stronger than average...I think he has a possibility to reach the third floor." Qin Xingxuan thought that this was already a very high appraisal of him. If Lin Ming wanted to reach the third layer he would at least need to cultivate to the Third Stage of Body Transformation.

"You're right, but.... I think that Lin Ming might be able to give us a pleasant surprise."

As Muyi and Qin Xingxuan were talking, in an obscure corner of the valley, Lan Yunyue was also distantly looking at Lin Ming's fading back, and her eyes were full of complex emotions.

As a disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House, Lan Yunyue had the authority to enter the valley and observe the entrance exam. This was the last trial of the exam. As long as one passed, they would become an official disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House.

With Lin Ming's current condition, he would probably pass the first floor of the Exquisite Pagoda.

She had not thought that only after half a year, Lin Ming would have such an astonishing growth…

If she had to practice martial arts with Lin Ming in the Martial House, Lan Yunyue didn't know how to feel about this in her heart.

At this moment, Lin Ming could not read the thoughts of others who were thinking about him. He had already arrived at the center of the killing array.

As soon as he entered the Exquisite Pagoda, the other candidates disappeared from his vision, and only he was left.

He appeared in a dark world faded in black. The night sky was carpeted with stars and the ground underneath his foot was hard, black rock. In front of him not too far away, a shadow gray miasma gradually congealed into reality. It became a warrior holding a longstaff.

"This is the enemy?" Lin Ming judged that this shadow warrior's cultivation was around the early Second Stage of Body Transformation.

The middle-aged man had said a moment ago that the strength of the enemy was determined by one's own age. Lin Ming was fifteen years and eight months old. The enemy's cultivation was the early Second Stage, those older candidates would naturally face enemies whose strength was higher.

For a fifteen year old youth, it seemed he had to defeat someone at the Second Stage of Body Transformation in order to pass.

Lin Ming no longer wasted his time. His supple body shot forward like a ferocious and vigorous leopard. The 'True Primal Chaos Formula' revolved in him and true essence pooled in his muscles. The first strike would be a killing one!

Chapter 39 – Unstoppable Force

Chapter 39 – Unstoppable Force

…

…

…

There were many floors to pass; Lin Ming could not afford to waste his energy and stamina. He had to rush to the top in a single leap and take the first place reward – the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill!

Seeing Lin Ming flying at him, the shadow warrior raised his staff to block him. But Lin Ming was too fast and before the staff had been raised to his chest, a hard fist had already imprinted itself onto its chest.

“Peng!”

The shadow warrior’s chest collapsed and it spat blood, before it fell over dead.

Lin Ming easily passed the first floor. This was natural, as Lin Ming’s strength had greatly surpassed those of the same cultivation.

Onto the second floor!

This was still a black space like before, but this time a vicious beast stood in front of Lin Ming.

“A first-level vicious beast!”

A first-level vicious beast was equivalent to a martial artist at the Third Stage of Body Transformation. This beast was a single-horned rhinoceros. Its strength as a first-level vicious beast was relatively poor; it was about as strong as a peak Second Stage martial artist.

Although its strength was rather ordinary, it had superior defensive abilities due to its tough hide. Even if a martial artist greatly exceeded it in strength and cultivation, they must still expend some effort to defeat it.

Lin Ming had to overcome several obstacles and did not want to waste his stamina. His hand turned, and a chilly deboning knife appeared in his palm. In Lin Ming's mind appeared the single-horned rhinoceros' blood vessels and body structure, with each of its weaknesses clear as day.

Lin Ming's advantage was his familiarity with the weaknesses of vicious beasts.

The single-horned rhinoceros suddenly roared, and trampled towards Lin Ming. Although this was an illusionary realm, Lin Ming felt a rumbling vibration in the ground.

An illusion array was not the same as a killing array. In an illusion array, the illusions didn't have the power to kill you, they could also cause you to feel fear. As long as you kept your heart and mind and stood your ground, then the illusion would shatter. But a killing array was different; standing still would only be suicide.

As he watched the single-horned rhinoceros barrel towards him, Lin Ming suddenly leapt to one side. His jumping posture was odd. His body was parallel with the ground and one of his shoulders nearly touched the dirt. In the next moment, the huge body of the single-horned rhinoceros passed by him. Lin Ming slammed his hand against the ground and the force propelled him underneath the beast's abdomen.

He raised his hand and slashed with the knife!

"Puff!"

The boning knife struck just half a foot up from the center of the single-horned rhinoceros' front thigh. This exact spot was the softest patch on the beast's abdomen, and was also where its abdominal aorta was located.

The knife slid in like butter and gouged out the beast. A stream of blood jetted out like a broken pipe and the single-horned rhino let loose a keening anguished howl. The vicious beast trembled fiercely and then fell to the ground.

Seeing the success of his knife strike, Lin Ming was unable to restrain a sigh as he thought of how lifelike and realistic this magic array was. The single-horned rhinoceros phantom had a body structure and weaknesses just like a real single-horned rhinoceros. He thought that perhaps the magic array had a beast spirit of the single-horned rhinoceros sealed inside, thus its potent realism.

After the successful knife strike, Lin Ming pulled back instead of taking another cut. Although killing the single-horned rhinoceros at this point was not difficult anymore, he wanted to save his stamina. There was no resting between the floors of the Exquisite Pagoda.

The aorta had been cut open, and the single-horned rhinoceros was losing more and more blood. Its movements began to slow, but this time Lin Ming waited for another opportunity and slashed his knife down again. There was a 'puff!' sound and the abdominal aorta on the other side of the single-horned rhinoceros was also cut!

The fight has lost its suspense, it was only a matter of waiting now. The single-horned rhinoceros thrashed about as it teetered back and forth on the edge of death, until it unwillingly went still.

Lin Ming had entered the third floor!

"Oh? Someone has entered the third floor!" Outside the Exquisite Pagoda, several elders had seen that the runes and symbols on the third floor began to move and light up. The third floor was activating, but they did not know who it was that had entered.

“It should be Wang Yanfeng. He is strongest in consideration of his age. Lin Ming’s strength lies in his martial heart and in his inborn divine strength. In terms of combat prowess, strength is only a small part. Speed, skill, and fighting techniques are not any less important than strength alone.”

“Most of the candidates are still stuck on the first floor. That Wang Yanfeng has already rushed up to the third floor is impressive.”

As these elders discussed, another person had reached the third floor. This person was only thirty breaths slower than Lin Ming. This person was Wang Yanfeng.

Wang Yanfeng and Lin Ming were similar in age, and the opponents they fought on the second floor were the same; both were first-level vicious beasts that were equal to the peak of the Second Stage of Body Transformation.

Wang Yanfeng was at the early Third Stage of Body Transformation. Not only that, but his combat strength exceeded that of those his age. The vicious beast was not his match, but its skin was coarse and its meat thick and tough. Wang Yanfeng had spent much of his true essence to defeat it.

There was no rest in the Exquisite Pagoda. On the third floor, Wang Yanfeng now came head to head with two dark and shadowy humanoid figures holding two long swords. These shadow warriors were at the early Third Stage of Body Transformation.

Wang Yanfeng gritted his teeth and maintained his dignified demeanor. He could deal with these two warriors, but he also had to think carefully about how to use his true essence, otherwise breaking through to the fourth floor would become increasingly difficult.

He had to make this as quick a victory as possible. He began to revolve the true essence within his entire body, and prepared the display martial skill handed down in his family, the ‘Nine Paths of Truth’.

…

At this time, Lin Ming also confronted two early Third Stage shadow warriors on the third floor.

The Third Stage of Body Transformation was Viscera Training. He hadn't anticipated that he would face something of this level at only the third floor. And there were also two! The difficulty of the fourth and fifth floors could only be imagined and there was no rest allowed between them. No wonder the middle-aged man had so confidently said that the fifth floor was impossible to pass.

While Lin Ming revolved the 'True Primal Chaos Formula', he also cautiously kept the two shadow warriors in his line of sight. For now, the two were motionless. He would be glad to this moment to recover just a bit, although he had not spent that much true essence.

But the two warriors did not give Lin Ming the chance. In a single leap they both reached him, one attacked from the left and one attacked from the right, both with vicious killing intent.

The two warriors were amazingly swift and had teamwork. Their movements seemed to be in harmony with each other like two halves of a whole. One warrior swept the ground with his long sword. Lin Ming jumped to dodge the strike, but the other warrior took advantage of Lin Ming as he was twisting in the air and stabbed his sword towards Lin Ming's chest.

"Ha!"

Lin Ming cried out and suddenly shot his foot out towards the warrior's wrist. "Kacha!" The warrior's wrist broke with a single kick!

However the shadow warriors did not feel any pain. The shadow warrior only shook his wrist and sent an open palm flying towards Lin Ming. Every movement he made left him wide open! These shadow warriors could only aggress; they could not defend or retreat. This was a suicidal form of fighting which wished for both sides to perish!

This moment was where Lin Ming's old strength would have perished, but he had a new strength now. Seeing his opponent fight with such a self-destructive style, he forcefully revolved the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' and forced his true essence to the forefront. A punch went flying out that intersected with the shadow warrior's palm.

"Peng!" The shadow warrior was forced back a few steps and spat out a mouthful of blood.

But Lin Ming's vitality only swelled up. It was easy to force them down and he didn't even have a single injury. Even so, he was secretly surprised. These two shadow warriors may not have been top tier martial artists but they were not weak either. Their close cooperation and kamikaze fighting style were really tricky and difficult to deal with. And this was only the third floor; there was still the fourth and fifth.

Although he was surprised, Lin Ming had not stopped moving for a single half second. He had landed back from the recoil, and while the injured shadow warrior was catching his breath, he slammed his fist straight into the shadow warrior's face.

Now the other shadow warrior rushed to intercept him. He wielded his long sword in his hands and cleaved downwards. This strike was to cut Lin Ming in half.

"Ha! Now it's you! Die!"

Lin Ming's fist was only a feint. He suddenly turned around with the deboning knife in hand and made a horizontal cut on the shadow warrior's blade.

"Boom!" Sparks scattered everywhere as the blades met.

As the knife met the sword, Lin Ming had not been forced back. This was a reflection of his astonishing physical strength!

"Be defeated by me!"

After Lin Ming fended off the long sword, he punched out at the center of the shadow warrior's chest!

“Peng!” There was a dull thud as the opponent’s ribs collapsed, took a fatal blow to the heart, and died on the spot.

After defeating one, the other was already injured and no longer a threat. Lin Ming set out several kicks at the last shadow warrior’s legs, and then stabbed him with the knife.

The third floor, passed!

Outside the Exquisite Pagoda the elders saw the magic array of the fourth floor light up and they were startled. “My goodness, the fourth floor, and it only took half an incense stick of time!”

Chapter 40 – Break Through the Fourth Floor

Chapter 40 – Break Through the Fourth Floor

…

…

…

Outside of the Exquisite Pagoda, the elders saw the magic array of the fourth floor light up and they were startled. “My goodness, the fourth floor, and it only took half an incense stick of time!”

“This Wang Yanfeng, he’s not simple.” These elders had already expected Wang Yanfeng to reach the fourth floor, but hadn’t anticipated that he would do it so quickly. “At such speed, perhaps Wang Yanfeng can break through the fourth floor and step into the fifth. Certainly I had thought that the fifth floor was impossible, but he should be proud even with this result.”

“I just don’t know how Lin Ming and Liang Tieshan will perform. Those two’s results weren’t too bad. Liang Tieshen was the tall and burly youth who had inborn divine strength. He was also fifteen years old.

Lin Ming and Liang Tieshan were fifteen years old, had cultivation at the Second Stage of Body Transformation, and also had inborn divine strength. This kind of power at their age was definitely impressive.

However in the eyes of the numerous elders, if these two were compared to Wang Yanfeng, there was still a gap.

That Lin Ming had inborn divine strength was not wrong, but he was only at the Second Stage of Body Transformation. Wang Yanfeng was at the Third Stage of Body

Transformation. The main characteristic of the Third Stage was infusing true essence into the visceral organs. Viscera Training martial artists' heart and lungs would be empowered. Their breaths would be long and their endurance double that of a Second Stage martial artist.

Without a doubt, Wang Yanfeng also had superior technique and speed. Even looking at strength, Wang Yanfeng's record was only 300 less than Lin Ming; the disparity was not too great.

For this third trial, if there was no accident, then Wang Yanfeng would take first place.

The third trial also accounted for the largest proportion when it came to the final evaluation. If Wang Yanfeng came out first in the third trial, that in addition to his talent would surpass Lin Ming, and the entrance exam's first place would belong to him.

However at this moment, the truth was that Wang Yanfeng was struggling at the third floor. These two martial artists were difficult to deal with, for every few moves they traded, he would encounter one that threatened his life. Wang Yanfeng used a tremendous amount of strength and true essence to defeat one, but had also suffered a minor injury.

"Damnit, how is this so freakish. Even with the 'Nine Paths of Truth' that is passed down in my family I only managed to kill one. It seems that chances of reaching the fourth floor are getting less and less certain." Wang Yanfeng worried; he had already consumed 20% of his inner true essence. In this dreamland he was unable to supplement it with pills or drugs. He could only depend on his Third Stage viscera training to supplement his energy bit by bit.

…

Wang Yanfeng was anxious over his true essence consumption rate, but Lin Ming was also worrying over the same reason. He was not at Viscera Training, but was only at the Second Stage of Body Transformation, Flesh Training. He did not have excessive vitality and his every move consumed more true essence.

Luckily, Lin Ming had the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ and had achieved the small success of the first stage. This ancient skill revolved within him, it allowed him to supplement his true essence with an unceasing supply. Although he could not use it endlessly, it was still able to alleviate the intense pressure he felt.

This time in front of Lin Ming, the opponents were two first-level vicious beasts – Iron Armor Bears.

There were strong and weak first-level vicious beasts. The Single Horned Rhinoceros was weak; it was only equal to a peak Second Stage martial artist. But this Iron Armor Bear was actually equal to a peak Third Stage martial artist. Not only that, but there were two.

Lin Ming was solemn. Before this he had never fought against an opponent at the peak of the Third Stage. He did not have complete confidence in victory in defeating one, and not to mention this was a pair.

But most importantly was that this battle had two strict conditions. First, he could not use up his limited true essence. Second, he could not receive a single injury.

Lin Ming took a steadying breath as he recalled every detail he knew about the Iron Armor Bear.

The Iron Armor Bear’s strength was 5000 jins. Its speed was a bit slow, but the entire body was covered in thick plates of bone armor. A sword or spear would find it hard to penetrate this carapace, and it did not have any specific weakness.

Although he knew that the armor did not have any weaknesses, Lin Ming knew that the Iron Armor Bear itself had a weakness, and that was that between the numerous intersections and crosses of the bone armor were a few small slits.

The slits were located at the joints. They were thin and hard to target; if he wanted to strike at these places in the heat of battle, he must open his eyes to his insight and utilize instantaneous judgement and peerless accuracy to have a chance.

But after practicing the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’, Lin Ming’s perception had risen to a new level and his judgment and accuracy had been fostered steadily by his years of deboning.

“Zhu Yan should have easily been able to deal with these two Iron Armor Bears half a year ago, not to mention now Zhu Yan must have progressed. I can’t lose to him like this.”

Lin Ming stared at the two Iron Armor Bears and his fighting spirit began to rise in his heart.

“Hu!”

An Iron Armor Bear suddenly leapt upwards and smashed its thick, heavy paws at Lin Ming.

The Iron Armor Bear weighed over a thousand jins. Coupled with its awesome strength, this strike would have even felled an elephant!

Lin Ming’s eyes widened and he did not retreat. Instead, like a graceful bird that flew with grace and poise, he passed by the Iron Armor Bear. His eye’s focused onto a point of the bear’s abdomen where two bone armor plates joined with each other and struck out with his knife!

“!”

It was only a simple deboning knife, but Lin Ming had practiced its strokes tens of thousands of times. The knife accurately slid between the two bone armor plates. The knife was quick, and with only a slight hitch in the thick flesh, it slid through with extreme speed.

As soon as the blow struck, before the time it takes to snap a finger, blood shot into the air.

“Rahh!” The Iron Armor Bear became mad. The knife wound had not been fatal and it rushed crazily at Lin Ming!

…

"Less than forty people have been eliminated and more than fifty have passed. This is a decent result." A Seven Profound Martial House elder slowly said as he watched the candidates who had been kicked from the Exquisite Pagoda.

The Exquisite Pagoda was completely sealed from the outside. The elders were not Xiantian experts and had no way to see what was happening inside the Exquisite Pagoda. They could only judge how far the candidates had gone by which layer they had been ejected from.

If they were ejected from the first floor then they were eliminated, and if they were ejected from the second then they passed.

A quarter of an hour had passed since the candidates had entered the Exquisite Pagoda, and all of them had long since passed the first floor. Some had arrived on the third floor and some were even challenging the fourth.

"Now only five people have not yet come out." As an elder said this, the symbols began to flash on the Exquisite Pagoda and another two candidates were kicked out. They had been ejected from the third floor, so they had failed at the third floor.

Several martial artists had already ran up and were caring for the unconscious candidates.

These two candidates were at the peak of the Third Stage of Body Transformation and their strength results and been 2300 jins. Unfortunately they were also seventeen and eighteen. They had not been able to break through the third floor of the Exquisite Pagoda, but they were also proud of their results.

When these two people were ejected, Lan Yunyue immediately turned to them and instantly distinguished that they were not Lin Ming.

Out of the 92 candidates that had entered so far, 39 had already been ejected from the Exquisite Pagoda. Lan Yanyue could clearly see that these people did not include Lin Ming. That could only mean that Lin Ming was still within the Exquisite Pagoda!

Lin Ming… Lan Yunyue lightly nipped her lips as he eyes glazed over with memories.

She knew that this meant that Lin Ming had passed, and was at least at the third floor.

The third floor was in truth an enormous glory. In the school records of the Seven Profound Martial House, those that passed the third floor would one day achieve the peak of Body Transformation, the Sixth Stage of Pulse Condensation.

The Royal Government would bestow upon all those martial artists of the Pulse Condensation Period a rank and title within the kingdom. Although it was only a third-class viscount, it was not that different from an official position and was even hereditary.

This was a noble title! In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, this was a symbol of glory and of the aristocracy. Because of a single person's personal glory, their family would enter the lineage of the aristocracy and bring honor to their ancestors.

Just then, another candidate was expelled from the fourth floor.

This meant that Lin Ming had passed the third floor!

This tall and sturdy boy with thick features was the boy with inborn divine strength, Liang Tieshan. He had put forth his utmost effort and after taking a severe wound had broke to the third floor and was defeated nearly upon arrival.

"This Liang Tieshen is a good seedling. He's worth cultivating with resources."

"Mm., he's quite good. Now there are two left, Lin Ming and Wang Yanfeng."

"That Lin Ming can persist even with his present strength is not easy. His strength is greater compared to Liang Tieshan's and he also has a strong heart of martial arts that helps him. But to break through the fourth floor is uncertain…"

"Mmm, let alone Lin Ming, even Wang Yanfeng will not find it easy."

…

"Poh!" With a single stroke from his knife, blood shot out from the leg of the Iron Armor Bear. Lin Ming tumbled away as the angry Iron Armor Bear pounced on him.

By now, the two Iron Armor Bears had become Blood Bears. They each had several more knife cuts across the weak points between their armor plates. While the wounds were not fatal, loss of blood could quickly become deadly!

The motion of these two Iron Armor Bears had obviously slowed down from excessive blood loss.

Chance!

Lin Ming dodged around the two bears who tried to catch him. Their blood loss and exhaustion exposed openings in their defense, and Lin Ming sprung upwards like a cheetah.

"Roar!" The Iron Armored Bear stood up on its hind legs and threw a strike with its paws. But Lin Ming had already escaped, and while evading at the same time, Lin Ming directly stabbed his deboning knife into the Iron Armor Bear's eye!

Blood splashed from the grisly wound and the Iron Armor Bear let out an angry and painful roar. Lin Ming closed his hand into a fist and punched down on the handle like a jackhammer, and the deboning knife sunk directly into the brains of the beast.

The Iron Armor Bear died!

Chapter 41 – Fifth Floor of the Exquisite Pagoda

Chapter 41 – Fifth Floor of the Exquisite Pagoda

…

…

…

“Half an hour!” A Seven Profound Martial House elder said with surprise as he looked at the hour glass.

“These two have already been in the fourth floor for a period of time.”

Outside of the Exquisite Pagoda, the once glowing runes of the first three floors had already been extinguished. Only the fourth floor was left shining with a brilliant light; this was the proof that two people were still challenging the fourth floor.

“This is getting more and more interesting. I had thought only Wang Yanfeng would have this result, but even this Lin Ming can insist for such a long time. It really makes one not believe that he is a mere grade-three talent at the Second Stage of Body Transformation. Even with inborn divine strength, reaching the fourth floor with just this strength is not simple.” An elder said as he stroked his long white beard. Lin Ming’s battle prowess was peculiar; he could not find a reasonable explanation for it.

By now Muyi opened his mouth and said slowly, “Sometimes, Sir Sun, a person’s battle prowess cannot be explained nor extrapolated by mere common sense. The earlier trials cannot measure a person’s battle talent and perception.”

Muyi did not explain that Lin Ming had an ancient master behind him. The workings of a Xiantian level expert and their legacy skill manuals were far too complicated for him to comprehend.

“Mmm, what Mister Muyi said is not wrong; his fighting talent is truly extraordinary. But his cultivation is shallow and the skill manual he uses is ordinary. He can actually rely on his superior fighting skill and intuition to face a superior enemy, but in this kind of battle, skill and intuition have their eventual limits. As they say, strength can break ten thousand skills, but with just skill alone, the most that can happen is their combat ability is raised a level. The end result will not be good.”

Muyi smiled slyly and said, “Sir Sun, please have a good look.”

…

As these elders discussed, Wang Yanfeng was struggling mightily on the fourth floor. His cultivation was at the early Third Stage, but his true strength and battle ability rivaled someone at the peak of the Third Stage. However, what he faced now was two Iron Armor Bears who were also at the peak of the Third Stage.

Although the Iron Armor Bears appeared a bit cute and clumsy, their attack method and strategies were coordinated, and their terrifying strength and near flawless defense were nothing but an incomparable headache.

Even if he were to only be scratched, his fate would be for his muscles to be torn to shreds and his bones to break.

As soon Wang Yanfeng used a secret family skill three times, he finally managed to bring down an Iron Armor Bear. However, his body’s true essence had also almost reached its limit, and the remaining Iron Armor Bear’s resisting defense was able to block his family’s secret skill.

Seeing the last Iron Armor Bear rushing towards him, Wang Yanfeng let out a roar and jumped upwards. His hand grasped his sword and with a thrust he maliciously jabbed it into the bear’s gaping maw!

The Iron Armor Bear’s entire body was covered with hard iron plates; the only two weaknesses he could see were the eyes and mouth.

Wang Yanfeng's sword pierced the bear's throat, but at the same time his wrist was snapped by the bear's bite.

"Pah!" The Iron Armor Bear angrily struck Wang Yanfeng in the chest with his paw. It felt as if he was struck by a sledgehammer, and his internal organs shook.

Wang Yanfeng was thrown backwards like a falling chicken and slammed against the floor. He was covered in dirt and only barely managed to prop himself up. His entire body was covered in blood, and this blood was mixed with meat. This meat was actually parts of his internal organs.

"Even though I'm at the Viscera Training stage, and my organs are protected by true essence, this single blow was fatal..."

Although Wang Yanfeng was severely injured and on the verge of death, the Iron Armor Bear was not much better off. Its throat was crushed and its life was ebbing; it was only a matter of how long it could last before it died. But it could still kill Wang Yanfeng!

Wang Yanfeng spat a mouthful of blood. "I have to break through this fourth floor... even though I'm number one with my results, if I pass the fourth floor my status within the family will definitely rise. Even if I'm not the eldest son I still have a chance to be the future head of the household. I can also shut up those old codgers and their stupid mouths and they'll stop bothering father to take my resources..."

As Wang Yanfeng thought of these things, his face became grim with a hideous color.

However even as Wang Yanfeng was desperately going all out, he did not know that Lin Ming was using bloodletting tactics and tricks to fight and had already pierced the second Iron Armor Bear's brains.

Fourth floor, passed!

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He had finally reached the fifth floor. This was also the final floor that Qin Xingxuan had reached! The floor that middle-aged examiner had said was impossible to pass…

…

“I did not think that Lin Ming could go this far…” Outside the Exquisite Pagoda, Qin Xingxuan looked upwards as the runes of the fourth floor glowed, and felt surprise in her heart.

She had guessed that Lin Ming would at most reach the third floor, and that had already been a high appraisal of him. But she didn’t actually think that Lin Ming would stay at the fourth floor for such a long time. At this rate, it might even be possible to pass the fourth floor…

“When I first challenged the Exquisite Pagoda, my cultivation had already reached the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation. With cultivation at the Fourth Stage it is naturally not difficult to defeat the inferior beasts of the fourth floor, but with cultivation at the peak of the Second Stage it is impossible to last such a long time at the fourth floor.

Qin Xingxuan secretly compared herself and her achievements with Lin Ming. She had relied on her deep cultivation base to rise to the fifth floor. If she was at the same cultivation he was, she would not be his match.

“It’s already been half an hour…” Qin Xingxuan said as she looked to her side at the hourglass.

But as Qin Xingxuan looked at the time, the fifth floor of the Exquisite Pagoda suddenly lit up, and the runes and symbols began to activate one at a time. Heavy and trembling true essence immediately fluctuated in all directions.

Seeing this, Elder Sun’s teacup almost fell out of his hands. “The fifth floor!”

“Wang Yanfeng is really so fierce? He’s been there less than half an hour. Did Yuelu City’s Wang Family finally produce a peerless talent?”

“For the last ten years this result is only matched by lady Xingxuan.” The middle-aged man spoke as he looked at Qin Xingxuan. He saw Qin Xingxuan’s eyes widen but did not know what it meant.

“Absolutely incredible. This child is not a fish in a small pool. With superior fourth grade talent in addition to the Wang Family’s backing, it would be outstanding even within the Seven Profound Martial House and would easily qualify to receive superior martial arts manuals and one day become a Martial House core disciple. Even entering the Seven Profound Valley is a possibility! This Wang Yanfeng, is truly a heaven gifted talent!”

As the elder said this, the rune lights of the Exquisite Pagoda’s fourth floor began to tremble with a sudden burst of vibration. A figure was bounced out like a sack.

As soon as Elder Sun saw this, he immediately issued an order, “Lin Ming came out, quickly catch him and don’t let him injure himself falling.”

It had been less than half an hour. The martial arts catchers of the Exquisite Pagoda were inevitably tired and someone distracted, therefore Elder Sun had spoken a reminder. The Exquisite Pagoda’s death was only in the dream realm. If a candidate failed and died, he would be shunted out of the dreamland and out of the pagoda and at that moment that person would have lost their consciousness. Each floor of the Exquisite Pagoda was thirty feet. The fourth floor was ninety feet high. In those conditions, if an unconscious person fell to the ground, even a Pulse Condensation expert would not be able to withstand the impact.

The men responsible for catching the ejected candidates firmly caught the falling figure. They saw that the man had a pale, contorted face covered with cold sweat.

Because the appearance was so twisted, it took a moment for the elders outside the Exquisite Pagoda to identify him. In that instant, they were all dumbfounded.

This… this person was probably…Wang Yanfeng?

Several elders' jaws dropped as they looked up and saw the shining runes of the fifth floor. This... was the one who entered the fifth floor Lin Ming?

The Seven Profound Martial House elders were shaken. They had already felt that Muyi's previous praise of Lin Ming was incredible. Lin Ming's cultivation was only at the peak of the Second Stage; it was worse than Wang Yanfeng! But now he was the only to have reached the fifth floor, and had already stayed there for several dozen breaths of time.

Qin Xingxuan looked at the fifth floor of the Exquisite Pagoda. Her eyes changed with various emotions. Wonder, awe, respect... Lin Ming had surprised her yet again. Would he even slowly overtake her in martial arts cultivation?

At this time, in a corner of the Exquisite Pagoda's mountain valley, Lan Yunyue was shaken as she looked at the glowing fifth floor. She appeared lost and in a daze. "Lin Ming...he entered the fifth floor?"

In the history of the Seven Profound Martial House and the opening of the Exquisite Pagoda, only Qin Xingxuan had successfully passed. There had been those who entered the fifth floor, and this would happen every couple of years. Each one who did was a monstrous talent of their generation, and in the future, their path to reaching the Pulse Condensation Period was only a matter of time.

"Lin Ming..." A thought popped into Lan Yunyue's mind. Even if compared with Zhu Yan, Lin Ming was no worse. Although he did not have a great family supporting him, as long as he reached the Pulse Condensation Period in the future, he as be given a rank and title.

...

At this time, on the fifth floor of the Exquisite Pagoda, Lin Ming looked at the radical scene in front of him and could only force a smile. The fifth floor unexpectedly had two second-level vicious beasts!

Although they were only the weak species of vicious beast, their strength was equal to a martial artist at the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation. Not only that, but these two vicious beasts had eight beastly little brothers surrounding them that were equal to the peak of the Third Stage.

Ten vicious beasts stood in front of him. They had hideous looking bone armor, bright red beastly pupils, and their sharp nails and teeth were stained red with blood. All of this caused a surge of evil presence to soar to the heavens. A martial artist at his cultivation would normally look at this scene and imagine himself being torn to thousands of pieces and lose any will to fight.

Chapter 42 – The First Place Candidate

Chapter 42 – The First Place Candidate

…

…

…

Lin Ming was just able to resist the overwhelming evil aura from the vicious beasts, but he also knew that it was impossible to pass this floor.

Let alone the two second-level vicious beats, he could not even deal with the eight little brothers that crowded around them. Even if his physical condition was restored to top shape, the situation would be untenable! And he had even consumed the majority of his true essence.

He knew in his heart that although he had managed to reach the fifth floor, his ability ultimately fell short of that sixth-grade talent Qin Xingxuan. Half a year ago, Qin Xingxuan was able to overcome these ten vicious beasts and attain victory. As he looked at the overwhelming presence that the vicious beasts exuded, Lin Ming sighed with emotion.

She was truly someone who possessed a sixth-grade talent, that worthily beautiful and arrogant girl.

By his conservative estimate, Lin Ming guessed that he needed to increase his cultivation over an entire level, and at least achieve the peak of the Third Stage of Body Transformation to stand a chance. Only then could he have a possibility of passing, and that was considering a life and death struggle to his life's limit.

But Qin Xingxuan had already passed through this hurdle half a year ago.

No wonder that middle-aged examiner was so confident when he said that it was impossible to pass.

If it truly was impossible to pass, then such being the case, he would kill as many vicious beasts as he could.

Lin Ming would not give up without a fight. This was a rare opportunity to improve and hone his combat ability while dancing on the edge of death, the feeling where his strength and will were pushed to their limits in a life or death situation where any mistake could be fatal. This was a true rare and valuable experience.

“Come on!” Seeing the vicious beasts rush at him, Lin Ming shouted and stabbed his knife outwards at a silver tiger. His mind was clear; he knew that he had no chance of injuring the two second-level vicious beasts, so his goal was their eight little brothers. Some had thick meat and fur that he could not hope to penetrate this late in the game, so he chose those that had high attack power but had an equally low defense, like this silver tiger.

“Pah!” A knife stabbed into the silver tiger’s abdomen. At the same time, Lin Ming felt a tremor pass up his arm. The silver tiger’s thick flesh held the knife tight and Lin Ming almost let go.

“Damn!”

In a split second, a whip-like tail lashed out at Lin Ming’s belly. This was an attack from the two second-level vicious beasts. Its speed was quick like lightning and it was sharp as a knife; a strike from this would bisect any normal martial artist. Lin Ming twisted in the air and barely dodged the tail, but it still scratched his thigh and left him bruised and lacerated.

Lin Ming felt as if someone had branded his thigh with a heated iron bar, it burned with an aching pain. He grimaced. Even a gentle touch felt like his skin was sloughing off.

During this time the eight first-level vicious beasts surrounded Lin Ming. In the blink of an eye, he was in the center of a deadly circle. As long as these vicious beasts attacked together they would instantly tear Lin Ming apart.

“Not good!” Lin Ming was very clear; as long as these vicious beasts pounced on him together, there was nowhere he could run. In that crucial moment, Lin Ming kicked his feet against the ground and thrust his knife at the silver tiger; he who struck the first blow had the advantage!

“Roar!” The silver tiger howled with anger and also rushed at Lin Ming. In this dream land, the wild and vicious beasts here knew not fear within their heart.

“Poh!” The knife jabbed straight into the silver tiger’s throat. However Lin Ming was also caught by its claw and drew a gaping hole in his abdomen. His Second Stage Flesh Training’s true essence barely protected him from being eviscerated in one strike.

“One down!” Lin Ming clutched his bloody abdomen that was dripping red. He had finally suffered a severe wound now and his true essence was at less than a single percent. He had not thought that the fifth floor would be so difficult; compared to the fourth floor it was at least ten times the trouble.

…

“A quarter of an hour! Lin Ming has already been on the fifth floor for a quarter hour. This Lin Ming is still persisting on the fifth floor, it’s truly unbelievable.”

“Mm. Although he could only be running, but he probably does not have much true essence left. Even running for a quarter hour is an achievement.”

“There will probably be some great forces that will try to recruit Lin Ming. Muyi, you had talked about him earlier, is your Marshal Quarter’s not interested in the boy?”

Muyi smiled but did not say anything. This group of fellows did not know as he did that behind Lin Ming was an incredible master. He probably came here for his own experience. Perhaps this mysterious master of his would soon bring him back to the mountains for painstaking cultivation. How could his Marshal Quarters possibly hope to attract him?

But Muyi did not say these thoughts out loud. By now, an elder surnamed Xu who was playing with two jade balls in his hand slowly said, “Elder Sun, you had a somewhat high opinion of him. I acknowledge that this Lin Ming has done well, but with only a grade-three talent, to achieve this accomplishment so far, he probably had a fortuitous encounter of some kind and ate some rare and precious material and because of this, experienced an increase in his strength. As for his future accomplishments…ha-ha, I don’t see much need for flattery.”

The elder surnamed Xu heard these words and knew they held some truth. If a person’s luck was good, and blessed by the heavens, he might be able to eat some precious and rare object or material and experience an increase in his cultivation or strength. But that sort of superiority by ingesting these things had its limits and would slowly be worn down by time, until it vanished and became not too rare.

The elder surnamed Xu rationally said, “This Lin Ming is good but his cultivation speed will not be able to follow him in the future. He’ll be easily overtaken.”

Several elders echoed this. Muyi faintly smiled and said, “There’s no need to say anything more. Lin Ming’s future achievements, everything will be seen in the future.”

As Muyi’s voice fell, he looked up and saw the fifth floor of the Exquisite Pagoda begin to tremble. The runes flashed and suddenly a person’s shadow was ejected and floated downwards like a slip of paper.

“That boy Lin Ming finally came out!”

Lin Ming had killed a silver tiger on the fifth floor and taken a serious wound in exchange. However even on the verge of death, in his dying moment he had brought down a wind wolf and finally killed two first-level vicious beasts.

He was already proud of this result. It had to be known that on the fifth floor, being able to kill two vicious beasts while being surrounded on all sides was incomparably more difficult than the fourth floor.

In the distance, Lan Yunyue looked at Lin Ming as he was caught by people waiting for him underneath the Exquisite Pagoda. In her heart she did now know why she felt a tiny tremble. She pursed her lips, and without a pause, turned around and quietly left…

…

“Mm? Lin Ming is already awake?”

Death in the dream realm is only the imagination of the mind. The candidate’s true body would be shot out of the Exquisite Pagoda upon death, but they would have already thought they were dead, thus they would be unconscious for a period of time. But Lin Ming had unexpectedly awakened so quickly, and his complexion only showed a bit of paleness. This caused the elders of the Seven Profound Martial House to feel a bit startled. Compared to Wang Yanfeng, he had still been unconscious even after a while. This was the disparity that came with such a pure heart of martial arts.

“This Lin Ming should be the first place candidate of this entrance exam.” Elder Sun said.

“You say that but the award for first place is a Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill. You do not think it is wasted on a boy with a mere grade-three talent? How much of it do you think he would be able to absorb? The final assessment does not depend on just the results but also on the candidate’s own talent.” Elder Xu responded to Elder Sun’s proposal in a hoarse voice.

Elder Sun said, “It is true that we must also account for talent, but that is only if there is a close tie in the final results of the exams. This Lin Ming took first place in all three trials, how can his assessment not be first in the final assessment? Otherwise everyone would only think that we are corrupt and unfair. Regarding the waste of the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill, its only use is for the main sect to attract top tier talents to come to the Seven Profound Martial House entrance exams. Can it be that you thought the main sect would create just a Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill to enter into the main sect as a core disciple?”

“Moreover, as far as I know, aren’t Elder Xu and the head of Yuelu City’s Wang Family good old friends?”

As Elder Sun finished his words, Elder Xu’s eyes twitched and he let out a cold humph, “Sun Sifan, I was only considering all angles of the exam for the sake of argument. If you wish to guarantee this Lin Ming as the first place candidate, then I have no objections. How about we make a bet? We shall see six months from now who is stronger between Wang Yanfeng and this boy Lin Ming and who will enter the Heavenly Abode. How about it?”

Elder Sun felt shocked by Elder Xu’s words and was somewhat speechless. He began to feel an angry stirring in his heart. He was only trying to act impartially for this entrance exam. He did not think much of Elder Xu and did not normally have any dealings with him, He also could not get used to his self-serving nature that only tried to advance his own interests in the guise of helping with this entrance exam, which ultimately led to this struggle.

But even as Elder Xu challenged him, Elder Sun did not dare to meet it. Lin Ming’s talent was limited and only at the third-grade. It was a very real possibility that Elder Xu was correct with his guess that Lin Ming had some sort of fortuitous encounter and ingested some rare herb or something of that nature, thus resulting in his accomplishments today. But Wang Yanfeng in comparison was actually a rare person within a hundred thousand people, with a superior fourth-grade talent. In that case, it could really be Lin Ming that would be left in his dust.

Seeing Elder Sun backing down, Elder Xu sneered and said, “How could you not accept? If you really think that this Lin Ming should be first place then we might as well make a bet. I remember that Elder Sun has a treasure of the human-step…”

As Elder Xu mentioned this human-step treasure, Elder Sun’s complexion twisted. Human-step treasures were extremely rare and valuable in the Sky Fortune Kingdom; not even with several tens of thousands of gold taels would you be able to purchase one. This was handed down and granted by the Seven Profound Valley, and was also Elder Sun’s most valuable belonging. How could he use it in a gamble, much less one with such an uncertain chance of success.

Seeing Elder Sun so dumbfounded, Elder Xu had a smug and arrogant look plastered on his face. He knew that naturally Sun Sifan would not dare to take up this bet, so he said this because he wanted to ruin Sun Sifan's prestige and reputation.

But at this moment, Muyi opened his mouth and said with a smile, "How about I take up that bet with Elder Xu?"

Chapter 43 – Refusal to Accept

Chapter 43 – Refusal to Accept

…

…

…

But at this moment, Muyi opened his mouth and said with a smile, “How about I take up that bet with Elder Xu?”

“Mm?” Elder Xu was startled as he heard this. He did not think that Muyi would open his loud mouth and speak such words at that time, moreover with such a smiling expression and happy laugh as if he were filled with confidence.

That moment caused Elder Xu’s confidence to shake a little. Was it possible that this boy Lin Ming had some sort of hidden card up his sleeve that he did not know of? But he could not reason out why this mere medium third-grade talent could in any way exceed the superior fourth-grade talent Wang Yanfeng. He had also spoken such high and haughty words in the presence of so many peers. He had already jumped on the tiger, how could he get off now? So Elder Xu could only clench his teeth as he said, “Good, of course, what would Mister Muyi like to bet?”

Muyi smiled and said, “For something of this nature, a casual bet should be alright. It’s best not to harm friendly relations; I think a treasure of the human-step should be fine.”

Human-step treasure! Could this still be called something casual?

The corners of Elder Xu’s mouth twitched. Muyi had been a famous inscription master for so many years that out of everyone present, he was without a doubt the one with the most wealth.

Elder Xu clenched his teeth and said, “Good, then I will bet a low-grade human-step treasure, a spatial ring.

The spatial ring was a type of interspatial storage treasure. You could carry it anywhere on your body and use it to store any type of goods that you wanted. This sort of treasure was very difficult to refine, so its value was also several times higher than something at a similar grade. A human-step low-grade spatial ring would be approximately the same worth as a middle-grade human-step treasure.

“Great.” Muyi readily agreed. He laughed casually, giving off a feeling of self-satisfied assurance.

The matter of Lin Ming as the first place candidate was thus decided.

However the inspection had already carried on for most of the day, and it was already a late hour. The results would be announced tomorrow in the afternoon; besides Lin Ming as first place, the second through tenth place spots also had to be assessed. The age, results, and talent of these remaining candidates would have to be discussed between the Seven Profound Martial House elders to decide.

“Xingxuan, let’s go greet Lin Ming.” Muyi said as he stood up. Although Lin Ming had awoken by now, Muyi was sitting with the Seven Profound Martial House elders, so Lin Ming naturally did not walk towards them.

“Mm.” Qin Xingxuan nodded. As the Seven Profound Martial House elders had talked, Qin Xingxuan had shown etiquette and courtesy for her elders and had been sitting silently and peacefully at one side. But the truth was that in terms of status within the Seven Profound Martial House, Qin Xingxuan was on equal footing with these elders.

This was because Qin Xingxuan was the most talented core disciples who, if in the future all things went smoothly with no major accident, would enter the Seven Profound Valleys and become an official disciple.

This was the greatest glory. It must be known that even the Heavenly Abode's number one senior apprentice Ling Sen had no chance of entering the Seven Profound Valleys. The only slight glimmer of hope he had was if he could reach the peak of Body Transformation – the Pulse Condensation boundary, in a short time.

But reaching that distant boundary was easier said than done. Ling Sen was twenty years old and was only at the peak of the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation.

In the evening, Lin Ming and Muyi chatted with each other before Lin Ming returned to his bedroom that the Seven Profound Martial House had prepared for all candidates. He rested in the bedroom and meditated.

A quiet night passed.

It was the afternoon of the second day and the weather was clear and beautiful. In the Seven Profound Martial House contest field, many important figures were gathered. Among them were the 53 candidates who had successfully passed.

Today was the announcement of results.

After an evening of debating, the final results had been decided.

When Lin Ming arrived at the field, the people gathered there sent him frequent looks filled with envy, jealousy, and even some admiration. Lin Ming had become famous after a single night. Reaching the fifth floor of the Exquisite Pagoda, even the senior apprentices of the Heavenly Abode paid attention to him.

“Congratulations.” At this time a slightly cold voice sounded. Lin Ming followed it to see Wang Yanfeng standing nearby holding both hands to his chest with a fake smile. “Your luck is truly good. A mere medium third-grade talent could reach the fifth floor, ah, incredible, incredible!”

Wang Yanfeng spoke very loudly, and the people around them heard him. They were surprised that Lin Ming was only a third-grade talent. Although a third-grade talent was a one in a hundred cream of the crop talent, in the Seven Profound Martial House this could be considered only ordinary. They thought that Lin Ming was at least a superior fourth-grade talent; how could it be that he was just a medium third-grade talent?

The surrounding people immediately began talking, and Wang Yanfeng heard this all with a smile on this face. Yesterday he had especially sent his lackeys to look up Lin Ming's talent.

"You, the one called Lin Ming, I do not know when a stray dog like you managed to eat some rare herb in your childhood and nor do I care, but if you think that you can rely on this to pressure me and win against me, then go and daydream some more! You just have a bit of good luck and you think your combat prowess is good? Using inborn divine strength to deal with the clumsy, stupid beasts of the Exquisite Pagoda is easy, but if you want to challenge a real human? Humph, with your stupid little basic skills you probably learnt from some cow, you think you can actually defeat a real person?"

The truth was that yesterday in the Exquisite Pagoda, Wang Yanfeng had also killed the two Iron Armor Bears of the fourth floor, but he had been fatally wounded and thus kicked out. This made Wang Yanfeng feel aggrieved. If only he could have lasted one more breath, he could also have entered the fifth floor.

If only he had entered the fifth floor then he would have had the same result. Wang Yanfeng could not believe that Lin Ming achieved anything on the fifth floor even though he was there for a quarter of an hour. Wang Yanfeng believed he would only have had about 10% of his true essence left and would only have run away like a little dog with his tail between his legs to pass that time.

Wang Yanfeng's fault had been that he was too eager for quick success and to immediately pass the fourth floor. The result was that he had to resort to desperate, all out tactics. If he had slowly taken his time to deal with the two Iron Armor Bears, he would not have been fatally injured.

Moreover the most important part was that in the Exquisite Pagoda, he could not use his rare equipment!

Without his treasures, Wang Yanfeng could not fully utilize the power of his secret family skill, the 'Nine Paths of Truth'. Its might would be greatly reduced which would cause his striking power to fall, resulting in him having such a hard time passing the fourth floor.

But in battles of martial artists, treasures and equipment were not forbidden, just like pills. They were items that belonged to the superiority that one's own family would bring, and were also a part of a martial artist's total strength.

Wang Yanfeng touched his saber and looked at Lin Ming with a face colored with absolute contempt.

"If I could only use the Nine Truth Saber, then killing you would be easier than killing a chicken!" Wang Yanfeng viciously thought in his heart though he did not say these words aloud. "How could I possibly lose to you! Not even in the future, but even now I would win!"

The thick tension in the air was palpable. Lin Ming did not respond to or dispute Wang Yanfeng's words, as he did not want a needless conflict. He was also disinclined to pay any attention to this Wang Yanfeng.

"Stop. My family's son is speaking with you. Are you deaf? Are you stupid? Can you not hear? A lackey bossily said as he stood by Wang Yanfeng's side.

The servant's speech was coarser than the master's. Lin Ming stopped his footsteps, calmly turned around, and gave the man a shiver-inducing glare. "This is the Seven Profound Martial House contest field. How could a little lackey like you who is only at the First Stage of Body Transformation come on?"

"You....!" The scolded lackey turned red in the face with anger and shame. According to regulations, he really did not have the qualifications to enter.

The atmosphere was strained, but at this moment an elder of the Seven Profound Martial House walked up on a stage and said, "Quiet. We will now announce the results of the entrance exam."

The people downstage naturally silenced themselves. Even the lackey could only curse in his heart and he silently stood there.

The elder took out a long list and said, “For this examinations results, candidates were judged on the results of the three trials, their age, and their talent. All three factors were considered and discussed for the final assessment by the elders. Now we will announce the first ten as follows. Tenth place, Zhou Zhenyang, prize: ten Soul Gathering Pellets. Ninth...”

The elder slowly announced the results in an unhurried voice until he reached the second place...

“Second place, Wang Yanfeng, prize: a Golden Snake Scarlet Pill. First place, Lin Ming, prize: a Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill. The results have been announced. Congratulations everyone. If there are no objections, then we have invited Elder Sun to hand out the awards.”

“Wait a moment! I have an objection!” Wang Yanfeng raised his hand. The Seven Profound Martial House’s Elder Xu was his father’s good friend, so he had already known the results of the assessment. This time he had objected because of Elder Xu’s advice.

“Mm? What objection do you have?” said the elder who had read out the announcement as he frowned.

Wang Yanfeng smiled and stepped out to the front of the square. His voice was clear and resounded as he said, “As far as I know, Lin Ming’s talent is only a mere medium third-grade. My talent is superior fourth-grade. The elder earlier said that the results for the final assessment take into account the three trials, age, and talent. The final decision-making is in the elder’s hands, but the subjective factor is just too big. I refuse to accept the choice for first place candidate.”

To Wang Yanfeng, the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill was something he could absolutely not give up. If he had this pill, he was confident that he could break through the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation before he was eighteen years old, and even reach the peak of the Fourth Stage before he was twenty. With such strength at his disposal, he wouldn't even necessarily lose to the Heavenly Abode's senior apprentice, Ling Sen.

If this happened, then no one in his family would doubt his status anymore.

At this time, Elder Sun stood up and with a cold snort said, "You dare to question the final assessment of the elders?" This cold snort was filled with true essence. As it came out, those in the periphery were shocked with an icy chill as the temperature dropped several degrees. Wang Yanfeng could not bear the brunt of this disdainful pressure and was forced back several steps.

"Sun Sifan, an elder like you is bullying the young?" Elder Xu said as he also stood. He did not originally like Sun Sifan either.

By now Wang Yanfeng said, "Elder Sun, please calm down, I do not dare to question the elders' decisions, but I only think that it is not fair. In the third examination trial I also killed both vicious beasts. It was only because I was too hasty for victory that I became fatally injured and was unable to step into the fifth floor. If I had progressed slowly then I too would have achieved the fifth floor."

"Therefore I cannot do anything else but refuse to accept this result. I do not believe my strength is worse than Lin Ming's!"

"Then what do you want?"

"Simple. I want to fight Lin Ming. If I lose, I will completely admit defeat. But if I win, then I want the first place candidate spot to be turned over to me!" Wang Yanfeng suddenly swiveled to Lin Ming and with provocation in his voice said, "Lin Ming, do you dare!?"

Chapter 44 – Killing You is Just Right

Chapter 44 – Killing You is Just Right

…

…

…

“Simple. I want to fight Lin Ming. If I lose, I will completely admit defeat. But if I win, then I want the first place candidate spot to be turned over to me!” Wang Yanfeng suddenly swiveled to Lin Ming and with provocation in his voice said, “Lin Ming, do you dare!?”

Before Lin Ming could answer, Elder Xu rose again and said with a smile, “This idea is good. The truth is that the Martial House examination trials vary, but ultimately are looking for the same attributes. The first is combat skill, the second is talent. Wang Yanfeng obviously wins when it comes to talent, but if the actual combat skill is also won by him, then the situation in principle should be his, and the first place candidate should belong to Wang Yanfeng.

The few words Elder Xu said had already blocked Lin Ming’s exit and left him with nowhere to retreat to. However Elder Xu felt this was insufficient. He turned to Lin Ming and said with a eerie smile, “Not only must a martial artist cultivate their body, and fortify the mind, the martial artist must have faith that they can overcome obstacles and win against challenges. If they feel fear and do not fight, then their heart will falter. This type of person would have no great future achievements.”

Elder Xu’s words were not wrong, but he said them with malicious intent. Under this type of situation, once someone lost then they would suffer an enormous blow to their self-confidence and psyche, especially considering that Lin Ming was only fifteen years old. If he at first place lost to the second place candidate and the gap was too large, then he might be unable to psychologically recover in light of this.

Elder Xu had already recognized that Lin Ming had the greatest chance of losing. After all, Wang Yanfeng was ahead of Lin Ming by an entire stage, and in the Exquisite Pagoda he did not have any treasures on him so he was unable to display the true strength of his family skill 'Nine Paths of Truth'. Martial skills greatly increased a martial artist's fighting ability. Sometimes high-level martial skills could let martial artists fight those that were ranks beyond them.

As for Lin Ming's inborn divine strength, it was easy to use against the slow beasts of the Exquisite Pagoda that had high defensive power. But against a real person, brute strength was not so simple a solution.

Under these circumstances, it was impossible for Wang Yanfeng to lose.

Lin Ming turned a cold eye to Elder Xu and took note of him. He then looked to Wang Yanfeng and said, "I could fight with you, but in this competition the only one to suffer a loss would be me. If I fight with you, then as the first place candidate, if I win I am still first place and I do not gain any advantage. But if I lose, then I have to just meekly surrender my spot like that? What do you think about this?"

When Wang Yanfeng heard Lin Ming already intent to compete, his heart immediately blossomed with happiness. 'This little fellow is just bargaining back and forth as if he could win just because he reached the fifth floor of the Exquisite Pagoda. Humph, he really is an idiot. I will let you know how fierce the 'Nine Paths of Truth' really is.'

Wang Yanfeng playfully smiled and asked, "What do you want then?"

Lin Ming responded, "If I win then I want you to give me your Golden Snake Scarlet Pill. If I lose, you can take first place candidate and also the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill. How about it?"

“Good! Since you said it then you meant it!” Wang Yanfeng felt a great happiness in his heart. This way he could have both precious pills for himself! It was really a dream come true. He impatiently said, “Then let us start our competition!”

“Mm. Sure.”

Seeing Lin Ming agree so readily and happily, Elder Sun could only shake his head slightly. Lin Ming would most certainly lose, or at least he had more than a fifty percent chance of losing. Undergoing the trials and fighting with a real person was different. This Wang Yanfeng came from an aristocratic family and had a special master in his youth teach him to fight, and he also had martial skills.

This fight was already a foregone conclusion, there was nothing left to say.

As soon as Wang Yanfeng arrived at the center stage of the contest field, he flicked his saber and gave it shake as he roared, “Come up!”

Seeing Wang Yanfeng’s long saber, the crowd present were startled, “a rare weapon!”

As long as it was a rare treasure, the value would be several thousand gold taels. Even aristocratic family juniors would only receive one after reaching the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation or even the Fifth Stage. Only then would they have the qualifications to receive a rare treasure like this. They had not thought that this Wang Yanfeng, who was only at the Third Stage of Body Transformation, would have one, and one that had an inscription on it. Obviously this Wang Yanfeng had a high position within his family.

The people looked at Lin Ming to see if he could also put out some equally rare weapon. Thinking of his family background, it was just not possible for him to have any rare treasures.

Although this may not seem fair, but in the Sky Fortune Kingdoms, martial artists’ contests had always been like this. It was impossible to trade weapons to momentarily use, and even if possible then they would be unfamiliar with it.

One’s family was also a form of strength. If the weapon is unfair, then the pills or other medicines that increase cultivation are also unfair. It would be impossible to prohibit martial artists from assisting their cultivation with pills.

Therefore Lin Ming could only swallow this disadvantage.

“This Lin Ming probably doesn’t have any sort of good weapon.”

“Mm. There is no way that he would have something worth several thousand gold taels. The average person just doesn’t have those advantages. Hopefully Lin Ming doesn’t pull out something too inferior and is immediately cut down. This way he might have a chance.”

As these people talked, Lin Ming took out a weapon from his pouch. This was his deboning knife that he had used to slice meat at the Great Clarity Pavilion.

Seeing this scrappy deboning knife, everyone’s eyes immediately widened. This was… was this… a pig butchering knife?

Though no one had thought that Lin Ming would have a good weapon, they did not think he would pull out such an inferior weapon. It was only a foot in length. As the saying went, one inch longer one inch stronger. This one foot deboning knife compared to a three foot long saber was at a bit more than just a disadvantage. Moreover could a knife used to kill pigs even be sturdy? What would happen if it were to be cut in half by the opposition’s sword?

Wang Yanfeng saw this deboning knife and laughed. “You would use that to challenge me? That’s just a knife for killing pigs! You really are a daft idiot!”

Lin Ming appeared slightly surprised. He said, “I didn’t notice it but it seems you were right, this really is a knife for killing pigs. I usually do use it to kill pigs, so for today, killing you is just right.”

Lin Ming’s scolding words insinuated that Wang Yanfeng was just a pig. This made Wang Yanfeng furious. He shouted, “You don’t know the meaning of death!”

As Lin Ming slowly stepped on stage in the contest field, and Wang Yanfeng had drawn his saber, he had already been using an inscription master's soul force to study the sword's strength and its inscription. In this, Lin Ming was an expert.

Wang Yanfeng's saber looked powerful and impressive, but in Lin Ming's eyes it could only be considered common goods. Even that inscription would not even normally grab his attention. As long as an inscription master knew the proper technique they could use the soul law formula to seep their soul force into the treasure and judge whether its quality was good or bad. Lin Ming had learnt his inscription skills from the memories of an elder who came from the Realm of the Gods, thus he also naturally knew a viewing technique. Although he had only studied this technique a bit, it was already far more than enough to take a look at Wang Yanfeng's saber.

The saber was able to greatly enhance a martial artist's combat strength, but Wang Yanfeng was only at the early Third Stage of Body Transformation and had not reached Altering Muscle or Bone Forging. Thus Lin Ming was not worried, as he could only display a very limited effect of the saber.

Of course, even if Wang Yanfeng could not display the saber's true strength, compared to Lin Ming's deboning knife in hand, it would be immediately cut apart if Lin Ming used it to receive a strike. Although this was a good and trusted knife he had used for countless hours, it was just made of regular iron from an ordinary blacksmith.

But this did not matter to Lin Ming. Lin Ming had not planned on using this deboning knife originally; he would rely on the strength of his own fists. 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' was an unsurpassed almighty Body Transformation skill manual that was the essence of light and Yang. For those that practiced this, their own muscles and bones were themselves the best weapons!

With Lin Ming's peak Second Stage cultivation, his fist strength reached 2700 jins. With this strength he could punch straight through a thick iron wood tree. If this fist directly hit a person’s body, even a master at the Altering Muscle or Bone Forging stage could not necessarily withstand it!

Chapter 45 – Shatter the Nine Paths of Truth

Chapter 45 – Shatter the Nine Paths of Truth

…

…

…

Wang Yanfeng's entire body revolved with an intense aura of true essence. He did not even wait for Lin Ming to finish stepping on stage before he gave a loud shout, and the three foot long saber in his hand began to radiate with bright runes. There were ten runes in total; nine green runes were congealed from Wang Yanfeng's true essence, and the last was from the inscription symbol left behind by the inscription master.

"The 'Nine Paths of Truth' swordsmanship was a family skill that was given to the head of the Wang Family after he performed a great military deed. The first emperor of Sky Fortune Kingdom had bestowed this skill to Yuelu City's Wang Family so that it could be passed down and studied by future generations. This Wang Yanfeng relied on only his early Third Stage of Body Transformation cultivation to already reach the boundary of forming nine runes. Although this is almost the most basic level of green runes, it is still impressive!"

The onlooking elders commented as they watched the fight. They had vast experience and could easily determine Wang Yanfeng's martial skill, as well as its level and origin.

"The 'Nine Paths of Truth' can display its true power if used in conjunction with a rare weapon. The aristocratic family juniors are truly on a different playing field than others. They have martial arts handed down through their family line and also treasures that easily cost several thousand gold taels. Compared to commoner martial artists, they are much better off."

“Lin Ming is in danger. He’s just a regular boy. What kind of martial skill could he possibly have to fend off the ‘Nine Paths of Truth’?”

On stage, Lin Ming’s eyes shined brilliantly as he looked at the green runes on Wang Yanfeng’s saber. Before studying inscription techniques, he first had to study the soul law formula, and develop the ability to control his own soul force. Lin Ming had studied the apex level soul law formula, ‘Overbearing Soul Tactic’. With this, Lin Ming was extremely sensitive to the flow of true essence within rare treasures or objects. As long as he extended his soul force, he could clearly understand all things.

“I can feel Wang Yanfeng is using some sort of martial skill, but even if I can sense it, I’m not too familiar with martial skills; there is simply no way for me to find out where the flaw is. But when looking at inscription techniques and equipment, there might be no one in the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom who can understand them better than I do. I can clearly identify vulnerability within the flow of true essence…”

As Lin Ming was thinking deeply about this, Wang Yanfeng had already grasped his sword and rushed forwards. He would close the distance and use his family martial skill, the ‘Nine Paths of Truth’ and in the next several moves, finally solve this problem called Lin Ming, while increasing his own reputation.

True essence gathered in the longsword and it whistled with a sharp, keening sound. This was an advantage of using treasures; once true essence was focused, it would enhance one’s imposing image and strength, thereby increasing their momentum. Facing this, along with the aura of power, a martial artist with no treasures would discover that they felt incapable of any resistance, because even if they tried to compete with weapons, their own would likely break off at first contact!

“Lin Ming, prepare to die!”

Wang Yanfeng shouted out as the nine symbols on his saber began to bloom with an incandescent green light. As soon as the long sword cut down, an immense sword pressure struck at Lin Ming's shoulder. Lin Ming's pupils widened and his both his feet suddenly slammed the ground as his body moved like a bolt of lightning.

Bang!

As Wang Yanfeng's saber cut into the ground, explosions scattered broken stone into the air. This blue stone stage was supported by a magic array and was as hard as iron, but still, Wang Yanfeng's blade had cut a hole half a foot deep! The power of this single strike was just too much!

Even though his saber did not hit, Wang Yanfeng did not feel any sadness, but instead laughed. "Lin Ming! You want to compare speed with me!? Not only do you have some small inborn divine strength but it seems your speed isn't too shabby either, but what a pity! You cannot use any movement martial skills!

"Speed!? How can pitiful you even think of comparing with me, Wang Yanfeng!?" As soon as he said this, Wang Yanfeng's footsteps changed. His body had changed to an indistinct, blurry afterimage.

"Seven Despairing Steps! The Wang Family's movement martial skill!"

"This is one of the Wang Family's secret martial skills. In seven steps one can appear and disappear at will, and its speed surpasses the ghosts and gods. The old aristocratic families really make one jealous!"

"The weapon is weaker, the martial skill is weaker, the movement is weaker, how can one even fight like this?"

As they were talking, Wang Yanfeng moved seven steps and instantly appeared at Lin Ming's side. The radiant green line appeared once again as the nine runes shimmered with true essence. The saber cut down at Lin Ming's arm!

It was against the law to kill others during a competition at the Seven Profound Martial House, otherwise they would receive a severe punishment from the school. Therefore Wang

Yanfeng had cut at Lin Ming's arm. Although this strike would not be lethal, but it could break his bone and rip apart the tendons of his arm. Even with superior medicines to repair the bone and mend the muscles, the arm would be mostly useless and would greatly inhibit later cultivation.

This was an insidious blade filled with malice!

Wang Yanfeng's mouth traced a sneering grin. 'Are you not some kind of talent? Then I'll cut off the road of talent and see how you dare to ever struggle against me again!'

This was the reason of his blade, and he could not think of the slightest reason that he would lose. However, at this time, Lin Ming shouted, fiercely swiveled on the ball of his foot and thrusted out his fist!

This was a non-flashy, even fist that would bring at least 3000 jins of overbearing might!

Bang!

The center of the first hit the blade edge of Wang Yanfeng's saber. This was the only vulnerability that Lin Ming had discovered in the weapon where the true essence was at its most weak and turbulent point!

With the speed at which Wang Yanfeng wielded his saber, the difficulty of striking this precise spot was inconceivable. If not for the years that Lin Ming had spent deboning and honing the accuracy of his moves until every action became a memory that was ingrained within his muscles, then even If he could grasp the flaw within the inscription symbol, it would only have been useless.

In the space of that brief moment, Wang Yanfeng only felt a sudden chaotic surge in true essence transmit through his body as the flow of energy in the saber was interrupted. If the concentration of true essence in the saber was like a deadly emerald snake, then Lin Ming's first was a hatchet that cut off the snake around the middle, seven inches up its body!

How!?

As soon as flow of true essence stagnated, Wang Yanfeng felt pain wrack his body as his blood dangerously upwelled. Before he could unravel the meaning of what had happened, Lin Ming had let loose a leg and kicked towards Wang Yanfeng's head.

Every day for several years, Lin Ming had been training his leg on tree stumps. The simplistic strength of this strike had been tempered by deeply constant pain that had only been quenched by iron thread grass. This was the terrifying strength that had been cultivated by practicing the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians'; it was no different to an explosion of pure force!

Lin Ming's leg was like a dragon's tail as it kicked out, but Wang Yanfeng also had some capability. Even as his mind reeled, he managed to stiffly raise an arm to block Lin Ming's leg.

However, when Lin Ming's kicked struck Wang Yanfeng's arm, Wang Yanfeng only could feel as if a thick iron rod struck him. His arm immediately lost feeling and he almost passed out from the pressure.

Wang Yanfeng's heart was shocked. What was this abnormal power!?

With a jolt of surprise at the change in the battle's tempo, the hearts of the elders present were equally shocked. That simple fist was not so simple! The candidates who were watching could not notice anything strange, but these were houtian masters, they had easily captured the mystery behind the meaning of that simple fist!

This Lin Ming, how could he possibly do this?

The kick sent Wang Yanfeng flying backwards into the air. Before he had even exhausted a single breath, he could see in his vision the sight of Lin Ming instantly approaching.

Not good!

"Seven Despairing Steps!" Wang Yanfeng pedaled his feet with the 'Seven Despairing Steps' and his body completely violated the rules of physics, as he suddenly swerved sideways and escaped Lin Ming's fist. But with this sudden change in direction, along with the damage he had taken earlier, Wang Yanfeng could no longer control the rampaging true essence that ravaged his body, and spat a mouthful of blood. This time Wang Yanfeng felt panic seep into his heart. Initially he had thought that his strength had been weakened in the Exquisite Pagoda with the decrease in strength of the 'Nine Paths of Truth' and thus was only able to reach the fourth floor and die together with the two vicious beasts. He had thought if only he had his rare saber with him, then he would be completely confident in reaching the fifth floor with ease and even slaughtering many vicious beasts there. Instead, he was now being suppressed so heavily by Lin Ming? At this time, could Lin Ming also kill the vicious beasts of the fifth floor?

The 'Nine Paths of Truth' that he was so proud of and had so arrogantly bragged about had been completely defeated; this made Wang Yanfeng feel a deep and foreboding sense of humiliation. Before he could even think about how to retaliate against the loathsome maggot, that Lin Ming had already rushed forward again. This time Lin Ming used his knife!

"I'll cut your knife!"

Because he had just exhausted a great deal of true essence earlier, he could only use about half of his true essence. Wang Yanfeng did not have any time to utilize the 'Nine Paths of Truth', he could only focus all of the true essence he could muster in the saber and rely on its strength, sharpness, and superior quality to block Lin Ming. He had already concluded that if he blocked with his saber then Lin Ming would have to withdraw his knife, otherwise his knife would be cut apart.

However he did not imagine that Lin Ming would not retract his knife, but even meet the saber head on with just a deboning knife!

Boom!

With a fierce explosion, in the crazy collision of true essence the deboning knife was cut apart!

"Ha!"

Wang Yanfeng did not even have time to be surprised, as Lin Ming already gave a loud shot and the deboning knife exploded into several sharp fragments.

Puff! These fragments were like a concealed weapon that blew up like a bomb that shot out in all directions!

With such a short distance and the immediate surprise of a weapon like this, Wang Yanfeng could not even dodge, even though he possessed the 'Seven Despairing Steps'!

"Ah ah ah ah ah ah!!"

Wang Yanfeng cried out pitifully as his shoulder, belly, and thighs were stabbed by the fragments of the deboning knife and blood flew in all directions. A fragment had even directly pierced through his shoulder!

Lin Ming sent a flying kick towards Wang Yanfeng's chest. Wang Yanfeng spat out a mouthful of blood as he was sent reeling backwards; that instant kick had broken his ribs and sent him flying upside down like a broken kite!

"Stop!"

As Lin Ming's kick sent Wang Yanfeng flying, Elder Xu was flew out like a cheetah and the chair he was sitting in was smashed apart by a burst of true essence.

Elder Xu stormed onto the stage like the wind and caught the heavily injured Wang Yanfeng. He immediately took out a medicine bottle from his sleeves and applied it to him. He was old friends with Wang Yanfeng's father, so he naturally had to look after him. With Wang Yanfeng injured to this extent, how could he explain this to his friend?

After applying the precious medicine, Elder Xu looked gloomy as he stared at Lin Ming, "You little boy, so young and yet already your actions are so ruthless!"

As Elder Xu said this, each word was enhanced with true essence and was like a steel ball striking, full of momentum.

Facing the pressure from a Houtian master, Lin Ming's eyes narrowed as he secretly revolved the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' within himself and resisted the pressure. His expression was neutral as he said, "If you say I am vicious, then what is not vicious? Wang Yanfeng tried to cut apart my arm a moment ago, should I just extend it and let him do as he pleases? If I did not retaliate with a fist and my arm was cut off, would you then say Wang Yanfeng is vicious?"

"Good! You dare to talk back!?" Elder Xu suddenly stepped forwards as he flared with murderous intent. It felt as if this Elder Xu was like a tiger that had chosen its victim and was ready to leap out.

Chapter 46 – Two Top Quality Pills

Chapter 46 – Two Top Quality Pills

…

…

…

An ordinary person would be frozen in fear as if they were locked down by chains if they saw a tiger with such a murderous aura approach them in such an imposing manner, much less this vastly more dangerous Elder Xu who looked like he could launch an attack at any time. But Lin Ming had still not revealed a single hint of fear or dread on his face, even though Elder Xu's strength surpassed him by hundreds, if not thousands of times. Lin Ming had seen flying sages and kings in the dreams of the Magic Cube. These ancient elders had parted seas and smashed mountains; compared to these warriors, Elder Xu was just an ant beneath their boot. In addition, if Lin Ming was to act like a fearful ant, then how could he have the qualifications to pursue the peak of the martial artist's path?

Seeing that his imposing manner and murderous intent failed to oppress Lin Ming, Elder Xu became somewhat angry. Before he could step forward again, a shadow flashed, and a man passed Elder Xu like a ghost out of nowhere.

"Xu Fengyuan, are you planning to make a move and bully a little junior? Heh, that really is the superior air of a true master." As Elder Xu's nemesis, Sun Sifan could not let him do as he pleased, and he had already arrived in front of Lin Ming's body.

With such an elder standing in front of him, Lin Ming felt the immense pressure on him being lifted.

From the point when Wang Yanfeng had used his superior martial skills to assault Lin Ming, to the sudden change in fortune, and to when Lin Ming had severely wounded Wang Yanfeng and then the two elders had appeared on stage, the truth was that it had only been a very short period of time. Under the stage, the candidates and other guests that surrounded them were already reacting, and their voices filled the entire with chatter.

This Lin Ming, he had undergone a complete metamorphosis!

However he had managed to simultaneously offended Wang Yanfeng and Elder Xu; his future days would not pass in peace.

The majority of those present came from humble backgrounds, so they had several points of sympathy and compassion for Lin Ming. After all, their families were all similar, and some of them were the talents of their generation. Yet how many of them had suffered losses when faced against aristocratic family juniors that had vastly more resources behind them?

Seeing Sun Sifan defending Lin Ming, Elder Xu gave a cold snort and waved his voluminous sleeves. He signaled the severely injured Wang Yanfeng to follow him off stage. But at this moment, Lin Ming said, “Elder Xu, please stay a moment.”

“Mm?” Elder Xu frowned. He didn’t think that this Lin Ming would have the guts to call him. Any normal candidate who saw a Houtian elder of the Seven Profound Martial House would be submissive and timid, but this Lin Ming had actually compelled himself to call him out, how stupidly courageous of him. He coldly said, “What do you want to say?”

“Before I and Wang Yanfeng agreed to a duel, we made a bet. If I won, not only would I keep the first place candidate position, but I would also obtain the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill that was the second place prize. Since Elder Xu is bringing Wang Yanfeng away, when the prizes are handed out, I will receive it myself.”

Lin Ming said all these things now, as it was a matter that had to be made absolutely clear. Otherwise as soon as Wang Yanfeng left, then the prize would probably not be given to him.

Away from the eyes of all those present, it was unlikely that Wang Yanfeng would so easily send him the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill.

Wang Yanfeng had been unconscious until now. This loss of face truly made him wish he hadn't woken up. Hearing these words of Lin Ming almost made him cough up more blood. Exactly how precious and rare was the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill? Yuelu City's Wang Family was an old aristocratic family with massive wealth, deep ties to the country, and a long and storied history. Yet no matter how much money or power they had there was no way they could buy a Golden Snake Scarlet Pill. It just wasn't something that could be purchased by money. Moreover, all these years Wang Yanfeng had used many resources of his family and the council of elders had already been keenly critical of him. If he lost this Golden Snake Scarlet Pill, to Wang Yanfeng this was a truly deadly blow.

"He deserves death!" Wang Yanfeng cursed in his heart. He glared at Lin Ming with unmasked hatred in his eyes. But he had already made a promise, and it had been heard by everyone. In the presence of so many people, it was impossible to renege on a promise.

He spat out several words between clenched teeth. "The Golden Snake Scarlet Pill belongs to you. I wish you good fortune and luck in taking it! I hope nothing wrong goes wrong in the absorption and your veins don't implode, tearing you to shreds!"

Lin Ming heard the naked threat in Wang Yanfeng's words.

"I really have offended too many people. Until now, there is Zhu Yan, Wang Yigao, Wang Yanfeng, and all these people are from aristocratic backgrounds. Even Zhu Yan and Wang Yanfeng are talented martial artists. Wang Yigao is another matter; after last time he probably pissed his pants and would be too afraid to do anything, but Zhu Yan and Wang Yanfeng will also be studying in the Seven Profound Martial House with me and will look for every opportunity to get revenge on me. Not matter what, it seems I can't put an end to all these future troubles.

"I offended so many people and yet could not properly clean up the mess, now it's become a huge omen. But they provoked me, it was just impossible for me to swallow all the insults and let others humiliate me as they pleased, otherwise it would wear away my heart and spirit of martial arts.

"Since it's come to this, what's most important is that I enhance my own strength as soon as possible. I am definitely not Zhu Yan's match. Not even Zhu Yan, but this Wang Yanfeng also luckily underestimated me and I also underestimated him. I thought that because I defeated two vicious beasts on the fifth floor of the Exquisite Pagoda that I was much stronger than him, but I didn't think that his strength would increase so much by combining his rare treasure and family's martial skill. Even if I could see the circulation of true essence in his saber, it was not necessarily my victory. Perhaps I should also go to buy a rare treasure of some sort."

Lin Ming thought about all of these things. Tomorrow he would officially enter the Seven Profound Martial House and most likely encounter Zhu Yan at some point. Half a year ago, Zhu Yan had relied on his peak Third Stage of Body Transformation cultivation to enter the Heavenly Abode, which all of the most talented students would go to. His strength most likely had its own specialty, Lin Ming would not underestimate him.

After seeing Elder Xu walk away, Sun Sifan gave Lin Ming a deep look, as his eyes were traced with surprise and a hint of disbelief.

In that fight a moment ago, if Lin Ming had used some amazing and almighty martial skill to defeat Wang Yanfeng, then he would not have been surprised, but what he used was nothing but an ordinary fist and foot. Using nothing but his own body, he had hit the exact point of the snake-like true essence seven inches up the saber and disrupted Wang Yanfeng's true essence!

To achieve this would require extraordinarily keen judgment and remarkable accuracy. To hit a saber that was being wielded with such speed and on such a precise spot was no less difficult than catching a speeding arrow in mid flight.

It could be said that if one practiced their basic skills enough then they would be able to do this. But how Lin Ming found the weakness in Wang Yanfeng's true essence was unclear.

This could only come from an extremely high soul force strength and a breadth of experience.

This type of experience could only be accumulated by years of actual combat. This boy was only fifteen years old; it was impossible for him to have this kind of experience. Was he some genius talent?

Some martial artists were geniuses at fighting. By virtue of their intuition and godly monstrous perception, they would be able to see any opening on a battlefield. Any sort of great and awe inspiring martial skill, to them, would actually be full of holes. Meeting someone like this and not being able to understand how they would suddenly close in on you, with their sword in your face, this sort of person was truly terrifying.

Is it possible that… this Lin Ming was also this kind of talent?

It was a bit odd…

Elder Sun thought this and looked at Lin Ming, “You, come with me.”

“Mm?” Lin Ming found that Elder Sun walked in a direction that was away from where the rewards were being handed out and he had some doubts in his heart.

“Lin Ming, measure your soul talent with me.”

…

“To reach the fifth floor of the Exquisite Pagoda and also defeat Wang Yanfeng…”

In a quiet room patterned with a blue stone tile floor, Zhu Yan stood in the center, on top of a wooden pillar. He was topless, exposing the solid and strong muscles of his upper body. By his side stood a thin, old servant. Although the servant looked a little baggy, his breathe was even and long, which was the culmination of practicing the Third Stage of Body Transformation, Viscera Training.

Zhu Yan’s servant and Wang Yigao’s servant were like heaven and earth. This was because the Zhu Family were relatives of the emperor and their influence was bigger, and also because of Zhu Yan’s status within his family; it was not something that the useless Wang Yigao could possibly compare with.

Although Zhu Yan had not been present to watch Lin Ming’s exam, he had sent his old servant to pay attention to the situation. As soon as Lin Ming and Wang Yanfeng’s competition ended, the old servant had come back to report the situation to Zhu Yan.

“This little bastard, I hadn’t thought he had hidden so many secrets!”

“Bang!” Wang Yanfeng punched out a fist and smashed apart the wooden pillar. This kind of pillar was extremely hard, as it had been soaked in medicines that increased rigidity and density, and was several times more tenacious than normal, but it was actually smashed apart by Zhu Yan’s fist. This was a sign that Zhu Yan’s fist strength had reached a high stage.

It was absolutely above 4000 jins! Compared to Ling Sen it was just a little bit worse, but not by too much.

“Wang Yanfeng was too arrogant, but he did have some ability. As far as I can tell he had already practiced the ‘Nine Paths of Truth’ to forming nine green runes, and he also had the ‘Seven Despairing Steps’ movement skill. Yet he still lost to Lin Ming? Did Lin Ming use some sort of martial skill?”

The old servant said, “Young master, Lin Ming did not use a martial skill, he only used punches and kicks. His movements were straight and basic; there were no flashy moves that he used.”

“What? Then how could he possibly win?” Zhu Yan could not believe this.

“This old servant has poor vision and did not see what methods Lin Ming used, but he managed to break that little Wang boy’s ‘Nine Paths of Truth’ and then used a series of moves to gain the upper hand. He relentlessly pursued to the end and defeated the little Wang boy without giving him the slightest opportunity to retaliate.”

“He broke the ‘Nine Paths of Truth’?” Zhu Yan felt shocked. Each kind of martial art of had weaknesses that could be exploited, but these were absolute secrets that were never divulged. Lin Ming was only a junior of the branch family of the Ling Family. His background was normal, it was impossible for him to know any sort of decent martial skill, how could he possibly have the experience to defeat the ‘Nine Paths of Truth’?

Was this a dream?

Zhu Yan was unable to understand the reason why. Then, the old servant said, “Young master, this older servant also discovered that Lin Ming’s true essence was very pure. He is unlike a normal martial artist at the Second Stage of Body Transformation.”

Zhu Yan responded, “I have already discovered this. There’s nothing too strange about it, this boy probably found some valuable material and ate it. In addition to diligent studying and hard work and practice, even a rabid dog could show some degree of success.”

“Because he had a fortuitous encounter, his strength suddenly rose to a new level. Because his talent was originally garbage, this will slowly fade away. This sort of happening is too rare; that this Lin Ming could encounter such luck, that boy is truly an eyesore…”

Zhu Yang slowly clenched his first. He did not care at all about Lin Ming, and did not even think he had the qualifications to be remembered by him. He was after all, two years younger and at a lower level of cultivation. It was only because of Lan Yunyue that Zhu Yan felt this Lin Ming was such an eyesore.

Chapter 47 – Lin Ming's Soul Talent

Chapter 47 – Lin Ming's Soul Talent

…

…

…

"This is the soul talent test…" Lin Ming thought, as he was presently standing in front of the large stone tablet. This stone tablet was similar to the one used to measure strength but with one small change, the color was different. The stone tablet to measure strength was a deep obsidian black, but this stone tablet to measure soul force was actually red, a deep crimson red that was somewhat like fresh blood.

Lin Ming was a junior of the Lin Family, and had his soul talent and martial talent grade measured as soon as he was born, and both were at medium third-grade. This talent level was decent; if Lin Ming were born in the Lin Family then he would have been worthy to raise and cultivate, but it was a pity that he had been born in the branch family. This medium third grade soul talent and martial talent was insufficient to make him an exception that was directly added into the line of male family direct descendants.

To a child, between soul talent and martial talent, the cultivation of martial talent was more important, as it directly related to that child's future achievements as a martial artist.

As for soul talent, that was negligible. This sort of talent was mainly related to occupations that needed soul force, such as inscription masters, refiners, apothecaries, alchemists, and so forth. Generally speaking, only an outstanding soul talent, such as a superior fourth grade of fifth grade would be worthy of having massive amounts of money spent by the family to raise into an inscription master, apothecary, or other niche occupations. A decent soul talent and below would be completely neglected.

Lin Ming knew this, that soul talent was completely useless in the Physical Transformation Stage. It would gradually become more useful after one reached Xiantian and began to cultivate their soul.

In Sky Fortune Kingdom, the majority of low level martial artists and warriors would not use their soul force at all.

However some of those who broke through the Pulse Condensation Period might begin to practice inscription. They would then learn soul law formulas, begin to condense their soul force, and become able to see certain things, such as the flow of true essence in treasures and would then be able to define and understand their weaknesses.

Elder Sun suspected that Lin Ming was a genius talent at soul force because of this, and brought him here to examine.

"Although you already said that you had your soul talent measured by your family, I think it might be good to measure again just in case. This sort of soul talent things is usually neglected and most of the time is a formality. Coupled with the fact that stone tablets aren't necessarily accurate, there might be a mistake in the measurement.

As Elder Sun said this, he placed a small true essence stone in the center of the stone tablet. Although it looked somewhat similar, the cost of this small stone was much higher. This small true essence stone was actually a lavish consumable.

Lin Ming placed his hand on the stone tablet and felt the array activate with a flash. In the vast ocean of his mind he suddenly saw countless phantasmal images, a kaleidoscope of world images, and felt a tingling sensation in his innermost soul. This sort of feeling continued for several dozen breaths of time until he heard Elder Sun say, "Measured."

Lin Ming opened his eyes and looked. He saw that the light beam of the stone pillar had risen to the fourth position and overflowed by about one-third. Primary fourth-grade talent?

Lin Ming looked a bit listless. He knew that his own soul talent had been measured at medium third-grade, how could it have randomly increased by so much?

It was just as Elder Sun said, was it a mistake when he had his soul talent measured before?

…

A sudden thought suddenly rose in Lin Ming's mind.

Is it possible that this talent change was related to the Magic Cube?

Was it because he had swallowed that soul fragment, that his own soul talent had risen from medium third-grade to primary fourth-grade?

Lin Ming didn't know anything about souls, but there was one thing he clearly knew. In the entirety of Sky Spill Continent's knowledge, talent was immutable and unchangeable. This was a fact!

Regardless of if they cultivated their martial talent or soul talent, it would never change again after birth. There were no rare material in the world that could change one's talent.

As for the memories that he had absorbed, they also did not contain any knowledge of any way this could be possible. But because the memories were incomplete, Lin Ming did not dare to affirm this as truth.

Was it possible that his soul talent had been measured incorrectly at birth? If swallowing souls could increase one's soul talent grade, then if those powerful elders of the Realm of the Gods might do so, then would everyone be sixth, seventh, or eighth-grade talents?

As Lin Ming thought this, he subconsciously traced his own chest where he could feel the Magic Cube. After the last time that he swallowed and absorbed a soul fragment, Lin Ming had been unable to enter the dreamland of the Magic Cube again.

Although he did not entertain any hope, if he did have a future opportunity to absorb a soul fragment again, then he would have to measure his soul talent to see if there was no growth.

Elder Sun naturally did not know these circumstances of Lin Ming, and he frowned as he looked at the results of the stone tablet. This primary fourth-grade talent left him feeling unsatisfied.

He originally had a little bit of hope that Lin Ming was a rare soul force talent genius, such as fifth-grade, or even the legendary sixth-grade.

If that was the case then Lin Ming would be sent to study inscription, alchemy, and no amount of effort or resources would be spared to raise them. When that time came, then the Seven Profound Martial House would be able to raise and cultivate Qin Xingxuan and Lin Ming, two genius martial soul talents, and their Seven Profound Martial House would obtain accolades and praise from the main sect. They might even have some hope to obtain precious medicines or elixirs. But now that small hope was dashed.

Elder Sun shook his head and sighed lightly with one small breath. He said to Lin Ming, “Come, I will lead you to receive your rewards.”

….

“These are the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill?”

As he returned to his housing at the Seven Profound Martial House, Lin Ming looked at the two pills in the box on the table. His mood was inevitably excited. The harvest this time was just too great!

Of these two pills, one was refined from the marrow of a Crimson Gold Dragon and the other with the hundred year old gallbladder of a Golden Scarlet Snake. The Crimson Gold Dragon was a vicious beast of the fourth-grade. Even a Houtian expert would not even be a match for one. As for the hundred year old Golden Scarlet Snake, although it was a third-level vicious beast, it lived at the apex of third-level vicious beasts and was also extremely scarce and correspondingly extremely rare.

These two precious pills were objects that had no market price, they could just not be purchased in the entirety of the Sky Fortune Kingdom. Even the Royal Family would be startled and moved by these!

“If I take these two pills, then my strength would increase by leaps and bounds, but…taking such a precious pill like this directly is too much of a waste. The memories of the elder had not only inscription techniques to increase the strength of treasures, but also to increase the effect of pills. He had studied them and learnt the inscription symbol to double the effect of a pill. He would just have to apply it to the pill and then take it…

The Realm of the Gods had unsurpassed inheritances and legacies. Regardless of whether it was Body Transformation, skills of martial arts or weapons, every skill and array had already been developed to the peak of possibility. It was not something that anything or anyone on the entirety the Sky Spill Continent could compare with, and the inscription techniques were also the same.

Inscription techniques in the Realm of the Gods were divided into four general categories; object inscription, medicinal inscription, body inscription, and soul inscription.

Object inscriptions were placed on rare treasure; it was the most simple and obvious.

Medicinal inscriptions were inscriptions for pills, elixirs, and other medicines; it would increase their effect or eliminate their side effects.

Body inscriptions were inscriptions that were placed on the body. It required absolute knowledge and attainments in inscription to use, and could increase the speed of cultivation and practice of a martial artist, and even their combat prowess.

Soul inscriptions were inscriptions of the soul. These techniques belonged to the absolute highest boundary and pinnacle realm of inscription techniques. Even the elder’s memories of soul inscription were blank, perhaps they were incomplete, or perhaps he had no experience with them at all.

Sky Fortune Kingdom's inscription techniques were limited to object inscription. The overwhelming number of inscription masters had never given much thought to the idea that inscriptions could also be used in other places.

With Lin Ming's current skill, there was no need for him to even think about body inscription or soul inscription, much less try to attempt them. Medicinal inscription might be possible with more study, but first of all Lin Ming had been busy these days with his martial arts cultivation, and thus didn't have enough time to practice, and second of all, Lin Ming did not have enough money to buy materials so he had shelved that idea for future reference.

But now he had managed to obtain the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill. These two pills were miracle medicines; if he could earnestly study his inscription techniques then he would be able to greatly increase their efficacy.

Suddenly Lin Ming heard a knock on his door sound out like lightning. If not for the fact that the Seven Profound Martial House's door quality was very good, Lin Ming suspected that it might even be smashed apart!

Chapter 48 – Inscription Master Examination

Chapter 48 – Inscription Master Examination

…

…

…

“Brother Lin, Brother Lin, quickly open the door!”

Lin Ming smiled when he heard this voice. It was Lin Xiaodong.

“Holy Crap! Brother Lin is my life’s idol! Dude, First place! You’re way to amazing!”

Lin Xiaodong had not been able to go to the second trial, therefore he didn’t know what sort of situation Lin Ming had been in, and had only just found out the good news.

“Mm. I was able to display some good results yesterday, and my recent progress was quite good, so I was able to attain first place.”

“Let’s walk, us brothers will drink.”

“Mmm, good idea! But now I don’t have time to have a meal, we have to go buy some things first.”

Lin Ming took out a piece of paper and began to write down the materials he needed for the medicinal inscription symbol. There were a great number and many different kinds of inscription symbols, but Lin Ming had decided on the simplest one, named the ‘Lower Spirit Cure Symbol’. This type of medicinal symbol could only be used on lower-grade pills. In the eyes of the ancient elder, the priceless Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and Golden Snake

Scarlet Pill that could not be purchased anywhere in the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom could only be considered lower-grade pills.

With Lin Ming's current ability, even drawing this 'Lower Spirit Cure Symbol' was already his limit. Beyond that, the many materials needed for higher quality medicinal symbols, Lin Ming had never heard of at all.

Even this 'Inferior Spirit Cure Symbol' had many materials that were exceedingly rare.

Although Lin Xiaodong did not know much about inscription techniques, as soon as he saw Lin Ming write an entire page of materials, he was able to recognize a few of them, for instance 'fourth-grade vicious beast blood'.

"Brother Lin, you want to buy fourth-grade vicious beast blood? As if!"

It had to be known that the Crimson Gold Dragon was also a fourth-level vicious beast. Fourth-level vicious beasts were at least equal to a Houtian master. Although the rare vicious beast blood was not unable to be purchased in Sky Fortune Kingdom, it would be sold at an absolutely astronomical price. This sort of thing would only be shipped in from abroad, even one or two vials would be a thousand taels of gold.

Lin Ming continued to write, and the increasing numbers of materials made Lin Xiaodong feel increasingly fearful and apprehensive. He finally could not bear it and asked, "Brother Lin, do you have that much money?"

Lin Ming nodded. "Mister Muyi gave me 15,000 gold taels in banknotes a few days ago. It was early payment for future 'Overwhelming Rune' inscriptions. I just need to deliver them to him later.

"1…15,000….heavens!" Lin Xiaodong gulped down his saliva. The last time was 9000 gold taels, this time was 15,000. He suddenly felt numb; it was as if gold had just become a number.

…

There was one place in Sky Fortune City that sold the most inscription materials. It wasn't the Hundred Treasure Hall nor was it any auction house. It was Sky Fortune City's Inscription Association.

In there were many rare and precious materials that couldn't be bought anywhere else, and the price was also a bit cheaper than the market price.

"What? Such a good place exists?" Lin Xiaodong felt this was inconceivable, even after hearing it straight from Lin Ming's lips. "This is impossible, unless the person in charge of the Inscription Association's trade union was crazy. If I were the one in charge, I would definitely hike the prices up."

Lin Ming shrugged, "This is what I heard."

They spent some time visiting several high-end shops and also the official auction houses, but really didn't find the rare materials that they needed there.

"Then I guess we go to the Inscription Association."

"Mm…seems like that's the only plan left. Lin Ming suspected that shopping that the Inscription Association required the high status of an inscription master. Until his strength and cultivation had caught up to his inscription technique level, Lin Ming did not want to expose the existence of his skill at inscription. This might cause much trouble for himself and even place him in dangerous situations. Although he had Muyi's protection, Lin Ming did not want to trouble him too much.

…

"Not only do I need an inscription master certificate, but I also need contribution points to purchase any items?" After Lin Ming arrived at the Inscription Association, he had inquired to an elder sister there about how to buy rare and precious materials, and had received this sort of reply.

“I knew it! There was no way such a good deal could exist! Lin Xiaodong crossed his arms in satisfaction. This was normal.

“What are contribution points?” Lin Ming asked.

“Mm…it seems your master is not an inscription master of Sky Fortune Kingdom,” said the elder sister who managed the reception desk, as she thought that Lin Ming was here to purchase materials for his master. “Contribution points are from contributions made by inscription masters that are recorded down at our office. For instance, if they completed some tasks, or duties, or missions that the Inscription Association issued, then you could obtain some contribution points. Or, you could hold a post or office such as association president and receive some points too. Certainly you could also give and trade contribution points with other inscription masters. There are also several different ways to obtain contribution points. If you would have a look at the rules of the Inscription Association you can see them. If your master intends to join the Inscription Association, he is welcome to.

The Inscription Association was a loose organization. Many inscription masters were old men who were only interested in learning and knowledge. They were usually recluses who did not have much contact with the outside and lived sheltered lives. If they had not set up a contribution points system, then the Inscription Association’s existence would be very dreary, and probably not have many inscription masters that would have joined. Even if they did join, very few would come to the trade market.

Lin Ming flipped through the Inscription Association’s rules. As long as he joined the Inscription Association, he would be able to immediately obtain 100 contribution points. There were also many other ways listed to obtain contribution points, such as selling rare and precious materials to the Inscription Association.

“Pfft. If there are rare materials then you would use them, why would you sell them to the Inscription Association.” Lin Xiaodong snorted contemptuously.

Lin Ming said, “Sometimes there are too many of some materials and they cannot be all used, and are just sitting around uselessly. In that case, it’s better to trade for something useful. But this way of getting contribution points doesn't suit me. The only road possible seems to be completing some sort of mission."

Lin Ming turned to the reception elder sister and asked, "This elder sister, where would I go to complete missions?"

"To find missions to complete, you have to go to the mission hall. But, you can only enter the mission hall if you have an inscription master qualification certificate. If your master has any interest in this, he could personally come to have a look. There are many benefits to joining the Inscription Association." The reception elder sister said with a very warm smile.

Lin Ming thought about it and asked, "Does the Inscription Association keep member identities confidential?"

"This is certainly a possibility. If your master has need of privacy then we can guarantee that we can keep all information pertaining to him secret."

"Mmm. That's good. How is the examination, could you take me to participate?"

"Mm?" The reception elder sister stared at him with wide eyes.

Lin Ming shrugged and said, "I'm the inscription master."

"...." The reception elder sister took a step back and sized Lin Ming up from head to toe. She slowly opened her mouth and asked, "Could I... ask... what your age is?"

"15."

"15 years old...?" The reception elder sister heard this and was left speechless. She guessed that the boy in front of her was under the tutelage of some mighty inscription master and had a certain level of talent, and probably also many achievements. But a 15 year old inscription master was just a bit too exaggerated. In these 80 years of the Sky Fortune Kingdom's records, the youngest had only been 18 years old.

The only ones who had any hope of breaking this record were Qin Xingxuan of the Martial Quarters and Wang Yuhan of the Inscription Association.

“This little brother, if you want to participate in the examination to be an inscription master, you need to prepare the treasure and materials.” The reception elder sister had only good intention as she kindly reminded him. Only after creating the inscription symbol could one see its quality and effects. Generally speaking, a new inscription master’s inscription symbols would have a very poor effect, and placing it on a rare treasure would be an utter waste of resources. The Inscription Association was wealthy, but they could not afford such a wanton waste of resources and materials. Therefore, the examination required that all examinees bring their own treasures and materials, as they did not want some random half-baked inscription apprentice to come and test his luck. After all, materials for inscription symbols were very pricey.

“Mm. I knew that. If possible I’d like to purchase some good rare treasure for this examination. I can disburse the costs of purchase.” As Lin Ming said this, he reached into his clothes and withdrew several shiny gold banknotes, all of which were worth 1000 gold taels.

Seeing Lin Ming casually bring out so many gold banknotes, the reception elder sister was astonished. This was an amount of gold that not even the juniors of aristocratic families would have.

She looked to Lin Ming and saw that he wasn’t treating this as some joke. The reception elder sister said, “Since you insist, please come along with me.”

Lin Ming followed the elder sister and entered the interior of the Inscription Association. Lin Xiaodong also followed along. As they passed through the halls, they saw all kinds of glowing and complex symbols and runes along the walls; Lin Xiaodong was very excited by everything he saw.

The decoration of the Inscription Association was not luxurious, but it had a very spacious atmosphere. There were no murals or ornaments on the walls. Instead, there were complex and unique runes dotted around everywhere. Each rune was a metal sculpture that was full of texture and seemed as if it had come to life; it gave off a very ancient and mystical feeling.

“We’re here.” The reception elder sister opened a door and waved them in.

Here was the Inscription Association’s inscription room, which also served as the examination space.

“Mmm, thank you elder sister.”

As Lin Ming walked in, he saw that the inscription room was about 100 feet long and wide. There were several stone platforms suspended in the room. In the center was a stone platform that was covered with many different materials. Above this one was a young girl of about 15 or 16 years of age who was drawing symbol after symbol in the air.

The young girl’s ten slender and jade-like fingers jumped and weaved in the air. The girl’s watery eyes were fully focused on each symbol as she traced them, and her full attention was devoted to her work. She simply did not notice Lin Ming and Lin Xiaodong’s arrival. The manner in which she drew the inscription symbol was extremely skilled. She was like a superbly skilled musician, and each symbol was a beat in the air that she was nimbly handling.

Near the young girl was also an old man. He sat behind her on a large round-backed wooden chair looking as if he were meditating with his eyes closed. But Lin Ming could see the reality of the situation; the older man’s soul force had been placed on the girl’s body to assist her, and each rune the girl drew was within the grasp of the old man.

Chapter 49 – Bright Buddha Plucks the Lotus

Chapter 49 – Bright Buddha Plucks the Lotus

…

…

…

“What a strong soul force.” Lin Ming thought with a hint of shock. Even Muyi’s soul force was inferior to this old man in terms of precision. Muyi was certainly someone who focused the majority of his life’s efforts on cultivating the martial path; being an inscription master was only an occupation he had on the side. But this old man was a professional inscription master. To a true lifelong inscription master, cultivating on the martial path was only a means to extend their lifespan and give them more time to study the infinite mysteries of inscription techniques. Such a person is truly awe inspiring in the achievements that they would accomplish in inscription.

Lin Ming stopped watching after a while and turned around to see Lin Xiaodong unblinkingly staring at the young girl. What a piggy little brother! Lin Ming felt a big headache coming as he saw Lin Xiaodong’s enraptured appearance. He immediately elbowed Lin Xiaodong. Lin Xiaodong was startled with some embarrassment. He was clever but had a slow mind, and scratched his head innocently.

By now Lin Ming had noticed a change in the fluctuations of the young girl’s soul force; there was a glimmer of volatility. The brilliant overlapping inscription symbols in front of her began to spark and smoke. It suddenly exploded into a cascade of colorful lights that shot out everywhere.

The young girl looked spent, and she said with a frustrated sigh, “Grandpa, I failed again.”

The old man who had been sitting peacefully as if he were meditating opened his eyes and said with a smile, “Yuhan, you already did very well. If this continues, after another few months or a year, you will be able to attain the certificate to become an inscription master. Before, grandfather here had attained his certificate when he was 18 years old. You will probably be 16, or 17 years old at the latest.

This girl was the Inscription Association’s talented inscription genius, Wang Yuhan, and the old man was her grandfather, the President of the Inscription Association, Wang Xuanji.

“Mmm... but compared to Qin Xingxuan, she is half a year younger than me and yet is already equally matched in inscription techniques with me. Also in these past few months there has been a significant reduction in the speed of my inscription progress and I don’t know why.”

Geniuses and talents would always end up comparing themselves with each other. Wang Yuhan admitted that there was no way she could pass Qin Xingxuan in terms of martial arts cultivation, but inscription was her main occupation and she did not want to lose to her in this.

Seeing Wang Yuhan and Wang Xuanji talking, the reception elder sister respectfully walked over and said, “Association President.”

“Mm? What’s the matter?”

The reception elder sister hesitated before he turned to Lin Ming and said, “This young man would like to participate in the inscription master examination.”

“What’s your name? How old are you?” Wang Xuanji asked.

Lin Ming hesitated a moment. He had not thought that this old man would be the Inscription Association’s president. In his capacity as president of the Inscription Association, it was unlikely that he would covet anything of Lin Ming’s. As long as he didn’t reveal his knowledge of medicinal inscription or body inscription that the Sky Fortune Kingdom did not possess, then he should have no problems.

Lin Ming was wary against the gangsters and criminals who would covet possessing him over a few tens of thousands of gold taels. As for Wang Xuanji and Muyi and other characters like them, they would only see Lin Ming as a talented inscription genius of the younger generation.

Thinking this, Lin Ming truthfully said, “Lin Ming, 15 years old.”

Hearing 15 years of age, Wang Yuhan’s eyes widened as she looked over Lin Ming up and down several times. Was this young boy also a genius? His age was younger than herself and his cultivation was not high; was this young boy just whiling away his time for some entertainment?

However the Inscription Association did not provide the materials or the rare treasure, and people who looked to mess around would not come here, as it would take several thousand gold taels. If they did then they would have to have some serious brain damage.

“You will need to provide your own materials and rare treasure, do you know this?”

“Mm. I know. I would like to purchase them from the Inscription Association.” Lin Ming took out a piece of paper with a small list of materials as he said this.

Lin Mind had decided upon the ‘Overwhelming Rune’, actually a simplified version. The simplified version did not need Sky Worm Silk and was naturally much easier. However, its effect was a bit weaker and it did not have an inscription technique in it.

His goal was only to pass the examination; there was no need to create a scene and shock everyone. The ‘Overwhelming Rune’ also contained some inscription techniques that had been lost in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, and Lin Ming did not want to expose these.

“If I could purchase these materials, thank you.” Lin Ming handed the detailed list to the reception elder sister.

The reception elder sister took the list in hand and received a nod of confirmation from Wang Xuanji. She said, “Very well. May I ask what sort of rare treasure you will use?”

"I want to use a sword. Yes, would the rare treasure belong to me after I place an inscription symbol on it?"

"Certainly. The treasure and the material are originally purchased by you for the examination. Please come and choose a sword with me."

"Mm. Good."

As Lin Ming left, Wang Yuhan was still looking at his back until he vanished, and she muttered, "Grandfather, this youth is only 15 years old and wants to test as an inscription master. If he passes the examination, then I will lose out not only to Qin Xingxuan but to him."

Wang Xuanji replied with a smile, "The examination to be an inscription master is not some easy test. Since this young boy dares to take the test as an inscription master, then he must have his own unique ability, and is probably not someone from the Sky Fortune Kingdom. He might be a disciple of some reclusive master. Since his natural talent is outstanding and he practices diligently, he wishes to take the inscription master examination at 15 years of age and sweep away the younger generation of Sky Fortune City's inscription talent, and create his own legacy and fame. Haha, but this is not that easy."

As Wang Xuanji said this, he lit a sound transmitting talisman and passed a message to the two inscription masters who were usually responsible for the inscription examination, and bid them to come together.

Wang Yuhan bit her lip and whispered, "Mm, I will not lose to him. I will not lose to Qin Xingxuan."

…

The Inscription Association had rare treasures they specifically kept to use in the examinations. Lin Ming looked at his options until he selected a very good long sword and said, "This one."

This sword was valued at 3600 gold taels and was one of the more expensive treasures in the storehouse. The reception elder sister was a bit surprised; generally those that participated in the inscription master examination would choose a more modest and less expensive treasure. This young boy actually chose something so expensive; it must be that his family was ridiculously wealthy or he was confident in himself.

Lin Ming had his own ideas. Since he had to choose a rare treasure to use, he could not naturally choose something that would be wasted. It was best to choose a superior quality treasure to combine with a good inscription symbol to sell at a high price.

“Our treasures, once sold, cannot be exchanged.” The reception elder sister said. She did not want Lin Ming to feel as if he would be cheated, and wanted to make sure that this sword was the one he wanted.

Lin Ming took out four gold banknotes and said with a shy smile, “This I certainly know.”

“Mm. Then come along with me.”

After the payment had concluded, the reception elder sister brought Lin Ming to return to the examination room before she left.

After re-entering the inscription room, Lin Ming saw that two other people were in the room who looked to be about 40-50 years of age. One was a middle-aged man wearing a long green robe, and the other was a smiling man, who looked somewhat like a perpetually happy, very kind and very fat old man.

These two were the examination officials of the Inscription Association that were responsible for the inscription master examination. Wang Xuanji usually did not join these examinations, but this time had had some interest in staying and observing.

“Are you ready?” Wang Xuanji asked.

“Mm.” Lin Ming nodded. He placed the long sword on the inscription stone platform. The materials for this symbol began to unfold one at a time. The Inscription Associations materials had already been processed quite well, and did not require Lin Ming to grind, purify, melt, or do anything else to them.

The middle-aged man who wore a long green gown gave Lin Ming a blank look and said, “The time limit for this examination is two hours. If you have three consecutive failures then you will fail. If the end product has less than a 20% increase in strength, then that is also a fail.”

“Understood.”

“Good. You may begin.” The middle-aged man turned over an hour glass, and the sand within began to silently pass.

Lin Ming sat in repose with his eyes closed for a moment. He revolved the true essence in his body until it reached an optimal condition, and then placed his hands outwards. A few small drops of blue colored juice jumped to his palm as if they were under Lin Ming’s control.

This was only a simple gesture, but the people present were able to feel the young man wrap the blue colored juice in a strong soul force.

“This soul force… I’m afraid this young man might be a fifth-grade talent.” Wang Xuanji said with surprise.

“No wonder he dares to take the test at only 15 years of age, he has some ability.” The middle-aged man said as he slowly nodded.

Wang Yuhan pursed her lips. She naturally also noted Li Ming’s soul force and she muttered in her heart. “Fifth-grade soul talent!? That’s the same as me. Before now the only rival I had was that Qin Xingxuan, now there is another!”

Fifth-grade talent was very rare. Generally speaking, a martial artist’s soul talent and martial talent did not have too large of a difference, but the soul talent was usually lower than the martial talent. Therefore a high grade soul talent was especially rare. If a fifth-grade martial talent was only seen once every decade, then a fifth-grade soul talent would be seen once every two, or even three decades.

Wang Yuhan's martial talent was only fourth-grade, but her soul talent was actually higher than her martial talent. This was likely something that she inherited from her grandfather.

Wang Yuhan's medium fifth-grade talent was absolutely the top tier of inscription talents that was only seen once every several dozen years. In addition, Wang Xuanji had been gently guiding Wang Yuhan since childhood. Now in terms of inscription techniques and talent, she was similar to Qin Xingxuan, but she was also older.

Lin Ming did not have a fifth-grade soul talent, but the soul law formula that he used was the 'Overbearing Soul Tactic', which originated from the Realm of the Gods. Therefore he was able to congeal his soul force well and give the impression that his arms had strings on them.

If that initial movement of Lin Ming's had made Wang Xuanji feel startled, then the following movement made everyone doubt its possibility.

When the blue colored drops reached Lin Ming's fingertips, his fingers moved in a series of movements like a blur. The droplets were gently pulled apart with the stretches of his fingers like they were glimmering azure meteors in the night sky. Faint afterimages followed each movement, like the tails of glistening meteors as they traced through the air.

In the time of a few blinks, a complex symbol had already been completed.

Wang Xuanji inhaled a sharp breath, and the smiling old man's smile also froze.

"Bright Buddha Plucking the Lotus!"

A layman would only watch for fun, but an expert would see the way. Lin Ming's hand movement was like the passing clouds and flowing rivers. There was a special term for this among inscription masters, called the 'Bright Buddha Plucking the Lotus'. The Bright

Buddha was an myth of ancient times called the Thousand Finger Buddha. The fable said that the Buddha had ten hands, each with a thousand fingers. Every year in the Bright Buddha’s garden, the water lotuses would bloom and he would collect the seeds. In a single move, the Bright Buddha was able to pick out hundreds of water lotus seeds. Therefore the ancient religious texts described this as ‘Bright Buddha Plucks the Lotus’, and the inscription masters co-opted this word to describe peerless great masters of inscription who would draw inscription symbols so speedily that there would be shadows left behind.

Certainly if they discussed only the speed of drawing, then some inscription masters with a higher cultivation in martial arts would be quicker, but if they wanted to maintain their soul force at such a high speed and not lose any stability or accuracy, then that would be more difficult than ascending to heaven. This sort of shadow that was created, one would only be able to practice it with heaven defying perception and painstaking effort!

This young boy was how old? Even if he started to practice inscription techniques from within his mother’s womb, he would not be so adept at such finger speed!

Chapter 50 – Obtaining the Materials

Chapter 50 – Obtaining the Materials

…

…

…

Wang Xuanji was able to quickly discover that this youth's drawing technique did not originate from any school of learning in the Sky Fortune Kingdom. His techniques looked more complex, and were incomparably smoother.

"This youth's master's sect is not from roots of the Sky Fortune Kingdom!" The middle-aged man said.

"Mmm. And moreover, their school of training is much more progressed than we are."

Colorful lights blossomed together in midair. Their paths interweaved trails of light in the audience's widened irises, leaving a bright and shimmering blur behind. Wang Yuhan held her breath, the soul force in that symbol gave a feeling of the most exquisite and careful changes of energy.

When drawing an inscription symbol, the most difficult task to grasp was to assure that the soul force was carefully calculated for every slight nuance; the smallest inaccuracy could cause complete failure. But in this young man's hand, each small change was as if it were instinctively exact. Under his deft hands, he drew symbol like a painter who was free-hand drawing the flowers and birds, as those small birds were spreading their wings in a wish to fly.

At first, in Wang Yuhan existed a secret fear that she would be surpassed by this young boy. She had hoped that he would not be able to pass this examination. But at this point, she was already thoroughly enraptured in utter admiration and amazement. On the contrary, now in her heart she wished that he would never stop, that this perfection could continue until the end of time and in her heart was not even the tiniest shred of regret

This feeling, it was the same as musicians that longed to hear the sounds of the divine songs of nature and gods in full bloom, or the artist who yearned to see the most marvelous and splendid painting that had been handed down by the greatest painters of the past generations. Only this sort of feeling could cause a human to abandon all distractions and pursue the peak of their craft.

Seeing the dedicated facial expression of this meticulous young man, Wang Yuhan finally was able to understand why the cultivation growth of her inscription technique had come to a standstill. It was exactly because she cared too much about Qin Xingxuan, and feared that the path she walked on would be overtaken by a girl who was half a year younger than she was.

But now, seeing Lin Ming's perfect inscription technique, she was suddenly enlightened with the truth. This land was endless and boundless; there were countless peerless talents and geniuses like herself. Being number one among the youths of Sky Fortune Kingdom in inscription techniques was merely idle vanity. There was no significance in whether she was surpassed by Qin Xingxuan or not.

What she pursued would no longer be Qin Xingxuan's shadow, but beyond her. What she would pursue was not being the number one inscription talent in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, but to reach the pinnacle of inscription.

One minute and one second had passed. In front of Lin Ming, the number of symbols and runes was increasing, as they began overlapping in midair with light and dark twinkles, as if they had a living, breathing rhythm. Lin Ming was already familiar with the 'Overwhelming Rune', and drawing it was easy. The peak of the Second Stage of Body Transformation allowed Lin Ming to have enough true essence to support the entire process; he did not need to suffer hardship like he had a few months ago.

Today, Lin Ming's inscription drawing had gone especially smooth. He had invested his total attention into creating the symbol, and had forgotten that this was an examination. He fully finished the dozens of colorful and brilliant symbols and runes, and then after a flash of light, Lin Ming's soul force brought them all together as one, and they condensed into a square inch of a flame symbol.

This time Lin Ming did not place this symbol onto a piece of symbol paper, but instead took it to the table with the longsword, and with a flick of his finger, the symbol fell onto the longsword with a 'chi chi' and branded itself onto it. Its final appearance was like a raging flame.

Completion.

Seeing that sword in Lin Ming's hand, Wang Xuanji's heart was enraptured and gave endless praise. His eyes fell on the blade of the sword and he could naturally see the potential of that flame symbol as it exuded a sense of nature. He immersed his soul force into it, and felt that the true essence circulated as easily as breathing.

Wang Xuanji was able to affirm that it was a perfect inscription symbol. But the one who drew it was a mere young boy whose true essence was at the Second Stage of Body Transformation. How much could this symbol increase the strength of the weapon?

The inscription symbol's talk of 'increased strength' was not the sharpness of the blade, but the circulation and flow of true essence. If the inscription symbol was on symbol paper, no one would be able to determine how much it would increase the strength. If it was on a rare treasure like a weapon, then an experienced inscription master would be able to pour his true essence into the treasure and see how the flow of true essence was affected by the inscription symbol. They would then be able to tell what percentage of strength the inscription symbol would increase the rare treasure by.

Wang Xuanji raised the long sword in his hand and concentrated his true essence into it. He closed his eyes and let the sensations wash through him. A moment later his eyes opened, and although he had already expected this in his heart, he was still surprised.

The inscription symbol's increased strength amounted to about 32%. This was the standard of a master class inscriptionist!

"32% increased true essence strength……." Wang Xuanji exclaimed.

"Oh?" The middle-aged man's eyebrows rose and he took the long sword in his hand. Generally, the primary beginning inscription master would find even a 20% increase in strength difficult. That this youth could reach 32%… it had it be known that after 20%, every little bit further was much more difficult.

The middle-aged man had worked as an examination official for many years now. When it came to evaluating an inscription symbol, he was faster than Wang Xuanji and could obtain a more precise result. "Between 32% and 33%."

The middle-aged man laid down the long sword on the table and sized up Lin Ming. Where did this kid come from? He just came out of nowhere. Did he have any friends? Companions? Is it possible that he is the disciple of a master from some ancient sect? By why would the disciple of an ancient sect come to a small place like this Inscription Association at Sky Fortune City to apply to become an inscription master?

"Congratulations, Lin Ming. You've thoroughly passed the examination." Wang Xuanji said.

"Thank you, Association President."

"Mm. Are you willing to join our Sky Fortune City Inscription Association?" Wang Xuanji casually asked. In his view, disciples of these ancient clans would not join the Sky Fortune City's Inscription Association. If ten were asked, ten would turn it down. He hadn't imagined Lin Ming would nod and answer, "Yes, I want to."

"Oh?" Wang Xuanji's eyebrows rose. "You want to join our Inscription Association?"

"Mm. I came here to participate in the examination for this reason."

“This...” Wang Xuanji felt strange in his mind, he could not understand Lin Ming’s reasons.

“Mm. To tell Association President honestly, I joined the Inscription Association to earn contribution points to buy materials.”

Buy materials? If you needed rare and precious materials then you would need contribution points. There were countless ways to use these materials. Was it this boy that wanted them? Or his master?

His master must be some senior of unfathomably high skill. Why would that sort of person look for materials in a small trade union in a small place like Sky Fortune City’s?

Wang Xuanji thought about this for a long time, and with a bit of hesitation said, “You, if you sell this sword to the Inscription Association, I will trade you 3000 contribution points to purchase materials.”

Lin Ming startled and was immediately overjoyed with happiness. He had worried that he would have to complete a number of missions. He didn’t think he would be so lucky that Wang Xuanji would propose to trade this sword for 3000 contribution points. Before, he had looked through the list of precious materials that he needed for his medicinal inscription, and 3000 was not a small amount. It was enough to purchase the materials that he needed.

“This Association President old man probably wanted to buy my sword to study it. But the inscription techniques are complicated and diverse. Even someone well versed in inscription techniques would find it difficult to examine, even if they were careful and spent a lot of time. Perhaps he wanted to unravel some mysteries of the inscription symbol and reproduce it, but even that is impossibly difficult. If he buys this sword, he probably won’t be able to find anything.” Thinking like this, Lin Ming said, “Thank you Association President, I was sorely lacking contribution points.”

“There is no need to be polite. If any day your teacher comes to Sky Fortune City, please welcome him to our Sky Fortune City’s Inscription Association as an honored guest.” There were two reasons Wang Xuanji gave Lin Ming such favorable conditions at the start. First, he wanted to study the sword, and second, he wanted to win over Lin Ming, and possibly have the opportunity to know the mysterious sect behind Lin Ming.

…

“Fourth-level vicious beasts blood, 1 jin. 1100 gold taels, 150 contribution points.”

“Sky Blue Cloud Flower Seeds, 12. 600 gold taels, 80 contribution points.”

“Dragon Bloodroot Juice, 1 jin. 600 gold taels, 60 contribution points.”

…

The one in charge of the sale of rare and precious materials was a 40-50 year old middle-aged woman. She was comparing her supplies as she read down Lin Ming’s list, and quoted the price each time it matched. For every match, she would stop and look at Lin Ming. This little boy, he was buying so many rare and precious things, what was he planning on doing with them in the end?

Lin Ming had listed dozens of materials, including several precious and rare ones. For instance, the fourth-level vicious beast blood, a small vial would be able to match up against a rare treasure in price. If he had left the Inscription Association to buy it at market price, it would have been at least 3000 gold taels, and even then he would not necessarily have been able to purchase it.

If this was half a year ago, Lin Ming would not even dare to dream about such things.

The amount of gold required quickly accumulated to 10,000. The contributions points needed also almost reached 2000. As Lin Xiaodong saw the required amount of gold rise, all he could hear was the unceasing drone of the abacus as it made pop pop sounds. Each pop made him feel fearful and apprehensive of the next item, but soon all he felt was numbness. He had finally seen what people called spending money like running water.

“Total price, 10,000 gold taels and 2100 contribution points. Would you like to confirm this purchase?” The middle-aged woman let down her abacus and asked Lin Ming. Even an inscription master of Sky Fortune City who was of great learning and fame, and was also noble, would not buy so many rare and precious materials. Who was this little guy? Where did he come into possession of so many contribution points?

“Mm. Yes, I would like to purchase these.” Ling Ming said and he pulled out the gold banknotes from his sleeves and also a points card. This points card had a card number that showed how many contribution points he had in the records.

“Ok…”

…

Chapter 51 – Ranking Stone

Chapter 51 – Ranking Stone

…

…

…

As he returned to his residence, Lin Ming looked at the piles of materials in his room and his heart filled with anticipation and excitement. These materials would even make an inscription master of the Sky Fortune Kingdom feel like their hand was heavy; they would be very careful in handling these rare materials and would not dare to waste a single bit. To them, an inscription symbol that used a few of these materials was already extraordinary and would be a very complex inscription technique, but Lin Ming wanted to create a medicinal inscription symbol, and that actually required the use of all these materials. Even with Lin Ming's current inscription skill, there was no certainty at all that he would be successful.

"If I can successfully use the 'Lower Spirit Cure Symbol' on the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill, and eat them, my strength would definitely rise tremendously." These two pills were already top quality medicines, in addition to the efficiency of the medicinal inscription symbol and his diligent practice of his Second Stage cultivation, then he might be able to break through into the Third Stage of Body Transformation.

Moreover, if he was successful in creating the medicinal inscription symbol, then his own inscription technique would advance further, and he would be ever closer to being able to create body inscriptions that enhanced speed and combat prowess!

Though Lin Ming was excited in his heart that the prospects seemed so magnificent and wonderful to him, he knew that in order to truly implement all these ideas, it would very difficult and he would have to expend at least twice the effort. Even if Lin Ming had fused the with soul fragment memories, he also needed to constantly practice the coordinations of his body movements and soul.

In order to save materials, Lin Ming used the old method that he had from the very beginning. He only used true essence, and did not expend any materials.

In training such skills, victory was attained by repeated and unrelenting practice. If 1000 times was not good, then he would practice 10,000 times. If 10,000 times was not good, he would practice tens of 10,000s of times.

Repeating these motions tens of thousands of times was tedious and exhausting of soul force. This sort of grueling feeling was like not sleeping for three days and three nights, and was the acknowledgement of support by hard work and stubborn effort.

Lin Ming had been practicing for only two days and his eyes were already bloodshot. He stopped practice to take a rest and didn't even have the strength to lift a cup.

"I used the 'Overbearing Soul Tactic', and I also bought pills that specialize in reducing fatigue and aiding in the restoration of soul force, and yet I still turned out like this. This medicinal inscription symbol's difficulty is without a doubt several times higher than the object inscription symbol."

"Tomorrow will be the admission day for the Seven Profound Martial House. It looks like it will be impossible to complete the medicinal inscription symbol before the admission day."

From the end of the examination to the beginning of the official admission, there were three long days of relaxation in between. Tomorrow, he had to report to the Earth Hall at the Seven Profound Martial House.

The Earth Hall's martial artists had an opportunity to challenge disciples of the Heavenly Abode once they reached the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation, Altering Muscles. Some martial artists who were at the peak of the Third Stage but had special circumstances could also obtain the qualifications to challenge to disciples of the Heavenly Abode.

With Lin Ming's present strength, he was sorely lacking the qualifications to enter the Heavenly Abode.

Next day in the early morning, students of the Earth Hall were gathered in the back mountains. A tall, tanned, topless and red haired man walked in front of everyone with a black saber slung over his shoulder. He looked around at all of the youths present and opened his mouth to say, "Starting today, you lot have officially become disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House's Earth Hall! I am your teacher! My name is Hong Xi, but you may also call me Instructor Hong."

"This time the number of idiots who have passed the examination is 53! But standing here, 20 of you were the ones with the qualifications to actually enter the Earth Hall! Without a doubt, you are all extremely talented geniuses! I hope. But, do you think that just because you entered the Earth Hall that you are destined to become masters of your generation? Powerhouses could die early; peerless talents could fall from the sky. Only by unceasingly crawling upwards and surviving perils will you be able to have your name recorded throughout history!"

"Those of the Earth Hall have some possibility of being won over by forces of Sky Fortune City. Even though they will shower you with money and beautiful women and other sorts of enticements, you have all passed the Dream Trial test and have a heart of martial arts! But! Even a heart of martial arts can slowly be corrupted. These temptations might become the maggots that eat your clothes and gnaw at your will!"

"Remember this! Only strength is the most important! They want to win you over because you have the strength! If you do not have strength, then you have nothing! Come with me."

The red haired man said all these and then led the group to a place deep within the back mountains.

The lands occupied by the Seven Profound Martial House were broad and vast. The entire Zhou Mountain was the land of the Seven Profound Martial House. In the back mountains there were only a few buildings. The path was dotted with beautiful green grass, great mountains stones and ancient trees that seemed to come to life. Occasionally, water springs flowed to life, giving the beautiful image of spring come alive.

After they walked for about the time an incense stick takes to burn, they reached a giant cliff. The cliff was several dozen feet high, and its surface was polished as smooth and shiny as a mirror. On it, was densely engraved numerous names. The name at the top was as big as a bucket. It said: Ling Sen.

The names downwards were smaller, and they were written in lines row after row. Altogether there were 20 rows.

Lin Ming faintly guessed the purpose of this cliff. Hong Xi's words only verified his suspicions. He had said, "You saw the cliff, but the truth is that it is just an illusion. The names above are constantly changing; this is the Seven Profound Martial House's Ranking Stone. The Ranking Stone has the names of everyone from the Earth Hall and the Heavenly Abode. Their names are all listed. There are over 200 individuals, these people are you fellow senior apprentice brothers and senior apprentice sisters."

It really was some sort of ranking system. Lin Ming looked at the strange names and followed downward from Ling Sen. He read them and still did not see Qin Xingxuan.

Why didn't it list Qin Xingxuan? Lin Ming had some doubts; perhaps Qin Xingxuan was not included together with the disciples of the Heavenly Abode.

Lin Ming continued to look, and then after some time his eyes narrowed. He saw an extremely familiar name – Zhu Yan!

Zhu Yan, rank 39.

Heavenly Abode, 39!

Lin Ming took a deep breath. How long would it take for him to achieve this?

He continued downwards and was pleasantly surprised to see his own name. But immediately after him was that man, Wang Yanfeng. The rest of the 20 of them of the Earth Hall were listed. As for the others, their names were not written on the cliff ledge.

The Ranking Stone only showed the names of those in the Heavenly Abode and the Earth Hall.

Hong Xi said, “One way of the martial path is to hack your way through! If you wish to reach higher, then you must step on others underneath your boot! This land has no lack of talent! But do you know why we selected so many of you so called geniuses?

Hong Xi spoke this far, and the disciple were stunned. One disciple said, “Instructor Hong, choosing a talent is naturally to raise them and help them cultivate.”

“Raise them?” Hong Xi laughed and laughed again with unbridled impunity. You know how a beast trainer trains a vicious beast? They have the most excellent of systems. The beasts with the best qualifications and potential are chosen, and then reared. They are fed good, hearty meat daily, and trained. Then they put them in a cage and let them fight. Out of the several hundred beasts who began, there would only be one left; that is the king of the beasts.”

“You lot are in this cage of beasts. On the path of being a powerhouse you will need to step on countless peerless geniuses and climb over their corpses. Therefore the reason we chose and gathered so many talents is not to raise you, but in order to be raised for battle and slaughter! You are nothing more than stepping stones for the true talents to step on and climb higher!”

“There is no strongest, only stronger. You either step on the corpses and crawl up someone or you face the cruel death and are trampled underneath everyone else. This is the truth!”

Each of Hong Xi's words hit the disciples like a steel ball. It made their hearts plummet into ice. The talents were not gathered together to focus on training, but only to be bodies for powerhouses to climb up and reach higher goals.

Hong Xi's beast cage analogy planted a strong sense of crisis within the disciple. Even Lin Ming felt a surge of emotions.

"The last is the king..." Lin Ming clenched his fists and his eyes filled with thick fighting spirit.

"Good. Here are 20 jade slips. Inside are introductions to the rules and system of the Seven Profound Martial House. Your residence is arranged in the back mountains. Everything is written in the jade slip. Now you are all dismissed. We will officially begin lessons tomorrow."

The red haired man waved his arms and 20 jade slips flew into the students' hands. Lin Ming received one of them and he quickly sunk his soul force into it and saw where his own residence was.

"First I will find my place and settle down. Then I will create the medicinal inscription symbol and use it to raise my strength. The Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill I obtained is a miracle pill, helpful in making breakthroughs through bottlenecks. If I use an inscription symbol on it, it should be enough to break through to the Third Stage of Body Transformation.

Body Transformation had six Stages. Strength Training, Flesh Training, Viscera Training, Altering Muscle, Bone Forging, and Pulse Condensation. These six Stages were far removed from each other; wanting to breakthrough to the next would require a long period of time. Lin Ming had only been in the Second Stage of Body Transformation for over a month. He knew that making a breakthrough in a short period of time was not easy. But since he had the top tier pills, in addition to the power of the medicinal inscription symbol, breaking through was not impossibility.

"Lin Ming!"

As Lin Ming was thinking, he heard a loud voice and turned his head to look. He was surprised to see a young man in white clothing standing ten steps away with a sullen gaze staring at him.

This person was Wang Yanfeng. During the Seven Profound Martial House entrance examination, Wang Yanfeng had hated Lin Ming for snatching away his first place spot and even his Golden Snake Scarlet Pill. This was a huge blow to Wang Yanfeng and to him, the cause and instigator of all this was Lin Ming. This Lin Ming was without a doubt the pain of the flesh, the eternal thorn in his side!

"Those two pills, did you eat them?" Wang Yanfeng said with a cold tone through clenched teeth.

"What if I did, what if I didn't?" Lin Ming answered quietly. These two pills were priceless, but he didn't worry that others would covet them. In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, the Seven Profound Martial House was a supreme existence. They had terrible strength and an immeasurable background. If they gave a reward, then nobody would dare to steal it away.

"I know that you haven't eaten them. Those two pills are strong and dangerous, your body simply cannot withstand them. Lin Ming, you are only a medium third-grade talent, you need to know that with your talent, those two pills – especially the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill – would be wasted. At best you would only absorb 1/10 of it. Being eaten by you is a complete and total waste.

Lin Ming frowned. "What do you want to say?"

"I want to buy your Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill."

Lin Ming smiled. He didn't think that Wang Yanfeng would say such funny words to him. It really made one laugh. "Are you cracking a joke? You think I will sell it to you?"

“Don’t reject it. Listen to my terms first.”

Chapter 52 – Juniors of the Lin Family

Chapter 52 – Juniors of the Lin Family

…

…

…

"I can lend you a jade slip containing my family's handed down martial manual, the 'Nine Paths of Truth', but only for six hours. I can also give you 5000 gold taels! However there is just one condition; you cannot ever mention that I let you look at the 'Nine Paths of Truth' or connect me to it. Otherwise, not only will I have bad luck, the Wang Family may hunt you down and kill you." Wang Yanfeng said these words in a very low sound.

The Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill could not be bought with mere gold, and Wang Yanfeng at most had only a few thousand gold taels that he could trade with. Therefore he offered his family's secret skill the 'Nine Paths of Truth' as a lure. This was a skill manual handed down the generations of the Wang Family; it was very precious and was kept an absolute secret from all outsiders.

Wang Yanfeng guessed that the only thing Lin Ming knew was some heart mantra, and did not know any martial art skills. As long as Lin Ming did not mention anything about this then no one would notice. Wang Yanfeng thought that even this Lin Ming wouldn't be so stupid as to let others discover he had learnt a forbidden Wang Family martial skill and thus bitterly experience the Wang Family chasing him down to kill him. This was why he was willing to take this risk out of desperation.

Wang Yanfeng estimated that with Lin Ming's inferior natural talent, he would not be able to comprehend much with only six hours.

“The ‘Nine Paths of Truth’? And I can only look at it for six hours?” Lin Ming sneered. These conditions, he wouldn’t even disdain himself to glance at it. Compared to the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’, the ‘Nine Paths of Truth’ was nothing but trash. “I regretfully decline. I have no interest in this.”

Wang Yanfeng blushed red like a tomato. “Lin Ming, are you even aware of your own circumstances! With your inferior talent it is impossible to breakthrough to the Third Stage of Body Transformation, even if you eat the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill! But if you practice a bit of the heart mantras of the ‘Nine Paths of Truth’ your control of your true essence will be enhanced and there will be endless benefits! This rare family martial skill handed down in my Wang Family cannot even be purchased by millions of gold!”

Lin Ming said, “The Seven Profound Martial House has no lack of heart mantras, and they are also much more profound when compared to the ‘Nine Paths of Truth’ by many fold. Why would I want to look at anything of yours?”

“Humph. The Seven Profound Martial House do have top-tier heart mantras, but these top-tier skills manuals are only passed down to core disciples. You know what a core disciple is? Those are the true disciples chosen for the Seven Profound Valleys. In the future if there are no accidents, then they will be able to go to the Seven Profound Valleys. Even senior apprentice brother Ling Sen of the Heavenly Abode does not have the qualifications to learn them. As far as I know there are only a handful of core disciples. Besides Qin Xingxuan, most aren’t even from the Sky Fortune Kingdom but from some mystical cultivating martial family. You think to have any hope?! You’re dreaming! Even I didn’t expect your audacity!”

The large sects were brutally strict on the inheritance of their skill manuals. This was because they relied on the existence of these skill manuals to be the cornerstone of their power. Even in the Seven Profound Martial House, the majority of disciples could only learn second-tier skill manuals. Wang Yanfeng knew this as a fact.

However, Lin Ming had the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’. Let alone the top-tier manuals within the Seven Profound Martial House, even the secret arts of the headmaster of a large sect would not make him feel a hint of jealousy.

Lin Ming said, “Just because you don’t expect anything doesn’t mean I don’t have hope. I’m sorry but I’m busy right now. I’m going first.”

“You! Good! Very good! You think that just because you managed to barely defeat me last time, you are so outstanding compared to me? You just wait, wait for me to take back everything that you took from me and I will stamp on you beneath my heel. You think that you can become a core disciple just by your own efforts? Don’t make me laugh. I’ll wait and watch as you become a stepping stone for others. The higher you stand, the more miserably you will fall!”

Ling Mind had completely ignored Wang Yanfeng’s indignant cursing. Wang Yanfeng had already been defeated by him. In his mind, he may be weaker than others, he may be weaker than Zhu Yan, Qin Xingxuan, and Ling Sen, but he would never let himself feel inferior to someone he had already defeated. If one day, Lin Ming was beaten by someone he had already defeated, then he would reflect upon his mistakes.

Shortly before noon, Lin Ming moved all his belongings to his new residence. The lands of the Seven Profound Martial House were broad, and they had enough space to give each disciple of the Earth Hall a room of their own.

Lin Ming’s room was located at a small secluded space in the back mountains. Its back faced the mountains and there was a deep, clean pool at the side. There were century old trees which formed a huge canopy that shaded the room. Even in the summer it was quiet and refreshing, it was an excellent place to cultivate in peace.

Lin Ming was satisfied with his new room. He sat cross-legged in bed and began to read the contents of the jade slip.

The jade slip explained the rules and systems of the Seven Profound Martial House, including violations, regulations, punishments, challenge rules, class hours, and practice arrangements and so on. He finally reached the end, where there were ranking rewards that were provided by the Seven Profound Martial House.

Seeing these, Lin Ming's interest was piqued. A major portion of the reason he joined the Seven Profound Martial House was for these resources.

The Seven Profound Martial House had many disciples; they were ranked on one's individual achievement in the Ten Thousand Killing Array

Several hundred years ago, the Seven Profound Valley was founded by seven supreme experts. Among them, one excelled in the creation and construction of magic arrays. Over the years, the array methods were handed down generation by generation within the Seven Profound Valleys. In the examination of the sect disciples, they would occasionally use illusionary killing arrays. The Seven Profound Martial House was under the governance of the Seven Profound Valleys; they naturally had advantages and customs associated with them.

The magic array used for ranking was calling the Ten Thousand Killing Array. Once one entered, they would fight countless waves of enemies one after the other. In the midst of these enemies were vicious beasts, and also humans.

Their final ranking would be decided by the total number and cultivation of the enemies they defeated.

Among these enemies, the weakest was equal to a martial artist at the Second Stage of Body Transformation. If they defeated one Second Stage Body Transformation enemy they would receive one point, if they defeated one at the Peak of the Second Stage they would receive 5 points, Third Stage of Body Transformation 10 points, peak of Third Stage 50 points, Fourth Stage of Body Transformation 100 points, peak of Fourth Stage of Body Transformation 500 points, and so on...

The enemies after one first entered the Ten Thousand Killing Array would be at the Second Stage of Body Transformation, and behind them the enemies would become increasingly more difficult to handle. The Fourth Stage of Body Transformation would come one after the other, unceasingly until death.

The final result was the accumulated score one had before death, and this would be demonstrated on the Ranking Stone.

If you had a high ranking, then one could obtain many advantages.. For instance, Soul Gathering Pellets. If you placed after 200, then you would receive a Soul Gathering Pellet every three months. If you placed in the first ten, you would receive 10 Soul Gathering Pellets every month. Ten Soul Gathering Pellets were equal to 2000 gold taels. This was an amount that not even a wealthy junior from an aristocratic family could disregard.

The reality was that the Soul Gathering Pellets were only secondary, after all, this was something that the rich could buy with money. But there were also resources given that not even the very wealthy could purchase, for instance, legacy skill manuals. If one placed in the top 200, then they could choose the most preliminary and basic of skill manuals. If one placed within the top ten, they could freely enter certain secret rooms of the Seven Profound Martial House and choose a skill manual they wanted to learn.

But if one placed in first placed, they could even have a chance to learn the most guarded core skill manuals of the Seven Profound Martial House. These were top quality skill manuals that only core disciples could hope to learn. Even juniors of the Royal Family and the highest ranking families would have no opportunity to ever study these.

Certainly, Lin Ming had not much interest at all in skill manuals, but instead the resources.

The Seven Profound Valleys was a sect that was proficient in creating magic arrays. At the beginning of the establishment of the Seven Profound Martial Houses, the Seven Profound Valley had once sent out Xiantian experts to place these magic arrays in many of the Martial Houses so that the disciples could use them for practice. Using these, one could practice their skills with twice the result and half the effort. But the number of these arrays was limited, and moreover they needed a massive number of true essence stones to activate and maintain. Therefore not everyone could enter these magic killing arrays, the qualifications one needed were similar to the ranking they had.

So in the Seven Profound Martial House, ranking was supreme. With a higher ranking, one would enjoy more resources. The strong get stronger and the weak get weaker. The disciples there were all talents; only by stepping on the corpses of others would they have a chance to bloom.

“I have already officially entered the Seven Profound Martial House. If I want to obtain sufficient resources, then I have first got to get a good ranking from the Ten Thousand Killing Array, but… my medicinal inscription symbol isn’t ready. If I start practicing now, I might be able to begin drawing one in half a month. To display the maximum efficiency of the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill, it will be worth it to spend the time doing so.”

Lin Ming said to himself, and begun practicing his inscription again…

…

On the morning of the second day, Lin Ming rose out of bed early and washed himself. Today was the official teaching day of the Seven Profound Martial House.

Teaching did not involve explaining skill manuals. It only involved cultivation tips, elementary basic knowledge, taking care of the body and so forth. In the core curriculum aspects, the Seven Profound Martial House was very loose. There were seven or eight possible courses they could attend and listen to. Each disciple chose based on their own interests and could even attend one at random, or even not even bother attending at all.

For today’s lectures, the jade slip had already explained that it would be explanations of the foundation body techniques.

Although Lin Ming had inherited a highest quality skill manual, he was actually still very limited in the understanding of the basics. He had not received any legitimate martial arts training after all, and therefore these classes had a very high significance to him.

The location of this lecture was the Seven Profound Martial House's Martial Lecture Hall. When Lin Ming arrived at the Martial Lecture Hall, he found that it was already packed with people already sitting; there were probably around 70 or 80.

In this group were not only the 53 new disciples, but also some old ones who had come to listen.

The Seven Profound Martial House's Heavenly Abode and Earth Hall had altogether 230 disciples. The Human Hall had almost 400 disciples. Altogether the total number of disciples surpassed 600. Out of these 600 there were several dozen who came through their connections, although even though they did use their connections to enter, that did not mean they would be horrible.

In the Seven Profound Martial House, each martial artist could study for 5 years at most. 5 years later, if they were not yet 22 years old, they could apply to stay another year, and after that must graduate.

If one's strength was high enough, they could apply to graduate ahead of time, but, most students chose to stay the entire full five years, as there were many resources that could not be found outside.

After Lin Ming entered the Martial Lecture Hall he casually strolled around for a place to sit. As he did, he noticed that there were a few people whose gazes drifted towards him.

Lin Ming looked back and saw that these people looking at him had friendly, smiling faces.

Mmm? Did these people know him?

"You are Lin Ming?" A handsome youth in blue clothes asked with a jolly smile.

"Mmm, may I ask who you are?"

“Let me introduce myself. My name is Lin Wu, this is my younger sister Lin Fengyuan.” The handsome blue clothed youth waved at a delicate young girl at his side.

Lin Wu, Lin Fengyuan, could it be…

Lin Ming was surprised, he opened his mouth to ask, “You are the direct descendant juniors of Green Mulberry City’s Lin Family?”

Lin Wu smiled and said, “You’re correct, we are all one family.”

The Lin Family was a large and respected family in Green Mulberry City. Although they did not have any noble titles that were bestowed to them, their family had several generations of doing business and thus had a very rich heritage. In such a large family, that there would be some outstanding young talents in the Seven Profound Martial House could be considered a normal matter. A few months ago, Lin Ming had borrowed a Pass Card to enter the Zither Hall; this was lent to him by Lin Xiaodong.

Chapter 53 – Provocation

Chapter 53 – Provocation

…

…

…

Although the Lin Family had a very rich heritage, if a family wanted long-term development, they had to concentrate their financial resources. The family business could only be passed onto direct descendants, otherwise the business would become more and more generation fragmented and within a few generations, more or less, the family would exist in name only.

Lin Ming was born within the branch family, and he was also separated by several generations, it was impossible for his family to be given a business; they could only be responsible for management. Since he was born, Lin Ming never had much contact with the direct descendant juniors of the Lin Family, so he simply hadn't recognized this brother-sister pair.

Lin Wu said, "We only found out a few days ago that the number one spot in the Martial House entrance examination was a junior of the Lin Family, it really gave us juniors a huge shock. And rarest of all, you were from the branch family. You managed to achieve this success without the resources and support of the main family; it really makes me feel ashamed and embarrassed.

Lin Fengyuan also interjected, she said, "Young Cousin, the news that you managed to obtain the first place result in the examination has already been passed onto the family; it even alarmed the head of the household! This is a remarkable achievement! The head of the household has already visited Young Cousin's parents and gifted the restaurant to Young

Cousin's parents. He thanked the two elders for rearing such a wonderful talent in the Lin Family. When Young Cousin goes back, the Lin Family will go high and low to give you the most welcoming dinner for your reception."

After hearing these two siblings' words, Lin Ming was speechless. He hadn't thought that such a series of events had occurred. Regarding the Lin Family, he had never felt much of a connection or sense of belonging to them, and as for the welcoming reception, he wasn't much interested.

However, what Lin Ming also knew, was that this was his parents' fondest dream and hope that he would obtain glory. For parents, who didn't want their children to enjoy the world and return home with riches and honor?

Moreover, his parents had a very strong sense of tradition, and forever hoped to bring honor to their ancestors and provide an umbrella for their descendants. The honor of being the first place candidate in the Seven Profound Martial House was an honor that would give the Lin Family bragging rights for several generations. The total population of Sky Fortune Kingdom was between 70 to 80 million. To be the first place candidate in the Seven Profound Martial House was equal to being at the forefront of all these people. Even setting a memorial for this occasion would not be an exaggeration.

Aware of this, Lin Ming felt a deep sense of satisfaction. All children naturally wanted to make their parents happy.

Lin Ming smiled and said, "When I first came to the Seven Profound Martial House, I was unfamiliar with the people here and the place here. It's my luck to be able to meet my family's elder brother and sister. Elder Sister was especially kind. Please take care of me in the future."

"Haha! Young Cousin is too polite. If you have any difficulties in the future, just open your mouth and say so. Although my own power is limited and weak, the family will still be able to bring some resources into Sky Fortune City."

"Thank you."

The two boys exchanged Sound Transmitting Talisman contact information. After this, the classroom quieted down. A voice said, "The elder professor has arrived."

Lin Ming looked up and saw an old man wearing a white robe walk into the Martial Lecture Hall. He grasped a thick old tome in his hand as he headed on stage. The fluctuations of his true essence was weaker when compared to Muyi, he was probably at the Pulse Condensation Period.

In Green Mulberry City, Pulse Condensation Period martial artists were quite rare. But after entering the Seven Profound Marital House, he had seen Pulse Condensation Period experts everywhere. It seemed that all the instructors and professors were at least at the Pulse Condensation Period.

The old man placed his old tome on a long and narrow table and slowly said, "From today, I am responsible for lecturing all of you. This will include body techniques, sword techniques, attack skills, defensive skills, escape skills, and the most foundationary true essence and martial arts skills. If there are no further questions, we shall begin."

The old man had a very succinct opening, and he began to delve into the topics he was teaching. He spoke with much knowledge about simple movement abilities and was able to sum up many useful skills, such as how to conserve or restore strength, when to avoid attacks or how to evade. For instance, how to forcefully reverse the body when airborne, or counter attack when being pressed upon by an opponent.

These skills were not in skill manuals, but by utilizing them, a martial artist would greatly increase their combat prowess. This was the difference between a seasoned veteran and a newbie. Of course, one had to actually engage in combat in order to realize the true art and use of these skills.

The old man spoke about these subjects for one hour, tidied up his desk and said, "Class ends here today. All new students may stay and receive your true essence stone."

“True essence stone?” Lin Ming startled. He had heard some things about these true essence stones. They naturally contained true essence and had many uses such as activating magic arrays.

Lin Wu said, “Young Cousin, this true essence stone is a really good resource. It has true essence contained within, it can be used to speed up one’s cultivation, and is also very pure, so it is easy to refine.”

“Young Cousin, since you are the first place candidate, you can receive 10 true essence stones.” Lin Fengyuan also echoed, and in her voice was a twinge of envy.

“Oh? The true essence stone is that precious?”

“Mm. The truth is that the Sky Fortune Kingdom also had a lode of true essence stones to mine, but they have to turn them in to the Seven Profound Valleys. The large sects have many true essence stones, but only some of them trickle down into the general populace. There are very few true essence stones that you can buy in the Sky Fortune Kingdom.”

In the entire surrounding area of hundreds of thousands of miles, the Royal Family had to submit to the authority of the Seven Profound Valleys. Strength decided all; this was nothing surprising.

“Young Cousin hurry and go. Later you will be able to rank on the Ranking Stone and might even receive more every month.”

Ling Ming walked up and received his 10 true essence stones. The true essence stones looked as if they had many impurities like natural quartz, and were not transparent at all.

A true essence stone weighed about one tael after it passed through the cutting process. Lin Ming sent his soul force inside, and really did feel the pure true essence residing within.

After Lin Ming, Wang Yanfeng also received his true essence stones, but he only received five of them. The following Earth Hall disciples only received two. As for the Human Hall, they received one. Moreover they were told that if they were unable to enter the Earth Hall in the future, they would not receive any more.

Lin Wu said, “Young Cousin, we rarely meet, would you like to drink a cup or two with me?”

Lin Ming slightly hesitated, and then apologized, “I am very sorry but I want to increase my strength as much as possible before the Ranking Stone test begins. As for drinking, I will invite Elder Brother and Sister another day.” The inscription technique practice required a massive amount of time. In addition to martial arts practice and attending class, Lin Ming had several things he had to do at the same time, and also needed to practise his breath control during his sleep time.

“Haha, Young Cousin is truly diligent in his cultivation. No wonder you have such high achievements at such a young age. Good, then we will gather again another day.”

Lin Ming bid farewell to Lin Wu and his sister. After the lecture, he left the Martial Lecture Hall alone and came to a fork in the road. There he discovered Wang Yanfeng and two similar looking men standing together. Wang Yanfeng was frowning; obviously his relationship with these two was not good at all.

“Hey! Isn’t this the amazing genius of the Wang Family, Wang Yanfeng? Haha, alas, Yuelu City’s elite tournament first place winner, master of the ‘Nine Paths of Truth’. Hehe, I thought you were so amazing and great, but you lost to some little boy at the Second Stage of Body Transformation. It really makes us Yuelu City youths lose face.” A young man cynically said. His age looked to be 18-19, and he was at the peak of the Third Stage of Body Transformation. He held a longsword in his arms and had a very haughty appearance.

Wang Yanfeng’s complexion immediately sank, “Liu Mingxian, you are just a cheap child of the Liu Family, and yet you also blabber on in front of me! You took so many treasured medicines and yet you couldn’t even place in the top ten of the entrance exam! Even a pig that was raised by your Liu Family would do better compared to you!”

"Hey! You say that I am a pig? Very good, then how about we compare? Let's see if you can step on me beneath your foot." Liu Mingxiang said with disdain, a playful smile hung on his face.

Wang Yanfeng stopped speaking and clenched his first. The other was a man who was at the peak of the Third Stage of Body Training, and had also been studying at the Seven Profound Martial House for two years. Compared to him, he would most likely not be able to defeat him.

However, this was how things stood. Wang Yanfeng did not want to retreat, he knew that if he did not accept this challenge today, then this Liu Mingxiang would spread this news in all directions and say he was as timid as a mouse. "The 'Nine Paths of Truth' is famous everywhere. Liu Mingxiang, you really do not know what is what! Your talent is inferior to me so you want to use your age to beat me? An 18 year old against a 15 year old? Good! Very good!"

"What a joke and a half! If you were killed on the battlefield would you also complain that the man who killed you was older? Cut the chit-chat, do you dare have the guts to challenge me?"

"Why would I not dare!" Wang Yanfeng coldly snorted. Although he knew that this guy was stirring up trouble and goading him, with his arrogant disposition he still accepted the challenge. If he retreated then his spirit would be defeated, and it would break his heart of martial arts.

"Good. Then we will duel in accordance with the rules of the Martial House. Since we're battling, then we also must make a little gambling stake. You had just received 5 true essence stones? Use them as your gambling stake."

Gambling stake!

Wang Yanfeng clenched his teeth. He was not dumb, he immediately understood that Liu Mingxiang came today to intentionally provoke him for these 5 true essence stones!

This was a good premeditated plan!

But even if he knew this, Wang Yanfeng could not retreat. He could afford to lose 5 essence stones, and he might not even lose!

“If you want to bet, then let’s bet!”

Lin Ming watched the scene from a distance and only shook his head. The other party had obviously grasped the flaw in Wang Yanfeng’s character, and had provoked him with his loud mouth. If Wang Yanfeng had been timid and retreated, then his loss would be even greater. If he avoided the fight and swallowed the insult, this would be a dark day for his martial arts cultivation!

Martial arts cultivation involved not only Body Transformation, but also cultivation of the mind. Cultivating the mind involved being true to you nature and living life freely. If one only kept bearing insult after insult, then their cultivation would halt.

Perhaps Wang Yanfeng would lose. These two were experts at the peak of the Third Stage of Body Transformation and had practised at the Seven Profound Martial House for a long period of time. Their battle prowess might be comparable to a martial artist at the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation. With this strength, even Lin Ming did not have a shred of confidence.

“This Liu Mingxiang is just too rampant and arrogant, but he is indeed an expert. And that youth standing near him is even more unfathomable. Just with these two random people, I do not have any chance of winning. The Seven Profound Martial House is really a crouching tiger, hidden dragon.” Lin Ming thought that this was also normal. Everyone that entered the Seven Profound Martial House was a talent. They were geniuses who were older, and also had enjoyed the many resources of the Martial House. They practiced for such a long time, if they weren’t able to defeat a new disciple, then they had truly wasted their efforts.

This matter was irrelevant to Lin Ming. He turned around to leave and had just taken several steps when a voice sounded from behind. He stopped in his tracks. “Yo! Isn’t that the first place examination candidate? Lin Ming! What a fortunate meeting, a truly fortunate meeting.”

Although the words were pleasant, the provocative meaning behind them was too obvious. Lin Ming frowned. He turned his head to see that the man who spoke was the other youth who had stood beside Liu Mingxiang and Wang Yanfeng, the young man with immeasurably deep strength.

Chapter 54 – Unfair Gambling Bets

Chapter 54 – Unfair Gambling Bets

…

…

…

Although the words were pleasant, the provocative meaning behind them was too obvious. Lin Ming frowned. He turned his head to see that the man who spoke was the other youth who had stood beside Liu Mingxiang and Wang Yanfeng, the young man with immeasurably deep strength.

This youth wore an entirely blue outfit, and in his hand he carried a long and narrow saber as wide as three fingers. It had a very short handle and did not have a hand guard, the blade was directly attached to the hilt.

Among martial artists, the number that used sabers was very few compared to the number who used swords. Lin Ming paid attention to this; with such a short hilt it would not be easy to wield. The saber didn't have a handle guard so their hand would be easily injured by the opponent. But, there was a benefit to this. The saber could display the fastest speed possible; it paid the price of sacrificing defense to pursue the limit of rapid attacks. To even dare to do such a rash thing, it proved that this youth's saber was extremely strong.

Perhaps this youth might even be fiercer than Liu Mingxiang. Lin Ming stayed on alert, because even if someone was arrogant, he would never look down on them. He hesitated for a second and then asked, "What do you want?"

“Nothing. I just wanted to experience the majesty and grandeur of the first place candidate. Have I misread, is your cultivation only at the Second Stage of Body Transformation?”

“Gee, this year’s candidates are just so bad. A Second Stage Body Transformation boy could actually achieve first place. What rank of talent are you?” Liu Mingxiang echoed. The truth was that he had already inquired earlier and knew everything there was to know. Lin Ming was only a medium third-grade talent. This talent may have been decent outside of the Seven Profound Martial House, but in the Seven Profound Martial House, it was the lowest of the low. He had intentionally asked this to provoke Lin Ming.

“What does my rank of talent have to do with you?” Lin Ming coolly replied. He knew that these two boys were just coveting his true essence stones and wanted to provoke his anger into making a gambling match with him as they had with Wang Yanfeng.

In Sky Fortune Kingdom, the authorities would not involve themselves in the scuffles between martial artists, because even if they had the mind to, there was no way they were capable of doing so. Therefore, the solution was a gambling on the martial arts duels. As long as both parties mutually consented, and agreed upon the conditions and prizes of victory, then the loser could not pursue afterwards.

This sort of proposition was very popular; even the Seven Profound Martial House was no exception.

“Hehe, of course it has nothing to do with me, I had only heard some rumors that brother Lin is a medium third-grade. I just felt this to be a bit strange. Although all the candidates of the recent entrance examination are trash, how could a useless, good-for-nothing piece of sh*t like you achieve first place?”

It may have been some hypocritical double talk at first, but these words directly had no consideration for face. In the view of these two youths, Lin Ming was just a small boy, to step on him, they did not even need to bother faking anything.

Lin Ming gave a frosty look and quipped, “You do this sort of thing in the Seven Profound Martial House? You depend on conniving and stealing a new disciple’s true essence stones to barely maintain your own pathetic and feeble existence? To do such shameful things, it’s best that you leave this place early, you are only losing face for your family.”

“Little boy! You’re courting death!” The youth’s complexion sank, “You are just some third-grade talent trash! Dog sh*t like you only managed to luck your way into the Seven Profound Martial House by eating some rare material! In my eyes, you are even less than dog shit!”

Listening to such vicious words, Lin Ming knit his brows, and felt his heart move to anger, “I originally didn’t want to meddle too much, but this is fine. Yes, this is fine. Since you really want to stir things up and make a gambling match with me, then if that’s the case...”

“Lin Ming!” At that moment a voice sounded from behind Lin Ming’s back. “Don’t fall into their trap!”

Lin Ming turned his head around to look and saw Lin Wu and Lin Fengyuan jogging towards him. The man who had spoken up and interrupted him was Lin Wu; his complexion wasn’t too good. These two were tricky. Concerning their family, Liu Mingxiang’s Liu Family was not inferior to their Lin Family. But when discussing strength, he was simply not a match for these two.

“Lin Wu, if you’re smart then you’ll immediately get the hell out of the way.” The youth with a saber coldly snorted and his entire body exuded a faint murderous intent. The boy’s saber was affected by this murderous aura and began to faintly ring.

This young man had already become one with his saber!

Lin Ming remembered, if a martial artist was able to become one with their weapon and communicate with it, that weapon would be able to sense its master’s intentions and true essence, and thus have such a response. This kind of boundary needed an extremely high level of talent and perception, as well as carefully cultivating a treasure. This was not something Wang Yanfeng could compare with. Although Wang Yanfeng also had a rare treasure, but when had usually used it, Lin Ming was able to see that it was full of flaws, and thus had been able to break through his martial skill with only a first.

Moreover this person had such a thick murderous intent; he had probably killed many people before. Such a person would not be easy to handle.

Lin Ming frowned. Whether this guy or Lin Mingxiang, they both appeared to be arrogant idiots with no brains, but they were actually hidden masters. He was definitely not their match.

Lin Wu was forced back by this strong murdering intent, and his complexion became increasingly ugly. Although he was also in the Earth Hall, his ranking was far behind these two, and was simply not their opponent. To make conflict with these two youths was absolutely unwise. He pulled Lin Ming sleeve and whispered to him, “Lin Ming, let’s go.”

“You want to leave? Haha! Lin Wu, you truly are worthy of the title cowardly turtle! I thought it was strange, how could a weak little coward like you infiltrate the Seven Profound Martial Hall’s Earth Hall! Is Green Mulberry City’s Lin Family a family that specially cultivates turtles? Especially cowardly turtles?”

Lin Wu lost his temper facing this unscrupulous ridicule, especially since it involved his family. He just couldn’t bear this! He grasped his sword and stepped forward, but was stopped by Lin Ming. Lin Ming could see that Lin Wu was not this person’s match.

“Don’t be so impulsive. They came for me. A gambling fight isn’t too bad.”

“Haha! How straightforward and refreshing! This elder brother may as well be the little brother, heh heh. List the time and place you want.” The youth said as he laughed with an arrogant smile.

Lin Wu urgently said, “Lin Ming, don’t be tricked by him. The guy came for your true essence stones. His name Zhang Cang, he is at the peak of Viscera Training! And he is also half a step into the Altering Muscle stage. This person’s blade work is astonishing. His

Ranking Stone place is 109, do you even know what sort of existence the 109th place is? A new disciple at Seven Profound Martial House who can enter above 180 is already rare. Even Ling Sen, Ta Ku, Zhang Guanyu and other characters like them that used to be first place candidates could not go above 130!"

Ling Sen? Ling Ming naturally knew this person. He was the elder senior apprentice of the Heavenly Abode. If he didn't factor in the several core disciples, then Ling Sen would be first place among everyone in the Seven Profound Martial Hall! His battle prowess might even surpass Qin Xingxuan!

Although he hadn't heard of Ta Ku and Zhang Guanyu, he guessed they were the same ruthlessly strong type like Ling Sen, and probably weren't too far off from him.

Lin Wu continued, "This Zhang Cang is the top character among those in the Earth Hall. After some time he will probably enter the Heavenly Abode too, there is just no hope of winning for you."

Lin Ming replied, "Elder brother, I know."

Lin Wu anxiously said, "Why are you so obstinate! You don't know where things stand! I know that you are strong and can fight someone at the peak of the Third Stage of Body Transformation, but which one of the disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House's Earth Hall is not a genius? You can fight others above your rank, and others cannot? With Zhang Cang's strength, outside of the Seven Profound Martial House not even martial artists at the peak of the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation are necessarily his match!"

What Lin Wu said was not wrong. The Seven Profound Martial House was where all the talented geniuses converged and gathered together. Daily battles among them were not uncommon. Although Lin Ming's current physical strength was comparable to someone at the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation and the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' was potent, it still was too difficult for Lin Ming to fight a fellow genius who was two stages above him.

As Lin Wu spoke, Zhang Cang crossed his arms over his chest as he watched with a grinning smile.

“Are you done discussing? Are you going to be a little turtle or are you going to bet with me?”

Lin Ming opened his mouth and said, “You don’t need provoke me, there is no significance in stirring things up. I only want to know, what sort of gambling stakes will be involved?”

Chapter 55 – Fight

Chapter 55 – Fight

…

…

…

Lin Ming opened his mouth and said, “You don’t need provoke me, there is no significance in stirring things up. I only want to know, what sort of gambling stakes will be involved?”

“Young Cousin, don’t promise him anything!” Ling Fengyuan also spoke up, but facing Zhang Cang, her words seemed a little weak.

Lin Ming waved a hand; he knew how things stood.

“Obviously we will be betting true essence stones. If you lose, then you hand those 10 true essence stones you received to me. If I lose, heh heh, then I pay you 20!”

“Good. You said just now that I could choose the time and place. For place, I choose the contest field. For time, we will duel each other one month from now, at a quarter to noon.”

“One month?” Zhang Cang asked with a stunned expression. He didn’t expect Lin Ming to decide on such a time. No matter how much time he had, it was useless. With his rotten third-grade talent, the longer the time, the more the gap between the two would grow.

“Good. If you want one month then it will be one month. I’ll let you live a bit longer.” Zhang Cang said as he looked at Lin Ming with some hesitation. He was also a young man and he was impatient to grab the true essence stones for himself.

Zhang Cang and Liu Mingxiang walked away with self-satisfied smiles, leaving Lin Wu behind to sadly shake his head and sigh, “Young Cousin, you were a bit too impulsive. New disciples that come to the Seven Profound Martial House are always full of self-confidence, but all these older disciples are also geniuses, each and every one of them. They have also studied at the Seven Profound Martial House for a long time, especially this Zhang Cang... Yeah, I don’t want to say, but these ten true essence stones bought a valuable lesson.”

Lin Ming laughed happily, and then said with a bright smile, “Thank you Brother Wu, you raised your head and defended me today. But I could not avoid this fight; otherwise it would weaken my will and disturb my heart, and distract my future cultivation.”

Ling Ming had decided to call this elder cousin of his from the family Brother Wu, as he had recognized Lin Wu. Lin Wu was a good person; when hard times had come, he had raised his head and defended him with courage.

As Lin Ming said this, he also noted Wang Yanfeng standing nearby and looking at him.

Seeing that Lin Ming looked back at him, Wang Yanfeng said, “I wish you good luck.”

“Haha, you too.” Because their situation was identical and they faced a common enemy, the enmity and tension in their relationship had relaxed.

“I won’t lose. But even if I lose, I will win in the future! No matter if it’s Liu Mingxiang or you!” Wang Yanfeng said these words then turned around and strode away. Lin Wu had also heard Wang Yanfeng’s words. He realized that Wang Yanfeng also knew that it was almost impossible for him to defeat Liu Mingxiang.

But this was Wang Yanfeng’s path of martial arts. Although he might be defeated, he would not let his heart be lost. It was not in his nature to run away.

“This Wang Yanfeng has a heart which does not concede, and his talent is also good. Later he might make something of himself. But if he wanted to enter a sect, he is still lacking...” The Skill Spill continent was vast and boundless with countless living creatures. If one wished to pursue the pinnacle of martial arts, it was beyond all difficulty!

At this time Lin Ming suddenly remembered something, “Right, Brother Wu, did this sort of gambling fight happen often in the past? This sort of matter, it seems that the new disciple would generally be the one to lose? Does the Martial House not have some sort of regulating system?”

Lin Wu said, “No, the Martial House rules only disallow intentionally disabling the opponent, or killing them. As for all other matters, they let them pass. Therefore in the Seven Profound Martial House there are often outstanding and fierce battles that the Seven Profound Martial House is glad to see happen. However, someone bullying new disciples and taking their true essence stones is pretty rare. It causes a very bad reputation and lowers their prestige. Those that care about their reputation and their family’s will not do these things.”

“Oh? Is that Liu Mingxiang and Zhang Cang’s character that deplorable?”

“Liu Mingxiang has always been a rascal, but Zhang Cang… in truth he is a ruthless man. He stayed in the army for a period and killed many people. It is hard to determine his personality, but he acts recklessly. Betting with you isn’t too strange.”

“Right… does this Zhang Cang know Zhu Yan?”

“Zhu Yan? As far as I know, Zhu Yan and Zhang Cang are allies. They had joined the army together. Why do you ask this?”

Lin Wu did not know the relationship between Zhu Yan and Lin Ming, so he asked.

“It’s nothing…” Lin Ming lightly said. He did not want to discuss these personal matters with Lin Wu.

Lin Ming had thought it was strange that Zhu Yan hadn’t acted yet. It seems that this Zhang Cang was one of Zhu Yan’s men. There was no way Zhu Yan would let him peacefully enter the Seven Profound Martial House. Zhu Yan had wanted to stop him from entering, but the Seven Profound Martial House was under the governance of the Seven Profound Valleys, whose territory dominated hundreds of thousands of miles and even the many kingdoms. The Seven Profound Martial House was a supreme existence within the Sky Fortune Kingdom, and even the Royal Family would not dare to move a single hair of theirs.

So long as they were within the Seven Profound Martial House, even if Zhu Yan were a Houtian expert, he would not dare to commit murder in this crouching tiger, hidden dragon Seven Profound Martial House. Therefore the only action he could take was through the rules and regulations of the Seven Profound Martial House and look for someone to make a gambling fight with him. Then, under the guise of this, that person would intentionally cause a severe wound and ruin his heart of martial arts.

This person's strength naturally had to be higher by a mile. Zhang Cang of the Earth Hall was the most suitable candidate to crush him.

However, Lin Ming decided he would crush him instead!

Lin Ming took a deep breath and slowly clenched his fists. He hadn't thought that Zhu Yan had already been in the army. No wonder he could enter the Heavenly Abode with the strength of the peak of the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation. Without a doubt, his strength was greater than that of Zhang Cang's!

Good! Only like this would it be interesting.

Lin Wu noticed a slight change in Lin Ming's look, and said, "Brother, do you have some problem with Zhu Yan?"

Lin Ming nodded, "I do."

"This is..." Lin Wu listened with some worry, "Brother, I know somewhat of the reputation of those here. This Zhu Yan was at the peak of the Third Stage of Body Transformation when he defeated a 72nd ranked Heavenly Abode disciple to enter the Heavenly Abode. But that disciple's strength was already at the early Fourth Stage of Body Transformation!"

Lin Ming was slightly stunned. The Fourth Stage martial artists of the Seven Profound Martial House could not be compared with those on the outside. Their strength was definitely number one, but yet they were still defeated by Zhu Yan at the peak of the Third Stage of Body Transformation. Obviously Zhu Yan was powerful.

“The Heavenly Abode has always had 72 students. Generally speaking, those that have strength at the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation have the qualifications to enter. The condition is only that they defeat any disciple of the Heavenly Abode, and afterwards they can enter, and that disciple is eliminated. Which one of the Heavenly Abode’s students are not peerless geniuses? To be able to defeat them with just the strength of the Third Stage of Body Transformation, this Zhu Yan is a dragon in human form, and is truly unimaginable. Brother, if you oppose him…”

Lin Ming smiled and said, “Thank you for the advice, Brother Wu.”

Lin Wu said, “Mm. You should end this conflict as soon as possible. This Zhu Yan also has a high status in the Zhu Family. Although he is not the eldest son of the first wife, his strength is too outstanding and he might be able to inherit the headship of the household. You may not know, but the current head’s daughter married into the Royal Palace. A real man can adapt to a situation. For a martial artist, enduring a bit of shame is also very important. When it is necessary, apologizing a bit would not lose you any face. Extending an olive branch can also be a happy resolution.”

“Mm. I understand.” Lin Ming smiled as he listened. He certainly knew Zhu Yan’s status, otherwise he wouldn’t have the ability to get Lan Yunyue to join the Seven Profound Martial House. That sort of matter could only be accomplished by his aunt.

“Well, if there is nothing else, then I will leave first.” Though they had only known each other for a short period of time, Lin Ming had a good grasp of Lin Wu’s personality. He was overcautious and a bit indecisive, and considered every angle in making a decision. This sort of disposition was actually not good to cultivate martial arts, as it would weaken the spirit and make it difficult to have great future achievements. It was no wonder he had such a horrible nickname.

However Lin Wu had a kind and good character; he was worth knowing.

“I have to say one last time Brother, you be careful. Don’t fret about those ten true essence stones; our Lin Family is not short on money. Although there are only a few of them, they can also be bought. Brother, the family will have high hopes and expectations of you in the future and will receive you well, losing a few true essence stones is nothing.”

Lin Ming laughed in his heart, and nodded with a smile, “I know.”

Chapter 56 – Large Success of the True Essence Formula's First Layer

Chapter 56 – Large Success of the True Essence Formula's First Layer

Chapter title is a minor spoiler so I've made it white, highlight it if you want to read it now, or wait and read it at the bottom of the chapter.

…

…

…

After he bid farewell to Lin Wu, Lin Ming returned to his residence. It felt like he was running out of time these days, as if he were in a constant race against the clock.

That Lin Ming agreed to the gambling match was not on the spur of a moment, in his heart he had already roughly calculated a plan. Lin Wu had said that the likes of Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and Zhang Guanyu, who were all top-tier talents, were unable to pass the 130th rank the first time they had entered the Ten Thousand Killing Array. Zhang Cang was placed 109; it seemed the disparity between them was truly enormous. Lin Ming was not arrogant; he believed that he could achieve a result that was more formidable than when Ling Sen had first entered.

Therefore he calculated that he needed one month.

Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and Zhang Guanyu had reached about rank 130 when they first entered the Martial House, thus, he might not even need one month!

To complete the medicinal inscription symbol would take at least half a month. The other half would be used to slowly absorb the efficacy of the pills and consolidate his strength. The

Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill were two precious pills that couldn't be purchased with money. In addition to the increased pill potency provided by the medicinal inscription symbol, then it would absolutely be enough for Lin Ming to break through into the Third Stage of Body Transformation and even help him consolidate his cultivation. Once that happened, Lin Ming and Zhang Cang's cultivation difference would be only a single stage!

If he relied on the Realm of the Gods' top-tier skill manual 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians', and was still unable to cross the half boundary to the Third Stage and be unable to at least place in the top 100 of the ranking stone, then he would not feel any injustice at losing the gambling match! If so, then he would have to thoroughly introspect.

Thinking like this, Lin Ming started to practice his medicinal inscription symbol again. In terms of inscription skill, although he had obtained the memories of the elder's soul fragment, he was a junior who was still very shallow in skill. It was too early to talk about any innovation; the only thing he could do was to unceasingly practice the techniques, and allow the body movements to soak into his body like a fish in water.

Today, after Lin Ming practiced revolving his true essence as usual, he began to use materials to practice with.

The start was doomed to failure, so he had chosen the least valuable material.

Squeezing out the juice from a Jade Blue Flower, Lin Ming concentrated and used his soul force to move the juice in midair. He took a deep breath, calmed down and let his mind relax.

"Let's start! A new formula!"

Lin Ming silently hyped himself up and began to move his right hand in a succession of dim, illusory flashes that shone with a rainbow of light.

In comparison to the object inscription symbol, tracing the medicinal inscription symbol was several times more complex! Initially Lin Ming had forcefully drawn up the object inscription symbol with the true essence's strength at the First Stage of Body Transformation. Back then his true essence had been stretched to the limit, but now that he had arrived with great difficulty at the Second Stage of Body Transformation, his true essence had increased and had congealed and thickened. But now in the blink of an eye, he had already used more true essence that it took to draw up an object inscription symbol, and his true essence was still stretched!

Luckily in this situation, Lin Ming did not feel it was too burdensome, instead he welcomingly endured it. Only by pushing oneself to the limit would they be able to progress.

An hour passed by, and Lin Ming's forehead was seeped in small beads of sweat. Each rune that had to be drawn was much difficult than the object inscription rune by several times. He clenched his teeth and persisted through the hardship. Even with the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' supporting him, Ling Ming could not withstand such consumption of true essence and was approaching his limit yet he hadn't even completed half of the 'Lower Spirit Cure Symbol'.

Lin Ming had already encountered this type of situation when he was trying to create the object inscription symbol. It was unrealistic to attempt to increase the amount of true essence in his body in such a short period of time; the only possible way was to reduce the rate of failure, increase his skill at the techniques, and save as much true essence as he could.

He could not support it any longer…

"Peng!"

There was the sound of an explosion, and the numerous inscription symbols in front of Lin Ming loudly detonated like brilliant fireworks. After these fireworks finished flashing, a deep darkness followed.

"Mm? It's evening…" Lin Ming let out a breath and sat up on his bed. The room was very quiet and peaceful, and Lin Ming could hear the sound of his breathing and heartbeat.

He was too tired! Lin Ming sprawled backwards on his bed, too lazy to even move his fingers. The past few months he had practiced inscription techniques, he had constantly taxed his soul force to the limit, yet he had never felt as drained as he did now; he didn't even have the strength to revolve the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' within him. If his true essence was like water in a lake, then this medicinal inscription symbol was a terribly hot and dry desert, where even the last drop of his true essence was sucked clean.

"I want to sleep...."

Although his if he practiced at this time he would have good results, his soul force and true essence consumption was too serious, and it brought a weary tired feeling that made him unable to focus his spirit.

Mm? Right! The true essence stones!

He had unexpectedly forgotten about them. With these, if he used these true essence stones to supplement his true essence, would it not be perfect?

Lin Ming struggled to sit up. He had obtained 10 true essence stones when he had attended lecture. He grabbed one from his bag and began to greedily absorb the pure true essence within.

Rich true essence continuously flowed in a steady stream through the pores in his hand. Because Lin Ming had not yet achieved the Pulse Condensation Period, the tendons of his entire body were blocking his acupuncture points and meridians, and the true essence could only enter along his pores and slowly flow from there.

If comparing the flow of true essence within him, then it was like a muddy swamp. The meridians of the body where energy circulated where just too spacious, it simply was incomparable. That was why a martial artist's breakthrough into the Pulse Condensation Period was such a significant leap.

Along with the true essence endlessly merging into his body, Lin Ming's body was like a dry basin that was being poured into by a bubbling spring. It was an indescribably refreshing and comfortable feeling, and his fatigue completely disappeared. Lin Ming began to revolve the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ and guide the flow of true essence slowly into his body.

Although the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ was a top tier quality true essence method, in this situation, the meridians had not yet opened so the circulation speed of true essence was limited.

As the true essence revolved again and again, it began to accumulate. The circulation in his body began to rapidly quicken; like this, half an hour passed. Lin Ming circulation speed of true essence within his body began to accelerate, until it finally passed the top speed in the past.

“Mmm? How could this be?”

Lin Ming was surprised, and he continued to revolve the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’, and the circulation speed continued accelerating.

“Pah!” At the moment with a small sound, the true essence stone Lin Ming’s hand cracked open.

“Mm? The true essence stone was used up already?”

Lin Ming was not stingy. He placed down the broken stone and grabbed another true essence stone, and continued to revolve the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’. The massive influx of fresh, pure true essence merged into his body. Lin Ming’s true essence circulation speed climbed up even more than before, and the acceleration showed no signs of slowing down.

Half a month ago, if Lin Ming’s ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ true essence revolution speed was like a baby toddler crawling around, then at present, his true essence’s speed was like a teenager running at full blast!

This…This is….

This was the Large Success of the First Layer of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’!

Lin Ming took a deep breath, and his face revealed an expression wild with joy and ecstacy. He had obsessed over the First Layer of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ for three months, and had finally broken through!

Lin Ming immediately shoved open his door and launched himself outside. He rushed towards the Seven Profound Martial House’s strength measuring room. When he had received the jade slip during school admission, it had recorded an introduction about the strength measuring room. Any Seven Profound Martial House disciple could use it the stone tablets inside to measure their strength. After he had reached Large Success of the First Layer of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’, Lin Ming was itching to find out how much stronger he had become.

Chapter 57 – Ranking War

Chapter 57 – Ranking War

…

…

…

It was already late into the night; the disciples of the Martial House were either cultivating in their own rooms or had gone to sleep, there were only a few stragglers still on the streets. Lin Ming walked as if he was half-flying and quickly arrived at the strength measuring room.

There was no one at the strength measuring room; only an old man who guarded the door with a small flickering lamp near him. He lay exhausted on a flimsy chair, looking a little drowsy.

Lin Ming greeted him, then moved past him into the room. Inside were a row of stone pillars that were used to measure strength. They were all completely unoccupied; a normal person wouldn't idle around here so late at night to test their own strength.

Lin Ming randomly chose a stone pillar and firmly stood in front of it. He shut his eyes, relaxed his body, and let the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' revolve to the extreme. Lin Ming suddenly punched, and his first looked like a shooting star as it fell on the stone pillar.

"Peng!"

The stone pillar wildly shook, and even the ground under Lin Ming's feet trembled a little. The light beam did not stop as it leapt up several times, 2700, 2800, 2900, 3000….

3200!

“3200 jins!” Lin Ming breathed with shining eyes.

500 jins of strength! The ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’, from the small success to large success, had increased his strength by 500 jins! To an ordinary martial artist, 500 jins was often the gap between stages!

But the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ was in truth only the part of the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ which revolved true essence, it was not everything!

The ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ was truly worthy of being the Realm of the Gods’ top tier Body Transformation skill manual. He remembered, that of those in the sects that practiced the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ Body Transformation, there were disciple janitors who swept the floor of the entrance and little children that played near the fireplaces who had several ten thousand jins of strength. If they had reached the Large Success stage of the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’, they could even rely on their strength to shatter mountain ranges, part the seas, and shatter the skies.

“Reaching Large Success of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’s’ first layer was only his first step, there were also six more layers, each more difficult than the last! Beyond the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ and continuing the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’, there was still the Eight Gates of Hidden Celestial Stems and the Palace of Nine Stars. At this point, I’m not even qualified to be a floor sweeping disciple of these ancient sects”

Realizing this, Lin Ming’s excitement dissipated by a bit. The road that he wanted to walk on was truly long.

That night, because Lin Ming had just broken through the skill manual, his true essence was smooth and he was not sleepy, so he continued his cultivation.

After Lin Ming consolidated the boundary of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’, he spent the rest of the time practicing his inscription technique. Because of the Large Success of the first layer of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’, Lin Ming’s efficiency of drawing the medicinal inscription was greatly enhanced, and he was able to persist until about 80% of the entire plan.

If he was able to continue like this, then with another seven or eight days, Lin Ming would be able to complete the ‘Lower Spirit Cure Symbol’.

The crazy cultivation caused many true essence stones to be consumed. Just that night, Lin Ming had already used up three true essence stones. Although he had agreed with Zhang Cang to use 10 true essence stones as the gambling stake, from the start Lin Ming had never thought he would lose, so there was no way that he would be afraid of using them.

As he looked at the three split stones that had long since lost their true essence luster, Lin Ming touched his nose. This usage was just too fast, but a month later, someone would be kind enough to give him 20 more. If he knew earlier that he would use these true essences stones so quickly, he would have thought a month was too long. Half a month would have been just about right.

Lin Ming greedily smacked his lips. If these thoughts were known by Zhang Cang, there was no way of telling what Zhang Cang would make of it.

It was the morning of the second day and Lin Ming woke up early to attend lecture as usual. He listened to the elder speak on the on the fundamentals. But today he also met an old acquaintance; one who he hadn’t wanted to meet in person – Lan Yunyue. Within the Martial House, there were altogether 600 to 700 disciples; meeting her sooner or later was normal.

Lin Ming didn’t pay any attention to this as he listened to the elder talk about today’s weapon of discussion – ‘the spear’, its skills and its usage.

Lin Ming listened with rapt attention. At the end of the lecture, after the elder had left, Lin Ming was still immersed in his thoughts; the elder had given him many inspirations.

As he finally snapped back from his trance, the rest of the disciples had already left the Martial Lecture Hall, except Lan Yunyue. She sat in the same seat like she was lost in thought.

Lin Ming began packing up his things and readying to leave, but at this time Lan Yunyue suddenly whispered, “Lin Ming, can you wait for a second?”

Lin Ming’s hand movements slowed, he asked, “Can I help you?”

Although the tone was polite, there was a hint of the taste of alienation within Lin Ming’s words, causing Lan Yunyue to lightly sigh. She said, “Congratulations on attaining the first place candidate spot.”

“Thanks.”

“…” After Lan Yunyue finished speaking, there was a long silence, and the atmosphere between the two began to grow a bit awkward.

“I… I heard that in one month you will have a fighting match with Zhang Cang?”

Lin Ming’s eyes twitched. He said, “The news spread that fast? Well, yes, I really did make a bet with Zhang Cang.” News of the new first place disciple and the old disciple gambling was sure to spread like wildfire. In addition, Zhang Cang and Liu Mingxiang had deliberately publicized it as much as possible.

Lan Yunyue bit her lip, hesitated, then quietly whispered, “Zhang Cang is Zhu Yan’s former comrade…”

Lin Ming was shocked; Lan Yunyue was more sensitive and thoughtful about these matters than he had thought. She had already correctly guessed that this matter was driven by Zhu Yan.

“I know.” Lin Ming faintly responded.

“Then you…” Lan Yanyue hadn’t known how she should open her mouth to say it, but today she had wanted to urge Lin Ming not to take on the gambling match. The words were floating at the tip of her tongue, but yet she feared that Lin Ming would turn a deaf ear to her pleas.

“I know that you aren’t willing to listen to me, but… I have already been in the Seven Profound Martial House for half a year, and have seen many of the gambling matches between the new and old disciples. The new disciples almost never win against the old disciples. Although you are the new first place candidate, Zhang Cang is also known as a fierce character within the Earth Hall. And because of Zhu Yan, his hand will be cruel.”

Lin Ming smiled, “You said that I may not be willing to listen, do you mean that you do not want me to go to the fighting match? Since I already agreed on the bet, it is impossible for me to now keep this appointment, otherwise I would have already ran away before the battle had begun, and this would go against my martial path.”

“But… alright…” Lan Yunyue sighed. She knew that once Lin Ming had made up his mind, it would be very difficult to change.

“Thank you for your advice. I’ll go first.” Lin Ming said as he picked up his things and left the Martial Lecture Hall.

Leaving Lan Yunyue alone, she silently kept sitting in her seat. At the moment she could not identify the taste in her heart. It was impossible to change Zhu Yan’s mind, and it was also impossible to change Lin Ming’s mind. They would one day fight, but to Lan Yunyue, regardless of Lin Ming’s strength of background, it was all inferior to Zhu Yan. The battle would happen, and there would only be a suffering party…

…

…

Time passed like running water, and it was already the fourth day since Lin Ming had arrived at the Seven Profound Martial House. That morning, Lin Ming had been sent a gathering notice, and he arrived early at the Martial House's martial stage.

The new disciples of the Earth Hall had all assembled together. After they had all arrived, a red-haired man carrying a fencing saber showed up at the contest field. This was Lin Ming's first class Earth Hall instructor, Hong Xi.

Hong Xi gave a feeling of a swift, brave, and fiercely overwhelming power. If he was in the army, he would have been an absolute general that bravely killed all enemies, trained his troops strictly, and followed like military's laws like a mountain.

After Hong Xi arrived at the contest field, he glanced and the crowd, and with a steady and powerful voice, said, "Today is the Ranking War! Everybody, come with me!"

"Ranking War?"

They had already known that once they entered the Seven Profound Martial House, sooner or later they would have to participate in the Ten Thousand Killing Array ranking war. It had finally begun!

Of the 20 new disciples of the Earth Hall, which one wasn't a genius of their generation? They had been looking forward to this for a long time; this was their chance to prove themselves. They all thought to attack the ranks of the Ranking Stone and attain more resources.

These geniuses weren't willing to accept an inferior status under others. These people, all of them were youthful kids full of smug ambition. They had been toiling their days away, waiting for this ranking war to amaze the world with a single, brilliant feat.

“Heh heh, it’s finally the time of the ranking war. I’m glad I showed up.” A youth carrying a long knife said. His chest had scars half a foot long and he was cracking his knuckles together, making ‘pop pop’ noises.

Chapter 58 – The Ten Thousand Killing Array

Chapter 58 – The Ten Thousand Killing Array

…

…

…

The youth had a long scar from an old knife wound on his face. His name was Wang Mang and he was 18 years old. He had joined the Sky Fortune Kingdom's army as a mercenary when he was 15, and had been sent to the frontier where he killed many people. On the border, he had been stabbed, and at the border, every day for three years he had lived on the edge of death – until he had finally reached the Third Stage of Body Transformation. He had rich combat experience and his strength was high. During the entrance examination, his fist strength at the Strength Trial had reached 2500 jins, and he had also reached the third floor of the Exquisite Pagoda.

"These juniors who got the top three spots really think they can surpass us with their strength. If it wasn't for the Exquisite Pagoda deciding an opponent's strength based on their skeletal age, I would have reached the fifth floor!" said a youth at Wang Mang's side. His name was Li Tie, and he was Wang Mang's ally. His had also tested his fist strength at 2500 jins and had reached the third floor of the Exquisite Pagoda.

Fist strength was not a domain in which mercenaries excelled. Fist strength mainly depended on one's own talent and cultivation based on the skill manual they followed. These mercenaries' skill manuals were very ordinary, and their strength could only be so strong. Their formidable aspects lay in their rich combat experience, skillful blade techniques, and sharp fighting instinct to surprise an enemy and kill them.

Therefore the dreadful nature of these two youths lay in actual combat, in particular life and death situations, and not tests.

"Wang Yanfeng, Lin Ming! These two kids are just little flowers that grew up in a greenhouse. Our fighting ability was learnt at the end of a knife's blade while fighting for our lives, how could they even be our match?"

In the Exquisite Pagoda, they were restricted by their skeletal age and were stopped at the third floor. But the ranking war did not have this limit, and all participants were treated impartially! This was their turn to shine!

…

The Ten Thousand Killing Array that the Seven Profound Martial House used for the ranking war was in a mountain valley not too far from the Exquisite Pagoda. The mountain valley was covered in sharp bamboo, and the thick, angry bamboo leaves gave off a chilly, withering aura.

In the center of these layers upon layers of bamboo was a clearing, in which there was an ashlar square a thousand steps wide. At the center of the square was a ten by ten foot wide altar. The altar was engraved with a variety of luminescent runes and symbols; this altar was the Ten Thousand Killing Array which was used in the ranking war.

By the time Lin Ming's group had arrived at the ashlar square, there were already many people gathered there.

Because the Ten Thousand Killing Array consumed a colossal number of true essence stones every time it was activated, it would only be opened once a month at an appointed time. At that time, all the martial artists of the Seven Profound Martial House could voluntarily participate in the ranking war, but they also needed to pay a fee of one true essence stone as collateral. If they their ranking was lower than 100 and they rose 5 spots, or if their ranking was higher than 100 and they rose three spots, they would be given back their true essence stone. Otherwise, the Seven Profound Martial House would keep it.

This sort of stipulation was so that disciples who hadn't made any significant progress would not hold the viewpoint that they should come regardless of whether they advanced or not. It would just cause too many disciples to want to be tested, and there wasn't enough time in a day to do that.

Hong Xi said, "New disciples who are participating for the first time in the ranking war do not need to pay a fee of a true essence stone. You only need to use the jade slip that you were issued to participate in the Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment. In the Ten Thousand Killing Array, your true body will not be injured. Once you die in the illusion, the assessment will end and your final ranking will be based upon the score you achieve from killing your enemies."

Hong Xi said this and then dismissed the troop. Lin Ming entered the ashlar square, as he wanted to take a look at this Ten Thousand Killing Array altar. At the same time, he discovered two people he knew; these two people were Liu Mingxiang and Zhang Cang, who had come to provoke him just a few days ago.

Meanwhile, Zhang Cang also discovered Lin Ming. He looked at him with a hint of disdain in his smile.

"Lin Ming? I had forgotten, but it seems that the Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment also allows new disciples to participate. Heh heh, I am highly anticipating your performance. I hope you can enter in the top 180, otherwise it's just too boring."

"You don't need to worry about my ranking. How come Zhu Yan didn't come?" Lin Ming pointed this out, as he knew that the last time Zhang Cang had provoked him was because Zhu Yan was pulling the strings behind the scenes.

However Zhang Cang did not mind; he just didn't care how Lin Ming came to know about this matter.

Zhang Cang sneered and said, “Zhu Yan is a disciple of the Heavenly Abode and his ranking is 39. With that ranking, every rank above it is difficult. How could he come every month? Do you even understand about these boundaries?”

Lin Ming replied, “I’m not interested in you or your crap. After the month ends, we will come to a resolution. At the appointed time, I hope you can still smile afterwards.”

“Haha, that was exactly what I was going to say to you.”

News of the gambling match between Zhang Cang and Lin Ming had been spread around, and many people knew about it. Some people took pleasure in others’ misfortune and wanted to watch the new first place disciple suffer a humiliating loss, but there were also some people who loathed Zhang Cang’s actions. Zhang Cang was bullying a new disciple after all, and the despicable action of trying to take his new true essence stones was despised by them.

At this time, Wang Yanfeng bumped into Liu Mingxiang. With Liu Mingxiang’s arrogant nature and Wang Yanfeng’s proud character, this naturally spelled disaster.

By now, the ashlar square’s altar suddenly shot out an abundance of light rays, and each rune and symbol on the altar began to blaze into existence one after the other; the ranking war had started.

In the Ten Thousand Killing Array’s altar were 12 positions, 12 people could participate in the assessment at the same time.

After the assessment, the Ten Thousand Killing Array would directly reflect the combined killing score onto the ranking magic array to get the final ranking.

Lin Mingxiang saw the Ten Thousand Killing Array revolve and light up and laughed, “Wang Yanfeng, there is no need to say anything puerile, why don’t we try our hand in the Ten Thousand Killing Array and see exactly who is inferior?”

“That’s just right for me!” Although Wang Yanfeng had received a setback by Lin Ming, his spirit hadn’t dropped. Although he knew that it wasn’t possible to win against Liu Mingxiang, he still dared to challenge him.

“The newborn calf does not fear the tiger. This Wang Yanfeng has some guts.”

“What use are guts, his age is too small, there is no way for him to win.”

“New disciples that could enter past 180 are already rare. 150 is a peerless talent, and 130 could even be said to be a miracle of heaven that is rarely seen even every decade. Ling Sen and Ta Ku were unable to. This Liu Mingxiang is rank 125, and he might even advance this time, what chance does Wang Yanfeng possibly have to win?”

Lin Ming listened to others’ comments. His eyes turned to the Ranking Stone and sure enough, Liu Mingxiang was rank 125. He was within the upper middle rankings of the Earth Hall.

In the entirety of the Earth Hall and the Heavenly Abode were 230 disciples. It was a very good result if a new disciple could reach at least rank 200. Wang Yanfeng could easily accomplish this, but he wanted reach a much higher and loftier goal, and Lin Ming was the same. These recent days, he had learnt about these approximate Ranking Stone requirements. If he wanted to rank above 180 he would need at least 100 points. If he wanted to rank above 150 he needed several hundred points. And killing someone that was equal to the peak of the Third Stage of Body Transformation only gave 50 points.

Twelve disciples stepped onto the altar and firmly stood there. The deacon who was responsible for activating and maintaining the array said, “There is no limit to the assessment duration. If you defeat an enemy at the Second Stage of Body Transformation you will gain 1 point. If you defeat an enemy at the peak of the Second Stage of Body Transformation you will gain 5 points. A Third Stage Body Transformation opponent will give you 10 points, and the peak of the Third Stage of Body Transformation will give you 50 points. A fourth Stage Body Transformation opponent will give you 100 points, and a peak Fourth Stage Body Transformation opponent will give you 500 points. A Fifth Stage Body

Transformation Opponent will give you 1000 points, and a peak Fifth Stage Body Transformation Opponent will give you 5000 points.”

“The highest level combatant you will face is at the Pulse Condensation Stage. If you defeat one, you will gain 10,000 points. After entering the magic array, you may use your thoughts to select a weapon to wield. Death results in failure and ejection from the array.”

“Now start!”

After the deacon’s voice faded, the altar flashed with a bright light. The 12 disciples inside the altar blurred a little as if they were covered by some invisible force.

In the altar, Wang Yang opened his eyes and arrived in a lifeless white world. In front of him was every weapon imaginable; heavy swords, soft swords, longswords, broadswords, short swords, katanas, spears, axes, hammers, and so forth.

“Come to me, long sword.” As soon as Wang Yanfeng thought this, a long sword appeared in his hand. In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, 90% of martial artists used a sword, and among those, 80% of them used a longsword. A longsword was a fantastic weapon; it was dynamic and relentless, swift and fierce.

The test finally started, and seven or eight vicious beasts appeared in front of Wang Yanfeng. There were also three or four martial artists whose strength ranged from the early Second Stage of Body Transformation to the early Third Stage of Body Transformation.

Wang Yanfeng coldly gazed at them. He had to defeat these opponents. When the real fight began, Wang Yanfeng found that the assessment was actually very simple. Every time he killed an enemy, a new one would immediately appear to replace it, except that this new opponent’s strength was more formidable!

Wang Yanfeng had only killed five or six, when martial artists at the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation began to appear.

When he accumulated 110 points, Wang Yanfeng gave a stuffy humph as he received a minor wound. When he gathered up to 180 points, a martial artist managed to pierce a sword into Wang Yanfeng's stomach. In that final moment, Wang Yanfeng sliced off that martial artists head, and at the same time he was stabbed through the heart.

Final score – 190 points.

After dying, Wang Yanfeng was shot out of the Ten Thousand Killing Array. He looked pale, but luckily he had managed not to faint because of his previous experience at the Exquisite Pagoda. Wang Yanfeng had adapted to this sort of illusory killing realm, and his although his entire body was wracked with aching pain, he hadn't truly been injured. These aches were only because of the phantom nerve stimulations from being killed.

As Wang Yanfeng looked around the altar, his complexion sank. He was unexpectedly the first one to be eliminated! Besides him, all 11 other people were still on the altar!

Chapter 59 – The Gap Between the New and the Old

Chapter 59 – The Gap Between the New and the Old

…

…

…

As Wang Yanfeng looked around the altar, his complexion sank. He was unexpectedly the first one to be eliminated! Beside him, all other 11 people were still on the altar!

“I… how… I was the worst?”

“Don’t be discouraged.” An indifferently cold voice sounded from nearby Wang Yanfeng’s ear. Wang Yanfeng turned around and looked; the one speaking was the Earth Hall instructor, Hong Xi.

“The 11 on the altar are some of the Earth Hall’s most outstanding disciples. Your ranking is not too bad.” Hong Xi said as he referred to the Ranking Stone to his side. Wang Yanfeng’s name was now impressively arranged at rank 168. This result was far off from the top-tier talents of rank 150 and above, but it shouldn’t be forgotten that Wang Yanfeng was only 15 years old. If he studied for six years in the Seven Profound Martial House, it was already a settled matter that he would enter the Heavenly Abode. Even making the top ten on the Ranking stone was not impossible in five or six years.

Although Hong Xi said his ranking wasn’t terrible, Wang Yanfeng was discontent and dissatisfied with this result. Liu Mingxiang was at rank 125. The disparity was just too big.

He was unable to restrain himself from glancing at Lin Ming. He saw that he seemed indifferent, and was otherwise very calm.

“This fellow is stronger than me, but it’s not a ridiculous strength. If I was rank 168, then he could probably rank at 150. Zhang Cang who he has a match with is rank 109, and might even be higher this time, isn’t he worried?”

At this time, several more people were shot out by the Ten Thousand Killing Array; their rankings varied from 120 to 150.

Then after a while, a few more people were ejected, Liu Mingxiang impressively among them. His final result was a remarkable rank 122, but he was not able to jump up by 5 ranks.

Liu Mingxiang reached into his clothes and brought out a pill which he took. He recovered a bit, and smiled as he looked to Wang Yanfeng. This result was more or less what he expected.

Wang Yanfeng’s face was ugly. He finally understood the gap between a new disciple and an old disciple! The Seven Profound Martial House was a gathering place for talents and geniuses. These disciples of the Earth Hall were the geniuses among geniuses. In addition to the resources provided by the Seven Profound Martial House and the lectures and tutoring by famous instructors, how could they possibly not progress amazingly quickly?

Liu Mingxiang had already been enrolled here for two years; this gap was not the least bit unusual!

Wang Yanfeng clenched his first. He knew perfectly well that in the match between him and Liu Mingxiang, he would undoubtedly be the loser. But he would still fight. Everything he lost, he would get back in the future!

“Rank 168? Heh heh, how tender.” Wang Mang taunted with a smile as he saw Wang Yanfeng’s ranking.

“This position is about 100 or 200 points. All I have to do is kill four guys at the peak of the Third Stage of Body Transformation and I’ll reach it. This father once killed six martial artists on the frontier who had the same cultivation. This time I will absolutely advance to rank 150!” Le Tie rubbed the tip of his nose with his thumb, full of fighting spirit. He was a martial artist whose cultivation was at the peak of the Third Stage of Body Cultivation. Because of his many years as a professional mercenary who constantly flirted with death, his combat prowess was far above a similar martial artist with the same cultivation.

“Us brothers must get at least rank 150 before showing our faces to Lin Ming and Wang Yanfeng again. We will surpass them, otherwise we really are garbage.”

“The second round is starting. Step up!”

The magic array began to revolve and activate again. Wang Mang and Le Tie took a spot next to each other, and after standing there, Wang Mang turned and said, “Hey, First Place, aren’t you coming up?”

“You first.” Lin Ming replied as he glanced at Zhang Tie and Wang Mang. These two had a very heavy murderous air around them; they had obviously killed many people in the past. Generally, such a person would not be weak.

The light rays of the magic array flashed, and Wang Mang and Li Tie entered the Ten Thousand Killing Array.

These two people’s weapons were the broadsword. It was a weapon that could kill a large number of enemies in a gathered crowd and had overwhelming power. But these two people soon realized that the Ten Thousand Killing Array was much more difficult than they had first assumed. Although Li Tie had killed six martial artists who were at the peak of the Viscera Stage at the frontier, that had been done one at a time. Now he needed to simultaneously guard and fend off the attacks of ten enemies who all converged on him. Let alone killing someone at the peak of Viscera Training, even someone at early stage of Viscera Training would not be easy. As for the enemies at the Second Stage of Body Transformation, Flesh Training, he managed to fend them off and kill one, but a Viscera Training level opponent instantly replaced him. Even Fourth Stage of Body Transformation, Altering Muscle opponents began to appear. The more they killed, the more dangerous their situation became!

These two martial artists at the peak of the Third Stage could even favorably compare to a martial artist at the early Altering Muscle stage. But now they had to face them while being besieged by enemies on all sides; and after the time it took to burn a stick of incense, they had been defeated.

Final Result. Wang Mang, rank 156. Li Tie, rank 158.

They had not been able to enter the top 150 ranks!

When this pair was shot out by the Ten Thousand Killing Array, they looked at the results on the Ranking Stone and could not help but feel an agonizing sense of frustration. Their prized superior combat strength was not enough to let them reach the top 150!

Moreover, they were already 18 years old and had little room for improvement. Perhaps even when they graduated from the Seven Profound Martial House, they would not be able to reach the top 100.

Lin Ming watched as this disheartened pair departed. In his heart he already knew that to enter the top 150 in the first assessment was to be a top-tier talent. But sometimes even a top-tier talent might not always have a good result. Wang Yanfeng was considered a top-tier talent, but unfortunately it could be said that it was a pity he was too young.

He looked at Zhang Cang. Zhang smiled as he looked back.

“This Zhang Cang is a half-step into the Altering Muscle stage. But if it is just a normal peak Altering Muscle martial artist, they might not be his match. Although I have the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’s’ Large Success stage, to beat him now is not possible.”

“That Liang Tieshan is going on stage. He is the third place among the new disciples.” Some people in the crowd recognized Liang Tieshan. This fellow’s robust and large physique left a very strong impression.

“Liang Tieshan and Lin Ming both have inborn divine strength. The third place in the entrance exam this time also obtained a Golden Snake Scarlet Pill, looking at this Liang Tieshan’s performance, we can just jump up 20 or 30 ranks to guess Lin Ming’s performance.

Liang Tieshan was often compared with Lin Ming because the two were similar in age and also had inborn divine strength.

After Liang Tieshan came on stage, he gave a gruff smile and then made long strides towards the Ten Thousand Killing Array. He had already taken the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill long ago, and now he was a half-step into the Viscera Training stage. The breakthrough to the next stage was only a matter of time. His cultivation was not too different from Wang Yanfeng’s, and his inborn divine strength definitely covered a large portion of that gap.

Although Liang Tieshan’s cultivation was the same with Wang Yanfeng, he still lacked the actual combat experience that Wang Yanfeng had. He also lacked Wang Yanfeng’s martial skill, the ‘Nine Paths of Truth’ and the movement skill, the ‘Seven Despairing Steps’. Finally, Liang Tieshan was also shot out a bit earlier than Wang Yanfeng from the Ten Thousand Killing Array. His final ranking was 176, and he had entered the top 180 which was quite rare, but could not be regarded as a top-tier talent.

“Liang Tieshan, rank 176. Wang Yanfeng, rank 168. I wonder what rank this Lin Ming will be able to achieve?”

As the audience talked about, Lin Ming leapt on stage.

“Hey! The number one new disciple has come on stage!”

“I don’t know anything about this guy, but I heard he has inborn divine strength and had eaten some rare and precious materials. He might be able to advance into the top 150.”

“Do you think it is that easy to enter the top 150 rankings? Except Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and Zhang Guanyu, there haven’t been any other 15 year olds who slaughtered their way into the top 150 rankings. He took first place in the entrance exam because he is young and had an advantage rushing up the Exquisite Pagoda. But the Ten Thousand Killing Array is impartial to age.” Said a disciple with a hint of jealousy. This disciple was already 19 years old.

“Haha, you envy others age for being young. The Exquisite Pagoda is the fairest stage; no matter your age, it only tests the degree of talent. But with this Ten Thousand Killing Array, the young martial artists truly suffer a great loss. This Lin Ming is only 15 years old, he might be able to enter the top 160 rankings. Even 170 is a top-tier talent! Achieving around 140 or 150 symbolizes a monstrous genius! Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and Zhang Guanyu had all achieved around those rankings when they had their first ranking war. That time was a true convergence of talents, how could the assessment this time even compare?

At the mention of Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and Zhang Guanyu, several present people’s expression changed. These three had a great amount of prestige and power which they had acquired over the years, even more so than some core disciples and the elusive Qin Xingxuan. They were almost selected to be core disciples themselves, but still enjoyed a massive amount of resources and did not need to participate in the Ten Thousand Killing Array ranking assessment. Even the lectures they attended, their practice, and their skill manuals were all beyond what an ordinary disciple could possess.

Because of these reasons, to an ordinary disciple, the concept of an existence of a core disciple like Qin Xingxuan was too distant and incomprehensible. She was not like a Martial House disciple at all. Therefore her accumulated prestige and fame was less than that of Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and Zhang Guanyu.

Chapter 60 – The Tiger Enters a Flock of Sheep

Chapter 60 – The Tiger Enters a Flock of Sheep

…

…

Lin Ming had outstanding aural acuity, and he could hear the comments of these people. He turned his head to look at the Ranking Stone. Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and Zhang Guanyu were all exactly ranked in the top three positions. But of these three people, their ranking and martial talents were actually reversed.

Zhang Guanyu had the highest talent. In the entirety of the Seven Profound Martial House's non-core disciples, he was the only fifth-grade talent.

Ta Ku was next. His talent was a superior fourth-grade, just a bit away from a fifth-grade talent, and he also had extraordinary divine inborn strength.

But Ling Sen was the worst. His talent was only an inferior fourth-grade. There seemed to be something out of place about it.

After Lin Ming learned of Ling Sen's talent grade, he hadn't figured out how Ling Sen could rely on his inferior fourth-grade talent to firmly occupy the first spot on the Ranking Stone.

One's own total strength and ability depended on many factors; talent was only one of them. But talent was actually the most important. Was it possible that Ling Sen also had a fortuitous encounter, had he eaten a valuable material or something to that effect?

Although Lin Ming knew that a pure heart of martial arts was a very big factor in determining strength, Lin Ming did not actually think that a heart of martial arts would have such a tremendous influence.

Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and Zhang Guan Yu, these three people had entered the Seven Profound Martial House during the same entrance exam. It could be said to be a true convergence of talent. In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, every decade or so there would be a generation of talents that could be said to be the strongest. It could be said that Ling Ming's generation wasn't filled with top-tier talents, but once one included the monstrous peerless genius Qin Xingxuan, there wasn't much of a difference.

Lin Ming stood at the altar of the Ten Thousand Killing Array and silently revolved the 'True Primal Chaos Formula'. After he had reached the Large Success stage of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula', he had only measured his fist strength on the stone pillar, and how not tested how far his battle prowess had improved.

This was just the right time to experiment!

The Ten Thousand Killing Array shined with glimmering rays and Lin Ming's whole body was soaked in this glowing light. Under the stage, the audience's eyes were mostly on him.

Zhang Cang's mouth twitched with a little thoughtful smile. He was a half-step into the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation, Altering Muscle, and his combat prowess was enough to defeat an ordinary martial artist who was at the peak of Altering Muscle. This strength gave him the qualifications to despise and feel utter contempt for the cultivation of the peak of Body Transformation's Second Stage, Lin Ming.

The Ten Thousand Killing Array activated, and Lin Ming arrived in the middle of a dazzlingly bright white space. In front of him were a variety of every known weapon; the longsword, the stiletto, the saber, the short sword, it had it all.

Before entering the Seven Profound Martial House, Lin Ming had used the short sword, which was most similar to the deboning knife he had always used. But after he started to practice the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians', his strength had increased, his true essence had thickened by several times, and the short sword no longer suited him.

"The 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' tempered my body. Now my fist is my best weapon, and I haven't chosen a new weapon." Lin Ming thought, and these weapons all disappeared into mist.

Meanwhile, in front of Lin Ming, there were more than ten phantom shades that appeared. These phantom creatures included vicious beasts and martial artists. Their strength ranged from the early Second Stage of Body Transformation to the peak of the Third Stage of Body Transformation.

Seeing this enemies rushing with killing intent towards him, Lin Ming hurried and revolved the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' to its limit. With the first layer at the Large Success stage, his whole body's true essence shot up, and it felt as if strength was endlessly pouring from his body.

"Roar!" A first-level tiger-shaped vicious beast roared and rushed at him. This vicious beast's skin was coarse and its flesh was thick. Its body weight was 600 to 700 jins, and its dashing increased its impact strength by several times!

As he faced this vicious beast, Lin Ming tightened his fist, and his knuckles cracked like fierce thunder.

"Die!" Lin Ming yelled. He struck out his fist and it smashed forwards, erupting with all 3200 jins of his strength.

Bang! The center of his fist struck the tiger-like vicious beast in the forehead and its skull fractured with a crashing sound. That 600-700 jin vicious beast that had rushed at Lin Ming was sent soaring backwards to its doom with a single first, but Lin Ming only stepped on the ground, and after the recoil, was steady once again.

The tiger-like vicious beast could not even let out a sorrowful howl as it soared through the air. Its skull was completely shattered into pieces, its brain turned into pulp, and it instantly died as it plummeted to the ground!

With a single fist that struck down his enemy, Lin Ming's fighting spirit rose like a rainbow after a spring shower, and the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' was revolving to its maximum limit. He shot forward and crashed into the middle of his enemies; his fist was like a hurricane, every kick was a tsunami! He was like a fierce tiger that had entered a flock of sheep; his might was overwhelming!

Blood readily splashed everywhere, and the sounds of bones breaking filled the air. The rough fur and thick meat of the beasts could simply not stand up to the devastating strength of Lin Ming's first; the frail phantom martial artists simply melted away with one punch.

"Peak Viscera Training martial artists!" After Lin Ming killed a peak Body Transformation Second Stage martial artist with a fist, a peak Viscera Training martial artist appeared in his stead. When a martial artist reached the boundary of Body Transformation's Third Stage, Viscera Training, their internal organs would be guarded by true essence, and their defensive power would increase. Even Lin Ming would find it difficult to finish off this enemy with his fists, and not only that, but this martial artist's movements were flexible like a reed, and its attacks were swift and fierce; wanting to hit it would not be easy.

"You're 50 points!" When Lin Ming saw this peak Viscera Training martial artist, not only did he not fear, but his fighting spirit instead shot to the sky. After reaching Large Success in the 'True Primal Chaos Formula's' first layer, he needed a decent opponent to test his strength.

"!" The martial artist swung his sword out. Lin Ming lowered his body and flung himself close to the ground, letting the sword fly over his head. With a fluid reflex, he punched out at the martial artist's knee.

After reaching 'True Primal Chaos Formula's' Large Success in the first layer, Lin Ming's true essence had thickened, and his speed had also risen to the heights of another level. The velocity with which this punch shot out was like a hidden dragon that emerged from the depths. The martial artist panicked and tried to avoid this strike, but Lin Ming pushed his hands against the ground and let loose a brutal leg sweep at the martial artist's back.

This leg came out flying out like a whip; the martial artist wasn't able to avoid it, and coughed up a mouthful of blood as he was kicked to the side.

Lin Ming relentlessly continued his attack in hot pursuit. His body sprung upwards and his fists fell like a rainstorm. The martial artist parried, but a fist managed to find a hole in his patterns and punched him. Even though his internal organs were protected by true essence, once hit by the strength of a 3200 jin fist, he took a major wound.

The martial artist vomited more blood, his sternum fractured and all his defenses were laid open. Lin Ming made one last fist and struck the center left of his chest. The martial artist's heart instantly stopped from the sheer force, and this peak Viscera Training martial artist was completely killed by Lin Ming.

In the midst of chaos among all these enemies, he had managed to kill an opponent a full stage above him; this result was enough to make one feel proud, but Lin Ming also knew that this strength was still lacking when compared to Zhang Cang!

"That was another 50 points, now I have more than 200."

…

"An incense stick of time has passed and this Lin Ming is still fighting in there, and his body is still standing firmly on stage. He really has surpassed Wang Yanfeng."

"He has surpassed Wang Yanfeng, but don't forget, he obtained the first place reward from the entrance exam – the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill, and also Wang Yanfeng's Golden Snake Scarlet Pill. He ate those two rare and precious medicines yet he didn't manage to achieve the Third Stage of Body Transformation, His strength still increased but his medium third-grade talent really despises him.

When the disciples went on stage, those in the audience naturally dispensed their thoughts on them. This time Zhang Cang had crossed his arms across his chest and was looking up with a relaxed, casual demeanor and a sly smile. Lin Ming's strength was as expected, otherwise it would just be no fun.

An incense stick quickly burnt down, and soon, a second incense stick also reached its end.

Chapter 61 – Spear

Chapter 61 – Spear

Chapter title is a minor spoiler, highlight it to read it now, or see it at the bottom.

…

…

…

"Two sticks of incense have already burnt down." Li Tie and Wang Mang's faces were ugly. They did not think that Lin Ming would been able to persist for so long; it was proof that Lin Ming had already surpassed them, that he was likely to enter the top 150 rankings!

"Big Brother, this Lin Ming is still fighting in there…" Li Tie's mouth twitched. He never thought that they two brothers' talents were inferior to others, but they couldn't even keep up in actual combat!

This all made Li Tie feel depressed.

"Mm… we underestimated the Seven Profound Martial House's youthful talents. When this Lin Ming fought with Wang Yanfeng, he must have hidden his true skills, either that or his progression has been amazingly quick."

At that time, a ray of light shot out as the first person was ejected from the Ten Thousand Killing Array. This person was not Lin Ming, but an old disciple of the Earth Hall. His final result was 147.

"147! My goodness, this Lin Ming is relying on his age of 15 to advance past the 150 top rankings! This is the same result that Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and Zhang Guanyu had achieved!"

Saying that Lin Ming was on par with these three existences, many present people's hearts turned cold. These three men had always been the unshakeable and ineffable existences that occupied the top three ranks of the Ranking Stone. Their strength was a level higher than those of the fourth and fifth rank. And to say that Lin Ming shared this honor with these three people? It didn't matter if he had managed to scrounge around and eat some rare material, or if he had met some sort of fortuitous encounter as a child, as long as he managed to be on par with these three, his future fame would echo in the world.

"Don't draw conclusions so quickly. It's only time that's passed. Maybe this Lin Ming is very slow at killing, and he's just spending most of his time running away. If that's the case then he wouldn't have 200 points yet.

"Mm, that's reasonable. Being in there a long time doesn't mean his score is also high. That old disciple that came out was just rank 147 and had just entered the top 150. Let's wait and see."

…

In the illusory world of the Ten Thousand Killing Array, even if one fended off enemies and did not kill them, their number would still slowly increase. So even if a person was strong, they could not stay inside for an indefinite period of time. Of course, if their power exceeded that of a Xiantian expert, they could directly break through the barriers, but that was a different matter altogether.

Lin Ming hadn't done any useless dodging. From the moment he started with that first kill to now, he hadn't stopped to take a single breath of rest, the only thought on his mind was to kill, kill, kill!

The 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' was a Body Transformation skill manual that was the extreme essence of light and Yang. Its every style and move was to march forward and defy all enemies with courage, it wasn't a skill manual that favored dirty dogfights.

Lin Ming's fists were already dripping wet with blood!

Every time an enemy died, a more formidable one took its place. These phantom beings started at the early Third Stage of Body Transformation and became the peak of the Third Stage, and onto even the Four Stage of Body Transformation – Altering Muscle.

There were already three Altering Muscle level enemies that had appeared, and with the Viscera Training level enemies serving as a distraction, even Lin Ming was finding it difficult to keep up.

Fortunately, Lin Ming had support from the first layer's Large Success of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula'. Lin Ming's true essence was rich and lively, and it continued to grow. His physical strength hadn't dropped by much. Even a durable martial artist who had reached the Large Success stage of Viscera Training and could breathe like a serpent would find it hard to compare with his resilience.

The enemies became stronger and stronger, and finally a Body Transformation second-level vicious beast appeared. It was a Crystal Backed Spider! Lin Ming felt an enormous pressure on him when this beast appeared; a Crystal Backed Spider's defensive capabilities were astonishing; it was difficult to wound it even with a sword! It could also launch its spider silk in a long-range attack. The spider's silk was durable like steel wire; once he was entangled by this silk in the midst of all these enemies; he would immediately die.

"This spider is difficult to deal with!" Lin Ming tightly frowned. If this was one-on-one he could wear this spider down until it died, but in his present situation with danger on all sides, he couldn't take this tactic into consideration.

At the same time he had to deal with the attacks of multiple enemies, he also had to dodge this spider's long-range attack. Lin Ming was surrounded by peril.

"Che!"

A sharp sword light flew at him. Lin Ming immediately backed up and the dangerous sword light just barely missed his chest. This sharp sword aura really made one's hairs stand up.

Lin Ming gradually found that his own fists were insufficient weapons.

In it was against a single enemy there would be no problem, but in this midst of a chaotic crowd, he found that he lacked the ability to move as he liked. If he attacked an enemy, especially with a close-range attack, he would be vulnerable to the enemy intercepting.

Maybe he should choose a weapon?

If so, what should he choose? Lin Ming's mind began to race with thoughts and ideas.

Sword?

In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, 90% of martial artists used the sword. The reason was that sword's use was diverse and its attacks were sharp and fierce. Although it was difficult to reach the pinnacle of swordplay, the barrier to entry was not high.

A sword could attack and a sword could defend, and it could be heavy or it could be light. It was a versatile weapon that had gained a top reputation with soldiers among every weapon in the world.

But Lin Ming felt that the sword did not suit him. What he cultivated was the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians', the most Yang of all Body Transformation skill manuals. If he reached the Large Success stage, then his aura would be like a billowing tsunami that swept through heaven and earth. If he saw a god then he would kill a god; if he saw a demon, then he would kill a demon!

But a sword master was different. They were known for their agility, ever changing styles, complex moves, and cunning attacks. Their style did not match him.

Then what about the saber?

If 90% of Sky Fortune Kingdom's martial artists used a sword, then of the left over 10%, more than half most likely used a saber. The saber was less dexterous than a sword, but its striking power was strong. Its attacks were relentless and unceasing. In the hands of a powerful martial artist it would be especially dominant. In a battle with many opponents, its endless attacks would be irresistible and unstoppable; in those cases it could be called the tyrant of weapons.

But Lin Ming also felt that the saber did not suit him. Although the saber had overwhelming offensive strength at times, it had few attack methods. Though it could chop and divide with unprecedented aggression, it lacked an impression of irresistible force.

Lin Ming suddenly remembered several days ago when he had met Lan Yunyue in the Martial Lecture Hall. When the elder there had been discussing the basics, he had gone on length about a weapon… the spear!

Very few martial artists used a spear in the Sky Fortune Kingdom. It wasn't because the spear wasn't strong, in fact, it was just the opposite. Every spear's attacks were mighty and indomitable. But spears were difficult to learn, and even harder to master.

A spear took a long time to practice, more than any other weapon. A spear could divide, it could pierce, it could draw, it could push, it could dance like a flower, it could kill an encirclement of enemies. Its imposing aura was unrivaled and its attacks were unstoppable.

To sweep away an army of a thousand, there was only the spear!

The spear was called the king of a hundred soldiers. To be titled this, it was obviously formidable.

But the spear was difficult to practice, and it was also difficult to wield. Even the construction of a spear was many times more complex than a sword or a saber!

For blades like sabers and sword, as long as the steel was fine, then it could be incomparably sharp.

But the spear shaft needed to be rigid, yet flexible like a willow branch. Steel and iron simply didn't have the elastic properties required, and could not be used to make the shaft. But wood and bamboo, although they were flexible, they weren't stiff enough and the weight was also too light, and its lethality would only be ordinary. In a real fight it could easily be chopped in half by a bladed weapon.

Therefore a high quality treasure spear's value eclipsed that of a treasure sword or saber by five to six times, and there weren't many of them!

Lin Ming fought on one hand, and on the other quickly deliberated on a choice of weapon. His mind ran through the elder's lecture on a spear's merits.

However in a life or death fight like this, to be distracted was only inviting disaster. As Lin Ming finally decided, a bolt of spider silk came flying at him like an arrow. Lin Ming jumped into the air, barely evading this danger, but in the moment when he was turning in midair, a sword came madly cutting at him from a tricky angle. Lin Ming only felt pain in his back as his blood shot into the air.

"He's injured!"

Outside the Ten Thousand Killing Array, Lin Ming's main body showed a reaction. There was a stuffy cough, and his face paled.

"This boy cannot last much longer!" The observing martial artists let out a collective breath and relaxed. Most of the martial artists here didn't want to see others doing well. The Seven Profound Martial House already had three holy cows pressing down on them; they did not want another one pressuring them.

"It's already impressive that he lasted this long. Two sticks of incense have been burnt, if he goes any longer than it will go against the will of heaven."

"He's done for. He might be able to reach a ranking around 150."

Also outside the Ten Thousand Killing array, even the dignified and haughty Zhang Cang was showing a change in complexion. Although Lin Ming's ranking now was nothing compared to him, but what rank one could achieve at their first time ranking war symbolized their potential. That a 15 year old could reach above around rank 150 with only a third-grade talent, it really made one alarmed and afraid.

“This Lin Ming definitely ate the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill and that’s why he has such strength. Although this is only strength that came from taking pills, I cannot look down on him.” Zhang Cang clenched his fist as he felt pressure descending on him.

Chapter 62 – The Final Grade

Chapter 62 – The Final Grade

…

…

…

"This wound isn't light!" Lin Ming revolved the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' to suppress the injury, but it still bled.

"The wound's bleeding. My strength will slowly fall… it's impossible to wage a battle of attrition. If that is the case…" Lin Ming's eyes were cold as he locked onto an early Altering Muscle martial artist and the Crystal Backed Spider. "You two, I'm going to put my life on the line to kill you both. I will make the most of my remaining strength in the time I have left to obtain the biggest victory I can and try for my highest possible final score."

"Spear, to me!"

As Lin Ming thought this, the rows of weapons that had disappeared before reappeared in front of him. An overlord spear appeared in Lin Ming's hand.

"It turned out to be the overlord spear!"

This overlord spear was crafted with potent darksteel. Such a spear sacrificed its elasticity in exchange for devastatingly destructive power!

The overlord spear's shaft was eight feet in length and the spear head was eight inches long. The barrel was thick as an arm, and because it was made with heavy darksteel, the spear's total weight was 580 jins. With a sweep of the spear, even trees would be smashed apart.

Lin Ming's arm strength was 3200 jins; wielding this heavy spear was just right.

"Good spear!" Lin Ming laughed out loud as soon as he saw it. He tightly gripped the overlord spear and swept outwards in a great arc. A martial artist at the early Third Stage, not realizing the change in circumstances, raised a sword to block the strike, but was only sent flying backwards!

"Hah!" Lin Ming shouted out and his entire body erupted in an imposing aura. A surge of overwhelming Yang aura covered the entire area as it blotted out the sky with killing intent. The group of over ten strong enemies were stunned by this cry, and were unexpectedly so shaken that they dared not step forward.

The floor beneath Lin Ming shattered as he slammed his feet against the ground and shot forward like a beam of light. With an unbelievably imposing aura and a 580 jin overlord spear in hand, he thrust out at the Crystal Backed Spider."

"Hiss!" The Crystal Backed Spider reacted and spat out spider silk straight at Lin Ming's chest. This spider silk could bind a human and it was also keenly sharp! It may not seem like an arrow, but it could pierce through a person's body!

Even a master at the Altering Muscle stage could only evade when facing this spider's silk. But once dodged, the Crystal Backed Spider could also retreat and continue its long-range attack.

Lin Ming did not dodge or evade; he ran at the spider silk and cut towards it with the overlord spear! How slender and thin was the spider's silk? The spearpoint was only a point, hitting it at high speed was easier said than done!

Although Lin Ming didn't know marksmanship, he had spent years delicately working with a deboning knife; with his keen eyes he had accumulated experience and precision. With just this, he had defeated Wang Yanfeng's 'Nine Paths of Truth' with just his fist!

But regardless of whether it was a fist or deboning knife, with this 580 jin overlord spear in hand, it was essentially no different than wielding anything else!

“Break for me!” Lin Ming angrily shouted. The overlord spear hit the spider’s silk. The spider silk was quick like an arrow, but its weight was actually like fluttering cotton. The 580 jin overlord spear meeting the spider’s silk was like a galloping horse running into a fly.

Its momentum not reducing at all, the overlord spear thrust straight into the Crystal Backed Spider’s eight eyes!

The Crystal Backed Spider hadn’t expected that its silk would be blocked by a spear. At this moment it was vulnerable to the cold, killing point of the spear!

Speed was not a Crystal Backed Spider’s strength. Its true power lay in its armored body, and its defensive abilities were comparable to stone pillars. It usually depended on this amazing defensive power to keep off its enemies.

But even so, how could it block the 580 jins overlord spear that was combined with Lin Ming’s 3200 jin strength?

“Pah!” The Crystal Backed Spider had no idea at all as its brain was pierced by Lin Ming’s spear!

“Tsee Tsee Tsee!” The spider that was as big as a small cow was nailed to the ground with its eight legs still twitching. A single spear had killed the enemy!

Green mucus liquid shot out as Lin Ming pulled out his spear and rushed towards the other Altering Muscle martial artists to kill them. However at this moment, there was faint sensation at the back of Lin Ming’s mind, as if a poisonous viper was preparing to strike at him from behind.

He dodge to the side, and a shining electric light ripped through the ground where he had been.

Martial Skill?!

Lin Ming immediately turned his head. Behind him was a phantom man holding a longsword and wearing a bamboo hat.

"Peak of Altering Muscle!"

This enemy was the one that appeared after he killed the Crystal Backed Spider! Not only did its cultivation reach the peak of Altering Muscle, but it could also use martial skills.

Seeing that his enemy was someone at the peak of Altering Muscle, Lin Ming's heart was filled with a surge of heroic pride. This was the first time he would fight an enemy at the peak of Altering Muscle!

...

"Wasn't Lin Ming injured? Why hasn't he finished by now?

"This guy is too tough, the third incense stick is already half burned! After he was injured he still managed to last another half stick of incense!"

"There are only six people left on stage. The last person's result was 139. It's incredible that he is continuing to persist in there!" Most of the present audience didn't want others to succeed.

"This Lin Ming is already injured. It's inevitable that his battle prowess will drop. Even if he's managing to stay in there because of his own stubbornness, it's not known how many points he could have gotten."

As these people talked, two people on the altar gave a cough, apparently seriously injured. They were unable to last any longer and were shot out by the altar. One of them was shockingly Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was pale, and his every breath was heavy. Overall his performance this time was not perfect, or he would have been able to advance a few more ranks. But he didn't care. At his final moments he was able to wield a spear to slaughter his enemies, including two enemies at the early Altering Muscle stage. He had immensely benefitted from such a fierce battle.

“Lin Ming finally came out. It took two and a half incense sticks of time; it’s not too unreasonable.”

“Mmm. Looks like he will be able to enter the top 150 ranks. The Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and Golden Scarlet Snake Pill are truly incomparably wonderful medicines. This boy was similar to Wang Yanfeng just a few days ago, but now after taking these two wonderful medicines he’s at this level, yah, it would be great if I could eat it too.” The crowd said. Many were envious and could not mentally accept Lin Ming’s results.

At this moment the Ranking Stone magic array flashed. The first light was a person who had come out at the same time as Lin Ming. After the flash, his name appeared in the 136th ranking. After the youth saw this result he was utterly ecstatic. He was only 17 years old and had practiced martial arts for two and a half years at the Seven Profound Martial House. To have this result was quite good.

Then, Lin Ming’s name flashed, and it suddenly vanished from the original place at the 210 ranking. More than 100 pairs of eyes were staring at the stone tablet as it updated the results.

The Ranking Stone had altogether 23 rows. Each row had ten names. Most people’s eyes were looking at the 15th row, as this was the ranking of 140 to 150 and it was where Lin Ming’s name would most likely appear.

However this section of the magic array’s image was tranquil like water and did not have the slightest change.

“Mmm?”

It was too late for anyone to feel surprise. The Ranking Stone’s 13th row actually fluctuated. The 125th rank and 126th rank were pulled apart by an invisible force, and then the two characters ‘Lin Ming’ impressively appeared among them.

Lin Ming. Rank 126!!

Chapter 63 – Divine Weapon Hall

Chapter 63 – Divine Weapon Hall

…

…

…

“126?!?

“By heaven! He’s only 15 years old!”

After the more than 100 disciples saw Lin Ming’s position, there was a collective gasp among the audience.

Even Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and Zhang Guanyu did not achieve such an abnormal ranking! During their first ranking war, Ling Sen had been ranked 145, Ta Ku 142, and Zhang Guanyu had destroyed them both and passed through the top 140 rankings to reach the 138th spot, and even that was a far inferior result to Lin Ming’s rank of 126. It had to be known that every step up the ranking was increasingly more difficult!

This was truly a monstrous genius!

Some people were still stubbornly staring at the Ranking Stone, as if they did not believe the results shown above. “Is there a problem with the cliff’s magic array? It’s only been two and half incense sticks worth of time, there is no way he could have reached the 126th rank!”

“The Ranking Stone’s inscriptions were drawn by a Xiantian master from the Seven Profound Valleys, how could there be a problem? The result wasn’t wrong, if one wanted to advance past the 130 rankings, they would usually need to spend about three incense sticks of time. The only scenario in which they could have gotten more points is if their strength was high, and they didn't engage in an extended melee with the enemy, but instead killed them with only a few moves..." A person slowly said. This person was Lin Ming's instructor, Hong Xi.

Listening to Hong Xi's words, a few people's Adam's apple spasmed as they gulped down dry mouths. Strength that far surpassed the enemy, enough that they could not even retaliate... does this little kid even have such a great power!?

This was too terrifying!

Zhang Cang had an ugly facial expression as he stared at Lin Ming. 126! Although it was far from his current position, this youth was three years younger than him!

"This Lin Ming, I don't know what sort of godly material he's eaten to be powerful to such an extent, but he is only at the peak of the Second Stage of Body Transformation! Was he really able to absorb the so much of the efficacy of the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and Golden Snake Scarlet Pill with only his medium third-grade talent?"

Lin Ming stared back at Zhang Cang, and a hint of fighting spirit glimmered in his eyes. With the rest of a month, surpassing Zhang Cang was not a problem!

"Good... you very good!" A voice resounded in Lin Ming's ear; it was a greeting from Zhang Cang sent by true essence, "You really managed to give me a good surprise. Although you're only a trashy medium third-grade talent, you managed to absorb so much of the efficacy of both the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and Golden Snake Scarlet Pill and achieve rank 126. But you are far too naïve if you think with just this measly performance that you will be able to defeat me in the leftover time you have. You also had some sort of ability to be able to get such wonderful medicines like the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and Golden Snake Scarlet Pill, but your luck ends at me. Even if you got this far, this kind of massive growth brought by the pills only means your true essence is impure. Do you really think you can purify it in the short time you have? You really think you can do that, boy?"

"You will lose!"

Zhang Cang angrily said as he moved towards the Ten Thousand Killing Array. He was unable to recover his calm again.

The last disciple who had participated in the assessment with Lin Ming was finally shot out by the Ten Thousand Killing Array. Although he had been inside the illusion for a very long time, his ranking was actually inferior to Lin Ming's. He had also managed to pass the top 130 ranks, but his was only 129th.

The Ten Thousand Killing Array began to activate again as its symbols and runes lit up. Among the disciples sitting in the 12 spots was Zhang Cang. The assessment would begin!

When the magic array began shining with light, Zhang Cang sat tranquilly on the altar with a calm appearance, motionless and every breath even and long, as if here were in a peaceful meditation.

Although the Ten Thousand Killing Array was a magic array, the illusory world inside was inseparable from reality. Consuming true essence or physical strength would cause one's breath to accelerate and their heart rate to hasten. Even injuries would cause their bodies to pale and ache all over.

With Zhang Cang so relaxed, the enemies he was facing in the Magic Array were not his current match at all.

"This fellow apprentice is Zhang Cang, he is a master at rank 109. Truly a fierce martial artist!

As a new disciple heard this, his eyes filled with excitement and awe; this was the first time he had seen such a high ranking old disciple.

"Yes, I heard that the last time he participated in the ranking war was three months ago. He should have made more progress by now. He might even make it to the top 100…"

Lin Ming watched the incense burn, and soon the second stick of incense was reaching its end.

In the time it took for these two sticks of incense to burn, the Ten Thousand Killing Array had already ejected several disciples. One of them was one of the new disciples of the Earth Hall. His new ranking was 215, which wasn't too terrible a performance for his first ranking war.

The third incense stick began to burn down, and it quickly burnt to half. With this, Zhang Cang had surpassed Lin Ming's time. But with his strength and age, it was natural that he would be able to persist in the dream world longer.

No one present thought this was a mistake, only if Zhang Cang failed here would it be extraordinary.

When the third incense stick completely burnt through, Zhang Cang finally appeared to feel weak.

When the fourth incense stick started to burn, Zhang Cang coughed. He had clearly been injured in the Ten Thousand Killing Array, and when the fourth incense stick was half done, Zhang Cang was ejected from the altar.

Final ranking, 103!

After Zhang Cang emerged from the Ten Thousand Killing array, he glanced at his new ranking and frowned, as if this result wasn't satisfactory. Although he had surpassed his old ranking by more than 5 positions, his original hopes had been to attack the top 100 rankings.

He looked at Lin Ming, and said with voice transmission, "In the decisive battle one month from now, I'll wait for you there."

But Lin Ming had not paid attention to Zhang Can's words, he was thinking of the weapon he had chosen – the spear.

He had to go find a good spear!

The inspection continued through the entire morning. During the morning, most of the martial artists that came to be assessed were at lower level of cultivations, Second Stage and Third Stage of Body Transformation, and their rankings were outside the top 100.

Shortly before noon the more senior disciples finally started to arrive at the Ten Thousand Killing array. These were the masters at the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation, Altering Muscle, and their strength was on a completely different level from the previous disciples. Several of them attained rankings in the top 50.

Many of the new disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House were enthusiasm-filled youths who stayed to observe the ranking war, but Lin Ming instead departed early. If he could actually see these masters fight in combat then he would certainly have stayed, but the only thing he could see at present were all of them sitting on the altar of the Ten Thousand Killing Array, so he wasn't able to glean anything from that and thus had no inclination to stay.

…

Shortly before noon, Lin Ming made his way through several alleys and streets and arrived at Sky Fortune City's largest and most prestigious weapon shop, the Divine Weapon Hall.

The Divine Weapon Hall was Sky Fortune City's most ancient weapon shop. It had been managed and handed down generation to generation from the previous dynasty; its storied history might even have been more glorious than Sky Fortune Kingdom! 200 years ago the Sky Fortune Kingdom had been founded as a nation, but the Divine Weapon Hall had already been there for at least 100 years.

Lin Ming peered at the Divine Weapon Hall from a distance. The massive pavilion style building had nine decorated stories, and there were soldiers scattered around that gave a feeling of supreme morale. The entrance was wrought with finely fashioned gold gilding. Above the entrance was a wooden banner with dignified characters brushed on with thick, black strokes and hooked by silver chains. Just by catching a glimpse of the entrance, it felt like there was a relentlessly imposing aura that rushed out at him. Without a doubt, the man who wrote the characters was a master of martial arts.

There weren’t many guests in the store, but of those there, more than half were martial arts experts, and several of them were powerhouses at the peak of Bone Forging. This made Lin Ming secretly startled. These experts were only a step away from the Pulse Condensation Period, of course, wanting to take that one step forward and reach that realm was an incomparably difficult step.

Before Lin Ming had left the Seven Profound Martial House, he had put on the unique uniform of his school. So even though his age was still young, he managed to attract the sales clerk’s attention. He was only a disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House, but their status was still very high.

“Young hero, what sort of weapon would you like to purchase?”

“Spear!” Lin Ming replied.

“Oh?” The sales clerk said, slightly stunned. There weren’t many people who came to purchase spears. Even if they did, it would usually be a tall and burly man. 99% of young men and students who came here would come to look at their swords. He hadn’t thought that as soon this 15 or 16 year old young man entered, he would open his mouth and ask to buy a spear.

Chapter 64 – Complex Craft

Chapter 64 – Complex Craft

…

…

…

“What sort of spear would this young hero like to purchase? And what sort of price are you aiming for?”

“Do you have any rare treasures here?” Lin Ming opened his mouth to ask.

“Treasure spears?” The sales clerk didn’t expect that this young man would surprise him again with such an astonishing question. A treasure spear was expensive, it often cost 10 to 20 thousand gold taels, and high quality spears sometimes even 30 to 40 thousand. Was this young man that wealthy?

The reality was Lin Ming did not currently have that much gold on hand, but if he was given time he could plan for it.

“Young hero, our shop currently does not have any treasure rank spears on hand. If you would like to take a look at treasure-rank swords or sabers, we have a wide variety that you could choose from.

“…” Lin Ming felt a little disappointed at this turn of events. He hadn’t thought that even the Divine Weapon Hall wouldn’t have any treasure spears. There just were just too few treasure spears.

The sales clerk continued, “For a treasure-rank spear, there are just too few of those and the demand for them isn’t low. Two months ago we had a spear, but it was already reserved in advance and sold.

“Oh? From what I know, there aren’t many martial artists in the Sky Fortune Kingdom who use spears. Are these treasure-rank spears really that marketable?”

“Mm. Yes, they are a very hot commodity. There aren’t many martial artists that use them, but… the army will. Some generals will purchase a treasure-rank spear, but because there aren’t enough treasure rank spears, even generals with illustrious careers and many meritorious military services do not have a treasure-rank spear. If this young hero wishes to purchase a treasure-rank spear in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, it will be very difficult.”

So that’s how it was. Lin Ming immediately understood that the spear was the best weapon to use in the army. Since ancient times, as long as they were a famous military leader, 80% of them would use a spear in battle. The other 20% would use weapons like the large guandao, trident, halberd, and other weapons that were similar to a spear. There weren’t many famous generals who relied on a sword or saber to lead an army.

When marching an army to war, frequently one would be riding a war horse. During these times a sword or saber was just too short and limited in its range atop a horse. Therefore one had to use a halberd, pike, spear, or weapons like a spear that had good reach. With a spear in hand, even if they fell into a swarming mob of enemies, they would be able to kill their way through. A ten foot long spear could aggressively kill all enemies in a large circle. This was something that the sword, saber, axe, or other weapons could not hope to hold a candle to.

Therefore the style that could sweep away an army of a thousand was in the sole possession of the spear!

That’s why the generals of Sky Fortune Kingdom, even if they had cultivated as a martial artist with a sword, and fought with a sword, had no choice but to learn the spear.

"Well, for the treasure-rank spear, I'll come back later when they have a good one on sale. A high quality spear will probably cost several tens of thousands of gold taels, and I don't have that much money at the moment. The gold I spent before came from Mister Muyi, and though the inscription symbols are very expensive, I don't think he needs any more. I've been troubling Muyi so often, several ten thousand gold taels is not a small number; I shouldn't approach him about this. Also a treasure-rank spear is difficult to use, and my martial arts cultivation isn't that high at the moment. Even if I had a treasure-rank spear, I wouldn't be able to display its full strength."

Thinking this, Lin Ming said, "Then consider that matter settled. Could you bring me to look at some spears, a good spear.

"Very well. Young Hero, please wait a moment." The sales clerk turned around and took out a thick spear shaft from a wooden chest. The spear shaft was an inky pitch black and seven feet long.

When a store sold a spear, often the spear shaft and spearhead were sold separately. The spear shaft was placed in a wooden chest to protect it against erosion. The spearhead was soaked in a vat of tung oil to preserve it and guarantee that it would always be luminous and reflect the light. The customer would come choose the appropriate spear shaft and spearhead that they liked, and the two objects would be composed together to form the final product.

"Young Hero, please have a look." The sales clerk said as he handed over the spear shaft to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming hefted the spear shaft in his hand. Its weight was probably somewhere around 30 jins, and was not made from metal. With a flex of his hand, Lin Ming could tell that the spear shaft was quite flexible. Lin Ming had no doubt that if he dropped this spear shaft in a full moon arc, it could crack open an animal's skull.

Although this spear shaft wasn't made of metal, the damage it could cause on a person's body was equivalent to what a metal pole could do.

“How much is this spear shaft?” Lin Ming inquired.

“1200 gold taels.”

Even though his heart was prepared, Lin Ming was still flabbergasted when he heard the ridiculous pricing. The spear shaft was just too expensive! It had to be known that a normal treasure-rank sword would only be several thousand gold taels. This spear shaft was not a treasure!

The waiter saw Lin Ming’s astonishment and explained, “This spear shaft was made from black iron wood. It was carefully selected from several hundred year old high quality black iron wood that was soaked in spring water for 7 weeks, each week 7 days for 49 days to let it be reborn. Afterwards, it was boiled in a giant wok with explosive oil for three days. All the bark was stripped leaving only the hardest and most durable wood core, and then mixed and twisted with the silk from a Golden Silkworm, then wrapped around with cloth from a Golden Silkworm that was soaked for three years in tung oil.

“Whether it is the black iron wood or the Golden Silkworm silk, both are precious materials that are hard for a sword or saber to damage. In addition to special crafting process technologies involved, this spear shaft will absolutely not be cut off in battle, even if it meets a treasure rank sword. This young hero may feel relieved that you will not be disarmed in any way whatsoever.”

Hearing the sales clerk’s passionate explanation, Lin Ming also felt his heart jump. He hadn’t thought that this common spear shaft would unexpectedly have such a complex and advanced crafting process. Golden Silkworm silk was inferior, and cheaper than Sky Worm silk, but it was as an absolutely expensive material. The black iron wood was also very expensive, and it was even from a tree that was several hundred years old.

Moreover, if there was a single mistake in the manufacturing process then it would have been ruined. For instance, if there was a problem in soaking it in boiling oil, then the black iron wood would be ruined. The spear shaft also had to be straight and rigid, like a perfect ruler. If there was even the slightest diverging angle, it would be eliminated. This caused the spear shaft's value to increase many times.

No wonder it was so expensive. Even if a common person did not eat or drink, and worked hard for his entire life, he would still not be able to afford one. If this kind of spear shaft was given to the normal folk, it would be passed down through generations as a precious family heirloom.

The sales clerk said, "The most expensive part of a spear is the shaft. If a spear is good, then 80% of the reason would be because of the shaft and 20% because of the head. The spear head crafting process is comparatively simple; a good spear head is also only around a few hundred gold taels. This young hero, even if you chose a spear head made from cloud vein wrought iron, it would only be 800 taels of gold. The total price will not be over 2000 gold taels. What does the young hero think of this?

Lin Ming played with the thick shaft as he held it in his hands. He felt a slight sense of something like love towards it and found it hard to put down. Not to mention the shaft's elasticity and durability, it absolutely felt like a first-rate product.

What a pity it was too light!

"Do you have anything heavier? For instance, a spear shaft that's several hundred jins."

"Oh?" The sales clerk was slightly surprised. For a spear shaft that was several hundred jins in weight, to be able to wield it with dexterity like you were dancing, you would need at least many thousands of jins of strength. Did this youth have such a strong body?

But even with his doubts, the sales clerk pulled out another spear shaft that was made from pure darksteel. This spear shaft was quite thick and was seven feet long and weighed more than 400 jins. The sales clerk had obviously practiced moving this, as he strained a bit in taking it out but somehow managed it in the end.

"This spear shaft is 800 gold taels."

Darksteel was expensive, but to produce a pure darksteel spear shaft was a relatively simple production process, therefore the metal spear shafts were also cheap.

“Young Hero, please be careful, it is very heavy.” The sales clerk felt some trepidation as he handed the darksteel spear shaft to Lin Ming. But he was shocked to see that Lin Ming gripped it like an ordinary wood club, and did so while looking very relaxed.

The sales clerk’s eyes jumped. This young man had great strength! He was simple a vicious beast in human form.

Lin Ming held the spear shaft in his hands and thought over it, then he asked, “Do you have anything heavier?”

Heavier? He wants something heavier?

The sales clerk said, “We do have heavier options but the price is also very expensive.”

“It’s all right.” In order to avoid any future unnecessary troubles, Lin Ming flashed the gold banknotes in his chest pockets. Right now he still had 8000 gold taels. As long as it wasn’t as expensive as a treasure-rank spear, he would be able to afford it.

The sales clerk saw that thick wad of golden banknotes and was surprised. Such a thick stack of banknotes! This young man is really rich! He respectfully said, “Young Hero, please come with me.”

With that, the sales clerk walked up to the second floor.

Note: This is what it means by saber. Not the version you’re probably thinking of (not the Fate Stay/Night character either).

Chapter 65 – The Heavy Spear, Penetrating Rainbow

Chapter 65 – The Heavy Spear, Penetrating Rainbow

…

…

…

When they entered the second floor, there was suddenly far less people. There was a huge space with only a few customers milling around. A pessimistic middle-aged man wearing a long, grey robe was sitting behind the counter drinking a cup of tea.

The sales clerk gave a respectful salute to the middle-aged man, then walked over and said a few words in his ear.

"Oh? This young hero must choose such a heavy spear?" The middle-aged asked with interest as he looked at Lin Ming, "How heavy a spear were you looking for?"

"800 jins."

"800 jins?" The middle-aged man's eyes flashed a glint of light. "An 800 jin spear would take at least 4000 jins of strength to use. Can you?"

Lin Ming said, "Even if I can't freely wield it now, I will be able to later."

"How bold! I will look for a spear for you."

The middle-aged man stood up and moved to the side. A moment later, he returned, carrying a long wooden chest. Although he appeared as if he was taking light steps, Lin Ming discovered that every step the middle-aged man took on the wood paneled floor would cause a creaking sound. The wood panels were unable withstand the weight of the load that the man was carrying.

The wooden chest in his hands was clearly very heavy!

The middle-aged man placed the wooden case on the counter and flipped open the lid. Inside was an eight foot spear wrapped in a thick cloth.

The middle-aged man unraveled the cloth strip, suddenly revealing a dark purple shaft and a deep red spear head. On the dark purple shaft's body was engraved two characters that were written in inscription symbols – "Penetrating Rainbow."

The two plain words combined with the massive spear made it feel as if there was a boundless gas rushing out.

Good spear!

The middle-aged man said, "This spear is named the Penetrating Rainbow. Its shaft is eight feet long and the head is eight inches long. It is a half-treasure."

"Mmm? Half-treasure?"

The middle-aged man said, "Only the spearhead is a treasure, the spear shaft is not, thus it is a half treasure."

Lin Ming was suddenly enlightened. The crafting process that went into the spear shaft was complex; therefore it was too difficult to place an array on it. But the spearhead was the same as a sword or a saber, so it was easy to set an array on it and make it into a treasure.

But alas, it was impossible to connect his true essence through the spear shaft due to it lacking an array, so its power was greatly reduced.

The middle-aged man said, "Although the spear shaft is not a treasure, but if comparing the toughness, it could be equal to an ordinary human-step low-grade treasure."

The difference between a treasure and an ordinary weapon was that that a treasure was inscribed with an array, and thus one could channel their true essence into it. It was not a fact that a treasure would be more durable or solid than an ordinary weapon.

This weapon could not concentrate true essence. During an actual fight, as soon as martial skills were displayed, the disparity between the two would be evident. The treasure would be a step more powerful than an ordinary weapon.

The middle-aged man continued, “This spear shaft was forged with dark purple elastic iron, and the spearhead was made from cloud vein wrought iron. Both sides of the spear’s edge have been mixed with profound gold and are incomparably sharp. The spearhead and spear shaft originally came as a pair, they cannot be separated. The total weight is 820 jins.”

Dark purple elastic iron?

When Lin Ming had attended the lecture, he had heard the elder talk about this strange metal. This wonderful metal was unmatched in weight and also had a high degree of elasticity to it. It was even used to make strong bows. With a bow made from it, combined with the sinews from a high-level vicious beast to make the bowstring, it could easily project an arrow 2000 steps away and pierce fine steel plates!

If this dark purple elastic iron was used to make a spear shaft, even the thick spear shaft would be able to bend into a half-moon and snap back with enough force to crack open a tree. If a martial artist with 5000 jins of strength shook it, even the light vibration from the oscillations alone could kill a person.

However, for all its thousands or tens of thousands of good points, dark purple elastic iron had to be hammered innumerable times during its molding in order to forge it. It was impossible to inscribe an array upon it, as an array could not be hammered. Therefore this metal could not be used to make treasure weapons.

Even so, dark purple elastic iron was cherished and loved by many refiner masters, because it was just too great and fitting a material to make a spear or strong bow with.

Lin Ming took this spear made from dark purple elastic iron into his hand. He shook it a bit, and all along the spear shaft it began to quiver. But the quivering was not too intense, because Lin Ming's strength was insufficient and could not shake the dark purple elastic iron.

Even so, the middle-aged man was suddenly startled. This young boy! What an abnormal strength! If he could still shake the spear like that, his strength must not be less than 3000 jins! And he was only at the peak of the Second Stage of Body Transformation, what a good physique he had!

Lin Ming made a few spear movements with his hand. Even if he was able to raise a 820 jin spear easily into his hand, he could not wave it around with a high degree of fluidity. If he fought with such a weapon, even if Lin Ming had the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' supporting him, it would quickly exhaust his strength.

But Lin Ming did not worry. Soon he would break through his bottleneck, and this weight would be just right in his hands.

"How much is this spear?"

"9000 gold taels!"

9000… Lin Ming wasn't too surprised. This spear was worth the price. The cloud vein wrought iron treasure spear head's price was 3000 gold taels and the dark purple elastic iron spear shaft's price was 6000 gold taels. Both of these prices were absolute bargains.

Lin Ming pulled out all the gold banknotes he had on him, and even the gold purple VIP card, and placed them on the counter. The Divine Weapon Hall was part of the Allied Trade Assocation, thus the VIP card could give him a 10% preferential discount benefit and cause the price to become 8100 gold taels. Even so, with all the gold Lin Ming had on his body, he was still missing 50 gold taels.

The middle-aged man saw this VIP card and his eyes brightened. "Young hero, are you someone from the Marshal Quarters?"

Lin Ming thought about it, hesitated, and said, “No, it’s just from my friend at the Marshal Quarters.”

Although Lin Ming lightly said this, the middle-aged man knew that this young boy was definitely some important personage of the Marshal Quarters; otherwise it would be impossible for him to have a VIP card, much less have one given to him. He said with a smile, “So that’s how it is. Since this young hero is an honored guest of the Marshal Quarters, for this spear, 8000 gold taels is good enough.”

“Many thanks.” Lin Ming was not too sentimental. 100 gold taels, was not much of anything, to either him or the Divine Weapon Hall.

The sales clerk bound the weapon in the cloth strip and placed it back inside the box. Lin Ming carried the box on his back, and after saying goodbye, returned to the back mountains.

The shaft was made from dark purple elastic iron, and the treasure-rank spear head was made from cloud vein wrought iron. Such a wonderfully superb spear, it simply made Lin Ming too excited!

After he arrived at the back mountains, he went to an open space. Because he was carrying a 820 jin spear, as soon as Lin Ming stepped on the grass with his feet, each step made a dent in ground.

Feeling a heavy pressure on his back, Lin Ming’s heart filled with a surge of heroic pride. He aimed at a big stone, and suddenly the spear cleaved downwards. There was only a ‘bang’ sound as that giant stone was immediately pulverized by the heavy spear. Because of the spear shaft’s elasticity, Lin Ming didn’t feel any intense shaking in his hand. This was an advantage of the dark purple elastic iron. If this was a pure darksteel spear shaft, then this vibration would cause his thumb and forefinger to be numb. If the rebound force were any larger, then maybe his entire hand would be numbed.

“Ha! What a good spear!”

Ling Ming recklessly waved the spear around. He didn't know any spear techniques, and simply followed the same routine as his fist techniques. With an 820 jin spear in hand, his spear dance was a little haphazard. Lin Ming practiced for a quarter of an hour, and gradually felt his arm begin to swell, and his strength was somewhat weakening.

"This spear is heavy!"

At this time, in front of Lin Ming, a bright flame burst into life. Mmm? Sound transmitting talisman?

Chapter 66 – Martial House's Resources

Note: henceforth, "Martial Quarters" will be changed to "Marshal's Quarters." We'd been using the former, but apparently it was a typo (since martial and marshal sound basically the same).

Chapter 66 – Martial House's Resources

…

…

…

At this time, in front of Lin Ming, a bright flame burst into life. Mmm? Sound transmitting talisman?

"In a quarter hour, arrive at the Seven Profound Martial House's martial stage! The Martial House shall be allocating resources to disciples based upon their ranking in the ranking war!"

The Martial House's resources!

With his heart full of delight, Lin Ming strapped the long spear to his back and flew down the mountain as quickly as he could. Although he was moving at his fastest speed, he was still 30% slower than before because he was carrying such a heavy spear on his back. Before, he might have jumped his way through the tree branches with impressive force and agility, but at the present he could only run through the thick, knee-high grass, each step flattening the foliage underneath him, while he carried the spear on his back.

But this failed to cause distress to Lin Ming. In fact, he was even more excited! Carrying such a heavy spear was also a form of practice!

…

After a quarter of an hour, Lin Ming arrived at the martial stage at the Seven Profound Martial House. Instructor Hong Xi had already arrived there long before, and most of the 20 new students of the Earth Hall had also arrived. Seeing Lin Ming come, Hong Xi lifted a hand and tossed a jade slip to Lin Ming.

"Resource details are inside. Look yourself."

"Yes, Instructor." Lin Ming poured his soul force into the jade slip. Inside was a detailed map of the Seven Profound Martial House, and the sections of resource locations at the Martial House were outlined in detail.

Inside the illumination of the jade slip were killing arrays used by martial artists to cultivate. They were the Golden Soldier Hall, Wood Puppet Lane, Lava Cave, Boulder Slope, Icy Pond Waterfall, Violent Wind Tunnel, and Thunder Valley. These seven were known as the seven major element killing arrays of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, lightning, and wind.

These seven major killing arrays were constantly in operation all year round, and they consumed a massive amount of true essence stones.

Although the killing arrays were constantly in activation, they could only allow 12 people to cultivate at a time together. The Seven Profound Martial House had too many disciples; it was impossible to allow all of them to come as they pleased, so the only method to allocate time was for disciples to gain it for themselves by struggling their way up the Ranking Stone. Disciples that weren't on the Ranking Stone were not eligible to enter, and disciples followed the rankings to be allotted time

According to Lin Ming's ranking, every month he could practice at any killing array for three days.

In addition to this cultivation practice, Lin Ming was also qualified to enter the Seven Profound Martial House's depository and select a low-grade human-step cultivation method and two low-grade human-step martial skill manuals. Lin Ming could not bring the cultivation method and martial skill jade slips outside of them Seven Profound Martial House, but he could bring them out of the depository and back to his own residence to study them in his own time.

“Martial skill and cultivation methods, and also arrays to cultivate at, these are the most valuable resources that the Seven Profound Martial House can provide. Martial skills can increase a martial artist’s combat prowess and versatility, the cultivation method is the fundamental of martial art, and being able to practice in a killing array can speed up a martial artist’s cultivation and enable them to achieve twice the results with half the effort. Many disciples come to the Seven Profound Martial House for these three resources. ”

“Out of these three resources, the most important is the cultivation method manual. But, I have the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’, so the cultivation methods they have here are of no significance for me. What I need most right now is a martial skill and a cultivation room. It’s a pity that I can only practice three days per months, it just isn’t enough time. I have to rise as fast as I can on the Ranking Stone.”

Lin Ming outlined everything he needed in his mind, then withdrew his soul force from the jade slip.

Hong Xi said, “Everyone has finally arrived. Now all of you follow me, we are going to the depository.”

…

The Seven Profound Martial House’s depository was a pavilion that was divided into the inner and outer rooms. Only core disciples could access the inner pavilion; the outer pavilion was for the rest of the disciples.

The inner pavilion contained top-secret cultivation methods and skill manuals that were left behind by masters and sages of the Seven Profound Valleys. These manuals and jade slips were not permitted to be handed to outsiders, under great penalty. Lin Ming was only able to enter the outer pavilion at the moment.

Although the outer pavilion's cultivation method manuals were a grade lower than the inner pavilion, they had a much larger collection and higher level of variety then the inner pavilion did. Inside were several thousand jade slips that had been collected and accumulated by the Seven Profound Valleys over 600 years. Occasionally, a Seven Profound Valleys disciple would undergo a mission, and on the way, they would come into disputes with other martial artists and kill them. These martial artists often had cultivation method jade slips on them. Although these jade slips were useless to the disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys, they were able to sell them to the sect and this would increase the number of cultivation method jade slips that the Seven Profound Valleys had. However these cultivation methods were not the legitimate original methods of the Seven Profound Valleys, therefore they would distribute these to the regional Martial Houses so that the disciples there could study them.

Even so, all these cultivation methods were extremely precious within the Sky Fortune Kingdom. Out of the 20 new Earth Hall disciples, many of them had never practiced a cultivation method, so once they came into this outer pavilion and saw such a vast collection of options to choose from, many people grew breathless and colored with excitement.

After Lin Ming arrived at the depository, he handed his jade slip in his hands to the warden elder who guarded the outer pavilion. Not only did this jade slip contain the distribution information on resources, but it also served as a record of Lin Ming's data and results.

The warden elder examined the jade slip with his soul force, and then said to Lin Ming, "You may proceed. You may choose a cultivation method and two martial skills. You may bring the three jade slips out of the depository but they cannot leave the Seven Profound Martial House. Also… if there are too many people wanting a jade slip, you will need to reserve an appointment, and the length of time you can study it is based upon your rank on the Ranking Stone."

It was too difficult and troublesome to duplicate a cultivation method's jade slip; therefore each copy was rare and unique. Some cultivation methods were much more popular and coveted than others, and if many other disciples chose to study that specific one, then there would be a conflict in time and resources. To arrange the reservation time, that would depend on one's own ranking. Therefore the low ranking disciples often didn't choose a well-known or prominent cultivation method; otherwise they would not have many opportunities to study it.

"The Seven Profound Martial House really is where strength reigns supreme. Here, ranking is all that matters." Lin Ming sighed with feeling, and then walked into the depository.

At this time, there were many disciples gathered in the depository, but none of them were making even the slightest sound. If one carefully listened, they could hear that these disciples were even holding their breath for the space of half an incense stick of time, as they were single mindedly studying the cultivation methods in the jade slips.

"So many masters..." Lin Ming lightly breathed. The Seven Profound Martial House was really a den of crouching tigers and hidden dragons. Zhu Yan was a top-tier talent who ranked among the best in Green Mulberry City, but here at the Seven Profound Martial House he was only able to be in the top 30.

Hong Xi said, "Start to choose. Don't be anxious, there is plenty of time. Make your choice wisely. Jade slips that don't have a mark are the most basic of skills and cultivation methods. Those with marks on them have a grade. Red marks are low-grade of the human-step, and purple marks are medium grade of the human-step. Near each jade slip is a record that shows how many people have chosen that one. If your ranking is too low, I suggest you to not choose one that is too favored, otherwise, since time is assigned according to your ranking, you may not have much of an opportunity to study it."

According to the regulations of the Martial House, between ranks 100 to 200, they could only chose a low-grade human-step cultivation method manual. Lin Ming's ranking was relatively high, so he could chose a popular cultivation method.

However not even mentioning low-grade human-step cultivation methods, even if it was a high-grade human-step cultivation method, Lin Ming would be completely uninterested in it. But, he still had to appear as if he wanted one.

So he began to browse around all the shelves. Near each cultivation method was a label that was made of symbol paper which had the names of the disciples who had chosen that cultivation method. The popular cultivation methods often had 4 or 5 names, but the less popular ones often didn't have any names at all.

The gap between various low-grade human-step cultivation methods was just too great, thus the disciples who were over rank 100 learned cultivation methods far superior to those below them.

Lin Ming looked for a while, and suddenly moved as he saw Zhang Cang's name.

"Shadowless Art! I guess this is the cultivation method that Zhang Cang cultivates."

As soon as Lin Ming looked at the label, he was stunned to see seven names written on it. This cultivation method was truly welcomed by all!

Lin Ming sank his soul force into the jade slip and saw the overview of these cultivation method pop into his mind.

'The 'Shadowless Art'. Heavy offense, light defense. The cultivator's true essence density and purity would be extremely high; they could even compare with a martial artist a whole stage above. This is truly one of the best and most outstanding low-grade human-step cultivation methods among its peers; it is not too far from being a middle-grade human-step cultivation method. However this cultivation method is not easy to practice, and those that reach the Large Success stage are too few, thus please be prudent in your choice.'

Seeing this overview, and reading that it was too difficult so one had to practice it with caution, Lin Ming only smiled and laughed. All of those in Earth Hall over rank 100 were talents, the more difficult it said it was to cultivate, the more those brave and arrogant geniuses would desire it. This cultivation method was also one of the best ones within its rank, how could they not want it?

But certainly, in this cultivation method, Lin Ming had no interest.

He continued to look around, and was preparing to casually choose one, but then his footsteps paused as he wandered near a bookshelf in a corner.

“Spear arts?”

Chapter 67 – Unknown-Grade Martial Skill

Chapter 67 – Unknown-Grade Martial Skill

…

…

…

"Mmm? There is a cultivation method that contains spear arts too? That Wang Yanfeng's 'Nine Paths of Truth' was a cultivation method that had sword skills. It seems some cultivation methods are particularly focused on certain types of weapons and they will have techniques related to them."

Lin Ming reached up for a jade slip on the shelf named 'Foundation Spear Technique'. Although the two word foundation didn't have a glorious appearance of something of high quality, Lin Ming didn't mind. He sunk his soul force into the jade slip and saw the summary for this 'Foundation Spear Technique."

'The 'Foundation Spear Technique' is the foundation for all spear skills. It teaches the straight thrust, the wide sweep, the flower dance, the killing circle, and other such primary spear skills. It does not contain any spear martial skills, and is one of the simplest low-grade human-step cultivation methods.

Seeing this, Lin Ming remembered Wang Yanfeng's 'Nine Paths of Truth' when they had fought. Wang Yanfeng had used the 'Nine Paths of Truth' and his true essence had transformed into nine shimmering green runes on the blade of the sword. This martial skill was incomparably gorgeous and pleasing to the eye. Compared to the exquisite beauty of the 'Nine Paths of Truth', the 'Foundation Spear Technique' just seemed too commonplace and ordinary. It only had the simplest style of spear skills, and that was why it was called the simplest kind of low-grade human-step cultivation method.

But Lin Ming didn't think that there was anything wrong or bad with simplicity. The more complex a cultivation method was, the more mistakes and flaws there would be, and spending a massive amount of time to practice this sort of cultivation method wasn't necessarily wise as later he would have to throw it away. If that was the case, then it would be best to practice the most basic foundation skills. Learning the straight thrust, the wide sweep, the flower dance, the killing circle, and other such basic skills could never go wrong, as they related to all future spear techniques.

As long as he practiced this simple style to the Large Success stage, he would be able to display its greatest strength. Lin Ming also had the top-grade Body Transformation manual, the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' to make up for any disparity in martial skills.

"I'll take this one!" Lin Ming decided. He glanced at the side label of the 'Foundation Spear Technique' and saw that it was completely absent of any names. The word 'Foundation' really caused others to not be able to feel any interest towards it, in addition to it being spear related, which not many others practiced.

"It's great that no one cultivates this; now I don't have to reserve time."

After choosing this spear art, Lin Ming began looking to choose his movement technique.

He glanced over the available ones, 'Lost Steps', 'Heaven Passing Ladder', 'Cloud Hanging Rope', 'Seven Star Drifting Cloud', 'Swan Feather', and so forth. Each of these cultivation manuals were dazzlingly impressive and had kick-ass names.

For instance, the 'Swan Feather Fall', it was said that after cultivating it to the Large Success stage, then one could use their true essence to fly unhindered into the deep blue sky, as if they were on a feather from a soaring swan.

As for the 'Seven Star Drifting Cloud', it was said that after reaching the Large Success stage, one could take seven steps at once, without being able to tell where it began and where it ended. It was as if every foot was passing on the seven stars of the Big Dipper, and one would be able to tread on clouds and achieve godly speed within those seven steps.

However, Lin Ming shook his head as he examined all these. He wandered around the corner and chose a cultivation method named the 'Foundation Movement Technique'.

Lin Ming's idea was very simple. Reading between the lines of these movement techniques, they used some special way to circulate true essence and coordinate it with the strength of the leg and foot muscles, and thus create a method to move around. Although cultivating these movement techniques would make it possible to increase one's speed by several times, once he had a high-grade movement technique, then he would have to discard his old method and practice from a fresh start. Lin Ming did not want to waste his time on some low-grade human-step movement technique; although they had awesome sounding names that were sweet to the ear, they were ultimately manuals that were discarded as trash by the Seven Profound Valleys and ultimately wound up here.

He selected his movement technique, and now it was time to choose a martial skill. In truth, the martial skill was similar to the movement techniques; once he had learnt something superior, the old one would eventually be replaced. But as of right now, Lin Ming lacked a true attack method, so he was prepared to select one that was good and combine it with his spear skills.

Lin Ming's requirements were many. He didn't want anything fancy or pompous. He didn't want something flashy but lacking in substance. It had to be something that could be used in various situations, something that didn't use deceit or illusions to strike, something that wasn't low power, and something that could be used with the spear…

Lin Ming examined almost all of the martial skills and couldn't find one that matched his criteria.

No wonder, the outer pavilion's martial skills were trash that were eliminated by the Seven Profound Valleys. The Seven Profound Valleys was responsible for reviewing jade slips once they received them. The elders responsible definitely had great insight; how could anything left over be good?

While he continued to search as he felt some disappointment, Lin Ming suddenly stopped.

“Mmm? Why are there broken jade slips here?” Lin Ming found that hidden on a bookshelf were placed a number of broken jade slips.

“Are these also cultivation methods and martial skills?” Lin Ming randomly picked up a jade slip piece and seeped his soul force into it and the summary appeared in his mind: ‘The high-grade human-step martial skill. Martial skill is unknown. Loss rate is 90%.’

Once a jade slip had been broken into pieces, most of the information inside would also be lost. No matter whether it was a cultivation method or martial skill, once the loss rate reached 90% there would be no way for even the most talented of talents to be able to practice it.

Lin Ming continued to look and found that most of these broken jade slips were high-grade human-step cultivation methods, and there were also several low-grade ones mixed in too. This was normal, after all, if it was only a low-grade cultivation method or martial skill, in addition to it being incomplete, then it definitely would have been thrown away long ago. Why would it be kept here?

But too bad, even if it was a low-grade Earth-step cultivation manual, compared to the top-rank ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ which came from the Realm of the Gods, it would be like comparing the heavens and earth. It was also incomplete, so what sort of value would it have for Lin Ming?

“Although these cultivation methods are high-level, the talented disciples will not choose these because they are just impossible to practice. I have the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’, there is just no point in wasting my time attempting these martial skills.”

Lin Ming did not care too much about this and was just about to give up looking, when he suddenly saw something in the corner of his eye and turned. It was a jade slip with a martial skill named the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering First’. This martial skill was missing its opening section, and therefore could not be given a grade. It was only the elder who was responsible for evaluating the jade slips that had placed it as a low-grade Earth-step martial skill.

‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ was really a vulgar name; compared to elegant and appealing names like ‘Swan Feather Fall’, ‘Cloud Hanging Rope’, and other such grand atmospheric cultivation method names, it was simply a dirty beggar. But Lin Ming actually knew that the martial skill and cultivation method names were chosen by the creator. Some weaker cultivators were stuck at certain bottlenecks and could no longer progress, these weaker martial artists would spend their entire life creating a set of cultivation methods or a martial skill, and even though it was limited in ability, they would rack their brains to think of a charming and magnificent name.

Superb martial skills and cultivation methods would never depend on the grandeur of their name to attract attention. This ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ could be said to be completely honest with its plain and vulgar words.

However, Lin Ming noticed this manual not because of its name, but because of the effect its attacks would have on the enemy body. On the jade slip it described; ‘The skin would show no wound, but the interior would be destroyed, therefore it is named the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist.’’

The skin would show no wound, but the interior would be destroyed!

Lin Ming suddenly remembered the soft rigidity concept described in the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’, Strength Training’s ‘Flow like Silk’.

Strength Training’s so called ‘Flow like Silk’ referred to complete control of one’s strength and was the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ Strength Training’s Large Success stage. With ‘Flow like Silk’, as soon as one punched an iron wood tree, the bark would be fine, but the core would be turned into cotton fibers.

Because there were missing sections in the memories of the elder, Strength Training’s ‘Flow like Silk’ had been a bit fuzzy and incomplete; therefore Lin Ming had not reached the absolute threshold of that stage.

“This ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ is a bit similar to ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ Strength Training’s ‘Flow like Silk’. As they say all living things are connected to each other, perhaps the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ also has the same principles behind it as ‘Flow like Silk’.

Lin Ming continued to examine the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’. Although this martial skill had many missing sections, the parts that were there were still able to give Lin Ming many enlightenments.

“Let true essence vibrate along the fist. If the vibration frequency is consistent, then resonance will occur, and this vibration can be transmitted to the interior of the enemy, and destroy their body’s… so that’s how it is! The senior who created this ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ must have had a very deep and comprehensive understanding of the relation between true essence and its utilities in strength!

“Although the Realm of the Gods’ cultivation methods are absolutely exquisite and peerless, it can’t be said that the skills of the Realm of the Gods are all things that the people of Sky Spill Continent cannot dream of or come up with. The history of Sky Spill Continent’s inheritances and legacies has already surpassed ten thousand years. For ten thousand years there have been many peerless talents and monstrous geniuses. For them to achieve the same results in certain aspects of the Realm of the Gods is nothing strange!” Thinking like this, Lin Ming chose this martial skill manual, and thus his set of one cultivation method and two martial skills was completed.

Chapter 68 – Lin Ming’s Wonderful Selection

Chapter 68 – Lin Ming’s Wonderful Selection

…

…

…

As Lin Ming brought up his three jade slip choices of ‘Foundation Spear Technique’, ‘Foundation Movement Technique’, and ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering First’, to register with the warden elder, he saw that that there were several people waiting at the counter. They were Wang Yanfeng and several others. Hong Xi was waiting at the side, and checking which cultivation methods and skill manuals they had chosen.

As the instructor for the newbie disciples of the Earth Hall, Hong Xi was only responsible for their general direction and had no specific obligation or duty to help them any further. However, this cultivation method choice was very important, so Hong Xi came here, fearing that the disciples in his care would make a bad decision and choose a cultivation method poorly suited for them.

“Wang Yanfeng, you’ve determined that you choose these three jade slips?” The warden elder inquired.

“I do.” Wang Yanfeng affirmed and nodded.

“You chose the ‘Divine Yang Power’, ‘Swan Feather Fall’, and ‘Thundercloud Strike’; these three manuals are very difficult to cultivate, particularly the ‘Swan Feather Fall’. It is very exacting in its true essence precision. If we are talking about reaching the Large Success boundary when you will be able to fly, it will be exceedingly difficult for you. Are you sure about your choice?”

“Elder, I have already thought about this clearly.” Wang Yanfeng had his own plans. His family had the movement technique ‘Seven Despairing Steps’. However, the ‘Seven Despairing Steps’ was just a fraction worse than the ‘Swan Feather Fall’.

But he would not give up the ‘Seven Despairing Steps’. The ‘Seven Despairing Steps’ would be the martial skill he would use to accelerate and move in short distances, but the ‘Swan Feather Fall’ was able to make one’s body light like a swallow and was good for long distance movement. Both complemented each other and filled the other’s weaknesses, therefore he chose the ‘Swan Feather Fall’ as it suited him the most.

As for the ‘God Yang Power’, its difficultly was not as high. This was because his ranking was too low, otherwise he would have chosen a cultivation method that was more difficult and had greater rewards in power, such as the ‘Shadowless Art’.

“Alright.” The warden elder reluctantly shook his head and registered the jade slips for Wang Yanfeng. These young geniuses all had aspirations that were higher than the sun. They would often choose the most powerful cultivation method and martial skills as soon as they could; however, such powerful martial skills and cultivation methods were not trifling in their difficulty.

However, it was hard to question them about this. Young geniuses never considered the difficulty of a martial skill or cultivation method when selecting them, in fact, it could be said that they liked to use the difficulty as proof of their budding talent.

But what they had forgotten was that in the Seven Profound Martial House, everyone was a talent. In the cultivation method, if there was a note that said ‘EXTREMELY HARD TO PRACTICE’ that was naturally directed at these clueless talents! It’s true that you are a genius, but how can you compare with all these other geniuses?

After Wang Yanfeng were the two brother-in-arms Wang Mang and Li Tie. These two also had an outstanding display on the Ranking Stone and so their choices in martial skills were similarly not easy.

“You’ve decided on these three cultivation methods and martial skills?”

“We’ve decided.”

“Okay, then next… mmm? Lin Ming?”

“Yes.” Lin Ming placed three jade slips onto the counter. Wang Yangfeng, Wang Mang, and Li Tie were naturally unable to not glance at them, and this included even the curious Hong Xi. Lin Ming’s strength was evident to those that had met him, and they wanted to know what kind of ancient and supreme martial skill he had chosen.

Wang Yanfeng gazed at the three jade slips on the counter. “This Lin Ming, his ranking is 126. He might choose ‘Shadowless Art’, or even the ‘Absolute Nine Yang’, or some other top level cultivation method. My strength is already behind him; if I suffer a loss even in cultivation methods, it will be even more difficult to catch up. I will only be chasing his shadow my entire life.”

Because he had suffered setback after setback, Wang Yanfeng no longer mentioned or even thought of Lin Ming’s talent when gauging his strength. In his opinion, Lin Ming was a freakish existence that disregarded the talent barrier, and was the strongest match he had met in his life so far.

Even though Wang Yanfeng had some apprehension about which cultivation method Lin Ming chose, the warden elder’s next words left him dumbfounded.

“The ‘F…Foundation Spear Technique’, ‘Foundation Movement Technique’, and an incomplete ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’… are… are these the three manuals you have chosen?”

These were the three sets of cultivation methods and martial skills? What even was this ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’? Wang Yanfeng had never even heard of it. But he did know the ‘Foundation Spear Technique’ and ‘Foundation Movement Technique’. Wang Yanfeng had also passed by these two manuals when he was looking. These two set of foundation cultivation method and movement techniques might even be the most basic, simple, and ordinary low-grade human-step manuals in the depository. Why would Lin Ming choose these?

Does he have no confidence in himself? That's not right. His heart of martial arts was so firm, how could he not have confidence and belief in his abilities?

The warden elder was unable to understand this choice. This foundation cultivation method manual was only ever selected by disciples of the Human Hall. In all the years the warden elder had worked here, he had seem disciples who had aimed to high and chosen a cultivation method that was far too difficult for them, and although mighty, inevitably were unable to master it and had wasted all their time. This kind of phenomenon was nothing unusual with talents and geniuses. However, this was the first time he had seen a new first place disciple of the Earth Hall choose a cultivation method that was too simple, as if they were afraid to cultivate at all.

And that low-grade Earth-step martial skill 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist' was incomplete, it in fact was only graded that as a reference value, it was simply completely impossible to practice. Did this Lin Ming know that? What was he thinking?

The Earth Hall instructor Hong Xi was standing on the side, and he also couldn't understand. He had come here today to help direct and guide these new disciples to choose a suitable cultivation method. He hadn't thought that the first one to go astray would be Lin Ming. He opened his mouth and warned, "Lin Ming, have you clearly thought about this?"

Lin Ming nodded and said, "I thought about it. I want to build a firm foundation so I chose a foundation cultivation method and a foundation movement technique."

Hong Xi said, "Good. It's not wrong to want to form a solid foundation. You chose the 'Foundation Spear Technique' and the 'Foundation Movement Technique'. But this 'Body Tearing Body Shattering Fist' is missing more than 70% of its manual. Even if it is an unabridged low-grade Earth-step martial skill, it still needs extremely high perception and talent to practice; much less it is also missing 70% of it! Let alone you, even the elders of the Seven Profound Martial House would find it impossible to gain an understanding of it to cultivate, otherwise do you think that a low-grade Earth-step manual would be randomly found in the middle of nowhere in the outer pavilion? Would you like to change your selection?

Lin Ming replied, “I just wanted to meditate and ponder on it; not cultivating it is not a problem. Also, I want to look at it to see if I can obtain some inspirations.”

Obtain some inspirations?

Hong Xi frowned. Lin Ming was a 15 year old youth whose cultivation was only at the peak of the Second Stage of Body Transformation. And he wanted to be ‘inspired’ by a low-grade Earth-step martial skill that was missing 70% of its contents? He was nothing but a moron who had gone too far in his idiocy, but his ambition was aiming at the top.

“Lin Ming, you really have to guard against the mindset that you are going to get lucky. Don’t take chances like this. Even peerless monstrous geniuses would not be able to cultivate the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’. The opportunity to select a martial skill is very valuable; if you choose this, you will have wasted a chance. Although you will later enter the top 100 rankings and have opportunities to choose more, even one less martial skill is a huge pity!

Lin Ming smiled and said, “Thank you Instructor Hong. I have already thought about this and am clear in my decision.”

“Good, then do as you like.” Hong Xi shook his head. These geniuses were just too stubborn. They wouldn’t change unless they endured grief. So he would let him do this and then eat his regret. If he didn’t suffer, then he wouldn’t remember this.

Like this, Lin Ming selected his cultivation method and martial skill jade slips. His name was written on a jade slip note, and then he received three keys. These three keys were actually three small ash grey stones, and at the top of each was a red marking.

Each key corresponded to a set of manuals. Once a new disciple chose a cultivation method, the jade slip would be sealed on a shelf for storage. Without the key to open the array, even if they entered the depository, they would not be able to look at anything.

Chapter 69 – Strength Training ‘Flow like Silk’

Chapter 69 – Strength Training ‘Flow like Silk’

…

…

…

In a quiet, secluded clearing at the back mountains, Lin Ming sat in his yard on a stone table. He was meditating in tranquility, as spinning autumn leaves slowly fell around and on his shoulders. In the peacefully quiet autumn morning, Lin Ming had risen out of bed before sunrise to breathe in the fresh mountain air and get his mind into its optimum condition.

Lin Ming had placed the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ jade slip on the stone table. This was an incomplete Earth-step martial skill. Even if Lin Ming had the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians as reference to help guide him, he still needed an extremely high level of perception to be able to fuse the two.

Perception had nothing to do with one’s martial talent, but it did touch on one’s soul talent a bit. Lin Ming’s soul talent was primary fourth-grade. Martial artists’ soul talents were generally low; Lin Ming’s soul talent could be considered top-tier in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, and was equal to superior fourth-grade talent in cultivation.

Lin Ming was adjusting his mind and emptying his useless thoughts. He was ready to use the entire day to perceive and understand the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’.

He sank his soul force into the jade slip, and in Lin Ming’s mind appeared the incomplete scripture of the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’.

“This ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’, the very beginning is incomplete…”

The ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ was missing 70% of its information. If this debilitating flaw was only in the second half of the manual, then an unrivalled talent might be able to practice a small part of it. But currently, the missing sections started at the beginning, moreover, the flaws also passed through the entire heart mantra, which made this simply impossible to practice.

“No wonder this ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ was lying out on the corner and no one asked for it. Even though the concept of vibrating one’s own true essence was simple, there wasn’t even an explanation on how to begin practicing the hand movements. The passage from the introduction which describes this is missing!”

However, in Lin Ming’s memories from the elder’s soul fragment, there was a vaguely basic and fuzzy memory of what Strength Training’s ‘Flow like Silk’ was like.

Lin Ming took these two sets of manuals as one and began to reflect upon them together. He began to have a faint feeling as if he was just tracing the beginning of Strength Training’s ‘Flow like Silk’.

“Breathing…” Lin Ming mumbled as he pondered, “The true essence vibrations’ start is… breathing!”

In the soul fragment’s memories, he had learned that the human body was composed of millions upon millions of tiny units. Whether it was the skeleton, or muscles, or blood, or anything else, they were formed from these small units that were smaller than dust. However, they actually had a very complex structure, and played different roles in the human body. When cultivation had reached a high enough realm, true essence would condense in the eye, and their vision would be improved to the limit of limits, and they would be able to discover these tiny units.

Each of these tiny units was alive. Each could breathe!

The average person’s body’s tiny units would have a breath disorder from all these tiny units breathing at different times, but if they managed to reach the Large Success stage of

Strength Training's 'Flow like Silk', they would be able to control the breathing rate of these tiny units so that they were consistently unified, and it would then resonate...

This was the beginning of Strength Training's 'Flow like Silk', and was also the beginning of true essence vibration!

According to that elder's memories, when a human was first conceived, in their mother's womb they would be just a tiny unit that would grow. At that time, because the tiny unit is just one, their breathing frequency was consistent, and thus an embryo's breathe was purest at that moment.

Lin Ming was suddenly enlightened.

Was it possible that the senior who created the 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist' had also discovered the secret behind the tiny units of the human body? This 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist' was missing its beginning portion. The grade of low-grade Earth-step was assigned to it by an elder at the Seven Profound Valley who was responsible for examining the jade slips before deciding where they went. Now, it seemed that it hadn't been wholly accurate.

It was very possible that this was an even higher order cultivation method.

But adjusting the whole body's tiny units so that their breath was consistent was not a simple matter. The 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering First' was completely missing this part in its instructions. Lin Ming could only diligently try to recall bits and pieces from the fuzzy memories he had.

"Adjust the body through true essence to control the breathing of the tiny units, and finally achieve the goal of changing the tiny units' breathing rate until they are consistent."

Lin Ming sat down cross-legged and began to revolve the true essence within his body. He unendingly tried to match his own breathing with that of the tiny units inside his body.

Once. Twice. Lin Ming felt his breath become longer and longer. Gradually, he felt his own breathing begin to enter a subtle boundary. He began to feel his consciousness fade away, and his body become empty nothingness. The uncountable tiny units within his body began to move along with Lin Ming's breath as if they were vibrating. He felt a scalding, burning sensation as if he were being swept away by a tide.

Lin Ming was in constant meditation and reflection; like this, he sat in the courtyard for an entire day.

That day, Lin Ming was like a still pond. Leaves fell on his shoulders, his head, and his arms, but Lin Ming remained motionless throughout. It wasn't until the sun set over the mountains that Lin Ming woke from his long period of contemplation and slowly opened his eyes.

"This true essence vibration and Strength Training's 'Flow like Silk' boundary are just too mysterious. I have used an entire day but only managed to finally touch upon a clue. This true essence vibration involves the hidden secrets of the human body; the average person would simply not think of this. It is too fantastic!"

Although he hadn't progressed much, Lin Ming had clearly seen the approximate direction to go. If he slowly perceived this through mediation, he would sooner or later be able to find out the mystery!

Lin Ming put away the jade sleep. Strangely, though he hadn't eaten the entire day, he didn't feel any hunger in his belly at all.

Martial artists before the Pulse Condensation Period had to eat meals and drink water just like the average man. Even someone at the Pulse Condensation Period could only stand hunger a few more days that a normal man, if they didn't eat for a long time, they could also starve to death.

"I'm also not hungry at all. It seems the tiny units in my body have already breathed in true essence and are full. Strength Training's 'Flow like Silk' is too wonderful! It's only today that I realize that perhaps the so-called strength of Strength Training's 'Flow like Silk' is not physical strength at all, but true essence strength. If I practiced true essence strength until I could freely wield it at will, then this would be the Large Success of Strength Training's 'Flow like Silk'.

Lin Ming was unable to restrain a sigh filled with emotion. The 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' were broad and profound. Over the countless long years, the Realm of the Gods' sect seniors had been unendingly revising and cultivating the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians'. Each method inside was the sum of endless experience and had been time-tested. He had practiced it until now and had reached this level of cultivation, but it was only the tip of the iceberg.

"This is as far as I go today. Tomorrow I'll have a look at the Seven Profound Martial House's seven large cultivating rooms. I wonder what sort of mysterious effects these places will have on cultivation."

…

In the time that Lin Ming had practiced Strength Training's 'Flow like Silk', Zhang Cang and Zhu Yan had walked together into the Seven Profound Martial House depositories. "This Lin Ming just chose a cultivation method. But with only one month, his practice will be inadequate regardless." Zhu Yan said as he held a purple jade slip in his hand. This color represented a middle-grade human-step cultivation method.

Zhang Cang said, "I wonder what kind of cultivation method that boy will choose."

Zhu Yan sneered, "This Lin Ming is too confident in his own strength. When he was at the First Stage of Body Transformation, he had threatened to overtake me. He will certainly choose some popular cultivation method that is difficult to cultivate. If so, even if his perception is good, I will let him have no time to practice…"

The popular cultivation methods needed an appointment in order to see them. But a time reservation's length was arranged according to one's own ranking. Sometimes a cultivation method had 5 to 6, or even 6 or 7 disciples waiting in line to study it. At this time, the allocated time would depend on ranking to be given out. If your ranking was low, then you would be at the end of the line and see very little of it.

But usually, of these 6 to 7 people, there were always several that were senior disciples. They had already studied these cultivation methods for a long time, to the extent that improving their own cultivation method by seeing the jade slip was useless. What they needed was more and more practice and actual combat.

However there was also no stipulation that said that senior disciples could not continue taking advantage of the jade slip. As long as Zhu Yan abused his relationships with people, Lin Ming would have to frequently let other people borrow the jade slip, and Lin Ming would not have the jade slip to practice.

Obstruction was within the regulations of the Seven Profound Martial House. Zhu Yan could not flagrantly deal with him, but he could do something that would hinder and disgust him.

Zhang Cang and Zhu Yan went looking through the bookshelves for Lin Ming's name. They examined the jade signs for names. Naturally, the first ones they looked up were 'Shadowless art', 'Absolute Nine Yang', and other such top heart mantras and cultivation methods. However they could not find Lin Ming's name among any of these. They retreated and thought for a moment, then continued looking through the lower-level cultivation methods, but still hadn't found Lin Ming's shadow.

"Mm? What's going on?" Zhu Yan frowned slightly.

Zhang Cang suddenly said, "Zhu Yan, here, I found it."

Zhu Yan walked over and saw Lin Ming's name on a very short note. Mmm? The note only had one name?

Zhu Yan was slightly stunned. That this note only had one named proved that this cultivation method was a skill that received very little attention.

“Foundation Spear Technique?”

This Lin Ming actually chose this cultivation method? What the hell was he thinking?

“I also found the second.”

Hearing Zhang Cang, Zhu Yan looked again. This time, he was shocked once more. “Foundation Movement Technique?!?!”

Lin Ming had chosen the ‘Foundation Spear Technique’ and the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’?

Zhu Yan was mind boggled. This was inconceivable.

Seeing Lin Ming had chosen these cultivation methods, Zhang Cang said, “Zhu Yan, you really overestimated this Lin Ming. After he attained the rank 126 on the Ranking Stone I thought that he was some sort of impressive character, but it seems like only his luck is good. He had some sort of fortuitous encounter, so his strength rapidly increased. But sooner or later that will be useless. Look at these two sets of manuals, relying on these, how could he possibly hope to face other experts?”

Chapter 70 – Icy Pond Waterfall

Chapter 70 – Icy Pond Waterfall

…

…

…

Seeing Lin Ming had chosen these cultivation methods, Zhang Cang said, “Zhu Yan, you really overestimated this Lin Ming. After he attained the rank of 126 on the Ranking Stone, I thought that he was some sort of impressive character, but it seems like only his luck is good. He had some sort of fortuitous encounter, so his strength rapidly increased. But sooner or later that will be useless. Look at these two sets of manuals, relying on this, how could he possibly hope to face other experts?”

Zhang Cang believed that with Lin Ming’s talent, even if he practiced the ‘Foundation Spear Technique’ and ‘Foundation Movement Technique’, there was no way that he would have any decent results with it. If he insisted on practicing these garbage skills, the only thing that would grow was the disparity between them!

“Haha, he is self-aware that his qualifications are inferior to others, so he dares not select a cultivation method that is difficult. This kind of person that lacks any semblance of self-confidence, what martial skills could he possibly cultivate?

Hearing Zhang Cang’s derisive words, Zhu Yan frowned as his brows knitted tightly. He laid down the jade slip and said. “Zhang Cang, I advise you not to have a low opinion of your opponent and underestimate him. Maybe this Lin Ming lacks confidence, but don’t forget, he broke Ling Sen’s record for passing the Dream Trial that tested one’s heart of martial arts in the entrance exam.

When Zhu Yan said this, Zhang Cang stopped talking. When he had first participated in the Dream Trial, it had taken him three quarters of an hour. He had done far worse than Lin Ming. He knew what it meant to pass that hurdle in less than a incense stick worth of time.

“Let’s continue looking. I want to see what sort of martial skill he chose.”

They pair turned to look again, and after a long time, they only found Lin Ming’s name on an incomplete jade slip’s note.

“Missing 70% of its contents, ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’?” Usually Zhu Yan was calm, but after seeing this note with Lin Ming’s name, his eyes widened. Was this Lin Ming insane?

He didn’t know what grade or rank this ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ was, but he estimated it to be a low-grade Earth-step skill. With a manual of this grade, even if it was at the Seven Profound Valley main sect, it would be a martial skill that wouldn’t be passed down to outsiders. If there was even the smallest chance at all that someone could find inspiration from this, it would absolutely be impossible for this to be found in the depositories of the Seven Profound Martial House!

Having seen this martial skill, Zhu Yan didn’t hesitate to give up. Let alone himself, even if it was the Seven Profound Martial House’s Heavenly Abode’s number one talent Zhang Guanyu, and also core disciples like Qin Xingxuan and so forth, they would not be so presumptuous to consider this ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’. That was simply biting off more than they could chew!

This Lin Ming was just too crazy. If he had just chosen the ‘Foundation Spear Technique’ and the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’, then Zhu Yan might have guessed that there was some profound and immeasurably deep meaning behind these choices, but since he chose ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’, Zhu Yan only thought that Lin Ming was a half-baked idiot.

“This Lin Ming, not only are his qualifications poor, but it seems he has some problems in the head. Only if he had the mind of a pig would he choose a martial skill like this.” Zhang Cang quipped. This time Zhu Yan didn’t argue; he just didn’t know what this Lin Ming was thinking.

Zhu Yan said, “Zhang Cang, although the martial skills and cultivation methods Lin Ming chose aren’t normal, there is no need to not be careful. There’s nothing wrong with not taking an opponent lightly. This Lin Ming is still rank 126 on the Ranking Stone. The reason is he should have eaten the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill and the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill, and was able to absorb these two pills so well that it even startles me…”

“Rest assured, he is not my match by far. After 20 more days, it will be the day of the match. I will completely and thoroughly defeat him.”

“Mmm. Not only must you win, but you have to destroy his confidence. Let him suffer humiliation as much as you can within the rules. You can even severely wound him and disable him. Even if his body was cured with some rare and precious medicine, it would still leave behind a hidden injury and affect his future martial arts cultivation. This Lin Ming relied on some fortuitous encounter to want to fight with me and he wants to take my woman, I will grind him under my foot and make him unable to ever recover!” Zhu Yan said this with a cold eye. He subconsciously gripped his fists as if he were crushing Lin Ming into dust.

…

The Seven Profound Martial House’s cultivation rooms were divided into the seven major killing arrays that each represented metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, and lightning. They were the Golden Soldier Hall, Wood Puppet Lane, Icy Pond Waterfall, Lava Cave, Boulder Slope, Violent Wind Tunnel, and Thunder Valley.

These seven major cultivation rooms were not normal magic arrays, but true killing arrays. A magic array could only create illusions in the mind. No matter how real these illusions seemed, they weren’t like killing arrays and could only kill a person in their mind.

Once they awoke, the illusion would be broken, and it could thus not serve to cultivate Body Transformation. Only a true killing array could be used to cultivate and achieve the body's potential.

Of these seven major killing arrays, each could have 12 people practicing on them at once. Because the killing arrays' activation and maintenance consumed a large quantity of true essence stones, many times more than magic arrays, the spots were limited. Therefore the time allotted was based upon one's ranking on the Ranking Stone.

If one was lower than rank 180 on the Ranking stone, they could practice for half a day every month.

If they were between rank 150 and rank 180 they could practice for an entire day.

As for ranks above 150, there were many stipulations, and the time allotted was accurate to the hour. For ranks higher than 50, the time was increased every ten ranks, and as for the final top three ranks, they could practice for ten days every month. Factoring in rest and time to cultivate, they could be practicing inside a major killing array whenever they wanted to.

Lin Ming had checked his jade slip. His own rank was 126. He could either practice for two days all day, or he could take 24 hours and divide at as he liked. If he did, Lin Ming would have to make an appointment and then come at that time. Naturally that spot would be emptied for him for that period. But if he didn't arrive for his appointment, then his time for that period would still be used.

The seven major killing arrays were located at seven different places within the Seven Profound Valleys. To get there, at the center of each array was a total transmission array. All disciples' practices were arranged by the transmission array's administrative office.

"All new students, you have the chance to enter any one you like for one hour. This time does not calculate into your total time. Before entering the killing array, you may let the elder responsible for the arrays help you choose an appropriate difficulty. Here is a reference chart with approximate difficulty levels and their relative rankings. You may have a look.” The elder responsible for the transmission array slowly said. He then registered everyone’s scores, and slowly passed them a reference chart.

Lin Ming look at the chart. His own rank was 126. This corresponded to a seventh level of difficulty.

Out of the metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, and lightning arrays, which one should he choose?

As Lin Ming hesitated, Hong Xi said, “I’m warning you, these seven major killing arrays are the real deal. If you mess up inside you will be severely injured. So do not choose a difficulty level that is too high, or more than you can handle. Also, of the seven major killing arrays, do not choose the Thunder Valley. The others are okay. If you have any Soul Gathering Pellets you should consider taking one. Although you only have one hour of test time inside, this time is also precious. This practice may be able to stimulate your body’s potential.”

Lin Ming just happened to have a Soul Gathering Pellet on himself. He listened to Hong Xi’s advice and ate it.

And he couldn’t choose the Thunder Valley? Was the Thunder Valley too difficult? Or were there other reasons? Lin Ming didn’t ask, but instead finally decided upon the Icy Pond Waterfall!

The seven major cultivation arrays created the realm using the local environment, and their designs were specialized to the terrain and topography of the land. The construction design was very ingenious.

Lin Ming chose the Icy Pond Waterfall. Originally it was a natural waterfall of the Zhou mountains, but after being transformed by the array, the pouring water of the waterfall now contained a formidable pulse and energy. The pond that lay underneath the waterfall also became incomparably and extraordinarily cold, with a bone-piercing chill.

As he arrived at the canyon where the Icy Pond Waterfall was, Lin Ming could distantly hear a sound like thunder as if an underground earthquake was happening. The Zhou mountain waterfall was the highest waterfall in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, and the height from top to bottom was 300 feet. The current of water above directly impacted down below, and the strength of the water was similar to being hit by a sledgehammer. The deep pond below was a result of then thousand years of that waterfall impacting below; the depth of the pond had already reached 1000 feet. Under that terrifying water pressure, even a master at the Pulse Condensation Period would shrink back at the sight.

As Lin Ming arrived at the Icy Pond Waterfall, there was giant curtain of water as if the entire pond was steaming. This was from the torrential downpour and immeasurable amount of water that was splashing dozens of feet into the air. The rumbling sound of the waterfall even faintly shook Lin Ming's heart with its resonance.

"Great waterfall!" Lin Ming shouted with his heart filled with emotion. This was the first time that he had seen such a marvelous wonder of nature.

Chapter 71 – Cultivation Method Complete

Chapter 71 – Cultivation Method Complete

…

…

…

As Lin Ming walked before the waterfalls array, a deacon was there waiting, who appeared to be around 20 to 30 years old. The deacon had already been given advance notice. He said to Lin Ming, “Junior Apprentice Lin, you may go in. There is a one hour time limit. The array was especially for new disciples today. The difficulty has already been set at level seven. Are there any questions?”

‘Mmm, what a troublesome fellow senior apprentice!’ Lin Ming thought, but he did not care too much. This seventh level of difficulty corresponded to the ranks 110 to 130. His ranking of 126 was near the bottom of that. He would start from the foundation, and then come back again for a more difficult challenge later.

“You can enter, although you just barely suffice to enter the seventh level of difficulty – your cultivation is limited. If you cannot handle being inside, come out to rest. Generally, one cannot stay inside for too long. If you are in there longer than your body’s limits, you may end up damaging your health.” The deacon senior-apprentice reminded Lin Ming.

“Thank you fellow Senior Apprentice. If I cannot bear it, I will say so.”

“Mmm, good.” The deacon senior apprentice said as he opened the array.

Looking in from the outside, the Icy Pond Waterfall was an ordinary waterfall, just a massive one. But as he made a few strides towards it, the scenery suddenly changed. Lin Ming arrived at a new space, and was unable to sense anything from the outside.

Although the Icy Pond Waterfall was a killing array, it also contained an illusory magic array inside. Because of this, 12 people could practice in the array at the same time and yet not be able to see anyone else. This was because the illusory magic array would isolate one from all 11 other people as they cultivated, after all, no one was willing to cultivate next to others that were watching.

Lin Ming turned around for a moment, and behind him had already become a completely dark, jet-black world. It was as if the waterfall was suspended in the starry night sky. The icy pond of the waterfall was a thousand feet wide and deep blue like glacial ice. Although it wasn't too far from the waterfall, it was unusually quiet and still, and not a single waterline was seen. There was a dense fog that floated over the surface and covered half of the icy pond.

"Just look, you can feel the chilling cold. This cold air is even frostier than the winter north wind!" Lin Ming took a deep breath, revolved his true essence to the limit, and then plunged into the frigid pond.

"Good cold!"

After jumping into the icy pond, Lin Ming felt the freezing cold. He had no doubt that if this was in the outside world, the water would already have frozen over. But in the Icy Pond Waterfall array, this frigid water actually remained liquid, it was just amazing.

Lin Ming circulated the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' to the extreme. His muscles also continuously trembled, as they were trying to give off a feverish heat in order to resist the cold.

"This water, how does it feel a little like mercury?" Lin Ming began attempting to dive, but found out that the water contained a bewildering resistance. As he splashed some water around, it was just as if he was playing with mercury. The water was obviously much thicker and denser than ordinary water, and also more sticky. If this was a normal pond, then if he exhaled deeply all the air in him, he would naturally sink into the water. But in this icy pond, it easily felt as if as if he were being pulled downwards; even swimming forward was slower.

“It was said that this icy pond was a thousand feet deep. I don’t know who could have possibly measured it. With my current condition, let alone diving a thousand feet, even a few dozen feet would be extremely difficult. The man who could dive all the way down is truly a master!”

The deeper the icy pond was, the colder it would be. The chill felt as if it had a faint spiritual intellect to it. It was as if it were trying to worm its way into his skin through his pores, sneak into his blood, and penetrate to his marrow and freeze it. Lin Ming didn’t doubt that if someone who didn’t know martial arts came in here, they would instantly be frozen to the point where they would be unable to move, their blood would then turn to ice also, and they would die.

“My hands and feet are already starting to freeze, what an amazing fierceness.” Lin Ming had already submerged himself 30 feet down. At that depth, Lin Ming felt countless cold needles stabbing his body. Because the cold here was to the extreme, the cold feeling became an aching pain. He was unable to dive further than here; otherwise he would be in danger.

“Although I cultivate the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ and my true essence is much more condensed than a normal martial artist’s, my cultivation is still too weak. Others that can come to the seventh difficulty level are usually those at the Third Stage of Body Transformation or above.”

“Mmm? Is that a stone platform?” Lin Ming found that several dozen feet away, there was a flat stone outcropping on the wall. He made an effort to swim over, concentrated his true essence, and then stood on the stone platform.

Martial artists could take deep and long breaths. Although Lin Ming had not achieved the Viscera Training stage, with one breath he could stay underwater for about the time it took to burn an incense stick. He sat down cross-legged on the stone platform and began to use his full energy to revolve the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’.

As everything all around him was unusually quiet, it was as if Lin Ming had entered into a separate space and time that had paused. Even as the chilly water of the icy pond flowed past him, Lin Ming could only hear his long and slow rhythmic heartbeat like a pendulum that was swinging back and forth, without a trace of chaos.

At that moment, it seemed as if Lin Ming's soul had risen from his body. His body had not even the tiniest bit of sensation, he didn't have a shred of perception, and had completely become absorbed in a trance-like state. Each and every inch of his muscles were resisting the chilly water. His true essence didn't seem to be completely under his control; it was as if it was revolving by itself. It was like it had fused to the inertia in his body, and the circulation of true essence in his body was running down incomparably exquisite lines. It was far more accurate than Lin Ming's revolution of true essence and was also several times faster!

Lin Ming had just reached 'True Primal Chaos Formulas' first layer's Large Success stage and the speed at which he could revolve his true essence had increased. But now, it had even hastened more than before. It could be said that this was double the threshold of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula'. It was a pity that this circulation speed was not something that Lin Ming could consciously drive, but was being done automatically which he could not achieve.

After an unknown amount of time, Lin Ming suddenly woke up from this trance state. "Mm? What's the matter with me?"

There was a slight tightness in his chest from holding his breath. Lin Ming exercised his true essence and surfaced from the water, gasping for breath. As he breathed in the icy air, this air was also similarly bone-chilling, and when he breathed in the air, it coated the edges of his mouth with a layer of frost.

Lin Ming recalled the state he had been in a moment ago. That feeling was similar to the feeling of all the tiny units in his body resonating together as was described in the "Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist', the marvelous boundary when the breathing of his entire body and all its tiny units would be consistent. If a normal martial artist's breathing exercises were due to their conscious decisions and thoughts, then Lin Ming's breathing just down was as if the tiny units in his body had all breathed spontaneously, as if Lin Ming's consciousness was separate from it. His true essence has deferred to its instinct and revolved completely of its own will, and its revolution route could be called perfect!

Lin Ming returned to that stone platform, as he wanted to reproduce that state. However, he couldn't realize this state again.

"Mmn!? The 'True Primal Chaos Formula' seems to have improved further and achieved the Perfect stage! When Lin Ming revolved the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' to resist the cold, he impressively discovered that his true essence circulation speed had increased by 40%. This was the Perfect stage of 'True Primal Chaos Formulas' first layer!

Large Success is easy; Perfect is hard! Lin Ming thought that he would achieve the Perfect boundary of the first layer of 'True Primal Chaos Formula' faster than normal, but he did not think that he would achieve it so quickly!

"Was this because of the state I was in a moment ago?" Lin Ming's heart jumped crazily.

It was said that sometimes a martial artist would enter a mysterious state, for instance what they called 'sudden enlightenment' and so on. The ancient books had recorded that a martial artist would sit under a Bodhi tree, and meditate under a cliff for one night. Overnight their hair would turn white, they would awaken and discover that their cultivation method had reached the Large Success stage, and their cultivation had progressed by leaps and bounds! There were even ancient legends that said one could obtain enlightenments and become an immortal, and break from the mortal void.

Perhaps just now he had entered a similar state to that 'sudden enlightenment' or some other marvelous boundary!

Sadly, he had only been in that state for a very short time. Even so, he had obtained enormous benefits from it.

A martial artist's strange conditions were elusive. It had nothing to do with a martial artist's talent, only a martial artist's heart, consciousness, and other mysterious and profound things. Although Lin Ming's talent was ordinary, but concerning the heart of martial arts, he did not lose to any other talent in the history of Sky Fortune Kingdom!

Since he was unable to enter that state again, Lin Ming continued to use the chilling water of the icy pond to temper his body, along with circulating his true essence. The efficacy of the Soul Gathering Pellet was also stimulated. Lin Ming's inner true essence gradually flowed from his muscles to the edges of his viscera…

True essence covering viscera was the symbol of the boundary of the Third Stage of Body Transformation, Viscera Training!

Lin Ming had accidently half-stepped into the realm of the Third Stage of Body Transformation. The breakthrough was only a matter of time!

A martial artist that practiced Body Transformation to the Second Stage of Flesh Training would have true essence moisten their muscles and perfuse the surface with it. In the Third Stage, Viscera Training, the true essence would cover the internal organs and protect them. Onwards to the Fourth Stage and Fifth Stage, the true essence would penetrate deeper and deeper into the body, until it would alter muscles and forge bones.

Nevertheless, in practice, it was impossible to cover each and every inch of a martial artist's flesh and blood with true essence.

Generally, a martial artists would pour true essence into their muscles. This sort of force-feeding mechanism was limited in its ways. A spot of muscle that absorbed too much true essence would arrive at a bottleneck. On the other hand, because of oversight, some muscle areas would not be moistened or exposed to true essence at all. Like this, it would leave behind an 'empty point' in the body.

But in actual combat, every 'empty point' was also an exploitable weakness. Also, later in the future when one tried to reach the peak of Body Transformation, the Pulse Condensation Period, these 'empty points' would become a huge hindrance.

But it was different in the icy pond. The icy pond stimulated each and every inch of the body's flesh. The cold chill entered through the pores and stimulated the whole body; muscle, blood, and even the marrow!

To deal with this kind of cold, one had to revolve true essence and tremble the muscles to resist. This required that each tiny unit in the body would resist the cold too, and absorb true essence!

Gradually, every inch of blood and flesh would be tempered by true essence, and thus remove the 'empty point'!

Realizing this, Lin Ming took a deep breath. It was no wonder why all these years the Pulse Condensation Period martial artists of Sky Fortune Kingdom had almost all come from the Seven Profound Martial House. They had such mysterious and profound resources, in addition to outstanding talent and outstanding cultivation methods. To reach the breakthrough to the Pulse Condensation Period was just far easier than it was for a normal martial artist. Not even mentioning the likes of Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and other top-tier talents, even if it was only a third-grade talent, as long as they spared no effort in supporting them with rare and precious medicines, they could also break through to the Pulse Condensation Period!

"Before, if I had chosen to enter the first-level Sky Fortune Martial House, even if I had the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' I still would not be able to train each and every inch of my flesh and blood! Just this icy pond has such miraculous effects. The other cultivation rooms must also have other mysterious effects. These seven major killing arrays are just too precious!"

"I must increase my rank as soon as possible so that I can freely enjoy the resources of the seven major killing arrays!"

Chapter 72 – Large Success of the Spirit Cure Symbol

Chapter 72 – Large Success of the Spirit Cure Symbol

Chapter title is a spoiler, you can highlight it to read it now, or see it at the bottom.

…

…

…

“Mmm? I have a question. What if this seventh level of difficulty is not suitable for my ranking?”

The deacon senior apprentice gave a wry smile and said, “You ask that, but you do not need to stay inside. The icy pond has a chilly pervading cold. If you go in for a quarter hour you will be frozen stiff. Coming out to rest is also normal. Junior-apprentice Lin you went in and didn’t come out. While it’s impressive that you persisted inside, please be sure you do not damage the health of your body.”

“Thank you Senior Apprentice Brother for your advice; I truly did have some problems supporting myself inside.” Lin Ming casually said in a perfunctory tone.

“No need to be polite. My name is Xie Dong. Two years ago, I was also a disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House. I graduated, but afterwards I stayed at the Seven Profound Martial House to be a deacon. Junior Apprentice Brother, you have such strength at such a young age, really you have boundless prospects in the future. Senior Apprentice, I, although I am considered somewhat stupid, have some accumulated experience and knowledge in cultivating. If later Junior Apprentice Brother has any questions or unclear areas, feel free to ask me.

Xie Dong's cultivation had paused at the peak of Bone Forging. For Pulse Condensation Period martial artists, as long as they were willing to devote their life in service to the Sky Fortune Kingdom, they would be given a title. Naturally they would not remain here to be a deacon. Xie Dong had already heard of Lin Ming's name, and now that he met him, he saw that this young man's strength was as the rumors said. Although Lin Ming's talent was reported to be ordinary, Xie Dong believed that for Lin Ming to create such miracles at 15 years of age, he definitely would be able to do so again in the future. Thus this gave birth to a wish in his heart to become friends with Lin Ming.

"Thank you Senior Apprentice Brother." Lin Ming courteously said a few words, and then excused himself and left.

The day was getting late. After Lin Ming returned to his residence, he grabbed the spear, Penetrating Rainbow, and shot straight towards the martial arts room. He had to digest the day's harvests.

…

The days at Seven Profound Martial House were boring and fulfilling. Every morning, Lin Ming would wake up before sunrise and get out of his bed. He would sit in the courtyard by himself and breathe the pure air of the early morning. After he adjusted his body's condition and mind to an empty state, he would begin to cultivate Strength Training's 'Flow like Silk'.

After unifying with the 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist', Lin Ming would compare the martial skill to the memories in his mind. He discovered more and more of the marvelous of this true essence vibration. This was not solely an ingenious method to utilize strength; in a way it could be said to compare favorably with the 'sudden enlightenment' state. If he was able to grasp this boundary, then his profit from it would be boundless!

Lin Ming often sat like this for the entire morning. He would not eat or drink or even move a single half-step. In the evening, he would eat a bit and take a short rest, and then he would head to the Icy Pond Waterfall to temper his body in the freezing waters. Lin Ming could only cultivate in the killing array for 24 hours a month. Each minute of these 24 hours was precious. For Lin Ming to save time, he only spent a half hour in the Icy Pond Waterfall before he came out. But for Lin Ming, even a half hour as an enormous advantage.

During the night, Lin Ming would start to practice his medicinal inscription symbol, because although Lin Ming had more options to cultivate and practice, the time that he had to practice his inscription symbol had reduced. However, because Lin Ming had achieved the Perfect first layer of the "True Primal Chaos Formula', his rate of improvement hadn't slowed down by much.

In the process of practicing the medicinal inscription symbol, Lin Ming also practiced the 'True Primal Chaos Formula'. The consumption of true essence stones was very quick; every day he would have to consume at least one true essence stone.

Lin Ming entered his tenth day at the Seven Profound Martial House.

Late at night, as stars flickered in the sky of the Zhou Mountains, there was a deep silence. Lin Ming sat in a log cabin in the back mountains, his fingers moving as if they played a beautiful melody on a zither in the air. Each movement formed a colorful inscription symbol as they floated and overlaid each other.

Within these last ten days, after undergoing countless defeats time and time again, Lin Ming had finally lowered the error rate to 31%. With the increase in his true essence from the Perfect first layer of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula', Lin Ming was just barely able to support the time it took to draw up the medicinal inscription symbol.

As each material was dragged flying into the air by Lin Ming's true essence, they were guided together under the influence of his soul force, where they formed dazzling lines and symbols. Lin Ming's forehead slowly became covered in beads of sweat, however, his expression gradually revealed an excited color.

"Fourth-level vicious beasts blood, last inscription symbol…completed! I've finally completed it!"

In the moment Lin Ming withdrew his true essence, there was a flash. The several dozens of floating inscription symbols and lines beamed with light as they reflected off of each other in midair, and finally condensed into a sublime flame image. This was the 'Lower Spirit Cure Symbol'; it was finally finished!

Lin Ming took a piece of symbol paper and the medicinal symbol branded itself onto the symbol paper. For this little thing, Lin Ming had spent a tremendous amount of time and money. When all was complete, Lin Ming gratefully took that small slip of symbol paper and felt its energy fluctuations. He had an enormous feeling of complete satisfaction.

How could he not be excited? As long as used this medicinal inscription symbol on either of those two top quality pills, their efficacy would be multiplied by several times!

Those two pills were originally top quality goods that had no market price; what kind of concept was it was to increase its efficacy by several times? Perhaps now, even the Seven Profound Valleys would value it as precious!

It had to be known that after a pill's efficacy doubled, that pill's value would increase by ten times, or even several tens of times!

This was because whenever a martial artist took a pill, their body would grow resistance. For instance, when Lin Ming had taken the Golden Deer Pill, the first one he ate had the best effect. The second Golden Deer Pill only had half the effect as the first one, and third only had half the effect of the second. Therefore even if Lin Ming was wealthy, he had only bought six Golden Deer Pills; three for himself and three for Lin Xiaodong. This was because once he had too many, the effects would be negligible and there might even be no effect. Even if he had eaten ten thousand, the last 9999 pills combined would be inferior to the first!

The Golden Snake Scarlet Pill and the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill were also like this. But if a pill's efficacy doubled, then its grade would also be increased and it would be the same as taking a higher-grade pill. Its effects would increase over the original by several times!

Understanding these truths, Lin Ming was naturally excited in his heart. But he did not immediately use this medicinal inscription symbol. Instead, he put it away, then took a good, deep bath. Afterwards he sat in meditation and breathed, adjusting the breathing of all the tiny units in his body, and adjusting his mental condition to its top form.

Lin Ming was very clear on what would happen. If he ate this pill, he would surely undergo a breakthrough to the next stage, Viscera Training. This was a very major event, and if something went awry, his internal organs would suffer damage. But this Golden Snake Scarlet Pill's efficacy was increased several times, it had become a genuine, dangerously potent drug. Once something went wrong, his body would not be able to support the extreme effects of the pill, and his organs would burst and he would die.

Therefore before taking the pill, Lin Ming had to guarantee that his mind and body were at optimum condition, without even the tiniest flaw.

Lin Ming practiced full breathing for half an hour, then took up a true essence stone and revolved the Perfect first layer of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula', letting his body's true essence slowly restore and return to peak condition.

After all conditions had reached the peak of what they could be, Lin Ming pricked his ears to listen. After practicing the 'True Primal Chaos Formula', Lin Ming's keen perception had risen by several fold. It was late at night now, and all was quiet. In a radius of a hundred feet he could hear nothing but the call of insects. After determining that there was nobody lurking nearby, Lin Ming took the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill along with the 'Lower Spirit Cure Symbol'.

"The 'Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill' is far more formidable. If its efficacy increases by several times I may not be able to withstand its effects. I will start with this 'Golden Snake Scarlet Pill'!"

Chapter 73 – Viscera Training Time

Chapter 73 – Viscera Training Time

Chapter title is a spoiler, highlight it to read it now or see it at the bottom.

…

…

…

Lin Ming took a deep breath, and then crumbled the ‘Lower Spirit Cure Symbol’ in his hands. At that time in the dark room, a beacon of light lit up as the flame symbol blazed to life. A wreath of flames wrapped around the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill, and this continued for several blinks of the eye, before it finally coalesced into beautiful lines of fire and formed a tiny flame brand on the golden red colored pill. A brilliant flash of light lit up the entire room for a brief moment, and finally the room was restored to darkness.

Done.

Lin Ming slowly raised the pill and placed in into his mouth, then swallowed.

With such a potent and dangerous pill like this, after eating it, it was impossible to be relaxed like when he had taken the Golden Deer Pills. The effects of the drug would suddenly leap in his body, and attack him like a violent, fierce storm. This utterly painful process was what Lin Ming had psychologically prepared for.

The pill was cool like a piece of ice as it easily slid down his throat and into his stomach. There it subsided quietly, without anything occurring.

Lin Ming knew that this was only because the pill had not melted. He silently revolved the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ in his body.

After a quarter hour, Lin Ming's body began to turn cold, and a chilly current converged in his blood and spread through his whole body along his bloodstream. His body felt as if it were lost in the Icy Pond Waterfall of the seven major killing arrays. The deep arctic chill broke out in all directions of his body.

Cold sweat dripped down from Lin Ming's forehead, and flowed past his arms and shoulders. It was as if Lin Ming's body had become a leaking water bag.

The Golden Scarlet Snake was a cold-blooded animal. Its nature was that of the extreme cold elements, and the snake's gall bladder was where all this frosty cold air converged in its body. To cultivate with a pill made with this snake gallbladder was to feel an incomparably intense frosty chill!

To suppress this wintry chill in his body, Lin Ming began to revolve the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' again. However, it was as if his true essence had been frozen, and his entire body was shivering with cold trembles, and the operation of his cultivation art slowed significantly.

At the Icy Pond Waterfall, Lin Ming had felt the numbing chill of the icy pond enter through his pores and permeate his body, but this Golden Snake Scarlet Pill was eaten directly! The cold energy melted in his insides and infused through even his marrow!

If this was a normal Golden Snake Scarlet Pill, Lin Ming would have easily been able to resist this bone penetrating chill with his thick and deep true essence. However, Lin Ming had used the 'Lower Spirit Cure Symbol' to enhance the efficacy of this Golden Snake Scarlet Pill by several times. If another martial artist with this cultivation had eaten it, they would probably have already died from having their blood freeze.

Facing such potent side-effects, even with Lin Ming's amazingly strong will, he found it hard to resist!

If true essence was like water that flowed through the pipe, this chilling cold was freezing that water! The circulation of true essence was blocked everywhere!

Lin Ming's mind was clear on this, if he could not supply the flow of true essence to his entire body, then some parts of his body would freeze, and they would begin to necrotize and rot.

Although Lin Ming was able to defend the majority of his body with true essence, if even a small part of his body necrotized from freezing, then it would be a waste of the efficacy of the pill. Not only that, but if with those injuries, even if he managed to prevent a permanently debilitating disability, he would also need to temper his body with true essence again and would waste a massive amount of time.

Thinking this, Lin Ming clenched his teeth and forcefully stimulated his true essence to vibrate through his entire body. With the vibration of true essence throughout his entire body, he would break the chilling cold which had halted the flow of true essence in his body.

Originally Lin Ming thought that his whole body would be in agonizing pain, and he would be in a situation where he would find it difficult to focus and concentrate his consciousness to cause all the tiny units in his body to achieve true essence resonance. However Lin Ming didn't think that at this moment he would smoothly enter into that elusive state of Strength Training's 'Flow like Silk'!

This was because the frost chill had penetrated into his marrow, and all the countless tiny units in Lin Ming's body had to spontaneously resist this invasion of cold energy. Together, they shared hatred for a common enemy!

"In breaking down this pill, my body actually had this sort of change?" Lin Ming was too busy to be joyful about this. He started to urge his true essence to break past the frost chill that had gathered in his body. At the same time, these tiny units in his body also independently began to absorb true essence and temper his body.

This change wasn't only on the surface of his muscles, but also in his organs.

True essence Viscera Training!

Lin Ming had already touched the threshold of the Third Stage of Body Transformation, but after taking this Golden Snake Scarlet Pill, Lin Ming was finally able to take that final step and pass into and officially enter the Third Stage of Body Transformation

In the Third Stage of Body Training, true essence would temper the organs and protect them. One's fighting capacity would increase, and not only that, but a martial artist's internal organs would be moistened by true essence. The heart and lungs would be strong, and blood and vitality would be rich. Breaths would be long, and endurance would greatly increase. With the muscles under the irrigation of such rich blood, one's strength would also gradually increase!

After the breakthrough into Viscera Training, true essence began to pass into his internal organs. Lin Ming felt the pressure on him plummet at the same time. The impedance of the cold energies on his true essence's circulation was also broken one at a time. The cold, chilling energies within his body were dispersed and absorbed by him to use to temper himself.

At this point, Lin Ming had survived the cold air's attack on his body. The Golden Snake Scarlet Pill's efficacy had been perfectly absorbed.

The only step left over was the consolidation process.

After about two hours, Lin Ming opened both his eyes. He let out a long breath, but because this breath was too cold, as soon as it touched the outside air, it immediately turned the water humidity in the air into a white fog. This single breathe of Lin Ming's had unexpectedly formed a straight, gassy arrow in the air that reached out five to six feet.

Breathing in was like a serpent, breathing out was like an arrow; this was exactly the sign of Viscera Training. However, not all Viscera Training martial artists could achieve this step. Some martial artists' Viscera Training was not thorough or complete, and their true essence only covered a small part of their body's internal organs, or might even just be on their surface, and not throughout. With martial artists like these, even though they were also at the Viscera Training stage, their strength was far weaker than those whose Viscera Training was complete.

Strength Training, Flesh Training, Viscera Training, Altering Muscle, Bone Forging, Pulse Condensation; these six stages were all the basis for the foundation for every step ahead of them, and had to be done step-by-step in an orderly fashion. Drawing an analogy, if a martial artist's Flesh Training was not thorough and complete, and then the true essence on the surface of their muscles would be limited. This limited true essence would be a major weakness and flaw that would cause even more problems down the road in Viscera Training. As a result, with each mistake on each step, it would be worse and worse, and finally it would be impossible to step into the Pulse Condensation Period. This was the fundamental reason that the majority of martial artists in the Sky Fortune Kingdom were unable to achieve the Pulse Condensation Period for their entire lives.

Therefore, with the Sky Fortune Kingdom's martial artists, even if they were at the same stage, there would be massive disparities between their individual strengths. To the disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House, jumping past these challenges was not an unusual occurrence. If instead you couldn't do that, then that was simply just too disappointing.

For seven days after reaching the Third Stage of Body Transformation, Lin Ming didn't go anywhere. He stayed in his dwelling to digest the remaining effects of the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill, and to consolidate his cultivation. During this time, Lin Ming had completely and cleanly consumed all the rest of his ten true essence stones.

Seeing these true essence stones that had completely lost their luster, Lin Ming forced a smile and shook his head. These things, he feared he would need hundreds, if not thousands, and even that might not be enough. If he wished to reach the higher levels of martial arts faster, then these true essence stones were essential! But if he wanted to exchange for more true essence stones, then he would need unbelievably massive sums of gold. It was most probably a futile attempt to get that much gold by selling 'Overwhelming Rune' inscriptions.

'The date of the match with Zhang Cang is getting closer and closer. I wonder how much my strength has increased. How high can I reach on the ranking stone?'

Lin Ming was faintly anticipating the next ranking war at the Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment. He didn’t have an opponent now to test his strength, so he could only go to the strength measuring room.

Chapter 74 – Steady Spear At The Waterfall

Chapter 74 – Steady Spear At The Waterfall

…

…

…

When Lin Ming arrived at the strength measuring room, it was the afternoon, and there were only four or five people inside testing their might. Lin Ming walked over to an obscure corner, took aim at the stone column, and freely let loose a punch!

“Peng!”

The stone pillar began to fiercely rock as the light beam jumped up and down crazily. Finally it stabilized at almost four feet.

3900 jins!

It was only a casual punch, and yet it had this result.

With this result, Lin Ming was quite satisfied.

Initially, during the Strength Trial at the entrance examination, the Heavenly Abode’s elder senior apprentice Ling Sen had come to demonstrate for them. He had also casually punched the stone column which had a 4900 jin result.

Lin Ming remembered this moment crystal clear, thus this time he intentionally had also casually punched the stone column to see how vast the gap between him and Ling Sen was still.

"Lin Sen is at the peak of the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation, and is a half-step to reaching the Bone Forging stage. I am just at the early Third Stage of Body Transformation, but the difference is only 1000 jins… after I achieve the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation, my strength will definitely surpass his!

"But, a martial artist cannot just look at strength only. Strength is my strong point, but I can't let the other aspects fall behind…"

With that in mind, Lin Ming took a deep breath and wholly relaxed his body. He stood there with his eyes shut for a moment, and subtly adjusted his breathing. The tiny units of his body gradually became consistent in their breathing rhythm, and had achieved a slight resonance frequency. Then, Lin Ming jerked his eyes open, sent his strength rolling up from his thighs to his waist, and instantly erupted forwards from his static condition.

Bang! The fist pounded the strength measuring stone column like a malicious steel weight. And the vibration did not end! The light beam first shot up to 4200 jins, then oscillated up and down between 4200 jins and 4300 jins, back and forth!

When a normal martial artist measured his strength on the stone column, the light beam would flash several times, rise high and then fall. But Lin Ming's fist actually caused the light beam to fly up and down between 4200 jins and 4300 jins for over 20 breaths of time!

This was true essence vibration, the effect which was achieved by cultivating Strength Training's 'Flow like Silk'!

"My fist strength is between 4200 jins and 4300 jins. But using this 'Flow like Silk', I can actually send my fist strength into my opponent's body and attack his vital organs. Also it continually attacks! A martial artist who didn't completely undergo Viscera Training would just die. Even a martial artist at the Large Success of Viscera Training, or even a powerhouse of the Altering Muscle stage would be severely wounded and spit blood after receiving my fist!"

“The ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ had recorded that the ‘Flow like Silk’ stage was both a marvelous and purely terrifying destructive power! What a fearsome cultivation method! But the nameless senior who left behind the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ only managed to achieve the formidable destructive power, and didn’t find out how to resonate all the tiny units in the body. Like that, it would be useless for cultivation; it really was incomplete.”

…

It was the 21st day since Lin Ming had arrived at the Seven Profound Martial House.

In the early morning, Lin Ming carried his long spear, Penetrating Rainbow, to the Icy Pond Waterfall of the seven major killing arrays. The deacon who was responsible for managing and protecting the array, Xie Dong, saw Lin Ming arrive and greeted him with a smile. “Junior Apprentice Brother, you are here quite early. You are truly diligent.”

“Good morning Senior Apprentice Brother.” Ling Ming politely greeted. Lin Ming preferred to come to the Icy Pond Waterfall in the mornings and evenings, because during these times there were fewer people who reserved an appointment, and he could usually make an appointment during this time whenever he wanted.

“After a quarter hour the array will open again. This Junior Apprentice Brother will be at the third position, seventh level of difficulty.” Xie Dong said.

“Mmm…so, I want to adjust the difficulty today to the eighth level.” This was the first time Lin Ming had come to the Icy Pond Waterfall after reaching the Third Stage of Body Transformation. The truth was, at the seventh level, Lin Ming could dive deep to reach an area that was cold enough. However this time Lin Ming carried the Penetrating Rainbow with him. The Penetrating Rainbow was 820 jins; if he dived too deep, it would be difficult to swim back up.

“Mmm? Eighth level of difficulty? Xie Dong said with surprise. The eighth level of difficulty corresponded to between rank 80 and rank 110. Lin Ming even wanted to challenge this difficulty? Xie Dong wanted to urge Lin Ming not to advance so recklessly, but at this moment he noted differences in Lin Ming's true essence fluctuations. "Junior Apprentice Brother, you broke through?"

Xie Dong certainly remembered that the last time Lin Ming had come here, he was only at the peak Second Stage of Body Transformation. He didn't think that he would reach the Third Stage of Body Transformation so quickly.

"Mm. I just broke through recently."

"Haha, congratulations. But Junior Apprentice Brother, you just broke through, strength growth is actually a very slow and steady process and takes time to accumulate. Are you sure that you want to enter the eighth level of difficulty?"

"Mmm. I've already decided. I won't change my mind."

"Alright." Xie Dong shrugged and complied with Lin Ming's request.

After a quarter hour, Lin Ming carried the Penetrating Rainbow and moved towards the Icy Pond Waterfall. Xie Dong looked and discovered that Lin Ming's footsteps were very heavy. Every time Lin Ming stepped on the mountain valleys grass, it would leave a deep impression in the ground.

Xie Dong's eyes narrowed in suspicion. His vision focused on the long box that Lin Ming was carrying. "Such a long box is probably a spear or a halberd or something like that. For each step to make such a deep impression in the ground, that must be a very heavy weapon, at least 700 or 800 jins. For this Junior Apprentice Brother Lin to choose such a heavy spear or halberd as his choice of weapon, how rare!"

As Lin Ming entered the array, he placed the Penetrating Rainbow on his back and jumped into the icy pond.

The eighth level of difficulty icy pond's chilliness was really turned a notch, but with Lin Ming's new breakthrough, this cold was just about right for him.

Before, when he had dived into the icy pond, when he was submerged in the water he could feel that the icy pond had a formidable resistance similar to mercury. But now, shouldering the 820 jin heavy long spear on his back, Lin Ming actually plummeted straight down!

Fiercely revolving his true essence, Lin Ming slowed down in the water. He kicked his legs together and with the Penetrating Rainbow long spear on his back, he arrived at a rock protrusion near the surface of the icy pond.

Leveraging the rock, he sprung upwards. Lin Ming jumped onto a second rock protrusion and continued this several times into he arrived under the waterfall.

The Icy Pond Waterfall not only had the icy pond, but it also had a waterfall. The waterfall was equally incomparably cold, and not only that, but there was a current of water that crashed downwards from a height of 300 feet. That force's strength was no less than 1000 jins!

Under this waterfall was a giant rock that was immersed in the water. It was for martial artists who wished to cultivate under the waterfall. This giant rock was specially left there by the master who had created this Icy Pond Waterfall, otherwise how could there be such a rock underneath that raging waterfall, it would have already been worn down and broken into pieces by the years of endless impact!

"What a tremendous crushing force!" Lin Ming tried to stand up atop the rock, but discovered that it was very difficult to steady himself. Although Lin Ming had taken his time to find a small place that wasn't too affected by the waterfall, the Icy Pond Waterfall water here was especially heavy, and the flushing of it underneath his legs and over his body caused him to not be able to stand up straight.

"Hah!" Lin Ming directly thrusted his spear into the rock. He gripped onto the Penetrating Rainbow's spear shaft and came to a stop. A thousand jins of water impacted down on Lin Ming's upper back and shoulders. The pain felt as if iron hammers were continuously pounding on his back, and it was as if his body was being torn apart. Moreover, this waterfall was also incomparably cold, and because of the rate of water flow over him, the heat of his body dispersed even quicker. Even as Lin Ming revolved the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ he could feel the chilling cold unceasingly penetrate even into his marrow, as if he was being stabbed with countless, painful needles.

Lin Ming grasped the long spear and adjusted all the breathing of the tiny units in his body. He adjusted his body to touch the ‘Flow like Silk’ boundary, and then used this vibration of true essence to barely stand firm.

With each breath he took, Lin Ming’s inner true essence circulation started to become peaceful, and he found himself more and more stable, until he could finally stand up straight.

Lin Ming withdrew the Penetrating Rainbow from the rock. He did not sweep out with his spear, or thrust with his spear, or make any movement with his spear. Instead, he simply stood there with his spear in hand.

The spear was the king of a hundred soldiers. It could sweep, cut down, dance like a flower, thrust straight; although these spear moves seemed simple, but to practice to the Large Success stage was not easy at all! Spears were difficult to learn, and even harder to master!

A spear was a long weapon. An inch longer, and inch stronger, the spear followed this rule. Spearplay’s Large Success involved the coordination of true essence and martial skill to display its truly terrifying striking power and killing scope. Therefore all the generals that fought on a battlefield used the spear or a halberd. A sword could only be used by the military strategist.

But in reverse, an inch shorter would be an inch weaker. Although swords and sabers were inferior to a spear’s striking power and their killing rage was smaller, they won in accuracy. And more so a dagger! That was why many assassins used daggers! This advantage was easy to hide. A dagger was fast, accurate and easy to fatally strike an opponent! That was why it was unheard of for an assassin to carry around such an obvious weapon like a spear.

That's why to practice a spear, the first goal was accuracy!

Lin Ming had been deboning for years. Regardless of whether it was a saber or a spear, he was already very accurate. In the Ten Thousand Killing Array, he had the accuracy to cut the spider's silk as it rapidly flew at him. However, this was in a situation where there was no resistance at all. In actual combat and facing an enemy's martial skills, the energy flow of true essence would be wreaking havoc everywhere. To use a spear to break that energy flow and thrust towards the enemy's weak point was not easy.

Therefore, the first step of practicing a spear was neither the spear skills nor the spear moves, but to keep the spear steady at all times!

At this time, Lin Ming gripped the Penetrating Rainbow with both hands. His hands were wrapped around the latter half section, and 70% of the shaft was soaked in the crushing force of the waterfall, as it resisted the unending 1000 jins impact!

Penetrating Rainbow was originally 820 jins. The spear shaft was eight feet in length, and the spearhead was eight inches. With such a long spear, in addition to its weight, to maintain steadiness underneath the maddening force of a 300 foot waterfall drop, was easier said than done!

Even with Lin Ming's arm strength of 4200 jins, the end of the spearhead was wobbling up and down, as if confused!

"It's really heavy!"

Lin Ming gritted his teeth. He stayed like this awhile, until he began to feel his arms go numb, and the spear tip was starting to be pressed downwards by the force of the waterfall.

Chapter 75 – Day of the Gambling Match

Chapter 75 – Day of the Gambling Match

…

…

…

Lin Ming was simultaneously controlling his arm strength and also revolving his true essence to resist the bone-chilling cold of the waterfall. Even if he had the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' supporting him, it was not something he could support!

His arms began to shiver and blue veins started to clearly stick on out his forearms. After half an incense stick of time, there was a dull thumping sound as Penetrating Rainbow's spear point struck the rock, it was finally pushed down by the endless waterfall. Lin Ming half knelt on the rock, gasping for breath in big gulps. He felt as if both of his lifeless arms weren't his anymore. He tried to stand, but found that the true essence in his body had been mostly consumed.

"Splash!" The waterfall was rushing down the rock and swept him off. He raised his spear and stabbed the rock, steadying his body in the water.

"About a quarter hour. It seems that's my limit. What a pity, if I had true essence stones I would be good. I could quickly restore my true essence and continue practice. My gambling match with Zhang Cang is approaching. Even if I win his true essence stones, I can only use them for a while until they're gone. Afterwards I have to try to find a solution to this."

…

Time passed day-by-day. Lin Ming practiced his spear for two hours every day in the Icy Pond Waterfall. While practicing the spear, he also tempered his body at the same time. The efficacy of the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill had been completely absorbed by him at last. Although Lin Ming's cultivation had paused at the early Third Stage of Body Transformation, he had thoroughly consolidated this stage.

After eight days passed, Lin Ming had used up all 16 hours of practice time that he had saved up. On the last day, Lin Ming was already able to carry the Penetrating Rainbow and stand under the waterfall with one breath for one hour. From the beginning, his long spear would be nearly motionless, but only half an hour later would there be a small vibration.

After, two days passed. It was exactly one month since Lin Ming had arrived at the Seven Profound Martial House. Lin Ming rose from bed early like he usually did. He stood before the wooden door of his residence under the canopy shade of the century-old trees. He grasped the spear, Penetrating Rainbow, in his hand and stretched out both hands in front of himself while holding it. Like this, he held 820 jins completely and evenly perpendicular to his body.

At the spear point of Penetrating Rainbow, he had placed a small porcelain bowl. This bowl was filled to the brim with water. Under Lin Ming's deep and steady strength, this bowl of water hadn't even lost the tiniest amount of water. It was as if it were placed on a flat tabletop.

Since he had exhausted the remaining hours he could use the seven major killing arrays for, and could not go to the Icy Pond Waterfall, Lin Ming had practiced with these self-created methods.

Lin Ming practiced until it was almost noon. He ate a very simple meal and took a small rest, then he carried Penetrating Rainbow and went straight to the Seven Profound Martial House's martial stage. Today was the day he had his gambling match with Zhang Cang…

………

Although it was already the fall season, the high noon sun was blazing intensely hot. This was the time of day at which Yang energy was thickest in the air. The most sinister baking sunlight was at three quarters to noon. The average person would usually opt to not go out at this time, and instead stay at home and take a nap. However, right now at the Seven Profound Martial House's martial stage was actually gathered a large crowd of people.

Most of these people were disciples from the Seven Profound Martial House's Earth Hall and Human Hall. There were also some disciples of the Heavenly Abode that had arrived. Although at this time the sunlight was smolderingly hot, these people's faces didn't have the slightest hint of sweat. It was as if the skies were clear and they were leisurely looking around with an unflustered appearance. Obviously none of these disciples were mediocre.

Today was the day that the four people, Lin Ming, Zhang Cang, Wang Yanfeng, and Liu Mingxiang, had their gambling match. In this group of four, two of them were the first and second place of the new disciples that had taken the entrance exam, and the other two were strong old disciples. This stunt was enough to arouse the attention and interest of many disciples in the Seven Profound Martial House.

The disciples of the Human Hall had come to take a look at the liveliness and have some fun, but the disciples of the Earth Hall and Heavenly Abode had come to take a look at their future rivals. Whether it was Lin Ming or Wang Yanfeng, their later rankings would certainly rise. Even a disciple of the Heavenly Abode would not look down upon them. Of course, that was a matter for later. Right now, their strength was still in its infancy.

"There isn't much suspense in the outcome of these matches. In the past battles that the new disciples participated in, the newbies almost never won against the old disciples, much less this time; they are up against Liu Mingxiang and Zhang Cang who are both experts. Lin Ming and Wang Yanfeng really do not have any hope at all." A disciple of the Heavenly Abode slowly said as he looked at the sundial near the martial stage.

"Indeed. But don't underestimate this Lin Ming. When he first entered the Martial House, I didn't care about him at all, but in the last Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment he was able to reach rank 126. This is an extraordinary result. This time he is up against Zhang Cang. If he were matched against Liu Mingxiang, then that Liu Mingxiang would not do well and might possibly fail miserably."

"You think that Liu Mingxiang would lose to Lin Ming? Come on, Lin Ming's talent is limited. Although he managed to get a high ranking in the Ten Thousand Killing Array, he is still far from Liu Mingxiang. He may have taken the two top-quality pills that were rewarded from the entrance examination and absorbed some of the effects, but do you think that in a month he would be able to overtake Liu Mingxiang?"

"Talent? You are only staring at Lin Ming's talent? No matter what sort of fortuitous encounter Lin Ming had, or what sort of precious pills or herbs or medicines he had, the strife that he was able to manifest so far has completely disregarded his talent. Those who look down on him just because of his talent will suffer a loss!" A disciple of the Heavenly Abode firmly said.

"Hehe, you sure think highly of that Lin Ming. Last time I went to the depository, I specifically paid attention to the cultivation method that Lin Ming chose…" The Earth Hall disciples deliberately dragged out his tone as he saw how much attention he had attracted, "This Lin Ming chose the cultivation methods for 'Foundation Spear Technique' and 'Foundation Movement Technique'. He also had some incomplete 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist' martial skill that he picked up. With just these, how much progress could he have with just one month? Before this, he was able to obtain rank 126 because he took the rare and precious Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and Golden Snake Scarlet Pill at the same time. Even a pig would find its cultivation increased. This Lin Ming's talent is limited. He cannot practice higher-grade cultivation methods and martial skills. Depending on these two foundation manuals, on what basis would he be able to surpass Liu Mingxiang?"

Lin Ming had raised a ruckus at the Ten Thousand Killing Array, so it was very easy for him to arouse the interest of the other Martial House disciples. Many people had taken a look at the cultivation method that Lin Ming had selected. This matter was very easy; his name was the only one on the jade slip note, and those who wanted to see could see it.

"What? 'Foundation Spear Technique' and 'Foundation Movement Technique'? Lin Ming chose those two? How could that sort of cultivation method have any sort of formidable might? I thought for sure that he would choose something like the 'Shadowless Art' or the 'Absolute Nine Yang' and so on…"

“Ha, ‘Shadowless Art’? ‘Absolute Nine Yang’? Those cultivation methods are certainly good but do you think an average person can cultivate them? Have you forgotten Lin Ming’s talent? I think that fellow’s perception is also limited; all he knows is his own self-knowledge, therefore he chose these two sets of simple skills to learn. Wait and see, this Lin Ming’s rising halo will be put down!” The disciple’s tone and smirking expression indicated that he took pleasure in Lin Ming’s misfortune. Lin Ming had only been at the Seven Profound Martial House for a short time, and yet his ranking was already ahead of this man. This really made him feel sick in his heart.

At this time, there was a commotion in the ground. A distant group of people parted to make way. Two men, both about 20 years old, walked up side by side.

One of the two was a gaunt and pale looking man. His facial expression was cold and resolute. A black, heavy sword was strapped to his back. Although he was just walking, his entire manner seemed as if it were a razor. He was like a cold treasure sword that had been drawn out. It really gave those around him a huge feeling of pressure as he walked past them.

The other man was robust and tall, with a vigorous expression. His whole body was thickly corded with muscles, and he carried an eight foot long dark purple staff on his back. Each step this person took was steady and silent. If each footprint was measured, it would be discovered that the spacing between every two steps was completely consistent. It was six feet every time, no more and no less! This was the result from cultivating the top movement technique from the Seven Profound Martial House’s depositories, the ‘Six Foot Step’!

“Ling Sen!”

“Ta Ku!”

“These two people also came to watch the match!”

Among those who came to watch the gambling match, most were disciples of the Earth Hall. Disciples of the Heavenly Abode had come, but most of them were around rank 50 and

60. This was around the very end of the Heavenly Abode rankings. They had come out of fear that they would be pushed out by those in the match today, so they came to take a look at the situation.

But Ling Sen and Ta Ku were the top two unshakable existences on the Ranking Stone. They also came to see an internal gambling match of the Earth Hall?

Chapter 76 – Ling Sen, Ta Ku

Chapter 76 – Ling Sen, Ta Ku

…

…

…

In the Seven Profound Martial House, Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and Zhuang Guanyu were the three existences that held absolute authority. Even the several core disciples could not compare with their fame and reputation. After entering the Seven Profound Martial House, starting from the third year, these three people had been situated in the top three ranks of the Ranking stone and had maintained that until the present. There was not a single person yet who had been able to pressure them from those coveted positions!

The Ranking Stone only showed one's rank, they did not display the score. Therefore, of these three top-tier geniuses, no one knew how many more points they had achieved over the fourth ranked disciple. There were rumors that Zhang Guanyu had more than ten thousand points over the fourth place disciple, but whether these rumors were real or fake, no one knew.

In brief, Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and Zhuang Guanyu were three people of immeasurably deep and profound strength. They whispered that Ling Sen, who was half a step into the Fifth Stage of Body Transformation, could compare with the strength of a martial artist at the Pulse Condensation Period!

Such a dominant and compelling person, who could they possibly pay attention too?

It was impossible for it to be Zhang Cang or Liu Mingxiang. Although they were strong, but in the past two years they had not managed to crack into the Ranking Stone's top 100.

They were absolutely not anyone that Ling Sen or Ta Ku would bother paying attention too. Wang Yanfeng was also unqualified. Although he had a superior fourth-grade talent, but in Ling Sen and Ta Ku's eyes, he was also an insignificant existence that had barely entered the top 180 for the first time. He was just pathetic. So the only youth here worth concerning over, it could only be Lin Ming!

They must have come to take a look at him. During the first Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment he had participated in, he had managed to reach rank 126. Even that Zhang Guanyu was inferior to him in this regard. They came to see just who this young man was!

At this moment, in the crowd, Zhang Cang and Liu Mingxiang had also arrived. But because Ling Sen and Ta Ku were here, their limelight had been completely snatched away. No one even paid attention to these two who were in the gambling match.

Zhang Cang wasn't narcissistic enough to think that these two people, Ling Sen and Ta Ku, would come here to a gambling match to watch him. They were certainly here to check out Lin Ming. As Zhang Cang realized this, he felt very uncomfortable in his heart. Even if he did win, Ling Sen and Ta Ku's focus wouldn't be on him!

"Humph! How dare you look down on me! I will let you know that your judgment was stupid and wrong!" Zhang Cang secretly clenched his fists.

Liu Mingxiang also gritted his teeth, "Zhang Cang, not only do we have to win, but we have to win cleanly and perfectly. In five moves we will step these reckless kids underneath our feet, otherwise others will really think we are worthless trash!"

"Humph. I will leave a memento on that Lin boy's body. I will let him regret this gambling match!" As he said this, Zhang Cang traced the hilt of the slender knife in hand, and his cold eyes flashed. This was also a request of Zhu Yan; not only attack his heart of martial arts, but leave him a severe wound that would hinder his future cultivation.

By now, Ling Ming and Wang Yanfeng had also arrived. Today, Lin Ming came dressed in black clothes, and carried an eight foot long dark purple spear on his back. This 820 jin spear, Penetrating Rainbow, did not bend Lin Ming's back in the slightest. His posture was like the Penetrating Rainbow, he was standing just as straight!

Although his cultivation was only at the Third Stage of Body Cultivation, the thick true essence combined with his domineering manner, gave birth to a feeling among the crowd that this young man was truly unshakable!

"This Lin Ming, good!" Ta Ku opened his mouth to say. "That spear he is carrying, it looks like the shaft is made from dark purple elastic iron, just like my staff. With such a pole, the spear weight is definitely above 800 jins. The shaft contains a horrific strength. If he dares to use this weapon, then he must be very self-confident in his own strength."

Ta Ku's weapon was a staff. It was a weapon which very few martial artists used. Not many of them used spears either, but you could still see them in the army. But a staff had no use in the army. Only some temples that did not speak of taking lives would use them.

A staff was known as the virtuous man among soldiers. Ta Ku's staff was 860 jins, and the staff body was made from dark purple elastic iron. Two golden bands made from cloud vein wrought iron circled both tips. Although it was not a treasure, if it was used to hit a human, there would be a horrific force.

Describing the power of top staffs and clubs, they were described as 'a hit is a wound, a touch is death'. This was because a staff body contained a terrifying trembling crushing force! If they were struck they would be wounded, but if they were directly pounded, even iron armor would explode open!

Therefore, for this kind of staff-like weapon, a treasure staff's might was instead inferior to one made from dark purple elastic iron!

The spear was equally wonderful in certain aspects like the staff, but the style was more complicated and diverse.

Ta Ku used a staff. To someone like Lin Ming who used a spear, it gave birth to warm feelings. After all, these two weapons were similarly rare.

“What a pity. He’s up against Zhang Cang. I cannot see this Lin Ming’s situation. I don’t know if in the future he will soar into the skies, or if he will vanish into the masses. But right now, he is not Zhang Cang’s match. Do you think that this Lin Ming can exchange several moves with Zhang Cang?” Ta Ku turned to his side and asked Ling Sen.

Ling Sen looked at Ta Ku and responded with a question, “You’ve determined that Lin Ming will lose?”

“Oh? You really think that this Lin Ming can win?” Ta Ku thought that he had already given Lin Ming a high appraisal. Ignoring his talent, he could be a possible rival. But he didn’t think that that Ling Sen would give an even higher appraisal!

The reason that Ling Sen was paying attention to Lin Ming was partly because he had achieved rank 126 on his first Ten Thousand Killing Array Assessment, and partly because Lin Ming’s heart of martial arts in the Dream Trial had managed to break his record! This was the proof that Lin Ming’s heart of martial arts had already surpassed him!

Ling Sen’s innermost feelings and thoughts were firm and resolute like iron. He had no desires and was also just. But that didn’t mean he was without flaws. His flaw was his killing heart. Ling Sen’s bloodlust was too great, his deathly aura was too heavy, and it was difficult for him to eliminate the evils within his heart.

Certainly, Lin Ming also had a flaw. There was not a single person in this world that did not have a flaw in their heart, so it only depended on whose flaw was smaller.

Ling Sen’s talent was an inferior fourth-grade. In the Seven Profound Martial House where geniuses gathered, this talent could only be considered decent. What he actually relied on to achieve his current position at the Seven Profound Martial House, was his formidable heart of martial arts. He had seen his own shadow in Lin Ming, and wanted to have a look at him and see whether he could create a miracle.

Ling Sen said, “I’m not sure if Lin Ming will win or lose, but what I know is that when Lin Ming was in the Ten Thousand Killing Array, his cultivation was at the peak Second Stage of Body Transformation. Now he is already at the Third Stage of Body Transformation.”

“Mm? It seems so.”

Unless the gap in strength was too large, a martial artist could tell another’s cultivation at a glance. Naturally, Zhang Cang and Liu Mingxiang also noted Lin Ming’s growth.

“This boy, he has such dog-sh*t luck. He actually made a breakthrough during this time!”

“It’s because of the efficacy of the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill. If he ate these two miracle pills together, the drug’s efficacy would slowly release into his body. It’s not too strange that he would breakthrough to the next stage, otherwise it would have been impossible to reach Rank 126 on the Ranking Stone. Zhang Cang, you have to be careful. Don’t be careless and suffer a loss.”

“Humph. You think too highly of him. He cultivates the ‘Foundation Spear Technique’ and the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’. There is no depth at all in these skills. Even if he practiced them to the Large Success stage, they wouldn’t have any power. Only because he has no self-confidence would he be an idiot and choose these two manuals. My knife skill is quick. Compared to his unwieldy spear, he won’t even be able to touch the hem of my clothes!”

By now, the sundial’s shadow was at quarter to noon. Time was up!

Chapter 77 – When I Need to Draw it, I Will Draw it

Chapter 77 – When I Need to Draw it, I Will Draw it

…

…

…

Liu Mingxiang was the first to jump on stage. He pointed his longsword at Wang Yanfeng and said with a smile, “Wang Yanfeng, come up to die!”

“Humph.” Wang Yanfeng coldly snorted and fearlessly walked on stage. Today was the day that he and Liu Mingxiang’s match had also been decided upon.

“This Wang Yanfeng has some backbone after all.” Lin Ming could see that Wang Yanfeng wasn’t faking his confident manner. The gap between Wang Yanfeng and Liu Mingxiang was just too wide. Even if Wang Yanfeng’s talent was gifted, it was impossible for him to catch up to Liu Mingxiang in just one month. But confronted with even the slimmest chance of victory, he also faced this with a courageous manner. This was quite a rare and commendable feat.

Wang Yanfeng drew out his own treasure sword, and poured his true essence into it. The green runes of the ‘Nine Paths of Truth’ came shimmering alive one at a time. Its brightness and solidity was many times more than when he had fought with Lin Ming.

During this month, Wang Yanfeng had cultivated like a madman with nothing to lose. Although he hadn’t been able to reach the peak of the Third Stage of Body Transformation, his true essence Viscera Training had reached a much more thorough and complete degree, and he had consolidated his cultivation at the Third Stage of Body Transformation.

Seeing Wang Yanfeng's 'Nine Paths of Truth' swordsmanship, Liu Mingxiang smiled, "Looks like you've made a little progress, but it's a pity, you're still far short of reaching me."

"Now die!" Liu Mingxiang shouted. He drew his sword and slashed at Wang Yanfeng. As it cut through the air, his sword turned purple-gray and began to glitter with a strange phosphorescent light.

Peng peng peng! Liu Mingxiang's sword let loose three strikes. The treasure-rank sword howled with a piercing sound as Liu Mingxiang sent his true essence flowing into it.

Wang Yanfeng stepped back slightly, the symbols of the 'Nine Paths of Truth' began to dazzle with light on the sword blade. With a stroke of his sword, Liu Mingxiang's sword wind was split apart and weakened. With another cut of his sword, Wang Yanfeng broke apart Liu Mingxiang's first sword wind slash.

Cha cha cha! Wang Yanfeng wielded his sword as he stepped backwards. He cut down Liu Mingxiang's sword wind again and again and again. By the end of this terrible onslaught, the wind strokes had shredded his clothes to tatters, but Wang Yanfeng's step was calm, and though his true essence was rapidly fluctuating, it wasn't chaotic.

"You have some decent skills, but you are far from ready! 'Heavenly King's Crushing Chakram Blade'!"

Liu Mingxiang took a step forward. The haze of true essence around his body began to glow with a rich purple light. It billowed off of him like a cloud of steam. His three foot long sword began to glow with a glorious light that ran up the blade's length. True essence congealed together and formed a rapidly spinning Dharmic Wheel at the end of the sword point.

"'Heavenly King's Crushing Chakram Blade'! This is a high-level martial skill from the depository. Practicing it is beyond difficult, but this Liu Mingxiang actually succeeded in doing so!"

"Wang Yanfeng is in danger!"

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes as he looked at this martial skill 'Heavenly King's Crushing Chakram'. It was true essence that had formed a strange self-contained system. Just looking at it, there appeared to be no flaw, but Lin Ming had discovered that Liu Mingxiang was forcefully using this martial skill; he had only reluctantly managed to use this 'Heavenly King's Crushing Chakram'. In Lin Ming's eyes, he could see that there were too many flaws in the circulation of true essence in the treasure sword.

If Wang Yanfeng wanted to win, his only path was to rush forward right now and interrupt Liu Mingxiang from supplying his sword with true essence. However, Wang Yanfeng was not an inscription master and he did not know the 'Overbearing Soul Tactic', and thus it was impossible for him to see the path of true essence in Liu Mingxiang's sword.

At this time, Wang Yanfeng moved. Although Liu Mingxiang's aura was intimidating, Wang Yanfeng had resolved to swim against this stream! He was clear; this was his only chance. He must attack before Liu Mingxiang's Dharmic Wheel had condensed to its top form, and defeat his 'Heavenly King's Crushing Chakram'!

Wang Yanfeng brandished his sword. His target was not the 'Heavenly King's Crushing Chakram', nor was it the weak spots in the flow of true essence of Liu Mingxiang's treasure sword. Instead, the point he would strike was Liu Mingxiang's chest. Wang Yanfeng's sword infused with true essence and it seemed as if lightning was flashing up its blade, carrying with it the crashing sound of wind and thunder. This was the martial skill 'Thundercloud Strike'!

This move was the high-grade martial skill that Wang Yanfeng had chosen at the depository!

At that time, Wang Yanfeng had chosen three manuals at the depository; 'Divine Yang Power', 'Swan Feather Fall', and 'Thundercloud Strike'. These three cultivation methods and martial skills were not simple at all; even with Wang Yanfeng's outstanding talent, it would be impossible for him to learn them in a short period of time.

'Divine Yang Power' was a skill used to enhance one's cultivation. It would take more than one night and day or even a month with this to improve one's cultivation and strength. The 'Swan Feather Fall' was a movement technique, but it also could not increase his combat prowess immediately. Therefore Wang Yanfeng had used most of the remaining month to cultivate the "Thundercloud Strike'. Now, his 'Thundercloud Strike' had finally shown some results, and he believed that with this move he would create a miracle!

"Naïve! You've only practiced the 'Thundercloud Strike' for one month, how could you even think of comparing it to my 'Heavenly King's Crushing Chakram'!?" Liu Mingxiang shouted. The longsword that held the 'Heavenly King's Crushing Chakram' slashed down. The spinning Dharmic Wheel fell down as if it were a black hole that could swallow all of life.

Bang! The 'Thundercloud Strike' and 'Heavenly King's Crushing Chakram' smashed into each other. The intense collision of true essence became a ballooning force of air pressure, as if it were the epicenter of a tide that was rushing outwards. In the air, lightning flashed and the sound of thunder drowned out all noise. Wang Yanfeng and Liu Mingxiang were both tossed backwards flying upside down!

Liu Mingxiang cartwheeled several times in the air before he finally managed to stab his sword into the ground and stabilize himself. Blood roiled in his chest, almost sending him tumbling; he was almost seriously injured in that last collision.

However, Wang Yanfeng's situation was miserable. His body was tossed backwards like a rag doll for several dozen feet before he hazardously slammed into a big tree. His leg was stained crimson from an injury. He opened his mouth and coughed up blood.

"Wang Yanfeng lost!"

“Predictable. But it’s already very impressive that he could force Liu Mingxiang to this degree.”

“How can a new disciple beat an old disciple? Isn’t everyone here a talent? We have stayed here at the Seven Profound Martial House for several years, if we lose to a new disciple, then the years that we spent here cultivating are all useless! This Lin Ming will also absolutely lose! These newbies, we don’t beat them around and they think that they can ride on our heads! An old disciple of the Earth Hall said with disdain as he curled his lips.

Wang Yanfeng supported himself with his sword as he fell down on one knee. His wiped away the blood on his lips with his left hand. He coldly stared at Liu Mingxiang, and with a wave of his arm, threw five true essence stones at him!

“What you took from my hand today, I will demand double in the future!”

Wang Yanfeng fiercely spat out these words. Each word was heard by all as it echoed on every surface. He turned and propped himself up with his sword, and dragging his broken leg, left step by step.

Lin Ming gazed at Wang Yanfeng as he left. He couldn’t help but feel a sense of admiration towards him. Wang Yanfeng just had horrible luck. Ever since he entered the Seven Profound Martial House, he had suffered setbacks again and again, and was repeatedly frustrated and defeated. Arrogant geniuses had their breaking point, and would find it impossible to recover from all these disasters. But this Wang Yanfeng had persevered through all this, it really was worthy of admiration.

“Lin Ming, come up, it’s your turn! You are going to share the same fate as that loser!” After Liu Mingxiang had left, Zhang Cang stepped onto the stage. Zhang Cang’s Ranking Stone rank was 103. His strength was most likely far superior to Liu Mingxiang!

Lin Ming carried Penetrating Rainbow strapped to his back onto the stage and stood opposite to Zhang Cang.

The match between Wang Yanfeng and Liu Mingxiang was only the appetizer. This match between Lin Ming and Zhang Cang was the main play that most of the people present had come to see!

Among these people, the new disciples naturally hoped that Lin Ming would use everything he had to win. Even if he lost, he couldn't lose too horribly. But the old disciples wished that Zhang Cang would win with an overwhelming superior victory, and teach these new disciples who believed themselves to be infallible, the gap between the new and the old!

Seeing Lin Ming come on stage, Ling Sen and Ta Ku immediately stood at attention. The reason why Lin Ming had reached rank 126 on the ranking stone would immediately become clear!

Before the match officially begun, Zhang Cang took out a slender, thin saber. The handle of the saber didn't have a hilt guard; the saber blade was directly linked to the hilt. The saber blade was two feet and eight inches long, and no wider than three inches. The blade edge was thin like paper, and it could be seen with a single glance that this saber was to be wielded at the extreme limits of speed.

Without a doubt, this saber was a treasure. In the Seven Profound Martial House, if a disciple was in the top 100 ranks, even if they were not part of an aristocratic family, they could easily be recruited into a major power and receive certain perks. To them, giving away a treasure was simply nothing!

"Draw your spear, Lin Ming. I want to take a good look at exactly how well you've practiced the 'Foundation Spear Technique'. Have you reached Small Success? Such a simple cultivation method, one month should be enough to reach Small Success."

Zhang Cang's smiled sardonically. Let alone Small Success of the 'Foundation Spear Technique', it would be no threat to him even if it were Perfect. Since Ling Sen and Ta Ku paid so much attention to Lin Ming, then he would jump over Lin Ming by maliciously stepping him underneath his foot!

Zhang Cang let his true essence flow into his slender saber. He saw Lin Ming standing still and his brow wrinkled. “Are you going to draw your weapon?”

Lin Ming slowly responded, “When I need to draw it, I will draw it!”

“What did you say!?” Zhang Cang’s heart burned with rage. To think that as a superior disciple of the Earth Hall, he was actually looked down upon by a new disciple of the Martial House. Moreover, this Lin Ming’s strength was less than his. He simply didn’t know what it meant to die! “You will draw it when you need to draw it? Good. Good! Very good! Today I will have a very good look and see if you even have the chance to draw your spear!”

Chapter 78 – Empty Hand Meets The Naked Blade

Chapter 78 – Empty Hand Meets The Naked Blade

…

…

…

“This Lin Ming, he’s too crazy!”

“He’s facing Zhang Cang and not immediately bringing out his weapon. Zhang Cang’s saber is famous for its speed, and Lin Ming’s weapon is actually a heavy spear. That kind of weapon is originally slow, and he’s also carrying it on his back. I bet he will be too dazzled by Zhang Cang’s cutting force to even respond. He might lose without even having the opportunity to draw out his weapon!”

Ta Ku also quietly shook his head. “This Lin Ming is too careless; does he want to use his empty hand to meet the naked blade? Zhang Cang’s saber is a treasure that can slice apart hairs. After he pours his true essence into it, it will be able to cut through iron like mud. Even if Lin Ming were at the Large Success of Bone Forging, it would be impossible to receive it with his bare hand!

Ling Sen silently looked at Lin Ming. Although he didn’t understand Lin Ming’s reasons, but he knew, with Lin Ming’s heart of martial arts, he wouldn’t be someone who was arrogant and underestimated his opponent. He must have some idea of what he was doing; he would see what was happening soon enough.

“Since you want to die so much, let me help you!” Zhang Cang fiendishly grinned. From his still condition, he suddenly and violently moved. His body on the martial stage turned into a black phantom, and the sounds of ta ta ta footsteps could be heard; it was like pouring rain hitting a lotus leaf.

This was fast to the extreme! This was the top movement technique – ‘Seven Star Drifting Cloud’!

Zing! Suddenly, the chilling sound of a blade vibration was heard ringing in the air. Zhang Cang’s saber rushed out from a cunning angle straight upwards from the bottom of Lin Ming’s ribs!

The saber wasn’t using any martial skill; however it was still a thin, narrow, treasure saber that Zhang Cang had poured his thick true essence into. The speed was too extreme, almost to the point of disbelief. This was truly an impeccable, irresistible saber!

Even a martial artist skilled in movement would not be able to dodge this blade faster than the knife. Even a light weapons master would find it difficult to block Zhang Cang’s knife that attacked from such a cunning angle at the armpit’s side!

Much less with Lin Ming’s movement abilities, which were only from the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’. His spear was also insufficient in terms of speed, and this spear was actually strapped onto his back!

How could he dodge this? Ling Sen’s pupils had dilated; his full concentration was completely on Zhang Cang’s saber. He could not predict what would happen next!

But at this moment, Lin Ming suddenly stretched out his right hand and reached out to that slender saber with his palm!

Seeing this, Ta Ku’s eyes immediately widened like a full moon. This Lin Ming was too insane!

Hand against knife! Empty hand meets the naked blade!

That blade was a treasure saber that had true essence poured into it! Did this Lin Ming not want his hand anymore!?

The corners of Zhang Cang’s mouth twitched. He grinned like a demon. ‘Using a hand to block? Haha, if I do not cut off your hand, then my 12 years of saber practice are all in vain!’

In that split second, no one should have been able to respond in time. But Lin Ming’s palm had already touched Zhang Cang’s saber.

In that moment, the countless tiny units in Lin Ming’s body breathed in a complete, consistent rhythm. True essence resonated as the exhalation and inhalation became one. This true essence was like a gushing tide!

True essence vibration; this was Strength Training’s ‘Flow like Silk’!

For an instant, that intense true essence vibration was transmitted onto that slender saber. The saber unexpectedly began to violently tremble! At that moment, Zhang Cang’s true essence was washed out of the blade and replaced with Lin Ming’s true essence!

Zhang Cang’s grin suddenly froze. He only felt his hand go numb; he almost couldn’t hold the saber!

“What!?” This turn of events was too sudden. Before he could figure out what was happening, Lin Ming’s fist had already punched out. The fist directly impacted towards Zhang Cang’s chest. Although this fist seemed ordinary, it was actually filled with vibrating true essence, and was the so-called ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’. If this fist made solid contact, at best Zhang Cang would only be left with half a life!

Zhang Cang had been in the army for many years. The long time that he had spent killing and slaughtering on the battlefield had formed a natural intuition towards danger. Facing Lin Ming’s fist, Zhang Cang’s instinct told him that this fist was an inconceivable danger! He immediately moved his feet and fiercely used the Large Success of ‘Seven Star Drifting Cloud’. Zhang Cang’s body suddenly and violently drew back and avoided that danger hidden within Lin Ming’s fist.

But although he had managed to dodge the fist, Zhang Cang had been scratched by the fist wind. With just the little fist wind touching his body, Zhang Cang felt as if his heart jumped, his lungs shrank, and his stomach was affected and moved by some strange frequency. It made the blood in his body violently surge and up well, and he wanted to spit blood!

"This… what is happening…?" Zhang Cang was frightened because of the reversal of blood in his body, and he staggered a little before almost stumbling onto the ground. He took a few steps back, and only by using his saber could he support himself to stand.

Seeing this exchange, the audience could only foolishly look on. Just what had happened in that split second a moment ago? Lin Ming's empty hand had blocked Zhang Cang's saber! Then a punch had shot out, and with only the fist wind, Zhang Cang was forced back a few steps and almost collapsed on the floor!

The old disciple of the Earth Hall subconsciously rubbed his eyes. He almost thought that he was going blind.

"Heavens! Did I see this correctly? Is Lin Ming really a human? Are his arms and legs made from iron? Is he invulnerable? How could an empty hand meet the naked blade!?"

"Zhang Cang dodged that punch. How was he forced back several steps?"

"How is it possible? Lin Ming was only rank 126 on the Ranking Stone one month ago. In this short time, how could he become so fierce?"

"No kidding. When he had entered the Seven Profound Martial House, he was not much stronger than Wang Yanfeng, but several days later at the Ten Thousand Killing Array ranking war, Wang Yanfeng only got to around rank 170, but Lin Ming was rank 126!"

As soon as these words spread, there was nothing but quiet. Everyone felt a foreboding chill in their hearts. This speed of improvement was simply too horrifyingly monstrous!!

Before, the old disciple of the Earth Hall had looked down on Lin Ming for studying the 'Foundation Spear Technique' and 'Foundation Movement Technique'. He still did not dare to believe what had happened a moment ago. He continued muttering under his breath, "It's not right… not right… something's wrong… what he cultivates is the 'Foundation Spear Technique'… this is impossible…"

…

"Big Brother, did you clearly see that fist just now?" Ta Ku asked Ling Sen who was standing on his side. His face had an imposing expression.

Ling Sen wrinkled his eyebrow. "I didn't clearly see. Lin Ming's hand that touched that saber must have some profound and abstruse mystery inside. But it wasn't so exaggerated. The palm touched the saber body but not the blade edge, therefore his palm was uninjured. But this Lin Ming is truly too bold. With such a fast saber, he still dared to do that! If something went wrong, then he would have lost his hand!"

Ta Ku said, "Even if it's just the flat part of the blade, with just a palm, the blade edge would definitely hurt the hand if he tried to grab it, not to mention that Zhang Cang's saber was infused with true essence. It can cut iron like mud. This Lin Ming dared to do this; he must have absolute confidence in himself. No wonder Lin Ming said he would only draw his spear when he needed to. He simply believed that Zhang Cang was not worthy of his spear!"

As Ta Ku said this, he could feel his heart tremble. When he had first arrived at the Seven Profound Martial House, with only a month of time, there was no way that he could challenge disciples who were rank 100 on the Ranking Stone.

…

Lin Ming's palm had been just like Ling Sen had said. He did not touch the saber's edge. Lin Ming's strikes had always been accurate and precise. It was only with the support of Strength Training's 'Flow like Silk' and protection from the vibration of true essence that Lin Ming had dared to use his hand to block the saber!

By now, Zhang Cang had already moved several dozen feet away from Lin Ming. There was already a faint horror and alarm that was creeping into his eyes. That palm and fist that Lin Ming had displayed a moment ago had left an unfathomably deep feeling in his heart!

Zhang Cang's advantage was in close-quarters combat. To deal with a weapon like a long spear, close-quarters combat was the best way to win. But now he didn't even have a smidgen of confidence to face Lin Ming's fist and palm.

Clenching his teeth, Zhang Cang gripped his saber hilt with both hands. “Lin Ming! You truly gave me a good surprise! But don't think you'll win, you will meet my strongest blow!”

Even if he could not fight in close-range combat, Zhang Cang also had a martial skill!

Chapter 79 – Flood Dragon Goes to Sea

Chapter 79 – Flood Dragon Goes to Sea

…

…

…

Even if he could not fight in close-quarters combat, Zhang Cang also had a martial skill!

With a shout, Zhang Cang's aura suddenly erupted. True essence flooded into the slender saber, and that dazzlingly bright saber began to be covered with a dark red sheen the color of blood!

"It's the 'Sunset Cut'!"

"This Zhang Cang actually managed to cultivate this high-grade saber martial skill!"

The entire audience's eyes were wide with awe. This match that should have been an easy victory for Zhang Cang had turned into a fierce struggle between two evenly matched opponents. Now even with Zhang Cang utilizing the 'Sunset Cut', no one present thought that Lin Ming would lose.

Zhang Cang lifted that slender saber above his head. A burst of light the color of fresh blood surged from Zhang Cang's saber. Zhan Cang's surroundings had been illuminated by a deep red brilliance that converged together into a blooming sunset glow. This phantasmal image continuously streamed into Zhang Cang's body.

Seeing this, Lin Ming slowly drew the spear that he had carried on his back. He had crossed the threshold of Strength Training's 'Flow like Silk' that allowed him to let his empty palm meet a naked blade, but he hadn't reached the level of empty palm meeting martial skill.

He held the spear with one hand, his forearm parallel to the spear shaft, and his elbow pressing against the spear end. This 820 jin Penetrating Rainbow that was eight feet eight inches long was kept steadily horizontal. The spear stood motionless, as if he were a general cast in iron. This was a basic starting stance of the 'Foundation Spear Technique' – 'Iron Bridge Blocks the River'.

"Lin Ming brought out his spear!"

"This is a starting stance of the 'Foundation Spear Technique'! Heavens! It really is the 'Foundation Spear Technique'!? This Lin Ming wants to use the 'Foundation Spear Technique' to resist the 'Sunset Cut'? He's too crazy!

Everyone's eyes widened without exception for fear of missing a single detail of this fight. If Lin Ming had been using a top-tier martial skill, they would not have anticipated this so much!

'Foundation Spear Technique' to 'Sunset Cut'! What will the result be?

From this point on, none of them dared looked down any longer at Lin Ming's 'Foundation Spear Technique'. Because of Lin Ming's domineering aura, this set of foundations that were the most simple spear skills had become deep and inscrutable as well!

The 'Foundation Spear Technique' was not some profound high-grade cultivation method. In the entirety of spear arts, it was only the most basic foundation for spear moves. It was because this most basic foundation had been combined with Lin Ming's terrifying 4200 jin strength, and with the thick true essence from the 'True Primal Chaos Formula', and the boundary of Strength Training's 'Flow like Silk', that the power of this spear had reached such an intensely horrifying level!

Zhang Cang clenched his teeth. The muscles of his face had been complete twisted and made him unrecognizable. With his current strength, he barely managed to utilize this ‘Sunset Cut’. This was pushing his limits.

“Lin Ming, go die!”

Zhang Cang gave a loud shot and the slender saber in his hand released an inexhaustible rose-red cloud. The air around him began to resound with deep rolling sound as if a fierce current were rushing back and forth. The wind of this red saber formed a billowing red cloud that seemed as if it would blot out the sky. Some of the nearby disciples of the Human Hall had weak cultivation, and their faces discolored as they could not withstand the berserk pressure of this strike.

Too strong!

These disciples of the Human Hall gushed with a feeling that they had no way to resist this strike. If they stood in front of this blow, it was possible that just the pressure and aura of the rose-red cloud would overwhelm and crush them!

Turbulent red energy surged forwards like and endless raging sea. In contrast, Lin Ming’s ‘Iron Bridge Blocks the River’ was simple and unsophisticated; there was not even a half point of gaudiness to it!

He was as strong as he was, ‘Iron Bridge Blocks the River’!

“Since you want to see my ‘Foundation Spear Technique’, that’s good, I’ve only practiced one move of the spear arts – ‘Flood Dragon Goes to Sea’!”

Lin Ming shouted and suddenly thrusted out the Penetrating Rainbow. This so-called ‘Flood Dragon Goes to Sea’, was in truth, simply a plain straight thrust!

The long spear had many styles. It could chop, dance, point, circle, sweep, and many other such moves. But the most basic, was the thrust!

The thrust was the spear’s soul!

A 820 jin heavy spear, a single thrust had the potential to crack open a mountain. An eight foot spear; breaking through all!

With just a simple straight thrust, Lin Ming’s aura skyrocketed. Turbulent mountain rivers appeared around him and converged from all directions. They melted together and flowed into Lin Ming’s body.

Lin Ming had practiced this ‘Flood Dragon Goes to Sea’ less than a thousand times. However he had done so underneath a waterfall. Lin Ming had practiced day after day until he had reached the stage where his spear was completely steady.

Zhang Cang’s ‘Sunset Cut’ blotted out the skies above, just as if it were a turbulent and mighty current flowing in the air. But no matter how raging the current was, it could not match up to a waterfall created in an array that was setup by a Xiantian master. How could this possibly shake Lin Ming’s spear?

Iron snowflakes began falling from the red clouds that were spread all over the sky. They were melting apart as if they were fading clouds. Lin Ming’s spear had a majestic and boundless aura, breaking through all!

The slender saber relied on speed to win. No matter how or when, if it competed head-on with a spear, it would be defeated without a doubt!

Bang!

The red clouds dissolved. Zhang Cang spat a mouthful of blood and flew backwards. He hit the ground with a cruel thud. It couldn’t be seen whether he was alive or dead.

Lin Ming withdrew his spear. He stood at the center of the stage. At this moment, he was similarly straight just like his spear, the Penetrating Rainbow, with a sharp and unshakeable aura!

“This is too terrifying, this Lin Ming really won.”

“’Foundation Spear Technique’... ’Foundation Spear Technique’ has that much power behind it? Lin Ming really used the ‘Foundation Spear Technique’ just now? I want to learn it too!”

“You want to learn it? You really think the ‘Foundation Spear Technique’ is really so fierce? This is just because that Lin Ming is way too strong, so anything he does will be strong. The move he just used was the ‘Foundation Spear Technique’s’ ‘Flood Dragon Goes to Sea’, but it is plainly just a straight thrust. If you want, you can enroll in the army. The soldiers practice this every day and I’ve never seen a soldier use it in such a kick ass way. This straight thrust is nothing fancy at all, but under Lin Ming, this simple move can break the ‘Sunset Cut’.

“Someone who just entered the Viscera Training stage against someone who was a half-step into the Altering Muscle stage, and Lin Ming won. It’s not strange to defeat someone a stage ahead, but what is scary is that the one he beat is Zhang Cang. Zhang Cang is also an extreme talent that can beat those a stage ahead. If Zhang Cang left the Martial House, it wouldn’t be impossible for him to defeat someone at the peak of the Altering Muscle stage.

“Have you noticed that from when Lin Ming came on stage to when he won, he hasn’t moved a single step...”

It wasn’t known who said this, but the audience looked to where Lin Ming stood. Sure enough, after Lin Ming came onstage, he had used a palm, a fist, and a spear thrust. But he had not moved a single step!

Realizing this, even the disciples of the Heavenly Abode felt a chill crawl down their spines. Although Lin Ming’s ranking was far away, sooner or later he would enter the Heavenly Abode. With such a future rival pursuing them from behind, it made them all feel nervous and uneasy.

Liu Mingxiang faced Lin Ming and felt his throat twitch as he took a dry gulp. He was completely scared, and his one consolation was that at the start of all this, Zhu Yan had looked for Zhang Cang, and not him. Otherwise, the one lying motionless on the ground would be him.

He felt Zhang Cang's pulse and found that he was alive and his life wasn't threatened. However, his whole body was covered in severe injuries and several bone fractures. Even if he had top medical treatment, not to mention any permanent damage, he would still be bedbound for over half a month!

Lin Ming was not a murderer. In the Seven Profound Martial House, it was strictly prohibited to kill the opposite party in a gambling match. As for the heavy injuries from the collision, there was some suspicion, but Liu Mingxiang did not dare to investigate. In a panic, he carried the unconscious Zhang Cang on his back and prepared to leave. But at this moment, Lin Ming said, "True essence stones? 20 of them!"

Chapter 80 – Rudimentary Martial Intent

Chapter 80 – Rudimentary Martial Intent

…

…

…

Initially, when Lin Ming and Zhang Cang had made their gambling match, Zhang Cang had bragged, and said that if he lost he would pay 20 true essence stones. Thinking back on this, it really made Liu Mingxiang's heart cry.

Zhang Cang didn't have 20 true essence stones on him. Liu Mingxiang hadn't brought such a large number of true essences stones here either. He gently placed Zhang Cang down and rifled through his clothes, and gathered up what they both had, but was still missing five. So he turned and borrowed from the people around and finally scrounged up 20.

After giving them to Lin Ming, Liu Mingxiang placed Zhang Cang back on his back and left as if he were running away.

"Lin Ming won, and from beginning to end, from when he used his palm to this spear move, he only used his left foot to tread the ground. His right foot hadn't moved. Truly it is a worthy reputation of the 'Iron Bridge Blocks the River', it is unshakable!" Ta Ku felt the long staff on his back, and his eyes flashed with a hint fighting spirit. Although Lin Ming was still incapable of being his match right now, perhaps that time where he could stand as his equal wasn't too far off in the future.

Ling Sen said, "Zhang Guanyu will regret not coming to see this match. After this battle, Lin Ming will draw high-level attention across the Sky Fortune Kingdom to himself in the

Martial House. If we wait for him to grow up, he will really be a powerful rival. If we do not diligently train, perhaps this young junior apprentice will crawl up past our heads.”

“It’s only interesting if there’s competition. Competition is always competing with you; I just don’t have the confidence. But this Lin Ming, he will be perfect to be my match.”

“It is true that he will become a rival of mine in the future.”

“Big Brother, I find it strange, how could Lin Ming progress so quickly? In the last Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment he reached rank 126, which should have been because he ate the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill and digested their efficacy. But this time, how could his strength rise so dramatically?”

Ling Sen responded, “Everyone’s encounters of good or bad fortune are not clear. If I’m not guessing wrong, this Lin Ming should have comprehended a special cultivation state, a martial intent similar to my ‘Ashura’. Also, this Lin Ming’s heart of martial arts is above mine! It’s nothing unusual if he had managed to comprehend a martial intent like my ‘Ashura’.”

Ta Ku’s complexion changed and in exhaled a puff of cold air, “His is stronger than Big Brother’s ‘Ashura’?”

Ling Sen’s talent was only an inferior fourth-grade. In the Seven Profound Martial House, there existed many other geniuses whose martial talent surpassed him, especially in Ling Sen’s generation, which was truly an astonishing one that brimmed with natural talent. For instance, there was Ta Ku, whose talent was just shy of fifth-grade, or Zhang Guanyu, who was a true fifth-grade talent.

However, regardless of whether it was Ta Ku or Zhang Guanyu, they had been firmly pressed down by Ling Sen!

Most people, including Lin Ming, had assumed that Ling Sen had some sort of fortuitous encounter, or that he had eaten some sort of precious raw material, but that was not the truth. The truth was, Ling Sen had comprehended ‘Ashura’.

‘Ashura’ was a particular and unique cultivation state. When a martial artist cultivated, sometimes they would enter into some wonderful and marvelous state, which could be considered a certain type of ideal ‘martial condition’, the most famous of which was the ‘sudden enlightenment’. This state was widely recorded in the ancient texts.

Legends said that three millennia ago, there was once a great elder who had sat underneath a Bodhi tree and meditated for seven days and seven nights. When he awakened, he had shattered several fetters of martial arts and had become an immortal Buddha, piercing the martial void!

Though the legends were recorded in the ancient texts, no one knew whether they were true or false. But in reality, there were martial artists that were truly able to enter certain states of cultivation. Although this state didn’t have something so exaggerated as ‘sudden enlightenment’, it could greatly increase the cultivation speed of a martial artist. The martial artists that had comprehended these states often had a heart of martial arts that were a cut above everyone else!

Depending on a person’s heart of martial arts, or some elusive quality of their soul, these states of cultivation would have different conditions. These conditions could only be comprehended as ideas, they could not be expressed. Many shockingly talented individuals, such as Qin Xingxuan, have not managed to comprehend such a particular state of being.

But Lin Ming, when he had been submerged in the Icy Pond Waterfall, he had touched upon this fleeting state of cultivation. His true essence had revolved of his own will and had taken a route in his body according to its most basic instincts. This path of circulation was close to being perfect and was several times faster than Lin Ming’s own speed. While cultivating under this condition, Lin Ming had achieved the Perfect first layer of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’.

Of course, although Lin Ming had stumbled onto this state, it was because of his formidable heart of martial arts. But, not every martial artist who had an outstanding heart of martial arts could comprehend a ‘martial intent’.

Before now, the only person in the Seven Profound Martial House who had comprehended a ‘martial intent’ had been Ling Sen.

His ‘martial intent’ was ‘Ashura’! Once he had entered the state of ‘Ashura’, Ling Sen’s consciousness would awaken to the Ashura battlefield. There, he would experience countless life and death battles. In these battles, he would die many times, and he would also be reborn many times. What was most fearful was that Ling Sen’s comprehensive instinct, which he learned from being on the edge of life and death, would be integrated into his soul!

A martial artist could obtain unimaginable advantages in every life or death battle; their cultivation progress would truly be quickened! However, there weren’t any martial artists that could do it like Ling Sen, because no one could guarantee whether or not they would live or die in the next moment.

Therefore Ling Sen had a truly substantial murderous aura. Regardless of whether it was battle talent of battle instinct, he was far above other martial artists at the same level of cultivation. In the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom, Ling Sen was invincible within those of his level, to the point that his real combat strength approached a martial artist at the Pulse Condensation Period.

Certainly, such a thick murderous aura had advantages that were accompanied by disadvantages. Although this aura had taken Ling Sen’s combat prowess to a formidable new degree, it had also crushed his feelings and gradually enabled him to become a cold-blooded killing machine. That was why in the Dream Trial he had broken through all the trials in the blink of an eye, except the one that tested the evils in his heart. To break through that, Ling Sen had used most of an incense stick of time, and this was because the killing nature of his heart was too heavy.

It was because Ling Sen’s ‘Ashura martial intent’ was so heaven defying, that when Ling Sen had said that Lin Ming’s own cultivation state might even surpass his own ‘Ashura’, that Ta Ku was surprised.

"Don't be so dramatic. Even if it is a person whose heart of martial arts was superior to everyone else, only a chosen few can comprehend 'martial intent'. Would this Lin Ming, who is only a 15 year old boy, be able to already comprehend something so fierce like Big Brother's cultivation state?"

Ling Sen said, "This is the only explanation. Lin Ming's heart of martial arts is much stronger than mine, so his comprehension of 'martial intent' might also be stronger than mine. Lin Ming's progress this month was too amazingly quick; I think it is due to this special cultivation state. When just understanding this cultivation state, his power should increase by leaps and bounds, but it will stabilize and gradually slow down."

"So that's how it is. This Lin Ming is more and more interesting! He's worth waiting for to grow up. I will certainly fight with him then!" As Ta Ku said this, he subconsciously cracked his knuckles together.

Ling Sen said, "In just several days it will be time for the next assessment of the Ten Thousand Killing Array. This Lin Ming will definitely participate. Want to take a look?"

"Good idea. Always cultivating is just too boring. Let's take a look at this Lin Ming and see how high he'll be able to go."

The Seven Profound Martial House opened the Ten Thousand Killing Array every month. The last time Lin Ming had participated was 27 days ago.

Lin Ming would naturally participate in this month's Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment. A higher ranking meant more resources.

At first, just some time in the Icy Pond Waterfall had benefitted Lin Ming greatly. With six other major arrays, what sort of astonishing advantages would they have to practice in them? Lin Ming was looking forwards to seeing. In particular, Hong Xi had once recommended that he not enter Thunder Valley, so there should be something special there.

Lin Ming did not know yet, but what had helped him break through to the 'True Primal Chaos Formula's Perfect first layer was exactly that cultivation state known as 'martial intent', which Ling Sen had said was in its formative stage.

….

Sky Fortune City, in a top-class pavilion –

First Taste Pavilion was a restaurant that shared the honor of being one of the top dining establishments, along with the Great Clarity Pavilion. At this time, in an elegantly furnished room on the second floor, Zhu Yan was eating lunch, and opposite of him, wearing a snow white dress, was Lan Yunyue.

Lan Yunyue ate quietly, the silence in the room created a stiffening and awkward atmosphere.

Zhu Yan took a sip of soup made from the flesh of a flood dragon. He set the small, gold-threaded bowl onto the table and took up a snow silk napkin to wipe his mouth. He suddenly asked, "What are you thinking?"

"Nothing. I'm not thinking of anything." Lan Yunyue hurriedly shook her head. In front of Zhu Yan, she felt as if some invisible pressure was bearing down on her. Between the two of them, it didn't seem as if they were lovers, but instead an emperor and his concubine. In the presence of the emperor, a concubine would always be cautious and scared.

Lan Yanyue clearly knew that even if Zhu Yan liked her, he could also leave her. If he wanted to, there would be any number of women rushing at his doorstep and he could pick any one of them. This was the disparity in their positions brought about by the difference in their strength and status.

Zhu Yan smiled, and although he seemed friendly, there was actually a deep cold hidden in his eyes. He knew what Lan Yunyue was thinking about; today was the day of the gambling match between Zhang Cang and Lin Ming, it was impossible that Lan Yunyue didn't know.

She was worried that Lin Ming would be severely wounded, and in fact, Zhu Yan really had looked at what Zhang Cang could do in the context of the rules. Zhang Cang would leave behind a debilitating mark on Lin Ming's body. This was the best way to hinder his future martial arts cultivation.

Of course, this was just the beginning. He would deal with Lin Ming one step at a time. He would destroy his martial arts cultivation, and then let him spend the rest of his life as an invalid.

Zhu Yan fiddled with a snow-white porcelain spoon in the bird's nest soup before him as he waited for Zhang Cang to transmit some good news to him. However, at that time, a sound transmitting talisman hadn't yet been lit.

Chapter 81 – Strength Training's 'Flow Like Silk'

Chapter 81 – Strength Training's 'Flow Like Silk'

…

…

…

Zhu Yan fiddled with a snow-white porcelain spoon in the bird's nest soup before him as he waited for Zhang Cang to transmit some good news to him. However at this time, a sound transmitting talisman hadn't yet been lit.

As lunch was winding down, there was a knock on the door.

"Come in." Zhu Yan said.

The door slowly opened, and Zhu Yan's old servant respectfully walked over. This old servant was at the Viscera Training Stage. He bent over to whisper into Zhu Yan's ear.

As Zhu Yan heard, his complexion abruptly changed!

Peng!

The small gold-threaded bowl in his hand was broken in half by him! "What did you say!?"

Lan Yunyue jumped in fear, but the old servant was used to these reactions. The old servant took half a step back and said once more, "Young master, Zhang Cang was defeated by Lin Ming in three moves. He was severely wounded to the point of spitting blood, and still remains unconscious."

With such an unexpected result, Zhu Yan was startled and angry, but Lan Yunyue was completely and utterly shocked. Lin Ming actually won? And he defeated Zhang Cang in three moves? He was injured bad enough to make him spit blood?

How could this be? She had been originally been worrying that Zhang Cang would be too cruel with his hand, and did not think that the results would be so bizarre.

Zhu Yan seemed somber and terrifying. Although he had already given Lin Ming a high appraisal, he didn't that in just one month after coming to the Martial House, Lin Ming would be able to defeat Zhang Cang who was ranked around 100 on the Ranking Stone. If he gave him more time, would this Lin Ming even climb over his own head?

Before now, Zhu Yan had only treated this Lin Ming as an amusing pastime, a cute little prey that he could tease if he were bored. Lin Ming's talent was inferior, his strength was inferior, and even his family background was inferior. If he had just eaten some valuable and rare material or had some fortuitous encounter, he wouldn't have thought for a second that Lin Ming could threaten him. Even when it came to coping with Lin Ming, he didn't want to lower himself to personally doing it, so he had set up traps for him and placed obstacles in his path. None of them had stopped him! And right now, Zhu Yan had a deep, foreboding sense of crisis!

Lin Ming's growth was just too quick! It was unimaginably fast! Four months ago, he was only at the First Stage of Body Transformation, a pathetic little martial artist who was worrying about how to obtain medicine to cure his wounds. But the next time they had met, he was already the first place candidate of the entrance exam!

Even this did not cause Zhu Yan any concern, but what he did not expect was that in just the span of one month, he had defeated Zhang Cang!

This Lin Ming absolutely had a problem!

There was no mistaking his talent; he was undoubtedly a medium third-grade martial talent.

To progress so quickly in such a short time, what kind of valuable material could he have eaten!?

Or… has he been relying on his heart of martial arts, and actually managed to comprehend a special state of cultivation?

If it was the former, then it wasn’t anything to fear. But if it was the latter…

Thinking of this, Zhu Yan subconsciously clenched his fists, and his knuckles cracked. His heart flowed with a strong sense of unease. This Lin Ming would likely become the enemy of his entire life!

“I must kill him before he grows any further! But… if he stays in the Seven Profound Martial House, even if I use my aunt’s influence, there’s nothing I can do. How should I handle this…?”

…

At the Seven Profound Martial House’s back mountains, a round and bright moon was hanging in the sky as stars twinkled around it.

It was a late autumn night, and the sky was a unique, limped dark blue. It gave one a clear and lofty feeling as they gazed at the wonders of nature.

Under the luminescent curtain of night, Lin Ming stood on a cold rock. His held a spear in one hand, and his forearm was parallel with the shaft. His elbow pressed into the spear end, and the long spear was extending horizontally from his body. This was the basic stance of the ‘Foundation Spear Technique’ – ‘Iron Bridge Blocks the River’.

However this time the spear shaft wasn’t straight, but slightly curved downwards as it trembled lightly. Lin Ming had hung a 100 jin boulder onto the end of the spear point, and it was the stone that was bending down the long spear.

Although the boulder was only 100 jins, because it hung on the tip of the spear, the true weight of it was ten times that. In addition to the weight of Penetrating Rainbow, the total amount that hung on Lin Ming's arm was above 4000 jins. With Lin Ming's early Third Stage of Body Transformation, supporting this weight of over 4000 jins as it was pulled down by gravity was already his limit.

As Lin Ming held the spear in his right hand, his left hand was grasping onto a true essence stone. His eyes were closed shut as he circulated its true essence throughout his entire body. This pure true essence flowed continuously into his body where it subtly transformed Lin Ming's circulation system.

Martial artists usually cultivated the body, rather than their true essence. True essence was water, and the body was a reservoir. Martial artists would constantly cultivate by forging their bodies to build up their strength. Their true essence capacity would then become increasingly large. Therefore no matter how one consumed true essence, even if it was to the very last drop, it would not affect cultivation. As long as they cultivated for one or two days, their body would be restored to peak condition. However, as for the body, once the body suffers damage, then there would even be the possibility that their martial arts cultivation would drop an entire stage.

If Strength Training and Flesh Training stage martial artists' bodies were like small water puddles, then Viscera Training stage would be comparable to a pond. Altering Muscle and Bone Forging would be like a lake, and after that would be the Pulse Condensation Period, where the meridians would condense, and true essence circulation would accelerate, and the body would be like roiling rivers and raging streams. If all the true essence of the body gathered together and flowed at the same time, it would turn into a vast ocean. This would be the Houtian and Xiantian stages.

With the true essence stone's true essence transforming the body, it was just like a reservoir that had water forcefully poured into it. This would broaden and expand the reservoir. This sort of cultivation method had far less side effects than using pills, but the difference was that it was much slower, and the requirement of resources was much higher.

In two days, Lin Ming had already used three true essence stones. As Lin Ming's cultivation grew, the rate at which he would consume true essence stones would only become faster and faster, and it was possible that not even the Seven Profound Martial House could sufficiently supply enough.

"Even if I was a Heavenly Abode disciple like Ling Sen or Ta Ku, who are the top ranked, I might still not have enough true essence stones to cultivate."

According to the regulations of the Martial House, new disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House would receive true essence stones according to their results on the entrance exam. Afterwards it would depend on one's rank on the Ranking Stone. If one's rank was lower than 150, one could receive one true essence stone each month. Rank 120 to 150 would receive two true essence stones per month. Rank 100 to 120, three essence stones per month, and rank 72 to 100, four true essence stones per month… even at the rank of Ling Sen and Ta Ku, they would only receive a dozen or so every month. Although it was many more than an ordinary disciple, if one wanted to depend on true essence stones to cultivate, they would not have enough for daily use.

"How many true essence stones would a core disciple like Qin Xingxuan receive per month? How many can a true disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys receive?

To the common folk of the Sky Fortune Kingdom, a large sect such as the Seven Profound Valleys was simply like a distant mirage, and equally as elusive. This distance from Sky Fortune Kingdom to the Seven Profound Valleys was said to be 100,000 miles. With such a vast distance between them, even if one rode a top-quality horse day in and day out, and swapped horses at every location, it would still take more than half a year of time to cover!

To the common folk who depended on their feet to travel the wide world, a distance of 100,000 miles was enough for them to walk an entire life.

Shaking his head, Lin Ming no longer thought about such remote matters. He had to concentrate on his immediate concern; the next Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment. Lin

Min would certainly participate and strive for a good result. The higher he was, the more resources he could attain!

There were only three days left until the ranking war would begin. To sharply increase his strength in these next three days was unrealistic, unless… Lin Ming ate the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill.

If Lin Ming wasn't planning on using the medicinal inscription symbol to increase the effects of the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill, then he would have already eaten it. But if the medicinal inscription symbol were placed on, the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill's efficacy would multiply several times over. Lin Ming had taken the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill and the efficacy hadn't been fully absorbed and wasn't completely purified yet. If he ate the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill during this time, then a light consequence would be that the drug efficacy would be wasted. A heavy consequence would be that the true essence he refined would not be pure, and it would cause the foundation of his cultivation to destabilize. It wasn't worth such a dangerous risk just for a ranking assessment. He intended to use the few days he had left to consolidate the realm of Strength Training's 'Flow like Silk'. He continued to practice his spear skills. As for tempering his body with true essence, he would first reach as high a ranking as he could to receive more time at the seven major killing arrays, and then he would decide how to proceed.

Bang!

Lin finally couldn't hold it any longer, and the 100 jin boulder dropped to the ground, forming a dust cloud as it hit. Lin Ming grabbed ahold of the spear with his left hand, aimed at the boulder, and thrust his spear forwards!

Peng! There was a loud bang as the metal struck stone. An incredible scene occurred; not only was the boulder pierced by Lin Ming's spear, but the boulder was also shattered into pieces, as if explosive gunpowder had been detonated in the center of the stone. The stone blew up into tiny fragments and scattered all around!

Chapter 82 – Powers Far and Wide

Chapter 82 – Powers Far and Wide

…

…

…

Seeing all the scattered stones, Lin Ming let loose a light breath.

The ‘Flow like Silk’ recorded down in the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ was at a stage far more profound and advanced than the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’. The highest boundary of the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ could only touch the threshold of ‘Flow like Silk’. If he achieved Large Success in Strength Training’s ‘Flow like Silk’, then with that spear thrust, the boulder would have exploded into fine powder, and scattered into the air with just a gust of wind!

At this point, Lin Ming was able to use his empty hand to block Zhang Cang’s slender saber and use his own true essence to disperse Zhang Cang’s true essence. If his ‘Flow like Silk’ was able to go a step futher, then Lin Ming might even have been able to use his empty hand to block a martial skill. His vibrations would shock the gathering of true essence and scatter all of it that had condensed into the martial skill, just like that boulder!

If the true essence scattered, then there would be no martial skill. No matter how unpredictable a martial skill an opponent had, or how gorgeous and magnificent, as long as their cultivation was not too far from Lin Ming’s, then he would be able to shatter it with a single move! It could be said to be a single move that could break through a thousand variations!

"This Strength Training's 'Flow like Silk' is just too heaven defying!" Lin Ming sighed with emotion. The longer and farther he cultivated, he discovered more and more how truly terrifyingly powerful the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' really was. He had only reached the Perfect first layer of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' and reached the beginning stages of 'Flow like Silk', and other such starting skills. If he managed to cultivate these to the Large Success stage in the future, and learned even more ingenious and wonderful skills, there was no telling how strong he would become.

In the memories of that elder, he remembered that once he reached the Large Success stage of the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians', he would be able to open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace in his body. Once that happened, his vitality would be like a rainbow that passed through the world, every roar would be like giving birth to thunder, and every fist would be enough to destroy moons and sink stars. A martial artist who had reached this stage had never appeared within the history of the Sky Spill Continent, and probably never would.

"This time I defeated Zhang Cang and the commotion from it wasn't small. My strength has risen too dramatically these past few months; it really is a bit too high profile. But if I want to maintain this indomitable spirit, then I have to struggle for resources in the Seven Profound Martial House. With such exposure, I might have drawn others' attention to me who want to see if I'm hiding anything. But if they really want to check me, then they will probably only find that there is some master behind me..."

...

The gambling match between Lin Ming and Zhang Cang originally hadn't seemed like it was an important matter, but now, the truth was that the details about this match had spread like the wind across the Seven Profound Martial House, and subsequently been passed on to the information network of every major power in the Sky Fortune Kingdom!

The name Lin Ming had also appeared on every major power's internal meeting's conference table!

Lin Ming. 15 years old, Seven Profound Martial House Earth Hall dsciple. Current Rank, 126. Weapon: Spear!

To defeat Zhang Cang who was rank 103 on the Ranking Stone wasn't considered a great deed, but the one who defeated Zhang Cang was Lin Ming! Lin Ming had only been in the Seven Profound Martial House for one month; this really was cause for startle! This was an even more terrifying growth speed than any old disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House!

It had to be known, that even if it was Ling Sen, Ta Ku, or Zhang Guanyu, they would not have such strength with only one month at the Seven Profound Martial House!

And what was most astounding, was that Lin Ming had defeated Zhang Cang with the 'Foundation Spear Technique'. From beginning to end he had used a single spear move – 'Flood Dragon Goes To Sea'!

Although this move, 'Flood Dragon Goes To Sea', had a resounding and impressive name, the reality was that it was just a single plain straight thrust. In an army of several hundred thousand soldiers who thrust the spear together, they would let out a shout in unison, and the imposing aura that would emanate from them would be like a flood dragon that was rushing out the sea, that was why the move had such a name.

However, that indomitable aura was from an army of several hundred thousand thousand soldiers wielding spears together. It was unheard of for just a single person to have such a display of grandeur that their spear would be where a 'Flood Dragon Goes To Sea', but Lin Ming had actually achieved this state!

The competition was witnessed by many experts. An amateur would go to enjoy the fun, but an expert would go to observe the truth. Ta Ku had personally affirmed the potential of Lin Ming's spear thrust.

Ta Ku was the top-tier talent who had been the second-ranked disciple on the Ranking Stone for years, so his words carried a certain importance. But Ta Ku had not mentioned that before that spear thrust, Lin Ming had also used his palm and fist that had an elusive force to them. Even Ling Sen, who Ta Ku deeply admired, was at a total loss of what it meant.

Many people had seen that fist and palm. However, not many of them were able to see that there was a profound and mysterious force that was contained within. Even if they did see this abstruse force, they would still not associate it with the "Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist', because there were some differences between Lin Ming's fist and palm, and the 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist'. Beyond that, most importantly, no one dared to believe that Lin Ming would be able to comprehend it; a jade slip that was missing 70% of its contents, and use that to succinctly complete the 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist'.

Because of this bright halo that surrounded Lin Ming, the common talents and geniuses began to be pushed into his shadow.

Results were everything. No matter Lin Ming's talent, or if he was just a 15 year old boy, his achievements were an established fact, and he was already pressuring the likes of Ling Sen and Ta Ku. Who could know whether or not Lin Ming would obtain even more glorious achievements than Ling Sen and Ta Ku in the future?

All the major powers, influences, and organizations would naturally not miss this kind of rising talent. However, the Seven Profound Martial House had a rule that any family, even the Royal Family, could not entering the Martial House during the school period and attempt to recruit disciples. This was in order to avoid affecting the normal teachings of the Martial House and the disciples' cultivation.

Therefore, some major powers and great families' scouts would hover around the Seven Profound Martial House year-round, and wait for Lin Ming to leave school!

Not only were they waiting for Lin Ming, but they were also keeping an eye on the new Ten Thousand Killing Array ranking war. They were waiting to see; just how high could Lin Ming reach this time?

Of course, they would also appropriately look at all the other new disciples of the Earth Hall. At the last assessment, they hadn't seen anything, but after a month of class, if one were a true blue genius, they would inevitably stand out.

It was only that under the light of Lin Ming's rising and shining bright halo, the other disciples could only take a modest supporting role. Even the champion of the Yuelu City elite competition, the Wang Family's number one talent, Wang Yanfeng, could only be as such.

…

Lin Ming had already been at the Seven Profound Martial House for 34 days, and it was time for the second Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment, as had been scheduled.

The Ten Thousand Killing Array was in a valley that was covered by seemingly arrogant sword bamboo. Because this bamboo had been nourished over a long time with effort, the bamboo was tall and straight, and its leaves' edges were sharp.

The ashlar square was located in the center of this sword bamboo grove. In the center of the ashlar square was an altar. At this time, many people were already gathered here and milling around. Most of these people were disciples of the Earth Hall. Of the 20 new Earth Hall disciples that had been here last month, only 7 or 8 of them had come again.

In order to not have disciples come to the Ten Thousand Killing Array just to see if they could chance their way up another rank, and to not waste time in vain, the Seven Profound Martial House had a stipulation. This stipulation was that each time one wanted to challenge the Ten Thousand Killing Array; one had to mortgage a single true essence stone. If they could not rise at least 5 ranks, then their true essence stone would not be given back.

For a new disciple of the Earth Hall, they would only receive one true essence stone per month. This was the amount of true essence stones it took to enter the Ten Thousand Killing Array. Therefore those disciples that didn't have the confidence to advance at least 5 ranks would not come participate in this assessment, as a true essence stone was simply far too valuable for them.

The pair of Wang Mang and Li Tie did not make an appearance today. The last time, these two people had relied upon their mercenary and fighting backgrounds to reach rankings in the 160’s, but that was already their limit. Even if they wished to progress 5 ranks, it would not be easy in such a short period of time.

In the crowd were not only disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House who had come to participate in the assessment, but also outside personnel who had come to the Seven Profound Martial House. They had gathered in a corner of the valley and were distantly looking on at the situation at the Ten Thousand Killing Array. These were intelligence operatives, detectives who had been sent by the major powers. Their job was to report to their masters the change in Lin Ming’s ranking as soon as possible.

According to the regulations of the Seven Profound Martial House, areas such as the Ten Thousand Killing Array and the Exquisite Pagoda, or the seven major killing arrays, were restricted areas within the Seven Profound Martial House. Unauthorized people were not allowed to enter or wander around.

That intelligence operatives could arrive at the mountain valley showed that their masters’ hands and eyes could reach the sky and were of the highest authority. For instance, the group of four ash-clothed men who were quietly waiting in the sword bamboo grove, their lord was the current dynasty’s crown prince!

Chapter 83 – Struggle of the Princes

Chapter 83 – Struggle of the Princes

…

…

…

That these four ash-clothed men could enter the Seven Profound Martial House and directly view the ranking war was by the virtue of the Crown Prince's relations. This was already the limit; they could not break the customs of the Seven Profound Martial House and contact Lin Ming in private at the Martial House, and try to win over talents.

In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, the Seven Profound Martial House was an aloof existence that was not under the jurisdiction of imperial authority. They were even without any legal restraints at all. This was mainly because the Seven Profound Martial House was under the subordination of the third-grade sect, the Seven Profound Valleys. The Seven Profound Valleys was a terrifying colossus that dominated the imperial authority! To put it bluntly, the Seven Profound Valley could easily abolish any crowned ruler of a country within a surrounding area of 200,000 miles!

If one didn't obey orders, the Seven Profound Valleys could directly send out 3 or 4 Xiantian masters. These masters could enter and leave the Royal Palace with no resistance, and simply sever the emperor's head as if it were just another day.

To take a broader view of the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom, the most powerful warriors such as Qin Xiao, Muyi, and others, were around the middle Houtian stage. But this kind of person was already exceedingly rare, and most of them were gathered clustered together at the Seven Profound Martial House. Who they helped would be hard to say. With only a handful of middle Houtian stage masters to resist three or four Xiantian level powerhouses, how could they even think of retaliating?

So once the emperor revolted against the orders of the Seven Profound Martial House, he could only wait to die. Then the Seven Profound Valleys would appoint the Seven Profound Envoy to set up a new emperor. If the entire royal family were to revolt, then the Seven Profound Valleys might even exterminate the emperor's entire clan!

With such a terrible existence that was beyond all common sense, the Sky Fortune Kingdom, including all nearby countries, regarded the Seven Profound Valleys as a sacred, inviolable temple and carefully tread around them without the least bit of resistance. And every countries' precious medicines and true essence stones had to be sent in chests and given to the Seven Profound Valleys. They even had to send out manpower and labor to help the Seven Profound Valleys in mining.

As long as the Royal Family obediently followed all orders, and gave the resources, then the Seven Profound Valleys would not interfere in the internal affairs of the nation, and would even occasionally help them get rid of rebellions.

Of course, there was also a limit to their restrictions. If a monarch was dissolutely wicked and evil, or the government was incompetent, or the common folk could not live and would constantly rebel, then the Seven Profound Valleys would give up on the current government and set up a new dynasty.

The significance of the Seven Profound Valleys setting up Seven Profound Martial Houses in each country was for searching for talents and geniuses to bring to the Seven Profound Valleys, but it was also to monitor the various nations and to preside over them.

The main duty of the Martial House Master was not the daily teachings of the Martial House, but was instead taking care of the responsibility for the mining and acquiring of the country's resources, such as true essence stones, rare and precious medicines, vicious beast blood, and other resources and materials that were constantly shipped back to the Seven Profound Valley

The Martial House Master and the Seven Profound Envoy had enormous authority in the Sky Fortune Kingdom. The Martial House Master was responsible for the gathering and collection of resources and management of the Seven Profound Martial House, and the Seven Profound Envoy was responsible for overseeing the Imperial authority. Their status even dominated that of the emperor!

It could be said that the Seven Profound Valleys was a gigantic blood sucking vampire that drew in all the resources of numerous countries in a 200,000 mile radius. However, this blood sucking vampire was just far too powerful, so no country dared to revolt. In fact, to the ruler of these countries, they would gladly sacrifice their country's cultivation resources in exchange for stability in their land. To mortals, inexhaustible wealth, bevies of beautiful women, and supreme authority were perhaps more appealing than some true essence stones.

So facing the Seven Profound Martial House, the Royal Family did not dare to interfere, and also had to be careful around them.

But as long as there were people, there would also be relations and connections. The Seven Profound Martial House was built in the Sky Fortune Kingdom after all, and it was appropriate to spare the Royal Family a few conveniences, such as allowing some of the emperor's relatives and juniors to enter the Human Hall as an exception. For instance, at present they had allowed two princes to send scouts into the Seven Profound Martial House to observe and watch the Ten Thousand Killing Array's ranking war.

"Keep your spirits up; do not lose to the lackeys of the Tenth Prince!" The head of these four ash-robed men said. He appeared over 40 years old and looked completely ordinary.

"Yah!" The other three people said.

If the Crown Prince had sent people, then the Tenth Prince, who was competing for the throne, would naturally send some too.

The ones who need the support of powerhouses the most, was often not the large families, or the chamber of commerce, but the generals and princes!

The generals guarded the borders and frontiers. When they marched to war, they needed powerhouses to deal with the enemies and accomplish missions. They also needed to be strong enough to protect themselves and avoid assassinations.

As for the princes, they competed for the landscape of the state, and also needed the support of powerhouses to sweep clean all of their enemies!

Therefore, how could the people of the Crown Prince and Tenth Prince be absent?

Before Lin Ming, the ones who had received the most attention in the Seven Profound Martial House were Ling Sen, Ta Ku, Zhang Guanyu, and several core disciples.

Of the Martial House core disciples, if there were no ominous accidents in the future, they would undoubtedly enter the Seven Profound Valleys. Afterwards, they might stay at the Seven Profound Valleys, or even be appointed as a Seven Profound Martial House Master, or sent on other causes for the Seven Profound Valleys.

If they stayed in the Seven Profound Valleys, then their existence would be aloof and distant, and their relations with the Sky Fortune Kingdom would not be too big. But if they became a Seven Profound Martial House Master or a Seven Profound Envoy, then that would be extraordinary!

In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, the status of the Seven Profound Martial House Master and the Seven Profound Envoy exceeded the emperors!

It can be said that if a prince managed to win over a core disciple who one day might become a Martial House Master or a Seven Profound Envoy, then their chance of inheriting the throne would increase by 50%!

If they won over a core disciple who had already become a Martial House Master or a Seven Profound Envoy, then the matter of them inheriting the throne could already be considered settled.

However, all of the Seven Profound Martial House core disciples besides Qin Xingxuan had come from ancient martial families that had come to cultivate. They did not even belong to the Sky Fortune Kingdom; there was simply no hope in attempting to win them over.

Moreover, since they did not belong to the Sky Fortune Kingdom, in the future it was most probable that they would not return to the Sky Fortune Kingdom, regardless of whether they became a Seven Profound Envoy or a Martial House Master. As for Qin Xingxuan, she was in a similar situation. With a sixth-grade talent, she had resolved to pursue the Xiantian path, and most likely would later stay at the Seven Profound Valleys.

Since there was no chance of winning over core disciples, what was left over were naturally the top Ranking Stone masters of the Heavenly Abode.

However, it was a pity that Ling Sen and Ta Ku were people of the military. They were talents of the southwest armed forces of Eighth Prince Yang, and had no chance of being won over.

As for Zhang Guanyu, this person's family background was the chamber of commerce. The chamber of commerce had been able to exist for a very long time to the present day. A behemoth that could stand so long naturally had a self-preservation instinct to not stick their head out in places they shouldn't, so they would never under any circumstances participate in battles of the throne.

For matters like this such as where struggling dragons fought to snatch the throne, if they succeeded they would be able to make a name for themselves, but the chamber of commerce was already fabulously wealthy. They simply did not need any rewards of titles. Instead, if they overreached their influence and failed, then their entire family's properties would be confiscated, and all nine generations of their family would be put to death. So Zhang Guanyu would not join any major powers, and instead devote his life to only the chamber of commerce.

In this time where the throne was changing, suddenly appeared Lin Ming who came out like a dazzling supernova. Even if Lin Ming's talent was limited, he might surprise everyone in the future. Some of the princes would spare no expensive in winning over Lin Ming. If this miracle continued, then in the end he would become a preeminent master who would surpass Ling Sen and Ta Ku.

As for becoming a core disciple, they had never considered this. After all, Lin Ming's qualifications were just too ordinary.

A quarter hour before the Ten Thousand Killing Array was about to start, the ash-robed leader of the four detectives under the Crown Prince's command suddenly moved his face, and whispered, "Lin Ming came."

"Cheer up!"

"Yah!"

"For this mission, we must be successful, we cannot fail! Even if we do not win over Lin Ming, we absolutely cannot let him fall into the hands of the Tenth Prince, otherwise, we will bring our heads to the Crown Prince!"

"Yah!"

Chapter 84 – Gathering of Masters

Chapter 84 – Gathering of Masters

…

…

…

A few breaths after that ash-robed detective said those words, Lin Ming appeared in a corner of the bamboo grove. That detective's eye was like a hawk that was sizing up its prey, Lin Ming. "Really young, not even 16 years old. His face still appears to be a little naïve, but if I look carefully, I can see that there is a shocking sharp and proud aura on his forehead. This face and aura, is certainly not something that comes from a little pond!"

"That is a 820 jin long spear called the Penetrating Rainbow. Yesterday I specially went to the Divine Weapon Hall to ask the storekeeper who sold this spear. That a 15 year old youth would choose such a heavy weapon that is difficult to learn, his boldness and courage is really praiseworthy."

"If the day ever arrives that a prince tries to stage a coup d'état on the Crown Prince or plot a rebellion, then Lin Ming can take hold of this Penetrating Rainbow to protect our lord the Emperor. This spear, with a single sweep, can take the lives of several scores of people. This Lin Ming, I absolutely must win him over for his highness the Crown Prince!"

When Lin Ming arrived carrying the Penetrating Rainbow, he almost instantly attracted the gaze of everyone present. Some of these stares were particularly burning, as if they were imprinting the image of him into their mind.

After Lin Ming studied the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’, his perception was exceptionally keen. He followed this scalding gaze to see an ash-robed man standing in a corner of the sword bamboo grove.

The ash-robed man slightly hesitated, “Did he sense me?”

His location was very distant and blended in, there was no reason that he should be spotted in the crowd where everyone was looking at him. Unfortunately, he was noticed, because he felt that this stare was significantly different.

“This Ling Ming, his observation of others is as if he has some kind of special sensor. It’s just too inconceivable. Is his soul force much stronger than others?” The ash-clothed man said as he secretly noted this characteristic. Later, he would prepare a report with all of the information for the Crown Prince.

After Lin Ming arrived, he chose a place to sit down and laid the Penetrating Rainbow flat on his knee. He closed his eyes and meditated as he controlled his breathing.

The other disciples of the Martial House frequently cast their vision over to him. Even some of the disciples of the Heavenly Abode felt a faint fear towards Lin Ming’s growing strength. Although as of now his strength was inferior them, maybe soon he would catch up very quickly.

The Seven Profound Martial House regulations stated that as long as an Earth Hall disciple entered the top 80 ranks of the Ranking stone, they would have the opportunity to send out a single challenge to any disciple of the Heavenly Abode. Once they won, then they would displace that disciple and become a new disciple of the Heavenly Abode! The loser would be eliminated.

The number of disciples of the Heavenly Abode was fixed at 72 members. In these 72 people, there were changes every month. At the end of every ranking war every month, it was normal for 2 or 3 challenges to be sent out.

The disciples of the Earth Hall were always aiming to push out disciples of the Heavenly Abode. After all, the difference in treatment between disciples of the Earth Hall and the Heavenly Abode was just too big. Once they entered the Heavenly Abode, they would immediately receive an extra reward, including top-quality pills, 15 true essence stones, and 30 hours of time to use the seven major killing arrays.

Lin Ming would reach the top 80 this time or next time, and then challenge one of them!

So how could these people not be worried? Nobody wanted to be expelled from the Heavenly Abode. Not only did this mean losing the massive amount of resources, it was also a huge loss of face.

By now, the crowd was in a tumultuous uproar.

“Li Yan, Wu Weidao, Zhu Yan…three masters in the top 50 rankings suddenly appeared!”

“This time’s Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment is really a gathering of masters…”

As the crowd talked, Lin Ming’s eyes fell upon Zhu Yan. Together with Zhu Yan, was of course Lan Yunyue.

Lan Yunyue had just entered the ashlar square where she stopped. She hid in a corner of the sword bamboo grove, obviously not willing meet Lin Ming and be put in that embarrassing and awkward situation.

Lin Ming did not even spare Lan Yunyue a glance. His eyes were locked on Zhu Yan.

‘Zhu Yan, you have finally appeared. I’ve already been at the Seven Profound Martial House for more than a month, and this is my first time seeing you!’

Zhu Yan also looked at Lin Ming. Very few people knew of the ongoing feud between them, so their stares were not brought to anyone’s attention. This was also because Li Yan and Wu Weidao were similarly looking at Lin Ming. This newer generation disciple would possibly become a powerful rival after all, paying attention to him was normal.

Zhu Yan only looked at Lin Ming in a deadpan manner, having no expression on the surface, as if he did not know who Lin Ming was. He looked at Lin Ming for a moment, then turned away.

However at that moment, Lin Ming actually felt that within Zhu Yan's eyes was hidden a cold and murderous intent.

His battle with Zhu Yan had started because of Lan Yunyue, but now, it no longer had anything to do with Lan Yunyue. Lin Ming regarded Zhu Yan as a hurdle in his road of martial arts that he had to cross over in order to continue forward.

But Zhu Yan, because of his repeated defeat and frustrations, regarded Lin Ming as a thorn in his side that had to be removed, otherwise his heart of martial arts would never be whole, and it would always have a thorn!

At the start, both sides only wanted to step on the other, and step on them so that they could never stand up from the failure. But now, they wanted to directly destroy the other party, in particular Zhu Yan, who was already planning on how to kill Lin Ming.

"Look! Bai Jingyun and Murong Zi, they are also two masters in the top 50 rankings!"

"There are more and more masters coming. This time's Ten Thousand Killing Array ranking war is truly a convergence of dragons."

With the appearance of Bai Jingyun and Murong Zi, they had all captivated the eyes of everyone present. They caused a stir that was even larger than Lin Ming. Lin Ming had only drawn everyone's eyes, but these two Bai Jingyun and Murong Zi made all of the male disciples too excited and uncomfortable to stand, and sent their fighting spirits soaring to the sky. The reason for this was because these two people were extremely beautiful women.

There weren't originally many female disciples at the Seven Profound Martial House. Female disciples with formidable strength, superb temperament, and the looks of a goddess were even fewer. Girls like Bai Jingyun and Murong Zi were really the cream of the crop when it came to girls. In the entire nation, it would be impossible to find many like them!

The two women were collectively referred to as the ‘Seven Profound Proud Pair’. It could be said that a thousand myriad graces were set in one body. Many sons of the major powers and large families had hopes to kiss their perfumed hair, however, they always returned in utter failure.

As beautiful, proud women, they were very arrogant and were not necessarily willing to marry and become a man’s wife. Even if they did, they would look for a dragon among men. Status and wealth were not enough; they also wanted strength with a good, moral character!

Zhu Yan and others like him were insufficient. Even the princes who wished to marry the two girls as their royal concubines were unable to do so.

After the two girls arrived, Bai Jingyun looked at Lin Ming and then sat down on a clean grass patch in a clearing of the bamboo grove, along with Murong Zi. They discussed some secretive girly things, and no longer cared about other people’s attention.

Before the aftermath of the arrival of Bai Jingyun and Murong Zi had cleared, there was another stir among the crowd.

“Ling Sen! Ta Ku! Heavens! My heavens! Those two also came today!”

For Ling Sen and Ta Ku, there was no longer any significance in participating in the Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment. Their rankings were unshakable, and they were already at the first and second place; there was nowhere for them to advance in the rankings.

“They are not necessarily here to participate. They probably came to watch the ranking war.”

“Mmm. There is the possibility… this time too many masters have appeared. The rising star Lin Ming is shining too brightly, it’s natural for them to pay attention to him.”

Lin Ming silently looked at Ling Sen. Although was the third time they’d met. The first time they had met, Lin Ming hadn’t felt just how terrible and frightening a person Ling Sen was. With the improvement of his cultivation, he increasingly felt Ling Sen’s fearsome aura.

Although Ling Sen's cultivation could be compared equally with Qin Xingxuan, Lin Ming truly believed that Qin Xingxuan was not Ling Sen's match. This Ling Sen was a complete cold-blooded killing machine, simply a murderous beast!

On the field, more and more masters began to gather. As the Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment was about to start, nine masters in the top 50 rankings had already arrived. This number was already quite high. In the entire year, only at the final examination that took place at the end of the school year would one see a scene like this where all the top masters had gathered.

Chapter 85 – Murong Zi, Bai Jingyun

Chapter 85 – Murong Zi, Bai Jingyun

…

…

…

“The assessment shall officially begin. All those present who wish to participate in the assessment must pay one true essence stone to enter the Ten Thousand Killing Array.”

Before the deacon senior apprentice who was in charge of the Ten Thousand Killing Array finished his words, Wang Yanfeng was already the first one to jump onto the altar.

“The Wang Yanfeng, he really gets braver the more he’s frustrated.”

“I wonder how many ranks he will be able to rise this time.”

The audience under the stage was discussing Wang Yanfeng’s previous assessment performance. Before, he had had managed to attain rank 168, but after his assessment was over, several others had already surpassed him, and they had pushed Wang Yanfeng down into the 172nd position.

Wang Yanfeng calmed his mind in meditation as he sat down on the Ten Thousand Killing Array altar. He had realized that today, he would only be playing a small role. Even in the next year or two, this would not be his stage. All he could do was steadily fight, one step at a time.

“The assessment shall begin!”

A cover of light fell down on the stage, and Wang Yanfeng began his killing. Most of the 12 people on stage were around rank 120. As the assessment began to wind down, Wang Yanfeng was the third to be defeated. His final ranking was rank 145.

"This Wang Yanfeng managed to pass rank 150."

"This is only temporary; he will be pushed down later. However, being able to enter the top 150 ranks in the second month is very good."

Wang Yanfeng truly was a very good talent, however, Lin Ming's halo was simply too abundantly bright, and he was completely neglected.

"Second Round. If you wish to participate in the assessment, come on stage." The deacon senior apprentice said once again.

As the 12 positions emptied, a young girl in purple clothes flew onto the stage like a gust of wind. She stood firmly on a spot. This girl was Murong Zi.

"Sister Jingyun, let's finish the assessment early."

"Alright." Immediately, Bai Jingyun also appeared on stage.

Some from the crowd called out in excitement and alarm. These two beautiful and arrogant women were 17 and 18 years old. Putting their heavenly appearances and temperaments aside, these two girls' martial arts talent could be considered in the top ten of Sky Fortune Kingdom's younger generation. Moreover, these two also had outstanding family backgrounds; others could only sigh at them as if they were the clouds above them.

Murong Zi had attended the Seven Profound Martial House for two years, and her ranking was 36. Bai Jingyun had been at the Martial House for three years, and her ranking was 26. These results, especially Murong Zi's, were just as good as Zhu Yan's!

When beautiful women came to the assessment, it was always very easy to attract the attention of many. Even the many spies turned their heads, as the major powers that they worked for, such as the Tenth Prince, had always wished to marry these two girls.

Certainly, compared to these two girls, Qin Xingxuan was a far more splendid existence. But Qin Xingxuan was too distant an ideal. She had resolved to pursue the road to being a Xiantian master. A Xiantian master was truly a legend from stories; mortals could not even hope of touching them. To marry Qin Xingxuan was only a fool's dream, thus Murong Zi and Bai Jingyun became increasingly wanted by all men.

If they married them, then not only would they enjoy the bliss of being their husband, but they would also receive a big boost in their life from their support. With this and so many other advantages, who wasn't moved by this?

If they could marry them together, that would simply be the pinnacle of life. Not even the royal princes dared to dream so greedily!

The light cover of the Ten Thousand Killing Array fell over them, and the assessment of these two girls officially began. Some male disciples of the Human Hall were staring at these two girls' bodies as they were bathed in light, and their fists tightened and lips mumbled, as if they were even more anxious than them about this assessment.

Seeing this, Lin Ming had a slight feeling in his heart. When someone knew perfectly well in his heart that they could not obtain something, and that something had nothing to do with them, then they might even more earnestly pay attention, and even worry. This was the sorrow of the irrelevant person.

Irrelevant person… even if they entered the Seven Profound Martial House, if they could not bloom like a spring flower in this talented crowd of steep competition, then they would eventually become an irrelevant person regardless!

Six incense sticks' worth of time had already passed. On the altar, Murong Zi lightly coughed, and her small face paled as she came down from the stage. This scene alone made all of the numerous staring males grip their hands with a worried expression. If they could suffer this pain for Murong Zi, they would gladly endure it.

Murong Zi's final ranking was 28. This ranking was truly startling!

Shortly after, Bai Jingyun also stepped down from the altar. Her final ranking, rank 22!

These two proud and beautiful women were becoming increasingly dazzling. If another year passed, it would be possible for them to even enter the top 10!

All the scouts quickly lit their sound transmitting talismans and reported to their masters. This matter was enough to be brought to the attention of the princes.

These two girls were really the highest quality of women. However it was a pity that no matter how the princes' hearts were moved, they could not force themselves upon them. They feared the power behind them, and although their own influence wasn't small, they had to respect and obey the orders of the Royal Family.

These princes could simply not disregard the Seven Profound Martial House. No one, no organization, not even the Royal Family, had the courage to force a disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House. If they aggressed the rules of the Seven Profound Martial House and bullied a disciple, that would be tantamount to treating the Seven Profound Valleys with contempt. The terrifying power of the Seven Profound Valleys was enough to bring the Royal Family trembling to their knees in fear!

"The third round of the assessment shall begin. Those disciples who wish to participate, come onstage." The deacon senior apprentice announced once more.

After the positions were vacated, Zhu Yan shot Lin Ming a subtle glance, and then slowly stepped onto the stage.

"Zhu Yan went on stage!"

With his talent, Zhu Yan was not necessarily in the top ten geniuses of his generation, but the differences weren't far off. He was 17 years old, with a superior fourth-grade talent. He had attended the Seven Profound Martial House for two years, and his Ranking Stone rank was 39. The result was only inferior to Murong Zi.

Certainly, to reach this point, Zhu Yan had to expend much more effort and time than the playful and not so serious Murong Zi.

Therefore this talent was truthfully somewhat bad.

With Zhu Yan's strengths and talents, he had certainly attracted the attention of many major powers. However, Zhu Yan was doomed to never be a person who could be wooed and won over.

The Zhu Family household head's daughter was Zhu Yan's aunt. She had married into the Royal Palace and had later become a royal concubine empress. She was the mother of the enormously influential Tenth Prince!

So Zhu Yan had been doomed to be a person of the Tenth Prince.

According to Sky Fortune Kingdom's rules of succession, the son of a concubine could not be an heir. However the Emperor was not young, and the Empress had no child, therefore the Emperor had set the first son of the Royal Concubine Empress, the Third Prince, as heir and Crown Prince. The Third Prince began reading and writing at an early age, but his martial arts talent was only a mere second-grade. His strength was limited, and though he had a good and kind heart, it was not possible for him to safely inherit the throne.

But the Tenth Prince's, martial talent was the highest among all of the Emperor's sons at an inferior fourth-grade. In addition to this hard work, his cultivation was also very high. In his twenties, the Tenth Prince had commanded troops at the border and had become renowned as a valiant warrior who had repeatedly won many military exploits. He was then given the title of the Cloud King, and bestowed a Purple Gold Crown, and a royal robe with a four clawed dragon.

In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, not every emperor's son would be conferred a grand title. There were two different titles, the first was a prince, and the second one was a duke. The prince was a first rank title, for instance the Tenth Prince's Cloud King, and they could also possess territories and have such power equal to a national treasure like the royal jade seal. But the duke was only a second rank title, and they could only possess a manor.

Concerning power and influence among the ruling parties and opposition parties, The Tenth Prince's might was even superior to the Crown Prince.

It was anyone's guess of whose hands the throne would fall into in the future.

Once the Tenth Prince ascended the throne, then Zhu Yan would be a younger cousin of the emperor. Zhu Yan's mother was only a concubine of the Zhu Family, and could only be known as a concubine's son. But his aunt was actually the Royal Concubine Empress, and she was related to him through his father. Although their blood relation was a bit distant, with Zhu Yan's outstanding strength, he would definitely be able to obtain the valuable trust of the new emperor!

"Assessment start!"

After Zhu Yan entered the Ten Thousand Killing Array, people immediately lit an incense stick to measure the time.

Incense sticks began burning out one after the other, and soon the fifth incense stick was half gone. Zhu Yan only now had a slightly weakened complexion. As the sixth incense stick was lit and almost burnt through, Zhu Yan let out a cough and was sent out from the Ten Thousand Killing Array.

Final ranking, 32!

Lin Ming quietly looked at this rank and didn't think it was surprising. Zhu Yan had already been in the Seven Profound Martial House's Heavenly Abode for more than half a year. At that time, his cultivation was only at the peak Third Stage of Body Transformation, but now he had broken into the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation. It wasn't unusual for his cultivation to increase by leaps and bounds.

"32! Last month my rank was 126!" Lin Ming traced the shaft of the Penetrating Rainbow he carried on his back and unconsciously licked his lips. "Then, I will go on stage, to see how wide the gap is between myself and Zhu Yan."

Chapter 86 – The Limit of Killing Speed

Chapter 86 – The Limit of Killing Speed

…

…

…

The several detectives sent by the princes immediately burnt their sound transmitting talisman. The Crown Prince was informed of Zhu Yan's status; after all, Zhu Yan was one of the important figures who served under the banner of the Tenth Prince.

Murong Zi saw Zhu Yan's ranking and curled her lips in disgust. She wasn't too satisfied or happy with this Zhu Yan sticking to her footsteps like melted candy.

"Humph, next time I will leave him in my dust." Murong Zi said with some satisfaction.

"Haha, then you must work diligently. Your talent is better than Zhu Yan; it's almost fifth-grade." Bai Jingyun said with a smile.

"That doesn't mean anything. In the entire Seven Profound Martial House, not counting the core disciples, only Zhang Guanyu is a fifth-grade talent. But that fellow Zhang Guanyu is just an oily playboy with nothing in his head. I don't like him very much. Well… Sister Jing, are you concerned about Lin Ming?" Murong Zi discovered that Bai Jingyun had been watching Lin Ming.

"Mm. He is going to go on stage now."

"There is nothing about him that's worth paying attention to. His talent is limited, he just happened to have a spot of good luck and ate some valuable material, and that's why he has his current strength."

Bai Jingyun shook her head and said, “Luck is also a kind of strength. Isn’t being born with a good cultivating martial talent also a kind of luck? Being born in an aristocratic family is similarly also a kind of luck. Like that, you and I can be considered very lucky people also. Nobody can say that Lin Ming won’t be able to continue this streak of good luck. Also, he wasn’t so strong when he had entered the Seven Profound Martial House. It must be the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill that allowed his cultivation to progress so quickly. Perhaps his physique is particularly suitable for absorbing the efficacy of precious medicines…”

As Bai Jingyun was speaking, Lin Ming had already stepped onto the altar.

The eyes of everyone present turned to Lin Ming. They wanted to see whether or not this Lin Ming would be able to create a new record today, and have his name written down as the miracle among the new disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House.

The operatives sent by the major powers also rallied their spirits. In these groups of people were intelligence veterans as well as seasoned lobbyists. They were waiting for Lin Ming to leave the Seven Profound Martial House, and then persuade him with their eloquence to support their master.

The cover of light from the Ten Thousand Killing Array came down, and Lin Ming’s entire body was bathed in a glow. In the next moment, he was transported to a vast, white world.

Like last time, there were a variety of weapons that were presented all around him. The sabre, the sword, the spear, it had it all.

“Spear. Spear shaft, 8 feet. Spearhead, 8 inches. Dark purple elastic iron spear shaft, cloud vein wrought iron spear point, total weight 820 jins!”

Lin Ming devised the weapon in his mind, and in the next second, a dark purple colored long spear almost the same as the Penetrating Rainbow appeared in Lin Ming’s hand.

Lin Ming's casually shook the spear in his hands, and the dark purple long spear began to hum. The strength of the vibration that flowed down the spear shaft could easily crush rocks!

At this time, in front of Lin Ming, a dozen phantom shades appeared in front of him. These phantoms included martial artists and vicious beasts. The majority of their strength was at the early Second Stage of Body Transformation to the early Third Stage of Body Transformation. There was even one who was at the peak Third Stage of Body Transformation.

To the present Lin Ming, these opponents were nothing at all!

Lin Ming steadied his feet and took his stance. His right hand held the spear horizontally, and his elbow was pressed up tight against the spear's end. This stance he exhibited now was the 'Iron Bridge Blocks the River'.

"Roar!" The dozen phantom shades rushed forwards together. These were just phantom illusions, but they had the ability to coordinate, and they dispersed into a semi-circle around Lin Ming, and then lunged at him at the same time!

Generally a martial artist, even if they were a master, being encircled by so many bloodthirsty enemies, could only evade first, and then dodge left and right in the crowd and defeat them one at a time. Because unless there was a great disparity in strength, nobody was able to simultaneously deal with the attacks of a dozen enemies that came from all directions!

However, to Lin Ming, he was able to completely disregard all these attacks!

With a cry, his left hand slapped the spear's end, and his right hand gripped the spear shaft and suddenly sent it flying out horizontally. The long spear lashed out like a dragon's tail; it could sweep away an army of a thousand!

As the spear swept out, the dark purple long spear hit the first enemy's body. This was a first-level vicious beast. Because of Lin Ming's formidable strength, as the spear head smashed into the vicious beast, the spear bent like a bow. Then, with a popping sound, the spear shaft straightened, and the vicious beast's spine was directly crushed!

The momentum of the dark purple long spear did not lessen, and it swept on and hit the second vicious beast's body!

"Cha!" The vicious beast was torn in half!

Followed by the third!

Lin Ming's strength was more than 4000 jins. Combined with an 820 jin dark purple long spear, a single sweep contained an invincible surging might. In that moment, of the dozen enemies, more than half were all swept away by Lin Ming's spear!

"Roar!" Of the dozen phantoms, only the vicious beast with strength equal to the peak Third Stage of Body Transformation was able to dodge Lin Ming's long spear. In that moment, it suddenly accelerated forward like a meteor and charged at Lin Ming's chest.

Lin Ming's long spear was out, and his defenses were open. He had no weapon to defend against the sharp fangs of this second-level vicious beast!

As Lin Ming saw these sword-like fangs come forward to stab into his neck, Lin Ming cried out. His right hand held onto the spear, and his left hand was suddenly formed into a fist.

"Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!"

"Peng!"

Lin Ming's fist pounded into that vicious beast's chest, and with a loud crack, the body of that giant vicious beast which weighed several hundred jins was instantly split apart!

Lin Ming's whole body was bathed in blood. His right hand drew back his long spear. He turned his body and gripped the spear in both hands. A red full moon suddenly appeared at the end of the cloud vein wrought iron spear point.

“Killing circle!”

“Pah pah pah pah!” Suddenly what seemed to be like several leather blood bags exploded in the air, showering the entire area with rich red blood. All of the remaining enemies had blown up!

From when these vicious beasts and martial artists had thrown themselves forward, to when Lin Ming had made his strike and completely destroyed all of them, the time had been no more than two breathes!

Lin Ming had used two spear moves and one fist. The Ten Thousand Killing Array did not even have the time to create new phantoms!

The entire illusory magic array had been completely cleared by Lin Ming!

This killing speed was completely abnormal!

After two blinks, there was a distortion in the space, and new phantom shades appeared. This time, whether it was a vicious beast or a martial artist, their strength was a level higher than before!

“He who strikes first has the advantage!”

Lin Ming did not even wait for these phantoms to stabilize their form and had already shot towards the nearest one. “Flood Dragon Goes to Sea!”

The dark purple long spear thrust out with indomitable momentum.

“Pah!” The peak Third Stage Body Transformation martial artist was pierced by Lin Ming’s spear!

With a wave, Lin Ming threw the corpse off of his spear. His spear seemed filled with an epic spirit, the eight feet eight inch dark purple long spear was just like a dark purple flood dragon that swam in a sea of bloodshed. Everywhere the spear went, blood would flow!

To sweep away an army of a thousand, there was only the spear!

In the chaos and midst of battle, the spear was the absolute best weapon!

Of course, the prerequisites were that one must have thick and vast true essence, as well as the physical strength to support such a terrifying rate of strength consumption.

“Killing circle!”

Lin Ming wielded his spear, and three vicious beasts were blown flying backwards, their hands cracked open. At this point, Lin Ming’s muscles corded and his veins bulged like twisting worms. Lin Ming was rapidly revolving the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ in his body, and with every breathe, the air current condensed into a large snake that floated in the air.

Only with the Perfect first layer of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ together with the true essence provided from the Third Stage of Body Transformation, was Lin Ming able to kill the enemies with such demonic speed!

Chapter 87 – Sweeping Away All

Chapter 87 – Sweeping Away All

…

…

…

"I wonder just how long this Lin Ming can persist inside." Outside of the Ten Thousand Killing Array, everyone's focus was turned towards Lin Ming. Even several of the Heavenly Abode disciples who ranked in the top 70 who were on the altar with Lin Ming were ignored.

"He'll last for at least four incense sticks of time, maybe even half of a fifth. Zhang Cang is able to last until three and a half incense sticks. Since Lin Ming defeated Zhang Cang, his advance to the top 100 rankings is assured. Even the top 90 or 80, is not impossible!"

"Advancing to the top 100 is absolutely no problem, but to reach the top 80 is not so easy. Those are the rankings approaching a disciple of the Heavenly Abode, the spots are highly competitive. If you can enter the top 80 then you are eligible to challenge a disciple of the Heavenly Abode, and even have the possibility of entering!"

"If that's true, then someone who is able to enter the Heavenly Abode after being at the Seven Profound Martial House for only a month is just inhuman."

"There were people that were able to enter the top 90 in their ranking war, but those people were over 20 years old. They had all reasons they couldn't enter the Seven Profound Martial House earlier. For a 15 year old to advance into the top 100 in just the second round, as far as I know, that hasn't happened for the last 100 years!"

"Mmm, in these past ten years only Qin Xingxuan has had the ability to do this, but she was directly promoted to a core disciple… it has little to do with us…"

…

A single incense stick burnt through, then two, then three…

As the fourth incense stick lit up, Lin Ming's face flushed with blood on the Ten Thousand Killing Array's stage.

"Mmm, something's not right, Sister Jingyun. It seems that Lin Ming might not be able to last much longer. The fourth incense stick has just started to burn, if this continues, he can only barely advance to the top 100." Murong Zi's eyesight was very good. She managed to see through the translucent light of the array and see Lin Ming's circumstances clearly. Lin Ming's breathing now held a slight disorder; that was the manifestation of consuming too much true essence.

Bai Jingyun frowned. They had thought that Lin Ming might be able to last until the fifth incense stick burnt through, but not it seemed that it would be a bit uncertain. Maybe just the fourth incense stick would be his limit.

"Lin Ming was weakened, it might have been that he was too careless in the Ten Thousand Killing Array at the start, and he was injured at the beginning?"

If one were injured at the start, then each time they fought would consume more strength and energy, and having a bleeding wound was extremely fatal. With something like that occurring, then their ranking would not only fail to rise, but instead fall, and cause the amount of resources they received every month to drop. Martial artists that entered the Ten Thousand Killing Array were always mindful about this, and were careful to avoid mistakes as much as possible.

"Being able to not be injured so early is also an aspect of strength, Big Sister, I think that this Lin Ming is not as fierce as you thought." Murong Zi pursed her lips and remained unconvinced of Lin Ming. She had always been told that she was an infant prodigy since childhood. Now that she had been shown up by someone two years younger than her, she was naturally dubious of such a young boy.

"Oh? Not that fierce? Good, well then, if Lin Ming's strength is really so poor, and he can only insist for four incense sticks of time, then my little sister, how long were you able to last when you had been in the Seven Profound Martial House for one month?"

Murong was at a loss for words. When she had just entered the Seven Profound Martial House, she she had been unable to pass reach the top 150 rankings in her first assessment. The second time she had not reached the top 140; her performance was simply too far from Lin Ming's. She simply turned her chin and looked towards the assessment, pretending she hadn't heard.

The truth was that the time of a Martial House disciple's greatest progress on the Ranking Stone was during the end of the school term. During this time, many disciples would graduate, and those masters that were eyesores would be gone. The top rankings would naturally empty, and those new disciples would be arranged in their places.

Therefore even if a Seven Profound Martial House disciple's strength was disappointing, their ranking would jump up the longer they stayed at the Martial House.

Seeing Murong Zi act so childishly, Bai Jingyun smiled and didn't pursue the matter. Even if Lin Ming could only persist for four incense sticks of time and reach the top 100, that was still a result to be proud of! In the Seven Profound Martial House, the number of monstrous geniuses who had reached this level could be counted on one hand!

…

"Big Brother, this Lin Ming doesn't seem as if he can last much longer." Ta Ku said to Ling Sen as he rubbed his chin.

"Mmm, but even with four incense sticks of time, that result is also astonishing."

"Hehe, but of course. He uses a spear, and not only that, but it is a heavy spear. The spear has many usages. This Lin Ming's spear probably has some very epic and grand fighting style. In a giant group battle, this fighting method can be called a fierce way to kill enemies! However, the average person wouldn't dare to use it, because strength is consumed too quickly. That’s why even amazingly fierce generals find it impossible to cut down tens of thousands of people. In the Ten Thouasnd Killing Array, even if they used a spear, they would not dare to fight constantly and would try to delay the time and recover their strength. The enemy will just emerge one after the other incessantly, and each time they come they are stronger.” Ta Ku used a staff. A spear and a staff were different, but had similar methods. Naturally he knew of the advantages and disadvantages of such a weapon.

“Let’s wait and see how long Lin Ming can last.”

…

In the Ten Thousand Killing Array, Lin Ming’s spear sent a sword-wielding martial artist flying backwards. His face was covered in blood, “Ah, it seems as if I’ve overdone it in killing!”

Lin Ming looked forward at a knight approaching him. The black armored knight grasped a long halberd, and rode a fully armored warhorse, his face revealing an imposing expression.

Bone Forging stage martial artist!

Lin Ming madly swept his purple black spear into a group. Being able to kill one enemy with one move was already highly efficient, but Lin Ming was actually able to kill several!

That’s why, as the third incense stick was ignited, there were already Bone Forging stage martial artists appearing!

They were at a cultivation higher than Lin Ming by two whole stages!

Lin Ming fought with the black armored knight just now several times. It was strong, and moved well on its armored horse. When it dashed at him on that giant rushing horse, Lin Ming was unable to find any advantage.

For the talents of the Seven Profound Martial House, generally they were able to fight opponents who were a stage above them. For instance, the peak Third Stage of Body Transformation Zhang Cang was able to fight those who were at the peak Fourth Stage of Body Transformation.

But Lin Ming, even within all the talents at the Seven Profound Martial House, was still able to fight those a stage above him. He had won against Zhang Cang with just his early Third Stage of Body Transformation. This black armored knight was at the early Bone Forging stage, and Lin Ming was just able to barely come to a draw with him. With so many other enemies around, Lin Ming was not able to take advantage of the fact that the enemy was an illusory phantom. Their inflexible minds and rigid attack patterns had many weaknesses, but at present, surrounded by so many enemies that emerged one after the other and endlessly attacked, Lin Ming was in serious danger!

Bang!

As soon as Lin Ming and the black armored knight exchanged blows again, although the dark purple elastic iron spear had strong superior cushioning properties, Lin Ming still felt his hands tingle with numbness.

The black armored knight's horse reared up at Lin Ming, but Lin Ming had already bounced backwards, and flipped around a couple of times in midair.

"Roar!" A second-level vicious beast took advantage of this moment when Lin Ming was airborne with no balance and rushed at him. Two paws that were sharp like knives were coming towards Lin Ming's chest.

Lin Ming only heard shouting in his ears. He gripped the dark purple long spear and used its 820 jins of weight to stop his inertia in the air and balance himself. He took a deep breath, and the airflow from his nose was like a streaming long snake. He looked towards the oncoming vicious beasts and threw a fierce punch!

"Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!"

Poh! The vicious beast’s body exploded from behind with a giant hole. The gooey flesh and blood and internal organs were all blown out from the back of the hole!

One punch kill!

Lin Ming tumbled into the group of vicious beasts. Before he caught his breath, all of the vicious beasts in his immediate surroundings had already been killed!

Chapter 88 – The Final Spear

Chapter 88 – The Final Spear

…

…

…

Lin Ming tumbled into the group of vicious beasts. Before he caught his breath, all of the vicious beasts in his immediate surroundings had already been killed!

"Hoh!" A spear swept out, and the dark purple long spear curved like a full moon. An 800 jin heavy vicious beast was split in half and sent flying away. A martial artist's sternum collapsed, and all five internal organs burst open on the scene.

However the number of vicious beasts was too many, and their attacks were too brutal. Also among them were cunning martial artists who appeared and vanished like ghosts. After Lin Ming sent this spear out, his body was wounded two more times. A sword has been thrust straight into his stomach; the wound had damaged his organs!

If not for the fact that he had achieved the Viscera Training stage and true essence had permeated into all his organs at the icy pond, then this sword would have already caused him to lose most of this battle strength!

"The pressure is too big!" Lin Ming's whole body was bloodied. There was the enemies' blood, and there was his blood. The dark purple long spear had turned completely crimson, and wet with blood. However because the spear shaft had undergone a special non-slip treatment, he could still firmly grasp the spear without a greasy feeling.

After Lin Ming had just massacred five enemies a moment ago, another five immediately appeared, one of which was equivalent to the cultivation of the Bone Forging Stage!

…

“This Lin Ming looks increasingly worse. I don’t think he will be able to last past the fourth incense stick.” Some of the disciples under the stage said.

The fourth incense stick was almost burnt through, but on stage, Lin Ming had just coughed; he was obviously injured.

In the middle of a group of enemies, he might have been able to persist, but once injured, his battle prowess would drop, and he would not be far from death.

“He’s already missed the expectations, but he still should be able to advance to the top 100 rankings.”

“Mmm. He’s a new disciple after all; it seems four incense sticks is his limit.”

The people talked with less expectation and shock in their words than before. When a man repeatedly creates miracles time and time again, those miracles are soon taken for granted.

On the other hand, if he was unable to perform a miracle, even if his result was far superior to others, he might not even receive cheers, but boos instead.

For instance, if Ling Sen’s legend of being the top ranked number one was broken, then his position in the eyes of others would fall by several degrees. Even if he was still one of the top masters of the Seven Profound Martial House, his bright halo would already be lost, and people would talk behind his back, saying ‘This Ling Sen isn’t that great’, and other such nonsense.

The incense stick slowly burnt, and when the last weak spark unwillingly turned to ashes, the fifth incense stick was lit.

Four incense sticks had burned out!

At this time in the Ten Thousand Killing Array, Lin Ming had already taken 12 wounds, three of which were wounds to his internal organs. Lin Ming had luckily reached the stage of being able to breathe like a snake, and also had the Perfect first layer of the 'True Prima Chaos Formula' supporting him, otherwise he would have already lost all his battle strength.

"Die!"

Lin Ming's spear swept out at a martial artist's leg, and then he dived forwards and punched the martial artist's chest. To save true essence, he did not use the overwhelming 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist'. Still, a punch with more than 4000 jins of might behind it hit the vital part of the martial artist's heart and caused his heart to stop. The martial artist died while violently spasming on the floor.

At the same time, there was a humongous roar. A giant illusory phantom appeared in the world of the Ten Thousand Killing Array. Lin Ming turned around to look, and a hundred feet away stood a bear-like monster that towered more than ten feet tall. The whole body of this monster was covered in thick black fur, and looking at its massive body, it most likely weighed more than several thousand jins!

"Third-level vicious beast!"

Lin Ming let loose a gasp. Although this giant black bear was only a weak kind of third-level vicious beast, it was still a third-level vicious beast. That meant it was at least equal to a martial artist that had reached the Large Success stage of Bone Forging!

With this kind of vicious beast, Lin Ming could do nothing to it at all with his current strength. Not only that, but with this beast appearing, it meant that later on would appear more martial artists and vicious beasts that would at least be this dangerous!

Lin Ming knew crystal clear that he didn't have much time remaining!

He turned his head again and he saw the black knight that he had battled for several rounds. He lifted his spear and rushed towards it!

True essence concentrated in the entirety of his body. Lin Ming was like a horse racing ahead at full speed. As he ran, all of the tiny units in his body began to breathe in rhythm. Lin Ming's internal true essence began to rapidly vibrate!

Because of the intense vibrations, all of Lin Ming's muscles swelled. He held the spear with an arm that was thicker by several inches, and the blue veins on his arm were bulging. With a ripping sound, the clothes on Lin Ming's body began to tear apart, and all his clothes became tattered and fell off around him. Lin Ming's body was like a shooting star!

The black armored knight lifted his halberd high in the air and cleaved downwards. Facing the cold, dense halberd, Lin Ming did not dodge or evade. He waiting for the split second the halberd came down, and focused true essence into both of his feet. The intense true essence vibrations disintegrated the ground underneath him; with every one of his steps, rocks shattered and came jumping into the air. He had reached the pinnacle of his speed, and then surpassed that! Together with his long spear, he was like a black arrow that flew towards the black armored knight!

"Pah!"

Lin Ming abruptly arrived before the black armored knight before his halberd had fully come down, and thrusted his spear forwards!

"Flood Dragon Goes to Sea!"

The spear from the bottom up pierced the neck of the horse, broke through its armor, and then continued straight through the chest of the black armored knight!

Under the overwhelming vibrations, the black armored knight's armor was broken like thin paper. The cloud vein wrought iron tip of the long spear had pierced all the way through the black armored knight's chest. The savagely potent vibrations were sent into the black armored knight's body, and the knight uncontrollably shook. The knight began to bleed profusely from its head, and then immediately horribly died on the ground. The vibrating true essence had already liquefied all of its internal organs!

However, with that last killing strike towards the black armored knight, Lin Ming had exhausted all of his true essence in a single breath. Even his own muscles could not bear the intensity of the true essence vibration, and he suffered enormous damage to his entire body. It was difficult to even move, as a huge group of vicious beasts rushed at him from all angles. At this point, his battle had ended!

…

On the Ten Thousand Killing Array's altar, Lin Ming let out a cough. His face whitened and he was sent out.

On the altar, there were still three people in the assessment. The strength of the participants for this month's Ten Thousand Killing Array inspection was on a much higher level than last month's.

"Just a bit over four incense sticks, a tad better than I thought he would do. What's his ranking? Murong Zi said with a smile and a laugh. She turned her eyes over to the Ranking Stone.

"Rank 89 Gu Yu is still not finished on the alter. This Lin Ming was eliminated a step earlier than him. His result should be no more than rank 90."

"Mmm, this result shouldn't be too far…"

The people were in a heated discussion, and they began to focus on the changes in the Ranking Stone. Zhu Yan stood in the middle of these people and turned a deaf ear to their discussions. He was fixated on the Ranking Stone, and his face was like a gloomy black lake.

The scouts sent by the princes also turned their focus to the Ranking Stone. They had come today for this reason. Some of them had even already prepared the sound transmitting talisman.

Most people were looking at the row that listed ranks 90 through 100. But this time, the sixth row of the Ranking Stone had a fluctuation. This simple and minor change was destined to be written down in the history of the Seven Profound Martial House, even in the history of the Sky Fortune Kingdom.

Lin Ming, 62.

Chapter 89 – The Result That Defies Heaven's Will

Chapter 89 – The Result That Defies Heaven's Will

…

…

…

"62!?"

"My heavens!"

Under everyone's burning hot gazes, these two simple characters of Lin Ming, inserted in the middle of a row of names, was utterly dazzling!

62!

In his second assessment, he had soared into the top 72 rankings! The Heavenly Abode had 72 people altogether. This meant that Lin Ming's strength already sufficed to enter the Heavenly Abode!

15 years old, entering the Seven Profound Martial House for one month, cultivation of the early Third Stage of Body Transformation, and he had the qualifications to enter the Heavenly Abode!

For the last 100 years, three martial artists had appeared who had entered into the top 100 during their second round of assessment. But if talking about someone who could enter the Heavenly Abode during their second assessment, there had never existed anyone like that!

All of the disciples present, and the scouts sent by the princes, stared wide-eyed at the Ranking Stone. Murong Zi incredulously covered her mouth in disbelief. The scouts were so shocked, they had forgotten to immediately report the results via their sound transmitting talismans.

This defied the heavens' will!

This was an absolutely monstrous genius who surpassed Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and Zhang Guanyu!

"No… it's impossible! He only managed to pass through four incense sticks of time, he should only be past the first 100 rankings, how could his ranking possibly be so high!?" The Heavenly Abode martial artists said. Their rankings were in the 70's and above. With Lin Ming rising into the middle of them, that meant there was the possibility that one of them would be squeezed out of the Heavenly Abode.

"Was there a mistaking in the Ten Thousand Killing Array's Ranking Stone?"

"How could that be possible? It was an illusory magic array engraved by a Xiantian master."

"Even a Xiantian master could make a mistake…" Some people were unconvinced. No one wanted to be kicked out of the Heavenly Abode.

"Shut up, it's impossible for there to be an error in the Ranking Stone. That Lin Ming could kill his way into the top 72 with only four incense sticks of time is because the speed at which he killed his enemies in the Ten Thousand Killing Array is much quicker than martial artists at his level!"

The deacon who was responsible for the Ten Thousand Killing Array spoke up. This person was a graduate of the Seven Profound Martial House and had already broken through to the Pulse Condensation Period. In the Seven Profound Martial House, he was not only a deacon but also an instructor.

Much quicker than martial artists at his level?

Hearing the deacon’s judgment, it was as if all the air in the surroundings had been sucked out. In the Ten Thousand Killing Array, the enemies overwhelmed to the point of blotting out the sky. Wave after wave of enemies would come, each wave more formidable than the last. The assessment would cause one to not be able to catch their breath; everyone would try to slow down in order to find an opportunity to restore their true essence. Therefore everyone who entered the Ten Thousand Killing Array would kill enemies at the same time and so their ranking could be judged by how long they took.

If Lin Ming slaughtered at such a speed, then without a doubt he would consume his strength faster, and die faster!

It was just too abnormal!

Murong Zi was still covering her mouth, finding herself at a loss for words. It was only after a moment that she turned to Bai Jingyun and said, “Big Sister Jingyun, you were right… this Lin Ming is simply a farm animal, I don’t know what kind of food he was fed growing up…”

She was very clear on the significance of this ranking. Beyond the top 62 rankings, there were about a dozen students who were set to graduate at the end of the year. Even if Lin Ming stayed at the same ranking, he could enter the top 50 at the end of the year. He could even leap past the top 50 rankings!

But how could Lin Ming stay at the same rankings? He might even enter the top 30 by the end of the year and become her own competition!

Bai Jingyun snorted and then smiled, “Little girl, mind your manners. You are just envious of others.”

“Humph, why would I envy him? I just have to take things a little more seriously, and then we will see if I am surpassed by him!” Murong Zi raised her small fists. Before now, she had just wanted to play around all the time. Before, at the Dream Trial during the entrance exam, Murong Zi's result was an absolute mess. It was only by taking risk after risk did she cross each hurdle.

…

…

"Damnit! Hurry up and report this to his highness the Crown Prince faster! Damn me, this result has really turned me into a blind dog!" The lead detective under the command of the Crown Prince burst out at his group like an exploding chestnut!

"Yes, yes, we will immediately send the report. A little guy whose head had been knocked around hurriedly whispered the information, and then lit the sound transmitting talisman in his hands…

Meanwhile, the followers of the Tenth Prince also burnt their sound transmitting talisman. The man who led them looked at the four Crown Prince's men in the bamboo grove, an evil smile curving on his face.

"What a bunch of idiots. They are still making a futile effort to struggle. Time is on our side, his Highness will inevitably win. What kind of trash can the Crown Prince put out? For this Lin Ming, his Highness has already especially prepared a set of human-step scriptures and a top-quality treasure!"

…

At this time, the Crown Prince Yang Lin was in the Eastern Palace. He was playing chess with his mentor, Mister Muyi.

"Haha, what was your highness thinking? That chess move was wrong." Muyi smiled as he moved a piece and took another one. Yang Lin's bottom left side of the board had already become a lost cause.

Yang Lin smiled as he shook his head. “Teacher, I have never won playing against you. Whether I lose early or I lose late, the difference is not big.”

“Haha, even if you say that your strength is inferior, you cannot lose your backbone or fighting spirit. Chess is like a battlefield, even if your technique is inferior; someone who dies on the battlefield remains a hero as he was before. But if he surrenders and is captured and then killed, it is only a shame.”

“Teacher’s lesson is wise.”

To Muyi, Yang Lin had no superiority as Crown Prince. In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, a middle Houtian stage master was someone that even the emperor had to give three points of respect to. More so because the current government and court were turbulent, Muyi was the most important person that Yang Lin relied on.

“Tell me, what’s on your mind?” Muyi asked as he put a pawn down on the board.

Yang Lin said, “I visited my father, the emperor today. His body seems to be worse than before...”

“Mmm...” Muyi thought silently. He knew that if Yang Lin was worried about anything, it was the throne change due to the old emperor’s deteriorating condition. He did not have too many forces on his side, and now he had to consider the power and strength of the other princes. The Tenth Prince, the Cloud Prince, was ambitious; he probably would not be willing to stay just a prince. But if comparing the influence in the court, their supporters, and even individual strength, Yang Lin was far from the Cloud Prince. Once a struggle began, he might not come out as the victor.

In the struggles of the throne, once one was defeated, their fate could be imagined. Yang Lin was already the Crown Prince; even if he didn’t want to struggle, he had no choice but to do so. Otherwise, he would lose his life! So these days, Yang Lin has been heavy-hearted, and had not dared to show his hand.

Muyi said, “Your highness. I had just said that chess is like a battlefield. You cannot lose your backbone or your fighting spirit. Your highness, if you lack confidence, then the subordinates under your control will also be anxious. These subordinates of yours have already resolved to follow your highness, and have handed over their lives and their families’ lives. If your highness loses, then the Cloud Prince will surely show no mercy, and will thoroughly cleanse the government. When that time comes…”

Muyi did not say it, but in all the ancient changes of the throne, they were often accompanied by massacres and the thick smells of blood and death. At those times, things like affection and friendship would all be nothing but a joke.

Chapter 90 – Cloud Prince

Chapter 90 – Cloud Prince

…

…

…

Muyi slowly shook his head. To be fair, Yang Lin was far too kind; his temperament was not suitable to be the head of state. Although the charming stories from ancient times had told of many benevolent emperors who ruled their counties, that benevolence was only a single facet of their character. For instance, they would show one side to the officials, one side to the common people, and one side to their enemies. They would not be lenient or relent when it came to killing. Those who were too friendly and passive were not suited to be rulers.

Yang Lin said, “In the current Seven Profound Martial House ranking war, there appears to be some talent participating in the assessment. I sent Zishan and the others over because I wanted to win him over, but… I’m not entertaining any hope. My tenth younger brother has been at the battlefield in all directions for many years. He has captured the aristocrats of many neighboring countries and acquired massive amounts of wealth, jewelry, beautiful women, and cultivation method manuals… especially the rare cultivation manuals, these are particularly tempting to martial artists. I don’t think that I can offer anything comparable to what my tenth younger brother can.”

When the world was at peace, everyone would come to one for advantages, but when the world was in turmoil, one had to go to others for advantages. If a ruler wanted to win over talents, they needed to give corresponding rewards. Therefore, a prince’s wealth was also an important standard of their strength. Otherwise if you could not put out anything valuable, why would anyone die for them?

"Oh? Talent? Who?" Muyi's heart moved. He already had a faint guess.

"Lin Ming, 15 years old. This time he might enter the top 100 rankings in the Seven Profound Martial House."

"Lin Ming?" Muyi smiled. "Your highness please rest assured, Lin Ming will not be won over by the Tenth Prince."

"Oh? Why do you say this?"

"Little Brother Lin and I are friends between generations. Moreover his background is a bit mysterious; he has a formidable master behind him. He only went to the Seven Profound Martial House for some exercise and experiences. Even if the Cloud Prince were to put out some good cultivation method, it may not even be seen in Lin Ming's eyes. And also… does your highness remember one month ago when I asked your highness to help rescue a friend? This was at the start of fall and was also the same day as the Seven Profound Martial House entrance exam. He was framed and almost put in prison…"

"What… the… Teacher, do you mean to tell me that it was Lin Ming?" Yang Lin was quick thinking, he immediately understood what Muyi wanted to say.

"Haha, yes, he was Lin Ming. Although I do not have much contact with little brother Lin, but I can tell you that I feel he is a very righteous and good person. Although at that time your highness Crown Prince's help wasn't much, Lin Ming should remember this kindness. Although Your Highness might not win him over, he also will not become a subordinate of the Cloud Prince and oppose Your Highness."

"This, this is really a pleasant surprise."

The Crown Prince lit up with an happy expression. Although the emperor's body was getting worse every year, but under the care of precious medicines and the physicians' martial arts conditioning, it would not be a problem to live 5 or 6 years, or even 7 to 8 years more. Such a long time was already enough for a talent to grow.

Although there were quite a few Pulse Condensation martial artists in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, most of them were gathered at the Seven Profound Martial House. Others were bestowed titles by the government, and were basically in the military.

The ones who could be utilized by the princes were less and less, because few people wished to wade into the turbulent waters of the throne change. Once they made a mistake and bet on the wrong horse, they would be beyond redemption!

On Yang Lin’s side, not calculating Muyi, there was only a single Pulse Condensation martial artist, who was already over 50 years old. But looking at the Seven Profound Martial House, there was Ling Sen, whose cultivation was already at the peak Fourth Stage of Body Transformation, and whose true combat strength approached the Pulse Condensation Period!

Give him a few years, and he could also reach that stage!

This Lin Ming could become the next Ling Sen!

Lin Ming was a reputed rare talent at the Seven Profound Martial House that would only appear every few dozen years. If he decided to join a side, the power and influence he would gain would increase a step.

Therefore this competition for Lin Ming, although it appeared to be minor, was actually very significant!

At this time, a red flame lit up in front of Yang Lin.

Pure gold! An urgent sound transmitting talisman!

“Your highness, Lin Ming’s result is in. His ranking is 62!”

“What!?” Yang Lin stood up on the spot. 62!!!

As the Crown Prince, he knew what it meant to achieve a ranking of 62 on the second assessment! Even Ling Sen was inferior to this!

Ling Sen was already an abnormal existence. With his cultivation of peak Fourth Stage of Body Transformation, he was able to approach the strength of the Pulse Condensation Period, and this Lin Ming was even more aberrant!

He immediately sent out another sound transmitting talisman. Although he knew that it was impossible for Zishan and the others to make such a huge mistake, he had to confirm this matter.

"How is it?" The sound transmitting talisman sends the sound directly to the receiver's mind. Muyi had not heard anything.

Yang Lin took a deep breath and said, "Teacher, this Lin Ming's result was rank 62."

"What? 62?" Muyi was slightly perturbed for a moment but immediately relaxed. Of course, since Lin Ming was the disciple chosen by such a great master, how could he be a small fish in a pond? Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and others like them could be considered talents in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, but if compared to the disciples of the large sects that were taught by the highest masters, they were far worse.

Even if Lin Ming was able to reach rank 62 on his first assessment, it would not be an exaggeration!

Muyi believed that since Lin Ming had an extraordinary master behind him, then he must have a surprisingly good ability. Even if Lin Ming were to defeat Ling Sen in a few more months, Muyi at most would be astonished for a brief moment, and then also believe that this was normal.

…

While Yang Lin received the sound transmitting talisman, the Tenth Prince also received one. The Tenth Prince did not care much for Lin Ming's strength, as he had many more masters under him than the Crown Prince did. What he cared about was Lin Ming's influence. Lin Ming was the eye of the storm in the Sky Fortune Capital City and a rising star in the martial artist circles. His talent was to the degree that it could only be found every few dozen years in the Seven Profound Martial House!

If such a character were to join him, then without a doubt his subordinates' morale would greatly increase. There were even more people who were waiting to see the situation before thinking of joining him. If Lin Ming were to join, it would no doubt be easier.

But now, after hearing the news from the sound transmitting talisman, the Tenth Prince's complexion immediately changed.

To enter the Seven Profound Martial House for only one month and for this to only be his second assessment, and also to only have cultivation at the early Third Stage of Body Transformation, yet he was still able to reach rank 62 on the Ranking Stone!

This ranking had completely outstripped Ling Sen!

The Seven Profound Martial House had never had a record like this for a hundred years!

For one to be able to advance into the Seven Profound Martial House's Heavenly Abode with just a peak Third Stage of Body Transformation could be considered a talent among talents if they managed to reach around rank 70. But Lin Ming had actually reached rank 62! And his cultivation was a full half-step lower! This was simply a monstrous genius!

It was possible that Lin Ming would become a master who far exceeded Ling Sen! Disregarding the considerable influence he would have in pulling other martial artists over to his side, his combat prowess was enough to give the Tenth Prince a shock!

Don't forget, Lin Ming was only 15 years old and his cultivation was at the early Third Stage of Body Transformation; there was immense room for improvement!

"Haha, the heavens help me! As soon as this rare talent that hasn't been seen in a hundred years of the Seven Profound Martial House joins me, then the martial artists of Sky Fortune City will hear this and come shaking in their boots to join me!

“Your Highness, any orders?”

“Prepare 50,000 gold taels immediately, two boxes of the finest jewelry, a dozen of the finest outstanding virgin beauties under 16 years of age, a hundred servants, and have them wait at Chunyuan Mountain Villa. Also, prepare 500 acres of fertile farmland and the title deed of Chunyuan Mountain Villa!”

The man heard this and was secretly scared. Such rewards, was he for real!? Who was this for!? A villa, 50,000 gold taels, and two boxes of the finest jewelry were more than enough to win over a general!

The Tenth Prince was positive that he had this. In fact, he also had a secondary reward that gave him the most confidence. It was a set of rare human-step manuals that he had looted from an aristocratic family. With this, he had won over many martial artists.

“Yang Lin, Yang Lin, you will lose to me. What you can put out is not even a tenth of what I can. I want to see how you will struggle when you are fully pressured by me. I don’t need that old fogy to die; I will make the first move and catch you off guard!”

Chapter 91 – Challenged at Spear Point

Chapter 91 – Challenged at Spear Point

…

…

…

At the Ten Thousand Kill Array ashlar square –

Zhu Yan narrowed his eyes towards Lin Ming. Without saying a word, his complexion had returned to normal, but in the glint of those narrow eyes was an icy chill.

Lin Ming and Zhu Yan looked at eachother with outwards indifference. Their conflict would end in combat sooner or later, but Zhu Yan had not thought that the day would be arriving so quickly.

Lan Yunyue was quietly standing in a corner of the sword bamboo grove. She was at a complete loss looking at that incomprehensible number on the Ranking Stone. She looked at the confrontation between Zhu Yan and Lin Ming and was totally confused. How could things come to this…?

Many people in the audience were still shocked silly by the result. By now, the deacon responsible for the Ten Thousand Killing Array opened his mouth and suddenly said, "Lin Ming, congratulations for reaching rank 62 in the Ten Thousand Killing Array. According to the regulations of the Martial House, as soon as you enter into the top 80 rankings among the disciples, you have earned the qualifications to challenge any disciple of the Heavenly Abode. The winner will enter the Heavenly Abode and the loser will be eliminated and enter the Earth Hall."

The Seven Profound Martial House's Heavenly Abode had exactly 72 people. These people were there because of their combat prowess, but their strength might not be ordered on the Ten Thousand Killing Array rankings.

Although the Ranking Stone rankings judged the basic strength of an individual, sometimes there existed discrepancies. For instance, specific specialties such as an assassin, who do not excel in the forward rushing fighting style of the Ten Thousand Killing Array. But in terms of killing a human, they can often surpass their ranking to defeat someone.

Therefore the Seven Profound Martial House regulations stipulated that once one entered the top 80 rankings of the Ranking Stone, they obtained the qualifications to challenge a disciple of the Heavenly Abode. Generally speaking, for this challenge, the one most often chosen was the worst ranking person in the Heavenly Abode.

Lin Ming look at the Ranking Stone. On the Ranking Stone, the names of the Heavenly Abode disciples were slightly larger than those of the Earth Hall. It was easy to see that the one worst ranked in the Heavenly Abode was a 17 year old girl named Bai Rongrong, rank 75.

Bai Rongrong just happened to be present during this ranking war. She looked extremely pitiful as she saw Lin Ming turn his eyes on the Ranking Stone. She knew that she had no chance at all facing him. To reach rank 62 in four incense sticks and a breathe of time; even if there were two of her, she had no fancy dreams she could overcome such a monstrously evil genius.

She had to at least symbolically fight him. She just couldn't throw in the towel and admit defeat. She had to fight him honestly and fairly. She could only hope that this abnormal fellow showed some mercy and wasn't too ruthless…

Bai Rongrong was self-aware of her own situation; she had already resigned herself to fate.

The eyes of many of those present fell on Bai Rongrong. They all expected that this Bai Rongrong would lose. A girl was able to win sympathy from others, especially this Bai Rongrong who was always diligent in her cultivation. If the one who met such a calamity this time was a boy, chances were that most people would have the feeling of taking pleasure in other's misfortune.

"Have you decided?" The deacon asked.

"Mmm, I've decided." Lin Ming replied. "I have a question though. Are there any restrictions on the time setting of this challenge?"

"The time is decided yourself, but preferably within a month. If your ranking falls out of the top 80, then you also lose the qualifications to challenge."

"I see… thank you Deacon Senior Apprentice."

"You've chosen? I need the name to report to the Heavenly Abode elder responsible for these matters."

"Mmm. I've chosen. The time is in one month. As for who…" Lin Ming turned his head. He lifted his spear and pointed it directly at a man who was staring at him with narrowed eyes, "I choose Zhu Yan!"

Zhu Yan!?

Everyone who heard this name froze. Especially Bai Rongrong, whose face filled with an incredulous expression of disbelief.

The entire ashlar square fell into absolute silence.

The one this Lin Ming chose was… Zhu Yan!?

Many people at first thought they heard wrong, but looking at who Lin Ming's spear was pointed at, it was clearly directed at Zhu Yan!

Provocation!

Challenging someone at spear point! This was simply unconcealed provocation!

Ranked 32, Zhu Yan! This Lin Ming just wouldn't stop astonishing everyone!

"This Lin Ming... he's just... he's gone insane!" Murong Zi's lips twitched. She mumbled, "No... I'm the crazy one. If this Lin Ming is crazy, and he does crazy things and creates crazy miracles, then if he is not crazy, I am crazy."

Bai Jingyun was also amazed. This Lin Ming was bold! What courage! He was prepared to surpass Zhu Yan in one month!

From 62 to 32, it had to be known that the ranking was exponentially more difficult the higher one went. From 162 to 132 would not be difficult, but from 62 to 32, the hardship would increase by several times!

She had used an entire year to go from 65 to 26.

This growth seemed high, but the truth was it was limited!

Because this year, 20 disciples who had been in front of Bai Jingyun had graduated from the Martial House. So Bai Jingyun had only actually advanced 19 ranks!

"This has become interesting." Ta Ku said with a wry smile. "I did not come today in vain. This Lin Ming seems to have a grudge with Zhu Yan. Otherwise, why would he aim so high?"

"Mmm, really a horrible relationship. I felt Zhu Yan's body flash a moment ago with murderous intent, but it was instantly hidden. Lin Ming challenged Zhu Yan at spear point. That in itself was also a kind of provocation." Ling Sen said. Although that moment when Zhu Yan had broken out in murderous intention was not obvious, Ling Sen was able to sense it from the many years he had spent on the battlefield. He also had his Ashura martial intent, so he was particularly sensitive to murderous intent.

"Zhu Yan is a ruthless person. Although he has an aristocratic background, he is actually someone who sinks his entire heart into diligently cultivating. He is very strong, and not only that, but this kind of person has no lack of ambition. In the future he will probably join the government. Even I have kept several points of attention on him. Now this Lin Ming challenged Zhu Yan, I really want to see!” Ta Ku licked his lips in excitement. He was a subordinate of the army, and would most likely return in the future. It was better for him not to be involved in these struggles.

What would the result be after one month? No one dared to guess.

If it was before, then they would say that Lin Ming was a fool who had bitten off more than he could chew. But at present, Lin Ming had created miracle after miracle, and no one dared to look down on a single hair of his.

…

“Mmm? What? Lin Ming challenged Zhu Yan? And he challenged him at spear point! Is it possible that he has some enmity with Zhu Yan?” In the Eastern Palace, the Crown Prince had just gotten the news that Lin Ming had challenged Zhu Yan.

“He called out his name and also referred to him by spear point. It really is unusual. Between these two people, there should be some matters.” Muyi also said.

“If there really is a grudge, then my chances just increased. This Zhu Yan is a cousin of my tenth brother. Zhu Yan is already joined together with my tenth brother as one. They share glory, and also defeat. I don’t know what sort of relationship exists between Lin Ming and Zhu Yan. It seems there are some oversights in my information…”

For the matters between Lin Ming and Lan Yunyue, except Lin Xiaodong, few others knew. The intelligence that the Crown Prince collected was mainly about Lin Ming’s background and parental situation, it wasn’t a completely exhaustive report.

…

Peng! The teacup in the Cloud Prince’s hand was crushed. He had received the sound transmitting talisman at the same time the Crown Prince had.

Naming Zhu Yan in a challenge, referring to him by spear point, this was definitely not a good sign. If there was no hatred between them, why would Lin Ming jump over so many people to find Zhu Yan?

“This Zhu Yan, he’s really making trouble for me!”

The Tenth Prince’s two eyebrows slanted upwards like scimitars and twisted together. Zhu Yan belonged to his mother’s side. About relatives from the wife or mother’s family, generally speaking, regardless if it were a prince or an emperor, they would exclude most from the mother’s side.

Since ancient times, it had been far too common for the wife’s family or mother’s family to take power. For instance, the empress or empress dowager would entrust heavy responsibilities to their family and cause their power to skyrocket. But once their influence inflated, then there would also be conspiracies and plots to control the court. There would be rebellions and plots from the women’s side to seize power.

But, this was a crucial phase for the Cloud Prince in his struggle. Anything that could give him a boost was good. Zhu Yan was a talented person, and the Cloud Prince was willing to let him work as his subordinate, but he would not take Zhu Yan as a trusted follower. Someone like Zhu Yan was simply too ambitious.

“Pass the order; I want Zhu Yan to come see me tonight!” The Tenth Prince wanted to inquire about the reason behind the feud between Zhu Yan and Lin Ming, and see whether he could convert Lin Ming from an enemy into a friend.

Chapter 92 – Declined

Chapter 92 – Declined

…

…

…

Hu! After Zhu Yan returned to his residence, a ball of flame burst into sparks in front of him. This was a message sent by a sound transmitting talisman from the Tenth Prince, Yang Zhen. The Tenth Prince wanted him to come see him tonight at his palace.

Zhu Yan could hear his underlying tone. The Ten Prince did not sound happy!

Zhu Yan knew for certain that if the Tenth Prince wanted to see him, it was because of that moment when Lin Ming had openly challenged him. The scouts he had sent to observe the situation must have reported back to the Tenth Prince.

Win over Lin Ming? Stop dreaming!

Zhu Yan reached out a hand and crushed the smoldering ashes in front of him. The voice of the Tenth Prince came to a screeching halt.

Zhu Yan slowly rose up and poured himself a glass of wine. He raised the glass and drained the whole thing. Slowly, his eyes became quietly cold, like a placid lake.

"There is still a month. Do you think that Lin Ming has already won?"

…

As Lin Ming returned to his residence, he also received sound transmitting talismans simultaneously from the Tenth Prince and the Crown Prince.

The Crown Prince’s message was from Muyi.

In the sound transmitting talisman, Muyi sent his congratulations and invited Lin Ming to the Crown Prince’s palace to visit and have a drink.

As for the Tenth Price, he also invited Lin Ming over and also asked if Lin Ming could take a view at a rare human-step manual that he had.

These two sound transmitting talismans, in truth, had already violated the regulations of the Seven Profound Martial House. The Martial House had stipulated that any and all outside influences could not disturb disciples in the middle of the school period, even if it was a sound transmitting talisman sent from the outside. However, the present events were of an important matter with the princes competing for the throne, so naturally the Martial House was able to bend the rules a little to accommodate them.

“It seems that both sides want to win me over… I have antagonized too many people and made too many enemies. My own strength is weak… I may be safe in the Seven Profound Martial House, but if I go out, I might be assassinated! Although I created a story that I have some formidable master at my back, this kind of fake thing might not necessarily deter others. If I take a side for the time being, then they can also protect me. Muyi has been gracious and generous towards me and we are friends, and the Crown Prince helped me one time so I owe him a favor. If I join them, that would be a good choice. As for the Tenth Prince, he is a child of the concubine empress of the Zhu Family…” Lin Ming didn’t care much about politics, but he knew about the Zhu Family’s situation, and that the Tenth Prince was Zhu Yan’s cousin. The Zhu Family had used this relationship to climb up the ladder; their influence was growing day by day and rising in the ranks.

It was impossible for Lin Ming to take the Tenth Prince’s side. He immediately declined him!

As for giving face to Muyi, that was something that he absolutely had to do, but now was not the time…

“I thank your highness the Crown Prince for your great and kind invitation, but I already have a promised date in a month and must seize every second and minute, thus I cannot keep my appointment with you. One month later, I will come visit and pay my thanks to your hospitality at that time.

In the Eastern Palace of the Crown Prince, Muyi received Lin Ming’s sound transmitting talisman. He traced his beard and said with a smile, “Lin Ming said that he would come to visit in a month.”

“Oh? This Lin Ming is really so diligent that he doesn’t have a free evening?”

Muyi replied, “Your highness must know that the man that cultivates the path of martial arts must be fastidious and keep their thoughts and heart pure. Lin Ming wholeheartedly pursues the martial arts peak; if his heart doesn’t have any distracting thoughts, then his growth will also be very fast. If he were to come for a drink even for a night, then there would be some unavoidable disturbances in his mind and it would take perhaps a day or two to adjust back.”

“So that’s how it is. No wonder this Lin Ming’s cultivation progressed so quickly. His heart of martial arts must be make up a large part of the reason?”

“Yes. Normally if someone’s heart of martial arts is weak, when they only have some achievements, they have major powers from far and wide trying to win them over. They are very easily tempted by things like wealth and beauty. This kind of person will always lack great talent, and can only be a follower! However, that Lin Ming’s strength improved so quickly is not just due to his pure heart of martial arts, but also because he has a formidable master behind him.”

Initially, Lin Ming had asked Muyi to keep his secret of being an inscription master private, but he had not said anything to Muyi about keeping this formidable shadow master of his a secret.

In fact, with Lin Ming's current reputation, even if he were to publicize his status as an inscription master, it would not be dangerous. It would even add to the chips in his hand! Not to mention that he had the Crown Prince and Muyi's protection now, his status of being a talented disciple of the Seven Profound Marital House was already an enormous deterrent.

"Of course… what sort of master is this behind Lin Ming? The Crown Prince asked as his eyes lit up.

Muyi saw this look of the Crown Prince and clearly knew what thoughts he had. He smiled and said, "Your highness should not expect to count on this person. I guess that this senior is at least at the Large Success of Xiantian stage. He might have even already surpassed the Xiantian stage; the height of the realms he has reached is already beyond our understanding. He would not meddle in the earthly matters."

"Surpasses Xiantian!" Yang Lin's heart shook as he heard this. "What sort of realm is above a Xiantian master?"

Muyi forced a wry smile. He said, "I do not know the martial arts path beyond that. For those that do not come from an ancient clan or sect, the martial artist who learns by themselves is just like living in a dense fog, they simply do not know where or what to explore. After the Xiantian stage, I am not clear what sort of realm it is…"

Yang Lin let loose a light breath and said, "Teacher, please do not belittle yourself. You already have such achievements though you are not from a sect or a clan; you are already a rare talent. I only have one point that is unclear; if this Lin Ming has such a formidable master behind him, why would he go to the Seven Profound Martial House?"

Muyi said, "Well about this I also have some doubts. To the martial arts path beyond the Xiantian stage, I do not completely understand. Perhaps if one wants to reach the higher boundaries in martial arts, they need to experience for themselves the world and accumulate life experiences, and that is why Lin Ming then came to Sky Fortune City."

"Mmm. Whether or not I can win over Lin Ming, I must at least become friends with him. Next month when Lin Ming comes, I will personally greet him and give him a proper banquet!"

…

"This Lin Ming, he actually rejected me!"

At the Cloud Prince's palace, the Tenth Prince Yang Zhen received the sound transmitting talisman that Lin Ming had replied with, and his face immediately sank. "Zhu Yan, you really did a good deed. For a mere woman you have offended such a powerful enemy, you have really disappointed me!"

Zhu stood in front, silent and without words. Originally when he had succeeded in snatching and obtaining Lan Yunyue, Lin Ming had only been a little unimportant guy, nothing more than a bug beneath his heel. No matter what happened, he could easily deal with him. To take a woman from such an useless person, what could go wrong? Who could possibly expect that Lin Ming would grow so quickly into such a powerful enemy?

Of course, he did not explain these matters nor did he need to. Yang Zhen had asked him here today to let loose his volatile temper. Zhu Yan was very clear; his current status and his Zhu Family's status was all because of the Tenth Prince. The Tenth Prince was his master, and in front of him, he could not revolt.

"I borrowed your Zhu Family's strength because I thought you could assist me in dealing with my hurdle, but now you have only added to the chaos! I had the absolute confidence to win over Lin Ming, but now!"

"Zhu Yan, you followed me because you wanted to do great things and have great accomplishments! Only the stupidest, the absolute stupidest people would kill the world for just a woman! That Lan Yunyue, you will divorce her!"

As the Tenth Prince said this, Zhu Yan's brow slightly wrinkled. He said, "Your highness, even if I divorce Lan Yunyue, it is impossible for me to ease my relationship with Lin Ming.

Do you believe that Lin Ming will forgive this betrayal and join together with Lan Yunyue again? This battle of mine and Lin Ming's was because of Lan Yunyue, but now, it already has nothing to do with Lan Yunyue any longer."

"I do not need you to preach to me! I already know that Lin Ming will not want Lan Yunyue again. But, if you divorce her, it will be a sign of showing weakness and humbling yourself before Lin Ming. Afterwards you can apologize. Only like this can we possibly sit down and discuss the future together. Only like this will I have the possibility to offer him generous conditions and bring him to my side! No longer an eternal enemy, only eternal benefits. I will choose for him beauties that far outstrip Lan Yunyue, heavenly beauties who are as obedient as a cat. I will give him great wealth and top cultivation methods. How could he not side with me? What the Crown Prince can give him is nothing compared to what I can!"

"You want me to show weakness and humble myself before Lin Ming...?" Zhu Yan's mouth twitched and his fists clenched together until they were white. For someone like him who had an arrogant personality, to show weakness and humble himself, it was worse than killing him!

Chapter 93 – Obstacle

Chapter 93 – Obstacle

…

…

…

"What, you aren't willing? A real man is resilient and can adapt to the situation. What is this matter of showing a little weakness? Could it be that you want to create problems for me, just because you and Lin Ming are complete enemies?"

Zhu Yan took a few deep breaths and then slowly relaxed his clenched fists. His eyes were cold as he slowly said, "Your highness. A dead genius is no longer a genius."

"Humph! You want me to assassinate Lin Ming? Zhu Yan, do you not know what sort of unparalleled existence the Seven Profound Martial House is in the Sky Fortune Kingdom? Lin Ming is a rare talent that hasn't been seen in a hundred years of the Seven Profound Martial House! I can't believe that you wish for me to assassinate him. Even if he left the Martial House, even if he hasn't grown, do not forget my elder brother, the Crown Price Yang Lin! Although Yang Lin is stupid, he is not stupid to the point of being retarded! How could he not send protection for Lin Ming? His side also has a master, he even has Muyi! Once I make a minor miscalculation, once just a little bit of my plans are exposed to Yang Lin that I have killed Lin Ming, then I have lost! Let alone when the time comes to take the throne, I won't even be able to preserve my life! The authority of the Seven Profound Martial House is inviolable. Even if it is my father the emperor, he would also be useless to do anything!"

"Just one Muyi is enough to give me a headache!! I have spent many resources to raise 18 people into the court that are willing to die, and this is just to barely deal with Muyi. If this

Lin Ming grows up and is added to this already complicated situation, then my chances will be significantly reduced!"

Zhu Yan's mouth twitched and both of his fists felt heavy. He spoke slowly and clearly, "Your Highness, please give me some time. I will give you an adequate response!"

"Fine. I will believe you this one time. But what if you disappoint me once again?"

Zhu Yan took a deep breath and bit out the words, "If I am defeated, if Lin Ming can still grow with such a monstrously evil speed, then I will divorce Lan Yunyue and apologize to Lin Ming!"

"Humph. I hope it will not be too late at that time! Draw back!

…

In a guest room at the Great Clarity Pavilion, the ambiance was brilliant, and the prepared dishes were delicious, but Zhu Yan did not have the mind to eat the dishes as he stewed in his thoughts.

Seeing Zhu Yan not eating, Lan Yunyue hadn't dared to move her chopsticks. She had correctly guessed that Zhu Yan's worry today was related to Lin Ming's challenge. She was caught in the middle, embarrassed, and did not dare to even say a few words.

"Today, the Tenth Prince called me in to discuss some matters with me." Zhu Yan slowly said after being silent for a long time.

"Mmm? Discuss... what did you talk about?" Lan Yunyue felt a faint sense of unease. She had never known what Zhu Yan was thinking. She could only feel his dark and terrible mood, as if there was this gently roiling calm, just before he would explode with sudden violent rage and run amok. His look was just like a vicious beast lying in ambush; at first it seemed tranquil and calm, but it was actually containing an inexhaustible murderous intent.

When she was together with Zhu Yan, Lan Yunyue had always felt an invisible pressure pushing down on her as if she couldn't breathe. It was unlike the past; during the time when she and Lin Ming had been together. When she was with Lin Ming, she could randomly act like a spoiled brat, or randomly lose her temper, but that boy would always smile at her like sunshine and satisfy all of her unreasonable demands...

Unfortunately, those days were long gone and would never return. Lan Yunyue sighed in her heart. She did not dare to show any feelings, because she always felt as if Zhu Yan's eyes were like an eagle that seemed able to completely penetrate into her innermost feelings.

"He told me to..." Zhu Yan said, and then looked at her with both eyes and slowly continued, "He told me to divorce you..."

In that moment, Lan Yunyue became senseless. It was as if time had slowed down in that instant, and Zhu Yan's face suddenly seemed far off in the distance. All her senses, her hearing, her touch, all of it became blurred.

Although she had always maintained the purity of her body, she had already become engaged to Zhu Yan. In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, if a girl was divorced after being engaged, this was an extremely shameful matter, and their remarriage would be affected. If Zhu Yan really divorced her, what course was left for her to follow?

She looked at Zhu Yan with a twisted expression and clenched her lips, trying not to cry. Still, tears began to flow from her eyes. She knew what significance the Tenth Prince meant to Zhu Yan and the Zhu Family. His words held much weight to Zhu Yan.

"You... you have agreed?" Lan Yunyue choked on her words, almost sobbing.

"Not yet." Zhu Yan replied truthfully.

"It...why?" Lan Yunyue subconsciously held the chopsticks in her hand, but her knuckles had turned white.

“Because of Lin Ming. The Tenth Prince wishes to win over Lin Ming, but you… you have become an obstacle for him to win over Lin Ming.”

“Ob… obstacle…” Lan Yunyue could finally not bear the pain, and the tears she was holding back began to tumble down like rain. She was just an ordinary girl. How was it that one day she would be involved in the struggles of the throne, and become an obstacle to the prince…

Why was this happening?

Zhu Yan said, “I have one month, maybe two. But I still don’t know if, there might be a chance… you don’t need to despair. This matter isn’t necessarily a foregone conclusion.”

After saying these words, Zhu Yan simply rose up, pushed open the door and left.

Lan Yunyue was left behind, sitting in her chair. She looked as if her soul had been lost. She knew her situation. Although Zhu Yan had said there was an opportunity, she was not naïve enough to believe this. If she ever became an obstacle in his path, even if just a little, he would not hesitate to get rid of her!

Thinking of this, Lan Yunyue felt a surge of inexplicable sorrow.

She absentmindedly rose, opened the door and left.

The main hall of the Great Clarity Pavilion always resounded with boisterous noise and chatter. A crowd of aristocratic sons indulged in their desires and were having fun, raising goblets to drink from. The delicate bronze goblets were covered with a lifelike design, as if it were the mouth of a monster that was opening its jaws wide to swallow her…

Luxurious halls, velvet rugs, the gentle sounds of lofty strings and wind instruments, fine jade plates and golden bowls filled with the best delicacies… she had once longed for these in her dreams and pursued them, but now they only made her feel desolate.

She walked down the staircase and out of the Great Clarity Pavilion.

The autumn night had a breezy coolness to it, and the blowing wind had a touch of dew; it was somber and wistful.

The truth was, Zhu Yan was not wrong… Lan Yunyue understood the reason he said those few words tonight, and did not feel any resentment towards him.

She had chosen Zhu Yan. She chose him because Zhu Yan brought to her great wealth, and thus a longer youth.

If one day Zhu Yan lost his status to women, then even his wife might leave him…

This truth, how could Zhu Yan not understand?

If one chooses splendor, then they have to be able to withstand the bitterness and pain behind that splendor, but… she understood this principle too late.

She suddenly realized how precious those missing things were that she once had. She regretted, not because Lin Ming had metamorphosed into a golden-scaled dragon, but her regret was not knowing that the happiness she had once felt was a true blessing.

…

The result that Lin Ming had created had shocked many people; the major powers had already set plans into action for Lin Ming. But even though Lin Ming had achieved such a great result, he had not even the slightest bit of complacency.

He chose one month of time before challenging Zhu Yan. The truth was, he did not have the absolute assurance that he would win.

Zhu Yan was the first decent enemy in Lin Ming's entire life.

Once, Lin Min had set surpassing Zhu Yan as a lifetime goal. But now, in only a short period of 6 months, Lin Ming would be facing off against Zhu Yan on the same martial stage.

Lin Ming could feel that Zhu Yan was tough and extraordinary.

Zhu Yan and Wang Yanfeng were the same. Both were proud and had their own unyielding will. It was just that Zhu Yan was not so hard-edged like Wang Yanfeng, and was more restrained at heart. If Wang Yanfeng was an unsheathed treasure sword overflowing with cold air, then Zhu Yan was a slender saber hidden in the sheath. It was difficult to tell when he would leave the sheath, and that first strike would be virtually impossible to guard against!

Zhu Yan would not be so easily crushed! He was the son of a concubine of the Zhu Family. He relied on his own strength and diligent efforts to crawl up, step by step, to his current position. He even had the possibility of inheriting the Zhu Family as the head of the household. Such a person, was like strong grass and just as tenacious!

Even if Lin Ming had the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill that was enhanced by the medicinal inscription symbol, he didn't have full confidence that he would win!

This month, Zhu Yan would definitely put in double the effort!

But even knowing this, Lin Ming had still issued a challenge! Not only did he have to challenge Zhu Yan, he had to challenge himself, and force himself into a corner to stimulate his potential!

This month, the resources that Lin Ming would obtain were increased. He would be able to practice for five full days at the seven major killing arrays, receive five Soul Gathering Pellets, and also five true essence stones.

The Soul Gathering Pellets were nothing, but the true essence stones, in particular the five full days of cultivation time, were crucial for Lin Ming.

Five full days was equal to 60 hours he could practice. That was an average of two hours every day for a month!

Although it wasn't indiscriminate practice, but the effects of two hours were already very rewarding.

This early morning, Lin Ming carried the Penetrating Rainbow and went to the Icy Pond Waterfall.

But just as he was about to enter the cold pond, a distant voice called out to him. “Young Cousin, wait a moment!”

“Mm?” Lin Ming paused his footsteps. It was Lin Wu.

“Young Cousin, congratulations! This time you have really gained face for our Lin Family!” Lin Wu cheerfully said as he ran over.

The Lin Family was one of the biggest families in Green Mulberry City, but at present it did not have the means to compare with the Zhu Family. This was because the Zhu Family had a concubine empress, and moreover the empress’s son was awarded the title of prince.

This was not too bad; one could only blame fate. However, most of the Lin Family elders seethed with rage. The Lin Family was always pressured by the Zhu Family and Zhu Yan. They were like a mountain that stood in front of the Lin Family. The strongest of the young generation in the Lin Family was Lin Wu. He had already spent two years in the Seven Profound Martial House and had just barely entered the Earth Hall. Also, he was only in the lower-middle section of rankings. The other two of the younger generation had not even entered the Earth Hall; they could not catch up to even half of Zhu Yan. How could the Lin Family elders not be annoyed?

But yesterday, 12 long-range sound transmitting talismans had been used, and the great news had been sent a great distance that night to Green Mulberry City.

The common sound transmitting talisman could only reach several dozen miles in range, but the long-distance sound transmitting talisman could spread to several hundred miles. The price was of course far higher than ordinary; one slip cost several dozen taels of gold. To pass news from the Sky Fortune City to the Green Mulberry City required 12 sound transmitting talismans being sent in series. The cost to send this news was several hundred gold taels. If it were not important, then even a rich a respected family like the Lin Family would not be so wasteful.

12 sound transmissions were sent in succession, with an urgent pure gold color, they only had a few simple sentences. “Lin Ming has been at the Seven Profound Martial House for 34 days. During the second Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment, he reached rank 62 and obtained the qualifications to challenge the Heavenly Abode. He challenged Zhu Yan at spear point, and declared that their match would be one month later.”

It is said that when the head of the Lin Family received this sound transmitting talisman, he jumped up from his chair on the spot and even used dirty words – “This is fucking great!”

Chapter 94 – Martial Intent Reappears

Chapter 94 – Martial Intent Reappears

Chapter title is a spoiler, highlight it to read it now, or see it at the bottom.

…

…

…

Of course this was great. Their Lin Family had always been pressured by the Zhu Family, and even the younger generation was being pressured by Zhu Yan. Now Lin Ming was able to mercilessly get justice for them, and even challenge Zhu Yan at spear point. To overturn this mountain that had always been suppressing the younger generation of the Lin Family, how could he not be feeling great?

There that night, 12 more long range sound transmitting talismans were used in succession to return news to the Sky Fortune City Lin Family branch. The instructions the Lin Family Head gave were, “Do not hesitate to use all supplies available to support Lin Ming. We must create the best and most ideal conditions for Lin Ming, so that he can defeat Zhu Yan one month from now.”

So today, because of the instructions from the Head of the Lin Family, the Lin Family branch sent Lin Wu to bring Lin Ming resources to support him.

“This is…” Lin Ming looked at a small porcelain bottle and a small jade box in Lin Wu’s hand.

“The Head of the Lin Family sent an urgent message through 12 long-range sound transmitting talismans to the family branch. He wants you to train well, and try your hardest to defeat Zhu Yan a month from now.”

Lin Ming took the porcelain bottle and the jade box. He opened the porcelain bottle. Inside were ten pills. They were lustrous and round, with a delicate and gentle fragrance. As soon as one saw these, it was easy to tell they were superior medicines.

"High-level Soul Gathering Pellet?"

The main ingredient of an ordinary Soul Gathering Pellet was a 100 year old Yuan fruit. Its value was no less than a 100 year old Blood Lingzhi.

But a high-level Soul Gathering Pellet was made from a 300 year old Yuan fruit. Its value was at least 7 times more than an ordinary Soul Gathering Pellet. Moreover, it was not easy to buy!

A Soul Gathering Pellet could not directly increase a martial artist's strength, but it could enhance a martial artist's ability to condense true essence and thus increase their cultivation speed. Although these types of pills' effects of increasing strength were slow, they did not have any side effects, and one could take them constantly.

Because of this, of all the pills that martial artists had, the consumption of Soul Gathering Pellet was the highest. This bottle that the Lin Family gave of high-level Soul Gathering Pellets was worth nearly 20,000 gold taels.

The family had really used all their resources.

Lin Ming looked at Lin Wu and then opened the jade box. After opening it, he saw neatly placed inside were two layers of crystal clear stones that looked as if they were carved from ice. True essence stones!

Lin Ming could see with one sweep of his eyes that this box held 30 true essence stones!

30 true essence stones was not a small number! And these true essence stones were glittering as if they were carved from translucent glass. If compared to those given by the Seven Profound Martial House, they were somewhat purer.

These true essence stones; their value was also not low!

Seeing this bottle of Soul Gathering Pellets and this box of true essence stones, Lin Ming understood that if he received this great gift, it was equivalent to his tacit approval, and that he was willing to become a direct descendant of the Lin Family.

Lin Wu realized that Lin Ming's look had changed, and he faintly guessed in his mind what he was deliberating. He said with some embarrassment and a hint of apology, "Young Cousin, I know that this icing on the cake is not of a timely nature to truly help. I know that when you first came down to Sky Fortune City, not even a shadow of the family was here to help or assist you. Now that Young cousin has become a dragon among men, the family only then delivers medicine and true essence stones. It really does not honor you or do you justice, but there is also a reason we do the things we do. The family's resources are limited… there are just too many children of the Lin Family. If each generation equally divided the family property, then the Lin Family would have already disappeared."

Lin Ming understood what Lin Wu meant. Lin Ming's own great grandmother was the matriarch of the family office, Madam Fang. This relation was passed down to Lin Ming. The children of a large family tended to have many wives, and thus they flourished. The number of heirs and descendants exponentially increased with each new generation. The property had to be concentrated together in order to ensure that the family traditions could continue.

The family gave some businesses to the branch family juniors to manage, and to let these distant families earn a salary. This was already a kindness to the branch families. In fact, this was very generous. If it wasn't for Lin Ming practicing martial arts, his family's life could also be very wealthy.

To the Lin Family with which he shared the last name, Lin Ming felt a little thanks, but he did not have any real sense of belonging to them. But Lin Ming knew that his parents had very traditional and serious mindsets, and they had always dreamed that one day they could return to the main family. In his parents' eyes, recognizing their ancestors and returning to the main family was the orthodox.

This was because his parents’ status in the family would rise, and they would even receive the respect and veneration of the family head!

To the parents, this was a glory, and this glory would be brought because of him. Which parents did not hope for their children to have great accomplishments in the future, and return home with riches and honor? Lin Ming was a rare talent that had never been seen in the last hundred years of the Seven Profound Martial House. His rising star was enough to bring honor to his ancestors, and to give shade to his descendants.

Thinking this, Lin Ming accepted the pills and true essences stones, and said to Lin Wu, “Thank the family head for me.”

“Young Cousin is too humble. The Lin Family thanks young cousin, and we hope you win for us.” Seeing Lin Ming accept these gifts, Lin Wu relaxed and let loose a deep breath. He also had feared that Lin Ming had a cold and lonely heart towards the Lin Family.

It was only a few more months until the end of the year. Lin Ming was already calculating in his mind. There was a vacation period at the end of the Seven Profound Martial House school year. The Martial House disciples usually went home to celebrate the new year. He himself had to take advantage of this opportunity to visit his parents. His father and mother had worked hard enough for a lifetime; they deserved an easy and comfortable retirement in old age.

Bidding Lin Wu farewell, Lin Ming took the pills and the true essence stones with him, and carried Penetrating Rainbow to the Icy Pond Waterfall once more.

“Junior Apprentice Lin.” As soon as the deacon senior apprentice responsible for the Icy Pond Waterfall saw Lin Ming, his whole face had lit up with a welcoming smile. “Junior Apprentice Lin is truly basking in the limelight. But, ah, it is just too wonderful; Ranking Stone rank 62, terrific, terrific, and certainly unprecedented!”

Lin Ming smiled and didn’t respond. These last two days he had heard far too much similar flattery.

"What difficulty does Junior Apprentice Lin want?"

"Nine levels!"

The highest difficulty in the Icy Pond Waterfall array was the twelfth level. The deeper one went, the higher the level one went, the more difficult the array would be. The only person capable of just barely withstanding the twelfth level of difficulty was Ling Sen. Even he could only last for an incense stick of time, and then he too had to surface and meditate. Therefore Ling Sen only practiced at the eleventh level of difficulty.

In one month, Lin Ming had jumped two levels of difficulty, and gone from the seventh level to the ninth level. This was a truly unbelievable matter, but Lin Ming's ranking spoke louder than words.

"Okay." The deacon senior apprentice said without hesitation, and immediately opened the ninth level of difficulty.

Lin Ming swallowed a high-level Soul Gathering Pellet to help him increase his cultivation speed, and then he carried the Penetrating Rainbow with him as he dove into the icy pond.

As soon as he entered the icy pond, Lin Ming felt once more a bone chilling cold that was like tiny ice needles piercing him from all directions. The difficulty had kicked up a notch!

Of the Seven Profound Martial House's resources, the Soul Gathering Pellets and true essences stones couldn't be considered true treasures. Only these seven major killing arrays could be considered such. Each second and each minute was incomparably precious; he could not even waste a smidgen of time!

He only had two hours of time. Lin Ming stood on the big rock underneath the waterfall. He kept Penetrating Rainbow even and steady. In the ninth level of difficulty, the waterfall's pulsing impact had increased tremendously. When Lin Ming had gripped his eight foot eight inch spear underneath the waterfall, he immediately felt the huge impact force of the waterfall, as if at any moment his arm would break under the weight.

Underneath the effects of the waterfall array, it was not easy to stand, and the water was also freezing cold. The unending flowing water constantly slicked off of the body's heat. Adding an 820 jin spear that he kept horizontally underneath the waterfall, even with his own thick true essence and amazing strength, he could only support this consumption for a blink of an eye!

Even if it was Lin Ming, he had to absorb the true essence in a true essence stone to support himself.

"Mm? The absorption speed of true essence went up by 50%!" Lin Ming was startled, but he immediately understood. This was the effect of the high-level Soul Gathering Pellet.

An 1800 gold tael high-level Soul Gathering Pellet, eating one was a true treasure. The effects of this kind of luxurious and amazing pill were especially good!

By relying on the true essence stone and the high-level Soul Gathering Pill that was difficult to buy no matter how wealthy one was, Lin Ming was unexpectedly able to persist in this extremely violent situation!

Originally, Lin Ming had thought he could hold his breath for two quarters of an hour at most, but now, even though his true essence was depleted, he could still rely on the high-level Soul Gathering Pellet and true essence stone to supplement his body and barely continue.

Although Lin Ming felt that the pain was difficult to endure, he was still standing.

The advantages were immense in maintaining this condition. Not only did it rapidly enhance his spear skills, but it also tempered his body with true essence, and increased the synchronization of the tiny units in his body!

Each point of his muscles and organs independently absorbed true essence. His body continually resisted against the severe cold. When a common martial artist practiced martial arts, it was inevitable that their body would have a spot that they did not cultivate. But when every inch of the body was independently absorbing true essence, then this situation would not occur.

Lin Ming's one breath had already lasted for half an hour!

Because of the biting ice-cold chill, Lin Ming's body temperature had already dropped to an acutely low degree. An average man would have already died, but a martial artist relied on the protection of their true essence to maintain their blood flow.

Because of the long time he had been under this condition, Lin Ming's consciousness began to fade away from his body. Slowly, the thunderous sounds of the waterfall began to fade away and vanish into nothing. Lin Ming's mind entered a completely quiet and tranquil time and space. Here, it was as if he could clearly feel the flow and sound of each impact, and he could hear his own slow heartbeat as if it were frozen. This heartbeat beat with a rhythm of a booming drum.

At that moment, Lin Ming felt his soul leave his body once more. In his body, he once more felt that elusive state that he had been in before. Because he was unable to consciously control his body, the true essence in his body moved in accordance of its instincts. This sort of circulation route, compared to when Lin Ming was controlling his true essence himself, was far more perfect!

Lin Ming didn't know, but this state was the rudimentary form of 'Martial Intent'.

Chapter 95 – The Effect of a Heart of Martial Arts

Chapter 95 – The Effect of a Heart of Martial Arts

…

…

…

Lin Ming didn’t know, but this state was the rudimentary form of ‘Martial Intent’.

The last time that Lin Ming had entered into this mysterious cultivation state, he had reached the Perfect first layer of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’. Afterwards, Lin Ming had not been able to enter this cultivation state again. But this time, relying on the effects of the high-level Soul Gathering Pellet and true essence stone combining together, and having stayed in Icy Pond Waterfall’s ninth level of difficulty for a long time so that his consciousness expanded, Lin Ming had once again entered this rudimentary form of martial intent.

Although Lin Ming’s martial intent was imperfect and it wasn’t so exaggerated as the ‘sudden enlightenment’ described in the ancient texts, but it was still able to bring great benefits to Lin Ming. Under this kind of martial intent, his cultivation and level were rapidly rising.

Martial intent itself was an evasive state, it had nothing to do with one’s own intelligence or qualifications, it was only about one’s own conscious will.

Lin Ming had an incredible and rare heart of martial arts. By virtue of this, he was able to slowly trace the opening method of martial intent…

Like this, two hours passed. The time of Lin Ming's appointment was up!

Xie Dong saw that Lin Ming still hadn't exited by the time his appointment was up, so he entered the array in order to remind him. As he entered the array, he only found Lin Ming was sitting quietly under the waterfall with both eyes shut tight. His breath was long, almost stagnant. He was motionless like the dead.

As soon as he saw this, Xie Dong eye's jumped. He had spent many years at the Seven Profound Martial House, and had read a great number of ancient texts that covered a broad variety of topics. He knew that Lin Ming should currently be cultivating martial arts to an extreme degree. In that case, if he cultivated martial arts under these circumstances, his growth would be exponential!

"No... something's wrong. Even if he cultivated martial arts so fervently, his breath shouldn't almost be stalled. This is definitely not normal. Junior Apprentice Brother Lin's situation is..." Xie Dong's eyes were sharp. If he didn't see the thick and rich true essence that emanated from Lin Ming's body, he would have thought that Lin Ming had frozen to death.

"Is this... martial intent?" Xie Dong suddenly remembered the records about martial intent in the ancient texts. In the legends, certain individuals were able to enter into their own state of cultivation called martial intent. When they cultivated in this state, they could progress ten thousand miles in a day!

Ling Sen had comprehended a martial intent. The kind of person that could, usually had a heart of martial arts that vastly outstripped that of a normal man's.

Thinking of this, Xie Dong was suddenly enlightened. No wonder Lin Ming's strength had progressed so rapidly; Lin Ming had his own martial intent! This was extraordinary! It had to be known that those who had comprehended a martial intent generally had a supreme heart of martial arts, but it wasn't guaranteed that someone with a supreme heart of martial arts could comprehend a martial intent.

"To comprehend martial intent, one must have the greatest luck. It must come to them, they cannot seek it!"

At this moment, another disciple had arrived outside of the Icy Pond Waterfall. "Thank you Senior Apprentice Brother. If the array is vacant, please trouble to help me open up the seventh level of difficulty. Hehe, my condition recently has been very good and I've made much progress. Today, I think I want to challenge a higher difficulty."

"This..." Even though he was responsible for the Icy Pond Waterfall, Xie Dong was a bit reluctant, "Junior Apprentice Brother Sun, the array has not yet been vacated..."

"Mm?" Sun Xing slightly frowned. Time in the seven major killing arrays was precious. An appointment was always exact, not a minute or a second could be missed, otherwise people would suffer a major loss. Xie Dong's prime task was to remind disciples so that they came out earlier.

"Senior Apprentice Brother, this is a bit too excessive. What am I going to do if I lose time? Who is inside?" Sun Xing asked with some dissatisfaction. It was obvious that this Xie Dong favored the opposite party, but he didn't want to show a bad side to him. Xie Dong was responsible for the Icy Pond Waterfall. If he offended Xie Dong, then he might have trouble in the future.

"This... inside is Junior Apprentice Brother Lin Ming." Xie Dong said.

"Lin... Lin Ming?" Sun Xing suddenly stared with eyes wide open, and he gulped. Lin Ming's name had spread through the entire Sky Fortune City like a heavenly thunderclap that reverberating in everyone's ears in the Seven Profound Martial House. He was even more famous that Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and the others! If he could really defeat Zhu Yan in one month, then he would be the most abnormally monstrous genius that the Seven Profound Martial House had ever seen in the past 100 years. Who would even dare to think about provoking this kind of person?

Sun Xing hurried to hide his discontent. “So it was Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, haha… if I may ask the Senior Apprentice Brother, when will he come out?” Although he was no longer angry, he was still inevitably anxious.

Xie Dong said, “I’m not clear about this. Junior Apprentice Brother Lin has probably entered into some strange cultivation state. Well, today I am very sorry for Junior Apprentice Brother Sun. How about when Junior Apprentice Brother Lin comes out, I have him recompense you for your time?”

Xie Dong did not mention the matter of martial intent. After all, he was not assured of his judgment.

Sun Xing nodded in agreement. Most people would be unwilling to abruptly change their appointment time, but since the person who was taking his time was Lin Ming, that was another matter. Sun Xing thought for a moment and then said, “Since Junior Apprentice Brother Lin is so ardently cultivating his martial arts, I should lend him my time. That… cough… if Senior Apprentice Brother could remember to mention my name later, that would be wonderful.”

Sun Xing wanted to curry some favor with Lin Ming. To let Lin Ming borrow some practice time could only be regarded as a small favor.

“Haha, naturally.” Xie Dong said; he certainly understood Sun Xing’s thoughts.

In this way, Lin Ming continued cultivating in that special state. That one breath had been extended to four hours!

As he suddenly woke from that mysterious cultivation state, Lin Ming was surprised. How long had he been cultivating for?

As he exited the Icy Pond Waterfall, the sun was already high in the western sky. Was this the afternoon? At least three or four hours must have passed!

“Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, you’ve finally come out.” Xie Dong hurried to greet him. “I saw a while ago that Junior Apprentice Brother Lin was in a deep cultivation state, so I did not call you. I didn’t expect you to stay for three and a half hours.”

“Three and a half hours? Then I passed my appointment time.”

“Yes, I kept everyone back, but later Junior Apprentice Brother Lin has to repay the time.”

“Like that? I see. I really must thank Senior Apprentice Brother for helping me out.” Lin Ming didn’t think that there would be a day where he would be given such preferential treatment. He sighed with emotion. In the Seven Profound Martial House, strength was everything. If you had strength, you had privilege. If you were weak, then everyone would step on you underneath their foot.

“Haha, it’s just a minor matter, it’s not worth mentioning. Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, it appears that a moment ago you… entered some peculiar state. I realized that Junior Apprentice Brother Lin’s breath had almost stopped.”

“Mm? Did it? I did not have much of a feeling of anything.” Lin Ming did not have a complete understanding of that ethereal state he had been in a moment ago; he only knew that the cultivation state he was in had been of great benefit to his own cultivation.

Xie Dong hesitated for a bit before he said, “Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, if Senior Apprentice Brother did not guess wrong, then that strange state you were in might possibly be a kind of martial intent.”

“Martial intent?” Lin Ming was slightly stunned. This was the first time he had heard of such a concept.

“Mm, martial intent. I am not very clear on this matter, but I know that there are very few martial artists who have martial intent. To comprehend it all depends on chance and opportunity. A martial artist with a strong heart of martial arts has a higher probability of comprehending it. Junior Apprentice Brother Lin has a truly unwavering and incomparably pure heart of martial arts, not even Junior Apprentice Brother Ling can compare with you. You must know that Junior Apprentice Brother Ling has also comprehended his own martial intent, and that is why he is so fierce!”

“Mm? Ling Sen can also enter this sort of cultivation state?” Lin Ming was surprised, but then he immediately became aware. No wonder! Although Ling Sen’s talent was only an inferior fourth-grade, he had been the number one rank on the Seven Profound Martial House’s Ranking Stone for a long time. Even the fifth grade talent Zhang Guanyu was steadily suppressed by him!

Lin Ming knew that a having a strong heart of martial arts was good for cultivation, but Lin Ming hadn’t known that besides letting a person be more diligent and persistent in their training, it also had other substantial advantages. If it was solely allowing a person to work harder, then it seemed a bit lackluster and useless. The time of a day was limited, even if you cultivated as you ate, how much more time would you have over others?

Now he knew a bit more. A strong heart of martial arts would let one be able to comprehend martial intent. With this ability, one could greatly improve!

Chapter 96 – Instructor Hong Xi

Chapter 96 – Instructor Hong Xi

…

…

…

“Does Senior Apprentice Brother happen to know what Senior Apprentice Brother Ling’s martial intent is?” Lin Ming didn’t know anything about these strange cultivation states, so he asked now to gain a better understanding.

“I do not know much, I only know that Junior Apprentice Brother Ling’s martial intent is named ‘Ashura’. I think it is related to concepts of death and slaughter. He can willfully enter this state of cultivation, that’s why his strength grows so quickly! He is much stronger than the second-ranked Junior Apprentice Brother Ta Ku! However, his cultivation is actually inferior to Junior Apprentice Brother Ta Ku. Junior Apprentice Brother Ta Ku has already entered the Bone Forging stage, but Junior Apprentice Brother Ling is only at the peak Altering Muscle stage.”

So that’s how it was… it seems there were many types of martial intents, and they varied from person to person. Lin Ming wondered how his ‘ethereal’ martial intent compared to Ling Sen’s ‘Ashura’. Would it be better or worse?

As he returned to his residence, Lin Ming felt as if his body was as light as a swallow. The three and a half hours of continuous high-strength cultivation hadn’t left him with any feeling of exhaustion. Carrying the Penetrating Rainbow on his back also felt light, and didn’t hinder any of Lin Ming’s motions.

“During my three and a half hours of training, I wasn’t able to break through to the second level of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’, but I felt I had touched the threshold. If I can enter the ‘ethereal’ martial intent state again, then I should be able to make a complete breakthrough! When that time comes, my strength will experience a huge leap, and I probably won’t be too far off from Ling Sen!”

“Because I cultivate the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’, strength is my strong point, but strength does not represent the entirety of one’s battle prowess. I wonder what Ling Sen’s strong point is?”

“Since Ling Sen can enter into the Ashura martial intent state at any time, I wonder when I too will be able to enter into the ethereal martial intent state when I want to?”

…

As Lin Ming’s cultivation increased by leaps and bounds, Zhu Yan was similarly carrying out a hellish cultivation regimen. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that the match he would have a month from now would be his life’s most important battle!

He absolutely could not lose!

Zhu Yan held a longsword, and the sword light was like a bright spider web around him. In front of him, the golden soldiers formed from energy exploded one at a time as they came. From the seven major killing arrays of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, and thunder, this array represented metal. This was the Golden Soldier Hall!

In the Ten Thousand Killing Array and the Exquisite Pagoda, the enemies one faced in the trials were only illusions. Outside, one wouldn’t actually be disturbed or even moved. But the seven major killing were different, they were true killing arrays. All of the golden soldiers were real forms given shape by energy!

In here, if one was not careful, they could be injured!

The array itself had a limited conscious and ability to judge the situation in the array. If the they judged than the situation in the array was too dire, then it would automatically cease attacking. But in the history of the trials, there have been those that were severely wounded, and even those who were killed by accident!

Of course, those who died were in the minority. Therefore the Golden Soldier was not as effective in improving cultivation as Ling Sen's 'Ashura'.

"Senior Apprentice Brother is just too fierce! He was at the tenth level of difficulty, but he also persisted inside for such a long time! Mmm, it's already been three quarters of an hour. The array doesn't have any sign that it's weakening, which proves that Senior Apprentice Brother Zhu hasn't yet been injured, nor is he having troubles with his true essence!"

"This Lin Ming actually wants to defeat Senior Apprentice Brother Zhu in one month. I think it will be too difficult!"

"Mm. This Lin Ming is truly an monstrous genius, but Senior Apprentice Brother Zhu isn't some vegetable to be pushed around. I think Senior Apprentice Brother Zhu will win. This is the tenth level of difficulty! As soon as I entered, I would be killed!"

…

Time passed day-by-day. The ruckus over the match between Lin Ming and Zhu Yan in one month did not only not cool down, but the mood and atmosphere was increasingly fierce.

During this period, there were some interesting phenomena happening at the Seven Profound Martial House. The set of cultivation methods that Lin Ming had chosen at the Seven Profound Martial House depository had suddenly become the hottest items around town. Underneath the 'Foundation Spear Technique' was written four names, and underneath the 'Foundation Movement Technique' was written three names. Because of Lin Ming's amazing performance, there were four junior disciples of the Human Hall that had decided to take up a spear as their own weapon.

However, no one questioned the martial skill that Lin Ming had chosen, the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’.

This was because these new disciples had not seen Lin Ming use or practice the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’.

The ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ was itself above a high-grade Earth-step martial skill. Even if it was complete it would still be extremely difficult to practice, not to mention that it was currently missing 70% of its contents. If Lin Ming had truly managed to cultivate this martial skill, then monstrously evil genius would be inadequate to describe him.

As the phenomena of some of the junior disciples choosing the foundation cultivation methods occurred, the depository elder could only nod at them with a forced smile. This stemmed from many junior disciples worshipping Lin Ming. As they said, love for a person extends even to the crows on his roof. These worshippers pursued Lin Ming’s cultivation methods and had even chosen his weapon. However, Lin Ming was strong not because of these things, but because of himself. How many junior disciples would choose a spear, and how many would be able to display the true glory of a spear?

…

Early in the morning, the air in the world was rich with a fresh breeze. Lin Ming grabbed the end of Penetrating Rainbow with one hand. His arms stretched out horizontally to his sides and he closed his eyes. He opened his mind to the mountains and trees, and became calm and free of feeling.

He realized he could not use high-level Soul Gathering Pellets of true essence stones to help comprehend this ‘ethereal’ martial intent state. As long as he was able to enter the ‘ethereal’ state whenever he wanted, then that would be considered Small Success of Lin Ming’s martial intent.

In this silent and peaceful state, Lin Ming suddenly opened his eyes. In that moment he had felt the presence of someone. Although he was in the relatively secure Seven Profound Martial House, Lin Ming still kept vigilance. After all, he had made too many enemies.

“Mm. Your alertness is good.” A vigorous and deep voice came from nearby and resounded into Lin Ming’s ear. A man carrying a spear and wearing red armor appeared like a ghost, and both his feet fell on Lin Ming’s spear point.

As soon as the man fell on the spear point, Penetrating Rainbow curved downwards a bit. However, Lin Ming still held the spear end steady.

“Good arm strength!” The person exclaimed.

“Instructor Hong?” Lin Min asked with a hint of surprise. The man who fell on his spear point was his Earth Hall instructor, Hong Xi.

“You really gave me good face during the Ten Thousand Killing Array. Rank 62 and you challenged Zhu Yan! You really are bold!”

Lin Ming said, “Thank you Instructor Hong for the praise. But as for Zhu Yan, I’m not fully confident I can win against him.”

“Mm. This Zhu Yan is not a simple character. When he had entered the Seven Profound Martial House, his display of ability was just like Wang Yanfeng. Although he is far inferior to your monstrous talent, he has still been in school longer than you by two and a half years. In these two and a half years, he dramatically rose from the same strength as Wang Yanfeng to his present ranking. In another one or two years, when Ling Sen and those others have graduated, Zhu Yan will undoubtedly be in the top ten of the Seven Profound Martial House rankings, and maybe even in the top five. Your opponent is a future contender for the top five ranks in the Seven Profound Martial House! You have chosen yourself a powerful enemy!”

Lin Ming naturally knew why Hong Xi was saying all this. He said, “Instructor Hong, I understand Zhu Yan’s strength. I also know that to surpass him in one month will be decidedly difficult. It was only that when the Deacon Senior Apprentice Brother asked me who I wanted to challenge and when. In my heart I had an intense desire to challenge Zhu Yan. I did not want to suppress this idea, so I decided to follow my nature and challenged Zhu Yan."

"Haha, good! What a good 'go with my nature'! Those that practice martial arts must follow their nature and desires! Only when you are satisfied with your mind and thoughts will your meridians be cleared, and your true essence flow unimpeded! Your choice is good; it has boldness! Starting today, I will teach you spear skills! If I am your instructor, then I do not want to see any soldier under me lose to others!"

Chapter 97 – Seven Kinds of Martial Intent

Chapter 97 – Seven Kinds of Martial Intent

…

…

…

Lin Ming listened to Hong Xi's words and his heart filled with joy. Until now, he only had the 'Foundation Spear Technique', and could only study the foundation. If he were to have guidance, then his progress would be much quicker.

Hong Xi said, "I once joined the army for ten years. I only started learning the spear in my ten year career. Before that, I used the sword. The spear is the king of a hundred soldiers! I have not reached the stage of Large Success in spear play, but what I have learned, I can teach you. However, before we begin, I have a question. Were you able to comprehend a special cultivation state?"

Lin Ming paused. He didn't expect that Hong Xi knew about this matter. He nodded and said, "Yes."

"I thought so. Your perception is good. This cultivation state of yours can probably be compared to the best among its kind, otherwise with your talent, it would be impossible for you to have such great results in such a short time! This is a benefit of your pure and strong heart of martial arts. But even if you have an extraordinary heart of martial arts, you still might not have that lucky opportunity to comprehend such a cultivation state. This state is called martial intent!"

“Those who have a martial intent are very few. Even in the place like the Seven Profound Martial House where talents gather, in the last several dozen years there has only been Ling Sen! I did not expect that now there would be you also!”

“Oh? So few?” Lin Ming suddenly understood. No wonder he had never heard of this before.

“Yes, that is why the existence of martial intent is so mystical and mysterious, because there are too few people who are able to comprehend it. There aren’t many descriptions of it in the ancient texts, and not only that, but each martial artist’s martial intent is not the same; each has a different effect.”

Lin Ming said, “Instructor, I don’t understand. Since Senior Apprentice Brother Ling has comprehended such a rare skill like a martial intent, and his strength is known throughout the Sky Fortune Kingdom as being invincible within his cultivation stage, why was he not selected as a core disciple? What kind of monstrous geniuses are the core disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House?”

Hong Xi said, “Those of the Seven Profound Valleys have paid careful attention to Ling Sen. However, for him to be selected as a core disciple, he has to pass a test. Ling Sin was eventually unable to pass the inspection, so he was rejected. He had missed only one step.”

“Mm? Test?” Lin Ming’s heart moved as he heard this.

“Yes. Some do not conform to the rigid standards of the Seven Profound Martial House, and wish to become a core disciple through a test. When Lin Sen had faced the test, he had to defeat someone of the same age, or an older core disciple, and also reach the peak Fourth Stage of Body Transformation by the time he was 17.”

“Ling Sen was able to defeat a core disciple who was half a year older than him. Unfortunately, his cultivation was unable to reach the peak Fourth Stage of Body Transformation before he was 17, and therefore he failed due to this.”

“Is this because Senior Apprentice Brother Ling’s cultivation talent was not good enough?”

“Yes. As I said, there are many different kinds of martial intent. Ling Sen’s martial intent is ‘Ashura’. In the Ashura battlefield, he can experience endless slaughter and battle. With this kind of martial intent, the main function is to enhance a martial artist’s instincts, explosive force, and killing ability. However it is not really that useful for to improve a martial artist’s cultivation. But, it does provide a few benefits in breaking through bottlenecks.

Hong Xi said this with a look of regret. A martial artist’s combat prowess and cultivation were two different matters. Combat prowess was their strength, but cultivation was judged through stages, for instance, Body Transformation’s First Stage, Second Stage, Pulse Condensation Period, and Houtian stage.

Cultivation was the most important factor in a martial artist’s combat prowess, but it was not the only factor. Martial skills, fighting instincts, combat skills, field experience, the degree of true essence thickness, all of these could affect one’s combat ability, therefore one could fight one above their cultivation realm.

But, to a martial artist, their cultivation was the fundamental basis for all. If they could not improve their cultivation, then whatever your combat power really was, it would not matter. A martial artist at the First Stage of Body Transformation would never defeat someone at the Pulse Condensation Stage. This was the absolute disparity that was created through cultivation!

Moreover, to a martial artist, their lives were inextricably linked to their cultivation. Ling Sen’s main strength was his combat ability, his cultivation was actually not very high. If he had no chance of reaching the Xiantian stage, then to the large sects, he had no value whatsoever.

Therefore, Ling Sen was rejected!

Hong Xi said, “If Ling Sen’s talent were increased half a step, for instance to a medium fourth-grade talent, then he would have an enormous chance of being selected to enter the Seven Profound Valleys. His ‘Ashura’ martial intent can let a person dance on the edge of life and death for a long time, and it also favors breaking through bottlenecks. This is of value to the Seven Profound Valleys. Unfortunately, the ‘Ashura’ martial intent has no advantages in helping one accumulate true essence.”

Lin Ming asked, “Instructor Hong, does Senior Apprentice brother Ling Sen not have any more chances of being selected to enter into the Seven Profound Valleys?”

“There is, but it is just far too difficult. One possibility is that he must break through to the Pulse Condensation Period before he is 22 years old. This is the most rigid criteria of the Seven Profound Valleys. As long as you are able to break through to the Pulse Condensation Period before 22 years of age, you may enter the Seven Profound Valleys. However with Ling Sen’s current cultivation progress, it is impossible. The second possibility is if Ling Sen is able to comprehend another kind of martial intent. It would be better if this was one which helped increase his cultivation progress. If such a thing happened, then the entire Seven Profound Valleys would value Ling Sen. A person that can comprehend two kinds of martial intent is just too rare.

“Two kinds of martial intent? You can also have two different kinds of martial intent?” Lin Ming was surprised.

“Mm. But it is very difficult, difficult enough to cause anyone to lose all hope. In the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom, or even the entire realm of the Seven Profound Martial House and its surrounding hundreds of thousands of miles, there isn’t a single one. I have heard about them in the ancient texts, for instance, legends passed down that told of ‘sudden enlightenment’. There is a story of a mighty power who was called Emperor Shakya, that had seven different kinds of martial intent! Three thousand years ago, he meditated under a Bodhi tree for seven days and seven nights. In his body these seven kinds of martial intent actually fused together, and Emperor Shakya underwent a great awakening and achieved supreme enlightenment. He broke the countless shackles of martial arts and reached nirvana to become a golden immortal, piercing through the martial void!”

As Lin Ming heard Hong Xi's story, he felt a great shock!

Seven kinds of martial intents!

What concept was that? Moreover, these seven kinds of martial intents had even fused into one! This kind of person was truly a mythical heavenly being!

As he listened to the legend of the Bodhi tree, Lin Ming held an ounce of disbelief. To sit in meditation for seven days and seven nights and achieve supreme enlightenment, break the countless shackles of martial arts and pierce through the martial void, that just seemed a bit too exaggerated.

It had to be known that in the path of martial arts; the higher you went, the more difficult it was! Some people often needed upwards of a hundred years to break through a bottleneck! But this Emperor Shakya had actually broken through the bottleneck of martial arts, and rose up countless stages at once. Wasn't this just nonsense?

But as he listened to Hong Xi's story, Lin Ming began to believe. To combine seven kinds of martial intent into one, that thought alone was just far too terrifying.

Hong Xi said, "Lin Ming, describe your martial intent to me, so I can determine what sort it is. This will be very important to your future development!"

Lin Ming nodded and began to describe his 'ethereal' martial intent.

Hong Xi mulled over this, and then said, "This 'ethereal' martial intent that you have should be a kind that increases your cultivation. Your consciousness leaves your body and your true essence begins to spontaneously revolve according to its own instincts. With this, the true essence can achieve a perfect circulatory path within your body. There are too many kinds of martial intent, and they are different from person to person and there aren't also many records. This is the first time I have heard of your kind of martial intent. I cannot judge its specific effects, but looking at how your cultivation increases by leaps and bounds, the effect should be very good. Your martial intent should also be superior to Ling Sen's. You maybe even have the possibility to be elected as a core disciple in the Seven Profound

Valleys! Certainly, like Ling Sen, you must pass through the test. This test is difficult; it will depend on your martial intent to go against heaven's will."

Core disciple… Lin Ming silently thought.

Chapter 98 – The Force of Vibration

Chapter 98 – The Force of Vibration

…

…

…

Core disciple… Lin Ming silently thought.

Lin Ming felt that the Seven Profound Valleys was like a giant bloodsucking vampire that squeezed out all the cultivation resources in a radius of several hundred thousand miles. They caused the martial artists of small countries to be lacking in all cultivation resources, and thus a martial artist found it difficult to enter a tiny step into the Houtian stage.

After the Seven Profound Valleys had opened Seven Profound Martial Houses in all of the various countries under their control, with their superior position, they bestowed resources and they bestowed cultivation methods to the most outstanding talents so that they could use them.

But the royal families of these small countries knew this well. Even so, while they dreaded the specter of the Seven Profound Valleys, they simultaneously hoped for the support and protection of the Seven Profound Valleys. That is why they were willing to offer their countries' resources, bowing to them with both hands. This caused the remaining few resources in these countries to skyrocket in price. In Lin Ming's situation, even if he had talent, with his family circumstances he did not have the money to cultivate martial arts!

Between the parasitic relationship formed between the Seven Profound Valleys and the Sky Fortune Kingdom, Lin Ming had a fully uncomfortable feeling.

“If it were not for the Seven Profound Valley, then if I wanted to practice martial arts, it wouldn’t have placed such a big burden on my family. The Seven Profound Valleys, so detestable…” Lin Ming thought. He wanted to say so, but he held his tongue.

“If I want to reach the higher realms of martial arts, I actually must become a core disciple! Otherwise, I will not have the resources to do so. All will wait until I have the strength to speak out.”

“Well Lin Ming, the points that I wanted to remind you of have already been mentioned. Your superiority lies in your heart of martial arts, but, in terms of current combat ability, you cannot compare to Zhu Yan. Most importantly, you do not have a martial skill. You defeated Zhang Cang with the most basic ‘Flood Dragon Goes to Sea’. At first I didn’t want you to choose the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering First’, but you were very insistent. Now it is too late to learn another martial skill.

“But what’s done is done. A martial artist should freely follow their nature and desires. No matter what, you should not regret your decisions. If you had changed your mind, then your heart would not be satisfied, then it will also not be open. Now, I want to hone your foundation spear skills, and have you use those foundation spear skills to defeat Zhu Yan! However, I will tell you this now. Zhu Yan has already mastered three kinds of martial skills! You must be prepared!

Lin Ming nodded and said, “Understood, Instructor Hong.”

“Now attack me. Let me take a good look at your spear skills!”

“Then I shall be impolite.” Lin Ming flicked his hand and Penetrating Rainbow jumped into his grip. With a shake of his power, the spear point began to unexpectedly tremble and hum. Dark purple elastic iron was immeasurably tough and resistant, even if it was only a slight tremor, it was enough to twist muscles and break bones!

“Oh? You can shake dark purple elastic iron so easily? Good strength!” Hong Xi laughed, and also flourished the long spear that he carried on his back.

“Flood Dragon goes to Sea!” Lin Ming shouted. Both hands held the spear, and with a sudden movement, he thrusted the spear forwards!

As this spear thrust went out, Lin Ming’s imposing aura suddenly rose. The airflow around him began to change, as if there was an invisible current flowing around him and converging upon this aura and melting into Lin Ming’s long spear.

Hong Xi exposed a look of appreciation. He leaned a step forwards, gripped his spear shaft and aimed his spear point at Lin Ming’s spearhead, and then gave a fierce jab!

However, the power of this jab hadn’t managed to stop Lin Ming’s spear. That spear seemed to be cast from gold and iron, and did not change directions, still thrusting straight towards Hong Xi!

This was the result of Lin Ming practicing his spear thrust countless times underneath the Icy Cold Pond Waterfall. It had achieved the state of being immovably steady!

Hong Xi’s eyes flashed with a glint of light. “Good spear!”

“Hoh!” Hong Xi suddenly burst with strength. The true essence in his long spear began to stir. Lin Ming’s spear was stiffly swung aside by the brute force. He grasped his long spear and took a sudden step forward, and the spear point approached Lin Ming’s throat like a poisonous snake!

Hong Xi’s spear was twice as fast as Lin Ming’s! By the time Lin Ming had used one spear move, Hong Xi had used two!

Hong Xi thought that this one move would be the finisher. With his cultivation at the peak Pulse Condensation of Body Transformation, to deal with the Third Stage of Body Transformation Lin Ming should have been easy. Even if he used 30% of his strength, it should have been a simple task, but he did not think that he would have been wrong.

Seeing this spear reflected in his eyes at it came at him, Lin Ming’s long spear was out wide, and he would not have enough time to receive it and defend against this move. He immediately reached out with his right hand towards Hong Xi's spearhead! At that moment, all of the tiny units in Lin Ming's body began to breathe in unison. True essence began to vibrate in his body, and was concentrated into his right hand!

Hong Xi saw Lin Ming move his bare hand towards the spear point that was thrusting forwards at high speed, and he suddenly hesitate. This Lin Ming…

"Mmm?"

As soon as Lin Ming's palm touched the spear point, Hong Xi felt an intense vibration transmit down the spear shaft and cause his spear to be unsteady. This… what was going on?

Hong Xi had naturally heard that before when Lin Ming was fighting Zhang Cang, he had used his open hand to receive Zhang Cang's saber At that time, Hong Xi had thought Lin Ming had merely predicted Zhang Cang attack pattern and had avoided the saber's blade edge, so it had succeeded. But now it appeared that it wasn't so simple!

"Ho!"

Hong Xi was a master at the Pulse Condensation Stage. With a sudden effort of both hands, he jerked hard and counterbalanced the trembling of the spear shaft. But now, Lin Ming's second spear had arrived!

"Total Annihilation!"

Hong Xi had just enough time to dodge, and he leapt backwards from the strike. Even so, a strong heavenly wind followed Lin Ming's spear as it swept past. This strong wind contained a strange vibrating power. As Hong Xi was swept by this strong wind, he felt his heartbeat and blood flow be affected, and a tightness in his chest!

This move completely startled Hong Xi. He was a martial artist who had reached the Large Success stage of Pulse Condensation. His meridians had already been opened and connected, and true essence had tempered his entire body, without a single weak point. In this situation, he had still felt a slight uncomfortableness when Lin Ming's spear wind swept past him. Although he wasn't injured, if it were a Viscera Training stage martial artist who had been touched by this wind, they might have suddenly spat blood!

"This kid, what kind of cultivation methods has he been studying? I thought that I would catch him with one move, but he's managed to last three rounds. If I can't handle him, how would I have face as an instructor!" Hong Xi raised his strength by another 20%. He twisted in midair, and his long spear fell down like a wild rainstorm!

Peng!

Lin Ming lifted his spear to meet the approaching enemy, but this time he actually felt an inexhaustible strength contained in Hong Xi's spear, as if he was unable to even think of contending with it, and his spear was swept away!

"!"

The spear point appeared like an invisible ghost at Lin Ming's throat. The approaching icy coldness of the spear point made Lin Ming's hairs stand on end. The fight had ended.

Hong Xi withdrew his spear and said, "Good young man, your hidden skills are truly deep, no wonder Zhang Cang was defeated with just a palm, fist, and spear. My cultivation far surpasses yours, but today it seems I can still learn from you!"

Hong Xi looked Lin Ming up and down, sizing him up. He recalled that strange vibration he felt; where had Lin Ming learnt that from?

This kind of fierce fighting style was impossible to be self-taught. It was certainly from studying some jade slip. Thinking back to the three jade slips Lin Ming had selected from the depository, they were the 'Foundation Spear Technique', 'Foundation Movement Technique', and the 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist'...

Hong Xi had already seen the 'Foundation Spear Technique' before. In fact, every person who joined that army had to study the 'Foundation Spear Technique'. But even if the 'Foundation Spear Technique' from the army differed from that of the Seven Profound

Martial House’s depository, it was only some more concise ways of cultivating true essence; there was nothing different in the spear skills themselves. This kind of scary vibration did not originate from the ‘Foundation Spear Technique’, and it couldn’t be anything from the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’. That meant that…

“Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!?”

Chapter 99 – Fast Spear

Chapter 99 – Fast Spear

…

…

…

This thought caused Hong Xi to suddenly freeze. He remembered glancing at the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’, and recalled that the essence of this ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ was… vibration!

Vibration!

Heavens! This boy!

Hong Xi’s Adam’s apple spasmed. This kid should not have learned the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’!

It… It was impossible. Although true essence vibration was mentioned in the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ jade slip, it had not said how to train this true essence vibration; it had lacked the most essential basic part! The ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ was 70% incomplete, and it was also an Earth-step martial skill. Even an immortal would be helpless to do anything!

If Lin Ming was really able to cultivate this ability, then even those evil monstrous geniuses would be nothing but weak and pale in front of him; he would simply be the reincarnation of immortal gods and infernal demons!

“Boy, that vibration technique you had used a moment ago; where did you learn that from? Hong Xi’s voice held a hint of trembling; obviously he was very disturbed and restless.

He could not calm down after experiencing something like this. This meant that not only did Lin Ming have a superior heart of martial arts, but he was also able to comprehend his own martial intent. Not only that, but he was a beyond brilliant monstrous genius prodigy with perception that defied the will of the heavens!

To this kind of evil-doer genius, any talent was simply floating clouds!

That these monstrous geniuses could accomplish the impossible with their own hands, what sort of concept was that? Hong Xi did not even dare to imagine.

Lin Ming truthfully said, “They were some hints that I picked up from the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ jade slip.” He had not planned to conceal anything to begin with. In fact, he could not even try to hide it. Sooner or later it would be exposed, unless he never used this skill.

But the truth was that even if he was exposed, it was impossible to teach or explain things like martial skills or cultivation methods without the jade slip. Only someone who has reached the Large Success stage of that martial skill or cultivation method would be able to copy it down, so Lin Ming simply did not worry that anyone would covet it.

Mentioning the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ would only increase the number of chips in his hand, and cause the Seven Profound Martial House and the Crown Prince to be even more protective of him. This way, he would be even safer.

After hearing Lin Ming’s affirmation, Hong Xi could not speak for a long time. He merely stared at Lin Ming as if he was looking at a monster.

Whose mother would dare mention or look down upon Lin Ming’s martial talent again?

This Lin Ming was the most abnormal talent in the last 100 years of the Seven Profound Martial House!

There was only Qin Xingxuan who could compare with Lin Ming; moreover, she wouldn’t necessarily be better!

“Peerless monstrous genius…” Hong Xi finally gave his evaluation after he was speechless for a long time.

“Lin Ming, in my Hong Xi’s entire life, you are the best and most outstanding and talented martial artist that I have ever witnessed! Although your talent is only a medium third-grade, you can make up this deficiency with your ethereal martial intent! With just that, you can be considered a fourth or fifth grade talent. Still, that would not be anything special enough to attract the Seven Profound Valleys’ attention. But, your perception is just too terrifying; you can practice any skill with twice the result and half the effort. In addition, with your pure and strong heart of martial arts, you may even be able to comprehend a second martial intent. In that case, even the Seven Profound Valleys will not be able to hold you! You will at the apex of the entire Sky Spill Continent’s younger generation!”

“Your future is limitless. What I can teach you is limited. All I am capable of at present is being your teacher. I was prepared to teach you the spear skills that I had learned, but it seems that it is not necessary anymore. You have your own understanding of spear-play, and I am afraid that my own comprehension will negatively affect you. All I can teach you now is the basis of spear skills, as well as the spear cultivation method!”

“A moment ago when I fought you, I discovered that your spear is already very stead. You could say that you’ve reached the boundary where your spear is still like a cast metal statue. But, your spear is not quick! In my two spear moves, you were only able to return one! With this kind of speed, you will be unable to catch up to Zhu Yan!”

“The steady spear that cannot catch up to an enemy’s shadow is useless! Lin Ming, just watch! Hong Xi turned and punched a tree trunk. The autumn leaves that had already begun to turn yellow and wither immediately began to rustle and fall down.

Hong Xi’s eyes flashed with a glint of light. The spear in his hand shot out just like a deadly snake!

Cha cha cha!

Spear shadows covered the sky!

Even with Lin Ming's excellent eyesight, he could not clearly see Hong Xi's spear point!

He could only use his soul force to catch up to Hong Xi's movements. With each stab of Hong Xi's spear, the spear point pierced a fallen leaf, rapidly turned back, and then pierced another leaf. Like this, there was a string of fallen leaves on the spear point!

As the spear shadows flashed everywhere, the fallen leaves began to rapidly disappear with a speed obvious to the naked eye. In the span of a few breaths, Hong Xi had strung together a thick stack of fallen leaves on his spear point!

Finally, there was not a single fallen leave that touched the ground.

Lin Ming could not help but exclaim at such wonderful spear skills!

It had to be known that Hong Xi's spear point was very wide; the widest part was four finger widths wide.

But these fallen leaves were elliptical in shape. Only the long axis was over four finger widths in length; the short axis was only two finger widths.

Thus, all the fallen leaves have been pierced by spear point through their long side; otherwise, the leaf would be cut in half!

Lin Ming looked at Hong Xi's spear point, and really did see that the several dozens of leaves that were strung together were in consistent order, it was as if they were especially organized to be that way!

The leaves were small, and their longest side was only a bit over 4 finger widths, but Hong Xi had managed to accurately pierce through all of the fallen leaves in this area, and did not cut any of the leaves apart. This control of strength caused Lin Ming to feel amazed!

Hong Xi's spear was not only quick, but he had great control of his strength!

As the saying went, a month to use a stick, a year to train a fist, and longer to practice a spear!

The difficulty in wielding a spear was high. It was meant to thrust, the shaft was long, it was hard to grasp and hard to control. If Hong Xi had been doing this with a sword, it would have been much easier!

The sword was faster than a spear, and it was also more accurate.

But a sword could not compare with the might of a spear.

For Lin Ming, this was an eye-opener.

Hong Xi said, “Cultivate your spear like this. Practice your spear skills so that you may use several dozen spear thrusts in the time of a few breaths. These several dozen spear thrusts must not be blind; but each and every spear move must be accurate! Control your strength until you can attack and withdraw freely! This fallen leaves are the appropriate practice method!”

“These falling leaves are very fragile, they will be cut apart if you use too much strength or if your aim is poor. If you can have these several dozen leaves completely strung together on your spear point, then your spear skills will have arrived at the Small Success stage. But you only have one month of intensive practice; it will take a much longer time to practice the spear. Do not irresponsibly talk nonsense and bite off more than you can chew. At this moment, do not seek to control the force, but instead you must do everything you can to maximize your spear speed to the limit, so you can chase down Zhu Yan’s sword!

“I understand.”

With this brief meeting with Hong Xi, Lin Ming had benefitted greatly.

“Good. Practice by yourself. This will be enough to have you occupied for some time. Later I will come back to teach you the next move.”

“Thank you, Instructor Hong.”

“Heh, no need to thank me. Right now I’m teaching you, but later I won’t even be able to stand in line to teach you.” Hong Xi laughed, launched a movement technique, and vanished into the forest.

After Hong Xi had vanished, Lin Ming watched the yellow leaves on the tree. He shook Penetrating Rainbow in his hand. His spear speed truly wasn’t good. Even if his spear skills were swift and fierce, they would have no meaning if they weren’t able to reach Zhu Yan.

Bang! Lin Ming punched the big tree, and thick leaves began to fall. Lin Ming looked at these leaves and the spear in his hand began to stab out rapidly.

“…”

The leaves were shredded apart by Lin Ming’s spear!

Though he wanted to string these leaves on his spear, it was not a simple task to constantly do this. During the time when the leaves were gently falling, they were often tumbled around in circles. During that brief period of time, he had to thrust out his long spear in the center of a leaf, and have the spear edge pierce through the long axis of the leaf. Only then could he string them on the spear. But as of now, Lin Ming was far from reaching this stage.

After several dozen leaves had fallen, Lin Ming had split some in half, and some had fallen to the ground. There was only a few that hung on Lin Ming’s spear point.

“Maybe I should start small. I should not use such a tiny elliptical leaf to practice…” Lin Ming thought. The small elliptical leaves were just too difficult right now.

He chose another, different tree. This tree’s leaves were heart shaped, and were the size of a palm, Regardless of any angle, as long as the spear pierced through the center, he could string the leaves on the spear tip.

"This tree is good. I'll practice with the one."

…

Day after day, Lin Ming went to spend his mornings tempering his body at the Icy Pond Waterfall. He set the difficulty to the ninth level to push his body to the limit, so that he could experience his ethereal martial intent. During the afternoon he would spend his time training his spear, and in the evening he would train the 'Flow like Silk' boundary, and cultivate his 'True Primal Chaos Formula'.

Ten days had passed in the blink of an eye. Lin Ming's ethereal martial intent was becoming increasingly stable. To enter it at first, he would push his body to the limit, and then by supporting himself with the high-level Soul Gathering Pellet and true essence stones, he could slowly enter the ethereal martial intent under these harsh conditions.

Afterwards, as long as Lin Ming meditated under the Icy Pond Waterfall, he could spontaneously enter the ethereal martial intent state.

After cultivating in the ethereal martial intent state for a long time, Lin Ming's 'True Primal Chaos Formula' had finally entered the second-level. His true essence became even thicker, and his strength and speed also increased.

During that evening, Lin Ming sat alone in his room and meditated for a long time, He adjusted his mind to the most peaceful and tranquil condition he could achieve. Then, slowly, he pulled out the reward he won from taking first place in the entrance exam – the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill!

The Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill was created by mixing the bone marrow of a Crimson Gold Dragon with many precious medicinal herbs, and then refining them all together.

The Crimson Gold Dragon's dragon marrow was inestimably precious and difficult to find. The other rare and precious medicinal herbs were also high-quality and rare. Not only had that, but to refine this pill required a top-tier alchemist. An alchemist of this level usually came from a large sect, it was impossible for a common person to even catch a glimpse of them, let alone ask them to come out create such a pill. Even if they did come out, the fees alone would be overwhelmingly expensive.

Therefore the Sky Fortune Kingdom had never produced a Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill. Not even the Royal Family could buy it, as its value could simply not be measured with gold.

Then, Lin Ming took out a ‘Lower Spirit Cure Symbol’ symbol paper that he had prepared in advance. He had trained hard for a half month to create these two ‘Lower Spirit Cure Symbols’. The first had already been used on the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill, and the second was to prepare this Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill.

Normally a martial artist could only absorb a small part of a pill’s efficacy, and the rest would dissipate. But the symbols that Lin Ming had drawn up could control and stimulate this pill. With it, the effects of the pill would not dissipate in a martial artist’s body, and instead infiltrate and be absorbed. This way, the pill’s efficacy would increase by several times!

Lin Ming crushed the ‘Lower Spirit Cure Symbol’ in his hand. The symbol paper turned into a bright red flame that immediately flew to the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and began to integrate with it. In a few breaths of time, a flame-shaped inscription symbol had appeared on the center of the pill.

Chapter 100 – Viscera Training, Large Success

Chapter 100 – Viscera Training, Large Success

Chapter title is a spoiler, highlight it to read it now, or see it at the bottom.

…

…

…

The Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill was a potent and dangerous medicine. After having its efficacy increased several times over, it could be said to be poison to the body! So even after Lin Ming had completed the inscription symbol, he did not rashly take it.

But now, he had entered the second-level of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula'. The impure true essence of the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill that he had taken before had already been completely refined into his body. Lin Ming felt that he was ready to take the next step.

Taking a deep breath, Lin Ming placed the pill in his mouth, and swallowed it.

The pill quickly slid into his stomach where it settled down without a response.

But Lin Ming knew, this was only the calm before the storm. Once the efficacy of the pill melted, it would immediately attack his insides. That would be the beginning of the pain.

Lin Ming had prepared a bath barrel full of water. He jumped into it and began to revolve the 'True Primal Chaos Formula'. The water was able to help him feel relaxed and calm.

After half an hour passed, Lin Ming felt a feverish heat begin to form in his stomach. At first it was like drinking a full glass of strong liquor, but before long, it was similar to a lit flame. The heat fled in all directions in Lin Ming's body, and it was like he had fallen into a stove. The surface of his flesh began to steam, and it dissipated along his pores. At this moment, it was as if there was some invisible force shackling this angry heat, and stiffly holding it in Lin Ming's body!

This was the effect of the medicinal inscription symbol.

If not for the medicinal inscription symbol, the efficacy would dissipate. But, the medicinal inscription symbol was forcefully fettering these forces in Lin Ming's body. Another effect was that this increased Lin Ming's suffering!

The Golden Snake Scarlet Pill was cold like arctic ice, and eating it had made him feel like he had fallen into the ninth level of a deep, icy abyss. But this Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill was hot like fire, and eating it made him feel like he was committing suicide by running into ten thousand raging infernos; the burning pain was difficult to endure!

Ling Ming felt as if his entire body was burnt until it was overcooked, and then he felt a pain like there was a hard brush brushing back and forth all over him. This excruciating misery nearly made him collapse.

At first, he was able to forcefully revolve the 'True Primal Chaos Formula', but now, he was actually unable to revolve the 'True Primal Chaos Formula'! Such a debilitating pain was not something a human could endure. Even if Lin Ming had a strong heart of martial arts, he was unable to forcefully exercise his strength under these conditions.

The water in the tub began to get hotter and hotter because of Lin Ming. Soon, it began to boil, and emit a massive white cloud of roiling steam.

The bath barrel of water was boiling.

In the throes of such searing pain, Lin Ming was unable to comprehend the situation he was in. But at this moment, the innumerable tiny units in his body began to spontaneously exhale and inhale to absorb Lin Ming's body heat.

The breathing of these tiny units quickly formed into the resonance of true essence. With this resonance, the trapped clouds of hot gas and heat in Lin Ming’s body began to disperse due to vibration, and Lin Ming’s pain began to lighten. “Mm? This is also…”

When Lin Ming had taken the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill, the tiny units in Lin Ming’s body had also spontaneously entered into the ‘Flow like Silk’ boundary, and their vibrations had dispersed the masses of cold air and energy in his body. As the cold air and energy was shaken up, it was easily absorbed into his body. Under these circumstances, it seemed the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill was in the same situation.

The countless tiny units in Lin Ming’s body had already formed a cohesive resistance against this foreign enemy. This was their instinct; Lin Ming did not need to consciously direct them.

Without a doubt, this was an advantage of Strength Training’s ‘Flow like Silk’…

“The ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ is truly a god-level cultivation method!” Lin Ming did not know how many times his heart had already given birth to such grateful feelings.

If it were not for the ‘Flow like Silk’ boundary, then the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill would have been so burningly painful that Lin Ming did now know if he could have endured that long. When that happened, even if Lin Ming had fully managed to absorb the efficacy of the pill, if the toxic heat was retained in his body for too long, then it would cause damage to his meridians, and Lin Ming would need to take a long time to recover from that.

But now, under the help of ‘Flow like Silk’, Lin Ming’s body was able to absorb just like when he had taken the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill, and perfectly refine the efficacy of the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill.

All that was left over was the absorption and consolidation process.

As time passed slowly, Lin Ming had already been in the bath barrel for two hours. During this time, the barrel water had been steaming hot.

With the refining of the drug in his body, Lin Ming's inner true essence took a new step and permeated through all his organs. This was the Large Success stage of Viscera Training!

Lin Ming opened both his eyes and exhaled a long breath of steam. This breath mixed with the white steam that filled the room and formed a small whirlpool. With the whirlpool in the air, he kept breathing like this for several moments, and still did not show any signs of slowing down.

"To breathe like a snake and aspirate like an arrow was already the sign of Viscera Training's Large Success, but I had achieved that in the early Viscera Training Stage. Now that I have taken the next step and reached Large Success of Viscera Training, my breath is like a vortex. In the memories of that elder, the person who practiced the true 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' to the pinnacle was able to create storms that wreaked havoc with a single breath, and give a shout like the angry thunder of a god. They were truly a power that could pierce the heavens and shatter the earth.

After reaching Large Success in the Third Stage of Body Transformation, Lin Ming didn't forget to test out his fist strength. These days, whenever Lin Ming's strength had evolved further, he had checked his fist strength to compare how far he was from Ling Sen. This time was not an exception.

It was already late at night. The strength measuring room was empty. Lin Ming randomly picked a strength measuring stone pillar, and then shut his eyes and made a small prayer. He gathered his momentum, and then suddenly let loose a punch!

Peng!

There was a dull sound, and the stone pillar began to wildly rock back and forth. The light beam jumped crazily, passed five feet, and kept rising!

5000 jins!

5100 jins!

5200 jins!

Finally, the light beam stopped at a quarter to six feet. His strength was 5300 jins!

Seeing this number, Lin Ming let out a long breath. His free punch had finally surpassed Ling Sen!

The ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ had broken through to the second-level, and matched with the Large Success of Viscera Training, Lin Ming’s fist strength had finally passed the critical mark of 5000 jins!

“At first, when Ling Sen had demonstrated his strength on the stone pillar for new disciples to see, he had let loose a random fist that was 4900 jins. But with Ling Sen’s personality, that fist he used to display his strength was at least 80% serious. Ling Sen’s highest fist strength should be higher than 5300 jins.”

“But regardless of how near my fist strength is to Ling Sen’s now, Ling Sen’s superiority doesn’t lie in his strength. His terrifying aspect lies in his fighting instincts and killing ability that he had cultivated from his Ashura martial intent. But my superiority is actually my strength. Not only is my strength inferior to his, but my combat prowess is far short!”

Those who had resolved their determination to pursue the peak of the martial arts path would often run into other powerhouses who would take them as enemies. They would analyze these powerhouses’ respective strengths and weakness, to see if they would win or lose if they were in a life and death battle.

Lin Ming was no exception.

…

Ten more days passed.

Bang!

Lin Ming punched the base of a thick, big tree. The leaves sprinkled down as they fell. Lin Ming flicked Penetrating Rainbow, and moved his hands like lightning!

Cha cha cha!

In several breaths of time, those dozens of leaves had been completely pierced by Lin Ming!

But Lin Ming could not be like Hong Xi, where the fallen leaves had been so beautifully strung on the tip of his spear. He was able to grasp speed, aim, but not yet control of his strength.

Lin Ming simply did not pursue the control of power, what he was pursuing was directly the ultimate destructive power!

He let the vibrations of 'Flow like Silk' travel up the spear. The true essence vibrations of the treasure spearhead touched the falling leaf, and directly pulverized the falling leaf!

He was able to achieve this step because he had reached the Large Success in Viscera Training. His true essence had become thicker, his strength stronger, and his speed quicker. During the short time that he had digested the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill's efficacy, Lin Ming had used most of the time shares he had left for the seven major killing arrays. All he had left was about 6 hours.

"Not bad!" Hong Xi said from his side. Not even the disciples that had requested the strict Hong Xi were able to make him feel such appreciation.

"In these last 20 days you have managed to reach the Large Success of the Third Stage of Body Transformation. Your ethereal martial intent really makes one envious."

The last time, Hong Xi had taught Lin Ming spear skills. After he had taught him how to improve his spear speed, he had left for ten days. After coming back, Lin Ming had unexpectedly reached the Large Success of Viscera Training. This made Hong Xi feel genuinely startled.

Lin Ming replied, “Instructor Hong, before now I had not taken the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill, I had only eaten the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill. Several days ago I ate the Crimson Gold Dragon Pill. That is why I have had such progress since then.”

Hong Xi listened with a bit of surprise. It turned out that this Ling Ming had relied on just the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill to break through to the Third Stage of Body Transformation and defeat Zhang Cang. Everyone, including him, had thought that Lin Ming had eaten both pills together. This Lin Ming was just too difficult to explain with common sense.

Hong Xi said, “I would not have guessed that before now, you had only used a Golden Snake Scarlet Pill to break into the Viscera Training stage. If I’m not guessing wrong, then your body is very suitable to ingesting and absorbing valuable materials. Coupled with your ethereal martial intent, your future achievements really will be limitless. And that’s only because your natural talent is poor. If your talent was increased by two levels, then I really can’t dare to imagine what it would be like!

“Well, starting today, for ten days, I will always be accompanying you as you train your spear. Your basic spear skills are already fast, accurate, and stable, but you are stilling missing one point, and that is change! Although spearplay is not as tricky or crafty as swordplay, but a spear has many more moves and varieties than a sword! The main attack methods of a sword are nothing but stabs, cuts, and slices. But a spear can do much more. A spear can stab, divide, sweep, circle, dance, and so on. I will not teach you fixed moves and routines. I will only have you achieve faster foundation spear skills through comprehensive practice, so that they are constantly changing!”

“Begin! I will suppress my true essence to be on a similar level to you. I will not show mercy! As Hong Xi said this, he flicked his long spear, aimed it at Lin Ming’s chest, and thrusted!

Hong Xi had only suppressed his true essence; he hadn’t suppressed his volatile strength. Lin Ming could not compare with Hong Xi, whose body was at the Large Success of the Pulse Condensation Period. Hong Xi’s spear speed was as fast as lightning. It instantly appeared in front of Lin Ming!

“Fast!” In that moment, Lin Ming had a clear feeling of the spear edge’s dense chill wavering in the air. It made the fine hairs on his body stand up.

Peng!

Lin Ming grasped Penetrating Rainbow and swept out. His spear met Hong Xi’s reckless attack and they collided. Even though Lin Ming’s strength surpassed 5000 jins, his hand was still shaken numb by Hong Xi’s strike!

The strength of a peak Pulse Condensation Period martial artist was just too abnormal and perverse! If Lin Ming hadn’t channeled the vibrations of ‘Flow like Silk’ into Penetrating Rainbow, with just this strike, he would have already been defeated!

Chapter 101 – Arrival of the Decisive Battle

Chapter 101 – Arrival of the Decisive Battle

…

…

…

However, Hong Xi was even more startled. Even though he had not used true essence, he had still used his full and complete strength in this strike; but Lin Ming was able to block it head-on!

Hong Xi had already known that Lin Ming's strength was otherworldly, but he did not think that after achieving Large Success in the Third Stage of Body Transformation, that his strength would undergo such a dramatic rise. This strength must be no less than 5000 jins! His body was simply like a vicious beast!

Although he was surprised, Hong Xi's movement hadn't slowed in the slightest. He took advantage of Lin Ming's blowback from his spear strike and aggressed on him. He thrusted his spear out three times, and each strike cut off all of Lin Ming's dodging paths. Lin Ming could only raise his spear to defend!

Dong!

As they collided, Hong Xi's spear fell upon the spear shaft of Penetrating Rainbow. The dark purple elastic iron spear shaft was hammered by Hong Xi and forcefully bent like a bow!

Lin Ming's feet sank into the ground, and his right foot was trapped in the thick soil. He pushed back with all his strength on Penetrating Rainbow, and just managed to force back Hong Xi's spear. But Hong Xi had backflipped into the air, and as he was airborne, his long spear drew a perfect arc, and he did a straight thrust from under his belly towards Lin Ming's throat.

The spear came flying at him too fast and too suddenly. With him having recklessly forced back two of Hong Xi's blows, he had exhausted his true essence, and the blood in his chest was roiling. He was not able to block this strike, and Hong Xi's one spear thrust came perilously close to Lin Ming's throat.

At that moment, Lin Ming could clearly feel the bone-chilling wind from the spear, painfully flowing against his skin. But in a flash, Hong Xi had withdrawn his spear, and the spear point stopped a half inch away from Lin Ming's throat, not injuring him in the least.

What accurate control of force!

Even knowing that Hong Xi's spear would not pierce him, Lin Ming's breath had stopped in that instant as the spear wind blew against his skin. This spear thrust that was like a bolt of lightning was just too scary.

Three moves. In just three moves, Lin Ming was defeated!

As Hong Xi received his long spear, he said, "Lin Ming, although I suppressed my true essence, I did not suppress my strength. Still, you were able to last until the third spear move, which is already far beyond what someone of your level can accomplish! Your strength really goes against heaven's will; I guess it must be more than 5000 jins!

"5300 jins." Lin Ming replied truthfully.

"5300 jins!" Hong Xi clicked his tongue, " A martial artist at your cultivation would have been thrown 18 streets away by you. Your strength is truly appropriate to wield the spear; using a sword would have been a waste! When you had received my three strikes, you were actually not at your best level. When you were defending, you had one very weak point. That is your momentum!

Momentum!

Lin Ming was slightly stunned. Early on, his moment had really been overwhelmed and crushed by Hong Xi's swift and fierce spear moves!

"When you had fought against Zhang Cang, you had used the most basic foundation moves 'Iron Bridge Blocks the River' and 'Flood Dragon Goes to Sea' to break apart Zhang Cang's 'Sunset Cut'. This was because your spear carried with it a tide of surging momentum! But a moment ago, because my spear moves were too quick, you did not have enough time to gather your potential! Yes, although the momentum of your spear is strong, but it actually has a fatal weakness, and that is that its start is too slow!"

"Zhu Yan uses a sword, and he has great attainments in swordsmanship. His attacks are extremely swift and aggressive. If you are suppressed by him, then his moves will be faster than yours, and you will not be able to gather your momentum. When that happens, you will be led into his rhythm, and finally be defeated!"

Hong Xi was indeed an instructor of the Seven Profound Martial House; he had quickly discerned and pointed out another weakness of Lin Ming's.

Indeed, no matter how good a skill was, if one did not have time to begin unleash it, then it would be useless!

"Now you must learn how to gather your momentum while you are attacking! Have you ever heard of some martial skills that are in a set, for instance, something something 18 palms, or whatever whatever 9 swords, or something silly like that?"

Lin Ming nodded.

Hong Xi said, "This set style often starts from the first, weakest move. A move will follow the previous move, and each move will be stronger than the last! You might ask; why would someone waste their energy doing this and not use their strongest final attack on the first move? The truth is, it is not that they don't want to, but that they cannot. This is a question of gathering their momentum. They need to begin at the start, and save up their potential, and finally explode with power in that last move! This is what it means to gather your momentum!”

Lin Ming was suddenly enlightened, “I understand.”

“If you want to learn how to gather your potential, then it is very simple. All you have to do is fight! Starting from today, except eating and sleeping, the rest of the time we shall fight! I want to see how long you will be able to stand it!”

For the next ten days, Lin Ming started a hellish combat training routine.

Although Hong Xi had said that they would fight each other whenever they weren’t eating or sleeping, but he hadn’t thought that Lin Ming would be able to persist through it.

Although a Viscera Training martial artist had vitality and endurance, and their hearts and lungs were powerful, it was impossible for them to maintain such intense fighting for a long period of time. However, Hong Xi quickly discovered that he had once again underestimated Lin Ming.

This Lin Ming was simply a perpetual motion machine in human form. His endurance was abnormal and outrageous!

His true essence was thicker than other martial artists of his cultivation by several times, and it was also purer; it could almost be said to be growing without end!

Even Qin Xingxuan who cultivated the rare and forbidden cultivation manuals of the Seven Profound Valley was not as exaggerated as this. Hong Xi didn’t have any words to comment, he only chalked up this sort of bizarre situation to Lin Ming’s ethereal martial intent and inborn divine strength.

They could fight for an entire eight hours with only a single breath!

Even Hong Xi was sweating profusely. His armor had already been tossed off to the side, and he was shirtless. But Lin Ming’s entire body was wet and sticky with perspiration, and he took great panting gulps of breath. Every time he exhaled, the hot air would form steam, and every time he inhaled, the air would form a mini whirlpool. Even flying leaves near Lin Ming were blown away.

Hong Xi noted this phenomenon of nature. This boy, his breath was so long, no wonder his endurance was so good. Were his lungs a pair of bellows?

“Instructor Hong, let’s go again!” Although Lin Ming was dead tired, his eyes still shined brightly with fighting spirit. In merely one day, his progress had been beyond astonishing. At the start, he had only been able to meet three spears from Hong Xi, but now he could take 7 or 8 moves from Hong Xi and still not be defeated. One time, he even met 10 moves!

These were attacks from a martial artist at the Pulse Condensation Period!

By fighting in such a manner, Lin Ming began to gradually discover what it meant to gather his potential and momentum during a fight. If in the past Lin Ming had depended on his strength and superior thick true essence to defeat his opponents, then now Lin Ming’s combat skills were gradually catching up.

“Good! Come again!” Hong Xi’s spirit was also aroused by Lin Ming’s hot-bloodedness. In this day of fighting, even though Lin Ming’s strength was far weaker than his own, he was still fighting with his full strength!

…

For ten days, whenever Lin Ming wasn’t eating or sleeping, he was fighting with Hong Xi. By relying on his second-layer of ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’, and the resiliency given by his long, bellow-like breaths, Lin Ming was able to adhere to this practice regimen every day.

From the beginning, he had only been able to persist up to three moves, but afterwards he was able to last for more than 20. Lin Ming’s flow of momentum and potential was becoming more and more skillful; he could send his momentum out with every strike of his spear. Even the momentum of his old self was less imposing! Each move he made with his spear was able to constantly accumulate momentum, getting stronger and stronger!

At the same time, Lin Ming's movement also made considerable progress. The 'Foundation Movement Technique' was not some sort of profound movement technique. Its movement was very simple and basic. However, Lin Ming was able to forcefully rely on this technique to slowly catch up to Hong Xi's movements.

Bang!

After the continuous momentum of 20 moves had gathered, Lin Ming's spear cleaved downwards. It brought with it a surge of torrential rivers and streams, and hacked towards Hong Xi. Everywhere the spear wind touched was blown away like sand!

"Good spear!" Hong Xi lifted his spear to meet the oncoming blow. Although he was able to block this spear, he was forced back a step by the backlash from the formidable momentum and intense vibrations that ran up Lin Ming's spear.

This was the first time that Lin Ming had forced back Hong Xi!

A Viscera Training stage martial artist that could force back one at the Pulse Condensation Period? Even though Hong Xi had suppressed his true essence, this result was enough to frighten anyone!

And Hong Xi was not an ordinary Pulse Condensation Period martial artist!

"Lin Ming, no matter what happens to your body, I don't think I can ever be surprised again." Hong Xi smiled, and received his long spear. "This was only ten days. If there was perhaps a month, then I don't think I would be able to defeat you without using more of my true essence."

Although Hong Xi was praising him so, Lin Ming had no room for complacency. He knew that for a martial artist, the higher one's cultivation was, the more important true essence would be. Someone using true essence versus someone not using true essence; the gulf between them was too vast. Especially in the body of a martial artist, once they had connected their meridians and opened them, then their true essence would be incomparably smooth and unimpeded. Attacks with true essence were the strongest methods of attack. If

Hong Xi had used his full strength, then there was no doubt Lin Ming would die in less than three moves.

Lin Ming said, “I fall far short from Instructor. If Instructor Hong was serious, then being able to withstand one move would already be the edge of my limits.”

“Hey! You boy, you want to rely on your Viscera Training stage strength to wholeheartedly compare with someone at the peak Pulse Condensation Period? That you can force a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist to take a step back is already very good. Are you dissatisfied with that or something?”

Listening to Hong Xi say it like that, Lin Ming also smiled. His cultivation was simply too low; he was three stages worse compared to the Pulse Condensation Period! Moreover, for the boundaries of a martial artist’s cultivation, the higher one went, the harder it became, and the bigger the gulf between each realm!

Hong Xi said, “Tomorrow will be the day of your match against Zhu Yan. Today we will stop here. You go and take a good rest, and adjust to your peak condition. If you lose, I won’t forgive you.”

Lin Ming grinned and laughed as he said, “At first when I challenged Zhu Yan, I really wasn’t sure of my chances. But after practicing with Instructor Hong for so many days, I think my odds are pretty high now.”

“Ha! I’ll take this as you having learnt something!”

Lin Ming’s Large Success of Viscera Training stage against Zhu Yan’s early Altering Muscle stage.

Although there was only a difference of half a stage, this was a fight between the apex of talents. A half-stage difference was already amazing, and that wasn’t even counting Zhu Yan having spent more time at the Seven Profound Martial House for two and a half years more than Lin Ming. In this time, he had been able to use the seven major killing arrays for much longer!

Zhu Yan was truly a formidable and daunting opponent. In the entirety of the Seven Profound Martial House, one could say his talent was only inferior to the three people; Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and Zhang Guanyu!

Time passed quickly, and it was soon to approach one month. This was the 64th day since Lin Ming had arrived at the Seven Profound Martial House. Today was also the day of Lin Ming's and Zhu Yan's duel. The location of this duel was the Seven Profound Martial House's Martial Stage.

In the Seven Profound Martial House, there were placed that were off limits to outsiders. For instance, those that involved secrets, heritages, and legacies; these were places such as the depository, the seven major killing arrays, the Ten Thousand Killing Array, the Exquisite Pagoda, and so on. All of those areas were restricted, and outsiders were not allowed to enter. When the servants of the Tenth Prince and the Crown Prince had entered the mountain valley to observe the ranking war at the Ten Thousand Killing Array, it was only because the stage was distant and it was hard to see clearly.

Outside of these places, the other areas of the Seven Profound Martial House were not so strict. For instance, the lecture hall, Martial House square, and so forth. When Lin Ming had borrowed a Pass Card to enter the Zither Department to look up information on materials, this was also a place that was generally open to outsiders.

As long as one had a pass or were of aristocratic status, they could enter these places.

The Martial Stage was also one of these places.

The disciples of the Martial House occasionally held martial arts contest, and there were a few people that often came to the Martial Stage to observe from the sidelines.

But today, the Martial Stage was packed to the brim with people. These people were all extraordinary characters; there were the talents and geniuses of the Seven Profound Martial

House, the heroes of Sky Fortune Kingdom’s martial artists, the nobility and aristocrats of Sky Fortune City, various famous and respected families, and important political figures.

Chapter 102 – The Focus of All Eyes

Chapter 102 – The Focus of All Eyes

…

…

…

But today, the Martial Stage was packed to the brim with people. These people were all extraordinary characters; there were the talents and geniuses of the Seven Profound Martial House, the heroes of Sky Fortune Kingdom's martial artists, the nobility and aristocrats of Sky Fortune City, various famous and respected families, and important political figures.

Lin Ming was an inestimably rare talent that would appear only every 100 years at the Seven Profound Martial House. His rising star and bright halo was enough to attract the attention of most martial artists. Zhu Yan was also a first-class master of the Seven Profound Martial House; he had the possibility to be one of the top ten future talents of the Seven Profound Martial House. These two people's match symbolized a duel between the top geniuses of Sky Fortune City's younger generation.

If it was just this alone, it would not have attracted the nobility of Sky Fortune City and the political figures to gather here.

They did not belong in the circles of martial artists. No matter how strong Lin Ming or Zhu Yan were, this would be of no relation to any of them.

The reason this match would cause them to pay special attention was because there was political significance behind it!

The news of Lin Ming and Zhu Yan's match had spread out far and wide long ago.

Everyone was aware that the Tenth Prince's mother, the imperial concubine, came from Green Mulberry City's Zhu Family. This Zhu Yan also had a very high possibility of being the next head of the Zhu Family. Zhu Yan was without a doubt a person of the Tenth Prince.

But Lin Ming had rejected the Tenth Prince's advances when the Tenth Prince had tried to win him over a month ago, and instead was in favor of the Crown Prince. Moreover, according to reliable sources, Lin Ming and Zhu Yan had some sort of enmity between them, and Lin Ming and Mister Muyi were friends between generations. By virtue of these points alone, Lin Ming had an almost absolute possibility of being a person of the Crown Prince!

This match, while being a duel between Lin Ming and Zhu Yan, also symbolized the struggle between the Crown Prince and the Tenth Prince. These past few years, the hidden conflicts between the Crown Prince and the Tenth Prince had occurred often, but the Crown Prince had lost nearly every time! Although most of these battles had not genuinely wounded the Crown Prince's strength, they had without a doubt weakened the Crown Prince's momentum!

It was not a secret that the Tenth Prince wished to snatch the throne away. In this case, the Crown Prince had repeatedly suffered setbacks, and all of this perpetuated the notion that the Crown Prince was inferior to the Tenth Prince. Therefore, the people who supported the Crown Prince unavoidably panicked and were flustered, and less and less people supported the Crown Prince. Instead, the Tenth Prince's influence only grew by the day!

Many of the nobility and aristocracy came today not to see the contest between Lin Ming and Zhu Yan, but the contest between the Tenth Prince and the Crown Prince! The sooner these people supported the man they thought would be the dragon who would ascend the throne, the larger the advantage they could obtain in the upcoming throne battle!

Because of the appearance of these nobles, there were special protections at the Martial Stage, and bodyguards to protect these important guests.

Due to too many important people attending, the disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House were pushed far away. This made them angry, and criticize these nobles in their hearts.

Lin Ming had already arrived. He stood quietly on the empty Martial Stage, his body as straight as Penetrating Rainbow.

Faced with the eyes of everyone looking at him, and so many of them being important people, Lin Ming closed his eyes and meditated, his mind calm and tranquil like a still lake.

In a battle between two of similar strength, one's state of mind became very important. Even a slight change would affect the outcome of the battle.

The best condition for a martial artist's mind before a battle was to be tranquil and still like water, not having even a single distracting thought. Though saying this was easy, a battle usually involved great significance; how could a martial artist settle down and keep their heart still under this condition? In addition to the disturbance from so many other possible factors, there were very few martial artists who were able to achieve this calm and tranquil mental state.

However, Lin Ming had comprehended martial intent and had achieved this state. To him, this was as easy as turning his hand over.

It was half an hour from the agreed match time. At this moment, a sharp, high-pitched voice suddenly called out; this was the unique sound of the palace court eunuch. "The Crown Prince arrives!"

Everyone was shocked; even Lin Ming who had been standing on the Martial Stage opened his eyes. His Highness the Crown Prince had unexpectedly come!

Accompanied by the clear clip clip clip sounds of hoofbeats, several Snow Dragon Horses appeared and started to come into view. They were led by a young man wearing a purple gold crown and a silk imperial robe. He wore a pair of Kirin styled boots, and delicate eyebrows framed his fair face. He had a broad forehead, and a very handsome face. His movements were filled with an innate, distinguished atmosphere.

This man was His Highness, the Crown Prince.

At the Crown Prince’s side was an old man wearing green clothes. His face had a warm and friendly smile, yet it gave off an immeasurably deep and unfathomable aura. This person was the Crown Prince’s teacher, the outsider from the Marshal’s Quarters, Mister Muyi!

“His Highness, the Crown Prince!”

“Mister Muyi!”

Seeing these two famous figures come together in unison caused everyone present to feel awe. They cleared a path for these to come forward.

Muyi looked at Lin Ming with a smile and a nod, and Lin Ming smiled in return. There was much goodwill and friendship between Muyi and Lin Ming.

But good things came in pairs. Similarly, after a half quarter hour, the Tenth Prince, the Cloud Prince, also arrived!

The Cloud Prince’s appearance and the Crown Prince’s appearance were somewhat similar. His appearance was only more resolute, his eyebrows were like swords that angled towards his temples, and above the center of his forehead was a vague purple cloud hidden under his skin. This was the legendary Purple Air Comes From the East, the King of Air!

At the Cloud Prince’s side was also a slender young man in silk clothes. This young man was Zhu Yan.

As soon as the Tenth Prince saw Lin Ming, he smiled with a ‘haha’. “Little Brother Lin, you’ve come very early. This is our first time meeting; it’s nice to meet you!”

Though his voice was loud, there was no arrogance in it. Instead, it was very comfortable and pleasant to listen to.

Lin Ming silently thought, “This Tenth Prince is also a character. I refused him at first, but he doesn’t seem to bear a grudge. On the surface he talks and laughs joyfully with me, as if nothing had ever happened before.”

“There seems to be some sort of silly misunderstanding between Little Brother Lin and Zhu Yan. The warriors of my Sky Fortune Kingdom have always resolved their hatred in a martial way. I happen to think that both of you are fine heroes among men. No matter what sort of misunderstanding or unhappiness occurred between you two, as soon as this fight is over, how about we sit down for a chat and see if we can put an end to these hostilities, and turn swords into plowshares?”

‘Turn swords into plowshares? I’m afraid Zhu Yan wants to eat my meat and flay me alive.’

Lin Ming understood that the Tenth Prince had said these words because he didn’t want to be his enemy. He politely responded, “I did not expect Your Highness the Cloud Prince to watch this match. It is my utmost honor and greatest pleasure to see you here.”

Lin Ming’s words were neither arrogant nor servile. He directly responded to the Tenth Prince. The Tenth Prince only smiled, and no longer said anything.

At this moment, Zhu Yan dismounted and slowly stepped up onto the Martial Stage. As soon he saw Lin Ming, he confirmed that this boy had made a breakthrough in this month!

Large Success of the Third Stage of Body Transformation!

Zhu Yan felt the enormous pressure, but did not feel that anything was wrong. When Lin Ming had challenged him with a deadline of one month, Zhu Yan had expected Lin Ming to make astonishing progress during this time. He had probably comprehended some kind of martial intent.

Zhu Yan arrived on the other side of the Martial Stage, and stood distantly opposite of Lin Ming.

There was a quarter hour until the decisive battle!

Lan Yunyue was among those in the crowd. She was distantly looking at Lin Ming and Zhu Yan on stage. Her heart had overturned, and it was like all the good and bad emotions and feelings in her life had mixed together.

She was the one who was most unwilling to see this fight happen. Regardless of who was victorious or who was the defeated, each option would be a knife to her heart! Her eyes still reverberated with a phantom echo of those words Zhu Yan had said to her one month ago, "He wants me to… divorce you!"

She did not even dare to think what would happen if Zhu Yan were to lose, and how she would face life afterwards. She did not even have a chance to regret…

Although Lin Ming and Zhu Yan had already arrived, the battle had not started. Zhu Yan closed his eyes and meditated, adjusting to his own peak condition.

To him, Lin Ming was a formidable and daunting opponent. He had to adjust his pre-battle condition to its maximum, and display 120% of his strength!

Only half a year ago, Lin Ming had been an irrelevant loser, unworthy of even mentioning. Even if Lin Ming had defeated that child of General Wang, Wang Yigao, it was nothing to Zhu Yan.

In Zhu Yan's eyes, Wang Yigao was a good-for-nothing playboy that was not fit to be called a martial artist.

Zhu Yan had not thought that there would be a day where he and Lin Ming would be standing against each other, and fighting on the Martial Stage in front of so many important people. Even the Crown Prince and the Cloud Prince had come to watch this fateful battle.

And beyond that, Lin Ming's strength had also grown to the point of threatening him!

To prepare for this battle today, he had tortured himself for a month, and had even caused the foundation of his cultivation to be a bit unstable by enhancing his strength as much as possible with precious pills!

In the face of this battle, he too wished for a calm heart to face critical situations, to adjust his condition in this quarter hour before facing this great enemy!

This was a battle he could not afford to lose!

The victory and defeat of this battle not only concerned Zhu Yan's future, but it concerned his dignity as a martial artist, and more so, his dignity as a man!

As the sundial shadow began to gradually move, it finally became noon. Lin Ming's eyes suddenly flashed open.

"It's time!"

Zheng–!

With a loud ringing sound, Lin Ming flourished his spear, Penetrating Rainbow. It was just like a dark purple flood dragon that shivered as it fell into Lin Ming's hand! At this moment, Lin Ming had not fought, but his indomitable aura had already been released and it billowed outwards. Everyone present, even if their cultivation was higher than Lin Ming's, felt an invisible pressure pushing down on them!

"This aura… is this really something that a martial artist at the Third Stage of Body Transformation can release!?"

"This Lin Ming is too strong, his imposing manner and aura are enough to make one feel breathless!"

Even the disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House were fearfully startled. This Lin Ming's power was rising too fast! They hadn't seen him in a month, and his strength had already risen to another level!

Zhu Yan took a deep breath and slowly drew out his treasure sword. This sword in his hand was a low-grade human-step treasure, one of the best among its kind. Its name was Scarlet Flare, and it had already accompanied him for many years. He had long ago been able to communicate with his sword.

Facing Lin Ming, it was impossible to count on his opponent being weak. He could only ask that his own strength was stronger!

Fu–!

With a light sound, Zhu Yan's sword lit with flames visible to the naked eye! Substantializing true essence and giving it tangible form! This was a stage that only those a step away from reaching the Pulse Condensation Period could achieve. Generally only those who were at the Large Success of Bone Forging were able to reach this realm, but Zhu Yan, who was only at the early Altering Muscle stage, had already achieved this!

Lin Ming and Zhu Yan had not fought, but with just a few random movements, they had already displayed their frightening strength as the pinnacles among talents. This was a fierce struggle between two evenly matched opponents!

The entire Martial Stage audience was silent; even the sound of a pin dropping could be heard. The audience was silent with bated breath, and they steadily looking, with unblinking eyes, at the stage that held two solitary figures, for fear of missing even a single thing.

Chapter 103 – Gather Momentum

Chapter 103 – Gather Momentum

…

…

…

Layer upon layer of crimson air emanated from Zhu Yan's sword. The meaning of Zhu Yan's name was vermillion flame, and his true essence also shared this fiery property. Therefore Zhu Yan's sword skills were often associated with fire! By virtue of the characteristics of his true essence, if he used martial skills of the fire attribute, then their power would also increase!

As the crimson air waves surged from Zhu Yan's blade, the chilly autumn air that had enveloped the Martial Stage began to turn into a scorching wind. Zhu Yan made his move!

Fiery true essence flooded into the Scarlet Flame sword. Zhu Yan's sword light wove a big net in the air, as if it were a burning cloud of fire that blotted out the sky.

"Martial Skill – Limitless Sunset Shine!"

Waves of billowing heat flowed outwards and a sizzling, feverish swelter enveloped the entire Martial Stage as the temperature shot up. The disciples who were standing nearby were forced backwards. The important figures were protected by their guards, who had set up barriers of true essence to protect them.

This Zhu Yan, as soon as he started, had used a martial skill. He was using everything he had to win!

Surrounded by the burning hot clouds that dyed the sky red, the innumerable tiny units in Lin Ming's body began to resonate together. True essence began to spontaneously vibrate within his body. This was the thick true essence that Lin Ming had obtained from reaching the second-level of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula'!

As his thick true essence vibrated, the 820 jin spear, Penetrating Rainbow, also began to tremble, carrying with it a terrifying lethality!

This vibration became increasingly strong, and it began to fuse with Lin Ming's aura and turned into howling gales of strong heavenly wind that scattered in all directions!

As this crimson cloud front came towards him, Lin Ming stood motionless. Suddenly, he moved his right hand and thrusted out!

Peng!

There was a deafening sound of an explosion. The momentum of the spear was like an avalanche, and the limitless crimson flames were swept upwards by an indefatigable wind and became a flame tornado. At the center of this fire, among the circling embers, was a whirlpool of flames that concentrated at the tip of the spear. This current was suddenly thrown at Zhu Yan!

"Pah!" The swirling eddy was like a rotating cone that pierced Zhu Yan's body!

Before those watching had a chance to call out in alarm, Zhu Yan, who had been pierced by this cone of flame wind, had distorted into a shade that gradually disappeared.

"Afterimage?"

"It's 'God's Shadow Step'! This Zhu Yan, he actually managed to cultivate such a profound movement technique!

Zhu Yan had not publicly fought for over six months. The disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House only knew of his strength through his ranking on the Ranking Stone. But they were not able to look into the Ten Thousand Killing Array, and thus they could not see how Zhu Yan fought, or know what sort of skills and abilities he could use.

Zhu Yan was like a phantasmal ghost that faded into the wind. He instantly appeared at Lin Ming's side!

No, it was more accurate to say that it wasn't Zhu Yan that had appeared first, but his sword!

In that flash, his sword struck out 24 times!

Cha cha cha cha…

Sword light covered the sky in a tight and deadly net. Zhu Yan's skillful swordsmanship had already arrived at the point of perfection!

When he was just 14 years old, Zhu Yan had already been infamous for his swordsmanship in Green Mulberry City. He had later joined the army for one year, and then tortured himself practicing for two and a half years at the Seven Profound Martial House. In this three year period, he had even comprehended his own understandings of the sword. His sword was to the point where it seemed to melt into the emptiness. One could not see his sword; only the sword light!

Not even Zhu Yan could clearly see the path of his sword; how could it be blocked?

Even the top 40 disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House rankings and the Bone Forging stage masters who came to protect the important personages, felt a chill crawl up their spines as they watched this sword light. If it were them exchanging blows, then in the midst of such otherworldly sword light, even they would have been defeated! Lin Ming's movement technique was only the 'Foundation Movement Technique'. How could he dodge?

All of these thoughts occurred in an instant. Between the flashes of sword light, they all thought that it was too late. But at this moment, Lin Ming lifted his spear.

Penetrating Rainbow rushed out like a brilliant black dragon. In that strike, true essence vibrated like a sea of churning water, and scattered in all directions towards these sword lights.

Ding ding ding ding ding ding ding!

In a split second, it was unknown how many times Penetrating Rainbow hit Zhu Yan's sword. In that moment, Zhu Yan felt as if his sword was cutting at a mountain. Lin Ming's spear carried with it a vibrating true essence as if it were an angry earthquake occurring on a mountain, and forcefully scattered all of the sword lights.

Zhu Yan simply could not shake off Lin Ming's spear. If he did not withdraw his sword, he felt that he could possibly stab Lin Ming. But he had a feeling that if he was just a tiny bit slow, then his body would be torn apart by this intense vibration!

This strange vibration was putting an enormous pressure upon Zhu Yan's sword, as if it were a fish that was drowning in a quagmire.

Seeing even his body being affected by this vibration, Zhu Yan forcefully gathered his true essence and retreated.

Dong dong dong dong! Zhu Yan staggered and fell to ground. It was difficult to even take a few steps back. His movements had lost all of their previous light and lively elegance.

"Mm? What happened to Zhu Yan?"

"What just happened? Zhu Yan had put out so many sword strikes, how was he driven back by Lin Ming's spear?"

"How did he not stab him? His sword moves are fast enough that they have no shadow; it should be much faster than Lin Ming's spear!"

Of everyone present, almost no one was able to understand the mysteries contained in Lin Ming's spear. In their opinion, with Zhu Yan's superior movement and sword speed, he should have easily avoided Lin Ming's spear and pierced Lin Ming with his sword. However, what happened was that Zhu Yan had been placed into an exceedingly perilous situation by Lin Ming's spear. Lin Ming was like a calm, unyielding mountain that towered on the stage; he had not even taken one step!

Even those guards at the Bone Forging stage were unable to understand what had just happened.

Hearing all of these people's discussions, Hong Xi smiled with a 'hehe'. In his heart he secretly thought, "Lin Ming, this kid is really a monster. He managed to integrate the 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist' into his spear. If one hasn't tasted this scary spear before, they cannot understand just how terrifying that feeling is. At the start, this father also ate many invisible losses due to that move. Now this boy is also going to give Zhu Yan a taste of what it's like."

Zhu Yan managed to stop the rolling blood in his heart with great difficulty, and he was secretly cold sweating. In that moment, he had felt his heartbeat's rhythm change. It was as if the entire blood flow in his body had been blocked by a countercurrent. Just what was going on here?

He looked at Lin Ming. Lin Ming was standing straight, gripping Penetrating Rainbow in his hand and pointing it at him.

In this pose and figure, the eyes that he was looking at Zhu Yan with seemed deep and unfathomable. A feeling gripped Zhu Yan so that he couldn't move for a moment.

"Mm? Fear?" Zhu Yan startled. There had actually been a subconscious feeling of fear that had emerged from his heart! Fear was the death knell of a martial artist's heart of martial arts. The Dream Trial's first hurdle was to test courage to overcome their fear!

And this fearful feeling had come from Lin Ming!

"This boy!"

Zhu Yan's heart surged with an inexplicable anger. He was unable to accept this! He could not accept that his arrogant and vaunted pride had been trampled upon by this little child that he had regarded as nothing but an ant!

Zhu Yan's eyes flashed with a cold light. His anger made him cut apart this feeling of fear. His figure rushed out, and a series of afterimages followed him.

As Zhu Yan sprinted forward, a three foot crimson flame erupted around his sword. This flame image was created by Zhu Yan pouring a massive amount of true essence into his sword.

Since his speed wasn't enough, then Zhu Yan would win through strength!

Zhu Yan shouted, and he jumped upwards. He gripped his sword with both hands, and slashed down!

"'Falling Star Slash!'"

"That's the medium-grade human-step 'Falling Star Slash'! It is a martial skill stronger than the 'Limitless Sunset Shine'!

By the time the crowd had exclaimed a few words, Zhu Yan's sword had already absorbed all of the surrounding fire essence. The majesty of this sword was like a fiery, burning meteor from the heavens that smashed downwards!

Lin Ming's lips curved. Strength against strength? That was his favorite!

Lin Ming wielded his spear. Penetrating Rainbow scattered sparks into the air as it drew a circular arc on the ground, and a full moon pattern appeared on the hard surface of the Martial Stage.

Lin Ming aimed at Zhu Yan's sword point, and thrusted forwards!

To stab a master's sword point in the middle of a fight where both parties were using lightning quick moves was easier said than done. However, for many years Lin Ming had been practicing his accuracy as he deboned, and in that one month of crazy spear practice, Lin Ming had acquired a solid foundation of his skills. He could wield his spear like it was his arm. Even if it were a concealed needle or other hidden weapon, Lin Ming could use find it with his spear point!

Ding!

Lin Ming thrusted his spear at Zhu Yan's sword point!

This three foot Scarlet Flare sword, how could it compare to the 820 jin Penetrating Rainbow spear?

A screeching, teeth-aching sound of metal bending filled the air as the Scarlet Flame sword and Penetrating Rainbow spear met each other. Because of the huge pressure from both of them colliding, they even bent like a full moon!

As this happened, Lin Ming vibrated his true essence to counter Zhu Yan's 'Falling Star Slash'. The intense vibrations caused Zhu Yan's blood flow to well up once more!

Peng! The Scarlet Flare sword rebounded, and Zhu Yan was sent flying backwards!

But 'Falling Star Slash' was a medium-grade human-step martial skill after all; Lin Ming was forced back three steps by Zhu Yan's heat wave and momentum!

"This is the first time Lin Ming was forced back!"

"Not just a retreat, but from the time he came on stage to now, this was the first time he's made a footstep!"

Everyone had naturally noticed this detail. Before now, Lin Ming had not moved a single step.

"Words just aren't enough to describe this. Lin Ming's indomitable aura is steadfast like a mountain. To make him move just proves how much pressure there was in Zhu Yan's momentum.” The old disciples present said. They were not willing to see Zhu Yan lose. To a famed old disciple losing to a rising new student; they felt as if they were in the same boat.

…

“Big Brother, do you think this match between Lin Ming and Zhu Yan looks somewhat similar to the one he had with Zhang Cang? Zhu Yan wasn’t stabbed or pierced, but he is still under a tremendous influence.” Ta Ku said to Ling Sen as they watched the match. They were standing at a corner of the Martial Stage.

“Mm. Lin Ming’s spear thrust has a mystery inside. Before, I read some ancient texts and they have recorded that martial artists who had reached the Large Success of spear skills are able to comprehend rules of the world, and understand certain laws. They can place these laws into their spear, and form ‘spear potentials’. Swords and sabers also have similar concepts. This kind of master does not need any weapon when facing the enemy. As long as they depend upon these ‘potentials’, they can completely kill their enemies! Lin Ming’s spear skill reminds me of these records.”

“Big Brother, the more you talk, the iffier you sound. Lin Ming is how old? How could he possibly comprehend this ‘spear potential’?”

“Of course he can’t, otherwise he simply wouldn’t need a spear to deal with Zhu Yan. All he would need is a thought to kill his enemy. Lin Ming’s spear hasn’t even bumped Zhu Yan, but Zhu Yan has still been affected. This point really looks like spear potential!”

As Ling Sen and Ta Ku were talking, Zhu Yan was once again fighting Lin Ming. Zhu Yan no longer used martial skill; he didn’t even use his magnificent and beautiful sword lights. All he used were simple, straightforward sword moves. However, even like this, he felt as if his sword was being pressed down by an invisible strength, and every stroke he made was restrained.

In contrast, Lin Ming’s moves were becoming increasingly fierce!

He was gathering his momentum!

Chapter 104 – Amazing Spear

Chapter 104 – Amazing Spear

…

…

…

This was the greatest harvest from the days that Lin Ming and Hong Xi sparred against each other. This was to use move after move, and gather one's momentum, and after accumulating all of the residual momentum, to have that last strike erupt out and sweep all away!

Lin Ming's spear seemed much slower than Zhu Yan. When Zhu Yan made three moves, Lin Ming only made one. But what was incredible was that Lin Ming's one spear was able to block all three of Zhu Yan's sword moves!

This made one have very contradictory feelings. Those martial artists whose cultivations were too shallow could not understand the complex mysteries and profound principles in these two young men's fight. They would only feel like Zhu Yan was making useless moves, and in every three moves he made, there might not even be one that was useful.

On the reserved seating area, a noble man over 30 years old was watching Zhu Yan and Lin Ming's fight, and shaking his head. "This Zhu Yan is just too mediocre. His sword moves are just too gaudy. All he has is looks without substance; it's not very practical. These kinds of sword moves look nice, but have too many flaws to connect. Ah Wei, what do you think?"

This noble himself was only a second-grade martial arts talent. He was over thirty years old, and was at the early Third Stage of Body Transformation. He had some small insights into martial artist, so he asked his guard this question.

“My Lord, Zhu Yan’s sword has indeed lost its light and sublime feeling. This subordinate does find it strange. The sword light that Zhu Yan had displayed before was truly swift and fierce. Even if it were this subordinate facing that sword light, I would not have full confidence to grasp it.”

This guard was also over 30 years old, and he was at the early Fifth Stage of Body Transformation. However when he saw Zhu Yan display his sword skills before, he could not help but acknowledge his skill. If he were against Zhu Yan, his assurance of winning would only be 30 or 40%.

“You cannot defend against that sword light?” The noble smiled, but thought otherwise in his heart. “Ah Wei, you think too little of yourself. These years in the Seven Profound Martial House, besides Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and a few others, the people there have been getting worse and worse with each generation. In the past, the martial arts of the Seven Profound Martial House were able to fight those a stage above them as if they were having a simple meal. But you just look at this Zhu Yan. If I remember correctly, he is in the top 30 rankings of the Ranking Stone, and the sword in his hand…” The noble was prepared to elaborate on a few more of these martial arts ‘insights’, when the smile on his face suddenly froze.

On the stage, Lin Ming and Zhu Yan’s fight had already reached the edge of the platform. As Lin Ming thrusted out his spear, Zhu Yan moved sideways to avoid. Because Lin Ming’s spear hit nothing, it continued thrusting until it hit a thick column at the edge of the stage.

He withdrew his spear, but at the same time, an incredible scene took place!

After being struck by Lin Ming’s spear, that thick stone column broke apart with an explosion from top to bottom!

Along with the crashing sounds, numerous stone fragments rolled down like peas, and finally turned to a small pile of rubble. This stone column was completely destroyed!

It was as if that stone column was held together by tofu!

“This… what is going on here?” The noble’s eyes were looking straight out. He had clearly seen a moment ago that Lin Ming’s thrust had not hit, and he had only withdrawn his spear.

But before he had withdrawn his spear, that spear had lightly scratched a spot on the surface, and that had actually caused the 20 feet high stone column to explode into a pile of crushed rocks. And the biggest crushed rock was only the size of a fist!

It was not only this noble, but everyone present, including Ling Sen, Ta Ku, Muyi, and other masters were all equally shocked. Some people even subconsciously rubbed their eyes, thinking that they had seen an illusion.

Was that really caused by a spear?

To crush a stone column was actually very easy. Many of the masters and experts present had this strength, but to have a spear do it to a stone column and have the biggest rubble piece only be the size of a fist, none of those present were able to achieve this!

Even Muyi could not. Although he could send out countless sword lights in a flash and cut the stone column apart, resulting in almost identical effects, his sword actually could not create such an effect with just a touch.

Even the normally stable Crown Prince had lost his composure as he saw these scene. “Teacher, this is… what kind of spear skill?”

The Crown Prince had a certain understanding of martial arts, but he had never seen a martial skill like this before.

Muyi shook his head. “Your Highness, I am not sure.”

As the last piece of crushed stone stopped rolling, the entire audience was silent at the Martial Stage. They were shocked and shaken by this scene.

But the various masters of the Seven Profound Martial House, like Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and several other old deacons, saw this pile of rubble and had a faint, blossoming suspicion in their hearts. Although it was reasonable, they did not even dare to believe this suspicion!

This skill, could it be…

Zhu Yan looked at this pile of rubble closely. His right hand gripped his sword tightly, and because of excessive force, his knuckles began to turn white!

"'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!' You've cultivated the 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist'!"

Zhu Yan had specially gone to the depository before to look at the martial skills that Lin Ming had chosen. Now, he finally understood the reason why Lin Ming was able to contain him. This was because he had managed to cultivate the 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist'!!!

That he could keep hold of Zhang Cang's saber with his empty palm, and use only that fist wind to push back Zhang Cang, was because he had relied on this 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist'!

Zhu Yan also suddenly understood that it was the true essence vibration that was described on the jade slip of the 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist'. This was what had caused his insides to lose their normal rhythm, and cause all of his body's blood to want to flow in reverse!

How could this Lin Ming possibly have managed to learn the 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist'?

"'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist'?"

Those present were stunned. For most of them, this 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist' was just an unknown cultivation method. And listening to such a vulgar name, it couldn't be any sort of amazing or powerful martial skill.

However, to the disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House, the name of ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ struck their hearts like a savage earthquake!

Before Lin Ming had become famous, most people had never heard of this incomplete martial skill. However, after he had defeated Zhang Cang and become the 62nd ranking disciple of the Ten Thousand Killing Array, the cultivation methods and martial skills he had chosen also became famous!

The pair ‘Foundation Spear Technique’ and ‘Foundation Movement Technique’ cultivation methods that normally no one would as for had suddenly become two of the most wanted manuals overnight. But the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ had been left behind. It was inevitable that people would see what was wrong with this cultivation method.

Low-grade Earth-step cultivation method. Loss rate, 70%!

Seeing these two points, even the fanatical fans of Lin Ming mania would not be so stupid or empty headed to choose this manual.

The ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ was only deemed as a low-grade Earth-step manual because it was lacking the most important beginning section, so its rank was unable to be judged by the elder who was responsible for ranking these cultivation methods. Nobody actually knew its true ranking.

It had to be known that the higher a cultivation method was, the more difficult it was to practice! If the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ was complete, it would be far more difficult to cultivate than Zhu Yan’s ‘Falling Star Slash’ and ‘Limitless Sunset Shine’! Without the heaven defying perception of a monstrous genius, it would be a ridiculous dream for anyone in the Body Transformation Stage to want to practice an Earth-step martial skill!

Much less, this martial skill was incomplete!

Not only was it incomplete, but the beginning of it was incomplete! For most martial skills, if the later sections were missing, the beginning portions could still be practiced.

But if the beginning was incomplete, then a martial skill would have no value at all. Otherwise, how would the Seven Profound Valleys possibly place an Earth-step cultivation method like the 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist' in the Seven Profound Martial House's outer pavilion? That place was simply a garbage disposal for their unwanted jade slips!

The people who saw Lin Ming choose the 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist' had disagreed with him. Even if it was a crazy fan of Lin Ming's, they had not thought he would perceive anything from meditating on this cultivation method.

But Lin Ming, even in this situation, had relied on this cultivation at the Third Stage of Body Transformation to learn this 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist', that not even the hidden and mysterious Xiantian experts of the Seven Profound Valleys were able to understand!

Was this really a human?

Throughout the entire history of the Sky Fortune Kingdom, or even the entire history of the Sky Spill Continent, this Lin Ming had the most terrifying perception to ever exist!

This fellow, he was simply the reincarnation of a heavenly god or devilish demon!

No wonder Lin Ming had made such astonishing progress in just a few short months. With this kind of godlike perception, any talent was simply floating clouds, just nothing but trash!

The Tenth Prince had already been made aware of what sort of manual this 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist' was; he did not need his subordinates to explain it to him. The Tenth Prince had enough achievements in the martial arts aspects to know what it meant to be able to cultivate such a skill.

He looked towards Lin Ming's form on the stage, and his face began to darken, becoming increasingly somber and terrible.

He had not thought that he had underestimated Lin Ming! This young man was actually terrifying to such a degree!

The Tenth Prince's heart had a faint premonition. If he truly became enemies with Lin Ming, and was unable to annihilate him before he grew, then Lin Ming would become the biggest barrier on his road to snatching the throne!

As the fight had progressed to this stage, victory or defeat had already become secondary. It was possible that even if Lin Ming lost to Zhu Yan in this battle, his reputation would even be more resounding!

It would spread throughout the entire capital!

Facing Lin Ming who was like a reincarnation of some divine being, even though Zhu Yan's heart of martial arts was strong, he had completely lost the courage to fight. Zhu Yan knew that even if he defeated Lin Ming today, in just a few months, it would be reversed and he would be defeated!

He had annoyed an enemy which he absolutely should not have stirred up!

"Kill him!!!!"

Zhu Yan's heart suddenly gave birth to this idea!

Before Lin Ming grew, he had to kill him. This was the only solution!

However, to assassinate someone in the Seven Profound Martial House was too tough and too difficult. Moreover, once they were discovered, regardless of whom it was, the Seven Profound Martial House would take their life as recompense!

On the contrary, if he killed someone during a battle, even though it was serious and flagrant violation of the Seven Profound Martial Houses regulations, it was not a crime worthy of death. After all, in matches where both parties’ strengths were similar, there were occasions that could cause death.

Chapter 105 – Torrential River Rope!

Chapter 105 – Torrential River Rope!

…

…

…

"Even though I will be punished, it is far better than being surpassed by Lin Ming in the future!"

"Moreover, a dead genius is no longer a genius. The Seven Profound Martial House will not kill me over someone who is dead. With the Tenth Prince secretly helping me, the worst that will happen is I will be dismissed from the Martial House and banished or exiled to the frontier."

But to Zhu Yan, being banished didn't mean anything anymore. As for being dismissed from the Martial House, although it was a pity, it was absolutely worth it as long as he could kill Lin Ming!

This was the only chance he had to assassinate Lin Ming!

But, did he really have the ability to kill Lin Ming?

In his heart, Zhu Yan lacked confidence.

"I still have my strongest martial skill. But, this martial skill has an enormous toll on the body. I can usually only display 60% of its full might, but if I recklessly stimulate myself to force out 100% of its abilities, I might damage my meridians. If I damage these meridians, it will be difficult to connect and open them, and become a great barrier when I want to break through to the Pulse Condensation Period. But since it's come to this point, I have no other choices left.

Zhu Yan's face flashed with ferociousness as he triggered all of the true essence in his body to the limit. The Scarlet Flare sword in his hand began to issue out a shrill, keening sound.

"Zhu Yan's going to go all out!"

"What a terrifying true essence force! I'm afraid even a martial artist at the Bone Forging stage does not have such terrifying true essence!"

After everyone realized that Lin Ming had perceived the secrets of the 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist' through meditation, no one doubted Zhu Yan's strength again. That Zhu Yan could exchange blows for such a long time with a monstrous genius like Lin Ming was testament to his extraordinary skill.

Lin Ming faintly smiled as he felt a heavy murderous intent emanating from Zhu Yan. 'You want to go all out? Then I'll follow you!'

From the very start of the fight until now, Lin Ming had been gathering his potential!

Even though he had been using his full strength with every strike, he had been saving his momentum!

To constantly use moves and save momentum; this was the key to gathering one's potential in a fight!

Now all of Lin Ming's potential was poured into the Penetrating Rainbow spear, waiting for this last, final strike!

"This fight today, is the most important fight in my life so far. And Zhu Yan, he is also the most important opponent in my life so far. In the Seven Profound Martial House's entrance examination's Dream Trial, he was the cause for the flaw in my heart. Today, I and Zhu Yan will put forth our strongest moves, and I will defeat him to complete my perfect heart of martial arts!”

As Lin Ming walked forward step by heavy step, the hard floor tiles underneath him cracked and exploded into flying shards. Lin Ming’s right arm was flat and smooth, and lay upon Penetrating Rainbow. This was the most basic spear stance, ‘Iron Bridge Blocks the River’.

Yet in Lin Ming’s hands, even such a simple stance gave off a boundless feeling of vigor. The dark purple Penetrating Rainbow was calm as if it were a cast iron statue. It was like a rope that stretched across a torrential river. No matter how the river flowed and surged, it was unable to shake that rope a single inch.

Unmovable no matter the force, ‘Iron Bridge Blocks the River’!

“It’s the ‘Foundation Spear Technique’ stance, ‘Iron Bridge Blocks the River’!

“Heavens! I finally get to see Senior Apprentice Brother Lin Ming’s ‘Iron Bridge Blocks the River’ in action again!” A little girl half a year younger than Lin Ming clenched her fists in excitement. Her face was ruddy with joy. She had just entered the Human Hall.

To many of the lower disciples in the Human Hall, Lin Ming and his ‘Iron Bridge Blocks the River’ stance were a legend!

Many of the lower disciples from the Human Hall came from a humble birth and background, and their worth was meager. In the Seven Profound Martial House, because they were the most basic and lowest of disciples, they did not have any nice cultivation methods to choose from. Although they had the glory and honor of being a disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House, they did not entertain high hopes for the future.

However, Lin Ming, who had also came from a humble birth, had used the ‘Foundation Spear Technique’ to defeat Zhang Cang, a master of the Earth Hall! And he had used the ‘Iron Bridge Blocks the River’ stance!

This was a miracle!

In Lin Ming’s hands, the simple, minimalist ‘Iron Bridge Blocks the River’ stance had become tranquil and immutable like a mountain! Any magnificent or exquisite martial skill was broken by a single spear!

A lone strength to shatter 10,000 styles!

The only person in all of the Seven Profound Martial House who could use the ‘Foundation Spear Technique’ to resist Zhu Yan’s finishing blow was Lin Ming!

Facing Lin Ming’s ‘Iron Bridge Blocks the River’, Zhu Yan’s complexion became filled with unprecedented dignity.

This was the most important match in his entire life. Even if Lin Ming used the ‘Foundation Spear Technique’, he would not look down on a single fine hair of his. Against such a monstrous genius of perception, any cultivation method in his hands could be turned into a divine miracle!

“Hah!” Zhu Yan shouted. The silk clothes that covered his upper body began to burn up in flames from the searing air waves that were condensed by his true essence. The charred fragments of his clothes fluttered down to the floor.

Zhu Yan ripped off his robe like a slip of paper and tore it to shreds. He revealed a toned, muscular upper body, but because of the high amount of true essence that converged on him, his skin was red like a fiery demon.

The Scarlet Flame sword in his hands combusted into a brilliant, shimmering flame. Zhu Yan could not yet feel the fiery true essence damaging his meridians, but the pain was like countless flame needles that gripped him. However, this pain had actually filled Zhu Yan with a bloodthirsty excitement.

“Die!”

Zhu Yan's still body suddenly soared upwards into the sky. Whistling flames in the air formed together into phantasmal illusions. Zhu Yan gripped his sword with both hands and lifted it high above his head. His spine curved like a drawn bow. Fire true essence began to gather all around Zhu Yan. It condensed together and turned into a blood-red lotus that began to quietly bloom in the air…

"Red Lotus Purgatory!"

The entire space seemed to flash black for a moment. This strange red lotus swallowed that dark light, and it was as if it contained not just true essence, but had also gathered the blazing sun!

Facing Zhu Yan's killing move, at that moment, Lin Ming's mind was calm like water. His ears had lost all outside noise, whether it was the sound of burning flames, or the cheers and shouts of the audience.

In his vision, he only saw Zhu Yan. In his heart, there was only the Penetrating Rainbow!

All of his momentum had gathered into Penetrating Rainbow. The strong true essence violently vibrated. Lin Ming thrusted out his spear, and it was like throwing down a mountain!

Bang!

Lin Ming's spear and Zhu Yan's 'Red Lotus Purgatory' frantically collided. There was a loud, deafening detonation like a rumbling thunderbolt. That intense collision of true essence sparked a fierce shockwave, along with a 'ka ka ka' sound as the Martial Stage was destroyed. Large broken pieces of tiles flew off everywhere in the air.

Peng!

A silhouette wrapped in crimson flames flew outwards and loudly hit a column on the Martial Stage. Along with a breaking sound, the stone column was smashed apart from the center!

This silhouette was Zhu Yan. At this moment his entire body was bathed in blood. He was unconscious on the ground, life or death unknown.

And Lin Ming was not feeling good. He was injured in the impact of that terrifying strike, and he had flown backwards several dozen feet before using Penetrating Rainbow to steady himself in the air and fall on the ground with the support of the spear shaft.

His blood began to roil, and he almost spat out blood, but by revolving the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’, he was just able to press it down.

“What a ferocious move. If I had not learned to gather my momentum and set all of it aside for a final blow, then just that move a moment ago would have defeated me, the best case was both of us being wounded! The aftermath of the impact broke through my protection of vibrating true essence and only almost made me cough blood. This was thanks to my true essence from the Large Success in Viscera Training, otherwise that strike would have injured my internal organs and caused me to be severely wounded.”

“Zhu Yan’s last move had gone all out and overdrawn his strength. His injuries this time will not be light.”

…

Zi zi zi…

As the fragments of flames still burned, the entire audience was dead silent.

This was the pinnacle of battle! Even two peak Bone Forging martial artists could not be so intense!

Zhu Yan was already a top-tier talent, but Lin Ming had actually jumped up half a realm to defeat him!

“Did Zhu Yan die?”

“That last move of of Zhu Yan’s was an absolutely desperate one with his life on the line. ‘Red Lotus Purgatory’ is not a martial skill Zhu Yan can use. He has overdrawn his true essence.”

“Overdrawing true essence will harm one’s cultivation. For Zhu Yan to do that in order to win this match, his obsession runs too deep. But even so, Zhu Yan was defeated. This Lin Ming is truly terrifying!”

There were many masters and experts present; they had naturally seen how the final fight had played out.

Even several elders of the Martial House were present. They had seen the murderous killing intent contained in Zhu Yan’s final move.

“I find it strange. Even though Lin Ming’s perception is good, his martial talent is bad. It should be impossible for him to progress so quickly, and yet in these last two months his cultivation has leapt up an entire realm. How was this possible?”

“This… seems to be because Lin Ming has comprehended some kind of martial intent.”

“Martial intent? What’s that?”

“Well… I have only heard about it. I don’t know the specifics, but it should be powerful.”

Two of the low-level Human Hall disciples were having a casual conversation; however their conversation had been overheard by one of the top 50 disciples of the Ranking Stone. His eyes immediately widened, “What did you just say? Martial… martial intent? Lin Ming had comprehended a martial intent?”

“Uh, yes.” That low-order disciple said with a look of bewilderment.

“Who told you that!?”

That Heavenly Abode disciple was suddenly all excited; this made the low-order disciple feel a bit of fear. Facing a top 50 ranking disciple of the Heavenly Abode, it was impossible for them not to feel pressured.

“This… this matter was said by the deacon of the Icy Pond Waterfall, Senior Apprentice Brother Xie Dong…”

“Xie Dong…” The Heavenly Abode disciple gulped. Although Xie Dong had not reached the Pulse Condensation Period, he was a deacon who had worked at the Seven Profound Martial House for many years. His experience was vast, and it was impossible for him to be so wrong.

This Lin Ming, had actually managed to comprehend a martial intent!

The perception of a monstrous genius, a pure and strong heart of martial arts that was a cut above everyone else, and he also had a martial intent!

It was just too terrifying!

At this time, the medical personnel of the Seven Profound Martial House hurried onstage to apply medicine to Zhu Yan. But Lin Ming had already stepped down from the Martial Stage. His true essence had already been depleted from the fight, and at present his combat strength had fallen by several levels. He might not even be able to hold off a normal Third Stage of Body Transformation martial artist.

But still, there was a hidden aura on Lin Ming’s body that emanated. Along with his formidable strength and monstrous perception he had just displayed, this made those people looking at him feel bursts of pressure.

This was the dread that came from seeing a powerhouse.

When Lin Ming stepped down, several of those nearby pulled back. Even the martial artists that had been famous for a long time stepped made way with respect. And those low-order disciples who had idolized him, only worshipped him Lin Ming with more fanaticism.

“Mister Lin Ming! Congratulations!” Crown Prince Yang Lin stood up from afar and warmly greeted him. Among his words was just the right amount of veneration. This was the respect he demonstrated to a powerhouse, and had disregarded his status.

Chapter 106 – Rise to Fame!

Chapter 106 – Rise to Fame!

…

…

…

"Crown Prince, Your Highness. Mister Muyi." Lin Ming greeted with a smile.

"Haha, Little Brother Lin. Your growth is more and more astonishing!" Muyi's heart filled with many emotions. He had thought that he already overestimated Lin Ming, but now he discovered that Lin Ming kept exceeding his expectations time and time again to create miracles.

"Mister Lin Ming. If you do not mind, how about coming to my palace. I will host a banquet for you as a welcoming reception." Yang Lin said with warm enthusiasm.

Lin Ming let loose a light breath and said, "I'm sorry Your Highness, but in the fight just now I exhausted myself too much and must take some time to restore myself. I also attained some faint insights in this battle and would like to go back to digest them. I must decline the Crown Prince's kindness with thanks. In a few days, I will certainly pay a personal visit."

"Mm. That is also good. When Mister Lin Ming decides to pay a visit, send a sound transmitting talisman to inform me and I shall wait patiently for you."

…

Tenth Prince Yang Zhen watched the Crown Prince and Lin Ming speaking to each other from a distance, and his face began to darken.

At this point, Yang Zhen received a message via true essence. “Your Highness, Lin Ming has accepted the Crown Prince’s invitation.”

“Mm.”

“Your Highness, Zhu Yan’s wounds are too severe. We must take out the Millennium Stone Milk otherwise Zhu Yan’s internal injuries will leave behind scars that will affect his future cultivation.” Said one of the medical personnel that had treated Zhu Yan. His last move had overdrawn his true essence, created damages within his body and destroyed parts of the meridians that hadn’t developed yet. In addition, he was struck by Lin Ming and sent flying. The degree to which he was injured could be imagined. The medical personnel of the Seven Profound Martial House naturally used high quality medicines, but these medicines could not actually be regarded as the best.

The Tenth Prince shook his head and said, “Don’t use it.”

Early on he had expected that this fight would be exceptionally intense. This was because Zhu Yan And Lin Ming had a grudge between them, and this fight would have no pulled punches; it would be normal for one of them to have severe injuries. Therefore he brought a special type of wondrous and precious medicine that could cure wounds, called the Millennium Stone Milk. This was found in the Millennium Limestone Cave, and flowed from a stone stalactite that contained the aura and spirit of the world. It took over a dozen years to gather a small vial of this liquid. Each drop was worth nearly 10,000 gold taels!

This stone milk could not only bring back those near death, but it also had advantages for the cultivation of martial artists!

The Tenth Prince had originally planned to give this to Lin Ming if he had been injured seriously enough to affect his cultivation. If he used this Millennium Stone Milk to win over Lin Ming, he believed that Lin Ming would not refuse.

After all, the one who had a grudge with Lin Ming was Zhu Yan. The Tenth Prince had neither bitter hatred nor enmity towards him. The Tenth Prince thoroughly believed that the strongest bonds between humans were not things like friendship, affection or love, but solely personal benefit.

But now, the one who had been severely wounded was Zhu Yan. Not only that, but Lin Ming had displayed an unprecedented and monstrous perception. This made the Tenth Prince feel a very heavy headache; he simply didn't know how to deal with Lin Ming.

To assassinate him, he dared not and could not!

And winning over; he could not win him over!

If he showed good will, they would not appreciate his kindness!

Moreover, his situation with Zhu Yan was tricky. If he continued to support Zhu Yan, then without a doubt, he would be standing opposite to Lin Ming.

This was something that the Tenth Prince absolutely did not want to see.

Sky Fortune Kingdom was a country that advocated the use of force. Lin Ming represented not only his own strength, but the glory and prestige of all martial artists. He was a genius of a century within the Seven Profound Martial House. This title was too amazing for a martial artist!

If the Sky Fortune Kingdom's martial artists saw that this person had pledged his loyalty to the Crown Prince, then where would they look, what would they think?

If he could discard Zhu Yan and trade him for Lin Ming, the Tenth Prince would absolutely 100% do this.

The key however, was that even if he discarded Zhu Yan, Lin Ming may not help him.

This gave the Tenth Prince a headache!

This Zhu Yan, he gave him a lot of trouble!

Bidding the Crown Prince farewell, Lin Ming immediately went to pay a visit to Hong Xi. Hong Xi's guidance was very important in defeating Zhu Yan this time. If he did not have Hong Xi teaching him the training method of piercing leaves, then his attack speed would have been a lot slower. He also would not have known how to save his momentum during a fight. At Zhu Yan's final strike, he might not necessarily have been able to hold it down.

"This fight played out so beautifully!" Hong Xi did not begrudge his appreciation of the fight.

"Thanks to Instructor's teachings."

"Haha, this is not because of my teachings. If you had a different instructor, you could also have won. I heard that you have some new comprehensions?"

"Mm. About the heart of martial arts."

"Good! Your results today are essential to your heart of martial arts. Hurry up and go back to ponder them; don't uselessly talk about it to me here."

"Okay then Instructor. I will go first."

…

After Lin Ming left, the people gathered at the Martial Stage began to disperse. Some martial artists had been discussing the fight with excitement. That single spear touch on the stone column had caused that 20 feet high stone column to turn into rumble from top to bottom! And the 'Foundation Spear Technique' had managed to defeat the 'Red Lotus Purgatory'!

These scenes were enough to make those martial artists exhilarated and excited.

His Large Success of the Third Stage had the strength of someone at the Bone Forging stage. If Lin Ming reached the Bone Forging boundary, how would it be then?

And most importantly, he was only 15 years old! He had been at the Seven Profound Martial House for only a mere two months!

Before then, Lin Ming had come from a humble birth and did not have many resources he possibly could have used. If he had the key cultivation methods and resources of the Seven profound Martial House, then his achievements would have been unimaginable. If he could keep this rate of grown, then that really would go against heaven's will!

Before, there were people that had paid attention to Lin Ming. After all, he was the first place new disciple. But at that time, most of them had thought that this was only because Lin Ming's luck was good, and he had managed to eat some valuable material. But now, they knew that Lin Ming had the unprecedented perception of a monster! He had depended on his cultivation at the Third Stage of Body Transformation to cultivate an Earth-step a cultivation method, and moreover, that cultivation method was incomplete!

With such a genius born, along with the sixth-grade talent Qin Xingxuan, this generation might be the most amazing one in all of Sky Fortune Kingdom's martial history.

The martial artists were excited, but those noblemen and dignitaries were more concerned with what Lin Ming politically represented. Without a doubt, Lin Ming would rise. Becoming a super master was only a question of time.

And a super master had immense weight and influence within the Sky Fortune Kingdom!

For instance, Muyi was a visiting official of the Marshal's Quarters and at the same time he was the teacher of the Crown Prince. He had a high and lofty status within Sky Fortune City. Even if the emperor saw Muyi, he would have to treat him with a certain amount of respect. Not only did Muyi not need to bow, but he also didn't need to be asked to sit.

Although a Houtian master did not have the strength or power to kill an army of 100,000, they were able to go in and out of fortified places without any resistance at all. It was not an exaggeration to say that if there was not a Houtian master at the Royal Palace, then the emperor might not be far from death. Because of the frequent wars between nations, it was possible that the emperor would be assassinated by the enemy masters!

Lin Ming was very likely to become such an amazing character like this in the future. This was someone that all of those dignitaries present had to woo and curry favor with. In fact, many of them were already calculating how to show good will to Lin Ming.

…

As everyone departed the Martial Stage, the news of the fight began to rapidly spread. Not only did Lin Ming become Sky Fortune City's most dazzling and splendid star, but this news had already spread over the nation, such as 'a genius only seen once a century at the Seven Profound Martial House', 'the future Sky Fortune Kingdom's number one master', and other such titles. The overwhelming blessings and aura of fame were all focused on Lin Ming!

15 years old, entered into the top 30 rankings of the Seven Profound Martial House's Heavenly Abode!

Cultivation at the Third Stage of Body Transformation, with strength comparable to a martial artist at the Bone Forging stage!

Had perceived an incomplete Earth-step martial skill by himself, and had integrated into his own spear skills!

It was even reported that Lin Ming had comprehended the extremely rare martial intent!

Each of these achievements could be considered legends by themselves, but Lin Ming had actually gathered all of these legends unto himself. He was at the height of power among the Sky Fortune Kingdom's martial arts world!

The local storytellers would write Lin Ming's famous history into their stories. In these stories, the storytellers would improvise and give exaggerated accounts to increase the hype. They even said that when Lin Ming was born, a brilliant sunset glow covered the sky. He had climbed a mountain when he was seven to capture a tiger. When he was nine he went swimming in the sea to seize sharks. Although these stories were all blown ridiculously out of proportion, the audience listened with gusto. After all, things like storytelling were naturally more exaggerated, and gave people a fresh feeling.

Suddenly, Lin Ming had become the idol among countless young martial artists, especially those who had come from a humble birth like he had. Who said you could not cultivate if you didn't have money? Lin Ming was their example, Lin Ming was their goal!

And In Green Mulberry City, as news arrived to the Lin Family by a sound transmitting talisman, all of the Lin Family seethed with excitement.

In Sky Fortune Kingdom, there was great importance attached to family honor! A family of heroes and masters, even if declining, was respected by the world.

For instance, Marshal Qin Xiao's family. Even several hundred years later, if the Qin Family was on the decline, they would still be a family that had produced an ancient hero, and in the family's blood would flow a hero's blood.

The Lin Family was also like this. There was not a single family that didn't wish that their family would have such a day where their family would flourish by their own hands.

Before, Lin Ming had obtained the title of first place among the new disciples in the Seven Profound Martial House, and this was already the great honor. It was like those scholars that went and became officials, bringing honor to their ancestors.

However, compared to the miracle that Lin Ming had created, this reputation of 'Seven Profound Martial House's number one disciple' was nothing at all!

To be the peerless talent that hadn't been seen in the several hundred years of history at the Seven Profound Martial House along with other glorious titles, was enough to have the Lin Family be recorded in the annals of Sky Fortune Kingdom's history!

If Lin Ming became a legend in the future, then the Lin Family would also become the family of a hero, and would be admired by the world.

And the one Lin Ming had defeated was the Zhu Family's number one talent, Zhu Yan. This caused the Lin Family who had been constantly suppressed by the Zhu Family, to feel proud and elated!

On the same day, everywhere at the Lin Family was decorated with lanterns and rainbow streamers. They held a large banquet inviting all guests to attend and celebrate. This was the most important day in the entirety of the Lin Family's history. The head of the Lin Family burnt incense and prayed to the ancestors. All these celebrations and ceremonies were more grand and wonderful than the New Year's celebration.

The Lin Family servants all obtained a heavy red packaged filled with money. The rice farmers who leased land from the Lin Family were all exempted from rent for three years. These people naturally knew why they obtained such luxurious gifts from the Lin Family. Lin Ming's name had already spread throughout the entirety of Green Mulberry City.

…

At this time, Lin Ming was meditating on a sea jade platform at the Seven Profound Martial Houses. He was unaware of everything happened outside, as he was immersed in comprehending the faint feeling he had in his heart of martial arts. When he had fought with Zhu Yan, Lin Ming's heart of martial arts had improved a bit.

Chapter 107 – The Pass of Desire

Chapter 107 – The Pass of Desire

…

…

…

With Lin Ming's current fame in Sky Fortune City, there were many major powers that wanted to show their good will to Lin Ming. However, because of the regulations and customs of the Seven Profound Martial House, they could not disturb Lin Ming's cultivation unless he left the Martial House or contacted them on his own initiative.

Under the jade stage, the lake was tranquil and shimmering deep green, as if it were a huge liquid emerald. As it was late in autumn, the rows of weeping willows surrounding the lake were already a dry, golden yellow. As the gentle autumn wind blew across the lake surface, the leaves swirled into the air like a golden moth before fluttering gently downwards. What was surprising though was that there was not a single leaf that fell into the lake.

Lin Ming sat cross-legged on the sea jade platform. This platform was the illusory magic array that was used in the entrance examination's Dream Trial. It was only open during the beginning of spring and fall when the two exams were conducted. However, it was not the start of fall anymore, so it was closed to the Martial House disciples.

However, Lin Ming's status was special now, so he was specially permitted to train and feel his heart of martial arts.

During the entrance examination of the Seven Profound Martial House, when Lin Ming was in the sea jade platform's dream land, he found that there was a flaw in his heart from the Pass of Desire. In the Pass of Desire, Lin Ming had seen a Lan Yunyue, ten years older. She had been exquisitely elegant, and humming a nursery song. She had been coaxing their child to sleep. When Lin Ming had seen this scene, he had nearly lost himself in the illusion.

Lin Ming knew that he no longer had any connection to Lan Yunyue. Even when he would pursue the pinnacle of martial arts in the future, his path would no longer cross with Lan Yunyue's. But Lan Yunyue's betrayal was still a knot in his heart.

This so-called 'knot' was a place in the heart that the mind could not reason with. In a martial artist's journey, they not only cultivated their bodies, but they also cultivated their hearts and minds. They had to be true to themselves, and follow their desires, whether it was love or hate.

Otherwise, what was the point? If they tortured themselves to cultivate, and practiced martial arts day and night, and felt the desolation and loneliness at the same time, and yet had to bear everything in life patiently even as they suffered countless humiliations, then what exactly was the point of practicing martial arts? Why not just be a normal, common person?

A martial artist had a proud heart. They would not keep things in their heart such as losing an important contest or fight. Things like that could not frustrate their proud hearts. However, there were some things that would, such as when Lan Yunyue had betrayed Lin Ming and followed Zhu Yan. Such a malicious act had severely impacted Lin Ming's pure heart, and no matter how strong and clear his heart of martial arts was, it would inevitably leave behind a 'knot' in the heart.

This was what the common folk spoke of when they mentioned 'spirit'. As long as the spirit was smooth, then they would have clear thoughts and ease of mind. Their true essence circulation would not be impeded and their meridians would be able to link together easier.

On the other hand, if their 'spirit' was bad, then their mind would be blocked, and they would be depressed. Not only would their true essence not move, but it would be trapped in their body and become an anger that would psychologically attack them. Not only would they not be able to cultivate, but they would also damage their own health. If their arrogant heart was too strong, then they might even go mad!

If their thoughts were clouded and their hearts uncomfortable, the cultivation of a martial artist would easily be restrained. During the essential period of breaking through a bottleneck, the 'knot' would change into a demon that haunted their hearts. This would cause the martial artist to fail, and become forever immersed with their obsession before finally turning into an idiot.

There was only one solution to clear this 'knot', and that was to rely on their own strength to destroy the knot and cut off the evil spirits in the heart. Their minds would be clear, their breath smooth, and true essence would easily flow!

For instance, like in the competition, Zhu Yan had been defeated by Lin Ming. He had lost his dignity and also sustained a serious injury. His meridians had been damaged and it would affect his future efforts to break into the Pulse Condensation Period.

That event would cause Zhu Yan's proud and arrogant heart of martial arts to be severely frustrated. Even if he wanted to stand up and recover his pride, hiring an assassin to kill Lin Ming was useless. He had to one day rely on his own strength to defeat Lin Ming, and overcome these demons in his heart.

However, this was already impossible for Zhu Yan. Not only did he experience a severe wound that would seriously influence his future cultivation, but even if he were completely cured, later on the disparity between him and Lin Ming would only increase.

In contrast, Lin Ming had defeated Zhu Yan at his strongest state and cut off this 'knot' in his heart. His heart of martial arts would only improve yet again, and although he could not achieve a perfect level, the time it took to pass the Dream Trial was reduced again. This time, it only took half an incense stick of time.

This time, he only needed half the time of Ling Sen.

As he awoke from the martial arts dream world, he closed his eyes and recalled what he had experienced in the Pass of Desire. Lin Ming's cheeks were an odd color. He no longer dreamed of Lan Yunyue again, but had instead dreamed of Qin Xingxuan. Not only that, but he had also dreamed of several girls that he didn't have too many impressions of. For instance, the talented, young inscription girl, Wang Yuhan, who he had met at the Inscription Association. There was also the cunning, rude, and totally unreasonable elder senior-sister who he had met at the Zither Department when he was looking up materials.

However, as soon as these two girls had appeared in Lin Ming's dream land they had instantly disappeared.

Lin Ming now knew that the Pass of Desire didn't necessarily show women that he liked in his heart, but also those that were capable of arousing the latent desire in his heart.

Desire didn't include only love, but also lust. A human's nature was that of an animal. An animal only existed for two goals; one was to survive, the other was to procreate.

To survive, eat, and reproduce; that was lust. Therefore the ancient scripts had recorded that the nature of man was food and s*x.

This instinct was imprinted in the very bones of every living human. Therefore the heart had evolved a wide range of potential desires. Some desires were suppressed by one's own truth of morality. The Pass of Desire was able to find these infinite lusts of the heart and magnify them, and finally cause someone to be lost inside of them.

As they say, there was no man in the vastness of heaven and earth who had no wants or desires.

Many martial artists practiced martial arts to satisfy their desire. Because they strove towards this goal, their martial arts cultivation would leap ten thousand miles every day. However, after they had fulfilled their desires, their strength of cultivating martial arts would plummet.

This was always a contradictory process.

There were martial arts sages, who in order to overcome the pass of passion, had even castrated themselves. There were certain marvelous and ancient skill manuals that had written in their introduction, ‘In order to cultivate this art, one must first castrate themselves’, and so on. This was because in order to reach the Large Success stage of these cultivation methods, they had to overcome the pass of passion. But if their heart held any lust, then their demons would overcome them and they would perish in the beautiful dream land, becoming a useless idiot.

Because of these reasons, some of the eunuchs of the palace had rapid advancement when they cultivated martial arts. This was because they no longer had that lustful desire, and their energy would be locked into their body and converted into strength and true essence.

Lin Ming was aware of these reasons, and did not persist in the Pass of Desire. After all, from ancient times until now, there was never a martial artist who did not have even a tiny flaw in their heart of martial arts.

As he peacefully meditated on the sea jade platform, Lin Ming revolved the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ and quickly entered into the ethereal martial intent state. His bond passed into a state of unconsciousness, and the true essence in Lin Ming’s body began to circulate on its own instinct. Its speed began to run faster and faster, moving in lines that were more and more perfect.

Lin Ming was observing from an outsider’s perspective. He felt that as the true essence flowed in his body, it was also much quicker than before!

Lin Ming was indescribably happy. Because of the improvement in his heart of martial arts, his ethereal martial intent had also stepped up a level, and the cultivation speed was enhanced even more. Like this, he would not too far away from reaching Small Success of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’s’ second-level.

With one breath, Lin Ming let his true essence revolve by itself for three hours. Finally, Lin Ming opened his eyes. The day was getting late. He suddenly remembered the Crown Prince’s invitation, so he lit a sound transmitting talisman and sent it to Muyi…

…

Sky Fortune City, the Crown Prince's Palace

At this time, the sun had just set, and the Crown Prince's palace front door was happily covered with decorations. A stream of luxurious horse-drawn carriages had formed a long line. All the celebrities and important figures of Sky Fortune City had gathered in their splendid attire at the Crown Prince's palace. The floor was covered with hundreds of meters of red carpet, and there were also hundreds of beautiful maidservants that carried around fine food, refreshments, and fruits that they shuttled between the numerous visitors. Exquisite and playful music flowed through every corner of every hall.

Today, the Crown Prince Yang Lin had hosted a grand banquet at his palace. Although the Crown Prince had said this part was only a simple congregation, all those with a discerning eye knew that this banquet and great political significance. This was because this banquet's main guest was the rising star Lin Ming, who was in the limelight of all of Sky Fortune City.

For this banquet, the Crown Prince's palace had done careful preparations and cleaning. The garden was refurbished, and the blue stone tile floor was spotless as if it were just cleaned. It was bright and appealing. The palace had also filled the fountain springs with clear water. The blue water sparkled under the moonlight as it shot up; it was truly beautiful.

"The Southern Martial Marquis has arrived!" As soon as the herald announced this, a fat, middle-aged man wearing a brocade gown walked into the main hall of the Crown Prince's palace with his entourage.

Although this man appeared bloated and fat, his steps were steady and his breath was even. His lazy gaze occasionally gave off a feeling that made the hearts of those watching him palpitate.

This middle-aged man was one of the ten great generals of Sky Fortune Kingdom, the Southern Military Marquis. The Sky Fortune Kingdom had several dozen generals in total.

However, those that had genuine power and authority within the palm of their hands, and also had enormous prestige and fame within the army, were only ten people. These ten people were given noble titles. The Southern Martial Marquis was the youngest of these ten. This year, he was 69 years old.

“Southern Martial Marquis, he also came?”

Yang Lin heard this announcement and felt a great happiness surge in his heart! Although he had delivered an invitation to the Southern Martial Marquis, it was actually only a show of good etiquette; He did not actually believe that the Southern Martial Marquis would show up.

Although Yang Lin was Crown Prince in name, but as an official, his power and influence were far inferior to the Tenth Prince Yang Zhen.

When the elderly emperor died and the throne would change, it was unknown as to whose hands the throne would fall into. This was the critical period of time when people would choose who to support. If they chose the right person, their life would be filled with a lifetime of wealth and success. But with the wrong person, they would crash into the abyss and be beyond redemption.

However, the true attitudes of those people were elusive. The two princes mostly had their own trusted subordinates, or were like Zhu Yan and had been inextricably tied to Tenth Prince by their family. Most of the others already had enough status to avoid this conflict and adopt a moderate approach.

They had already rapidly advanced their careers and simply did not need to partake in the game of throne changes to increase their fortunes. To adopt a moderate stance and not favor any party was the most sensible option. No matter who came out on top, their status would not be affected.

The military was especially so. Since ancient times, if the military intervened in the battle for the throne, then it would become an extremely sensitive matter. Therefore the ten great generals normally did not attend the banquets held by the princes. This was because there would be spies in the banquets who would be reporting on them.

Although the Tenth Prince did not assume that all those that attended the banquet were partial to the Crown Prince, he would remember these people. In the future, if he won the struggle and seized the throne, even if these people did not intervene, he would not trust them after he mounted the throne. There were a limited number of positions to be a royal courtier of the emperor. The number of talents and geniuses would be unlimited. Who would not entrust these heavy responsibilities to their own trusted subordinates?

Therefore, that the Southern Martial Marquis had come today, was really a happy surprise for Yang Lin.

However the Crown Prince knew that the reason the Southern Martial Marquis had come today was mostly because of Lin Ming. He wanted to meet Lin Ming and get to know him. The Southern Martial Marquis was also once a disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House. When he was young, he was also known as a martial nut. He certainly would want to know someone like Lin Ming.

“This Lin Ming, he has not grown up and yet already has such rallying appeal. If he is willing to help me, my succession to the throne will be much smoother.”

Chapter 108 – Grand Banquet

Chapter 108 – Grand Banquet

…

…

…

"This Lin Ming, he has not grown up and yet already has such rallying appeal. If he is willing to help me, my succession to the throne will be much smoother."

Thinking of this, Yang Lin began to worry somewhat over the outcome. Before, Lin Ming and Zhu Yan had hostilities against each other, and fearing that Lin Ming would be framed and assassinated, thought that perhaps he might serve as his backer. But after not seeing him for a month, Lin Ming's strength had grown too quickly!

With his growing influence, he now had the support of the Seven Profound Martial House; there was no one would dare to easily move against him. He would certainly become a grand character in the future that wielded great power. With such capital in his hands, he didn't need to attach himself to anyone.

"Haha, it's been awhile since I've seen Your Highness the Crown Prince." As soon as the Southern Martial Marquis saw Yang Lin, he gave a hearty laugh and a ceremonial bow. Although he did not need to accept the Crown Prince's invitation, if he saw the Crown Prince, he still had to give proper greeting due to customs. After all, the Southern Martial Marquis was still only a marquis. Above that was a duke, and above the duke was a prince. But the Crown Prince's status, was also above a prince.

Even though there were so many different levels of nobility, a title was just a title; it had no real power and was only nominal. The influence of a person in the Sky Fortune Kingdom had little to do with their title, but was affected by their position, strength, and military authority. The Southern Martial Marquis held enormous influence among the army; even Yang Lin had to greet him politely.

Yang Lin rushed up to the Southern Martial Marquis and hurriedly said, “Southern Martial Marquis, don’t be a stranger. Feel free to enjoy this grand banquet that I’ve set up There is no need to be overly courteous, the Southern Martial Marquis is one the ten great generals of my Sky Fortune Kingdom and whose cultivation is at the Pulse Condensation Period. This Prince has always wanted to be good friends with the honorable Southern Martial Marquis. For the Southern Martial Marquis to come here so unexpectedly, this prince is very surprised!

“”Haha, I have been busy with military affairs these past few days, but I could not shirk Your Highness’ invitation.” The Southern Martial Marquis casually explained. Yang Lin would of course not pursue the matter, and welcome the Southern Martial Marquis with a seat of honor.

“Army Major of Sky Fortune City’s Royal Guard Forces, Lord Wang, has arrived!”

The herald announced another arrival. As soon as he heard this, Yang Lin’s eyebrows rose. The leader of Sky Fortune City’s royal guard forces, Wang Gan?

That sly old fox, he also came? Yang Lin was startled. Wang Gan’s arrival had even surprised him more than the Southern Martial Marquis. Before this he hadn’t even delivered a written invitation to Wang Gan.

He came uninvited, and also at such a sensitive time. There were so many spies staring at him, and this Wang Gan dared to come to the banquet? Was he not afraid that Yang Zhen would know this?

The truth was that out of today’s guests; Wang Gan’s status wasn’t anything too high-ranking. The position of army major was underneath that of a general. The Sky Fortune

Kingdom had several dozen generals, and almost 200 majors. Moreover Wang Gan didn't even have a title and he was not an aristocrat.

Although Wang Gan's status sounded insignificant, Wang Gan's military status was in the top few; he was even more important than some of the top generals. This was mainly because his position was too important – Sky Fortune City's Royal Guard Forces Army Major!

Since ancient times, the military has always been very sensitive to the struggle for the throne, and the Royal Guard Forces were a step from the sensitive of the sensitive! Almost all of the palace coups were through the Royal Guard Forces and the Imperial Palace Guards!

Because of this, Sky Fortune Kingdom's Royal Guard Forces did not have a commanding general. Instead, they had four different majors, each in charge of the four directions of east, west, south, and north. With the authority of Sky Fortune City's Royal Guard Forces so decentralized, the four army majors were able to restrict each other.

Wang Gan was the army major of the eastern Royal Guard Forces. He certainly knew how sensitive his status was, therefore he had always been cautions and had always maintained a balanced distance between the princes. Anyone who could be stand in this position were themselves a sly old fox.

Sky Fortune City's Royal Guard Forces Army Major was not the same as the Southern Martial Marquis!

Even if the Crown Prince failed to succeed the throne, the Southern Martial Marquis was still a general as before. With his prestige and fame as one of the ten great generals of the Sky Fortune Kingdom, not even the Tenth Prince would dare to move him. But Wang Gan was different. He was only a small time army major, and he commanded the Royal Guard Forces. If he did not do well, then the Tenth Prince would remove him, and even press charges of homicide against him to get rid of him.

“Wang Gan actually came. Even if he wants to meet Lin Ming it shouldn’t... I think...” Yang Lin suddenly remembered. Two months ago, on the date of the Seven Profound Martial House’s entrance examination, he had conveniently sent a sound transmitting talisman to help Lin Ming. The one who had framed Lin Ming, he was certain it had been a son of Wang Gan.

Initially Lin Ming had been an unimportant person, so this matter was only in passing to Yang Lin. He not simply not placed this in his heart, and thus forgotten about it.

So that’s it. Wang Gan had probably been feeling very upset these days. Thinking of this, Yang Lin silently laughed in his heart.

Wang Gan had indeed been truly full of suffering these days. His just had too much bad luck; even lying down he would be hit. When he had discovered that the boy who had come into conflict with his son was the current number one rising star of the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom, Wang Gan wanted to cry but had no tears.

Just who did he piss off to have this happen to him?

Two months ago at the Seven Profound Martial House entrance examination; his son had framed Lin Ming, and caused the Crown Prince to send a sound transmitting talisman to the public security department. This made Wang Gan feel a bit frustrated. After all, this was something that his good-for-nothing son had done, and the Crown Prince should not go so far as to implicate him.

But he absolutely would never have thought that the problem could come from Lin Ming. This fellow had changed, and had become a rare talent that was only seen every hundred years at the Seven Profound Martial House. He would surely be a great character in the Sky Fortune Kingdom who could control wind and lightning at his command. This kind of character, as long as he wanted, could absolutely promote someone to the nobility or even a general.

Once Lin Ming grew up, if he wanted to get rid of anyone, it was would be as simple as turning over his hand.

Wang Gan knew that his son's conflict with Lin Ming was not so simple as fighting, but that Wang Yigao had gone to the degree of wanting to kill him!

Wang Gan had asked himself, what would he do if he had experienced this? He would never let go!

So how could he not be afraid? He couldn't even sleep in peace these past days. But Lin Ming lived at the Seven Profound Martial House, and because of the regulations of the Seven Profound Martial House, he did not have any chance at all to contact Lin Ming. Not to mention him, but not even those high nobles could see him!

Therefore the only chance he had to see Lin Ming was to come to the Crown Prince's grand banquet. He really wanted to choke his son to death himself!

The day that he had heard the news, he had dragged out Wang Yigao and overwhelmingly beat him before locking him in confinement for 6 months.

Mentioning Wang Yigao, Wang Yigao had almost had a nervous breakdown. The first time that he had been defeated by Lin Ming was when Lin Ming had hit his servant. At that time Wang Yigao had regarded Lin Ming as ant. Being bitten by an ant, he would just crush him underneath his foot and kill him.

Therefore he had brought a bunch of ruffians to finish off Lin Ming, but the result was that he had his name written in reverse.

When Wang Yigao had returned, he had been punished to a two month confinement. He could not drink or eat meat, and could not go to the brothel. It had simply ruined Wang Yigao's life. He came out of confinement wanting to get revenge, so he had pestered him at the Seven Profound Martial House's entrance exam. At that time, Lin Ming was nothing but a c*ckroach to Wang Yigao, just a bit more formidable than an ant. But he could still crush him underneath his boot.

However, that time Wang Yigao had been beaten even worse. Not only had his body been pummeled, but his face had been hit. And the most miserable part was that he had even punished even more by Wang Gan, and had been sent to half a year of confinement.

Slowly, over time, Wang Yigao had become used to not having wine and meat, and also not having women. He began to diligently study the martial books daily. However, as he was doing well, Wang Yigao was somehow dragged out again and beaten again for a round.

This beating had been truly ruthless. Each strike had caused Wang Yigao to almost faint. Finally, he learned why he had been beaten up. The name of Lin Ming had already become a nightmare to Wang Yigao. Even if he borrowed the courage of ten thousand men, he still would not dare to bother Lin Ming anymore.

A family's discipline was always rough. Wang Gan had severely hit Wang Yigao, but the truth was this was to protect Wang Yigao. He wanted to give an explanation to Lin Ming. Since Wang Yigao had wanted to beat Lin Ming to death before, if he wasn't beaten up horribly himself, then Lin Ming might not be so forgiving of this matter.

"Greetings to Your Highness the Crown Prince. I have come uninvited; I beg your highness for your forgiveness." Wang Gan deeply bowed, with a hint of fear and trepidation.

"Haha, Major Wang is too polite. That Major Wang can come today really causes this prince to feel very happy. Please feel free." Yang Lin did not say that he knew the reason Wang Gan had come today was to see Lin Ming.

"Thank you Your Highness."

As time passed, noble after noble came to the banquet. The Crown Prince's grand banquet had presented an unprecedented prosperous atmosphere.

All these celebrities and famous figures came from various quarters. They were dressed in magnificent formal clothes and carried elegant wine glasses as they chatted in soft tones. Every action and movement they made showed the etiquette of the aristocrat. These people were all influential figures within Sky Fortune City.

“Big Sister Jingyun, you also came.” Murong Zi had spotted Bai Jingyun in the crowd. Originally she was a bit impatient since she had been bothered by some playboy, but her perturbed face suddenly morphed into a joyful smile. She moved her feet and like a small fish she appeared in an instant at Bai Jingyun’s side. Even the gorgeous but tedious formal dress she had on did not affect her movement. At such an elegant banquet, her actions were unobtrusive, and made people feel as if it were a kind of passing cloud and flowing water.

“Little Sister Murong, I didn’t think that your Murong Family would also be here.”

Murong Zi and Bai Jingyun were the two dazzling girls that had attended Lin Ming’s last Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment. These two were the proud women of the Seven Profound Martial House. Murong Zi was 17 years old and ranked 28 on the Ranking Stone. Bai Jingyun was 18 years old and ranked 22 on the Ranking Stone. They were collectively referred to as the ‘Seven Profound Proud Pair’.

It could be said that a thousand myriad graces were set in their bodies. With these two heavenly ladies gathered in the same place, they attracted the immediate attention of numerous men. These two were much like arrogant peacocks; they were simply cranes among the chickens here.

“I remember that your Murong Family rarely comes to the Crown Prince’s banquets.” Bai Jingyun paused slightly, and then laughed as she whispered, “Are you here to look for a date?”

“Gosh! Big Sister Jingyun don’t tease me, these playboys are no good!” Murong Zi had the qualifications to say this. With her talent and strength, in addition to her flawless looks, in the entirety of the Sky Fortune City, she was only inferior to Qin Xingxuan.

There were truly few sons of the aristocratic families that could match up to her. Zhang Guanyu’s talent and looks were nice, but he was famous for being a flowery playboy. He also practiced the Acacia Power; who knew how many women he had played with at this point. As for the Tenth Prince and the Crown Prince, the Crown Prince already had a wife. With Murong Zi’s proud nature, it was impossible for her to settle for being a concubine. That said, the outcome of the battle between the Crown Prince and the Tenth Prince was not clear, so the Murong Family naturally would not dare to rashly marry off anyone.

"Haha, of course it's not them. The one I'm talking about is..." Bai Jingyun spoke to this point, when the voice of the herald suddenly sounded out from behind the door. "The Seven Profound Martial House's Lin Ming, Mister Lin!"

Chapter 109 – The Acacia Faction

Chapter 109 – The Acacia Faction

…

…

…

“Haha, of course it’s not them. The one I’m talking about is…” Bai Jingyun had spoken to this point, when the voice of the herald suddenly sounded out from behind the entrance. “The Seven Profound Martial House’s Lin Ming, Mister Lin!”

Upon hearing this announcement, almost all of the people in the hall looked at the entrance; many of them had already begun crowding towards the front.

Following the lead of two gorgeous maids, Lin Ming slowly walked into the hall. Although he had changed into decent clothes for today’s event, it was still a far cry from the high-class and magnificent clothing that the nobles and other celebrities had worn. Still, because Lin Ming had been practicing accumulating his momentum these past days, even ordinary clothes on him were especially dazzling in the crowd.

Lin Ming thought back to what the herald had just called him and had a queer feeling in his heart.

Mister Lin? He really wasn’t used to be calling that.

Lin Ming didn’t have a position in the government nor did he have a title. He was a common person with a common background; one could say his only status was as a disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House. But the herald did not dare to address Lin Ming by name, so he had added the title of ‘mister’.

“That’s Lin Ming! He’s quite handsome and intelligent.”

“He’s only 15 years old. How extraordinary.”

Lin Ming was undoubtedly the star of the party. He was the rising supernova that everyone came to see.

“Brother Lin, welcome!” Before Lin Ming could give a ceremonial bow, Crown Prince Yang Lin stepped forwards and hugged him.

“Brother Lin, there is no need to be overly courteous! Come, let me introduce you.” Yang Lin knew that most of the people who came here wanted to get to know Lin Ming’s thoughts, and he would be introduced to them one at a time. But the first one to be introduced was of course the Southern Martial Marquis.

“Brother Lin, this is Sky Fortune Kingdom’s South Martial Marquis, General Wu. He’s one of the ten great generals of our land, and he guards the southern borders of our Sky Fortune Kingdom. He’s a martial artist at the Pulse Condensation Period and he has performed many great services for our country!” The Southern Martial Marquis’ name was Wu Yuanxun. He had repeatedly accomplished many great deeds and honors at the southern border, thus he was bestowed the title of Southern Martial Marquis.

“Lin Ming greets General Wu.” Lin Ming knew that these sort of senior generals that patrolled the borders were usually aloof and high-standing characters. He maintained the necessary etiquette towards someone like him.

“Haha, Little Brother Lin, you are too polite. If His Highness the Crown Prince does not accept your bow, then how could I? Little Brother Lin and I are fellow apprentices, but I already graduated From the Seven Profound Martial House over 40 years ago. Time truly passes too quickly!”

The Southern Martial Marquis’ voice was clear-cut and loud like a morning bell; those present were able to hear every word enunciated clearly.

“Little Brother Lin is a young and promising talent; your fame has already spread all throughout Sky Fortune Kingdom. I’ve long wanted to meet you. As soon as I saw you today, I knew you were a dragon in human form. With such a great cultivation at 15 years of age, your future is limitless!”

“General Wu praises me too much; Lin Ming still has a long way to go.” Lin Ming was not used to such praise, so he was polite in response.

“Haha, Little Brother Lin is just too modest. I heard that little brother Lin has already entered the Heavenly Abode. After entering the Heavenly Abode, you might receive some missions from the military. If Little Brother Lin wishes, you may come and stay with my army at the southern border. With Little Brother Lin’s strength, you will inevitably perform countless good deeds!”

Lin Ming’s interest was piqued as he listened to the Southern Martial Marquis. There were some disciples who went on military missions after entering the Heavenly Abode. At the end of each mission there were also rewards. The rewards didn’t come from just the Seven Profound Martial House, but also from the royal government. All disciples who went on missions had the possibility of being able to enjoy promotions, therefore there were some Martial House disciples that were bestowed nobility before they had graduated.

Lin Ming was not interested in things like titles or gold. But, the rewards from the Seven Profound Martial House were quite worthwhile. For instance, there were true essence stones, high-quality treasures, top-quality pills, as well as cultivation time at the seven major killing arrays.

True essence stones and time at the seven major killing arrays were necessary for cultivation. As for high-quality treasure, if it was a top-quality treasure spear, then Lin Ming would definitely be enchanted by it.

As for top-tier pills, they were also very precious. If Lin Ming wanted to raise his strength quickly, he had to have these top-tier pills. However, these kinds of pills could not be purchased in the Sky Fortune Kingdom. Even though Lin Ming could receive many gifts from influential people, these pills were still impossible to come by so easily.

"The Southern Martial Marquis wants to win me over so that I will go to the army and undertake missions, but this is also good. Until now I've only fought in matches, but I haven't been in many actual life or death situations. If I enter the army for a while, I will be able to experience these and grow in strength, and there are also rewards to be had, so why not?"

Thinking of this, Lin Ming said, "Lin Ming thanks General Wu for thinking so highly of him. If I have the appropriate mission, then Lin Ming will certainly go to the southern border."

"Haha, that's great. I already feel like old friends after meeting with Little Brother Lin for the first time. Come, let's have a drink."

...

As Lin Ming and the Southern Martial Marquis conversed, Bai Jingyun and Murong Zi were also carrying on their intimate conversation from early.

"I was thinking that the one you should date is him." Bai Jingyun signaled with her eyes; she had been talking about Lin Ming.

"Him? Big Sister Jingyun, don't go speaking such nonsense! Murong Zi's cheeks turned red as she blushed. "He's younger than me, how could it be possible!"

Murong Zi was 17 years old. Lin Ming was actually only 15 years old.

Bai Jingyun smiled slyly, "Listening to Little Sister's meaning, if he wasn't two years your junior, then you would find him agreeable?"

Murong Zi's mouth went crooked, "I never said that! If Big Sister makes fun of me again, then I'll be angry!"

"Haha, Little Sister, unless you are like Miss Qin, Qin Xingxuan, and decide to pursue that far off Xiantian realm, or even higher, then in the future you will be married. We martial artists have a long youth. Let alone several years younger, even if it was ten years, or even a few dozen years, that wouldn't mean anything."

"Pursue the Xiantian realm?" Murong Zi was slightly stunned. To the mortals of the Sky Fortune Kingdom, the Xiantian realm truly was a far off and distant dream. Although she was a proud and arrogant woman in Sky Fortune City, she was self-aware that it was impossible for her to reach such a remote realm, it was only a pipe dream. Much less her having no hope, even several of the core disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House had no chances either.

But Qin Xingxuan was different. Her sixth-grade martial talent was simply too shocking.

"That Lin Ming, perhaps he might pursue the Xiantian realm?" Murong Zi asked.

"It's possible. Lin Ming and Qin Xingxuan are two different kinds of talents. Qin Xingxuan's natural talent for cultivation is simply too monstrous. As for Lin Ming, besides his natural talent, he is a monstrous genius in every other category. It's hard to tell who the better genius of the two is. If discussing combat prowess, then Lin Ming would naturally be stronger. But if discussing how far their achievements will be in cultivation, then perhaps Qin Xingxuan has higher hopes of reaching the Xiantian stage. Lin Ming's martial talent is only a third-grade talent. The flaw in such a talent simply cannot be made up. I think that Lin Ming is more likely to stay in the Sky Fortune Kingdom and accomplish great deeds. He might even become the next state marshal."

"The next State Marshal?" Murong Zi thought absent mindedly. That was a prestige that exceeded even the emperor. In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, many of the common people did not even know the emperor's name, but there was no one who did not know the name and legends of State Marshal Qin Xiao.

Even with Murong Zi's status, she still held a high degree of respect in her heart for a figure such as State Marshal Qin Xiao.

As Murong Zi looked out of sorts, Bai Jingyun suddenly smiled and said, “Little Sister, look at Lin Ming, he’s already surrounded by so many girls. If you don’t go now, you won’t have the opportunity.”

Murong Zi followed the sounds and turned her head. Indeed, there were many young aristocratic ladies that had already intentionally or unintentionally approached Lin Ming, and were talking happily with him.

“Mister Lin Ming, I heard that your… spear… is over 800 jins. Is it really?” A young girl vapidly blinked at him with watery eyes, sending somewhat lascivious looks at Lin Ming.

The girls that intentionally approached Lin Ming didn’t necessarily have any evil thoughts in their hearts. After all, their ages were young at mostly 15 or 16 years old, and they had simple minds and pure thoughts. These ones had come under the suggestions of their parents. But there were also those who approached Lin Ming purely because of the worship in their hearts. The Sky Fortune Kingdom was a country that held martial artists in the highest esteem, and with the extraordinary title of being the hundred year talent of the Seven Profound Martial House, he was the idol of all people.

“820 jins.” Lin Ming replied with a smile.

“Haha, that’s amazing! How do you hold it? Can I see your hand?”

“Well… alright.” Lin Ming said. He helplessly held out his hand.

At this time, another charming young lady had come over. She said, “Mister Lin Ming, your palm reading is very good.”

“Mm?”

“I’m a fortune teller.” The girl winked at him with an attractive eye. “Can I take a look at your palm reading?”

“Uh…”

Before Lin Ming could think of a good way to refuse, the girl had already taken his hand in hers and was carefully looking at it. The girl's hand was cool, and had the unique softness of a woman.

…

"She's unexpectedly direct." Bai Jingyun said with a faint smile.

"Humph, what a nympho." Murong Zi curled her lips in disdain. She drank the wine from her crystal glass as if she were a noble peacock.

Bai Jingyun sniggered. She knew of Murong Zi's pride. It was impossible for her to do the same acts as these young girls; she simply could not cheapen herself to that level. "Little Sister, with this kind of boy, if you don't take the initiative then you won't have an opportunity…"

"Then why don't you go?" Murong Zi pouted.

"Me!?" Hearing Murong Zi's question, Bai Jingyun's face gradually fell. She was silent for a moment, before she sighed and lightly said, "My marriage is not up for me to decide…"

"Mm? Why?" Murong Zi didn't understand. Although the children in Sky Fortune Kingdom had to obey their parents in marital matters, but her and Bai Jingyun's statuses were unusual and not like others. With their strength and talent, they had the right to speak and determine their own marriage. "Big Sister, you are too submissive. If you say you don't want to marry, how will they force you to?"

Bai Jingyun bitterly smiled, "It's not as simple as you think…"

The one that had been chosen for her was a direct disciple of the Seven Profound Valley's Acacia Faction. Let alone her Bai Family, even if it were Sky Fortune City's Royal Family, they did not have the qualifications to refuse.

The Seven Profound Valleys' seven founders had left behind seven different legacies; these were the seven factions. For instance, there was the Sword Faction, Zither Faction, Array Faction, and so on. The Acacia Faction was also one of the seven legacies. Their faction cultivated the Dao of Yin and Yang. Almost all of their cultivation methods were associated with the intimate relations between men and women. To marry a disciple of the Acacia Faction… it was truly like jumping into a fiery pit.

Murong Zi felt that Bai Jingyun didn't want to discuss the matter any further. At this moment, the herald announced yet another arrival. "The Crown Prince's grand mentor, Mister Muyi, and the Marshal's Quarters' Miss Qin!"

Muyi and Qin Xingxuan?

Lin Ming was slightly stunned. He had not seen Qin Xingxuan for a long time. He remembered the strange illusions of Qin Xingxuan that he had seen on the sea jade platform, and his face took on an odd color.

The sea jade platform was able to infinitely magnify the hidden desires in one's heart; Lin Ming truly did have a certain attraction towards Qin Xingxuan.

Chapter 110 – The Seven Profound Decree

Chapter 110 – The Seven Profound Decree

…

..

…

Today, Qin Xingxuan was wearing an elegant, pure white evening dress. This dress was much simpler than others. The back was not open, nor was it too low; it only exposed her creamy and fragrant shoulders. Although her innocent and beautiful figure was not full, her curves were still outlined. The dress was very long, and it followed behind her like a deep spring flowing recklessly to the ground.

This was Lin Ming's first time seeing Qin Xingxuan in such splendid attire. He was pleasantly surprised. This girl, she just always seemed to come in different flavors. First he had run into her at the lecture hall of the Zither Department, and she had carried a virtuous air about her as she was surrounded by a gang of fellow female students. Now he saw her at this banquet, and she exuded a natural air of elegance and grace. He wondered if he would see her in the military in the future, and how she would look if she was wearing a military uniform.

Qin Xingxuan's appearance had immediately attracted the attentions of everyone present. The sensation that she caused was almost as much as Lin Ming had.

However, although the sons of the aristocratic families kept their eyes on Qin Xingxuan at all times, no one overreached their bounds to go over to her. Qin Xingxuan was simply too abstract an existence for them. To take advantage of her; they might as well take advantage of a princess.

“Teacher.” Yang Lin immediately walked up to greet them.

“Haha, I came late.” Muyi said with a faint smile. His eyes swept the crowd. “Hoho, Little Brother Lin, we meet again.”

“Mister Muyi.” Lin Ming felt relieved. He extricated himself from the group and walked over to Muyi, and as a result, those aristocratic young ladies dared not follow him.

Muyi glanced at those young ladies, and meaningfully smiled, “I’m not bothering you am I?”

Lin Ming helplessly said, “Mister Muyi, please don’t tease me.”

“Haha, although the tradition in Sky Fortune Kingdom is to be married at 18, there are plenty of 16 year olds who are fathers. Once a few more months have passed and you are 16 years old, you should consider it, really consider it!”

“Um… I don’t plan on marrying that early.” Since he had bid farewell to Lan Yunyue, Lin Ming had decided to rigidly dedicate himself to pursuing the pinnacle of martial arts. Thus, he had not planned on any early marriage.

Surprisingly, Qin Xingxuan spoke up at this moment with a mischievous smile. She said, “Lin Ming, the words from your mouth don’t match the words of your heart. I remember that when you first passed the Dream Trial, you spent a very long time at the Pass of Desire. I wonder which lucky girl it was that you dreamed of?” Qin Xingxuan unintentionally mentioned this matter. In her opinion, if there was a girl that Lin Ming liked, as long as he proposed, even a princess would joyfully consent.

As Qin Xingxuan asked this, Lin Ming felt a rare blush spread up his face. He almost looked like a tomato.

Dream of which girl?

This… was really too hard to say…

“That’s enough Xingxuan; don’t tease Little Brother Lin too much. Mm, well, after the banquet ends, the Crown Prince would like to see you.”

“Oh. Alright.” Lin Ming did not decline. He had already anticipated this matter. Since he came to this banquet, he had already indicated that he had no plans to reject the Crown Prince’s invitation.

Lin Ming and the two chatted for awhile. Because of Qin Xingxuan’s presence, there was not a single girl who came forwards again. Let alone a common aristocratic young girl, even Murong Zi had lost all of her self confidence in front of the beauty of Qin Xingxuan.

At this time, the herald made a sudden announcement, “The Chief Steward of the Palace, Elder Wang!”

“Elder Wang?” The Crown Prince was slightly stunned. Why would he come here? Elder Wang rarely left the palace. If he left the palace, it was usually to pass on an imperial decree.

Was it that his father the emperor wanted to confer a rank and title to Lin Ming?

As the Crown Prince was wondering, Elder Wang had already entered the hall. He wore a decadent and opulent yellow brocaded robe, and carried a fly whisk in his left hand. His right was raised slightly, and he held a shiny, golden token. There were three characters written on it – Seven Profound Decree.

Seven Profound Decree? Was this a command from the Seven Profound Valleys?

The Crown Prince was surprised; this was a command even higher than an imperial decree.

Although Elder Wang was the head steward of the imperial palace, he was also responsible for some matters of the Seven Profound Martial House. When Elder Wang was six years old, he had entered the palace. Because his martial arts talent was outstanding, he was later sent to the Seven Profound Martial House. He was a eunuch, and thus pure at heart and his martial arts advancement was good. Now, he had already reached the peak Pulse

Condensation Period. He was the head eunuch who managed matters at the imperial palace, and at the same time was one of the masters who protected the imperial palace.

Usually when the Seven Profound Valleys handed the Royal Family a decree, it was passed through Elder Wang.

Elder Wang looked at Lin Ming and smiled. He said, “Little Brother Lin is lucky. Yesterday, the Martial House Master requested core disciple status for Little Brother Lin. The Seven Profound Decree was just sent out this morning, and has the conditions for the test in it. The Martial House Master is not at the Martial House, so I am passing on the decree for him. I just found out that Little Brother Lin was attending the banquet at the Crown Prince’s palace, so I hurried over here to catch you. I wonder if little brother Lin has any intention of becoming a core disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House?”

As Elder Wang said this, everyone present was amazed. Core disciple!

Although they had expected Lin Ming to become a core disciple sooner or later, they hadn’t expected it to be so quick!

For someone from the Sky Fortune Kingdom to become a core disciple had great significance! If, in the future, he requested to be sent back as the Martial House Master of the Seven Profound Martial House, or as a Seven Profound envoy, then it was equivalent to being the overlord of the Sky Fortune Kingdom!

However, the core disciple test was not that easy; in the past, even Ling Sen had failed!

And could Lin Ming, whose natural talent was one grade less that Ling Sen succeed? The people present doubted this. Besides natural talent, Lin Ming could be considered a monstrous genius in any other area. However, what the Seven Profound Valleys held in the highest regard was one’s natural talent.

Lin Ming replied without any hesitation, “I want to be a core disciple.”

If Lin Ming wanted to walk on the path towards the pinnacle of martial arts, he had to enter a sect; otherwise he would not obtain the resources he needed. Not to mention things such as the seven major killing arrays, true essence stones, and top-tier quality pills, but to step into the Xiantian stage from the Houtian stage, one had to have the 'Heaven Opening Pill' in order to rid the contaminated Houtian Qi from one's body. Only the largest sects had a miraculous pill such as this. In the mortal world, its value could not be measured in gold.

"Very well," Elder Wang smiled. He laughed in his high-pitched and melodious voice, and said, "Then I shall announce the contents of the Seven Profound Decree. Lin Ming, listen at command, starting from today, the Martial House core disciple test has officially begun. If Mister Lin can achieve the Peak Altering Muscle stage by the time he is 16, or if he can achieve the Bone Forging stage by the time he is 18, then he may become a core disciple. Otherwise, he will fail the test!

"In addition to these requirements, the Martial House master has agreed to provide Mister Lin with some incentives. Starting from today, if Mister Lin can enter the top 10 rankings of the Ten Thousand Killing Array within three months, they he may obtain the medium-grade human-step treasure long spear, the Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

"If he can defeat Zhang Guanyu within 4 months, then he may obtain one 500 year old Blood Lingzhi.

"If he can defeat Ta Ku within 5 months, then he may obtain one Blue Miracle Pill.

"If he can defeat Ling Sen within 6 months, they he may obtain one bottle of Body Spiritual Ichor.

"The above rewards can all be obtained together. Lin Ming, do you understand?" Elder Wang folded up the Seven Profound Decree and smiled as he asked Lin Ming.

"The medium-grade human-step Heavy Profound Soft Spear, a 500 year old Blood Lingzhi, a Blue Miracle Pill, and the Body Spiritual Ichor!"

Even though those present already knew that the Seven Profound Martial House had a deep and extensive history, after hearing these rewards, they were all still left gasping for breath.

For instance, the medium-grade human-step long spear could not be regarded as the best rewards for the Seven Profound Martial House, but in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, it was actually priceless!

An ordinary medium-grade human-step treasure like a sword or saber was around 10 or 20 thousand gold taels. But this medium-grade human-step treasure spear was worth at least several times that, and most importantly of all, even if you had the money for it, one wouldn't be able to find one!

Weapons like the spear and the bow needed to be both rigid and elastic. These types of demanding requirements meant that these weapons were the most difficult to create, and even more so to make a treasure weapon. Even most generals would not have a treasure long spear. Instead, they would use a weapon like Lin Ming's that was made from dark purple elastic iron. There were some generals that did have a treasure long spear. However, the spear shafts did not contain any elasticity, and thus their price was much lower.

Although most people present hadn't heard the name Heavy Profound Soft Spear before, but solely with the word 'soft' in its name, that would mean that it was not a rigid spear, but an elastic one.

For a human-step treasure elastic spear, its worth was unimaginable!

Also that 500 year old Blood Lingzhi. The majority of Blood Lingzhi were 300 years old; if they were not picked at that time then they would wither and die. A 400 year old Blood Lingzhi was already very rare and precious. 500 year old Lingzhi simply couldn't be found anywhere in the world of mortals. Only the largest sects would know how raise them through their own mysterious and mystical cultivation methods. This kind of Blood Lingzhi was able to supplement the Qi in one's body and blood, and would make a martial artist's blood stronger and more vigorous. Even their strength would increase.

These were the wondrous medicines that martial artists who pursued strength dreamed about.

As for the Blue Miracle Pill and the Body Spiritual Ichor, those present weren't very clear on what they were. But if they arranged above the treasure long spear and the Blood Lingzhi, then they definitely were also priceless treasures.

But… although the rewards were tempting, those present did not actually envy Lin Ming. Because to obtain them was difficult beyond anyone's imagination!

Reach the top 10 rankings of the Ten Thousand Killing Array within 3 months!

Defeat Zhang Guanyu within 4 months!

Defeat Ta Ku within 5 months!

Defeat Ling Sen within 6 months!

These tasks were as difficult as ascending to heaven. And each was more challenging than the last!

The first task was the most straightforward and simple, but it was already a myth in the eyes of many. Lin Ming had only been at the Seven Profound Martial House for two months. Three months added to two months was five months. To reach the top ten of the Ranking Stone within the first 5 months… if these people had heard someone say this in the past, they definitely would have thought that person was crazy.

It had to be known that the higher one's rank was, the more arduous it was to climb, and the fiercer the competition was. The top 10 and the top 30 were two entirely different concepts.

Could Lin Ming really do that?

If it was to enter the top 10 rankings in the Ten Thousand Killing Array within three months, then some people might believe that. There were those who had recognized Lin

Ming as a great talent that would have grand achievements in the future, so they had a little hope for that.

But, to defeat Zhang Guanyu within 4 months, defeat Ta Ku within 5 months, and defeat Ling Sen within 6 months?

This matter, was simply too preposterous!

The existences of these three were simply on a completely different playing field from the rest of the disciples of the Heavenly Abode. Zhang Guanyu and Ta Ku were powerhouses of the Bone Forging stage. The fourth ranking disciple was only at the peak Altering Muscle stage. Their strength was simply too different to comprehend!

Zhang Guanyu was known as the fastest disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House, and Ta Ku was known as the strongest.

But Ling Sen was the most terrifying; he was versatile and excelled in all aspects of combat. To defeat Ling Sen in half a year was simply impossible!

Those present were not ordinary people; they already had a great deal of information on Ling Sen.

It was not wrong that Lin Ming had a martial intent, but Ling Sen also had a martial intent!

Chapter 111 – Wang Gan's Calculations

Chapter 111 – Wang Gan's Calculations

…

…

…

It was not wrong that Lin Ming had a martial intent, but Ling Sen also had a martial intent!

While they both had comprehended martial intents, Lin Ming's talent was only a medium third-grade, while Ling Sen's was an inferior fourth-grade. Ling Sen was older than Lin Ming by 5 years, and he had trained at the Seven Profound Martial House for 5 years longer; his strength approached that of a Pulse Condensation Period master. In order to overcome this gap, in half a year, Lin Ming had to somehow train his strength to also approach that of a Pulse Condensation Period master! And this was assuming that Ling Sen's strength would not further progress. But Ling Sen was a top-tier genius, how could he possibly not rise even higher in this half year?

Some of those present knew the specific details of when Ling Sen had attempted the Seven Profound Valleys' core disciple test in the past. The Seven Profound Valleys had required that Ling Sen reach the peak of the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation by the time he was 17 years old. But, they had required that Lin Ming reach the peak Fourth Stage of Body Transformation when he was 16 years old, or to enter the Bone Forging stage by the time he was 18 years old. From this alone, one could tell that the difficulty of Lin Ming's test was much higher than Ling Sen's!

This was most likely because Lin Ming's talent was lower than Ling Sen's, therefore the Seven Profound Valleys had set a higher threshold for qualification.

If others could follow this reasoning, then Lin Ming could too.

In this series of tests, only the first one was necessary to becoming a core disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys. To achieve the peak of the Fourth Stage of Body Transformation when he was 16, for Lin Ming this wasn't a goal that was too difficult.

What was truly difficult were the other four tests. These rewards were provided by the Seven Profound Martial House's Martial House Master as an incentive. They were only extra rewards; whether or not he could obtain them depended on his own ability, they did not affect whether he became a core disciple.

Of course, if he had these rewards, then Lin Ming would complete the first test earlier.

In this series of four rewards, the most difficult one to accomplish was defeating Ling Sen within 6 months. If he managed to do this, then he probably would have attained the other rewards.

"To defeat Ling Sen in 6 months, I bet the Seven Profound Martial House's Martial House Master isn't expecting me to get very far!" Lin Ming knew where he stood on this. He knew that with just his ethereal martial intent, his 'Flow like Silk', and his foundation spear skills, there was no possibility in surpassing Ling Sen in just half a year unless he took top quality pills again. But, he would need to totally consolidate and refine the pill; otherwise it would cause the true essence in his body to be impure.

"When a new disciple enters the Heavenly Abode, they will also hand out pills. But these pills are far inferior compared to the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill. They probably won't have much of an effect..." As Lin Ming thought of this, Elder Wang laughed and said, "Starting from tomorrow, little brother Lin may use the Seven Profound Martial House's seven major killing arrays for 10 full days. You will also be given 20 true essence stones per month. These are personally gifted from the Martial House Master, it seems he's very optimistic about you. Little Brother Lin, if you do not have any questions, then please accept."

Ten full days at the seven major killing arrays?

Lin Ming was absolutely delighted. This was treatment that only the top three disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House would be favored with. Ten days all day… that meant 120 hours. He could almost practice whenever he liked.

"Elder Wang, I don't have any questions."

"Mm, good. Then I will be leaving first. Everyone, please continue to have a enjoyable evening." Elder Wang flicked his fly whisk and put away the Seven Profound Decree. Without speaking to anyone, he left the hall. Those in the hall began to discuss what had just occurred.

The Seven Profound Martial House core disciples really had it rough.

"Big Sister Jingyun, don't you think that the test is a bit too harsh? To have Lin Ming and Ling Sen actually fight, that is just too difficult. Lin Ming is so young, and Ling Sen, Ta Ku, Zhang Guanyu are all 20 years old. How could he win against them?" Murong Zi said this somewhat angrily. Lin Ming's talent was already so heaven defying. If the Seven Profound Valleys would not take in such a person, then what kind of person would they take in?

Bai Jingyun said, "Who said they were intentionally making it hard for him? The test did not require that Lin Ming defeat Ling Sen. As long as his cultivation reaches the peak Altering Muscle stage while he is 16, then he will become a core disciple. Lin Ming is only 15 years old; he still has more than a year. If his martial intent suffices, then it is definitely possible to increase his cultivation by a stage. Are you worried for him?

Murong Zi pursed her lips, "What I'm more worried about is, if he becomes a core disciple, then he'll be a pair with Qin Xingxuan!"

As Murong Zi said this, Bai Jingyun understood. After all, Lin Ming and Qin Xingxuan were both a young boy and a young girl. Their ages were also similarly appropriate. Although Lin Ming's background was ordinary, if he had enough strength, then his background would mean nothing whatsoever.

The Crown Prince laughed with a ‘haha’ and smiled, “I already knew that brother Lin would become a core disciple sooner or later, but I had not thought that the Seven Profound Decree would be sent down so quickly. This prince proposes that we all have a drink and celebrate our good brother Lin creating yet another miracle!”

The Crown Prince lifted his wine glass and tossed it down his throat. All of the guests present lifted their glasses and toasted Lin Ming. Because of the arrival of Elder Wang, the banquet atmosphere had reached a new high.

Lin Ming’s status was becoming increasingly prominent!

Even if he could not become a core disciple, Lin Ming would still be bestowed a noble title, and would most likely become the same type of character as Qin Xiao. But if he did become a core disciple, then Lin Ming had the possibility of becoming the next Seven Profound Envoy or the next Martial House Master of the Seven Profound Martial House. These characters were the same as being the overlord of the land! They could control anything in the Sky Fortune Kingdom and do anything they want; they would be omnipotent!

The attitude of those present grew increasingly eager and fervent towards Lin Ming. The nobility were thinking of how to curry favor with Lin Ming, and the aristocratic young ladies were hoping to obtain Mister Lin Ming’s favor.

In that regard, Lin Ming was feeling a bit overwhelmed.

At this moment, a middle-aged man wearing a long, close-fitting robe and a hat arrived at Lin Ming’s side. He respectfully called him, “Mister Lin.”

“Mm? You are?”

“Mister Lin, I am Major Wang Gan of Sky Fortune City’s Royal Guard Forces.” Wang Gan said and formally bowed. Lin Ming’s status was soaring, but he was still only a common person, and he was also his junior. Wang Gan was an army major, and he was also several dozen years old. With his status, he didn’t have to bow to Lin Ming, but he did so in order to appear as humble as possible.

"Major Wang Gan of Sky Fortune City's Royal Guard Forces?" Lin Ming was slightly surprised, but then he suddenly remembered Wang Yigao. Lin Ming naturally had not forgotten the repeated disputes he had with the frivolous dandy idiot. Wang Yigao was weak and an absolute mess, but he did have the influential background of being from the army major's household, so he had kept trying to suppress Lin Ming at every opportunity. If not for Muyi's earlier help, then he might not even have entered the Seven Profound Martial House.

He hadn't thought that this person who appeared would suddenly be Wang Yigao's father. Lin Ming didn't even have the tiniest favorable impression towards this Wang Gan. If he was a good father, then he wouldn't have raised such a horrible son. Lin Ming did not believe that Wang Gan didn't know of Wang Yigao's abusive actions. If one was poor, then they would even be killed in jail by Wang Yigao. This Wang Gan probably pretended that he never saw such things.

Thinking this, Lin Ming's expression darkened. He said, "I know you. In the past I personally experienced how cruel your son's methods are. The reason you came today is about your son's matters? As they say, If a son is not taught well, it is the father's fault. Does Mister Wang not know how domineering and vicious the actions of his son usually are?"

Lin Ming's tone was bad; he reprimanded with a clear meaning. Wang Gan can come prepared to offer any sacrifice today, but being rebuked by Lin Ming in such a manner made him want to hang his head in shame. After all, he was an old man, and Lin Ming was still just a child.

But he could only nod his head in agreement and said, "Mister Lin is right. I've already punished that evil and vicious child to half a year in confinement. I have also handed down the family discipline upon him, and now that little evil boy is…"

"That's enough; you don't need to go any further." Lin Ming had already correctly guessed what Wang Gan had come here today for. "You came today because you want me to forgive this matter?"

Lin Ming and Wang Gan weren't loud, but there were many masters present, and they were able to clearly hear them speaking. Wang Gan's tone was incomparably depressed; he had completely lost all of his face.

Wang Gan lowered his voice and said, "Mister Lin, I have already been made aware of the actions that my evil and useless child had done to hinder Mister Lin. The incident at the Martial House entrance examination was wholly at Zhu Yan's instigation. About the sins of that evil boy, I am the clearest. As for the two previous matters, I have already hit that evil boy bad enough that he cannot get out of bed for several months."

"Mister Lin is a dragon among humans. My evil child is just pathetic trash. Dragons do not live with snakes and tigers do not fight with dogs. It's not worth Mister Lin's time to waste any effort over that useless playboy. If Mister Lin is still unbearably angry, then I shall hand that evil child over to Mister Lin's judgment. Whether you beat him to death or until he is crippled is all up to Mister Lin's mood. Also, I have prepared a small gift of 60 true essence stones. I hope that Mister Lin will accept them.

As Wang Gan said this, Lin Ming couldn't help but acknowledge him. This sort of government official was like a slippery snake that had his own effective methods. He held his own, and then made a final concession. And it was a large gift of 60 true essence stones. Lin Ming also believed that if he kept pressing, Wang Gan would absolutely hand over his son to him to let him punish at his own discretion.

But for this kind of person, if he was pushed into a corner it would only serve to create an enemy; there was not the slightest advantage. Also, he never had plans to kill or maim Wang Yigao to begin with. For 60 true essence stones, Lin Ming didn't mind forgetting this matter.

"Good, I'm not too sentimental about this. I will take the true essence stones and consider this matter written off."

Lin Ming was direct, but these words let Wang Gan feel a little surprised. He certainly knew what sort of value 60 true essence stones held towards martial artists. To collect so many true essence stones, he had paid a high price. But normally martial artists, especially talents like Lin Ming, were often haughty and distant in their manner. Even if they wanted the true essence stones, they would insincerely reject it, before finally begrudgingly accepting it. But Lin Ming was actually very direct in his manner.

Although this was only a small detail, but it actually made Wang Gan feel much more relieved, as he had a new understanding of Lin Ming. ‘They say that this Lin Ming’s heart of martial arts was purer and stronger than others. Today I saw that Lin Ming acted casually and not overbearingly. He was not hypocritical, he did not humiliate. He did not have arrogance or an overly proud heart. He is understanding and his conscious is clear. He is very suitable to cultivate martial arts.’

After Wang Gan expressed his gratitude towards Lin Ming, he looked him deep in the eye, bid his farewells and left. He boarded his carriage and quietly rushed towards the palace of the Cloud Prince. He understood that within a few quarter hours, the name list of everyone who attended the banquet would be at the Cloud Prince’s table. Wang Gan was a centrist. Since he attended to banquet today, he had to visit the Cloud Prince and offer a clear explanation for why he did so, otherwise in the future he would very possibly be regarded as a dissident. That would be greatly unfavorable towards him.

At the same time as he explained, Wang Gan would also have to distance the responsibility from his own son. He would point towards the matter that happened at the beginning of fall and say that it was instigated by Zhu Yan, and say that his good-for-nothing son was only used as a proxy.

Note: about Lin Ming’s time limit to reach the peak of Altering Muscle, it wasn’t very clear in the raws due to annoying Chinese phrasing. It basically says that he has to reach it before the age of 17, but the way it’s worded is something equivalent to him having to reach it during 16. He has a few months left until he’s 16, then the time limit for fighting Ling Sen is while he is 16, but before 17, which is the time limit. Sorry about that confusion.

Chapter 112 – Crazy Zhu Yan

Chapter 112 – Crazy Zhu Yan

…

…

…

In order to avoid the eyes and ears of the Crown Prince, Wang Gan circled around the Cloud Prince's palace a few times. He had wrapped himself in a cloak and entered the palace through the back door. Like this, he had come to the Cloud Prince to especially explain why he had been at the Crown Prince's banquet, and also to report on the evil doings of Zhu Yan. The Tenth Prince probably wouldn't like to hear about Zhu Yan, but Wang Gan had his own spin to add to the story.

He did not directly explain why he went to the Crown Prince's palace and attended his banquet. Instead, he began by borrowing the Tenth Prince's status in the army, and reporting to him about military affairs. He recommended to the Tenth Prince a brave father and son pair that had performed many meritorious military services. From this, he went back and forth on the greatness of such a father and son pairing, and then woefully sighed to himself about how his own household had suffered such misfortune and raised such a useless child. He then slowly edged in the matter of several months ago, where his good-for-nothing evil child had provoked Lin Ming, and then accidently dropped Zhu Yan's name…

How could the Cloud Prince not know the meaning behind Wang Gan's story? When he heard Wang Gan mention Zhu Yan time and time again, the Tenth Prince's expression fell. He hadn't known that Lin Ming and Wang Gan's son had such a conflict on the day of the entrance examination, and that the instigator of this accident was Zhu Yan.

"Major Wang, you've worked hard today. Please head back to rest as soon as possible." The Cloud Prince said with a blank expression.

"Yes, then I will excuse myself." Wang Gan's goal had already been achieved. Although the position he had in Sky Fortune City's government was not too big or too small, it was actually a very sensitive and important middle-level commanding role. Wang Gan had to be constantly cautious in order to preserve his own head, and he had done that very well.

…

Sky Fortune City, Zhu Family Branch –

Zhu Yan was wearing white pants. His hair was disheveled as he lay down on the bed. He had a dejected look as he peered outside the window. His eyes passed through the layered windows of the complex as he stared at the brilliantly illuminated palace of the Crown Prince. He knew that today the Crown Prince was holding a grand banquet at his palace, and the star of that party was Lin Ming.

Thinking of Lin Ming, Zhu Yan clenched the bed sheets. The fine and expensive bed sheets were torn apart in Zhu Yan's grip.

In that fight several days ago, he had seriously injured himself! The 'Red Lotus Purgatory' was a martial skill that he hadn't been able to fully utilize yet. In doing so, he had overdrawn the true essence in his body and damaged his meridians. Zhu Yan's cultivation was insufficient, and he had barely used it. In addition to the enormous load on his body, he had been pushed back by Lin Ming's spear. The result was an even more severe injury on Zhu Yan!

The wounds of the flesh were easy to cure with good medicines and pills, but damage to the meridians was very hard to recover from. This kind of wound would become a major hindrance when he was breaking through to the Pulse Condensation Period!

"Damnit!"

Peng! The velvet pillow under Zhu Yan suddenly exploded. The countless snow white feathers fluttered around the room like snowflakes in winter.

“Ah!” Lan Yunyue jumped in fear as she covered her mouth. Zhu Yan was moody, and this caused her to feel not even the least bit of security. One moment he was quiet, and the next moment he would be filled with anger like a raging beast.

Lan Yunyue’s scream caused Zhu Yan to suddenly look at Lan Yunyue.

As soon as Zhu Yan’s eyes fell on her, Lan Yunyue’s breath caught in her chest. The look Zhu Yan gave her made her feel as if she was being submerged in an icy bath. She thought that Zhu Yan might even kill her now.

There was a pause before Zhu Yan suddenly asked, “Do you regret?”

“What… what regrets?” Lan Yunyue panicked. She took a deep breath, and tried to sound as calm as possible.

“You know what I’m talking about.”

Lin Ming’s present achievements were already several times more dazzling than Zhu Yan. Without a doubt, his achievements in the future would far outstrip Zhu Yan. Zhu Yan believed that with Lan Yunyue’s pragmatic heart, she would inevitably regret to the extreme.

“The Crown Prince is hosting the grandest of banquets. He is there. If you regret then you may go there and look for him. That sort of banquet, there are all sorts of celebrities and famous, influential figures. The aristocratic young ladies there wear magnificent and expensive attire, and their manners and poise are elegant. Isn’t that what you’ve always wanted? You may go now.”

Zhu Yan’s calm voice brought an icy chill with it. It caused Lan Yunyue to feel fearful and apprehensive. She knew that today, Zhu Yan was walking on the edge of a cliff. If she really did say she ‘regretted’, she did not know what he would do in his rage.

Lan Yunyue was on pins and needles. She clenched her lips and said, “I no longer have any qualifications to regret anything anymore.”

Zhu Yan evilly smiled, and revealed the corners of his teeth. “You are very honest. At least you weren’t hypocritical and said you didn’t regret. Good. You truly do not have the qualifications to regret. Such being the case, take off your clothes!”

“What!?” Lan Yunyue subconsciously grabbed her own collar in surprised. “Zhu Yan, we are not married.”

“Marriage? Lan Yunyue, you do not understand your position and identity. Do you think that you are a princess? The reason I have not made an advance on you is because I respected you. But you, you must at least have the qualifications that are worth me respecting! Have you ever had me for even a moment in your heart? Now prove it to me, take off your clothes!”

“Zhu Yan, you…” Lan Yunyue felt an impending sense of alarm and subconsciously leaned towards the door. Before this, Zhu Yan’s disposition had already been dark, with a sense of high-risk danger. But the truth was that Zhu Yan had never made a move on Lan Yunyue. In fact, most of the time he had been the very image of a gentleman’s gentleman.

But today Lan Yunyue did not doubt that Zhu Yan would rape her. Because of his failures and frustration from his defeat in the match, as well as his future setbacks, he had already become similar to a wild, angry beast.

Zhu Yan saw Lan Yunyue’s petty actions and his voice lowered in anger, “Although I am injured, I am more than enough to deal with you. I advise you not to move towards the entrance. If you take another step towards the door, I don’t mind personally moving.”

“Zhu… Zhu Yan…” Lan Yunyue bit her lip. Tears had already begun to form at the corners of her eyes. She grabbed the collar of her clothes, and her knuckles and already turned white from the excessive gripping.

Her voice trembled as she said, “You lost to Lin Ming in the match, and you think that by abusing a woman that Lin Ming had liked, you will be able to retaliate and vent your anger against him! Is this your heart of martial arts!? Zhu Yan, why must you use this method to psychologically comfort yourself? Does this make you feel better?”

“What did you say?” Zhu Yan’s face had completely sunk. Every word Lan Yunyue said had punished his heart and poked his sore spot. The reason he wanted to move on Lan Yunyue today was exactly because of this repression that he could vent or retaliate against.

He hated. He hated everything about Lin Ming. He urgently needed to find somewhere, anywhere, where he could be just a tiny bit better than Lin Ming. He would take complete possession of the woman Lin Ming used to like, in order to rid his heart of its demons!

But, his thoughts had been bluntly revealed by Lan Yunyue. To look for a sense of superiority in a woman’s body; this made Zhu Yan feel extremely pitiful!

Therefore, he became angry out of his shame!

He revolved his true essence, and was about to pounce on her. But at this moment, a voice sounded behind the door. The old servant’s voice resounded from outside, “Young Master, the Tenth Prince has come.”

“Mm?” Zhu Yan frowned. The true essence that he had begun to circulate gradually calmed down.

Lan Yunyue was strained to her limit. Her body was up against the wall, and she slowly slid down against the floor. Her back was covered in nervous sweat. In this past month, the name of the Tenth Prince had been her nightmare. At that time, with just a few words, he had almost caused Zhu Yan to renounce their engagement and divorce her. But now, hearing the Tenth Prince’s arrival, it actually made her feel incomparably relieved.

Zhu Yan rose up and began to dress himself silently. To see the Tenth Prince, he would naturally neatly dress himself and greet him in the hall. Only someone whose wound was too heavy or was terminally ill would meet in their bedroom.

However, as Zhu Yan was putting on clothes, there was the sound of disorderly footsteps outside.

The door opened, and the Tenth Prince stood at the entrance. He had a few followers with him, and his face was calm, showing neither joy nor anger.

“Greetings, Your Highness.” Zhu Yan bowed. Lan Yunyue also stood and bowed, before she moved back to a corner of the room.

According to customs, when an official bowed to the prince, the prince would dispense with the ceremony with a show of words. However, the Tenth Prince had not said anything, and Zhu Yan had bowed.

“You know Wang Yigao?” The Tenth Prince suddenly asked. This question made Lan Yunyue feel completely senseless.

Zhu Yan immediately understood that the Tenth Prince was referring to the matter that happened at the beginning of fall. Otherwise, it would be impossible for the Tenth Prince to mention such an unimportant person like Wang Yigao so suddenly. Because Lin Ming had become famous, Wang Yigao had been held accountable and confessed to his father, which was then passed to the ears of the Tenth Prince.

“Yes.” Zhu Yan admitted. He knew that the reason Lin Ming favored the Crown Prince might be because of this matter. He had not mentioned it at his own initiative, but now it was known by the Tenth Prince.

“Very good. Now I know why it was so easy for my third elder brother to win over Lin Ming. You might not have known, but the one who had rescued Lin Ming from Wang Yigao was my third elder brother! This is simply icing on the cake, how much more timely could that help have been? You have been under my command for two years already, and you still have not even had half a minute of merit, and yet you already have given third elder brother such a great present. You may know that the Seven Profound Valleys has already started Lin Ming on the core disciple test tonight. As long as he passes, then he will be a core disciple!”

Zhu Yan's heart maliciously twitched. Core disciple!

This was unthinkable. In the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom, only Qin Xingxuan was a locally born core disciple!

As for the others, they were children of the mystical martial arts families.

"Zhu Yan, do you know what the value of a Martial House core disciple is to me and my third elder brother?" The Tenth Prince expression was a bit grim. A core disciple of the Martial House would enter the Seven Profound Valleys in the future. Afterwards, they would either stay at the Seven Profound Valleys, or be sent back. In the second case, they would be appointed as either the Seven Profound Martial House's Martial House Master, or as a Seven Profound Envoy.

If Lin Ming stayed at the Seven Profound Valleys, that would be alright. But if he was sent back to become the Martial House Master or a Seven Profound Envoy, then that was extraordinary!

The Sky Fortune Kingdom was a vassal state to the Seven Profound Valleys and under their jurisdiction. The Martial House Master and the Seven Profound Envoy had a status that surpassed even the emperor!

If Lin Ming was appointed as the Martial House Master or as a Seven Profound Envoy and publicly supported the Crown Prince, then there was no hope for him to ascend the throne!

And if he failed to ascend the throne, then the price would possibly be his life!

Zhu Yan clenched his fists so hard that his nails dug into the meat of his palm. Core disciple! How was this even possible!? If Lin Ming someday became the Martial House Master of the Seven Profound Martial House, or a Seven Profound Envoy, then to kill him would be as simple as crushing an ant. Thinking of this, he felt as if he were sinking in a bottomless well of despair.

This enmity, could it ever be fixed?

Lan Yunyue was slumped up against a wall, and her face had lost all of its color. Core disciple… Lin Ming, he wanted to become a core disciple?

In the future he would be the Seven Profound Martial House's Martial House Master or he might be a Seven Profound Envoy…

To her, this kind of existence was nothing but simply fanciful legends; it was simply too remote an idea for her.

At this moment, the Tenth Prince also noticed Lan Yunyue. He had thought that Lan Yunyue was a maidservant, but after noticing the fine clothes Lan Yunyue was wearing, he realised he had been mistaken. "You are… Lan Yunyue?

Chapter 113 – The Tenth Prince's Decision

Chapter 113 – The Tenth Prince's Decision

…

…

…

At this moment, the Tenth Prince noticed Lan Yunyue. He had thought that Lan Yunyue was a maidservant, but after noting the fine clothes Lan Yunyue was wearing, he realised that he had been mistaken. "You are… Lan Yunyue?

Lan Yunyue regained her composure and bowed to the Tenth Prince, "Lan Yunyue greets His Highness the Cloud Prince."

The Tenth Prince looked up and down at Lan Yunyue. He sneered derisively and said, "Good! What a charmingly pitiful and pathetic appearance. No wonder Lin Ming was so utterly crazy for you. It's such a pity. If you were still friends with Lin Ming, then I might have been able to find you some value in you. But now… looking at you only makes me sick to my stomach."

The Tenth Prince spoke mercilessly, disregarding her feelings. Lan Yunyue paled; how could a girl withstand such cruel words being said to her?

"Leave!" The Tenth Prince dismissed Lan Yunyue with a wave of his hand.

Lan Yunyue bit her lip as she fought back the tears that were pooling in her eyes. She bowed, and excused herself.

As Lan Yunyue walked out, the Tenth Prince stepped back. Finally, the only ones left in the room were the Tenth Prince and Zhu Yan.

The Tenth Prince glared at Zhu Yan, and coldly said, “Do you want revenge?”

Zhu Yan remained silent. However the blood that dripped to the ground from the nails that dug into his fist, had already answered the Tenth Prince.

“Very good. You should know that Lin Ming will soon become a core disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House. You also know what sort of status the Seven Profound Martial House has in Sky Fortune Kingdom. There is only the slimmest chance that you will have an opportunity to avenge yourself!

“But no matter how uncertain your chances, there will still be opportunities; It’s impossible for Lin Ming to stay at the Seven Profound Martial House forever. As long as he comes out from there, then there will be a chance to assassinate him! Your strength is insufficient. You will look for a suitable powerhouse that can handle him. I will secretly provide you with money and treasure. As long as the reward is enough, there will always be some wandering powerhouses who will be tempted. These wandering masters are never in the same location, and it is difficult to find out who they are, even for the Seven Profound Valleys.”

“But! From an outsider’s view I will sever all contact with you, and the Zhu Family will expel you from the family! Zhu Yan, I hope you can understand my reasoning. The Zhu Family has already been bound to me. I must inherit the throne; otherwise, not only I, but the entire Zhu Family will suffer complete and utter annihilation!”

Zhu Yan’s heart pumped fiercely. To distance himself from the Tenth Prince and even be expelled from the family!

He knew why the Tenth Prince did what he did. Assassinating Lin Ming carried too high a risk! Once it was found out by the Seven Profound Martial House, then the Tenth Prince and the Zhu Family would be finished!

Therefore he had cut off all relations!

Like this, even if the assassination of Lin Ming failed and became known to the Seven Profound Martial House, it would have nothing to do with the Tenth Prince and the Zhu Family!

What the Tenth Prince and the Zhu Family would do was to show goodwill towards Lin Ming on the surface, while plotting against him. To outsiders, such a ruthless move would simply seem like the Tenth Prince and the Zhu Family were making concessions towards Lin Ming.

In order to show good will towards Lin Ming, a brave soldier had to take the fall, so that Lin Ming would not take the Tenth Prince as his enemy!

It could even be that the Tenth Prince would manage to win Lin Ming over from the Crown Prince's side, or at least make it so that Lin Ming was not so heavily invested in the Crown Prince.

A two-pronged approach! This was the best plan!

However, his own political future would be ruined! He would lose his family, lose his power, lose everything he had, and become a wandering avenger with nothing left to lose.

Once he failed, the price would be his life!

But he didn't have the power to make a choice!

The family would not hesitate to sacrifice their son in exchange for their own benefit.

"Zhu Yan, it's already come to this point, there's no turning back. This is the only way! I cannot just give up and admit defeat because of a single Lin Ming. I have to continue fighting, and the Zhu Family has to preserve itself.

"But Lin Ming is just too terrible. If he becomes a Seven Profound Envoy or the Martial House Master, then I have not even a smidgen of hope. I must either win Lin Ming over, or remove him from the equation. About your matter, I have already talked to mother and she has agreed. Either tomorrow or tonight, you will go on your journey and arrange an assassination plan. I hope that you do not disappoint me again!

“If you succeed and don’t leave behind any hints that you were involved, then after I mount the throne and the situation has stabilized, then I will give you what you want!”

‘Give me what I want?’ Zhu Yan sneered in his heart. ‘Indeed, at that time you will silence me so that you can rid yourself of a witness to your crimes!’

Even trusted subordinates would be eliminated once they outlived their usefulness, or be cast aside when they were no longer needed. Much less, the Tenth Prince’s natural disposition was to be overly suspicious and believe nobody. How could he tolerate such a danger by his side? Would he ever have peace eating or sleeping? Assassinate a core disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House? This accusation alone was enough to have the Seven Profound Valleys sentence the Tenth Prince to death!

If I fail, I will die!

If I succeed, I will die!

You deprive me of my wealth, destroy my future, and also want to take my life…

Yang Zhen, you are too ruthless!

And my dear, sweet aunt; you also participated in this idea. To help your son struggle for the throne, you have used such a cruel method on your nephew. Good. Very good!

My Zhu Yan’s fate, I will take in my own hands!

Zhu Yan’s eyes flashed with a cold brightness. At this moment he vowed, that all those people who had worked against him or offended him would all be killed!

I want strength! I want limitless strength! Strength to kill Lin Ming, strength to kill Yang Zhen! To dominate everything and control the life and death of all!

Peng! The Tenth Prince opened the door and left the Zhu Family branch complex with his guards. Lan Yunyue sat in the hall and watched as the Tenth Prince walked away, feeling helpless and lost.

Zhu Yan's bedroom door was slightly ajar, leaving a small crack open like the jaws of some wild beast lying sideways. Lan Yunyue could not muster up the courage to step into that room, but she was also unable to leave. She could only stand in that empty and vacant hall, waiting.

After a quarter hour passed, Zhu Yan finally emerged from the room. Lan Yunyue reflexively stood up.

Zhu Yan turned around and casually flung a light piece of paper towards Lan Yunyue. Lan Yunyue subconsciously glanced at it. She had been expecting this. It was the contract paper they had signed when they had become engaged to each other.

"Tear it." Zhu Yan exclaimed.

"What… the… I'm sorry? Lan Yunyue's hands froze.

"Our engagement is dissolved. From this point on, I am expelled from the Zhu Family."

"Ex… expelled?" Lan Yunyue was completely shocked. How could this be?

Zhu Yan said, "When you and I were engaged, the only reason you did so was because of my status, power, influence, and money. Now, I no longer have these things. There is no longer a reason for you to stay with me. This engagement contract is now nothing more than a joke."

After Zhu Yan said this, he flicked his finger and the contract in Lan Yunyue's hand was torn into fragments by true essence.

At that moment, Lan Yunyue's mind blanked. In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, it was a shameful matter for a girl to become divorced after she was engaged. It would be difficult to remarry again. When wealthy people looked for a wife they would never settle for such women. If they did, it would only be as a concubine.

“You can go now.” Zhu Yan had completely calmed down. He turned and walked away, not giving Lan Yunyue even a last parting look. His heart was only filled with immeasurable hatred. The Zhu Yan of the past had died in that bedroom; how could he possibly have the thought to consider Lan Yunyue’s feelings?

…

As Lan Yunyue stepped out of the Zhu Family branch complex, she wandered onto the street in a daze. It was over… Zhu Yan and her were completely over…

She suddenly discovered that she did not feel the sadness and gloomy misery of a young girl that was left by herself. Instead, she felt a kind of peaceful solace as she let out a sigh.

Along with that torn engagement paper, those incomparably depressing and weary days had ended…

The late autumn night wind was thick with moisture, and it was chilly as it blew on the body. Sky Fortune City’s nightlife was as vivid as ever, as happy and buoyant sounds filled the air. Among the wanton and luxurious brothels, the vivid red lanterns hanging high in the air, and the dim lights, Lan Yunyue could hear the sounds of women chatting away.

Looking at the noisy world around her, Lan Yunyue suddenly smiled. It was a bittersweet smile, filled with relief.

She remembered her childhood, when she and Lin Ming would play with bamboo dragonflies on the moist spring grass.

She remembered when they would go out in the rain to pick the small wildflowers together, or step across the slippery stones of a creek and dip their toes into the cool spring. Little fish would come up and nibble on their toes, giving them an itchy feeling… because Lin Ming grew up in a restaurant; he knew how to prepare a delicious meal in a short time.

He would catch a pheasant, pick some wild herbs and wild fruits, and bring his own clay pots to cook a variety of tasty foods.

One time when she was sick, he ran several miles in the pouring rain to grab some clear mountain spring water so that he could boil her some nutritious medicinal porridge…

However… she could no longer go back to those days.

Before she had realized it, tears were already streaming down her face.

She regretted. But what she regretted was not that Lin Ming had become Sky Fortune Kingdom's most dazzling superstar, or that she missed her chance to become the wife of the next state marshal or the Seven Profound envoy. No… what she regretted was that she had discarded that simple, pure happiness for nothing but useless luxury and empty vanity.

She walked aimlessly. Her frail and attractive body was wrapped in a simple blue long dress. Under the shining red lights of the lanterns, she was covered by a misty and lonely shadow. She was like a desolate blue butterfly that flew in the cold autumn wind.

She did not want to return to the Seven Profound Martial House. With her talent, she had already lost the support of precious herbs and medicines. In her life, she could no longer achieve a high martial arts cultivation.

She did not want to return to Green Mulberry City. She did not have the face to go back. She did not know how to face her own parents or how to face her neighbors.

Most importantly, she did not want to see Lin Ming again; she did not want to bid him farewell…

…

Lin Ming was sitting in a carriage drawn by Snow Dragon horses. He was completely ignorant to how Zhu Yan and Lan Yunyue's destinies had changed, and how Zhu Yan was completely filled with hatred towards him.

He knew that that Zhu Yan's enmity towards him had not been resolved. He also guessed correctly that Zhu Yan would wait for an opportunity to retaliate against him in the future. However, he could not kill Zhu Yan. For better or for worse, Zhu Yan was also an official disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House. To kill him would be challenging the authority of the Martial House.

"Mister Lin, please get off." A servant of the Crown Prince respectfully said as the carriage stopped.

Lin Ming drew back the carriage curtains. He thought that he would meet with the Crown Prince in his palace study. He hadn't thought that they would have left Sky Fortune City and arrived at the base of Zhou Mountain. This location actually wasn't too far from the Seven Profound Martial House.

As Lin Ming debarked from the carriage, he saw that they had actually stopped in front of a mansion. The mansion was not luxurious, but the inside was very elegant in its construction. There were small bridges that hung over flowing streams and winding rock corridors. It didn't look much like a mansion; it was more reminiscent of a garden.

"Haha, Brother Lin, do you like this place?"

"Mm?" Lin Ming slightly hesitated. He already had a dim guess of what Yang Lin wanted to do, and that was to give this residency to him.

If he received this residency, then he would become a person of the Crown Prince.

Chapter 114 – Yang Lin's Gift

Chapter 114 – Yang Lin's Gift

…

…

…

Lin Ming had no interest or reason to be involved with the struggle for the royal throne. However, the Crown Prince and Muyi had shown graciousness towards him. If not for the Crown Prince sending a sound transmitting talisman to help him on the day of the Seven Profound Martial House's entrance examination, then Lin Ming would not have been able to participate. Not only that, but he would have been miserably put in jail, and even disabled.

Lin Ming was a considerate person who returned good deeds and favors that others did for him. Being selfish and ungrateful was not part of his nature. If he ever did such a thing, then that would be a true betrayal of his heart.

He frankly asked, 'Your Highness, how can I help you?"

Yang Lin did not expect Lin Ming to get straight to the point. It was quite refreshing. He smiled and said, "Brother Lin, you are a straightforward person who speaks his mind. Then I will also be blunt. Right now in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, it is time for a new person to inherit the throne. There are two possible candidates that can do so; me and my tenth younger brother. I was pushed into the position of Crown Prince. As such, now that I've ridden the tiger, I can no longer back down. Now, my queen mother's life, and my younger sister's life are already linked with mine. I have to fully commit myself to this throne struggle, whether or not I ever wanted to. I know that Brother Lin is a martial artist who detests political intrigue, but Brother Lin need not worry. If Brother Lin is willing to help me, then I will not have Brother Lin do anything. All I need is Brother Lin's support. With

Brother Lin's status as a core disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House, it will already be of great benefit to me. If I must step back 10 thousand steps and say it, even if I lose the struggle for the throne, my tenth younger brother would still never dare to touch Brother Lin."

Lin Ming responded, "Crown Prince Your Highness, I am afraid that you've misunderstood. I do not fear the Tenth Prince's retaliation, nor do I fear any assassination attempts. It is just that I might not stay in the Sky Fortune Kingdom in the future."

"Oh… I see." Yang Lin sighed in his heart. Lin Ming really did have lofty ambitions; he was similar to Qin Xingxuan. A small country like the Sky Fortune Kingdom could not accommodate him.

Lin Ming said, "Your Highness, but I can guarantee that unless that I am too far from the Sky Fortune Kingdom, if I hear news of the struggle for the throne, then I will hurry back as soon as possible and lend Your Highness a helping hand."

Yang Lin happily said, "I'm very grateful towards Brother Lin!"

Yang Lin brought Lin Ming to take a tour of the residency, which was in fact a manor. The manor also had an attachment of hundreds of acres of farmland. There were droves of livestock, poultry, and massive ponds for fish and shrimp. Inside the manor were male servants, guards, maids. All of the expenses of the manor were self-sufficient, and there was even a surplus.

In the bedroom of the manor were some money and valuables. There was a sandalwood box on the table. There were rows of true essence stones neatly line within; these true essence stones were pure in color, and were obviously of superior quality. There were more than 100 of them.

Even if Lin Ming were to cultivate daily with these, this number of these true essence stones would be sufficient to last him half a year. The pure color of the true essence stones implied that the amount of true essence within was many times more than an ordinary one.

This gift; it was quite generous.

In the box that held so many true essence stones, Lin Ming also discovered a plain ring. The ring looked like it was made of aged bronze, but it exuded a faint hint of true essence fluctuations.

“Mm? This is...”

Lin Ming’s eyes locked onto the ring. He sent his soul force out to see what was so unusual about it.

Yang Lin smiled and said, “Brother Lin has good eyes. This is a low-grade human-step spatial ring. It is a gift from my teacher, Mister Muyi, to his little brother Lin.”

“Spatial Ring?” Lin Ming’s mind blanked. He had heard of this kind of ring before. There was a small pocket dimension inside, and it could be used to store many things. It was also said to be unstable. The truth was that after several hundred years, the space inside would collapse upon itself, and the items inside would also be destroyed.

A spatial ring, according to its size and the degree of its stability, could be divided into many different grades. Although this spatial ring was only a low-grade human-step treasure, its true value was as good as a medium-grade human-step treasure. This was because it was far too difficult to create a spatial ring.

It was easier said than done for a martial artist to crack open a fissure in space. Even if it was only a small, unstable space that lasted a few hundred years, it would not be easy. Those spatial rings that had vast inner spaces and were very stable were inestimable in value.

“Mister Muyi gave this to me?”

“Mm. Teacher said that the reason he obtained this spatial ring was because of Brother Lin. When Brother Lin had just entered the Seven Profound Martial House, you may not have known, but the Seven Profound Martial House’s Elder Xu and Wang Yanfeng’s father were old friends, and thus Elder Xu was unsatisfied with you being named the first place new disciple. Therefore, Mister Muyi made a bet with him. He bet that Brother Lin would enter the Heavenly Abode before Wang Yanfeng did. Finally, Brother Lin entered the Heavenly Abode, and Elder Xu lost. This spatial ring was the gambling stake of that bet.”

“So that’s what happened. I remember Elder Xu. After I defeated Wang Yanfeng, this Elder Xu came on stage to look for trouble.”

“Yes, that’s him. So Brother Lin, please accept this spatial ring. Consider it an apology from Elder Xu.”

“Well, then I will ask your highness to thank Mister Muyi for me.” Lin Ming hesitated, then received the gift. Since he had already decided to lend the Crown Prince a helping hand, he would no longer be hypocritical in his actions. Not to mention, this spatial ring really was quite handy. Later he could use it to deposit all those piles of inscription technique materials that he had stocked up.

“Haha, Brother Lin, do not worry. There is also something in the spatial ring. Brother Lin can take it out. As long as you send your soul force through the spatial ring, you will be able to.”

“Oh?” Lin Ming did as the Crown Prince had said, and penetrated the spatial ring with his soul force. He could feel something like a piece of clothing inside. As soon as he took it out, he saw that it was a purple gold colored flexible armor.

The flexible armor appeared to be woven from thin metal wires. It was soft to the touch, and above the flexible armor was a scarlet blood symbol. These blood symbols were complicated and mysterious. They shined with a dazzlingly bright light. Lin Ming peered closer and found that the blood symbol had actually seeped into the texture of the metal wires, and had become a part of the flexible armor.

These blood characters were obviously written on after the flexible armor was created. To have the strength to force these characters through the metal weave, this bold handwriting style definitely belonged to the master of a master.

Yang Lin said, “This flexible armor is named the Purple Gold Flexible Armor. By itself It is a medium-grade human-step treasure. These blood symbols were drawn by a peak Houtian master who specialized in charms. He had to consume his own blood essence in order to draw this. It is able to weaken true essence attacks.”

“Mm? Weaken true essence attacks?” Ling Ming was surprised. True essence was a type of energy that naturally circulated inside the body. It could easily penetrate through flexible armor. This flexible armor was unexpectedly capable of weakening true essence attacks and was also a medium-grade human-step treasure. Its value could be imagined.

Yang Lin said, “Brother Lin is in a very sensitive position now. I fear that you may suffer assassination attempts so I gift this armor to Brother Lin. Even a normal Houtian master would find it difficult to break through this armor. Well, although I say it’s so great, at most this flexible armor can fend off a sneak attack and delay for some time. If facing off against a true Houtian master, I’m afraid that there would be no meaning for Brother Lin to put on this flexible armor. “

Although a Houtian master could not break through the flexible armor, that didn’t mean that Lin Ming could just wear it and challenge anyone he saw. As soon as a Houtian master hit the body with all of their strength, that attack strength would be transmitted through the flexible armor and would be enough to burst all of a person’s organs, much less, this flexible armor only weakened true essence attacks and was unable to completely negate them.

This flexible armor was priceless. For Yang Lin to give this to him, he must have paid an enormous price. Lin Ming hesitate slightly, and then decided to take it. He really was in a very sensitive position at the moment. This flexible armor could also be considered a lucky talisman.

“Thank you, Your Highness.”

“Haha, Brother Lin is far too polite. In fact, I want to thank Brother Lin. Whatever I can give, to be honest, my tenth brother can give more, all of which is superior to what I can offer.” Yang Lin candidly said.

Lin Ming and the Crown Prince walked further inside until they reached another room. This was the master bedroom of the manor.

The master bedroom was very luxurious, and exquisitely decorated. In the middle of the room was a large mahogany bed more than ten feet wide. It was enough for four to five people to comfortably sleep in.

At this time, four maids had already prepared the bed for Lin Ming. They respectfully stood at the four corners of the bed. Of these four maids, their ages were around 16 years old, and it was hard to tell which was more beautiful. They had obviously gone through a careful selection process.

The maids were usually the daughters of poor people who were sold as children. The most beautiful among them would be selected, and sent off to train in how to serve; they were even taught the fine arts. In the future they would be sent to the palaces of the nobility to work.

Once a maid was purchased, their body belonged to their master, and their master could use them as they pleased. This was especially true for those personal maids that lived in connection rooms and served the daily tasks of their master. This was equal to being a concubine. This kind of maid was usually responsible for the governance of the house. Besides waiting in their master’s bedroom and doing some cleaning, they did not need to do anything else. Their monthly expenses and status were very high, and was a position that the outer maids much admired and envied. Many maids wanted to join in on this, after all, for them, becoming a concubine or even an aunt was the best result. Otherwise when they were sold out to be married, it would be difficult for them to find anyone decent. That was why most of the time, when a maid heard they would be sold, they would often cry in extreme distress.

The four maids saw Lin Ming arrive, and their hearts were filled with trepidation; some of them even had trouble breathing. The butler had already told them who this young man was. He was the most dazzling star of the Sky Fortune Kingdom who was called a genius of the Seven Profound Martial House that only came by once every century, and even had the possibility of becoming a core disciple. The butler had already given them strict instructions to serve him tonight in any way possible and that they had to perform everything perfectly and splendidly. If they could give this Sir Lin a good impression, then in this life they might have a chance of transforming from a sparrow to a phoenix.

Therefore this evening was very important to them. As a maid, to be able to serve this legendary and handsome young man as a personal maid was the good fortune of their life. The bedding had been neatly spread, and there was not even the slightest crease in the sheets. The furniture and curtains had all been spotlessly cleaned, the incense burner was new and the floor was sparkling bright.

Lin Ming saw these four fresh and juicy maids. He looked around and saw the fine mahogany furniture, the expensive spice purple gold incense burner, the woven silk sheets, and was unable to restrain a sigh. These were all the comforts and enjoyments of life that riches and fame could bring.

Yang Lin said, “Brother Lin, if you are tired, then let’s rest here tonight. I will also accompany Brother Lin and stay in the guest room.”

Lin Ming knew that Yang Lin offered this so that he would feel relieved and rest without fear of assassination. As the current dynasty’s Crown Prince, Yang Ling surely had martial arts masters who served as his royal guard, otherwise the Tenth Prince would not need to assassinate Lin Ming; he would simply kill the Crown Prince and be done with it.

Lin Ming looked at the four maids that were like little timid white rabbits, and saw the hope and fear that intermingled in their eyes. He shook his head slightly and said to Yang Lin, “No, I will return to the Seven Profound Martial House.”

“Mm? This manor is not to Brother Lin’s liking?”

“Not really,” Lin Ming said with a faint smile. He continued, “Here, life is too comfortable and luxurious. The quiet and simple days of the Seven Profound Martial House are much more suitable for cultivation.”

Chapter 115 – Zhang Guanyu

Chapter 115 – Zhang Guanyu

…

…

…

“Not really,” Lin Ming said with a faint smile. He continued, “Here, life is too comfortable and luxurious. The quiet and simple days of the Seven Profound Martial House are much more suitable for cultivation.”

“This… Brother Lin is too assiduous. Sometimes proper rest is needed; a bowstring stretched too taut isn’t necessary a good thing. Some degree of relaxation is also good. Since Brother Lin has decided to go, then I will call the guards to protect Brother Lin on his way back. The Crown Prince quickly called his royal guard to keep Lin Ming safe as he returned to the Martial House.

When Lin Ming left, the four young maidservants were relieved, but they also felt a faint disappointment. Their entire manor of several hundred people had been busy at work for the past few days meticulously cleaning the entire manor, but Lin Ming had only taken a look, and hadn’t even sat down…

However, this manor now belonged to Lin Ming. Regardless of whether he slept here or stayed here, they had to keep everything clean and spotless every day.

…

“What? Challenge me in fourth months?”

In a sumptuously decorated hall, on top of a soft silk mattress, an exceedingly handsome young man lazily reclined against a headrest. This young man's hands were greedily hugging an enchanting beauty of great assets. At the foot of the mattress, a young, beautiful maid was slowly massaging his legs, and on the other end, a charmingly pretty woman was plucking crystal grapes with her slender fingers, and gently placing them into the young man's mouth.

This man was the third place master of the Seven Profound Martial House's Ranking Stone, Zhang Guanyu. Besides the core disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House, he was the only gifted genius with a fifth-grade martial talent.

Not only that, but Zhang Guanyu was an outstanding talent who was raised by the Allied Trade Association1. In the future, he had the possibility of becoming the president of the Allied Trade Association!

The Allied Trade Association was a large organization that was heavily invested in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, and even in several nearby countries. It had existed for a long time; it was even older than the Sky Fortune Dynasty. With such a great organization, its history and strength were profound and unthinkable.

Zhang Guanyu's martial talent was only inferior to Qin Xingxuan within the entirety of all the young martial artists of the Sky Fortune Kingdom. With the important position that he occupied, It could be said that he was a favored son of heaven. Beautiful women, wealth, power; all of these were easily within his reach.

However, even with the vast resources of the Allied Trade Association and with his own gifted talent, he still hadn't produced any amazing results. On the Seven Profound Martial House Ranking Stone, he was only third, below Ling Sen and Ta Ku.

Ling Sen had his Ashura martial intent. His strength was formidable and disgustingly abnormal; being below him was understandable.

But Ta Ku was only a superior fourth-grade talent. Although he did have inborn divine strength, his talent was inferior to Zhang Guanyu, and the resources at his disposal were far inferior. It was unjustifiable for Zhang Guanyu to be suppressed by Ta Ku.

Ultimately, it was decided that Zhang Guanyu's heart of martial arts was too weak, and he excessively wallowed in debauchery.

When he had passed the Dream Trial, Zhang Guanyu's results had been horrible. But even knowing this problem, the Allied Trade Association had no way to force Zhang Guanyu into abstinence. This was because a martial artist had to follow their heart and soul. If they were forced to go against their nature, their heart would be suppressed, and their cultivation would be hindered.

Facing this situation, the Allied Trade Association did have a backup plan. That was simply to let Zhang Guanyu practice the Seven Profound Martial House's Acacia Faction's cultivation methods.

However, the Acacia Faction's high-level cultivation method manuals were only passed down to core disciples. If Zhang Guanyu wanted to study them, he could study the branch methods. At this point, his family's deep history demonstrated just how far their hands could reach. The Allied Trade Association relied on its wide-reaching network and nefarious methods to forcibly create an opportunity and persuade the Seven Profound Valleys' Acacia Faction to pass on a part of its core cultivation method manual so that Zhang Guanyu could practice it. Zhang Guanyu had already been practicing this cultivation method for half a year now, and his cultivation had already been greatly increased.

The new and improved Zhang Guanyu was like a fish in water. He had s*x every day, and his cultivation steadily grew. He led a dreamy life of revelry and carnal pleasures with unsurpassed comfort.

Tonight, just as Zhang Guanyu had been planning to enjoy the company of two pretty concubines, he received news from the Seven Profound Martial House that Lin Ming would challenge him within four months.

This caused his libido to be reduced, and the flames of anger in his heart to rise. This Seven Profound Martial House, it was as if they were taking him as some sort of sharpening stone!

“Haha, yes, Elder Wang visited the Crown Prince’s palace to directly pass on the Seven Profound Decree to Lin Ming, and inform him of the Seven Profound Martial test. The requirements of the test are that he achieve the peak Altering Muscle stage when 16 years old, or to reach the Bone Forging stage when he is 18 years old. In addition, if he can enter the top ten rankings of the Ten Thousand Killing array within 3 months, defeat you in 4 months, defeat Ta Ku within 5 months, or defeat Ling Sen within 6 months, then he will have an extra reward. And these are truly rich rewards!”

The one who spoke was a man over 20 years old. In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, he was one of the seven core disciples of the Seven Profound Marital House; his name was Zhou Yu. Zhou Yu came from a martial arts cultivation family, and he also practiced the cultivation methods of the Acacia Faction. He and Zhou Yu had a good relationship with each other due to this.

“Humph! Since they want to use me as a sharpening tool, fine, I will break this sword! This Lin Ming has become too arrogant these days. A mere piddling third-grade talent little boy dares to claim without any justifications that he is the genius of a century in the Seven Profound Martial House!”

These years, although Zhang Guanyu’s strength was inferior to Ling Sen and Ta Ku’s, he still had the esteemed reputation of being the second most talented individual in the younger generation of the Sky Fortune Kingdom. And that first place spot belonged to Qin Xingxuan. However, Qin Xingxuan was just a woman, and because of that, he did not envy her at all. Zhang Guanyu never envied women, because as long as he conquered a woman, then their own talent became his. And if he could not conquer them, then that was unimportant as long as that woman was not conquered by other men. If it was so, then Zhang Guanyu could bear it.

But this Lin Ming was different. In these past days Lin Ming had stolen the spotlight from him. All the attention of the major powers of Sky Fortune City and the common martial artists was on him; who would remember someone like Zhang Guanyu?

What did Zhang Guanyu count for? Although he was third on the Ranking Stone, and had a talent above almost everyone else, what the people cared about most were not talents, but results. In the streets and alleys of Sky Fortune City, as long as a person mentioned the younger generation of the Seven Profound Martial House, it would all be about the name Lin Ming!

Just hearing this name made Zhang Guanyu feel unhappy. And now, even more directly for Lin Ming's test, the Seven Profound Martial House had listed out such ridiculous conditions! They had actually planned on using him as a stepping stone for Lin Ming to rise up further as a mythic genius!

This aroused Zhang Guanyu's wrath. It was always him that stepped on others, when was it others' turn to step on him!?

"Well done! What a Seven Profound Martial House Master! Since you dare to use me as a human-stepping stone, then I will step on that person you have so kindly chosen and trample him underneath my feet mercilessly! This is just right; I have already cultivated the 'Divine Acacia Power' to Large Success of the first layer. I'll have you look at the disparity between a third-grade talent and a fifth-grade talent!"

Zhang Guanyu's face flashed with a hideous look. He gripped the breasts of the charming woman in one hand, and pulled the woman who was feeding grapes towards him. The women gave a surprised shout and the three of them tumbled together onto the bed. The curtains closed, and Zhang Guanyu smiled evilly as he started to rip off the clothes of the two concubines.

Since his heart was burning with anger, he naturally had to vent it somewhere. Zhang Guanyu's method of venting was very direct, and that was to vent it on a woman's body.

Listening to the tender and lewd sounds of the women in bed, Zhou Yu only shook his head, turned around, and left.

He had known Zhang Guanyu for a long time, and had some understanding of Zhang Guanyu's level of maturity. Zhang Guanyu would never resign himself to willingly be some other man's stepping-stone. But now, since the Seven Profound Martial House has pushed Zhang Guanyu into opposition with Lin Ming, then Zhang Guanyu would naturally take some measures to deal with Lin Ming.

Zhang Guanyu was a person with a very arrogant heart and an even stronger possessive nature. He was the kind that wished to possess all the beauty and fine things of the world. He would not admit defeat just because of the unlimited potential of Lin Ming's future achievements!

Although Zhang Guanyu was a lustful playboy, lascivious, and extremely arrogant, he still grew up around an abundance of gifted individuals. He was raised up in the sophisticated and complex environment of the Allied Trade Association, and was still able to rise to the top. The main reason for this was Zhang Guanyu's top-tier talent, but regarding intelligence; he had never been a fool.

Zhou Yu knew better than anyone that if Zhang Guanyu despised anyone, then that person would surely die a miserable death. Zhang Guanyu was scary. In this world, there were two types of martial artists that were dangerous to provoke – the crazy, and the mad. The first was a martial crazy, like Ling Sen, whose individual strength was terrifying. But the latter was a mad lunatic like Zhang Guanyu, whose natural disposition was an insane paranoia, and would easily take one's life.

The strong fear the unreasonable, the unreasonable fear the suicidal, and the suicidal fear the crazy ones. Zhang Guanyu was a crazy one. If someone stabbed him with a knife, he would not dodge or evade, but take the pain from the blade and then rip out their throat!

Dealing with such a psycho, the average man simply wouldn't dare to fight with him.

“Zhang Guanyu might confront Lin Ming before four months pass, but I don’t know what means he’ll use to do so.”

Zhou Yu’s face showed a trace of an interested smile as he pondered this. Lin Ming wanted to be a core disciple, but it wasn’t so easy. First, he had to overcome the hurdle known as Zhang Guanyu.

…

By the time Lin Ming returned to his room at the Seven Profound Martial House, it was already late at night. He took out the spatial ring and carefully looked at it. He had already deposited some gold and true essence stones inside. Although the inner space of the spatial ring was unstable, as long as the ring was not destroyed, it wouldn’t suddenly collapse. A martial artist would be able to sense when the lifespan of a spatial ring was coming to end, so there would never be sudden situations where everything in the ring would disappear.

Lin Ming had already accrued more than 200 true essence stones. He had true essence stones gifted from the Crown Prince, true essence stones gifted from Wang Gan, and also true essence stones that he received as a reward for entering the Heavenly Abode. There were also nobles who also wanted to gift true essence stones to Lin Ming, but he had rejected them. If Lin Ming received their gifts, then he would owe them a favor, and he didn’t want to tangle with any of this in the future.

The true essence stones he had now were already more than enough to use. He also had an abundant amount of time at the seven major killing arrays. However, if Lin Ming wanted to surpass Zhang Guanyu in four months, that would be very difficult.

He had thought of a new way, and what Lin Ming had thought of was – the body inscription symbol.

Of the inscription symbols from the Realm of the Gods, there were four kinds. These were object inscriptions, medicinal inscriptions, body inscriptions, and soul inscriptions.

Of these four, each was more difficult to get started on than the last. As for the soul inscription symbols, Lin Ming was not clear on them.

By now Lin Ming had learned the preliminary inscription symbols of object inscription and medicinal inscription. The plan for body inscription symbols needed a higher reserve of true essence. In the past, Lin Ming’s true essence was insufficient. But now that he had reached the second level of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ and his cultivation was at the Large Success of Viscera Training, he finally had some confidence to be able to draw up this kind of body inscription symbol.

1: Formerly referred to as the Chamber of Commerce

Chapter 116 – Maddening Materials

Chapter 116 – Maddening Materials

…

…

…

Body inscription was a type of inscription drawn onto the body. It was able to increase a martial artist's cultivation speed or enhance their battle prowess.

As with objection inscription symbols, there was a limit to how many could be placed. The amount differed depending on the grade of the body inscription symbol as well as the physical condition of the martial artist. For body inscription symbols, the most one could draw were about four or five.

With his match against Zhang Guanyu approaching in four months, he had to draw up a body inscription symbol within a month in order to display its greatest effects, otherwise the quality of the effect would be lessened, or it might even be a complete waste of time!

However, to draw up a body inscription symbol in a month was as difficult as ascending to heaven!

Although Lin Ming had the memories of the soul fragment, in order to successfully create one, it would still take a long time and also use up a massive amount of rare and precious materials in order to practice!

Practicing it was simple. What was difficult was finding a way to collect all of the incomparably rare and precious materials that were needed for the body inscription symbol. The degree to which these materials were rare and precious caused Lin Ming to shudder in fear!

In the elder's memory, of the simplest body inscriptions, there were two. One was the Essence Gathering Symbol which could increase the speed of cultivation, and the other was the Strife Seal which could increase a martial artist's combat prowess.

However, even if it were these two simplest body inscription symbols, the list of materials that needed to be used would make anyone go nuts!

Just the fifth level vicious beast blood, a single tael of this precious fluid would cost 30,000 gold taels. Lin Ming needed to buy 2 taels, which would mean 60,000 gold taels. And not only that, but it simply wasn't something that could be bought by just anyone.

In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, there was no one who was able to match up against a fifth level vicious beast. For a fifth level vicious beast, perhaps only a peak Houtian master would be barely able to deal with it!

These kinds of martial artists usually came from a large sect or an aristocratic martial cultivation family. The blood of a fifth level vicious beast would only flow out from a large sect and then into the smaller countries. To these small countries, its price would be frighteningly astronomical.

Then there was Star Obsidian. This material came from a meteorite that fell from the sky. The high temperature in the atmosphere would condense. This iron essence could only be naturally formed by the power of the heavens and earth, and beyond that, not every meteorite would have Star Obsidian. Only those meteorites that were above several thousand jins would possibly be able to produce 1 or 2 jins of Star Obsidian. The lowest market price of a single jin of obsidian was 150,000 gold taels!

And it was extremely difficult to find!

Fortunately, Lin Ming only needed two taels.

Lin Ming estimated that if everything was bought that the lowest market price, and he bought these materials whenever he could find them, then the total of these materials would need at least 300,000 taels. This was simply a dream within a dream!

Of the materials he needed, many were like the fifth level vicious beast blood and Star Obsidian. They just didn’t have a market price. So that meant that more gold would have to be spent. The amount he would need might even go up to 500,000, or even 700,000 wouldn’t be strange!

And even if he managed to somehow obtain 6 or 700,000 taels of gold, he would be incredibly lucky to obtain these materials in a couple of years. If his luck was garbage, then he might not be able to find these materials even if he looked for 10 years.

On the list of materials, the most basic ones would be considered precious valuables within Sky Fortune City’s Inscription Association!

And one also needed points from the Inscription Association in order to buy anything. The last time Lin Ming went there; he had already used up most of his points, and didn’t have many left. Without points, these so called ‘basic’ materials would not be sold at any price.

These would be the treasures of the Inscription Association.

Looking at the list gave Lin Ming a throbbing headache. It was simply impossible for him to find all of these; he could only rely on the Crown Prince.

This was one of the benefits of joining a major power. The Crown Prince’s subordinates were numerous, and they had wide channels and networks they could work through; they could do him a great favor in helping him.

Yet even if the Crown Prince made every effort, he would be limited in obtaining the materials.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming shook his head and ruefully smiled. “I joined the Crown Prince as one of his subordinates, and still haven’t done a single thing, yet I actually want to make a sudden demand to find such a large amount of materials. And these precious and rare materials can’t even be found in the city. Even if they were the relatively basic materials that I need, the Crown Prince would not be able to purchase them easily.”

Lin Ming knew that the Crown Prince was not wealthy. Even though the Crown Prince's palace looked opulent and grand; the palace had to hire several hundred people and pay them for their work. There were also several other expenses. In addition to the banquet, the Crown Prince gave gifts, rewards, and other such expenditures in order to win over others and raise his own influence. The annual amount of money that he spent was probably around 2 to 300,000 gold taels.

For instance, when the Crown Prince had given Lin Ming a gift of more than 100 pure true essence stones, the cost of that had been several tens of thousands of gold tales. The manor that was situated near Sky Fortune City along with 100 acres of fertile farmland, servants, maids, and so forth would cost at least 100,000 gold taels. In addition, there was also the Purple Gold Flexible Armor; added up altogether, it must have been more than 300,000 gold taels!

Because the large expenditures, the economic situation of the Crown Prince might even be inferior to those famous inscription masters that had been working a long time. For example, Muyi, Wang Xuanji, and those kinds of people; they had a high income, and their spending was low. After amassing money for many years, they were overflowing with riches.

The Crown Prince used a very large amount of money. Depending on just his salary from the government, this would be utterly inadequate. The Crown Prince's income mostly came from his estate, farms, and also stores.

The estate and paddies were things like the manor that had been bestowed upon Lin Ming. But as for shops, Lin Ming actually knew that the Crown Prince didn't have many. This was because the biggest and busiest shops of Sky Fortune City were firmly grasped in the hands of the Allied Trade Association.

Compared to the Tenth Prince who constantly campaigned in all directions and plundered countless lands, the Crown Prince was very poor. Because he was poor, he could not win over others, and thus the Crown Prince's influence was suppressed by the Tenth Prince.

“The cost of the all the gifts that the Crown Prince gifted me should total to around 300,000 gold taels. For the Crown Prince to suddenly hand so much over to me, he probably doesn’t have much money on hand at the moment. I just received so many gifts, yet now I also want materials; it just isn’t too appropriate. However, I have to ask for these materials; otherwise I will never be able to collect them on my own. Originally, finding the materials for the medicinal inscription symbol already took a very big effort on my part, and this body inscription symbol’s materials are much more precious. I just don’t have any way left but to ask the Crown Prince to help me find them. As for the money, I will find a solution… but first I should return the manor to the Crown Prince…”

“With the two body inscription symbols, the Essence Gathering Symbol and the Strife Seal, in addition to my ethereal martial intent, ‘Flow like Silk’ ability, and the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’, I will have the confidence to face Zhang Guanyu four months from now. But I’m not sure if I can reach Ling Sen in 6 months. This Ling Sen, the stronger I am, the more I can sense just how terrifying he actually is…”

“But provided that the Crown Prince can help me find the materials I need for the inscription symbol, there are certain materials I listed that might only be found in a sect. With just the Crown Prince’s connections, how many would I be able to find?”

…

Inscription Association, Inscription Hall –

Lin Ming had just stepped into the Inscription Association and was immediately discovered by the young reception lady who had received him last time. The young lady’s eyes lit up, and she immediately put down the task she had been working on. She quickly walked over to Lin Ming, her breath somewhat rapid.

These days, there were many people in Sky Fortune City that knew the name Lin Ming. But although they were able to recognize Lin Ming’s name, and they didn’t know what he looked like. However, this young reception lady had once been responsible for Lin Ming’s inscription master examination and had his information. The Inscription Association of course knew that the dazzlingly bright star of Sky Fortune City and the number one genius of the Seven Profound Martial House was exactly the young man who had participated in the inscription master examination.

This was an amazing character!

“Mister Lin.” The young receptionist lady greeted with a sweet smile. She bent her small waist in a courtesy bow towards Lin Ming. Her beautiful figure combined with the secretary clothing had a flavorful appeal.

“Oh, it’s you. I’d like to speak to the association president.” Lin Ming said. He recognized this young reception lady.

“Very well. Please follow me.” The receptionist lady felt her palpitating heartbeat began to race. She was incomparably excited that Lin Ming had remembered her.

“Sorry for troubling you.”

“It is my honor to serve Mister Lin.” The young receptionist lady went straight to the inscription room. At this time every day, the association president would be at the inscription room. This was the time that he would teach his granddaughter. For Wang Xuanji, no matter how much time he spent on his martial arts cultivation or inscription technique, it would be difficult for him to have a breakthrough. Because of this, he had invested the majority of his efforts into his granddaughter.

The young receptionist lady opened the door to the inscription hall. This was the second time Lin Ming had been here. The first time was when he had taken his examination here.

At this moment, Wang Xuanji was sitting on a green jade platform. He was directing the fingers of a young girl at his side. This young girl was wearing the white robes of an inscription master. Her appearance was delicate, like fine, white dust. She was Wang Xuanji’s granddaughter, Wang Yuhan.

After Wang Xuanji noticed some people had arrived, he turned his head to look and was shocked.

“Mister Lin?”

“President Wang.” Lin Ming smiled and bowed in deference.

“Oh! Mister Lin is an infrequent visitor. It’s been a long time since you last came. I did not think that Mister Lin would not only be talented in inscription techniques, but also talented in martial arts! To be only 15 years old and be able to defeat the 32nd ranked disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House; your future is truly limitless!”

“President Wang praises me too much.” Lin Ming was not surprised that the Inscription Association was already aware of his situation.

Wang Yuhan also stopped her inscription technique that she was working on. She had a complicated look as she stared at Lin Ming. She was already extremely talented, with a fourth-grade martial talent and a fifth-grade soul talent. With this talent, her qualifications already surpassed that of Bai Jingyun and Murong Zi. In the aristocratic circles, those young juniors that wanted to marry Wang Yuhan were no less than those ardent fans of Bai Jingyun and Murong Zi.

But compared with this young man in her eyes, she simply felt too ashamed to even step out in public. The difference between her and Lin Ming’s inscription technique was already miles apart; it was simply comparing the Heavens to the Earth. She didn’t even want to think about the difference in their battle prowess. Wang Yuhan had devoted most of her energy into practicing inscription techniques, but in the martial arts aspect, she also only paid attention to cultivating. This was because inscription techniques required a deep amount of true essence, and therefore one had to have a high enough cultivation. As for fighting skills, Wang Yuhan knew nothing of those from the start. Let alone those monstrous geniuses of the Seven Profound Martial House, she would even lose to someone at the same cultivation level as her.

How the hell did this fellow practice? She had been practicing inscription techniques since she was 8 years old, and in her life she had always prioritized her cultivation and specialized in inscription techniques. Even if it was the monstrous talent Qin Xingxuan, she could compare with her in terms of inscription techniques. And recently she had progressed very fast; perhaps she might have even surpassed Qin Xingxuan.

But in contrast to this Lin Ming, Wang Yuhan was completely at a loss for words. Even if he started practicing inscription techniques from his mother’s womb, why would his level of skill be so bizarrely abnormal? She was still working hard at training the basics of finger movements, but he had already been able to use the ‘Bright Buddha Plucks the Lotus’.

“Mister Lin comes today, is there matter you need to discuss?”

As Wang Xuanji asked this, Lin Ming did feel somewhat embarrassed. For better or worse he was a registered inscription master of the Inscription Association. However, after registering and obtaining some materials, he hadn’t returned. And now that he finally came back, it was also for materials to use for inscription symbols.

Chapter 117 – Guest Inscription Master

Chapter 117 – Guest Inscription Master

…

…

…

Lin Ming said, “President Wang, I came this time because there are two matters that I wanted to inquire about. The first is that I would like to purchase some materials, and the second is that I would like to register as a guest inscription master and provide services to customers while gaining points.”

There were three types of inscription masters that could work at the Inscription Association. They were subordinate inscription masters, registered inscription masters, and guest inscription masters. A guest inscription master only had to hang his name up on a public board. However, the first two had to complete some tasks for the Inscription Association, such as solving some difficult problems for their colleagues, or creating some sort of special inscription symbol for their customers, and other such tasks before they could obtain points.

Now that Lin Ming needed to draw up a body inscription symbol, he was pushing the envelope in terms of his cultivation and skill in the aspects of inscription techniques. He needed to set aside a certain amount of special time in order to practice and improve his inscription technique. However, if he wanted to practice this sort of high-quality inscription technique, it required a substantial amount of money. Especially since he needed to do so with many precious materials, and even if he was able to buy these materials, he wouldn’t be able to find them in such a short amount of time.

In order to save money in the past, Lin Ming hadn't used materials to practice and had instead only stimulated his true essence to visualize the drawing process. But such a method had a very low efficiency, and Lin Ming wasn't able to afford the time that he needed in order to do so. Then he had remembered that he could come to the Inscription Association as a visiting inscription master, and be able to solve many different inscription related problems. This was the best method of cultivating his inscription technique, and the best part was that the precious materials would be provided by the customer. Doing this, Lin Ming no longer had to worry about economizing or saving his time.

Every day he would be able to encounter different precious materials and different problems. The materials needed would also be provided for free. After successfully drawing up or fixing whatever problem was at hand, he would also be awarded points. What way could possibly be more suitable for practice? However, not everyone would dare to practice in such a manner, because there had to be at least a 90% guaranteed success rate.

Lin Ming decided on this method of practice, and also had a general idea of how to acquire the materials he needed. He also didn't plan on concealing his status as an inscription master any longer. At first, Lin Ming did not have strength or status, but yet he was still able to draw up rare and powerful inscription symbols that were worth 2 or 3 thousand gold taels. To someone with power, meeting such a weak person was like seeing a chicken that was able to lay golden eggs. Some people might have tried to capture him for their own benefit, and lock him in a dungeon where he would be forced to create inscription symbols all day. That was why Lin Ming had hidden his status as an inscription master at first.

But now, Lin Min was a famous character in Sky Fortune City who had a great deal of influence. With the dual protection of the Seven Profound Martial House and the Crown Prince, not even the Tenth Prince dared to publicly move against him. Since Lin Ming now had such a preeminent status, he no longer worried about needing to conceal his identity as an inscription master.

“Guest inscription master? Wang Xuanji asked, slightly stunned. Normally only a great inscription master would ask to occupy such a lofty post. This was because if there was a problem, such as if they failed to draw up the inscription symbol, the Inscription Association had to compensate the customer for their precious materials or treasure.

Without a deep background, no one would dare to do this job.

To become a guest inscription master, they had to undergo the strict inspection of the Inscription Association. Those who could pass the inspection were only top-class characters among inscriptionists. Lin Ming did have exceptional talent and strength in inscription techniques, but that was only in comparison to his contemporaries. Last time, he had drawn up an inscription symbol with a true essence amplification rate of 32%. Among his peers, this result was truly monstrous, but to become a guest inscription master, it was still lacking.

The crux of the issue was that Lin Ming was simply too young. A guest inscription master had to face many different kinds of problems and questions, some of which were quite difficult. It was a job that required a great depth of experience. However, experience was something that was accumulated over the years.

If Lin Ming repeatedly failed, not only would that damage the reputation of the Inscription Association, but the amount of materials and treasure that the Inscription Association would have to compensate would be enough to give them a headache.

"Mister Lin, the problems that the Inscription Association generally needs to solve are not so simple. Because the materials are often very rare and difficult to obtain, the guest inscription master must be able to guarantee at least an 80% success rate. They must be assured that they can solve these complex problems with a high success rate. Even in the entire Inscription Association, there are very few individuals who are competent enough for this position." Wang Xuanji tactfully reminded Lin Ming. He wanted to persuade him without any difficulties; with Lin Ming's present reputation, the Inscription Association had to flatter him as much as they could.

Lin Ming smiled and said, "President Wang doesn't need to worry. I suppose, if I fail three times in a row, then I will offer to quit myself. As for the loss of materials and treasure, I will also take responsibility for compensating them."

“This…” Wang Xuanji frowned. He would be able to stand the loss of reputation from failing three times, but the point was, Lin Ming was still a child. If they let a young boy draw up an inscription symbol and it failed, how would they explain this to the customer?

But considering Lin Ming’s present status, Wang Xuanji didn’t directly decline him. He thought about it for a moment, and then nodded his head in agreement. “Three times.”

By now, Wang Yuhan opened her mouth and suddenly said, “Mister Lin, may I ask if you have found the right assistant?”

“Mm? Assistant?”

An inscription master would normally have one or two assistants. This was because there were many materials that could not be immediately used after they were purchased; they needed to be processed in certain ways. For instance, for some rare and precious plants, the juice had to be extracted, or some ores had to be grinded into fine powder, or the active ingredient had to be extracted from certain solvents; all of this would normally be done by an assistant. In the past, Lin Ming had done all of these things by himself.

The position of an assistant was not a simple or easy job. There were many precious and expensive materials, the slightest mistake meant that they would have to be discarded. This was why only inscription apprentices would usually take up this task.

Lin Ming truthfully said, “I have no assistant.”

Wang Yuhan looked to her grandfather, bit her lips, and asked, “Do you mind if I be your assistant?”

The young women of the Sky Fortune Kingdom were traditionally reserved and polite. If a girl offered herself up as a volunteer to a young boy as an assistant, there might be some suspicions and it could be easily misunderstood. Lin Ming’s current status was especially sensitive these days, no one knew how many young girls of Sky Fortune City wanted to marry him; the number could only be called countless. As such, Wang Yuhan had to muster up a lot of courage in order to ask this question.

However, she remembered that Lin Ming's drawing techniques when he drew up the symbols and lines were clearly different than those of Sky Fortune Kingdom. Wang Yuhan also dropped her girl's modesty; she wanted to experience the schools of inscription techniques outside of the Sky Fortune Kingdom, and this was the best opportunity.

Lin Ming hesitated. With an assistant he would be able to save a lot of time. With Wang Yuhan's ability, she would do perfectly well in handling materials.

Thinking this, Lin Ming nodded and said, "Then I will be relying on Miss Wang. I don't know if Miss Wang has had lunch yet. If Miss Wang had already eaten, then we may begin as soon as possible."

Wang Yuhan's eye twitched. This Lin Ming was quite resolute and vigorous; he actually wanted to begin immediately.

"Mm. I've already eaten."

"Good."

Lin Ming, Wang Yuhan, Wang Xuanji, and the young reception lady all went to the Inscription Hall. It was lunch break for the guest inscription masters, and not many people were in the hall. But, there were still several customers waiting, so that when the lunch break ended, they might be the first one to have their problems solved.

According to the rules of the Inscription Association, a customer only had to provide their own materials and treasure, clearly state their problem, and then they could return at a later time. But most customers would rather wait here and personally watch as the guest inscription master solved their problem. This was because whether it was a precious materials or a treasure, they were often very valuable, so they worried over the outcome.

Many people here had already waited a long time. As they saw the Inscription Association's President, Wang Xuanji enter the hall, their spirits immediately lifted. Was President Wang planning on personally taking action today? It had to be known that Wang Xuanji rarely personally stepped out these days. If someone could force him to take action, this characters had to be at least a duke or a prince, or a cultivator at the peak Houtian stage. When he utilized his inscription technique, with the end product being made by Wang Xuanji's own hands, the effect would usually be far better than a normal inscription master.

If Wang Xuanji was willing to personally take up the task, this would be their great fortune!

Several people looked at Wang Xuanji with shining eyes, their faces filled with a fervent eagerness.

Seeing Wang Xuanji walking towards them, they hurried to welcome him. A martial artists in his forties had already stepped up, and asked, “President Wang, I didn't expect to be able to meet you. Would you be able to take a look at this armor?” The martial artist said as he held up an ancient looking, plain black war armor.

This war armor looked to be made from the highest quality steel. After many years, there were only minor scratches on the surface of the armor, in particular the chest area. There was a half meter line that ran up the edge of a diamond shaped pattern. Because of this scratch, the diamond pattern was damaged.

This diamond pattern was the signifying mark left behind after placing on an inscription symbol. Because this war armor was damaged, that inscription symbol mark was ruined. If the inscription symbol mark was ruined, then the effects of the original inscription symbol would deteriorate, or even become completely invalid.

It was possible to damage treasures, especially those treasures that were in the armor class. Because they accumulated damage over time, in addition to the attacks from a top-level master, then it might even break.

This martial artist hoped that the Inscription Association was able to repair this inscription symbol. But, to repair an inscription symbol that was already placed on a treasure was a very difficult task. This diamond rune was an inscription symbol named the

‘Superhuman Strength Symbol’. It was a very complex inscription symbol; to repair it would not be easy. Even Wang Xuanji felt that this job was very problematic.

However, this kind of work was very appropriate for Lin Ming. Because the original inscription symbol had already shattered, even if Lin Ming failed, it couldn’t get any worse than it already was.

And the armor would not be broken. At most, it would be a loss of materials. If the materials were lost, then the Inscription Association would be able to compensate the exact same materials. But if the treasure was broken, then there was no means to refund the customer with the same armor.

Wang Xuanji glanced at Lin Ming with a faint smile. He was sure that Lin Ming would not be able to repair the ‘Superhuman Strength Symbol’. This was because Lin Ming’s school of inscription technique did not belong that of the Sky Fortune Kingdom’s. This ‘Superhuman Strength Symbol’ was one of the numerous and complex symbols that were produced from Sky Fortune Kingdom’s school of inscription techniques. If one did not understand its composition or drawing plan, then it would be impossible to know where to begin.

If Lin Ming was a guest inscription master, he would also encounter similar issues down the line. If he couldn’t solve something like this, it was better if he quit early.

Therefore even though Wang Xuanji knew the answer, he still sent a true essence sound transmission and asked, “How about it, does Mister Lin have a plan?”

At this point, Lin Ming had sent his soul force into the suit of war armor and was feeling the internal structure of the inscription symbol.

It was very difficult to detect the structure of an inscription symbol with soul force. If one didn’t understand the structure of an inscription symbol, it was impossible to know where to begin.

Lin Ming slight frowned, and eventually came to a conclusion. This diamond shaped inscription symbol should be some kind of inscription symbol with an effect of increasing the rate at which true essence was gathered. As for its internal structure, Lin Ming didn't know anything about it. After all, there were many differences in the inscription technique system between the Sky Fortune Kingdom and the Realm of the Gods.

Chapter 118 – Repairing the ‘Superhuman Strength Symbol’

Chapter 118 – Repairing the ‘Superhuman Strength Symbol’

…

…

…

Lin Ming’s level of inscription technique was fierce, but he was not omnipotent. Since he had never seen this inscription symbol before, it was impossible for him to fix this.

However, after pondering it for a moment, he sent a true essence sound transmission to Wang Xuanji, “President, I’ll give it a try.”

Since he had achieved the Third Stage of Body Transformation and his control of true essence had become stronger, Lin Ming taught himself how to use true essence to send a sound transmission.

“Mm?” Wang Xuanji was surprised. Had Lin Ming seen the ‘Superhuman Strength Symbol’ before? Even if he had, this ‘Superhuman Strength Symbol’ was an unusually complex one that was developed through Sky Fortune Kingdom’s school of inscription techniques. Even a great inscription master might not be able to draw it! Lin Ming was only 15 years old, how could he be familiar with its method of creation?

Lin Ming was indeed excessively talented, but Wang Xuanji still believed that there was no way that Lin Ming would be able to fix this ‘Superhuman Strength Symbol’.

"This is quite interesting. I'd like to see if Lin Ming is capable of repairing this 'Superhuman Strength Symbol'" Wang Xuanji revealed a smile as he thought this, and then said, "Good, then give it a try."

Lin Ming nodded, and that in the inscription platform.

As the middle-aged man saw Lin Ming sit down, he was dumbfounded. Scared, he quickly said, "President Wang, this is..."

The man couldn't understand, and he didn't know Li Ming; he only thought of him as an apprentice of the Inscription Association. Did Wang Xuanji really intend on letting such a young apprentice repair his armor? Was this not a joke?

Wang Xuanji said, "It's alright, it's only letting him try. If it doesn't work than I will personally help you with your problem."

"But...." The middle aged man painfully looked at those materials that he had carefully prepared. It really wrenched his heart. In accordance to the rules of the Inscription Association, if the customer came to the Inscription Association requesting a service, they had to supply materials as a reward, and they also had to supply the materials required for the request. If they didn't have the materials ready, then they could be provided by the Inscription Association as long as the customer had other materials that were similar in value.

Although he was a martial artist at the peak Pulse Condensation Period, to put out so many precious and rare materials so suddenly really caused his heart to feel like it was being torn in half. These materials cost 7 to 8 thousand taels of gold. The middle-aged martial artist had used more than a year of time before he was able to collect all of the materials he needed. This armor was a medium-grade human-step treasure that was his family heirloom, it was far too precious for him, otherwise he would not have put up so much gold and so many materials.

Wang Xuanji laughed and said, “It doesn’t matter. These materials that you brought, if he fails, then I assure you your armor will still be repaired.”

“That… alright.” With Wang Xuanji’s guarantee, the middle-aged man decided to let that little kid Lin Ming do as he wanted. He only hoped that what he did wasn’t so bad that not even Wang Xuanji could fix it.

But just where the hell had this little kid come from, that Wang Xuanji would let him fool around like this? Of Sky Fortune City’s inscription apprentices, besides Wang Yuhan and Qin Xingxuan, he hadn’t heard of anyone else. With such a complex ‘Superhuman Strength Symbol’, what results could he have from just fiddling around with it?

The middle-aged martial artist’s heart was full of puzzlement.

Lin Ming took the armor in his hand, and immersed his soul force into the ‘Superhuman Strength Symbol’. With the unsurpassed ‘Overbearing Soul Tactic’ soul law formula, he was able to condense his soul force into the thinnest string and send it into the inscription symbol, constantly perceiving the structure of the ‘Superhuman Strength Symbol’. He carefully wrote down every line and symbol structure that he could sense. At this time, because of the high degree of soul force that he was condensing, Lin Ming’s face was filled with unprecedented focus.

When he had been in the kitchen of the Great Clarity Pavilion, he also had this expression. Regardless of whether it was the vulgar and barbaric strength that he needed for deboning, or the delicate soul force control he needed to create the countless fine and complex lines and runes of inscription symbols, their essence was all the same in Lin Ming’s hands. One kind was used to ascertain the skeletal structure and tendons of a beast, and the other was used to draw the foundation symbols and foundation lines of inscription symbols.

What he was doing was using these principles he had learned to crack open the complex nature of symbol structure.

Wang Yuhan stood behind Lin Ming, quietly gazing at his profile. She could clearly feel Lin Ming's focused and sharp eyes. This look, whether intentional or not, revealed his intense spirit and dedication. It caused this youth to have an imposing aura that didn't seem to match his young age.

Wang Yuhan couldn't help but acknowledge that this sort of aura was very fascinating and swoonsome. Some puppy love girls would be easily attracted to this aura, and they would sink into it.

Could he really repair this 'Superhuman Strength Symbol?' Wang Yuhan couldn't believe that. Even though Lin Ming had created a number of miracles over and over again, this one was just far too difficult, and bordered on the impossible. Lin Ming was not from the school of Sky Fortune Kingdom's inscription techniques, and he was only 15 years old. At such a young age, it was just unthinkable that he could have achieved the pinnacle of two different schools of inscription techniques.

Lin Ming kept studying the inscription symbol for a quarter of an hour of time. During this quarter hour he had not budged a single inch. The middle-aged man seemed to become increasingly impatient. At this moment, Lin Ming opened his mouth and suddenly said, "President Wang, I want to ask you, if you were to repair this inscription symbol, how much of its effects ccould you restore?"

Wang Xuanji hesitated, then smiled and stroked his beard. This kid, did he want to compare with him?

Wang Xuanji said, "If this old man repairs the 'Superhuman Strength Symbol', I can probably restore at least 80% of its original effects. The 'Superhuman Strength Symbol' is a kind of supplementary inscription symbol. Once it is engraved on the armor, although it cannot directly increase the defensive power, it can increase the user's true essence gathering speed. The effect of this 'Superhuman Strength Symbol' was probably originally around 36 to 37%. If I repair it, the final effect should probably be around 30 to 31%.

The effectiveness of a repaired inscription symbol could not match its effect when it had first been drawn. Even if it was Wang Xuanji who personally repaired it, the truth of this would not chance.

"Oh, I understand. Then no matter what means I use, as long as the final rate of the armor's true essence gathering speed increases by at least 30%, then I have succeeded."

Ho! This kid sure had enough self-confidence!

Wang Xuanji watched Lin Ming with great interest. He dared say that to have the final effect be at least 30%, there weren't many who could accomplish this in the entirety of the Sky Fortune Kingdom, or even several of the surrounding countries. What did was this kid planning on doing?

He laughed and said, "If the guest inscription master could restore 28% then that would be good. If you can restore the effect to at least 28%, then you would be considered qualified."

Lin Ming nodded. He touched a ring on his ring finger, and the following scene left everyone shocked and dumbfounded. They saw Lin Ming leisurely pull out a long spear from the spatial ring. The spear shaft was eight feet, the spearhead eight inches, and the body of the spear shaft was a dark purple color while the edge of the spear tip was dark red like blood. This spear was the Penetrating Rainbow!

By now, even Wang Xuanji and Wang Yuhan were confused. He was repairing an inscription symbol; just what would a spear do?

"Young man, you... what are you doing?" The middle-aged martial artist looked on with fear and apprehension. Heavens! Drawing out such a long spear, and it looked like this spear was forged from dark purple elastic iron. Although it wasn't a treasure, it was certainly very sharp. He could only hope that this young fellow wasn't planning on using that sharp spear to poke his armor.

Lin Ming looked at the middle-aged martial artist and said, "I will destroy the 'Superhuman Strength Symbol' and draw a new one."

“De… destroy?” The middle-aged martial artist could hardly believe his ears. If it wasn’t for the presence of Wang Xuanji, he would have beaten the little sh*t until his mom didn’t recognize him! “You’re insane!”

Once an inscription symbol was placed on a treasure, it was very difficult to destroy. This was because the inscription symbol’s structure was imprinted deep within the treasure. As for the symbol mark, this was only manifested on the surface. For instance, for this ‘Superhuman Strength Symbol’s’ diamond mark design, it was only a brand that symbolized who the inscription master was, and was merely a decorative effect. Lin Ming’s flame design was the same; it was only an image that was drawn depending on the personality of the inscription master.

If this decorative brand was ruined, it still would not destroy the complex internal structure of the inscription symbol deeply buried in the treasure. If someone really wanted to destroy this inscription symbol, they would normally need to have an alchemist or refiner who was familiar with controlling flames to burn it away. This had a high cost and it also took a long time, because the fire had to burn through the cobweb-like structure of the inscription symbol.

To do this would not only destroy the inscription symbol, but would also lightly damage the treasure. But the most critical point was that it would affect future effects of inscription symbols that were placed on it.

That was why in most situations, if the inscription symbol brand was damaged, one could only repair it. In truth, repairing was much more difficult than starting anew, but it was far better than destroying the inscription symbol.

Lin Ming simply didn’t understand the structure of the ‘Superhuman Strength Symbol’ or know its plan, so naturally he couldn’t repair it. The approach he adopted was to destroy the ‘Superhuman Strength Symbol’, and then draw a new one on.

Lin Ming didn’t know how to control fire; therefore in order to destroy the inscription symbol, he could only take out the Penetrating Rainbow spear!

“Boy! If you keep speaking such nonsense, then don’t blame me for being rude!” The middle-aged man was ultimately a martial artist at the Pulse Condensation Period, and he was also an aristocrat. He had a certain status within Sky Fortune City. Although he was respectful to Wang Xuanji, to a baby boy of unknown origin like Lin Ming, he certainly could be rude.

At this moment, Wang Xuanji let out a light cough. This light cough was like a thunderclap to the middle-aged martial artist’s ears. The middle-aged martial artist shook, and then he immediately calmed down.

Wang Xuanji said, “Your treasure is ranked as a medium-grade human-step one. Even a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist would take time to destroy it, so why are you so nervous?”

The middle-aged man said, “I’m sorry, it’s just that this armor is my family’s heirloom, so I am a bit anxious.” Wang Xuanji was a martial artist whose cultivation was at the early Houtian stage. In terms of achievements in inscription, he was second to none. In front of someone like Wang Xuanji, the middle-aged man did not dare act rashly again.

Wang Xuanji looked to Lin Ming as he waited for an explanation. Lin Ming was also an inscription master, how could he now know the taboo of destroying an inscription symbol?

Lin Ming said, “President Wang, I dare to do so because I have a degree of certainty. Although I cannot guarantee that the treasure will not be damaged, but the damage won’t be too great. Also, I have a means to repair it.

The damage won’t be too great? To use such a heavy long spear and brute force to destroy an inscription symbol that had already merged into one organic whole with the armor, and he could still say ‘the damage won’t be too great’?

Wang Xuanji frowned, and remained silent. If Lin Ming destroyed the inscription symbol in the armor, then not even he would be able to repair it anymore.

Lin Ming said, “With my cultivation, to destroy the inscription symbol in the armor won’t take a short time. If President Wang feels that something is wrong at any time, then you can feel free to stop me.”

Wang Xuanji nodded; he could. Even if there was no true essence concentrated in it, this medium-grade human-step armor was still incomparably hard. To destroy the inscription symbol would take a period of time.

The middle-aged man also resigned himself to his fate. He decided that once he discovered something was amiss, he would immediately take the armor. At worst, the armor would simply not be repaired.

Lin Ming placed the armor on the inscription platform, and then stood ten feet back. He gripped the spear in his hand and held it out. Everyone present watched Lin Ming, wanting to see exactly what it was that he would do next.

Chapter 119 – Flowers in the Storm

Chapter 119 – Flowers in the Storm

…

…

…

Lin Ming placed the armor on the inscription platform, and then stepped ten feet back. He gripped the spear in his hand and held it out. Everyone present watched Lin Ming, wanting to see exactly what it was he would do next.

To destroy the inner structure of an inscription symbol by brute force, it was best to use an engraving knife. This was because the structure of the inscription symbol was like a spider web. Lin Ming had taken out such a large spear, how would that possibly be convenient?

At that moment, Lin Ming pointed his spear, flicked his wrist, aimed at the inscription symbol and fiercely thrusted out. The piercing, howling sound of the spearhead was heard throughout the room. Not only that, but the spear thrust also contained an indomitable momentum. It continued forth like a galloping horse, followed by a surge of unrelenting, Buddha-murdering rage and a violent killing anger.

This spear could easily pierce through a steel plate!

The middle-aged man’s eyes jumped. He subconsciously wanted to say stop, but at this moment, Lin Ming instantly withdrew the spear. That terrifying momentum was also restrained at that moment. The spear point was just above the armor, but it hadn’t actually pierced it.

The middle-aged man wanted to stay something but the words caught in his throat. He stared with wide eyes at Lin Ming's spear point, startled. What kind of abnormal control of strength was this?

To thrust a spear forward with momentum like a herd of horses, and yet still be able to instantly restrain it so that the momentum did not overflow, yet the spear point still stopped at the exact right location. It had to be said that this was a heavy long spear made from dark purple elastic iron; its weight should be no less than 800 jins. Just who was the young boy?

With such strength at this age, this definitely wasn't a nobody!

But though this youth had astonishing spear skills, just what was he planning on doing? A spear thrust, and the spear point suddenly stopping, but this spear didn't actually damage the inscription symbol in the armor. How was this related to inscription technique? Did this young boy actually just want to show off his impressive spear skills?

Let alone the middle-aged man, even Wang Xuanji did not understand the meaning behind Lin Ming's spear. He could only marvel at Lin Ming's spear skills, but because he also knew Lin Ming's identity, he didn't find this too surprising.

At this moment, Lin Ming thrust out his spear a second time. It was the exact same as a moment ago. The spear would stab out with nigh unstoppable momentum, and then just as it was about to contact the armor, it would suddenly stop!

Next, Lin Ming began to repeatedly and quickly thrust out his spear. The spear thrusts were becoming increasingly fast and the momentum grew with each stab. Gradually, this momentum rolled into a strong heavenly wind, but Lin Ming's spear point was still like a delicate falling raindrop. This was another spear skill of the 'Foundation Spear Technique' – 'Flowers in the Storm'.

The middle-aged man was becoming increasingly alarmed with each growing second. This young man only looked to be around fifteen or sixteen years old, and yet he already had such strength at such a young age. The only one he could think of with such strength who also used a spear, would be that dazzling youth of the Seven Profound Martial House that had recently become the rising star of Sky Fortune City…

It shouldn’t be.

Lin Ming already had such abnormal, heaven-defying strength. If he also had such insights into inscription technique, then it would be too preposterous; he would simply be the reincarnation of some demon king.

What was this young man doing?

Lin Ming had already continuously thrust out his spear for several dozen breaths of time. The number of times his spear thrusted out should have been several hundred by now. With such high-speed spear moves, and the over 800 jin Penetrating Rainbow, it was quite a heavy load on the muscles! If not for his solid foundation and freakish strength, as well as the fact that true essence had already thoroughly tempered his body, then he would have already damaged his muscles.

Slowly, Wang Xuanji discovered the profound and mysterious principles that were implicit within Lin Ming’s every thrust. He used his soul force to probe the armor, and to his disbelieving amazement, discovered that true essence infiltrated into the armor with each stab!

And what made Wang Xuanji most surprised, was that when he had used his soul force to track that infiltrating true essence, he found that the foreign true essence flowed along the structure of the inscription symbol, and with a strange and unfathomable power, began to actually disintegrate these structures!

How was he doing this!?

Wang Xuanji drew a deep breath; he was too shocked to speak a single word!

With each attack, the true essence turned into fine silk threads that flowed within the structure. To him, this was already unimaginable, but then those fine silk threads actually disintegrated the inscription symbol structures with an inscrutable and enigmatic power. How could such slender streams of true essence have such a mystifying might?

Lin Ming was, of course, using the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ ‘Flow like Silk’ technique. Not only did ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ focus on overwhelming strength, but it focused even more on controlling strength.

Strength Training’s ‘Flow like Silk’ was a method of controlling strength. The so called ‘strength’ referred to the strength of the human body; this also included the force of true essence. After reaching the Small Success of ‘Flow like Silk’, this silk-like true essence would be at one’s command.

But this silk-like true essence didn’t really have much of an effect. Because the tiny true essence threads didn’t have much offensive power, in order to give it striking power, there was only one way. That was – vibration.

Wang Xuanji discovered that this strange strength which was disintegrating the inscription symbol structures was exactly this true essence vibration!

This vibration was able to ignore defense, and be transmitted internally into any object. The true essence would turn into countless filaments, and each filament would vibrate as it passed through an object. As this vibration acted on every little structure, these tiny threads would create a truly terrifying amount of destruction.

This was why when Lin Ming had thrusted out his spear at a stone column on the martial stage, that column had been instantly pulverized into an immeasurable number of small stones. This was because Lin Ming’s cultivation of ‘Flow like Silk’ was not thorough; the true essence silk threads were too few, and the frequency at which they vibrated was too low.

If he managed to achieve the Perfect stage of ‘Flow like Silk’, then the filaments of true essence threads would number in the trillions, and once these countless threads entered into the particles and molecules of an object, the frequency of vibrations would rise to a new, alarming level. In that situation, if the spear thrust touched the stone column, then that stone column would simply turn into fine dust that would scatter into the wind.

Of course, Lin Ming was still very far from such a distant realm. If he actually managed to ever reach such a dream-like boundary, then he would be able to eliminate every trace of the inscription symbol within the treasure without damaging the treasure at all.

Rather than as it was now. With so many spear thrusts, the treasure must have sustained some damage.

Wang Yuhan also realized that Wang Xuanji's face was colored in shock. She could not help but use a true essence sound transmission to ask, "Grandfather, what is Lin Ming doing?"

Wang Xuanji sighed a lonely breath, and said, "Use your soul force to feel the inscription symbol structure of that armor, and then you'll know what he is doing."

Wang Yuhan wondered what sort of discovery she would make by probing the armor with her soul force. She sent out her soul force and penetrated into the armor. Although Wang Yuhan's soul force was relatively weak, she had a vague feeling of what was occurring inside the armor.

Surprised, she covered her mouth. "Grandfather, this is... how is this possible?"

Wang Xuanji shook his head and could only said with a rueful smile, "This is also the first time that I am seeing this technique. I could only guess that this effect is from a special kind of true essence manipulation method. This manipulation method is able to turn true essence into countless tiny threads, and each thread in turns is controlled to vibrate against the inscription symbol structure and disintegrate it. This is extremely demanding of one's control of true essence. I cannot begin to imagine how this is done."

Wang Yuhan no longer inquired further. She only diligently closed her eyes and felt the energy changes within that treasure. This time when she looked, those filaments of true essence were like the intelligent gossamer threads of spider silk that broke apart the inscription symbol structures. She could only feel a convoluted, esoteric feeling. It was like a large door had been placed in front of her that contained all the myriad of infinite mysteries of the world. However, no matter how hard she tried to look, she could not see clearly.

To have the feeling of all the mysteries between Heaven and Earth at her fingertips, but still be unable to touch them, this caused Wang Yuhan to be excited but also unbearably anxious.

After a little less than half an incense stick of time had passed, Lin Ming had already let out 6 or 7 hundred spear thrusts in a single breath. Although he had amazing physical strength, and he also had the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ supplementing his true essence, there was still a light sheen of perspiration on his forehead.

At this time, Lin Ming finally stopped. His withdrew his spear, turned his right hand, and the Penetrating Rainbow disappeared back into the spatial ring.

As for the treasure armor, besides some superficial white marks on the surface, there weren’t any other damages.

He had finally finished. Although ‘Flow like Silk’ was incomparably exquisite, the structure of the inscription symbol and the armor had already blended together as one. Lin Ming had inevitably damaged part of the internal structure of the armor. This part was the true essence array that the refining master had placed within the treasure at its creation.

This kind of damage would not lessen the defensive capabilities of the armor, however, in the future, if a martial artist concentrated their true essence in the armor, there would be some hindrance.

But even so, it was enough for Wang Xuanji to be surprised. If it were an alchemy master who was familiar with controlling fire that had done this, it would still be impossible for them to achieve such an effect.

After eliminating the old inscription symbol, Lin Ming didn't immediately start on drawing a new one. Instead, he sat in meditation and revolved the 'True Primal Chaos Formula', restoring his true essence to its optimum condition.

The 'True Primal Chaos Formula' had a very formidable effect in supplementing true essence. As soon as an incense stick of time had burned, Lin Ming had already made a complete recovery. He took out a piece of paper and began to write a list of materials that were readily available. Recently, Lin Ming had been in constant contact with Sky Fortune Kingdom's inscription technique network, and as such, was already very familiar with the names of various materials. It was a different situation from when he had confused the materials from the Sky Spill Continent and those from the Realm of the Gods.

After he was done writing up the list, he handed it to the young reception lady of the Inscription Association and said, "If I could trouble you to prepare the materials from this list."

"Oh, of course." The young reception lady responded as she received the list.

At this moment, Wang Yuhan hurriedly said, "I'll go together with you."

She was now Lin Ming's assistant; getting materials ready was one of an assistant's key jobs.

The Inscription Association was home to the largest and richest reserve of materials in the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom. Even if Lin Ming had listed a few difficult to find materials, they would still be very easy to prepare.

The inscription symbol that Lin Ming planned to create today was a simplified version of the 'Icefrost Guard'.

This type of inscription symbol was used specifically for armor. Not only could it increase the true essence gathering speed of martial artists, but it could also provide a slight boost in strengthening the defense. If this was the original version of the "Icefrost Guard', then one could also use the inscription technique 'Ring of Frozen Ice'. This technique would activate during an attack, and would send out a freezing circular wave of true essence, which would affect an opponent's movement speed by drastically reducing it.

However, the original 'Icefrost Guard' required a number of materials that were very rare and precious. There were several materials that not even the Inscription Association would necessarily be able to find. Not only that, but today was Lin Ming's first attempt at drawing the 'Icefrost Guard'. If he tried to draw up the far more complex original version, then he would have a greater risk of failure.

Hence, he decided to draw up a simplified version.

With Lin Ming's current cultivation and level of technique, the simplified version of the 'Icefrost Guard' was relatively easy.

"15 grams of star rock ground into powder, and mix that into half a cup of third-level vicious beast blood. Mix well. Take juice extract from crushed black bone grass and add that into three times the amount of cold spring water…" Lin Ming sent Wang Yuhan a true essence sound transmission and rapidly listed out the materials he needed and how he needed them processed. Many of these material preparation instructions were exceedingly complex and detailed.

Chapter 120 – Icefrost Guard

Chapter 120 – Icefrost Guard

…

…

…

Lin Ming sent Wang Yuhan a true essence sound transmission and rapidly listed the materials he required and how he needed them processed. Many of these material preparation instructions were exceedingly complex and detailed.

However, Wang Yuhan had a deep history of inscription technique learnings, and her memory was quite keen. Lin Ming spoke what would seem like an endless string of unintelligible garble, but Wang Yuhan only nodded and said, “Understood,” before proceeding to prepare the complex materials.

Wang Yuhan was very skillful at processing the various materials. Each time a material passed through her hands, it was like a magician that was working his magic with smoke and fire. The materials changed to a glossy color, and this tedious procedure, under Wang Yuhan’s dexterous and pale fingers, was filled with a beautiful esthetic sense like passing clouds and flowing water.

In terms of processing materials, Lin Ming felt that Wang Yuhan’s skill at this task was above his. The majority of inscription apprentices’ first contact with inscription techniques was with handling and processing materials, but Lin Ming had actually skipped this step and gone straight to the top.

Assisted by Wang Yuhan, Lin Ming’s inscription symbol plan proceeded much more smoothly.

Lin Ming began to revolve the ‘Overbearing Soul Tactic’, and with a turn of his hand, a drop of chilly deep blue liquid rose into the air. Lin Ming began to wave his fingers, and the drop turned into a series of strikingly brilliant rainbow lights.

As the first foundation line was drawn, Lin Ming waved his hand again, and a second drop of liquid floated up. The stunning rainbow light shined once more, but this time, a faint afterglow from the first foundation line was left behind in the eyes of those watching…

Wonderfully stunning runes appeared in the air one after another, as they constantly superimposed on each other. In the times that the runes flowed into the air and mixed, Lin Ming rarely failed.

Wang Yuhan had already finished processing all the materials, so she was standing on the sidelines at staring with her large and beautiful eyes, unblinking as she stared at Lin Ming’s every move, lest she miss even a single detail.

But to Wang Yuhan, it was impossible to learn a foreign inscription creation method by only watching. Inscription techniques involved a very fine and complex control of soul force, and not only that, but if there was even a single slight error in the foundation symbols or lines, then it would cause a massive change in its effects. These details were things that could not be seen with one’s own eyes.

Wang Yuhan naturally understood these things, but she still hoped that through watching, she would be able to obtain some inspirations. Of her grandfather Wang Xuanji’s skills, she had already learned everything that there was to learn; the only things that he couldn’t teach her were due to her low martial arts cultivation. However, Lin Ming’s inscription technique was different; it was from a completely different school of thought from the Sky Fortune Kingdom. Beyond that, it was a much more mysterious and profound technique. While she did not dare to dream that Lin Ming would teach her these mystical inscription technique methods, it was still a rare opportunity to look in from the sidelines.

As time passed bit by bit, Wang Yuhan became increasingly startled. Lin Ming did not even pause for a second in his drawing process; it was as if each movement was born out of his most basic instincts, and each movement was fluid at his fingertips and without any hint of hesitation.

These actions may have seemed simple, but Wang Yuhan was an expert who had been exposed to inscription techniques since birth, and she could tell that in these random drawings of Lin Ming, there were 7 or 8 changes in the intensity of soul force. These rapid changes were so fast that unless one went through a long and grueling period of practice, it was simply not possible for them to be imprinted in the body's reflexive memory like this.

As a quarter hour passed, there were already several dozen runes that were floating in midair, and became an increasingly complex inscription symbol as they layered upon each other. Generally, only a senior inscription master or even a truly accomplished elder of inscription technique would be able to draw this. A beginning inscription master simply didn't have the true essence reserves to support such a demanding process.

But Wang Yuhan wasn't too surprised about this. Lin Ming's strength had already touched upon the realm of a martial artist at the Large Success of Bone Forging stage. In consideration of that, to have such a thick and pure true essence was nothing unusual.

After another quarter hour passed, there were more than 70 symbols that had accumulated in front of Lin Ming. At this time, Lin Ming finally withdrew his hands, and all the glittering airborne symbols began to coalesce and converge upon each other like rays of shining light that were drawing together. For a brief moment, the Inscription Hall seemed as if it was filled with a number of wondrous stars, and eventually, they all blended together into a single symbol.

Lin Ming added a single stroke, and the inscription symbol turned into a flame-shaped pattern, and gently fell like a feather onto the armor.

With a chi chi sound as the symbol touched down, a flame mark appeared on the armor. At this moment, something amazing occurred. There was a slight jitter as if the armor were shivering, and then with the flame mark as the center, blue colored waves began to proliferate and ripple outwards. The plain black war armor gradually began to change to an ice blue color!

“Mm?” Wang Xuanji’s eyes widened. Could an inscription symbol actually change the color of a treasure?

In his lifetime, Wang Xuanji had read an immense number of ancient texts. He knew that in these texts, there were certain inscription symbols that because they had a rich, strong power and affinity towards one of the five elements, once that inscription symbol was placed on a treasure it could change its color.

For instance, a fire attribute inscription could cause a treasure to be burning red, an ice attribute inscription could cause a treasure to be icy blue, and a metal affinity inscription could cause a treasure to glitter…

However, this was only records that were in the ancient texts. Because Sky Fortune Kingdom’s inscription technique was limited, although there were some inscription symbols that contained a hint of elemental power, such as the ‘Water Parting Symbol’, or the ‘Gold Bell Symbol’, Wang Xuanji had never heard of an inscription symbol that could change the color of a treasure; today would be his first time witnessing such a miracle.

The middle-aged martial artist only saw that his armor had turned a frosty blue; he didn’t know the reason why or what it meant. At this time, Wang Xuanji excitedly stepped forward and took the armor in his hands. He let his true essence flow into the armor to feel the effect of the instruction symbol.

With this test, Wang Xuanji took a deep, disbelieving breath. The true essence gathering effect was increased by 30%.

On a normal treasure, a 30% increase wasn’t too impressive. However, this treasure had been slightly damaged. If the treasure was wholly complete, then the increased effect range would have been at least 36%. Even if Wang Xuanji had personally drawn up an inscription symbol himself and placed it on an untarnished treasure, the best he could manage would be 42%.

36% to 42% was only missing 6%. This Lin Ming was only 15 years old. But in terms of inscription accomplishments, in comparison to himself who had been steeped within the art of inscription for nearly a hundred years, was there only such a small disparity between them?

This caused Wang Xuanji to feel a deep sense of frustration.

And not only that, but this inscription symbol that Lin Ming had drawn had also spontaneously created an icy layer of cold, protective film around the armor that was able to increase its defensive capabilities. Although the increase was not too high, it was still extremely rare for an inscription symbol to produce two different results together. In Sky Fortune Kingdom's school of inscription techniques, there were no more than 30 different kinds of inscription symbols that could accomplish this, and the value of each was more than 3000 gold taels!

He was a monstrous genius of inscription, while simultaneously having been able to comprehend a martial intent. His perception of the Dao of martial arts could only be called heaven-defying. There were simply too many dazzling halos that were concentrated on his single body, that even the gods would be jealous!

Wang Xuanji tossed the armor to the middle-aged martial artist and said, "Give it a look."

The middle-aged martial artist poured his true essence into the armor, and a moment later, a pleasantly surprised expression crossed his face. As the owner of the armor, he was naturally familiar with the condition of his armor.

"Satisfied?" Wang Xuanji casually asked.

"Satisfied! Satisfied!" The middle-aged martial artist quickly nodded. He looked at Lin Ming, and this time there was a touch of respect in his gaze. The middle-aged martial artist was not an inscription master, and didn't have much of an understanding about inscription techniques, so he only knew that this young boy was amazing. But amazing to what extent, he didn't have a clear idea.

"This is President Wang's apprentice? A famous teacher has a truly outstanding disciple. Terrific! Extraordinary!"

"My apprentice?" Wang Xuanji said with a self-deprecating smile, "I'm not able to teach such a fierce apprentice."

"President Wang is too modest. However, this little friend is truly the most talented young inscription master that I've ever seen." The middle-aged man said a few words of flattery. After all, he could tell that Lin Ming was an inscription master with an overabundance of talent; flattering him would only benefit him in the future. However at this point, Wang Xuanji said in a tepid tone, "If you have nothing else, then you may go."

The incoming words of flattery that the middle-aged man was about to say caught in his throat. He embarrassedly smiled and said, "Then I will not disturb you. I will come back another day to give thanks." The middle-aged man apologetically smiled and then left.

At this moment, Wang Xuanji was not in a very good mood. He had painstakingly invested all of his efforts and care into Wang Yuhan, in the hopes that he could raise Wang Yuhan into the most preeminent inscription master that the Sky Fortune Kingdom had ever seen. However, he did not know where the hell this little boy Lin Ming had come from. Seeing him in action simply caused Wang Xuanji to feel a great sense of defeat. Let alone Wang Yuhan, in a couple of years, even he might be surpassed by this abnormally devilish boy.

He had spent the greater part of his life studying inscription techniques, but was he really so inferior in talent? Wang Xuanji's heart inevitably produced such a thought.

Lin Ming did not know what sort of thoughts Wang Xuanji was contemplating. He took a short rest, and then prepared to solve the second problem. The second client was an aristocratic family's young son, around 20 or 30 years old. He already bore witness to Lin

Ming weave his wonderful inscription technique, so after seeing Lin Ming call him, he hurried over and talked about his problem as he laid out a pile of materials.

Seeing this pile of materials, Lin Ming was quite happy. These were all rare and precious materials. His choice of becoming a guest inscription master was right. With so many rare and precious materials at his disposal to practice, his inscription technique would be able to progress by leaps and bounds. Before long, he would be able to draw up the body inscriptions symbol.

…

For the entire afternoon, Lin Ming solved a number of different problems. In order to avoid interfering factors, Lin Ming was given a separate room at the Inscription Association. After he obtained the materials, the door would shut, and only Lin Ming and Wang Yuhan would be inside. Wang Yuhan was responsible for preparing and processing the materials, and Lin Ming would then begin to draw up the inscription symbol.

Drawing inscription symbols was very consuming of one’s soul force and true essence. A low-level or intermediate inscription master would usually be completely exhausted after drawing just one inscription symbol. A high-level inscription master or an elder inscription master would usually be able to draw up 2 to 3, or sometimes even 3 to 4.

But Lin Ming, in this one afternoon of time, had continuously drawn up five different inscription symbols. And now, he was even planning on creating his sixth!

This gave the already apprehensive Wang Yuhan even more worries. She was only responsible for handling materials, and that was taxing enough on her true essence reserves; it left her feeling weak. But this Lin Ming fellow was just a tireless machine.

In fact, after each inscription symbol drawing was completed, Lin Ming did have a very high rate of consumption. After every one he would begin to revolve the ‘Overbearing Soul

Tactic’ to nourish his lost soul force, and he would also revolve the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ to supplement his true essence.

Chapter 121 – The Vanished Blood Symbol

Chapter 121 – The Vanished Blood Symbol

…

…

…

Relying on his pure soul force and deep reserves of true essence, Lin Ming was able to continuously persist throughout the entire afternoon. During this time period, he reached the limit of his ability several times. But, this was also a method of practice. Without being pushed to the limit, it would be difficult to progress.

When his true essence neared complete consumption, Lin Ming never begrudged himself to pull out a true essence stone and then enter into the ethereal martial intent state. Under the state of ethereal martial intent, the true essence throughout Lin Ming's body would spontaneously move at a pace several times faster than normal, with a near perfect path of circulation. Under this cultivation state, his advancement was very fast.

Gradually, the sun began to fall down below the western horizon. The light that once peeked into the room began to dim down. Wang Yuhan lit a lamp. Seeing that Lin Ming was still sitting in meditation and regulating his breathing, she hesitated several times as she debated whether or not to disturb him. After a while, Wang Yuhan could not bear it anymore, and she finally said, "Mister Lin, this… we should eat a meal…"

"Oh? Yes, of course, you eat first. Just bring me back something nice. I'm almost done adjusting my condition, and then I will finish this inscription symbol drawing first."

Drawing another one?

Wang Yuhan was at a loss for words; this would be the seventh one.

To draw up seven inscription symbols in the afternoon, and not only that, but each one being very complex, with dozens of symbols and lines that needed to fuse together… not even a top-level inscription master would be able to persist through such a task.

Wang Yuhan no longer compared herself to Lin Ming, but placed Lin Ming as a level of character similar to her own grandfather.

Shaking her head, Wang Yuhan headed down to have dinner. After eating dinner, she came back, and sure enough, Lin Ming had begun already drawing the seventh inscription symbol, and was almost halfway done.

Wang Yuhan moved to the side and set down the plate of food that she had brought up. She quietly watched every movement of Lin Ming, earnestly committing them to memory, and occasionally she would even subconsciously reach out her hand, and follow Lin Ming's movements. Although she knew that even if she copied these movements, it was to no avail of discerning the deep mysteries within them.

As time slowly passed, Wang Yuhan looked at those gorgeous and brilliant inscription lines, and then turned to Lin Ming. She watched as his fingertips danced in the air, and shimmering lights followed his incomparably smooth control of true essence. She also saw the fine beads of sweat that covered his face, and his incomparably focused expression.

Gradually, Wang Yuhan entered a state like she was lost in a trance. Her vision unconsciously moved from Lin Ming's face to his fingers and back again. At that moment, she felt like she had been infected by the young boy's dedicated focus.

Wang Yuhan finally snapped out of her daze as Lin Ming let out a light fu! sound. The several dozens of inscription symbols and lines began to condense into one, and with that sparkle of light, Wang Yuhan managed to regain her composure. She was somewhat flustered, and her pretty face blushed.

"Seventh!" Lin Ming let loose a long breath and completely collapsed back into his chair. Now, he didn't even have the strength to move a finger.

“The… Mister Lin, the food is getting cold.”

“Oh.’ Lin Ming propped himself up and received the plate of food. He took big gulping bites as he ate. Wang Yuhan was sitting somewhat cramped at the side, quietly gazing at the hourglass in the room, watching the sand fall, grain by grain.

“In the foundation lines, when drawing up the ‘rock’ pattern, it is better to add a fold-shaped structure.” Lin Ming mindlessly remarked after finishing half of his meal.

Wang Yuhan was slightly stunned, and then felt a great happiness followed by an overwhelming exultation. Lin Ming was teaching her inscription techniques! This kind of inscription technique was from beyond the borders of the Sky Fortune Kingdom, and moreover its degree of exquisiteness and subtlety far surpassed anything that the Sky Fortune Kingdom school of inscription could ever hope to achieve.

By now Lin Ming had recovered some of his true essence. He readily drew out a ‘rock’ line pattern in the air, slowing his tempo as much as he could so that Wang Yuhan had time to clearly see the changes in soul force. In particular, when drawing that folded-pattern, he lowered the speed to a bare minimum. Lin Ming knew what the driving reason was behind Wang Yuhan’s request to serve as his assistant. She had accompanied him for an entire afternoon, helped a great deal, and also expended much of her own true essence and soul force. Yet, the things she could learn were extremely limited.

She was a girl who was also the beloved granddaughter of the Inscription Association’s president. Such a proud girl had actually dropped her reservedness to act as his assistant for this afternoon. If Lin Ming didn’t return the favor, then he would have felt bad about himself.

Therefore in the free time that he had while eating his meal, Lin Ming continuously taught Wang Yuhan several foundation lines. Although just learning these basic foundation lines was far from being able to use them in any sort of practical application, Lin Ming believed that with Wang Yuhan’s aptitude towards inscription, along with her unceasing efforts to strive towards greater heights of inscription technique, that she would inevitably be able to derive a great deal of inspiration from this in the future.

“Thank you, Mister Lin.” Wang Yuhan said with a heartfelt expression of gratitude.

“I want to thank you instead.”

“Is… will Mister Lin be coming back tomorrow?”

“Tomorrow? Mm, I should come back sometime in the afternoon. In the morning I have to practice at the Seven Profound Martial House.” Because of the core disciple test, the Seven Profound Martial House had promised that Lin Ming would be able to use the seven major killing arrays for ten full days. Time at the seven major killing arrays was extremely valuable. It would be a waste if he didn’t use it because he was practicing inscription techniques instead.

“Can I also be your assistant for tomorrow?” Wang Yuhan asked with anticipation.

Lin Ming brightly smiled and said, “Of course you can.”

…

That evening, Lin Ming returned to the Seven Profound Martial House and began to digest what he had learned by practicing today.

In the afternoon, Lin Ming had spent three and a half hours to draw up a total of seven inscription symbols. The materials for these inscriptions were all precious. Lin Ming had many faults in drawing up the inscription symbols, which caused some of the materials to be wasted. However, he hadn’t yet encountered a situation in which the inscription symbol would go out of control and then collapse with an explosion.

As long as the whole thing didn’t come tumbling down in a fiery explosion, some errors could be tolerated.

According to the regulations of the Inscription Association, customers had to pay the reward with materials. The total price of the service was twice that of the materials used, sometimes they also needed to pay certain fees for services rendered.

Of the materials that were left over, 60% went to the guest inscription master, and 40% went to the Inscription Association.

Lin Ming took a few materials that he could use for himself and exchanged the rest with the Inscription Association for points.

“At the rate I’m earning points, I’ll probably have enough points after ten more days to buy some of the materials I need from the inscription Association. As for the rarer materials, I’ll need to wait until my inscription technique improves further, and only then will I have a chance of getting them. The materials for those two body inscription symbols are just too difficult to collect.”

“Through the process of earning points, I can also cultivate. I’ve been creating inscription symbols continuously and using many different types of materials. Not only is my inscription technique progressing quickly, but even my soul force is slowly growing. The ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ is also improving; I can feel that I’m faintly approaching the Small Success stage of the second layer. I hadn’t actually thought that I could practice so many things in a single manner.”

“My consumption of true essence stones is really fast. In just one day I’ve already used three. This is simply burning money away.”

In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, true essence stones, according to their degree of purity, ranged between 500 gold taels to 1000 gold taels. The true essence stones that the Seven Profound Martial House handed down to its disciples were the probably the most inferior ones, at 500 gold taels.

But the more than 100 true essence stones that the Crown Prince had gifted to Lin Ming actually belonged to the lustrous top-grade pure essence stones, which had a value of 1000 gold taels each.

True essence stones were very scarce in the Sky Fortune Kingdom; it was extremely difficult to find a massive amount of them.

In turn, it was difficult to trade true essence stones for gold. Even the wealthy aristocratic families would find it difficult to afford such an expensive price; four or five true essence stones together was equal to a treasure.

Lin Ming had over 200 true essence stones on hand and he used them every day like he was eating candy. There weren't many people in the entire Sky Fortune City that were able to do as he did.

"I'll probably use up the true essence stones I have in two months. I'll have to have the Crown Prince help me buy them, at worst I'll just reimburse the money." After becoming a guest inscription master, Lin Ming found a way to cultivate that was also able to make money.

He estimated that in a single month he would be able to make more than 200,000 gold taels without a problem. Of course, this was on the premise that there were enough rich martial artists that were seeking his services.

A normal guest inscription master would be able perform 1 or 2 tasks every day. This was because even if they could continue to do more, they would not be in an optimal condition to do so, and it would be difficult to draw a perfect inscription symbol and thus harm their reputation.

These inscription masters usually worked 20 days every month. It was a good result to make 20 or 30 thousand gold taels at the end, assuming that they did not fail.

But Lin Ming, was able to draw up inscription symbols 7 or 8 times a day. In one month he could work the entire 30 days. He was simply a freak of nature.

After he bathed himself, Lin Ming stayed in the bathtub and entered into the ethereal martial intent state. He let the true essence in his body revolve on its own as it followed its perfect path of circulation. Like this, Lin Ming sat for two hours.

Because the true essence circulation continued at high speed, the water in the tub began to heat up and give off a white fog. Soon, the entire bathroom was filled with a dense cloud of water vapor. Every time Lin Ming let loose a breath, his breath stirred a whirlpool in the air.

At midnight, Lin Ming awoke from his ethereal martial intent state, the countless tiny units in his body began to stir, and the vibrating true essence overflowed from his body like a gushing tide. The mist in the room suddenly disappeared.

However because the mist had been in the room for a long time, the entire room was dripping wet, and even Lin Ming's clothes were soaked.

As he stood up from the bath, Lin Ming inadvertently glanced at the Purple Gold Flexible Armor that the Crown Prince had gifted to him. With a glance, Lin Ming suddenly froze. This is…

Lin Ming grabbed the Purple Gold Flexible Armor. He looked at it, startled, and felt a great shock in his heart. How did that peak Houtian master's blood symbol that he had drawn with his own blood essence disappear!?

Today, he had been to the Inscription Association. For safety concerns, Lin Ming had worn the Purple Gold Flexible Armor. It was fine then, but after taking a bath, he discovered that the blood symbol had disappeared!

It was more accurate to say that most of the blood symbol had disappeared. There was still a tiny corner of the blood symbol that remained, but even that was already completely blurred.

This vague feeling, it was similar to ink being soaked by water.

Could it be that the mist from the bath had infiltrated into the blood symbol and ruined it? If so, then that peak Houtian master was simply too horrible and unbelievable.

Or, had the Crown Prince been cheated? Was this flexible armor itself a fake?

No, that couldn't be right. When the Crown Prince had given him this armor, he had personally proved it with his own soul force, and had truly found that it contained the vital blood essence of a formidable master. Moreover, it was written with a supremely exquisite technique in the flexible armor, penetrating it, and had already become part of the treasure.

That blood symbol was just like an inscription symbol that was placed on a treasure. Only by using some sort of special method, for instance having an alchemist use fire to burn it away, or using the 'Flow like Silk' technique like Lin Ming did, could one remove it. Otherwise, it was basically impossible to separate it without completely destroying the treasure.

So what the hell had just happened?

Chapter 122 – The Magic Cube Reappears

Chapter 122 – The Magic Cube Reappears

…

…

…

Lin Ming could not understand. Was it possible that sometime today, someone had tried to ambush him with some secret, arcane ability that was blocked by the blood symbol, and thus the blood symbol disappeared?

That should be impossible. If someone really did have such profound abilities, and they could cause the blood symbol to disappear in a situation without him knowing, then it would have to be someone that was at least of the Xiantian stage. But that kind of person could simply kill him with a flick of their finger, and those major characters weren't people that Zhu Yan or the Tenth Prince could possibly hope to request.

Lin Ming really couldn't understand what was going on. Instead, he decided to put away the flexible armor, and then go to bed.

That night, perhaps because of the overconsumption of his soul force and true essence, Lin Ming slept very soundly.

…

He blurrily stumbled in an endless realm of jet black space that was incomparably vast. It was as if he was floating in the dark, starry night within the infinite cosmos. Countless fluttering transparent ghosts floated around him, and in these transparent ghosts were countless points of light, as if they were mirrors shining back on him. The points of light varied in size, from smaller than a grain of sand to spheres the size of his palm. They followed a strangely mysterious pattern of movement. At the center of all these bright lights was a orb of luminescent light, a foot in diameter. This orb of light emitted a dim, creamy white halo, which gave off a very warm and soft feeling.

This was… the space within the Magic Cube!

Lin Ming was surprised beyond measure! How did he arrive back at the Magic Cube?

After the first time that he had entered the Magic Cube, the Magic Cube had entered into his body and hidden there. He had been unable to summon it or even touch it again, so why was he suddenly able to enter into it today?

Although this was a dream, after realizing that this was the space within the Magic Cube, Lin Ming's consciousness instantly sobered, but he was still unable to retreat from the space of the Magic Cube.

Of course, Lin Ming was not prepared to leave now. His gaze fell on the soul fragments that shined like liquid stars. He looked at them with some excitement, and even more solemnity.

At first, it was a soul fragment that had brought him so many opportunities. Had it not been for that soul fragment, then even if he had comprehended an ethereal martial intent, then he would have at most stopped at the Houtian stage, and would have been unable to progress to the Xiantian stage.

Without a doubt, these soul fragments contained an inexhaustible supply of buried legendary treasures. But, they also contained a hidden murderous intent. If he was not careful, then Lin Ming's consciousness would be swallowed by the soul fragment, and he would forever be beyond redemption.

"Was every soul fragment an ownerless soul? Could there be certain fragments that still contained a spirit mark that hadn't been erased yet?"

A human's soul was composed of two parts. One was its memory, and the other was a spirit mark. If the spirit mark was erased, then only the memory would be left over and it would be an ownerless soul. An ownerless soul only had instinct, and didn't have intelligence.

If the spirit mark was not erased, then the soul fragment would have its own independent consciousness. If he swallowed this kind of soul fragment, then Lin Ming simply had no way to deal with a soul fragment that had a spiritual mark. Even if he managed to suppress it, it might even cause him to have a split personality and be constantly disoriented.

Lin Ming stood among the vast, starry black space for a long time. He was not in a hurry to do anything. He skeptically stared at the palm-sized, shining light fragments, not daring to go near them. As for that large ball of light that was dead center in the middle of all the other light fragments, Lin Ming definitely avoided it. He very much suspected that the large orb of light he saw was formed from that mysterious woman that he saw in the dreamland.

Mm? This is…

As Lin Ming gazed at that large ball of light, he suddenly discovered that there was something unusual about it. On the ball of light suddenly appeared a faint blush, as if it was colored with blood.

Blood?

This sudden idea turned Lin Ming's mind cold. The blood symbol on the Purple Gold Flexible Armor was also formed by blood. He remembered that when he had worn the flexible armor, the location of where the Magic Cube was sleeping, hidden within him, was over his heart, which was probably the same position as that blood symbol had been!

Was it possible that…

Was the flexible armor's blood symbol absorbed by the Magic Cube?

The Magic Cube had absorbed the blood essence of a peak Houtian master that had been in the flexible armor?

This sudden dawning caused Lin Ming to feel incredulity.

Perhaps it was precisely because of this absorption of blood that he was able to enter into the space of the Magic Cube once again.

The Magic Cube was able to absorb blood essence?

The discovery made Lin Ming happy and worried at the same time. He was happy because he had discovered some secrets of the Magic Cube. What he worried about was, this secret gave him an ominous and evil feeling. This Magic Cube was obviously not some friendly object.

But anyway, now that he was back in the Magic Cube again, this was a prime opportunity!

Of course, this also meant danger.

Lin Ming stood in the Magic Cube's ocean of star space for a long time. Which one these soul fragments should he choose?

With so many soul fragments, casually selecting one would just be testing exactly how much luck he had. If he obtained one that was useless, then it would have all been in vain.

Lin Ming watched one soul fragment after another, but he was unable to see what was inside. These countless soul shards were like tens of thousands of jade stones. Some of these jade stones might have the purest quality white jade, and some might have nothing at all. And in some, there might even be a devil lurking inside.

"This soul fragment is too bright, it's too similar to the stars, I shouldn't touch it."

"This one is too small, it's even tinier than a grain of rice. The first time I was here I chose a soul fragment around this size, but now that my strength has improved, I should be able to choose a larger one… but just how much larger?"

“Why is this red? This gives off a very demonic and evil feeling, as it was stained with blood. It seems full of evil spirits and dark influences. Perhaps this soul fragment’s master… I’m afraid that before his death he was most likely a murderous devil that slaughtered countless people. This type of person has too deep an obsession; I shouldn’t touch this one…”

“Mmm? There’s also a golden red color? What sort of principles would make a soul fragment a golden red color…?”

Facing such an important choice, even the normally resolute Lin Ming became indecisive.

“If I had to choose one then…” Lin Ming finally locked his eyes on a mung bean-sized soul fragment. This soul fragment wasn’t too bright, and it also wasn’t too large or small.

He cautiously approached this soul fragment, and carefully made sure to avoid contact with any other soul fragments. As he approached, Lin Ming suddenly wondered what would happen if he probed the soul fragment with his soul force.

With that in mind, Lin Ming attempted to revolve the ‘Overbearing Soul Tactic’ and use his soul force to sense the soul fragment.

A martial artist’s soul force and spirit mark were connected. If misused, it would be vulnerable to attack. If a soul was damaged, then it was very difficult to cure. At least, in the entirety of the Sky Fortune Kingdom, Lin Ming hadn’t seen anything that could help repair a soul.

Lin Ming’s idea was to investigate the soul fragment with his soul force, and see if he could obtain some valuable information. It even might be possible to attempt to read some memories, and to take at look at these memories to see if they would be useful before deciding to swallow that soul fragment.

However, as Lin Ming’s soul force came into contact with that soul fragment, that soul fragment suddenly turned into a stream of lightning that flew into Lin Ming’s soul.

Lin Ming simply didn't have any time to react. With a whish sound, the ownerless soul fragment had already submerged into Lin Ming's Sea of Consciousness, aimed at Lin Ming's spirit mark, and launched a violent attack on his psyche.

"Damn!"

Lin Ming hadn't expected this result. He just felt as if the tip of a knife was repeatedly and maliciously stabbing into his brain without hesitation. This kind of severe, body-gripping pain made his vision go dark, and he almost fainted on the spot.

"My cultivation is already so much stronger than before, but this pain is still so irresistibly overwhelming! It is such a small piece of soul consciousness and yet it's actually so strong!

The power of a soul had no relations with true essence; it only depended on the soul itself. Lin Ming had used the 'Overbearing Soul Tactic' during the long period in which he had used inscription techniques, and his soul force had naturally grown. But the ownerless soul fragment that he had chosen now was larger and brighter than the first soul fragment he had absorbed.

So to swallow this soul fragment up was ten times as hard!

Lin Ming's Sea of Consciousness once again became a battlefield. The deep pain within his brain was just like countless insects that were chewing through his mind.

A multitude of complex and confusing scenes emerged in his mind. Lin Ming grasped his head, bore the soul-wrenching pain and revolved the 'Overbearing Soul Tactic', holding fast to his quickly ebbing consciousness.

With his previous experience, Lin Ming was much calmer this time. The head splitting pain also caused him to fall into a dazed stupor, but Lin Ming knew that once he fainted and lost his self-awareness, then he would without a doubt die. As long as he was able to force his way through this period and exhaust that ownerless soul, the he would win.

However, this soul fragment's inherent soul force was far superior to the last one's!

Lin Ming clenched his teeth, defending the last pure and bright bastion of his mind.

“The first time I did not know the ‘Overbearing Soul Tactic’, and only depended on my heart of martial arts to endure. But this second time, my soul force is much stronger and my heart of martial arts is more complete; how can I lose here!!!”

Haaah!!

In Lin Ming Sea of Consciousness, there was a giant storm that was raging as the ownerless soul fragment constantly consumed itself in its battle with Lin Ming’s spirit mark.

Gradually, the shining rays began to dim down.

The aching pain came flooding in like a limitless tsunami. Lin Ming gritted his teeth and could only hang on as this agony coursed through his mind. After an unknown amount of time, this aching feeling finally weakened as it began to slowly die down. By now, Lin Ming’s whole body was soaked in sweat and cold to the touch.

After a long time, that ownerless soul fragment had gradually lost its instinct and turned into complete pure soul energy, and then slowly integrated into Lin Ming’s Sea of Consciousness…

….

Opening his eyes, Lin Ming was surprised to find that he had already left the vast, starry space within the Magic Cube. He was back in his simple log cabin, staring at the wooden ceiling. Seeing such a familiar scene let him feel at ease.

Reviewing the memories in his mind, Lin Ming felt another headache creeping up. This kind of feeling was as if he had gone through several days of sleepless nights, and thus his mind hurt.

“Array formations, array patterns, array diagrams, charms… this was probably an array master…”

After clearly examining these, Lin Ming didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. His luck was just bad; he had actually taken in the memories of an array master.

An array master was truly strong, that was without question. One only needed to look at the Ten Thousand Killing Array, the seven major killing arrays of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, and lightning, the Exquisite Pagoda, and the sea jade platform to see just how inconceivably strong an array master was.

One of the seven founders of the Seven Profound Valleys was one who especially studied array methods.

If he was able to create a massive array like the Exquisite Pagoda and sell it to the Sky Fortune Kingdom, its cost would be at least 10 million gold taels!

However, it was impossible for Lin Ming to arrange this array.

The major arrays of the Seven Profound Martial House were created through a collaboration of several Xiantian masters working together. The total quantity of true essence needed was truly terrifying!

But without using such a large array, a normal array only had a very limited benefit.

Although he was slightly frustrated, Lin Ming did not lose heart. This soul fragment had a very rich memory; it was not solely array methods. Moreover, about arrays, it may be temporarily useless to Lin Ming now, but that did not mean that it would be useless in the future.

Chapter 123 – Three Kinds of Martial Skills

Chapter 123 – Three Kinds of Martial Skills

…

…

…

In fact, in a sense, an inscription master was also one kind of array master. An inscription symbol could be called an array formation, except that the inscription symbol was on a much smaller scale and the total amount of true essence needed was also correspondingly low. However, for a large-scale array formation, one needed to be at least a Houtian stage master in order to begin studying it.

Lin Ming took a cursory glance at these array formations in his mind; it seemed that not even a Xiantian master would have any hope in arranging these.

"If I want to learn array formations, I don't know in what year or what month I'll be able to do so…" Lin Ming shook his head and completely sealed up all the memories. In the space of the Magic Cube, there were tens of thousands of souls; it was simply impossible to always choose one that was useful. It all came down to his own luck.

After he placed away the array-related memories for the time being, Lin Ming endured further headaches and continued to read the memories of the soul fragment.

"'True Solar Fire Law', it requires godly strength to practice, and it is also incomplete, useless…

"'Collapsing Moon Sinking Star', this is a top-tier martial skill, but my cultivation is far from being able to use it, useless…

“’Valiant Dragon’s Roar’, this is also a top-tier martial skill, but I still can’t learn it…”

Lin Ming kept searching. The soul fragment’s memories were very rich; however, there were very few things that were useful. The majority of cultivation methods and martial skills required a very high level of cultivation or power in order to begin practicing them.

“These are… mm? Woman, feelings, sects, conspiracies… these are the life memories of a great person within the Realm of the Gods. But these things are also useless.” Lin Ming had sealed away the memories of the array formations. As for these life memories of the Realm of the Gods, Lin Ming simply discarded them all.

“Well… this is…” Lin Ming’s heart jumped, and his spirit immediately rose and the headache he was feeling calmed down a little. “Heretical God Force?”

“Is this a martial skill? Cultivation method?” Lin Ming sunk his mind into this memory, and to his surprise, the ‘Heretical God Force’ memory was fairly complete. Most importantly, if he wanted to cultivate the ‘Heretical God Force’, it did not have any mandatory requirement for cultivation; even someone at the Body Transformation stage would be able to practice it.

The secret legacy manuals of the Sky Spill Continent, were divided into three different kinds.

The first kind was a cultivation method manual. This was used for martial artists to accumulate true essence and enhance their cultivation. The cultivation method manual was the foundation of all, and was also the rarest of all the secret manuals. A sect didn’t need to have good martial skills, but they must have a good cultivation method manual.

The second kind were martial skills. Different martial skills would utilize the true essence and strength of human body in various ways in order to attack an enemy.

The third kind were movement skills. These movement skills were similarly a utilization method to coordinate true essence with the strength of the human body, and thus enhance one’s speed.

But Lin Ming saw that this ‘Heretical God Force’ actually didn’t fit any of those three categories.

Using ‘Heretical God Force’s’ mystical ability, it was possible to greatly enhance one’s strength for a short time, and true essence would also increase. ‘Heretical God Force’ was not a cultivation method, but it also wasn’t a martial skill or movement ability; it was actually able to make a martial artist’s martial skills stronger, and their movement abilities quicker.

“In that elder’s memories of the Realm of the Gods, this ‘Heretical God Force’ was one of the rare auxiliary secret techniques. In all of those secret techniques, this ‘Heretical God Force’ is one of the most precious!”

Lin Ming was pleasantly surprised. Although most of the memories weren’t useful, but if there was actually one that was incomparably precious, then it was worth it!

Lin Ming continued to examine the ‘Heretical God Force’. This secret technique was divided into six different stages. The first stage was able to enhance a human’s strength and true essence by 50%, and the second stage could enhance one’s abilities by 100%, the third 150%, and so on, until the final sixth stage, which could enhance one’s original strength and true essence force by three times.

Of course, three times the strength and true essence force also corresponded to three times the consumption rate of strength and true essence. But to Lin Ming, this wasn’t an overly major problem. With the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ and a solid foundation of basic skills, his endurance had always been extraordinary.

“Although this ‘Heretical God Force’ is not a martial skill, in terms of its actual combat efficiency, it is much stronger than any martial skill. Even if I can only cultivate it to the first stage, I can increase my strength and true essence force by 50%. If I used my ‘Foundation Spear Technique’ with this, and also coordinated my momentum, then if I met Zhu Yan again I would easily be able to defeat him!”

“And what is most abnormal is that this ‘Heretical God Force’ does not conflict with martial skills. If I opened this ‘Heretical God Force’ state, then I would still be able to use a martial skill, and the martial skill’s power would be increased!”

“Solely with this ‘Heretical God Force’, there was value in me choosing this soul fragment.” Excited, Lin Ming began to sift through the rest of the memories, even though there weren’t many left. Although there were still many cultivation methods and martial skills left, there weren’t any that were complete or that were suitable for a martial artist at the Body Transformation stage. Lin Ming didn’t keep his hopes up that he would find something.

But just as he was about to finish skimming through all the memories, Lin Ming’s eyes brightened. –

“Top movement ability – ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’.”

This movement skill originated from ancient times, when a mighty and powerful being of the Realm of the Gods happened upon a cataclysmic battle between a Golden-Winged Roc and a True Dragon. That Golden-Winged Roc had a height of several tens of thousands of miles, and its wings were like endless hanging clouds that hid the sun, moon, and stars.

That mighty and powerful being had bore witness to the entire battle between the Golden-Winged Roc and the True Dragon. Afterwards, the Golden-Winged Roc had shattered the void, and disappeared out of sight.

According to these images, that mighty one had retreated into meditation for 60 years, and finally created the movement ability known as ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’.

To cultivate this set of movements, one had to start from the most basic stage of Body Transformation, and go step by step until they reached the highest level. After one reached the Perfect stage of this ability, they could travel a thousand miles in the blink of an eye, and roam through the endless void as if they were taking a leisurely stroll in the yard.

To start practicing from the most basic Body Transformation stage was Lin Ming's good tidings. At his current stage, this was exactly the right time to start practicing 'Golden Rock Shattering the Void'.

However, it was a pity. The 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void' movement ability was ultimately incomplete. The 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void' consisted of 12 stages, but in the memories of the elder's soul fragment, there were only 8 remaining.

Losing four sections of the stages was by no means soul crushing, as that mighty one originally didn't have the complete manual of the 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void' movement ability. Otherwise, Lin Ming knew that the most precious secret skill would not be the 'Heretical God Force', but the 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void'.

But still, Lin Ming did not feel any regret. Although it was incomplete, that wouldn't affect Lin Ming at the moment. Because his cultivation was too far off to even think about practicing those later stages, he would only need to wait until he reached that realm before looking again.

After he obtained the 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void', Lin Ming kept looking through the few remaining memories. Lin Ming didn't think that he would find anything of value, but to his surprise there was actually a minor martial skill that he was able to practice.

This martial skill was called the 'Pulse Cutting Palm'. It did not require an extremely high cultivation, and it was also quite simple and easy to learn, but the corresponding power was not that high.

'Pulse Cutting Palm' would only be used when an opponent had consumed most of their true essence, and their strength was severely weakened. This was because in order to display the function of the 'Pulse Cutting Palm', one had to use a certain concealed energy to infiltrate true essence into an opponent's body using a special method. If the opponent's total remaining amount of true essence in their body was more than what was sent into their body, then that true essence would be consumed by the opponent.

Just on this attribute alone, the ‘Pulse Cutting Palm’ was far too tasteless. It could only be used to deal with a far weaker opponent, or someone that had already consumed too much of their strength and had lost the power to resist their enemy.

But, it stood to reason that in order for that mighty elder to retain such a weak and cowardly martial skill, the ‘Pulse Cutting Palm’ had to have a certain special function.

This function was that the infiltrating true essence could cut off an enemy’s meridians and dry up their acupuncture points. This kind of destructive damage was virtually irreparable. The only possible method was using certain special and exceedingly rare materials that were in the memories of the mighty elder. But these valuable materials were only found within the Realm of the Gods.

After a martial artist reached the Bone Forging stage, they would begin to open up the meridians. Once all of the meridians were opened, they would be connected to the pores of their body, and true essence would be able to access the meridians and flow through them unimpeded. This was the Pulse Condensation Period.

However, if one’s meridians were severed, then it was impossible to step into the Pulse Condensation Period for one’s entire life. Not only that, but their cultivation would gradually reverse, becoming worse with each day, until it was completely lost.

Even a man’s virility was closely related to their meridians and acupuncture points. For instance, conditions such as impotency were closely related to the meridians that passed near the kidney.

If these meridians and body points were ruined, then it would greatly affect a man’s virility, and they might even become sterile as a result.

Even martial artists above the Pulse Condensation Period, whose bodies’ meridians had been completely connected, would not be spared from the power of the ‘Pulse Cutting Palm’. Their cultivation would fall below the Pulse Condensation Period, and suffer the same fate as anyone else.

This ‘Pulse Cutting Palm’ could only be described as extremely insidious and ruthless.

Without a doubt, the special aim of this martial skill was to maliciously harm others, because when dealing with an enemy that had already lost all their strength to resist, killing them would be simple. But in using this ‘Pulse Cutting Palm’, it would utterly destroy their martial arts. And what was even more ruthless was that it would cause a man to lose all of their functions as a man; it was simply better to die than live in this pathetic state.

“This ‘Pulse Cutting Palm’ is damaging enough. Although it cannot increase strength, it is an incomparably ruthless and sinister move to deal with others. Not only will it sever a person’s meridians, it will also sever all their future descendants. To cause a martial artist to lose all their cultivation and their manhood; it is worse than killing them. If I have the time then I’ll study this. It will be useful for dealing with some enemies that I can’t publicly go against; it will be much safer in the future if I ruin their martial arts. But for now, I don’t have much time, so I’ll put this on hold.

Lin Ming completely sealed all the memories that he didn’t need, and discarded all of the unnecessary life memories. After filtering everything, there was only the ‘Heretical God Force’, ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’, and the ‘Pulse Cutting Palm’.

The special technique and movement ability were incomparably precious. As for the ‘Pulse Cutting Palm’, although it couldn’t be considered so amazingly precious, it did have its own special role.

“Now there are only four months before Zhang Guanyu and I will fight each other. I was originally only going to draw the body inscription symbol and place it on my body, and continue perceiving the ‘Flow like Silk’ state through meditation. With the enhanced true essence gathering of the body inscription symbol and the help of my ethereal martial intent for cultivating, I should be able to break through to the Altering Muscle stage before the battle.”

“But now I also have to practice the ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’, and the ‘Heretical God Force’. Although this secret technique and movement ability are formidable, If I do not adequately practice them, then they will not enhance my cultivation and only be a waste of time.”

“Only four months left; my time is too tight!”

“Break into the Ten Thousand Killing Array’s top ten in 3 months, defeat Zhang Guanyu in 4 months, defeat Ta Ku in 5 months, and defeat Ling Sen in 6 months! Of these four tasks, entering into the top ten ranks of the Ten Thousand Killing Array is the simplest. As long as I can rush through to the top ten of the Ten Thousand Killing Array, the Seven Profound Martial House will award me a medium-grade human-step long spear treasure, the Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

“This is a medium-grade human-step treasure, and it is also the rarely seen elastic spear. If I have it, then my combat prowess will rise much higher, and my chances of defeating Zhang Guanyu will be that much better!”

Although Lin Ming currently had the Penetrating Rainbow spear on hand, it was still a half treasure after all. When concentrating his true essence into it, there was no smooth feeling.

Chapter 124 – Violent Wind Tunnel

Chapter 124 – Violent Wind Tunnel

…

…

…

In the northwest reaches of Zhou Mountain, there was a natural mountain valley. The entrance of the mountain valley faced the north, and spanned a thousand feet. As it extended inwards, it became increasingly narrow. The entire mountain valley was in the shape of a funnel, and it continued into the hillside until the width was only about 10 feet or so.

When gale winds blew from the north of Zhou Mountain, they were blocked by Zhou Mountain and formed a tremendous wind pressure and air current that flowed down the funnel shaped valley. As it went inwards, and the mountain valley became narrower, the speed and pressure of the wind increased with each step!

Before the Seven Profound Martial House was established, this mountain valley had been named Gale Valley. Inside the valley were large rolling stones that blew everywhere, and humans and livestock found it hard to stand firm.

After the Seven Profound Martial House was established, the Xiantian masters, who had decided to use the local environments, set up a large array in this crazy wind valley. Not only did this raise the speed of the wind, but the wind current and direction became unpredictable. Undercurrents were everywhere, and there were even strong heavenly winds that could harm the body.

This was one of the seven major killing arrays of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, and lightning. This was the Violent Wind Tunnel.

The Violent Wind Tunnel was primarily used by martial artists to practice their stability and footwork. To a martial artist, solid footwork was the most basic, entry-level martial arts. To begin on the path of martial arts, one had to first practice their balance. Even Lin Ming, who had not received a formal martial arts education, had to begin by practicing the basic horse stance.

However, Lin Ming came to the Violent Wind Tunnel today not to practice his stability, but to practice his movement abilities.

To practice one's movement in the Violent Wind Tunnel was something that a common disciple would be unable to imagine. This was because no matter how fast one was, it was impossible to hide from the wind. No matter how astonishing one's speed, in the Violent Wind Tunnel, the person would always be pinned down and hindered by the fast wind.

To practice one's movement, a disciple would usually choose the Boulder Slope array of the seven major killing arrays. The Boulder Slope had innumerable rocks flying around; a martial artist would use these to practice their dodging skills and movement speed. Before, Lin Ming had gone to the Boulder Slope to take a look, and saw that the Boulder Slope truly was a good place to practice one's movement. However, it was not suited to the 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void'.

When one practiced movement in the Boulder Slope, the truth was that the main aspect a martial artist trained was their reaction speed, strength, and true essence body coordination.

If these points were practiced well, a martial artist would simultaneously have extremely quick speed and nimble movements.

However, it was hard to find a movement ability that could achieve both extreme speed and flexibility. For instance, 'Swan Feather Fall', 'Heaven Passing Ladder', 'Cloud Hanging Rope', and other such movement abilities stressed speed and light work above all. These skills were fastidious about keeping the body as light as a swallow. Once true essence was revolved, they could leap several dozens of feet high and easily catch a flying bird. This speed was very fast.

But then there were movement abilities like ‘Seven Star Drifting Cloud’, ‘Lost Steps’, ‘Six Foot Step’, and ‘Seven Despairing Steps’. These movement abilities stressed flexibility and dodging. For instance, in ‘Seven Star Drifting Cloud’, one’s feet traced the pattern of the Big Dipper, like treading on clouds, and their footwork was light like treading on clouds. After the Large Success stage was reached, one could take seven steps at once, and it would be impossible to tell which step was first or last. Within these seven steps one’s speed would be able to reach the extreme. These movements focused on dodging; they were very effective in close-range fights.

If a movement ability had a superiority in one movement aspect, then it could be considered a top-grade manual. If a movement ability could be superior in both aspects, then that would be a best-grade manual. However, that kind of movement ability would only be passed down to the core disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys.

But after Lin Ming read the general outline of ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’, he realized that even achieving the pinnacle in both of these aspects of movement was still quite ordinary.

The truth zenith of movement abilities not only needed to achieve the summit of both of these aspects, but most importantly, they had to integrate the concept and law into its movements.

To be able to integrate one kind of concept perfectly into one’s movement was already considered extremely precious and rare, even in the Realm of the Gods. But that mighty elder’s ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’ actually managed to integrate two concepts, the concept of wind and the concept of void.

The Golden-Winged Roc was also known as the Nine Day Leviathan Roc. It was a wind attribute god beast that was the ancestor of ten thousand winds. The legends said that the

Golden-Winged Roc ate flood dragons as food, and its degree of formidability was similar to the True Dragon and True Phoenix. This wind attribute god beast's concept of wind was undoubtedly the best.

As for the concept of void; that was instantly comprehended by the mighty elder that had created the 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void' when he had seen the Golden-Winged Roc pierce through space and enter the limitless void.

The concept of void was an extremely illusory ideal. At the moment, it was a too far away from the current Lin Ming; he could only touch upon the concept of wind.

And the best place to practice the concept of wind was of course the Violent Wind Tunnel.

"What? Junior Apprentice Brother Lin would like to enter the seventh level of difficulty?" The deacon senior apprentice brother who guarded the Violent Wind Tunnel stared at Lin Ming with wide eyes. He thought that he had misheard for a moment.

The Violent Wind Tunnel was divided into 12 different sections, and the individual difficulties of each section could be adjusted. The seventh level was a difficulty that the Earth Hall disciples that were around rank 100 on the Ranking Stone would use. Now that Lin Ming had entered into the upper echelons of the Heavenly Abode, he should have started at the tenth level of difficulty.

It had to be known that Zhu Yan had used the tenth level of difficulty to practice. The top ten disciples of the Heavenly Abode often used the eleventh level to practice.

As for the highest twelfth level, no one was actually able to withstand the raging winds inside. Even Ling Sen could only persist for an incense stick of time.

If today Lin Ming had decided to enter into the tenth level of difficulty, or even the eleventh, then the deacon would not have been so surprised. But what kind of existence was Lin Ming? He was a potential future core disciple who would challenge Ling Sen, Ta Ku, and Zhang Guanyu, and yet he had chosen the seventh level of difficulty. This really puzzled the deacon, so he asked, "Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, the seventh level of difficulty is usually used by the lower-order disciples. Is Junior Apprentice Brother Lin cracking a joke with me?"

Lin Ming smiled and said, "I'm positive I want to open the seventh level; not a joke."

"Alright." The deacon senior apprentice brother shrugged and opened the difficulty to the seventh level. After all, the time was his; it was his choice what difficulty he wanted to set. At lower difficulties he could also save true essence stones.

After the path to the Violent Wind Tunnel opened, Lin Ming instantly entered.

As soon as he entered the Violent Wind Tunnel, Lin Ming immediately heard the sound of roaring, rumbling winds as if there was thunder inside. Especially in nearby regions, there were some people who had opened the tenth level of difficulty and above. The fierce roar of that wind was like an army of a thousand soldiers roaring as they charged forwards. Just by listening to that sound, one could imagine the horror inside.

But Lin Ming was only at the seventh level of difficulty in the Violent Wind Tunnel, and it was a relatively calmer environment. With his cultivation, he could easily walk in the Violent Wind Tunnel.

Lin Ming arrived at the middle area of the Violent Wind Tunnel. This far in, the wind speed was modest. He stopped, closed his eyes, and began to fully feel the bone-chilling cold mountain wind as it blew upon him.

The word 'concept' sounded vague and intangible.

In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, if a martial artist wanted to comprehend the 'concept of wind', he would not know where to start. What was the 'concept'? It wasn't something that was one could easily grasp.

But after Lin Ming swallowed that soul fragment, he had attained a clear understanding of what a concept was. Of course, to comprehend it, one had to rely on oneself.

The ‘concept’ was in truth a law. It was a force of nature; once it was comprehended, one could control a core of power.

In the wide world, everything had its own inherent laws.

For instance, water would flow to the lowest valley; fire would rise to the highest peak. Yin and Yang supported and restrained each other, and life and death and so forth. These were the most basic of laws.

Extend the law deep into the soul and control the origin of all things. This was what a ‘concept’ meant.

For Lin Ming to comprehend the concept of wind, he did not need to resist the wind, but to harmonize and conform to the wind, and feel the power of the it.

If Lin Ming utilized his true essence, coupled with his formidable physical strength and the support of Penetrating Rainbow, he would easily be able to resist the tenth level of difficulty, and even challenge the eleventh level of difficulty. However, these things held no significance for him.

He had chosen the seventh level of difficulty. After coming to a complete stop, Lin Ming stopped resisting the force of the wind, and allowed his body to completely relax. Then, without any anxiety, he was sent flying by the fierce winds.

Lin Ming continuously adjusted his body in the air, adapting to the wind and borrowing its strength. However, from the very beginning, he no way of crossing the threshold.

Peng!

Lin Ming heavily collided against the rocks. Even though his body was physically strong and he was protected by true essence, he still felt his dizzy as his blood surged inside him.

Lin Ming stood up, integrated with the wind once more, and was once again thrown up by the wind, hitting the wall.

He continued this experiment again and again, and hit the rocky wall again and again. Lin Ming had already lost count of how many times he had hit the wall. He suffered multiple bruises, and was covered with cuts and wounds. His face had multiple abrasions and his clothes were ripped to shreds. He was almost naked; it looked quite awful.

Lin Ming had already informed Wang Yuhan that he would not be going to the Inscription Association today. In one breathe he had made an appointment at the Violent Wind Tunnel for 8 hours; he would use the entire time to feel the power and majesty of the wind.

This was a completely masochistic method of cultivation. Even though Lin Ming had stocked up fully on medicines, he still ended up with such an embarrassing appearance.

“I really was negligent, I didn’t think that my clothes would be ruined like this, and I didn’t bring any spare clothes with me.” Lin Ming forced a smile and shook his head. He prepared to ask the deacon senior apprentice brother to fetch some clothes for him.

At this point, it was approaching the afternoon. The deacon senior apprentice brother was bored and in a very blasé mood as he sat in meditation. From time to time again he would pay attention to Lin Ming. Lin Ming had made an appointment for 8 hours, from morning until dusk. With such a long time, he had only opened the seventh level of difficulty. What was Junior Apprentice Brother Lin thinking? Could he not handle a higher level? Or was he going inside to play?”

“Playing around? No… that’s impossible… Junior Apprentice Brother Lin simply doesn’t have the personality of a 15 year old boy. What is he doing in the Violent Wind Tunnel?”

The deacon senior apprentice brother thought about this for a long time and still did not understand, so he decided to forget about it.

“Those high-status people really give me a headache. Time in these seven major killing arrays is just so precious; many martial artists are reluctant to come even once every several days. Occasionally when they do come, they might even bring several companions with them, and each person would use half an hour. But then this Junior Apprentice Brother Lin has ten full days he can use every month, so he doesn't treasure such valuable time and made an appointment for 8 whole hours in one ago. I can't believe he only opened the seventh level of difficulty; even though we are both people it still irritates me. Ah, so exasperating."

The deacon senior apprentice brother was sighing with emotion, when at this time, Lin Ming emerged from the Violent Wind Tunnel and asked, "I'm sorry Senior Apprentice Brother, but could you help prepare me a spare set of clothes?"

At the moment, Lin Ming was in less than rags; he was almost naked. If he practiced any more, there would just be no way for him to go back to his cabin.

As the deacon looked at Lin Ming who had suddenly appeared in rags and his dirty body covered with countless wounds, the deacon senior apprentice brother could only stare dumbfounded, his jaw dropping low enough that an egg could be stuffed inside.

He didn't respond for a long time, until he finally recognized that this young dirty man with a beggar's appearance was Lin Ming!

This… this…

Chapter 125 – Masochistic Cultivation

Chapter 125 – Masochistic Cultivation

…

…

…

The deacon senior apprentice brother was totally confused; were there monsters inside of the Violent Wind Tunnel?

No, that was impossible. The Violent Wind Tunnel was used daily; how would there be monsters inside? Or had he made a mistake with the difficulty level? He turned around and looked at the array formation's panel board; it was indeed the seventh level of difficulty.

But, why would Junior Apprentice Brother Lin's appearance be so shabby? What happened inside?

Could it be that Junior Apprentice Brother Lin's footwork technique was not steady?

That was also impossible. He remembered on the martial stage that Junior Apprentice Brother Lin had been steady like a towering mountain. It was impossible for there to be anything wrong with his footwork technique.

In this case, Lin Ming simply couldn't explain. He said, "Senior Apprentice Brother, could I trouble you to reduce the difficulty by a level, and open up the sixth level of difficulty.

At the seventh level of difficulty, the wind velocity was just too fast. The time Lin Ming was airborne for was too short. Just as he was about to feel the origin of the wind, he would immediately smash into the wall.

So he hoped to reduce the difficulty by a bit. To comprehend the concept of wind, he did not need to resist the strength of the wind. The force of the wind also did not matter.

“You want to reduce the difficulty?” The deacon senior apprentice brother was becoming a bit paranoid, but he hadn’t figured out how to open his mouth and ask Lin Ming.

Lin Ming once again entered the wind tunnel, and through numerous trials, he began to feel like he was starting to be able to sense the concept of wind. He wanted to use this opportunity to step into the threshold of the wind concept in one fell swoop.

After his 8 hours of practice time had ended, Lin Ming had already hit the wall at least ten thousand times. If it wasn’t for the top-quality injury medicine he had brought, the impact of so many hits would have already left him with several internal injuries.

At this point, there wasn’t a single spot on Lin Ming’s body that wasn’t bruised. When he swapped clothes and stepped out of the tunnel, the deacon senior apprentice brother was completely confused.

Standing by the deacon was a disciple of the Heavenly Abode. He didn’t recognize Lin Ming in his current ragged condition. He only thought, ‘Which wonderful low-order disciple is this? You couldn’t even think to open up a low level of difficulty? Was there a need to be so masochistic in your practice?’

“Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, what in the world were you doing in there?” The deacon senior apprentice brother asked.

“Practicing.” Lin Ming faintly smiled. Having given a perfunctory answer, he didn’t wait for the deacon to ask him another question, and left.

The disciple that was still waiting there asked, “Junior Apprentice Brother Lin? Which Lin? Lin Wu? That’s not right, although Lin Wu is a little weak, he’s not that bad.”

The deacon sent an ill-humored look at the disciple and snappily said, “Junior Apprentice Brother Lin Ming!”

“Lin Ming? Haha, Senior Apprentice Brother, your joke is too funny. If that Lin Ming can actually end up like that in that level of difficulty in the Violent Wind Tunnel, then I’ll walk in reverse from now on.”

“You can walk however you want to. Next time if you don’t believe then look yourself.” The deacon senior apprentice brother was disinclined to bother with the disciple. He began to close the formation array; it was about time for him to get off work.

…

After Lin Ming returned to his cabin that night, he prepared a boiled bathtub full of medicinal herbs. As soon as he stripped his clothes, he jumped in and soaked inside the bathtub for two hours. The wounds on his body began to slowly mend themselves. As he sat in the tub and mediated for the night, by the next day his flesh had absorbed the potency of the medicinal herbs and his bruises had disappeared.

The cost of that bathtub full of medicinal herbs was around 7000 taels of gold. Before, the amount of gold that he had spent on raw materials would have been enough for him to practice for 7 or 8 years. But presently, that bathtub of medicine had already been completely used up. This caused Lin Ming to sigh with emotion. If one wanted to cultivate martial arts but didn’t have money, then no matter what talent they had it would be useless.

Yesterday, he had gone through 8 hours of masochistic practice. Lin Ming had finally touched upon the concept of wind, but still hadn’t managed to cross the threshold. He was still far from being able to grasp that wind concept.

With such an esoteric and profound ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’, Lin Ming hadn’t expected to be able to cultivate it within a short time. Still, just practicing it a little was infinitely enjoyable.

Today, Lin Ming did not go to the Violent Wind Tunnel. He needed a period of time to let his body fully assimilate the experiences he had obtained yesterday.

Therefore he lit a sound transmitting talisman and passed a message to Wang Yuhan. Today, he would be going to the Inscription Association.

…

In the past few days, a modest affair had happened in Sky Fortune City. The Zhu Family had announced that because Zhu Yan had violated the family rules, his punishment was that he had been expelled from the family. Not only that, but the Tenth Prince, the Cloud Prince, had drawn a distinct line between him and Zhu Yan.

This matter had been dealt with in a very low-profile manner. However, all the major powers had taken note of this event. Everyone knew that Zhu Yan and Lin Ming had a grudge between them, and some of the even more informed ones knew that this was related to Lan Yunyue.

According to some reliable sources, Zhu Yan and Lin Ming were deep love rivals involved in a messy love triangle. They had many small battles, and their conflict became increasingly intense. At this point, the Zhu Family had expelled Zhu Yan from their ranks, and the Tenth Prince had drawn a line with Zhu Yan. Just what was the meaning of this?

Many people thought that the Zhu Family and the Tenth prince had done this in order to show a measure of good will towards Lin Ming. In order to woo Lin Ming to their side, they had directly expelled a talented person from their main family. But wasn't this just too crude and reckless?

Although Lin Ming was amazingly strong, he was obviously close to the Crown Prince and on his side. If the Tenth Prince was unable to win over Lin Ming and had still expelled Zhu Yan, then wasn't this double penalty simply giving an enemy one's own wife as well as losing one's own soldiers?

What was the reason behind the Tenth Prince's actions?

After Lin Ming heard this news, he also felt it somewhat incomprehensible. Did the Tenth Prince make this decision in order to show good will? Was it necessary?

"Zhu Yan was expelled from the family and he also left the Seven Profound Martial House. I must be careful of him. He is living a gloomy life but he knows how to bear the suffering. This would greatly strengthen his toughness. Later, he will certainly try go against me somehow. My strength is growing and I am not afraid, but my parents are in Green Mulberry City. I must inform the Lin Family about this and have my parents protected.

"Unfortunately I did not kill him when I could on that stage, and now I've left a future trouble!"

A cold chill crept into Lin Ming's eyes. Although he had not bothered pursuing when Wang Yigao and Wang Yanfeng had tried dealing with him using cruel methods, but that did not mean he was a soft-hearted person, especially when faced with the possibility that something could endanger the safety of his loved ones.

Thinking this, Lin Ming sent out a sound transmitting talisman to Sky Fortune City's Lin Family branch, exhorting them about his parents' situation.

…

That afternoon, Lin Ming had decided to go to the Inscription Association, which was why he had made an appointment with Wang Yuhan.

As he was walking down the road, Lin Ming suddenly stopped. He had run into a person. Lin Ming already had an impression of this person; he was a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist who worked under the Crown Prince – Liao Wenyuan.

The Crown Prince had helped Liao Wenyuan in his career and had shown him kindness. Before Liao Wenyuan had gained fame and fortune, a young Crown Prince had helped him. That stroke of graciousness and been unforgettably valuable.

That was why even though Liao Wenyuan now had a title and a rapidly advancing career, he had still decided to enter into the turbid waters of the struggle over the throne, and was willing to assist the Crown Prince in ascending the throne.

“Mister Lin.” Liao Wenyuan cupped his fist in a polite greeting towards Lin Ming.

“Senior Liao is too polite; this junior should be the one bowing to Mister Liao.” Lin Ming cupped his fist and returned a courtesy bow towards Liao Wenyuan.

Lin Ming didn’t find it surprising that he met Liao Wenyuan here. These days, he had felt eyes on him as he walked down the streets, as if people were intentionally or unintentionally following him. But, these people did not have any murderous or dangerous intent; they were obviously sent by the Crown Prince.

Lin Ming’s status was extremely sensitive. As soon as he took even one step out of the Seven Profound Martial House, there would be people immediately following him and protecting him in the shadows. It could be said that if the Tenth Prince wanted to kill him in Sky Fortune City, it wouldn’t be much easier than killing the Crown Prince himself.

The Crown Prince was apparently aware that he was often visiting the Inscription Association these days.

“Haha, I didn’t think that Mister Lin would know my name. To be truthful, I am a rather crude person and a I’m not too comfortable with these courtesies. If you don’t mind, I will be rude and call Mister Lin, Brother Lin instead.”

Lin Ming smiled, “Brother Liao’s words are frank and straightforward. Truth be told, I also do not like etiquette and honorifics.”

“Haha, that’s great! Brother Lin, today I came to especially look for you. You may or may not know, but Zhu Yan has been expelled from the Zhu Family.” Liao Wenyuan had sent these words via true essence sound transmission.

“Mm.” Lin Ming nodded, and also changed to speaking with true essence sound transmission.

“You must be careful of Zhu Yan.”

“I know, but I also find something strange. Why was the Zhu Family so ruthless?”

“This ruthlessness is because of Brother Lin. You have a possibility of becoming a Seven Profound Envoy or the Martial House Master. With that status, whether it is the Zhu Family or the Tenth Prince, they do not dare to annoy you. But to them, Zhu Yan will at most be a Pulse Condensation Martial artist in the future. A Pulse Condensation Period martial artist is an acceptable loss, so they drove him out. Later, Zhu Yan will hate you and try to assassinate you. If this happens, then Zhu Yan will take the blame and the Zhu family and the Tenth Prince will not be implicated.”

“So it’s like that… well, when it comes to the internal struggles of the large families and royal powers, not even family will be spared.” Lin Ming had no interest in things like the royal power struggle and large family interests.

“Yes, that’s why since ancient times a ruler must be crafty, otherwise it would be impossible for them to accomplish anything.” Liao Wenyuan paused and sighed. He was thinking of the humanity and righteousness of the Crown Prince, who unfortunately had insufficient determination.

“Ah, that’s right, Brother Lin, you had previously asked His Highness the Crown Prince to look for some materials, we have already begun to search for them. However, there are some things that the Sky Fortune Kingdom does not have. The Crown Prince has already sent people to the neighboring countries to look. The Huoluo Nation’s trade fair has things from all around, it should be possible to find some materials there. But to collect all the materials, it will take a long time. As for the matter of the manor that Brother Lin wishes to return, His Highness the Crown Prince has said that he has already gifted the land to Brother Lin, how could he take it back? Brother Lin, please feel relieved about that matter.”

Huoluo Nation was one of the larger countries under the governance of the Seven Profound Valleys. Regardless of military forces, or the number of masters they had, all of it surpassed the Sky Fortune Kingdom. Huoluo Nation’s trade fair was famous and very well-known within the surrounding area of 100,000 miles. It was only that it was too far from the

Sky Fortune Kingdom. Even if one rode a Snow Dragon Horse that could cross 2000 miles in one day, it would still take a dozen or so days to arrive there.

With the time it took to get to Huoluo Nation, coupled with the time it took to find the materials, and the fact that some materials couldn’t necessarily be bought, it was wrong to depend solely on the Crown Prince to obtain the complete list of materials for the body inscription symbol.

Lin Ming said with heartfelt appreciation, “Please thank the Crown Prince for me. I, Lin Ming, will always remember this favor.”

“Haha, Brother Lin is far too polite. As soon as I ran into Brother Lin, I knew that Brother Lin was a man worth knowing. Rest assured, the Crown Prince has some savings that he’s accrued over the years. He can easily bear the burden of buying some materials. But the one who has a burden is really Brother Lin. Brother Lin not only has amazing martial arts skills, but also has a thorough understanding of inscription technique. This really makes anyone feel disbelief! Brother Lin, you really make me want to throw away what I thought the word genius meant.”

Chapter 126 – Zhang Guanyu Moves

Chapter 126 – Zhang Guanyu Moves

…

…

…

Lin Ming smiled and shook his head, "Brother Liao flatters me. It is only because I have a fierce master that I have such achievements. That's right, since Zhu Yan has left Sky Fortune City, then what happened to Lan Yunyue? Did she leave with him?"

Although he already had nothing to do with Lan Yunyue, Lin Ming still inquired. Zhu Yan might have gone crazy by now; he might take out his anger on Lan Yunyue.

Liao Wenyuan smiled and said, "Brother Lin, feel relieved that Lan Yunyue is all right. But, she has already withdrawn herself from the Seven Profound Martial House. Presently she is still within Sky Fortune City. His Highness the Crown Prince has already sent some people to secretly protect her."

"Oh? Lan Yunyue has left school…" Lin Ming was a little stunned. The Crown Prince was really very thoughtful; he had even taken Lan Yunyue into account. There truly was a substantial advantage in joining a major power. There were a lot of matters that he didn't need to worry about; there were naturally people that would help manage them.

Liao Wenyuan said, "That's about everything I have to say. I will walk first. Brother Lin please continue whatever it was you were doing."

"Mm. Thank you Brother Liao."

"Haha, that's what I should be doing."

As he bid farewell to Liao Wenyuan, Lin Ming continued to walk to the Inscription Association. In order to buy the materials he needed, it was actually a bad idea to only rely on the Crown Prince. He had to look for another way.

‘If I can draw up an inscription symbol that even the Houtian martial artists of the Sky Fortune Kingdom will want, then I can have the Houtian martial artists help me look. That way, it would be possible to find the materials I need in a shorter period of time…’

This was the plan that Lin Ming had thought of before, and was the only means he could think of.

With the improvement in Lin Ming’s inscription technique, he might just be barely able to create an inscription symbol that would move the heart of a Houtian stage martial artist. But this method would draw a bit too much publicity.

…………………

Inscription Association –

“Mister Lin!” A pleasantly surprised Wang Yuhan said after seeing Lin Ming. She had already been waiting in the Inscription room for some time.

“Miss Wang, I’m very embarrassed. There was a small matter so I was delayed.” Because he had entered into space within the Magic Cube, Lin Ming’s soul force consumption was extremely fierce that night, and he didn’t wake up early like he usually did. Then after that he went to the Violent Wind Tunnel to practice, and time had dragged on a bit too long.

“There are already quite a few visitors waiting.” Wang Yuhan said as she pointed towards the hall.

Lin Ming looked. In the hall, there were already 7 or 8 people who were patiently waiting there. Usually at this time, there would only be 2 or 3 people.

The last time, Lin Ming had repeatedly gone through requests. No matter whether it was repairing an inscription symbol or drawing one up, he managed to smoothly complete the task each time. And what was most pleasantly surprising to the martial artists was that the inscription symbols Lin Ming had drawn up had a much better effect than a normal inscription master!

Usually to achieve this affect, only a few of the top inscription masters of Sky Fortune Kingdom, like Wang Xuanji, were able to do so.

But what kind of character was Wang Xuanji? Most people simply could not move him. Even if they wanted him to, his price was not something that most martial artists could afford to pay.

But Lin Ming's price for work was very cheap. His service wasn't actually much worse compared to those top level inscription masters. As a result, many visitors had come because they had learned this.

"I heard that the guest inscription master is in his teens. I don't know whether this rumor is true though." A visitor thoughtlessly said. Today he had brought a medium-grade human-step treasure. He had already had this treasure for over half a year, but hadn't found an appropriate inscription symbol. He did not even bother glancing at common inscription symbols, but the price for the top tier inscription symbols were just too high and not to his liking. He cultivated cold attribute true essence, and therefore wanted an inscription symbol that matched his true essence attribute.

And then yesterday, he had overheard that a new guest inscription master had come to the Inscription Association and drawn up an 'Icefrost Guard' inscription symbol. After being placed on, the armor had actually changed to an icy blue color. That was why before the dawn had even risen, he had lined up here and had already waited most of the day till now. However, he wasn't even the slightest bit impatient. The earlier he came, the earlier in line he would be, and he might be the first one that the inscription master helped. The first inscription symbol that an inscription master made was the best. This was because at that time their soul force and true essence were at their most abundant state, and it was also easier to obtain the best result. As the day dragged on, the chances of getting the best possible result would decrease.

“It’s true, when my friend came; he saw with his own eyes that the inscription master was just a youth.”

“What’s wrong with the world? Is inscription technique not difficult to learn? He’s already at this level, in a few years him surpassing Wang Xuanji would be as simple as eating a meal or drinking water.”

“The children these days are becoming increasingly fierce. A few years ago there was Qin Xingxuan, and half a month ago there was a Lin Ming. Now, there’s also an inscription genius. Where did this boy come from, why have I never heard of him before?”

“He shouldn’t be someone from the Sky Fortune Kingdom. Our Sky Fortune Kingdom’s inscription technique isn’t that amazing. In certain places in the mainland, there are families who engage in special occupations. For instance, array master families, alchemist families, inscription master families, refiner families, and so forth. These families have already inherited legacies of over a thousand years, and they are much more formidable than the Sky Fortune Kingdom. They would screen the soul talent of each generation’s outstanding descendants, and have a pair of a high-talent male and female marry. The child they give birth to would have the possibility of having a high-grade soul talent. Gradually, in these families, even having a fifth-grade soul talent isn’t strange. In addition to their glorious and long history and the many inheritances and legacies that they have accumulated, their level of inscription technique must be many times more formidable than the average inscription master.”

A knowledgeable old man slowly said this as he stroked his beard. The truth was that nothing he said was a secret. Not only were there families with particular professions, but martial arts were the same. There were martial arts families with grandiose histories that had existed since ancient times. For instance, of the Seven Profound Marital House’s current core disciples, besides Qin Xingxuan, the rest had come from martial cultivation families. Lin Ming was thought to be such a person by them.

As the group of people was talking, a young receptionist lady came over, and politely told them, “The guest inscription master has arrived. Everyone has been waiting for a long time. We may begin now.”

……………………

Allied Trade Association, Sky Fortune City Headquarters –

In a luxurious room in the midst of a renovation, Zhang Guanyu reclined on a bed. In his hand he held a delicate eggshell-like porcelain bowl that was threaded with fine gold slivers. In the small golden bowl was a creamy liquid.

This thick and fragrant liquid was milk. But it was not goat’s milk or sheep’s milk or something like that, but was a woman’s breast milk.

In most nobles’ mansions, they raised a number of wet nurses. These wet nurses would squeeze out their breast milk and the nobles would enjoy this delicacy. Human breast milk was considered to be the most nutritious of all milks. Whether a baby grew well had much to do with breast milk, and how long they were on breast milk before they were weaned off. Because of this, it was popular within the aristocrats of Sky Fortune Kingdom to raise wet nurses in their mansions.

Normally, the women that had the occupation of a wet nurse, were those that had just had a child, or their child had died, or they were sold off. Most of these women came from the countryside, and usually only the women with poor appearances would come and be a wet nurse to help out with their family’s expenses.

The saying was that a woman with big buttocks would easily give birth. Therefore, the women that were able to squeeze enough breast milk were usually somewhat plump. In addition, they had mostly been doing farm work in the countryside since they were children. Their skin had already been thoroughly exposed to sun and rain, and was rough. Most were not attractive.

Zhang Guanyu, this person, had very loose lips. He felt that this kind of woman wet nurse seriously affected his ‘appetite’. Therefore the wet nurses he raised had to be pretty and beautiful women beyond all else. These kinds of beauty were usually the concubines of other wealthy individuals. Their age was usually 20 or so, and their looks were charming and pleasant.

The Allied Trade Association had a huge influence. Some respected families would offer their concubines on their own volition in order to flatter Zhang Guanyu. But, there were also some that were compelled by Zhang Guanyu. In those cases the families would have to obediently offer up their concubines. As for the children that these concubines had given birth to, the families could only have their own wet nurses replace them.

Some concubines were in delicate health, and their breast milk was scarce. However, this didn’t matter to Zhang Guanyu. In fact, Zhang Guanyu liked this kind; he felt that such breast milk was the sweetest, as well as the most rare and precious.

Sometimes, a concubine that Zhang Guanyu had an appetite for would be directly sent to his harem. Zhang Guanyu had an interest in all the various flavors of beautiful women; even a person’s wife was no exception.

“Have you found her?” Zhang Guanyu lazily asked, slowly sipping on his bowl of breast milk.

“Informing the young master, we have found her.” The one speaking was a middle-aged man of over 40 years old. His breath was long and his heartbeat was powerful; he was at the Viscera Training stage.

“Mm. We shall go.” Zhang Guanyu said and tossed down the rest of the breast milk in the bowl. He excitedly licked his lips; his appearance quite fierce at this moment.

“Young master… to do this, is…” The middle-aged man hesitated.

“Mm? Are you afraid to offend Lin Ming?”

“Young Master, Lin Ming has already risen to a core disciple’s status within the Seven Profound Martial House. If he continues to rise in the future, and becomes a Seven Profound Envoy or the Martial House Master, if we have offended such a person, it would be very difficult to manage…”

“Your meaning is, I should lie down with both hands tied, and let him step on me? And even befriend Lin Ming? Is that right?” Zhang Guanyu’s voice suddenly cooled.

The middle-aged man hurriedly said, “Young Master, this subordinate does not mean that.”

“Humph! The Seven Profound Martial House has pushed me to stand against Lin Ming, it is impossible for me to live in peace with him! Do you want me to admit defeat? Even if I admit defeat, do you think Lin Ming will receive my kindness? The Seven Profound Martial House wants me to be Lin Ming’s stepping stone, but what they do not know is I am not a stepping stone! I am a caltrop! Whoever steps on me will die!”

Zhang Guanyu’s heart of martial arts was an arrogant heart. He could understand that some people were stronger than him from the start, but he could not bear to see a young man compared to him, and chase after him and then surpass him! Not only that, but Lin Ming was younger than him by five years!

Because Lin Ming had stolen his thunder, he had already become extremely unhappy. Not only that, but the fight in four months would definitely attract the attention of everyone within the Sky Fortune Kingdom. If he lost in that situation, it would be a shameful disgrace. Zhang Guanyu’s arrogant heart could not accept such a matter.

The truth was, Zhang Guanyu had complete confidence in winning the match four months from now. But even if he won, he felt that Lin Ming would eventually surpass him. At that time, Lin Ming would challenge him again to defeat him. In this way, the result would still be the same!

Zhang Guanyu had a premonition that once he was defeated by Lin Ming someday, then he would forever be surpassed by Lin Ming, and would be unable to stand up from this catastrophic failure!

This would frustrate his arrogant heart. This knot, he would never be able to untie! And that was because he could never surmount Lin Ming again!

Zhang Guanyu absolutely did not want to see that ever happen.

Chapter 127 – Despicable Means

Chapter 127 – Despicable Means

…

…

…

After having cultivated the ‘Divine Acacia Power’, Zhang Guanyu’s heart had a strong wish. That wish was to cultivate the ‘Divine Acacia Power’ to the peak of the seventh layer, and achieve a long period of youth, the time where his Yang essence would never fade.

Once he achieved this boundary, he would have several hundred years of youth. He would be able to play with all the various beautiful and worldly women in society, take them, and plunder them. From the beauties of today to the beauties of several hundred years later, he would establish a massive harem that surpassed the Royal Family’s harem of 3000 beautiful woman. Every day he would go visit his personal harem and wantonly engage in reckless fun with them. Thinking of this, Zhang Guanyu would be filled with burning desire, and his blood would bubble to the brim with a maddeningly ecstatic excitement.

But with Zhang Guanyu’s talent, to cultivate the ‘Divine Acacia Power’ to the peak seventh layer was easier said than done.

He had just begun cultivating the ‘Divine Acacia Power’. If everything went smoothly, and he picked the best beautiful women to cultivate from, there was a small possibility that he would be able to reach the peak of the seventh layer. But if four months from now, he was defeated by Lin Ming in front of the eyes of everyone, then his spirit and heart would be suppressed and his Yang essence would not flow smoothly. In that case, it would be very difficult to reach the peak of the seventh layer!

So, Zhang Guanyu decided to completely and thoroughly defeat Lin Ming in the match four months from now. He would mercilessly trample over him so that he would never be able to stand up from his failure in his entire life! He would snatch everything from him; all the haloes that surrounded him and all the beautiful women that admired him!

His heart would be serene, his Yang essence would flow unimpeded, and his cultivation would increase by leaps and bounds.

That middle-aged man said, “Young Master, this subordinate is too dull-minded. But this subordinate only thinks that if you do such things, it will enrage Lin Ming. When the time comes, it will only deepen the animosity of an enemy.”

“Humph! So what if I enrage him!? You think I am going to admit defeat without a fight!?”

“But…”

“No buts! Lin Ming is scary, yes, and the Tenth Prince does not dare to move against him. I have to respect the Crown Prince, but this does not mean that I must be servile to him. If others rode on your head, would you also lie on the floor and act like a dog? Since this Lin Ming wants to defeat me, then I will eliminate him!

“Young Master is ready…” The middle-aged man did not understand what his upcoming plans and defeating Lin Ming had in common.

“I ask you, what is most fearful about Lin Ming?”

The middle-aged man thought for a moment and said, “His perception, martial intent, and heart of martial arts.”

“Yes, but the most fundamental of all these is his heart of martial arts. As long as I can break his heart of martial arts, then he will lose his martial intent. If he does not have his martial intent, then he will just be some garbage third-grade talent. Even if he has monstrous heaven-defying perception, his cultivation will be limited to below the Pulse

Condensation Period. What sort of achievements could he possibly have? As long as he doesn't become stronger, his halo will gradually disappear until everyone has forgotten about him. At that time, he will be nothing to but an ant. I'll crush him to death with a single step."

"He is under the protection of the Seven Profound Martial House now. It is impossible for me to publicly deal with him. I can only break his heart of martial arts!"

"To deal with Lin Ming, it must be before he grows!"

Zhang Guanyu devilishly grinned, revealing a trace of his teeth. But that middle-aged man only felt sorrow in his heart. If he could defeat Lin Ming's heart, then that was of course good, but what if he failed? Then they would have seriously offended Lin Ming, and that might possibly affect the Young Master's future status in the Allied Trade Association.

The Allied Trade Association would never appoint a successor that had offended a Seven Profound Envoy or the Martial House Master.

However, Zhang Guanyu was paranoid by nature, and he practiced the 'Divine Acacia Power' which strengthened his possessive instincts. How would he listen to his words?

Many cultivation methods could affect a person's mind. For instance, cultivating the 'Abiding Buddha Mantra' could cause one's thoughts to be stable, and pure in heart. The 'Golden Bone Forging Divine Formula' would cause a person's Qi and blood to be filled with Yang energy and become indomitable. However, what the 'Divine Acacia Formula' did was cause a person's possessive instincts to grow stronger and stronger, and their thoughts would be increasingly extreme and violent.

"Young Master, perhaps we should discuss this matter with the Master..."

"Mm?" Zhang Guanyu's complexion immediately went cold, and he emitted a faint murderous intent.

The middle-aged man jumped in fear, hurriedly saying, “This subordinate should die, this subordinate should die!”

“Too much talk leads to error. All you have to do is your duty as a servant!” Zhang Guanyu withdrew his murderous aura. This so-called Master was naturally Zhang Guanyu’s father. Zhang Guanyu knew that if this matter was known by his father, he would absolutely not be allowed to do so. Because in the eyes of his father, the Allied Trade Association’s future was far more important than Zhang Guanyu’s future martial arts cultivation!

His father would never run the risk of offending Lin Ming and going up against him. In his opinion, in the worst case scenario, Zhang Guanyu would lose and that would be it.

But as for Zhang Guanyu, no matter how large the influence of the Allied Trade Association was, it was impossible for them to give him several hundred years of youth and never-ending Yang essence. Only strength would bring him this. As long as he had strength, all the worldly possessions of the Allied Trade Association were nothing but floating clouds!

Geniuses were confident. Lin Ming was confident and Zhang Guanyu was similarly confident. A truly proud talent would never recognize from the beginning that they were inferior to others. Otherwise, his heart would be blocked, and Zhang Guanyu would be more paranoid.

Geniuses always thought that they were the protagonists of the world’s future, and so they would fight. However, these fights must have casualties.

………………

Sky Fortune City, Southwestern Suburb –

The Sky Fortune City Royal Palace faced south. The northern end of town was where most of the mansions of the nobility were, and it was a relatively prosperous location. The south of the city was deserted, especially near the suburbs, where it was quite deserted.

In the southwest suburb, there were some low-rise houses. Although these houses had been here for years, they did not look old. It was just that under the rain, the dull gray tiles, blank white walls, and the shading from the trees, did not have a fresh feeling.

In the midst of all these houses, there was a new shop. The shop's original owner had returned to the countryside to retire, and had put his shop on sale.

After the new owner took over, the shop doors were painted with fresh new tung oil, and the inside was spotlessly cleaned. There were even some flowers and plants that were placed around; it looked much more elegant.

At this time, in the shop entrance, there was a young girl wearing a simple blue cotton dress. She was quite beautiful, with supple, tender skin; she gave off fresh and crisp feeling. She was fiddling with some cloths on the shelves.

This girl seemed to be in delicate health, and the cloth she was moving appeared extremely cumbersome. However, the girl's skill was actually high, and she stacked the large and small fabrics neatly.

This girl was Lan Yunyue. Because her engagement contract had become invalid, Lan Yunyue had left the Seven Profound Martial House. She had helplessly walked through Sky Fortune City for an entire day. She was too ashamed to return home, and she did not know where to go or what to do. In the end, she decided to set her foot down in Sky Fortune City.

Therefore, she pawned some of her jewelry, and opened up this small fabric shop.

All of the neighbors ridiculously loved this new young girl.

The girl wore simple blue clothes every day, and she was always busy at work in her small fabric shop. Such a delicate and juicy young girl that was actually willing to endure such hardship was rare. Not only that, but this girl's hands and feet were deft, her strength was great, and she also cooked a good meal. It stood to reason that such a girl that had endured this hardship since childhood would have rough skin, and both her hands should at least have callouses, but they actually didn't think that both of this girl's hands would be soft and creamy like liquid jade. It was simply amazing.

What kind of girl was this?

After knowing that this girl was one person alone by herself, many of neighborhood aunts' hearts were aroused with overwhelming sympathy. They curiously asked about the girl's life experiences, but the girl always ambiguously answered in vague terms.

Some of these aunts even wanted to act as a matchmaker for this beautiful young girl, but to these offers, the girl always faintly smiled and refused.

……….

"Young Master, we're here." The middle-aged man pointed to a sign hanging over a fabric shop. That sign hadn't been hanging there for a long time.

"Ha! What an elegant shop! Good!" Zhang Guanyu shook the fan in his hands, and his face revealed a pondering smile as if was looking at a delicious prey.

In order to break Lin Ming's heart of martial arts, he had to find the flaw in Lin Ming's heart of martial arts. To Zhang Guanyu, it seemed the only flaw in Lin Ming's heart of martial arts was Lan Yunyue.

When Lin Ming had spent half an incense stick of time to overcome the Pass of Desire, that person in the dream realm must have been Lan Yunyue.

Although Lan Yunyue's matter had already passed, Zhang Guanyu still believed that Lan Yunyue was a knot in Lin Ming's heart.

If, he could take Lan Yunyue, and cultivate his 'Divine Acacia Power' with her, what would be the outcome once Lin Ming found out?

Zhang Guanyu very much wanted to know.

In a matter like a duel, if one was defeated, they would be fine to fight a second time. There would not be a situation where their ‘spirit’ would be suppressed and blocked.

But a girl was different. As long as he got her in his bed, that was a forever matter. Zhang Guanyu believed that even though Lan Yunyue betrayed Lin Ming, she still had a place within his heart. If he took Lan Yunyue, then this would forever be a thorn in his mind. This thorn would be something he could never ever erase. Even if Lin Ming defeated him, that thorn would still remain!

If one’s ‘spirit’ wasn’t smooth, then their thoughts would be clouded and their cultivation would be blocked. When Lin Ming tried to breakthrough a bottleneck of his martial arts cultivation, this would be a demon of his heart that stopped him.

And the key to this was, could Lin Ming defeat him?

It was true that the Seven Profound Martial House protected Lin Ming. But, they did not protect Lan Yunyue, and this girl had already withdrawn from the Seven Profound Martial House. If Lin Ming knew that he had obtained Lan Yunyue for himself, would he rush towards him, head full of anger, and ask him to a duel?

If Lin Ming came to his front door, that would simply be too good. At this moment, Zhang Guanyu had a 100% assurance that he could defeat Lin Ming.

Even if he waited four months, he still had 90% assurance that he would win against Lin Ming. This was because recently, his ‘Divine Acacia Power’ had reached the Large Success stage of the first layer, and his strength had grown by a large margin. This was something that Lin Ming did not know.

Zhang Guanyu expected that on the day of that decisive battle, Lin Ming, because of anger, would ruthlessly attack him, with each move desperately aggressive.

In Zhang Guanyu’s imagined scenario, that would be perfect. He would be perfectly justified to use some of the sinister and sadistic styles of the ‘Divine Acacia Power’, and leave

Lin Ming to suffer with irreversibly severe injuries; injuries that would seriously impact his future cultivation.

Even if he could not reach that point, he could still make it so that Lin Ming would be confined to bed for at least half a year!

If Lin Ming had to recuperate in bed for half a year, then what would happen?

Could he still pass the Seven Profound Valleys' core disciple test?

The test's deadline was in little more than a year. This was his only chance. As long as Lin Ming did not pass the test, in Zhang Guanyu's eyes he had nothing to fear. In addition to his future achievements and the disparity in their influence, Zhang Guanyu had full confidence that he could suppress Lin Ming for a lifetime!

Chapter 128 – Liao Wenyuan

Chapter 128 – Liao Wenyuan

Chapter title is a spoiler, highlight it to read it now, or see it at the bottom.

…

…

…

First, he would snatch the jade virginity of the woman that Lin Ming had loved and use her to enhance his own cultivation. Then on the stage in front of the eyes of everyone, Lin Ming would be defeated by the man who had stolen his woman, and also experience a severe wound that would take half a year to heal from. This would cause him to fail the Seven Profound Martial House core disciple test!

With so many attacks concentrated together, what would happen to Lin Ming?

Would he ever be able to calm down his ‘spirit’? Would he be able to maintain his perfect heart of martial arts?

Zhang Guanyu self-reflected. If he was placed in that situation, he would be wild with rage, and his ‘spirit’ would be disrupted.

If his ‘spirit’ couldn’t flow well, then one’s cultivation would be hindered.

Since ancient times, the frustrated geniuses everywhere that had never recovered from a setback all had one common characteristic. This was that before it had happened, everything had been smooth sailing, and then they would suddenly suffer a disastrous defeat.

“You think your future prospects are limitless, but these are all things given to you by your martial intent. If I take away your martial intent, then you will be nothing! Wait for me to plunder the virginity of the woman you once loved, shatter your martial intent, grievously wound you, and waste your future!”

Thinking of Lin Ming’s inevitable fate, Zhang Guanyu really wanted to let out a hearty laugh. He looked again at Lan Yunyue in her small fabric shop, and the corners of his mouth flashed with a ferocious macabre smile. He lifted his foot and walked forwards her.

“Hello two customers, are you looking to purchase something?” Lan Yunyue sweetly greeted with a smile as she saw the two silk-robed men walk into the shop. Although she and Zhang Guanyu had both attended the Seven Profound Martial House at the same time, Zhang Guanyu rarely appeared in front of others, so Lan Yunyue did not recognize him.

But as they approached Lan Yunyue, her eyes gradually sharpened. The silk robed man who was waving a fan was not some common or trivial person. Not even mentioning the richly brocaded silk fabrics he was wearing, but the jade pendant that he was wearing at his waist was worth no less than 5000 gold taels. It was a top-quality white translucent jade pendant. Not only that, but it had delicate red veins within; it was a very beautiful blood jade. She remembered that not even Zhu Yan had such a high quality jade pendant. To so casually wear a jade pendant that was equal to 1 or 2 treasures on his body, the young man’s family background was simply too terrifying.

Lan Yunyue could not see through this young man’s cultivation, but she could easily see that the middle-aged man accompanying him was at the Viscera Training stage. To have a follower at the Viscera Training stage, just who was this man?

But the key was, why would the son of such a wealthy person come to such a small hole-in-the-wall shop to buy fabric? Although her fabric was decent, it was not something that this young man would ever deem worthy to be glanced at. This kind of person from a wealthy family probably used precious snow silk as his fabric.

Also, those who bought fabrics were usually women. What would two men possibly be buying fabric for?

Lan Yunyue's mind flashed with all these thoughts, and in her heart she became secretly alert.

Zhang Guanyu looked at Lan Yunyue and revealed a faint smile. He joyously laughed and thought, "What a charming and juicy young beauty. Even though she's wearing coarse homespun clothing, it doesn't hide her exquisite makings. No wonder Lin Ming and Zhu Yan were both infatuated with this girl, moreover, I can tell that this girl truly has the body of a virgin. This is perfect, I'll settle her within my manor and thoroughly cultivate my 'Divine Acacia Power' with her. I will certainly enjoy this."

In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, according to customs, a man and woman wouldn't have sexual relations with each other before marriage. Certainly, this logic did not apply to concubines and maids because one did not need to marry them.

"Are you Miss Lan?" Zhang Guanyu asked straight to the point.

Lan Yunyue's heart chilled. Sure enough, they were looking for her. Since they've come to her door, they have already verified her identity.

She nodded and said, "Yes, I am. What matter do you two have with me?"

"Haha, I've seen Miss Lan before. The truth is, the first time that I saw Miss Lan, I was already attracted to Miss Lan. Whether it is appearance or temperament, Miss Lan is truly very charming!"

Lan Yunyue unconsciously stepped back half a step, opening up a distance between her and Zhang Guanyu. The wariness in her heart became heavier.

Zhang Guanyu saw Lan Yunyue step back, and also quickly stepped back himself to show respect. He said, "My apologies, I hope that I was not too offensive and therefore scared Miss Lan. I do not have any other meaning, honestly, I just want to say that I very much admire

Miss Lan, but before, Miss Lan was already engaged. My only regret is that I did not meet Miss Lan sooner. I recently heard that Miss Lan has broken her engagement so I took the liberty to visit. I hope that Miss Lan is not offended by my brashness."

Lan Yunyue saw Zhang Guanyu's respect and felt a little more at ease. She calmly replied, "My engagement was not broken, but divorced."

"Haha, Miss Lan is too serious. I actually already knew that Zhu Yan had been expelled from the Zhu Family, how could he possibly be worthy of Miss Lan? I do not know why Miss Lan decided to open such a small fabric shop in this remote area. If Miss Lan does not mind, how about coming over to my house for a visit? I have some gifts that I must give to Miss Lan."

Lan Yunyue's heart began to race. This young man in front of her, his words were appropriate, his smile was gentle, and by all appearances he was a modest and classy gentleman that didn't give off any ill-feelings. However, Lan Yunyue suddenly felt that there was something wrong about him.

Lan Yunyue knew how sensitive her status was. She was Lin Ming's former girlfriend. Just on this point alone, even if there was a son of a rich family who had taken a liking to her, they wouldn't be so crazy as to come here and try to take advantage of her.

Although Lan Yunyue knew that Lin Ming no longer had any relationship with her, those nobles would not think such a thing. This was something that they would never dare to do; in their opinion, this was the same as insulting Lin Ming.

But this young man actually dared to be so flagrantly blatant to court her. There were only two possible meanings to this; he was completely crazy or he was completely opposed to Lin Ming, or even had a grudge with him!

Thinking of this, Lan Yunyue had a very bad feeling, like an unlucky premonition that was slowly creeping up behind her, that someone would try to kidnap her and use her to threaten Lin Ming…

Although she could not see through this young man's cultivation, she knew without a doubt that she was not his match. In addition to that old servant that stood behind him, she had no chance of escaping!

Zhang Guanyu saw Lan Yunyue tense up and go on high alert, smiled, and said, "I heard that Miss Lan has already withdrawn from the Seven Profound Martial House. It's really too bad. With Miss Lan's talent, with good pills supporting, it would be possible to break through to the Pulse Condensation Period. Once someone breaks through to the Pulse Condensation Period, their youth will be lengthened by decades. Isn't this something that Miss Lan desires?"

Zhang Guanyu lightly coughed, and the middle-aged man immediately handed him a box. He opened it; there were two bottles of pills inside. Zhang Guanyu casually took out a bottle and opened it. The rich and fragrant aroma of high-quality medicines immediately wafted out. These were clearly top-quality medicines.

Zhang Guanyu smiled and handed the pills to Lan Yunyue. He said, "These are high-grade soul gathering pellets, just a trivial little gift not worth mentioning. Miss Lan, please do not reject them. These are only a small gift that I prepared for our first meeting. In the future, I can give you anything you want. With my status, I will not bring disgrace to you. How about it?" Zhang Guanyu knew of Lan Yunyue's past. He knew what Lan Yunyue desired, and had always wanted. She was divorced now; it was impossible for her to remarry into any respectable family. He did not believe that if he appeared in front of her when she was in such a dire situation and offered so many pills, and even offered to help her break through to the Pulse Condensation Period, that Lan Yunyue would not be tempted by this.

However, he hadn't expected that Lan Yunyue would simply not take the bottle of pills. She refused them, and directly said, "This young lady understands and thanks good sir for his kind intentions, but must decline. I no longer wish to cultivate the path of martial arts, and would like to live out the rest of my days as an ordinary person. I thank good sir for his kind regards, and ask that good sir please never return.

"Oh, is that so…?" Zhang Guanyu's smiling visage slowly fell, and an imposing aura from his body slowly began to grow. The middle-aged man behind him stepped forward, blocking the rear door.

Lan Yunyue immediately became flustered, and her pretty face began to pale. "You…what do you want to do?"

Zhang Guanyu said, "It's a pity that Miss Lan does not seem very interested in returning to my home, but I think that as long as I bring you there, I can make you change your mind by fulfilling your interest of 'sex'."

As Lan Yunyue heard Zhang Guanyu bite out this word 'sex', she immediately turned ice-cold. This person… he… he dares to rape her!? He was insane! Was he completely ignoring the threat of Lin Ming and abducting her to his own house!?

Was he not afraid of Lin Ming's retaliation?

Lan Yunyue knew that even if she no longer had any relationship with Lin Ming, if some person was to rape her, Lin Ming would absolutely never let that person off.

Lan Yunyue's back was already soaked in cold sweat. Her eyes glanced at the booth, and she saw not a trace of the scissors she used to cut fabric with…

"Haha, such a young girl and also so beautiful. Don't take things too hard; look at the bright side." Zhang Guanyu's smiling face became all the more intense.

Zhang Guanyu took a step forward. He revolved a bit of his true essence, and was just about to make a move, when at this moment a hearty laughter suddenly came from the entrance. "Haha, is that not Sir Zhang? Sky Fortune City is such a small place; I can't believe that I would bump into you here!"

Zhang Guanyu frowned and he turned around. He was surprised to see a man with thick eyebrows smiling at him as he walked over. With every step this man took, he was emitting a strong aura that suppressed him.

Liao Wenyuan!

Zhang Guanyu recognized this person. He was a Pulse Condensation Period master who was a subordinate of the Crown Prince. Not only that, but he was already at the middle Pulse Condensation Period. Even if there were four of five or him, he still wouldn't be this man's match!

The Crown Prince actually sent Liao Wenyuan to protect Lan Yunyue?

No, that's not right. It should be that there was someone following her, and as soon as this shadowy saw that he had come, had used a sound transmitting talisman to immediately notify Liao Wenyuan. With a Pulse Condensation Period master's speed, catching up so quickly was not a problem!

Damn!

"Mister Liao! What a fortunate meeting!" Zhang Guanyu said as he cupped his hands together in greeting.

"Fortunate meeting, fortunate meeting." Liao Wenyuan clasped his hands together and returned the courtesy. He calmly asked, "Is Sir Zhang also here to buy fabric?"

"Oh, ah, it's for the beginning of winter. My family wishes to purchase a batch of winter clothing."

"Haha, I also have this plan for the coming winter. I came early, but didn't think that I would meet Sir Zhang also choosing out fabric. This is such a fortunate coincidence, how about Sir Zhang chooses fabric with me?"

"Hehe..." Zhang Guanyu suddenly smiled, but his smiling face contained a faint trace of murderous intention. He coldly said, "Do not trouble yourself Mister Liao. Mister Liao should feel free to choose his own fabric. When the winter comes this year, it will be best if you do not freeze to death."

After Zhang Guanyu said this, he waved the fan in his hands, flicked his sleeves, and left the shop.

Hearing Zhang Guanyu's apparent threat before he left, Liao Wenyuan only smiled and yawned. He was a Pulse Condensation Period master, and did not fear the Allied Trade Association. He was also a subordinate of the Crown Prince; what could Zhang Guanyu possible do to him?

Chapter 129 – Medium-Grade Human-Step Sword

Chapter 129 – Medium-Grade Human-Step Sword

…

…

…

It was only when she could no longer sense Zhang Guanyu that Lan Yunyue let out a breath of relief, her fingers trembling. A moment ago, did that man say Sir Zhang? Was it possible that the youth was Zhang Guanyu?

Although she no longer kept thoughts of Lin Ming in her mind, Lan Yunyue had still unintentionally heard news of Lin Ming. She knew that four months from now, Lin Ming would challenge Zhang Guanyu. Was it because of this reason that Zhang Guanyu had wanted to do something so ruthless to her?

But it was nothing more than a challenge, so why would he do this?

Lan Yunyue didn't understand.

It was not only Lan Yunyue who didn't understand. It had never even occurred to Lin Ming that Zhang Guanyu would be demented to such a degree, that this person wished to obtain everything in the world. Glory, status, woman; all were his and anyone who threatened to encroach on these would be a thorn in his side!

Any normal person, such as the Tenth Prince, even if they regarded Lin Ming as a thorn in their side they would never dare to move against them. They would outwardly smile and show good will. But Zhang Guanyu was different; anyone that threatened him would receive his mad retaliation.

“Miss Lan, are you alright?” Liao Wenyuan smiled. Although he knew Lan Yunyue and Lin Ming’s past, he did not look down on this girl. In this world, there were two kinds of companions that were worth feeling grateful for. The first was a woman; when everything went downhill, they would still stand by their man and cross the hard times with their husband. The second was a successful man with a rising career who would cross life together with just his first wife.

Running into these two kinds of companions would be one of life’s great fortunes. But, if one cannot meet someone like this, they no one can be blamed either.

“Thank… thank you Senior. My I ask Senior’s name?” Lan Yunyue bit her lip and bowed.

Without a doubt, this intimidating man with thick eyebrows had come to protect her. To be a martial arts master that would protect an ordinary female, he must have some sort of relation to Lin Ming.

“Miss Lan does not need to be polite. My surname is Liao, my name is Liao Wenyuan. Just call me Mister Liao.”

“Senior Liao’s graciousness, this young lady will never forget.”

“Haha, you don’t need to thank me. I was just doing as I was instructed.”

Lan Yunyue hesitated, and could not help but ask, “May I ask how Senior Liao and Mister Lin are…”

Liao Wenyuan heard Lan Yunyue say this and smiled. “Mister Lin? Haha Miss Lan, when you say it like that, how could I not respond. It’s Lin Ming right?”

Lan Yunyue awkwardly nodded. She was now a commoner, and this Liao Wenyuan in front of her was probably a master at the Pulse Condensation Period, and a titled aristocrat. She should refer to him in a respectable manner and call him mister.

But Lin Ming's status was that of a core disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House, so his status was actually higher than Liao Wenyuan's. Lin Ming also didn't have relations with her anymore, that's why in front of Liao Wenyuan she had called him Mister Lin as a show of respect. Only someone who was incomparably intimate with Lin Ming, such as his younger sister or girlfriend, could call him 'big brother', or call him directly by his name.

"I was sent by His Highness the Crown Prince. But before this, Brother Lin has also asked me about you. Miss Lan, your status is quite sensitive now, it is probably impossible for you to ever live a quiet life again. How about this, you come with me back to the Crown Prince's palace, and the Crown Prince will guarantee your safety, so that something like this will never happen again."

Lan Yunyue nipped her lips and nodded. In this situation, she had no choice.

So like this, Lan Yunyue arrived at the Crown Prince's palace in awe and trepidation. Unexpectedly, she was personally received by the Crown Prince, Yang Lin, who politely inquired about her situation. Lan Yunyue was then arranged into an elegant room within the Crown Prince's palace, and some maids were specially sent to take care of Lan Yunyue.

Here, there was a pavilion with a collection of rare books, rooms to practice calligraphy and painting, and masters that would teach her how. There were martial arts cultivation rooms, and also martial arts teachers.

When Lan Yunyue arrived here, her mood was extremely complex. She did not expect that so many things would happen within a few months, and that in the end she would finally be admitted to the Crown Prince's palace…

…………………………

In the Inscription Association, the guest inscription master would tailor their inscriptions based upon the customer's request. Each customer had different requests. Some only wanted to an inscription symbol, some wanted their treasures repaired, or some wanted to improve their treasures.

Everyday, Lin Ming was exposed to a variety of strange materials, and he would face a number of different requests. In the drawing process, Lin Ming's understanding of the nature of various materials began to slowly become perfect. He also began to further comprehend and achieve mastery of the memories and theories in his mind.

Meanwhile, the soul force also experienced significant growth. His use of the 'Overbearing Soul Tactic' became more skillful, even almost as well as his use of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula'. He would frequently push himself to the limit of his ability, then enter into the ethereal martial intent and rely on the true essence stones he had to restore his true essence. This caused Lin Ming's 'True Primal Chaos Formula' to steadily progress. Like this, it would only be a matter of time before he achieved the Small Success of the second layer.

He had continuously been drawing inscription symbols for three days, and Lin Ming began to become famous. More and more martial artists of Sky Fortune City came to know of the new guest inscription master at the Inscription Association. They knew that he was young, but his inscription technique approached the pinnacle of Sky Fortune Kingdom's inscription masters.

The flame brand that Lin Ming placed in his inscription symbols also became a hot commodity. If a treasure had this flame mark on it, its value would increase tremendously.

To a martial artist, a treasure that came from a famous expert was similar to a priceless mink coat to an aristocratic woman; it really was just as addictive and hard to let go.

…………..

In the Seven Profound Martial House, Murong Zi saw Bai Jingyun's treasure sword, and with eyes shining, said, "Wow Big Bister Jingyun, a medium-grade human-step treasure sword!"

In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, a medium-grade human-step treasure was very rare. There were many Pulse Condensation Period martial artists who did not have a medium-grade human-step treasure.

But Murong Zi and Bai Jingyun were only marital artists at the Altering Muscle stage. To an Altering Muscle stage martial artist, a low-grade human-step treasure was already sufficient. A medium-grade was simply overly extravagant.

"Mm, it's made by Huoluo Nation's Master Jadelotus. They've been open for less than a year, and my uncle gifted this to me."

Murong Zi said, "So that's it, it must be great to have such a nice uncle. That sword probably cost 20,000 gold taels."

"Probably. But this money to you Murong Zi is just some drizzle on a rainy day. Haha, Younger Sister, if you want to order a medium-grade human-step treasure sword, it's not so easy."

"Come on! Our family would never be so lavish. Besides, my father is the worst cheapskate of all time. Only if I enter the top ten of the Ranking Stone would get buy something like that for me. To enter the first ten, It's hopeless to think it will happen in the next year."

Bai Jingyun smiled, and said, "You're lazy. As long as you work hard, with your talent, it's very easy."

"Oh, I hope so. But Big Sister Jingyun, how come I've never seen you take out this sword before?"

Bai Jingyun said with a smile, "Because I couldn't find a suitable inscription before, so I never took it out. But this time, I heard that there is a guest inscription master at the

Inscription Association. He is young, but his inscription technique level has already reached the pinnacle. This person also can create an inscription symbol that suits my attribute. So I want to bring this sword and go to the Inscription Association to have a look.” Bai Jingyun said as she inventoried some materials. These materials had been arranged long ago, but she had never found a time to use them.

Usually a person would be very particular about a medium-grade human-step treasure’s inscription symbol. A lower level inscription master was simply insufficient to draw an inscription symbol upon a medium-grade human-step treasure, and even those inscription masters whose skill was high enough, often because of some reason or another, they could not meet the owner’s demand for what inscription symbol to put on the treasure.

For instance, Bai Jingyun wanted an inscription symbol on her sword that had a water attribute or ice attribute. However, in the Sky Fortune Kingdom’s school of inscription technique, there just weren’t many inscription symbols with attributes, and the only water attribute inscription symbols were the ‘Water Parting Symbol’ and a few others. But Bai Jingyun did not like these inscription symbols, and therefore had put this matter on hold.

Murong Zi curiously asked, “A young inscription master whose technique has reached the pinnacle? How young is he?”

“It is said that he is younger than 20 years old. But I’m not too clear of just how young.”

“What a joke! That’s simply too fabulous a tale; these rumors that people make up are become more and more odd. I don’t believe that there can be a 20 year old inscription master with such a high level of technique. I think that this guest inscription master is and old man who just looks a bit young. Either that or he’s not so high-level as people have blown him up to be.”

Bai Jingyun smiled and said, “Ah Zi, you are just too dismissive of geniuses. When Lin Ming had emerged, you had also looked down on him. What kind of person is he now? Lin Min will become a core disciple soon. Your temper just isn’t good, your jealousy is too strong. You just can’t see those at your age that are better than you.”

"Hey, just who is jealous!? Ah, this young lady has already begun to try her hardest. Big Sister Jingyun, you just wait and see. Even if I cannot compare to that farm animal Lin Ming in the future, I will compete in the Ten Thousand Killing Array match 3 months from now,and I will not lose to him. If he can really enter the top ten, then I will also enter the top ten and show you just how cool I am!"

"Haha, who was it that just said a moment ago that they would not be able to advance to the top ten within a year?" Bai Jingyun asked with a teasing smile.

"That… that's because……" Murong Zi blushed, and had nothing more to say.

Bai Jingyun laughed. "Okay, okay, I won't make fun of you. Do you want to go with me to the Inscription Association?"

"I'm too lazy to go. This thing is just a rumor, even if I go there's no point. You might as well ask Yuhan's grandfather to draw an inscription symbol for you! Yuhan's grandfather is the best inscription master in Sky Fortune City. If he is willing to help you, then what's not to like?"

Bai Jingyun said, "I want a water attribute inscription symbol. President Wang does not excel at them."

There were specializations within the inscription industry. Although Wang Xuanji had many attainments in inscription techniques and was very proficient, concerning the five elemental inscription symbols, he only excelled at fire and metal attribute inscription symbols.

"Then I'll go first. You practice well; I will wait to see you in the top ten 3 months from now." Bai Jingyun teased.

"Alright, alright, I'll go with you. I was just joking around, why are you so serious," Murong Zi grumpily said. She sent a bullied look towards Bai Jingyun, "I will show you how kind I am at heart and go with you to the Inscription Association. I want to see just how good this guest inscription master is."

“Mm? Okay.”

Chapter 130 – One Tael of Star Obsidian

Chapter 130 – One Tael of Star Obsidian

…

…

…

Inscription Association –

When Murong Zi saw Wang Yuhan in the distance speaking to guests in the Inscription Master Hall, she immediately ran up with joy.

“Yuhan! Long time no see, did you miss me?” Murong Zi called out from afar.

“Hey, you! It’s really been a long time since we saw each other.”

Wang Yuhan, Murong Zi, and Bai Jingyun were three girls of similar age, status, and outstanding natural talent. In Sky Fortune City, besides Qin Xingxuan, the most talked about girls were these three proud ladies.

These three girls had known each other since childhood and were close friends. However, Bai Jingyun and Murong Zi later left to attend the Seven Profound Martial House. Since Wang Yuhan favored inscription technique, and was not interested in fighting, she gave up on her opportunity to enter the Seven Profound Martial House.

Bai Jingyun asked, “Yuhan, how come you aren’t studying with your grandfather today? Why are you in the hall greeting guests? Oh, that’s right, isn’t there a very fierce guest inscription master who’s come recently? Is he here today?”

Wang Yuhan slightly hesitated and immediately understood that there were many people who didn't know that the guest inscription master was Lin Ming. Murong Zi and Bai Jingyun were disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House, how else would they not know that it was Lin Ming.

A sardonic smile crossed her face as she said, "He's in. I'm his assistant, so it's my duty to greet guests in the hall."

"Wow, an inscription prodigy that managed to have young lady Wang as his personal assistant. He must be extraordinary. I must certainly experience this person." Murong Zi said with a flair of exaggeration.

Wang Yuhan still smiling, said, "Being his assistant, I can learn many things. Would you like to see him now?"

"Haha, yes, I must see."

At this moment, Bai Jingyun commented, "I came to Little Sister's place today because there is a matter I'd like to ask of the new guest inscription master."

As she said this, she took out the medium-grade human-step treasure long sword. "I came this time to ask for a water attribute inscription symbol. I'd like to ask if the gentleman inscription master has time."

Wang Yuhan covered her mouth and chuckled. "Yes, he has the time. He's just restored his condition. Here, I'll lead you there."

Lin Ming looked into the hall from the inscription room, and saw Wang Yuhan bringing in two women. As they opened the door, Lin Ming had just withdrawn from his ethereal martial intent state. His true essence and soul force had not yet restored to their optimum condition, and he heard some people come in. Lin Ming sat in meditation and said, "Please write down your request on paper, lay down the materials and treasure, and you may leave. After the inscription is finished, someone will call you. During this period, please do not come in."

Lin Ming spoke these words, but hadn't actually gotten a response. He slightly frowned and slowly opened his eyes. He looked back at a Murong Zi and Bai Jingyun staring at him with wide, round eyes. Also, Wang Yuhan was standing to their side, her smiling face filled with a happy expression.

"Mm? It's you..." Lin Ming naturally recognized these girls. They were the Seven Profound Proud Pair of the Seven Profound Martial House.

"It's... it's you? You are the guest inscription master?" Murong Zi did not know if this was simply a Lin Ming lookalike. Her pair of beautiful eyes stared at him like two large quail eggs. She looked at Lin Ming's face with an unblinking expression, as if he was an illusion that would disappear at any time.

"Yes. I am." Now that Lin Ming had sufficient status and influence, he no longer needed to conceal his status as an inscription master.

"You... you......" Murong Zi stuttered. She had heard that the new guest inscription master was young, but she had never thought that this man would be Lin Ming!

'Heavens, this is just so damn depressing, is this some joke? This kickass elder sister has already recognized your strength. When you comprehended a martial intent, this elder sister did not have any words to say. When you had that evil monstrous perception I just took you as some hard working farm animal, but damn, this is so depressing, since when were you an inscription master?'

Ahh, I'm going crazy, this is just too damn shocking!

Even this elder sister can't stand this.

"This is a joke right? Yes? Yuhan, did you plot with this fellow to tease elder sister so you can be happy? Good. I admit that your joke is a bit creative, but... this can't be real, right?" Murong Zi saw Lin Ming's serious face and heard his words, but still simply could not accept this fact.

Wang Yuhan shrugged and said, “I might tease you for fun, but do you think that Lin Ming would join me in teasing you?”

Murong Zi squinted her eyes. Yes, this Lin Ming fellow, besides cultivation did not have the slightest interest in anything else, otherwise he would have already messed with countless young ladies. How could he join with Wang Yuhan to play a joke like this on her? Not to mention they didn’t really know each other.

“You… when did you start to study inscription technique?”

“When I was 12 years old.” Lin Ming nonsensically said. “When I was 12 I ran into my master, and I studied under him.”

Lin Ming said this lightly with some superficialness, but his tone made Murong Zi extremely unhappy. It was just like a poor person asking a super wealthy man with 1,000,000 gold taels where he got that much money, and the wealthy man finally said, “I casually earned it when I was young.”

With this kind of indifferent tone, Murong Zi had an impulse to beat someone up. Certainly, once she considered whether or not she could beat up this farm animal, and thinking that she might not necessarily win, Murong Zi was forced to give up on this idea.

By now, Bai Jingyun had recovered from her initial shock. She unnaturally smiled and said, “It’s you… I see… every time I thought I’d seen the full height of Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, in the end, I find that I have underestimated Junior Apprentice Brother Lin… this inscription technique, Junior Apprentice Brother Lin only studied for three years to be at the level of a master?”

Lin Ming responded, “I don’t dare to call myself a master, but I can draw out some simple inscription symbols. This is all because of the help of my master.”

“Haha…” Bai Jingyun let out a hollow laugh twice. Some simple inscription symbol? She had heard that when Lin Ming had drawn the ‘Icefrost Guard’ symbol and placed it on some armor, the armor had changed color. Could this still be called a ‘simple’ inscription symbol?

Three years to reach the point of being a master-level inscription master. Bai Jingyun could only attribute it to Lin Ming's monstrous perception that could comprehend a martial skill like the 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist' with a 70% loss rate. To become a master–level inscription master in three years, this also… she could reluctantly accept… however, for Lin Ming to be an inscription master, was his soul talent much more outstanding than this martial arts talent?

"What business do you two have here today?" Lin Ming opened his mouth to ask. His time was very tight these days; he didn't have any to waste.

"Oh… yes, I have a matter." Bai Jingyun responded, and then drew out her treasure longsword to hand to Lin Ming.

The treasure sword was more than three feet long, and the shining blade was dazzlingly bright like snow. Moreover, it was extremely soft and could easily circle around one's waist. At the center of the sword pommel, there were two characters written in symbols. It wrote, 'Blue Water'.

"Good sword. Lin Ming praised as he probed the Blue Water sword with his soul force. He discovered that the array structure was very subtle and exquisite; it was superior to most medium-grade human-step treasures.

Bai Jingyun said, "Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, I would like you to inscribe a water attribute or ice attribute inscription symbol on this sword. The true essence increase should be at least 36%."

"Water or ice attribute, 36%. Anything else?

"No… no more." Bai Jingyun listened to Lin Ming's casual tone; he obviously thought this request was very easy. She thought for a moment and said, "If Junior Apprentice Brother Lin can do better, that would be for the best. If the materials are insufficient, I can add more."

Lin Ming glanced at the materials on the table. Although these materials were precious, they were useless to him. He could only use them to trade for points, but no matter how many points he had, there were some materials that were impossible to buy because the Inscription Association did not have them.

Remembering his early plan, Lin Ming came to a decision. He would use this time to utilize all that he had recently learned, and see if he could draw up an inscription symbol that even Houtian stage masters would covet.

Then, after he had attracted the attention of all the Houtian masters in the nation, he could have them help him find these rare materials. If so, they might even be collected in a short time!

Thinking this, Lin Ming said, “One tael of Star Obsidian. If Apprentice Sister Jingyun can find one tael of Star Obsidian, then I will use my own materials and draw the highest level inscription symbol that I can. I can guarantee that Apprentice Sister Jingyun will be satisfied with the end result.

“One tael of Star Obsidian?” Bai Jingyun hadn’t spoken, but Murong Zi already cried, “You…you are way too black. One tael of Star Obsidian costs 15,000 gold taels, and not only that, but it’s very difficult to find in the Sky Fortune Kingdom. If you really wanted to buy it, then 15,000 gold taels might not be enough!

Star Obsidian was not only used in inscription, but also in refining. It was an extremely precious and rare material.

Lin Ming said, “My true essence has recently thickened and condensed even more, and the level of my inscriptions has risen. But, I can still only barely draw up this inscription, and there is a risk of failure. Moreover, the value of the materials will not be less than 6 or 7 thousand gold taels. I can guarantee that as long as I succeed, it is absolutely worth it. Were it not for the fact that the Inscription Association did not have any Star Obsidian, I would not have proposed this request.

“This…” Bai Jingyun clenched her teeth and said, “Okay. My uncle in the Huoluo Nation has some influence. I think he can find it. I promise you.”

Bai Jingyun had a very high status within the Bai Family. Although 15,000 gold taels was not a small amount, if it was just one time, she was able to bring this much out.

“Well, then I will thank Apprentice Sister Jingyun.” Lin Ming said. He took out a pen and immediately began to write down a detailed list of materials.

“For these materials, spend the money and points from my account.” Lin Ming said as he handed the list to Wang Yuhan.

This time was Lin Ming’s personal business. Normally, according to the regulations of the Inscription Association, the guests had to pay the guest inscription master and Inscription Association in a 60/40 ratio. The Inscription Association provided the materials, and the guest inscription master provided the service.

However, with Lin Ming’s current status, the Inscription Association wouldn’t haggle over him occasionally taking advantage of his reputation as a guest inscription master and using the Inscription Association’s materials to take on a personal request.

Wang Yuhan read the rows of materials, and she was slightly startled. The value of these materials was not low. Generally speaking, even tedious high-quality inscription symbols would only cost 1000 gold taels in materials. But the cost of this inscription symbol that Lin Ming wanted to draw up was 7000 gold taels, and there were also several materials that were fairly rare.

After the materials were collected, Lin Ming did not immediately start drawing the inscription symbol. Instead, he took up a true essence stone and once again entered the ethereal martial intent state. He sat in meditation and adjusted his condition for half an hour, to restore his true essence and soul force back to their peak condition.

Afterwards, Lin Ming began to formally draw the inscription symbol. What he was going to create today, was the complete version of ‘Cold Ice Fragments’.

Chapter 131 – Resurgence of Wind and Clouds

Chapter 131 – Resurgence of Wind and Clouds

…

…

…

The difficulty of ‘Cold Ice Fragments’ was quite a bit higher than the ‘Icefrost Guard’ symbol. Even though the level of Lin Ming’s inscription technique had progressed by leaps and bounds, there wasn’t a guarantee that he would be able to draw it up successfully.

“Crush one crystal ice quartz, mix it thoroughly with one cup of water and filter out the residue…” Lin Ming began to tell Wang Yuhan how to process the necessary materials.

After a few days of coordinating with each other, Lin Ming and Wang Yuhan had formed a unique, tacit understand. As long Lin Ming gave the directions, Wang Yuhan was able to quickly and perfectly handle the materials.

As Wang Yuhan’s 10 slender fingers danced like spirits in the wind, each material began to be quickly processed by her one at a time. Lin Ming looked on, took a material, and revolved his ‘Overbearing Soul Tactic’ as he began his inscription drawing.

Inscription symbols began to appear in the air, one after another. Some were round and luminescent like the moon, and some were small like pearls. They shined with a fantasy light, and seemed to breathe as if they were conscious beings given life.

Lin Ming’s inscription symbol drawing success rate was very high. From the start, almost none of the runes or symbols failed. But later, as Lin Ming’s soul force and true essence began to steadily decrease, there were occasionally glistening inscription symbols that fell apart, and turned onto grains of light like twinkling stars. These failed inscription symbol shards hovered in the air like scattered fireflies dancing in the night sky.

In the light of such unreal beauty, Lin Ming's expression was one of incomparable focus. His eyes were like black gems as they stared with dedication at the gorgeous inscription symbols in the air; there was almost a feeling of instant addiction when looking at him.

Wang Yuhan's hesitant heart jumped. She quietly gazed at Lin Ming's profile, staring as the rays of light shadowed the contours of his face. For a moment, both her cheeks flushed red. She always thought that Lin Ming's most appealing and interesting time was when he was concentrating on drawing an inscription, and it was only at this time that Wang Yuhan had no fear of being discovered by Lin Ming. She would secretly watch him from her own angle.

This scene continued for a long time, and the soon the sun began to drop below the horizon of the Zhou Mountain. The light within the inscription room began to gradually dim. This only served to accentuate the inscription symbols' light and make them appear even more enchantingly brilliant. Lin Ming's inscription plan was quite complex; he had continuously drawn more than 150 symbols and lines. The overlapping runes were like layers of ice blue light that wove together into a blissful picture, as if the curtain of night had fallen with shimmering stars glittering within.

This was a scene that had never appeared within the Sky Fortune Kingdom's school of inscription technique.

Even the usually heartless and mindless Murong Zi, when she saw this magnificent display of shining light, was unknowingly enchanted. This was simply too beautiful.

After a quarter hour, Lin Ming had approached his limit. He clenched his teeth, and forced himself to draw up the last inscription symbol. As both of his hands gathered together, the innumerable blue lights instantly fused into one like a woven piece of blue dream.

Lin Ming took Bai Jingyun’s Blue Water sword and directed the ice blue colored flame symbol onto it. That inscription symbol fell onto the snow white blade of the Blue Water sword.

With a chi chi sound, the blue colored symbol mark on the Blue Water sword began to emit waves of sapphire flames that spread out from the center and covered the entire sword.

Soon, there was the sound of cold air condensing, and a layer of frost settled on the Blue Water sword’s blade. This sword seemed as if it was swallowing all the heat around it, and the temperature of the inscription room plummeted by several degrees.

Murong Zi helplessly looked on as the cold frost on the sword thickened, her beautiful eyes perfectly round.

“This is…” Bai Jingyun swallowed a mouthful of saliva, her eyes shining as she looked at the Blue Water sword. She hesitated for a moment, not thinking of picking up the sword.

After Lin Ming rested for a moment, he concentrated a small amount of true essence and poured it into the inscription symbol. He casually swung the sword, and a crescent beam of blue light, visible to the naked light, was sent forth from the sword’s blade. It was like a thin piece of tissue paper as it entered into a stone platform in the inscription room and vanished from sight.

At that moment, the stone platform was cut apart by that blue light, the two halves neatly sliced apart. As the stone platform was falling, at that moment, a layer of ice suddenly froze the stone platform, and thus the stone platform maintained its original appearance.

“Skill of inscription!” Yang Yuhan cried out in alarm as she saw this blue light.

A skill of inscription was when an inscription master would use inscription symbols and place a miniature array formation that would change the treasure’s flow of true essence, finally turning that true essence into a skill. This skill was similar to a martial skill that could wound an enemy! It was the equivalent of giving a martial artist another martial skill!

In the school of Sky Fortune Kingdom's inscription technique, the skill of inscription had basically been lost; even many nearby countries did not have any inscription masters that were capable of this technique. Only some inscription grandmasters of Huoluo Nation had even the faintest possibility of understanding this technique.

Thinking this, Wang Yuhan was short of breath. To Wang Yuhan, who was obsessed with inscription techniques, this was something that she had only ever read of in the ancient records. To be able to see this in front of her caused her to feel incomparably excited.

When Lin Ming had drawn up his first inscription symbol, the 'Overwhelming Rune', had also come with a skill of inscription – 'Instant Violent Strike'. When a martial artist concentrated their true essence into the inscription symbol, the array formation within would absorb the true essence and compress it to the limit. In that instant, it would erupt, and create a extremely lethal close-range attack.

At that time, Tie Feng had relied upon this inscription at the field to defeat his opponent, Li Qi, and become the unexpected winner of the tournament. Because of this, Lin Ming's inscription symbol was brought to Muyi's attention and that was how Lin Ming eventually met Muyi as a result.

However, a skill of inscription like 'Instant Violent Strike' was quite preliminary and simple. It was only equal to an ordinary low-grade human-step martial skill; its value was not very high. When Lin Ming had drawn up the inscription symbol, the cost of the materials had only been 100 gold taels.

The reason that the effect of 'Instant Violent Strike' was able to help Tie Feng turn defeat to victory was because Tie Feng had been enlisted in the military since his childhood and his family circumstances were very poor. He had never had a formal education on cultivation methods or martial skills, thus a low-grade human-step martial skill was very precious to him, and allowed him to raise his battle prowess to another level.

This was the reason that Muyi had paid Lin Ming 3000 gold taels to purchase his inscription symbol; this was already a very high price. To put it plainly, the skill of inscription ‘Instant Violent Strike’, was something that someone like Tie Feng, who had never had a formal martial arts training, could ever hope to afford. However, to wealthy individuals like Bai Jingyun and Murong Zi, they had no need for such a weak martial skill.

But this current ‘Cold Ice Fragments’ supplementary skill of inscription was different. This skill of inscription was equal to a medium-grade human-step martial skill, and it was also at the very top of that grade.

“What is the name of this skill of inscription called?” Wang Yuhan asked somewhat excitedly.

“It’s called ‘Ice Cold Cut’. Apprentice Sister may feel it. As long as you pour your true essence into the inscription symbol, you can activate it.” Lin Ming handed the Blue Water sword to Bai Jingyun as he said this.

Bai Jingyun took a deep breath and carefully took the Blue Water sword into her hands. As soon as she touched the sword, Bai Jingyun immediately felt a cold chill spread up her arms, as if it were part of her flesh and blood.

She then brought forth a small amount of true essence and injected it into the Blue Water sword. The entire process was lossless, and incomparably smooth!

“The increased true essence effect is at least 40%!” Bai Jingyun was startled. To her knowledge, only Wang Xuanji was at this level. Not only that, but this sword had a skill of inscription attached.

Bai Jingyun concentrated her true essence into the inscription symbol as Lin Ming told her. She felt her true essence go through an amazing transformation as it turned into an icy air. As she continued pouring her true essence into the blade, the cold air around the Blue Water sword became increasingly terrifying. Little by little, the Blue Water sword began to excitedly ring, and the blade violently shivered!

Bai Jingyun did not doubt that as long as she slashed her sword now, she could split apart the entire inscription room!

"This 'Ice Cold Cut' is probably superior to the two medium-grade human-step martial skills that I chose from the Seven Profound Martial House's depository!" Although Bai Jingyun had yet to wield her sword, she knew what the result would be.

After listening to Bai Jingyun's appraisal, even though Wang Yuhan was mentally prepared, she was also surprised. One must know that the martial skills and cultivation methods in the Seven Profound Martial House's depositories were already the best one could find within the Sky Fortune Kingdom.

There were many martial artists in the Sky Fortune Kingdom that were unable to enter the Seven Profound Martial House. Or, even if that had entered the Seven Profound Martial House, if they hadn't entered the Heavenly Abode, they would not be able to choose a medium-grade human-step martial skill.

And even if they did enter the Heavenly Abode and were given an opportunity to choose a medium-grade human-step martial skill, this choice was also limited by their ranking. Most of the time, they could only choose a martial skill that received little attention.

Bai Jingyun was ranked 22, and the martial skills she could choose from were very good. Still, those choices were actually inferior to the 'Ice Cold Cut'. How could Wang Yuhan not be startled by this?

As one could imagine, if news of this kind of inscription symbol spread throughout the circles of Sky Fortune Kingdom's martial artists, it would inevitably cause uproar. Maybe even most Pulse Condensation Period martial artists or even Houtian experts would come and pay a visit to ask for this inscription symbol.

Wang Yuhan lightly estimated that this inscription symbol could sell for at least 20,000 gold taels. Even if it costed 30,000 gold taels there would be a high demand.

However, no matter how high, it couldn't be much higher. After all, only a medium-grade human-step treasure would be worthy of such an inscription symbol. The treasure added together with the cost of materials would easily cost more than 50,000 gold taels. This was a price that the majority of Pulse Condensation Period martial artists could not afford.

So, after deducting costs, an inscription symbol could earn Lin Ming 20,000 gold taels. Although the consumption of true essence and soul force was very high, with Lin Ming's frightening resilience, he could most likely draw two a day.

Two of these inscription symbols were 40,000 gold taels! As long as there were customers that could afford this, he could earn 1.2 million gold taels in a month! That was simply mass robbery!

An estimation of the number of martial artists that could afford more than 20,000 gold taels was no fewer than 100. In light of this, Lin Ming could gain more than 2 million gold taels with just this one inscription symbol!

If Wang Yuhan thought of this, then Lin Ming had too. With his practice till now, coupled with his cultivation of the peak Third Stage of Body Transformation and the crazy amount of training he had done in inscription technique these days, Lin Ming had just barely been able to draw this inscription symbol.

What Lin Ming lacked now was not gold, but materials. There were many materials that simply could not be bought with gold. Therefore, Lin Ming had planned to trade the inscription symbol for those rare and precious materials that he needed. He would ask those that wished for his services to have the materials he wanted ready. He did not believe that with the help of all of Sky Fortune Kingdom's martial artists, he would not be able to collect all the materials he needed for the body inscription symbol in a short period of time.

……………………

The news of Lin Ming trading top-quality inscription symbols for rare and precious materials was like a bomb; it rapidly spread throughout all of Sky Fortune City!

True essence amplification factor of 40%, coupled with a top-tier skill of inscription. In Sky Fortune City, this inscription symbol could possibly be called an incomparable treasure; even Wang Xuanji did not have the means to draw this inscription symbol, because in the Sky Fortune Kingdom's school of inscription technique, this skill of inscription had already been lost.

Chapter 132 – Let's See Who Is More Cruel

Chapter 132 – Let's See Who Is More Cruel

…

…

…

Usually, a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist wouldn't have much interest in a preliminary skill of inscription. Because they had more advanced and stronger martial skills, these skills of inscription were just too weak.

But once they knew that this skill of inscription was equal to a top tier medium-grade human-step martial skill, they became filled with jealousy. Of the Sky Fortune Kingdom's many martial artists, almost none of them knew a medium-grade martial skill. And even if they did, it certainly would not be a top-tier one.

Which martial artist didn't hope that they would know several different kinds of martial skills? When the time came for them to fight their enemy, even if their first move was seen through, they would still have a second one.

However, the most explosive part of this news was not the inscription symbol itself, but that the character who was creating inscription symbols turned out to be Lin Ming!

He was the Seven Profound Martial House's genius of a century. He was also the Sky Fortune Kingdom's most dazzling star. Not only did he comprehend a martial intent, but he also possessed an exceedingly monstrous perception. Now, it seemed, he was simultaneously an inscription technique grand master who could draw up top-tier inscription symbols with skills of inscription!

And his age was still several months shy of 16!

Was this even possible?

To Lin Ming's diehard fans, as long as it happened to Lin Ming, there was nothing impossible. To learn inscription technique was truly difficult. However, with Lin Ming's monstrous perception, even this kind of shocking miracle of becoming an inscription grand master at the tender age of 15 was not unexplainable.

However, there were also those who had some understanding of inscription technique, in particular inscription masters, that were not willing to believe this. After all, inscription technique was an art and experience that one slowly accumulated over time. Even with godlike perception, that was still insufficient to reach such a stage.

But just two days later, the Inscription Association gave a categorically clear response; this rumor was, without a doubt, true. The next day, Sky Fortune City's official government newspaper explicitly wrote, "The Seven Profound Martial House Heavenly Abode disciple Lin Ming, while working as a guest inscription master for the inscription Association, is trading an inscription symbol supplemented with a top-tier skill of inscription for rare and precious materials." The materials that Lin Ming wanted to find were listed in the newspaper. The official government newspaper was generally only used to send official statements and news of the government, it was very rarely used for matters outside of the government's jurisdiction. This time, they had written about Lin Min in order to help him find all the materials he needed as soon as possible.

So, people could not help but believe!

As far as Pulse Condensation Period martial artists were concerned, a top-quality inscription symbol placed on a medium-grade human-step treasure would greatly increase their combat prowess! With a medium-grade human-step treasure, it would be able to completely absorb their true essence, and it might even cut off an enemy's low-grade human-step treasure. If they had no weapon, then how would they fight?

A medium-grade human-step treasure was common. As long as one was willing and able to prepare 20,000 gold taels, they would always be able to buy one if they spent some effort.

However, an inscription symbol that was worthy of such a treasure was actually extremely rare! In particular those with an appropriately matching elemental attribute; those could only be discovered, they could not be sought!

Therefore there were some Pulse Condensation Period martial artists who had come to the Inscription Association to ask for an inscription symbol, even though they hadn’t yet found a medium-grade human-step treasure.

Soon, martial artists all over began to utilize all of their connections to seek out the materials that were listed out in the government newspaper. Those martial artists that could afford this type of top-quality inscription symbol all had large fortunes, great strength, assets, aristocratic backgrounds, or deep family histories. Being such, it was only natural that they all had a wide web of influences and contacts. There were many large and respected families who had influences and connections that were even superior to those of the Crown Prince!

With such a large force being launched to look for these rare and precious materials, its effects could be imagined!

However, there were some individuals whose hearts pained to part with so much gold. Thus, they maintained an attitude of wait and see, hoping that the inscription symbols would be reduced in price. But, they soon began to quickly regret this. The materials required on that newspapers list became fewer and fewer, and those that remained, were the most rare and precious of all!

As the required materials were slowly collected, Lin Ming’s inscription technique became more skillful. Every day he would use high quality materials to practice. In addition to the pure true essence stones he was using to restore his energy, it was burning through money. Lin Ming’s inscription technique was becoming increasingly perfect. Before, he had just barely managed to draw up the top-tier inscription symbol ‘Cold Ice Fragments’. But now, this process was already familiar and easy to him.

Aided by his ethereal martial intent, Lin Ming did not neglect his ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’. He had now reached the Small Success boundary of the second layer of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’. His vitality grew stronger, and his true essence became increasingly thick.

Lin Ming believed that if he and Ling Sen both made an all-out effort to compare fist strength, he would not necessarily lose now!

After three more days passed, Lin Ming only needed a few more materials. But these materials, were actually the most precious and difficulty to find. For instance, the invaluable fifth-level vicious beast blood had still not been found.

Lin Ming looked at the list of materials that had been crossed out one by one, and felt a great sense of achievement. But as he looked at the last few, several of the most precious materials he needed, he felt some worries. If he did not find these within a short time, it would be somewhat troublesome.

At this moment, a sound transmitting talisman from the Crown Prince lit up and caused Lin Ming’s complexion to fall.

“Brother Lin, there’s a matter that might affect your state of mind in practicing martial arts, so I did not want to tell you. However, I thought over it and reconsidered that I must bring up this issue with you. Several days ago, Zhang Guanyu brought people to where Miss Lan lives. His intention was malicious, but Mister Liao promptly rushed over and rescued Miss Lan. I have arranged for Miss Lan to stay in a safe place at my palace. I suspect that Zhang Guanyu wished to use Miss Lan to provoke you into anger and attack your heart of martial arts, and in your duel four months from now, to use cruel and despicable methods and severely wound you so that you cannot pass the Seven Profound Martial House core disciple test.”

“This Zhang Guanyu is someone who cultivates the ‘Divine Acacia Power’ This cultivation method will cause one’s possessive instincts to grow out of control. Moreover, Zhang Guanyu is a demented individual that has sunk into madness. I fear that in the future he will try to do something detrimental to Brother Lin. Brother Lin must use be careful by all means possible. I have already sent some masters to guard the Lin Family, and have also sent over some sound transmitting talismans to help protect the safety of your mother and father.”

The sound transmitting talisman stopped there. Lin Ming deeply frowned. A foreboding looked crossed his eyes.

Zhang Guanyu!

He did not know this man. Although he had heard the name many times after entering the Seven Profound Martial House, he had never seen him, not even once. He had frequently seen Ling Sen and Ta Ku appear together; obviously these two young men were good personal friends. Zhang Guanyu didn’t seem to be very familiar with those two.

“I no longer have any connection to Lan Yunyue, and I will not interfere or question how she will live in the future or whom she will marry. But Zhang Guanyu, if you want to deal with me by moving against her, you are simply courting death!”

“Even if you are a disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House and an elite of the Allied Trade Association, I cannot kill you, but I will make you pay a painful price.”

Wang Yuhan noted Lin Ming’s gloomy expression and guessed that the reason was because of the sound transmitting talisman from earlier. She hesitated and could not help but ask, “Mister Lin, is there something wrong?”

“It’s not a big deal. After my last match against Zhu Yan, the Seven Profound Martial House pushed me to oppose Zhang Guanyu. Zhang Guanyu wanted to put his dirty hands on Lan Yunyue and attack my heart of martial arts. He probably thinks that four months from now he will absolutely win, so he wants to cope with me before I grow, and give me a severe wound so that I fail the Seven Profound Martial House test.”

Lin Ming did not conceal anything from Wang Yuhan. His story with Lan Yunyue had already passed; naturally, there was no need to hide anything anymore.

“Put his hands on Miss Lan? Miss Lan…” Only a few people in the circles of the aristocracy knew of the matter between Lin Ming and Lan Yunyue. Wang Yuhan was a member of the inscription Association, so she was also clear about this matter. She unconsciously covered her small mouth in alarm. If Zhang Guanyu had done anything nefarious to Lan Yunyue, then it would be too tragic. This Zhang Guanyu was someone who practiced the ‘Divine Acacia Power’. This cultivation used woman as objects in order to increase one’s cultivation, it absolutely did a hundred harms without anything good.

Lin Ming shook his head and said, “Mister Liao arrived there in time, so everything’s all right.”

“Fortunately.” Wang Yuhan let out a sigh of relief, and patted her chest with her small hand. “That Miss Lan is now…”

“She’s very safe.”

“Oh, that’s good.” Wang Yuhan wanted to ask Lin Ming about his view of love, but hesitated. She thought that might be too abrupt or offensive, and after thinking about it for a long time, still didn’t how to start, so she didn’t open her mouth.

But at this moment, another sound transmitting talisman lit in front of Lin Ming. It was once again a message from the Crown Prince to Lin Ming.

“Brother Lin, I would like to say some words of advice. According to my sources of intelligence, after Zhang Guanyu started cultivating the ‘Divine Acacia Power’, he has made no small amount of progress. His strength has greatly improved from the past. Brother Lin, if you don’t think you can fully grasp victory, it’s better if you do not challenge Zhang Guanyu rashly. The ‘Divine Acacia Power’ is a very sinister and ruthless cultivation method, and its moves are the same. If an internal injury is left behind, I fear that Brother Lin may have some difficulty in passing the Seven Profound Martial House’s core disciple test.”

“The core disciple test only requires Brother Lin to achieve the peak Altering Muscle stage before you are over 16 years old, it does not require you to defeat Zhang Guanyu. This Zhang

Guanyu is a very mad, crazy man, he will not hesitate in mutually wounding you. Brother Lin, please carefully think things over twice before acting, or else you might ruin your own future.”

The flame extinguished and coldly snorted in his mind. “The ‘Divine Acacia Power’ is sinister and ruthless? I wonder if it is more sinister and ruthless than the ‘Pulse Cutting Palm’?”

“I did not think that I would have to study the ‘Pulse Cutting Palm’ so quickly. Now you have forced me to learn this. I feel really sorry for you. Since you want to give me a severe wound so that I will fail the Seven Profound Martial House’s core disciple test, then I will waste your martial arts and destroy your manhood, so that you can peacefully and safely live out the rest of your sad days as a eunuch. This will also be a good deed for all of the girls in Sky Fortune City.”

“This Zhang Guanyu was originally very strong. If his cultivation in the ‘Divine Acacia Power’ has progressed again, then I cannot lower my guard or take him lightly, or I might be defeated! After this body inscription symbol is complete, I must earnestly cultivate the ‘Heretical God Force’ and ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’. With this three-pronged attack, no matter how this Zhang Guanyu progresses, I will crush him so that he will never recover from this defeat!”

As Lin Ming was thinking these dark thoughts, Wang Yuhan suddenly became cold. She turned to Lin Ming and told him in a low voice, “Zhang… Zhang Guanyu, it’s him!

“Mm?”

Lin Ming was surprised. Zhang Guanyu had actually come to the Inscription Association of his own initiative!

Well done, Zhang Guanyu! You dare wish to lay your hands on Lan Yunyue, and you still have the courage to see me!

Lin Ming followed Wang Yuhan's gaze. He saw a smiling young man wearing a silk snow brocaded gown with a kirin design. The young man had a seven gemmed crown on his head, and he was holding an ornate fan.

The young man's skin was clear and fair, with a slightly ruddy complexion. His eyebrows were slanted upwards and his mouth was red like a cherry. He carried around a bit of a woman's comeliness, but without losing the smooth grace of a man. He was overall a very beautiful and handsome man. His looks combined with his warm and congenial smile gave the impression that he was a true gentleman prince. With this appearance, it was hard to think that his innermost feelings were so demented and full of malice.

Chapter 133 – Digging Your Own Grave

Chapter 133 – Digging Your Own Grave

…

…

…

“Early Bone Forging stage!” Lin Ming instantly judged. His cultivation was not too far off from Zhang Guanyu’s, and he was able to see through his cultivation level.

In the Seven Profound Martial House’s Heavenly Abode, there were only two disciples at the Bone Forging stage. One was Ta Ku, and the other was Zhang Guanyu. Their true combat prowess outside of the Seven Profound Martial House was absolutely stronger than regular peak Bone Forging stage martial artist!

“Oh, Mister Lin! What a fortunate meeting, fortunate meeting!” After Zhang Guanyu saw Lin Ming, he closed his fan and walked forwards with a bright smile plastered on his face.

Lin Ming smiled as he saw Zhang Guanyu’s acting. ‘You’re a good one, Zhang Guanyu; much better than Zhu Yan!’

At most, Zhu Yan was just sinister, vicious and subject to changing moods. But this Zhang Guanyu, not only was he demented, but his skin was so thick to the point of making one’s blood boil!

“I wouldn’t have thought, I really wouldn’t have thought!” Zhang Guanyu pulled up his robes and sat down on a stool in front of Lin Ming. “I didn’t think that Brother Lin would actually be an inscription grand master. When I heard this news, I just couldn’t believe it! Wow! A 15 year old inscription grand master. What kind of concept is that?”

“Ah, it’s such a pity, the legacies of the Seven Profound Martial House don’t include an inscription master among them, otherwise with Brother Lin’s amazing ability, you would have already been slated to be a core disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House!” Zhang Guanyu began to swing his fan while he familiarized himself with Lin Ming’s appearance.

After Zhang Guanyu had discovered that the rising star Lin Ming was the guest inscription master of the Inscription Association, he was truly quite shocked. This Lin Ming’s perception was just too terrifying; in such a short period of studying he had already become an inscription grand master. This caused him to feeling all the more uneasy, but since he was now enemies with Lin Ming, he could not retreat.

Lin Ming had not spoken, but Wang Yuhan was already angry. In her life she had seen two kinds of men she hated the most. The first were the womanizers, and the second were the vicious brutes. But this Zhang Guanyu just happened to be both.

“Zhang Guanyu, you are not welcome within the Inscription Association, I ask that you leave immediately!”

Coming from an aristocratic background, Wang Yuhan’s self-control was very finely tuned. Even if she spoke words in anger, there wasn’t a trace of anger in them. Zhang Guanyu simply disregarded these words. He would never be mad against beautiful women, especially beautiful women that he had yet to conquer.

Zhang Guanyu looked at Wang Yuhan and smiled, saying, “Miss Wang is so charming. I also like this straightforward temper. How about Miss Wang comes to my place another day and we can have a little chat and drink together?”

Listening to Zhang Guanyu’s words, Wang Yuhan flew into a wild rage. Not only did he ignore her, but he was also propositioning her straight in her face.

Then, Lin Ming coldly said, “Sir Zhang, if you have no business here, then please leave. After four months, I will naturally pay a visit, but right now I am very busy, please do not bother me at my job.”

“Haha, Mister Lin, I heard that Mister Lin is collecting the most rare and valuable of materials. I just so happened to bring some with me today…” As Zhang Guanyu said this, he took out a small jar from his spatial ring. That small jar was filled with a dark, garnet liquid, very thick, as if it were some sort of heavy mercury.

“Fifth-level vicious beast blood?” Lin Ming’s eyes shined. He had already been looking for some fifth-level vicious beast blood for a long time, but still hadn’t found any. The Allied Trade Association, who had existed since before the Sky Fortune Kingdom was founded, truly had a profoundly terrifying capability.

“Haha, Brother Lin has such great eyes, this truly is fifth-level vicious beast blood. I came here today to ask Brother Lin about a matter concerning inscription technique…” Zhang Guanyu extracted a longsword from his spatial ring. The sword was three feet three inches in length. The handle was simple, and the sword edge was shimmering cold. Above the blade was a blue colored flower pattern that looked as if it had been traced from ten thousand year cold ice. One could see with just a glance that this was an excellent sword.

Lin Ming probed with his soul force, and was immediately shocked, “High-grade human-step treasure sword!”

This was the first time that he had seen a high-grade human-step treasure. Perhaps in the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom, only figures like Muyi and Wang Xuanji who were Houtian masters would have the qualifications to wield such a treasure as their weapon! This kind of treasure could not be bought in the Sky Fortune Kingdom.

“Brother Lin really has some extraordinary experience. Indeed, this is a high-grade human-step treasure. I hoped to have an inscription symbol placed on it. I need an true essence increase of 50% inscription symbol, that also comes with a skill of inscription. If Brother Lin can achieve this, I can have the Allied Trade Association help Brother Lin look for several materials that Brother Lin is missing.

“50% true essence amplification inscriptions symbol?” Lin Ming frowned. “I can’t do that.”

“Right… That’s really too bad, but… perhaps Brother Lin is looking for these materials for his master. Perhaps Brother Lin can request his master to do this? I will reward him greatly.” Zhang Guanyu said with a bit hesitation, and waved his fan.

Lin Ming immediately understood Zhang Guanyu’s intentions. The reason he came today, was to investigate the matter of his master!

Yes, even if Lin Ming’s perception was astonishing, it was simply impossible for a 16 year old to become a self-taught top inscription grand master. Lin Ming’s inscription technique was not part of Sky Fortune Kingdom’s school of inscription technique; it was clearly from somewhere else. This was what Zhang Guanyu was dreading.

Lin Ming said, “You do not need to worry about why I am collecting the materials that I am. As for my master, he is usually wandering the world; I cannot find him. So you do not need to count on him to help you.”

“Oh… so it’s like this…” Zhang Guanyu’s thoughts raced. Although he was demented like a rabid dog, a rabid dog would still not dare to bit a tiger. He was indeed probing what sort of person Lin Ming’s master was.

He guessed that Lin Ming’s master should have been a Houtian stage martial artist whose strength would be comparable to Muyi. But, this person’s level of inscription technique actually surpassed Wang Xuanji!

As for the Xiantian masters, he never thought of that. Xiantian stage martial artists were simply legendary existences. If they took in a disciple, how could they possibly have their disciple enter into the Seven Profound Martial House and have them struggle for the Seven Profound Martial House’s resources? Not only that, but also compel them into a situation where they would have to undergo a core disciple test.

A Xiantian master, even if placed in the third-grade sect, the Seven Profound Valleys, would be an extraordinary character!

The Allied Trade Association, with their deep history and influence, would not fear a single Houtian stage martial artist. This because the Allied Trade Association had their own Houtian stage master.

And it seemed that this Houtian master did not have a deep connection with Lin Ming. Before this, Zhang Guanyu had already investigated Lin Ming's past just to be sure. Lin Ming had always been living a very frugal and lonely life. He had used the most basic medicinal cures for a very long time. He had tried to sell his inscription symbols at the Hundred Treasure Pavilion, but the Hundred Treasure Pavilion was actually one of the Allied Trade Association's stores.

What was most likely was that Lin Ming had encountered a fortuitous opportunity, and found the inheritance of a peak Houtian master. Relying on his amazing perception, he had become a self-taught inscription grand master!

This would explain why he had such strength at his young age, but was still poor and had to enter into the Seven Profound Martial House!

Zhang Guanyu was insane and demented, but he was not stupid. With just a few clues, he was able to come close to deducing Lin Ming's true situation. It was just that what Lin Ming had found was not the inheritance of a peak Houtian master, but the inheritances of the topmost powerhouses within the Realm of the Gods!

Thinking this, Zhang Guanyu smiled, but within his smile was hidden a ferocious intent. He decided not to change the plan he had to deal with Lin Ming. He would make Lin Ming suffer an incomparably pitiful fate, so that his 'spirit' would never be smooth again!

"Ah, that's such a pity. I missed a chance to meet such a senior expert of inscription. But, Mister Lin, since I have already taken out this bottle of fifth-level vicious beast blood, I have no intention of taking it back. I would like to ask Mister Lin if Mister Lin can personally help me and guarantee me a top skill of inscription along with the highest amplification that Mister Lin can achieve."

"If you request a specific attribute, then I can go up to 41%. If there is no specific attribute, then I can go up to 43%."

Hearing Lin Ming say this, Wang Yuhan anxiously said, "Mister Lin, do not help him. He will use your own inscription symbol that you place on that sword to deal with you!"

This was undeniable. The reason that Zhang Guanyu came today, was first to inquire about Lin Ming's master, and second was to find an inscription symbol for his high-grade human-step treasure sword. At this time, within the Sky Fortune Kingdom, Lin Ming's inscription technique was second to none.

"Haha, if Mister Lin is afraid of helping me with an inscription symbol, then I may have the Allied Trade Association use their connections and go to Huoluo Nation to look. Although it will take a great deal of effort and a very high price, I think I will be able to find an inscription master that can conform to my needs."

There were many powerhouses within the Huoluo Nation; their level of inscription technique was correspondingly higher than Sky Fortune Kingdom's. But, to find an inscription master that knew the techniques to add a top-tier skill of inscription was simply impossible. At best they would have a few masters that could surpass Lin Ming's true essence amplification.

Lin Ming smiled and said, "You don't need to taunt me. Since I've already decided to fight with you, then naturally I want to defeat you in your strongest condition. This is my Dao of martial arts!" Lin Ming was certainly willing to draw an inscription symbol for Zhang Guanyu. He had just said a moment ago that the most important material he needed was some fifth-level vicious beast blood. If he missed this opportunity, he didn't know when the next time that he would find any was.

It was not wrong that an inscription symbol could increase Zhang Guanyu's combat prowess, but a body inscription symbol would increase one's strength even more!

Zhang Guanyu would never have even dreamed that the fifth-level vicious beast blood that he brought to Lin Ming's hand would be able to directly improve his strength and cultivation speed.

"Hehe, then I'll trouble Mister Lin," Zhang Guanyu licked his lips. He did not think that Lin Ming would really have complied. His original intention was to have Lin Ming refuse him, and then frustrate his proud heart a little. After all, the might of a high-grade human-step treasure coupled with the power of a top-tier inscription symbol was simply terrifying. Even facing Lin Ming's dark purple elastic iron spear, if he poured enough true essence into his sword, he could simply cut that spear in half!

If the weapon was sliced apart, then how would he continue fighting the battle?

Zhang Guanyu said, "I do not need a specific attribute, and 43% amplification is good. But what if Mister Lin cannot achieve this or if Mister Lin places some sort of hidden secret within the inscription symbol?"

Lin Ming lightly coughed and said, "Humph, if you don't believe me, then why look for me? Doesn't your so called Allied Trade Association have an inscription master? Even if they cannot draw up a skill of inscription, they can still examine the truth of the inscription symbol that I draw up! I won't ruin my proud work merely to ruin some high-grade human-step treasure of your Allied Trade Association!

"Good! Then I'll be waiting here."

Seeing that this matter had come to a foregone conclusion, Wang Yuhan sighed. Lin Ming was just too impulsive; now was not the time to be swayed by personal feelings.

Zhang Guanyu's strength was very formidable, yet Lin Ming was actually helping him create a top-tier weapon. Nicely putting it, he was simply being impulsive with his own emotions, but crudely putting it, he was just digging his own grave!

Chapter 134 – Small Success of Movement

Chapter 134 – Small Success of Movement

…

…

…

Lin Ming took a short period to prepare, and then began the drawing process. Lin Ming had become increasingly skilled at creating these inscriptions symbols. But because this was his first time working with a high-grade human-step treasure inscription, he was a little slower than usual. Altogether, he had used half an hour of time.

As he completed the last rune of the inscription symbol in one breath, the nearly hundred glistening runes congealed into a flame marked inscription symbol that fell upon the high-grade human-step treasure sword.

Zhang Guanyu picked up the treasure sword and tested it. He poured his true essence into it, and found that it really did have a 43% increased amount of true essence. Afterwards, the true essence congealed into the skill of inscription; it was simply a magnificent power.

“Haha! Good sword!” Zhang Guanyu laughed.

‘This Lin Ming is such a sucker. I really cannot wait to see, four months from now, just how Lin Ming will come to regret when he is brought to grief under the blade of this treasure sword that he personally placed an inscription symbol upon. I’m going to enjoy his expression and the way his mind breaks. I can’t wait to see his expression and state of mind when I use this sword and show him the most vicious moves of the ‘Divine Acacia Power’. When I find the right opportunity, I will give him such a severe wound that even his cultivation will drop. I wonder just how you will pass the Seven Profound Martial House's core disciple test then!'

However, what Zhang Guanyu did not know was that Lin Ming was actually having similar thoughts. Lin Ming looked as Zhang Guanyu flourished that skill of inscription and inwardly sneered.

'This Zhang Guanyu is such a fool; he's really saved me a great deal of effort. I'll wait for the four months to pass, to see how Zhang Guanyu will suffer a miserable defeat at my hands because of these two body inscription symbols. What a pity it will be that Zhang Guanyu will never know the reason he suffered a defeat, and that the fifth-level vicious beast blood he brought to me would play a major role in his downfall. I want to see his expression when I use the most ruthless martial skill 'Pulse Cutting Palm' on his body. Not only will I sever all the meridians in his body but I will destroy his virility. Then, I wonder just how you will cultivate that 'Divine Acacia Power' of yours when you're with a woman.'

Although these two people's thoughts were diabolically dark, it was impossible to tell from the surface. Especially Zhang Guanyu; his brilliant smile was beaming to the extreme.

"Right. Mister Lin, I think there were some misunderstandings with Mister Lin about Lan Yunyue. About Miss Lan's matter, I visited Miss Lan at that time to pay my respects, and it seems Mister Liao was too excited and misunderstood my intentions."

"Is that right? So that's the case." Lin Ming sneered in his heart. He wanted to have a good luck at just what this Zhang Guanyu was up to.

"Let me speak the truth, I really, truly do admire Miss Lan, otherwise I would not have visited. Ah, towards beautiful girls that I like, I will never use underhanded means. I will only pursue them."

As Zhang Guanyu said this, an angry voice suddenly resounded. "Zhang Guanyu, do you not even care about face!"

The pure hearted Wang Yuhan had finally reached the limit of what she was able to bear. She immediately wanted to kill this beast in human skin!

However, Zhang Guanyu's cultivation had already reached a high enough level that he was able to completely disregard Wang Yuhan. He self-servingly said, "Ah, before, I heard that Mister Lin liked to make bets with the people that he dueled, like Wang Yanfeng, Zhang Cang, and so on. Then, with this match of mine against Mister Lin, how about we also make a gambling bet? How about this, Mister Lin needs materials, and I just happen to have one – Seven Star Ore. How about I use this to bet with Mister Lin on who Miss Lan belongs to?"

"If I lose, then I will turn over the Seven Star Ore to Mister Lin, and I will not disturb Miss Lan again. If I win, then I will also turn over the Seven Star Ore to Mister Lin, but about Miss Lan's matters, Mister Lin cannot meddle in them again. Whether or not I can move her heart will depend only on my own ability. So, regardless of the outcome, the Seven Star Ore will be given to Mister Lin. But only if Mister Lin loses will Mister Lin never meddle in Miss Lan's matters again. How about it?"

"Move Lan Yunyue's heart with your own ability?" Lin Ming brightly smiled. It seems that no matter what, this Zhang Guanyu wanted to use Lan Yunyue to attack his heart of martial arts. If he lost in the battle four months from now, then it would be a defeat so horrible and appalling that he wouldn't be able to lift his head proudly anymore due to shame.

He sneered in response to Zhang Guanyu, "Even if I'm sure to defeat you, I will never use a woman to make a bet. Lan Yunyue already has nothing to do with me. Who she marries is her own choice, it's none of my business. If your moral character was any good and you decided to pursue Lan Yunyue, then fine. But if you plan to deal with me by encroaching on Lan Yunyue, then I will not sit idly by and do nothing!"

"It's true that I lack several materials, but I do not need the Allied Trade Association nor will I ever. If I cannot find what I need, then it's just a bit of trouble to me. Now you can roll out of here!"

Hearing this, Zhang Guanyu's expression finally sunk. "Oh! It seems that you really are determined to win against me? Good! Very good!"

"Zhang Guanyu, you think that four months from now you will crush me so I cannot stand up from the failure, but what a coincidence, I also have the same intention. When the time comes, let's see just who is suppressing who!"

"Haha! Very good! Since that's the case, four months from now, I will have you regret ever being born into this world!"

Zhang Guanyu received his longsword, flicked his sleeves, and departed.

Lin Ming thought little of Zhang Guanyu's threats. He took out a true essence stone and prepared to restore his true essence. At this moment, Wang Yuhan could not help but say, "Mister Lin, you were too reckless. Although fifth-level vicious beast blood is rare, it's not something that cannot be found. If we waited a few days, it would have been fine, but you actually helped that despicable Zhang Guanyu inscribe a symbol on his treasure sword. Even in the entire Huoluo Nation, there might not be anyone that can create an inscription symbol of your caliber."

"That Zhang Guanyu has probably cultivated the 'Divine Acacia Power' for several months. In these months who knows how many women have gone to his manor. It's impossible to know just how far his strength has progressed. Mister Lin, you..."

Wang Yuhan was genuinely concerned. This battle between Zhang Guanyu and Lin Ming would definitely be a death match. If he lost, he would pay a truly terrible price. Zhang Guanyu had long been famous for his sinister and ruthless tactics. If something was to happen to Lin Ming...

Lin Ming smiled and said, "Miss Wang, please be assured that I know all of this fairly well."

"But... but... I think that..." Wang Yuhan simply didn't know what to say. She knew that Lin Ming constantly created miracles in front of her. She thought that nothing was impossible concerning Lin Ming. But in this duel involving his Lin Ming's personal safety, Wang Yuhan worried, afraid of what would happen.

"Thank you Miss Wang for worrying over me. The truth is, if I really am not a match for Zhang Guanyu, then I'll simply withdraw. I'm afraid that there is no one else coming this afternoon, I will go back first." Lin Ming only drew the high-quality inscription symbols these days. However, he would only do so as long as someone brought one of the rare materials on the list. The materials were getting fewer and fewer now, and the customers that could find them were also less. So in the past couple of days, Lin Ming had only received a few jobs; he spent most of the time cultivating.

…………………

All the time that Lin Ming had at the seven major killing arrays was spent so that he could gradually become more aware of the concept of wind.

Now Lin Ming had increased the difficulty from the sixth level to the seventh level, but even so, he still practiced in the Violent Wind Tunnel every day until his appearance was miserable.

Many of the disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House were aware of this strange phenomenon. As soon as this century genius of the Seven Profound Martial House entered the Violent Wind Tunnel, at only seven levels of difficulty, he would be beaten up until he was black and blue! This kind of matter was simply inconceivable!

Those people that were jealous of Lin Ming said that Lin Ming's foundation was not solid, and his lower body was unstable.

However, those that held this view were completely drowned out by the massive amount of frothing saliva from the Lin Ming fanatics. Did those insulting idiots not see how Lin Ming was motionless like a mountain on the battlefield? With which eye did they see that Lin Ming's lower body was unstable?

These crazy fans believed that Lin Ming was using some sort of special method to practice.

But what exactly was this special method of training? Nobody could actually explain it. A little girl that worshipped at Lin Ming's altar patted her heavy chest, wanting to understand…

"Senior Apprentice Brother Lin Ming is definitely practicing his 'Get Hit' ability."

To let the violent wind blow against one's own body so that they freely 'hit' the wall over and over again; this was the only explanation for the 'Get Hit' ability. To come up with such ridiculous reasoning, that young girl had a truly vivid imagination.

This opinion rapidly spread.

Regarding this rumor, Lin Ming could only force a smile. He did not want the publicity, but it was impossible to conceal the fact that he was turning black and blue from the bruising everyday of hitting the walls in the Violent Wind Tunnel. Even if he had very good healing medicine, it was futile to think that all his wounds and bruises would instantly heal. He could only bring his heavily injured body back to his room, soak in a medicinal bath, and then take the evening's time to remove the bruises and heal the hidden wounds.

However, people began to gradually discover that Lin Ming's injuries were becoming less and less, even as the difficulty grew higher and higher, until a month later. Lin Ming had opened the ninth level of difficulty, but after he had stayed in for several hours, he had come out in perfect condition with no injuries.

To a normal Heavenly Abode disciple, this didn't have much meaning. With someone at Lin Ming's ranking, they would easily be able to handle the tenth level of difficulty.

But to Lin Ming's ardent linmaniacs, their first impression was the he was practicing the almighty 'Get Hit' ability. He did not use any true essence or bodily strength to resist the force of the wind, and let his body repeatedly and wildly hit the walls over and over again. Since he now reached the point of not having any injuries, was his head now made of copper?

They were afraid that if this was true, then Lin Ming had already become invulnerable to all damage.

But if this were so, why would Lin Ming only open the ninth level of difficulty?

“What exactly do you think Senior Apprentice Brother Lin is really doing inside? He only opened the ninth level of difficulty. If Senior Apprentice Brother Lin displayed his true strength, that wind would only tickle him.”

“I already told you that Senior Apprentice Brother Lin is cultivating his ‘Get Hit’ ability, you just don’t have faith.” The young girl who had been the first to propose this theory grunted, showing her discontent at those that dared to doubt her.

“Senior Apprentice Brother Lin’s ‘Get Hit’ ability is just too fierce, and it’s not an exaggeration. To have that powerful wind of the ninth level blow him against the wall, and yet he still doesn’t have a single injury, his body is simply steel now, he is invulnerable to all.

“Humph, this is nothing for Senior Apprentice Brother Lin. Did you forget that he had used his empty palm to fend off Zhang Cang’s saber?”

“That’s because he had used the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’. That was also the reason that Zhu Yan lost to Senior Apprentice Brother Lin Ming.”

The disciple that was speaking seemed to be aware of many things. At this moment, another person also commented, “Have you seen that Senior Apprentice Brother Lin’s clothes when he goes in and out of the Violent Wind Tunnel only have a little damage?”

“Mm?” After this third disciple inadvertently reminded the other two, these two felt a chill in their hearts. Yes, when Lin Ming had gone in and out, he had worn the same clothes. His clothes only had a little damage, so he hadn’t needed to change!

It had to be known that when the Violent Wind Tunnel reached the ninth level of difficulty, a common disciple could rely on their true essence and strength to resist the strong winds. However, because the wind speed was too quick, the clothes on their bodies would be torn!

Chapter 135 – Body Inscription

Chapter 135 – Body Inscription

…

…

…

When the Violent Wind Tunnel reached the ninth level of difficulty, a common disciple could rely on their true essence and strength to resist the strong winds. However, because the wind speed was too quick, the clothes on their bodies would still be torn!

Soon after, their clothes would be ripped to shreds. If they were to choose the tenth level of difficulty, their clothes would even become completely split apart until they were finally stark naked.

But Lin Ming's clothes were only a little damaged; he didn't need to replace them. This was simply an inconceivable matter!

In the Violent Wind Tunnel, the howling wind was like the roars of dragons and tigers. At the ninth level of difficulty, there were ten feet tall rolling boulders that haphazardly tumbled around.

Lin Ming's body seemed weightless in the forceful gales as he danced in the air. What was strange was that even though the whirlwinds were like a pack of surging ruinous beasts, Lin Ming's body only moved at a slow speed, as if he was a fish that was swimming against a mighty current.

Lin Ming's eyes were closed the entire time. He felt the force of the chilling wind with his heart and soul, stabilizing his body as he balanced himself in the mistral air. The wind that fell upon Lin Ming naturally parted around him. Suddenly, a powerful wind vortex appeared around Lin Min, causing his body to shake and fall towards a boulder.

Under this kind of forceful wind, if an ordinary person hit the rock they would have immediately suffered a painful death; even a Viscera Training stage martial artist would have been heavily wounded.

But as Lin Ming approached this boulder, he suddenly waved his sleeves and followed a breeze that flowed over the rock. Lin Ming’s body drew beautiful arc as he bypassed this rock wall before coming to a stop in midair.

This continued for several days. With each day, Lin Ming was increasingly like a fish in water as he hovered in the Violent Wind Tunnel. As long as he used his true essence, his feet would not touch the ground, and he was able to sail through the wind. Only when his true essence was exhausted would he fall to the ground.

After that, Lin Ming opened the tenth level of difficulty, but he was still able to barely keep his balance firmly in the wind. Even if there was suddenly turbulence from a whirlwind, Lin Ming was still able to maintain his form.

He was just like a kite; despite the howling wind blowing upon him, he was always steadily flying through the air.

After several days, Lin Ming began to do all kinds of various movements and actions as he faced the strong wind, moving slowly as he borrowed the gentle force of the wind. At the start, Lin Ming’s movement was slow, and the range of his motions was limited.

The next day, his speed had increased, and the range of his movement had extended to dozens of feet.

Afterwards, Lin Ming’s speed grew with each day. The sphere of action which he could move encompassed the entire Violent Wind Tunnel, even approaching the innermost depths of the Violent Wind Tunnel where it was narrowest.

Ten days later, Lin Ming had gained a basic understanding of the concept of wind, officially entering the first layer of ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’. Now, Lin Ming was able to move anywhere in the Violent Wind Tunnel at will; the wind wasn’t even able to influence him in the slightest.

“I’ve spent all 120 hours of this month’s time at the seven major killing arrays cultivating the ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’. Fortunately, my ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’ has reached the Small Success level. Starting from tomorrow, I must practice the ‘Heretical God Force’ and ‘Pulse Cutting Palm’ and also attempt to break through to the Altering Muscle stage. I just don’t have enough time…”

Lin Ming had already reached the peak Viscera Training stage. Although he hadn’t set aside time to break through to the Altering Muscle stage, these days he had practiced his inscription technique, and during that time he would often deplete all of his true essence. Following that, he would enter into his ethereal martial intent state while revolving the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’. Under this sort of extreme state, it had been surprisingly good cultivation for his ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’.

Lin Ming’s talent was average, but he would still be able to reach the Altering Muscle stage soon. This was all thanks to the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ and his ethereal martial intent.

As he walked through the back mountains of Zhou Mountain, with every casual step that Lin Ming took, he was able to cross dozens of feet. His toes gently tapped the thin blades of grass, and he would soar into the sky. By revolving his true essence, he was able to swiftly rise into the air; like this, he could easily cross over a 20 foot wall.

Feeling light with not even the slightest weight to his body, Lin Ming felt a great happiness. “This concept of wind is simply too marvelous. Normally when a martial artist cultivates a movement martial skill, it would depend on the coordination of their true essence and bodily strength to increase their speed. Once they jumped up, they would not be able to maintain their speed and would inevitably slow down, but, with this concept of wind, I can actually increase my speed in midair. If I can cultivate the ‘Golden Roc Shattering the

Void' to the third or fourth layer, if I combine that with my increasingly thick true essence, then I might be able to fly! Usually only a Xiantian stage master would have the ability to fly, but I can as long as I achieve the Pulse Condensation Period!"

As Lin Ming was basking in his excitement, a sound transmitting talisman lit in front of Lin Ming, and the sweet voice of Wang Yuhan sounded in Lin Ming's mind. "Mister Lin, we have finally found all of the materials that you want."

Hearing this news, Lin Ming rejoiced. This was a double celebration! He could finally start drawing up the body inscription symbol!

Lin Ming took a detour straight to the Inscription Association. After completing several scheduled inscription symbols, he finally received all the materials he needed. The materials were collected through the combined efforts of the Crown Prince, the Inscription Association, and the influence of numerous powerful families within the Sky Fortune Kingdom. This nationwide search for materials had finally finished after nearly an entire month!

For these materials, the Crown Prince, the Inscription Association, and the various major families had spent a mind boggling amount of manpower and financial resources.

When he was collecting the materials from the Inscription Association, Lin Ming had a certain smug feeling as he saw the piles of materials worth hundreds of thousands of gold tales.

Lin Ming wasn't in a hurry to begin; he knew that his current mentality was not suitable for drawing the body inscription symbol. The body inscription symbol was incomparably precious. It would take a very long time to create, and he absolutely could not afford to be even the least bit careless.

Once Lin Ming had collected all of the materials, he first took a nap. After waking, he closed his door and placed a 'do not disturb' plaque on the outside. He washed his hands, burned incense, bathed, and finally entered the ethereal martial intent state. He sat in meditation for almost half an hour, and relaxed as his mind became completely calm.

There were many martial arts that, after obtaining a top-tier cultivation method, would practice a similar ceremony. This was in order to eliminate their distractions, and let their minds become calm. But unless they were monks, while facing such a top-tier cultivation method that could affect the destiny of their entire lives, who could truly remain calm?

However, the nature of Lin Ming's heart was much purer than a normal martial artist's. With the support of his ethereal martial intent, he was able to adjust his condition its perfect state, so that his heart and mind were able to singularly focus on a task.

When Lin Ming finally opened his eyes from meditation, his eyes were shining bright like stars. He took the first material, the Seven Star Ore, and ground it, extracted it, and mixed it.

The tools that he used were the best ones that could be found within the Inscription Association., These black silver inscription tools would not injure or alter the nature of the materials in the least. Not only that, but these tools were able to perfectly work in conjunction with soul force, so that an inscription master could clearly feel any changes in the materials.

Of these black silver tools, each one had a value that was similar to a treasure. The entire set of inscription tools had a value above 20,000 gold taels. This set of tools was a gift to Lin Ming from the Inscription Association.

As he processed the materials, Lin Ming was already completely immersed in the world of inscription technique. Each inscription symbol that emerged from his hand was like a living spirit that jumped out. Because of this month-long practice, Lin Ming was able to freely control his soul force like never before. He could divide his soul force into hair-thin strands, and guide the materials together so that each one formed a beautiful inscription symbol. This feeling was like sliding on ice; there was no hitch in the fluid process.

Lin Ming was already completely immersed within a rapturous realm. In this state, he had reached an unprecedented extreme of skill.

The sun set, the moon rose, the stars fell, and the rose-colored clouds of dawn reflected the new day.

Lin Ming had unknowingly drawn the inscription symbol for an entire night. In the past, he was able to complete the symbols and lines in a very short time. But now, each symbol and line took at least an incense stick of time. In drawing these complex structures, he did so gingerly.

In this period, Lin Ming also failed a few times, but he had already anticipated this situation. He had left the most precious materials for last; there were backups for everything else.

Unconsciously, Lin Ming's soul force had already surpassed his natural limit. However, because his spirit was in such a state of high concentration, Lin Ming had entered into a state of self-hypnosis. He did not feel himself overdrafting his soul force, but this state was also extremely dangerous.

Because he had gone past what his body could bear.

There were stories of earthquakes, where children would be caught in the collapsing ruins. But, because of maternal love, a child's mother would be able to exert a godly strength and abruptly lift fallen walls that weighed a thousand jins, thus rescuing their child. The reason this was possible was because of self-hypnosis. At the end, the mother would often exceed the limits that could be placed on her body, and she would be disabled or even die.

.....

Time passed one second at a time, until it was late morning. Lin Ming had drawn up the last symbol that he needed. As he gathered his hands together, the complex inscription symbol in the air began to superimpose upon itself, layer after layer, until it became one organic whole. It sent out a sparkling light as if it were a newborn star, and this star gently fell onto Lin Ming's left chest.

There was a slight stabbing pain, as if he was being pierced by scalding hot needles, and then a mysterious six-pointed star appeared on Lin Ming's left chest.

Then, Lin Ming could only see black as dizziness erupted in his head, and he slumped to the ground.

His exhausted soul force had resulted in a bone-aching sleepiness. As the body inscription symbol was finally completed, Lin Ming almost instantly fell into a deep slumber. In this deep sleep, he had severed all perception of the outside world.

This sleep lasted for three days and three nights.

An intense feeling of hunger finally woke up Lin Ming. He stumbled around as he crawled up on his knees. He only felt a splitting headache; this pain was what followed an overconsumption of soul force.

He casually took out some food from his spatial ring to eat, his expression sluggish as he sat on the ground. He sat there for a long time, and then finally, slowly mumbled, "This is... how?"

Trying to remember, he vaguely recalled the process of drawing up the body inscription symbol. He lifted his hand and traced his left chest. On the originally smooth skin, there were some uneven lines. He lowered his head to look. On his left chest was a mysterious six-pointed star mark; it had fused into one with the mark left from the Magic Cube.

Chapter 136 – Altering Muscle Stage

Chapter 136 – Altering Muscle Stage

Chapter title is a spoiler, highlight it to read it now, or see it at the bottom

…

…

…

“Body inscription symbols… I see, it was because I overtaxed my soul force from drawing up the body inscription symbol, so I fell asleep for such a long time… what time is it?”

The large hourglass in the cabin had already streamed cleanly to the bottom. He had apparently slept for at least an entire day.

“It’s a good thing that I succeed. I misjudged the difficulty of the body inscription symbol; I didn’t expect for each symbol and line to have taken such a long time. The one that I drew was… the ‘Essence Gathering Symbol’.

The two body inscriptions symbols that Lin Ming had planned to place on himself were the ‘Essence Gathering Symbol’ and the ‘Strife Seal’.

The ‘Essence Gathering Symbol’ was placed on the chest, and could enhance the speed at which true essence was gathered, thus increasing a martial artist’s cultivation rate.

The ‘Strife Seal’ was placed on the right hand, and by improving how true essence would flow, it could increase the strength of true essence, and improve a martial artist’s martial skill or striking power.

Lin Ming's cultivation was the most important right now, so he had first drawn up the 'Essence Gathering Symbol'.

Lin Ming sat in meditation and tested how much better he could gather true essence. Really, it seemed because of the presence of the 'Essence Gathering Symbol' he was able to more easily absorb the strength of the world, and the speed at which he gathered true essence had increased significantly.

"It's increased by at least 40%! It seems because of the self-hypnosis state, I overdrew my body and injured myself because my soul force was too lacking. But now that I've completed the 'Essence Gathering Symbol', it's exceeded my expectations!" Lin Ming felt a great happiness; a 40% increased rate was simply astonishing!

It had to be known that a normal medium third-grade martial artist, if they started cultivating at the age of 12, and were not supported by any special top-quality pills, then they would be able to reach the early Bone Forging stage by the time they were 40 years old. This period was at least 30 years!

But for a medium fourth-grade martial artist, if they started in a similar situation at 12 years of age and also didn't utilize any top-tier pills or cultivation methods, they would reach the early Bone Forging stage when they were 30 years old. This period was 20 years.

The truth was, this ten year disparity between a single grade of talent could also be considered a 50% difference in the speed of cultivation.

But this 50% difference was actually of great importance. A 30 year old martial artist was in the prime of his youth. They had a hope of breaking through to the Pulse Condensation Period, thus extending the period of their growth, and their strength would also greatly improve. They would be like a carp that became a dragon.

But a 40 year old Bone Forging stage martial artist would often have to face the dire consequences of physical aging. Their body strength would decrease, and they would be weaker compared to younger martial artists at the same level. Moreover, it would be much more difficult for them to have any progress, let alone break through to the Pulse Condensation Period.

So this ‘Essence Gathering Symbol’ that could increase one’s cultivation speed by 40% was simply extraordinary!

“The ‘Essence Gathering Symbol’ is only the most simple of body inscription symbols. Later, when my cultivation grows, I also have the possibility of drawing up even more formidable body inscription symbols. When that time comes, my talent will no longer be a barrier!”

“When I drew up the ‘Essence Gathering Symbol’, I almost damaged my soul. This ‘Strife Seal’ can wait until my strength increases again before I draw it. In any case, the ‘Strife Seal’ is only a body inscription symbol that enhances one’s own strength. As long as I successfully draw it up before my match with Zhang Guanyu, then it’s not too late.”

……………………

Day after day, Lin Ming would go to the Icy Pond Waterfall to cultivate the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’. He was able to sit within the tenth level of difficulty in the Ice Pond Waterfall for 4 to 5 hours at a time.

Under the dual abilities of the ‘Essence Gathering Symbol’ and his ethereal martial intent state, Lin Ming’s cultivation speed experienced a tremendous leap forwards.

In addition to the top heart mantra of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’, Lin Ming’s true essence had been polished to a rich and pure state. In the past, because he had taken the top-tier pills, there had been some impurities within his true essence. But, those pills had already been completely refined by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming’s true essence was pure to such a degree, that it was even better if compared to most peak Bone Forging stage martial artists!

After half a month passed, it was the second month of the four months before the match. As Lin Ming immersed himself within the Ice Pond Waterfall and entered into his ethereal martial intent, he discovered that his true essence had already completely spread throughout his viscera, and had begun infiltrating deep into his muscle and bones.

“Fourth stage of Body Transformation, Altering Muscle!”

Lin Ming was absolutely delighted, but he was not too surprised.

The Martial House core disciple test required that Lin Ming reach the peak Altering Muscle stage before he was over 16 years old. But if he continued at his current rate of cultivation, that was a goal he would be able to effortlessly achieve.

Normally, when a martial artist was advancing to a new stage, they would experience a bottleneck.

The reason for this bottleneck was usually because their foundation was not solid. For instance, a normal Viscera Training stage martial artist, if they did not have a top quality cultivation method, or were not able to go to the Ice Pond Waterfall and have true essence temper every part of their body, then they would experience a bottleneck when breaking through to the Altering Muscle stage.

If there was only a small amount of true essence that permeated their organs, then it would be even more difficult for that true essence to sink in any further.

Even if they barely managed to break through to the Altering Muscle stage, if their Altering Muscle stage foundation was not steady, then the result would only be that breaking through to the Bone Forging stage would be that much more difficult. Finally, they would be completely unable to take that final step into the Pulse Condensation Period.

If one’s foundation was not solid, then as they strived towards greater heights of cultivation, it would become increasingly difficult.

But Lin Ming did not have this kind of problem at all. His true essence had already penetrated deep into each and every nook and cranny of his internal organs, and had even entered into the innumerable tiny units within his body. For him, he would be absolutely successful in breaking through to the Altering Muscle stage, Bone Forging stage, or even the Pulse Condensation Period.

As long as he managed to accumulate enough true essence, he could break through!

As he pushed the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' to its limit, Lin Ming was able to clearly feel the wonderful feeling of true essence sinking into his muscles and bones.

There were many martial artists that did not have a steady foundation, and would only have bitter experiences during their attempts to break through their bottlenecks. If they wanted to enter the Altering Muscle stage, they would often need to push their true essence inwards, and forcefully fuse their true essence into their muscles and bones. They would have to repeat this process slowly as they fused one little part at a time, and very slowly reach the Altering Muscle stage. This was the reason why so many martial artists were stranded at the peak Viscera Training stage for several years.

But this did not apply to Lin Ming. His internal organs had already reached the maximum of how much true essence could be absorbed. This was just like a reservoir that was already filled with water. Because the reservoir could not accommodate more true essence, then that true essence would leak over and naturally seep into the muscle and bones, fusing with them.

Of these two different methods of breaking through a bottleneck, it was easy to see which was good and which was bad!

Lin Ming's breakthrough lasted for three full days. During these three days, Lin Ming would cultivate at the Icy Pond Waterfall for six hours every day. He used a grand total of 18 hours in order to fully integrate the true essence into his muscle and bones; what the so-called Altering Muscle stage cultivated, were the tendons and the periosteum.

As he recovered from his long meditation, Lin Ming felt that the true essence within his body moving incessantly, like an endless river. Resisting the frosty chill of the Icy Pond Waterfall had become an easy task for him.

As he emerged from the icy pool, Lin Ming casually flicked his palm. The edge of his palm formed an indistinct faint blue ripple, just like waves in water.

As Lin Ming saw this rippling blue wave, his eyes shined. “True essence realization… I didn’t expect that I would have reached the boundary of being able to realize my true essence…”

Usually only a martial artist at the Pulse Condensation Period, who had extremely thick true essence, would be able to manifest their true essence. Or, there were also some heaven-gifted rare genius peak Bone Forging stage martial artists that could just barely achieve this. But Lin Ming had been able to manifest his true essence as soon as he reached the early Altering Muscle stage. Throughout the entirety of Sky Fortune Kingdom’s history, he was the first one to be able to do this.

Lin Ming clenched his fist, and felt a sense of smugness. “I’ve just reached the early Altering Muscle stage and yet I’ve achieved the boundary which normally only a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist could achieve. I wonder just how far I am compared to an ordinary Pulse Condensation Period martial artist. When I step into the peak Altering Muscle stage, will I be able to defeat a normal Pulse Condensation Period martial artist?”

Lin Ming was not sure whether or not he could defeat the strength of a powerhouse of the Pulse Condensation Period, but to defeat Lin Sen who was at the peak Altering Muscle stage, Lin Ming had a degree of confidence. Even though Ling Sen had his Ashura martial intent, how could that even compete with the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’?

To Lin Ming, reaching the peak Altering Muscle stage from the early Altering Muscle stage was only a matter of time.

……………………………………

“Oh! Junior Apprentice Brother Lin! What an infrequent visitor!” The deacon senior apprentice brother who was in charge of the Wood Puppet Lane major killing array saw Lin Ming, and immediately welcomed him with a laugh.

Of the Seven Profound Martial House’s seven major killing arrays of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, and thunder, the Wood Puppet Lane killing array belong to the wood element. Lin Ming had only cultivated at the Icy Pond Waterfall and the Violent Wind Tunnel; this was his first time coming to the Wood Puppet Lane. Therefore, the deacon senior apprentice brother who managed the killing array was especially enthused and warm as he greeted Lin Ming. One never knew, perhaps several years from now, this Lin Ming might even become the Martial House Master of the Seven Profound Martial House. If that time ever came, then this Lin Ming would be his superior’s superior; it was natural that he would want to curry favor and flatter him.

“Senior Apprentice Brother, forgive me but this is embarrassing to say, I just decided to come here, without having made an appointment in advance. I wonder if you have any spots that are open yet?” After Lin Ming had broken through to the Altering Muscle stage, he wanted to test his own strength. In the seven major killing arrays, Golden Soldier Hall and Wood Puppet Lane were the two major killing arrays where one could practice their combat skills.

“Of course there is a spot open for you, haha, whenever Senior Apprentice Brother Lin comes, there will always be a spot open just for you.” The deacon senior apprentice brother said with a congenial smile.

“Thank you, Senior Apprentice Brother. Then, if I could trouble the Senior Apprentice Brother to help me open the eleventh level of difficulty.”

“Eleventh level of difficulty?” The deacon senior apprentice brother stared at him with wide eyes. Generally speaking, those disciples that were in the top ten of the Ranking Stone would enter the eleventh level of difficulty. Did Lin Ming’s strength already enter into the top ten rankings?

The deacon apprentice brother felt this was inconceivably incredible, but suddenly he saw Lin Ming's cultivation and his eyes widened even more until they were like giant white circles. "Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, you've already broken through? Altering Muscle stage!"

"Mm. Yesterday I had a lucky breakthrough."

The deacon senior apprentice brother unconsciously gulped. The bottleneck between the Viscera Training stage and the Altering Muscle stage was not too big nor too small. To a genius, breaking through this bottleneck was bound to happen sooner or later. But, it shouldn't have happened so quickly. He vaguely remembered that Lin Ming had broken through to the Viscera Training stage just a few months ago.

To only use a few months to breakthrough to the Altering Muscle stage from the Viscera Training stage, what the hell was this kind of speed? This deacon senior apprentice brother's talent was already quite good, but it had taken him nearly three years to achieve this.

This young man had already reached the Altering Muscle stage when he was only 15 years old, and still had more than a year left to reach the peak Altering Muscle stage. Lin Ming might even be able to reach the Bone Forging stage! It was already 90% guaranteed that he would pass the Seven Profound Martial House's core disciple test!

A core disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House that came from Sky Fortune Kingdom! The deacon senior apprentice took a deep breath. With just a nod of his head, Lin Ming could become the absolute overlord of the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom!

"Senior Apprentice Brother, please open the eleventh level of difficulty." Lin Ming saw the deacon senior apprentice brother in a daze, and politely reminded him.

"Oh, yes, yes." The deacon senior apprentice brother responded, and then fiddled with an array disc to open the eleventh level of difficulty for the Wood Puppet Lane.

Chapter 137 – The Might of ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’

Chapter 137 – The Might of ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’

…

…

…

Wooden Puppet Lane was built into the face of a mountain. There were altogether 12 caves, and each could be opened by themselves. These caves were created by Xiantian masters cutting through the mountain themselves; one could still see glaring sword marks.

Wood Puppet Lane was filled with wooden puppets; the deeper one went, the more formidable these puppets would be, and the more there were.

These wooden puppets were from one of the seven inheritances of the Seven Profound Valleys, the masterpieces of the Puppet Faction. The Puppet Faction was a very mysterious faction within the Seven Profound Valleys. Sky Fortune Kingdom’s Seven Profound Martial House did not have any of these factions’ cultivation methods or secret techniques, so they had never had much exposure to it.

Seeing the crowds of wooden puppets increase, Lin Ming did not hurry to attack. He hadn’t even taken out the Penetrating Rainbow spear. After he had reached a location with more than 20 puppets, Lin Ming rushed in, unarmed.

Cha! A wooden puppet aimed a club at Lin Ming. The weapons that these wooden puppets all used were completely made of wood, such as wooden clubs, or wooden sabers. A wooden weapon may not have seemed like a very dangerous weapon, but even so, if one was pounded by a wooden club or saber, they would still be dealt a crushing blow and vomit blood from a severe wound.

Lin Ming watched as a wooden club came at him and waited until it was just in front of him. He closed his eyes and gently pushed with his toes. His body flickered backwards half a step, and as a result, the descending club that would have smashed Lin Ming's nose was just avoided with not too much or too little distance.

Whiz! Another wooden puppet cut towards Lin Ming's waist with a wooden saber. This time, Lin Ming leapt into the air. His body floated in the air, and because of inertia, he floated backwards. Another wooden puppet cut towards Lin Ming's waist from behind, and this attack didn't seem as if it could be evaded. But then Lin Ming gently waved his sleeves, and his body became like a leaf that was blown away by a gently breeze. It seemed as if he completely violated the rules of physics, and he appeared two feet to the side, dodging that hidden saber by just a hair's width once more.

Swish swish swish! The wooden puppet continuously attacked Lin Ming, but Lin Ming did not counter. Instead, he dodged the attacks from the wooden puppets as if here was taking a leisurely stroll through a park.

There were more than 20 puppets, but only 7 or 8 were able to attack Lin Ming at the same time. But, these 7 or 8 puppets had very scary attacks. Their moves and combinations interwove with each other, and there almost wasn't an angle to dodge.

However, Lin Ming was able to mysteriously avoid all these attacks. It was as if the puppets did not have a weapon in their hands, but instead a fan. Lin Ming was like a light feather; each time the wooden puppets brandished their weapons at him, the wind of the passing weapons would blow him away!

This was the concept of wind that Lin Ming had comprehended!

A waving fan would never be able to touch a floating feather, and like this, a wooden puppet's weapon would never be able to each touch even the hem of Lin Ming's robe!

“Wonderful!”

“Very good!”

“Come again!”

Lin Ming wholly immersed himself in the depths of the concept of wind; this was the first time that he had applied the ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’ movement ability to actual combat!

“These fellows are just a bit too weak!”

As Lin Ming thought this, his body rose like a Roc, rising several dozens of feet before he landed on a cliff and flew towards to depths of Wooden Puppet Lane!

……………………

At this time, outside of Wooden Puppet Lane, the deacon senior apprentice brother was still in shock, as he stared unblinking at the true essence stones in the heart of the major killing array.

Every array formation had an array heart. This was often where the array was supplied with energy from.

The puppets of Wooden Puppet Lane were able to self-repair and regenerate, but this regeneration required the consumption of true essence stones in order to power it. There were some abnormal individuals, like Ling Sen and Ta Ku, who would cause a quick consumption of true essence stones after entering Wood Puppet Lane. Sometimes, just looking at this wasteful sight made the deacon senior apprentice brother’s heart hurt deeply.

But Lin Ming had already gone in for such a long time, yet he had only consumed a small number of true essence stones. Obviously Lin Ming was struggling in dealing with these wooden puppets, and had only managed to take down a few.

Realizing this, the deacon senior apprentice brother let out a soft sigh of relief, “Fortunately, Junior Apprentice Brother Lin isn’t that abnormal. Indeed, it seems that he still isn’t able to challenge the eleventh level of difficulty of Wood Puppet Lane in such a short time!”

“Junior Apprentice Brother Lin is just too impatient. His strength isn’t high enough yet for him to jump straight to the eleventh level of difficulty. But in this Wood Puppet Lane killing array, if the difficulty is too high, one could be easily injured, or might even die!”

“I estimate that another half incense stick of time will pass before Junior Apprentice Brother Lin decides that he cannot last in there any longer, and comes out to change the difficulty to the tenth level…”

The deacon senior apprentice brother picked up the array disk, and waited for Lin Ming to come out and ask him to change the difficulty. But after waiting half an hour, there was no news of his exit.

“What do I do?” The deacon was a bit confused. The array heart was still only consuming true essence at a very slow speed; he even suspected that Lin Ming had encounter some troubles inside and been killed by the wooden puppets.

“What’s going on? Is it possible that Junior Apprentice Brother Lin is hiding in some corner of Wood Puppet Lane? Was that the reason that he had opened the eleventh level of difficulty?”

………………………….

At this moment, Lin Ming had already reached the deepest depths of Wood Puppet Lane. Here, the wooden puppets’ strength was at a much higher level, and they were also large. What was most peculiar though, was that the surface of their bodies was a strange dark red, as if they had been dyed in blood.

Facing so many more advanced puppets, Lin Ming felt an intense amount of pressure. As he dodged the wooden puppets' intense attacks for a long time, he was beginning to gasp for breath even with the support of the 'True Prima Chaos Formula'.

"Almost there!" Lin Ming had practiced his movement for almost an entire hour. He felt that this was enough, and thinking this, he turned his hand and extracted the Penetrating Rainbow spear from his spatial ring.

Holding the spear in both hands, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light. The countless tiny units in his body began to synchronise their breathing to the same frequency, as his thick true essence began to shake like a mountain. In that moment, his imposing aura instantly erupted!

"Total Annihilation!"

Boom boom boom boom!

With the formidable strength of Altering Muscle's cultivation level, combined with his fiercely vibrating true essence, there was an explosion of sounds in succession, as the Penetrating Rainbow spear swept out, and the puppets were all sent flying backwards!

"Oh! Not dead?"

Lin Ming found that besides the puppet that had borne the majority of his attack and shattered to pieces, the other puppets had only fallen to the ground, and were beginning to crawl back up.

"Good resilience!"

No one understood the terrifying destructive power of 'Flow like Silk' more than Lin Ming. Back when he was at the Viscera Training stage, a single strike from his spear was able to turn a thick stone column dozens of feet high into nothing more than crumbled rock. Now that his strength had increased even further, he might even be able to split apart a hall with just a few spear moves!

But now that he had struck at these wooden puppets, only one had died!

“The more resilient they are, the better. Today I will enjoy this fight!”

After officially stepping into the Altering Muscle stage, in addition to reaching the Large Success of ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’, Lin Ming really needed a battle to examine his own strength and also allow his body to adapt to the change in his true essence and physical strength.

Bang bang bang! Wooden puppets began to blow up one after another! The Penetrating Rainbow spear was like a purple black dragon that was churning in the ocean waves.

“Haha, fun!”

“Come on, more!”

Lin Ming flourished Penetrating Rainbow with grandeur. Each spear move was imbued with the ‘Flow like Silk’ concept, and every hit would cause a wooden puppet to explode into pieces!

In fact, what Lin Ming did now know was that when other martial artists entered Wood Puppet Lane, most could not even injure these puppets; they could only knock them down.

Even if it was Ling Sen, who had such an abnormally overwhelming combat strength, he could only cut apart a wooden puppet with his sword; he simply could not be like Lin Ming, whose every spear thrust would cause a wooden puppet to burst into fragments.

The wooden puppets could repair themselves, but this repair required the consumption of true essence stones as the energy source. If a wooden puppet was knocked down, it would only be slightly damaged, and be able to repair itself with very little energy. Even if they were cut apart by Ling Sen, it wouldn’t require too many true essence stones to repair.

But when Lin Ming had shattered them his spear, this was truly a tragedy. Not only did the repairs take time, but the consumption of true essence stones would be terrifying for a long time afterwards!

…………………………

Outside Wood Puppet Lane, the deacon senior apprentice brother was still waiting for Lin Ming to come out and lower the difficulty to the tenth level. As he casually glanced at the true essence stones in the array heart, the scene scared and dumbfounded him; he could only helplessly look on at the true essence stones' energy levels plummeted!

The true essence stones began to change at a speed visible to the naked eye. Starting from its original lustrous crystal like appearance, it gradually turned a dull white, and then after some time, peng! It exploded!

The array would automatically replace it with a new true essence stone, but the result was still the same. In less than half an incense stick of time, another true essence stone exploded!

What… what was happening!?

Even if Ling Sen was here, the consumption rate would not be so high!

Was it Lin Ming? No… impossible!

Absolutely impossible!

The deacon senior apprentice brother looked at the true essence stone at the center of the array heart and constantly swallowed as he panicked. Although logic told him that it was impossible for Lin Ming to be so abnormal, the truth was already placed in front of him.

This… this, just what the hell is this?

The deacon senior apprentice brother cried in his heart. With so many true essence stones being suddenly consumed, he simply could not find a good explanation.

…………………………

“Mm? Where’d they all go?”

Lin Ming had been enjoying destroying all the wooden puppets, but now the originally threatening and aggressive wooden puppets had been reduced to just 2 or 3. They were just as dangerous as cats now, and the rest that still hadn’t shattered yet were missing arms and legs.

“This Wood Puppet Lane sucks, is this everything? It’s the eleventh level of difficulty!” Lin Ming was speechless. In his mind, this eleventh level of difficulty was unworthy of the name.

If the deacon senior apprentice brother knew Lin Ming’s thoughts, he probably would have wanted to smack his head against a wall and kill himself. The puppets of Wood Puppet Lane could repair themselves after they were destroyed, but Lin Ming had exploded them with his spear, and turned them completely into scattered pieces. This repair would just take a long time!

“Although I couldn’t fight to my heart’s content, I’ve about gotten a good grasp on my current strength. Right now I still might not be able to compare to Zhang Guanyu, but I should absolutely not have a problem entering the top ten of the Ten Thousand Killing Array rankings. First I’ll participate in this coming Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment, and take the Heavy Profound Soft Spear before planning my next move.”

Lin Ming put away his Penetrating Rainbow spear, and walked out of Wood Puppet Lane.

Chapter 138 – Heavy Profound Soft Spear

Chapter 138 – Heavy Profound Soft Spear

…

…

…

The deacon senior apprentice brother was a bit sluggish as he watched Lin Ming come out of Wood Puppet Lane. He still hadn't figured out just what the hell had happened inside a moment ago. Was there a malfunction in the Wood Puppet Lane array? How come the true essence stones were consumed so quickly!?

"Junior… Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, are you alright?" The deacon senior apprentice froze for a long time before he hesitantly asked him. If there was a breakdown in the array formation, then did Junior Apprentice Brother Lin encounter any problems in there?

"Me? I'm fine!" Lin Ming asked, somewhat puzzled, but he didn't dwell on this much. "Thank you Senior Apprentice Brother. I will leave first; I'll come by another day and thank you for your hospitality."

Lin Ming turned around and departed.

The deacon senior apprentice brother was still in a daze. He thought about the possibilities for a while, and then suddenly moved. He picked up his robes and scurried into the Wood Puppet Lane cave that Lin Ming had just been in a moment ago.

This scene left him petrified on the spot!

He only saw scattered parts all throughout Wood Puppet Lane. There were broken wooden puppets everywhere, with hands and feet haphazardly tossed around or pulverized to little splinters. “This… this is… what the hell did Lin Ming do?”

His throat violently spasmed.

This array formation had broken down; this was certainly an array formation breakdown!

But… if… if the wooden puppets were broken like this… could they still be repaired?

…………………………

After Lin Ming had reached the Altering Muscle stage, he hadn’t invested too much of his time in cultivating the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’. Instead, he had focused all of his energy on cultivating the ‘Heretical God Force’ and ‘Pulse Cutting Palm’.

The ‘Pulse Cutting Palm’ was quite simple. This martial skill was only able to deal with opponents with a far inferior strength, or those who had already lost all their ability to resist an enemy. Lin Ming only took a few days to learn this skill.

In short, the ‘Pulse Cutting Palm’ infiltrated one’s own true essence into an enemy’s body, blowing out all of their meridian channels!

Before a martial artist reached the ‘Pulse Condensation Period’, the meridians in their body hadn’t yet opened and connected. But, this did not mean that they had no meridians, only that the meridians were blocked, and body points were dried, thus they showed no effects.

But the ‘Pulse Cutting Palm’ was able to forcefully pour true essence along these depleted meridians, ravaging them as they passed. Eventually, all the meridian channels would be destroyed.

The meridians were the path that a person’s ‘Qi’ flowed. If one did not have meridians for the ‘Qi’ to pass, then they would be called a natural non-meridian born. These non-meridian borns would usually not survive past the age of 25.

The ‘Pulse Cutting Palm’ was able to destroy the meridians and simulate the effect of a non-meridian born. It would cause a martial artist to gradually lose their cultivation, until it was finally all obliterated!

Cultivating the ‘Pulse Cutting Palm’ was simple. However, cultivating the ‘Heretical God Force’ was a completely different level of difficulty.

The ‘Heretical God Force’ was divided into six layers. Lin Ming had cultivated this ability for ten days, but still hadn’t even be able to touch upon the first layer.

“The essence of the ‘Heretical God Force’ is compression of true essence!”

The first layer compressed true essence by 50%. The second layer compressed true essence by 100%. The third layer, 150%. All the way until the sixth layer, where true essence was compressed by three times!

If true essence was compressed, then its power would naturally be multiplied!

The ‘Heretical God Force’ could only compress a portion of one’s true essence, and then store that in the body. In a battle, one could bring out this compressed true essence.

What Lin Ming needed to cultivate, was the ‘seed’ of the ‘Heretical God Force’.

As long as this ‘Heretical God Seed’ existed, true essence would automatically be compressed and confined within this seed. Lin Ming would not need to consciously manage it.

“I’m not in a hurry to cultivate this ‘Heretical God Force’. This is only the end of the second month. I should participate in the Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment first, and take the Heavy Profound Soft Spear.”

The Heavy Profound Soft Spear was a medium-grade human-step treasure; if Lin Ming poured his true essence into it, it would be able to flow through unimpeded. With his Penetrating Rainbow spear, only the spear head was a low-grade human-step treasure. The spear shaft was made from ordinary iron. Although this iron was the dark elastic purple iron, the flow of true essence would still be greatly reduced within.

For 'Flow like Silk', Lin Ming needed to pour true essence into the spear in order to display its power.

So if Lin Ming was able to take the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, he would become that much more powerful.

There were only three days left until the Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment. He would attain a top ten spot within the Ranking Stone in one fell swoop, and finish the first reward task from the Seven Profound Martial House and obtain the Heavy Profound Soft Spear. With this spear in hand, he would be much more confident against Zhang Guanyu.

Three days later —

Today marked the fourth month since Lin Ming had entered the Seven Profound Martial House.

Lin Ming had participated in the Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment twice. The first time he had been ranked 126, and the second time he had been ranked 62. The time between these two rankings had only been one month.

During the third Ten Thousand Killing Array Assessment, Lin Ming had been wholly absorbed in preparing for his decisive showdown with Zhu Yan, so he hadn't participated.

As for the fourth assessment, Lin Ming had already obtained privileges and resources equal to the top three ranks of the Ranking Stone, so he hadn't felt the need to participate.

But now, this would be the fifth Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment.

For this Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment, there weren't many disciples attending. In the entire ashlar square, since the sun had risen, there were only a handful more than 20 people.

Moreover, within these disciples, most were ranked below rank 100, and there were only 6 or 7 disciples that were ranked in the top 100. As for the top 50, none of them had come.

This deserted and lonely scene was mainly because the majority of the Seven Profound Martial House's disciples had planned to attend the next Ten Thousand killing Array assessment.

Next month's assessment was set to be highly anticipated!

Because that day would mark the third month since the Seven Profound Decree was issued. Lin Ming would definitely challenge the top ten of the Ranking Stone during that time in order to obtain the Heavy Profound Soft Spear. At that appointed time, there would no doubt be countless powers that had their eyes and ears on scene, and powerhouses from all around would converge.

Naturally, one could not miss such a grand event.

But nobody would ever think that Lin Ming would challenge the top ten rankings of the Ranking stone at only the end of the second month!

Since the opening of the Ten Thousand Killing Array, it had only been half an hour. The ashlar square was very peaceful; most of the early arriving martial artists sat in the bamboo grove and meditated. The early morning air was rich with life and energy; it was very suitable for breathing.

Moreover, controlling one's breath during meditation could assist with adjusting a martial artist's mental and bodily condition. Of course, all disciples hoped to enter the Ten Thousand Killing Array in their best state, and thus achieve the best result they could.

Because there weren't many disciples attending this Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment, and those who did were mostly new disciples, the deacon senior apprentice brother responsible for the Ten Thousand Killing Array seemed to lack interest. He strolled around with an air of boredom as he received the true essence stone from the participating disciples. Each disciple that wished to enter into the Ten Thousand Killing Array had to pay a deposit of one true essence stone.

The deacon's name was Liang Guangfeng. He had already served as a deacon at the Seven Profound Martial House for a long time, and his mind was thinking about his hopeful future promotion to a Human Hall elder.

Of the Seven Profound Martial House elders, there were the Heavenly Abode elders, the Earth Hall elders, and the Human Hall elders. The Human Hall elders had the lowest status of the three. As long as they were a Pulse Condensation martial artist, they could hold this post. Liang Guangfeng was a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist.

Although the deacon of the Ten Thousand Killing Array was of a somewhat higher status than most other deacons, he was still only a deacon after all. A deacon would always be inferior in status to an elder.

"If I can get on good terms with Lin Ming, and he possibly becomes the Martial House Master someday, then it would just be a matter of a few words to become a Human Hall Elder. What a pity that the number of people that wish to befriend Lin Ming are high enough that they can line up into their own army. When would it ever be my turn? Lian Guangfeng ruefully smiled, and shook his head.

But at this moment, he saw a young man wearing black clothes, carrying a dark purple colored long spear on his shoulder, come out from the bamboo grove. Liang Guangfeng's eyes widened. Mm? Lin Ming!

Did he wish to participate in today's Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment? This was only the second month!

Not only was Liang Guangfeng surprised, but many of the disciples present noted Lin Ming's arrival. Lin Ming was the current shining star of the Seven Profound Martial House. Many of the young junior apprentice brothers and junior apprentice sisters of the Human Hall were Lin Ming's adoring fans. To see Lin Ming was the same as seeing a lifelong idol.

"Look quickly, that's Senior Apprentice Brother Lin!'

"Senior Apprentice Brother Lin has come!"

Lin Ming would soon reach 16 years of age. In the Seven Profound Martial House, he was still considered relatively young. But, even those older than Lin Ming would still refer to him as Senior Apprentice Brother Lin. Those that cultivated the martial path respected achievements first and foremost. For instance, Ling Sen would always be the elder senior apprentice brother of the Heavenly Abode.

"Does Senior Apprentice Brother Lin want to participate in today's Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment?"

"No way. This is only the second month. Maybe Senior Apprentice Brother Lin wants to warm up?"

"Che! How could someone like you predict the actions of someone at Senior Apprentice Brother Lin's level? I think today he will try to enter into the top ten rankings!

"Don't just wildly guess. Maybe Senior Apprentice Brother Lin is just taking a walk around."

As the disciples discussed this, a young 15 year old girl timidly edged towards Lin Ming and asked, "Senior Apprentice Lin, may I ask if you are participating in today's Seven Profound Martial House assessment?"

"Yes." Lin Ming nodded.

Lin Ming's reply caused all these low-order Earth Hall disciples to be excited to the point of fainting. Some even took out sound transmitting talismans and quickly relayed messages to their friends to come see this grand event.

Lin Ming's participation in the Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment was an extraordinary matter! If he could smoothly enter the top ten of the Ranking Stone, then would he be able to defeat Zhang Guanyu in the fourth month, and then subsequently defeat Ta Ku and Ling Sen?

To the disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House, the trio of Zhang Guanyu, Ta Ku, and Ling Sen had acquired too heavy a reputation over the years. To defeat individuals like them… these disciples simply dared not imagine such a scenario.

Moreover, if Lin Ming really could defeat Zhang Guanyu, then the matter of passing the Seven Profound Valleys' core disciple test could be considered settled!

A local born Seven Profound Martial House core disciple of the Sky Fortune Kingdom had the possibility of becoming a Seven Profound Envoy or the Martial House Master in the future! These were simply legendary figures!

Lin Ming moved towards the Ten Thousand Killing Arrays altar, and took out a true essence stone as payment for entrance.

Liang Guangfeng apologetically smiled, "Junior Apprentice Brother Lin may directly test. It makes no difference whether you place down a true essence stone deposit or not." The last time Lin Ming had participated in the Ten Thousand Killing Array, he had been ranked 62. Now, after such a long time, his true strength was at least several dozen ranks above that. Even if he paid down a true essence stone, he was sure to take it back.

Lin Ming was expressionless as he said, "Then thank you, Senior Apprentice Brother Liang."

The urgent news traveled quickly. After some people heard this, they immediately rushed to the Ten Thousand Killing Array. The previously lonely ashlar square was now lively and full of people.

Even several elders had arrived.

“Lin Ming! Haha, do you plan on challenging the top ten positions of the Ranking Stone so quickly?” A hearty voice called out. Lin Ming turned and saw that this person was an elder of the Seven Profound Martial House’s Heavenly Abode, Sun Sifan.

Chapter 139 – Two Geniuses

Chapter 139 – Two Geniuses

…

…

…

Lin Ming turned and saw that this person was an elder of the Seven Profound Martial House's Heavenly Abode, Sun Sifan.

Before, during the entrance examination at the start of fall, Lin Ming had managed to pass all three trials in first place. However, because of the limit of his talent, some elders did not agree that Lin Ming should have the first place spot. But this Sun Sifan was actually one of those who had supported Lin Ming.

After that, Lin Ming had severely wounded Wang Yanfeng, and Elder Xu and rushed on stage to look for trouble with Lin Ming. That time, it was also thanks to Sun Sifan helping Lin Ming that Elder Xu was forced to back down.

Because of his timely help and graciousness, Lin Ming had a very good in impression of Sun Sifan. He respectfully bowed and said, "Greetings, Elder Sun."

Sun Sifan quickly held Lin Ming up, and said, smiling, "There is no need to be so polite between us. Soon when you become a core disciple, our statuses will be the same… mm?" Sun Sifan paused. "You already reached the Altering Muscle stage?"

Sun Sifan's eyes were like a torch, and he immediately saw through Lin Ming's cultivation. Before, Lin Ming had restrained his true essence within him, so the many young junior apprentice brothers and sisters, who were mostly at the Second Stage of Body Transformation, did not see that Lin Ming had already made another breakthrough.

“Yes. I had a lucky breakthrough yesterday, so that’s why I have the confidence today to challenge the top ten spots of the Ranking Stone.”

“Good, good! The young are truly great! There is still more than a year left in the Seven Profound Valley’s core disciple test. Since you are at the Altering Muscle stage, you must have easily broken through the bottleneck from the Viscera Training stage to the Altering Muscle stage. With your fast progress, it is only a matter of time until you reach the peak Altering Muscle stage. This test has already been decided!

A 15 year old Altering Muscle martial artist was simply extraordinary. Even a fifth-grade talent would be mediocre by comparison!

“This young disciple has confidence to pass the test, but to defeat someone like Senior Apprentice Brother Lin, this young disciple does not truly have the confidence to win.”

“Haha, passing the test is already a wonderful achievement. If you could also beat Ling Sen, that would be a true miracle!”

Ling Sen was known throughout the Sky Fortune Kingdom as being invincible within his own cultivation stage, and even undefeatable to those below the Pulse Condensation Period. There were even some weak Pulse Condensation Period martial artists that Ling Sen would be victorious over.

If Lin Ming could defeat Ling Sen, then that would mean he would be a 15 year old at the early Altering Muscle stage with strength equivalent to a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist!

In the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom, there were only a mere 100 or so Pulse Condensation Period Martial artists, and most of those were concentrated in the Seven Profound Martial House.

If Lin Ming could defeat Ling Sen, then that would mean that in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, his individual strength would be in the top 100.

This ranking, at such a young age, really caused one to feel alarm and horror!

At this moment, another elder entered the ashlar square. It may have been a coincidence, but this elder turned out to be Elder Xu, the Xu Fengyuan who had made things difficult for Lin Ming.

Not even in Xu Fengyuan's wildest dreams would he have thought that Lin Ming would achieve this level of fame four months ago. Now that he was a Seven Profound Martial House core disciple, he might even become the Martial House Master in the future. That would make him his own immediate superior!

When he remembered the entrance examination and how he had tried to meddle with Lin Ming, Xu Fengyuan felt such a deep, aching regret that even his intestines turned blue. Recently, Xu Fengyuan had been having difficulty sleeping and eating.

Although Xu Fengyuan loathed this to his heart, he reluctantly came today for a chance to meet with Lin Ming and come to terms with what happened. If they could bury their past animosity, perhaps this Lin Ming would not retaliate against him in the future. For the Martial House to get rid of a Heavenly Abode elder, it wasn't a small matter, but it also wasn't too difficult.

Choosing this time to come, he didn't anticipate that he would bump into his old rival, Sun Sifan. Xu Fengyuan immediately complained of this hardship in his heart. This was a time when he was already planning on losing face, but he had actually managed to run into an old rival; would this guy not just make a joke of him?

Lin Ming also remembered this Elder Xu. The spatial ring that he had was from Xu Fengyuan. The spatial ring had been very convenient.

Lin Ming did not even bear a grudge against Wang Yanfeng, much less Xu Fengyuan. While Xu Fengyuan had been unfair, it was still understandable. After all, it was a natural human reaction. Xu Fengyuan was old friends with Yuelu City's Wang Family, and Wang Yanfeng was from the Wang Family.

Lin Ming greeted him with the same respect, “Greetings, Elder Xu.”

Xu Fengyuan awkwardly coughed. He had immediately discovered that Lin Ming had broken through to the Altering Muscle stage. This caused him to not know how to react to this sudden development. Wang Yanfeng was still trying to reach the peak Viscera Training stage, but this Lin Ming was already at the Altering Muscle stage!

At the beginning of fall, Wang Yanfeng’s cultivation had been his greatest advantage against Lin Ming. But now he had already fallen behind!

The test had only started two months ago, and he had reached the Altering Muscle stage. There was also more than a year left of time. To achieve the peak Altering Muscle stage would simply be child’s play.

If there wasn’t some catastrophic accident, then Lin Ming would definitely become a core disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House!

Because Sun Sifan was present, Xu Fengyuan didn’t wish to tarry. He dryly coughed, and said, “I just passed by and heard that Lin Ming was going to take the assessment. I came here to take a look, and… well, good luck in the array. If you come across problems in your cultivation, feel free to come ask me anything.”

These remarks of Xu Fengyuan were a tactful apology on his part. Lin Ming naturally would not argue for anything more. Xu Fengyuan was still a Houtian stage master; such a humble dialogue already showed much face to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming said, “Many thanks to Elder Xu. This young disciple will come pay a visit another day.”

“Mm. Good!” Listening to Lin Ming say this, Elder Xu was finally relaxed.

With the presence of the two elders, the lower-order disciples of the Earth Hall stood at a distance and did not dare to go forward. But at this moment, there was another stir within the ashlar square. This rippling wave of awe was no less than that caused by Lin Ming!

Another person had arrived in the square. This person was unexpectedly – Qin Xingxuan!

If there was anyone in the Seven Profound Martial House who could compare with Lin Ming, then that person, without a doubt, would be Qin Xingxuan!

When Qin Xingxuan's fame was rising, Lin Ming was still an unknown. Now, the halo of prestige that surrounded Qin Xingxuan was no less than Lin Ming's.

With these two monstrous geniuses of the Seven Profound Martial House gathering together, how could it not be thrilling?

Lin Ming was also quite a bit surprised at seeing Qin Xingxuan arrive. He hadn't thought that she would come. Qin Xingxuan was a core disciple, so there was no reason for her to participate in the Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment. That meant that the only reason she came here was to see him.

Thinking this, Lin Ming felt a very unusual feeling percolating in his mind.

Today, Qin Xingxuan was wearing a very simple martial outfit. It was neat, loose, and tied at the waist with a band. It perfectly served to accentuated her beautiful shape, and combined with both her slender legs, it gave off a very pure and valiant feeling.

However, what Lin Ming noticed was not Qin Xingxuan's beauty and temperament, but her cultivation. Qin Xingxuan had already broken into the Fifth Stage of Body Transformation, the Bone Forging stage!

When Lin Ming had first entered the Seven Profound Martial House, Qin Xingxuan was already at the peak Altering Muscle stage. Now, in fourth months, she had crossed the Bone Forging bottleneck.

But Qin Xingxuan was also younger than Lin Ming by several months!

A sixth-grade talent was simply too terrifying.

“Xingxuan greets Elder Xu, Elder Sun.” Although Qin Xingxuan’s status was similar to these elders of the Heavenly Abode, she still displayed the etiquette of a child to and elder, and bowed to these two elders.

The two elders also noted Qin Xingxuan’s cultivation. They exclaimed with surprise in their heart. The Sky Fortune Kingdom had never before in their entire history had a martial artist reach the Bone Forging stage at only 15 years of age!

With such progress, Qin Xingxuan had the possibility of breaking through to the Pulse Condensation Period at 16 years of age.

At present, between this boy and girl pair, one’s combat capabilities were unrivaled, and the other’s cultivation speed went against heaven’s will. These two youths were simply the true monsters among monstrous geniuses!

Unfortunately, Qin Xingxuan had already made it clear to all that she planned to pursue the Xiantian path, and had no intention of staying in the Sky Fortune Kingdom. Otherwise in the future, Lin Ming could be the Martial House Master and Qin Xingxuan could be the Seven Profound Envoy. They could marry as one, and they would be the definition of a golden couple, simply a match made in heaven.

Their children would inevitable be gifted with an astonishing natural talent, and there would be a new legendary family within the Sky Fortune Kingdom. With these two people, the destiny and future of the nation would be much more stable, and the nearby enemies would not dare to invade the Sky Fortune Kingdom.

“Lin Ming, long time no see.” Qin Xingxuan faintly smiled. Of all his peers, only Qin Xingxuan directly called Lin Ming by his name, smoothly and naturally, with a nice ring to it. Others would call him Senior Apprentice Brother Lin, maybe Sir Lin, or even Mister Lin.

“Mm. It’s been two months since we’ve seen each other.”

"Haha, you two chat first. We shall go sit in the bamboo grove." Sun Sifan saw these two youths talking, and created an excuse to leave of his own initiative. He knew that Qin Xingxuan would certainly not ask these two old men to leave.

"Elder Sun, Elder Xu, please walk carefully." Qin Xingxuan sweetly said.

"Mm. Have fun catching up." Xu Fengyuan hurriedly said. This was one of the few times that these two were of the same opinion.

After seeing these two walk away, Qin Xingxuan brightly smiled and said, "Lin Ming, I've recently been in seclusion for cultivation. When I came out, I heard that your inscription technique has already reached the pinnacle of Sky Fortune City. Hehe, since I was the first one to know of your status as an inscription master, can you give me a discount? I have a sword, and I would like your help with it."

Qin Xingxuan's eyes twinkled like stars as she winked. It showed a rarely seen playful demeanor that only highlighted her peerless enchanting beauty.

Even Lin Ming was stunned speechless for a moment. He finally smiled and said, "I am willing to serve Miss Qin. In fact, I can help you for free."

"Really? Then I am honored." Qin Xingxuan coyly smiled and continued, "Lin Ming, please call me by my name, there is no need for us to be strangers. Ah! Since you came today, you must be confident in entering the top ten ranks of the Ranking Stone, right?"

"Mm." Lin Ming nodded. He had a 100% assurance that he could enter the top ten ranks today.

More and more people began to stream into the Ten Thousand Killing Array's ashlar square. The originally lonely scene, because of the sudden appearance of Lin Ming, had become very festive, and some people were even rushing in.

As the Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment was soon to begin, Bai Jingyun and Murong Zi also arrived.

Seeing Lin Ming and Qin Xingxuan having such an engaged conversation, Murong Zi curled her lips and plopped down. There was no way that she was going to go up and say hello.

As Bai Jingyun saw Murong Zi like these, she laughed silently. In truth, Murong Zi was actually quite proud. But unfortunately, in the face of someone like Qin Xingxuan, she had lost all of her self-confidence and couldn't find it anywhere. Qin Xingxuan was younger than Murong Zi. When Qin Xingxuan's name was shaking the entirety of Sky Fortune City, Murong Zi had yet to be convinced; she wanted to compare herself to Qin Xingxuan. After a long time and much effort spent, she had discovered that the two of them were simply not on the same playing field.

And now, as Murong Zi saw Qin Xingxuan and Lin Ming happily chatting with each other, she felt something in her heart that was hard for a little girl to explain. It was a somewhat inexplicable, bewildering jealousy that clouded her mind. Murong Zi had a very simple disposition; she was never one to hide her feelings, therefore she just sat down on the spot.

Bai Jingyun smiled and said, "Ah Zi, didn't you just say a few days ago that you had a medium-grade human-step sword that you wished Junior Apprentice Brother Lin to help you with?"

Chapter 140 – Blazing Fighting Spirit

Chapter 140 – Blazing Fighting Spirit

…

…

…

Bai Jingyun smiled and said, “Ah Zi, didn’t you just say a few days ago that you had a medium-grade human-step sword that you wished for Junior Apprentice Brother Lin to help you with?”

Murong Zi said with a sour taste, “That person Qin Xingxuan also has a sword and is looking for your Junior Apprentice Brother Lin’s inscription symbol. A sword from the Marshal’s Quarters is probably a high-grade human-step treasure sword. Ah, with my low class broken sword, how can I go there to just lose face? Humph, those stubborn old men in my family are simply beggaring cheapskates!”

Murong Zi’s sour words could be smelled from several blocks away. Bai Jingyun could not help but laugh.

As Murong Zi had been seeing these days, there were many juniors of large and respected families that had medium-grade human-step treasures with Lin Ming’s flame inscription symbol added on them. She could not sit still and let this opportunity pass her, so she had used soft and hard tactics, and one way or another had managed to obtain a medium-grade human-step treasure sword and some rare and precious materials from the old men in her family. She had grabbed Bai Jingyun in high spirits and ran to the Inscription Association to look for Lin Ming and have him place an inscription symbol on her weapon. But after finally arriving at the Inscription Association, they found that Lin Ming had collected all the materials he was looking for, and had shut down his shop, no longer working.

This caused Murong Zi to feel very melancholic and depressed. She returned to the Seven Profound Martial House where she also found that Lin Ming had gone into seclusion to train. This caused Murong Zi to feel even more unwell.

Bai Jingyun did not tease Murong Zi. She walked over to greet Lin Ming and Qin Xingxuan. “Junior Apprentice Brother Lin! Miss Qin!”

“Oh? Senior Apprentice Sister Jingyun?” Lin Ming moved slightly, immediately smiled and replied, “I hope that you are satisfied with that sword’s inscription.”

“Mm. It has been very worthwhile. I don’t know if Junior Apprentice Brother Lin has any free time these days, but Ah Zi also has a sword, and would like to request Junior Apprentice Brother Lin’s help.”

“No problem, there’s no need to ask. An inscription symbol shouldn’t take too long; I have more than enough time. I would still like to thank Senior Apprentice Sister Jingyun for the Star Obsidian; it has helped me a lot.”

“Junior Apprentice Brother Lin is too polite.” Bai Jingyun smiled, and before she could say anything more, the copper clock on the altar sounded.

The Ten Thousand Killing Array’s assessment had officially begun!

Lin Ming’s eyes shined. His fighting spirit was already blazing. After a long period of three months, just how far could he reach on the Ranking Stone?

“Will Junior Apprentice Brother Lin go on stage now?” Bai Jingyun asked.

“Mm. I will go on for the first round!”

Normally, a disciple of formidable strength could choose the final rounds to go on stage; this was so that they could have their finale in front of all. But Lin Ming didn’t want this. The reason he came today was to enter the top ten and take the reward of the Heavy Profound Soft Spear; it was not to perform.

“Those disciples that wish to participate in the first round please come up!” The deacon senior apprentice brother proclaimed.

Lin Ming leapt into the air, as if he was a gently lithe swallow, and instantly appeared on the Ten Thousand Killing Array’s altar.

Others may not have noted this seemingly weightless, light movement, but Qin Xingxuan did, along with the two elders, Xu Fengyuan and Sun Sifan.

Qin Xingxuan instinctively felt that there was something strange with Lin Ming’s movements a moment ago, but could not pinpoint exactly what it was. She could only pensively look at Lin Ming, puzzled, as she recalled the scene in her mind.

Xu Fengyuan stroked his beard, and said, “Mister Sun, did you notice that there was most likely some mystery within Lin Ming’s movement just now?”

Sun Sifan recalled Lin Ming’s movement just then. His movements couldn’t be said to be too fast, but they actually contained some sort of special mystery. The average person, after jumping, would gradually slow down due to the force of gravity and air resistance. Though the jump speed was fast and the distance was short, those with careful perception were able to sense that even though Lin Ming jumped onto the altar at an average speed, his body seemed to be weightless like a feather, and he had been blown by a breeze on stage.

“There does seem to be something out of place. This kid just went missing for several days, yet his progress has not been small. Well, look!”

Because Lin Ming had arrived on stage, those disciples who had planned to go on for the first round stopped themselves as if they had come to a prior arrangement, and didn’t step on stage. Now, the only person on the first round of the assessment was Lin Ming.

Lin Ming did not care about these people, and sat cross legged directly on the altar.

“There is no time limit to this assessment. Defeating an early Second Stage of Body Transformation enemy will gain you one point. Defeating a peak Second Stage will be worth

5 points. A early Third Stage enemy will be worth 10 points. A peak Third Stage enemy will be worth 50 points. An early Fourth Stage enemy will be worth 100 points. A peak Fourth Stage enemy will be worth 500 points. An early Fifth Stage enemy will be worth 1000 points. A peak Fifth Stage enemy will be worth 5000 points. Death in the dreamland will mean defeat. Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, if you are prepared, then we may start.” Deacon Liang Guangfeng spoke the usual introduction routine.

“Please begin.” Lim Ming nodded. Afterwards, a gently white light enveloped him in front of everyone.

Lin Ming had once again entered that vast white world. At his side, there were a wide variety of weapons.

“Spear: spear shaft 8 feet, spear head 8 inches. Dark purple elastic iron spear shaft, cloud vein wrought iron spear point. Total weight 820 jins!”

Lin Ming conceived the image of the weapon in his mind, and like that, a replica of the Penetrating Rainbow Spear fell into his waiting hands.

Meanwhile, in front of Lin Ming, more than ten martial artists and vicious beasts appeared. Their strength only ranged from the early Second Stage of Body Transformation to the early Third Stage of Body Transformation. To the Lin Ming of now, this sort of strength carried not even the slightest bit of threat.

Not waiting for these enemies to attack, Lin Ming stepped forwards and instantly appeared in the middle of this shadowy pack of vicious beasts and martial artists. He swept out his spear, “Killing Circle!”

Even with no ‘Flow like Silk’, and just with his physical strength alone, that single sweep of his spear caused every single enemy to explode like bags of blood; every single one died!

A single move to clear all, cleanly and neatly!

As several breaths of time passed, another group of enemies winked into existence. This time, the enemies were mostly at the peak Third Stage of Body Transformation, and there was even one at the early Altering Muscle stage.

But this cultivation was just as trivial to Lin Ming!

He gripped the Penetrating Rainbow spear and flicked it into his hand. Lin Ming fired into the group of enemies! The cow-like vicious beast with strength equal to the Altering Muscle stage stormed towards Lin Ming. Its large body of several thousand jins, rapidly ran at him. Its four trampling hooves shook the ground, causes dirt and stones to fly in the air!

With the fearsome power of the cow-like vicious beast, and in addition to the strength from its charge, even a palace would collapse on impact!

Facing this aggressive monster, Lin Ming did not dodge or evade. He shouted, arms lowering, and his imposing aura erupted from his body like a volcano, “Flood Dragon Goes to Sea!”

With a roar, Lin Ming’s spear pierced through that cow-like monster’s body!

Kacha!

Under the force of this impact, the Penetrating Rainbow spear split apart the cow-like monster’s thick skin as if it was rotten leather and then stuck straight in the middle of the cow-like beast’s body!

The powerful clash of the two caused the Penetrating Rainbow spear to curve like a crescent moon. Li Ming fiercely stepped forward with his right foot, and his feet became rooted to the ground, as if he were an immovable mountain that had become one with the earth.

“Hoh!”

Lin Ming's body flooded with thick true essence. His waist bent, and his body flexed like a bow. Both of his arms suddenly rose, and that several thousand jin cow-beast was sent flying over Lin Ming's head!

With a single move to send that cow monster soaring in the air, Lin Ming's momentum had already reached an extreme. He gave a loud shout and crashed into the center of the pack of enemies. Wielding his spear with both hands, he emanated an epic majesty. The Penetrating Rainbow spear was just like a purple black flood dragon diving in the midst of a billowing sea of pain. Where the flood dragon when, blood would spray, bones would break, and muscles would be torn apart!

Every move of the spear killed at least two enemies!

The Ten Thousand Killing Array unceasingly conjured up new phantasmal enemies; however, the old enemies died even faster!

After a long period passed, there were only 7 or 8 phantom beasts and martial artists that surrounded Lin Ming. Most of these had been swept by a spear, and had their legs broken of spines shattered. They lost nearly all their combat prowess, and would soon be eliminated!

……………………

Outside the Ten Thousand Killing Array, the fourth incense stick had already been lit. Lin Ming was sitting on the altar, looking as indifferent as he did when he started, apparently still not having reached anywhere near his limit.

"The fourth incense stick has lit! During the last Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment, when Lin Ming arrived at the fourth incense stick he had already been weakened. Even so, the speed at which he killed the enemies inside was too fast, and he killed his way to rank 62. Now it's already the fourth incense stick and Lin Ming hasn't even been affected at all. It looks like even persisting to the sixth or seventh incense stick is not a problem! With Lin Ming's increased strength, the speed at which he's killing enemies is absolutely faster than before; he might already have killed them to the point of the array creating Bone Forging stage martial artists! An early Bone Forging stage martial artist is worth 1000 points, I just can't even imagine what Lin Ming's ranking will be like." Bai Jingyun commented as she looked at the incense burning while estimating Lin Ming's current score.

"The Ten Thousand Killing Array 10th place is probably around 8 or 9 thousand points. As long as he can kill 4 or 5 early Bone Forging stage martial artists, in addition to the points he's already accumulated, he could easily enter the top 10 rankings."

To Bai Jingyun, for a 15 year old to enter the top ten rankings, that was an absolutely terrifying result.

As Bai Jingyun spoke, Murong Zi was sitting cross-legged on the grass, propping up her head with both hands under her chin. She looked at Lin Ming as he sat down on the altar, and didn't really have much of a surprised feeling. This was probably because this Lin Ming had created too many miracles lately, and Murong Zi had become immune to whatever amazing things Lin Ming would do. She was just too lazy to be surprised.

In the Ten Thousand Killing Array, Lin Ming was facing Bone Forging stage enemies just like Bai Jingyun had predicted. However, these were not early Bone Forging enemies, but peak Bone Forging enemies!

Bai Jingyun had vastly underestimated the speed at which Lin Ming slaughtered his enemies!

Lin Ming had just entered the early Altering Muscle stage. Facing off against peak Bone Forging enemies, there was more than a stage and half difference between their cultivations!

"Peak Bone Forging?" Lin Ming greedily licked his lips, his eyes flashing with a brilliant fighting spirit. Because of the blood that stained his lips and face, his expression was particularly ferocious.

As the enemies' strength increased, the pressure that Lin Ming felt on him also increased. Lin Ming's strength had already surpassed that of a common peak Bone Forging martial artist. However, in a situation where he was surrounded by a group of enemies that diverted his attention from all angles, to kill someone that was at the peak Bone Forging stage was a much greater level of difficulty.

Peng!

Lin Ming recklessly fought with a peak Bone Forging stage martial artist. This phantom martial artist actually used a rare staff as a weapon. As the staff pounded down, it had a tremendous crushing strength!

Lin Ming brandished the Penetrating Rainbow spear, and struck the other staff.

Sizzling sparks showered the air, and the spear and staff both bent from the formidable impact!

At this time, the advantage of an elastic weapon was revealed. If that staff was not elastic, then with this strike, the martial artist's hand would have gone numb from the intense vibration.

A peak Bone Forging martial artist had astonishing strength, but Lin Ming's strength was even greater!

With the support of the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' and combined with the power of 'Flow like Silk', Li Ming's spear shaft was like the surging tides of the infinite sea. Not only was it formidable, but it also stretched!

The Penetrating Rainbow spear that was bent into a half arc flexed back to its original shape. The peak Bone Forging black armored martial artist was sent flying backwards by Lin Ming.

In contrast, Lin Ming had not even taken half a step back!

Chapter 141 – Extreme Speed

Chapter 141 – Extreme Speed

…

…

…

The Penetrating Rainbow spear that was bent into a half arc flexed back to its original shape. The peak Bone Forging black armored martial artist was sent flying backwards by Lin Ming.

In contrast, Lin Ming had not even taken half a step back!

In normal times, Lin Ming would lunge forwards and stab out his spear with his formidable momentum. Even if his spear could not directly kill the enemy, it would still leave a serious wound.

But now, if Lin Ming just wanted to rush forward, two vicious beasts equivalent to the early Bone Forging stage would immediately be at his right and left, trying to bowl him over and kill him.

“Die!”

Lin Ming cried out, and the Penetrating Rainbow spear fiercely swept outwards. The spear point was filled with true essence as it swept out, and these two vicious beasts’ heads immediately shook with a intense vibrating true essence and then exploded. The two vicious beasts’ heads were like watermelons that burst apart!

Poof! Poof! The two headless corpses fell to the ground, blood erupting like a gushing fountain from their bodies.

Thanks to the vicious beasts delaying for time, the peak Bone Forging martial artist that had been sent flying backwards by Lin Ming was able to recover his breath. He supported himself with his staff, and with the aid of the staff's elasticity, he shot forwards. Both hands grasped the staff and directly pounded down at Lin Ming!

Seeing this staff come at him in the vision of his eyes, Lin Ming's mouth curved in a smile. He flicked the Penetrating Rainbow spear into his hands, and took a leaping step forwards. But in this single step, Lin Ming had reached a terrifying speed!

'Golden Roc Shattering the Void!'

Under Lin Ming's footsteps, distance had already lost its meaning. When the peak Bone Forging martial artist's staff was descending, Lin Ming flickered in front of the Bone Forging martial artist as if he had teleported, and thrusted out his spear!

Puff! The long spear pierced through the peak Bone Forging martial artist's throat!

Even ten thousand moves could be shattered with extreme speed. When one's agility reached the pinnacle, they would have already killed their enemies before the enemy could even react!

The peak Bone Forging martial artist hadn't expected Lin Ming to do this. Lin Ming hadn't yet shown such a horrifying velocity, and the result was that he had died to Lin Ming's spear!

The Penetrating Rainbow spear was like a poisonous snake that was returning to its hole in the ground, and that peak Bone Forging martial artist's throat was such a big, bloody hole.

As the peak Bone Forging martial artist died, the other early Bone Forging stage vicious beasts and martial artists were no match for Lin Ming.

Under Lin Ming's alarming striking power and speed that was like flying ghosts, the Penetrating Rainbow spear was simply a death god's scythe as it harvested the life of these vicious beasts and martial artists. Under Lin Ming's 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void' movement skill, even if these vicious beasts and martial artists attacked, every single one would miss.

After killing several early Bone Forging stage vicious beasts, Lin Ming was able to catch his breath for a brief moment. Then, 5 or 6 phantoms appeared in the dreamland. The majority of these were peak Bone Forging martial artists or vicious beasts, but impressively, there was actually a silver armored martial artist that was at the Pulse Condensation Period!

"A Pulse Condensation Period martial artist. Good, very good! Let me take a look and see just how big the disparity is between the present me and an ordinary Pulse Condensation Period martial artist!"

Seeing the appearance of a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist, Lin Ming's fighting spirit combusted like a raging inferno. He had heard rumors that the limit of Ling Sen's strength was able to compete with a weak Pulse Condensation Period martial artist. But this silver armored martial artist's true essence wasn't as rich; he had apparent just made a breakthrough to the Pulse Condensation Period, and the meridians through his body hadn't yet made a complete connection. This sort of Pulse Condensation Period martial artist was the weakest of all. If Ling Sen were here, he would most likely be able to kill him!

But for Lin Ming to deal with him was just too difficult!

Now, if Lin Ming wanted to, he could take the most sensible approach. He would avoid the Pulse Condensation Period martial artist, and use his great striking power, speed, and 'Flow like Silk' to continuously harvest points from the Bone Forging stage vicious beasts and martial artists.

This was the best way to maximize points. In fact, all the Seven Profound Martial House disciples were the same. If they ran into an enemy they could not deal with, they would use this method.

Zhang Guanyu and Ta Ku were no exception. These two individuals were still unable to kill a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist. At this time, they could only persist as long as they could under the vigilance of this Pulse Condensation Period martial artist and try to kill as many enemies as possible.

Ta Ku relied on his formidable strength. Even in a situation where several Pulse Condensation Period martial artists appeared, he would still be able to find his way in and cleanly slay a Bone Forging stage martial artist! This was why he had always been placed above Zhang Guanyu, and had taken the throne of second rank on the Ranking Stone.

But Ling Ming had no desire to do this. He knew that with the points he had, his position in the top ten was already ironclad. Even if he killed more Bone Forging stage martial artists to rise to a higher rank, what significance would there be in that?

In the past, Lin Ming had to struggle for resources by attaining a higher ranking. But now, Lin Ming was already undergoing the core disciple test, and thus enjoyed benefits no different from being in the top three ranks of the Ranking Stone. Therefore, points to him now were nothing more than clouds in the sky. As long as he entered the top ten ranks and obtained the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, that would be enough.

Constantly dodging the attacks of the Pulse Condensation Period martial artist and killing off the weaker enemies. Like this, his score would be higher, but the number of Pulse Condensation Period martial artists would also gradually increase. Therefore Lin Ming would completely lose the opportunity to kill the Pulse Condensation Period martial artist.

What Lin Ming wanted to know was not how many points he could accumulate, but what the disparity was between him and a normal Pulse Condensation martial artist!

“Die!” Lin Ming did not go to deal with the other enemies. He grasped the Penetrating Rainbow spear, and flew directly at the silver armored warrior!

………………………….

Outside the Ten Thousand Killing Array, the sixth incense stick had already burnt to its end. This result was as many people anticipated. Six incense sticks of time were not too long. The last time Murong Zi had participated in the Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment; she had also persisted four six incense sticks of time, and finally achieved rank 28.

But what everyone knew was that Lin Ming's six incense sticks of time was much different than an averages person's six incense sticks of time. The speed with which he killed his enemies was simply distressing!

"The seventh incense stick just lit. Lin Ming seems to be approaching his limit."

During this time in the Ten Thousand Killing Array, Lin Ming's face became flushed red with blood and his forehead was heavily sweating. Under the diversion of the crowds of Bone Forging stage martial artists, the pressure on him as he was battling the Pulse Condensation Period martial artist could be imagined!

The disparity between a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist and a Bone Forging stage martial artist was enormous, because a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist was able to connect all of their body's meridians. The enemy Lin Ming was facing had just broken through the Pulse Condensation Period, so the meridians hadn't thoroughly opened. But his extreme strength was truly abnormal!

If it was not for the movements of 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void', Lin Ming would have already been surrounded by enemies as he faced the Pulse Condensation Period martial artist, and suffered agonizing defeat.

Even so, with the passage of time, the wounds on Lin Ming's body began to gradually increase. He experienced over a dozen injuries on his body, and had lost a massive amount of blood. There were several deep wounds where even bone could be seen. Even though Lin Ming was able to breathe like bellows, and breathe out a whirlpool, and also had the support of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula', he had already arrived at this limit.

During that time, Lin Ming had pierced that silver armored knight with his spear. Although the spear had penetrated the armor and slightly injured the body, the intense vibrating true essence had passed into the body of the silver-armored knight!

But even though Lin Ming had poured all of his true essence into that strike, he was still only able to make his enemy cough up a mouthful of blood. ‘Flow like Silk’ was able to kill the enemy due to the vibration of true essence. However, the true essence in a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist was simply too thick. It diffused the vibrations to a certain extent as the shock came, and therefore Lin Ming had been unable to kill his enemy in a single strike.

At this time, the seventh incense stick had burnt less than half. In the Ten Thousand Killing Array, Lin Ming let out a stuffy cough and was suddenly drawn back from the dreamland of the Ten Thousand Killing Array.

The assessment has ended!

Lin Ming had eventually failed to kill the Pulse Condensation Period stage martial artist; he only just injured him with his spear.

Although his strength was far inferior, with the support of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’, Lin Ming had been able to last for a good while until his defeat.

While under the attacks and diversions from numerous Bone Forging stage martial artists and vicious beasts, Lin Ming had still been able to injure a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist. Even though this Pulse Condensation Period martial artist was a phantom conjured by the Ten Thousand Killing Array, this result was enough for him to take pride in. If this news spread out, it would create a stir within the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom.

However, after having injured that Pulse Condensation Period martial artist, facing the attacks from so many more Bone Forging stage enemies, Lin Ming had been forced to eliminate several of the Bone Forging martial artist and vicious beasts. The end result was that another Pulse Condensation Period martial artist had appeared, and this one was even stronger than the least. Because of the increased pressure on Lin Ming, he was finally defeated.

Lin Ming stepped down from the altar, and the eyes of everyone had already turned to the Ranking Stone. They wanted to personally see with their eyes, just how high Lin Ming would be arranged.

Lin Ming had numerous fanboys and fangirls. For instance, the many young junior apprentice brother and sister linmaniacs of the Human Hall who fanatically supported and worshipped Lin Ming; they believed that the omnipotent Lin Ming could accomplish anything. But older, sensible disciples who saw reason, they assumed that the reason Lin Ming came today was to warm up, and see how far he was from reaching the top ten rankings.

The Seven Profound Martial House Master had given Lin Ming three months to reach the top ten rankings. This definitely was not some random date that he had set. What kind of person was the Seven Profound Martial House Master? He must have seen Lin Ming's potential, and estimated the speed of his progress, thus he listed out the series of awards.

Three months to reach the top ten; that should be Lin Ming's limits!

Otherwise, if Lin Ming was lax even just a tad, it would be impossible for him to reach the top ten in three months.

"This Lin Ming wants to amaze the world with a single, brilliant feat. Since he dared come today, he must not be too far from the top ten. Even if he cannot enter this month, he should be able to next month." A Heavenly Abode disciple ranked 20th commented as he swung his fan. The more points one had, the slower the calculation on the Ranking Stone would be. Now, several breaths of time had passed, and yet there was not any stir on the Ranking Stone. Lin Ming should be close to the top ten.

"Mm. The Martial House Master's judgment shouldn't be wrong. The fact that he gave Lin Ming three months to advance to the top ten was not some random guess. He must have already seen through Lin Ming's potential, and didn't want to leave anything to accident. Lin Ming should be able to advance to the top ten next month! If so, he might even possibly defeat Zhang Guanyu in the fourth month's match! To defeat Zhang Guanyu in four months, that is simply too fearful. If Junior Apprentice Brother Lin surpasses us this time, I just don't know how I will respond…"

The young man who answered was a Heavenly Abode disciple who was ranked in the top 20. These two friends would soon graduate. They had been fellow disciples for five years, and had entered the Earth Hall together, and then entered the Heavenly Abode together. They were very good lifelong friends. These two people had just passed by, and after learning that Lin Ming was participating in the assessment, came especially to see.

In their view, for Lin Ming to advance to the top ten in three months was already an inconceivable myth, something only heard about in children's bedtime stories.

And now, if he managed to reach the top ten in two months, they really wouldn't be able to find the words to describe such a fantastical situation.

Any talent, genius, monster, evildoer or other adjective, would simply not be enough to describe Lin Ming.

Their eyes were focused on the second row of the Ranking Stone, as they waited for the illusory magic array to calculate the points. The second row was the location where the disciples in the tens were located.

After several more breaths of time, there was finally that trademark rippling distortion on the Ranking Stone. However, this fluctuation actually appeared on one the first row.

The fifth and sixth names were shoved apart by some unseen strength, and Lin Ming's name impressively appeared between them.

Lin Ming, rank 6.

Chapter 142 – Heavy Profound Soft Spear!

Chapter 142 – Heavy Profound Soft Spear!

…

…

…

"Sixth!?"

"Sixth!"

The two top 20 Heavenly Abode disciples said at the same time, surprised.

The Martial House Master had given Lin Ming three months to enter into the top 10 rankings.

But in only two months, he had reached sixth place!

Was this a joke?

Even the two of them, though they were big fans of Lin Ming, didn't think that Lin Ming would reach the top ten. But then to also kill his way to the sixth rank spot!

Even the fanatical young female apprentice of the Human Hall rubbed her eyes, as if there was something wrong with her sight.

The threshold of difficulty for which the Seven Profound Martial House had set the tasks before Lin Ming would receive a reward was difficult beyond imagination. Three months to enter the top ten, four months to defeat Zhang Guanyu, five months to defeat Ta Ku, six months to defeat Ling Sen!

There were even those who believed that this list of rewards was merely someone poking fun at Lin Ming. But the present result was that when it came to Lin Ming, the difficulty that the Seven Profound Martial House had set the rewards at was too low!

To have Lin Ming advance to the top ten in three months?

They were simply looking down on Lin Ming!

Now Lin Ming had only taken two months to arrive at the sixth place rank.

Wasn't this just embarrassing oneself?

Now, it was extremely possible for Lin Ming to defeat Zhang Guanyu!

The only requirement for Lin Ming to be a core disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House was that he reach the peak Altering Muscle stage before he was over 16 years old. Everyone was no longer anxious of this test. This difficulty, was simply too low for Lin Ming!

That is, whether or not Lin Ming could defeat Ta Ku or Ling Sen in the future, he was already destined to be a core disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House and reach the Pulse Condensation Period. He would go to Seven Profound Valleys' main sect for several years, and easily reach the Houtian stage.

Then as long as Lin Ming wished for it, he could return to the Sky Fortune Kingdom and become a Seven Profound Envoy or the Seven Profound Martial House Master. At that time, the Sky Fortune Kingdom would become Lin Ming's garden, and he could do as he pleased.

This made how many people, how many families jealous to the degree of bleeding!

Lin Ming was also so young; he completely had the possibility to step into the Houtian stage before he was 30 years old. Then, he could casually and freely spend his couple hundred years of youth as countless families and major powers tried to flatter and curry favor with him. Innumerable beautiful young girls would want to marry him; even royal princesses, and proud, arrogant women like Bai Jingyun and Murong Zi would be at his beck and call.

Not only was it the beautiful women of now, but those several dozens of years later, or a hundred years later would all be easily obtained. Compared to this, it was even better than being a mortal emperor by hundreds of times. To the majority of the Seven Profound Martial House's male disciples, this was simply the pinnacle of living, the pinnacle of life!

Lin Ming looked at the Ranking Stone and understood why he was able to achieve such a result. The first reason was that he had broken through to the Altering Muscle stage, so his true essence and strength had increased by a large margin. The second reason was that he had comprehended the concept of wind, and had successfully learned the movement ability, 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void'.

In the past, Lin Ming had rarely moved in battle. No matter how aggressive his enemy was or how threatening their killer moves, Lin Ming never escaped!

His fighting method was to completely meet an enemy head on in a battle of toughness. If he is strong, then I am stronger!

In a battle, Lin Ming's aura was motionless like a mountain that had existed since time immemorial, as if he was that passing cable in a torrentially surging river.

After Lin Ming had reached the Large Success stage in his cultivation method, so far the only one who had been able to force him back was Zhu Yan.

The reason for this method of fighting was mainly because of how formidable Lin Ming's strength was, and how vigorous his true essence was. What he excelled most at was meeting an enemy head on, of course, but the other reason was because Lin Ming's speed was just not that fast.

His attack speed was fast enough, but his body speed actually relied upon the 'Foundation Movement Technique'. The 'Foundation Movement Technique' was only the most basic of movement manuals after all. Lin Ming just hadn't placed much time or effort into cultivating this ‘Foundation Movement Technique’, thus Lin Ming’s accomplishments in terms of agility had remained limited.

If he only rushed forwards, then by relying on his physical strength and vigorous true essence, Lin Ming could reach a certain speed. But if he were to move at strange angles, drifting about in erratic movements, then he did not excel in this aspect.

But, the ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’ was able to completely make up for this insufficiency.

Now that he had comprehended the concept of wind, regardless of whether it was linear velocity or how nimble his movements could be, Lin Ming was already far superior to martial artists at the same cultivation. He could even soar to a stop in the air, and then change direction. These movements completely violated the laws of physics in air.

As he was, he had amazing physical strength, and the true essence in his body was astonishingly thick and pure. Meanwhile, he was a martial artist who had the terrifying ability of ‘Flow like Silk’, and the ghostly speed from ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’. What sort of concept was this?

Words were not enough to describe how powerful he was with all these skills together.

“With my strength as it is now, I don’t know how much worse I am than Zhang Guanyu. If I am weaker, just how much weaker am I? I heard that from the fourth rank on, there was extreme disparity between the fourth rank and Zhang Guanyu’s third…”

The fourth rank and third rank on the Ranking Stone were not even close to the same level.

This time, Lin Ming had not been trying to maximize his score. Otherwise, with his ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’ movements, he would have easily been able flit around and kill enemies at the Bone Forging stage, and greatly increase his score. He could have reached the fourth place ranking, and even had the possibility of reaching third!

However, rankings did not mean everything. Even if Lin Ming's rank surpassed Zhang Guanyu, it would not mean anything. It had already been a very long time since Zhang Guanyu last participated in the Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment. According to the Crown Prince's information, Zhang Guanyu currently cultivated the 'Divine Acacia Power', and his strength had experienced a tremendous rise.

"Right now I am inferior to Zhang Guanyu. I don't know how much time it will take to surpass him. The Seven Profound Martial House Master gave me four months to challenge Zhang Guanyu, but I think I will be able to in three!"

Lin Ming didn't consider defeating Zhang Guanyu to be an insurmountable problem.

"Lin Ming, congratulations." Qin Xingxuan said with a smile. She had been standing not too far off from the altar, and watching the changes in the Ranking Stone.

"Not only in the top ten, but also the sixth place ranking, really... really not something I expected." Bai Jingyun said as she also walked over, blinking as she steadily gazed at Lin Ming. She hadn't thought that Lin Ming's growth would be so drastic in such a short time.

However, Murong Zi's state of mind was much better. She distantly glanced at the Ranking Stone, and then looked at Lin Ming as he casually talked to Qin Xingxuan and Bai Jingyun in a friendly manner. She muttered in a low voice, "Farm animals are farm animals, it's impossible to judge a person just by looking at them."

The second round of the Ten Thousand Killing Array carried on as usual. However, no one was actually paying attention to this. If not for some disciples that had already put down a true essence stone as down payment, they wouldn't even have wanted to undergo the assessment.

As the second rounded of the assessment began, an old man wearing a long blue gown walked into the Ten Thousand Killing Array's ashlar square.

The old man appeared silently; many people hadn't even noticed that he was there. It was as if he had always been standing there, and no one had ever noticed him.

Lin Ming suddenly started. This was the first time that he had seen this blue-gowned old man. This person had appeared out of nowhere like a ghost!

Lin Ming unconsciously took a step back. On this old man, Lin Ming realized that his breath was even stronger than Muyi's!

"Greetings, senior." Although he didn't know who this old man was, but to appear in the Seven Profound Martial House at this time, he should be one of the top elders of the Seven Profound Martial House. It was even possible that he was the Seven Profound Martial House Master!

Qin Xingxuan discovered this old man at nearly the same time that Lin Ming did. Seeing this old man, she was slightly surprised, immediately bowing, "Greetings, Martial House Master."

The man laughed and stroked his beard, saying, "Young Child Xingxuan, your words are sweet enough. What Martial House Master am I, I am just a deputy."

The Seven Profound Martial house had a Martial House Master and two Deputy Martial House Masters.

However, Qin Xingxuan was always awkward greeting the Deputy Martial House Masters, so she ended up greeting them as Martial House Master.

Lin Ming's heart was slightly cold. It turned out that this old man was the Seven Profound Martial House's Deputy Master, yet he had managed to acquire peak Houtian stage strength.

If the Deputy House Master had such power, then the Martial House Master was certainly stronger.

However, no matter how strong they were, it would be impossible for them to be a Xiantian stage master. The Martial House Master should also be at the peak Houtian stage. Within those at the peak Houtian stage, there were also those that were weaker and those that were stronger.

As Qin Xingxuan greeted this old man, the disciples present also heard. They hadn't thought that this old man that suddenly came out of nowhere would be the Seven Profound Martial House Deputy Master!

Suddenly, these disciples felt a cascade of emotions at once. They were panicked, flustered, excited, awed, and scared, all at the same time. This was just like when a commoner suddenly saw the arrival of the emperor. They would fear they did not know what the proper etiquette was, but also feel excited and honored to be in his presence. After all, to the common person, the emperor was a legendary character.

To these low-order disciples, the Martial House Master and the Deputy Martial House master were elusive and secretive in their movements; one would feel their presence, but not see them. There were many Heavenly Abode disciples, who in their entire five years at the Seven Profound Martial House, would never catch even a glimpse of the Martial House Master!

"The Deputy House Master personally came!"

"That's the Deputy House Master of the Martial House! He really is a true master, I never even noticed that he appeared."

"Why would the Deputy House Master come here? Would it be to congratulate Lin Ming?"

"I doubt it. But if it's true, this Lin Ming's face is just too great this time. Even if a new emperor ascended the throne, it would be very difficult to ask the Martial House Master to attend the crowning ceremony."

As people were speculating in confusion, at this moment, the old man in blue clothes withdrew an overly long box from his spatial ring. Set upright, this box was even higher than the old man; it was almost 10 feet high.

The box was made from sandalwood. It appeared to be extremely aged, and faintly exuded the scent of rustic wood.

As Lin Ming saw this long box, he had a faint guess in his heart.

Sure enough, when the old man opened the box, revealed inside was a long silk cloth. Between the silk, there was a faint shine of something silver. Without a doubt, this was a spear that was wrapped in the silk!

Heavy Profound Soft Spear!

The old man in blue clothes smiled and said, “Boy, take this spear and have a look.”

Lin Ming took a deep breath, pulled off the silk cloth covering, and took the Heavy Profound Soft Spear in his hand.

As his hand touched the spear shaft, Lin Ming felt an immediate rush of coolness, as if this spear was linking with his flesh and blood.

It had an extremely heavy feeling; the weight had to be above a thousand jins!

The spear was bright silver all around. Even the spearhead was also shiningly silver. The spear’s blade was thin, cold, and strikingly sharp.

The spear shaft was elastic, but to shake it actually required a greater amount of strength than what the Penetrating Rainbow spear required. It was clear that the implicit tension and striking force of the Heavy Profound Soft Spear was much higher than dark purple elastic iron.

Feeling this faintly cool trace of the spear shaft, Lin Ming clearly felt slightly ridged trace lines on the spear shaft. They were just like ripples of water and felt pleasant to the touch.

These kinds of trace marks were not for preventing one’s grip from slipping. Rather, they were from a refiner master who inscribed it upon the barrel of the shaft. These lines had already penetrated into the spear shaft and were similar to an inscription symbol. They had long merged into one organic whole with the spear. Relying on these lines, it enabled one to pour their true essence into the spear and circulate it throughout, finally transforming it into a medium-grade human-step treasure.

Chapter 143 – True Essence Manifestation

Chapter 143 – True Essence Manifestation

…

…

…

"There's no inscription symbol…" Lin Ming thought. He himself was the current most splendid inscription grand master in the Sky Fortune Kingdom. He would have to ponder over what sort of inscription symbol to add to this Heavy Profound Soft Spear, to seek the highest possible promotion of might.

By now, the blue-clothed old man said, "Before the Martial House Master departed, he gave me this spear and told me that as long as you pass the test, this spear would be given to you. This spear was created by the Seven Profound Valleys' Refiner Faction. If it were not because of the inherent limitations of such weapons, it would be at least a high-grade human-step treasure."

Weapons like the spear, staff, and bow all demanded both tenacity and elasticity. They were the most difficult of treasures to create. Although this Heavy Profound Soft Spear was only a medium-grade human-step treasure, in terms of value, it was much more precious and valuable than a common high-grade human-step treasure sword!

As Lin Ming held onto the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, he loved it enough that he was almost unable to put it down.

The blue-clothed old man said, "This Heavy Profound Soft Spear weighs 1200 jins. The spear shaft is 9 feet long and made from heavy profound soft silver, while the spear head is 9 inches and made from cold star steel. The total length of this spear is 9 feet 9 inches.

In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, the shape of a spear and lance were similar. The general belief was that a spear was less than ten feet, and a lance was longer than ten feet. The spear was a weapon usually used in battles by martial artists, but the lance was almost exclusively used by someone riding on a warhorse. Because the lance was too long, it was difficult to display its strength without riding on the back of a horse.

In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, the army provided standard war horses and lances to those in its ranks. The pole of a lance was 10 feet, and the lance point 8 inches, therefore it was known as a 10 foot 8 lance. The lance was once famously used by a tough and valiant general. He had favored the lance, and his strikes would cause the enemies to bleed as if his weapon was a serpent, thus it became known as the 10 foot 8 snake lance.

In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, an average man was 7 feet, and they would have sons that were 7 feet. Of course, there were those that were taller, and might even be 8 feet high or taller.

An 8 foot spear was already the height of a tall martial artist. A 9 foot 9 inch spear was higher than a martial artist by two feet. Using such a long spear, the range of attack would be larger, but the difficulty would also be higher.

Among all the numerals, 9 is the highest. This symbol had been noble and honored since ancient times. A mortal emperor could only be referred to as the royal nine five, but the martial gods of old were actually called the supreme nine nine.

The spear was the king of a hundred soldiers, and a nine foot nine inch spear was the supreme 99 among all other spears. This spear was truly a king among kings. A normal refining master with only a modicum of ability would never dare to rashly refine a 9 foot nine 9 long spear. They would fear their ability was insufficient, and ruin their own destiny.

Even if there were refining masters that were confident in their own refining technique, when creating the spear, they had to quench the flames of its creation with water added with fifth-level ominous beast blood. Only with this sacrifice to the spear would the malignant influences of the spear vanish.

With the Seven Profound Valleys' deep resources and history, they certainly would have used fifth-level vicious beast blood to quench and temper the spear. Not only that, but they would not have used a small amount. In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, 1 tael of this blood was worth more than 30,000 gold taels, and was difficulty to buy. When Lin Ming had been planning to draw his body inscription, he had spent a tremendous amount of effort in order to collect 2 taels of this blood.

"Thank you, Deputy Martial House Master." Lin Ming reverently said as he took the Heavy Profound Soft Spear in both his hands and deeply bowed. This spear was simply too precious, and it was also very important to him.

Seeing Lin Ming receive the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, the other disciples of the Martial House had very keen and eager expressions. Although they did not use a spear, if a martial artist saw a good weapon, they would still be envious.

"Show off a few moves. This old man wants to take a look at your spear technique." The blue-clothed old man wet his lips and chuckled.

"Yes." Lin Ming held the spear in both hands and bowed. He took a step back, and pressed the spear flat against his arm and pointed it outwards. The 1200 jin Heavy Profound Soft Spear was held perfectly level by Lin Ming. With Lin Ming's increased strength, this 1200 jin Heavy Profound Soft Spear was just right.

As he felt the weight of the spear, Lin Ming gave the shaft a fierce shake. The Heavy Profound Soft Spear danced like a silver snake in his hands, and the originally sharp point of the spear head vibrated until it looked like a large illusory pearl.

There was a powerful force contained within the Heavy Profound Soft Spear that was very lethal. If an average person touched this vibrating spear head, they would be sent flying backwards by the vigorous tremors. If this spear point touched certain points like the chest or belly, the ribs would fracture, and there was an extreme possibility that the internal organs would all burst and that person would die a miserable death.

"Good spear!"

Lin Ming sincerely praised the spear, and his left hand pat down on the breech of the shaft. He forcefully held down the vibrating long spear and then took a step back. An imposing momentum erupted around him, and the Heavy Profound Soft Spear thrust out like a bolt of silver lightning.

"Flood Dragon Goes to Sea!"

Cha!

The piercing sound in the air was just as if a sharp knife was running across a glass pane. Rippling waves visible to the naked eye congealed in the air, as if light itself was twisting.

This was because the vibrating true essence that was poured into the spear had no place to vent, so it rushed into the air, causing vibrating sound waves that rapidly spread out.

Boom!

A thunderclap sounded in the air, and a stone pillar 100 feet far from Lin Ming suddenly exploded, stone rubble flying everywhere as the column collapsed into dust and rocks.

But Lin Ming's spear point was 90 feet away from that stone column!

The blue-clothed old man's eyes brightened, "What a good young fellow, that was true essence manifestation!"

True essence manifestation was an ability within the realm of Pulse Condensation Period martial artists!

Martial artists were able to release magnificent and awe-inspiring martial skills; but, this was not true essence manifestation. True essence manifestation referred to when a martial artist casually attacked, and was able to realize true essence and condense it into reality. Like so, every free strike they made would be comparable to a martial skill from an ordinary martial artist.

The requirement for this was that a martial artist’s true essence must be incomparably thick. Usually, only a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist could achieve true essence that dense.

But the current Lin Ming had only just entered the early Altering Muscle stage; how could that blue-clothed old man not be startled?

It was not only the blue-clothed old man, but also the two elders, Elder Sun and Elder Xu, Qin Xingxuan, and some other master talents present that had noticed Lin Ming’s true essence manifestation.

To Qin Xingxuan, this ability of Lin Ming’s to manifest true essence was much more surprising than him obtained the sixth place rank on the Ranking Stone. Qin Xingxuan found it hard to imagine that an early Altering Muscle stage martial artist could reach the boundary where he could manifest true essence. She was already at the Bone Forging stage, yet she did not yet have that ability.

“What the hell is Lin Ming cultivating? Is this ethereal martial intent really that godly?”

The other disciples had not been able to see the mysterious principles within Lin Ming’s spear strike, but this did not hinder them from exclaiming in surprise at the spear’s excessive vigor.

“Spear wind, that was definitely spear wind!”

“No, that was certainly the legendary spear light!”

“What do you know? That was what ancients called spear-fu!”

The lower-order disciples didn’t know much about the theories of spear wind, spear light, sword wind, sword light, and were somewhat vague on the other speculations. They only knew that Lin Ming’s strike was truly fierce.

With a single thrust of Lin Ming's spear, he had been able to shatter a stone column. Though this was an unintentional move, he was still incomparably excited.

After Lin Ming had broken through to the Altering Muscle stage, he had reached the boundary of true essence manifestation. But he hadn't been able to use this to fight his enemies. However, now with the medium-grade human-step treasure, for the first time Lin Ming was able to release his true essence. Even without touching, he could still attack his enemy.

Relying on true essence to create a ranged attack was not difficult. Normally, a martial artist could do this once they cultivated a martial skill. Lin Ming hadn't yet studied any martial skills, but now, as long as his true essence reserves were enough, he could actually strike out with a force tantamount to a martial skill!

Lin Ming wasn't satisfied with just a single spear move. When his true essence poured into the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, it had the feeling of a fish swimming in water, and let Lin Ming feel incomparably comfortable.

At this time, the aura around Lin Ming's body bloomed once again. He received his spear, gripped it in his right hand and fiercely thrust out a dozen times. He turned and stabbed, 'Flowers in the Storm'!

'Flowers in the Storm' was another move within the 'Foundation Spear Technique'. The strikes of the spear were like a hail of petals, without a single opening, where not even water could enter!

The spear shadow became blurry, and a keening whistle was produced from the terrifying speed of the spear. In the surroundings of the spear shadow, there were ripples once again visible to the naked eye. Anything that this high speed vibrating shockwave touched was torn into shreds!

Lin Ming stabbed out hundreds of times, and finally vented the powerful momentum that he had gathered a moment ago. As he took back the silver spear, Lin Ming's mind was filled with a great happiness. The strength of this medium-grade human-step treasure was truly outstanding!

If he added an inscription symbol on top of that, the might of the spear would increase by nearly 50%!

Lin Ming already couldn’t wait to battle Zhang Guanyu!

……………………..

The news of Lin Ming reaching the sixth place in the Ten Thousand Killing Array was like a massive bomb that exploded throughout Sky Fortune City. In merely one day, it had spread to every nook and cranny of the land.

Three months to enter the top ten ranks of the Ranking Stone, four months to defeat Zhang Guanyu, five months to defeat Ta Ku, and six months to defeat Ling Sen.

To everyone, this series of tests was as difficult as ascending to heaven! But now, Lin Ming had only used two months to complete the first task. Not only that, but he had eclipsed it – Ranking Stone, sixth place!

Did this mean that after four months he could defeat Zhang Guanyu, and then defeat Ta Ku in the fifth month?

And six months later, subsequently challenge Ling Sen?

Zhang Guanyu and Ta Ku did not count for much, But Ling Sen had already been recognized throughout Sky Fortune Kingdom as being invincible within his stage; it could even be said that he was the top martial artist of those below the Pulse Condensation Period.

He was only a half-step into the Bone Forging stage, and yet he had strength that was comparable to Pulse Condensation Period martial artists. If Lin Ming defeated Ling Sen, then he would have shattered Ling Sen’s legend of being invincible within his stage, and his individual strength would be comparable to a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist!

For someone with cultivation at the Altering Muscle stage to have the strength of a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist, it was terrifying. Not only that, but Lin Ming was so young, and his cultivation speed was completely abnormal.

How many years would he need to break into the Bone Forging stage, or the Pulse Condensation Period?

When Lin Ming reached the Pulse Condensation Period, could he defeat a Houtian master, and seize the throne of being the top martial artist within the Sky Fortune Kingdom?

Like this, could Lin Ming reach the Houtian stage, or even the peak Houtian stage?

With Lin Ming's cultivation speed, to reach the Houtian stage before he was 30 would not be difficult!

If he were to reach the peak Houtian stage, would he be able to compare to a Xiantian master?

Thinking of this, many people did not dare to presume any further. To them, a Xiantian master was simply a fable that existed only in legends.

Even in the Seven Profound Valleys where masters and powerhouses lurked everywhere, a Xiantian stage master had a pivotal status!

Regardless of if they were a Seven Profound Envoy or a Martial House Master, they would only be at the peak Houtian stage.

Although their status was higher than the emperor of Sky Fortune Kingdom, they still had to give some respect to the emperor. When they were issuing a decree, they also had to mind their tone.

But a Xiantian master was different. They were able to directly discard the emperor, and even set up a new emperor in place of the old!

If one did not obey their orders?

They would kill their way into the Royal Palace at night, and take the emperor’s severed head!

Who would dare to stop a Xiantian master?

Even if everyone knew perfectly well who it was that killed the emperor, who would have the ability to investigate?

Chapter 144 – Ouyang Dihua

Chapter 144 – Ouyang Dihua

…

…

…

To put it in layman's terms, A Xiantian master was an existence that completely upset the natural balance. If a country had a Xiantian master, then the neighboring countries would have no courage to go to against this country. If it really came down to war, then one the very first day the generals of all the armies would die silently in their camps, and on the second day the emperor would also die in his Royal Palace. How could they continue fighting at this point?

If Lin Ming someday had strength that could compare to a Xiantian master, then he would essentially dominate all of Sky Fortune Kingdom; everything would be under his control!

As the news that Lin Ming obtained sixth place on the Ranking Stone continued to spread, the Crown Prince was one of the first to hear of Lin Ming's situation via a sound transmitting talisman.

The Crown Prince was pleasantly surprised by Lin Ming's results. He thought again, with Lin Ming as he was now, it was becoming more and more likely that he could defeat Zhang Guanyu in the fourth month. With Zhang Guanyu's personality, how would he reconcile with this truth?

The Seven Profound Martial House was similar to a beast cage. All talents were gathered, just like those trainers that would find those beasts with good bodies and trap them in a cage, feed them good meat and water, and finally let them slaughter each other to select the final king of beasts.

Now, the Martial House Master had given Lin Ming 4 months to defeat Zhang Guanyu as a target goal; this was equal to turning Zhang Guanyu into Lin Ming's grindstone.

If Zhang Guanyu was indifferent, or was some particularly tenacious warrior who would become braver when pressured, and could accept their defeat, then even at the worst it would not be a major problem.

But Zhang Guanyu's personality was demented and paranoid. He would not easily accept his defeat, and the ripples from that fight would be especially alarming.

What dark methods would Zhang Guanyu adopt?

Yang Lin frowned as he thought this. Lan Yunyue was in his mansion, so he was able to guarantee her safety, and Lin Ming's parents in Mulberry City were under layer upon layer of heavy protection, so there shouldn't be a problem there either.

As for Lin Ming, Zhang Guanyu would not dare move against him.

So what could Zhang Guanyu do?

……………………………………………………

Now, at the Allied Trade Association. ——-

Zhang Guanyu had a very gloomy expression as he reclined against a couch. At this side were two beautifully dressed maids standing beside him in fear and trepidation.

When Lin Ming had gone to the Ten Thousand Killing Array for the assessment, Zhang Guanyu was one of the first to receive the news. He could easily have rushed over to see Lin Ming's assessment, but he was not even a cent interested in seeing Lin Ming show off in front of everyone.

When Lin Ming had finished the assessment, Zhang Guanyu was also one of the first to receive a sound transmitting talisman with the results.

Only two months, and he had reached the sixth rank of the Ten Thousand Killing Array!

This result caused Zhang Guanyu to feel uneasy. Although the first 3 ranks on the Ranking stone were far away enough from the fourth that they couldn't even be considered in the same category, and Zhang Guanyu's strength had also progressed considerably recently, the speed at which Lin Ming was progressing was simply too horrifying. If another two months passed, would even the heavens know how much he progressed?

Now Zhang Guanyu had the feeling of having ridden the back of dangerous tiger; he could no longer back down.

"Young Master… are you looking for me?" Zhang Guanyu turned to see a middle-aged man at the Viscera Training stage walk into the room.

The middle-aged man bowed. He had also heard the news about Lin Ming reaching the sixth rank. Concerning this result, he could only sigh. Two months ago he had disapproved when Zhang Guanyu had gone to provoke Lin Ming, but it was not his place to order Zhang Guanyu on how to handle his affairs.

Now that he had already offended Lin Ming, it was too late to turn back the hand of time, but also with Zhang Guanyu's character, he definitely would not rescind his hand.

'If the young master continues along this path and doesn't change his nature, then I am afraid there will be future trouble concerning Young Master's status as the successor of the Allied Trade Association. It will not be good fortune for the young master… the elder will not choose a man with an extreme character to stand at the helm of the Trade Association.'

The middle-aged man silently shook his head; he dared not speak this thought out loud.

Zhang Guanyu sat as he was, looking increasingly dreary and not saying a single word. Zhang Guanyu of course understood what type of person was suitable to be the future heir of the Allied Trade Association, but after having cultivated the ‘Divine Acacia Power’, Zhang Guanyu no longer cared for this vaunted position. What he pursued was eternal youth and infinite Yang essence. The status as chief of the Allied Trade Association was simply riddled with mundane problems, and would affect his cultivation.

After a period of silence, Zhang Guanyu finally said, “Help me contact the Cloud Prince and the Seven Profound Valleys’ Ouyang Dihua. I must seem them.”

“The Cloud Prince and Ouyang Dihua?” The middle aged man was surprised. He understood that Zhang Guanyu was seeking a helping hand, and that the Cloud Prince was undoubtedly Lin Ming’s enemy and that an enemy of an enemy was a friend. But since ancient times, when it involved the struggle for the throne, the Allied Trade Association had always maintained their complete and utter neutrality. They would not favor any party. But this time, Zhang Guanyu actually wanted to reverse this tradition and take the side of the Tenth Prince.

As for Ouyang Dihua, this person was the direct disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys’ Acacia Faction’s third elder: Ouyang Boyan.

In fact, Ouyang Dihua’s talent wasn’t regarded as outstanding among the disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys. He had entered the Pulse Condensation Period at the age of 22, and had now been there for two years, but still had not been able to reach the peak Pulse Condensation Period.

The reason he could be a direct disciple was mainly because he was the nephew of the third elder, Ouyang Boyan. Because of his identity, let alone the emperors of various countries, even the Seven Profound Envoys and Martial House Masters had to greet Ouyang Dihua with several points of respect.

These years, Ouyang Dihua had been cultivating the ‘Divine Acacia Power’. Because of this, he had left the Seven Profound Valleys and gone to ‘experience’ the neighboring countries. The truth was this ‘experience’ was in fact seeking the beautiful women in these countries.

Ouyang Dihua had a wide and experienced palate, however, what he was most interested in were two kinds. The first kind was the young daughters of large, respected families. These girls had an outstanding temperament and a great inner pride. What Ouyang Dihua liked the most was to rip of the clothes of these women and turn these originally pure and holy girls into the basest of sluts. The second kind was the daughters of wealthy families. These girls were pure and lovely, and were like a breath of fresh air. Ouyang Dihua very much enjoyed the vaguely virgin sweet fragrance of their bodies.

The Allied Trade Association where Zhang Guanyu was at had many old dealings with the third elder Ouyang Boyan of the Seven Profound Valleys' Acacia Faction. The reason that Zhang Guanyu was able to cultivate the 'Divine Acacia Power' was because he had obtained it from Ouyang Boyan. Of course, the Allied Trade Association had paid a steep price for this.

…………………

Five days later, 30,000 miles from the Sky Fortune Kingdom, at the Heavenly Wind Nation's capital's palace –

Zhang Guanyu stood in a hall, hands relaxed, without single ounce of arrogance on his face. In front of him was a 20 something year old man lazily reclining on a bed, holding a jade-like beauty in his arm.

Wrapped in blankets, the man occasionally moved, and parts of the blanket would uncover, revealing an indecent scene. Obviously, the woman was stripped naked under the blankets.

"Zhang Guanyu, be honest, for what matter did you come here today to ask for help?" This man was Ouyang Dihua. He had lived these past few days in the Heavenly Wind Nation, enjoying the beautiful women while also attempting to break through to the Perfect stage of the 'Divine Acacia Power's' third layer.

Zhang Guanyu found that Ouyang Dihua was staying at the Heavenly Wind Nation, so he borrowed the Allied Trade Association's heavenly wind eagle and spent the last 5 days crossing the 30,000 mile distance to personally visit Ouyang Dihua.

Zhang Guanyu withdrew a painting scroll from his spatial ring and respectfully handed it to the man, who opened it and looked at it. It was a drawing of a beautiful woman, aged around 15 or 16. She had an extremely fresh appearance, and rarest of all, her body exhibited a very faint pure and noble mixed temperament, making one wish to immediately make her their own.

The girl on this painting was Lan Yunyue.

"Good!"

Ouyang Dihua's eyes lit up. What he liked most were the princess types and the pure daughter types of wealthy families, but the woman in this painting seemed to have the makings of both at the same time.

"Where is she?" Ouyang Dihua cut straight to the chase.

Zhang Guanyu hesitated slightly, and then truthfully said, "In the Sky Fortune Kingdom's Crown Prince's palace."

Ouyang Dihua was momentarily stunned, and then he immediately laughed and said, "Zhang Guanyu, has the Crown Prince of Sky Fortune Kingdom offended you? This girl is the Crown Prince's concubine? You want to borrow my hand to defeat the Crown Prince? Although I do not fear some little Crown Prince, do not think that I am someone who will unknowingly act as a proxy weapon for your own interests. And if this girl has has already been received by the Crown Prince as a concubine, then I do not have much interest."

Zhang Guanyu said, "Young Sir has misunderstood; this girl's virginity is absolutely intact. Moreover, this girl was born on a Yin year and Yin month. Before this, I already sent my men to look for 12 Pure Yin girls to help Young Sir Ouyang break through to the fourth layer of the 'Divine Acacia Power'. This girl is a superior third-grade talent, she will happen to make an excellent ‘primer’ of the 12 Pure Yin girls. Now there has already been a small harvest of the 12 Pure Yin girls that I am looking for.”

“Oh?” Ouyang Dihua grew interested, “12 Pure Yin girls… heh, you are quite determined.”

The way Sky Spill Continent calculated dates was by the union of celestial stems and earthly branches. There were 10 heavenly stems and 12 earthly branches. The odd were Yang, and the even were Yin, both respectively occupying one half. Therefore, there were many Yin year Yin month girls that were born. Lan Yunyue happened to be one of them.

However, it was actually quite difficult to collect 12 Pure Yin girls. The first girl, or the ‘primer’, had to be the best looking. However, the following girls all followed the ‘lead’ of the first girl’s horoscope, and required the calculation of their birth horoscope. The result was it became increasingly difficult to find them.

Moreover, these girls also had to be above a third-grade talent. The number of third-grade talents in the population was only a mere 1%; this already excluded the vast majority of women.

Finally, the 12 Pure Yin girls all had to be beautiful women below the age of 20, and also had to have the body of a virgin.

To cultivate martial arts, one’s spirit had to be joyful and unobstructed. If the girl’s appearance was too ugly, then those martial arts cultivators would not be moved. How could they possibly depend on these ugly girls to break through their cultivation bottleneck?

To be at least a third-grade talent, below 20 years old, a beauty, virgin, and more and more harsh horoscope requirements, this caused the gathering of 12 Pure Ying girls to be very difficult to find.

There were some Acacia Faction disciples who had attempted to collect 12 Pure Yin girls. They spent several years looking, and finally found them with great difficulty. However, the first girl’s age would have already surpassed 20 years.

However, in terms of looking for 12 Pure Yin girls, the Allied Trade Association had an unmatched superior advantage. This was because the Allied Trade Association was involved in almost all areas of business, and one of their biggest ones was the slave trade.

In the Sky Spill Continent, slave trading was a common occurrence. There were many poor families that had children they could not raise, so they would sell these children, who would eventually become something like a maid, concubine, servant, eunuch, and other occupations. During times of war, the massive numbers of captives and refugees were often turned into servants and slaves.

Chapter 145 – Heretical God Seed

Chapter 145 – Heretical God Seed

….

….

…

The Allied Trade Association was responsible for the slave trade of several nations. Since they could choose from so many young girls, it was relatively easy to collect 12 Pure Yin girls.

Before, the Allied Trade Association had spent many years and finally collected two sets of 12 Pure Yin girls, 24 altogether. These 24 girls were given to the Acacia Faction's third elder, Ouyang Boyan. This was the reason that Ouyang Boyan had traded away the secret cultivation method 'Divine Acacia Power'.

'12 Pure Yin girls, how many have you found?" Ouyang Dihua's heart moved. If he could pick up 12 Pure Yin girls, he strength would take a great step further.

"I've already found 6." Zhang Guanyu nonsensically said. In fact, it was just the other day that he had determined Lan Yunyue could be a 'primer'. To find 11 other girls based on Lan Yunyue's horoscope while conforming to a list of other conditions was easier said than done.

The order had just been passed out. He estimated that there were only 1 or 2 girls that were found so far. The first girls were the easiest; unfortunately, those behind them were much harder to find.

"Six? Humph, well, I do not care if it's true or not. A year later, I want to see the complete set of 12 Pure Yin girls. I do not need their appearance and talent to be higher than this woman in the painting, but they cannot be too bad!"

With Lan Yunyue's beautiful appearance and superior third grade talent combined, in the civilian population, she was absolutely one in a million. To collect 12 girls of such high quality, and also conform to the horoscope, was simply impossible. Therefore Ouyang Dihua could only reduce the requirements.

"Young Sir, please feel relieved. I only have a small favor to ask."

"Mm. Speak." Ouyang Dihua already expected that the reason Zhang Guanyu came today was to ask him to handle some matters. Otherwise, why would he help him collect 12 Pure Yin girls for no reason at all? This search was a massive undertaking in terms of manpower and resources.

"I would like to become a secret disciple of Elder Ouyang. I also hope for Young Sir to put in a few good words for me."

"A secret disciple…" Ouyang Dihua slightly hesitated. Zhang Guanyu's talent was just above fifth-grade; there was still a disparity in qualifications to become a secret disciple of a Seven Profound Valleys' elder.

Thinking this, Ouyang Dihua said, "My uncle is in seclusion. One he comes out in a month, I will take you to see him. As to whether or not he decides to take you, it is all up to his decision."

Zhang Guanyu was delighted in his heart. He said, "Thank you, thank you!"

"Don't rush to be happy. I can clearly discern what gratitude and grudges are. Since I've received your gift, then if you have troubles, I might be able to help you. As to whether or not my uncle will teach you a high-level cultivation method, that's not something I can control."

"I understand. If it is convenient for Young Sir, perhaps Young Sir would like to ride together with me on the Heavenly Wind Eagle to Sky Fortune Kingdom, and take a look at whether there are any women that conform to Young Sir's standards. Young Sir will definitely find it possible to stay in the Sky Fortune Kingdom and find women to cultivate with. I will help gather them up, and can absolutely guarantee satisfaction.”

Ouyang Dihua’s eyes shined. Going to Sky Fortune Kingdom would be quite good. He had already bored himself with the Heavenly Wind Nation. It was time to sample a different taste.

And, he just so happened to remember that there was a superior fourth-grade talent who he had noticed in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, a young girl whose last name was Bai. On this trip, he might as well collect her too. Thinking this, Ouyang Dihua obscenely smiled and said, “Good, then I’ll go with you on this trip.”

As soon as he obtained Ouyang Dihua’s affirmation, Zhang Guanyu grinned, savagely smiling.

‘Lin Ming, Lin Ming, let’s see how you will manage this! No matter how fierce you are, compared to you, I have the support of Ouyang Dihua! Do you also have the ability to deal with him!? I’ll have a look when you try to rebel against Ouyang Dihua, and are stamped to death beneath his boot!’

‘Win against me in four months? Then I will force the date of that decisive battle to three months. I will use the ‘Life Severing Death Bone Blade’ to ruin your vitality and make you permanently disabled. I wonder how you will maintain the myth of your talent then!’

…………………

“Mm? Emperor’s banquet?”

Lin Ming had just received the Crown Prince’s sound transmitting talisman. Ten days later at the Imperial Palace, there would be a grand banquet held, and there were even some important personages of the Seven Profound Valleys that would be attending. The Crown Prince wanted Lin Ming to attend by all means.

“Important figures of the Seven Profound Valleys…” Lin Ming pondered. He had never seen someone from the Seven Profound Valleys before.

Although he did not really like such flashy events like banquets, Lin Ming would certainly become a core disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House soon. Since an important figure from the Seven Profound Valleys came, he was inclined to participate.

It was not only Lin Ming, but all the strong youths of the younger generation in Sky Fortune City had received an invitation, including Qin Xingxuan, Bai Jingyun, Murong Zi, Ling Sen, Ta Ku, as well as the rest of the Seven Profound Martial House core disciples and so on.

The entire Sky Fortune City had been undergoing a mass cleaning. The streets were cleaned, the drains were emptied, the gardens pruned, and colored ribbons were hung along the streets of the main road.

Lin Ming was immersed in practice so he did not know, but those who hated him would aim for him at this grand banquet.

At this time, the bright moon was high and clear in the night sky. Lin Ming held the Heavy Profound Soft Spear in one hand, keeping the spear parallel to his arm and pressed against his elbow. The 9 foot 9 inch, 1200 jin Heavy Profound Soft Spear was steadily kept horizontal as it was held by Lin Ming. A bowl of water was lying flat on the spear point, with no trace of a ripple.

This stance was one that Lin Ming had practiced countless times before. The ‘Foundation Spear Technique’s’ ‘Iron Bridge Blocks the River’.

Lin Ming kept his eyes closed. The tiny units in his body began to adjust to a strange frequency, and all the innermost feelings in his heart were completely ‘ethereal’. He did not have the least bit of distracting thoughts; to an onlooker, he was simply like a motionless rock under the moonlit sky.

The night winds blew, and the grass undulated like overlapping waves. A bean-sized green firefly quietly landed on the edge of the bowl on the spear point, and began to drink from that bowl of water. It could be seen that not a single ripple spread in it.

Then, Lin Ming slowly opened his eyes.

In these five days, he had already completely fused as one with the Heavy Profound Soft Spear. Extending the spear was the same as moving his arm. Even if a tiny bug fell on it, he could clearly feel it.

The bug was oblivious as it continued to drink water. After drinking enough, it flapped its wings and flew away. Lin Ming returned to his ethereal martial intent state and began revolving the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ again.

Lin Ming was becoming increasingly skilled at the ethereal martial intent state. Now he could enter at any time and wake up at any time. It wasn’t like before where, once he entered the ethereal martial intent state, he would not know what hour it was.

Slowly, the circulation speed of the true essence in Lin Ming’s body began to pick up. Each time true essence circulated past the heart, there would always be a little bit of true essence that silently stayed there, detained.

As true essence began to accumulate there, it gradually began to revolve. Slowly, a true essence crystal the size of a grain congealed in that maelstrom of true essence.

Because of the formation of this tiny crystal, the flow of true essence sped up, and there was a faint feeling of approaching the peak of the second layer of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’.

“Large Success of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formulas’ second layer!”

With the upgrade of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’, Lin Ming’s muscles and skeleton began to slowly start vibrating. The countless tiny units in his body began to achieve an extraordinary harmonization.

Although Lin Ming had already cultivated ‘Flow like Silk’, it had never been like was right now. He had a completely clear feeling of his true essence being turned into filaments, and he could even perceive the specific number of filaments!

“There are a full 5000 true essence filaments…”

This number appeared in Lin Ming’s mind. His ‘Flow like Silk’ was at the foundation stage, and his true essence was able to be divided into 5000 true essence filaments. If these 5000 true essence filaments pierced into a rock, in theory, it could cause 5000 points of destruction. If all those points were destroyed, the rock would be broken into several thousand pieces. If the target was a person, they would truly meet a cruel death.

Although the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ had further advanced along with his ‘Flow like Silk’, Lin Ming still maintained a state of neither being happy nor sad. The small true essence crystal in his heart began to unceasingly condense, and from its original rough and irregular shape, it began to slowly round, until it eventually condensed into a small, pearl-like crystal pellet.

“This is the Heretical God Force’s ‘seed.’”

Lin Ming knew that the series of changes in his body just now were all because of the formation of this Heretical God Seed.

The Heretical God Seed was the foundation of the ‘Heretical God Force’.

The ‘Heretical God Force’ was the most precious and mysterious secret technique in the memories of that second soul fragment. Even the powerhouses in the Realm of the Gods thought that it was an incomparably amazing skill, obviously it was that powerful.

The first layer of the ‘Heretical God Force’ could enhance one’s strength and true essence force by 50%. The second layer could enhance by 100%, the third layer by 150%, and so on until the sixth layer, where it could enhance a martial artist’s strength and true essence force by 300%.

This kind of enhancement depended on the compression of true essence.

To promote one's power by 50%, one had to compress their true essence by 50%. To promote one's power by 100%, one had to compress their true essence by 100%.

And this true essence compression, precisely relied upon this Heretical God Seed.

As long as the Heretical God Seed existed, if the compressed true essence was used up, it would automatically build up by itself; Lin Ming did not need to manage it.

Lin Ming had inadvertently spent a long time in the ethereal martial intent state, and now, finally, he had planted this seed of the 'Heretical God Force' into his heart.

Before a martial artist achieved the Pulse Condensation Period, their blood and vitality were the foundation, and the heart, which was at center of all this, was the main weakness.

But after achieving the Pulse Condensation Period, the meridians were the foundation, and the Dantian was the center of this, so that also became a weakness.

Lin Ming's 'Heretical God Force' seed now existed in his heart. After he broke through to the Pulse Condensation Period, this seed would move to his Dantian.

After the 'Heretical God Force' had broken through to the first layer, Lin Ming put away the Heavy Profound Soft Spear. He placed one hand between his eyebrows, and the other gently pressed into his Dantian, and then spat out a long breath.

This breath was the same as an arrow flying out. It created a whirlpool in the air that rotated for several breaths of time before finally slowly dissipating.

"I didn't think that this breakthrough of the 'Heretical God Force' would have so many unexpected benefits for me… it seems this 'Heretical God Force' is not only a mystic technique that increases one's power, but it is also helpful for martial arts cultivation! The Heretical God Seed that is in my heart is conducive to stabilizing the blood and compacting true essence.

Lin Ming was a bit surprised, but he also felt quite relaxed about this. After all, this could be regarded as one of the top secret abilities even within the Realm of the Gods; how could it not have some special effects.

Chapter 146 – Sorrowful Bai Jingyun

Chapter 146 – Sorrowful Bai Jingyun

…

…

…

"The 'True Primal Chaos Formula' has reached the Large Success stage of the second layer, 'Flow like Silk' has split into 5000 filaments, and the cultivation of my early Altering Muscle stage has been greatly consolidated. It's about time that I finally drew up the 'Strife Seal'."

The two body inscription symbols that Lin Ming had chosen were the 'Essence Gathering Symbol' and the 'Strife Seal'. The former was able to speed up one's cultivation by increasing the rate one gathered true essence at, and the latter was able to enhance one's strength.

He had already successfully drawn up the 'Essence Gathering Symbol'. At that time, he was only at the peak Viscera Training stage. To draw up that 'Essence Gathering Symbol' he had overtaxed his soul force and true essence, causing himself to fall into a deep slumber for three days and three nights. For safety purposes, he had put aside the 'Strife Seal' for the moment. But now, his cultivation had already stabilized at the Altering Muscle stage. In addition to his 'True Primal Chaos Formula' reaching Large Success of the second layer, it would be much easier to draw up the 'Strife Seal' when compared to before.

Lin Ming placed the Heavy Profound Soft Spear in this spatial ring, closed the door to his cabin and hung up a 'Do Not Disturb' plaque. After that, he lay in bed and fell into a deep sleep for several hours until dawn. Lin Ming rose from bed, washed himself, ate a meal and also drank some water.

Then he sat for a period, drinking tea, before he stood up and washed his hands, burned incense, bathed, and eliminated all the distracting thoughts in his heart. He let his mind become completely ‘ethereal’, while adjusting his mindset to its optimum condition.

The creation of this inscriptions symbol was very important to Lin Ming. The materials used to draw up the ‘Strife Seal’ were more precious than those used in drawing up the ‘Essence Gathering Symbol’. Because several materials were exceedingly hard to find, Lin Ming was not able to prepare any backups. Thus, he could not allow any room for failure. A single mistake here would be the end of it all.

Lin Ming used half an hour to adjust his condition, and then he finally began to draw up the ‘Strife Seal’.

This one drawing of an inscription symbol lasted from morning to evening. Throughout, Lin Ming did not make a single error. Not only did the ethereal martial intent state have a remarkable effect on cultivation, but it was similarly effective when drawing up an inscription symbol. Because he was able to remain fully in the ethereal state, his heart did not have even the slightest distraction, so Lin Ming was able to constantly maintain the highest degree of concentration.

When an average person excessively consumed their soul force, they would experience a dizzying vertigo, and a desire to fall asleep. In Lin Ming’s case, he was still able to maintain his best condition.

As the setting sun descended across the mountain horizon, Lin Ming had finally drawn the last symbols and lines. In the air, several shining inscription symbols glowed like a crimson sunset of nirvana. They began to slowly blend together into one, and in that moment, it was surpassingly gorgeous.

After half an incense stick of time, the inscription symbol finally completely fused, and the ‘Strife Seal’ symbol turned into a stream of light that quickly submerged into the back of Lin Ming’s hand. It ultimately condensed into a runic image of a flying dragon and phoenix.

Normally, an inscription symbol's runic mark would give a sense of an ancient mystery. However, this 'Strife Seal' mark was more similar to calligraphy. It vaguely appeared like the archaic character for 'fight', and each stroke was long and thorough, and seemed to have a faintly sharp imposing momentum, just like a long spear.

In drawing up the 'Strife Seal', Lin Ming had consumed an enormous amount of resources. His true essence was still abundant, but his soul force was taxed beyond its limit. He managed to drink down some water, and went straight to sleep.

This slumber lasted for one day and one night.

After waking, Lin Ming's tummy rumbled. He was very hungry and there was a sharp aching pain in his head.

After he ate a meal, he sat in meditation. Lin Ming did not continue cultivating, but instead went to the Seven Profound Martial House's strength measuring room.

The role of the 'Strike Seal' was simple. It was to directly improve the physical strength true essence force of a martial artist, and thus heighten their combat prowess. Lin Ming wanted to see just how much this 'Strife Seal' increased his fighting strength.

As he chose a corner of the strength measuring room to measure his strength, he approached the stone column and took a deep breath. His whole body started to flood with true essence, and true essence rushed into his right hand. The 'Strife Seal' began to issue a faint red light, as if the circulating blood underneath was visible.

"Hoh!"

Lin Ming cried out and let loose a punch. There was a dull thumping noise, as if the stone column was struck by an iron hammer, and continued to tremble crazily!

The light beam was like a fountain as it rushed up. It unexpectedly rushed to the height of a person. The final result, 7200 jins.

7200 jins!

Lin Ming's eyes brightened as he saw this result. This had already far exceed Ling Sen's casual strike.

Ling Sen had once hit a random punch with a result of 4900 jins. Even if at that time he had only used some of his strength, Ling Sen's full force should be no more than 6100 jins. Lin Ming's result was more than 1000 jins above this!

When a martial artist arrived at the peak Pulse Condensation Period, their fist strength would be around 8000 jins. There were a minority of those who had inborn divine strength, whose fist strength might reach 10,000 jins.

With Lin Ming's 7200 jins of fist strength, he was already close to the strength of a peak Pulse Condensation Period martial artist.

He had successfully completed the 'Strife Seal' and the 'Essence Gathering Symbol', reached the 'True Primal Chaos Formula's' Large Success of the second layer, comprehended the concept of wind, broken through to the Altering Muscle stage, and also had successfully condensed the Heretical God Seed.

As for the 'Pulse Cutting Palm', it was simple enough. It was originally not a powerful martial art, and Lin Ming had already mastered it.

He had completed most everything he had needed and it had only been two months since the core disciple test had begun.

There was plenty of time.

Lin Ming took a deep breath, and was filled with confidence. Compared to the last time he had participated in the Ten Thousand Killing Array, he now had the 'Strife Seal', Heavy Profound Soft Spear, 'Heretical God Force', and had furthered his cultivation of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' and 'Flow like Silk'.

Even if he faced Zhang Guanyu now, Lin Ming had a tremendous assurance that he would win.

"Once I defeat Zhang Guanyu, I can obtain a 500 year old Blood Lingzhi. It will be very beneficial to my vitality. This Zhang Guanyu is a sinister and deceitful person, I have no idea what sort of malicious plot he will try to conjure to deal with me. It's best if I challenge him earlier and waste him to avoid further complications."

………………………

Time flew. In a moment, it was already the day of the Imperial Palace's grand banquet.

The entire Imperial Palace was decorated in a festive occasion, bright and merry. The Palace security had increased, and it was heavily guarded. On the main road to the Imperial Palace, there was a red carpet hundreds of meters long. There were beautiful maids that had undergone careful screening that walked around, offering a variety of cuisines to the guests.

Today, those that arrived were prominent figures in Sky Fortune City. There were the young, handsome, and outstanding heroes, the top ten ranked Heavenly Abode disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House, the core disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House, and some whose strength was ordinary, but were the young talents of the large and respected families.

In addition, the princesses and princes, including Crown Prince Yang Lin and Cloud Prince Yang Zhen had all arrived on scene.

However, these two were not the main guest today. Not even the dazzling stars Lin Ming and Qin Xingxuan were the main guests. The main guest today was a special envoy from the Seven Profound Valleys. But who this special envoy was, the guests present did not know.

"The emperor arrives!"

As the eunuch announced this, all of the maids and palace ladies kneeled down in abundance. However, the guests did not need to; it was fine as long as they bowed.

Lin Ming looked up and saw an old man walk into the hall wearing a crown with nine stars, a five fingered dragon robe, and golden dragon boots.

Although this old man was wearing mighty and impressive attire, it still could not conceal the heavy depression and gloom on his forehead. His eyes were almost buried in wrinkles and the loose flesh on his neck had begun to break down. There were faint age spots on his temples. He looked to be at least 70 years old.

This old man was the ruler of Sky Fortune Kingdom, Emperor Yang Jian. Yang Jian did not have many male children. Those male children he did have came at a late age. That was why when his several sons had finally grown up; he had already arrived at the end of his life.

This was the first time that Lin Ming saw the emperor of Sky Fortune Kingdom. On this emperor's body, there was not royal air of 'Purple Air Comes From the East'. Instead, there was only a lethargic, deathly gas.

Yang Jian apparently had no intentions of greeting the guests. He arrived at the banquet hall and sat at the seat of honor, and then closed his eyes in repose.

'This Yang Jian probably only has 4 or 5 years of life left, and that was all maintained by precious medicines and being carefully nursed to health by the best doctors. If he were an ordinary person and had reached this degree, he would have already died…'

As Lin Ming thought this, he inadvertently caught of glimpse of Bai Jingyun standing in a corner of the banquet hall. Bai Jingyun was wearing a formal black dress, and seemed to have lost all of her usually calm temperament. Today she appeared somewhat anxious and disturbed. There was a young noble youth that approached Bai Jingyun, but Bai Jingyun did not seem to notice his existence.

"Bai Jingyun… she seems worried about something." Although Lin Ming thought something was strange, he did not care too much. Then, Murong Zi walked over to Bai Jingyun's side carrying a glass of juice. She shoved that incessantly chattering young noble youth to the side. "Big Sister Jingyun, how are you, are you uncomfortable?"

“I’m alright.” Bai Jingyun barely smiled, and tried to say a few relieving words.

At this moment, the court eunuch reported, “Seven Profound Valleys’ Acacia Faction elder’s direct disciple, Mister Ouyang!”

Hearing this called out, Bai Jingyun’s hands and feet instantly went ice cold. Ouyang of the Acacia Faction… it was really him!

“What?” Murong Zi asked, unclear.

“Hurry up and leave here, or else it will be too late!” Bai Jingyun said with some panic.

“What… why?”

“This Ouyang Dihua is a sexual harasser. Do you remember last time at the Crown Prince’s banquet where I said I could not take responsibility for my own marriage? It was all because of him!”

As Bai Jingyun said this, Murong Zi suddenly recalled that event in her mind. When the Crown Prince had invited Lin Ming to his banquet, Bai Jingyun had jokingly told her to marry Lin Ming. Murong Zi teased her back, and asked why she didn’t marry Lin Ming herself. Finally, Bai Jingyun had said she was no longer able to call the shots of her own marriage.

Murong Zi had thought this was strange. With Bai Jingyun’s special status, how could she possible be unable to take responsibility and decide her own marriage? That was because the other party was a direct disciple of a Seven Profound Valleys elder!

A direct disciple’s status was on equal standing with a Seven Profound Envoy or the Martial House Masters of various countries. But because a direct disciple was often closely related to an elder, in an actual situation, even a Seven Profound Envoy or Martial House Master had to show three points of respect.

Although Murong Zi was usually heartless and fearless, and was not scared of either the heavens or earth, she still understood that this kind of person was not someone that her Murong Family could even hope to contend with.

But she could not just leave and abandon Bai Jingyun to suffer for herself. She simply did not have the heart to do that. “Big sister Jingyun… I…”

“Quickly leave.” Bai Jingyun said urgently. Acacia Faction disciples most favored those with looks and outstanding talents. If Murong Zi were discovered by Ouyang Dihua, in all likelihood he would be eyeing her.

Murong Zi bit her lip, kept her head down, and quickly walked towards the palace restroom.

Chapter 147 – I'll Waste You Tonight

Chapter 147 – I'll Waste You Tonight

…

…

…

"Damn it, Yang Zhen!" Murong Zi clenched her teeth, heart filled with hate. Although the grand banquet was held at the Imperial Palace, the one responsible for organizing it was the Cloud Prince, Yang Zhen. It was no wonder that before tonight, no one knew the identity of the great guest from the Seven Profound Valleys. It seemed that Yang Zhen had already taken Ouyang Dihua's side, and offered to help him look for beautiful women!

When Ouyang Dihua arrived on scene, he immediately attracted the attention of everyone present. Even the emperor slightly rose and nodded.

But the first person Ouyang Dihua laid his eyes upon was Lin Ming. He diabolically smiled at him with a thoughtful expression.

Seeing Ouyang Dihua look at him, Lin Ming frowned. This look was obviously the same as when someone at a superior standing looked down upon someone beneath them; it was a look filled with mockery and pity.

As Ouyang Dihua slowly came on stage, his eyes took in the entire room. He eyes slightly paused upon Bai Jingyun, Wang Yuhan, and even Qin Xingxuan's body before leaving.

This slight pause filled Bai Jingyun with trembling anxiousness. This was bad, even Yuhan had been dragged in!

Qin Xingxuan had no fear because she was already a core disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House. Although her status was lower than Ouyang Dihua's, in light of her reputation as a sixth-grade talent, Ouyang Dihua would not attempt to aggress on her. In the future, Qin Xingxuan was very likely to become a direct disciple of some elder from the Seven Profound Valleys.

But Wang Yuhan was different. In the front of Ouyang Dihua, she had no deep background to protect herself with.

Ouyang Dihua coughed to clear his throat, and said, "I am delighted to be here at Sky Fortune Kingdom. Tonight, I am very happy that I am able to meet all the elites of the Sky Fortune Kingdom...

"The reason I came to the Sky Fortune Kingdom today, is mainly to look at the major developments in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, and take a look at the strong, young heroes of this great country."

"In addition, the Seven Profound Envoy of the Sky Fortune Kingdom will be returning to the main sect. So, for these next six months, I will be temporarily substituting as the Seven Profound Envoy."

As Ouyang Dihua said this, Bai Jingyun felt an immediate burst of painful dizziness. Ouyang Dihua was actually going to be the Sky Fortune Kingdom's Seven Profound Envoy!?

This... this was simply dire news that couldn't have gotten any worse!

She already expected that the next six months would be the nightmare of all the beautiful girls within Sky Fortune City!

All the girls with even a bit of fame, like Murong Zi or Wang Yuhan, would become Ouyang Dihua's target. Even if they wanted to hide, they could not!

They were already too famous. It was possible that even before Ouyang Dihua had come to the Sky Fortune Kingdom, that he had already set a goal and decided that Murong Zi and Wang Yuhan were to be his prey!

In the winding corridor outside of the banquet hall, Murong Zi heard Ouyang Dihua's opening statement. She now knew, there was simply no meaning in hiding. The reason that Ouyang Dihua had come to Sky Fortune Kingdom as the Seven Profound Envoy was because of them.

Murong Zi clenched her teeth and thought aloud, "You damn sexual harasser, if you dare to make a move on me or lay a finger on my body, I will cut off your d*ck and I will die with you!"

After Crown Prince Yang Lin heard this news, he also didn't look very good. He knew that this banquet was arranged by his tenth younger brother, the Cloud Prince! What did it mean that Ouyang Dihua's welcoming had been arranged by Yang Zhen? It was obvious that Yang Zhen had already managed to make some sort of deal ahead of time with Ouyang Dihua concerning the future throne!

Today, Yang Zhen had not hesitated to conceal the identity of Ouyang Dihua, and invited so many beautiful daughters of great and respected families; this was a great offense to all those families. The reason he could do this was because Ouyang Dihua would take over the role of the Seven Profound Envoy, and thus Yang Zhen had found a backer!

Yang Lin certainly knew that Zhang Guanyu and Yang Zhen were close. Without a doubt, these two had formed an alliance, and the one who had promoted them to form this alliance was Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was the common enemy of Yang Zhen and Zhang Guanyu!

In all likelihood, the one that had invited Ouyang Dihua was Zhang Guanyu. To somehow manage to obtain him as their backer, he could not imagine what sort of price that Zhang Guanyu had paid for this.

Thinking of this, Yang Lin took a deep breath. When he had obtained Lin Ming's support, he thought that he had already won half the battle. But, after experiencing Zhang Guanyu and Yang Zhen's latest move, he had already lost the game before he could think of a comeback.

Whether it was Zhang Guanyu or Yang Zhen, they were not people that would easily concede. How was it possible that they would sit and wait to die just because of Lin Ming?

Lin Ming noted the change in Yang Lin's expression, as well as Zhang Guanyu and Yang Zhen's faces filled with elation, and immediately understood that this was because of Ouyang Dihua. It was now clear to him why as soon as Ouyang Dihua had walked in, he had looked at Lin Ming like a cat that was teasing a mouse.

"So that's how it is... I was the mouse..." Lin Ming's expression didn't change, and he was still calmly sitting in his chair as he was before.

But at this moment, Zhang Guanyu, swinging his fan, walked over to the Crown Prince. Lin Ming and the Crown Prince were sitting very near each other, and Zhang Guanyu's gaze fell upon Lin Ming. There was an happiness implied in that look, as if it were the exact same expression that Ouyang Dihua had, of a cat playing with a mouse. If one were to think there was something different about it, it would be that there was a hint of murderous intent lurking beneath that smiling facade.

"Crown Prince, Your Highness." Zhang Guanyu bowed.

"Sir Zhang." Although Yang Lin wished to kill Zhang Guanyu in his heart, Yang Lin maintained his friendly and smiling demeanor.

"Crown Prince, Your Highness, it seems that Lan Yunyue, Miss Lan, is in the Crown Prince's palace. Mister Ouyang would like to see Miss Lan. I was wondering what your highness thought of this?"

Although Zhang Guanyu spoke quietly, how could Lin Ming, who was sitting by the side of the Crown Prince not hear?

Although Lan Yunyue no longer had anything to do with Lin Ming, this disgusting Zhang Guanyu repeatedly kept trying to use this matter to attack Lin Ming's heart of martial arts in vain. Lin Ming only felt as if there was a blowfly flying around it; it was just annoying and extremely bothersome.

As soon as Yang Lin heard Zhang Guanyu say this, there was a slight change in his expression, but it was immediately restored to a congenial smile. "I'm truly sorry, but this prince has already sent Miss Lan away. As to where she has gone, even this prince does not know."

Zhang Guanyu cunningly laughed, smiled, and said "Your Highness, since I came to such a important person as yourself, that means that I have obtained accurate news. I'm not a person that likes to beat around the bush, so I will give Your Highness some advice. Lan Yunyue is very important to Mister Ouyang's cultivation. Mister Ouyang has already expressed that he will be single-mindedly focused on his cultivation and has no intention to participate in the struggle for the throne. As long as your highness the Crown Prince hands over Lan Yunyue, then Mister Ouyang will remain neutral in Your Highness and the Cloud Prince's struggle for the throne. I wonder what the Crown Prince thinks of this?"

As Zhang Guanyu said this, Lin Ming's face sank. He could not help but admire how truly tricky, insidious, and utterly vicious this Zhang Guanyu was.

He was trying to alienate the Crown Prince's relationship with Lin Ming.

The present situation was that the Crown Prince did not want Ouyang Dihua as his enemy. This matter was because of Lin Ming. If Lin Ming and Zhang Guanyu were not enemies, then he would not resort to having Ouyang Dihua personally appear, and thus let the Tenth Prince have the support of a future Seven Profound Envoy. This attack on the Crown Prince's influence was simply too drastic!

In other words, the Crown Prince had looked towards Lin Ming to help him, but instead, not only had he not benefitted from their relationship, but he had ended up following the devil.

If it was anyone else, they would have already readily trampled Lin Ming underneath their foot.

At this moment, Zhang Guanyu had offered Ouyang Dihua's neutrality as bait. Even though the Crown Prince knew perfectly well that his was an attempt to alienate him and Lin Ming, he was unable to reject, because the threat of Ouyang Dihua was simply too big! The Crown Prince did not dare to disobey him!

This move of Zhang Guanyu's could only be described as vicious; he was slowly trying to isolate Lin Ming.

Zhu Yan was the best example. The reason why Zhu Yan had ended up in such a miserable state was because of Lin Ming's great strength, which caused the Tenth Prince and the Zhu Family to fear Lin Ming, so they had directly expelled Zhu Yan from the family!

Now, Zhang Guanyu was trying to deal with Lin Ming in a similar method, and had brought out Ouyang Dihua. Not only would Lin Ming fail the Seven Profound Martial House's core disciple test, but he would also lose the backing and asylum of the Crown Prince, and eventually follow the same fate as Zhu Yan!

After Zhang Guanyu said these words, Yang Lin could no longer maintain his calm. If he could think of this, then Lin Ming could also think of this.

'Zhang Guanyu! What a sinister villain!' Yang Lin cursed angrily in his mind. He couldn't help but glance at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming indifferently said, "Lan Yunyue was originally rescued by Your Highness the Crown Prince. In that case, I have no right to interfere with Your Highness' decision. Your Highness, please decide on your own."

Yang Lin took a deep breath. Even though he was usually calm, at this moment his palms were oozing with sweat. He had a faint foreboding feeling that this would be the most important decision in his entire life; whether he decides to stand by Lin Ming's side, or willingly submit to the Sky Fortune Kingdom's Seven Profound Envoy – Ouyang Dihua!

There was a deep silence that lasted for a full ten breaths of time, before Yang Lin finally said, “My influence is inferior to my tenth younger brother, my military force is inferior to my tenth younger brother, and my finances are inferior to my tenth younger brother. When I was at my lowest, and all I had was inferior to my tenth younger brother, Brother Lin chose to stand on my side and support me in my difficult position. I, Yang Lin, will always bear the timely graciousness when he helped me in my heart. Since ancient times, emperors have been ambitious and fierce. According to that, perhaps I may not be suitable to be an emperor, but if one day I were to really ascend to the throne, then I would surely regard the officials as my brothers, and the common citizens as my own benevolent parents.”

Even though Yang Lin’s remarks placed him a terribly unfavorable situation, he still said it. As Lin Ming heard this, his heart moved; he also had not expected Yang Lin to suddenly utter these words.

Even in this kind of situation, Yang Lin had continued to stand by his side, and revolted against Ouyang Dihua, the Seven Profound Envoy. Depending on just this, Yang Lin was truly a person worth knowing.

If an emperor took an official as a brother, the official would take the emperor as a friend. If the emperor regarded the official as worthless, then the official would regard the emperor as a foe.

Now, Lin Ming had completely decided to help Yang Lin ascend the throne. The Sky Fortune Kingdom was Lin Ming’s home, and his family was still here. Naturally, he hoped that his country would also have a kind and just ruler.

“Oh? So Your Highness does not plan on handing over Lan Yunyue?” Zhang Guanyu smiled as he asked.

But this time, not far behind from Zhang Guanyu, Ouyang Dihua was also looking in their direction. He was smiling, but his smile was a bit cold.

“This prince has said that Miss Lan is no longer in the palace!”

“Haha, since Your Highness the Crown Prince says so, then would you dare to allow people to search?”

“Presumptuous!”

“Hehe, of course I would not dare to search myself. But, what if this was Mister Ouyang’s order?”

As Zhang Guanyu said this, the Crown Prince’s complexion changed. If Ouyang Dihua wished to search the palace, there was nothing he could do!

At this moment, the thick tension in the room was palpable; the entire banquet hall had turned to watch this unfold.

Suddenly, Lin Ming opened his mouth to say, “Sir Zhang, I suddenly recalled that there was the matter of a duel between us.”

Li Ming’s idea was very simple. Since Zhang Guanyu had formed an alliance and found someone to deal with him, then he who stuck the first blow would have the advantage. Tonight, he would duel Zhang Guanyu and utterly waste him, so that he could no longer play such clever little tricks again.

Chapter 148 – Better Today Than Tomorrow

Chapter 148 – Better Today Than Tomorrow

…

…

…

"Haha, if Mister Lin did not remind me, then I would have also forgotten. Yes, there is a match between us. I was hoping to make a gambling bet with Mister Lin, but what a pity, Mister Lin did not dare to accept. Unfortunately, in half a month I must go to the seven Profound Valleys to pay a visit to the third elder of the Acacia Faction, Elder Ouyang. Elder Ouyang will assess whether I can become an official disciple. Thus, I might not have time to duel with Mister Lin. If I by some fluke luckily obtain Elder Ouyang's favor, then I might have to stay at the Seven Profound Valleys for a very long time. If Mister Lin actually must duel with me, then it must be within this half month. I wonder if Mister Lin dares to?"

Zhang Guanyu kept a smile on his face throughout. He had already thought of all the contingencies, and had a considerable certainty that he could force Lin Ming to challenge him within this half month. Then, he would have the confidence to severely wound and disable him with the 'Divine Acacia Power's' most vicious move, the 'Life Severing Dead Bone Blade'. If that happened, then this Lin Ming would no longer be able to cultivate the path of martial arts!

'Fighting with me will be the stupidest decision you ever make in your entire life, you 15 year old imbecilic child. I will make you regret ever being born into this world!'

'The woman you once loved will be taken away to be used as a furnace to help cultivate. You will fall from the altar of geniuses; you will lose your martial arts, lose your loved ones, lose your parents, and also be expelled from your family. By that time, I can deal with you in any way I want to. I will break your hands and feet, and raise you in my manor's pigsty as a pig, and every day I will feed you the same garbage that the pigs eat while I screw all the women that you once knew in front of you. I will make it so that you cannot die even as you hope for death, and can only beg me to kill you! Hahahaha!'

Zhang Guanyu had already imagined Lin Ming's future sad and pathetic demise in his mind. The corners of his mouth fiercely widened. He not only wanted to kill Lin Ming, but he also wanted him to live his life in despair, so that he would be no worse than the pigs and dogs.

After those present heard Zhang Guanyu's words, they became deeply aware of the cunning behind his words. This time was also one and a half months from the four month period of time time that the Seven Profound Valleys had predetermined. That Zhang Guanyu had prepared to pay a visit to Ouyang Boyan in half a month, was very likely his plan as well.

Perhaps he believed that he could not grasp victory in a month and a half, and so he had forced Lin Ming to fight against him within the next half month.

Many of those present knew of the relationship between Ouyang Boyan and Ouyang Dihua. After they heard Zhang Guanyu say this, they all turned to look at Ouyang Dihua. Ouyang Dihua nodded, confirming this news.

"I wonder what means this Zhang Guanyu used to impress Ouyang Dihua, that he would have him assessed to be a secret disciple."

"This is truly disgraceful. Zhang Guanyu seems to be afraid of Lin Ming. Like this, he has already lost all of his momentum."

"What does it matter if he loses his momentum? It's still better than being beaten shitless under the eyes of everyone. As long as he can defeat Lin Ming, his 'spirit' will not be obstructed. If his 'spirit' can flow, then his true essence will flow, and his martial arts cultivation will not be too hindered. This Zhang Guanyu truly has a good plan. He set a trap so that Lin Ming could walk into it himself."

“Lin Ming is a ruthless man, but Zhang Guanyu is not some soft dough to be kneaded; he also has such means to deal with Lin Ming. If I were to face Lin Ming, then I would have admitted defeat long ago.”

“I wonder how Lin Ming will face this dilemma. Let’s have a good look at the coming show.”

“I think Lin Ming will just endure this insult. The last time at the Ten Thousand Killing Array he was only ranked sixth. The gap between the sixth and third place is just too wide; it’s not just a rank. To reach that level in half a month, even if it were Lin Ming, it would be impossible to achieve. Not only that, but Zhang Guanyu has also cultivated the ‘Divine Acacia Power’. How could his strength not have progressed also?”

“Mm... I think so too.”

Those present discussed this matter privately.

Lin Ming faintly smiled, and covered the teacup in his hand. He said, “Within a half month? The truth is, I do not need half a month. Today is better than tomorrow. So, let’s make it today. How about we go to the military field now?

“Mm?”

Zhang Guanyu was suddenly surprised.

Was Lin Ming insane? He wanted to duel with him now?

As Lin Ming said this, all the guests present were shocked; this included Yang Lin, Wang Yuhan, Qin Xingxuan, and everyone else. This was simply too unexpected.

Lin Ming had just participated in the Ten Thousand Killing Array assessment not too long ago, and his result had been the sixth rank. Although this result was already legendary, his was still far from being Zhang Guanyu’s match! It was impossible for Lin Ming to have caught up in only a few days’ worth of time.

"What is Lin Ming doing? He is simply just courting death."

"Today is better than tomorrow? This Lin Ming does not even put Zhang Guanyu in his sight. Lin Ming is too arrogant. Although he has some ability, he is just too young and his personality isn't mature enough. All the auras and halos wrapped around this child's body have already blinded him and inflated his self-esteem. Now, he thinks he is already invincible within the younger generation. This time he will fall."

"Once he falls, he might not be able to get back up. Zhang Guanyu will absolutely use some ruthless method! Perhaps he will keep an eye on an opportunity and disable Lin Ming, so that he will never stand up from this failure in his entire life."

"Lin Ming probably doesn't know that the first three ranks on the Ranking Stone have an insurmountable gap from the fourth. He thinks that the sixth rank is near the third rank. This four month period before the challenge had been personally laid down by the Seven Profound Martial House master. What sort or judgment does he have? He would not irresponsibly set a time. Now it's only been two and a half months. For Lin Ming to challenge Zhang Guanyu now, he is just too rash."

The last one to speak was the fourth ranked disciple on the Ranking Stone. He knew that in the future he would be inferior to Lin Ming, but in the present, Lin Ming had just taken the assessment several days ago, and it had shown that Lin Ming's strength hadn't yet overtaken his, much less Zhang Guanyu.

Among the people discussing, there were those that were the young, handsome, and outstanding heroes of Sky Fortune City. There were many among them that were jealous of Lin Ming, and looked forward to seeing Lin Ming severely wounded by Zhang Guanyu so that he could not pass the Seven Profound Martial House core disciple test. If his meridians were damaged, or he was physically disabled, then his cultivation in the future would be severely affected, and he would fall from the altar of geniuses and be unable to recover.

"Brother Lin, please rethink this!" The Crown Prince held down onto Lin Ming's arm, and passed him a message through true essence, "Do not act on impulse. If you really fight now, then Zhang Guanyu will inevitably use a heavy hand to viciously hurt you. He now has the support of Ouyang Dihua. Even if he cripples you, he will not receive too severe a punishment. Because of this he will be even more unscrupulous and reckless. He might even have some possibility of killing you using some extreme method!"

When masters exchanged blows, especially when it was a situation where they were close in strength, each move would be at full force and very dangerous. If one was not careful then they could easily be disabled, and even the Seven Profound Martial House would not punish them. Even if they caused a death, the worst that would happen would be a dismissal by the Martial House to the frontier where they would have to work there, or other such punishments. But for Zhang Guanyu, these did not mean anything.

Lin Ming said, "Your Highness, I know. These past few days, my strength has progressed. Even if I cannot win against Zhang Guanyu, I have confidence I can safely retreat.

Lin Ming had just finished his sentence when his ears rang with sound transmissions one after another. They were from Wang Yuhan, Bai Jingyun, and Qin Xingxuan, all having a similar meaning. They were unanimously urging Lin Ming to not be emotional.

Lin Ming stood up and smiled at the three girls, indicating that he was fine.

Those present were not ordinary people. Their vision and judgment were very accurate. If Lin Ming had only reached the sixth rank on the Ten Thousand Killing Array, then it would simply be impossible for him to surpass Zhang Guanyu in half a month.

But Lin Ming had only strove for the top ten rankings of the Ten Thousand Killing Array. After obtaining enough points, Lin Ming had looked for the Pulse Condensation Period master to hone his own formidable strength. If he had used his full force to rush up the rankings, he would not necessarily be worse than Zhang Guanyu.

Much less, in recent days Lin Ming had cultivated the 'Heretical God Force' to the Large Success stage, and the 'Strife Seal' body inscription symbol had been successful. Even his

‘Flow like Silk’ and ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ had made breakthroughs. Now his strength was no longer like it was several days ago.

Drawing back 10,000 steps, even if he could not defeat Zhang Guanyu, as long as his arms and legs weren’t broken, he could easily retreat unscathed.

Zhang Guanyu contemptibly smiled, and in his heart he thought, ‘Since you want to die, then I will fulfill your wish. Becoming so famous at a young age isn’t necessarily a good thing. The disposition is too uncertain, and the young act with childish conduct that is easy to understand. Hehe, I had wanted a way to shock you into challenging me in half a month, but now it looks like I never needed it. You are so stupid that you can’t wait even half a month and so wish to live in my pigsty. Such being the case, I will certainly tell the servants to fill the pigsty with pig urine and manure, as a gesture of hospitality towards you!’

Thinking this, Zhang Guanyu was no longer able to conceal the murderous intention in his eyes. His face revealed a grim and fierce smile. “Today is better than tomorrow? Young heroes have always come from the youth. You seem to think that you have already won. We may as well go now. I would like to experience Mister Lin’s moves!”

“I also have this meaning.” Lin Ming said with a smile, “Right, Sir Zhang, the sword and spear have no eyes. Since we are fighting such a decisive battle with all our efforts, it is inevitable that we will accidently hurt each other…”

Zhan Guanyu giggled, and then smiled, saying, “Mister Lin is afraid of being hurt? Rest assured, I will watch my strength.”

‘Of course I will watch my strength; otherwise if I’m not careful I might suddenly kill you by accident. What fun would there be in that?’

Lin Ming smiled and said, “No, no I am not afraid of being hurt, I am just afraid of hurting Sir Zhang. I would not know how to explain that to the Allied Trade Association. My Lin Family is a small family, we cannot afford to offend such a major power like the Allied Trade Association.

As Lin Ming said this, the facial expressions of those present were quite wonderful.

“He… what did he say? He’s afraid of hurting Zhang Guanyu and not being able to deal with the Allied Trade Association?”

“This Lin Ming, simply madness!”

“He does now know how to spell the word ‘dead’. He wants to anger Zhang Guanyu at such a time? It would not be strange if Zhang Guanyu were to use some insidious move on him. I heard that the Acacia Faction’s moves were famous for being ruthless and sinister!

Those in the audience had seen many things and had many experiences. They had a certain understanding about the Acacia Faction’s cultivation methods and skills.

Zhang Guanyu laughed, “Lin Ming, since you say this, then I also have a little fear that you might accidently hurt me. Haha, then how do you think we should proceed?”

Zhang Guanyu’s ironic tone was obvious, but Lin Ming was unaware. He thought for a moment, smiled, and said, “How about we sign a Life Death Contract? This way, if one of us is wounded or crippled, we cannot be held responsible. How about it?”

Chapter 149 – Life Death Contract

Chapter 149 – Life Death Contract

…

…

…

“How about we sign a Life Death Contract? This way, if one of us is wounded or crippled, we cannot be held responsible. How about it?”

Lin Ming’s smile was very bright. The effect that the ‘Pulse Cutting Palm’ created was a little too excessive, so it was a good idea to establish a Life Death Contract in advance.

When Zhang Guanyu heard Lin Ming say such a thing, he was over the moon. This Lin Ming was simply stretching out his neck waiting for him to chip it off. He was so stupid; he had never seen someone do anything so stupid!

“Lin Ming! What are you doing!?” Wang Yuhan anxiously said. She did not use a true essence sound transmission, but had run over instead. To sign a Life Death Contract? That was simply digging his own grave!

“Lin Ming, you cannot sign this!”

Zhang Guanyu laughed, and said with a smile, “Miss Wang, may I ask who you are to Lin Ming?

“I…” Wang Yuhan’s words caught in her throat. There was nothing she could directly say. Her relationship with Lin Ming was only as an inscription master and assistant. Besides that, there wasn’t anything else. What qualifications did she have to interfere in Lin Ming’s decision?

Lin Ming said, “Miss Wang is a friend of mine. Zhang Guanyu, since I said that I will sign the Life Death Contract, I will not renege on a promise I made. Bring me a pen.”

“Good! Wonderful! Servants, bring the writing set!” Zhang Guanyu chuckled.

A servant quickly brought over a set of writing utensils. A clerk came over and quickly wrote down line after line on the paper in small print. These were the words of the Life Death Contract between Lin Ming and Zhang Guanyu.

Zhang Guanyu pressed down a fingerprint, and then taking up a red pen, made a big waving motion as if he were clawing, and the words ‘Zhang Guanyu’ appeared on the Life Death Contract. The ink was bright red like blood, and looked incomparably fierce.

Lin Ming received the ink and red pen, and quietly signed his name. His strokes were not obvious, but it was similar to a long spear and faintly exuded a sharp imposing momentum. Standing on the side, Wang Yuhan could clearly see that the intersecting strokes of Lin Ming had already penetrated the back of the paper and were flowing outwards.

As the Life Death Contract was signed, Zhang Guanyu chortled, and sent Ouyang Dihua a true essence sound transmission. “Mister Ouyang, before we had agreed that you would give me the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead.”

Ouyang Dihua smiled and replied with a true essence sound transmission. “Why, Lin Ming has challenged you so early, and you still want to use the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead? Aren’t you overestimating him?”

Zhang Guanyu quietly replied, “Caution is best, I must ruin Lin Ming to the point that he cannot recover from the failure. I do not want to allow even a little mistake to occur.”

“Haha, this Lin Ming has offended you; he truly does have bad luck.” Ouyang Dihua flicked his finger, and a gray spatial ring suddenly flew into Zhang Guanyu’s waiting hand.

At this time, it was getting late, and Ouyang Dihua’s action was very subtle. This scene was so minor that almost nobody noticed. But after Lin Ming had cultivated the ‘True Primal

Chaos Formula', his senses were much keener, and he had actually noticed that small movement near Zhang Guanyu.

"What is in that ring?" Lin Ming's mind went cold, suddenly and secretly on alert. The ring that Ouyang Dihua had thrown was certainly not something minor. "I don't know what card this Zhang Guanyu has in his hand. I must be careful this fight."

The Imperial Palace's military field was just outside the gates. It was large, had a paved floor of blue stone, and it had several dozen acres of space; it was even larger than a horse field.

Because of this duel, all the participants at the grand banquet had come out to watch. Even Murong Zi, who had been hiding, had found an obscure corner to watch together with Bai Jingyun.

Zhan Guanyu had replaced the long silk gown that he had been wearing with simpler clothing and ran onto the military field. In his hand he held an impressive high-grade human-step treasure sword that shined with a dense coldness. This sword was the one that Lin Ming had helped Zhang Guanyu engrave just a month ago.

Seeing this sword, Wang Yuhan sighed. This day, Lin Ming would face the top quality treasure sword that he had personally helped make.

Zhang Guanyu casually flourished the sword in his hand. He smiled, and with a happy expression said, "Mister Lin, do you remember this sword? I must thank you, I did not imagine that this sword would be so perfect. I wonder what it's like to lose under a sword that you helped to create? How would you feel?"

"The feeling should be the same as yours." Lin Ming pulled out the Heavy Profound Soft Spear. Above his right hand, the symbol began to glow with a hint of dark red light, as if the blood vessels underneath were congealing.

Zhang Guanyu naturally did not understand Lin Ming's words. He did not know that the fifth-level vicious beast blood that he had personally handed over was one of the primary materials for the inscription symbol on Lin Ming's right hand. Otherwise, his feelings would be much more intense than Lin Ming's.

"Lin Ming's spear... it... it doesn't have an inscription symbol!" Wang Yuhan could not believe this as she looked at Lin Ming's Heavy Profound Soft Spear. She had never thought that Lin Ming, an inscription grand master, would not have given his own spear an inscription symbol!

Just what exactly was his mind thinking?

As Wang Yuhan said this, everyone turned to look at Lin Ming's Heavy Profound Soft Spear. This spear did not have an inscription?

Usually, a normal martial artist would have no way to judge from a distance whether a weapon had an inscription symbol or not. But Wang Yuhan was an inscription master so what she said shouldn't be wrong.

Lin Ming obtained the weapon, and hadn't placed an inscription symbol on it as soon as possible? And now he was planning on using an inscriptionless weapon against Zhang Guanyu? Why would he do such a foolish thing?

They were not optimistic about Lin Ming's strength to begin with, but now even his weapon was an order lower than Zhang Guanyu's, and it also lacked an inscription symbol. How could he still fight this battle?

Far away, Qin Xingxuan also watched this, and her delicate eyebrows pressed together. She was clear; Lin Ming was young, but by no means an immature child. Since he dared to challenge Zhang Guanyu at this time, what sort of cards did he have up his sleeve?

"Hehe, I didn't think that you would be stupid to this degree. You obtained such a fine weapon and hadn't placed an inscription symbol upon it as soon as you could, yet you still want to cope with me today with it." Zhang Guanyu greedily licked his lips and smiled.

Lin Ming looked at the Heavy Profound Soft Spear. These days he had been occupied with cultivating the ‘Heretical God Force’ and drawing up the ‘Strife Seal’. He hadn’t been able to set aside any time to give the Heavy Profound Soft Spear the inscription symbol that it deserved. The main reason was that Lin Ming wanted collect some top quality materials to make the most formidable inscription symbol that he could with his current technique and cultivation. To find the materials that were worthy of this Heavy Profound Soft Spear would take some time. After all, he planned to use this spear for a long time.

However, missing an inscription symbol didn’t affect him too much. Lin Ming’s dark purple elastic iron Penetrating Rainbow spear didn’t have an inscription symbol either.

Lin Ming stepped forward, his right hand holding the end of the Heavy Profound Soft Spear as he stretched it out. He could feel that his right hand was full of an explosive force; this was power that the ‘Strife Seal’ had given him.

After he had successfully drawn up the ‘Strife Seal’, Lin Ming’s strength head already reached 7200 jins. This strength was even stronger than early Pulse Condensation Period martial artist’s!

Motionless like a mountain!

With the flare of Lin Ming’s imposing aura, his body began to release a formidable pressure. Some of the young elites of Sky Fortune City with weaker cultivations could not bear it, and backed away. This was just like what an average person would feel when they confronted a wild and ferocious tiger. Even if they knew this tiger would not injure them, they could not help but back away.

“Good! What a commanding aura! Lin Ming’s strong point is his strength and towering manner, and his speed is not so good. But Zhang Guanyu’s strong point lies in his speed and his strength is slightly lower. This could be said to be a duel between a peak strength powerhouse and a peak speed powerhouse! It really makes one look forward to it!”

A distinguished disciple of the Seven Profound Marital House said.

“A duel of peak powerhouses? Hehe, the strongest disciple within the Seven Profound Martial House is Ta Ku. Not only is his cultivation at the early Bone Forging stage, but he also as inborn divine strength. Zhang Guanyu is the fastest, Ta Ku is the strongest. When these two fight, that will truly be the match of peak powerhouses.”

“As for Lin Ming, although he is a heaven warping genius, he is still tender and inexperienced. Motionless like a mountain how? I bet that the agile Zhang Guanyu will lead Lin Ming to dance around in circles. With Lin Ming’s speed, I’m afraid that he might not even be able to touch the hem of Zhang Guanyu’s clothes! And since Zhang Guanyu also cultivates the ‘Divine Acacia Power’, his true essence and strength might not be lower than Lin Ming’s. The result of this duel is already undeniable!”

A young aristocratic junior in silk robes sneered as he said this. In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, there were enough young people that idolized Lin Ming that they were like an endless river of carp. But correspondingly, there were no small number of those young martial artists that were jealous of Lin Ming and hoped that he would suffer a loss, and henceforth never be able to recover. This young man in a silk gown was also one of them.

He believed that Lin Ming would one day be able to surpass Zhang Guanyu. But, that was not today. Since Ling Ming had challenged Zhang Guanyu now, he would truly die miserably.

Zhang Guanyu sneered, and mockingly said, “Your imposing aura is good, but what a pity that it is useless against me. I am not Zhu Yan, and I have already seen through your ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’!”

As he said this, the entire audience was startled, particularly Wang Yuhan. Her heart suddenly felt as if it was hanging by strings. The ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ was Lin Ming’s strongest ability. If Zhang Guanyu had already seen through Lin Ming’s ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’, then how could Lin Ming possibly win?

However, Lin Ming completely did not care for Zhang Guanyu’s words and disregarded them. He brightly smiled and said, “You’re just playing mind games. With your garbage perception, you had cultivated the ‘Divine Acacia Power’ for more than half a year and harmed so many women, and yet you still haven’t reached the second layer? You think that you could see through my ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ with your garbage perception? Too laughable!”

As Lin Ming said this, Zhang Guanyu felt deeply aggrieved, and he was very angry. It was true that he had continually cultivated the ‘Divine Acacia Power’ and still hadn’t reached the second layer, therefore he had worried that he would never reach Large Success of the ‘Divine Acacia Power’s’ seventh layer in his entire life, and attain the realm where he would have inexhaustible Yang Essence.

Lin Ming’s words had stamped on his sore spot.

“A person shouldn’t be so unrestrained, now go die!” As soon as Zhang Guanyu yelled out, his figure flashed, and even his shadow was lost. Those present could only hear a series of ta ta ta footsteps and a sharp piercing sound coming out from nowhere. This was the sound of a high speed sword cutting through the wind!

“So fast!”

“Heavens! Even my eyes cannot catch up to his speed! Is this really a speed that a human can hope to achieve!?”

The young heroes and outstanding talents present all had a good ability to judge others’ power. Although they knew that there would be a disparity between Lin Ming and Zhang Guanyu, they hadn’t thought that this difference would be like an endless gulf between them!

This speed was so fast that not even the eye could follow. How would Lin Ming deal with this?

One simply did not know where his sword would come from!

Zhang Guanyu’s speed was just like a rushing wind.

Lin Ming gripped the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, and stood motionless in the same place.

One was an indistinct figure with rapid movements, and the other was standing completely still. Just looking at this momentum, Lin Ming was weaker.

Zhang Guanyu flashed around to arrive at Lin Ming's back. He grinned fiendishly, and aimed his sword to lop off Lin Ming's head. His sword reached an extreme of speed; even sound was swallowed within it.

Chapter 150 – Pinnacle Movement Ability

Chapter 150 – Pinnacle Movement Ability

…

…

…

Those present couldn't even clearly see the sword light. If this sword struck, then Lin Ming's head would be split in half!

It was too late to even cry out in alarm, but Zhang Guanyu's sword actually hit nothing!

It was as if Lin Ming had eyes on the back of his head. In that brief flash as the sword fell, he took a strange half step forwards, and it was as if he were a wisp of flame that had been blown away by a breeze, and he evaded Zhang Guanyu's sword by a hair's width.

"Mm?!"

Zhang Guanyu was frustrated that his sword strike had failed. He did not believe that there was some evil force at hand, and he raised his sword to strike again!

Chi chi chi chi chi chi!

In that moment, not even Zhang Guanyu knew how many sword stabs he had made. His sword had completely integrated into the wind; there was only a blurry mirage of sword light, the sword blade had already completed vanished from sight!

Seeing only sword light and not the sword blade was already a very high boundary of swordsmanship. But one could actually not clearly see the sword light from Zhang Guanyu's sword!

Such a terrifyingly quick sword light enveloped Lin Ming from all sides. But in this moment, Lin Ming's figure also blurred, and a thick stack of afterimages appeared around his body!

In the midst of these afterimages, Lin Ming looked like he moved, but also like he didn't move. But what was without a doubt was that Zhang Guanyu's sword stabs had all missed!

"This… this is… what's going on?" Murong Zi had turned silly as she hid in that corner watching this decisive battle. Lin Ming had obviously been shrouded in so many sword lights, and yet not even a single hair of his had been touched; he was completely unscathed!

"Whats going on? He's dodged everything!" Bai Jingyun deeply inhaled, trying to keep her trembling voice as calm as possible.

Lin Ming's movements were just too terrifying!

Those martial artists familiar with movement abilities knew that this sword light was impossible to dodge with speed when it showered down like sword rain. The faster one's sword drew to the limit of speed, the less time there would be to dodge and the shorter gap between each sheen of sword light. Not only that, but the sword light was chaotic, without almost any dead angle. To escape such sword light, one had to be at least as fast as that sword light!

To accomplish this task of dodging the sword light, one also had to have extremely accurate eyesight, near instantaneous keen judgment, and the ability to control one's movement at the microscopic level, where one had exquisite control over every part of the body. They would have to make numerous short and quick movements in a split second in order to dodge that sword light!

Lin Ming's thick stack of fuzzy afterimages were because he had made so many brief and rapid movements, that it left behind a visual afterimage in that 1/10 of a second in a person's iris!

This was simply the pinnacle of movement!

But Lin Ming, why would he have such ghostly movement speed?

Those young elites present were knowledgeable, if Bai Jingyun could think of this, then so could they. They knew how difficult a task this would be too dodge such a crowded sea of sword light.

“Who? Just who said that Lin Ming is weak? He needs to open his damn eyes to see. Could this really be called a ‘weak point’?” The one speaking was the Heavenly Abode disciple ranked fourth on the ranking stone. He knew that Lin Ming’s previous assessment on the Ranking Stone had been sixth place. He didn’t think that after several days, Lin Ming’s strength would overtake his own. But now, looking at the present, his idea was simply a joke!

“How can this be!?” I remember that in the past Lin Ming rarely moved on the battlefield. His basic fighting method was to meet an opponent’s toughness head on. Moreover, what he cultivations is the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’; how can it possibly be that quick!?” An aristocratic junior said. He was the one that had spoken out loud that Lin Ming’s weakness was his low speed.

“You’re too stupid. Would you dare to say that Lin Ming’s ‘Foundation Spear Technique’ is also weak? As for him not moving on the battlefield, that is obviously because of how weak his previous opponents were. There was no need for Lin Ming to display his terrifying movement skills.”

A prominent Linmaniac plausibly responded.

He had an ominous aura that was motionless like a mountain, amazing strength, incomparably thick true essence, and simultaneously a peerless speed. He simply did not have a single weakness. Facing such an abnormal beast, how could one fight him?

The fight on the military field was becoming increasingly intense; it was top movements against top movements. Zhang Guanyu’s sword speed was accelerating, becoming more and more swift and violent, and the sword lights interweaved to a point where not even raindrops could enter!

The countless sword lights had already split the military field into broken pieces. The stones under Lin Ming's feet were already broken to the point they could not be broken anymore; the largest fragment was the size of a fingernail.

However, even under the aggression of such a violent blade storm, Lin Ming was casually strolling like he was taking a walk through a park. His steps had completely integrated into the concept of wind, and it was impossible to catch his exact location.

Zhang Guanyu's sword light seemed to create a dense crisscrossed net, but there was always a first and a last sword stroke. Lin Ming was able to exploit this small difference in time, and his movements were like passing clouds and flowing water, acutely smooth and incomparably gentle. It was as if he wasn't even dodging the sword, but instead the approaching sword wind would blow him away.

Murong Zi stared with a vacant expression, eyes growing wide. She murmured, "It's impossible, no matter how fierce that farm animal is, the movement ability he chose is only the 'Foundation Movement Technique'. How can the 'Foundation Movement Technique' possibly have such speed?"

Murong Zi's question was also Bai Jingyun's question. She also thought it was strange; since when had Lin Ming learnt such an extremely formidable movement ability?

But at this moment, a fresh and pleasant voice said, "Lin Ming is using the 'Foundation Movement Technique'."

Murong Zi turned her head to see that the one speaking was Qin Xingxuan.

At this time, Qin Xingxuan was looking towards the center of the field, and her eyes were filled with admiration and praise.

“The ‘Foundation Movement Technique’? No way!” Murong Zi would rather be beaten to death than believe such propaganda. She also had some understanding of the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’. Lin Ming’s movements were completely different from the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’, and moreover, would the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’ have such strangely abnormal speed?

But as Bai Jingyun followed this point mentioned by Qin Xingxuan, she felt a faint hint of discovery. She looked again at Lin Ming’s movements, and her complexion rapidly began to devolve into inexplicable horror, “It… it really… really is the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’! Lin Ming’s movements are all steps from the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’! But, each step has been reduced to the lowest possible limit, and the speed of each step approaches the ultimate boundary!”

“Yes, that’s it. Qin Xingxuan nodded.

What Lin Ming was displaying really was the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’. What ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’ stressed was comprehension of the concept and revolution of true essence. There were no requirements as to the required movements. To put it plainly, movement abilities that required certain steps were all mediocre garbage that belonged to offshoot branches. The truly formidable movement abilities all relied on comprehending the concept.

As for the order of steps, it was arbitrary, and one could move as they pleased. If a movement ability was defined by how a martial artist’s steps were, then it would inevitably become a shackle to that martial artist; how could it possibly display movement like passing clouds and flowing waters, where one’s movement was like leisurely strolling through the yard?

Lin Ming had already comprehended the concept of wind, thus every step he took was filled the same lofty grace. He had chosen the “Foundation Movement Technique’ only to conceal the ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’.

Under such an intense battle of speed, both persons consumed a large amount of energy, especially Zhang Guanyu. His movements were larger and flashier than Lin Ming's, and he was also the one attacking, his consumption of true essence and physical strength was higher. After several dozen breaths, Zhang Guanyu's true essence began to show signs of exhaustion. At that moment, Lin Ming took one step forward and thrust out his spear!

Clang!

There was a harsh grating sound of metal colliding with metal, and Zhang Guanyu suddenly froze. His sword was set in front of his body, blocking Lin Ming's spear.

Zhang Guanyu was startled and uncertain as he looked at Lin Ming. He had just been about to revolve more true essence and release a new round of offensive attacks, but Lin Ming had suddenly struck out at his heart with his spear!

In the throes of such fast movements, Zhang Guanyu's ability to dodge should have been very strong. He should have been able to easily avoid the spear like Lin Ming had avoided his sword. He did not know why, but Lin Ming's spear seemed to follow his movements and rush toward his heart, so Zhang Guanyu had no choice but to lift his sword to fend it.

But how could a soft sword block a heavy spear?

Zhang Guanyu could only pour a vast amount of true essence into the sword blade, and the result was that his blood was sent tumbling in his effort to block the spear, and his bodily flow was sent into a maddening disorder.

"He saw through my movements? Impossible! The movement ability I study comes from the Seven Profound Valleys' top-tier movement technique 'Shadowless Acacia'. Not only that, but my movements were all erratic, and yet his spear that he sent found me; how could a thrust be so accurate?" Zhang Guanyu had a great sense of humiliating frustration in his heart. His strongest point was his speed, but in terms of speed, he had been completely suppressed by Lin Ming. He only felt that the dazzling movement abilities he displayed were like a clown in a play; it was all useless work that had been ruined by a single thrust from Lin Ming!

“You… how did you do this?”

“Your sword cut open the wind, so the wind simply betrayed you.” Lin Ming said with a slight smile. After having comprehended the concept of wind, Lin Ming did not even need to use his eyes to look at Zhang Guanyu’s movements. As long as he perceived the sensations of the wind, he was able to instantly judge Zhang Guanyu’s position and path of movement.

Zhang Guanyu certainly could not understand the meaning behind Lin Ming’s words. His cheeks twitched and he coldly said, “Just some misleading tricks!”

“You truly let me be startled very much. Good, very good! I will put forth my complete strength to kill you!” Zhang Guanyu extended his left hand’s index and middle finger. He cut it with his longsword, and a wisp of fresh blood left his body and entered into the blade.

At the same time, Zhang Guanyu’s face began to turn a rosy red. And from that rosy red he turned to the color of jade. His arms began to turn translucent, as if there were lights in body.

“’Divine Acacia Power’! This is the ‘Divine Acacia Power’!” Those present that had a wide range of knowledge immediately recognized what cultivation method it was that Zhang Guanyu had displayed at this time.

“The Seven Profound Valleys’ ‘Divine Acacia Power’! This is a cultivation method that is only passed down to core disciples; not even the Heavenly Abode disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House may learn it. Lin Ming is in danger!”

The ‘Divine Acacia Power’ had deep true essence, and its moves were all sinister and ruthless. After Zhang Guanyu displayed the ‘Divine Acacia Power’, it immediately brought a strange aura. This aura was not formidable, yet there was an alternating bizarre coldness of the loins and burning of the breath. It made one experience countless illusions, almost causing the mind to fall.

“So formidable!”

The young elites present were not some average people of low ability, but still, facing this kind of weird imposing aura from Zhang Guanyu, they were actually forced to stimulate true essence within their entire bodies to barely resist the attack of this aura.

Just seeing this aura caused them to revolve true essence throughout their entire bodies to just barely resist. If one were to face Zhang Guanyu’s attack head on, how would they be able to fight back?

“This is the ‘Divine Acacia Power’?” Facing Zhang Guanyu’s bizarre aura, Lin Ming began to revolve the true essence within the tiny units in his body. True essence filaments emerged from his body and easily tore apart this strange aura, shattering it into nihility.

Chapter 151 – Measure for Measure

Chapter 151 – Measure for Measure

…

…

…

“’Divine Acacia Power’? Is this it? How mediocre.” Lin Ming slightly shook his head. To think that this cultivation method would actually dare to call itself ‘Divine’. This mystic power was truly worthless.

Zhang Guanyu was formidable; this was not wrong. But all of his suppressing strength originated from his Bone Forging stage cultivation. As for this ‘Divine Acacia Power’, this cultivation brought forth a thick true essence, but it was impure.

Perhaps it was because he had cultivated his carnal power with so many others, but whatever it was had caused impure true essence to mix into his body that hadn’t yet been fully refined, so it had become like this.

“Big but not firm; flashy but lacking all substance.” Lin Ming quickly made a judgment; he could break through all of this with his ‘Flow like Silk’ technique!

“Lin Ming, you ridiculed me that I could not break through to the second layer of the ‘Divine Acacia Power’, and you’re not wrong. Right now I am only at the Large Success stage of the ‘Divine Acacia Power’s’ first layer. For now, let’s see just how long you can even deal with the ‘Divine Acacia Power’s’ Large Success of the first layer!”

“More useless words. Make your move.”

Lin Ming held his spear in one hand and pointed it straight at Zhang Guanyu. The silvery-white 1200 jin Heavy Profound Soft Spear began to tremble from Lin Ming's striking aura. The air around them began to shudder as ripples appeared that were visible to the naked eye, seeming as if they could tear anything they touched to shreds. This effect was caused by the advancement of 'Flow like Silk', when that terrifying vibrating true essence was poured into the Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

This power clashed against Zhang Guanyu's aura, and the imaginary sounds of weapons striking each other reverberated in the air. In this moment, as Lin Ming stood up tall and commanding, the grandiose aura that he emitted cause the hearts of the young noble girls to madly jump.

"Receive my sword, 'Ecstasy Cut'!" As Zhang Guanyu cried out, an illusionary sword appeared in the air, shrouded with a jade light, as if it was being bathed in red-hot flames. It turned into a series of phantasmal images that pierced towards Lin Ming.

This sword move was not too fast, but that move emitted an aura that caused one to feel as if there was a disorder in space. The sword light was incomparably sharp, and it had simultaneously fused the strange aura of the 'Divine Acacia Power' with Zhang Guanyu's proud speed.

Pof!

Zhang Guanyu pierced through Lin Ming's chest. Before the audience even had time to cry out in alarm, Lin Ming, who had been stabbed, began to slowly vanish…

Afterimage!

Lin Ming's body had already unified with the wind, and his movements were erratic, drifting from place to place. This time, he did not use that nuanced microscopic level of movement, but instead he had opened distance between them and increased the sphere of his range. After Zhang Guanyu had used the 'Divine Acacia Power', every move of his began to contain powerful true essence fluctuations. It would be easy to be injured if he tried to fend off that power in such a small area.

“Let’s see just who is faster!” Zhang Guanyu coldly snorted. His form rushed forward like a blinding tornado. Because he had already revolved the ‘Divine Acacia Power’, his speed had accelerated, and his shadow seemed to have integrated into nothingness. Every sword move he made was swifter and fiercer, like bolts of lightning during a thunderstorm; even his sword light was difficult to see!

Peng peng peng peng peng!

The sound of metal and true essence colliding in the air continuously sounded. Sword light and spear light glittered in the night sky. The formidable auras and shockwaves were as if a tremendous wind had swept up the entire audience.

The stone ground of the military field was broken apart like tofu, and a hail of stone chips flew into the air, scattering in all directions like a rain of arrows!

“Watch out!”

Although the military field was wide, the battle between these two young men was too crazily fierce in intensity; raging true essence had been fired into the ground!

“Retreat!”

“Step back!”

The young elites present frantically revolved their true essence to protect their bodies. Some young aristocrats who had low cultivations were protected by their bodyguards. Under their protection, they immediately retreated to a safe distance.

“This is simply too fearful. These flying rocks can put holes in the body!” An aristocratic junior watched with his own wide eyes as a crushed stone was sent shooting out by the collision of true essence. It struck a stone column near the military field, and the result was that it had created an inch deep hole before crumbling inside.

“This is only the aftermath of their true essence colliding. If I were to face these two, even if I were protecting myself with true essence, I fear I would already be turned into a hornets’ nest!” The one speaking was a martial artist at the early Altering Muscle stage. He was only an ordinary Altering Muscle martial artist, equivalent to a peak Viscera Training stage martial artist of the Seven Profound Martial House. He had heard the rumors about Lin Ming, but couldn’t imagine that he could be as powerful as they said. Now he had finally witnessed the power of Lin Ming, who was also only at the Altering Muscle stage.

“Why is Lin Ming’s speed so high? Isn’t the movement skill he chose the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’? Was he taught some top-tier movement technique after he began his Seven Profound Valleys’ core disciple test?” The person speaking thought that only a top-tier movement technique of the Seven Profound Valleys could have such terrifying velocity.

By now, an aristocratic junior more familiar with movement techniques spoke. She hesitated as she said, “I… I think that what Lin Ming is using is the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’.”

“What kind of joke are you playing!”

“I’m not lying. Look at Lin Ming’s steps. Those are the Slide-Step, Fly on Grass, Mouse Crossing Street, Carp Diving Through Dragon Gate… these are all the basic steps of the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’!”

Because Lin Ming had opened the distance between himself and Zhang Guanyu, there were some aristocratic juniors with high enough cultivations that they could just barely keep up with his movements. But they had never thought that these ghostly movements were from the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’.

As soon as this point was raised, everyone began looking at Lin Ming’s footsteps. The ‘Foundation Movement Technique’ was one of the common and looked down upon movement skills. Those present had some insight to this. As they looked, they were all completely startled into mindless shock.

This truly was the ‘Foundation Movement Technique!’

How was this possible!?

“Maybe… maybe this Lin Ming relied upon his monstrous perception, and rewrote the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’ to improve it, and that’s why he has this present speed?”

“You say that… that’s just going too far!

Boom boom boom!

Spear light surged, sword light chaotically danced, rocks broke, and endless true essence fluttered in the wind.

Although Lin Ming was a full stage below Zhang Guanyu, he did not seem to be suppressed by him at all.

“Cool Breeze Cut!”

“Bright Moonlight Sword!”

In this protracted battle, Zhang Guanyu’s offense became even more savage. In every few moves he would swipe out with a martial skill! Because Zhang Guanyu’s attack speed was so fast, in just one breath of time, he was able to release two martial skills at once!

“Damn, this is just too abnormal. He can also use martial skills like this? And with such thick true essence? If it were me, I would have already overdrawn my true essence after a few martial skills!”

“No, what’s more amazing is Lin Ming. Under the attacks of so many intense martial skills, can he still block them all. How is this possible? I heard that the manuals he chose were the ‘Foundation Spear Technique’ and the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’. Not only that, but his cultivation is also inferior to Zhang Guanyu's, so how is he managing to stop all these martial skills?

Some aristocratic juniors thought that was completely inconceivable. In their view, how could normal moves stop a martial skill, especially so many of them?

"True essence manifestation..." A slightly cold voice suddenly sounded out.

As soon as everyone turned to look, they were immediately surprised. The one speaking was Ling Sen!

Since the young elites of Sky Fortune City were invited to this grand banquet, of course Ling Sen, who was the elder senior apprentice brother of the Seven Profound Martial House's Heavenly Abode had also been invited. It was only that he had arrived very late.

True essence manifestation could be used during any normal attack. The released true essence was able to condense and substantialize into a true form, so that every normal strike one made would be comparable to an ordinary martial artist's martial skill.

Ling Sen knew as soon as Lin Ming had attained the sixth rank on the Ranking Stone, that he had been able to manifest his true essence.

Lin Ming was only at the early Altering Muscle stage, while Ling Sen himself had just reached a half-step into the Bone Forging stage several months ago. Even now, he was only barely able to touch the threshold of true essence manifestation.

Moreover, what Ling Sen was most spooked by was not this true essence manifestation, but Lin Ming's movement!

Ling Sen's appearance had caught the attention of many people. After all, Ling Sen's eyesight was far beyond all of them.

“Senior Apprentice Brother Ling, isn’t true essence manifestation a level that only a Pulse Condensation martial artist can achieve? Isn’t Lin Ming only at the Altering Muscle stage? This… isn’t this just too abnormal?”

“Senior Apprentice Brother Ling, is Lin Ming displaying the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’? How come his speed is so quick?”

Ling Sen took a deep breath, and slowly said, “What Lin Ming is displaying, is truly the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’.

After Ling Sen confirmed their suspicious, everyone gasped as if the air had been sucked out of them. Naturally, none of them doubted Ling Sen’s words.

“Senior Apprentice Brother Ling, how can the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’ be so fast?”

Ling Sen stayed silent. Even though Lin Ming was using the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’, it seemed as if there was some profound mystery contained within his steps; something that he couldn’t grasp. If there was anything different about the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’ that he knew about, then it would seem as if this version of the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’ contained some kind of soul and charm. This set of movements was alive!

…………..

Zhang Guanyu’s martial skills that he used began to grow swifter and more violent. Because martial skills required some time to activate, Zhang Guanyu had also mixed in the skill of inscription from the inscription symbol that Lin Ming had drawn. With Zhang Guanyu’s status, he did not lack any high-level martial skills. The power of this skill of inscription was not too great, but the speed with which he could use it was quicker, thus Zhang Guanyu repeatedly used it.

“Haha, how does it feel being struck by the very skill of inscription that you created? Isn’t it a wonderful feeling? You are just a person who digs his own grave!” Zhang Guanyu insolently laughed.

“You really do speak so much nonsense. Your movements are so fast and the wind coming from you is so fierce, you should be afraid of that wind cutting your blithe tongue!”

“Humph, you court death!”

These two people began increase their fighting tempo, and each strike was more brutal than the last. This level of battle, even a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist would have their heart tremble if they saw this!

“Ecstasy Cut!” Zhang Guanyu’s sword filled with true essence, and he took a forceful step forwards. The sword began to emit a keen wail, and the sword thrust out like a bolt of lightning. This was a martial skill that had been enhanced by the ‘Divine Acacia Power’; even sound seemed to be swallowed by it.

‘Flow like Silk’!

Lin Ming turned and thrust his spear out. Vibrating true essence scattered from him in all directions, and surged towards Zhang Guanyu like a raging tide. With the medium-grade human-step treasure, the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, Lin Ming’s ‘Flow like Silk’ had become even more powerful.

However, as Zhang Guanyu faced this vibrating true essence, he only grinned like a madman. The true essence in his sword suddenly contracted, and congealed into a sharp shape just like needle, stabbed out at Lin Ming.

Poh poh poh poh poh poh!

The layer upon layer of wavelike vibrating true essence was punctured by Zhang Guanyu’s sword as if it were strip of cloth, and he instantly arrived in front of Lin Ming!

Clang!

Zhang Guanyu’s sword stabbed at Lin Ming’s spear shaft. The straight Heavy Profound Soft Spear was immediately impacted by a formidable strength and turned into a silver crescent.

Chapter 152 – Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead

Chapter 152 – Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead

…

…

…

That sword in Zhang Guanyu's hands was a high-grade human-step treasure. If Lin Ming had been holding the dark purple elastic iron spear, then this sword would have already pierced straight through the spear shaft!

Lin Ming only felt an unrivaled sharp strength vigorously transmit through him, and his body flew back in the air. He tumbled backwards for several dozens of feet before using his own strength to hold himself down, but the blood in his chest was still roiling from the impact.

So strong!

Lin Ming could not help but acknowledge that even though Zhang Guanyu's true essence was impure, his strength was utterly dreadful!

"That slender sword bent a heavy spear. His sword was flooded with true essence, and with that irresistible strength, that sword forced me back so much. Zhang Guanyu is truly fierce."

Zhang Guanyu was grinning like demon. He said, "Lin Ming, I told you that I already saw through you 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist'! As long as I concentrate my true essence into a thin shape, I can use it to pierce through your vibrating true essence, and expose your weakness!"

“Expose my weakness?” Lin Ming smiled. This move might be somewhat useful to deal with the original ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’, but against ‘Flow like Silk’, it was pointless. The total wisdom of the Realm of the Gods had accumulated for countless millennia and repeatedly tempered into the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’; how could it be something that someone as insignificant like Zhang Guanyu could break?

“Lin Ming, resign yourself to fate. Today, I will end the myth of your genius!” Zhang Guanyu howled like a depraved beast. The sword in his hand began to emit a keening wail, as if there were countless ghosts circling around the blade. With a loud explosion, the stones under Zhang Guanyu’s feet began to crack apart.

“Hehe, just die! Life Severing Dead Bone Blade!”

“Life Severing Dead Bone Blade?” Qin Xingxuan frowned. This was a an incomparably vicious and evil move, and it was also the most powerful maneuver within the first layer of the ‘Divine Acacia Power’.

The ‘Divine Acacia Power’ was a unification of martial skills and heart mantras. It was a demonic art that belonged to the path of evil. This so called demonic art was one that was filled with heretical and diabolical ways. For instance using women, devouring, going berserk, these were all methods in order to increase one’s strength and cultivation in a short time. It was easy for this cultivation method to cause one to be taken over by their darkest obsessions as if they were possessed by the devil. The sword would become slanted, and the style was insidious beyond measure; it could even cause damage to oneself.

The ‘Life Severing Dead Bone Blade’ was a sword move that released countless wronged spirits. Once this blade stabbed into its enemy, their true essence would be reversed, and it could absorb their flesh and blood life essence. If one’s cultivation was poor, then with a stab of the sword, it could even turn an enemy into bleached bones!

Even a martial artist at a high cultivation who had thick true essence would suffer a miserable fate if they were stabbed by this sword. Their body would lose much of their inner vitality, and it would cause the body to atrophy and wither away. The meridians, muscles, and tendons would all be wasted away, until they were finally turned into a disabled vegetable.

This kind of disability could only be cured by the rare material Human Lifedeath Boneflesh. Otherwise, it was simply impossible to cure. And this kind of rare material treasure was actually not something that a large sect like the Seven Profound Valleys could even make!

If one were to be struck by this ‘Life Severing Dead Bone Blade’, then their entire life’s martial arts cultivation would be half wiped out, or even completely ruined.

However, although this ‘Life Severing Dead Bone Blade’ was a perverse and malefic move, one could not freely use it. This sword move would cause whoever used it to have their mind and soul eroded by the unjust ghosts, and it would cause their personality to turn to chaos, until they finally became a mind-touched devil.

“This Zhang Guanyu is truly black hearted; he would actually dare to use this move. He is determined to destroy Lin Ming.” Qin Xingxuan was a core disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys, so she understood what effect the ‘Life Severing Dead Bone Blade’ had.

When she said this, Wang Yuhan’s heart suddenly painfully clenched. Lin Ming’s ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ had already been suppressed. How would he confront this ‘Life Severing Dead Bone Blade’?

Zhang Guanyu’s sword had not even thrust out, yet Lin Ming could already feel a chilly wind blowing at him. This icy wind seemed to turn into a mass of aggrieved souls that wrapped around his hands and feet, suddenly slowing down Lin Ming’s movements.

Lin Ming frowned. “Ah? This sword move can actually affect my movements?”

“Haha! This is my strongest move; it is impossible for you to hide!” Zhang Guanyu let loose a demented cackle. His handsome face had already been completely twisted from before, and now it was just a mockery of a human. Countless ghosts emerged from Zhang

Guanyu’s body. His hair was completely loose and blown up by the chilling breeze. Like this, he seemed to have wholly become a demon.

“Don’t worry; I will let you keep your life!” Zhang Guanyu cried out like a evil monster, and his sword thrust towards Lin Ming. Those myriad ghosts condensed onto Zhang Guanyu’s sword, and the sword blade completely turned white like bleached bones. It was as if Zhang Guanyu was not holding a sword in his hand, but a white bone!

Seeing this sword thrust reflected in his eyes, Lin Ming let loose a roar. True essence began to rapidly circulate throughout his body, and the Heretical God Seed in Lin Ming’s heart began to issue forth a blazing light. The highly compressed true essence scattered outwards and rushed into Lin Ming’s body and blood.

‘Heretical God Force’ – open!

The first layer of the ‘Heretical God Force’ could instantly increase one’s strength and true essence by 50%. In addition to the increased power from the ‘Strife Seal’, Lin Ming only felt his entire body blazing with fighting spirit!

Not only that, but all the accumulated momentum from his previous collisions with Zhang Guanyu instantly erupted at once. His spear thrust out and swept away the world!

As his unstoppable momentum burst forth, all the haunting ghosts that had affected his speed were blown away without a trace. Lin Ming was instantly restored to his peak speed. However, he did not intend to hide. His body contained a raging war-like thirst. He was like a volcano that had reached the critical point; he must erupt!

“I’ll let you see, the true ‘Flow like Silk’! —“

“Flood Dragon Goes to Sea!”

Lin Ming’s spear flew forwards. With a loud explosion, the ground underneath his feet completely ruptured. The cracks spread like an ever widening spider web. For a time, it was as if a true flood dragon had rushed out from Lin Ming’s silver spear.

True essence rioted and space seemed to be compressed as a terrible strength formed visible ripples in the air. It swept through the broken tiles on the floor, and scattered them like a hurricane!

Bang!

Lin Ming's spear which contained the peak of his strength struck Zhang Guanyu's 'Life Severing Dead Bone Blade'.

In that moment, all the tiny units within Lin Ming's body began to vibrate together, and instantly turned into 5000 filaments of true essence. These 5000 true essence filaments were just like 5000 ominous, little, and ferocious flood dragons that rushed at Zhang Guanyu.

Cha cha cha cha cha cha!

The 'Life Severing Dead Bone Blade' that held so many ghosts was similar to waste paper as the small flood dragons lunged in and bit through!

This was a completely one-sided crushing!

The 5000 true essence filaments broke through the 'Life Severing Dead Bone Blade', and immediately rushed into Zhang Guanyu just like a rampaging pack of wild beasts.

Zhang Guanyu had already reached the Bone Forging stage, and true essence had sunk into his bones; his inner body's defensive capabilities were simply amazing. But how could this keep off 5000 true essence threads of vibrating true essence enhanced by the 'Heretical God Force'?

"Ah ah ah ah!"

Zhang Guanyu issued a piercing scream that turned into pitiful wails. Many of his organs had been torn, countless blood vessels had ruptured, and fresh blood spurted out from his body. Zhang Guanyu dropped his sword. It was as if his entire body had been turned inside out, and his body was like a broken bag of blood that crumpled to the ground.

There was total silence among the audience. Zhang Guanyu's strongest move, the most brutal and savage finishing blow of the 'Divine Acacia Power's' first layer – 'Life Severing Dead Bone Blade', had actually been sent flying with one thrust of Lin Ming's spear!

Looking at the arena under Lin Ming's feet, and the ring of cracks that were like a giant spider web that spread for dozens of feet, this was the utterly cataclysmic power which was created by the overwhelming true essence and strength of a monstrous genius!

The Seven Profound Martial House Master had given Lin Ming a test to defeat Zhang Guanyu in 4 months. Now, he had finished in only two and a half months!

And not only that, but he defeated Zhang Guanyu in his strongest state with the might of a single spear!

Lin Ming's Heavy Profound Soft Spear did not even have an inscription symbol placed on it!

This was just too terrifying. With Lin Ming, no matter how impossible things seemed, it would become a likely possibility.

………………

Zhang Guanyu's five organs had been broken, and he had lost a massive amount of blood. But still, his facial muscles contorted as if they were about to break, and his heart was filled to the brim with agonizing hatred!

"Lin Ming, I will kill you!"

Zhang Guanyu bit his tongue, and reached out a hand to the gray spatial ring he had.

This scene immediately aroused Lin Ming's vigilance. He clearly remembered that before this fight began, Ouyang Dihua had quietly given Zhang Guanyu a spatial ring; that was the same one he was now reaching for.

With Ouyang Dihua's background in the Seven Profound Valleys, anything he gave was certainly not some commonplace object.

Lin Ming's heart was filled with a great sense of crisis. Without a word, he aimed his spear at Zhang Guanyu's hand, and shot out the Heavy Profound Soft Spear!

Whoosh!

The 1200 jin Heavy Profound Soft Spear broke free with a shrill sound as it flew out; the inherent power within it was extremely horrifying!

Zhang Guanyu had just taken out the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead, when that Heavy Profound Soft Spear pierced the palm of his hand. With mere flesh and blood that had already lost its true essence protection facing such a relentless strength, the results could be imagined!

Poh!

Zhang Guanyu's pale and slender hand was like a block of tofu that was smashed apart by a heavy hammer!

"Ah ah ah ah ah!" Zhang Guanyu held on to his broken wrist and screamed in pain. At this time, Lin Ming suddenly rushed forwards and aimed a palm at Zhang Guanyu's back.

'Pulse Cutting Palm!'

"Stop!"

Lin Ming's ears rang with the sound of Ouyang Dihua's shout. But Lin Ming did not listen to him, and still struck his palm towards Zhang Guanyu.

Ouyang Dihua coldly coughed, and his body that had been relaxed and sitting suddenly and violent rushed out. The chair he was sitting in was broken apart by the explosive strength and scattered everywhere.

Ouyang Dihua had wanted to wait for Zhang Guanyu to throw the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead and severely wound or even kill Lin Ming. The Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead was made by an array master of the Seven Profound Valleys; it could kill even an early Pulse Condensation Period martial artist. This sort of treasure could only be produced by a large sect, and it was an absolutely forbidden item within the mortal world.

Ouyang Dihua believed that if Lin Ming were to be directly struck by the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead, then he would meet certain death. Even if it only partially touched him, he would still be seriously injured or disabled.

But he had never expected that Lin Ming would be so decisive. Just at the moment when Zhang Guanyu had taken out the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead, Lin Ming had already thrown the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, and turned Zhang Guanyu's hand into ground meat!

Now Zhang Guanyu had already lost all of his strength to resist and yet Lin Ming still wanted to use a heavy hand to injure him; how could Ouyang Dihua idly sit by and do nothing? After all, Zhang Guanyu was intimately involved with the acquisition of the 12 Pure Yin girls. If Zhang Guanyu died, then the entire reason that he came to the Sky Fortune Kingdom would be for naught!

"Impudence!"

Seeing Lin Ming simply ignore his orders and still rush at Zhang Guanyu, Ouyang Dihua felt a rising rage in his heart. He raised his true essence and struck out a palm towards Lin Ming.

In this palm strike, Ouyang Dihua had mercilessly used his full strength; it was meant to seriously injure or even kill Lin Ming.

Just when he thought he had reached Lin Ming's path, and was prepared to kill Lin Ming, Lin Ming's speed suddenly shot up!

'Golden Roc Shattering the Void'!

Lin Ming used the powered state of the ‘Heretical God Force’ to display the ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’. In that instant, his speed had reached an extreme velocity. Compared to when he had faced Zhang Guanyu a moment ago, he was over 50% faster!

This phantom-like speed had already far exceeded Ouyang Dihua’s maximum speed.

Ouyang Dihua’s palm hit nothing but air!

Chapter 153 – Oppressing Aura

Chapter 153 – Oppressing Aura

…

…

…

Peng!

Ouyang Dihua's palm wind struck a stone column that was at the edge of the military field and instantly split it apart.

Meanwhile, Lin Ming had already flickered like a ray of light to Zhang Guanyu's side. His palm struck down, and a merciless handprint appeared on Zhang Guanyu's back.

'Pulse Cutting Palm'!

Lin Ming's true essence infiltrated into Zhang Guanyu's body. At this time, Zhang Guanyu had already completely lost any means of resistance, so the true essence rapidly spread out, unobstructed, across all of Zhang Guanyu's meridians. His meridians were smashed apart by the rushing true essence, including many key points, pores, and all else; everything was utterly ravaged!

Zhang Guanyu stiffly groaned, and fainted!

This sudden change in events caused everyone to gasp. Lin Ming had ignored Ouyang Dihua's command, and moreover he had abruptly broken through Ouyang Dihua's interference to strike a palm upon Zhang Guanyu.

Did this not mean that Lin Ming's speed was quicker than Ouyang Dihua's?

"Ouyang Dihua actually could not stop Lin Ming! Lin Ming is too terrifying!"

"Ouyang Dihua is the direct disciple of an elder, he's definitely not some ordinary Pulse Condensation Period martial artist, and Lin Ming is only at the Altering Muscle stage…"

These people discussed in a low voice with each other through true essence sound transmission. The looks upon their faces as they gazed at Lin Ming were filled with reverence, and even fear.

After he used a single palm to cut off the root of so many future troubles, Lin Ming deliberately picked up the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead that was by Zhang Guanyu. Although it was the first time that he had seen something like this, Lin Ming could approximately guess what it did. It must be some kind of destructive concealed weapon.

As he examined the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead, Lin Ming could feel a tingling sensation akin to arrows piercing his back. He calmly turned around to see Ouyang Dihua balefully gazing at him.

Ouyang had never been as angry as he was today. He was already mad enough that Lin Ming had ignored his order, but what he could not accept the most, was that his attack in which he had invested his full strength to stop Lin Ming, had actually been evaded by him, and thus failed. This caused him to lose a great amount of face!

He was a martial artist at the Pulse Condensation Period. He was 24 years old, and was also a direct disciple of a Seven Profound Valleys elder. Lin Ming was only a quasi-core disciple, 15 years old, and his cultivation was at the early Altering Muscle stage. He had actually been beaten by Lin Ming, and his palm had struck nothing but empty air. He could only helplessly look on as this little brat struck Zhang Guanyu with a heavy hand. He was older than Lin Ming by 9 years; his life had just been all in vain!

Now where had all his dignity gone?

His martial talent was not anything too outstanding. The reason he was able to become a direct disciple of an elder was because his uncle was the third elder of the Acacia Faction.

What he hated the most was those that spoke behind his back and said, “This Ouyang Dihua only relied on his relations to become a core disciple. He has no skill at all.”

“Good! Very good! You did not listen to my orders and still maliciously attacked Zhang Guanyu when he had lost all ability to resist! Just by this alone, I can cripple you!” Ouyang Dihua clenched his fists, his eyes glazed over with hate as he wished he could just eat Lin Ming alive.

Lin Ming did not have an change of expression. He flashed the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead in his hand, and confidently said, “Sir Seven Profound Envoy, I think that you should recognize this. Zhang Guanyu wanted to use this against me. I don’t believe this is allowed in the rules of this duel. This is probably something that can only be refined by a large sect, its power can be imagined. How can you say he had lost the ability to resist?

“Is Sir Seven Profound Envoy’s meaning that I should hold out my neck and let him cut off my head? Should I have waited until Zhang Guanyu severely injured me before I dealt with him? I’m sorry; I’m simply not someone so noble. Also, there are many important people present. Since this thing’s power is so great, wouldn’t it be horrible if he threw this out and injured everybody?

“It doesn’t take much true essence to throw this. As long as Zhang Guanyu has even a breath of life left in himself, he can readily throw this out. That’s why, I had to stop him. I only put him to sleep. The palm I used was a bit heavy a moment ago, but I made sure not to remove Sir Zhang’s hand. I’m sorry, I truly do feel regret, but I was helplessly forced to act.

“Taking 10,000 steps back, I say that even if I was to be cruel, Sir Zhang and I have already signed a Life Death Contract before this, and we have even pressed our thumbs as proof, so that any life threatening wounds cannot be investigated. Mister Ouyang, don’t you remember?”

Lin Ming’s reasoning caused Ouyang Dihua to tremble with rage.

That palm was not too heavy?

Although Ouyang Dihua did not understand what profound mysteries were contained within that palm strike, what he certainly knew was that with Lin Ming's decisive and vicious movement, that palm absolutely had done some great harm to Zhang Guanyu.

Coupled with the fact that before, he had already ruined Zhang Guanyu's right hand, and turned it into nothing more than ravaged meat and broken bones. Without rare and valuable medicine that could regrow limbs, it would simply not heal well. It seemed that from here on out, Zhang Guanyu's martial path had come to a full stop.

This Zhang Guanyu was a person whose heart was simply too proud. He could not tolerate even a small failure, much less a failure of this level!

Perhaps his heart of martial arts had been totally defeated, and he would never be able to recover!

Zhang Guanyu's entire life could now be considered over.

It just so happened that Lin Ming's vicious move was actually not wrong nor against the rules. Just before, Zhang Guanyu had wanted to kill Lin Ming, and this Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead was the evidence.

According to the regulations of the Seven Profound Martial House, one could not kill an opponent in battle or deliberately disable them when they had lost the ability to resist counterattacks, or else they would be subject to certain punishments.

But now Lin Ming hadn't actually killed his opponent, nor had he disabled his opponent once they had lost any means to resist. What he did was a legitimate defense, so there was simply no violation of any rules. This caused Ouyang Dihua to almost go crazy with vexation.

Not only that, but they had also signed the Life Death Contract before the duel, so Ouyang Dihua could not find fault with Lin Ming.

Therefore, he had no means to deal with Lin Ming. He was a 24 year old man while Lin Ming was only a 15 year old youth. If he relied on his cultivation to intimidate, it would be seen as an elder bullying the younger generation. If he had no appropriate reason to deal with Lin Ming, then any actions could not be justified.

Moreover, Ouyang Dihua thought back to Lin Ming's elusive speed, and he began to lack self-confidence. If he was able to suppress Lin Ming with his absolute power, then that would be good. However, if he still could not defeat Lin Ming in several moves, then he would really want to hit his head on a wall and die. This nine year gap would simply be too laughable a matter!

But today, he could not forget this matter or let it go, or else his dignity would be gone!

The atmosphere was very solemn and grim. Anybody could see that the sparks between Lin Ming and Ouyang Dihua were about to burst. These two were a future Seven Profound Envoy and a current Seven Profound Envoy that were in opposition to each other!

Of course, no matter how one looked at it, Lin Ming was the weaker party.

"Lin Ming is in danger… Ouyang Dihua is not someone to be trifled with. Even the Seven Profound Martial House Master has to treat him with a bit of respect."

"The youth has courage. Now that Lin Ming has provoked Ouyang Dihua before he has grown, I'm afraid that Lin Ming will have dark days from here on out."

"Don't look down on Lin Ming. Just look at all the enemies Lin Ming has made; Zhang Cang, Zhu Yan, Zhang Guanyu… all have been defeated by Lin Ming. Zhang Cang and Zhu Yan are too weak, but leaving them aside, isn't Zhang Guanyu at the peak, whether it is cultivation or individual strength?"

The truth was that there was an enemy that no one dared to name out loud. This was the Tenth Prince, Yang Zhen.

Yang Zhen had been tightly and significantly suppressed by Lin Ming. He could only smile it front of Lin Ming, not caring about keeping any face. He only needed to look at those who cared about face, such as Zhang Cang, Zhu Yan, and Zhang Guanyu, to see that they were all finished. The Tenth Prince Yang Zhen was wise, every day he could play ball with Lin Ming was an extra day.

Many of those present shared a different view. Some worried over Lin Ming, and some, who liked to gloat over others' misfortunes, looked forward to seeing Lin Ming be played to death by Ouyang Dihua.

Lin Ming was powerful, but, behind Ouyang Dihua was an elder of the Seven Profound Valleys. Such a character could easily send down a Seven Profound Decree that could even cause a nation to switch rulers, and change the name of the land. Even if Lin Ming reached the Pulse Condensation period, he would not dare to move against Ouyang Dihua, otherwise that would simply be courting death.

In all the controversy, Bai Jingyun was silently biting her lips as she looked at Lin Ming with a very complex expression.

She still had half a year… the day on which her filial obligations to mourn the death of her father for three years would end, was in half a year.

After the mourning period had ended, that was the day Ouyang Dihua would propose marriage.

Bai Jingyun did not expect that her grandfather, who had to worry about the family interests, would have the courage to refuse this marriage. She also didn't expect that Ouyang Dihua would simply forget about her.

Although Ouyang Dihua hadn't even spoken a few words to her at the banquet today, that was only because the timing was not suitable. Bai Jingyun had clearly seen Ouyang Dihua's eyes when he looked at her, and those eyes were filled with greed and immorality.

Bai Jingyun had already resigned herself to her fate, but now, she saw that Lin Ming and Ouyang Dihua were enemies.

This caused her heart to clench.

Maybe…

Just maybe… there was a 1% possibility that Lin Ming could rescue her from the fiery pit…

………

On the military field, Ouyang Dihua took one step at a time towards Lin Ming. Every time he took one step, his horrible aura would become one point stronger. His footsteps caused the hearts of those who looked to beat as if they were resonating with them. This feeling was very uncomfortable.

"Since I cannot move against you, then I will force you to submit!"

As Ouyang Dihua fiercely though this, the aura of his body suddenly erupted. He wanted to rely on the virtue of his grand presence to oppress Lin Ming until he could not persist any longer and had to yield!

Ouyang Dihua had already cultivated his 'Divine Acacia Power' to the peak of the third layer. He was just missing one step before he could break through to the fourth layer. His imposing aura was much more perilous than Zhang Guanyu's. With every step, all sorts of chaotic illusions and demons seemed to rush upwards like a swelling tide that covered Lin Ming.

Those standing around Ouyang Dihua were forced to retreat. This aura was extremely weird and ghastly. As soon as it spread to them, the immediately felt illusory nightmares appear before them, and their minds almost failed.

"My Lord, be careful!" A guard saw that his master already gone stupid, and saliva was dribbling from the corners of his mouth. He wanted to shake him up and wake him from this nightmare, but he knew it was useless. He could only throw him over his back and carry him beyond the range which Ouyang Dihua's terrifying aura covered.

Many of the elite present had martial artist cultivation that was too low to resist the nature of Ouyang Dihua's perplexing aura. Even those martial artists at the Flesh Training and Viscera Training stages did not feel good, and were forced to revolve the true essence within their entire bodies to resist Ouyang Dihua's oppressive presence. There were those whose cultivations were simply too weak, and, not giving any thought to face, simply ran away.

A Pulse Condensation Period martial artist from the Seven Profound Valleys was truly formidable!

These elite nobles in the audience had only been brushed by this aura and yet they had suffered so miserably. Lin Ming was actually bearing the full brunt of the pressure on the field; how difficult it was could only be imagined.

But when everyone finally, with a great deal of effort, stabilized their own minds and consciousnesses against the chaotic illusions, they were stunned as they looked towards Lin Ming.

They also saw Lin Ming standing idly by, looking unconcerned. Both of his hands were held against his chest, and he was freely standing in the center of the military field. The Heavy Profound Soft Spear was hugged in his arms, up against his chest. And as they turned to his expression, they saw that Lin Ming was looking towards Ouyang Dihua as if he were just some playful monkey.

Chapter 154 – Qin Ziya

Chapter 154 – Qin Ziya

…

…

…

The ‘Divine Acacia Power’ was ultimately a deviant and perverse cultivation method. After one cultivated the ‘Divine Acacia Power’, their aura would be filled with a twisted and immoral momentum. If a martial artist was enveloped in this, their minds would be unable to cope with the endlessly aberrant illusions, and they would expose the ugliness of their hearts.

But Lin Ming’s heart of martial arts was especially pure and true. Not only that, but Lin Ming cultivated the extreme Yang ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’, so his true essence was incomparably thick. His martial arts aura was like an unyielding bridge, motionless like a mountain. Because of this, these endless illusory phantoms were simply a joke to Lin Ming.

Ouyang Dihua’s cultivation was only at the Pulse Condensation Period; even if he was at the Houtian realm, Lin Ming would still be able to resist his aura!

That’s why the current scene was like such. Despite how Ouyang Dihua exerted his aura, Lin Ming remained unimpressed and unmoved. This caused Ouyang Dihua to look like nothing more than a stage clown!

As everyone present saw this scene, they were shocked silly. While facing Ouyang Dihua’s oppressive aura, Lin Ming did not appear to be the least bit affected by it!

This was just too ridiculous! It was simply a slap to the face!

Within the crowd, Bai Jingyun was blankly looking towards Lin Ming's figure. She hadn't thought that under such a terrible pressure, Lin Ming could remain calm and tranquil as if he possessed a worthy arrogance that looked down upon all others.

To Lin Ming, Ouyang Dihua's oppressive aura was like a meager spider web that was easily shaken off.

Regardless of whether it was a moment ago when he was facing Zhang Guanyu, or now, Lin Ming's aura was peerlessly sharp. It was able to destroy even unbreakable defenses; it was like a long spear that cut through all!

At that moment, Bai Jingyun's heartbeat sped up with bewilderment.

He was calm and restrained like an immutable mountain.

But when combat broke out, he was like a limitless edge, stunning the world!

Maybe… just maybe… he could win!

Thinking this, Bai Jingyun grasped the collar of her dress, short of breath.

In the tiny, desolate corner where she was standing, no one had noticed her expression. This included Murong Zi, who was quietly standing with her head c*cked…

On the military field, the longer Lin Ming remained calm, the more Ouyang Dihua was discredited and thoroughly embarrassed.

Some people could not bear to continue watching. Just how would Ouyang Dihua end this play today?

To those of a lofty status, what they regarded as the most important was face. And Lin Ming was simply not giving him any face!

“Lin Ming is just too abnormal. Still, I don’t think it’s wise for him to be so resistant to Ouyang Dihua’s aura. He should yield a little bit, and give Ouyang Dihua an opportunity to step down.” Some people murmured.

“Yield?” Murong Zi happened to hear. She sneered and coldly said, “If Lin Ming really did yield even a little, then he would not be able to resist Ouyang Dihua’s aura. Ouyang Dihua will not let Lin Ming go so easily. He will have Lin Ming be just like those idiots a moment ago, with their drooling mouths, dull eyes, and acting like some buffoons. That’s simply no better than a pig.”

The atmosphere became increasingly intense. Since things had already come to this point, it had long passed any chance of peaceful resolution.

But at this moment, a boisterous laughter suddenly sounded in the air. This laughter was particularly rich; when one first heard it, it was still very far away, and in the next second it rang in everyone’s ears.

Before anyone could react, a man in flowing white robes appeared in front of the crowd, holding a long zither in his arms.

The man was tall and slender, with thick, bushy eyebrows. Standing there, he was cloaked in a timeless grace. Those who saw him could not help but feel a sense of palpable awe emerging from their hearts.

As this person appeared, the suppressing pressure that Ouyang Dihua was emitting suddenly scattered into the wind. Without a doubt, this person’s strength was far more formidable than Ouyang Dihua.

“Martial… Martial House Master?”

Qin Xingxuan was shocked. She rarely saw the mysterious Seven Profound Martial House Master. His movements were erratic and he drifted from place to place. His strength was incomparably deep. He had already stalled at the peak Houtian boundary for a very long time, and it was said that he had already taken a half-step into the Xiantian realm!

Ouyang Dihua's mouth twitched as soon as he saw this man, who was holding a long zither, appear, and he took advantage of this moment to withdraw his aura. This zither-holding man was the Seven Profound Martial House Master, Qin Ziya.

Before Qin Ziya joined the Seven Profound Valleys, he was only a mere wandering musician. Afterwards, he had done his obeisance and entered into the Seven Profound Valleys' Zither Faction. At that time, he was already 20 years old.

Since Qin Ziya had started cultivating martial arts at 20 years of age, he had already missed the golden period for a martial artist to cultivate. Still, as things were, he managed to unexpectedly enter into the Pulse Condensation Period at 31 years, and then stepped into the Houtian realm at 36 years of age. When he was 45 years old he had reached the peak Houtian realm.

Such a talented genius of cultivation had shocked even the elders of the Seven Profound Valleys. However, it was a great loss that he had missed the golden age for a martial artist to cultivate. So even though Qin Ziya was reborn, he had encountered an enormous bottleneck as he tried to enter the Xiantian realm. Now, he toured the world at his mercy of his own whim, and also held the post of Sky Fortune Kingdom's Seven Profound Martial House Master. This was because he wished to travel and find a breakthrough in his mind and also in his zither skill.

"Sir Ouyang, can you consider giving me face, and consider this matter ended today? How about it?"

Qin Ziya said this, smiling. His voice had a very strange fondness, as though one were listening to a spring breeze.

After a silence, Ouyang Dihua quietly said, "Since Martial House Master Qin says so, I naturally will not pursue this matter."

Since Qin Ziya had personally showed up, Ouyang Dihua would certainly take this opportunity and show him respect. Ouyang Dihua was also a bit in awe of Qin Ziya. Once Qin

Ziya entered the Xiantian realm, he would also be an elder. With his talent in the Zither arts, his status would not necessarily be lower than his uncle's.

"Little Brother Lin, this is for you." Qin Ziya flicked his wrist. It wasn't clear how he moved, but a crimson colored Lingzhi the size of a baby's palm appeared in his hand.

With a wave of his hand, the Blood Lingzhi flew towards Lin Ming as if it had some sort of intelligence.

500 year old Blood Lingzhi!

After Lin Ming caught the Blood Lingzhi, he could feel the rich essence begin to flow into his hand. His heart couldn't help but rapidly beat with excitement.

A 500 year old Blood Lingzhi was extremely rare. Only a large sect would know the secret methods with which to cultivate it, and their survival rate were also very low.

Most Blood Lingzhi reached the end of their lifespan at 300 years of age. If the plant was not picked, then it would simply be wasted. A 300 year old Blood Lingzhi grew to the size of a washbowl, and was considered an incomparably wondrous miracle medicine in the world of mortal men.

This sort of Blood Lingzhi was already very precious. A Blood Lingzhi that was older would be much harder to find in the mortal world. There were only some sacred mountains that were rich in spiritual essence that the largest sects could look through.

When a Blood Lingzhi reached 300 years of age, its essence would begin to compress, and it would gradually decrease in size. A 400 year old Blood Lingzhi was the size of a scoop, but a 500 year old Blood Lingzhi was only the size of a baby's palm.

Although the Blood Lingzhi was smaller, what was concentrated was actually its enriching essence. This Blood Lingzhi was able to supplement one's flesh and body, causing a martial artist's vitality to be especially buoyant, and also increase one's strength.

A 500 year old Blood Lingzhi was a wondrous medicine that martial artists who seeked strength yearned for in their every waking dream.

As those present saw this faint aroma that was emitted by the crimson Blood Lingzhi, their hearts moved. Some people even took a deep gulp; this sort of miracle medicine simply could not be bought by money.

Before, Elder Wang had passed down a decree to Lin Ming. There were 4 promised rewards. They were the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, the 500 year old Blood Lingzhi, the Blue Miracle Pill, and the Body Spiritual Ichor. Although these rewards were staggeringly impressive, no one actually believed that Lin Ming could possible obtain them. But now, Lin Ming had obtained more than one. As for the rest, it was not an extreme impossibility that he could take those too.

This made those present feel jealous yet helpless. Lin Ming's strength had already been displayed before their eyes; there were no words they could say.

Lin Ming held the Blood Lingzhi in both hands and respectfully bowed to Qin Ziya. He said, "Thank you, Martial House Master."

"Haha, do not thank me. This Lingzhi is not mine, but from the Seven Profound Valleys to be a reward given to gifted disciples. Since you passed the test that I set for you, then you have earned this Blood Lingzhi."

Lin Ming placed the Blood Lingzhi inside his spatial ring and he also put away the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead that he had picked up. He had no intentions of giving this bead back to Ouyang Dihua. He guessed that Ouyang Dihua would not confront him over this, and moreover, Ouyang Dihua would not want to admit that he gave this bead to Zhang Guanyu.

As Ouyang Dihua saw Lin Ming's movement, his complexion became increasingly gloomy. 'Lin Ming, Lin Ming, since you covet the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead so much, then you should use it well. I will wait for the day that you casually experiment with it and then kill yourself in the explosion!'

Because of the duel between Zhang Guanyu and Lin Ming, the original act of the grand banquet had already completely lost any meaning. And now, with the appearance of the Seven Profound Martial House Master, Qin Ziya, the atmosphere had reached its climax.

As far as martial artists were concerned, to meet the Seven Profound Martial House Master was similar to a commoner meeting the emperor. He had supreme authority, and his strength far exceeded anyone else in the Sky Fortune Kingdom. Even if it were a famous Houtian master like Muyi or Wang Xuanji, in the presence of Qin Ziya, they weren't even worth mentioning.

Ouyang Dihua had no interest in staying any longer. He patiently controlled his temper and said a few polite words to Qin Ziya, and then flicked his sleeve and stormed away.

Qin Ziya had no intention to stay either. After all, he was a figure that liked to flit around with the wind. After he drank a few cups of tea, he also departed.

Of this grand banquet, although the original purpose had been completely washed away, most of the guests were still in high spirits. They had witnessed all kinds of battles; it could be said that the night had reached climax after climax, and they were fully satisfied.

Of course, there were also those that were in a grim mood, such as the Tenth Prince, Yang Zhen. He had never imagined that Zhang Guanyu would suffer a crushing defeat by Lin Ming, and even have his hand turned into mush.

Zhang Guanyu had wanted to cripple Lin Ming, and the result was that he became partially disabled. The Tenth Prince had just found an ally, but now that ally was already finished. Also, Zhang Guanyu was the one that linked him to Ouyang Dihua. Without Zhang Guanyu, it wasn't certain that Ouyang Dihua would continue supporting him.

Thinking this, Yang Zhen felt nothing but bitterness.

Lin Ming was simply his life's darkest nemesis.

Certainly, there was one present who was in a much grimmer mood. This was the Allied Trade Association's Head of the Zhang Family, Zhang Fengxian.

When Zhang Guanyu was taken away, Zhang Fengxian felt as if the raging blood in his heart was rolling. He was immediately filled with a monstrous killing intent, and wanted to tear Lin Ming to shreds. But his personality was different to Zhang Guanyu's. He was at the helm of the Allied Trade Association so he had to maintain his reasoning and calm. He knew that at this moment he could not deal with Lin Ming! If he was too hasty, then it would absolutely be his Allied Trade Association that would suffer.

Chapter 155 – Miniature Thunder Fire Killing Array

Chapter 155 – Miniature Thunder Fire Killing Array

….

…

…

'Since I've offended them, what's done is done, it's no big deal. Ouyang Dihua might be a little tricky to deal with, but I am not afraid of the Allied Trade Association at all.'

After all, the Allied Trade Association was only a civilian organization. It was true that they had a very deep pockets of resources and a long history, but they still had to comply with the rules of the Seven Profound Martial House.

But Ouyang Dihua was different. Even if he followed the rules of the Seven Profound Martial House on the surface, he might secretly try to murder him.

If the Allied Trade Association wanted to assassinate him, then that would provoke the utter outrage of the Seven Profound Martial House. Qin Ziya would never let this happen. The only result would be that the Allied Trade Association would meet with an apocalyptic disaster.

But if Ouyang Dihua wanted to assassinate him, then that was a different story. Ouyang Dihua had the backing of a Seven Profound Valleys elder. As long as he didn't leave any evidence, not even Qin Ziya could touch him, and he would finally have to drop the matter.

"I must be careful of Ouyang Dihua. Before I have the strength to resist him, I must go out as little as possible!"

“My top priority right now should be to increase my strength.”

As Lin Ming thought this, he took out two items from his spatial ring – the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead and the Blood Lingzhi.

He was not in a hurry to consume the Blood Lingzhi. Before, when he had taken the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill, there had been some pill toxins that were left in his body. He needed to cultivate for a longer period of time and completely refine the impurities out of his body, and wait for his true essence to stabilize before he could consume the Blood Lingzhi and fully absorb its effects.

As for the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead, although it was a one-time use item, its power didn’t seem small, and it was obviously valuable.

Lin Ming looked at this bead. He wanted to search for any clues that would indicate how to use it.

The bead was the side of a longan, and was an icy blue color. It had an extremely cold surface, and it was chillingly cold in his hand. He couldn’t discern anything special about it.

Lin Ming cautiously investigated the bead with his soul force. As soon as he began to probe, his mind moved.

“Mm? Array formation?”

In the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead was a myriad of dense runes. These were array symbols.

“The inscription symbols seemed to have not unified into a complete array formation, it seems to belong to... Mm, I see, I understand...”

In Lin Ming’s memories about array formations, there was more than the one kind that involved inscription symbols.

The second time that Lin Ming had entered into the infinite space of the Magic Cube, he had absorbed the soul fragment of a mighty elder array master. Lin Ming had completely sealed away this array master's array formation memories, and had not studied them.

The main reason for this was simply that his cultivation was at too low a realm, and he didn't have the ability or money to create those large arrays.

The original plan was to wait until he reached the Xiantian realm to begin studying the formation array memories again, but now, after having seen the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead, Lin Ming found something that surprised him.

"So an array formation can also be used like this..."

Lin Ming muttered as he looked at the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead.

He understood that this Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead was, in essence, a highly compressed thunder fire killing array.

Lin Ming had originally thought that an array formation had to be arranged in a large manner, and it could only be used passively. A person had to step inside the array formation before it could display its surpassing might.

Even the memories of array formation from the mighty elder from the Realm of the Gods were also like this.

That mighty elder knew many different varieties of complex array formations. If they had to be classified, they would be imprisoning arrays, killing arrays, illusory arrays, sealing arrays, and so forth.

The function of an imprisoning array was to trap the enemy within, a killing array was to kill an enemy, an illusory magic array was to let an enemy be lost in an endless dreamland so they could never awaken or to ruin their mental state, and a sealing array was to make seals.

Lin Ming never knew that an array formation could be condensed into such a small bead, and then thrown at others to attack them.

If the bead contained a killing array, it could kill people. If it contained an illusory array, it would cause the other party to be swarmed by countless phantasmal illusions.

During a battle, even if there was a great disparity in strength between two parties, if the weaker one were to throw a powerful bead like this, then they would likely change the tide of battle!

“What an imaginative idea!” As Lin Ming studied the array formations within the bead, he couldn’t help but praise the Seven Profound Valleys.

The Seven Profound Valleys had a legacy that dated back 600 years. The sect was founded by seven individuals, each with various abilities and strengths, including one that especially studied array formations.

Of course, it was not necessarily only the Seven Profound Valleys that had invented this ingenious method; it was likely that this was spread throughout the entire Sky Spill Continent.

This was the first time that Lin Ming had discovered something that was not found within the Realm of the Gods.

“Any plane cannot be underestimated, even if they have a short history. After all, in these tens of thousands of years, who knows how many geniuses have emerged!

“But of course, this bead is not necessarily something that cannot be found in the Realm of the Gods. It was very possible that the mighty elder array master hadn’t learned it yet.”

The Realm of the Gods was incomparably vast, and its legacies and inheritances were countless; not learning some things was inevitable.

Because of this bead, Lin Ming began to carefully fuse with the array formation memories from that elder array master. This integration took the entire evening and even lasted until late into the next morning. It was only then that Lin Ming finally sorted out all the detailed information.

“So that’s how it is. In this bead, fire and thunder are kept apart from each other. If they were primed with a bit of true essence, the fire and thunder would intersect, and it would explode. If someone doesn’t understand how to use this, it is very likely they would just blow themselves up!

“The energy contained in this tiny bead is extremely potent. If it were to explode next to an early Pulse Condensation Period martial artist, they would die!

“No wonder Ouyang Dihua gave me a strange look when I picked up this bead. He was looking forward to me killing myself in the explosion.”

With the fusion of the memories, Lin Ming had become completely clear on the roles and functions of the different symbols in the bead’s array formation. He even had a degree of certainty that he could produce a replica Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead. Of course, the one he produced would have a much weaker effect; at most it could deal with a Viscera Training stage martial artist.

‘The complexity of an array formation is much higher than that of inscription symbols. If I want to reach some achievements in array formation and produce a bead that has attack power higher than my own, then I will have to put in an extensive amount of time and energy. Right now I’m low on time, so I’ll have to leave this array formation for later.’

Although he was envious of the power of the different possible beads, these things still could not directly increase his strength. Since he needed to spend an overwhelming amount of time to study the intricacies, Lin Ming had delayed this for now.

After a long period of research, Lin Ming even found some ways to improve the Thunderbolt Devilfire bead, and could even enhance the power of the Thunderbolt Devilfire

Bead by several tenths. Of course, to complete this sort of improvement required that he had a foundation array formation technique that was high enough. At present, Lin Ming was unable to complete this task.

He used an entire night to study the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead. Although he didn’t have any substantial gains, the bead had given Lin Ming a great inspiration, and let him see another way to enhance his combat effectiveness.

Of course, the most fundamental way to enhance one’s own combat prowess was to look at oneself!

The first thing Lin Ming had to do now was to consolidate his Altering Muscle cultivation.

Also, he had to create an inscription symbol for the Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

Early on, Lin Ming had already selected a suitable inscription symbol. This inscription symbol technique had one character – ‘Astral’.

The ‘Astral’ inscription symbol did not have any attribute, but it was able to increase the efficiency of true essence by a mind boggling 50%, while simultaneously have a special skill of inscription – ‘Astral Spear’.

The reason this skill of inscription was special was because it did not increase the combat strength of a weapon. Instead, it extended a weapon’s range of attack.

After one activated ‘Astral Spear’, true essence would enter and become part of the spear. Theoretically, as long as a martial artist’s true essence was powerful enough, the spear could be infinitely extended!

The value of the rare materials required for this inscription symbol was steep. Although it was much easier than looking for those needed in the body inscription symbols, it was not so easy to collect them in a short time.

Lin Ming prepared a list of required materials and sent them to the Inscription Association. He would use his usual method, and trade rare materials for an inscription symbol. Those who wanted one of his inscription symbols would have to bring a rare and precious material that he needed.

....

Sky Fortune City, Allied Trade Association –

Zhang Guanyu had been lying comatose on the bed for an entire day and night. His face was pale white like funeral paper, and his right hand had been amputated from the wrist down. Unless he managed to find a miracle treasure that could regenerate a limb, he was destined to be forever crippled.

At Zhang Guanyu’s side were six maids carefully taking care of him. Suddenly, Zhang Guanyu’s eyelids moved.

“The Young Master has awakened!”

The maids saw Zhang Guanyu wake up, and immediately went to inform the masters. Soon, a very well maintained lady was heard trotting into the room. As she saw Zhang Guanyu’s miserable appearance, she broke down, and her tears were like a line of beads that rolled down her cheeks.

This lady was Zhang Guanyu’s mother and also Zhang Fengxian’s wife. As the first lady of the Allied Trade Association, she was an extremely cruel and vicious individual. As the saying went; like mother, like son. Zhang Guanyu’s perverse and demented personality was largely inherited from his mother.

“My son!” The lady tearfully wailed.

It seemed as if Zhang Guanyu had not even heard his mother’s mournful cries. He looked at his right arm’s amputated hand and his lips sorrowfully trembled. His hand was gone!

“My hand!”

Zhang Guanyu’s anger filled every fiber of his being, and he spat out a mouthful of fresh blood. As an extremely arrogant person, if he suffered such a major blow, it was easy for him to fly into a rage from the psychological damage. It was possible he might even go mad or berserk.

“No! There is still hope! I can cultivate the ‘Divine Acacia Power’ to the eighth layer or find some medicine that can regenerate limbs! There is still hope!” Zhang Guanyu madly clenched his teeth together and began to revolve the ‘Divine Acacia Power’. The legends said that if one cultivated the ‘Divine Acacia Power’ to the fabled eighth layer, it was even possible for dismembered limbs to be reborn!

But as he began to exercise his power, he only felt as if there were countless needles stabbing through his body!

As soon as he looked within himself, he found his meridians…his meridians had all been torn to shreds!

“No!!!”

Zhang Guanyu let out a roar, his vision went dark, and he immediately fainted.

As Zhang Guanyu fell into a coma again, his mother and the several maids were all thrown into immediate confusion. Ouyang Dihua was standing outside, and his look was gloomy throughout all of this. He understood; Zhang Guanyu was now crippled for life.

Now that Zhang Guanyu was crippled trash, half the plans that he came to the Sky Fortune Kingdom for were ruined!

It was now impossible to collect the 12 Pure Yin girls.

It was the Allied Trade Association that handled to purchasing and selling of maids throughout the various countries. They were the only ones who could cobble together 12 Pure Yin girls with the correct horoscope.

Ouyang Dihua clenched his fist. All of this was thanks to Lin Ming!

Not only did Lin Ming wreck his own good plans, but he had also ruined what face he had in front of everyone, ignored his commands, and had severely wounded Zhang Guanyu.

And what was most shameful was that he had not been able to strike Lin Ming, and his oppressive aura had no effect on him…

There was no way he could endure this insult.

“Lin Ming… I will definitely kill you!”

Chapter 156 – Devouring Lava Fire

Chapter 156 – Devouring Lava Fire

…

…

…

The news of Lin Ming crippling Zhang Guanyu quickly spread throughout Sky Fortune City.

Prior to this, Zhang Guanyu was a martial artist whose talent was only inferior to Qin Xingxuan throughout the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom; he was simply a favored child of the heavens. Now, in just a single night, he had been completely wasted! This was an astonishing matter!

Moreover, when Lin Ming had crippled Zhang Guanyu, it was in the presence of Ouyang Dihua. Ouyang Dihua, whose cultivation was already at the Pulse Condensation Period had personally moved, but he still had not been able to stop Lin Ming.

Afterwards, when Lin Ming faced Ouyang Dihua, he was not even forced back a tiny step by his oppressive aura. If it were not for the timely arrival of the Seven Profound Martial House Master, there would have been no end to that night.

This chain of events caused Lin Ming's public image to suddenly become decisive and ruthless.

In just two and a half months of time, he had defeated Zhang Guanyu. There was no longer any doubt that Lin Ming would surpass Ling Sen and Ta Ku in the future. He was only 15 years old; his future achievements could only be imagined.

If such a fierce person was also so decisively ruthless…

Thinking this, everyone could not help but grow a thought in their mind. They absolutely could not provoke Lin Ming.

……………………

Seven Profound Martial House, Skyrage Mountain —

This volcano was located 700 miles west of Zhou Mountain.

This was Sky Fortune Kingdom’s most active group of volcanoes. If one walked around the craters, the thick pervasive sulfuric gas would choke their nose. These heated rocks underfoot could be used to fry eggs, and in the rivers of flowing lava, one could see dark red magma bubbles with molten iron chunks floating within.

Even if the ground didn’t appear to have any problems, one could not hastily step on it. Because the ground could be a shell of cooled magma, if a foot stepped on it, it was possible to crush that layer of cooled magma, and lava would spew out and immediately devour whoever stood there.

This was the fire array of the Seven Profound Martial House’s seven major killing arrays – Lava Cave.

As soon as Lin Ming arrived via the Seven Profound Martial House’s transmission array, he immediately felt a sweltering heat wave crash into him. The rocks underneath were red like garnet crystals; a normal person would simply not be able to put a single foot down.

“Good Lava Cave!” Lin Ming highly praised. The Lava Cave and Icy Pond Waterfall were just like their names; one was extremely hot, the other was extremely cold.

Both had a similar function, but were slightly different.

The Icy Pond Waterfall focused on tempering the body. A martial artist would resist the cold, and the true essence would thoroughly penetrate through to every inch of skin, flesh, and blood.

But the Lava Cave tempered true essence. For any number of reasons, when a martial artist cultivated martial arts, their true essence would always contain some impurities, and would not be pure. The function of the Lava cave was to force a martial artist to use their true essence to resist the scorching heat, and the burning heat would smelt away the impurities within the true essence.

What Lin Ming cultivated was the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’; the true essence within him was already thick and extremely pure, so there was simply no need for him to enter the Lava Cave.

However, Lin Ming had eaten the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill. These two pills had directly increased his cultivation and even further increased the rate of his cultivation for a period. But they had still left behind some impurities and pill toxins in Lin Ming’s true essence.

Through these recent days of cultivation, Lin Ming had constantly been refining out these impurities from his body, but there were always some left behind and they were not completely removed.

Now that Lin Ming needed to take the 500 year old Blood Lingzhi, he had to ensure that the true essence within his body was as pure as possible. Otherwise the impurities would accumulate, and it would become ever more difficult to eliminate them.

“Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, you came!” The deacon senior apprentice brother responsible for the Lava Cave said with a laugh. Guarding the Lava Cave was a chore. Although they did not fear the blistering heat waves, that didn’t mean that they liked to stay in a steamer all day long.

“Eleventh level of difficulty, two hours. Thank you, Senior Apprentice Brother.”

Since this was the first time Lin Ming had come to the Lava Cave, he planned to choose a difficulty in accordance with his own abilities. As for the twelfth level of difficulty, that was a setting that not even Ling Sen could persist in, so he had no interest in trying it yet.

“Mm. Okay!” The deacon did not believe that Lin Ming would have any difficulties in the eleventh level of difficulty.

In the seven major killing arrays, the array formation was usually placed there to increase the natural forces within. For instance, the array formation in the Icy Pond Waterfall would cause the force of the waterfall to be stronger and the icy pond to be colder. The Violent Wind Tunnel would have more violent wind and all sorts of various vortices and turbulent tornados.

But the Lava Cave was the exception to this. The main role of the array formation was actually to weaken the natural force, so that the temperature of the lava would fall.

The temperature of ordinary lava was at least ten times hotter than boiling water, and Skyrage Mountain’s lava was even hotter than that.

Because Skyrage Mountain also produced darksteel, the lava had mixed with darksteel ore. The temperature of it was higher; it was about 20 times hotter than boiling water.

Not to mention a mere Body Transformation martial artist, but even if a Houtian realm martial artist were to jump in, their bones would be fried to a crisp!

Lin Ming had chosen the eleventh level of difficulty; the temperature of the lava was a full 8 times hotter than boiling water. Still, this temperature could already melt many different metals.

As he arrived inside the Lava Cave at the eleventh level of difficulty, Lin Ming stripped himself of all his clothes. If he stepped into the lava pond with his clothes on, they would all be immediately burnt to cinders. Naturally, he had to be naked for this.

Barefoot, he walked on the blistering hot rocks towards the lava pond. The red-hot lava was just like boiling molten iron, and it reflected on Lin Ming’s face, giving him a tomato-like appearance. Occasionally a huge bubble emerged from the lava, burst open, and sprayed hot and toxic gases as it issued a dull sound.

To jump into this pool of lava required great courage and a firm heart. A martial artist whose mind was not tenacious would not even dare to cultivate within the Lava Cave.

Lin Ming revolved his true essence to the limit, took a deep breath, and jumped into the lava pond.

Splash!

Lin Ming’s feet had just fallen into the lava. However, his body was sinking at a very slow rate. The lava had an unusually viscous texture. If a martial artist were quick enough, they might even be able to run atop the lava.

“So hot!”

Lin Ming felt as if his legs had stepped into a blazing brazier. Although he was protected by his true essence, the burning ache was like a blazing knife was cutting through him, almost unbearable.

The resistance of the lava began to decline. Taking a deep breath, Lin Ming’s entire body immediately plunged into the fiery lava pond.

In the world of lava, scalding hot glowing red light was everywhere; visibility was zero. Lin Ming couldn’t even see his hands.

He revolved his true essence to condense into a sort of true essence clothing that covered his body. Even with this though, Lin Ming could still feel pain like sizzling needles as the flow of heat traveled through his true essence clothing.

In the Icy Pond Waterfall, once a martial artist physically contacted the icy cold water, they could direct the frosty energy to enter their body and temper their organs, blood, and skin.

But in the Lava Cave, no matter how fierce a martial artist, they were not dumb enough to let their body directly touch the hot lava. Inside the lava, there was also a toxic heat. If one breathed in a few mouthfuls of this smoke, it was possible that they would immediately die.

Therefore one had to form true essence clothing and isolate themself from the lava. Then, meticulously, they would slowly introduce the fire of the lava into their bodies, and burn away the impurities contained within their true essence.

This was an exceptionally perilous method of cultivation. If one didn't have a sufficient level of cultivation and jumped in, they could easily burn their meridians and cause irreparable damage.

Even if one had a high enough level of cultivation, it was easy to leave hidden injuries after long-term use of tempering true essence with fire.

Because of these reasons, of the seven major killing arrays, the Lava Cave was the loneliest. One didn't even need to make an appointment; they just had to come and momentarily wait to have a position.

Chi chi chi chi chi!

Lin Ming could even hear the sound of true essence burning against the hot flaming lava. But Lin Ming was in a hurry to introduce the lava's fire into his body. He shut his eyes in meditation, and adjusted his mental state for half an incense stick of time. He let his mind completely relax, and entered into a deep ethereal state before he began to gingerly introduce the fire of lava into his body.

As soon as a small flame entered Lin Ming's body, it was like a fierce crimson fire flood dragon that tried to rush left and right. However, Lin Ming's true essence was incomparably thick, and no matter where it rushed, it was unable to create any damage.

Lin Ming quickly subdued the wisp of lava fire, and it obediently circulated through the meridians in his body, burning away the impurities.

Lava fire not only burned away impurities, but it also burned away pure true essence. However, true essence was able to quickly regenerate, and the accumulated impurities could not.

Lin Ming introduced wisp after wisp of lava fire into his body. Gradually, there were dozens of fire wisps inside of Lin Ming's body.

A small flame did not count for much. However, there were so many flame wisps that were rushing about, that even though Lin Ming's true essence was so thick and pure, he still felt that it was difficult to control.

His face was very red, and the blue veins of his forehead were bulging from the intense pressure he was feeling. He continuously exuded large beads of sweat, but as soon as these beads met the sizzling heat, they immediately evaporated before they could even fall.

Because of the atrophy of the true essence clothing, Lin Ming's hair had been singed by the heat; it broke upon a light touch.

Lin Ming withdrew a true essence stone from his spatial ring and placed it in his hands. He began to absorb the true essence from the true essence stone as he grinded his teeth together and forcefully revolved the 'True Primal Chaos Formula'.

Under such a difficult state, the impurities in Lin Ming's body began to melt away at a very slow rate…

Again and again, the impurities continued to decrease, and true essence stones were completely used up one after another.

In half an hour he had used a pure true essence stone. This kind of excessive method of burning away money was something that not even the juniors of large aristocratic families could do.

A pure true essence stone costed 1000 gold taels; it could be considered half a treasure.

The lava fire in his body began to grow more and more wild. The countless tiny units in Lin Ming's body began to breathe at the same frequency, suppressing the restless wisps of fire. But even so, Lin Ming was finding it more and more difficult to persist.

At this point, Lin Ming was considering temporarily leaving the lava pond. Otherwise, if he stayed down any longer, it was possible that he would damage his meridians, or even be burned to death!

But if he left the lava pond halfway, the amount of impurities that would be burned away would truly be reduced by a great deal.

Lin Ming struggled with his hesitation, when at this moment, a wisp of fire lava burst into the aorta near Lin Ming's heart.

"This is bad!"

Lin Ming was shocked. The heart was the center of the blood. If it was damaged, he would suffer a life threatening injury.

He began to move true essence to stop the flame but it was already too late. The violent lava fire broke through the ventricle and rushed around, as if it were trying to create a hole in Lin Ming's heart.

But at this moment, the sleeping Heretical God Seed in Lin Ming's heart suddenly burst out. A surge of highly compressed fierce and brutal true essence instantly surrounded that wisp of lava fire. With a light puff sound, that wisp of lava fire had been directly devoured by the Heretical God Seed!

"Mm?"

Lin Ming's mind blanked for a moment. The Heretical God Seed could actually devour the fire of lava?

Lin Ming probed with his soul force, and was utterly shocked to find that the lava fire had already fully integrated into the Heretical God Seed, and had become a part of the Heretical God Seed!

Chapter 157 – Flame Essence

Chapter 157 – Flame Essence

…

…

…

Could this be…

Lin Ming tried to introduce another wisp of lava fire into his heart, and coincidently, the result was that the second wisp of lava fire was also devoured by the Heretical God Seed!

This time, Lin Ming had a vague understanding of the principle. The function of the Heretical God Seed was to gather energy, and to compress true essence.

Lava fire was also one kind of energy, thus it was directly eaten up by the Heretical God Seed.

Lin Ming cautiously probed with his soul force and found that after swallowing the two wisps of lava fire, the Heretical God Seed seemed to breathe. This breath was very weak, almost imperceptible, but it seemed as if… because of this breath, the Heretical God Seed had grown a little bit!

With this, Lin Ming was pleasantly surprised.

He didn't think that he would inadvertently find a way to cultivate the Heretical God Seed. However, if this growth was sustained, what kind of changes would occur?

This question caused Lin Ming to feel somewhat worried.

According to the memories of the mighty elder, he had found the ‘Heretical God Force’ skill manual within a long lost ancient ruin in the Realm of the Gods. There was a very high possibility that this secret skill was the last vestige left behind by an evil god.

When the mighty elder had discovered the ‘Heretical God Force’, it had already been sealed away for tens of thousands of years!

After the mighty elder has obtained this mystical technique, he had scrupulously hidden it away, and had not even revealed the slightest hint of this secret. The ‘Heretical God Force’ was absolutely unique within the entirety of the Realm of the Gods; only that mighty elder had knowledge of it.

That was why that mighty elder had believed that the ‘Heretical God Force’ was the most precious amongst all of the arcane and mystical skills within the Realm of the Gods. Even the ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’ was less precious!

However, that mighty elder had merely cultivated the ‘Heretical God Force’ to the third layer, and then he had followed Tian Mingzi to the Verdant Feather Sacred Lands to steal the Divine Crystal Magic Cube. Ultimately, not only did he not manage to obtain the Magic Cube, but he had lost his life in the process, and his soul was twisted and broken into pieces, then sealed into the Magic Cube.

From the time that the mighty elder had found the ‘Heretical God Force’ to the time that he died, it had only been a dozen or so years.

In those years, that mighty elder had been cultivating the ‘Heretical God Force’ as some sort of supplementary secret skill; he hadn’t discerned the vast mysteries of the Heretical God Seed. He didn’t know that the Heretical God Seed could do something like swallow lava fire, nor was that something he had ever thought of.

If it wasn’t for a lucky break, it would have been impossible for even Lin Ming to imagine that the Heretical God Seed had such a mysterious function like this.

The Heretical God Seed continuous devoured the lava fire. At the start, Lin Ming only introduced a small amount of lava fire into his heart, and then he began to send a colossal amount. The Heretical God Seed didn't reject any, it welcomed the burning flames with open arms.

The lava fire was oppressive and tyrannical, but the Heretical God Seed was even more domineering. However much the fire lava tried to struggle, it could not escape the true essence shackles of the Heretical God Seed.

The Heretical God Seed fused with the lava fire for 5 to 6 hours. Lin Ming didn't know how much lava fire had been devoured, but he had a faint feeling that the surrounding magma temperature had dropped.

As the Heretical God Seed engulfed the lava fire, it began to slowly grow. At the start, it had been the size of a grain of rice, but now it become the size of a mung bean.

Gradually, a deep crimson wisp of a flame began to float around the Heretical God Seed. The Heretical God Seed bathed in the flame, and was suffused with a ruby-red light.

A small spark emerged from the side of the Heretical God Seed, it began to circle around it. If Lin Ming hadn't been looking carefully, it would simply have gone unnoticed.

"This is… Flame Essence?"

Lin Ming was shocked. The fires of the world had a soul. As long as this fire was able to exist for a long time in a remote place, it was possible that it would give birth to Flame Essence.

For instance, in the deepest pits of an underground magma pool, Flame Essence could be born. Or, in a location where Yin and Yang intersected, Frostfire Essence could be born.

The difference between normal fire and Flame Essence was that normal fire had to have materials to combust, or else it would be extinguished. However, Flame Essence was eternal.

It could even be used as kindling to create storms of flame that could burn down a forest. No matter how much fire was created, the Flame Essence would not weaken.

This was why some alchemists and refiners would travel the world to the most remote, savage, and dangerous dungeons in order to seek out a Flame Essence. They would devote all of their efforts to subdue it for their own use.

Lin Ming had never thought that a Flame Essence would actually be born from his own heart. Of course, this Flame Essence seemed to the weakest Flame Essence in the entire world. It was only the size of a spark, and it had been bred from low-level fire lava. He had no idea where he would need to go to find higher-grade flames.

But Lin Ming did not underestimate it. If the Heretical God Seed could unendingly devour more and more exotic flames, would the Fire Essence change along with it?

Lin Ming continued to stimulate wisps of lava fire into his body to see if the Heretical God Seed would absorb them. But this time Lin Ming found that any new lava fire was only compressed around the Heretical God Seed, and no longer fused into the Flame Essence.

It seemed as if the Heretical God Seed had already achieved a state of saturation.

It might have been because this lava fire was simply too weak, so it couldn’t meet the needs of the Heretical God Seed’s growth.

This lava fire that had been compressed was just the true essence that had been compressed within the Heretical God Seed. Now, the Heretical God Seed contained not only a massive amount of compressed true essence, but also compressed fire lava. It was just like a powder keg that contained a truly terrifying amount of explosive energy.

“What rich flame energy. But if this energy was released, then…” Lin Ming had a bit of an apprehensive and jumpy feeling.

The Heretical God Seed could condense energy. Not only did it condense true essence, but it also condensed flames. With so much compressed energy within Lin Ming's heart, he inevitably felt very wary.

Lin Ming consoled himself. Since this was an ancient secret technique that was left behind in some ancient ruins within the Realm of the Gods, it was very unlikely to suddenly explode... right?

By now, Lin Ming had perked up. "If the Heretical God Seed can swallow lava fire, can it also swallow other forms of energy, like... lightning?"

Now aware of this possibility, Lin Ming had a very odd look on his face. Of the seven major killing arrays, there was also a thunder array; it was Thunder Valley. It he wanted to absorb the power of lightning, then he would have to go there.

But... he had already compressed so much fire energy. If he also absorbed the power of lightning, then...

Lin Ming couldn't help but gulp. Lightning and fire were both relatively violent and wild energies. If both were combined, then it might even explode. Since the Heretical God Seed was in Lin Ming's heart, if there was an accident, it wouldn't even be a joke!

Lin Ming was a bit afraid of this possibility. But he could not resist the temptation of this idea.

This formidable and mysterious secret technique was unique within the entirety of the Realm of the Gods!

Moreover, this secret skill seemed to have unlimited potential. If he could absorb lava fire and condense that into a Flame Essence, then what would happen if he were to absorb lightning?

With such a powerful force placed in front of Lin Ming and within his grasp, how could he not be tempted?

"The 'Heretical God Force' is a secret skill that was left behind by an ancient evil god, and it has far more functions than the mighty elder from the Realm of the Gods was aware of. It's a pity that the mighty elder died so quickly, so he hadn't been able to study it further. Now I have only myself to analyze it.

"I'll just try to absorb the energy of lightning while observing with my soul force. If I find that any accident might happen, then I will immediately force out the thunder energy."

Although the potential power of the 'Heretical God Force' was tempting, if Lin Ming didn't have his life, then any power would simply be worthless. Thinking this, Lin Ming decided to give Thunder Valley a try.

………………………………

Zhou Mountain was several hundreds of miles long. It had numerous canyons and dangerously steep peaks. At a distance not too far away from the Seven Profound Martial House, there was a palace made of glazed tiles that was located above such a peak. The palace was not overly large, but it was magnificently build and gilded in pure gold and the finest jade.

This was where the current Seven Profound Envoy lived – Seven Profound Palace.

At this time, in a secret room within the Seven Profound Palace, Ouyang Dihua was sitting gloomily in a chair. In front of him was a very feminine looking man.

This feminine looking man was the other deputy house master of the Seven Profound Martial House – Bi Luo.

Bi Luo had long ago once taken Ouyang Boyan as his master, and was considered Ouyang Dihua's senior apprentice brother. However, Bi Luo's outwardly feminine appearance was simply too strong. The underlying concepts behind the Acacia Faction's cultivation methods were to complement their Yang energy with the Yin energy of others; it was most suited for virile and exuberant young men to cultivate. Bi Luo had cultivated this for several years with low results and had only become increasingly like a woman. As for his cultivation, he hadn't made many great gains in it.

Afterwards, with no other path left, Bi Luo had withdrawn from the Acacia Faction and joined the Mirage Faction. The Mirage Faction was a strange and mysterious sect of the Seven Profound Valleys. Their founder was a woman, and almost all of their faction disciples were women. They were proficient in all sorts of illusionary powers.

The Mirage Faction's cultivation was most suitable for women to cultivate; it was simply impossible for others. Bi Luo had practiced this women's cultivation method, and it was actually within his element. Now, Bi Luo had reached the middle Houtian realm and also the fourth layer of the 'Dreamheart Magic' cultivation method. Every illusion that he created was without the slightest flaw; even a peak Houtian stage master would be hard-pressed to see through it.

"For what matter did Junior Apprentice Brother call me today? And you also chose to talk in a secret room?" Not only did Bi Luo have the looks of a woman, but he also spoke with the gentle voice of a woman. Listening to it caused Ouyang Dihua to feel quite uncomfortable.

Ouyang Dihua unconsciously pushed his chair back and opened up some distance between him and Bi Luo. He said, "I called Senior Apprentice Brother here today because I want Senior Apprentice Brother to help me kill a man."

"Oh? Is it Lin Ming?" Bi Luo asked with a faint smile. Although he hadn't attended the banquet, he knew of the scene in which Ouyang Dihua had admitted defeat to Lin Ming and had lost face. This Lin Ming was not a simple boy.

"Yes! Him!" Ouyang Dihua did not hide anything in front of Bi Luo.

After that duel at the banquet, Zhang Guanyu had fallen into a coma for one day and one night. When he awoke, all of the meridians throughout his body had been wasted, and he had lost all of his martial arts cultivation. Now, he was nothing more than a bumbling invalid that had lost his mind. Zhang Guanyu had been wasted, and Ouyang Dihua's hopes of attaining the 12 Pure Ying girls had been wasted along with him. Ouyang Dihua could not forgive Lin Ming because of this.

“This might be tricky. After all, I am a deputy house master of the Seven Profound Martial House. If news that I killed my own disciple were to leak out, that would just be hard to hear. Not only that, but Lin Ming will soon become a Seven Profound Martial House core disciple. He has status and influence, and Qin Ziya thinks highly of him. If I was to deal with him and this became known, it would be a very serious matter.”

Although Bi Luo had a certain friendship with Ouyang Dihua, it wasn’t to the point where he would bring a disaster upon himself. He had a poor relationship with Qin Ziya. If Qin Ziya found a chance, he would definitely seize that opportunity to finish him.

Chapter 158 – Thunder Valley

Chapter 158 – Thunder Valley

…

…

…

"This doesn't matter; I do not need you to kill him. I only need a favor from you; I have already sent for someone to kill him. If this is successful, then I will have my uncle speak a few good words to your master so that he'll pass on some cultivation methods to you."

In the Seven Profound Valleys, a deputy house master was considered a disciple of relatively low status and thus was less valued. This was the reason Ouyang Dihua had used his uncle as a lure.

Bi Luo cheerfully said, "Haha, then I will first apologize to Junior Apprentice Brother. But why did you ask someone to assassinate Lin Ming? Can you not do it yourself?"

Ouyang Dihua said, "Killing Lin Ming isn't a trivial matter. Even if I have my uncle supporting me and I do not leave any evidence that could be used against me, it's still better to not be public and arouse suspicious. When I send someone to kill Lin Ming, I'll attend some banquets and stay out of sight. As long as the matter is cleanly executed, no one will dare to question me."

Bi Luo licked his lips, "Who did you prepare to go? If their strength is too weak, it will just be like meat dumplings attacking a dog; once they go they won't return."

"Don't worry. I've already asked a nearby senior apprentice brother in the Sky Fortune Kingdom. He used to be in the Refiner Faction, but he violated the sect rules and was expelled from the Seven Profound Valleys. I have some friendship with him and his cultivation has already reached the peak Pulse Condensation Period, and his battle strength is not underneath mine. As long as I promise him some benefits and he does this, then that would be for the best. What's even better is that he is someone who was originally a loner, and likes to wander around aimlessly. At that time, even if they find him, they won't be able to discover anything from him.

In terms of cultivation, Ouyang Dihua was at the middle Pulse Condensation Period. But, the cultivation methods that he studied in the Acacia Faction were mostly to fight and kill others. His senior apprentice brother was from the Refiner Faction, and he was best at refining; his fighting technique was a bit lacking. So because of this, their combat efficiency was similar.

"Peak Pulse Condensation Period?" Haha, you actually want to use a peak Pulse Condensation Period master to deal with a little child who has just entered the Altering Muscle stage? You must think very highly of Lin Ming."

Ouyang Dihua said, "Lin Ming is not a normal boy at the Altering Muscle stage. Not only that, but he also has the Thunderbolt Devilfire bead in his possession; that weapon can kill an early Pulse Condensation Period martial artist. Although it isn't easy to use the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead to strike a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist, I still have to be careful, so I'm using my full force against him. If it wasn't for the fact that it was difficult to find a Houtian realm martial artist on such short notice, I would have already asked a Houtian realm martial artist to deal with him!

"Mm... it seems that as long as you can get Lin Ming alone, then he will die. But how do you plan on creating the opportunity to kill Lin Ming?

"Don't worry about that, I have my ways. Let me ask you first, what relation does Qin Ziya have with Lin Ming?"

"What kind of relation? Well, Qin Ziya thinks highly of Lin Ming and has high hopes for his future achievements. He thinks that he will be able to find a new friend and helper for the future. Soon, the Seven Profound Valleys will send down someone to take in the core disciples of the nearby Martial Houses. Qin Ziya is anxiously in a hurry to raise up Lin Ming. I believe he thinks that Lin Ming will be able to give a good performance at the Grand Tournament so that it will pave his way when he wants to be promoted to an elder in the future.

"Although Qin Ziya highly regards Lin Ming, his movements are erratic and he likes to travel. He might not even come back to the Seven Profound Martial House once a year. In these past ten years, he has been walking through the deep valleys to cultivate his zither heart. It's impossible for him to be constantly protecting Lin Ming, their relation is not that deep."

"Mm. Good, as long as Qin Ziya is not at the Seven Profound Martial House, then I have complete confidence." Ouyang Dihua evilly grinned. It was as if Lin Ming's life was already within his grasp.

....

It was early in the morning and the sun had just risen up beyond the horizon and covered Zhou Mountain in a thin layer of morning dew. The withered fall leaves on the ground were already glazed with a bit of night frost.

Lin Ming held the Heavy Profound Soft Spear in his hand, quietly feeling the power of the Flame Essence within the Heretical God Seed. After a period of time, his body suddenly moved and his fist struck the trunk of a large tree. There was a dull thumping sound as the sky began to rain withered leaves as they rustled like a whirlwind.

Lin Ming shook the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, 'Flowers in the Storm!'

There was only the sound of a spear piercing through the air. The Heavy Profound Soft Spear seemed to turn into a ghostly illusion and pierced all of the swirling leaves.

After every leaf was pierced, a small amount of fire would be emitted and it would instantly burn the leaf into ash.

Ever since the Heretical God Seed had undergone a minor transformation, Lin Ming hadn't found any difference when he had revolved the 'Heretical God Force'. It was only that there was a small fire attribute imbued into his true essence.

There were a portion of martial artists whose true essence had a special attribute. For instance, Bai Jingyun's true essence was of the water attribute. This was the reason she had paid a steep price to request Lin Ming draw up a water attribute inscription symbol for herself.

The Flame Essence within the Heretical God Seed allowed Lin Ming to freely use the power of fire. Lin Ming had already expected this. After all, there were some refiners and alchemists who had subdued a Flame Essence and then were able to freely use the flame.

These days, Lin Ming had been tempering his body's true essence and ridding it of impurities.

Every day he would stay in the Lava Cave for 5 to 6 hours. Today, the impurities within his body had finally been burned away.

With the suppressive power of the Heretical God Seed, the seemingly violent and dangerous lava fire became very docile. Otherwise, there was no way he could have refined out the impurities in his body so quickly.

The Heretical God Seed was now the size of a mung bean. It was impossible for the lava fire to meet the needs of the Heretical God Seed.

Lin Ming put away the Heavy Profound Soft Spear in his spatial ring, and prepared to go to Thunder Valley. This idea had already been floating in his mind for several days.

Thunder Valley was located in a valley at the back of a distant mountain. The entire mountain valley was filled with magnetic darksteel ore.

Magnetic darksteel ore had a positive and a negative pole, so it was able to attract lightning from the sky and even store the power of lightning. It was a commonly used material in refining.

Because of this, at every thunderstorm, there would be roaring sounds of rolling thunder, and then countless lightning bolts would fall into Thunder Valley. Looking from afar, it was just like purple snakes chaotically dancing, it was very spectacular.

After the Seven Profound Martial House was established, a Xiantian master had created the array formation of Thunder Valley. Now, thunder and lightning would rain down unceasingly, and the array formation had enclosed the power of the thunder and lightning inside special chambers so that one could use it for cultivation. Thus it had become one of the seven major killing arrays; the thunder array!

The thunder array was the most mysterious of the seven major killing arrays. Only those disciples in the top 20 rankings would dare enter. It was also quite different from the other six major killing arrays; Thunder Valley only had two difficulties, the eleventh and twelfth.

In the seven major killing arrays, the twelfth level of difficulty was basically useless; not even Ling Sen could persist inside. This was especially true of Thunder Valley; the twelfth level of difficulty was completely abnormal. Not even a veteran Pulse Condensation Period martial artist would be able to stay inside for too long.

This was the reason that Hong Xi had initially asked new disciples to not choose Thunder Valley. There was no need to mention the twelfth level of difficulty; even the eleventh level of difficulty had thunder and lightning that would be able to instantly char a martial artist at the Flesh Training stage.

When Lin Ming arrived at the entrance of Thunder Valley, he could already hear the rumbling of thunder from within.

“Junior Apprentice Brother Lin!” The Thunder Valley deacon senior apprentice brother stepped out from afar to greet Lin Ming.

"Senior Apprentice Brother."

"This is the first time that Junior Apprentice Brother Lin has come to Thunder Valley. This Thunder Valley has a total 6 magnetic chambers. The first five are at the eleventh level of difficulty and the last is at the twelfth level of difficulty. Junior Apprentice Brother Lin may choose as he likes. But I recommend that you choose the eleventh level of difficulty. As for that last magnetic chamber, even a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist may not be able to withstand it."

"Mm. Thank you Senior Apprentice Brother." Lin Ming had already decided that he would select the eleventh level of difficulty. He had even hoped for a lower degree of difficulty. A softer thunder would be easier to control, so as to avoid any random happenings like the Heretical God Seed exploding within him.

Every magnetic chamber was 10 feet by 10 feet. The ground and walls of the magnetic chamber were completely formed from magnetic darksteel, and they shined with a deep blue light.

Because the magnetic chamber was a completely enclosed space, the sound of the terrifying thunderclaps echoed in the room. If an ordinary person was to enter the room and be struck by these sound waves, their ears would bleed and their eardrums would rupture. It was even possible for low frequency waves to shatter their organs so they died a violent death right where they stood.

The sound of this thunder had specific names. it was called tiger leopard thunder. This name was because when a tiger or leopard would growl or purr, if one placed a hand on their body, they could feel their arms vibrating.

It was possible for one to borrow the power of this tiger leopard thunder to penetrate into the body and exercise the bones. This was why the bones of tigers were so formidable, and tiger-bone wine was the most nourishing.

A sign of a martial artist reaching the Bone Forging stage was tiger leopard thunder. When they raised their head they could roar like a tiger, and when they lowered their head they could purr like a leopard.

Before Lin Ming entered the magnetic chamber, he had already used true essence to seal off his ears.

Purple lighting crazily danced through the air and on the walls of the magnetic chamber. The rumbling sounds of the thunderclaps were able to manifest into shockwaves. If one stood in such a shock wave, they would have a clear feeling of their heartbeat rising and the organs of their body being driven into motion by the low and deep sound waves. This kind of feeling was very uncomfortable. Even if one's organs were protected by true essence, they would feel tightness in their chest and have difficulty breathing.

This sort of low and deep sound wave was able to silently and invisibly kill people. This was because the frequency was too low for a person to hear it, but it would still dangerously resonate within the organs of a human body. Finally, a human could be split apart by this sound.

Sssi-! A beam of electricity rushed towards Lin Ming like some sort of poisonous snake. The bolt of electricity moved at lightning speed, and before Lin Ming could react to this electric light, he already felt his entire body go numb. Like this, the energy of thunder had already entered into Lin Ming's meridians.

Lin Ming's spirits immediately lifted. He carefully manipulated this electric light to flow towards his heart.

Watching with his soul force, the electric light entered into the Heretical God Seed. Lin Ming immediately became tense. His soul force was linked to the Heretical God Seed, and he was carefully aware of every slight change of energy within the Heretical God Seed.

If anything seemed amiss, Lin Ming was prepared to immediately extinguish this wisp of thunder with all of his strength.

However, what really happened was that this wisp of electric thunder submerged into the Heretical God Seed like a heavy rock into the ocean, and there was simply no change.

“Mm? Nothing happened.”

When the power of lightning entered into the Heretical God Seed, it did not result in any change.

So Lin Ming began to introduce more and more threads of thunder and lightning into his body, and the result was that all of it was absorbed by the Heretical God Seed.

This had freed Lin Ming’s courage; he directly walked into a dancing electric snake.

Lin Ming immediately felt his entire body go numb and the power of the lightning was like a gush of water that poured into his body.

The power of lightning was a very mysterious power. Rumors said that lightning itself was the source of all life.

In the ancient texts, during ancient times when the heavens and earth had just opened and the land began to stabilize, the sky would shine with countless shimmering clouds of thunder. This thundercloud had sent out lightning that had split apart the ancient oceans and resulted in the first life.

It can be said that the only reason there was the flesh and blood of today was because of the lightning of the past. This was why the power of thunder and lightning was best to train the strength of one’s own body.

Chapter 159 – Thunder Soul

Chapter 159 – Thunder Soul

…

…

…

Not only that, but Lin Ming also knew that within the body's countless tiny units, there was an extremely complex and mystical electric current that ran through. These electric currents were very weak, but they were a vital intermediary for the countless small units to contact each other and the body.

If one did not have these tiny and weak electric currents, then the many activities of the human body would simply cease to function.

Therefore, there were some mighty elders who studied unusual methods of cultivation that would fly into thunder clouds and direct the thunder and lightning to temper their body. They would cross the calamity of thunder, and use it to enhance their own strength.

However, while thunder was a force that gave birth to life, it was also a destructive force that destroyed life. It was able to turn flesh and blood to ashes and burn down vast forests.

The way to control this power all rested in a martial artist's own hands.

The Seven Profound Valleys' Thunder Valley simultaneously had the tiger leopard thunderclap and also lightning to temper the body. An ordinary disciple simply could not practice in such a maniacal and deranged way, that was why only the disciples that were in the top 20 ranks of the Ranking Stone would dare to enter.

But not even the top 10 ranking disciples would dare to cultivate in Thunder Valley like Lin Ming did. He walked into that that mass of chaotically twisting electric snakes and let the power of lightning penetrate into his body.

Lin Ming began to feel the extremely uncomfortable feeling of having his entire body go numb. But soon, this numbness evolved into a thrilling and exciting feeling that caused Lin Ming to wish that a more violent thunder would descend upon him.

Like this, the Heretical God Seed in Lin Ming’s body devoured the lightning like a sponge absorbing water.

The mung bean-sized Heretical God Seed began to slowly grow, and a faint violet light began to reflect upon its surface.

Lin Ming stayed in the magnetic darksteel chamber for most of an hour. Slowly, he began to feel the surrounding power of thunder weaken, and also the roaring tiger leopard thunderclaps weaken; they were no longer as deafening as they were at the start.

“Mm? Was the power of thunder in this magnetic darksteel chamber absorbed cleanly by me?”

Lin Ming opened his eyes and discovered that there were only 2 or 3 of the spasmodically dancing electric purple snakes along the walls, and not only that, but they had a rather dim and fading appearance. If Lin Ming stayed here for another quarter hour, then those 2 to 3 electricity snakes would probably be finished.

Thunder Valley was different from the Lava Cave. The Lava Cave’s lava pool was directly connected to a deep semi-active volcano below the mountain, so the lava fire was able to flow with a nearly inexhaustible supply. No matter how much was consumed, it would immediately be replaced by more.

But Thunder Valley’s magnetic darksteel room was sealed by a massive amount of magnetic darksteel, so that it was able to steer the thunder from a thunderstorm into the array and store the power of thunder and lightning.

The amount of lightning that was stored was limited, so how could it withstand such a sweeping absorption by Lin Ming?

"I guess I'm done here. I should move to the twelfth level of difficulty." Thinking this, Lin Ming left the magnetic darksteel chamber.

Although Lin Ming had sucked dry most of the thunder power within the magnetic darksteel room, as long as there was another thunderstorm, then the power of thunder within the magnetic darksteel room would be replenished. Because of this, Lin Ming had no plans to be conservative with how much of the thunder power he absorbed, or to mention it.

"Junior Apprentice Brother came out so quickly; it's only been less than an hour. Would you like to take a rest?" The Thunder Valley deacon saw Lin Ming exit from the magnetic chamber and greeted him with a smile. Lin Ming would become a core disciple sooner or later, so naturally he wanted to curry some favor with him.

"Junior Apprentice Brother, I have some Clarion Mind Pills here. If you take them it may clear up some of the numbness within your body." The deacon pulled out a small jar from a pocket as he said this and attentively handed it to Lin Ming. He believed that Lin Ming was unable to withstand the intense stimulation from the tempering of thunder and lightning upon his body, and had left the chamber. In fact, even if it were the top ten ranked disciples, or even someone in the class of Zhang Guanyu, they would not be able to persist for too long within the magnetic darksteel chamber. Even they would need to absorb true essence stones and also take a Clarion Mind Pill in order to barely hold on inside.

The eleventh level of difficulty in Thunder Valley far outstripped the difficulty of the other six major killing arrays!

Lin Ming smiled and waved. He said, "I thank Senior Apprentice Brother for his kindness, but I do not need the Clarion Mind Pills. I want to change the difficulty level."

"Uh… this… well, does Junior Apprentice Brother Lin not know that Thunder Valley only has two difficulties? They are the eleventh and twelfth levels. Because the nature of the power of thunder and lightning is simply too rebellious, the original array master who set this array formation did not have any way to force this power into obeying, so there are only two levels of difficulty." The deacon managed to awkwardly say; he thought that Lin Ming wanted to switch to a lower level of difficulty. "Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, with your cultivation, as long as you take a Clarion Mind Pill and true essence stones, it is absolutely no problem for you to be able to withstand the eleventh level of difficulty."

Lin Ming laughed and said, "Mm, I know. I was going to ask to change to the twelfth level of difficulty.

"What?" The deacon was stunned. "You... you want to enter the twelfth level of difficulty?"

Lin Ming nodded.

The deacon remained silent; he simply couldn't find the language to say anything. He knew that Lin Ming was very formidable, and had even defeated Zhang Guanyu, but the power of Thunder Valley's twelfth level of difficulty was simply incomparably abnormal. Even a veteran Pulse Condensation Period martial artist wouldn't be able to hold on inside!

In fact, ever since the deacon had begun managing Thunder Valley, he had only opened the twelfth level of difficulty a handful of times. Ling Sen had tried one time, but not even half an incense stick of time had passed before he scurried back out, his entire body scorched black.

Besides him, there were also several core disciples who had tried. Although their natural talent was superior to Ling Sen's, their combat prowess was much lower, so their result was even worse and the electric strength had burnt off all their hair.

The power of thunder within the twelfth level of difficulty combined with the tiger leopard thunderclap was not a joke!

Lin Ming was fierce, but could he be fiercer than Ling Sen?

“Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, the twelfth level of difficulty in the magnetic darksteel chamber is something that not even a senior Pulse Condensation Period martial artist can persist in. Not only that, but the array formation does not reduce the power of thunder inside. If Junior Apprentice Lin is injured then…” The Thunder Valley deacon laid it out mildly. He was quite scared that Lin Ming would be electrocuted within and experience a tragedy.

Of the seven major killings arrays of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, and lightning, all of them besides the lightning killing array had a certain capacity to independently judge a situation. If a martial artist were on the verge of death, the killing array would promptly stop. This was why there were only a few disciples that had died so far.

But Thunder Valley was different. The snaking electricity flew in all directions; it simply wasn’t something that could be stopped or fettered by the array formation. If one blacked out from the overwhelming electrical energy, then they would die.

If the genius of the Seven Profound Martial House that was only seen once a century was to tragically die in Thunder Valley, then that would simply be too hilarious.

Lin Ming sheepishly grinned, “Well, I just want to give it a try. If I have any problems inside, then I will immediately come out. How about that?”

“Well… alright.” The Thunder Valley deacon could only agree to let Lin Ming try and give up afterwards. Ling Sen had been able to last half an incense stick of time. Since Lin Ming was inferior to Ling Sen, then he would probably be able to persist for a few dozen breaths without any problems.

After all, Junior Apprentice Brother Lin wasn’t some silly little child. If he had problems, then he would definitely come out.

Thinking this, the Thunder Valley deacon opened the last magnetic darksteel chamber gate.

Lin Ming entered the twelfth level difficulty magnetic darksteel chamber. This magnetic chamber was a full 300 by 300 feet square. This was also the first time that he had ever stepped into the twelfth level difficulty of a major killing array.

The twelfth level difficulty truly was extraordinary. After Lin Ming stepped into the magnetic chamber, even though he was using true essence to protect his ears, the rumbling sound of thunder was enough to shock his ears with a deeply stinging pain. Long, thick, electric snakes several dozens of feet long waves back and forth like living lightning. Chi chi chi chi. The detonating sounds of the electricity in the room made one's scalp tingle.

Seeing such a thick electric snake, even Lin Ming felt a little jumpy. It was no wonder a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist could not last in here. If such a thick electrical snake flowed through the human body, its powerful effects could be imagined.

Lin Ming let out a light breath and began to revolve the 'True Primal Chaos Formula'. Then, he walked into that mass of electricity.

Boom!

As the electric current entered Lin Ming's body, he began to violently shake, nearly fainting. However, at the same time, the Heretical God Seed his heart began to become active again.

As the Heretical God seed bathed in the power of thunder, it began to emit a faint whimper of excitement. Countless flows of electrical current began to converge at his heart and flow into the Heretical God Seed, as if it was a parched man gulping down water.

"What a strong power of thunder!"

Lin Ming thought with amazement.

Along with the influx of electricity into his heart, the Heretical God Seed began to riotously vibrate. Lin Ming locked onto it with his soul force to prevent any accidents, but it seemed that his concern was unnecessary.

In the Heretical God Seed, the three compressed forces of true essence, flame, and thunder were able to peacefully coexist with each other. Lin Ming was simply amazed by the mystery of the 'Heretical God Force'.

At this moment, outside of the door leading to the magnetic darksteel chamber, the deacon's voice sounded out. "Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, are you alright?"

Lin Ming found this funny. He replied with a laugh, "I'm fine!"

In any case, the Heretical God Seed was able to spontaneously absorb the power of thunder; he wasn't worried about being distracted by responding.

After another while, the senior apprentice brother deacon came up again and asked, "Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, are you still alright?"

"I'm okay!" Lin Ming responded again.

After another quarter hour crossed, the deacon's voice sounded behind the door again. "Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, if you cannot withstand it, you should come out first. Don't force yourself!"

Lin Ming was speechless. This deacon senior apprentice brother was long-winded enough.

…….

Time passed minute by minute, second by second. Soon, two hours had quietly gone.

In the twelfth level difficulty magnetic darksteel chamber, that mass of windingly thick electric snakes had already been evaporated, and what was left over were only a few, weak electric currents that were still sparking as they passed along the walls.

In Lin Ming's heart, the Heretical God Seed had grown to the size of a soybean, and the surface was covered with a layer of crystal clear violet light. It had combined together with that garnet from the compressed flame essence, and was incomparably beautiful as it glimmered with a translucent sheen.

Around the Heretical God Seed, a faint electric spark appeared. In the midst of the dim electric spark, there seemed to be a thin purple snake made from lightning flittering about as it traveled around the Heretical God Seed. From time to time, it would circle around the Flame Essence, playing with it, as if it had some deep spiritual intelligence.

Thunder Soul!

The power of thunder and lightning inside of the magnetic chamber had finally condensed into a Thunder Soul!

Lin Ming was extremely joyful. A Thunder Soul was much more precious than Flame Essence; there were only a few martial artists who had a thunder attribute.

Moreover, inside of the Heretical God Seed, the Thunder Soul had unlimited possibilities for growth.

The magnetic darksteel chamber contained the power of lightning and thunder, however, this power was only the most ordinary and natural of thunder forces, which came from a thundercloud. It was only able to create a Thunder Soul, it wasn’t possible to allow it to go.

Looking at the small snake-like spark in the electric light, Lin Ming had a deep sense of achievement that soaked through him.

Flame Essence!

Thunder Soul!

The Heretical God Seed was truly marvelous. If the Flame Essence and Thunder Soul continued evolving, what other changes would occur inside of the Heretical God Seed?

At this moment, outside of the magnetic darksteel chamber, the Thunder Valley Deacon was anxiously watching the hourglass with a very scared and bewildered expression.

“Did I make a mistake? Two hours?”

The Thunder Valley deacon was unable to believe such an unthinkable fact; even a peak Pulse Condensation Period martial artist would not be able to last inside for so long!

Chapter 160 – The Power of Thunder and Fire

Chapter 160 – The Power of Thunder and Fire

…

…

…

The Thunder Valley deacon was unable to believe such an unthinkable fact; even a peak Pulse Condensation Period martial artist would not be able to last inside for so long!

Lin Ming truly was a frighteningly fierce individual, however, there had to be a limit!

'You had just entered the Altering Muscle stage and yet you can already favorably compare to a peak Pulse Condensation Period martial artist, or even reach a Houtian realm martial artist; isn't this just a bit too ridiculous!?'

The deacon had been waiting for Lin Ming to realize that the difficulty was too hard and then to leave the magnetic chamber. But now the moon had already come out, and yet there still wasn't any disturbance in the magnetic chamber.

The deacon even went knocking on the door at regular intervals to ask if Lin Ming was alright; he really suspected that Lin Ming had been shocked silly inside and was in urgent need of care.

Then after a while when the sand in the hourglass had cleanly leaked through to the bottom, he had to flip the hourglass over again. "What the hell, this is just too preposterous. Did the force of thunder inside the magnetic chamber leak out?"

The deacon kept imagining different scenarios of what could have occurred, but at this moment, the door to the magnetic chamber was pushed open, and Lin Ming hopped out, a cheerful smile plastered on his face. After he had successfully cultivated the Thunder Soul, he was in a very excellent mood.

Seeing Lin Ming come out, the Thunder Valley deacon stared at him with round eyes, looking Lin Ming up and down.

Even his clothes had all been burnt off…

The Thunder Valley deacon gulped. What had this daring fellow done inside? He had actually stayed in the twelfth level of difficulty for so long, yet he didn't seem perturbed or even the least bit concerned. Was this Lin Ming struck by thunder as a child, gaining some mystic ability, and thus did not fear lightning anymore?

"Junior… Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, are you alright?"

"I'm great. Sorry for troubling you, Senior Apprentice Brother. I will go back first."

"Uh… yeah… you go back first…" The deacon no longer knew what to say.

After seeing Lin Ming out, the Thunder Valley deacon immediately dashed into the magnetic chamber. He took a deep breath, revolved his true essence to its limit just in case he was hurt by the heavy hail of lightning, and then pulled open the door to the magnetic chamber…

In a moment, his eyes had gone perfectly round.

In the magnetic chamber, he only saw a few wisps of tiny electric currents running around, as if they were just barely able to maintain their existence. The other usual lightning snakes had already disappeared into thin air.

The deacon rubbed his eyes, making sure he hadn't gone blind or daft. This wasn't right; where was the thunder inside of the magnetic chamber?

….

As he left the entrance to Thunder Valley, seeing no one around, Lin Ming was impatient and wanted to immediately try out the power of the Thunder Soul.

Although the inherent nature of lightning was filled with a terrifying energy, it was only a fleeting moment, and couldn't last long. However, the Thunder Soul was actually an immortal spirit; it would never be extinguished. As long as he had enough true essence or Heaven Earth Yuan Qi, then he could release an unlimited amount of lightning that would never weaken.

The Thunder Soul was similar to the Flame Essence; it would only have a extremely low chance to be birthed in an area where thunder and lightning had existed for time immemorial.

A Thunder Soul was scarcer than a Flame Essence. That was because in this world, finding lands of thunder was much rarer than finding lands of flame.

With a shake of his long spear, tiny wisps of violet lightning appeared on the silver-white spear shaft; it was really quite beautiful.

"If I trigger the flame true essence and the thunder true essence at the same time, while revolving the 'Heretical God Force' so the power of true essence increases by 50%, what would happen?

As Lin Ming thought this, he began to stimulate the Thunder Soul and the Flame Essence within the Heretical God Seed at the same time.

Immediately, the highly compressed Heretical God Seed erupted like an active volcano.

Flame on one hand, thunder on the other. The flame and thunder intersected; each were as fierce as the other, and as violent as the other!

The two kinds of energies began to circle and intertwine around each other. Coupling with the increased power from the 'Heretical God Force', the rising energy caused a turbulent vibration in the air, as if the atmosphere itself was being torn apart by these powerful energies.

In that moment, Lin Ming felt as if he could not control these two energies. If it continued, then something dangerous would occur.

As he was about to forcefully withdraw the true essence, a memory suddenly flashed in Lin Ming's mind. He suddenly recalled the principle of thunder and flame behind the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead.

This idea gave him pause. "If… I let the two different energies in my hands follow the same concept as the Devilfire Thunderbolt Bead… would it have the same might as the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead?"

To rashly test such a hypothesis was dangerous. Not only that, but he was barely in control of these two energies, and was already stretched to the limit of what he could handle. Still, Lin Ming could not suppress this intensely tempting thought in his heart.

"Flame becomes an eddy, thunder becomes a snake…" Lin Ming recalled how the thunder and flame inside of the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead would revolve. As he did this, he also desperately urged all his true essence out, and revolved the wild flame and thunder according to this method.

The Heavy Profound Soft Spear began to shine with light from an electric bolt that twisted around it. Snakes of fire wound around the shaft, and the crackling sounds of lightning and churning flames filled the air with a sound that was absolutely frightening.

Lin Ming's face flushed red, and blue veins began to jut out from his forehead. Just as the potent power was about to break free of its shackles, Lin Ming let out a roar and fiercely thrust out the spear. The power of thunder and the power of flame interweaved into a ball of light that shot outwards with incredible speed, almost straight upwards at a 100 foot high cliff.

Bang!

There were only the deafening sounds of loud explosions and countless rocks scattering in all directions, and dust filled the air. There was a rumbling sound that lingered, and then the 100 foot high cliff collapsed in an avalanche of stone!

Seeing this power, Lin Ming was stunned silly.

What terrifying strength!

This explosion could instantly kill an early Pulse Condensation Period martial artist, or even a middle Pulse Condensation Period martial artist!

His cultivation was only at the early Altering Muscle stage, yet relying on the power of the Heretical God Seed, he could actually produce such a horrifying killing move!

This 'Heretical God Force' secret technique simply went against the will of the heavens!

Lin Ming had thought that the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' which he cultivated was already heaven defying. After all, contained inside were the 'True Primal Chaos Formula', 'Flow like Silk', the Tempering Marrow realm, Eight Inner Hidden Gates, Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, and all sorts of other strange and miraculous cultivation methods.

He had only cultivated it a bit, and yet he was able to cross a whole stage and a half to fight with enemies at the peak Bone Forging stage. But now, when he compared that to the 'Heretical God Force', Lin Ming felt that the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' was just some commonplace cultivation technique!

"It seems so. After all, while the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' is a top-tier Body Transformation cultivation method manual within the Realm of the Gods, this cultivation method manual cannot be considered a forbidden technique that cannot be passed down. There must be many people who are familiar with the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians'! For instance, in the sect of the mighty elder who had learnt the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians', as long as you were a core disciple at the sect, you would be able to learn study this cultivation method."

“But this ‘Heretical God Force’ is actually unique within the entire Realm of the Gods. That second mighty elder who died had only discovered this secret technique within an ancient ruin in the Realm of the Gods. It has a very high possibility that it was left behind by an ancient evil god. It is not a cultivation method or martial skill or movement ability. It can only be called a mystical secret technique. Such an amazing ability is naturally not something that the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ can compare with.

“With this martial skill that I created by accident and with luck, although I can guarantee it can kill an early Pulse Condensation Period opponent, the consumption of energy is simply too large. The true essence within me has lowered by 40 or 50 percent. It’s impossible to use this ability in succession.

As Lin Ming was lost in his thoughts, the Thunder Valley deacon frantically ran out of the entrance.

He had been standing in a daze inside that last magnetic chamber looking at the few small electric snakes that were remaining. Then he had heard a tremendously loud explosion that had scared him awake; he had thought that the array formation had exploded.

As he was running out of the entranceway, he happened to see Lin Ming in front of all the falling debris, looking a bit confused.

This… this was originally a 100 foot high cliff…

The deacon had already protected Thunder Valley for many years; he was now well acquainted with the terrain around Thunder Valley. He could only look at Lin Ming incredulously. Could it be… that this 100 foot high cliff was collapsed by Lin Ming?

He glimpsed the Heavy Profound Soft Spear that Lin Ming was casually holding in his hands. There was a faint flash of true essence on the spear point.

Did he just make a move with his spear a moment ago that caused a 100 foot cliff to collapse?

Heavens!

The Thunder Valley deacon already thought that his timid heart had experienced enough excitement for today. This was just too terrifying. If he experienced a third shock, then he just might have a heart attack.

‘The rocks of the cliff had magnetic darksteel mixed in it! Who knows how many times harder it was than ordinary rock? How could this be possible!?’

“Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, what is all this? What happened here?”

Lin Ming slowly shrugged and said, “I’m sorry, I was not careful and the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead that I was examining exploded…”

Lin Ming had used the power of thunder and flame to release this move. Moreover, the concept behind this skill was the same as the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead. Perhaps even the man who created the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead would have difficulty discerning the difference between the effects of the bead and Lin Ming’s new ability.

“Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead?” The Thunder Valley deacon was surprised for a moment, and then he remembered what had happened recently. After Zhang Guanyu had been crippled by Lin Ming, news of the event had spread throughout the entire Sky Fortunate City.

At that time, when Zhang Guanyu was dueling Lin Ming, he found that his own strength was inferior, and he was already in a situation where he was defeated. Because of this, he tried to ambush Lin Ming with the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead, so Lin Ming had wasted him in response.

“So that’s what happened…” The Thunder Valley deacon exhaled; so this explosion was caused by the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead. If Lin Ming had thrown it then it would have collapsed the cliff. However, this Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead was simply too perverse. If a 100 foot high cliff could explode and end up looking like this, what would happen if it was thrown at a person? Would that person explode too?

Thinking this, the Thunder Valley deacon recalled the magnetic chamber and the thunder inside that had disappeared. His curiosity was piqued again, but Lin Ming had already made the first step and said, “Senior Apprentice Brother, it’s getting late, I should head back first. Thunder Valley should shut down about now. If there’s a chance, we will meet again.

Lin Ming didn’t wait for the Thunder Valley deacon to respond; he had already started moving after he finished his sentence. Since he had comprehended the concept of wind, Lin Ming’s speed was extremely swift.

“Oh, Junior Apprentice Brother Lin, hang on, about the matter of the thunder inside the magnetic… chamber……

The Thunder Valley deacon’s words trailed off halfway. Lin Ming had already disappeared beyond sight. This left him speechless. He had wanted to understand just what had happened inside that magnetic chamber in Thunder Valley…

Fortunately, there was always thunder and lightning in Thunder Valley throughout the entire year. It just so happened that there had also been a thunderstorm that evening, and Lin Ming had managed to absorb almost half of the thunder energy from there.

Since the Thunder Valley deacon could not find a reasonable explanation, he dropped the matter.

But by the second day, the news of the explosion that occurred outside of Thunder Valley had already been passed on to Ouyang Dihua.

“Your luck is quite good! The explosion from the Thunderbolt Devilfire bead actually didn’t kill you! However, you have now used up the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead; what else can you do to resist? Now when I kill you, it will be as easy as slaughtering a dog or chicken!”

Ouyang Dihua had already contacted the disciple of the Refiner Faction who had been expelled from the Seven Profound Valleys for violating sect rules. To Ouyang Dihua’s delight, that disciple had already taken a half-step into the Houtian realm, and had now surpassed even himself in strength.

It would be a breeze for a martial artist a half-step into the Houtian realm to deal with Lin Ming who was only at the early Altering Muscle stage.

“Lin Ming, your death has already been decided!”

Chapter 161 – Swallowing the Blood Lingzhi

Chapter 161 – Swallowing the Blood Lingzhi

…

…

…

For several days, Lin Ming had been carefully researching and studying the ‘Heretical God Force’ and had purified the true essence within his body. Although his cultivation hadn’t risen by much, his total strength had actually experienced a dramatic climb!

Before, Lin Ming had been lacking a true martial skill. Although his true essence was amazingly thick and he also had ghostly speed, his attack power was less than ideal. But now that he had inadvertently stumbled upon a method to fuse together the power of thunder and fire from borrowing the concepts behind the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead, he had created his own unique martial skill.

Lin Ming named this move of his – ‘Thunderfire Annihilation’.

“The power of Thunderfire Annihilation is no less than that of the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead. Now, as long as I don’t face a peak Pulse Condensation Period master, I have faith that I will be able to put up a worthwhile struggle. However, it wouldn’t be good if this move were known to others; no one would believe that this ability was something I created myself. If I’m not being pressured to the edge of death, then I shouldn’t use this move so easily.

Although Thunder Annihilation had an overwhelming offensive power, just using it once would consume 40 to 50 percent of the true essence within his body. The consumption of resources was simply too great. If he used it, he would have to be able to guarantee that the strike would kill the enemy in one move; otherwise he would be in an extremely critical situation.

As Lin Ming was planning on how to best utilize this new ability of his, a sound transmitting talisman lit in front of him.

As the purple red flames flashed and dissipated, Lin Ming was surprised to hear the voice; it was Qin Ziya, the Seven Profound Martial House Master.

The message of the sound transmitting talisman was very simple. He wanted to see Lin Ming at the sword bamboo grove in the back mountains.

Lin Ming put away the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, and immediately trekked to the sword bamboo grove.

It was already nightfall. The dim night sky was like an iridescent curtain that fell over the world. Stars sparkled in the sky, and in the sword bamboo grove, there was a chilling wind that rustled the fallen leaves.

As Lin Ming arrived at the edge of the sword bamboo grove, he saw Qin Ziya standing there, carrying a long zither. He was standing straight, and his long beard and blue robe danced in the bustling wind. He had an extraordinary and timeless demeanor.

“Martial House Master.” Lin Ming respectfully bowed.

“Mm. I called you here today because there are a few matters…” Qin Ziya slowly turned. His voice had the same strangely calming quality that it had before, and was very comfortable to listen to.

He flicked his fingers, and a golden light fell into Lin Ming’s hands.

Lin Ming received the golden token and glanced over it. Two words were written on it – ‘Seven Profound’.

Could this be… a Seven Profound Decree?

Lin Ming remembered that when Elder Wang had passed down the Seven Profound Decree to him, he had also held a token similar to this in his hand.

Qin Ziya said, “I’m very satisfied with your current ability. You shall take this Seven Profound Decree and head to Seraphic Pond Mountain within Huoluo Nation. There is a pool of holy water there that is called the Seraphic Pond. The Seraphic Pond contains an extremely pure true essence; it is very beneficial to anyone under the Houtian realm. As long as you can find it, it will help you break through to the Pulse Condensation Period. However, the power of true essence within the Seraphic Pond is limited; only 3 or 4 people can use it every year. I had a very hard time getting this opportunity for you; you should cherish it and strive towards greater realms of cultivation.”

“After some time, the main sect will send down some people to conduct a tournament between the Seven Profound Martial House of Sky Fortune Kingdom and the several surrounding countries. When that time comes, I want you to enter into that tournament and fight for a little face for my Sky Fortune Kingdom’s Martial House.

“Seraphic Pond Mountain?” As Lin Ming heard this he was instantly attentive. He already had some knowledge about Huoluo Nation’s Seraphic Pond. Seraphic Pond Mountain was a rare holy spiritual ground, and the summit where the Seraphic Pond was located was the centre of all the spiritual essence there.

Who knew how many people were aiming for this holy water every year? Huoluo Nation was much larger than Sky Fortune Kingdom, and they also had many more martial artists. If there was a limit of 3 or 4 people that could go to Seraphic Pond Mountain, then how could he have possibly been selected?

Huoluo Nation’s Seven Profound Martial House would undoubtedly be very unwilling to surrender such a precious cultivation resource to the Sky Fortune Kingdom. What sort of method had the Martial House Master used to obtain a spot for him?

Lin Ming bowed with some thanks, and silently thought in his heart that this Qin Ziya was neither his relative or close friend. Wasn’t this kindness just a little bit too over the top?

Was this Inter-Faction Grand Tournament of the Seven Profound Martial Houses really so important to Qin Ziya?

Qin Ziya also said, “Before you leave, go to the Martial House registration office and register than you will be leaving for two months to adventure. Make sure to keep where you are going and what you are doing confidential. Right now you have many enemies. The Seven Profound Martial House can be considered a safe zone, but once you leave the Seven Profound Martial House, you will be in danger, so do not mention to anyone that you are going to the Seraphic Pond. Also don’t tell anyone that you saw me tonight. I will send a master to protect you along the way, so make sure that you maintain a low-key presence and don’t stir up any trouble.”

“This disciple understands.” Lin Ming respectfully said. If a disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House had to leave for a long period of time for things such as completing a mission or going out on an adventure to experience the world, they needed to register at the Martial House’s registration office. Otherwise, if a disciple disappeared for too long without an explanation, then the Seven Profound Martial House would investigate. All of this was to ensure the safety of the Martial House’s disciples.

“In three days go to Travel Peak; there will be someone waiting for you. Remember: keep your location a secret.” Qin Ziya said this, and then drifted away.

“Yes, this disciple will remember.” Lin Ming bowed.

Looking at it, Qin Ziya had done him a very great favor today. However, Lin Ming felt that there was something off about the situation, but he wasn’t able to place his finger on just what was wrong.

“After I get to the Huoluo Nation’s Seraphic Pond Mountain, will they really give me a spot just with this Seven Profound Token? Would they really so kindly and obediently give out a position to others? Could there be some troubles later?”

Thinking this, Lin Ming returned to his cabin.

As Lin Ming sat down in bed and watched the token in his hands, he couldn't seem to forget this strange lingering feeling in his heart, as if something was off about what happened tonight.

"Martial House Master Qin promised me the treasure and medicines of the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, 500 year old Blood Lingzhi, Blue Miracle Pill, and Body Spiritual Ichor. Just this alone already shows how much concern he has towards me and what he believes my worth is. Now, he also gave me the opportunity to obtain true essence holy water from the Seraphic Pond. However, this Seraphic Pond is a resource that belongs to Huoluo Nation. If the Martial House Master wanted to obtain this opportunity, he must have paid a correspondingly high price..."

"The Martial House Master is not my relative, so why is he looking after me so well? Is it just because he values my future accomplishments? This explanation also seems a bit far-fetched."

Lin Ming frowned. Qin Ziya's generosity towards him was just too much. He was very flattered, but at the same time he was unable to suppress suspicions that had been aroused.

"When I leave the premises of the Seven Profound Martial House, I will certainly experience danger at some point. No matter what, I must be as careful as possible and keep my whereabouts a secret, so that they don't leak out and I find someone chasing after my shadow to assassinate me. I'll have to take these three days to enhance my strength as much as I can. With strength, I will have some confidence that I can protect myself.

Thinking this, Lin Ming pulled out the 500 year old Blood Lingzhi from his spatial ring.

The impurities in his body's true essence had already been tempered and melted away; the side effects from the two top-tier pills that he had eaten before had been completely cleared. Now it was time to take this 500 year old Blood Lingzhi.

A 500 year old Lingzhi was able to supplement the blood vitality of a martial artist, and increase their strength and martial arts cultivation.

Lin Ming swallowed the Blood Lingzhi. An ordinary Lingzhi would taste like cork, and would also take a long time to chew. However, the 500 year old Blood Lingzhi in his mouth was like fine meat; it was creamy, moist, and slid smoothly down his throat.

As he swallowed it into his stomach, Lin Ming felt a vigorous and exuberant swell of blood energy from his stomach spread out through his meridian lines and throughout his limbs.

A massive amount of vigorous and energetic blood flowed up, and Lin Ming felt dizzy. This kind of dizzy feeling was just as if he had stayed in a steam room for too long. Inside, the blood would rush to the surface and it would cause one's mind to be dizzy. This situation was somewhat similar to that.

Along with the continuous influx of vigorous blood energy, Lin Ming felt the dizziness expand as if his brain was blowing up. His face reddened and his mouth spat out hot steam.

His body began to give off an intense heat, and his skin was becoming more and more red. It looked as if he was oozing blood from a thousand tiny injuries. This was because the vigorous blood inside of him was simply too strong, and it had begun seeping out from all the tiny blood vessels in his body, which finally led to this phenomenon.

Lin Ming began to sweat all over, and even his sweat was tinted red with the overflow of blood. Seeing this, Lin Ming immediately closed all the pores of his body to prevent blood from spilling out. The blood that was flowing out contained the power of the Blood Lingzhi; it would be too pitiful for any to go to waste.

Although Lin Ming was bleeding all over, he did not feel any pain; he only felt a slight dizziness.

In comparison to the Blood Lingzhi, the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill and the Golden Snake Scarlet Pill were extremely dangerous and potent medicines. While these two medicines were extremely hot and extremely cold, this was because they were used to directly wash the muscles and purify marrow. The Blood Lingzhi had much milder side effects, as it was only used to supplement the blood vitality.

Lin Ming began to revolve the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’, and like this, he sat in meditation for 5 hours until the sun was bright in the sky. The red blush that covered his body had already began to slowly recede. Lin Ming had absorbed about 70 or 80 percent of the Blood Lingzhi’s blood vitality.

As Lin Ming revolved his true essence, he discovered that there was a great deficit of true essence within his body.

This deficit wasn’t because his true essence had been consumed. Rather, it was because Lin Ming’s body had become more powerful, so he was able to accommodate more true essence.

If true essence was compared to water, then the body would be the reservoir that was able to hold the water. From Strength Training to Flesh Training to Viscera Training to Altering Muscle to Bone Forging and finally to Pulse Condensation, as one cultivated to each stage, the reservoir would expand and deepen, thus the amount of true essence once could hold was more.

But now, although Lin Ming’s current cultivation hadn’t risen, the blood vitality in his body was like a robustly burning stove. Because of this, the reservoir in his body was much more broad and deep than those at the same level of cultivation, and so the amount of true essence that he could hold was also more compared to others.

Not only that, but because of the exuberant energy in his blood, his vitality was also stronger. His endurance was greater, and his physical strength also increased.

Although Lin Ming’s cultivation hadn’t yet risen, his strength had just grown by a great deal.

“There are only two days before I must set off. With so little time, it’s not realistic to want to have a great enhancement in my strength, unless I can complete the inscription symbol for my Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

The reason that Lin Ming hadn't yet placed an inscription symbol on the Heavy Profound Soft Spear from the time he had received it until now was because he had been busy constantly cultivating, and also because the materials were difficult to find.

"A few days ago I sent out a bulletin from the Inscription Association. I wonder how many of the materials have been collected so far."

Lin Ming had only just put out the announcement that he was trading his personal inscription symbols for materials. Since it had only been a few days, he had no hope in expecting that they would be gathered so quickly. However, he hadn't expected that during the afternoon of that same day, Wang Yuhan would send him a sound transmitting talisman informing him that the materials he wanted were ready, and Lin Ming could come take them whenever he wanted to.

This caused Lin Ming to be very surprised.

As he arrived at the Inscription Association, Wang Yuhan had already organized all the materials and placed them in a case. On the side of the case was a note that had a list of names detailing where all the materials had come from.

About 20% of the materials were sent by customers. They had delivered the materials in return for an inscription symbol.

As for the other materials, about 40% was sent by the Crown Prince's messenger, and the last 40% were prepared by Bai Jingyun.

"Sky Fortune City's Bai Jing… Bai Jingyun?"

Lin Ming was even more surprised than before. The materials needed to create the "Astral' symbol were not as rare or expensive as the ones needed to draw up the body inscription symbol. However, to collect so many materials in such a short time, one would have to spend a great deal of money, and also call in many favors and connections…

Chapter 162 – Trap

Chapter 162 – Trap

…

…

…

Lin Ming asked Wang Yuhan, “Did Senior Apprentice Sister Bai leave any message when she stopped by to deliver the materials? For instance, did she ask me to create an inscription symbol for her or something like that?”

Wang Yuhan said, “Jingyun didn’t say anything. She just left the materials here then departed.”

“Oh… hm, do you have Bai Jingyun’s sound transmission information? I would like to use a sound transmitting talisman to ask her.”

Wang Yuhan said, “Yes, but Jingyun recently left Sky Fortune City. She’s already put in a request for a 5 month leave of absence from the Seven Profound Martial House. I don’t think that she’ll be back any time soon.”

A sound transmitting talisman had a limit to the distance that it could reach. If it was a very long distance, there had to be a preplanned relay system set up ahead of time, and multiple sound transmitting talismans had to be used in series.

“Leave of absence?” Lin Ming thought this was quite peculiar. The time one had to practice at the Seven Profound Martial House was very valuable; what sort of reason would there be for Bai Jingyun to request a five month leave of absence?

Lin Ming was not accustomed to owing a debt to others. As for the Crown Prince's help, it was fine since he was helping him in the struggle for the throne. But why would Bai Jingyun collect these materials, and then leave for a long journey without leaving a note? It really was confusing.

"Then, if Senior Apprentice Sister comes back, I'll trouble you to inform me."

"Alright."

"So… Miss Wang, if I could ask you to help me prepare an inscription room. I would like to draw up the customers' inscription symbols first."

"Mm. Okay!"

…………………………

Two days later, in the middle of the night –

Outside of Sky Fortune City in a shaded area of the woods, Lin Ming was wearing all black clothes as he rode on the back of a large gray eagle. This was a top-quality mount that a common person would usually never see in their lives, a Heavenly Wind Eagle.

The Heavenly Wind Eagle had a wingspan of 40 feet, and it could fly a huge distance of 8 thousand miles every day. It was a third-level vicious beast, and it was only tamable by those martial artists in sects that were proficient in beast mastery. This kind of eagle mount had a value of at least 200,000 taels of gold, and it wasn't something that money could easily buy.

Tonight, he would ride this Heavenly Wind Eagle and go towards the Huoluo Nation's Seraphic Pond Mountain.

Lin Ming had already finished drawing the 'Astral' inscription symbol, and the drawing process had proceeded very smoothly, without any problems. After completion, the range of true essence within the Heavy Profound Soft Spear had increased by 50%.

The skill of inscription ‘Astral Spear’ had also been successfully attached. As soon as he willed it, true essence would condense into a part of the spear, and theoretically, as long as a martial artist’s true essence was powerful enough, the spear could extend to an infinite distance!

With Lin Ming’s current strength, in a situation where he was in a battle, he was able to extend the Heavy Profound Soft Spear by a little more than 100 or so feet.

At this moment, by Lin Ming side, there was also a martial artist that looked to be around 30 years old. He was wearing very flashy clothing, and carried a heavy sword on his back. There was a long scar from a knife wound that curved down his face in the shape of a snake.

This person’s cultivation was at the peak Pulse Condensation Period. He might even have taken a half-step into the Houtian realm. He was also riding a Heavenly Wind Eagle.

This was the martial artist that Qin Ziya had sent to protect him three days ago.

After Lin Ming had arrived at Travel Peak at the agreed time, he had already been waiting there for him.

When Lin Ming saw this person, he was stunned. Qin Ziya’s disciple was actually a martial artist that was a half-step into the Houtian realm. And not only that, but this person had very pure true essence, and an extremely powerful aura. His strength was probably higher than a martial artist at the same level of cultivation. With this person here, the Allied Trade Association would definitely not dare to do anything.

“Hello, Senior Apprentice Brother.” Lin Ming greeted.

“Mm.” The man replied with a lukewarm tone. “Are you prepared? We are leaving tonight.”

“Yes.” Lin Ming had wanted to ask for the senior apprentice brother’s name and gain some understanding into the reason he was going to Huoluo Nation, but felt that this man didn’t want to speak any more, so he reluctantly dropped the topic.

The man let out a strange whistling sound, and suddenly, two Heavenly Wind Eagles heard that whistling and soared down!

The Heavenly Wind Eagles flew down faster and faster, and Li Ming could only hear the howl of wind in his ears as the incoming turbulent air current sent his clothes fluttering about.

Lin Ming used his true essence to condense a wind shield in front of himself to block the intense winds. His eyes stared at the back of the Pulse Condensation Period martial artist in front of him, and he fell back into rumination.

This was an absolutely unwise time to leave the Seven Profound Martial House. If he was able to keep his whereabouts completely hidden, then it would be fairly safe. However, if there was even the slightest leak as to where he was, then the situation might become a bit dangerous.

"Martial House Master Qin has credibility. He shouldn't be trying to harm me, but I should still be careful. But even if I say that, if Martial House Master Qin wanted me dead, then I wouldn't be alive today either."

The first time that Lin Ming had met Qin Ziya, he had felt a faint aura of righteousness from him. In general, those gentlemen that were accomplished in the fine arts were usually never hypocritical or malicious; otherwise it would be profoundly difficulty to have any attainments in the fine arts.

The two Heavenly Wind Eagles flew for one day and one night. After a brief two-hour period of rest, they then departed again for another 8000 miles.

This surrounding landscape became gradually more desolate the further south they went. This was south of Sky Fortune Kingdom, and it was close to the Great Southern Wilderness.

Lin Ming found that the Heavenly Wind Eagles didn't directly fly to Huoluo Nation. Instead, they took a detour. Even with the amazing speed of the Heavenly Wind Eagles this detour would still take half a day.

“Is this because of safety concerns?” Lin Ming began to doubt in his mind. Relatively speaking, it was very safe to ride a Heavenly Wind Eagle. A Heavenly Wind Eagle flew at an altitude of thousands of feet, and it was difficult for someone who wanted to kill him to intercept him at such a height.

“It would be really easy for a murderer to dump a corpse here…” Lin Ming heart began to have a faint sense of foreboding, and he secretly went on alert. His mind linked to the Heretical God Seed, feeling the terrifying compressed power of thunder and fire within, and felt slightly more at peace.

At this moment, Lin Ming, who had been highly focused the entire time, suddenly felt ice cold. He felt that the Pulse Condensation Period martial artist in from of him was emitting a faint murderous intent. And this murderous intent was directed at him!

This caused all of Lin Ming’s four limbs to immediately become cold!

This was a martial artist who was a half-step into the Houtian realm. He was someone that not even Thunderfire Annihilation would be able to match up against!

……………………

At this time in a valley at Zhou Mountain, it was night, and the shaded trees lent an eerily dark feeling to the valley.

“Is it done?” The voice abruptly sounded. The one who spoke was Ouyang Dihua.

“It was only a trivial matter. Huo Gong should begin any time now.” The feminine voice of Bi Luo said as he slowly emerged from the woods.

Huo Gong was Ouyang Dihua’s junior apprentice brother. He was a disciple of the Refining Faction but had been expelled from the Seven Profound Valleys. He was the martial artist riding the Heavenly Wind Eagle alongside Lin Ming that was a half-step into the Houtian realm.

Ouyang Dihua cruelly smiled and said, “Senior Apprentice Brother’s illusions are truly superb. I’m afraid that not even Qin Ziya would be able to see through them.”

Bi Luo was from the Mirage Faction of the Seven Profound Valleys, and what he was best at were illusions, particularly disguises. Not only he could transfigure appearances, but he could also mimic voices and personalities. It was to a level that not even a peak Houtian realm master would be able to see through them.

Three days ago, Bi Luo had transformed into Qin Ziya, and had ordered Lin Ming to leave the Seven Profound Martial House.

“He used to not to be able see through my illusions, but these years Qin Ziya had been roaming the world and his zither heart has already reached the point where it is like a mirror; the stage where his heart is spotless and resolute. His cultivation is also a half-step into the Xiantian realm. It shouldn’t be difficult for him to see through my illusions. Fortunately, that eyesore Qin Ziya left the Seven Profound Martial House after the grand banquet had ended. He will continue to roam around and polish his zither heart, so there won’t be any problems since he won’t be coming back any time soon.”

“Mm. As long as Qin Ziya isn’t here and we can make Lin Ming leave the Seven Profound Martial House, killing him would be as easy as killing a chicken. Huo Gong wasn’t needed to begin with. As Long as Lin Ming falls down from the Heavenly Wind Eagle, he will meet a violent, crushing death! Let alone a mere little boy at the Altering Muscle stage, even a Houtian master would be finished!” Ouyang Dihua diabolically grinned as he said this.

If he tried to move against Lin Ming in the Seven Profound Martial House, then it would alarm many people. Even if he could successfully kill him, after he died there would most likely be several traces of evidence that one could use to trace back to the murderer.

However, if Lin Ming was to leave the Seven Profound Martial House and even leave Sky Fortune City, and then if he was to disappear, most others would chalk it up to him dying while on an adventure somewhere. This way, even if the Seven Profound Martial House wanted to investigate the situation, they would have no idea where to even begin.

“The great Southern Wilderness is a land of endless vicious beasts and poisonous insects. Once he plunges to his death, there won’t even be dust left over from his bones once the vicious beasts are done tearing through him. That is truly the best place to kill a man and destroy his corpse without leaving any evidence!”

Ouyang Dihua greedily licked his lips, and impatiently waited in anticipation of the good news that Huo Gong would send to him.

……………

Southern Wilderness –

As he rode on the Heavenly Wind Eagle, Lin Ming heard the snake-scarred martial artist let out a sharp whistle. Suddenly, when the Heavenly Wind Eagle under Lin Ming heard this whistle, it rolled over midflight, trying to make Lin Ming fall off its back!

“Beast!”

Lin Ming held onto the eagle’s feathers. Taking advantage of his strength, he took a firm grip with one hand on the eagle’s body, and with a flick of his wrist, the 1200 jin Heavy Profound Soft Spear had already jumped into his hands.

Although the Heavenly Wind Eagle was very strong in flight, how could it maintain flight with a 1200 jin weight on its back?

As Lin Ming tightly gripped onto the eagle’s back muscles and pulled out his spear, the Heavenly Wind Eagle immediately let out a whining call of pain and desperately flapped its wings. Even so, the Heavenly Wind Eagle immediately plunged downwards in a straight vertical drop before catching itself!

“Hehe, sorry young boy. I have had no past injustice with you and no present grudge. I’m only doing this because someone offered me some benefits, and they wanted you to completely disappear. I’m sorry, but don’t blame me.”

Huo Gong stood on the back of the Heavenly Wind Eagle and grinned heartlessly. The snake-like scar wound on his face looked especially ferocious as he laughed.

“Who asked you to kill me? Qin Ziya?” As Lin Ming asked this he immediately rejected it. No, something was strange, but he didn’t know just what was strange.

“Haha, you think that it’s Qin Ziya? Think as you like, I have no interest in meaninglessly chitchatting with you. I will let you be a confused ghost as well!”

You think that it’s Qin Ziya...

These words resounded in Lin Ming’s heart, and made him go cold...

At this point, he didn’t have any time to reflect on this. There was another strange whistling sound that was sent from Huo Gong, and the man sat down on the Heavenly Wind Eagle as he turned around and flew at Lin Ming to kill him!

“Have a peaceful journey to hell!” Huo Gong took out a strangely shaped long saber from his back, and sent that long saber careening towards Lin Ming’s back to behead him!

Clang!

Lin Ming lifted his spear to resist Huo Gong’s strike with everything he had.

However, the strength of a martial artist at the peak Pulse Condensation Period was simply too formidable. As they exchanged a blow, Lin Ming only felt a strong force transmit through his body as he was sent flying backwards.

With a cough, Lin Ming tore off a hunk of flesh from the Heavenly Wind Eagle’s back as he was sent soaring backwards by the strength of the blow.

The Heavenly Wind Eagle issued a pitifully keening cry. From an altitude of thousands of feet in the air, Lin Ming plummeted downwards!

Chapter 163 – The Moment of Life and Death!

Chapter 163 – The Moment of Life and Death!

…

…

…

Seeing this, Huo Gong grinned maniacally. If one's cultivation wasn't at the Xiantian realm, then they wouldn't be able to fly. Let alone Lin Ming, even a peak Houtian realm master would die a horrible death if they fell from an altitude of thousands of feet!

This murder was just too easy!

Although he had already determined that Lin Ming would die, Huo Gong still rode the Heavenly Wind Eagle to chase him down. Firstly, he had to receive proof of Lin Ming's death, and secondly he would take his possessions. Lin Ming had a spatial ring and the Heavy Profound Soft Spear on his body; how could he miss such a great fortune?

The speed at which Lin Ming was falling from the sky kept increasing. In a blink of an eye, Lin Ming had already fallen several dozens of feet!

As he frenziedly descended downwards, Lin Ming locked onto Huo Gong with his soul force. At this moment, he was filled with an incomparable calmness!

Against a martial arts master who was a half-step into the Houtian realm, even his Thunderfire Annihilation would be useless to defeat him. There would only be one chance to turn this defeat into victory!

This would be a midair battle with his life on the line!

“If you want to kill me, then I’ll drag you down with me!”

Lin Ming gripped the base of the Heavy Profound Soft Spear. The nine foot long spear began to emit a cold brightness on its spear point; its murderous intent was overflowing!

The crazily fluttering wind blew against him, Lin Ming began to fiercely revolve his true essence, and he brought forth a maddening amount.

“Concept of Wind – Golden Roc Shattering the Void!”

Lin Ming spread his arms wide. It was like an invisible and gentle force had been born underneath him, cradling Lin Ming in its grasp; his falling speed began to slow down!

When Lin Min had first comprehended the concept of wind within the Violent Wind Tunnel, it was possible for him to let his body pause in the air for a moment. Now as he sailed amidst the wind and his strength had sharply risen, he was even more like a fish in water!

Lin Ming clenched his teeth and his body suddenly rose up, flying directly towards Huo Gong!

Huo Gong experienced a frightening shock as he rode the Heavenly Wind Eagle. He had never even imagined that Lin Ming could use his own power to stay in the air!

How was this possible!?

Even if it was Ouyang Dihua who had personally tasted the speed of Lin Ming’s movements, he wouldn’t have thought this was possible. Lin Ming’s skill at movement had already reached the point of sailing in the wind!

In the minds of most, only a Xiantian realm martial artist with incomparably thick true essence could fly; this was common sense!

“Has this boy reached the Xiantian realm!?”

As soon as this thought flashed in Huo Gong's mind, he instantly rejected it.

It was impossible. As Huo Gong remained dumbfounded by what was happening, Lin Ming had already rushed a hundred feet towards him. He gripped the Heavy Profound Soft Spear with both arms, and his body's complete momentum came roaring out!

"Flood Dragon Goes to Sea!"

His spear shot out perpendicular to his arm. The keenly sharp true essence whistled as it tore through the air; the silver-white spear point was just like a blazing silver meteor that was rushing out!

Huo Gong suddenly recovered his composure. He pulled out his long saber and gave a fierce shout, his saber slashed out at Lin Ming's Heavy Profound Soft Spear!

But at this moment, Lin Ming's hand that was holding the spear lowered, and the spear point thrust past the saber and straight into the Heavenly Wind Eagle!

"This is bad!"

Huo Gong was taken aback. This was truly a rude awakening. Lin Ming's target was not him, but his mount.

If he didn't have his mount, he would fall almost a thousand feet and hit the ground before shattering into pieces!

"Just die!"

Huo Gong angrily shouted and his saber cut out at Lin Ming. The saber had been kindled with a pyroclastic flame. If Lin Ming kept stabbing out, then his flame essence would absolutely severely injure or even kill Lin Ming!

This was a fighting style that placed one's life on the line. Let's just see who is more willing to die!

At this moment, Lin Ming's body flew backwards!

Huo Gong's saber only cut air, but he was forced to draw back due to Lin Ming's attack. As long as the Heavenly Wind Eagle was unharmed and they both reached the ground, then he would hold an overwhelming advantage.

But at this moment, another unthinkable scene took place. Although Lin Ming had retreated, the Heavy Profound Soft Spear in his hands suddenly stretched out. This was the skill of inscription – Astral Spear!

The several dozen feet long Astral Spear was like a snow-colored bolt of lightning that shot out. The supplementary skill of inscription of the 'Astral' inscription symbol was the 'Astral Spear'. This ability was able to condense true essence into a part of the spear itself. As long as one's true essence was powerful enough, the spear could infinitely extended!

Puff!

The Astral Spear pierced through the Heavenly Wind Eagle's body with no resistance, and cut through its heart and lungs!

Screech!!! ——-The Heavenly Wind Eagle issued a wailing scream, and its body suddenly lost balance as it tumbled downwards.

"True essence manifestation, Flow like Silk!"

Lin Ming did not give Huo Gong even the slightest chance to retaliate. The Heavy Profound Soft Spear in his hands began to violently shake, and vibrating true essence erupted from his spear as it began to realize into reality. More than 5000 true essence filaments formed into 5000 devilish flood dragons that broke into the Heavenly Wind Eagle's body and tore apart all of its organs!

Puff!

The entire body of the Heavenly Wind Eagle sprayed blood, and its entire body exploded in a sea of crimson as it died!

“You are courting death!”

Huo Gong’s eyes turned red with rage. He jumped up using the broken body of the Heavenly Wind Eagle and with the rebounding strength; he let out a scream and called another Heavenly Wind Eagle towards him.

How could Lin Ming not see through his intentions? He retracted his arms, raised another mass of true essence, and while pointing his long spear straight out, he thrust it at the second Heavenly Wind Eagle!

“Stop!” Huo Long cried out in increasing panic. If this Heavenly Wind Eagle were to die, then he would be finished!

“Red Lotus Purgatory!” Huo Gong gave a loud shout and his body erupted in a raging inferno. As he wielded his saber, the red lotus began to bloom and the sky darkened. It was as if this red lotus was swallowing all the light of the sun!

When Lin Ming had fought Zhu Yan, Zhu Yan had overdrawn his true essence in that final moment in order to use this move. But compared to Huo Gong now, whether it was his aura or deadliness of the flames, Zhu Yan’s move was far weaker in all aspects!

Seeing the burning hot red lotus fly straight at him, Lin Ming unfolded his arms as if here were a golden roc himself. Both feet moved in a straight manner, and his body was like a kite that flew off to the side.

This was an airborne step of Golden Roc Shattering the Void – Imperial Wind Roc Art. When Lin Ming had defeated Zhang Guanyu, he had combined the concept of wind with the ‘Foundation Movement Technique’. Although he hadn’t used any top-tier movement martial skill steps to win, that didn’t mean that Golden Roc Shattering the Void did not have its own unique steps!

“Haa!”

The Red Lotus Purgatory slid past Lin Ming’s body. However, the energy contained within Huo Gong’s move was simply too excessive and formidable. Even though Lin Ming had evaded the Red Lotus Purgatory, he still felt the searing wind that was carried from the Red Lotus Purgatory. At that time, blood painfully surged within his body and his body was sent tumbling around.

Huo Gong took this opportunity to swing a whip, and the whip entangled itself around the last Heavenly Wind Eagle’s claws. Like this, his speed of descent slowed down.

As he tumbled around, Lin Ming saw this and felt anxious. He didn’t have much time left. They were now only a few hundred feet from the ground!

Lin Ming flicked his hand and the Heavy Profound Soft Spear was withdrawn back into the spatial ring. Now that he was 1200 jins lighter, Lin Ming’s body felt light like a swallow!

He raised his true essence again; Lin Ming stepped on air and moved straight towards the Heavenly Wind Eagle.

“F*ck off!”

Huo Gong gripped the whip, and with a tug of his strength, he swung up from it. His body flew up at an angle towards Lin Ming, and he chopped out with a sizzling saber to cut Lin Ming in half.

Huo Gong was truly a martial artist who was a half-step into the Houtian realm. Even if he was restricted in the air, he could still attack Lin Ming.

Clang!

As Huo Gong struck out with his saber, it still contained an immensely powerful force to it. Lin Ming had already pulled out the Heavy Profound Soft Spear to block the attack. With

Huo Gong's body upside down, the billowing hot fire true essence burnt off his beard and all his hair!

Lin Ming flew backwards in the air again. He raised his true essence to push down the roiling blood within his chest. His eyes locked onto the Heavenly Wind Eagle. This distance was already past the limit that the Astral Spear could reach.

His attack range was too low!

Lin Ming clenched his teeth and drew out another weapon from his spatial ring. This weapon was another long spear!

This spear was 8 feet 8 inches long. The shaft was a dark purple and the tip was a deep red. This spear was one he hadn't used in a long time – Penetrating Rainbow!

"Die!"

Lin Ming bellowed. His strength of 8000 jins erupted, and vibrating true essence rushed into the Penetrating Rainbow spear. He aimed at the Heavenly Wind Eagle, and shot out his spear!

Whiz!

The Penetrating Rainbow spear shattered the ear, sending out a screeching howl as if a sharp knife were scratching against ice. Listening to the horrifying sound, one could imagine the terrifying strength behind that spear!

At this point, Huo Gong had already used his saber, and his momentum had dried up. In the air, he simply had nowhere he could leverage. He could only helplessly watch as the spear was fired out dozens of feet towards the Heavenly Wind Eagle!

Although the Heavenly Wind Eagle was a third-level vicious beast, Lin Ming's strength had recently arrived at an exceedingly potent level. Having just swallowed the 500 year old

Blood Lingzhi, his vitality was like a burning stove. The Penetrating Rainbow spear that he threw out was nearly faster than the speed of sound; how could one possibly dodge it?

Puff!

The Heavenly Wind Eagle was pierced like tofu by the Penetrating Rainbow spear!

Blood spewed forth a dozen feet into the air. The speed of the Penetrating Rainbow didn't slow down; it passed through the Heavenly Wind Eagle and kept soaring out into the sky.

"Ah ah ah ah!"

Hu Gong issued a furious scream of anger. He seized the whip, and wanted to leverage it to cut towards Lin Ming again with his saber, but the Heavenly Wind Eagle had already died. Huo Gong had no strength to initiate an attack; how could he catch Lin Ming, who had already comprehended the concept of wind?

Huo Gong's saber uselessly cut air as he rapidly plummeted downwards.

He was still 800 feet from the ground!

"Boy! I'll remember you!"

Huo Gong gave off an angry roar as he fell faster and faster!

Lin Ming lifted his spear and pursued him. Although they were far from the ground, he didn't know if this height was enough to kill a man who was a half-step into the Houtian realm.

"Since it's like this, let me add to the fire."

Lin Ming shook his Heavy Profound Soft Spear. Skill of inscription – Astral Spear!

The 100 foot Astral Spear formed. Lin Ming raised his arms and mercilessly thrust towards Huo Gong!

Peng!

This level of attack could not injure Huo Gong. He lifted his saber to fend off the spear.

However, the moment he fended off the attack, Huo Gong’s body was like a ball which had been struck. His falling speed exploded!

“Ah ah ah, I will tear you into a million pieces!”

Huo Gong called out in anger. Lin Ming simply ignored him. He crazily poured true essence into the Heretical God Seed’s Flame Essence and Thunder Soul, brewing up and readying his own unique martial skill – Thunderbolt Annihilation.

Take advantage of the moment, and take his life!

He had already made up his mind. Even if Huo Gong were to die from this fall, he would not give a single inch of mercy; he would use his strongest move!

This Huo Gong was probably not much weaker than an ordinary Houtian realm martial artist. Facing such a powerful enemy, Lin Ming didn’t dare to hesitate at all.

However, just as Huo Gong was about to hit the ground, Lin Ming’s complexion changed. They were above a forest of the Southern Wilderness. In the moment that they fell into the forest, Huo Gong had flicked his whip and wrapped it around a branch of a thick tree.

“Damnit!”

Chapter 164 – Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation

Chapter 164 – Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation

…

…

…

Lin Ming cursed. He hadn't thought that the forest terrain would ruin everything that he had planned.

Kacha!

Although Huo Gong had wrapped his whip around the branch of a tree, his falling speed was simply too fast. The branch broke under the strain of the pull and Huo Gong fell to the ground with a very loud explosion, creating a human-shaped hole in the ground.

Huo Gong had been badly injured. His internal organs were crushed, and he had broken several ribs.

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cruel light. He had been ready to run for his life, but now seeing that Huo Gong had been so miserably injured in the fall, he changed his mind.

Destroy him while he's down, and eliminate the root before any more problems emerged!

If he didn't, then Huo Gong would simply eat several top-quality pills and restore his true essence. Once that happened, he would still chase him down and murder him. Although Lin Ming had the advantage of being able to fly in the air, once his true essence was exhausted, he would inevitably fall down.

If Huo Gong followed him on ground, he would catch up sooner or later.

“Die!”

Lin Ming clenched his teeth and put forth 120% of his strength. He dove down like a falcon from a height of several dozen feet in the air!

He thrust his spear out in front of him. The Thunder Soul and Flame Essence within began to violently tremble; the calamitous forces of fire and thunder were like an unforgiving flow that were about to burst out!

Heretical God Force – Open!

The long spear aimed down, and the spearpoint was aimed straight. The horrifying sound of thunder and fire fusing began to echo in the air. The Heavy Profound Soft Spear was just like a meteor that was intertwining with thunder and fire, blazing down!

At this moment, the severely wounded Huo Gong suddenly flipped up. Seeing Lin Ming’s spear coming at him, his expression was incomparably ugly.

Although his internal organs were crushed and his ribs were broken, he still had the true essence protection of a half-step Houtian realm master flowing through his innards, skeleton, and muscles. With this durable true essence protection, he was able to barely staunch the severe wounds.

He had wanted to play dead as if he had been severely wounded to lure Lin Ming down, but hadn’t expected that Lin Ming would be so decisive with his attack. Not only did he not investigate his wounds, but he had immediately used his finishing blow.

Of course, to Huo Gong who specialized in the art of fire, Lin Ming’s so called finishing blow that seemed to flow with some sort of flame simply looked like some second-rate skill.

“Humph, you are just some Altering Muscle stage junior and your cultivation is mediocre. You still dare to fight me with flame?”

Huo Gong sneered and his entire body combusted in a tornado of flames. Although he had truly been severely wounded, his cultivation was still a half-step into the Houtian realm; how could he fear a little junior at the Altering Muscle stage?

“Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation!”

Huo Gong gave a loud shout as a red lotus flower appeared out of thin air in front of him. Tongues of flame flowed along the flower petals like crimson snakes, pouring a massive amount of fire true essence into his saber until it turned a blazing red, as if it were about to melt.

Poof! Just as he had used the Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation, Huo Gong spat out a mouthful of blood. With the severe wounds on his injured body, he was just barely able to support such a strong martial skill.

“Damn kid, he actually made me suffer such a heavy injury. I will kill him first before I find a place to heal myself.” Thinking this, Huo Gong forcefully revolved his true essence, and wielded his saber. Above the saber, a vast swirl of rolling flames spread through the air. The land underneath his feet was instantly burned black, and a crimson heatwave spread out in all directions. In every place this heatwave touched, the vegetation would all wither and finally combust into fiery flames, turning into nothing but ash!

Compared to the flames on Lin Ming’s spear, whether it was horrifically scorching aura or the intensity of flames that spread out in a terrifying heat wave, the Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation was far superior!

However, even facing the formidable Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation, the flames in Lin Ming’s spear seemed to contain their own strange aura, as if it were boiling.

Lin Ming was able to clearly feel the fluctuating flames and bursts of rolling heat transmitting from his heart; it was as if the Flame Essence was dancing in excitement!

“Hah!”

When the spear and saber crossed each other, the twin energies of thunder and fire suddenly interwove – Thunderfire Annihilation!

As the seemingly weak flame met the seemingly weak lightning, a dominant power suddenly erupted!

For a time, it was as if all sound in the surroundings had been swallowed by some mystical force. The Heavy Profound Soft Spear was like a bolt of silver light that roared out, tearing through the atmosphere.

The interweaving energies of thunder and fire coalesced into a mysterious ball of light that shot out from the spear, and directly clashed head on against the Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation!

Bang!

There was an deafening explosion as if a raging bolt of thunder had struck. Raging true essence scattered in all directions like a tsunami of water crashing out from the epicenter of the explosion.

Lin Ming was sent flying tumbling backwards like a ragdoll. Even though Huo Gong was severely wounded, his move still had such power!

As he tumbled back in the air, Lin Ming spat out a mouthful of blood. The Heavy Profound Soft Spear desperately swept out and mercilessly broke apart a large tree. Lin Ming gathered his strength after slowing his momentum, and firmly managed to hold his body straight.

He looked up to see Huo Gong standing where he had been. The land around him had become a scorched, sunken pit. Huo Gong’s entire body was slick with blood, and he was kneeling on the ground and supporting himself with his long saber.

This caused Lin Ming’s heart to contract; a martial artist that was a half-step into the Houtian realm was actually formidable to this degree.

Huo Gong had been severely injured, and not only that, but Lin Ming had opened the Heretical God Force and also used Thunderfire Annihilation. Still, he had failed to kill him.

Lin Ming had consumed too much true essence, so he did not continue his attack. Instead, he took out a pure true essence stone, and began to revolve the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ as he rapidly absorbed the true essence to restore his strength.

But at this moment, Huo Gong suddenly grinned. Under his blackened lips, he revealed a row of glowing white teeth. To Lin Ming, that gruesome smile caused his heart to go cold. This fellow actually still had strength!

“You really gave me a pleasant surprise! Is this really a martial skill that an Altering Muscle stage martial artist can release? It seems that I was the one who was not familiar with how the world has already changed… good, very good! Today, even if I have to ruin my cultivation, I will kill you. Otherwise if I let you live, there will be no end of my future troubles!

Huo Gong let out another shout. His body began to burn once again with the Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation. But this time, the Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation was much weaker. As the fiery snakes twisted around his body, Huo Gong spat out a mouthful of blood; he had already gone past his limit!

“I don’t believe that you have the true essence to use that move again!” Huo Gong tread both feet on the ground, and the charred land began to rupture. He rushed forwards, his blazing saber cutting forwards to take Lin Ming’s head!

At this moment of life or death, Lin Ming’s mind was calm like ice!

His right hand held out the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, and his left hand’s thumb traced the spatial ring.

He couldn’t use Thunderfire Annihilation again, and it was also impossible for him to fend of Huo Gong’s saber!

“Die for me!” Huo Gong’s saber chopped down. The hot air from the saber circled up into a violent tornado as it stirred up a scalding air current.

Meanwhile, Lin Ming also thrust out his spear, Flow like Silk!

5000 strands of fierce true essence gushed out like a tide towards Huo Gong, and in the midst of this torrent was mixed in a small blue bead.

Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead!

Bang!!!

True essence detonated the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead. At the same time, Lin Ming immediately launched the Golden Roc Shattering the Void movement ability and flew backwards.

In that flash, even the sun seemed to have lost all color. The countless dazzlingly bright rays were like golden swords that stabbed out in all directions.

Lin Ming was struck by the shockwave of the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead in addition to the heatwave from Huo Gong’s saber. Even though his physical body had been strengthened and he had the medium-grade human-step Purple Gold Flexible Armor bestowed by the Crown Prince, his internal organs were still impacted by the terrifying backlash and he vomited blood.

However, Huo Gong was even more miserable. He had almost run into the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead.

The endless torrents of wanton explosive energy had recklessly fallen on Huo Gong’s body. Under the previous severe wounds he had taken, the true essence that protected his body was already weakened to the point that it couldn’t take a normal strike, so how could he possibly defend against such a violent explosion?

Huo Gong's chest had had been completely blown open into stringy pulp. His blood mixed with meat bits had been sent scattering about. Huo Gong was sent flying backwards until he struck a large tree, and with a harsh crashing sound, the thick trunk of the large tree was cracked in half by the force of the collision.

Huo Gong was like a dead dog as he tumbled several dozen feet on the ground, before coming to a slow stop. His long saber spun in a few circles before it sunk into the ground.

"How... how could I... like this..." Huo Gong was unwilling to admit this situation, and he tried to crawl up. However, his heart and lungs had already exploded within his chest. His blood stained the land and his life was slowly leaking away...

"I... I am actually going to die at an Altering Muscle... martial artist's hands!? I... I refuse!"

Huo Gong reached out a hand as if he wanted to grasp the saber that had sunk into the ground. But then, he spat one last mouthful of blood and his body went limp. He had died!

It was a pity that he didn't know that Lin Ming still possessed the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead. In addition to the severe wounds he had, his perception had also been dulled; otherwise he would have found the trap that had been hidden within Lin Ming's true essence.

Alas, this was simply fate. Ouyang Dihua would never have dreamed that Lin Ming was able to comprehend his own unique martial skill that was almost the exact same as the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead. The result was that Ouyang Dihua had thought that Lin Ming had used the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead as if he were enjoying it for fireworks...

....

Kacha!

The sky flashed with blood-red lightning. Soon after, it began to rain.

The Southern Wilderness had a humid climate, and there were often thunderstorms.

The torrential downpour of rain washed away the remaining vestiges of blood. Lin Ming dragged the Heavy Profound Soft Spear and limped over, wounded, to Huo Gong's side.

After taking some healing pills, Lin Ming sat down in the middle of a mud puddle and let the pattering rain wash over his wounded body.

"This rain… actually helped me."

Lin Ming quietly muttered to himself. After he was caught in the shockwaves from the explosions, his injuries were simply too heavy.

In the Southern Wilderness, there were countless roaming vicious beasts. If blood drifted out, then it would certainly attract many vicious beasts here. With Lin Ming's current condition, if he had to face many vicious beasts, the outcome could be imagined.

"A life and death battle; that was too close!"

This was the first time that Lin Ming had ever killed another man. However, he didn't have any particular feelings towards this. He had chosen to travel down the path of martial artists. Sooner or later, he would have encountered situations where he would have to kill others. Lin Ming had long since come to terms with this reality. Not only that, but in the Ten Thousand Killing Array, when he had killed the phantom martial artists inside, that feeling had been completely real. There was no difference between that and actually killing someone.

Lin Ming was very thankful that he had obtained the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead from his duel with Zhang Guanyu. In terms of power, the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead was slightly weaker than his own Thunderfire Annihilation. However, this time, Huo Gong's true essence protection had already been reduced to being no more defensive than paper, and thus was unable to block the fatal explosion from the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead.

After a martial artist reached the Pulse Condensation Period, their physical strength would not change too much. If they didn't have true essence protecting them, then a

Houtian realm master and a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist's defensive capabilities would be the same.

"Why did this person want to kill me? Who ordered him? Ouyang Dihua? Or was it the Allied Trade Association?"

Lin Ming recalled his meeting with Qin Ziya. Bi Luo's illusion had simply been too profound, and his voice, appearance, temperament, and even body odor were all consistent with Qin Ziya's. Even though Lin Ming's perception was much higher than a martial artist at the same level, he too was unable to see through it.

But now that Lin Ming recalled the time he had faced Qin Ziya, he remembered he had felt there was something off. This was just an intuition of his.

As Huo Gong mentioned this a moment ago, Lin Ming suddenly realized what he had neglected.

That was… Zither Heart!

Chapter 165 – Hollow Flame Essence

Chapter 165 – Hollow Flame Essence

…

…

…

Qin Ziya's Zither Heart was similar to a martial artist's heart of martial arts. It was an unshakeable embodiment of his will.

The first time that Lin Ming had seen Qin Ziya, he had felt a faint aura of righteousness from him, as if there was some vast wave that lay in the depths of his heart. This was Qin Ziya's Zither Heart.

But the second time that he had seen Qin Ziya, it was different. Although his appearance, voice, temperament, and even scent were the same, he was actually missing that Zither Heart!

"I see, so it was like that. There was someone masquerading as Qin Ziya! What kind of camouflage technique could be realistic to this point? And they actually dared to pose as Qin Ziya! This person must have known that Qin Ziya had already left the Seven Profound Martial House; otherwise he would never have even an ounce of courage to pretend to be him. Qin Ziya moves around from place to place so much that not even the Allied Trade Association has the ability to find out where he is. It can only be someone high up within the Seven Profound Martial House, like Ouyang Dihua! That fake Qin Ziya might have even been Ouyang Dihua himself. He could have learned some profound and mysterious transfiguration technique from the Seven Profound Valleys to fool me.

“It seems that the Seven Profound Decree is also fake, and the whole mess with Huoluo Nation and the Seraphic Pond and the quota of people were also fabricated by him.”

Lin Ming took the ‘Seven Profound Decree’ from his spatial ring and ruefully smiled. He had only just glanced at the Seven Profound Decree one time, so he hadn’t been able to figure out if this one was real or fake.

As Lin Ming was figuring out everything that happened, he felt a sudden shaking in his chest; his heart began to rapidly beat, and heat flowed through his blood to all his limbs.

“Mm? Flame Essence?”

Lin Ming searched inside his body and discovered that the Heretical God Seed’s Flame Essence was very excited as if it had just encountered something new. It was like a happy puppy that kept jumping up and down without being able to calm down.

“This little fellow, what’s he doing?” Lin Ming though that was peculiar. Originally the Thunder Soul was the more lively and active one, and the Flame Essence was usually sitting calmly around, so why was it so jumpy today? Thinking back on this, when he had used Thunderfire Annihilation a moment ago, the Flame Essence had been exceptionally excited, and the fires that it had produced were much more formidable than in the past!

Could it be… Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation!

Lin Ming’s memories flashed before his eyes.

Of course! He was so silly! Since the Flame Essence was able to absorb lava fire, then it could absorb other types of fires. He hadn’t thought that the Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation technique that Huo Gong had released a moment ago was a type of energy that he could have absorbed.

But now that Huo Gong had died, how could he absorb it…

“The Flame Essence shouldn’t be so excited without a good reason. It must have found something interesting…

Aware of this, Lin Ming began to probe Huo Gong’s corpse with his soul force.

Since Huo Gong had died, his soul had dissipated, so Lin Ming was able to drive his soul force straight into the body and investigate.

“Here it is!”

Lin Ming drew a dagger and picked at a part of Huo Gong’s right hand.

A red bead of burning flames immediately jumped out.

Although this bead had been buried within Huo Gong’s flesh, there wasn’t the slightest bit of blood staining it.

As the fire bead appeared, it suddenly flew up, trying to escape; however Lin Ming had already trapped it with his true essence.

Once he obtained the fire bead, the Flame Essence within Lin Ming’s Heretical God Seed became even more agitated, as if it couldn’t wait to devour it.

“Is this also a Flame Essence?”

Lin Ming looked at the fire bead and found that there was an exquisitely beautiful lotus flower carved upon it. Obviously, this was the so called Red Lotus.

“No, this isn’t a Flame Essence. This should be a Hollow Flame Essence.”

A Flame Essence was not easy to form. The only reason that the Flame Essence within Lin Ming’s body had formed was because he had the mystical secret skill, Heretical God Force, which was powerful to the extent of going against heaven’s will. It was easier said than done to find a Flame Essence that had naturally formed in nature.

There were many refiners and alchemists who had searched their entire lives for a Flame Essence and had only ended up empty-handed.

Huo Gon's cultivation had also just barely brushed against the Houtian realm. With his cultivation, the only way that he could obtain a Flame Essence was by having a fortuitous event.

However, since he was a refiner, Huo Gong must have had a way to control fire.

Huo Gong had managed to obtain a wisp of Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation Flame. Although the Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation Flame was a high-grade flame, in the end a mere flame was still a flame; it was impossible for it to be eternal like a true Flame Essence. It would slowly wither and fade away with time. However, a true Flame Essence would never be extinguished.

If one didn't want it to fade away, then one could only constantly refine it.

Huo Gong had paid a great price to collect various fire attribute materials in order to refine and stabilize the wisp of Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation Flame. During this period, he even had to steal a material from his sect, and thus broke sect rules and was expelled, then was forced to flee the Seven Profound Valleys.

After endlessly refining all sorts of precious materials into a high-grade flame, it would eventually become a Hollow Flame Essence, otherwise known as an artificial Flame Essence.

A Hollow Flame Essence could exist for hundreds of years. During this time, in order to maintain its great power, one had to constantly refine materials into it.

A Hollow Flame Essence was far inferior to a true Flame Essence.

A true Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation Flame Essence could casually release Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation Flames. Just by taking one of these wisps of flames and adding many fire attribute materials, one could create a Hollow Flame Essence!

But the flames that a Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation Hollow Flame Essence released were not Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation flames. Rather, they were just flames that were slightly superior to ordinary flames. Otherwise with Lin Ming's cultivation, how could he possibly resist it?

"Although this is a Hollow Flame Essence, there are countless flame attribute exotic materials and treasures refined within it; it is an absolutely nourishing flame attribute material. Who knew what sort of great price that dead man paid in order to create this Hollow Flame Essence, and yet I obtained it at such a cheap price. Then, I shall help myself to it."

Lin Ming was blunt; he directly absorbed the Red Lotus Hollow Flame Essence within him.

The Hollow Flame Essence was sucked into Lin Ming's heart, where it was immediately overpowered by the brutal force of the Heretical God Seed.

Shortly thereafter, the little Flame Essence that was in the Heretical God Seed became like a greedy little kitten as it madly rushed forwards, already eagerly impatient.

Puff!

The tiny Flame Essence submerged itself into the Red Lotus fire bead that was several thousands of times larger than itself.

The Hollow Flame Essence began to violently tremble in a dramatic last stand of resistance as it continually flickered like a candle wick in wind. The Hollow Flame Essence fiercely struggled, but no matter how it fought, its efforts were ultimately futile.

This process lasted for half an incense stick of time. The Hollow Flame Essence began to gradually shrink, becoming smaller and smaller, until it was eventually all sucked into that little Flame Essence.

The little Flame Essence had grown up just a bit. It was originally the size of a spark, but now it had become as large as a sesame seed.

This left Lin Ming completely speechless.

The Red Lotus fire bead may not have been large, but the fire attribute energy within was much purer than the lava fire inside the Lava Cave, and also much more powerful.

After all, it had come from a martial artist that was a half-step into the Houtian realm, and was also the result of decades of grueling accumulation of all sorts of materials and other rare items.

Still, even after it was absorbed by the little Flame Essence, that Flame Essence had only grown a bit. It seemed that in order to foster its growth, he would have to spend a great deal of effort.

If that little Flame Essence one day grew up, its power would inevitably be on an extremely terrifying level.

For instance, a high-grade flame essence like the Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation Flame Essence was a dream that not even legendary Xiantian masters would dare to hope for!

Once this sort of Flame Essence appeared in the world, it would set off an apocalyptic storm of bloody terror.

Lin Ming could not help but think of the future fascinating possibilities. What if he was able to obtain the Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation Flame Essence and let his tiny Fire Essence absorb it? What would happen then?

Or what if he was able to obtain some sort of strange exotic Thunder Soul, for instance, some kind of Divine Lightning, or Evil Expelling Purple Lightning, and then let his tiny Thunder Soul absorb it, what sort of effect would there be then?

If he used Thunderfire Annihilation after that, what sort of effect would he be able to achieve?

Lin Ming couldn’t help but be inspired. Perhaps even a mighty Xiantian master would immediately be destroyed in the resulting blasé!

As Lin Ming was thinking of all these fantastic scenarios, he caught of a glimpse of a long saber sticking out of the ground. This long saber was Huo Gong’s weapon.

Lin Ming pulled the saber out of the ground to take a look. The saber was white like snow, and had an iridescent shimmer.

“Good saber!”

Lin Ming couldn’t help but admire such a weapon. This was a high-grade human-step treasure. It was something that originated from a large sect; its power was simply terrifying.

“That fellow was simply oozing money.”

Lin Ming helped himself to the saber and placed it within his spatial ring. Then, his gaze shifted to Huo Gong’s spatial ring that had dropped.

If he killed someone and didn’t take their goods, that would simply be wasting everyone’s time.

“Mm? Medium-grade human-step spatial ring?”

Lin Ming was overjoyed. This space within this ring was at least 5 or 6 times larger than his own low-grade human-step spatial ring. Not only that, but it was also more stable, and would last for 7 or 8 thousand more years.

This sort of treasure was very practical for Lin Ming’s use.

As he gathered more and more items, Lin Ming found that he was beginning to lack space within his own spatial ring.

Because small dimensions were not compatible with each other, he couldn't place a spatial ring within another spatial ring. Therefore, he had a number of spatial rings that he could only keep in his hand. But this wasn't very convenient.

Lin Ming sank his soul force into the spatial ring. As he took a sweep around, he suddenly gasped. Heavens! There were actually several dozens of treasures inside.

The majority of these were low-grade human-step treasures. However, there were also two medium-grade human-step treasures.

These low-grade human-step treasures were new, and didn't have any inscriptions on them.

But the two medium-grade treasures had seen some use.

"Yes, it seems this fellow was a refiner. Only a refiner or alchemist would spend so much time and effort in order to breed their own Hollow Flame Essence."

"There are about 30 low-grade human-step treasures here that are brand new. Obviously, they are something that he refined himself. As for the medium-grade treasures, they shouldn't have been something that he was able to make.

Normally, one would need to be a Houtian realm martial artist in order to create medium-grade human-step treasures.

As for high-grade human-step treasures, those were things that could only be created by a Xiantian realm master, and that was why the corresponding price was so exorbitantly high.

Lin Ming continued to probe the spatial ring. Besides the treasures, there were also several 10,000 gold tael bank notes, and also a heavy bag of true essence stones.

He took the bag out. There were actually over 100 pure true essence stones that were worth 1000 gold taels each inside.

“This refiner was really rich.” Lin Ming said with happiness. These true essence stones were enough for him to use for a very long while. “I should sell the treasures that this fellow made for money and exchange them for true essence stones and other things.”

Although a refiner would have a lot of money, they also spent money quickly because they had to purchase various materials to refine. This fellow had also bought up various flame-attribute materials in order to refine his Hollow Flame Essence. These were not small expenses.

Besides these treasures and true essence stones, there was nothing more of value. There was a jade slip with a cultivation method inside and there were also some fire attribute materials that were apparently to be used to raise the Hollow Flame Essence.

Lin Ming absorbed these materials into the Heretical God Seed and turned them all into the Flame Essence’s nutrients.

As for the jade slip, he glanced at it once and wasn’t too interested. It was a medium-grade human-step cultivation method. Of course, if he were to sell it he could obtain a great deal of money.

After Lin Ming had inventoried everything, the most precious things that he had found were the high-grade human-step treasure saber and the spatial ring itself.

Lin Ming put away the spatial ring, and poured some true essence into his Flame Essence to cremate Huo Gong. However, at this moment a flash of flame blazed out from Lin Ming’s hand.

Lin Ming was shocked.

“Oh.”

Chapter 166 – Witch Sisters

Chapter 166 – Witch Sisters

…

…

…

Lin Ming put away the spatial ring, and poured some true essence into his Flame Essence to cremate Huo Gong. However at this moment, a flash of flame blazed out from Lin Ming's hand.

Lin Ming was shocked.

"Oh."

He saw that the flame had taken on a deep garnet color, and snakes of flames seemed as if they were the petals of a blooming lotus flower. Obviously, his flames had taken on some of the characteristics of the Red Lotus Demonic Inflammation.

Even with such a tiny surge of flames, it still created a whistling heat wave that flooded the area like a soaring tide of fire. Lin Ming was stirred. He took a sharp steel dagger from his spatial ring and passed it through the flames. In only a few breaths of time, the edge of the knife had actually turned red as it softened, and finally melted into a lump of liquid steel.

Lin Ming was elated; the new flames that he conjured were on a much higher level than those of the lava fire flames. Although the burning lava was hot, it still wasn't enough to melt steel.

Lin Ming waved his hand and a wisp of flame fell onto Huo Gong's corpse. With a chichi sound, Huo Gong's corpse was quickly enveloped by this dark red flame. Since this flame was easily able to melt steel, its effects on a human body could be imagined. In a mere moment, Huo Gong had turned into ashes, without even a bone remaining.

Lin Ming casually shook his sleeve, and a cool breeze blew away the ashes. The corpse was gone without a single trace.

After all this, Lin Ming began to search for the Penetrating Rainbow spear that he had thrown. This spear had been at Lin Ming's side through thick and thin. Although he didn't have much use for it these days, he still wasn't willing to discard it just like that.

However, to search for a spear in the vast forest was easier said than done. Fortunately, Lin Ming had already used the Penetrating Rainbow spear for some time, and his true essence had been repeatedly poured into it, so there should still have been a residual trace of true essence within the spear.

Lin Ming was able to follow this small trace of true essence. Finally, amidst a pile of weeds, he found the Penetrating Rainbow spear nearly completely submerged in mud.

After taking back the Penetrating Rainbow spear, Lin Ming began to formulate a plan on how to deal with Ouyang Dihua.

Regardless of whether it was power or influence, Ouyang Dihua had the advantage in all fields. If he returned to the Seven Profound Martial House like this, he would easily lose, and might even be killed by Ouyang Dihua.

"Strength. I have to grasp more strength, and then return to the Seven Profound Martial House to get revenge for what happened on this day!"

Lin Ming simply decided to stay in the Southern Wilderness. Here was a good land to gain experiences and grow.

………………………………

The Southern Wilderness was 100,000 miles long and 100,000 miles wide. It was located southwest of Sky Fortune Kingdom.

The land here was not in the sphere of influence of the Seven Profound Valleys. There were no countries in the Southern Wilderness. Rather, there were individual tribes that were scattered around.

The mainland referred to these tribes as groups of barbarians, and thought that they lacked ethics and ate birds and animals raw.

It was true they had different moral principles; however, it was false that they ate birds and animals raw.

The people of the Southern Wilderness would often marry close relatives. To those that lived in the mainland, this was an outrageous and sacrilegious affront to their sensibilities.

The girls of the Southern Wilderness were extremely bold in their choice of clothing. They often only wore animal skins or thin linens to cover their most vital parts. With such simple dress, there wasn’t much that was hidden, and it often caused those watching to fall into daydreams.

The girls of the Southern Wilderness were the healthy color of wheat. They were mostly tall and slim, with slender and fit legs. Daggers were tied to their legs by animal skins, and they wore ivory jewelry fashioned from the bones of vicious beasts on their neck and wrists; there was a certain exotic charm to this.

Lin Ming had already been in the Southern Wilderness for five days. He had walked south from the forest for the entire time, and had finally seen his first Southern Tribe.

In those past five days, Lin Ming had killed almost 100 vicious beasts on his way there. Where he was now was only at the southern edge of a great mountain rage. The vicious beasts here were not ranked too highly; the strongest vicious beast he had encountered along the way was only equal to a Bone Forging stage martial artist.

This sort of vicious beast posed no threat at all to Lin Ming.

After walking through the wild forests for such a long time, Lin Ming finally saw the telltale smoke signs of human civilization. Lin Ming let out a breath in relief and didn't say anything else. He was simply tired of the diet that he had been eating these days. Except for the vicious beast meat, there were only wild fruits. The most notable problem was that there was no salt, so everything he tasted was bland.

This tribe probably had little more than 1000 people.

As Lin Ming walked into the tribe, he suddenly felt a wave of exotic and adventurous wind.

Here, there were huts and tents, large and small. All the pointy tents were embroidered with fascinating designs, such as vicious beasts, totems, mythical demon lords, and phoenixes.

Between the tents on the road, there were traders wearing southern clothing and carrying bamboo poles. They sold a wide variety of products, such as fine bone jewelry, handmade knives, bows and arrows, rare animals skins, bird feathered hats, and so on.

Of the southern people that Lin Ming encountered on the way, most of them had training in martial arts. In the Southern Wilderness, the forests were thick with vegetation and thorns, and vicious beasts eternally haunted the lands. The people of the Southern Wilderness often had to fight with vicious beats, and gradually, over time, this caused the physical strength and martial arts cultivation talent of the southern people to generally be better than those of the mainland.

As Lin Ming was looking for a vendor to buy a few jins of salt, he saw a young, slim girl, about 16 or 17 years old with a smiling face as radiant as a flower beckon to him. She pointed to herself, and then pointed to inside of her tent.

Lin Ming was momentarily stunned before he snapped back to reality. The social customs of the Southern Wilderness were very open and lax. Regarding marriages, besides important people of clans and tribes, it was simply not fixed for ordinary people. They would often implement a sort of ‘walking marriage’ matriarchal system society.

When a man and woman met in a situation that they were attracted to each other, then the man would spend a pleasurable night at the woman’s sleeping place, and then he would leave at dawn the next day. If there was a child, then the bride’s family would raise the it.

This was the first time that Lin Ming had encountered such a thing. He awkwardly waved his hands with some embarrassment. He did not plan to leave a child in the Southern Wilderness and then wash his hands of any responsibility.

The young girl’s face was colored with disappointed, and she bitterly pulled down the tent’s curtain.

Lin Ming was dumbfounded; he didn’t know whether to laugh or cry.

At this moment, Lin Ming felt something. He noted that not too far away, were two girls and two men.

The two men looked to be 30 or 40 years old. One was bald, and had very hard and ferocious features. He was big and tall, and carried a 10 foot long mace on his back.

The other man was just the opposite. He was thin and small of build, and he wore leather armor. There was a small axe on his back. His face was lean and sunken, not unlike a monkey.

What caused Lin Ming to be surprised was that these two homely men both had an impressive cultivation at the peak Bone Forging stage.

It was quite unusual for two Bone Forging stage martial artists to suddenly appear in a small tribe with only a thousand people.

Lin Ming’s gaze shifted to the two girls. Although these two girls were only around 14 or 15 years old, their cultivation was already at the Viscera Training stage.

To Lin Ming, this was even more startling.

For a 14 or 15 year old to reach the Viscera Training stage, this degree of success could only be achieved by a junior of an aristocratic family in the Sky Fortune Kingdom with at least a superior fourth-grade talent.

For two girls with at least a superior fourth-grade talent and two men at the Bone Forging stage to appear in a small tribe with a thousand people was just too irrational.

“Perhaps these two are also outsiders…” Lin Ming guessed.

While Lin Ming noticed these two Bone Forging stage men, they also noticed Lin Ming.

They bald guy sent a true essence sound transmission to the monkey-face man, “Big Brother, this boy is at the Altering Muscle stage. He meets our requirements.”

The monkey-face man nodded and replied with a true essence sound transmission, “How lucky. It seems that this boy is also only 15 or 16 years old. With such a cultivation at his young age, he is probably the son of some large aristocratic family. This little boy is inexperienced and arrogant; it will be easy to make him swallow the bait.”

“Hehe. I’ll go up and call him. Once the matter is finished, we’ll kill him. There are definitely many good things on his body. After we steal all of them, then us brothers will have all the benefit.”

“Mm. Wait until he’s out of here before we talk to him. If we are seen by others then it will be bad. This boy surely has some sort of powerful background. If we are discovered by them then it will be the end for us.”

“Alright. I know.” The bald man licked his lips, a bit impatient.

The monkey-faced man also licked his laps. He turned to the two girls behind them. Speaking to the older girl in front, he smiled and said, “Miss Na Yi, we will rest for tonight in this tribe. I’ll have to trouble you to guide us again tomorrow. Rest assured, as long as we find the Sorcerer's Holy Land, I shall release you and your little sister. Of course, if you plan on playing some dirty trick on us, then, haha, don't blame us for being rude. You may or may not know, but a pair of witch sisters will sell for a very high price in Huoluo Nation."

The monkey-faced man smiled deviantly, and the young girl named Na Yi could only stare at him. Her eyes were cold like the ninth layer of the abyss, and her little sister Na Shui's face whitened.

If it were just Na Yi, then she would have no fear to fight to the death. However, now she had her little sister with her, so she had no recourse but to submit to these two wicked men.

Of these two girls, one was the elder sister, Na Yi, who was 15 years old. The younger sister was named Na Shui, and was 14 years old. These two girls were originally the tribal witches of the Southern Wilderness.

Most Southern Tribes were matriarchal societies. The supreme power of these tribes was a woman, known as the Witch Queen.

Most of the clans and tribes of the Southern Wilderness believed in the faith of the Sorcerer. The Witch Queen was considered the messenger of the Sorcerer, and thus was also the tribe's greatest leader.

A witch was a candidate for the next Witch Queen.

A Witch Queen was not a hereditary position. For witches to be chosen, there was a very complex set of rules.

Two girls were identified as witches at birth. If no accident happened, then they would enter into the Sorcerer Holy Land when they were 16 years old and inherit the sacred inheritance of the Sorcerer's mysterious power. Then, according to the Sorcerer's decision, one of the two witches would be chosen as the successor, and become the next Witch Queen.

However, when Na Yi was only 14 years old, her tribe had been wiped out by a rare great flood of vicious beasts.

In the Southern Wilderness, there were countless vicious beasts. Occasionally there would be massive riots of these vicious beasts that would form into a vicious beast flood. In a large scale beast flood, there might possibly be as many as tens of millions of vicious beasts. It was enough to completely annihilate a tribe that was even millions of people strong.

After Na tribe had been decimated by the beast flood, there was simply nothing left of the tribe; and not even 10% had survived.

At that time, the nearby Fire Worm tribe had taken advantage of the fact that they were ruined to launch an attack. The Fire Worm tribe believed in Shamanism, so they had different tribal beliefs. Not only that, but they also had many conflicts of interest, and there was always friction between the two.

Since the beast flood had already weakened Na tribe, they were unable to resist the advancement of the Fire Worm Tribe. As a result, Na tribe experienced a complete genocide.

However, the two sisters Na Yi and Na Shui were the hope of Na tribe. Before the outbreak of war, they had already been sent off. But they had left the wolves just to enter the tiger’s den. The two sisters had been kidnapped by the bald man and the monkey-faced man.

Their goal was simple. It was Na tribe’s Sorcerer Holy Land.

Chapter 167 – Sending Sheep Into the Tiger's Den

Chapter 167 – Sending Sheep Into the Tiger's Den

…

…

…

The Na Tribe's Sorcerer Holy Land was a hallowed ground that only the current Witch Queen and her successors knew the location of. This land was the tribe's ultimate legacy; inside was contained the mysterious power of the Sorcerer. Foreigners were absolutely not allowed to enter, otherwise that would desecrate the land of the Sorcerer and blaspheme his name.

Although her tribe had already perished, Na Yi would rather die in order to maintain the long-gone glory of her people. But now, her younger sister had fallen into the hands of these two beasts, and thinking of the tragically pitiful fate that would befall her little sister was like a sizzling knife that pierced Na Yi's heart. She could do naught but repeatedly delay her compromise in order to protect her.

The monkey-faced man had found out that Na Yi was intentionally delaying, so he had given her a warning earlier.

"Hehe, Big Brother, if I don't give these two little girls a taste of what we can do, then they won't know just how fierce us Double Demons of the Southern Wilderness are. Tonight, I will bring the younger girl into a room to train well, and show her what it means to be a woman…"

As the bald man said this, he leered at Na Shui with an obscene smile.

Pitiful Na Shui paled, hiding behind Na Yi as she shivered.

“If you dare to touch her, I will immediately cut off my meridians and die!” Na Yi said as she stepped back, one hand protecting her little sister and the other clenched against her chest. She gritted her teeth, and began to revolve the true essence within her body. Her angry eyes were the same as a small leopard as she glared at the bald man.

There was no doubt about it. She was someone who could follow up on her words.

The bald man’s aura was weakened as Na Yi stared him down. He bitterly stepped back. Although his strength far surpassed Na Yi, if they compared their aura, then he had not been able to suppress her.

“Number Two, don’t mess with the sisters. Only the elder sister knows the way to open the path to the Sorcerer Holy Land. If she commits suicide, then we won’t be able to get anything at all. When we succeed in obtaining the power of the Sorcerer, then your strength will rise to the Pulse Condensation Period. At that time, you can have any woman you desire. You have to look forward to the goal ahead.” The monkey-faced man said with a true essence voice transmission.

“I was just thinking that…” The bald man muttered as he lasciviously licked his lips, “I don’t really care about the younger one, but that Na Yi witch is someone I don’t usually see. I like her strong temper. If I could bring her to bed, then she would be surely full of flavor!”

…………

In the evening, Lin Ming spent the night at an inn within the small tribe. The next day, he bought a tent, rope, a variety of antidotes, and deworming wine before he once again entered into the forest of the wilderness.

The wild forest was not dense. Rather, it was often dotted with large tracts of grasslands and marshes.

Lin Ming left the tribe and walked for about a quarter of an hour. Gradually, the surroundings became increasingly desolate. Suddenly, he heard the faint sound of hoofbeats behind him. After a little time, four people on deep red mountain horses rode up in Lin Ming's sight. They were the two men and two young girls that he had seen yesterday

"These four people were probably deliberately following me." Lin Ming had a very strong perception. When he was buying things on the street, he had noticed he two men hiding in the inn, and occasionally peeking out to observe him.

As they caught up with Lin Ming, the two men reigned in their horses, and heartily laughed as they dismounted. The waxy monkey-faced man warmly asked, "Little Brother, are you out for an adventure?"

Lin Ming cupped his hands together in greeting and said, "Yes, I heard that the Southern Wilderness had a rich wealth of hidden treasures, so I came here to test my own luck. I wanted to see if I can obtain any medicinal grasses that I can use for elixirs, while gaining some experience."

The bald man laughed as he heard this and then growled, "Little Brother, you've come to the right place. The Southern Wilderness is incomparably vast. There are countless rare birds and beasts here, and endless amounts of precious materials and treasures. Ah, however, there are also many dangers, and the terrain is complex; it's very easy to get lost here. Little Brother, if this is your first time coming to the Southern Wilderness, then how about travelling with us? We are very familiar with the surrounding areas, and our strength is also decent. How about it?"

As the two men spoke, Lin Ming noticed that the little girl behind the man was anxiously biting her lip. She was looking at him with wide eyes, and there seemed to bit a hint of distress, confusion, and fear within them.

Lin Ming's mind stirred. 'It seems as if this little girl has something to say, but she can't say it. Is it because she fears these two men? Hm, it looks like the relationship between the two girls and these two men isn't friendly…'

As Lin Ming thought this, he secretly scanned the two men. These two men had a very fierce air around them. They seemed to be in a hurry to have Lin Ming go along with them; their motivations were extremely suspicious.

Otherwise, why would two peak Bone Forging martial artists try to pull in a boy that was only at the Altering Muscle stage? That was purely looking for trouble.

“Interesting. What do these people want? To kill me and take my possessions?” Lin Ming maintained a composed expression. He neither agreed nor refused. With his current strength, it wouldn’t be a problem to simply kill these two peak Bone Forging martial artists, so he wasn’t afraid that they might have some diabolical plan they wanted to hatch.

The monkey-faced man saw Lin Ming hesitate and hurriedly said, “Doesn’t Little Brother wish to go deep within the Southern Wilderness to explore? There are many centuries old herbs there, such as ginseng, lingzhi, and other plants. We brothers are going on a treasure hunt at an ancient site, but that site has an array formation that takes at least three martial artists whose cultivation is at the Altering Muscle stage or above to open. If you go with us, then when we obtain the treasure, we will give 20% to you. How about it?”

The monkey-faced man quickly gave a half explanation as he found that Lin Ming seemed suspicious of them.

But as he faced the monkey-faced man, Lin Ming had actually already used true essence sound transmission to speak to the two little girls behind him. He asked, “Are these two men your companions?”

Seeing the two girls not respond, Lin Ming guessed that they weren’t able to return a message through true essence sound transmission. He asked a different question.

“If yes, then blink one eye. If no, then blink both eyes.”

As Lin Ming said this, the older girl didn’t have any expression, but the slightly more childish looking one blinked both eyes.

Seeing this, Lin Ming was suddenly aware of the situation.

These two men were not good people.

“Are they holding you by force? If yes, then blink one eye. If no, then blink two eyes.

The little girl blinked one eye. They really were being forcefully held by these two men.

Lin Ming thought that things were finally becoming interesting. What reason was there for these two men to kidnap these two young girls? Were they planning on selling them to martial artists to use for some nefarious reason?

“Was it true that they are going to some ancient site to look for treasures?”

This time the little girl immediately blinked one eye. It seemed that there was indeed some ancient site.

“He said that he needed three martial artists at least at the Altering Muscle stage to open the array formation of that ancient site. Is this also true?”

The little girl blinked her eye again. This time, the older girl glared at the younger one, and the little girl suddenly acted as if the was a child that had done something wrong, and timidly lowered her head.

Lin Ming was a bit puzzled. What was the matter between these four people?

At this moment, a girl’s voice sounded in his mind. Although this voice was young, it was very chilling. “If you don’t want to die then hurry up and leave. If you go now then it might not be too late.”

Lin Ming looked at the older girl with incredulity. Unbelievable. She obviously could use true essence sound transmission, so why didn’t she speak to him before?

He hadn’t thought that this harmless looking girl would speak a few words in such an icy tone the first time she opened her mouth.

At this time, the two men suddenly realized that Lin Ming was speaking to Na Yi through true essence sound transmission.

The monkey-faced man cunningly smiled. With a half-step, he and the bald man had already assumed a pincer like position around Lin Ming, and had sealed his path. He still asked in an agreeable manner, “Little Brother, how about it, would you like to go with us?”

The bald man also smiled and said, “Little Brother, you should seriously consider this, otherwise you might regret it.”

Although these two men were smiling, their fake expressions contained a faint hint of murderous intent. They had never considered Lin Ming a threat in their minds. To them, he was only a little boy at the Altering Muscle stage, while they were two peak Bone Forging martial artists. To deal with him would a simple task.

However, these two men didn’t know that Lin Ming also had a similar plan. With his Thunderfire Annihilation, he could kill a Pulse Condensation martial artist, and these two men were only at the peak Bone Forging stage. He probably wouldn’t even need to use Thunderfire Annihilation in order to kill them.

What he was interested in was the ancient site. If he killed these two fellows now, then he wouldn’t have anyone to bring him there.

Listening to these two, it seemed that it was true that there needed to be three martial artists at least at the Altering Muscle stage working together. If he eliminated them both, then he wouldn’t have any method to enter.

Lin Ming decided to use their own plan against them. He would pretend that he was some useless rich junior of some large family that had never seen the world, and then let these two men relax their guard.

If these two men still dared to do anything once they reached the ancient site, then Lin Ming didn’t mind lending them a hand and sending them on their way to hell. Of course, he would also take the treasure there while he was at it.

Now, the girl's icy sounding true essence sound transmission echoed in his mind again. "I asked you to leave and yet you didn't, and still talked so much nonsense. Now they suspect that you know something. It's already impossible for them to let you go. You can only hope for the best from here on out."

After this, the older girl no longer spoke. Her cute and pretty face had gone as cold as ice.

Lin Ming thought this was quite funny. He hadn't denied anything or said he was going to do anything. In fact, he was prepared to take a nice trip with these two men.

What treasures would there be at the end of this ancient site? What was the risk factor and just what dangers were there?

Lin Ming had many doubts, but it appeared that the older girl wasn't willing to answer him. The little girl seemed more agreeable, but she could only blink. If he asked these questions, then it would be impossible for him to get a clear answer just from her blinking eyes.

Thinking this, Lin Ming suddenly acted bashful, and gratefully smiled as he said, "Two big brothers are very gracious. This is truly the first time that I've come to the Southern Wilderness, and I am unfamiliar with the land and the people. Also, my cultivation isn't high, and the road is surrounded with danger. If two big brothers are willing to take me, then that would really be too good."

Hearing Lin Ming say this, the monkey-faced man was a bit taken aback. Was this fellow stupid, or just fake stupid?

Chapter 168 – Playing the Role of the Fool

Chapter 168 – Playing the Role of the Fool

…

…

…

"It doesn't matter if he's truly stupid or just acting stupid. He's still only a little boy at the Altering Muscle stage; there are no tricks that he can play. I'll have to keep watch over him so he doesn't have any chance to use a sound transmitting talisman. After another day of going through the wild forest, we'll be far past the range of any common sound transmitting talisman. When that happens, he'll be nothing more than a slab of meat. I'll cut him however I want to cut him." The monkey-faced man thought this and said, "Little Brother, my last name is Zhou. This fellow here is my brother; it's fine if you call him Baldy."

"Great. My last name is Mo, I am called Mo Lin." Lin Ming casually quoted a random name. The Southern Wilderness was incomparably vast and there were countless tribes. Even Ouyang Dihua would have difficulty finding him even if he knew he was down here. Still, Lin Ming didn't want to provoke any unnecessary troubles.

"Little Brother Mo, let's go. Miss Na Yi, I'll have to trouble you to ride the same horse as your younger sister."

Na Yi maintained her calm as she switched horses. For Lin Ming, she could only sigh.

Was this young man an idiot? Or was he just clueless and blindly optimistic to this extent?

Did he really think that the Double Devils of the Southern Wilderness would actually let him off afterwards?

However, the fate of Na Yi and her sister was also unclear, how could she worry about others?

…………………

In the group of five, Lin Ming rode a short-legged mountain horse all the way up. Although the horse was slow, it had very good endurance, and it was able to go over hills and crags just like they were flat land.

Slowly, the surrounding plant life became increasingly lush and vibrant. When he had first entered the Southern Wilderness, the trees had been sparse and the terrain was mostly marshes and grasslands. But now, the forest was so thick that even the sunlight couldn't reach the ground. The entire forest was dark as dusk, and the grass was as high as a human.

In this high grass, there were often lurking vicious pythons. If a martial artist of insufficient cultivation walked inside, it would be very easy for them to be killed.

The bald man was the vanguard, leading the way with his saber, the monkey-face brought up the rear, and Lin Ming and the two sisters were protected in the middle. Before they found the Sorcerer Holy Land, the security of the three with lower cultivations was very important.

"Little Brother, lend a hand. We should get out of this high grass before night falls, otherwise it will be very dangerous. With just me leading the way, it is very slow." The bald guy said to Lin Ming as he waved his saber around.

This sort of grass was very dense and lush. It intertwined together again and again, and was also extremely tough. If one didn't cut it open, then it would be impossible for the horses to pass.

"Oh. Alright." Lin Ming responded, and slowly took out a medium-grade human-step treasure saber from his spatial ring. This saber was a weapon that Huo Gong had left behind in his spatial ring when he died.

The design of the saber was very simple, and the scabbard was a finely designed sheathe of snakeskin. It had obviously seen some use over the years. About five inches from the saber point was a crimson colored inscription symbol. This inscription symbol was a fire attribute symbol that increased the true essence flow by 40%. Just the cost of the inscription symbol must surpass 10,000 gold taels.

Obviously, this was a treasure saber that had gone through a very arduous crafting process. Unsurprisingly, Huo Gong should have used this weapon. However he had later replaced it with a different one, but was unwilling to sell it, so he had kept it within his spatial ring.

As Lin Ming pulled out this saber, the bald man's eyes went perfectly round.

'Hot damn, this guy could just casually take out a medium-grade human-step treasure!'

'And it also seems like this is a top-tier medium-grade human-step treasure! This father has lived for so many years and yet has only seen three different medium-grade human-step treasures!'

As the monkey-faced man saw Lin Ming's weapon, his pair of monkey eyes also began to greedily shine.

He noticed the common-looking ring that Lin Ming had on his finger. Without a doubt, that was a spatial ring!

Spatial ring! Even the most inferior of spatial rings was worth several tens of thousands of gold taels. He had already been envious and wanted one, but with his wealth, how could he possibly afford it?

The monkey-faced man immediately blossomed with delight, his whole face smiling. He really couldn't wait to kill Lin Ming and steal his spatial ring, and see what other treasures there were inside.

“Who knows what other goodies this kid has on him? Damn, we caught the big one this time! This father has such luck! This boy looks so clueless; he doesn’t even seem to understand what this wealth means. He just so casually took out such a good saber like a silly boy. If I do not kill him and take that saber, then it will be really unfair!”

“Just hold it a bit more. Once we reach the Sorcerer Holy Land, we will immediately kill him!”

Lin Ming seemed as if he did not notice the greedy eyes of the bald man and monkey-faced man at all. He single-mindedly chopped the grass with his treasure saber. The medium-grade human-step treasure saber with a fire attribute inscription symbol was easily able to chop the grass as if it were a soldier cutting tofu.

There were only the slicing sounds as large swathes of wild grass were mowed down.

The bald man‘s throat dried as he saw this. If he had this saber, who knew how much his battle prowess would increase!

The weapon that this bald man used was a mace. This kind of weapon was extremely uncommon; there wasn’t a high enough demand, so not many refiners would create a treasure mace. Because of this, the bald man only used a normal mace.

But the monkey-faced man actually used a low-grade human-step treasure short-axe. However, it was of the worst quality, and the inscription symbol on that short-axe was a common one worth no more than 2000 gold taels.

To most martial artists, a treasure worth several thousands of gold taels was prohibitively expensive. They were often things that only the juniors of aristocratic families could have. For instance, Tie Feng, who had first purchased Lin Ming’s Overwhelming Rune, was also a peak Bone Forging martial artist. But because of his background he was poor and thus could not afford a treasure. Otherwise, he would have never bought Lin Ming’s Overwhelming Rune.

Although a martial artist could make money, they still had to buy medicines in order to cultivate. Normally, this was a money-losing proposition. It was only after reaching the Pulse Condensation Period and receiving a title and a salary that their economic condition would slowly improve. That was why a poor person could usually not afford to practice martial arts.

“Little Brother, Little Brother.” The monkey-faced man called out to Lin Ming in front of him who was cutting grass.

“Mm? What’s the matter?” Lin Ming blankly turned his head around with a vapid expression.

“Let me take a look at the saber. This brother has never seen a medium-grade human-step treasure before.”

“Oh, this…” Lin Ming’s face had a difficult expression. He was playing the fool, but still, there was a limit. He wasn’t stupid enough to give this weapon to others.

Thinking this, Lin Ming said, “This saber is my family’s inheritance. My father told me not to show it to people. Still, I have several other sabers that I may lend to you two big brothers to have a look.”

As Lin Ming said this, he slowly pulled out two treasure sabers from his spatial ring. These were low-grade human-step treasures. These two sabers were brand-new sabers that Huo Gong had made, and they also didn’t have an inscription symbol.

These two sabers were slender. The sabers were three feet long and an inch wide. The back was narrow and the hilt was short. It was a weapon that was built to utilize speed.

“Good saber!” The monkey-faced man and bald man’s eyes began to turn red with greed. This naïve little boy had so many good things on his body! He had so indifferently taken out two low-grade human-step treasures!”

“So stupid, I have never seen someone so stupid! This Altering Muscle child was so silly to actually bring out so many treasures on front of us two peak Bone Forging martial artists!” The bald man licked his lips as he sent a true essence sound transmission to the monkey-faced man.

The monkey-faced man said, “This boy is only 15 years old. I thought that he was from a large family, but he must have never left home and so he doesn’t know just how cruel and dangerous the human world is. We will endure for now, and once we reach the Sorcerer Holy Land, we will immediately kill him.”

“Good plan, Big Brother. I can’t wait!”

“Hehe, once we kill this kid, us brothers will make a fortune. We will be able to buy rare pills, and coupled with the inherited power from the Sorcerer Holy Land, it will be simple to break into the Pulse Condensation Period! When that time comes, us brothers will rise! Haha!”

“Haha, I’m drooling here. That is equal to an extra 100 years of life. I will buy piles of women and live every day like an emperor!”

As the monkey-faced man and bald man signaled with their eyes, Na Yi could not help but inwardly sigh as she took this all in. How could there possibly be an aristocratic young master who was so ignorant of worldly and human matters? How could he have possibly survived long enough to come here?

The monkey-faced man turned to Lin Ming and said, “Little Brother Mo, could you possibly lend these two sabers to us brothers? You know, there are countless vicious beasts within this lush border forest. The deeper we go, the more we will encounter higher rank vicious beasts. If our strength isn’t enough, then I’m afraid that we might be injured when we battle the vicious beasts, and that will simply put us in a very dangerous position.

Thinking this, Lin Ming said, “Two elder brothers are very logical. Then, I will lend these two sabers to the two elder brothers.”

Lin Ming said this and handed the two sabers to the men without any reservations.

When the bald-man took the saber in his hand, he had to make an effort not to gulp. This was a low-grade human-step treasure, and not only that, but it seemed to be of an extremely high quality. Such a good thing had been so easily obtained by him. How come he had never encountered such an idiot like this in the past?

The bald man weighed the saber in his hand and casually took a few swings. The only problem was that the saber was a bit light, so it was awkward for him.

The truth was, Lin Ming had taken out these two sabers for a reason. These two men used a mace and an axe, both of which were heavy weapons.

But Lin Ming had taken out two slender sabers. These sabers used speed to win. Even if he gave them out, the two wouldn't be able to display their full potential. Although Lin Ming didn't think much of these two martial artists, he still didn't want to needlessly cause trouble for himself by increasing their strength. After all, if these two peak Bone Forging martial artists wanted to escape from him, Lin Ming could at most block one.

Lin Ming intended to lull them into a false sense of security, and then suddenly make a killing move. One he eliminated one, it would be much easier to deal with the other.

By now, Lin Ming's mind suddenly resounded with a true essence sound transmission. It was Na Yi's voice. She said, "I thought you were just playing dumb to wait for a chance to escape, but you were actually so stupid as to give them treasure sabers. You are simply digging your own grave! How an idiot like you could survive up to now is simply a miracle. Really."

This icy tone was laced with a touch of irony. Na Yi and her childish face were both completely inconsistent with each other.

Chapter 169 – Fatebound Heartcrush Bug

Chapter 169 – Fatebound Heartcrush Bug

…

…

…

Lin Ming lightly smiled and said as he cut the tall grass, “Do you think that if I hadn’t given them the sabers that I would be able to run away?”

Na Yi paused. Indeed, Lin Ming was only a young boy at the Altering Muscle stage. Even if the bald man and monkey-faced man were unarmed, Lin Ming would still not be a match for those two deviants.

However, since Lin Ming was aware enough of the situation to remark in such a way, that proved that at least he wasn’t too stupid. Na Yi was silent for a moment, and then said, “Then what are you planning on doing? Drug them? Do you think that will have any meaning?”

Lin Ming responded, “I’m not sure if it will, but I still have to try. In the end, aren’t you the same as me? I thought that the bald man and the monkey-faced man knew the way to this so called ‘ancient site’, but it seems that you are the one guiding them. If you help them, do you actually believe that they will let you and your sister go after taking the treasures?”

Na Yi’s lips twitched. Of course she had thought of these things that Lin Ming had said. She coldly replied, “You do not have to worry about that!”

“Of course I’m worried. I’m afraid that you will have a sudden change of heart and bring us to some trap in the middle of nowhere, where we will all perish together. If that happens, then I’ll really have died unjustly.”

Na Yi coldly said, “When my parents died, I swore two absolute oaths. The first was that I would thoroughly protect my little sister and keep her safe no matter what happens. So you don’t need to worry, I won’t let my sister die.”

Na Yi finished speaking here, and no longer uttered another word. These two oaths she had made were the secret of her heart. She would never have spoken about them to a stranger, but now, at the edge of death, how could she ever carry out these two oaths?

Lin Ming’s heart was stirred. He looked back at Na Yi with a bit of surprise, and saw that innocent looking girl quietly turning her head to gaze into the distance. Her body hadn’t fully developed, and even when riding a horse, her line of sight was just above the tip of the grass.

Just by looking at her youthful appearance, it was hard to imagine that she already carried such heavy burdens on her tender shoulders. Since she had made two oaths, then was the other to avenge her parents?

Lin Ming was quiet as he silently chopped the grass. At this moment, he suddenly felt a chill in his heart. He felt that a few dozen feet away was a giant snake. Its darkly patterned, scaled body was the as thick as a water basin, and it was over 50 feet long. In the Southern Wilderness, the venomous serpents were of the most deadly variety.

For such a huge fellow to also be so toxic, it was creepy just thinking about it.

Lin Ming maintained his composure, but secretly stayed on high alert.

After the group walked forward another 100 feet, the bald man suddenly raised the hand which held the saber. Apparently, he too had discovered this large snake.

Although the bald man and the monkey-faced man were scum, they did have a very rich knowledge of the jungle and the land. Otherwise, it would have been impossible to wander the wide Southern Wilderness for so many years.

“A patterned anaconda. Sh*t, what bad luck. Looking at how thick this fellow is, I think his strength should be equal to a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist.” The bald man frowned, and then pulled out a strange looking musical instrument from his knapsack. It looked like a reed pipe, but it also had additional strange holes that weren’t found on a normal reed pipe.

The bald man jumped down from his horse, raised a bit of true essence, and began to play the strange reed pipe.

A hoarse and scratchy sound passed along with the notes, and a faint hint of true essence fluctuated within the melody. As the bald man blew on the reed pipe, he began to march to a bizarre beat, legs swaying from side to side. His entire face had an extremely ugly look as he shivered with the effort of this display.

To Lin Ming, seeing the bald man with his dancing movements was a bit funny. But to his surprise, just a moment later, the big snake seemed to fall under a strange hypnosis as it swayed from side to side before eventually writhing away.

“Interesting…” Lin Ming had seen and experienced many different methods that the people of the Southern Wilderness had used to handle the vicious beasts and poisonous creatures. He had been anticipating that they would have a fierce battle, but in truth, the majority of vicious beasts were repelled by these two fellows using fascinating and unusual methods. Only when they were against a much weaker foe would they attack and kill.

So along the way, there was no surprise nor was there danger.

With these two people leading the way, Lin Ming had truly saved a great deal of effort.

The bald man seemed to have consumed a lot of energy from playing that reed pip; he was very haggard looking. The bald man pulled out some medicinal herbs from his backpack and began to chew and swallow them.

This type of medicinal herb was able to restore true essence, though it didn't have much of an effect. However, it was cheap. As for true essence stones, those were dozens of times more expensive, so those were something that these two men would never be able to use.

"Let's go." The bald man said proudly as he licked his lips. He was quite satisfied with his success.

The group safely passed all the way to the evening. At that time, the group of five finally came to the foot of a cliff. Lin Ming looked up and was surprised to it was over 1000 feet high. If one fell down from there, they would really experience a tragic death.

At this moment, Na Yi, who had been silent up until now, spoke up. "It's here. We can enter the Sorcerer Holy Land from here."

"Mm?" The monkey-faced man smiled in happiness. "Where is the entrance? How do we go in?"

However, Na Yi did not respond.

The monkey-faced man frowned and said in an icy voice, "Little girl, don't you dare think about playing tricks on me. Tell me, where do we go?"

"Release my little sister and I will tell you." Na Yi said.

"Impossible. I already said that I would only do so once I obtained the power of the Sorcerer and I safely leave the Sorcerer Hold Land. Otherwise, I cannot release your little sister. Don't think I'm some idiot for you to play games with. Since only the chosen are allowed to enter the Sorcerer Holy Land, who knows what sorts of traps and mazes could be in there. If I release your little sister and you lead us into a deathtrap, who knows how we will die."

"I'll say it again. If you release my sister I will swear an oath upon the Sorcerer to lead you to obtain the power of the Sorcerer! Otherwise, you get nothing at all."

“Hehe, what can’t I get?” The bald man smiled lewdly. “No, even if us brothers cannot take the power of the Sorcerer, we will still be merry. You little bitch, do you really want your sister to be…hahaha!”

As the bald man said this, Na Shui paled, and cowered behind Na Yi.

Lin Ming frowned. He couldn’t move against these men yet; he still needed them to fulfill their purpose.

Na Yi didn’t speak, she merely stood there in a cold standoff. She had no intention of backing down.

At this moment, the monkey-faced man said to the baldy, “Old Second, stop saying so much. Once you have fame and power, what sort of woman can you not have?”

He turned to Na Yi and said, “Since you led us to the Sorcerer Holy Land, then you have already betrayed the Sorcerer, and yet you still wish to swear an oath upon his name. How can I believe you?”

Na Yi was silent for a moment. Finally, she tore up her sleeve and revealed her healthy and smooth arm. On her upper arm, there was a red dot; this was a purity mark.

And beneath the purity mark, there was a pair of golden dots.

Na Yi gently swiped her finger and the two golden dots came off. Lin Ming was able to clearly see that these two small dots were actually a pair of small gold-colored beetles. Before, they had rolled up, so it had looked as though they were a pair of golden beads.

“Fatebound Heartcrush Bug?”

As the monkey faced man saw the pair of golden beetles, his complexion changed and he whispered this name.

The people of the Southern Wilderness specialized in the art of witchcraft. There were many different types of poisonous bugs, and there were also those who were capable of raising them.

“What is the Fatebound Heartcrush Bug?” The bald man asked. He had never heard of such a thing.

The monkey-faced man said, “The Fatebound Heartcrush Bugs are monogamous, and only form a pair. They must be attached to a human body and drink live human blood in order to live. If they drink the blood of a dead man, they will wither and die. In the life of a Fatebound Heartcrush Bug it will only have one companion. Once this companion dies, the other will quickly accompany it in death. After dying, their bodies will rot and unleash an immense amount of poisons.

“…What’s that supposed to mean?” The bald man didn’t understand the implications of this.

The monkey-faced man said, “She is thinking of placing a Fatebound Heartcrush Bug inside the body of her little sister and in one of us. The Fatebound Heartcrush Bug must drink live blood to in order to live. If the little sister dies, then the Fatebound Heartcrush Bug will also die wither her, and afterwards, the other Fatebound Heartcrush Bug in one of us will die, and release a deadly poison that will kill us!”

“It’s that ruthless?” The bald man turned white. He felt a bit apprehensive as he looked at the two small golden bugs.

Na Yi said, “A human may make promises, but in the end they are unpredictable. However, poison is poison, and is unwavering in loyalty! With this Fatebound Heartcrush Bug it will be impossible for me to kill you. If you die, then my little sister also dies. If you agree to the terms, I will place a Fatebound Heartcrush Bug in one of you and continue leading you. If you don’t agree, then I will kill myself here and now!”

The monkey-faced man looked at the golden beetles with a cloudy expression. He hesitated for a moment before finally clenching his teeth and saying, “You can use the bugs. But first, you must place it in your little sister.”

Na Yi nodded, “Na Shui, give me your arm.”

Na Shui bit her lips and stretched out her arm.

Na Yi placed the Fatebound Heartcrush Bug on top of Na Shui’s arm. Then the Fatebound Heartcrush Bug chewed through Na Shui’s skin, and drilled its way in.

“Ah!…” Na Shui quietly cried out in pain.

A small bump appeared on Na Shui’s arm. This bump travelled along her arm and upwards until it entered into Na Shui’s blood vessels, then it followed the bloodstream to the heart.

Na Shui’s lips trembled and her small face was pale. To a little girl, this scene was frightening. The pain and tingling of the Fatebound Heartcrush Bug drilling through her bloodstream to her heart was unbearable.

A moment later, Na Shui tightly clutched her chest, her face blue. Obviously, the taste of having a beetle bore into her heart was not pleasant.

Na Yi comforted her and said, “Ah Shui, it’s all right. After three years the Fatebound Heartcrush Bug will emerge from your heart through your blood flow. It won’t hurt you.”

“Mm.” Na Shui reluctantly nodded.

Lin Ming had been keenly watching from the sidelines. Although he had never heard of the Fatebound Heartcrush Bug before, he was able to understand from their conversation that it was a contract of some sort. However, from the sound of it, this contract wasn’t necessarily binding or strong. Even Lin Ming had means to avoid the contract of the Fatebound Heartcrush Bug and scrap it.

Chapter 170 – Sorcerer Pagoda

Chapter 170 – Sorcerer Pagoda

…

…

…

“Your turn.” Na Yi said as she turned to the monkey-faced man.

The monkey-faced man said, “Since you will place the Fatebound Heartcrush Bug in your little sister and me, your little sister should come along with us. Otherwise she will be all alone. With her mere Third Stage of Body Transformation cultivation, it won’t be easy for her to return from the jungle, I don’t want her to be eaten by some vicious beast and then lose my life for no reason.

Na Yi was silent for a moment. The monkey-faced man was right. If her little sister left here, then she would easily encounter some great danger. But if she kept her sister here by her side, then she was afraid that these two men would play some dirty tricks.

“How about it, there will already be a poisonous bug in my body, you don’t have to worry over it. If you think that we will take advantage of you, then your little sister will commit suicide and I’ll have to die with her!”

“Alright.” Na Yi agreed. She placed the Fatebound Heartcrush Bug on the monkey-faced man.

The monkey-faced man didn’t seem to be very scared. He appeared quite happy to let the Fatebound Heartcrush Bug bite through his skin and enter his heart through his blood vessels.

"Well, how do we get in?"

Na Yi said, "When the moon comes out, I will open the doors to the Holy Land."

It was already dusk when they had arrived at the cliff. The sun quickly set, and the round, bright moon appeared in the night sky.

The moonlight scattered along the rock walls, causing the walls to shimmer with a faint, dreamy light. Na Yi stopped near the cliff, prostrated herself on both knees, crossed her arms against her chest, and seemed to be praying.

Following this, an unimaginably incredible sight occurred.

The moonlight itself seemed to have turned into real, tangible substance, and a huge silver-white door slowly emerged along the cliff wall. Sparkling lights swirled around the door; it was just like a miracle in the legends.

The monkey-faced man and the bald man only stared dumbfounded, while Na Shui also knelt down and reverently prayed in supplication.

Lin Ming was watching from the side, but he was able to understand just what this was. The truth was, this gate of light was actually a transmission array.

There was a strange transmission array that was located under this cliff. A normal transmission array was driven by true essence stones, but this transmission array was actually driven by moonlight. It was simply incomparably marvelous.

But presently, he didn't have any interest in studying the witches' array formation. He was curious about what sort of ancient power was within the Sorcerer Holy Land, and just what it was.

Although this approach to doing things could be considered a bit callous, once he rescued the two sisters, that would count as decent compensation.

The door of light opened, and a flashing blue hole appeared out of thin air. The monkey-faced man waved his hand in a gesture for Na Yi to enter first.

Na Yi directly walked into the light door, followed by the bald man, Na Shui, Lin Ming, and finally the monkey-faced man.

The scenery around them suddenly changed. Lin Ming found himself in a dim corridor.

All around the corridors were walls made from stone bricks. The walls were entirely covered in exquisitely beautiful frescoes and murals that depicted all sorts of things related to gods and demons, witchcraft, hideously demonic faces with long fangs, odd instruments, unknown ceremonies, and mythical beasts of all sort. There was an ancient and mystical atmosphere that blew towards them.

Every ten feet on the wall there was a lit lamp. And the light source of these lamps were impressively huge luminous pearls that emitted a radiant light.

“Treasure!” The bald man’s eyes lit up with greed. He moved his hand to pick these glowing pearls.

“Do not move!” The monkey-faced man thundered, “Second Brother, you are stupid to the point of idiocy! This is the Sorcerer Holy Land! There is no doubt that there are countless mazes and traps within. If you recklessly do anything from now on, then this father is finished with you! From now on, every footstep we take will follow that Na girl, no more and no less!

The monkey-faced man turned to Na Yi and said, “I advise you not to play any tricks on us here, and be honest in avoiding the traps. If us brothers have any accident, then you two sisters will be following us to hell!”

Na Yi didn’t respond; she only kept moving forwards. The bald man and the monkey-faced man followed every step she took, with Na Shui between them. If there was an accident, then Na Shui would definitely not be able to escape.

Lin Ming finally followed, each step following Na Yi's pace. At the same time he also sent out his soul force, carefully probing the surroundings to see if there were any possible dangers.

The monkey-faced man coated the soles of his shoes with a special tree sap. This tree sap was a natural dye. Every time he took a step, the dye would leave a visible footprint. Once the dye wore off, he would patiently re-apply it.

So as the group walked, the monkey-faced man left behind a series of footprints.

Seeing this scene, Lin Ming's heart stirred. "This fellow is leaving a way back so he knows where he came from. He really is a 40 year old man that's managed to survive in the Southern Wilderness for so many years; he is quite careful and meticulous about his actions. If it wasn't for my age and cultivation being so deceptive, then this monkey-faced man would not have so easily brought me along and determined that I was someone he could manage."

Lin Ming's cultivation was a stage and half lower than the monkey-faced man, and there were also two of them. In the monkey-face man's mind, even a formidable genius would have no choice but to die.

As they continued walking, they didn't encounter any dangers. This corridor was surprisingly long; the group of five people had already traveled for half an hour before a heavy looking stone gate appeared in front of them.

The stone gate was 50 feet high and densely covered in countless Sanskrit writings. In the center of all the text was the image of a giant eye. The shape of the eye was very simple, but, for some unknown reason, looking at this eye caused one to momentarily feel as if they were losing their grip on reality, as if their soul was being swallowed by the eye. When this happened, the dense Sanskrit writings around the edges would appear like countless earthworms that wriggled around. Yet if one carefully looked, these writings hadn't moved.

This feeling was absolutely strange. It was also absolutely uncomfortable.

The bald man was staring with wide eyes, as if his soul had been stolen. The monkey-faced man's forehead was covered in sweat, and he hurriedly turned his vision away.

Na Yi knelt before the stone gate and prayed. She finally stood up and said, "This is the gate. In order to open its array formation, there needs to be three martial artists at least at the Altering Muscle stage pouring their true essence into it for it to activate."

"The array formation is there." Na Yi pointed. The place where she pointed was a triangular altar. In the center of the altar was a black sphere, and the sphere was also shaped like a giant eye.

"After the door opens, you will be able to enter the Sorcerer Pagoda. The Sorcerer Pagoda has seven levels. The first level is Hell, the second is Hungry Ghosts, the third is Animals, the fourth is the Witch Slave, the fifth is Mortals, the sixth is the Celestial Envoy, and the seventh is the World of the Sorcerer."

"The higher the level you can reach, the stronger the power of the Sorcerer you will be able to obtain. As to what level you can reach, that is at the will of the Sorcerer."

Listening to Na Yi's words, the monkey-faced man was excited.

Sorcerer Pagoda! This was the Holy Land were the Sorcerer bestowed strength upon those chosen!

When every witch reached 16 years old, they were allowed to come to the Sorcerer Pagoda to inherit the power of the Sorcerer's legacy.

As for the strength of these seven levels, it became more terrifying the higher one went.

Just attaining the power of the third or the fourth was enough for a man to enter the Dragon's Gate and become a hero of the Southern Wilderness. If one was able to obtain the power of the fifth or sixth by luck or strength, then that would be enough to one to look down upon the entire Southern Wilderness!

As for the legendary seventh level, it was still a mystery. Of the countless large and small tribes within the Southern Wilderness' 100,000 mountains, there had never been one who was able to obtain the power of the Sorcerer from the seventh level.

"Big Brother, what're we waiting for, let's hurry up and open the door." The bald man was greedily rubbing his calloused hands together. He was already unable to wait. In his mind, the Sorcerer Pagoda was filled with countless beauties. With every level that he could rise, the more women he would be able to obtain, and the more noble and tasty they would be.

"Little Brother Mo, we'll have to trouble you to lend us a hand." The monkey-faced man said as he smiled at Lin Ming.

"Oh. Sounds good." Lin Ming said, and then moved towards the altar.

Seeing Lin Ming stand in his spot, the monkey-faced man revealed a grimly rapacious smile. In his eyes, Lin Ming was merely a fat sheep that he was about to slaughter. Once he killed him, a great wealth would fall into his hands.

In addition to the strength that he could obtain from the Sorcerer Holy Land, he would be able to quickly rise in the future with limitless fame. His dreams were just around the corner. He could even start a small witch tribe, and become one of the legendary Witch Queens.

Beautiful women, authority, wealth, power, all of these would be at his fingertips!

Thinking this, the monkey-faced man glowed with joy.

However, now that things had come to this point, he had to be careful. With just one wrong step, he would lose everything.

He turned his smile towards Na Yi and said, "You and your little sister make a few laps around this room."

Since he would kill Lin Ming after this, he might need to stretch his hands and feet in order to do it. The monkey-faced man didn't want to step on any unknown traps while he was chasing Lin Ming around.

Na Yi said, "The Sorcerer's room does not have any traps. I will not use my little sister's life to play around."

"Good, then I'll believe you. Second Brother, Little Brother Mo, let's start!"

As the monkey-faced man said that, he began to infuse his true essence into the giant black eye-shaped sphere within the center of the altar.

The bald man followed next, and Lin Ming also slowly revolved the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' as he poured in his own true essence.

Then, Lin Ming's mind resounded with Na Yi's true essence sound transmission. She said, "Once the door opens, they will not let you live. Twenty feet behind you there is a thin stone wall that you can break through. There is a secret passage there that will lead you outside of the Sorcerer Holy Land. After the door opens, take advantage of the time that they are distracted looking at the Sorcerer Pagoda and immediately break the stone wall. If your speed is fast enough, you'll have just enough time to escape. They don't know if the secret passage has any traps or not, so they most likely won't pursue you."

Lin Ming was a bit stunned. He looked with surprised at Na Yi. He hadn't thought that she would point out an exit for him.

This Na Yi may seem indifferent, but the truth was her heart was very good and kind. If he didn't rescue her after coming into the Sorcerer Holy Land, then he would truly be a contemptible man.

Lin Ming said, "Thank you. I also feel that Miss Na Yi is worth worrying about. Even with the Fatebound Heartcrush Bug, they will still have some way of suppressing it…"

The Fatebound Heartcrush Big was a good contract; however, there were still ways to get around it. For instance, as long as one caught the other party and didn't let them commit suicide, or stunned them, or used drugs, or even locked them up and sealed their true essence before looking for other methods.

After all, no one was willing to place their life in someone else's hands, not to mention that the secret of this Sorcerer Holy Land would easily arouse jealousy. How could the bald man and monkey-faced man willingly let the two witch sisters leave?

Na Yi's voice suddenly turned cold, "You don't need to care about these matters."

Chapter 171 – Killing the Double Devils

Chapter 171 – Killing the Double Devils

Chapter title is a spoiler, highlight it to read it now, or see it at the bottom.

…

…

…

Lin Ming shrugged and didn't respond. He concentrated on pouring his true essence into the black sphere.

The black sphere was like a bottomless pit. Even though it had already swallowed a colossal amount of energy, it still didn't give any response.

Slowly, the bald man began to pant as if he had trouble breathing, and the monkey-faced man was also flushed and sweating. However, Lin Ming with his extreme restorative ability and resilience appeared the most relaxed, but as he revolved his true essence, on the surface he appeared to be a bit red and a little sluggish.

"A little more, we're almost there!" The monkey-faced man said. The black sphere began to emit a faint light and the entire chamber began to shake. With a deep rumbling sound, the door to the Sorcerer Pagoda finally swung open. A magnificently iridescent jade pagoda that glowed with a milky light appeared in front of everyone's awed gazes.

"Hahahaha!"

The monkey-faced man saw the Sorcerer Pagoda and began to wildly laugh.

Lin Ming was stirred. This pagoda appeared somewhat similar to the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda that he had entered during his time at the Seven Profound Martial House's entrance exam.

"We've finally succeeded! Hahaha!" The bald man impatiently rubbed his hands together, "Big Brother, let's go in together!"

"Mm. Good. Let's see which one of us two brothers can reach a higher level. But… before that, there is a little matter that we have to attend to."

The monkey-faced man turned to Lin Ming, smiling, but in that smile was contained a wild killing intent.

"I told you to leave, why didn't you leave!?" Na Yi anxiously asked Lin Ming through a true essence sound transmission. She was flustered; was this boy an idiot?

Lin Ming responded, "The reason I came here is for the power of the Sorcerer, but also because I want to help you. I just said a moment ago, that even though you have the Fatebound Heartcrush Bug, you two sisters might not escape here alive."

"Wh… what? Do you really think you are going to…?" Na Yi found it incredible. Did Lin Ming really want to deal with these two people? He was an Altering Muscle stage martial artist while they were at the peak Bone Forging stage! There was a difference in their cultivations of a stage and a half! Not only that, but there were two!

The bald man and the monkey-faced man walked around Lin Ming's right and left sides, encircling him.

"Little Brother Mo, you've worked too hard."

Lin Ming had dropped down to his knees, and was taking big gulps of breath as if he had been drained of all strength. He used his elbows to wipe away his sweat and said, "You two big brothers are too kind. Since you've been dealing with so many vicious beasts, it's you two that are working the hardest. I was just taking a trip to accompany you two."

In this posture, he looked like a very unsuspecting idiot victim. However, his soul force had already locked onto the two men's every action and movement. While leaning down, his finger was already tracing his spatial ring.

Since it was two peak Bone Forging martial artists against one at the Altering Muscle stage, he would first have them lower their guard, and then try kill one in a single stroke. The other he could slowly contend with.

In contrast, if he failed to instantly strike down the first, then the two would be on full alert, and might even separately escape. With so many possible traps in the Sorcerer Holy Land, it would be too troublesome to hunt them down here.

Not only that, but since the monkey-faced man had the Fatebound Heartcrush Bug within him, trying to cope with him would be much more tricky.

The monkey-faced man said with a smile, "Little Brother Mo, you see where we are, there are simply countless traps layered on top of each other. This place is deep underground; it's quiet and safe. It's simply like a natural tomb!"

Lin Ming gasped, looking lost, "What do you mean by saying that?"

"What do I mean? Hehehe, my meaning is that since the scenery here is so beautiful, then us brothers will let you safely rest here forever!" As the monkey-faced man said this, his expression suddenly turned wretched. He gripped the short axe on his back, and had already moved to chop off Lin Ming's head. At the same time, the bald man had also taken out the mace on his back and was sweeping towards Lin Ming's waist!

These two tandem attacks had instantly sealed off Lin Ming's ability to dodge in any direction.

Na Shui cried out in alarm!

"Die!"

As the monkey-faced man's axe cleaved down, in that moment, Lin Ming's form had suddenly vanished!

Puff!

The bald man's mace was just halfway down, when he suddenly felt a piercingly cold feeling in his chest. A shimmering silver object was protruding from his chest. He blankly looked down at this object. It was the spearhead of a long spear. Even though there was some blood on it, the blood did not stick to the spearhead. Instead, it flowed down along the ridge of the spear before collecting into crimson drops and dripping onto the floor.

Drip drip drip…

In the deep quiet of the chamber, the sound of blood dripping onto the floor was especially piercing.

The monkey-faced man still had his fierce expression. He wasn't able to respond to such a sudden change in events. "Second… Second Brother… you…"

"I… I……" The bald man reached out his as if he was trying to reach something, but his eyes were becoming gradually more lax.

Peng!

Then there was the sound of an explosion and the bald man's body erupted into a spray of bloody fog. In that moment, 5000 true essence filaments had destroyed his organs and completely smashed apart all of his bones and muscles!

The bald man's corpse poured onto the ground like mud. Behind him was Lin Ming, exposing nothing but a calm and indifferent expression.

The monkey-faced man was completely shocked. Looking at Lin Ming's face, it was as if he had suddenly become a terrifying stranger!

Even though it seemed impossible to escape both attacks at once, he had appeared like a ghost behind the bald man and had slain him with a single thrust of his spear!

How could this possibly be the cultivation of a boy at the Altering Muscle stage!?

The monkey-faced man began to tremble in fear. Was this youth really a human? Or was he some sort of demonic monster?

In the legends, there were said to be evil beings that could assume the forms of humans. This dark creature could fly at will, and kill at will; they were a terrifying existence!

Not too far away, Na Yi had seen everything. She had seen Lin Ming instantly disappear and then reappear behind the bald man. Yet, she wasn't able to clearly see Lin Ming's footsteps!

Just who is he…

Na Yi held her breath; was this really a 15 year old boy?

The monkey-faced man grasped his short axe, his whole body rapidly revolving true essence. He slowly stepped back. His forehead was already dripping with sweat. He didn't know whether or not Lin Ming was hiding his cultivation or what other secrets he had.

Seeing Lin Ming's ghostly movements, the monkey-faced man already realized that there was no point in running away; he would only die sooner.

Lin Ming held the Heavy Profound Soft Spear. Though that last strike seemed as if it had easily killed the bald man, the truth was that was because the bald man had lowered his guard, and didn't utilize much true essence to protect himself. That was why Lin Ming had so easily succeeded.

Now however, the monkey-faced man was on complete guard. In this critical life or death situation, Lin Ming was still able to kill him, but he had to put in some effort.

"Don't kill him!"

At this moment, Lin Ming's mind resounded with Na Yi's true essence sound transmission.

It was as if Lin Ming hadn't heard. With the concept of wind at this back, this little distance seemed to have lost all meaning.

A spear struck out, lightning flashed.

Clang!

The monkey-faced man had used his short axe to fend off the spear. However, the electric snake that circled the long spear was like a bug that drilled into the monkey-faced man's body. In that instant, his entire body had been paralyzed.

This was the power of the Thunder Soul!

Heretical God Force – Open!

Lin Ming shouted. With a sweep of his spear, his activated Flow like Silk. The vibrating true essence was like a high tide that gushed out in all directions.

In that moment, the monkey-faced man had been paralyzed, but his survival instinct kicked in. He savagely bit the tip of his tongue and forcefully restored his mobility.

He already knew it was impossible to fend off this blow. He could only bet his life and fight against Lin Ming. His short-axe suddenly viciously struck out at Lin Ming!

Puff!

The long spear swept past the monkey-faced man's thighs. With Flow like Silk combined with the explosive power of the Heretical God Force, the monkey-faced man's legs were broken apart as his meat turned to mush and his bones shattered!

However at this time, that chopping axe was approaching Lin Ming's head!

"Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!"

Lin Ming punched out! He had actually planned to use his flesh and blood body to fight against a treasure axe with true essence poured into it!

Peng!

The axe was bounced off by vibrating true essence!

And Lin Ming's fist was unharmed!!

"This… what…" The monkey faced man's eyes had gone wide at this unthinkable sight. Was this invulnerability!?

As he thought this, he was already sent flying upwards. His lower body had already lost all feeling. Looking down, he could see his feet still on the ground, and his legs had been completely shattered!

"Ah ah ah!"

The monkey-faced screamed out painfully. His body was like a broken sack as it fell and crashed against the ground, blood gushing everywhere like a fountain!

"No… don't kill me! If I die, the little girl also dies!"

It was as if Lin Ming didn't care. He grinned like a demon, and shook his spear. "Do you think that I care?"

"You… you… good! Since I'll die anyways, then let's die together!" The monkey-faced man clenched his teeth, preparing to forfeit his meridians and commit suicide. However at this moment, Lin Ming was like a ghost that appeared by his side, his palm already falling down.

Pulse Cutting Palm!

Puff!

Lin Ming's palm struck against the monkey-faced man's chest. The true essence that was filled with destructive power rampaged across the monkey-faced man's meridians, and completely twisted and broke apart all the meridians!

"Ah!" The monkey-faced man let out a miserable cry. To his amazement and dismay, he found that he was unable to summon the true essence within his body. It was as if some mysterious force had dispersed all of his will; it simply didn't listen to his signals!

"You want to forfeit your meridians? Then why don't I lend you a hand." Lin Ming withdrew his palm. Since the Pulse Cutting Palm was a weak martial skill, it didn't have much value in actual combat. It was used by that mighty elder to torment his enemies; how would such a martial skill give the enemy an opportunity to commit suicide?

This martial skill would cause the enemy to lose all of their skills and they would become a eunuch. Not only that, but they would then be imprisoned and endlessly tortured. One could not beg for life, and one could not even beg for death!

In that split second from when the electric light had sparked, Na Yi had been left scared and shocked senseless. She had thought that Lin Ming was really planning on killing the monkey-faced man, but not it seemed that using some unknown method, he had taken complete control of the situation. She let loose a breath she didn't know she was holding. She looked at Lin Ming again, her eyes filled with an incomparably complex emotion.

Who was this young boy? His cultivation was only at the Altering Muscle stage; how could he have this sort of terrifying strength?

He had leapt past the barrier of a stage and a half difference in cultivation and played with these Bone Forging martial artists as if they were nothing but toys in his hands. They didn't have the ability to commit suicide by destroying their own meridians. Even a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist wouldn't be able to accomplish this!

Na Yi had never heard of any genius or talent within the Southern Wilderness that had this sort of incredible combat ability. This included Na Tribe's first generation tribal chief!

If he was really 15 years old, then his future accomplishments would simply be limitless. This man, his potential was too alarming!

If… if she had his help, in addition to the undiscovered legacies of the Sorcerer Holy Land, it wouldn't be impossible to recreate Na Tribe!

Thinking this, Na Yi gasped, but she immediately shook her head and sighed. Why would he possibly help her……

Chapter 172 – Na Yi's Hatred

Chapter 172 – Na Yi's Hatred

…

…

…

The monkey-faced man had completely collapsed to the floor. His lips trembling, he tried to push his arms backwards to hide himself. Not only had he lost both his legs, but the true essence within his body was leaking away. The so called meridian destruction suicide was simply using the true essence within one's own body to destroy it. Now that he could not control the movement of his true essence anymore, the idea of suicide was simply a far off dream.

Lin Ming took out some blood staunching medicinal herbs worth several hundred gold taels and crushed them together, before sprinkling the juices on the monkey-faced man's legs. The bleeding suddenly stopped.

He didn't want the monkey-faced man to die from excessive blood loss.

"You… what do you plan on doing to me?" The monkey-faced man said with a shaking voice. He was now nothing more than meat on the chopping block; anyone could do anything they wanted to him.

Lin Ming glanced at Na Yi and said, "Since you administered the poison, do you have the means to cure it?"

Na Yi froze for a moment. She took a deep breath and said, "I have a way."

“Then come up here. I don’t think you want to raise a broken-legged monkey for the next few years.”

Na Yi silently walked over to the monkey-faced man. At the same time, she drew out a dagger from her belt.

At this moment, the monkey-face man’s heart was like dying embers that were turning to ashes from despair. He had never experienced such pain before. He had no power to resist, and could only wait for the moment of his death.

“Na Shui, turn away.” Na Yi suddenly said.

“Ye, yes...” Na Shui said, and obediently turned around. These scenes that had just occurred were simply too shocking for the heart of this little girl.

Lin Ming faintly realized her intentions. He spoke to her through a true essence sound transmission, “This place is already rank with the smell of blood. Do you not want to let your little sister see? I think that she will experience this sort of scene sooner or later.”

Na Yi was silent for a while, before saying, “I hope that she will never have to experience this again.”

“Good. How do you plan on curing this poison?”

Na Yi said, “There is no special way. I can only take it out before he dies.”

As Na Yi said this, her knife had already stabbed through the monkey-faced man’s chest. That little dagger was not a treasure, but it was still extremely sharp. It was able to cut through the man’s chest like tofu. There were only the sounds of slicing as the monkey-faced man’s chest was ripped apart.

The monkey-faced man screamed as he violently struggled. However, he had already lost all of his martial arts and was on the verge of death; how could he defend against the Viscera Training Na Yi?

Na Yi seized the dagger, and with some effort, cut open the monkey-faced man's chest. Her dagger cut through the man's still beating heart, and blood erupted like a fountain as it splashed everywhere, including Na Yi's face.

However, she only blinked, and didn't wipe the blood off her face. She reached her hand into the thick muscles of the heart's wall, and took out the Fatebound Heartcrush Bug.

Even Lin Ming, who had experienced many bloody scenes within the Ten Thousand Killing Array, was speechless as he looked on with astonishment. This little girl was truly ruthless.

As the tiny golden beetle was still soaked in blood, Na Yi quickly placed it on her own arm. At this time, the monkey-faced man was still lying down on the ground, twitching.

Although humans had many vital points, the number of lethal points that would result in instant death was one; that was the brain. If the brain was destroyed, then one would instantly die. As for the other vital points, death would take a while. For instance, if the heart was destroyed, then a person could still live for about ten seconds.

Na Yi used these ten seconds of time to take out the Fatebound Heartcrush Bug and place it within her own body. Now that the bug had swapped to a new host, it didn't matter whether the old host was dead or alive.

After completing this, Na Yi stood up, her face slightly pale. Lin Ming took out a towel from his spatial ring and handed it over to her.

"Thank you." Na Yi whispered. She wiped her hair and face which had been splashed with blood.

As Lin Ming saw Na Yi crouched in a dark corner wiping herself, he thought that she was like a small cat that was licking her wounds after an injury.

Behind this girl, there was probably an unknown story.

Lin Ming said, “I remember that you said you had two oaths you had to fulfill. The first was to protect the life of your little sister and let her live in peace. Was the other to take revenge for your parents?”

Na Yi did not answer. She kept wiping blood from her body. That original pure white towel had now been dyed a deep scarlet red.

“I’m sorry.” Lin Ming said.

“No, I should be thanking you. If it wasn’t for you, then I’m afraid that we wouldn’t have escaped this calamity.”

“I really do want to extend my truest apologies to you. This Sorcerer Holy Land is your tribe’s forbidden area. The way I came here was not glorious or righteous, and I used you.

Na Yi said, “You and I have never met, so you have no obligation to help me. As for this Sorcerer Holy Land, my tribe has already perished, so what point is there in keeping this Holy Land?”

At this, Na Yi sighed.

Speaking of the Sorcerer Holy Land, Lin Ming actually had a question that he always wanted to ask. “Does every tribe have a Sorcerer Pagoda?”

Na Yi said, “No. There were originally 72 Sorcerer Pagodas. It is said that the Sorcerer left the 72 Sorcerer Pagodas before he flew off into the stars and entered the Sorcerers’ World. Now, because of various reasons, like war, or beast floods, or earthquakes and volcanoes and other such things, there are 7 Sorcerer Pagodas that have been lost. Now there are only 65 remaining.

“So it’s like this…” Lin Ming speculated that the so called ‘Sorcerer’ was actually a formidable mighty elder. The so called ‘flying off into the stars’ was simply the mighty elder travelling to somewhere within the Realm of the Gods. “Can you tell me what the power of the Sorcerer is?”

Na Yi said, “The power of the Sorcerer is to help martial artists break through their boundaries and increase their cultivation. For every person, they can only enter the Sorcerer’s Pagoda once. But, because of the limited power of the Sorcerer, the lower the cultivation that a martial artist is at, the more their cultivation will be enhanced. If one’s cultivation is too high, then their increase in power would be relatively minor.”

“But on the other hand, a martial artist whose cultivation is too low will have trouble passing the Sorcerer’s trials. So, the best age to enter at is 16. Once a witch reaches 16 years of age, they will be able to enter the Sorcerer Pagoda and obtain the legacy of the Sorcerer.”

Na Yi’s clear explanation left Lin Ming somewhat surprised. It was as if she didn’t mind that he would enter the Sorcerer Pagoda, so she had explained in such fine detail.

After a period of silence, Lin Ming said, “I will tell you the truth. I would like to receive the power of the Sorcerer.”

Na Yi said, “I know. Otherwise you wouldn’t have played the fool for such a long time. You are also afraid that there are mysteries inside that I deliberately hid from you, so that you will fall into certain traps.

“That’s right.” Lin Ming honestly said.

Na Yu pulled down her collar, and unwound a pendant that she had been keeping with her. It was unclear what this pendant was made of, but it seemed to be fashioned from some sort of metal. In the dark chamber, it still issued a faint gentle light as if it was made from jade.

The pendant was in the pattern of an eye; just like the eye pattern on the Sorcerer Pagoda’s door.

Na Yi said, “This is the key of the Sorcerer; it is my tribe’s most sacred holy relic. With it, you may open up the Sorcerer’s trials. Otherwise, you can only enter up to the third level of the pagoda.”

Lin Ming was slightly stunned, and looked at Na Yi in surprise. In the dark chamber, Na Yi's eyes seemed to shine like stars in the night sky, and they flowed with a brilliantly pure light. In her tender hands that were still covered with blood, the Sorcerer's key hung from her fingertips, and emitted a faint jade-like light.

A this moment, Lin Ming was filed with an inexplicable sense of trust towards her. He said, "If you didn't tell me of this Sorcerer's key, then I wouldn't have known. What you said a moment ago wasn't wrong. You and I have never met, so you also have no obligation to help me. Much less, this Sorcerer Pagoda is your tribe's forbidden land. Why are you telling me about the Sorcerer's key?"

Na Yi said, "I want you to help me kill a man!"

"Your life's enemy that killed your parents?"

"Yes!" As soon as this this enemy was mentioned. Na Yi's eyes flashed with extreme hatred and murderous intent; even Lin Ming found himself slightly taken aback by this harrowing look.

"This person is the Great General of the Fire Worm Tribe. His name is Chi Guda. The Fire Worm Tribe completely exterminated my tribe. My parents were teachers of Na's Tribe that taught the teachings of the Sorcerer. After the destruction of the Sorcerer's Temple, my father was killed by Chi Guda, and my mother..." Speaking here, Na Yi took a deep breath. Her obsidian eyes shined with a brilliant killing aura, and the corners of her innocent mouth twitched.

Seeing this, Lin Ming guessed that it might have been such abuse like rape. But he hadn't expected Na Yi's next words, and was surprised by them.

Na Yi clenched her teeth. Hate drenched her voice as she said, "My mother was raped by Chi Guda and his men, and then... she was eaten."

"Eat... eaten?" Lin Ming gulped, making sure that he hadn't misunderstood.

Na Yi continued, “The Fire Worm Tribe is a cannibalistic tribe. In the Southern Wilderness, there are tribes that treat human beings as food; they will treat prisoners as food, and they especially eat pagans. We believe in the Sorcerer, and take those that believe in Shamanism as our sworn enemy, so they also regard us as pagans.

“This…” Lin Ming found this difficult to accept. He had heard before from the government that they were dissolute and wicked, and the commoners had once eaten even the children of others. However, this was in ancient times. He hadn’t expected that he would personally experience such a thing in this time period.

Na Yi said, “My mother’s bodyguard risked his life and braved death to gather my mother’s corpse and place her into a coffin. When I last saw my mother, her body was already incomplete. Because she had been boiled, her hair had completely fallen off, and her body and face were full of teeth marks. One leg and one arm had already been torn apart, and there was nothing left but broken bones.”

The longer Na Yi spoke, the more calm she was. It was as if all her hatred and agony had been gathered and restrained within her, locked inside the deepest recesses of her heart.

Listening to this, Lin Ming felt his stomach plummeting. He already felt that Na Yi’s description was too much for some, and yet Na Yi had seen this with her own eyes, and that person was also her mother!

No wonder. This was why Na Yi, at such a tender age, was able to have such a cold and unshakeable determination.

He was unable to stop himself from turning and glanced towards Na Shui who was pitifully huddled in a corner. That little girl was probably unaware of the tragic circumstances that had befallen her mother, and Na Yi would probably never let her find out.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and asked, “What cultivation stage is Chi Guda at?”

“A half-step into the Houtian realm!”

"This is…" Lin Ming frowned. So he was a half-step Houtian martial artist. Although he had just killed a martial artist who was a half-step into the Houtian realm, that was only because there were all sorts of advantageous factors that had gathered together. Even then, he had barely succeeded. Now that he had already spent the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead, he didn't have the slightest belief that he could defeat a martial artist that was a half-step into the Houtian realm.

Not only that, but since he was a general, then this person would also be protected by several guards. To kill a person in a crowd, that was even more difficult.

Chapter 173 – Low-Grade Heaven-Step

Chapter 173 – Low-Grade Heaven-Step

…

…

…

Na Yi was able to see the awkward dilemma that she put Lin Ming in. From the start, it had been hopeless to think that Lin Ming would ever be able to defeat Chi Guda. There was simply too large a disparity between a Bone Forging stage martial artist and one that was in the Pulse Condensation Period, not to mention that Chi Guda was already a half-step into the Houtian realm.

In her opinion, the limit of Lin Ming's strength should be at the Bone Forging stage, there was simply too large a difference when compared to an early Pulse Condensation Period martial artist.

She said, "I'm not asking for you to kill him now. I can wait three or five years."

To Na Yi, it would already be a heavenly miracle if Lin Ming was able to defeat Chi Guda within 3 or 5 years. Lin Ming was only 15 years old. If he was able to achieve power equivalent to a half-step Houtian realm martial artist at 20, that would already create a new record within the last few centuries of the Southern Wilderness!

Lin Min did not explain what his thoughts were. He said to Na YI, "Before anything is decided, wait until I come out from the Sorcerer Pagoda to plan again."

Lin Ming did not know how much of the Sorcerer Pagoda's legacy he would receive, or how much his strength would increase. There was no sense in making any rash promises at this moment.

“Give me the Sorcerer’s key.” Lin Ming said. He took the pendant in his hand, gripped the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, and strode towards the Sorcerer Pagoda.

The best time for one to enter the Sorcerer Pagoda was at 16 years of age. Lin Ming was only 2 months shy of 16. Now would be the best time for him to participate in the trials here.

The Sorcerer Pagoda was several hundred feet high, and emitted a milky jade-colored light from all over. At the top of the pagoda there was a large ocean-blue sphere that sent out a dazzling azure light. This sphere was also in the pattern of an eye, similar to the pendant that Lin Ming was now holding.

The door was arched, with a ten foot tall sculpture on both sides. The sculptures were carvings of ancient mythical god beasts. Inside the gate was a vast, limitless whiteness; it was impossible to clearly see inside.

As Lin Ming approached the Sorcerer Pagoda, he was able to feel an incomparably pure and rich heaven and earth origin energy. heaven and earth origin energy was the basis for all martial arts cultivation. The so-called true essence was simply the conversion of heaven and earth origin energy to one’s own energy. True essence stones were also condensed from heaven and earth origin energy. Regardless of whether it was the Body Transformation stage, the Houtian realm, or even the Xiantian realm, a martial artist’s cultivation would always originate from heaven and earth origin energy.

“What a dense heaven and earth origin energy. If I were to practice here, then I would have twice the results with half the effort.”

As Lin Ming greedily absorbed the heaven and earth origin energy around him, he stepped into the Sorcerer Pagoda.

The scene around him suddenly changed. Lin Ming arrived at a completely black empty space. The ground underneath him was a giant platform of hard jade, and when he lifted his head he could actually the stars brightly shining overhead. The faint starlight fell down from the sky and onto the jade ground as if it were silver gossamer threads.

The illusionary world inside of the pagoda was extremely beautiful. However, the heaven and earth origin energy inside of the tower was much thinner; it was about the same as the lands outside the Sorcerer Holy Land.

"There is actually less heaven and earth origin energy inside the pagoda?" Lin Ming felt this was a bit incomprehensible. He assumed that the heaven and earth origin energy would be much richer inside of the pagoda.

"The inside of the Sorcerer Pagoda is more or less like the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda."

Lin Ming recalled that he had also encountered such a scene when he first entered into the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda.

He also recalled that from the time he had participated in the Seven Profound Martial House's entrance examination until now, only 4 months had passed.

In less than six months of time, Lin Ming's strength had already undergone an enormous earth-shaking change. He had gone from being a tender youth at the early Flesh Training stage to now, where his strength was comparable to an early Pulse Condensation Period martial artist.

Lin Ming did not dare to say that he was the strongest amongst all of his peers, but in terms of progress, he was the fastest within the entire Sky Spill Continent!

"It seems the so-called Sorcerer's will is how far one can reach in the Sorcerer Pagoda. I wonder how far a 15 year old with strength at the early Pulse Condensation Period would be able to go in the Exquisite Pagoda now."

The Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda was different from the Ten Thousand Killing Array. In the Ten Thousand Killing Array the strength of the enemy didn't change. However, in the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda, the strength of the enemies was decided by one's age; the greater one's age, the stronger the enemy.

So in the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda, only talent was measured!

At first, the elder responsible for the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda trial had spoken and said that in order to qualify, one only had to pass through the first level of the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda. The second level was considered good, the third level was considered excellent, the fourth level was a genius, and the fifth level – it was simply impossible!

The elder had only said this because he clearly understood the strength of the candidates. Throughout the past several decades of the Seven Profound Martial House, only Qin Xingxuan was able to pass the fifth level.

Lin Ming had barely managed to reach the fifth level, but he hadn't managed to pass it.

As he thought of the past, Lin Ming's heart was filled with a burning desire and rising fighting spirit. Now he wanted to see just how high his own talent would be!

"Weapon, spear! Nine feet nine inches, 1200 jins, created from heavy profound soft silver!"

As Lin Ming placed out his hand, a silver long spear fell into his grip. Although the appearance was the exact same as the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, this spear was a lower quality treasure, and he would just be able to pour his true essence into it.

The Sorcerer Pagoda was a test of a martial artist's talent. Things like treasure weapons, treasure armors, or any influence one could have from the outside world, was pushed down to the barest minimum; this was not the same as the Ten Thousand Killing Array.

At this moment, a phantom started to congeal in front of Lin Ming, becoming more and more solid. This one was a martial artist dressed all in black, holding a sword. His cultivation was at the peak Second Stage of Body Transformation.

Lin Ming remembered that when he had rushed up the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda, the first enemy he had encountered was at the early Second Stage of Body Transformation.

Now, the enemy was much more formidable than before. Apparently this was due to him having grown older.

The black clothed martial artist rushed at Lin Ming. Lin Ming did not even bother to use his spear he merely fired out a punch and more than 100 vibrating true essence filaments flew out of his fist and submerged into the martial artist's body like poisonous snakes.

The martial artist simply fell to the ground with a single puff, and died.

To the Lin Ming of now, a martial artist whose cultivation was at the peak Second Stage of Body Transformation was simply too laughable.

The truth was, for a 15 or 16 year old to have cultivation at the peak Second Stage of Body Transformation was already quite good.

For instance, Na Yi and Na Shui, who had reached the Viscera Training stage at 15 years old, were already considered rare talents.

Qin Xingxuan, who had achieved the Bone Forging stage at 15 years old, was a monstrous genius.

As for Lin Ming, who had reached the Altering Muscle stage at only 15 years old, but whose real combat prowess was comparable to a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist; that was simply too terrifying for human words!

The first pass was simply too easy. Lin Ming lifted his foot and prepared to enter the second level, but at this time, Lin Ming felt that the martial artist he had just killed had broken down into an invisible energy that entered his body. This energy was rejuvenating like a spring rain, nourishing all of Lin Ming's limbs and bones, and spreading through his flesh and blood, deep into his organs. Even his unopened meridians seemed to have loosened a bit.

"Mm?" Lin Ming's mind stirred. "Is this the power of the Sorcerer? I get it! The power of the Sorcerer is simply the purified version of extremely condensed heaven and earth origin energy. In the Sorcerer Pagoda, the reason that the heaven and earth origin energy is thin is because it is condensed into these phantom martial artists! The more phantoms that I kill, the more pure heaven and earth origin energy I can absorb! This is simply too magical!”

As Lin Ming revolved his true essence, he was pleasantly surprised to find that heaven and earth origin energy had caused his Altering Muscle stage cultivation to become more stable. He had a faint feeling that he was making great steps towards the Large Success state of Altering Muscle.

Lin Ming was overjoyed. The 72 Sorcerer Pagodas that this mighty elder had constructed were simply too marvelous. This mighty elder must have been amazing to be able to invent this sort of method for one to gain heaven and earth origin energy. Presumably, this entire Sorcerer Pagoda was one giant array that gathered heaven and earth origin energy.

However, the true essence that could be condensed here was limited; it was no wonder that only the chosen witches were able to enter into the Sorcerer Pagoda and inherit the power within.

Lin Ming lifted his foot and appeared in the second level of the Sorcerer Pagoda. The enemy here was a black-clothed martial artist at the Third Stage of Body Transformation.

In terms of cultivation, this was the standard for a 15 year old genius. When Wang Yanfeng had participated in the Seven Profound Martial House entrance examination, he was also at the early Third Stage of Body Transformation.

Just as the black-clothed martial artist appeared, Lin Ming flicked a finger and 800 vibrating true essence threads broke into the martial artist’s body, directly smashing all of his organs!

In the first few levels of the Sorcerer Pagoda, Lin Ming didn’t want to waste any excess energy. This was because starting from the fourth level, the difficulty of the Sorcerer Pagoda would experience a steep rise.

Lin Ming absorbed this heaven and earth origin energy once more, and his true essence thickened even further.

Lin Ming was unstoppable. In the third level of the Sorcerer Pagoda, two peak Viscera Training black-clothed martial artists appeared.

Lin Ming shook the silver spear, and erupted with Golden Roc Shattering the Void. He instantly appeared in front of the two black-clothed martial artists, and before they could even respond, they had been completely stabbed to death by his spear!

As he absorbed the energy of these two, Lin Ming felt that the true essence within his body had reached a limiting point. If he grew just a bit more, he would be able to break through to the Large Success stage of Altering Muscle.

Lin Ming though, “The power of the Sorcerer within the Sorcerer Pagoda is truly formidable. It’s only because my cultivation is too high and my true essence is too thick. If my cultivation was at the Viscera Training stage, I probably would have already broken through the stage after reaching the third level.”

At this moment, the space in front of Lin Ming began to shimmer. A blood-red ball emerged from thin air. This sphere was a foot in diameter, and was completely covered in layers of intricate patterns. On the area of the sphere facing Lin Ming, he could see that there was a circular indent that matched the Sorcerer’s key.

Na Yi had said that only with the Sorcerer’s key would one be able to open up the fourth level. Otherwise, they would be restricted to the first three levels.

Lin Ming took out the Sorcerer’s key from his spatial ring, and carefully placed in within that indent.

At that moment, the key seemed to melt into the sphere, and the crimson orb began to emit a flaming red light.

Near Lin Ming's ear, he could hear a series of incantations. These incantations were same as the prayers that Na Yi had been reciting earlier.

"Mm? This incantation…"

Lin Ming's heart shook like an earthquake was resonating within. When Na Yi had first opened the transmission array of the Sorcerer Holy Land, and opened the door to the Sorcerer Pagoda, she had also recited a similar incantation. But because Na Yi's words were somewhat vague and mumbling, Lin Ming hadn't been paying much attention, and thought that it was only a prayer of sort that was passed down by the Sorcerer's teachings.

But now that the incantation directly resounded near Lin Ming's ear, he was able to clearly hear each and every syllable. This incantation was language from the Realm of the Gods!

Lin Ming had absorbed the souls of two mighty elders from the Realm of the Gods. Although they were just small pieces of the originals, with these two combined, Lin Ming was able to generally understand the language of the Realm of the Gods.

Inside the sphere, a monotone voice began to sound out. "Talent rank evaluation: low-grade Heaven-step. Requirements for transmission acquired!"

Lin Ming was shocked. Even talents could be assessed according to different criteria?

And he was a low-grade Heaven-step talent!

Although Lin Ming didn't know what it meant to be a low-grade Heaven-step talent, what he was certain of was that within the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom, Southern Wilderness, or even the 200,000 miles of land that were ruled by the Seven Profound Valleys, there weren't many at his age that could surpass his strength!

And what did it mean for him to meet the requirements for transmission? Just where would the transmission array send him?

Chapter 174 – Sorcerer Pagoda's Secret

Chapter 174 – Sorcerer Pagoda's Secret

…

…

…

When each person entered into the pagoda, would they also undergo a similar evaluation? Did they have to meet the so-called 'admission requirement'?

A series of questions popped up in Lin Ming's mind. At this moment, the scenery around him began to suddenly twist. Immediately after, Lin Ming felt dizzy. It was as if his body was a piece of cotton that was sent blowing into the wind.

His body felt weightless, and his organs seemed as if they had been twisted several times in space. This sort of uncomfortable feeling really made one want to puke.

After an unknown period of time, Lin Ming felt as if he were dropping, and finally fell upon the hard ground. He reached out his hands to feel the floor; the ground was actually hot to the touch with a sort of scalding heat.

"Is this… the inner tower within the Sorcerer Pagoda?"

Lin Ming rubbed his aching head as he looked up. He was somewhat surprised to see that in this land within the Sorcerer Pagoda, the surroundings were like a blood drenched world.

In the vast expanse of this world, every rock was red, the ground was barren and desolate, and not too far away there were large bloody lakes. In the lakes there were giant bubbles of hot gas forming, and a smell of blood was thick in the air.

Blood lake?

Lin Ming gulped. If that was true, then just how much blood was needed to form that lake?

Was this an illusionary dream land? Or was this the real world?

Lin Ming recalled that extremely uncomfortable sense of distortion a moment ago, and he vaguely understood that he had just passed through a long-distance transmission array.

When Lin Ming had gone through the transmission array to the Lava Cave, he also had experienced a similar feeling. In the Lava Cave's transmission array, the distance he traveled was only several hundred miles.

But this time, the feeling of distortion was simply sharp and acute. Just how far had he been transmitted?

At this moment, in front of Lin Ming, a red light appeared out of nowhere and gradually began to condense into a solid object; it formed into a giant red eye.

As Lin Ming saw this eye, his heart tightened and he subconsciously took half a step back. This eye gave him an extremely horrifying feeling, just what was it?

"Hello, human."

A cold voice sounded in Lin Ming's mind, it used the language of the Realm of the Gods.

"Who are you?"

Lin Ming recalled that when the group had traveled here, they had seen this eye design countless times. From when they had entered the Sorcerer Holy Land, to the gate of the Sorcerer Pagoda, to the Sorcerer Pagoda's sculpture, to the Sorcerer's key; all of these contained this kind of eye design. Initially, Lin Ming had thought that the people of the Southern Wilderness worshipped the eye, thus they had used the eye as a totem. However, he hadn't thought that within the Sorcerer Pagoda, there would actually be such a giant red eye.

"There is no need to fear. My name is Yan Mo. I live within the space between life and feed upon dreams. 29,000 years ago, I was subdued by Master, and become Master's contract beast."

"Master? Contract beast? Is your master…the Sorcerer?"

"Yes. That is the name with which the people of the Southern Wilderness call my master. 50,000 years ago, Master established a vast Divine Kingdom within the Southern Wilderness. After two millennia, master soared into the Realm of the Gods, and the Divine Kingdom was inherited by Master's descendants. The Divine Kingdom continued to exist for 10,000 years, but after time, the world began to change, and the Divine Kingdom gradually declined.

"From massive wars caused by evil men, to the outbreak of beast floods, to natural disasters such as earthquakes or volcanic eruptions, the once vast Divine Kingdom disintegrated until it was no more. After 10,000 more years, it became the current Southern Wilderness. The swamps spread, and the vicious beasts and poisonous insects bred to countless numbers. The original citizens, because of war or disasters, either died or scattered to all reaches of the land, and slowly evolved to the present people of the Southern Wilderness.

"20,000 years ago, the end of Master's destiny was approaching. Before he entered closed-door seclusion, he returned to the Southern Wilderness. He saw that his once endless Divine Kingdom had turned into rubble, and these descendants had devolved into the uncivilized people of the Southern Wilderness. In his heart, he felt a deep melancholy. Thus, he established 72 smelting trial pagodas, with me as the eternal guard. The master hoped that through the 72 trials of these pagodas, he would be able to give his descendents a light of hope."

Lin Ming listened with shock. He had thought that this Sorcerer, although he may have been fierce in the Sky Spill Continent, would only have been considered an ordinary powerhouse within the Realm of the Gods. However, listening to Yan Mo's description, he was afraid that the Sorcerer was actually an overlord!

As the saying went; 100 years dynasty, 1000 years sect, 10,000 years Holy Land. Hearing from Yan Mo, since the Divine Kingdom had existed for 10,000 years, it must have been a Holy Land. And the founder of the Holy Land had lived at least 30,000 years. It was difficult to imagine just how formidable his power truly was!

"I see. So these 72 Sorcerer Pagodas were left behind by the mighty elder of the Realm of the Gods before he entered closed-door seclusion." Lin Ming finally understood why there were so many Sorcerer Pagodas within the Southern Wilderness. As a martial artist's cultivation increased, their life would also extend. When they reached the end of their life and still hadn't broken through the bottleneck, they would often choose life or death closed-door seclusion. If they failed to break through, then they would simply perish within.

Closed-door seclusion was an imperative matter. Before entering into seclusion, one had to make sufficient preparations. One had their karma left over from their fates, otherwise a demon would be left inside their heart.

The Sorcerer's Divine Kingdom and the descendants that he had left behind were one such bond that he had to resolve. Therefore, the reason that he had returned to the Southern Wilderness was to reap the karma that he had sown. Since the Divine Kingdom was no longer, the established 72 Sorcerer Pagoda's in order to give his descendants a glimmer of hope. Like this, he had paid all the debts of his fate and no longer worried.

Afterwards, these 72 Sorcerer Pagodas were discovered one after another by the people of the Southern Wilderness. They were recognized as a miracle, and thus the faith of the Sorcerer had been founded. As for the eye totem, that was because there were some witches that had seen Yan Mo.

After all these thoughts were put in order, Lin Ming had never thought that the 72 Sorcerer Pagodas had hidden such a secret.

Yan Mo said, “You are the first one in the last 800 years to appear in the Southern Wilderness with a Heaven-step talent. You thus have the qualifications to proceed into the life and death smelting trial. Through completing the trial by fire, you will obtain a treasure of formidable power that master left behind. This smelting trial is not an illusion; it is a true killing array. In the smelting trial, if you lose, you may forfeit. Otherwise, you can also die. Would you like to enter into the life and death smelting trial?”

A treasure handed down by a mighty elder of the Realm of the Gods? What sort of miraculous thing would that be? And he could even obtain the power of this life and death smelting trial; this truly stirred Lin Ming’s heart.

He nodded and said, “I do.”

“Good. The life and death smelting trial also has seven trials, each of which is more difficult than the Sorcerer Pagoda. For these last several hundreds of years, you are the only person to enter into the life and death smelting trial. I wish you good luck!”

As Yan Mo said this, his body was like a rippling wave that slowly faded away.

The surrounding scenery returned to a blood-red world. This blood-red world was a true killing array; it was not an illusion!

Lin Ming extracted the Heavy Profound Soft Spear from his spatial ring. Since this was a killing array, he could use a real weapon, and didn’t need to summon one.

“First trial, Hell!”

Lin Ming’s mind resounded with a calm and monotonous voice. As it spoke, numerous bubbles began to form in the blood lake, and groups of blood red humanoid creatures began climbing out from the blood lake.

"Blood demons!"

"It was said that in places rich with blood, a blood demon would be born. These blood demons could absorb a person's blood and true essence in order to grow. There were even some blood demons that existed in far off lands that were able to completely assume human form; their strength could be equivalent to a Xiantian realm master!

Originally when Lin Ming had entered the Sorcerer Pagoda, every level he entered had only had some defenseless little cats. Now, there were actually so many blood demons. Lin Ming's warrior spirit began to burn with the urge to battle.

"Kill!"

Lin Ming suddenly moved, and his body disappeared like a ghost. The Heavy Profound Soft Spear was simply like a bolt of white light as it cut across. There were only two popping sounds as two of two of the blood demons were nearly sliced in half!

However, although the two blood demons had been cut, they didn't die. They began to fuse back together.

"Undying? Their vitality is truly strong. But since they managed to run into me, they can only chalk it up to bad luck!"

Lin Ming flicked his spear and vibrating true essence began to flood out like an overwhelming tide.

Flow like Silk!

Peng! Peng!

There were two sounds of explosions, and the pair of blood demons burst into a bloody red fog.

With this, they had completely died. After the two blood demons perished, they melted into invisible energies that floated into Lin Ming's body, nourishing the blood in his body.

“Mm? This is…”

Feeling the force of these two energies, Lin Ming was surprised. He thought that killing these two blood demons would be like before, and they would supplement the true essence within his body. However, he didn’t expect that the blood demons would actually supplement the strength of vitality within his blood.

Lin Ming was pleasantly surprised. This life and death smelting trial was beyond extraordinary. Although it was uncommonly difficult, its effects were not something that the Sorcerer Pagoda could hope to match.

The Sorcerer Pagoda was able to increase a martial artist’s cultivation. However, the life and death smelting trial was able to enhance every aspect of a martial artist’s strength.

For instance, this blood demon augmented one’s blood vitality.

With powerful vitality, one would be able to contain more true essence, and one’s endurance would also increase. It would even be easier to recover from a serious injury. When one’s vitality reached the limit, even dismembered limbs could be reborn from nothing, the body would simply be immutable.

A few days ago, Lin Ming had swallowed the 500 year old Blood Lingzhi, which had boosted his blood vitality. Now, after killing just two blood demons, Lin Ming obtained the effects of one-third of the Blood Lingzhi. If he continued to kill more, then he couldn’t imagine how terrifying the power of vitality was that he would be able to accumulate.

Seeing the numerous blood demons emerge from the blood lake, Lin Ming buzzed in trepidation. His fighting spirit began to soar into the sky, and the 5000 vibrating true essence filaments of his Heavy Profound Soft Spear began to shudder in excitement, as if they were irascible tin flood dragons. The silver spear point shivered, and began to let out a keening sound.

“Let’s fight to the end!”

Lin Ming was like a meteor that crashed forwards in the group of blood demons. The Heavy Profound Soft Spear in his hand was like an epic silver dragon that dove into a sea of blood. Where the silver dragon visited, blood would flow!

In such a bloody battle, Lin Ming attached a strong vibrating true essence force to each spear strike. A circular wave of visible true essence fluctuated in the air like a tsunami with the spear as the epicenter. The blood demons burst in an endless cloud of bloody fog. Because the blood fog was too dense, it condensed in the air, and formed a rain of blood!

As Lin Ming fought in such a blood mist, the rain of blood continuously fell down upon him, running down his skin and streaming into his body. Lin Ming was the first person in the last 800 years to enter into this life and death smelting trial, therefore this cloud of bloody rain was the 800 years of vitality that had been saved from the Sorcerer Holy Land; it was incomparably strong and incomparably pure!

“Fun!”

“Come again!”

By now, Lin Ming’s entire body was bathed in blood. The more he fought, the stronger his body was becoming. He felt these vital energies constantly converging with his body, so not only was he not exhausted, but he felt as if he had a limitless well of strength.

Nine feet nine inch Heavy Profound Soft Spear, its aura was like a bright rainbow sweeping past 10,000 enemies!

Chapter 175 – Hungry Ghosts

Chapter 175 – Hungry Ghosts

…

…

…

As the spearhead passed through the blood demons, they would break apart just like bags of blood that were smashed apart. With a single sweep, 3 or 4 blood demons would be demolished by the vibrating force. In only an incense stick of time, nearly 100 blood demons were completely cleared by Lin Ming!

But at this moment, not too far away, a massive cloud of bloody fog began to coalesce into a blood demon that was twice as large as a normal one. This blood demon was different, one could clearly make out its distinct facial features, and it seemed to carry a profound sense of intelligence. Obviously, this blood demon was the most formidable of them all.

As Lin Ming saw this final blood demon, the corners of his mouth tipped upwards in a savage grin. His feet tread the ground, and he burst forward like a bolt of lightning. In that moment, the several dozens of feet distance between them were closed.

The gathered momentum of Lin Ming erupted like a volcano! Flood Dragon Goes to Sea!

Peng!

Lin Ming's spear pierced through that blood demon's body, and 5000 vibrating true essence filaments broke into its body, directly exploding it into a fog of blood.

A stream of blood energy flowed into Lin Ming; this blood demon was almost equal to a 500 year old Blood Lingzhi.

In total, Lin Ming had slain 99 normal blood demons and the blood demon leader. This was equivalent to absorbing more than a dozen 500 year old Blood Lingzhi!

The massive amount of blood vitality reverberated within Lin Ming's body; there was about half that he wouldn't be able to absorb for now.

If Lin Ming's vitality had been as energetic as a burning stove, then now, his vitality was like a billowing rocket, soaring into the deep blue sky!

"Awesome!" Lin Ming let out a long breath. He felt as if he was filled to the brim with energy. Although he had just undergone a fierce battle, his current state was much better than before!

"There is still much blood energy within my body that hasn't been absorbed. Still, the strength of my vitality has been augmented. I can fight all day and I still wouldn't be tired!"

Lin Ming suddenly remembered something. He took the Heavy Profound Soft Spear and drew a bloody cut along his hand. Then, an unimaginable scene took place. This cut healed at a speed that was visible to the naked eye, and before long it had completely regenerated!

Seeing this, Lin Ming was stunned. Although he knew that his power of blood vitality was able to enhance the healing capabilities of the body, he hadn't expected it to reach this level.

With such an abnormal restorative ability, he would no longer need to fear injuries on the battlefield. If he could obtain some rare material in the future and supplement his blood vitality even further, then he might really be able to reach the legendary realm of regenerating lost limbs, or even being reborn from a single drop of blood!

"The Hell trial has concluded. Second trial, Hungry Ghost!"

That calmly indifferent voice rang within Lin Ming's ears again. Suddenly, his surroundings began to change. The bloody lakes and red sky began to turn into a completely dark and gloomy world. Looking up, he could see that the sky was a pale yellow like muddied waters, and there were countless black crows flying everywhere. The unimaginable number of black feathers in the sky obscured any bright sunlight there was.

A surging river emerged from the ground. The greenish-yellow waters of the river roiled in churning, never ending waves. A boundless deathly gas blew through the air. On the riverside, there was an obsidian stone tablet. Two large characters written on it – 'Yellow Springs'!

"Hungry Ghost! I see, it's just like Na Yi said. The Sorcerer Pagoda was divided into seven levels; Hell, Hungry Ghost, Animals, Witch Slave, Mortals, Celestial Envoy, and the Word of the Sorcerer. I thought that these names were only because of the religion and superstitions of the Southern Wilderness' people. I didn't actually expect it to be true! But these seven trials do not exist in the Sorcerer Pagoda, but instead in the life and death smelting trial! It's just that an ordinary witch simply has no chance to see them."

Then, the waves of the Yellow Springs began to violently churn, and massive whirlpools appeared within it. Hungry ghosts began to rush out from the greenish-yellow river waters, ominously howling as they fired towards Lin Ming!

………………………………

Outside of the Sorcerer Pagoda, Na Yi and Na Shui were silently waiting.

Na Shui said, "Big Sister, couldn't you enter the Sorcerer Pagoda with that big brother and go through the Sorcerer's test?"

Na Yi said, "The power of the Sorcerer within the Sorcerer Pagoda is limited; the effects won't be as good if two people enter in at the same time. Not only that, but with my current strength, I'll at most be able to make it to the fourth floor…"

Na Yi had only just reached 15 years of age. It was still too early for her to undergo the trial of the Sorcerer Pagoda.

Na Yi had her own wild ambitions. She wanted to reach the fifth floor of the Sorcerer Pagoda, or even the sixth floor, and gain the Sorcerer's recognition to restore her Na Tribe!

Since the founding of the Na Tribe, it was already very good if a witch was able to reach the third or fourth level of the Sorcerer Pagoda.

If they passed through the fourth to the fifth, then they were a genius among talents.

If they passed through the fifth to the sixth, then they were a legend.

In the thousand or so years of the Na Tribe's existence, there had only ever been one person to enter the sixth level!

And that legendary figure was the first Witch Queen of the Na Tribe who had brought her people to travel the land, expanded their territory, and eventually founded the Na Tribe.

"Big Sister, what level do you think that Big Brother Mo is at now?" Na Shui innocently asked.

"He..." Na Yi's eyebrows knitted together. She looked towards the Sorcerer Pagoda with an anxiously puzzled expression. Before, she had seen Lin Ming rush up the first three levels with incredible speed that was enough to make her gasp in surprise. However, it wasn't to unexpected. After all, Lin Ming's strength was at the limit of a Bone Forging powerhouse. With his strength, he should have been able to roll over the first three levels.

But what was strange was that after she had seen Lin Ming pass through the first three levels from outside the pagoda, he had seemingly disappeared. She had been staring at the fourth level of the Sorcerer Pagoda and found that the formation array hadn't even begun to revolve. This proved that Lin Ming hadn't entered the fourth level.

"Just what could have happened? With Mo Lin's strength, it's impossible that he couldn't reach the fourth floor. He should easily pass through the fifth and into the sixth. His progress should at least be no less than the first Witch Queen of the Na Tribe."

“Could Mo Lin have experienced some sort of accident within the Sorcerer Pagoda?” Thinking this, Na Yi felt her heart tighten in distress.

“But… the Sorcerer Pagoda is only an illusory magic array, there shouldn’t be any accidents. Even if it is too difficult…” Na Yi suddenly gasped as she remembered something. In the ancient texts of the witches, there was once a legend that existed…

In that legend, there was once a time long, long ago, when the Sorcerer had founded a Divine Kingdom. The Sorcerer Pagoda was the entrance leading to the Divine Kingdom. If one was selected by the Sorcerer, they would be able to open the door to the Divine Kingdom. Once they returned from that holy land, they would be the king of the Southern Wilderness!

King of the Southern Wilderness…

Na Yi took a deep breath, her heart surging with emotions as goose bumps began to rise on her arms.

………………

“Bones as thin as firewood, sunken eyes, pupils the color of blood, so these are the hungry ghosts of the Hungry Ghost World.”

Lin Ming watched as the hideous ghosts stumbled towards him. Their bodies were lean to the point of being naught by a pile of bones. Their limbs were short and their heads were grotesquely huge. Their mouths were twisted open, and he could see dense rows of sharp teeth with a long, red tongue hanging out as it unendingly dripped saliva.

“Whether it is hungry ghosts or blood demons, I’ll kill you all the same!”

Lin Ming rushed towards the hungry ghost at the front, striking out with his spear!

Cha!

At this point, the absurd occurred. Lin Ming's spear hadn't been blocked and struck the hungry ghost without resistance, but the hungry ghost wasn't injured even a bit. Unharmed, it rushed towards Lin Ming.

A claw swiped downwards. Lin Ming's eyes widened and he immediately launched the Golden Roc Shattering the Void movement, instantly disappearing from where he stood and avoiding the dangerous blow.

"Physical damage immunity?"

Lin Ming suddenly understood. The hungry ghost itself was only a ghost; it wasn't a true corporeal entity.

"I see, so I'll have to use a martial skill to deal with them, and use the explosive force to scatter their soul. If a martial artist's martial skills weren't potent enough, then this trial would be truly bothersome."

The truth was, Lin Ming belonged in the class of martial artists that didn't have mighty martial skills. It was just recently that he had accidently created the Thunderfire Annihilation skill.

However, using the Thunderfire Annihilation would sap 40% of Lin Ming's total true essence reserves; it wasn't something that he could casually use.

But this didn't matter. Lin Ming still had his true essence manifestation ability, and he could also use the powers of thunder and flame.

Lin Ming shook his spear, and a purple electric snake began to circle down the Heavy Profound Soft Spear's shaft, making a sizzling sound as it passed.

Thunder had always been a power that was able to exorcise spirits and demons. Ghosts feared the sunlight, and were even more fearful of thunder. If a ghost was caught out in a thunderstorm, the thunderclap would scatter their wretched soul until it was beyond redemption.

However, in the legends there also existed super ghosts of unimaginable strength that were able to withstand the destructive power of thunder. They would fly into the thunderclouds and use the power of thunder to temper out the impurities of their soul. This was the so-called heavenly tribulation. Once a ghost was able to pass through this trial by thunder, they would be able to produce Pure Yang from within themselves, and eventually construct a Pure Yang body that was no different from a living human.

Of course, these hungry ghosts in front of Lin Ming were nowhere near that level.

Chi!

The electric snake spat out a bolt of lightning that struck a hungry ghost. In that instant, that hungry ghost's soul was scattered into the wind!

A surge of pure soul energy streamed into Lin Ming's body; in the next moment, he felt that his soul force had grown.

"Mm? Soul strengthening?"

Lin Ming was slightly stunned, and then he was jubilant. Before reaching the Xiantian realm, it was extremely difficult for one to cultivate soul force. Lin Ming had only done so by depending on the 'Overbearing Soul Tactic' and drawing inscriptions in order to augment his own soul force. However, that progress had been slow.

Although Lin Ming's current soul force was much stronger than a martial artist at the same cultivation as him, it was still difficult to use that minimal soul force to draw up the body inscription symbol. That was why Lin Ming had barely managed to do so, and why each time after drawing the body inscription symbol, he had fallen into a deep slumber from overtaxing his soul force.

"I didn't imagine that the power of the hungry ghosts could strengthen one's soul force. That's really too rare."

To an inscription master, soul force was of the utmost importance. Moreover, once one reached the Xiantian realm, they would also have to cultivate the soul. If he was able to build an early solid foundation for when he reached the Xiantian realm, then his future cultivation would inevitably proceed much more smoothly.

Thinking this, Lin Ming's fighting spirit began to seethe with fervor. The Thunder Soul in his body also seemed to be infected by his zealousness as it rapidly spun around the Heretical God Seed.

A thick bolt of twisting light emerged from Lin Ming's body. The crackling bright lightning was really shocking!

"Kill!"

The Heavy Profound Soft Spear turned into a flying purple dragon as it twisted in the air. Countless arcs of lightning spun around him, weaving a huge, expansive lightning grid. In such a storm of lightning, the hungry ghosts were like specks of snow within a raging firestorm. They rapidly melted and then evaporated in air.

Their wailing howls lingered in the air. A stream of pure soul energy continuously flowed into Lin Ming's body, nourishing the soul in his spiritual sea. Lin Ming felt as if his consciousness had never been so clear before. Even the smallest change around him could not escape his perception

At this moment, a shrill and mournful ghostly cry sounded nearby. Lin Ming didn't even need to turn his head; his soul force had already locked onto the enemy.

This purple colored wraith had the shocking appearance of a beautiful woman. However, this wraith only had a head; it had no body. From far away, one could see that this giant head was dozens of feet wide a it floated air in air like it was embedded within the dimly pale yellow sky. Endlessly long bone-white hair danced in the wind.

Chapter 176 – Witch Slave

Chapter 176 – Witch Slave

…

…

…

"The king of a hundred hungry ghosts within the Hungry Ghost World?" Lin Ming coldly snorted and suddenly broke forward with the Golden Roc Shattering the Void movement ability. One man and one spear, together they were like a bolt of lightning that flashed towards this giant woman's head.

The beautiful woman's head issued a frighteningly sinister howl as it sent forth endless white hairs to kill Lin Ming. Every hair in the air transformed into a white snake that slithered towards Lin Ming.

"Come!"

Lin Ming gave a shout and suddenly flicked the Heavy Profound Soft Spear in his hands. An innumerable amount of purple electric charges burst into the night sky, forming a giant lightning weave that was even denser than the previous one. This dazzlingly bright lightning field shined so radiantly that one simply couldn't bear to stare at it.

Chi chi chi!

Under the fierce blow of this electrical purple field, the tens of thousands of white snakes dispersed in the air. The beautiful woman's head uttered an anguished wail as that once beautiful face contorted into a distorted mockery of beauty.

She suddenly opened her mouth impossibly wide, her cherry lips parting to reveal rows upon rows of horrifyingly sharp white teeth. From beautiful to hideous, this change was simply too shocking.

The giant head sinisterly shrieked, aimed towards Lin Ming, and bit down!

"Suffer defeat!"

Lin Ming gave a loud shot and giant arc of lightning several times larger than the last formed around the Heavy Profound Soft Spear and directly stabbed towards the giant head's open mouth!

Cha!

With the cacophonic sound of shattering bone, Lin Ming's spear pierced through that giant head!

Countless electric lights were left behind on the giant head, twisting around the grim visage.

"Ah ah ah ah!"

Discordantly shrill screams filled the skies, and the countless crows that flew in air imploded upon themselves as they burst into a massive rain of grotesque blood, flesh, and feathers that sprinkled onto the ground.

"What a strong sound wave." Lin Ming had covered his ears with true essence to protect them. He had already experienced the tiger leopard thunderclap within Thunder Valley; these earsplitting sound waves could be considered nothing to Lin Ming.

The giant head dramatically twisted in the air as if it was being shredded from within, and then with a giant cracking sound, it suddenly burst into tens of thousands of tiny fragments. The fragments turned into little crystal lights that shimmered in the yellow sky; it was quite beautiful and elegant.

After a period of time, these crystal sparks of light became a scintillating river of light that flowed towards Lin Ming. This gorgeous light was like a stream of liquid sunlight; infinitely beautiful.

"What good pure soul force." As Lin Ming absorbed this light, he could clearly feel that the soul in his body was like a small sapling that was being nourished by the spring rains, rapidly growing.

"There is simply too much soul force energy here, I cannot completely absorb it. The blood vitality is the same too. After this life and death smelting trial, I must go into seclusion for a period of time and properly absorb these energies"

As Lin Ming thought this, that icily indifferent voice once again rang in his ears.

"Hungry Ghost, passed. Third trial, Animals!"

With this sound, the scenery around Lin Ming changed once again. The dim yellow sky and the surging Yellow Springs completely vanished as endless wild grasslands appeared all around him.

The dusky sky was filled with thick, dark clouds. However, no rain fell from these clouds. Under the vast cloudy sky, the grasslands were filled with a dark green moss, sparse land, as well giant clumps of black rock. This truly was a mottled dark world.

At this moment, a low and deep beastly roar sounded in the distance. Not too far away, a horde of black shadows appeared. These shadows had a variety of characteristics. Some treaded the ground, some flew in the air, and all had different shapes.

Lin Ming flourished the Heavy Profound Soft Spear and licked his crimson lips. "So the enemy of the Animal trial is simply vicious beasts? How kind. In all these years that I've been practicing martial arts, it's as if I've been constantly testing my strength against vicious beasts!"

Roar!

The roars of the vicious beasts were like the rumble of thunder. This horde of more than a hundred vicious beats overflowed with murderous intent as they rushed towards Lin Ming. Among them were giant cows ten feet high, serpents that were three feet thick, and even strange looking giant double-headed birds.

Facing this aggressive beastly horde, Lin Ming did not dodge. Instead, he decided to kill his way through this horde.

One man and one spear facing off against a hundred beasts; this sight was simply completely disproportionate. However, Lin Ming's momentum did not falter. Instead, his aura was like a blazing inferno, soaring into the sky!

"Flood Dragon Goes to Sea!"

Lin Ming's foot thrust against the black rock ground and the Heavy Profound Soft Spear howled as it thrust out, covered with a dense flaming aura. An overwhelming energy filled the air as if it would blot out the sky, and Lin Ming's spear pierced through the body of a 100 foot snake.

"Hoh!"

With this powerful impact, Lin Ming braced both his arms and the Heavy Profound Soft Spear curved like a crescent moon. The 1000 jin snake was sent flying out by Lin Ming!

As the serpent flew off, Lin Ming's momentum had reached an extreme.

"Total Annihilation!"

Lin Ming's entire body flooded with a massive amount of true essence. His cast-iron legs were like the roots of trees that dug into the earth. His body was steady, and his long spear was like a giant blazing flame that roared as it cut apart the atmosphere. The skill of inscription, Astral Spear, was activated, and the nine feet nine inch long spear extended to 20 feet!

Puff! Puff!

Two vicious beasts were directly sent flying by Lin Ming. Violently vibrating true essence penetrated into their skulls and pulverized their brains.

Like this, Lin Ming broke into that horde of beasts. With the support of his powerful blood vitality, his strength was like an inexhaustible well. Every time he moved his spear, a shower of blood flowed.

In such a slaughter, Lin Ming felt a strange energy seep into his body, subtly changing him; his tendons became tougher, and his muscles became more solid and robust.

"The third trial is to enhance the strength of the body?"

Lin Ming was suddenly aware that the most formidable aspect of a vicious beast was their body. There were many vicious beasts that were extremely powerful, and their bodies were naturally the best weapon.

Since Lin Ming cultivated the Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians, his bodily strength was already extremely formidable. In addition to the first trial's augmentation of his blood vitality and now the third trial's enhancement of his body strength, Lin Ming felt that the power of his physical form was rapidly ascending to new heights.

"I think my strength may already surpass 10,000 jins."

A strength of 10,000 jins was already a martial artist's limit. There were only some Pulse Condensation Period martial artists that had inborn divine strength who had a possibility of having a strength that was over 10,000 jins. Once one stepped into the Houtian realm, their physical strength wouldn't increase by much. It was only their true essence that would become thicker and purer.

Before, people had accidently mistaken Lin Ming for having inborn divine strength because of the Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians. Now, he truly did have true inborn divine strength, and his physical body was now several times superior to Ta Ku!

…………………

At this moment, outside of the Sorcerer Pagoda, Na Yi was still waiting for Lin Ming. From the time that Lin Ming had entered the Sorcerer Pagoda, one hour had already passed.

Were the legends recorded within the ancient texts true?

In the fabled Divine Kingdom, there was an infinite power contained therein.

If one were to return from the Divine Kingdom, they would become the king of the Southern Wilderness!

In the future, if he wished so, would he dominate the entire Southern Wilderness?

Na Yi's thoughts were complex.

All the young girls of the Southern Wilderness admired and revered heroes. Naturally, Na Yi was no exception.

However, once she remembered the hatred she bore on her shoulders for her parents and her master, Na Yi submerged this childish feeling within herself, and silently waited for Lin Ming to return.

"I remember, there is a chamber of ancient texts within the Sorcerer Holy Land. Maybe I can find some records of the Divine Kingdom in there." Thinking this, Na Yi took a candlestick off of a nearby wall, lit it, and slowly made her way towards the ancient library.

Na Yi was still young; she wasn't entirely clear on the many legends that were passed down by the Sorcerer.

……………………

The land was filled with broken bones and the stumps of severed limbs. The earth was dyed crimson with blood. Lin Ming held the Heavy Profound Soft Spear lightly gripped in his arms. In front of him, the last vicious beast twitched in the final throes of its life. The strange energy once again converged on Lin Ming's body, and he could already the popping sounds as his skeleton, flesh and muscles were being subtly transformed from within.

"What an amazingly mysterious life and death smelting trial. It can actually change my body and strengthen my soul, blood vitality, and even body strength. This is equivalent to completely reshaping the foundation of my body. Even if someone had a bad cultivation foundation, after going through such a transformation, they would also become a genius. The Sorcerer who created the life and death smelting trial is truly a remarkable person. I wonder what realm of power the Sorcerer managed to attain? Could he be as fierce as the Saintess of the Verdant Feather Sacred Lands?"

At this time, that cold voice sounded again. 'Animal trial, passed. Fourth trial, the Witch Slave!'

The scenery transformed once again. That dark barren wasteland disappeared and Lin Ming appeared in a circular area. The floor was made of dirty old bricks and the ground was covered with some dark red splotches that appeared to be left over blood drops.

"Battle arena? This scene is actually a refreshing change of pace."

As Lin Ming thought aloud to himself, he suddenly heard the sound of metal being torn apart. He turned around to look, and saw that the iron fence of the arena was being savagely torn apart by a massive black monster.

The black humanoid monster was thirty feet tall and its skin was a viscous purple color that glowed with a metallic luster. Its two humongous arms were thicker than a man's waist, and a thick darksteel hoop was warped around its wrist. The hoop was covered with sharp iron spikes. It looked to weigh no less than 1000 jins!

This black monster had two heads. One ferocious looking head had a three foot long horn jutting out, and the other had tusks half a foot long sticking out from its warped grin. All of the muscles of its body were solid like granite, and its chest and waist were wrapped by thick heavy chains the size of a grown man's arm.

“This is the Witch Slave?”

Lin Ming could clearly feel a serious pressure weighing down on him as he stood in front of this giant monster. Although this time there was only one enemy, Lin Ming had a hunch that this fourth trial was much more difficult than the first three.

Roar!

The Witch Slave let loose an earthshaking roar. Its several thousand jin body jumped upwards, and the ground beneath it collapsed like an avalanche. Then, like a falling meteor it pounded down towards Lin Ming!

Bang!

Rocks flew about. Lin Ming leapt upwards. Although his strength had grown, he knew with absolute certainty that there was no way he would be able to use brute force against this disastrous beast.

“True essence manifestation!”

Lin Ming flicked his spear, and true essence congealed into reality as it fell down in torrents upon the Witch Slave.

However, Lin Ming hadn’t expected the Witch Slave to have such a terrifyingly strong defensive power. Under the dense waves of Lin Ming’s true essence attack, the monster was unharmed.

“Flow like Silk!”

The countless tiny units within Lin Ming’s body began to resonate on the same frequency as they adjusted their breathing together, and his true essence began to intensely vibrate. This vibrating true essence could ignore defense and directly transmit into an opponent’s body and ravage their insides; it was an overwhelmingly domineering ability.

However, Lin Ming didn’t expect that the 5000 vibrating true essence filaments would submerge into the Witch Slave’s body and vanish without a trace. The Witch Slave only trembled for several moments, and then felt nothing else!

Chapter 177 – Legend of the Divine Kingdom

Chapter 177 – Legend of the Divine Kingdom

…

…

…

"What? Is this for real!?" Lin Ming was shocked. This was the first time that his Flow like Silk had been resisted. The Witch Slave had actually devoured all of the Flow like Silk filaments. This proved that the defensive power of its organs, skeleton, muscles, and skin were on a completely terrifying level!

"It really is a monster!"

Because of that Flow like Silk attack a moment ago, the Witch Slave seemed to be mad with anger. It drew out the large, thick chains that wound around its body and slashed down at Lin Ming!

The long chain was just like a black flood dragon. With a roaring power, it heavily smashed upon the ground.

Bang!

Countless rocks were sent flying into the area. That attack had even created a giant pit in the huge arena; this Witch Slave's strength was simply difficult to imagine!

Lin Ming had already avoided the attack earlier using the Golden Roc Shattering the Void movement ability. As soon as the Witch Slave missed, it flick its arm and gathered the chain before firing it at Lin Ming once again.

“Power of Thunder!”

Lin Ming’s silver spear shined with a purple arc of lightning. The spearpoint met the chain, and that lightning arc was like a fierce purple snake that threaded up the chain and directly plunged into the Witch Slave.

Cha!

The Witch Slave was struck by the lightning. Countless arcs of electricity crackled on its body, and its purple skin charred a bit.

However, it had only been burnt a little. Once the power of thunder disappeared, the Witch Slave bellowed, brandished the chains, and attacked again.

This time Lin Ming was left completely speechless. He was simply dumbfounded by the Witch Slave’s amazing defensive power. Not only could it defend against true essence manifestation combined with Flow like Silk, but it could also resist lightning attacks.

With such a prodigious defensive power, perhaps even opening the Heretical God Force would be useless.

Did he really have to use his last resort, Thunderfire Annihilation?

As Lin Ming avoided the chain attacks, his mind began racing with thoughts. “This is the fourth trial. If I use Thunderfire Annihilation now, then how will I cross the next three? But if I don’t use Thunderfire Annihilation, then none of my other attack methods will work against this monster; this fellow’s defensive power is simply too abnormal.

“Fortunately, only its defensive capabilities are unbelievable. its attack patterns are very simple and predictable, and its speed is also slow.

“There’s no point in dragging this one. Once I open the Heretical God Force, I’ll be able to know if it even has any effect. However, once I use up the compressed true essence of the Heretical God Force, then it will take a long time to restore. I might as well use Thunderfire

Annihilation to kill it now! As for the later trials, if my strength is not enough, then there's nothing left to say." Lin Ming clenched his teeth. Flashes of lightning began to flitter on his long spear, and a lotus of flame sparked into life. As the thunder and fire intersected, there was a terrifying explosive sound as if an unstoppable tide was approaching.

Lin Ming shouted, and thrust out his spear towards the Witch Slave!

The roar of flame and thunder swallowed every other sound. An incomparably keen true essence flashed out like a bolt of white light as it tore through space. Thunder and fire interwove into a brilliant sphere of red and purple light that flew forwards like a blazing meteor!

The Witch Slave bellowed and waved its chains to attack the glowing ball of thunder and fire.

Bang!

There was a earth shattering sound just like a clap of thunder. The brilliant light was like 10,000 golden swords that shot out in all directions. Countless rocks were sent scattering into the air!

The arena had turned into a giant pit. The arm that the Witch Slave had raised was now completely broken, and blood spewed from it like an endless crimson fountain.

It cried out with a muffled roar, its enormous body trembling. Its chest was soaked with blood even as more blood sputtered out endlessly from its body.

"It's still alive?" Lin Ming was shocked. This was definitely the most durable being that he had ever encountered so far.

"Die!"

Lin Ming's feet tread the ground and his body flew forth like an arrow. Under the effects of Golden Roc Shattering the Void, Lin Ming's speed had reached the pinnacle!

Puff!

The spear pierced into the wound on the Witch Slave's chest that had been opened by the Thunderfire Annihilation attack. The spear finally managed to break through the torn flesh, Flow like Silk erupted within the monster and rushed towards the heart of the Witch Slave. With a new injury added to the old, the Witch Slave gave one final roar as it unwillingly went down.

Its corpse rapidly dissolved, turning into a green energy that poured into Lin Ming's body.

"Mm… this energy is…"

Lin Ming felt that the green energy was extremely oppressive and tyrannical. Before, whether it was the energy of blood vitality from the blood demon or the soul force from the hungry ghost, or even the vicious beast's energy that was able to transform the strength of a human's body, it was all very gently and effortlessly absorbed.

But this green energy was extremely savage. It brutally rampaged through his body, and sent waves of agonizing pain rolling through its path. Lin Ming's forehead began to drip with large beads of sweat.

Dense crackling sounds resounding within his body, as if the bones of his skeleton were striking each other. Hearing this, even Lin Ming was feeling a bit fearful.

At this moment, the space in front of Lin Ming began to distort, and Yan Mo appeared.

Yan Mo looked at Lin Ming and said without any emotion, "Congratulations. In this smelting trial, you are the first martial artist in the last 6,000 years to pass the trial of the Witch Slave.

"You do not need to fear. This energy has simply been saved up for too long; a full six millennia of time. Therefore, it is a bit overbearing. It will only transform your body; it will not bring you harm."

“Six… six millennia?” Lin Ming found it difficult to speak through the pain.

“Yes. 6,000 years ago there was a man named Qin Yu that was able to pass the fourth level of the smelting trial. However, he was defeated in the fifth level, the Mortal trial. After he went back, he founded a vast empire in the Southern Wilderness, and was called the Feather Emperor by the people of the South.”

Right… so it had already been 6,000 years since someone managed to pass through the Witch Slave trial. This wasn’t too surprising. It was only because he had accidently comprehended the Thunderfire Annihilation skill that he would have such an abnormal striking power. A normal martial artist would never be able to get past the freakish defensive capabilities of the Witch Slave.

Slowly, Lin Ming found that the green energy had fused into his skeleton. His skeleton had become denser, and his muscles had become tougher.

The physical defense had experienced a crazy increase in power.

Before now, Lin Ming’s body strength was formidable. However, that did not mean that his defensive power was similarly formidable.

For instance, an iron armored cow could easily break steel plate, and if a sharp axe were to fall on their body, it wouldn’t leave any damage.

If Lin Ming wanted to fend off a sword with just his bare hand, he could only rely upon his Flow like Silk technique to vibrate the weapon and send it flying away. If his fist really did meet the blade of a sword, then his hand would simply be split in two.

But now, Lin Ming had absorbed the green energy which had augmented his body, and he felt his body grow more solid, and his defensive capabilities increased. Now if he faced a martial artist on the level of Zhang Cang, Lin Ming believed that he wouldn’t even need to use true essence; he could simply use his own bare hand to stop the other’s attacks.

As Lin Ming unceasingly integrated with the green energy, the aching pain he felt gradually weakened. Lin Ming's entire body was covered in sweat, and mixed within the sweat were black, oily drops. These were clearly the impurities that were in Lin Ming's body.

In the past, Lin Ming had taken the Golden Deer Pills to temper his body. However, that was only the lowest level of medicine used to temper one's body; it naturally wasn't able to be compared to something so fantastic like this green energy.

After his muscles and marrows were purified, Lin Ming collapsed to the ground.

Yan Mo said, "After passing the fourth trial, from here on out, you will have three hours of rest between each trial. You may use that period of time to restore your body to its best condition.

"I wish you good luck, smelting trial human."

As Yan Mo said this, its body began to twist in space as it gradually faded away.

Lin Ming exhaled one long breath and plopped down on the ground. Luckily, he had time to rest.

Three hours should be enough.

....

At this time, outside of the Sorcerer Pagoda, Na Yi was standing within the library of the Sorcerer Holy Land. She held an ancient volume within her hands. Not too far away, slowly burning candles flickered as they emitted a faint yellow light.

The Sorcerer Holy Land was a massive underground mausoleum. It also had a special library. Na Yi had taken her lit candle and searched the library for a long time, and finally found a record of the legendary Divine Kingdom on a yellowed sheepskin manuscript.

Because the manuscript was simply too ancient, the pages were already worn down, and the threads binding them were rotted. The pages could easily be broken apart.

Na Yi carefully skimmed through the notes in that ancient manuscript, and finally found a detailed record of the Divine Kingdom.

This record was from 1,500 years ago, and was written by a peerless powerhouse of the Southern Wilderness named Na Yanda. 1,500 years ago, not even the Na Tribe had been founded.

The page in Na Yi's hands was only a handwritten copy. Still, even if it were a handwritten copy, it was 7 or 8 hundred years old.

Na Yanda was a sorcerer. He left behind countless illustrious achievements in the history of the Southern Wilderness, along with countless legends and tales.

He had founded the giant Nagu tribe, and to this day, that tribe was one of the top ten most powerful tribes within the Southern Wilderness.

At the time, the Southern Wilderness was under the leadership of Na Yanda. They had invaded the north and caused numerous nations to submit. The Southern Wilderness had experienced one of its most prosperous times in millennia. It was said that Na Yanda had reached the limit of the Xiantian realm, or might have even gone higher!

For those reasons, Na Yanda was considered one of the ancient heroes of the Southern Wilderness, and was worshipped and respected by many people. Even Na Yi had heard of Na Yanda's glorious tales as a child. Towards the stories of this legendary figure, she had been filled with yearning.

Na Yanda had recorded the complete process of his entry into the Sorcerer Pagoda. He wrote that he had rushed upwards, but had been chosen by the Sorcerer, and then sent to the Divine Kingdom.

The Divine Kingdom had seven levels. The first level was a blood red hell, the second was a land of gloomy yellow ghosts, the third was a world savage vicious beasts, and the fourth was an arena of the Witch Slave. As for the last several, Na Yanda hadn't seen them.

Na Yanda saw the God of the Witch Eye within that bloody hell. The God of the Witch Eye had given him seven tests, and each level of the Divine Kingdom corresponded to a test.

However, Na Yanda had only been able to complete three trials, and was defeated at the fourth. Therefore, Na Yanda had only reached the fourth level.

In the writings, it also said that the difficulty of these seven tests was much higher than the Sorcerer Pagoda. In particular, from the fourth, the difficulty would increase each time. Even the child of a god or a demon would be unable to do anything in the face of such a trial.

Even the Feather Emperor from 6,000 years ago had only barely completed the fourth trial. As he went to the fifth, he was also defeated.

Seeing this, Na Yi was surprised.

The Feather Emperor of the Southern Wilderness had once dominated the entire land 6,000 years ago, and had founded a vast empire.

The Feather Emperor’s strength was immeasurably deep, and was said to have surpassed the Xiantian realm.

At that time, the Feather Emperor had created the Faith of the Sorcerer; the faith had been equal to a grade-three sect. It was not inferior compared to the Seven Profound Valleys of the north!

One could only imagine the prosperity that the Southern Wilderness had achieved during this time!

“Even His Majesty the Feather Emperor could not pass through the fifth trial? The Divine Kingdom’s trials are simply too difficult. Is there even any significance in the sixth or seventh trial?”

Chapter 178 – True Essence Bone Forging!

Chapter 178 – True Essence Bone Forging!

Chapter title is a spoiler, highlight it to read it now, or see it at the bottom.

…

…

…

To those living within the Southern Wilderness, the Feather Emperor was the equivalent of a second god; he was only second to the belief in the Sorcerer.

There were many followers of the faith that stubbornly believed the Feather Emperor hadn’t yet died. Instead, he had soared into the heavens to join the Sorcerer.

In Na Yi’s opinion, if even the Feather Emperor could not pass the fifth trial, and the sixth and seventh trials were even more difficult, then they had no value at all.

Who could possibly overcome them?

…………………………

Time passed one minute and one second at a time. Lin Ming pulled out a true essence stone and revolved the True Primal Chaos Formula to slowly recover his true essence. The power of thunder and flame that he had consumed to use Thunderfire Annihilation was also slowly being restored.

Because Lin Ming had an extremely formidable blood vitality, his current ability to recover was far above a normal martial artist. In just half an hour, he had been completely restored to his top condition.

“Start the fifth trial!” Lin Ming shouted to Yan Mo who had since disappeared.

“Good. Then it shall be as you wish. This fifth trial, the Mortal World, has not been passed for 10,000 years!”

“10,000 years…”

Lin Ming didn’t think this was too unusual. Since nobody had passed the last trial in 6,000 years, then it would be normal if no one passed this trial in the last 10,000 years.

The surrounding space began to darken. Lin Ming arrived at a vast empty space that did not contain a single thing. Underneath him was the endless earth, and above him, the twinkling bright stars shining in the sky. Around Lin Ming, there were 18 shades. These were human martial artists. They wore black clothes, and carried a variety of weapons; there were swords, sabers, spears, staffs, and so on. It could be said that every weapon was collected in these 18 shades.

As Lin Ming noticed the cultivation of these martial artists, his heart suddenly sank. Among these 18 individuals, 12 were at the peak Bone Forging stage, and 6 were at the Pulse Condensation Period!

How could he confront this?

Lin Ming was speechless. No wonder no one had passed through this trial in the last 10,000 years!

Of the 6 Pulse Condensation Period martial artists, 5 were at the early Pulse Condensation Period, and there was even one at the middle Pulse Condensation Period. Of the 12 peak Bone Forging stage martial artists, every single one of them was a half-step into the Pulse Condensation Period. Each one was much more powerful that the monkey-faced man and bald man!

Lin Ming could not help but wonder if there could be found a 15 year old youth in the entire Sky Spill Continent that was so abnormal as to be able to defeat 18 of these martial artists at once.

Were there really people that were able to pass this sort of trial?

Listening to Yan Mo, it seemed that 10,000 years ago there really was someone that had passed through this hurdle… simply incredible!

From the third to the fourth trial, the difficulty had already dramatically risen by a large amount. If it wasn't for Thunderfire Annihilation, then it would have been impossible for Lin Ming to break past the fourth trial.

He didn't expect that in the fifth trial, the difficulty would once again dramatically rise. If it was like this, then how could one possible pass the sixth and seventh trials?

"The difficulty of this life and death smelting trial is just too abnormal. Before I entered the life and death smelting trial, I could barely cope with a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist. Now, there are actually 6 of them! And there is even one at the middle Pulse Condensation Period. There are also the 12 Bone Forging stage martial artists to pin me down, they really do think highly of me." Lin Ming gripped the Heavy Profound Soft Spear horizontally, and let true essence revolve within his entire body. Although he had little hope he could overcome this trial, he would still try to break through with everything he had!

"This life and death smelting array is a true killing array. I must be cautious. If I lose, I must give up. Otherwise, if I lose focus, I might really die here."

Facing so many masters on all sides, Lin Ming did not dare to do like before and directly rush into the enemy like a tiger in a flock of sheep. If he did that now, it would simply be suicide.

Whoosh!

A martial artist holding a long staff had already attacked Lin Ming. The staff was already sweeping towards Lin Ming's knees. At the same time, another martial artist armed with a brilliantly snow-white saber stepped forwards. They had already sealed off all of Lin Ming's possible evasive routes.

"Golden Roc Shattering the Void!" Lin Ming launched into his movement ability and threaded through the two martial artists' attacks like a fish. Although he was able to block these two attacks, he dared not fight here, otherwise he could be caught up in the battle and become trapped in the encirclement.

His body formed a series of illusory images, his speed reaching an incredible degree. He survived 4 attacks in a row, and then, like a ghost, he appeared behind a martial artist that was using a meteor hammer.

The meteor hammer was a rarely used weapon. It was suitable for long-range attacks, but in close combat, it would be constrained and restrict movement. Therefore, Lin Ming had chosen this martial artist as his first target!

"Flood Dragon Goes to Sea!"

Lin Ming's spear thrust out. The meteor hammer-wielding martial artist was only at the peak Bone Forging stage, but his response was very quick. The martial artist had flicked his hand, and the meteor hammer tied its chain around the Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

Kacha!

The sturdy chains had already wrapped around the spearpoint of the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, miring it in place.

If Lin Ming's weapon was even caught for just the time it took for a few blinks, then Lin Ming would face simultaneous attacks from 18 martial artists at once. He could only abandon his weapon, otherwise there was no way he would be able to dodge.

At this point, Lin Ming grinned. A thick arc of lightning jumped out and sped down the metal chain towards the meteor hammer-wielding martial artist.

Zizizi!

The meteor hammer martial artist was electrocuted by the attack, and his entire body was paralyzed. Lin Ming seized this opportunity, and with one shout, his strength of 10,000 jins erupted at once. His right hand gripped the base of the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, swung the chain open, and thrust a fierce attack towards the meteor hammer martial artist, stabbing his throat.

Puff!

One spear had severed the throat!

Having killed the peak Bone Forging martial artist in a single stroke, Lin Ming did not dare to pause and pulled out his spear to retreat backwards.

Whiz!

A halberd with the thickness of a baby's arm slammed into the spot where Lin Ming had just been. A loud explosion occurred, and the rocky ground where he stood had collapsed. This was the attack from the middle Pulse Condensation Period martial artist.

Lin Ming broke out into an anxious cold sweat. This was a true killing array. If he had even been half an eye blink late a moment ago, then he would have already been left with only half his life. The subsequent instant attacks from the other martial artists wouldn't have even given him the chance to give up within the smelting trial.

But at this moment, Lin Ming suddenly felt an extremely pure and potent heaven and earth origin energy surge into his body. With this heaven and earth origin energy, Lin Ming's true essence reached a critical point that allowed him to break through the limit and officially step into the peak Altering Muscle stage!

“Mm? This Mortal world increases true essence and cultivation?

Lin Ming was overjoyed. Before, in the worlds of Hell, Hungry Ghost, Animals, or even the Witch Slave, none of them were able to directly increase his cultivation. They gave such bonuses like augmenting blood vitality and soul force. Although it would be of great advantage to Lin Ming’s future cultivation efforts, it was not able to greatly boost his immediate combat prowess. Rather than increase his cultivation from one stage to the next, it had been a qualitative change in his body.

“I’ve only killed one and yet I reached the peak Altering Muscle stage. If I kill them all, then just how far will my power increase?” Lin Ming’s heart rallied with a sharply rising fighting spirit. “I’ll kill the Bone Forging stage ones first, and then those at the Pulse Condensation Period!”

After reaching the peak Altering Muscle stage, Lin Ming’s strength had drastically risen, and his speed was also higher. Now, with the power of Golden Roc Shattering the Void at his back, his body was just like a passing ghost; not even the attacks of a Bone Forging stage martial artist could injure him.

It could be said that Golden Roc Shattering the Void was the trump card that Lin Ming relied on in this trial. Otherwise, if he fell into an encirclement of martial artists, he would immediately be defeated.

Because of his extreme agility, Lin Ming launched into pseudo-guerilla warfare, and the debilitating power of thunder attached to his Heavy Profound Soft Spear was the murder weapon.

If a martial artist and Lin Ming were similar in strength, then a touch of this electrical force was enough to paralyze them for just a moment. However, in a battle between masters, that moment of paralysis was enough to spell their doom.

Puff!

Lin Ming swept his spear and took off a Bone Forging stage martial artist's head. The true essence within his body rose by another level.

"The limit of Altering Muscle!"

Lin Ming was jubilant. He had only just broken through to the Altering Muscle stage a little more than a month ago, and now he had already taken strides towards the Bone Forging stage.

But at this moment, Lin Ming suddenly felt as if his entire body had fallen into some quagmire; every movement he took seemed to be affected by some strange invisible traction, slowing him.

He turned and saw that the middle Pulse Condensation Period martial artist that wielded a halberd had stuck that halberd into the ground. Thick true essence condensed within his body and unceasingly fluctuated from him.

"Gravity manipulation?"

Lin Ming had just thought of this, when the sword wielding Pulse Condensation Period martial artist flashed behind him, sword striking. The deep blue sword wind sliced at Lin Ming!

"Damn!"

Lin Ming lifted his spear to block but that sword wind was too relentlessly sharp. Even though some was blocked, some of the sword wind had passed the spear shaft and cut into Lin Ming's body.

Cha!

Lin Ming's upper clothing was torn apart, revealing the Purple Gold Flexible Armor underneath. Potent true essence broke through that flexible armor and mercilessly stabbed at Lin Ming's organs.

Lin Ming gave a stuffy cough and was set flying back. He quickly stabilized himself and probed his body, actually taken aback by what he found.

"Eh? Nothing's wrong?"

Although there was a slight aching feeling, his internal organs hadn't suffered any injury. The defensive power of his body was so incredible that even Lin Ming found it hard to believe. "At the fourth trial when I killed the Witch Slave, its energy truly changed my body in an abnormal manner. That was an attack from a Pulse Condensation Period master. Even if it's just the sword wind, it should be enough to kill a normal Altering Muscle stage martial artist, yet I was able to resist it and also wasn't injured.

The sword-wielding martial artist was only a puppet that was condensed from heaven and earth origin energy. He did not understand emotions such as surprise. Once he saw that his strike had no effect, he raised his sword to attack again.

Lin Ming would naturally not fight with him. His body flashed as he displayed Golden Roc Shattering the Void. Lin Ming instantly appeared behind two peak Bone Forging stage martial artists.

Chi! Chi!

Two heads flew! Two martial artists were killed!

After Lin Ming had reached the limit of Altering Muscle, killing peak Bone Forging martial artists was nothing but an easy task.

Two pure energies poured into Lin Ming's meridians. Lin Ming began to tremble, feeling his entire skeleton go numb as if something had gotten into his bones.

His skeleton had become more dense and resilient.

"True essence enters the bones, Bone Forging stage!"

At this moment, Lin Ming had officially stepped into the Bone Forging stage.

Incomparably powerful true essence poured into all of his limbs and bones and spread throughout his body. Lin Ming felt his strength soaring into the sky. He felt as if something had lit within his body, and endless amounts of blood began to surge within him.

Seeing that sword-wielding Pulse Condensation Period martial artist send a slash of sword wind at him, Lin Ming let out a shout and thrust out his spear.

“Flow like Silk!”

Bang!

5000 vibrating true essence threads erupted outwards, each one several times thicker than in the past. In the face of such compelling true essence, that Pulse Condensation Period’s sword wind was torn apart!

Chapter 179 – Three Astonishing Treasures

Chapter 179 – Three Astonishing Treasures

…

…

…

“Die!”

Lin Ming stepped forwards, his long spear was like a winding venomous serpent; Flowers in the Storm!

Ding ding ding ding ding ding ding ding!

In that moment, Lin Ming exchanged a legion of blows against the phantom martial artist. In a collision of sword and spear, Lin Ming’s strikes weren’t any slower!

“Power of Thunder!”

The sound of crackling electricity sizzled in the air. A thick bolt of purple lightning flashed down and stunned the sword-wielding Pulse Condensation Period martial artist until his whole was numb.

Lin Ming raised his spear and stabbed out again, but at this time, the halberd wielding martial artist struck too!

Clang!

Lin Ming used his spear to meet the halberd, and the two pole weapons intersected. The nine foot nine inch Heavy Profound Soft Spear roughly defended against the thick halberd.

That strike had contained the full strength of the middle Pulse Condensation Period martial artist, and yet it had been fended off by Lin Ming!

“You’re done!”

Lin Ming opened the Heretical God Force. A large quantity of thunder and fire fused into one, and a small electric fireball the size of a head appeared on the Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

“Thunderfire Annihilation!”

Bang!

The force of the highly compressed thunder and flame erupted at once in a ruinous explosion. Ten thousand gleaming blades of golden light pierced through the jet-black night sky, and an incomparably powerful air wave scattered in all directions. Several nearby phantom martial artists were sent flying out!

The halberd-wielding middle Pulse Condensation Period martial artist was completely enveloped in the destructive power of the savage explosion. All his organs shattered to bits and he immediately died on the spot.

Under the suppression of so many martial artists surrounding him, Lin Ming had used a single move to kill the middle Pulse Condensation Period martial artist. Lin Ming was a bit stunned himself. Unknowingly, his battle prowess had actually risen to this degree.

A pure and potent heaven and earth origin energy several times thicker than before flowed into Lin Ming’s body. All of the true essence within Lin Ming’s body was nourished by this heaven and earth origin energy as it flowed into his bones and muscles. Lin Ming had just entered the Bone Forging stage, and yet his cultivation had already been consolidated.

Lin Ming was surprised. At this rate, it might even be possible for his cultivation to soar to the peak of Bone Forging!

When that happened, just how far would his combat prowess rise?

Now that he had killed the strongest martial artist here, the strange gravitational pull that was hindering his movements was released. Along with Lin Ming's enhanced strength and the dwindling number of enemies, the pressure he faced was greatly reduced.

He no longer needed to flit around the edges and engage in diversionary tactics; now he could directly storm into the group of enemies!

The peak Bone Forging martial artists were no longer a threat to him. With a sweep of the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, several Bone Forging martial artists were violently killed. As the number of enemies decreased, Lin Ming only grew stronger!

In only half an incense stick of time, more than a dozen corpses littered the ground. In front of Lin Ming, there were only four Pulse Condensation Period martial artists left, but his cultivation had already reached the Large Success of Bone Forging!

There was no longer any suspense in this battle.

Even the early Pulse Condensation Period martial artists had stopped being Lin Ming's opponent.

In a single breath, he mowed down the four remaining martial artists, and Lin Ming's cultivation reached the peak of Bone Forging!

"Peak Bone Forging…" Lin Ming took a deep breath and clenched his fists. He felt as if his entire body was filled with a formidable energy; he was stronger than he had ever been!

During this fifth trial, Lin Ming's strength had risen by an unbelievable amount; even he felt that it was a surreal experience.

If it wasn't for his strength having experienced such a sudden increase, there was no way he could have passed this trial.

If the sixth trial also enhanced his cultivation, he could achieve the Pulse Condensation Period, or even Large Success of Pulse Condensation?

However, the possibility of this wasn't high. This method of absorbing massive amounts of extremely pure heaven and earth origin energy to rapidly raise one's strength was similar to eating rare and valuable materials. One couldn't infinitely increase their cultivation; otherwise it would become extremely unstable.

At this moment, Yan Mo appeared. It gazed at Lin Ming for a moment before saying, "Congratulations. For the last 19,000 years of the life and death smelting trial, you are the most talented youth that I have seen! I look forward to seeing if you will pass the sixth trial. Since ancient times, no one has ever managed to do this. You have three hours to restore your strength."

"No one's ever passed since ancient times?" Lin Ming frowned. "If no one's ever passed the sixth level, then wouldn't the seventh simply be ridiculously outrageous? Didn't Senior Sorcerer set the difficulty for this too high?"

Yan Mo replied, "This arrangement was decided upon by the master, I have no right to comment on the process and rules that Master has chosen. It is possible that Master overestimated the talent of those within the Southern Wilderness. Master may also have deliberately done so. The Sorcerer Pagoda will continue to exist for tens of thousands, if not hundreds of thousands of years. Just because no one has managed to pass through the sixth level in these last 19,000 years does not imply that there will not be the most outstanding geniuses in the future that will seize the opportunity. I am afraid that this is the wish of Master. Master has left behind three gifts as rewards for those who complete the life and death smelting trial. When a treasure is gone, there will be one less. If the difficulty was too low, then they would have already been taken by now."

Lin Ming asked, "In these last 19,000 years, how many people have participated in the life and death smelting trial, and where did they end up?"

Yan Mo said, “There have been 32 individuals that have entered the life and death smelting trial so far. Three people were stopped at the Animal trial, 26 were halted by the Witch Slave. Of these 29 people, seven have died! Only three have managed to pass through the Witch Slave trial, and only one person has managed to defeat the Mortal trial. Now, you are the second. I hope that you will complete the full smelting trial and receive one of the three treasures that were left behind by Master.”

Complete all the trials? Lin Ming took a deep breath. To be honest, he didn’t have any assurances that he would pass once he experienced the fourth trial. Starting from there, the difficulty had simply risen too fast and dramatically. If it wasn’t for his cultivation abruptly rising in the fifth trial, then he would never have arrived here.

“What are those three treasures? May I take a look?” Lin Ming politely asked.

“You may.” Yan Mo did not hide anything from Lin Ming. In fact, he would have had to show these three treasures to Lin Ming and let him choose one of them.

With a thought from Yan Mo, the space in front of him began to distort, and three treasures appeared before Lin Ming.

Of these three treasures, the first was a dark-golden colored scroll. It was a foot wide, with two axles that were made from some sort of ancient animal bones. The surfaces of the axles were smooth like silk, and the scroll was thickly rolled. Just from looking at it, one could sense a vast and endlessly ancient air rushing forth!

The second was a deep, crimson colored quartz crystal. In the center of this quartz was sealed a small, scarlet filament, as if it was being held within.

The quartz was a type of mineral crystal that contained a needle-like material inside. It was different in shape and form, and because it formed a hair inside, it was quartz, and was more common than regular crystals.

However, what was strange was that in normal quartz, the strip inside the crystal would be still. However, the filament inside of this ‘quartz’ seemed to be slowly moving as it hovered inside the quartz, not unlike a small snake. It was like the interior of that red quartz was liquid. It was simply a very magical and mysterious phenomenon.

The third was a milky white jade bottle covered with beautiful patterns. Although Lin Ming didn't know what was inside of the jade bottle, just watching it made Lin Ming feel somewhat scared. It seemed as if that jade bottle contained some profound mysterious or the highest order; if one looked for too long, they would be lost within it.

Of these three treasures, Lin Ming couldn't help but find himself short of breath. He had thought that the Sorcerer might have left behind some sort of godly weapon, but he didn't think that the Sorcerer would have left behind three items which he couldn't discern the use of.

Although he didn't know what these three treasures were, just by feeling the faint aura that they emitted, Lin Ming could tell that they were incomparably extraordinary items.

Lin Ming's heart quickened; he wished that he could take all three treasures for himself.

Unfortunately… he could only choose one, and the premise behind that was to pass the seventh level!

"What sort of uses do these treasures have?" Lin Ming asked. If he could only choose one, then he had to ascertain their function and carefully consider them.

But he hadn't expected Yan Mo to say, "I'm sorry, but I cannot specially explain or show you the use or effect of these treasures. This is because the values of these treasures are not the same. To ensure the fairness of the Sorcerer Pagoda's smelting trial, you will have to choose yourself.

"The values aren't the same?" Lin Ming frowned. It seemed he could only rely on his luck. Which one was the most valuable?

Of the three treasures, each one seemed to be a peerless ancient treasure. However, Lin Ming had already eliminated the possibility of choosing the dark-gold ancient scroll. This scroll was most likely a record of some cultivation method or martial skill, or even a manuscript of alchemy or refining techniques.

It might even be the cultivation method that the Sorcerer practiced himself, which he sorted out to hand down to the future generations.

Of course, a top cultivation was certainly precious. To a martial artist, it could even be considered the vital aspect of their martial arts foundation. However, Lin Ming already had many of these sorts of things, and in the future he would also receive many new ones. Because of this, Lin Ming did not wish for the Sorcerer's cultivation method.

What was left over was the patterned jade bottle and that quartz with the red filament sealed inside.

Of these two treasures, which was more precious?

Lin Ming guessed that there was some sort of miraculous elixir inside of the jade bottle.

Most elixirs were used to increase one's cultivation, and there were even a few that could improve one's physical strength or temper the body and so on.

As for the red quartz, he had absolutely no idea what that was or what its use was. He experimentally probed with his soul force, but found that his soul force simply could not penetrate into the red quartz. It was as if there was another world inside of that red quartz. Lin Ming could not tell if that red filament was a living being or something dead.

"What could that red filament be? If it's a live creature, could it be a contract beast or smart beast? And what would that even be used for? If it's just an inanimate object, could it be a precious material that is used to refine artifacts or treasures? Or, could it be eaten and used to increase one's cultivation?

As Lin Ming looked at that red quartz, he had a suddenly intense impulse to choose it, to see just what use it had.

Yan Mo did not urge Lin Ming to do anything. He merely stood aside, quietly suspended in the air, despite Lin Ming constantly probing the three treasures with his soul force.

After a quarter hour had passed, Lin Ming gritted his teeth and finally came to a decision. “I choose the red quartz!”

In the end, he had not been able to resist that intense urge that had grown within his heart. Although miracle medicines were good, Lin Ming’s current body condition was already very good, and in the future he would most likely have more opportunities to obtain treasures that could improve his physique.

As for cultivation enhancements, as long as he diligently practiced, then it would be the same as accumulating his cultivation through the years.

As for the red quartz, Lin Ming didn’t know why, but he had an intense foreboding feeling that if he were to miss this opportunity to choose it, then he would never be able to obtain it again.

Chapter 180 – Confronting Houtian

Chapter 180 - Confronting Houtian

…

…

…

As for the red quartz, Lin Ming didn't know why, but he had an intense foreboding feeling that if he were to miss this opportunity to choose it, then he would never be able to obtain it again.

Therefore Lin Ming gave up the relatively safe route of choosing pills, and instead chose the red quartz.

"As you wish."

With a thought by Yan Mo, the other two treasures were taken away, and only the red quartz with that crimson filament inside remained.

"Smelting trial human, the treasure you have chosen of the three is the most precious, and was also the most difficult to obtain. Since you chose this treasure, then you will receive no additional rewards from the sixth level, the Divine Envoy trial. In other words, if you cannot break through the seventh level, then you will receive nothing more than what you have already obtained at the fifth level and below."

As Yan Mo spoke, Lin Ming had started to become unbearably excited until it reached cloud nine. But as he continued, Lin Ming's mood plunged to rock bottom.

This gamble was simply too high. If he was unable to pass through the seventh level, then it would simply be the same as trying to fetch water with a bamboo net!

Lin Ming had been counting on receiving some sort of power from the sixth level. Even if it wasn't something that increased his cultivation, it might be some other form of strength. He had felt that he had a slight chance to pass the seventh level, but now that hope had evaporated.

He had to pass the seventh floor in a single go!

Yan Mo had already vanished after speaking. Lin Ming didn't waste any time. He immediately sat down with legs crossed, pulled out a true essence stone, and began to revolve the 'True Primal Chaos Formula'.

This time, his recovery time was much longer. Before he attempted the sixth floor, he had to restore his strength to its peak condition and adjust his mental state to its maximum. In the last 19,000 years, there hadn't been a single person that came to the Sorcerer Pagoda who was able to pass the sixth level.

………………

Outside of the Sorcerer Pagoda, Na Yi had already been waiting a very long time. Na Shui was off in a corner, asleep. She was just like a cat that was curled up in a corner of the chamber, covered from head to toe by Na Yi's coat.

Na Yi estimated that it should be early morning, nearing dawn.

Yet nothing happened within the Sorcerer Pagoda. This caused Na Yi to feel somewhat distressed. Had he really entered into the Divine Kingdom? Why was he in the Divine Kingdom for such a long time? Was there some accident that had occurred?"

In the records of Na Yanda, he hadn't specified how long he had been inside of the Divine Kingdom. But, according to the entries before and after he entered, and the descriptions of the surrounding environment and when he had lunch and dinner, Na Yi was able to roughly estimate that he had stayed within the Divine Kingdom for one or two hours.

But Lin Ming had been inside for at least four or five hours!

What caused Na Yi to feel the most anxious, was that Na Yanda had recorded that of those who entered the Divine Kingdom, if their strength was insufficient or they were incompetent, then they could die!

Na Yi instantly clutched her chest as she felt her heart tighten. There were several times that she had wanted to enter the Sorcerer Pagoda to investigate, but she had refrained from doing so. After all, everyone only had one chance to enter the Sorcerer Pagoda, and now was not the best time for her.

And most importantly, it was simply useless even if she did enter the Sorcerer Pagoda. Her strength was just too far from Lin Ming's.

Na Yi fretfully rubbed her forehead. She groped the rough sheepskin pages in her hands, restless.

"Big Sister..." Na Shui's sleepy voice called out from behind.

"Mmm? Ah Shui, you're awake."

"Big Sister, what time is it?" Na Shui said as she yawned and stretched. After an evening of sleeping on the rough stone floor, her back was sore. Luckily for her, she was a martial artist. If she was just a normal little girl that had slept on such a floor for the evening, her back would already be bruised black and blue.

"I'm not sure. It should be just before dawn."

"Oh... Big Brother Mo still hasn't come out?"

"No..." Na Yi sighed.

"Big Sister, do you think that Big Brother really entered the Divine Kingdom? If he comes out, then wouldn't he be a hero just as great as Na Yanda?"

Na Yi reluctantly nodded and said, "He should be..."

That was only if he came back safely…

……………………………

Lin Ming finally stepped into the sixth level of the life and death smelting trial – the Divine Envoy.

When he came to this world, Lin Ming saw that he stood within a massive open white temple, floating in air. Surrounding the temple were 9 columns shaped like coiling dragons, each one over 1000 feet high, reaching the sky.

Lin Ming stood in a vast square in front of this building. Around him, celestial mountains were suspending in the air, and towering waterfalls tens of thousands of feet high poured down the celestial mountainsides in raging torrents, turning into countless silver beads before they fell into the bottomless void.

In front of Lin Ming, there was a middle-aged man wearing blue clothes and carrying a longsword strapped to his back, facing away from Lin Ming. His hair was tied in a tight knot, half black, half white, and more than two feet long.

Lin Ming looked at this man's cultivation, and his heart chilled.

He was actually a Houtian master!

He was only an early Houtian master. However, there was an essential qualitative change between a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist and a Houtian master.

Lin Ming felt bitterness swelling in his heart. His bone age was less than 16 years old, and yet he had to face a Houtian master on the sixth floor!

If one searched the entire Sky Spill Continent, would one be able to find a 15 year old boy that had the strength of a Houtian realm master?

The middle-aged man silently turned around. His face seemed hazy, as if there was light and shadow within. Without a doubt, this was the enemy that Lin Ming had to defeat.

This was also the first time that Lin Ming would be facing a Houtian realm master.

The difference between the peak Bone Forging stage and the early Houtian realm was a stage and a half. That may not have sounded like much, but in the martial arts path, the disparity between each realm of cultivation only increased.

From Bone Forging to Pulse Condensation, the meridians of one's body would be opened and connected, and true essence would be able to flow through freely and unimpeded, This was already a major leap. From Pulse Condensation to Houtian, true essence would gather within the Dantian and augment the entire body's meridians endlessly. This was also a major leap.

Lin Ming was not sure that he could bridge these two massive qualitative leaps in cultivation and deal with a Houtian realm master.

"Take out your spear."

Lin Ming was surprised. Not only did the middle-aged man speak, but he also used the language of the Realm of the Gods.

Lin Ming gripped his spear in his right hand. His elbow was pressed against the shaft, and the base rested against body. He pointed this nearly 10 foot long spear at the middle-aged man and challenged him.

The middle-aged man drew his longsword and slowly said, "You... are doomed to lose to me."

Cha—

As the sword point left the scabbard, there was only a clarion ring that sounded out as the air was split apart by the sword. The middle-aged man wielded his sword and pierced towards Lin Ming.

The middle-aged man's speed was simply absurdly extreme as it neared the limit. And his sword came from an inconceivable angle. No matter how one wanted to dodge, they could not escape from that sword.

"Flow like Silk!"

Lin Ming shouted and thrust forth with his spear. Since he could not see through the middle-aged man's sword path, Lin Ming would use his strength to break his move, and use a massive amount of vibrating true essence to block the sword.

Peng!

The sword wind dispersed. However, Lin Ming's 5000 vibrating true essence filaments were mostly destroyed in return. He tapped his toes and quickly drew backwards.

He had consumed a large amount of true essence, but it was manageable. Lin Ming began to revolve the 'True Primal Chaos Formula', and the heaven and earth origin energy around him continuously poured into his body, rapidly restoring the true essence that he had used. Lin Ming's cultivation was now only at the peak of Bone Forging, but his stamina and endurance far surpassed that of a normal Pulse Condensation Period martial artist.

"Mm?"

That light shadow martial artist showed a hint of curiosity and sent an astonished look towards Lin Ming who was able to fend off his sword.

The light shadow martial artist flicked his wrist and the sword pierced forwards exactly like before. However, this time there was a layer of red light that covered the blade. It was clear that the light shadow martial artist had used a martial skill!

A Houtian realm master's martial skill attack!

Lin Ming tightly clenched his jaw, and his entire body erupted with a flood of true essence. Flames like flickering red lotuses blossomed on the coldly shining tip of the Heavy

Profound Soft Spear. The flames moved and twisted together with the 5,000 vibrating true essence filaments, charging towards the light shadow martial artist's sword as if they were a legion of fiery dragons.

Bang!!

There was no flashy or fancy move as the spear and sword simply struck against each other. A blast of true essence exploded like a shock-wave as it scattered in all directions. Although Lin Ming was able to fend against the light shadow martial artist's sword, he wasn't able to stop the shockwaves. The raging true essence was similar to hidden weapons that broke into Lin Ming's body. It was like several dozen knives had been stabbed into Lin Ming's organs; the pain was terrible!

Although Lin Ming felt as if the blood within his organs was roiling, after examining himself, he found that there wasn't a serious injury.

"Mm? I withstood it?"

Lin Ming was ecstatic. The defensive capabilities of his body had surpassed even his own high expectations. He had been able to defend against the sword wind of a Pulse Condensation Period master, and now he was also able to ward off the true essence aftermath waves of a Houtian realm master's attack!

"Since you could arrive at the sixth level, you truly are extraordinary!"

The middle-aged man revealed a hint of appreciation. He no longer looked down on Lin Ming because of his cultivation.

As Lin Ming watched the middle-aged man's expression change, a thought swelled in his mind. This middle-aged man was not a puppet that was condensed from heaven and earth origin energy, but was actually a living person.

Was he the same as Yan Mo; also once a servant of the Sorcerer?

“Come again!” The middle-aged man flicked his long sword and came rushing towards Lin Ming.

“True essence manifestation!”

Lin Ming lifted his spear to meet the attack. The two exchanged a number of moves. Although each move wasn’t particularly fast, every strike and attack was filled with a raging and fierce force of true essence.

Since the light shadow man’s cultivation far exceeded Lin Ming’s, it had almost only been him attacking, while Lin Ming could only dodge and defend.

Although he had the power of thunder and fire along with the Flow like Silk ability, Lin Ming was still in perilous danger. If it wasn’t for the elusive Golden Roc Shattering the Void movement technique, then he would have had no way to repeatedly dodge the middle-aged man’s sword wind, and would already have lost by now.

Peng peng peng peng peng peng!

Several dozens of attacks had already been exchanged between the two. Turbulent true essence broke apart the jade terrace of the celestial palace; the broken jade chips were like countless water drops that sprinkled from the sky like shimmering waterfalls!

In such fierce collisions, the light shadow man was not injured, however, Lin Ming actually suffered the repeated aftermaths of the seething true essence shockwaves. If it wasn’t for the green energy from the Witch Slave that had altered his body and increased his defensive power, then his organs would have already ruptured and he would have lost long ago.

Bang!

With an explosion, Lin Ming was sent flying backwards several hundred feet. He barely raised himself up with the support of the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, and wiped away the dripping blood stains from the corners of his mouth. He was injured, but there wasn’t anything too serious. With his powerful blood vitality supporting him, Lin Ming could even feel that his internal injuries were slowly recovering.

Although he wasn’t seriously injured, the question still remained.

How could he win?

Chapter 181 – Gravity Cage

Chapter 181 – Gravity Cage

…

…

…

"To defeat him, I can only use Thunderfire Annihilation. But I can only use Thunderfire Annihilation once. Since this light shadow martial artist is a Houtian realm master, will he be able to defend against Thunderfire Annihilation? Once Thunderfire Annihilation is blocked, I will have spent a massive amount of true essence, and I'll be defeated soon after."

Lin Ming's mind began racing through different scenarios; there was no way that he could defeat the enemy with a surprise attack of some sort.

The light shadow martial artist didn't attack for a while. His brows furrowed; he was obviously not satisfied with his own performance so far. "You can't keep hiding and you can't keep defending. Do you really plan on going through a war of attrition to waste my strength? An innovative idea. However, do not forget that you are only at the Bone Forging stage, and I am at the Houtian realm. If you want to compare true essence reserves and drag out this fight, then the first person to falter will surely be you."

The light shadow martial artist raised his sword once more, and the two exchanged dozens of moves!

Lin Ming clenched his teeth. Although he danced on the edge of disaster; he still wasn't defeated!

Such tenacity shocked even the light shadow martial artist.

The light shadow martial artist had thought that Lin Ming's stamina was deficient, and he would be unable to persist and lose soon after. However, he hadn't expected that Lin Ming would be as stubborn as a weed.

Unwittingly, the blood vitality energy within Lin Ming's body that hadn't yet been fully absorbed by him began to gradually melt and spread through his limbs, circulating through all of his blood vessels.

By the virtue of this thick and powerful vitality, Lin Ming's battle tenacity rose. The true essence that he consumed was constantly replenished by the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' and his blood vitality, barely maintaining a balance point. Even if he was occasionally injured, Lin Ming's deceptively strong recovery abilities were able to slowly regenerate his wounds in the midst of battle.

After hundreds of moves were exchanged, the light shadow martial artist had no choice but to admit to the most ridiculous and absurd reality of the situation. That was, Lin Ming's endurance was far greater than his!

A peak Bone Forging martial artist's true essence was actually so thick and pure to the degree that his resiliency could compare to that of an early Houtian realm master; was this even possible?

Lin Ming was able to rely on his true essence manifestations and ghostly agility to dodge the majority of attacks. Coupled with turtle shell-like defensive power and extreme regenerative capabilities, he was able to compete. Even though his battle prowess was far inferior to his enemy's, he was still able to persist in this dogfight.

This feeling of not being able to defeat Lin Ming made no sense to the light shadow martial artist.

'Even if he absorbed the blood vitality energy in the first level of the life and death smelting trial, he still shouldn't be so relentless. Is there something special about this boy's body?' The light shadow martial artist scowled, 'I have to settle this soon. Otherwise if this drags on, it’s not certain who will be the first to fall. His speed is simply too fast. If I want to attack him, I have to limit his movements first.’

‘I only have one ability that can lower his speed. But if I use this move, then I’ll place major restrictions on myself. But now, there is no other way…’

Thinking this, the light shadow martial artist placed his sword in front of him, turned towards the ground.

“Gravity Cage!”

Cha!

A vast flood of true essence poured into the ground. Lin Ming suddenly felt a strange pull of gravity all around him, restricting his movements. “Mm? It’s this move?”

During the fifth trial, the Mortal World, the halberd-wielding Pulse Condensation Period martial artist had also used this move, forcing Lin Ming to be unable to dodge attacks.

Now, this was the same move that was used. But because it came from the hand of a Houtian realm martial artist, it was far more powerful. Lin Ming felt as if a giant magnet was pulling him to the floor; even walking was a hard-fought struggle.

‘This is bad.’

The reason that Lin Ming was able to last this far – besides his strong defensive power and formidable regenerative capabilities – had been because he was able to fall back upon the Golden Roc Shattering the Void movement skill. Using that, he had managed to avoid the majority of attacks. However, now that his movements were restricted, Lin Ming was in a very dangerous situation.

‘Mm? No, if he wants to use this move then he also has to use a similarly large amount of true essence.’

Lin Ming discovered that the true essence within the light shadow martial artist's body was significantly weakened; he was spending a large portion of his power to create this gravity cage.

Lin Ming instantly understood that this Gravity Cage martial skill was only suitable for use in group battles and in coordination with others. One person used Gravity Cage while another attacked. If there was only one person using this skill though, if he also wanted to attack, then the power he would be able to call down was also extremely limited.

Seeing that light shadow martial artist begin to gather his own killing move, Lin Ming was delighted. 'This is my chance. This fellow simply didn't know that I also have Thunderfire Annihilation as my own final killing blow.'

'Originally, I had worried that you would be able to defend against Thunderfire Annihilation with your full strength. But now that you can only use a part of it, you've simply dug your own grave!'

Lin Ming's lips curved in a smile, and a lotus flame kindled on the Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

Just by looking at this dark red flame, it didn't seem as if it was dangerous. The light shadow martial artist presumed that this little flame was unable to pose any threat to him. In fact, the few attacks that Lin Ming had used hadn't yet managed to break through the true essence protection of his body.

The light shadow martial artist only thought of how long it would be until he defeated Lin Ming; he never once imagined that there was a possibility he would be defeated himself.

"Power of the Sorcerer!"

The light shadow man shouted, and a layer of blood-red light covered his sword. Behind the man, a gray ghost appeared. This ghost resembled the ancient demon spirit that was depicted on the murals within the Sorcerer Holy Land. The ghost had three heads and six arms. The three heads were grim and smirking, and the six arms were like the claws of the devil, each holding a different weapon.

As this gray shade appeared, the momentum of the light shadow martial artist rose to a crescendo.

"Die!"

Lin Ming's movement technique was restricted; this strike had no chance of being dodged.

Lin Ming was shocked as he saw the gray ghost that had appeared. This weird three-headed, six-armed being was seen in the art of the Sorcerer Holy Land. Was it possible it was also a servant of the Sorcerer?

The light shadow martial artist's sword cut down. Lin Ming had no time to think anymore, he could only react. He completely released all of the compressed energy that was contained within the Heretical God Seed.

Heretical God Force – Open!

Lin Ming's true essence instantly soared!

The Flame Essene and Thunder Soul began to whine in excitement. Unbridled fires and violent surges of lightning swelled outwards from Lin Ming's body.

In that moment, the light shadow man realized that something was wrong. This boy had actually been hiding his true strength?

However, the light shadow man had already passed the point of no return, he had no choice but to send out this move of his. The man clenched his teeth and forcefully withdrew a small portion of the true essence that was maintaining the gravity field. The gray shadow image behind him became more solid and realistic, and the blood-red sword in his hand glowed with an even more beautiful light.

Under the constraints of time, he was unable to fully gather his energy. Even so, he didn't think that Lin Ming's little thunder and flame could resist the Power of the Sorcerer.

But at this moment, the flame and thunder on Lin Ming's spear suddenly interwove in the same spot…

Thunderfire Annihilation!!!

"This is…!" The light shadow martial artist's pupils suddenly widened. His vision was completely filled with nothing but a blazingly bright white light. The blood colored sword that he had struck towards that incandescent light was instantly shattered!

Bang!!

There was a deafening explosion just like a thunderclap within a raging storm. The light shadow martial artist was struck by the Thunderfire Annihilation. The terrifying flurry of thunder was like a silver snake dancing within an inferno of dazzling red flames.

A vicious shockwave reverberated in the air like the rough waves of the ocean during a storm. An incomparably vast tsunami of true essence billowed outwards in all directions; it shattered the jade floor as it swept through the entire temple!

Lin Ming and the light shadow man were simultaneously sent flying backwards.

As soon as Lin Ming had released Thunderfire Annihilation, he had already been revolving all of his true essence to resist the incoming shockwaves. He vomited blood as the shock pierced through his body and the bones of both of his spear-holding hands were broken.

However, the light shadow man was in an even worse situation. He hadn't prepared for that move, and his sword had also cut into the ball of thunder and flame. At such close distance – even though he was a Houtian realm master – his chest had blown up and he was covered in blood, simply a mangled mess.

"Damn!"

The light shadow man supported himself with his longsword. He had been too careless. He didn't think that he would be forced into such a miserable state by a mere Bone Forging martial artist and be humiliated. He spat a mouthful of blood; at least half of the ribs in his chest had been shattered.

"He's not dead…" Lin Ming's pupils shrank as he staggered backwards. A Houtian realm master was simply too strong. Even though he had used most of his strength to power the Gravity Cage, he had actually managed to fend off Thunderfire Annihilation.

Lin Ming's heart sank. Although the light shadow man was heavily injured, Lin Ming had already used up the Heretical God Force and Thunderfire Annihilation. If they continued to fight, then he would be put into an even more dire situation.

However, at this moment, Yan Mo's voice suddenly resounded above the shattered temple. "The sixth level, cleared!"

Hearing this, the light shadow man seemed very unwilling. He glared at Lin Ming with indignant anger, grabbed his sword, and walked back to the temple.

"I passed?"

Lin Ming found this unbelievable.

At this time, space twisted in front of Lin Ming, and Yan Mo appeared before him. "Congratulations. You are the first one in the last 19,000 years to pass the sixth smelting trial."

Lin Ming was puzzled. He asked, "I didn't kill the enemy of the sixth floor, how could that be regarded as passing?"

Yan Mo said, "As long as you defeat the guardian of the sixth level, then you have passed. If your move truly would have killed him, then I would have blocked the attack. The guardian of the sixth level is different from the first five; he is a true soul, and has a soul brand as well as his own independent consciousness."

Sure enough, this was also something that Lin Ming had guessed, so it wasn't too surprising.

Yan Mo said, "There are several guardians of the sixth level. Their cultivations range from the early Houtian realm to the limit of the Xiantian realm. In the past, they were once the Sorcerer Envoys of large tribes within the Southern Wilderness. However, even in the Southern Wilderness there were constant wars, and occasionally, even these Sorcerer Envoys would be killed. These individuals were also once wounded and on the verge of death. They were rescued by me in exchange for guarding the sixth level of the smelting trial with their souls.

"So it's like this..." Lin Ming suddenly realized. The so called Sorcerer Envoys were truly worthy of their reputation. Out of all the Sorcerer Envoys, the one he had dealt with was the weakest of them all. This was only because he was 15 years old. If he was any older, than he would have had to face a middle Houtian, or even late Houtian realm master.

"You may rest for three hours, and then carry onto the seventh smelting trial!

Yan Mo said this, and then immediately vanished.

Lin Ming could only force a grim smile as he listened to this. How could he pass through the seventh floor?

The sixth floor was already a measure of his luck. With his current strength, he was simply not a match for a Houtian realm master. If it wasn't for the guardian losing his patience and trying to forcefully limit his movements, thus leaving an opening in his defense, there was simply no way for Lin Ming to have won.

Now, his strength hadn't increased, and he had to pass the seventh trial. How could he do this?

Starting from the fourth trial, the difficulty of every following one had increased by a ridiculous degree. If it went as expected, then the difficulty of the seventh level would greatly surpass that of the sixth.

How should he proceed from here?

If he couldn’t, then the strange red quartz would turn into a dream, and he wouldn’t even receive the reward for passing the sixth trial.

In any event, he had to put forth his total effort. Even though there was only the slightest glimmer of hope, he still had to stride forwards.

Chapter 182 – The Mysterious Seventh Floor

Chapter 182 – The Mysterious Seventh Floor

…

…

…

Lin Ming restored his mood to tranquility, took out two pure true essence stones, and sat down in meditation as he began to recover his strength while slathering bone recovering medicines on his arms.

A moment ago, he had fractured the bones within his arms that were holding the spear, and they had turned into a bloody mess. This kind of injury would normally be impossible for a martial artist to recuperate from even within half a month. However, Lin Ming's resilience, recovery rate, and blood vitality had all been greatly enhanced. In addition to the effects of two priceless bone recovery pastes, his arms were completely recovered within two hours.

In the last remaining hour, Lin Ming restored his true essence and physical strength to its optimum condition, and adjusted his mood to be tranquil and serene.

Finally, he began the seventh and last trial.

A light flashed, and the temple disappeared around him. Lin Ming entered into a dazzlingly bright white world filled with luminous light, and countless scenes formed and twisted around him.

"The seventh trial… in 19,000 years, no one has ever set foot here." Lin Ming clenched his fists, and completely calmed down.

Prior to this, Lin Ming had repeatedly imagined what sort of scenario would play out in the seventh level. However, now that he had truly set foot in the seventh level, what he saw here left him utterly stunned.

Of the first six levels, each world and corresponded to its name. For instance, the first level of Hell had been a blood lake. The second level was Hungry Ghost which corresponded to the Yellow Springs. The third level was Animals which corresponded to the vast wilderness. The fourth Witch Slave level had corresponded to an arena...

Lin Ming believed that since the seventh level was the World of the Sorcerer, the scene he expected to see should have been similar to some land within the Realm of the Gods.

But, he didn't expect to come to a normal human city. Around Lin Ming, there were lively crowds and peddlers hawking their wares. There were little children playing around, and the faint hint of dust and fragrant flowery perfume mixed in the air. Everything seemed to be an absolute reality.

But none of these had surprised Lin Ming. What had shocked him beyond speech was the place where he now stood.

He stood before a fancy, yet somewhat old restaurant.

The clay tiles were no longer bright, and the red lacquered pillars were faded with time. The old windows sagged, and the roof was tilted. Everything exuded a vague flavor of endless years...

Lin Ming was far too familiar with this restaurant. Since as long as he could remember, he had been running within the lobby, listening to storytellers weave their fantastic tails and roaming bards singing their glorious songs. He had watched as people played chess, and had eaten candy with old and frequent customers.

The covered tea-cups, the sugar-coated candied haws, the towel draped over the shoulder of a waiter, the delicious food that his mother had made... all of these were exactly the same as those within his memories.

This… was his home.

“This is the Lin Family restaurant of Green Mulberry City. I’ve lived here for more than a decade of my life. I… how did I end up here?”

Lin Ming couldn’t help but slowly lift his foot to enter into the restaurant. But just as he passed the threshold, in that moment, he froze. Lin Ming stood where he was, his heart like a billowing unsure wave.

He saw a young man dressed in elegant silk clothing, about 18 or 19 and holding a fan, smile and walk out from the kitchen.

But this person wasn’t some stranger. This person was none other than Lin Ming. To be exact, this was Lin Ming a few years later.

However, looking at this man, Lin Ming could see that he had no hint of cultivation within his body. He had a bookish and scholarly appearance; he had apparently never cultivated martial arts in his life.

Not only that, but the two were completely incompatible in demeanor and temperament.

Even when Lin Ming held his breath, there was still a sharp air that was present between his brows. This air seemed as if it was ready to erupt at any moment and pass through the sky, unstoppable.

But this young man in front of him only held a cynical smile, and in that smile was even a touch of evil. He had the elegance of a scholar’s son.

‘This… is this really me?’

Lin Ming could not believe this.

“Little Lizi, prepare a sedan for me. Miss Su of the Teal Flower Hall is holding a performance tonight. Go reserve a card for me; I shall go down in support.” The young man snapped as he quickly swung his fan.

“This… this is not good…” The small servant named Little Lizi looked embarrassed as he said, “Young Master, the second lady of the Tian Family is holding a feast tonight and personally requested that you attend by name.”

“Attend your face. If she’s holding a feast then she’ll want a chef. What use is there in me going?”

“This…” Little Lizi seemed pained. “The second lad of the Tian Family would like to request that Young Master leave behind a painting at the birthday banquet tonight, with a poem. You are currently the new chosen scholar, your poetry is definitely number one within Mulberry City…”

“Moreover, Young Master, this second lady of the Tian Family is very beautiful and virtuous. The last time Madame saw her, she liked her very much. Perhaps in the future…Young Master, hey, Young Master, don’t go!”

Before Little Lizi had finished, the youth had already stepped out the door without even a backwards glance. He said, “If my father asks where I went, tell him I went to drink.”

Before the words had finished, he was already gone. Little Lizi’s face was like a bitter eggplant that was squashed. He was simply finished. If the Master or the Madame found out about this, then he would certainly be scolded.

The second lady of the Tian Family had a good impression of the Young Master. Not only that, but the second lady of the Tian Family was kind, beautiful, had a good background, and was a natural fit to the Young Master, who was the chosen scholar.

But Young Master Lin had actually taken a liking towards Miss Su of Teal Flower Hall, it really was impossible to understand his mood.

The truth was, Teal Flower Hall was actually a brothel, but it was a higher class, more elegant brothel. The majority of the prostitutes inside were well groomed and mannered, and sold their skills not their bodies. They had elegant and refined appearances, and were proficient in poetry and painting. These talented ladies could be considered stunning and rare beauties within the world.

And Miss Su was the main attraction of Teal Flower Hall. Although she still maintained her pure body, she was still a prostitute of a brothel. With her cheap origins, how could the Master and Madame possibly allow her to marry into the family?

"I'm dead I'm dead, if the Master becomes aware that the Young Master has gone to Teal Flower Hall, then not only will the Young Master be finished, but I will also suffer bad luck." Little Lizi had a face of suffering. He didn't know whether he should honestly report this matter to the Master and Madame, or if he should try to conceal it.

Lin Ming had been silently standing outside of the restaurant, quietly watching the scene unfold. Just now, the young man had brushed past Lin Ming, but hadn't even glanced at Lin Ming once.

Lin Ming understood. He did not belong to this world; he was simply a passerby. There wasn't a single person in this world that could see him.

"What's going on here? Why is there another me?"

"When I was eight years old my parents let me go to school to study. I went to the capital and in order to study for the preliminary examination, I studied and read books for four years until I was 12 years old. At that time, I threw away all my books and whole-heartedly abandoned everything to pursue the martial path. Because of this, I fought a bitter dispute with my parents, before I finally wore them down. The Lin Ming that I became in this world did not abandon his books for martial arts. Instead, he entered into the preliminary exam and turned from a scholar into a candidate of the imperial court.

"Why is there such a world? Is this a true parallel world? Or is this an imaginary world that stems from my mind?"

"If this is the seventh trial, the Sorcerer World, then what does it test? Does it test my heart of martial arts? If it tests my heart of martial arts, then what is considered as passing this trial?"

"Since this is the Sorcerer World, then why did I come to the human world?"

Lin Ming's mood was complex; he just stood within the lobby of the restaurant. Like this, he stood for several days.

People came and went, and no one saw him. There were even those that passed through his body…

On the streets there were peddlers hawking their wares, street entertainers singing bright and cheerful songs, the rich aroma of food and wine, and there were also even the weathered faces of his parents…

Everything around him seemed so real and yet unreal.

All of the people around him were familiar, and yet they also seemed like strangers…

In this noisy and hectic world, Lin Ming seemed like a gray existence. His shadow was alone, and he was incomparably desolate.

"This world is an illusion, and I am real?"

"Or maybe…This world is real, and I am an illusion?"

"No, this is wrong. This isn't my world. This is only a demon within my heart!"

Lin Ming's eyes suddenly flashed open and flourished the Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

Peng!

Lin Ming could only hear the sounds of countless panes of glass shattering at once. In front of him, the restaurant along with the customers had all completely vanished!

However, Lin Ming did not return to the life and death smelting trial. Instead, he had arrived within a bloody battlefield. Loud war drums sounded in the distance, and glorious flags fluttered in the air!

"This is…"

Lin Ming saw armored cavalry soldiers in front of him. He felt a chill and his heart went cold. He suddenly realized something.

Lin Ming's soul force was like a tide as it spread out in all directions. In a moment, it had locked onto the form of a youth. Lin Ming furrowed his eyebrows; this was really true!

Lin Ming moved. In a mere moment, he had appeared inside a barracks. Inside, there was a 15 or 16 year old youth wearing a simple suit of armor. He held a plain iron spear in his hands, and his expression was filled with intense fear and fretfulness.

Seeing this youth, Lin Ming gave a complex look before closing his eyes.

It was himself, it was really himself!

Why was this?

At 12 years of age, he had gotten into a dispute with his parents. Finally, he had been allowed to practice martial arts. At this time, Lin Ming said that if he couldn't achieve the First Stage of Body Transformation before he was 15 years old, then he would join the army, establish himself there and perform countless services, and return home a hero with riches and honor!

In light of this, it seemed that this was when he would have joined the army!

This was another Lin Ming within another world!

……

In the barracks, the youth was sitting on a bench. He took out a thin piece of oilcloth and began to silently wipe down his spear. Compared to his size, the spear was much longer than it should be.

“Hey, newbie, is this your first time on the battlefield?” A veteran over thirty years old with a simple face said, as he walked over carrying a bowl of rice.

The youth sheepishly nodded and said, “Ah, yes, I am a new recruit.”

“Haha, new recruits on the battlefield are always so tense and anxious. It’s alright. Since we’re in the same barracks, we will be sent to the same place. Just follow behind me; I will protect you!”

“Good… great…” The youth had a somewhat juvenile and innocent expression. He nervously squeezed out a grateful smile.

When war broke out, tens of thousands of soldiers rushed forwards, their vast and dominating auras even washing away the clouds.

Smoke rose from all directions, fierce combat resounded in every corner, and a spear broke off a halberd.

The youth returned in the triumphant army. However, that simple-faced veteran hadn’t come back…

When soldiers died together, they were also buried together. Without a grave, that youth didn’t even know the veteran’s name…

With each passing day, that youth’s expression became less and less tender, and increasingly filled with a fierce and firm determination.

Slowly, from a recruit he became a corporal. From a corporal he became a captain. And from a captain he became a battalion leader…

His spear skills became more and more refined, his strength increasingly grew, and his military knowledge and appearance became more and more mature.

Gradually, this youth also became a veteran. He would look at every new recruit, and say to them, “It’s all right. When we charge forward, follow behind me; I will protect you!”

That once naïve and innocent boy had harbored a dream to join the army. With each excursion into foreign lands, he saw more and more people become nothing but bleached bones. After having survived through life and death, he had been hardened; he was just like the veteran.

Like this, the days endlessly continued. Each soldier had a dream of being a general. But, they were more likely to follow the steps of their predecessors, dreaming of those that had passed away…

……

Lin Ming silently watched the world change before his eyes. He finally began to understand. This life was not an illusion, nor was it real.

To the people of this world, he was an illusion. And to him, the world was an illusion.

Life was like a dream. Dream was like life. True or false, real or fake, originally there was never anyone who could tell which was which.

Perhaps the seventh level was not a test. Rather, it was an opportunity, a chance, a feeling, and a profoundly deep understanding into the heart of martial arts.

Realizing this, Lin Ming no longer decided to destroy the world. Instead, he would only follow in its footsteps and look on.

He was merely a passerby. He would observe the changes of time, take a step back, and see the endlessly vast dream that was painted.

………………….

Outside the life and deaths melting trial, in a place of darkness, Yan Mo was calmly looking into the endless void, a giant eye that was without an expression.

“He became aware…”

“Extraordinary. It is only the second world, and yet he has already understood the truth. Now it has been one day and one night. This young man’s grasp of the heart of martial arts is simply startling!”

The seventh trial was exactly one that tested one’s heart of martial arts. Although this was a trial, it was also a great fortuitous opportunity!

If one was able to comprehend the original intent behind the trial, then they could experience the endless worlds and temper their mind. The benefit from this was limitless!

Although there had never been anyone who had entered into the final level of the life and death smelting trial for the last 19,000 years, Yan Mo knew the truth. The truth was that the array formation that the Sorcerer left behind could also be found within the Realm of the Gods!

Its name was – Samsara.

Even those favored by the heavens within the Realm of the Gods would often lose themselves after entering into the Samsara.

Most would assume that the worlds were a product of the demon with their hearts, and they would constantly undermine and destroy these worlds. However, when new worlds would emerge endlessly, and they would see countless reflections of themselves, then they would lose their heart and become dazed. In the end, they would not be able to distinguish between what was reality and illusion, and ultimately wouldn’t even know if they were themselves real.

Once they were lost, their heart of martial arts would be damaged and this might even affect their future cultivation.

Even if a heavenly genius was to realize the meaning of the Samsara, they would often have to go through several – or even dozens of worlds as they slowly grasped the truth.

But Lin Ming had been able to see through what was true and what was false in only the second world, and comprehend the meaning behind the Samsara. How could Yan Mo not be surprised by this?

“Unfortunately, Master has probably already passed away. Otherwise, he would certainly be willing to accept this youth as his apprentice. I had thought that his young man’s natural talent was ordinary, and the only reason he was able to have such achievements was because he had a fortuitous encounter. I didn’t think that his perception in the heart of martial arts would be at such a state. He truly is a talent in this aspect!

“I will take a good look at just what he can realize from these 100 Samsaras.”

Samsara definition and information.

Chapter 183 – Samsara of 100 Lives

Chapter 183 – Samsara of 100 Lives

…

…

…

TL/N: In the measurement system of this series, 10 inches = 1 foot (because of Chinese measurements being different).

….

In the neverending Samsara, the concept of time no longer existed. Lin Ming passed, looking through, and ingrained deep within his heart every fleeting moment.

Every time in Lin Ming's life when he had come to a fork in the road, he would see a completely different existence.

Lin Ming saw his meteoric rise to the heavens, and also saw his abject fall to perdition.

He saw his future with different wives and different children.

He stayed in the Sky Fortune Kingdom and became the Seven Profound Martial House Master. He had married the Seven Profound Envoy, Qin Xingxuan, and had a flourishing family with many children and grandchildren. The legacy he left would become the number one family within the nation…

He stayed in the vast Southern Wilderness. There, he married the sisters, Na Yi and Na Shui. Together they would rebuild the Na Tribe, and he would rule the South as king…

Of course, there were endless gray lives where he would experience the most miserable of fates. Once, Lin Ming did not find the Magic Cube. He was hunted and persecuted by Zhu Yan, the muscles and tendon of his body were severed and his parents died from illness. He would live the remainder of his life as a pitiful beggar…

Looking through each life, Lin Ming maintained his mentality as a traveling passerby, without holding any pathos towards these sights.

“So what is called the ‘present’ is actually fragile like a butterfly’s wings. Even if there was a slight change in the ‘past’, the ‘present’ becomes an entirely different result…

“The past is the ‘cause’, and the future is the ‘effect’. Causality becomes karma, and the circle of Samsara continues again and again.”

As Lin Ming began to realize more and more things, his heart of martial arts became nothing like it was before. It used to be a simple and firm will, but now it became increasingly complex, containing thousands of profound truths within.

…………………

Outside of the Sorcerer Pagoda, Na Yi and Na Shui and already waited for 5 days and 5 nights.

Starting from the second day, Na Yi had no longer held onto to any hope; she presumed that Lin Ming had died within the Divine Kingdom. Otherwise, there was no way that he would be in there for such a long time.

Prior to that, Na Yi had never imaged that Lin Ming could possibly die.

Such a stunning and glorious genius of the Southern Wilderness had fallen from the sky…

After the last of her waning hope dissipated, Na Yi could not say what she felt. There was regret, lament, and even sadness.

These two sisters could only count upon themselves to go on, and could only count upon themselves to avenge their parents.

Although she recognized that Lin Ming had died, Na Yi still hadn't left the Sorcerer Holy Land.

This was because, in order to leave the Sorcerer Holy Land and travel to the nearest tribe, she had to pass through the wild jungle. With the strength of those two, there was less than a 70% chance that they would survive.

With a 70% chance, Na Yi still might take this risk. However, what had let her feel despair and stay within the secret chamber of the Sorcerer Holy Land, was that when Na Yi had ventured out, she had found the corpses of the horses.

The reins of the four dwarf horses that had been tied to the ground had been abruptly ripped apart. There were large tracts of blood that covered the floor. One horse was half-eaten, while the other three were already savagely bitten to death.

Na Yi knew that if she had no horses, then the chances of them making it out with their lives intact was less than 20%.

It was impossible for Na Yi to place her little sister within such a dangerous gamble.

Na Yi was pilfering through the packs of the horses for some useful items, when at this moment, she suddenly saw two pairs of glittering green eyes from within the jungle.

These were two Corrupt Wolves!

A Corrupt Wolf was a second-level vicious beast that was equal to a peak Altering Muscle martial artist in strength. They were usually scavengers. Of course, they also did not mind eating living creatures.

Luckily, the transmission array was still open. Before the Corrupt Wolves could pounce on her, she had already fled back into the Sorcerer Holy Land, and had closed the transmission array from inside.

Like this, Na Yi and Na Shui were stranded within the Sorcerer Holy Land.

When it rains, it pours. At this moment, they had been quickly eating their food. This food had been brought by the monkey-faced man and the bald man. However, they didn’t take much because there was food and water that could be found in the jungles of the Southern Wilderness. With their strength and experience, they were also able to distinguish what was poisonous.

Foraging for food was not difficult, but Na Yi could not face off with the two Corrupt Wolves guarding the exit.

A horse was 7 or 8 hundred jins. The three horses together were more than 2000 jins. If the two Corrupt Wolves ate 50 jins each every day, it was still enough to last them 40 days!

For these 40 days, Na Yi simply didn’t know what to do.

If they were trapped in the Sorcerer Holy Land, then they would eventually die of thirst or starvation.

“Big Sister, what are we going to do…” Na Shui whispered as she rubbed her belly. She was hungry.

A martial artist cultivator could survive for much longer than a mortal without food or water. They did not need as much food or water, but that didn’t mean that they didn’t feel hunger. Now, the two sisters only had enough food for three days. In order to ration, they would have to eat very little every day.

Seeing the pale face of her little sister, Na Yi’s heart ached. She turned to look at the Sorcerer Pagoda, her eyes filled with determination.

Her last hope was to rush up the Sorcerer Pagoda!

Of course, this was not the best age for her to climb the Sorcerer Pagoda. And the direst question was, even if she were to enter the Sorcerer Pagoda, the most her strength would be enhanced by was a stage, to Altering Muscle.

In order to deal with the two Corrupt Wolves outside which had peak Altering Muscle strength, could she do this with only her Altering Muscle ability?

Even if she managed to defeat the two Corrupt Wolves; without horses, was there still any hope in leading her little sister past the several hundred miles of jungle wilderness?

Na Yi found herself in an unprecedented life or death crisis.

………………………

The moonlit night was filled with the scent of blood. A young man holding onto a crimson dagger was sitting in a large tree, wiping off the blood from his dagger. The dim and cold moonlight shone down from above, illuminating the world. The young man's dagger was like liquid mercury, suffused with a deep murderous aura.

At this point, the young man suddenly looked up, his dark eyes staring into the empty void. His eyes were filled with a dignified vigilance.

"Who?" The young man coldly asked.

This young man was also Lin Ming. Lin Ming had become a killer. He was the top assassin within Sky Fortune Kingdom, feared by all. Even hearing his name uttered made others quake in their boots!!

Lin Ming, who had been standing in the void, was taken aback; this was the first time that someone had become cognizant of him.

"He's aware of me. Is this stemming from the intuition of an assassin? Whether or not he's aware of me, at least this proves that I am not completely separate from this illusory world, but have partly integrated into the fabric of its existence. This was why he was able to discover me…

“Fantasy and reality are polar existences of each other, and yet dependent on the other. Without fantasy, there is no point in reality. Without reality, fantasy has no meaning. Reality is fantasy, fantasy is reality, this is already the 99th world that I’ve come to…”

Lin Ming didn’t speak nor did he move, he only stood still as he always had.

That young assassin frowned, ultimately realizing that this was just an illusion…

Lin Ming turned around and stepped into the void. It was time to leave the 99th world.

Was there still anything after 99 worlds?

Lin Ming took out the Heavy Profound Soft Spear from his spatial ring. Nine feet nine inches was the limit of the spear.

Why was it only nine feet nine inches? Why not just a bit longer?

In reverie, Lin Ming arrived at a brilliantly bright white world. There was nothing in this world; only countless shining lights all around. Gradually, these lights converged into the image of a young man, standing opposite to Lin Ming.

This young man’s clothing, appearance, age, manners, were all the same as Lin Ming. It was a complete replica of him.

“This is the 100th world? In this empty world, there is only my conscience here. In the last 99 worlds I’ve been in, each me was not the same as me. But in this 100th world, this young man is exactly the same as I am now.”

“Who are you?” The youth asked in surprise.

“You are who you are. You are who I am.”

The youth furrowed his brows. “I am Lin Ming. There is only one Lin Ming.”

Lin Ming nodded. “Yes, there is only one.”

“Then you are an illusion?”

“I am not an illusion.”

“Then I am an illusion?

“You are not an illusion.”

“Then in the end, who is the true Lin Ming?” The youth asked, puzzled.

Lin Ming was silent for a long time. He finally murmured, “What is left behind is not necessarily true…”

‘I understand.’

After 99, all returns to 1.

The nine foot nine inch Heavy Profound Soft Spear… one more inch, and it is 10 feet again.

After 99 worlds, this is the 100th world, and it is also my world.

Once 9 revolves, it naturally returns to 1. This is the cycle of life. This is Samsara. This is fate.

However, this ‘1’, is different from the ‘1’ at the beginning.

Samsara is not a simple return to the origin. It is Nirvana and it is rebirth.

Realizing this point, Lin Ming finally said, “You and I are different. This is because I have experienced a cycle of 99 Samsaras…”

As his voice faded, the youth in front of Lin Ming turned into a myriad of light and shadows.

The light and shadows floating in the air for a moment as if they were dancing together. Finally, they flew into Lin Ming's body, submerging inside of him and disappearing.

Peng!

The white world completely shattered.

Lin Ming was like a giant whirlpool. All the fragments of the worlds and the lives of his Samsaras were inverted into Lin Ming and fused within the world of his consciousness.

A mosaic of sights, an entanglement of thoughts; all were like a tide that emerged within Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

All these myriad of experiences and split personalities coalesced within him. If one's mind wasn't firm, then they would be lost within the influx of these countless memories. In a decent scenario they would only be turned mad, but in the worse-case scenario they would turn into a blubbering idiot with no rational thought.

However, Lin Ming had already experienced the space within the Magic Cube and had swallowed two soul fragments. With this, he had gained the experience to resist such a flood of memories. What he didn't understand was why the 100 worlds of the Samsara would shatter and merge into his consciousness.

He had already understood the 100 cycles of Samsara; the trial should have come to an end.

So why was this happening?

The memories kept accelerating towards him, becoming more and more complex. Even Lin Ming was reaching his limit.

A vast storm swirled within Lin Ming's spiritual sea. If not for Lin Ming's tremendous soul force, then this mammoth tempest would have already twisted his spiritual sea and shattered it into pieces.

The fierce storm grew increasingly wild. Lin Ming clenched his teeth and let the entirety of his soul force dash into that storm in order to suppress it.

Within the roaring sound, Lin Ming's soul force was like a flood dragon that surfaced from his spiritual sea. It plunged into the black storm that churned within him.

Bang!

Lin Ming felt as if his head was about to explode. He was incapacitated, unable to even kneel on the floor.

The raging storm within his spiritual sea finally began to die down. However, it did not vanish. That black storm only curled up within the sky above the spiritual sea. It was as if it was tearing a black hole in space that led to a profoundly mysterious world.

"Could this be..." Li Ming wiped the sweat from his forehead, and probed the black swirl with his soul force, a surge of wild emotions mixing within him.

With both eyes closed, countless chaotic scenes flashed within Lin Ming's mind, the infinite fragments and experiences of life.

"The 100 Samsara have... integrated into the world of my consciousness?"

As he opened his eyes, Lin Ming's pupils reflected a pair of deep black swirls, as if the infinite universe existed within them.

"Martial intent... this is a new kind of martial intent!

"After I experienced the Samsara of 100 lives, I actually comprehended a new martial intent!"

Chapter 184 – Reverse Scale Blood

Chapter 184 – Reverse Scale Blood

…

…

…

Lin Ming was ecstatic to the point of finding it difficult to maintain his calm. It was extremely rare in the entire world for someone to be able to comprehend two different martial intents. The difficulty of this was beyond hopeless!

He had never imaged that he would obtain such a lucky chance!

“Since I comprehended this martial intent after living through 100 worlds of Samsara, then I will call this the Samsara martial intent.”

Lin Ming had completely calmed down. The world around him began to slowly disappear like the receding waves of a tide. In a moment, he was returned to the life and death smelting trial. In front of him, space began to ripple, and Yan Mo appeared.

“Congratulations, you have perfectly passed through the seventh level! Ever since the Sorcerer Pagoda was created, you are the first one to pass through the complete smelting trial!” Yan Mo said. Although he spoke words of applause, he still spoke in the same icy monotone voice.

“The trial of the seventh floor has always been an opportunity. I think you have realized his by now.”

“Mm. I understand.” Lin Ming nodded. The World of the Sorcerer had never existed to begin with. This was because the Sorcerer was not a god. There was no god in this world.

The Faith of the Sorcerer, and the god known the Sorcerer among mortals merely existed in the hearts of the people. Because god only existed in the hearts of the people, this World of the Sorcerer was in actuality the world of the heart.

After experiencing the 100 Samsaras, Lin Ming's heart of martial arts had undergone a change in its essential nature. At the beginning, his martial heart had been of perseverance and persistence. Now, his heart of martial arts seemed to have touched a great truth, and he had come closer to understanding the profound secrets behind 'Martial' and 'Dao'.

This change in his heart of martial arts wouldn't be immediately reflected in his strength, but, it had an invaluable role in the future achievements of Lin Ming!

And even more precious was the Samsara martial intent.

Lin Ming could feel that the Samsara martial intent far outstripped his first ethereal martial intent; it was an absolutely terrifying martial intent.

"According to the agreement, this treasure is yours." Yan Mo said. The space before him began to ripple, and the red quartz with the crimson filament inside appeared in front of Lin Ming.

Lin Ming took a deep breath. As he touched this red quartz, it felt like water to the touch. Lin Ming asked, "Can you tell me what this is now?"

"Certainly." Yan Mo said. "This is blood from a reverse scale that Master accidently obtained during a battle within the Realm of the Gods."

"Blood of the reverse scale?" Lin Ming said, slightly stunned. He patiently continued listening.

Yan Mo said, "All dragons have a reverse scale. Once this scale is breached, they will die. The filament that is sealed within this red quartz is the blood from a True Dragon's reverse scale. This blood has a soul, and therefore it was sealed within 10,000 year red quartz to prevent its soul from dissipating or running away."

“True Dragon?”

Lin Ming was taken aback. In the legends, a True Dragon was simply an illusory, unobtainable existence. No one knew just how powerful a True Dragon really was.

In the Sky Spill Continent, there were only flood dragons, and even if it were a flood dragon, that was also an ultimate existence that was never seen.

What most people could see were wurms. These were the lineages of vicious beasts that had the bloodline of the flood dragons mixed within their own, and could only be considered as false dragons.

A flood dragon was said to love mating and was promiscuous to the point that it didn’t discriminate in finding sexual partners. That was why there were so many different vicious beasts that had the blood of dragons within them. Just casually choosing one of these beasts, one could easily find one that was as strong as a Xiantian master, or even stronger!

Before, Lin Ming had eaten a Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill. The Crimson Gold Dragon was a vicious beast that had part of the bloodline from a wurm within it; it was far inferior to a creature with the bloodline of a flood dragon! Even so, a Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill was also priceless.

“What does this reverse scale blood do?” Lin Ming asked, his voice filled with anticipation and expectation.

“Once you absorb this into your body, your true essence will carry a hint of Dragon Yang Qi. In lower levels of cultivation, its use will not be apparent. However, the higher your cultivation is, the more benefits there are that you will discover. As you are now, your cultivation is too low to absorb this or use this reverse scale blood.”

“Dragon Yang Qi?” Lin Ming faintly echoed. Although he didn’t know what its specific function was, but just with it coming from an existence like a True Dragon, Lin Ming knew that this was a great fortuitous opportunity.

Lin Ming asked, “Why didn’t the Sorcerer Senior use this Dragon Yang Qi? Did he already have it?”

Yan Mo said, “Master did not. This reverse scale blood is something that could only be obtained through serendipity; one cannot seek it. Even within the Realm of the Gods, this is a treasure that would fill everyone with absolute jealousy and set off a terrifyingly bloody conflict. Master may not have Dragon Yang Qi, but early in Master’s past, he had found an ancient Ice Frog Pill. He was able to refine this pill with a secret technique and let his body flow with the icy blood of an ancient ice frog. From then on, Master became impervious to ice and poisons, and was also able to use their power. However, because of this, Master’s body became partial to the cold Yin energy, and the cultivation method Master practiced was also like this, so he was never able to absorb the Dragon Yang Qi within him. Otherwise if he did, then the Yang and Yin energies would reject each other, and the Dragon Yang Qi might shatter the Ice Frog blood that he had cultivated. There could only be disadvantages and no benefits to this.”

“So that’s how it was. Didn’t the Sorcerer Senior ever think of trading this reverse scale blood for something else?”

Yan Mo said, “Master’s cultivation had already reached the limit of an extremely high realm. At that time, his lifespan was coming to an end. All worldly possessions became worthless to him. Any valuable material or treasure could not help Master break through to the next realm. Master looked at all the treasures that he had collected in his life and had laid down everything in order to let his mind return to its most fundamental and simplistic nature. He gave up all vices and affectations in order to return to innocence. Only like this would Master have a chance to break through his lifetime’s bottleneck.”

“I see… so did Sorcerer Senior succeed?”

After Lin Ming asked, Yan Mo remained silent. But silence was also a kind of answer.

Lin Ming felt a profound stirring in his heart.

What sort of character was the Sorcerer? For his final closed-door seclusion, he had made so many preparations. He hadn't even hesitated to return to the mortal world and construct 72 Sorcerer Pagodas for his descendants to complete his karma. Finally, he had even laid down all his worldly possessions and threw away all of his sins and vices in order to return to a pure mentality to attack his bottleneck. Even so, after all this, he had still failed!

The path of cultivating the martial arts was to clash against the will of the heavens, remove oneself from the cycle of Samsara and eternally remain within the world.

There had been so many extremely gifted geniuses and top talents in the world, but ultimately none of them were able to struggle against the vast heavens…

Thinking this, Lin Ming subconsciously clenched his fists. One could not resist the heavens, but he would still continue to fight and struggle until he reached the peak of the martial Dao!

At this time, Yan Mo said, "You cannot swallow the reverse scale blood; it must be directly introduced into your own blood vessels. However, your cultivation is too low, and the reverse scale blood cannot fuse into your body. If you forcefully do so, your body will be unable to withstand the power and you will explode. I will place a ban upon your body to seal the reverse scale blood. When your cultivation is sufficient, you may undo this ban and completely absorb the reverse scale blood. I warn you, absorbing the reverse scale blood is an extremely painful process. In order to neutralize its oppressive power, it is similar to washing the muscles and marrow."

Lin Ming said, "I understand, thank you Senior Yan Mo."

"Cut your wrist and introduce the blood inside."

Listening to Yan Mo's directions, Lin Ming took out a dagger from his spatial ring. With an effort, he was able to open up an artery on his wrist. It bled profusely.

However, Lin Ming's regenerative abilities were too astonishing. Even after cutting open his wrist, this wound still healed at a speed visible to the naked eye.

At this time, the reverse scale blood was suspended above Lin Ming's hand. With a simply thought from Yan Mo, a splitting sound resounded in the air. Cracks spread like spider webs down the red quartz, and the thin blood filament within tumbled around like a bird that had been unjustly caged within. After being freed, it instantly flew out.

But, as it tried to escape, it was instantly suppressed by an invisible force and pressed into Lin Ming's blood vessels.

With the support of his formidable blood vitality, the wrist wound quickly healed. Like this, the reverse scale blood was sealed within Lin Ming's body.

With the reverse scale blood submerged within Lin Ming's body, Yan Mo closed its giant eye. An invisibly psychic wave radiated from Yan Mo and flowed into Lin Ming.

The space around Lin Ming began to twist and bend. A spatial cage had formed around him, completely locking him inside.

Lin Ming knew that this was a ban that was created by Yan Mo, in order to prevent the reverse scale blood from escaping.

The reverse scale blood was rebellious and violent. It had just left its prison, and had been forced into another prison; how could it be willing to resign itself to this fate? It recklessly crashing within Lin Ming's body, wanting to break it open and flee outside.

But an invisible force confined it to a small space. This spatial power became increasingly tighter, pushing it towards Lin Ming's heart.

The reverse scale blood grew increasingly manic, slamming against its bindings time and time again. Lin Ming felt a fierce pain in his chest, this aching feeling was just as if a sharp point was repeatedly stabbing him from the inside.

As Lin Ming probed the reverse scale blood's movements in his body with his soul force, he could only squeeze out a grim smile. If it was like this, then who knew what year or what month he would finally be able to absorb it…

The Sorcerer had set such a big cake in front of him, and yet he could only look at it, he wasn't able to eat it.

Yan Mo stood at the side, simultaneously sealing away the reverse scale blood as he said, "I will seal this into your heart, and then teach you the method to undo the ban. Once you reach the limit of the Xiantian realm, you may undo the ban. Remember, do not hastily absorb it, otherwise your life will be threatened."

"Limit of the Xiantian realm?" Lin Ming was speechless. He still hadn't even reached the Pulse Condensation Period, so how long would it take for him to reach the Xiantian realm limit? But this wasn't too surprising. After all, this reverse scale blood was from the bloodline of a True Dragon. Although it was only the smallest amount, he was still not at the point where he could tame it. If there was anyone to blame, he could only blame himself for his cultivation being too low.

Yan Mo could see the crestfallen disappointment on Lin Ming's face. After obtaining such a powerful strength, he had been told he could not use it; disappointment was simply the natural path of human nature.

Yan Mo said, "Cultivation of the martial path must proceed in an orderly fashion, step-by-step. You already have the power and the body. There are many geniuses that would not even dare to –"

As Yan Mo was speaking words of encouragement, he suddenly stopped mid-sentence. There had been a sudden change with the reverse scale blood within Lin Ming's body!

As the reverse scale blood approached Lin Ming's heart, it reacted as if it had just encountered the most horrible thing in the world. It suddenly quieted down, and even showed a deep foreboding fear.

It no longer crashed around; it only thought to flee the confines of Lin Ming's heart as soon as possible. However, the spatial force that Yan Mo applied was slowly edging the reverse scale blood towards Lin Ming's heart.

The reverse scale blood was anxious, and it tried to resist this inexorably force with all of its might. But it was only a trace of blood. Even if it was the bloodline of a True Dragon, it still couldn't resist Yan Mo's strength.

As it closed in on Lin Ming's heart, the soul of the reverse scale blood began to shiver in abject fear.

Lin Ming had been following the path of the reverse scale blood with his soul force. He felt the dread of the reverse scale blood, and was slightly surprised. After all, this reverse scale blood originated from the bloodline of a True Dragon. Although it had limited strength, it was still mightily proud just like a True Dragon.

So why was it suddenly so afraid…?

This was…

Chapter 185 – Unexpected Fusion

Chapter 185 – Unexpected Fusion

…

…

…

Lin Ming's mind flashed, the Magic Cube! It could absorb the blood of powerhouses! He had actually forgotten about it!

When Lin Ming first obtained the Purple Gold Flexible Armor that the Crown Prince had bestowed upon him, it had been marked with the blood symbol from a peak Houtian realm master. This blood symbol had later been absorbed by the Magic Cube, and Lin Ming had therefore managed to obtain his second opportunity to enter into the space of the Magic Cube.

Sure enough, it was as Lin Ming had imagined. An invisible force ran out from Lin Ming's heart as if it was a snake striking out at its prey. This force had suddenly locked onto the reverse scale blood, and slowly begun dragging it closer and closer to Lin Ming's heart.

The reverse scale blood grew increasingly desperate. It tried to rush back, but it could not break away from the oppressive pressure.

At this time, Lin Ming's mind began to race. What could he do? The Magic Cube obviously wanted to absorb the reverse scale blood, and looking at the situation, absorbing the reverse scale blood would be a simple matter.

If the reverse scale blood were absorbed by the Magic Cube, it might empower the Magic Cube. However, this was just a bit too wasteful for such a precious treasure…

The Magic Cube was able to absorb the blood of the Houtian realm master. Although the quality was much worse than the reverse scale blood, it could be made up for in quantity.

Lin Ming was also a bit anxious. At this time, the reverse scale blood had been drawn into Lin Ming's heart. The reverse scale blood desperately wanted to break free from this invisible chain. It began to crash against Lin Ming's heart muscles, as if it would rather fuse with him than be absorbed by the Magic Cube.

At this time, the strange invisible tug of the Magic Cube on the reverse scale blood suddenly weakened.

The reverse scale blood caught this opportunity and finally broke into Lin Ming's heart. Without a hint of hesitation, it began to integrate with Lin Ming's heart.

This was a completely voluntary fusion; it was not forced by either the power of the Magic Cube or Yan Mo.

"Mm... this is..."

As the Magic Cube gradually relaxed its binding force on the reverse scale blood, the reverse scale blood desperately integrated with Lin Ming's heart. This process was completely of the reverse blood scale's own volition, and Lin Ming felt no pain at all.

"An accident like this actually happened..." Lin Ming gulped a mouthful of saliva, somewhat stunned at the turn of events.

How proud was the True Dragon bloodline? If not for such a sudden, horrifying change in the situation, there was no way that it would ever have willingly fused with a mortal.

If he wanted to absorb it by himself, he could only count on his own power to suppress it, then forcefully assimilate it. This process was like washing one's muscles and marrow; it was incomparably painful.

Even Yan Mo had said that he would at least need to be at the limit of the Xiantian realm to have a chance to absorb the reverse scale blood.

Lin Ming was only at the peak of Bone Forging, and the distance between him and the Xiantian realm was like heaven and earth. Yet the reverse scale blood had voluntarily fused with Lin Ming, and there wasn't even the slightest bit of pain.

At this time, Yan Mo also found that the reverse scale blood had started to fuse with Lin Ming's heart. It looked deeply at Lin Ming, and then stopped pouring its strength into the spatial seal in Lin Ming's body. It was simply no longer necessary.

The Magic Cube also completely abandoned its invisible shackles on the reverse scale blood. However, when the reverse scale blood discovered that the invisible forces on it had disappeared, it had already mostly fused with Lin Ming. It slowed down for a moment, hesitating, as if deciding whether or not it should still try to immediately escape. But just as it thought this idea, the reverse scale blood suddenly felt a huge coercive force transmit upon it. The soul of the reverse scale blood shivered, and abandoned that thought and honestly continued to integrate into Lin Ming.

With this chain of events, Lin Ming actually felt something. The Magic Cube… had a consciousness!

It was not an inanimate object.

Without a doubt, if the Magic Cube had insisted on absorbing the reverse scale blood, then it could absolutely have done this. It had originally intended to absorb the reverse scale blood, but when the reverse scale blood had begun to fuse with Lin Ming's heart, the Magic Cube had actually changed its mind!

It had gradually relaxed its hold on the reverse scale blood in order to let it freely integrate with Lin Ming's heart. Afterwards, it even supervised and facilitated this integration.

This made Lin Ming feel extremely perplexed. Just what was the Magic Cube?

Did it have a soul?

The reverse scale blood would rather integrate into him than be sucked into the Magic Cube. Was the Magic Cube really such a horrifying existence? Just what was going on?

Just after a little more than a quarter of an hour, the reverse scale blood had been thoroughly absorbed by Lin Ming.

Yan Mo was giving Lin Ming a very weird and peculiar look. It had said that Lin Ming would need to be at the limit of the Xiantian realm in order to absorb the reverse scale blood, and he would also have to undergo a baptism of suffering to do so. However, now he had actually quickly absorbed the reverse scale blood as if he was eating a light meal. Not only was there no discomfort, but it appeared to have been quite an enjoyable encounter.

‘What is the reason for this?’

Yan Mo had some doubts. Although it could track the location of the reverse scale blood, it was completely unable to feel the presence of the Magic Cube.

Yan Mo was extremely formidable. However, this was only relative to those within the Sky Spill Continent. The Magic Cube represented a power that it could not hope to see into.

“You absorbed the reverse scale blood?” Yan Mo asked in disbelief.

Lin Ming nodded, unsure of what expression he should be wearing at this time.

“But… how did you absorb it?”

Lin Ming gave an apologetic smile; there was simply no way he could explain this. He could only play the fool and pretend he knew nothing. “I’m not sure myself. The reserve scale blood suddenly decided to voluntarily fuse with my body.”

“Voluntary fusion…” Yan Mo was at a complete loss. If the reverse scale blood was willing to integrate into a human body, then back in the day, his Master could have done so. As long as the Yin and Yang elements did not conflict within his body, then there was no problem for there to be two diametrically opposed powers within his blood.

What secrets did this boy hold? It was impossible for the reverse scale blood to yield to an ordinary mortal. Could this young boy be the reincarnation of a True Dragon?

How was this possible…

Yan Mo's gaze at Lin Ming became increasingly bizarre and perplexed. As Yan Mo looked straight at Lin Ming, even Lin Ming was feeling a bit uncomfortable.

This fellow had lived for such a long time, Lin Ming wasn't sure if he could actually fool him.

Yan Mo couldn't figure out the reason for what had just occurred. He finally said, "Anyway, regardless of why it happened, it is a good thing that the reverse scale blood voluntarily fused with you. It will take a while for your true essence to fuse with the Dragon Yang Qi. The sooner you absorbed the reverse scale blood, the greater benefits you will experience.

"If you had used your own strength to forcefully absorb the reverse scale blood, then it would have destroyed part of the reverse scale bloodline, and you would not have integrated with it so perfectly like now.

"You have been a good smelting trial participant. Now that the life and death smelting trial has ended, you may leave. From here on out, you will undoubtedly live an incomparably wonderful life. But, I must continue to guard my 72 smelting trial pagodas. If fate wills it, then we shall meet again."

As Yan Mo said this, his body twisted, and he begun to slowly fade away.

Lin Ming hesitated, then suddenly said, "Senior, please wait a moment, I actually have a question I've wanted to ask you. Since the Sorcerer Senior is already gone, then these 72 cultivation pagodas have already lost their meaning. For what reason does Senior still stay here to protect them?"

Listening to this question, Yan Mo seemed thoughtful and quietly said, "This is my fate, and I am willing to bear the burden of it. Just like you, who vows to struggle against the heavens..."

As Yan Mo spoke these words, he had already vanished. The faint sound of his voice became distant echoes that reverberated in the emptiness, lingering on for a long time until they finally died down.

Lin Ming smiled for a moment. In that brief second, there was an inexplicable taste that came to mind...

Chapter 186 – Wolf Toxin

Chapter 186 – Wolf Toxin

…

…

…

Outside of the Sorcerer Pagoda, seven days and seven nights had already passed.

“Awoooo!”

In the dark and silent halls of the Sorcerer Holy Land, a wolf suddenly howled. A Corrupt Wolf the size of a small cow rushed forwards, bits of carrion flesh hanging from its cruel jaws. Its body reeked of death, and its bright white fangs were exposed and dripping saliva. In the darkness, its luminescent green eyes were especially bright.

In front of the Corrupt Wolf, a little girl was quickly running. This little girl was Na Yi.

At this point her innocent face held no fear or panic. Instead, her teeth were clenched as she desperately pushed her true essence to the max and displayed her fastest speed.

However, Na Yi was only at the Viscera Training stage. Not only that, but a human was already inferior in running to a vicious beast; how could she compare to the peak Altering Muscle Corrupt Wolf?

The Corrupt Wolf closed in, almost overtaking her. Na Yi could already hear the sounds of whistling wind from behind her back and even feel the rancid breath of the Corrupt Wolf.

Roar!

The Corrupt Wolf pounced forwards, its sharp wolf claws piercing straight towards Na Yi and scratching her delicate back.

"Ah!"

Na Yi forced the last vestiges of her faltering strength to the forefront and suddenly leapt forwards. However, the wolf's claws had ripped open her back, her clothes had been broken and she was covered in blood!

Crash!

Na Yi fell onto the ground, her body rolling around. The Corrupt Wolf once again pounced forwards, this time aiming its razor sharp claws towards Na Yi's throat!

At this juncture of life and death, a cold light flashed in Na Yi's eyes.

Whiz!

The sound of a sharp piercing sound suddenly rang in the air. A darksteel javelin as thick as thumb flew out from a hole in the wall, and stabbed the Corrupt Wolf, sending blood flying everywhere!

"Aowoo…." The Corrupt Wolf pitifully yelped. The javelin had a tremendous force contained behind it as it shot out, and it had nailed the Corrupt Wolf to the ground. But this was not the end. Just as the Corrupt Wolf fell on the ground, rows of sharp knives immediately stabbed out from underneath, their piercing cold blades stabbing into the Corrupt Wolf's body.

Puff!

The Corrupt Wolf was like a dead dog that had been stabbed through the heart with a thousand knives. It was deader than dead.

Seeing this, Na Yi let loose a breath of relief and collapsed to the ground. Her back was slick with blood; the wolf had left three bone-deep claw wounds on her back.

Bursts of pain came roaring at her like the tide of an ocean. Na Yi's forehead began to seep with sweat.

"Big Sister!"

Na Shui rushed over to tend to her injured big sister. Her tears were freely falling, an unstoppable waterfall.

To Na Shui, her big sister was her only hope, but also the sustenance that kept her spirit running and alive. If something was to happen to Na Yi, then she would lose all courage to continue living.

"I'm fine... I... just need a rest." Na Yi forced out a smile, feeling extremely bitter within.

She had underestimated the speed of the Corrupt Wolf, and finally received such a heavy wound.

There was also another Corrupt Wolf outside. With her current condition, how could she possibly kill it?

There was only enough food left over for a day. Na Yi still hadn't gone to the Sorcerer Pagoda. She estimated that with her own strength, she could at most pass the third floor and enter into the fourth. After that, any further progress was simply far too difficult.

She could only enter the Sorcerer Holy Land one time. It was also the most important opportunity in her life. If she could only reach the fourth floor, then how would she ever find the power to avenge her parents in the future?

She had made two oaths to the heavens. One was to protect her little sister, and the other was for revenge. She had never thought to give up either of these goals.

If she could cultivate for one year in the Sorcerer Holy Land and reach the Altering Muscle stage, then when she entered the Sorcerer Pagoda, Na Yi had faith that she could enter at least the fifth floor and break through to the Bone Forging stage inside the Sorcerer Pagoda.

Then, even if they didn't have horses, she had some assurance that she would be able to lead her little sister through the wild jungle.

But the major problem she was confronted with now was her lack of food. Her only solution was to kill the two Corrupt Wolves.

Na Yi was not a match for the Corrupt Wolves; so she made a crazy decision that seemed rational to her. She would use herself as bait, and lure a Corrupt Wolf into the Sorcerer Holy Land. Once there, she would utilize the traps within to kill it!

She knew that if she was to enter the Sorcerer Pagoda and enhance her strength, that it would be much easier to lure the two Corrupt Wolves into the traps. However, Na Yi was not willing to do so. She could not reconcile with the fact that because of these two Corrupt Wolves, she would have to waste her one chance at the smelting trial, the most important opportunity of her life.

She would make this one gamble!

Corrupt Wolves were scavengers that usually ate carrion. However, they would also eat living creatures. Na Yi took advantage of the time when one of the wolves went to look for live prey and lured the remaining one it. She would guide it to the traps and kill it!

But her gamble had already half failed from the start. She had underestimated the speed of the Corrupt Wolf, and had been seriously injured due to her own overconfident negligence.

The claw of a Corrupt Wolf was toxic!

A Corrupt Wolf ate carrion year round. Their bodies contained corpse gasses and corpse poison. Once scratched by them, one would be infected by the plague and die afterwards!

Now they were running out of food, and there was also another Corrupt Wolf outside. Having been scratched by a Corrupt Wolf, how could she escape death in this situation?

Na Yi bit her lips and pulled out a dagger strapped to her thigh. She threw it at her little sister and said, “Ah Shui, there are many books in the Holy Land’s Library. Look for some that don’t have much value and gather them here. Create a fire and heat up the dagger. Then, cut out the carrion toxin from my back wound…”

Hearing Na Yi say this, Na Shui was frightened out of her wits. She looked at the bloody wound on her big sister’s back. How could she do this!?

“Big Sister… Big Sister…”

“Quickly! The wolf claws are toxic, go before it’s too late!”

“I… I understand.” Na Shui clenched her teeth. She turned around and ran towards the Holy Land Library and gathered some worthless books there. Then, as Na Yi had said, she set that pile of books on fire and used it to heat the dagger.

With the dagger in her hand, Na Shui began to violently tremble. She was a gentle soul; she had never even killed a chicken. Now she must use this knife on her big sister’s back, and this knife was even blazing hot.

“Ah Shui, you can do it. I believe in you. If the corpse toxin spreads, then it will be too late!”

Na Yi tightly bit down on a piece of cloth, waiting for the harsh pain to come. If it wasn’t for the wound being on her back, then she would never have asked Na Shui to do this.

As Na Shui’s eyes flowed with tears, she tore away the clothes on her big sister’s back. There, she could see the wound oozing black blood. Indeed, it was just as Na Yi had said. The wolf’s claws were toxic.

Na Shui found her breath coming out in gasps. She didn’t want to do this, but she had to, otherwise her big sister would die.

Just as she began to swing her dagger down, Na Shui suddenly heard the sound of footsteps behind her. Startled, she jerked around, her dagger leading the way.

“Who is it?” Na Shui was already jittery; even the slightest sound frightened her.

But as she turned around and saw who it was, Na Shui suddenly froze in shock. Behind her stood a ragged young boy. Although he had a pitiable expression, there was a surge of confidence and a calm temperament between his brows.

Mo… Mo Lin…

Na Shui went slack, and then the tears down started falling down. If it wasn’t for the current situation, she would have rushed towards him and cried in joy. “Mo… Big Brother Mo, please, please can you save my big sister? She was poisoned by a scratch from a Corrupt Wolf!”

Na Yi also saw Lin Ming, and her heart was filled with an incredible amazement and relief. Mo Lin was still alive!?

How could this be? In Na Yanda’s records, Na Yanda had only stayed within the Divine Kingdom for a few hours. But Lin Ming had been inside for 7 days and 7 nights!

7 days and 7 nights… and he had actually returned safely?

Lin Ming looked at the wound on Na Yi’s back; the blood there was already starting to become a rancid black.

Lin Ming pressed his hand against Na Yi’s back, and a flux of true essence merged into Na Yi’s body. Lin Ming’s manipulation of true essence had already reached a degree of near perfection. Several thousand filaments of true essence wove into a net that covered the wound.

Puff!

A stream of black ichor began to pour out from Na Yi's back. In just a few minutes, Lin Ming had already completely forced out all of the toxins within Na Yi's body.

Then Lin Ming took out a small jade bottle from his spatial ring and sprinkled a handful of powder on Na Yi's back. This was top-tier quality healing medicine; one tael cost several hundred gold taels.

Lin Ming gave the small jade jar to Na Shui and said, "Apply this medicine on your big sister."

Na Yi was missing half of her clothes; Lin Ming felt it a little inconvenient to apply the medicine himself.

"Oh… okay." Na Shui whispered before rushing over to help her big sister apply the medicine. As she applied the medicine, she couldn't help but sneak peeks towards Lin Ming. The way that Lin Ming had forced out the poison from Na Yi's body a moment ago had left a profoundly deep impression within her young heart.

This scene was even more memorable then when Lin Ming had eliminated the monkey-faced man and the bald man, saving them.

She thought that Lin Ming was only proficient in his combat prowess. She hadn't expected that he would also have such a mysterious way of curing wounds.

Unknowingly, Lin Ming had already become an omnipotent figure within Na Shui's impressionable mind.

Once the medicine had been applied to the wounds, the pain in Na Yi's body was instantly lessened.

A moment later, she felt the wound itch a little. This itching feeling was only when a wound began to regenerate.

"What happened? Why is there a vicious beast here?" Lin Ming noticed the corpse of the Corrupt Wolf that was off in a corner. How did this strange vicious beast enter the Sorcerer Holy Land?

Na Shui dried her tears and explained the long and sordid matter to Lin Ming.

As Lin Ming listened, he felt some guilt and regret. He hadn't thought that he would have been in the life and death smelting trial for 7 days, and cause such a crisis for the two sisters.

Lin Ming took out barbecued meat, fresh fruit, and steamed buns from his spatial ring, giving these to Na Shui and Na Yi. "Everything's fine now. Eat a little first, and then we'll leave here."

One of the benefits of a spatial ring was that everything inside could maintain its freshness. No matter how long food was placed within, it would remain fresh, and never rot.

Na Shui stared at these delicious foods like a zombie, and unconsciously swallowed saliva.

These past days, the two sisters had been eating hard dry food; it was simply like chewing on wax. Not only that, but they could only eat a little every day, and they were always haunted by pangs of hunger.

Now with so many fresh and delicious delicacies placed in front of them, Na Shui's mouth had already started watering.

She rushed to hand a steamed barbecue bun to her sister, and also grabbed one for herself. She wanted to wolf the whole thing down, but remembering that Lin Ming was looking on from the side, she suddenly flushed red with embarrassment. Instead of taking a big bite from the barbecue bun, she only tore off a small piece.

In front of Lin Ming, Na Shui unconsciously maintained her girly image.

Lin Ming thought that was quite funny. He deliberately said, "You eat first, I'll go to the exit and have a look."

With that, he rose up. He wanted to go out and solve the problem of the Corrupt Wolf, but remembering the layers of traps within the Sorcerer Hold Land, he dismissed this idea. It was better to wait for Na Yi's wounds to heal and leave together.

Na Shui blushed. But this time she didn't care so much, and she ate in massive gulps.

Na Yi also ate a lot. The two sisters were indeed extremely hungry.

Chapter 187 – Eternal Flame

Chapter 187 – Eternal Flame

…

…

…

After the two sisters ate their satisfying meal together, Lin Ming pulled out another type of healing medicine and sprinkled it onto Na Yi's back. Under the combined effects of these two medicines, Na Yi's wound quickly mended without even leaving a scar.

Finding that Na Yi's upper clothes were completely torn apart, and that there was some improper scenery revealed, Lin Ming took out some old clothes from his spatial ring and tossed them towards Na Yi.

Afterwards, Lin Ming asked Na Yi, "Do you know if there are any peculiar thunders or fires within the Southern Wilderness? For instance…"

Lin Ming stretched out his hand and a garnet colored flame suddenly bloomed within his palm. The tongues of flame from this fire formed petals just like an exquisitely dangerous lotus.

Na Yi was shocked. This was the first time that she had ever seen a flower-shaped flame like this!

Although the flame was only the size of an egg, the heat waves that emanated from it were enough to cause her to step backwards several steps. The temperature of this flame was simply inconceivable.

Not only that, but when Lin Ming had been fighting the monkey-faced man, he hadn't even used this flame. That meant that he had been going easy on them!

For an Altering Muscle youth to fight against two peak Bone Forging martial artists and not even need to use their full strength was already an unimaginable level. To Na Yi, this youth was simply terrifying.

Mm… wait… how did Lin Ming's cultivation…

Na Yi's eyes widened; she suddenly wasn't able to sense Lin Ming's cultivation. For a martial artist in Body Transformation – and even most Houtian realm martial artists – they weren't able to restrict their true essence from emitting within their bodies. Because of this, it was often very easy to spot what level of cultivation someone was at. When true essence entered the organs, that was Viscera Training. When true essence entered the bones, that was Bone Forging.

There were even some martial artists whose aura was like a billowing bonfire, where commoners who had no martial arts cultivation were able to sense their awesome strength.

Only a martial artist who had cultivated to the realm of completing a true state, in which true essence was gathered in their entire body would be able to mask their cultivation. For instance, if they were an extremely formidable peak Houtian realm master like Qin Ziya, or a genuine Xiantian realm martial artist.

If they converged all of their true essence and aura into their bodies, then they would appear no different than a common person. Only someone whose cultivation was higher than them would be able to see the complete depths of their strength.

However, at this moment, Na Yi could only see the faintest true essence fluctuations within Lin Ming's body. If she didn't know him, then she should have assumed that he was a martial artist who had just started down the path of cultivation, an outright newly minted youth who wasn't even at the First Stage of Body Transformation.

"Mo Lin, your cultivation… how did you…"

Lin Ming paused for a moment; he immediately understood Na Yi's questioning doubts. He himself had only just discovered that after absorbing the reverse scale blood, there had been some bizarre changes to his true essence.

In the past when Lin Ming cultivated, whether it had been practicing the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' or swallowing the Blood Lingzhi to increase his blood vitality, or even using the Heretical God Seed to compress his true essence, all of it had been similar.

All of these were quantitative changes to his true essence. For instance, they would remove impurities and let his true essence become purer, or thicker, or even increase the density of his true essence through compression.

The nature of his true essence had never changed.

But now, after Lin Ming had stumbled into an accidental fusion with the reverse scale blood, his true essence was showing a qualitative change. This sort of change didn't happen overnight, rather it was slow process that happened over time.

Lin Ming couldn't confidently say to what end these changes would bring him to, but he was able to approximate that whatever changes that would occur would be to his greatest benefit. After all, the reverse scale blood was something that even the mighty elders in the Realm of the Gods would be jealous of. The bloodline of a True Dragon was certainly far superior to that of a human mortal.

Because his true essence had undergone a qualitative change, Lin Ming found that his ability to control and manipulate his true essence was growing. When he attempted to control his true essence, he found that he would unconsciously converge all of the true essence and aura within his body, and achieve a state similar to returning to one's origin. It could be said that he had achieved similar results through a different route.

Someone like Na Yi, who was only a martial artist at the Viscera Training stage, would never be able to comprehend Lin Ming's current cultivation.

Lin Ming grinned, no longer restraining his aura. His true essence emanated from him, and his cultivation of a peak Bone Forging martial artist presented itself to the world.

Na Yi suddenly gasped. She remembered that when Lin Ming had entered the Sorcerer Pagoda, he had only been at the early Altering Muscle stage. After stepping into the Divine Kingdom, his cultivation had actually been boosted to the peak Bone Forging stage. This was over a stage and a half of cultivation! What had Lin Ming been doing for these past seven days and seven nights?

Why had Na Yanda been inside for only a few hours, while Lin Ming had actually stayed within for a full seven days?

“You reached the peak Bone Forging stage so quickly…”

“Mm. I had a fortuitous encounter within the Divine Kingdom. My luck was good and I made a breakthrough. Ah, about that question I asked before, is there some sort of strange flame anywhere within the Southern Wilderness?” Lin Ming continued to press the question he had asked a moment ago.

Na Yi found it strange that Lin Ming was able to hide his cultivation. It couldn’t be that he had actually reached the realm of returning to his original state, could it? Regardless, after hearing that Lin Ming had returned from the Divine Kingdom, she stopped indulging in her ridiculous ideas, and said, “There should be. The Fire Worm Tribe uses a fire as their totem. Their tribe has a legacy flame. This flame is said to be eternal and is kept by the current ruling Shaman. I don’t know if this flame is the strange flame that you are looking for.”

“Mm? Eternal?”

Lin Ming was surprised. If there was an eternal flame, then that flame would be a Flame Essence!

‘The legacy of the Fire Worm Tribe is actually a Flame Essence! However, it’s in the control of the current Shaman. To obtain it is truly difficult!’

“How strong is the Fire Worm Tribe’s Shaman?” Lin Ming asked.

“I’m not sure.” Hearing the Fire Worm Tribe’s Shaman, Na Yi clenched her teeth. When the Fire Worm Tribe had invaded the Na Tribe, the Na Tribe’s Witch Queen had battled against the master powerhouse of the Fire Worm Tribe. Eventually, the Witch Queen had died under the Fire Worm Shaman’s hand!

“Mm? Do you have a grudge with the Fire Worm Shaman?” Lin Ming found that Na Yi was looking extremely ill, so he asked her.

Hate dripped from Na Yi’s voice as she said, “The Fire Worm Shaman killed my master, who was also my Na Tribe’s Witch Queen.”

“Oh, you haven’t thought of getting revenge?”

“I have, but that possibility is too far away. My master’s cultivation was already at the early Houtian realm, still, she was no match for the Fire Worm Shaman.”

“Really…” Lin Ming murmured. This Shaman’s strength should be a bit more than the middle Houtian realm. The middle Houtian realm was about the same cultivation as Muyi!

The Sky Fortune Kingdom had a population of tens of millions of people. Not counting the Seven Profound Martial House, there were only a few truly native Houtian realm martial artists. However, just the Southern Wilderness’ Fire Worm Tribe with a mere population of a million citizens, they actually had a middle Houtian realm martial artist!

‘The people of Sky Fortune Kingdom have always called those in the Southern Wilderness barbarians. But, this place is actually a crouching tiger, hidden dragon of masters. This is probably because of the legendary Sorcerer, who broke through the martial void and left behind a large number of relics and legacies. Not only that, but the Southern Wilderness also has countless vicious beasts. Martial artists here are always in danger, so it tends to increase their strength.

‘It’s impossible for me to defeat someone above the middle Houtian realm at the level I’m at, especially in a place like the Fire Worm Tribe with so many masters’

Although Lin Ming had defeated an early Houtian realm master within the sixth level of Sorcerer Pagoda’s life and death smelting trial, that was only because the luckiest moment had presented itself. The fight had dragged on and the Houtian realm master had lost his patience, which caused him to eat a loss.

Although he had suffered a small loss, it wasn’t a true defeat. If Yan Mo hadn’t appeared and the two had continued fighting, Lin Ming would most likely have lost.

With Lin Ming’s current strength, at best he could jump past a stage to fight a peak Pulse Condensation Period master. However, if he was to leap a realm and a half and go against a Houtian realm master, then he would be in trouble.

Facing a true early Houtian realm master, Lin Ming could only try to defend himself and preserve his life.

‘Since a middle Houtian realm mater is in charge of this eternal flame, it will have to wait for later. It’s fine if I don’t improve the Flame Essence for now, the Thunder Soul is much more important.’

After Lin Ming had absorbed Huo Gong’s Hollow Flame Essence, the Heretical God Seed’s Flame Essence had experienced a great period of growth. In comparison, the Thunder Soul was much weaker. Lin Ming’s most urgent need was to enhance the Thunder Soul with some form of special lightning.

With a fusion of the two, the power of Thunderfire Annihilation would improve.

Lin Ming asked, “Miss Na Yi, do you know where in the Southern Boundary I can find some special kind of thunder or lightning? For instance, like this…”

Lin Ming stretched out his finger and a thin arc of electricity sizzled from his fingertip and swirled around Lin Ming’s finger, just like it was a cute spiritual snake.

Na Yi's eyelids jumped. Just how many secrets did Lin Ming have?

"I don't know anything about special lightning or thunder."

"I see..." Lin Ming mumbled with some regret. Of course, the existence of rare naturally occurring thunder was much rare than strange flames.

At this moment, Na Yi suddenly said, "I don't know any areas that have special thunder, but I know that deep within the Southern Wilderness there is an area called Thundercrash Mountain. On Thundercrash Mountain there many different types of Thunder Lizards that spit out blue and white lightning. They are very ferocious creatures. On Thundercrash Mountain there is also a special kind of Thundergrass. Thundergrass over 100 years old is pretty valuable. Not even a Houtian master would rashly climb the mountain; at most they would pick some from around Thundercrash Mountain. I'm not too sure if this is the special thunder that you're looking for."

"Oh? Thundergrass?"

Lin Ming's mind stirred; he was somewhat interested in this Thundergrass. He just didn't know what was on Thundercrash Mountain. Since even Houtian realm masters did not dare to recklessly scale the mountain, then there must be some unknown perils there.

Lin Ming said, "I've got it. Let's leave now."

"Oh..." Na Yi hesitated for a moment, and then asked, "Mo Lin... you entered into the Divine Kingdom from the Sorcerer Pagoda, right? What did you experience there? How far high in the Divine Kingdom did you go?"

She had been curious, but also thought that just asking was a bit rude, so she hadn't until now.

Lin Ming smiled, "Oh, you know that the Divine Kingdom is separated into levels?"

“Mm. It’s recorded in the ancient texts. There are seven levels altogether, and they are guarded by the Eye of the Witch God. You’ve been gone for such a long time; did you at least reach the fifth level?”

Na Yi felt more and more that the truth of Lin Ming was unfathomable. Since he had passed seven days and seven nights in the Divine Kingdom, he should have gone farther than Na Yanda. Perhaps, he might even have been like the Feather Emperor from 6000 years ago, and gone to the fifth floor…

Na Yi didn’t dare to imagine any more than this. The Feather Emperor was already a legendary figure only spoken of in children’s tales. It was said his cultivation had surpassed the Xiantian realm, and the empire he had established in the Southern Wilderness was not inferior to any third-grade sect.

At that time, whenever the great masters and powerhouses of the mainland would hear the name of the Feather Emperor, they would run around in panic. Afterwards, the Feather Emperor was revered as a second god within the Southern Wilderness, and became one of the core figures within their spiritual belief. Even Na Yi’s master, the Witch Queen of the Na Tribe, would be respectful when mentioning the Feather Emperor, and their tribe had rituals where they would pay homage to the ancestral tablet of the Feather Emperor.

If Lin Ming was like this legendary man, didn’t that mean that later he would become a god or a saint? Would his power break past the Xiantian realm?

Was she personally witnessing the rise of a peerless master?

Chapter 188 – Na Shui's Thoughts

Chapter 188 – Na Shui's Thoughts

…

…

…

Listening to Na Yi's question, Lin Ming cracked a smile. He guessed the so-called Eye of the Witch God was Yan Mo.

He said, "Everything I experienced in the Divine Kingdom was an absolute mess. I did see the Eye of the Witch God there. There is a fortuitous chance within the Divine Kingdom; if you work hard, then there is a chance that you will be selected. If you do, then your power will grow by leaps and bounds."

Lin Ming didn't mention that he had passed the seventh floor; that would simply be too shocking for everyone.

"I… I can also go?" As Na Yi heard Lin Ming's words, her heart started to crazily beat within her chest. Day and night, she longed for strength. Not only did she want to get revenge for her parents, but she also wanted to rebuild her Na Tribe. If possible, she even wanted to avenge her master.

However, her master's enemy was a middle Houtian realm master; the distance between them was simply vast, to the point that she might never achieve this goal in her entire life!

But what if she was given the chance to go to the Divine Kingdom? That meant that she would become a master at least as powerful as Na Yanda!

She might even step into the Xiantian realm!

When that time came, regardless of the reconstruction of the Na Tribe or the death of all her enemies, it would all be simple!

Thinking this, Na Yu unconsciously clenched her fist. She wanted to become strong. Strong enough to control her own destiny!

There was a jumble of emotions as she looked at Lin Ming. Lin Ming hadn't said how many levels he had passed, however, Na Yi had a hunch that he must have at least reached the fifth level, or even surpassed His Majesty the Feather Emperor to enter into the sixth!

Those of the Southern Wilderness worshipped the brave heroes. Now there was a future hero standing right in front of her. Na Yi found it hard to keep her mood calm. She also understood that there was too large a gap between them; it was only wishful thinking to expect him to stay by her side and help her.

Only she could build her own destiny.

By now, the three of them had already arrived at the entrance to the Sorcerer Holy Land. Na Yi opened the transmission array and Lin Ming stepped out. It was just like Na Yi had said; there were four horse corpses lying not too far from the entrance, and two had been mostly eaten.

Because the weather of the Southern Wilderness was scalding hot and also extremely humid, the horse corpses had already started to rot away. There were masses of flies gathered around the four corpses – it was quite a disgusting sight.

After Lin Ming appeared, there was shaking in the bushes nearby. A Corrupt Wolf emerged, its green eyes shining as it stared at Lin Ming with hate and hunger.

Its mate had gone missing and couldn't be found no matter how much it called for it. Now its mood was extremely irritable, and it intended to shred any game that appeared in front of it.

Seeing this Corrupt Wolf, Na Shui paled. She unknowingly ducked behind Lin Ming. But Na Yi's expression didn't change. She knew that to Lin Ming, this Corrupt Wolf was nothing but an ant on the floor.

"Aawooo!"

The Corrupt Wolf madly howled, and then leapt forwards. It stretched out its sharp claws and slashed towards Lin Ming's throat.

Lin Ming sneered. He waved his hand and 100 vibrating true essence filaments issued forth and sunk into the Corrupt Wolf as if they were a hail of arrows.

Puff!

The Corrupt Wolf spat out a gob of black blood. Its organs already having been completely turned to mush by the vibrating true essence, it finally fell onto the ground like a dead dog. All of its bones were crushed to bits and it turned into a pile of rotten meat – immediately and violently killed.

"Dead… it's dead?" Na Shui was incredulous. She had guessed that Lin Ming would be able to easily kill the Corrupt Wolf, but she didn't think it was be easy to such a degree. He had only looked at the Corrupt Wolf and it had died!

What kind of strength was this?

Na Shui breathlessly looked up as Lin Ming filled the entirety of her vision, and admiration mixed with worship towards a hero filled her.

"Let's go."

Lin Ming said.

"Where are we going?" Na Yi asked.

“We’ll find a place where you can settle down, and then I will fulfill my end of the bargain. I will go to the Fire Worm Tribe and kill Chi Guda, and take revenge for your parents.”

Lin Ming would first eliminate Chi Guda, and then he would go to Thundercrash Mountain and see what sort of value this Thundergrass had. As for the tribal flame of the Fire Worm Tribe, he wasn’t in a hurry to take that.

“You’re going to kill Chi Guda now?”

Na Yi froze. Chi Guda’s cultivation was a half-step into the Houtian realm. Not only that, but there would certainly be many masters protecting him. Lin Ming was only at the peak Bone Forging stage. Although she knew that Lin Ming’s strength was amazing, this was still too big a risk to take!

After all, the difference between the Altering Muscle stage and the Bone Forging stage was far less than the difference between the Bone Forging stage and the Pulse Condensation Period.

She couldn’t help but say, “Mister Mo, I know that you are very strong, but Chi Guda is already a half-step into the Houtian realm…”

Lin Ming said, “It doesn’t matter. If there is an unexpected turn of events and something goes wrong, then I can easily escape. Let’s go.”

Before she could say anything more, Lin Ming had already turned around and started walking. Na Yi could only sigh and keep her thoughts to herself.

She could sense that Lin Ming was a very stubborn young boy; he wasn’t someone who would easily change his mind. Moreover, he was someone who would be a future god-like character. If he had the confidence to say he could, then he would have the ability to do so.

As Na Yi was thinking, she accidently caught a glimpse of her little sister. She actually saw her little sister looking at Lin Ming's back, her small face flushed red, and her eyes moving around as if she didn't know what she was thinking.

Na was stupefied, and then it suddenly dawned on her. Perhaps Na Shui liked Lin Ming.

When teenage girls hit puberty, they would often gain an interest in those of the opposite s*x. Of course, there was also the fact that Lin Ming had outstandingly handsome features, and he was powerful, and also had a sharp and calm personality. Not only that, but when Na Shui had been facing a crisis and had been drowning in despair, Lin Ming had appeared in front of her and easily resolved every single crisis. This would inevitably produce the feeling of worship towards Lin Ming from Na Shui, and she had unknowingly fallen deeply in love with him. Perhaps even she was not aware of her own feelings…

Na Yi sighed. There was simply too great a distance between her little sister and Lin Ming. However, she didn't want to interfere with her little sister's feelings, and she also didn't want to consider the difference in status between her and Lin Ming. She could only let nature take its course…

……………………

Fog Valley Tribe was a very common tribe within the countless large and small tribes of the Southern Wilderness. Its population was only at 4 or 5 thousand. It was located in a mountain valley, and in the early morning the valley would fill with a heavy fog, thus it had acquired its name.

Fog Valley Tribe was only 600 miles away from the Fire Worm Tribe. Ten years ago it had fallen to the Fire Worm Tribe, and was now a servant tribe to them. Its Tribal Chief had been slaughtered, and now their ruler was a Fire Worm man. Every year they would have to pay tribute in pigs, cattle, sheep, silks, wines, and minerals all to the Fire Worm Tribe.

Sometimes, they even had to send tributes of their beautiful women. Most tribes of the Southern Wilderness were matriarchal societies, and those in power were not permitted to create harems. However, there were patriarchal clans who did, such as the Fire Worm Tribe.

The Fire Worm Tribe’s chief, generals and shaman were all men, and they also had harems filled with countless beautiful women.

Fog Valley Tribe wasn’t too big. However, because they were located in the south near a nexus of key roads, there were usually many visitors that would come and go. There were many inns and restaurants and other facilities that were built in order to accommodate them.

Fog Mansion Inn was one of the bigger ones. Today, a young man with two young girls, all looking around 15 or 16 years old, had come to Fog Mansion Inn. The young man wore a bamboo hat and carried a saber on his back. He should be a martial artist. The two young girls wore veils, and one couldn’t see their faces. However, their figures were slim and elegant, so they were presumably beauties.

A waiter walked up to greet them with a welcoming smile. Although these three guests were young, according to the waiter’s experience in the field of hospitality, they were most likely some outstanding individuals of distinguished background. Therefore he was exceptionally attentive towards them.

In the Southern Wilderness, there were countless different ethnic tribes, all with their own varied customs. The servant knew that many of the men would wear bamboo hats and the women would wear veils, thus he didn’t care much about it.

He inwardly sighed with a bit of emotion at seeing such a young boy. This boy sure was lucky with women; he even had two little girls with great bodies following him.

“Customer, will you be staying at our inn?”

“Mm.” The bamboo hat youth was Lin Ming. He flipped a gold coin at the waiter and said, “Give me your best two rooms next to each other. Our horses are outside; feed them as well.”

When they arrived, they had already bought three good horses. Once they had made the preparations to kill Chi Guda, they would immediately leave Fog Valley.

Lin Ming didn't worry that anyone would follow or investigate them. Fog Valley Tribe was 600 miles from the Fire Worm Tribe. Not only that, but this was a key location between the traveling routes, and there were many people here that were visitors. Lin Ming and his little group were a common sight that wouldn't raise any suspicious.

The average person simply couldn't see through Lin Ming's cultivation. The two sisters Na Yi and Na Shui were also only at the Viscera Training stage, it couldn't be considered as too outlandish or unique. They had also covered up their appearances so that there wouldn't be any problems.

"Customer came at such a great time, this must truly be a heavenly coincidence. We just happened to have two of our best rooms remaining, and they are also next to each other. I will immediately prepare them for you."

As the waiter finished saying this, he led Lin Ming and the sisters to the rooms. Lin Ming looked inside. The rooms were clean and tidy. Satisfied, he nodded. This would do.

"Prepare some dishes for us, and a pot of tea."

"Customer wants tea?" The waiter hesitated and immediately smiled. "Customer must not have known. My Fog Valley's Fog Flower Wine is famous throughout the Southern Wilderness. Every year we present it as tribute to the Fire Worm Tribe. For all of the Fire Worm Tribe's banquets, they also use my Fog Valley's Fog Flower Wine."

"Oh? If it's like that, then bring me a jar of Fog Flower Wine." Lin Ming didn't care much. Although he didn't drink much, he had grown up in a restaurant, and had some experience with wine.

"Then I shall bring a jar of Fog Flower Wine. If I may recommend, we also have Valley Mud Frogs. Our Valley Mud Frogs are also very famous. Once you taste it, you will never be able to forget it.

"Mm. Okay."

Lin Ming didn't care what he ate. He placed his saber on the table and sat down with the two young girls. The waiter nodded and walked towards the kitchen.

However, after the Valley Mud Frogs and Fog Flower Wine were served and Lin Ming had a taste of them, he couldn't help but exclaim in delight. These truly were rare delicacies.

Na Shui also ate as if she really liked the taste. It was only that she had a veil covering her face, so it wasn't easy to eat; she could only slowly tear off small bits.

At this moment, there was suddenly the sound of rapid hoofbeats outside the inn. Lin Ming stood up and saw five riders atop five large red horses stop outside the inn. These five horses didn't have a single stray hair. They were over nine feet tall and had massive bodies. Their snorts were like thunder. They must have weighed over 2000 jins.

"Crimson Blood Horse?" Lin Ming recognized this horse. If this was the Sky Fortune Kingdom, these horses would cost 4 or 5 thousand gold taels!

However, it seemed that the Crimson Blood Horses from the Southern Wilderness were much cheaper.

One of the five leather armor-wearing riders dismounted from his Crimson Blood Horses. He was very tall, and carried a long spear on his back. He was very muscular, and walked with calm steps. His breath was long, and one could easily see that he was a master who had perfected the fundamental skills.

The other four people were much more ordinary. However, when they walked, they unconsciously revealed a murderous aura. This was obviously from them being hardened by their experiences, and the countless murders they had committed.

Chapter 189 – Fire Worm Military

Chapter 189 – Fire Worm Military

…

…

…

Lin Ming was able to instantly see their cultivation; four peak Bone Forging martial artists and one middle Bone Forging martial artist.

Such a combination of forces meant they were obviously not native to Fog Valley. Fog Valley only had several thousand people in total; how could there be so many masters within?

"Waiter, feed our horses well. If there's even a single hair missing, I will smash apart your store!" A martial artist wearing a bearskin roared as soon as he stepped in, his entire body leaking a killing aura.

Although this servant was a mere mortal that couldn't see cultivation, he was still able to recognize the wolf tassel on his hat. This was a symbol of the Fire Worm military!

Fog Valley had already been occupied by the Fire Worm Tribe. The Southern Wilderness was a slave society. Once a tribe was defeated, most of their population would be captured as slaves. But perhaps because the Fog Valley Tribe was too small, it had just managed to survive annihilation.

Now the Fog Valley business owners were even afraid of falling leaves hitting their heads. If they saw a Fire Worm member, it was as if they had seen an incoming death plague walking towards them.

Much less, right now these were people from the Fire Worm military. This was a force that they absolutely could not provoke. The waiter hastily bowed, groveling towards them.

“Give me 30 jins of Fog Flower Wine and all the best meat dishes you have!”

“Yes, yes, of course, immediately.” The waiter rushed out to fulfill the demands. The storekeeper was alarmed; he immediately walked up with an apologetic smile and poured water for them.

The inn wasn’t a large place. These Fire Worm military men were only separated from Lin Ming by a table.

“Haha! I haven’t exercised for two months. This time we can be the vanguard for the Big Boss, it’s time for us brothers to show just what we can do! Let’s do it well!” The rider with a long spear strapped to his back said.

As soon as Na Yi heard the words Big Boss, her hand which was holding chopsticks began to tremble. She turned her head to look towards these 5 men, and her complexion sunk.

“Mm? Is something wrong?” Lin Ming asked her with true essence sound transmission.

Na Yi replied, “These men are from the Fire Worm Tribe’s military. In the Fire Worm Tribe, the military men usually call the Great General their Big Boss. That is also Chi Guda!”

“Oh?” Lin Ming had a thoughtful smile. He hadn’t thought that he would have heard such valuable information after just arriving at Fog Valley. From the sounds of it, it seemed that this Chi Guda was planning on making an excursion. All he had to do was sit back and wait.

At this time, a wine jar was served. The martial artist dressed in bearskins broke opened the wax seal and poured a bowl full of wine. He smiled and said, “Heh, rest assured boss, when have we brothers ever lost face for you? Much less this time when we’re only scouting out a road. Us five could easily accomplish something like that.”

“Don’t flatter me. Blackwater Swamp is full of third-level vicious beasts. There are even fourth-level vicious beasts. Us brothers have to go in and pave the way. We are the vanguard that has to explore the damn swamp and seal all the quagmires, and find the best roads so that when the Big Boss’ army comes he’ll immediately be able to pass it.”

“The time is already getting late. The north isn’t a peaceful place; vicious beasts haunt the land and the road is dangerous at night. Although I’m not afraid of something like this, this mission is too important. If we lose our horses and are delayed, then it will do more harm than good. So we will rest here for a day and head out tomorrow, so that we can arrive at Blackwater Swamp by the evening time.”

The martial artist with a longer spear on his back slowly said as he drank a bowl of wine.

“Yes Boss.”

“Mm. This is also a rare time that we come out. Let’s look around for some fun. Tonight, we will eat well and drink well and look for women to relax ourselves. We can catch up on the road tomorrow, and we might even have to engage in a fierce battle at Blackwater Swamp in the evening. But I’ll lay down the rules first. You may look for women, but don’t mess around for the entire night so much that you can’t get up tomorrow.”

“Haha, Boss, with our brothers’ strength, even if we play around for an entire night we will still be bursting with energy the next day!” These people were Bone Forging martial artists. One evening without rest wouldn’t hinder them much.

“I hear that the women of Fog Valley have cherry lips and slender figures; I must try them tonight!”

As they talked about seeking women, the other riders all grew excited. They really had been suppressed in the army for too long.

Lin Ming was silently drinking. Although he wasn’t looking at these five riders, his soul force had already locked onto their bodies. He used a true essence sound transmission to ask Na Yi, “What rank are these people in the army?”

Na Yi said, “Two of them have wolf tassels on their hats. One wolf tassel is a captain of 100 men, two wolf tassels is a captain of 1,000 men, and three wolf tassels is a captain of 10,000 men. But there are also three people whose hats do not have any wolf tassels. Since their weapons are swords, they are probably some kind of personal bodyguards.”

Normally, someone from the army would not use a sword in battle. They would often use a spear or a lance. Although a sword had various styles, its striking power was still inferior to a spear. This was especially true for group warfare. Mostly it was only bodyguards who used swords.

“Oh? Then there are two captains that lead 10,000 mean as well as three master bodyguards.” Lin Ming noticed that the two people had three wolf tassels on their hats.

A peak Bone Forging martial artist was appointed as a captain of 10,000 men. This was the exact same rank that one would have with that cultivation in the Sky Fortune Kingdom!

Tie Feng was also someone at the peak Bone Forging stage, and he too was struggling to become a captain with a unit of 10,000.

A mere Fire Worm Tribe with just a million or so people actually had a military establishment that wasn’t inferior to the Sky Fortune Kingdom. The people of the Southern Wilderness were truly brave and fierce.

Moreover, looking at these five individuals, just the way they spoke naturally exuded an insufferably arrogant aura, as if they looked down on everything else before them in disdain, and were immeasurably c*cky and self-assured of their own abilities. Their billowing aura originated from their vast experiences in battle and the countless enemies they had triumphed over, as they cut them down in cold blood. Such a solider would never put an enemy in their eyes. They did not rely on tactics or formations to win. Instead, they would bravely rush forward, shredding everything in their way!

After experiencing so many life and death battles and constantly flirting with destruction, even though they didn’t study any profound martial arts cultivation methods, in terms of killing power they were probably much stronger than a martial artist of the same level who had come from a Martial House!

Someone who was able to command these troops must be the master of a tiger!

As Lin Ming imagined all of these fanciful thoughts, he suddenly discovered that the several soldiers were repeatedly glancing towards their table, especially creeping their vision upon Na Yi and Na Shui's bodies.

They had started with just looking, but their gazes became increasingly wanton and unscrupulous, and a faint hint of lustful greed began to cloud their eyes.

Lin Ming frowned, but he didn't move against them. After all, they were just looking and hadn't done anything either. The main person that Lin Ming wanted to kill was Chi Guda; he didn't want to stir up unnecessary trouble before then.

However, Lin Ming's patience began to gradually be worn down. These soldiers were simply becoming too dissolute, their stares and innuendos increasingly aggressive. As they drank more wine, they began to loudly discuss Na Yi and Na Shui's bodies, their words base and utterly depraved.

"Boss, you said you wanted to look for women, but brothel women aren't that interesting. The best types are those girls from respectable families."

"Hehe, Those two little girls' skin is so nice, and they have good figures. Their faces are covered but they must be two little hotties."

"Their age is no more 16 years old. If we bring them to bed, that will definitely be a fresh experience."

"These two little chicks have some martial arts cultivation; it's pretty good for their age. But that young boy at their side looks like some useless trash that's never held a knife. Ah, such a waste." After Lin Ming had fused with the reverse scale blood, he had unconsciously reached a realm similar to one returning to their most natural state. These soldiers simply could not see Lin Ming's cultivation. Of course, even if they did, they wouldn't have even cared for him. After all, they were four peak Bone Forging and one middle Bone Forging stage martial artists.

"He looks like a playboy from some family, though I don't know what tribe he is from. Hehe, I love stepping these young playboy masters underneath my boot. That is what I like."

Many of these soldiers had relied on their own strength to crawl up from the most basic of military units. What they most despised were these rich playboy types.

These people were real powers within the military. Even if it were the young playboys and juniors of the Fire Worm Tribe, they still wouldn't place them within their eyes, much less this little boy in front of them who wasn't even from their Fire Worm Tribe. They didn't know what tribe wore veils and bamboo hats, but regardless of what tribe it was, these men had no scruples and would savagely beat anyone that got in their way, regardless of origin. The Fire Worm Tribe's military was famous throughout the entire Southern Wilderness; they wouldn't care even if one was a young prince or princess of a small tribe.

Although they weren't afraid, these people still only spoke sexually harassing words and still hadn't done anything. They still drank their wine and laughed and joked around as before.

"Storekeeper, give us 5 of your top rooms! Also, go to 10,000 Flowers Hall and call down 5 girls for us. I want the best girls there are!" The rider dressed in a bearskin boisterously said as he threw over a piece of gold.

The storekeeper hurriedly took it, and looked extremely pained as he said, "Several army sirs, it's really unfortunate but our best rooms have already been taken. There are still some rooms left over… if you would like to take a look…"

"F*ck! You want to prepare a damn pigsty for this father!?" The bearskin man pounded his fist against the table and the tiles on the floor underneath it immediately shattered.

However, the table was still fine. The storekeeper's eyes almost popped out of his face, and his neck shriveled like a retreating turtle, his entire body going cold with fear.

He held no doubts that these fellows were murderers that could kill someone as easily as cutting grass. If he didn't serve them well, then the destruction of his store would be a light punishment. Even killing him wouldn't be too surprising.

It had to be known that Fog Valley was territory under the Fire Worm Tribe's complete control. The social customs and cultural attitudes of the Southern Wilderness were extremely brutal; what they respected and revered the most was strength. There were small tribes that were able to exist under the shadow of larger tribes. But, once these large tribes decided to dominate the surrounding areas, then they were nothing but twigs to be crushed. A defeated tribe had no right or ability to make any decisions, and their tribe's people would also degenerate into outcasts and slaves.

The storekeeper didn't want to offend these five death gods. His eyes rapidly shifted as he said, "We just had two of our best rooms that were reserved by our guests at that table over there. I really do not have any means to..."

As the storekeeper said this, the Fire Worm military men immediately cast their eyes over to Lin Ming's table. Lin Ming deeply frowned. The storekeeper had actually deliberately directed the trouble towards them. This was simply reckless! He hadn't wanted to stir up any trouble, but now it looks like he actually had to fight.

'If this shop is destroyed, then it would entirely be brought upon you by yourself!'

The five men listened to the storekeeper speak and immediately smiled. The bearskin man repugnantly grinned as he said, "Haha, since it's like this, you should have said so sooner. Hey, you two beauties, how about you come and stay with us a bit? We'll have fun. I promise you that you will live comfortably."

Na Shui immediately paled as she listened to these men sexually harass her. However, Na Yi was calm as she cheekily sneered.

‘These fellows are such idiots, they really are courting death.’

Chapter 190 – Samsara Martial Intent

Chapter 190 – Samsara Martial Intent

…

…

…

Na Shui immediately paled as she listened to these men sexually harass her. However, Na Yi was calm as she cheekily sneered.

‘These fellows are such idiots, they really are courting death.’

Lin Ming’s fingers traced the treasure saber that was on the table. This was the medium-grade human-step treasure saber that Huo Gong had left behind after his untimely demise. Lin Ming had decided to use it as a temporary weapon in order to deceive the world. When he would assassinate Chi Guda, he would do so with a spear. Lin Ming didn’t want anyone to find clues tracing back to him because of the weapon he used.

Lin Ming sent a true essence sound transmission to Na Yi, “I had just wanted to listen in on them to get some information on Chi Guda, but it seems that’s not going to be happening anymore. How would you like me to punish them?”

Na Yi’s icy gaze swept across the five soldiers with a heartless killing intent. She frostily said, “If possible, I hope that Mister Mo can kill all of them.”

Lin Ming was shocked. Good heavens, this little girl was sufficiently ruthless. But today, if he didn’t do anything, then these soldiers would most likely go on to rape other girls in the future. The Fire Worm Tribe was a wholly barbaric group of people that even ate humans; rape wasn’t considered much to them.

If they would ever rape young girls in the future, then killing them all now would only be a form of mercy.

“If we fight here, then we’ll have to leave Fog Valley afterwards.” Lin Ming said.

“I do not have to stay here, a change of scenery is just fine. These Fire Worm Tribe soldiers are all criminals that know only how to commit atrocious deeds. If they can be promoted to a position in the army where they can lead others, then they have done things that are deserving of death!”

The method in which the Fire Worm Tribe raised their soldiers was heinous and cruel; the way they trained their soldiers were no different than training a pack of vicious beasts. All of this was done in order to keep their most basic animal instincts intact, so that they would be invincible and all-conquering, being able to grasp victory in any situation.

Na Yi felt only bone-deep hatred for the entire Fire Worm Tribe. One year ago, they had conducted a complete genocide of her Na Tribe, burnt and looted her town, raped and pillaged; there was simply no end to their evil deeds. A large number of the Na Tribe commoners had been turned into slaves, and there were even those that were eaten alive.

That’s why today, as Na Yi faced these five Fire Worm soldiers, she wished that they would all suffer cruel and miserable deaths.

Lin Ming saw Na Yi’s resentment-filled glare and said, “I understand. This is fine, I just happened to want to ask them about Chi Guda’s whereabouts.”

The 5 Fire Worm soldiers saw Lin Ming touch his saber and revealed gloating smile. “Boss, this boy is interesting. He actually dares to touch his saber in front of us. This playboy is so damn stupid, can he not see our cultivation?”

The man with a spear on his back said, “These playboys are used to being domineering and lawless within their own little tribes, there isn’t anything strange about this. Since the girls wear masks, telling from their attire they might be from the Orchid Nun tribe. Hehe, how amusing, an aristocrat from such a small tribe actually dares to be so rampant within our land. Let’s play around with this boy and beat him up until all his teeth are gone. We’ll call those two little girls over and see if they are then willing to give themselves up to rescue their young master, haha!”

“Boss, this is a great idea. With their young master in our hands, those two girls will not dare to resist us, haha.”

Several soldiers laughed as they stood up. They didn’t take out their weapons, and simply walked towards Lin Ming unarmed.

The innkeeper saw this and went ghastly white. He wasn’t worried about the safety of Lin Ming’s group, but rather feared that his tables and chairs would be smashed apart. He only hoped that these three wouldn’t try to resist, lest his inn be ruined.

At the moment, there weren’t many visitors eating meals within. They had seen that something was wrong, and immediately got up and scurried out, so as not to be affected by any potential fallout, or caught in a possible spell of bad luck. Even the waiter had run away, leaving the innkeeper all by himself. The innkeeper had ran to the second floor for fear of being accidently killed by some stray blow.

“Little boy, this is the wrong place and time for you to be an aristocratic junior. You actually came to our territory and acted so arrogantly, you are so damn stupid. If you know what to do, then kneel on the ground, bow down three times, and give us those two girls for us to enjoy this evening. If you do so, then we’ll let you keep your dog life.”

As the bearskin soldier said that, he reached out to grab Lin Ming’s arm. In his opinion, this playboy young master had only just started practicing martial arts – it would be child’s play to remove his arm.

But as he touched Lin Ming, Lin Ming’s aura suddenly changed!

His restrained breath and vague true essence fluctuations instantly billowed into this sky, directly piercing the horizon. A surge of Dragon Yang Qi erupted from Lin Ming’s body. The bearskin soldier instantly heard a horrifying sound within his ears, it was the roar of dragons and tigers. Even though he had fought in many battles and had a firm will and resolute mind, after hearing this dragon's roar, his entire body started trembling, as his heart began to swell with a fear that came from the very depths of his soul.

"Xiong Tou, quickly dodge!" The eyes of the spear-wielding soldier flashed and he instantly felt as if something was wrong. He flourished his spear and rushed towards Lin Ming, but at this moment, he suddenly slowed his steps. He saw that Lin Ming had gripped the bearskin soldier's neck. That Xiong Tou who was usually fearless in battle seemed to have turned dumb and let the young boy grab him.

The spear-wielding soldier frowned, and he stopped. He suddenly realized that they had really stepped in sh*t today. What was going on… how come a master like this suddenly appeared in Fog Valley? Not only that, but they had probed this boy's cultivation just a moment ago, and they had clearly seen he was new to martial arts. Now his cultivation had experienced a dramatic rise to the peak of Bone Forging!

Although he wore a bamboo hat, the soldier was able to roughly estimate that he was no more than 20 years old. This kind of age with this kind of cultivation was very unusual! Also, he was skilled in some sort of mystical witchcraft technique, otherwise there would be no way for Xiong Tou to instantly lose all bodily response and so easily fall into the enemy's hands. Dealing with an enemy like this who was so skilled in these subversive skills was the most difficult.

The spear-wielding soldier's face sank as he said, "Friend, let go of my brother, and we shall consider this matter today as settled. Although I don't know how you concealed your cultivation or what sort of secret skills you have, right now your cultivation is about the same as me. We have five people, and you are only one, and you also have two little girls following you. It wouldn't be good if they were to be accidentally injured."

Lin Ming remained unmoved. He still gripped the bearskin soldier's neck like before. The bearskin soldier had tried to respond, but it was as if he was a little mouse that had been bitten by a predatory serpent. Lin Ming's hand was already pressed against his Life Gate, and true essence had penetrated his body. With a single thought from Lin Ming, he would simply drop dead.

The bearskin soldier's forehead was already seeping with sweat. He couldn't even slowly move his fingers towards the saber that he had behind him.

The spear-wielding soldier saw that his threats didn't work, and coldly said, "Let him go at once! Do not think that I am afraid of you. I've also seen witchcraft similar to this. Not only does this witchcraft consume an enormous amount of soul force, but it also cannot be used on many people at once..."

Before the spear-wielding soldier finished speaking, he saw that Lin Ming seemed to be smiling, and then he heard a cracking sound. Xiong Tou's head was bent at a weird angle, as his body slid to the ground like jelly.

"Xiong Tou!" The spear-wielding man's eyes turned red with fury, "You fucking court death!"

"Kill him! All together!" The spear-wielding man roared. The three other soldiers behind him saw that their brother had died, and blood instantly rushed to their heads. Together, they rushed at Lin Ming.

"You can all die!" Lin Ming revolved all of the true essence within his body and with a single step, he suddenly burst into Golden Roc Shattering the Void. To him, distance had lost all meaning. He appeared like a ghost behind the sword-wielding soldier, a punch rocketing towards his side!

The soldier had experienced countless life and death situations on the battlefield. His reaction speed was much quicker than that of a martial artist who only cultivated martial arts. His response wasn't decided by the brain; it was the reflexive instinct of the body!

He slashed out his swords towards Lin Ming's fist, his eyes filled with a manic look. He wanted to cut open Lin Ming's sword hand!

But at this moment, an unimaginable scene took place.

Lin Ming’s closed fist became an open claw that grabbed the sword. With a tug, the soldier was viciously pulled over. Lin Ming raised his knee and slammed it against the soldier’s abdomen!

Peng!

The power of Flow like Silk erupted, and vibrating true essence filaments instantly broke into the soldier’s organs. They vibrated within his body so intensely that even his leather armor began to crack!

The soldier didn’t even have time to cough. Blood exploded from all the orifices of his head and he instantly died on the spot!

“Third!! Ahhh!” The spear-wielding soldier’s eyes had turned blood red. His whole body began to emit a murderous aura that soared to the heavens. He had already gone insane! He swept out his arm, wanting Lin Ming to be cut in half by his spear. However, Lin Ming actually grabbed onto where the spear shaft and spearhead met! In that moment, the spear he was holding seemed to be an unyielding statue, and he wasn’t able to move it one bit!

“Die!”

Another sword-wielding soldier seized this opportunity to swing his sword towards Lin Ming’s neck. However, Lin Ming reacted as if he had eyes on the back of his head. He turned around and easily grabbed that sword, then pushed it downwards. Lin Ming pulled on the long spear, and that long spear thrust towards the sword-wielding man’s chest!

The spear pierced him and then pulled back out. The sword-wielding soldier began to violently tremble.

Puff!

A torrent of blood blasted out several feet, conveniently splashing onto the face of the spear-wielding soldier.

The spear-wielding soldier looked at his hands, eyes glazed over and completely lifeless. The spear that was used to pierce the heart of his brother was actually in his grasp...

He had never even dreamed that this would ever happen, where he would be completely unable to resist such an oppressive force. It had crushed his heart's arrogance, cruelty, and the faith he had in himself.

At this moment, the final soldier rushed towards Na Yi and Na Shui, a grimly determined expression on his face. He knew that the only way he would have even a slim chance of survival was by capturing these two women!

However, just as that grim determination had appeared, it was forever frozen as it was. The world around him instantly fell away as everything became dark. All he could see was a massive black tornado in front of him. He was unable to resist the stifling power of this vortex and was gradually sucked towards it.

Then, the scenery changed again. He had inexplicably returned to when he was young. However, this experience of his youth was completely different to what he remembered. It was an absolutely bizarre feeling, as if he was seeing his own past lives.

One after another, endless scenes began to rapidly revolve through his mind, converging, dividing. He saw countless phantoms of himself. He saw himself freshly dressed and happy upon a horse. He saw himself huddled on a street corner. He saw his life as he made rapid achievements, and he also saw himself begging for mercy for his own life.

After experiencing countless Samsaras, he still hadn't found one that was the true him. The intricate webs of confusing memories were like a profound tide that plunged into his spiritual sea; the severe pain caused him to wish for death.

"Ahh!"

The sword-wielding soldier emitted a horrifying scream, filled with despair. His spiritual sea was twisted by that swirling black vortex and completely shattered into shards, leaving only echoing fragments within the broken remnants of his spiritual sea.

‘Just who am I?

‘Who…?’

Chapter 191 – Drain Your Soul

Chapter 191 – Drain Your Soul

…

…

…

The sword-wielding soldier stopped a mere two feet away from Na Yi. However, Na Yi had the same calm look as before, without the slightest hint of panic. She saw the handle of the blade tremble. The eyes of that sword master had already become glassy and vacant, lifeless; it was obviously impossible for him to attack her.

She didn't know what Lin Ming had done a moment ago. With just a look, he had caused the enemy's spiritual sea to collapse, and turned him into a complete vegetable!

This man that had gone stupid was not some dog or cat, but was a battle-hardened soldier of the Fire Worm Tribe, whose cultivation was at the middle Bone Forging stage. He had fought in countless battles, and his discipline and will were tempered finer than iron.

What kind of power was this?

Lin Ming had already repeatedly given her soul-shaking surprises. Every time that Na Yi had thought she had guessed the limit of Lin Ming's strength, she quickly discovered that she was completely wrong. Concerning Lin Ming, there was only one word to describe him – unfathomable.

The soldier had already dropped his sword. In his current eternally listless state, he was as good as dead.

Lin Ming looked at this soldier who had lost his mind. The black swirling vortexes within his pupils began to wind down. This vortex could only be seen by someone who had been drawn into the 100 Samsaras.

After comprehending the Samsara martial intent, Lin Ming found that this sort of martial intent could be used for more than tempering his heart of martial arts; it could also be used in a direct spiritual attack.

By using the power of the Samsara within both his eyes, he could suck the other's soul into the 100 Samsaras. If they were to lose themselves in the myriad fragments of memories, then their spiritual sea would disintegrate within them.

Of the five soldiers, there was only the spear-wielding soldier left. He was the boss of the five.

As he saw the three corpses on the ground, and the sword-wielding soldier whose eyes had lost all signs of life, his heart began to tremble. From the time when Lin Ming had crushed the neck of the bearskin soldier, to the time that he had made the sword-wielding soldier turn into an idiot with just a glance, the whole process had only taken the time of two blinks. In those two blinks of time, out of five Bone Forging martial artists, four of them had already been defeated!

Was this boy a demon?

The soldier laid down the spear in his hands. He stared at Lin Ming with indifference in his eyes. He knew that today, he could no longer run or hide. In front of such a person, he simply didn't have the qualifications to escape.

The innkeeper who had been hiding in the second floor of the inn was already scared silly. Now, he slumped down in exhaustion against a column on the second floor, his crotch already wet from fear. His mind echoed over and over with one thought, with this many Fire Worm soldiers dead in his inn, he was definitely dead!

“Boy, you are certainly ruthless. My skills are inferior to yours, and I acknowledge that I am dead! However, even if you kill us, do not think of living! Sooner or later the Big Boss will come and look for you, and then exterminate your entire tribe! When that time comes, he will cut you into pieces and make soup out of you!”

Lin Ming carelessly threw away the spear in his hands. He laughed and said, “Where is your Big Boss? There’s no need for him to look for me. I was just thinking of paying a visit to him.”

As he spoke, his true essence had already formed a barrier around them, isolating all sound.

The spear-wielding man’s face suddenly changed, and he felt as if a chilly block of ice had been dropped in his stomach. Of course, why would someone of such superior skill come to a small place like Fog Valley for no reason at all? He was here for the Big Boss!

While his strength appeared to be at the peak Bone Forging stage, his true cultivation might be at the peak Houtian realm, and he would therefore be able to conceal his cultivation, since he would have reached the realm of returning to his true self!

Realizing this, the spear-wielding man already knew that there was no more hope for him to live. His life would end as soon as the interrogation was over. He clenched his teeth. If this was the way it was, then he would abandon his meridians and commit suicide!

Lin Ming’s soul force had already locked onto the spear-wielding man’s body. As soon as he found that there was a change in his true essence, he coldly snorted and thrust out a palm towards the spear-wielding man’s chest.

Pulse Cutting Palm!

The domineering true essence plunged into he man’s body, destroying all of his meridians. The gun-wielding man stuffily coughed and fell to the ground. The severe pain that wracked his body made him pale.

He wanted to revolve his true essence, but to his amazement and dread, he found that his body was simply like a deflated balloon; he couldn't summon the least bit of true essence. His voice shook with alarm and fear as he asked, "You… what have you done to me?"

"I've wasted your martial arts." Lin Ming callously said.

"Wasted my martial arts… you've wasted my martial arts… ha… haha!" The spear-wielding man laughed as if he had a mental disorder. Since he had felt the pain in his meridians, he knew that what Lin Ming said was true. As far as a soldier and martial artist were concerned, wasting their martial arts was much worse than killing them.

Lin Ming didn't care what the spear-wielding man was thinking. He picked him up and told Na Yi and Na Shui behind him, "Let's go."

"Okay." Na Yi quickly followed. Na Shui was also in a trance. Every time she saw Lin Ming make a move, she felt goosebumps rising all over her.

No matter if it was when he had dealt with the bald man or the corrupt wolf, or even dealing with these five wicked soldiers, there had never been a fight. He was simply an overwhelming force that crushed and killed all before him!

This mind-boggling strength left a profound impression upon Na Shui.

"Ah Shui, let's go."

"…Okay." Na Shui froze for a moment before she moved. Lin Ming had already walked out of the inn.

He bluntly took the five soldiers' Crimson Blood Horses and threw the spear-wielding soldier over one of their backs like a dead dog. Then, he leapt on the horse.

The Crimson Blood Horse was indeed worthy of its name. This famous horse was quite clever. It didn't recognize Lin Ming as its master, and after Lin Ming jumped on it, it reared backwards to fling him off.

Lin Ming coldly snorted and clamped both his legs down. The Crimson Blood Horse felt a strong pressure being applied to it. It couldn't withstand this force, and almost fell in a kneeling gesture.

The Crimson Blood Horse let out a whining sound, and no longer dared to resist.

Lin Ming didn't think that such a beast would be so difficult. He looked at the Na sisters and said, "You ride this horse."

Lin Ming pulled off the soldier and jumped on another horse. Na Yi and Na Shui leapt up onto the Crimson Blood Horse. This time, the Crimson Blood Horse didn't resist.

Like this, the group of four rode the two horses away.

The Crimson Blood Horse was very fast. They were several times faster than a person running at full speed. In an hour, they came to a jungle 100 miles out. The Southern Wilderness was vast, and the terrain was very complex. Once someone entered the jungle, it would be very hard to look for them. Even an army would find it difficult to find someone.

After Lin Ming arrived at a glade, he threw the soldier onto the ground like a knapsack. He turned to Na Yi and said, "You two, look for some soft mud and spread it on the Crimson Blood Horses. The red color is simply too visible out here."

"Mm. Alright." Na Yi said.

Lin Ming turned to the soldier. He had many questions he wanted to ask him. Not only did he want to know about Blackwater Swamp, but he also wanted to know Chi Guda's purpose for leaving. And, most importantly, he wanted to find some information on the eternal flame of the Fire Worm Tribe. Lin Ming wanted to make sure that it was a true Flame Essence, and wanted to also know the real strength of the Fire Worm Shaman.

To Lin Ming, the most interesting part of the Fire Worm Tribe was this eternal flame.

But seeing the soldier's jeering face, Lin Ming realized that it wouldn't be so easy to extract this information from him.

This desperado was usually one of the most difficult characteristics to deal with. Even under torture it would be difficult to pull anything from his mouth.

Lin Ming took out a dagger from his spatial ring. He squatted down in front of the soldier and said, "I have several things I want to ask you. If you are willing to answer, then I will let you go."

"Let me go? Haha!" The soldier bawdily laughed as if this were the funniest joke that he had ever heard. "I don't even want to live. Why would I need you to release me? This father has killed countless people in his lifetime. Dying now is just fine!

"You take out a little dagger to torture me, and you think this will work? How funny. When this father was tormenting others you were still sucking on your mother's tit! You want this father to tell you where the most excruciatingly painful places are on the human body? Would you like this father to tell you just how to make someone beg for death?"

The soldier arrogantly smiled. However, as he smiled and laughed, his amused expression began to crack. It was as if the soldier had seen something abjectly terrifying, and he paled.

At this moment, in front of him, both of Lin Ming's eyes had turned into immeasurably deep, black vortexes.

The corners of the soldier's mouth began to twitch, and with a sudden pitiful scream he rolled onto the floor. In just half an incense stick of time, the soldier had been turned into a sweaty mess, unable to even climb up. He had seen countless confusing visions in his mind. It was as if an endless number of knives had twisted into his brain, feeling this pain made him wish he was dead.

"How did that taste? I don't need you to tell me how to make someone beg for death; I have my own ways of torturing someone."

Lin Ming had gone extremely easy on him. If he had displayed the full power of the Samsara martial intent, then this commanding soldier would have already turned into a blathering idiot.

The soldier couldn't smile anymore. That fearful soul-wrenching pain a moment ago had made him wish for immediate death.

Lin Ming's lips curved upwards in a malicious grin; he looked just like a smiling devil. The soldier felt his heart go cold. The most horrible sight was Lin Ming's eyes. He had no pupils. Rather, there was nothing but black spiraling vortexes, as if there was an endless void within him.

"You... what did you just do?" The soldier had lost all of his composure. In his opinion, this youth in front of his was no longer human.

"Nothing. I just drained a part of your soul." Lin Ming leisurely said. "Every human has a soul. After we die, the soul goes onto reincarnation. However, if the soul is lost, then it will be annihilated, and you will not be able to be enter the Samsara. You just saw the images right? That is your soul's memories of its past lives' Samsara. I will give you one more opportunity. If you insist on not speaking, then I will drain your soul and your mind, so that you will not enter the Samsara!"

Lin Ming was just making random stories up to scare him. But his words were just like the whispers of a devil. Once the soldier heard them, he was scared out of his mind.

The people of the Southern Wilderness had religious beliefs. In the tribe, the theocracy was often stronger than the kings or lords of the tribes. A tribe's highest leader was often a Shaman, Witch God, or Sorcerer Envoy, but it was never the chief.

The belief of reincarnation was firmly ingrained within the hearts of the people.

"What nonsense! You think that I'd believe that?" The soldier put on a brave front, but inside he was cowering in fear.

"Believe it or not, what is your choice?" Lin Ming wickedly smiled. His pupils had turned entirely into the black swirling vortexes like before, slowly spinning around. They simply did not look like human eyes.

Chapter 192 – Lost Vermillion Bird

Chapter 192 – Lost Vermillion Bird

…

…

…

"Believe it or not, what is your choice?" Lin Ming wickedly smiled. His pupils had turned entirely into the black swirling vortexes like before, slowly spinning around. They simply did not look like human eyes.

Seeing those fathomless eyes, the soldier felt a trembling from the depths of his soul. Lin Ming had said that his soul would be annihilated and he would not be able to enter the cycle of Samsara and reincarnation. The soldier was afraid he wasn't lying. He did not fear death, because he believed that once a human died, they would be reincarnated. 18 years from now, he would still be a man.

But to be annihilated forever and not enter Samsara? That was something he was afraid of.

That could be considered the truest form of death, a complete destruction. It must be the highest level of punishment even among demons.

He thought that Lin Ming might be lying, but the he recalled that soul-tearing pain from a moment ago, as if a part of his soul was being pulled out.

Along with the countless lifetimes of memories that he had seen of his Samsara, the soldier didn't dare to make this bet. If what he said was really true…

Moreover, he had already lost all of his martial arts. Even if he died and didn't say anything, what good would come of that?

Thinking this, the soldier began to hesitate.

"Well how about it, have you given it some thought?" Lin Ming asked, smiling.

The soldier took a deep breath, the corners of his mouth twitched. He closed his eyes and said, "Ask your questions. I will answer them."

"Mm. Very good."

....

Lin Ming quickly asked his questions and was able to get the answers he wanted. He was able to mostly confirm that the eternal flame was indeed a Flame Essence.

The Fire Worm Shaman who controlled the eternal flame had a cultivation at the middle Houtian realm.

As for the reason that Chi Guda was going to Blackwater Swamp, he had two. His first goal was to completely destroy the Blackmarsh Tribe that was located at the edge of Blackwater Swamp.

The Blackmarsh Tribe was only a small tribe. Originally their tribe had about 20,000 people. But ten years ago, the Blackmarsh Tribe had discovered a vein of Profound Iron Ore. Because of this, they were able to rapidly expand. These years they had many foreigners that had joined them, and their population had ballooned to around 40 or 50 thousand.

Before the Na Tribe had been destroyed, the Na Tribe and the Fire Worm Tribe were the two major tribes that were kept in mutual balance with each other. Both tribes didn't want to see the other grow stronger. Because of this, the Blackmarsh Tribe had been able to carve out a place where it could exist. As long as it presented a tribute of darksteel to both tribes every year, then they would be safe.

However, one year ago, the Na Tribe had been exterminated, and the balance in the region had been broken. Some of the smaller nearby tribes had already been completely swallowed by the Fire Worm Tribe. They could do what they wanted when they wanted.

The Blackmarsh Tribe with the Profound Iron Ore was the juiciest target. The Fire Worm Tribe planned on conquering the Blackmarsh Tribe and using their people as slaves in order to mine the Profound Iron Ore. The ore would be sent to the Fire Worm Tribe in order to be refined into a massive number of weapons that could lay down the future for their tribe to dominate the Southern Wilderness.

The first reason for Chi Guda to be at Blackwater Swamp was of no surprise to Lin Ming. However, the second reason left him aghast.

Besides conquering the Blackmarsh Tribe, Chi Guda also came out to search for a Vermillion Bird.

A Vermillion Bird was a Saint Beast that was only inferior to a God Beast. It also had a deep relationship with the Phoenix.

In the ancient legends of this world, there were tales of some God Beasts like the True Dragon, True Phoenix, and Golden-winged Roc.

However, a God Beast was an incomparably rare and loft existence. Let alone the Sky Spill Continent, they would be rare even within the Realm of the Gods. When that mighty elder had first created the ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’ movement technique, it had been after a fortuitous encounter where he had witnessed a battle between a True Dragon and a Golden-winged Roc. Afterwards, he gained some insights, and went into retreat for 60 years to study and understand the secrets through meditation.

The boundless strength of a God Beast was a difficult concept for a mortal to imagine, even the mighty elders of the Realm of the Gods were no match.

And under the God Beasts were the Saint Beasts.

For instance, beings like the Flood Dragon, Vermillion Bird, and Spirit Turtle were all Saint Beasts.

Saint Beasts were much more common than God Beasts. Still, that was only within the Realm of the Gods. In the Sky Spill Continent, a Saint Beast was an extremely singular existence.

That was why Lin Ming had been so surprised when the soldier had said that a Vermillion Bird had appeared within the Southern Wilderness. After all, the Southern Wilderness was only a very, very small place out of the entire Sky Spill Continent.

The value of a Vermillion Bird was unimaginable. Chi Guda wasn't crazy enough to think that he could ever hope to catch it. He only wanted to look for some traces of it and collect some of its fallen flames. In the legends, Vermillion Birds liked to perch on millennia old wutong trees. After they descended, they would leave behind bits of flames. These flames were the fires of the Vermillion Bird.

Chi Guda wished to collect these Vermillion Bird flames and refine them into the eternal flame. If he were lucky, then he might even be able to find a feather of the Vermillion Bird and receive a major benefit from that.

Even Lin Ming's heart was somewhat stirred after hearing of the Vermillion Bird flames. However, he didn't really want them. What he really wanted was the eternal flame; that was a true Flame Essence. The flames of a Vermillion Bird, no matter how fierce, were in the end just flames.

Lin Ming rubbed his chin, "Why is there a Vermillion Bird within the Southern Wilderness? Since a Saint Beast appeared, could this be an omen from the heavens?"

....

Blackwater Swamp stretched for a thousand miles. The deeper one went into the swamp, the more dangerous it became.

On the other side of the swamp was the infamous Thundercrash Mountain. The highest peak of Thundercrash Mountain towered 100,000 feet high and stabbed the sky. It was said that the highest peak of Thundercrash Mountain was already higher than the clouds, so it experienced snow and rain all year round.

Five days later, the search operations within the Blackwater Swamp had been launched into full swing. The Fire Worm Tribe valued this search and took it very seriously. The military had dispatched 20,000 soldiers to aid in the search, while the Fire Worm Shaman had also sent out many masters to assist. These people were all at the Pulse Condensation Period, and there were even some who had achieved the late Pulse Condensation Period, and were just a bit worse than Chi Guda.

The search for the Vermillion Bird continued for ten days, but the end result left everyone speechless. They hadn't even found a single bit of feather down or even a small spark. Instead, several hundred soldiers had been sacrificed within Blackwater Swamp.

Chi Guda flew into a furious rage. He hadn't expected to find the Vermillion Bird, but they hadn't even found a small flame. This made him feel very angry and uncomfortable. He had been counting on this to set up a great merit for himself and obtain the Shaman's recognition. If he did, then he might become the next Fire Worm Chief. However, that possibility was now unlikely.

Chi Guda was in an awful mood. Three days later, he led his army to attack the Blackmarsh Tribe in order to vent his anger.

The Blackmarsh Tribe had altogether 40 or 50 thousand people, and their tribal army had less than 5000. Not only that, but many of those were just average militiamen. How could they defend against the 20,000 strong army of the Fire Worm Tribe?

There was no suspense in this war. The Blackmarsh Tribe was completely routed and the surrendered army was captured by the Fire Worm Tribe and turned into slaves.

The elite troops of the Fire Worm Tribe rushed all the way to the chief's quarters!

Chi Guda was riding a Crimson Blood Horse and he held a 10 foot long lance in his hands. As they rushed ahead, wherever he visited, blood would flow and heads would fly. Chi Guda enjoyed the fun of slaughtering. He was like an unstoppable force that rolled past everything. To him, killing people was just like mowing down grass.

Bang!

The sound of a crash echoed out, and the door to the chief's quarters burst open. Chi Guda pushed himself to the front and was the first to rush in. The chief's quarters was the place where the most wealth was located, and there were also many beauties here too. It was the equivalent of a royal palace.

Fire Worm soldiers' favorite activity was to plunder chiefs' quarters. They brought opportunities of unlimited pleasure, and they could also fulfill their most basic lustful desires. The chief's quarters' ladies and concubines were once lofty beauties, but now they were all wantonly abused and humiliated.

When the Fire Worm army killed their way here, the chief's quarters were already in ruins. There were those who had expected the Blackmarsh Tribe to be defeated, so they had fled in advance.

However, most of the ladies and concubines did not know any martial arts, so they had no way to run. Even if they escaped Blackmarsh Tribe, they would only end up dying in the belly of a vicious beast. Therefore they had no choice but to stay within the chief's quarters. In the tribal wars, they were always the sacrificial victims. This time, nobody even took them into account.

Chi Guda sneered and issued an order, “Pass down the orders, I want everyone captured and brought to the main hall! Collect all of the wealth and inventory it, then bring it to the main hall! Left General!”

“Here!” A man stepped out.

“You will lead 5000 elite troops to pursue the Blackmarsh Tribe. As long as anyone is caught running away, if they are a man, then bury them alive, and if they are a woman, then place them into the army as whores!”

“I receive the order!” The man waved his hand, and quickly brought his own army of troops to leave the chief’s quarters.

Once the tribe was defeated, it also took courage to escape. If they were caught, then their ending would be even more miserable. The men would be buried alive, and the women would be whored out and slowly tortured to death by the soldiers of the Fire Worm Tribe.

Therefore many people would rather stay as slaves than take the risk of getting caught while escaping.

The army instantly dispersed outwards. The ruthless and cruel Fire Worm soldiers heard that they could loot the chief’s quarters and their eyes turned red; they were just like sharks that smelled blood.

Before long, the screams of men and crying of women resounded throughout the entire building.

Chi Guda grinned; he very much enjoyed this sound.

“Hurry! Go faster!”

“Your mother, stop dawdling around!”

…………………

Half an hour later, the Fire Worm soldiers marched in all the prisoners from everywhere and brought them to the main hall. The men were all wounded, and some were even badly injured. Most of the women’s clothing was in disarray, and their faces and necks were bruised black and blue.

Regardless of whether it was men or women, their faces were filled with the dying embers of desolate despair.

The Fire Worm soldiers carried large boxes full of gold, silver, and other valuables. They piled them all within the open area of the main hall. These quickly piled into a small hill.

The soldiers were collecting all the valuables, the Fire Worm army allowed them to pocket some of the money and also allowed them to touch the women. In order to maintain their nature as vicious beasts, they had to occasionally be fed meat.

“Reporting to Big Boss, we found a brother and sister at the bottom of a well. A maid confessed that they are the children of the Blackmarsh Tribe’s chief.” A soldier pushed out a pair of 16 or 17 year old boy and girl. These two were dressed in cheap, coarse clothing, and their faces were slathered with ashes as if they were dirty, just like a maid or servant that tended to fires. But once one looked carefully, they could see that the hands of these two were smooth and delicate without any callouses. They were a pair of boy and girl that had obviously never done any heavy work before.

“Good.” Chi Guda’s face suffused with a villainous smile. This pair of twins had soft and tender skin. The male could be sold to female tribal rulers as a pet. The female could be used by himself.

Chi Guda dismounted from his horse, and walked up to the pair of twins. He pointlessly punched the girl’s chin. At this moment, Chi Guda coldly snorted and grabbed onto the girl’s arm. Inside of the girl’s sleeve was an impressively hidden crossbow. Its bolts were tipped in a dark blue liquid, it was obviously toxic.

“You court death!”

Chi Guda slapped out his palm with a bit of force. There was the sound of bones cracking and a girl pitifully screaming. The girl’s face was streaming cold sweat, and she almost fainted from the pain, her right wrist had almost been completely broken by Chi Guda.

At this moment, Chi Guda’s expression changed. He suddenly and quickly leapt backwards. There was a slight ripping sound as a white shadow shot out from an astonishing angle and stabbed towards his waist. Chi Guda only felt his body go numb and his organs roil within him as he almost vomited blood.

“Who!?”

Chapter 193 – Killing Chi Guda

Chapter 193 – Killing Chi Guda

Chapter title is a spoiler, highlight it to read it now, or see it at the bottom.

…

…

…

Just as Chi Guda spoke, a black-clothed youth who had been mixed in with the crowd suddenly rushed out, a dark gray spear in his arms as he pierced towards Chi Guda's throat like a poisonous snake!

"Mm!?"

Chi Guda urgently retreated backwards. The spear strike from a moment ago had been blocked by his high-grade human-step treasure armor. However, the true essence from that attack had managed to penetrate the flexible armor and sink into his body; the true essence within his entire body had an unbearable feeling!

With Chi Guda's cultivation, he could have stopped a surprise attack, but he hadn't thought that one of the prisoners in the group was a master that had actually managed to conceal their cultivation.

Normally, only a Xiantian master, or occasionally a peak Houtian master would be able to reach the realm of returning to one's true origin and restraining all of the true essence within their body to hide their cultivation. But this sort of powerhouse would have no reason to make a sneak attack in order to kill him.

This youth who had made a sneak attack on him hadn't even broken through to the Pulse Condensation Period, how had he managed to hide his murderous intent and cultivation?

The situation had already progressed beyond Chi Guda's imagination, the enemy's long spear pressing down toward his throat. In the end, Chi Guda was still a half-step Houtian realm martial artist. Even in a sneak attack, he had the ability to quickly react. He instantly pulled out a treasure sword from his spatial ring and cut towards the spearpoint!

Clang!

The sword and spear struck each other. Chi Guda used the rebound of this attack to fly backwards into the army.

Everything had happened in just a split second. The Fire Worm Tribe soldiers were finally able to react, they shouted, "It's an assassin!"

"Protect the general!"

Chi Guda's personal guardians took out their own swords and sabers and cut towards the black-clothed youth. However, that black-clothed youth was simply like a god of death. His hand shook the dark gray spear and vibrating true essence manifested into a raging tsunami that rushed outwards. Immediately, 7 or 8 soldiers were like seaweed as they were sent flying out in all directions, vomiting blood.

The black-clothed youth was Lin Ming, and the spear in his hand was the Heavy Profound Soft Spear. He had spread a special matte grey paint on it in order to cover up the too-recognizable silver color. Not only that, but he had snuck in with a black mask wrapping around his face and hiding his appearance. Only his eyes were visible from the outside.

This unexpected change in events caught everyone by surprise. Even the chief's children who were preparing to commit suicide were dumbfounded by the black-clothed man who had suddenly rush out. Who was this? With such strong skills, he shouldn't be someone that belonged to the Blackmarsh Tribe's chief's quarters.

At this time, Chi Guda was becoming more and more startled; he wasn't able to suppress that small amount of true essence within his body. It was as if that true essence had an infinite vitality within it.

"What kind of true essence is this?"

Chi Guda's expression continued to sink. If people were like flames, then the more profound and deep a martial artist's cultivation was, and the more pure and vibrant their true essence became, it would be like a flame that was becoming more and more vigorous. However, the nature of it wouldn't change. Yet this true essence actually had a core qualitative difference. It was just like a Flame Essence, it was far too difficult to suppress!

Chi Guda had already seen through Lin Ming's cultivation, he was without a doubt at the peak of Bone Forging. But this left him baffled. Just what sort of origin did this fellow have?

A vast wave of soldiers rushed towards Lin Ming like a tide. Lin Ming's eyes narrowed, and the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' began to rapidly revolve within him, and a crimson lotus flame bloomed upon his long spear.

Total Annihilation!

"Hah!"

The Heavy Profound Soft Spear drew a wide crescent moon and the flames formed a massive arc. The powerful impact swept the soldiers and sent them flying backwards.

Lin Ming spotted a gap between the solders – Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Woosh!

Lin Ming was like a black bolt of lightning that threaded through the surrounding soldiers. He instantly arrived in front of Chi Guda!

The long spear shot out – Flow like Silk!

5000 vibrating true essence filaments manifested from the spear at an astonishing rate. They weaved together in the air, forming a tight true essence net that fell down on Chi Guda.

As Lin Ming's strength increased, his use of Flow like Silk had already reached a degree of near perfection – he was close to reaching a breakthrough.

Chi Guda saw this shimmering net filled with deep killing intent fall on him, and gave a loud shout. The high-grade human-step treasure sword in his hand began to glow with a yellow light. He brandished his sword and chopped out at the bright net of true essence.

"Earth Splitter!"

Chi Guda was forced to resort to his most infamous martial skill. His sword was filled with a vibrant energy as it cut out at the shining net. With a loud bang, the net was torn apart!

Chi Guda fiendishly sneered. After all, this enemy was only at the peak of Bone Forging; how could he possibly compare to his cultivation of a half-step into the Houtian realm? Although he didn't know why this young fellow was so strong, since he actually dared to attempt an assassination within a group of soldiers, he was simply seeking his own death!

However at this time, Chi Guda's smile froze. Although that shining net had been torn apart by his sword, it hadn't faded away. Instead, it turned into filaments formed of true essence and pierced towards him.

Before fusing with the reverse scale blood, Lin Ming's vibrating true essence had many weaknesses. One was that, although it was extremely formidable, its tenacity wasn't enough and it was easily destroyed. Even after entering the enemy's body, it would gradually weaken. In the life and death smelting trial he had encountered the Witch Slave, which had massively overwhelming defensive capabilities; it had simply been too difficult to injure the enemy

But now, after having integrated with the reverse scale blood, Lin Ming's 5000 vibrating true essence threads had taken on a qualitative change. Not only could they not be broken, but they were extremely tough and very difficult to destroy. Although they weren't like the Flame Essence that was inextinguishable, but if one wished to destroy them, they needed to use several times more true essence to wear them down.

This endlessly living true essence was scattered apart by Chi Guda's sword.

This gorgeous and charming true essence fell from the sky like drops of rain. But, this rain contained a horrifying killing intent!

The martial artists that were too close to these filaments were shredded to pieces; even the personal bodyguards near Chi Guda were unable to escape, and blood flowed on the ground. With their strength, the role they could play in this fight was miniscule. Even the aftermath of the blows could kill them off.

Chi Guda turned somber. His palms oozed with sweat as the countless true essence filaments reflected in his eyes. His pupils suddenly contracted!

"Earth Protection!"

With a roar, Chi Guda stabbed his sword into the ground. A brown membrane of light formed around him, enveloping him in a thick shell.

Ding ding ding ding ding ding ding!

The filaments crashed against the brown light membrane as they tried to pierce through! Located under that protective cover, Chi Guda was unharmed!

At this moment, Lin Ming's lips curved under the black mask covering his face. This was the moment he had been waiting for. He hadn't expected his Flow like Silk to harm Chi Guda; he had only wanted to trap him first, before the real killing would begin!

"Hah!"

A dark red lotus flame bloomed on the Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

Chi!

A purple electric snake emerged from the Heretical God Seed and twined around the cold tip of the spear.

“Heretical God Force – Open!”

Lin Ming shouted, and a massive swell of true essence rose within his body!

His powerful aura erupted like a volcano, and his spear thrust out, mincing the atmosphere. The power of thunder and flame gushed forth. The roaring sounds of thunder were no less terrifying than the tiger leopard thunder claps of Thunder Valley!

Chi Guda’s complexion changed. He hadn’t been able judge just how powerful this move of Lin Ming’s was. When the thunder and flame hadn’t yet intersected, this move seemed only like an ordinary killing stroke.

Chi Guda clenched his teeth and desperately pushed forth all the true essence he could muster to reinforce the defensive shield covering him. Since he didn’t excel in speed, he could only use his true essence to withstand Lin Ming’s offensive barrage.

He would outlast the enemy!

Chi Guda’s idea was right. However, he had underestimated the power of Lin Ming’s move.

The thunder and fire intersected, and a terrifying energy ruptured the air. It was as if a red sun had appeared out of thin air. Space distorted, and the air around the edges began to twist with beams of light as 10,000 ten foot long golden swords of energy shot out in all directions.

The devastating force of the impact formed visible airwaves. The main hall was crushed into fragments by this power, and countless stones filled the skies. All of the soldiers were sent flying away like weightless straw!

Under that crushing explosive power, Chi Guda's Earth Protection shattered like plain glass. The brown shield of light shattered into fragments, and Chi Guda was sent flying out, his chest already mangled and covered with blood.

Lin Ming launched his movement technique and flew forward. Without giving Chi Guda a chance to catch his breath, the Heavy Profound Soft Spear was already piercing towards Chi Guda.

Chi Guda suppressed the pain that was wracking his organs and slashed out his sword at Lin Ming. But at this moment, a massive black vortex appeared in front of him as the world fell apart. The swirling tornado pulled him forwards with an intense attractive power, as if it wished to tear apart his soul!

Chi Guda was shocked. He fiercely bit down on his tongue and forced himself to snap back to reality. However, the moment that he regained his consciousness, the dark gray long spear was already like a snake that was at his neck!

Puff!

The long spear thrust through flesh. Because the Earth Protection was already shattered by Thunderfire Annihilation, the true essence protecting Chi Guda was like thin paper!

Chi Guda felt coldness in his throat. Lin Ming's spear had cut off his airway and severed his spine.

He gawked at the spear that had pierced him, both his eyes wide with incredulity, as if he couldn't believe what had happened to him. From his spirited triumph to his death, it had all happened in a moment!

He had dreamed of untold wealth, countless women, supreme power. He dreamed of dominating the Southern Wilderness and being recorded down in the annals of history. Yet, with this spear, everything had crumbled around him…

As Lin Ming's spear entered Chi Guda's throat, he sent forth vibrating true essence once again. It spread through Chi Guda's organs, and Chi Guda began to hemorrhage from his head. The lights in his eye began to gradually fade away, and in the moment that Chi Guda lost all consciousness, he heard a young boy's voice whisper into his ear.

"For the Na Tribe's spirits, your death is their tribute!"

"So it was… the Na Tribe…" Chi Guda's lips lifted as if he was trying to smile. However, this expression was then forever fixed on his face.

Puff!

Chi Guda's corpse slumped to the ground. Lin Ming landed on his knees, dizzy. With the help of the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, he regained his balance.

Burning pain sizzled in his eyes and his vision blurred. He hadn't thought that using the Samsara martial intent against a martial artist a half-step into the Houtian realm would have such an agonizing recoil. Later, if he ran into another powerhouse, he would have to minimize the use of the Samsara martial intent.

He waved his hand and received Chi Guda's corpse into his spatial ring. Everyone, including the prisoners and soldiers, were looking at Lin Ming in complete silence…

They had never expected that Chi Guda, a powerhouse with a cultivation of a half-step into the Houtian realm, and who was regarded as one of the overlords of the Southern Wilderness, would be killed like this…

Chapter 194 – Sacred Flame's Flame Essence

Chapter 194 – Sacred Flame's Flame Essence

…

…

…

As Chi Guda died, the several thousand Fire Worm soldiers were completely cowed. Lin Ming stood within the army, but there wasn't a single one among them that dared to move against him.

An ordinary soldier usually had a second-grade martial talent. They could practice for several years, but their cultivation still wouldn't have surpassed the Second Stage of Body Transformation. A middle-level officer could reach Viscera Training or even Altering Muscle, while a high-ranking officer could achieve Bone Forging. However, in front of Lin Ming, they would all fall at the first blow.

Besides Chi Guda, the only ones whose strength was at the Pulse Condensation Period were the Left General and the Right General.

The Left General had already been sent to capture the people that had fled. Only the Right General was left, his entire body covered in a sheen of cold sweat. With the atmosphere now, he didn't even dare to breathe. He feared that Lin Ming would suddenly come to kill him, and he wouldn't even be able to escape death.

In front of Lin Ming, the several bodyguards could only been considered as decorations. It could be said that with Lin Ming's strength, even these thousands of soldiers could not stop him!

Lin Ming didn't even bother with the Right General. He glanced towards the group of prisoners that had been captured. These prisoners looked at Lin Ming with eyes full of hope and pleading. To them, Lin Ming was a war god that the Sorcerer had sent down from the Divine Kingdom to save them.

Lin Ming's heart was gloomy and morose. Even if he killed Chi Guda, it was impossible for him to change the fate of these prisoners. After all, he was just one person. He couldn't stop an entire tribe. All that waited for these prisoners was a lifetime of suffering, slavery, and death.

Lin Ming's vision swept over the chief's twins. He hesitated for a moment, and then his figure flashed as he arrived beside the two of them.

He took one in each hand, and instantly launched Golden Roc Shattering the Void, flying forwards.

They could not stay here. Otherwise if the Fire Worm Tribe's Houtian master arrived, things would become decidedly dangerous.

Rescuing the chief's twins was the only kindness that Lin Ming could offer, and could be regarded as leaving behind a little hope for the Blackmarsh Tribe. If these two people made every effort possible, they might be able to rebuild their Blackmarsh Tribe in the future and then avenge their tribesmen.

"Go!"

As Lin Ming departed from the chief's quarters, no one dared to stop him.

Lin Ming sped away, ready to send these two to a small tribe so he didn't have to manage them. But at this moment, his expression changed. He turned around and saw a bright red light speeding towards him.

"Flame?"

In a flash, Lin Ming could tell that the red light was from a flame. After Lin Ming had formed a Flame Essence from the Heretical God Seed, Lin Ming was no longer afraid of fire. True essence flooded into his right hand, and he aimed towards that red light, ready to slap it down.

Pof!

The red light blew up. But Lin Ming's expression changed. He felt the power of the flames within it break into his meridians, wreaking havoc! No matter how he tried to vibrate the flames within his body, he was unable to control this flame!

"What's going on?"

Back in the Lava Cave, no matter how much lava fire there was, the Heretical God Seed was still able to tame it. But now, something like this was actually happening.

Lin Ming revolved all the true essence within his body and suppressed the flame. At the same time, Lin Ming's mind stirred and he looked forwards.

A hundred feet away in the air, a mass of crimson flames coalesced, forming a shape of flames in the figure of a three foot tall little boy that floated in the air.

The little boy's entire body was a deep red, and swirls of flame wound around his hands and feet. His small face had a laughing expression, but that smile was tainted with evil.

Lin Ming's eyebrows furrowed. What was this?

He could feel that the boy's body contained a very powerful flame attribute true essence; it was much more powerful than his own. No wonder he hadn't been able to suppress that flame from a moment ago.

Was this little boy the Fire Worm Shaman?

No, that wasn't right. Even if the Fire Worm Shaman trained in some strange cultivation method that turned his appearance into that of a little boy, he would still have a mortal body. This little boy’s body was clearly composed of fire. Otherwise, it would also be impossible for him to float in the air.

This is…

Lin Ming’s mind went cold. He said to the Blackmarsh twins that he had been carrying, “You’re on your own now. I can’t help you any longer.”

The two siblings listened to Lin Ming, and a bit of despair crossed their expression. The girl opened her mouth as if she wanted to say something, but stopped before the words came out. She knew that at this moment, Lin Ming could no longer save them. They had to run away from the Fire Worm army before they were caught, and had to depend on themselves.

Lin Ming released their hands, and the two siblings silently thanked him before they ran off into the depths of the jungle.

The little flame boy darkly smiled. Flames swirled within his little hand, and he threw a fireball straight towards the two siblings.

Lin Ming coldly snorted, and the Heavy Profound Soft Spear pierced out like a lightning bolt towards the fireball. 5000 vibrating true essence filaments broke into the fireball and there was the sound of an explosion as it turned into a mass of fireworks.

The two siblings were shocked out of their minds. The girl looked back and sent a look of gratitude towards Lin Ming. Without another word, they lowered their heads and continued to run into the jungle.

Seeing this, the little flame boy no longer chased after them. Compared to those two siblings, Lin Ming was the true threat.

The little flame boy’s hands crossed against its chest, and it wickedly smiled as it looked at Lin Ming. The flames swirled on its face, turning into a playful expression.

Lin Ming sneered. “You are the eternal flame’s Flame Essence. The Flame Essence has a soul. After the Fire Worm Shaman fused a part of his soul into the Flame Essence, it formed you. Something neither human nor monster, in the end you’re a Flame Essence that became the Fire Worm Shaman’s avatar.

The little flame boy’s face revealed a stunned expression. But right after, it snickered again and said, “Your soul force is good. You can actually recognize that I am an avatar. I’m more and more interested in you! Today, you stay behind!”

The voice of the Flame Essence avatar was extremely hoarse. Coming from a little boy, it sounded absolutely bizarre.

“Stay here? Who’s going to make me? If your true self comes, then I would have already lost. But you are only an avatar, and you still think you can keep me here?”

Lin Ming spoke to here and then shouted. The aura of his body suddenly rose and he flourished his spear. True essence condensed into an Astral Spear several tens of feet long, thrusting towards the little flame boy’s neck!

He wanted to ruin the soul mark that the Fire Worm Shaman had left in the Flame Essence. If he could do this, then the Flame Essence wouldn’t be possessed by anyone.

As the Astral Spear howled forwards, the little flame boy wildly laughed and its body suddenly disappeared. Its speed was no less than Lin Ming’s!

“You want to break my soul mark? Dream on! Die!”

The little flame boy thrust his hands forwards. The power of fire spewed out from his palms, turning into thousands of twisted red lights that converged on Lin Ming from all sides.

However, the little flame boy didn’t expect that after Lin Ming had thrust out his spear, he would have not even have the desire to fight. Lin Ming immediately launched his movement technique and ran away.

Puff puff puff! The attack of the little flame boy missed. The red lights were like crimson rain that fell upon the ground piled high with leaves. The ground immediately turned into scorched earth upon contact.

“Humph! At least you’re smart. But do you think you can actually escape my grasp? What wishful thinking!” The little flame boy maliciously grinned and started to chase after Lin Ming.

Lin Ming rapidly moved. He displayed the full force of Golden Roc Shattering the Void without any reservations.

If he managed to erase the soul mark that the Fire Worm Shaman had placed in the Flame Essence, then the Flame Essence would lose its consciousness. Then, Lin Ming would have a chance to absorb it!

This idea had an incomparable allure. However, Lin Ming knew that at this point the Fire Worm Shaman was coming. If a true Houtian master arrived, then he wouldn’t be able to escape even if he had wings!

Much less, this little flame boy’s true essence was excessively powerful. As for himself, he had already used Thunderfire Annihilation and had also opened the Heretical God Gate. 40% of his true essence had been consumed. If they fought, he wasn’t sure who would come out on top. To wish to stay here and destroy the soul mark that the Fire Worm Shaman had left in this little flame boy was no different than a moron speaking utter nonsense.

If he didn’t leave now and was delayed for a few more minutes, it would be too late!

Lin Ming’s speed became faster and faster. It was as if his body was weightless. The tips of his toes traced the tops of trees, and his body was like an arrow that had been shot out. After several ups and downs, Lin Ming’s body became increasingly high, until he no longer had the borrow leverage from the treetops, and then completely flew off!

After reaching the peak of Bone Forging, Lin Ming’s true essence had become even thicker and purer, and his movements became increasingly close to true flight.

This time, the little flame boy was completely strunned as it looked at Lin Ming. It could fly too, but that was only because he didn't have a body, and was only a mass of flames. But that boy was clearly at the peak of Bone Forging. So why was he able to fly?

Did he have some rare flight-capable treasure on his body?

Thinking this, the little flame boy's eyes flashed with a fierce ominous greed. In any event, he had to make sure this boy stayed. He definitely had some sort of secret!

The wind whistled in Lin Ming's ear as he flew forwards. He didn't look back; his soul force had already locked onto the little flame boy behind him. Not only was he not able to ditch him, but he had been getting closer and closer.

"Damn, this fellow is just like a haunting ghost!" Lin Ming frowned. His Golden Roc Shattering the Void was a top-tier movement technique. But, this little flame boy's body was wholly composed of flames. He was weightless, so he was faster.

"Humph! You're staying!"

The little flame boy pursued Lin Ming from 100 feet behind. It balled its hands together and several dozens of finger-thick flame columns came shooting towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming twisted his spear behind him without looking.

Peng!

The pillars of flame crumbled apart and then exploded into a rain of red light. But during this time, the little flame boy had already caught up to Lin Ming from behind. It evilly smiled as it stretched out its hands, and the power of fire flashed in its palms. "With my avatar delaying you, don't even think of running away! Flame Cage!"

Fu —

Strips of crimson flames flew around Lin Ming. The columns of flame interlocked together and formed a cage of fire, trapping Lin Ming within.

Lin Ming stabbed out at the flame cage, but it failed to pierce through!

“Damn!” Lin Ming felt anxious. This little flame boy had made it clear that he was only delaying him. As soon as the Fire Worm Shaman’s true self arrived, then he would be in an extremely dangerous situation.

But this little flame boy’s true essence was thicker and his speed was faster. He couldn’t kill him if he wanted to, and he couldn’t lose him if he wanted to. With this fellow following him, he would catch up sooner or later.

Lin Ming clenched his teeth. The true essence within his body began revolving to the limit, and the power of the dragon blood within his heart suddenly erupted in a blaze of glory.

“Break for me!”

Lin Ming screamed, and thrust his spear out. The true essence within his body that held the power of the dragon blood began to endlessly grow. Even the fire of a Flame Essence would not be able to easily destroy it!

Cha!

The flame cage was completely torn apart. Lin Ming sprung forwards and soared straight into the sky!

The little flame boy was stunned. It hadn’t expected Lin Ming to be able to break out of the flame cage so quickly. But like this, it was even happier. This meant that the secret on Lin Ming’s body was even more valuable.

Chapter 195 – Prestige of the Saint Beast

Chapter 195 – Prestige of the Saint Beast

…

…

…

Sky Fortune Kingdom, Seven Profound Martial House.

At that time, it had been one month since Lin Ming left Sky Fortune City.

It was a chilly winter afternoon, and a light crop of snow carpeted the earth. The cloud had scattered, and the bright sun was high in the sky, slowly melting the soft snow and filling the air with an icy humidity.

In the northwest corner of the Seven Profound Martial House, the deacon responsible for the Martial House Registration Office was lazing around in ennui, casually flipping the pages of a novel.

Working in the Martial House Registration Office was quite a boring affair. It was mainly recording when disciples of the Martial House would go out for adventures and experience, or recording the time and location for missions they were on. This was to ensure the disciples' safety. Otherwise, if they were missing for too long without an adequate explanation, then the Seven Profound Martial House would initiate an investigation.

Because there weren't many disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House that would often go out for adventure or to experience the world, even three or five disciples coming in to register was considered a lot. This boring and tedious work was considered a dead end job with no possibility for future progression; it was work that powerful martial artists would never debase themselves to do.

Sun Liang was a superior second-grade martial talent. Although he couldn't compare with juniors of large aristocratic families, he was still so-so. Relying on his connections, he had entered into the Sky Fortune Martial House to cultivate for several years before just barely reaching the Viscera Training stage. Afterwards, he became too lazy to practice and turtled himself in the Seven Profound Martial House Registration Office where he became a deacon.

The novel was reaching a satisfying peak. Sun Liang's expressions couldn't help but change as he followed the rises and falls of the protagonist's fate. Sometimes he giggled, sometimes he was tense, but his mood was always engaged. Suddenly, he felt the light dim as a figure blotted out the sunlight.

Sun Liang thought that it was a disciple who had come to register for a leave of absence. He was somewhat dissatisfied as his good mood in reading the novel was interrupted. He looked up, and just when he was about to ask when this disciple was planning on going and where, he suddenly froze in place.

In front of him was a middle-aged man wearing a flowing white robe and carrying a long zither on his back. He was slender, and his thick eyebrows were wise. He had a temperament like clouds in the sun, and was simply an elegant existence.

Pah.

Sun Liang's novel fell on the ground. Quivering, he stood up and opened his mouth to speak. His voice was dry as he said, "Martial… Martial House Master…"

Sun Liang felt faint at heart. Why would the Seven Profound Martial House Master Qin Ziya be here?

Qin Ziya smiled. Naturally, he did not intend to bother with such minor matters like Sun Liang reading novels during his job. He said, "A month ago, did Lin Ming record where he was going here?"

Sun Liang quickly nodded. There weren't many people that registered. Lin Ming's status was unique, so he had definitely remembered him.

"Let me see."

"O… okay."

Sun Liang trembled as he flipped through the records, combing the ordered files before finally pulling one out. He thanked the heavens that he didn't encounter a situation in which he couldn't find the record, otherwise he really would have wanted to hit his head on the wall and kill himself.

Qin Ziya glanced through the paper records and saw Lin Ming's travel time and signature. He frowned.

He would go out to adventure for two months, location unknown…

"I know."

Qin Ziya closed the file before turning around and walking away.

Lin Ming had already disappeared for one month. Although the record had clearly stated that he voluntarily went out to adventure and experience the world, Qin Ziya felt that something was strange about the matter.

Lin Ming had simply offended too many people. It was absolutely an unwise decision to go out and adventure during this time period.

Once his whereabouts were leaked out, he could even encounter a fatal disaster.

Not only that, but there simply weren't any good areas near the Sky Fortune Kingdom to go out and adventure in. Going out anywhere would be inferior to the quick cultivation within the Seven Profound Martial House. Even the Seven Major Killing Arrays had their doors opened wide for Lin Ming; where could he find such good practice locations outside?

The only thing that the Seven Profound Martial House lacked was true life and death killing situations. If Lin Ming wanted to experience this, then he could have joined the army for awhile. But Qin Ziya had already asked the military, and Lin Ming hadn't joined them.

This made Qin Ziya's heart fill with doubts. Just what was Lin Ming doing?

The reason that Qin Ziya had come back this time was to prepare for the upcoming Inter-faction Assembly Tournament.

Two months from now, the Seven Profound Valleys would call down the Martial House core disciples from all the nearby countries and hold a martial gathering.

The martial gathering occurred every three years. At that time, the core disciples of all the countries would gather together and drink tea while appreciating and comparing martial arts.

This was an assessment of the various nations' core disciples, but it was also an assessment of the Martial Houses themselves. Even Qin Ziya, who rarely cared or worried about the internal affairs of the Martial House attached a serious importance towards this assessment.

When Lin Ming had been passed down the Seven Profound Decree, Qin Ziya had taken advantage of that time to give Lin Ming many benefits. He hoped that Lin Ming would be able to quickly grow in that short time and blossom, shining with radiant glory at the martial gathering.

If his result was good, then not only would he receive rewards as a core disciple, but even the Martial House Master would receive a reward.

The most precious reward was a Heaven Opening Pill.

A Heaven Opening Pill was the miracle medicine that a peak Houtian realm master would take when they were attempting to break into the Xiantian realm. It would remove the foul Houtian air within them, wash their muscles and marrow, reproduce a Xiantian-like state that would allow them to return to their natural state, and finally step into the Xiantian realm.

No matter how awe-inspiring one's talent was, they still had to take a Heaven Opening Pill in order to step into the Xiantian realm from the Houtian realm.

The difference between the Houtian realm and Xiantian realm was the Xiantian breath within oneself. With this, one's soul would enter into a tranquil state, and they would be able to communicate with heaven and earth origin energy. They could use their soul to understand the wisdom of the world and use their true essence to move the power of the heavens and earth.

When a baby was still in the mother's body, they would rely on the umbilical cord transporting blood in order to breathe; this was the Xiantian breath.

After a baby was born, they changed to breathing from their mouths and nose. Inevitably they would breathe the foul Houtian air, and there simply wouldn't be any Xiantian breath.

From Houtian to Xiantian, one had to rid themselves of worldly roots and change their Houtian breath to Xiantian breath.

In order to do this, one had to wash their muscles and marrow and reproduce the Xiantian breath with the Heaven Opening Pill!

In theory, it could be said that a naturally peerless martial talent could get rid of their body's Houtian air through their own strength, and wouldn't need to depend upon a pull to step into the Xiantian realm. However, this was only a theory. The truth was that no one had ever managed to accomplish this.

The Heaven Opening Pill was an incomparably precious treasure within the Seven Profound Valleys. Not only in the Seven Profound Valleys, but the Heaven Opening Pill was extremely scarce even in other large sects.

The materials for the Heaven Opening Pill were too difficult to find. Even if they were all collected, there was still a small chance that there would be a failure during the alchemical refinement of the pill.

The Seven Profound Valleys would refine a batch of Heaven Opening Pills every three years. In the end, they would have around 20 or 30 pills.

The more than 20 pills were insufficient to be divided among so many disciples.

The rules of the Seven Profound Valleys stated that the Heaven Opening Pill could only be rewarded to peak Houtian masters with outstanding talent. Even if these masters took the Heaven Opening Pill, it didn't mean that they would necessarily break into the Xiantian realm.

Qin Ziya's talent could already be considered heaven defying. He had started cultivating at 20 years of age, and at 45 he had reached the peak Houtian realm. Once, he too had been given a Heaven Opening Pill. After he took it he attempted to break through the Xiantian bottleneck. However, there was a problem that arose from within his Zither Heart, and he had failed just a step away!

Finally Qin Ziya had stopped a half-step into the Xiantian realm. These years he had been roaming the deep valleys and tempering his Zither Heart. Now, his Zither Heart had reached the Large Success stage. He would only need a Heaven Opening Pill to attack the Xiantian realm bottleneck once again!

Every three years during the martial gathering, two Heaven Opening Pills were rewarded. One to the core disciple, and one to the Martial House Master.

Only first place was rewarded!

Of course, a core disciple had to reach the peak Houtian realm before he could cash in on this reward.

If their cultivation was insufficient, then it would be a waste for them to take the Heaven Opening Pill.

To a core disciple, besides a Heaven Opening Pill, there were also many other rich rewards. For instance, high-grade human-step treasures, top-quality pills, core cultivation methods, and other such great items.

Qin Ziya of course wanted to obtain the Heaven Opening Pill, but he knew it was hopeless for Lin Ming to take the number one spot; that was simply too distant a dream. Sky Fortune Kingdom's Seven Profound Martial House was strong, but compared to those of Huoluo Nation or the Eastern Sun Country, they were still sorely lacking.

However, just because they couldn't obtain first place this time didn't mean they couldn't next time. If they couldn't next time, then they could try the time after that. Lin Ming was only 15 years old. He would be able to participate in a total of 3 martial gatherings.

Even if Lin Ming failed these three times, if he was able to make good progress, that could be considered as a merit of Qin Ziya.

But Qin Ziya hadn't thought that when he had come back, Lin Ming would already have disappeared for one month, his location unknown.

…………………………

Southern Wilderness, Blackwater Swamp —

The chase between Lin Ming and the little flame boy had lasted for more than an hour!

In the time of this hour, the two of them had already fought several times, but neither had been able to gain an advantage.

Lin Ming only had about 30% of his true essence left within him. With the long time that he had been flying as well as the high-intensity combat he engaged in, even though his blood vitality was strong and he had the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' augmenting him, he wouldn't be able to last much longer.

Like this, his true essence would be completely exhausted in one more hour!

In comparison, the little flame boy had no weakening or lack of true essence. The reason for this was because his cultivation was far more profound and deep than Lin Ming's, and also because the little flame boy was not a human, but rather a Flame Essence. A Flame Essence grew forever, and wouldn't be extinguished.

Lin Ming became increasingly anxious; he couldn't keep on going like this!

If he stopped to fight, he still wouldn't win. If he was delayed long enough, then the Fire Worm Shaman's true self would catch up.

If he continued to run away, then he could last one more hour at most. Afterwards, once his true essence was all depleted, the Fire Worm Shaman's true self wouldn't even need to come; even the little flame boy could kill him!

It was as if he had already fallen into a dead end…

No, as long as he was alive he had a chance, he just hadn't thought of it!

Calm down!

Lin Ming's breathing became more even. His mind had entered into a state similar to the realm of the ethereal martial intent. He had to find a way to break out of this doom!

At this time, 600 miles away from Lin Ming, a middle-aged bald man in a black robe was sitting cross-legged on a Heavenly Wind Eagle with a cold expression. This person was the Fire Worm Shaman, Chi Yue.

He had already ridden the Heavenly Wind Eagle in pursuit for more than one hour while his Fire Essence avatar was diverting Lin Ming. Even so, he was still 600 miles away.

However Chi Yue didn't worry. He was fine waiting for his prey to exhaust themselves and consume their true essence. As long as this continued for another hour, he would almost win by default.

But this prey's strength was beyond his expectations. He was only at the peak Bone Forging stage, but his combat prowess actually matched a Houtian realm martial artist. Not only that, but he could also fly, and his endurance and sustained fighting ability were simply frightening!

"No matter what secrets you have on your body, they will all be mine!"

Chi Yue sneered. His goal was to conquer the Southern Wilderness. No one could block his path!

But at this moment, Chi Yue's smile suddenly froze as he instantly paled!

"This… this is the Vermillion Bird!"

600 miles away, Lin Ming's eyes were round as he stared at a large red bird flying in the sky. His mind was full of a disbelieving expression; was this the Vermillion Bird?

A legendary Saint Beast actually appeared in front of him?

Chapter 196 – Thundercrash Mountain

Chapter 196 – Thundercrash Mountain

…

…

…

The Vermillion Bird was about 50 feet long. It had the head of a pheasant and a long scarlet neck like a snake. Its body was covered in feathers and burning flames shrouded its body. As it flew, it shed sparkling red lights that sprinkled down onto the world. It was beautiful like an exquisite dream.

Although he was very far away, Lin Ming could still feel the Vermillion Bird emitting a vast pressure that made his heart skip.

Under the suppressive nature of this aura, Lin Ming's speed dropped. He glanced backwards at the little flame boy to see if he had caught up. However, he hadn't expected the little flame boy was even worse. It had actually stopped and was staring with both eyes at the flying Vermillion Bird. Fear filled its face.

Lin Ming paused. Mm? Was it afraid?

At this moment, the Vermillion Bird bowed its head downwards, overlooking the little flame boy. The little flame boy was scared out of its wits. It gave a miserable scream before turning tail and running!

The speed of the little flame boy was much faster than when it had been chasing Lin Ming! It had turned into a bright red light, and in just a few breaths of time it had already reached the jungle and vanished out of sight!

Lin Ming was baffled, why did it run away?

Looking at the Vermillion Bird again, it seemed to be hesitating for a moment. Then, it no longer bothered with the little flame boy and continued to fly forward.

The way it flew through the air was filled with a majestic elegance. Although it didn't flap its wings very fast, its speed was actually incomparably quick. In just a few blinks of the eye, it had already flown beyond the horizon and turned into a small red shadow.

Lin Ming was a bit confused. The little flame boy was obviously afraid of the Vermillion Bird

Could it be…

Of course, the Vermillion Bird was a fire-attribute Saint Beast. The reason that Chi Guda had been searching the Blackwater Swamp was to look for some feathers or flames that the Vermillion Bird had left behind so that they could be refined into the eternal flame's Flame Essence.

But in reverse, the eternal flame's Flame Essence could also be considered a good refresher for the Vermillion Bird.

The Flame Essence feared that it would be eaten by the Vermillion Bird, hence it had turned around to escape.

Understanding this, Lin Ming laughed. He launched his movement technique and followed in the direction that the Vermillion Bird went in.

The Vermillion Bird was extremely quick, Lin Ming was much slower. After an incense stick of time, the Vermillion Bird had already vanished past the horizon.

Lin Ming feared that the Flame Essence boy would return, so he launched forwards at full speed and stayed close the ground. He continuously changed directions mid-flight and slowly descended into a thick patch of bushes in the swamp.

The thick grass of Blackwater Swamp was around 10 feet tall, it wasn't much shorter than a normal tree. Once a person hid inside, it was similar to a stone being dropped into the sea. It was simply impossible to know where to start looking.

Lin Ming found a relatively safe place in the high grass, took out a true essence stone, and began to meditate while he restored his true essence.

He converged all of his breath within himself and completely hid from the world. Even a martial arts master who probed with soul force would find it difficult to discover him.

After a couple of hours passed, night began to fall. In Blackwater Swamp, the nighttime was the most dangerous period. Lin Ming had to restore his strength as soon as possible.

One hour later, there was the sound of an explosion as the true essence stone burst apart. Lin Ming opened his eyes from his meditation. His power of thunder and fire had been restored, and he had also recovered his true essence.

As the dark night fell upon the world, poisonous insects and snakes began to crawl up from Blackwater Swamp's grass. But since Lin Ming could fly, he didn't care too much about these.

He estimated that he was in the central zone of Blackwater Swamp.

Blackwater Swamp was a thousand miles long and wide. If Lin Ming retraced his steps, he could return to Blackmarsh Tribe. If he continued forward, then he would reach Thundercrash Mountain in another 8 or 9 hundred miles.

Originally, Lin Ming had planned to go to Thundercrash Mountain after killing Chi Guda, in order to see if there was anything of interest there.

Na Yi had said that Thundergrass grew on Thundercrash Mountain. Century old Thundergrass was worth quite a bit of money. But, even a Houtian realm master would not dare to rashly climb the mountain. They would only search around the periphery of Thundercrash Mountain.

Lin Ming didn't believe that his own power surpassed that of a Houtian master. If he went to Thundercrash Mountain, it would also be to search round the edges. Unless he wanted to explore the secrets of Thundercrash Mountain, there was no reason to scale the mountain.

The dark night was like a curtain that was illuminated by the bright moon. Lin Ming ran atop the tips of the grass with quick steps, soaring a hundred feet with each tap of his foot.

When he was a few hundred miles from Thundercrash Mountain, Lin Ming could already see a massive shadow being illuminated by the pale moonlight. It was just like a titanic giant.

At the peak of the highest mountain, white light constantly flared. This was the countless flashing of thunder.

At the very summit of Thundercrash Mountain, the thunder would never stop falling! Not even in 10,000 years!

Thundercrash Mountain was the highest mountain within the Southern Wilderness. Its most famous peak was over 100,000 feet high and pierced straight through the sky. This peak was higher than the clouds and experienced rain and snow all year round.

Sky Spill Continent's heavens were divided into six layers. The layer under the clouds was called the Skyvault Heavens. Here is where rain, snow, and hail formed. There was nothing special about the Skyvault Heavens. Besides it being a bit cold at the higher locations, anyone could survive in the Skyvault Heavens.

9000 feet above the clouds was the Calmstream Heavens. Here, strong heavenly winds blew endlessly. Even a Heavenly Wind Eagle would find it difficult to fly in the Calmstream Heavens.

30,000 feet above the clouds was the Primal Chaos Heavens. Here, the elements of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, thunder, and wind existed in their complete and vibrant states. It was an incomparably oppressive place. Even a Xiantian realm martial artist, if exposed to the Primal Chaos Heavens, would be killed by deadly origin energy.

Thundercrash Mountain’s peak altitude of 100,000 feet approached the Primal Chaos Heavens. Because the summit was comprised almost entirely of magnetic ore, it was able to draw in the power of thunder from the Primal Chaos Heavens, and thus form endless clashes of thunder.

This is why Thundercrash Mountain was named so.

Lin Ming guessed that since thunder endlessly struck the peak of Thundercrash mountain, there was a high possibility that there existed a Thunder Soul there. But even a Houtian master could only crawl up the mountainside at their own peril. Since his strength wasn’t at the level of a Houtian master, there wasn’t any hope in obtaining the Thunder Soul!

Even so, Lin Ming still wanted to take a trip and see what was so terrifying about Thundercrash Mountain, and see if there was any possibility of obtaining a Thunder Soul.

Two hours later, Lin Ming arrived at the base of Thundercrash Mountain. He discovered that there was actually a tribe here.

Although there wasn’t much light at this time, the tribe’s people had already begun waking up to prepare for their day of work. The farmers carried their tools and the merchants shouldered their wares.

“They say that there are Thunder Lizards everywhere on Thundercrash Mountain. Aren’t they afraid that a vicious beast flood might erupt at any moment?” Lin Ming wondered. He looked for an inn so that he could take a rest and ascertain the situation before deciding whether he wanted to climb up the mountain.

After entering the inn, Lin Ming swept out with his soul force. To his surprise, he found that there were many martial arts masters in the inn. Even the innkeeper had a cultivation of the First Stage of Body Transformation.

These people, were they here for the Thundergrass?

“Young Hero, are you here for Thundercrash Mountain?” The innkeeper smiled as he asked Lin Ming.

“Mm.” Lin Ming nodded. He had already taken off his face cover and had lowered his cultivation to the Viscera Training stage. This was the cultivation that a genius at Lin Ming’s age should have.

Even if the Fire Worm Shaman came here, he wouldn’t be able to find him.

“Ah, heroes truly come from the youth. Young Hero is so young but has already reached the Viscera Training stage. Impressive, impressive. But, it is dangerous to go to Thundercrash Mountain at only the Viscera Training stage. Going for a little experience is fine, but if you wish to pick some Thundergrass, it might be a little too much.”

Hearing these words, Lin Ming was happy. He was lacking some information on Thundercrash Mountain, but it seemed the innkeeper was knowledgeable about it.

He asked, “What use is there for Thundergrass? Why do so many people risk their lives to adventure up the mountain to pick it?” In Lin Ming’s opinion, Thundergrass should be valuable for thunder-attribute true essence martial artist. But this sort of martial artist was very rare, and demand for Thundergrass shouldn’t be so high.

The innkeeper was surprised, his cheeks filled with an odd color. This little kid was quite interesting. He didn’t know anything yet he still came to Thundercrash Mountain.

He said, “Thundergrass contains the power of Thunder. They can be refined with secret techniques and turned into Thunder Beads that are used to injure others. The power of Thunder Beads made by 50 year old Thundergrass is quite considerable. The power of Thunder Beads made from 100 year old Thundergrass is even more amazing. In the Southern Wilderness there are constant wars caused by the instability and chaos. Militaries are willing to acquire a large range of Thunder Beads in order to equip the army, they are comparable to the most powerful arrows.

“So it’s like this…” Lin Ming muttered as he learned.

The innkeeper said, “I have a pamphlet here that tells you about the basics of Thundercrash Mountain and notable places. Young Hero may buy one for 50 gold.”

“Alright!”

Lin Ming was quite happy to pay the money. He received the introduction pamphlet to Thundercrash Mountain. The Southern Wilderness didn’t have any universal woodblock printing process, so the pamphlet was handwritten.

After Lin Ming read the book, he finally understood why even Houtian realm masters only stayed at the bottom of the mountain.

In the final analysis, the reason was because of Thunder Lizards.

It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that the Thunder Lizard was the fiercest vicious beast of the Southern Wilderness!

A lizard was known as a four-legged snake. As the saying went: A snake born with four legs is a flood dragon! A flood dragon with two horns is a dragon!

Lizards did have similarities to flood dragons. And Thunder Lizards also had possessed the bloodline of flood dragons!

The power of a vicious beast with the bloodline of a Saint Beast could be imagined.

At the base of Thundercrash Mountain there were very few Thunder Lizards, and of the few there were, they only had very thin and impure bloodlines. These lizards were covered with white scales and they spat white lightning. Their strength ranged from the Altering Muscle stage to the Bone Forging stage.

The higher up one went, the more formidable the Thunder Lizards became. On the side of the mountain, the Thunder Lizards’ scales began to turn red. These Thunder lizards spat out red lightning. The Red Thunder Lizard’s strength was equal to a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist.

Higher up were the Blue Thunder Lizards. Their strength was equal to the Houtian realm.

It was said that at the summit, there existed a Purple Thunder Lizard, whose strength was equal to a Xiantian realm martial artist!

Seeing this, Lin Ming gasped. He had never seen a Xiantian realm martial artist before. He hadn't thought that on Thundercrash Mountain, there would be an existence that was equal to a Xiantian realm martial artist.

If there really was a Purple Thunder Lizard, then the lightning they could bring down might even turn a Houtian realm martial artist directly into ashes!

Thinking this, Lin Ming frowned.

Compared to an ordinary martial artist, he had an advantage. This was because he had a Thunder Soul within him, so he didn't fear thunder too much.

But just because he didn't fear too much didn't mean he was completely without fear.

Just several hours ago, Lin Ming had faced off against the little flame boy. The little flame boy's fire was capable of injuring him. This was because the enemy also had a Flame Essence within them, and it was a Flame Essence that was stronger than the one within Lin Ming's Heretical God Seed. Therefore Lin Ming had been unable to control the enemies flame.

"In Thundercrash Mountain I have a much higher ability to survive than a normal martial artist. But if I want to rush to the peak, there is still too far a distance..."

"First I'll go to the base of Thundercrash Mountain. Afterwards, I'll see how high I can climb.

Chapter 197 – Thundergrass

Chapter 197 – Thundergrass

…

…

…

During the day, Thundercrash Mountain was truly a marvelous spectacle to behold. Lush forests carpeted the base of the mountain, and 10,000 feet up the greenery thinned to shrubs and high grasses. Another 10,000 feet and there were only sparse weeds. As one gradually ascended, it slowly turned to icy plains of snow, and closer to the peak, there was no snow or ice; there were only the faint flashes of sizzling white lightning.

From bottom to top, it was dark green, yellow, brown, and eventually white.

Thundercrash Mountain was 100,000 feet high. The dense forest at the base was dozens of miles wide, and the trees were extremely large and tall. If seven or eight people holding hands wrapped around a tree, that tree could be considered a king among trees. However, in the forests of Thundercrash Mountain, this kind of tree was simply ordinary.

As Lin Ming walked along, he even saw a tree with a trunk that would take several dozen people to wrap around; it was over 1000 feet high, even the roots of the tree that stuck up from the ground were as large as a temple. This tree looked to be at least four or five thousand years old.

The deeper in water, the larger the fish. The forest was like this too. The deeper one went in, the higher the trees were and the fiercer the vicious beasts were.

There weren't only these monsters. There were also venomous snakes and insects that hid within the thick grass, they were extremely lethal due to their very toxic venoms.

Fortunately, Lin Ming had already applied a special Southern Wilderness oil to his body, so he didn't fear these poisons.

Lin Ming kept his guard up the entire time. As he saw these giant trees, he didn't think it was too strange that Thundercrash Mountain had been able to produce a Thunder Lizard that was equal to a Xiantian realm martial artist.

Of these vicious beasts, Lin Ming avoided those that he could. For the rest that chose to rush upon him, he would simply eliminate them.

Like this, Lin Ming safely traveled up the surrounding forest of Thundercrash Mountain and arrived at the hillside grassland areas. The grass here was no shorter than a human, and it was filled with countless venomous snakes and insects.

Lin Ming walked for a bit. Suddenly, something caught his attention. He saw that there was a small 30 foot patch of land with no grass, and a black rock in the center.

This rock was actually a chunk of magnetic ore. In a crevice of this rock there was a white sword-shaped grass that stubbornly grew. It was about a foot high, and there was a small white fruit blooming in the center. The fruit gleamed with a faint electric light.

Thundergrass!

When Lin Ming had bought the introductory pamphlet to Thundercrash Mountain, he had memorized the appearance of the Thundergrass. Thundergrass was quite conspicuous. They were usually only found within magnetic ore. Not only that, but because of the presence of the power of thunder, there often weren't any other plants in its surroundings. Like this, it was extremely easy to recognize.

"The leaf is white and the veins have a light red color… this should be 50 year old Thundergrass."

Lin Ming casually plucked the small white fruit of the Thundergrass, but left the plant itself intact. Thundergrass grew only within magnetic ore; it was not easy to nurture and grow. Lin Ming didn't want to destroy it, he only wanted to take the fruit that was filled with the power of thunder.

Holding the white fruit in his hand, Lin Ming focused and began to slowly drain the power of thunder that was contained within. The power of thunder flowed along his meridians and into his heart, where it was greedily absorbed by the Heretical God Seed.

Lin Ming was slightly disappointed when he tried to feel if there was any change in the Heretical God Seed's Thunder Soul. Of course, 50 year old Thundergrass simply wasn't valuable enough.

Lin Ming sighed. The power of thunder around the base of Thundercrash Mountain was less than that in the Seven Profound Martial House's Thunder Valley. It wasn't strange that there wouldn't be much here that was able to help his Thunder Soul grow. It seemed as if his dream of collecting a massive amount of young Thundergrass to cultivate his Thunder Soul was only an illusion.

If he wished to cultivate his Thunder Soul, then he would have to find Thundergrass that was several hundred years old or even 1000 years old. He might also have to find a way to extract the power of thunder from a Thunder Lizard's body, and if there was even a faint chance, find a Thunder Soul within Thundercrash Mountain.

Of course Lin Ming didn't even entertain any hope of that last possibility. Even if there was a Thunder Soul, it would most likely be within the summit of Thundercrash Mountain where lightning struck year-round. With just his own strength, there was no way for him to reach the top.

Lin Ming continued walking forward. Suddenly, he heard the faint sounds of fighting coming from up ahead.

In the high grass of these forests, one had to watch out for more than vicious beasts, they also had to be wary of other martial artists. It was simply too easy to kill someone and steal all their possessions, leaving them here to rot away with no clue as to who did it.

However, Lin Ming didn't worry about this. This was because the martial artists who hung around the base of Thundercrash Mountain were mostly below the Bone Forging stage.

Although it was said that not even Houtian realm martial artists would go more than halfway up the side of Thundercrash Mountain, the truth was that Houtian realm martial artists would almost never come here.

This was because the only value in coming to Thundercrash Mountain was Thundergrass. The martial artists that came here only came to pick Thundergrass. 100 year old Thundergrass sold for a bit more than 100 gold; it was a paltry amount that Pulse Condensation Period martial artists and above wouldn't even glance at.

As Lin walked through the grass, he saw figures in front of him flashing around. The sounds of fighting were becoming increasingly clear, and he could clearly hear the sounds of swords clashing as well as the deep roars of beasts.

As Lin Ming spread out his soul force, he was able to sense that in a clearing not too far away, five martial artists were encircling a vicious beast. This vicious beast looked like a rhinoceros, but its back was covered in scales and its tail was thick and long, with a barbed tip.

From the aura it was exuding, it was no weaker than an Altering Muscle martial artist. Its skin was rough and its flesh was thick. Every time it whipped its long and spiked tail, it had a power behind it that was easily able to shatter stones.

The vicious beast was surrounded by five martial artists; three men and two women. They had a symbol shaped like a small black dragon covering the right area of their chest; it seemed as if they were from the same family or the same school. The two women were identical twins, and looked to be around 18 or 19 years old. The sisters' cultivations were at the early Viscera Training stage, and they used longswords. The strikes lacked strength, and the sword wind from their blades only left superficial cuts on the iron armored rhinoceros' body.

A young man whose age was about the same as the twins was also at the early Viscera Training stage. His strength was a bit less than the twins – at most he could serve as a distraction.

Finally, the last two were older martial artists, respectively at the early Altering Muscle stage and the peak Altering Muscle stage.

The man who was leading the assault was the peak Altering Muscle martial artist. He was wearing an impressive black outfit, and he used a black darksteel staff as his weapon. Against a vicious beast whose body was entirely covered in armored scales, it was difficult to use a sword. Instead, the long staff had the greatest effect. The black-clothed martial artist had quick reflexes, and every time that armored vicious beast would switch targets, the black-clothed man would take advantage of the opportunity and quickly suppress it with the staff.

He especially attacked between the eyes of the armored rhinoceros. This was where the central nervous system of the armored rhinoceros was, and also its point of greatest weakness.

Although the armored rhinoceros had formidable defensive capabilities, it couldn’t stop the black-clothed martial artist from smashing it with his staff. Slowly, its vision began to blur and its movements dulled until it started to bleed from its eyes and ears.

The black-clothed martial artist saw an opportunity, and his whole body erupted with a torrent of true essence. The black darksteel staff in his hands began to shine with a deep red light.

“Five Mountains Collapse!”

The black-clothed martial roared as he used his strongest martial skill. His staff struck the armored rhinoceros on the forehead, and with a loud cracking sound, the armored rhinoceros’ head caved in, its skull broken.

The iron rhinoceros gave a pitiful howl, swayed on its feet, and finally fell to the ground.

“Senior Apprentice Brother’s Five Mountains Collapse is truly fierce!” The not yet 20 year old youth hurriedly flattered the black-clothed martial artist after he beat the armored rhinoceros to death.

The black-clothed martial artist smiled and guffawed, enjoying this immensely. He said, “Little Long, go and cut off the rhinoceros’ horn, that thing can sell for a high price.”

“Okay.” The youth called Little Long nodded and, in high spirits, went to cut off the rhinoceros’ horn.

The two twin girls came over. They enviously said, “Senior Apprentice Brother’s Five Mountains Collapse is becoming fiercer every day. We sisters still haven’t learnt a martial skill yet…”

All the words were flattery, there was also a small amount of resentment hidden within. To an ordinary martial artist, the legacy of a martial skill was hard to come by.

These five people could be considered the lowest level of marital artists. Their talent wasn’t impressive, and they came from an ordinary family background. They had joined an unknown small school of martial arts. But, this school in truth only had little more than a dozen students. They also only had one so-called ‘master’, who was at the peak Bone Forging stage.

These five people, in comparison to the worst disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House’s Human Hall, still had a big gap between them.

Hearing the two sisters’ complaints, the black-clothed martial artist laughed and said with a smile, “Sang Yu, Sang Lan, don’t be discouraged. Your talent is good, as long as you work hard and strive for excellence, then master will naturally teach you. In two days when I have a chance, I’ll put in a good word for you to the master, and ask him to hand down the ‘Nine Flower Blade’ to you.”

The two sisters heard this and were ecstatic. They sweetly said, “Thank you Elder Senior Apprentice Brother.”

The black-clothed warrior nodded in satisfaction. He liked the feeling of being able to influence the fate of others, especially when they were a pair of beautiful twin women.

But at this moment, he noticed Lin Ming not too far away. It seemed as if this youth had suddenly appeared out of nowhere. He was startled that he hadn't noticed him until now.

However, this young boy's cultivation was only at the early Viscera Training stage, so he wasn't worth caring about.

The black-clothed man glanced over and seemed to have suddenly remembered something. He said to Lin Ming. "Hello friend, did you come to Thundercrash Mountain for an adventure? Would you like to come along with us? We'll give you a low price. With your early Viscera Training cultivation, it's dangerous for you to go up Thundercrash Mountain. If you encounter a Thunder Lizard you will surely die."

As the black-clothed martial artist spoke, the other four also noticed Lin Ming. After they saw Lin Ming's cultivation, they were somewhat surprised. A newborn calf really didn't fear a tiger, this boy was truly fearless. His cultivation was only a trivial early Viscera Training stage, and he was by himself, yet he dared come to Thundercrash Mountain.

Lin Ming said, "No need, I'm used to being by myself."

After being rejected by Lin Ming, the black-clothed martial artist smiled and didn't say anything. Yet in his heart he had a hope that Lin Ming would suffer some misfortune later. Young people these days really didn't know how vast the world was. For a 15 or 16 year old to have a cultivation at the early Viscera Training stage was impressive. However, it was inevitable that his heart would swell from the self-confidence, and thinking that he was above the world, he would suffer some miserable fate. In the worst case, he would also lose his life.

The young man at the side of the black-clothed martial artist curled his lips as he heard Lin Ming's refusal, and whispered, "He doesn't know what's good for him. If Elder Senior

Apprentice Brother was willing to take him along, then he was already thinking highly of him. Since he rejected him, he’ll just die sooner or later.”

Chapter 198 – Thunder Lizard

Chapter 198 – Thunder Lizard

…

…

…

The young man at the side of the black-clothed martial artist curled his lips as he heard Lin Ming's refusal, and whispered, "He doesn't know what's good for him. If Elder Senior Apprentice Brother was willing to take him along, then he was already thinking highly of him. Since he rejected him, he'll just die sooner or later."

Lin Ming had very keen perception. Even though the youth wasn't speaking very loudly, he was still able to hear him. Of course, he had suppressed his cultivation to the early Viscera Training stage. The first reason was because he was taking precautions, and second was because he didn't want to stand out too much. With his age, it was simply too shocking to being able to reach the peak of Bone Forging.

In the end, these five martial artists came from a small place. They were only little fish in a little pond. They hadn't seen the world and didn't know how much talent was out in the wide world.

The twin girls didn't seem as if they could bear Lin Ming delivering himself into the jaws of death. They said, "Little Brother, if this your first time coming to Thundercrash Mountain, you need to know that this isn't a place you can casually play around in. After crossing the forest, there are many dangers; even a Viscera Training martial artist won't be able to live through it. We have Elder Senior Apprentice Brother to accompany us, so we're alright, otherwise we wouldn't dare. We won't charge you much money. Since you're away from home, it's always best to make friends.

Lin Ming was utterly speechless as he listened to the twin sisters speak. They actually thought that he came here for fun and games. Was there anyone that actually came to Thundercrash Mountain just for sightseeing?

The black-clothed martial artist saw that Lin Ming didn't seem as if he was going to change his mind. He said, "Leave him alone. Let's go."

He had wanted to earn some extra money, but it seemed the young boy just didn't know what was good for him. He was about to go when Lin Ming suddenly asked, "Do you have any Thundergrass I can buy? I will pay the market price."

The reason he had been patiently waiting for these fellows to finish off the vicious beast was to ask this. If he had some older Thundergrass, then he could give it a try and see if it was worth picking or not.

The black-clothed martial artist thought it was strange that Lin Ming would ask this. Was it possible that he cultivated thunder-attribute true essence? Why would he want to purchase Thundergrass?

Or was he buying it for his tribe? Even if he wanted to buy Thundergrass for his tribe, they wouldn't let a child come for it alone.

The black-clothed martial artist hesitated, and then asked, "How old do you want?"

Lin Ming said, "The older the better, I will let you decide the price."

As Lin Ming said this, the early Altering Muscle youth that was standing near the black-clothed martial artist brightened up. He sent a sent a true essence sound transmission and said, "Elder Senior Apprentice Brother, with what this kid says, he must be really rich."

The black-clothed martial artist ignored the youth and said to Lin Ming, "I have two stalks of 90 year Thundergrass. 300 gold taels. Do you want them?"

300 gold taels was slightly higher than market price, but Lin Ming didn't care. He waved his hand and three golden banknotes flew towards the black-clothed martial artist.

"These are the Allied Trade Association's currency gold banknotes. You can trade them in at a large tribe or the Sky Fortune Kingdom."

The black-clothed martial artist received the banknotes and confirmed that they really were from the Allied Trade Association. He took out a stalk of Thundergrass from his backpack and threw it towards Lin Ming.

After Lin Ming accept it, he glanced at it to confirm it was the correct age, and then walked away without looking back.

As the black-clothed martial artist saw Lin Ming gently trace the ring on his finger and the Thundergrass immediately disappear, a light flashed in his eyes. He hesitated for a moment, and then let Lin Ming leave.

Once Lin Ming had disappeared, the early Altering Muscle youth muttered, "Elder Senior Apprentice Brother, that fellow just now was such a juicy and fat sheep. I bet he has no less than 1800 gold on his body and you just let him go like that. In my opinion, we could have just grabbed him. If he doesn't know what is good for him, then we..."

The youth made a motion of slicing his neck. The black-clothed martial artist blankly looked at him and said, "1800 gold? You think that boy is so simple? That boy has a spatial ring! That's something that even our master can't afford! 1800 gold taels is probably nothing in his eyes!"

"Spa... spatial ring?" The youth was dumbfounded. "The hell, why would he bring such a thing over to Thundercrash Mountain? I'd probably never make that much money in my life. Why would such a rich junior come here?"

"He came for Thundergrass, but I'm not sure why he needs it."

The youth seemed as if he suddenly realized something. He quickly said, “Elder Senior Apprentice Brother, since he has a spatial ring, then he probably has several tens of thousands of gold. If we rob him, then we’ll never have to worry again in our life!”

“Rob your mom!” The black-clothed martial artist suddenly exploded as he heard the youth say this. “The boy definitely comes from some large sect or aristocratic family. That type of person always has many treasures on their body and is very difficult to deal with. If we can’t stop him, then all we can do afterwards is wait to die. He doesn’t look like a fool. If he came to Thundercrash Mountain at only the Viscera Training stage, then even I can’t guess what sort of trump cards he has to save his life.”

“Besides, we are not robbers. We will rely on our own ability to find food to feed ourselves. It’s better to be safe than sorry. Stealing and robbing is too dangerous. Sooner or later, we’ll fail and end up dead in the ground.”

The youth curled his lip. He was a bit disapproving of this decision. Obviously, he kept thinking of the several tens of thousands of gold that Lin Ming had. In his opinion, no matter how fierce a little 16 year old boy was, how fierce could he possibly me?

The twin girls were puzzled. They asked, “Elder Senior Apprentice Brother, what is a spatial ring?”

“Haha, a spatial ring is a kind of storage treasure. It’s only the size of a ring, but it can store several dozens of square feet worth of things. Just wait for me to reach the Pulse Condensation Period and I’ll get one to play with. At that time, I’ll show it to you.”

“Really? Great! If we have something like that, then we won’t need our backpacks anymore when we go out adventuring.” The twin girls were incredibly excited hearing about this wonderful treasure.

‘Cultivate to the Pulse Condensation Period and buy one to play with? This is just bragging with no ability…’ The early Altering Muscle youth criticized in his heart as he looked at the black-clothed martial artist showing off in front of the two beautiful twins. Of course, this was something that he wouldn't dare to speak out loud.

…………………………

Ten miles away, Lin Ming was sitting cross-legged on a rock. He grasped the two Thundergrass fruits in his hand. The fruits sparkled with the faint light of thunder. A moment later, the thunder light dissipated and the fruits withered along with it.

Lin Ming opened his eyes. Helplessly, he threw away the withered fruits.

The 90 year old Thundergrass was also mediocre. It did have a tiny effect, but it was just too small. Even if he absorbed several thousands of these fruits, the Thunder Soul would not grow more than 10%.

Not to mention how time consuming it would be to gather thousands of Thundergrass; the key problem was that Thundergrass by itself could not maintain growth of the Thunder Soul.

According to his past experiences, the Thunder Soul would quickly achieve a saturation point when absorbing low-grade thunders and lightning. Afterwards, it wouldn't grow any further.

However, Lin Ming wasn't discouraged. Before coming to Thundercrash Mountain, he had already mentally prepared himself for these types of setbacks. Since he came to Thundercrash Mountain, he would definitely find a fortuitous encounter here. However, a true fortuitous encounter couldn't be found by just anyone, otherwise they would all be gone by now. If that happened, how could he ever find one for himself?

"According to the Thundercrash Mountain pamphlet, the oldest Thundergrass can be thousands of years old, and the fruit it bears is purple in color. This kind of 1000 year old Thundergrass holds an incomparably potent power of thunder. If I can find a few of them, then my Thunder Soul should be able to grow a little. Unfortunately, it's simply to difficult to find Thundergrass like this."

As long as Thundergrass was given enough time it could grow to any age. It could grow to 1000 or even 2000 years. However, in these years, countless martial artists had come to Thundercrash Mountain. Most of the 50 year old Thundergrass was already plucked; how could there be anything older?

If he wanted to find 1000 year old Thundergrass, then the only places it would possibly be were the areas near the summit where no one dared to venture.

However, once past the mountainside; he could be in an area where even Houtian realm martial artists had to tread cautiously. Although Lin Ming had a Thunder Soul in his body and was very resistant to thunder and lightning, he still couldn’t go too deep.

As Lin Ming was thinking through the possible actions he could take, he suddenly heard a deafening beast roar sounding out from behind him. It was just like a thunderclap that reached the sky.

Screams soon followed. Hearing these pitiful cries, Lin Ming was able to recognize them as the people he had just passed a moment ago.

His heart stirred, and he instantly sped backwards. According to the Thundercrash Mountain pamphlet, this roar that was like a thunderclap was most likely from a Thunder Lizard.

Lin Ming wanted to see just what a Thunder Lizard was like. He had already been on Thundercrash Mountain for so long, yet this was the first time that he had heard one.

He wanted to see just how much he needed to fear the lightning that the Thunder Lizard could spit out, and just how high he could trek up Thundercrash Mountain.

And, he also wanted to know if a Thunder Lizard could become nourishment for his Thunder Soul, and if it was worth his time to hunt them.

Lin Ming launched his movement technique. His figure was just like a bolt of lightning. Because his speed was too quick, the scenery around him seemed to twist.

Lin Ming crossed that 10 mile distance in just a dozen or so breaths of time. When he arrived, he saw a giant vicious beast, with its entire body covered in gleaming red scales. It looked similar to a lizard, but its back was higher and its entire body bulged with a massive amount of bony plates. It actually looked somewhat like a massive red Earth Dragon.

At this moment, in front of the red Thunder Lizard, four people were standing there, frozen in absolute panic. They were the black-clothed elder senior apprentice brother at the peak of Altering Muscle, the two twin girls at the early Viscera Training stage, and the young boy at the early Viscera Training stage called Little Long.

As for the young martial artist who was at the early Altering Muscle stage, his entire body had been charred black and he had fallen to the ground. Apparently, he had eaten a thunder strike. Although he still had a breath of life within him, he was knocking at death's door.

The elder senior apprentice brother paled. He could clearly feel that the Thunder Lizard had already locked its sights on him. As soon as he moved, he would eat a lightning attack!

"Damn! How is there such bad luck that a peak Bone Forging Thunder Lizard is here!"

The black-clothed martial artist cried in his heart. With the Thunder Lizard staring at him, he didn't even dare to breath. The other three martial artists were close to succumbing to despair. Their second senior apprentice brother had instantly taken such a severe wound and was close to death; the three of them together amounted to less than a fly to this monster.

At this moment, the Thunder Lizard suddenly growled. It slowly turned its head as if it felt something behind it. It didn't know when, but a young boy had appeared from behind, holding a slender saber in his hand and standing in the grass.

Although this young boy didn't have an aura at all, the Thunder Lizard didn't know why, but it suddenly felt an extreme sense of danger.

"It's him?" The black-clothed martial artist and twins found that Lin Ming had returned. "Why did he come back? Did he come back especially for this Thunder Lizard?"

The black-clothed martial artist was aware of this point. However, all he felt was confusion. Even if this young boy came back, what could he possibly do?

Although he figured Lin Ming had some trump card in his hand that he could use to keep his life, the black-clothed martial artist guessed that this trump card was mainly used to escape from situations like this.

It had never occurred to him that Lin Ming's combat prowess was to a degree where he could deal with a peak Bone Forging Thunder Lizard.

Chapter 199 – Second Kill

Chapter 199 – Second Kill

…

…

…

Roar!

The Thunder Lizard issued a threatening growl. It changed its target towards Lin Ming, because it felt that this boy was a true threat!

This came from the power of thunder! Thunder Lizards had a rare and extraordinary sensitivity towards thunder. Although Lin Ming was able to restrain the breath within his body, it could still faintly feel that Lin Ming's body contained the power of thunder. Although this power was very nebulous, it contained a deep and incomparably vigorous aura that made it tremble with fear.

Lin Ming hadn't moved to attack. He patiently waited for the Bone Forging vicious beast to come at him. Such a beast wasn't a threat to him; he just wanted to see for himself what means of attack the Thunder Lizard had.

The atmosphere reached a temporary standstill. The black-clothed martial artist nervously looked between the Thunder Lizard and Lin Ming. He thought of escaping, but feared that the Thunder Lizard would suddenly turn against him and attack him. After several inner struggles, he decided to stay and see why this boy had the guts to return.

The Thunder Lizard even roared several times to warn Lin Ming, but not only did Lin Ming not leave, but instead approached it, step by step.

The Thunder Lizard finally became angry. Its body flowed with the frenzied bloodline of a Flood Dragon. It would not tolerate such provocations!

Roar!!!

The Thunder Lizard howled and opened its jaw to spit out a white ball of thunder, shooting directly towards Lin Ming.

The speed of the thunder ball was extremely fast and arrived at Lin Ming in just the blink of an eye. Lin Ming didn't dodge or evade. Instead, he revolved his true essence to the limit and prepared to take the attack head on.

The black-clothed martial artist was stunned. Why didn't he dodge? Although the thunder ball was fast, he should still have at least some sort of response. Not only that, but the youth should have some kind of trump card in his hand!

Chila!

The thunder ball directly sank into Lin Ming's body. The twin girls screamed. However, the explosion they had envisioned didn't occur. It was as if the thunder ball had fallen into a dark pit of Lin Ming's body and would never come back out. When the thunder ball submerged into Lin Ming, there wasn't a single ripple; not even Lin Ming's clothes were burnt!

Lin Ming eyebrows furrowed. After a few breaths of time, his expression relaxed, and the power of thunder in the thunder ball was absorbed by him!

The thunder was a bit wilder than the thunder from Thunder Valley. But, it was still unable to compete with the Heretical God Seed's Thunder Soul. It futilely struggled a bit, but ultimately it could not avoid the fate of being absorbed!

After completely absorbing the power of thunder, Lin Ming smiled. He was finally able to confirm that the Thunder Soul coped with the elements the same way the Fire Essence did, and that the Thunder Soul and Fire Essence within his body were stronger!

Fire and thunder would obey whatever was strong.

In the Lava Cave and Thunder Valley, whether it was fire or thunder, the Flame Essence and Thunder Soul were able to control the energy in those major killing arrays. It was as if the energy was an army without a general, and was a scattered mess that posed no threat, thus he was able to easily absorb it.

And later, Lin Ming encountered the little flame boy. Because the Flame Essence within the Heretical God Seed had been inferior to the power of the opponent, that was why it was such a difficult battle.

Whether it was a Flame Essence or Thunder Soul, these were incomparably rare phenomena. Lin Ming guessed that in the entire Thundercrash Mountain, it was already generous if there was just a single Thunder Soul here. And since it was impossible for these Thunder Lizards to have a Thunder Soul inside their body, how could they possibly be his match!?

So even though his strength was inferior to a Houtian realm martial artist, he should be able to climb higher than a Houtian realm martial artist!

The Thunder Lizard saw that Lin Ming didn't even have the slightest reaction after its thunder ball hit him. Its amber pupils dilated and showed a hint of fear. It roared a few times, and in one breath spat out seven or eight thunder balls that rapidly flew towards Lin Ming!

Lin Ming did not dodge or evade; he would accept it all!

This action caused the black-clothed elder senior apprentice brother to be completely baffled and even scared. The two twin girls subconsciously rubbed their eyes, thinking they had been shocked into seeing things.

How was this possible? Even a Houtian realm master wouldn't be able to stand there and take such a wanton barrage of thunder balls.

The black-clothed martial artist gulped saliva. Was this a human? Was his body made out of magnetic ore?

Heavens… fortunately, he hadn't tried to do something so foolish like trying to rob him, otherwise he would have already died!

The Thunder Lizard breathed out more than 10 thunder balls. Finally, it began to feel a deep fear. It realized that this was not an enemy that it could deal with.

With a hissing sound, the Thunder Lizard spat out one last giant thunder ball, turned tail and ran fled at full speed.

"You want to run away?"

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with electricity as he launched Golden Roc Shattering the Void. In an instant, he had appeared at the side of the Thunder Lizard, and punched out a fist!

Bang!

Lin Ming's solid punch slammed against the Thunder Lizard's back. The Thunder Lizard's body was covered in scales that were as hard as iron, but Lin Ming's attack was able to ignore superficial defenses. Unless the enemy was something like the Witch Slave from the Sorcerer Pagoda whose organs were firm like steel, it was basically impossible to withstand the infiltration of Flow like Silk.

Peng!

5000 vibrating true essence filaments broke into the Thunder Lizard's body and surged through, directly rampaging through its organs. The Thunder Lizard let out a miserable howl, and its gigantic body violently trembled. Its organs were all torn to pieces. It vomited blood and collapsed on the ground.

Crash!

Because of its terrifying body weight and the speed at which it had been sprinting, the Thunder Lizard had bowled over a large brush and slammed into a tree, snapping it in half.

The black-clothed martial artist helplessly watched as Lin Ming killed an over 10,000 jin Thunder Lizard with just a single punch; it was just like he had punched a dog to death. His expression turned pale with fright as if he had seen a ghost.

This Thunder Lizard had strength equal to the peak of Bone Forging! Its surface scales were nearly indestructible!

If Lin Ming had released some magnificent martial skill in order to kill the Thunder Lizard, then he wouldn’t be too surprised, but how was he able to kill it with a single punch?

A human’s fist against a Thunder Lizard’s armor was like a small sewing needle against a cat or dog.

If a needle poked the back of a cat or dog, would that be able to kill a cat or dog?

The black-clothed martial looked towards Lin Ming and his eyes filled with fear.

He stood there, not daring to move. The two twin girls’ expressions were also slack. They constantly kept gulping as they both cautiously maintained distance from Lin Ming. The scene in which Lin Ming killed a Thunder Lizard with a fist was simply too shocking.

After Lin Ming killed the Thunder Lizard, he drew out the slender saber and cut open the Thunder Lizard’s chest. After a few strokes, he managed to open up the body. What he was looking for, was the Thunder Pearl.

According to the Thundercrash Pamphlet, it had said that Thunder Lizards that were at the Bone Forging stage or above were able to form a Thunder Pearl within their bodies. This Thunder Pearl was also the origin of a Thunder Lizard’s power.

"Elder Senior Apprentice Brother, is he..." In the eyes of the two twin sisters, Lin Ming's existence already defied common sense. How was it possible that he was so young and yet had such strength?

The black-clothed martial artist murmured, "He is definitely not a 15 or 16 year old youth. I think that he practiced some cultivation method that rejuvenates the body, so that's why he appears like this."

"Then his cultivation is..."

"He should be at the peak Houtian realm!" After the black-clothed martial artist said this, even he was shocked into silence. Even if one were to look in the entire Southern Wilderness, one might not find more than a few peak Houtian realm masters!

"Peak Houtian realm? Could this be true?" The two twin girls said with shaking voices. They were usually in awe of their master, who was at the peak Bone Forging stage. As for what sort of concept a peak Houtian realm master was, it was just an inconceivable existence to them.

There was no large sect within the Southern Wilderness. A peak Houtian realm martial artist was the limit of the martial artists here. Because there were no Heaven Opening Pills, for the last several hundred years no one had managed to take a step into the true Xiantian realm.

It could be said that a peak Houtian realm martial artist already had the qualifications to dominate and rule an area of the Southern Wilderness as overlord. These were characters that they had only read about in legends and nighttime bed stories. Compared to existences like that, they were just ants waiting to be crushed.

The black-clothed martial artist said, "Only with such a cultivation could he have reached the realm of being able to hide his cultivation. How laughable. To think that I wanted to guide him before and even collect protection money..."

The black-clothed martial artist ruefully smiled and silently shook his head.

………………

Lin Ming quickly removed the Thunder Pearl from the body of the Thunder Lizard. This Thunder Pearl was about the size of a fist. It was a pure white color that also emitted a faint red light.

This color was the same as the Thunder Lizard’s scales, and represented the power ranking of the Thunder Lizard. When the Thunder Pearl turned a complete scarlet color, then this would be when the Thunder Lizard’s strength reached that of a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist.

With the Thunder Pearl in hand, Lin Ming could feel the power of thunder within. With a move of his mind, he began to slowly draw out the power. The light of the Thunder Pearl immediately began to die down.

Feeling the change in the power of thunder within his body, Lin Ming was slightly disappointed. This Thunder Pearl was at most equivalent to several hundred year old Thundergrass.

He turned and glanced back at the black-clothed martial artist. Lin Ming wasn’t intending to stay much longer. As Lin Ming prepared to walk away, he paused again as he heart heavy footsteps coming towards him. Lin Ming expanded his soul force.

“Mm? Another one came?”

Lin Ming sensed that a few tens of thousands of feet away, a Thunder Lizard was firing towards him at an alarming speed.

The black-clothed martial artist was able to feel this too. Although he didn’t have an equally potent soul force like Lin Ming, he could still feel the ground underneath him vibrating. Obviously, it was another Thunder Lizard that was rushing towards them.

Soon they were able to hearing the sounds of rolling thunder as the beast’s feet stomped the ground. That roar contained an incomparably tyrannical aura.

The black-clothed martial artist's heart was tight. He understood that the reason the Thunder Lizard came was for revenge.

The black-clothed martial artist hesitated for a moment, before he said to Lin Ming, "Senior, the last roar that the Thunder Lizard had sounded out was a message to his companions calling for aid. Listening to the aura from that roar, it seems that next Thunder Lizard should be equal to someone at the Pulse Condensation Period.

The black-clothed martial artist was very knowledgeable. He was able to determine the ranking of a Thunder Lizard by listening to the nuances within its roar.

But, the black-clothed martial artist thought that something was strange. They were only in the lower surrounding areas of Thundercrash Mountain, why would they encounter such a strong Thunder Lizard here?

"Could it be…?"

The black-clothed martial artist's mind began to race. Looking at Lin Ming, his eyes had a hint of hesitation. He just didn't know how to bring up the topic with this senior.

However, it was too late to think. With the sounds of tree branches cracking under a heavy weight, a fully crimson red Thunder Lizard stormed out of the bushes. It saw its mate already dead on the floor, and its amber brown eyes filled with anger and murderous intent.

Lin Ming looked at the Thunder Lizard and took the Heavy Profound Soft Spear out from his spatial ring.

This Thunder Lizard now was equal to a middle Pulse Condensation period martial artist. To deal with it with just a fist was somewhat difficult.

As the black-clothed martial artist, the two twin girls, and the Viscera Training stage youth saw Lin Ming facing off against the crimson beast, they unconsciously stepped backwards into order to not get caught up in such a dangerous battle. The twin girls suddenly remembered their second senior apprentice brother, and hurriedly rushed over to him to pull him away, so that he was not trampled to death by the Thunder Lizard and Lin Ming.

Chapter 200 – Thunder Attribute Treasures

Chapter 200 – Thunder Attribute Treasures

…

…

…

‘A Red Thunder Lizard’s strength is equivalent to a Pulse Condensation Period martial artist. I can’t believe that a Thunder Lizard at this level of power would appear at the base of Thundercrash Mountain. Something seems strange…’ Normally, martial artists that travel to Thundercrash Mountain would be at the Altering Muscle or Bone Forging stage. If they met a Red Thunder Lizard, like now, then they would inevitably die.

Although Lin Ming felt that the current situation was strange, he didn’t have any time to think about it. In an instant, the Thunder Lizard roared, and spat a giant thunder ball at him.

The ball of thunder was crimson in color, and was even much larger than the ones the White Thunder Lizard had let loose prior.

Like before, Lin Ming didn’t dodge.

Zizi!

The thunder ball submerged into Lin Ming’s body. The tingling sensation that burst forth was a bit more intense than before; this red lightning was much more violent than the previous white lightning.

Unfortunately, this lightning had no Thunder Soul. It was like an army that had lost its formation. When the red lightning flowed into Lin Ming's heart, it came face to face with the Thunder Soul in the Heretical God Seed and felt a deep instinctive fear.

It was just like a ferocious dog that bumped into a young tiger. Even though the tiger hadn't grown up, it still exudes the dignified majesty of the king of beasts.

The Thunder Soul swallowed the crimson lightning with no problems at all.

Upon noticing that Lin Ming had not moved even after his amazing display of strength earlier, the black-clothed martial artist's throat fiercely twitched. Although he had guessed that Lin Ming was powerful, he didn't think that he was powerful to the point where he could take a head-on collision with a thunder ball; it was even red lightning!

Lin Ming looked into his Heretical God Seed. Finally, he began to sense some growth within the Thunder Soul. This caused Lin Ming to feel delighted. It seemed that the red lightning gave a much higher qualitative improvement than white lightning. What would it be like if it were the even more violent blue lightning?

Lin Ming was filled with anticipation.

He decided to climb beyond the mountainside of Thundercrash Mountain. There, he would be able to encounter Thunder Lizards equal to a Houtian realm martial artist.

In his opinion, he didn't need to fear the thunder produced by the Thunder Lizards. Even if it was a dark blue Thunder Lizard whose power was equal to the peak Houtian realm, what could it's thunder attack do to him?

On the contrary, the thunder they released would be his elixir!

There was even a possibility that he would be able to see a legendary Purple Thunder Lizard whose power was equal to a Xiantian realm martial artist. If he could absorb some of this purple electricity, he couldn't even begin to imagine the sort of change that would occur within the Thunder Soul. With this realization, Lin Ming was filled with anticipation.

However, Lin Ming quickly discovered that he had been too naïve.

Once the Red Thunder Lizard saw that the thunder attack it was so proud of had failed, it quickly switched to physical attacks. The lizard tail, that was thicker than a water barrel, viciously whipped out!

The Thunder Lizard was too big, so its movement was a little slow. However, in terms of attack speed, it was no worse than a human martial artist!

Lin Ming's eyes narrowed as he launched Golden Roc Shattering the Void, vanishing from sight!

Bang!

The Thunder Lizard's tail smashed a giant hole in the ground. Even the magnetic ore in the ground was smashed to pieces.

Lin Ming let out a breath of air. That attack was too strong. He could take on the thunder strike of the Thunder Lizard, but there was no way that he could resist a direct confrontation with that tail.

"How stupid was I to actually think that the Thunder Lizard could only use thunder attacks. Moreover, it seems like even if they just use physical attacks, they wouldn't lose to vicious beasts of the same level."

"With my current strength, provoking a Xiantian realm Purple Thunder Lizard is just looking for death."

Having understood the offensive techniques used by Thunder Lizards, Lin Ming no longer delayed. He flourished the Heavy Profound Soft Spear with his speed reaching the limit; man and spear were like a meteor that shot towards the Thunder Lizard!

The spear point bloomed with licking flames that resembled a crimson lotus. The momentum of this whistling flame was no weaker than thunder!

"Puff!"

The long spear shattered the Thunder Lizard's scales and pierced straight through!

Flow like Silk and True Essence Flame burst out at the same time. The Thunder Lizard shook and vomited blood shortly after.

The Thunder Lizard pitifully howled, as it swept its tail towards Lin Ming. However, Lin Ming easily dodged it. Due to being severely weakened, the strike had only left a shallow indent on the ground.

Lin Ming pulled out the long spear and punched the Thunder Lizard between the eyes. Vibrating true essence erupted once more. The Thunder Lizard could not resist these two successive attacks, and with a slight quiver, it slumped to the ground.

With Lin Ming's current level of power, he was easily able to deal with an early Pulse Condensation vicious beast.

Lin Ming cut open this Red Thunder Lizard and took out the red Thunder Pearl.

With a thought, the power of thunder flowed into Lin Ming's body, an extremely comfortable yet numbing feeling followed along with it. The Thunder Soul that hid inside the Heretical God Seed ran around in circles, seeming very enthusiastic.

The power of red thunder was quickly absorbed by the Thunder Soul. This time, Lin Ming sensed some satisfying growth. If he could continue like this then with another 10 or 20 red Thunder Pearls, his Thunder Soul should grow by about 10%.

Of course, this kind of growth couldn't be sustained. After another 40 or 50 percent, the red thunder wouldn't be able to further affect the Thunder Soul's growth.

At that time, he would have to look for a more formidable thunder in order to cultivate his Thunder Soul.

……..

Not too far away, the two twin girls were applying medicine onto the Altering Muscle youth. However, the Altering Muscle youth's injuries were simply too severe. These two young girls could only wrap some cloth and herbs around the boy in order to barely preserve his life.

One of the easiest attacks to inflict hidden wounds were those of thunder attribute. If a human body was hit by a powerful electric current, even if they survived, their heart would easily fail and they would die a few years later. This was because the thunder had passed through the heart and had left behind injuries that weren't visible on the outside.

Under these circumstances, this youth would have to stay in bed for a year or more. Following that, he might not be able to continue practicing martial arts, also, he wouldn't live much longer.

The Altering Muscle youth groaned in pain. Seeing their Second senior-apprentice brother in such a miserable state, the two girls could only endure. The Elder senior-apprentice brother, the black-clothed martial artist, didn't seem to care about the Altering Muscle youth. Instead, he looked at Lin Ming, as if he were hesitating to say something.

Noticing Lin Ming about to walk away, the black-clothed martial artist finally opened his mouth and said, "Senior, please wait."

Lin Ming stopped and turned around to look at the black-clothed martial artist. He coldly asked, "What do you want?"

Although Lin Ming never had any conflict with the black-clothed martial artist and his group, he remembered the avaricious looks that the Altering Muscle had sent towards Lin Ming. Lin Ming naturally knew what sort of plans that he had been thinking of at that time. To that kind of person, he had no compassion. Even though he possessed some superior healing medicine in his spatial ring that could relieve his pain, he didn't plan on taking them out to help him.

Lin Ming thought that the black-clothed martial artist was going to beg him to save his junior-apprentice brother, but he hadn't expected that the black-clothed martial artist would instead say, "Senior, I have a guess, but I don't know if it's proper to say." The black-clothed martial artist was afraid that if he failed to deliver, then he would suffer from Lin Ming venting his anger on him.

"What guess?"

The black organized his thoughts and continued, "My school's master once came to Thundercrash Mountain to adventure and accumulated experiences, many of which he had told me. Although my cultivation is not high, I've already come to Thundercrash Mountain five times. With my experience and my master's experience, I can say that I have a relatively good understanding of Thundercrash Mountain.

Lin Ming nodded. He also noticed this point. The black-clothed martial artist had only relied on the roar of the Thunder Lizard to judge its strength. To Lin Ming, there was no difference between the roars of the two Thunder Lizards.

The black-clothed martial artist said, "As far as I know, there shouldn't be any Bone Forging or stronger Thunder Lizards at the base of Thundercrash Mountain. However, two had actually appeared, one of which was at the Pulse Condensation Period, which is too unusual."

"Thunder Lizards also have their own tribal groupings. The tribal group also has divisions within. The stronger a Thunder Lizard is, the higher their status and the closer to the summit their territory is. The power of thunder is richest at the summit. But, the power of thunder weakens the further down it goes."

"Continue speaking." Lin Ming thought that the Thunder Lizards were somewhat similar to human society. The more powerful martial artists held more cultivation resources.

With Lin Ming encouragement, the black-clothed martial artist was a bit more spirited. He no longer trembled, and said, "The power of thunder is limited in a territory. None of the

Thunder Lizards are willing to let others absorb it. Unless there is an accident, a Thunder Lizard will not leave their own territory. Otherwise, there might be conflict. A high-level Thunder Lizard wouldn't normally come down the mountain. The only reason would be...."

The black-clothed martial artist spoke here and said, "These are only guesses, I don't know if they're true."

"Say it, it doesn't matter if you're wrong." Lin Ming saw the black-clothed martial artist look a little concerned, and spoke to assuage his nerves.

"Mm. Yes, I think that the two Thunder Lizards had evolved. They should have been Altering Muscle stage Thunder Lizards, but by encountering some fortuitous opportunity, managed to evolve to the peak Bone Forging stage and Pulse Condensation Period."

"Oh? What kind of fortuitous chance?" Lin Ming asked. This was finally piquing his interest.

"Senior may not know, but because the power of thunder within Thundercrash Mountain is too rich, it will sometimes produce valuable thunder attribute materials. Thundergrass is only the most ordinary of these."

"You suspect that these two Thunder Lizards have eaten some sort of valuable thunder-attribute material?"

The black-clothed martial artist shook his head. He said, "It shouldn't have been eaten. Thunder Lizards most love to hoard things, such as Thundergrass. Thunder Lizards love to see more Thundergrass grow in their territory because the power of thunder will be richer and its long term effects are much better than eating the Thundergrass. That's why centuries old Thundergrass are usually guarded by high-level Thunder Lizards.

"A Thunder Lizard lives for a very long time. There are even some Thunder Lizards that protect 5 or 6 hundred year old Thundergrass and wait for it to grow into 1000 year old Thundergrass. But, a Thunder Lizard will also have great benefits guarding it, which are much better than directly eating it. If there is a thunder-attribute material, then a Thunder

Lizard will not eat it. If they eat it they might experience a small growth, but if they defend it and wait for it to grow up, then they will have endless benefits.”

Lin Ming said, “I understand what you mean. You think that these two Thunder Lizards are defending a treasure, and that’s why there were able to evolve. I want to know why you’re telling me this news; wouldn’t it be better if you went to dig out this treasure out yourself?”

Chapter 201 – Nest Cavern

Chapter 201 – Nest Cavern

…

…

…

The black-clothed martial artist ruefully smiled and said, “I want to, but I would have to have the strength for the job. This kind of treasure might not be protected by just two Thunder Lizards. It might even possibly be a small Thunder Lizard tribal group. If I do go, I fear I would already be dead before I even arrived.”

“Even if I arrive safely, and have the luck to not encounter any Thunder Lizards, the rare thunder-attribute treasure is not something that I can meddle with. It contains a very potent power of thunder. Let alone a valuable thunder attribute material, I can’t even pick 500 year old Thundergrass. If I accidently touch the leaves, then I would follow the same fate as my junior-apprentice brother.”

The black-clothed martial artist glanced at the Altering Muscle youth who was lying unconscious on the ground.

Lin Ming said, “Whether your guess is correct or not, the information you told me is very valuable. Speak up, what sort of reward do you want?”

The black-clothed martial artist was delighted; he had spoken up with this end goal in mind. If the other party eats the meat, it’s fine even if he was just given a little bit of soup. He hesitated and said truthfully, “I don’t know if there really is a treasure, so it’s a bit hasty to talk about rewards. It’s just…Senior; could you please save my junior-apprentice brother first? If he’s left in this state any longer, he might remain disabled for his entire life…”

The black-clothed martial artist spoke with some difficulty. Since he didn't know how old Lin Ming was, or maybe even that Lin Ming was some old monster, he might have heard him and his junior-apprentice brother's conversation. He could only hope that this mighty elder wasn't someone who would keep such small things in his heart.

Sure enough, Lin Ming said, "No problem."

Towards the trivial little guy lying on the floor, Lin Ming didn't really bother to care about him.

He pulled out a vial of pills from his spatial ring and walked over to the twin girl's side.

Over half of the youth's body was charred. After he probed the youth with his soul force, Lin Ming discovered that there was still a very oppressive power of thunder that remained in his body. The reason the youth was so gravely wounded was because of the continued ravaging of this thunder.

Lin Ming grabbed onto the youth's hand. Using his Thunder Soul, he was easily able to drain the power of thunder out from the youth, and absorb it all into the Thunder Soul.

Then, he took out a pill from the vial in his hand and shoved it into the youth's mouth.

Although the twin sisters didn't know what sort of medicine Lin Ming had fed their second senior-apprentice brother, they only had to see how the pill sparked with light while emitting a rich fragrance to guess that this pill was definitely an expensive miracle medicine.

It was said that a high-level miracle medicine was commonly worth thousands of gold taels. There were even pills that could directly enhance a martial artist's cultivation that cost tens of thousands of gold taels.

If they could obtain such a pill, then the two sisters wouldn't have to suffer such hardship in their struggle to reach the Altering Muscle stage. Thinking of this, the two sister's eyes heated up with a little bit of envy.

The power of thunder had already been removed by Lin Ming. Together with the quick efficacy of the pill, the unconscious youth coughed and woke up. He looked around in a daze. The heavy attack he had received caused him to forget what had happened to him.

"Good," Lin Ming stood up and said to the black-clothed martial artist, "Let's go."

"Mm. Thank you Senior." The black-clothed martial artist wanted to leave the twin sisters behind to look after Second Junior-apprentice Brother, but, he was worried about letting them stay here by themselves, so he let them all to go together.

The black-clothed martial artist had done a great deal of research into tracking Thunder Lizards. He was able to follow their tracks and traces of activity to retrace their steps. Even if it was hard stone ground where the footsteps were scattered, he was still able to rely on smell and other clues to accurately continue.

Finally, he brought Lin Ming to the lair of the two Thunder Lizards.

"It's there, behind that big stone."

The black-clothed martial artist pointed to an extremely secluded and well-hidden cavern not too far away. The cavern was completely composed of magnetic ore, and it was pitch dark inside. It looked just like the mouth of a giant vicious beast.

Lin Ming investigated with his soul force and found that there was a very vibrant power of thunder that undulated from inside the cavern. It was right to come along.

He would also have to thank the black-clothed martial artist, otherwise he wouldn't have found this place.

Lin Ming said, "It's fine if you wait outside. I'll go in."

Once the big stone was removed, the cavern entrance was just a bit wider than ten feet; it was just enough for a Thunder Lizard to pass through. It seems that this stone was moved by the Thunder Lizard in order to hide the entrance to the cavern. It was just like a gate, every time someone went in or out they had to move the gate.

Lin Ming spread out his soul force and cautiously walked into the cavern. The atmosphere inside was dark and damp, but it didn't affect Lin Ming's perception.

He walked a few dozen feet in, when he suddenly saw a light in front of him. The inside of the cavern was actually a very large space. There were small little inlets flowing through the ground, and the sound of water dripping onto the ground clearly reverberated through the empty silence of the cavern.

'The scenery here isn't too bad,' Lin Ming thought while maintaining a high degree of vigilance.

At this moment, he suddenly felt his heart go cold. A dark murderous intent had lock onto him, and a feeling of imminent danger rose from his heart. In the next second, a red light flashed and a thunder ball struck Lin Ming's body!

'Thunder Lizard.'

Lin Ming instantly took out the Heavy Profound Soft Spear. This Thunder Lizard was even stronger than the last two he had encountered, and the influx of red lightning that penetrated his body was much more oppressive. Even though Lin Ming had a Thunder Soul, he wasn't able to immediately quench it.

At this moment, the Thunder Lizard that had been hiding in the shadows roared again. Red balls of thunder shot out one after another and seven or eight of them bombarded Lin Ming like a fierce storm.

Kacha! Kacha! Kacha!

The rocks around Lin Ming were split apart by the force of this attack. Lin Ming stood in the center of this thunder barrage, accepting every single strand of thunder. An intense and painful tingling sensation flooded into him. At first, Lin Ming was extremely uncomfortable, but as the vast power of thunder was gradually being absorbed by him, Lin Ming felt a faint hint of excitement.

‘Good heavens, this peak Pulse Condensation Period Thunder Lizard is no weaker than Chi Guda!’ Recognizing the strength of this Thunder Lizard, Lin Ming was thrilled. Without a doubt, the only reason that this lizard was able to evolve had to be because of some rare thunder-attribute treasure.

The Thunder Lizard found that the usually unstoppable power of its thunder barrage was having no effect whatsoever on Lin Ming. It snarled and dashed towards Lin Ming, wanting to slam him against the stone wall and squash him into a meat patty.

Lin Ming gave a loud shot. He stepped back with his left foot, pressing it against the rock. He lifted both his arms up and true essence erupted from his body. The Heavy Profound Soft Spear was like a mountain that fell from the sky!

Bang!

Lin Ming’s spear struck the top of the Thunder Lizards back. At the same time, his body took advantage of the inertia and sprang upwards. Right after, the Thunder Lizard collided against the rock wall, and the entire cavern shook like an earthquake had occurred as massive stones started cascading down.

The black-clothed martial artist and the twin sisters had been waiting outside the cave when they suddenly heard a raging roar and the sound of an intense impact ringing from inside. They immediately blanched.

The two sisters even considered leaving first. If that senior inside had an accident and the vicious beast ran out, then they would die with him.

“Senior-apprentice Brother, we aren’t....”

“It’s alright.” The black-clothed martial artist waved his hand in dismissal. Listening to the roar, he was able to judge the strength of the Thunder Lizard inside. It shouldn’t be a match for Lin Ming.

He thought that the male and female Thunder Lizard from before were spouses, but it seemed that they were actually mother and child. Currently inside the cavern was actually the fiercest grown-up male lizard!

Whiz!

The Thunder Lizard struck out with its tail. Lin Ming roared and Flow like Silk burst out. Without hesitation he lifted the spear and smashed down onto the tail.

Kacha!

There was the sound of stone cracking. Lin Ming’s Heavy Profound Soft Spear had bent into a crescent moon!

Even though the Heavy Profound Soft Spear was very elastic, it still couldn’t resist such a strong shock. Normal martial artists would already have their hands paralyzed and even broken their arms from such an impact.

However, after Lin Ming entered the Sorcerer Pagoda, his body’s physical strength had become fearsome. He was able to resist this impact, and instead, it was the Thunder Lizard’s spine that was injured by Flow like Silk.

“Die!”

Lin Ming didn’t waste any more time. He directly opened the Heretical God Force!

Thunderfire Annihilation!

In order to deal with a peak Pulse Condensation Period master, Lin Ming could only use his strongest move. At worst, he would just return to the cavern and wait until he was restored to peak condition before he exited again.

The power of thunder and fire intertwined together. The dark cave instantly bloomed with a dazzling brilliance, as if a sun had begun to rise from inside the cave!

The vivid blaze of light illuminated out from the cavern; even the black-clothed martial artist and the two twins couldn't help but close their eyes. Following closely was an ear-shattering explosion; it was at least 10 times louder than the Thunder Lizard's roar!

A visible shockwave rushed out from the dark cavern. The 10,000 jin large stone that had been used to block the cavern entrance was sent flying like a lightweight ball that had been kicked; it instantly flew across the air.

The entire cave trembled. Even the rocky ground underneath shook as a violent tremor passed through the entire cavern and countless stones fell from the ceiling. At that moment, the two twin girls suspected that the cavern was about to collapse.

....

In the cave, waves of blood had already stained the ground crimson. Lin Ming was propping himself up with the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, panting for breath as he stared at the huge corpse of the Thunder Lizard.

Although Lin Ming's strength had greatly increased after entering the Sorcerer Pagoda, the amount of true essence that Thunderfire Annihilation used had increased correspondingly.

In just one move, almost 40% of Lin Ming's vast true essence reserves had been consumed. The cost was considerable.

Lin Ming crammed some pills into his mouth and pulled out a True Essence Stone as he continuously absorbed the true essence within. After he recovered a bit, Lin Ming stood up and continued to walk deeper into the cavern. He didn't even bother taking the time to cut out the Thunder Pearl from the dead Thunder Lizard.

Lin Ming had already probed further into the cavern with his soul force, and didn’t sense any other enemies or threats within. At the end of the cave, he found a red bamboo rooted in a hard magnetic ore surface, stubbornly growing.

Red arcs of lightning twined around the bamboo branch as it crackled. The bamboo leaves were just like sharp swords.

A incomparably formidable power of thunder was steadily streaming out from this bamboo. Without a doubt, this bamboo was the reason for the cave’s rich power of thunder.

This bamboo was the thunder-attribute treasure that the black-clothed martial artist had mentioned.

Chapter 202 – Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo

Chapter 202 – Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo

…

…

…

Looking at this red thunder bamboo, Lin Ming was able to feel a formidable power emanating from it.

Feeling exuberant, he prepared to pick the bamboo. However, he immediately paused. Was there a taboo in picking this sort of valuable material?

He had never seen this thunder bamboo before, but maybe the black-clothed martial artist might have heard about it. With this thought, Lin Ming called out to the black-clothed martial artist to come in.

The black-clothed martial artist had been waiting patiently outside the cave, feeling a bit perturbed. He was afraid that he had guessed wrong and had aroused Lin Ming's wrath because of that. Although Lin Ming had said it didn't matter if he was right or wrong, no one could guarantee that Lin Ming wouldn't turn hostile against them.

At this moment, he heard the voice of Lin Ming sound in his ear, speaking only a few words, "Enter the cave and check this for me."

The black-clothed martial artist's heart tightened. He grit his teeth and told the twin sisters and the Viscera Training stage youth, "Come in with me."

The group cautiously entered on their tippy-toes. Due to the dim lighting in the cave, as the twin girls were walking deeper, they felt something bump against their feet. As soon as they peered downwards, they saw a massive Red Thunder Lizard lying dead on the floor. The twins almost fainted as they let out an alarming cry.

"It's okay, it's already dead," The black-clothed martial artist assured.

As he saw the deep scarlet scales of the Thunder Lizard, the black-clothed martial artist was startled. This was a Thunder Lizard that was equal to a peak Pulse Condensation Period martial artist in strength! Even if it was his master who encountered this fellow, he would instantly be killed, yet now, this fearsome beast had been slaughtered.

As the group reached the end of the cave, the black-clothed martial artist finally arrived to where Lin Ming was at. The moment the black-clothed martial artist laid eyes on the crimson bamboo in front of Lin Ming, he let out a sigh of relief. He wasn't wrong!

Lin Ming pointed at the red bamboo and asked, "You know what this is?"

The black-clothed martial artist shifted his vision to the red bamboo. He hadn't taken a good look at it a moment ago, but now that he carefully reviewed hit, he was instantly awed. "This…this is probably Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo!"

"Mm? Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo?" Lin Ming looked at the red bamboo and the red lightning that twined around the bamboo. 'Why wasn't this called Red Electricity Spirit Bamboo instead?'

The black-clothed martial artist saw Lin Ming's doubting expression and said, "This is because the bamboo hasn't grown up yet. When Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo is 60 years old it's's shoots would be white. When it's 900 years old it's shoots would be red. And when its 9000 years old it's shoots are purple."

Lin Ming said, "This is only a young bamboo?"

"Mm."

“This....” Lin Ming couldn’t help but be slightly disappointed. Even if it was a rare material, it was still only a young bamboo, so its inherent power was limited.

The black-clothed martial artist saw Lin Ming’s disappointment and consoled, “Senior, although it is only 900 year-old bamboo, it is still very precious and rare. Not only that, but since there is a young bamboo, then there should be a Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo too. Every 9000 years only one bamboo shoot will be born. The small bamboo shoot will drill through magnetic ore and live inside until it finds a good place to break out, where it will grow into white bamboo.”

“Oh?” Lin Ming mind’s stirred. “You mean to say that there is an adult Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo in Thundercrash Mountain?”

“Yes, if there isn’t a problem, then there should be. Moreover, that bamboo should already be 9,900 years old.”

A Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo would only breed a new bamboo shoot every 9000 years. Since this red bamboo shoot was already 900 years old, then the adult should be 9900 years old.

“9900 years old.....” Lin Ming furrowed his eyebrows. It was said that thunder had been striking Thundercrash Mountain for 10,000 years. That would mean that this bamboo was nearly as old as Thundercrash Mountain!

If Lin Ming wasn’t wrong, then this bamboo would definitely be at the summit of Thundercrash Mountain!

But with his current strength, if he met a Houtian realm Blue Thunder Lizard, he could only run for his life; how would he ever reach the summit?

And the legends even said that there was a Purple Thunder Lizard that was equal to a Xiantian realm martial artist!

In addition, he was afraid of the probability of there being more than one.

Even if Lin Ming was able to resist the lightning that the Purple Thunder Lizards spat out, there was no way that he could resist their physical assault.

The Thunder Lizards had the blood of a Flood Dragon flowing through their veins; they were not common vicious beasts.

Although he knew there was little hope, more so that there would be danger within danger, Lin Ming still decided to climb up Thundercrash Mountain. He would climb until he reached his limit; until he was no longer able to go even one more step higher, otherwise he would regret it forever.

Lin Ming asked the black-clothed martial artist, “Is there a taboo to picking the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo?”

The black-clothed martial artist answered, “It is hard to sever Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo with swords or spears; it can only be easily cut off with the power of thunder. But Senior, this sort of Spirit Bamboo doesn’t form easily, it comes from a combination of Thundercrash Mountains energy and the spiritual pulse of the land. If possible, I hope that Senior can leave the bamboo root so that in a few hundred or thousand years, a new Violet Electricity Bamboo can be born.”

“I understand.” Lin Ming nodded. It wasn’t admirable to destroy a valuable material’s origins; it was quite a dreadful thing. This sort of treasure only formed in extremely difficult conditions; it needs all sort of luck and special environments to form.

Normally, a martial artist would abide by this unwritten rule; it could be considered accumulating a bit of good karma.

Lin Ming pulled out his saber. It’s sharp blade was bright as snow, and it shimmered with a deadly cold gleam. This was the high-grade human-step treasure that was taken from Huo Gong, and it was also the saber he carried with him.

Let alone a high-grade human-step treasure, the twin sisters hadn't even seen many low-grade human-step treasures. Only their master had a low-grade human-step treasure sword. The two twin sisters were, once again, filled with envy.

Lin Ming didn't mind revealing his wealth. With his current strength, even if he wore a high-grade human-step treasure and it became public, he would still be able to protect it.

True essence poured into the Thunder Soul within the Heretical God Seed. The power of thunder steadily streamed out, and the snow white treasure sword began to sparkle with a faint purple light.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and aimed at the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo's root. He slashed out!

Cha!

Lin Ming hadn't imagined that it would be so tough. The crimson blood-coloured Spirit Bamboo was cut down, its edges smooth like a mirror.

When Lin Ming reached out to grab it. The black-clothed martial artist cried out in alarm. This Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo contained the violent power of thunder. A normal martial artist's arm would be charred to ash. But, thinking of Lin Ming's strength and the way he had been able to take on the Thunder Lizard's thunder ball, he felt that it should be alright.

Sure enough, Lin Ming gripped the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo. Besides looking a little stiff, there wasn't any difference. Even his clothes were alright.

'What a strong power of thunder!'

Lin Ming praised the bamboo in his mind. If 900 year old red bamboo had such a potent force contained within, then what would 9000 purple bamboo be like? It was simply unimaginable.

Unfortunately, this bamboo was taken too early; it wasn't able to grow into that.

Although he didn't entertain much hope, Lin Ming still asked, "Is there any way to grow Violet Electricity Thunder Bamboo?"

The black-clothed martial artist said, "It's impossible. Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo must grow in lands that are rich in the thunder element, such as Thundercrash Mountain. Not only that, but the bamboo has a proud character and won't be raised."

"Mm. I understand."

Lin Ming placed the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo into his spatial ring and glanced at black-clothed martial artist's party of four.

He looked at the two swords in the twin girls hands, and hesitated slightly. He said, "Take out your swords and let me have a look."

"....Okay." The two young girls obediently drew out their swords. The soft swords were forged from fine steel. To a mortal blacksmith, making this sword would not have been easy. But compared to a treasure sword made by a refining master, it was far weaker.

Lin Ming traced his finger on his spatial ring and three low-grade human-step treasure swords appeared in his hands.

Seeing the swords emit a snow bright light, the twin sister's eyes widened....an idea caught in their mind that made their heartbeat accelerate and their mouths dry. Were these swords for them? Could they also have a treasure like this one day?

"For you." Lin Ming casually tossed the swords and they pierced tip first into the magnetic ore. These swords were made by Huo Gong. Lin Ming had no use for the 30 low-grade human-step treasures that he had made; giving them away was just right. Of course, the low-grade human-step treasures that Huo Gong had made were very good; they were much better compared to a normal low-grade human-step treasure.

"For...for us?" The twin sisters mind reeled in surprise. They hadn't dared to imagine that they would ever have a reward, and it would be the dream treasure they had longed for!

Lin Ming said, "You'd best be careful and put it somewhere safe, otherwise it will likely be taken. These three treasure can tempt even peak Bone Forging martial artists."

"Yes, yes!" The two twin sisters hurriedly nodded, looking at Lin Ming with eyes filled with gratitude and hero worship.

At this moment, Lin Ming looked towards the black-clothed martial artist. The black-clothed martial artist felt his heartbeat rapidly rising. He had seen Lin Ming casually toss out three top low-grade human-step treasures without even batting an eye; it was as if he treated them like scrap iron! These three treasure swords were no less than 8 or 9 thousand gold taels!

What would he receive? The black-clothed martial artists had a giddy feeling of excitement, anticipation, and apprehension.

Lin Ming looked at the black-clothed martial artist and said, "Your weapon is a staff. It's too bad, but I do not have a treasured staff. I do have a dark purple elastic iron spear, but because it was a weapon I once used, I cannot give it to you..."

Hearing Lin Ming say this, the black-clothed martial artist was slightly disappointed. But, Lin Ming's following words caused his heart to be filled with a great joy.

Lin Ming stated, "Cultivation pills, 20,000 gold, cultivation method. You can choose one."

Cultivation pills, 20,000 gold, and also a cultivation method?

The black-clothed martial artist mouth dried. If he wasn't able to reach the Pulse Condensation Period, then he would never be able to earn 20,000 gold in his lifetime. As for the cultivation pills, those were dream treasures that martial artists longed for. And since these were pills given by this senior, they must be priceless.

The black-clothed martial artist went through a series of mental battles. He finally said, “I want the cultivation method!”

Compared to pills or gold, a cultivation method was the most important. This was the foundation of every martial artist!

“Good. But, I warn you. Do not reveal this cultivation method to the public, otherwise you may experience calamity.” Lin Ming flicked his hand and a jade slip appeared in his palm.

This was the medium-step human-grade cultivation method manual that he had taken from Huo Gong after his death. This set of cultivation methods did not belong to the Seven Profound Valleys, otherwise Lin Ming would not dare to hand it over. If he was right, then this cultivation method should be taken from other martial artists that Huo Gong had killed. In short, it had a questionable background, and Lin Ming didn’t want to have it with him in order to avoid future trouble. Giving it to someone of the Southern Wilderness was a good choice.

The black-clothed martial artist received the jade slip and probed with his soul force. He was immediately overjoyed.

‘Medium-grade human-step cultivation method!’

Chapter 203 – Near the Summit

Chapter 203 – Near the Summit

…

…

…

This medium-grade human-step cultivation method was absolutely worth more than 20,000 gold taels. Although Lin Ming had said that this cultivation method could give rise to a fatal calamity, the risk was nothing compared to the tremendous rewards that this cultivation method would bring.

The black-clothed martial artist thought increasingly more that telling Lin Ming about the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo was the best choice he had ever made. He didn't have the ability to cut the spirit bamboo down, but even if he did, there was no way he could sell it. If he took this level of treasure out and showed it to others, he would be eaten to the bones.

"You can only take the Thunder Lizard's blood away; I have no need for it." Lin Ming said this because the Thunder Lizard had the bloodline of a Flood Dragon flowing in it, so their blood had a very great medicinal value. If it was placed in a bath, one could soak in blood and come out with a stronger and healthier body.

The black-clothed martial artist's group of four nodded in joy. This was a great harvest of income. The blood of a Red Thunder Lizard that was on the same level as a peak Pulse Condensation Period martial artist could sell for at least one or two thousand taels of gold.

"Alright. Then we shall part from here. About today's events, I don't want others to know about it. Otherwise… "

Lin Ming didn't say it out loud, but he let the clear meaning behind his words linger in the air. In fact, he wasn't afraid if others knew, he just didn't want to be troubled.

The black-clothed martial artist shrank backwards and hurriedly nodded. The only one that they could not conceal the truth from was their master. But, after he obtained this medium-grade human-step cultivation method, the black-clothed martial artist already planned to leave the school. If he went back and faced his master, would he still be able to keep the cultivation method jade slip treasure that he had obtained?

It wasn't only the black-clothed martial artist, the twin girls also had similar thoughts. They had finally managed to obtain a treasure sword after so much difficulty. They didn't want their master to take it away.

All in all, they had been in the school for such a long time, yet they hadn't obtained any substantial benefits from their master there.

After Lin Ming departed, the black-clothed martial artist gathered the twin sisters and their young junior-apprentice brother to have a meeting. They decided that all of them would leave their school and establish their own gang. By relying on the medium-grade human-step cultivation method that Lin Ming had given them, they would make a name for themselves.

However, this was a story for another time.

…

After he had parted from the black-clothed martial artist's group, Lin Ming looked for a safe place and started to absorb the power of thunder from the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo.

This red lightning was much more cruel and savage than all of the lightning that Lin Ming had absorbed so far.

But Lin Ming was not worried. First, he sat down in meditation. After he had completely recovered all the true essence he had lost, he entered the ethereal martial intent state, and adjusted his mental condition to consummate tranquility.

Then, he took the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo out from his spatial ring.

Gripping the Spirit Bamboo in both hands, Lin Ming began to guide the power of thunder in the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, allowing it to flow into his body.

After the crimson power of thunder entered Lin Ming's meridians, it was just like a wild horse that was dashing around in defiance. If a normal martial artist at the Pulse Condensation realm or even the Houtian realm, had this tyrannically oppressive red thunder enter their organs, their meridians would be destroyed and they would be severely injured or even die.

But Lin Ming had the existence of a Thunder Soul in his body. No matter how overbearing the lightning was, once it encountered the Thunder Soul, it would slowly be absorbed.

In this way, the small Thunder Soul was just like a small silkworm. It continually nibbled on the power of thunder that was in the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, slowly eroding it. During this period, Lin Ming only felt a faint numb feeling; it wasn't particularly painful.

After Lin Ming had sat in meditation for half an hour, he had managed to completely absorb the power of thunder. As he looked in at the Heretical God Seed, Lin Ming was pleasantly surprised. After absorbing the lightning from the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, the energy of his Thunder Soul had increased by 50%.

If just a 900 year old baby bamboo was able to increase the power of his Thunder Soul by 50%, what would a 9000 year old bamboo do to it?

Lin Ming was filled with anticipation. Unfortunately, there might not even be a sliver of hope in obtaining this bamboo.

After absorbing the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, Lin Ming continued climbing upwards.

The higher he went, the more Thunder Lizards there were.

These Thunder Lizards were superior vicious beasts that had the bloodline of a Flood Dragon. Although the Thunder Lizards at the base of Thundercrash Mountain had a very shallow bloodline, they still weren't easy to deal with.

As Lin Ming approached the mountainside, he began to feel it becoming difficult.

Whiz!

The spear wind pierced the void. Lin Ming's spear shot through the immense body of a Red Thunder Lizard and vibrating true essence erupted. This middle Pulse Condensation Period Red Thunder Lizard immediately died a terrible death.

After Lin Ming had fused with the reverse scale blood, his Flow like Silk continued to grow. Even if it entered the enemy's body, it wouldn't easily break down, and its power had also increased a bit. Otherwise, with just true essence attacks alone, Lin Ming would have found it exceedingly difficult to kill a middle Pulse Condensation Thunder Lizard. After all, the physical defense capabilities of a Thunder Lizard were much sturdier than those a human at the same level of cultivation.

Lin Ming let a breath loose as he cut the Thunder Lizards open and dug out the Thunder Pearl. With a though, he absorbed the power of thunder from the Thunder Pearl into his meridians. This was already the 20th Thunder Lizard that he had killed. Through the continuous absorption of the Thunder Pearls, the total increase in power of his Thunder Soul had already reached 60%.

He looked up at Thundercrash Mountain. From where he was now, there was still about 50,000 feet until he reached the summit. He was already able to clearly see the thick lightning that flashed at the summit. This lightning was true thunder. Even though Lin Ming had a Thunder Soul, he didn't dare to attempt to go up there.

Lin Ming used his movement technique and rushed towards the summit. At this moment, a blue light flashed and a blue arc of lightning hit Lin Ming.

Zizizi!

A powerful numbing electric feeling made Lin Ming go stiff, almost causing him to fall. This was only because he had absorbed the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo a while ago and his Thunder Soul had become much stronger. Otherwise, Lin Ming suspected he really would have fallen.

"Blue Thunder Lizard!"

This was the first time that Lin Ming had seen a Thunder Lizard at the same level as a Houtian realm martial artist.

Without a single word, he launched his movement technique to flee. Although he could resist the thunder attack of a Blue Thunder Lizard, it was impossible for him to kill it. Even if he used Thunderfire Annihilation, he still wouldn't be able to kill it.

In that case, Lin Ming didn't want to waste any effort.

Thankfully, Lin Ming was much faster than the Blue Thunder Lizard. In a few jumps, he had already lost it.

In the mountainside region, there were mostly Red Thunder Lizards. Blue Thunder Lizards would only occasionally appear. Lin Ming went on a killing spree; he slaughtered for one day and one night!

After such a long rampage, Lin Ming's fighting skill were becoming more and more refined, and the Thunder Soul in his body had finally achieved 70% increased power after absorbing a massive amount of thunder. But, as the power of this Thunder Soul increased, the effects of the nourishment from the Thunder Pearl were becoming less and less.

Lin Ming filled an empty pool with Thunder Lizard blood and soaked in it for a quarter of an hour. Afterwards, Lin Ming dried his body and took a new set of clothes out of his spatial ring. Thunder Lizard blood could to increase the health and fitness of the human body. Although it's effect wasn't too obvious on Lin Ming, he still didn't want to waste it.

After eating a simple meal, Lin Ming leapt up on a several hundred feet tree and began to meditate. A Bone Forging martial artist could go for days without sleeping and still remain energetic and buoyant. But, in order for Lin Ming to maintain his peak condition, he had to rest for a couple hours. The next fights would be increasingly savage.

As he closed in on the summit, Lin Ming's speed became slower. Before, it had taken him a few hours to reach the mountainside from the base of Thundercrash Mountain, but now the same distance took him an entire night.

Lin Ming finally arrived at an area blanketed in ice and snow. Every 1000 feet here took at least a few hours.

He needed to use his soul force to constantly assess his surroundings, and then slowly and cautiously, advance forwards. He didn't want to accidently run into a Xiantian realm Purple Thunder Lizard. If that happened, there wasn't much he could do.

Of course, Lin Ming could actually fly into the air and go straight into the sky. But in that case, there was no reason to come to Thundercrash Mountain. He would only be able to float around in the sky and look at the scenery. It would be impossible for him to obtain a shred of thunder power, and then, it would be even more impossible for him to obtain a Thunder Soul.

Cold winds blew everywhere, and snow filled the air. In the upper region of Thundercrash mountain, everywhere one looked there was the frost blue color of ice; crystal clear and incomparably pure.

This was true 10,000 year ice; hard as rock and beautiful like jade.

Clouds pooled at the ground. Leaning over, one was able to see an infinitely dense fog, surging seas of clouds reaching into the vast infinity; this truly was a fabled paradise.

What a pity that this beautiful land was entirely blanketed with a savage killing aura.

When Lin Ming saw a dark Blue Thunder Lizard near a patch of 10,000 year old ice, he knew that he had reached the end of his road. If he took even one step further, then he would be placed in a life-threatening situation.

This deep blue scaled Thunder Lizard was equal to a peak Houtian realm martial artist. Its scales were the exact color of the 10,000 year old ice, and it almost perfectly blended in. If one wasn't carefully looking, it was simply impossible to find.

Seeing this scene, Lin Ming couldn't help but exclaim. This Blue Thunder Lizard was a beautiful animal. Especially in this bitter cold land, it looked just like a fine ice sculpture.

But this beautiful ice sculpture could quickly kill him. The difference in its strength and Lin Mings was simply too great.

Prior to this, Lin Ming had encountered a middle Houtian realm Blue Thunder Lizard that had caused him some distress. Because it's speed wasn't slower than Lin Ming's, Lin Ming had finally flew into the sky and only then was he able to escape unharmed.

Now that he faced a peak Houtian realm Thunder Lizard, the result could be imagined.

Lin Ming didn't dare to go forwards any further. Who knew, maybe the Xiantian realm Thunder Lizard could fly. If it could, then he was dead.

Lin Ming was already prepared to run away, but at this moment, he noticed that the deep Blue Thunder Lizard's eyes were filled a trace of confusion; it didn't seem as if it were preparing to attack him.

“Mm? What is this fellow doing?” Lin Ming was filled with complete vigilance. He didn’t even taken the Heavy Profound Soft Spear out, because he knew that using a spear in this situation was useless. It was better to keep less weight on him so he could run faster.

The Thunder Lizard growled in bursts, its eyes revealing its confusion that gradually evolved into vigilance and fear. Its roar became louder, as if it were warning Lin Ming to leave its territory immediately.

Lin Ming had a puzzled look. “If I read this right, this Thunder Lizard seems to be afraid of me? What does it have to fear? I don’t even have a tenth of its strength.”

“This is the strongest Thunder Lizard that I’ve met so far, but this strongest one is actually scared of me. Why….?”

Chapter 204 – The Woman In Red

Chapter 204 – The Woman In Red

…

…

…

“This is the strongest Thunder Lizard that I’ve met so far, but this one is actually scared of me. Why….?”

Lin Ming’s mind suddenly flashed with a thought; reverse scale blood!

If he wasn’t mistaken, this fear originated from the reverse scale blood that was sleeping deeply in his body!

A Thunder Lizard had the bloodline of a Flood Dragon flowing through it. The more powerful a Thunder Lizard was, the richer its Flood Dragon bloodline would be.

A Flood Dragon could be considered to be a low-level dragon.

If a Flood Dragon met a True Dragon, it would have a sense of awe and fear that would inevitably arise from the depths of its soul. No matter how savage it was, it would always be constrained.

Lin Ming’s inner reverse scale blood was meager. Not only that, Lin Ming’s cultivation was also low, so the blood in him hadn’t fully awoken. Therefore, a common Thunder Lizard was unable to feel it.

But this peak Houtian realm Thunder Lizard was powerful, so it's bloodline was much purer. The acutely related bloodline in it allowed it to feel the power slumbering in Lin Ming.

A True Dragon's blood, even if it was only a trace, still emitted an infinitely vigorous Qi that forced all beasts to submit. Although this Thunder Lizard's strength was far superior to Lin Ming, it still felt a fear from the bottom of its soul.

If Lin Ming's strength was more formidable, the Thunder Lizard might even kneel in submission.

The Thunder Lizard constantly roared, arcs of electricity flashing around its body. It was warning Lin Ming to leave its territory.

This result was what Lin Ming had been hoping for. Since he wasn't able to kill a peak Houtian realm Thunder Lizard, he could at least avoid it.

"It looks like I can still climb Thundercrash Mountain!"

Lin Ming clenched his fists. The Heavens were truly blessing him. With his strength, he would have only been barely able to climb up the mountainside of Thundercrash Mountain. But thanks to his Thunder Soul, he didn't fear the long distance thunder attacks of the Thunder Lizards, and he was able to climb up the region of snow and ice.

And now when he was at his limit again, the reverse scale blood was actually able to suppress the bloodline of these Thunder Lizards. Like this, he might really be able to pass through this snowfield.

As long as he passed through the remaining 30,000 feet fields of snow, he would reach the summit of Thundercrash Mountain. That was only the location where thunder-attribute materials were most likely to be born.

There, thunder had fallen without end for 10,000 years. If a human walked up there, a little bad luck and they would be struck by lightning. This was true heavenly thunder. Even though Lin Ming had a Thunder Soul protecting him, he was still apprehensive about the situation. He didn't know if he would be severely injured after being struck by this heavenly thunder.

Lin Ming circled around the peak Houtian realm Thunder Lizard and continued moving forwards. After several miles, Lin Ming's suddenly stopped. Stunned, he look forward as he stiffly stood there.

In front of him, about 200 feet away, Lin Ming saw a scene that he would never forget in his entire life.

Above a vast expanse of ice, a tall and slim woman with a full figure was gracefully standing there. Everything about her was outstanding. She wore a flame-red coat, and she had a flowing scarlet dress wrapped around her. Her soft, ink black hair hung down to her waist, and both her feet were bare. Her fair, jade-like feet were standing on an azure platform of 10,000 year frost ice. She was like a vibrant red rose that grew out of the snow. The crimson red and snow white contrast reflected a glamorous and majestic beauty.

And in front of that woman, there was a scarlet crested bird. It seemed to have a blood red crown, and its feathers were red like living flames. Its long tail dragged against the ground, burning the floor wherever it passed.

That is… the Vermillion Bird!

Lin Ming's eyes widened. The Saint Beast that he had seen in Blackwater Swamp was actually in front of him now!

Sensing Lin Ming's presence, the woman glanced back at Lin Ming. Her beautiful face was calm like an ocean, with an otherworldly atmosphere filled with smoke and flames; it really gave one a deep feeling of suffocation.

It seems as if she had noticed Lin Ming's cultivation and she was quite curious. He was only a peak Bone Forging boy; how did he get here with his life intact?

Lin Ming froze. He wasn't just shocked by the beauty of the woman, but also by the mystical breath that emanated from her body.

This lady seemed like a normal lady, her breath told Lin Ming that she was more powerful than anyone he had ever met in his life!

Xiantian…

No, maybe not even just Xiantian!

She might be at the late Xiantian realm, or the extreme Xiantian realm, or… maybe she was an existence that surpassed the Xiantian realm!

To be able to use a Vermillion Bird Saint Beast as a mount, what sort of ridiculous concept was that?

Lin Ming's mind was in a state of high tension and nervousness. If this person wanted to extinguish his life, it wouldn't even take a moment!

The woman was still looking at Lin Ming with surprise. One human and one bird, with the same flame coloration, standing above the vast white fields of 10,000 year ice; it was just like a blazing inferno, beautiful and sublime to the point where it seemed unreal.

"Interesting."

The woman looked at Lin Ming for a good while, and then suddenly, she smiled gently. With that single word, her voice was revealed to be melodious like a songbird.

Then, her body seemed as light as a feather as she floated up and onto the back of the Vermillion Bird. The Vermillion Bird chirped, and then, it soared into the sky!

A whirling blast of hot air rushed out in all directions. Feeling this strikingly hot air, Lin Ming already felt his back seep with a cold sweat.

"So… the Vermillion Bird I saw in Blackwater Swamp is this woman's mount… perhaps that Vermillion Bird was already carrying that woman, and she saw the scene where I was being hunted by the little flame boy."

"Why would she come to Thundercrash Mountain? Is it to find the Thunder Soul? Or, does she simply live here?"

Lin Ming's mind raced with the possibilities. Looking at the vast Thundercrash Mountain above him, he wasn't sure whether or not he should continue going forwards.

If that woman came for the Thunder Soul, that was a dream he'd best forget.

After hesitating for a long time, Lin Ming clenched his teeth and decided to continue forwards. Since he had come this far, he might as well attempt to go further. Even if the Thunder Soul wasn't for him, that didn't mean there weren't any other lucky chances. The summit of Thundercrash Mountain had already shined with endless thunder for 10,000 years. Who knew what sort of valuable materials were born there? If the opportunity was good, he might find some surprises.

Lin Ming had just taken a few steps forwards, when the sky suddenly resounded with the decisive sharp sound of a bird, directly reaching into the Primal Chaos Heavens!

This was…Phoenix Cry?

Without having a chance to reflect on what had just happened, Lin Ming heard the thunderous sound of a beast roar one after another! For a time, it was like he was in the midst of a massive thunderstorm; absolutely deafening!

"What… what the hell?"

Lin Ming felt a little muddled. At this moment, he heard the sound of a rumbling vibration spread through the ground. It was like the countless roaring and thunderous beats of a drum. He could even feel the ground shaking, as if a massive stampede of monsters was rushing out!

"Mm?"

Lin Ming withdrew the Heavy Profound Soft Spear. In the distance, he saw a the deep Blue Thunder Lizard menacingly rush towards him. Because of the speed at which it was going, clouds of snow curled around it like a snow dragon, billowing into the sky!

"That's the peak Houtian realm Thunder Lizard powerhouse I just saw earlier!"

Lin Ming's pupils contracted. This fellow wasn't so enraged a moment ago; it was something he couldn't afford to mess with!

Without hesitation, he retracted his spear and flew into the air. The Blue Thunder Lizard blew past Lin Ming in a rolling cloud of smoke and snow as it blew through, having no intention to pause.

Lin Ming found that this Thunder Lizard hadn't come to deal with him.

But if not him, had it come for that woman in red from a moment ago? Remembering the scene from before and that resonant Phoenix Cry that had sounded once, Lin Ming tensed up. Was that a declaration of war?

To challenge the entire Thundercrash Mountain, including that Xiantian powerhouse Purple Thunder Lizard!?

What kind of audacious courage was that!!?

Lin Ming's heartbeat accelerated. Compared to such a powerhouse, he was just too far.

At this moment, seven or eight miles out, he saw another cloud of billowing snow like an icy dragon rush towards the summit. Lin Ming had excellent eyesight. Even though it was a far distance, he was still able to see that the Thunder Lizard was very dark blue. From the deep color of its scales, its strength was no less than a peak Houtian realm martial artist!

"Peak Houtian realm… I fear that anything below that rank doesn't have the qualifications to participate in this war… Also, that woman in red was at least a Xiantian powerhouse. If this sort of low-level Thunder Lizard goes up, it will die with a single strike."

Lin Ming rose up a few hundred more feet. As he rose, his range of vision broadened and he could see that the roiling snow dragons were increasing.

He already determined that there were at least 8 or 9.

Lin Ming felt a surge of excitement well up in his heart. He too wanted to take a front-row seat to such a grand occasion.

If it was a Xiantian realm fight, he could still observe it from several miles out.

Thinking this, Lin Ming no longer held any reservations. He used his movement technique and directly sped towards the summit at full speed. Because all of the strong Thunder Lizards had rushed towards the summit, Lin Ming was able to travel up unimpeded. Even if he met an occasional Thunder Lizard, Lin Ming was able to rely on the reverse scale blood in him to scare it away.

Along the way, Lin Ming didn't dare to fly straight up. This was because the Vermilion Bird was flying high in the sky, and it would be too obvious if he flew. These Xiantian existences might find him annoying and casually finish him off; that would truly be an injustice.

Lin Ming had been only 30,000 feet from the summit. With his full speed, he was able to cover this distance in a short time.

Sure enough, Lin Ming was able to rush towards the summit without any resistance.

However, at this moment, Lin Ming stopped once more, stunned. He looked towards the sky, his heart shaking with earth shattering waves!

What he saw was a dragon! A real dragon!

Its claws were sharp, and its scales were a dark purple. It long dragon body wantonly soared in the air. It was just like the dragons that were in paintings!

This titanic dragon was several times larger than the Vermillion Bird. Bright arcs of lightning danced around it like countless purple snakes as it swam in the sky. It's body was filled with a vast and peerless momentum.

In front of it, the Vermillion Bird was waving its wings, stopped in midair!

"Is this a showdown between a dragon and a phoenix?" Lin Ming gulped down saliva. He hadn't ever imaged he would be so fortunate as to witness such a wondrous sight.

No… it wasn't a dragon, it was a Flood Dragon. Lin Ming found that purple dragon didn't have a horn on its head, so it was only a Flood Dragon. Still, even if it was a Flood Dragon it was still sufficiently startling. This was a top Saint Beast of the Sky Spill Continent!

"So… there was actually a Flood Dragon hidden in Thundercrash Mountain!" Lin Ming gasped. "No wonder! No wonder Thundercrash Mountain has so many Thunder Lizards, and these Thunder Lizards also have the bloodline of a Flood Dragon. That's because they are the descendants of this Flood Dragon!"

"A direct descendent of a Flood Dragon should be a Xiantian powerhouse Purple Thunder Lizard. The Blue Thunder Lizards are the descendants of the Purple Thunder Lizards. With each further generation downwards, the bloodline is more and more diluted."

Lin Ming was suddenly enlightened; so this was how Thundercrash Mountain was formed.

Chapter 205 – Struggle of the Dragon and Phoenix

Chapter 205 – Struggle of the Dragon and Phoenix

…

…

…

There were many different species of dragon-type Saint Beasts. For example; there were Flood Dragons, Horned Dragons, Hornless Dragons, One-legged Mountain Dragons, Candle Dragons, and so on.

Although these dragons were all Saint Beasts and their appearances were similar, there were also certain characteristics that separated them. The Flood Dragon had its luminescent scales, the Winged Rain Dragon had wings, the Horned Dragon had a horn, the One-legged Mountain Dragon had one leg, and so on.

Even Flood Dragons were divided into variants. There were Red Flood Dragons, Black Flood Dragons, Blood Flood Dragons, and so on.

The Purple Flood Dragon that was flying in the sky was a rare variant of Thunder Flood Dragon. It ate thunder and lightning as food, and its personality was extremely cruel and tyrannical. It was also very promiscuous.

This Flood Dragon had settled on Thundercrash Mountain nearly 10,000 years ago and it had taken all of the mountain’s treasures as its own. After it savagely mated with the original vicious beasts of Thundercrash Mountain, it finally gave rise to an overabundance of descendants; these were the Thunder Lizards.

Now facing a challenge, the Thunder Flood Dragon loudly roared, and all of its descendants rushed to the summit of Thundercrash Mountain immediately!

The large number of Thunder Lizards were eyeing the confrontation in the air, the epic showdown between the bloodline of a Dragon and the bloodline of a Phoenix!

As for Lin Ming, he was hiding in the distance. After accidently reaching the realm of returning to his origins, Lin Ming's ability to hide his breath was no less than a Xiantian realm masters. He hid behind a large boulder. As long as he was far away, no one should be able to find him.

Seeing the Thunder Dragon in the air, Lin Ming's mind flashed through a range of emotions. He slowly began to realize a serious problem. If he was right, the Thunder Soul of Thundercrash Mountain should be in the body of the Thunder Flood Dragon!

The Thunder Flood Dragon had lived on Thundercrash Mountain for so many years, it must have found the Thunder Soul. If it did, how could it not absorb it?

Although Lin Ming never held much hope in attaining the Thunder Soul, he always thought that with some luck, he still had a chance. Even if he failed now, it didn't mean he couldn't wait until his cultivation was a bit higher before coming back.

But now that he knew that the Thunder Soul was in the body of the Thunder Flood Dragon, he felt his heart sink with disappointment. To wrest the Thunder Soul from this beast was simply nonsense! Let alone now, even if he entered the early Xiantian realm, his ability still might not be enough!

In the air, the confrontation was still ongoing. The red woman was standing proudly on the Vermillion Bird. A strong heavenly wind blew her ink black hair, making it dance recklessly in the wind. In the sky, countless bolts of purple lightning flashed, but she remained utterly unmoved. It was as if there was an invisible force field that was surrounding the woman in red, distorting the power of thunder.

“Ha ha, Magnetic Force Field? To deal with this Saint, you specially cultivated this technique?” In the sky, the Thunder Flood Dragon opened its mouth to spit out its judgment.

To see a large purple dragon speak was an extremely strange scene. Lin Ming was stunned, but then immediately, he thought that it wasn’t unusual that a Saint Beast would be able to speak.

The woman in red looked at the Thunder Flood Dragon and slowly said, “The Magnetic Force Field is a top cultivation method, I naturally can cultivate it. It wasn’t something that I especially prepared for you, so there is no need for you to think so highly of yourself.”

“Hehe, little girl, you are quite young, and yet, your words are so brave. If you called an Elder from Divine Phoenix Island to come, this Saint might give you some face… but, with just your ability? Dream on! Haha! This Saint can pinch you to death!”

The Thunder Flood Dragon brazenly laughed. Lin Ming’s face had a weird color. This Thunder Flood Dragon had actually called the woman in red who a fathomless cultivation level, a little girl. It was something that only an old monster that had lived for several tens of thousands of years could say.

But Divine Phoenix Island? What sect was that? If there was a master like this woman in red, then there also had to be stronger Elders in her sect. It was far beyond anything that the Seven Profound Valleys could produce. It might be a fourth-grade sect, or even the legendary fifth-grade sects. He couldn’t imagine how far it was from here; he had never heard of it before.

Facing the Thunder Flood Dragons boastful shouting, the woman in red had the same calm expression as before, without a hint of anger. She said, “So, you refuse?”

“Cut the idle talk. For a chicken that still doesn’t have all of its feathers, you want half of this Saint’s blood? Such a ridiculous request, how can this Saint possibly agree with that!?”

“Then… we must fight.”

"Hehe! Once I defeat you, don't think this Saint will have the scruples not to kill you just because of Divine Phoenix Island!" The Thunder Flood Dragon roared like a thunderclap, lightning writhing over its vast body.

Lin Ming could clearly hear the conversation between the dragon and the woman from his hiding spot. They had really revealed a lot of information. The mysterious woman wanted half of the Flood Dragon's blood for 'the chicken that still doesn't have all of its feathers'?"

Implying…

Lin Ming looked up at the Vermillion Bird that was dancing in the countless arcs of purple lightning, a vast aura emanating from it. It's appearance was majestic. If he was right, then what the Thunder Flood Dragon had called a 'chicken that still doesn't have all of its feathers' could only be this Vermillion Bird.

In other words, this Vermillion Bird hadn't grown up yet. No wonder it was so much smaller than the Thunder Flood Dragon.

Even though it was still a child, it had this aura and strength. With just a look it had managed to scare off the Fire Worm Shaman's little flame boy avatar. What would happen if it were grown up?

Lin Ming couldn't help but ruefully smile. No matter what talent a human had, or what kind of monstrous genius they were, their natural talent was nothing in front of these Saint Beasts. As long as a Saint Beast ate and slept, they would grow up to be a Xiantian realm master. With some lucky chances and some cultivation, they might even break through the Xiantian realm and reach a higher realm!

If it was a true God Beast, such as a Golden-winged Roc or a True Dragon, not to mention simple things like this, but once grown, they could use their claws to pierce the endless void and their tails could shatter stars. With such power, even the mighty elders in the Realm of the Gods would find it difficult to compare.

If this woman in red could take half of the Thunder Flood Dragon's blood, what sort of effect would it have on a young Vermillion Bird?

As Lin Ming pondered this, the fight in the air had already begun. He didn't know when, but that woman in red had drawn a sword in her hand. The blade was only two inches wide, but it was a full four feet long. It was slender and narrow, and the image of a phoenix with its wings spread wide as if it wanted to fly was carved on the sword hilt. The blade was crimson all over as if it were soaked in blood.

As soon as he saw this crimson long sword, Lin Ming's eyes widened. He had never seen a treasure sword of this level before. Just by feeling powerful fluctuations of energy coming from it, he guessed that it was at least an Earth-step treasure. As for whether it was a low-grade Earth-step, medium-grade Earth-step treasure, or a high-grade Earth-step treasure, he had no way to determine.

There was a huge difference between a human-step treasure and an Earth-step treasure. Not even the Seven Profound Martial House Master Qin Ziya had an Earth-step treasure.

This was a battle between two peerless masters. Lin Ming stared with eyes wide open, not wanting to miss a single detail.

When a mighty elder of the Realm of the Gods had watched a True Dragon battle a Golden-winged Roc, he had been divinely inspired and went into seclusion for 60 years, finally creating the unmatchable movement technique 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void'. Although it was impossible for himself to achieve such a level, it was still likely that he would receive some insights from this battle.

The woman in red waved her long sword, and crimson flame flushed into existence on the sword edge. At first, this flame was only several feet long, but when the woman in red lifted this sword high, the flames shot up to the sky!

Her long black hair escaped its hairband, fluttering in the wind.

A huge blazing inferno of flames impacted with the Primal Chaos Heavens; it was as if the sky had been violently washed away. Outside of the Primal Chaos Heavens, fiery heaven and earth origin energy constantly converged on the long sword, forming a giant vortex of flames!

This flaming vortex spun slowly. It was jet black in the center, as if the world itself had been torn apart, revealing a mystical passageway.

The Thunder Flood Dragon watched this situation and it’s purple eyes reflected a solemn dignity. Under its vast body, dozens of peak Houtian realm Thunder Lizards roared together, opening their jaws to release a gigantic barrage of Thunder Balls into the sky. At the same time, a gigantic shining net of lightning covered the Thunder Lizards, supporting them. This was obviously a protective lightning shroud.

After these blue balls of thunder flew into the air, the Thunder Flood Dragon opened his mouth and sucked all of it in. After having inhaled so much power of thunder, purple arcs of electricity surged on the Thunder Flood Dragon’s body. Those arcs of thunder that had been thin before had now thickened by several times.

Seeing this, Lin Ming understood. Listening to the bragging of the Thunder Flood Dragon, it would have seemed as if the woman in red was inferior to the Thunder Flood Dragon. The Thunder Flood Dragon had showed some respect to Divine Phoenix Island and offered to let her off this once.

But now, it seemed that even with the help of all its descendants, the Thunder Flood Dragon only barely exceeded the power of the woman in red. In a one versus one situation, the Thunder Flood Dragon wouldn’t be a match for that woman in red!

Realizing this, Lin Ming let out a cold breath. This woman in red was even more powerful than he had thought!

The Thunder Flood Dragon was an adult Flood Dragon. After a Saint Beast grew up, it wasn't strange for them to reach the Xiantian realm. Yet, even like this, it still had to rely on the support of its descendants to barely suppress the woman in red!

The massive inferno column combusted, burning hotter and fierce than before. It's thickness increased to ten feet, and it was just like a pillar of flame that was holding up the heavens. It reached into the Primal Chaos Heavens, lighting up the entire sky.

Facing such a formidable attack, the Thunder Flood Dragon responded without reservation. It focused all of its power of thunder into its two front claws, and a purple thunder ball began to rapidly form. This Thunderball started at ten feet, but it rapidly expanded to over 100 feet; its diameter was even thicker than the Thunder Flood Dragon!

Lightning flashed around that purple thunder ball. The center of the Thunder ball became a deep, nearly black violet color, as it gleamed with a suffocating light.

Without mercy, the four foot crimson long sword slashed down. It was as if the flaming pillar that supported the heavens had come crashing down. Not only did it cut towards the Thunder Flood Dragon, but it also reached the Thunder Flood Dragon's descendants! These descendants were the minions of the Thunder Flood Dragon; the woman in red wanted to finish them off quickly!

The Thunder Flood Dragon erupted with an ear-shattering roar. Its claws thrust forwards, and that massive purple thunder ball flew at that woman in red like a meteor!

The huge pillar of flame and the thunder ball struck each other.

Bang!

A terrifying explosion rang through the clouds and cracked stone open! It was as if the void itself had been torn asunder; the whole of Thundercrash Mountain shook under the impact!

Burning flames smashed down like countless meteorites towards the dozens of Thunder Lizards that were under the lightning shield. The entire lightning shield trembled fiercely, and some of the peak Houtian realm Blue Thunder Lizards vomited blood, they were seriously injured!

Lin Ming felt a creeping sense of incomparable horror and awe as he watched this from afar. If just the aftermath had such power, how terrifying would it be to face it head on?

As he was exclaiming in amazement, he glanced in the corner of his eyes and found that behind the Thunder Lizards that had scattered after death, there was a giant cavern behind them. This cavern was completely made of magnetic ore, and the entrance was over 100 feet wide.

A sudden idea flashed into Lin Ming's mind. Was this… the Thunder Flood Dragon's cavern?

Chapter 206 – Flood Dragon's Cave

Chapter 206 – Flood Dragon's Cave

…

…

…

"If it's a cave that's at the summit of Thundercrash Mountain, it can't be any other Thunder Lizard, it has to be the Thunder Flood Dragon. The Thunder Lizards of Thundercrash Mountain have distinct hierarchies that are based on strength. The strongest controls a territory at the top, where the power of thunder is the richest. Moreover, the peak is the symbol of absolute authority; how can the Thunder Flood Dragon let anyone else have it?"

Lin Ming's mind raced wildly. The black-clothed martial artist said that Thunder Lizards kept thunder-attribute treasures in their caves so that the power of thunder in their caves would be more vivid.

If this truly was the Thunder Flood Dragon's cave, what sort of treasures would be inside it?

Realizing this, Lin Ming's heart began to ignite with overwhelming desire.

However, he also saw that in front of the cave, there were dozens of Thunder Lizards. Lin Ming paused; any one of these Thunder Lizards could take his life! Once they found him, he would die without even a burial.

As his heart went through a battle of wills, Lin Ming clenched his teeth. There was no fortune without danger! He would fight for it!

This was a once in a millennia opportunity. If it weren't for the woman in red appearing, even if Lin Ming broke through to the Xiantian realm, he would still have no chance of entering the Thunder Flood Dragon's cave!

Those that walked the path of martial arts were doomed to face countless perils and dangers. With Lin Ming's current talent and strength, he would definitely be able to reach the extreme Xiantian realm, and even go beyond that.

But how about higher? Could he ever compare to the mighty elders of the Realm of the Gods?

Lin Ming knew that Sky Spill Continent had a lot of geniuses. But in this universe, there were many worlds that were just like Sky Spill Continent; the number of talents could not be estimated simply.

With so many talents, some were born into fourth-grade sects, fifth-grade sects, sixth-grade sects, or even Realm of the God's sects or Holy Lands. They had unimaginable resources and materials to cultivate with. They were probably thrown into a miracle medicine jar after being born too. Growing up like this, they also had access to the best cultivation methods, and in the Holy Lands of the Realm of the Gods, the cultivation methods they studied weren't any different to his own!

In addition to these geniuses that were born into unfathomable backgrounds, there were many talents that underwent all sorts of adventures and had experienced all kinds of fortuitous encounters. In the world they lived in, they were the main characters!

With so many people, how many had truly reached the peak of martial arts?

Lin Ming didn't discount himself, nor was he blindly arrogant about his own abilities. He knew that the road before him was long and winding. But, whether or not he could reach the end, that was still unknown!

For those that cultivated martial arts, every day was a struggle against the heavens and against life! He could not waste a single second of his life, nor could he miss the opportunities that presented themselves in front of him!

Otherwise, when the day he would reach the limit of his cultivation and be forced to go through life and death closed door seclusion in order to break through the bottleneck and extend his own, comes, his martial arts path would most likely have reached its end.

Lin Ming gazed wholeheartedly at the fierce fight that was ongoing in the sky, and he took a set of gray clothes out of his spatial ring to change into.

There was no snow at the summit of Thundercrash Mountain, only endless crags of gray magnetic ores. If he wore gray clothes, it would be easier to not draw attention to himself.

By relying on his realm of returning to his true self and restraining the breath of his body, Lin Ming was like a gray leopard as he silently bounded from one stone to another. He hastily rushed towards the Thunder Flood Dragon's cave!

Due to the monumental fight occurring in the air, no one noticed a mere human closing in on the summit's cave. No one could possibly imagine that there would be someone who had the courage to sneak into the cave and steal rare thunder-attribute materials.

After Lin Ming jumped onto the cliff, his hands clung onto the rocky exterior and he quickly scaled upwards like a gecko. At this time, only 3 or 4 miles from the Thunder Flood Dragon's cave, Lin Ming's spiritual sense had reached a high degree of concentration. From where he was now, he had already passed the boundary of danger. If any true essence fallout or backlash from the fight in the air landed on him, he would instantly die.

Although he was cautious, Lin Ming did not slow down in the slightest. Time was life! If the airborne battle reached its conclusion and the Thunder Flood Dragon expelled the woman in red and returned to his cave, Lin Ming would be deader than dead!

Fortunately, the woman in red was a complete power freak. With just the strength of one person, she was actually able to match the Thunder Flood Dragon and all of his descendants!

Lin Ming used a few dozen breaths to pass that 3 or 4 miles. Just as he was about to enter the Thunder Flood Dragon's cave, he spotted a massive Thunder Lizard standing not too far from the entrance. This Thunder Lizard's body was larger than a Blue Thunder Lizard; its entire body was a deep purple!

This Purple Thunder Lizard was a vicious beast at the same level as a Xiantian realm martial artist!

Lin Ming's eyelids jumped up. This overwhelming existence could extinguish his life in just a few breaths of time!

Lin Ming hid behind a large boulder, staring at the pitch-black cave entrance. His heartbeat was rapid. He was only a mere 200 feet from the cave, but this 200 feet was just like an insurmountable moat.

Looking at the Purple Thunder Lizard again, Lin Ming saw that the beast's total concentration was focused on the fight in the sky. Vicious beasts didn't have naturally sharp perceptions. In addition to that, it also had to lend its power and attention to help the Thunder Flood Dragon in its battle while protecting the other Thunder Lizards. Because of this, it hadn't noticed Lin Ming, who had restrained the breath of his body.

Bang!

A gigantic fiery red ball fell from the sky. That Purple Thunder Lizard and several other Thunder Lizards vehemently concentrated their powers to reinforce the lightning net and resist the fireball. But, the woman in red's attack was too strong. Even though the Purple Thunder Lizard had tried its best, its entire body quivered and it vomited blood.

"This is my chance!"

Lin Ming's eyes flashed, and he instantly launched Golden Rock Shattering the Void! Under the cover of explosive fire, he was like an arrow that flew through the cave's entrance!

After the split second when Lin Ming's figure disappeared, the explosions stopped. The Purple Thunder Lizard was severely injured by the attack; where would he have the time to notice some little guy running into the cave?

"I'm in! I made it!" Lin Ming's exultant thoughts echoed in his mind as his heart beat like a drum.

As he sped into the cave, Lin Ming noticed that the cave was jet black, but it wasn't dark. The walls of the cave were mounted with brilliantly luminescent giant pearls and some thunder-attribute minerals that glowed. The entire cave was bathed in a fairy-like light, utterly pleasing to the eye.

"This Flood Dragon is far too excessive; his avaricious greed is really true." Looking at the shinning illuminations from the giant mounds of treasure, Lin Ming sighed in his mind. In the mortal world, any one of these treasures would be worth well over 10,000 gold taels. Just the decorations that lined the walls were worth more than several million gold taels!

Of course, these were things that Lin Ming refused to grab as he had more important goals in his mind. He raised his vigilance to 120% as he cautiously made his way into the cave.

There was a very vibrant power of thunder in the cave, thick to the point that it almost became a tangible essence. If a thunder-attribute martial artist were to cultivate here, their cultivation speed would rise to 10,000 miles in one day.

As he turned a corner, Lin Ming only saw a bright purple light in front of him. "Mm? Thundergrass!"

Not too far away from Lin Ming, there was a thick patch of deep purple Thundergrass that was half the height of a human. At the tip of the grass there were tiny fist-sized fruits that sparkled with electric currents. The fruit was a dark, purplish black.

"Millennium Thundergrass!" Lin Ming's eyes widened with joy. According to the descriptions in the Thundergrass Mountain pamphlet, this should be at least 1400 or 1500 years old. It's valuable was inestimable!

Lin Ming didn’t delay. He took the high-grade treasure saber out and filled it with the power of thunder, before cutting down the dark purple fruit to store it in his spatial ring.

As for the grass roots, Lin Ming didn’t take those. The Thunder Flood Dragon would look after them, and in the future, if his strength reached a level high enough, he would make another trip back. At that time, he wouldn’t need to sneak in.

After he collected the Thundergrass, Lin Ming didn’t tarry. He continued deeper into the cave, speeding down a hillside.

Soon, Lin Ming began to see a light. There was a giant stone chamber in front of him; this stone chamber was almost 1000 feet wide!

After entering the stone chamber, Lin Ming gasped. On the ground of the stone chamber, there was a field of over 100 Thundergrass, both large and small. Judging by the size of the Thundergrass, the smallest were several hundred years old, and the rest were over 1000 years!

Thundercrash Mountain had existed for 10,000 years; the Thunder Flood Dragon’s age would be no lower than that. If it wanted to plant Thundergrass, wouldn’t it be too easy to produce millennium Thundergrass?

As Lin Ming looked, he found that most of the Thundergrass fruits had been picked, and there were only 30 or 40 fruits left.

Ah, so that’s how it was. The Thunder Flood Dragon used this patch of Thundergrass as his own personal ‘vegetable garden’. It would wait for them to grow a bit, pluck and then eat them, and continue this cycle.

Not only did the Thunder Flood Dragon have the ebullient power of thunder in the cave, but it also had such great food to eat. This was such a wonderful life!

Lin Ming welcomed them all. He summoned some of his thunder, and within a few breaths of time, none of the fruits remained. All that was left were the grass stalks.

The 30 to 40 Thunder Fruits were all placed in his spatial ring. To Lin Ming, this was a bit too unreal. Over 80% of these fruits were over 1000 years old! If this were the periphery of Thundercrash Mountain, it would be as difficult as ascending to heaven to find these fruits. But, in the Thunder Flood Dragon's cave, harvesting them was like grabbing vegetables from the ground.

This was the advantage of a long life. Only if one lived a long time could they breed and raise such miracle medicine as this. Otherwise, if the period was too long, one would die before the medicine had turned ripe.

Time was of the essence. After Lin Ming harvested all the Thundergrass fruits, he continued forward. As soon as he left this stone chamber, Lin Ming arrived at another stone chamber. This stone chamber was even larger than the last; it was over 2000 feet wide!

Observing the stone chamber's walls and floor, it was obvious this stone chamber wasn't naturally formed, it was dug out.

According to to how far in he had gone, Lin Ming estimated that he was already deep in Thundercrash Mountain. Only there would have enough space to carve such a large stone chamber.

The floor of this spacious stone chamber was covered with all sorts of precious furs. There were sables, raccoons, tigers, leopards, and all sorts of other rare animals; too many to count.

Some of these furs were placed into a section of the wall; this was obviously a bed.

"This Thunder Flood Dragon really knows how to enjoy life!" Lin Ming was speechless. This bedroom was 2000 feet wide, and collecting all that precious fur was reminiscent to the actions of humans.

Lin Ming was about to leave, when he suddenly discovered that there was an incomparably rich power of thunder coming from the bed. Li Ming's mind stirred. He rushed over, and lifted a snow white tiger pelt up. Under the pelt, there was actually a purple gem embedded into the ground that was emitting a purple light. This gem was the size of a fist. The strangest thing about it was that it seemed to be sealing something that looked just like a beating purple heart.

Chapter 207 – Plundered Treasures

Chapter 207 – Plundered Treasures

…

…

…

This sort of treasure wasn't recorded in the Thundercrash Mountain pamphlet. But, if it was something that the Thunder Flood Dragon cherished enough to place under his bed, it was definitely some extraordinary object.

Lin Ming bluntly pried the strange purple stone out and wrapped his fingers around it. He could feel that the jade-like stone was lukewarm to the touch, not ice-cold like he had imagined.

What surprised Lin Ming the most was that the flashing purple electric arcs around the strange stone were also temperate in nature. It was known that most powers of thunder are fiercely violent, destructive and of an uncontrollable nature. If it entered the meridians of a normal martial artist, they would often suffer serious injuries that took a long time to heal.

But the power of thunder emitting from this strange stone was gentle and pure, like a chaste summer girl. It was really inconceivable.

Lin Ming wanted to absorb it immediately, but if he did, his body would have absorbed too many different sources of power. Not only would that not increase his strength, it would also negatively affect the flow of his true essence.

Lin Ming placed the stone in his spatial ring.

In just a half incense stick of time, Lin Ming had taken the 30 to 40 Thundergrass Fruits and that strange purple thunder stone as well. There were simply treasures everywhere for his taking. Of course, Lin Ming had risked his life in order to get this opportunity.

After leaving the bedroom, there was one last stone chamber in front of Lin Ming. This stone chamber was much smaller than the last two, and it was only a few hundred feet wide.

After entering the stone chamber, Lin Ming's eyes instantly gleamed with delight. In front of him, there was a single bamboo about 10 feet tall. It's entire shaft was a deep, glossy purple. It's lush leaves were like sharp swords that grew upwards, and each leaf was about a foot long.

The edges of the bamboo leaves flashed with tiny arcs of purple lightning. Lin Ming only leaned over, and he was able to feel all the hairs of his body stand up from the electricity. This was the force field that was created by a formidable power of thunder.

Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo!

Lin Ming recognized this type of bamboo. He discovered a 900 year old red Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo with the black-clothed martial artist at the base of Thundercrash Valley. With the information that the black-clothed martial artist had provided, Lin Ming knew that there was also an older Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo somewhere on Thundercrash Mountain. It had been hiding in the Thunder Flood Dragon's cave!

Really, how could that avaricious Thunder Flood Dragon now have such a good treasure in his cave?

The Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo was almost 10 feet high, which meant that it was 9900 years old; it was almost as long as Lin Ming's Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

If there was a method where it could be specially processed, could this Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo be used to make a spear shaft?

Lin Ming began to pant.

The most difficult factor in constructing a spear was constructing the spear shaft. Normal wood was easily cut by swords or sabers, but metal aren't elastic enough. As for dark purple elastic iron and Heavy Profound Soft Silver, they took a very long time to forge, and because of the extremely specialized process, it was very difficult to make them into high-grade treasures.

In truth, the best material to make a spear shaft out of was spiritual wood!

For instance, this Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo.

Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo had the required flexibility. As for toughness, since the 900 year old Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo was already so difficulty to cut with swords and sabers, even an early Xiantian realm master would find it difficult to destroy this 9900 year old Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo.

It's only weak spot was where it was connected to its roots. Not only that, it could only be cut with the power of thunder.

Just in terms of rigidity, it was an excellent material. And this material could naturally conduct true essence. Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo was simply a natural vessel for true essence to flow through, especially thunder-attribute true essence. If thunder-attribute true essence was poured in, not only would it be immeasurably smooth, it would also have an increased effectiveness!

Lin Ming's own true essence contained the power of thunder. If he was able to have a spear made of Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, it would inevitably become even more alarmingly powerful.

Lin Ming licked his lips in excitement and he took the high-grade human-step treasure saber out. He flooded the sword with the power of thunder and fiercely chopped at the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo's roots.

However, even with this strike, there wasn't a single scratch.

Lin Ming was delighted. If even its weak spot was so tenacious, everywhere else must be more so.

Since time was running out, Lin Ming poured all of his strength into his next strike. The high-grade human-step treasure saber began to shine with thick arcs of electricity, and then, he slashed at the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo's roots. This time, it was cut open a little.

Lin Ming retracted his saber and made several more saber cuts. Each strike was as intense as the first, and they hit the exact same spot. With every strike, intense lightning flickered against the stone walls of the stone chamber. Lin Ming's speed was becoming faster and faster. Finally, on the 22nd cut, he was able to chop the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo down.

After he placed the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo in his spatial ring, Lin Ming roughly dispersed his soul force to probe the cave. After determining there were no other treasures present, he launched his movement technique and rapidly fled from the cave.

During the time he had been robbing the Thunder Flood Dragon's cave, Lin Ming was able to hear the explosions of the fierce battle in the sky. He could even feel the faint vibrations that passed through the mountain and shook the ground. Obviously, the fight outside was entering its supernova period, otherwise, Lin Ming would never have dared to go into the cave so deeply.

If the sounds of battle ever began to die down, Lin Ming would have immediately fled from the Thunder Flood Dragon's cave.

Treasures were nice, but none of it compared to keeping his own life intact.

Thankfully, the woman in red's power was beyond his wildest imaginations. With just the strength of one person, she had been able to face off against the entire Thundercrash Mountain without falling backwards.

The Thunder Flood Dragon cave was less than 10,000 feet deep. Compared to the cautious manner in which he entered, Lin Ming exited at full speed. This time, it only took a few breaths to reach the entrance.

As he approached the cave entrance, Lin Ming slowed down, and he completely restrained all of the breath of his body.

Lin Ming was like an octopus as he spread his soul force in all directions, probing the situation outside the cavern. Looking up, Lin Ming suddenly gasped. Outside the cave, there was blood everywhere. Thunder Lizards littered the ground,they were bleeding from their head, their life extinguished. They had been killed by the aftershocks.

As for the rest, most of them were wounded. Of the originally fierce Thunder Lizard army, over ⅓ had died, and the most of the ⅔ left were injured.

Seeing this scene, Lin Ming couldn't help but gulp. What sort of cultivation level was that woman in red at? She was simply terrifying.

Although the Thunder Lizard army was in extremely dire straits, Lin Ming didn't let relax his guard in the least. He carefully clambered to the top of the cave entrance, and waited for a big explosion to happen again. When that happened, he would seize the chance to dash out.

From the cave entrance to the nearest outcrop was about 200 feet. But, this distance was completely exposed to the vision of every Thunder Lizard around. Lin Ming didn't dare to take this risk.

In the sky, the battle was going on in full swing. The Thunder Flood Dragon wasn't prevailing. Rather, he was constantly losing ground as the fight continued.

And the woman in red was actually winning this battle. Behind her, there appeared the faint fiery image of a giant blazing phoenix. The fire Yan Qi of the Primal Chaos Heavens had been twisted into four 1000 feet long flaming tornadoes; it was as if a red dragon was madly dancing around the woman in red, spanning the heavens!

Seeing this apocalyptic scene as if the heavens themselves were being broken asunder, Lin Ming's heart rapidly beat. In this sort of battle, even the aftershocks would be able to instantly kill him.

The woman in red waved her sword, and the four flaming tornadoes converged into one, forming a massive 10,000 feet vortex of flames that swept towards the Thunder Flood Dragon.

The Thunder Flood Dragon ferociously roared, purple arcs of lightning twisted all over its vast body. It was struck by the giant vortex of flame!

Bang!

The flaming vortex slammed into the Thunder Flood Dragon. The Thunder Flood Dragon fought back the searing pain that wracked its body and soared towards the woman in red. Its speed didn't seem to match its giant body; it was like a deep purple laser that shot forward.

The Thunder Flood Dragon had decided to battle the woman in red in close combat. The potent physical power of a Flood Dragon was well documented; it wasn't something that a human martial artist could compare with.

The woman in red coldly snorted. She flourished her crimson blade, and the shrill cry of a phoenix rang out into the night air. A flaming phoenix raced out from the sword's edge and tore towards the Thunder Flood Dragon.

Seeing the imminent fiery collision, Lin Ming decided to take advantage of the cover from this explosion to rush to the nearest shelter. There, he would be safe. But at this moment, Lin Ming instantly paled.

As the titanic forces in the air collided, the severed flame tornado that had struck the Thunder Flood Dragon hadn't dissipated yet. It fell , and the precise location to where it fell was where Lin Ming was!

“Damn!” Lin Ming’s face turned green. How could he be so unlucky!? Although the true essence from the flaming vortexes aftermath had dissipated, the scattering flames were still enough to illuminate his position!

Lin Ming didn’t delay; he immediately turned around and he was about to run back into the Thunder Flood Dragon’s cave to take cover; the flames shouldn’t spread here. First, he would overcome this dilemma, and then, he would figure out how to proceed.

But just as he was about to launch forwards with Golden Roc Shattering the Sun, Lin Ming was shocked. The surrounding wind had been whipped up into a powerful whirlpool that forcefully sucked him into the fiery tornado!

Lin Ming had been caught up in that huge suction force, and his body was involuntarily sent flying into the air!

“This is bad!”

Lin Ming desperately forced out the maximum potential of Golden Roc Shattering the Void, but the suction force was too strong. He was no different to a leaf in a storm; even the concept of wind that let him flow through the air paled in comparison to this force.

Compared to this flaming storm, even the twelfth level of difficulty of the Seven Profound Martial House’s Violent Wind Tunnel was not worth mentioning!

It was not only Lin Ming, there were also 7 or 8 deep blue Thunder Lizards that were sent rolling into the air. Their bodies were several tens of thousands of jins and their strength was equal to a peak Houtian realm martial artist, but even they weren’t able to resist this terrifying suction!

Hearing the hissing roars of the Thunder Lizards, Lin Ming’s heart cried out with complaints to the heavens. He had actually been sent flying into the air with these fellows! If he wasn’t burnt to death by the flames, he would probably be crushed to death by these 7 or 8 overly large fellows.

Lin Ming made the decision to activate the Heretical God Force. With the support of the compressed true essence, Lin Ming activated the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ to cover his entire body with the thickest true essence he could. In this moment of life or death, this was his greatest trump card!

As he finished this, Lin Ming felt something heavy hit his back. His organs trembled, and he spat out blood.

It had to be known that after Lin Ming had gone through the challenges of the life and death smelting trial, his body had been strengthened, and his defensive power had reached an amazing degree. If this single collision was able to make him vomit blood, it only highlighted the terrifying strength of this suction force.

Fu fu fu fu fu fu fu fu fu!

Lin Ming didn’t have to time to look back and see what had hit him; he had been swallowed up by that terrifying storm into the flaming vortex. All around him was a bright scarlet red color; his surroundings had reached a scorching temperature that was able to instantly melt steel. Even the peak Houtian deep Blue Thunder Lizards could only let out pitiful screams as they were charred alive. Lin Ming’s clothes were instantly turned to ash, and his entire body was bathed in a sea of flames. The feeling of death was close at hand!

Chapter 208 – Returning With Riches

Chapter 208 – Returning With Riches

…

…

…

In that moment, Lin Ming calmed down. He could feel the scalding heat and the burning pain fade away, and even the raging firestorm seemed to stand still. He could clearly perceive every sensation, even the painful roars of the Blue Thunder Lizards.

Calm down… calm down…

Lin Ming's breathing became gentle. His eyes closed as he entered into the ethereal martial intent state, his soul entering into a sea of utter tranquility.

At the same time, the true essence in his body began to revolve wildly. The Heretical God Seed beat in the same rhythm as his heart.

"Flame Essence!"

Lin Ming's eyes slammed opened. Without any more reservations, he completely thrust all of his true essence into his Flame Essence.

By relying on the Thunder Soul, Lin Ming could withstand even the thunder attacks of the Blue Thunder Lizards.

Then, with a similar concept, he could use the Flame Essence to resist the fiery doom of this flaming storm.

The sesame seed sized Flame Essence became Lin Ming's final hope!

"Hah!"

The power of fire contained in the Flame Essence erupted outwards!

Meanwhile, the fierce heat of firestorm flowed like a surging tide into Lin Ming's body. The two energies clashed within him!

This was the power of flame that was released by an extreme Xiantian master! It was the blaze of a true Vermillion Bird!

Lin Ming was only a mere peak Bone Forging martial artist. Even with the Flame Essence, it would be difficult to deal with!

The Heretical God Seed's power of fire was instantly and completely suppressed from the very outset of the energy collisions. Seeing that the firestorm would burn down his own meridians, at this crucial moment, Lin Ming let out a fierce cry; his eyes became the same deep amber shade of a Flood Dragon!

ROARRRRR!

A bass resonant roar issued forth from Lin Ming's body. This sovereign sound did not come from Lin Ming's throat, but rumbled forth from his entire body!

In that moment, behind Lin Ming, the shadow of an Azure Dragon appeared from nowhere. A vast and majestic aura filled with boundless vigor suddenly burst forth!

Fuuu!

Lin Ming's true essence manifested into a azure light that shot out like 10,000 swords towards the approaching firestorm!

This azure colored true essence had a hint of eternal immortality. Although its aura was far less potent than the firestorm, and even though it was engulfed by the fires of the storm, the azure true essence was not extinguished. It completely routed the flames in Lin Ming's body!

In this life or death crisis, on the precipice of doom, the True Azure Dragon's reverse scale blood that had fused into Lin Ming's heart had finally awoken!

In that moment, the Thunder Flood Dragon was attacking the woman in red with his claws. Suddenly, he heard the staggering roar of a dragon, and his vast body trembled. It was as if a fear that stemmed from the deepest shadows of his soul had spilled forth, flooding his entire body!

True Dragon!?

No… impossible! How could Sky Spill Continent possibly contain a True Dragon!?!?

The Thunder Flood Dragon didn't even have the time to turn back; the woman in red's four-foot blood colored sword had already directly pierced towards him.

In a battle between masters, to be distracted was a fatal taboo!

"Die!"

The Thunder Flood Dragon opened its great mouth and a pure black thunder ball came out to attack the woman in red. At the same time, the woman in red's scarlet long sword had pierced the Thunder Flood Dragon's body!

………………………

The firestorm spun Lin Ming and the 7 or 8 deep Blue Thunder Lizards away and they pounded onto the magnetic ore ground 1000 feet away from the Thunder Flood Dragon's cave. At this time, Lin Ming was as naked as when he was born, and many places on his body were charred black. His hair was burnt; he looked to be in an incomparably miserable state.

However, by virtue of the dominating power of the Flame Essence and the awakened strength of the reverse scale blood, Lin Ming was able to protect his meridians. Although he was injured in the firestorm, it wouldn't leave hidden wounds that would negatively affect his cultivation in the future. As long as he took time to recuperate, he would be able to make a full recovery.

The 7 or 8 Blue Thunder Lizards, however, were in a wretched condition. If they hadn't been injured,they would have managed to survive barely, but these Thunder Lizards had already been seriously injured in battle. This time, they were caught in the firestorm, and their entire bodies were roasted black, they were half dead.

As Lin Ming landed, he bounced up and immediately turned around and ran!

The only thought in his mind was to leave Thundercrash Mountain as fast as he could, and run far far far away!

When he fell, the Thunder Lizards that were on the ground didn't have a chance to respond. When they did, Lin Ming had already run over 1000 feet away.

A dark Blue Thunder Lizard growled, and chased after Lin Ming intending to kill him. It faintly remembered that this human had come from the Ancestor's cave entrance. Did this human enter the Ancestor's cave?

Thinking this, the deep Blue Thunder Lizard became immeasurably angry. Not even the Purple Thunder Lizard had the right to enter the Ancestor's cave! A mere human dared to blaspheme them and trespass into their Holy Land?!

The dark Blue Thunder Lizard roared, and several other Thunder Lizards started rushing towards Lin Ming. They all gathered together to chase Lin Ming down and eviscerate him! These were high-quality beasts with the bloodline of a Flood Dragon; their bodies were extremely powerful. Even the explosive aftermath of a Xiantian masters attacks hadn't killed them!

Lin Ming activated his movement technique to the maximum. He dearly wished that he could spring forth a pair of wings and fly. Even though he had the top movement technique, Golden Roc Shattering the Void, his speed was still inferior to the dark Blue Thunder Lizards!

He was at the peak of Bone Forging and they were at the peak of Houtian; this was a full two realms difference in their cultivation levels. It was a deficiency that a top-tier movement technique couldn’t make up.

Luckily, the Xiantian realm Purple Thunder Lizard was too strong and hadn’t been sucked into that flaming tornado, otherwise, Lin Ming would already have died by now!

The 7 or 8 Thunder Lizards angrily rushed forwards. Especially the deep blue Thunder Lizard; it’s power was equal to a half-step Houtian realm martial artist. It’s speed was like lightning, it’s horrifying agility was simply completely visually incompatible with its size.

Boom boom boom!

The deep Blue Thunder Lizard shattered the magnetic stone beneath its feet as it ran forwards at high speed. Its entire body was surrounded by crackling arcs of blue lightning; its running speed was nearly one and a half times faster than Lin Ming!

Even with the approaching threat that it would overtake him, at the moment, Lin Ming was incomparably calm. He remembered, there was a cliff not too far away.

If he rushed into the sky, it would be likely to attract the attention of the Thunder Flood Dragon. So, jumping off the cliff was the best choice!

Kacha!

The dark blue Thunder Lizard chasing him opened its mouth to spit out a dark blue thunder ball towards him. At the same time, Lin Ming saw that the cliff was only a few dozen feet away!

He leapt into the air, his body drawing an arc through the sky. He was like an arrow that had been shot towards the cliff!

Bang!

The blue thunder ball accurately struck Lin Ming. But the force of the blow also accelerated Lin Ming's movement.

Lin Ming forcefully suppressed the growing numbing feeling in his body as he conjured his true essence again. With the aid of the concept of wind, his speed had reached an extreme!

The cliff was 10,000 feet high; Lin Ming couldn't even see the bottom. He was like a flying bird, jumping off the cliff!

Roar!

Roar!

As the 7 or 8 chasing Blue Thunder Lizards saw the cliff, they abruptly stopped. They stood at the edge of the cliff, mouths dripping with unbridled fury as they roared at the cliff bottom. The Thunder Lizards could not fly. Let alone the peak Houtian realm Blue Thunder Lizard, even a Xiantian realm Thunder Lizard could not fly. They could only do so if they awakened the true potential in their bloodline, becoming an avatar of a Thunder Flood Dragon.

Several of the Thunder Lizards were unwilling to let things go, constantly shooting blue lightning off the cliff. But by now, Lin Ming had already turned into a small spot in the distance. Besides the lightning attacks of two dark Blue Thunder Lizards, everything else missed.

The speed of the lightning was too quick. Because Lin Ming had also been injured, he was unable to dodge the two thunder balls.

Bang!

An intense numbing sensation surged within him. Even though Lin Ming had a Thunder Soul in him, he had been hit so many times that he spat out blood.

The whirring sound of air breezed past his ears. With just a few breaths of time, Lin Ming was already 1000 feet from the bottom.

Lin Ming clenched his teeth and ignored the injuries he had taken. Lin Ming fiercely moved his true essence and spread his arms outwards. An invisible force generated under Lin Ming's body as his falling speed suddenly decreased.

After a few moments, Lin Ming's speed had come to a complete standstill. He took a spare set of clothes out of his spatial ring and quickly put it on. With a wave of his hand, he landed on a rock, sliding down towards the bottom of the cliff.

Lin Ming then held onto a large tree that was at the bottom of the cliff, gasping for breath. Although he hadn't been in any intense fights, just resisting the firestorm a while ago had consumed most of the true essence reserves in his body.

As he recalled the azure colored true essence that contained a hint of eternally immortal breath, Lin Ming was secretly startled. Was that the power that came with the reverse scale blood?

He looked up at the cliff top. This cliff was 8000 feet high. If a Thunder Lizard really did think of jumping down, they would be turned into a muddy mess of flesh.

Not knowing how the battle between the Thunder Flood Dragon and the woman in red had ended, Lin Ming didn't dare to stop to heal his wounds. He forcefully suppressed the churning blood in him, and turned to run down the mountain. He wanted to immediately leave Thundercrash mountain in one go. If he ran 180 miles and changed directions a few times and then, hide in a bunch of tall grass, he didn't believe that the Thunder Flood Dragon could still find him.

Thinking of the harvest he had in his spatial ring, Lin Ming's thoughts heated up with delight.

These were the thunder-attribute treasures that the Thunder Flood Dragon had saved up for 10,000 years!

And yet, he had picked them like peaches. If the Thunder Flood Dragon discovered this, he was afraid that it would probably swallow him alive just to vent its anger.

With the aid of the concept of wind, Lin Ming was able to quickly descend the mountain. Because he was already far away from the Thunder Flood Dragon, he didn't need to be discrete. He launched his movement technique and leapt several hundred feet into the air; this ability was similar to flight.

After he passed the snow mountain region, he reached the mountainside. To Lin Ming, nothing here was a threat to him.

But at this time, Lin Ming actually felt a deep pain throb in his body.

"Damn, my injuries are flaring up."

Lin Ming frowned. The lightning attacks from the Thunder Lizard weren't much, but the flames from the Vermillion Bird continued to grow. Although it had been overwhelmed before by the azure true essence, now it had suddenly resurged, like a wildfire that met a spring breeze.

If he had the support of the Flame Essence, Lin Ming wouldn't be too alarmed. But, the rogue fires in his body had already left the Flame Essence. With such a tenacious vitality, it really made him feel apprehensive.

With Lin Ming's current condition, let alone summoning that azure true essence, he didn't even know how much ordinary true essence he could mobilize.

"I can't forcefully restrain it again. Otherwise, I might damage my meridians. With wounds to the meridians, it will be very difficult to heal. It will leave behind hidden wounds that become a barrier for when I try to break through to Pulse Condensation.

Lin Ming took a pill out of his spatial ring and swallowed it. He decided to first leave Thundercrash mountain, and then, find a safe and hidden place to heal his wounds.

Afterwards, he would devour the power of thunder from the rare treasures and materials he had obtained.

After eating up these rare treasures, just how strong would the Thunder Soul in him become?

Chapter 209 – Injured Maiden

Chapter 209 – Injured Maiden

…

…

…

In a cave at the base of Thundercrash Mountain, Lin Ming was recovering from his injuries as he meditated. The residual flames of the Vermillion Bird had been difficult to deal with. Only after spending a great deal of effort was Lin Ming just able to suppress it forcefully.

After swallowing a medicinal pill, Lin Ming probed his body with his soul force; any hidden wounds were almost healed.

Lin Ming looked at the sky, the sun was setting over the horizon. Lin Ming intended to flee Thundercrash Mountain during the night and find a secret place to refine the thunder-attribute treasures he had picked up. It was a pity that he hadn't succeeded in obtaining the Thunder Soul, this caused Lin Ming to feel a bit of regret.

As he carefully made his way out of the cave, Lin Ming launched his movement technique. He was like a sleek cheetah as he made his way through the forest with only the sounds of branches breaking beneath his feet. In an instant, Lin Ming had already rushed forwards several miles into the distance.

The sun disappeared over the horizon, and the dim forest became completely dark. But this had no impact on Lin Ming's speed. After rushing several dozen more miles out, Lin Ming stopped in his footsteps. With his keen senses, he felt an overwhelmingly rich flame energy in the air.

Looking around, Lin Ming found that the surrounding ground was scorched black, and even the green leaves on the trees had been toasted into a withering yellow. They had apparently been roasted by a fiery air.

With all these signs of burned objects around him, Lin Ming was able to find obvious traces of flame, as if something flaming had gone deep into the forest.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment before following the traces of flames for several steps. His eyes suddenly narrowed, “Blood?”

On the ground, there were some dark red bloodstains. And the deadwood and leaves surrounding the bloodstains had been burnt to ashes.

Lin Ming had a faint guess of what had happened. He restrained the breath of his body and sent out his soul force. Cautiously following the traces of flame, he only had to walk 2 or 3 miles before he suddenly froze in his steps.

In a clearing in the forest, a large red bird was sprawled on the ground, prostrate. This was the Vermillion Bird that Lin Ming had seen before.

This surprised Lin Ming. The Vermillion Bird’s wing was actually broken! Blood constantly dripped from the wound. The bloodstains that he had seen in the forest were left behind by this injured Vermillion Bird.

Looking at the ebbing appearance of the Vermillion Bird, it looked like it received extremely heavy injuries. The flames of its body weren’t as vibrant as they were before. Instead, they were like the flickering wicks of a candle flame just before it was extinguished.

Behind the Vermillion Bird, there was a woman in red leaning against a tree trunk. Her face was pale, her gorgeous eyes were closed shut and her long eyelashes were slightly trembling.

Her body was wrapped in fire and arcs of purple lightning. In the dark night, it was an especially dramatic image.

Obviously, she was also seriously injured.

Seeing this scene, Lin Ming's eyes widened in stupefaction. The woman in red had been suppressing the Thunder Flood Dragon in their battle, so how did the situation reverse and she take such a heavy injury? If she couldn't win, she could at least have fled. But even her Vermillion Bird mount had broken a wing. Did the Thunder Flood Dragon used an overwhelming final trump card? Or was there another awe-inspiring powerhouse that had arrived?

Lin Ming looked at the woman in red, and his expression changed several times, revealing his conflicting thoughts. He finally decided to return to where he came from. A powerhouse like this, even if severely injured, would still not find it difficult to kill him. Lin Ming didn't want to place his own little life in the hands of others.

Of course, he also thought that if he could help the woman in red cure her injury, she would have to owe him a favor. The value of a favor from a Xiantian realm master could be imagined.

But if she was a Xiantian realm master, she most likely have several miracle medicines and elixirs that she could casually bring out that were tantamount to his entire net worth. Why would she need his help in curing any injures?

Just as Lin Ming took a step back, the woman in red opened her eyes. Her jet black pupils stared forth. In the dark night, her eyes were just like shining stars.

Lin Ming stopped, standing where he was. He hesitated for a moment, before respectfully calling out. "Greetings, Senior!"

"It's you."

The woman in red had already felt someone nearby. It was only because their cultivation level was not high that she didn't care too much.

But, it seemed that she had run across the boy from Thundercrash Mountain.

This was the third time they had met, this was truly destiny.

"Do you know if there is a large Southern Tribe nearby?" The woman in red asked. Her voice frail, but it still revealed an innate sense of prideful nobility.

"Yes, there is one 200 miles to the southwest." Lin Ming said truthfully. He guessed that the during the time on the summit, the woman in red had been too busy to bother with such a weak and unimportant person like himself. There was no way that she knew that he had already looted the Thunder Flood Dragon's cave, so he didn't worry that she would covet anything on him.

"200 miles... " The woman in red sighed, a sharp bitterness flashing across her face. She hadn't imagined that one day, a dignified maiden of Divine Phoenix Island like herself would be stumped by a mere 200 miles.

Lin Ming became aware of the bitterness in the woman in red. He was surprised for a moment and then, he immediately understood. It was not only the Vermillion Bird whose wing was broken, but the woman in red was heavily injured too, to the point where even walking would be an painfully onerous task.

He was curious; how did this woman in red, who had been the one with the upper hand, suddenly suffer such a heavy injury? Of course, that was a question that he didn't dare to ask.

Although it was unlikely, Lin Ming still politely asked, "Senior, is there any way that I can help you?"

The woman in red thought for a moment, and then asked, "This tribe that you mentioned, do they have any Heavenly Wind Eagles for sale?"

Lin Ming shook his head. "It's only a small tribe, they wouldn't have a mount like that. But, they do have horses...."

Lin Ming's sentence trailed off as he glanced at the Vermillion Bird. Such a hefty bird, can a horse actually transport it?

The woman in red shook her head, her eyes flashing with disappointment.

She gently said, "Thank you."

Then she stood up, and bent over to whisper into the Vermillion Bird's ear. The Vermillion Bird opened both eyes and whined a few times, struggling to stand up.

The Vermillion Bird tried to uses its wings to prop itself up, but because its left wing was broken, it lost its balance and almost fell to the ground.

The woman in red couldn't bear to watch such a pitiful scene. With a bit of deep regret, she stretched her jade-white hand out and placed it on the Vermillion Bird's chest, continuously pouring fire true essence into the Vermillion Bird's body.

As the woman in red's true essence was poured into the Vermillion Bird, the Vermillion Bird's healthy appearance was restored a bit. But, at the same time, the purple electric arcs of lightning on the woman in red's body became wilder and more powerful. After more snaking arcs of lightning sprung up, the woman in red's face became increasingly pale.

Lin Ming had been clearly watching everything from the side. The lightning was obviously left behind by the Thunder Flood Dragon's attack, and the purple arcs of lightning were originating from within the woman in red's body.

Before, the woman in red had been using her own true essence to suppress the lightning in her body, but she didn't seemed to achieve any success. Now that she had poured a part of her true essence into the Vermillion Bird, the lightning around her became immediately fierce.

If it was a force of thunder that even the woman in red could not suppress, then maybe....

Lin Ming had a faint guess. This speculation caused him to pant, and his heart began to beat like a wild drum!

Seeing the woman in red take a pill and limp towards the Vermillion Bird, leading it towards the southwest, Lin Ming opened his mouth and said, “Senior, may I have a look at your injury?”

The woman in red turned her head, looking at Lin Ming with surprise. Although this youth in front of her seemed somewhat mystical, and his strength far surpassed his current cultivation, she didn’t think that there was any chance that he could possibly cure her injuries.

As the Thunder Flood Dragon went all out with his final strike, she could only use her thick true essence to barely suppress it. She had no other means to deal with it.

The woman in red had only wanted some of the Thunder Flood Dragon’s blood to help the Vermillion Bird complete its evolution. She had even brought sufficient treasures and terms to equally exchange with the Thunder Flood Dragon. She had never imaged that this matter, which could not have been regarded too seriously, had caused the Thunder Flood Dragon to bet everything it had against her.

As the woman in red held the upper hand and was suppressing the Thunder Flood Dragon, it didn’t even hesitate to use up the millennia Thunder Soul that it had been refining within itself for so long as its final strike.

If it was any common power of thunder, the woman in red would have been able to use her true essence to extinguish it. However, the Thunder Soul clung to life and refused to be smothered out. After entering her body, she had to transfer all of the true essence in her body to contain it. If she relaxed her guard just a bit, or used up any true essence, the Thunder Soul would immediately manifest, wantonly attacking the meridians in her body!

Because of this reason, she didn’t even have the ability to fly now.

If she wanted to eliminate the Thunder Soul from within her body, she could only do so at Divine Phoenix Island. But, Divine Phoenix Island was 500,000 miles from here. Thinking this, the woman in red's heart was filled with bitterness. With her current condition, she would die before she ever walked the distance.

The Vermillion Bird rushed out of Thundercrash Mountain in order to salvage its life. It had also been seriously injured and it had barely managed to descend the mountain; its left wing had been completely destroyed.

One person and one bird would easily attract attention from high-level vicious beasts in this beastly forest. The woman in red could easily deal with them, however, the problem was if they came in great numbers. If they did, the woman in red would have to use up an excessive amount of true essence, aggravating her injuries.

The woman in red didn't imagine that she would be placed in such a plight; it seemed that she had reached a dead end.

She said to Lin Ming, "Thank you, but no. You have no means to deal with my wound."

She guessed that Lin Ming came from some great family in the mortal world, and he probably had some sort of expensive miracle medicine on his body. But, she had many of these pill and elixirs, and hers were even better. However, all her medicines were nothing in front of the Thunder Soul.

Lin Ming knew that the woman in red wouldn't believe him. He said, "Senior, I would just like to take a look. If I can't do anything, I will naturally give up. With Senior's wound as they are now, does Senior actually plan on take the Vermillion Bird with a broken wing to the human tribe? Or does Senior plan on staying in this vicious beast forest? I fear that both these plans are a bit dangerous."

"I said, there is nothing that you can do about my injury!" The woman in red said impatiently. She was someone who was used to being in the superior position and listened to; she wasn't used to others questioning her, especially about such an obvious matter.

This was just like a little child telling an sage doctor that he would help take his pulse and see what illness he had. That doctor would absolutely think that the little child was just playing around and whiling his time away.

If it weren't because the youth was so young, the woman in red would even suspect that he was having improper thoughts to take advantage of the situation.

Lin Ming saw the woman in red's evident impatience and grumpiness. He did have an ulterior motive in asking to take a look at her wound. It was because he wanted to examine the possibility of the Thunder Soul. He patiently said, "I just want to take a look. If I can't do anything, you have nothing to lose. You're a great Xiantian master, why would you be afraid of a little Bone Forging boy like myself?"

Chapter 210 – Healing Wounds

Chapter 210 – Healing Wounds

…

…

…

The woman in red frowned at Lin Ming. She had been born with an inherent dignity and pride. Now, with her current cultivation and status, her noble manner had already integrated into her being. That didn't mean she was arrogant, this was only a normal response. It was just like the impossible prospect of a supreme Empress obeying the orders of a common peasant, not to mention that the peasant was speaking such unrealistic words.

Lin Ming saw that the woman in red was silent, so he tentatively took a few steps forward. "Senior, if I may, can I suggest using my soul force to examine your injury?"

Hearing Lin Ming's inquiry, the woman in red expression became increasingly dark. Soul force was able to penetrate most objects, for instance, things like the human body, or clothes. If she lay down the true essence shielding her body, and let the other party scan her, it was no different than removing all her clothes. Everything would be visible.

How could she possibly agree to such a request? The woman in red coldly snorted, then turned around to walk away. With her identity and status, she would normally never come into contact with such a simple boy. They were people of completely separate worlds. If it weren't for today's special circumstances, these two would have never exchanged so many words.

Lin Ming saw the woman in red turn away. He rolled his eyes, and loudly said, "Senior, you were struck by the Thunder Flood Dragon's Thunder Soul, right!?"

The woman in red stiffened. In surprise, she turned her head to look at Lin Ming. Although she had guessed this teenager in front of her was some extraordinary person in the mortal world, she didn't think that he would have such good sight. Although he hadn't used any soul force to examine her, he was still able to correctly guess what sort of injury she had.

"How did you know?"

"Just a guess." Lin Ming shrugged. His speculation was the start, but the restlessness of the Thunder Soul in the Heretical God Seed let Lin Ming be confident in his guess.

Seeing the woman in red hesitate, Lin Ming continued, "How about it? In any case, you'll find it difficult to suppress the Thunder Soul in your body any time soon. There's no point in abandoning any hope. In desperate situations, you should try everything. If it doesn't work, then there's no loss for you.

Hearing 'desperate situation', the woman in red's eyebrows slanted upwards. An invisible pressure suddenly rolled off from her body.

Lin Ming shrunk backwards. He knew that he had said something wrong, just like a peasant that had insulted an Empress. To say such words to an existence like her, his fate could be imagined. He hastily said, "I'm sorry, I spoke incorrectly."

"Mm?" Seeing that Lin Ming did not feel distress under her pressure, the woman in red was somewhat surprised. She was a maiden of Divine Phoenix Island and the bloodline of the Vermillion Bird flowed through her. If she didn't deliberately restrain her aura, those that came closer to her would usually feel a sense of discomfort.

This suppression originated from the depths of her special bloodline. Yet, this young body didn't even have the least bit reaction, it was really weird. Was it possible that he also had some special bloodline?

"How old are you?" The woman in red asked.

Lin Ming hesitated, and then, he truthfully said, "I'm one month from 16."

He thought that his cultivation being at the peak Bone Forging stage at this age would surprise the woman in red, but he didn't think that the women in red's eyebrows would only prick up a bit, sizing Lin Ming up once more, not looking too impressed.

Lin Ming ruefully smiled; it seemed that he had thought to highly to himself. In the eyes of this woman in red, his cultivation was only considered good, not stunning. Of course, Qin Xingxuan was half a year younger than him, and she had already reached the early Bone Forging stage a month or two ago. If Qin Xingxuan was his age, it wouldn't be strange for her to reach the peak Bone Forging stage.

The woman in red said, "Alright. I'll let you look once. But, when you use your soul force, behave yourself!"

The woman in red's tone was extremely harsh. To think that she, a master half-step into the Revolving Core realm, would actually agree to such ridiculous demands from a little boy and let him attempt to treat her. She really would be the laughing stock of everyone in the world.

"I understand."

Lin Ming didn't even have the courage to randomly scan her body with his soul force. Otherwise, this woman in red would start raging and probably kill him.

As Lin Ming walked over to the woman in red, he was able to clearly smell a delicate fragrance emanating from her body. Although this fragrance smelled very nice, Lin Ming didn't dare to even breathe for fear that the woman in red would go crazy.

"Well… can you sit down first?"

The woman in red looked at Lin Ming, and then sat down. Although she felt that this young boy had some secrets on him, she had no hope that he would be able to help her.

When the Thunder Flood Dragon had used his final strike, he had poured his life essence and blood into the Thunder Soul. In addition to that, the Thunder Flood Dragon had nourished and refined the Thunder Soul in his body for many millennia. It could be said that the Thunder Soul contained the origin will of the Thunder Flood Dragon, and it was equal to an unthinking avatar of the Thunder Flood Dragon.

Not even a master with Xiantian realm cultivation and thunder-attribute would be able to absorb this Thunder Soul.

The Thunder Soul also had immortal characteristics that refused to be extinguished. If she wanted to extract it without harming herself, she could only ask a Revolving Core Elder of her sect!

Lin Ming wasn't clear of the mysteries present; otherwise, he would hesitate to expose his secrets in order to risk the danger of absorbing the Thunder Soul. If he managed to arouse the interest of the woman in red, he would be finished if she decided to investigate him.

Lin Ming politely extended his soul force into the woman in red's body, carefully avoiding any sensitive regions. Quickly, he was able to discern the source of the power of thunder. It was exactly at the woman in red's heart. Without a doubt, this was where the Thunder Soul was hiding.

The heart was the weak point of a human. If the Thunder Soul was hiding in her heart, it would be extremely troublesome to deal with.

Lin Ming penetrated his soul force into her heart, and he saw a small purple Thunder Flood Dragon roaring and clawing as it made threatening gestures. It constantly generated purple arcs of electricity from its body that constantly seeped into the woman in red's body.

"This is the Thunder Soul?"

Lin Ming could feel that his Heretical God Seed was becoming very excited; it wanted to devour this Thunder Soul!

"Mm? This Thunder Soul seems to contain a fiery soul… as if it is self-aware. Is this the Thunder Soul, or the Thunder Flood Dragon's soul?"

Lin Ming hesitated. At this moment, he discovered that there was a faint cage of flames that surrounded the small purple Thunder Flood Dragon, firmly trapping it. The small purple Thunder Flood Dragon continuously attacked the flame cage, biting at the bars in an attempt to tear it open.

This flame cage was a true essence seal that the woman in red had put in place. If it weren't for this seal, the small purple Thunder Flood Dragons spirit would have already broken into the woman in red's body, destroying everything recklessly.

Retracting his soul force, Lin Ming moved behind the woman in red. He sat down and put his hand on her back.

This action caused the woman in red to suddenly stiffen. Not in all her years had a man dared to touch her like this. "What are you doing?!"

Lin Ming confidently said, "I'm sucking the Thunder Soul out. My true essence is a thunder-attribute, so I might be able to absorb the Thunder Soul.

The woman in red was disgruntled. "You want to absorb the Thunder Soul with your cultivation? Even an ordinary Thunder Soul would ruin your meridians! This Thunder Soul has the inherent origin will of the Thunder Flood Dragon. Even thunder-attribute masters would be helpless, and you think you are enough? Hurry up and leave, I don't have time to play with you..."

The woman In red's words trailed off. To her amazement, she felt that the power of thunder that the small purple Thunder Flood Dragon released was being pulled by an invisible strength towards her back, as if it were being sucked away by the youth's palm.

The young boy's hand became extremely hot on her back. With his palm touching her, it was a very strange feeling.

This is...

The woman in red was stunned. Although this was only the power of thunder that was released by the Thunder Soul, it shouldn't have been easy to absorb. Just how was this young man doing this?

At this moment, something more startling occurred. The woman in red discovered that the small purple Thunder Flood Dragon in her heart was become violently restless, as if it feared something that was approaching. It no longer released the power of thunder. Instead, it put its full force into breaking the flame cage, wanting to escape immediately.

What was going on? What was the Thunder Flood Dragon afraid of?

The woman in red was shocked. Was it because of the youth behind her?

The small purple Thunder Flood Dragon was struggling with all its might, but there was an invisible force that had locked onto it. This force wasn't too strong, but it contained an immense pressure.

This pressure not only suppressed the Thunder Flood Dragon's soul, it also suppressed the Thunder Soul itself!

What was acting on the Thunder Flood Dragon's soul was the blood of the True Dragon. This was bloodline suppression of the Thunder Flood Dragon!

As for what was acting on the Thunder Soul itself, it was the Heretical God Seed's suppression!

Under this dual suppression, the Thunder Flood Dragon began to violently fear.

Lin Ming's true essence was nothing compared to the Thunder Flood Dragon. But, this suppression had nothing to do with cultivation at all. This was akin to the law of suppression, not allowing any dissent or rebellion!

Chi chi chi!

The power of thunder was unceasingly siphoned from the small purple Thunder Flood Dragon's body. The Thunder Flood Dragon grew increasingly anxious and frightened, madly slamming against the flame cage. This caused the woman in red to bite her lips, her complexion becoming increasingly pale. She had used almost all of her true essence to maintain the flame cage, and her body was extremely weak at the moment.

However, at this time, Lin Ming didn't feel much better. Although the Heretical God Seed and the True Dragon's blood were dually pressuring the Thunder Soul, Lin Ming's cultivation was just too weak. This was like a little child that took two peerless treasure swords to deal with a wild tiger.

Lin Ming was able to absorb the power of thunder. This power of thunder was a trivial product of the Thunder Soul, but yet, it placed a huge pressure on Lin Ming. He was almost unable to suppress it.

"Hah!"

Lin Ming shut off his soul force and removed his right hand from the woman in red. He gasped for breath in great, heaving gulps. At this time, his right palm was completely covered in sweat.

The woman in red turned around, her beautiful pair of eyes blinking at Lin Ming. Her exquisite face was filled with a look of utter disbelief.

She hadn't imagined that this little boy would actually have a way to move the Thunder Soul. It had even managed to frighten the origin will that the Thunder Flood Dragon had left in the Thunder Soul! Although this boy's cultivation was only at the Bone Forging stage, it was the truth.

Of course, if the woman in red knew that during the battle on the summit of Thundercrash Mountain, the reason that the Thunder Flood Dragon had been suddenly distracted and allowed her to injure it was because this young boy had inexplicably gave out a fearsome True Dragon's roar, she would be shocked speechless.

Chapter 211 – Peculiar Young Boy

Chapter 211 – Peculiar Young Boy

…

…

…

“What’s your name? May I know what school you are from?” The woman in red eyes twinkled as she looked at the drenched-in-sweat Lin Ming. She found it difficult to keep herself calm.

In addition to the fact that this youth did not fear the pressure that was brought about by the Vermillion Bird’s bloodline, he was even able cause the Thunder Flood Dragon’s origin will to feel a faint sense of terror; he was definitely a person of extraordinary means.

Perhaps there was something special about his body, bloodline, or soul. Or maybe, he came from some ancient mystical family.

Hearing the lady ask for his name and school, Lin Ming hesitated. He was prepared to give her the fake name ‘Mo Lin’ that he made up, but at this moment, the woman in red said, “There is no need to say it if you find it inconvenient.”

Although Lin Ming’s hesitation wasn’t very evident, the woman in red still noticed. If he had some special bloodline or came from a secret martial cultivation family, then he might be reluctant to disclose his identity.

“I saw you climbing Thundercrash Mountain before. Did you manage to ascend by yourself?” The woman in red casually asked.

“Yes. I am a thunder-attribute martial artist, so I have a very strong resistance to the power of thunder. Otherwise, there was no way that I would have made it that far.” Lin Ming said with a self-deprecating smile as he wiped the sweat from his brow.

“Oh.” The woman in red inadvertently uttered. She was quite startled; the Thunder Lizards didn’t just have powerful thunder-based attacks, but their formidable bodies were extremely dangerous weapons.

Even if he had absolute immunity to thunder, a boy merely at the Peak Bone Forging stage would find it impossible to arrive at the snowy mountain region. This could only mean that this youth had a strength that far surpassed other martial artists at the same level of cultivation.

To reach peak Bone Forging before he was 16, this result was simply nothing to the talents of major sects and large aristocratic families. But, if his cultivation reached the peak Bone Forging stage, and he also had strength that surpassed someone at the same cultivation, then that was surprising.

There weren’t many young talents like this even at Divine Phoenix Island.

The two fell into a brief lull of silence. Lin Ming sat cross-legged on the ground, constantly revolving the True Primal Chaos Formula to suppress the violent power of thunder within himself. This Thunder Soul was simply disastrous to absorb. Not only that, but it also contained the origin will of the Thunder Flood Dragon within it. Otherwise, the woman in red would not have been left in such a powerless state.

As he circulated the true essence within his body, Lin Ming quickly entered into the ethereal martial intent state. His conscious control separated from his body, and his true essence began to spontaneously revolve through the most perfect route possible. His physical condition rapidly recovered. Meanwhile, the fiery power of thunder was also subdued by the Heretical God Seed.

The woman in red had also been sitting in meditation and recovering her condition, focusing on imprisoning the Thunder Soul within herself. Her eyes were glued onto Lin Ming as he practiced.

Martial intent?

She carefully observed him for less than half an incense stick of time to determine that she hadn't been mistaken. This boy, he had actually comprehended his own martial intent!

The woman in red gasped. She thought that he was just a trivial little boy of the mortal world, but he kept surprising her over and over again. First, he had suppressed the origin will of the Thunder Flood Dragon, then, his true strength and age came into an amazing contrast, and now, he had actually comprehended a martial intent!

It had to be known that the woman in red had reached the extreme Xiantian realm, and had even taken a half-step into the Revolving Core realm. To someone at her level, there were very few things that could surprise her. Even the top geniuses of large sects and great families would only earn a little nod from her. Yet, in the mortal world, she had actually encountered a little boy that looked as harmless as a bunny, and yet, had so many impressive qualities.

A martial intent was exceedingly rare. In tens of thousands or even hundreds of thousands of martial artists, there might not be a single person that had comprehended one. It was an incomparably precious ability. It wasn't something that came from martial talent or cultivation. Rather, it could only be created by one's own hands.

If parents were talents, then their children would mostly be talented too. Large sects have gone through thousands upon thousands of years of accumulated development and the screening of individuals in order to produce countless talents. The strong enjoyed more resources, while the weak were eliminated. The ones that remained were the elite of the elite. The children of these extraordinary characters would also be extraordinary.

While being an amazing talent, they would also have limitless precious pills and rare elixirs growing up. They could use true essence stones as they pleased, have top-tier cultivation methods and skills, and also have the best master and teachers. This person was destined to set foot into the Xiantian realm. Even if an average person of the mortal world cultivated for a lifetime, they still wouldn't even touch their toes; this was the result of the difference in birth.

But even to these young talents of large sects, for a 15 year old to reach the Bone Forging stage or Pulse Condensation period, and simultaneously comprehend a martial intent, this sort of thing could only be considered serendipity.

One's heart of martial arts and martial intent were related. The purer and more substantive one's heart of martial arts, the higher their chances of being able to comprehend a martial intent. But to the majority of geniuses in the large sects and families, they had lived their lives peacefully and were free of worries. At the start of their path, their parents had already paved their road with riches. By only traveling across vast, flat lands, how could they possibly have a strong heart of martial arts?

To those that had suffered the tribulations of torment and suffering, traveling the bumpy road of life, being born short of resources and not even having much marital talent, it would be difficult for them to break through to the Pulse Condensation period even in their twenties. However, it wasn't too strange or fearful for someone like this to comprehend a martial intent.

But this young boy in front of her, he was so young and yet so ridiculously strong for his cultivation. Not only that, but he had also comprehended a martial intent. He was simply an evil omen, a monstrous genius!

Not having realized it, the woman in red's gaze had filled with curiosity.

This boy had some many unusual secrets; just who was he?

A quarter hour quietly slipped by. Under the help of the ethereal martial intent, Lin Ming was able to quickly suppress the restless power of thunder within his body. He rose up, saying, “Let’s go. If I remember correctly, there’s a cave not too far away that we can hide in. During the night the forests of the Southern Wilderness are haunted by vicious beasts; if we stay here we won’t have a decent rest.”

Because most of the power of thunder within the woman in red’s body was siphoned off by Lin Ming, she had returned to a passable condition. She took out several miracle medicines to feed to the Vermillion Bird, and then woman and bird followed Lin Ming forwards.

“That’s right, I forgot to ask, did the Thunder Flood Dragon die?” Lin Ming suddenly thought of this, asking.

“It’s not dead. But, it’s injuries are heavier than mine, and I’ve killed off most of its descendants.” The woman in red casually said.

“Oh.....” Lin Ming let out a breath. Good thing he had run away quickly, or else he might have died in the aftermath if he stayed on the mountain summit. He didn’t believe his defensive capabilities were better than the Purple Thunder Lizard.

“If it hasn’t died then we should be careful.” Lin Ming said as he walked in front of the woman in red. He had been backtracking on the traces of flames that were left behind by the Vermillion Bird. The traces hadn’t disappeared and were far too obvious.

The woman in red followed Lin Ming in consternation. Although her cultivation was 108,000 miles from Lin Ming’s, in terms of experiences within the night forest and life skills, her ability was lacking compared to Lin Ming. She was usually flying in the sky; there was never any time she had to pass through a forest on foot.

As they walked, Lin Ming neatly cleaned up any traces of their path, and also took a moment to hunt a blue-eyed deer. For the several days since his adventure on Thundercrash

Mountain, he had only been surviving on dried rations and water from his spatial ring; he was getting sick and tired of the bland taste.

The two quickly arrived at the cave. The interior was extremely humid and wet. Lin Ming lit a fire, and looked for some dry hay to spread on the ground. He apologised to the woman in red, “Sorry, this might be a bit of an inconvenience for you.”

Afterwards, he took out a knife and began to skin the blue-eyed deer. His hands moved like the wind. The manner in which he sliced open the deer seemed chaotic and messy, but after several minutes, Lin Ming actually grasped at it and ,with his hand, extracted more than a dozen strips of white tendon from the deer.

The woman in red’s eyelids jumped. It seemed that Lin Ming hadn’t been randomly cutting with his knife, but had actually been removing the white tendons from the blue-eyed deer. These white tendons crisscrossed each other and were woven like a net. To remove them was an extremely tedious and complicated task.

But Lin Ming had used a very short time to complete this, and not only that, but the white tendons that he pulled out hadn’t broken, the flesh had been cleanly sliced off.

The woman in red was a bit clueless on how it had been done. To achieve this level of finesse, one would have to be very familiar with the body structure of the blue-eyed deer, and also have to undergo years of knife training. This was something that only a chef would ever do.

What was this? Why would such a talented martial artist be a chef? And looking at the way his knife had achieved such a consummate degree of skill, this young boy had probably been a chef for many years already.

Lin Ming saw the woman in red blankly gazing at the white strips of tendons in his hands and explained with a smile, “Blue-eyed deer has a very good flavor, but it has too much coarse tendon; it will affect the taste, so it’s best to take it out.

As Lin Ming spoke, his hands weren't idling. He used the knife to cut open the deer and dress it. Then, he made a few more seemingly random cuts and pulled out a pile of bones.

Lin Ming then took out a thick branch, hung the blue-eyed deer on it, and began to grill it over the fire.

The woman in red found that the deer Lin Ming had hung over for grilling had already been neatly marked and patterned by Lin Ming. The distance between every cut was even; it was extremely neat and structured.

Seeing this, her expression became increasingly strange. What sort of background did this young boy have? If she didn't know of Lin Ming's strength, she would have really thought he was some famous cook.

After a quarter-hour passed, the deer meat began to turn into a glazed, golden yellow color. A little bit of fat had been melted by the flames, dropping into the fire below with a sizzling sound.

As for the white tendons and bones, Lin Ming didn't waste any of it. He took out a pot from his spatial ring and placed the bits into it with some water, then placed it over the fire to cook as soup.

The soup boiled; the barbecue was sweet and savory.

Soon, the cave was filled with a delicious fragrance. Even though the woman in red primarily ate vegetables, she was unable to stop drooling as she smelled that delicious aroma.

As for that hefty Vermillion Bird, it began to restlessly fidget. It even seemed to have forgotten that its wing was wounded. Its brilliantly flame-colored eyes were locked onto the barbecue in Lin Ming's hand as if wishing it could swallow it down whole.

Because the flame had roasted the meat, the cuts on the deer meat had risen; just looking at it caused one's appetite to increase.

Even though it had been grilled for so long, there was not a single charred bit on the barbecue. It was a delicious golden-brown, glistening with melted fat. The woman in red was impatiently waiting. Of course, she was careful to conceal her eagerness and continued to appear tranquil and calm.

At this time, Lin Ming took out a collection of bottles and jars from his spatial ring. After opening them, it turned out to be salts and various other spices that were purchased at the southern tribes.

When Lin Ming ran into the Na sisters, he had been buying salt at a southern tribe.

Chapter 212 – Thunder Soul Evolution

Chapter 212 – Thunder Soul Evolution

…

…

…

Lin Ming looked at the wide variety of seasonings and chose some to sprinkle on the barbecue. He had a very relaxed and enjoyable expression as he moved. The woman was completely speechless; was this really a martial artist? She had never seen a sect elder or any talented disciples ever bring out seasonings and pots when going out on adventures. This was more like a chef than an actual martial artist.

After a considerable amount of time, the woman in red finally heard the long awaited words from Lin Ming, “It’s done grilling, you can eat it.”

“Mm, yes.....” The woman in red seriously nodded, and then immediately asked, “How do I eat this?”

This blue-eyed deer was so large; obviously, there was no way she could use her mouth to bite into it.

Lin Ming was stunned for a moment. He sent her a strange look; did she not know how to eat food? Why would she ask such an idiotic question? He patiently replied, “Of course you eat by biting. Here, this is yours.”

He tore off a piece of the deer leg and thrust it towards the woman in red.

The woman looked at such a large chunk of meat and was directly dumbfounded. She had never eaten something like this before. Was she supposed to use her hands and gnaw on it?

“Is there something wrong? You don’t like barbecue?” Lin Ming asked her with some puzzlement, seeing that the woman in red still hadn’t taken it.

The woman in red didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. She awkwardly received the barbecue slice. As she attempted to take a bite, she saw that Lin Ming was staring at her.

The woman in red’s cheeks flushed. She turned around and used her sleeve to hide herself as she gently took a small bite.

Lin Ming was left speechless. Wouldn’t she be tired from eating like this? Exasperated, he didn’t care too much. He tore off a piece of the deer thigh and chomped on it.

The woman in red was focusing on eating the tender deer meat. Oil flowed through her lips and teeth, and the fragrance flowed into her mouth. At this moment, she had a strange feeling; delicious, this was just too delicious.

In fact, people that originated from large sects and families would rarely eat food like this. They mostly eat spiritual food and spiritual vegetables that were filled with abundant heaven and earth origin energy. They could be the abundant treasure troves of sects. They grew while continually absorbing heaven and earth origin energy which embedded into the fruits and vegetables themselves. Eating food like this long-term was advantageous to enhancing one’s cultivation and accumulating Xiantian air.

As for the food of the mortal world, such as barbecue, it was considered to be contaminated with the foul Houtian air; it wasn’t good for eating.

Therefore, this was the first time the woman in red had eaten barbecue.

“How does it taste?” After eating dry rations for several days, Lin Ming’s appetite was hearty. He tore down a big chunk of eat and ambiguously asked his question. He had full confidence in his cooking skills.

“It’s very tasty, but...how do you know how to prepare food?” The woman in red swallowed a bit of meat and sent a puzzled look towards Lin Ming. This little boy was just too mysterious.

Lin Ming continued eating the barbecue. He replied without looking up, “My family owns a restaurant.”

“Uh....” The woman in red suddenly choked on her food, “What did you say?”

“My parents own a restaurant, that’s how I know how.” Lin Ming looked up. He didn’t feel this was anything to be surprised about.

“No...I see.” The woman in red was bewildered. She thought that Lin Ming originated from some profound martial cultivation family, but....restaurant? Will a martial cultivation family open a restaurant?

Did this imply that he was thoroughly a mortal?

A mortal, whose cultivation had managed to reach the peak Bone Forging stage before he was 16 years old. This was simply a talent that went against heaven’s will. What was his martial talent? At least a medium sixth-grade?

A sixth-grade talent would be considered a top-tier even within Divine Phoenix Island. In the mortal world, the probability of this happening was simply to small; there might not even be one in a billion!

If he was really a mortal, then she could try to pull him into Divine Phoenix Island!

Thinking this, the woman in red asked, “Where do you study your cultivation method from?”

“The Martial House...” Lin Ming hesitated before he responded.

“Oh....” Hearing this reply, the woman in red was somewhat disappointed. Some sects, in order to increase their own strength and numbers, would open Martial Houses in various countries, and select the most outstanding talents to enter their sect. This youth was probably already chosen.

Perhaps he was some personally trained core disciple. Otherwise, no matter how great his martial talent was, it would be impossible to reach the peak Bone Forging stage before the age of 16.

“Mm…good soup.” Lin Ming felt it was about time, so he took the lid off the pot. A rich aroma wafted into the air.

He scooped a bowl and handed it to the woman in red.

The woman in red lowered her head and blew away the steam, before gently sipping it. This soup really was quite delicious.

A blue-eyed deer could be made into barbecue, but it could also be made into soup. The barbecue was a bit greasy, but when complemented with the tasty, clear and cleansing soup, it was simply perfection.

Lin Ming also took a full bowl. But at this time, the Vermillion Bird who had been nesting in a corner let loose a few whines while looking towards Lin Ming with a pleading expression. Lin Ming turned and saw the Vermillion Bird gazing at him with a pitiful expression, its crimson eyes wide and sad. It was eagerly staring at the grilled deer over the fire.

Lin Ming grinned. He took a chunk of the deer and walked over. The blue-eyed deer was over 100 jins; even if Lin Ming ate just the leg, it was more than enough. The leftovers were originally prepared for the Vermillion Bird. But looking at the lamentable Vermillion Bird, Lin Ming’s mind stirred with some sly thoughts. He said, “Big bird, I can give this barbecue to you, but leave behind a feather for me. In any case, you won’t be able to fly any time soon.”

The Vermillion Bird was a Saint Beast from the lineage of the Phoenix. An adult Vermillion Bird could bath in fires and be rebirthed through Nirvana. However, this young Vermillion Bird did not have such an ability, but, restoring its broken wing was still possible.

The feather of a Vermillion Bird was very beneficial for refining a Flame Essence. Chi Guda had initially invaded Blackwater Swamp with his army in order to seek a feather of the Vermillion Bird. This was an opportunity that Lin Ming didn't want to miss.

Although the Vermillion Bird couldn't speak, it was still able to understand Lin Ming's words. It hesitated for a moment, glancing at the barbecue in Lin Ming's hand, and then at its own beautiful feathers. It clenched its beak and nodded.

The woman in red didn't know whether to laugh or cry. She hadn't known before now just how gluttonous a creature this Vermillion Bird was. It offered its cherished feathers at too cheap a price. Of course, a few feathers weren't much; it would easily regrow them.

As the Vermillion Bird screeched in sorrow, Lin Ming plucked out a large feather and beamed with joy as he placed it in his spatial ring.

Although the Vermillion Bird was heartbroken, the attractiveness of the barbecue was simply too alluring. It quickly gobbled down everything it could.

Thinking of the feather in his spatial ring, Lin Ming thought this was quite funny. How would Chi Guda feel in the netherworld if he knew that he had traded some barbecue for a Vermillion Bird feather – something that him and his entire army couldn't obtain? He would probably be so mad he would die again.

Lin Ming turned to look at the woman in red and said, "You eat first, there are a few things that I have to do so I'll be leaving for a while. After some time I'll come back and heal your wound. If it's convenient, can I have your sound transmission information?"

The woman in red had a Thunder Soul inside her chest; Lin Ming didn't want to accidently lose her.

"Mm." The woman in red could only place her hope in Lin Ming at this moment. She was accustomed to relying on her own strength, but now that she had sunk so low, her thoughts were in turmoil. If she hadn't met Lin Ming today, her only course of action would be to bring the severely wounded Vermillion Bird and walk through the forest. She wouldn't even have had a place to settle for the night.

The woman in red gave Lin Ming her sound transmission information and also some sound transmission talismans. These sound transmission talismans were quite impressive, it could be used from several thousands of miles away. This caused Lin Ming to sigh with emotion. A large sect truly was different. Since he was a child, the sound transmitting talismans couldn't even cover 100 miles; they weren't much use after he left Sky Fortune City.

The reason for Lin Ming wanting to avoid the woman in red, thus leaving, was to find a place to absorb the Thundergrass, and grow the Thunder Soul in his Heretical God Seed.

He wasn't afraid that the woman in red might covet his Thundergrass; this kind of thing probably wouldn't even enter her eyes. But, he didn't want this woman in red to guess that he had entered into the Thunder Flood Dragon's cave.

The small Thunder Flood Dragon in the woman in red's body was too vigorous and contentious. Although Lin Ming was able to deter it, he couldn't absorb it. He planned to enhance his Thunder Soul within his Heretical God Seed first, and then come back to deal with it.

After he found a secluded place, Lin Ming took out the millennium Thundergrass Fruit and continuously guided the power of thunder into the Heretical God Seed.

Time slowly passed. The flashing lightning arcs on the Thundergrass Fruit began to gradually die down, before completely shriveling as Lin Ming absorbed it into his body.

Lin Ming opened his eyes. Examining his Thunder Soul, he was immediately delighted. The power of his Thunder Soul had increased by about 10%; millennium Thundergrass was simply too different.

It took around a quarter hour to absorb a Thundergrass Fruit. Lin Ming decided to continue until dawn, absorbing them unceasingly.

Lin Ming slowly entered into the ethereal martial intent state. The power of thunder was pulled into his true essence and spontaneously entered into Lin Ming's meridians as they circulated in a perfect route. Purple arcs of lightning constantly flashed around Lin Ming, and the surrounding vegetation was scorched black.

The Thunder Soul continuously grew; it had previously been less than an inch but currently, it was the length of an adult's finger.

The night was deep with the bright moon hanging in the boundless sky. The forest sounded with countless insects and the occasional beastly roar. Where Lin Ming was hiding, there were a few vicious beasts that had thoughts about ambushing him, but after feeling that crazy power of thunder that twined around him, they instantly shrunk back and ran as far as possible.

As dawn approached, the last Thundergrass Fruit withered away as it was absorbed by Lin Ming. The Thunder Soul in his Heretical God Seed had grown to a full half a foot.

At this moment, the Heretical God Seed began to fiercely shudder. The purple Thunder Soul began to emit a bright purple light as it quickly shrank, becoming shorter. Eventually, the Thunder Soul's final appearance was similar to a small steel needle.

Before, the Thunder Soul looked as if it were a purple snake swimming in the air. But now, the Thunder Soul was completely straight like a needle, quietly suspended within the Heretical God Seed, with the purple light contained inside.

It didn't look like thunder, but more like a material object.

Although its shape was tiny, the dense cold aura emanating from the steel thunder needle let Lin Ming clearly know that this little thing's striking power was absolutely deadly!

'The Thunder Flood Dragon was able to control the Thunder Soul within its body to attack. Can I do the same?'

With that thought in mind, Lin Ming used his soul force to contact the Thunder Soul. As soon as his mind moved, the small needle that was quietly suspended in the Heretical God Seed instantly vanished.

In the next moment, an almost invisible tiny purple light flashed forwards from Lin Ming's fingertips. With an unimaginable speed, it penetrated a large tree just across from him and instantly returned to Lin Ming's body as if nothing had happened.

Fu!

The fiery purple thunder had shot out without any warning. In that instant, the entire large tree had been turned into charcoal!

Seeing this scene, Lin Ming was stunned. The attack power of the Thunder Soul had surpassed his wildest imaginations. Moreover, the key was the compressed purple radiance; its speed was simply frightening. Someone who didn't have an extremely keen perception would never be able to see the trajectory of the Thunder Soul's attack!

Could such an attack kill Ouyang Dihua? Lin Ming was reminded of this enemy that had almost killed him.

After he absorbed the Thunder Soul from the woman in red, he would head back to settle this blood debt.

Chapter 213 – Magnetic Birth Stone

Chapter 213 – Magnetic Birth Stone

…

…

…

As the sun gradually rose from the horizon, Lin Ming had finished zealously cultivating the entire night. When he stood up, he discovered that all of his clothes had already been incinerated into nothing but ashes. Throughout the whole night, Lin Ming had been shining and sparking with the power of thunder; normal fabrics like cotton couldn't withstand the flaming sparks produced by the thunder.

As for the Thunder Soul in his Heretical God Seed that had taken on the shape of a steel needle, Lin Ming was filled with a sense of accomplishment.

Thunder Souls and Flame Essences were also divided into different grades. It was only because there were too few of them, thus, it was simply out of reach for most people. That was why the specific grade divisions weren't well known.

Lin Ming guessed that the Heretical God Seed's Thunder Soul had evolved, but he didn't know just how much it had.

As he took out a new set of clothes from his spatial ring and hastily dressed himself, Lin Ming launched his movement technique and ran through the forest, rushing towards the cave where the woman in red was waiting.

…………………

At daybreak, the woman in red opened her eyes from a night of meditation. Her current condition was much improved from the horrendous state she had been in last night. The Thunder Soul still lurked inside her body, but it no longer attacked the flame cage like it had last night.

Looking in front of her, the woman in red gazed at the still burning firewood. She smiled with a bit of self-deprecation. If she hadn't run into this strange young boy, then she would have suffered last night. She wouldn't have been able to make it out of the forest in time, and there wasn't anywhere to rest. She would also have had to deal with the continuous bother of vicious beasts and poisonous creatures. Although this wasn't in any way life-threatening, but after a night of tossing and turning, she would be bone-deep exhausted by the next day. It would have been much more difficult to suppress the Thunder Soul inside herself.

At this moment, she heard the sound of twigs breaking from outside of the cave. The woman in red knew that the young boy had come back.

'Mm? It's only been one night, but his strength has increased….' The woman in red was stunned as she looked at Lin Ming. Although his cultivation was still at the peak Bone Forging stage like before, the aura on his body was faintly different, a bit more compelling. The woman in red found the had understood Lin Ming less and less; this young boy just seemed to have a myriad of mysteries contained within him.

"Are you feeling better? Let's begin healing your wound. For the next few days we'll try to drive out the Thunder Soul within your body," Lin Ming said.

"Mm. Alright. This time I'll help you," The woman in red said with a bit more positivity. Although she didn't believe that Lin Ming had any way to deal with the Thunder Soul, she hadn't used her true essence to assist him, so Lin Ming's true essence had quickly depleted.

"Great!" Lin Ming was happy. With the help of the woman in red, it would be much less difficult.

Seeing Lin Ming’s face light up with happiness, the woman in red’s mind stirred. She asked, “Are you planning on absorbing the Thunder Soul and using it for yourself?”

Lin Ming blinked, and then nodded. There was no way to hide this matter.

The woman in red shook her head. She said, “This Thunder Soul is called the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. It began as an ordinary Thunder Soul that was swallowed by the Thunder Flood Dragon and was refined within its body for thousands of years. According to division of grade, it is a low-grade Earth-step Thunder Soul.”

“Thunder and lightning are one of the most violent and savage energies between heaven and earth. This is especially true of the Thunder Soul. It will destroy anything that comes near it, and it will be surpassingly difficult to subjugate it for your own use. A low-grade Earth-step Thunder Soul can only barely be absorbed by a middle Xiantian realm master. Not only that, but they would have to expend a great deal of their energy. Your strength right now is too weak. If you try it, it will explode your meridians.”

Lin Ming’s heart sank as he heard this. He didn’t think that the Thunder Soul would be so fierce.

Yes, the Heretical God Seed was able to suppress the Thunder Soul and the blood of the True Dragon was able to suppress the Thunder Flood Dragon’s primordial soul, but even with this dual suppression, he wasn’t fully confident that he could suppress the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. This was just like a little child taking two peerless godly weapons to challenge a dangerous vicious beast; whether it would be victory or defeat was unknown.

The woman in red said, “There might have been a way if this was an ordinary Thunder Soul, but this Thunder Soul has already reached the low-grade Earth-step ranking, and it also contains the blood essence and origin will of the Thunder Flood Dragon, so it is much more difficult to deal with. Otherwise, I wouldn’t have been placed in such a miserable condition.”

Lin Ming forced a smile. Indeed, the woman in red was astonishingly strong, yet she still couldn't do anything about the Thunder Soul. Even with her help, the most he could do was expel the Thunder Soul from her body; absorbing it was just too ambitious.

He suddenly remembered something, and asked, "A low-grade Earth-step Thunder Soul is also of great value to a Xiantian realm martial artist. Don't you wish to obtain it too?"

The woman in red shook her head and said, "My body refined with a fire spirit, I was born with pure fire true essence. It is simply impossible for me to subjugate the Thunder Soul. As for taking it away for someone else, that is also a good choice. But….with my current state, even making it out of here is a problem. The Thunder Soul cannot be placed in a spatial ring; otherwise, the dimension inside the spatial ring will be shattered by it!"

Lin Ming drew in a cold breath. He hadn't thought that the Thunder Soul would be fierce. It seemed that he had been too naïve.

"Is there no other way? For instance, sealing the Thunder Soul."

The woman in red shook her head and said, "If there weren't the origin will that was left behind by the Thunder Flood Dragon, then I would be able to seal it. But now that it's in my body, I cannot do anything against it unless I have the Magnetic Birth Stone that the Thunder Soul was bred in."

"Magnetic Birth Stone? What's that?" Hearing this, Lin Ming's mind stirred. Could it be….

The woman in red continued, "The Thunder Soul is an existence that is conceived from thunder origin energy. When it was born, it was wrapped within a mystic stone. Then, the Thunder Soul would slowly break free from the stone. This stone is the Magnetic Birth Stone that the Thunder Soul was born within. Because they were born together, they can perfectly fuse as one. As long as the Thunder Soul enters the Magnetic Birth Stone, it will naturally become docile."

Lin Ming's heartbeat accelerated as he listened, "What does the Magnetic Birth Stone look like?"

The woman in red looked at Lin Ming in puzzlement. "Every Thunder Soul's Magnetic Birth Stone is different. I don't know what sort of appearance the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder's Magnetic Birth Stone looks like."

Lin Ming took a few deep calming breaths. He had a growing suspicion that the mystical purple stone he had found under the Thunder Flood Dragon's bed was the Magnetic Birth Stone!

Although he had the Magnetic Birth Stone, he was still far from being able to absorb the Thunder Soul. Unless, the woman in red was willing to help him seal away the Thunder Soul; that was the only hope that he had. Still, could he trust her?

The woman in red noticed Lin Ming's change in expression and faintly realized the reason. She tentatively asked, "Do you have the Magnetic Birth Stone?"

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment, before taking out the mystical purple stone from his spatial ring. "Is this it?"

The woman in red was completely stunned. Looking at the glittering, translucent crystal stone exuding a faint purple light; it was just like a gem. It appeared like a living, beating jewel; a magnetic embryo. She was speechless for a long time.

Even though she had originally queried Lin Ming, she didn't think that he actually had the Magnetic Birth Stone. Something like this was definitely only found within the Thunder Flood Dragon's cave. Could it be that he had entered the Thunder Flood Dragon's cave?

With this thought, the woman in red's eyes changed as she looked at Lin Ming. A mere little boy with a Bone Forging cultivation actually snuck into the Thunder Flood Dragon's cave. What sort of concept was this? This was simply absolute audacity; his guts were greater than the sky!

And what was most amazing was that he survived, even stealing away the Magnetic Birth Stone!

Massive waves surged through her heart. This young boy had obviously taken advantage of the time when she had been battling the Thunder Flood Dragon in order to sneak into the cave. But, who would have the courage, wisdom, and spirit in order to grasp such an opportunity?

In that chaotic battlefield, there were many peak Houtian realm and even a Xiantian Realm Thunder Lizards that were guarding the cave entrance. With just his Bone Forging cultivation, he would be immediately killed once his location was discovered. How did he safely go in and come out unscathed?

In large sects, talents that were at this age had mostly never left the sect. They had lived a devout life while receiving the teachings of their elders. On the other hand, this youth in front of her had not only climbed to the summit of Thundercrash Mountain by himself, he had also ransacked the Thunder Flood Dragon's cave. There was simply no comparing the two of them.

It was no wonder this young boy, who came from a humble mortal background, had already reached this level of cultivation and strength, as well as comprehended a martial intent at only 15 years of age!

Realizing this, the woman in red no longer looked at Lin Ming as if he were some trivial junior. She had a feeling in her heart that so long as this young man didn't fall from the sky, sooner or later he would step into the Xiantian realm, Revolving Dan realm, or an even higher level!

The woman in red let loose a long breath and then spoke to Lin Ming, "If you help me remove the Thunder Soul then I will help you seal it. With the Magnetic Birth Stone, even if you cannot absorb the Thunder Soul, you can still take it away."

“Okay.” Lin Ming believed that with the woman in red’s identity and proud nature, there was no way that she would lie to him.

“Let’s begin.”

Lin Ming and the woman in red sat down cross-legged, facing each other.

“First, absorb the power of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder like you did yesterday to weaken it. This time I will lend you a hand. Take this Divine Spiritual Pill; it will increase the force of your true essence for a brief period of time.” The woman in red took out some white pills from her spatial ring. She handed one to Lin Ming and ate one herself. These pills were most effective when used by Body Transformation and Houtian realm martial artists; its effects for a Xiantian realm martial artist weren’t very obvious.

Lin Ming didn’t suspect anything, and immediately swallowed the pill. The pill entered his Dantian and turned into a flow of heat the spread through all his limbs. He immediately felt the true essence within his body surge forth, filled with energy!

The filling sensation caused Lin Ming to feel as if his blood was close to overflowing; it was as if he had a sudden breakthrough to another realm.

‘This feeling is fantastic. Even my meridians were opened; it’s as if I had reached the Pulse Condensation period.’

Well, let’s hurry up. The effects of the Divine Spiritual Pill only last half an hour. After that, you will be fatigued, but that is just a normal phenomenon. Let’s begin.”

“Begin?”

As Lin Ming heard the woman in red, he suddenly realized that a very, very serious issue had sprung up. If he wanted to absorb the power of thunder within the woman in red, then he would have to make physical bodily contact with her. As luck would have it, the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was positioned within her heart, which was also the spot over her left chest.....

Lin Ming couldn’t help but glance at the woman in red’s left breast. He saw the thin red silk clothing, and the full, round shape of the beautiful woman’s peak. Seeing such a perfectly enchanting curve, Lin Ming’s heartbeat began to quicken.

“Um...that....I....”

The woman in red noticed where Lin Ming was looking at. Realizing that Lin Ming would have to touch her in order absorb the power of thunder, her body began to quiver. The left chest was the spot above the heart; if one put their ears over it, they could clearly hear the heartbeat. As for the back, it was difficult to hear from there.

Thinking that the young boy had to touch her own chest, the woman in red’s beautiful face blushed crimson. She whispered, “Do you have to...physically touch....?”

Lin Ming nodded with a bit of a guilty conscience. “If I want to absorb the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, that is the best spot. The back of the body isn’t so good.....”

Chapter 214 – Life’s Most Unforgettable Experience

Chapter 214 – Life’s Most Unforgettable Experience

…

…

…

After listening to Lin Ming, the woman in red closed her eyes as if accepting her inevitable fate. Although she still looked incomparably tranquil, her slender eyelashes were actually gently trembling, as if reflecting the innermost turmoil and tension within her mind.

However, after waiting for a good while, the touch that made her feel so intensely nervous and fearful still hadn’t come. The lady in red opened her eyes in puzzlement, and was surprised to see that Lin Ming’s face was completely flushed red like a tomato, with his hand paused in midair, neither moving forwards or backwards.

The woman in red didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry. She asked, “What are you doing?”

“I….” Lin Ming didn’t feel the least bit emboldened to take action. If it were Qin Xingxuan, Wang Yuhan, or even Bai Jingyun on front of him, then even though he would be a bit embarrassed and apologetic, he would never be so skittish. Instead, this woman currently in front of him was simply far too formidable. It was simply like a beggar that was given a single opportunity to violate and touch a pure jade princess; that tension would still be far less than this.

What Lin Ming feared the most was that after he touched her, she would have a secret desire to kill him in order to vent her anger. If this happened, then his death would truly be unjustified.

“I want to make everything....clear first....if I place my hand on you and I still can’t take out the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, then....”

“I won’t take out my anger on you.”

“Then you....do not kill me afterwards....”

Listening to Lin Ming, the woman in red’s eyes twitched. She snappily retorted, “Why are you so wordy, do you actually want me to make an oath upon my heart of martial arts?”

“Well....there’s no need.” Lin Ming took a deep breath, and slowly placed his hand on the woman in red’s chest. At this moment, his entire palm was covered in sweat.

The moment her chest was touched, the woman in red shuddered. Because of Lin Ming’s nervousness and achingly hot palm, there was an extremely unusual sensation on her chest.

“Good...then, I’ll begin.” Lin Ming gulped a mouthful of saliva. He didn’t dare move his hand, but that soft and supple feeling was simply ecstasy; it was just like a flood that washed through his body, overwhelming him with emotions and causing his mouth to go dry. This was not just because it was his first time coming into such contact with a woman, but also because her identity had brought forth extreme anxiousness and excitement.

Lin Ming’s heart of martial arts was very pure and strong. But as soon as it touched upon lust and desire, his talent was nothing extraordinary.

A thick true essence revolved, steadily streaming into the woman in red’s body as he began to absorb the power of thunder. At the same time, the woman in red also revolved her true essence and encircled the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder.

As the two of them began their tandem attacks, the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder moved in immediate alarm. It began to violently churn, impacting everywhere. For a time, the woman in red's flame cage began to show cracks throughout.

In the next moment, a massive coercive force came crashing down. The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was enveloped by this suppressive power, and its resistance was suddenly weakened. Shortly after, a powerful suction force appeared, pulling out all of the power of thunder within it!

The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder began to panic. It manically impacted the flame cage like a crazy beast. The brilliant flames that were struck fiercely shook. The woman in red clenched her teeth, her face flushing red. Crystal beads of sweat began to quietly drip from her hair.

Lin Ming also clenched his teeth, mustering all of his strength. Because of his excessive focus, he had completely ignored the charming feeling beneath his hands.

Heretical God Force – Open!

Lin Ming used the final card in his hand. The Heretical God Seed began to fiercely tremble, and suddenly a massive towing force flooded into the woman in red's body like a rushing tide!

After the Heretical God Force had been activated, the pressure on the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder experienced an immediate massive increase!

The Heretical God Seed suppressed the Thunder Soul, and the True Dragon bloodline suppressed the soul of the Thunder Flood Dragon!

Under this dual suppression, a deep and abiding fear began to creep out from the depths of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder's soul. It snarled as its body grew by several times. The arcs of lightning around it became more violent, issuing forth explosive sounds.

“Roar!” The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder opened its jaws to desperately bite itself free from the flame cage.

Kacha!

The flame cage was finally cut open.

Meanwhile, a substantial essence of thunder escaped from the broken flame cage. As soon as it touched blood, the blood was turned to ashes!

The woman in red trembled, a strange red appearing on her face. Obviously, she had suffered an internal injury. She said, “Don’t hurry to deal with the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. Absorb its power of thunder and weaken it!”

Lin Ming clenched his teeth and nodded, following the directions of the woman in red. Without even realizing it, his right hand had tightly clamped down. The woman in red only felt that her left breast was being completely grasped within Lin Ming’s scalding hot palm. This feeling made her feel anxious and a bit ashamed, but at such a juncture, she chose to completely ignore this.

The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder began to rampage in a wild rage; the power of thunder unceasingly emitted from its body.

Although a Thunder Soul wouldn’t die out, it still needed to be supplemented by heaven and earth origin energy. Otherwise, it would weaken. If it lost too much power of thunder, it would also lose its strength, thus allowing it to be suppressed.

Compared to the fire true essence that the woman in red issued forth, this strong coercive pressure, that is sucking out its power, was the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder’s greatest threat. Yet, it was unable to resist this force.

As the power of thunder was dragged out, the entire cave began to shine as crackling arcs of lightning and electricity sizzled the air. The heaven and earth origin energy in the surrounding space had also been stirred up. It gathered around Lin Ming and the woman in red, constantly swirling around him, until it formed a rainbow vortex that swallowed them within.

"I'm at my limit...." Lin Ming said as he grit his teeth, his entire face dripping with sweat.

The woman in red flicked her finger, and a deep crimson pill flew into Lin Ming's mouth. As the pill dissolved within Lin Ming's body, it transformed into a flow of heat that spread through all of his meridians. Lin Ming felt his nearly depleted true essence reserves come back to life.

"This is a Bloodstone Pill refined from Bloodstone Milk; it is able to instantly recover true essence. When you are about to reach the limit of your true essence, quickly tell me," The woman in red instructed. Still, she was surprised by Lin Ming's endurance so far; this was equal to that of a Xiantian realm powerhouse, yet Lin Ming was only a mere Bone Forging martial artist. The fact that he could persist for almost an incense stick of time before he reached his limit...this was simply too impressive.

However, even though the problem of sustaining his true essence reserve had been resolved, Lin Ming encountered another obstacle. Because he was constantly absorbing the power of thunder from the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, Lin Ming had accumulated a massive amount of thunder energy within his body. Despite having the Heretical God Seed compressing it, there wasn't enough time; it was to the extent that his meridians were on the verge of exploding.

"Use the Magnetic Birth Stone!" The woman in red said.

"Mm!" Lin Ming clenched his teeth and pulled out the Magnetic Birth Stone. He reversed his true essence, sending the compressed stream of thunder power flowing into the Magnetic Birth Stone. The power of thunder disappeared inside as if it were a drop in an ocean, never to be found again.

In this world, everything had a counter. The Magnetic Birth Stone was truly the most splendid and perfect vessel for the power of thunder. Moreover, because it had been born together with the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, there was no risk of resistance.

Time passed slowly. A quarter of an hour, half an hour, one hour. In that time, Lin Ming had eaten up 10 Bloodstone Pills, and all of his clothes were drenched in sweat.

The woman in red was also in a similar situation. Because her sweat had soaked into her clothes, her clothes had directly pasted onto her body, outlining and accentuating her mesmerizing curves.

The Magnetic Birth Stone absorbed the power of thunder, and Lin Ming's true essence was constantly restored by the Bloodstone Pills. Under this battle of attrition, the purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder became increasingly smaller. It's purple body became less and less. It gradually became unable to withstand the coercive suction power of the Heretical God Seed!

"Now's the chance!"

In that moment, Lin Ming's eyes flashed, and a deep bass roar resonated from him. But, this deep roar did not come from his throat, but emerged from the vibration of his entire body. It was just like the resounding cry of a dragon!

After this roar, not only was the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder struck with awe, but even the woman in red's heart experienced an earthquake. In absolute disbelief, she sent an incredulous look towards Lin Ming. In that brief moment, she had clearly felt a deep fear that emanated from the depths of her bloodline. It had to be known that in her body flowed the blood of the proud Vermillion Bird!

How could this be?

But now she had no time to reflect on the reasons; this was the critical moment in healing her wound. Lin Ming tightly clenched his teeth, and true essence erupted from his entire body. The suction force was pushed to the extreme!

Chi chi chi!

With a blinding flash of electric light, the Purple Flood Dragon was abruptly pulled out from the woman in red's body! Half of the Flood Dragon was now exposed to the outside.

"Hah!"

As it appeared, a savage and violent fiery thunder scattered everywhere. It ignited the woman in red's clothes, and even Lin Ming's sleeves began to burn.

The thunder fire's temperature was too high; any clothes it touched was instantly turned to ashes. Even Lin Ming's right hand which was protected by true essence was burned!

True essence swirled in the air, forming a tornado with the heaven and earth origin energy. In that vortex, all clothes were turned to ashes and blown away, leaving the two people inside suddenly stark naked.

The woman in red's face instantly turned crimson.

Although her left breast had been grabbed by Lin Ming, at least there had still been clothes separating them. Now, even the last leaf was pulled away. Her beautiful breast that had never been touched before was actually solidly gripped by a boy. But, this was the most critical time. She could not stop, otherwise all her efforts would have been for naught!

"Hurry! Faster!" The woman in red had never received such humiliation before. Most of the time, one's temperament was maintained by one's clothing. When a woman became naked, no matter how elegant she was, she would lose all her calm and composure, exposing her most vulnerable and helpless side.

When had Lin Ming seen such a glorious spring scene before? He only saw a beautifully ripe white image in front of him, the heaving of an extremely attractive curved body, and two suffocatingly bright red circles. All in all, he began to pant as his mouth became dry. However, in this moment of blissful surprise, the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder which he had pulled out with so much effort, had almost slipped back in.

“What are you doing!?!?” The woman in red screamed. She had always maintained a graceful and regal temperament, yet, now that she had been reduced to such a state, this young boy had actually been distracted and the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder had almost drawn back in. If all her efforts were wasted because of this, then she really might have been driven crazy!

“S-sorry!!!” Lin Ming incoherently stammered. He hurriedly ate a Bloodstone Pill again. This time, he dared not think of anything else, investing his full concentration into extracting the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder.

But this Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was incomparably tenacious. As it saw that half of its body had been pulled out and the other half was about to be, it waged a mighty struggle against Lin Ming.

There was no way that Lin Ming was able to let go; he kept grasping on to the woman in red’s breast.

Seeing the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder pulled back and forth, the woman in red was anxious to the point of tears. At this time, the turmoil that passed within her innermost feelings in these few seconds could take years to describe.

This was absolutely her life’s most unforgettable experience.

Chapter 215 – Absorbing the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder

Chapter 215 – Absorbing the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder

…

…

…

Although the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was tenacious and vigorous, the heaven and earth origin energy it supplemented itself with was limited. How could it compare with Lin Ming who was popping pills like candy and also using the Magnetic Birth Stone?

After a quarter hour of this back and forth battle, the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder's strength was finally exhausted. It was grasped by Lin Ming and stuffed into the Magnetic Birth Stone!

Chi chi chi!

The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder unwillingly submerged into the Magnetic Birth Stone. Thus, a small Purple Flood Dragon was seen swimming inside the beating heart stone.

The woman in red grabbed the Magnetic Birth Stone and her hands flew in a series of seals. With a move, a series of dazzling white runes fell onto the Magnetic Birth Stone, completely sealing it up. With that, there was no way for the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder to escape.

After the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was sealed, the woman in red decided to vent her anger and frustration. She laid layer upon layer of a heaven and earth origin energy isolating seal onto the stone. After this seal was placed, the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder would be unable to absorb heaven and earth origin energy.

Clearly, the woman in red had a mortal hatred towards the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. Not only did it cause her so much trouble and suffering, but it also caused her pure body to be seen by a little teenage boy with nothing left hidden. Even her chest had been grabbed!

Lin Ming was secretly left horrified and flummoxed as he watched from the side. This woman was not someone to be trifled with. Even though she looked like the epitome of grace and elegance on the surface, if she were annoyed, whoever did so would really eat some bitter fruit.

Thinking this, he immediately turned around as to avoid provoking her wrath.

Behind him, there was the rustling sound of clothes. The woman in red also had spare clothes inside her spatial ring to switch into.

“Alright!”

The woman spoke with an explicitly icy tone. Lin Ming turned around and happened to see the woman in red’s hands behind her head, clearing out her hair. Her long locks fell down around her neckline, and her beautiful ink-black hair cascaded down her back like a pitch black waterfall. Although the woman in red had spoken in such an icy tone, her beautiful visage was still slightly blushing, it formed quite a beautiful picture.

Lin Ming was temporarily stunned silly. The beauty of the woman in red combined with her calm dignity and holy and inviolable character, really caused anyone looking to experience a moment where they lost their breath.

‘In the past I’ve read novels in which it described beauties whose smiles could force men into submission. I had thought that these claims of such ridiculous beauties were nothing but exaggerations, but now seeing this woman in red, I somewhat understand. This beauty is so terrifying that I'm afraid the emperors of the mortal world would sacrifice their kingdom for it. This is what they would call 'Love not one's country, but love beauties.''

Thinking this, Lin Ming began to revolve the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' as he rapidly suppressed these thoughts and feelings within his heart, returning his mind to a tranquil and calm state of clarity.

"In accordance to what I said before, if you helped me extract the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, then I would help you absorb it," The woman in red casually said. She had changed her clothes and recovered her calm, just as if nothing awkward had ever happened.

Lin Ming tactfully didn't mention what had happened a moment ago. He said, "Thank you, Senior."

Ever since coming into contact with the woman in red, Lin Ming had respectfully referred to her as Senior. Before, the woman in red didn't think much of this, but now hearing this title, she thought that it was very grating on her nerves.

After such a shameful and embarrassing moment had passed, he still actually called her Senior. Didn't this mean that her pure body was touched by a mere child?

Her eyes twitched. The woman in red said, "I'm 27 years old."

A woman usually wouldn't ever state their own age, and doing so right now was considered a stupid and silly matter. Still, for some particular reason, the woman in red couldn't help but state her age.

Lin Ming's eyes widened. 2… 27?

This woman in front of him was only 27?

He had thought that even though she looked very young, she was probably 40 or 50 years old. After all, once a martial artist reached the Xiantian realm, their lifespan would increase.

A 60 or 70 year old would look like a 20 year old. But, he hadn't thought that she was only 27 years old.

Heavens! For her cultivation to reach the extreme Xiantian realm at only 27 years of age, just what was her martial talent?

Seeing Lin Ming's shocked look, the woman in red finally had a little feeling of accomplishment and triumph. She had been constantly surprised these past few days, it was about time that this little boy was also surprised.

In fact, even if this woman in red was the same age as Lin Ming, she would still have surpassed him in terms of cultivation. She had a Xiantian fire spirit refined in her body, and she also had the bloodline of the Vermillion Bird. Her martial talent was a superior seventh-grade, ranked among the highest in the world!

She had reached Pulse Condensation at 15, the Houtian realm at 17, the Xiantian realm at 22, and the extreme Xiantian realm at only 26 years. Now, she was already a half-step into the Revolving Dan realm; breaking through was only a matter of time.

Lin Ming had reached the peak Bone Forging stage at 15 years of age. In a fourth or fifth-grade sect, this result could only be considered decent. It was only incomparably surprising when paired with Lin Ming's ordinary mortal background.

Lin Ming gulped. What a monstrous genius! He could be considered a bit experienced. With her talent, she was at the pinnacle in any large sect. Let alone the small Seven Profound Martial House, but she would be above anyone at even the Seven Profound Valleys.

But why had she suddenly blurted out her age? Was it possible that she disliked the title Senior because it implied she was old? With an 11 year disparity, the truth was he could also call her big sister. Of course, this was a name he didn't dare to utter. Then what should he call her?

Lin Ming blinked, clueless, and said, "My name is Lin Ming."

There was no reason to hide his name, especially in front of a Xiantian master like herself. They were simply two people of two different worlds. If it wasn't for such lucky occurrences happening, then there was no way that their paths would ever have crossed.

The woman in red hesitated, then her bright red lips parted and she said, "Mu Qianyu."

Mu Qianyu… Lin Ming silently remembered this name. Perhaps one day when his strength grew, they would meet again.

"Miss Mu, I'll have to trouble you to help me absorb the Thunder Soul."

"Alright. But, I'll warn you once more. Even with the Magnetic Birth Stone, the brutal and savage nature of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder can only be suppressed to an extent. You will find it very difficult to absorb. If there's any accident, all of the meridians in your body will be shattered. Have you considered this clearly?" Although Mu Qianyu knew that Lin Ming's body was special, she didn't believe that he would be able to withstand the might of the Thunder Soul. This was a terrifying strength that only someone at least at the middle Xiantian realm would be able to bear.

Lin Ming nodded and said, "Yes, I've thought about this already."

Mu Qianyu let out a light breath. She knew that someone like Lin Ming who had such a firm heart of martial arts would rarely change their decision. Once they decided to do something, they would. They wouldn't often listen to the counsel of others.

"I'll let it be and give him a hand this time. If his meridians are broken, then I'll give him a Black Jade Channel Replenishment Pill and consider this favor returned."

Thinking this, Mu Qianyu no longer tried to persuade him. As the saying went, the body was easy to train but the meridians were difficult. To a normal martial artist, once their meridians shattered, then their martial arts would also be finished. The Black Jade Channel Replenishment pill was one of the few miracle medicines that could renew and regenerate meridians. It was incomparably precious even within a large sect. Mu Qianyu only had two of the pills on her.

As the two sat in meditation to restore their condition to the peak, Mu Qianyu took hold of the Magnetic Birth Stone and gently held it in her palms, slightly unraveling part of the seal she had placed on it.

Lin Ming took the Magnetic Birth Stone in his hands. Suddenly, true essence erupted from his body, and a formidable power sunk into the Magnetic Birth Stone, acting upon the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder.

In that moment, the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder felt once more the terrifying fear and horror that came from the depths of its soul.

With such a dreadful power suppressing it again and again, it was only able to use 60 to 70 percent of its strength. The result of this was that it had been abruptly pulled out of Mu Qianyu's body.

Now this nightmare-inducing power appeared once more.

The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was finally angry!

It exploded with a savage roar, killing its way towards Lin Ming!

But at this moment, a massive pure flame true essence dropped in from above, a relentless pressure that pushed down on the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder's body. The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder fiercely trembled, and its purple light dimmed.

This fire true essence naturally came from Mu Qianyu. Now that she was restored to her peak condition, the power that she was able to release was something that this small Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder could not contend with.

"I can only help you in the beginning and weaken some of its power. But once the Purple Flood Dragon Diviner Thunder enters your body, everything else will depend on you. If you cannot persist, than speak up and I will grab it. Do not try to be brave!"

Mu Qianyu spoke as she suppressed the power of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. Although her tone was somewhat cold, it actually revealed a hint of concern.

Lin Ming looked deeply at Mu Qianyu, a strange and unfamiliar emotion surging through his heart like a tide. He nodded and said, “I will.”

“Good. Then be careful.” Mu Qianyu pushed out the last law formula, and a chain of flames entangled itself around the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, limiting its power to the absolute minimum.

Lin Ming held the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, and pressed it down over his left chest, directly where his heart was.

“Hah!”

The skin of Lin Ming’s left chest was burned black.

Mu Qianyu’s mind jumped. She hadn’t thought that Lin Ming would be so resolute and decisive. Normally, when a martial artist was faced with a life and death matter like this, they would hesitate. But Lin Ming’s eyes hadn’t even blinked. Where did this self-confidence come from?

“Mm!” Lin Ming gave a stuffy cough and his body trembled, just as if he were struck by a bolt of lightning. Although Mu Qianyu’s chains of flame had wrapped around the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, limiting its power, its formidability had gone beyond his imagination. A savage and cruel power of thunder wildly galloped through his entire body’s meridians. Lin Ming felt as if his entire body was being pierced by tens of thousands of steel needles – the pain was absolutely terrible!

Lin Ming clenched his teeth and revolved the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’. However, in front of this Xiantian level power of thunder, his true essence immediately collapsed upon contact!

It hurt too much! Purple thunder flooded Lin Ming's meridians, turning his body into shambles. Lin Ming paled as he trembled, his body twitching. His true essence was just like pure white snow underneath a blazing summer sun, it quickly melted.

As his body shook, Lin Ming couldn't help but almost surrender to this power. He lost his balance, and was about to fall over. But, at this moment, he felt himself falling into a soft, warm, and fragrant bosom. Then a hand touched upon his back, and a temperate true essence soaked into his body, moistening his ruined body.

"Enough. Don't try to be so brave. It will depend on you to absorb the Thunder Soul. What I can do now is give you some breathing space, but I cannot help you in that matter." Mu Qianyu said with some worry as she held up Lin Ming.

"I'm… I'm alright." Lin Ming spoke with some difficulty. It wasn't that he was trying to be brave, but he had a degree of certainty in his success. It was true that the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was absolutely strong. As soon as it had entered his body, it had gone on the offensive, waging a full on stormy assault, something that his fragile body couldn't withstand.

But the Heretical God Seed was actually able to resist!

In the moment that the Thunder Soul entered into Lin Ming's heart, the Heretical God Seed began its counterattack!

Chapter 216 – Controlling the Thunder Soul

Chapter 216 – Controlling the Thunder Soul

…

…

…

Seeing such a powerful Thunder Soul delicacy appear in front of it, the Heretical God Seed began to make excited wuwu sounds.

Woosh!

The Heretical God Seed took the initiative to launch an attack for the first time. It swooped down, like an eagle swooping down towards its prey, towards the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. It charged directly into the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder's body.

The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder began to shake, tumbling around in a frenzy as it roared. But no matter how much the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder struggled, it was unable to throw the Heretical God Seed off.

The power of thunder surged around like a turbulent tide that threatened to drown him. Lin Ming's already severely wounded body once again suffered the baptism of wild and violent energy. But, with the aid of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' which he had cultivated for a long time to quench his meridians, and the perfectly circulating true essence from when he entered the ethereal martial intent state that moistened his meridians, he was able to get by with no damage to his meridians.

Clenching his teeth, Lin Ming held back the excruciating pain that came from his meridians. He forced the manic and rapid power of thunder into the Magnetic Birth Stone. If he didn't have the Magnetic Birth Stone, his body might have already exploded by now.

In this war, Lin Ming's advantages lay in the Heretical God Seed, which could hold the power of thunder, and the bloodline suppression of the True Dragon. He also had Mu Qianyu assisting him, as well as the Magnetic Birth Stone. But, the advantage of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was that it had terrifying power. If it burst out with its full strength, Lin Ming's body would be as fragile as a piece of paper in front of it!

All of Lin Ming's muscles tensed. His clothes had already been burnt by the thunder fire and turned to ashes. The handsome symmetrical muscles of his body were oozing out large beads of sweat.

Mu Qianyu was waiting on the side, carefully watching Lin Ming. Once Lin Ming encountered a life threatening situation, she would immediately make her move. However, what caused her to be incomparably surprised was that Lin Ming was actually persisting through everything. From the beginning, because Lin Ming couldn't withstand the sudden attacks of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, his meridians had nearly been broken. But now, it was as if he slowly found a way to deal with the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, and the confrontation of energies in his body was beginning to stabilize.

"If he can sustain this state, he really might succeed..." Mu Qianyu took a deep breath. It was the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, an existence that even a Xiantian powerhouse would be able to handle barely. Yet, he was only a little Bone Forging martial artist. If he actually managed to absorb it, what kind of concept would that be?

"What's so special about his body?" Mu Qianyu muttered, as a surge of mixed emotions fluctuated through her heart. She remembered when Lin Ming had let out a low roar that had even caused her own bloodline to tremble in fear!

She had the bloodline of a Saint Beast, this wasn't possible unless Lin Ming had the bloodline of a legendary God Beast.

“Impossible. It’s impossible for there to be a God Beast’s bloodline.” Mu Qianyu muttered as she denied this dreamy speculation. As a Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island, she had some knowledge of God Beasts. Such existences did not exist in the lower realms. Even in the upper realms, there was only a pitiful number of God Beast’s. There were even some species of God Beasts where only a single one of them existed.

However, no matter what she thought, there was something unusual about his body. His body must have undergone some sort of awakening…

“Is it the bloodline of a Flood Dragon?” If that’s the case… ” Mu Qianyu pursed her lips, she was perplexed.

Time passed second by second, minute by minute. Lin Ming was struggling to persist. Although the Heretical God Seed had locked the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder up, the power of thunder still escaped. In order for him to withstand it, his true essence was gradually being exhausted. Even if he opened the Heretical God Force, the situation wouldn’t change.

But at this moment, Lin Ming suddenly felt a cool feeling on his lips, as if something incomparably soft was touching him. He opened his eyes to see that Mu Qianyu had pinched a Bloodstone Pill with her slender fingers and was putting it in his mouth. That icy cold touch was Mu Qianyu’s finger’s moving along Lin Ming’s lips.

The Bloodstone Pill came at too prompt a time. Lin Ming swallowed it, and the Bloodstone Pill turned into a warm power that spread throughout his body, nourishing his meridians that were on their final legs.

In Lin Ming’s heart, the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was continuously being compressed, and the Heretical God Seed was becoming brighter and shinier. The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was reduced to an inch in size, when suddenly, there was a long sound, and a scarlet dragon shot out of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder’s body, angrily rushing towards Lin Ming’s heart.

“This is… the blood essence left behind in the Thunder Soul by the Thunder Flood Dragon?”

Lin Ming had just reacted, when the Magic Cube suddenly awoke from its slumber. An invisible force locked onto the blood essence, covering it, and dragged it directly into the Magic Cube.

The scarlet Flood Dragon crazily struggled to free itself, but in the face of this implacable force, its struggles were to no avail!

In a flash, the scarlet Flood Dragon was dragged into the Magic Cube, completely vanishing. There wasn’t even a single ripple to indicate anything was different.

Lin Ming was stunned. The Thunder Flood Dragon’s blood essence, which he had expected to expend a great deal of effort to control, was actually so easily and simply dealt with.

After the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder had lost the support of the Thunder Flood Dragon’s bloodline, it immediately calmed, becoming very sluggish. As for the Heretical God Seed, because it had devoured so much power of thunder from the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, it was actually much more active and robust than before.

Lin Ming’s mind moved, and he began to try controlling the rampaging violent purple thunder in his meridians. But, the purple thunder was simply too savage and fierce, it wouldn’t listen to his directions.

After failing to escape several times in a row, the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was finally and completely engulfed by the Heretical God Seed. Suddenly, the purple thunder instantly calmed down, and began to follow Lin Ming’s will, circling its way through his meridians.

He finally controlled the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder!

Lin Ming felt cheerful and ecstatic. At this moment, he discovered that dim purple lines had appeared on the surface of the steel needle Thunder Soul that was quietly suspended in the Heretical God Seed. On closer inspection, these small purple lines of light were actually the purple Flood Dragon, baring its teeth and claws!

This steel needle that was engraved with the Thunder Flood Dragon was the latest evolution of Lin Ming's Thunder Soul!

He did it, he finally did it! After suffering through so much pain, his efforts hadn't been in vain!

Lin Ming's mind suddenly relaxed. He only felt a blinding dizziness in his mind, and then, he lost consciousness.

After an average person relaxed from such a high intensity state and deep psychological stress, they would find it easy to faint. Not to mention Lin Ming had experienced inhuman torture for such a long time. His soul force and true essence consumption had reached the limit; he was far too tired.

Mu Qianyu was sitting beside Lin Ming, and saw him faint. She put out a hand to grab hold of him, slowly laying him down on top of a straw mat.

She silently observed the young boy's quiet and peaceful sleeping expression. She thought back to a day ago when he had been focused on cooking the barbecue and boiling the soup, and she remembered how he had used the barbecue to con the Vermillion Bird into exchanging a feather. Thinking this, the corners of her lips unconsciously formed into a beautiful smile.

What sort of person was he? There were simply too many mysteries and riddles contained in him.

First, he had climbed to the summit of Thundercrash Mountain by himself. Then, he had broken into the Flood Dragon's cave and stole the Magnetic Birth Stone. With just his trivial Bone Forging cultivation, he had managed to help expel the Thunder Soul that was in her body. Now, he had absorbed a Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder that even Xiantian masters had to be careful of. At such a young age, he could control thunder.

These days, everything he did sound ridiculous and impossible. Even she, who had seen countless talents, geniuses, sages, hermits, and others, could not help but have a very intense curiosity towards Lin Ming.

If she didn't have her own matters to deal with, she thought of quietly following Lin Ming back to his country, and having a good look at his parents and where he grew up.

"Mm? Why would I have such strange thoughts...?" Shaking her head, Mu Qianyu tossed this thought away. She took a red cloak out of her spatial ring and covered Lin Ming with it. Her movements were very light, in fear that she would disturb his rest.

"Now that he's fallen asleep... I want to... explore his body to see what secrets he has..." Mu Qianyu was startled as this thought suddenly emerged in her heart.

To use soul force to penetrate someone's body was an extremely uncouth and frivolously naughty behavior. Because soul force could penetrate clothing easily, it was no different than seeing someone naked and exposed.

Of course, if a martial artist was conscious, they could easily use true essence to form a barrier to shield their body and preventing others from peeping at them.

But now, Lin Ming was completely defenseless as he lay down on the straw mat. He had fallen into a deep sleep, and any barriers on his body had been lifted. Also, he was completely unconscious; he wouldn't know if others were probing him.

"How could I have such a shameful idea? If he knew about this, I won't have the face to appear in public anymore."

Mu Qianyu's gorgeous face blushed. To take advantage of someone being unconscious to snoop through them was absolutely despicable and contemptible behavior. It wasn't anything that a regal and moderate woman like herself would ever, ever do.

But, an intense curiosity burned within her. It was like an enticing devil that lingered inside her heart; it wouldn't go away until she did something.

"When he had expelled the Thunder Soul, he also investigated me with his soul force. This can be considered returning the favor... " Mu Qianyu muttered as she grasped at a reason to console herself.

Finally, she could not resist the temptation. As she blushed, she extended her soul force into Lin Ming's body.

Lin Ming had no guard up. Mu Qianyu first investigated Lin Ming's heart. Except for the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder's Thunder Soul, she didn't notice anything strange except a strange mark on Lin Ming's heart. But, this mark didn't seem too special or different. After a fruitless probe, she continued forth.

She probed his viscera, and almost didn't find anything too strange. As she considered whether or not to continue her search, at this moment, Lin Ming's finger suddenly moved.

Mu Qianyu jumped up, startled. She quickly withdrew her soul force, and respectfully sat down.

"He woke up so fast?"

Mu Qianyu found that it was only Lin Ming's finger that had moved. He hadn't really woken up. She let out a breath of relief, and no longer dared to examine his body.

As she quietly waited, a day passed.

When Lin Ming woke up, it was dark.

Opening his eyes, he saw Mu Qianyu stirring up a fire. She was heating the leftover soup up from last night.

"You're awake."

Mu Qianyu smiled.

“Mm. How long have I been sleeping?” Lin Ming sat up. He examined his body, and he was suddenly filled with surprise. His meridians had been opened up, and they were completely connected!

The purple thunder that had flooded Lin Ming’s meridians and almost destroyed his body, had unexpectedly opened his meridians up.

The sign that a martial artist had stepped into the Pulse Condensation period was when their meridians were opened! But, to open up one’s meridians and connect them was an extremely difficult task. It was the bottleneck of the Bone Forging stage to the Pulse Condensation period. Because of this bottleneck, there were many martial artists that were trapped beneath for their entire lives!

But to Lin Ming, this bottleneck didn’t exist. As long as he poured enough true essence into his meridians, he could immediately break into the Pulse Condensation period.

Mu Qianyu also discovered the change in Lin Ming’s body. “You’ve broken through to the Pulse Condensation period?”

Chapter 217 – Power of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder

Chapter 217 – Power of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder

…

…

…

Mu Qianyu was astonished beyond belief. The bottleneck between Bone Forging and Pulse Condensation was neither too great nor too insignificant. For a genius with great talent, the bottleneck wasn’t considered much. Despite this, it was normal for them to take several months to even half a year to overcome it.

These month long gaps couldn’t be underestimated. In a month, Lin Ming would become 16 years old.

There was a very big difference between breaking through to the Pulse Condensation period at 15, and breaking through to the Pulse Condensation period at 16.

Mu Qianyu had reached the Pulse Condensation period at 15 years of age. In Divine Phoenix Island, this was considered a first-class achievement. But now, she had actually tied with Lin Ming!

Thinking of Lin Ming’s ordinary mortal identity, Mu Qianyu felt a shiver crawl up her spine; what sort of monstrous genius was this? Compared to him, even the growth rate of her cultivation, which she was so arrogantly proud of, was eclipsed!

Needless to say, Lin Ming was also incomparably excited. Not too long ago, becoming a Pulse Condensation martial artist had only been a faraway dream. However, unbelievably, he had reached his goal of becoming a Pulse Condensation martial artist so quickly!

Lin Ming was thinking of revolving his true essence and officially breaking through to the Pulse Condensation period. But, at this moment, Mu Qianyu advised, “Lin Ming, the reason your meridians opened and connected was because of the power of thunder from the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, not due to your own accumulation of true essence; it could be considered a fortunate accident. If you use this as a stepping stone to breakthrough to the Pulse Condensation period, then it will cause your foundation to be unstable. My advice is that you don’t breakthrough to the Pulse Condensation period just yet. Wait for your Bone Forging true essence to gradually accumulate and naturally overflow. Then, it will spontaneously flood your meridians. Doing this will let you achieve the best results.”

Lin Ming paused, before immediately nodding. What Mu Qianyu said was right. When he had entered the Altering Muscle stage and the Bone Forging stage, his true essence had naturally overflowed and thus, he had spontaneously broken through to the next level. Through this way, his foundation would be the most solid and complete. Otherwise, if he were to use shortcuts to quickly improve, then even though his cultivation would experience a short-term increase, his foundation wouldn’t be steady. From then on, the further he cultivated, the more difficult it would become.

Mu Qianyu saw Lin Ming listen to her opinion, free from arrogance and ego, and slightly nodded.

As she fiddled with the fire, Mu Qianyu didn’t know what to say in this situation. The flames rose and whistled, and the firewood crackled under the heat of the flames.

As the soup boiled over the fire, fragrant waves wafted through the cave.

However, even though this soup smelled delicious, Mu Qianyu still lost interest in the yesterday’s savory soup. She understood that it was time for the two of them to part ways.

Her wound had healed, and there were still matters that she needed to attend to. This brief, fateful union of chance was about to come to an end.

The atmosphere fell into a silent lull. The night was dark, and within the dim cave there was only the sound of burning fire and the boiling of soup. The Vermillion Bird had fallen asleep in a corner. After Mu Qianyu restored her strength to its peak, she had transfered a massive amount of fire true essence into the Vermillion Bird. The Vermillion Bird's wing was well on its way to a full recovery.

"Do you have any plans?" Mu Qianyu asked, as she saw Lin Min silently watching her.

"I have to return to my country. There's a matter I have to settle."

"You're a disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys?" Mu Qianyu guessed this because the closet sect was the Seven Profound Valleys.

"Yes." Lin Ming hesitated, and told it as it was.

"Oh….." The truth was, Mu Qianyu very much wanted to ask Lin Ming if he would be willing to join her Divine Phoenix Island. The words were at the tip of her tongue, but she still hadn't said anything. To have him betray his sect just because of a casual acquaintance, that was simply overdoing it. Moreover, since this young boy had obtained such results, she presumed that the Seven Profound Valleys had invested a great deal of resources in him.

"That's right, I've been wanting to ask. Why did you want the Flood Dragon's blood?" Lin Ming suddenly remembered, curious.

"It was to let Little Flame evolve," Mu Qianyu explained, referring to the Vermillion Bird who quietly slept in the corner. Little Flame was obviously the Vermillion Bird's name. "Little Flame is my life's Saint Beast; our minds are connected with each other. I sensed that Little Flame was approaching maturity, and needed a Saint Spirit pill in order to quickly evolve. But, in order to refine a Saint Spirit Pill, I needed the blood of a Saint beast. I wouldn't have come to Thundercrash Mountain if there had been any other way. Actually, I had already prepared lucrative terms of exchange, and I didn't think that some blood from the Thunder Flood Dragon would be too big a loss for it. However, the Thunder Flood Dragon wasn't willing to make the exchange, and we finally came to blows. I didn't think that the Thunder Flood Dragon would have less than a hundred years of life remaining so it had fought with everything it had, causing me to suffer a major loss.....”

Thinking this, Mu Qianyu ruefully smiled. A Saint Beast had its own pride and arrogance; asking it to sell its blood was truly a grave insult.

“Oh...do you want to stay a few more days to let Little Flame's wounds recover?” Lin Ming mumbled as he lowered his head, also fiddling with the fire.

In truth, as long as Mu Qianyu sustained the input of true essence into the Vermillion Bird, its wounds would be healed by tomorrow. But, as she was about to say this, a strange and unfamiliar feeling creeped into her heart, and she changed her words, “It may take two or three days....”

“Mm. Well, then it's also good if I wait two or three days; I just happen to want to improve my condition.” Lin Ming brilliantly smiled, and that suppressive and dreary atmosphere seemed to instantly be swept away by a clear breeze. “Wait for me, I'll go catch a few hares. The leftover deer and soup from yesterday won't be enough.”

“Mm. Alright.” Mu Qianyu's mood was also much more relaxed and languid. The Vermillion Bird was sleeping soundly at the side, without knowing the reason it had been sold out by its master. For these next few days, it would continue to endure pain.

However, even if the Vermillion Bird knew why, it would still gladly endure any torture. After one hour, the scrumptious smell of barbecue drifted out, causing the Vermillion Bird to instantly raise its head, sniffing left and right. Its gazed fell on the golden caramel barbecue over the fire; its two eyes began to shine with a greedy, voracious light.

Any pain, grief, or loss of feathers, all became nothing but drifting clouds in front of this delicious barbecue.

Time passed quickly. Every day Lin Ming would go out out hunt, then head back to cook and make soup. During the morning of the second day, Lin Ming encountered a Golden Flood Dragon Beast in the forest.

The Golden Flood Dragon Beast was a dark gold color, and it was over 20 feet long. Its entire body was draped with scales, impenetrable.

The Flood Dragon was a promiscuous and overly sexual creature. This Golden Flood Dragon Beast was the result of the Flood Dragon mating with a Gold Armored Rhinoceros; it was one of the many descendants that had been produced from such a union.

It's actually a direct descendant of the Thunder Flood Dragon." Seeing this Golden Flood Dragon beast, Lin Ming was slightly surprised. The Thunder Lizards of Thundercrash Mountain were extremely fierce and dangerous, but most of the Thunder Lizards weren't direct descendants of the Flood Dragon. Rather, they were separated by many generations, and the Flood Dragon bloodline within them had naturally faded over time. However, the existence of this Golden Flood Dragon Beast was due to the Thunder Flood Dragon venturing out in the past dozen or so years and mating with the surrounding wildlife. The Flood Dragon bloodline in this Wurm's body was extremely rich, and its strength was equal to a peak Pulse Condensation martial artist.

'You came at a great time; I just so happen to want to test the power of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder! This place is near Thundercrash Mountain. Once I leave this area, It would be very difficult to find a top quality vicious beast that is equal to a peak Pulse Condensation martial artist.'

Lin Ming flicked his finger, and a steel needle, with a Purple Flood Dragon coiled around it, immediately jumped to his fingertip, spinning. This was the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder's Thunder Soul. Although it contained an incomparably violent and savage power of thunder, it couldn't be seen at a glance as anything too threatening or unusual. The power of thunder was highly compressed inside of the needle; not even a tiny bit leaked out.

If a martial artist didn't have an acutely pure and strong soul force, then they would have no way of seeing the volatile and dangerous energies that composed the needle. They would only think that it looked like a solid steel needle.

This was the symbol of a high-grade thunder – thunder manifestation.

Energy was the origin of all. Once this energy became extremely compressed, it would manifest into a tangible substance.

The Golden Flood Dragon Beast's dark amber eyes locked onto Lin Ming, a murderous aura overflowing from it. Its dull perception hadn't grasped or noticed the danger within the steel needle, so it didn't place Lin Ming in its eyes. It only regarded Lin Ming as a delicious afternoon lunch.

"Roar!"

The Golden Flood Dragon Beast madly howled as it tore towards Lin Ming, its sharp claws aimed to pierce his throat, wanting to tear this human into shreds.

Lin Ming remained motionless. With a small flick of his finger, the Coiling Dragon steel needle instantly vanished from Lin Ming's fingertip. That small light cut through space at an extraordinary speed without even a shred of sound.

In that split second, light itself seemed to distort as space was split in half by a thin purple line. The Coiling Dragon steel needle sank into the Golden Flood Dragon Beast's mouth and penetrated cleanly through, without even a bit of blood.

The Golden Flood Dragon Beast's body fiercely trembled, its vision blurred, as Lin Ming disappeared from its sight. The Golden Flood Dragon Beast fell to the ground in a vacant daze as it continued to shake. It didn't understand what happened, and that the aching pain it felt was from that instantaneous light that had shot out.

It growled, intending to rush towards Lin Ming again. But at this moment, a purple arc of electricity snaked out from its mouth and its wounds, rampaging all over its body. The manically savage and blazingly hot thunder fire caused the Golden Flood Dragon Beast to howl in suffering. Its body violently struggled and ultimately was unable to escape the final fate of death. It fell to the ground, burned through and through, as it was turned into a charred husk by the thunder.

Lin Ming let out a cool breath. Although he had prepared himself, the power of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder had gone beyond the scope of his imagination. A peak Pulse Condensation vicious beast had been killed in a single strike! Of course, much of this had to do with the weak perception of the Golden Flood Dragon Beast. It simply hadn't realized that the Coiling Dragon steel needle contained such a horrifying power.

'The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder is currently more powerful than my Thunderfire Annihilation. The best part is that it doesn't consume true essence. It's not like Thunderfire Annihilation, where it consumes 30 or 40 percent of my true essence within a single strike. Right now the Heretical God Seed's Flame Essence is simply far weaker than the Thunder Soul. If the difference in power is too great, it would have an adverse detrimental effect on Thunderfire Annihilation's power. I'll have to wait until I obtain the Flame Essence from the Fire Worm Tribe before I can use Thunderfire Annihilation again.'

Thinking this, Lin Ming casually caught a deer and returned to the cave.

Mu Qianyu had some interest in cooking; she took towards barbecuing with gusto. Although Mu Qianyu hadn't yet cooked food before, she had been using her soul force to carefully observe each and every part of the barbecue. By relying on the control of her soul force, she was able to make sure that the meat was perfectly grilled without a single burn. However, regardless of how she cooked it, she still couldn't reproduce the tasty flavor from when Lin Ming did the roasting.

Lin Ming would hunt, barbecue, and then make delicious soup. He mediated in his spare time, and occasionally talked with Mu Qianyu; chatting about new, strange and funny things. The days passed peacefully, filled with light and warmth.

On the morning of the third day, the Vermillion Bird faced the rising sun, and stretched out its great fiery crimson wings. Lin Ming clearly knew that it was time the two of them parted ways.

“What matter would you like me to help you with?” Mu Qianyu had just washed her face, and she gazed at the rising sun. Her hands covered her eyes, and her voice was softly faint.

Lin Ming was about to shake his head, but then he suddenly remembered something. He said, “I want to kill a man. He is weaker than me, but it still won’t be easy killing him. Most of the time he stays in his mansion surrounded by guards. If I decide to make my move, then I will have to do it without being caught and without leaving any evidence. Do you have any means to do so?”

Chapter 218 – Return to Sky Fortune Kingdom

Chapter 218 – Return to Sky Fortune Kingdom

…

…

…

“Mm…” Mu Qianyu lowered her head, deep in thought. She finally said, “There’s a way. As long as you enter into an illusionary world, after killing him you can destroy his corpse and erase the clues.”

Mu Qianyu didn’t ask who Lin Ming was planning to kill or the reason why he wanted to kill. To her, those she liked were her friends, and those she hated were her enemies; she did not differentiate between good and evil, right and wrong.

“This is for you…”

Mu Qianyu took out a sparkling and crystal clear purple pearl from her spatial ring. “This is the Dreamland Pearl. After it’s activated, it will form an illusionary world; anyone under the Xiantian realm will not be able to escape. Not only that, but those around will not notice any difference. This can be considered an independent and separate space; it will isolate you and your enemy inside. All information inside will be contained and cut off from the outside world. Not even a sound transmitting talisman will be able to pass through. You will have enough time to kill him and clear out the scene.”

Lin Ming happily received the purple pearl. As he was about to place it in his spatial ring, he thought for a moment and then asked, “Is this Dreamland Pearl expensive?”

Mu Qianyu gaily laughed, the glittering sunlight shining down on her incomparably beautiful face; it was as if fairies of light were dancing upon her. She was simply one of those legendary beauties that were able to cause the downfall of nations and topple empires.

“Consider this my gift to you. But, you must be careful. This Dreamland Pearl will not help you kill anyone – that will depend on yourself.”

Seeing the radiant beauty of Mu Qianyu, Lin Ming lost focus for a moment. He shook his head, letting out a breath as he gathered himself, suppressing the fluttering of his heart. He nodded and said, “Mm. I’m confident in myself.”

“Haha, I don’t believe there is any matter that you cannot grasp within your reach. Even the Thunder Soul that I thought was impossible to absorb was swallowed by you.” Mu Qianyu said as she smiled.

Neither of them mentioned that matter of them parting ways. After the two of them had breakfast, Lin Ming left to go hunting as usual. However, as he left the cave, he had a feeling that when he came back, she would probably have already left…

………………

“It’s time to go Little Flame, aren’t you willing?” Mu Qianyu smiled as she stroked the Vermillion Bird’s head. The Vermillion Bird had a very reluctant expression at the moment.

Mu Qianyu testily said, “You promised. And you’ve already had several pieces of barbecue.”

The Vermillion Bird blinked, its face full of sad grievance. Ever since it had been born, it had lived on Divine Phoenix Island. It ate the rarest flowers and the tenderest bamboo, and drank the fresh dew of a spring morning. These delicacies weren’t polluted by the foul Houtian air and may have appeared good to eat, but after so many years they had eventually become bland and tasteless.

“Well, It’s time to go, we still have many matters to attend to. If you are still so hungry next time, then I’ll bring you out to eat some roasted meat.” Mu Qianyu said. She tapped her toes and gently floated upwards, landing onto the Vermillion Bird’s back.

As the Vermillion Bird left the cave, Mu Qianyu glanced back one more time.

The fire in the cave had already extinguished. The branches had formed together to make a simple shelter, and the pot of soup was still warm. On one side was a neat bed of straw; that was where she had slept for three days.

It was such a simple arrangement, and yet Mu Qianyu felt a hint of warmth. Sunny days, pleasant memories. She looked towards it with nostalgia, reluctant to leave.

Mu Qianyu lightly sighed. She pulled out a pair of small porcelain bottles from her spatial ring and also a jade slip. She used her soul force to write down a message, and then the porcelain bottles and jade slip seemed to grow wings as they flew into the cave and gently landed on a flat rock inside.

With a strange feeling, as if something were pressing down on her heart, Mu Qianyu patted the Vermillion Bird’s head and said, “Let’s go, Little Flame.”

The Vermillion Bird let out a clear cry, and spread its wings and flew into the sky.

With a whirring sound, the Vermillion Bird flew faster and faster. Mu Qianyu couldn’t help but look one more time. In her eyes, the cave had already reduced to the size of a palm, and shortly vanished from her sight.

“Maybe… if fate wills it, we will meet again…”

…………………………

When Lin Ming was carrying some game back, he saw the empty cave; the familiar crimson beauty had already left, and the Vermillion Bird had flown away, leaving behind several splendid feathers. Next to the feathers were two porcelain bottles and also a jade slip.

Lin Ming sighed, somewhat sad and low in spirits. He wasn't too surprised, he had already guessed that they would part in such a manner. But this time, he felt an inexplicable melancholy in his heart.

He casually tossed aside the game and walked over to sit down on the rocks. He picked up a few of the crimson, fiery feathers, and caressed them for a moment before carefully placing them into his spatial ring. Then, Lin Ming picked up the porcelain bottles and the jade slip.

The porcelain bottles were cool like jade, and there was a light scent to them that was left behind by Mu Qianyu.

He sank his soul force into the jade slip, inside was a short message.

Although it was a bit rude, I thought that leaving without farewells was a better way to part. I want to deeply thank you for helping me expel the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. I've left behind two bottles of pills for you.

I had originally wanted to leave behind some miracle medicines that could directly enhance your cultivation, but after some thinking, I believe it's best if you rely on yourself to cultivate. Slowly accumulating cultivation bit by bit is the most secure and safe method. Therefore I left behind a bottle of Spirit Gathering Pills in order to increase your rate of cultivation. There are altogether 20 of them; you will experience the best effects if you wait until you reach the Pulse Condensation period.

The other bottle contains Divine Spiritual Pills. There are only three of them. For martial artists below the Xiantian realm, they can momentarily enhance one's cultivation so that you can go beyond the limit of your current combat skill. If you encounter an unexpected danger, take a Divine Spiritual Pill and it can help you safely escape.

I am from Divine Phoenix Island. If destiny wills it, then our paths will cross again someday.

Mu Qianyu.

Lin Ming placed the pills and the jade slip into his spatial ring. He sighed. These past days had been like a fleeting dream. But in the end, he still had to awaken from the dream, no matter how wonderful it was. There were still many matters that he had to attend to.

He wanted to take the eternal flame of the Firm Worm Tribe, but currently the Fire Worm Shaman was too strong. With just his flame avatar, Lin Ming had been chased down and nearly killed. Even though he had the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, he didn't have an absolute assurance that he would be able to defeat him.

And even if he killed the Fire Worm Shaman, absorbing the eternal flame's Flame Essence wouldn't be easy with his current strength. He could only lay this down for the moment and return at some later time.

The most immediate matter was to return to Sky Fortune Kingdom and kill Ouyang Dihua.

If it wasn't for the fact that he had accidently learnt Thunderfire Annihilation and also obtained a Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead, then Lin Ming would have most likely already been killed by Huo Gong. He had no alternative but to avenge this grudge!

"Ouyang Dihua's cultivation is only at the middle Pulse Condensation period. But his uncle is an Elder of the Seven Profound Valleys, and the cultivation methods he studies are far beyond those of normal martial artists. His total combat strength should at least be equal to a peak Pulse Condensation martial artist. He should be able to fight toe-to-toe with Chi Guda. With this cultivation, it won't be difficult to kill him!

……………………

As the plants of the Southern Wilderness began to bloom, Sky Fortune City had already entered into a deep winter.

The cold winds blew down, and gusts of chilling air curled around as if they could drill into a person's bones.

The trees were already bare of leaves, and snow had piled high onto the streets. There were very few pedestrians on the streets, and even the usually ubiquitous peddlers and merchants were nowhere to be seen. A silence had fallen upon the once noisy streets, and there was only the occasional sound of a barking dog. There were new posts on the message boards, the frosted windows tinkled in the cold wind.

In Sky Fortune City, every family had a cozy fire in their house. Wealthy families sat on heated brick beds, eating delicious hotpot. The poor would boil a pot of ginger soup to warm their family's stomachs. In Sky Fortune Kingdom's capital, even the common people lived in relative prosperity, there were very few who would starve or freeze to death.

In the vast endless snow of Sky Fortune City, in the southwest courtyard of a great mansion, there was a waterside pavilion that was luxuriously decorated to the brim.

During this cold season, the lake should have already frozen over. But at the bottom of the lake there was a small array that was extracting geothermal heat upwards, maintaining a suitable temperature for the lake's waters. There were even several breeds of water lotuses that were planted in the lake. Although they didn't bloom, their leaves were still a vibrant green. In this cold season, such a green was truly a luxurious color.

In the waterside pavilion, there were two expensively dressed high-class men that were sitting down, facing each other.

They wore mink furs, silk-lined jackets, thick moccasins, and there was a golden purple stove heating them. In front of these two was an exquisite sandalwood table lined with meticulously crafted desserts and a jar of vintage wine. Even in this cold season, there were rare litchi grapes on the table.

All of these were a demonstration of the owner's wealth.

Of these two people, one was the current Seven Profound Envoy of Sky Fortune Kingdom, Ouyang Dihua, and the other was the Head of the Allied Trade Association's Zhang Family, Zhang Guanyu's father, Zhang Fengxian.

After Zhang Guanyu had been crippled, Zhang Fengxian had taken Lin Ming as his enemy.

However, Lin Ming's strength was simply too powerful, and his status was entrenched in the populace. He also had the support of the Seven Profound Martial House and the Crown Prince. Zhang Fengxian knew well that with just his own influence and power, it was simply impossible for him to deal with Lin Ming.

Ouyang gazed at the scenery outside the pavilion as he silently drank a glass of wine. He quietly said, "Has there been any news?"

Zhang Fengxian sighed. He shook his head and said, "The Southern Wilderness is 100,000 miles wide. The terrain within is complex; there are forests, jungles, swamps, mountains, grasslands, and all sorts of ghost-like vicious beasts. There are countless large and small tribes. To look for a single person with just a portrait alone is like looking for a needle in a haystack."

A month and a half ago, Lin Ming and Huo Gong had gone missing in the Southern Wilderness. The two Heavenly Wind Eagles that were with them had also disappeared. After hearing this news, Ouyang Dihua was somewhat perturbed, he began to investigate it. But although he had a high status, the amount of manpower at his disposal was actually very limited; therefore he had used the power of the Allied Trade Association to conduct an investigation in secret.

In Ouyang Dihua's eyes, for Huo Gong who was a half-step into the Houtian realm to kill Lin Ming, it should be guaranteed as long as there wasn't an accident.

When Huo Gong had gone missing, Ouyang Dihua had thought that maybe it was Qin Ziya who had been moving in the shadows. But half a month ago, Qin Ziya had come back, oblivious to the matter of Lin Ming's disappearance.

Seeing that Qin Ziya didn't know anything of what was going on, Ouyang Dihua felt his heart drop into his stomach. He had deduced that Lin Ming had absolutely died. But the question was, where did Huo Gong go?

Did he die in some accident in the Southern Wilderness? Or was it that after killing Lin Ming, he had found some amazing secret on his body and fled with it?

Ouyang Dihua didn't worry about these two possibilities. What he most worried about was that Lin Ming had not died, and was like a venomous serpent that was waiting to ambush him. If that was the case, then he would be in danger. Lin Ming's growth was simply fearful. In a few years, perhaps Lin Ming's strength would exceed his own!

Seeing Ouyang Dihua look so unsettled and unsure, Zhang Fengxian tentatively said, "Mister Ouyang, I've discussed before that maybe if we act on Lin Ming's family then we can force him out. If he doesn't come out, then that proves that he has already died. What does Mister Ouyang think?"

Zhang Fengxian also wanted to ruin Lin Ming's family. Otherwise, it would be difficult to resolve the hatred that was in his heart.

But what he didn't know, was that while he and Ouyang Dihua were talking, a creeping invisible enchantment had already fallen upon them, enveloping them within its grip, and completely isolating them from the outside world…

Chapter 219 – I'll Let You Struggle In Despair

Chapter 219 – I'll Let You Struggle In Despair

…

…

…

"Move against the Lin Family… " Ouyang Dihua hesitated for a moment as he thought about it. The truth was that he also wanted to use this method to force out Lin Ming, but he worried about Qin Ziya.

Now, because of the Total Faction Assembly Tournament, Qin Ziya had been looking for Lin Ming. Perhaps he might even suspect him now, but he just didn't have any evidence to back his speculations up.

If he moved against the Lin Family now, Qin Ziya would easily be able to discover some clues…

Zhang Fengxian noticed Ouyang Dihua's hesitation, and said, "I know what Mister Ouyang is worried about. Please let my Allied Trade Association act upon this matter. I will use legitimate means in order to suppress the Lin Family's family business. I have already investigated and found that the Lin Family is comprised of a few thousand people in total, with only two estates and several hundred acres of farmable land. The rest rely on the family business in order to maintain daily expenses."

"If I cut the Lin Family's business off, the Lin Family will fall apart. I think, that for normal commercial competition, Martial House Master Qin Ziya will not say anything. We merely need to wait for the Lin Family to decline, and once Lin Ming's parents are no longer protected, we can secretly capture them. At that time, it won't arouse much suspicion. What does Mister Ouyang this of this plan?"

Ouyang Dihua nodded. Using legitimate means to suppress the Lin Family was the most reasonable means. Even Qin Ziya could not find any fault with that. The Lin Family did have some amount of influence, but it was nothing compared to the centuries old heritage of the Allied Trade Association.

"Good, then we'll proceed like so. I want to destroy the Lin Family and decimate everyone in it. I want to see just where that little animal will go to die. If he dares show his face, I will kill him. And if he doesn't appear, I will let him watch as his family slowly perishes, and his parents becoming beggars on the streets, struggling with the wild dogs for food!

As Ouyang Dihua coldly said these words, his eyes flashed with a sinister light.

Zhang Fengxian smiled and suddenly thought of something. He poured a glass of wine and said to Ouyang Dihua, "Mister Ouyang, don't worry. I will force the Lin Family step-by-step into a dead end, until they are ruined. I will also force them to sell their daughters to me as slaves. The Lin Family can be regarded as a martial cultivation family; their daughters are always third-grade talents. When the time comes, I would like to honor Mister Ouyang and assist with your cultivation. In doing so, it's not against the rules, as long as the Lin Family voluntarily sells them. They can be sold as maids, and Mister Ouyang can do as he pleases with them. Who could say you can't... "

As Zhang Fengxian spoke, he kept attentively poured wine for Ouyang Dihua. Ouyang Dihua took the wine glass with relish, boldly laughing. "Good! Very Good!! I will have that little animal take a good, hard look as I have all the woman of the Lin Family wait upon my crotch!"

Ouyang Dihua crushed the wine glass in his hand, an immoral and dark grin spread across his face. Once the Lin Family declined, he would use the Lin Family women as his furnace to cultivate in it. "Lin Ming, regardless of whether you died or haven't died, or even if you are waiting in the shadows for me, I will let you enjoy this great gift!

As Ouyang Dihua was devising a method to deal with the Lin Family, at this moment, he suddenly felt a vast murderous aura penetrating into his bones, chilling him from his head to his toes!

“Who!?” Ouyang Dihua stood up suddenly, true essence rapidly revolving through his entire body. His vision was like a hawk as he swept the surroundings. He didn’t notice anything strange, even his four bodyguards were keeping watch not too far away, as if nothing had happened.

Zhang stood up, puzzled. He thought that Ouyang Dihua was simply being overly nervous. They were in the Headquarters of the Allied Trade Association. In the Headquarters, there was even a Houtian master who was on standby. Anyone that dared to barge in here was simply seeking death.

But as Zhang Fengxian looked up, he was suddenly rendered completely speechless. He was the President of the Allied Trade Association, and he had survived countless scenes and plots and trickeries. Yet now, his eyes had gone wide, his face an expression of horror.

He helplessly watched as a handsome, smiling boy slowly glided down from the sky, coming to a rest as he tread upon air, floating just above the surface of the lake.

This boy looked at him, a sly smile crossing his face.

“Fl-flight!”

Zhang Fengxian was also a martial artist. Although his cultivation wasn’t high, he still knew what it meant if a martial artist to fly.

Only a Xiantian master could fly!

A Xiantian master came here to kill him? No… no, that was impossible!

Ouyang Dihua’s face sank. He stared at the grandiose youth who was brilliantly shining in the air, transcendent. His heart was in raging turmoil as he was nearly overwhelmed by panic. Not only could this youth fly, but all of the true essence in his body was restrained, so that Ouyang Dihua couldn't see the level of his cultivation. It was just as if he had reached the legendary realm of returning to his origin! No wonder. Even though he had felt a strange atmosphere as this young boy dropped from the heavens, his vigilance wasn't even aroused until the deep murderous intention was exposed. Before he knew it, his enemy had approached him!

"Lin Ming!"

Ouyang Dihua bit out those two words from between his clenched teeth. He withdrew the long sword from his spatial ring. Why was he able to fly? Why was he able to reach the realm of returning to his origin?

Did he step into the Xiantian realm?

That was impossible! Even in the ancient times, not even the saints and sages that founded the Holy Land's had reached the Xiantian realm at only 15 years old!

Whatever the reason, Ouyang Dihua had a faint feeling that Lin Ming had been holding his trump cards close to himself and keeping his secrets hidden. And today, he had finally exposed his hidden fangs!

In this confrontation, Lin Ming would reveal all the cards in his hands, his strength reaching the peak!

"Who are you?" Ouyang Dihua had lost his former calm. He now realized that he had never thoroughly understood Lin Ming, nor could he ever. Was Huo Gong killed by him? If so, then Lin Ming's strength had most likely exceeded even his own! Such an existence was usually hidden far away; why would he come to the Seven Profound Martial House to pose as a student? Just what was his goal?

"Who am I?" Lin Ming was slightly astonished, and then, he immediately laughed. "How rude. A little more than a month and you don't recognize me anymore? You're too forgetful. You really do have some ability though. You managed to find someone to disguise themselves as Martial House Master Qin and then, lure me into going to the Southern Wilderness. What a pity, the assassin you sent out was too low quality; I killed him already. Too bad. You almost succeeded."

As Lin Ming spoke, Ouyang Dihua felt a chill run down his body. Although he had already guessed that Lin Ming had killed Huo Gong, hearing this news from the boy's own mouth was another matter. Now, he truly felt fear. Currently, Lin Ming most likely had the strength to kill him!

"Lin Ming, this is our first time meeting." Zhang Fengxian brilliantly smiled as he stared at Lin Ming. He crossed his hands behind his back. He had already calmed down from his panic a moment ago. Since this was Lin Ming, there was no way that he could be a Xiantian master. Although he didn't know why Ling Ming was able to fly, as long as Lin Ming wasn't a Xiantian master, then in his own headquarters where he reigned supreme, why would he care that the other party had the courage to actually dare charge in? Even if Lin Ming dared to attack him, he would simply be courting death!

"I'll tell you now, this here is my Allied Trade Association's Headquarters. You actually dare charge in here to kill us? Haha! I thought you knew Mister Ouyang's status! He is the Sky Fortune Kingdom's Seven Profound Envoy, and his uncle is an Elder of the Seven Profound Valleys. Just how many lives do you have? You actually dare to kill us? If you want to run away with your tail between your legs, you might still have the time. You trespass into my Allied Trade Association and dare attack the Seven Profound Envoy? Even if I send someone to kill you, it's not against the rules!

Zhang Fengxian sneered. As he said this, he was already quietly crumbling a sound transmitting talisman between his hands. It was an order for the Allied Trade Association's Houtian master to come immediately. As long as he came, no matter how superhuman Lin Ming's powers were, he would also suffer to the extreme!

Lin Ming saw Zhang Fengxian's little tricks, but he didn't care it. His illusionary world couldn't even be broken by a peak Houtian realm master. That Zhang Fengxian using an inferior sound transmitting talisman to penetrate it was simply a joke.

“Humph, just because your uncle is a Seven Profound Valley’s Elder, you think you can do whatever you want without care for any laws? Hehe, if you want to kill me, why can’t I kill you? Your name is Zhang Fengxian? As the Allied Trade Association’s Head, it truly is like father like son. You father and son pair are simply too rampant for your own good. Before, I had already crippled Zhang Guanyu and turned him into waste. Now, it’s probably best if I cripple you too, so that you can accompany him together.”

“You’re dead!” At the mention of Zhang Guanyu, Zhang Fengxian was sent into an apoplectic rage, seething with murderous intention. This insult touched upon his greatest wrath. “Don’t think you’re getting away today. I’ll have you stay here and beg for your death!”

“Good. I’m waiting.” Lin Ming said with indifference. Ouyang Dihua’s eyelids jumped. A moment ago, Zhang Fengxian had already crumpled the sound transmitting talisman, and yet, Lin Ming didn’t seem to have any fears. What sort of card did he have in his hand?

Thinking this, Ouyang Dihua’s heart was suddenly filled with a dire sense of foreboding.

“Guard One! Guard Two! Just what are you standing there so stupid for!? Come and kill this assassin!” Ouyang Dihua suddenly turned his head, shouting at the four bodyguards that stood not too far away. These four bodyguards were Ouyang Dihua’s personal bodyguards. One of them had even reached the middle Pulse Condensation period; their strength wasn’t that much different from Ouyang Dihuas’.

Lin Ming watched as Ouyang Dihua uselessly roared, a smile crossing his face. His hands folded across his chest. He looked calm and collected, just as if he were watching the playacting of a clown.

“Guard One? Guard Two?” Ouyang Dihua found that no matter how much he yelled at the four bodyguards, his voice fell on deaf ears. Standing in the distance, it was as if they hadn’t even hear him shout.

Seeing this strange scene, Ouyang Dihua's heart was filled with an inexplicable chill. He turned towards Lin Ming, his voice trembling, "You… what did you do?"

Lin Ming mockingly said, "Call them? How will you call them? You can shout all you want until even your throat goes numb, but no one will come to save you."

Lin Ming had originally planned to quickly and cleanly kill Ouyang Dihua. But he came just as they were discussing a heinous plan. Luckily, he had come back in time. Otherwise, if that plan was sent into motion, he couldn't imagine what sort of pitiful and sad fate his parents and the women of the Lin Family would have to face.

If such a thing ever happened, killing Ouyang Dihua a hundred times over still wouldn't be enough!

He originally had no enmity with Ouyang Dihua. Yet, Ouyang Dihua had tried to deal with him again and again. He had used all sorts of cheap tricks and vile tactics in order to kill him. He had put him in a deathtrap, almost killing him. And now, he even wanted to move against his family. This grudge wouldn't be resolved with simply killing Ouyang Dihua.

He would galvanize and prod Ouyang Dihua, so that the he would struggle in despair, knowing that there was no way he could escape. Only by doing so would he be able to assuage his heart of this hatred and clear his mind.

Seeing this strange scene, Zhang Fengxian also felt some panic as he flustered again. The sound transmitting talisman should have already arrived by now. The Allied Trade Association's Headquarters was only a few miles wide. With a Houtian master's speed, he should be able to arrive in the blink of an eye. And yet, why wasn't there even the slightest movement?

"You… what the hell did you do!?"

Chapter 220 – Suppression of Absolute Power

Chapter 220 – Suppression of Absolute Power

…

…

…

"I haven't done anything… other than use a Dreamland Pearl to lay down this illusionary world. It should give me enough time to play with you a bit. Don't uselessly struggle; it's pathetic. This enchantment can only be broken by a Xiantian realm master. All perception is isolated within. No matter what goes on in here, whether it be some earth-shaking power or wondrous ability, anyone looking in from the outside will only see a calm scene. If Mister Ouyang does not believe me, then feel free to try breaking the enchantment."

Lin Ming slowly said as he crossed his arms across his chest. A cold smile flit across his features.

Hearing Lin Ming's words, Ouyang Dihua's heart sank. Only a Xiantian master could break through this enchantment? Was it really such a great treasure? Just where did he get this pearl from?

Such a pearl would be incomparably precious even within the Seven Profound Valleys!

Once again, Ouyang Dihua guessed that Lin Ming had an unknown yet fantastical background!

"What do you want?" Ouyang Dihua no longer doubted Lin Ming's power. If he dared to come here today, then he must have had the absolute assurance to kill him.

“You ask what I want? Mister Ouyang, I can’t believe that you would ask such a silly question. Isn’t it obvious? I’m going to kill you. This illusionary world was laid down in order to avoid the attention of others, so that I can turn your corpse into ashes without a single trace.”

“Good! Very good! I want to see just how you will kill me!” Ouyang Dihua roared, true essence erupting from his body like a geyser. His body short forwards like an arrow, but what he aimed at was not Lin Ming, but the void of the illusionary world.

“Life Severing Dead Bone Blade!”

Ouyang Dihua’s entire body stirred with true essence. The long sword in his hand turned to a bone white color, and deep chilly wind ran out from it, followed by countless sad cries and mournful wails; it really made one feel a scalp-tingling creepiness!

This move had been used by Zhang Guanyu when he and Lin Ming had dueled each other. This was the most ruthless ability of the ‘Divine Acacia Powers’ first layer. But seeing it now, Zhang Guanyu’s version could not hold a candle to Ouyang Dihuas’.

“A wise move, unfortunately, useless.” Lin Ming hadn’t even moved. He simply watched as Ouyang Dihua’s sword struck against the edge of the illusionary world.

Zhi—!!!

A blinding white light sprung forth, and Ouyang Dihua’s sword emitted an ear-tingling grating sound, as if it were about to break. Ouyang Dihua gave a stuffy cough as his body trembled. The web between his fingers had cracked apart, dripping red with blood.

However, the invisible enchantment was motionless and intact, without even the least bit of damage.

It couldn’t be broken! It really couldn’t be broken!

Ouyang Dihua's heart sank. Even though he felt as if a mountain had fallen upon him, the illusionary world wasn't affected in the least! Perhaps what Lin Ming said was true, and only a Xiantian master could break apart this illusionary world!

"I already said that only a Xiantian master can break it. Otherwise, it is impossible to forcibly open this enchantment. Ouyang Dihua, accept your fate. Today is the day you die!"

Lin Ming touched his spatial ring, and the nine feet nine inch Heavy Profound Soft Spear appeared in his right hand, gripped horizontally. The silver-white spear edge gleamed a deadly radiance, overflowing with coldness!

Ouyang Dihua turned towards Lin Ming, his eyes glimmering with dark and decisive color. "Lin Ming, don't force me! You think that you can win against me!? If I damage my cultivation to bring forth the Soul Severing Sword, don't think that you will survive!

As Ouyang Dihua said this, his body suddenly shuddered. With a loud shout, all of his silk clothing was completely torn asunder, revealing a purple gold colored flexible armor. This was shockingly a high-grade human-step treasure armor!

As Ouyang Dihua flourished his sword, the blade began to resound with a mournful howls, as if countless grieving spirits were bitterly sealed within the sword.

Lin Ming chuckled and said, "You truly are worthy of being the nephew of a Seven Profound Valley's Elder. You have a flexible armor protecting you, a long sword as a weapon, both of which are high-grade human-step treasures. Even I covet such treasures. That being the case, then I will kindly accept them."

"You are reckless!" Ouyang Dihua's feet pressed against the ground. He tread so hard that even the floor beneath him ruptured as he disappeared into a series of afterimages, his sword piercing straight towards Lin Ming's throat!

"Fleeting Blade!"

Ouyang Dihua's sword sliced through space, the air grated with a loud explosive sound. The momentum behind this strike was terrifying!

However, Lin Ming only laughed. Without using any martial skill, he gripped his spear in both hands and smashed down!

After absorbing the power of vitality in the Sorcerer Pagoda, in addition to the cultivation of 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' in his body, the strength behind his spear had reached a mind-boggling degree.

10,000 jins!!

Bang!

Ouyang Dihua felt as if a mountain had fallen onto him. As spear and sword crossed each other, a massive vibrating strength sent Ouyang Dihua flying backwards as he vomited blood. He felt as if his bones were about to fracture!

"Flow like Silk!" Lin Ming thrust out his spear, and 5000 vibrating true essence filaments formed a spiral that pierced towards Ouyang Dihua's right shoulder. If this spear struck, then Ouyang Dihua's right arm would be torn apart!

In this moment of life and death, Ouyang Dihua's eyes flashed with a sinister color. He immediately drew backwards, and at the same time opened his mouth to spit out two beads towards Lin Ming's eyes!

"Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead?"

Lin Ming sneered. The Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead that Zhang Guanyu had was given to him by Ouyang Dihua. Lin Ming had already guessed that Ouyang Dihua would secretly mix in Thunderbolt Devilfire Beads in his attacks, but he just didn't think that the beads were hidden between his lips.

A Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead was best used in a surprise attack. Once the enemy was prepared for it, the effects would be greatly reduced.

“Concept of wind!”

Lin Ming waved his left hand, and a strong wind surged upwards, blowing away the Thunderbolt Devilfire Beads. At the same time, Lin Ming stepped forwards, his body shooting forth like an arrow as he stabbed his spear towards Ouyang Dihua’s belly!

Bang! Bang!

The Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead’s exploded in the sky, but they didn’t even have the slightest effect on the illusionary world enchantment. At this moment, Lin Ming’s long spear had already closed in, and was less than a hundred feet away! With Ouyang Dihua flying backwards in the air, there was no way for him to dodge!

“Lin Ming! I will bet my life against you! Soul Severing Blade!!!” Ouyang Dihua pounded his own chest, spitting out a mouthful of blood. This blood sprayed across the blade of his sword. After absorbing the blood, the originally gleaming silver blade transformed into a strange blood red color. There was a soul piercing scream as a massive red skull struggled out of the sword, as if it had emerged from a sea of crimson blood!

As soon as the skull appeared, it inflated like a balloon. In a short moment, it had already swelled to over ten feet wide. It faced Lin Ming and let loose a maddening howl. For a time, the entire sky was filled with a bone-freezing wind, as if all nearby human blood and flesh would be drained by this giant skull.

After he released this bloody skull, Ouyang Dihua immediately looked faint and lifeless; he could barely stand on his feet. This was the strongest skill in his repertoire – Soul Severing Sword. Once activated, he would lose 20% of his cultivation. He probably wouldn’t recover his vitality even in half a year.

Seeing this massive red skull appear, Lin Ming revealed an expression a surprise. Even though his own blood vitality billowed out into the sky, he still felt a chill from the depths of his soul when faced with this skull; it was as if he were stranded naked within an endless plain of snow in the middle of a great winter storm.

“Die, Lin Ming! Once this Soul Severing Blood Skeleton appears, it will never give up until it has sucked up all the blood essence of its enemies!” Ouyang Dihua hysterically raved. His entire face was a gloomy bright red, as if he had been possessed by a devil.

Seeing this bloody skull roaring towards him, Lin Ming put away the Heavy Profound Soft Spear. He flicked his right hand and a Coiling Dragon steel needle jumped out on his fingertips.

This small steel needle was only two inches long and on it engraved a Purple Flood Dragon. The Flood Dragon wound downwards, encircling the steel needle nine times, no more and no less. Although the Flood Dragon’s body was tiny, every subtle texture and detail contained the fierce and supremely tyrannical expression of the savage Flood Dragon; it was so vivid and vibrant that it appeared, not as an engraving, but instead a true Flood Dragon that had been pinned onto the steel needle.

The bloody skull rushed towards Lin Ming from the front, opening its jaws wide in an attempt to swallow Lin Ming whole! Lin Ming didn’t move; he simply aimed at the big mouth of the bloody skull and flicked his finger.

Whiz!

The Coiling Dragon steel needle transformed into a tiny purple line as it shot towards the blood skull. On one side was a massive blood-colored skull that was over ten feet wide, while on the other a small two-inch long steel needle. Their disproportionate sizes were simply too contrasting!

Puff!

The Coiling Dragon steel needle pierced straight through the bloody skull. A near infinite purple thunder erupted outwards, as a grid of lightning enveloped the entire blood skull.

The thick arcs of sizzling electricity flashed in the air, as the bloody skull let out piercingly shrill howls of pain. It's body was like a cube of ice that had molten steel poured upon it, rapidly melting!

The greatest fear of ghosts was the power of thunder. If a ghost wished to ascend and attain a Pure Yang body, then they must pass heavenly tribulation. But under the divine judgement of heavenly tribulation, countless spirits and ghosts had been turned to ashes, completely annihilated forever!

Not only that, the Coiling Dragon steel needle in Lin Ming's hand contained the illustrious Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. While Ouyang Dihua had released a bloody skull, it wasn't some amazingly desolate and evil power. Once the two forces collided, the results could be clearly predicted. In only a few shorts breaths, the bloody skull let out one final sorrowful wail, and then completely vanished into nothing!

The thick arcs of purple thunder still scintillated in the air. Lin Ming stretched out his hand, and the Coiling Dragon steel needle instantly returned to his palm, floating there as it slowly revolved. It was as if destroying the blood skull was easier than crushing an ant.

As Ouyang Dihua saw this scene, he was instantly stunned silly. Overcome with bewilderment, he had never dreamed that his ultimate move, which had taken 20% of his cultivation to use, had been so easily put out like a little candle by Lin Ming.

How was this possible!?

Ouyang Dihua's heart surged with roiling despair and desperation. His hands trembled. The feeling of approaching doom had never been so close before!

"Did I surprise you? With your background as a nephew of a Seven Profound Valley's Elder, and also being older than me by 7 years, you are actually being toyed with in the palm of my hand. It really must be hard to accept...."

"In any case, you will not escape death today. Can you tell me who was disguised as Martial House Master Qin? In exchange, I will send you off with a sweet farewell."

Lin Ming didn't know if the one who had posed as Qin Ziya was Ouyang Dihua or someone else, so he could only ask him as a test.

Ouyang Dihua's face twitched. His mouth turned into a scowl as he shouted, "You think I will tell you? Dream on!"

Lin Ming laughed. "Although I really do want to know what other enemies are hiding in the shadows, it doesn't really matter anyhow. First, I will kill you, letting you suffer to death in the most painful and excruciating way possible."

Lin Ming extracted the Heavy Profound Soft Spear as he said this. The spear point glimmered with electric light as 5000 vibrating true essence filaments were poured into it.

Ouyang Dihua's eyes flashed with a ferocious color. "Since you won't let me live, then die with me!"

Ouyang Dihua swiped his spatial ring, grabbing a handful of Thunderbolt Devilfire Beads.

"We shall perish together!"

Chapter 221 – Killing Ouyang Dihua

Chapter 221 – Killing Ouyang Dihua

…

…

…

Lin Ming's eyes condensed. He rapidly flicked his finger and the Coiling Dragon steel needle shot out with a whistling sound as it flew forwards like a bolt of lightning. The steel needle sliced through space and cut apart Ouyang Dihua's hands with an unbelievable speed!

Puff!

Both Ouyang Dihua's hands were torn to shreds; his wrists were broken in half, spurting blood. With both hands broken, he was sent flying into the sky with his pile of Thunderbolt Devilfire Beads.

"Ah ah ah ah!"

Ouyang Dihua screamed in anguish. Lin Ming coldly snorted and waved his hand. A tornado formed in the air and collected all the Thunderbolt Devilfire Beads.

The swirling wind held the Thunderbolt Devilfire Beads in air; there were at least 20 beads rolling around. As for Ouyang Dihua, he was painfully moaning as he tumbled to the ground.

Both his arms were completely crippled from the elbow down, and his upper arms still flashed with sparks of lightning; they were completely charred black!

Zhang Fengxian felt as the last fires of his hope were died down like fading embers. He was used to wonderful and magnificent scenes, but now, his legs were shaking. Zhang Fengxian had held the position of the Allied Trade Association's President for many years; he didn't even remember how many people he had put to death. But now, when faced with his own mortality, he trembled with abject fear.

Often times, the more high-ranking a person was, the more they feared death. Zhang Fengxian was like this. He had held absolute power within his grasp for decades, and his status was one that was venerated and worshipped. He had enjoyed countless wealth, treasure, and beauties. All of these caused him to have an enormous love for life, and an enormous fear of death.

That youth that was floating in air was simply a devil incarnate. He was too powerful. Powerful to the point where he could easily play with them; everything was in the palm of his hands, just like a game of cat and mouse. In front of him, any and all resistance was meaningless.

Lin Ming released his soul force had swept up all the Thunderbolt Devilfire Beads. He faintly smiled, and kindly accepted all of them.

"I already knew you had Thunderbolt Devilfire Beads. Why would I give you the chance to use them?"

Ouyang Dihua was lying prostrate on the ground like a dead dog. With both his arms broken, he could only prop his head on the ground, blood continuously flowing from his mouth. He viciously said, "You....you wait for my uncle's revenge.....he will make you beg for death!"

Lin Ming slowly landed in front of Ouyang Dihua. He sneered, "Your uncle? Once I erase all evidence, how will he know I killed you? You, a middle Pulse Condensation master, with four bodyguards protecting you. You've been drinking in the Headquarters of the Allied Trade Association too. In this case, you will quietly die and disappear forever. Do you still think that your uncle will even suspect me at all? He might even think that this was done by a Xiantian master! Haha!”

The reason that he dared to kill Ouyang Dihua was because he had calculated that no one would ever suspect him.

“I had recorded at the Martial House Registration Office that I would be going adventuring for two months. Now, it’s only been a month and a half. After I kill you, I will wait another half month before I appear again. Who will even think to suspect me? People know that you and I are hostile to each other, but who would know that our conflict has already escalated to the point of killing the other?”

Lin Ming prodded Ouyang Dihua with his spear point. Ouyang Dihua’s face was covered in blood, at this point, he didn’t even look human anymore. Lin Ming calmly took off Ouyang Dihua’s spatial ring and swept it with his soul force. He cheerfully praised, “You truly are worthy of being a nephew of a Seven Profound Valley Elder, your collection is very rich. Thank you, I just happened to be a bit low on funds at the moment.”

As Li Ming said this, he was waving Ouyang Dihua’s owns spatial ring in front of his face.

Pah!

Ouyang Dihua seethed in rage as his anger reached a tipping point and he suddenly vomited a mouthful of blood. Most of his body’s meridians were already broken. This wasn’t because he was beaten up, but because he was angered by Lin Ming.

Anger was part of the so called ‘spirit’. As long as one’s spirit was calm and soothed, and their thoughts enjoyable, their cultivation would be double the result with half the effort. On the other hand, if they became angry enough to the point of suffering psychological damage, then this spirit could even damage their meridians!

The more arrogant a person was, the easier it was to use anger to cause them to lose their minds. In ancient times, there were stories of genius advisers that vomited blood and died from anger. Although Ouyang Dihua was still alive, his meridians had been damaged, and this was because of how much he hated Lin Ming.

Looking at Ouyang Dihua's state, Lin Ming shook his head. It was unlikely that he would get him to say who the one that disguised themselves as Qin Ziya and tried to kill him was. But at this moment, Zhang Fengxian who was hiding in the distance suddenly said, "Young Hero Lin, I know who it was that disguised themselves as Martial House Master Qin to trick you!"

"Mm?" Lin Ming turned around to look at Zhang Fengxian, "You know who?"

The deep murderous aura that emanated from Lin Ming's eyes was no different from a sharp knife. As soon as Zhang Fengxian was touched by Lin Ming's sight, his heart shrank and stepped backwards. He gulped, trembling as he said, "I don't know, but I can make a very close guess."

"Tell me."

"I....I can tell you, but I would like to request Young Hero Lin to let me leave!" Zhang Fengxian plopped down with his knees to the ground as he said this. With his status, even when he saw the Emperor of Sky Fortune Kingdom, all he would need to do was bend a bit in a bow. Now, he was compelled by Ouyang Dihua's miserable state to kneel down. Even the nephew of a Seven Profound Valley Elder had ended up like this, much less him.

It had to be said when a person was pushed up to the wall, their desire to live was terrible; what sort of things wouldn't they do? How many people were there that were able to face death without fear? Most people, when facing their impending doom, bet everything they had to fight for even the slimmest chance of survival. At that time, things like dignity, honor, and ethics all became a joke.

"Oh? You think that you have the qualifications to speak to me about conditions?" Lin Ming's voice suddenly dipped into sub-zero temperatures.

Zhang Fengxian hurriedly shook his head. “I do not dare. As long as Young Hero Lin lets me leave alive, then I can give Young Hero Lin one hundred million gold taels! I will force the entire Allied Trade Association to serve Young Hero! As long as Young Hero desires to search for any rare materials, maids, concubines, precious pills, herbs, anything can be made available through my Allied Trade Association! I dare guarantee that my Allied Trade Association has the broadest information network in Sky Fortune Kingdom, not even the Imperial Family can compare!”

One hundred million gold taels?

Lin Ming’s eyes widened. The entire tax revenue of Sky Fortune Kingdom in a year was 20 or 30 million gold taels. This Allied Trade Association was simply obscenely wealthy.

Zhang Fengxian feared that Lin Ming wouldn’t agree. He continued to say, “Young Hero, if you find me untrustworthy, then you keep me hidden somewhere else. With Young Hero’s talent, breaking through to the Xiantian realm is only a matter of time. As soon as Young Hero reaches the Xiantian realm, then my life will be completely within Young Hero’s grasp; I will absolutely never dare to betray you!”

Although Zhang Fengxian’s conditions were very persuasive, letting him leave was simply too great a danger. Lin Ming didn’t want to take such a needless risk. He said, “Don’t talk to me about these things. First, who do you think had disguised themselves as Martial House Master Qin?”

Zhang Fengxian tentatively asked, “Young Hero won’t kill me?”

Lin Ming confidently said, “I won’t kill you.”

Zhang Fengxian’s eyes narrowed. He wanted to have Lin Ming take an oath on his heart of martial arts, but at this time, Lin Ming gave a cold humph and suddenly turned, hitting Ouyang Dihua’s chest with his palm.

Pulse Cutting Palm!

Pah!

Ouyang Dihua's briefly shook for a moment, and then all of the true essence in his body dissipated like a deflating rubber ball. In a blink of the eye, he had lost all of his martial arts.

Ouyang Dihua weakly fell to the ground, his eyes losing all focus. At this point, he was no different than a corpse.

Lin Ming retracted his palm and coldly said, "Don't think that you will be able to commit suicide by abandoning your meridians."

Zhang Fengxian was gripped with fear as he watched from the side. With just a hand, Lin Ming had crippled all of Ouyang Dihua's martial arts so that he couldn't even commit suicide. This Lin Ming was simply a demon.

"Well, have you thought it over yet?"

"I'll talk....I'll talk." Zhang Fengxian no longer dared to mention anything concerning Lin Ming making an oath on his heart of martial arts. He was afraid that it would displace Lin Ming, and he would be placed in a position where he wouldn't even be able to die if he wanted too. "I suspect that the one who disguised himself as Martial House Master Qin is the Seven Profound Martial House Deputy House Master, Bi Luo. He originates from the Mirage Faction and is the best at illusion techniques. Moreover, he has a very good personal friendship with Ouyang Dihua and dislikes Martial House Master Qin. So, it is likely that he was the one who tricked you."

As the President of the Allied Trade Association, Zhang Fengxian knew a great deal of information; a normal martial artist wouldn't know who Bi Luo was.

"Bi Luo? I see, so that's how it was. What's his cultivation?"

"Probably....middle Houtian realm."

"Mm...thank you. Now, give me your spatial ring."

“O…okay.” Zhang Fengxian trembled as he took off his spatial ring. As he handed the ring over to Lin Ming, he suddenly froze. His eyes opened wide open as he looked into Lin Ming’s eyes.

At this time, Lin Ming’s eyes had already become two swirling black vortexes, slowly spinning. They seemed to contain an endless darkness within them, as if they were but an infinite void.

Zhang Fengxian felt as if his own soul was being sucked out; a myriad of chaotic scenes and images emerged from his mind. He saw countless visions of his life. He saw when he was young, he saw when he was old. He saw when he became all-powerful, and when he became a beggar on the streets.

After experiencing countless manifold lives, these countless lives turned into never-ending fragments. All of this revolved within his mind, setting off a violent storm within the world of his spiritual sea. Zhang Fengxian fiercely trembled, and his spirit was shattered into shards. His eyes dilated as if he had lost all reasoning. He had already become an idiot.

But, Lin Ming didn’t stop. He continued to display the Samsara martial intent until Zhang Fengxian’s spiritual sea could no longer be broken down any further; there wasn’t even a hint of a complete thought left in his mind.

Poh!

Zhang Fengxian fell to the ground, his eyes wide as he stared at the sky. The corners of his eyes were bleeding, and he no longer had any pupils; all that was left over were the whites.

Lin Ming’s eyes returned to normal. “If I said that I won’t kill you, then I won’t kill you. I will let you keep your life. You can lie peacefully in bed for the rest of your days.”

He turned to look at Ouyang Dihua. Lin Ming flexed his finger and the Coiling Dragon steel needle jumped onto his fingertips. “Do you have any last words?”

Ouyang Dihua didn’t hear him. He lay down on the ground, motionless.

“Then die.”

The Coiling Dragon steel needle flew forth and penetrated Ouyang Dihua’s body. Soon, there was nothing left of him but ashes.

Lin Ming waved his hand and a cool breeze blew away all the ashes. He carefully absorbed the remaining power of thunder in the air, and put away the two spatial rings and the Dreamland Pearl.

After the Dreamland Pearl was put away, the illusionary world was still able to maintain itself for a bit. This gave Lin Ming enough time to leave.

Large snowflakes fluttered in the winter sky. Lin Ming had already reached the realm of returning to his true self, so he was able to restrain all of the breath within his body. Only a Xiantian realm master would be able to discover his existence.

He easily left the Allied Trade Association’s Headquarters without raising a single alarm.

“Middle Houtian realm, Seven Profound Martial House Deputy House Master Bi Luo....” Lin Ming sneered. In his heart he had already judged Bi Luo.

His sentence was death.

Chapter 222 – The Spreading News of Death

Chapter 222 – The Spreading News of Death

…

…

…

The snow was falling faster and harder; the bodyguards on watch weren't on high alert.

The temperature was 20 degrees below zero. But this wasn't anything to a Pulse Condensation period martial artist. As long as they revolved their true essence, they could easily dispel the frosty cold. However, the maids were the ones who suffered. They had no cultivation, so after standing in the biting cold wind and snow for a long time, they soon began to tremble.

Even though they were almost frozen, the Allied Trade Association had very strict rules. They could not even rub their hands or stomp their feet for warmth.

At this moment, there were several maids carrying grapes and other sweet snacks as they walked. Their small faces almost iced over, and the plates they carried were covered with snow.

A guard checked the fruit and snacks before nodding and indicating that they could pass and deliver the trays. But, as soon as he waved them past, he suddenly stiffened. He looked with unbelieving eyes at the waterside pavilion not too far away.

The pavilion was empty!

"This… my Lord!?"

“Mm?” Guard Two and Guard Three also looked over, stunned.

“What’s going on!?”

The four bodyguards panicked and used their movement techniques to enter the pavilion. They saw that Ouyang Dihua had already vanished, while Zhang Fengxian was lying prone on the ground, his condition unknown.

The four bodyguards’ hearts were suddenly filled with an inexplicable chill. They had been standing guard here, so how had this happened?

“Mister Ouyang? Has he been kidnapped, or… ”

As Guard One said these words, he trailed off, not wanting to continue. The other three suddenly felt their hearts go cold and sink into their stomach. If Ouyang Dihua died, they would face severe punishment from the Seven Profound Valleys!

Guard One put his hand over Zhang Fengxian’s mouth to see if he was still breathing, and found that he was. As soon as he opened his eyelids to check, Guard One suddenly gasped. His pupils had vanished, leaving nothing but the whites of his eyes!

“Hurry… hurry and report this to the Martial House. Use the long distance information transmission array to inform the Total Faction that Mister Ouyang is in trouble!”

The truth was, the moment that Ouyang Dihua had died, the Seven Profound Valleys had already been informed. Ouyang Dihua was an important figure, so he had a Life Jade Plate.

As soon as he died, no matter how far away he was, the Life Jade Plate would shatter.

The deacon disciple that was guarding the Life Jade Plate Chamber suddenly heard a cracking sound. Stunned, he looked at the sign of the Jade Tablet, and immediately lit a sound transmitting talisman.

At this moment, in a cave dwelling at the Seven Profound Valley’s back mountains, a middle-aged man dressed in black was sitting down cross-legged in meditation. His long, thick black and white hair draped down to his waist, and his face was as apathetic as a rock carving. He was circling his true essence to cultivate his martial arts. The faint sound of a weeping ghost spread out from his body, and a chilling energy spread through his body. A layer of ice formed on the ground around him.

This man was Ouyang Dihua's uncle, Ouyang Boyan. He was an Elder of the Seven Profound Valley's Acacia Faction and he was an early Xiantian realm master.

Fu!

A burning flame appeared in front of Ouyang Boyan, and the voice of the Jade Plate Chamber deacon sounded into Ouyang Boyan's mind.

"What!?" Ouyang Boyan's eyes flew open, a dangerous coldness flashed through them. "Who killed my nephew!?"

In the next moment, Ouyang Boyan was like a ghost as he rushed out of the cave dwelling, and suddenly arrived at the Jade Plate room. The Jade Plate Chamber deacon was already waiting, his hands holding up a tray with Ouyang Dihua's Life Jade Plate. There was a sharp crack in the Jade Plate, it proved that Ouyang Dihua had already died.

"Since they dare to kill my nephew, no matter who it is, I will make them beg for death! Their entire family will pay with their lives as well!"

Ouyang Boyan's eyes were overflowing with killing intent. 20 Years ago, Ouyang Boyan hadn't broken through to the Xiantian realm yet. He was on a mission with Ouyang Dihua's father when the two of them were ambushed and chased down. The two of them had fought with their lives on the line. Ouyang Dihua's father had died, but the enemy had suffered a big loss because of him. This was the only reason that Ouyang Boyan was lucky enough to preserve his own life. Therefore, he had always regarded Ouyang Dihua as his own son, and tried to meet all of his needs the best he could. Sometimes, because of his own lasciviousness, Ouyang Dihua would offend a powerful figure in the mortal world. When this happened, Ouyang Boyan would help his nephew resolve the incident.

The Seven Profound Valleys was not a monolithic sect. The seven different factions each managed their own matters. Their cultivation methods were all different, and as a result, their corresponding personalities were also different. As the saying went, those who walk different paths have to go their separate ways. There wasn't much of a relationship between the seven Great Elders, and not even the Seven Profound Valley's Valley Master could solve this.

Although the Acacia Faction was a subordinate of the Seven Profound Valleys, they were not subject to restrictions. As an Elder of the Acacia Faction, Ouyang Boyan had enormous power and influence. He was able to shelter Ouyang Dihua so that he could do whatever he wanted.

Ouyang Boyan had been protecting his nephew like this all along, but now, he had actually died! This aroused Ouyang Boyan's ultimate wrath. When he passed into to netherworld, where would he have the face to see his big brother?

"Ready the Heavenly Wind Eagle, I will depart for Sky Fortune Kingdom immediately!" Ouyang Boyan coldly issued an order, his heart filled with a firm determination. Even if he had to turn the Sky Fortune Kingdom upside down, he would find the murderer that killed his nephew!

………………………

Sky Fortune City, Bai Family —

Sky Fortune City's Bai Family had been court officials for generations. Every generation of the family, they would have someone who passed the Imperial Examination. They could be described as a scholarly family that had been prominent for centuries.

Most of the Bai Family were scribes, they were responsible for keeping and tracking history and literature, reviewing court documents, and handling the affairs of state.

The Head of the current Bai Family generation was Bai Yuanpei. This generation, the Bai Family had reached the peak of its prosperity. Bai Yuanpei had become the number one scholar of his generation, and he has passed the Imperial Exam to be a second-grade official at the age of 45, and he was a vice-minister.

However, in Sky Fortune Kingdom where martial arts was considered the most prestigious path, the glory of being the number one scholar every three years was less than that of being the number one examination candidate from the Seven Profound Martial House's entrance examination that took place twice a year. Even the Prime Minister's position in the government was inferior to that of the ten Great Generals.

Therefore, the Bai Family's status in Sky Fortune City wasn't considered too outstanding.

However, there had actually been an anomaly that occurred in the generation of Bai Yuanpei's grandchildren, that would be Bai Yuanpei's granddaughter, Bai Jingyun. She had actually been born with an amazing superior fourth-grade talent.

Bai Jingyun's father was a mortal with no talent or cultivation in martial arts. As for her mother, she had only been a superior third-grade martial talent. For Bai Jingyun to be born with such a martial talent, it could be considered a precious miracle.

But, when Bai Jingyun was 15, her princess-like life had suddenly ended.

This was because Ouyang Dihua, who had been travelling, had taken a fancy to Bai Jingyun's exquisite beauty and outstanding talent, and he decided to marry her as a concubine.

The Bai Family had refused. However, Ouyang Dihua had directly approached the Emperor, and the Emperor had then passed down an Imperial Decree. This was an ironclad order, how could Bai Yuanpei refuse? Ouyang Dihua's power and influence was greater than the Emperors. Even if it was the Emperor who desired to receive a minister's daughter as an imperial concubine, the minister would not dare to refuse. Ouyang Dihua's uncle was an Elder of the Seven Profound Valleys. If his uncle wished, he could dethrone the current Emperor and install a new one in his stead.

So Bai Yuanpei had no choice to comply. However, Bai Jingyun's father had strongly opposed this. Who knew how many concubines Ouyang Dihua already had? Marrying his daughter to that bastard was simply like shoving her into a fiery pit!

However, no matter how much opposition there was, Bai Yuanpei could not change his decision.

Bai Jingyun's father was only a frail, weak scholar. His body hadn't been healthy to begin with, and he had been bedridden for years. All of stress happened to catch up with him, and he suddenly passed away.

According to the traditions of Sky Fortune Kingdom, once the father dies, their children had to live in a small hut for 100 days, and then mourn for three years to fulfill their filial obligations. Ouyang Dihua had wanted to marry her, but after receiving this news he could not break custom, so the marriage had been dragged out.

Now, the mourning period of three years was soon over, and Ouyang Dihua had actually come to Sky Fortune City as the current Seven profound Envoy. This caused Bai Jingyun to feel an absolute despair take root in her heart.

Before Ouyang Dihua had become Sky Fortune Kingdom's Seven Profound Envoy, the Bai Family had been unable to resist him when he had proposed marriage. Now, with Ouyang Dihua having occupied the position of Seven Profound Envoy, his status was equal to that of an overlord. Bai Yuanpei was only a small vice-minister, the results of any refusal could be imagined.

Bai Jingyun had used adventuring as an excuse to leave, and had already hidden away for more than a month. Now, she had helplessly come back in order to face her unavoidable destiny.

She hadn't gone to the Martial House for several days. Most of the time, she stayed in her room. This morning, after Bai Jingyun had washed herself, someone knocked on her door.

"Jingyun, may I come in?"

It was Bai Yuanpei’s voice.

Bai Jingyun sighed. For the family’s future, her own grandfather had pushed her into this situation. She didn’t hate or despise him, but she didn’t hold much sentiment for him either.

Especially after her father had died, her attitude towards Bai Yuanpei was even colder.

“Come in.” Bai Jingyun calmly said.

“Jingyun, have you had breakfast yet?” Bai Yuanpei said as he walked in. He tried to smile in order to hide his own guilty conscience.

“I don’t have an appetite.”

“You still have to eat a little. I’ll have the kitchen make a little something and send it in for you.”

“There’s no need. I have to rest for a while” Today, Bai Jingyun really did not want to talk to Bai Yuanpei, because she didn’t want to know why Bai Yuanpei came here for.

“Well… ” Bai Yuanpei awkwardly coughed, “I know about the matters concerning your marriage… ”

“You don’t need to say anymore, I already understand.” Bai Jingyun’s voice was desolate and bleak. Marriage was just a nice way of putting it. According to the customs of Sky Fortune Kingdom, a man could have several concubines. Generally speaking, only a proper and legitimate wife could be married, a concubine didn’t have that privilege. Even the Emperor’s imperial concubine was not considered married.

Bai Jingyun knew what the reality of the situation was. It was impossible for her grandfather, who was just a little vice-minister, to rebel against the Seven Profound Envoy.

Bai Yuanpei’s words stuck in his throat. He could only hollowly laugh. “That… after another half a month, the Tenth Prince, his highness the Cloud Prince, has decided to hold a banquet at his palace. Mm… this is the invitation… ”

Bai Yuanpei bitterly shook his head as he pulled a gilded invitation card out of his chest pocket.

Bai Jingyun glanced at the card. She could able to guess that at the Cloud Prince's banquet, he would also have invite Ouyang Dihua. The Tenth Prince had already attained the unofficial support of Ouyang Dihua. As for the Crown Prince, because Lin Ming had left without speaking, his reputation and prestige had experienced a large drop. Those forces that were taking a wait-and-see attitude had already turned towards the Tenth Prince.

"I won't go!" Bai Jingyun icily said.

"But, Jingyun... "

"I have already said that I will mourn my father for three years! For three years, I will eat vegetables. For three years, I will wear white. For three years, I will not marry! Before then, I do not want to see Ouyang Dihua! If you force me to, I would rather die!"

Bai Jingyun spoke this with an unwaveringly adamant expression. Bai Yuanpei was shocked, Bai Jingyun was too short-sighted. Not only would he lose his granddaughter, but he would also provoke the anger of Ouyang Dihua.

He quickly said, "Jingyun, calm down. You don't need to go, okay. You don't need to go. I'll just report to his highness the Cloud Prince and..."

As Bai Yuanpei spoke, a sound transmitting talisman suddenly lit up in front of him. He froze like a wooden chicken as he heard the message that was transmitted.

Ouyang Dihua... was actually... dead!?

Chapter 223 – Perpetrated By A Xiantian Master?

Chapter 223 – Perpetrated By A Xiantian Master?

…

…

…

“Ouyang Dihua has died….” Bai Yuanpei mumbled, as if he were unable to believe this himself.

“What!?” Bai Jingyun cried out in surprise. She thought she misunderstood his words.

“Ouyang Dihua was assassinated in the Headquarters of the Allied Trade Association, without even his corpse remaining. The President of the Allied Trade Association, Zhang Fengxian was also turned into an idiot, with his spiritual sea completely demolished. Even a master with a soul searching technique was not able to obtain a single coherent thought from him…..” Bai Yuanpei repeated the words that he had heard from the sound transmitting talisman. Although he was not a martial artist, he still had a very explicit understanding of the strength difference between martial artist’s levels. Ouyang Dihua was a middle Pulse Condensation martial artist, with numerous lifesaving treasures on his body. Even if he met a peak Pulse Condensation martial artist, he would still be able to evenly match up.

But that strong Ouyang Dihua was actually killed within the Headquarters of the Allied Trade Association, where there were countless masters around. What sort of concept was that? Was this act of murder perpetrated by a Xiantian master?

“What about Ouyang Dihua’s bodyguards? Didn’t he have four bodyguards who were always nearby?” Bai Jingyun asked with disbelief.

Bai Yuanpei ruefully smiled and said, “His four bodyguards were only a mere 200 feet away; they hadn’t even noticed when Ouyang Dihua had died. Not only that, but there was also a Houtian master sitting guard at the Allied Trade Association. Yet this murderer was able to enter without arousing anyone’s notice and left without leaving a shred of evidence; not even the Houtian master had noticed anything odd.”

Bai Jingyun was stunned; this was no trivial matter. She was completely frozen still.

There was actually someone who was able to creep under the notice of four master bodyguards and silently kill Ouyang Dihua while also evading the notice of a Houtian master’s perception. What sort of cultivation would it take to do this? What sort of existence had that Ouyang Dihua managed to offend?

Bai Yuanpei said, “This murderer is simply too powerful. The chances are high that it was a Xiantian master; maybe a personal enemy of Ouyang Boyan, who came to take their revenge out on Ouyang Dihua….a conflict of this level has no relation with people like us.”

No relation? How can there be no relation?

The relation was huge!

Bai Jingyun had been surprised, but now she suddenly sneered, “What a great death! He deserved to die early.”

Bai Yuanpei was frightened out of his wits. He quickly made a silencing gesture. “Jingyun, don’t say words like that so rashly. Today, the entire Sky Fortune City will fall into total martial law in order to find the murderer. Ouyang Dihua’s uncle Ouyang Boyan will also arrive from the Seven Profound Valleys within a few days. For this period of time, do not leave home, otherwise you might stir up some trouble.”

“I know that,” Bai Jingyun said.

After seeing Bai Yuanpei out, Bai Jingyun slumped onto the bed. She was in a hazy daze, as if entering a waking dream.

She was free! With the wedding date approaching, Ouyang Dihua had actually died!

She had long cursed Ouyang Dihua, hoping for someone to kill him in revenge, and that he would brutally suffer to death in the street corners. She didn't ever think that such a day would actually come.

But who was the one that killed him?

A surge of emotions flooded into Bai Jingyun. She wanted to find this person and personally thank them. This mysterious martial artist probably had no intention of saving her, but to Bai Jingyun, his actions today had forever changed her fate.

In fact, at this moment in Sky Fortune City, it wasn't only Bai Jingyun who was secretly celebrating the news of Ouyang Dihua's death. For instance, the Crown Prince, Yang Lin.

In these two months, the Tenth Prince's influence had leapt by leaps and bounds because of Ouyang Dihua's support. On the other hand, because Lin Ming had suddenly disappeared, Yang Lin's power had precipitously crashed. If this continued, then his status as Crown Prince would become extremely precarious.

Life had its twists and turns. Now, in a dramatic turn of events, such a life-changing accident had occurred.

It could also be said that Ouyang Dihua died just in time!

Yang Lin also wanted to extend his gratitude towards this mysterious person.

………………………………

Because of Ouyang Dihua's death, all the major forces were in a frenzy as they tried to navigate through this turbulent event. Meanwhile, Lin Ming was hiding away in a cave several hundred miles away from Sky Fortune City.

He had two spatial rings in his hands, and also the high-grade human-step treasure weapon and high-grade human-step flexible armor he had taken from Ouyang Dihua's corpse.

Whether it was Ouyang Dihua or Zhang Fengxian, both of them were rich people that simply oozed wealth and gold. Their treasure troves, naturally, were similar.

Lin Ming first took up Zhang Fengxian's spatial ring. He sank his soul force in, and was immediately secretly flabbergasted by what he found within. 'The Allied Trade Association is really impressive. This is the first time that I've seen a high-grade human-step spatial ring. Just the material to make a spatial ring like this takes several hundred thousand gold teals, and it can only be made by at least a Xiantian realm master. Including the cost of labor and the cost of failed attempts, this spatial ring must be at least worth one million gold taels! Not only that, but it's not something that can simply be bought with money; one can't simply hire a Xiantian realm master whenever they want to.'

Lin Ming took the items out of the spatial ring. There were three large chests, a bunch of antiques and paintings, and also some clothes.

After casually glancing at the clothes, Lin Ming determined that they weren't valuable and burnt them to ash. After that, he sifted through the three chests. The lumber used to make these chests was high-grade soul wood. This wood was sturdy like iron, and exuded a faint fragrance. Pound for pound, it was worth even more than gold.

After he opened up the first chest, with a twinkling sound, the air was filled with a bright radiance. This chest was packed to the brim with priceless jewelry.

Even though Lin Ming was used to seeing grand scenes, he still exclaimed in marvel at seeing such a large chest of jewelry that glittered under the sun.

These treasures were valuable even amongst precious jewelry. There were gorgeously thick blood jade, shining emerald stones that drew eyes, exquisite sapphires, and all sorts of other rare and precious jewels. The smallest gems were the size of an egg, and the pearls were top-quality black pearls only found tens of thousands of feet under the sea!

Even though Lin Ming wasn’t very familiar with jewels and treasures, he was still able to approximate the value of this chest of jewelry. In this chest, any random jewel was at least several tens of thousands of gold taels. This entire chest was probably worth tens of millions of gold!

‘In these treasures there are also antiques and paintings. It seems that they were part of Zhang Fengxian’s collection. To someone like Zhang Fengxian, he would never place anything ordinary in his eye.’

Once people reached a certain status, the more money they had, the more they would collect priceless objects. Zhang Fengxian was not an exception. Many of the treasures here were passed down from the previous generations of the Zhang Family Head. There was not a single article here that was trivial. All the treasures of so many generations had been accumulated in this chest, and now, all of them belonged to Lin Ming.

After he put this chest in the spatial ring, Lin Ming turned to the second chest.

Inside this chest, there was a folded dark-golden article of clothing; it looked somewhat like a robe. On top of the clothes was a large box. Lin Ming opened the box, and found a large pile of gold banknotes inside. A rough count of the banknotes amounted to about 7 or 8 hundred thousand gold taels worth.

There weren’t that many gold banknotes. This was most likely because most of Zhang Fengxian’s assets were deposited in the Allied Trade Association’s banks. The money in this box was only used for emergencies.

Lin Ming put away the gold banknotes and lifted up the dark gold clothing. The piece of clothing was as thin as the wing of a cicada. There didn’t seem to be anything special about it; only that it was a bit cold to the touch.

‘Is this woven from the silk of a Golden Wood Spiritual Silkworm?’

When Lin Ming had drawn up his very first inscription symbol, he had needed to look for Sky Worm Silk. He had specifically entered the Seven Profound Martial House's Zither Department in order to look up information on this material. Because of this, he had a very good understand of all Sky Worms, and clearly knew what a Golden Wood Spiritual Silkworm was.

Sky Worms were already incredibly scarce creatures. In order to obtain just a small bit of Sky Worm Silk, he had to spend a tremendous amount of effort. From this alone, it was evident how valuable they were. However a Golden Wood Spiritual Silkworm was different. Only in a thousand Sky Worms would there be a single Golden Wood Spiritual Silkworm. The silk it released was Golden Wood Spiritual Silkworm Silk; an inch of this silk was worth an inch of gold.

Who knew how much Golden Wood Spiritual Silkworm Silk was used to make this article of clothing. If this were converted into gold, it's value was inestimable.

'This rare clothing may be thin like a cicada's wing, but it is nearly invulnerable and can also weaken true essence attacks to a certain degree! Why would he not wear clothes made of Golden Wood Spiritual Silkworm Silk if he had it, and instead place it in a chest. Was he also wearing one at the time?'

Thinking this, Lin Ming gloomily sighed. It really was a pity. At the time when he had turned Zhang Fengxian into an idiot, he had only taken his spatial ring; he hadn't checked what was inside of the clothes he was wearing.

'This treasured clothing is good, but it's simply too noticeable. I can't wear it, otherwise it will be troublesome once they find out. I'll have to put it away for now.' Lin Ming turned and the clothes were placed into the spatial ring.

Then, he turned to the last chest.

Inside this chest, were a massive amount of true essence stones that were neatly stacked on top of each other. Roughly guessing, there were probably over several thousand.

‘There are several thousand true essence stones, and not only that, but they are all pure, high-quality true essence stones. Maybe these true essence stones were a gift that Zhang Fengxian had prepared for a Seven Profound Valley Elder. A pure true essence stone is worth 1000 gold taels. This chest is probably worth several million gold taels. This is just right. I’ve already used up all the true essence stones that I had from before. These true essence stones should last me another year or two.’

As for the antiques and paintings that remained, Lin Ming didn’t fully understand their worth of artistic significance. He placed them back in the spatial ring. Of these three chests, just a conservative estimate of their total value was 20 million gold taels!

He could keep the true essence stones for his own use. As for the rest, he would look for the right opportunity to sell them in exchange for true essence stones or materials and treasure. This was enough for Lin Ming to spend for a while.

After he had ransacked Zhang Fengxian’s spatial ring, Lin Ming took up Ouyang Dihua’s spatial ring and took out the objects inside one at time. Although Ouyang Dihua wasn’t as wealthy as Zhang Fengxian, what he did have was much more useful for a martial artist.

There were around 20 different bottles of pills, great healing medicines, Bloodstone Milk which could rapidly recover true essence, top-quality Soul Gathering Pellets for cultivation purposes, and so forth.

These pills couldn’t be bought with money. Many of them were only found within large sects; they simply wouldn’t spread to the markets of common men.

In addition to that, there were also three jade slips with cultivation methods recorded within. One of them was even an exceedingly rare high-grade human-step cultivation method.

Finally, there were also true essence stones and several treasures. Compared to the pills and cultivation method jade slips, these weren’t considered much.

The most valuable thing that Ouyang Dihua had left behind was the high-grade human-step flexible armor and the high-grade human-step treasure sword. However, these two items were simply gaudy and easily identified. Lin Ming couldn't use them, nor could he sell them.

After Lin Ming put everything away, he couldn't help but sigh. The quickest way to get rich really was to be a bandit and kill others to take their property. Like this, his total worth had increased tremendously. Of course, this didn't factor in the Dreamland Pearl that was given to him by Mu Qianyu.

He didn't know what the value of the Dreamland Pearl was, but just observing its effect that went against the will of the heavens, Lin Ming knew that it was not an item that could ever be purchased by gold or silver.

"There's still half a month left. I'll cultivate here, and then go back to see Martial House Master Qin. When that time comes, no one will ever suspect that I had anything to do with Ouyang Dihua's death."

Chapter 224 – Lin Ming's Return

Chapter 224 – Lin Ming's Return

…

…

…

Lin Ming's plan proceeded as he thought. After Ouyang Dihua died, Ouyang Boyan arrived, and the entire Sky Fortune City was overturned, every nook and cranny searched. However, everyone already had a preconceived idea that the one who killed Ouyang Dihua was a Xiantian realm master; Lin Ming was never considered as a suspect.

Even Bi Luo, who knew that there was hostility between Lin Ming and Ouyang Dihua, had never suspected him in the least. After all, Bi Luo knew that even if it were himself who had set up countless various illusions, he would never be able to silently kill Ouyang Dihua.

Thus, Ouyang Dihua's death became a lingering mystery. Ouyang Boyan searched day and night, but no matter what he did he wasn't able to find a single clue.

After ten days passed, the Seven Profound Martial House's Total Faction Assembly Tournament had already begun....

…………..

Heavy snow had been falling on and off in Sky Fortune City for more these last ten days. The large fluffy snowflakes were just like tufts of cotton, thickly sprinkling down and layering upon the floor.

The entire city was blanketed in endless white. Every morning, the government laborers would take to the streets and sweep them clear of snow, but the next day, they would have to begin again, perpetually sweeping.

At the Seven Profound Martial House, the Registration Office deacon, Sun Liang, was buckled down as he fixated on reading a novel. Although it was freezing outside, the room was lit brightly with a brass basin fire. Thick cotton curtains hung on the front door, and the windows were pasted with heavy paper. The entire room was comfortable and warm.

Outside was snow and ice, but inside was just like a warm spring evening. This great atmosphere and comfy feeling was the best environment to read in.

But at this moment, the front door suddenly opened, and a cold wind blew inside. Sun Liang's interest was disturbed. He looked up, unhappy, and was immediately shocked by what he saw.

This person who came was Lin Ming!

"Junior-apprentice brother Lin? You came back?" Sun Liang quickly placed down his novel, and greeted him with a smile. Sun Liang knew that everyone had a heart, and liked to be flattered.

"Mm. I just finished my adventuring. It's been almost two months now, so I specifically came to the Registration Office to cancel my record."

"Junior-apprentice brother Lin is too kind, there was no need to be so polite and especially visit; you could have found someone to pass on a message to me. Junior-apprentice brother Lin came back just in time. You may not know, but the Seven Profound Valley's Total Faction Assembly Tournament has already begun. These past days, Martial House Master Qin has already begun to select candidates to participate." As Sun Liang quickly spoke these words, he warmly greeted Lin Ming and graciously poured him a cup of hot tea.

"Mm?" Lin Ming was slightly surprised. As a quasi-core disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House, he naturally knew about the Total Faction Assembly Tournament.

The Seven Profound Valleys set up Seven Profound Martial Houses in the various countries under their control. The first reason was to better control these countries, and the second was to develop talents, and thus increase the overall strength of the Seven Profound Valleys. Every three years, the Total Faction would send out for the most talented Martial House disciples and hold a Martial Meeting.

The Martial Meeting was for all the core disciples of the Martial Houses. Of course, non-core disciples could also participate, as long as they were outstanding talents.

During the Martial Meeting, the core disciples of all the Martial Houses, the talented disciples of the various martial cultivation families, and the geniuses of Seven Profound Valley's Total Faction would gather to test their mettle in combat.

If they achieved good results, not only would those core disciples be rewarded, but the Martial House Master as well.

The Heaven Opening Pill was an absolute treasure for those peak Houtian realm masters who were trying to attack the Xiantian bottleneck. The materials for the Heaven Opening Pill were difficult to find; the Seven Profound Valleys could only refine a batch every 3 years, and they would only end up with 20 or 30 pills.

Qin Ziya, who had amazing talent and had been with the Seven Profound Martial House for so long, had only obtained one Heaven Opening Pill so far. However, after he took the Heaven Opening Pill, he found that his Zither Heart hadn't yet reached an exquisite state, so he had failed to make the Xiantian breakthrough.

These past years, Qin Ziya had been roaming the valleys and undergoing deep introspection. Because of this, his Zither Heart had reached the large success stage. Now, he urgently needed a Heaven Opening Pill in order to attempt to break through the Xiantian realm bottleneck.

But the Heaven Opening Pill was only awarded to the first place winner of the Martial Meeting!

Taking first place was easier said than done. The Seven Profound Valleys ruled over 36 countries. In addition to these 36 countries, there were also ancient martial cultivation families, as well as the gifted geniuses of the Total Factions.

However, even if one could not obtain first place, as long as they achieved a good ranking, they would be able to raise their status and gain face; their merits would also be recorded for posterity. Therefore, all the countries' Martial House Masters would also attend this Martial Meeting, as they all attached a great importance to it.

"I didn't think the Total Faction Assembly Tournament would begin so soon...."

Lin Ming was thinking about this, when Sun Liang suddenly cried out in surprise, "Junior-apprentice brother Lin...you...your cultivation has already reached the peak of Bone Forging?"

As soon as Sun Liang discovered Lin Ming's cultivation, his hands trembled and he nearly dropped his teacup. He remembered that the last time Lin Ming had walked in here, he was only at the Altering Muscle stage. Now, after coming back so soon, he had unexpectedly already reached the peak of Bone Forging! This cultivation speed was simply too terrifyingly fast!

Originally, Sun Liang wasn't very optimistic about Lin Ming going out for an adventure. In his opinion, the experiences he could gain from going adventuring could not compare to the resources that the Seven Profound Martial House provided. But, he had never imagined that after Lin Ming came back, his cultivation had actually increased by a realm and a half!

"Mm. I broke through by luck." Lin Ming was reluctant to speak more about this issue. He knew that in front of Qin Ziya, he would not be able to conceal his cultivation. Also, it was best not to reveal the fact that he had reached the realm of returning to his origin, otherwise he would find it difficult to explain.

Lucky? How come I don't have this kind of luck?"

Sun Liang listened to Lin Ming casually toss out an answer, and he had a sudden urge to strangle him. From Altering Muscle to Bone Forging, he had passed a realm and half in less than two months. This luck was really abnormal; it really made one irritated.

"That's right, when the Seven Profound Decree was handed down, didn't it state that as long as Junior-apprentice Brother Lin reached the peak of Altering Muscle before 16 years of age, then you will be able to become a core disciple? Won't Junior-apprentice Brother Lin already be regarded as a core disciple right now? Sun Liang remembered the uproar that the Seven Profound Decree had caused, and his two eyes began to shine.

"Mm. I should be."

Sun Liang froze for a moment, not knowing how to respond. Although he knew that it was only a matter of time before Lin Ming became a core disciple, he had actually done so today. To Sun Liang, it felt a bit like being in a dream. Lin Ming was so young and he already achieved such incredible results. Before, he thought it was a bit of an exaggeration when others said Lin Ming would become a Seven Profound Envoy. But now it seemed that this was more than likely!

If he broke through to the Xiantian realm, then he would become a Seven Profound Valley Elder.

Sun Liang took a deep breath. He didn't dare to imagine any further. His respect towards Lin Ming only increased, and he handed Lin Ming a teacup with both hands stretched. "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin's cultivation speed is beyond amazing. Maybe this time in the Total Faction Martial Meeting, you will be able to enter the top 50."

Sun Liang wasn't underestimating Lin Ming when he mentioned the top 50. The truth was, most of the disciples that participated in the Total Faction Martial Meeting were in their late teens or even 20 years old. Their cultivation levels were almost all at the Pulse

Condensation period or above. For the 15 year old Lin Ming, this was just too great a deficit. Facing against martial artists like them, he really suffered a loss.

Moreover, there were simply too many disciples participating in the Total Faction Martial Meeting. The Seven Profound Valleys ruled over 36 countries, and there were also over a dozen ancient martial cultivation families, as well as the most gifted disciples of the Total Factions. Altogether, there were around 5 or 6 hundred people. To stand out within such a crowd of genius talents was not easy.

Lin Ming smiled, not denying anything. He took a sip of hot tea and asked, “You said that Martial House Master Qin had begun selecting people, who has he chosen so far?”

Sun Liang said, “Two days ago, Martial House Master Qin and Martial House Master Sun had already convened all the core disciples together to battle in a great qualifying competition. The competition is already more than halfway over, and three people have qualified to enter the Martial Meeting. The last two candidate spots will be decided after the competition’s results are concluded.

“Oh? Which three people were selected?”

“The three disciples that have been chosen are Qin Xingxuan, Zhou Yu, and Liang Long. The other remaining undecideds are Ling Sen, Ta Ku, Zhao Jifeng, and Jiang Bin.”

“Mm? Ling Sen hasn’t been selected in the first group of people?” Lin Ming was somewhat surprised. Although Ling Sen wasn’t a core disciple, his strength had already reached that of Pulse Condensation period martial artists. Even Qin Xingxuan wasn’t necessarily Ling Sen’s match, so how come he wasn’t chosen?

Sun Liang said, “Martial House Master Qin first chose from the five core disciples, and then he began to consider Ling Sen, and Ta Ku.”

So that’s how it was. Lin Ming finally understood. The Seven Profound Valleys Total Faction Assembly Tournament was focused on the core disciples. Normally non-core disciples wouldn't be allowed to participate. However, these five core disciples probably weren't up to Qin Ziya's standards, so he had pulled in Ling Sen and Ta Ku.

Sun Liang proceeded to say, "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, since you've come back you should hurry and see Martial House Mater Qin. He's currently at the Martial House's Profound Martial Palace."

……………………

To the Seven Profound Martial House Masters of every country, the Total Faction Martial Meeting that occurred every three years was a very important event. Qin Ziya also took this tournament in complete earnest. He had lent Lin Ming his assistance and helped him so much because he hoped that Lin Ming would be able to shine at the Total Faction Martial Meeting. Of course, now, he didn't hold much hope this time. After all, Lin Ming was too young, and his cultivation was only at the Altering Muscle stage. No matter how great his talent, it was impossible for him to match against those Pulse Condensation period talents that seemed blessed by the will of the heavens.

The age limit for martial artists to participate in the Total Faction Martial Meeting was 22 years old. Since Lin Ming could participate in two more tournaments, Qin Ziya believed that, with Lin Ming's talent, he would definitely be able to shine in all his radiant glory at the latter Martial Meetings.

But, before Qin Ziya had the time to carry out his plan, Lin Ming had gone missing.

Qin Ziya suspected the one behind this was Ouyang Dihua, but he had no proof to back his suspicions. However, he had never imagined that Ouyang Dihua would perish half a month ago. Not only did he meet his maker, he had also been killed in a very strange manner; he had actually died within the Headquarters of the Allied Trade association, and the several bodyguards close to him hadn't even noticed anything strange.

As soon as Ouyang Dihua passed away, Ouyang Boyan had rushed to Sky Fortune City. Now, the whole Sky Fortune City was a complete mess; there was chaos and disorder everywhere, and Qin Ziya was constantly miserable.

At this critical junction, the Total Faction Assembly Tournament was about to begin. Because Sky Fortune Kingdom was a second-grade country, they were able to send out five participants.

The Seven Profound Martial House had altogether 5 core disciples.

However, Qin Ziya was unsatisfied and discontent with the strength of these 5 core disciples. Of those five, only Qin Xingxuan had shown some promise. But, her age was simply too young. He feared that she wouldn't even reach the top 200.

Therefore, his only option had been to also let Ling Sen and Ta Ku participate. The truth was Qin Ziya did not wish to do this, because if he did, the other countries would laugh at his Sky Fortune Kingdom's Seven Profound Martial House and say that they didn't have anyone decent. They would ridicule the fact that outer disciples had been chosen to participate in the Total Faction Martial Meeting and claim that they did so only to fill in numbers.

Although Qin Ziya had an easy going temperament and was usually indifferent, that didn't mean that he didn't care about anything. Since he became the Martial House Master, he also shouldered the burden of being a Martial House Master. He didn't wish to see his Martial House being looked down upon by others.

Chapter 225 – Start of the Qualifiers

Chapter 225 – Start of the Qualifiers

…

…

…

Qin Ziya sighed, “This time we really are short on personnel. The last time, Mu Yin was able to enter the top 100, but now he has already passed 22 years of age, and was accepted into the Total Faction. Qin Xingxuan is still too young; she won’t achieve good results. From here on we can only rely on Ling Sen to fill the gap….”

“Mm. What a pity. If Lin Ming were here, then his current strength might have even surpassed Ta Ku.” The man who spoke to Qin Ziya wore blue-clothes, his white-hair tied up in a bun. He looked like a priest, and he was one of the two Deputy House Masters of the Seven Profound Martial House, Sun Youdao.

Sun Youdao was 45 years old when he stepped into the Houtian realm. Presently, he had already been stuck at the Houtian realm for 70 years. Although his cultivation had reached the peak of Houtian realm, Sun Youdao knew that with his talent, there was no way the Total Faction would bestow upon him a Heaven Opening Pill. In any case, the truth was that giving a Heaven Opening Pill to him would simply be a waste. A Heaven Opening Pill wouldn’t even be enough for him to reach the Xiantian realm.

Because he had already accepted the reality of his life, Sun Youdao had always maintained an upbeat and good mentality of things. He was proper, safe, and after becoming Deputy House Master, never engaged in any needless battles. He also maintained a good relationship with Qin Ziya.

Qin Ziya nodded and said, “It’s likely, but unfortunately, Lin Ming is still missing at this time.”

“If he had really gone out adventuring, then I fear that....” Sun Youdao trailed off. He wasn’t really convinced that Lin Ming had gone out adventuring; it simply made no sense. Not to mention all the enemies that he had managed to make, but even if he had no enemies, the experience of being out adventuring in the world wasn’t necessarily that much better than being in the Seven Profound Martial House, where he could have unlimited use of the seven major killing arrays.

Qin Ziya remained silent.

Sun Youdao sighed and said, “Lin Ming was indeed a good seed. If he had continued to grow, then even though he might not achieve outstanding results at this Total Faction Martial Meeting, he definitely would have been able to get good results. He might not be able to reach the top ten, but he could still have his hopeful aspirations!”

Sun Youdao had just finished speaking, when a sound transmitting talisman burst into flames in the room. Qin Ziya heard the message in the sound transmitting talisman, and instantly shot up.

“What’s going on?” Sun Youdao rarely saw Qin Ziya lose his composure.

“The Martial House Registration Office just sent some news; Lin Ming has come back.”

“Mm?” Sun Youdao was shocked. “This boy, did he really go out adventuring?”

Sun Youdao had just voiced this out when Lin Ming called out from outside the Profound Martial Palace: “Disciple Lin Ming seeks an audience with Martial House Master Qin.”

“Come in!”

The doors of the palace were shoved open, and Lin Ming walked forward, bowing. “Martial House Master Qin, Martial House Master Sun.”

This was the blue-clothed old man that Lin Ming had met several months ago; he was the one that had given him the Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

Qin Ziya began giving Lin Ming a once over, examining him from head to toe. His facial expression even changed a few times, eyes widening and blinking, mouth closing and opening. Qin Ziya was usually calm, but this time he was stunned out of his indifferent and tranquil appearance. “Lin Ming, you reached the peak Bone Forging stage!?”

“Yes, a few days ago I encountered a lucky opportunity and made a breakthrough.

Lin Ming said this lightly, but Qin Ziya’s heart was surging with marvel and wonder. When a martial artist found a fortuitous encounter, it was usually followed by danger. The greater the opportunity, the greater the danger. Just what had Lin Ming experienced in his two months outside? Every martial artist had their own secrets, so Qin Ziya didn’t press this issue.

The blue-clothed old man was also stunned, almost to the point of his beard popping up. When Lin Ming was at the Altering Muscle stage, he was able to defeat the Bone Forging stage Zhang Guanyu. Now he was at the Bone Forging stage, a truly terrifying state! He might even reach the top 50 of the Total Faction Assembly Tournament, or if he did well, even the top 30!

Qin Ziya asked, “Lin Ming, did you really go out adventuring these past two months?”

Lin Ming nodded. Naturally, he did not mention the issue of Ouyang Dihua.

Qin Ziya hesitated, and didn’t ask again. He always thought that something seemed off about this. Lin Ming had suddenly gone out adventuring, and then there was the death of Ouyang Dihua....if Lin Ming’s cultivation weren’t so low where it would be impossible to kill Ouyang Dihua, then Qin Ziya might even suspect that he was related to the incident.

“I may have over thought some things.” Since Lin Ming had answered, Qin Ziya didn’t question him any further. What he wanted to know now was the extent of Lin Ming’s strength.

“Lin Ming, according to the Seven Profound Decree, you are now officially a core disciple of my Seven Profound Martial House. Do you know about this Total Faction Martial Meeting?”

Lin Ming nodded in affirmation, “This disciple knows.”

“Good. For this Total Faction Martial Meeting, we are actually short of two people. We originally decided to select from Ling Sen, Ta Ku, Zhao Jifeng, and Jiang Bin. Now, with you, that makes five people from which we can choose two! You rest well tonight. Tomorrow in the morning, the qualifying martial arts contest will begin. This is a good time for you to duel with Ling Sen and Ta Ku, we’ll have you match against those two. If you win, then the Blue Miracle Pill and Body Spiritual Ichor that was promised previously will also be given to you. Incidentally, Ling Sen had also broken through to the Bone Forging stage half a month ago; you should come prepared.”

Although he knew that Lin Ming would definitely take one of the two spots, Qin Ziya still wanted him to participate in the matches. The first reason was to convince the public, and the second reason was because he wanted to know just how strong Lin Ming had become.

“Oh, I know.” Lin Ming knew that this was no accident. Ling Sen had already paused at the peak Altering Muscle stage for a very long time; it was about time that he made a breakthrough.

Lin Ming was looking forward to this match against Ling Sen. Originally Ling Sen was the goal which Lin Ming had been whole-heartedly pursuing with all his passion. But now, that was all in the past.

…………………………

When news of Lin Ming’s return spread, it was as if it had grown wings, steadily spreading throughout the entire Sky Fortune City.

Most people didn't have an inkling about anything untoward that happened. They only thought that Lin Ming had really gone out adventuring. There were only a few influential individuals who felt that this was unusual.

Of course, the most shocked one of all had been Bi Luo; Lin Ming was actually still alive!

"This little beast really has the best luck ever!" Bi Luo's face sank. Because his lasting impression so far was that Ouyang Dihua had died in the hands of a Xiantian master, he did not suspect Lin Ming at all.

"Would he know that other than Ouyang Dihua trying to kill him, there was also me?" As Bi Luo thought this, he became very uneasy. Lin Ming's rate of growth was simply too quick. In a few years, he might even be able to threaten him.

Bi Luo had thought of telling Ouyang Boyan of the hostility between Ouyang Dihua and Lin Ming, and how they had tried to murder him, but he feared that Ouyang Boyan would fly into a rage and take out his anger on him. As it was, Bi Luo was placed in a dilemma, as if he were walking on eggshells.

....

The Total Faction Martial Meeting's qualifying contest was a grand occasion that occurred every three years at the Seven Profound Martial House. The qualifying contest was open to some of the public. As long as one was an aristocrat, had status, or was a disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House, then they could come to observe.

When the first round of core disciples had been chosen, because of the cold weather, the audience was younger and smaller than it was in the past. But this time was different. Now, the entire field was packed with people. Out of them, 90% had come because they heard Lin Ming had returned, and wanted to watch the decisive showdown between Lin Ming and Ling Sen.

In Sky Fortune Kingdom, the two most well-known individuals of the younger generation were Ling Sen and Lin Ming. As for Zhou Yu and Liang Long, they were core disciples of the

Martial House, and not many people knew of them. These two originated from the four great martial cultivation families that lived at the edge of Sky Fortune Kingdom. Because they were not people of Sky Fortune Kingdom, most people didn’t care whether they were strong or weak.

Snow was still falling from the sky, but it had greatly lessened from before. The entire Seven Profound Martial House martial stage had been swept clean of snow, and a snow cover was put up to prevent snow from falling around.

Those martial artists with cultivation had no need to fear the cold. But as for those physically weak aristocrats, they wore warm mink silk clothing, drank hot tea on one side and had a burning brazier on the other, so they weren’t feeling the chill either.

Liang Long and Zhou Yu, who had passed the qualifying contest early, were also sitting in the audience as they waited for the start of the matches.

“You think Ling Sen will win or will it be Lin Ming?” Liang Long casually mumbled as he ate pine nuts. In his opinion, the main event of the qualifiers was the showdown between Lin Ming and Ling Sen. As for Zhao Jifeng, Jiang Bin, and Ta Ku, they were a bit less exciting.

Zhou Yu laughed and said, “This is hard to say. When Ling Sen was at the peak of Altering Muscle, he was comparable to a Pulse Condensation period martial artist. As for Lin Ming, when he was at the early Altering Muscle stage, he was able to defeat Zhang Guanyu. Now that both their strengths have increased, this will truly be an absolutely savage and fierce struggle between the two.”

The news of Lin Ming reaching the peak Bone Forging stage hadn’t yet spread. But Zhou Yan had already been informed in advance. Lin Ming was now an official core disciple.

“Jiang Bin and Zhao Jifeng are truly much worse. I’d like to go up on stage and test myself against Lin Ming’s ability.” Liang Long said with a confident grin. He didn’t think his strength was any worse than that of Ling Sen and Lin Ming.

“Mm? The Martial House Master has arrived.” Liang Long put down his pine nuts. At the entrance of the martial stage, a line of people filed in. The one at the front wearing white was Qin Ziya. As the snowflakes fluttered down, none of them touched his body; they simply flew away before getting too close.

Behind Qin Ziya was Martial House Master Sun, and behind him was Lin Ming, Ling Sen, and the rest of the five participants.

Seeing Lin Ming appear, the atmosphere of the entire field began to suddenly boil over. A few months ago, Lin Ming had managed to create miracles over and over again. His accumulated popularity even surpassed that of Qin Xingxuan. To martial artists with commoner backgrounds, his male fans, and his female Linmaniacs, Lin Ming was their absolute idol. He was their rising sun, dazzlingly splendid.

There were many young aristocrat girls who dropped all sense of modesty and bawdily waved at Lin Ming with their handkerchiefs. Due to Lin Ming reappearing after two months of silence, this caused a feeling of intense and infinite anticipation among all the Linmaniacs, like a roiling storm beneath a calm sea.

As the hour approached, more and more people began to arrive on the viewing grounds. Among them was even Bai Jingyun, who had recently left the confines of her home. This had even caused Murong Zi to be surprised. “Big Sister Jingyun, you finally came out! If you stayed in your room any longer then you might start molding.”

Bai Jingyun smiled and said nothing. She inadvertently glanced at the audience, her eyes stopping on Lin Ming for a moment before moving past him.

Bai Jingyun naturally knew of the feud between Ouyang Dihua and Lin Ming. But, common logic and reasoning told her that Ouyang Dihua’s death was committed by a mysterious Xiantian realm master, and had nothing at all to do with Lin Ming. However, she didn’t know why, but somehow she had subconsciously associated Lin Ming with her mysterious Xiantian savior.

“Big Sister Jingyun, who are you looking for?” Murong Zi asked on the side with an impish smile.

“Nothing, I’m just looking around.” Bai Jingyun shook her head and lightly smiled. But, the truth was, her heart wasn’t calm at all.

With a quarter of an hour left until the start of the qualifiers, Crown Prince Yang Lin also appeared. Today, Yang Lin had put on a gown emblazoned with a Kirin. He wore snow boots and straddled a Snow Dragon Horse. He could be described as being in very high-spirits.

When the Crown Prince arrived, there wasn’t an announcement. This was because among those present today, there were many important people; too many to count. There were the heads and elders of large and small aristocratic families, the nobility, marquis, counts, and even two of the Ten Great Generals.

With such a scene, his mere status of a Prince wasn’t as high-profile.

Chapter 226 – Lin Ming VS Jiang Bin

Chapter 226 – Lin Ming VS Jiang Bin

…

…

…

After Yang Lin arrived, he glanced at Lin Ming, nodding at him with a smile before he went to sit down at his own seat. Ever since Ouyang Dihua died, the status of the Crown Price had risen, and all the major powers were much more polite and gracious towards Yang Lin.

Following closely behind the Crown Prince was the State Marshal, Qin Xiao. As soon as Qin Xiao appeared, everyone that was present from the military stood up and saluted. Even the two Great Generals rushed over to greet him. These past years, Qin Xiao's fame had been unparalleled within the hearts of the people. The citizens of Sky Fortune Kingdom may not know the name of the Emperor, but everyone recognized the name of Qin Xiao.

Flanking behind Qin Xiao was Qin Xingxuan and Muyi. As Qin Xingxuan appeared, she instantly attracted the wandering lustful gaze of every single aristocratic junior. Although these juniors clearly knew that they would never reach the level of Qin Xingxuan, they inevitably sent out peeking glances.

Lin Ming smiled at her from afar, politely greeting her. Just half a year ago, Qin Xiao had been an unattainable existence that was far beyond his reach. Even just seeing the carriage of the Marshal Quarters had filled his heart with a naïve sense of awe. But now, after coming to know Mu Qianyu, Lin Ming was somewhat indifferent after seeing Qin Xiao again. In the minds of Sky Fortune Kingdom's citizens, Qin Xiao was a living god. But outside of Sky Fortune Kingdom, he was only considered an ordinary Houtian realm martial artist.

In the eyes of existences like Mu Qianyu and those like her, someone like Qin Xiao was a completely negligible character.

At this time, the Elder who chaired the qualifying contest stood up after seeing the time. He said, “We shall begin drawing the lots.”

The qualifying contest was conducted via double-elimination. Of the five disciples, one would draw a bye, and the other four would pair up in duels. The defeated would enter the loser’s bracket, and the winner would continue onwards.

The defeated could still carry on in the contest. However, once they lost again they would be disqualified.

Finally, the victor of the winners bracket and the losers bracket would be the ones to participate in the Total Faction Martial Meeting.

Lin Ming placed his hand in the drawing box and fished out a jade tablet. On the jade tablet was written ‘first’. The deacon responsible for registering the competition numbers wrote Lin Ming’s number on the notice board.

Finally, everyone had drawn their lots.

The first round would be Lin Ming VS Jiang Bin, and the second round would be Ling Sen VS Zhao Jifeng. Ta Ku had drawn a bye.

After the schedule had been posted on the notice board, the enthusiasm of the audience reached a feverish pitch. Lin Ming was fighting in the first round; this was what they had all been waiting for!

In a distant corner of the martial stage, Jiang Bin was looking at the zealous audience. He coldly laughed.

Zhang Jifeng glanced at Jiang Bin, noticing his expression. He asked with a smile, “Are you dissatisfied?”

“Why don’t you take a look at the audience? Is there even a single one that favors me? I don’t think that any of them even know my name,” Jiang Bin said with a sneer.

Jiang Bin was a fifth-grade martial talent. He was 18 years old and his cultivation had reached the peak of Bone Forging. Hopefully, if everything went as expected, he would breakthrough to the Pulse Condensation period before he was 20 years old. Although he admitted that his cultivation speed was far slower than Lin Ming, in terms of combat strength, he didn’t believe he was any worse.

Who wasn’t a talent here? Lin Ming may have defeated the early Bone Forging Zhang Guanyu when he had merely been at the Altering Muscle stage, but Zhang Guanyu was ultimately a non-core disciple. Just how fierce could he possibly be? Was there even any meaning in defeating someone like that?

As for the so-called miracles that Lin Ming kept creating, in Jiang Bin’s opinion, these were all a joke. If defeating small fries like Zhu Yan and Zhang Cang could be considered creating a miracle, then miracles were too damn cheap!

Zhao Jifeng also sneered, echoing his opinion. “It’s normal for these people not to have heard of us. After all, we aren’t people of Sky Fortune Kingdom; why would the government publicize our achievements? These fools and misinformed losers are waiting for Lin Ming to crush you beneath his boot. You need to show these people just who you are.”

“I may not roll over him, but at least I won’t lose! Both of us are peak Bone Forging martial artists, and our true battle efficiency is higher than normal martial artists at the same level. Why would they think that I will lose so easily? What a joke!”

Jiang Bin came from the Jiang Family, an ancient martial cultivation family that was one of the four great martial families that existed on the edge of Sky Fortune Kingdom. Anyone that came from one of these four great families was born with inherent superiority and a loftily arrogant attitude. Not to mention that Jiang Bin was one of the most outstanding young disciples of the Jiang Family. Young people often were full of spirit and vigor; there was no way that Jiang Bin would willingly be placed underneath someone else.

"Once the competition starts and we go on stage, make sure you eliminate Lin Ming and I will eliminate Ling Sen. Then we'll see what sort of expression these bunch of fools will have."

Lin Ming was waiting on the stage. He was already holding the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, waiting for his opponent to show up.

Jiang Bin billowed with a formidable aura as he walked on stage. He looked at Lin Ming and sneered," Lin Ming, I've heard many things about you. In the Seven Profound Martial House, you are a genius only seen once in a hundred years. But this so-called 'Seven Profound Martial House' only consists of non-core disciples; the four great martial cultivation families that surround Sky Fortune Kingdom are not included! Our four great martial cultivation families have a thousand years of history! We have legacies that you cannot begin to imagine!"

The four great martial cultivation families lived at the frontier of Sky Fortune Kingdom; occupying their own spiritual mountains. Truly, they had an inheritance that stretched back almost a thousand years. In these thousand years, the dynasty of Sky Fortune Kingdom had changed hands, and the ruling family had been overthrown six times. But during all this conflict, these four great martial cultivation families had always existed. No dynasty dared to move against them. If the four great martial cultivation families united, then they would be a monstrous force to be reckoned with.

"Oh? The four families already have a legacy of 1000 years? Lin Ming merrily smiled, then shook his head. A family with just a thousand years of history could be considered as having a deep heritage? That was really a waste of a so-called thousand year history.

Jiang Bin saw Lin Ming's smiling face and knew that he was refuting his claims. He suddenly burned with anger. "Lin Ming, since you look down on my four great martial cultivation families, well then, I will let you experience the ancestral blade of Jiang Family!"

Jiang Bin wasn't sure who was stronger between him and Lin Ming, but after seeing Lin Ming underestimate him, his confidence of winning shot up by several points.

"Just you wait boy, I will make you pay for your rampant arrogance. I will defeat you within 20 moves. I want to see just what sort of expression your adoring audience will have!" As Jiang Bin thought this, the treasure long sword in his hand immediately began to congeal with thick true essence. This was a medium-grade human-step treasure sword, and was also considered at the pinnacle of its rank.

At this moment, the Elder who was acting as referee loudly announced the rules of the contest.

"You may use any treasure; there is no limit to the grade. If you willingly admit defeat or are lying injured on the ground, then you will automatically forfeit! You cannot kill the opposite party, and you cannot intentionally cripple them. The competition starts now!"

The voice had just fallen, but Jiang Bin had already gathered his power and taken a step forward, launching his movement technique to close in on Lin Ming. This was the ancestral movement technique that only the Jiang Family possessed – Traceless River!

Jiang Bin's body flashed and he dissolved into a series of shadows. His movements were simply like the floating clouds and flowing rivers; it was completely natural and filled with grace. The shadows gradually increased, until it was difficult to distinguish just which one Jiang Bin was.

The audience gasped in amazement as they watched this scene. They didn't know who Jiang Bin was, they only knew he was a core disciple of the Martial House. As for his strength, they were unsure. But because they blindly worshipped Lin Ming with raging fanaticism, they only regarded Jiang Bin as a minor side character, someone for Lin Ming to step on.

But now that they looked at him, they noticed that this Jiang Bin wasn't some common talent of his generation. A layman simply enjoyed the show, but an expert recognized the art. There were many martial artists present, including several generals that had reached the mid or late Pulse Condensation period, that were extremely startled after seeing this movement technique from Jiang Bin. Even though they were closely watching, they still couldn't see where Jiang Bin's real body was!

"Hehe, Jiang Bin is just being a deliberate show off. Of the four great family's movement techniques, the Jiang Family's Traceless River is the most beautiful and exquisite. A normal martial artist would simply have no means to counter this movement technique," Liang Long said in the crowd, as he was sitting down eating a pine nut.

"Lin Ming is not an ordinary martial artist. If Jiang Bin had reached the point where he could advance and retreat like the flowing waters and be untouchable, then he would be able to defeat Lin Ming. But his movement technique is only 50% complete. Victory or defeat is still undecided. However, he should still be able to give Lin Ming some trouble......." Zhou Yu had a good understanding of the Jiang Family's Traceless River, and was able to immediately identify the level of Jiang Bin's movement technique.

Just as many in the audience grew worried of Lin Ming, Jiang Bin drew his sword. But, it was more accurate to say that over a dozen Jiang Bins had drawn their sword.

The many sword rose at the same time, a thick true essence condensing at the sword point, substantialized into a visible sword light that reflected off the tip!

"Mm, true essence manifestation!"

With that, many of the audience gasped in amazement. True essence manifestation was usually only achievable by Pulse Condensation period martial artists, but Jiang Bin was only at the peak of Bone Forging.

"Moon Traversing the River!"

Jiang bin gave a loud shout, the sound coming from all sides, and the numerous swords thrust straight towards Lin Ming. This strike surged with momentum, true essence swelling forth just like a torrential river!

The dense rain of sword light made the audience’s hearts tense up; how could one possibly hide from this?

Moon Traversing the River was one of the top three sword skills of the Jiang Family. Although Jiang Bin had spoken demeaning words towards Lin Ming, he didn’t dare to underestimate his opponent!

“What good swordsmanship. The sword is the river, permeating all, seizing every weakness. When the Jiang Family’s Moon Traversing the River and Traceless River are combined together, it is nearly unstoppable. Just how is Lin Ming.....”

Before Liang Long could finish half his thought, he was already stunned speechless.

He helplessly looked as Lin Ming didn’t even use his Heavy Profound Silver Spear. Instead, Lin Ming only took a sudden step forwards, and punched out with his fist!

Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!

Bang!

The tiles under Lin Ming’s feet shattered under the power of his step. 5000 vibrating true essence filaments erupted outwards, and plunged towards Jiang Bin like a savage Flood Dragon.

If Jiang Bin’s sword was like the torrential river, then Lin Ming’s vibrating true essence was the ferocious dragon that crossed the river!

Poh!

All of Jiang Bin’s shadows were directly demolished, and Jiang Bin’s main body was struck by Lin Ming’s punch. Jiang Bin was sent flying backwards like a broken kite, and he vomited a mouthful of fresh blood. Even his sword was sent flying off in another direction.

Unless a martial artist was severely wounded, they would never abandon their blade. But, no matter how Jiang Bin tried to hold on, he couldn’t keep his grip. A deadly and fierce vibration transmitted down the sword hilt and the resulting shock shattered the web of his palm!

Seeing Jiang Bin fall off the martial stage, the entire audience rose up in an uproar!

Although they believed that Lin Ming would win, they hadn't expected he would triumph in such a complete victory. That fellow Jiang Bin, who had thought that Lin Ming was trash, was actually thrown out by Lin Ming like a bag of trash. Lin Ming hadn't even needed to use the Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

Murong Zi stared on, her eyes unmoving. She mumbled, "It's only been two months, ah, damn your sister, how did this farm animal make so much progress? Do you really want to give this sister a heart attack?"

Chapter 227 – Ling Sen's Strength

Chapter 227 – Ling Sen's Strength

…

…

…

Liang Long shut his mouth, not even cracking the pine nut between his teeth. As he remembered his own haughty words from earlier, he felt his face heat up. He had said that he also wanted to go on stage and test out Lin Ming's ability, but presently, if he had gone on stage, he likely would have followed in Jiang Bin's footsteps. Liang Long was stronger than Jiang Bin, but by how much?

Was this really a peak Bone Forging martial artist? His strength was at least equal to a middle Pulse Condensation period martial artist.

Liang Long gulped. He couldn't help but glance at Zhou Yu next to him. Zhou Yu's face had sunk like a rock in water, and his eyes were gloomy. What he was thinking, no one knew.

Qin Ziya nodded from his seat of honor, unable to conceal his jubilant smile. This Lin Ming, after going out adventuring, his strength had increased by far too much upon his return. If it were two months ago when Lin Ming had only been at the Altering Muscle stage, then there was no way he would have been a match for Jiang Bin.

"Hehe, this kid probably has other cards up his sleeve. I'm really looking forward to what happens next." Sun Youdao stroked his beard, his face full of smiles. To someone of his age and cultivation, it was impossible to make a breakthrough. Thus, he could only pride himself on producing the most excellent and talented of disciples. To Sun Youdao, this was the greatest comfort and gratification he could have.

"Victory to Lin Ming!"

The competition's referee Elder had also been distracted for a moment before he announced the result of this match. As an Elder of the Seven Profound Martial House's Inner Circle, he clearly knew very well how strong Jiang Bin was. Although his cultivation was at the peak of Bone Forging, he could definitely fight evenly with a weak Pulse Condensation period martial artist.

But now he had actually been defeated by Lin Ming with a single move; didn't this mean that Lin Ming could at least instantly kill a weak Pulse Condensation period martial artist? A peak Bone Forging boy that only needed a second to kill a Pulse Condensation period martial artist, what sort of absurd concept was that?

This elder wondered, after Lin Ming reached the Pulse Condensation period, would he also only need a second to kill him?

The referee gave Lin Ming a deep look, and then announced, "Second match, Ling Sen VS Zhao Jifeng!"

The second match was about to start soon. Jiang Bin had entered the loser's bracket, but looking at the state he was in, there was no point in him doing so; it was impossible for him to be one of the top two contestants.

"It's your turn to go on stage," Ta Ku sighed and supportively patted Ling Sen's shoulder, "It looks like there's no hope for me to go to the Total Faction Martial Meeting. I cannot defeat you, and now looking at Lin Ming, I know I cannot catch up to a monster like him. Aiyaa, after I graduate, I'll have to prepare to join the army."

Although Ta Ku shook his head and sighed, he still had a big friendly smile on his face. He wasn't particularly sad or heartbroken about this. After Lin Ming had returned, Ta Ku learned that Lin Ming's cultivation had already reached the peak of Bone Forging. He had a faint suspicion that he wouldn't be Lin Ming's match, but he hadn't thought that the gap between them would be so big.

"Mm. After I graduate I'll join you and also enter the army. It's most suitable for me there." Ling Sen silently withdrew his old heavy sword. He didn't have a spatial ring, so he carried the heavy sword on his back. Using this method, he had continually honed his connection with this sword, until he reached the realm of becoming one with his blade.

"Old friend Ling, if someone here is going to beat Lin Ming, it's going to be you. I think you'll have the best fight," Ta Ku said to Ling Sen as he looked afar, his gaze falling on Lin Ming.

Ling Sen was quiet. If what Lin Ming had displayed just now was his true strength, then Ling Sen could evenly match with him, and even win. But, could this really be the limit of Lin Ming's true strength?

Perhaps he had other unknown cards he hadn't shown.

Simply unfathomable!

This was what Ling Sen felt about Lin Ming.

After Ling Sen walked onto the stage, he immediately attracted the attention of everyone present; this was the Elder Senior-apprentice Brother of the Seven Profound Martial House's Heavenly Abode. He had quietly occupied this position for several years. Regardless of whether it was Zhang Guanyu or Ta Ku, they were far from his match. It was not clear how strong Ling Sen truly was. The rumors only stated that when he had been at the peak of Altering Muscle, his strength had surpassed the early Pulse Condensation period martial artists.

Now that Ling Sen had broken through to the Bone Forging stage, just what heights had his strength reached?

The hearts of everyone present were filled with fiery expectations, including Lin Ming; he was especially curious. Although Ling Sen's cultivation progress was slow, he had worked carefully and made steady and even progress, and finally his efforts had paid off.

Ling Sen's Ashura martial intent didn't assist in his cultivation. But, in terms of practicing a martial artist's combat prowess, it was able to achieve the maximum effect.

In this aspect, the ethereal martial intent was absolutely inferior.

"Ling Sen."

As Ling Sen stood on the martial stage, he silently observed his opponent and reported his name. His voice was filled with an icy and murderous intent; this was the experience he had gained from endless slaughter within his Ashura martial intent.

"Zhao Family, Zhao Jifeng!" Zhao Jifeng's voice was timid. After his friend had been thoroughly ruined by Lin Ming, Zhou Jifeng had lost his emboldened and haughty attitude. He didn't feel that he was able to fully grasp Ling Sen.

"Damn, that Lin Ming is such a freak of nature. There is no way that I'm his match. I cannot lose this round to Ling Sen. If I'm defeated, then I will be forced out of the Total Faction Martial Meeting," Zhao Jifeng thought to himself. His grip around the black saber tightened.

Although he didn't expect to achieve great results at the Total Faction Martial Meeting, the Zhou Family's Zhou Yu and the Liang Family's Liang Long were selected as participants in the Martial Meeting. If he was eliminated, then it would bring shame to his family's name. Later on, he would lose his standing within his family.

With this in mind, Zhao Jifeng gritted his teeth. Let's fight!

The referee stepped onto the stage, and loudly announced, "I will not repeat the rules of the competition. The match begins now!

As the referees voice fell, Zhao Jifeng took a single step forwards and dragged his inky black saber outwards. As the saber curved, a black beam of light followed it, over several tens of feet long. This saber light was crescent-shaped. Looking from a distance, it was as if a large black moon had suddenly descended to earth.

“Falling Moon Cut!”

Zhang Jifeng cried out. He tightly grasped the black saber in both hands, and viciously cut at Ling Sen! This saber light was even able to block the sun; it was as if night had fallen!

Ling Sen’s eyes condensed. He wielded the heavy sword in his hands and struck out. His heavy sword was very slow; it was impossible to overtake Zhao Jifeng’s Falling Moon Cut. But in the moment that the saber and sword crossed each other, an incomprehensible scene took place.

Zhao Jifeng’s body suddenly stopped, as Ling Sen’s sword arrived in front of him

Peng!

An incomparably clear sound reverberated through the air; Zhao Jifeng’s Falling Moon Cut suddenly shattered like a piece of glass, breaking into countless tiny black shards!

Zhao Jifeng’s body shook, and he suddenly plopped downwards like a bag of rice that fell from the air, heavily hitting the floor. He hadn’t been cut by Ling Sen’s sword wind, nor was he wounded. He hadn’t even vomited blood. But in that instant, he had tumbled onto the ground and didn’t rise back up.

Ling Sen retracted the heavy sword, placing it back onto his back, and turned around to walk away. He didn’t even spare Zhao Jifeng a backwards glance.

The entire audience was dumbfounded. Obviously Ling Sen’s sword light hadn’t even touched Zhao Jifeng’s body, so why did Zhao Jifeng suddenly hit the floor?

Liang Long, Zhou Yu, and the others didn’t understand.

Lin Ming furrowed his eyebrows. His soul force was powerful, and his sense of perception was far sharper than a normal man. He had faintly felt something. Ling Sen had released some sort of murderous aura that penetrated into Zhao Jifeng's body, giving him internal injuries!

"Second match, victory to Ling Sen!"

The referee probed Zhao Jifeng's condition with his perception and found that no permanent damage had been done. He ordered several people to carry Zhao Jifeng down.

After the referee announced the result, the audience flew into an uproar. This....this was a victory? It was finished in a single strike, and Zhao Jifeng hadn't even been touched. What was going on?

Listening to the excited chatter of the audience, Liang Long and Zhou Yu's faces were hung with embarrassment. Instead, they were now glad that almost no one knew about them, and didn't know their identity as martial cultivation family core disciples. Otherwise, they would really need to find a hole to crawl into.

Two matches in a row, two of the four great families' juniors had been eliminated. And not only that, but they were all defeated in less than a second!

Lin Ming was freakishly fierce, but why was Ling Sen also so abnormal!?!? Both of Liang Long and Zhou Yu's strengths weren't much stronger than Zhao Jifeng and Jiang Bin. That is to say, Lin Ming and Ling Sen could also instantly defeat them.

....

"This Ling Sen really gave me a pleasant surprise" Qin Ziya remarked as he watched Ling Sen's back as he left. He was secretly startled. He assumed that Ling Sen would not be Lin Ming's match. But now it looked as if the two people would have a good fight!

"It should be because of his spirit of slaughter! Ling Sen has no love or desire in his heart, only endless slaughter. This is the demon of his heart of martial arts. But at the same time, it is also a supreme weapon. His murderous intent can substantialize into an essence that be used in a direct attack. The reason that Zhao Jifeng paused was because he was compelled to do so by Ling Sen's killing aura. This is a strength that can't be easily seen."

Sun Youdao had lived for over 100 years. Although his strength as considered at the peak of his level, he had a very rich range of experiences, and was able to discern Ling Sen's attack methods with just a glance.

Qin Ziya said, "Not only that, but Ling Sen was able to gather and unite all of the murderous aura around him into a condensed form, creating a sort of killing domain. If one's strength is insufficient, it would be impossible to breakthrough this protection! To be able to create this sort of ability, Ling Sen's perception is simply terrifying! No wonder his strength grew so quickly! These past years I hadn't paid much attention to Ling Sen, and now his strength has actually reached this degree!"

"Hehe, this is something to be joyous about. I thought that the match between Lin Ming and Ling Sen would be a one-sided stomp, but this has added greatly to the suspense. Who do you think will win?"

Qin Ziya shook his head, "I don't know. In these matches, both Ling Sen and Lin Ming didn't use their full strength; they are still hiding most of their ability. We can only see whose hidden cards are fiercer. This time when we go to the Total Faction, I will petition for Ling Sen to become a core disciple. It's just too bad. Although Ling Sen is gifted, his martial arts cultivation talent is simply too ordinary. His cultivation speed is too slow….."

Ling Sen was already 21 years old, and was only at the Bone Forging stage. He would probably reached the Pulse Condensation period at 24 or 25, and would be over 30 before he reached the Houtian realm. When he achieved the peak Houtian realm, he would most likely be 40 or 50 years old. At that time, he would have already missed his best time to attack the Xiantian realm bottleneck.

As Ling Sen's match concluded, the qualifying competition entered into the second round.

Lin Ming would soon match up against Ling Sen and Ta Ku. As the audience thought of Ling Sen's overwhelming victory from a moment ago, they all became filled with enthusiastic fervor.

Sky Fortune Kingdom would gain an extreme martial master and the most thrilling about this was that it would be decided in the showdown between Lin Ming and Ling Sen!

This would be a fierce clash between two evenly matched opponents! It really made everyone's blood boil in excitement!

Even the two Great Generals present were hysterical with excitement. To someone like them, who had experienced countless life and death battles and had been through numerous difficulties in life, there was very little that would be able to fill them with so much ardor.

But now, they had once again run into the wistful passion that had driven them when they were young. In this collision between two top talents, who would come out on top?

State Marshall Qin Xiao was also looking at Lin Ming in a new light. The more he saw of him the more he liked him. If it weren't for his granddaughter Qin Xingxuan saying that she wanted to reach the Xiantian realm, and refused to consider anything about marriage, then he would definitely try to snatch Lin Ming to become his granddaughter's husband.

Chapter 228 – Fighting Ta Ku

Chapter 228 – Fighting Ta Ku

…

*Feet measurement is a bit shorter in this world. 7 Feet = 6 Feet. 9 Feet = 7.5 Feet

…

…

…

“The second round of the competition will immediately commence. Do you two need any time to rest?” The referee Elder symbolically asked Lin Ming and Ling Sen. In truth, his opinion was that neither of them had wasted any effort at all; the two of them most likely didn’t need to recuperate.

Sure enough, Ling Sen and Lin Ming simultaneously shook their heads.

“Mm. Then let’s begin the second round.” The referee Elder took out the drawing box again. This time, the drawing box only held two plates. One was to fight, the other was a bye. Ta Ku had already drawn a bye, so this time it was up to Ling Sen and Lin Ming to draw lots.

At this time, Ta Ku spoke up, “There’s no need to draw anything. There’s only three people left, and I can defeat neither of them. But, I still want to have a match against Lin Ming. This has already been scheduled far in advance,” Ta Ku said as he looked at Lin Ming. “How about it Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, let’s have a little match on stage, is that cool with you?” You still have defeat me if you want the Blue Miracle Pill!”

Lin Ming laughed and agreed, “Why not?”

"What great fun, now we're talking! Come on!" Ta Ku said as he jumped up onto the martial stage. He also took out his own eight foot staff. The dark purple elastic iron staff was as thick as an egg, and two golden bands circled the staff. These golden bands were put in place to prevent the opponent's weapon from sliding down the shaft and wounding his fingers.

Lin Ming looked at Ta Ku's weapon and thought for a moment. Then, he pulled out his own Penetrating Rainbow spear from his spatial ring. Ever since he obtained the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, he hadn't used the Penetrating Rainbow spear for a long time. This time he took it out because he didn't want to take advantage of Ta Ku's weapon.

It was just too difficult to find a treasure staff, especially when one needed it to be elastic. For all these years, Ta Ku had been using the dark purple elastic iron staff.

Ta Ku saw that Lin Ming had swapped his weapon and smiled. "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, there is no need for you to change weapons. To tell you the truth, since I came on stage today I didn't plan on competing against you in martial arts."

"Mm?" Lin Ming was startled, "If we're not going to have a martial arts match, then how do you want to settle this contest?"

Ta Ku cheekily grinned, and chuckled, "I want to compare strength!"

His voice was loud and clear; the entire audience could hear the words he said.

Hearing this, Murong Zi didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. If they weren't going to compare martial arts but instead just strength, then it was obvious that Lin Ming would be the one to lose. Ta Ku had inborn divine strength, and the cultivation method he practiced also tempered the body and increased strength.. He was the strongest disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House.

Lin Ming wasn't weak, but how could he compare to Ta Ku? She couldn't help but mutter to Jingyun, "Humph, Ta Ku that big gorilla, he usually looks so honest but who knew he was such a tricky beast. Although Lin Ming is a farm animal, a farm animal's strength is certainly less than a big gorilla.....”

Bai Jingyun smiled at Murong Zi and vexingly said, “Since Ta Ku says that then he has already give up this match. He only wants to have a contest of physical strength with Lin Ming.”

And just like Bai Jingyun had predicted, Ta Ku said, “Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, in terms of total power, I am far from being your match Therefore I will concede in advance.”

“My speed is bad, my striking power is poor, and my cultivation isn't great. However, my physical strength is something that I am decent at. I know that Junior-apprentice Brother Lin also excels in this aspect. When you first entered the Seven profound Martial House, you were considered as having inborn divine strength and your early forms of fighting mostly involved meeting your opponent head-on physically. At that time I was thinking of waiting until your cultivation reached the same as mine, before having an earnest competition of body strength so we could see who the number one in terms of strength at the Seven Profound Martial House is. So how about it?”

As Ta Ku said this, he casually bent the eight foot staff in his hands. The dark purple elastic iron staff, that was as thick as an egg, easily bent like a thin wooden stick, taking any shape that Ta Ku wanted it to.

Lin Ming saw this and burst into laughter. “Good! Then let's compare strength! However, I will not take advantage of you. Our match will be decided by who has the greater strength. The one with the most physical strength will win!”

Ta Ku was stunned, he immediately rejected the idea, “There's no need, I'm also looking forward to your showdown with Ling Sen. If I battle him there won't be any meaning to it, and it would be quite boring. I've lost count of how many times I've been abused by that vicious fellow, I'd rather not have him publically embarrass me under the watch of such a big crowd of people.”

Ta Ku infectiously laughed as he explained. Lin Ming also smiled and challenged, “Even though you say that, do you think I will necessarily lose to you in strength?”

“I didn’t say that you would definitely lose, but....” Ta Ku slyly grinned, revealing a straight row of gleaming white teeth, “There’s a high chance that I’ll win today.”

“Haha, say nothing more, we’ll have a look ourselves!” As Lin Ming said this, he shook the Penetrating Rainbow spear in his hands. The eight foot Penetrating Rainbow spear wobbled back and forth like a fiercely trembling spring.

“Good!” Ta Ku gave a loud shout, and there was a giant ripping sound as all of the clothes covering his upper body was torn apart, flying in all directions. He revealed a massive body glistening with thick and hard muscles, just like granite.

Ta Ku was nine-feet tall, nearly two heads taller than Lin Ming. When he stood in front of someone, he would block the sunlight from reaching them, like a massive iron tower. Normally a good man of Sky Fortune Kingdom was around 7 feet tall. If they were at this height, they could proudly call themselves a 7 foot tall son. But if someone like them stood in front of Ta Ku, they wouldn’t even reach his shoulders.

As Ta Ku exercised his strength, all the muscles of his body began to send out explosive popping sounds. His impressive chest was thicker than a water barrel, and his massive thighs were larger than buckets. The blue veins that wound around his body were just like twisting earthworms. His build and size were simply too exaggerated, making the entire audience called out in alarm as they feasted their eyes. This fellow was simply...a big bear!

“Come!”

Ta Ku stamped his foot, and immediately squatted down in a horse stance. As his foot hit the floor, there was a loud explosion as the tiles underneath him shattered apart.

Lin Ming was unable to restrain a sigh of praise. The tiles of this martial stage had gone through special processing and were extremely durable. But with just a casual step by Ta Ku and only his human body strength, these tiles had been broken into pieces. This really was inborn divine strength!

Lin Ming also slowly stripped off his robe, revealing the well corded and shapely muscles he had been hiding underneath. Compared to Ta Ku's rock like muscles and solidly rugged exterior, Lin Ming's body seemed somewhat tender and supple.

As he had practiced martial arts for four years, Lin Ming had been exposed to countless hours of wind, rain, and exposure to sunlight. As he had also deboned for a long time, Lin Ming's body had been left with countless scars and callouses. However, after absorbing a colossal power of vitality and also having undergone the washing of his muscles and marrows multiple times, his callouses and scars had slowly flaked away over time. Now looking at the present Lin Ming, he seemed just like a wealthy young master that had never worked before.

Lin Ming was almost 16 years old. He had grown up into a tall young man. The child-like tenderness of his face had gradually vanished. Together with his beautifully sculpted muscles, it was very easy to overlook his true age. Although Lin Ming's looks couldn't be considered heavenly jade, he was still a very handsome and outstanding male specimen. As he stripped off his robe, there were some girls present that couldn't help but hysterically scream as they reached out their grasping hands at him.

"What a bunch of sluts!" Murong Zi disdainfully curled her lips. In her opinion, Lin Ming's crazy Linmaniacs were just selling themselves off at a loss, because it was impossible that he would marry any of them. They likely knew that there was no hope in even becoming concubines, so what was the point of being such a bunch of sex-crazed nymphos?

Bai Jingyun smiled but didn't say anything. She also agreed with Murong Zi. It was impossible for Lin Ming to be contained within Sky Fortune Kingdom. One day, he would leave here.

As Lin Ming and Ta Ku faced each other on stage, their body structures were completely beyond compare. This really made many of those present worry; how could Lin Ming beat this big bear fellow in strength?

Lin Ming held the spear in his right hand, his forearm touched the spear shaft, and his elbow pressed down on the base of the spear. He extended Penetrating Rainbow horizontally, and took the Iron Bridge Blocks the River stance.

“Watch out!” Ta Ku fiercely tread both feet on ground. The tiles underneath him shattered apart, and his body was no different from a massive warship as it came rushing forwards.

“Hah!”

Ta Ku gripped the dark purple elastic iron staff in both hands and smashed down at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming dropped down into the horse stance, lifted the Penetrating Rainbow spear above him, meeting this strike of Ta Ku’s head-on!

Bang!

The massive impact caused the tile under Lin Ming’s feet to fracture. The two of them did not use any martial skill or cultivation method; what they used was completely and only physical strength!

Zhi Ga Zhi Ga —

As the staff and spear struck each other, they began to creak as metal bent. The spear shaft and staff shaft had already been bent together like a bow, overwhelmed, on the verge of being broken.

As the two powerful forces collided, the ground underneath the two of them began to produce thin cracks that spread out like a spider's web. The audience was watching with bated breath and fear; was this really the strength of a human?

Lin Ming felt the danger the Penetrating Rainbow spear was in. It wasn't hard to endure this strike, but he knew that if he gushed out with his full strength, he would definitely cause irreparable damage to his Penetrating Rainbow spear. This spear had followed him for such a long time; he couldn't bear to see it damaged like this.

"Let's switch to another way. If we keep this up our weapons won't be able to bear the load." In such a tough fight, Lin Ming was still able to calmly speak. Obviously, he hadn't used his full strength.

"I agree. How do you want to do this?"

"Let's not use weapons. Let's wrestle."

Ta Ku thought for a moment, then growled, "I'm bigger than you are. If we wrestle, you'll be at a disadvantage. We shall use the strength measuring pillar; that's the most direct way!"

"Strength measuring pillar?" Okay!" After Ta Ku mentioned the strength measuring pillar, Lin Ming also wanted to know the limit of his own physical strength. He had forgotten how long it had been since he last used a strength measuring pillar.

This martial arts contest and taken a bizarre turn. Now this match boiled down to competing with a strength measuring pillar. The audience was also waiting with high expectations; they were curious as to what the limit of these two youths' strength was.

"Referee, can you prepare a strength measuring pillar?" Lin Ming asked.

"Yes, of course I can." The Seven Profound Martial House's strength measuring room wasn't too far away. The referee Elder gave a command and two martial artists ran over.

“Hehe, strength measuring pillar? I remember that just last year, this boy Ta Ku was able to achieve an 8000 jin result. At that time, he was only at the early Bone Forging stage. At that time, his cultivation was unstable as he had just started true essence Bone Forging. Now, he has reached the middle Bone Forging stage. Perhaps he might already have achieved the Large Success of true essence Bone Forging. This time he will definitely be able to hit over 9000 jins. 9000 jins….even a peak Pulse Condensation martial artist only has around 8000 jins of physical strength. This boy Lin Ming has really fallen into Ta Ku’s trap this time.” Sun Youdao smiled as he stroked his beard.

It wasn’t easy to increase one’s physical strength. Starting from early Bone Forging to middle Bone Forging, one’s true essence force would enhance several times over, but physical strength wouldn’t grow by that much. Therefore the advantage of inborn divine strength was less obvious the further one cultivated.

Qin Ziya smiled without a word. To Ta Ku, victory or loss was unimportant. All he wanted was to be known as number one in physical strength at the Seven Profound Martial House.

Ta Ku wanted to try his hardest and never give up.

“Lin Ming isn’t weak himself. I’m curious as to how high his level of strength is.”

The strength measuring pillar was quickly moved over, and affixed onto an array formation on stage. The black crystal strength measuring pillar quickly stood in the center of the martial stage, waiting. The light in the crystal pillar could go up 12 feet. Every foot represented 1000 jins.

Ta Ku took to the stage with a wry smile. “Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, I’ll be going first.”

“Alright, you go first.”

Chapter 229 – Over 10,000 Jins of Strength

Chapter 229 – Over 10,000 Jins of Strength

…

…

…

As Ta Ku walked onto the stage, the noise from the crowd finally died down. As Ta Ku stood in front of the crystal measuring pillar, he was grasping his dark purple elastic iron staff. Suddenly, with a loud explosive sound, it was directly inserted into the ground, piercing through the tiled floor.

Ta Ku kneaded his fists, cracking his joints. The cracking sounds were just like mini thunderclaps.

He spread his legs, slowly lowering himself into a horse stance squat. He then took several deep breaths, completely stabilizing his mental and physical condition. He was just like a lion that was biding its time and energy in order to make a single, fatal blow.

The entire audience, including the Great Generals, Liang Long, Zhou Yu, and all else, were watching with bated breath, waiting for Ta Ku to strike.

Creak!

With another explosive sound of joints popping, Ta Ku clenched his right fist. He aimed it flush at his target and he slowly wound it back.

“Hah!”

Ta Ku gave a shout, and his entire body thrust forwards. His right fist was like a meteor as it smashed the pillar. There was only the deafening sound of the crystal pillar being stuck as it trembled, almost as if it were about to explode. The crystal light erupted upwards like a geyser, until it rose even higher than Ta Ku.

Nine feet five inches.

9500 jins!

The entire audience were in uproar. This result exceeded the limits of a Body Transformation stage martial artist! Even a peak Pulse Condensation period martial artist would only have around 8000 jins!

Even Houtian realm martial artists would find it difficult to surpass 9000 jins! This was because the longer a martial artist cultivated, the more and more they would have to rely on their true essence. After all, there was a limit as to how high a human's strength could grow. As one approached that limit, it would become increasingly difficult.

Even Qin Ziya's own physical strength wasn't necessarily stronger than Ta Ku.

Everyone couldn't help but look at Lin Ming. It was true that Lin Ming was famed for his strength, but 9500 jins was simply like a mountain. It was beyond challenging past that!

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, it's your turn." Ta Ku rubbed his fists. He was quite satisfied with his result. Previously, he had done a few trials of his own and the highest score he achieved was 9500 jins.

Lin Ming walked onto the stage, and then, he touched the crystal column. He was testing the strength of the binding array. He felt that it was alright, it should be able to withstand his strength.

Everyone held their breath, waiting for Lin Ming's strike. They all wanted to know just how high he could reach.

Lin Ming relaxed his mind and body. He was just like a bow that was preparing itself to draw. ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ was a Body Transformation cultivation method originally. When one practiced this, their true essence would become thick and mighty and their strength would become formidable. To those that practiced the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’, their body had no limit. After Pulse Condensation was Tempering Marrow, and after Tempering Marrow, one could open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. At that stage, their body could affect the world. Their physical strength alone could shatter mountains and pull down stars.

Of course, Lin Ming was far, far from this realm. But these past months, he had absorbed a massive amount of blood vitality, and in addition, due to the enhancements to his body from the life and death smelting trial, his body’s vitality was similar to a billowing cloud. His body always contained an explosive force that was waiting to erupt at any given moment. If he didn’t vent this power, he wouldn’t feel so great.

With a deep breath, Lin Ming lowered his center of gravity as he squatted down. His spine bent backwards, just like a taut bow that was being pulled backwards. With a roar, Lin Ming suddenly jumped up, his body flushing forwards, his fist like a Flood Dragon that emerged from the sea. With an indomitable momentum, his fist struck its target savagely.

Bang!

Over 10,000 jins of strength erupted. The fist cracked the crystal column underneath it with a tremendous impact. The black crystal column began to rattle violently, and the crystal light instantly shot to 12 feet. This was actually the limit of the strength measuring tablet!

Peng!

The loud sound of breaking glass rang in the air, and the crystal pillar exploded into countless shards. Clouds of true essence stone powder began to fall down like twinkling stars!

In that moment, the entire audience was flabbergasted.

“He destroyed the crystal pillar?”

“The crystal pillar can measure up to 12,000 jins of strength, and yet, it was actually destroyed?”

Qin Ziya was also eminently surprised. He knew that Lin Ming had inborn divine strength, but he didn’t know to what degree his divine strength had reached. Actually, no one knew. If that 12,000 jin crystal column was destroyed, it meant that Lin Ming’s strength was at least above 13,000 jins!

Just relying on the strength of the human body to reach 13,000 jins! Let alone in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, this was rare even in the entire Sky Spill Continent! This was because after a martial artist reaches the Xiantian realm, their physical strength basically no longer increased.

Even an extreme Xiantian master’s strength wouldn’t surpass 10,000 jins.

“Tsk, tsk, tsk. A farm animal is really a farm animal, it simply can’t be judged by others. I have no idea what sort of fodder he was fed while growing up.”

Murong Zi had long since adapted to Lin Ming’s bizarre abilities. She exclaimed in surprise in the past, but soon, she accepted this fact. She was longer surprised by any of the excessive miracles that Lin Ming accomplished. Instead, if one day Lin Ming ceased to continually violate common sense, Murong Zi would be surprised.

However, at this moment, Bai Jingyun, who was sitting next to Murong Zi, was also looking at the center of the martial stage, her eyes were clouded over and she was lost in thought. The truth was that 12,000 or 13,000 jins of strength didn’t have much affect on one’s combat prowess. It only indicated that Lin Ming had a special physique, inborn divine strength, or maybe, he had eaten some sort of valuable material that enhanced strength. But Bai Jingyun had a very special feeling…

She was sure that Lin Ming had many more cards hidden up his sleeve! His strength was absolutely more than what he had revealed so far.

But reasoning told her that even if Lin Ming could instantly kill a peak Pulse Condensation master, it was still impossible for him to kill Ouyang Dihua in the situation he was. But, Lin Ming was an existence that continued to violate all norms and common sense. Who could predict what sorts of miracles he could create?

Ta Ku watched as the true essence stone powder landed on the floor, and he also saw that the crystal strength measuring column had been shattered apart. He let out a sigh, shook his head with a wistful smile, and said, “I admit defeat. I am sincerely convinced! If I reach the peak of Pulse Condensation, the most I will ever be able to achieve is 12,000 jins of strength. I wouldn’t be able to destroy the stone column. Junior-apprentice Brother’s amazing body leaves me speechless. I have nothing else to say!”

The crystal column didn’t have 12,000 jins randomly set as a limit. 12,000 jins could be said to be the limit of a human’s body.

Lin Ming said, “Senior-apprentice Brother Ta Ku, the truth is you don’t need to blindly pursue physical strength. There are many other aspects that you could place your effort in. After all, there is a limit to how high one’s strength can grow.”

To the martial artists of Sky Spill Continent, they did not understand how to open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. Thus, there was no future in only pursuing physical power. Refining and tempering the body was of some use, but after they entered the Houtian realm, a mere 10,000 jins of human strength would become insignificant.

Ta Ku humbly said, “I know this, but strength is my best aspect. In other roles, I’m not so good. First, I will breakthrough to the Pulse Condensation period, and then, I’ll slowly consider my options in the future.”

Ta Ku was 21 years old. He should be able to step into the Pulse Condensation period at around 23 or 24 years of age. At this age, he would have basically lost all value for a large sect to raise him. Even if he gave up joining any sects in favor of enlisting in the military, Ta Ku could still become a brave and wonderful general that slaughtered all his enemies.

Just imagine him on the battlefield. A man riding his horse, with a staff in hand, bringing down enemy generals with his mighty strikes. This kind of image was inspirational, and it would no doubt incite the growth of soldier morale. This was something that a martial artist, who specialized in true essence cultivation, would never be able to achieve.

Although Ta Ku could not enter a sect, he was destined to live a life of wealth, glory, honor, and status. It wouldn't even be a problem for him to become one of the ten Great Generals. He would be at the pinnacle of the mortal world, and countless numbers of soldiers would look up to him in admiration.

It wasn't a bad thing to stay in the mortal world. He could live an easy-going and honored life in comfort, and he would enjoy two centuries of wealth and fame at least. He would be the subject of affection and reverence, and he could have countless wives and concubines.

Conversely, if he pursued the peak of martial arts, he was doomed to tread a road of suffering! He would have to explore his limits and seek fortuitous encounters, fighting with other masters and narrowly escape with his life! He would have to constantly and tediously cultivate, and he would have to live a lonely life. Although wealth and glory would be at his fingertips, to drown in this would only corrupt his martial spirit. To a martial arts master, they could go into seclusion for 10 or 20 years and not be able to enjoy any pleasures during it. This way of living was normal.

If one wanted to stand against their destiny and escape the endless Samsara, they had to experience pain and loneliness. Lin Ming, especially after having met Mu Qianyu, he had strengthened his resolve to pursue the pinnacle of martial arts.

A mushroom didn't know its beginning and end, and a mole didn't know spring or fall. A great figure of the mortal world, even if it were the State Marshal of Sky Fortune Kingdom, Qin Xiao, they would only live a mere 200 years or so. To a martial arts master who stood at the peak, people like Qin Xiao would only be a mole. At most, he would be a mole king.

The Sorcerer of the Southern Wilderness had lived for over 30,000 years, and he had left behind 72 Sorcerer Pagodas that would exist in perpetuity.

But to the common people of Sky Spill Continent, just what was tens of thousands of years? They could only listen to some legendary fables and stories that weren't even listed in the ancient texts. As the saying goes, paper lasts a millennia and silk lasts 800 years. Silk scrolls would decay in 800 years and paper books would decay in 1000. How could there possibly be any ancient texts from tens of thousands of years ago? Even if it is a legend that is passed down to descendants, most of it is probably made up stories.

Lin Ming didn't want to return to dust after a few hundred years. He wanted to free himself from the cycle of Samsara, and see just what the peak of martial arts was. What would it be like?

When Lin Ming walked off the stage, Zhao Jifeng and Jiang Bin watched him. They had already recovered, but seeing Lin Ming, they felt a deep sense of fear. Any thoughts of resisting had already fled their mind.

Although 13,000 jins of strength didn't equate to one's combat prowess, the scene of the shattering crystal stone pillar was simply too visually impacting.

Was he a human? Who had ever seen a crystal stone pillar destroyed like that? They had never even heard of it before.

Seeing Lin Ming approach, the two of them hastily stood up and quickly scurried away. To stand in the same place as an inhuman existence like Lin Ming was simply too stressful.

"Lin Ming, you can rest for the next quarter of an hour and adjust your condition." The referee Elder said.

Lin Ming shook his head, “I haven’t used anything. There’s no need to rest, I can go up now.”

“Rest!” said Ling Sen. He was dressed in a tight black outfit with his trademark heavy sword on his back. “I want to fight you when you are in your peak condition, even if it means I lose!”

Lin Ming smiled and said, “Good! What you say is true. I too have long been looking forward to fighting you, from the first moment I saw you!”

The first time that Lin Ming saw Ling Sen was at the Seven Profound Martial House entrance examination. Ling Sen’s entrance on the stage had left an exceedingly profound impression on Lin Ming. His status as the Elder Senior-apprentice Brother of the Heavenly Abode was simply unshakable.

To the Lin Ming of then, Ling Sen had been an unreachable existence. But at that time, Lin Ming had also steeled his resolve that one day he would stand in an arena with Ling Sen and have an earnest match!

Chapter 230 – Martial Intent Showdown

Chapter 230 – Martial Intent Showdown

…

…

…

"I too have long been awaiting this showdown. Ever since you defeated Zhang Cang, I thought I would have to wait several years, but I never imagined this fated day would arrive so soon!"

The first time Ling Sen had begun to pay attention to Lin Ming was when he saw Lin Ming's duel against Zhang Cang. He had arrived at the scene together with Ta Ku, causing no small stir.

Lin Ming had only entered the Seven Profound Martial House for a trivial month, and yet he was able to defeat the Earth Hall master, Zhang Cang. At that time, Ling Sen had a premonition that he would eventually face Lin Ming one day. To him, this was already a very high evaluation of Lin Ming's skills. But now looking back, it seemed that he had underestimated Lin Ming by far.

For a quarter of an hour, Lin Ming sat down in meditation, adjusting his condition to the peak even though he hadn't consumed any of his strength.

With his thoughts completely relaxed, he entered into the ethereal state, waiting for this anticipated match.

The audience was already fidgeting with expectation. This long-awaited battle was a matchup between the fiercest top two young talents of Sky Fortune Kingdom!

This was a rarely seen once in a lifetime grand event. As far as a martial artist was concerned, what could possibly be more exciting?

Although snow was falling from the sky, the burning enthusiasm of the audience seemed hot enough to melt the winter ice.

“Who will win?”

“Who do you think will win?”

“I wonder who will be the number one martial artist among our Sky Fortune Kingdom’s younger generation?”

……

Almost the entire audience was discussing this issue. They each began to express their own views and opinions of the match. There were even some discerning ‘experts’ that were deducing how the fight would progress, even though the match hadn’t even started. Ling Sen and Lin Ming hadn’t yet fought, but already there were a good number of possible versions and outcomes that had been imagined, each of them narrated with a vivid intensity.

These stories were so vibrant and imaginative that if people didn’t know, they might even think that these spittle splashing martial artists had already seen the outcome of Lin Ming and Ling Sen’s match.

This fight would determine who was at the pinnacle of Sky Fortune Kingdom’s younger generation. But, Ling Sen actually thought that his chances of winning weren’t high. Even if he won, he also wouldn’t take the position of the number one youth talent. He was already 21 years old, while Lin Ming was almost 16. This 5 year age gap between them was an insurmountable divide.

These 5 years were the most important and essential years of a martial artist’s life. Five years later, Lin Ming would definitely become a Houtian master.

But at that time, Ling Sen would have only broken through to the Pulse Condensation period.

A quarter hour passed quickly.

Ling Sen was the first to walk onto the martial stage. His pace was steady, calm, and his entire being exuded a murderous aura. The snow that fell towards him was blown away by this aura; not a single snowflake landed on his body.

Lin Ming took out his Heavy Profound Soft Spear. His spear and Ling Sen's sword were both medium-grade human-step treasures; the weapons were fair and equal.

The two stood 100 feet apart, silently gazing at the other. The surrounding airflow around them was disturbed by their presence, as if an invisible vortex had been summoned. Billowing snow recklessly covered the sky.

"The rules will not be repeated. Match, begin!"

After the referee Elder announced the start of the match, the two of them on stage hadn't even moved. Lin Ming's right hand gripped the Heavy Profound Soft Spear outwards, the spear tip slanted towards the ground. Ling Sen had his heavy sword in both hands, the hilt pressed against his chest.

Although they hadn't moved, the two of them were slowly beginning to gather their momentum.

Ling Sen's murderous aura was formed from his countless beheadings and massacre of the Ashura Devils within his Ashura martial intent. If a weaker martial artist were to directly confront Ling Sen's murderous aura, it would be the same as if an average man were standing stark naked in a frozen world of snow and ice. They would only be able to use half of their strength, and those whose minds weren't as aware, might even be directly struck by dread and forced into defeat without having done anything.

But Lin Ming was the opposite. His imposing and majestic aura was formed by the power of his vitality. The force of his powerful spirit was like a billowing flame that reached the clouds. An ordinary person might not feel anything strange, but if a martial artist that cultivated dark arts of technique involving the usage of evil spirits approached, then they would feel as if they were in a blazing inferno. Any ghosts or demons that drew near would be immediately returned to nothingness.

Ling Sen's icy cold murderous aura and Lin Ming's power of vitality engaged in an airborne battle. One was freezing cold and the other was burning hot. As these two forces met, they would battle. Ice would not coexist with fire!

But eventually, Lin Ming's billowing vitality overcame Ling Sen's Yin chill. Ling Sen could evenly clearly hear his murderous aura being chipped apart by Lin Ming's power of vitality.

'I never thought that someone would be able to suppress my Ashura murderous intent with just the strength of their blood vitality!'

His speed was like a phantom, his body strength was formidable, his true essence was pure and thick, and he also had the support of an overwhelming blood vitality; his endurance was without a doubt terrifying. This Lin Ming was simply versatile in all aspects!

Ling Sen's expression became more dignified. He instantly converged all of his murderous aura, condensing that murderous essence onto the surface of his body in conjunction with his heavy sword. At that moment, he was like an insurmountable existence in the eyes of all present.

Even the two Great Generals in the audience, who had reached the middle and late Pulse Condensation period, were unable to help but wonder if they could win against Ling Sen if they fought.

For a middle Pulse Condensation period martial artist to not be able to defeat an early Bone Forging stage martial artist. that was simply an unimaginable fantasy.

"Meet my sword!"

As the word ‘sword’ was said, the murderous aura that was concentrated on Ling Sen’s body began to flow into the black heavy sword. This five foot long heavy sword began to emit a piercing cry!

Cha!

It was as if space itself was torn asunder. A peerless sword wind shot forwards like a dark rainbow, piercing towards Lin Ming’s chest.

The entire area was swept up by the aftermath of the sword wind; even the tiles cracked and exploded under the pressure. Countless broken stones that were crushed by true essence was thrown into the wind. From afar, Ling Sen’s blade was like a missile that left the ground shattered in its path; it was simply unstoppable.

“Flood Dragon Goes to Sea!”

Lin Ming gave a loud shout and 5000 vibrating true essence filaments erupted outwards. Towards the surging tide of true essence that rolled towards him, the Heavy Profound Soft Spear was like a silver Flood Dragon, thrusting forwards with a grandiose momentum!

Bang!

The powerful impact formed a shockwave that was visible to the naked eye. The loose floor tiles were all sent flying backwards, and all the snow in a radius of a hundred meters was swept clean. The savage true essence continued to flood outwards. Being met with this rush of true essence, even a Flesh Training or Viscera Training martial artist felt as if they were mere leaves in a storm; they could be blown away at any moment!

Fortunately, the important personages in the audience had master bodyguards protecting them. A true essence shield was put up, guarding them from the aftermath of the true essence collision.

Peng peng peng peng peng peng!

After Ling Sen made his first move, he no longer stopped; following up his first strike with a series of attacks. The heavy sword carried an epic majesty as thick true essence congealed into each sword strike. Every strike contained an immense potential, as if a mountain were crashing down!

Lin Ming unhurriedly and calmly revolved the True Primal Chaos Formula to the limit. He steadily blocked each strike, slowly retreating backwards. But no matter how calm his expression was, every time he took a blow the stage behind him would explode, sending everyone watching into alarm!

Lin Ming took a step back after every strike and every time he stepped backwards, the stage tiles would explode into pieces. Then, Ling Sen's sword wind would lift up all these fragments, before throwing them off the stage. In just a few moments of time, the entire stage had become very unseemly.

"This is too terrifying. Just the true essence that is scattered from their strikes already carried such destructive power. If one were to face them head-on in a fight, how could anyone possibly resist?" There were some martial artists, that believed they were strong, watching the battle on stage. As they saw the match unfold, they were gradually filled with abject depression. They had been cultivating for several dozens of years, but yet there was such a big difference between them and the two youths on stage.

"Ling Sen's strength is at least equal to a normal middle Pulse Condensation period martial artist. He might even be able to compete with the late Pulse Condensation period!" After the masters present made some comparisons, they couldn't help but draw this conclusion.

For someone with an early Bone Forging cultivation to cross over an entire realm and surpass someone at the middle Pulse Condensation period was simply incredible.

Bai Jingyun listened to the arguments occurring around her and silently gazed at Lin Ming's figure, her expression complex.

Lin Ming, what cards do you hold in your hands? Just what is the limit of your power?

The battle on stage was becoming increasingly intense. True essence collided in the air causing deafening explosions, as if they were in the middle of a roiling spring thunderstorm.

However, during the fight, Lin Ming's face wasn't flushed; his heartbeat was normal. His blood vitality was vigorous, and his breath was long, he inhaled like a snake and exhaled like bellows. In such a calm state, a single breath was enough to let him fight for an incense stick of time.

But Ling Sen had slightly less stamina.

"Slaughter Aura!"

Ling Sen gave a loud shout, and his Slaughter Domain broke forth. This was a specialized domain attack that he developed using the Ashura martial intent! When he had faced Zhao Jifeng, Ling Sen's sword hadn't even touched his opponent's body. This was because he had used the Slaughter Domain to defeat his enemy!

Huooo!

In that moment, Lin Ming's surroundings instantly changed. The audience vanished, all became quiet, and the stage under his feet disappeared; he arrived in a completely new and strange world.

The world was cast in a dim bleak gray. The sky overhead was coloured in a dull beige tones. Endless rocky outcroppings dotted the world, and behind these rocks were hiding countless Ashura Devils.

Between the giant rocks, there were bottomless pits that seemed to lead into an abyss, exuding a limitless yin cold. Ghosts constantly crawled out from this abyss. Their expressions were ferocious, and they hungrily gazed at Lin Ming with their empty eyes, trembling with greed and desire for human life.

This extremely cold feeling was like a freezing wind that could drill its way into a person's soul. Even though Lin Ming had exuberant blood vitality, in such an environment, he still felt as if he were being pushed down upon.

Ashura?

So this is the Ashura martial intent attack!

A martial intent wasn't only used in cultivation; some could also be used offensively. It all depended on a martial artist's utilization and comprehension, but also the inherent quality of the martial intent.

This Ashura martial intent was a martial intent that cultivated battle!

From this aspect, it was superior to even Lin Ming's ethereal martial intent.

However, Lin Ming didn't only possess the ethereal martial intent.

Lin Ming gave a cold snort, and both of his eyes turned into swirling black vortexes. Two rotating storms appeared. With Lin Ming's eyes as the center, they indiscriminately swept out!

Wu wu wu wu wu!

The countless devils emitted heart piercing screams. However, they were unable to resist the pulling force of the tornado and were swept inside the vortex, shredded into fragments!

The gray rocks they hid behind disintegrated under the power of the vortexes; even space itself began to crack under the immense pressure.

"These are only Ashura Devils formed by a martial intent; how can it be equal the hell found within the life and death smelting trial?"

Lin Ming let loose a resonant roar.

Peng!

With a bang, the dark world collapsed!

The countless illusionary fragments were all swept into the giant swirling black vortex and completely vanished into oblivion.

Lin Ming's Samsara martial intent was comprehended after experiencing the world of 100 Samsaras. In terms of illusion attacks, how could Ling Sen possibly compare!?

Lin Ming appeared back on the familiar martial stage. Across him, Ling Sen gave a stuff cough and kneeled down onto the stage, supporting himself with his heavy sword, his face pale.

The audience was baffled. They only saw Lin Ming pause for a moment, and then Ling Sen fell to his knees as if he had been heavily struck. In this period of time, Lin Ming's spear hadn't even touched Ling Sen.

Just what was going on?

Chapter 231 – Divine Punishment Blade

Chapter 231 – Divine Punishment Blade

…

…

…

When Qin Ziya saw this scene, his expression immediately changed, “Ling Sen’s Slaughter Domain was broken by Lin Ming!”

In the illusion realm, time flowed at a different speed. In the moment when Lin Ming had ceased physical movement, a fierce battle against Ling Sen had already taken place within the Slaughter Domain. The result was obvious; Ling Sen had been defeated, and Lin Ming had emerged victorious.

“How could this happen…..Ling Sen’s Slaughter Domain is dependent upon his Ashura martial intent as well as the murderous aura he had accumulated over the years in order to create his own unique ability. Although this makes it easy to develop a demon in the heart, in terms of striking power, it should be very strong. Ling Sen’s Ashura martial intent is, by itself, savage and brutal; it only helps cultivate one’s attack power. As for Lin Ming’s ethereal martial intent, that relies on placing one’s mind into an empty unconscious state; it is a type of supplementary cultivating martial intent. How could the result be that Ling Sen loses?”

Although Sun Youdao’s cultivation wasn’t too high, he had a deep and broad range of experience. In just a few words he had pointed out the characteristics between Ling Sen and Lin Ming’s martial intent.

Qin Ziya pondered out loud, “I had also thought that his ethereal martial intent could only be used to cultivate. If it could also be used offensively, then I can only say that Lin Ming’s perception is just too terrifying.”

How a martial intent could be used not only depended on one’s studying and understanding of it, but also one’s perception.

“Maybe it’s not an attack, but it was able to stabilize his mind, therefore he was able to shatter Ling Sen’s martial intent dream world. In any case, Lin Ming is truly a genius.”

The two Seven Profound Martial House Master’s only thought was that Lin Ming’s perception was amazingly astonishing, and he had comprehended multiple ways to use the ethereal martial intent. They had never dreamt of the possibility of Lin Ming comprehending a second martial intent.

If they had known, they would be stunned speechless. A martial artist that could comprehend two different kinds of martial intent only existed in ancient legends and fairytales. Let alone Sky Fortune Kingdom, even in the entire 36 Kingdoms ruled by the Seven Profound Valleys, there hadn’t been anyone that had ever realized two different martial intents.

Although Lin Ming had broken Ling Sen’s Slaughter Domain with his Samsara martial intent, he actually felt a bit discontented. There was only one reason that he was able to accomplish this – his Samsara martial intent was of a far higher grade than Ling Sen’s Ashura martial intent.

However, in terms of development and usage, he was far inferior to Ling Sen.

Ling Sen had studied and pondered upon his Ashura martial intent to the limit, digging out all of its latent potential. In reverse, Ling Ming knew very little about his Samsara martial intent except that it was able to cultivate the soul. Also, because he hardly used his soul force, he hadn’t carefully studied his Samsara martial intent.

‘In understanding, I am inferior to Ling Sen.’

Lin Ming sighed with emotion. The truth was, he had forgotten that in just these past six months he had obtained too many abilities that needed to be carefully perceived and studied through meditation over time. There was the Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians, inscription technique, Flow like Silk, Heretical God Force, ethereal martial intent, Golden Roc Shattering the Void, Samsara martial intent, and so many other things that he needed to thoroughly consider. There were so many things on his plate that he found it difficult to balance.

The fact that he could cultivate Flow like Silk to 5000 filaments while also achieving his current results in the Heretical God Force and Golden Rock Shattering the Void, was because he had the assistance of the mighty elder's memories. Although, this also meant that Lin Ming's perception could be considered very good.

But Ling Sen had already obtained the Ashura martial intent long ago, and he had combed over every aspect of it throughout the years. In terms of martial intent comprehension, it naturally wasn't something that Lin Ming could compare with so far.

At this moment, Ling Sen stood up. His complexion recovered from its pale state, and he brandished his heavy sword across his chest. He sighed and said, "Lin Ming, throughout all these years, you are the one martial artist that I admire the most out of the entire younger generation of Sky Fortune Kingdom. I had long been looking forward to this battle against you. Now that my Slaughter Domain has been broken, I'm already half-defeated. Still, I hope that you won't go easy on me; I still want to see just how much strength you have hidden within you."

"Good! Come!"

Against an opponent like Ling Sen, Lin Ming only had heartfelt admiration. This was a true martial artist who single-mindedly pursued the path of martial arts. As for those like Zhang Guanyu and Ouyang Dihua, they only practiced martial arts in order to consolidate their status and position. They would have power, and more time to enjoy wealth, beauties, and authority.

The Heavy Profound Soft Spear crossed out, a purple thunder leapt onto its bright silver spear point!

The winding arcs of thunder twisted around like snakes, crawling up the shaft!

Summoning the power of thunder meant that Lin Ming no longer held back. He would defeat his opponent with everything he had!

This was a martial artist's respect for another.

As Ling Sen gazed upon this scene, his eyes narrowed. This was....control over the power of thunder?

Qin Ziya and Sun Youdao couldn't keep still. Not even Qin Xingxuan, Qin Xiao, Muyi, or Bai Jingyun were unaffected. They all stared wide-eyed, unblinking.

Thunder-attributed martial artist?

Most martial artists had no specific attribute to their true essence. But, there were a few whose true essence was associated with the five elements. For instance, Bai Jingyun's water attribute and Zhu Yan's fire attribute.

Compared to non-attribute true essence, these five element true essences offered many special abilities. However, the tradeoff was that they were limited in the cultivation methods and skills they could learn. It was difficult to say whether this was ultimately good or bad.

Besides the five element aligned true essence, there were also the forces of wind and thunder that existed beyond the five elements of nature.

There were exceedingly few who had these two kinds of true essence attributes, but, they were also much stronger than the five elements.

Especially the thunder attribute. In terms of attack speed, it went against the will of the heavens. Even if one searched the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom, there weren't many thunder-attributed martial artists. And not only that, even if they were of the thunder attribute, it didn’t mean that they were a good match. Even if they practiced a thunder-based cultivation method, they wouldn’t necessarily achieve any results.

But now looking at Lin Ming, it appeared that he had the power of thunder at his beck and call. Not only that, but there was a prodigious energy contained within. He had clearly cultivated it to the Large Success stage.

How was this possible? In just half a year Lin Ming had managed to comprehend a thunder-based cultivation method?

“It looks like during his adventure, Lin Ming also experienced another fortuitous encounter,” Qin Ziya applauded, somewhat envying Lin Ming in his heart. There were many lucky opportunities that could be found with the Sky Spill Continent. However, these lucky opportunities were often fraught with peril. There was fortune that just lay there for one to pick up. However, if one wished to obtain it, one had to have the courage while also putting in 120% of their effort.

These opportunities were fleeting; only those martial artists that were prepared could reach for them.

Sun Youdao sighed with emotion, “This kid is just too scary. If he just cultivated, with his combat talent, he would certainly reach the Xiantian realm, even the extreme Xiantian realm. But if he is able to attain the fortunes that come with danger, then he might reach the Revolving Dan realm, or an even higher existence!”

“This sort of martial artist must not only have cultivation and combat talent. They also have to have a firm mind and be incomparably calm. They must act bold, be fearless, daring to do what no one else does! In front of a fortuitous encounter, just a little bit of hesitation will cause them to lose their chance.”

Lin Sing looked at the thick electric arc that was twisting around Lin Ming’s spear point and suddenly laughed, “Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, today I, Ling Sen, have truly gained in experience. It is a rare opportunity and honor to be able to fight a martial artist who has reached Large Success in thunder cultivation!"

"You may have broken my Slaughter Domain, but I also have a martial skill!"

As Ling Sen said this, he gripped his 5 foot long heavy sword horizontally outwards. The hilt of the heavy sword was very long; it would take at least 4 or 5 hands to cover it.

"Divine Punishment Blade – Purple Air Comes From the East!"

Bang!

Ling Sen tread the ground, and pulled the five foot long heavy sword around him, drawing a perfect arc on the ground. True essence manifested as a silver shark that was plowing a path through a sea of ice.

In that moment, Ling Sen had gathered all of his murderous aura, his momentum reaching the extreme.

"It's Purple Air Comes From the East! This is Senior-apprentice Brother Ling's strongest skill!"

"This is a high-grade human-step martial skill. In addition, it is at the pinnacle of high-grade human-step martial skills. I heard that there are six different moves within the Divine Punishment Blade, and this Purple Air Comes From the East is the strongest sixth move. I hadn't thought that I would be so fortunate to see Senior-apprentice Brother Ling display this skill today!

Hearing the name Purple Air Comes from the East, those outside martial artists in the audience didn't react much. However, the Seven Profound Martial House disciples were incomparably excited to the point of almost frothing at the mouth. When one was below the 100 rankings of the Seven Profound Martial House, they could only choose a low-grade human-step martial skill. If they entered the top 100, then they could choose a medium-grade human-step martial skill.

There were few true high-grade human-step martial skills. Ling Sen had been especially permitted to practice the ‘Divine Punishment Blade’, which was at the apex of all high-grade human-step martial skills!

Most disciples only heard rumors about this, but when would they ever have the opportunity to see it?

Now, they would personally experience its majesty. Not only that, they would also be able to see the strongest sixth move of the Divine Punishment Blade; how could they not be feverish from excitement?

Facing off against Ling Sen, Lin Ming still displayed his eternally unchanging stance, Iron Bridge Blocks the River. This style was not fancy; it was a simple pose that was the most fundamental of spear skills. What Lin Ming depended on was his pure and thick true essence.

At this time, the five foot heavy sword in Ling Sen’s hand had already turned into a vibrant and flawless purple color, as if a flame was burning on the blade. At this moment, Lin Ming’s momentum had reached its peak.

“Take my sword!”

With that final word, Ling Sen stepped forward. The sword was like black lightning; it carried a vast power that roared towards Lin Ming. In a blink of an eye, he had closed the 200 feet distance that separated them!

True essence wildly fluctuated. Purple flames ignited the air. Ling Sen’s sword was like a mountain as it smashed downwards.

Lin Ming’s vision sharpened, and the Heretical God Force activated. Highly compressed true essence and the power of thunder erupted outwards; the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder began to issue out cries of excitement. A thick arc of lightning jumped onto the silver spear, wrapping around it like thick python, directly striking out to meet Ling Sen’s sword.

The Heretical God Force was open, and power of thunder had also been galvanized; this was a strength that wasn't any lower than a peak Pulse Condensation master!

Bang!

The ground beneath suddenly shook, and Ling Sen's condensed Purple Air Comes From the East was struck by the thunder. It was no different than pure white snow basking in the summer sun; it rapidly melted!

"What?"

Ling Sen was shocked. His strongest strike was actually broken apart like this?

In that split second, Ling Sen hesitated. The thick purple electric snake burst through the purple cloud and directly struck Ling Sen's body. In that moment, Ling Sen felt his entire body go numb, and even his heart stopped beating.

In that moment, he even thought he would die.

However, that feeling soon passed. That thick electric snake drilled through his body and howled as it pierced into the sky. In a few moments it submerged into the clouds above.

At this time, the sky was still snowing, and dark clouds covered the martial stage. After that thick electric snake broke into the cloud, faint sparks of lightning were seen, and a rumbling thunder began to sound through the air.

This was like a winter thunderstorm!

There was no snow in summer, and no thunder in winter.

Seeing thunder billowing in the sky, the entire audience was shocked speechless. With his own strength, Lin Ming had moved the heavens and created thunder, even changing the laws of nature. What sort of nonsensical exaggeration was this?

Was this really something that a Body Transformation martial artist could achieve?

Qin Ziya looked up at the sky and let loose a breath. This was far from changing the laws of nature. But, to be able to create thunder in the clouds, the intensity and ferocity of that thunder strike was simply too astonishing.

Chapter 232 – Awakening Thunder

Chapter 232 – Awakening Thunder

…

…

…

"Brother Sun, our Seven Profound Martial House has really picked up a gem. Lin Ming's thunder fusion has probably reached fifth, or even sixth grade…"

A martial artist's martial talent had a grade, and the fusion compatibility that a martial artist had with metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, and thunder, also had a grade, each corresponding to each other. A sixth grade fusion was something that hadn't been seen in the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom for millennia!

Sun Youdao nodded, "If it really is a fifth or sixth grade fusion, then indeed. I think it is strange how I never noticed Lin Ming's potential to cultivate lightning. This Lin Ming, the more I look at him, the less I understand."

…..

"I lost." Ling Sen let a dreary breath loose. The difference in their strength was simply too great. In that flash a moment ago, if it weren't for Lin Ming's amazing control of the thunder force, his heart would have stopped beating and even his body would have been charred black.

His own strongest strike could not even halt half of the opponent's blow. He sincerely admitted defeat.

"Well fought." Lin Ming humbly said as he put his spear away, cupping his fists in respect.

Ling Sen was silent for a moment, and then he asked, “Was that your strongest strike?”

Lin Ming had opened the Heretical God Force slightly while spurring the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. This was indeed most of his strength. Of course, he had Thunderfire Annihilation and the Coiling Dragon steel needle as well, but these two powers contained a massive killing potential. Unless he went all out in desperation, he normally wouldn’t use it.

Lin Ming nodded and said, “Yes.”

After hearing Lin Ming’s less than positive answer, Ling Sen sighed with emotion. One should always strive to get to the top, and there would always be someone beyond him. He suddenly felt that after he graduated, joining the army might not be the wisest choice.

When Lin Ming had left the Seven Profound Martial House to adventure, he had obviously found some sort of lucky opportunity. Otherwise, there was no way that his strength would have grown so fast.

Although Ling Sen’s combat prowess was far beyond a martial artist at the same level, his talent was limited, and he would find it difficult to reach the Xiantian realm in his entire life. But there was simply too big a difference between the Xiantian realm and Houtian realm. To defeat weak Pulse Condensation period martial artist with only Bone Forging cultivation was stunning, but there were talents in every country that could do the same thing.

But for a peak Houtian master to defeat a Xiantian master, there might not even be one in the entire Seven Profound Valley’s 36 countries that could do this!

After joining the army, Ling Sen would absolutely become one of the ten Great Generals. He could even become a State Marshall like Qin Xiao. But if it were only this, it would be impossible for him to break through the bottleneck and reach the Xiantian realm.

After his fight with Lin Ming, Ling Sen firmly decided that he would leave Sky Fortune Kingdom and find his own lucky chance!

……………………

The winner's bracket had ended, and according to the original rules, the loser's bracket would begin. But, Ta Ku was the first to forfeit. Zhao Jifeng and Jiang Bin looked at each other and could only ruefully smile before similarly forfeiting. Although Ling Sen had been defeated by Lin Min, he could still deal with them just like chopping a chicken. There was simply no reason to disgrace themselves.

So the final two spots for participation in the Total Faction Martial Meeting were given to Ling Sen and Lin Ming.

The total list of names was: Qin Xingxuan, Zhou Yu, Liang Long, Ling Sen and Lin Ming.

This news spread like the wind. Ling Sen and Lin Ming were both recognized as the fiercest two in the group of five.

The battle between Lin Ming and Ling Sen also spread through Sky Fortune City like wildfire. Everyone who watched the competition of top talents was incomparably excited to tell everyone else. For those that hadn't watched the match, after listening with wringing hands, they would excitedly beat their chests and stamp their feet. Many people would regret that they didn't have the qualifications to enter the Seven Profound Martial House and personally watch the competition. Otherwise, how could they possibly miss such an event?

The bards and storytellers of Sky Fortune Kingdom also retold this story. They started with the exact events, but as time passed, each version became more and more exaggerated. But no matter which version of events was told, the one scene they would never forget is Lin Ming galvanizing a winter thunderstorm.

With his own strength, he moved the thunder of heaven and earth!

The words of these storytellers sounded like fantasy, but on that day, the people of Sky Fortune City also saw that winter thunderstorm. But even if they saw this sight, everyone found it hard to accept. Using one's own power to alter the laws of nature? What sort of concept was that?

There was no snow in summer and no thunder in winter, this was common knowledge.

It was said that yesterday, there was a lover that pledged to the winter thunderstorm, inciting it with his true love.

The lover said: "if the winter thunder rumbles, then my love will be eternal and without regret."

The girl that heard this was incomparably touched and moved because of this holy promise. But, although it was romantic, she knew that he was playing around…

As the lover pledged this, in the next quarter hour, the sky filled with thunder.

The lover was immediately dumbfounded, his mouth wide enough to stick an egg in.

At this time he only had one thought: "Motherfucker, heavens, are you playing with me!?"

The truth was, the common people simply didn't understand the difference in strength between martial artists and their corresponding divisions. However, to create thunder in winter was actually too shocking for everyone. Wasn't this just the same as god?

Before, Lin Ming's name had been mainly known among the aristocracy as a martial artist. But now, even the commoners knew that there was a young martial artist in the Sky Fortune Kingdom named Lin Ming, who had incomparably fierce strength, and was able to call down heavenly thunder.

…………………………

Zhou Mountain peak, Martial House Main Hall —

Qin Ziya sat in the main seat, followed down the row by Lin Ming, Ling Sen, Qin Xingxuan, Zhou Yu, and Liang Long. In addition, there was a blue-clothed old man. This old man was the Seven Profound Martial House's Deputy House Master, Sun Youdao.

Qin Ziya's gaze swept over the 5 youths one at time. Finally, it landed on Lin Ming. Although Qin Ziya had long concluded that Lin Ming would blossom in dazzling radiance in the future, he had never thought that this young boy would make so much progress in such a short time. It was just too shocking. To have such strength at his age, let alone Sky Fortune Kingdom, he would be a top figure even in a large sect.

Obviously, Lin Ming had encountered a fortuitous opportunity when he went out on adventure. It was rare for a martial artist to encounter a lucky chance outside, but it wasn't uncommon. Thus, Qin Ziya didn't press him for details. Everyone had their own secrets. As long as he wasn't traitorous or disloyal, it was fine.

If it wasn't for Lin Ming being so young, he would have the grand opportunity to seize first place!

If he really did manage to grasp first place, that would be an unprecedented record in the Seven Profound Valleys. According to what Qin Ziya knew, there had never been a disciple outside of the Total Faction that was able to attain first place at the Total Faction Martial Meeting.

However, the current Lin Ming had a very high chance of reaching the top 20.

Qin Ziya wasn't underestimating Lin Ming. It was just that the geniuses of the Total Faction were simply too strong. These top talents all had the qualifications to seize first place. At 19 or 20 years of age, they would have reached the peak Pulse Condensation period, and their battle prowess would be worthy enough to face a Houtian master. To Qin Ziya, Lin Ming's strength seemed far off from such a level.

However, Qin Ziya didn't worry, Lin Ming still had time. In the future, his chances of winning first place would be gigantic.

Qin Ziya lightly coughed and slowly said, “The reason I called you here today is to discuss matters of the Total Faction Martial Meeting. As you have guessed, in just half a month’s time, the Total Faction Martial Meeting will begin. The second-grade powers under the jurisdiction of the Seven Profound Valleys can send 5 people to participate.”

In Sky Spill Continent, it wasn’t just sects that were divided into grades. Great martial families and countries were also divided into grades. The Seven Profound Valleys was a third-grade sect, and was also at the top of third-grade sects.

Sky Fortune Kingdom was a second-grade influence. The Zhao, Jiang, Liang, and Zhou families that lived at the edge of Sky Fortune Kingdom were all first-grade influences. For convenience in management, the Seven Profound Valleys put the first-gradel influences into the second-gradel countries. That was the reason why this week, the Liang, Jiang, Zhou, and Zhao families had sent their successors to come to Sky Fortune Kingdom’s Seven Profound Martial House for training.

Qin Ziya continued to say, “You five disciples are the ones that my Sky Fortune Kingdom’s Seven Profound Martial House have decided to send to the Total Faction Martial Meeting. There will be countless masters and geniuses at the Total Faction Martial Meeting. You may have been top-tier talents in Sky Fortune Kingdom, but placed in the Total Faction, you are just ordinary!”

Saying this, Qin Ziya caught a glimpse of a disapproving look from Liang Long. He frowned and icily said, “Liang Long, are you not convinced?”

Liang Long was startled. He quickly rose up and apologized, “I do not dare!” But thinking a bit, Liang Long whispered, “Martial House Master. Although I don’t believe we can with the first place title, isn’t it too much to say that we are ‘ordinary’?”

Qin Ziya sternly said, “Ordinary is fine. Liang Long, what is your martial talent?”

“Inferior fifth-grade…” Liang Long said. In Sky Fortune Kingdom, this talent was pretty good.

“An inferior fifth-grade talent is splendid in Sky Fortune Kingdom, and you are also astonishing in your Liang Family. But, the Seven Profound Valleys has an accumulated inheritance of 600 years. When the great founders of the Seven Factions started, they had been constantly screening talents to be married. A fifth-grade talent is nothing at all! Even a janitor would need to be at least a superior fourth-grade talent. Not only that, the disciples of the Total Faction have family backgrounds and resources that are far superior to yours. Thus, their cultivation speed naturally exceeds yours. It is already good that you can catch up to the ‘ordinary’ level! Now sit back down!”

“Yes, Martial House Master.” Liang Long submissively sat down, feeling a bit battered. One would need to be a superior fourth-grade talent just to sweep the floor. That was to say, that even if he went to the Seven Profound Valleys, he would be no more than a disciple who swept the floor or cooked the food.

Lin Ming sighed in his heart sourly. Resources were simply too important to a martial artist’s cultivation. One needed cultivation methods, cultivation locations, pills, and so forth. It could be said that when the disciples of a large sect were first born, they had already arrived at a starting line that a common martial artist would never be able to reach in their entire life. They could be like Ouyang Dihua, who dawdled around doing nothing, and still reach the Houtian realm. But as for a common martial artist, it was difficult to even reach the Pulse Condensation period!

To a common martial artist, they would be ecstatic to even be able to enjoy one hour of the Seven Profound Martial House’s seven major killing arrays. If they could use it as they wished, they would probably willingly shorten their lifespan by a dozen years.

But if the likes of this were placed in the Seven Profound Valleys, what use would it be? A core disciple probably would even disdain themselves to glance at it.

Qin Ziya continued to say, “This time, there were will be the 36 countries under the rule of the Seven Profound Valleys, as well as 16 second-grade martial families. This amounts to a total of 52 different powers. With each side being able to send out 5 people, there should be 260 participants in total. But, because of the power of Huoluo Nation, Grace Venerate

Nation, and some other great countries, they have an additional quota. So there will be 280 disciples altogether. In addition, the Seven Factions of the Seven Profound Valleys will send 240 of their own disciples. So all together, there will be 520 participants!

“In these 520 individuals, there will be at least 200 which will have reached the Pulse Condensation period! They might even be middle Pulse Condensation, late Pulse Condensation, or even peak Pulse Condensation! If you want to stand out in this group of 520 people, you can think on your own just how difficult this will be!”

Chapter 233 – Earth-step Treasure

Chapter 233 – Earth-step Treasure

…

…

…

Liang Long thought that Lin Ming and Ling Sen were freakish enough. Even if they couldn't obtain first place, he assumed that it would still be a piece of cake for them to reach the top 20 or 30. For himself, making the top 100 was already a great honor he could return home with. But now it looked like out of all these hundreds of people, he was one of the worst.

If he ranked lower than 400 or 500, it would be a deep shame. How could he explain it once he returned home?

Liang Long hadn't even spoken again when the next words of Qin Ziya caused his heart to sink to the bottom of the ocean. Qin Ziya said, "The Total Faction's Martial Meeting will be held at the Seven Profound Valleys' Profound Sky Mountain Range. Before the Martial Meeting starts, there will be a checkpoint barrier; at least 60% of participants will be eliminated. Only those that pass through will have the qualifications to enter the Profound Sky Mountains."

"60%?" Liang Long's mouth fell open. Did that mean he wouldn't even have the chance to pass through the mountain gate?

If he went to the Total Faction Martial Meeting and couldn't even pass through the door, then that would be an absolute family shame that even his grandma would feel!

If this news spread throughout the family, then where would he have face to see anyone? Wouldn't he just become the family joke? Liang Long was known as the future head of the Liang Family, there were many people who were jealous of his position. If he became a joke, then all sorts of baseless rumors would be spread!

As he turned around to look at Zhou Yu, he saw that Zhou Yu was also forcing a smile. Even Zhou Yu was worrying about whether or not he would pass through the gate.

The family head always said that there was a heaven above the heavens, and there were always people that stood above others. Now he finally understood that let alone him, there were even monsters that were stronger than Qin Xingxuan.

"Martial House Master, this..."

"What's the matter?"

Liang Long wanted to say the he wished to abstain from the meeting. Since he couldn't even pass through the gate, there was no point in going just to shame himself. But seeing Qin Ziya's eyes sweep past him, Liang Long felt his mind numb and his body go cold. He could only gulp and change his words. "When do we leave?"

"We will go early tomorrow morning. You will go back and prepare. Tomorrow, we will take the Heavenly Wind Eagles to get there. Do you have any other questions?"

Lin Ming was silent for a moment, and then he said, "Martial House Master Qin, I have a question."

"Mm? Ask."

"What is the prize?"

As soon as this question was asked, Liang Long and Zhou Yu both shrank their necks. They had both been worrying about how to pass through the mountain gate and not lose face after returning to their family in shame, but Lin Ming had actually opened his big mouth and asked what the prize would be. This was really the difference in their positions, their thoughts were just too different.

Qin Ziya gave Lin Ming an appreciative look and said, “The reward for first place is a Heaven Opening Pill! However, you won’t immediately receive this Heaven Opening Pill. First you must officially join the Seven Profound Valleys and then reach the peak Houtian realm. Afterwards it will be given to you. I won’t go into unnecessary details about how valuable the Heaven Opening Pill is.”

“Besides the Heaven Opening Pill, there are also some low-grade Earth-step treasures. There are offensive treasures and defensive treasures of all sorts. Second through fifth place will not receive a Heaven Opening Pill, but they will be rewarded with a low-grade Earth-step treasure. Sixth through tenth place will receive a Sky Spirit Pill, which is also a top-quality medicinal pill. As for eleventh through thirtieth place, they will receive a high-grade human-step treasure and an Earth Spirit Pill…”

Lin Ming’s mind stirred as soon as he heard ‘Earth-step treasure’. “They have many different types of treasure? Do they have a spear?”

Qin Ziya smiled and said, “Your weapon simply takes advantages of others. A spear’s value is several times that of other weapons of the same step. Still, you can rest assured that the Seven Profound Valleys has been established for many years, and they have a deep heritage; naturally, they will have a spear!

Earth-step treasure…

Lin Ming clenched his fists.

Qin Ziya saw Lin Ming’s enthusiastic look and couldn’t help musing to himself. This boy won’t make first place. Although Lin Ming is strong, reaching first place is just too distant a goal. There are many middle Pulse Condensation, late Pulse Condensation, and even peak Pulse Condensation masters. How could a peak Bone Forging martial artist ever take first place?

What Qin Ziya didn’t know was that ever since Lin Ming had met Mu Qianyu, in Lin Ming’s eyes, these so called ‘talents’ of the Seven Profound Valleys weren’t even worth mentioning.

Mu Qianyu reached Pulse Condensation at 15, Houtian at 17, Xiantian at 22, extreme Xiantian at 26, and now at 27 she was a half-step into the Revolving Dan realm.

At 22 years of age, talents of the Seven Profound Valleys were just beginning to attempt their breakthrough to the Houtian Realm, but Mu Qianyu had already stepped into the Xiantian realm!

This difference was simply like cloud and mud!

If he couldn’t defeat these professed talent of the Seven Profound Valleys, then what was the point in reaching for the peak of martial arts?

…………………………

Seven hundred thousand miles away, Seven Profound Valleys.

The tens of thousands of miles of the Profound Sky Mountains were just like a towering black dragon. In the center of the Seven Profound territory of the Profound Sky Mountains was the Absolute Sword Peak. This mountain peak was 60,000 feet high and incredibly steep. The cliffs in all directions were almost vertical; it was as if the entire Absolute Sword Peak was made of 60,000 feet high sharp swords, piercing the heavens!

This Absolute Sword Peak was the center of the Seven Profound Valleys’ Sword Faction. With the Absolute Sword Peak as the center, there were also 12 surrounding smaller peaks that circled around like a constellation.

In the thick high clouds there was a majestic and grand main hall. The outside of the main hall was layered with hundreds of feet of blue stone tiles. In the middle of these tiles was a massive 200 foot sword that stabbed the ground.

Although this giant sword was just a carved statue, it was entirely made of darksteel and weighed hundreds of thousands of jins. If there really was a giant capable of pulling this sword up from the ground, it could truly be used for slaughtering one’s enemies.

Under this great sword, the Sword Faction Sovereign stood there with his hands crossed behind his back. He was looking at an 18 or 19 year old youth in front of him. His eyebrows were slanted up like scimitars and his aura was impressive.

“During the last Martial Meeting, you were defeated by the Acacia Faction’s Ouyang Ming. Now, after three years, Ouyang Ming has already reached the peak of Pulse Condensation. He will be your greatest opponent.”

The youth was silent for a moment, then he said, “Ouyang Ming is not my greatest opponent.”

“Mm? Then who will you take as your opponent?”

“My greatest opponent is only myself!” As the young man said this, his eyes shone with brilliance, “If during this Martial Meeting I can’t even defeat the talents of a third-grade sect, what is the point of me thinking of climbing to the peak of swordsmanship?”

Though he and Lin Ming were separated by several hundred thousand miles, words similar to those that were said by Lin Ming slowly came from this young man’s lips.

“Haha! Well said! You are truly my son! Then during this Martial Meeting I will only have one expectation – you will win first place!”

“Yes, Father!”

……………………

At the same time, just a hundred miles away at the main peak of the Acacia Faction, there was another young man around 20 years old that was looking down on the cloudy mountains, as if he was disdaining everything beneath him.

This young man was the one mentioned by the Sword Faction youth, Ouyang Ming.

“Ming’er, you are the most splendidly talented disciple that has come from the Acacia Faction in the last 100 years. This is the last Martial Meeting you can participate in before you are too old. I hope that you will be able to attain first place!”

“Yes, Mother.”

Behind Ouyang Ming was a beautiful woman. This elegant lady was none other than Ouyang Ming’s mother. Although she was already over 50 years old, her appearance was no different to a young girl in her twenties.

“This time I am destined to be first place. I had actually hoped that Su Ran hadn’t surpassed the age limit; I was hoping to have a match against him. This is such a pity!”

The age limit for the Seven Profound Valleys’ Total Faction disciples to participate in the Martial Meeting was 20 years, two years less than the disciples from outside. This was the last time that Ouyang Ming would be able to participate in the Total Faction Martial Meeting.

“Achieving first place is good enough. As for the battle between you and Su Ran, you must win, otherwise it will frustrate your spirit.”

“I understand, Mother.”

“Also, do not lower your guard and underestimate others. The Zither Faction’s Qin Wuxin’s cultivation has reached the peak of Pulse Condensation. Although the Zither Faction doesn’t have many disciples, their skills and abilities are the most difficult to handle. There is also the Refiner Faction’s Han Yanluo. The Refiner Faction Sovereign has paid a great price in order to force a Flame Essence into Han Yanluo’s body using a special method. This man cannot be looked down upon!”

“I know, Mother.”

Although the Seven Factions of the Seven Profound Valleys were united together due to common interests, there was still infighting among them. They constantly struggled for power, treasure, resources, talent, pills, manuals, and other things…

Sometimes there were conflicts that escalated to the point of fighting. In regards to this, even the Seven Profound Valleys' Valley Master couldn't do anything. If it wasn't for the fact that the Valley Master had excellent cultivation and also the backing of the Ancestor, then there would be no one that even cared about him.

The Seven Profound Valleys had many worries, and these things weren't necessarily unsolvable, they just had to be changed to a certain extent. For instance, the assignment of resources in the Seven Profound Valleys must have a method to distribute resources.

200 years ago, the old Valley Master decreed that every three years there would be a Total Faction Martial Meeting. The overall assignment of resources would be given out according to results of the disciples, then, nobody could oppose it.

Therefore the Seven Factions consumed a massive amount of resources and took great care in order to raise the ultimate direct disciple and use them to aim for the first place of the Total Faction Martial Meeting.

The direct disciple was chosen from the most talented individuals of the younger generation, and then unlimited resources were poured into them. The Sovereign would personally aid in their cultivation, and they would receive any sort of core cultivation method or ability they desired.

For the last 200 years, almost all of the first place titles of the Total Faction Martial Meeting were taken by a direct disciple of the Seven Factions. There were only a few exceptions, but those were also caused by other disciples of the Total Faction.

As for disciples outside of the Seven Profound Valleys, they had never achieved first place. Let alone first place, they hadn't even reached the top 10. To the disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys, those so-called talents that came from the 36 countries and second-grade martial families were nothing more than country bumpkins. At most they would be slightly stronger than a janitor who swept the floor.

The direct disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys had only ever considered each other as their opponents. They hadn't even deigned to consider the disciples that were from the outside.

……………………

Sky Fortune Kingdom was 200,000 miles away from the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction. It would take over a dozen days to get there, even riding a Heavenly Wind Eagle.

Qin Ziya led a line of people to the Seven Profound Martial House's departure station. There were already a row of Heavenly Wind Eagles waiting there, and not only that, but they were of the finest quality. Their flying speed would be much quicker than an ordinary Heavenly Wind Eagle.

"Let's go."

As soon as Qin Ziya waved his hand, Lin Ming leapt onto a Heavenly Wind Eagle. With a keening screech, the Heavenly Wind Eagle shot into the sky, a billowing cloud of snow following in its wake.

The cold wind whistled in one's ears. In a few breaths, the Heavenly Wind Eagles had already risen a thousand feet into the sky. If one leaned over to look, they could see the endless earth carpeted by a pure white blanket. This snowy-white extended all the way to the ends of the horizon. The touching scene gave birth to a desolate heroic feeling in one's heart.

Because the Heavenly Wind Eagle was so fast, the snowflakes that struck the face were just like blades. Lin Ming put up a shield of true essence around himself, blocking the wind and snow.

The Heavenly Wind Eagle flew faster and faster, a clarion cry sounded out like a joyous song, echoing between the ends of heaven and earth…

Chapter 234 – Profound Sky City

Chapter 234 – Profound Sky City

…

…

…

The Seven Profound Valleys Total Faction was located within the Profound Sky Mountain Range. The Profound Sky Mountain Range didn't belong to any country; it had a very special status within the 36 countries in the Seven Profound territory.

The Profound Sky Mountain Range's tallest peak was 60,000 feet high. The mountain itself contained a massive amount of profound iron ore, so the entire mountain was a deep black iron color all over. The mountain had sparse vegetation, was rocky, and had extremely dangerous and steep cliffs. It was unknown why, but the entire mountain exuded a thick a baleful aura that caused those watching to feel unease. An average person climbing the mountain would feel very suppressed, and even if a martial artist were to pass by this place, they would attempt to take a winding detour around.

At the foot of the Profound Sky Mountain Range was a giant city. The walls of the city were 50 feet high and stretched for hundreds of miles.

This city was named Profound Sky City, and this was where the Total Faction Martial Meeting was held every three years.

There was a city-wide flying ban for hundreds of miles around Profound Sky City. Lin Ming saw this magnificent city rising from afar as a line of people swooped down from their Heavenly Wind Eagles and walked towards Profound Sky City on foot.

Along the way there were many fellow martial artists coming and going. Most of the martial artists' cultivations were at the Altering Muscle stage or above; with their movement abilities, they were able to cover the hundred miles in only a quarter of an hour.

Outside the city gate of Profound Sky City was a team of guards that kept watch. Seeing the cultivation of these guards, Lin Ming let out a breath, they were actually all Bone Forging martial artists. The captain of that group of guards was impressively at the peak of Bone Forging.

The Seven Profound Valleys was truly worthy of being called a large sect. if a peak Bone Forging martial artist went to the Sky Fortune Kingdom, they could become a well-known and respected commander in the army. But in the Seven profound Valleys, these Bone Forging martial artists were only gate guards.

Many martial artists rushed to the Seven Profound Valleys because of their esteemed reputation. The Profound Sky Mountains contained an incomparably rich and thick heaven and earth origin energy. This was the reason the guards would rather live here. For instance, some people would rather live in the capital city and work hard labor as opposed to living in the countryside and finding a wife and having children. As long as they stayed in the capital city, they would have the hope of breaking through. But if they lived in a small country, then they might live their entire lives as a mere commander and never enter into the Pulse Condensation period.

The Profound Sky City's gate was gigantic, but there were too many people trying to enter the city, it seemed very crowded. Particularly because the Total Faction Martial Meeting was occurring, there were many people that accompanied the core disciples.

To enter the city cost 10 gold taels. This high entry fee caused many of the low-level martial artists and common folk to shrink back, discouraged by the price.

Once Lin Ming paid the gold fee to enter the city, he discovered that over 90% of the residents of Profound Sky City were martial artists. Even the random peddler who hawked his wares on the street, or the waiters serving outside restaurants were martial artists.

Although their cultivation was only at the first or second stage of Body Transformation, these people, if they went to Sky Fortune City, could live as a well-to-do servant or retainer in a respected family, while also having a high income and good reputation.

As the group walked by, Lin Ming saw all sorts of various treasures being sold. There was a pill shop and inscription symbol shops everywhere. If these shops were casually placed in Sky Fortune City, they would be on the scale of the Hundred Treasures Pavilions. What they sold would be considered incredibly valuable items that a common martial artist would never be able to afford even if they added up all of their savings.

All of this caused Lin Ming to sigh with emotion. If one lived at a different location, then their experience was also different. If he didn't reach his current strength, then he would never have come to Profound Sky City in his entire life and seen such scenes.

Zhou Yu and Liang Long also noticed these shops. They drooled over many of the items inside; there were many treasures that were difficult to purchase in Sky Fortune Kingdom, or might not even be sold.

Qin Ziya sensed what was on everyone's mind. He waited until they reached the inn, and then he told everyone, "You can go anywhere you want now. Come back to the inn before it's dark, and try not to cause a ruckus anywhere."

"Okay." Zhou Yu and Liang Long were very happy at this news. They left first together, there were many shops that they wanted to go check out.

Lin Ming had wanted to stay in the inn and calmly cultivate, but Qin Xingxuan suddenly tugged on his sleeve and said, "Lin Ming, don't you want to take a stroll around? This is my first time coming to Profound Sky City, I want to have a look around..."

This was considered an implicit invitation from Qin Xingxuan. Lin Ming naturally wouldn't decline such an invitation. He laughed and said with a smile, "This is also good. How about we go together?"

"Okay!" As soon as she heard this, Qin Xingxuan's features lit up with a smile; it was otherworldly and enchanting, the epitome of beauty and elegance.

After the two of them walked away, Sun Youdao sighed and said, "Ahh, it's nice to be young. Those two cute little kids are just a match made in heaven. I really hope they end up together."

Qin Ziya heard Sun Youdao's thoughts and only smiled, not saying anything. If these two were content with the current status quo, then ending up together would be very easy. But, if they both had the determination and resolve to pursue the peak of martial arts, then he was afraid that they would have to separate in the future.

……………………………

The two youths freely strolled around the city. Qin Xingxuan bought many things. She bought jewelery, some precious fabrics to weave into beautiful dresses, unique souvenirs, hand crafted items, and other little trinkets and things like this.

The merchandise of Profound Sky City was valuable, there were even some items that required true essence stones to buy. For instance, Qin Xingxuan bought a dress, but because there was Sky Worm Silk woven into the fabric, giving it protection against fire and water, the price was a true essence stone.

Luckily, Qin Xingxuan was the daughter of a rich family. If it were a normal martial artist, they would never be willing to buy a piece of clothing for 1000 gold taels. This was half the price of a treasure.

As they walked around, they suddenly saw a restaurant with a pleasant atmosphere. This restaurant was called Desert Flower Hall. There was a signboard in front of the restaurant that listed out some signature dishes which caught Lin Ming's eye.

The recipes here actually contained the meat of fourth-level vicious beasts.

It had to be known that a fourth-level vicious beast was equal to a Houtian realm master. In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, this power was considered the pinnacle. Even if Lin Ming were to encounter a fourth-level vicious beast, he would usually run away.

A fourth-level vicious beast's body was simply a treasure. There were many parts that could be used to refine pills and elixirs. But placed here, it was actually food that was prepared in a restaurant. If this was so, then just how outrageously expensive would the food be?

"We've been in a hurry for the last few days, so all we've eaten is dry food and cured meats. Since we came here, let's take a look inside." Lin Ming said. Since he had grown up in a restaurant, he had special feelings towards them. Since he came to Profound Sky City, he definitely needed to sample the best restaurant here.

Qin Xingxuan read the signboard. She hesitated and said, "Here... is very expensive..."

If in the past Lin Ming had heard that Qin Xingxuan would feel timid about going into a restaurant due to price, then he would think it was simply a joke. But looking at this restaurant, it wouldn't be strange if the food it prepared with fourth-level vicious beasts cost around 20 or 30 pure true essence stones. 20 or 30 true essence stones was equal to 20 to 30 thousand gold taels. That was a price equivalent to a medium-grade human-step treasure; even Qin Xingxuan would feel a bit distressed by this cost.

After Lin Ming had looted Ouyang Dihua and Zhang Fengxian, he could be said to be filthy rich; he naturally didn't care about costs like this. He smiled and said, "During my adventure, I found a small treasure site and gained some true essence stones. Let me treat you."

"But......"

Before Qin Xingxuan could say any more, Lin Ming had already pulled her hand and entered into Desert Flower Hall.

When they found a tasteful corner of the restaurant to sit down in, the waiter took out two menus and handed them to them. Qin Xingxuan glanced over the prices and was secretly mind-boggled. Every dish on the menu was priced in true essence stones. The cheapest dish cost 2 true essence stones.

“If I eat the food here can I become immortal?” Qin Xingxuan excoriated in her heart. Coming here, she had brought 80,000 gold taels. This money was meant to buy pills and treasures. If she spend a quarter of it on food, then that would be hilarious.

“What are your specialties here?” Lin Ming asked after he glanced over the menu. If he was eating at a famous restaurant, then he naturally must eat the best and most well-known dishes.

The water’s smiling face blossomed at hearing this. He said, “We have many specialties. For instance, we have keel soup made from the marrow of a fourth-level vicious beast with a Horned Dragon’s bloodline, and also brewed with several dozen different sorts of precious herbs. The taste is mellow and the soup is smooth. After drinking, it can help consolidate true essence and positively affect the body. The keel soup is 25 true essence stones.

25 true essence stones? 25,000 gold? This was simply robbery!

Qin Xingxuan let out a breath. Although she didn’t feel like it was worth the price, she didn’t display any different expression in front of the waiter.

The waiter smiled and said, “Young master, young lady, I can see with just a glance that you are talented juniors of a large aristocratic martial family. If a martial artist cultivates every day, it is easy to overtax one’s body. If one doesn’t supplement their body with food, then later it will be very difficult to reach the Xiantian realm.

A mere waiter with a cultivation at the Third Stage of Body Transformation opened his mouth and spoke about breaking through to the Xiantian realm. This sort of vision could be considered pretty grand. Desert Flower Hall probably didn’t often entertain many true Xiantian realm masters.

“Then I’ll take a pot of the keel soup, and a few side dishes, two bowls of spirit valley rice, and a pot of green tea.”

Even if Lin Ming was rich, he would only occasionally partake in such a luxurious feast. If he ate like this too often, even he wouldn’t be able to afford it.

The dishes soon came. The keel soup was a lustrous pearl-white, and was as thick as milk. Just looking at it made one’s appetite rise.

As Qin Xingxuan saw this keel soup arrive, she first served Lin Ming a big bowl, and then scooped one for herself. The creamy thick soup within the crystal jade bowl appeared just like a work of art.

Looking at this small bowl of soup, Qin Xingxuan self-deprecatingly said, “This small bowl is two or three true essence stones. It’s enough for me to spend for half a month. I’ll have to thoroughly taste it and see if it’s any different.”

Qin Xingxuan picked up the clear jade bowl and took a small sip. After feeling the soup slide past her lips, it quickly turned into a warm stream that flowed into her stomach. There seemed to be a faint trace of origin energy that flowed into her meridians, slowly and gently tempering the meridians within her body.

Although this origin energy was very weak, it was incomparably pure!

Pills had pill toxins. If one ate them, they could increase one’s cultivation. But, it would cause their true essence to become impure and they would need to expend energy in order to refine it out. But this keel soup, although it contained traces of origin energy, was very smooth and gentle. If one drank this long-term, it would consolidate one’s true essence and give a miraculous strengthening effect on the meridians. And the best part was that there were no side effects.

Qin Xingxuan was shocked. There might not be any effect with just one or two bowls, but what if one were to drink it all the time, would it accumulate?

After she tasted the spirit valley rice, she found that it had equally good effects. Even the pot of green tea contained a rich wood-based origin energy, and was extremely refreshing. After drinking it, the soul force within her spiritual sea seemed to have been subtly supplemented.

“How is it?” Lin Ming asked Qin Xingxuan as he put down his chopsticks.

Qin Xingxuan’s beautiful eyebrows furrowed for a bit as she pondered the aftertaste. She sighed and said, “No wonder their food is more expensive than our treasure. If you ate this every day then even without practice you could still break through to the Pulse Condensation period…”

Chapter 235 – Conflict

Chapter 235 – Conflict

…

…

…

Lin Ming finished the keel soup and licked his lips. He said, “This is the heritage of a large sect. An ordinary martial artist can’t even think about things like this, much less eat it. When I went out adventuring, I ran into a senior. Every day, she would eat the rarest spirit fruits, and what she drank was the dew of a spring morning. She truly didn’t eat the smoke and fire of the mortal world and contaminate her body with the Houtian air.”

Qin Xingxuan scooped another bowl of soup for Lin Ming and asked, “If these delicacies were eaten every day, wouldn’t it be several dozens of true essence stones spent every day as well?”

Lin Ming said, “That’s right, but how many true essence stones do you think our Sky Fortune Kingdom’s true essence mines produce every year? 99% of that is sent to the Seven Profound Valleys. Besides us, there are also 35 countries whose resources, such as medicinal herbs, materials, precious ores, and other things, are shipped here every day. The direct disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys probably enjoy over a thousand true essence stones every month. Even if they eat food like this every day, it probably isn’t anything to them. They might even eat foods better than this.”

“The difference is just too big!” Qin Xingxuan sighed. In Sky Fortune Kingdom, she lived in the upper echelons of society. But once she arrived here, she actually had to be careful about every meal, for fear that she wouldn’t be able to afford it.

In Sky Fortune Kingdom, common martial artists had to risk their lives in order to obtain a few normal medicinal herbs. And there were even more who couldn't afford the materials and money for medicine to practice martial arts, and thus, they had hidden internal injuries left over in their body. These martial artists would be disabled in their late forties. When Qin Xingxuan thought of this, she suddenly felt sad.

This was the disparity that a martial artist had to face from their very birth!

Many martial artists of Sky Fortune Kingdom wanted to reach the Pulse Condensation period, but even if they were diligent in cultivating their entire lives, it might not bear any fruit. But those that came from the Seven Profound Valley's Total Faction only needed to eat and sleep every day, and with just a bit of practice, they could break through to the Pulse Condensation period, or even reach the peak Houtian realm. If their parents were Valley Elders, they would be given focus and resources during training, and with a few Heaven Opening Pills, they could become a Xiantian master.

Thinking this, Qin Xingxuan quietly looked at Lin Ming. She suddenly thought, wasn't Lin Ming from an ordinary family? He had struggled so far to arrive where he was now. What price did he have to pay? What kind of danger did he have to face in order to obtain his lucky opportunities?

As she recalled Lin Ming's rare once in millennia perception and his ethereal martial intent, Qin Xingxuan felt some regret. If Lin Ming was born in a large sect, his results might even be better than they were now.

"What are you thinking of?" Lin Ming asked with a smile after he demolished the second bowl of soup. He found that Qin Xingxuan was quietly gazing at him, a thoughtful and deep look in her limpid eyes.

"Nothing much. I just think that this world is very unfair. An ordinary martial artist can diligently practice for a lifetime, and yet, they would never be able to touch a toe of these sect juniors."

"Yes, life is unfair. But even so, you can either resign yourself to fate, or fight against the heavens. I heard in the legends that in the past, Emperor Shakya also came from a humble background. He fused 7 different types of martial intent and broke through the martial void. It is harder for a common martial artist to succeed then to ascend to the heavens. But, if one truly does succeed, because they were tempered by their road of hardship and suffering, the path they walk down might even go farther than that of the disciples of a sect."

Lin Ming was very calm as he spoke this. Qin Xingxuan suddenly felt that Lin Ming was talking about himself.

Qin Xingxuan was silent for a moment, and then, she turned her head to look out of the window. Her heartbeat quickened as a strange thought popped up in her mind, "Can I catch up with his shadow? In just half a year, I was overtaken by him. In the future… the gap between us will only grow… "

Thinking this, Qin Xingxuan felt something aching in her young heart that she couldn't identify.

At this moment, several martial artists in bright clothing entered the Desert Flower Hall. The one leading them yelled, "Waiter! Come get us a table with some good dishes and two jars of Dragon Bone Wine!"

"Okay!" The waiter could instantly tell from the attitude of these people that they were wealthy patrons. He was all smiles as he walked over to greet them. The manner and aura with which this group of people ordered dishes was completely different than Lin Ming and Qin Xingxuan.

Desert Flower Hall was one of Profound Sky City's best restaurants, and it was also one of the places that was most frequented by young talents. Lin Ming saw the group place their equipment on the table, and all of them were high-grade human-step treasures. Obviously, they came from some extraordinary background.

"I've waited well enough for these last three years. I didn't have a chance to participate in the last Total Faction Martial Meeting, but now, I've finally struggled enough and they've given me a spot. If I can get a good ranking this time, father won't be able to say anything about it."

The young martial artist who said this was a half-step into the Pulse Condensation period. He looked about 18 years old. In another year or two, he would most likely break into the Pulse Condensation period. If he achieved the Pulse Condensation period at 19 or 20 years old, that result couldn't be matched by anyone in the Sky Fortune Kingdom except by Lin Ming and Qin Xingxuan.

And listening to the way he spoke, not only was this youth's cultivation high, but his combat prowess was probably much higher than a normal martial artist. Otherwise, he wouldn't have the chance to participate in this Total Faction Martial Meeting.

"Haha, Brother Ouyang is too humble. During this Total Faction Martial Meeting, you will at least reach the top 100 rankings!"

"I'm just a bit too lacking. If I want to reach the top 100 rankings, I'll need to be at the Pulse Condensation period. If I try hard, I have hope that I'll be able to enter the top 150."

"Brother Ouyang is too modest. Who doesn't know that Brother Ouyang's 'Divine Acacia Power' has already reached the fourth layer? There are many Pulse Condensation disciples that are still struggling at the third layer. In terms of combat power, Brother Ouyang's true strength is at least equal to the middle Pulse Condensation period. If compared with those countryside bumpkins from the 36 countries, even their peak Pulse Condensation martial artists wouldn't be Brother Ouyang's match!"

The young man named Ouyang drank a glass of wine and smiled. His name was Ouyang Ziyun, one of the Acacia Faction disciples that would participate in the Total Faction Martial Meeting. "Come on, don't compare me with those martial artists of the 36 countries, that's nothing more than an insult to me. You might as well compare me to the 16 martial cultivation martial families. At least those families have a legacy of a thousand years, and also have some ability. They should have sent a few talented people to this year's Martial Meeting."

"Are you saying that the Zhang Family's Zhang Yanzhao might reach the top 20? Although he may reach the top 20, he is still really inferior to the direct disciples of our Seven Profound Valleys. Let alone Brother Ouyang, even if it were us, if we went to the 36 countries and 16 martial families, we would sweep 99% of those so-called talents away."

"Hahaha... "

As the laughter came over from the wine table, Qin Xingxuan had a very unpleasant and angry expression. She clenched her teeth and frowned as she said, "These people are simply too arrogant!"

"Strength determines status. It's normal for these Seven Profound Valleys disciples to look down on the 36 countries and the 16 martial families. But to speak so brashly and loudly, they really do not place others in their eyes. There aren't only the disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys that dine at this Desert Flower Hall." As Lin Ming said this, he pointed over to a table. Qin Xingxuan followed his finger's direction and saw three young men and a young girl stand up from a nearby table. They had very black and somber expressions as they walked over to where the Seven Profound Valley disciples were sitting.

Ouyang Ziyun also noticed the four people walk over. These four individuals had a small golden dragon embroidered on the chest of their robes. Obviously, they came from the same family.

His eyes swept over them, taking note of their cultivation. The leader of the shabby little group was a youth who was at early Pulse Condensation. The other three were at the Bone Forging stage.

Even though he was at the Pulse Condensation period, the truth is that his meridians had just opened, and his foundation wasn't solid.

Seeing these people's cultivation, Ouyang Ziyun smiled. This kind of brash martial artist had just stepped into the Pulse Condensation period, and even though their strength hadn't increased by much, they still held a superior feeling towards anyone that was at the Bone Forging stage, thinking that they wouldn't be his match.

"This is nice too,today I will ruin your spirit, and let you know how big the gap is between you and the Total Faction disciples!" Thinking this, Ouyang Ziyun's smile widened even more.

"You said that you will sweep my 16 martial cultivation families away? Good. I, Long Yun, am standing here today. How about you try and sweep me away!" The leader of the group, who was a Pulse Condensation, coldly snorted. He looked around 20 years old, and most likely, he came here to participate in the Total Faction Martial Meeting.

"Long Yun? From Flower Spirit Mountain's Long Family? Humph, you think to speak up with that trivial family name?" Ouyang Ziyun played with the wine in his hand, not even disdaining to stand up.

"Why don't you see if we are your match!?" Hearing Ouyang Ziyun insult her family, the young girl behind Long Yun snapped. The treasure sword in her hand had already left its scabbard!

Ouyang Ziyun laughed. "This beautiful rose has some thorns. I have recently broken through to the fourth layer of the 'Divine Acacia Power', and was just looking for some talented women to cultivate with me. Your looks and cultivation are barely acceptable, are you interested?"

As Ouyang Ziyun said this, the Seven Profound Valleys martial artists who were sitting with him also laughed. The young girl from the Long Family ground her teeth together. Not only had she been sexually harassed, she had also been insulted. How could she not be angry?

"I'll kill you!"

The young girl pulled her sword out to strike, but she was actually stopped by Long Yun. “Ninth Sister, you are not his match. Let me.”

Long Yun took a long spear out from his spatial ring and took a strange stance, “Surname Ouyang, today, I will experience your ‘Divine Acacia Power’. And I will have a look to see if you have the qualifications to spout such boastful crap!”

Seeing Long Yun’s weapon, Lin Ming’s eyes shone. This youth was actually a spear user, that was quite rare.

As the saying went: Sword like Jade, Saber like Tiger, Spear like Dragon. There were many martial artists, who after becoming famous, would use the name of their weapon or cultivation method to establish a martial family. For instance, the Seven Profound Valleys’ Zither Faction’s Founder took Qin as her surname, qin meaning zither. As for those that used the spear, they might create a family named long, which also meant dragon.

As the guests sitting nearby saw a fight about to break out, not only did they not panic, but they looked over with great interest. They drank their wine, ate their food, and looked forward to a spectacular performance.

The restaurant waiter didn’t seem to be overly excited. He draped a towel off his back and began to put the wine away as he slowly said, “Several masters, if our store is damaged, then the items must be compensated. Would you prefer the winner to pay or the loser to pay?”

Hearing the waiter ask this, Lin Ming didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. This really was a wonderful restaurant. But, this was quite normal. After all, those that came here were mostly proud and arrogant martial artists. Causing fights over disputes was probably a common matter.

“Naturally, the loser will pay.” Ouyang Ziyun lazily rose from his seat, a playful smile tugging at his face. “Surname Long, let me warn you, any item at Desert Flower Hall is not cheap. If you want to fight, having to pay one hundred true essence stones is already a low estimate. Don’t think you don’t have to pay if you lose! The boss of Desert Flower Hall is not some chump. If you're scared, there is still time for you to kneel right now and beg for forgiveness."

Hearing 100 true essence stones, Long Yun's face shifted between red and white. Eating here today had already left him bleeding in the heart. If he had to pay 100 true essence stones, he really wouldn't be able to afford it. But this time, he had no path left to retreat.

"You think that you've already won? What a joke! Take my spear!"

Long Yun gave a great shout and stepped forwards. True essence flooded out and gathered on Long Yun's spear, thrusting straight towards Ouyang Ziyun's chest like a black snake!

Chapter 236 – Youthful Instincts

Chapter 236 – Youthful Instincts

….

…

…

“Humph! How overconfident. Don’t bite off more than you can chew!” Ouyang Ziyun flipped his wrist and a three foot long purple-red sword appeared in his hands. This was a high-grade human-step treasure.

True essence flooded the blade, and the purple-red sword began to turn the color of bleached bone. Ouyang Ziyun’s sword cut out, and noise of crying ghosts sounded out as his blade met Long Yun’s spear.

Peng!

As spear and sword crossed, a wave of true essence raged out, directly tossing aside several tables. Long Yun shuddered; he had felt a Yin cold drill into his body like a poisonous serpent. His right hand that held his spear instantly lost all feeling, as if it wasn’t his own.

Long Yun took a few steps, his face pale. Ouyang Ziyun was still quietly sitting there – not even the table behind him had been impacted in the least.

“Big Brother.”

“Senior-apprentice Brother.”

The two young men and the girl behind Long Yun hurried over to support him. However, as soon as they touched Long Yun, they instantly felt a chilling cold and were frightened.

Lin Ming had been watching everything from the side. What Ouyang Ziyun had used was the Life Severing Dead Bone Blade. He had personally experienced this technique from the hands of Zhang Guanyu and Ouyang Dihua.

Ouyang Ziyun had a lower cultivation and his true essence was less thick than Ouyang Dihua's; but, in terms of controlling the strength of the Life Severing Dead Bone Blade, he was much more skillful than Ouyang Dihua.

"This Ouyang Ziyun, although his cultivation isn't at the Pulse Condensation Period, his 'Divine Acacia Power' is at a higher level than Ouyang Dihua's. He should be considered a genius who has his own pride.

Ouyang Ziyun laughed, "You can't even take my sword? Those that come out from the 16 martial families are nothing but waste!"

"I think that your 16 families and 36 countries should hold their own Martial Meeting, and not come to the Seven Profound Valleys' to embarrass yourselves. Otherwise, later you might not even be able to cross the mountain gate! You would all be a joke!"

"Haha, well said Brother Ouyang. This bunch of rat shits really ruin the soup pot. The Total Faction has raised their age limit to 22, and also lowered the threshold as far as possible. They have more than 200 people that come, and yet only little more than 70 can pass the mountain gate! With such a great effort, they came hundreds of thousands of miles here and still can't pass through the gate, isn't that just too funny?"

Listening to these unscrupulous people mocking him, Long Yun burned with anger. He gave a loud shout, and true essence surged within his body. His face turned a strange purple red, and a large crack appeared in the floor beneath his feet. Even the walls began to faintly tremble.

"Die!"

Long Yun's figure blurred, and he rushed like a phantom towards Ouyang Ziyun. With both hands on his spear, he smashed downwards. A shining bloody light burst out from Long Yun just like a rising red sun; apparently, this was his ultimate ability.

Ouyang Ziyun's eyes revealed an imposing color for the first time. He bit the top of his tongue and spat out a mouthful of blood that covered the blade of his sword. The cold and shining sword, after absorbing the blood, turned a dangerous blood-red.

"Soul Severing Blood Skull!"

Ouyang Ziyun gave a piercing roar as if his heart and lungs were being ripped out. A chilly wind blew through the entire restaurant, and vitality seemed to drain from the air. A red skull shot out from the blade of the sword, swiftly rushing towards Long Yun!

The skull opened its massive mouth. Long Yun shouted and thrust his spear directly into the bloody skull's jaws. True essence erupted outwards. However, afterwards the blood skull actually swallowed all of Long Yun's true essence and inflated like a balloon, then bit down on Long Yun's shoulder!

"Ah—!"

Long Yun miserably screamed. It felt as if all of the blood vitality throughout his body was being drawn out by this blood skill. His right arm that was bitten by the bloody skull began to visibly wither, and that bloody skull which was absorbing his blood essence grew more and more red as if it were dripping blood.

"Big Brother!"

"Senior-apprentice Brother!"

The girl that was with Long Yun cried out. Obviously, the feelings she had towards Long Yun were very deep. Their relationship probably wasn't as simple as apprentice brother and sister.

Ouyang Ziyun saw the girl's reaction and a deviant light shined in his eyes. He wiped his mouth of blood, true essence restlessly roiling in his body. He paid a large price to use the Soul Severing Blood Skill. Without several days of time, he wouldn't be restored to his peak condition.

At this time, Long Yun had been completely swallowed by that bloody skull. His body was suspended in midair, as if he were wrapped in a giant bloody bubble. He had lost all his color, his eyes shrank, and almost seemed dead.

Although it looked horrifying, the truth was that Ouyang Ziyun had never dared to kill since the start. The Total Faction Martial Meeting would begin soon, and if he killed a contestant in front of so many people, it would be very bad. Even if he had a backer in the Seven Profound Valleys he wouldn't dare to do so.

The young girl wished she could tear Ouyang Ziyun to shreds. But, she was just able to maintain her reasoning. She was no match for Long Yun, and the gap between her and Ouyang Ziyun was even greater. "Let go of my Senior-apprentice Brother!"

Ouyang Ziyun lewdly grinned at the young girl and said, "You want me to let go of your Senior-apprentice Brother? Hehe, why would I do anything so cheaply? I lost a great deal of my blood and vitality in order to use the Soul Severing Blood Skull; I won't be able to fully recover for several days. Since the Martial Meeting is about to begin, this won't just be a small loss for me."

The young girl trembled with rage, her chest heaving up and down. She hatefully said, "What do you want?"

Ouyang Ziyun's eyes lasciviously swept over the young girl's milk-white breasts. He vulgarly smiled and said, "It's simple. Double cultivate with me for three days so I can recover my vitality. Don't worry, double cultivating also has advantages for you..."

"You... you..." The young girl could hardly believe her own ears. This Ouyang Ziyun was actually shameless to such a degree!

“Ninth Younger Sister, don’t speak nonsense with such an animal. Let’s go and kill him together!” The two young boys behind the young girl were ignited with rage. They pulled out long spears from their spatial rings.

“Right, let’s go together!”

They couldn’t endure this rage any longer. True essence erupted from their bodies. Their cultivation methods were identical; obviously, their cultivation stemmed from the same heritage of the Long Family.

Ouyang Ziyun coldly snorted, “You are not my match!”

“Hey, we’ll come play with you for a bit.” The silk-robed disciples behind Ouyang Ziyun stood up, smiling. They were at the peak of Bone Forging, and since Long Yun was defeated, they were more than enough to deal with these three remaining.

Suddenly, the imposing momentum of both sides burst out, but, the Long Family was obviously the weaker side. The young girl’s eyes flashed with loathing, but her face was extremely pale. She knew that if they fought, her side would absolutely lose.

At this time, the three of them suddenly heard a sizzling sound overhead. A purple electric snake drilled into the skull, took a circle around, and then with a ‘peng!’ sound, the bloody skull exploded into a crimson fog. Long Yun fell down from the air, unconscious.

“Senior-apprentice Brother!”

“Big Brother!”

The young girl and the two young boys ran over to catch Long Yun. Seeing Long Yun’s pale face, the young girl’s heart ached and her lips trembled, it felt as if a blade had been thrust into her heart.

“Who!?”

The Soul Severing Blood Skull was connected to the blood and vitality of Ouyang Ziyun. Since it was suddenly broken, the blood within his body began to surge restlessly, and he almost spat out a mouthful.

Ouyang Ziyun angrily glared at Lin Ming and Qin Xingxuan. Because they had been sitting in a remote corner, he hadn’t really taken notice of them.

“Who are you? Which family are you from?” Looking at Lin Ming and Qin Xingxuan’s clothing, they were obviously not from the Seven Profound Valleys. That was why he asked this question.

“We aren’t from a family. We are from Sky Fortune Kingdom.” Qin Xingxuan said as she sent a loathing look towards Ouyang Ziyun. Towards the disciples of the Acacia Faction who used their strength to bully men and take women, she found them incomparably disgusting.

The Seven Profound Valleys was a paradox with both good and evil. Because of the difference in the Seven Factions’ cultivation methods, their personalities also varied greatly. As the saying went, those who walked different paths cannot make plans together. There wasn’t much love lost between the Seven Great Elders of the Seven Factions. Not even the Seven Profound Valleys’ Valley Master could change this.

In the Seven Profound Valleys, the Acacia Faction was infamous for being absolutely wicked. This was because of their cultivation method, because their sect required one to travel around and plunder women to use as cultivation furnaces. Otherwise, they would not be able to advance in their cultivation method. Not only that, but because the disciples of the Acacia Faction had intense desires, this often resulted in them bullying men and taking their women.

As for these matters, the Great Elder of the Acacia Faction had adopted a manner in which he tacitly consented to this as long as they didn’t provoke a deadly calamity. As for the Seven Profound Valleys’ Valley Master, even if he wanted to do something, he could not control this.

“Sky Fortune Kingdom? Haha, so it is Sky Fortune Kingdom. In the 36 countries, Sky Fortune Kingdom is only ranked in the middle. You are even worse than the 16 martial families!” Although Ouyang Ziyun was insolently smiling, he was vigilant in his heart. Since when did Sky Fortune Kingdom have a talented martial artist of the thunder-attribute? A thunder-attribute martial artist had a restraining effect towards ghosts and phantoms; they were the most difficult to deal with.

The few people behind Ouyang Ziyun didn’t know that he had already taken a disadvantage. Hearing that the two came from Sky Fortune Kingdom, they laughed, “Brother Ouyang, there is no need for you to take action, we are enough to handle them. These two country bumpkin martial artists came from Sky Fortune Kingdom with only a trivial Bone Forging cultivation and yet dare to act so rampantly. Speaking of which, that little girl’s skin looks quite good. Ah, brothers, let’s help take her so Brother Ouyang can cultivate the Perfect level of the Divine Acacia Power’s fourth layer!”

Hearing them have such dastardly ideas towards her, Qin Xingxuan became short of breath. She clenched her teeth and took out a longsword from her spatial ring.

But at this moment, Lin Ming held down Qin Xingxuan’s sword and said, “Let me handle this.”

As she relaxed her sword hand, Qin Xingxuan nipped her lip and said, “I can deal with those underlings, but I’m not confident against that Ouyang boy. Still, I will have no problems protecting myself.

Hearing Qin Xingxuan’s words, Lin Ming was a bit surprised. Ouyang Ziyun had the strength of an ordinary middle Pulse Condensation martial artist. If Qin Xingxuan was able to protect herself from him, that meant that she had the power of a peak early Pulse Condensation martial artist. Her progress was just too quick – sixth-grade talents were just too abnormal.

He still pressed down Qin Xingxuan’s sword and confidently smiled at her, “Don’t worry, i’ll fight this time.”

Lin Ming said he would fight, but that didn’t mean he would resort to violence. For him, this was just a spur of the moment fight due to circumstances. There was no need to be violent.

The playboy disciples of Sky Fortune City, especially those juniors of large martial families, would frequently come to blows in restaurants or brothels because of misspoken words or because of love for women. These actions may seem as if they came from were brainless and arrogant fools, but what young hot-blooded youth had never been driven by their natural impulses and obsessions towards beautiful women, and acted completely out of sorts?

Although Lin Ming didn’t agree with this approach, he had to admit that he once envied the pleasurable and arrogant life of these playboys. However at the time, he had limited strength and no background to speak of. Usually every day he would be in the back mountains, practicing his martial arts day in and day out like endless torture. That sort of life left him completely insulated from this, but also isolated.

His youthful instincts had been suppressed for so many years, and now, he finally had an opportunity to fight for a woman he liked.

He wanted to fight for Qin Xingxuan.

Chapter 237 – Soul Force Genius

Chapter 237 – Soul Force Genius

…

…

…

Lin Ming stood in front of Qin Xingxuan, then slowly placed down the bowl in his hand. "I just heard a moment ago that you want to sweep away the 36 countries. I'm looking forward to that very much. Since I'm standing right here, why don't you try sweeping me away."

"Haha, this silly boy actually thinks he's something. Brothers, let's fulfill his wish and sweep away this stupid boy just like garbage." The one speaking was a black-clothed martial artist. He didn't think he could win by himself, but with everyone together, he didn't believe that they wouldn't be able to handle such a kid.

With the shout from the black-clothed man, the four men rushed out together. Lin Ming stood still where he was. Not only did he not dodge, but he had even closed his eyes.

The black-clothed martial artist didn't know just what Lin Ming was trying to do, but seeing his sword about to fall onto Lin Ming's face, the corners of his lips curved up in a devilish smirk. 'Today I will make you suffer!'

As their attacks were about to come down, Lin Ming suddenly opened his eyes, his vision sweeping out.

The black vortex bloomed like a beautiful obsidian lotus, devouring everything in its wake. The Samsara martial intent erupted outwards, and at this time, countless illusions poured into the four martial artists' minds. Their bodies instantly shook, as monstrously turbulent waves shook their spiritual sea, their consciousness becoming a complete mess.

Their hands no longer moved. Instead, the martial artists' eyes became glazed over with a dark glimmering light, their pupils losing focus.

Plop plop plop plop!

The four martial artists fell to the ground like a bunch of dead dogs, foaming at the mouth. Their bodies were trembling as if they had an epileptic seizure.

Ouyang Ziyun was looking at them confusedly. They had all been taken down with a single glance? What had he done?

Ouyang Ziyun subconsciously tightened the grip on his sword as he looked at Lin Ming with a slight tinge of fear creeping into his eyes.

Those in the hall who had been enjoying the fight also instantly noticed Lin Ming. Just where had this boy come from? Although those four martial artists' strength weren't that much, they were still peak Bone Forging martial artists; why did they inexplicably all fall to the ground?

“Things have gotten a bit interesting.” A youth with an early Pulse Condensation cultivation commented as he leisurely sipped his wine. His eyes were filled with curiosity as he looked at Lin Ming. It was simply inconceivable for someone with this strength to come from the 36 countries.

Against these four martial artists, Lin Ming had already stayed his hand. He certainly couldn't turn them into idiots. But this was also good enough. Their spirituals seas had been injured and they would take at least a few weeks – if not a month – to recover.

Ouyang Ziyun's complexion was very ugly, as if he had just kicked an iron door. But, he couldn't back down. There were many people watching him in the Desert Flower Hall, who knew how many of them were disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys? If he chickened out today, then these people would definitely publicize how he was like a turtle once they returned to their respective factions. In the Seven Factions, every disciple competed against each other. The Acacia Faction tacitly allowed its disciples to act in a domineering and arrogant manner wherever they went. So if one were to be a coward, that would truly be a great disgrace.

Ouyang Ziyun braced himself and said, “Boy, don’t play such petty tricks in front of me! What you used just now was a soul attack? If you were skilled in this method of attack and the difference in strength isn’t too great, then you could instantly dispatch someone, But, if you run into someone stronger than yourself, then your ability is worth nothing. In fact, your powers will only backfire on yourself. None of this represents how strong you are.”

After all, Ouyang Ziyun originated from a large sect, and he had a respectable amount of knowledge. In just a few words he was able to luckily guess about Lin Ming’s Samsara martial intent, however, the Samsara martial intent’s effects were much more formidable than Ouyang Ziyun had imagined, it was only that Lin Ming hadn’t yet been able to fully develop them.

“If you can take my strike, then I sincerely admit defeat.”

As Ouyang Ziyun said this, his entire body ignited with a queer purple fire that burned all around him. What was strange about this was not that the fire wasn’t hot, but that it caused a bone chilling breeze to blow through the room. After this cold wind touched the table and floor behind him, a layer of purple ice congealed over them. After a period of time, the furniture that was wrapped in this purple ice turned into ashes, as if the ice had a hot fire wrapped within.

This was the technique that Ouyang Ziyun had comprehended after reaching the fourth layer of the ‘Divine Acacia Power’ – Purple Flame Bone Lance. To use it required an extreme consumption of true essence. He had originally planned to use it as his final move within the Total Faction Martial Meeting, but at this moment, he had no choice but to bring it out.

Lin Ming stood still and crossed his arms against his backs. Against someone like Ouyang Ziyun, there was no point in making a move.

In a few breaths of time, the brilliantly shining purple flames began to condense into a purple lance within Ouyang Ziyun's right hand. The sounds of crying ghosts began to emanate outwards from the lance.

Ouyang Ziyun's face became incomparably pale and wan. All of the skills within the 'Divine Acacia Power' were the extreme Yin and extreme cold. Using any move required a massive consumption of essence and blood, which was why they would take a woman's Yin energy in order to recover their own.

For Ouyang Ziyun to produce this purple bone lance was already his limit. He was just like a skinny old man who was trying to wield a heavy several-dozen jin sledgehammer; he was barely able to control it.

"Die!" Ouyang Ziyun barely managed to spit out this word. The endless purple flames on the purple bone lance in his hand were wavering; it would be very difficult to throw it at this time.

Lin Ming shook his head and said, "Are you done yet? I've been waiting for you so long that my food is getting cold. Do you think you could actually kill someone using a move like this? You would already have long been done in by your enemy."

"You...!" Ouyang Ziyun was provoked by Lin Ming's mocking words and almost lost control of the bone spear within his hand. This move wasn't ready to use in actual combat yet, because Ouyang Ziyun had just broken through to the fourth layer of the 'Divine Acacia Power', and it was difficult for him to control the Purple Flame Bone Lance. If an old man used a sledgehammer to fight his enemy, it would take him a while to pick it up. Not only that, but he would most likely miss, and if things went badly, he might even twist his waist and smash his own foot.

The reason that Ouyang Ziyun used this move against Lin Ming was because he was depending on Lin Ming's conceited attitude to directly take his move. Like this, he would have a chance against Lin Ming.

"You… don't dare to take my move!?" Ouyang Ziyun tried to goad Lin Ming, barely managing to squeeze these words through his clenched teeth. His face was becoming increasingly pale, and even speaking was becoming difficult.

Lin Ming laughed as if he had heard the funniest joke. "Why would I want to take your move?"

Lin Ming's voice had just fallen when a black light flashed in his eyes. A shadowy vortex appeared in his eyes, silently enveloping Ouyang Ziyun and swallowing him whole.

Bang!

Ouyang Ziyun felt as if an explosion instantly occurred within his head. Countless images and phantoms sunk into his spiritual sea. He had already been approaching the limit of his strength, so he didn't even have the strength to resist. His body didn't tremble, he only directly collapsed to the floor. But, the Purple Flame Bone Lance in his hand had lost Ouyang Ziyun's soul force control, and dissipated.

The bone lance turned into a cloud of chilling purple fire that scattered in all directions.

If these chilling flames shot out, they would be able to wipe out the entire restaurant. As for Ouyang Ziyun who had lost consciousness, he would meet with a great disaster.

But at this moment, a black-clothed man flew down from the second floor and waved his hand. A powerful whirlwind appeared in the air and sucked all the purple flames into his hand, condensing into a dark purple orb. The black-clothed man casually flung his hand and the dark purple orb shot out of like an arrow, shattered the window, and continued flying into the horizon before it finally disappeared out of everyone's vision.

Lin Ming had already discovered this black-clothed man at this start of the conflict when he had appeared on the second floor. Lin Ming guessed he was a master that worked for the Desert Flower Hall. This restaurant was so big and was located in such a sensitive location, how could it not have a master here sitting guard?

The audience hadn't even expected such a result. They had been waiting to see how Lin Ming would deal with the Purple Flame Bone Lance; no one knew he had discovered the black-clothed man. Once Ouyang Ziyun had lost control of the bone lance, if it wasn't for the black-clothed man saving the day, Ouyang Ziyun would have been burned black by his own purple flames.

The black-clothed man furrowed his eyebrows as he looked at Lin Ming. This man's cultivation was at the peak Houtian realm, he wasn't much worse that Qin Ziya.

"Boy, you are quite cruel. If I hadn't taken action in time, then you would never have left Desert Flower Hall today.

Lin Ming apologetically smiled and said, "Senior had long since been ready to take action. There was no way Senior would let an important disciple of the Acacia Faction die in Desert Flower Hall, otherwise Desert Flower Hall's troubles would be no less than mine."

The black-clothed man stiffened, unable to think of anything that could refute Lin Ming's claim. He only coldly grunted to express his dissatisfaction. This young boy was simply mad – how could he be certain that he would take action? He didn't believe that Lin Ming knew he would come out once the purple flames began to overflow in order to salvage the situation.

"If this kid can find me, he has some ability. His soul force must be incomparably powerful. He might be born with a superior fifth-grade soul talent, or even an inferior sixth-grade." The black-clothed man's cultivation was at the peak Houtian realm. Although he hadn't reached the realm of returning to his origin, he still knew some ways to hide himself. He had been restraining his breath a moment ago in order to not be discovered by Lin Ming.

That black-clothed man sent a long look towards Lin Ming before turning to leave.

At this time, the companions of Ouyang Ziyun had already begun to wake up. They saw Ouyang Ziyun lying like a dead dog on the floor, and they shrunk back. Suppressing their headaches, they picked up Ouyang Ziyun and hastily left, not daring to look Lin Ming in the eyes.

The surrounding martial artists had all turned their gazes on Lin Ming, their expressions differing.

“A martial artist who is skilled in soul force is quite rare. I never thought that the 36 countries could produce one with passable talent.”

The martial artist who spoke was at the Pulse Condensation period and had some pride in his knowledge. The soul attack that was used on Ouyang Ziyun could instantly take out a lesser opponent, but against someone with surpassing strength, rashly using an ability like that would only cause a backlash.

“Don’t look down on him. He was able to bring down four peak Bone Forging martial artists at the same time. The power of his soul force is simply amazing, he might have a sixth-grade soul talent. I think that even an early Pulse Condensation martial artist might not be his match.”

“Mm. But like this, the most he can reach is the top 150 rankings. And before that, they are mostly early Pulse Condensation period martial artists, and they are also talented martial artists whose strength surpasses their cultivation.”

The martial artists at Desert Flower Hall were discussing this situation with true essence sound transmission. Some of them had already begun jotting down Lin Ming’s appearance and preparing to notify their family or sect.

At this time, in a private room on the second floor of Desert Flower Hall, a black-clothed man was calmly drinking a cup of wine. There was no expression on his face, as if the fierce commotion that occurred downstairs a moment ago was completely separate from him.

“This boy is a bit interesting.”

In front of the black-clothed man was a purple-clothed man, whose cultivation was at the middle Pulse Condensation period. He carried a four foot long sword on his back. There were many swordsmen who even if they had a spatial ring, would prefer to carry their sword on their back in order to increase the connection between themselves and their swords.

Chapter 238 – Jiang Lanjian

Chapter 238 – Jiang Lanjian

…

…

…

“That kid may be considered invincible underneath the Pulse Condensation period, but once he meets a true Pulse Condensation talent, anything he does will be useless.” The black-clothed martial artist casually said. His name was Jiang Lanjian, and he was a direct descendent of the Sword Faction Founder Jiang Yu. In addition, he was also the second genius direct disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys’ Sword Faction, just underneath Jiang Baoyun.

Jiang Lanjian’s cultivation was already at the peak Pulse Condensation period. With such strength, he was considered among the best disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys.

“My sword wind has already reached the higher echelons; there is nothing that I cannot cut to nihility. Whether it is obsession, life, heart demons, which also includes soul attacks, or even the power of thunder, there is nothing my sword cannot pierce. Even if that boy was at the same cultivation level as me, he still wouldn’t be my match!

“After all, soul attacks simply aren’t the correct path. At first you will have wonderful results and your strength will rapidly grow, but once you reach a higher realm, they simply become weak. If you put in too much effort, it will instead be a limiter placed on your future strength and potential.”

Jiang Lanjian calmly commented as he quietly drank his wine, pointing out the details to the purple-clothed person. The purple-clothed person laughed. He knew that Jiang Lanjian had an extremely broad vision of the world, and there was nothing wrong with his review of abilities, styles, cultivations and so on. Even the Sword Faction Sovereign praised his judgment.

“How can the disciples of the 36 countries possibly compare with you? Even if they advance to the top 100, that can already be considered their greatest glory. If they luck their way into the top 50, that can be considered the highest praise to their ancestors. As for soul attacks, they certainly aren’t the proper path, but it is still better than those unorthodox methods.”

Jiang Lanjian no longer spoke. Towards the 36 countries, if they had a decent ability, it was better than nothing – even if it didn’t follow the proper path.

“Let’s go, the Acacia Faction hates being shown up the most. Now that Ouyang Ziyun has suffered so much this time, his big brother Ouyang Zifeng will surely take revenge for him. This young boy has gotten himself into no small amount of trouble.”

....

While Lin Ming was fighting Ouyang Ziyun, Long Yun had already drank up some Bloodstone Milk to recover his blood vitality. He had recovered just in time to see Lin Ming defeating Ouyang Ziyun.

After finding out that Lin Ming came from Sky Fortune Kingdom, Long Yun was filled with emotion. The 16 martial cultivation families had also had a certain conceit and arrogance, because they had abundant resources and their own independent heritage. As for Long Yun, he was an outstanding genius of the Long Family, yet today, he had actually fallen far behind a young talent from the Sky Fortune Kingdom. Not only that, but what Long Yun was most unable to accept was that Lin Ming’s cultivation was lower than his.

“Thank you. I am Long Yun, a disciple of the 31st generation of the Long Family.” Long Yun stepped forwards, cupping his fists together in thanks.

The ancient martial cultivation families would often introduce themselves by stating which generation they stemmed from. This was also a way for these martial families to show off their heritage. For many martial artists, in order to not delay their cultivation, they would marry and have children at 30 or 40 years of age. If a family could have 31 generations of disciples, that meant they had to at least have a millennium of history.

“I am Lin Ming from Sky Fortune Kingdom.” Lin Ming politely stated his own name, then went to sit back in his own seat. Qin Xingxuan was waiting there and kindly handed Lin Ming a big bowl of keel soup. To her, Lin Ming’s victory was a natural matter. Not counting Lin Ming, even Ling Sen would have easily defeated that Ouyang Ziyun.

Long Yun also noticed that Qin Xingxuan was at the middle Bone Forging stage. This cultivation – in contrast with her young and incomparably beautiful appearance – immediately took him by surprise.

This young girl was obviously 15 or 16 years old, and yet she had such a high cultivation. Did she also have a high talent?

If she didn’t have some fortuitous encounter, then she was probably a sixth-grade martial talent.

Was she also from the Sky Fortune Kingdom? When did the Sky Fortune kingdom have so many talents?

The several people behind Long Yun also noticed Qin Xingxuan. For the past few months that Lin Ming had wandered in the Southern Wilderness, he had already grown up. His skin had tanned, his features became sharper, and his presence contained a dark edge. It wouldn’t be too much even if someone thought he was 17 years old. But as for Qin Xingxuan, she had a very sweet and young appearance. When they were the same age as Qin Xingxuan, their cultivations were only at the Altering Muscle stage.

Especially the young girl behind Long Yun. After she saw Qin Xingxuan, a deep feeling of inferiority and unworthiness emerged in her heart. After all, when two girls met, they compared not just their strength and talent, but even their looks.

Having lost in every aspect, the young girl could only give a heavy sigh. If she knew earlier, then she wouldn't have come.

Long Yun hid his shock and sent a friendly smile towards Qin Xingxuan. Perhaps in five years, this young girl would become infamous throughout all 36 countries.

Seeing Long Yun smile at her, Qin Xingxuan only politely nodded her head.

Since Long Yun had no intention of staying, he quickly bid farewell.

"Brother Lin, if you go to Huoluo Nation, you can come visit my Long Family. My Long Family lives at the edge of Huoluo Nation, at Flower Spirit Mountain. Well then, goodbye."

"Farewell."

……………………………

Several hours later, Seven Profound Valleys Acacia Faction –

The mountain peak where the Acacia Faction was stationed was lush with perennial flowers and plants, as if it were a glorious spring morning. This was because the founder of the Acacia Faction, Ouyang Xun, had paid a steep price in order to set up a massive array formation at the peak of the Acacia Faction and prevent the cold mountain air from entering. Because of this, the entire mountain peak was green all year round.

Of course, because of this array formation, over 10,000 pure true essence stones were consumed every year. In a small country, this amount would already have been enough to bankrupt a great family.

As one walked up to the peak of the Acacia Faction, not only did they see gorgeous flowers, but there were also superb and exquisite women roaming around. This sight was simply beautiful to behold.

The faction within the Seven Profound Valleys with the most women was not the Zither Faction, who primarily took in female disciples, but the Acacia Faction.

For every male disciple of the Acacia Faction, there would be three or four female companions.

Some of these women were coerced, but most of them had voluntarily come. The cultivation method of the Acacia Faction had a greater benefit for the men, but if applied properly, would also benefit the women. Because of this, there were some fourth-grade talents who hadn't been able to join the Seven Profound Valleys as disciples, who would rather enter the Acacia Faction and cultivate the 'Divine Acacia Power'. With the assistance of the Acacia Faction, they hoped they would step into the Pulse Condensation period, or even the Houtian realm, before their looks began to wither from age.

If they could do this, they would have dozens of extra years of life, and they would be able to remain at the most beautiful point of their lives. To those beautiful women, this was a fatal temptation. Among them there were even many women who came from distinguished families of the 36 countries; their statuses weren't much different compared to Bai Jingyun or Murong Zi's positions in Sky Fortune Kingdom. If Bai Jingyun hadn't preferred to die rather than join Ouyang Dihua, she would have entered here and also have become a companion in these halls.

At a gathering in the mountains, there was a group of female cultivators that had come together. They were celebrating the fact that they had just stepped into the Pulse Condensation period and attained several dozen years of youth. Most of them were in their mid-twenties; this was the time in a woman's life when they were at their most mesmerizing and enchanting. Because they had good maintenance of their looks, and took a variety of pills, their skin was tender and moist like water. They looked no different from a young girl in her teens.

But as they were celebrating, they were surprised to see several Acacia Faction disciples hurriedly carrying someone up the mountain. This person was pale and his whole body was twitching, just as if he were an epileptic.

“That twitching person is probably… is that Ouyang Ziyun?” A woman recognized Ouyang Ziyun. There were a handful of promising future disciples that the female cultivators gave special attention towards. After all, if they cultivated with these geniuses, they would obtain more resources. If they took care of them, they might even obtain miracle medicines that would help them break through to the Pulse Condensation period. To these women, pill toxins were something that never entered their thoughts. As long as they entered the Pulse Condensation period, they had no problem, even if their combat prowess was horrible.

“It’s really Ouyang Ziyun. Heavens, how did he come to look like that?” Another woman covered up her mouth. Recently things seemed to have been occurring at the Acacia Faction. Just a while ago an Elder’s nephew, Ouyang Dihua, had been killed. And now, Ouyang Ziyun had become like this.

As they spoke, a middle-aged man and a youth came soaring down from the mountain. Apparently they had received a message in advance and had come down to receive them.

As soon as the middle-aged man saw Ouyang Ziyun’s pitiful appearance, his soul force swept out and he immediately understood his condition. After he reluctantly summoned the Purple Flame Bone Lance, he was attacked. The following backlash from the attack had turned him into this. It would take him at least half a month to recover.

Like this, he could not participate in the Total Faction Martial Meeting. This would be a large blow to Ouyang Ziyun. The middle-aged man frowned and asked, “What happened?”

This middle-aged man was Ouyang Ziyun’s father, Ouyang Wenzong. He was a Xiantian elder of the Acacia Faction. In the Acacia Faction, around 70% of the elders had the surname of Ouyang. This was because they were the descendants of the Acacia Faction Founder, Ouyang Xun. As they had a solid foundation already established, they were able to obtain more resources. Also, because their inherited talent was better than other disciples, the chances of them breaking into the Xiantian realm were quite high.

The several low-level Acacia Faction disciples were compelled by Ouyang Wenzong's forceful aura, and immediately felt a heavy sense of pressure. They didn't dare to say anything false, and reported what had happened with quivering lips.

As the middle-aged man heard the several people tell their story, his eyes flashed. "An expert soul attack user, but also has some ability to control thunder. He is able to instantly defeat any martial artist at his cultivation, and is invincible under the Pulse Condensation period?"

The three Acacia Faction disciples were only trying to shift the blame onto someone else, thus they had branded Lin Ming as brilliant and mysterious, giving him the title of 'invincible under the Pulse Condensation period'. In their opinion, Ouyang Ziyun was already someone with only a rare rival underneath the Pulse Condensation period. If Lin Ming could defeat Ouyang Ziyun in an instant, then saying invincible underneath the Pulse Condensation period wasn't an exaggeration.

"Humph. This world is so big, and yet he dares to call himself invincible underneath the Pulse Condensation period?" The youth snorted, obviously thinking otherwise. This youth was Ouyang Ziyun's older brother, Ouyang Zifeng, and his cultivation was at the late Pulse Condensation period.

"Those martial artists that can use soul attacks are completely worthless against martial artists that are stronger. I will defeat him on the Martial Meeting stage, and make him pay a great price for what he's done."

"Mm. But only as far as the rules allow, don't try to be provocative." Ouyang Wenzong also wanted to have Ouyang Zifeng give some payback for his youngest son, otherwise it would frustrate Ouyang Ziyun's heart and affect his future cultivation.

"Father, don't worry. I understand."

…………………………

On the fifth day since Qin Ziya and his team arrived at Profound Sky City, the Total Faction Martial Meeting began. The 520 disciples of the 36 countries within the Seven Profound territory, the 16 martial cultivation families, as well as the Seven Profound Valleys Total Faction, converged at the Profound Sky Mountain Range and waited to enter the entrance.

With so many young talents gathered, Lin Ming was inconspicuous in the crowd. Although he had aroused a lot of interest in Desert Flower Hall a few days ago, compared to the middle Pulse Condensation or late Pulse Condensation talents, he was only a little genius worth paying attention to, unworthy of being the cause of widespread discussion amongst everyone.

Chapter 239 – Let Me Use The Seraphic Pond

Chapter 239 – Let Me Use The Seraphic Pond

…

…

…

In the continuous 10,000 miles of the Profound Sky Mountains, the Seven Profound area was located in the center. It was rumored that once, there had been a Purple Flood Dragon who had ascended into a True Dragon, and it died here, its bones were buried in the ground for 10,000 years and forming an ancient dragon vein mountain range. The Profound Sky Mountains' greatest mountain peak was the center of where this dragon pulse mountain range had been.

Because of this, the heaven and earth origin energy in the Profound Sky Mountains was exceedingly rich. If one cultivated here, they would get twice the result with half the effort. Not only that, but there was an abundant true essence stone vein located in a canyon of the Profound Sky Mountains that produced not ordinary true essence stones, but high-quality medium-grade true essence stones, and even high-grade true essence stones.

These high quality true essence stones were only given to core disciples and Elders of the sect. An ordinary martial artist would never have heard of them, much less use them.

At this time, there was a gathering of young talents in an open area at the entrance of the Profound Sky Mountains.

Because there were too many people, Qin Ziya and his group were assigned a space that was only a few dozen feet wide. Lin Ming and Ling Sen sat cross-legged on the ground, tuning their condition. However, Zhou Yu and Liang Long weren't as calm. They were worrying that they might not even pass the mountain gate. If they couldn't even get through the first hurdle, it would be a big shame for them.

"If your heart isn't still, it will be very difficult to display your true potential." Qin Ziya slowly said from the side. Naturally, he was referring to Zhou Yu and Liang long.

Zhou Yu and Liang Long were embarrassed. They certainly understood this, but it was difficult to keep their hearts steady knowing their own lack of strength.

But as they helplessly sat down and began adjusting their mental state, a voice suddenly sounded out, "Oh my, if it isn't Martial House Qin from the Sky Fortune Kingdom? How fortunate it is to meet you!"

Qin Ziya turned his head and saw a tall and thin middle-aged man wearing a long gray robe walking towards him, all smiles.

Qin Ziya politely cupped his fists in greetings, and frostily said, "Martial House Master Luo, how nice to see you here!"

Martial House Master Luo glanced at Lin Ming before sweeping his vision across each of the Sky Fortune Kingdom disciples, probing their cultivation. His expression became even happier than it was before. This Sky Fortune Kingdom hadn't even sent out a single Pulse Condensation period disciple. The only one that had a chance of accomplishing anything was Qin Xingxuan, but she was just too young, so she wouldn't get much results. He already expected the Sky Fortune Kingdom to be a complete debacle during this Total Faction Martial Meeting.

"Martial House Master Qin, are these the five disciples that you brought this time? How come you also have one at the early Bone Forging stage? With great strength like that, won't it be difficult to cross the gate?" Martial House Master Luo said with a touch of sarcasm.

The only one with an early Bone Forging cultivation was Ling Sen, his words were just too harsh and grating on the ears. Ling Sen opened his eyes to glance at Martial House Master

Luo before returning to his meditative state. To someone like Ling Sen, who was impersonal and a bit cold-blooded at times, how others perceived him was simply meaningless.

"Strength doesn't just depend on cultivation." Qin Ziya faintly said, before disinclining to speak to the other party again.

This Martial House Master Luo was the Martial House Master of Huoluo Nation's Seven Profound Martial House. He and Qin Ziya had been disciples together during their time at the Seven Profound Valleys, and their relationship had been somewhat rocky. Afterwards, they were later assigned to hold the position of Martial House Master in the neighboring countries of Huoluo Nation and Sky Fortune Kingdom. Huoluo Nation and Sky Fortune Kingdom were doomed to be in the same group together. Ever since then, the two Martial Houses had been in a silently fierce competition. Martial House Master Luo never missed a chance to step on Qin Ziya's back.

"What Martial House Master Qin said is right, it is true that cultivation doesn't represent someone's total strength, but it is the most important factor in determining strength. Since our Huoluo Nation is so close to your Sky Fortune Kingdom, our fates will be intertwined at this Total Faction Martial Meeting, and we will experience honor and disgrace together. Since it is like this, we should support each other in order to attain the best result. At least, we should all be able to pass through the mountain gate."

As Martial House Master Luo said this, ten young disciples walked forwards from behind him in greeting. Although Huoluo Nation was a second-grade country, Huoluo Nation was several times larger than Sky Fortune Kingdom, and thus, they were given a quota of ten people instead of five.

These ten individuals were all around 20 years old. There were three of them whose cultivation had reached the early Pulse Condensation period, and even one who had reached the middle Pulse Condensation period. The rest were at the peak Bone Forging stage.

Huoluo Nation was among the top ranked in the 36 countries. Because of this, their homegrown disciples always had a hint of superior attitude, not to mention that they had several people whose cultivation exceeded anyone from Sky Fortune Kingdom by far.

Altogether they had six people at peak Bone Forging, three at early Pulse Condensation, and one at middle Pulse Condensation. In comparison, Sky Fortune Kingdom had one at early Bone Forging, one at middle Bone Forging, and three at peak Bone Forging.

This cultivation comparison was simply out of proportions. Martial House Master Luo's smile only became more brilliant, he was only interested in showing off.

The Huoluo Nation talents looked at Lin Ming and his group with disdain in their eyes. Zhou Yu and Liang Long frowned, suppressing the simmering rage in their hearts. As geniuses, they had always been proud and arrogant. What they couldn't stand the most was being stepped on by others.

At this moment, Lin Ming rubbed his chin, remembering something.

"Huoluo Nation... "

He remembered Huoluo Nation's Seraphic Pond that was located at Seraphic Pond Mountain. It was a divine pool of water that contained very pure heaven and earth origin energy, and it was of great benefit to any martial artist below the Houtian realm.

At first, a fake Qin Ziya had used Seraphic Pond Mountain as bait in order to deceive Lin Ming and lure him out of the Seven Profound Martial House. He had ridden to the Southern Wilderness on a Heavenly Wind Eagle and this dark plan had almost killed him.

Thinking this, Lin Ming was somewhat thoughtful as he looked at the middle Pulse Condensation period youth. The youth's face had a certain arrogant streak to it. Of course, he had the ability to be like this. To reach the middle Pulse Condensation period at 21 years of age was quite decent even in the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction.

Huoluo Nation had the Seraphic Pond as well as a larger land area and more resources. Thus, their disciples were able to enjoy more resources than those from Sky Fortune Kingdom. It wasn't strange or surprising that they would have a higher cultivation.

"This middle Pulse Condensation period youth has definitely bathed in the Seraphic Pond waters."

Lin Ming guessed. He didn't care about the look of contempt in the others' eyes. Rather, he was looking him up and down, sizing him up as if he were some delicious prey.

Lin Ming had already noticed the conflict between Qin Ziya and Martial House Master Luo. Martial House Master Luo was malicious and rude, just like a snake in the grass. As for Qin Ziya, he simply didn't bother to respond to the other side. There was probably a long standing grudge between the two middle-aged men.

Thinking this, Lin Ming's lips curved up in a sly smile. He sent a true essence sound transmission to Qin Ziya.

Qin Ziya had already sat back down, preparing to return to meditation, completely ignoring Martial House Master Luo's display of showing off. But after he heard Lin Ming's true essence sound transmission, he opened both his eyes to look at Lin Ming with a strange expression.

This kid, he was quite roguish.

"At the Total Faction Martial Meeting, our 36 countries are on the weaker side. That's why we should help each other out and show a united front. Huoluo Nation and Sky Fortune Kingdom are brothers, that's why we will be in the same group. When the time comes and if we encounter each other on the martial stage, we should show some mercy and lighten our hands, lest we harm each other and find the next match even more difficult."

Martial House Master Luo said this with a smug tone. His meaning was naturally to have the Huoluo Nation disciples show mercy and not injure the Sky Fortune Kingdom disciples.

At this time, Qin Ziya took the words and suddenly said, “Mm. At that time we shouldn’t fight with such a heavy hand. Lin Ming, Ling Sen, when the time comes, remember to be gentle and don’t hurt them too much, understood?”

“Yes, Martial House Master. I’ll try my best.” Lin Ming replied with a mischievous smile. As for Ling Sen, he simply nodded his head, unclear of the situation.

As Qin Ziya said this, Martial House Master Luo looked a bit depressed. What was the meaning of this? Since when was it your turn to show us any mercy?

The ten disciples he brought along were also looking happy. Try my best? Don’t hurt them? You can actually say this with a straight face? Especially looking at Lin Ming’s smiling face. Later, they would return the favor and smack him black and blue. At that time, they would see whether or not he could still smile like that.

“Hehe, Old Qin, you really have faith in your disciples. How confident!” Martial House Master Luo said with a smirk, ridicule hiding between all his words.

“It’s fine. This time, I brought a few disciples whose strengths are quite good. It’s not a problem if they leap up a few realms to fight someone else.”

“Oh, is that so? Which ones?” Martial House Master Luo smiled as he listened to Qin Ziya spout his nonsense. He was thinking that when the time came, he would expose him to the world, and then, he would see if Qin Ziya still had the air to blabber anymore lies.

“Mm… for instance, Lin Ming.” Qin Ziya said, pointing towards Lin Ming. He said, “Don’t look at Lin Ming’s peak Bone Forging cultivation. It’s no problem at all for him to deal with even a middle Pulse Condensation period martial artist.”

Qin Ziya’s voice had just fallen when the middle Pulse Condensation period youth from Huoluo Nation coldly snorted and said, “Really? Then I must ask for advice!”

When the two middle-aged Martial House Masters were speaking, their dialogue was quite rude. But since Qin Ziya had mentioned the middle Pulse Condensation period, he was obviously aiming at him. If he could tolerate this, what else did he have to tolerate?

“Don’t be so anxious. Huoluo Nation and Sky Fortune Kingdom will encounter each other sooner or later. Lin Ming, remember to use a light hand, otherwise you might injure them and damage our relationship.” Qin Ziya casually spoke these irritating words as if he didn’t care. The middle Pulse Condensation period youth was at a point in his life where he was filled with abundant courage and hot-headed attitude, and he had been known as a genius ever since childhood. How could he tolerate such insult and provocation?

He took a step forwards and coldly said, “Lin Ming, I am Wang Mu from Huoluo Nation. We can have a little match now if you’d like!”

Lin Ming only smiled back, not saying anything. Martial House Master Luo waved his hand to stop the impulsive Wang Wu. In such a crowded space, it was naturally impossible for them to compete in martial arts.

Martial House Master Luo laughed, and said with a smile, “Martial House Master Qin, your little brother here is quite the confident one. What happens if you lose?”

“This… haha.” Qin Ziya only smiled, not speaking anymore.

At this time, Lin Ming suddenly said, “If I lose, I will give you a high-grade human-step treasure.”

Martial House Master Luo only sneered, not responding. There was a great variance in quality among high-grade human-step treasures. He didn’t expect Lin Ming to come out with anything worthwhile, he was someone that wouldn’t even disdain a glance towards an inferior high-grade human-step treasure.

Lin Ming also said, “And then, I’ll also add in a Blue Miracle Pill and a bottle of Body Spiritual Ichor.” This Blue Miracle Pill and Body Spiritual Ichor was the reward he obtained from Qin Ziya for defeating Ling Sen and Ta Ku. He still hadn’t used them.

As Lin Ming said this, Wang Mu's face changed. A Blue Miracle Pill and bottle of Body Spiritual Ichor would have no small effect on his cultivation. He immediately agreed and said, "Alright, I'll hold you to your word!"

"Of course. I can also take an oath on my heart of martial arts. But… what if I win?" Lin Ming said with a sudden turn, his wily nature coming out as all of his fox tails were exposed. In a bet such as this, it was common to bet all possessions. Lin Ming was already too familiar with a scene like this.

"What did you say?" Wang Mu laughed, he never even thought that he would lose.

"Simple. If I win, I want to take a dip in your Huoluo Nation's Seraphic Pond a few times."

Chapter 240 – Mountain Gate Trial

Chapter 240 – Mountain Gate Trial

…

…

…

‘So they had this idea all along; it seems they’ve taken a fancy towards my Huoluo Nation’s Seraphic Pond?’ Martial House Master Luo wasn’t stupid. He knew that there was something strange with the way Qin Ziya was speaking a moment ago, it turned out he was trying to deliberately provoke him.

It seemed that they really had confidence in their Lin Ming. Perhaps that little boy really might be able to jump over a realm and fight a middle Pulse Condensation period martial artist. But, Wang Mu wasn’t an ordinary middle Pulse Condensation period martial artist. His combat prowess was able to compare to the late Pulse Condensation period. If this was their wishful thinking, their carefully laid plans had all gone wrong.

Martial House Master Luo narrowed his eyes as he began to size up Lin Ming. He was wondering whether or not this young boy in front of him would be able to deal with a late Pulse Condensation period martial artist. However, it was only a very low probability. The difference between the Bone Forging stage and the Pulse Condensation period was simply too big. For a normal talent, even jumping over half a realm was considered incredible. But to jump over an entire realm was extremely rare – even within the Seven Profound Valleys Total Faction.

Since the chances of winning were greater than the chances of losing, Martial House Master Luo intended to agree to this gambling bet.

He said, “The Seraphic Pond is an important land of my Huoluo Nation. There is only a finite amount of inherent true essence contained within the waters, every year we can only send 3 or 4 people to use it. And to think you even want to soak in the waters a few times, your appetite is quite big!” Although Martial House Master Luo knew that the chances of winning were greater than losing, he still wanted to hedge his bets and give himself a way out.

“Then how about one time?” Lin Ming knew that the first time soaking in the Seraphic Pond would be the best. If he bathed in the waters too much, the effects would lessen to an unnoticeable degree.

Wang Mu thought that Lin Ming was simply a blithering idiot. In his opinion, Lin Ming was simply digging his own grave and personally handing out such great treasures like the Blue Miracle Pill and the Body Spiritual Ichor. The former was a top tier pill, able to increase one’s cultivation and the latter was able to wash down one’s muscles and marrows, removing pill toxins from their body. If these two were used together, their effects would be the best.

If he was able to take these two medicines, then his cultivation would increase and he would become much closer to reaching the late Pulse Condensation period.

However, why would this idiot Lin Ming have the Blue Miracle Pill and Body Spiritual Ichor and not use them on himself? Instead, he was actually ripping himself off and giving them to others.

Thinking about the future Blue Miracle Pill and Body Spiritual Ichor, Wang Mu excitedly licked his lips, looking at Martial House Master Luo. Martial House Master Luo nodded his head, agreeing to this gambling bet.

Wang Mu hurriedly said, “Okay, if I lose, then you can use Huoluo Nation’s Seraphic Pond one time. I won’t take advantage of you, I will also take an oath on my heart of martial arts!”

Wang Mu was afraid that Lin Ming would later renege on his promise, so he also tacked on an oath on his heart of martial arts as insurance.

Wang Mu and Lin Ming both clapped their hands together as they made their oath, both looking quite happy. Martial House Master Luo looked at Wang Mu with a smiling face, but as he glanced at Lin Ming's even brighter smile, he had a feeling that something was wrong.

With two people laughing, there had to be one of them crazily giggling inside…

………….

One hour later, a beautiful and exquisite melody began to descend from the Profound Sky Mountain Range. Lin Ming looked up and saw a blue boat gently floating over. The boat was several dozen feet long, and glittered all over with strange runes and symbols. There was a hazy halo of light that wrapped around the boat like an eggshell, and at the front of the boat there were three people standing side by side. Two of them were middle-aged men wearing purple, and one was a very beautiful woman in white.

Although they were far in the distance, Lin Ming could still feel a faint suppressive feeling coming from these three, not much inferior to the aura that Mu Qianyu gave out.

Extreme Xiantian?

From just these three people's cultivations, Lin Ming thought they might not be much weaker than Mu Qianyu. However, Mu Qianyu was only 27 years old. As for these three, they weren't spring chickens anymore. The disparity was simply too great.

At this moment, Qin Ziya whispered, "The Total Faction Martial Meeting will have the presence of the Valley Masters. All three of them are Valley Masters of the Seven Profound Valleys. Stay still and don't make any noise.

Facing the power and majesty of the three Valley Masters, even Qin Ziya felt suppressed. He unconsciously held his breath and stood there with hands relaxed.

The spirit boat stopped above the gate. The beautiful woman in white stepped forwards, and her ten fingers flashed as she made a series of seals. With a rumbling sound, the mountain rocks in front of everyone began to split, and giant crack emerged as stone began to pull apart. A 1000 foot long white jade tablet rose from the rocks and floated into the air. There was an array formation that was inscribed onto the white jade tablet and many seals and runes slowly circled it, shining iridescently. Underneath the white jade tablet, massive white jade steps appeared and formed a path forwards, extending almost 10,000 feet towards the distance gate.

In the square below, many of the young talents and geniuses were watching with wide eyes. For many of them, this was their first time participating in the Total Faction Martial Meeting, so they were ignorant about what would happen. They hadn't dreamed that there would be such a massive white jade tablet hiding amidst the rocks.

"So this is the mountain gate trial." Lin Ming narrowed his eyes as he saw the giant white jade steps. After acquiring the second soul fragment, he had a very deep understanding of array formations. He could see that the white jade steps underneath that tablet were actually an illusion formed by an array formation. This was an illusionary killing array!

There were 1080 steps altogether, each a foot high. The beautiful woman in white standing on the spirit boat said, "You have an incense stick of time to climb the white jade steps and enter the mountain gate! Light the incense!"

As the beautiful woman finished, she waved her hand and tossed a giant incense burner into the mountain square. There was a ten foot long incense stick that was as thick as an arm and was placed inside, already lit. Although this incense stick was 10 feet high, the rate at which it was burning was much faster than normal; it probably wasn't any slower than a normal stick of incense.

Some of the first-time participants of the Total Faction Martial Meeting weren't able to resist, and instantly launched their movement techniques to rush forwards, just like a flying locust swarm heading towards the white jade stairs. But, those martial artists that had already participated in the Total Faction Martial Meeting didn't seem in a hurry as they slowly moved up the white jade steps one at a time. Looking at the newbies rushing upwards, these old timers tried to hide their smiles, waiting to see just how these new participants would suffer.

The white jade steps were a thousand feet wide; it wasn't crowded even if two or three hundred people were standing side by side. After the first disciples stepped onto the white jade steps, a great number of symbols began to light up on the stairs. As these symbols circulated, a massive pressure suddenly pushed down on the jade steps. Several of the disciples who hadn't been prepared were pulled down by this tremendous force and tumbled onto the jade steps, looking confused as they smashed into the floor.

"Be careful, there's something strange about these stairs."

Seeing so many disciples be defeated so quickly, some people began to cry out in alarm. But the truth was, this was just an obvious matter. If the jade steps didn't have some unusual feature, then wouldn't everyone be able to rush up the stairs in just an incense stick of time?

In the blink of an eye, several dozen disciples had fallen down onto the floor. But those disciples that were experienced hunched down in order to lower their center of gravity. As they stepped up the stairs one at a time, their speed began to fall.

At this time, the disparity in cultivation was suddenly reflected for all to see. A young girl in white and carrying a long zither didn't seem nearly as affected by the pressure like everyone else. Her steps were like a cool breeze as she stepped towards the mountain gate in a relaxed manner. The mountain wind sent her clothes fluttering around. The young girl had a very calm demeanor; it was like she wasn't even walking towards the mountain gate, but was instead taking a casual stroll.

"It's the Zither Faction's direct disciple, Qin Wuxin."

Some people recognized the identity of the white-clothed young girl. All disciples were required to participate in the Total Faction Martial Meeting's mountain gate trial; the direct disciples were no exception. But to them, this was simply a walk; the jade step's illusionary magic array might as well only exist in name for them.

"The difference is too great!"

This thought was inevitably born in the hearts of some. These people were all outstanding talents from their martial families or countries, and had grown up under the halo of being a genius. But now, in comparison to Qin Wuxin, they were simply nothing at all.

This wasn't enough to discourage them, but at this moment, two shadows rushed up the jade steps. Although they weren't as calm and tranquil as the white-clothed girl, their speed was at least three times faster.

"Jiang Baoyun, let's see which one of us is faster!" The youth speaking wore all white. He held a fan in his hands, and he looked like a handsome god fashioned from the purest jade.

Next to him was an 18 or 19 year old youth wearing all black, carrying a cold longsword on his back. His eyebrows were slanted like scimitars and he had a very solemn expression, his momentum was outstanding. This youth was the direct disciple of the Sword Faction, Jiang Baoyun, and the handsome man holding a fan on the side was the Acacia Faction's direct disciple, Ouyang Ming.

The two of them were quick like phantoms. In only a few breaths of time, they had reached the middle of the jade stairs, where they stopped for a moment before continuing up to the entrance.

There were also some young and powerful heroes following behind Jiang Baoyun and Ouyang Ming. But, their strengths were much weaker, and they were barely standing on their feet, moving slowly step by step. With their turtle-like speed, they would probably not arrive at the mountain gate before the incense burned out, or even before sunset.

Qin Ziya's group began to walk up. Ling Sen and Lin Ming took the initiative to walk up the jade stairs first. As soon as Lin Ming stepped on the first stair, he felt his body sink down and his speed tremendously fall.

“The direct disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys really do have some ability. Even a Pulse Condensation period martial artist would be suppressed under this formidable gravitational pull. But, there are actually some people that can shoot up these jade steps like meteors…”

As Lin Ming thought this, he changed the flow of true essence circulating in his body, and a surge of wind gusted around him as he activated Golden Roc Shattering the Void. Lin Ming’s body became as light as cotton, and he easily floated up to the top. He wasn’t fast, but his steps were incomparably calm, as if he was standing on clouds.

Although the jade stairs contained a terrifying gravitational force, it was fundamentally useless under the Concept of Wind and Golden Roc Shattering the Void.

Compared to Lin Ming, Ling Sen wasn’t so tranquil. He was obviously moving up the jade steps using his strength, but his speed actually wasn’t any slower than Lin Ming.

As Ling Sen saw Lin Ming look as if he were taking a casual stroll through the park, Ling Sen was startled. It seemed as if Lin Ming wasn’t using any effort at all, while he was using 70% of his true essence. The more Ling Sen got to know Lin Ming, the more he discovered that Lin Ming was simply unfathomable.

Zhou Yu and Liang Long watched Ling Sen and Lin Ming climbed up and exchanged bitter looks with each other. Sooner or later, they had to they eat the consequences. Now, they could only brace themselves.

“Lin Ming looks so relaxed, it shouldn’t be that difficult. At least, there should be some trick to it…” Zhou Yu consoled himself, and then he stepped onto the first jade step.

As he took a step, Zhou Yu instantly felt as if his body filled with lead, and he was drowning. Luckily, he had already mentally prepared himself for this, or else he would have already fallen flat on the ground and made a fool of himself.

“Such a strong gravitational force!” Zhou Yu pushed the true essence in his body to the limit, but he was still as slow as an ox pulling a broken cart.

Liang Long was even worse off than Zhou Yu. On the jade steps he felt like both of his feet had been trapped in quicksand. Every step took an enormous amount of strength. Seeing all the young talented heroes rushing past him, he could only shout out.

“Goddamn, are these fellows really human?”

Chapter 241 – A Gathering of Heroes

Chapter 241 – A Gathering of Heroes

…

…

…

Lin Ming quickly flew to the middle of the jade steps. At this time, he heard a cold voice sound out from behind him. “Boy, you have a little skill, it seems I underestimated you.”

Lin Ming turned around to see Huoluo Nation’s Wang Mu following him from behind, not too far away. He looked quite relaxed. Apparently, he hadn’t used much effort.

“Thank you. You’re not that bad yourself.” Lin Ming casually said.

Hearing Lin Ming’s casual tone, Wang Mu coldly snorted and said, “Let’s see just how long you’ll be so arrogant for.”

As one neared the middle of the jade steps, the number of martial artists increased. There were some martial artists pacing back and forth here, their advance extremely slow.

Although Lin Ming thought that there was something unusual about this, he didn’t slow down. He headed towards the gate with the same speed as before.

‘Come on, you’re going up so fast, I want to see when you’re beaten.’ Wang Mu cursed in his heart. There was a small trap in the middle of the jade steps. If one wasn’t careful, it would be easy to suffer a shameful loss. Although this wasn’t enough to defeat someone with Lin Ming’s strength, this failure was enough to make him feel much better about himself.

The surrounding martial artists also saw Lin Ming rushing straight up towards the middle of the jade steps and harbored schadenfreude in their minds. "This kid probably doesn't know there's a trap waiting for him."

"Even a seasoned Pulse Condensation period martial artist has to be prepared for it, otherwise it's too easy to be caught off guard."

Everyone was using true essence sound transmissions in order to talk, they weren't very happy after being surpassed.

As soon as Lin Ming's foot stepped on the middle of the jade steps, he discovered that something was wrong there. Even Ouyang Ming and Jiang Baoyun had stopped there for several breaths of time instead of making their way through in one breath.

"So there's a separate illusionary killing array here..." Lin Ming thought as he saw the symbols on the jade steps suddenly flare up and an origin energy air current begin to flow forth from the array formation, coming completely perpendicular as it tried to impact him.

Lin Ming swept out with his soul force and saw that the air current was roughly equivalent to the all-out attack of the weakest Pulse Condensation period martial artist. Although it would be simple to block it, dodging it would require much less effort.

As he activated Golden Roc Shattering the Void, Lin Ming's body felt like a feather underneath the influence of the Concept of Wind. With his overwhelmingly fast movements, he was able to completely dodge all of the origin energy air currents. Because he was too quick, Lin Ming's body turned into a series of afterimages. Soon, he reached the middle of the turbulent origin energy air currents, and in a few more moments of time he completely bypassed all of them.

"He dodged all of them?"

"How could he possibly dodge all of them? Even if a seasoned Pulse Condensation period martial artist arrived at this point, he would still have to use his thick true essence in order to resist the attack. The gravity here is too strong, it's impossible to hide."

“What a freakish movement technique. In terms of movement technique, he’s no weaker than any of the talents in the Seven Profound Valleys. I wonder just how different his combat ability is.”

The several young outstanding talents discussed amongst themselves. At this point, a white-clothed youth smiled and said, “You’re wrong. The reason he was able to dodge the origin energy air currents was not because he used his movement technique, but because he has a powerful soul force. He figured out the pathing of the origin energy air currents with his soul force, and was able to calculate the path to take in order to not be struck by any of them. This person is a soul force genius. I saw him in Desert Flower Hall using his soul force. Against a martial artist with his cultivation, he can defeat any of them in a second, even the Seven Profound Valleys’ Ouyang Ziyun.”

“What? He instantly defeated Ouyang Ziyun? I see, so that’s how it is… I heard that the Acacia Faction’s Ouyang Ziyun had been done in by someone, it looks like it was this fellow…”

Many of the Seven Profound disciples present had already heard the news that Ouyang Ziyun had been severely wounded. The disciples of the other Six Factions would certainly not miss an opportunity to laugh at the Acacia Faction. Therefore the news of Ouyang Ziyun’s severe injuries had quickly spread all throughout the Seven Profound Valleys.

After some discussion, the nearby martial artists were all secretly paying attention to Lin Ming, especially the early Pulse Condensation period martial artists. They began to think of admitting defeat in advance if they encountered Lin Ming; they didn’t believe they were any stronger than Ouyang Ziyun.

After Lin Ming crossed the checkpoint in the middle of the jade stairs, there were no more obstacles ahead. Lin Ming rose straight up like a cloud, quickly reaching the mountain gate. Because Lin Ming was deliberately trying to hide his true strength, he started later than the others. When he arrived at the mountain gate, there were already around 70 people waiting there. Over 90% of them were disciples of the Total Faction, there were very few disciples from the 36 countries or 16 martial cultivation families.

Lin Ming knew that even if they arrived first, it didn't mean that they were any more powerful than the disciples still on the jade steps. For the mountain gate trial, it was fine as long as one passed within the allotted time. There were many other disciples who were trying to hide their own strength too. These martial artists didn't want to publicize their strength and arouse the attention of others ahead of time. But of course they couldn't be too slow, otherwise they would be mocked.

Three quarters of the incense stick was quickly burnt away. The separate illusionary killing array in the middle of the jade steps had eliminated a massive number of martial artists. Many of the people that arrived at this location had been distracted and then struck by the origin energy air current. Fortunately, the origin energy air current only created superficial injuries and wasn't fatal, otherwise young martial artists would be falling from the sky like flies.

Zhou Yu and Liang Long were still climbing up, looking like old men that were trying to crawl up a mountain. As they saw martial artist after martial artist pass them, they were unable to help looking at themselves with forced smiles. They also understood that the reason Qin Ziya had gathered them was in order to fulfill the quota of five people. From the start, the two of them never had any hope in passing the mountain gate trial.

"What are we going to do? Are we going to do it?" Liang Long looked at two martial artists that were sent flying by the origin energy air current in front of them, and his heart trembled in nervousness. The slower martial artists had weaker strength. At this point, anyone that was still here would find it impossible to cross the origin energy air current. If they tried, they would suffer the same fate and be sent soaring into the sky.

Zhou Yu clenched his teeth and said, "We'll do it! We've already come this far, even if we know perfectly well that there is no chance of passing, if we give up right now then we will ruin our own hearts of martial arts! If we hadn't left the Sky Fortune Kingdom, then we would never have known just how big the disparity is between us and them, there is no way that we can stay idle!"

The four martial cultivation families of Sky Fortune Kingdom had always held a superior attitude. Now, Zhou Yu finally understood that let alone the disciples of their martial families, even if the four families themselves were placed in the Seven Profound territory, they would be considered nothing but small ants. In the surrounding several hundred thousand miles of land, there were probably countless martial families that were larger and more famous than their own.

As Zhou Yu and Liang Long took a step on the middle of the jade steps, they were struck by the origin energy air current and sent flying into the air. There were also several other martial artists that accompanied them on their trip. There were even some martial artists who, after being struck, got back on their feet and crawled forwards once more.

There were also those that were struck once and then gave up. And there were even those who didn't even get struck but turned around and gave up anyway, because they knew that they definitely wouldn't pass.

These repeated attempts and defeats of those who tried again and again and again were all reflected in Lin Ming's eyes. He sighed with emotion. He was just like them not too long ago, diligently striving for a far off hope, and yet tasting failure again and again.

For that desolate hope, one had to bet everything they had. That was the path of martial arts.

Even in the countless dimensions within the Realm of the Gods, there were countless martial artists, but eventually only a mere handful of them were ever able to stand at the pinnacle of all.

To arrive at that stage, they had to have perseverance, talent, but also opportunity!

But those lucky opportunities could only be obtained by the prepared, otherwise, those chances were worthless.

The three Valley Masters of the Seven Profound Valleys were loftily standing on the spirit boat, ignoring the martial artists underneath that were giving their all to climb up the stairs. To them, these disciples were nothing more than ants on the ground.

At this time, the incense began to burn slower. Although there was only a quarter of the incense stick left, it was still two and a half feet tall. Lin Ming estimated that at this rate, it would still take a little less than half an hour to finish.

So it turned out there was enough time after all. Lin Ming finally understood. This mountain gate trial was for the disciples themselves. It was in order to let those overconfident, brash, and arrogant young talents realize the difference between themselves and true talents. If they were discouraged by just this and gave up the climb, then they simply had no qualifications to walk down the path of martial arts.

This was the ebb and this was the tide. Those who stayed would become more experienced and wizened. But as for those who were eliminated, they would be brought to their knees, unlikely to recover from this failure.

The young talents that had already reached the mountain gate looked down on those martial artists still struggling with a trace of contempt in their eyes. This contempt, to the marital artists still on the jade steps that had once thought themselves peerless geniuses, was also a catalyst.

They had always been accustomed to being superior; when had they ever received such contempt like this?

Noting the eyes of these talents, Lin Ming sighed again. These disciples only had the qualification to be called talents in the Seven Profound Valleys, and thus look down with disdain at others. But if they were placed in a higher, stronger sect, they might be the ones struggling to climb the jade steps.

For instance, take Mu Qianyu. Pulse Condensation at 15, Houtian at 17, Xiantian at 22. If the 20 year old Mu Qianyu was standing here, all of the geniuses present, including even the Seven Profound Valleys' three Valley Masters, would all be overshadowed by her brilliance!

Just as Lin Ming was in thought, he saw Qin Xingxuan finally reach the mountain gate, her face flushed red with effort and her body dewy wet with perspiration. Lin Ming smiled in relief, greeted her, and then hastily handed her a bottle of true essence restoring pills.

Although she had just barely passed the mountain gate, this was still shocking enough with Qin Xingxuan's low age and her middle Bone Forging cultivation.

Less than half an hour later, the mountain gate trial was finally finished. There were many martial artists who had been worn out from exhaustion and collapsed on the stairs. Despite how hard they tried, they had still failed to reach the mountain gate. Liang Long and Zhou Yu were also two that failed to pass.

There were around 200 remaining martial artists; close to 60 of the original number had been eliminated. In this group of 200, 70% of them were disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys. There were only a few dozen disciples from the 36 countries and 16 martial families. There were even many early Pulse Condensation period martial artists that had been eliminated when they reached the origin energy air current. The origin energy air current was equal to the full force strike of the weakest Pulse Condensation period martial artist. Not only that, but there were several dozens of these origin energy air currents connected together. A weak early Pulse Condensation martial artist wouldn't be able to bear all of them.

Of the Sky Fortune Kingdom group, the ones that remained were Ling Sen, Lin Ming, and Qin Xingxuan. In these 36 counties, it had to be known that at least half of them completely failed in entering. Only large countries like Huoluo Nation and Grace Venerate Nation who had a quota of ten people still had three disciples left over.

Sky Fortune Kingdom was originally a country that was placed in the middle of the pack. That they could have such success at this Martial Meeting was simply too surprising.

As for the 16 martial families, their situation was somewhat better than the 36 countries. These ancient martial families usually had a specially trained disciple, and therefore they would usually have at least one disciple left over. There were some large martial families that even had 2 or 3 disciples left.

Chapter 242 – The Martial Meeting Begins

Chapter 242 – The Martial Meeting Begins

…

…

…

As Lin Ming stepped through the gate into the Profound Sky Mountains, he immediately felt that the heaven and earth origin energy was much thicker here, by around 60 to 70%. If one were to cultivate here, they would have twice the result with half the effort.

As he turned around to look back at the gate, he was surprised to see faintly shining charms and runes inscribed onto it. Apparently, there was also an array formation placed on the mountain gate.

"I see, so the Profound Sky Mountains were formed over the center of a dragon pulse, but there was also an array formation barrier that gathered the heaven and earth origin energy." Not even considering the highest peak of the Profound Sky Mountains, but even the heaven and earth origin energy of Profound Sky City was much more vibrant than Sky Fortune Kingdom's by far, not to mention all the other resources that were available to the Seven Profound Valleys. No wonder this caused so many martial artists to be jealous, and why even peak Bone Forging martial artists would rather stay and defend Profound Sky City as gate guards than go to a smaller country and work as commanders.

It wasn't only Lin Ming who discovered the extremely rich heaven and earth origin energy of the Profound Sky Mountains. Many of the young talented heroes that came for the first time were amazed, vividly speaking about this astonishing phenomenon. They also began to envy the resources that were available to the disciples of the Total Faction.

Not too far away from the main road on a cliff, there were several Seven Profound Valleys disciples that were looking down on the dense stream of people. Their expressions seemed as if they were accustomed to seeing this small fry country bumpkin martial artist entering their city.

"Is that him?" A white-clothed man standing in front of the group asked a nearby disciple with true essence sound transmission as he tapped his fingers.

"Yes, it's that guy, his name is Lin Ming. He was the one that injured Ouyang Ziyun."

"In the mountain gate trial, what number was he?" Although the ranking of the mountain gate trial didn't reveal one's true strength, it was usable as a reference point.

"Around 80 something. I don't recall the exact number."

"A decent rank. With such a rank, there is no need to worry that he won't qualify later. It's better like this; I will make him rue the day he was born." The white-clothed man revealed a sinister smile as he said this.

At this moment from in the crowd, Lin Ming suddenly turned his head to look at him.

They faced each other, then Lin Ming smiled and turned back.

The white-clothed man was surprised. "He truly is worthy of being called a soul force genius, his perception is keen to the degree of startling me. He's even able to sense when people are observing him. Well, good, I'm becoming more and more interested in this fellow."

……………………

One year ago, Lin Ming would never have dreamed that on his sixteenth birthday he would actually enter into the Seven Profound Valleys. At that time, the Seven Profound Valleys was simply a heaven-like existence that was too distant a goal. Not mentioning the

Seven Profound Valleys, even Sky Fortune Kingdom's Seven Profound Martial House was beyond difficult for him to reach.

Now, on the same day as Lin Ming's sixteenth birthday, the Total Faction Martial Meeting would officially begin.

The martial field was located at the highest peak of the Profound Sky Mountains, which was also where the Seven Profound Valleys Total Faction was located.

The Profound Sky Mountains' highest peak was 60,000 feet high. This mountain was simply incomparably massive and rocky. The mountain exuded an invisible pressure that would cause a weak martial artist to feel extremely suppressed, only able to display 50% of their strength.

As the sun rose, there were already thousands of people gathered at the square in front of Great Hall. There were disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys, as well as high ranking individuals of large families and guests of the Seven Profound Valleys. The Seven Profound Valleys had invited them here to watch the Martial Meeting, and also to show their own strength.

The Great Hall's square was 10 miles wide, and flat and smooth as a whetstone. A martial arts master had cut down this section of the mountain and flattened it. At this time, the square was divided into ten regions. Each region was separated by an array formation, and these array formations covered the entire area in order to isolate all true essence, so there wasn't any danger of being affected by the aftermath of fighting.

There were 209 young talented heroes that had managed to pass through the mountain gate. These talents were divided into ten groups, each group having 20 or 21 individuals. Out of these groups, 10 of them would eventually qualify for the next stage. Once all ten groups were added together, there would be a total of 100 disciples.

Those would be the first 100 rankings of the Total Faction Martial Meeting. If one could make it to the top 100, it was already a result to be proud of.

As for those young outstanding talents, they also had an opportunity to continue. They were able to pass through a Ten Thousand Killing Array for a ranking. As long as they passed the mountain gate trial, they would be able to obtain an exact ranking.

Lin Ming already knew which group he would be in – the sixth group. This grouping was not drawn from lots, but was decided by the Seven Profound Valleys.

Sky Fortune Kingdom and Huoluo Nation were both in the same area. At every Total Faction Martial Meeting, they would be assigned to the same group. In addition, there were also three countries and martial cultivation families. Altogether there were 5 second-grade influences on their side.

During this Martial Meeting, these five influences had brought a total of 9 people that were able to pass the mountain gate trial. Sky Fortune Kingdom had three, Huoluo Nation had three, the two large martial families had three, and the rest had none.

The sixth group had 21 disciples altogether. Besides these 9 people, the other 12 were disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys Total Faction.

The Total Faction assigned the groupings of their disciples based on the rank at which they passed the mountain gate. This was in order to ensure that every group had an average strength within.

As Lin Ming began to size up his competition, he suddenly heard the cry of a bird coming from up above. He looked up and saw a massive Heavenly Wind Eagle flapping its wings and circling around. This Heavenly Wind Eagle had a commanding aura as it flew in the skies of the Profound Sky Mountains, looking down at the world below with scorn.

This Heavenly Wind Eagle was several times larger than an ordinary Heavenly Wind Eagle. Not only that, but its wings were a deep gold. This golden color made one think that this bird was actually a Golden-winged Roc, or maybe that this big eagle was from the lineage of a Saint Beast.

“It’s people from Peacock Mountain. Humph, they are too arrogant. Not only are they not coming down to the entrance, but they are still hovering in the sky.”

“There’s nothing we can do about it. For the past 100 years, Peacock Mountain has been getting more and more fierce, and is beginning to pressure us. It’s normal for them to act arrogantly…”

Lin Ming was standing beside the Seven Profound Valleys disciples of the sixth group as they spoke amongst each other in a low voice.

“Peacock Mountain? What sort of place is that?” Lin Ming had never heard of this place before.

Qin Ziya said, “Peacock Mountain is 800,000 miles away from the Seven Profound Valleys, and is also a third-grade sect. Their strength is superior to the Seven Profound Valleys, especially in the last 100 years. There are several peerless talents that have emerged from Peacock Mountain, and they’ve already become one of the top grade-three sects. During every Total Faction Martial Meeting, Peacock Mountain will always send some people to watch and understand the strength of the Seven Profound Valleys’ younger generation. Of course, our Seven Profound Valleys also sends people to attend the tournament that they hold.”

“I see… how many grade-three sects are there in the Sky Spill Continent? What is the highest grade sect?” Lin Ming couldn’t help but ask this. As he came into contact more and more with the vast world, the increasing number of superpowers left him astonished.

Qin Ziya forced a smile and said, “I’m not too sure. Our Seven Profound Valleys mostly only communicates with other third-grade sects. As for those higher-grade sects, they are simply out of reach…”

Qin Ziya’s voice had just fallen, when a clarion cry resonated in the sky. This was even more high-pitched that the Heavenly Wind Eagle, and was simply frightening.

As the golden Heavenly Wind Eagle in the air heard this cry, it suddenly became frightened. Its lofty and arrogant manner completely evaporated, and it soared down in panic.

Thousands of eyes turned up to the horizon. At this time, everyone was looking completely dumbfounded.

“Vermillion Bird!!!!”

“Heavens! A Vermillion Bird! Is it for real!?”

That golden Heavenly Wind Eagle from a moment ago only had the bloodline of a Saint Beast. But a Vermillion Bird was a true Saint Beast. Because there were no True Phoenixes within the Sky Spill Continent, the Vermillion Bird was considered the king of all bird. Once the golden Heavenly Wind Eagle encountered the Vermillion Bird, it would inevitably feel a deep dread and dismay emerge from its bloodline, and could only flee in panic. How could it possibly dare to occupy the same skies as a Vermillion Bird?

“I’ve never seen a Saint Beast in my entire life! Even the sect elders might have never seen something like this!”

“This is truly worthy of being the Seven Profound Valleys Total Faction. In my small land it would simply be impossible for me to ever see a Saint Beast…” A disciple from the 16 martial families clenched his fists, his face ruddy with excitement. To see a legendary Saint Beast, he felt that he could say he lived his life without regret.

Lin Ming noticed that the several Total Faction disciples near him were speaking as if they were at a loss on how to explain this. A Seven Profound Valleys disciple thought aloud, “One of the factions actually has a Vermillion Bird? I’ve been here for over 20 years and I’ve never heard something like this…”

The Vermillion Bird flew to the top of the Profound Sky Mountains’ highest peak. Even the usually calm Qin Ziya seemed to have lost all his composure. He said, “They… they are probably people from Divine Phoenix Island. That is… a fourth-grade sect.”

The various graded sects usually stayed in their own circles. A fourth-grade sect wouldn't normally associate or speak with a third-grade sect. Qin Ziya had said that the Seven Profound Valleys didn't keep in contact with a fourth-grade sect, but in the next moment, a fourth-grade sect had actually come.

Listening to Qin Ziya's words, Lin Ming gulped, his face revealing a strange color.

"Divine Phoenix Island?" Qin Xingxuan echoed as she watched the Vermillion Bird flying in the sky. Qin Xingxuan's eyes filled with longing. How nice would it be if she could ever have her own Vermillion Bird?

Qin Ziya said, "Divine Phoenix Island is among the top of all fourth-grade sects. I never expected that they would come to the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction Martial Meeting. This is the probably the first time that this has happened in the last several hundred years..."

Qin Ziya hadn't finished when the Seven Profound Valleys' spirit boat flew up to welcome the guests.

Lin Ming glanced upwards. The ones on the spirit boat were the three Valley Masters of the Seven Profound Valleys. In order to have such a welcoming party, it could only be for the absolute pinnacle existence.

"The guest is strong and the host is weak. Not only that, but we are lower by an entire grade. It's just the way it is..." Qin Ziya said as he shook his head. The difference in power between grades was enormous. For instance, Sky Fortune Kingdom was a second-grade power whilst they Seven Profound Valleys was a third-grade power. When someone came from the Seven Profound Valleys who wasn't even an elder, like Ouyang Dihua, the Emperor of Sky Fortune Kingdom had to come out and pay his respects, lest he provoke the other. With this, the difference between the two could be ascertained.

The Seven Profound Valleys' Valley Master Shi Zongtian had just gotten the message a few days ago that Divine Phoenix Island would be sending out someone to observe their Total

Faction Martial Meeting. Shi Zongtian had been absolutely bewildered by this; he had no idea why a fourth-grade sect would suddenly decide to take interest in the festivities.

“I am the Seven Profound Valleys’ Valley Master, Shi Zongtian. I cordially welcome the martial cultivators from Divine Phoenix Island to our land,” Shi Zongtian said as he stood in front on the spirit boat, cupping his fists together in greetings. His welcome had embodied respect, while not showing too much humility.

“Valley Master Shi, well met.” The one who spoke was a black-clothed woman wearing a mask. Her cultivation was at the extreme Xiantian realm. There were also two maids behind her clothed in purple, whose cultivations were at the peak Houtian realm.

The Divine Phoenix Island took the Phoenix as their representative Saint Beast. Their legacy cultivation methods also originated from meditating and comprehending the majesty of the phoenix. Because of this, their cultivation methods were more suitable for women, and in their sect, 90% of the disciples were women.

Lin Ming saw the masked woman, and even though her appearance was covered, he was able to recognize that she wasn’t Mu Qianyu.

Chapter 243 – Fairy Maiden Qinghong

Chapter 243 – Fairy Maiden Qinghong

…

…

…

“What was I thinking… ? How could she possibly… ” Lin Ming shook his head, laughing at his own thoughts.

Mu Qianyu was the top-tier fourth-grade sect Divine Phoenix Island’s Saintess among Saintess’. In the future, she would become the Sect Master, a fairy maiden that came to Earth who would be respected and admired by countless people. As for him, who hadn’t even truly broken through to the Pulse Condensation period, the difference between them was greater than the clouds and mud. Mu Qianyu would probably only think of him if she were bored in her spare time, how could she possibly come to the Seven Profound Valleys and watch such boring matches… ?

In Lin Ming’s opinion, a Saintess was probably a figure that would become the successor to the Sect Master, with an extremely honored status. But in fact, he had underestimated her. A Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island was even rarer than a Divine Phoenix Island Sect Master.

Divine Phoenix Island changed Sect Masters every 100 years. Afterwards, they would retire and become an Elder Ancestor. But, a Saintess was rarely seen every 500 years, and not every sect had a Saintess.

The main branch of Divine Phoenix Island was the ancient phoenix family, the Mu Family. The Saintess could only come from the Mu Family. The Mu Family had excessive Yin energy and a lack of Yang energy. Because of this, they had very few children. Although there were many disciples of Divine Phoenix Island whose last name was Mu, the truth was that this was only a last name, and it didn't mean that they were true juniors of the Mu Family.

Every few hundred years, the Mu Family would produce a girl who had the bloodline of a phoenix descendant, and her talent would be a heaven defying seventh-grade. She was the Saintess. Also, only a Saintess would be able to summon their own Saint Beast. For instance, the Vermillion Bird that the masked woman was riding was not hers. It was left behind by an ancient Saintess who had passed away.

The life of a phoenix descendant was much longer than humans. Some phoenix descendants would continue living on even after their master had died, and stay at Divine Phoenix Island for several hundred years or even 1000 years. Through all these years, Divine Phoenix Island had gathered three Vermilion Birds and a Blue Luan.

One of those Vermillion Birds was Mu Qianyu's Saint Beast. As for the Blue Luan, it was the Saint Beast of her younger sister, Mu Bingyun.

Every time a Saintess would appear every 500 years, there was a small chance that there would be a pair of twin sisters born. That was a Vermillion Bird and a Blue Luan. If this happened, Divine Phoenix Island would enter incomparably prosperous times. If they were able to grasp this opportunity, they might even be able to upgrade themselves to a fifth-grade sect.

"How does Fairy Maiden prefer to be addressed?"

Shi Zongtian stood at the front of the spirit boat leading the way, as the Vermillion Bird slowly followed behind it. The black-clothed masked woman softly said, "My name is Mu Qinghong."

"I see, so it is Fairy Maiden Qinghong. Please."

With these words, the spirit boat had already fallen out of sight. Shi Zongtian led Mu Qinghong to the Grand Hall. As for the person from Peacock Mountain, he was forgotten and left on the side. Naturally, Peacock Mountain didn't have anything to say about this. The difference in their strength was an entire grade. Even if the Sovereign of Peacock Mountain was to go to Divine Phoenix Island, he would barely have the qualifications to mix with the Elders. Not only that, he would only be equal to an unimportant Outer Sect Elder.

In a third-grade sect, the Elders were at the Xiantian realm. And there might not even be a Revolving Dan master. If there was, it would be an extremely rare one or two. In a fourth-grade sect, the Elders were at the Revolving Dan realm. This difference was big.

Mu Qinghong and Shi Zongtian sat side by the side on a dais overlooking the square. Mu Qinghong glanced at all the young talent's cultivation and frowned.

"Is there really anyone in this small third-grade sect that is worthy of Qianyu to give such a high evaluation of?" Mu Qinghong muttered to herself.

Mu Qinghong was an orphan. But, since her natural martial talent was amazing, she had been given shelter as a child at Divine Phoenix Island, and she had received the surname of Mu. After Mu Qianyu was chosen as the Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island, Mu Qinghong was assigned to be her assistant.

Mu Qinghong was 19 years older than Mu Qianyu. They had grown up together and the two regarded each other as sisters, their relationship was very solid. A month ago, Mu Qianyu had returned to Divine Phoenix Island and asked Mu Qinghong to go to the Seven Profound Valleys to observe a young boy named Lin Ming, saying that he had a very unusual talent and he could become a Revolving Dan master in the future. Not only that, he wouldn't be any normal Revolving Dan master either. If he were willing to assist Divine Phoenix Island in the future, then the chances of Divine Phoenix Island becoming a fifth-grade sect would be much higher.

This assessment was simply ridiculous. It could said that Mu Qianyu had already thought of Lin Ming as a talent equal to her own.

“Around 15 or 16 years old, and his cultivation can break through to the Pulse Condensation period at any time. His strength far exceeds a martial artist at the same cultivation, and he has an extremely rare martial intent. His body has a strange bloodline that isn’t inferior at all to Qianyu’s Vermillion Bird bloodline. His body is special, and he has formidable blood vitality. Also, he can control the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder… ”

Mu Qinghong was recalling the details that Mu Qianyu had told her. If this description wasn’t wrong, then such a character would be a talent at the pinnacle of any fourth-grade sect.

At this time, the group stages had already started. Mu Qinghong watched for awhile but she didn’t spot any thunder-attribute martial artists. She pretended to casually ask, “Valley Master Shi, in these ten stages of outstanding young heroes, which ones came from the sect and which ones came from the 36 countries?”

Mu Qinghong knew that Lin Ming came from Sky Fortune Kingdom. As long as she was able to find out which the competition stage Sky Fortune Kingdom was on, she believed it would be very easy to find Lin Ming.

After hearing Mu Qinghong’s question, Shi Zongtian thought it was a bit odd. This woman was simply too interested in the Seven Profound Valley’s Martial Meeting, was she looking for someone?

It couldn’t possibly be that Divine Phoenix Island came to the Seven Profound Valleys to recruit someone…

It shouldn’t be. The disciples with the best talent, such as the Sword Faction’s Jiang Baoyun or the Zither Faction’s Qin Wuxin, had all grown up in their factions and they had learnt their factions core cultivation methods. If they betrayed their sect to enter Divine Phoenix Island, they would have to switch to the cultivation methods of Divine Phoenix Island. This might do more harm than good.

Also, Divine Phoenix Island’s cultivation methods weren’t suitable for men to cultivate.

Although reluctant, Shi Zongtian still described where the martial artists of each stage came from.

“The sixth stage area? It doesn’t look like there’s anything special there… ”

At this time at the sixth stage on the martial field, the third round of the Martial Meeting had started already. Huoluo Nation’s Wang Mu was standing on the stage as well as his opponent Zhou Feng, who came from a martial cultivation family.

Zhou Feng’s cultivation was at the peak of Bone Forging. Since he was able to stand on this stage with his peak Bone Forging cultivation, it meant that he was a talent who was able to jump ranks in battle.

“I’ll defeat you in five moves!” Wang Mu shouted as he took his long sword out. He simply didn’t place Zhou Feng in his eyes.

“You talk so much, aren’t you afraid of spitting on your own face? I want to see just how you’ll defeat me!”

Zhou Feng was also an arrogant youth. These words from Wang Mu suddenly caused him to be angry. His opponent was only at the middle Pulse Condensation period, and yet, he was so rampant!

From the very start of the match, Zhou Feng had to resort to using his final master strike. He understood that defeating someone like Wang Mu would be no easy feat, so he had to go all-out from the get go.

The ultimate move of the Zhou Family had been easily received by Wang Mu. After that, Wang Mu struck out with three sword strokes, forcing Zhou Feng into a perilous situation.

With the fourth sword stroke, Wang Mu broke through the true essence barrier that was protecting Zhou Feng’s body.

With the fifth sword stroke, Wang Mu sent Zhou Feng's weapon flying out of his hand. Then, he kicked Zhou Feng in the chest and sent him flying off the stage.

"Third match, Wang Mu wins!' The referee announced from the side as he gave Wang Mu a few glances. The referee thought that it was quite good for someone from the 36 countries to have such strength. He should be able to advance into the top 100. If a martial artist from the 36 countries was able to advance into the top 100, this was a result that they could be proud of.

After defeating Zhou Feng in five moves, Wang Mu looked at Lin Ming haughtily, provocation stirring in his eyes. "There are a dozen or so matches still left, then it will be time for our match."

Lin Ming only smiled, not saying anything. He turned his head to glance at the competition's schedule table, and just like Wang Mu had said, their gambling match would begin soon enough.

Lin Ming had heard that Huoluo Nation's Seraphic Pond contained an incomparably pure heaven and earth origin energy. Not only that, but there would be no side effects from soaking in this pond. He was quite looking forward to it.

"Fourth match, Lin Ming against Chen Xiao."

This would be Lin Ming's first match. His opponent, Chen Xiao, came from the Seven Profound Valley's Array Faction and his cultivation was at the early Pulse Condensation period. In the last Total Faction Martial Meeting, he had reached rank 105.

Although rank 105 didn't sound too impressive, at that time, Chen Xiao had been at peak Bone Forging. Now three years later, his strength had greatly improved from before. And over half of the disciples that had been ahead of him before now were unable to participate in the Total Faction Martial Meeting due to their age. It could be said that this time, Chen Xiao would definitely enter the top 100.

Mu Qinghong was watching this match from afar. So far, this Lin Ming had matched the description of the youth that Mu Qianyu had described. He looked around 16 or 17 years old, and his cultivation was at the peak Bone Forging stage and it might even be enough to enter the Pulse Condensation period.

Mu Qinghong was waiting for Lin Ming to take out his weapon. If it was a spear, then she would be certain. Or, if he used thunder true essence, it would also most certainly confirm her suspicions.

The strength of Lin Ming's opponent was just barely passable in Mu Qinghong's eyes. Well, at least, she could see how Lin Ming would deal with his opponent.

In the stage, Chen Xiao was holding a small array flag, smiling at Lin Ming. "It's already quite good that a peak Bone Forging boy could stand on this stage. But what a pity, you just ran out of luck, the first person you are up against is me."

Chen Xiao didn't even view Lin Ming as an opponent. He was also a talent that could jump up realms to fight opponents, only a middle Pulse Condensation period opponent was worth him giving his all to. As for someone with a lower cultivation than him, it was simply something to be settled in a single move.

"Mm?" Chen Xiao hadn't finished speaking when he saw that Lin Ming had closed his eyes.

What is this fellow doing? Is he looking down on me? Chen Xiao frowned. He wanted to send Lin Ming off stage with a casual move, but seeing Lin Ming's flagrant disrespect, he decided to give Lin Ming a little lesson in humility.

"Match begins!"

As the referee's voice stopped, Chen Xiao immediately flourished his array flag and a succession of symbols circled around in his hand like a liquid rainbow, it was truly mesmerizing. But, as soon as Chen Xiao waved his array flag, the beautiful symbols melted together into a sharp and deadly weapon.

Compared to all the actions that Chen Xiao had taken, Lin Ming simply opened his eyes.

Bang!

Countless visions and images poured into Chen Xiao's mind. His body shook, his pupils lost focus, and then, his body slowly slumped to the ground with a hard plop.

Lin Ming slowly turned around to leave. The audience that had been sitting around the stage were watching in stunned silence.

"Mm? What happened?"

"Did that martial artist called Lin Ming even make a move? His actions were too fast, I wasn't even able to clearly see it."

"He hadn't moved… he only gave him a look… "

"How is that possible?"

Because it was the group stages, the sixth group that Lin Ming was in didn't have a direct disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys. Thus, there weren't many people in the audience. Most of the audience were in different areas watching the more famous and well known disciples. As for the audience that was here, their own martial cultivation wasn't too high, so they couldn't see the mysterious and strange principles that had just occurred.

"It was actually a soul attack… " Mu Qinghong's slender eyebrows pressed together. Mu Qianyu hadn't said that Lin Ming was able to use soul attacks. She had been counting on Lin Ming using a spear or thunder true essence, but she didn't think that Lin Ming would be able to use just a soul attack to achieve victory. Was it possible that Lin Ming's soul attack was more powerful than his spear play? Or was his opponent not worthy of him using his spear?

Chapter 244 – Standing Out as an Amazing Talent

Chapter 244 – Standing Out as an Amazing Talent

…

….

…

“I see, so that’s the soul force genius that caused an uproar recently,” in the contestant waiting area, a youth with half a silver mask on was sipping a cup of tea, leisurely observing the arena. Watching his demeanor, it was evident that he never placed this group stage in his heart. The mask he wore was very strange, it only covered the right half of his face. But from what was exposed, one could see that he was a handsome man with a feminine and delicate atmosphere.

This masked man did have the qualifications to be proud, his cultivation had reached the late Pulse Condensation period, and he was also a core disciple of the Seven Profound Valley’s Mirage Faction. He was also one of the seeded contestants in the sixth group.

There was an gigantic difference in strength between the core disciples and ordinary disciples of the Seven profound Valleys. A core disciple had outstanding talent, but also had much more resources. Because of this, their strength was usually several times more than an ordinary disciple.

“Oh? Is Big Brother interested in this boy?” A youth beside the masked man asked. The youth was carrying a teapot with an extremely attentive look, ready to refill the tea cup whenever needed.

"He's not worth me being interested in him. It's just that I also happen to know how to use a soul attack, and I want to use him to practice a bit."

"Big Brother thinks too much of him. For Big Brother to use a soul attack on a peak Bone Forging boy is the same as using a giant knife to kill a chicken." The youth seized the opportunity to flatter the masked man. This youth was just an ordinary disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys. The resources that the Seven Profound Valleys supplied to their ordinary disciples was much less than a core disciple. Therefore, there were many ordinary disciples that hung on the coattails of core disciples, hoping to obtain some advantages.

"Mm? It's my turn to go on stage."

The masked man heard the referee call his name out and he stood up, walking onto the stage. After seeing his match, his eyes brightened.

What luck! The first match that he had was against a quite beautiful woman. Not only that, but she was young, yet her cultivation was decently high. She really was a top quality girl.

"I am the Mirage Faction's Bi Tinghua. Beautiful lady, will you admit defeat? Or would you like me to help you admit defeat?" Bi Tinghua grinned as he said this. The young girl in front of him was only at the middle Bone Forging stage, her cultivation was an entire realm less than his, how could she possibly be his opponent?

Qin Xingxuan grit her teeth. She didn't know that her first match would be against such a strong opponent.

"Xingxuan, admit defeat!"

Lin Ming shouted out from outside the stage. Lin Ming had a good estimation of Qin Xingxuan's strength. At most, she would be able to defeat an early Pulse Condensation period martial artist. If she encountered a middle Pulse Condensation period martial artist, she would still be able to put up a decent fight. But against someone who had reached the late Pulse Condensation period, her chances fell precipitously. Not only that, but he wasn't regular late Pulse Condensation martial artist either.

Qin Xingxuan let out a light breath, and somewhat grudgingly said, "I admit defeat!"

"Bi Tinghua, victory!" The referee announced.

Qin Xingxuan was a bit dispirited. She had lost without even being able to put up a fight.

Lin Ming gently patted Qin Xingxuan's shoulder and consoled her, saying, "There's nothing to be sad about. You're only 15 years old, you have plenty of time left. In three years time, this stage will be yours."

"Mm!" Qin Xingxuan nodded, her mood much better.

Bi Tinghua also seemed as if he had some regrets. But then, he looked at Lin Ming and then at Qin Xingxuan and he suddenly grinned. It seemed like the relationship between these two wasn't so simple. Things were getting much more interesting. Wouldn't it be fun if he could beat the lover of a beautiful girl in front of her?

Bi Tinghua walked off stage and his little attendant immediately walked up with a bright welcoming smile. "Congratulations on your well-deserved victory, Big Brother Tinghua."

"She's just a little girl. It's nothing much if she can't beat me. But, that little girl's talent is quite good. She would be top class if she was placed even in the group of core disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys. She will most likely enter the Total Faction at some time in the future.

As Bi Tinghua thought this the referee announced, "Sixth match, Qian Xiaohu against Ling Sen!"

Qian Xiaohu was the little personal attendant that had been attentively pouring tea for Bi Tinghua. Although this fellow was a sycophantic little suck up, his cultivation was still decent, and he had reached the early Pulse Condensation period. The fact that he was able to pass the mountain gate trial showed that he had some skills.

Qian Xiaohu excitedly stood up as he heard his name being called. “Big brother, It’s my turn to go up on stage. This little brother will be right back.”

Bi Tinghua was less optimistic about Qian Xiaohu’s chances. He glanced at Qian Xiaohu’s opponents’s cultivation and he was shocked. Early Bone Forging? Really? How had he managed to pass through the mountain gate trial? Was he a martial artist that excelled in movement techniques?

At the mountain gate trial, martial artists that specialized in movement techniques had a great advantage over martial artists that specialized in other technique. They could stumble their way through even if their true power wasn’t optimal.

“Haha, Big Brother, my luck is just too good. I can’t believe that I’m able to face an early Bone Forging fellow. Not only that, but he comes from the 36 countries. I think this fellow is probably only good at movement techniques.”

Qian Xiaohu hadn’t even got on the stage yet, but he was already imagining his eminent victory. There was an entire cultivation realm between them, and since this person came from the 36 countries, Qian Xiaohu wasn’t feeling pressured in the least.

“Match, start!”

The referee’s voice had just stopped when Qian Xiaohu rushed forwards, his hands shaped like a tiger’s claw. He wanted to end this battle quickly. If he couldn’t defeat some lowly early Bone Condensation martial artist from the 36 bumpkin countries with his early Pulse Condensation period cultivation, then he would lose too much face.

This little brother had to prove that he had some value, otherwise, no boss would be willing to keep such a waste of a little brother around.

Facing Qian Xiaohu's tiger claw, Ling Sen calmly stepped forwards. He hadn't even taken the heavy sword out on his back, when his aura suddenly erupted outwards. Murderous intent spread out as if it were blotting out the sky, and the air on stage immediately began to thicken. The Slaughter Domain had opened!

Qian Xiaohu only saw his surroundings change as he suddenly appeared in a bloody area, facing countless Ashura Devils. These Ashura Devils gave out horrifying shrieks as they started rushing towards him.

Qian Xiaohu had always been a man with a weak mind that sucked up to others, how could his heart of martial arts ever be strong enough to break Ling Sen's Slaughter Domain apart?

Qian Xiaohu's mind was in chaos as he panicked. His swordsmanship was full of holes. In fact, he couldn't even see Ling Sen, there were only countless Ashura Devils surrounding him.

Ling Sen took a casual step towards Qian Xiaohu and sent a punch out.

Bang!

Qian Xiaohu flew backwards until he dropped off stage, still in a confused daze.

"Sixth match, Ling Sen, victory!"

The referee gave Ling Sen a deep glance. To him, Ling Sen was even more surprising than Lin Ming, He was able to substantialize his murderous intent into a domain. The fact that he could use his murderous intent to this degree was simply incredible.

An early Bone Forging martial artist had actually been able to easily defeat an early Pulse Condensation period martial artist. Although Qian Xiaohu's strength was ordinary, he was still a disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys. His strength should be much stronger than an equivalent martial artist from the 36 countries.

The audience was looking around at each other, clueless as to what had just happened. What was going on? Was Qian Xiaohu playacting like some dumb monkey? How come he just watched as his opponent punched him in the face?

Qian Xiaohu climbed back up from the ground, his face pallid as he ran away. He was scared just remembering all those devils surrounding him. He didn't dare face Ling Sen again, it was almost as if he were facing a real Ashura Devil.

"Boss… I… " Qian Xiaohu was still shaken from his experience, he had actually lost to an early Bone Forging martial artist. He was too ashamed to lift his head up.

Bi Tinghua simply ignored Qian Xiaohu, his eyes were only looking at Ling Sen who was still standing on stage. His cupped his chin. "The martial artists from the 36 countries are more and more interesting. It seems that I've been underestimating them."

The matches would proceed one at a time, and every person would have to face 15 competitors one at a time. Finally, the ones with the highest number of victories would advance. At the 12 match, Lin Ming's eyes finally brightened, "So there's actually such a master in the sixth group."

The sixth group didn't have a direct disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys. Lin Ming had thought that Bi Tinghua was the strongest one here, but now, he actually saw there that was a true blue master in his group. This young man's cultivation was at the peak of Pulse Condensation, and not only that, but his aura was extremely shocking, enough to frighten anyone that looked at him. He was like a peerless treasure sword that stood loftily above the stage. His glance was like a sword light that pierced the heart. Even if someone were to look at him, they would have to withstand a great pressure.

"Sword Faction's Jiang Lanjian! Please advise me!" Jiang Lanjian hands gripped the sword hilt in a polite martial artists duel ceremony. Before this, Jiang Lanjian had been watching the previous matches. In his opinion, even though Lin Ming and Bi Tinghua had shown some promise, neither of them were capable of being his match. Therefore, because he hadn't seen anything of interest, Jiang Lanjian hadn't shown up until now.

“P-please… advise me… ” Jiang Lanjian’s hapless opponent was an early Pulse Condensation period martial artist from Huoluo Nation. At this point this point in time, the , Huoluo Nation youth was no more than an eggplant to be beaten up. In his heart, he had already given up.”

“Match, start!”

The referee shouted. The Huoluo Nation disciple hesitated for a moment before finally raising his hand, “I… I admit defeat.”

This youth knew full well that he had already lost, there was no need to further disgrace himself. If the difference in their strength weren’t any less, then he would still try and put up a fight to obtain some experience. But now, the difference in their strength had become a moat that stood between them, he would be defeated in a second. If it were like this then he wouldn’t be able to learn anything and he might as well save his energy to deal with his next opponent.

“Jiang Lanjian, victory!” The referee announced.

Jiang Lanjian turned around and left the stage. Before leaving, his shot a glance towards Lin Ming, his vision sweeping over him. He didn’t pause his steps as he left.

“Although this Jiang Lanjian isn’t a direct disciple, his strength isn’t too far away from a direct disciple. In terms of battle prowess, the disciples of the Seven Profound Valley’s Sword Faction are the strongest within the entire sect. I look forwards to fighting with him… ” Lin Ming’s heart began to smolder with fighting spirit.

……………………

“21st match, Lin Ming against Wang Mu!”

Finally, it was time for Lin Ming and Wang Mu’s gambling fight to occur. With the referee’s announcement, Qin Ziya and Martial House Master Luo in the audience instantly came to attention. The two of them hadn’t been sitting too far away, and with the announcement from the referee the two middle-aged men looked at each other, a faint smile crossing each of their faces.

Qin Ziya turned his attention towards the martial stage. Martial House Master Luo stroked his chin and said, “I admit that I underestimated Lin Ming. But if he wants to win against Wang Mu, it won’t be so easy. Just you wait and see.”

After Lin Ming had instantly defeated Chen Xiao, he had the potential to reach the top 100. However, Wang Mu still looked at him with contempt in his heart. His cultivation was much higher than that Chen Xiao. Still, he had to be cautious facing Lin Ming lest he end up in a miserable state.

Before the match began, Wang Mu condensed true essence within his body, forming a film of true essence that covered him. To Wang Mu, true essence manifestation skills like this weren’t anything difficult.

“Oh? A true essence shield that can defend against soul attacks? I didn’t think that you would have practiced this sort of technique.”

“Humph. Since I dared to take your bet then I have already figured you out. I already know about the matter in Desert Flower Hall where you used soul force to defeat Ouyang Ziyun and I’ve already figured out how to defend against it!”

Chapter 245 – A Second to Defeat Wang Mu

Chapter 245 – A Second to Defeat Wang Mu

…

…

…

Soul force attacks had especially wonderful results if they were used on an opponent that wasn’t aware of the situation. Under the circumstances where the difference in strength and cultivation wasn’t too great, one could instantly defeat the other in a single second. But, if one had made early preparations and was aware of the incoming soul attack, then the situation would be different.

However, normal martial artists would never practice this sort of martial skill simply because martial artists that used their soul force to launch an attack were too rare. Only when a martial artist has reached the Xiantian realm and began to cultivate their soul and similar techniques would such attacks surface. Before the Xiantian realm, martial artists usually only cultivated their true essence and physical body.

“Hmm, this is a bit interesting. It seems that Wang Mu already has a martial skill prepared to deal with soul force attacks. How will Lin Ming handle this situation?”

“I don’t think that Lin Ming has many other attack methods. Looking at him, he only appears to be 16 or 17 years old. Soul force attacks are too difficult to learn and master. Just cultivating one is enough to occupy all his time; where would he find the energy to study anything else?”

“I hear that Lin Ming was also able to control thunder. I wonder what grade his lightning fusion is at. If it’s high, it might be of some use.”

As people talked, Lin Ming and Wang Mu had already both risen to prominence. They had attracted many viewers; there were even some audience members and martial artists from other stages that came to watch. It was basically determined that Lin Ming and Wang Mu would both qualify. In the future, they might encounter one of these two, so it was better to come watch in advance and have an understanding of their opponents strength.

….

In the arena, the match had already begun. But, Wang Mu actually hadn't moved yet. Instead, he strengthened his defensive turtle shell.

"Now that your soul force attacks no longer work, I wonder how you will fight me!" Wang Mu brutishly spit out.

"I see you crammed your study time in order to learn a soul defense; you seem quite confident." Lin Ming still hadn't taken out his spear. Since everyone had assumed that he was a soul force attack genius, then he would just go with the flow. He had already decided that unless he met a master which soul force was useless against, then he would use the Samsara martial intent as his only attack; this wasn't just to hide his strength. If he constantly uses his Samsara martial intent, then he would be able to deepen the understanding of his Samsara martial intent and gain a higher realm of comprehension.

Lin Ming was becoming closer and closer to the Houtian and Xiantian realm. Sooner or later, Lin Ming would have to cultivate his soul. If he waited until then to ponder and understand how the Samsara martial intent was related to his soul, then it would be too late. So, if he was given an opportunity to practice his Samsara martial intent, of course he wouldn't miss it.

Wang Mu's faced flushed red. He coldly snorted, "Even if I don't have a soul defense, I can still crush you with my cultivation. I'm not afraid of you!"

As his voice fell, Wang Mu took out two swords from his spatial ring. He gripped a longsword in his right hand and a dagger in his left.

"Dual blade user?"

The audience's eyes lit up. They hadn't thought that Wang Mu would be a dual blade user. Before this, Wang Mu had only fought with his left hand. To use two blades was much more difficult than a single sword, but once one managed to master this power, then they would be a force to be reckoned with.

"The two blade styles combine and complement each other!"

Wang Mu's true essence began to rapidly revolve within his body. A deep purple color glimmered around the longsword and the dagger, as light glinted off the tip.

Wang Mu took a fierce step forwards and his long sword thrust out followed with his dagger, a piercing sound breaking through the air.

Seeing Wang Mu's blades stab out, Lin Ming remained motionless. His eyes suddenly flashed with a black light.

The Samsara martial intent had begun.

Bang!

Wang Mu felt as if his body were struck by a powerful force. The sword wind that was twirling around his blades scattered into nothing with the loss of his soul force supporting it.

Wang Mu paled as he stepped back, his art filled with a surprised anger. His opponents soul force was simply like a sword light. Although it had managed to penetrate his soul force defense, it had been greatly weakened. Even so, it had caused his spiritual sea to tremble. In that instant, he had seen countless illusions and had almost lost himself in that imaginary vortex.

And worst of all, once his spiritual sea was struck then he wouldn't be able to control his true essence. Any gorgeous or magnificent martial skill that he was using would be wasted.

"I have to strengthen my soul force defense, but my true essence is limited. If I strengthen my soul force defense, then my attack power will naturally weaken along with it. If I don't have enough true essence, can I still use that move?"

"At this point I don't have any other choice." Wang Mu grit his teeth and pushed his true essence to the extreme. The two blades in his hands began to rotate at an astonishing speed.

"Double Blade Vortex!"

True essence formed an air current that began to swirl around the blades. A black vortex emerged from between the two swords, recklessly spinning as it grew larger and larger. A foul evil and cold air began to whisper in the wind, constantly emanating from that vortex.

However, when Wang Mu was about to strike out with this double bladed vortex, he was completely stunned as he watched the audience around him melt into nothingness. The skies evaporated and the ground vanished; he was suddenly a single person standing in an endless empty space. In the sky, there were two massive jet black vortexes that were savagely swirling around. When Wang Mu looked at these vortexes, it was as if he could see the profound void and the endless universe contained within.

Compared to these to titanic black vortexes, his own double sword vortex was absolutely nothing.

In that moment, a glimmer of dread and anguish appeared in Wang Mu's mind.

In a battle of soul force, a single momentary flaw in the mind would spell instant defeat.

Peng!

Wang Mu's soul force defense film completely broke apart. Countless shadows and images flooded into Wang Mu's mind, surging through his spiritual sea, completely cutting off all his contact with the outside world.

Peng!

Peng!

With the sound of metal hitting stone, both of Wang Mu's blades fell the to the ground. His eyes dilated, his pupils blurred over, his face whitened, he foamed from the mouth, and a moment later, he slumped to the ground.

In this duel, he had been thoroughly defeated.

Seeing Wang Mu's defeat, Martial House Master Luo's expression became extremely ugly. Qin Ziya cupped his hands together and smiled as he sent a true essence sound transmission, saying, "Thank you Martial House Master Luo for so generously gifting us with the Seraphic Pond. It was a good game."

Although the words sounded polite they were actually full of sarcasm, grating on Martial House Master Luo's ears as he heard them. Wang Mu had been defeated with only having used half a skill! But Lin Ming actually hadn't moved at all, he had only glanced at Wang Mu twice.

How was this possible? How could a peak Bone Forging boy defeat someone at the middle Pulse Condensation period? Not only that, but Wang Mu wasn't any ordinary middle Pulse Condensation martial artist. Even in the entire Seven Profound Valleys there weren't many people that could do this. Just what was this Lin Ming's soul talent at?

Medium sixth-grade? Or maybe a superior sixth-grade that was only spoken of in the ancient texts?

A sixth-grade soul talent was much rarer than a sixth-grade martial talent. To have a superior-sixth grade soul talent was simply unimaginable!

"Lin Ming, victory!"

The referee promptly announced. After defeating Wang Mu, Lin Ming was already at the front of his group. He was only behind Jiang Lanjian and Bi Tinghua. It was already certain that he would pass the group stages.

“This Lin Ming is simply too terrifying; he was actually able to defeat a middle Pulse Condensation period martial artist with just his soul force. Could he do the same with a late Pulse Condensation period martial artist?”

“Late Pulse Condensation….it should be impossible….even a top-level talent of the Seven Profound Valleys could not do this. Even the direct disciples of the Total Faction would not be able to defeat a late Pulse Condensation period master when only at the peak of Bone Forging.”

“Well, it’s different. After all, he is a soul force attack expert. It simply isn’t the right path to walk to use such skills. Although it has a great effect now, later it will create a very big bottleneck, especially after the Xiantian realm when everyone begins to cultivate their soul. At that time, others’ soul force won’t be much weaker, rendering his soul attacks useless.”

“They would have to reach the Xiantian realm first. How many of the geniuses present would be able to reach the Xiantian realm? 1 out of 20? 1 out of 30? In any case, I’m not prepared to deal with this abnormal freak. If I run into him, I’ll just admit defeat. Since I’m only at the early Pulse Condensation period, chances are, I will also be defeated in a second. I’ll save my strength to deal with someone else.

This thought of the Seven Profound Valley disciple was also what most of the other martial artists were thinking. There were a total of 10 that could leave this group. Most of them weren’t sure that they would be able to deal with Lin Ming, so they could only forfeit their match if they encountered him,.

………………

In the Profound Sky Mountain’s Great Hall, Mu Qinghong had been watching the entire match from afar.

She had already determined that this soul attack youth was Lin Ming, the young boy that Qianyu had spoken about. Unless Lin Ming hadn’t come to participate in the Seven Profound Valley’s Total Faction Martial Meeting.

“This Lin Ming still hasn’t used a weapon, and neither has he conjured any of his thunder true essence. It seems he’s preparing to reach first place in his group.

Mu Qinghong had seen that there were a few Seven Profound Valley disciples in Lin Ming’s group that were decent. It wouldn’t be easy for Lin Ming to defeat them with his young 16 years of age.

“He’s so young and yet he gives off a mystifying aura, as if I’m looking into a deep well. Even though Qianyu described him, I still don’t know just how many cards he has in his hand….

……………

At this time, Sky Fortune Kingdom’s Seven Profound Martial House –

The semi-annual Martial House entrance examination had just ended, and a group of lucky fellows had entered the Seven profound martial House. These lucky ones could be described as the favored talents of heaven, flushed with success. As long as nothing went wrong, they would be able to do many great things after they graduated. They could join the army and be a commander, or, if they didn’t want to join the army, they could stay in their respected families and serve as great political figures.

Regardless of what path they chose, they had won glory for their family. Not only that, but they would also have a ridiculously high income. A normal family could struggle for an entire year, performing hard labor and only earn 10 or so gold taels, but these talents would be able to relax and earn several hundred taels of gold per year.

Thinking of their future livelihood full of abundance, these young disciples that had grown up under the aura of being a genius couldn’t restrain their smug smiles.

According to the rules, the new disciples of the Martial House needed to visit the Ten Thousand Killing Array and the Ranking Stone under the guidance of their new instructor. This allowed them to see the top-ranking talents and also motivate them to practice well.

Before they reached the Ranking Stone, they saw that many people had gathered at a temple-like building; it was completely bustling with activity. At the side of this temple, there was also an expensive and well-dressed young man sitting at the side of the building as if he was waiting for something.

“What is that?” A 16 year-old young female disciple asked as she pointed at the weird looking altar in the middle of the temple. The middle of the altar was surrounded with exquisitely beautiful and sparkling crystal stones. “What beautiful crystals.”

The young girl’s eyes shone.

“What crystal? Are you an idiot? That’s a true essence stone. It’s a pure true essence stone worth 1000 gold taels!” Many of the Martial House disciples came from large and respected families so they had extraordinary natural insight into these mysterious objects.

“1000 gold taels…with so many, that has to be several tens of thousands of gold taels! The young girl clutched her gasping mouth. In the ordinary world, a common family only earned 10 gold taels of income per year. But now, there was an astronomical figure of several tens of thousands of gold taels; it was a number she couldn’t understand.

“Mmm….I wonder what sort of array formation will use so many true essence stones. This is just too luxurious…..” The youth who spoke pursed his lips. Although he came from a large family, he was still distressed seeing so many true essence stones used in an array formation.

“It’s a sound transmission array.” At this time, a middle-aged instructor opened his mouth to speak. “It’s a sound transmission array to deliver a message from the Seven Profound Valleys Total Faction. The array is separated by several hundred thousand miles. In order to transmit one message it will consume 36 true essence stones.

“What!? It takes that many true essence stones to send a message?” Even those disciples that came from large families were startled beyond compare. A message that was worth several tens of thousands of gold taels? What a joke!

What sort of news was this? Could only an Emperor listen to it?

Chapter 246 – Hope

Chapter 246 – Hope

…

…

…

“Instructor, what sort of news is worth 36 true essence stones to send? Is it a combat report from the frontline battlefield?” The youth who asked came from a military family. In his opinion, only a combat report of Sky Fortune Kingdom was worth spending 36 true essence stones on. After all, victory or defeat in war was related to the destiny of a nation.”

The middle-aged instructor shook his head and said, “A frontline combat report wouldn’t use a sound transmission array. Our Seven Profound Martial House isn’t a messenger for Sky Fortune Kingdom.”

A sound transmission array formation that could pass a message through several hundred thousand miles wasn’t something that could simply be created on a whim. Not even Sky Fortune Kingdom’s Imperial Palace could hope to ever construct something like this.

“Then what sort of news is being sent?” The young boys and girls eyes were filled with curiosity. They were at the age where they were intensely inquisitive into all things.

“This transmission array will send a victory report from the Total Faction Martial Meeting. It will be sent tonight,” The middle-aged instructor replied.

“Mm....Total Faction Martial Meeting?” Most disciples face were filled with befuddlement; none of them knew what that was. After all, the common person was rarely exposed to such a high-level existence. Even the Seven Profound Valleys that stood behind the Seven Profound Martial House was an incomparably vague concept. They simply didn't know just how strong the Seven Profound Valleys actually were.

"The Seven Profound Valleys set up a Total Faction Martial Meeting and gathered the talents of all the countries together to compare their strengths." Although the middle-aged instructor knew that this wouldn't make much sense to these new disciples nor did it matter to them, he still patiently explained it.

"Oh? The geniuses of all the countries gather together?" As a youth heard this, his eyes suddenly shone. He was the first place candidate of this time's entrance examination – the freshman disciple named Huayu. Huayu also came from a large, respected family, and at 15 years old, his cultivation was at the Viscera Training stage; his strength as quite alright. When the middle-aged teacher had said that the talents of all the countries would gather together, Huayu felt incomparably enthusiastic, burning with fighting spirit. He said, "Instructor, when can I participate? What rank would I be able to get?"

The middle-aged instructor didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. He said, "You can't go...."

"Why?" Huayu felt as if he had been slapped. He was the number one candidate in the Seven Profound Martial House entrance examination. He could be considered the most talented young martial artist of Sky Fortune Kingdom within the last half year. With such a proud and worthy title, how could he not even participate?

The middle-aged instructor sighed with poignancy. This youth was merely a superior fourth-grade talent. Only if he was an inestimable surprise like Ling Sen or Lin Ming would he ever be able to reach the level needed to contact the Total Faction.

He didn't want to ruin to the youths self-confidence, so he tried a different tactic. "Do you see that well-dressed man in the robe near the transmission array?"

"Mm? I see." Huayu turned his head and saw in man in a brocaded robe. He was sitting in a mahogany chair near the altar and was looking a bit anxious at the moment.

“He is the current dynasty’s Crown Prince. News from the Total Faction Martial Meeting will only arrive during the evening, yet it is only noon and he’s waiting here. Do you know what this means?”

“What? Crown Prince!?”

“His Highness the Crown Prince!? He is the current dynasty’s Crown Prince!?”

All of the youths gasped in complete and utter surprise, their eyes wide with incredulity as if they couldn’t believe their eyes. To the common people, the Crown Prince was a legendary figure they had only ever heard about.

The Crown Prince was waiting here even though the news came in the evening. Not only that, but the price of the transmission array was 36 pure true essence stones. All of these implied just how important this news was!

This also meant that this unknown Total Faction Martial Meeting had an extraordinary significance!

The middle-aged instructor let out a sigh. He didn’t envy these heavenly favored talents when there was the grand stage where countless talents that were above them reigned; that was the true world. Casually choosing any one of these talents was like taking a small rock front a giant mountain of stones.

“Do you understand now? This Total Faction Martial Meeting is grander than you can imagine. All of the talents, geniuses and young heroes from all the countries and numerous martial families will gather in the Seven Profound Valley’s Total Faction. It is simply impossible for you to stand on that stage! Let alone you, even the core disciples of the Martial House cannot. There are many inferior fifth-grade talents and medium fifth-grade talents that have no hope of going.”

“Not even a medium fifth-grade talent has a chance?” Huayu was shocked. To say it more directly, he was only a superior fourth-grade talent. A fifth-grade talent was only born once a decade in the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom. In his opinion, this kind of existence would simply be a son of god.

“But....since this tournament is so important, then how come we’ve never heard of it?” Huayu asked the question that all the other new disciples were wondering. If this Martial Meeting were truly so grand, how come no one had ever heard of it before?

The middle-aged instructor explained, “That is because, in all these years, this Martial Meeting had held no significance for our Sky Fortune Kingdom. Every three years, the Seven Profound Martial House will send out 5 disciples to participate in this tournament. However, usually four out of the five sent would come from the four martial families that live on the edge of Sky Fortune Kingdom. Every so often, even all five of them would come from the four martial families, and our Sky Fortune Kingdom would have no share in participating.”

“I had said that even a medium fifth-grade talent may not necessarily participate in the Martial Meeting. It’s the same for the other countries and martial families too. Our Sky Fortune Kingdom only produces a fifth-grade talent every 10 years. They do have a large chance of participating, but....”

The middle-aged instructor paused here, and shook his head before continuing, “That is only in terms of filling the quota of people that we send. Actually, there is a mountain gate trial that most cannot even pass, and they are eliminated from the Martial Meeting. A few years ago, the four martial families produced a disciple named Mu Yinzhou who managed to reach the top 100. That was the most joyous and proud moment for our Seven Profound Martial House. However, that was only the pride of the Martial House and the pride of the four great martial families. It had nothing to do with our Sky Fortune Kingdom.

A martial family wouldn’t necessarily only have a single last name. A child would follow their father’s last name, and if a daughter were to marry someone else, her children would follow her husband’s last name. Mu Yinzhou was talented because he had the bloodline of his father, a wandering martial artist that roamed the world and wasn’t a Sky Fortune citizen.

An outer disciple inevitably could not compare to someone in the martial family that shared the main lineage. Even Mu Yinzhou couldn't be considered a true member of the four great martial families.

"Proud to reach the top 100? Our Sky Fortune Kingdom has so many talents, how can they not reach the top 100? How many countries participate in the Total Faction martial Meeting?"

"It's not a question of how many countries participate. It's that our Sky Fortune Kingdom has simply too wide a gap compared to those ancient and glorious martial families and sects. When the disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys are at your age, it's only considered extremely ordinary to have a cultivation at the peak of Altering Muscle.

"Eh...." Huayu stared with wide eyes. He hadn't yet reached 16 years old and his cultivation was at middle Viscera Training stage. This was already considered very good, good enough that even the Family Head had praised him. But....peak Altering Muscle at 15 years of age? What sort of concept was that? And that was only ordinary? Was this some sort of joke? Was he lying?

The middle-aged instructor sighed, "It's shameful to say this, but the last time someone born from the Sky Fortune Kingdom had reached the top 100 rankings was 50 or 60 years ago. Even having someone pass the mountain gate trial was 15 years ago. This was truly shameful for our Sky Fortune Kingdom, and also for our Seven Profound Martial House! I am an instructor of the Martial House who was born in Sky Fortune Kingdom, and even I feel disgraced just mentioning this subject. That is why I didn't wish to speak of the Total Faction Martial Meeting."

While conversing, they had finally arrived before the Ranking Stone. Gazing up, they could view the numerous names engraved upon the large Ranking Stone. These were the talents of Sky Fortune Kingdom's Seven Profound Martial House.

The higher one's ranking, the larger their name would be. The first row only had one name – Lin Ming.

Following closely behind Lin Ming were Ling Sen and Ta Ku. In another half month, these three names would be removed from this Ranking Stone. Ling Sen and Ta Ku would graduate, and Lin Ming would become a core disciple.

Thinking this, the middle-aged instructor felt very melancholic. Lin Ming was once his student. Although he had only taught him for a few days, Lin Ming was the most outstanding and wonderful student that he had ever taught in his entire life; it had left a deep and profound impression on him.

“Lin Ming! It’s Lin Ming!

“Wow, I’m so excited! I can actually see the name of my idol in first place!”

“That’s right, Instructor Hong, did Mister Lin Ming participate in this year’s Total Faction Martial Meeting?”

The name of Lin Ming resounded like thunder in the ears of these young martial artists. He was without a doubt the utter and complete inspiration of those in every youthful martial arts circle. These young boys and girls couldn’t help but ask this question.

“He participated! Of course he participated!”

Hong Xi took a deep breath, and his somewhat disconsolate eyes began to suddenly shine with a flashing and glorious brilliance, like a sleeping lion that had woken up.

“Can Lin Ming reach the top 100?” A young girl whispered.

“Of course he can, he definitely will! Not only will he reach the top 100, but he will reach the top 50, even the top 30!” Hong Xi subconsciously gripped his fists, his emotions surging like the tide. It was like the one participating in the Total Faction Martial Meeting wasn’t Lin Ming, but himself. In Lin Ming, he had placed all his hopes.

His eyes shifted towards the direction of the Seven Profound Valleys. Across all those endless miles and rivers and valleys, Lin Ming and his group of three had enormous hopes placed upon them. This wasn't only the hope of the instructors within the Seven Profound Martial House, but was also the hope of all the generations of martial artists within Sky Fortune Kingdom……

……………………………………

When the third round began, Lin Ming met with three forfeits. It was not only him, but also Jiang Lanjian and Bi Tinghua who had opponents admitting defeat as the match started. In the group stages, one only had to be in the top ten to advance; there was no need to fight in every match.

Then, it was time for lunch.

Lin Ming, five matches, five victories.

Ling Sen, five matches, five victories.

Qin Xingxuan's luck was quite bad. She had already lost three matches. Her chances of qualifying for the next stage were becoming increasingly precarious.

Although she had long expected this result, and knew that the main reason she lost was not because of her talent but because of her age, Qin Xingxuan still felt a bit disappointed. During this Martial Meeting, her journey would most likely end at the group stages. But three years from now, this would become her stage.

After five matches, Lin Ming had already gained some fame. As for Ling Sen, the matches he had met were a bit weaker, so his fame was also correspondingly smaller.

There were some people trying to take advantage of the situation and were beginning to estimate the future rankings; they had even opened up gambling houses.

The Seven Profound Valleys would not interfere in this. In fact, the ones that opened these gambling houses were usually the children of the Elders; their backgrounds weren't small. For them, the gambling house was merely a pleasurable pastime. It was difficult to judge the strength of a participant in the group stages, so the gambling house wouldn't necessarily make any profit.

During lunch time, Qin Xingxuan smiled at Lin Ming and praised, "Lin Ming, you're chosen as one of the seeded players in the gambling house. Your odds aren't too bad."

"Oh? What are my odds of winning the whole thing?" Lin Ming casually asked. If the compensation rate was good, he might consider placing a bet on himself.

"Uh, well....you have....um, no odds of winning the championship...." Qin Xingxuan didn't think that the first question Lin Ming would ask was what his rates were for winning the entire Martial Meeting. Even her, who had utter faith in Lin Ming, wasn't very optimistic in Lin Ming's chances of winning the championship.

Chapter 247 – Out of the Group Stages and Into the Top 100!

Chapter 247 – Out of the Group Stages and Into the Top 100!

…

…

…

It was true that Lin Ming was strong. However, the several direct disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys were simply too terrifying. They were all at the peak of Pulse Condensation – an entire realm of cultivation higher than Lin Ming. Not only that, but they were also talents that were able to jump ranks in combat; they were stronger than an ordinary middle Houtian realm master.

No matter how fierce Lin Ming was, it was simply impossible for him to cross almost two realms in order to fight with a middle Houtian realm master. If it was possible, then it would perturb the entire Seven Profound Valleys.

Qin Xingxuan said, "There were 20 candidates that were selected as possible champions. These are almost all of the Seven Profound Valley core disciples, as well as the most popular seeded participants in the 10 groups. Jiang Lanjian is also a choice, and his compensation rate is 1:20. There is also someone from a martial cultivation family who has been selected, Zhang Yanzhao, and his compensation rate is 1:35.

Zhang Yanzhao?

Lin Ming felt that this name was someone familiar. He thought back and recalled that during the ruckus in Desert Flower Hall, one of Ouyang Ziyun's minions had mentioned this name. Zhang Yanzhao from the Zhang Family had managed to reach the top 20 in the last Total Faction Martial Meeting! But, compared to the top 10 ranking Seven Profound Valley direct disciples, the difference was simply too great. This time he had practiced for three years and hoped to attain success with his hard work.

Ever since the Seven Profound Valleys had started to hold their Total Faction Martial Meeting, the first place champion had always been won by a Seven Profound Valleys core disciple; it had never fallen into the hand of outsiders. It was already quite good that Zhang Yanzhao had been selected as one of the 20 possible champions and could obtain a 1:35 compensation rate.

"Yes....did you say I was selected as a seeded participant?" Lin Ming asked.

"Um....you had just been selected as one of the seeded players in the 36 countries. But, you have to place first within all the disciples of the 36 countries. There are 7 chosen candidates; your compensation rate is 1:6.

"1:6? It seems my compensation rate isn't that high. I shouldn't be in the front of the ranks right?"

:Mm. The ones with the highest rank in the 36 countries are the brother sister pair from Grace Venerate Nation. Both of them have a cultivation of the middle Pulse Condensation period, and are about to enter into the late Pulse Condensation period. Both of their odds are 1:2.

"Grace Venerate Nation...." Because their countries were too far away, Lin Ming had never seen this country and had only heard some rumors. Grace Venerate Nation was an extremely mysterious country, and it's land mass was smaller than the Sky Fortune Kingdom. However, their power was even greater than Huoluo Nation.

Lin Ming recalled this for a moment. He grinned at Qin Xingxuan and said, "Xingxuan, if you want to win some money to eat at Desert Flower Hall, then you can bet on me."

“Haha....well, the truth is I already placed 20 true essence stones on you...” Qin Xingxuan mumbled, somewhat embarrassed. This was only a scenario that she had speculated would happen. Although Lin Ming might not be able to become the champion, Qin Xingxuan had absolute faith in him that he could easily dispatch the brother and sister pair from Grace Venerate Nation. Up to now, Lin Ming still hadn’t used his spear.

....

After lunch, the afternoon round of matches would begin. The match schedule had been specifically arranged; there were no lots that were drawn. The reasoning behind this was so that the seeded players did not meet in the group matches, and that martial artists from similar families would be placed as far away from each other as possible.

Each of the 21 individuals in Lin Ming’s group had to fight a total of 15 matches. This was so that the top 30 seeded players would be able to stagger each other.

Lin Ming had managed to not encounter Bi Tinghua, Jiang Lanjian, Ling Sen, or Qin Xingxuan. There were too many forfeits that occurred in the afternoon matches so Lin Ming hadn’t really faced anyone. That was, until his seventh round where Lin Ming encountered a middle Pulse Condensation period martial artist who was his opponent. This was a disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys Refiner Faction, Sun Dong.

Sun Dong’s cultivation was at the middle Pulse Condensation period, and he already had quite good results in the group stage. It shouldn’t be too difficult for him to pass the group stages. Not only that, but as a disciple of the Refiner Faction, he was especially skilled in defend against and restrain soul force attack martial artists.

Sun Dong very confidently walked onto the stage. On top of his head, a three foot large furnace was twirling around.

“You are quite strong, but it won’t be easy to defeat me. Although my Seven Profound Valleys Refiner Faction disciples aren’t that skilled in martial skills and cultivation methods, but in terms of soul force power, our strength is far beyond that of ordinary martial artists! Your soul attacks are simply useless against me!

A refining master and an inscription master were basically the same; both of them needed accurate and precise control of soul force. Sun Dong was a medium fifth-grade soul talent and had also cultivated a soul law formula since he was a child in order to refine and build up his soul force. The power of his soul force could be imagined.

“Haha, I’m really looking forwards to this. Although Sun Dong isn’t too strong, he just happens to be someone that is able to counter Lin Ming. Soul attacks shouldn’t work against him. I wonder what other methods Lin Ming still has.”

“Hehe, it’s time that this Lin Ming will taste the suffering of defeat. I can’t wait to see his winning streak ended.

Lin Ming had swept away and defeated many masters of the Seven Profound Valleys. Since there were many Total Faction disciples in the audience, they naturally hoped that Lin Ming would lose a match; they were simply jealous of someone that could remain undefeated in the group stages. Not to mention, this young upstart youth actually came from the 36 countries. This was just like a poor boy that had climbed on a royal’s head; this made people feel unhappy.

“Let me show you the secrets of our Refiner Faction! Stable Tripod Universe!”

Sun Dong gave a loud shout and the small black furnace above his head began to spin around in the wind. In a blink of an eye it had instantly enlarged by several feet.

After true essence was poured into the furnace, it simply had an unimaginable force. It could even shatter a small hill or mountain top.

Lin Ming didn’t bother paying attention to whatever it was that Sun Dong was doing. Instead, his eyes flashed with a black light; the Samsara martial intent surged outwards.

Peng!

Sun Dong paled as if he had been struck hard. Because the three feet large furnace in the air had lost the support of soul force and true essence, it pounded into the ground and broke apart the tiles.

“Damn, how could this happen. My soul force is so strong, how was he able to injure me?” Sun Dong thought as he gasped for breath, a hand held up against his face to support himself.

“Furnace Shattering 10,000 Voids!” Sun Dong’s eyes flashed, and the black furnace began to wildly spin around again. This time, it had only flown a few feet when it suddenly crashed into the floor.

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a black light again. Sun Dong’s body shook once more, then his eyes lost all focus and he slumped onto the ground.

“Lin Ming, victory!”

After the referee’s announcement, the entire audience was stunned silent. Even the Refiner Faction’s Sun Dong had been defeated. Not only that, but he had been defeated so easily. How could this be?

Wang Mu’s defeat was surprising to some, but this was still an acceptable outcome. The reasoning for this was that Lin Ming’s soul force was simply too monstrously abnormal, and was able to equal someone at the middle Pulse Condensation period. But, Sun Dong was a refining master whose attacks used soul force. How could he also suffer a similar fate like Wang Mu?

Just what sort of background did this Lin Ming fellow have?

Many of the Seven Profound Valley disciples that were watching from the audience suddenly felt chills crawl down their spines. Lin Ming had used his soul force to defeat opponents one after another. Regardless of an opponent’s cultivation or how their soul force was, the matches had been resolved within the space of a few breaths. Lin Ming’s soul force attacks gave those watching a completely mystical and unfathomable feeling!

The truth was, although Lin Ming's Samsara martial intent was approximately a soul attack, it wasn't only a soul attack.

The Samsara martial intent that he been born out of the will within one's heart was in itself an attack on a martial artists' heart of martial arts. If one didn't have a firm and steady heart of martial arts, then it would be very simple for them to become lost in the 100 Samsaras.

Even though a martial artist could have a powerful soul force, that didn't imply that their heart was firm.

Therefore one wouldn't be able to ignore the Samsara martial intent attack just by virtue of a strong soul force.

The Samsara martial intent could only be seen by those it was used against. Only those people would be able to see the mysterious secrets within. Others would find it too difficult to understand the profound secrets and truths hidden within. As for those who had been overwhelmed by the countless visions and images, they had quickly lost consciousness after. In the end, it was difficult to say just what sort of attacks had been used.

However, at this time at the Grand Hall, Mu Qinghong noticed that there was something peculiar about Lin Ming's soul attack. As for what it was, she would only ever be able to judge it if she personally experienced an attack.

"This youth is becoming more and more interesting. Maybe Qianyu's talk wasn't so exaggerated as I thought.

The corners of Mu Qinghong's lips curved up. She was glad that she hadn't made this trip in vain.

The group stages were tepid; it was quite boring. There simply weren't any showdowns between the true heavy weights. In half the matches, the result had been decided just by one's cultivation.

Finally, Ling Sen and Bi Tinghua's match was about to happen. It attracted the attention of many people.

Ling Sen, 21 years old, cultivation of early Bone Forging.

Bi Tinghua, 19 years old, cultivation of late Pulse Condensation.

From the very start of the match, Ling Sen activated his Slaughter Domain. He knew quite well that Bi Tinghua would be the strongest opponent that he had faced so far.

Fu!

Bi Tinghua felt a bit dizzy as the scenery around him changed. In the next moment, he had been transported to a blood hell. He saw the endless gray rocks, as well as the countless devils that were climbing out of the ninth layer of the abyss.

Bi Tinghua wickedly smiled.

"Illusion? I am from the Mirage Faction!

Bi Tinghua's mouth arced in a smile. Bi Tinghua pinched his hands, and suddenly an endless pillar of fire descended from the heavens. With the roaring combustion sound of the flames, these devils had been turned into ashes.

The flame kept growing larger and hotter. Suddenly, the flame began to break the rocks and even set the sky ablaze. This inferno was an illusion formed by Bi Tinghua. In the illusionary world, Bi Tinghua was god!

Peng!

The Slaughter Domain was shattered. Lin Sen's face whitened to the color of bone.

Bi Tinghua smiled as he looked down on Ling Sen. "You are not my match."

"Thousand-hand Bright Buddha!"

Bi Tinghua's palm struck out. Soon, countless images of Bi Tinghua's hand began to form a series of illusory phantoms. Bi Tinghua's phantom palms increased until they began to blot out the entire sky.

Ling Sen gave a loud shout and took out his heavy sword. His body's true essence revolved the utter limit, and he cut down with his sword in a counter attack.

Peng!

The sword wind was shattered. The bricks underneath Ling Sen's foot had been turned into stone powder. With a stuffy snort, he knelt down as he was. The true essence surrounding his body had been scattered, and he had received a heavy wound.

"Bi Tinghua, victory!"

The referee that announced his also felt that there wasn't anything unusual about this match; the cultivation of the two had simply been too different. If Ling Sen had been able to win, then that would be the most shocking event in the entire Seven Profound Valleys.

Ling Sen had completely lost. Not only that, but he didn't even have the qualifications to force Bi Tinghua to use his true ability.

After Ling Sen and Bi Tinghua's match was over, there were very few matches remaining that were worth paying attention to. Most of Lin Ming's matches had forfeited. If it continued like this, he would easily pass the group stages.

Bi Tinghua and Jiang Lanjian had qualified with the same undefeated score.

Qin Xingxuan was off by two wins. Her journey in this Martial Meeting was halted in the group stages.

Ling Sen won 12 and lost 3. His results in group six qualified him to cross into the next stages.

Although this result was ordinary, it was quite good if compared to Ling Sen's low early Bone Forging cultivation. It was only because Ling Sen was 21 and had missed the best times to of his youth to cultivate. His cultivation speed had always been his weakness; it was the limiter that prevented Ling Sen from entering into the top-tier of talents.

……………………………………………

"It's sunset. The victory report should be arriving any moment now.

In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, the Seven Profound Valley's sound transmission array had already opened. There were 36 pure true essence stones splendidly placed on the array disk.

At this time, many important people had arrived around the sound transmission array. There were several Seven Profound Martial House Elders, Ta Ku and other important disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House, and also several nobles of Sky Fortune Kingdom.

Today was the day that the group matches were finished, so they were waiting for the victory report to arrive.

Chapter 248 – The Second Round Begins

Chapter 248 – The Second Round Begins

…

…

…

The snow fluttered in the falling light and the icy wind was chilling to the bone. Crown Prince Yang Lin had a thick golden-purple cloak draped over his body, he was waiting patiently on a thick wooden chair.

The truth was that Yang Lin didn’t have to stay here to listen to the message as it came. As long as the Total Faction Martial Meeting victory report arrived, thousands of sound transmitting talismans would instantly light up and the report would be sent to important figures of all the great power players. Tomorrow, the national newspaper of Sky Fortune City would publish the results.

The reason that Yang Lin personally insisted on waiting here was besides Qin Ziya, there was no one else that was more concerned about Lin Ming’s results than him.

His destiny had already been tightly bound together with Lin Ming. Now that Ouyang Dihua was dead, as long as Lin Ming’s influence increased just a little bit, his chances of winning the throne were that much higher.

Outside the temple, there were many disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House waiting, many of them being the new disciples that had entered the Seven Profound Martial House through the entrance exam. The words that Instructor Hong Xi had said to them had left a very deep and shocking impression on their young minds, and they had braved the chilling cold to stand here because they believed that they would be able to witness a historic moment.

The results from the Total Faction Martial Meeting wasn't only related to the glory of Sky Fortune Kingdom's Martial House, it also had a very important political significance and it represented the power of the country's martial artists. The dazzling successes of the young martial artists was a manifestation of the nation's strength. If they could reach a result that was up to the standards of the Seven Profound Valleys, the Seven Profound Valleys would also increase the resources allotted to Sky Fortune Kingdom.

Although the Seven Profound Valleys was a blood sucking vampire, they weren't completely merciless or without foresight. If a country could prove its value, then the Seven Profound Valleys would be willing to help elevate it. For instance, Huoluo Nation, Grace Venerate Nation, and some of the 16 martial cultivation families like the Zhang Family were like this.

In summary, the Seven Profound Valleys would use their resources in a way to maximize efficiency. It would not waste any resources on the weak and the wasted.

In the sunset of early winter, the clouds were thick in the sky, and the dark night fell sooner. There were some maids near the altar that had lit candle lamps under the shade. In such cold weather, these maids that had no martial cultivation could not stay warm, no matter how much they wore.

Even though there was shelter, the light was erratic and the snow sporadically fell, turning into small droplets of water that wet the lamp paper.

Just when everyone was beginning to become anxious, the sound transmission array suddenly activated, and the 36 true essence stones began to light up one at a time.

Yang Lin immediately stood up, looking unblinkingly towards the sound transmission array, his ears at full attention.

A sound transmission array was different from a sound transmission talisman, everyone around it would be able to hear the message. As the light of the transmission array began to reach a peak, the sound of Qin Ziya's voice was emitted.

"Qin Xingxuan was off by two necessary wins. She can go no further in the group stages."

"Ling Sen won 12 and lost 3. His results in group six qualify him to take part in the next stages. He has entered the top 100."

"Lin Ming... all matches were complete victories. He is first in the qualifying group and he has entered the top 100!"

Even though Qin Ziya was usually tranquil, his voice still trembled as he said Lin Ming's results.

All matches were complete victories!

This was a glory that had never happened ever since Sky Fortune Kingdom was founded!

For the countries ranked in the middle of the 36 countries, it was already a cause worth rejoicing if they had a talent that could pass the mountain gate trial every 2 or 3 Total Faction Martial Meetings. A local talent of Sky Fortune Kingdom hadn't passed the mountain gate trial in the last 15 years!

But now, the three disciples, Lin Ming, Ling Sen, and Qin Xingxuan, had all crossed the mountain gate trial. Not only that, but Lin Ming and Ling Sen had both passed the first group stage.

What was even more riveting was that Lin Ming had passed by having a complete victory!

What kind of glory was this? Even Huoluo Nation had never achieved something like this!

"All matches, complete victory? If it really is a complete victory, then Lin Ming has just created a Sky Fortune Kingdom record!" The Heavenly Abode Elder Sun Sifan gleefully laughed. He was probably the Elder in the Seven Profound Martial House that had the best relations with Lin Ming. He had supported the newbie Lin Ming during the time of the entrance examination when he had achieved first place. Now, Sun Sifan believed that this was the wisest decision he had made in his entire life.

Compared to the laughing Sun Sifan, Yang Lin sank back into his chair. His hands were trembling as they gripped the armrest. This revealed his inner excitement and roiling emotions.

Yang Lin was absolutely the most overjoyed person here. Someone like Lin Ming with such a strong and pure heart of martial arts would never be ungrateful and renege on a promise that he had made. As long as there wasn't an accident, Yang Lin would be able to smoothly inherit the throne.

Yang Lin had already been waiting too long for this day. Although everybody looked up to him as the Crown Prince and they were in awe of what a great position he had, no one actually understood the pain, doubt, and fear that pierced Yang Lin's deepest feelings. Once the struggle for the throne began, there was no turning back. Once he walked down that harsh path, there was no redemption if he fell. Even his own mother's and sister's life were tied together with his.

It was as if he were walking on a tightrope every day and living in abject fear of the future's possibilities. But now that he finally saw the dawning sun, how could he not be excited?

The new Seven Profound Martial House disciples also cheered as they heard the news. They had braved this cold wind in order to stand here because they were part of the Linmaniacs that had taken Lin Ming as their idol. To them, they would never envy Lin Ming's glory, they would only admire and respect him.

Hu! Hu! Hu!

Several dozens of sound transmitting talismans simultaneously lit up at once, rapidly circulating the joyous news.

Because of the distances, series of sound transmitting talismans were used. These ordinary sound transmitting talismans could only work in a hundred mile range. A large sect could use high-grade sound transmitting talismans that could send messages tens of thousands of miles, but Sky Fortune Kingdom naturally wouldn't have this sort of sound transmitting talisman.

As one batch of sound transmitting talismans burned out, the second batch was lit!

In the dark night, the dancing flames of the sound transmitting talismans became increasingly brilliant and gorgeous.

Yang Lin took a deep breath. Watching these burning flames, he suddenly thought that this sight was extremely beautiful…

……………………………………………

Next day, Profound Sky Mountains –

It was a new day and a new martial stage. There were less matches today, but the matches were much more intense.

The matches were still arranged without drawing lots, the referee was the one who organized the brackets. This was to arrange the various participants based on their strength, and so that the extremely formidable seeded participants wouldn't meet ahead of time.

Lin Ming had been placed in the seventh group, and this group also had ten people.

Within these ten was actually a direct disciple of the Array Faction, Fang Qi.

In addition, there was also the Mirage Faction's Bi Tinghua.

In this group of 10, every disciple had to fight in 8 matches, there would only be one person they wouldn't battle. The match between Lin Ming and Bi Tinghua was said to be inevitable.

Even though two strong participants like Lin Ming and Bi Tinghua would meet, this would be replicated across many martial stages. Out of each group, the participants would be divided again based on their final result. The top three would enter the first tier, the next three would enter the second tier, and the remaining four would enter the third tier.

With ten groups, there would be a total of 30 people in the first tier. Although these 30 people weren't considered to be the top 30, there wouldn't be much difference. When the time came for the round robin tournament, the final result would be decided by points. In that case, the first place participant in the first tier would become the champion of the Total Faction Martial Meeting.

The second tier would also carry out a round robin tournament. The top ten rankerd of the second tier would earn the qualifications to challenge the rankings of the first tier disciples. If they won, they might be able to advance into the top 30. But, it would basically be impossible for them to reach the top 20.

The third tier was the same except they could earn the qualifications to compare to the second tier.

In short, this current group stage was extremely critical, it would directly decide the final result of a contestant.

Whether a carp fish could become a dragon would all be decided here!

If one wanted to struggle for the top 20, they would have to at least reach the first tier!

This time, unless one was a talent on par with a direct disciple, there was no way that they would be able to hide the extent of their strength. The first tier of each group only had three people. After deducting a spot for the seeded player, there were in fact only two spots that the disciples could struggle for.

With nine people competing for 2 spots, and not only that, but with these 9 disciples being top-tier geniuses that had passed through layers and layers of screening, the intensity of the competition could be imagined.

“First match! Jing Chanyu against Zi Ling!

With the referee’s announcement, a woman activated her movement technique and jumped onto the stage, her clothes fluttering in the wind just like a heavenly fairy maiden that was riding the surging waves. The woman’s face was covered with a thin light gauze veil, but it was still possible to faintly make out the image of her face. Although she wasn’t considered to be a heavenly beauty, there was actually something mysterious about her that was extremely fascinating.

Qin Xingxuan was slightly stunned. She said to Lin Ming in a low voice, “That’s Jing Chanyu from Grace Venerate Nation. She’s the sister of the brother sister pair from Huoluo Nation, the two of them are called the Jingchan Duo, and they are more famous than you right now.”

Grace Veneration Nation was an extremely mysterious country. It wouldn’t be wrong to say that they were the strongest country within the 36 countries. The whole population of Grace Venerate Nation believed in a goddess named Chan. In Grace Venerate Nation, the theocracy was above the imperial throne. If the Emperor ascended the throne, he also needed to be crowned by the leader of their church.

Lin Ming guessed that this ‘goddess’ named Chan had a very high possibility of being someone like the Southern Wilderness’s Sorcerer. She might have been a Supreme Being that had appeared in ancient times and left behind some inheritances and legacies after flying towards the Realm of the Gods. With her good fortunes and lucks that she left behind, this would have been the reason for the power of Grace Venerate Nation.

The Jingchan Duo’s compensation rate for becoming the top champions of the 36 countries was 1:2. As for Lin Ming, his odds had been 1:6. After he handily defeated the Refiner Faction’s Sun Dong, his compensation rate had dropped to 1:3. Although his odds were good, he was still overshadowed by the Jingchan Duo.

This caused Lin Ming to have a wondering curiosity about these twins. What was exactly so great about them?

Seeing Jing Chanyu step on stage, the audience was stirred into a furor. Especially the male disciples, their interest towards Jing Chanyu far surpassed everyone else. The obsessive light from their eyes was nearly visible.

“I heard that she is only 18 years old and this is her first time participating in the Total Faction Marital Meeting. I wonder what rank she’ll reach in her first time!”

“She might be the next Zhang Yanzhao!”

“Up until now there hasn’t been an opponent that has disturbed her calm, no one has even managed to take her veil off, it really is indescribable. Such a beautiful girl, it’s a pity she’s wearing a veil… ”

As the people hollered in excitement, all of their eyes were focuses in Jing Chanyu. Suddenly, the referee announced, “Match, start!” Everyone hesitated. Mm? An opponent hadn’t appeared on stage yet, where was Zi Ling?

“How come there’s only Jing Chanyu on stage?” Qin Xingxuan asked, also puzzled. She looked at the martial stage in confusion.

Lin Ming smiled at her and said, “Zi Ling is already on stage. It’s just that she went on earlier and she’s hiding in distorted light so she can’t be seen so easily.”

“What? How is that possible?” Qin Xingxuan was shocked. Isn’t this just invisibility? The path of martial arts truly diverged and converged into endless profound paths, any strange and wonderful phenomenon could occur.

At this moment, an indifferent voice could be heard from behind them, “Zi Ling is a talented disciple of the Mirage Faction. She is able to manipulate light to deceive the eye. During the last Total Faction Martial Meeting, she attained a 56th ranking. Now after three years, it looks quite promising that she’ll reach the top 30.”

Chapter 249 – Jingchan Duo

Chapter 249 – Jingchan Duo

…

…

…

Lin Ming turned around to see that the speaker was actually Jiang Lanjian. Although Lin Ming didn't really know him, he could tell that Jiang Lanjian was someone with a very broad and accurate sense of judgment; he wouldn't easily label someone as a 'talent'.

Lin Ming laughed and smiled as he spoke, "Interesting. If the first group stage was a husband and wife fighting, then this second stage is truly a gathering of masters!"

Jiang Lanjian looked at Lin Ming in surprise and replied, "Your group is quite strong, but it seems that you're confident in yourself."

In the seventh group, there was Fang Qi, Bi Tinghua, Jing Chanyu, and Zi Ling. With Lin Ming, that was five altogether. These five people were competing for three spots. However, Fang Qi's place could already be considered as guaranteed. Jiang Lanjian thought that Lin Ming would be extremely solemn facing these experts, but he hadn't expected Lin Ming to be merrily laughing. Either Lin Ming had entirely given up on entering the first tier, or he had extreme confidence in his own power. As for Jiang Lanjian, he thought that Lin Ming was part of the latter.

"Who do you think will win, Jing Chanyu or Zi Ling?" Lin Ming asked Jiang Lanjian.

Jiang Lanjian shook his head. "They still haven't revealed their true strength. Not only that, but since they both reached this stage by having complete victories, I don't know what to expect."

There were four or five people in each group that had achieved complete victory in the last stage. In the seventh group there were five. These five were Lin Ming, Fang Qi, Bi Tinghua, Jing Chanyu, and Zi Ling.

However, after this group stage, at most, there could only be two participants who would possibly remain undefeated.

As the two boys spoke, the battle on the martial stage had already begun.

This was an extremely strange fight. From the very beginning, the audience hadn't been able to see where Zi Ling was. They only saw lights flashing just like celestial beauties that were scattering flowers, blinding their eyes.

However, Lin Ming was able to rely on his powerful perception in order to clearly see what was happening on the martial field. Zi Ling waved her arms to create six sharp bladed edges. These edges seemed gentle as they emitted light, but each one was able to instantly destroy an early Pulse Condensation martial artists.

Because the speed was too fast, the light beams drew a series of rainbows in the air as they let out sharp whistles that made the scalp tingle.

"Manipulating the power of light is truly an incomparably mysterious and amazing ability." Lin Ming felt that although those light blades were formed of true essence, they also contained a hint of light essence. This was a mystical power that was more elusive than the seven natural heaven and earth origin energies of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, and thunder.

In an instant, 36 light blades hovered in the sky. These light blades howled in the air as they danced around, but they still hadn't attacked Jing Chanyu. Suddenly, Zi Ling clasped her hands together and shouted out, "36 Light Blade Extreme Execution!"

With this cry, the 36 light blades all focusses in one direction and soared towards Jing Chanyu.

Facing this light blade attack that attacked from every dead angle, Jing Chanyu hadn't even lifted her hands. Instead, her hands lay flight, and a soft light emanated outwards from her chest, forming a thick light cover that all over her just like an eggshell.

Chi chi chi chi!

The blades of light struck against the thick barrier and encountered a massive resistance, instantly coming to a near halt. Meanwhile, the blades of light also caused the eggshell to rapidly melt away.

"Halcyon Reflection 1000 Shaded Hands."

Jing Chanyu turned over both her hands, and a series of shadows condensed from her fingers and flew into the air, covering the sky.

Bang!

Zi Ling, who had been hiding in the distorted light, suddenly gave a stuffy cough and was directly forced out into the open by Jing Chanyu's strike. Zi Ling was holding a sword of blazing light in her hand, an expression of shock twisting her features.

"Be defeated!"

Jing Chanyu parted her delicate rose red lips, and began to hymn in a low voice. A massive, glowing, golden hand slowly manifested in front of her.

"Halcyon Reflection Great Wisdom Palm!"

Bang!

A huge golden palm imprinted onto Zi Ling's body. The sword of light in Zi Ling's hand broke apart, and she let out a spray of blood before being sent flying backwards, landing onto the safety net outside the stage.

"Jing Chanyu, victory!"

With the announcement of the referee, the audience hadn't even had time to react. From the beginning of the match until the end, only a short period of ten breaths had passed.

Jing Chanyu had only used three moves. One defensive, and two offensive. After three moves, Zi Ling had been defeated! However, Jing Chanyu hadn't even moved a single step. The veil that lightly hung on her face hadn't even been blown by the breeze. From start to finish, Jing Chanyu had been incomparably tranquil.

Zi Ling wasn't a useless nobody. When she was young she had already been chosen as a core disciple of the Mirage Faction. Her talent was simply amazing, and at the last Total Faction Martial Meeting she had reached rank 56. During this Martial Meeting, she had achieved complete victory within the first group stage, and would have easily strode into the top 30. But now, she had actually lost to Jing Chanyu! And in only three moves!

This Jing Chanyu was simply too strong!

Jiang Lanjian's eyebrows ticked up. Between Jing Chanyu and Zi Ling, he hadn't really thought either side had an advantage. But to his surprise, Jing Chanyu won by a landslide. This was enough to prove that she had the ability to reach the top 20 rankings!

If she could really reach the top 20, then she was an existence to be considered. As far as Jiang Lanjian knew, Jing Chanyu wasn't too old. Three years later she could return to the next Total Faction Martial Meeting.

At that time, her limelight might even be greater than this Martial Meeting's Zhang Yanzhao!

If anyone of the 36 countries disciples could break into the top ten, that was sufficient enough to be recorded in the annals of the Seven Profound Valleys history. That would simply be an extraordinary result!

Also....Jing Chanyu had an older twin brother, Jing Chanshi; his strength shouldn't be any weaker than Jing Chanyu. The tiny Grace Venerate Nation had actually produced two talents that were capable of reaching the top 10 rankings in the Total Faction Martial Meeting within the next three years; this was unprecedented in the last 100 years!

Jiang Lanjian couldn't help glance at Lin Ming and was surprised that Lin Ming was still looking on with bored indifference. Although he may have been surprised by Jing Chanyu's strength, he obviously wasn't too worried for himself.

This fellow was simply too confident! The quality of talents during this year's Total Faction Martial Meeting was exceedingly promising. The 36 countries and 16 martial families had managed to produce Zhang Yanzhao, the Jingchan Duo, and Lin Ming, four peerless talents. Not only that, but the Jingchan Duo and Lin Ming were still young, they would have a tremendous amount of growing they could do in the next three years....

With this thought, Jiang Lanjian's eyes suddenly jumped up. Lin Ming looked like he was 16 or 17, but just how old was he?

Although there was only a one year difference between 16 and 17 years of age, this actually created an enormous difference in a martial artist's cultivation.

Normally, a child raised in a large sect would start practising martial arts as soon as they could walk. During their entire childhood, they would practice martial arts in order to lay a solid foundation for their future achievements. They would build up their body with rare and precious medicines, but they wouldn't cultivate true essence yet.

In order to cultivate true essence, one needed the body to grow. Starting at 12 years of age, a martial artist child would begin to cultivate Body Transformation's Six Stages such as Strength Training, Flesh Training, and Viscera Training.

A 16 year-old would have cultivated for four years whereas a 17 year old would have cultivated for five. This difference was neither small nor meaningless.

If Lin Ming was 17 years old then he could be considered a first-grade talent. If he was 16 years old then he would be considered as an extreme talent that wouldn't be inferior to any of the Seven Faction's direct disciples by much!

………………………………

"Second match, Fang Qi to Zhou Yan."

As Lin Ming heard Fang Qi's name, he couldn't help but pay a little attention. The Seven Profound Valley's Seven Factions were respectively the Sword Faction, Array Faction, Puppet Faction, Zither Faction, Acacia Faction, Refiner Faction, and Mirage Faction.

Of these, the Sword Faction was the one whose disciples had the strongest attack power. However, that didn't mean that the disciples of the Sword Faction were the most powerful. Each of the other six had their own unique skills and abilities. For instance, the Puppet Faction, Mirage Faction, and Array Faction had extremely peculiar defensive and offensive skills; they could use a nearly endless variety of outlandish and absolutely bizarre moves. Although they might not be as strong as the Sword Faction, they were actually much more difficult to deal with than the Sword Faction.

To Lin Ming, out of these Seven Factions, he was most interested in the Array Faction. When he had obtained the second memory fragment from the Supreme Elder, he had also obtained that Elder's memories as an array master. Unfortunately, Lin Ming's cultivation was simply too low to make use of any of those array master's memories, thus, he was unable to practice it.

Lin Ming had thought that he would need to be at least at the Xiantian realm of cultivation to create the large scale array formations in those memories. However, the Seven Profound Valleys' Array Faction had taught him a very good lesson.

The small Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead had actually saved Lin Ming's life.

Lin Ming had never dreamt of sealing a tiny array formation configuration within a tiny bead.

Lin Ming had even considered that if he were to enter into the Seven Profound Valleys Total Faction later, wouldn't it be best to join the Array Faction?

From the start of the match Zhou Yan had used a defensive martial skill in order to cover his body with layer upon layer of protective true essence. However, nobody laughed at him for being cowardly. In fact, it was already a kind of courage to have the guts to face a direct disciple of the Seven Factions.

Zhou Yan wasn't some worthless disciple; during the last Total Faction Martial Meeting, he had been ranked 70. Throughout the group matches, he had only dropped one fight. Although it wasn't very hopeful for him to enter into the first tier, it would be simple for him to enter into the second tier.

"Scarlet Blazeflame!"

After he had cloaked himself in his ultimate protection, Zhou Yan instantly let loose his do-or-die finishing blow. He was a disciple of the Refiner Faction and in his body was a Hollow Flame Essence. He had poured the entirety of his true essence into this Hollow Flame, and a lifelike fiery dragon surged out from his body.

The martial stage was surrounded by a fantasy array formation so that that the audience outside couldn't feel the burning heat of that fiery dragon. Still, from the way that light twisted around the flame dragon, one could imagine just how hot it was.

This sort of fiery dragon was enough to turn an entire lake into steam. If it struck a martial artist, even a middle Pulse Condensation period master would be charred.

But, Fang Qi only lifted his right hand and drew a golden array symbol in the air. Then, the impossible occurred. The fiery dragon crashed into the golden symbol and disappeared inside without a trace left. It was as if that golden symbol was connected to a different space and shifted the fiery dragon to a completely unknown land.

Seeing such a bizarre scene, Zhou Yan only let out a depressed sigh and uttered, "I admit defeat."

The Scarlet Blazeflame was his strongest skill, but in front of someone like Fang Qi, not even a tiny spark had struck his robes. Instead, his flame attack had simply disappeared into nothingness. This caused Zhou Yan to feel extremely inadequate and useless; the disparity between them was just too great, enough that he wasn't even able to imagine how much it was.

"Fang Qi, victory!"

This was already expected. The audience only murmured about how strong a direct disciple was and waited for the next match.

Lin Ming was actually thinking back on that symbol. How could such a small symbol swallow the scarlet flames that Zhou Yan had forced out with all his strength?

He felt that there was an enormous difference between the array formation system in the Realm of the Gods and the array formation system in the Seven Profound Valley's Array Faction. It could even be said that they were two completely different set of skills!

To Lin Ming, it seemed like the Array Faction's array formation system could play a much bigger role for the current him.

At this moment, the voice of the referee interrupted Lin Ming's thoughts.

"Third match, Lin Ming against Bi Tinghua!"

Lin Ming raised his head and saw that Bi Tinghua was looking at him with a bright smile plastered across his face.

Chapter 250 – Lin Ming VS Bi Tinghua

Chapter 250 – Lin Ming VS Bi Tinghua

…

…

…

The match of Lin Ming against Bi Tinghua was considered a fight between two heavyweights. It also meant that there would be one less contestant with an undefeated string of complete victories.

This match had aroused a tremendous interest amongst almost everyone. This wasn't just because Lin Ming was strong, but also because this match was directly related to who the strongest amongst the disciples from the 36 countries was.

After Jing Chanyu defeated Zi Ling, she had seized the number one position among the disciples of the 36 countries, and was currently the one with the best betting odds to win at a rate of 1:1.1. As for her big brother Jing Chanshi, his odds of becoming the 36 countries champion was 1:1.3.

This had caused those that didn't bet on the Jingchan Duo to feel great regret, but those that did were all smiles.

It was almost impossible to make any money on a 1:1.1 compensation rate. Still, even if they couldn't, many people still happily bet on Jing Chanyu.

As for Lin Ming, his odds rose back to 1:6. Although he was the third highest possible candidate to win the 36 countries championship, his odds of winning were still far compared to the Jingchan Duo.

This match between Lin Ming and Bi Tinghua was very important. It would determine, to a great extent, just who the title of number one amongst the 36 countries rightfully belonged to.

Without a doubt, Bi Tinghua's strength far surpassed that of Zi Ling. As for who was stronger between Bi Tinghua and Jing Chanyu, most people thought that Jing Chanyu was. If Lin Ming couldn't defeat Bi Tinghua, then he would have lost all qualifications to become the champion of the 36 countries.

However, Lin Ming's cultivation was only at the peak of Bone Forging. As for Bi Tinghua's cultivation, he was actually at the late Pulse Condensation period. The difference was almost an entire realm; how could Lin Ming possibly win?

Let alone the audience who didn't believe Lin Ming could win, not even Qin Xingxuan who normally had unshakeable faith in Lin Ming was sure.

"Lin Ming, I've been waiting for this match for a very, very long time. It's a pity that I happened to miss you in the first group stage." Bi Tinghua was a bit on the feminine side, so when he smiled it was just as if a dainty daisy was blooming. He narrowed his eyes as he glanced at Qin Xingxuan who was waiting for Lin Ming by the side of the martial stage. He said, "Your young lady friend is probably hoping very much for you to win. I'd be happy to let her feel disappointment."

"I also think it was a pity that I missed you during the group stage. As for my friend, rest assured, she will not be disappointed." Lin Ming knew that he absolutely could win against Bi Tinghua. The only question was whether he could do so while only relying on his Samsara martial intent. With regards to his Samsara martial intent attack, Lin Ming didn't have full confidence.

As the audience heard this exchange of words, they were left speechless. This Lin Ming was really overly confident in himself.

Bi Tinghua was one of the top three ranked core disciple of the Mirage Faction. His cultivation was at the late Pulse Condensation period, but in terms of true combat ability, he could compare to a half-step Houtian realm master.

During this Total Faction Martial Meeting, Bi Tinghua had a very high chance of reaching the top 20 rankings. As for Lin Ming who only used bizarre soul attacks, with Fang Qi, Jing Chanyu, and Bi Tinghua still blocking his way, none was in favor of him reaching the first tier.

Bi Tinghua laughed and said, “You’re quite confident. How unfortunate. Let me tell you this, I also know soul attacks. I wonder, are your soul attacks weaker or stronger than mine?

“Originally, I wasn’t sure. But looking at the sorry state you’re in, I think my chances might have just increased.”

“Humph! What ridiculous nonsense!” Bi Tinghua gave a cold snort and suddenly the surrounding scene immediately changed. The audience disappeared, the sky disappeared, the ground disappeared, and Lin Ming and Bi Tinghua suddenly both stood in an endless wilderness, a prairie that extended to the ends of the earth. The ground underneath their feet was covered in soft grass, small fresh flowers and fragrant plants bloomed.

“This is my Mirage Faction’s dreamland combined with my soul attack; I’d like to see just how you’ll block this!

An illusion attack was also a kind of soul attack; it could invisibly kill someone.

An Illusionist could create his own separate dreamland. In this dreamland, the Illusionist was a god-like existence. In this dreamland, he could create anything, find out anything, and kill off anyone he wished with just a thought.

While trapped within a dreamland, if a martial artist believed he was dead, then he would really die in reality. An illusion was truly capable of killing a person. Ordinary abilities killed a person by destroying their body, but an illusion attack was able to destroy the human soul.

"Die!"

Bi Tinghua gave a loud shout and behind him appeared a beautiful naga. This naga had the upper body of an exquisitely heavenly beauty, naked and almost perfect in proportions, but her lower body was that of a massive python.

"Dying in the belly of this beautiful snake woman is also your luck! Go, eat him!"

With a thought from Bi Tinghua, the naga's mouth curved up in a charming smile. Suddenly, the naga dropped to the ground, flattening her body to the floor and firing towards Lin Ming like an arrow.

"Rahh!" The beautiful naga uttered a low roar. Suddenly her cherry red lips opened, and revealed rows upon rows of sharpened teeth that extended from ear to ear. In that instant, her beautiful face became horrifyingly ferocious.

A dreamland battle?

A battle of souls within this dreamland was just to Lin Ming's liking. Recently he had been trying to come to a deeper understanding of his Samsara martial intent. Since he had such a great opportunity to fight like this, he certainly wouldn't miss it.

Lin Ming shut his eyes and then opened them. In that moment, his eyes had lost their pupils, becoming nothing but a swirling black vortex.

As, the Samsara martial intent activated A titanic black storm appeared spanning the entire dreamland, a massive vortex in the midst, swallowing all.

The grass and flowers were torn to shreds and trees were uprooted. Dirt and rocks twisted into the air, as everything began to rise towards that swirling vortex. The beautiful naga was also thrown into the roiling storm. With a pitiful scream, she was torn into pieces.

"Mm? Your eyes!"

Bi Tinghua had just reacted when he felt his mind tremble. Countless phantoms and images rushed into his brain, flooding his thoughts as his spiritual sea almost collapsed.

Bang!

The endless prairie dreamland collapsed, turning into nothingness under the power of the limitless vortex. In its place, a vast black space formed. Countless brilliant stars shined like glittering diamonds overhead, while the ground was nothing but barren black rock.

“Die!”

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed, and a black vortex fell upon Bi Tinghua, completely shredding him to bits!

However, the destroyed body of Bi Tinghua turned into millions of black butterflies that flew into the wind, scattering into all directions.

“Mm?”

Lin Ming felt his heart go cold; this Bi Tinghua was really hard to deal with.

The swarm of millions upon millions of black butterflies soared into the air, covering the entire sky. After a few moments, they all rushed towards Lin Ming, morphing into hawks as they zoomed down, their claws glinting with cold light.

Pah pah pah pah!

The millions of hawks crashed into Lin Ming, submerging into his body as if they were made of nothing but thoughts and headed straight towards his spiritual sea. At this time, Lin Ming’s spiritual sea was obscured by countless spirit hawks!

“Get out!”

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a purple thunder. Suddenly, massive arcs of purple lightning exploded from within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea. A gargantuan Purple Thunder Flood Dragon threaded between clouds, thunder billowing like a winter storm. Bolts of thunder the width of pillars covered the entire sea, and the hawks that were struck by this thunder could only let out unceasing pitiful screeches as they were instantly reduced to ashes in the blink of an eye, their black feathers littering the skies.

The power of thunder was the element that most restrained ghosts and illusions. This make-believe attack simply could not injure Lin Ming's spiritual sea at all.

"Mm? His entire spiritual sea is covered in purple thunder!?"

Bi Tinghua was shocked beyond imagination. This was simply a kind of absolute soul defense. Only if the cultivation difference was too high would he be able to do anything, otherwise no one would be able to use a soul attack to damage Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

A thunder-attribute martial artist was when the power of thunder flooded into their true essence. If their power of thunder and their true essence could achieve a 60% fusion rate, this was already very good. It would be considered a fourth-grade thunder fusion, and had enormous significance towards a martial artist's combat potential.

If one achieved 90% thunder fusion, that would be considered as a fifth-grade fusion, and could be considered a thunder-attribute talent.

If one achieved 100%, then that would be a superior fifth-grade thunder fusion; this person would simply be a monstrous genius!

If one surpassed 100%, then not only would the power of thunder completely fuse into their true essence, but it would also enter into the martial artists flesh and blood body, tempering his everything with thunder. Every gesture he made or step he took would flash with thunder. This was a sixth-grade fusion.

But higher the degree of integration between the power of thunder and the body, the more perfect one's thunder fusion was.

A superior sixth-grade fusion was the absolute limit that Bi Tinghua had ever known about. But, he had never heard of the power of thunder being able to enter one's spiritual sea; this could only be achieved by an unsurpassed thunder fusion. How could he have achieved this point?

Was it a fabled seventh-grade fusion?

If it really was a seventh-grade fusion, then Lin Ming wouldn't even need to use a soul attack. He would only need to use the power of thunder to defeat him.....

Impossible.

This was simply impossible!

Either Bi Tinghua had misunderstood some point, or this little kid had used some sort of secret skill in order to accomplish this.

Bi Tinghua consoled himself by repeating this. But, an inevitable fear emerged from his heart. His main method of attack was to use illusions, yet with his opponent's spiritual sea like this, it could be said that Lin Ming was in an invincible position.

A soul force duel was ever-changing and fluid. Once fear crept into one's mind, that was a fatal flaw. With Lin Ming's keen perception, he instantly caught onto that moment were an opening appeared in Bi Tinghua's spiritual sea.

The Samsara martial intent surged forth!

……………………………….

"Is there something wrong? I just came back from the toilet and those two fellows are still standing on stage without moving? Are they still going to fight or something?"

"You idiot, the match had already began. From then to now, those two are engaged in an illusionary battle!"

“What?” The surprised martial artists came from a martial cultivation family; he had absolutely no understanding at all of the Seven Profound Valley’s illusion attacks.

“The Seven Profound Valley’s Mirage Faction has two offensive schools, one is mystic attacks and the other is illusions. Zi Ling was part of the mystic attack school, and this Bi Tinghua is from the illusion school. Within an illusion, one can instantly destroy the other’s soul. However, Lin Ming also happens to use soul attacks, so that’s why these two people are standing here. Don’t just look at them and see they aren’t moving, the truth is this type of battle is extremely risky; one wrong move and there’s a chance you would become an idiot.”

“What a shitty illusion duel; I can’t even see anything. What’s the point!”

After the martial artist from the martial family finished his criticism, he quickly walked his butt away. He had already been eliminated, and no matter how fierce the fighting was or who was winning or who was losing, he no longer cared.

However, not everyone was like that. There were some that came to watch for fun. Amongst the audience, there were many that were disciples of the Mirage Faction, and they were also experts from the school of illusionary attacks. They had specifically come to observe this ultimate soul force showdown.

Although Bi Tinghua couldn’t be considered the strongest disciple among the Mirage Faction’s younger generation, he was still skilled in illusions. It could be said that his attainments in dreamland attacks and soul attacks had reached the pinnacle of what was possible among the younger generation.

Lin Ming and Bi Tinghua’s soul force battle symbolized a fierce fight between Lin Ming and the Seven Profound Valleys strongest soul attack junior. If Bi Tinghua lost, then no one in the entirety of the Seven Profound Valley’s younger generation could surpass Lin Ming in soul force accomplishments.

This was a matter of pride for the Mirage Faction. If they lost they wouldn’t even be able to lift their heads from the shame!

For someone that had the best cultivation methods, the best masters, ate spiritual food since childhood and also had a large variety of resources, to lose to some random country bumpkin martial artist was truly unjustifiable.

Chapter 251 – One Willing to Fight, One Willing to Endure

Chapter 251 – One Willing to Fight, One Willing to Endure

…

…

…

In the endless illusionary dreamland, the Samsara martial intent rolled out like a tide, frantically swelling as it rushed over Bi Tinghua. Because of that split second of fearful hesitation, a glimmer of a flaw was produced within Bi Tinghua’s mind. Lin Ming seized this opportunity and struck back.

Bang!

Countless phantoms and images flowed into Bi Tinghua’s mind, the endless lives of 100 Samsaras drowning him like a chaotic whirlpool.

A showdown between soul forces was constantly evolving. A dangerous move, a wrong move, and everything could be lost. Fortunately, Bi Tinghua was much more proficient than Lin Ming in terms of utilizing his soul force. Although that flaw in his mind had placed him in a passive situation of defending, his soul force defensive skills were able to barely hold off the attacks on his spiritual sea.

The battle between the two became increasingly ruthless and savage. Lin Ming was relying on the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder in his spiritual sea to launch an all-out offensive. With the power of thunder to protect his spiritual sea, he was in a nearly impregnable position.

As for Bi Tinghua, he was surrounded by danger on all sides. While Bi Tinghua had the cultivation methods of the Mirage Faction, towards Lin Ming's Samsara martial intent that he had comprehended in the Sorcerer Holy Land after experiencing 100 lives of Samsara, they were on completely different levels in comparison.

With Bi Tinghua's many years of cultivation and foundation within the Mirage Faction accumulated together, he was barely able to endure this attack.

With the dramatic and massive consumption of soul force, Bi Tinghua's true body that was still standing on stage immediately paled, without a single trace of red in his cheeks.

"This damn boy, his soul force was actually so strong!"

Bi Tinghua was a disciple of the Mirage Faction, so he specialized in extremely precise use of soul force. But compared to Lin Ming, he was still inferior. It had to be known that Bi Tinghua's cultivation was almost an entire realm above Lin Ming's.

"Lucky for me this boy has only a single way to attack, and a complete lack of soul force skills. Every time he attacks, he wastes too much!" Bi Tinghua's thoughts raced. As he was resisting Lin Ming's attack, he was also thinking of possibilities to win.

"I can only defend and not attack. Although this Lin Ming has an extremely formidable soul force, he doesn't know any techniques to use with it. Every time he attacks me he wastes a massive amount of soul force. Plus, since I am the one defending, I have to put in less effort to maintain this. His soul force consumption rate has to be at least three times my own! If this continues, he will definitely lose! As long as I can resist this round of continuous onslaught, my victory will be decided once he exhausts his soul force and can no longer maintain that purple lightning that covers his spiritual sea."

Thinking this, Bi Tinghua's lips curved up in a devilish grin. In the end, this country bumpkin martial artist who came from a hick village could only rely on brute force and had no skills. He was doomed to lose by his own hands!

Bi Tinghua had no way of knowing that this situation was exactly what Lin Ming was hoping for. Ever since Lin Ming had begun to use his Samsara martial intent, he had been trying to further his comprehension of the Samsara martial intent. It seemed as if his and Bi Tinghua's soul force strength were comparable, in addition, this Bi Tinghua was quite skilled in soul force techniques. To come across such a good opponent and moreover, in an endurance match, it could only be considered serendipity.

To Lin Ming, Bi Tinghua was an exceptionally good grindstone to hone his abilities.

The dreamland around them began to morph over and over again. From a prairie to black lands. From black lands to a prairie. From black lands to a desert. From a desert to a bloody hell.

Devils and dark spirits and nagas danced around Bi Tinghua, twisting around his body. These monsters were summoned by Bi Tinghua in order to protect his own spiritual sea. But in front of Lin Ming's never-ending brutal onslaught, everything was eventually torn apart by the swirling black vortex!

As soon as the match began, it lasted for an incense stick, then two incense sticks, then three incense sticks.....to half an hour. During this entire time, the two youths on the martial stage were still standing there, completely motionless!

Bi Tinghua's face was already paler than bleached paper! With half an hour of intense soul force consumption, it wasn't something that the average person could endure. If it weren't for Bi Tinghua's high soul talent and thick foundation, he would have already fallen flat on the ground.

"How is this possible!? Is this fellow really a human!?"

Bi Tinghua couldn't imagine that his opponent could still persist until this moment even though his soul force consumption rate was three times his own. If their positions were reversed, he would have already been done in!

"If I hold on for a bit longer, he won't be able to last much longer! I will be the one to finally win!

Indeed, it was just as Bi Tinghua had said. Lin Ming truly couldn't persist much longer. Since he was on the offensive, his soul force consumption was tremendous!

Lin Ming had been depending on the 'Overbearing Soul Tactic' that was left behind from the Supreme Elder from the Realm of the Gods. He had already accumulated a great deal of experience with this soul law formula by practicing his inscription technique. Although this soul law formula couldn't be considered the best within the Realm of the Gods, if placed in the Sky Spill Continent, it was actually a top quality technique among all top quality techniques.

However, even though he had this, he still was unable to withstand a soul force consumption that was three times Bi Tinghua's. His complexion wasn't much better than Bi Tinghua's!

Lin Ming had clenched his teeth and persisted in his attacks until now because in this high intensity soul force battle, he had obtained substantial benefits and had also increased his understanding of soul force techniques. Secondly, this was a unsurpassed great chance to further his comprehension of his Samsara martial intent. If he missed this opportunity to fight against someone like Bi Tinghua whose soul force strength was close to his own and was also experienced, then it would be truly been a pity.

In one breath, the two people had been standing on the martial stage for an entire half hour. The eyes of the audience had already glazed over in a dull and dazed look.

The disciples of the Mirage Faction were more fortunate, after all, they were already long used to this type of scene. Not only that, but the outcome of this match concerned the reputation of the Mirage Faction. Naturally, they would be patiently watching.

As for everyone else, they had already lost their patience. Some people had left this stage, and some people had just fallen asleep in their seats.

“Lin Ming probably can’t persist much longer.”

In a duel between soul force and illusion techniques, it was absolutely difficult for outsiders to determine who had the upper hand in the duel. They simply weren’t able to see what sorts of moves and abilities were used. They could only distinguish a general situation of the duel by looking at the external appearance of the participants. At this moment, Bi Tinghua looked a bit better than Lin Ming.

“Mm. It’s just really inconceivable that a martial artist from the 36 countries could reach his point. To compel Senior-apprentice Brother Bi into this appearance, this Lin Ming truly is a worthy talent. But this is as far as he goes. Finally, we barely manage to preserve the face of our Mirage Faction.”

As the two Mirage Faction disciples discussed the match, Lin Ming’s body was shaking a bit. As for Bi Tinghua, although his face was as white as paper, he was barely able to stabilize himself from falling.

“He’s going to win.”

“At last!”

The Mirage Faction disciples present sighed a breath of relief. Although this match had been won with difficulty and they had lost a great deal of face, in the end, for better or worse, they had still won.

This soul force contest was completely a contest of endurance and willpower.

After several dozen breaths of time, Lin Ming’s soul force was reaching a state of near depletion. If he really ran out of soul force, then Lin Ming would lose his ability to control his true essence. At that time, he would surely lose.

‘Looks like I have to stop here.’ Lin Ming thought it was a bit of a pity; he had wanted to persist a bit longer and gain some more insights. However, now it seemed that he could only end this soul force showdown and use his Heavy Profound Soft Spear to finish off Bi Tinghua and conclude this match.

As he was considering withdrawing the leftovers of his depleted soul force, suddenly an incomparably pure and vibrant soul energy welled up from within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, making his soul shake with excitement!

'Mm? What is this?'

This pure soul force had suddenly swelled up from the underneath the depths of his spiritual sea; it was just as if it were buried there, and had been waiting for a chance to be unearthed.

'This is probably…I remember!'

"This is the soul force that I absorbed from Hungry Ghosts in the Sorcerer Pagoda!"

Lin Ming suddenly realized what was happening. Back when he had entered the life and death smelting trial of the Sorcerer Pagoda, he had passed all seven trials in a single go!

The first trial had been a hellish world that was able to enhance his blood vitality. The second trial had comprised Hungry Ghosts that could supplement his soul force. The third trial consisted of beasts that increased his physical body strength. The fourth trial had the Witch Slave which enhanced the defensive power of his body. The fifth trial – mortal martial artists who were able to directly increase his cultivation. The sixth trial held no reward. As for the seventh trial, that was the World of the Sorcerer, in which Lin Ming had comprehended his Samsara martial intent.

During the second Hungry Ghost trial, Lin Ming had used the power of thunder to kill many Hungry Ghosts as well as decapitated a massive beautiful woman who had been the King of Hungry Ghosts. These dead lingering spirits had transformed into a pure spiritual force that nourished Lin Ming's soul.

But because there was simply too much soul force and Lin Ming's cultivation was limited, he had, at most, managed to absorb a fraction of it; the rest had been stored within his body.

The excess blood vitality that had been absorbed from the Blood Devils was also temporarily stored within his body.

And today, under this lucky coincidence, that pure soul force had been unexpectedly awakened, constantly injecting itself into his spiritual sea, nourishing his soul.

Of course, it wasn't possible to instantly take all of it in in one go; it was a very long process. But once this pure soul force was released, it wouldn't stop. It could be said that for a very long time in the future, Lin Ming's soul would constantly be strengthening itself even when he's eating or sleeping!

'What a pleasant surprise!'

After he accidently connected to that pure soul force that had been buried beneath his spiritual sea, Lin Ming flushed red with excitement. Now that he had Bi Tinghua's 'help' to absorb this, he wasn't willing to let this opportunity go. Under the support of the pure soul force, the ferocity of Lin Ming's soul attack became increasingly savage.

"This....how is this possible, he still has the strength to make another round of attacks!???"

Bi Tinghua thought he was going insane. Lin Ming's soul force consumption rate was three times his own, but he had lasted until now and actually had the strength to launch a new salvo of attacks. But as for him, he was already stretched to his limit, completely overwhelmed!

"Impossible! This is impossible! Even Huan Xiaodie is not such an abnormal freak!"

Huan Xiaodie was the direct disciple of the Mirage Faction. In the Seven Profound Valleys, the disciples of the Mirage Faction and Zither Faction were mostly girls. In terms of strength, Huan Xiaodie was far superior to Bi Tinghua.

“He must have reached his limit; this must be his final effort before he completely collapses!”

Bi Tinghua was confident in his assumption. Lin Ming must have reached the limit of his power. Now, with this new unexpected round of even more violent attacks, this must be the side effect of some secret skill that he used on himself.

Most martial artists that specialized in soul force techniques understood several secret skills that they could use in order to insure their survival in a critical moment.

For instance, there were many secret skills that used a form of self-hypnosis in order to stimulate the full potential of the soul. However, the human soul was very fragile; once it was hurt, it was extremely difficult to heal. Therefore, this sort of secret skill tended to have extreme side effects.

Of course, the Seven Profound Valley’s Mirage Faction had their own sets of secret skills. Relatively speaking, the side effects of these secret skills were much milder.

“Humph! You’re not the only one with a secret skill. You think that just because you use it, I won’t dare to do the same!?”

Bi Tinghua’s eyes were colored red anger; he was raging to the point of almost vomiting blood. This had originally been a simple friendly martial arts match, and yet his opponent had used a secret skill without regards to his own well-being. However, he had already spoken so much trash talk before this match. If he lost now, then he would absolutely become a complete laughingstock within the Seven Profound Valleys!

Sh*t!

Not only that, but there were only three spots in the first tier. Fang Qi was such a freak of nature; Bi Tinghua had to admit that he was definitely not his match. As for Jing Chanyu, he wasn’t completely confident in being able to defeat her. If he lost to Lin Ming now, then he would truly be placed in a precarious position.

If one of the top three disciples of the Mirage Faction couldn’t enter into the first tier, then he wouldn’t have the face to look anyone in the eye ever again.

Thinking this, Bi Tinghua clenched his teeth.

‘This father will fight with you!’

Blood Sacrifice Soul Alacrity Law!

Chapter 252 – Blood Sacrifice Soul Alacrity Law

Chapter 252 – Blood Sacrifice Soul Alacrity Law

…

…

…

"My Seven Profound Valley's Soul Alacrity Law definitely has less backlash than yours! We'll see just who can hold out longer!"

Bi Tinghua was also ready to make any sacrifice necessary; this was a battle he couldn't afford to lose.

Once his soul was damaged, at worst he would have to spend several months recovering in bed. He could just spend some of his sect points and use his connections to obtain a few bottles of the best soul recovery pills, and he'd be back in no time.

But if he lost this match, not only would he lose all his face, his spirit would be so frustrated that it would negatively affect all of his future cultivation.

Like this, the battle between Lin Ming and Bi Tinghua suddenly became extremely bitter and violent. Lin Ming's Samsara martial intent was just like the ocean tide that never stopped; Bi Tinghua's monsters and ghosts, even after being shattered, were endlessly birthed from their remains!

"I defend, you attack, and you consume three times the soul force that I do. Coupled with the side effects from the secret soul skill you are using, I don't believe that your soul is made of iron! Let's see how many lives you have to handle this!"

In Bi Tinghua's opinion, Lin Ming was using some sort of forbidden soul technique, and the side effects of that technique would certainly be more dangerous than the one he was using. After all, Lin Ming was just some small country side bumpkin martial artist, there was no way he had adequate or decent training in understanding the consequences of soul damage. If he can't get medicine in the future, his cultivation might even decline!

Thinking this, Bi Tinghua was suddenly in an jubilant mood. He had originally been depressed after having been forced to use the Blood Sacrifice Soul Alacrity Law, but now he was finally seeing the light at the end of the tunnel.

Now, it didn't matter how miserable he would be. What was more important was how miserable his opponent would be!

If a man faced death alone, then he would feel extreme terror. But if faced with the end of the world together, then there wasn't anything to fear.

At this moment, Bi Tinghua's expression changed. In the dreamland world, the massive black vortex that had been giving him a headache suddenly disappeared. In its place a mass of Hungry Ghosts swelled up, thin bones protruding all over. These Hungry Ghosts had distorted limbs as if they were emaciated, and their heads were incomparably massive. Their mouths were twisted sideways, and sharp teeth glinted in the dark. Their blood-red tongue drooped downwards, constantly leaking saliva.

"Could this fellow actually have figured out the concept of using illusions to attack?" Bi Tinghua's face darkened. Up until now, Lin Ming had only been using that massive black vortex to attack. But now he had summoned a horde of Hungry Ghosts; he thought that these Hungry Ghosts stemmed from the wilds of Lin Ming's imagination.

"Ashura King!"

After Bi Tinghua used the Blood Sacrifice Soul Alacrity Law, Bi Tinghua's soul force had experienced an increase in strength. He was able to directly summon that Ashura King that was usually difficult to call down!

Bang!

The Ashura King smashed into the piles of Hungry Ghosts. The Hungry Ghosts threw themselves on the Ashura King, frenziedly biting its body. Then, Bi Tinghua's face became extremely ugly. The Ashura King managed to resist for a while, before being slowly chewed apart.....

....

After the first half an hour, another quarter of an hour passed!!!!

The two were still standing on stage, a winner not yet decided!

At this point, the Mirage Faction disciples that were watching began to feel anxious and doubtful; if the match had reached this point, it could only mean that the situation in their soul battle was extremely dangerous!

A physical injury would only take a few days to heal. Something like a fracture would take a few months. But if the soul was damaged, it might possibly take several years or even a lifetime to recover from.

Even with the support of top quality pills and medicines, it would still take several months to recover.

The two individuals had been standing on stage for almost an hour, and yet there was no victor yet. Had they two of them gone all out against each other?

"Senior-apprentice Brother Bi has probably used the Blood Sacrifice Soul Alacrity Law; if you look at his eyes you can see they are completely bloodshot. He's already reached his absolute limit! If he continues any longer, there's a chance his soul would be extremely hurt!

"Let's wait for another incense stick of time. If the match still isn't settled, then we will ask the referee to force it to an end; even a draw would be fine. But I don't think that the Lin boy will be able to last another incense stick of time. You can tell from his red face that something's not right with him."

"Mm. I felt his soul force suddenly shoot up a moment ago. He definitely used some sort of secret soul skill to boost his power, and its strength is much greater than the Blood Sacrifice Soul Alacrity Law. Normally speaking, the more potent a secret skill is, the greater its backlash will be."

After Lin Ming galvanized the pure soul force that had been buried beneath his spiritual sea, it had caused the blood flow within his body to accelerate and thus his face had become flush red with blood. To a Mirage Faction disciple, it was just like the deathly redness that occurred after using a soul enhancing secret skill.

"Half an incense stick has passed, how can Lin Ming still persist?" A Mirage Faction disciple commented as he furrowed his brows.

"Something's wrong…."

The Mirage Faction disciple felt something fishy was happening. Lin Ming had simply been able to last for too long a time. Moreover, his soul force power had suddenly experienced a great increase. Besides a soul enhancing secret skill, there was no other explanation as to how that could have happened. Did Lin Ming have a secret skill that somehow didn't have any negative side effects?

This was absolutely impossible.

He immediately rejected this incredulous idea. If there really was a secret skill like this, then wouldn't a martial artist's soul force be all-powerful and endless?

At this a moment, a girl that was standing next to him raised a trembling finger and pointed towards the stage. She whispered, "Senior-apprentice Brother Bi….his….nose is bleeding…."

"Mm?"

The disciple turned around and saw that two streams of blood were flowing down Bi Tinghua’s nose, leaking past his mouth and unceasingly dripping down his chin.

“This is bad!”

“Stop the match! This other man is a crazy madman!”

At this moment, Bi Tinghua’s body trembled, and then he slumped face down on the ground.....

“Lin Ming, victory!”

With the referee’s announcement, most of the audience only had a tepid reaction. This silly little stupid match was finally over. From the beginning to end, the two of them had only stood on stage staring at each other for almost an hour! What could be more boring than this match?

Several disciples of the Mirage Faction rushed on stage. Bi Tinghua’s face was pallid, his eyes were bloodshot, and his nose was bloody. He had long lost consciousness.

“Let’s carry him off.”

The 20 year-old female disciple waved her hand, ordering everyone. She only had unpleasant feelings towards someone like Bi Tinghua, but for better or for worse, he was still one of the three top core disciples of the Mirage Faction’s younger generation.

She looked at Lin Ming deeply, wanting to find some consequence he suffered from using a secret soul technique. However, she was disappointed as she found nothing.

She didn’t believe that there was a secret soul technique that didn’t have any side effects. In that case, there could only be one possible explanation, and that was that Lin Ming had an extraordinarily overwhelming soul force capacity. He must have only prepared to be a weak soul force user, and then lured Bi Tinghua into a battle of attrition with him.

The woman's voice was icy as she said, "You could already have won earlier, and yet you still deliberately led Bi Tinghua into fighting with you like this?"

Lin Ming had been walking off the stage, but hearing the woman's question he stopped in his tracks and glanced backwards. He didn't deny anything. After all, it would impossible for him to clearly explain about the pure soul force that had been slumbering deep beneath his spiritual sea.

He pointed at Bi Tinghua who was lying on the ground and said, "Believe whatever you want, but if I was the one lying on the ground right now, I believe that your Junior-apprentice Brother would have been very happy to see me in a miserable state. I hadn't even used my full strength against him, and yet he turned out like this. Did he use some sort of forbidden secret skill? It's only a friendly martial arts contest, there was no need to push through a secret skill with side effects in order to deal with me. Does he have that great a hatred with me?"

The woman was stunned, speechless. She couldn't find the words to refute Lin Ming.

"I didn't force him to use any secret skill, this was something that he brought down upon himself, and yet you are actually blaming me for harming him. Is this the logical reasoning of your Seven Profound Valleys Mirage Faction? Only you can bully others? Others cannot resist?"

The woman grit her teeth and said, "You obviously had ulterior motives and lured Bi Tinghua into this state! Your sly words and arguments are meaningless here. After entering the finals, you will encounter the Mirage Faction's direct disciple, Huan Xiaodie. When that time comes, I hope you can fight like a man, and not immediately give up!"

"Naturally, that isn't something you need worry about." Lin Ming finished his sentence and then turned around to walk off stage.

The audience made room for Lin Ming to leave. In fact, to most people, Lin Ming's battle wasn't worthy of anything special.

The match had lasted for almost a whole hour, and though he had defeated Bi Tinghua, it seemed that he had only done so reluctantly. His face had whitened, and then it had flushed red. Obviously, this fight had been extremely difficult for him.

Lin Ming's strength was recognized as a bit higher than Bi Tinghua's. But how could this strength compare to someone like Jing Chanyu?

The odds of the gambling house had changed. Now Jing Chanyu's odds were 1:1.8, Jing Chanshi's odds were 1:2, and Lin Ming's odds were 1:4.

Because of the match between Bi Tinghua and Lin Ming, Jing Chanyu's odds had gone up whereas Lin Ming's odds had gone down. But the odds still favored Jing Chanyu.

Throughout every single match so far, Jing Chanyu had maintained her calm. There hadn't even been an opponent who had managed to force her into taking a single step; no one knew just how much of her strength she had used to defeat Zi Ling.

As for Lin Ming, he had already approached his limit in facing Bi Tinghua. Unless he had cards still hidden in his sleeve, then his chances of defeating Jing Chanyu weren't looking good.

After the five total victory contestants in the seventh group finished their matches, the remaining matches weren't so interesting. Although everyone that had managed to pass the first group stage could be considered a master, there was simply too great a difference compared to the first few matches.

Like this, the group stage advanced to the second round.

Fang Qi was the first one to go on stage, and his opponent was Zi Ling. As for who his opponent was: Zhou Yan or Zi Ling, there was simply no difference to him.

A single move, instant defeat!

"Fang Qi, victory!"

As the referee announced this, Zi Ling let out a sad, low-spirited sigh. She had been hoping to enter the first tier, but now that she had lost two straight matches, unless there was an accident, she would definitely lose to that Lin Ming fellow!

“Second round....second match....” The referee intentionally paused here, and all of the contestants pricked their ears up in attention. Because the matches were arranged completely according to the referees’ wishes, none of the contestants knew who would be the next one called up.

“Second match, Lin Ming against Jing Chanyu!”

With this sentence, the entire audience rose in an uproar. Lin Ming against Jing Chanyu was absolutely the most anticipated match of the entire seventh group!

The unbeatably Zi Ling and Bi Tinghua who both had complete victories in the first group stage had already been defeated. Now, there were only three people who were still undefeated, and two of those were Jing Chanyu and Lin Ming. As for Fang Qi against Jing Chanyu and Fang Qi against Lin Ming, truth be told, there wasn’t much interest in those matches. In everyone’s opinion, Fang Qi’s victory was inevitable; a direct disciple was simply too strong. With his peak Pulse Condensation period cultivation, his strength was already equal to a middle Houtian master’s; his position was simply unshakeable.

Thus, the most anticipated and the most suspenseful match was Jing Chanyu against Lin Ming!

The majority’s opinion was that as things stood, Jing Chanyu had a 70% chance of winning, and Lin Ming had a 30% chance of winning.

But how true this was, it could only be found out through a true battle.

Jing Chanyu’s clothes fluttered in the wind as she landed in the center of the martial stage.

Jing Chanyu greeted, “Grace Venerate Nation’s disciple, Jing Chanyu.”

She still had her thin gauze veil on; her voice someone unreal and nebulous.

Lin Ming cupped fists together in respect, “Lin Ming. Please advise.”

Chapter 253 – Absolute Defense

Chapter 253 – Absolute Defense

…

…

…

The two strong contestants faced each other as a chilling wind slowly blew across the martial stage, gently touching against Jing Chanyu's face veil. This face veil had never been lifted by any opponent's attack or true essence aftermath. This was the symbol of Jing Chanyu's tranquility, and also the reason that almost everyone had unanimously recognized her as the one would who seize the title of champion amongst the 36 countries.

This young girl had left an unfathomably deep feeling in everyone's heart!

"You are very strong. Unfortunately, my cultivation method is a bit special. Your techniques will all become null in front of me." After the match started, Jing Chanyu and Lin Ming didn't immediately make their move. Instead, they looked at each other as Jing Chanyu slowly spoke.

With her soft words, a hazy and dim halo of light began to condense around her, as if it were a translucent yellow eggshell.

Seeing this eggshell, Lin Ming didn't have any reaction.

In the audience, Zi Ling let out a heavy breath. When she had been fighting Jing Chanyu, her 36 Light Blade Extreme Execution had been blocked by this dainty looking yellow eggshell.

Zi Ling had confidence in the power of her 36 Light Blade Extreme Execution. However, once it entered that eggshell, it was like a blunt knife that was used to chop into a thick tree trunk. It moved forwards like a slowly, and the energy that gave her technique substance soon dissipated.

Lin Ming was silent. His eyes closed and then opened, and the dark vortex of the endless Samsara rushed straight towards Jing Chanyu, carrying a powerful pure soul force!

Lin Ming used 90% of his soul force power in this strike. When he had been fighting against Bi Tinghua, Lin Ming had been gone easy on him. After Bi Tinghua used a Soul Alacrity Law, Lin Ming had let him persist for another quarter hour longer in order to better absorb the pure soul force that had been buried beneath his spiritual sea, and to also attain more enlightenment and comprehension of his Samsara martial intent.

Now that he faced Jing Chanyu, Lin Ming felt that his opponent had an extremely deep soul defense. Even if he went all out with his soul attack, he still might not win.

Bang!

The soul attack was invisible and had no substance, but when it fiercely impacted on the yellow eggshell, it still created a fierce distortion on the surface.

Zi zi zi!

The yellow eggshell was like a soap bubble in the wind. Although it seemed to be on the verge of breaking, it still hadn’t broken.

The ring of tiles on the martial stage floor was shattered by the violent vibrations of the yellow eggshell, forming a spiderweb of spreading cracks. At the center of all this, Jing Chanyu was standing vigil, her eyes shut as she maintained her usual calm and quiet.

The fierce storm of energy that was occurring outside of the yellow eggshell formed a distinct contrast with the peaceful expression of Jing Chanyu. Her clothes fluttered in the wind, her veil swayed, and many young martial artists were looking at her with obsessive infatuation shining in their eyes.

“Earth-attribute martial artist?” Lin Ming realized that the thick eggshell contained an incomparably powerful earth-attribute origin energy that had managed to fend off his formless soul attack.

“Yes, I was born with inborn earth-attribute origin energy, with medium sixth-grade fusion compatibility. My true essence shield is formed by my earth-attribute origin energy, and is infamous for its defensive power and vitality. Not only can it defend against martial arts skills, but it can also defend against your soul attacks! This is my absolute defense. Although I am inferior to you in soul force and am also inferior to Bi Tinghua, I have a way to make your soul attacks null!”

Jing Chanyu’s voice wasn’t loud, but every word was still clearly heard.

“Medium sixth-grade fusion!”

There weren’t many martial artists that had specific attribute true essences. Not only that, but most who did only had a third-grade or fourth-grade fusion. A fifth-grade fusion was already extremely rare. As for a sixth-grade fusion, that was rare even within the entire Sky Spill Continent!

A superior fifth-grade fusion was a 100% fusion of true essence and a special attribute origin energy. As for a sixth-grade fusion, that was when their attribute true essence penetrated into them and tempered their flesh and blood.

“No wonder Jing Chanyu was able to fight until now without moving a single step. She actually has such an absolute defense; she simply doesn’t need to fear an attack from anyone, thus she has no need to hide or dodge.”

“If Lin Ming can’t break through her defensive eggshell, then she is in an invincible position. Now that Lin Ming’s soul attacks no longer work, how else will he fight?” The one who spoke was a minor martial artist who was one of the few that had bet on Lin Ming to win. He believed that the odds were good, but now looking at the situation, it was a possibility that they he would lose everything.

“Hehe, you should have bet on Jing Chanyu. Although you might not have earned as much, the chances were much higher. A soul attack simply isn’t the proper way of doing this. The only reason that Lin Ming was able to arrive here with his trivial peak Bone Forging cultivation was because he was relying on his soul attack trickery. His opponents were martial artists that didn’t know how to defend against soul attacks, so they were caught off guard. Otherwise, how could Pulse Condensation period martial artists lose to a boy at the peak of Bone Forging? That Bi Tinghua was also stupid. Obviously he had some martial skills, so why would he want to compare soul attacks with Lin Ming. If he fought Lin Ming in a head-to-head martial arts contest, how could he possibly lose?

“Now that Lin Ming has encountered a martial artist who is proficient in soul force defense, there are no other tricks that Lin Ming can pull!” The martial artist who spoke was in a good mood. He had placed 10 true essence stones on Jing Chanyu. Although he wouldn’t make much of a profit, it was still enough for him to spend for some time.

In the yellow eggshell, Jing Chanyu held her jade-white hands together, and that yellow hazy light covered her hands, just as if she were bathing in bright yellow lights.

“Is your attack over? Then… it’s my turn!”

Since his soul attack wasn’t working, Lin Ming simply pulled away his soul force. He smiled and said, “Warning your opponent before you attack, you really are confident in yourself.”

Jing Chanyu’s red lips parted, and she began to form a series of seals with her hands as she said, “This is just a friendly match, not a life and death struggle. Also… my attack is very difficult to hide from. Even if I told you, you cannot dodge it!”

Jing Chanyu was a girl with an upright and honest personality; she wasn't someone who exaggerated her words in order to show off her strength. If she said her skill could not be dodged, then it could not be dodged!

Her seal-forming fingers began to move faster and faster until they became a series of blurs. In a short period of two breaths, she had formed 1000 seals!

"Halcyon Reflection 1000 Shaded Hands!"

Jing Chanyu turned her hands up and a series of dense finger-shaped shadows condensed, shooting out like a volley of radiant arrows, shadowing the sky!

In an instant, Lin Ming was surrounded by these finger shadows on all sides! These countless shadow fingers broke through the air, sizzling sounds following in their wake. There were thousands of these shadows!

Halcyon Reflection 1000 Shaded Hands. Since this move dared to call itself 1000 Shaded Hands, it of course lived up to its well-deserved reputation!

"No wonder she said it's undodgeable, there's just no way to avoid all these!"

Previously, when Zi Ling had personally experienced this move, she had almost been instantly struck by these nearly invisible shadows, and was then defeated by Jing Chanyu's Halcyon Reflection Great Wisdom Palm.

Zi Ling was fully aware of just how strong this move was, there was simply no opportunity to resist. She believed that if Lin Ming was struck by the Halcyon Reflection 1000 Shaded Hands, he would have no way to avoid the following Halcyon Reflection Great Wisdom Palm. The result of that would be – defeat!

Facing against the thousands of finger shadows of Halcyon Reflection 1000 Shaded Hands, if it were someone like Fang Qi, he could easily block all of them with his overwhelming strength. But to dodge them? Zi Ling didn't think this was possible.

"Assemble!"

Jing Chanyu gathered her hands together, and all of the finger shadows attacked Lin Ming together!

Lin Ming's lips curved up in a mischievous smile, Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Pah pah pah pah pah pah pah!

In that moment, it was unknown how many of those finger shadows pierced Lin Ming. They passed through his body, slicing through the floor and shattering the tiles, sending crushed stone flying into the air!

The audience didn't even have to cry out in alarm. But at this moment, Lin Ming's form disappeared – his form had only been an afterimage!

"There he is!"

A spectator cried out and pointed his finger at the sky. The audience followed his gaze, but could only see shadows, a series of blurs that shunted across the air. It was impossible to tell which one was the true Lin Ming!

Ta ta ta ta ta!

Lin Ming's body was like swirling whirlwind. With his keen perception, he was able to clearly grasp the location of every finger shadow. He discovered that these finger shadows had had a first and a last – it wasn't a volley. It must have been difficult for even Jing Chanyu to simultaneously control these thousands of finger shadows.

Lin Ming saw a gap between the thousands of finger shadows. Like a swift storm, he crossed through!

With the support of the Concept of Wind, Lin Ming's movements were like a liquid dream. Even when the audience saw that he had been forced into a corner and could no longer dodge, when his true self seemed to be pierced by the shadow fingers, it turned out to only be an afterimage left behind by Lin Ming.

To be able to maintain such a high velocity and turning ability in a dense rain of shadows, the audience could only gasp and exclaim again and again. This extreme speed under the collisions and explosions was simply an unprecedented visual feast!

“Good speed!”

Even Mu Qinghong, who was sitting in the Grand Hall was shocked. For a 16 year old boy to have this sort of agility was simply inconceivable. The thousands of finger shadows were even faster than arrows. Not only that, but they were controlled by human sense; there was simply no order or law that governed their attack path. In order to dodge them, one needed not only speed, but amazingly keen perception and instant judgment!

Whiz whiz whiz whiz!

In this storm of chaos, Lin Ming managed to completely avoid every attack and approach Jing Chanyu’s side!

Jing Chanyu finally lost all of her former calm. Her pair of limpid eyes were wide with bewilderment as she started at Lin Ming and her heart was madly beating within her chest.

Just what was this fellow going to do?

Remembering that she had an absolute defense covering her, Jing Chanyu felt a little peace of mind. But at this moment, the rapidly moving Lin Ming suddenly lifted his fist.

This strong defense was truly able to place many martial artists in a predicament. However, this was no problem for Lin Ming. Flow like Silk was especially useful for subduing defense-based martial artists. The true essence would directly penetrate through all defenses, and completely collapse the internal structure of any defense with extreme vibrations!

All of the tiny units in Lin Ming's body began to breathe at the same time. Lin Ming's true essence stirred, and 5000 vibrating true essence filaments condensed onto his right hand!

"Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!"

Lin Ming gave a shout, his punch was just like Flood Dragon Goes to Sea!

Bang!

Lin Ming's solid punch landed against the shield. 5000 vibrating true essence filaments roared forwards, and began to disintegrate the integrity and structure of Jing Chanyu's 'eggshell'.

Ka ka ka ka!

The sound of shattering glass filled the ears. Although this eggshell had been called an absolute defense, at this moment it was cracking apart like a pane of glass, breaking into thousands upon thousands of tiny pieces!

Vibrating true essence was able to tear apart anything it entered. If Lin Ming was able to enter the realm of creating hundreds of millions of vibrating true essence filaments, then Flow like Silk would be able to turn everything it touched to dust!

Seeing with her own eyes the dissolution of her absolute defense by Lin Ming's fist, Jing Chanyu was spooked beyond all measure!

What!?

How was this possible!?

Jing Chanyu wasn't someone who liked to brag. If she dared to call her ability an absolute defense, then she had complete confidence in it. Her yellow eggshell was outlandishly tough. Facing any powerful attack, it would only deform, but would not break.

But now, it couldn’t even deform; it directly shattered into pieces!

Chapter 254 – Digging for Talent?

Chapter 254 – Digging for Talent?

…

…

…

If Lin Ming had released a supremely formidable martial skill that was able to shatter her defense, she would not have been surprised. But it had only been a punch; it was simply impossible to condense enough energy onto that fist. That casual blow he sent out wasn't even with a weapon!

Or maybe he had always been a fist fighting martial artist?

The current situation had already gone beyond any of Jing Chanyu's calculations, she was extremely startled. After Lin Ming broke apart her absolute defense, he grasped towards her jade-like neck!

Jing Chanyu shook as if an earthquake passed through her, and her face turned incomparably white. At such a close range, it was impossible to use any martial skills, but could she use speed to dodge him? Jing Chanyu had never excelled at speed, but even if she did, could she compare to someone like Lin Ming? He was some abnormal freak that had managed to continuously avoid her Halcyon Reflection 1000 Shaded Hands; Jing Chanyu did not believe for a second that she could accomplish something similar.

At this critical juncture, Jing Chanyu formed her hand into a saber, and chopped down at Lin Ming's wrist.

Although Jing Chanyu seemed like a delicate and gossamer lady, anyone who assumed she would be weak because of her physical charms was sorely mistaken. Jing Chanyu had reached a medium sixth-grade fusion with her Earth-attribute true essence; she had already achieved the stage of using her elemental origin energy to temper her body. Usually if she didn't use true essence, her body would seem soft and liquid-like, but once she imbued her body with true essence, her body would be as strong as a treasure weapon!

Therefore Jing Chanyu didn't need to use a weapon, because her body was in itself a marvelous natural weapon!

Jing Chanyu had wanted to force Lin Ming to retreat with her hand saber, but hadn't thought that not only would Lin Ming not react, he would keep rushing towards her.

This fellow!

Jing Chanyu was finally angry. She clenched her beautiful jade teeth tight, and her left hand chopped down. If a normal martial artist were struck by this, they would suffer the fate of having their bones fractured.

Peng!

Her hand cut down on Lin Ming's wrist, but Jing Chanyu's face drained of blood right after. She felt as if her hand saber had cut down on darksteel. Not only was Lin Ming's hand not affected in the least, but she felt her own arm lose feeling from the backlash reverberations.

Was his body made of iron or something?

She only had enough time to think this single thought. In the next moment, Lin Ming's hand already wrapped around her tender neck and his five fingers gripped tightly against her throat and carotid artery. As long as Lin Ming put in just a bit of strength, he could have immediately killed Jing Chanyu!

Jing Chanyu's veil had originally covered down to her neck, but in that fierce impact when Lin Ming had grabbed onto her, the veil that was the symbol of her tranquility was pulled down, revealing Jing Chanyu's beautiful and mysterious face.

“You…!” Jing Chanyu’s eyes flashed with a sullen anger.

“Well fought!” Lin Ming withdrew his hand, bowed in a gesture of respect and then turned to leave the stage. If it hadn’t been his hand a moment ago but instead his spear, then Jing Chanyu’s throat would have been nothing but a bloody hole. The outcome of this battle had already been decided.

“Lin Ming, victory!”

As the referee announced the victor, the audience was stunned by the sudden turn in events.

What had just happened a moment ago? Lin Ming used his fist?”

And he had shattered Jing Chanyu’s absolute defense with a single punch! There wasn’t even true essence condensed onto his fist!

This match between Lin Ming and Jing Chanyu had already undergone all sorts of analysis in the minds of the audience, still, no one thought that the end result would turn out like this. It was just as when Jing Chanyu had defeated Zi Ling: it only took several breaths of time for Lin Ming to defeat Jing Chanyu.

Not only that, but he didn’t use the soul force attacks that he was known for. Instead, he had used his fist.

“Isn’t Lin Ming a soul force attack expert? How come he used his fist?”

The path of martial arts was limitless and profound. For someone so young like Lin Ming, it was already excellent that they were skilled in a single aspect. A soul force attack was already an extremely obscure and esoteric method of fighting. To be able to achieve good success in this ability, one had to invest a great amount of time within it. Naturally, other aspects of their training would lag behind.

But now it looked like Lin Ming didn't know just soul attacks. If Lin Ming knew some swordsmanship, then the audience wouldn't have been too surprised. But a fist…

This sort of attack method was simply too different from a soul attack, it was just too difficult to link the two together.

"You've done well." Qin Ziya praised as Lin Ming walked off stage.

Although Qin Ziya sounded calm, his mind was actually surging with an overwhelming tide of feelings and emotions. At first, he had estimated that Lin Ming had high hopes of entering the top 20 ranks, but after he had arrived at the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction and seen such geniuses like Zhang Yanzhao, the Jingchan Duo, and others emerge from the shadows one at a time, Qin Ziya's confidence had been somewhat shaken.

But now it seemed as if he had underestimated Lin Ming by far. Lin Ming reached the first tier, which also meant he had entered into the top 30 ranks. And yet he still hadn't used his spear!

Did this mean that there was a chance Lin Ming would enter into the top 10 ranks during his first Total Faction Martial Meeting?

Thinking this, Qin Ziya felt a giddiness surge within him. Although the top 10 and top 20 sounded close, the truth was, there was a massive difference between them!

The top 10 rankings were nearly completely dominated by direct disciples! There were some large factions like the Sword Faction and the Acacia Faction that had bountiful resources and numerous disciples. The resources that the second ranked disciple received wouldn't be that much different from the direct disciple.

In other words, these top-level direct disciples already filled the top 10. If a disciple wished to enter into the top 10, then they would have to struggle against these direct disciples!

Ever since the Seven Profound Valleys Total Faction Martial Meeting had begun, the 36 countries and 16 martial families had produced a number of amazing talents that were able to enter into the top 20 rankings, such as Zhang Yanzhao.

There were many talents that had entered into the top 20. But to enter into the top 10? There had only been a few!

If Lin Ming was able to enter the top 10 of the Total Faction Meeting during his first time, then what about his second time? Or third time? Lin Ming had only just reached 16 years of age – he still had two more Total Faction Martial Meetings he could attend!

Qin Ziya didn't dare to imagine what could happen. Lin Ming's growth was simply too terrifying. He guessed that after this Martial Meeting, Lin Ming might even be selected to enter the Total Faction ahead of time!

With the support of the Total Faction's resources and cultivation methods, then Lin Ming might even become the champion of the next Martial Meeting! Compared to his own hopes, that would have been three years early!

Of course, even if Lin Ming entered into the Total Faction, his achievements would partially be attributed to Qin Ziya. But thinking that just as his Sky Fortune Kingdom's Seven Profound Martial House had raised a genius like this with so much difficulty, they had to instantly send him away, Qin Ziya felt a bit melancholic.

……………………………………

In the Grand Hall of the Seven Profound Valleys, Mu Qinghong had been following Lin Ming's match from beginning to end.

"Haha, Fairy Maiden Qinghong seems to have some interest in that young boy. This is a talent that my Seven Profound Valleys has cultivated with care; he is a good seedling!"

At the side of Mu Qinghong, Seven Profound Valley Master Shi Zongtian was laughing with a big smile as he spoke.

Mu Qinghong was still quietly observing Lin Ming with her soul force, looking indifferent to the situation. Shi Zongtian had no idea what sort of thoughts Mu Qinghong was thinking, he only thought that maybe she had been drawn in by Lin Ming's exemplary performance.

Lin Ming had also caught Shi Zongtian's attention. To have such strength at the peak Bone Forging stage was just too eye-catching, it was hard not to notice.

However, although Shi Zongtian kept note of Lin Ming, he hadn't investigated any information on Lin Ming's background.

Lin Ming had been revealed to be a soul talent genius, but, soul attacks just weren't the right way to do things. Once he tried to attack the Xiantian realm, he would experience an insurmountable bottleneck. To Shi Zongtian, this meant that Lin Ming wasn't worth caring about. But now it seemed that Lin Ming wasn't just a simple soul force master after all!

Mu Qinghong looked at Shi Zongtian and chuckled in her heart. According to the data she had obtained from Mu Qianyu, although Lin Ming was technically a disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys, he hadn't been 'cultivated with care' as Shi Zongtian had claimed. He wasn't even a disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys Total Faction, but just someone who had been hanging around at a Seven Profound Martial House.

She smiled and said, "He truly is a good seedling. With such strength at his age, his future will be bright and limitless. Valley Master Shi's ability to find talents like this is praiseworthy."

Hearing such high appraisal coming from the lofty Mu Qinghong, Shi Zongtian felt his own mood soar to the sky. Before a top-tier fourth-grade sect, Shi Zongtian was naturally happy to show off the strength of his sect. "I didn't really think that such a genius would emerge at this Total Faction Martial Meeting… it looks like I need to recruit him into the Martial House ahead of time. Such a good seedling is just wasted within the 36 countries… mm? 36 countries?"

Shi Zongtian suddenly realized something. He send out a true essence sound transmission to a servant and said, “Look up which country Lin Ming from the seventh group came from.”

Shi Zongtian suddenly felt a foreboding omen creeping up. This Lin Ming couldn’t possibly come from Sky Fortune Kingdom…

An answer soon arrived back, and that unlucky feeling in Shi Zongtian’s heart came true. Lin Ming really was from Sky Fortune Kingdom!

He turned his head to glance at Mu Qinghong, and his expression became somewhat ugly. He remembered that just when the Martial Meeting had started, Mu Qinghong had asked which stage the participants of Sky Fortune Kingdom were at.

At first, Shi Zongtian had thought it was strange that Mu Qinghong of all people would ask something like this. But now, it seemed as if the reason was because of Lin Ming!

If he hadn’t guessed wrong, then the reason Mu Qinghong came to the Seven Profound Valleys to specifically observe the Total Faction Martial Meeting was to look for Lin Ming!

A dignified and haughty Fairy Maiden of Divine Phoenix Island with an extreme Xiantian cultivation would actually travel all this way to look for a little boy from Sky Fortune Kingdom with a peak Bone Forging stage cultivation. This was just too ridiculous!

“How old is Lin Ming?” Shi Zongtian asked a servant again with true essence sound transmission.

“Reporting to the Valley Master, Lin Ming has just reached 16 years of age!”

To have reached a cultivation at the peak Bone Forging stage at only 16 years of age, he must have at least a sixth-grade martial talent!

Within the Seven Profound Valleys, a sixth-grade talent was already at the top. But placed within Divine Phoenix Island, a sixth-grade talent was only so-so. It wasn’t a reason for someone like Mu Qinghong to personally come to the Seven Profound Valleys.

That meant that there were other aspects of Lin Ming that were worth Mu Qinghong's attention, but he still didn't know what these were!

Realizing this point, Shi Zongtian's complexion became increasingly ugly. The fourth-grade sect Divine Phoenix Island would actually come to his little corner of land in order to search for talent? Although they were a fourth-grade sect and the Seven Profound Valleys was only a third-grade sect, and the difference in their strength was too great, they still couldn't bully them like such!

"Is there a problem, Valley Master Shi?" Mu Qinghong saw that Shi Zongtian was looking awful at the moment, so she smiled as she asked him. She noticed that Shi Zongtian's servant had left for a bit a moment ago, and was able to vaguely guess what had just happened.

Shi Zongtian forced a smile and said with a low voice, "Is Fairy Maiden Qinghong old acquaintances with my sect's disciple Lin Ming?"

"No. It's just because of some coincidence that Little Brother Lin knows my family's Young Mistress."

Young Mistress!

Shi Zongtian almost wanted to jump out of his seat. The 'Young Mistress' of Mu Qinghong could only be a single person – the Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island, Mu Qianyu!

Lin Ming actually was personally acquainted with Mu Qianyu?

What was happening? How could Lin Ming possibly know the Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island? An existence like her would have a high status even if placed in the entire South Horizon Region of Sky Spill Continent! Even he had to bow if he saw her!

Chapter 255 – Entering the First Tier

Chapter 255 – Entering the First Tier

…

…

…

Shi Zongtian knew that there were two great Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island. Both were seventh-grade talents, and both had seventh-grade fusions with an element.

The Blue Luan Saintess' attribute was water, and the Vermillion Bird Saintess' attribute was fire. They had reached Pulse Condensation at 15, Houtian at 17, Xiantian at 22, extreme Xiantian at 26, and at 27 years of age they had taken a half-step into the Revolving Core realm!

Compared to monstrous talents like this, their so called gathering of talents – the Total Faction Martial Meeting – was more like a gathering of blabbering toddlers.

Thinking of Mu Qianyu, Shi Zongtian couldn't really muster up any courage to resist. After all, Divine Phoenix Island could casually send one of their elders to the Seven Profound Valleys and not even the Elder Ancestor of the Seven Profound Valleys would be their match.

Even if it was Mu Qianyu, with her half-step Revolving Core cultivation, and her true strength that far surpassed a similar martial artist, she might not necessarily be any worse than their Elder Ancestor!

Shi Zongtian couldn't help but wonder if Divine Phoenix Island really didn't care about giving face to their sect, how should he manage this situation?

Lin Ming was still only a Seven Profound Martial House disciple – he wasn't a true disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys. If he left, it wouldn't really be considered as betraying his sect. Not only that, but the resources that Divine Phoenix Island could provide him far exceeded what the Seven Profound Valleys could offer. If he stood in Lin Ming's shoes, then even he would favor Divine Phoenix Island!

Compared to Divine Phoenix Island, Shi Zongtian simply didn't have any confidence.

Shi Zongtian let loose a heavy breath and then asked, "Fairy Maiden Qinghong, is it really for so simple a reason like searching for a friend of Her Highness the Saintess that you came to the Seven Profound Valleys?"

Mu Qinghong laughed, "Is Valley Master Shi worried about something?"

Shi Zongtian calmly said, "Lin Ming is a disciple of my Seven Profound Valleys."

"As far as I know, he is only a student of Sky Fortune Kingdom's Seven Profound Martial House..."

Shi Zongtian furrowed his eyebrows, he wasn't able to refute this point. Thinking back to when he had been boasting, he felt a bit embarrassed.

After a period of awkward silence passed, Shi Zongtian suddenly felt that something wasn't right. Maybe Mu Qianyu knew Lin Ming, but even so, why would Mu Qianyu not contact Lin Ming secretly? All she had to do was take the first step and offer favorable conditions to win over Lin Ming to join Divine Phoenix Island. Why come to their Seven Profound Valleys Total Faction Martial Meeting? Even the reward for becoming the champion of the Total Faction Martial Meeting, a Heaven Opening Pill, wasn't anything to Divine Phoenix Island.

Shi Zongtian couldn't figure out this riddle, but he also didn't ask why.

At this time, Mu Qinghong said, "In truth, my family's Young Mistress has not thought to steal any disciples from your Seven Profound Valleys. In fact, our Divine Phoenix Island may be abundant in resources, but our highest cultivation methods are not suited for men to cultivate. Valley Master Shi can accept Lin Ming as an official disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys after the Martial Meeting. Even in the future, if the Seven Profound Valleys cannot provide sufficient resources to Lin Ming, then our Divine Phoenix Island can also provide some help…"

Is there really such a good thing?

Although Mu Qinghong promised to help Lin Ming with additional resources, it felt a little bit overkill even though he may be friends with Mu Qianyu. Mu Qianyu had personally paid attention this this boy, and had even sent Mu Qinghong.

In Shi Zongtian's opinion, no matter how much of a talent Lin Ming was, he was still a child that hadn't grown up. Was Mu Qianyu betting on Lin Ming becoming a middle Revolving Core master in the future? Or even a late Revolving Core master?

There were countless genius within the Sky Spill Continent, but the number that could reach the Revolving Core stage were truly few in number. In the 600 years of heritage within the Seven Profound Valleys, only their Elder Ancestor had reached the Revolving Core realm.

"This is the only reason Fairy Maiden Qinghong came today?" Shi Zongtian asked, somewhat doubtful.

"Haha, this was just in passing. There is actually something that I need to discuss with Valley Master Shi."

After Mu Qinghong said this, her expression turned somewhat serious.

"Please speak, Fairy Maiden Qinghong."

"This is a very important matter, it will take more than a while to tell you. Let's wait for this Martial Meeting to finish, and then I'll speak in further detail."

Seeing Mu Qinghong's solemn expression, Shi Zongtian could only agree and not pursue the matter any further. As for what matter Divine Phoenix Island would come look to him for, he had no idea.

…………

After the match between Lin Ming and Jing Chanyu had finished, the gambling house had decided that Lin Ming would win the championship of the 36 country bet ahead of time.

As for the latter matches in the seventh group, they had all lost suspense. Many contestants had completely given up on competing against Lin Ming. Instead, they tried to preserve their strength in order to struggle for the second tier.

Lin Ming won the third round, the fourth round, the fifth round, until the sixth round where he encountered Zi Ling.

Zi Ling was one of the five players that entered into the second group stage with a complete string of victories. Naturally, ZI Ling trusted in her own strength. But she had lost against Jing Chanyu in only two moves, and then Jing Chanyu had lost against Lin Ming in two moves!

The person who had taken a second to defeat her was defeated in a second by Lin Ming. Zi Ling was well aware of the disparity between her and Lin Ming.

But still, Zi Ling didn't admit defeat. Even though she had a steady position in the second tier, she wasn't yet willing to admit defeat without putting up a fight, because this went against her heart of martial arts.

After the match started, ZI Ling didn't bother with hiding herself in diffracted light. She knew that in front of Lin Ming who had an extremely formidable soul force, hiding herself was simply deceiving herself. She took out her sword of light and began to display her ultimate move.

"I've placed everything in this strike, 36 Light Blade Extreme Execution!"

Chi chi chi chi!

The 36 blades of light shot out in all directions towards Lin Ming. Lin Ming seemed to take a single step forwards and then suddenly appeared like a phantom in front of Zi Ling, a punch flying out!

Peng!

Lin Ming only used a mere 1000 vibrating true essence filaments to shatter Zi Ling's protective true essence. And then he turned his fist into a claw and gently took hold of Zi Ling's neck.

As expected, the match was finished in a moment.

"Lin Ming, victory!"

As the referee announced the result, Zi Ling let out a light breath, somewhat depressed. When she faced Lin Ming, it was just as if an ordinary person faced a vicious and savage tiger with just bare fists – there was simply no way of resisting.

Therefore Lin Ming won six straight victories; he had guaranteed himself a spot in the first tier.

"He's too strong. Besides Bi Tinghua, there hasn't been anyone who could engage Lin Ming in an extended fight. Not only that, but all these fights have been ended in a few moves. When Lin Ming was facing Bi Tinghua, the only reason it took so long was likely because Lin Ming was deliberately hiding his cards.

Although Lin Ming defeating Zi Ling was what everyone expected, the easy and relaxed manner in which he won caused the audience to be full of praise.

"Next, Jing Chanyu against Fang Qi!"

Fang Qi was the default first place contestant in group 7. Group 7 had ten contestants, and each contestant fought in 8 matches. They would only miss a single person. Since Fang Qi was a seeded player, the one who would dodge him would be the other powerhouse of the group.

Since Jing Chanyu lost to Lin Ming, she was to be the opponent of Fang Qi.

Before Fang Qi walked up stage, he didn't even glance at Jing Chanyu. Instead, he approached Lin Ming with a faint smile tracing his lips.

"As a disciple of the 36 countries, you're quite good. You even might enter the top 10 rankings. At the next Total Faction Martial Meeting, you might be my match."

"Oh? The next time?" Lin Ming faintly smiled. These Seven Profound Valley direct disciples were just too confident in themselves, to the point of being needlessly arrogant. Of course, Lin Ming didn't fault them. They had grown up since children with the halo of genius around them. Not only that, but they were also disciples of the Total Faction. That sense of superiority and entitlement was already deeply ingrained within their bones.

"Yes, during the next Martial Meeting you'll have the qualifications to make me be serious." In Fang Qi's opinion, he had already given Lin Ming a very high evaluation.

Chapter 256 – The Final Competition Begins

Chapter 256 – The Final Competition Begins

…

…

…

“Are you not convinced by what I’m saying?” Fang Qi faintly smiled as he noticed Lin Ming’s somewhat disinterested expression.

“It’s already a fantastic result for a disciple of the 36 countries to have the qualifications to reach the top 10 ranks in their first Total Faction Martial Meeting. Although your natural talent is shocking, it’s a pity that your cultivation is too low.”

Fang Qi waggled his fingers as he shook his head, “Wait until your strength reaches the middle Pulse Condensation period and maintain your ability to fight above your cultivation. If you can do so, then you will have the qualifications that make you worthy to be my match. But as for some other people, that might not be enough!”

Lin Ming was stunned. The core disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys were just too arrogant. Fang Qi was naturally a proud person, but from his words it seemed that even he admitted he was inferior to some others.

This ‘other people’ that he mentioned could only be extremely abnormal.

Fang Qi didn’t intend to speak anymore, and he jumped onstage, stretching out his fingers as he faced Jing Chanyu. “This match will be decided in five breaths of time!” Lin Ming had used 15 breaths of time in order to defeat Jing Chanyu; Fang Qi would settle this in five, which was one third of Lin Ming’s time. This was to deliberately show those young geniuses of the Seven Profound Valleys that the martial artists from the 36 countries were inferior to them.

“Fang Qi, you can do it!”

“Destroy her in one second, destroy her!”

As Fang Qi’s voice fell, the audience burst into cheers. This was the home of the Seven Profound Valleys, and there were also many Array Faction disciples in the audience, and they had a good impression of their faction’s direct disciple, Fang Qi. Naturally, he also had an extremely high popularity. In particular, there were many people that had lost a great deal of money because of Lin Ming and Jing Chanyu, and they wanted to vent their feelings.

At this time, Jing Chanyu was using a new veil. She didn’t have any reaction, even seeing the overwhelming one-sided support towards her opponent. She had the same absolute defense that surrounded her when she fought Lin Ming, except this time it was much thicker. She intended to thoroughly frustrate Fang Qi for looking down on her so much.

She knew that she was inferior to Fang Qi, but she wouldn’t let him easily end this match in five breaths of time.

“Match, begin!”

As the referee announced the beginning of the match, Fang Qi’s ten fingers quickly linked together at a terrifying speed as he formed golden symbol after golden symbol. The speed at which he formed his seals was a blur, and in just a breath of time, 100 symbols flew out of Fang Qi’s hand and soared towards Jing Chanyu.

In the second breath of time, all of these golden symbols completely surrounded Jing Chanyu. In the midst of this dangerous energy, Jing Chanyu could only grit her teeth and supplement the shield that was guarding her with everything she had. She was a martial artist of the 36 countries. Facing a disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys who looked down on her with nothing but contempt, she could only suppress the anger in her heart.

At this time, Jing Chanyu only had one thought on her mind, and that was to never let Fang Qi easily win. She would fight for the honor of the 36 countries!

“Golden Octagon Lock!”

Fang Qi clasped his hands together, and those hundreds of golden symbols that surrounded Jing Chanyu congealed together into eight formation arrays that struck Jing Chanyu’s protection!

Kacha!

That protective eggshell was tightened by an invisible chain, severely distorting!

Jing Chanyu paled, and true essence surged within her body. In that split second, her protection had almost burst open!

“Mm?” Fang Qi lightly sneered. It seemed that his opponent’s protective barrier had exceeded his imagination.

“Heaven and Earth Sword Formation!”

Fang Qi thrust out his hand! 36 blades of light flew out from his body and landed near Jing Chanyu.

The sword light seemed to undulate, as if the air itself was being cut apart by the swords. The sharp sword energy pierced Jing Chanyu’s protective defense!

Chi chi chi chi chi chi!

In that moment, the 36 blades of light had punctured Jing Chanyu’s protection like a porcupine!

It had only been three breaths of time!

Jing Chanyu clenched her teeth; she didn't think of attack, everything she had was placed into her defense. She galvanized the true essence within her body to the extreme! Her determination would not waver, she would bet everything she had to last past the fifth breath!

The protective eggshell severely deformed, and the sword energy seemed to slow down. Still, in the blink of an eye, Jing Chanyu had already been pressed to her limit. When Zi Ling had used the 36 light blades to strike her, her move had been melted away by Jing Chanyu's protection. But now, it was the opposite! Fang Qi's sword energy was too strong, in just a breath of time his swords had pierced through her protection!

Pah pah pah!

Although the protective eggshell shield hadn't broken, the 36 light blades had already pierced through, pointing at Jing Chanyu from all directions. With just a thought from Fang Qi, Jing Chanyu would be cut to pieces!

"Fang Qi, victory!"

With the referee's announcement, just five breaths of time had passed.

"Only five breaths!"

"Haha, he truly is the direct disciple of the Array Faction. Senior-apprentice Brother Fang is too amazing!"

The audience resounded with thunderous cheers, especially from those disciples of the array faction. Many of the female disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys even dropped their modesty and let out clear screams. Obviously, they had long held a liking towards Fang Qi.

In fact, of the Seven Profound Valleys' seven direct disciples, except for the strange and weird Puppet Faction direct disciple, all the other six direct disciples were greatly welcomed and popular among girls. Even Ouyang Ming of the Acacia Faction who was known as a player was no different. There were many girls that dreamed of one day being able to marry them; even being a concubine would be nice, as that would greatly increase the resources they would have.

Jing Changyu removed her protective shield and walked down the stage. Under the barrage of endless boos from the enemy audience, her sense of desolation and disorientation was indescribable.

As a proud woman who had grown up under the halo of being a heavenly genius, she was representing the 36 countries on behalf of their honor. And yet, the outcome of this match was… the opponent had said he would end the match in five breaths, and he really had ended it in five breaths. No matter how hard she had tried, she was unable to change this. She hadn't even been able to force him to use his full strength, was the difference in their power truly so great?

As she inadvertently looked up, she saw Lin Ming standing on the side, his hands folded behind his back. His expression was someone plain and casual.

Lin Ming…

After seeing Fang Qi's formidable strength with his own eyes, how could he maintain such a calm expression? What sort of cards did he have in his hands? Would he be able to defeat Fang Qi?

Jing Chanyu couldn't believe that was possible. Maybe Lin Ming was only a person who was unwilling to admit defeat. He might reach the top, but if he did, he would inevitably clash with the direct disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys!

"Are you okay?" Lin Ming could imagine what Jing Chanyu was feeling at this time. She had desperately gone all out, and yet she had still suffered so miserably. As a proud woman of Grace Venerate Nation, the damage to Jing Chanyu's self-esteem could be imagined.

Jing Chanyu stubbornly nodded her head.

Lin Ming smiled and turned to leave. He only came to express his polite condolences to someone who was once his opponent.

At this moment, Jing Chanyu suddenly said, “Lin Ming!”

“Mm? What’s the matter?” Lin Ming turned his head. To his surprise, he could hear that Jing Chanyu sounded somewhat excited.

Jing Chanyu hesitated, nipped her red lips and asked, “You… can you win?”

Lin Ming was slightly stunned. Suddenly, he brilliantly smiled and nodded, “I can!”

He hadn’t even asked who he needed to win against.

“I meant to ask if you could defeat Fang Qi.”

“It’s all the same!”

Jing Chanyu was shocked speechless. Even she didn’t expect such an absurd dialogue between them. If they were heard by the disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys, they would probably laugh until they were rolling on the ground.

She had asked if Lin Ming could win, not if he could defeat Fang Qi.

Yet Lin Ming hadn’t even asked any questions. Even after she pointed out Fang Qi, his reply had still been – “It’s all the same!”

This answer was filled with a complete and absolute confidence. It implied that Fang Qi was merely one of the opponents that he would defeat, and that he would be ‘first’!

What did Lin Ming want to do? Did he not want to struggle for the top five, but the top three?

Thinking this, Jing Chanyu gasped. She didn’t know why, but she had a gut instinct that trusted in Lin Ming. Perhaps it was because of his confidence, or maybe it was because of

Jing Chanyu's own sentinel emotions, but regardless of whatever the reason was, Lin Ming was now the only contestant of the 36 countries who remained undefeated.

Grace Venerate Nation could only come so far, Jing Chanyu's older brother had also lost. Jing Chanyu guessed that she and her twin would end up in the final rankings between 20 and 40. The only one that could go on to represent the 36 countries was one person, Lin Ming!

"Lin Ming, you have to win!" Jing Chanyu slowly said, stressing every syllable.

"Mm. At the very least, I will defeat Fang Qi."

Lin Ming wasn't blindly arrogant, rampant, or stupid. If even someone as proud as Fang Qi admitted that the other seven direct disciples were superior to him, that meant that the disparity between them was very big.

Facing opponents like them, he feared that his matches would not be so easy!

After he parted ways with Jing Chanyu, it was already time for lunch. Now that every other group stage match had been basically settled, the only ones to enter into the first tier from the 36 countries were Jing Chanyu and Lin Ming.

Jing Chanyu's older brother Jing Chanshi was off by one point, and barely missed making the first tier.

As for Ling Sen, in his eight matches he had won two and lost six. He finally entered into the third tier.

Besides Ling Sen, Huoluo Nation's Wang Mu and Easter Sun Country's Zhao Yang also entered the third tier.

Thus, out of all the disciples of the 36 countries, six of them were able to enter into the top 100 rankings of the Total Faction Martial Meeting. Of those, Sky Fortune Kingdom had two disciples, and Lin Ming was ranked first among the 36 countries.

This was an event that had never shown up in the history of Sky Fortune Kingdom.

Qin Xingxuan was also thrilled to receive 120 true essence stones as a reward. She had bet 20 true essence stones on Lin Ming to win when his compensation rate had been 1:6. With Lin Ming's victory, she had gained a net total of 100. 100 true essence stones was equal to 100,000 gold taels! This was a great sum of money even to someone like Qin Xingxuan.

…………………………

The second round of the group matches had finished by the afternoon. At that time, all the contestants were able to rest for the night. On the next day, the final tournament would begin!

The first tier had 30 people, of which 20 were still undefeated. Of these 20 people, seven of them were direct disciples. Before the final showdown, these seven disciples wouldn't normally meet in a match.

Besides the direct disciples, there were three or four top core disciples of the Seven Factions. These individuals were only inferior to the direct disciples. For instance, Jiang Lanjian was one of them. There were many disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys that had already subconsciously placed Jiang Lanjian as a master equal to the seven direct disciples.

Of the remaining people, several of them were great figures within their factions. As long as they had enough resources, they were hopeful in breaking through to the Xiantian realm!

There were seven direct disciples, three to four top core disciples, and several other influential core disciples. Altogether, this was 18 people in total.

The 19th person was Zhang Yanzhao. He came from the Zhang Family, one of the 16 martial cultivation families. The Zhang Family had a staggering history that reached back 3000 years; it was said that the first Head of the Zhang Family who created his family foundation with his own hands was a Revolving Core master! But regardless of their past, the Zhang Family had greatly declined since their heydays. Still, they maintained their deep heritage and legacy. The Zhang Family had two Xiantian realm masters that led their family, even the Seven Profound Valleys had to give some respect to the Zhang Family.

Chapter 257 – Shield of Thunder

Chapter 257 – Shield of Thunder

…

…

…

The last person of those 20 was naturally Lin Ming.

Compared to the 19 disciples in front of him, Lin Ming was extremely ordinary. He came from an ordinary family and lived an ordinary life. Yet Lin Ming aroused an enormous interest from everyone.

In particular, the upper echelons of the Seven Profound Valleys. They had already been briefed on all of Lin Ming's information. For a 16 year old to have such a performance in the Total Faction Martial Meeting was rare even in the last 200 years!

At this time, the sun hadn't risen. Dawn was just around the corner, and yet there were already crowds of people gathered on the square of the Seven Profound Valleys' Grand Hall.

The various elders of the small sects in the Seven Profound territory, the 16 group leaders of the martial cultivation families, the various Martial House Masters and nobles of the 36 countries, and other great characters were gathered in the square. Any of these characters would be grand figures if placed within a small country; their existence itself would earn the admiration of millions. But here, these people weren't even allowed to sit in the front row, much less go into the Grand Hall.

"This year's Total Faction Martial Meeting should have the most skilled disciples in nearly the last three centuries!" In the audience, Huoluo Nation's Martial House Master Luo was sipping some tea. As the Martial House Master of a large country, he had been given preferential treatment. He had a table by his side, some tea to drink, and also some dried fruits to nibble on.

“Hehe, definitely. Didn’t Divine Phoenix Island send out a messenger? They really are giving face to our Seven Profound Valleys. Usually Peacock Mountain brags so much, but they’ve never had someone from a fourth-grade sect attend their own Martial Meeting!”

“Divine Phoenix Island?” Martial House Master Luo stirred his tea as he slowly said, “I heard a rumor from someone that Divine Phoenix Island came here for a specific reason, not to especially watch our Total Faction Martial Meeting…”

“Hm, I don’t know. Hey, what rank do you think your Huoluo Nation’s Wang Mu will reach?”

“Uh…” The sudden question caused Martial House Master Luo to nearly choke on his tea. Wang Mu had ultimately failed to even enter the second tier, and what distressed him the most was that Huoluo Nation also had to compensate with their Seraphic Pond…

……..

The sun finally began to rise over the horizon. The referee of the final tournament was already standing in the center of the martial stage. This person had a cultivation at the middle Xiantian realm, and was also one of the Inner Court elders of the Seven Profound Valleys.

“I won’t repeat the rules of the competition – they are the same as the group stage qualifiers. There are altogether 30 people in the first tier finals. Everyone will have at least 29 matches. Those with the least points at the end will face a challenge from those in the second tier with the most points. This means that you may or may not still be in the top 30 ranks.

“Now, let the finals begin!”

The elder referee's voice was very loud and clear; the entire mountain valley resounded with his voice.

"Lin Ming, do your best and try hard to enter the top 10. If you're up against an opponent you cannot defeat, don't try to be brave and get yourself hurt." Qin Ziya repeatedly advised Lin Ming as they headed to the contestant waiting area. Although it was against the rules to kill or disable your opponent, if the strength of the two contestants were similar, then they would have to fight the battle with everything they had. In such a situation it would be very difficult to control one's strength, and it wasn't uncommon to be severely injured.

"I understand."

Lin Ming moved towards the contestant waiting area and sat patiently in a chair. The first match soon began. A core disciple and a non-seeded player walked on stage. Although this was a fierce competition between two individuals, the audience seemed to be a bit disappointed, they most wanted to watch a match between the direct disciples.

As the battle on the stage was intensely unfolding, Lin Ming saw an extremely handsome and good looking man walking over to him. This stylish and suave looking man was holding a fan, and had a hint of a disdainful sneer on his face.

Lin Ming furrowed his eyebrows, he didn't recognize this person.

"Are you Lin Ming?"

"Yes!"

"I am Ouyang Zifeng, a core disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys' Acacia Faction."

"I don't think I know you?"

"…It doesn't matter whether or not you know me, it's enough that I know you. Because of you, my little brother will miss his chance to participate in this important Total Faction Martial Meeting."

As this handsome young man said this, Lin Ming suddenly remembered back to his time at Desert Flower Hall. He had been dining with Qin Xingxuan when a fight had broken out. In the end, he had used his Samsara martial intent to injure an Acacia Faction disciple whose last name was also Ouyang. So it seems he was this person's younger brother.

However, at that time Lin Ming had actually gone very easy on him. The reason that Ouyang Ziyun had been injured so heavily was because he wasn't able to control his own ability – the Purple Flame Bone Lance. After his ability was broken, the true essence that he had gathered caused a backlash which resulted in him being injured.

Feeling Ouyang Zifeng's reckless and sharp hostility, Lin Ming coldly said, "The reason that your little brother was injured so miserably was because he tried to use an ability he couldn't control and got struck by his own backlash. It has nothing to do with me."

"Nothing to do with you? Humph, if it wasn't for you attacking him, how could my little brother lose control of his Purple Flame Bone Lance!!?"

"Then what you are saying is that I should extend my neck out and let your little brother attack me however he wants? What if I wasn't strong enough and couldn't deal with the Purple Flame Bone Lance? Wouldn't I be burned to ashes? In Desert Flower Hall, I didn't even bother him or provoke him, and yet he had to use the Purple Flame Bone Lance which he could not control in order to kill me. If he really killed me, then the most severe punishment would be getting grounded for a month or two. But if I killed him, then I must pay with my life. How arrogant and domineering must you Seven Profound Valleys disciples be!"

Ouyang Zifeng laughed viciously and said, "This world has only been decided by strength! Those who are strong make the rules! I am stronger than you, thus I make the rules!"

"You think you are stronger than me?"

“You’ll find out soon enough. Our match is the fourth, it will soon start!” Ouyang Zifeng said as he turned and strode away. He had already looked at the competition schedule ahead of time, and knew that he would encounter Lin Ming in the first round.

At the time that Ouyang Zifeng left, the match onstage had already come to a conclusion.

“Second match, Zhang Yanzhao against Yan Yandong!”

As the referee’s voice fell, the audience members that came from the 16 martial cultivation families let loose ringing cheers. Zhang Yanzhao was the final representative of all 16 martial families. During this Total Faction Martial Meeting, he had already reached the top 20; he had great chances of reaching the top 10!

His opponent Yan Yandong had already lost two matches in the second group stage. Against someone who was still undefeated, even though the match hadn’t yet ended, the results were already expected.

Cha!

Zhang Yanzhao extracted the thick saber he had strapped to his back. Yan Yandong pulled out a small array flag. As he waved it, a hundred golden symbols flew into the air.

“Demon Locking Array!”

The golden symbols flew towards Zhang Yanzhao like a locust swarm. Zhang Yanzhao took a sudden step forwards, and his entire body exploded with sound, “Dragon Tiger Slayer!”

His saber slashed out, its momentum like a dragon and a tiger. The surrounding true essence in the air stirred together like a raging storm of destruction, and those golden symbols that flew in the air were like snowflakes that fell into a furnace – they instantly melted away!

Peng!

The first saber strike destroyed Yan Yandong's array, and the second saber strike broke apart Yan Yandong's bodily true essence protection. The aftermath from that strike was already enough to angrily send Yan Yandong flying backwards.

Yan Yandong's bodily true essence protection had been cleanly broken apart, but he himself wasn't injured at all. Obviously, the degree of strength control that Zhang Yanzhao possessed was extremely formidable.

The different in their strength was just too great.

"Zhang Yanzhao is truly fierce!"

"I think that our 16 martial families' Zhang Yanzhao isn't any worse than the direct disciples of the Seven Factions!"

The ones who were speaking were the disciples of the 16 martial families. As they spoke up, a Seven Profound Valleys disciple that was sitting at their side contemptuously smiled and said, "That's only because you haven't experienced the strength of the direct disciples for yourself. If Zhang Yanzhao met Ouyang Ming or even Jiang Baoyun, then he would be defeated in five moves."

"Five moves? Heh, I really want to laugh! You Seven Profound Valleys disciples brag to the point of not knowing what you're talking about."

"Wait and see for yourself, then don't end up crying!"

The Seven Profound Valleys disciple curled his lips and didn't speak any further.

At the third match, there wasn't anyone important.

Fourth match, Lin Ming against Ouyang Zifeng!

Ouyang Zifeng was the third ranked disciple of the Acacia Faction, and he also was undefeated from the group stages.

Lin Ming was naturally undefeated too. But, in the opinion of the general audience, Lin Ming may be a genius, but the difference between him and one of the seven direct disciples was simply too great. During the qualifying stages, Lin Ming had defeated Jing Chanyu in two moves. However, this didn't really raise anyone's opinion of him. After all, Jing Chanyu didn't have much chances of ending up in the top 20. Thus, defeating Jing Chanyu didn't mean much.

However, the upper echelon of the Seven Profound Valleys was watching this match with rapt attention, eyes glued to the stage. They were especially looking forward to seeing Lin Ming in action. This Lin Ming was just too young!

In particular, the Seven Profound Valleys Valley Master Shi Zongtian had already ordered an investigation into Lin Ming's entire last three generations of family. After receiving the report back, Shi Zongtian was simply startled out of his mind. Lin Ming had actually come from an extremely ordinary background, and he was a typical common martial artist. It was simply inconceivable that he could have such amazing results!

After Ouyang Zifeng walked onstage, many disciples began to immediately cheer, especially those female disciples who didn't have much talent for martial arts, they screamed until their voices were hoarse and could scream no longer. Because of their limited martial talent, they always vainly dreamed of marrying a core disciple. However, the core disciples of the Sword Faction and Refiner Faction pursued their martial arts path wholeheartedly, and most simply weren't lured by the pleasures of the flesh. There was just no chance of these girls being able to attract one of them. Thus the disciples of the Acacia Faction were the most sought after.

Compared to Ouyang Zifeng, there were far less cheers for Lin Ming. There just weren't that many disciples of the 36 countries present.

Ouyang Zifeng and Lin Ming stood 100 feet apart from each other.

Ouyang Zifeng sneered and said, “I heard that you can control the power of thunder. I advise you not to try and hide any cards in your hand, and to use whatever moves you have when you can. Otherwise, you won’t have the opportunity to.”

“I never intended to hide any cards. I just use what I need to when I need to.”

“Haha, you are also arrogant beyond arrogant! Up until now, there has only been one person who has managed to force me into using my sword. I wonder if you also have the ability to force me into using my sword?”

As Ouyang Zifeng said this, he traced his spatial ring and took out a blue longsword. The sword was inserted into a scabbard that was made from snake skin. It looked simple, but it exuded a very light true essence fluctuation. Obviously, this scabbard was some sort of extraordinary treasure.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. Force you to draw your sword? Let’s see if you can force me to draw my spear!

Samsara martial intent!

Lin Ming’s eyes suddenly turned into two black vortexes. He was trying to come to a deeper understanding of his Samsara martial intent. Even if he didn’t expect his Samsara martial intent to defeat his opponent, he would still use it in order to gain some more insights into his martial intent.

Ouyang Zifeng had already expected that Lin Ming would use a soul attack. With a sneer, the scabbard in his hand began to fiercely tremble, and the sound of a wailing ghost cry began to emit outwards. A massive number of green ghosts suddenly emerged from the sword blade and circled around Ouyang Zifeng. These ghosts seemed to be formed of a chilling air, as if they were enough to freeze a person’s soul.

As Lin Ming’s soul attack struck, it was completely blocked by these ghosts.

Peng peng peng!

As a ghost was stuck by the soul attack, it would inflate like a balloon and then burst apart. But as this ghost died, a new one would emerge to take its place. Lin Ming had killed over a dozen ghosts with his first attack, but he still hadn't been able to harm Ouyang Zifeng.

"Humph! Although the power of my soul force is inferior to yours, your soul attacks are useless against me! These ghosts are condensed from the Yin Qi that I've refined within my body. Every time you disperse one, they will just re-enter my body. After they are nourished by my true essence, they will reform endlessly!

"If you can only use soul attacks, then you truly disappoint me."

As Ouyang Zifeng said this, a purple flame began to cover his entire body, as if his body was drowning in an inferno. This flame sprang dozens of feet high, and soon Ouyang Zifeng was completely enveloped within it. What was strange was that this purple flame wasn't burning hot. Instead, it exuded a bone chilling energy. The tiles underneath Ouyang Zifeng's feet began to ice over, spreading out with him at the center.

"Purple Flame Bone Lance..." Lin Ming easily recognized this ability. Back at Desert Flower Hall, Ouyang Ziyun had also moved this move, and thus he had suffered a major loss.

"My little brother used the Purple Flame Bone Lance and was defeated by you. Now, I will let you have a good look today and the true might of the Purple Flame Bone Lance!"

The purple flames on Ouyang Zifeng's arm condensed into a purple bone lance. From it, the sounds of wailing ghosts and tormented spirits echoed out. With Ouyang Zifeng's cultivation, he was able to display the true abilities of the Purple Flame Bone Lance.

"Die!"

Huuu–!

The bone lance shot out, quick as lightning! Blurred flames followed in its path, creating the afterimage of a trailing tail of burning purple fire! A loud explosive sound pierced the air mixed with the weeping sounds of ghosts, scratching upon the eardrums of those nearby.

Sou-!

Lin Ming was directly pierced by the bone lance!

The audience didn't even have time to respond. Ouyang Zifeng fiendishly grinned. You want to dodge this move? You are too naïve!

The 'Lin Ming' that was pierced by that bone lance suddenly dissipated into shadow, it had only been an afterimage. At the same time, the bone lance suddenly changed directions, chasing Lin Ming's shadow!

"Divide!"

Ouyang Zifeng cried out, and suddenly the bone lance split into 12 shards. These 12 mini bone lances pierced towards Lin Ming from all angles – they could not be avoided!

"Ahh—!" The martial artists from the 36 countries couldn't help but cry out in alarm. Qin Ziya was even more nervous, both of his hands were clenched together until they were white. In this level of confrontation, any accidental move and one could be seriously injured or even crippled!

Peng peng peng peng!

The 12 mini purple flame bone lances simultaneously struck Lin Ming, and a massive pyre of purple fire screeched into the sky; it was just like a gloriously blooming purple rose!

Ouyang Zifeng's lips curved up in a dark smile. All of the martial artists from the 36 countries were nervously waiting with breath abated.

Qin Xingxuan's hands were covered with sweat; as to what the limit of Lin Ming's power was, she did not know.

However, after the purple flames faded away, Ouyang Zifeng's smile faded along with them.

Lin Ming was firmly standing on the martial stage, not even his clothes had been burnt. Around his body, massive purple snakes of electricity crackled as they writhed around his body, dancing, coiling, completely surrounding him.

Ouyang Zifeng's face suddenly sank.

To use the power of thunder as a shield!?

If Lin Ming could use the power of thunder to block his Purple Flame Bone Lance, then that proved that Lin Ming's thunder origin energy fusion compatibility had reached an extremely high level. It was enough to break his Yin Qi and threaten him.

Chapter 258 – Strike of Thunder

Chapter 258 – Strike of Thunder

…

…

…

"Lin Ming can actually control the power of thunder!"

"He is a thunder-attribute martial artist, this is his hidden card!"

"Look how thick those electric snakes are; that's probably a fifth, or even sixth-grade fusion."

The audience discussed amongst themselves. To the disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys, a thunder-attribute martial artist wasn't too rare. What was rare was a sixth-grade fusion thunder-attribute martial artist.

In the Grand Hall of the Seven Profound Valleys, Mu Qinghong smiled as she looked at the electric snakes that coiled round Lin Ming, "This little kid actually waited until the finals to use the power of thunder."

At this point, she was completely positive of Lin Ming's identity. According to the description from Mu Qianyu, Lin Ming's symbol was his power of thunder. Mu Qianyu speculated that Lin Ming's thunder origin energy fusion compatibility was no less amazing than hers – it was seventh-grade or above!

This was simply a monstrous talent!

Regardless of whether it was Lin Ming’s martial intent or his combat ability that allowed him to jump realms when fighting, just his talent in thunder-attribute origin energy was enough for a large sect to raise him with massive amounts of resources.

Mu Qinghong shot a glance at Shi Zongtian sitting by her side. He didn’t seem to have any special reaction. Mu Qinghong’s mouth curved in a smile. If Shi Zongtian knew that Lin Ming controlled a Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder level Thunder Soul, then he probably would be shocked out of his seat.

In the center of the martial stage, Lin Ming’s entire body was wrapped in electric snakes. His hair wantonly danced in the wind; he looked just like a demonic war god that crashed down from the heavens in a hail of thunderous fury.

“The power of thunder is the absolute counter to ghosts and Yin energy. Every time you use your Acacia Faction’s cultivation methods, the crying ghosts you produce will be restrained by my power. I’d like to see just how you’ll stop this!”

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a cold light, and the lightning twined endlessly around his body in a dazzling purple visual display, he was just like a purple sun!

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Lin Ming instantly reached the limit of his speed!

On the martial stage, Lin Ming soared around, a series of shadows following in his wake. In every shadow, there were purple arcs of thunder that sparkled within!

Zi zi zi!

The savage power of thunder was like a vorpal sword as it stabbed towards Ouyang Zifeng.

Zheng!

Ouyang Zifeng pulled out his treasure sword from the snake skin scabbard. This treasure sword was four feet long and completely blood red.

Ouyang Zifeng had drawn his sword!

Ouyang Zifeng believed in his own ability. There was only one person who had managed to force him to draw his sword, and that was at the finale of the battle. But now, Lin Ming had managed to do so in just one move, and Ouyang Zifeng was unable to shoulder the result. Not to mention not drawing his sword, even if he did, he might not be able to block this strike.

Ouyang Zifeng also rushed forwards at the limit of his speed. The sharp sword and power of thunder collided again and again in fiercely brutal strikes!

Peng peng peng!

The audience could only see the blurred shadows of two people, and the flashing of purple lightning on the stage!

“What’s happening onstage? Who’s winning?”

“I don’t know. Since Lin Ming can force Ouyang Zifeng to draw his sword, then he has some ability. Lin Ming shouldn’t be much inferior to Ouyang Zifeng. He might be able to persist for some time.”

“Inferior? Persist for some time? You think that our 36 countries’ Lin Ming is inferior? You idiot, just wait and see, Ouyang Zifeng is nothing but a side dish!”

The one who refuted was a martial artist from the 36 countries. These past days, the martial artists of the 36 countries had been bullied by the Seven Profound Valleys. Now that they had an opportunity to be proud and gloat, they naturally would not miss it.

“Humph. It’s too early for you to be happy. Even if Ouyang Zifeng cannot defeat Lin Ming, they won’t differ by much. Wait for our direct disciples to go onstage and then you will know what it means to despair!”

Hearing the title of the seven direct disciples, the martial artist from the 36 countries couldn’t say anything. The seven direct disciples were simply too formidable. Even though he had full confidence in Lin Ming, he didn’t believe Lin Ming could defeat them. The martial artist mumbled some more trash talk and then no longer spoke.

On the martial stage, Ouyang Zifeng was only defending, not attacking at all. It wasn’t that he didn’t want to go on the offensive, it was that he couldn’t. Any Yin Qi that he gathered around him was instantly dispelled by the lightning shocks. In this fierce battle, his true essence reserves were quickly depleting.

“This fellow is releasing so much power of thunder, his energy consumption rate has to be higher than mine. As long as I can last a bit longer, the one who loses won’t be me!”

Ouyang Zifeng had just thought of this idea when Lin Ming suddenly sarcastically said, “You can only hide? I’m waiting for your so-called ‘hidden card’. If you don’t use it now, you might not have the opportunity to use it later.”

Lin Ming’s right hand suddenly formed into a fist. Thick purple electric snakes completely gathered on his fast, forming a blinding purple light. 5000 vibrating true essence filaments violently surged outwards, interweaving with the power of thunder and transforming into a deep purple.

This was the union of Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist and the power of thunder!

“Insolence!” Ouyang stimulated his true essence, and a purple flame shot up his longsword. The wails of ghosts emitted from the sword blade.

“Nether Strike!”

Ouyang Zifeng suppressed the numb feeling that the power of lightning was causing and stabbed out with his sword. A horrible-looking ghost face appeared on the purple flaming blade piercing towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming didn’t even glance at it, he only punched out.

Bang!

5000 pure purple vibrating true essence filaments rushed forwards like vicious Purple Flood Dragons. They crashed into the ghostly face, directly shredding it to bits!

Right after, the purple thunder-imbued true essence broke open Ouyang Zifeng's protective Yin Qi, and then sunk into his body, overwhelming him.

Ouyang Zifeng's body shook, and he vomited a mouthful of blood. He was sent soaring back dozens of feet into the air, tumbling back even after he landed. He was finally able to barely stop himself as he knelt down on his knees, propping himself up with his sword and wiping the blood from his mouth.

In that moment, Ouyang Zifeng felt as if his entire body was being torn apart; he almost thought he would die.

Lin Ming stretched out his hand, and purple true essence ran out from Ouyang Zifeng's body, returning to his hand. After he had absorbed the Purple Blood Dragon Divine Thunder, he had gained the ability to consciously imbue his true essence with the power of thunder. Of course, he could also contain the power of thunder within his Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist.

“Lin Ming, victory!”

The referee Elder looked deeply at Lin Ming as he announce the result. If Lin Ming could defeat Ouyang Zifeng, that proved he had an enormous chance to reach the top 10!

For a 16 year old boy from the 36 countries, this was a result that both shocked and terrified everyone.

Lin Ming turned around to leave the martial stage.

Lin Ming fought Ouyang Zifeng for a short period of time, but ultimately Lin Ming won by overwhelming superior power.

"Ouyang Zifeng was also defeated! Will a country bumpkin martial artist from the 36 countries really reach the top ten rankings!?"

"This fellow already injured Ouyang Zifeng's little brother Ouyang Ziyun at Desert Flower Hall, to the point where he couldn't participate in the competition. Now he has defeated Ouyang Zifeng. He is really bullying them to the extreme, his bullying has even reached their front door!"

Seeing the chances of Lin Ming reaching the top 10 increase, many disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys were either unwilling or unconvinced of seeing this happen. Most of them had been born in the Seven Profound Valleys; they had an innate sense of superiority and looked down on martial artists from the 36 countries and 16 martial families.

But now, they had been eliminated and yet there was some damn boy from the 36 countries that actually wanted to compete for the top 10. This was just like a Crown Prince who was suddenly slapped by an upstart brat that came from a village.

It had to be known that being in the top 10 of the Total Faction Martial Meeting meant great honor and enormous rewards. This also meant that later they would obtain the valuable resources and vigorous support of the sect. This was a situation that many disciples longed for in their dreams.

If they could become a core disciple, not only would their cultivation grow by leaps and bounds, but they would be able to freely choose from the beautiful female disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys. Perhaps because of true essence tempering their bodies, a female martial artist with martial talent would have an exquisite beauty. Especially the disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys' Mirage Faction and Zither Faction; their beauty was simply startling and much more charming and alluring than those rouge covered women of the common land.

They wouldn't mind or say anything if one of the seven direct disciples or a core disciple was in the top 10, but now a country bumpkin martial artist from the 36 countries also wanted to reach the top 10.

The top 10 ranking disciples were destined to enter the Total Faction and qualify as core disciples. These disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys could only think that in the future, Lin Ming would divide their resources and enjoy their women, how could they swallow this feeling?

This was called envy, jealousy, hatred, and was the best way to portray the current feelings running through their hearts.

“Just wait. His climb up won’t last much longer. The Acacia Faction’s direct disciple Ouyang Ming is good friends with Ouyang Zifeng. He will definitely help Ouyang Zifeng return this favor. If Lin Ming is seriously injured, I want to see just how he will struggle for the top 10.”

Those that were eliminated by a direct disciple could only curse in their hearts and accept their fate. The Seven Profound Valleys’ disciples hoped that Lin Ming would be so injured that he couldn’t fight again.

After Lin Ming left, the referee announced the next match – Jiang Lanjian against Sun Lin.

With this, the entire audience began to seethe with excitement. This was in stark contrast to the tepid reaction that Lin Ming had received a moment ago. In the Seven Profound Valleys, Jiang Lanjian’s reputation was no less than those of the seven direct disciples. There were also many people that thought he was superior to some of the weaker direct disciples. For instance, they believed he was stronger than the Refiner Faction’s Han Yanluo, or the Array Faction’s Fang Qi.

After all, the Refiner Faction and Array Faction had to spend a massive amount of time and effort on their auxiliary skills. Their cultivation methods weren’t as powerful in terms of combat; they were best applied towards refining and array formations. Because of this, they could not compare to Jiang Lanjian who walked the path of swordsmanship and pursued the strongest offensive power.

Jiang Lanjian walked onstage. He wore the black clothes he constantly wore, and he carried a three foot six inch treasure sword. As he stood at the center of the martial stage, it was as if he were a bright sword, gleaming cold and emitting a threatening combative air!

Jiang Lanjian’s opponent Sun Lin was from the Refiner Faction. He was the second ranked disciple of the Refiner Faction’s younger generation, only inferior to the direct disciple, Han Yanluo.

Sun Lin had participated in the last Total Faction Martial Meeting and had reached rank 22.

Now, his cultivation had increased and he entered the finals undefeated. During this Martial Meeting he would undoubtedly reach the top 20. He even had some hopes of reaching the top 10.

“Sword Faction disciple Jiang Lanjian, please advise.” Regardless of who he faced, Jiang Lanjian would always perform a polite sword ceremony before a match.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Jiang, please advise. I’ve made enormous progress these last three years, I won’t be so easy to deal with.” Sun Lin smiled as he said this. To maintain a smile in front of Jiang Lanjian was also a form of great self-confidence.

As Sun Lin spoke, he extracted a claymore from his spatial ring. This claymore was colored like burning flames, and was four feet long. As the sword was pulled out from its scabbard, a shimmering flame ignited on the blade, a torrid heat wave rolling outwards. Some of those that were close in the audience couldn’t help but step back.

“Just the heat wave itself has so much power. This Sun Lin is also not ordinary, he might not even be any worse than that Lin Ming from a moment ago.”

“This year’s Total Faction Martial Meeting is truly bursting with talent. Not only are their two talents from the 36 countries and 16 martial families, but even our Seven Profound Valleys’ talents have surpassed the past.”

Chapter 259 – Puppet Faction

Chapter 259 – Puppet Faction

…

…

…

“Look at how scorching hot the flames on Sun Lin’s sword are, maybe his Hollow Flame Essence has already been strengthened to the 1000 year rank! It’s just too abnormal.

A Flame Essence was an immortal fire that would never extinguish, but a Hollow Flame Essence was not. If a Hollow Flame Essence wasn’t augmented with fire origin energy for a long enough period of time, then the Hollow Flame Essence would gradually weaken until it finally withered into nothingness.

Of course, the more powerful a Hollow Flame Essence was, the longer it would take until it began to fade away. As for a weak Hollow Flame Essence, a 1000 year rank meant that it could naturally exist in perpetuity for 1000 years after a supply of fire origin energy was cut off from it.

1000 years was a fairly long period of time; the Seven Profound Valleys only had a heritage of 600 years.

Even for the core disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys who had a massive amount of resources, a Flame Essence was extremely extravagant, to the point of being unattainable. Having a 1000 year rank Hollow Flame Essence was a high honor.

“How many moves do you think it will take for Senior-apprentice Brother Jiang to win?”

“Not sure. I think around 10 moves, or it could even go up to 20!” Although Sun Lin had showed a considerable improvement in strength, the disciples present still favored Jiang Lanjian as before.

………

“Senior-apprentice Brother Jiang! Take my move, Violent Flame Rising Heat!”

On the martial stage, Sun Lin struck out with his most famous technique. The sound of whistling flames and a roaring combustion filled the air, and a rain of crimson flames surged forth from Sun Lin’s blade, covering the skies before rolling towards Jiang Lanjian! What was strange was that these flames didn’t form snakes of fire like normal flames would, but instead condensed into sharp arrows of fire!

“Abyssal Flames, it’s the high-grade human-step Abyssal Flames! Sun Lin actually managed to get his hands on this kind of fire in order to nourish his Hollow Flame Essence!” A disciple of the Refiner Faction couldn’t help but cry out in jealousy as his eyes filled with envy and greed. Obviously, the Abyssal Flames had given him a great shock. This sort of high-grade human-step flame was definitely not something that Sun Lin would have been able to obtain by himself. There was only one possibility: that this was granted to him by the Refiner Faction.

This was the privilege and advantage that a core disciple held. A common disciple would never in a hundred years be given such a high-grade human-step flame to refine into their Hollow Flame Essence.

Facing this crimson rain of fire, Jiang Lanjian was calm as usual as he pulled his longsword out of its scabbard. This deep green blade was three fingers wide, and seemed simple and unthreatening. It was just like a long leek leaf, completely unremarkable.

“Sword to the Cloudy Sky!”

Jiang Lanjian slashed out with his sword, his movements so fast that his hands were nothing but a blur. There was only a green flash of light, as if a green dragon was soaring into the sky!

The sword energy brutally struck the rain of fire arrows, and with a series of popping sounds, the rain of crimson fire vanished in the air!

The aftermath created a brilliant bloom of sparks just like a hail of summer fireworks that obscured the audience's eyes. Before the audience even had a chance to react, Jiang Lanjian's blade shot forth. This blade whistled with a sharp explosive sound as it thrust towards Sun Lin's chest!

"Violent Flame Wall!"

Sun Lin was surprised. He hadn't expected his Violent Flame Rising Heat to injure Jiang Lanjian, but he also hadn't expected his move to be so easily broken. As Sun Lin retreated in a panic, he threw up walls of flame that surrounded him.

Hu hu hu!

Three consecutive walls of flame rose into the air in front of him, each more vibrant than the last. Massive tongues of crimson flames shot out dozens of feet into the sky!

"Break!"

Jiang Lanjian slashed out with his longsword, and the sword energy cut straight through with a peerless momentum, completely dividing all three flame walls and even the martial stage! Jiang Lanjian slashed out one more time with his sword, and all of the flames were then blown out by the sword wind!

Jiang Lanjian's speed instantly peaked to the extreme; in the next moment, a green form had already appeared in front of Sun Lin.

Sun Lin's face instantly paled!

Sword light rose up!

Peng!

Sun Lin’s bodily true essence protection was broken, and he was sent flying off stage, his face pallid.

Once Jiang Lanjian had approached him, Sun Lin didn’t have any chances of being able to resist. After all, he was just a disciple of the Refiner Faction. Although he used a sword, he couldn’t be considered a swordsman. His sword was more of an instrument that was used to display his flame attacks. But Jiang Lanjian was different; his sword was his lifeblood, his most cherished possession and friend. With sword and human united as one, there was no path he could not tread!

“Jiang Lanjian, victory!”

The referee Elder was also surprised. Three sword moves to defeat the enemy. And Sun Lin wasn’t some weakling either, but he had lost so thoroughly!

Jiang Lanjian’s strength was too terrifying. If nothing went wrong, then his strength already surpassed even some of the direct disciples!

It had to be known that he wasn’t even the direct disciple of the Sword Faction.

How powerful was the Sword Faction’s number one master of the younger generation, Jiang Baoyun?

It was simply unimaginable!

In the audience, the ordinary disciples were shaken with awe. Jiang Lanjian was too formidable. Even the direct disciple of the Array Faction, Fang Qi, had an ugly complexion. If that was Jiang Lanjian’s complete strength that he had displayed a moment ago, then Fang Qi would be able to barely deal with it. But if it wasn’t, then he was in a dangerous situation!

If he, as one of the seven direct disciples, lost to the second ranked disciple of the Sword Faction, then he would lose too much face.

It wasn't only Fang Qi. Ouyang Ming and Huan Xiaodie also weren't looking too well. For now, these two weren't worrying about Jiang Lanjian. Instead, they were thinking about Jiang Baoyun. Although they may not have a grasp on Jiang Lanjian's true strength, the Sword Faction certainly would. If such a fierce disciple like Jiang Lanjian was only the second ranked disciple, then that proved that Jiang Baoyun was stronger than Jiang Lanjian.

"Good! Very good!"

At this time, Ouyang Ming suddenly heard a gloomy cackling voice sound out that made his scalp tingle. He turned his head and saw a razor-thin youth whose body was like a stick of wood, and completely covered in bandages, slyly grinning.

Seeing this dried up mummy suddenly appear at his side, Ouyang Ming felt very uncomfortable. He frowned, "Mugu Buyu, what're you smiling about?"

"Jejejeje, to have such an opponent, why would I not be excited." The mummy stretched out his horrifyingly long tongue to lick his lips, his eyes shining with a strange light. He was just like a dried up vampire that saw a tasty prey, it really made one shudder looking at him.

This mummy had a very strange name. His surname was Mugu, and he was called Buyu. He was not someone from the South Horizon Region, but rather originated from the incomparably far extreme western region. 600 years ago, a man named Mugu Yanzhuo from the extreme western region came to the South Horizon Region's Seven Profound territory through a super long-distance transmission array. This man was the founder of the Seven Profound Valleys' Puppet Faction.

The Puppet Faction was the most mysterious and mystical faction within the Seven Profound Valleys. Every disciple of the Puppet Faction had one last name – Mugu. They never took in disciples that didn't share this name. Although they were a faction of the Seven Profound Valleys sect, in truth, they were more like a family clan.

The number of people within the Puppet Faction was scant even compared to the Zither Faction or Mirage Faction. The Puppet Faction only had a third of the population of either of those two factions.

But still, no other faction dared to look down or underestimate the Puppet Faction. This was because the combat prowess of the Puppet Faction disciples was too varied and powerful, not only that, but they were united in solidarity. During this Total Faction Martial Meeting, the Puppet Faction only sent out two disciples, one Mugu Buyu, and one Mugu Jirong. Both of these disciples had swept past their groups with total victory. Of these two, Mugu Buyu was the direct disciple of the Puppet Faction. His moves and style was strange, peculiar, and his power was unpredictable – it simply could not be measured. Ouyang Ming would rather fight with Jiang Baoyun than deal with this freakish mummy.

Mugu Jirong wasn't much worse, he would definitely be able to firmly reach the top 10. Even the Array Faction's Fang Qi might not be Mugu Jirong's match.

The Puppet Faction was just too strange. Their faction had their beliefs and religion, and they seemed to worship some god that stemmed from the western region, everything they did was shrouded in mystery. Their faction was located a thousand miles away from the Seven Profound Valleys' highest peak, in the depths of the Profound Sky Mountain Range. That area was desolate and uninhabited, and wild packs of mighty vicious beasts roamed everywhere.

The Puppet Faction did not use the resources of the Seven Profound Valleys, and they also didn't turn in any resources to the Seven Profound Valleys. Occasionally, they would use some resources, but they would do so with equal exchange. It could be said that the Puppet Faction was a very strong independent entity that existed within the Seven Profound Valleys. They rarely contacted the other six factions. As for the orders of the Valley Master, they would listen but they might not follow.

Everyone within the Seven Profound Valleys understood one thing, that was that the disciples of the Puppet Faction could not be provoked. This wasn't just because they were powerful or mysterious, but they were extremely serious in concealing their flaws.

If the Sword Faction was the most powerful offensive faction within the Seven Profound Valleys, then the Puppet Faction was the most difficult to deal with. No one wished to fight them. This wasn't only because of their strange abilities, but moreover, once you were killed, there was a very high chance you would be turned into a puppet.

This was the reason why even someone as prominent and glorious as Ouyang Ming felt creeped out and his scalp tingle when he saw Mugu Buyu. He knew that the bag that Mugu Buyu carried with him was made from the skin of a Xiantian realm master, and that there was also a human puppet sleeping within that was made from the corpse of a peak Houtian realm master.

"Jiang Baoyun, you have bad luck now."

Mugu Buyu licked his lips as he looked at Jiang Baoyun. As Ouyang Ming saw this, he felt gleeful. Ouyang Ming didn't have full confidence he could defeat Jiang Baoyun. And against this freakish fellow who didn't seem like a human or a ghost, he was even less sure. If these two fought and wounded each other, that would be the happiest win-win situation for him.

After Jiang Lanjian's match, three consecutive direct disciples went on stage. All of them were able to defeat their opponents in three moves or less. At this time, the atmosphere of the martial artists in the audience was reaching a furious climax.

The seven direct disciples had a sky-high popularity. As Qin Wuxin walked on stage, the martial field resounded with shouts and cries from lovestruck men.

"Qin Wuxin will win!"

"Senior-apprentice Sister Qin, you can do it!"

"Senior-apprentice Qin, I love you!"

………………………

All sorts of loud and chaotic sounds and voices echoed, but Qin Wuxin only held her zither as she stood there, simply unaffected by her surroundings. She was wearing a pure white dress, and as a cool wind breezed past her, it sent her dress fluttering in the wind. From top to bottom, she emitted an otherworldly aura.

Her opponent was Jing Chanyu. Jing Chanyu's face was covered with the veil like before, and she was wearing a bright yellow dress, looking like a quiet untouched beauty.

As these two beauties with different styles stood together, it naturally attracted the attention of many, many, many men. To them, the fight itself was less important than being able to see two such exquisite women.

"You are not my match." Qin Wuxin said with indifference.

"I know. But since I've entered the first tier, I naturally will not miss the opportunity to fight the direct disciples." Jing Chanyu proudly raised her head. Although she had been completely defeated by Fang Qi, she still wasn't depressed. She was confident that in the future she would be able to catch up with them a step at a time, until she finally surpassed them.

But now, what she wanted to know was just how wide the gap was between them and her.

"Then... let me fulfill your wish!" Qin Wuxin said with a impassive expression. "Listen to the melody of my zither."

Her delicate fingers touched upon the long strings of her zither, and heavenly notes began to flow forth like a mountain stream, resonating in the air.

Chapter 260 – Allow Me Three Moves?

Chapter 260 – Allow Me Three Moves?

…

…

…

The sweet dulcet tones of the zither echoed crisply onstage. Even those people that were sitting in the Seven Profound Valleys' Grand Hall were able to clearly hear the melody.

"Why the hell would I want to listen to your zither music!?" Jing Chanyu coldly snorted and sealed off her ears with true essence.

She didn't need to be a genius to know that there was something strange about this zither music. Jing Chanyu pushed her true essence to the extreme. Facing someone like Qin Wuxin, she had to have the mindset of going all out from the start, otherwise even the smallest chance of resisting would slip through her fingers.

The thick yellow defensive barrier surrounded her. Jing Chanyu hadn't even moved. Her palm was like a saber, she was preparing to use the Halcyon Reflection Great Wisdom Palm. This was also the strongest instant martial skill in her repertoire.

However, just as she was ready to strike out, her body suddenly froze. Her eyes opened incredibly wide. The absolute defense that she was proud of and had poured all of her true essence into suddenly began to inexplicably crack. A single crack had just appeared, and then it instantly covered her entire defense.

Peng!

There was a loud shattering sound, and her tenacious defensive shell was shattered like brittle glass thrown to the floor. Particles of her lingering true essence began to float down.

Jing Chanyu was shocked. Her true essence protection was broken and yet she hadn't even been attacked. She didn't even know what sort of attack was used to shatter her defense. All she could hear were the tempting melodies still ringing in her ears, just like a gentle mountain stream; there wasn't a hint of murderous intent at all. But yet her defensive barrier had instantly cracked like an elephant stepping on a fragile eggshell.

Did the attack come from the gentle zither sounds?

"I… I admit defeat!" Jing Chanyu closed both her eyes and bitterly smiled.

She had only wanted to see how great the disparity was between them, but now it seemed as if she wasn't even able to estimate the gap.

From the beginning to the end, Qin Wuxin had only inadvertently glanced at her, there weren't even any true essence fluctuations from her body! Although Jing Chanyu knew that she would definitely lose, she didn't imagine she would lose in a way where she hadn't even been able to perceive her opponent's attack.

"Qin Wuxin, victory!"

The referee announced with no suspense.

Lin Ming inhaled a deep breath of cold air. This Qin Wuxin was simply too terrifying.

Lin Ming had an extremely formidable perception, he was able to keenly capture each and every true essence fluctuation in the air. Qin Wuxin's precision and control of her true essence was enough to make his blood boil! It was simply outrageous!

Even though Lin Ming knew Flow like Silk, and had achieved a nuanced level of control over his true essence, he had to admit that even he couldn't achieve something like what Qin Wuxin did.

Qin Wuxin had fused true essence into her sound waves and focused the full force of that to attack Jing Chanyu's protective barrier, instantly crushing it. Her true essence didn't even have the least bit of spillover, so Jing Chanyu hadn't been injured. Most people probably wouldn't even have noticed anything strange.

"The Zither Faction's cultivation method really surprised me!" Lin Ming knew that a sound wave was in truth a form of vibration. If true essence was contained in the sound wave, that meant that the true essence would vibrate!

This was achieving the exact same result as the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' Flow like Silk, but only with a different method!

Flow like Silk was to adjust the breathing rate of all the tiny units in the body and cause one's true essence to vibrate.

But the Zither Faction's cultivation method was to integrate true essence to the acoustic vibrations, and achieve the effect of true essence vibration along the sound waves.

From this point, the Zither Faction's cultivation method manual was far inferior to the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians'. But to a certain extent, the Zither Faction's cultivation method was able to achieve a similar effect to Flow like Silk, for instance, ignoring all defensive barriers.

Lin Ming had used a fist to crush Jing Chanyu's defensive barrier.

Qin Wuxin was the same!

"I really can't underestimate the heroes of the world. Sky Spill Continent still has an inheritance of tens of thousands of years, naturally, countless geniuses must have emerged! Although they are far less profound and formidable than the Realm of the Gods', they aren't much worse in certain aspects!

As Lin Ming was thinking, he hadn't noticed that the first round of the finals was over, and the second round was soon beginning.

As for the first match, Lin Ming was in it.

“First match, Lin Ming against Fang Qi!”

When the referee announced the names of the contestants for the first match, Lin Ming was surprised. Fang Qi was one of the seven direct disciples. Although he knew that the direct disciples of the Array Faction and Refiner Faction were the weakest of the seven, for better or worse he was still a direct disciple. He hadn’t imagined that of the 29 matches, he would encounter a direct disciple on the second round.

Thinking this, Lin Ming wryly smiled and shook his head. This was normal. After all, he wasn’t a seeded player so there was no way he would be left for the finals.

In his first few matches, he would inevitably run into direct disciples or someone on the level of Jiang Lanjian. Relatively speaking, starting out with Fang Qi was pretty nice too.

Fang Qi smiled as he looked at Lin Ming. “We missed each other in the group stage, but in the end, we play against each other in the second round. Your luck is quite bad to meet me here. It’s already quite good that you can maintain your string of undefeated victories up to now. This round, there are only 15 people left that can claim total victory. Of course, your lucky run must now come to an end.

Lin Ming cheekily smiled, flashing his brilliant white teeth. “I think I’m quite lucky. I ran into you instead of someone good, like Jiang Baoyun or Ouyang Ming. This situation isn’t too bad.”

As soon as Fang Qi heard Lin Ming’s taunt, his face immediately sank. He admitted that he was inferior to Jiang Baoyun and those like him, but even so, it wasn’t up to some rural martial artist bumpkin from the 36 countries like Lin Ming to provoke him. Just what sort of qualifications did he have to look down on him?

“Good! What an extremely arrogant tone! I had been prepared to show you some mercy on behalf of us having been in the same group, but now that you have so much confidence, don’t blame me if you are severely wounded!” Fang Qi coldly snorted, his feet moved, and then he appeared onstage.

The audience immediately roared with cheers and cries. In order to increase their momentum, the disciples of the Array Faction had even drawn up miniature voice amplifying array formations to increase the loudness of their cheers. This sort of small array formation was a piece of cake even for the minor Array Faction disciples. Naturally, Fang Qi’s cheers directly impacted into the sky, it wouldn’t be an exaggeration to call them earth-shaking.

“Fang Qi! Fang Qi!”

“Fang Qi, you gotta win!”

Especially those disciples that were envious, jealous, and hateful of Lin Ming having the qualifications to compete for the top 10. These disciples were shouting out until their throats were sore.

“Kill him! Destroy him!”

“Ruin that loser!”

“Down with the country hick!”

This was the superiority of home field advantage. Standing on stage, Lin Ming had become public enemy number one. The weak cheers that came from the 36 countries’ martial artists soon passed; even though they also came from the 36 countries, over 90% of them didn’t believe that Lin Ming could win. The power, prestige, and fame that the title of direct disciple had acquired over time was just too heavy. Even Qin Ziya had a solemn expression, he hadn’t thought that Lin Ming would encounter a direct disciple so soon.

At this moment, a true essence sound transmission rang in Lin Ming’s ear, “You have to defeat him, please!”

Lin Ming turned around and was surprised to see the veiled Jing Chanyu standing 200 feet away, looking at him with wide eyes, full of hope and expectation for him. Lin Ming smiled, and glanced at the audience. He saw that many of martial artists from the 36 countries were staring at him, their fists tightly clenched, a similar look of hope and desire coloring their face.

They didn't cheer loudly like the disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys, but were instead quietly sitting there with fists gripped tight. Maybe it wasn't because they didn't want to cheer, but rather because they didn't have the energy and confidence to.

The martial artists from the 36 countries had an inferiority complex that was beat into their bones – it simply could not be erased!

The foundation and resources of the 36 countries were scarce, 90% of their resources had to be delivered as tribute to the Seven Profound Valleys!

How many martial artists had ended up with hidden wounds in their body because they couldn't afford or find the medicinal herbs to cure themselves, and finally ended up a lifelong cripple?

How many artists had risked their lives hunting vicious beasts in the jungle in order to obtain a few dozen taels of gold? How many were hunting for those basic vicious beast materials that the disciples of these large sects would never care for?

Because of lack of heritage and legacy, how many martial artists ended up practicing subpar second-rate inferior cultivation methods?

How many martial artists, in order to reach that fabled Pulse Condensation realm had struggled for a lifetime, only to end up with nothing but despair!?

And yet, the martial artists of the Seven Profound Valleys were born with a superior advantage. They ate rare spirit vegetables and high-quality vicious beast meat that ordinary martial artists could only dream of. They had the best treasures, they had pure true essence stones, they could study the core inheritances that came from a large sect, they had the top cultivation methods, they had medicinal herbs aiding and tempering their bodies since birth as well as all sorts of miracle medicines at their disposal.

Even if they were stupid like pigs, and spent each day lazing around like gluttons and doing nothing at all, by the virtue of their birth they could easily reach at least the Pulse Condensation period!

The Seven Profound Valleys' direct disciples were the pinnacle existence of these characters, and also their representatives.

This battle against Fang Qi represented not just Lin Ming, but all of the hopes and dreams of the martial artists from the 36 countries who felt inferiority in their bones. Lin Ming was their weapon to declare war on the direct disciples!

The reason these disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys were cheering like crazed madmen was because they hoped that Fang Qi would maliciously destroy Lin Ming. In their hearts, the martial artists of the 36 countries were nothing but beggars begging for alms. How could they tolerate these martial artists surpassing them? How could they tolerate these martial artists stepping on them, violating their inborn sense of superiority and dignity?

Lin Ming took a deep breath and his expression became earnest, filled with a righteous solemnity. Not too long ago, he had been one of these common martial artists. If he hadn't accidently experienced a massive twist of luck, then he might also be risking his life to hunt dangerous vicious beasts in the jungle. He would also be practicing with all his mind and heart only to leave hidden wounds in his body. He wouldn't even have a decent cultivation method!

"This match, I will absolutely win. Not only I win, I will win with force, so that I can take back all the wrongs that have been done to the martial artists of the 36 countries! This is our justice!"

Lin Ming clenched his fists, and the tiny units within his body began to resonate together. 5000 vibrating true essence filaments condensed on his fist, perfectly melding with the power of thunder.

At this time, the referee hadn't even announced the start of the match.

Fang Qi noticed true essence fluctuating on Lin Ming's body. He laughed and said, "Are you nervous? Whatever you are planning in advance will not change the end result. In fact, you don't even need to prepare. After the match starts, I will allow you three moves! You will have plenty of time to do whatever you want."

Lin Ming icily said, "I do not need anything from you."

"Haha, facing you country bumpkin martial artists from the 36 countries, if I cannot allow you three moves, then what kind of direct disciple would I be?"

Fang Qi's voice penetrated out to the farthest corners, as if there was a faint array formation helping it. It could even be clearly heard over the deafening cheers of the audience.

"Fang Qi, well done!"

"Give him three moves! Show him the disparity between him and us!"

"This countryside loser needs to go home and eat rice! He wants to reach the top 10? What an idiot! Take a good look at yourself, what sort of qualifications do you think you have?"

Chapter 261 – What They Call Disparity

Chapter 261 – What They Call Disparity

…

…

…

Lin Ming was deaf to all the raucous sounds and cheers around him.

‘Allow me three moves? Good. Then I’ll kindly welcome your generous offer. I’ll see if after these three moves, you still have a chance to make one of your own!’

“Match, start!”

The referee announced the long awaited words that the audience had been hoping for. Lin Ming didn’t instantly move the second the match began. Rather, faint purple-hued true essence twined down his right fist, filling with electric flashes and sparks that crackled in the air. There was even the faint sound of a Flood Dragon’s majestic roar!

Fang Qi smiled, his face completely filled with utter confidence. He reached out his hand and drew a line, and a golden symbol appeared out of thin air. During the group stages, Fang Qi had faced off against the Refiner Faction disciple Zhou Yan, and was able to use this symbol to instantly devour the burning flames that were released.

Fang Qi had plenty of confidence that besides the other abnormal direct disciples, there was no one else capable of breaking it. There was a self-contained independent mini-dimension within that could transfer and contain attacks. Only an extreme force that exceeded its capacity could break it, otherwise, there was no attack that could harm Fang Qi.

The reason that Fang Qi had so carelessly said he would allow Lin Ming three moves was because he relied on this small symbol array. If this small symbol array was able to block all three of Lin Ming's moves, would he still have the face to continue fighting?

Fang Qi was looking forward to that time, and he would thoroughly savor the expression on Lin Ming's face. It would be just like when he had told Jing Chanyu that he would defeat her within five breaths of time. Even though she had resisted as hard as she could, Fang Qi had still stomped down on any resistance she had. To him, this was truly the best feeling.

At this moment in the audience, Jing Chanyu was nervously wringing her hands together. She also recognized this symbol array, and feared that Lin Ming would follow in her footsteps. If this happened, it would be a serious blow towards his self-confidence and heart of martial arts.

Could Lin Ming break open Fang Qi's symbol array and end his curse in three moves? At least, he could make Fang Qi panic and wipe that look of disdain off his face!

Holding that shining symbol array in his hands, Fang Qi laughed and said, "Aren't you ready?"

"I'm waiting for you to prepare!" Suddenly Lin Ming devilishly grinned, and both of his feet tread the floor, the tiles breaking under his feet, his body becoming nothing but a series of shadows!

Lin Ming's right fist contained the vast, indomitable tyranny of the power of thunder. 5000 vibrating true essence filaments surged outwards like 5000 vicious Flood Dragons! The air around his brutal fist began to howl and cry as wind itself was torn apart!

Ka ka ka ka ka ka!

The ground began to shake as swirls of air lifted the shattered debris. Furious waves of true essence plowed a deep groove into the stage floor.

A punch shot out.

A fist to overwhelm the heavens and earth!!!

Facing such an unstoppable momentum, even Fang Qi felt inexplicably weak at heart. But he knew that for better or worse, he was still a direct disciple. This spatial transference array was one of the core techniques of the Array Faction – how could it not block Lin Ming!?

Thinking this, Fang Qi regained his confidence. He flung the golden circle symbol out. In the end, he wasn't too sure, he didn't dare intercept Lin Ming's fist at a close distance.

"Hah!"

Lin Ming loudly shouted and his right fist savagely smashed into the golden symbol array, vibrating true essence erupted!

Kacha!

With an explosive sound, a visible fist energy popped open the golden symbol array just like a foot smashing down on an egg. It was shattered into bits!

Yet the force of Lin Ming's fist hadn't even been reduced, it pounded out towards Fang Qi as before!

Fang Qi completely failed!

How was this possible!?

In a panic, Fang Qi quickly pulled out an array disc from his spatial ring. As this array disc appeared, a brilliant blue light shined outwards.

"Nine Circles of Blue Light Array!"

A solid blue curtain of light fell down in front of Fang Qi, confronting the energy of Lin Ming's fist.

Bang!

5000 vibrating true essence filaments brutally struck against that blue curtain, sinking into each and every inch of its structure. The blue curtain of light flashed for a moment, and then shattered apart.

Although the force of Lin Ming's fist had been greatly reduced, even after shattering the blue light curtain, it still pushed forwards!

Fang Qi was shocked, he bit down on his tongue and forced out some blood essence, spitting it onto the array disc. In that instant, another blue curtain of light fell down, except this one had a faint tint of blood red!

Ka!

Lin Ming's fist energy had been reduced by nearly half. As it smashed down on that blue red-tinged light curtain, there was a loud explosion as half the light curtain broke in half, just barely able to maintain itself.

After creating the light curtains, Fang Qi's face was wan, his blood tumbling within his body. Because he had to forcibly conjure up some blood essence, he had almost vomited blood. Luckily, he had forcefully swallowed it back down at the last moment. After swallowing back this blood, he was feeling even more sick, he looked completely horrible.

Lin Ming's eyebrow arched up, "You managed to block it? A direct disciple truly has considerable ability, then… there are two more moves!"

Listening to Lin Ming's words, Fang Qi's face was ugly like someone had slapped his mom in front of him. He had actually cheaply promised to allow three moves!

Who wanted to take moves from such a freak! Just a fist had driven him into using the Nine Circles of Blue Light Array – he had even used two! Because there wasn't enough time to properly draw the second one, he had been forced to use his blood essence!

A penalty of three moves. If this was a private battle, then he could possibly renege on this promise. But now, all of the disciples of the entire Seven Profound Valleys were watching. As a direct disciple, there was no way that he could do this!

Against these three moves, he had to go all out and block them. Otherwise he wouldn't have the face to stay in the Seven Profound Valleys any longer.

'It doesn't matter. That should have been his strongest strike just now. Since he was forced to use his trump card, his consumption of energy shouldn't have been small. It's most likely that his next strike will be much weaker. Not only that, but because I had to hastily rush out the defensive barrier, I had a shameful performance. If I'm able to prepare in advance, my situation will be much better. If worst comes to pass, then I'll just have to use my hidden card…'

Fang Qi consoled himself like this, and his heart gained a bit of courage.

The entire martial field stadium had turned surprisingly quiet. Those loud and brash disciples that had used array formations to amplify their voices to crazily support Fang Qi did not even utter a sound now. They had thought that Fang Qi would be able to easily block the punch, they didn't expect the end result to be like this.

Although Fang Qi had held back the tumbling blood in his chest and hadn't lost face by vomiting blood, the audience was not comprised of idiots. They naturally saw that Fang Qi had eaten a small loss.

"Damn. Damn it all! Why aren't we cheering? We have to support our Senior-apprentice Brother! Cheers!"

"Yah! This time we have to cheer more. That Lin Ming must have used some secret skill in order to have so much power behind his punch. There is no way he can keep doing that! Senior-apprentice Brother Fang will still win even if he allows three moves!"

"Yes! That's the way! How could Senior-apprentice Brother Fang possibly lose?"

These disciples of the Array Faction roused their strength, and were preparing to cheer out again, when suddenly their voices caught in their throats. Several of the disciples had already shouted, and their strangled cries as they stopped midway were just like a chicken whose neck was being twisted; it was an extremely unbecoming and strange sound.

The reason for this was that on the martial stage, they saw that Lin Ming had gently swiped his spatial ring, and with a flash of white light, a long shining silver spear appeared in his hand!

The Heavy Profound Soft Spear had come out!

“Weapon? He also uses a weapon?”

“Isn’t Lin Ming a fist-using martial artist?”

“Why would he have a weapon!?”

The Array Faction disciples were stupefied. There weren’t many martial artists in the Sky Spill Continent that didn’t use weapons. However it wasn’t too rare. For instance, Grace Venerate Nation’s Jingchan Duo, Jing Chanyu and Jing Chanshi, only used their palms and finger shadows.

They had naturally assumed that Lin Ming was also one of these fist fighting martial artists. Although the attack range was short, fists excelled in flexibility, speed, and accuracy. If used well and supported by a top-tier fist fighting martial skill, it wouldn’t be any worse than using a sword or saber.

But if a martial artist had a weapon, they had most definitely would have spent most of their time cultivating that weapon, a fist would only be secondary.

Could a secondary fist really have such power?

How was this possible!??

It wasn’t!

"He's bluffing!"

A disciple of the Array Faction stubbornly refused to acknowledge this reality. However, no one seemed to believe him. All of the Array Faction disciples had extremely ugly faces. It seemed that their direct disciple Fang Qi had really… screwed himself over this time.

In the contestant waiting area, Ouyang Zifeng stared at the long silver spear in Lin Ming's hand. The corners of his mouth and eyes began to violently twitch. "When I fought him, I still wasn't able to force him to use his weapon?"

Thinking back to when he had taunted Lin Ming about whether he'd be forced to use his sword, he could only ruefully smile.

Because Lin Ming had been regarded as a martial artist of the 36 countries, everyone had looked down on him.

On the martial stage, Fang Qi's face was already red as a rose. He refused to think of why a martial artist from the 36 countries could be such a monstrous freak. Without a care for his status and pride, he continuously placed five Nine Circles of Blue Light Arrays around himself.

Because he had rushed out a Nine Circles of Blue Light Array a moment ago, he had been forced to consume some blood essence. This time, he would not repeat such a humiliating mistake again. He had prepared these Nine Circles of Blue Light Arrays ahead of time.

The Array Faction had always taken their secondary skills as the most important, thus, the strength of their faction's disciples was often inferior to the other factions' disciples. But in terms of defense, they actually surpassed the others.

The defensive strength of an array formation naturally surpassed that of a treasure armor.

Looking at the arrays of blue light shields in front of him, Fang Qi was a bit emboldened.

'You are powerful, but can your spear break through my five array formations?'

But after thinking for a bit, Fang Qi thought it was better to be safe than sorry. He took out a small array flag from his spatial ring and began to infuse true essence into it in advance, so that he could instantly use it later if he needed to. This small array flag was Fang Qi's ultimate technique. Although the defensive power of this array formation was strong, there was still a weakness, and that was that it took time to activate. One needed to prepare in advance.

After placing down a series of array formations, Fang Qi had consumed a great deal of energy. But, he also had a special symbol array that was capable of supplementing his true essence. In a battle of attrition, Fang Qi believed that he had a superior advantage.

At this moment, Lin Ming used his spear!

Foundation Spear Technique, first move – Flood Dragon Goes to Sea!!!!

"Roarrr!!!"

The clarion and staggering roar of a Flood Dragon impacted directly towards the sky. Behind Lin Ming, a magnificent Purple Flood Dragon shadow began to condense. After Lin Ming had absorbed the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, his Flood Dragon Goes to Sea had reached a completely different level. As soon this spear thrust out, it contained the majesty of a boundless dragon!

Coupled with the power of thunder and 5000 vibrating true essence filaments, it truly was capable of sweeping away all! The thick twining purple electric snakes were galvanized by Lin Ming. This spear of Lin Ming contained the great potential of rivers and mountains, it savagely pierced through space!

Peng peng peng!

In the face of the unstoppable onslaught of the spear, three layers of the Nine Circles of Blue Light Array were instantly shredded apart like paper!

Fang Qi's complexion completely changed, he hastily waved the array flag in his hands.

Peng!

A fourth Nine Circles of Blue Light Array shattered into shards; the Heavy Profound Soft Spear marched forwards!

Ka!

The long spear fiercely impacted against the fifth Nine Circles of Blue Light Array. Fang Qi's array flag let out a burst of golden light, and a massive number of golden runes rushed out from the array flag, all printing onto the last Nine Circles of Blue Light Array!

How was this possible!?

Fang Qi watched helplessly as the last Nine Circles of Blue Light Array that was reinforced by the golden array flag still cracked! This small crack was like the face of smiling devil, growing bit by bit!

Chapter 262 – Three Moves To Defeat The Opponent

Chapter 262 – Three Moves To Defeat The Opponent

…

…

…

“Impossible! It’s impossible! There’s no way he can destroy my Golden Light Array Flag!”

Fang Qi grit his teeth and pushed the true essence within his body to the limit. The intense energy caused his hair ribbon to come undone, his hair flailing in the wind, his face distorted like a monster.

And yet, that small crack still continued to expand! The golden light symbols that stuck to the blue curtain of light began to explode one after another.

Peng!

Finally, all the golden runes came crashing down. The fifth curtain of blue light lost the support of the golden runes and was pushed to the breaking point; under the impact of the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, it was smashed apart!

“Ahhh!”

Fang Qi shouted, and used the array flag he was waving to pound down on the Heavy Profound Soft Spear!

The array flag collided with the spear and a visible shockwave of true essence surged out. Fang Qi felt as if he had struck an immutable mountain; an unstoppable force followed through, sending him flying backwards.

The array flag was a top-quality treasure, but the spear was a weapon inherently crafted from rushing towards its enemies. When both fought each other, the result could be imagined!

The only consolation that Fang Qi had was that the forward force of the Heavy Profound Soft Spear had come to a halt, he had barely managed to block the attack.

The true essence aftermath had sent Fang Qi flying backwards. After he landed, he was even forced back several steps to steady his body. But at this time, he didn't have the luxury of not losing face; it was already enough that he was able to receive this move.

Looking at the array flag in his hands, a third of the golden runes had broken to pieces!

Fang Qi felt a bitter heartache. This array flag was called the Golden Light Array Flag, and was a high-grade human-step magic treasure weapon. Not only that, but it was at the top of its kind. Its greatest function was to store these golden runes.

He had drawn these golden runes with painstaking care before the match, they were able to greatly increase the power of array formations. This was also meant be the final card in his hand. He had originally prepared to use it against those abnormal direct disciples like Ouyang Ming or Jiang Baoyun. Of course, Fang Qi didn't believe that he could win against monsters like them, but he didn't want to lose too badly. After all, all of them were direct disciples. If the disparity between them was too great, he wouldn't have lost all his face.

But now in order to fight Lin Ming, he had used up a third of the golden runes. This caused Fang Qi to feel a hopeless grief that was beyond crying.

If Fang Qi was feeling tearless bereavement, then the following few words by Lin Ming made him nauseous to the point of vomiting.

Lin Ming said, “There is still the final move!”

F*ck!

Fang Qi really wanted to slap himself on the cheeks. His damn mouth was just too cheap, he had actually said that he would allow him three moves!

And now, Fang Qi couldn’t back down. If he wasn’t able to take these three moves and instead admit defeat, he would lose any face he had left.

But if he didn’t admit defeat and the golden runes of the Golden Light Array Flag were lost in vain, then he would lose anyway!

How could there have been such a monster in the 36 countries! Was this fellow really human!?

At the contestant waiting area, Jiang Lanjian was staring at Lin Ming with shining wide eyes. Ever since Lin Ming had taken out his Heavy Profound Soft Spear, he had felt threatened!

If Lin Ming was only able to use soul attacks, Jiang Lanjian would never have placed Lin Ming in his eyes. His sword force was able to cut everything to nonexistence. This included the demons of the heart, karmic sins, obsessions, and of course, this also included soul attacks.

It could be said that to a true swordsman, a soul attack was nothing at all.

But now, Lin Ming had actually taken out a spear.

Although he had only used his spear once, that spear contained a peerless momentum that startled even Jiang Lanjian!

Regardless of whether it was a spear or a sword, they all had their own soul. A martial artist would normally only be able to use the physical body of the weapon. But a genuine, true master would be able to fuse the soul of their weapon into their attacks!

When Lin Ming had struck out a moment ago, his spear had contained the potential of the mountains and rivers, and even the prestige and magnificence of a dragon. The power of the spear had broken the five Nine Circles of Blue Light Arrays, and had forced Fang Qi into a critical state.

Especially the prestige of the dragon that was contained within that spear, it had already condensed to the point of manifesting the cry of a dragon! This was enough to make Jiang Lanjian feel ashamed of his own shortcomings.

As they said, sword like jade, saber like tiger, spear like dragon. Lin Ming was so young, and yet he had already achieved the realm of spear like dragon! This could be said to be a talent that defied the will of the heavens!

Jiang Lanjian had once thought he had reached a lofty peak of sword attainments. But now, compared to Lin Ming, he was far inferior.

Jiang Baoyun noticed Jiang Lanjian's strange expression. He smiled and said, "Lanjian, your spirit seems down, this isn't like you."

Jiang Lanjian shook his head, "I was just startled by Lin Ming. Although he's strong, it's not enough to defeat my spirit."

"Haha, that's right, we swordsmen must never let our spirits succumb to pressure." Jiang Baoyun kindly spoke as he patted Jiang Lanjian on the shoulder. Suddenly he thought of something and asked, "Lanjian, do you know how old Lin Ming is?"

"Maybe 17 or 18." Jiang Lanjian speculated. He should be around 17 or 18, it wasn't possible for him to be younger.

"Ha! You guessed wrong. Lin Ming is only 16 years old now, not only that, but he just hit 16 a few days ago!"

"What!?"

The usually staid Jiang Lanjian lost all of his calm and stood up straight.” Just turned 16!? Are you sure?”

“I was able to confirm with a Sword Faction elder. They’ve already begun to move in secret yesterday, they wish to pull Lin Ming into the Sword Faction! Yet, that was only yesterday. Now with today’s performance, I don’t think even the Sovereign will be able to sit still.” Jiang Baoyun was the direct disciple, so he naturally understood matters of the faction.

Jiang Lanjian was startled – this was no trivial matter. Leaving aside Lin Ming’s peak Bone Forging cultivation, which was something he could accept if Lin Ming had a sixth-grade talent.

What he thought most inconceivable was that Lin Ming was accomplished in comprehension of soul attacks, but also deeply skilled in spear powers.

None of this was able to be learnt in a short period of time, yet, he was a boy that had just turned 16 years old. He had practiced martial arts for a mere four years, thoroughly practiced a cultivation method, thoroughly understood soul attacks, and was a spear master; did he have an avatar technique or something?

And what was most terrifying was that Lin Ming had a thunder origin energy fusion compatibility of at least the sixth grade. This really made one disbelieve that a talent like this could exist in the world.

Jiang Baoyun patted Jiang Lanjian’s back, “Well, don’t give up!”

On the martial stage, Fang Qi had placed down five more Nine Circles of Blue Light arrays. It wasn’t that he didn’t want to set down more, it was just that five array formations was the limit that he could control. Not only that, but his true essence was limited, and he had to leave enough true essence to control the Golden Light Array Flag.

Fang Qi had mocked Lin Ming and said he would allow him three moves; this was to let Lin Ming gather his strength. But now the tables had turned and it was Lin Ming who was giving Fang Qi time to lay down his defense.

‘I still have two-thirds of my golden runes left. If I use them up all at once, I’ll be able to block his last strike. As long as I can block it I’ll just have to admit defeat afterwards. Even though I’ll lose, I’ll still be able to keep the last bit of my face.’

Fang Qi already decided to block Lin Ming’s attack at all costs, regardless of what he had to use. The Golden Light Array Flag had already been partially used up anyway, and there was no point in just having a few golden runes left over. It was better to just use them all up at once.

In Fang Qi’s opinion, if one third of the golden runes were able to block Lin Ming’s second move, two thirds of the golden runes were definitely able to block Lin Ming’s third move.

Lin Ming grasped his Heavy Profound Soft Spear horizontally, his forearm touching the base; this was the stance of Iron Bridge Blocks the River.

With this strike, he would not stay his hand.

Zi zi zi zi!

Arcs of lightning as thick as an arm wrapped around the Heavy Profound Soft Spear. Lin Ming’s eyes sparked with a purple light, this was the color of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder.

In those two previous attacks, Lin Ming had accumulated all of his momentum. Now, Lin Ming was just like a spear that was ready to strike out at any point, all of the air around him began to hum as energy rolled off his body.

Puff puff puff!

Fang Qi heard the first layer of Nine Circles of Blue Light Array tremble. This was because of the dangerous aura that Lin Ming was emitting; it was enough to pierce the blue curtain of light and create sound.

Fang Qi's face drained of all blood, this was just momentum that Lin Ming was releasing, and yet it already had this power! Just how terrifying would a frontal attack be!?

He used another third of the golden runes ahead of time and plastered them onto the last layer of Nine Circles of Blue Light. Fang Qi then let out a calm breath. "I don't believe your spear will be able to shatter the last two-thirds of my Golden Light Array Flag's golden runes!"

Once Lin Ming's momentum had reached the pinnacle, in that moment his pupils widened.

Golden Roc Shattering the Void erupted!

The Heavy Profound Soft Spear shot forth like a speeding meteor twisted with lightning. Spear force filled the void, even the air itself ignited.

Lin Ming's soul force touched deep within him, the Heretical God Seed within his heart began to let out piercing cries of excitement!

Heretical God Force – open!

Bang!

After the highly compressed true essence detonated from the Heretical God Seed, a Flood Dragon's shadow once again manifested behind Lin Ming, but this time, it was even more lifelike than the last. Even the purple scales of the dragon were clearly visible! A resonant dragon impacted the sky, washing away all the clouds!

Divine Spear like Dragon!

Puff!

The first Nine Circles of Blue Light Array shattered before the spear point even touched it. It was broken apart by the exceedingly powerful momentum released from the spear!

The second Nine Circles of Blue Light Array had just traced the tip of the spear when it was immediately destroyed. Compared to the first layer, it was even more thoroughly ruined. The spear contained vibrating true essence and the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. To this spear, this defensive array formation was no different from paper!

Puff puff!

The Nine Circles of Blue Light Array began to explode one after another. Fang Qi had no recourse, he immediately pasted all of the golden runes onto the last Nine Circles of Blue Light Array. The entire array formation had turned completely into a bright gold!

Bang!

The Heavy Profound Soft Spear pierced forwards with no flashiness. The intense collision of true essence created a massive true essence shockwave that heaved away all the crushed tiles on the martial stage, sending them scattering in all directions. Even the protective array formation that surrounded the martial stage began to tremble.

The Heretical God Force had been opened. Vibrating true essence had fused with mystic strength of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. This strike was almost Lin Ming's strongest blow!

Ka ka ka!

The final layer of Nine Circles of Blue Light was only able to resist for a few breaths of time. Suddenly, countless cracks began to appear on the golden curtain of light, spreading out just like a spider web!

"How… how is this possible!?!?!?"

This was two-thirds of his golden runes!

Fang Qi had no chance to think anymore. The unstoppable spear light had already cracked open the last Nine Circles of Blue Light Array, heavily striking Fang Qi's chest!

Bang!

As the golden rune burst apart, the fifth and final Nine Circles of Blue Light Array loudly shattered. Fang Qi's body was just like a sack that had been tossed in the air, spitting out blood as he flew backwards.

Three moves to defeat his opponent!

Fang Qi struck the protective circle of the martial stage, bounced to the ground, and fell unconscious.

The entire audience was completely silent.

Jing Chanyu's two small hands were tightly gripped together, her large eyes just like javelins as she stared at Lin Ming, her vision filled with a complex emotion.

She had asked Lin Ming to absolutely win, so that he could obtain justice for all of them. She had hoped he would try his hardest, but in her heart she wasn't sure if Lin Ming had the power to succeed.

But now, he had won. And not only that, he won with an overwhelming victory!

Chapter 263 – Genius of the Spear Path

Chapter 263 – Genius of the Spear Path

…

…

…

"Lin Ming, victory!"

As the referee declared the result, the audience was completely blown away by this unbelievable conclusion. Fang Qi said he would allow Lin Ming three moves, and in the end, he was defeated in three moves…

Especially the disciples of the Array Faction, they looked like overripe eggplants that had been trampled on. Their complexions were simply beyond ugly. They had been counting on Fang Qi to maliciously stomp on Lin Ming, and let these toads known as the country hick martial artists that they would never be able to eat swan meat. They wanted Fang Qi to show them just what true disparity was. They simply never imagined this result, they could hardly accept it.

Fang Qi had been so completely defeated. If it were them, they would no doubt be in an even worse position!

As Lin Ming arrived at the contestant waiting area, he saw a yellow-clothed girl waiting there for him. This girl was Jing Chanyu.

"Thank you." Jing Chanyu said in a hushed tone.

"Fang Qi is someone that I would have to defeat sooner or later. You don't have to thank me."

“Mm, I know…” Jing Chanyu was silent for a moment, not knowing a topic of conversation to bring up. When Lin Ming had unleashed the Flood Dragon shade behind him, and pierced through Fang Qi’s defensive barriers with a single spear thrust, it had left a deep impression on her.

He was simply like a handsome, peerless god of war, shattering all barriers. Unstoppable!

At this moment, Jiang Lanjian walked over. He and Lin Ming barely knew each other.

“Lin Ming!”

“Senior-apprentice Brother Jiang.” Lin Ming cupped his fists together and bowed. Lin Ming had a good impression of Jiang Lanjian. Jiang Lanjian was a swordsman who pursued the path of the blade with all of his heart and soul. With such a person, there was no need to be reserved or guarded.

In many cases, one could determine the basic character of someone from the cultivation method that they practiced. The Seven Profound Valleys contained both good and evil, but no kind and righteous person would cultivate the dark and wicked legacies of the Acacia Faction. But the disciples of the Sword Faction and Zither Faction were mostly conscientious and virtuous people, they could be considered good people. At least, they weren’t the type that would stab you behind the back. Even if they thirsted for your blood, they would be honest. Otherwise, if their heart was not right, then their Sword Heart or Zither Heart would never reach the stage of Perfection.

“Lin Ming, you just turned 16 years old?” Although he had just heard this news from Jiang Baoyun’s own mouth, Jiang Lanjian had to personally confirm it. This new information had simply been too shocking.

Hearing this question and seeing Lin Ming not answer, Jing Chanyu was suddenly startled. He had just reached 16 years of age!? She unconsciously covered her small mouth with her tender hands, her large eyes blinking as she stared disbelievingly at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming didn't hesitate, he directly nodded to acknowledge the claim. After all, this was something that he couldn't conceal. As long as the Seven Profound Valleys wanted to check up on him, they could investigate all the generations of his family with ease.

Although his age was a bit too suspicious, Lin Ming didn't worry. The more outstanding one's talent was, the more valuable they would be to the Seven Profound Valleys, and the more resources they could earn.

Looking at a broader view, even if he exposed too many of his powers and some people began to have dark intentions towards him, he could still stand behind Divine Phoenix Island. If he did, these people who harbored evil intentions could do nothing at all.

Lin Ming believed that Mu Qianyu might not necessarily care about him, but he believed that she would help him if he was in a time of dire trouble.

Seeing Lin Ming nod in affirmation, Jing Chanyu gasped.

She was already considered young within all the martial artists that entered the Total Faction Martial Meeting. But she was still two months from reaching 18 years of age. She thought that Lin Ming was similar to her, at most a few months or half a year younger, but she never thought that he would actually only be 16 years old!

A 16 year old boy had participated in the Total Faction Martial Meeting, and also defeated the direct disciple Fang Qi in three moves.

What sort of terrifying result was that?

Even if it were a direct disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys like Jiang Baoyun or Ouyang Ming, they still wouldn't have such strength at 16 years of age!

Jing Chanyu thought the more she knew of Lin Ming, the less she understood him. Lin Ming was like a massive iceberg, one could only see the tip from the sky. You would only see that insignificant portion of him, without realizing the truly terrifying ability that lay beneath.

Jiang Lanjian took a deep breath, then earnestly and seriously looked at Lin Ming. He recalled the time when he had judged Lin Ming in Desert Flower Hall, saying that if he and Lin Ming were the same level, then there was no way that Lin Ming could be his match… he had never imagined that with just a peak Bone Forging cultivation, Lin Ming was already strong enough to threaten him!

But most importantly, Lin Ming was just too young. Even Jiang Lanjian who had reached Large Success of the Sword Heart began to feel helpless. How many years had Lin Ming practiced the spear? He hadn't even practicing the spear for the entire time, and yet his spearmanship had already surpassed his own swordsmanship.

"Lin Ming, I'm looking forward to our match!" Jiang Lanjian vigorously exclaimed.

Lin Ming smiled, "We'll fight soon enough."

Jiang Lanjian turned around and left, leaving behind a slack-jawed Jing Chanyu.

Jing Chanyu didn't know what to say at this time. She clearly knew that in the future, Lin Ming would at least become a direct disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys. If the trend of his growth continued, he would easily reach the Xiantian stage, and he might even have an extremely high chance to aim for the Revolving Core realm!

It had to be known that there was only a single Revolving Core master in the entire Seven Profound Valleys. Not only that, but this master was only at the early Revolving Core realm.

If Lin Ming was able to reach the Revolving Core realm, then he most likely wouldn't be some ordinary Revolving Core master. He was likely to be the most powerful being within the entire Seven Profound territory, he might even become the Elder Ancestor of the Seven Profound Valleys!

As Jing Chanyu thought this, her heartbeat began to rise. Was she actually standing next to someone who would control the fate of the entire Seven Profound territory in the future?

Although Jing Chanyu knew she would have endless benefits and advantages if she befriended someone like Lin Ming, she had never done this type of thing before and approached someone unfamiliar on her own initiative. She didn't know how she should proceed from this point.

In fact, putting national interests aside, Jing Chanyu quite wanted to know Lin Ming on a more personal, intimate level. But how should she even begin?

At this moment, Qin Xingxuan and Qin Ziya walked over to Lin Ming.

When Lin Ming had heroically defeated Fang Qi on the martial stage, Qin Xingxuan had felt a precocious jolt within her young heart. Especially when Lin Ming had struck out that last spear and continuously shattered all five Nine Revolutions of Blue Light Arrays, sending Fang Qi soaring backwards and spitting blood. At this moment, just remembering that scene, Qin Xingxuan felt goosebumps rise on her arms and her mind surge with emotion.

"Lin Ming, did you consume too much energy?" Qin Ziya asked as he took out a small jade bottle. "This is an Essence Fusing Pill, it's able to help restore your strength and improve your condition."

Qin Ziya feared that Lin Ming's second round would be affected, so he didn't hesitate in taking out an Essence Fusing pill that cost several true essence stones. This was a restorative pill and therefore didn't contain pill toxins, one could eat them as they liked.

Lin Ming nodded, he really did need to supplement his own energy reserves. The Heretical God Force had already been used up, and he needed time to compress true essence again. Although the current restoration rate of the Heretical God Force was very quick, he would also need to hurry as fast as he could if he wanted to be able to fully utilize the Heretical God Force during the next round.

Lin Ming immediately took the pills, sat down cross-legged on a cushion, and entered the ethereal martial state to recover.

Suddenly, there was only Qin Ziya, Qin Xingxuan, and Jing Chanyu left.

Qin Xingxuan revealed a well-mannered smiled towards Jing Chanyu, politely saying, “Miss Jing, this is our first time meeting. My name is Qin Xingxuan, I am Lin Ming’s friend.”

Jing Chanyu forced a courtesy smile in return, somewhat embarrassed. She saw that Qin Xingxuan seemed to be around 15 or 16 years old, and was most likely Lin Ming’s girlfriend. Jing Chanyu didn’t want Qin Xingxuan to misunderstand; she only wanted to get to know Lin Ming, there was no other motive.

“I see, so it’s Miss Qin. It’s very nice to meet you.” Jing Chanyu bowed. Although she was someone who focused on cultivation, Jing Chanyu was a young girl in the end, and also had the thoughts of a young girl. Seeing Qin Xingxuan, she unconsciously compared herself to her.

Jing Chanyu thought that her looks weren’t any less than Qin Xingxuan’s. Both of them had different good points in their temperament. Her talent wasn’t inferior to Qin Xingxuan, or at least, there was no clear winner between them, but… Qin Xingxuan was much younger than her. This was something that she couldn’t change…

Jing Chanyu sighed, somewhat defeated. She said, “Chanyu bids farewell.”

“Mm. Miss Jing, please take care.” Qin Xingxuan bowed back and watched Jing Chanyu leave.

Qin Ziya smiled as he watched this interaction, shaking his head. “Xingxuan, let’s go. This is the contestant waiting area, it’s not appropriate for us to stay here too long.”

“Mm, okay.” Qin Xingxuan nodded.

As she was leaving, she couldn’t help but glance back at Lin Ming one more time. At this moment, Lin Ming had already completely entered into the ethereal martial intent state, and wasn’t aware of anything happening around him. During this state, Lin Ming’s consciousness was in meditation. Unless there was imminent danger, he wouldn’t feel anything at all.

………………………

In the Grand Hall of the Seven Profound Valleys, Mu Qinghong smiled as she watched Lin Ming meditate in the contestant waiting area. This was the ethereal martial intent that Qianyu had informed her about. If she hadn't been told ahead of time, then she really wouldn't have been able to detect anything out of place.

"He's used the power of thunder, and now he's even used his spear. This little boy still has the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder in his hand, I simply have no idea what could force him to use it.

"Qianyu's judgment is too good. Not to mention Lin Ming's high-grade thunder origin energy fusion compatibility or the skill at which he can use his soul force, just the momentum of his spear is far beyond any martial artist of the same level. His spear force is like a mountain, his spear might is like a dragon; it's just unbelievable that someone so young could reach this point. This is simply an overwhelmingly monstrous perception! That Jiang Baoyun also isn't too bad, but the results of his swordsmanship just cannot surpass Lin Ming. Jiang Baoyun is someone who cultivates the sword path with all his heart, but he's also older than Lin Ming by several years. In this aspect, the disparity between them is too great."

Everyone, including Mu Qianyu, thought that Lin Ming was a once in a millennia rare and gifted spear genius and soul force genius, his perception was just ridiculously high to the point of being preposterous.

What they didn't know was that Lin Ming's soul force attacks all relied on his Samsara martial intent.

As for his spear force like mountain, that was because of his extreme Yang and extreme light 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians', which also contained the power of the rivers and mountains.

As for his spear might like dragon, that was even simpler. Not only did Lin Ming absorb the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, but his body also contained the blood of a True Dragon. If he could not achieve spear might like dragon, then there might not be anyone else in this world who could.

Mu Qinghong shot a glance at Shi Zongtian by her side. She saw that Shi Zongtian seemed calm, but his eyes shined with light. It was unknown what he was thinking.

Mu Qinghong smirked, she was more or less able to deduce Shi Zongtian's thoughts. His Seven Profound Valleys had suddenly produced a monstrous talent of the highest level, and yet this talent was suddenly being eyed by her Divine Phoenix Island.

Shi Zongtian was swayed by his own feelings and desires for his sect, and the advantages and disadvantages. He was simply unable to calm down. He even feared that his own prior promises were useless.

Mu Qinghong expected that Shi Zongtian would quickly circulate this news to the Seven Profound Valleys' Elder Ancestor. A genius of this level was already enough to be brought to the Elder Ancestor's attention.

Of course, Mu Qinghong did not care about this old fossil who had half a leg in the grave. That old man may be the ultimate dominating force in the Seven Profound territory, but in Divine Phoenix Island he was only an ordinary elder, and not only that, but one that was relegated to the second-tier.

Chapter 264 – Zhang Yanzhao's Blood Wave Saber

Chapter 264 – Zhang Yanzhao's Blood Wave Saber

…

…

…

'It wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that Lin Ming's talent is even comparable to Qianyu's. If he was placed within Divine Phoenix Island, he would undoubtedly be a top tier talent. Such a genius like this is worth me coming here; it would even be worthwhile for an elder to personally make a visit here.'

As Mu Qinghong thought this, she was in a very good mood. Even if she didn't achieve her other goal, just coming and and personally gaining insights into Lin Ming's talent was worth the while.

'If the turmoil within the South Sea realm doesn't reach here… then maybe after 100 years, or even 200 years when Lin Ming grows up, he may become a pivotal existence within the entire Southern Region.'

Thinking of the situation within the South Horizon Region, Mu Qinghong became extremely concerned. The chaos within the South Sea would directly affect the fate of Divine Phoenix Island.

………………………

As the matches on the martial stage continued, there were no important or famous figures that appeared. Of course, that was only relatively speaking. Even the weakest of these were much stronger than someone like Bi Tinghua.

After three matches, Zhang Yanzhao went on stage. He was up against the Sword Faction disciple, Liu Yan.

Liu Yan wasn't a weakling. During the last Total Faction Martial Meeting, he was ranked 20; this result wasn't too far from Zhang Yanzhao.

Now that all of the Seven Profound Valleys' disciples knew the phenomenon known as Lin Ming, none of them dared to underestimate the martial artists from beyond the Seven Profound Valleys. Especially Zhang Yanzhao, who was placed onto the gambling house list as a potential champion candidate with a 1:35 compensation rate.

Liu Yan was also on this list, and his compensation rate was similar to Zhang Yanzhao's.

Most people assumed that this would be a close battle, however, the match didn't go as most people expected…

At first, Zhang Yanzhao and Liu Yan were evenly matched blow for blow.

However, after 20 moves had passed, Zhang Yanzhao took out a crimson four foot long treasure saber from his spatial ring. With this saber in his hand, he put forth a dreadfully vigorous martial skill that was like a wave of monstrous blood was surging forwards, overflowing with murderous intention from all around. Liu Yan had lost almost immediately afterwards, and was even heavily injured.

The audience was shocked silly, just where had Zhang Yanzhao been hiding this strength? What was that saber? It didn't look like a normal treasure. When had the 36 countries and 16 martial families become so fierce? They had actually come out with two martial artists that were most likely able to reach the top 10.

As if Lin Ming wasn't enough, a wild Zhang Yanzhao suddenly appeared!

“That blood saber is too bizarre, I can’t see what grade it is. It’s likely not some common high-grade human-step treasure.”

“Maybe it’s an Earth-step treasure…”

“How is that possible? Why would a martial family have an Earth-step treasure? Not even many of our faction’s elders have an Earth-step treasure. In any case, even if the Zhang Family had something so valuable, there was no way that they would give it to a young man in order to show off at a tournament.”

“This truly is an Earth-step treasure; it’s the family heirloom of the Zhang Family.” As a few disciples were discussing, a deep voice suddenly broke in. Everyone turned to look, and quickly bowed, paying their respects.

“Greetings, Senior-apprentice Brother Liang.”

This Senior-apprentice Brother Liang had a cultivation at the peak of Houtian realm. Not only that, but he had just reached 30 years of age, his future glories were endless. He had recently been given a Heaven Opening Pill, and had an extreme possibility of reaching the Xiantian realm. Once he reached the legendary Xiantian realm, he would be an elder, therefore these disciples had to be very respectful towards this man.

Senior-apprentice Brother Liang said, “The first Patriarch of the Zhang Family was a Revolving Core master, that blood saber was the weapon that this Patriarch used. Once it is paired with the first Patriarch’s self-invented saber skill, its power is overwhelming!”

“The first Patriarch of the Zhang Family was a Revolving Core master? I thought that was just an exaggerated rumor…”

“Revolving Core master… that’s just too much to believe. If that were true, then why would the Zhang Family be reduced to their current state?”

Many disciples felt that this was just too unbelievable. Then Senior-apprentice Brother Liang said, “Time changes many things. Three thousand years ago, the Zhang Family was a monstrous titan that ruled over several countries and took their resources; they were just a bit better than the weakest third-grade sect. However, after the first Patriarch died of old age, the Zhang Family wasn't able to produce a new Revolving Core master to lead the family. Because their family had accumulated a massive amount of wealth and resources that many others coveted, ultimately a bloody calamity descended upon them. Their family went through a bloodbath with most being slain or conquered, and only a minor few direct descendants were able to squirrel away some of the wealth and run away somewhere else, concealing their identities. After 1000 years passed, so did their enemies. They did not recover to their previous status, and slowly evolved into the current Zhang Family. Of course, you cannot look down on the heritage and legacies of the Zhang Family! Even our elders have to be respectful towards their Zhang Family Patriarch."

Senior-apprentice Brother Liang sighed with a heart full of emotion. If a family lost strength that matched their wealth and resources, they could only wait for their inevitable demise.

The first reason that the current Zhang Family hadn't been completely destroyed by the Seven Profound Valleys was that they had turned in a massive amount of resources to the Seven Profound Valleys, and their family Patriarch had personally come to negotiate. The second reason was that most of the Zhang Family's heritage and legacies were related to the saber. Since there was no Saber Faction within the Seven Profound Valleys, no one decided to care about them.

The Zhang Family had remained low key for many years; no one had thought that Zhang Yanzhao would display the weapon that the Zhang Family ancestor had wielded during this Total Faction Martial Meeting. It seemed that the Zhang Family finally believed that their family had the strength to match their wealth, and were prepared to expand the influence of their family. The Zhang Family truly had been laying low for too long.

……

As Senior-apprentice Brother Liang spoke, Jiang Baoyun was also looking at Zhang Yanzhao.

Zhang Yanzhao looked a bit on the older side, it wouldn't be too strange if someone said he were 25 or 26 years old. With his saber by his side, he exuded a faint domineering aura. However, Zhang Yanzhao's breath was deep and his steps were calm, and he didn't seem to naturally emit an overwhelming momentum.

"The saber energy is restrained; this is the state of returning to one's origins. What a good realm! I had looked down on him, but it seems that the Zhang Family gave the Blood Wave Saber to Zhang Yanzhao, wanting him to astonish the world with a single brilliant feat at this Total Faction Martial Meeting. With the Blood Wave Saber being used together with the Zhang Family ancestor's self-created Blood King's Triple Murder. Even though there are so many geniuses present, there are only a few that could actually defend against such a powerful technique!"

"This Martial Meeting is getting more and more interesting! The top ten is no longer the world of the direct disciples, but rather the battleground of proud heroes!"

The seventh and eight matches were won by Huan Xiaodie and Qin Wuxin, the proud beautiful pair of this generation. Although their opponents were not weak and they had decent results in the last Martial Meeting, they were still helpless against Huan Xiaodie and Qin Wuxin, quickly defeated in several moves.

When these two proud and exquisite women fought onstage, waves of cheering voices came from the audience. But as for Lin Ming, he turned a deaf ear to all this, immersed in the ethereal martial state so that he could quickly recover his strength.

The second round had come to an end!

Besides the unfortunate Fang Qi, all the other direct disciples hadn't met a tough opponent. They swept away all opposition.

As the third round started, Lin Ming was finally restored to his top condition, and the compression of true essence within the Heretical God Force was completed. He had been sitting in meditation for a while longer, adjusting his mental state, and finally opened his eyes. At this time, he saw Fang Qi standing in the center of the martial stage.

‘Mm? The first match is Fang Qi… he was injured last round, but he actually was able to recover so quickly. The healing medicines of the Seven Profound Valleys are truly miraculous. As long as it’s not a soul wound, one can be healed in half an hour. I wonder who Fang Qi’s opponent is…’

As Lin Ming was thinking this, he suddenly heard a strange and peculiar ‘Jejeje’ laughing sound. A fellow that had a long face and extremely wrinkled skin walked onstage. He was covered in bandages, looking completely like a mummy. As this weird fellow walked onstage, he carried a strange looking bag on his back. He was thinner than a stick, and wore the most outlandishly eccentric clothing. He was like a corpse that had been buried within a coffin and had finally began to rot, but then came back to life in a pile of bandages and rags.

As Fang Qi saw this strange mummy fellow walk onstage, his face drained of all blood.

‘What absolute sh*t luck I have, were all my last 8 generations blood cursed or something? First I meet that freak Lin Ming in the second round, and now I meet this Puppet Faction dried corpse in the third round.’

Even though his opponent was a direct disciple, he still looked like this. Fang Qi felt like he wanted to throw up.

Lin Ming was shocked. ‘This mummy fellow is probably the direct disciple of the Puppet Faction, Mugu Buyu; Fang Qi is also a direct disciple. I thought that the direct disciples wouldn’t meet until the final rounds… is it because Fang Qi lost to me, thus he lost his qualifications to be a seeded player?’

Lin Ming thought this was also natural. After all, the reason that the seven direct disciples were saved for the last matches was in order to increase the competitive nature of the tournament, not to take care of these direct disciples. If a direct disciple didn’t have the strength, they would be eliminated early.

"Match, start!"

The referee elder said the words that Fang Qi was dreading the most. He would rather face off against Jiang Baoyun than this Mugu Buyu. This fellow's strength was too weird, Fang Qi suspected that maybe even Jiang Baoyun might not be his match.

Not only that, but in a minute this mummy fellow would pull out puppets made of corpses, tools made of human skin, and even corpse lanterns lit with corpse oil. This creepy and macabre person really made one's scalp tingle with squeamishness.

And what was worse was that Fang Qi's Golden Light Array Flag's golden runes had all be used up. He had to temporarily borrow a second-rate treasure from his faction that had less than a third of the power of the Golden Light Array Flag. He was already expecting an extremely miserable ending when facing off against this Mugu Buyu.

"Jejeje! Array Faction's baby boy, are you prepared to admit defeat?" Mugu Buyu strangely smiled. Although it was clear that he wasn't much older, he still spoke in a very old manner and hadn't even placed Fang Qi in his eyes.

Fang Qi paled. He really had been thinking of immediately admitting defeat a moment ago, but now that he heard Mugu Buyu say such outrageous things, there was no way he could admit defeat now. Otherwise, he really would become a turtle. For better or worse, he was still a direct disciple. If he went down without a fight, and also had to swallow the insults of his opponent, then he would just lose too much face.

This wasn't just his face he would be losing, but he would also lose face for the entire Array Faction. If he retreated at this point, he would never be able to hold his head up around the other Array Faction disciples again.

Fang Qi braced himself for the worst and said, "If you want to fight, then let's fight! Shut your filthy trap!"

“Hehe, you have courage! Unfortunately, the more you talk, the more you need strength to back it up, otherwise you will only end up looking like the fool.” As Mugu Buyu said this, he shook the bag on his back, and a spider-like puppet jumped out.

This puppet had the upper body of a human, but the lower body of a giant spider. The upper body was actually quite beautiful, but as soon as Fang Qi saw that it was a puppet stitched together from corpses, he began to feel nauseous.

Chapter 265 – Saber like Tiger, Spear like Dragon

Chapter 265 – Saber like Tiger, Spear like Dragon

…

…

…

"Jejeje! Baby boy, if you can deal with little spider puppet, how about I lose to you!"

Hearing Mugu Buyu's arrogant words, Fang Qi could only bitterly clench his teeth. "You are too conceited! Although I might not be your match, if you want to take out a single second tier puppet to deal with me, then you are not placing me in your eyes at all!"

Although the Puppet Faction was mysterious, Fang Qi had a certain understanding of Mugu Buyu's techniques. Mugu Buyu had at least three puppets, one of them a human puppet made from the body of a peak Houtian realm master that was also the fiercest of the three.

If that human puppet was brought out, then Fang Qi would admit he was no match. But now Mugu Buyu only brought out a spider puppet to deal with him, this was simply not respecting his abilities at all.

"Earth Array – Octagonal Slaughter Path!" Fang Qi threw out his array disc, and a series of golden runes flew out from it, directly surrounding the spider puppet.

"Gather!"

Fang Qi waved an array flag, and all the golden runes tightened on the spider puppet; he wanted to kill the spider puppet trapped within the array.

The flashing golden runes fell towards the spider puppet. A brilliant golden light began to shine out from the spider puppet's body, and a golden sphere appeared around the spider puppet, protecting it.

Peng peng peng peng peng!

"This… this gold defense is… Golden Bell Barrier, metal-attribute true essence!?"

Fang Qi was completely shocked. This golden shield was obviously a defensive power that was stronger than an earth-attribute true essence shield. Although it was said that metal-attribute true essence was rare, in truth metal-attribute true essence martial artists were much more common than thunder-attribute and wind-attribute martial artists.

But what most horrified Fang Qi was that the metal-attribute true essence was refined from inside the puppet's body and then sent out! Not only that, but Golden Bell Barrier was a defensive martial skill! A puppet could actually use a martial skill!

"You… you… you've reached the 'Essence Integration' realm? How… how is that possible!?"

Fang Qi inexplicably panicked. Even the other direct disciples in the audience, including Ouyang Ming, Huo Yanluo, and the others had a huge change in their expressions.

Ouyang Ming took a deep breath and subconsciously clenched his fists. This was the realm of Essence Integration! Mugu Buyu's cultivation was only a half-step into the Houtian realm, and he had reached Essence Integration!

Although the Puppet Faction was incomparably enigmatic, in the end they were still part of the Seven Profound Valleys. The other direct disciples had a certain understanding of the powers and abilities of Puppet Masters.

A Puppet Master could refine a vicious beast or powerhouse's corpse into a puppet. The two most important factors of a potential puppet was that they had a strong body when they were living, and their bodies were also excellent carriers of true essence. If a puppet could have both of these advantages, they would naturally be incomparably powerful.

But a puppet was still a puppet, and they had clumsy combat utility. If one could not make use of their strong body or formidable true essence capacity, then their final combat potential would be extremely limited.

However, once a Puppet Master reached the Xiantian realm, or maybe a half-step into the Xiantian realm, they could achieve the Essence Integration boundary. This so-called Essence Integration allowed a puppet to retain their original true essence attribute that they had before death, and even allowed a puppet to keep the cultivation methods and martial skills they knew in life!

Such a puppet wouldn't be much weaker than when it was alive!

The reason that Mugu Buyu was able to have the spider puppet create the Golden Bell Barrier was that the upper half's woman body had maintained the metal-attribute true essence she had before death.

Fang Qi's face was ashen white on the stage. This Mugu Buyu was only a half-step into the Houtian realm, but he had actually comprehended Essence Integration which usually required a cultivation at least a half-step into the Xiantian realm. Mugu Buyu was absolutely the most terrifying and monstrous talent in the Puppet Faction for the last 100 years!

Perhaps even Jiang Baoyun would lose against Mugu Buyu!

How could he have such sh*t luck, meeting two freaks in a row!

"I… I admit defeat." Fang Qi was heavily panting as he said these words. If he had to admit defeat, then he would admit defeat. Against someone that not even Jiang Baoyun might be able to defeat, there was no point in severely injuring himself just to look like a fool, rushing through stubbornness and having everyone look down on him.

“Mugu Buyu, victory!”

As the referee elder announced this, he also couldn’t help but gulp several times. This Mugu Buyu was just too scary. Even though there were so many geniuses and heroes that had gathered at this Total Faction Martial Meeting, he was a monster among monsters.

He had thought that this Total Faction Martial Meeting might be the grandest and best one in the last three, but now looking at it, let alone three, it might be superior to even the last 30 Martial Meetings.

During the last Total Faction Martial Meeting, the direct disciple still here that ranked the highest was the Acacia Faction’s Ouyang Ming, who had reached third place. For a 17 year old to reach third place was already extremely abnormal. At that time, the champion and second place contestant had both been over 20 years old, and had now lost the qualifications to participate.

It had been general belief that Ouyang Ming would absolutely become the champion, but then Jiang Baoyun had surpassed him, and Ouyang Ming’s chances of being number one ended.

But now, looking at this Mugu Buyu mummy fellow who had popped out of nowhere and had managed to comprehend the Essence Integration boundary, Jiang Baoyun might not even be first.

Not only that, but there was Jiang Lanjian whose strength wasn’t much worse than Jiang Baoyun’s, and there was Qin Wuxin who had reached Large Success of her Zither Heart, and also the young talented beauty of the Mirage Faction, Huan Xiaodie.

Not only that, but there was also the patiently waiting Zhang Yanzhao and the unfathomable Lin Ming.

This was truly a battle between heroes!

Not to mention first place, or top three, even fighting for the top ten would be fraught with enormous difficulty!

“Who will be the winner?”

The heart of the referee elder was filled with anticipation. He thought for a moment and then used true essence sound transmission to send this message to the referee group.

“Elder Jiang, what is the matter?” The referee group’s elders respectfully asked.

The referee elder on the martial stage was from the Sword Faction, and he had extremely keen judgment. His cultivation was also at the middle Xiantian realm, and he had a high rank; he was respected even amongst the elders.

“There will be a slight change to the original tournament schedule, there are simply too many talents. We do not need to wait until the end. There are especially a few matches in particular that I want to look at.”

“Okay. I just happen to agree with Elder Jiang’s thoughts. The first few matches are just too boring, there are a few match results that I would really like to know!”

After Fang Qi was defeated, there were a few calm games, and then another swell of controversy rose again!

“Third round, ninth match. Lin Ming against Zhang Yanzhao!”

As the referee announced this match, the audience rose in an uproar. The Seven Profound Valleys’ disciples were more calm, because whether it was Lin Ming or Zhang Yanzhao, they didn’t really care as they had no relation to them.

But the martial artists of the 36 countries and 16 martial families began to shout wildly, yelling at the top of their lungs.

Lin Ming was the representative of the 36 countries, and Zhang Yanzhao was the only child left from the 16 martial families. With these two strong fighters colliding, this would definitely be a fierce battle between two great martial artists. It was hard to say who would win!

The disciples of the 36 countries and 16 martial families were united by a common hatred when facing the Seven Profound Valleys, but now that they had to battle each other, they naturally had to engage each other for a while!

“Hehe, your Lin Ming’s lucky win streak is about to come to an end. It’s just bad luck that he’s encountered Zhang Yanzhao here.”

“Don’t talk shit! Aren’t you afraid of the wind cutting your tongue with how much nonsense you’re talking? Isn’t Fang Qi fierce? Wasn’t he defeated by Lin Ming in three moves? Your Zhang Yanzhao is at most on the same level as Fang Qi. Now that he’s facing Lin Ming, he’s just some trash that will be defeated in a second!”

“Humph, you are just a complete sucker. Fang Qi and Huo Yanluo are worst among the seven direct disciples, they are basically just side dishes. Can they even compare with Zhang Yanzhao? Do you know what the Blood King’s Triple Murder is? The power of those three moves isn’t something that someone like you can imagine. It’s already good if Lin Ming can withstand the second saber strike!

Lin Ming and Zhang Yanzhao hadn’t even fought, but the disciples off the 36 countries and 16 martial families had already begun a savage war of words, their arguments becoming extremely heated.

Jiang Baoyun was drinking some spirit tea, and he asked with a smile, “Lanjian, your eyesight is quite good. Who do you think will win?”

Jiang Lanjian looked deeply at Jiang Baoyun. Even though Jiang Baoyun had just seen that freak Mugu Buyu and his Essence Integration ability, he was still able to maintain his calm indifference. That Jiang Baoyun could maintain this attitude meant that he was either confident against Mugu Buyu, or his Sword Heart had reached an indelible state that a normal swordsman would never be able to compare with.

"Heh, there's no need to mention my eyesight again. I've already been mistaken about Lin Ming several times, and still find that I cannot understand him at all. I originally thought Lin Ming had good chances, but the Zhang Family's Blood King's Triple Murder is just too powerful. It was a martial skill created by a Revolving Core master. Once it's combined with the Blood Wave Saber, the strength it can release is incomprehensible. It is said that the third saber consumes at least 40% of one's true essence, and can shatter the earth and heavens. I wonder how Lin Ming will be able to stop that. I just cannot predict the results of this match. Who do you think will win?"

Jiang Baoyun shook his head, and only said, "Saber like tiger, spear like dragon!"

Saber like tiger, spear like dragon?

In battle between a dragon and a tiger, who was stronger? The dragon? Or the tiger?

Regardless of whether it was Lin Ming or Zhang Yanzhao, they were both martial artists that excelled in powerful attacks. If they met on the battlefield, tens of thousands would be killed. With such overwhelmingly qualified contestants, this match was truly worth watching.

The disciples of the 36 countries and 16 martial families were cheering their heads off.

As Zhang Yanzhao stepped onto the martial stage, he did not hold back anything, he immediately took out the Blood Wave Saber. Against Lin Ming, this was the only skill he could use to defeat him.

Lin Ming stood not too far away from Zhang Yanzhao, the Heavy Profound Soft Spear in his hands. This battle was contest between saber and spear. He wanted to depend on just his own spear and have a wonderful battle.

The Foundation Spear Technique against the Blood King's Triple Murder.

Although it seemed as if Lin Ming's spear had a major disadvantage, in his hands, the Foundation Spear Technique underwent a drastic evolution. It was no longer what it once was. Every spear strike and move contained the power of the mountains and rivers. Because of this, spear skills weren't as important.

The two stood 100 feet apart.

Suddenly, the aura that Zhang Yanzhao had been restraining within himself suddenly exploded outward. One could see faint waves of blood rolling off of him, his murderous intent coming from all directions. It was as if that murderous intent was enough blot out the sky, and those waves of blood were enough to drown anyone underneath.

Lin Ming was also restrained. He was standing straight on the stage, just like a spear itself. His body concealed a roiling momentum that seemed to instantly pierce the heavens.

Zhang Yanzhao felt as if he could hear his own aura being broken through, and that aura he released like waves of blood was simply chopped apart by a keen blade. He laughed and said, "That I can meet an opponent like you during this Total Faction Martial Meeting is already enough! I will only use three saber moves. If I cannot win against you with them, I admit defeat!"

Zhang Yanzhao was not being arrogant. It was just that his Blood King's Triple Murder only had three sabers within. After these three sabers were used, his true essence would be over 70% consumed. If he couldn't defeat Lin Ming by then, then he would have basically lost the match.

Zhang Yanzhao had absolute confidence in the Blood King's Triple Murder's third and final saber.

"Good! Make your saber move!"

With this, Lin Ming took the eternal Iron Bridge Blocks the River stance. At that moment, his aura was just like a calm mountain, unyielding and immutable!

Chapter 266 – Blood King's Triple Murder

Chapter 266 – Blood King's Triple Murder

…

…

…

Bang!

A wave of blood soared to the heavens, and even the clouds in the skies parted. The rich true essence surged in the air like ripples in water, visible to even the naked eye. This true essence dispersed, struck the stage protection barrier, and then bounced back.

To the audience, it was as if the entire martial stage had been covered with a faint red tint; it seemed as if blood was floating everywhere in the sky.

"Blood King's First Murder – Endless Waves!!"

Zhang Yanzhao gave a loud shout, and the treasure sword in his hand turned a brilliant blood red. A rich blood energy suddenly erupted forwards, it was as if countless surges of blood waves were rushing through the air.

As Zhang Yanzhao cut out with his knife, it was like the entire world had been covered by his saber energy; he could cut anything he wanted!

As Lin Ming faced this sword energy that seemed like massive waves of blood that blotted out the sky, Lin Ming also became incomparably serious. True essence poured into the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, and Flow like Silk broke out. At the same time, countless flashes of thunder arched around Lin Ming's body, spear prestige transformed into a dragon!

A spear thrust out with an unstoppable momentum. 5000 filaments of vibrating true essence pounded wave after bloody wave.

Peng!

Under the vibrating true essence, the waves of blood turned into a shower of blood. It seemed as if crimson lotuses were blooming in the sky. As the waves of blood were torn apart, Lin Ming's spear and Zhang Yanzhao's saber collided in midair!

A blood red light flashed, and Lin Ming's spear pierced the curtain of blood, unstoppable!

Zhang Yanzhao was shocked in his heart. This spear of Lin Ming's looked simple, but there were profound principles and esoteric truths contained within!

The majestic strength of the world, the power of the strange vibrations, and the wildly savage purple thunder; all three of these powers perfectly fused together, creating an implacable force!

At this moment, he realized Lin Ming's strength. It wasn't that Fang Qi was weak, it was only that Mugu Buyu and Lin Ming were too strong. That was the only reason that Fang Qi had been so thoroughly and completely defeated!

The long spear was like a dragon; after breaking through the mist of blood, it pierced towards Zhang Yanzhao's chest!

At this critical moment, Zhang Yanzhao used his palm as a saber and cut down on the Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

Clang!

The intense impact caused the Heavy Profound Soft Spear to instantly bend like a crescent moon. Zhang Yanzhao grit his teeth as he retreated backwards, his right hand was already stained red with blood!

“What? A spear broke through Zhang Yanzhao’s Blood King’s First Murder, and he was also injured?”

“This is too weird. Didn’t Lin Ming not use a martial skill during that spear strike? Can there be such strength without a martial skill? How terrifying would it be if he did use a martial skill!!?”

To most of the audience, whether it was Zhang Yanzhao or Lin Ming, both of them gave them an unfathomable feeling. During the last Martial Meeting, he had reached the top 20. Now, during this Martial Meeting, he had defeated Liu Yan with just a single saber strike. Liu Yan’s strength probably wasn’t in the top ten, but he could still be around rank 12 or 13; he was definitely not some weak nobody.

There was no need to mention anything about Lin Ming. Against Fang Qi, he had defeated him as if he were just chopping a melon!

However, these matches were not enough to fully explain the level of these two people. Everyone knew that before now, neither of them had used their full strength to fight. This would be a truly powerful battle!

They had thought that the difference in strength between Lin Ming and Zhang Yanzhao wasn’t too great, but they never thought that Zhang Yanzhao would be the first one injured, and so quickly too.

“Second Elder, Zhang Yanzhao seems to be in danger. That Lin Ming had only used a casual spear thrust without any martial skill or technique, and he was able to break through Zhang Yanzhao’s Blood King’s First Murder!” Since Zhang Yanzhao was competing, then naturally people from the Zhang Family would also have come. The group leader was the Second Elder of the Zhang Family.

“No martial skill? Heh, you’re wrong. Lin Ming’s spear skill has fused many unknown principles within – every move he makes is the same as a martial skill!” As the Second Elder gazed at the two people onstage, his pair of deep eyes shined brightly. “Don’t worry, that casual spear thrust is powerful, and it wouldn't be strange if he had other cards in his hand, but that Blood King's First Murder that Yanzhao just used was the weakest saber. The second saber will be three times as strong. And the third saber will be three times stronger than the second. Breaking through the first saber doesn't mean anything at all!

On the martial stage, Zhang Yanzhao's eyes were brilliant. "Lin Ming, your strength astonishes even me! But you're wrong if you think you'll defeat me so easily!"

As Zhang Yanzhao said this, the saber in his hand began to shine. The tiles under Zhang Yanzhao's feet began to be pulverized by waves of violent air.

"Blood King's Second Murder – Extermination of Gods and Ghosts!!!"

"Haaah–!"

The blood energy in the air seemed to incinerate, and a crimson vortex appeared on Zhang Yanzhao's saber, instantly absorbing all of the blood energy everywhere, wiping even the sky clean! Suddenly, the energy condensed onto the saber was several times stronger than before!

Lin Ming was startled. Mm? Once the blood energy from the first saber was fused into the second, the power actually increased so much!

"This is at least three times as strong!" Lin Ming frowned. It wasn't as if he couldn't block this saber – he could. The problem was if the second saber's power had already increased by so much, then what would the third saber be like?

Bang!

Burning waves of blood surged towards Lin Ming. The saber energy was just like a massive river that had suddenly been unleashed from a dam, resulting in an unstoppable flood!

Facing a saber energy that even covered the sky, Lin Ming instantly activated Golden Roc Shattering the Void, his body like a shadow as it retreated. At the same time, the Heavy Profound Soft Spear struck out like a serpent!

Flowers in the Storm!

Puff puff puff puff puff puff!

In that moment, Lin Ming pierced out with hundreds of spear strikes. Each spear contained the power of thunder fused with vibrating true essence.

In this continuous onslaught, the massive wave of blood continued for hundreds of feet, pushing Lin Ming to the edge of the stage before finally dissipating.

The audience hadn't yet been able to respond to such a quick reversal of fortune. Just awhile ago Lin Ming had broken through Zhang Yanzhao's first saber, and had even injured him. Now, Lin Ming had been pushed back so far by Zhang Yanzhao's second saber.

There could only be one explanation, and that was that Zhang Yanzhao's Blood King's Triple Murder became increasingly powerful with each saber. Not only that, but the disparity between each strike was gargantuan. If so, then just how strong would the third saber be? How would Lin Ming deal with it?

The disciples of the 36 countries couldn't help but feel nervous for Lin Ming, their faces dripping with anxious sweat.

"Haha, good!"

A Zhang Family elder laughed. In all of Lin Ming's matches so far, no one had been able to push him back. Now, he was actually forced back hundreds of feet by Zhang Yanzhao's saber.

Moreover, this was only the second saber of the Blood King's Triple Murder. The third saber would be three times stronger than even the second saber. The Zhang Family elder wanted to see just how Lin Ming would be able to block that.

"Yanzhao has already won half the battle. Now, even if Lin Ming has a hidden card in his hand, it still might not be enough to block the third saber!"

"Mm. If Yanzhao can defeat Lin Ming here, then that would be a great advantage to my Zhang Family's momentum. This match is just too important!" The Second Elder confidently spoke this as he stroked his beard.

The Zhang Family had been hiding their strength for the last several hundred years. Now, it was finally time to begin their revival; there was just no significance in blindly and constantly hiding their family's resources. On the contrary, what they had to do was expand their family's influence. The more influence they had, the more powerhouses they could hire to join their family.

"There is still the last saber. Lin Ming, I want to see how you'll block this!" As Zhang Yanzhao said this, his entire body erupted with a surge of true essence. He lifted the Blood Wave Saber high above his head, and the entire saber began to blaze with a brilliant light. The true essence of his body was just like a flood that was being held back by the treasure sword in his hands.

Lin Ming could clearly feel that the true essence reserves in Zhang Yanzhao's body were rapidly depleting!

"This is truly worthy of being called an Earth-step treasure sword; it can actually store so much true essence!"

When Lin Ming used Thunderfire Annihilation, he would instantly consume 40% of his true essence, and that was because he had to suffuse his true essence into the Heretical God Seed. The Heretical God Seed was simply a bottomless pit. But if Lin Ming tried to pour his true essence into the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, it wouldn't take much true essence before the Heavy Profound Soft Spear reached its limit. Looking at it from this aspect, the disparity between a medium-grade human-step treasure and an earth-step treasure was simply like clouds and mud!

"No wonder it is said that the Blood King's Triple Murder needs the Earth-step treasure Blood Wave Saber in order to display its power, it was for this reason. A human-step treasure simply cannot contain that much true essence.

Within a breath of time, Zhang Yanzhao had already poured over 50% of his true essence into the Blood Wave Saber. In addition to the consumption of the last two sabers, Zhang Yanzhao didn't even have 30% of his total true essence remaining.

He was staking everything on this, a single saber to decide victory or defeat!

"This is my strongest ability! Blood King's Absolute Murder – Heaven and Earth Collapse!"

Zhang Yanzhao loudly bellowed, and he suddenly rose several hundreds of feet into the air; everything under his feet had become meaningless!

Lin Ming's eyes widened. The power of Zhang Yanzhao's saber was actually three times stronger than the last! It kept rising by three times every time! In comparison to the first saber, Zhang Yanzhao's third saber was nine times stronger!

Even if Lin Ming opened the Heretical God Force and increased his power by 60%, he still wouldn't be able to block this saber. If he wished to confront his opponent head-on, he either had to use the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder or Thunderfire Annihilation.

However, Lin Ming didn't want to use these two trump cards against Zhang Yanzhao.

That was because he still had another card in his hand – reverse scale blood!

With the fusion of the True Dragon Energy's azure true essence, it would continually grow, endlessly!

Not only was this kind of true essence all-conquering, able to break through any defense, it was tenacious and difficult to destroy. Although it wasn't eternal like a Flame Essence, if one wished to destroy it, they needed multiple times the true essence in order to wear it down.

This was the everlasting concept that existed forever within the True Dragon – eternal and immortal power!

As for the present Lin Ming, he could not achieve true immortality. That was because his cultivation was limited and he wasn't able to display the full might of the reverse scale blood.

Even so, this endless true essence was not so easy to destroy.

"Roar!"

With the resonant and majestic cry of a dragon, Lin Ming's aura shot into the clouds, piercing the heavens, and the reverse scale blood completely fused into his true essence.

At that moment, Mu Qinghong, who had been sitting in the Grand Hall, was shocked in her heart, her beautiful face suddenly changing color!

This… this is…

Mu Qinghong had lived in Divine Phoenix Island for many years, and she had the bloodline of the Vermillion Bird injected within her body. As she heard that loud dragon's cry a moment ago, she felt the bloodline within her body tremble in fear!

"Could this… could this be the strange Flood Dragon bloodline that Qianyu had mentioned?"

She helplessly watched as the shade of a Flood Dragon appeared behind Li Ming once again. Compared to before, this time it was even more real. The more she looked at it, the less it seemed like a Flood Dragon. It was as if… as if… True Dragon!?!?

Long spear manifesting dragon!

It was a true blue, genuine long spear manifesting dragon! Heavens! How old was he again!?

A spear genius of this level was unprecedented from ancient times until now!

Bang!

The vibrating true essence that contained the energy of the True Dragon intensely impacted against the Blood King's Absolute Murder! Lin Ming's true essence had transformed into a deep azure color, standing out in stark contrast to the deep dark red that stained everywhere; it was an incomparably gorgeous and dazzling sight!

It was as if space was torn apart. Intense red shockwaves violently impacted everywhere, alarmingly dire waves of blood frothing forth. But in the midst of these crazy and turbulent waves, a bright azure colored spear light pierced through, thrusting straight towards Zhang Yanzhao's chest!

Zhang Yanzhao's triumphant expression instantly froze.

Puff!

It was like his chest had been struck by a mountain. Zhang Yanzhao spat out a mouthful of blood, and he flew backwards like a broken ragdoll.

Chapter 267 – Azure True Essence

Chapter 267 – Azure True Essence

…

…

…

Bang!

Zhang Yanzhao smashed against the martial stage's protective barrier, the blood within his body tumbling endlessly. Although he had suffered a heavy injury, he was still able to use his saber to prop himself up on the ground, and not fall flat to the floor in a shameless scene.

How could this be!?

Zhang Yanzhao could not believe this. He had exhausted over 50% of his true essence in order to send out the Blood King's Absolute Murder. The terrifying storm of saber energy that was released still wasn't able to crush that azure spear light that was several times less than his own! Instead, that spear light pierced through layer upon layer of blood waves, finally striking him down!

What sort of spear light was that?

It was as if it were indestructible.

It was simply too terrifying!

As Zhang Yanzhao looked up and saw Lin Ming, he noticed that Lin Ming was standing exactly where he had been, without a single wound on his body. Zhang Yanzhao had clearly seen that in the split second that the Blood King's Absolute Murder had reached Lin Ming, that azure spear light had managed to tear open a hole within the blood waves, parting them in half and allowing Lin Ming to dodge most of the attacks. As for the rest of the energy, it had struck Lin Ming but was unable to shatter apart the azure true essence that protected his body.

This kind of weird true essence was too terrifying! Although it didn't feel too powerful, it was completely immutable.

The entire audience was stunned silent as all of them quietly gazed at the martial stage. Zhang Yanzhao's final saber had created an extremely powerful force that had exceeded their imaginations. It had even blasted apart the array formation tiles in the center of the martial stage, leaving behind a massive crater that was over a dozen feet deep!

Heavens!

Was this really a showdown of the younger generation? Even a battle between late Houtian realm, or even peak Houtian realm masters would not be able to create such awe inspiring carnage!

At this moment, a thin drizzle of blood began to fall from the sky as if it were a spring rain.

It hit the face, wet and sticky.

After the endless waves of blood were blown apart, their powerful energy had managed to seep through the defensive barrier of the martial stage, forming clouds of blood in the sky. This phenomenon was substantialized by Zhang Yanzhao's true essence, becoming reality. His true essence manifestation was thick as blood.

Even the group of referee elders were shocked speechless. This was because they had taken Jiang Baoyun as the strongest representative of all the direct disciples, and thus the strongest of the younger generation. His strength was capable of reaching the middle Houtian stage, so they had created a defensive barrier that was able to withstand attacks from a late Houtian realm master. This defensive barrier should be able to withstand a continuous onslaught from a late Houtian realm master without breaking.

Yet Zhang Yanzhao's true essence manifestation blood waves had actually managed to flow through the defensive barrier; this could only mean that his striking power had reached the standard late Houtian realm master!

What sort of concept was it for a half-step Houtian martial artist to have the attack power of a late Houtian realm master?

This was just too difficult to imagine!

The Blood King's Triple Murder was just too terrifying a skill!

And what was even more horrifying was Lin Ming; he had actually managed to withstand such a powerful blow and counterattack!

His spear had broken through the blood waves, splitting them in half. Not only was he completely safe, but he had overcome those layers of blood to strike Zhang Yanzhao!

That azure true essence was not too powerful, but its unwillingness to die made one's heart quicken with fear!

………

In the Grand Hall, Shi Zongtian glanced at Mu Qinghong, hesitating for a moment. He had caught Mu Qinghong's violent reaction to what had just happened in the match.

From the start until now, no mighty wave of valorous performance of the Martial Meeting was able to startle the ever-placid Mu Qinghong. Whether it was Jiang Lanjian's swordsmanship attainments or Mugu Buyu's Essence Integration boundary, Mu Qinghong had only nodded as she watched without a reaction. To her, all of this seemed common.

But a moment ago, Mu Qinghong, who had always maintained a calm and indifferent expression, suddenly paled, and grasped the armrests of her chair, nearly standing up. This had caused Shi Zongtian a great amount of surprise. Was Mu Qinghong really someone capable of being surprised?

Normally, Shi Zongtian would be very proud that a disciple of his sect would be able to cause a Special Envoy of Divine Phoenix Island to have this expression. But now, Shin Zongtian did not feel happy or satisfied at all. Mu Qinghong had obviously noticed something in particular, but Shi Zongtian hadn't seen it at all.

He suspected that the azure true essence was what Mu Qinghong was surprised about, but as for what secrets it held, he did not know.

He searched his own memory for information on this azure true essence. Was it a special sort of martial intent? Or… could it be… True Essence Concept?

Thinking this, Shi Zongtian's heart began to quiver. If it really was a True Essence Concept, then that was simply heaven defying. There were exceedingly few people that were able to comprehend a True Essence Concept. These people were beyond the rare among rare. This Concept that Lin Ming seemed to have understood looked like the legendary eternal True Essence Concept where true essence grew endless, refusing to die, nearly immortal.

But was this really possible? He was still in the Bone Forging stage, and yet he had comprehended a True Essence Concept. Not only that, but it was the legendary eternal true essence!

Mu Qinghong noticed Shi Zongtian observing her. Knowing that it was a breach of conduct, she smiled and asked, "Does Valley Master Shi have anything to say?"

Shi Zongtian was slightly stunned, and then he smiled and said, "Nothing, I was just laughing at how stupid and shoddy my judgment of the Seven Profound Valleys' disciples has been. There was such an unpolished jade in my land and yet the first one to discover this was actually the vaunted Saintess. The Saintess' eyes are like an all-seeing beacon, it's no wonder that Divine Phoenix Island has been thriving this past millennia!"

Shi Zongtian's words were filled with a trace of discontent; he was obviously dissatisfied with Divine Phoenix Island reaching their hands out so far. As for that azure true essence, there was no point in him taking the initiative to ask, Mu Qinghong was just too clever to reveal anything.

"Haha, all of the uncut jades in this world will belong where they are destined for. What does Valley Master Shi think of this?"

Shi Zongtian's complexion immediately became ugly. He icily said, "Fair Maiden Qinghong's remarks are simply too biased! Only those uncut jades that are ownerless will find their way to whoever they are destined for. As for those uncut jades that already have a master, it is best to take them up and personally polish them."

"Valley Master Shi, isn't Lin Ming not even a disciple of your Seven Profound Valleys? My family's Young Mistress merely had a fateful encounter with Lin Ming, but didn't take him away. In this matter, Divine Phoenix Island has already showed extremely patience, doing everything humanly possible. Why must Valley Master Shi be so unbecomingly hostile?" Mu Qinghong said with a light 'humph'.

As Shi Zongtian heard this, he suddenly paused. It was true that he was a bit nervous and thought that Divine Phoenix Island was trying to poach someone from him. But, he also wondered, if Lin Ming's talent was so amazing, why would Divine Phoenix Island let him go? He would be a top-tier talent even with a fourth-grade sect.

But as he thought about it some more, if Divine Phoenix Island really came to dig in his little corner of land, there was no reason to do all of this. They could have already taken him away with irresistible offers and promises.

Shi Zongtian said, "I apologize if I offended Fairy Maiden Qinghong. It's just that to a small third-grade sect like mine, a peerless genius is truly too important. With a peerless talent, it might be that several hundred years from now, my Seven Profound Valleys might possibly reach the turning point of becoming a fourth-grade sect! Because of this, I was just a bit too excited and aggressive."

Although it seemed like too much of an exaggeration to claim that the power of a single person could cause a third-grade sect to rise to a fourth-grade sect, there was still some truth in it.

If Lin Ming could reach the peak Revolving Core realm and then hire some capable individuals, this might be possible.

A peak Revolving Core master seemed as if it were an incomparably distant goal. Yet with Lin Ming's trivial peak Bone Forging cultivation, he was still able to compare to a Houtian realm master. In the future, there was a glimmer of hope that he could reach the peak Revolving Core realm!

……

Above the martial stage, Zhang Yanzhao had already smothered the restlessness within his chest with true essence. He wiped the blood from his mouth and sullenly smiled, slowly shaking his head.

"I admit defeat."

His three sabers had consumed over 70% of his true essence, and he even had the support of a low-grade Earth-step treasure saber! In comparison, Lin Ming hadn't even used up 10% of his true essence, and he only used a medium-grade human-step treasure spear.

In that situation, Lin Ming was even able to counterattack and wound him. This disparity between them was just too great.

Zhang Yanzhao felt as if Lin Ming was a towering mountain that pierced the heavens, it was too difficult to hope to reach him.

"Well fought." Lin Ming cupped his fists together in respect and then put away his Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

"Lin Ming, victory!"

With the announcement of the referee, the Second Elder of the Zhang Family exhaled a heavy breath. He muttered, “This child is simply a dragon within a deep pool; Yanzhao didn’t lose without just cause!”

Although Zhang Yanzhao had lost the match, the Zhang Family had managed to show their power and influence. Zhang Yanzhao’s final saber was able to compare to a late Houtian master’s all-out attack, it was enough to shock the entire audience.

Since he lost to Lin Ming in that situation, he could only blame it on his own ability being inferior.

When Lin Ming returned to the contestant waiting area, many of the other contestants were unconsciously looking at him. Some had complex expressions, some looked jealous, some looked fearful, some looked excited, and some even looked appreciative.

During the third round of the tournament, Lin Ming had stepped into the spotlight, leaving a deep impression on the audience’s minds – not unlike the mummy Mugu Buyu who had comprehended the Essence Integration boundary.

Of course, this only meant that Lin Ming had caused a shock within the audience’s minds that was equal to Mugu Buyu, it didn’t imply that his strength was on par with Mugu Buyu.

In the opinion of the majority of the audience, the Essence Integration boundary that Mugu Buyu had reached was a realm that could only be reached by a Xiantian master. Mugu Buyu’s strength likely exceeded even Jiang Baoyun’s, and he had become the number one master of the seven direct disciples.

This point could be seen from the gambling house

Before Mugu Buyu had revealed his Essence Integration boundary, Jiang Baoyun’s odds was 1:1.6. As for another popular favorite, Ouyang Ming, his odds was 1:4. At that time, Mugu Buyu’s odds was also 1:4.

But after Mugu Buyu revealed his Essence Integration boundary, his odds had plummeted down to 1:1.8. As for Jiang Baoyun, his had risen to 1:2.5. And as for Ouyang Ming, his odds rose to 1:6.

With these odds, there weren't many people that bet on Ouyang Ming. Even the disciples of the Acacia Faction mostly bet on Mugu Buyu.

It was worth mentioning that Lin Ming had finally appeared on the list of possible champion candidates. In his first appearance, his odds were 1:12. These odds were already quite good. As for Zhang Yanzhao, his odds were 1:35.

"Xingxuan."

In the audience, Qin Xingxuan suddenly heard Lin Ming's true essence sound transmission in her mind.

"Ah! Lin Ming, are you alright?"

The scene of Lin Ming fighting within those waves of blood kept repeating within Qin Xingxuan's mind, cause her heart to wildly dance. One reason was that she had been extremely frightened and worried.

As for the second, that was due to the young and precocious feelings that were budding within a young girl's heart, which caused her heartbeat to accelerate.

Lin Ming's voice was playful. "Go to the gambling house and bet 300 true essence stones that I will win, I'll buy them. If you don't have enough true essence stones, you can borrow some from Martial House Master Qin. Later I'll return the true essence stones to you."

"300 true essence stones?" Qin Xingxuan gasped in surprise. Even though she came from a wealthy family, this number was just too startling; this was 300,000 gold! Listening to Lin Ming's words, he believed he had a very high chance of winning. If he really did win, then he would win 3600 true essence stones!

Heavens!

3600 true essence stones was 3.6 million gold taels! Even to the Marshal Quarters, that was an inestimably large sum of money! It had to be known that the yearly expenses of the Marshal Quarters only amounted to two or three hundred thousand gold taels.

“Mm, that’s right, 300 true essence stones.”

The amount of true essence stones that Lin Ming needed in order to cultivate now was no small number. These many years the Seven Profound Valleys had sucked up who knew how many resources from the surrounding countries. This amount wasn’t even enough to cover interest.

Because this gambling house was started by some disciples with an elder backing them, Lin Ming wanted to bet one or two thousand true essence stones and have them compensate several tens of thousands of true essence stones in one go.

However, the ones who managed the gambling house were only personal disciples, they couldn’t necessarily repay.

“3600 true essence stones… that should be equal to several months of expenses for these personal disciples, they should be able to repay it.”

Chapter 268 – Abyssal Flames

Chapter 268 – Abyssal Flames

…

…

…

"I… admit defeat…"

During the fourth round of the tournament, Lin Ming's opponent chose to directly admit defeat. This was already quite rare for anyone that managed to enter in the finals. Even if they faced one of the several direct disciples and knew perfectly well that they would never win, they still played out a symbolic battle. Many of the disciples purely came to experience the strength of the direct disciples and exchange moves with them.

As for Lin Ming, he could have been described as a complete unknown before the Total Faction Martial Meeting. Because of this, there weren't many people that were interested in exchanging blows with him and ultimately end up disgracing themselves.

Lin Ming won with ease. Afterwards, it was time for Fang Qi to step on stage. Fang Qi finally ended his streak of bad luck; he managed to face a disciple who wasn't too strong or too weak, and he ended up winning via overwhelming superiority.

Fang Qi ended the match with the fastest speed he could muster. It was as if here were trying to use this method to announce to the audience that he wasn't weak, it was just that his luck was bad and he met two abnormal fellows.

As the matches continued one at a time, they were either unequal matches or the two contestants were relatively weak, so there wasn't much anticipation in the audience.

It seemed as if the fourth round would end with no great waves occurring, but in the last game, there was actually a relatively shocking match that was announced, “Huo Yanluo against Mugu Jirong!”

Up until now, these two had experienced complete victory.

Han Yanluo was the direct disciple of the Refiner Faction, but Mugu Jirong was the second ranked disciple of the Puppet Faction.

This was a battle between a direct disciple and a second ranked disciple, and yet the audience favored Mugu Jirong!

Although Huo Yanluo was a direct disciple, the Array Faction and Refiner Faction had always been the two factions with the weakest combat potential. This was because a person had limited time and energy, and the disciples of these factions had to invest an excessive amount of time and effort into learning refining and array skills. This would inevitably affect their own strength.

In the general opinion of the audience, Huo Yanluo was on the same level as Fang Qi.

By comparison, Mugu Jirong may have been a second disciple, but he originated from the secretively formidable Puppet Faction. With only Mugu Buyu in front of him, the strength of this Mugu Jirong also had to been abnormally strong!

This match had a separate bet within the gambling house. Huo Yanluo’s odds were 1:3, but Mugu Jirong’s were 1:1.4.

From the very start of the match, Mugu Jirong brought out three puppets. Two of them were corpse puppets, and the last was a mechanical puppet created from materials.

As the three puppets attacked together, Han Yanluo quickly found himself surrounded and in danger.

Mugu Jirong smiled with a strange ‘jejeje’ sound. Although he hadn’t yet reached the Essence Integration boundary, he was still more than enough to deal with some Refiner Faction disciple.

Within several moves, Huo Yanluo was forced into a dead end!

“Jeje, the Refining Faction is just so weak. You can’t even beat me, but you think you can take on my Senior-apprentice Brother? Let me send on your way!”

Pah pah!

The mechanical puppet’s four arms took out shining long knives. But the other two corpse puppets also began to revolve true essence throughout their bodies; they were planning to attack Huo Yanluo from three different angles!

This was a sure-kill situation!

At this critical moment, Huo Yanluo’s pupils flashed with a dazzling red light, it was the color of fire!

“Abyssal Flames, explode!”

Bang!

It was as if Huo Yanluo’s body detonated and massive red crimson salamanders ran out from his body, directly streaking towards the three puppets!

A nightmarish blazing heat wave broke out, and the three puppets were washed in flame. The two corpse puppets were instantly burned to charcoal, and the last mechanical puppet was left half burned in fire!

Even the stone tiles underneath Han Yanluo melted, turning into magma!

Mugu Jirong was shocked, how was this possible!?

Even from a distance of over a hundred feet away, he could still feel that scorching hot heat wave; it was no different to a massive tsunami, flowing without end. He didn't doubt that if he hadn't withdrawn his true essence to protect his body, then even his clothes would have been instantly burnt away!

What kind of fire was this?

Was this… a Flame Essence? Even a normal Flame Essence wouldn't have such amazing power; it could only be… a high-grade Flame Essence!!!

Han Yanluo, a mere peak Pulse Condensation martial artist, was actually able to absorb a high-grade Flame Essence?

At this time, the audience watching the match was stunned, there were many among them that had a great understanding of Flame Essences.

"Heavens! Abyssal Flames! A medium-grade human-step Flame Essence!"

"It's also the highest among all the medium-grade human-step Flame Essences. One needs to be at least at the peak Houtian realm in order to absorb such a flame essence!"

"How did Huo Yanluo manage to absorb this?"

As the disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys discussed this, the disciples of the Refiner Faction's eyes were particularly blood-red!

A Flame Essence was something that they longed for in their every dream. Let alone a medium-grade human-step Flame Essence, even a low-grade human-step Flame Essence was something that they could only ever hope for in vain!

"Do not envy him, envying him is useless. Huo Yanluo's father is the Sovereign of the Refiner Faction. This medium-grade human-step Flame Essence was definitely placed within Huo Yanluo's body by the Refiner Faction Sovereign using some sort of special technique. For instance, if he had let Huo Yanluo suppress the Flame Essence in advance by soaking in

Glacial Ice Divine Spring Waters, and then resting on a Polar Jade Bed. If he had these things, he would be able to absorb the Flame Essence with only a cultivation at the early Houtian realm. Although Huo Yanluo is only at the peak Pulse Condensation period, his talent is quite amazing. He has a sixth-grade fire origin energy fusion compatibility, an early Houtian realm cultivation limit isn't something that can stop him."

"Glacial Ice Divine Spring? Heavens! I've only ever heard about something like that. It's said that a single vial takes 50 or 60 thousand true essence stones! Yet it was only used to let Huo Yanluo absorb the Abyssal Flame several boundaries early. This is just too extravagant a cost!"

"Don't complain, who told you not to have such a great father? Then again, Senior-apprentice Brother Huo's talent is just too amazing. Even if we had the same resources given to us, do you think we could do anything about it? We might have already been burnt to toast by the Abyssal Flame!"

"Ah! That is a medium-grade human-step Flame Essence! I don't even expect to be able to build up my Hollow Flame Essence to a 500 year rank in my life. In the future, I would be content just to have a low-grade human-step Flame Essence..."

....

In the Grand Hall of the Seven Profound Valleys, the Sword Faction Sovereign smiled as he turned to Huo Yanluo's father Huo Xuan, and said, "Old Huo, you really invested a lot this time!"

The Sword Faction Sovereign already knew that Huo Yanluo had absorbed a Flame Essence, he just didn't know that it was the medium-grade human-step Abyssal Flame.

"Hehe, don't mention it. I already wasted over an entire year of time in order to help my useless son absorb the Abyssal Flame." Although Huo Xuan seemed to complain, his entire face was all smiles. Obviously, he was very satisfied with his son. He had done all of this in order to have his son amaze the world at this Total Faction Martial Meeting. Although it would be difficult to take first place, he should still easily manage to reach the top 5. There was even a glimmer of hope to reach the top 3.

To the Refiner Faction that was normally weaker in combat, this was already a very good result.

“I heard that Yanluo’s fire true essence has reached a sixth-grade fusion?” The one was asking was a Sword Faction Great Elder.

Huo Xuan’s face was red with delight and pride. He waved his hand and said, “Medium sixth-grade, far from satisfactory.”

Ignoring his family background, the fact that Huo Yanluo was able to absorb a medium-grade human-step Flame Essence with his peak Pulse Condensation cultivation proved that he had a prodigious talent! If it wasn’t because of his sixth-grade fusion, then no matter how many resources Huo Xuan invested in him, it would still be useless.

On the martial stage, it was unexpectedly difficult to suppress the flames that burnt the puppets. Mugu Jirong watched helplessly as his mechanical puppet was almost entirely burnt away.

It had to be known that the main body of the mechanical puppet was created from fire resistant Purple Smoke Wood. It wouldn’t melt even if placed with darksteel magma, and yet it had instantly been burnt by the Abyssal Flames.

As for the puppet skeleton, it was made from high-grade human-step treasure Aged Gold. Even the heavy profound soft silver that was used to create the elastic joints melted away. The power of this medium-grade human-step Flame Essence was obvious.

Didn’t this mean that most treasures of martial artists would also be melted by the Abyssal Flame if they didn’t have true essence protection?

“Huo Yanluo, I will remember you!” Mugu Jirong retrieved the leftover pieces of the mechanical puppet into his puppet bag. He stared at Huo Yanluo with vulture-like eyes, “I acknowledge that I have lost this match. But next time, I will have you pay back everything you owe me, plus interest!"

Huo Yanluo's thick eyebrows furrowed together. He coldly said, "You still act in such a sad manner even though you lost. Just who do you think you are?"

"Humph!" Mugu Jirong coldly snorted and then turned around to leave the stage.

Before Huo Yanluo could say anything, he suddenly discovered that Mugu Buyu was staring at him from the side of the martial stage, his pair of beady eyes just like a venomous snake gazing at its prey.

Han Yanluo felt as if a chilling breeze touched his body. But knowing that he had the Abyssal Flame, he was not afraid of Mugu Buyu any longer. What other tricks could he play once all of his puppets were burnt down?

Thinking this, Han Yanluo regained his confidence and stared back at Mugu Buyu without fear.

The Puppet Faction hated showing weakness the most. Now that Huo Yanluo had ruined Mugu Jirong's three puppets and thus greatly reduced his combat strength, Mugu Buyu would certainly be looking forward to avenging this loss.

"Huo Yanluo, victory!"

As the referee elder made his announcement, the audience resounded with vibrant cheers. Although many of the Refiner Faction disciples still had some envious thoughts, they acknowledged Huo Yanluo's talent and were sincerely convinced by him. Since Huo Yanluo was the direct disciple of the Refiner Faction and had also defeated a powerful enemy, this was naturally worth cheering for.

The Refiner Faction was usually on the losing side, and yet this time they had created such a magnificent scene, how could they not be proud and exultant?

“We’re really seeing such fantastic scenes in these finals. Before it was Mugu Buyu and Lin Ming who stole the scene, and now this time it’s our Refiner Faction’s turn!”

“Ha! Now that Senior-apprentice Brother Huo has a medium-grade human-step Flame Essence, he should be able to stop Lin Ming, Huan Xiaodie, and Qin Wuxin. Although, I just don’t know how he will compare to someone like Mugu Buyu or Jiang Baoyun. Even if he’s not their match, that means he’s still guaranteed to reach the top 5, or he might even be able to fight for the top 3!”

“This time our Refiner Faction will really gain some face.”

In the contestant waiting area, Lin Ming stroked his chin; he hadn’t expected that Huo Yanluo would actually display a medium-grade human-step Flame Essence and cause such a great stir.

‘It seems that a Flame Essence and Thunder Soul are much more valuable and precious than I had first assumed. If I remember correctly, Mu Qianyu said that the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was a low-grade earth-step… luckily, Mu Qinghong came to the Seven Profound Valleys, otherwise I fear that I wouldn’t be able to display the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. Now that I have the support of Mu Qinghong, I can use any ability I wish. The more strength I show, the more resources I will be able to obtain!’

As Lin Ming was thinking this, he suddenly heard the referee announce, “Sixth round, first match! Lin Ming against Jiang Lanjian!”

Jiang Lanjian? Lin Ming was completely surprised. He didn’t think that he would meet Jiang Lanjian so soon!

Chapter 269 – Lin Ming VS Jiang Lanjian

Chapter 269 – Lin Ming VS Jiang Lanjian

…

…

…

Jiang Lanjian also hadn't thought that the match between him and Lin Ming would come so soon. This battle was one he was thoroughly looking forward to. It could be said that out of all his future opponents, Lin Ming was the one he most hoped to fight!

It wasn't because Lin Ming was the strongest. In Jiang Lanjian's opinion, Lin Ming's strength had already reached the top 5, and maybe top 3. But, Lin Ming's spearmanship and actually caused Jiang Lanjian's heart to race with excitement; his understanding of spearmanship was not inferior at all to Jiang Baoyun's swordsmanship!

What Jiang Lanjian most anticipated was the process of fighting with Lin Ming. In doing so, he hoped to increase his own comprehension of swordsmanship!

"Let's go on stage. This battle is one that I've been long awaiting. I will use everything I have in this match." Jiang Lanjian looked at Lin Ming, his eyes blazing with fighting spirit. His footsteps were quick, he had already appeared on the martial stage.

Lin Ming also launched Golden Roc Shattering the Void. His body flickered and he suddenly appeared 100 feet away from Jiang Lanjian.

The entire audience held their breath, paying close attention to this battle between a sword genius and a spear genius.

This match was one they were all impatiently hoping for, even more than Lin Ming's later fight with Jiang Baoyun. This was because Lin Ming and Jiang Lanjian's strength probably weren't too far off. Although the current Lin Ming who was in the spotlight seemed better, Jiang Lanjian still hadn't revealed the cards in his hands.

Qin Xingxuan unconsciously gripped her hands tight. Out of all the seeded players, Jiang Lanjian was the one she had contacted the most. They had been in close proximity a few times, and she was clearly able to feel the great power that emanated from Jiang Lanjian. This power even seemed to be above her master, Mister Muyi.

If Jiang Lanjian was placed within Sky Fortune Kingdom, his strength would at least be equal to a middle Houtian master.

Jiang Lanjian was only around 19 or 20 years old. As for her master Mister Muyi, he was already over 100 years old. This difference alone already stated the evident disparity between them.

As Qin Xingxuan thought back to over half a year ago when she had accompanied her master to see Lin Ming in the Great Clarity Pavilion's kitchen, she was overcome with many emotions. She had absolutely never imagined that the young boy from that time would grow even stronger than her master in less than a single year!

Jiang Lanjian flicked the longsword in his hand, a sharp energy emitting outwards. As he stood there, he seemed like a towering mountain peak, his lofty sword wind blowing from all directions, sweeping away the world.

Chi chi chi!

Lin Ming could clearly hear Jiang Lanjian's sword wind piercing his own aura. In comparison to Lin Ming's calm aura that was like an immovable mountain, Jiang Lanjian's sword wind obviously had a much greater attack power.

"Graceful Sword!"

As Jiang Lanjian stuck out with his sword, its speed was beyond incredible! His figure became a series of phantoms, and the sword light condensed into a fine line. Hidden within the air, it was almost invisible.

This was highly compressed true essence, its speed was simply frightening!

How could Lin Ming block this?

Lin Ming's vision widened. In his eyes, it also appeared that the sword light had vanished. However, he still had his perception, and the wind around him whispered to him where that sword wind was moving.

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Lin Ming instantly vanished from where he was, even the tiles under his feet cracked apart!

Cha cha cha cha!

As soon as Jiang Lanjian turned around, he cut out with 36 sword strikes!

Every single sword light was like a thin line, concise to the extreme. Highly compressed true essence was imbued within the sword energy – it was incomparably sharp!

Not only that, but all of Jiang Lanjian's sword strokes came from inconceivably tricky angles. It was just impossible to determine the trajectory of the sword, they could not be seen!

In the audience, as Zhang Yanzhao witnessed this display of sword skill, he let out a long breath of air. The true essence that Jiang Lanjian poured into his sword light wasn't strong – it could even be said to be weak – but after being highly compressed, it became truly fierce and keen.

His own Blood King's Triple Murder had a powerful striking force that was extremely startling. With just a saber strike, he had been able to shatter the arena and match a late Houtian realm master!

In terms of just that striking force, Jiang Lanjian could be said to be inferior to him. But the key point was, would he ever have the opportunity to use this strike, considering Jiang Lanjian's speed?

Although the time it took for Blood King's Triple Murder to gather strength was very short, it still took almost a breath of time. To a martial arts master, that was already more than enough time!

At that point, Lin Ming had been standing still on his area and allowing him to freely strike. But if it were Jiang Lanjian fighting him, he would instantly appear in front of him. What would happen then?

As Zhang Yanzhao imagined himself facing Jiang Lanjian's pervasive sword light, he broke into a cold sweat. As he ran the hypothetical scenario in his mind, he realized that once he was covered by this sword light, he would be defeated without a doubt!

"It seems I looked down wrongly on the Seven Profound Valleys' direct disciples. I thought that this time I could reach the first five, but it seems that I can't even deal with a mere Jiang Lanjian. It will be difficult to reach the top five! Lin Ming's fighting style is similar to mine – it is absolute suppression by force and aura, and his weapon is also meant for sweeping away armies of enemies, it isn't one that excels at speed. So just how will he deal with this?

Jiang Lanjian's attacks didn't give an earth shattering feeling, but they were peerlessly sharp and approached the extreme of speed. Jiang Lanjian's attacks and Zhang Yanzhao's were on two different ends of the spectrum. Zhang Yanzhao couldn't imagine any way for Lin Ming to block Jiang Lanjian's sword. Did this mean that it was time for Lin Ming's winning streak to come to an end?

This thought appeared not only in Zhang Yanzhao's mind, but also in most of the Seven Profound Valleys' elders'. The Sword Faction was well known as the wealthiest and strongest faction within the Seven Profound Valleys. These rumors were not groundless. They wholeheartedly pursued the path of the sword, swift and fierce, endless variation, quick, sharp, all of these traits were displayed at the highest level by Jiang Lanjian's hand!

On the martial stage, Lin Ming was continuously forced back dozens of feet until he finally reached the edge of the stage. There was nowhere left to go. His spear still contained the power of mountains and oceans as before, but when facing Jiang Lanjian's sword he had only been able to use Flowers in the Storm to block, and wasn't able to overcome the avalanche of sword light.

Still, Lin Ming had another way.

When Lin Ming had fought Zhu Yan, Zhu Yan's sword skills had already reached a high degree of proficiency. Still, Lin Ming had managed to keep him down. For every 3 or 4 sword strikes that Zhu Yan released, Lin Ming only used a single spear. By depending on Flow like Silk, he had been able to use that vastly dangerous vibrating true essence to redirect most of Zhu Yan's sword light.

But Jiang Lanjian's strength was far superior to that of Zhu Yan! His sword light was condensed to the extreme, where it was sufficient to break through the vibrating true essence.

But what if this vibrating true essence was combined with the power of the True Dragon?

In that split-second, Lin Ming's true essence turned into a vividly pure azure color!

Endless azure true essence gushed forth!

Ding ding ding ding ding ding ding!

Jiang Lanjian's countless sword lights poured onto that spear light like a torrential rain shower. In that moment, Jiang Lanjian only felt as if his sword were striking against a mountain. Lin Ming's spear was fused with a heavy vibrating true essence that emerged endlessly. No matter how condensed or thin his sword light was, he still wasn't able to pierce through!

Peng peng peng!

Jiang Lanjian's sword light was abruptly dispersed by the vibrations!

The vast tide of azure true essence continuously welled forth. No matter how quick Jiang Lanjian's sword light was, or how many cuts he made, they were all completely blocked by this tremendous azure true essence. If a normal person were to defend using their true essence, then Jiang Lanjian would have long since broken through their defense. As for Lin Ming, his azure true essence continued to grow, immovable!

Facing this great resistance, Jiang Lanjian felt as if his sword was a fish that was stuck in mud; his speed dropped precipitously!

"Mm? My heartbeat!?"

Jiang Lanjian was shocked. In that instant, he had felt the rhythm of his heartbeat being affected by that vast tide of vibrating true essence. It was as if all the blood in his body was trying to flow in reverse, and all of the true essence within his meridians was running amok in complete disorder.

Just what was going on!?!?

Jiang Lanjian's expression changed, "Is this the power of vibration? You've comprehended a Concept?"

"Concept?" Lin Ming was slightly stunned. He had managed to comprehend the Concept of Wind because he cultivated Golden Roc Shattering the Void. But as for other Concepts, he had no understanding of them, and he didn't have the time to ponder or meditate on them either.

When he had fused the azure true essence with Flow like Silk, the effect was much better. Of course, this was only from a preliminary fusion of the reverse scale blood. If he were able to display the full prestige of the reverse scale blood, it would definitely be stronger. No wonder the Sorcerer had listed the reverse scale blood as the most precious treasure within the Sorcerer Holy Land.

The audience was at a loss from the sudden change in the battle. They had only seen that Jiang Lanjian had released that incomparably sharp and deadly sword light a moment ago, and then he was actually forced back by Lin Ming's spear. They were just unclear as to what had happened during that time.

Zhang Yanzhao felt like his mind had fogged over. He thought that Lin Ming would surely have lost at that moment, and he wasn't clear why the tables had suddenly turned.

"Elder Jiang, what do you think just happened a moment ago?" It wasn't only the audience that was confused, even most of the elders failed to see the deep and profound mysteries and principles within Lin Ming's spear. They hadn't yet experienced the power of vibration personally; it was something that was difficult to see with just one's eyes.

Elder Jiang was a Great Elder of the Sword Faction. Jiang Lanjian was a child that he had single-handedly raised up.

"It's a kind of Concept."

When Elder Jiang spoke up about this so-called Concept, it was in truth a utilization of a natural Law. Without a doubt, the spear that Lin Ming had used had contained a Law a moment ago. This Law was able to dismantle Jiang Lanjian's onslaught.

"Concept?" A 16 year old little boy was able to comprehend a Concept and utilize a Law!? This boy's perception is just too ridiculous! Has Lanjian even comprehended a Concept?"

"He has, but his is inferior to his opponent's!" Elder Jiang's voice sank as he said this. Jiang Lanjian's talent was absolutely amazing. If it wasn't for the fact that Jiang Baoyun was an even more amazing individual, Jiang Lanjian would have no doubt been the direct disciple.

Jiang Lanjian was much older than Lin Ming, and he had only been able to barely touch upon the Concept threshold with personalized guidance. A Concept was a utilization of the power of Laws. The power of Laws was the underlying strength and origin source of every force in the entire universe. To want to comprehend this through meditation was easier said than done!

From this aspect, Lin Ming was far more dazzling and superior to Jiang Lanjian!

On the martial stage, Lin Ming was quietly thinking. To say that his power of vibration was a Concept wasn't wrong.

Flow like Silk could be said to be the Law of Vibration. It was the fusion of that Law with the countless tiny units within the human body. Nearly every martial artist within Sky Spill Continent didn't even know that the human body was comprised of countless tiny units; it would simply be impossible for them to be able to comprehend this Law through meditation.

"Lin Ming, you give me too many surprises!" Jiang Lanjian took a deep breath, and the true essence within his body began to undergo a subtle change. His aura became mercurial, elusive, and capricious like the wind.

Jiang Lanjian had already touched the threshold of the Concept of Wind. Under the instruction of the Sword Faction's Great Elder, he had been able to combine this Concept of Wind into his own sword. This ability was Jiang Lanjian's trump card, and now he had to choice but to use it. But to tell the truth, even with the advantage of this Concept, Jiang Lanjian had no certainty that he would win. To him, Lin Ming was simply an immeasurably deep ocean – he was unable to estimate exactly how deep his limit was.

"Concept of Wind!"

Jiang Lanjian's sword light which had started as a thin line suddenly scattered out. His sword energy was like the wind, without a shadow and without a trace!

Lin Ming’s eyes brightened, Concept of Wind!?

The Concept of Wind could actually be used in this way?

Chapter 270 – Concept Showdown

Chapter 270 – Concept Showdown

…

…

…

Lin Ming had already comprehended the Concept of Wind a long time ago. The basis for his comprehension of the Concept of Wind was the top movement skill from the Realm of the Gods, ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’.

‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’ was created by a senior Supreme Elder who had watched the cataclysmic battle between a Golden-winged Roc and a True Dragon. Afterwards, he had gone into closed seclusion for 60 years to meditate and comprehend the deep mysteries behind it. It could be said that the wind-attribute God Beast, the Golden-winged Roc, was the original ancestor of all wind. If the Concept of Wind was comprehended from its movements, the lofty heights of its boundary could be imagined!

Lin Ming’s perception wasn’t amazingly high, but it was by no means low. After a very long time, he had been able to trace upon the most basic superficial knowledge of ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’. Still, this little bit wasn’t something that a normal martial artist of the Sky Spill Continent could ever compare to. Even a wind-attribute martial artist who thoroughly studied wind true essence for their entire life would not be able to achieve something like this.

This could be called different starting points between their comprehensions of the Concept of Wind. Lin Ming’s starting point was simply much, much higher, it wasn’t something that a disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys could catch up to if they diligently trained for their entire life. It was just like how a common martial artist had a completely different starting point compared to a disciple of a great sect.

Although Lin Ming had understood a very high boundary of the Concept of Wind, it terms of utilizing its abilities, he could only find out through his own experiences. Lin Ming understood how to use the Concept of Wind for movement, but he didn't know that the Concept of Wind could also be used in attacking.

'I have to see just how the Concept of Wind can be used offensively, this is just a wonderful inspiration!' Lin Ming activated his soul force, tracing each and every action of Jiang Lanjian's movements with his perception.

Jiang Lanjian's sword seemed to be fused into the air. One couldn't even see the blade, they only saw brilliantly flashing sword lights.

Hu hu hu hu!

All of the surrounding wind was attracted by Jiang Lanjian's sword energy, creating a massive cyclone.

…….

"It's getting windy here!" Everyone in the audience felt a sudden change with the wind in the air, as if every single air current was converging onto the center of the stage.

"How is this possible? The martial stage has protective array formations, Jiang Lanjian's true essence shouldn't be able to break through it!"

Many of the disciples expressed surprise and wonder. At this moment, a Sword Faction disciple stuck out his chest and proudly said, "Heh, what do you know? A Concept is a power of Laws! Senior-apprentice Brother Jiang has already firmly grasped the power of a Law; it's just as if he were overlooking us from the top of the highest cliff. How could this power that comes from the origin of all existence be stopped by a Houtian level protection array!?"

The Power of Laws… it didn't even need to break through, but could still penetrate a Houtian level array formation? Regardless of whether it was a disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys, 36 countries, or 16 martial families, all of them were beyond startled. This was simply too abnormal!

"If one can comprehend a Concept, they can ignore an array formation? Then can an Array Faction disciple who has comprehended a Concept fight against someone who has also comprehended a Concept?" A martial artist from the 36 countries humbly asked.

The Sword Faction disciple looked at that disciple with disdain, "Humph, you think that it's so easy to comprehend a Concept? Its power is just too remote for the likes of you. Let alone your 36 countries, even in the entire younger generation of our Seven Profound Valleys, the number of people who have managed to comprehend a Concept can be counted on a single hand!"

"It's not difficult to use an array formation to suppress a Concept, it just needs an array master to also have comprehended that Concept and then add that Concept into the array formation!

Can be counted on a single hand?

Hearing this number, many of the disciples present gasped. When this disciple mentioned younger generation, that meant all disciples that were 26 or younger. That included not just the geniuses of this Total Faction Martial Meeting, but even the disciples of the last Martial Meeting, and the Martial meeting before that.

With all of these talents added together, the number of people who have managed to comprehend a Concept still could be counted on a single hand?

If this number was true, then Jiang Lanjian's perception was absolutely monstrous. If it wasn't for the even more abnormal Jiang Baoyun, then Jiang Lanjian would certainly have been the Sword Faction's direct disciple.

On the martial stage, the wind was blowing faster and faster, the air currents gathering to an extreme. Jiang Lanjian moved, his body suddenly blurring.

“Absolute Murder Breeze Blade!”

In that instant, all the wind in the air seemed to come to a standstill. Jiang Lanjian thrust out his sword, and 72 fierce sword energies molded into wind blades that pierced towards Lin Ming’s side.

However, Jiang Lanjian’s sword had vanished into the wind; the wind of the world was his sword!

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a bright light. True essence poured into the wind, and the sword melted into the wind. Using the wind as a sword, this was another way to utilize the Concept of Wind?

The long spear in Lin Ming’s hand began to tremble, the vibrating true essence within howling into the air, responding to Lin Ming’s desire to block Jiang Lanjian’s sword energy.

But at this moment, his pupils suddenly contracted.

Lin Ming hadn’t imagined that the first thing he would see coming at him was not the sword energy that Jiang Lanjian had released, but the hardened eyes of Jiang Lanjian!

Mm!?

Lin Ming was shocked, his movement speed was actually quicker than the sword energy!?!

Cha!

The longsword drew out an arc. Jiang Lanjian was actually a step faster than his own sword energy, he arrived in front of Lin Ming first, his sword stabbing out!

At such a close distance and with the fast sword fused with the Concept of Wind, it was impossible for Lin Ming to dodge, and he didn't have time to lift his spear! At this critical moment, Lin Ming's palm formed a saber, and he slapped down on Jiang Lanjian's sword!

Keeping off a saber with his hand!?

This was madness, utter madness!

The minds of everyone in the audience flashed with this thought. A sword and a spear were different. It was possible to keep off a spear by pushing down on the spear shaft, but a sword had two bladed sides, and this sword also contained an incomparably keen sword energy. Not only that, but the sword wielder was the sword talent Jiang Lanjian!

Even darksteel would be cut apart by Jiang Lanjian's sword!

Did Lin Ming not want this hand anymore!?

In that flash of light, the audience simply didn't have time to reflect on what was happening. Lin Ming's hand had already slapped down on top of the sword!

A turbulent azure true essence raged out!

The vibrating true essence was just like the tide of the ocean as it rushed the sword blade.

Chi chi chi!

Jiang Lanjian's blade was severely sharp, it endlessly sliced open true essence, but the azure true essence was simply endless; it could not be cut apart!

Jiang Lanjian was greatly surprised, he tried to arouse the true essence in his body to break apart Lin Ming's azure true essence, but at this moment, he felt his own sword violently shake. Lin Ming's true essence had penetrated through to his sword, scattering his sword energy.

"What!?"

Jiang Lanjian was shocked, he immediately pulled back his sword and withdrew like a storm. But in the moment that he retreated, the 72 sword energies that he had released earlier rushed around him, piercing towards Lin Ming!

This was the sword energy that he had previously sent forth. He had fused them completely into the wind. From the start until now, there had been no gap in this all-out attack, it was simply overwhelming!

Lin Ming had just blocked Jiang Lanjian's attack, and hadn't yet fully recovered from it. He was just unable to resist this blow!

Lin Ming shouted out and flew backwards. At the same time, the azure light protecting him suddenly rose like a deep sea sun!

Heretical God Force – open!

The azure true essence poured out without reservation, torrent upon torrent of blazing blue light!

Puff puff puff puff puff puff puff!

Although he had just managed to barely force away most of the sword energy, part of the sharp sword energy that contained the Concept of Wind managed to pierce through the true essence protecting Lin Ming. Even though he had opened the Heretical God Force, that sword energy had still made its way through and cut into his flesh!

However, Lin Ming's bodily defense had transformed after his experience in the Sorcerer Pagoda, and his body was tough to an abnormal degree!

As blood oozed from his wounds, Lin Ming was forced back dozens of feet until he stopped. He had been injured by 13 sword strokes!

After the azure true essence that protected his body weakened, the sword energy also weakened. As it cut into Lin Ming's tough flesh, it only cut less than an inch deep. To a martial artist with true essence at the Altering Muscle or Bone Forging stage, this could only be considered a light superficial wound!

Seeing Lin Ming stand on the martial stage as if nothing had happened, the audience all gaped at him.

This… was Lin Ming's body made from iron? Even iron would have been reduced to pieces!

He had kept off the sword with his hand. The hand was fine, and the sword had been forced away!

He had used his body to directly withstand the sword energy, and he had only received a light wound!

This defensive power was just an anomaly!

It had to be said that the sword and sword energy were sent out by Jiang Lanjian! And he had also fused the Concept of Wind into his strikes!

The offensive attack power of the Sword Faction was number one within the entire Seven Profound Valleys! And Jiang Lanjian was the second ranked talent of the Sword Faction's younger generation. His sword energy could easily slice apart darksteel!

In the contestant waiting area, Zhang Yanzhao was surging with emotions, his skin crawling with goosebumps. He imagined that if he had exchanged places with Lin Ming and had to face Jiang Lanjian who could use the Concept of Wind, then he would be defeated without a doubt! This…was simply too depressing a thought.

Let alone the late 72 sword energies, Zhang Yanzhao wouldn't even be able to keep off that first sword strike of Jiang Lanjian's. It was simply too fast!

There was no way he could keep off a sword with just his hands. When he had fought Lin Ming, he had used his own hand to stop Lin Ming's spear shaft, and his hand had almost shattered. If he tried to keep off Jiang Lanjian's sword, then he might as well cut off his own hand.

"This is the trump card that Jiang Lanjian has? He actually comprehended the Concept of Wind! If Jiang Lanjian hadn't encountered Lin Ming this time, then how many people would have been able to block his sword skill? This Lin Ming is just too abnormal. If a sword skill like that cannot defeat him, then exactly what can?"

....

On the martial stage, Lin Ming was holding his spear as he stood, staring at Jiang Lanjian. 'The Concept of Wind is truly endless and crafty in its usage. It is simply traceless! Jiang Lanjian is truly a genius; he managed to simultaneously fuse the Concept of Wind into his own attack and movements and create his own sword technique. If it wasn't for my fortuitous encounters in the Sorcerer Pagoda, I would have been defeated by this sword! If just Jiang Lanjian is this powerful, then what degree will Jiang Baoyun have arrived at? It seems I mistakenly underestimated the geniuses of the Seven Profound Valleys, after all, they are 3 or 4 years older than me!'

Jiang Lanjian's eyes shined brightly. 'The sword energy was useless against him? That azure true essence that protects Lin Ming is too strong. Not only that, but his body's defensive capabilities are astonishing. I really do not know what is so peculiar about his body, or how he managed to cultivate that azure true essence!'

'If sword energy is useless, then I can only directly attack with my sword!'

As Jiang Lanjian took a step forwards, the Concept of Wind rose up again!

"Seven Swords Absolute Summit!"

The sword light entered into the wind. This time, Jiang Lanjian chose to directly attack with his sword.

Without the strange sword energy, Jiang Lanjian’s attack was much clearer. Lin Ming stimulated his azure vibrating true essence, and dispersed Jiang Lanjian’s attack with a single spear strike!

However, although the attack was repulsed, the sword energy stayed. The sword energy had fused with the Concept of Wind – it could not be scattered. Whether it was a saber, sword, spear, or any other weapon, none of them were able to cut the wind!

As the two youths fought, their battle became fiercer and faster, but Lin Ming’s heart was becoming increasingly clear.

‘This wind will never disperse, so the sword energy will also not disperse. This way of attacking with the Concept of Wind… I understand it!’

‘Then I’ll just have to experience for myself how to fuse the Concept of Wind into the spear!’

In a split-second when Jiang Lanjian’s sword was drawn back, Lin Ming’s spear suddenly turned into countless phantom mirages…

“Flowers in the Storm!”

Out of all the moves in the ‘Foundation Spear Technique’, none of them were more suitable to display the Concept of Wind than Flowers in the Storm!

The spear light fused into the wind, with no shadow and no form. True essence suddenly swelled forth, and the wind on the stage suddenly turned into countless sharp blades that pierced towards Jiang Lanjian!

This sudden turn of events caused Jiang Lanjian to cry out in surprise. With a stuffy cough, he anxiously retreated. As he tried to suppress the roiling blood in his body, he cast an incredulous look towards Lin Ming.

“This… this is…”

“Concept of Wind!?!??”

This is impossible!

Impossible!

Chapter 271 – Stealing From a Master

Chapter 271 – Stealing From a Master

…

…

…

Jiang Lanjian's face flashed with bewilderment. Lin Ming had obviously used the Concept of Wind a moment ago. Not only that, but he was able to faintly feel that Lin Ming's Concept of Wind boundary was even higher than his own! It was as if he had touched upon the origin of all wind!

How was this possible?

There was complete silence in the entire area for several breaths of time. Suddenly, the noisy sound of discussion broke the quiet.

"Lin Ming actually comprehended the Concept of Wind? How did that happen?"

The Sword Faction disciple that had been so haughtily explaining the difficulty in comprehending the Concept of Wind to everyone around him that would listen, suddenly found himself unable to accept this new reality. In the entire Seven Profound Valleys' younger generation, the number of people that could understand a Concept could be counted on a single hand, and they had all did so in their later years when they had reached 19 or 20 years of age.

But as for Lin Ming, he was a mere 16 years old, and he also came from the pitiful background of the 36 countries. Who had taught him how to comprehend the Concept of Wind? Had he learnt it himself?

“Haha! You just said that we 36 countries’ disciples couldn’t comprehend the Concept of Wind, and look at that! Now what, huh!?” All of the 36 countries’ disciples that heard the bragging of the Sword Faction disciple suddenly felt extremely proud and glorious. Before, they had been talked down to like little country bumpkins who had wandered into a bustling major city, and their hearts had already lit with a simmering fire. Before, they didn’t know what a Concept of Wind was, nor that Lin Ming had also managed to understand it, so they could only shut up as others boasted around them.

Now, they could finally come back.

“Haha, a little pitiful Concept of Wind, even if the Seven Profound Valleys doesn’t have over 5 people that can comprehend it, it’s not anything to someone as cool and awesome as Lin Ming.”

“Maybe Lin Ming hadn’t even understood the Concept of Wind, but comprehended it after watching Jiang Lanjian display it. Comprehending this sort of small fry stuff would probably only take Lin Ming half an incense stick of time.”

“Right, right, right! Or else why would Lin Ming drag this fight out for so long? The reason is because he was meditating on the Concept of Wind from Jiang Lanjian’s blade!

This disciple’s wonderful fantasies were immediately approved and welcomed by everyone. In their minds, the Concept of Wind sounded very powerful, but to the omnipotent Lin Ming, it should be enough just tossing it a few thoughts, it was just absolutely nothing.

Hearing this idea spread through the crowd, the Seven Profound Valleys’ Sword Faction disciple could only force a smile, he was disinclined to argue with them. Did they think that the Concept of Wind was some cabbage that they could eat whenever they wanted?

In the Grand Hall of the Seven Profound Valleys, several Great Elders had the feeling that this was something they couldn’t immediately accept, even if placed in front of them; they had simply never seen a genius of this level before.

If he could actually comprehended a Concept, then there was probably nothing else that Lin Ming couldn't!

A Sword Faction Great Elder lamentably shook his head and said, "Lin Ming not only comprehended the Concept of Wind, but the boundary at which he's done so is very high. Unfortunately, Lanjian's Concept of Wind was his final trump card, but it's too bad he's only showing off his meager skill in front of a true expert."

Shi Zongtian was silent. Jiang Lanjian was already considered a talent among talents, and the Concept of Wind was sufficiently powerful to be called one's secret card.

What a pity it was that Jiang Lanjian's match was against Lin Ming.

As Mu Qinghong looked at the amazing expressions on these old elders' faces, the smile that crossed hers was growing more and more. She felt that Lin Ming was simply an endless trove of treasure, he always brought new and wonderful surprises.

Something like the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder could be said to be obtained by luck or fortune. Individual cultivation could be enhanced by valuable materials or other rare medicines and treasure. But as for Lin Ming's comprehension of the Concept of Wind, spear skills, and martial intent, all of those depended on his own heart of martial arts and monstrous perception. There was no fortuitous encounter that could ever help him with that.

Spear path, Concept, martial intent, soul force; Lin Ming had made startling progressing in all four of these major aspects. Not only that, but his cultivation could also be considered at the pinnacle of his age, and he also had a high thunder origin energy fusion compatibility. With his mere Bone Forging cultivation, he had managed to absorb the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, and his body seemed to contain the bloodline of some ancient beast.

Lin Ming's existence had already exceeded the limits of common sense.

Mu Qinghong secretly thought, “Even Qianyu hadn’t completely understood Lin Ming, he is even more wonderful than she had imagined! My Divine Phoenix Island will never let go of a talent like this.”

On the martial stage, Jiang Lanjian heaved a heavy sigh. “Lin Ming, I, Jiang Lanjian have never witnessed someone of your talent in my life. I might have already lost this match, but until the final moment, I will not put down my sword!”

Jiang Lanjian brought his sword in front of him, directed straight at Lin Ming.

“Good, I also want to enjoy a satisfying battle with you.” Lin Ming brightly laughed and then smiled at Jiang Lanjian. Jiang Lanjian’s words were just what he had hoped for, he also wanted to continue dueling with Jiang Lanjian and attain more inspirations about the Concept of Wind.

“Graceful Sword!”

Jiang Lanjian thrust his sword out again, and a strong wind howled around him. Lin Ming’s spear had also fused into the wind, and under the blessing of the Concept of Wind, his spear speed had reached a terrifying degree. One could listen to the sharp cries as the long spear broke through the wind; it seemed as if spear shadows covered the sky!

If there was a weakness in Lin Ming’s spearmanship, that would be that his attack speed was too slow!

But in truth, this really could not be considered a shortcoming. A spear was originally a heavy weapon meant to be used against armies. It emphasized oppressing and overwhelming all opposition by brute strength; it was simply impossible for it to display such an extreme speed like a sword.

Therefore, when Lin Ming had been facing Jiang Lanjian’s sword light that seemed everywhere, he was only able to rely on his vibrating true essence to fend it off.

But now, with the Concept of Wind behind his back, his spear wasn't actually much slower than Jiang Lanjian's sword!

Ding ding ding ding ding ding ding ding!

In a few breathes of time, it was unknown how many times Lin Ming and Jiang Lanjian's spear and sword had exchanged blows. Lin Ming's speed hadn't fallen at all!

Even the surrounding wind began to fall under Lin Ming's sway, condensing into sharp wind blades that attacked Jiang Lanjian!

The elders in the Seven Profound Valleys' Grand Hall were becoming more and more flabbergasted as they watched the match go on. They had thought that Lin Ming's comprehension of the Concept of Wind was at a very high state, but they realized that even they had underestimated him. As this match progressed, Lin Ming was becoming increasingly deft with the Concept of Wind; it was already far beyond anything Jiang Lanjian could hope to compare with.

"I can't imagine how he managed to contemplate this!" The Sword Faction's Great Elder sighed with emotion. To have a 1200 jin Heavy Profound Soft Spear keep up with the speed of a longsword, Lin Ming's comprehension of the Concept of Wind was simply inconceivable.

"I feel like… as Lin Ming continues to progress in this match, it seems that Lin Ming is imitating Lanjian's moves!"

"Mm!?"

As an elder casually spoke his thoughts, all of them became startled!

Jiang Lanjian's Graceful Sword was able to hide the sword blade in the wind. When he did so, Lin Ming also hid his spear in the wind!

When Jiang Lanjian condensed blades of wind to attack, so did Lin Ming.

When Jiang Lanjian fused the sword energy into the wind so that the wind would not disperse and the sword energy would not disperse, Lin Ming also fused his spear light into the wind – it was almost the exact same process!

“He is studying Lanjian’s styles.”

“Heavens… did he not comprehend the Concept of Wind before this, and suddenly comprehended it during this fight against Lanjian?”

“That’s impossible, no talent can be like such. He must have comprehended it a long time ago, but didn’t have a master to teach him. He was only able to rely on his heaven defying perception to comprehend the Concept of Wind, but didn’t understand just how to use it to attack. Now, he’s found inspiration in Lanjian’s sword, and his self-taught Concept of Wind has already surpassed Lanjian by many degrees. This young boy its just too terrifying!”

On the martial stage, the outcome was already clear to all. Over 90% of the power of wind was sent by Lin Ming. As for Jiang Lanjian, he wasn’t even able to muster 10% of the power of wind.

Bang!

As Jiang Lanjian met Lin Ming’s attack, he was forced backwards dozens of feet. He wiped off the blood from the corners of his mouth and put away the longsword in his hand, “I admit defeat.”

“Thank you!”

Lin Ming cupped his hands together in respect. He did not say the more formal and polite ‘well fought’, but instead thanked him. This was naturally because in this fight, Jiang Lanjian had taught him much about how to use the Concept of Wind to attack.

The memories of the Realm of the Gods’ Supreme Elder was incomparably fragmented, there were very few complete memories. Although Lin Ming was able to comprehend the Concept of Wind, the memories of the methods of utilization were lost. If it wasn’t for Jiang

Lanjian, then it would have been a long time before he was able to utilize the Concept of Wind in different ways.

"Lin Ming, victory!"

With the announcement from the referee elder, many of the Seven Profound Valleys' disciples gasped together.

Jiang Lanjian had also been defeated!

Qin Wuxin who had mastered Large Success of her Zither Heart, or Huo Yanluo who controlled a Flame Essence, could either of them stop Lin Ming's winning streak?

Lin Ming turned around to spot Jiang Baoyun watching him in the midst of the crowd. Jiang Baoyun's two eyes pierced him like twin sword lights, it was impossible not to notice.

Jiang Baoyun faintly smiled. Lin Ming also politely returned a smile, but his heart was feeling quite cold.

Although Lin Ming had defeated Jiang Lanjian, he didn't feel relaxed at all. In this match, he had already used all of his cards besides Thunderfire Annihilation and the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder.

He had already shown the azure true essence, Concept of Wind, Heretical God Force, and Flow like Silk.

All these abilities had been used, and yet he had still been injured!

Jiang Lanjian's Absolute Murder Breeze Blade was too strong. It was not that Lin Ming didn't want to dodge, but that he couldn't.

It could be said that if Lin Ming hadn't 'stolen' the method to utilize the Concept of Wind in attacks and deprived Jiang Lanjian of his control over the wind, then it would have been extremely difficult for him to win the match!

Now seeing Jiang Baoyun's smile, Lin Ming suddenly remembered that from the start until now, he had never seen an expression of panic, surprise, or astonishment on Jiang Baoyun's face.

Maybe this was because Jiang Baoyun had reached Large Success of his Sword Heart, but it was most likely because he had absolute belief in his own ability!

Regardless of whether it was Mugu Buyu's Essence Integration, Lin Ming's own hidden cards coming out one after another, or even Huo Yanluo's shocking Flame Essence, Jiang Baoyun had maintained a tranquil expression through all of it, just like a light spring afternoon.

The feeling he gave off was as if everything was in the grasp of his palm.

Then… what were Jiang Baoyun's own hidden cards? What did he rely on to be so confident in himself?

If Jiang Lanjian, the second ranked disciple of the Sword Faction was already so formidable, then how strong was the direct disciple, Jiang Baoyun? Just what were the limits of his strength?

Lin Ming let out a long breath. He realized that his own chances of defeating Jiang Baoyun were not high at all!

The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was without a doubt an attack with a monstrous attack power. But a battle didn't look at whose attack power was stronger, but rather who could win.

In terms of attack power, Jiang Lanjian was still inferior to Zhang Yanzhao.

But Zhang Yanzhao could not win against Jiang Lanjian!

This was because he would have already lost before he used the Blood King's Triple Murder!

Like this, could he defeat Jiang Baoyun using the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder?

The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was amazingly strong, but if it could not strike Jiang Baoyun, then it was completely useless.

Would Jiang Baoyun's sword be slower than the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder? Could he dodge it?

Lin Ming surmised the outcome of the future match in his heart, and realized that as long as Jiang Baoyun's sword speed had reached a certain level, and he comprehended another Concept besides the Concept of Wind, then he would definitely lose!

Besides the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, Lin Ming also had Thunderfire Annihilation. But, because the Flame Essence was much weaker and thus imbalanced, Thunderfire Annihilation wouldn't be much stronger than the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. Not only that, but the consumption of energy was tremendous and it took a long period of time to wind up. The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was currently a much more practical move.

'It looks like I underestimated the Seven Profound Valleys' direct disciples. With Jiang Baoyun's talent, he would also be fantastic if placed within a fourth-grade sect. Not only that, but he is older than me by three years!'

Chapter 272 – The Hero of Our Era

Chapter 272 – The Hero of Our Era

…

…

…

Jiang Lanjian returned to his own seat and quietly watched Lin Ming. He turned to Jiang Baoyun sitting beside him and said, “Lin Ming might join the Sword Faction in the future. Without accident, he will probably become the next first ranked disciple of the Sword Faction, and he might even be the strongest person in the Seven Profound Valleys’ entire younger generation!”

“Maybe.”

Jiang Baoyun faintly replied.

“Aren’t you worried?” Jiang Lanjian looked into Jiang Baoyun’s eyes, hoping to discern something from within them.

“Why should I be worried?”

“Worried that he might steal your position and take your resources. Right now you are the one with the most potential for growth in the entire Seven Profound Valleys’ younger generation, and are also a Sword Faction talent that hasn’t been seen in a hundred years. Before this, the Total Faction and Sword Faction would do whatever it took to raise you. But, if Lin Ming came…”

What Jiang Lanjian said was the truth. This was what 99 out of 100 people would worry about. In the end, the Seven Profound Valleys had limited resources.

Jiang Baoyun laughed, “Take my resources? Haha, Lanjian, do you think you can produce a top Revolving Core master by piling up resources?”

As Jiang Baoyun said this, Jiang Lanjian froze. He wasn’t wrong. One could pile up resources to bring up a Pulse Condensation martial artist, or even a Houtian realm martial artist. If one were truly desperate, they could waste several dozens of Heaven Opening Pills in order to create a Xiantian realm master. But there had never been a case of a truly mighty Revolving Core master being created from any piles of resources. Even if these so-called geniuses wanted to reach the Revolving Core realm, it would be nigh impossible!

Jiang Baoyun said, “If a martial artist wholeheartedly expects and desires only resources from the sect, then his heart of martial arts will suffer and waste away. This sort of person will never become anything great! I am a swordsman, and I will only believe in the sword I hold, not the resources that the sect provides me! Much less, the Seven Profound Valleys is only a third grade sect. In terms of resources, who can we compare to? Can we compare to Divine Phoenix Island? Can we compare to Peacock Mountain?

“When we geniuses are in the Pulse Condensation period, it is possible that our strength can compare to a normal middle Houtian realm, or even late Houtian realm master. This sounds amazing, but the truth is those Houtian realm masters will be inferior to us for their entire lives! They will never step into the Xiantian realm. After we reach into the Xiantian realm, the only ones that can compare to us will be a Xiantian master. These Xiantian realm masters were also the same as us when they were in the Pulse Condensation period, they will have the same talent as us!

“All of us are geniuses. If I’m worried about just this and cannot blossom as a martial artist, then what qualifications do I have to impact the Revolving Core realm?

“My goal is clear, and that is to pursue the ultimate sword, to find out what lies at the end of the sword path. I do not fear that others will be my rivals; on the contrary, what I fear is that no one will be my opponent! If one day a peerless talent of Sky Spill Continent were to appear in front of me, and I were to be able to surpass his shadow, then I will become one of the true heroes of this era!”

Jiang Baoyun spoke with a manner as if he were looking down on the world. As Jiang Lanjian heard this, he also felt his heart stirring and his emotions surging. Jiang Lanjian's own talent was already quite good, but in comparison to his Senior-apprentice Brother who was about the same age as him, he had always been a step behind. Jiang Lanjian was thoroughly convinced of his strength.

He said, "Senior-apprentice Brother is correct. For us swordsmen, to have a powerful opponent is what we wish for the most!"

…….

After the match between Lin Ming and Jiang Lanjian, the matches were much quieter. There were no more matches worth paying attention to in the sixth ground.

During the seven round, fifth match, Zhang Yanzhao faced off against Fang Qi. Fang Qi once again placed down his Nine Circles of Blue Light Arrays, but they were all torn apart by Zhang Yanzhao's Blood King's Triple Murder.

Fang Qi once again suffered a miserable defeat.

Fang QI was just helpless. The disciples of the Array Faction were best at fighting positional battles, but Zhang Yanzhao's attack power was one of the best among all the contestants. Fang Qi was like a fort, and the Blood King's Absolute Murder was the heaven collapsing landslide. In front of this attack, his Nine Circles of Blue Light Array were just like fragile eggshells.

Eighth round, third match. Zhang Yanzhao against Jiang Lanjian.

In terms of striking power, Zhang Yanzhao naturally surpassed Jiang Lanjian. However, no matter how strong his attack power was, it was all useless if he couldn't use it!

Jiang Lanjian's sword energy turned into a thin line of highly compressed true essence. In a split second, he had sent out several dozen sword strikes. The sword energy weaved out just like a dense net!

This sort of highly compressed sword energy was extremely sharp and formidable, it was also extremely difficult to destroy.

Jiang Lanjian hadn't used the Concept of Wind. Even without it, he had already placed Zhang Yanzhao into a very difficult situation.

His sword was just like a venomous serpent. Every time, it would pierce through the weak points of Zhang Yanzhao's true essence, and wouldn't give Zhang Yanzhao any chance to condense his true essence.

Zhang Yanzhao couldn't use his full strength. Facing the intense hail of sword energy he was overwhelmed and continuously struck by sword energy. Although he wanted to attack Jiang Lanjian, all he could ever hit was his own shadows; he couldn't even touch the hem of Jiang Lanjian's clothes.

Chi chi chi!

Zhang Yanzhao's arm cuffs and pants were all cleanly sliced off by the sword wind. This was obviously Jiang Lanjian's staying his hand. Otherwise, Jiang Lanjian had the capability to even cut off Zhang Yanzhao's arms and feet.

Zhang Yanzhao sighed and placed back his saber; there was no longer any point in continuing this match. Jiang Lanjian had already given him enough face by going easy, if he continued he would only be disgracing himself.

"I admit defeat."

"Well fought." Jiang Lanjian cupped his fists together in respect, and turned around to leave. Although he had struck out with his sword more often, he hadn't used much true essence. As for Zhang Yanzhao who had been slashing out with massive waves of true essence, he was already panting on the ground.

The disparity was too great!

Before this battle had even started, Zhang Yanzhao had already speculated that he would most likely lose to Jiang Lanjian. But he hadn't thought that he would lose without being able to force Jiang Lanjian to use the Concept of Wind.

"It is how it is, Yanzhao didn't lose without cause." The Elders of the Zhang Family could only sigh. In the fight between Lin Ming and Jiang Lanjian, they hadn't been able to feel just how strong Jiang Lanjian was. But now that Jiang Lanjian and Zhang Yanzhao fought, the difference in their strength was obvious. Zhang Yanzhao hadn't even been able to force out his opponent's trump card.

It was hard to imagine that Lin Ming was able to defeat such a powerhouse that could defeat Zhang Yanzhao without any resistance.

Eighth round, tenth match. Jiang Baoyun against the Puppet Faction's second disciple, Mugu Jirong.

This match was more or less decided. No one was anxious about it. What was even worse was that Mugu Jirong had lost three puppets. Even if all of his puppets were still fully intact, no one believed that Mugu Jirong had any chance of defeating Jiang Baoyun.

Jiang Baoyun didn't even bring out his sword. He merely used his sword fingers and was able to break through the true essence protecting Mugu Jirong's body.

"Jiang Baoyun, victory!"

When the referee announced this, the entire audience gasped.

Although Mugu Jirong's combat power had drastically fallen, for better or for worse he was still the second ranked disciple of the Puppet Faction. The Puppet Faction was not a weak faction, and their second disciple was far superior in combat than the direct disciples of the Array Faction and Refiner Faction.

This could be seen from the match between Mugu Jirong and Huo Yanluo. At the start, Mugu Jirong was able to easily push Huo Yanluo into a corner. It was only when Huo Yanluo suddenly used a Flame Essence that he won. Otherwise, Mugu Jirong would have inevitably won.

But now that formidable Mugu Jirong hadn’t even been able to force Jiang Baoyun to bring out his sword. This difference in their strength was simply too great.

“He’s just too strong! From his first match, Jiang Baoyun had never drawn his sword. He only used his sword fingers to sweep away all his opponents!”

“The Sword Faction was originally the strongest faction in the Seven Profound Valleys, and Jiang Baoyun is the most outstanding talent that the Sword Faction has seen in the last 100 years. His strength is already beyond the imaginations of people like us. Putting aside Jiang Baoyun, even Jiang Lanjian’s talent has already caught up with the Sword Faction’s former direct disciples. Out of the current seven direct disciples, half of them are inferior to Jiang Lanjian! This could be seen from when Jiang Lanjian had defeated Zhang Yanzhao! He won even without using the Concept of Wind!”

“Right, the only reason that Jiang Lanjian lost to Lin Ming is because Lin Ming is too strong, not because Jiang Lanjian is weak. I think that Jiang Lanjian will definitely be able to reach the top 6. As for Lin Ming, he might even reach the top 3!

……………

When Jiang Baoyun walked down from the stage, he saw Mugu Buyu looking at him with a strange smile, making small ‘jejeje’ laughing noises.

Jiang Baoyun and Mugu Buyu were without a doubt the two disciples of this Total Faction Martial Meeting that were popular as the ones with the highest chances to become the champion. Ouyang Ming, who had blossomed in glorious splendor during the last Martial Meeting, was already completely overshadowed by them.

“Jiang Baoyun, you sure are cruel enough. I want to have a look and see just how long you can hide your sword!” Jiang Baoyun hadn’t even used his sword to defeat the second ranked disciple of the Puppet Faction, causing the Puppet Faction to lose face. This caused Mugu Buyu to not feel happy at all.

Jiang Baoyun smiled and said, “I won’t be hiding it much longer, but… you shouldn’t care about me, you should care more about yourself. Against Lin Ming, your little toys might be broken.”

“Lin Ming? Hehehe! You think that I am as useless as that Jiang Lanjian?” Mugu Buyu sneered, “Jiang Baoyun, when you and I fight, I hope that you will still have some cards in your hand. Otherwise, you won’t have the qualifications to force me to use my full strength!”

Jiang Baoyun only smiled, no longer speaking. Mugu Buyu, who had achieved the Essence Integration boundary really was a powerful opponent, but, Jiang Baoyun had a faint instinctual feeling that Lin Ming was the greater threat!

…………

Ninth round, first match. Huan Xiaodie against Mugu Buyu!

When the small, cute, and charming Huan Xiaodie stepped on stage with a cheerful smile, the entire audience thought that this would be an extremely fierce battle. Even Lin Ming was closely watching to have a good look at Mugu Buyu’s strengths. But, no one had imagined that right after the referee announced the start of the match, that Huan Xiaodie would impishly smile and then simply say, “I admit defeat!”

The entire audience was stunned, even Lin Ming was speechless. Even the worst of the seven direct disciples, Fang Qi, had fought a symbolic battle against Mugu Buyu, causing him to reveal his Essence Integration boundary.

This Huan Xiaodie should at least be stronger than Fang Qi, but she didn’t seem to care about the face of a direct disciple at all, instead admitting defeat as soon as she could.

The audience was somewhat disappointed that this splendid match didn't come to fruition. However, that disappointment quickly faded as another heavyweight match began.

"Ninth round, third match. Lin Ming against Qin Wuxin!"

The Zither Faction was the most understated and low-key faction of the Seven Profound Valleys. They didn't have many people, but their disciples were not weak. on the contrary, they had many strange and peculiar attack methods that were exceedingly difficult to deal with.

Qin Wuxin's personality was also very low-key. Many people only knew that she was young and had reached Large Success of her Zither Heart. But as for just how strong she was, no one was actually clear.

Lin Ming also didn't know anything about Qin Wuxin, but he knew approximately what it meant to reach Large Success of the Zither Heart.

At first, when Qin Ziya had been at the peak of Houtian realm, he had taken a Heaven Opening Pill in order to breakthrough to the Xiantian realm. But because of a flaw in his Zither Heart, he had failed.

Afterwards, Qin Ziya had gone out exploring the world, traveling to the deep valleys and glens, finally spending a full decade to successfully cultivate Large Success of his Zither Heart!

Qin Ziya had originally been a musician, and he had very outstanding attainments in zither skills. If he had not started his cultivation at such a late stage, he most likely would already be at the Xiantian realm. Even so, Qin Ziya still used a full 10 years of adventuring to temper his Zither Heart to the Large Success stage. But in comparison to Qin Wuxin, the disparity between them was too great, it was enough to horrify anyone!

Chapter 273 – Sonic Attack

Chapter 273 – Sonic Attack

…

…

…

Lin Ming and Qin Wuxin's match caused the audience to seethe with burning excitement.

Qin Wuxin was a very popular and well-known figure within the Seven Profound Valleys. Out of the seven great direct disciples, two were women. One was Qin Wuxin of the Zither Faction, and the other was Huan Xiaodie of the Mirage Faction.

Compared to the small and exquisite, eternally child-like Huan Xiaodie, Qin Wuxin had grown up as a slender and magnificently proportioned women in all aspects; she was more popular by far. Many of the Seven Profound Valleys' disciples had already unconsciously taken Qin Wuxin as their heart's forbidden dream crush.

"Zither Faction disciple Qin Wuxin, please advise."

Qin Wuxin stood still on the martial stage, her white gown floating gently around her, her appearance graceful and elegant. Because she had reached Large Success of her Zither Heart, she had a sort of speechless ethereal quality that couldn't be touched upon. She calmly took down the zither on her back and gently waved her long sleeves. The zither suspended itself in front of her in midair, as if it had been placed on an invisible platform.

The audience's cheers for Qin Wuxin were like an overwhelming tide that wouldn't end. However, Qin Wuxin only silently played her zither, as she sat there seemingly unaffected by anything else.

"Sky Fortune Kingdom's Lin Ming, please advise."

The first course of action that Lin Ming took was to stimulate the azure true essence to protect his body. Lin Ming didn't know much about the Zither Faction's types of attacks, so it was best to be overly cautious.

As the referee elder announced the start of the match, Qin Wuxin's ten fingers plucked on the zither strings, and a magnificent melody flowed from them like a sweet spring mountain stream. This melody seemed simple, but Lin Ming felt a trace of true essence dissolved into the notes, as if it could shock the entire martial stage.

Although Lin Ming had great confidence in himself, he wouldn't let Qin Wuxin play her weird little zither tunes. He clearly remembered that when Qin Wuxin had fought Jing Chanyu, she had only needed to pluck a few strings in order to shatter Jing Chanyu's earth-attribute protective barrier as if it was some frozen brittle glass, immediately causing it to burst. Not only that, but Qin Wuxin hadn't even allowed a smidgen of true essence to escape, to the point that Jing Chanyu hadn't even realized that Qin Wuxin had attacked.

The young lady of the Zither Faction was no weakling. It was also because her nature was to remain low-key, so no one had realized the depth of her skills until now.

The Heavy Profound Soft Spear came out, and Lin Ming thrust forth straight towards Qin Wuxin's chest.

Azure true essence howled in the air, and the strength of the True Dragon endlessly gushed forth, mixing with Flow like Silk's power of vibration. With these two forces superimposing upon each other, this spear of Lin Ming's was seemingly impossible to resist. Even if it were Jiang Lanjian he would have to move.

Qin Wuxin turned her fingers, and her pinky plucked a string. Suddenly, an invisible sound wave shot forth like an arrow, smashing into Lin Ming's spearpoint!

Zhi—

Lin Ming only felt an extremely high-frequency true essence shock his Heavy Profound Soft Spear, fiercely clashing with the azure true essence.

Both true essences contained an extremely powerful vibration. After they impacted, a shrill grating sound rang through the air, just like a sharp knife running across glass!

The martial stage's protective light curtain was unable to isolate sound. Many of the lower cultivation disciples on the edges could only cover their eyes and run backwards, their faces pale.

'Mm? A note blocked my spear?'

Lin Ming was slightly surprised. At that time, although the azure true essence that was contained within his Heavy Profound Soft Spear wasn't scattered, the force of vibration was cancelled out. Even if this spear continued forth, it would no longer have the same striking power unless Lin Ming stabbed out again.

Qin Wuxin had only let loose a single sonic wave through her note, and she was actually able to keep off his attack. This method of approach was much calmer than Jiang Lanjian!

However, Lin Ming knew that the reason Qin Wuxin could do this was not because she was stronger than Jiang Lanjian, but because her soundwaves contained an intense vibration.

This was the same result as Flow like Silk from a different method!

In truth, a soundwave was simply a vibration in the air. If one were to pour true essence into this soundwave, the true essence would naturally vibrate along with the soundwave, and the frequency of vibration could be changed depending on the intensity of the sonic wave.

'It's not that my azure true essence lost, but my Flow like Silk lost to Qin Wuxin's power of vibration!'

Qin Wuxin’s musical note wasn’t able to scatter the endless azure true essence, but it was able to directly counter the azure true essence’s vibration. This caused Lin Ming to be extremely startled. There were many missing sections of Flow like Silk from the memory fragment of that Supreme Elder. Lin Ming was only able to deduce and comprehend the training method for Flow like Silk after meditating over the ‘Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist’ for a long time. It had already been half a year since then, and his progress to reaching the next boundary was extremely slow.

And today, his Flow like Silk actually lost to Qin Wuxin’s music which contained the force of vibration.

The audience saw Qin Wuxin force back Lin Ming with a single note, and all of them suddenly went into a rabid frenzy. All of Qin Wuxin’s many supporters began to cheer at the top of their lungs, shouting out supportive messages to Qin Wuxin, wanting her to end Lin Ming’s winning streak.

Qin Wuxin ignored all of the audience’s deafening cheers as if she didn’t hear them. During this short fight, even she had been shocked. The vibrations of her zither music had always been able to go everywhere, they could penetrate any defense and destroy all. When Qin Wuxin had gone out adventuring to temper her Zither Heart, she had met many high level vicious beasts that were entirely covered in armor, and yet she had only needed a single note to easily slay them.

But now, her zither music had penetrated into Lin Ming’s long spear, yet hadn’t been able to scatter his true essence; she had only barely managed to counter his attack. No wonder Jiang Lanjian had lost under his hand.

Qin Wuxin spread back her flowing silk sleeves, and a gentle sound emitted from the zither strings, directly hitting Lin Ming.

This sonic wave attack was invisible with no form. By the time one heard the sound, they were already under attack!

This was the first time that Lin Ming had faced this sort of invisible attack, and he was caught off guard. The azure true essence in his body was violently agitated, and Lin Ming gave a smothered cough, retreating a few steps as the blood in his body surged.

“Good weird attack!”

If Lin Ming had ordinary true essence protecting him instead of the azure true essence, he might have already been crushed by that single note!

But even with the azure true essence, it could still only withstand two or three more of these attacks in such a short time. If it took any more, his true essence protection would break. When that time came, Lin Ming would have to face Qin Wuxin’s sonic wave attacks with his bare body.

Although Lin Ming’s body was physically tough, it still wasn’t as tough as a high level vicious beast. And even a high level vicious beast that came under assault from this sound wave attack would crumble apart. The outcome could be imagined once Lin Ming lost the protection of his true essence.

Qin Wuxin’s delicate eyebrows furrowed together. Her sound attack had actually been calmly met and taken by Lin Ming. The formidability of his defensive power had surpassed her imagination.

Her ten fingers flashed atop the zither and a series of notes howled forth; this was a full on invisible mass attack!

In the audience, Ouyang Ming’s eyes jumped as he saw this. The Zither Faction’s attack methods were too strange. Even if he was the one that was to face Qin Wuxin on the martial stage, this match would give him an incomparable headache. This sort of attack was invisible and formless, and was just too difficult to defend against. Not only that, but every soundwave contained a powerful attack power. Once hit, even one’s internal organs would be damaged.

How would Lin Ming respond to this?

It wasn't just Ouyang Ming who wanted to know, but also the many elders of the Seven Profound Valleys were looking at Lin Ming with anticipation from the Grand Hall. They wanted to see just how he would deal with this. It was very obvious that this was Lin Ming's first time facing off against someone from the Zither Faction. Otherwise, when he faced Qin Wuxin's attacks a moment ago, he wouldn't have just stood there without any reaction.

In the Grand Hall, an old woman was smiling, her grin spreading cheek to cheek. She was the Zither Faction's Sovereign, and was also Qin Wuxin's master. These past years, Jiang Baoyun had stood in the spotlight, completely overshadowing the accomplishments of all the other direct disciples. It wasn't wrong to call Jiang Baoyun the Sword Faction's greatest talent that they had seen in the last 100 years, after all, Jiang Baoyun's talent spoke for itself. But as for Qin Wuxin, she was also a rare genius of the Zither Faction. It was only because she had been spending all her years wandering the deep valleys and adventuring to temper her Zither Heart that she had been relatively unknown. For an 18 year old to reach Large Success of her Zither Heart was rare throughout the entirety of the Zither Faction's history!

Ding ding ding!

The clear stream-like sound was like beads falling on a jade plate. Lin Ming had already experienced that sonic attack once before, he wasn't going to sit there like an idiot and suffer it again.

His powerful soul force penetrated into the air; the Concept of Wind began!

A soundwave attack was in the end a sound, and all of these zither melodies needed to be transmitted through air vibrations. Lin Ming was able to integrate his awareness into the wind, and by sensing the wind, he could subtly control all hidden dangers in the air.

In the moment that the sonic wave attacked, Lin Ming struck back, Flowers in the Storm!

Once the Concept of Wind was fused into the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, it was several times faster than before! Each and every note was accurately pierced to pieces by Lin Ming.

"Mm?"

The eyes of the elders that had been carefully observing the martial stage suddenly revealed an incredible look, as if they couldn't believe what they were seeing. A soundwave attack was invisible and formless. When most martial artists faced this sonic wave, they would do everything they could to draw as close to their opponent as possible and make it a close-range fight. If they could rush to their opponent's side, then they had basically won. After all, there were very few sound-based martial artists that were skilled in close-range combat.

If one only defended against the long-range attacks of a sound-based martial artist, then they were basically waiting to lose. This was because it was exceedingly difficult to detect the patterns of attack!

But now they saw Lin Ming on the martial stage, accurately crushing each note with a spear thrust without missing a single one. This left everyone staring, befuddled.

In particular, the female students of the Zither Faction had preposterous expressions, as if they had gone crazy. All of them were clear on just how strong Qin Wuxin was. Of course, Lin Ming wasn't weak. If Lin Ming was able to close in on Qin Wuxin and defeat her, they wouldn't have been surprised, But Lin Ming wasn't even thinking of closing in on her, instead constantly defending against Qin Wuxin's attacks.

They had been in the Zither Faction for so many years, and yet they had never seen a Zither Faction disciple's fight be like this.

What the hell was this Lin Ming? Was he a bat?

"Isn't a sound wave invisible and formless? How is Lin Ming deflecting Qin Wuxin's attacks?" An elder asked with a inconceivable tone.

"Concept of Wind!" Shi Zongtian said. "Those sound waves must pass through the wind. Lin Ming is able to capture every note through the Concept of Wind, and then quickly react. But to do this requires an extremely formidable soul force foundation. Currently out of all the disciples present, only Lin Ming can achieve this."

Shi Zongtian was right, even Jiang Lanjian didn't have this ability. Although he was also proficient in the Concept of Wind, his soul force was too lacking. He didn't have the massive soul force and control needed to permeate it through the wind and perceive the feeling of the situation.

"Hm, but I'm confused, I wonder what this Lin Ming is thinking. Since he can block the sonic wave attacks, why doesn't he rush over to Qin Wuxin?" An elder shook his head. He thought that since this was Lin Ming's first time facing off against a martial artist from the Zither Faction, his experience was lacking and he probably hadn't even thought of this point.

Shi Zongtian remained silent. He knew that Lin Ming was young, but it was wrong for anyone to think that he lacked combat experience. Lin Ming was able to instantly come up with a plan to resist the zither music attacks by combining the Concept of Wind with his soul force; this clearly illustrated his inventiveness and adaptability.

If Lin Ming decided not to rush into close-range, he inevitably had other plans. But just what were these plans?

Chapter 274 – Insight

Chapter 274 – Insight

…

…

…

“Profound Wind Eight Melodies!”

Qin Wuxin’s delicate hands harshly gripped down on the strings, and a suddenly shrill and plaintive sound came from the zither, as if silk cloth was being torn part.

Eight unique zither melodies shot out at the same time. These melodies were not separate attacks, but rather harmoniously blended within each other, their sounds resonating and suppressing each other at the same time, reflecting endlessly. The complex melodies were constantly transforming, endlessly changing, filled with layer upon layer of murderous intent, invisible and without form!

This was Qin Wuxin’s first time using such an attack at the Total Faction Martial Meeting. Before this match, she had only used several sonic wave attacks to sufficiently defeat all of her enemies.

Profound Wind Eight Melodies!

The young girls of the Zither Faction saw Qin Wuxin display this technique, and all of them began to smolder with elation. This was one of the Zither Faction’s ultimate skills, the core cultivation method among all core cultivation methods!

Of course, they would never have the good fortune to learn a cultivation method of such rank. In fact, with their talent, it was useless for them to study this even if given to them. They would simply be wasting their time.

The Profound Wind Eight Melodies was an offensive skill that the Zither Faction's Founder had found in some ancient ruins. This skill contained an incomparably formidable attack power, and now seeing Qin Wuxin use this ability, the young girls of the Zither Faction stared with wide eyes and opened ears, lest they miss even a single detail.

In their view, Qin Wuxin was the pinnacle of talent. The difficulty of using the power of the Profound Winds Eight Melodies was beyond their imagination. If the opponent was to storm them, they would have no chance to do so. But once used, this technique truly swept away all opposition.

“Even the Profound Wind Eight Melodies been used, Wuxin has really encountered a formidable opponent this time.” The Zither Faction's old woman's face was very somber. This little punk called Lin Ming was too difficult to deal with; he was able to completely understand the attack patterns of the invisible sonic waves. However, the Profound Wind Eight Melodies was ever-changing and contained abstract principles within. When she was young, she had defeated many masters and experts with the Profound Wind Eight Melodies.

‘Wuxin has already cultivated the Profound Wind Eight Melodies to 70% proficiency. I want to see just how this little punk will stop this!’ Thinking this, the old woman's cragged face revealed a coldly shrewd smile.

At this time, Lin Ming's heart was calm and tranquil. He had already sensed through the Concept of Wind the eight murderous intents that were hidden in the air.

Although the Profound Wind Eight Melodies was incomparably enigmatic, its name still contained the word ‘Wind’. As long as it had to pass through the air, Lin Ming was able to sense every change of the notes through the Concept of Wind.

At this moment, Lin Ming closed his eyes. Facing this all-encompassing sound attack, vision had already lost all meaning. Even his sense of hearing was useless, because once he heard the sounds of the zither melody, the attack would already have arrived.

Under the support of the ethereal martial intent, Lin Ming instantly entered into a deep state of concentration. A powerful soul force surged out in eight directions like a massive octopus.

At this time, Lin Ming had cut off all five of his senses, and he could no longer see or hear. But Lin Ming's soul force perception had risen to a terrifying degree. Every slight fluctuation in the surrounding atmosphere was completely under his control.

All eight of these melodies were meticulously grasped by Lin Ming.

First melody!

A slow vibration frequency, it was just like the low and deep waves of the absolute ocean.

Second melody!

The vibration frequency was a bit faster, it was like the clarion song of birds.

Third melody!

A slight vibration, it was difficult to detect. It was like the sounds of insects chirping at night.

Fourth melody!

An intense vibration, like the terrifying sound of earthquakes and landslides!

……

Eighth melody!

The frequency was fast, and the vibration was strong. It was like a silver vase being broken for the first time, it was like a knife cutting down on crystal clear ice.

These eight melodies were all different. They collided, resonated, reflected, supported, suppressed, endless variation!

If the frequency was different, then the power of vibration was different…

At this time, Lin Ming suddenly became aware. The power of vibration actually contained such a Law within!

Instantly, eight spears thrust out!

Each spear contained a different frequency and a different vibrating intensity of true essence. Each spear corresponded with a different melody!

Pah pah pah pah pah pah pah pah!

At the same time, the eight sounds appeared in the air. Every sound was light, as if it were a small firework fizzling away.

This was completely different from that sharp grating sound from the first impact.

What!?!?

The surrounding martial artists were astonished to the point of staring with slack-jawed expressions, especially those young girls of the Zither Faction who understood just how powerful the Profound Wind Eight Melodies truly was. They had an expression of absolute disbelief, they simply could not believe what Lin Ming had done. If Lin Ming had simply destroyed all of Qin Wuxin’s melodies, then they wouldn’t be too surprised. After all, Lin Ming had defeated even Jiang Lanjian.

But now, Lin Ming had thrust out eight spears, and spotlessly nullified the Profound Wind Eight Melodies, this was just beyond the scope of their understanding.

The eight melodies had endless variations. It was a cultivation method that was found in an ancient ruin; how could it be so easy to decipher?

The one with the most intense and violent reaction was the Sovereign of the Zither Faction. The face of this 200 year old woman instantly changed on scene, and she immediately stood up.

“This is impossible!”

The Zither Faction Sovereign had extraordinary eyesight. A normal martial artist would only know that Lin Ming had solved the Profound Wind Eight Melodies, but didn’t know the specific process. But, the Zither Faction Sovereign was able to clearly see this entire process!

Lin Ming had thrust out eight spears, and each spear contained a different implicit true essence. Each spear perfectly corresponded to all eight different melodies!

But even the Zither Faction Sovereign didn’t know what technique Lin Ming used so that his true essence was able to perfectly counterbalance the melodies without any sound flowing out at all. There was only a small grating sound; it was just like Qin Wuxin’s zither music had disappeared into thin air.

“This little punk! In that split-second he was able to deduce the profound principles contained within the melody! This is obviously his first time encountering the Profound Wind Eight Melodies, so how could he possibly be aware of this! He broke my Zither Faction’s core cultivation method, how is this possible!?!?” The Zither Faction Sovereign was simply unable to accept this truth. To her, the Profound Wind Eight Melodies was the highest cultivation method within the Zither Faction, and yet, it had been broken apart by a 16 year old boy in a single move. This was simply as if her own faith were collapsing before her.

Several surrounding elders saw the Zither Faction Sovereign’s crazy reaction and didn’t know why. They simply didn’t understand the intricacies of the sonic waves and didn’t know the mysteries of the vibrations.

“Sovereign Qin, what has caused you to lose your composure?” Shi Zongtian slowly asked.

The Zither Faction Sovereign’s face sank like a stone in water. She clenched her teeth and sat down without replying. She didn’t want to commend nor congratulate Lin Ming for his amazing perception – that was equal to slapping her Zither Faction in the face through another way.

Shi Zongtian faintly smiled. Although he didn’t understand the mysteries behind the music, he was able to guess that Lin Ming had caused Sovereign Qin to react in this manner. To cause this old bag to react so coarsely was not easy at all.

Things were becoming more and more interesting.

On the martial stage, Qin Wuxin had finally lost that light and ethereal temperament as if she were floating on wind. She had poured her true essence into that zither music, no one knew better than her just what happened a moment ago.

Lin Ming had thrust out his vibrating true essence with eight spears, and each spear contained a latent true essence vibration and frequency. These happened to collide with her melodies, causing both to mutually disappear!

How had he managed to achieve this?

Qin Wuxin felt her own eyelashes inadvertently trembling. She wanted to reach out and stroke her zither, but as her hands reached halfway she suddenly stopped. She found that Lin Ming was standing still, not noticing anything around him at all and dead to the world, as if he had entered some strange state.

Sudden enlightenment?

After some martial artist artists suddenly understood a Law, it was possible that they would enter into a state of sudden enlightenment. This state would last for several dozen breaths of time, and during that time period, their own cultivation, soul force, and comprehension of Concepts would grow by leaps and bounds!

This extremely wonderful and marvelous state was beyond rare; it could only be discovered and not sought, one had to experience a moment of true serendipity. Many masters had reached the Xiantian realm or even the Revolving Core realm without ever having experienced a sudden enlightenment.

Qin Wuxin understood this state because she too had once experienced it. It was a lucky chance that she had slipped into this state while she was adventuring through the deep valleys to temper her Zither Heart. After sitting in meditation for three days and three nights, she had spontaneously entered into sudden enlightenment. After waking up, her Zither Heart had reached Large Success!

There were very few 18 year olds in the entire history of the Zither Faction that had reached Large Success of the Zither Heart. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for her to use the Profound Wind Eight Melodies.

Sudden enlightenment was a condition that all martial artists yearned for in their dreams. It could occur anywhere and anytime. But once one was interrupted, then this state would also end.

Qin Wuxin hesitated, and finally she withdrew her hand. She calmly waited for Lin Ming to complete his sudden enlightenment.

She sighed in her heart, and let out a long breath. This young man's lucky opportunities and talent could really make anyone mad with jealousy. He was strong to such a degree, and he also had amazing combat insight. Perhaps even Jiang Baoyun and Mugu Buyu would find it difficult to suppress a talent like this...

This time, Lin Ming's sudden enlightenment originated from his understanding of the Law of Vibrations. Sound was only one kind of vibration, but vibration was the source of all sound.

Zither Faction disciples were skilled and well versed in sound waves and their use, but that was only in sound. In terms of understanding vibration, they were far inferior to Lin Ming.

After cultivating Flow like Silk for such a long time, Lin Ming was able to faintly trace upon the source of all vibrations, this was the so-called Concept of Vibration. It was what Lin Ming had suddenly become aware of after being inspired by Qin Wuxin's Profound Wind Eight Melodies!

This understanding had allowed Lin Ming to have almost perfect control of the vibration of his true essence and the intensity of the frequency, causing the Profound Wind Eight Melodies to disappear. Those melodies had directly vanished, only leaving behind a small, dull, grating sound. Otherwise, it would have been like the first time that his spear had met Qin Wuxin's soundwave. The soundwave energy would erupt and cause a high-pitched grating sound.

"So that's how it is. When the vibration frequency is the same, but the direction is completely opposite, then the two vibrations will cancel each other out without a trace left..."

"On the other hand, if the vibration frequencies are the same, and the direction is also the same, then the vibrations will superimpose upon each other, and become stronger..."

Lin Ming's heart was speaking to itself. The vibrating true essence within his body began to shake as it started to split up, differentiating from each other. In that moment every vibrating true essence filament divided into two; 5000 filaments turned into 10,000!

"Huo!"

Lin Ming suddenly opened both his eyes. At this time, there seemed to be thunder flashing within his pupils!

In those trivial 10 breaths' time of sudden enlightenment, Lin Ming's soul force had soared to another level, and his true essence had substantially grown. His peak Bone Forging cultivation began to completely overflow! It started to independently flow into his own meridians!

Lin Ming's meridians had long ago linked up by luck when he had absorbed the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. It was only because of Mu Qianyu's warning that had given Lin Ming pause. The reason that Lin Ming had connected his meridians was because he had used the power of thunder, and was by no means through his own true essence. If he had broken through to the Pulse Condensation Period because of that, then his foundation would have been shaky.

Therefore Lin Ming decided not to forcefully breakthrough, but instead wait until his Bone Forging true essence accumulated to the point where it would naturally overflow. When this happened, that true essence would spontaneously flow into his meridians and create the most solid of foundations.

Because he had been forcefully suppressing his true essence so that it didn't flow into his meridians, everyone, including Qin Ziya, hadn't noticed that Lin Ming's meridians had already linked up.

Now that his true essence was finally overflowing, all Lin Ming had to do was sit in meditation for an evening and consolidate his cultivation. At that point, he would officially enter into the early Pulse Condensation Period!

"This boy… it seems he made a breakthrough?" Shi Zongtian was startled. This was no trivial matter. Even within Divine Phoenix Island, it would be rare for a 16 year old to break through to the Pulse Condensation Period!

"Breakthrough? Humph. It's only Bone Forging true essence overflowing. The bottleneck between the Bone Forging stage and Pulse Condensation Period isn't too big or too small, but you still have to connect your meridians and open them, how could it be so quick?" The Zither Faction old woman curled her lips is disdain. There seemed to be more and more miracles happening with Lin Ming, making her increasingly unhappy.

Chapter 275 – Pulse Condensation Breakthrough

Chapter 275 – Pulse Condensation Breakthrough

…

…

…

“Breakthrough? Humph. It’s only Bone Forging true essence overflowing. The bottleneck between the Bone Forging stage and Pulse Condensation Period isn’t too big or too small, but you still have to connect your meridians and open them, how could it be so quick?” The Zither Faction old woman curled her lips is disdain. There seemed to be more and more miracles happening with Lin Ming, making her increasingly unhappy.

The bottleneck between the Bone Forging stage and the Pulse Condensation Period was one that every martial artist would inevitably encounter. If their foundation was poor, then a martial artist would be mired at this bottleneck for several years, or even dozens of years. But if too long a time passed, then that also meant the end of their martial arts path.

To talents within a sect, breaking through to the Pulse Condensation Period wasn’t anything too difficult. For a breakthrough, it would take a few months; even half a year was extremely normal.

But young talents were always racing against the hands of time. To them, several months were an incomparably precious treasure.

The old woman of the Zither Faction was already furious with jealousy and anger at Lin Ming, especially since he had managed to break through their Zither Faction's Profound Wind Eight Melodies.

Shi Zongtian felt his beard, not speaking. He also felt that it was impossible for Lin Ming to break through the Pulse Condensation Period so quickly. It was just that in that split second a moment ago, he had felt Lin Ming's true essence overflow into his meridians, but it was quickly contained by him.

"This boy, he's quite bold. He wants to make a full and complete breakthrough. After true essence overflows, that is a natural breakthrough, and using that as the basis creates the most solid foundation. Of course, it is also the most time consuming method."

Even in the Seven Profound Valleys, there were very few geniuses that would opt to do this. If they did, it would delay them by a massive amount of time; the gains simply didn't equal the losses. Lin Ming came from a humble mortal background, it was already very commendable that he had such broad vision of his own path.

Shi Zongtian said, "Even if it's the Pulse Condensation bottleneck, at most it will take Lin Ming half a year. He'll definitely be able to smoothly break through to the Pulse Condensation Period while he is 16 years old. For a 16 and a half year old martial artist to break through to the Pulse Condensation Period… haha, the result is already quite good even in a fourth-grade sect.

"It's only 'good'." The Zither Faction Sovereign harshly bit out this word. "If this old bag of bones remembers, Sword Faction's Jiang Baoyun also reached the Pulse Condensation Period when he was 16 and a half years old, and my Zither Faction's Wuxin was only two months later than him at 16 years and 8 months. The difference between them isn't much."

"Haha, Baoyun and Wuxin are both great talents." Shi Zongtian knew that this old woman cared much about face, was not magnanimous at all, and also had a short fuse. It was best to just agree with whatever she said.

Shi Zongtian's reason why he thought Lin Ming was valuable wasn't in his cultivation speed. For him to reach the peak Bone Forging stage at 16 years of age was also the standard for a medium sixth-grade talent; it simply couldn't be regarded as a monstrous genius. However, what he valued in Lin Ming was his perception, soul force talent, thunder origin energy fusion compatibility, and the mysterious true essence and body he had.

"Thank you for staying your hand."

Lin Ming said to Qin Wuxin as he bowed. His sudden enlightenment had lasted for ten breaths of time. During this time period, besides the natural true essence that protected his body, Lin Ming was completely undefended. If Qin Wuxin had seized this opportunity to use the Profound Wind Eight Melodies, then Lin Ming would have suffered serious damage.

Losing the match wouldn't have been too significant, but if he had been broken out of his sudden enlightenment and ruined his chances to enhance his cultivation and perception, then that loss would have been utterly disastrous.

Qin Wuxin calmly said, "You and I have neither hatred nor enmity. Naturally, I would never do something so malicious and evil-hearted against you. Now that your sudden enlightenment has ended, let us bring this show to its finale."

"Mm, okay!"

Lin Ming flourished the Heavy Profound Soft Spear. This time he was eagerly anticipating validating the new strength of Flow like Silk.

"Hah!"

10,000 vibrating true essence filaments began to tremble with excitement, even the Heavy Profound Soft Spear began to shake in his hand.

"Profound Wind Eight Melodies – Double Crescendo!"

Qin Wuxin's hands touched the zither, her fingers furiously twisting the strings. A slowly building tempo began to gain traction and a double Profound Wind Eight Melodies began to howl in the wind. This was the first time that she had ever used this technique in true combat.

The first reason was that the double Profound Wind Eight Melodies consumed a great deal of true essence. The second reason was that if Qin Wuxin faced an opponent that tried to rush up by her side, it gave her very little time to save up the required true essence. As for those that couldn't rush up to her, she didn't need the double Profound Wind Eight Melodies to deal with them.

As the zither melodies flowed forth, the entire martial stage filled with a myriad of sounds; the churning of wind, the songs of birds, the crushing waves of a tsunami, the rumbling sound of thunder…

Bass, tenor, low-pitch, high-pitch, all these sounds resounded and superimposed up each other, chaos without end!

Lin Ming shut both of his eyes; in the void, nothing could escape his perception.

"More than half of the sonic waves do not contain true essence! The Double Crescendo Profound Wind Eight Melodies has altogether 16 sound waves that contain murderous intent. As for the rest, none of them contain any attack power."

A long spear swept out, 10,000 vibrating filaments of true essence howled forth!

Peng peng peng peng peng!

The beating of a cavalry, the cracking of a silver bottle!

Sounds erupted, arias ruptured, the martial stage's protective shield began to tremble!

This time Lin Ming did not use some wonderfully exquisite technique, but used absolute brute force. Everything was swept away, his spear was like a dragon, unstoppable, irresistible, overwhelming!

A single spear crushed five sounds.

The second spear broke apart another four!

After 4 spears, all 16 sound waves that contained murderous intent were completely pierced by Lin Ming!

‘10,000 vibrating filaments of true essence, Flow like Silk is more than twice as powerful as before!’ Lin Ming was very shocked. These 10,000 filaments of true essence had just divided, and yet it was already powerful to this degree. If it was further increased, its power would be even greater!

In the memory of the Supreme Elder from the Realm of the Gods, Flow like Silk could split into millions, or even billions of filaments. If they were combined with the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, just what degree would its power reach?

Bang!

Lin Ming shattered every zither sound, his spear thrust straight towards Qin Wuxin’s neck!

The wind whistled and the azure true essence tore through the atmosphere. Qin Wuxin could already feel an aching pain on her neck from the intense cold on the tip of the spear!

As the Heavy Profound Soft Spear contained the Concept of Wind, its speed had reached the extreme. Qin Wuxin didn’t move, only watched as the long spear approached her.

Suddenly Lin Ming pulled back his strength and the spear suddenly stopped, the shaft still trembling and the azure true essence still flashing. The cold bright spearpoint was less than half an inch from Qin Wuxin’s slender jade-like neck!

The cold spear light and delicate skin, the aura of chilling slaughter suddenly formed a sharp contrast against the peerless beauty of an amazing woman. With such strength in sharp opposition to a gently soft charm, it created a remarkable image.

Lin Ming gripped the shaft of the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, his heart somewhat surprised. Although he was confident that Qin Wuxin could not dodge this spear, he hadn't expected that she would remain completely motionless.

"You won't evade?"

"Since I cannot evade, then why evade?" Qin Wuxin had restored her precious tranquil expression. Facing the wantonly cold spear light, she didn't even bat an eye.

Even if she was the first ranked disciple of the Zither Faction, Qin Wuxin was still poor at close combat. Once someone was able to close in on her, that basically meant that she lost. Qin Wuxin had no way to use a melee weapon.

Lin Ming retrieved his long spear, and couldn't help but exclaim in admiration, "Lady Qin has superb bearing, I apologize for offending you."

Qin Wuxin tossed her long sleeves and picked up her zither. Over these years, Qin Wuxin had never placed her zither within her spatial ring; this was similar to how the Sword Faction carried their swords on their backs, and was an equally good approach to increasing her awareness of her zither's feelings.

"Lin Ming, victory!"

With the announcement from the referee elder, the audience couldn't help but lament in silence. Lin Ming was simply too strong. Even Qin Wuxin who had reached Large Success of her Zither Heart had lost. Except Jiang Baoyun, Mugu Buyu, and Ouyang Ming, there was nobody that could contend with his strength!

At this time, the gambling house had already increased Lin Ming's odds to 1:6; this was the same as Ouyang Ming!

Lin Ming didn’t care much about this. He returned to the contestant waiting area and chose a quiet corner where he placed a sound insulating barrier.

“Xingxuan, come over to me.” Lin Ming beckoned to Qin Xingxuan in the audience with a true essence sound transmission. As the boy and girl became increasingly familiar with each other, Lin Ming no longer called Qin Xingxuan Miss Qin.

“Mm, okay.”

Qin Xingxuan was in a very good mood as she walked over. Lin Ming’s winning streak hadn’t surprised her, what had surprised her was that during every match, Lin Ming would also show a new and unexpected ability that was beyond her expectations.

In fact, Lin Ming hadn’t achieved a landslide victory against Qin Wuxin or Jiang Lanjian. However, as these strange and mysterious abilities surfaced during each match, Lin Ming’s momentum increased until it rivaled someone like Ouyang Ming.

“Xingxuan, can you help guard me, I need to meditate for a moment and cultivate.”

After the ninth round had ended, it was time for lunch so there was a full two hour relaxation time. Lin Ming had obtained many insights and he wanted to fully absorb them as soon as possible. At the same time, his Bone Forging stage true essence was constantly overflowing, and there was an anxious feeling like it would explode from his bones.

Lin Ming had been forcefully suppressing this true essence and felt very itchy and a bit aching like all his bones were swelling. He wanted to break through to the Pulse Condensation Period immediately.

“Guard you?” You want…” Qin Xingxuan was surprised, she didn’t know what Lin Ming was going to do.

“I’m going to break through to the Pulse Condensation Period!” Lin Ming calmly said. Not too long ago, breaking through to Pulse Condensation had been his lifelong pursuit, but now he had arrived at this step at only 16 years of age. Not only that, but he had made a perfect breakthrough where his true essence had autonomously overflowed! But as this grand moment arrived, he still remained completely tranquil. This was because he had personally experienced the talent of someone like Mu Qianyu, and he knew that a little Pulse Condensation Period was nothing at all!

“Break through to the Pulse Condensation Period?” Qin Xingxuan was shocked, “You… your meridians have already connected?”

“Mm!”

Lin Ming nodded, not wasting any time. Although this rest period was long, it still wasn’t too much time, and he also knew that the inspirations he received were fleeting. He didn’t even have enough time to find a quiet room, instead just placing some cloth up to keep out the sound and then sitting down to meditate and revolve his true essence.

Under the guidance of the ethereal martial intent, Lin Ming soon entered an empty state of mind. Despite all of the chaos around him, he was unaffected by any of it. True essence broke through from his bones, his body was like a floodgate that was opening, and all of the true essence poured through and endlessly surged into his meridians!

“This boy…” In the Grand Hall above the square, Shi Zongtian had been paying close attention to Lin Ming. He saw as Lin Ming walked over to a quiet corner and then sat down in mediation to revolve his true essence, he was suddenly startled. True essence had broken out of his bones and flowed into his meridians… this was clearly breaking through to the Pulse Condensation Period!

“This is the Pulse Condensation Period! He broke through so quickly… his meridians must have already been linked up, it was just that he had been suppressing his true essence, and wanted to wait for his Bone Forging true essence to overflow.”

Shi Zongtian had amazing eyesight; he had already seen through Lin Ming’s condition.

The wrinkled expression of the Zither Faction’s old woman suddenly became extremely ugly. Just a moment ago she had absolutely asserted that it was impossible that Lin Ming had broken through to the Pulse Condensation Period, but in less than half an incense stick of time, Lin Ming had actually sat down and began to meditate through his breakthrough. This was simply slapping her in the face!

“He just reached 16 years of age and is already at the Pulse Condensation Period… throughout the last several hundred years of the Seven Profound Valleys, he was the only one to do so! Even if he were placed within Divine Phoenix Island or some other fourth-grade sect, this would be a top line talent!” The Sword Faction’s Great Elder was incomparably surprised.

“This boy’s future is limitless!”

“Haha, with Jiang Lanjian and this boy, my Seven Profound Valleys will enter into a prosperous age!”

As the surrounding elders discussed and their appraisal of Lin Ming rose higher, the Zither Faction Sovereign’s expression became all the more ugly.

At this moment, Shi Zongtian suddenly said, “No, something seems… this boy… has he comprehended a martial intent!?!?”

Chapter 276 – Tempering Marrow Realm

Chapter 276 – Tempering Marrow Realm

…

…

…

“Martial intent?”

With these two words from Shi Zongtian, all of the elders present were shocked. As they looked carefully, they saw that Lin Ming really had entered into a strange state, as if everything around him had no influence on him at all. This state was consistent to the supplementary martial intents that were described in the ancient texts.

A martial intent was something that could only be discovered, and couldn’t be sought. One could only comprehend one through their own lucky destiny, and this had absolutely nothing at all to do with a martial artist’s talent. It could even appear in the body of an ordinary person, or it could even appear in a completely wasted body.

Geniuses could be filtered and raised through generations by breeding, but a martial intent could not. In fact, in the countless talents of the Seven Profound Valleys’ younger generation, there still wasn’t a single person that had managed to comprehend a martial intent.

“He actually comprehended a martial intent… this fellow has such dog-sh*t luck! There must be smoke rising from his ancestors’ graves!” The Zither Faction’s old woman clenched her teeth like rabid dog, glaring at Lin Ming with her eyes and chest rising and falling like a frog. She was angry to the point that she couldn’t speak. This country bumpkin boy from the

36 countries had actually defeated her most beloved disciple and had broken her Zither Faction's core cultivation method, the Profound Winds Eight Melodies.

And what was most irritating was that this fellow had actually made a breakthrough in the middle of battle, and now even showed a martial intent; all of this was madly slapping her in the face over and over again. She felt that the Zither Faction had only served to show Lin Ming's superb qualities in contrast; how could someone arrogant like her even take this?

Shi Zongtian didn't care about the Zither Faction Sovereign's reaction, he only looked towards Mu Qinghong with some worry in his eyes. Shi Zongtian's mood was extremely contradictory at the moment. While he wanted Lin Ming to become better and better, he also feared that Divine Phoenix Island came here to plunder their talent. It could be said that he was struggling with the positives and negatives.

Mu Qinghong smiled but didn't say anything. She already knew that Lin Ming had connected all of his meridians so that he wouldn't have a bottleneck from the Bone Forging state to the Pulse Condensation period. But, she hadn't expected that his breakthrough would occur so quickly.

"He reached Pulse Condensation just after reaching 16 years of age. Compared to Qianyu, he's slower by about eight months. Still, this extreme speed is already very rare, I cannot imagine what sort of future this child will have."

Mu Qinghong's heart was filled with anticipation. Mu Qianyu was a fire-attribute talent, Mu Bingyun was an ice-attribute talent, and with the thunder-attribute talent Lin Ming, that would be three peerless talents. In the future, they would become powerhouses that would be able to change the entire situation in the South Horizon Region, and maybe even deter that titan hiding within the South Sea.

.....

As the ninth round ended, the afternoon lunchtime finally came, and Lin Ming was still sitting in meditation, immersed in the ethereal martial intent as he was before. Of course, Qin Xingxuan hadn’t gone out for lunch. A martial artist could easily skip a few meals, and even going for several days without sleep wouldn’t affect them too much.

Jiang Baoyun hadn’t left. Instead, he polished his treasure sword as he casually sat in a chair at the contestant waiting area, gazing at Lin Ming from afar.

“Pulse Condensation period…” Jiang Lanjian murmured as he sat near Jiang Baoyun.

“Mm…” Jiang Baoyun nodded. For a genius martial artist, it was easy to use the pressure of a true battle in order to break through. This was also the reason that so many martial artists had come to the Total Faction Martial Meeting.

“Things are becoming more and more interesting. I thought that Lin Ming would just have me be a little serious, but now…” As Jiang Baoyun said this, his two bright eyes flashed with a thick fighting spirit.

“You think that he might defeat you?”

“I can’t say!”

Jiang Lanjian was surprised. In his experience, Jiang Baoyun had always been a very arrogant man who had a very high view; there were very few peers that he considered his opponents. But now it seemed he had a high opinion of Lin Ming.

Jiang Lanjian said, “I’ve fought against him. Although I’m not his match, I was still able to face him. My Concept of Wind was able to wound him. But against you, my Concept of Wind doesn’t work at all, I can’t even touch the hem of your robe…”

“Haha, sometimes these disparities can’t be so easily explained. Haven’t you seen that after he fought Qin Wuxin, his strength has been constantly growing?”

“I’ve noticed but… I don’t think the progress he’s made will be able to cover the gap between you two. Even though he broke through to the Pulse Condensation realm, he just recently broke through, the amount of strength he’s gained is limited.”

“Just wait and we’ll be able to see. If there isn’t an accident, Lin Ming will definitely face Mugu Buyu before me. Mugu Buyu’s strength cannot be underestimated. That fellow’s attacks are strange and peculiar. Even if it’s me, I can’t guarantee that I will be able to defeat him! After Lin Ming and Mugu Buyu fight each other, I’ll be able to see just where the limits of his strength are.”

As time passed, Lin Ming’s breakthrough gradually entered into the critical period. True essence flowed from the body into the organs, from the organs into the bones, and from the bones into the meridians, where it began to revolve through every inch of flesh, making a full revolution and nurturing the body before returning to the organs and muscles, completing a full circle.

As true essence flowed into the meridians, it created a circulation that revolved within the body. This was the greatest difference between the Pulse Condensation period and the Bone Forging stage. If true essence flowed into the organs and bones, it was just like a carriage running into shallow seas and swamps: it would just be mired there. However, if true essence penetrated the meridians and flowed there, it was like a fast racing horse on a spacious main road. There was simply no comparison between them.

After this circulation continued on for several revolutions, Lin Ming felt heart suddenly still.

“Mm? This is…”

In that instant, Lin Ming could clearly feel a microscopic amount of true essence seep into the deepest part of his bones, fusing into his marrow.

True essence Tempering Marrow!

Lin Ming was jubilant with happiness!

The ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ was a top Body Transformation cultivation method that had been passed down the Realm of the Gods and contained the accumulated knowledge of over a billion years. Although this cultivation method couldn’t be considered incomparably precious within the Realm of the Gods, in terms of the Body Transformation stage, it was the most perfect and complete method, and the highest level cultivation method that existed. There was nothing better!

Sky Spill Continent's Body Transformation cultivation methods only contained six stages. Above the sixth Pulse Condensation stage were the Essence Gathering stages, which included the Houtian realm and the Xiantian realm. This was already a separate branch of cultivation from Body Transformation, instead turning towards true essence cultivation and soul cultivation.

However, the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' contained additional stages above Pulse Condensation. This included Tempering Marrow, where true essence entered the marrow, and after that was opening the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. After one accomplished this, their fist could shatter the sky, their feet would crack the world, and their roars would have the strength of heavenly tribulation. With just a single all-out attack, they could collapse moons and sink stars!

Even though the memories contained such exaggerates descriptions, Lin Ming still believed in them. However, he had always been a bit worried subconsciously.

He worried whether or not he could achieve the Tempering Marrow realm that was above the Pulse Condensation Period, or whether the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' that he cultivated had flaws. After all, the human bodies of those that lived in the Realm of the Gods might be different from those that live in Sky Spill Continent; what if he was unable to reach the Tempering Marrow realm?

And now, after Lin Ming had just stepped into the Pulse Condensation period, he had finally felt a tiny bit of true essence enter into his marrow, how could he not be excited about this?

If he could open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, even if Lin Ming abandoned stepping into the Houtian realm and Xiantian realm, with just the cultivation of Body Transformation he could still become a supreme powerhouse of his generation.

After this tiny trace of true essence, Lin Ming continually attempted to push the true essence into the Tempering Marrow boundary. However, despite any actions he took to stimulate his true essence, it remained just above the bone and would not enter the marrow.

Until the end, his true essence overflow had finally ended, and he had only managed to push a tiny, insignificant amount of true essence into his marrow.

Lin Ming sighed and shook his head, “It seems like it must be done as recorded in the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’. I’ll need to use top quality pills in order to wash the muscles and cleanse the marrow, and I’ll have to remove the foul Houtian air. I don’t know how hard this might be, but it might be more difficult than even stepping into the Houtian or Xiantian realm…

“Top quality pills… I’ll need many of these top quality pills. What sort of pills could be called top quality by a Supreme Elder of the Realm of the Gods? Is a Heaven Opening Pill sufficient?”

Lin Ming lacked confidence that he could find a reasonable path. Even if he immediately became a core disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys, a pill at the rank of the Heaven Opening Pill wasn’t some joke. Its value was incalculable and it wasn’t something that could be sold anywhere.

“Well, if I can win the Martial Meeting and become the champion, I will be able to obtain a future promise of a Heaven Opening Pill. However, I’ll need to be at the peak Houtian realm before it can be honored. I’ll have to figure out some way to get it ahead of time, otherwise I don’t know how long it will take me to reach the peak Houtian realm…”

Thinking this, Lin Ming finally opened his eyes. He had officially stepped into the Pulse Condensation period.

“Lin Ming, you really broke through.” Qin Xingxuan smiled. She had been constantly guarding him by his side, and hadn’t even moved a tiny step away. Naturally, she could not let anyone disturb Lin Ming during such a critical time period. This feeling of being trusted so completely by Lin Ming… Qin Xingxuan found that it was extremely to her liking.

“I just broke through and my cultivation hasn’t consolidated. My strength probably hasn’t increased by much.” As Lin Ming said this, he inadvertently glimpsed Jiang Baoyun staring at him from some distance away. Jiang Baoyun smiled and nodded his head, greeting him.

Lin Ming also returned a smile in return. He thought in his heart, ‘This Jiang Baoyun’s eyesight is just like a sharp sword, it’s as if he completely saw through me. Although he can’t understand my strength, he’s able to roughly approximate just how strong I am. For him to look at me with such confidence, it seems that I can’t underestimate him.’

At this time, the afternoon lunch break finally ended, and the contestants were beginning to file back into the arena. Most of the people that entered glanced at Lin Ming, their eyes contained envy, awe, fear, admiration, and even resentment.

Lin Ming had already been very strong, but now he was even stronger and more abnormal.

As the afternoon matches finally started, as of this moment, the only contestants left with complete victories were Lin Ming, Huo Yanluo, Mugu Buyu, Ouyang Ming, and Jiang Baoyun. The fights were becoming extremely heated, and the collisions of masters became more and more frequent. Even powerhouses like Jiang Lanjian and Qin Wuxin were showing up often.

During the tenth round, fifth match, Huan Xiaodie fought against Huo Yanluo. Huang Xiaodie used all her attack styles and created countless illusions. However, Huo Yanluo was able to hang on and stimulate his true essence, finally summoning the Flame Essence within himself to defend and then attack.

The medium-grade human-step Flame Essence formed a ring of molten rocks around Huo Yanluo; all of the illusions and phantoms were completely melted away by the Abyssal Flame!

As Huo Yanluo approached step by step, all of Huan Xiaodie's moves were nullified. Finally, she was defeated.

The audience sent out waves of acclamation, especially the disciples of the Refiner Faction, they were simply mad with excitement.

"Haha, Elder Senior-apprentice Brother is too fierce, he won again! It seems our Refiner Faction can really hope to reach the top five this time!"

"Of course, our Elder Senior-apprentice Brother is one of the five contestants left with complete victories. If you look at the other four people, Jiang Baoyun and Mugu Buyu are without a doubt freaks at a different level. Lin Ming and Ouyang Ming are also two absolute farm animals, but our Elder Senior-apprentice Brother isn't much weaker than them. With the medium-grade human-step Flame Essence in his hand, who can stop him?"

The Refiner Faction disciples spoke with great enthusiasm. At their side, a young Zither Faction girl was not happy. "What do you mean? If our Senior-apprentice Sister hadn't encountered some abnormal fellow, then she would absolutely still have complete victories now. Are you saying that our Senior-apprentice Sister is weaker than your Huo Yanluo?"

Chapter 277 – Against the Fire Dragon

Chapter 277 – Against the Fire Dragon

…

…

…

The Refiner Faction disciples spoke with great enthusiasm. At their side, a young Zither Faction girl was not happy. “What do you mean? If our Senior-apprentice Sister hadn’t encountered some abnormal fellow, then she would absolutely still have complete victories now. Are you saying that our Senior-apprentice Sister is weaker than your Huo Yanluo?”

“Hehe, we’re not saying that.” The several Refiner Faction disciples lewdly smiled, their eyes involuntarily scanning up and down the body of the young Zither Faction girl’s body.

The Refiner Faction disciples were almost all men. It was because in the mortal world, their refining occupation would be equivalent to a blacksmith. There were very few women that were willing to withstand striking iron for hours on end and endure the harsh conditions. These young men almost never saw women, and now they witnessed rows upon rows of beautiful Zither Faction girls here, it was simply an intense visual shock. They couldn’t help but salivate and continue gulping over and over.

The Zither Faction girl was disgusted as she saw these vulgar young men. She icily said, “Just you wait. Sooner or later your Senior-apprentice Brother Huo will have to battle with our Senior-apprentice Sister Qin. Then you’ll be able to see just how fierce the Profound Wind Eight Melodies is.”

“Haha, the Profound Wind Eight Melodies only sounds scary. This morning, wasn’t it that bumpkin Lin Ming from the 36 countries that broke through that technique in a single attempt? Our Senior-apprentice Brother Huo has a medium-grade human-step Flame Essence in his control, who can break something like that? Let alone Lin Ming, even if it were Jiang Baoyun or Mugu Buyu, if they ran into our Senior-apprentice Brother's Flame Essence, they would still have to retreat!"

"Aren't you afraid of the wind cutting your worthlessly flapping tongue? According to your own words, do you actually think your Senior-apprentice Brother Huo can take first place?"

"I didn't say for sure that he will take number one, I only said that no one can block Senior-apprentice Brother's Flame Essence. At most, they can only evade it. A medium-grade human-step Flame Essence is a power that a Pulse Condensation martial artist just can't resist." The Refiner Faction disciple's words were thick with a refined sense of superiority.

He condescendingly waved and continued, "You're not a Refiner Faction disciple so you have no idea what significance a Flame Essence has! Your Senior-apprentice Sister Qin losing to Lin Ming is a undeniable fact, and our Senior-apprentice Brother Huo keeping his winning streak is also an undeniable fact. Even if he meets Ouyang Ming or Lin Ming, Senior-apprentice Brother Huo can still fight! Once he takes out the Flame Essence, he has at least a 50-50 chance of winning! If he went up against your Senior-apprentice Sister Qin, then… hehe, I'm afraid that all of her clothes would be burnt off by fire!"

"You… shameless hooligan!" The Zither Faction girl glared angrily at the Refiner Faction boys.

"Hehe, us brothers are good enough, would you like to try us?"

The disciples of both sides argued, their dispute growing more and more fierce. The Refiner Faction disciples had extremely salacious expressions. Although they couldn't eat these beautiful women in front of them, they could at least take liberties and sexually harass them. As for the young girl of the Zither Faction, her face was filled with utter loathing.

At this moment, the referee announced, “Eleventh round, first match. Lin Ming against Huo Yanluo!”

Hearing this, the Refiner Faction disciple seemed a bit muddled. The Zither Faction girl’s eyes immediately brightened. She had been hoping that Huo Yanluo would hurry up and fight with Qin Wuxin so that she could show this Refiner Faction disciple just who was better. But although it wasn’t Qin Wuxin, going up against Lin Ming was also good.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you can do it! I’m cheering for you!”

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, kill that bastard Huo in a second!”

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, we love you!”

In the audience, the young female disciples of the Zither Faction were cheering for Lin Ming, their sweet voices crisp and clear. Maybe because it was the influence of their well-groomed temperament, but their cheering began to find an identical rhythm, and soon their cheers were loud enough to shock everyone around them, and attract the attention of the entire audience.

Lin Ming was also flabbergasted. He looked at that crowd of extremely beautiful girls that were cheering for him, and his expression turned a little strange as he traced his nose.

“I don’t think I know them…”

Lin Ming had already been in many matches. Because this was the home stage of the Seven Profound Valleys, the so-called ‘cheers’ that Lin Ming had received so far were jeers and heckling from the crowd. But now, for the first time, there were actually people unexpectedly cheering for him. Not only that, but it was a rabid mass of frantic young girls, this caused Lin Ming to not really be able to enjoy his first fans here.

In the audience, Qin Xingxuan looked at the crowd of young Zither Faction girls with a bit of confusion and puzzlement. But then, this puzzlement immediately switched to a wary vigilance.

Although Qin Xingxuan's natural temperament was tranquil and calm, she was still a young girl and had the sensitivities of a young girl. She quickly realized that at the end of this tournament, Lin Ming was destined to join the Seven Profound Valleys. But as for herself, she might need to wait several years before she could join. Thinking of the beautiful girls of the Zither Faction and Mirage Faction, Qin Xingxuan felt a sudden sinking sense of crisis in her heart. If such a group of Linmaniacs had developed in only several days, then she had no idea what would happen in the future.

As the young girls of the Zither Faction cheered for Lin Ming, the Refiner Faction disciples naturally wouldn't let themselves be outdone.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Huo, we believe in you!"

"Senior-apprentice Brother Huo, wreck him!"

The two sides' cheers were in sharp opposition of each other. On the martial stage, Huo Yanluo didn't have complete assurance that he would win, Lin Ming's strength had been evident for anyone to see. But as long as he had the Flame Essence in his hand, Huo Yanluo also had faith he could fight on even terms.

"You are very strong. Before this Martial Meeting began, I never would have imagined you would come this far. You defeated Fang Qi, Jiang Lanjian, and Qin Wuxin one after another. But don't think that defeating them means that you've defeated me! The way that I fight is completely different!" As Huo Yanluo said this, he took out an exaggeratedly large red sword from his spatial ring. He hadn't even poured true essence into it, and yet a scorching heat wave blew out, as if he were holding onto a burning red-hot iron rod.

"Words are meaningless, let's fight!" Lin Ming took out his Heavy Profound Soft Spear, and a surge of momentum flowed out with it.

"Match, start!"

With the referee’s announcement, Huo Yanluo stimulated all of the true essence in his body. The high-grade human-step treasure sword in his hand kindled with brilliant Abyssal Flames!

This treasure sword was called the Abyss Blade. It was crafted after Huo Yanluo had obtained a Flame Essence, and personally tailored towards his strengths by a Refiner Faction elder. A massive amount of precious and rare materials had been used in its production, so much that its soaring cost equaled that of a normal earth-step treasure. It was only because there had been excessive care in trying to increase the power of fire origin energy within the blade that caused a minor impact on its quality so that it ultimately failed to become an earth-step treasure. However, it was still a top-ranked treasure among all high-grade human-step treasures.

With the Abyss Blade in hand, the Abyssal Flames burned even brighter. Layers of heat waves spread out, and soon even the tiles on the stage began to melt away.

“Ardent Flames Burning City!”

Huo Yanluo gave a loud cry, and the red Abyss Blade transformed into a roaring dragon. It rushed straight towards Lin Ming with a nearly unstoppable momentum!

As the Flame Essence was displayed on stage, the disciples of the Refiner Faction cheered out with all their strength. With the Flame Essence in his control and combined with the Abyss Blade’s increased fire power, even Mugu Buyu or Ouyang Ming had to dodge this attack of Huo Yanluo!

Lin Ming saw this fire dragon rushing towards him and slightly hesitated. With this slight hesitation, the fire dragon had already come directly in front of Lin Ming!

Lin Ming revolved the true essence within his body and poured azure true essence into his long spear, he stabbed out at the Abyssal Flames!

10,000 vibrating true essence filaments howled into the fire dragon. Everyone that saw this scene was shocked beyond measure!

He took it head-on?

Nobody believed that Huo Yanluo could become the champion, and very few believed he would even reach the top three. But nobody doubted the power of the Flame Essence, especially under the increased range of strength from the Abyss Blade!

Even darksteel would instantly melt under this high temperature. If a normal treasure lost its true essence protection, it would be reduced to slag under the Abyssal Flame!

To most people, even if Jiang Baoyun was facing Huo Yanluo, he would still have to avoid the Abyssal Flames and use his quick speed and sword to attack Huo Yanluo, winning with a single strike.

And yet Lin Ming actually met this attack head-on?

The young girl from the Zither Faction covered her mouth in alarm. As for the Refiner Faction disciple, his expression was filled with excitement, waiting for Lin Ming to lose.

In that split-second, it was too late for anyone in the audience to respond. Lin Ming's spear had already inserted itself into the flame dragon's gaping maw; azure true essence thundered forth!

Huo Yanluo's lips curved up in a fierce grin. The reason he hadn't had confidence he could defeat Lin Ming was because of his erratic and evasive movements, and that spear of his that contained the Concept of Wind. He feared that Lin Ming would simply avoid his Abyssal Flames and attack him directly.

But in terms of a head-to-head attack, Huo Yanluo had complete faith in his abilities. He galvanized all of the true essence in his body, and the power of blazing hot fire poured out into the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, shooting towards Lin Ming along the spear shaft!

The power of fire was tyrannical and cruel, once it impacted into Lin Ming, it would ruin his meridians.

But at this time, Lin Ming's entire body erupted with an immense amount of true essence. The Heretical God Seed began to let out cries of excitement. An enormous coercive power came crashing down, imprisoning the power of fire that had broken into Lin Ming's body!

Then, an irresistible suction force gushed out of the Heretical God Seed, directly pulling in the power of fire, using it to nourish the weak Flame Essence that hid within the Heretical God Seed.

In terms of grade, Lin Ming's own Flame Essence was barely enough to be called the lowest and weakest of all low-grade human-step Flame Essences. And this was only achieved after absorbing Huo Gong's Hollow Flame Essence.

But Huo Yanluo's own bodily Flame Essence was a true medium-grade human-step Abyssal Flame. Generally speaking, the flames that a Flame Essence released were a single grade higher than the Flame Essence itself. For instance, Huo Yanluo's Abyssal Flame released flames that were at the high-grade human-step level. In addition to the increased range of power from Abyss Blade, the strength of this flame had already reached the top-tier among all high-grade human-step flames.

This top-tier high-grade human-step flame was without a doubt great nourishment for the Flame Essence within the Heretical God Seed!

The tiny Flame Essence within the Heretical God Seed began to greedily devour the power of fire, slowly growing.

As the audience watched the scene on stage, all of them were dumbfounded. Lin Ming stood there in a lunging stance, his Heavy Profound Soft Spear thrust straight into the thick pillar of flame that was the fire dragon's maw. No matter how much Huo Yanluo urged his flames to grow and burn, Lin Ming hadn't even drawn back a single step!

Under the smoldering flames, even the tiles under Lin Ming's feet began to melt. An azure true essence protective shield guarded Lin Ming's body. No matter how much the snakes of fire raged throughout the barrier of azure true essence, that barrier showed not even a single sign of melting.

This scene was just like a mighty sea god stabbing a trident into a fiery dragon! No matter how much the fiery dragon struggled, it couldn't escape from the control of the sea god!

This aura caused everyone's hearts to quiver!

"Impossible, this is impossible!! How is this possible!?"

No one was more shocked than the disciples of the Refiner Faction. The Abyssal Flame was a medium-grade human-step Flame Essence – it was something that only a peak Houtian realm master could absorb! And now that the Flame Essence had the support of the Abyss Blade, if one wished to resist it, they could only do so with a higher cultivation. They would at least need to be at the extreme Houtian realm!

Although all of these geniuses were truly formidable, no one thought that their strength could reach the extreme Houtian realm, not even Jiang Baoyun!

Most of these so-called geniuses could at best compare with a middle Houtian master, and that was only the weakest middle Houtian master of the 36 countries.

Chapter 278 – The Outcome is Clear

Chapter 278 – The Outcome is Clear

…

…

…

The power of fire was continually being absorbed by the Heretical God Seed. The azure true essence within Lin Ming's body was kindled; the power of flame that flowed through his meridians created a very strong painfully burning sensation. However, it was only a burning pain. With the endlessly growing azure true essence protecting his meridians, they were incomparably tenacious, to the point where the power of fire couldn't damage them at all.

At first, Lin Ming had absorbed the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder with the help of Mu Qianyu and the Magnetic Birthstone. However, that was a low-grade earth-step Thunder Soul. In the face of this medium-grade human-step Flame Essence, Lin Ming was completely able to independently deal with it.

Of course, Lin Ming was only planning on absorbing a little bit of the Abyssal Flames. There was no way that Lin Ming would actually try to take the Flame Essence within Huo Yanluo's body, that was equal to creating a deadly blood feud with the Seven Profound Valleys' Refiner Faction. Even if he had the backing of Mu Qinghong, there was no way he would do something so malicious and stupid.

Flame Essences were eternal, never extinguishing. Even if Lin Ming pulled out a large amount of the power of fire, a Flame Essence would only need a bit of supplemental material and energy in order to restore to its peak condition. The Seven Profound Valleys had accumulated countless resources from plundering the nearby lands, so using some materials to nourish a Flame Essence was just a drop in the proverbial bucket.

After ten breaths of time, Lin Ming's spear was still stabbed into the Abyssal Flame's fire dragon, he hadn't even taken a single step back. During this time period, Huo Yanluo had gone all out and dumped as much true essence as he could into his Flame Essence. He had even used all of his power that was born from desperation, but none of it was able to move Lin Ming even a bit!

Huo Yanluo's complexion became increasingly ugly. He was simply unable to accept that this was happening to him. Although he acknowledged that he had a high chance of losing to Lin Ming, he thought that Lin Ming would rely on his speed to avoid the Abyssal Flames, and then close in on him to defeat him with a spear.

He could barely accept that result. After all, Huo Yanluo understood that without the Flame Essence, his own individual strength wasn't any better than Fang Qi's.

However, he never thought that in the face of his Flame Essence, Lin Ming wouldn't dodge or evade, instead he just used his long spear to block. Not only that, but he had already blocked for over ten breaths of time!

Huo Yanluo poured his true essence into the Flame Essence as if he had unlimited amounts. After a while, he had already consumed 40% of his true essence, but Lin Ming still appeared like a mountain, unshakeable and immovable!

'This is impossible! This is a medium-grade human-step Abyssal Flame! My fire origin energy is at a sixth-grade fusion! I used a massive amount of Glacial Ice Divine Spring waters, and rested on a Polar Jade Bed, and even then I was just barely able to absorb this Flame Essence with my father's help, and yet this fellow is blocking it with his spear!'

Huo Yanluo's heart was filled with a sense of fading decline. It was just like a checkers master playing chess against a chess master. The checkers master would eventually lose to the chess master in a disastrous defeat, and even the game was lost!

What could be more damaging to his self-confidence then this?

At the Grand Hall, the Refiner Faction Sovereign Huo Xuan had an extremely ugly complexion. Huo Yanluo was his son, and also an outstanding natural talent. It could be said that he hadn't hesitated at all to dump all the resources he could into his child.

With the investment of so many resources, he had expected Huo Yanluo to shine like a rising star at this Total Faction Martial Meeting. He hadn't expected that in front of Lin Ming, his son would just be like a child facing an adult, unable to muster any power to resist.

"Lin Ming's body… there's something special about it?" Shi Zongtian felt that as power of fire from the Abyssal Flame continually flowed into Lin Ming's body, it disappeared without a trace, as if it had gone into another dimension. Was this because of his azure true essence?

As he spoke, he couldn't help but glance at Mu Qinghong to see if he could glean anything from her expression. In Shi Zongtian's mind, Mu Qinghong had a much more thorough understanding of Lin Ming than he did.

However, he found that Mu Qinghong's expression was a bit incredible – it seemed that she was also puzzled by this scene on the martial stage.

Shi Zongtian's heart suddenly felt balanced and better.

"Huoo — !"

At this moment onstage, Huo Yanluo finally stopped his ludicrous attack. He cut off his true essence, and the Abyssal Flames immediately extinguished.

At this time, all of the tiles under Lin Ming's feet had melted into a dark red magma, except for the parts that had been protected by his true essence.

"I… I admit defeat!"

Huo Yanluo clenched his teeth and he slowly spat out these words. In the Seven Profound Valleys, all of the direct disciples had a haughty pride bred into their bones, it was their way of living. And yet, Huo Lanyuo had lost this match just too miserably. It was hard for him to immediately accept defeat.

“Well fought.”

Lin Ming examined himself. The Heretical God Seed’s Flame Essence hadn’t grown by much. Although the Abyssal Flame’s grade was very high, in the end it was just the power of fire, it had a limited effect on raising a Flame Essence.

However, the reason that Lin Ming chose to confront the Abyssal Flames head on was not just to absorb the power of fire and help build of up Flame Essence, but to verify an important matter.

When Lin Ming was in the Southern Wilderness, he had encountered the Fire Worm Tribe’s Shaman. Because the difference between their strength was too great, he hadn’t even been able to absorb the Shaman’s fire attacks – even resisting them had been extremely difficult.

But now that his own strength had risen, he wanted to verify at just what degree would his Heretical God Seed be able to suppress the power of fire.

‘The Fire Worm Shaman’s Eternal Flame Flame Essence grade is almost the exact same as Huo Yanluo’s Abyssal Flame Flame Essence. Since I can defend against Huo Yanluo’s attacks, I should be able to defend against the Fire Worm Shaman, and not be like before where I didn’t even have the power to strike back. After this Total Faction Martial Meeting, I will return to the Southern Wilderness and bring an end to this grudge!’

When he was at Blackwater Swamp, Lin Ming had almost died by the hands of the Fire Worm Shaman. It simply wasn’t his style to not take revenge for a deep grudge. Not to mention that the Na sisters also had an eternal enmity with the Fire Worm Shaman for killing their master, and Lin Ming also owed the Na sisters his graciousness. If it wasn’t for them, Lin Ming would never have entered the Sorcerer Pagoda, and would probably have died at Thundercrash Mountain. Just by that alone, the sisters' enmity was something that he would help with.

Of course, there was also another very important reason which was the Fire Worm Tribe's Eternal Flame. In Lin Ming's Heretical God Seed, the Thunder Soul had already taken form, but in comparison, the Flame Essence was small and incomparably weak. If he were to obtain this Eternal Flame, his strength would rise by miles.

'Whether it is the Fire Worm Tribe or Fire Worm Shaman, they have slaughtered countless innocents and committed sins of every nature. To get rid of such a person is already enforcing righteous justice on behalf of the heavens!'

Lin Ming decided that after this Martial Meeting, he would first go to Huoluo Nation's Seraphic Pond and immerse his body in the Seraphic Pond waters to consolidate his strength. Afterwards, he would return to the Southern Wilderness and look for the Fire Worm Shaman to settle their debts.

As Lin Ming walked off of the stage, he heard a series of delighted cheers coming from the audience.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you were terrific, awesome!"

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you did well!"

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you are the sexiest guy out there!!"

The first few shouts weren't too strange, but that last 'Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you are the sexiest guy out there!!' was publicly shouted out by a very bold girl in front of everyone. It was an incomparably clear shout that was crisply heard throughout the arena. Lin Ming immediately blushed red from embarrassment.

Sky Fortune Kingdom was a nation with considerably conservative values. Although Lin Ming had been able to faintly guess that there were several girls that held some feelings towards him, no one had ever said anything. He had especially never experienced such a scene before. He turned around to look, and saw that the one boldly cheering for him was a young girl from the Zither Faction.

The clear, sweet cheers were obviously done with delight. With such a scene of a beautiful and graceful girl who was crying out to him, Lin Ming was at a temporary loss on how to proceed from here.

As for the Refiner Faction disciple who was beside her, he had an appearance of a fighting c*ck that had just been defeated.

The Refiner Faction disciple had just stated equivocally that the chances of Huo Yanluo winning was 50-50, and had even mocked the Zither Faction disciple, saying that Qin Wuxin was inferior to Huo Yanluo. But Qin Wuxin had been able to face Lin Ming for a good period of time. As for Huo Yanluo, he had been defeated in a single move…

This made the Refiner Faction disciple wish he had a hole to crawl into. Of course, the Zither Faction girl could not miss this opportunity to ridicule him. She cheered for Lin Ming at the same time as taunting this Refiner Faction disciple.

Under the cheers of the young Zither Faction girl, Lin Ming awkwardly arrived at the contestant waiting here. He saw Qin Xingxuan walking towards him from the audience stage and asked, “Xingxuan, is there something you want?”

“Mm! I thought that you might be a bit hungry because you’ve been cultivating all afternoon, and didn’t have lunch. The next round won’t start for some time, would you like to grab something to eat with me?”

Lin Ming was surprised, and then he suddenly remembered that Qin Xingxuan had been guarding him and also hadn’t eaten anything. He nodded and said, “Alright, I’m actually really hungry. Guarding me this afternoon must have been very hard on you.”

“It wasn’t too bad.” Qin Xingxuan brightly smiled like a morning sun, and then gently pulled Lin Ming’s sleeve. Although this was only a pulling of a sleeve, to Qin Xingxuan this was a very intimate action.

As she pulled Lin Ming along, Qin Xingxuan turned around to look at the young Zither Faction girl in the audience, an assertive smile on her face…

……………………………

Over half of the matches were now officially finished. The only contestants remaining with complete victories were Lin Ming, Mugu Buyu, Ouyang Ming, and Jiang Baoyun. It could be said that if there wasn't some catastrophic accident, the top three would come from among them.

The 13th round.

Zhang Yanzhao against Qin Wuxin.

Zhang Yanzhao's Blood Wave Saber's saber energy was easily scattered by Qin Wuxin's zither music. Facing Qin Wuxin's invisible sonic wave attacks, Zhang Yanzhao had no way to sense them and no way to avoid them. He easily lost.

Following that match closely was Mugu Jirong against Jiang Lanjian. The result of this match was easily predictable too. Jiang Lanjian's sword was too quick, and victory was decided in just five moves. In five moves, Jiang Lanjian's sword had reached Mugu Jirong's throat, and he hadn't even used the Concept of Wind. The truth was that besides Lin Ming, Jiang Lanjian hadn't used the Concept of Wind against anyone else.

14th round.

Huo Yanluo against Qin Wuxin. The result of this match could easily be imagined facing against Qin Wuxin's invisible ranged Profound Wind Eight Melodies. Huo Yanluo was overly dependent on the Abyssal Flames and was simply unable to muster any resistance. The final conclusion was that Huo Yanluo's own strength was limited, and the Abyssal Flame attacks were too plain and straightforward, without the ability to adapt. It was just too easy for someone to close in on him. Of course, a scene akin to when Lin Ming had directly met the flames with his long spear wouldn't happen again.

Qin Wuxin continued her series of victories. During the sixteenth round, she defeated the Mirage Faction's Huan Xiaodie with overwhelming strength. Although Huan Xiaodie transformed into 108 illusory phantoms, all of them were defeated by Qin Wuxin's zither music!

The audience thought that the strength difference between the Seven Profound Valleys' two proud talented ladies wouldn't be too great – none of them had imagined it would be like this.

Many people couldn't help but wonder: if Qin Wuxin hadn't encountered Lin Ming, just how far could she have gone without losing?

The extent of Lin Ming's power was just too confusing and complicated. Many people thought that he wouldn't even necessarily lose to Jiang Baoyun and Mugu Buyu, they even thought he had a chance of ranking first!

The battles were becoming increasingly vivid and clear. The top four had already been locked in with Lin Ming, Mugu Buyu, Ouyang Ming, and Jiang Baoyun. Now, the two struggling for fifth were Jiang Lanjian and Qin Wuxin. Both Huo Yanluo and Zhang Yanzhao who had once been favorites for the top five were completely eliminated.

The sun gradually set in the west, and finally the matches of the day ended. Tomorrow would be the last day of finals.

There would only be 10 rounds, and in those 10 rounds, everything would be revealed.

Chapter 279 – The Last Day

Chapter 279 – The Last Day

…

…

…

Night fell. The moon rose above the willow branches, shining brightly in the clear dark skies.

The Seven Profound Valleys' night skies were particularly clean, as if the world itself had been washed of all impurities. This land was closed off by a massive array formation, and the heaven and earth origin energy was especially rich. One could cultivate here with twice the result from half the effort.

Lin Ming sat alone in his room. In his hand was a small deep green pill the size of a longan. It was crystal clear, just like the most precious of jades. This was the Blue Miracle Pill from the collections of Sky Fortune Kingdom's Seven Profound Martial House. It was the reward that Qin Ziya gave to Lin Ming after he defeated Ta Ku.

Even to the disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction, the Blue Miracle Pill was a rare and precious medicine; it was much more precious than the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill that Lin Ming had received before.

When Lin Ming had his match with Wang Mu, he had used the Blue Miracle Pill and the Body Spiritual Ichor as a gambling stake. It had caused Wang Mu to lose his composure and be attracted to the bet, ultimately causing him to lose a quota at the Seraphic Pond to Lin Ming. These sorts of pills were rare even within the depositories of Huoluo Nation's Seven Profound Martial House.

However, no matter how precious a cultivation pill was, it would inevitability have pill toxins. After taking it, one would have to refine the impurities and then eliminate the pill toxins, slowly consolidating their cultivation afterwards. It was an extremely tedious and arduous process.

When Lin Ming had obtained the Blue Miracle Pill, his breakthrough to the Pulse Condensation period was just around the corner. In order to obtain a more solid and stable foundation, Lin Ming hadn't taken the Blue Miracle Pill to break through. Instead, he waited for his true essence to overflow and naturally break through. Such a breakthrough could be called perfect.

Lin Ming swallowed down the Blue Miracle Pill, jumped in the bath barrel, and then began to meditate.

These days, he had been eating spirit fruits and vegetables that contained a very rich inherent heaven and earth origin energy. Even when he cultivated, it was like he was bathed in thick heaven and earth origin energy. He had already accumulated a vast amount of true essence in his body. After he ate the Blue Miracle Pill, Lin Ming only felt a slight numbing sensation in his bones as true essence began to flow outwards, continuously flowing through all the meridians of his body.

His Pulse Condensation period cultivation was unconsciously and slowly consolidating.

The water vapors rose, and the entire room was covered in a thick white mist. The cold moonlight shone through the window, adding a natural chilling wind to this mist.

For several hours, Lin Ming patiently pushed the true essence in his body to complete revolution after revolution.

Because Lin Ming's cultivation had improved, the fusion between his blood and the True Dragon's blood was even closer than before. Now, Lin Ming didn't even need to purposefully galvanize the azure true essence in order to bring it out, his own true essence already had an azure color. This sort of azure true essence was pale green like the fresh spring leaves of a cypress tree, and was filled with a vibrantly vivid vitality.

This azure true essence didn’t only manifest when he was fighting. The azure true essence even came out when he was cultivating, and it seemed to subtly moisten and supplement Lin Ming’s body, causing his meridians to be more stalwart and his bones to become denser.

Lin Ming finally finished complete absorption of the Blue Miracle Pill late at night. His early Pulse Condensation period cultivation was already fully consolidated. Now Lin Ming took out a small porcelain bottle and uncorked it. Inside of the small porcelain bottle was a sort of viscous green substance, as if it were made from liquid crystals.

This was the Body Spiritual Ichor that Lin Ming had obtained as a reward for defeating Ling Sen. The Body Spiritual Ichor was used especially to eliminate pill toxins of the body. Its effects were even more wonderful when combined with the Blue Miracle Pill.

Of course, the Body Spiritual Ichor was only a supportive medicine. In order to completely refine out the pill toxins, it would all rely on Lin Ming’s own ability in the end.

Lin Ming didn’t worry. After all, he was only at the early Pulse Condensation period, and was a very long distance away from the Houtian realm. There would be plenty of time to eliminate the pill toxins in his body. Whether it was the Flame Essence or Thunder Soul, both were extremely good methods of refining out pill toxins, and they also wouldn’t cause his foundation to become unsteady.

The mist in the room became increasingly thick. Lin Ming sat in the water, completing revolution after revolution…

…………………………

The following morning, the dawn still lingered under the horizon. The stage was set for the last day of the Total Faction Martial Meeting.

Today was the final of the finals.

There would be 10 rounds of matches. The 11 contestants that received the most attention were Lin Ming, Ouyang Ming, Jiang Baoyun, Mugu Buyu, Jiang Lanjian, Qin Wuxin, Huo Yanluo, Zhang Yanzhao, Huan Xiaodie, Fang Qi, and Mugu Jirong.

These 11 would frequently clash in these last ten rounds. All other contestants had merely become foils.

As Lin Ming arrived just before dawn, there were very few people in the square, only shadows were visible.

At this time, Jiang Baoyun was sitting vigilantly on a mat in the contestant waiting area. His sword was in his hand, both eyes shut, as faint streams of heaven and earth origin energy converged on his body, slowly overflowing as it made cycle after cycle.

Lin Ming looked at Jiang Baoyun from afar, secretly observing the heaven and earth origin energy as it flowed through him. He thought to himself, ‘Jiang Baoyun’s cultivation is truly at a half-step Houtian. If he really were at the Houtian realm, then there would be no need for him to suppress his cultivation at this time.’

Before now, Lin Ming suspected that Jiang Baoyun had already stepped into the Houtian realm. Except, Jiang Baoyun was just like Lin Ming, and was suppressing his cultivation so he wouldn’t break through, therefore he was so confident in himself.

However, as Lin Ming watched Jiang Baoyun cultivate, he clearly saw that his cultivation was at a half-step Houtian.

“No matter what, today’s battles will show where the source of his confidence comes from.” Lin Ming said to himself. By now, Jiang Baoyun felt Lin Ming’s gaze on him and opened his eyes.

For a second, Jiang Baoyun’s eyes penetrated through the early morning darkness, as if they were twinkling stars in the night. He faintly smiled at Lin Ming, saying, “The heaven and earth origin energy is richest just before the sun rises in the morning, especially in the Seven Profound Valleys. When the first ray of sunlight comes over the horizon, that is what my Sword Faction calls the Ascending Eastern Purple Sun, and is also the so-called Purple Air Comes From the East. If you absorb this energy it is especially beneficial to your cultivation.

Lin Ming said, “The Seven Profound Valleys is truly the holy land of cultivation. Thank you Senior-apprentice Brother Jiang for the advice.”

“You’re welcome. Sooner or later you will enter the Seven Profound Valleys. If you’d like, you may join the Sword Faction; we will welcome you with arms wide open!”

Lin Ming was a bit stunned hearing Jiang Baoyun’s heartfelt words. Invite him to join the Sword Faction? Wasn’t he afraid that he would have to split up his resources? But as Lin Ming looked at Jiang Baoyun’s face, he saw that his invitation was clearly sincere, without any underlying meanings. Of course, Jiang Baoyun had no need to fake anything.

‘This fellow is truly confident!’ Lin Ming hazily sighed. He had a premonition that if Jiang Baoyun’s shining star didn’t fall from the sky, he would definitely become a Grand Swordmaster of this generation.

There were more and more people arriving at the square. As the first ray of sunlight fell onto the Grand Hall’s square, the referee stood up and loudly said, “The tournament shall begin. Nineteenth round, first match. Jiang Baoyun against Qin Wuxin!”

These words caused the entire audience atmosphere to immediately surge to the skies. The first match of the day was actually a battle between such heavyweights. Qin Wuxin’s strength was evident to all, but of course, no one thought that she could win. Still, they believed she would be able to force out Jiang Baoyun’s true strength.

Lin Ming also anticipated this match, until now he still knew nothing about Jiang Baoyun.

The match hadn’t even begun, and Qin Wuxin had inadvertently opened up a distance of 300 feet between them. Jiang Baoyun’s sword was just too fast. If the distance wasn’t great enough, then Qin Wuxin wouldn’t even have time to play a single note before she was defeated.

"Match, start!"

With the referee's announcement, Qin Wuxin immediately played the Profound Wind Eight Melodies. Against Jiang Baoyun, there was no need to hold anything back, she would immediately start with everything she had. Qin Wuxin was clearly aware that if she didn't use her ultimate ability at the start, she would never have the opportunity to do so.

The Profound Wind Eight Melodies was invisible and formless, ever-changing with endless twists and turns.

Out of all the current contestants besides Lin Ming, there were very few people that could capture the attack patterns of the Profound Wind Eight Melodies. This was part of the reason the Zither Faction's attack methods were so terrifying; how could you defend against attacks you couldn't see?

Jiang Baoyun's ten fingers flexed, condensing phantoms of sword light in the air. He used sword fingers as before.

Chi chi chi chi chi!

The sound was just like silk being torn to shreds. The invisible Profound Wind Eight Melodies were all completely broken in space!

Qin Wuxin's mind shook. She had already expected that the Profound Wind Eight Melodies would be broken by Jiang Baoyun, but she hadn't thought it would be done so easily. He had only used sword fingers as before.

After easily breaking the Profound Wind Eight Melodies, Jiang Baoyun made two fingers into a sword and a slashed out. A sword light flew towards Qin Wuxin, its speed reaching an extreme. Qin Wuxin bit her teeth and her right hand suddenly flicked across the zither strings. There was a sharp twang as several musical notes sprung forth, directly clashing with that sword light.

Chi chi chi!

The sword light broke through three notes and clashed with the last note before finally dissipating together.

Seeing a single sword light break through three notes, Qin Wuxin let out a light sigh and retrieved the zither to her arms. She coldly said, “I admit defeat.”

Jiang Baoyun smiled. “I haven’t seen Junior-apprentice Sister Qin for three years and yet your strength has progressed so astonishingly quickly. Perhaps in two years or less, if I fight Junior-apprentice Sister Qin again, I’ll have to use everything I have.”

Qin Wuxin was the youngest of all the direct disciples. She was only 18 years old, and was more than a year and a half younger than Jiang Baoyun. In terms of talent, within the direct disciples she was only inferior to Jiang Baoyun. She was indeed superior to Jiang Lanjian and Ouyang Ming.

Qin Wuxin seriously looked at Jiang Baoyun, and slowly said, stressing every syllable, “At that time, I will at least force you to use your sword!”

“Naturally! In fact, today you’ve already broken my sword palm. If this match continued any longer, I would have had to take out my sword.”

Qin Wuxin turned around to leave the stage, and the referee announced Jiang Baoyun’s victory.

Suddenly, there was a collective gasp from the audience. Everyone expected that Jiang Baoyun would win, but none thought he would win with such ease. He had only used his hands to shatter Qin Wuxin’s Profound Wind Eight Melodies – he hadn’t even taken out his sword. This disparity between direct disciples was much greater than they had imagined.

“Jiang Baoyun is too strong! Who can defeat him? Even Qin Wuxin was defeated so easily. Lin Ming and Ouyang Ming are simply not his match!”

“If Jiang Baoyun was serious, he might defeat Lin Ming and Ouyang Ming in five moves!”

"I fear that even Mugu Buyu isn't skilled enough. I thought that Mugu Buyu would be able to suppress Jiang Baoyun because he reached the Essence Integration boundary, but now it seems that it would be great if he could just force Jiang Baoyun's hidden cards."

…………………

As the audience discussed the match, even Lin Ming was stunned.

Just as Lin Ming had constantly surprised Jiang Baoyun, Jiang Baoyun also constantly surprised Lin Ming. Before these final matches, both of them were just like massive icebergs, only exposing the tip to each other.

After Jiang Baoyun and Qin Wuxin's match, there were several unimportant matches. Then, right after, there was a match that created a startling furor of excitement.

Lin Ming against Ouyang Ming.

This was a long awaited showdown that the audience had been highly anticipating.

On one side was Ouyang Ming, who was the third ranked contestant from the last Total Faction Martial Meeting. On the other side was Lin Ming, who was considered the greatest dark horse of this Total Faction Martial Meeting. This match could be considered to be extremely confusing, no one knew which side would win.

Chapter 280 – Soaring Strength

Chapter 280 – Soaring Strength

…

…

…

Up until now, Ouyang Ming hadn't encountered many top masters. He had only faced off against Fang Qi, Mugu Jirong, and Huan Xiaodie. Of these three matches, he had emerged victorious through overwhelming superiority; he hadn't been forced to show any of his true strength.

However, no one doubted Ouyang Ming's power. In the last Total Faction Martial Meeting, he had defeated Jiang Baoyun for the first time. He was once considered as the one with the highest chances of becoming the next Martial Meeting champion, but he never imagined that Jiang Baoyun would recover from his loss and become a terrifying presence that occupied the spotlight and suppressed Ouyang Ming.

In comparison to Ouyang Ming who hadn't faced any great obstacles on his way to a string of complete victories, Lin Ming could be said to have had to overcome one great hardship after another. Now, Lin Ming's fame was only inferior to Jiang Baoyun and Mugu Buyu, and was tied with Ouyang Ming.

As the referee announced the start of the match, the arena began to buzz with excitement. The crowd was neatly divided in half for those who favored Lin Ming and those who favored Ouyang Ming.

Many of the Acacia Faction disciples were screaming out cheers for Ouyang Ming. In comparison, the cheers for the visiting Lin Ming were much weaker. Besides the martial artists of the 36 countries cheering for him, there were the young girls of the Zither Faction who had good impressions of him.

On the martial stage, Ouyang Ming was dressed in complete white, and he held an iron folding fan in his hand. His long black hair was tied back with a silk ribbon, and he looked just like a handsome royal son. From his head to his toes, he had the makings of a jade tree facing the gentle wind.

As a disciple of the Acacia Faction, Ouyang Ming naturally had hordes of cawing girls by his side, and groups of wives and concubines. Even so, there were still many young and beautiful girls that threw themselves at him of their own initiative. One reason was because Ouyang Ming's looks were simply outstanding like a heavenly prince, and the second reason was because of Ouyang Ming's status as a core disciple. If they could follow by his side, they would be able to obtain more resources and break through to the Pulse Condensation period easier.

200 feet away from Ouyang Ming, Lin Ming was standing straight, holding a long silver spear in his hand. His posture was upright and steady. Because Lin Ming had been practicing a Body Transformation cultivation method of the highest rank for the past six months, his body had been maturing at a very high rate. Although he was only 16 years old now, he wasn't much shorter than the tall and handsome Ouyang Ming.

"This boy, I don't know what the limit of his strength is…" As Ouyang Ming faced Lin Ming, he had a faint feeling in his heart that he wouldn't be able to win. It was the same feeling as if he was looking at Mugu Buyu.

Before this point, he never imagined that he would be pressured so much by a disciple from the 36 countries.

Lin Ming was a well-rounded fighter, he was simply versatile in all aspects of combat. Such a person was a very rare existence. Most geniuses had a particular advantage that served as their point of superiority, but they also had a corresponding weakness to go with it. For instance, Qin Wuxin's attacks were invisible and formless and they were difficult to avoid; but once one was able to close in on her and engage in close-range battle, one would basically have won.

As for Huo Yanluo and Zhang Yanzhao, those two had an incomparably overwhelming offensive attack power, but their true combat prowess was limited. Once one dodged their attacks, they would easily lose. Even if it was someone like Jiang Lanjian who seemed to be a versatile fighter, he still had weaknesses in his insufficient attack momentum and his weak defensive power.

Because of the different strengths and weaknesses of geniuses, they would usually serve to restrain each other. As long as they had the same strength and the same talent, victory would be settled by which skills held advantages over others.

But as for Lin Ming, he was simply an all-around combat king. His aura was formidable, and his spear was fierce and sharp. His attacks contained the Concept of Wind, making them incomparably swift. There wasn't even need to mention his defensive capabilities. He had been able to take Jiang Lanjian's full attack strike head-on and come out with only a few scratches! In terms of movement speed, his agility was simply like gods and ghosts – there was almost no weakness to him!

Against a master who didn't seem to have any weaknesses at all, Ouyang Ming just didn't know what he could do to win.

As the match officially started, Ouyang Ming didn't bother saying any useless words. He unfolded the iron fan in his hands.

"Absolute Life Purple Flame!"

With a 'chi chi' sound, a massive purple flame burst out from his iron fan, blazing in the air like an inferno. This purple fire was a much deeper color than the Purple Flame Bone Lance that had been used by Ouyang Zifeng.

Fuu!

The purple inferno fired towards Lin Ming, and a bone chilling energy rolled off in front it. This freezing cold flame was incomparably strange.

Azure true essence erupted forth. Lin Ming took a step forwards and thrust out with his spear. 10,000 vibrating true essence filaments savagely ran out.

Bang!

The purple flames immediately disintegrated; they had been scattered by Flow like Silk.

After reaching the early Pulse Condensation period, combined with the power of the Flow like Silk breakthrough, the strength of Lin Ming's past vibrating true essence could not compare to its current incarnation.

Ouyang Ming's expression suddenly changed for the worse. Although he hadn't held on to any hope that the purple flames would be able to defeat Lin Ming, he hadn't thought that Lin Ming would so easily destroy his flames.

"Purple Flame Bone Lance!"

"Scythe of the Death God!"

Ouyang Ming gave a loud shout, and a purple bone lance made of fire appeared by his side. Compared to Ouyang Zifeng, it was as if Ouyang Ming's bone lance instantly appeared by his side, shooting forwards without even needing any time to condense his true essence. Not only that, but as he flourished his fan, a purple scythe appeared, flying forwards to cut off Lin Ming's head!

Facing this roaring attack, Lin Ming maintained a completely indifferent expression. His feet moved and his speed instantly achieved the limit.

Ka!

A shadow blurred, and Lin Ming broke through a narrow gap between the Purple Flame Bone Lance and Scythe of the Death God. His spear was wreathed in arcs of lightning; it contained the Concept of Wind and power of thunder, thrusting straight towards Ouyang Ming's side!

Ouyang Ming's heart went cold and he instantly drew back. At the same time, he waved his fan back and forth, and clouds of purple flame seemed to blossom in front of him, forming layers of defensive fire that protected his body!

Bang!

10,000 filaments of vibrating azure true essence rampaged out. The thick coils of thunder were just like massive purple snakes that twisted in a frenzy. The purple barriers of flame were only able to resist for a split second before being torn apart by the spear!

Seeing the cold spearpoint come towards him, Ouyang Ming's pupils contracted. He hadn't imagined that a casual spear thrust of Lin Ming's had achieved such a terrifying degree of strength. It had even broken through three of his purple flame cloud shields!

He instantly realized that if he was struck even once by this spear, he would lose without a doubt. When Lin Ming had faced Fang Qi, a single spear of his had broken through five continuous Nine Circles of Blue Light Arrays. Ouyang Ming was confident, but he didn't believe that the true essence that protected his body was any stronger than five layers of Nine Circles of Blue Light Arrays.

This Lin Ming, his attack power was too abnormal!

"Butterflies Dance on 100 Flowers!"

Ouyang Ming's body instantly turned into a series of shadows, evading the spear by dancing on the edge of destruction.

"Movement martial skill?" Lin Ming watched as Ouyang Ming flitted around like a butterfly hovering over flowers, his form drifting from end to end. This was obviously an extremely gorgeous and sublime avoidance movement skill. There were over a dozen images that seemed real and fake at the same time; it was impossible for a normal martial artist to distinguish just where Ouyang Ming's true self was. It was futile to attack, one could only passively leave themselves vulnerable to attack. Not only that, but it was futile to guess just where Ouyang Ming's attack came from.

However, to Lin Ming, none of this was a problem. He simply closed his eyes and let his soul force fuse into the Concept of Wind. Suddenly, Lin Ming's figure disappeared!

"Total Annihilation!"

Lin Ming used the same constant Foundation Spear Technique and swept out into space. But in the moment that Lin Ming swept out with his spear, Ouyang Ming appeared just under the spearhead as if he had ran into it.

Ouyang Ming's instantly paled. His Butterflies Dance on 100 Flowers had been seen through in a single try!!??

At this time Ouyang Ming could not evade, collision was inevitable. He had to take this attack head-on!

Pa!

The iron fan opened, and Ouyang Ming cried out, pushing all of the true essence within his body to the limit. A bluish purple evil flame shrieked as it ran out of the iron fan, directly cleaving towards the spearpoint.

Bang!

The bluish purple evil flame smashed against the purple thunder, the power of thunderbolts exploded out!

In the moment that the iron fan struck the spearpoint, Ouyang Ming felt as if he had chopped against a mountain. 10,000 vibrating true essence filaments cascaded forth and an incomparably vast peerless vibration directly cracked apart Ouyang Ming's grip, causing his right arm to lose all feeling.

"This is…!"

Ouyang Ming felt as if his chest had been hit by a massive hammer. There was a tangy copper taste in the back of his throat, and Ouyang Ming spat out a mouthful of blood as he flew backwards and struck the martial stage's protective barrier.

This unexpected result caused the entire audience to pause, slack-jawed. Even Jiang Lanjian who usually highly respected Lin Ming's abilities was looking at this scene, an extremely incredulous expression coloring his face.

Ouyang Ming, who had ranked third place during the last Total Faction Martial Meeting was defeated so easily?

The truth was that Jiang Lanjian had expected that Lin Ming would win. However, he thought that the two contestants would have a fierce dogfight where each one would use hidden card after hidden card, finally ending with Lin Ming as victor through a small advantage. He hadn't expected that Lin Ming would prevail in less than 20 moves.

"How did Ouyang Ming lose so easily? Doesn't he have any more cards in his hands?" Jiang Lanjian just couldn't believe this. He had also lost to Ouyang Ming during the last Total Faction Martial Meeting, and this time, he didn't have much confidence that he would be able to defeat Ouyang Ming. However, Lin Ming had actually defeated Ouyang Ming so easily!

Jiang Baoyun slowly said, "Ouyang Ming already used the cards in his hands, and that was his Perfect fifth stage of the 'Divine Acacia Power'. Absolute Life Purple Flame and Scythe of the Death God are both moves that can only be used after reaching the fifth layer of the 'Divine Acacia Power'. It's just that they were easily broken by Lin Ming. Many people didn't see just how strong Ouyang Ming's attacks were… it's not that Ouyang Ming is weak, but that Lin Ming is too strong. After breaking through to the Pulse Condensation period, his strength has soared past what it once was!"

Jiang Baoyun took a deep breath. Normally when a martial artist broke through to the Pulse Condensation period from the peak Bone Forging stage, their strength wouldn't increase too much.

However, Lin Ming wasn't a normal martial artist. The method in which he reached Pulse Condensation was through a perfect breakthrough, and his foundation was extremely solid. Not only that, but the cultivation method he practiced was the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians'. After breaking through each stage, his true essence would grow incomparably thicker and purer than a martial artist at the same stage.

Also, Lin Ming's azure true essence, Flow like Silk, and Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder were absurdly abnormal and overpowered abilities. If his true essence was twice as strong, then his attack power would be three times, four times, or even five times greater!

So from the peak Bone Forging stage to the Pulse Condensation period, Lin Ming had experienced a great leap in strength!

"Ouyang Ming was defeated! Now there are only three people left that still have a flawless winning streak!"

"Besides Mugu Buyu and Jiang Baoyun, Lin Ming has already fought with most of the other masters, except for Huan Xiaodie and Mugu Jirong. However, those two are not his match. Even if Lin Ming lost to Mugu Buyu and Jiang Baoyun, he would still reach the top three!"

The audience discussed the situation of the tournament and the possible outcomes. This dark horse known as Lin Ming was simply too dark. A disciple of the 36 countries had entered the Total Faction Martial Meeting for the first time and had already reached the top three rankings. Moreover, he had just reached 16 years of age. This was simply too shocking for anyone to comprehend.

After Lin Ming walked offstage, he saw Mugu Buyu staring at him. Mugu Buyu's skinny mummy face still had his trademark tricky smile. But as he looked at Lin Ming's eyes, his eyes no longer held the previous teasing banter and contempt. Instead, there was a solemn, dignified expression.

Clearly, Mugu Buyu finally felt threatened by Lin Ming.

Chapter 281 – Entering the Top Three

Chapter 281 – Entering the Top Three

…

…

…

As the tournament continued, top level geniuses frequently collided.

During the 20th round, Jiang Lanjian fought against Qin Wuxin.

Qin Wuxin and Jiang Lanjian's styles could be said to mutually oppose each other. Qin Wuxin was slow and she was poor at melee combat. As for Jiang Lanjian, he was just the opposite. Qin Wuxin's attacks were sharp and invisible, and Jiang Lanjian happened to have inadequate defensive capabilities.

It was difficult to predict who would be the winner this match.

On the martial stage, Qin Wuxin's white robe fluttered in the wind. Jiang Lanjian was wearing a tight-fitting green robe, holding his sword as he stood there calmly.

They were 200 feet apart. If Jiang Lanjian could completely close this distance, then victory was his. If he couldn't, then he would undoubtedly be defeated.

After the match started, the two contestants went all out with everything they had. Qin Wuxin immediately played the Profound Wind Eight Melodies, and Jiang Lanjian fused the Concept of Wind into his sword. This was the first time that Jiang Lanjian had used the Concept of Wind ever since being defeated by Lin Ming. Not only that, but he used it right at the beginning. Jiang Lanjian was aware that if he didn't use it now, he wouldn't have the chance to later.

The zither sound wave attacks were invisible and formless. Jiang Lanjian's soul force was limited, and he wasn't able to sense them in the wind. He could only use sword light to protect his body. With the support of the Concept of Wind, Jiang Lanjian's sword formed a vortex of sword energy. Dozens of wind blades shot out in all directions, crashing into the hidden murderous intent that was hiding in the void.

Ding ding ding!

Crisp and clear sounds resounded in the air, as if zither strings were snapping apart. Jiang Lanjian was breaking apart the zither notes, but his sword light was also constantly being chipped away. Qin Wuxin's Profound Wind Eight Melodies was an incomparably mysterious technique. The zither sounds contained a formidable vibrating power. A single sound was able to shatter several sword lights!

Jiang Lanjian was repeatedly trapped and cornered by this zither music, and was unable to close in on Qin Wuxin. However, Qin Wuxin did not dare to be arrogant and underestimate her enemy. As long as she gave him even the slightest chance, Jiang Lanjian would instantly close the distance.

Qin Wuxin wasn't fast, but she could still move with her zither suspended in front of her, without interrupting her melody. As a result, Jiang Lanjian was unable to catch up to her.

Ordinary sounds were mixed in with the lethal zither music of the Profound Wind Eight Melodies; it was simply like a dangerous tide. Jiang Lanjian was encompassed by this zither music as if he had fallen down into a bog, and his Concept of Wind was constantly being dashed to pieces.

Jiang Lanjian knew that if he stayed on the defensive and didn't attack, he would be defeated sooner or later. All he had to do was miss a single sound and he would be in danger.

"Graceful Sword!"

Jiang Lanjian fiercely clenched his teeth and completely gave up his sword light defense. He stimulated all of the true essence to enhance the protection of his body, and flew forward at an extreme speed, his sword thrusting straight towards Qin Wuxin's throat.

His speed quickly reached the limit of his ability. He was only about a few hundred feet away. As long as he wasn't struck by any zither music, he could close this distance in a flash!

Ka!

A zither soundwave struck against Jiang Lanjian's bodily true essence, the power of vibration erupted forth!

It was just a sound, but all of Jiang Lanjian's clothes broke as if he had suffered a major blow, and his extreme speed suddenly came to a halt.

At this point, Qin Wuxin had become wholeheartedly engrossed in this match, and was waiting for any opportunity to subdue her opponent; how could she miss this wonderful opportunity?

A finger flicked out, and two zither notes struck Jiang Lanjian. Jiang Lanjian's bodily true essence broke apart, and he was sent flying backwards.

"Qin Wuxin, victory!"

With the referee's announcement, Qin Wuxin let out a light breath. It had been very difficult for her to win this match. Her strength and Jiang Lanjian's were very similar to each other, and the reason she could win this time had a bit to do with luck. When Jiang Lanjian had desperately staked everything on his last move and used Graceful Sword, if he hadn't struck a zither note in the air, then the one that would have been defeated was her.

With Qin Wuxin's victory, the young girls of the Zither Faction burst into cheers. With this win, even if Qin Wuxin lost to Ouyang Ming, Mugu Buyu, and the others, she would still advance to the top five.

The 21st round, Lin Ming against Mugu Jirong.

Mugu Jirong didn't bother fighting Lin Ming, he simply admitted defeat right at the start. There was nothing else he could have done. Puppet Masters were powerful, but they also had a fatal weakness. That was that once their puppets were lost, they would have nothing left.

Mugu Jirong still had a total of three puppets left. But Lin Ming's attack power was just too abnormal, it wouldn't be strange if he lost another puppet or two. To Mugu Jirong, this sent him into a tearless grief, a state of hopelessness beyond crying. He also had hopes of advancing to the top 10.

The 22nd round, Lin Ming against Huan Xiaodie.

This was a match without an ounce of suspense from the audience. Even the young boys and girls of the Mirage Faction didn't believe that their Senior-apprentice Sister Huan had a chance of winning.

From the very start of the match, Huan Xiaodie created her trademark 108 phantoms. However, Lin Ming used his Flow like Silk, and 10,000 vibrating true essence filaments rushed forth, destroying every phantom.

After that, Huan Xiaodie still put up a symbolic struggle and cast some illusions. But this too was easily broken by Lin Ming.

Using Ouyang Ming's own words, Lin Ming was a versatile genius who excelled in multiple fields. Just in terms of discussing his defensive abilities, Lin Ming's bodily defensive power was simply abnormal, and his soul defensive power was even more freakish. The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder had integrated into his spiritual sea, so Lin Ming could simply stand motionless onstage and let Huan Xiaodie throw whatever illusions she could towards him.

Lin Ming could sense that Huan Xiaodie hadn't been putting in her full effort, and was only symbolically displaying some moves so that she wouldn't lose face. Such being the case, Lin Ming would naturally not let a girl lose face.

After several moves, Huan Xiaodie smiled and said, “Junior-apprentice Brother Lin’s strength is amazing, I admit defeat.”

After she said that, she turned around to leave the stage.

But Lin Ming’s mind suddenly stirred. He said, “Senior-apprentice Sister Huan, please wait.”

“Mm?” Huan Xiaodie turned around, her bright eyes winking at him, “What matter does Junior-apprentice Brother Lin have to say?”

“I would like to ask Senior-apprentice Sister Huan if the Mirage Faction has some sort of transformation technique that can change one’s appearance, and would make it so that it can’t be seen through by anyone whose cultivation isn’t too far apart?”

Huan Xiaodie said, “There is. Why, is Junior-apprentice Brother Lin interested?”

Lin Ming nodded. Ever since he had fallen for Bi Luo’s trap, he had been very interested in this sort of technique. This technique could be said to be almost necessary if one wanted to travel around and commit crimes like murder and arson.

If he had this ability, it would be easier and convenient to hide his identity.

Huan Xiaodie impishly laughed, slyly smiling as she said, “This skill can’t be considered a core technique or anything in the Mirage Faction. If disciples of other factions wanted to study it, they could as long as they paid a sufficient amount of true essence stones. But if Junior-apprentice Brother Lin is interested and wouldn’t like to pay true essence stones, I can… personally… teach you~~~~~”

Huang Xiaodie’s last sentence had an extremely enticing and inviting purr, causing the heart of anyone who heard it to be a bit stirred.

Lin Ming subconsciously nodded and said, “Then I’ll have to thank Senior-apprentice Sister Huan.”

Lin Ming suddenly realized why although Qin Wuxin and Huan Xiaodie had been labeled the proud twins of the Seven Profound Valleys' younger generation, their strength had ultimately diverged so far.

Of the two, one wholeheartedly walked the martial path and was pure and ascetic in their heart. She cultivated the zither until she finally reached Large Success of her Zither Heart. As for the other, she played around most of the time, amusing herself and laughing at the world. She seemed indifferent to any sort of illusion martial arts. Like this, the difference in their strength would naturally become greater over time.

Of course, Lin Ming didn't care much at all about these things. With Huan Xiaodie to personally teach him, this would be the best way to learn. Lin Ming earnestly wished to comprehensively understand appearance changing techniques.

………………

22nd round, fifth match. Ouyang Ming against Qin Wuxin!

Although Ouyang Ming gave the impression that he was more powerful, Qin Wuxin was no pushover; this wouldn't be a one-sided battle.

The question was: just how would Ouyang Ming defend against Qin Wuxin's invisible zither music?

From the very start of the match, Ouyang Ming used his Perfect fifth layer of the Divine Acacia Power, shrouding his entire body in purple flames. Under his control, the purple flames formed clouds that revolved around his body, becoming thick shields of flame. The audience were not strangers to this flame shield. When Ouyang Ming had faced Lin Ming, he had also used his purple flame shield, but the result had been that all three layers of his flame shield had been pierced by Lin Ming's spear!

After that, Ouyang Ming had been forced to give up his purple flame shield and use Butterflies Dance on 100 Flowers to escape. However, he had only managed to dodge for a short time. Eventually, he had been swept up by Lin Ming's spear and sent flying away.

Because of this, the audience didn't feel that the purple flame shield was a good skill. However, as Qin Wuxin played the Profound Wind Eight Melodies, the invisible sonic attacks were actually blocked by the purple flame shield, unable to break it.

The power of vibration was able to break through a few layers of the purple flame shield. But right after, a new power of fire would continuously rise up to fill in whatever was broken.

After reaching the Perfect fifth layer of the Divine Acacia Power, Ouyang Ming's true essence had become thick to the point of terrifying others. If one couldn't do what Lin Ming did when he broke through the entire shield with his spear, then Ouyang Ming would be able to continuously restore it with his true essence.

Pa!

Ouyang Ming turned the iron fan in his hands, sending a Scythe of the Death God cutting towards Qin Wuxin!

Qin Wuxin grit her teeth, her right hand fiercely dancing across the zither strings, "Profound Wind Eight Melodies!"

Peng peng peng peng!

The eight notes of music impacted on the Scythe of the Dead God, dispersing the purple flame scythe.

However, Ouyang Ming used this opportunity run forwards until he was less than 100 feet away. "Junior-apprentice Sister Qin, your zither attacks are truly fierce, unfortunately... your attacks are too singular, they are too easily predicted."

Hoh!

The purple flame shield erupted forth, blocking the second round of Qin Wuxin's zither attacks. Qin Wuxin took this opportunity to pull away, but Ouyang Ming continued pressing down on her.

Zither note after zither note was sent out. Although Ouyang Ming encountered many obstacles as he sped forwards, he was still able to close in more and more on Qin Wuxin. Because Qin Wuxin had to send out a salvo of Profound Wind Eight Melodies, she was already at the limit of what her true essence could support. But as for Ouyang Ming, his true essence was very thick and he didn't consume too much.

Pa!

The iron fan opened once again, a mere three feet away from Qin Wuxin's slender jade-like neck!

Now that the battle had reached this point, the outcome was basically decided. Qin Wuxin had lost.

The audience gasped. In the finals, Ouyang Ming hadn't encountered many strong opponents. He was smoothly defeating everyone he fought until he ran into Lin Ming, and was thoroughly defeated himself. Many people felt that it was because Ouyang Ming wasn't fierce enough until they witnessed this match. Ouyang Ming had defeated Qin Wuxin by a significantly large margin of superiority.

This really made everyone aware of the fact that Ouyang Ming had taken third place during the last Total Faction Martial Meeting; his strength couldn't be doubted.

The reason that Ouyang Ming had been defeated by Lin Ming was because Lin Ming was that much stronger.

"Lin Ming is already steadily in the top three. There is only Jiang Baoyun and Mugu Buyu left. I'm really looking forward to their matches."

“If Lin Ming can win the next match, he will be second. If he can win the next two matches, he will become the champion!”

“Champion? How could he possibly come in first place? Jiang Baoyun is just too abnormal. When he fought Qin Wuxin, he didn’t even use his sword, even Lin Ming wasn’t that strong. He just isn’t Jiang Baoyun’s match. At most he will struggle will Mugu Buyu, but even Mugu Buyu hasn’t revealed his true strength.”

As these people spoke, another heavyweight match began.

Mugu Buyu against Jiang Lanjian!

Chapter 282 – Lin Ming VS Mugu Buyu

Chapter 282 – Lin Ming VS Mugu Buyu

…

…

…

Normally after a Puppet Master stepped into the Xiantian realm, he would be able to reach the Essence Integration boundary. But Mugu Buyu had managed to do so with a cultivation of only a half-step to Houtian. Just based on this point alone, no one believed that Jiang Lanjian had even a small chance of winning.

After the match started, Mugu Buyu released a spider puppet from his bag. Up until now, he had only used this spider puppet, and appeared as if he would also only use this spider puppet to deal with Jiang Lanjian.

"Is that just the spider puppet?"

"Mugu Buyu is too arrogant!"

Jiang Lanjian frowned. He would be the first to admit that he wasn't Mugu Buyu's match. Still, for Mugu Buyu to only bring out his weakest puppet to deal with him, he was just being looked down on too much.

"Concept of Wind!"

True essence immediately circulated through Jiang Lanjian's body. He cut out with the longsword in his hand, and several dozens of sword lights thrust straight towards Mugu Buyu. At that same time, his footsteps flashed, and his figure instantly vanished.

Woosh!

Jiang Lanjian appeared like a ghost by Mugu Buyu's side. It wasn't wrong that the spider puppet was powerful, but its reactions were extremely slow. Under the power of Jiang Lanjian's extreme speed, the spider puppet wasn't able to respond at all; it was just like a random decoration. Jiang Lanjian had simply stepped around it.

Although a Puppet Master had a very formidable combat prowess, they also had a fatal weakness, and that was because they were a Puppet Master. A Puppet Master was similar to the disciples of the Zither Faction. Their speed was slow, and they had weak defenses. Their close range combat capability was nearly negligible.

But Jiang Lanjian was just the opposite. He was magnificently quick, his sword was fast and fierce, and once he approached someone, his attacks were like a hurricane!

Seeing Jiang Lanjian suddenly close in on Mugu Buyu, the audience's eyes widened. Would Mugu Buyu fall here? He had only brought out his weakest spider puppet to deal with Jiang Lanjian, this Mugu Buyu was too brazen!

A whirlwind howled, and Jiang Lanjian's sword cut forth, this sword contained all of his aspirations!

Clang!

There was the sound of metal colliding, and Jiang Lanjian's sword hadn't been able to cut down anything. He couldn't believe his eyes as he looked down at the sword in his hand. This sword contained the Concept of Wind, and yet it was still kept off by Mugu Buyu just raising his hand!

How was this possible?

Even if it was Lin Ming who had an extremely formidable defensive power, he could only bounce off the sword. It was impossible for him to be like Mugu Buyu and directly hold off the sword with his hand!

Jiang Lanjian's sense told him that something was wrong here, and he wanted to pull out his sword and retreat. However, he was aghast to find that his sword was stuck. On Mugu Buyu's arm, there seemed to be black tentacles that writhed out like massive earthworms, wrapping around his sword.

Jiang Lanjian's expression changed. What the hell was this? Was this a human body?

"Die!"

Mugu Buyu gave a shrieking cry, and his left hand's fingernail suddenly turned into a foot long sharp barb, aiming towards Jiang Lanjian's hand!

At this moment, the only way that Jiang Lanjian could avoid this strike was if he abandoned the sword in his hand. But to a swordsman, the sword in their hand was their life. They would rather lose their hand than abandon their blade!

"Concept of Wind!"

Jiang Lanjian cried out, and true essence erupted from his body. The sword in his hand twisted with sword wind, and all the black tentacles were cut off by Jiang Lanjian. However, his speed was ultimately too slow. Mugu Buyu's long barbed nail caught onto his chest, and that sharp claw pierced through Jiang Lanjian's chest – blood splashed everywhere!

Jiang Lanjian's chest was coated crimson with blood.

Jiang Lanjian clenched his teeth as he forcefully drew out his longsword from Mugu Buyu's hand. He kneeled on one knee, his chest bleeding profusely. That foot-long barb was enough to stab his internal organs!

"You would die to pull out your sword? You are really such a stupid boy!" Mugu Buyu kicked Jiang Lanjian over, mockingly laughing.

As the Sword Faction disciples in the audience saw this, they were filled with indignation and rage. Mugu Buyu was too contemptuous, this was more than insulting Jiang Lanjian.

But even if they were angry, there was nothing they could do to Mugu Buyu. After all, Mugu Buyu had defeated Jiang Lanjian in a fair match. No matter the situation, that was the truth.

If they wanted to take revenge for Jiang Lanjian, they could only challenge Mugu Buyu to an honest match onstage. Unfortunately, there was not a single one among them that was Mugu Buyu's match. Like this, they could only swallow this insult.

Jiang Lanjian was lifted on a stretcher and brought offstage. He had been heavily injured. Although the Seven Profound Valleys had a vast among of rare and precious healing medicines, none of them were capable of allowing Jiang Lanjian to fully recover in an hour and completely restore his combat effectiveness.

Jiang Baoyun looked at Jiang Lanjian's chest wound, his face like the surface of a calm lake. He lifted his head to stare at Mugu Buyu with disdain.

Mugu Buyu strangely smiled, "Jejeje, you Sword Faction disciples' defenses are simply thin like paper. I just gently caressed him and he's already become like this. If it wasn't for me promptly receiving my hand, then his heart would have already been destroyed by me!"

Jiang Baoyun didn't become angry or even heated. He just coldly said, "Your words are useless. Everything will become clear on the martial stage!"

Mugu Buyu's provocation was clearly transmitted to everyone. This was his sign that he did not fear anyone, not even Jiang Baoyun was an exception!

It wasn't just Lin Ming and Jiang Baoyun who were constantly surprising the audience with the strength that they revealed, Mugu Buyu was the same! He too was just like a massive iceberg floating in the water. Only the tip of his abilities had been seen so far.

The three great elites of the younger generation had a strength that far surpassed the champions of the last several Total Faction Martial Meetings. If it weren't for these three individuals, then Ouyang Ming's own strength would have been enough to win the tournament.

“How did Mugu Buyu do it? How was he able to use his arm to block Jiang Lanjian’s sword? And what were those black tentacles?”

“I have no idea. Those Puppet Faction fellows are just too eccentric and bizarre. They rarely come into contact with other factions, no one has any idea what they are doing most of the time.”

“Could it be… they transformed their own bodies? They are just a gaggle of mad men!”

As the audience spoke, all sorts of theories were tossed about. The only thing that they were able to say for sure was that close combat was no longer a weakness of Mugu Buyu!

He had a formidable defensive power, formidable close combat ability, and even better long-range attacks. With the coordination of numerous puppets, this was a completely comprehensive three dimensional attack method.

Mugu Buyu and Lin Ming were the same; they were both extremely versatile combat geniuses!

Moreover, he was clearly more powerful than Lin Ming!

As the Sword Faction disciples realized this, they secretly became nervous. Would Jiang Baoyun be enough? Would he be okay?

At this time, this was no longer just a match between Jiang Baoyun and Mugu Buyu. After such a grievous insult to their pride, this had already become a matter of honor to the Sword Faction. If Jiang Baoyun was defeated, the Sword Faction really wouldn’t be able to lift up their heads from the shame.

However, Mugu Buyu and Jiang Baoyun’s fight hadn’t happened yet. On the contrary, the first one that Mugu Buyu would fight would actually be Lin Ming.

As the referee announced this matchup, the entire arena started to boil with excitement. This battle between Lin Ming and Mugu Buyu would be a battle between two versatile geniuses at the pinnacle of talent!

For the first time, the country bumpkin Lin Ming's cheers surpassed those of his opponent.

The Sword Faction disciples and the young Zither Faction girls all cheered for Lin Ming. In comparison, almost no one cheered for Mugu Buyu. The Puppet Faction disciples were already scarce, and at this Total Faction Martial Meeting only a few of them showed up. Not only that, but each of them had a very queer and strange temperament, they would never do something so boring like cheering. In addition to that, the Puppet Faction had never been very popular with the other factions. The Array Faction, Refiner Faction, and most others didn't have a favorable impression of the Puppet Faction, so naturally they wouldn't cheer for Mugu Buyu.

However, although there were many people that cheered for Lin Ming, there were only a few that actually had confidence in him.

Indeed, Lin Ming's strength had already exceeded the expectations that others had placed on him. He had defeated Fang Qi, Jiang Lanjian, Qin Wuxin, and then Ouyang Ming. Time and time again, he made others reevaluate the limit of his strength.

But Mugu Buyu was the same. First he had revealed his Essence Integration boundary, and then he revealed his powerful close-combat ability. Now his current momentum was in no way weaker than Jiang Baoyun!

On the martial stage, Lin Ming stood 100 feet away from Mugu Buyu. During this Total Faction Martial Meeting, what Lin Ming had experienced had really opened his eyes. He had seen a zither musician, an array master, and now a puppet master, three exceedingly different and special fighting styles. And this was only within the relatively small Seven Profound lands. If this were to be extended to the entire Sky Spy Spill Continent, who knew how many weird and fantastic fighting styles there would be.

Mugu Buyu opened the bag on his back, and a series of three puppets jumped up. First was the spider puppet, the second was a mummy, and the last one was a massive eight-clawed alligator.

Mugu Buyu had finally taken out other puppets, and not only that, but he had taken them out from the start, “Before, I never thought that you would come this far. When you defeated Ouyang Ming so easily, that really surprised me. You are the first one among the younger generation to startle me so greatly. But, this is not because of how strong you are, but because how fast you are growing. For you to already force me to use three puppets from the start is enough for you to take pride in.”

“Words are useless. Let’s fight!”

As his voice fell, the Heavy Profound Soft Spear that Lin Ming gripped in his hand began to emit a faint azure color, azure true essence emerged out. Endless true essence vibrations surged forth recklessly, even shaking the air.

Facing Mugu Buyu, Lin Ming didn’t have the slightest idea what to expect, or what would happen. He only knew that Mugu Buyu would be an exceedingly tough opponent. Although this could be called a one-on-one match, the truth was that Lin Ming was up against the equivalent of four powerful enemies.

“Aghh!”

The mummy shrieked, a bone blade in its hand, thrusting straight towards Lin Ming. Its speed was incomparably quick and majestic, it wasn’t even much slower than Jiang Lanjian.

The spear in Lin Ming’s hand turned, piercing towards the mummy! The power of 10,000 vibrating true essence filaments flooded out. It could be said that as long as Lin Ming’s spear scratched an opponent, that opponent would almost die!

It was impossible for that dense bleached white bone blade to stop Lin Ming’s spear.

However, at this moment, the bone blade in the mummy's hand exploded, and the four foot long bone blade instantly turned into several hundreds of three inch long bone needles that shot towards Lin Ming. Half of these bone needles shimmered with a glossy green substance – they were poisonous!

The attack closed in. This sudden burst of poisonous hidden weapons could be described as an extremely sinister and malefic move. Lin Ming coldly snorted, and the power of vibration erupted. 10,000 vibrating true essence filaments shot out from the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, each one glowing with an azure light!

Pu pu pu pu pu pu pu pu pu!

The audience heard a rain of intensive explosive sounds. Those hundreds of bone needles were completely turned to bone dust by that azure true essence!

Chapter 283 – Puppet Battle Body

Chapter 283 – Puppet Battle Body

…

…

…

The bone fragments danced in the air, the mummy was blown away by the true essence explosion aftermath!

Lin Ming erupted with true essence. His spear trembled, and he immediately launched Golden Roc Shattering the Void, his figure blurring, his extreme speed like gods and ghosts. He ignored the mummy puppet, and instead rushed straight towards Mugu Buyu!

200 feet passed in a fleeting moment under Lin Ming's feet, he directed his spear towards Mugu Buyu's chest!

Bypass the puppet and oppress the controller; this was the best and most efficient way to deal with a Puppet Master. However, Mugu Buyu was no normal Puppet Master. His close-range combat capabilities were simply abnormal.

In melee combat, would Lin Ming repeat the same mistakes and end up just like Jiang Lanjian? Everyone was thinking this question in their hearts. Jiang Lanjian was a disciple of the Sword Faction, and no one doubted just how strong his close range power was. Yet he had been crushed by Mugu Buyu. Mugu Buyu's defensive power was too amazing, he was nearly invulnerable!

Then, would Lin Ming's spear have any hope of threatening the existence known as Mugu Buyu? The audience's eyes were round, all of them were watching with unblinking eyes, their gazes focused on the scene atop the martial stage.

Seeing Lin Ming rush towards him, the corners of Mugu Buyu's lips tilted up in a nefarious grin. Starting when he was 12 years old, his body had undergone countless transformations with rare and precious materials.

His bones had been mixed with Aged Gold, and heavy darksteel essence had been injected into his flesh. Afterwards, he had soaked in Heavy Gold Water for all seven days of seven weeks, totaling 49 days. This process was repeated six times, and occurred twice a year for three years. This sort of inhuman torture and excruciatingly harrowing pain was not something a normal human could endure without going mad. Because of this transformation, all of his hair had completely fallen off and his skin was dried and withered as if he were at the last breaths of his life. Even though he was young, his appearance was the same as a corpse that was laid out in the sun too long!

One could say that to a certain extent, Mugu Buyu had turned his own body into a living puppet!

The reason that Mugu Buyu was willing to pay such a great price was to rid himself of the Puppet Master's close combat curse. He wanted to become a legendary Puppet Master, and the place where his ambitions began would be at the Seven Profound Valleys Total Faction Martial Meeting!

"Aged Gold Armor!"

Mugu Buyu shouted out, and his bones began to crackle, his entire skeleton making loud popping noises. A layer of metal drilled out of his flesh and poured forth, covering both of his arms. At this moment, both of Mugu Buyu's hands had turned the color of black gold.

Facing Lin Ming's ferocious attack, Mugu Buyu didn't dodge or evade. Instead, he grabbed Lin Ming's Heavy Profound Soft Spear!

This sudden change caused the entire audience to be shocked, was this still a human body?

Mugu Buyu directly gripped the spearpoint. As long as he could hold onto the spearpoint, he could use his puppet to attack again. Then, Lin Ming would be the same as Jiang Lanjian!

He would only have two paths to take. Abandon his spear and retreat, or suffer a grievous wound and be defeated!

However, the moment he took hold of that spear point, his cunningly smiling face froze where it was. In that moment, 10,000 vibrating true essence filaments blasted out like an explosion!

Lin Ming sneered, “Do you really think you are invincible?”

Lin Ming gave a cold humph, and his azure true essence that had fused with the power of the True Dragon rampaged into Mugu Buyu’s body. The power of vibration was able to disregard any surface defense, directly destroying the core!

Mugu Buyu gave a miserable cough as he was sent flying back by Lin Ming’s vibrating spear!

“What!?”

Seeing this, the audience had extremely stunned expressions. Earlier, Mugu Buyu had been able to easily block Jiang Lanjian’s sword blade, and at that time he hadn’t even used Aged Gold Armor to cover his hands.

Now, the Aged Gold Armor had appeared, and he was still swept away by Lin Ming’s spear. How could this happen?

Mugu Buyu’s face was incomparably grim and fierce as he crawled back up to his feet. His arm was still trembling, and a stream of dark red blood bubbled out from a broken gap in the Golden Aged Armor.

“Mugu Buyu is injured. A single spear was able to wound Mugu Buyu! How did Lin Ming do this?”

“How the hell is Lin Ming’s attack power so abnormally freakish? Could it be that he hasn’t used his true strength until now?”

To most of the audience, although Lin Ming was stronger than Jiang Lanjian, he wasn't several times stronger. In terms of attack power, Jiang Lanjian was still a disciple from the Sword Faction, and he himself was widely regarded as having extremely powerful attacks. At least, he shouldn't be too much worse than Lin Ming. But that single spear of Lin Ming's a moment ago had just completely upended the perception of the audience.

Lin Ming glanced at Mugu Buyu's trembling hand and said, "So it seems even you can bleed."

Mugu Buyu's defensive power had truly surpassed Lin Ming's expectations. Lin Ming had just broken through to the Pulse Condensation period, and he had reached 10,000 filaments of Flow like Silk. Not only that, but his strike had also contained azure true essence and the power of thunder. That vibrating true essence of his had an incomparably formidable destructive power. Once it hit the enemy, it could completely ignore all surface defenses and directly damage the organs and bones!

That is to say, Mugu Buyu's Aged Gold Armor was simply useless against someone like Lin Ming. In this case, after Mugu Buyu had actually taken his attack, his meridians and bones hadn't been ruined.

'This fellow has actually transformed his own meridians and skeleton. His body had almost metamorphosed into a puppet. There truly are unlimited martial paths, everything wonderful and strange is possible!'

"Good! Very good!" Mugu Buyu's expression sank. His brilliant glowing eyes that glared at Lin Ming were just like a vicious beast that was staring at a human it wished to chomp down on. He said, "You really have provoked my ire this time; I will have you pay the price of doing so!"

"Puppet Battle Body!"

Mugu Buyu's skeleton suddenly emitted explosive popping sounds as if all his bones were contorting and snapping within him. The clothes on his body were like rags as they were torn to shreds, and two arms coated in blood stretched forth from his back. In the blink of an eye, Mugu Buyu had turned into a four armed monster!

Lin Ming had seen and experienced many strange and disgusting things in the Southern Wilderness. Yet seeing this scene caused his heart to palpitate, the hairs of his arm to rise, and his scalp to tingle with numbness. This pair of arms didn't look as if they were created by rare materials. Rather, they were real arms that were hacked off and then sewed on!

This Mugu Buyu was a raving madman!

Cha cha cha cha!

Four different weapons were taken out from Mugu Buyu's spatial ring.

His two back arms held a sickle that was over five feet long and a one-inch thin longsword. One front arm held a hammer and the other held a three foot long iron needle that was as thick as a thumb. This iron needle was especially used by the Puppet Faction to nail into a human's chest, so they could fix the human onto a wooden board and facilitate the process of turning them into human puppets. Most of the time this would be done to corpses, but sometimes it was used on the living.

As Mugu Buyu pulled out these four weapons, Lin Ming was already moving. Lin Ming didn't intend to wait for Mugu Buyu to complete this body transfiguring process.

A spear thrust out, and the spearpoint sparked with sizzling electric flashes. The Purple Flood Dragon was especially good at disintegrating Yin energy, and Mugu Buyu's body that was partially composed of corpses was especially heavy in this energy. If this spear struck, Mugu Buyu would absolutely take additional bonus damage.

At this time, Lin Ming suddenly felt a massive traction force take hold of his body. It was as if he were a piece of iron that was attracted to a magnet.

Lin Ming turned around in surprise to see that the giant alligator puppet had opened its giant jaws, and in its mouth a single pure black swirling vortex. This vortex emitted an extremely strong tugging force that pulled down his entire body.

Engulfing power?

What skill was this?

Before Lin Ming could react, he heard a strange sound. A giant silver spiderweb dropped down from the sky towards him. This was the spiderweb that the spider puppet released. After a Puppet Master reached the Essence Integration boundary, the puppets they created could retain the abilities they had in life to a partial degree. For instance, this spider had retained its spiderwebs.

Meanwhile, the mummy puppet also moved. It raised its hand, holding a broken bone blade and thrust straight towards Lin Ming's chest.

At this time, Lin Ming was gripped by the engulfing traction force and was completely unable to dodge or evade. There was a spiderweb in the air and a bone blade on the ground. Lin Ming had been driven into a sure-kill situation!

The audience collectively gasped in shock. Several of the young Zither Faction girls couldn't bear watching this and began to loudly scream.

At this moment, a scintillating bright purple light radiated from Lin Ming, and thick arcs of purple lightning leapt from Lin Ming's body like giant pythons, crashing towards the spiderweb.

Chi Chi Chi!

That spiderweb that far surpassed Sky Worm Silk in tenacity was instantly fired to ashes by the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder.

In that split-second, the mummy flushed at Lin Ming, its bone blade raised high. Lin Ming gave a loud shoot; the long spear in his hand pierced forth like a venomous snake!

Puff!

The spear was filled with an unbelievable momentum as it thrust through the mummy's chest. The power of thunder that was especially able to dispel Yin energy burst forth, countless arcs of electricity covering the mummy in a grid of lightning, its body wildly convulsing.

Chi chi chi!

The mummy's entire body was charred black by the power of thunder, fired into a block of charcoal. Suddenly, the mummy opened its wide mouth and spat out a cloud of purple smog.

"Corpse poison?"

The purple smog had just emerged when it was cleanly burned away by the purifying nature of thunder. However, this scene caused Lin Ming's heart to jitter in surprise. The diversionary strength of the engulfing power of the alligator to contain him, combined with the killing potential of the mummy and spider puppet as they circled him. Even on death, the mummy puppet would still release a deadly toxic poison; there were simply layers upon layers of killing moves. If Lin Ming didn't have the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder and azure vibrating true essence that could both defend and attack, then it would be exceedingly difficult for him to ward off so many attacks.

"Die!"

Lin Ming coldly snorted and 10,000 vibrating true essence filaments merged into the mummy's body where it exploded. The mummy was simply directly blown to smithereens from the spearpoint!

"He destroyed a puppet?"

“So fierce!”

Although it was only destroying a puppet, this achievement was still enough to deeply shock the hearts of everyone present. Up until now, it was as if Mugu Buyu’s puppets were immortal. No matter how he let his opponent attack, none of them were able to break apart the puppets’ defenses. Even if the puppets were occasionally inadvertently injured, they seemed completely unaware of any damage they took.

The fact that Lin Ming was able to completely destroy a puppet in one strike was enough to cause the audience’s eyes to light up in delight. A Puppet Master had a limited number of puppets. Every time a puppet died, the Puppet Master’s strength would correspondingly weaken.

On the martial stage, Lin Ming casually shook off his spear, coldly looking towards Mugu Buyu. “Have you finally finished your Puppet Battle Body transformation?”

At this time, Mugu Buyu’s entire body was enveloped in a thick carapace, with only four arms sticking out that were covered in Aged Gold Armor. Mugu Buyu was in a very strange position as he supported himself on these four limbs; he looked just like a giant beetle.

“Hehe, this puppet I created has the strongest defense of all. It is called the Crimson Gold Tortoise. The Crimson Gold Tortoise’s armor can resist penetration from any form of true essence. I confess, your true essence is very strange, it can actually pierce through my Aged Golden Armor and injure me. But now, it is useless against the Crimson Gold Tortoise! As long as I am protected inside, I am invincible! Jejeje!”

Mugu Buyu laughed devilishly. Lin Ming probed the Crimson Gold Tortoise’s armor with his soul force and it appeared just like Mugu Buyu had said. That Crimson Gold Tortoise armor was sealed in some sort of strange force field distortion, cutting off all flows of true essence.

‘The Puppet Faction really has too many secrets!’ Although Lin Ming didn’t understand the principles behind the force field, he was able to guess that it was a mystery that approached the power of Laws. A mere Puppet Faction also had such a powerful legacy; one really couldn't underestimate any faction, no matter the size.

'I didn't think that against Mugu Buyu I would be forced to use my final abilities. If I'm already driven to this stage, how will I deal with Jiang Baoyun?'

Chapter 284 – Evil Fire God VS Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder

Chapter 284 – Evil Fire God VS Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder

…

…

…

In the Grand Hall of the Seven Profound Valleys, Shi Zongtian's expression changed. "Scarlet Gold Tortoise… I didn't think that Mugu Buyu would already be able to control the Scarlet Gold Tortoise."

As a Valley Master of the Seven Profound Valleys, Shi Zongtian had some understanding into the cultivation methods and other skills of the Puppet Faction. The Scarlet Gold Tortoise was a defensive puppet, and its armor contained a 'True Essence Force Field'. This was a kind of Law that was even above the Concept of Wind!

A True Essence Force Field was abstruse and enigmatic; someone who wasn't a true genius would never be able to comprehend it. It was one of the most secret inherited legacies of the Puppet Faction. The True Essence Force Field and Essence Integration boundary were together two great supreme heritages of the Puppet Faction.

However, the difficulty in comprehending the True Essence Force Field surpassed even the Essence Integration boundary! Shi Zongtian never would have imagined that Mugu Buyu, at such a young age, would have actually managed to simultaneously comprehend two supreme heritages of the Puppet Faction!

“This is the greatest talent that the Puppet Faction has seen for the last several hundred years! He is even superior to Jiang Baoyun’s status in the Sword Faction!”

Shi Zongtian turned to look at the Puppet Faction Great Elder who was sitting in a corner of the Grand Hall. Surprisingly, the old corpse monster’s long face actually had an extremely ugly smile. Obviously, he was beyond satisfied with Mugu Buyu.

Seeing Shi Zongtian’s eyes on him, the Puppet Faction Great Elder smiled with a ‘jejeje’ and said, “Buyu has comprehended just a little superficial knowledge of the True Essence Force Field. As for the Scarlet Gold Tortoise, he’s barely able to use the lowest level, but… jejeje, although it’s only a little superficial knowledge, it’s already more than enough to win this match and the next.”

The Puppet Faction Great Elder’s words were filled with a supreme self-confidence. Indeed, he had reason to be self-confident. The True Essence Force Field was known as the absolute defense among all puppet defenses. As long as he hid within the Scarlet Gold Tortoise, Mugu Buyu would be in an invincible position. Not only that, but Mugu Buyu also had a puppet that was crafted from a peak Houtian realm master. This puppet had been used a single time one year ago, and its strength was already amazing then. Now, a year had passed and its strength was most likely even greater.

A True Essence Force Field coupled together with a peak Houtian master puppet. If both were used in unison, then not even mentioning Lin Ming, even Jiang Baoyun would find it very difficult to defeat Mugu Buyu!

No wonder Mugu Buyu was so arrogant – he had the qualifications to back up his trash talk.

Shi Zongtian casually glanced at the Sword Faction Great Elder and was surprised to see he had a very solemn and grave expression. Apparently, he too was very nervous about Jiang Baoyun and Mugu Buyu’s match.

On the martial stage, the mummy puppet had already been demolished by Lin Ming. From within the Scarlet Gold Tortoise, Mugu Buyu released another puppet. This puppet was also in a human shape like the mummy, and its entire body was covered in a bright crimson red armor. This puppet burned with brilliant flames all over, and its aura was valiant and phenomenal. It seemed as if it were a flaming war god that had been born from the ashes of carnage!

Chi chi!

The puppet took a single step on the ground, and the floor tiles directly melted! Its entire body exuded a powerful true essence energy; it was countless times more powerful than the mummy before it!

"It's the Evil Fire God! After the Puppet Faction obliterated the Flame Cult of Grace Venerate Nation, they used the corpse of their founder to create this puppet. That founder was a peak Houtian master!"

"The Evil Fire God is even more powerful than it was a year ago. At that time its body armor didn't have such scalding heat, and it wasn't wreathed in flames."

The surrounding audience couldn't bear but cry out in alarm and acclaim. Compared to the True Essence Force Field, this peak Houtian realm master puppet was much more frightening and intimidating.

How could Lin Ming still fight against Mugu Buyu?

'So this is the puppet that was manufactured using a peak Houtian realm master…' Lin Ming's eyes narrowed. The puppet that Mugu Buyu made from a peak Houtian master wouldn't be any normal puppet, nor would it be created with any normal materials. This puppet would at least be a top-level Houtian master like Qin Ziya, or even stronger than Qin Ziya. This was absolutely not an enemy that a peak Houtian master from the 36 countries could compare with.

After being made into a puppet, the strength of it was still weakened by a great deal because of the limits of Mugu Buyu's cultivation. Still, it would not be easy to deal with. Coupled with the fact that Mugu Buyu was hidden within the Scarlet Gold Tortoise's True Essence Force Field, and with the skirmishing ability of the giant alligator puppet and spider puppet, the union of these four factors created a perfect offensive and defensive system with no weaknesses at all. They could attack in a 360 degree angle from every single dead spot!

Even Jiang Baoyun was somber as he watched Mugu Buyu set the battle stage. For these last three years, not only did his strength increase by leaps and bounds, but so did Mugu Buyu's! He had gained his own special ability, and Mugu Buyu was also no exception!

"He's managed to comprehend the two supreme heritages of the Puppet Faction. He had already gained fame a year ago with the Evil Fire God, and now its strength has increased even more. Lin Ming, I want to see just how you will fight this..."

Jiang Baoyun's eyes were brilliant as he watched Lin Ming. In this situation, most people had already written off Lin Ming as having any hope of winning. Time and time again Mugu Buyu had revealed power that was formidable beyond anyone's imagination. It wouldn't be an exaggeration to call him the greatest talent that the Puppet Faction had seen in its 600 year history!

Lin Ming silently gazed at the Evil Fire God.

True essence continuously flooded into the Heretical God Seed, and with a light crackling sound, the mundane-looking purple steel needle jumped into Lin Ming's palm. This steel needle was only 2 inches long, and there was an image of a Purple Flood Dragon engraved into the needle shaft. This Purple Flood Dragon circled the steel needle nine times, its claws in a hostile and threatening pose!

The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder's Thunder Soul finally reappeared in the world after a one month-long slumber in the Heretical God Seed!

Although the coiling dragon steel needle contained an incomparably savage and brutal power of thunder, from the outside, it was impossible to see anything strange. The power of thunder was completely compressed within the steel needle, without even the tiniest bit of thunder power overflowing.

It would be difficult for even a Xiantian master to realize that this steel needle in Lin Ming's hand was entirely constituted from energy. They would only think that it was a solid steel needle.

This was the symbol of high-grade thunder – thunder manifestation!

Energy and mass came from the same origins. Once mass was burned, it would turn into energy. And once energy was highly compressed, it could also similarly evolve and gain a substantive quality.

This was the so-called 'True Essence Manifestation'. The manifestation of thunder was also the same!

Therefore of all those present, no one noticed the purple steel needle appear in Lin Ming's hand except for Mu Qinghong. Even Shi Zongtian wasn't an exception. If Shi Zongtian completely focused his soul force to probe, then he might be able to discover that there was something unusual about the steel needle. But even if he did, he would never imagine that this steel needle of Lin Ming's contained an earth-shattering strength.

"He's finally used his last trump card. This is the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder's Thunder Soul! If it wasn't for Qianyu informing me ahead of time, then I would never have noticed such a small object."

Mu Qinghong looked at that coiling dragon steel needle and felt her heart startle. The power of thunder was actually compressed to such a terrifying degree; it was hard to imagine that this was a low-grade earth-step Thunder Soul.

At this time on the martial stage, Mugu Buyu who had released all his firepower laughed with a ‘jejeje’ sound. He said, “Lin Ming, you can take pride in compelling me to use my full strength. Now, meet my strongest attack, Flaming Hell!”

Huuu!

Huuu!

The spider puppet spat out a ball of spider silk and the giant alligator puppet opened its mouth to release its engulfing power. This engulfing power immediately latched onto Lin Ming’s body, blocking him from using his matchless speed.

At the same time, the Evil Fire God drew out a massive burning flame greatsword that blazed in a conflagration of flames. Once this greatsword appeared, layers of heat waves rushed out like a tide; it was as if all the oxygen in the air itself had lit on fire.

Under such a terrifying wave of energy, even the protection barrier around the martial stage began to slightly tremble. And this was only that aftermath of releasing such power. Obviously, Mugu Buyu’s strike would be even stronger!

All of the audience watched with widened eyes, their breath abated. Qin Xingxuan felt as if her heart was caught in her throat, both of her small hands were tightly clasped together, knuckles white.

How could Lin Ming stop such a formidable strike? Mugu Buyu was absolutely one of the cruelest and most ruthless juniors of his generation, one only had to look at Jiang Lanjian as an example. Although the Total Faction Martial Meeting didn’t allow murder, what if it happened accidentally? Or what if there was an irreversibly serious injury that crippled Lin Ming for life?

Aware of these possibilities, Qin Xingxuan’s palms were cold with sweat.

At this moment, the Evil Fire God moved. It brandished the flaming greatsword in its hands and chopped down at Lin Ming. It was as if space was torn apart, leaving nothing but endless red fire dancing in the sky!

In that moment, even the referee elder had begun to revolve true essence within his entire body, maintaining 120% vigilance. He was ready to move out and rescue Lin Ming at any time. If such a rare talent like him were to be ruined on the martial stage, then that would be an immeasurable loss.

Weng weng weng!

The air trembled, the greatsword howled, and a roaring inferno of flames ascended to the heavens! As for Lin Ming who was bathed in the flames, his eyes were closed tight and his mind and entered a deep concentrated state.

His soul had already long penetrated into the flame, controlling each flicker of fire energy and sending it flowing into his heart.

‘This power of fire is actually more dominant than the Abyssal Flames, and yet there is no Flame Essence controlling it. Instead, it’s supported by nine Hollow Flame Essences. This truly is an inconceivable method, to have a single body contain nine Hollow Flame Essences, and yet controlling them so they do not conflict with each other. Is this an ability that only a puppet can have?’

The power of fire didn’t have the support of an eternal Flame Essence backing it. Because of this, it was easily controlled by the Heretical God Seed. Lin Ming simply didn’t need to fear this attack at all. His entire body surged with true essence as all of it was poured into the coiling dragon steel needle.

Lin Ming flicked his finger!

Kacha!

A three feet thick purple beam of light shot straight into the highest skies, impacting the heavens. It was as if the nine heavens had sent down heavenly tribulation to the world. The inestimable highly compressed brutal power of thunder completely broke out from the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder! Thunder clapped, giant purple electric snakes danced wildly!

The power of thunder and the power of flame met, rotating together. Even without Lin Ming's deliberate manipulation, these two extremely volatile and dangerous energies underwent a similar fusion like Thunderfire Annihilation; they blew up in a titanic explosion!

Bang!

The terrifying power of thunder wantonly surged out in all directions, creating waves of radiant reddish purple shockwaves that lashed out everywhere, falling all over the curtains of light that formed the protective array formation.

With the terrifying explosion contained within a fully enclosed space, the protective light curtains instantly and violently trembled as they expanded outwards from the blast. With a 'ka ka ka' sound, cracks began to appear in the protective barrier, rapidly spreading out like a spiderweb.

At that moment, the entire protective array formation completely shattered!

Lin Ming had already been expecting this. His feet moved and he immediately launched Golden Roc Shattering the Void to rapidly retreat. With the support of the Heretical God Force, the highly compressed azure true essence thickly wrapped around him, protecting the vital areas of his body.

But as for the peak Houtian Evil Fire God puppet, how could it have the same awareness that Lin Ming did? It had stood in the near center of the explosion. Under the mighty force of that terrifying energy, its armor burst apart and its body cracked all over, deep fissures appearing throughout!

“What!?”

“How is this possible!?”

Whether it was the audience, the elders at the Grand Hall, Jiang Baoyun, Jiang Lanjian, or anyone else, they were all completely shocked as they saw the Evil Fire God destroyed. They had thought that after Mugu Buyu had taken out his strongest puppet, the Evil Fire God, and created a perfect attack system, that he had already won. None of them ever imagined that with this single strike of Lin Ming’s, that seemingly all-powerful Evil Fire God collapsed apart on the spot!

Chapter 285 – Unstoppable

Chapter 285 – Unstoppable

…

…

…

The intensity of the explosion was too strong. Lin Ming's clothes were torn in many places, hanging off his body like rags. He had various injuries that ranged from mild to severe, but none of them were life threatening. If it wasn't for the endless tenacity of his azure true essence and the fact that his own body's defensive capabilities were so powerful, then he would have been in a pitiful state after taking such an attack.

As for Mugu Buyu, his defensive power was much stronger than Lin Ming's. Still, with his main body hidden in the much less mobile Scarlet Gold Tortoise puppet, he was in a much more distressed and embarrassed state than Lin Ming. Under that violent detonation of energy, he and the Scarlet Gold Tortoise had been both sent flying backwards, smashing against the edge of the arena, and falling down like a turtle that was flipped over. Even the weapons in his hands had fallen out.

In the middle of the martial stage, the tiles that had just been repaired yesterday were completely blasted apart by the terrifying explosive force.

As for the Evil Fire God, its entire body was covered in fissures and cracks, and it seemed more dead than alive.

The other two puppets were also broken by the explosion. The giant alligator's tail had broken, and the spider puppet had lost five of its eight long legs.

The audience gasped repeatedly, "The Evil Fire God is ruined?"

“I can hardly believe my eyes. A year ago, I personally witnessed the power of Mugu Buyu. At that time, the Evil Fire God could almost be considered better than the Deputy House Master of the Jade Bamboo Nation’s Seven Profound Martial House! And now a year later, the Evil Fire God has a red suit of armor. Its strength is most likely much greater than it was before, and yet it was defeated in a single move... no... it’s better to say that it was demolished.”

“This is too terrifying! Even the protective barrier shattered apart, is this really a human?”

“What attack did Lin Ming use? Was it purely the power of thunder?”

Everyone present had some level of cultivation. In the instant of the explosion, they had been able to sense an incomparably strong power of thunder. Not only that, but a thick purple column of light had impacted into the skies, piercing the heavens. This was something that anyone could see as long as they weren’t blind. It was just that no one believed that Lin Ming was actually able to unleash a power of thunder that could generate such catastrophic destruction.

At this moment, the sky resounded with claps of thunder. As the audience looked up, they could actually see flashes of lightning in the clouds above; it was as if a thundercloud had magically appeared on a rainy summer day.

Without a doubt, this phenomenon was created by the pillar of lightning that had shot up into the sky a moment ago. The power of thunder was actually able to break through the heavens and live amongst the clouds, the vibrant intensity of this power of thunder was simply amazing!

Mugu Buyu finally managed to roll over and right himself from the pile of rubble he was in. His deep eyes looked at Lin Ming in disbelief, his lips vigorously twitching.

This is impossible! How could he possibly have such a powerful attack!?

Ka ka ka!

With a light crackling sound, several pieces of the Scarlet Gold Tortoise’s shell began to fall off. This was obviously caused by the trauma of the impact a moment ago, making cracks appear!

“Even the Scarlet Gold Tortoise was damaged!”

Mugu Buyu let out a heavy gasp. The True Essence Force Field was a legacy that was on par with the power of Laws, and yet it still hadn’t been able to completely block Lin Ming’s strike!

What sort of terrifying move was this!? Even a peak Houtian powerhouse couldn’t compare!

‘To use such an attack, this baby boy must have used some sort of secret technique, there is no way that he could use it again! My True Essence Force Field hasn’t broken, there is no need for me to be afraid of that attack again…’ As Mugu Buyu thought this, his rapidly beating heart was able to settle down.

‘So many of my puppets were destroyed, that even includes my Evil Fire God! I will surely make you pay!’

Mugu Buyu clenched his jaw, the corners of his lips curving up in a vicious smile. To a Puppet Master, every puppet was extremely precious and valuable. The spider puppet and giant alligator puppet had been seriously damaged, and the Evil Fire God was turned to scrap. The Scarlet Gold Tortoise also had minor damage. This succession of losses caused Mugu Buyu’s heart to feel as if it were dripping blood.

The manufacturing of a puppet required one to invest a massive amount of time, effort, and all sorts of rare and precious materials. Mugu Buyu simply couldn’t afford to lose his puppets, especially the Evil Fire God. Mugu Buyu had paid the price for these puppets, and now they were nearly ruined by Lin Ming. It was just like breaking his hands and feet at the same time.

Mugu Buyu grabbed another four different weapons, glaring at Lin Ming as if he wished to shred him into a million pieces.

At this point, Mugu Buyu's eyes jumped. He saw Lin Ming flex his fingers, and a purple steel needle appeared in his palm, spinning around.

Mm?

'A moment ago, did this boy take out that steel needle to send out that terrifying attack?'

Mugu Buyu couldn't confirm his suspicious. Looking at that purple steel needle, it didn't seem as if there was anything special about it.

'Regardless of whether not that horrifying attack was caused by that steel needle, it's impossible for him to launch it multiple times. There is no need for me to fear him!'

As Mugu Buyu though this, he drove out all the hesitation and dread that had built up within his heart. He grasped the four weapons in his hand, his concentration at the limit. As long as he saw this steel needle fly out, he would immediately cut it down!

In the Grand Hall, Shi Zongtian saw this coiling dragon steel needle reappear once more. He was stunned to the point of immediately standing from his chair.

"This… this is!?!?"

Shi Zongtian naturally had extraordinary eyesight. When he first saw Lin Ming take out this coiling dragon steel needle, he didn't really think that it was worth paying much attention to. But this time he deliberately used his soul force to probe. Just as his soul force touched the surface of the steel needle, a terrifying power of thunder that was compressed to an outrageous degree bounced back!

"Just what the… it can actually reflect my soul force probing?" Shi Zongtian was shocked. He was an extreme Xiantian master! And yet this steel needle that was taken out by a junior had actually managed to force back his perception. This mighty power of thunder… could that steel needle possibly be a manifestation of thunder energy that had actually substantialized into pure thunder matter!?!?

Shi Zongtian was about to continue investigating, but at this time, Lin Ming flicked his finger, and that coiling dragon steel needle was sent flying!

Mugu Buyu was at the end of the line, he was in a critical situation. He had a throbbing premonition that this steel needle wasn't simple at all. The four weapons in his hands were all the highest high-grade human-step treasures. Not only that, but they had been inscribed with special puppet symbols that channeled the true essence within his body. They were weapons that were tailor-made for him to use.

Mugu Buyu had paid a great price for these special top quality treasures in his hand. He couldn't believe that with these treasures, he wouldn't be able to block a small steel needle. Lin Ming was a rare genius, but in the end he was still a common martial artist from the 36 countries. How could he have anything of a grade that surpassed these treasures in his hand?

"Break for me!" Mugu Buyu cried out, and he flourished all four treasure weapons to cut down that coiling dragon steel needle!

A sickle, longsword, iron nail, and hammer, all four of these weapons were thousands of times larger than that tiny coiling dragon steel needle. The clash between them would be completely out of proportion, just like a elephant against an ant. Even though everyone realized that Lin Ming's strength was unfathomably deep, none of them believed that this steel needle could explode with a terrifying power.

However, as Mugu Buyu's four treasures simultaneously struck the coiling dragon steel needle, a completely unexpected scene occurred!

Bang!

Thunder sounded on the ground, and a terrifying purple ray of light shot into the sky! Hundreds of thick electrical snakes wantonly coiled in the air, crazily twisting around. Mugu

Buyu who was hiding in the Crimson Gold Tortoise was sent flying back, just like a ball that was hit by a human expert!

The entire audience was stunned, how could this happen?

Before the audience had a chance to react, an urgent voice suddenly cried out, “Watch out for the explosive shockwaves!”

That array formation was supposed to protect the audience by containing anything within the martial stage. However, that defensive barrier had already shattered apart in the last attack. Without the protection of the curtains of light, the purple explosion mixed with arcs of terrifying lightning savagely surged out into the audience!

The disciples nearest to the martial stage cried out in alarm. They immediately forced all of their true essence to protect their body, bracing themselves against the terrifying explosive shockwaves and lightning. They were not weak, but even so, after being struck by the purple energy waves, they felt their blood tumbling within them and their whole body go numb.

Several martial artists whose cultivation was only at the Bone Forging stage were even thrown backwards, wounded, vomiting blood.

“Heavens, that is just too terrifying. The true essence aftermath actually has this kind of power; just how terrible would it be directly facing it?”

In the contestant waiting area, Zhang Yanzhao had taken out his saber to resist the true essence shockwaves. Feeling the inestimable energy within, he could only ruefully smile, muttering to himself, “How laughable of me. Although my strength isn’t enough to reach the top five, in terms of attack power I foolishly believed I was far above everyone else. But not compared to Lin Ming. Even if I used the strongest move of the Blood King’s Triple Murder, I can’t even begin to match up to this.”

After the shockwaves of the explosion passed by, the audience was in total chaos. At this time, everyone couldn't help but wonder, just what had happened to Mugu Buyu, who had been directly struck by this?

Suddenly, everyone turned their heads to look. They saw that Mugu Buyu's Tortoise Shell had already smashed into a stone pillar, his entire puppet body covered in rubble, motionless.

Seeing this, everyone's throats fiercely twitched as they gulped over and over again. Such a terrifying attack, even if Mugu Buyu had the defensive power of the Scarlet Gold Tortoise, the impact alone would have been enough to wound him.

This was too fearful.

With the sound of rolling rocks, Mugu Buyu finally crawled out from the rubble. It had to be said that the Scarlet Gold Tortoise's defensive power was truly resilient. Even under the second attack of the coiling dragon steel needle, it hadn't exploded into bits, only a massive number of cracks had appeared on the surface.

But even though the Scarlet Gold Tortoise had an amazing defensive power, it still couldn't defend against the electric shocks or the impact damage from being flung away. Mugu Buyu was scorched black all over his body, and his organs felt as if they were dislocated.

Ka ka ka…

As more of the Scarlet Gold Tortoise pieces crumbled off, the True Essence Force Field was teetering on a very precarious situation.

Mugu Buyu was frightened out of his wits. This Lin Ming was simply an abnormal monster, that sort of inhuman attack could actually be launched in bursts!

Although the second attack was much weaker, it could definitely match or even exceed an all-out attack from a peak Houtian master.

If he was struck again, he feared that his Scarlet Gold Tortoise would be finished. If this happened, then Mugu Buyu's combat effectiveness would sink to the pits. His great losses would simply be unimaginable.

Mugu Buyu's eyes were bloodshot as he sent a withering glare at Lin Ming, as if he only wished to swallow him. He could only gnash his teeth and finally say, "I admit defeat!"

A Puppet Master had many different forms of attacks, and could form a three-dimensional attack system from all facets. Compared to an ordinary martial artist, they had many advantages. But the disadvantages were obvious too. Once a puppet was damaged, it was very troublesome to repair. They weren't like normal martial artists that could just eat some healing medicine, rest for a few days and be completely healed.

"Mugu Buyu actually admitted defeat..."

"Too terrifying. Lin Ming was actually able to force Mugu Buyu into this situation. I think that even Jiang Baoyun will lose against Lin Ming!"

"I don't think Jiang Baoyun has any hope, he seems to be around Mugu Buyu's level..."

A Seven Profound Valleys disciple slapped his thigh, and said with some annoyance, "If I knew about all this earlier, I would have bet on Lin Ming to win! Even if I only placed down ten true essence stones, I would have become a rich man!"

Chapter 286 – Closing the Curtains on the Final Act

Chapter 286 – Closing the Curtains on the Final Act

…

…

…

Many people regretted that they hadn’t placed bets on Lin Ming to win. They all had limited foresight. When Jiang Baoyun had displayed his amazing strength to the crowd, they thought that Jiang Baoyun had a high chance of winning. Then when Mugu Buyu had revealed his Essence Integration boundary and True Essence Force Field, they thought that Mugu Buyu would win.

Now, Mugu Buyu had been completely eliminated by Lin Ming, so they in turn transferred all their support to Lin Ming.

A voice coldly said, “The battle hasn’t been fought, no one knows the outcome. Perhaps Lin Ming might not defeat Jiang Baoyun!”

“Mm?”

“Mugu Buyu’s most terrifying aspect lies in his defensive power. Lin Ming Ming’s attack power had exceeded even a peak Houtian master, so he was able to suppress Mugu Buyu. But Jiang Baoyun is different. Jiang Baoyun’s most terrifying aspect lies in his attack power and speed. If Lin Ming’s attack can’t reach Jiang Baoyun, then the loser will absolutely be Lin Ming!

As the person said this, everyone began to feel that this was a very rational and justified reasoning.

Among masters, they were often able to equally restrain each other in different aspects. Mugu Buyu and his puppet were very slow. To Lin Ming, he was a perfect target.

But Jiang Baoyun was different.

His sword speed reached the pinnacle!

His movement speed reached the pinnacle!

His attack strength reached the pinnacle!

He was a completely different type of master than Mugu Buyu.

Like this, the final result of that battle became confusing once again…

As the crowd discussed amongst themselves, Lin Ming was also playing out the battle between him and Jiang Baoyun in his imagination. He once had full confidence in himself, but until now, he still hadn't seen or experienced Jiang Baoyun's true and total strength, and he didn't know the cause for Jiang Baoyun's confidence.

"It's a pity that my Flame Essence is too small and weak right now. Otherwise, I could combine thunder and fire – it would be much easier to deal with Jiang Baoyun…"

The Flame Essence within Lin Ming's Heretical God Seed was much more formidable than it was in the past. However, it didn't have an enhancement in its essential nature; it remained the lowest of the low-grade human-step Flame Essences.

After recently using some fires from another Flame Essence to build up his own, along with collecting some information, Lin Ming was able to summarize many experiences and thoughts he had.

Normally, for a martial artist's Flame Essence (such as the Southern Wilderness Fire Worm Shaman's Eternal Flame, or the Refiner Faction Huo Yanluo's Abyssal Flame) once its grade was decided, it would never be able to be promoted to a higher grade. For instance, once a medium-grade human-step Flame Essence was born as such, it could never again be improved.

Even if one collected all sorts of rare and precious materials to enhance it, it would only cause the Flame Essence to grow stronger within Flame Essences of the same level; it would never have a qualitative evolution.

It was just like raising a dog. One could feed a dog good meat and good bones, allowing it to grow stronger every day. But no matter how strong this dog became, it would never become a tiger.

A higher-grade Flame Essence was only a bit different. For instance, an earth-step Flame Essence would start off as a mewling tiger cub. After first acquiring it and not having fed it any anything, it would naturally be inferior to a good grown-up dog. But in the end, a tiger was a tiger. Even if it was fed rotten meat every day, it would eventually grow up and become a beast that a mere dog could not deal with.

As for Lin Ming's current Flame Essence, even if placed among the dogs, it would be the weakest and most pathetic puppy of all. Yet the difference was that it could continually grow, and even change its essential nature. In the future, it could become a tiger or transform into a dragon. When that happened, its true terrifying strength would burst out.

If he wanted his Flame Essence to have a qualitative change, it could only happen by devouring other Flame Essences.

As for everything else, even the highest fire-attribute materials like the feathers of the Vermillion Bird could only increase the strength of the Flame Essence within its grade; they couldn't cause the Flame Essence to be promoted to another level.

Because of this, Lin Ming had kept and hadn't used most of the Vermillion Bird feathers that he had obtained by tricking Mu Qianyu's Saint Beast mount, the cute Little Flame.

As Lin Ming was thinking about Jiang Baoyun's combat strength and where his weaknesses could be, in the Grand Hall, several of the Seven Profound Valleys' elders were watching Lin Ming and talking about him.

That battle earlier had simply given them too great a shock.

It wasn't just Shi Zongtian, but also several other elders who had noticed the coiling dragon steel needle. They realized that it wasn't a true material object, but rather something that was condensed and formed by pure energy.

The Sword Faction Great Elder's deep eyes flashed. He lowered his head as if he were hesitating for a moment, and then slowly said, "If this old man hasn't misread with his dull eyes, then that should be some sort of instrument that was congealed from pure thunder origin energy… this sort of thing isn't something that even a thunder-attribute Xiantian realm powerhouse could have. It's unbelievable that a Pulse Condensation boy can actually have this sort of thing…"

"Elder Jiang, don't tell me you believe that little brat Lin Ming was actually able to condense that steel needle? What a joke and a half!" The Zither Faction Sovereign coldly snorted, obviously viewing Elder Jiang's opinion with utter disdain. "It is impossible for a Pulse Condensation period child to condense a pure energy weapon, even if they were at the height of all talent! That requires an incomparably thick true essence to condense, and also a heaven gifted thunder origin energy fusion compatibility. He would need to purify the thunder-attribute energy and then condense that origin energy into a weapon. Lin Ming's talent is barely enough, but he absolutely does not have the required true essence! If he does, then he can just forget about the tournament and come right up here; I will give my position to him!"

The Zither Faction's old woman said all this in a chilling tone. She continuously beat Lin Ming's face, diminishing and dismissing him. She really held no love, or even had a decent impression towards Lin Ming.

This was because no matter what faction Lin Ming joined, it was impossible that he would join her Zither Faction. If he joined another faction, then that was equivalent to gaining another powerful rival. This was something that she understood in her heart, and thus her impression of Lin Ming continued to worsen.

Elder Jiang faintly smiled. Lin Ming would not join the Zither Faction, but there was a high chance that he would join the Sword Faction. The sword and spear and many similarities that could help each other, and although Lin Ming couldn't practice the sword arts, there were still many true essence revolving cultivation methods that he could use. Moreover, the Sword Faction had the most abundant resources.

Like this, the Sword Faction would have three great talents in Jiang Baoyun, Jiang Lanjian, and Lin Ming. Thinking this, the smile on Elder Jiang's face grew wider and wider. He stroked his beard as he said, "Even if it wasn't condensed by Lin Ming, it's also very extraordinary that he can control a Xiantian level origin energy weapon."

"It's only good luck, nothing more! He just hit the jackpot when he stumbled into some Xiantian master's inheritance! With this opportunity, he would naturally be able to make leaps and bounds in a short period of time. But after this period, all of it will disappear."

Hearing the cynical taunts of the Zither Faction Sovereign, Mu Qinghong suddenly coldly interjected, "There are countless lucky opportunities that can be found in the Sky Spill Continent. However, there are only a few people that can obtain them. What they lack is not luck, but ability, courage, and wisdom!"

Mu Qinghong was well aware of just how Lin Ming managed to come by his Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. He had rushed to the summit of Thundercrash Mountain with just a Bone Forging cultivation. He even snuck into the Flood Dragon's lair and managed to obtain the Magnetic Birthstone. This courage and fearless bravery was not something that could come from any average person.

This was also a point that Mu Qianyu had extremely admired in Lin Ming. There were countless talents and geniuses within the Sky Spill Continent. However, the number of true high-level powerhouses was actually very low in number. This was not because everyone else had insufficient talent, but because they lacked wisdom, understanding, perception, and an incomparably firm heart of martial arts.

Mu Qinghong had a lofty status. Hearing her say these words of praise, the Zither Faction old woman didn't immediately respond. Shi Zongtian smiled, mediating between them, "What Fairy Maiden Qinghong meant is that opportunities only present themselves to those that are prepared. Every lucky chance has an accompanying risk that corresponds to the rewards! There is a fine line between obtaining this lucky chance and dying a beggar's death."

As the elders discussed these matters, several other matches had already passed on stage.

Two masters that also represented the pinnacle of attack power faced each other in Huo Yanluo and Zhang Yanzhao. Huo Yanluo's Flame Essence turned out to be superior, breaking apart Zhang Yanzhao's Blood King's Triple Murder. This caused the audience to exclaim in surprise. The Abyssal Flame's power was truly terrifying. If it wasn't for the lightning attack that Lin Ming had released, then the Abyssal Flame would be the most powerful move of this year's Total Faction Martial Meeting.

After that was Fang Qi against Mugu Jirong.

After Fang Qi had lost his Golden Light Array Flag, he could have been considered at the lowest spot of the 11 people. However, Mugu Jirong wasn't much better. When he fought against Huo Yanluo, three of his puppets had been burnt to cinders by Huo Yanluo, and as a result his strength had greatly decreased.

These two could be said to be comrades-in-suffering, fellow losers that had lost a great deal of their strength. After a tough battle, Mugu Jirong was finally able to defeat Fang Qi. This victory had basically established that Mugu Jirong would be tenth, and Fang Qi would be eleventh.

The 23rd round was Zhang Yanzhao against Huan Xiaodie. Most of the crowd favored Zhang Yanzhao and were more optimistic of his chances. However, what happens during a match can often surprise. Huan Xiaodie created illusion after illusion and was able to cause Zhang Yanzhao to strike empty air. Afterwards, he was defeated by Huan Xiaodie's counterattack.

Like this, eighth and ninth place were also settled. Zhang Yanzhao had taken his Blood Wave Saber to participate in this Total Faction Martial Meeting and had only reached ninth place. This result was much worse than what the Zhang Family elders had hoped for. It could only be said that this year's Total Faction Martial Meeting simply had too many extreme talents.

After the 24th round ended, the referee team decided to temporarily postpone the matches between Lin Ming, Qin Wuxin, Jiang Lanjian, Jiang Baoyun, Mugu Buyu, and Ouyang Ming for three days. The other contestants' matches would carry on as usual.

Because these six people had amazing combat strength, the martial stage's protective array formation had to be repaired and strengthened. Also, Jiang Lanjian had been severely wounded and Mugu Buyu's puppets had been seriously damaged, greatly decreasing both of their combat strength. If the matches continued, it would be impossible for them to display their full potential, thus the decision was made to delay the matches.

Lin Ming was indifferent to this decision. In the top 11, there was only one person he hadn't yet fought, and that was Jiang Baoyun.

This would be his final battle.

For three days, Lin Ming was specifically arranged by the Seven Profound Valleys to stay in a quiet room that was built over an opening in the land pulse.

The feature of the opening in the land pulse was that there was origin energy that gushed forth from the ground. The heaven and earth origin energy here was twice as rich compared to other places in the Seven Profound Valleys. As for comparing it to Sky Fortune Kingdom, the difference was simply like heaven and earth.

At the same time, what Lin Ming ate was spiritual fruits and vegetables. These foods contained rich heaven and earth origin energy that was even purer than what was served at Desert Flower Hall. Lin Ming suspected that the food he ate was valued at over 100 true essence stones. If this was converted to gold, that would be 100,000 gold taels! To eat 100,000 gold taels in a single sitting was mind boggling. The entire yearly expenses of the Crown Prince's offices wouldn't even be able to cover a few meals. Lin Ming just couldn't imagine how much gold was being spent on food.

But since the food was supplied free of charge, Lin Ming naturally obliged and opened his belt and belly wide to eat as much as he could. Since the Seven Profound Valleys had plundered so many resources, he ate with a clear and satisfied conscience.

In these three days, Lin Ming didn't go out. He stayed in his room meditating and cultivating. Under the support of the ethereal martial intent, the Blue Miracle Pill efficacy and the heven and earth origin energy he got from eating the spiritual food were completely absorbed by him. Slowly, his early Pulse Condensation period cultivation became increasingly consolidated.

These three days quietly passed.

As Lin Ming sat in his room after a full night of mediating, his eyes slowly opened. In that instant, his pupils flashed with thunder.

Today was the true final day of battle. As for Lin Ming, he only had a single match, and that would be his battle against Jiang Baoyun.

Chapter 287 – Blue and Black Twin Swords

Chapter 287 – Blue and Black Twin Swords

…

…

…

It was early morning. The sun had risen from the east, scattering the murky gray mist that shrouded the land. The entire Seven Profound Valleys was seething with utter excitement.

Because there were only a handful of matches left for today, there was plenty of time left. Therefore the first match was scheduled to start in the late morning.

Even so, at the dawn of day, the entire martial square was already densely packed to the point at which it was even difficult to walk through.

In these last three days, everything except for the last round of the tournament had been finished, including the second tier and the third tier. Ranks 100 to 200 had already been decided through points attained in the Ten Thousand Killing Array.

Qin Xingxuan had finally managed to attain rank 169, and Ling Sen attained rank 72. These two results were already considered excellent for martial artists from the 36 countries.

Sky Fortune Kingdom had three people who managed to reach the top 200. Qin Ziya was simply ecstatic with the euphoria of this success.

In particular Lin Ming; the pleasant surprise that this young boy had given him was too great. After defeating Mugu Buyu, Lin Ming had high hopes of becoming the champion!

Once Lin Ming came in first, Qin Ziya would be able to obtain the Heaven Opening Pill that he had been longing for in his dreams!

Countless martial artists pursued the Xiantian realm for their entire lives. Even Qin Ziya, who had a simple personality and was often indifferent, was extremely excited at the prospect of officially stepping into the Xiantian realm!

However, Qin Ziya was clear that the Xiantian realm was most definitely the end of his martial arts road. Among the peak Houtian masters, he was among the top, and it was difficult for anyone in the Houtian realm to stand shoulder to shoulder with him in comparison. But after he reached the Xiantian realm, he would only be the most ordinary of Xiantian martial artists, the kind that were often surpassed by the most talented geniuses.

But even so, Qin Ziya was satisfied with that road. Who knew how many martial artists in the Sky Spill Continent had been stuck at that Xiantian bottleneck? They had been unable to break through their entire lives, and would finally die with their dreams unfulfilled.

When Lin Ming reached the square, he saw an elderly man in blue kindly smiling at him, a longsword on his back. As Lin Ming saw this elder, his was startled. This old man was just casually standing there, but it seemed as if there was an invisible sword aura floating around him, able to cut apart all.

Extreme Xiantian master?

Lin Ming's heart jumped. An extreme Xiantian master was very rare, even in the Seven Profound Valleys. There were many faction Sovereigns that hadn't been able to reach the extreme Xiantian realm.

"Lin Ming." The blue-clothed elder smiled kindly at Lin Ming as if they shared a close rapport with each other. This was in sharp contrast against the sharp sword aura that surrounded him.

"Senior." Lin Ming bowed in respect.

“After the tournament ends, make sure you come to the Absolute Sword Peak’s Sword Terrace to look for me. This old man’s name is Jiang Wuji.”

Jiang Wuji… Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. This old man really was the Sword Faction Sovereign!

Although Lin Ming took pride in his status and abilities, with existences like Jiang Wuji, he still needed to look up to them in respect.

“Of course.” Lin Ming replied in deference. He was able to faintly guess what Jiang Wuji wanted from him. Since this was a personal invitation from the Sword Faction Sovereign, it was naturally impossible for him to reject.

At this time, a hearty laughter sounded out, “Jiang Wuji, you’re quite a crafty one.”

When this voice sounded out, it seemed as if it was far away. But right after, it had already entered into his ears. Lin Ming turned his head and saw a handsome man in a white robe walking over to him. He was several hundred feet away, but crossed this distance in only a few steps, as if the road underneath him was shortening.

This was also an extreme Xiantian master!

Lin Ming’s eyes jumped. He didn’t know how many extreme Xiantian masters there were in the Seven Profound Valleys, but he could tell that they were all characters at the Sovereign level. If such a figure were placed in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, even the emperor would have to be cautious around them. To be more precise, any emperor of the mortal world would not even have the qualifications to see them.

“The tournament hasn’t even ended, and yet your Sword Faction is already thinking of snatching away this young talent? Lin Ming is a spear master. If he enters your Sword Faction, there is nothing he can do. If it’s like that, it’s much better for him to join my Acacia Faction!” The white-clothed man smiled as he said this, then very casually patted Lin Ming’s shoulder as if he was showing a great deal of affection and fondness.

The white-clothed man's lewd smile was completely out of character with his vaunted status.

"My Acacia Faction. Hehe, do you understand just what benefits you'll have if you join my Acacia Faction? There are thousands of beauties for you to freely choose from. If you take a fancy towards anyone, you can just carry them away. My Acacia Faction can satisfy any taste that you have. Young girls that are 14, young girls that are 18, or even several dozen years. We have ripe, mature women that are rich in experience and techniques of all kinds. Although it sounds a bit old, you'll never be able to tell them apart from a twenty year old. As long as you desire, you can obtain any type you wish for! We have mothers with daughters, twins, quadruplets, sisters, everything you can hope to find! Not only that, but Lin Ming, with your status, these girls will fall over each other to climb into your bed. They will rack their brains and do anything they can think of to please you. This is the ultimate life that a man can live!"

Hearing the Acacia Faction Sovereign's bawdy laughter, Lin Ming was dumbfounded. If it wasn't for this fellow's cultivation, then it would have been hard for Lin Ming to think of this man as a Sovereign. But as Lin Ming remembered just what sort of place the Acacia Faction was, and that it was a faction that focused on carnal cultivation methods, he realized this made sense.

"Mm? Aren't you interested?" Seeing Lin Ming have no reaction, the Acacia Faction Sovereign's eyes were somewhat strange. He was likely suspecting that Lin Ming had a problem with his body, or maybe he had a different sexual orientation.

Lin Ming was speechless. He finally said, "Thank you Sovereigns for your kind thoughts, but joining a sect is very important, and many matters are at stake. I honestly haven't given it much thought yet."

According to the customs of Sky Fortune Kingdom, Lin Ming had finally reached the age where one would often discuss marriage. It was impossible for Lin Ming to not desire a woman, after all, he was a young boy with hormones. But to him, the Acacia Faction's cultivation methods were simply too low-grade, and he could never use women to cultivate something like the ‘Divine Acacia Power’.

“Haha, of course, when discussing such things, naturally you need to further consider. After this tournament ends, come to my Acacia Faction if you have the spare time. I have a few gifts prepared for you.” The Acacia Faction Sovereign revealed a lascivious smile that was easy for any man to understand. Lin Ming could imagine just what these so-called ‘gifts’ were.

Lin Ming didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry.

With the appearance of the Acacia Faction Sovereign, Jiang Wuji kept a calm and placid expression. There wasn’t much harmony or good will between the largest factions of the Seven Profound Valleys, the Sword Faction and Acacia Faction. One was a self-proclaimed righteous sect that followed the orthodox ways, whilst the other was an evil sect that focused on fulfilling one’s earthly desires. Both of their ideals ran counter to each other; it was simply impossible for them to get along.

As the Sovereigns of the two largest factions within the Seven Profound Valleys coldly stared at each other, the tournament had already gotten underway. There were only six contestants for today’s matches; Lin Ming, Qin Wuxin, Jiang Lanjian, Jiang Baoyun, Mugu Buyu, and Ouyang Ming.

These six individuals were fated to be the top six of this year’s Total Faction Martial Meeting.

The first to go onstage was Mugu Buyu. He had already switched to a new puppet. Repairing a badly damaged puppet was a complicated and tedious matter that took a great deal of time. Thus Mugu Buyu could only take out a spare puppet. Of course, its power was clearly inferior to the precious combination.

However, even though he was at a disadvantage, his fighting strength was still surprisingly high. In his match against Qin Wuxin, Mugu Buyu was able to easily win because Qin Wuxin's zither music was simply unable to break through his True Essence Force Field.

Afterwards, Ouyang Ming fought Jiang Lanjian. Jiang Lanjian's attacks were swift and sharp, but in the end he was unable to overcome Ouyang Ming, and was defeated.

Like this, the fifth and sixth place ranks were decided. Qin Wuxin was fifth, and Jiang Lanjian was sixth.

Next was the struggle for the top four spots of this tournament.

Ouyang Ming against Jiang Baoyun.

This battle had aroused a great amount of interest amongst the audience. This was because they once thought that this battle would be the ultimate showdown of this year's Total Faction Martial Meeting.

This was the first time that Jiang Baoyun had drawn his sword, causing everyone to be greatly surprised. Jiang Baoyun's sword case on his back held two swords. One was blue, and the other was black. Both swords were slender and long. The blue sword was covered in teal scales, and it had a chilling luster to it, shining with a cold light.

As for that black sword, it was inserted into a scabbard. That scabbard seemed to be made of some black stone, it was incomparably strange.

These two swords grabbed everyone's interest. Even Lin Ming was eyeing those swords with great concern. He had a gut feeling that those two swords weren't as simple as they seemed.

As a swordsman, Jiang Baoyun had been able to reach this stage without having taken out his swords. This was enough to illustrate just how terrifying he truly was. Now, the first time he brought out his sword, there were actually two. This caused the audience to be exhilarated.

“Was Jiang Baoyun someone who practiced dual wielding?”

“That’s impossible. Our Seven Profound Valleys’ Sword Faction only cultivates the single sword. Not only that, but the dual wielding method is simply not the orthodox method. Jiang Baoyun would never do something so trifling and neglect the essential foundation of the sword path.

A dual swordsman had the advantages of using dual swords. However, a true orthodox swordsman held a single blade as their king. Those swordsmen that pursued the ultimate pinnacle of the sword almost all used a single blade. Of course, in ancient times there was also a legendary swordsman named Wang Chengsheng who had had used the rare dual sword method.

Once the match started, Jiang Baoyun actually didn’t take out his black sword. Instead, he only drew his blue sword. The sharp sword light that it released was like a verdant rainbow that fell from the sky. The purple flames that Ouyang Ming released were chopped into bits.

With his sword in hand, Jiang Baoyun’s aura had completely changed from before. As soon as the battle with Ouyang Ming started, it became a completely one-sided slaughter. In just ten breaths of time, the match had ended and Ouyang Ming admitted defeat.

Jiang Baoyun placed the blue sword back into his sword case. As for the black sword, he hadn’t even touched it.

He had two swords with him, and yet he only used one?

Nobody believed that the second sword in Jiang Baoyun’s sword case was there for some fancy decoration. It absolutely contained a terrifying amount of power. The reason that Jiang Baoyun hadn’t used it was likely because Ouyang Ming didn’t have the qualifications to force him to.

“Jiang Baoyun should be a dual wielder. Since he has two swords, the second sword should be tied to some special skill that he uses…”

Lin Ming mulled over this. When he looked at Jiang Baoyun, he found it difficult to estimate him. He just always had such a calm confident appearance. Naturally, he also had the ability to be so confident.

The audience was deeply curious as to what Jiang Baoyun's second sword was. They were looking forward to it being drawn, and were hoping that he would use it against Mugu Buyu. However, they were left in disappointment.

As the referee announced the match between Jiang Baoyun and Mugu Buyu, Jiang Baoyun actually refused to participate.

"Jiang Baoyun, why won't you fight me?" Mugu Buyu's mummy face was twisted together, it looked hideously grotesque.

"I do not wish to win like this. Your Evil Fire God is ruined, and your Scarlet Gold Tortoise is in poor condition. As of now, you are not my match." Jiang Baoyun embraced his sword case, his voice tranquil.

Mugu Buyu ground his bright white teeth together, and sneered as he laughed, "So you pity me. To think that I, Mugu Buyu, would one day fall from the skies and be reduced to this state, where I am actually pitied by others!"

Although Mugu Buyu loathed Jiang Baoyun, he couldn't help but admit that with his current condition, it was impossible for him to be Jiang Baoyun's match.

Jiang Baoyun said, "There's no need to speak any further. Right now you don't even have the qualifications for me to bring out my Black Crystal Sword. When you've restored yourself to your peak condition, then you can come look for me at the Sword Terrace. At that time, we shall decide who is the winner and who is the loser!"

Thus, Jiang Baoyun and Mugu Buyu's match was put on hold, and Ouyang Ming's position was settled as fourth. There was only one final match left in this tournament, it would decide who was the champion.

Lin Ming against Jiang Baoyun.

Chapter 288 – The Peak of All Battles

Chapter 288 – The Peak of All Battles

…

…

…

The referee team was keenly interested in the final match of Lin Ming and Jiang Baoyun. They decided to let the two of them adjust and restore their conditions to the peak. Before the final match began, the tournament was placed on hold for three hours until lunchtime was finished.

In fact, by this point many people weren't even in the mood for lunch. They remained in their seats, fervently anticipating the upcoming match and discussing amongst themselves.

The common disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys had limited vision on what would truly happen. However, they had an outstanding capacity to fantasize how the match would play out, brainstorming countless ways that Lin Ming and Jiang Baoyun would fight. Even Jiang Baoyun's Black Crystal Sword had had its function and characteristics thoroughly 'researched'. Especially for the disciples of the Refiner Faction, although they were not so good at combat, this was a prime opportunity for them to display their specialized skillsets. They analyzed Jiang Baoyun's Black Crystal Sword from multiple angles and deduced its attributes. If one wasn't aware of the situation, then they would have even thought that these Refiner disciples were the ones who personally hand crafted the sword.

The afternoon sun in the winter was gentle and hazy. After noon had passed, the last match of the Total Faction Martial Meeting would begin. This was the showdown between the top talents within the several hundred thousand miles of the Seven Profound territory; this would decide who was the number one of the younger generation!

As the fateful moment approached, the cheers of the arena became thunderous, drowning out every other sound for hundreds of miles. By this time, no one dared to mock or look down on Lin Ming, not even the Seven Profound Valleys' disciples. Everyone just wanted to see this showdown between these two geniuses that stood at the apex of talent. This was an opportunity that only came around once every several hundred years. It could be said that this sort of chance could only occur through the fickle fortunes of fate. It had to be known that if a martial artist didn't step into the Xiantian realm, they would live at most around 200 years. For them, this battle would only happen once in their lifetimes! By just that point alone, it was enough to excite them to the point of frothing at the mouth!

On the martial stage, Lin Ming and Jiang Baoyun stood 200 feet apart. Jiang Baoyun opened the sword case he carried on his back, and took out the vivid blue longsword.

With this sword in hand, the momentum that Jiang Baoyun had already gathered around him suddenly shifted. His eyes sharpened as if they contained a limitless sword light, piercing the heart of anyone he glanced at.

If Jiang Baoyun had been a calm man with a gentle temperament, then now he had the qualities of the finest sword. He was sharp, ice-cold, and filled with murderous intent!

Jiang Baoyun pointed sword fingers at Lin Ming and said, "Before this Martial Meeting began, my Sovereign once told me that Ouyang Ming, who I lost to three years ago at the last Martial Meeting, had reached the peak Pulse Condensation period and would be my greatest match. He cautioned me to take be careful, but I told him that Ouyang Ming was not my greatest rival; my greatest rival is only myself! If I cannot continuously defeat talents of a third-grade sect, then what qualifications do I have to even speak of pursuing the end of the sword path

"But now, those words..." Jiang Baoyun took a deep breath, his eyes flashing with a dazzling light as if they were bright stars shining in the inky black night.

"I cannot help but acknowledge that your talent far exceeds mine. When you and I were the same age, I did not have your strength. But more than that, I am even more enthusiastic.

A peerless powerhouse needs a grand stage to grow. This small Seven Profound territory does not qualify for such a stage, and even being the number one hero of the Seven Profound territory holds no meaning for me. Even worse, my eyes might be clouded by this title, and I might become complacent, weak! Therefore when I was 18 years old, I began to challenge to talents of all other third-grade sects, including even Peacock Mountain. At the start, I lost many and won only a few times. But after that, I won many times, and lost only a few! And now this year, I challenged four geniuses, and was defeated not even once!

"Therefore, I once again became confused, thinking that I would lose my way. And then you appeared! You are the rival of my destiny. Once I defeat you, I will become a hero of this era. The greater your talent, the higher my spirit burns with passion!

"Lin Ming, do not let me down!"

Lin Ming looked at Jiang Baoyun with surprise, he hadn't imagined he would have such a broad view of the world.

In one year, he had challenged four other geniuses from different sects, and defeated them all. One had to know that this was an extraordinary achievement. After all, the Seven Profound Valleys couldn't be considered the highest of the third-grade sects.

No wonder. Although Jiang Baoyun had lost to Ouyang Ming in the last Total Faction Marital Meeting, his power and influence now far exceeded Ouyang Ming's, and he held an unshakable position in the heart of every disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys. All of this was accomplished by his own sword!

Lin Ming also understood why Jiang Baoyun had kindly invited him to join the Sword Faction. This was because he was not afraid of a challenge. On the contrary, he longed for a true opponent to test himself. The desire to challenge himself... this was his heart of martial arts, this was the heart of martial arts that a genuine master should have!

Lin Ming slowly said, "From the moment I began to walk the path of martial arts, I had heard the great name of the Seven Profound Valleys. To the me of that time, the Seven

Profound Valleys was like a forbidden temple that loomed high in the heavens, impossible for us ordinary commoners to even see. After I stepped into the hallowed halls of Sky Fortune Kingdom's Seven Profound Martial House, I became increasingly aware of just how terrifying the Seven Profound Valleys was. Because of your existence, there are many martial artists like me, common, ordinary ones, who have forever lost their chance to practice martial arts. This is the fate that has been engraved within their very bones since birth! Since that moment, I had resolved to someday bring my spear here and break through that fate of imprisonment, to fight for what belongs to me, and take control of my own destiny!

"Now, what I will say is that if you wish to take me as the rival of your destiny, then I will tell you that I will not disappoint you. However, whether or not you can keep up with my pace will all depend on yourself!"

As Lin Ming said these words, the entire audience was startled.

This was just crazy talk, a martial artist from the 36 countries had actually said such insolent words. If it were just a few days ago, then these Seven Profound Valleys' disciples would have been laughing until they rolled on the floor, but now, no one dared to laugh. This was because Lin Ming had the ability to say so!

"Good!" Jiang Baoyun laughed, "Lin Ming, take out your spear!"

These words filled with a surging fighting spirit were just like a thunderclap that rolled throughout the entire Profound Sky Mountains.

"Take out your spear!"

"Take out your spear!"

"Take out your spear!"

The echo impacted into the sky, reverberating between the heavens and earth!

At this moment, the entire atmosphere of the arena lit up in a glorious frenzy. This time, the cheers were not for Jiang Baoyun – nor were they for Lin Ming. They were only for this match that would decide the top master of the younger generation!

Lin Ming turned his wrist, and the Heavy Profound Soft Spear appeared in his hand. His aura immediately erupted; he was just like an implacable mountain!

At this moment, Jiang Baoyun also moved. He began to slowly walk towards Lin Ming. However, his footsteps had an unapproachable feeling, as if the ground he walked on could not be violated. After a few steps, the unbelievable occurred. As Jiang Baoyun moved forwards, he left behind a phantom that was identical to his shadow!

This phantom was also wearing black clothes and holding the Blue Peak treasure sword in his hand. It was almost impossible to discern any difference between it and Jiang Baoyun.

Phantom?

Lin Ming's brows furrowed, and his soul force swept out; he was actually able to feel a chilling murderous intent emitting from that phantom body!

It wasn't just a ghost, but a true phantom that could attack. Its own attack power was no weaker than the true Jiang Baoyun!

Lin Ming drew in a breath of cold air, there was actually such a cultivation method in this world?

As two Jiang Baoyuns appeared, the audience was stunned.

Jiang Baoyun said, "From your expression, it seems that you've already deduced the truth. You're right, the phantom behind me is not a just a ghost, it is a true swordsman. It has the same speed and attack power as I do – it is my Sword Spirit Avatar. Right now, it could be said that you are fighting two of me."

"What? Simultaneously fighting two Jiang Baoyuns!?"

Many people were frightened silly. Jiang Baoyun was already an abnormal freak, and his skill with the sword was at the highest peak. His attacks were sharp, swift, and incomparably fierce. And now Lin Ming had to fight two Jiang Baoyuns at once, what kind of concept was this?

Everyone knew just how terrifying Jiang Baoyun was. In one year, he had challenged four top talents of third-grade sects, and had achieved victory against all of them. But because Jiang Baoyun had fought in distant lands, his moves were unknown, and no one knew just what the limits of his strength were.

In the audience, Qin Xingxuan was nervously wringing her hands together, her palms already wet with sweat. Could Lin Ming defend against this? And Jiang Baoyun still had that Black Crystal Sword!

“Sword Spirit Avatar?”

Lin Ming could be considered opened minded. There were countless varieties of martial artist, and too many that he didn’t understand. There were some he had never heard of, and even some that he could never have imagined.

Almost all of these abilities and skills were either mediocre or of an unorthodox origin. Because there were just too many, there had to be some cultivation methods that were considered wonderful treasures even in the Realm of the Gods, waiting for him to find.

“Graceful Sword!”

Jiang Baoyun gave a loud shot, and there was only a flash of blue. That flash of blue was too quick, it was just like a flicker of color that suddenly appeared in front of Lin Ming!

Lin Ming’s pupils contracted.

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Ka!

The sword light directly pierced through Lin Ming, Jiang Baoyun and his blade had cleanly sliced through Lin Ming's body. But it soon became clear that he was only an afterimage!

Jiang Baoyun hadn't even looked back when his Sword Spirit Avatar shot forwards with the same speed, unstoppable!

The blue sword flickered, thrusting straight towards Lin Ming's throat. At this time, Lin Ming was in the air – he could not evade!

"Ah!" The audience didn't even have time to cry out in alarm. Lin Ming's eyes flashed with flight, Concept of Wind!

Ka!

Another afterimage was cut apart. Lin Ming fell to the ground with his spear, a foot-long cut in his plain clothes.

"Good speed!"

Lin Ming was shocked. The truth was that Lin Ming's speed wasn't slow. The Concept of Wind was fused into his attacks and into his movements. Whether it was movement speed or attack speed, he far exceeded a martial artist of the same level!

However, he had been completely unable to catch up to Jiang Baoyun's speed. It could only be said that Jiang Baoyun's speed was completely abnormal!

How was this possible?

Lin Ming found this hard to believe; was this really a speed that a Pulse Condensation period martial artist could achieve?

'I see… so Jiang Baoyun has already comprehended his own Sword Step.'

In the Seven Profound Valleys' Grand Hall, Shi Zongtian was watching Jiang Baoyun, finding it difficult to remain calm. This so-called Sword Step was when one's own movement fused into one's sword intent. When a person's movement achieved the boundary of becoming one with the sword, the sword would move as the person did, and the person would move as the sword did. Because of this, Jiang Baoyun was able to reach a truly terrifying speed.

To walk the sword path, one not only needed a deep cultivation, but also an extremely high perception. Jiang Baoyun was able to reach this Sword Step boundary because of his own indispensable talent and perception!

It wasn't only Shi Zongtian. Several other faction elders were startled. Lin Ming's speed was truly praiseworthy, but Jiang Baoyun's speed was even quicker! He had a natural inborn Sword Spirit, and he had managed to comprehend his own Sword Step at the young age of 19. Such a terrifying swordsman had never been seen in the Seven Profound territories within the last millennium!

The Refiner Faction Sovereign Huo Xuan couldn't help but ask, "Elder Jiang, just what realm has Jiang Baoyun reached? Just a year ago I had seen him in action, and he is completely incomparable with his current self."

Chapter 289 – The Limit of Speed

Chapter 289 – The Limit of Speed

…

…

…

The Sword Faction Great Elder shook his head and said, “After Baoyun awakened the Sword Spirit within his body, he’s made 10,000 miles of progress every day. Even I find it difficult to estimate what level he is at now. During his four challenges this year, I accompanied him on three of them. The growth he’s made through every battle is just incredible!”

Hearing the Sword Faction Great Elder say such praise, those present felt amazed. It was just too striking that even the Sword Faction Great Elder didn’t know the limits of Jiang Baoyun’s strength. This growth rate was just bewildering. Jiang Baoyun kept creating miracles, he was just like the main character of some fantasy novel.

Shi Zongtian’s eyes shined and he couldn’t help but think in his heart, ‘Sword Faction’s Jiang Baoyun, Puppet Faction’s Mugu Buyu, Zither Faction’s Qin Wuxin, and now we also have an even more amazing talent, Lin Ming. With these four great talents gathered here in this single generation, is it time for my Seven Profound Valleys to usher in eternal times of prosperity?’

Xiu!

On the martial stage, an icy blue radiance shone out. At the same time, the two Jiang Baoyuns both flourished their swords, and two sword energies instantly twined together, the imposing aura in the air sharply rising to the peak.

When the two swords combined, the sum was greater than the parts. The sword energy pierced through the void, slicing through the reinforced martial stage array formation as if it were nothing but a sheet of tofu. The sharp aura instantly caused the audience to feel cold, as if that chilling sword aura was up against their own backs.

Facing this combined sword energy, Lin Ming held his spear horizontally with both hands. Azure true essence erupted, and the sonorous roar of a dragon cried out as a black dragon shadow appeared behind him. This was the first time Lin Ming had released the power of the strongest True Dragon after consolidating his true essence in the Pulse Condensation period.

Kacha!

The martial stage began to shake, and cracks spread on the tiled floor under Lin Ming's feet like a spiderweb. His spear thrust out, and vibrating true essence divided into 10,000 filaments, howling forth!

Saber like tiger, spear like dragon. With the power of the True Dragon attached to the spear, it could display the ultimate power!

Bang!

Two terrifying energies collided in a deafening explosion; turbulent waves of true essence wantonly surged forth, the entire martial stage shook!

Ka ka ka!

The icy blue sword energy was constantly breaking, but the azure true essence was also constantly melting. However, the point of energy impact was slowly sliding towards Jiang Baoyun. This meant that Jiang Baoyun's sword energy was losing against the azure true essence!

"Even with two sword energies combined, Jiang Baoyun's attack is inferior to Lin Ming!"

“Lin Ming’s attack power is just too weird! In terms of attack power, Jiang Baoyun is weaker than him!”

The audience was aware of just how powerful Jiang Baoyun’s sword energy was. When Jiang Baoyun had fought Ouyang Ming, he had only needed to slice out a few casual sword energies to scatter apart Ouyang Ming’s Absolute Life Purple Flame that he had summoned with his full true essence at the Perfect fifth stage of the ‘Divine Acacia Power’. At that time, Jiang Baoyun hadn’t even used a sword. But now, Jiang Baoyun and his Spirit Sword Avatar had combined together, and they were still weaker than Lin Ming’s spear!

Peng!

True essence waves crashed out. Jiang Baoyun and his Sword Spirit Avatar instantly flashed, his figure fading. Although his attack power was inferior to Lin Ming’s, his speed was still superior!

Cha! Cha!

Two sword energies pierced towards Lin Ming from two different directions, their speed already reaching the degree at which they was hard to see!

However, Lin Ming hadn’t even turned his head to look. He completely liberated his perception, using his soul force to sense all the information in the air, determining where Jiang Baoyun’s attack would come from.

“Flow like Silk!” The azure true essence had already congealed, and it erupted again! Lin Ming aligned his spear with the sword energy, and 10,000 vibrating true essence filaments divided in half, 5000 vibrating true essence filaments each directly impacting the sword energies!

Peng! Peng!

The sword energies broke apart. At the same time, a purple power of thunder ran out from the ruins of the sword energy, rushing towards Jiang Baoyun like a deadly blade!

Ca!

In the instant that the lightning struck, Jiang Baoyun’s body flickered and he only left behind a vague blur, not even giving Lin Ming the slightest opportunity to strike.

‘He’s too fast!’ Lin Ming was startled. This was the first time that he had encountered someone whose speed was so fast that he couldn’t hope to match them.

With his thick cultivation true essence and his Sword Step, Jiang Baoyun’s speed was already beyond the limit that a Pulse Condensation period martial artist could reach.

As for Lin Ming’s Golden Roc Shattering the Void, although it could be said to be one of the most powerful movement techniques that existed, his cultivation was just too low. Firstly, Lin Ming was only at the early Pulse Condensation period, and secondly, he hadn’t cultivated Golden Roc Shattering the Void to a high enough level. Golden Roc Shattering the Void had a total of 12 layers, and the Supreme Elder that passed away only had eight of them within his memories. As for Lin Ming, he had only truly learnt the first layer.

With just some superficial ability in Golden Roc Shattering the Void along with Lin Ming’s lower cultivation, his movement was naturally slower than Jiang Baoyun’s Sword Step.

Lin Ming was already considering that after the Total Faction Martial Meeting ended, he would cultivate a thunder-attribute movement technique with the aid of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, and make up for his insufficient movement speed. After all, a thunder-attribute martial artist normally had an enormous superiority in terms of movement and speed.

Peng peng peng!

Another three sword energies were broken!

The martial stage was run through with wide fissures in the ground, Jiang Baoyun’s sword light was just too terrifying. However, Lin Ming’s spear could actually break it. It could be said that the azure true essence combined with Flow like Silk was just too strong.

Swish swish!

Jiang Baoyun and Lin Ming's speed was too quick; the audience could barely see vague blurs of icy blue sword light and azure true essence. When these forces collided in the same place, bursts of vibrant, dreamy blue light radiated out.

Although Lin Ming's speed was inferior to Jiang Baoyun's, to the common viewer, their speed had already surpassed the limits of their sight.

It was only when Lin Ming's speed lowered a bit as he thrust out his spear was the audience able to barely see his movements. But this was only a very short moment. Because of the persistence of one's vision remaining in the eyes, every action he made was like a ghost. In just a single breath of time, Lin Ming had already thrust out his spear several dozen times.

These spears were not chaotic or random. Every spear was able to break apart three or four sword energies that Jiang Baoyun cast out. In other words, Jiang Baoyun and his Sword Spirit Avatar had already sliced out hundreds of swords!

Just a day ago, the new reinforced protective array formation had been placed down. But now, it was fiercely shaking again. The entire martial stage was whipped into a tornado, and the broken tiles of the martial stage were picked up into the brutal winds. These fragments were like arrows that shot in all directions!

The audience was dumbfounded. They could only see more and more cracks and fissures appearing in the martial stage at a terrifying speed. When had they ever seen such a competition of extreme speed? Was this really a battle between Pulse Condensation period martial artists? Even Houtian realm martial artists would not be so abnormal!

"They are too fast, the realm their speed approaches in inconceivable. Even Senior-apprentice Sister Huan, who is a self-proclaimed speed master, can't even match up to half of their speed.

A young Zither Faction girl muttered to herself. Huan Xiaodie was a direct disciple who excelled most at speed. However, what she excelled most at was already worse than Jiang Baoyun and Lin Ming by far. She had no other aspect that she could even compare in.

In normal years, direct disciples of the Mirage Faction were inferior to the Sword Faction direct disciples. However, the disparity usually wouldn't be so great. At most it would be equal to the gap between Huan Xiaodie and Jiang Lanjian.

It could only be said that Jiang Baoyun was too abnormal!

But although Jiang Baoyun was abnormal, how could Lin Ming, a martial artist from the 36 countries, be such a monstrous talent? With his early Pulse Condensation cultivation, he was managing to fight Jiang Baoyun to a draw!

At this moment onstage, even Jiang Baoyun was startled. Lin Ming's movement speed and spear speed was inferior to his own, but when he and his Sword Spirit Avatar cut out with five swords, Lin Ming was able to dodge two and block the last three with a single spear. That azure true essence that was attached to the silver spear was just too strong. It endlessly grew, and also contained a strange power of vibration.

Lin Ming's speed was inferior, but with his formidable attack power and freakish defensive capabilities, he was not at a disadvantage at all!

10,000 vibrating filaments of azure true essence surrounded Lin Ming, protecting him all around. Jiang Baoyun's sword energy was able to puncture it, but was quickly worn down. No matter what he tried, he was unable to harm Lin Ming. The azure true essence that was lost was immediately replenished.

'Lin Ming is truly a versatile combat talent. Even with my speed advantage, I cannot defeat him!' Jiang Baoyun remembered that when Jiang Lanjian had fought Lin Ming and first used his Concept of Wind, the situation then was the exact same as it was now. Jiang Lanjian had sent out wind blades and sword energies, and still was unable to do anything to Lin Ming. Finally, he engaged in a melee battle, only able to meet Lin Ming head-on!

A sword master's Sword Spirit true essence and sharp sword energy could only display their greatest potential when attached to the sword blade. Naturally, the attack power of long-distance sword energy was inferior to directly striking with a sword.

"Big Dipper Sword Step!"

Jiang Baoyun's eyes flashed and he and his Sword Spirit Avatar simultaneously displayed the Big Dipper Sword Step. Human and sword became one, as if they fused into the sword light, instantly arriving in front of Lin Ming.

This extreme speed had already completely surpassed the limit at which anyone could respond!

Cha cha!

Two cold blue treasure swords stabbed into Lin Ming's body like a bolt of lightning. These two swords contained Jiang Baoyun's complete sword potential, and their attack power reached the limit of this instant blade!

The azure true essence was simply unable to defend against such fierce sword strikes; it could only be blocked by the Heavy Profound Soft Spear!

But the problem was, with such a fast attack speed that reached the limit, how would Lin Ming have any time to wield his spear? Even if he managed to bring his spear up in time, how could he possibly simultaneously keep of the attacks of two treasure swords?

In that split-second, Lin Ming's eyes burst with light, his pupils flashed with true thunder!

Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder!

True essence surged into the Heretical God Seed, the Thunder Soul had long been ready to explode with force!

Kacha!

Thick snakes of purple electricity ran out of Lin Ming's body, recklessly dancing around him. At this moment, Lin Ming's body burst into a dazzling purple radiance, it was like a god of thunder had been born unto the world!

At such a close distance, no matter how fast Jiang Baoyun was, there was no way he could dodge!

As this electric light entered his body, Jiang Baoyun's entire body numbed. The power of the savage thunder flushed into his meridians, brutally destroying everything in sight. Over half of the sword potential instantly disappeared from his blade, the rest continued thrusting at Lin Ming!

Facing Jiang Baoyun's sword, Lin Ming simply had no way to avoid it. Since he was destined to not be able to evade, he wouldn't evade. From the very beginning, he decided to go down with his opponent in a battle of attrition. He galvanized the azure true essence in his body to the max, preparing to meet this attack head-on.

Pah pah!

With two light sounds, the sword blades pierced through the true essence protecting Lin Ming, stabbing into his body. On his lower abdomen and back, two streams of blood shot out.

Even though his blood shot out, Lin Ming simply did not care. He cried out, “Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!”

Peng peng!

He released the spear from his hands, punching out with two fists, directly smashing into Jiang Baoyun and the Sword Spirit Avatar's faces!

In short-distance attacks, a fist was faster than a spear!

Under normal circumstances, Jiang Baoyun would have been able to use his extreme speed to avoid Lin Ming's fists. However, as it was now, Jiang Baoyun's body pulsed with a savage power of thunder; Lin Ming's sudden attack had taken him by surprise!

Chapter 290 – The Second Sword

Chapter 290 – The Second Sword

…

…

…

The true essence that protected Jiang Baoyun's body was much stronger than a normal martial artist's, but in front of Lin Ming, it was no different to thin paper! Jiang Baoyun could clearly remember just what a pitiful state Mugu Buyu had ended up in after he had tried to defend against Lin Ming's all-out attack!

"Big Dipper Sword Step!"

Jiang Baoyun fiercely bit down on his tongue to restore his numbed body with the intense shock of pain. His movement instantly recovered, and he stormed backwards. Even so, he was still caught up in the fist wind. A vast and incomparable power of vibration immediately fluxed into Jiang Baoyun's organs, nearly causing his heart to stop.

Jiang Baoyun's throat tasted copper, and blood leaked from the corners of his mouth.

As for his Sword Spirit Avatar, it was even worse. Lin Ming punched its face and azure true essence erupted!

The Sword Spirit Avatar had no true essence protecting its body, its defensive power was zero. Because of this, once Lin Ming punched it, its entire head blew apart! And its body began to slowly fade away.

Jiang Baoyun's face whitened, his body staggering backwards as the backlash struck him.

As long as his true self didn't perish, then his Sword Spirit Avatar could be considered immortal. But the Avatar was still linked to his main body. Once it was forcefully scattered, Jiang Baoyun would also suffer great damage.

"Fierce!" Jiang Baoyun wiped the blood from the corners of his lips. The reason that he had chosen to attack Lin Ming with ranged strikes from the very start was because he feared Lin Ming's utterly terrifying explosive force. Because of the existence of that coiling dragon steel needle, Jiang Baoyun had kept a good distance between them. He was confident in his own speed and reflexes to dodge that steel needle, but if he was in close range, then that certainty was no longer there!

He had suddenly used the Big Dipper Sword Step, and flashed in front of Lin Ming at a speed that neared teleportation, instantly using his strongest instant sword strike. Jiang Baoyun thought that at such an extreme speed, it would be impossible for Lin Ming to react with that coiling dragon steel needle.

However, he had never thought that Lin Ming's body seemed to have fused with the energy from the coiling dragon steel needle, and the power of thunder was highly compressed within him. As soon as he approached, Lin Ming had exploded with the power of thunder, and the result was that he had taken a big loss.

Jiang Baoyun was a swordsman, he was proud of his formidable melee combat abilities. He never thought that one day there would actually be someone who would force him away from melee distance!

The feeling that Lin Ming exuded was just as if he were a dangerous vicious beast, unapproachable!

As soon as the Sword Spirit Avatar was blown apart by Lin Ming's fist and Jiang Baoyun was injured, the entire audience sucked in collective breath of cold air.

“This battle in too intense! In an instant, the two of them are already severely wounded!” A 17 year old Seven Profound Valleys disciple said. With his cultivation, he could only see fuzzy afterimages of Lin Ming and Jiang Baoyun’s movements.

“Both receiving heavy wounds? You are too naïve! I don’t know how severe Jiang Baoyun’s wounds are, but Lin Ming’s are just nothing. When Jiang Baoyun and his Sword Spirit Avatar’s swords pierced him, they was only a quarter of a foot in!” A disciple who participated in the Total Faction Martial Meeting said. His cultivation was already at the Pulse Condensation period, and his eyesight was much better than most people present.

A quarter of a foot was only a few inches. To a Pulse Condensation period martial artist, this wound was not considered a severe injury at all. Jiang Baoyun’s sword was indeed swift and sharp, but most of the sword potential had been scattered by that Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. Not only that, but with the added protection of the azure true essence, the swords hadn’t managed to pierce deeply. Plus, there was also the enormous body defense capability enhancements that Lin Ming had obtained in the Sorcerer Pagoda. Ultimately, this was only considered a minor wound.

“It was just a split second of a melee fight, and yet Jiang Baoyun already suffered such a loss. Lin Ming is just a powder keg that’s ready to blow up any time. Who would dare to fight him in close-range like this!?”

“He took two sword stabs as if they were nothing; he’s just like a vicious beast in human form! This is Jiang Baoyun’s sword we’re talking about, it’s not some random nobody’s sword!”

“Lin Ming has to be the same as Mugu Buyu. His body must have been transformed in some way, otherwise how can a human body be so tenacious?”

As the audience spoke, the bleeding in Lin Ming’s front and back wounds had already stopped.

At this time, Lin Ming had stimulated the power of blood vitality in his body to the max, rapidly regenerating the wounds on his body. After he had passed through the life and death smelting trial in the Sorcerer Pagoda, the power of blood vitality in his body far surpassed a martial artist at the same level.

If one had powerful blood vitality, then not only would they have excellent endurance, but exorbitant regenerative capabilities. Although it was impossible to make a complete recovery in a short period of time, stopping some bleeding only took a few breaths.

Jiang Baoyun looked at Lin Ming, and took a deep breath. “I understand now. You are not someone that I can deal with by just using my Blue Peak Sword.”

As Jiang Baoyun said this, he took out his sword case and withdrew that jet black sword. Finally, he had taken out the Black Crystal Sword.

“Jiang Baoyun’s taken out his second sword!”

“He’s finally used it! I wonder what sort of amazing final sword skill he can use with this sword?”

The entire audience was looking at the sword in Jiang Baoyun’s hand with a curious excitement. This dark blade had no reflection; it didn’t have the appearance that it was made from wood or metal, and it didn’t resemble jade either. No one was able to tell exactly what sort of materials this blade was made from.

After Jiang Baoyun extracted the Black Crystal Sword, he casually tossed away the Blue Peak Sword. Suddenly, the Sword Spirit Avatar that Lin Ming had scattered with a punch turned into a hazy blue sword energy that swirled around the Blue Peak Sword, wrapping around it. A moment later, a new Sword Spirit Avatar appeared, and the original Blue Peak Sword disappeared.

As the Sword Spirit Avatar was reformed, its body seemed even more lifelike, and the sword energy that emanated from its body was much more powerful; it was truly startling.

“The sword and Sword Spirit Avatar combined! Jiang Baoyun’s comprehension of the sword path is just too amazing!”

“Two swords, the Sword Spirit Avatar uses one, and the true self uses the second. This is just too exciting! Heavens, this is what a true dual wielding swordsman is like!” In the stands above, a Sword Faction disciple was staring at Jiang Baoyun’s swords with obsession shining in his red eyes. If he could one day obtain two earth-step treasure swords and coordinate them with a Sword Spirit Avatar after becoming one with the sword, then what sort of concept would that be?

The orthodox swordsman took the lone sword as their king. This was because it was easier to reach the pinnacle of swordsmanship with a single blade. But for those with the same cultivation or lower, a dual wielder’s attack power was much higher. If they could learn Jiang Baoyun’s technique, then could take dual swords as their king, and still reach the pinnacle of swordsmanship. This alone was enough to cause any Sword Faction disciple to go crazy with desire!

It could be said that Jiang Baoyun had discovered his own unique dual sword method. Of course, to study such a dual sword method was extremely demanding, and one also needed to have a Sword Spirit in order to do so.

“You finally take out your Black Crystal Sword? I thought you would have done so earlier.” Lin Ming had some apprehension and dread towards this Black Crystal Sword.

Jiang Baoyun let loose a long breath, saying with a smile. “It’s not that I don’t want to, but as of right now, I don’t have full control over this sword. And moreover, my Black Crystal Sword’s strongest attack is a soul attack. Unfortunately… it seems soul attacks aren’t too effective on you.”

“Mm? Soul attack?” Lin Ming was stunned. A sword strike can contain a soul attack? Jiang Baoyun had actually managed to reach this step?

Lin Ming had long thought about fusing the Samsara martial intent soul attack into his spear moves. However, all of his attempts so far had failed. Before the finals of this Total Faction Martial Meeting, Lin Ming had almost solely used soul attacks, and that was because he wished to gain deeper insights into the Samsara martial intent through constant use.

And now, Lin Ming had defeated masters like Bi Tinghua with his soul attack, and his understanding of his Samsara martial intent had reached a new level, much more profound than it used to be. Yet he was still unable to have his spear moves contain any degree of soul attack as before.

'How strange! Jiang Baoyun is a swordsman, and he cultivates the sword with all his heart. How could be possibly split his time to cultivate his soul force? If his soul force isn't strong, then how could he use soul attacks?'

Zheng–

The Black Crystal Sword let out a strange, long sound that carried a peculiar penetrating power. It was as if it were resounding closely near the ears of everyone present.

As the cold winter sunlight illuminated the stage, it shined onto the Black Crystal Sword. But there seemed to be a cold and deep aura around the Black Crystal Sword, as if it had its own force field, swallowing any light that came near it.

"Lin Ming, I said just now that I cannot control the power of my Black Crystal Sword. If it truly strikes you, you might be severely wounded or even die. Of course, the one that is severely wounded might be you, or it might be me."

Before Lin Ming had displayed the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, Jiang Baoyun had already taken him as an opponent of the same level. He didn't feel the least bit of contempt or disregard towards him. At that time, the strength that Lin Ming had revealed was far inferior to Jiang Baoyun, and the reason that Jiang Baoyun had taken Lin Ming as an equal opponent was purely because his swordsman intuition told him so.

“Good! I just want to personally experience your soul attack!” Lin Ming was filled with anticipation as he looked forwards to Jiang Baoyun’s soul attack. He wanted to gain some insights from Jiang Baoyun’s sword technique in battle, and he was also curious as to how a top swordsman like Jiang Baoyun who cultivated the sword path with all his heart would use a soul attack.

As Lin Ming flourished the spear in his hands, his entire body combusted in an inferno of azure true essence; he looked just like a deep blue pyre of energy. He had already opened the Heretical God Force. Although the Heretical God Force could not last for several dozen breaths of time, it was more than enough for this final battle!

The audience began to surge with wave after wave of cheers and screams, the excitement in the arena reaching a fever high. Qin Xingxuan nervously clenched her hands. Jiang Baoyun had said that even he wasn’t able to control his ultimate sword.

A soul injury was difficult to treat. Although Qin Xingxuan knew that Lin Ming’s soul defense was extraordinary, her concern for him was causing chaos in her mind. It felt as if her heart was stuck in her throat.

“Big Dipper Sword Step!”

On the martial stage, Jiang Baoyun crossed over a hundred feet as if it didn’t exist, his speed was almost like teleportation. This was also why Lin Ming didn’t waste any of his time, and opened the Heretical God Force ahead of time.

“Black Crystal Sword!”

Jiang Baoyun slashed out with the Black Crystal Sword. At that moment, it was as if all sound had disappeared, and all the nearby light was being sucked into the Black Crystal Sword.

“Hah!”

An invisible sword potential violently fluctuated outwards. In the moment that Jiang Baoyun slashed out, all of the sword-wielding martial artists in the arena experienced a shock. They could feel their swords vibrating, as if they wanted to escape from their sheaths!

Lin Ming could clearly feel his own azure true essence being constantly cut apart. This sword wasn't fast, but it contained an immeasurably calm feeling.

Power of the True Dragon!

Lin Ming swept out with his spear, and the shade of a Azure Dragon appeared behind him; the power of a True Dragon burst forth!

"Roar!"

The booming cry of a dragon thundered into the skies. Lin Ming's spear thrust out, containing an indomitable momentum. It was like the air itself was exploding in its wake!

Light twisted as an azure energy and deep black energy collided together. Time suddenly seemed to slow to a halt, with no intense explosion occurring. In that moment, Jiang Baoyun's sword energy pierced through Lin Ming's azure true essence, splitting atop of his spearpoint. There was a black stream of light that sunk into the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, piercing into Lin Ming's body!

Chapter 291 – The Final Strike

Chapter 291 – The Final Strike

…

…

…

In that moment, Jiang Baoyun's sword energy had pierced through Lin Ming's azure true essence, splitting atop his spearpoint. There was a black stream of light that sunk into the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, piercing Lin Ming's body!

Mm!!

Lin Ming wobbled, a strange feeling directly rushing into his spiritual sea. He could hear the clear whistling of a sword flying past his ear. This clear sound seemed very pleasant, but it was very uncomfortable to listen to.

Soul attack?

Lin Ming instantly reacted, but that sword sound that was in his ears had already flown into Lin Ming's spiritual sea!

Bang!

Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, a mighty black sword appeared, cutting down!

"Roar!"

The sea boiled, massive waves of water rolling around; a Purple Flood Dragon shot up into the sky, crashing into that great black sword! Both forces struck each other, and thunder exploded. The black sword energy radiated outwards, causing monstrous surges within the spiritual sea.

Lin Ming shook, his face paling to the extreme. Was this great black sword the so called Sword Spirit body? Lin Ming had only heard of this before. Sword Spirit. So this so called Sword Spirit was actually a sword-shaped soul. Those who had an inborn Sword Spirit were extremely rare individuals. They could fuse their own soul into their sword intent. Their perception in all sword arts was astonishing, and they could cultivate the sword path with half the effort and twice the result.

Obviously, Jiang Baoyun had fused the sword intent within his soul into this strike, therefore he was able to create a soul attack!

Jiang Baoyun's soul force wasn't powerful, but with the fusion of sword intent, it wasn't something that a normal martial artist could compare with.

"What a strong Sword Spirit!"

Lin Ming's spiritual sea had integrated the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, his soul defense ability was beyond what anyone could imagine. And yet he could not actually immediately stop the soul attack of this Sword Spirit!

However, this Sword Spirit's indomitability had aroused the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder's own arrogant heart!

"Roar!"

The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder burst into a loud roar, its entire body shining with a dazzling purple light. Its heavy claws smashed down on the Sword Spirit, shaking it and causing its radiance to dim.

Peng!

Jiang Baoyun received his sword and drew back. In that strike a moment ago, he had felt sick to his stomach.

Although Jiang Baoyun was aware that Lin Ming had an incomparably formidable soul defense power, he never thought that it would be to such a ridiculous degree where it had easily broken his soul attack. If his soul wasn't wrapped in the sword intent where its defense was greatly strengthened, then he might have suffered a severe soul wound in that attack.

Jiang Baoyun's soul attack was nullified, and his sword energy attacks didn't work. The endless azure true essence continually protected Lin Ming, and Lin Ming's own bodily defense capabilities were just mind boggling; they were formidable to the point where it made anyone's blood boil with envy.

Jiang Baoyun could only break through Lin Ming's defense in a close range attack, but because he feared the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, he also couldn't get close.

Even if it was Jiang Baoyun, who was known for and proud of his sword's attack power, he also had a dreadful feeling of being forced into a dead end.

And beyond that, Jiang Baoyun had discovered that even after all this fierce fighting that had occurred so far, Lin Ming hadn't shown any difficulty in sustaining his true essence. This proved that Lin Ming's own endurance far exceeded his own!

If this fight dragged on, Jiang Baoyun wouldn't be defeated, but if it were too long, then his true essence would slowly be whittled down, and his defeat would only be a matter of time.

Realizing this, Jiang Baoyun pointed his sword at Lin Ming and said, "Lin Ming, you are the strongest individual that I have encountered in the younger generation in my 20 years of life. The speed and soul attack which I have been so foolishly proud of have no effect on you. Now, all I have is my final sword. If you can receive it, then I will admit defeat."

Lin Ming had also attained many insights through that soul attack just now. Hearing Jiang Baoyun say this, he responded, “Okay. After this battle, whether I win or lose, I am very willing to continue exchanging pointers with Senior-apprentice Brother Jiang. After this match, I have obtained many benefits.”

“Haha, the feeling is mutual!”

Jiang Baoyun’s momentum erupted once more. In that moment, it was as if his entire body had become a sword with violent potential, incomparably sharp!

“Sword Shattering Clear Sky!”

This was Jiang Baoyun’s strongest move. It used his own fused Sword Spirit and sword intent as the driving force in order to activate the ultimate legacy skill of the Sword Faction. With Jiang Baoyun’s current cultivation, he could only display the barest surface of this power. Yet even so, it still had the might of gods and ghosts!

Sword energy cut through the void, and a sharp whistling sword wind howled through the entire mountain valley.

Meeting this final strike of Jiang Baoyun, Lin Ming’s vision was steady, and both hands grasped his spear. His heart had already focused into the shaft, and the power of the True Dragon was revolving to its limit.

Behind Lin Ming, the shadow of the True Dragon appeared once again.

With a faint dragon’s roar, Lin Ming’s spear thrust out!

Vibrating true essence screamed forth, violently smashing into Jiang Baoyun’s sword energy. The tiles under their feet were shattered into fragments; with this attack, they were evenly matched!

For Jiang Baoyun to use a sword to meet a spear and simultaneously resist Lin Ming's 10,000 vibrating azure true essence filaments without even being forced back, the power of this Sword Shattering Clear Sky could be imagined!

At this time, another sword began to resonate. The Sword Spirit Avatar that Jiang Baoyun had created before had gripped onto its blue sword, cutting down at Lin Ming!

"Ah!!!"

The audience cried out in alarm. Qin Ziya, Qin Xingxuan, and everyone else felt their hearts stop. This Sword Shattering Clear Sky was already unstoppable, but there was also the Sword Spirit Avatar. This was a double attack!

Lin Ming's pupils contracted, and true essence quickened within the Heretical God Seed. The weapon that he hid within his body, the coiling dragon steel needle, roared forth!

Bang!

The coiling dragon steel needle struck above the sword light, the power of thunder exploded forth!

Ka ka ka!

It was like a glorious purple sun had dawned upon the martial stage. The Sword Spirit Avatar was immediately incinerated into nothingness, and the Blue Peak sword lost its consciousness, crashing down and slicing into the ground.

At the same time, the coiling dragon steel needle rushed forwards. Although its power was greatly reduced, it howled as it flew towards Jiang Baoyun!

Puff!

The true essence protecting Jiang Baoyun's body was torn apart, his entire body paralyzed. He was sent flying backwards, spitting out a mouthful of blood!

Jiang Baoyun slammed against the protective light curtain and fell onto the floor. Because the light curtain array formation had been reinforced, it was now able to protect against an early Xiantian master's all-out attack. This was why no matter how intense Jiang Baoyun and Lin Ming's fight was, it still wasn't able to shatter the array formation like before.

The entire audience was deathly silent. In truth, Jiang Baoyun's defeat was not beyond anyone's expectations. It was more accurate to say that no one actually knew who would win and who would lose. This could be seen from the gambling houses odds before the match.

However, as the audience truly saw Jiang Baoyun lying flat on the martial stage, severely wounded, they all felt as if they were living in some fantastical dream.

To them, Jiang Baoyun was a myth. Within a single year, he had repeatedly defeated four third-grade sects' direct disciples, which also included the top third-grade sect Peacock Mountain.

This success felt as if it were out of reach for anyone else. Within the Seven Profound Valleys, Jiang Baoyun was considered invincible among the younger generation. Even if it was Ouyang Ming who had attained a higher rank during the last Martial Meeting, no one believed that he had even the slightest chance of suppressing Jiang Baoyun.

But now, this myth known as Jiang Baoyun who was the greatest talent the Sword Faction had seen for centuries, was actually defeated by a disciple of the 36 countries. Not only that, but this disciple's cultivation was only at the early Pulse Condensation period…

This was no different than a dream!

In the Grand Hall, Shi Zongtian was heavily breathing, gasping for breath. In this last match, he actually favored Lin Ming's odds of winning. But after watching the entire battle play out, he was extremely shocked – this was because of the coiling dragon steel needle!

The second time that the coiling dragon steel needle appeared, Shi Zongtian had a faint feeling in his heart of what it was. But he didn't dare to affirm this guess, or it was more accurate to say, he didn't dare to believe.

In this match, Lin Ming had obviously integrated the coiling dragon steel needle within his body, using it to resist Jiang Baoyun and his Sword Spirit Avatar in melee attacks to make up for his disadvantage in speed.

To use the coiling dragon steel needle to this degree, how could it possibly be some destructive instrument created by a master?

Because of this, Shi Zongtian was able to affirm the guess in his heart that this weapon was created from the condensation of a Thunder Soul. And the grade wasn't low either. It was at least a high-grade human step Thunder Soul, or maybe even an earth-step Thunder Soul!

This was an extremely absurd and preposterous speculation. A high-grade human-step Thunder Soul could only be absorbed by someone at least at the Xiantian realm.

As for an earth-step Thunder Soul, even a thunder-attribute middle Xiantian powerhouse would have to be cautious in absorbing it!

How could Lin Ming possibly accomplish this?

Shi Zongtian glanced at the other elders present, and he saw that only the Refiner Faction Sovereign and Array Faction elders were shocked with disbelief. As for the other elders, they showed no difference. Of course, they couldn't be blamed for not recognizing what this coiling dragon steel needle truly was. Originally, a Thunder Soul was an extremely rare and scarce existence, and even the Seven Profound Valleys didn't have a thunder-attribute master, so they weren't familiar with it. Not only that, but the Thunder Soul in Lin Ming's palm had also changed shape into a needle.

Only those from the Refiner Faction and Array Faction suspected this. This was because they frequently dealt with the seven heaven and earth origin energies of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind and thunder. Of course, this was only a suspicion; they too weren't sure, and couldn't believe it.

Shi Zongtian couldn’t help but glance at Mu Qinghong. Seeing that she didn’t show any difference in expression, his heart immediately sunk.

This woman! She probably already knew!

Shi Zongtian hesitated for a moment and didn’t say anything. This sort of matter was too shocking, if it spread out, then it would create unnecessary troubles.

Mu Qinghong pursed her lips as she sat near Shi Zongtian. Her eyes were bright as she gazed at Lin Ming. ‘If his growth continues like this, then Lin Ming will enter into the Revolving Core realm. Not only that, but he will be a Revolving Core powerhouse who can fight above his realm!’

In the martial arts path, the further one walked, the more difficult it was to jump over realms to fight. This was because the higher one reached, the greater the gap between realms would become, and the higher the disparity in cultivation. This was because those that rose higher were all top-tier geniuses when they were young. For instance, when they were in the Pulse Condensation period, they were also like Jiang Baoyun and Mugu Buyu, first class geniuses that could jump ranks to fight martial artists with higher cultivation. But to jump realms in battle when facing even more talented geniuses, this was simply harder than ascending to heaven!

Thus those Revolving Core powerhouses who could jump realms in battle were pivotal existences within the South Horizon Region!

‘It looks like even Qianyu underestimated him. He is a True Dragon within a deep pool. Soon, he will fly into the sky. It is just right that I came on this trip. No, I should have Qianyu come here personally!’

Mu Qinghong had a premonition that in the future, Lin Ming would become a main character who stood upon the greatest stage of the entire Sky Spill Continent, leaving his name for all of eternity!

Such a powerhouse would only be those Supreme Elders who founded their own Holy Lands and soared into the Realm of the Gods!

But, such mighty beings had already been absent from the South Horizon Region for thousands of years; it could be said that these figures no longer existed, and shouldn’t be considered.

As Mu Qinghong thought this, she sent a true essence sound transmission to the maid behind her, “Inform Young Mistress Qianyu and have her come here personally.”

Chapter 292 – Reward

Chapter 292 – Reward

…

…

…

The maid was stunned for a moment. She had been ordered to request that the Vermillion Bird Saintess come to the Seven Profound Valleys herself?

She hesitated and then replied, “My Lady, Her Highness the Saintess has recently gone into seclusion to complete the evolution of her life’s Vermillion Bird. It wouldn’t be appropriate to disturb her…”

“It’s already been one month. Little Flame’s evolution should almost be complete. There is much at stake concerning this matter about Lin Ming, it’s best if the Young Mistress personally comes here.”

“Yes, My Lady…” The two maids that Mu Qinghong had brought along nodded, and then walked away as they prepared to send a long distance sound transmission. There was no need to hide this matter from the Seven Profound Valleys.

Shi Zongtian saw the two maids leave and his heart suddenly left as well. Since these two maids left now, he would be an idiot if he didn’t know that they were going to report the situation of this Martial Meeting. If those old elders at Divine Phoenix Island obtained this news, then wouldn’t they immediately try poaching?

Shi Zongtian thought for a moment. He thought that if his position was switched, and he was an elder of Divine Phoenix Island, then there was no way that he would let off such a talent.

A fourth-grade sect had a much greater advantage in recruiting talent than a third-grade sect did. This was also one of the reasons why they could constantly suppress third-grade sects beneath them. The strong became stronger, and the weak became weaker.

Lin Ming couldn't truly be considered a disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys. He wasn't like Jiang Baoyun, who had grown up as a child in the Seven Profound Valleys and had his foundation within the Seven Profound Valleys, making it impossible for him to leave.

Thinking this, Shi Zongtian's expression became increasingly ugly. His Seven Profound Valleys just had too great a difference in strength with Divine Phoenix Island. If they truly tried to publically poach Lin Ming, Shi Zongtian would only be able to swallow this grievance. Divine Phoenix Island might end up with a reputation for bullying those beneath them, but besides that, there was nothing else to lose.

What should he do…

Shi Zongtian couldn't sit still.

In the worst case situation, he would only be able to draw back and form a good relationship with Lin Ming, while asking for Divine Phoenix Island to compensate them. Divine Phoenix Island could be considered the leader of the many other third-grade sects around here. If they did something so wicked and petty and didn't give any compensation, then they wouldn't be able to justify their actions.

"Valley Master… should we send the rewards?"

The elder responsible for the tournament sat in the Grand Hall. He saw Shi Zongtian's complicated expression, but didn't know what he was worrying about. Therefore he asked the question of whether Lin Ming should receive the rewards. If Lin Ming took the rewards, but then switched to another sect, then they really would end up the fool.

"Send! Of course we must send! Naturally, we must keep our promise of a reward. Also, directly issue the Heaven Opening Pill to Lin Ming; there is no need to wait for him to reach peak Houtian." Shi Zongtian said, acting decisively.

"Ah?" The elder asked in a daze.

"Do as I say. Consider this as establishing good relations with Lin Ming."

Although a Heaven Opening Pill was rare and precious, the Seven Profound Valleys was still able to refine 20 or 30 every three years. It did hurt to give one out like this, but it was a manageable loss.

There was no need to short someone. If Lin Ming really did join Divine Phoenix Island, this matter of the reward not being given would eventually come up, and Lin Ming would inevitably have some disgust towards the Seven Profound Valleys because of it. Shi Zongtian could see that Lin Ming's heart of martial arts was similar to the Seven Profound Valleys' Sword Faction's. This sort of martial artist stayed true to their conscience and heart – they would never be ungrateful.

If the Seven Profound Valleys could stay on good terms with a peerless powerhouse with just a Heaven Opening Pill and an earth-step treasure, then this was absolutely worth it. Then again, if Divine Phoenix Island really wanted to poach Lin Ming, the compensation they would pay wouldn't be small. A fourth-grade sect's compensation would be at least 20 Heaven Opening Pills and a good amount of medium-grade true essence stones.

Thus this reward was no loss for the Seven Profound Valleys.

"Yes, Valley Master, I shall manage this." The elder said as he excused himself.

……………………

"Martial House Master Qin, congratulations! Your Sky Fortune Kingdom truly showed off its greatness!"

"It is far more than greatness, it is earthshaking! An event that will go down in history!"

In the audience, several of the neighboring countries' Martial House Masters were congratulation Qin Ziya. The words they spoke were beautiful and flattering, but in truth their hearts were green with envy.

Whoever attained first place in the Martial Meeting, their master would obtain a Heaven Opening Pill as a reward. As for who was Lin Ming's master, it was naturally considered to be Qin Ziya.

This was a Heaven Opening Pill, of which only 20 or 30 were refined every three years! That meant that on average, there were less than 10 per year! Except for the direct disciples, second ranked disciples and also some disciples who had huge connections and favors, other disciples would rarely receive a Heaven Opening Pill. There were many disciples who had a great chance to break through to the Xiantian realm. However, they lacked a Heaven Opening Pill, and because of this reason they would simply pass away at the peak Houtian realm.

Qin Ziya wasn't young. To him, the opportunity of receiving a second Heaven Opening Pill seemed to be getting slimmer every year. He never thought that he would actually stumble into such unexpected success!

Once he entered the Xiantian realm, he would instantly be promoted to an Outer Court elder. This status was much greater than being some Martial House Master of a small country!

Realizing that Qin Ziya would most likely become an Outer Court eder in the future, many people came up to flatter him.

Qin Ziya finally recovered his composure. He only felt as if he were in a dream. He smiled and said, "This is all because of Lin Ming's heroic efforts, I'm only following his rising star."

Qin Ziya had excellent vision and foresight. After seeing Lin Ming's amazing talent, he decided to raise Lin Ming, and did not hesitate to put some treasures in Sky Fortune

Kingdom's Seven Profound Martial House's treasury, and then motivate Lin Ming by promising further generous rewards.

At that time, Qin Ziya had only thought that Lin Ming would shine brightly at this Total Faction Martial Meeting; he never even imagined he would reach the top 10. Afterwards, Lin Ming's talent continued to grow, and Qin Ziya thought that during the next Total Faction Martial Meeting, Lin Ming might have a chance of becoming the champion.

At the same, even this idea was crazy for him. It had to be known that in all these years of the Total Faction Martial Meeting, there had never been a disciple of the 36 countries who had ranked first. There hadn't even been one to reach the top five! If the Seven Profound Valleys' disciples had known of Qin Ziya's thoughts, then they might have died laughing.

However, Qin Ziya never imagined that he had underestimated Lin Ming's potential by so much. The first time he went to the Total Faction Martial Meeting, he became the champion in a single attempt. Not only that, but his matches were against Mugu Buyu and Jiang Baoyun, two top talents that the Seven Profound Valleys hadn't seen in hundreds of years.

At this time, Qin Ziya suddenly thought of something. He pushed his way through the crowd and found Huoluo Nation's Martial House Master Liang.

Qin Ziya cupped his fists together and said with a smile, "Martial House Master Liang, since we already agreed about the matter of the Seraphic Pond, then you can set the date. I can help Lin Ming with the travel arrangements."

If Martial House Master Liang had felt some begrudging resentment, now he no longer dared to. What kind of status did Lin Ming have now? In the future, if he had minor success, he might become a Deputy Valley Master. He might even become a Valley Master! Such a character was not someone that a Huoluo Nation Martial House Master could afford to offend.

He squeezed out an ugly smiled that looked as if he were crying and said, “Martial House Master Qin must be joking. When Little Brother Lin has free time he can come to my Huoluo Nation, I’ll be waiting for whenever he comes.”

In these few words, Martial House Master Liang couldn’t say much. He could only hold his tongue and lower his head in compensation to try and establish some good relations. Besides that, there was nothing else he could do.

………..

300,000 miles south of the Seven Profound Valleys was the Southern Wilderness. The Southern Wilderness was 100,000 miles long and wide. A further 500,000 miles south was the South Sea. In the South Sea, there was an island that was like a haven of paradise. The mortals who lived on the sea called this haven the Immortal Island. This island was scenic, exquisite, and incomparably beautiful. This ethereal land seemed to be crafted from jade, and there were even some people that claimed to have seen a phoenix flying around this Immortal Island.

Many people searched for this Immortal Island, but it seemed nothing more than an elusive mirage. One could see it, but when one went look for it, they would never find it.

This Immortal Island was the home of the top fourth-grade sect, Divine Phoenix Island.

Whilst the Seven Profound territory had winter weather with snow all over, Divine Phoenix Island was actually in the most blissful spring, with trees and flowers blooming gloriously everywhere.

Mu Qianyu had just finished a month-long seclusion. With the blood of the Thunder Flood Dragon and some other rare and precious materials, she had been able to help her life’s Vermillion Bird to complete its evolution.

Now, Little Flame’s power had reached the late Xiantian realm. With its Saint Beast bloodline, it was now a powerful ally of Mu Qianyu.

At this moment, Mu Qianyu received the one million mile limit sound transmission of Mu Qinghong.

The sound transmission included the results of the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction Martial Meeting from beginning to end, and even included Mu Qinghong's final appraisal of Lin Ming.

Mu Qianyu's beautiful face showed some surprise and consternation; she hadn't thought that Mu Qinghong's appraisal of Lin Ming would be so high.

"As long as he doesn't fall in the future, he will become a Revolving Core master, and not only that, but a Revolving Core master whose combat power exceeds those at his level?"

Mu Qianyu inhaled a deep breath. This appraisal of Lin Ming's talent was no less than her own!

"This little fellow, he really…" Mu Qianyu suddenly smiled. No matter what, Divine Phoenix Island would never let go of such a talent, especially now that they needed more personnel.

Thinking this, Mu Qianyu patted the Vermillion Bird's head and said, "Little Flame, let's take a trip to the Seven Profound Valleys."

Little Flame had just completed its evolution, and had experienced a month-long period of pain. It was too lazy to move at this time. Hearing Mu Qianyu's words, it rolled its large eyes and gave a few shrill chirps.

Mu Qianyu smiled and said, "You lazy bird, it's only one million miles, and 800,000 miles will be through a transmission array. You just need to travel a tiny 200,000 miles."

As soon as Little Flame heard that it had to fly 200,000 miles, it immediately began to issue out miserable moans and wails, whining over and over again. It had to obey Mu Qianyu, so it reluctantly stood up in a very forced appearance.

Mu Qianyu thought this was quite funny. Then she suddenly remembered, “Do you remember that barbeque you ate two months ago? We are going to see the barbecue boy, later, he will let you eat your fill.”

Although Little Flame had completed its evolution, it was still a very young and immature Vermillion Bird, just like a child. And just like a child, eating food was its most beloved pursuit. Listening to Mu Qianyu say this, Little Flame’s eyes immediately began to shine, and it fluttered its wings, impatiently ready for Mu Qianyu to embark.

Mu Qianyu didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry. This silly lazy bird ate all sorts of spirit bamboo and fruits every day. If just a bit of that was converted to barbecue, it could probably fill up the entire Divine Phoenix Island.

…………………………

The following morning, Seven Profound Valleys –

“Mm? They are going to send me the Heaven Opening Pill and earth-step treasure now?” When Lin Ming heard the transmission message from the Seven Profound Valleys’ deacon, he was very surprised. These two items were the prize for coming in first at the Total Faction Marital Meeting. The rules had stated he would have to reach the peak Houtian realm before he could obtain the Heaven Opening Pill. He hadn’t thought that they would send it to him now. With such a great medicine like the Heaven Opening Pill, Lin Ming might even be able to attack the Tempering Marrow boundary!

Within the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’, there was also two additional stages above the Pulse Condensation period, the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. As Lin Ming imagined these, his heart rate began to speed up.

“Mm, yes, Junior-apprentice Brother Lin may follow me to the Seven Profound Valleys’ treasure pavilion and choose any earth-step treasure there you like. The Warden Elder is already awaiting you.” The messenger deacon respectfully said.

Chapter 293 – I'll Use My Materials

Chapter 293 – I'll Use My Materials

…

…

…

The Seven Profound Valleys' Treasure Pavilion was located at the highest peak of the Refiner Faction. Although it seemed that the disciples of the Refiner Faction and Array Faction were absolute messes when it came to combat effectiveness, their roles within the Seven Profound Valleys were pivotal. These two factions' annually assigned resources weren't much less than the Sword Faction's or the Acacia Faction's.

Of the Seven Profound Valleys' disciples who used treasures, at least 90% of those treasures came from the Refiner Faction. As for the Array Faction, they were the ones who created all of the various array formations, like the protection formations, essence gathering formations, or any other array formation.

The Seven Profound Valleys' seven great factions mutually depended upon each other. Although the Seven Profound Valleys had many internal contradictions and disputes arising between the factions, this was one of the main reasons that they were able to maintain a delicate balance for the last 600 years.

After Lin Ming arrived at the Treasure Pavilion, he saw an elder wearing a loose red gown waiting there for him. He was the Outer Sect elder of the Refiner Faction, Liu Xuan. His cultivation was at the early Xiantian realm, and with his current age, his had zero chance of becoming a Revolving Core master before he died. But even in terms of combat prowess, he was one of the lowest of all the Xiantian powerhouses, thus he did not throw his time and energy into learning combat-related martial skills, but instead devoted his entire being to refining. This was the reason that all the treasures that came from his hands were of the highest quality.

Seeing Lin Ming fly in on the Heavenly Wind Eagle, Liu Xuan smiled and said, “Haha, Apprentice Nephew Lin, this old man has been waiting for you for a long time.”

With Lin Ming’s current status, he could be described as a high and mighty figure within the Seven Profound Valleys. Although Liu Xuan was an elder, he still had to be respectful towards Lin Ming.

“Greetings, Elder.” Lin Ming respectfully bowed.

Seeing Lin Ming respectfully bow, Liu Xuan was also in a good mood. He said, “Apprentice Nephew Lin, please follow me. I shall lead you to choose whichever low-grade earth-step treasure you would like. As long as you take a fancy for it, you may select it.”

A high-grade human-step treasure was already very precious and rare, the one who crafted it needed to be a refining master with a minimum cultivation of the early Xiantian realm. This sort of treasure could not be bought in some city in a small country. Only someone like Zhang Guanyu could obtain one by relying on his connections through the Allied Trade Association.

As for a low-grade earth-step treasure, one needed to have a cultivation at least at the middle Xiantian realm. Even a late Xiantian refiner master would have a very high chance of failure. Although this was the Seven Profound Valleys’ Treasure Pavilion, they didn’t have many earth-step treasures. As for the better quality ones like the Zhang Family’s Blood Wave Saber, even a late Xiantian master would be jealous of it.

Liu Xuan then took out a hexagonal key from his spatial ring and inserted it into the array disc at the Treasure Pavilion’s front door. There was a ‘longlonglong’ sound, and the Treasure Pavilion’s front door began to slowly swing open.

As the door opened, it revealed a pitch black space, a surge of chilling wind blowing out from within. As these high quality treasures had been stored here for too long, their cold and murderous aura had been bottled up.

“Apprentice Nephew Lin, what sort of treasures would you like to look at?”

“Spears!” Lin Ming said without any hesitation. Now when he fought masters, their treasure weapons were at least at the high-grade human-step rank. Not only that, but they were of the best quality within their grade; they weren’t too far from an earth-step treasure.

In this sort of fight, the Heavy Profound Soft Spear was becoming increasingly weak. After the battle with Jiang Baoyun, even though Lin Ming had wrapped his spear in the protection of his true essence, there were still many sword cuts on his Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

If he met a stronger opponent in the future, his Heavy Profound Soft Spear might even be directly cut in half.

“Alright, come with me.” Liu Xuan brought Lin Ming to pass through rows of weapons on racks. Finally, they came to a small side room, and he opened the door. There was a room inside that was 100 feet wide and long.

Within were 10 rows of racks, with a wide range of spears set up on them. There were dark spears, bright silver spears, and all of their spearheads glowed with a dense cold, with a thick murderous air blowing off of them, causing the temperature in the room to drop by several degrees.

“In here.” Liu Xuan said.

Seeing so many treasure spears, Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. Martial artists loved weapons – Lin Ming was no exception. There were many martial artists who had gathered collections of weapons they loved, even though they could only use one.

There were over several hundred different kinds of spears here. There were short spears, long spears, thick spears, thin spears, hard spears, bendable spears, an incomparable variety of spears.

However, as Lin Ming looked at them, he was a bit disappointed. These treasure spears were worse than the weapons outside. Most of them were at the medium-grade human-step, and there was a small rack of high-grade human-step spears. As for earth-step spears, there were only three in total.

Liu Xuan saw Lin Ming thinking and said, “The Seven Profound Valleys doesn’t have a faction that uses spears, so within all the generations of the Seven Profound Valleys’ refiner masters, there were very few of them that forged spears. These spears here were mostly taken by the disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys and accumulated here over 600 years, all within this room. If you wish to choose a low-grade earth-step spear, then there are only three spears to choose from. In truth, of these three low-grade earth-step treasures, their quality is relatively at the bottom compared to other low-grade earth-step treasures.”

Three spears, all of them at the lowest quality among earth-step treasures. Not only that, but as Lin Ming looked at these three spears, he discovered that they were actually all hard spears, none of them having elasticity. To him, this was unacceptable.

Not to mention that a hard spear would place extreme restrictions on his spear style, but the Flow like Silk he practiced had to have a flexible spear in order to display its greatest power.

Seeing that Lin Ming wasn’t satisfied with these three spears, Liu Xuan said, “Apprentice Nephew Lin, I have a suggestion… Apprentice Nephew Lin is still young, it’s not too late to switch over to using a sword. My Seven Profound Valleys happens to have a Sword Faction. If you join the Sword Faction, all of the core cultivation methods will be made available to you, and they also have many good treasures to choose from.”

Listening to Liu Xuan’s words, Lin Ming didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry. For just an earth-step treasure, he would have to switch over to a third-grade sect’s cultivation methods and cultivate the sword?

When Lin Ming had first chosen the spear as a weapon, it wasn’t on a random whim. The cultivation method that he studied, the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’, was the most Yang and light-attributed of all cultivation methods. To display its true power, a spear was the best.

As for a swordsman, their emphasis was on speed, their sharp moves, and interchangeable styles. It clearly didn’t suit him.

And Lin Ming also had the power of the True Dragon. ‘Saber like tiger, spear like dragon’, were not some random words. Among weapons, the spear’s imposing and indomitable manner best fit the extreme force and extreme Yang energy of a dragon.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then asked, “Elder Liu, if I provide materials, may I request the Refiner Faction seniors to forge an earth-step spear for me?”

“Mm? What materials?” Liu Xuan was doubtful. In order to create an earth-step treasure, one needed priceless materials. Lin Ming came from a civilian background, how would he possibly have any?

“Spear shaft materials.” In creating a treasure spear, the most difficult and arduous part was the spear shaft. If Lin Ming could provide the materials for a spear shaft, creating a spearhead was no problem.

And that spear shaft material was the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo that he had obtained from Thundercrash Mountain’s Flood Dragon cave.

Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo.

At 90 years it would be a bamboo shoot, at 900 years a young bamboo, and at 9000 years a mature bamboo.

A mature Spirit Bamboo would be able to release bamboo shoots, and these bamboo shoots could sneak into magnetic ore, drilling their way in and hatching within.

At first, Lin Ming had found a 900 year old red bamboo in a mountain cavern, and then he had found the parent bamboo within the Flood Dragon's Cave.

That young bamboo was already 900 years old. That meant that this Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo that he had found was nine thousand nine hundred years in age. It was almost the same age as Thundercrash Mountain, which had existed for 10,000 years!

The Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo had the flexibility, and there was no need to mention how tough it was; 900 year old bamboo was already exceedingly difficult to damage with a saber or sword. As for 9900 year old bamboo, even an early Xiantian realm master would find it difficult to damage.

Such bamboo would become the highest grade material for a spear shaft. Especially since Lin Ming was a thunder-attribute martial artist. The attribute and nature of the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo just happened to match him.

“Spear shaft material?” Liu Xuan was stunned. He hesitated and then said, “Whether a spear is good or bad mainly depends on its spearhead. As for these three spears' shafts, in truth they aren't too bad, there isn't any need to forge another one. For instance, this spear shaft here is made with Aged Gold mixed with Cold Star Iron, and then refined with a Flame Essence. It was folded and hammered for nine periods of nine days for a total of 81 days. It has supreme power, even an extreme Xiantian master would find it difficult to destroy!”

Lin Ming said, “Elder Liu is correct. However, a spear's quality doesn't depend on just the spearhead, but also the spear shaft. Looking at these spear shafts, none of them are flexible, so they aren't what I want.”

“You want a low-grade earth-step flexible spear?” Liu Xuan didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. As a refining master, he was aware of just how difficult it was to forge a low-grade earth-step flexible spear. Let alone making one as Lin Ming wished, even finding the materials themselves was a nigh impossible task.

As for the materials that were needed to create a low-grade earth-step flexible spear, Liu Xuan had never seen such materials; he had only read about their descriptions in the ancient texts.

With this near-idiotic request from Lin Ming, Liu Xuan was speechless. If Lin Ming were just some common disciple, then Liu Xuan would have already told him off. However, Lin Ming currently had a very lofty status, it was best if he did his best to give him a convincing explanation.

“Apprentice Nephew Lin, you are not a refining master so you don’t understand how difficult it is to create a low-grade earth-step flexible spear. This sort of treasure would be several times more rare and expensive than the Zhang Family’s Blood Wave Saber! Our Seven Profound Valleys doesn’t have the necessary materials to forge one.”

Lin Ming said, “Elder Liu, I just said that I have the material.”

“What material do you have? Heavy Profound Soft Silver? Hundred Hammer Pure Gold?” Elder Liu casually listed two materials. These two materials were top quality materials in forging bows, staffs, and spears, but they still fell far short of being able to create an earth-step treasure.

Although Lin Ming’s talent was clearly heaven-defying, Liu Xuan still subconsciously thought that Lin Ming was just a little farm boy from a small town. Not only that, but he was very young. A mere 16 year old from a humble mortal background, just what sort of concepts would he have of an earth-step treasure? Lin Ming probably didn’t understand how difficult refining truly was, so he thought he could casually pull out some decent materials to create an earth-step treasure.

Lin Ming hesitated, not sure if he should tell Liu Xuan anything more. Well, since he was in the Seven Profound Valleys, as long as the other party wasn't crazy, then they wouldn't do something so foolish as killing someone to rob them of their property.

But at this moment, a small flame suddenly shined in front of Liu Xuan. It was a sound transmitting talisman. Liu Xuan was stunned. This sound transmission was actually from a Deputy Valley Master, and he had been ordered to immediately bring Lin Ming to the Seven Profound Valleys' Grand Hall, at the highest peak, where he would have an audience with the Saint Envoy of Divine Phoenix Island.

Why would someone with such a status come from Divine Phoenix Island? Liu Xuan thought to himself. He naturally knew what status this so-called Saint Envoy had. He said to Lin Ming, "Apprentice Nephew Lin, let's put this treasure selection off for now. First, we shall go to the highest peak and have an audience with the Divine Phoenix Island's Saint Envoy."

Divine Phoenix Island Saint Envoy? Lin Ming was stunned as soon as he heard this. The word 'saint' caused his heart to stir… surely it couldn't be…

Liu Xuan also tried to attempt his friendly persuasion, "Apprentice Nephew Lin, if you want to forge a flexible treasure spear, how can it be easy? Even if Valley Master Shi could collect the materials for you, who would there be to refine it? Our Refiner Faction has many masters who can create godly swords, but there are only a few who can refine spears. It is very difficult to be able to practice multiple things, what would happen if something went wrong?"

As soon as Liu Xuan said this, Lin Ming's heart was startled. He was right! No matter how good his materials were, if something went wrong in the refining process, then it was useless. Then what should he do?

Right… would Divine Phoenix Island have a refining master? If they personally forged a weapon, its effects would probably be much better…

Chapter 294 – Three Ranks of Human, Earth, Heaven

Chapter 294 – Three Ranks of Human, Earth, Heaven

…

…

…

At this moment, Lin Ming had a very high need for a good spear. In his battle against Jiang Baoyun, he had been hard pressed by him, but eventually he overwhelmed Jiang Baoyun with his endurance, forcing him to make a final strike.

This was without a doubt partly due to Lin Ming's slow speed, but another reason was because the insufficient power of the Heavy Profound Soft Spear was unable to display the full power of the azure true essence. Especially against Jiang Baoyun's Black Crystal Sword, the difference was like heaven and earth.

If he could use the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo to make a low-grade earth-step treasure spear, then Lin Ming's combat strength would instantly experience a great leap, and his power of thunder would be much stronger. If he fought Jiang Baoyun again, it wouldn't be as onerous.

And after a few more days, Lin Ming would go to the Southern Wilderness and take the Eternal Flame Flame Essence. With the Flame Essence to assist the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo in creating a spear, it would be even more powerful.

As he thought this, the Heavenly Wind Eagle had already arrived at the Seven Profound Valleys' highest peak. Lin Ming jumped down from the eagle's back and walked to the entrance. In the Seven Profound Valleys, the eagles could not fly above the Grand Hall.

"I do say, Apprentice Nephew Lin, although as your Apprentice Uncle my achievements are far from comparable to yours, I still have many years of experience. A spear is powerful, but there are very few martial artists who practice the spear. As for martial artists who practice the sword, they are everywhere! Hehe, so what does this mean? This is proof that the sword is far superior to the spear. There is no way that so many people would be fools..." Liu Xuan jabbered endlessly as they walked together. In truth, he was using this as a way to comfort Lin Ming and showing that he cared for him in order to build a better relationship.

Lin Ming thought this was quite funny and simply didn't respond. Like this, the two of them arrived in front of the Grand Hall within the square.

At this point, there were many people already gathered at the square. He casually glanced over them, and found that Jiang Baoyun, Mugu Buyu, Qin Wuxin, and Jiang Lanjian were all here. Including himself, they were the top six ranks of this year's Total Faction Martial Meeting.

"Are they giving out the rewards?" Lin Ming thought. As he looked around, he saw many other youths who weren't dressed in the attire of the Seven Profound Valleys' disciples. Lin Ming didn't have any idea why these people were here.

"Lin Ming, over here!" Jiang Baoyun beckoned.

As Jiang Baoyun called out 'Lin Ming', the eyes of more than 20 people suddenly turned onto him, their vision just like sharp arrows.

Lin Ming paused, what the hell was going on?

"This boy is Lin Ming?"

"The rising star rookie who defeated Jiang Baoyun? Looking at his age... he's probably 18 years old."

"His age isn't strange, but why when I look at him do I see an early Pulse Condensation cultivation? What is Jiang Baoyun doing? He actually lost to a boy at the early Pulse Condensation period? Is the Seven Profound Valleys tricking us?"

Among the more than 20 people, the ones who were familiar with each other were discussing Lin Ming using true essence sound transmission. Jiang Baoyun could be considered as having a stellar reputation. This year, he had managed to successively defeat four top talents of different sects, but now he actually lost to a boy at the early Pulse Condensation period. This caused them to suspect that the Seven Profound Valleys was messing with them.

"You are Lin Ming?"

A young man carrying a saber casually looked Lin Ming up and down, sizing him up as he spoke.

"That's me."

"I heard that you defeated Jiang Baoyun. Good. That gives you the qualifications to be my opponent. After this meeting ends, I will meet you at the foot of the Seven Profound Valleys' grandest mountain. I want to challenge you!" The young man stroked his saber blade as he said this, appearing quite confident.

Lin Ming was speechless. Where did this fellow jump out of? Why was this fellow looking him up and down... was he an idiot?

At this moment, Jiang Baoyun used a sound transmission and said, "Lin Ming, this silly fellow is Zhang Shaoshan from the White Peak Sect, currently 20 years old. Last year I went to White Peak Sect to challenge him, and he narrowly defeated me. Now, my strength has sharply risen, and I already know in my heart that Zhang Shaoshan is no longer my match.

If I fight with him, it won't help my swordsmanship, therefore I didn't go to White Peak Sect this year to waste my time."

"I see." Listening to Jiang Baoyun's words, Lin Ming couldn't help but admire Jiang Baoyun's temperament. Normally, if a martial artist lost to anyone, then would usually return at some later day to place another challenge, if only to relieve their spirit so their true essence flowed freely. However, Jiang Baoyun didn't care at all about whether he won or lost, and only wished to challenge superior masters in order to enhance his swordsmanship. After knowing that this fellow was completely inferior to himself, Jiang Baoyun didn't pay him a second of interest.

Jiang Baoyun continued, "This Zhang Shaoshan isn't too strong. But among these people, there are some that even I am apprehensive about – they are very strong."

Although Jiang Baoyun had a talent that defied the heavens and managed to defeated four top talents in succession this year, that didn't mean that he was the number one junior among all the neighboring third-grade sects younger generation.

Of those 20-something people present, there were already some who were 21 or 22 years old. Although their talent might be slightly worse than Jiang Baoyun's, because of the difference in age, they were actually stronger.

A youth who was already at the early Houtian realm looked at Lin Ming and said, "Lin Ming, I am Lin Ping from Peacock Mountain, we could said be barely related to each other because we share the same last name. I'm quite interested in you. I'm looking forward to your future growth. Two or three years later, you might have the qualifications to be my match. At that time, you can come to my Peacock Mountain and look for me to have a match."

Lin Ping's words were filled with an extreme sense of confidence. However, he truly did have the qualifications to be confident. Lin Ping was only 21 years old, but his cultivation had already reached the early Houtian realm. Out of everyone present, he had the highest cultivation.

After Lin Ping and Zhang Shaoshan spoke, two more people challenged Lin Ming to a match. These sorts of battles between fellow genius disciples were encouraged by the largest sects. In order to improve, one had to constantly fight and learn from other opponents. Some disciples with a naturally high perception might even gain insights from every battle.

But… while having a match wasn't strange, Lin Ming wondered just why all of these people came to look for him. Did he taunt them at some point?

At this point, Jiang Baoyun laughed, and smiled as he passed on another sound transmission, "Do you think it's strange that these people are all eyeing you like this? Divine Phoenix Island just presented a joint training program to raise talents. To be more specific, the greatest young talents of the 19 third-grade sects will be divided into three ranks: human, earth, and heaven. These people will be raised by Divine Phoenix Island and the sects.

"Each rank naturally gets different resources. Not only that, but the difference is great. Everyone wants to attain a higher rank and obtain more resources. As for Mu Qinghong complimenting you in front of the other sects' Elders… everyone here has been made aware of this matter…"

Lin Ming listened, silent. He just didn't have the words to respond. It seemed that even though he was lying down, he would still be struck by arrows! These third-grade sect talents, they were all full of arrogance and pride. They refused to believe that anyone was above them. Although Jiang Baoyun had defeated four top talents, and Lin Ming himself had defeated Jiang Baoyun, these talented disciples who were full of confidence didn't believe that the rest of them would be defeated by Jiang Baoyun.

Who was strong, who was weak; all would be made clear in battle.

Jiang Baoyun saw Lin Ming's speechless expression, and laughed, "The truth is, those people who jumped out at you – besides Lin Ping – aren't that strong. Those that are genuinely strong haven't made a sound yet; they don't believe that they would lose to you. Everyone's aiming for that heaven-step talent spot. After one is evaluated as a heaven-step talent, then they will enjoy treatment that is equal to being a core disciple of Divine Phoenix Island. Not only that, but they will be able to stay for a long time at Divine Phoenix Island."

"Oh? Core disciple treatment?" Lin Ming was surprised, and then he asked through a true essence sound transmission with some confusion, "Why would Divine Phoenix Island propose a joint training program? This doesn't have any advantage for them, right? Why would they want to raise other people's children with their own rice?"

Jiang Baoyun shook his head and replied, "I'm not too clear about this. For these last two days, Divine Phoenix Island has invited the elders of the largest sects to come here and discuss something. There is probably something very big happening soon."

At this time, an impatient voice interrupted Lin Ming and Jiang Baoyun's true essence sound transmission.

"Lin Ming, are you a little girl or something? Do you not dare to fight me?" After being completely ignored by Lin Ming, Zhang Shaoshan looked extremely unhappy.

"Sorry, I'm not interested." Lin Ming plainly replied. Since Jiang Baoyun had said this youth was weak, he naturally didn't want to waste his time on him.

"You…!" Zhang Shaoshan was just about to act, when suddenly a spirit boat appeared in the sky above the Grand Hall's square. As the spirit boat flew down, Lin Ming could see over 20 Xiantian masters onboard. As Lin Ming narrowed his eyes, he saw that among these masters were the Seven Profound Valleys' Valley Masters and Deputy Valley Masters. There were also some other people who were wearing different attire than what the Seven Profound Valleys' elders would wear. These were obviously elders from the other 19 third-grade sects.

With so many third-grade sect core disciples and elders gathered together in the Seven Profound Valleys, and also creating a joint training program for geniuses, just what was happening here?

After the many Xiantian masters flew down and seated themselves, there was a slight sound of fluttering clothes and a gorgeously graceful woman with a heavenly figure floated downwards. She wore a flame-colored fairy dress, and silver silk ribbons fluttered in the wind behind her like thin wings. Her smooth inky black hair was coiffed into a noble phoenix swirl, and her beautiful face was filled with an incomparably tranquil atmosphere. She was just like a divine goddess who was regarding the mortal world.

Lin Ming paused a bit. This woman was Mu Qianyu. He already had a faint guess in his heart of who this would be, therefore he wasn’t too surprised.

When they had met in the jungles of the Southern Wilderness, Lin Ming had seen Mu Qianyu’s disposition that was just like a young maiden’s. But as for the current Mu Qianyu, she was just like a divine saintess. She had a noble manner that made it hard to look up at her.

As for the other disciples around Lin Ming, many of them were staring at her with wide eyes. It wasn’t difficult to know why they were in such a sad state. After all, Mu Qianyu could be described as one of the most beautiful and elegant woman within the South Horizon Region, and she exuded an otherworldly feeling, free of mortal foibles. Coupled with her superior and haughty status, this inevitably caused people to go crazy with ideas of conquering her nobility and beauty.

Although these core disciples of large sects had amazing talent, their cultivation in the end wasn’t too high, and they didn’t seem to have an incomparably firm heart of martial arts like Lin Ming did, or a Sword Heart like Jiang Baoyun did Therefore there were many people who had turned dazed upon seeing Mu Qianyu. Thankfully, the majority of them were able to quickly readjust their thoughts.

But there was a small minority, such as the Acacia Faction’s Ouyang Ming, who cultivated the ‘Divine Acacia Power’, that found it exceedingly difficult to adjust themselves.

In addition, there was also that Zhang Shaoshan who had challenged Lin Ming. He was staring at Mu Qianyu with a look of fascination, his cheeks colored red with infatuation. He was thinking about how nice it would be if he was chosen as a heaven-step talent who could stay within Divine Phoenix Island. Thinking this, Zhang Shaoshan's heart began to burn. If he could live at Divine Phoenix Island, would he be able to see this fairy maiden every day?

Chapter 295 – Heaven-step Talent

Chapter 295 – Heaven-step Talent

…

…

…

After Mu Qianyu flew down, the other third-grade sect elders and Sovereigns rose up and bowed. The difference between them and Mu Qianyu was the same as the difference between Qin Ziya and the Seven Profound Valleys' Valley Master; there was a massive gap separating them.

After all, in less than ten years, Mu Qianyu would definitely step into the Revolving Core realm, and her future potential would be limitless. As for the others present, they would most likely stop at the Xiantian realm, it would be difficult for them to break through to the Revolving Core realm for the rest of their lives.

Mu Qianyu glanced at all the talented geniuses gathered at the square, and her eyes stopped on Lin Ming for an extremely brief period before continuing. She continued to look over everyone else, not showing any difference in expression.

It was only when Mu Qianyu had sat down in the seat of honor did the other elders sit back down. The disciples in the square couldn't help but guess what was happening. Such a massive group of legends and important figures had been gathered here; just what was this plan of proposing a joint training program, and what was it for?

Although they didn't know who Mu Qianyu was, they did know that she came from Divine Phoenix Island, and was a very important character. It was possible that she was even a top-level existence who would be the next successor of Divine Phoenix Island. In the surrounding several million miles, Divine Phoenix Island was the only fourth-grade sect. It could be said that Divine Phoenix Island controlled a good third of Sky Spill Continent's South Horizon Region. What Mu Qianyu's majestic status was could only be imagined.

At this time, Shi Zongtian acted as the spokesman and walked in front of the square, speaking to the core disciples of all the sects. "Today, all of you apprentice nephews have arrived here because there are two matters to announce. The first matter is about Silent Demon Emperor City!"

"Silent Demon Emperor City?"

To those disciples present, this name was a bit strange and unfamiliar. What they didn't know was that in every sect's ancient texts, there existed records of Silent Demon Emperor City.

This was a Holy Land rank sect that was established over 3000 years ago, and was also a top fifth-grade sect.

In the entirety of Sky Spill Continent, there continued to only be a handful of Holy Lands.

The main difference between a Holy Land and a normal fifth-grade sect was that a Holy Land rank sect would often last for over 10,000 years. However, Silent Demon Emperor City was an exception.

The Netherworld Great Emperor who established Silent Demon Emperor City was a man who practiced the Devil Arts. The path of martial arts was slow and difficult, there were many people who weren't willing to put in the time and effort to gradually traverse this path. They would rather take a shortcut. For instance, techniques such as Star Absorbing Great Law, Energy Melting Great Law, or cultivation methods that required one to violate men or women, all of these were techniques that belonged to the Devil Arts.

The Netherworld Great Emperor had committed all sorts of hideous and villainous crimes in cultivating his Devil Arts. He had killed countless men and women, and had simultaneously taken the outstandingly talented and beautiful girls captive, violating them. These actions of his had spurred massive public fury.

Afterwards, his martial arts became nearly unrivalled in the world. Finally, he almost encroached upon a daughter of a Sky Spill Continent emperor. This had aroused the full wrath of the emperor, and he had paid a steep price in order to request several other emperors of Sky Spill Continent to team together and execute this Southern Demon. With the Netherworld Great Emperor's death, Silent Demon Emperor City also fell apart.

From beginning to end, Silent Demon Emperor City hadn't even existed for 2000 years. It had only been 1000 years since its collapse. However, Silent Demon Emperor City hadn't been fully eradicated. Originally, the Netherworld Great Emperor had 36 Devil Generals subordinate to him. Of these 36 Devil Generals, eight of them had managed to survive and escape far away to the South Sea. They gathered some of the other former minions of Silent Demon Emperor City together, and created the South Sea Demon Region.

As soon as the Netherworld Great Emperor died, the Sky Spill Continent Emperor had lost a great deal of support, and had enough trouble on his hands. Therefore the South Sea Demon Region was allowed to continue existing.

Over the years, the South Sea Demon Region developed more, and began to stir. They weren't willing to stay so far away from the mainland in the deep sea. But if they did come back, they would have to cross a big barrier that served as their greatest hurdle – the immortal island that was located offshore in the South Sea, Divine Phoenix Island.

The truth was, the South Sea Demon Region had long coveted and salivated over Divine Phoenix Island. Divine Phoenix Island had mostly women cultivators. Because the South Sea Demon Region practiced the Devil Arts, they lacked the talented and beautiful girls that were necessary to serve as their cultivation stoves. If they could annex Divine Phoenix Island, not only would they obtain a massive amount of resources, but they would also obtain many charmingly beautiful women that were equally talented. What could be more perfect than this?

The South Sea Demon Region was barely able to be considered a fifth-grade sect. Still, their strength was far more formidable than Divine Phoenix Island.

And so, Divine Phoenix Island now faced its greatest crisis since it was founded.

Before, Mu Qinghong had asked Mu Qianyu to come not only to observe Lin Ming, but also to probe into the Seven Profound Valleys and Peacock Mountain, and test these third-grade sects to see if they could resist the South Sea Demon Region together. Since they shared a common enemy, this should be easy for them to understand.

After Mu Qianyu arrived, her probing turned into a direct implantation of her plans. She planned to unite the 19 neighboring third-grade sects in order to resist the South Sea Demon Region. Of course, Divine Phoenix Island would also pay a price corresponding to their sincerity. Thus, the joint training program for talents was created with the backing of Divine Phoenix Island.

Shi Zongtian was brief and concise in his explanation of events. After he finished, he continued to say, “In order to resist the threat of the South Sea Demon Region together, us 19 third-grade sects and Divine Phoenix Island have decided to join in solidarity and cross this river together on the same boat. To cooperate and raise these talents together is also an important plan. This is the second matter I wish to announce today.”

“Of the core disciples in the 19 third-grade sects, there are altogether 108 that are selected to enter into this joint training program. These 108 individuals will be divided into three ranks: human, earth, and heaven. First, I will announce the human-step disciples on the list. There are 50 people. They are…”

“Seven Profound Valleys’ Jiang Lanjian, Ouyang Ming. Peacock Mountain’s Sun Yuwen, Zhou Guang…”

Currently, there were only 20-something disciples present. Most of the people on the list could not arrive due to time reasons. Those that were here already knew that they were candidates listed on the joint training program, and were expecting that their talent grade would be high. But now, many of them had already been directly classified into the lowest human-step

Those whose names were called showed a look of deep expression. They didn't feel very convinced. There hadn't even been a tournament, how could they have possibly been classified in the lowest grade?

White Peak Sect's Zhang Shaoshan tensely clenched his fists in nervousness. He had absolute belief in his own talent and abilities, but what he feared was that Divine Phoenix Island's investigation hadn't been thorough and didn't properly assess his talent, then place him into the lowest human-step grade. Like this, he would truly be wronged.

However, as Shi Zongtian read the White Peak Sect disciples' names, his name wasn't called.

Zhang Shaoshan let out a long breath of relief, feeling a bit more satisfied with himself. It seemed that Divine Phoenix Island did have some judgment after all. Well, his talent should at least be at the earth-step, and maybe even heaven-step. This would all depend on how many individuals could be placed in the heaven-step grade.

However, thinking that those from Divine Phoenix Island favored Li Ming, Zhang Shaoshan didn't feel too well. Lin Ming's 'sorry, I'm not interested' that he said a while ago had really caused Zhang Shaoshan to lose face, and he had taken that insult to heart, brooding over it.

Zhang Shaoshan subconsciously clenched his fists, 'You actually look down on me, but just you wait, I will show you how fierce I am!'

Shi Zongtian continued to say, "Now I will list the earth-step talents. There are a total of 27 individuals. They are Seven Profound Valleys' Jiang Baoyun, Mugu Buyu. Peacock Mountain's Lin Ping, Yan Gu, Zhou Ze. Falling Cloud Sect's..."

As Shi Zongtian read the names one at a time, those present were confused. There were only 27 names on the earth-step talent list?

If there was a total of 108 people, and there were 50 in the human-step and 27 in the earth-step, then altogether that was only 77 people. Did the heaven-step list have 31 people? There were four more than on the earth-step list?

Many people were very excited as they thought this; it seemed there was a high chance of being chosen as a heaven-step talent. Especially those whose names hadn't been called yet, they were excited to the point of disbelief. They were chosen as heaven-step talents? That even exceeded the Seven Profound Valleys' Jiang Baoyun and Peacock Mountain's Lin Ping!

Zhang Shaoshan was incomparably nervous at this time. As Shi Zongtian read the names from the Seven Profound Valleys, Lin Ming's name hadn't been listed. It seemed that this fellow was really a lucky dog, and had been chosen as a heaven-step talent. If he wasn't selected, then what would he do?

'If there were only a dozen or so selected for the heaven-step rank talent, then I wouldn't be surprised if I wasn't chosen. But since there are 31 people being chosen, then I absolutely have been selected! If I'm not chosen, then I will stand up and challenge that heaven-step talent!'

'As long as I win, I can shut everyone up.'

Thinking this, Zhang Shaoshan let out a long breath, his heart finally settling down.

Finally, Shi Zongtian finished without reading Zhang Shaoshan's name. This caused Zhang Shaoshan to feel completely relieved.

'It seems that Divine Phoenix Island has good judgment and didn't misjudge me. But as for Jiang Baoyun, Lin Ping, and even Falling Cloud Sect's Bai Shuxuan, was there a mistake?'

'Those few people should have been chosen as heaven-step talents.'

The 19 third-grade sects didn't communicate much with each other, therefore Zhang Shaoshan only understood the strength of a few people here. To his knowledge, Lin Ping and Bai Shuxuan were both top-class talents of their sects. Lin Ping had stepped into the Houtian realm when he was 21 years old, and his talent was much higher than Zhang Shaoshans'. As for Jiang Baoyun, he too was just a bit weaker than him, but could be comparable to his own junior-apprentice brother. If his own junior-apprentice brothers could be selected as heaven-step rank talents, then how come Jiang Baoyun couldn't?

As Zhang Shaoshan felt that something was wrong, Shi Zongtian continued to say, "As for these talents that are between the human-step and earth-step talent ranks, because of a lack of information, it is difficult to define their grades. So, there is need for additional assessment. There are a total of 30 people. These 30 are: the Seven Profound Valleys' Qin Wuxin..."

"What?"

These words of Shi Zongtian had directly turned Zhang Shaoshan into an idiot. There were 30 people whose talents were between the human-step and earth-step, and there were also 77 others. Altogether, this was 107 people.

Did that mean there was only one heaven-step talent!?

Before he had more time to think who this could be, Shi Zongtian called his name – White Peak Sect's Zhang Shaoshan.

Zhang Shaoshan's mind exploded. Did Shi Zongtian say something wrong? He had actually chosen him, this father, as someone who was between the human-step talent and earth-step talent? There were 28 individuals chosen as earth-step talents and heaven-step talents, and yet he hadn't been of them? A supreme genius such as himself had been overlooked!?!?

Zhang Shaoshan couldn't accept this. In fact, it wasn't only him, there were several other people who couldn't accept this. They thought that they would be chosen as heaven-step talents, but didn't think they would actually only be earth-step talent candidates!

These disciples suddenly felt extremely unconvinced of the legitimacy of these decisions.

As for those whose grade wasn't chosen yet, they rarely fought with the geniuses of other sects. Therefore, there was a lack of information in deciding where they would be. These geniuses always had a proud heart and arrogant demeanor; they hadn't even fought, so why would they concede so easily? Jiang Baoyun had certainly won against some others, but could this Jiang Baoyun defeat them?

As for this Mugu Buyu, what the hell?

They hadn't even heard of him before!

And what was most irritating was that in this group of 108 talents, there was only a single heaven-step talent. They hadn't even fought this person yet, so why would they be inferior?

Chapter 296 – I Do Not Accept

Chapter 296 – I Do Not Accept

…

…

…

When Shi Zongtian finished reading this list of 30 names, Zhang Shaoshan took the lead and said, “Valley Master Shi! I have a question!”

Shi Zongtian frowned as he was interrupted. He asked in a low voice, “What is it?”

“I would like to know who evaluates the talent rank? And what is the basis for this evaluation?”

Shi Zongtian said, “The names of the talent list were decided by Fairy Maiden Qinghong, and an elder from Divine Phoenix Island. They evaluated the results of these past years’ Martial Meetings of every sect!”

“Then this is a list that was comprised from the various Sovereigns and elders of the sects? I haven’t even challenged most of these people, isn’t the conclusion of my talent just too biased!?”

Zhang Shaoshan’s public denouncement of Divine Phoenix Island’s judgment could be considered extremely rude. But he was also voicing the thoughts and emotions of many other people.

“What a tournament tests is strength. As for this list of names, we are not looking at strength, only talent! As for those 30 people for which there isn’t enough information, we shall reexamine them and then decide where they belong.”

“But…”

Before Zhang Shaoshan could speak any further, Mu Qinghong coldly humphed and said, “You. If you feel unsatisfied with our decision, then you can choose to not participate in this joint training program. Do not forget, the resources of this program are provided by my Divine Phoenix Island. As for who we grant it to and why, it is all decided by my Divine Phoenix Island’s authority! It is not for little outsiders to think they can mess with! If you find it unfair, then you may leave!”

As Mu Qinghong spoke, there was true essence fused into her voice, causing an extremely intensely oppressive feeling. Zhang Shaoshan immediately paled and drew backwards several steps. He bit his lips, not speaking. Since he was in others’ house, he had to bow his head. No one was willing to not take these resources. Not only that, but they were resources from Divine Phoenix Island; they were most likely much better than anything he could obtain from his own sect.

At this moment, Shi Zongtian continued to speak, “Now I will announce the final heaven-step talent list. There a single person. This is… the Seven Profound Valleys’ Lin Ming!”

As Shi Zongtian’s words came out, Lin Ming suddenly felt the air around him becoming stifling, as countless eyes suddenly turned to look at him, their vision as cold as the icy tips of a sword. Except for Jiang Baoyun, Qin Wuxin, and the others from the Seven Profound Valleys, everyone else was looking at him as if they could devour him.

Zhang Shaoshan’s eyes were red. This was jealousy, and this was also the blocking of his ‘spirit’.

A heaven-step talent could enjoy treatment equal to a core disciple of Divine Phoenix Island! It was said that core disciples of Divine Phoenix Island could practice with medium-grade true essence stones. A medium-grade true essence stone was worth 100 normal pure true essence stones! Even if it was Zhang Shaoshan’s father, he absolutely wouldn’t be willing to cultivate with medium-grade true essence stones. This was simply burning away money!

In addition, a heaven-step talent could stay at Divine Phoenix Island. Divine Phoenix Island was comprised of 90% women. Not only that, but they were the most talented, beautiful, and proud maidens! Even though no one dared to show any impropriety towards someone like Mu Qianyu, if they could befriend a woman at the Xiantian realm or above and become her companion, they would be able to cultivate with her. This was a fate that could only be found and not searched for!

Thinking that so many good things had all fallen upon Lin Ming, Zhang Shaoshan's eyes were so red with fury and jealousy that they looked as if they were on fire. But as Shi Zongtian continued to speak, the resentment in his heart was pushed to the extreme.

Shi Zongtian said, "Every month, a human-step talent will receive 500 low-grade true essence stones, and once they reach the late Houtian realm, they will obtain one Heaven Opening Pill.

"Every month, an earth-step talent will receive 500 low-grade true essence stones, five medium-grade true essence stones, and after reaching the middle Houtian realm, they will obtain two Heaven Opening Pills.

"Every month, a heaven-step talent will receive 20 medium-grade true essence stones, and immediately receive one Heaven Opening Pill. After reaching the Houtian realm, they will receive two Heaven Opening Pills. They may also venture into the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm to adventure, and will also receive a low-grade earth-step flexible armor as a gift."

Those last words caused the entire crowd to go into an uproar. The disparity between them was just too great! The difference between them and a heaven-step talent was like a flea-ridden beggar following behind a gilded prince!

In comparison, not even mentioning the medium-grade true essence stones, but a heaven-step talent would also receive three Heaven Opening Pills. These could immediately be taken to increase one's cultivation! Not only that, but they could also enter the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm! Although no one knew just what this Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was, it didn't take a genius to know that this was some incredible and incomparably valuable place.

Maybe only core disciples of Divine Phoenix Island could enter! Also, there was the low-grade earth-step flexible armor. The value of that was just inestimable. It had to be known that armor was normally much more expensive than weapons of the same grade. And a flexible armor was one of the most expensive kind!

This was just too unfair!

Several people immediately stood up and said, “Seniors, we have words we wish to say!”

These people were all disciples that were grouped together with Zhang Shaoshan on the earth-step waiting list. These individuals usually hid their strength and rarely participated in battles between geniuses. Still, they all had their own respective trump cards, and were absolutely confident in their abilities. Since they hadn’t fought anyone yet, they refused to take this loss sitting down.

As for those 27 individuals that were truly chosen into the earth-step list, because they often participated in battles between geniuses, they naturally knew just where their abilities lay. Since they saw that Lin Ping from Peacock Mountain hadn’t even made a sound, they naturally wouldn’t speak up.

“What do you have to say?” Mu Qinghong asked, her words somewhat cold.

“Senior, if our assessment results are amazing enough, can we qualify to become a heaven-step talent?” A man with upturned eyebrows asked.

Mu Qinghong’s eyes swept past his person. He was around 20 years old, and his cultivation was still stuck at the peak Pulse Condensation period.

‘Humph, the toad truly thinks he can eat swan meat. He actually thinks he can be a heaven-step talent! Hilarious! When Young Mistress Qianyu was 17 years old, she was already a Houtian master. When she was 22 years old, she stepped into the Xiantian realm!’

If it wasn't for the fact that Divine Phoenix Island needed to unite these small sects, then if these people were placed in Divine Phoenix Island, they just wouldn't be worthy of investing any efforts in.

Mu Qinghong was about to reject the ridiculous requests of these people, when at this moment Mu Qianyu actually spoke up. "You can qualify as a heaven-step talent, as long as you pass the seventh floor of the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda."

Within the Sky Spill Continent, the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda was the general illusory magic array that was used to test the talents of individuals. When Lin Ming had first participated in the Seven Profound Martial House entrance examination, he had also gone up this pagoda, passed the fourth floor and was stopped at the fifth. As for the sixth-grade talent Qin Xingxuan, she had passed the fifth floor.

As for the sixth and seventh floor, each of these had an exponential level of growth in difficulty. To rush past the seventh floor was nigh impossible.

"What? Pass the seventh floor?"

The several youths that stood up suddenly had very ugly complexions. How could they ever manage to pass through the seventh floor? Wasn't this just making fun of them?

Of course, they dared not say this.

"I want to know, as long as one is a heaven-step talent, they have the ability to pass the seventh floor?" The youth with upturned eyebrows asked, his eyes glancing at Lin Ming. The implied meaning of suspicion was obvious.

This youth acknowledged that Lin Ming truly did have superior and outstanding talent, but he didn't believe that Lin Ming could actually pass the seventh floor.

In fact, Lin Ming didn't have absolute faith that he could pass through the Exquisite Pagoda's seventh floor. Sky Spill Continent's general talent test Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda was not the same as the Sorcerer Holy Land which he passed.

"Several Seniors, I wish to challenge those geniuses on the earth-step list and heaven-step list. As long as the age difference isn't too great, then those who win naturally have a higher talent! Isn't that right!?"

Mu Qianyu smiled without saying a word. As for those other sects' elders, different looks flashed on their faces; obviously, they each had their own thoughts on the matter.

The truth was that they weren't satisfied with the lists that Divine Phoenix Island had compiled. There were many talents that didn't expose their final trump cards and show their true strength. If one simply judged them by looking at the surface, it would simply create many inaccuracies.

Not only that, but the name list judged the Seven Profound Valleys to be very high. The Seven Profound Valleys was only in the middle of the pack of the 19 third-grade sects. Finally, only Lin Ming was chosen as the heaven-step talent. And, there was also Jiang Baoyun and Mugu Buyu who were chosen as earth-step talents. And Qin Wuxin was an earth-step talent candidate. This was even better than Peacock Mountain!

If this was only because Mu Qinghong had personally watched the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction Martial Meeting and thus they recieved such a high evaluation, then they wouldn't be convinced. She hadn't even come to see their own Martial Meetings, so why were they listed as inferior?

Mu Qianyu smiled, nodding, and said, "If you cannot wait for an official assessment, then you may begin your challenges now."

Mu Qianyu's voice just fell when Zhang Shaoshan took a fierce step forwards, and loudly shouted, "Lin Ming, I challenge you!"

Everyone's eyes turned to look at Lin Ming, especially the disciples of White Peak Sect, they were anticipating this good show. They were very clear just how strong Zhang Shaoshan was. Last year, even Jiang Baoyun had been defeated under his hand! Lin Ming might be strong, but even he would find it difficult to defeat Zhang Shaoshan!

Lin Ming casually crossed his arms, sizing up Zhang Shaoshan. He calmly said, “I just turned 16 years old a little bit ago. How old are you?”

“Wha… what?” These few words had turned Zhang Shaoshan silly. Lin Ming had just reached 16 years of age? He thought that Lin Ming was around 18 years old or so – how could he possibly be 16 years old? A 16 year old actually defeated Jiang Baoyun? Not only that, but his cultivation was only at the early Pulse Condensation period. Was this for real?

Zhang Shaoshan couldn’t believe this. He was already 20 years old. In any case, this four year gap between them had already lost him any qualifications to challenge Lin Ming.

At this moment, Mugu Buyu suddenly cynically laughed, “Jejejeje, little baby boy, let me play with you. If you can defeat me, then you might be able to take a few moves from this little boy’s hand. How about it?”

Mugu Buyu pointed a withered finger towards Lin Ming as he said this. The ‘little boy’ that he spoke of was naturally Lin Ming. That Lin Ming could actually convince this normally proud and stubborn Mugu Buyu, could also be said to be a testament to Lin Ming’s fearless strength.

And who the hell was this?

Zhang Shaoshan was already furious from shame. Even if he didn’t have the qualifications because of his age, he should at least battle Jiang Baoyun. Did this strange mummy fellow actually think he was worthy of challenging him?

“Good! Then I am much obliged!” Zhang Shaoshan spoke with his heart bursting with rage.

‘Some unknown mummy fellow from the Seven Profound Valleys dares to challenge me! If I don’t show some cards in my hand, then you won’t know how high the heavens are, and how deep the earth is!’

Mu Qianyu calmly smiled and said, “Who else would like to challenge?”

“I’ll challenge!” The youth with upturned eyebrows said. He was 19 years old — equally unqualified to challenge Lin Ming.

Jiang Baoyun slowly stood up, taking the sword case off his back. He said, “My age is similar to yours. I will be your match, I shouldn’t be unworthy of you.”

The youth with upturned eyebrows looked at Jiang Baoyun and nodded. He wanted to challenge Lin Ming, but Jiang Baoyun was good enough.

The arena was readied. There would be two matches, First, Mugu Buyu against Zhang Shaoshan.

“Hehe.” Mugu Buyu slyly smiled. The bag on his back suddenly shook, and a flaming puppet jumped out, its entire body wreathed in deep red flames.

Lin Ming’s eyebrows rose. It had only been ten days, and yet this Evil Fire God puppet was repaired? It seemed that the Puppet Faction Sovereign had personally repaired it…

Chapter 297 – Between Cloud and Mud

Chapter 297 – Between Cloud and Mud

…

…

…

All the other sects' elders looked at Mugu Buyu, puzzled. Just where did this little kid come from?

According to the information they received, during the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction Martial Meeting, Lin Ming had been ranked first, and Jiang Baoyun was most likely second. As for this fellow who looked like a dried up mummy, he was third.

The Seven Profound Valleys' third ranked disciple had come out to challenge White Peak Sect's chief disciple, Zhang Shaoshan?

White Peak Sect's elder grunted. Although his White Peak Sect was ranked tenth out of the 18 third-grade sects, they still weren't much different from the Seven Profound Valleys – their strength was about the same. But now, the Seven Profound Valleys' third ranked disciple had actually come out to challenge their chief disciple, this was just looking down on them too much.

It had to be known that the Seven Profound Valleys' Jiang Baoyun had come to White Peak Sect last year to challenge them, but had been defeated by Zhang Shaoshan!

Not just that, but the talent list that Divine Phoenix Island drew up had caused the White Peak Sect elder to fume with self-righteous anger. There were 27 earth-step talents, and 17 of those spots had been taken by the six top third-grade sects, which included Peacock Mountain. He couldn't say anything about that, but of those 10 measly leftover sports, two of them had been dominated by the Seven Profound Valleys, leaving only eight spots left over for 12 sects to share. White Peak Sect actually hadn't even been given a spot! Zhang Shaoshan had only been listed as a possible earth-step candidate.

Divine Phoenix Island had only come to watch this Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction Martial Meeting, thus they made this sort of arbitrary judgment; how could the White Peak Sect elder be satisfied with this?

'Shaoshan has made a great deal of progress this year, and he also has two ultimate finishing moves. These are things that Divine Phoenix Island and the Seven Profound Valleys have no idea of. Now, I will let you have a look at just how strong my White Peak Sect's chief disciple is!'

As the White Peak Sect elder thought this, he maintained his calm and indifferent composure. He unhurriedly picked up a bowl of wine, watching the match on the martial stage from the corners of his eyes. He had a very confident appearance, as if he didn't worry about Zhang Shaoshan's competition.

On the martial stage, Mugu Buyu had summoned his Scarlet Gold Tortoise puppet and the Great Alligator puppet. As for the spider puppet, that was missing – it probably hadn't been repaired yet.

Zhang Shao crossed his arms across his chest, coldly looking at Mugu Buyu. As a top master, he naturally had to have the style and verve of an apex master. Letting his opponent make adequate preparations was one of the most essential aspects of showing off one's skill as an apex master.

"Are you finally ready? Make your move. I'll let you have three moves. With three moves, I shall see whether or not you can force my sword!" Zhang Shaoshan mockingly said.

"Jejejeje, little baby boy, I think you are already stupid to the point of being more idiotic than my puppets." Mugu Buyu gave a shrieking cry, and his skeleton creaked as two large flesh ridges appeared behind him, constantly moving.

Zhang Shaoshan's complexion changed, just what was this thing?

Pah! Pah!

With two light sounds, those fleshy lumps on Mugu Buyu's back turned into a pair of arms. As Zhang Shaoshan saw this, his eyes went perfectly round. This mummy fellow actually had arms on his back? Was this fellow… a human?

"You can die now!"

Mugu Buyu weirdly cried out, shrinking into the Scarlet Gold Tortoise. Then, four weapons popped out, extending from the holes in the Scarlet Gold Tortoise. At the same time, the Evil Fire God flourished a sword of burning fire, chopping down at Zhang Shaoshan!

Flames billowed, the overwhelming heat wave covered the sky and turned the tiles into lava. Zhang Shaoshan's expression completely changed; this was a terrifying level of heat!

Ka!

A sword split apart the arena floor. Zhang Shaoshan awkwardly dodged the blade, however, the raging fire that was supported by nine Hollow Flame Essences was too fierce. The waves of fire directly melted away Zhang Shaoshan's true essence protection, lighting his clothes on fire and burning off his eyebrows.

"How is this possible!?"

Clang!

The treasure sword left its sheath, all of Zhang Shaoshan's previously boastful demeanor was gone. With sword in hand, he hadn't even had time to put out the fire when Mugu Buyu had already rushed ahead!

"You really think I can't do anything!?" Zhang Shaoshan's lips panned up in a cruel smile. As a swordsman, his greatest advantage was naturally his attack power.

Currently, his heart was raging with anger. Because he was too careless a moment ago, Mugu Buyu's move had actually caused his to panic, embarrassing him. His clothes had been burned by a nobody, this was simply an unforgivable insult!

"White Peak 13 Swords!"

Zhang Shaoshan gave a loud cry, directly using his greatest master move, wanting to defeat Mugu Buyu in one stroke and recover the face he lost. However, he didn't expect that facing his fierce attack, Mugu Buyu would not only not dodge, but rush straight towards his sword!

Bang!

With a deafening explosion, Zhang Shaoshan's sword had pierced through Mugu Buyu's pure golden shell. At that same time, Mugu Buyu's four weapons cut towards Zhang Shaoshan!

"You want to perish together? You think you can?"

As a swordsman, Zhang Shaoshan was naturally more agile than Mugu Buyu. After he pulled back his sword, he used the force of the recoil to rapidly retreat, escaping from Mugu Buyu's attack.

A single blade had solved his opponent while he perfectly dodged the opponent's final dying counter attack. With this, Zhang Shaoshan's face was glowing with content; he had finally recovered his face. However, in a split-second, his happy face froze.

He suddenly felt as if his body was being pulled down by an invisible force, as if his body was made from lead! This was the special ability of the Great Alligator Puppet – Devouring!

"What is this?"

Zhang Shaoshan was greatly surprised. He didn't have time to think as he heard the sounds of howling flames coming from his side. He turned his head to look, the Evil Fire God was already cutting down on him!

Damn!

As his body felt like it was stuck in quicksand, Zhang Shaoshan had no chance of evading. He cut out with his sword, meeting this strike head-on!

Bang!

Flame exploded, and his sword move was broken, true essence waves rushing out. Zhang Shaoshan was a swordsman, so his defense was never very good. Before, the Evil Fire God's strike had almost shattered the martial stage's protective array formation, so how could he defend against it?

Pu!

As the power of fire entered his body, Zhang Shaoshan was just like a broken kite as he flew backwards, his organs injured and his blood churning in reverse. He wanted to spit out blood, but he forcefully swallowed it back down, causing his injuries to worsen.

In dealing with some nobody, Zhang Shaoshan would rather aggravate his injuries than lose face by vomiting blood.

"I was too careless. This fellow was really hard to deal with. However, he has already been struck by my White Peak 13 Swords – he's done for."

White Peak 13 Swords was Zhang Shaoshan's strongest sword skill, he had never missed. Though he had been a bit embarrassed, for better or for worse, he had used a sword to defeat his enemy, so in the end he hadn't lost too much face.

But, just as Zhang Shaoshan thought he had already won, he suddenly heard the sound of wind whistling beneath him. He looked down and saw four hands carrying four different weapons, and a giant golden turtle coming straight towards him. That shining golden shell didn't even have a single scratch.

"How… how is this possible!?"

Zhang Shaoshan's eyes widened like eggs. In the air, there was no leverage for him to move, and he had been seriously wounded. His true essence was chaotic, and he couldn't use another powerful sword skill again. Like this, he was just a target to be aimed at.

In the next moment, there was a muffled 'peng' sound, as Mug Buyu raised his sickle and smashed down on Zhang Shaoshan in midair, just like a ball!

Bang!

Zhang Shaoshan smashed against the floor just like a broken sack of rice, half of his body stuck in the tiles. The other sects' core disciples and elders were dumbfounded by this. How did this happen?

Although no one believed that Zhang Shaoshan was some once-in-a-lifetime talent, he was still the chief disciple of White Peak Sect. Yet he had been defeated by a nobody, and in such a miserable manner.

From start to end, Mugu Buyu had only used five moves. The Evil Fire God puppet's attack power was too abnormally strong. Zhang Shaoshan could not dodge it, and a single blow sent his sword flying away. As for that golden shell around Mugu Buyu, that was even stranger. It had actually been able to withstand the White Peak 13 Swords without a single scratch!

This was just too terrifying!

What the other sects' elders didn't know was that Mugu Buyu's Scarlet Gold Tortoise had managed to continuously withstand two strikes from Lin Ming's Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, one of which was even mixed with the Evil Fire God's flame, creating a massive thunderflame explosion. Even then, it had only been slightly cracked.

In terms of defensive power, Mugu Buyu was the number one ranked among the entire younger generation of the Seven Profound Valleys, Lin Ming could not hold a candle to him. A True Essence Force Field was a type of power of Law that was even above the Concept of Wind, and was one of the two ultimate legacy secret techniques of the Puppet Faction. Its reputation was well-earned.

Seeing Mugu Buyu's full combat potential, Jiang Baoyun let out a breath of cold air. 'His main body has near-absolute defense, and the Evil Fire God has irresistible attack power. Also, that alligator puppet has a devouring ability that can contain movements, causing any attack to be undodgeable. This multi-dimensional attack system from Mugu Buyu can almost be called perfect. Unfortunately, his opponent was Lin Ming, and all of this became useless. If I encountered him, I do not have absolute assurance that I could defeat him.'

In a sense, Mugu Buyu's ability to restrain an opponent's speed was able to suppress Jiang Baoyun. As for Lin Ming, his abnormal attack power was able to overwhelm the defense of Mugu Buyu. Therefore Lin Ming had been able to relatively easily defeat Mugu Buyu, and yet engage in an extended battle with Jiang Baoyun.

The Seven Profound Valleys deacons hurried on stage to lift up the unconscious Zhang Shaoshan and carry him down. The other sect elders and geniuses hadn't responded to the fight a moment ago. They were all individuals with outstanding eyesight. Naturally, they were able to see what the terrifying aspects of Mugu Buyu were.

Absolute defense, absolute attack! How could one break this near-perfect attack system?

Speed? Useless! Although Mugu Buyu was slow, he still had that strange alligator puppet that was able to restrain an opponent's speed. If an opponent couldn't display their speed, they could only wait to be struck.

Attack? Useless! Even the White Peak Sect's White Peak 13 Swords was useless. It hadn't even managed to leave a mark on that golden shell!

Defense? Useless! Although Zhang Shaoshan had poor defensive power, his sword technique was absolutely amazing. He had used his sword skills to defend against the Evil Fire God's attack, but was still defeated afterwards!

Who could be Mugu Buyu's match in the same level? Such a powerful Mugu Buyu was a nameless nobody? And he was only ranked third in the Seven Profound Valleys?

But, they all clearly remembered the words that Mugu Buyu had spoken to Zhang Shaoshan before the match.

"Let me play with you. If you can defeat me, then you might be able to take a few moves from this little boy's hand."

That so-called boy, was naturally Lin Ming!

"If you can defeat me…"

"Might be able…"

"To take a few moves…"

What Mugu Buyu's words implied was that someone stronger than him would only be able to take a few moves from Lin Ming!

And yet, that Zhang Shaoshan was defeated by Mugu Buyu in five moves. In comparison to Lin Ming, that was simply the difference between cloud and mud!

Chapter 298 – Convincing Strength

Chapter 298 – Convincing Strength

…

…

…

Lin Ming. Early Pulse Condensation cultivation, 16 years old!

How did he defeat Mugu Buyu? And listening to the intent behind Mugu Buyu's words, not only was he not Lin Ming's match, but he was far surpassed by Lin Ming.

No one person thought that Mugu Buyu would lie. Mugu Buyu was such a talented genius, there was no way that he would frustrate his own spirit. Not only that, but there was no need to do so. It would be impossible for Divine Phoenix Island to do something so careless like designating Lin Ming as a heaven-step talent just because of some words from Mugu Buyu.

Then, the only explanation would be that Lin Ming truly was a terrifying presence.

Peacock Mountain's Lin Ping let out a long breath of air as he looked at Mugu Buyu. Naturally, he would be able to defeat Mugu Buyu by virtue of absolute suppression of power. But Lin Ming was only at the early Pulse Condensation period, how did he defeat him?

If Lin Ming was fierce at the early Pulse Condensation period, then what would happen if he reached the middle Pulse Condensation period, late Pulse Condensation period, or even stepped into the Houtian realm?

If that happened, maybe even Lin Ping himself wouldn't be able to touch Lin Ming!

No wonder Divine Phoenix Island had chosen Lin Ming as a heaven-step talent. He was so young, yet he had such strength! This was the reason that he was the only heaven-step talent.

Lin Ping was simply speechless.

At this time, Lin Ming was quietly sitting in the arena. Because of his age, no one had the qualifications to challenge him. But after Mugu Buyu rolled over Zhang Shaoshan, there were even less people that wanted to challenge him. If it really came down to a battle, the only one present that could match Lin Ming was probably Lin Ping. As for everyone else, they were mostly at Jiang Baoyun's level; they would only be able to force out Lin Ming's full power.

At this time, Jiang Baoyun suddenly said to the youth with upturned eyebrows, "Senior-apprentice Brother, it's about time we enter the stage."

The youth with upturned eyebrows was surprised, and then immediately felt bitterness in his heart. He had been nervous and gone crazy in challenging Jiang Baoyun. Their match was immediately after Mugu Buyu and Zhang Shaoshan's!

The youth with upturned eyebrows gulped; his mouth dry as he was left speechless. He didn't believe for a moment that he would be a match for that mummy. And according to his information, Jiang Baoyun was someone who was even fiercer than that mummy fellow!

Although the youth with upturned eyebrows was confident in his own abilities, he wasn't so confident as to think he could defeat such an abnormal character. If he went on stage, wouldn't he just be ruining himself?

But he was the third-ranked disciple of Falling Cloud Sect, and Falling Cloud Sect was one of the six top third-grade sects. How could he run away from a mere Seven Profound Valleys disciple?

But if he went on, he would be ruined, and most likely be abused into a shameless mess that would lose all face for his family.

Yet if he was timid, then people would say that he was so scared that he dared not go on stage. In that case, he would still lose face!

The youth with upturned eyebrows finally understood what it meant to jump on the tiger's back, unable to crawl down. This catastrophe had all been brought about by his own big and cheap mouth!

As he mulled over this dilemma, a cold voice suddenly said, "Junior-apprentice Brother Song, I will go."

The youth with upturned eyebrows turned around, seeing a white robed Bai Shuxuan standing behind him. Bai Shuxuan couldn't be considered a true beauty, but from top to bottom, her body gave off a soft and placid temperament just like still water. When a person looked at her, it was easy to have an extremely favorable impression of her.

"Senior-apprentice Sister!" The youth with upturned eyebrows' heart raced with ecstatic joy. His face was full of gratitude as he looked at Bai Shuxuan. Bai Shuxuan was the chief disciple of their Falling Cloud Sect, and her status was equal to Jiang Baoyun's in the Seven Profound Valleys. She was also the absolute famed talent of her generation, and the fame of her strength was no less than Lin Ping's.

Bai Shuxuan of Falling Cloud Sect and Lin Ping of Peacock Mountain were known as the Dragon and Phoenix Pair of the 19 third-grade sects. Lin Ping was a year older, and he had already stepped into the Houtian realm. As for Bai Shuxuan, she remained in the Pulse Condensation period, but she could break through at any time, she was only waiting for her true essence to flood over and make a natural breakthrough.

From the First Stage of Body Transformation to reaching the Houtian realm, one could only be considered a peerless talent and have such confidence if they make breakthroughs completely depending on natural flooding of true essence. Otherwise, if one's talent was insufficient then they would die before their true essence ever naturally overflowed.

Jiang Baoyun had never challenged Bai Shuxuan; he had long ago planned to challenge this genius at some point. Now, this match just happened to align with his wishes.

“Senior-apprentice Sister Bai, I have heard great things about you. Please advise!” Jiang Baoyun held his sword in a bowing ceremony, he held a great deal of admiration for Bai Shuxuan.

“Please!”

This battle of masters immediately attracted everyone’s attention, even Falling Cloud Sect’s elder sat up straight in his seat. Bai Shuxuan was their chief disciple. If she lost to Jiang Baoyun, then their Falling Cloud would truly be embarrassed. For better or for worse, Falling Cloud Sect was still a top third-grade sect that had a 1500 year history. Whether it was legacies or heritage, they far surpassed the 600 year old Seven Profound Valleys.

As the match began, Jiang Baoyun took out both his blue and black swords at the start, and then summoned his Sword Spirit Avatar. Facing Bai Shuxuan, he dared not take any chances.

Sword light flashed, and the two began to test each other with a few moves. But in an instant, their speed rose to the extreme!

Bai Shuxuan’s speed was actually no slower than Jiang Baoyun’s! It had to be known that Jiang Baoyun had comprehended his own Sword Step. As for Bai Shuxuan, she didn’t know a Sword Step, but it seems as if her body had fused into her sword shadow, using this strange movement technique to move around the stage. With this, she was no slower than Jiang Baoyun!

“So fierce!”

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed. If Lin Ming could be said to have a weakness, then that would be facing someone with a speed more extreme than his own. When this happened, his reaction speed would become his weakness. Against near-instant melee attacks that were as fast as sound, he wasn't able to respond. He could only integrate the coiling dragon steel needle into his body and release it at a critical moment to repel his opponent.

This approach may have seemed like Lin Ming's trick, but it wasn't his true ability.

"My weakness is speed… I didn't think that even though I comprehended the Concept of Wind, my speed still wouldn't be enough. Although Golden Roc Shattering the Void is an incomparably powerful movement martial skill, that was due to it being created and utilized by a Supreme Elder. The Concept of the Golden-winged Roc is incomparably vast and profound. In my current state, all I've comprehended is just a drop in the ocean. Not just that, but Golden Roc Shattering the Void actually contains two different concepts: the Concept of Wind and the Concept of Space. I understand the barest basic knowledge of the Concept of Wind, but I still cannot display the full power of Golden Roc Shattering the Void. I have to make up for this deficit in speed as soon as possible."

On the martial stage, there were already countless after-shadows, and the dense sword light was like a woven network of dazzling sparkles. In such a battle, even among the geniuses present, there were still some weaker ones who weren't able to fully follow the footsteps of these two individuals.

"Sword Shattering Clear Sky!"

Jiang Baoyun's aura erupted, his sword potential violently surged!

He finally used his strongest skill, this was the Sword Faction's ultimate secret technique that was driven by his own Sword Spirit!

When Jiang Baoyun and Lin Ming had fought, Jiang Baoyun had used this move as his final strike. When he collided with Lin Ming, they had been evenly matched in power. This showed just how strong this ability was.

Moreover, Lin Ming also knew that Jiang Baoyun's sword contained a soul attack, using the Sword Spirit as the weapon in the soul attack. When this soul attack had rushed into Lin

Ming’s spiritual sea, it had an extremely lethal murderous intent to it. How would Bai Shuxuan block this?

Bai Shuxuan also became aware of just how strong Jiang Baoyun’s sword strike was. Her body flashed with a white light, and rings upon rings of water ripples condensed around her body.

“Water Veil Lotus!”

In that moment, Bai Shuxuan was surrounded by pure water origin energy.

“Mm? Concept of Water?”

Bai Shuxuan’s degree of comprehension of the Concept of Water was obviously much more deep and profound than Jiang Lanjian’s Concept of Wind!

These talents truly did have their own skill.

Pop!

The Water Veil Lotus broke apart, mist drifting everywhere in the sky. But Jiang Baoyun’s strongest strike had also been blocked; the protection of the water veil was actually able to defend against the soul attack. This caused Lin Ming to be extremely startled.

The two drew back several steps, both of their faces pale. Obviously, they had suffered some minor wounds, and these might have even been soul wounds.

A soul wound was no trifling matter. Even a small amount of soul damage would take a long period of time to mend, and one had to be very careful. Once the soul left the protection of the spiritual sea, it was as vulnerable as a little baby in a snowstorm.

“Enough! This match is considered a draw!”

Mu Qianyu suddenly spoke up from her seat of honor. As she spoke, a strange and harmonious true essence fluctuation followed her voice. To those who heard it, it was inspiring like a pleasant spring breeze.

On the martial stage, Jiang Baoyun and Bai Shuxuan were surrounded by these true essence fluctuations. They only felt a very nice and warm sensation, just like huddling around a warm stove in the middle of winter. Their shivering souls were suddenly brimming with vitality.

This caused the two of them to be very startled. They knew that Mu Qianyu was a fire-attribute martial artist, but they had only ever thought that fire origin energy could be used in an offensive manner. But Mu Qianyu had actually used the fire origin energy to heal their wounds. Obviously, her understanding of Fire Laws had reached an unfathomably profound degree!

“This is good.” The Falling Cloud Sect elder’s forehead was dripping with sweat. By watching the battle, he could see that Jiang Baoyun was no weaker than Bai Shuxuan. However, this was not what had horrified him. As the fight continued, he was able to discover to his amazement that Jiang Baoyun’s sword actually contained a soul attack. Not only that, but looking at his appearance, it didn’t seem as if he had good control over it. If Bai Shuxuan’s soul had been injured, she would have been finished.

A soul wound was one of the most difficult kinds of wounds to treat and heal. To those who cultivated the sword, their perception was their most important aspect. Once the spiritual sea was damaged, a swordsman would basically become useless. Bai Shuxuan was the treasure of their Falling Cloud Sect. If she was ruined by an incurable soul wound just because of a little martial arts match, then he would really grieve to the point of having no tears.

Shi Zongtian also let out a long breath of relief. The strengths of these two individuals was about the same. But, Jiang Baoyun was younger than Bai Shuxuan by several months. So Jiang Baoyun’s talent could be considered to be even better!

After this, there was no one else who dared to object to the list of names that were crafted by Divine Phoenix Island. The Seven Profound Valleys was just too abnormal. First, there was some unknown mummy fellow named Mugu Buyu who had rolled over Zhang Shaoshan, and there was even a Jiang Baoyun who was on par with Falling Cloud Sect's greatest talent!

Lin Ming was even stronger than these two, and he was only 16 years of age. With such talent, nobody dared to question why he was the only designated heaven-step talent.

As for those 30 earth-step talents, they accepted that they would rush through the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda to decided which ones of them would enter the earth-step, and which ones of them would fall to the human-step talent rankings.

Of course, none of this mattered to Lin Ming.

"If there are no more objections, then this meeting shall come to an end. Everyone may return!" Mu Qianyu stood up as she said this, and then beckoned towards Lin Ming, saying, "Lin Ming, you stay behind."

"Yes, Saintess Your Highness."

In such a large crowd of people, Lin Ming maintained his respectful manners. Why had Mu Qianyu told him to stay behind?

Seeing that Lin Ming would stay behind alone with Mu Qianyu, this matter immediately attracted the attention of all the other geniuses. They didn't need to be geniuses to know that this was some good thing, and also a form of special treatment. But still, besides envying, what else could they do?

Their ability was less than others, there was nothing they could do!

At this time, Zhang Shaoshan had just woken up after having eaten some pills. Seeing that Lin Ming would stay behind with Mu Qianyu, he almost fainted with anger again on scene.

Chapter 299 – Heaven Opening Pill In Hand

Chapter 299 – Heaven Opening Pill In Hand

…

…

…

The reason why Zhang Shaoshan was so madly envious of Lin Ming wasn’t just the additional resources that were available to him, but because of the attitude that Mu Qianyu had towards Lin Ming. Even Zhang Shaoshan clearly knew that whether now or in the future, Mu Qianyu would have absolutely no relation to him. This caused his antipathy to rise to the skies!

Those who went against their true nature would damage their heart of martial arts. Every person’s true nature was decided by their conscience. For instance, those righteous individuals like Jiang Baoyun and Qin Wuxin followed the noble and virtuous path. If they did something evil, such as plotting against others, treachery, betrayal, or other malicious actions, this would go against their nature, inevitably ruining their heart of martial arts.

But as for those like the Acacia Faction and the South Sea Demon Region, these kinds of martial artists followed the immoral, wicked path. They placed emphasis on indulging in their most basic desires and fulfilling all of their dark ideas. If they were to behave and be goodly like some holy monk, then that also would go against their nature.

Zhang Shaoshan was an individual who had a very heavy and proud heart, and was also narrow-minded with a low tolerance level. He loved to step on others, but if someday he were to be disgraced and stepped on by someone else, this would frustrate his spirit and thoughts, blocking his cultivation.

As of now, Zhang Shaoshan was in this situation. In front of everyone, he had been repeatedly stepped on. Although the person who had done this was Mugu Buyu, Zhang Shaoshan had also counted Lin Ming as one of his heart's thorns. He had even linked in Jiang Baoyun, bearing a deep grudge against all three of them.

'Just you wait, I will have you pay the price for shaming me!'

Zhang Shaoshan clenched his teeth, and was finally carried away.

………….

"Lin Ming, this is for you." Mu Qianyu turned her hands, and a sparkling, translucent pill bottle and a ring appeared in her hands. The pill bottle was made from exquisite jade, and was beautiful just like the whitest crystal. As for the ring, it was very plain, looking no different to a copper or steel ring.

But Lin Ming was able to recognize that this ring was actually a high-grade human-step spatial ring.

It wasn't an easy task to forge a spatial ring. Because of this, a spatial ring was often much more expensive than a treasure of the same grade. This spatial ring might not be as valuable as a weak earth-step treasure, but it wasn't too different.

Mu Qianyu smiled and said, "The true essence stones inside the ring are yours. There are 240 of them, I'm giving you these resources ahead of time so you can cultivate."

Hearing the number 240, Lin Ming was overjoyed. These true essence stones that Mu Qianyu had passed to him were naturally medium-grade true essence stones. A single medium-grade true essence stone was worth 100 normal true essence stones, meaning that these 240 medium-grade true essence stones were worth 24,000 ordinary pure true essence stones! Also, it wasn't easy to trade for medium-grade true essence stones; the true value of them was probably much higher than he thought.

To use medium-grade true essence stones to cultivate was a luxury that not even the core disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys could enjoy.

"I'll use these 240 medium-grade true essence stones to cultivate. As for those other true essence stones that I won through the gambling house, I'll use those as currency to buy items."

Lin Ming planned to use the true essence stones with this intention. But,the true essence stones seemed to have become a bit heavier. If he only used medium-grade true essence stones to cultivate, 240 wouldn't be enough. As for the ordinary true essence stones, those would quickly be spent if he wished to purchase some top quality materials.

"Thank you, Saintess Your Highness."

Because Shi Zongtian was also present, Lin Ming didn't show any surprise or knowledge of what he knew was in Mu Qianyu's hands, and respectfully received the pill bottle and spatial ring.

"This spatial ring is also for you. I see that your spatial ring is some low-grade treasure, it's best to change it." Mu Qianyu casually said. Lin Ming hesitated for a moment but didn't decline. After all, this was part of the ceremony.

Previously, he had taken three medium-grade human-step spatial rings from the bodies of Huo Gong, Ouyang Dihua, and the Allied Trade Association's President Zhang Fengxian. But he never showed these rings to the light of day or wore them on his hand.

With this high-grade human-step spatial ring, he would be able to destroy those three spatial rings he got from killing others.

A high-grade human-step spatial ring had an inner dimensional capacity that was larger than all of Lin Ming's total rings combined. Not only that, but it was much more stable and could last for thousands of years without collapsing.

After Mu Qianyu handed over the Heaven Opening Pill, Shi Zongtian also took out a vivid red pill box. After opening it, there was a crystal clear emerald pill inside, the size of a longan. It shined with an incomparably pure origin energy – this was also a Heaven Opening Pill.

This was the reward for being the champion of this year's Total Faction Martial Meeting. Shi Zongtian had already promised to deliver the prize to Lin Ming ahead of time; this was the most convenient time to settle this matter.

Lin Ming took a deep breath. Out of nowhere, he had suddenly obtained two Heaven Opening Pills. This was simply an unthinkable dream to most martial artists. For instance, Qin Ziya had paid such a great price and so much time for a Heaven Opening Pill. With this alone, one could imagine how precious they were.

Lin Ming's heart stirred and he asked, "Valley Master Shi, if I take a Heaven Opening Pill whilst at the Pulse Condensation period, will there be any side effects?"

Shi Zongtian's mouth twitched. Was this boy actually thinking of eating a Heaven Opening Pill during the Pulse Condensation period? This was just a waste of such a precious treasure!

As far as most martial artists were concerned, taking a Heaven Opening Pill was their life's grandest and most solemn event. There were even those who prepared for decades for this! They would cultivate until their cultivation couldn't rise even a tiny bit more, and they would wait until their Zither Heart or Sword Heart or whatever else had reached its own bottleneck. Finally, they would go into seclusion and swallow the Heaven Opening Pill. Earlier, if Qin Ziya hadn't been worried about failing to break through to the Xiantian realm due to his 50 years of age and low chance of ever receiving another Heaven Opening Pill, causing a problem with his Zither Heart, then he would most likely have broken through.

Most martial artists would hold a series of rituals before they took the Heaven Opening Pill. They would choose an auspicious date and bathe in incense. Afterwards, they might even stay in seclusion for over a year to refine all of the medicine and not let a single bit go to waste.

But Lin Ming, he was actually thinking of taking a Heaven Opening Pill with his Pulse Condensation period cultivation, treating these treasures like candy.

If those peak Houtian realm masters who could never step into the Xiantian realm because they lacked a Heaven Opening Pill heard this, they would probably go mad with rage and spit out several liters of blood.

Shi Zongtian coughed and said, “Lin Ming, although there aren’t any side effects from taking the Heaven Opening Pill during the Pulse Condensation period, you won’t be able to avoid wasting much of the efficacy due to your cultivation. You should consider reaching the Houtian realm before taking it, its effects will be better then.”

“I understand.” Lin Ming only heard Shi Zongtian say that there wouldn’t be side effects. As for wasting efficacy of the medicine, that simply wasn’t even in his consideration. What he wanted to attack first wasn’t the Houtian realm or even the Xiantian realm, but the Tempering Marrow boundary!

If he could open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, he would be far superior to anyone else in the Xiantian realm or Revolving Core realm!

‘Of these two Heaven Opening Pills, it should be fine for me to take one now. Then I can see if the Heaven Opening Pill is enough to satisfy the lowest requirements of the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ to help reach the Pulse Condensation Tempering Marrow boundary!

‘If eating one doesn’t work so well, then I will spend a massive amount of energy to draw up a medicinal inscription symbol so that I can inscribe onto the Heaven Opening Pill! If I add a medicinal inscription symbol to the Heaven Opening Pill and take it again, it should be good!’

As Lin Ming's cultivation and power increased by bounds and leaps, his own inscription technique had fallen behind too much.

Practicing inscription technique required a great deal of time and energy. When Lin Ming had been poor and had no resources, he had no choice but to invest a massive amount of time in practicing inscription techniques, and use those inscription symbols he drew up to trade for cultivation resources. But as his status grew higher and higher, he no longer had to waste his time to trade for resources, but was able to invest all of his time into cultivating.

The most recent time that Lin Ming had used inscription techniques was when he was exchanging the symbols he drew for materials for his body inscription symbol. At that time, Lin Ming had drawn up inscription symbols for Sky Fortune Kingdom's Pulse Condensation and Houtian masters for their medium-grade human-step weapons.

Since he was only able to draw up inscription symbols for medium-grade human-step treasures, Lin Ming could only be considered a medium-grade human-step inscription master.

But the Heaven Opening Pill rank was about equal to an earth-step pill; it was a sudden rise of two grades in difficulty. If Lin Ming wanted to draw up a medicinal inscription symbol that could pair up with the Heaven Opening Pill, he would need to at least achieve a low-grade earth-step ability in inscription technique. This would again take a massive amount of time and energy.

But, if this method could really help him enter into the Tempering Marrow boundary, then it was all worth it.

At this time, Shi Zongtian asked, "Lin Ming, have you chosen what earth-step treasure you would like?"

Lin Ming shook his head, "Not yet."

"Mm? Liu Xuan hasn't brought you to the Treasure Pavilion?"

“He did, it’s just that the spears within the Treasure Pavilion do not suit me.” Lin Ming tactfully said, carefully considering the words and expressions to use so as not to be rude.

“Ha!” Shi Zongtian laughed. If nothing was suitable, that just meant Lin Ming didn’t take a fancy to any of his Seven Profound Valleys’ earth-step treasure spears.

Shi Zongtian glanced at Liu Xuan who was responsible for the Treasure Pavilion. After Liu Xuan had brought Lin Ming here, he had gone to stand at a corner in the square. Shi Zongtian smiled and used a true essence sound transmission to beckon him over.

“Liu Xuan, what’s wrong, your Refiner Faction’s Treasure Pavilion doesn’t even have a single decent spear?”

Liu Xuan forced a smiled. He was still a Xiantian master and had a very acute sense of hearing. Shi Zongtian hadn’t bothered to conceal the conversation he had with Lin Ming, Liu Xuan had heard every bit of it. It was just that the Seven Profound Valleys didn’t have any masters who forged spears, so where would a high quality earth-step treasure spear come from?

Liu Xuan honestly said, “Apprentice Nephew Lin wishes for a flexible spear. However, our Treasure Pavilion only has three earth-step spears, all of which are hard spears. Not only that, but they are of quite ordinary quality. However, Apprentice Nephew Lin has said that he can provide spear crafting materials if we can forge it for him.”

As Liu Xuan said this, he cast a somewhat doubtful look towards Lin Ming. In Liu Xuan’s opinion, with Lin Ming’s common mortal background and young age, it was unlikely for him to understand how difficult it was to refine treasures, especially earth-step treasures. He probably had some low-quality common materials that he thought could be used to refine an earth-step treasure.

However, this wasn’t related to him. Since Shi Zongtian had asked, he had truthfully spoken.

The fact was, Liu Xuan was a tiny bit annoyed by Lin Ming. After all, the Treasure Pavilion could be said to be equivalent to his Refining Faction. There were many disciples who vainly dreamed and hoped to one day enter and choose a treasure. But Lin Ming hadn't taken a liking to any of the treasures inside. It had to be known that there were many martial artists, that from the very first time they cultivated martial artists to the point when they reached the Xiantian realm, would never have had a chance to touch an earth-step treasure!

"Oh?" Shi Zongtian's eyes picked up. Lin Ming actually had materials to make a flexible spear? But the materials that were qualified to craft an earth-step flexible spear were rare and exceedingly difficult to find. "What sort of materials do you have?"

"It's only the spear shaft material. As for the spearhead material, I do not have any."

"The spear shaft is enough. When making a flexible spear, the spear shaft is the most important part. Also, the materials to craft an earth-step flexible spear's shaft are very rare. Lin Ming, do you really have any something?" Shi Zongtian actually did believe Lin Ming to an extent. After all, he was certain that Lin Ming had experienced some great fortuitous opportunity.

"It's a piece of bamboo..." Lin Ming said, and then pulled the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo from his spatial ring. The nine foot nine inch Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo was a deep vivid color, and it sparkled with electric flashes.

Liu Xuan was directly befuddled, just what was this?

Chapter 300 – Spear Refining Grandmaster

Chapter 300 – Spear Refining Grandmaster

…

…

…

The truth was that even though Liu Xuan only had a very shallow experience of these materials, Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo was simply an exceedingly rare treasure. It could only been formed at special locations which had experienced powerful thunder for 10,000 years. The commoners who lived around Thundercrash Mountain in the Southern Wilderness had a much broader knowledge of the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, as they were more closely intertwined with that environment.

In addition, Liu Xuan was a refining master whose specialty was forging swords and sabers. He understood almost every kind of top quality metal, but as for bamboo and other types of wood like materials, he almost never used them.

However, even though Liu Xuan didn't know much about the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, that didn't stop him from being able to see the terrifying power of thunder that was emitting from this piece of bamboo.

As the bamboo appeared, an incomparably rich power of thunder flooded outwards. The flashes of electricity were even enough to force Liu Xuan to subconsciously step backwards, and make all of the hairs on his body stand. This bamboo was still able to cause this effect, even though Liu Xuan was protected by his powerful true essence; obviously the thunder created a very formidable electricity field.

And what startled Liu Xuan was that he was able to see that the power of thunder origin energy of the world was flowing into this stick of bamboo, forming an invisible whirlpool of origin energy.

‘It can independently absorb thunder origin energy?’

This was simply incredible. If a thunder-attribute martial artist had this stick of bamboo, then he could continuously absorb thunder origin energy from the world during a battle in order to supplement his own reserves. Not only would his moves be more powerful, but he would have greater endurance in combat.

Realizing this, Liu Xuan gulped, his throat twitching. This bamboo was absolutely a treasure material that all thunder-attribute martial artists longed for in their dreams!

Among the three present, the one who best understood Thundercrash Mountain was Mu Qianyu. With just a glance, she was able to recognize this piece of Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, and was also able to discern just where Lin Ming got it from.

‘I didn’t think that the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo that has been bred in Thundercrash Mountain for 10,000 years was actually obtained by him. It seems that his little sojourn into the Flood Dragon Cave really had a rich harvest.’ Thinking this, Mu Qianyu grinned as she shook her head. The wealth that the Thunder Flood Dragon had accumulated was actually all plucked away by Lin Ming.

Shi Zongtian’s experience couldn’t compare to Mu Qianyu’s. After he saw this Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, he pondered for a moment before suddenly remembering that long ago, he had read about this sort of spiritual bamboo in the ancient texts.

“This is Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo?” Shi Zongtian asked.

Lin Ming nodded.

“Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo grows one inch every 100 years. This piece is nearly 10 feet tall. Is it 10,000 year old Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo?”

“Nine feet nine inches, it is 9900 year old Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo. It also birthed a 900 year old young bamboo shoot that is in my possession.” Lin Ming said, not bothering to conceal anything.

Nine feet nine inches was the same length as the Heavy Profound Soft Spear. However, the Heavy Profound Soft Spear’s length also included the spear head.

If one were to forge a spear with the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, it would also have another foot long spearhead. Its final length would be more than 10 feet long. In truth, this was a bit too long.

After hearing Lin Ming’s affirmation, Shi Zongtian sucked in a deep breath of air. This young boy had actually managed to obtain this sort of rare material. Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo could only be found in lands of thunder. As for lands of thunder, the only place nearby would be Thundercrash Mountain!

It was said that a Thunder Flood Dragon lived at the summit of Thundercrash Mountain, with a profoundly deep cultivation. Not only that, but it had the bloodline of a Saint Beast. Its strength was unfathomable. Coupled with the help of the countless Thunder Lizards that lived on Thundercrash Mountain, even the highest elder of the Seven Profound Valleys wouldn’t be able to return unscathed. And Lin Ming was actually able to obtain this Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo from Thundercrash Mountain?

Shi Zongtian found this impossible to imagine. He subconsciously glanced at Mu Qianyu. Did Mu Qianyu help Lin Ming? If so, then Mu Qianyu was simply too good to Lin Ming. Shi Zongtian thought for a moment, and then began to reevaluate the relationship between Mu Qianyu and Lin Ming. Maybe their relationship wasn’t as simple as he had imagined…

Even that Thunder Soul might have only been absorbed with help from Mu Qianyu. Otherwise, how could a young boy who didn’t even have a Pulse Condensation cultivation possibly absorb a low-grade earth-step Thunder Soul?

As Shi Zongtian thought more and more, he realized that the Seven Profound Valleys wouldn't be able to retain a talent like Lin Ming. He was simply a dragon with a deep pool, and the waters of the Seven Profound Valleys were too shallow – a True Dragon could not swim in their waters.

Also, Lin Ming didn't have an average connection to Mu Qianyu. Him joining Divine Phoenix Island was only a matter of time…

Thinking this, Shi Zongtian let out a long breath. Before, he had struggled with his thoughts and decisions. Lin Ming had never been his, and couldn't be considered as a Seven Profound Valleys disciple from the start.

In that case, drawing back and looking at things, befriending such a master was also good.

"I would like to use this Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo to forge a spear!"

Lin Ming solemnly said as he held out the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo.

Liu Xuan's eyes jumped as he heard this. Make a spear shaft with this bamboo? This… this was just too shocking an idea. If one could create an earth-step treasure spear, with the added quality from the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo of being able to absorb and strengthen the power of thunder, then that spear would be a highest quality weapon for any thunder-attribute martial artist!

'Yes! Wasn't Lin Ming a thunder-attribute martial artist?' Liu Xuan slapped his forehead, cursing himself for being so stupid. He had actually forgotten that Lin Ming was a thunder-attribute martial artist with an absurdly high thunder origin energy fusion compatibility!

As Liu Xuan thought this, his mind began to shiver. This was incredible! Lin Ming was already disgustingly strong to such a degree, but if he also had a top quality thunder spear, he would be even more powerful. With his power unleashed, who among the younger generation could hope to stop him?

No wonder Lin Ming didn't even spare a glance at the treasures of the Refiner Faction. In comparison to a top quality thunder spear that was made from Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, those weapons within the Treasure Pavilion were nothing more than scrap iron!

Shi Zongtian's eyes also jumped. Lin Ming's strength was just becoming increasingly terrifying. Perhaps in one year, even Peacock Mountain's Lin Ping might not be his match… it might even be less than a year!

He turned and looked at Liu Xuan, saying, "Liu Xuan, who within the Refiner Faction is best at forging spears?"

As Liu Xuan heard this question, he suddenly flushed red, looking helpless. Although there really were a few elders within the Refiner Faction who could forge spears, the best they could make were high-grade human-step treasure spears. To let them use the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo would simply be a waste.

Liu Xuan still remembered that he had just suspected Lin Ming of not understanding how difficult refining was, and not having any materials to craft an earth-step treasure. But now, Lin Ming had actually put out a more than adequate material, but there wasn't anyone who could use it. Liu Xuan could only ruefully smile.

Liu Xuan helplessly shook his head, looking somewhat embarrassed. He said, "Our Refiner Faction simply cannot forge an earth-step treasure spear… the most we can craft is an earth-step treasure spearhead. For instance, a Cold Star Iron spearhead…

Cold Star Iron was a top quality metal material used to make earth-step treasures. The use of Cold Star Iron to create treasures was a very arduous and complicated process, and was also one of the legacy techniques of the Seven Profound Valleys' Refiner Faction. It was a strictly confidential technique that was absolutely forbidden for outsiders. However, it was also the process they were most proud and confident in, thus Liu Xuan had suggested this.

But, Liu Xuan didn't think that Mu Qianyu would shake her head and say, "Cold Star Iron can only create up to a low-grade earth-step treasure, and 10,000 year old Violet Electricity

Spirit Bamboo is far beyond that. A spearhead made from Cold Star Iron does not match well with Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo. Not only that, but if the spearhead is created separately from the spear shaft, then the spear will be unable to merge into one natural whole, and the quality of the end product would suffer greatly."

Mu Qianyu calmly spoke a statement of facts. As Liu Xuan heard this, he immediately reddened. He had actually suggested one of his Refiner Faction's most precious legacy secret techniques, but yet in just a few demeaning words from Mu Qianyu, it had become worthless within her eyes…

He opened his mouth to speak, but couldn't find the words to refute her. In the end, he didn't say anything, there was simply nothing he could use as a rebuttal. This was the gap in their sects' heritages. A dignified top fourth-grade sect would of course look down on their so-called secret technique.

Mu Qianyu said, "Lin Ming, I actually know a spear refining master whose cultivation is at the middle Revolving Core realm. If he can be found, then the full power of the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo can be displayed. Of course, this is only if you can afford the other materials that can match the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo in order to craft the spearhead."

A middle Revolving Core realm spear refining master?

As Lin Ming heard Mu Qianyu, his heart rate suddenly increased. The Sovereign of the Seven Profound Valleys' Refiner Faction only had cultivation at the late Xiantian realm. Just from cultivation only, one could imagine how much stronger a spear made by this spear refining master would be.

However, thinking that Mu Qianyu also said that he needed to provide materials that matched the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, Lin Ming was somewhat depressed. The value of these materials could be imagined. Even if he put forth all of his possessions, he would not be able to afford it.

Unless, he reached out his beggar hand towards Mu Qianyu.

If Mu Qianyu was willing to pay the price, then she could of course obtain these materials. But, there was no reason that Mu Qianyu would help him for no return.

Even if he was a genius, he still hadn't fully matured. There was no reason for Mu Qianyu to repeatedly give out such precious resources to him.

No one could say what would happen in the future. Also, he wasn't even a Divine Phoenix Island disciple.

Mu Qianyu saw Lin Ming's somewhat despondent expression and was able to imagine what he was thinking about. She faintly smiled and asked, "Lin Ming, don't you want to see this spear refining master?"

"I would like to, but..."

"Then come with me." As Mu Qianyu said this, she clapped her hands, and a strange fluctuation of fire true essence spread from her palms. Soon, a faint phoenix cry resounded, and a giant bird with a 70 foot long wingspan flew down towards the Grand Hall, landing in front of the square.

The bird had the head of a golden pheasant, a long neck like a snake, and feathers that burned like brilliant flames of the sun. This was Mu Qianyu's life's Vermillion Bird, Little Flame.

Little Flame landed on the ground, and an incomparably scorching wave of heat burned the atmosphere. Lin Ming – and even the early Xiantian realm Liu Xuan – couldn't help but take several steps back.

Lin Ming stimulated the Heretical God Seed within his body, finally able to stand firm against the burning heat waves that emanated from Little Flame. This fellow had evolved?

Lin Ming remembered that when he first saw Little Flame, Little Flame only had a wingspan of 50 feet. Now, it already had a wingspan of 70 feet, and the fire true essence that percolated around its body seemed much more formidable.

At this point, Little Flame proudly stretched back its wings, preening as it raised its phoenix beak in a self-satisfied gesture, demonstrating its noble and elegant bearing. Obviously, it was quite happy seeing the shock in Lin Ming's eyes.

Little Flame was naturally able to recognize Lin Ming. Or, it was more accurate to say that Little Flame was able to recognize the barbecue boy.

"Let's go." Mu Qianyu lightly tapped her toes, jumping into the air and falling gently onto Little Flame's back like a feather. She motioned for Lin Ming to follow her.

Lin Ming paused, he could sit on Little Flame's back? Would Little Flame let him?

Shi Zongtian and Liu Xuan were also incomparably startled. How arrogant and proud was a Saint Beast? Not everyone was qualified to sit on its back.

Sure enough, Little Flame let out a few discontented chirps. But, it was only a few chirps, it still allowed Lin Ming to climb up.

This was mainly because it was Mu Qianyu's order. But Lin Ming's status as the barbecue boy also played a major role.

Lin Ming tapped his feet, soaring into the air and steadily falling onto Little Flame's back. Liu Xuan couldn't help but swallow a mouthful of saliva as he saw this. As a disciple of the Refining Faction, he was also a fire-attribute martial artist. Seeing Lin Ming being able to ride such a majestic fire-attribute Saint Beast, he could only feel extreme envy in his heart.

Chapter 301 – Triumphant Return to the Nation

Chapter 301 – Triumphant Return to the Nation

…

…

…

As Lin Ming rode atop Little Flame's back, he could feel a heat wave flowing into himself, supplementing the Fire origin energy within his body. This caused Lin Ming to be secretly surprised. Indeed, Little Flame was worthy of being called a Saint Beast, it could actually absorb the power of fire origin energy from the world and then continuously boost whoever it wished to.

If Mu Qianyu ever engaged in battled, even if Little Flame didn't attack, it would still be a great assistance to Mu Qianyu.

If Little Flame grew up and reached the Revolving Core boundary, then combined with Mu Qianyu, it would be even more incredible.

The Vermillion Bird soared into the sky, a scorching wind blowing past them. Liu Xuan narrowed his eyes as he watched Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu vanish into the sky. Liu Xuan couldn't help but whisper in his heart, just what sort of relationship did Mu Qianyu and Lin Ming have?

If it was only an ordinary relationship, then Mu Qianyu would never allow Lin Ming to ride her life's Vermillion Bird with her…

As Liu Xuan thought this, he had the good grace to not speak his mind. He only secretly regretted not taking advantage of talking to Lin Ming to befriend him.

Mu Qianyu deliberately didn’t reveal her relationship with Lin Ming in front of an audience. In turn, she also didn’t need to hide it.

As they flew on the back of Little Flame, Mu Qianyu said, “That senior lives in seclusion in a distant mountain. Even if we take transmission arrays to reach him, we still have to travel several hundred thousand miles. If we rode Heavenly Wind Eagles, the trip might take two months, but with Little Flame, it will only take a week.

Lin Ming nodded, and then said, “I do not have the materials to forge a spearhead.”

“Mm, I know. But the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island have the right to exchange top quality pills, treasures, or materials with the sect in exchange for some sect contribution points…”

Lin Ming forced a smiled and said, “I don’t have any sect contribution points…”

If Lin Ming could be said to have any contribution towards Divine Phoenix Island, that would be that he helped rescue Mu Qianyu a few months ago. Of course, the truth was that he hadn’t saved her, this was just Lin Ming’s thoughts. Mu Qianyu hadn’t been in a life threatening situation, and had only suffered a tremendous pain. At that time, Mu Qianyu had also helped Lin Ming absorb the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder as exchange. Their debts could be considered paid.

“Yes, you don’t have any, but…” As Mu Qianyu spoke, she turned a crafty and teasing smile towards Lin Ming and blinked her large eyes, “I might allow you to purchase some items on credit, and then you can pay it back later.”

This was the so-called smile that was worth a hundred lives. Seeing this playful rare demeanor of a most beautiful maiden openly displayed in front of him, Lin Ming was frozen in shock for some time.

Exchange items for sect contribution points on credit… although Lin Ming didn’t understand the internal system of Divine Phoenix Island, he was well aware of just how valuable a material the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo was, something that the Thunder

Flood Dragon held in high regard. A material that would be equal in value to Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo would be something amazing that would inevitably be able to stir the heart of an extreme Xiantian master.

The amount of sect contribution points that would be needed to exchange for this degree of treasure material could be imagined. He would need to be at least a Xiantian master to obtain these points.

He was only a disciple at the early Pulse Condensation period, where would he ever find the strength to repay this debt?

In his final estimate, Mu Qianyu was helping him from the kindness of her heart. This benevolence was truly sincere.

Lin Ming secretly recorded this kindness in his heart. One day, in the future, he would surely be able to return this favor.

……………………………………………

Several hundred thousand miles away, Sky Fortune Kingdom –

After the Total Faction Martial Meeting concluded, Qin Ziya, Ling Sen, Sun Youdao, Qin Xingxuan, as well as Zhou Yu and Liang Long from the four martial families, rode a group of Heavenly Wind Eagles to return to Sky Fortune Kingdom.

Qin Xingxuan had already been chosen as an inner court disciple. As soon as she turned 16 years old, she could enter the Seven Profound Valleys and become a Sword Faction disciple.

As for Ling Sen, although he had comprehended a Slaughter Domain and his result was in the top 100, he was still limited by the gap in his age and cultivation. He was only chosen as an outer court disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys.

If one looked down with a bird’s eye view at Sky Fortune City’s Seven Profound Martial House, one could see that the entire Seven Profound Marital House was packed to the brim with festive decorations, it was just like a new year's celebration. A bustling and happy crowd had gathered in the square, waiting to greet Qin Ziya and his group.

All the disciples off the Seven Profound Martial House had gathered here, including the important nobles of Sky Fortune City and other martial arts masters.

Everyone in Sky Fortune City who was at least at the Pulse Condensation period had come today. Even Marshal Qin Xiao had personally arrived, and three of the ten Great Generals of Sky Fortune Kingdom had arrived. As for the others, they were preoccupied with military affairs so they could not attend.

Crown Prince Yang Lin naturally wasn't absent. He wore a thick purple gold cloak, and a gold crown was resting atop his head. He had a very fierce appearance as he sat on a tiger fur chair, his eyes closed in thought.

The truth was, although Yang Lin appeared tranquil, he was far from calm. During this half month, he had practically lived at the Seven Profound Martial House, not even stepping out once.

He had been waiting for news. Waiting, waiting, waiting until he had difficulty sleeping during the night or the day.

During this time period, the Seven Profound Martial House had only used the long-distance sound transmission array once. Afterwards, it did not shine again. This was because the activation cost of the array formation was too great. It wasn't just about the cost of true essence stones, but more so the longevity of the array formation. No one within the Seven Profound Martial House was qualified or had the ability to construct a long-distance sound transmission array that could span several hundred thousand miles. Once the sound transmission array was worn out, they would have to invite a master from the Seven Profound Valleys' Array Faction, and pay a great price and favor in order to repair it. This was simply a very troublesome task.

Therefore, even though the Total Faction Martial Meeting had finished and the results were complete, there was no necessity to send news through the transmission array. They only needed to wait for Qin Ziya to return and personally announce the news.

Snow floated in the sky, fluttering down. The winter was particularly cold, and the snow didn't melt, layer upon layer of white snow blankets stacking upon each other.

The clouds were thick, even the sunlight didn't peek through. The cold wind was chilling to the bone. Everyone had been waiting in the snow for almost an hour, but there was not a single one who dared to show an ounce of impatience. To martial artists, especially those in the army like the generals, the disparity of strength was what decided disparity in status. Qin Ziya's strength was enough for them all to respectfully wait here, without uttering a single complaint.

As for the nobles, they had to stay for Crown Prince Yang Lin. Everyone knew just what the results for this year's Total Faction Martial Meeting meant for Yang Lin. The Crown Prince's chances of ascending the throne smoothly increased with every day, and these suckling sycophants had to take this golden opportunity to sidle up to him whenever they had the chance.

The maids brought in a large brazier, and as Yang Lin looked at the glowing charcoal within, his eyes glazed over as he lost himself in thought. "What position does Lin Ming have?" If he can reach the top 50, that should be enough for him to be a Seven Profound Valleys inner court disciple. If he becomes an inner court disciple, then his status would be no less than a Seven Profound Envoy or the Seven Profound Martial House's Martial House Master!"

As the Crown Prince of Sky Fortune Kingdom, Yang Ling's fate was closely intertwined with the Total Faction Martial Meeting. He had an approximate understand of what was happening at the Total Faction Martial Meeting. For all these years, the top 20 of the Total Faction Martial Meeting had basically been dominated by the core disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys. Occasionally, there would be some individuals who passed through, especially those from the 16 martial families.

As for the 36 countries, it was a fabulous and honorable result if one could reach the top 50. Not only that, but this sort of character would usually appear without exception in Huoluo Nation or Grace Venerate Nation.

In these past 30 years, Sky Fortune Kingdom didn't have a single disciple who had advanced into the top 100 rankings. Well, there had been Mu Yinzhou from the four martial families, but he was a foreign martial artist who didn't share the same surname as the family he represented.

This wait continued for another half hour. As evening approached, small black dots suddenly appeared in the distant cloudy sky. Yang Lin immediately shot up, even his cloak fell down from his shoulders.

All the nobles, martial artists, generals, and so forth all stood up at the same time. There were those with a deeper cultivation that were able to clearly see that these small black spots were actually Qin Ziya and his group returning on Heavenly Wind Eagles.

"They've arrived!"

Everyone left their seats, and the young palace ladies rubbed their frozen legs, ready to toss out fresh flowers. The reporters who worked for the Sky Fortune City gazette were ready and waiting, pulling out pen and paper in order to record every detail that would happen. Recently, under Yang Lin's behest, the national gazette had launched complete coverage of the Total Faction Martial Meeting that was like a nationwide propaganda campaign.

There had been so many notes, papers, gazettes, and fliers passed out that even the old aunty who managed the closest tea shop and sold boiled eggs would know just what the Total Faction Martial Meeting was, and could tell anyone who cared to listen just how important the Total Faction Martial Meeting was to the martial artists of Sky Fortune Kingdom.

Flap flap flap

Six Heavenly Wind Eagles flew down one after another, landing on the open square and kicking up enormous gusts of snow beneath them. As Qin Ziya dismounted the Heavenly Wind Eagle, he had a wide smile on his face. Seeing this smile, the anxiety in Yang Lin's heart eased by about half. It seemed as if Lin Ming had successfully reached the top 50.

He walked up with Marshal Qin Xiao, welcoming their arrival. Qin Xiao heartily laughed, saying, "I congratulate Martial House Master Qin on his triumphant return. Everyone, it's been tough on you all, but good job!"

Qin Ziya cupped his fists together in greetings and said, "I've troubled Your Highness the Crown Prince and Marshall Qin Xiao. Thankfully, good fortune was with us this time. During this Total Faction Martial Meeting, we had very good results."

Hearing this great news from Qin Ziya, Yang Lin's heart beat sped up. He glanced around the six people, but there was no shadow of Lin Ming.

Where was Lin Ming?

He was about to ask where Lin Ming was, when Qin Xiao exuberantly laughed, and then tugged on his favorite granddaughter's hands, "Xingxuan, how did you do?"

"Rank 169." Qin Xingxuan hugged onto Qin Xiao's arm, somewhat embarrassed. She had just managed to pass the mountain gate trial, and was still eliminated in the first group stage.

But even so, to have such a ranking at her age was still a very splendid result. Otherwise, she wouldn't have been chosen as a Seven Profound Valleys inner court disciple.

Sun Youdao stroked his beard, and said with a smile, "Marshal Qin, You have a fantastic granddaughter. Xingxuan has already been chosen by Elder Wen Hui of the Sword Faction, and will be a Sword Faction inner court disciple. Elder Wen Hui has been in the Xiantian realm for many years now, he has an unfathomable strength."

"Xiantian!?"

Qin Xiao's eyes flashed with awe. He didn't know what it meant to rank 169th in the Total Faction Martial Meeting, but the shock of hearing about a Xiantian elder was just too great.

Qin Xiao had already stayed at the Houtian realm for many years, and had a deep understand of what the Xiantian realm was. To him, the Xiantian realm bottleneck was an impassable ravine. For the 80 years since Sky Fortune Kingdom was established, a Xiantian master had never appeared.

If Qin Xingxuan could become the disciple of a Xiantian master, then her future could be imagined.

"Hahaha! Good! Good! Very good!" Qin Xiao was overjoyed and surprise. He had worried that after he died, his Qin Family would decline. However, now that there was Qin Xingxuan, the fortunes of his family would continue for centuries.

At this moment, Yang Lin impatiently asked, "Martial House Master Qin, what about Lin Ming? What is his ranking?"

At this time, Yang Lin was even more excited than Qin Xiao. If Qin Xingxuan could become an inner court disciple with a ranking of 160, then Lin Ming was at least that.

Qin Ziya took a deep breath, his smile gradually spreading wider and wider. A full five breaths of time passed, and then Qin Ziya slowly spoke, stressing each and every syllable in an earnest manner, "Lin Ming, is the champion!"

"What!?" Yang Lin was stunned. For a time, he couldn't even react. He almost wanted to ask what rank the champion was. He just couldn't believe this – he didn't dare to believe this!

Sun Youdao spoke up, sighing as he said, "Lin Ming became the champion of the Total Faction Martial Meeting, taking first place. He has already become one of the direct disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys..."

Chapter 302 – Serpent

Chapter 302 – Serpent

…

…

…

Sun Youdao spoke up, sighing as he said, “Lin Ming became the champion of the Total Faction Martial Meeting, taking first place. He has already become one of the direct disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys…”

“…Champion of the Total Faction Martial Meeting? Direct disciple?” Yang Lin mumbled, the words of Sun Youdao echoing in his mind over and over. He was so shocked that he didn’t know how to react. After all, he knew what this news meant.

In these recent days, Yang Lin had researched everything he could about the Total Faction Martial Meeting. Naturally, he knew just what sort of existence a direct disciple was. The Seven Profound Valleys had four different classifications of disciples. The lowest class were the nominal disciples, followed by the outer court disciples, inner court disciples, and finally the highest, core disciples.

A core disciple was only selected every two Total Faction Martial Meetings, or in other words, every six years. Every faction only had a handful of core disciples, and the one that ranked first among these disciples was the direct disciple!

With seven factions, there would be seven direct disciples. Without a doubt, these seven disciples were all destined to enter into the top ten of the Total Faction Martial Meeting. This was a position that was coveted by every disciple within the Seven Profound Valleys, as the higher rank one was, the more resources they would have to cultivate with.

It could be said that as long as a direct disciple didn't fall from grace, they had an absolute chance to step into the Xiantian realm.

Within the Seven Profound Valleys, their status was even higher than an outer court elder!

What sort of status did a Seven Profound Valleys elder have? When Ouyang Dihua had run rampant through Sky Fortune City and was able to become the Seven Profound Envoy, that was all because his uncle was an elder who could back him up.

Because of this, even the emperor had to be fully respectful towards Ouyang Dihua, much less Yang Lin.

As a mere crown prince of Sky Fortune Kingdom who was already in an extremely precarious situation, Ouyang Dihua basically hadn't even bothered with Yang Lin.

"Lin Ming… already has a status equal to an elder…"

Yang Lin gulped. He already thought that Lin Ming would bring back a great gift for him, but he never imagined that it would be something so fantastic.

Total Faction Martial Meeting rank one!

Becoming a direct disciple!

Any one of these was enough to be recorded in the permanent history of Sky Fortune Kingdom. Who had ever heard of a disciple of the 36 countries becoming a direct disciple? Who had ever imagined a disciple of the 36 countries becoming the champion of the Total Faction Martial Meeting? Let alone the champion, there hadn't even been one who had ever reached the top five!

It wasn't only Yang Lin, but Qin Xiao, the great generals, and every other martial artist were all completely choked. As martial artists, they understood just how profound and deep this news was.

It meant that sooner or later, Lin Ming would become a Xiantian master.

A Xiantian master.

To those mortals, those were figures that only existed in legends.

For a time, silence fell over the entire square; there was only the sound of the cold, icy wind, and the fluttering of ribbons.

Yang Ling opened his mouth to speak several times but couldn't say anything, unable to calm down the turbulent waves that rolled through his heart. If Lin Ming had become a direct disciple, even if Yang Lin just got a little help, just a little, then let alone if he was the current crown prince, even if he was a bastard son that no one had ever seen before, he would still be able to sit upon Sky Fortune Kingdom's throne!

Throne…

Thinking this, Yang Lin almost burst into tears. For how many years had he been uneasy, skittish, unable to eat or sleep with peace? Once the throne was seized by someone else, then he, his mother, his younger sister, all would be beyond redemption!

The only ending to that path was death.

As Qin Ziya saw Yang Lin's excitement, he smiled and said, "Lin Ming is still at the Seven Profound Valleys. There are many matters he must still attend to, such as receiving the rewards and also some joint talent training program he needs to participate in. After that, he will decided which faction he wishes to join. Therefore we came back first."

As Qin Ziya spoke, Sun Youdao laughed, "Lin Ming is a treasure that every major faction wants to steal! Especially the Sword Faction and Acacia Faction, I heard that they are already heavily quarreling over him!"

There were many major factions that wanted Lin Ming to become their direct disciple?

Yang Lin let out a heavy breath. Although he wasn't surprised, listening to Sun Youdao say this was still incomparably shocking.

At this time, behind Yang Lin, the reporters for the government newspaper sprang into action. They rubbed their hands together, warming up, and then excitedly began to write down the news. Such a shocking report would definitely cause major waves through the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom!

In fact, this was true…

The next day, the news that Lin Ming had become the champion of the Total Faction Martial Meeting spread throughout all of Sky Fortune City, rapidly propagating through the entire country.

Within the Seven Profound Martial House, all of the old and new disciples were excitedly discussing these events. That these individuals could share a Martial House that Lin Ming had once been a part of was already a matter to be very proud about. Dozens of years later, or even hundreds of years later, they could proudly boast to their descendants and say, "Hehe, that year, when your grandfather was young, he was once a fellow disciple to a Xiantian master!"

Especially those young female apprentices who had just recently entered and converted to Linmaniacs; to them, Lin Ming was their highest idol, their supreme crush, their dreamy sweetheart!

Far away in Green Mulberry City, the Lin Family had also received this news.

At this time, the Lin Family had been busy with New Year celebrations.

The holidays at the end of the year were the grandest occasion within Sky Fortune Kingdom. The emperor had to offer sacrifices to the heavens and receive all the officials of other countries. All of the other aristocratic families had to slaughter animals in worship at New Year's, and hold lengthy and cumbersome ceremonies.

The Lin Family was one of the top ranked families in Green Mulberry City. Naturally, they were not exempt from this.

But after they obtained the news that Lin Ming had become the champion of the Total Faction Martial Meeting, and had even become a direct disciple who would be a Xiantian master in the future, the entire Lin Family was seething in excitement.

This meant that for the next few centuries, the Lin Family would thrive, and even become one of the top ranked families within Sky Fortune Kingdom!

Thinking this, the Lin Family head couldn't help but cackle in glee. Every Lin Family servant obtained a thick red envelope packed with money. Naturally, every servant knew just why they were given this red envelope, and all of them spoke about the legendary young master of the Lin Family.

But during this year's New Year's ceremony, the Lin Family also paid a massive price. They put out an entire two years of income: 80,000 gold taels, to hold an unprecedented ancestral worship ceremony. The banquet had 160 tables and lasted for nine whole days. All of the heroes around were invited, as well as everyone else who mattered!

However, what was surprising was that after this nine day banquet, the gift money they had received actually totaled to 150,000 gold taels! Many of the families that the Lin Family couldn't match up to had actually sent their direct descendant juniors to join the Lin Family festivities and offer great amounts of money as a present.

But they were still a bit disappointed. No matter which great family came and wished to greet Lin Ming's parents, they were unable to. It seemed that the couple had already left the Lin Family, their whereabouts unknown...

This was only a minor matter. But still, there were some people who were sensitive to such things, that felt as if there was some hidden crisis within the jubilant festivities...

The day on which Qin Ziya returned was also the same day that the Tenth Prince, Yang Zhen, obtained the news. He spent an entire two days in his room, and after coming out, he appeared haggard as if he had instantly aged ten years.

In a battle for the throne, one either emerged as the ultimate glorious victor, or they fell to the pits of hell. At this time, Yang Zhen no longer had any paths left to walk. If he ascended to the throne, he would not forgive Yang Lin. If Yang Lin ascended to the throne, he wouldn't be forgiven.

By relying on the Zhu Family, that moment when they had offended Lin Ming was the worst move he had taken in his life. But what was done was done – there was no more room for regret.

Now, he was at end of his path. To him, there was only one last move he could make in this chess game…

This move wouldn't necessarily allow him to revitalize his fading hopes, but if he didn't do it, then he would absolutely die.

………..

Late at night, Yang Zhen put on a thick, black cloak, and while escaping the attention of everyone, entered the Seven Profound Envoy's mansion.

This was where Ouyang Dihua had once lived. After Ouyang Dihua had died, Ouyang Boyan had come to Sky Fortune Kingdom. Afterwards, he had lived here. Maybe it was because he wanted to see the place where his nephew had last lived and look for some clues.

Ouyang Boyan had investigated for an entire month, but ended up with no clues, or even a trace of a hint. Ouyang Boyan rarely went out, and he hadn't yet left Sky Fortune Kingdom.

In accordance to the circumstances of the murder, the one that killed Ouyang Dihua had to be someone with at least a Xiantian cultivation. Otherwise, it was impossible to silently kill Ouyang Dihua under the protection of several bodyguards, and then quietly slip away.

Ouyang Boyan believed that in all likelihood, this killer had come for him. However, Ouyang Dihua had died merely as collateral damage. The reason he stayed at Sky Fortune Kingdom's Seven Profound Envoy mansion was to wait for this killer to come to him so that he could take his revenge.

However, he waited and waited, all the way until he received the news that Lin Ming had become the champion of the Total Faction Martial Meeting.

…………

"Yang Zhen greets Elder Ouyang!" Yang Zhen kneeled on both knees and bowed in respect. Normally, martial artists didn't care much or follow the regulations and customs of mortals and kingdoms. Even if they saw Shi Zongtian, they wouldn't bow on both knees. But Yang Zhen actually did so. This was obviously showing how respectful and devoted he was.

"Yang Zhen?" Ouyang Boyan opened his eyes to glance at Yang Zhen, "What are you here for?"

"Elder Ouyang, after Mister Ouyang Dihua died, I had some suspicions I wanted to voice, but I don't know whether or not I should speak…"

Ouyang Boyan suddenly slyly smiled and said, "You suspect it was Lin Ming?"

Yang Zhen's heart went cold, but this wasn't too surprising. He calmly said, "Two months before Mister Ouyang Dihua died, he had a conflict with Lin Ming."

What Yang Zhen had said, Ouyang Boyan certainly knew. Of course, a mere conflict wouldn't necessarily become a matter worth killing over. Most importantly, at that time, Ouyang Boyan didn't think that Lin Ming had the capabilities.

But now…

If Lin Ming knew some sort of special technique, and he also had the help of a master from Divine Phoenix Island, then there was a high chance that he had killed Ouyang Dihua while he was under the protection of many guards.

At this time, Yang Zhen also said, “Elder Ouyang, I already received some additional news. After Qin Ziya returned to Sky Fortune City, he secretly visited Lin Ming’s parents and transferred them somewhere else. My guess is that Lin Ming had entrusted Qin Ziya with this matter…”

“Is that right?” Ouyang Boyan’s lips curved down in a grim scowl. If he was just guessing before, then now listening to Yang Zhen’s words, killing intent had already moved into his heart. Within the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom, Ouyang Boyan was the only one who could make Lin Ming fear so much. If he wasn’t guilty, then why would he do this?

In terms of strength, Ouyang Boyan naturally surpassed Lin Ming by a great margin. But in terms of status, he was in truth far inferior to Lin Ming. Lin Ming wasn’t just some ordinary direct disciple, but according to news from Qin Ziya and the Seven Profound Valleys, he had familiar but unclear relations with the top fourth-grade sect, Divine Phoenix Island.

Compared to Lin Ming, Ouyang Boyan’s influence was much weaker. He wasn’t someone who would desperately seek Lin Ming for revenge at the cost of his own life just to get revenge for his nephew.

He would patiently bear this for now, and wait for an opportunity to quietly kill Lin Ming. Then once he discovered where Lin Ming’s parents were, he would kill them too, and the secretly wipe out the Lin Family! Only in this manner would the hate in his heart be assuaged!

Chapter 303 – Come Back In 10 Years

Chapter 303 – Come Back In 10 Years

…

…

…

In just one day, Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu had already flown tens of thousands of miles, stopping as they arrived at a transmission array formation which was built by Divine Phoenix Island.

A long distance transmission array was an extremely luxurious facility that required a massive amount of resources. Not only did there need to be experts stationed there to work it, but it also consumed a great deal of true essence stones.

“Lin Ming, you said that you wanted some fire-attribute material to craft the spear head?” Mu Qianyu was surprised, did Lin Ming have a rare dual-attribute body?

“Mm, yes.” Lin Ming vigorously nodded. He didn’t plan on hiding anything from Mu Qianyu, especially since after the Flame Essence within his body grew, his ability to handle fire would be exposed.

“You can also control fire?”

“A bit…” Lin Ming flicked a finger and a wisp of flame sprung up.

Seeing this, Mu Qianyu’s eyes flashed with a zealous light, and even her pitch rose a bit, “You have a double-attribute body!?”

“Yes.” Lin Ming braced himself as he acknowledged this. His double-attribute body naturally all depended on the Heretical God Force.

“If you can control fire, why didn’t you say so earlier!” Mu Qianyu admonished.

“…You didn’t ask me.” Lin Ming replied with a puppy-eyed innocent look. “Don’t you remember when we traded some barbecue for one of Little Flame’s Vermilion Bird feathers? That was because I wanted to use it to enhance the fire in my body.”

As Lin Ming said this, Mu Qianyu did recall that Lin Ming had deceived Little Flame with some barbecue for a feather, and the unbridled happiness and smile that passed over his eyes in that moment, “Little Flame is just a baby. You were quite naughty Lin Ming.”

Lin Ming traced his nose, a bit embarrassed. He had to admit that the way he did it was quite evil, just like a strange uncle that tried to cheat a child with some candy.

“If you could control fire, then you should have told me earlier. My Divine Phoenix Island has two types of cultivation method manuals, one of which uses fire as the basis. That’s also the cultivation method that I study. I thought that Divine Phoenix Island’s cultivation methods didn’t suit you at the start, but if I knew, I would have directly pulled you into Divine Phoenix Island the first time I met you.” Mu Qianyu shook her head as she said this. If that had happened, things would have been much simpler.

“I suppose I am considered half a Divine Phoenix Island disciple.” Even Lin Ming couldn’t clearly figure out just where he was a disciple of.

“It’s a bit bothersome. If I pull you into Divine Phoenix Island, there will inevitably be some people wagging their useless tongues. That’s right, I haven’t asked you, would you like to officially enter Divine Phoenix Island?”

Lin Ming hesitated. Enter Divine Phoenix Island?

This was indeed the best choice. Divine Phoenix Island had a rich amount of resources. Based on his current cultivation, it would be difficult to make anything valuable with his shallow inscription technique. If he wanted to use his skills to earn enough for the materials to craft the spear just by himself, who knew how many years it would take.

But because there was some sort of inexplicable self-respect in his heart that confused him, Lin Ming wasn't too willing to join Divine Phoenix Island.

If he obtained the spear crafting materials on credit, then it could be said he would completely depend on Mu Qianyu in the future… Lin Ming had a strange feeling that it was a bit similar to being a gigolo.

Mu Qianyu saw Lin Ming's hesitation, and her happy smile dimmed a bit. She looked at Lin Ming for awhile and asked, "It seems that you don't like to owe favors to people."

Lin Ming silently nodded. "A bit, because right now, my favors aren't worth anything…"

"Haha, listening to you, it sounds like the favors you owe towards others are priceless." Mu Qianyu's eyebrows pricked up and she smiled. She felt that although Lin Ming's words were seemingly humble, it showed just how formidable and confident he was.

Lin Ming didn't reply. In the future, it would be hard to guess just how valuable his favor would be. But at that time, it wouldn't be so easy for him to owe anyone anything.

"Well, that's fine, let's talk about other things for now. If you want fire-attribute materials, I have two different types of top fire-attribute materials. Hehe, I'm sure they would move even your heart."

Lin Ming's heart jumped. If someone like Mu Qianyu could call it a top fire-attribute material, then it shouldn't be any worse than the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo.

"What is it?"

"10,000 year old Fire Parasol Tree!"

"Mm!?"

In the legends, the phoenix had a naturally noble and pure temperament. It would not drink anything that wasn't the morning dew, it wouldn't eat anything that wasn't the tenderest of bamboo, nor would it rest on any tree that wasn't a 10,000 year Parasol Tree. This Parasol Tree was the Fire Parasol Tree. The phoenix would only undergo its nirvana atop a Parasol Tree, and use the divine flames within its body to self-immolate, directly becoming an inferno of flames with the Parasol Tree.

A 10,000 year Fire Parasol Tree could be called a divine tree, its value was probably far beyond the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo!

In the refining of a spear shaft, using one material was naturally worse than use two materials. If the 10,000 year Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo's bamboo fiber could become the bone, and wrap around the tree threads of the 10,000 year Fire Parasol Tree, then the spear shaft that was created would not only be indestructible, but it could simultaneously channel the dual attributes of fire and thunder origin energy with no impedance at all; this was simply a perfect combination!

How could Lin Ming's heart not be moved at the thought of such a perfect spear shaft?

Mu Qianyu gently traced the red spatial ring on her index finger and continued saying, "In terms of fire-attribute materials, my Divine Phoenix Island probably has the richest resources out of all the sects in the South Horizon Region. Besides the 10,000 year Fire Parasol Tree, there is also the Vermillion Bird Flame Essence that is left behind after a Vermillion Bird undergoes nirvana. I can give you some. If you mix it into the spearhead, it will greatly enhance the spear's power of flame."

Mu Qianyu's words caused Lin Ming's heart to beat with eagerness. With so many top materials, what grade spear would be refined from them?

....

At the edge of the White Peak territory, there was a mountain range that spanned 10,000 miles. The peak of the highest mountain in this mountain range extended up 90,000 feet, directly piercing the sky!

This height was only 10,000 feet shorter than Thundercrash Mountain. The peak had surpassed the Calmstream Heavens, and approached the Primal Chaos Heavens!

Sky Spill Continent’s skies had six different layers. 30,000 feet above the clouds were the Primal Chaos Heavens. Here, the pure origin energy of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, thunder, and wind existed in their purest, most brutal and tyrannically savage form. Everyone below a Xiantian rank master who came up to the Primal Chaos Heavens would be immediately ripped apart by the violent and lethal surges of origin energy.

Initially, Thundercrash Mountain had approached the Primal Chaos Heavens and its entire summit was comprised of magnetic ore. Because of these special circumstances, it created a natural formation that was able to direct the flow of thunder origin energy from the Primal Chaos Heavens, forming an endless land of heavenly thunder. This was why the peak of Thundercrash Mountain had become a land of powerful thunder.

But this sort of mountain peak didn’t have such special circumstances. However, above the peak, there was a massive eight trigrams fire array formation that was able to direct the flow of fire origin energy, forming endless heavenly fire. Although this sort of man-made formation was far inferior to the vast scale of Thundercrash Mountain, it wasn’t any less in terms of quality. In the very center of the array formation, there was a vibrant heavenly fire burning; even a normal Xiantian master would have no way to defend against that.

Lin Ming saw the blazing fire that burned atop of the mountain from far away and was able to feel the rich origin energy emitting from it. He was completely shocked. If it wasn’t for Mu Qianyu informing him in advance, it would be very hard for him to imagine that this was created by a man-made array formation.

“This is where Ancestor Chi Yan lives?”

“Mm… you see the heavenly fire array formation? That is Senior’s ‘Refining Furnace’.

Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. To have an eight trigrams array formation on such a grand scale just to use it as a refining furnace… this was truly a great show of power. No wonder this Ancestor Chi Yan chose to live in seclusion on these remote mountains; it was probably because of the heavenly fire at this mountain peak.

To use heavenly fire as a furnace, with the 10,000 year Fire Parasol Tree and the 10,000 Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo as the core, along with some other top quality thunder and fire materials to supplement… just what grade of treasure could be refined from this?

Lin Ming was filled with an incomparable amount of anticipation.

“Senior Chi Yan, Junior Mu Qianyu wishes to seek an audience for a certain matter.”

Mu Qianyu stopped just outside the eight trigrams fire array formation, and shouted out.

Within the Divine Phoenix area, for this recluse to cause Mu Qianyu to treat him with so much respect, this Ancestor Chi Yan’s strength could be imagined. But at this time, Lin Ming’s attention was actually attracted by the eight trigrams fire array formation. This sort of layout seemed… it seemed to have some places in common with the array formations found in the Realm of the Gods.

The first soul fragment that Lin Ming absorbed had come from an inscription master from the Realm of the Gods. The second soul fragment that he absorbed had come from an array master. This sort of Supreme Elder had a massive amount of knowledge and insight on array formations, all of which was completely absorbed by Lin Ming. However, the principles behind the array formations were too varied and profound, and also just the weakest array formation in those memories had required a Revolving Core master to create. Because of this, Lin Ming hadn’t spent any time studying them.

To the current him, these memories were useless. It was this reason that Lin Ming had been so disappointed when he received these memories. It wasn’t until he had also found the

Heretical God Force and Golden Roc Shattering the Void in this soul fragment did he think that his choice had borne some fruit.

After this, Lin Ming had experienced the Seven Profound Valleys' Array Faction.

He had seen the mountain gate trial, Fang Qi's Golden Light Array Flag and Nine Circles of Blue Light Array, and before, Lin Ming had also been saved by the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead, all of which belonged to the array formation technique of the Seven Profound Valleys. However, system and principles of array formations that the Seven Profound Valleys' Array Faction had used were completely different than those of the Realm of the Gods. If the array formations of the Realm of the Gods' power, might, and size were their symbol, then the Seven Profound Valleys' Array Faction had pursued the path of simplicity and ease of use as their direction.

Especially those elements of compression that were found within the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead, they had left an extremely deep impression on Lin Ming. This bead was enough to allow a weak martial artist to instantly kill a Pulse Condensation master.

The array master didn't have any memories of these sorts of things in the Realm of the Gods. Lin Ming had thought that the array formation system of Sky Spill Continent and the Realm of the Gods were completely different, but now, seeing this Ancestor Chi Yan's eight trigrams fire array formation, Lin Ming saw many shadows of the Realm of the Gods' array formations.

In comparison to the memories of the Realm of the Gods' Supreme Elder, this eight trigrams formation was very rough, filled with mistakes, oversights, and completely unreasonable areas.

As the bright flames burned, although one could feel the rich fire origin energy coming outside the array formation, there wasn't even the slightest bit of heat emitted. It was truly amazing.

The fire array formation was quiet for a long time. Then, an ancient voice sounded out, “Mu Family’s little baby girl? This old man is busy, what do you want?”

Mu Qianyu respectfully said, “This junior has come to request that Senior help craft a long spear.”

“Refining a treasure? This old man is busy. Come back in 10 years. At that time, old man might have some free time.”

Ten years!?!?

Mu Qianyu froze. Even Lin Ming, who was listening, was left speechless. To them, 10 years was a very exaggerated amount of time. But to the several hundred year old Revolving Core master, 10 years was probably the time it took for one period of seclusion.

Why would anyone wait 10 years! In 10 years, anything could happen! At that time, Lin Ming probably wouldn’t even need this old man’s help!

Mu Qianyu seemed as if she wanted to say something, but ended up not saying anything. She looked at Lin Ming with some embarrassment, and her beautiful face flashed with a hint of awkwardness. “I apologize. I didn’t think it would be like this...”

Mu Qianyu really felt as if she lost a great deal of face this time. She had promised that she would help, but this was the result. “Let’s go back, there are some other people that I can ask to help. Once Senior Chi Yan has decided on a matter, he won’t change his mind, anything we do is useless.”

“No, wait... maybe... I might have a way to make Senior Chi Yan change his mind...

Lin Ming stroked his chin, looking quite thoughtful...

Chapter 304 – There Is Always Someone Higher

Chapter 304 – There Is Always Someone Higher

…

…

…

Have Ancestor Chi Yan change his mind?

Mu Qianyu looked at Lin Ming with some suspicious, as if this plan simply wasn't going to work. But, since there had been so many inconceivable situations and miracles that had occurred around Lin Ming, Mu Qianyu decided to step back a bit and see what would happen.

However, she didn't think that for a good half hour, Lin Ming would only stand there, deep in thought.

"Lin Ming, what are you planning on doing?" Mu Qianyu asked, puzzled.

Lin Ming didn't answer, it was as if he hadn't heard Mu Qianyu's question at all. Then, Mu Qianyu discovered that Lin Ming had at some point entered the ethereal martial intent state, and his perception was cut off from the outside world.

While Lin Ming was in the ethereal martial intent state, the surrounding fire origin energy was involuntarily absorbed into him. This was the effect of the Heretical God Seed displaying itself. With the Heretical God Seed, even without Lin Ming's control, it would still independently absorb origin energy.

'Is Lin Ming taking this opportunity to cultivate?'

Mu Qianyu couldn’t help but think this. After all, the fire origin energy here was abundant and pure. If one cultivated here, they would have twice the result with half the effort.

This sort of digging in someone else’s corner and taking advantage of them was just too rude and tasteless. But, Mu Qianyu had a very good grasp of Lin Ming’s character. He wasn’t the sort of person who would do something so dastardly. Much less if he were only standing here for a day, how much fire origin energy could he possibly absorb?

What was he doing?

Thus another half hour passed. The sky was becoming darker, and at this moment, from the deepest depths of the fire formation, Ancestor Chi Yan let out a heavy grunt.

“Boy, are you absorbing my fire origin energy?”

Lin Ming was startled, immediately awakening from his ethereal martial intent. Ancestor Chi Yan’s grunt had contained a fluctuation of true essence, and had lifted him from his ethereal state. But he was able to do what he wanted to in an hour’s time.

“Is this boy of yours also from Divine Phoenix Island? He refuses to leave, and also tries to steal away the fire origin energy that this old man has attracted here? When did the disciples from Divine Phoenix Island become such amazing individuals?”

Ancestor Chi Yan’s voice dripped with irony. The truth was, he didn’t care much about the fire origin energy, it was just that Lin Ming’s approach wasn’t to his liking.

“This old man will consider the fame of Divine Phoenix Island and will not bother with the likes of you. Now, make haste and get off my mountain. When this old man eats his dinner, he doesn’t like beggars circling around his table, picking up scraps from the ground!”

These words of Ancestor Chi Yan were just too harsh, too crass, even Mu Qianyu’s expression changed. Although Ancestor Chi Yan referred to Lin Ming, he had associated her with him. Mu Qianyu had always had a noble and lofty status, how could she lose face like this?

However, Ancestor Chi Yan's strength was far beyond hers, and he had a strange and eccentric temperament. He wasn't the type that would even give face to her master. Mu Qianyu could only endure, pulling at Lin Ming's sleeve and rebuking him, "Lin Ming, what are you doing? If you want to absorb the fire origin energy, then my Divine Phoenix Island also has this. There is no need to stand here, let's descend the mountain first."

Lin Ming said, "Miss Mu, I'm not absorbing the fire origin energy, it's just..." After Lin Ming spoke to her, he then shouted out, "Senior Chi Yan, I accidently absorbed your fire origin energy. For that, I am truly sorry. But, I think that if you can contain all of the fire origin energy within the eight trigrams fire formation, it won't be absorbed by others, and the power of the heavenly fire will also be enhanced!"

The eight trigrams fire formation that Ancestor Chi Yan laid down could contain all of the heat, but it could not isolate all of the fire origin energy from passing through. To the array formation, this was a very big loss.

Ancestor Chi Yan coldly snorted and said, "You snotty-nosed baby, what do you know? This old man will not bother with your nonsense. Quickly get off this old man's mountain or do not blame this old man for being impolite!"

Being bothered by Lin Ming again, Ancestor Chi Yan's mood became increasingly poor. He had gone into seclusion for the sake of mediating on an ancient array formation jade slip that he had found in order to improve the power of the eight trigrams fire array formation. With Lin Ming standing outside, it was no different than a fly bothering him as he was reading. He just wanted to slap him to death.

"Lin Ming, let's quickly go." Mu Qianyu knew of Ancestor Chi Yan's temperament. If Lin Ming truly provoked his ire, there was a great chance he would die here.

As Lin Ming was being pulled by Mu Qianyu, he loudly said again, “Senior Chi Yan, was this junior wrong?”

Ancestor Chi Yan suddenly said, “Enough with your worthless talk!”

Containing all of the fire origin energy would of course increase the might of the heavenly fire, even a fool would know this! The problem was, just how would this be achieved? He had used a massive amount of time and energy to lay down this eight trigrams fire array formation. He had used his own vast knowledge of array formation as the blueprint, and then also integrated some ancient array formation knowledge, finally creating this.

It was already very difficult to isolate the heat from passing through. If he wanted to also isolate the fire origin energy, it was simply just a dream. The power would be amazing, enough to quicken the fire origin energy of the Primal Chaos Heavens into this array formation. But wasn’t this easier said than done?

“Senior Chi Yan, this junior met an expert when he was young and was taught about array formations and inscription techniques as a child. Although I am a bit dumb and lacking in talent, I still learnt much, especially about the arrangement of fire-attribute array formations. About these, I have some understanding. Senior Chi Yan’s array formation…” Despite Mu Qianyu’s frantic winks signaling him to run, he still shouted out loud like before.

The array formation that Ancestor Chi Yan laid down, in comparison to the array formation that the Supreme Elder from the Realm of the Gods did, was truly full of flaws and errors that were difficult to bear.

Although Lin Ming could find these flaws with relative ease, it wasn’t easy to improve them. That was why Lin Ming had entered into the ethereal martial intent state in order to fuse with all of the memories from that Supreme Elder from the Realm of the Gods. After contemplating for an hour, he finally figured out solutions for several areas. These were only general ideas, but if Ancestor Chi Yan studied along Lin Ming’s direction, he should be able to obtain many insights.

“Hahahahahahaha!” Ancestor Chi Yan laughed, a vast wave of true essence surging in all directions. Even the flames within the eight trigrams fire array formation began to churn!

Lin Ming paled, retreating several steps as he was unable to bear the pressure. Thankfully, Mu Qianyu had held onto him, and was quickly pushing true essence into Lin Ming’s body, therefore protecting him.

“Lin Ming, don’t say things just because you can! Senior Chi Yan is a Revolving Core master, and also an array formation grandmaster! Do you have confidence?” At this time Mu Qianyu was extremely vexated. She wanted to forcefully stop Lin Ming’s actions and fly down the mountain with him.

Although all sorts of incredible miracles had happened to Lin Ming, improving this eight trigrams fire array formation was simply too ridiculous, it was just plain unbelievable. Array formations were a profound and esoteric art, all true array grandmasters like Ancestor Chi Yan had spent hundreds of years to gradually reach where they did.

How old was Lin Ming? Even if he had monstrous talent, how many things could he actually learn at once? Besides, how great could this so called ‘expert’ master of his be to appear in Sky Fortune Kingdom. Could this ‘expert’ be at the Revolving Core realm? Even if this master was at the Revolving Core realm, could they compare to Ancestor Chi Yan?”

If Lin Ming had studied under this master, could his attainments of array formation still surpass that of Ancestor Chi Yan? Even though Mu Qianyu usually trusted Lin Ming a great deal, she still didn’t believe in this.

Chi Yang laughed for a full ten breaths before stopping. “This is just too farcical! I, Chi Yan, have already lived for 380 years! To think that one day, I would have some snotty-nosed brat and his country bumpkin array neophyte master thinking that they can give pointers to this old man about his understanding of array formations!”

Lin Ming was repeatedly ridiculed by Ancestor Chi Yan, and that old bag of bones had actually poured true essence into his laughter, almost damaging his meridians. Even Lin

Ming's anger was swelling up. He said, "My master might not be some country bumpkin, Senior Chi Yan! There is no limit to this world, however strong you are, there is always someone better! I was once a frog in a well, and thought that the Xiantian realm was the highest one could reach. However, I learnt afterwards, that above Xiantian was the Revolving Core, and above Revolving Core, there are even higher realms!"

"What did you say!?" Within the eight trigrams fire array formation, Senior Chi Yan's mind chilled, and a vibrant wave of murderous intent overflowed in all directions. "You think that you are teaching this old man? Are you saying that this old man is a frog in a well? Good, very good! This old man will give you a chance, if you can say just what problems there are within the eight trigrams fire array formation, then this old man shall immediately apologize and forge your spear with my own furnace! But, if you cannot say what is wrong, then leave behind your blathering tongue and severe all your meridians, wasting your martial arts! For Divine Phoenix Island's sake, this old man will let you keep your worthless life!"

With these few words from Ancestor Chi Yan, Mu Qianyu was greatly alarmed. Severe his meridians and waste his martial arts? To a martial artist, this was no different than dying!

In the end, her worst fears had occurred. What Ancestor Chi Yan said, he would certainly accomplish. But just how deep of an understanding could Lin Ming have of fire origin energy array formations? What if he was wrong?

Mu Qianyu's heart was racing. At this point, there was nothing else she could do. Even if she and Little Flame added together, they were not a match for Ancestor Chi Yan.

If matters really degraded to such an irrevocable step, then Mu Qianyu could only protect Lin Ming's life and hope that Ancestor Chi Yan would show some face to her master…

Lin Ming thought for a moment, organizing his thoughts and carefully sorting the words to use. He slowly, but clearly said, "Senior has created 12 spinning spiral fire rune columns within the fire array formation. These fire rune columns can gather and separate fire origin energy, but the created friction will drain the fire origin energy of strength, and will also disrupt the force fields that contain the fire origin energy. Not only will this wear down the array formation, causing it to need repairs every 4 or 5 years, but it will also create holes within the force field, dissipating the fire origin energy. This is one of the flaws.

"The second one, is that the 36 spiral runes are distributed in a very unreasonable manner. Because, even a small deviation in the arrangement and distance will result in the origin energies influencing each other, forming a barrier which will subsequently damage the crystals that contain the origin energy, causing a massive amount of origin energy to dissipate. Since it cannot be contained, this results in it once again escaping."

"The third is…"

As Lin Ming endlessly droned on, Mu Qianyu listened from the side, flabbergasted. At this point, her feelings were hard to describe. That is, although she didn't know what Lin Ming was saying, or whether it was correct, she could hear that he was very confident in his words, and they contained a powerful belief.

And what was most crucial, was that the sneering laughter from Ancestor Chi Yan within the fire array formation had long stopped…

Could it be that everything Lin Ming said was correct?

Heavens!

He was only 16 years old! Even if his master was the number one array master of Sky Spill Continent, how could he study all of this? What sort of terrifying perception was this?

Chapter 305 – Path of Refining as the Path of Martial Arts

Chapter 305 – Path of Refining as the Path of Martial Arts

…

…

…

Within the massive fire array formation, the more Ancestor Chi Yan listened, the more he was shocked. From the first time that Lin Ming had mentioned the 12 fire rune columns he had been shaken. The so-called fire rune columns and the 36 spiral runes were all completely terms from the ancient array formations!

The extraordinary and ancient array formations that had been passed down to these times were already incomplete. Any archaic array formation jade slip was a legacy that every array master longed for in their dreams. Even the appearance of a single one could set off a bloody and terrifying war!

This boy actually understood the ancient extraordinary array formations? Just who was his master?

Moreover, what startled Ancestor Chi Yan the most was that Lin Ming's perception of the Dao of array formations was simply terrifying!

The styles of ancient array formations were complex and limitless in profundity. Even with the best teacher, without several decades of time, nothing would come of it. But this young boy who looked at most 18 years old, actually had the perception and vision to see the flaws in his own array formation?

Even before when he said, ‘the created friction will drain the fire origin energy of strength, and will also disrupt the force fields that contain the fire origin energy. Not only will this wear down the array formation, causing it to need repairs every four or five years’, that was also a very accurate and true judgment. After he first laid down this array formation, he had to repair it every four years. It wasn’t until later when he had added in a very precious material into the array formation that he managed to forcefully extend the deadline to every ten years…

Just what was the origin of this boy?

Lin Ming finished speaking in less than half an incense stick of time. And Ancestor Chi Yan who was in the fire array formation, had fallen into a long silence ever since Lin Ming spoke. All of that murderous intent that he had been giving off was also contained.

Mu Qianyu was standing by the side, not sure what to say. After a long time, Ancestor Chi Yan’s hoarse voice sounded out from within the array formation, “You… what is your master’s name?”

Lin Ming said, “Master is an expert that I encountered when I was 12 years old. As for his name, Master never mentioned it.”

“12 years old… how old are you now?” Ancestor Chi Yan asked in a somewhat trembling voice.

“Reporting to Senior, junior is currently 16 years old.”

“16 years old! Haha! 16 years old! Laughable! Hilarious!” With an almost insane chuckle, Ancestor Chi Yan flung his sleeves and a wall of the fire array formation opened up. He wore a long red robe, and his hair was split in half, crazily scattered all around. Like this, Ancestor Chi Yan stepped out of the eight trigrams fire array formation.

Ancestor Chi Yan’s face was deathly white, as if he was near death, and both of his eyes revealed a lonely and bitter light. “A 16 year old snot-nosed brat… studies array formations for a mere four years, but can actually point out all the mistakes in this eight trigrams fire array formation that I used 20 years of painstaking care and effort to lay down! Too pitiful! Too laughable!”

Lin Ming had originally wanted to point out some flaws in Ancestor Chi Yan’s array formation, and then propose some areas of possible improvement. As exchange, Ancestor Chi Yan would forge the spear for him. But he didn’t think that he would stimulate such a crazy and ferocious attitude. This old man wasn’t at all normal from the start, and it seemed that he had psychotic tendencies.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment, and cupped his hands together, saying, “Senior must be joking. The junior has only studied a few limited array formations, and Senior’s eight trigrams fire array formation just happened to be similar to the fire formation that my master taught me. Therefore, I was able to notice some flaws.”

“Four years? Has only studied a few limited array formations? ...Haha!” Ancestor Chi Yan’s lips twitched. Lin Ming had said all of this so easily, but array formations were an art which had to be studied in a very orderly way. If there wasn’t a solid foundation, just where would a high-level array formation like this eight trigrams fire array formation come from? Thin air? And it was also one of the incomparably complex and esoteric ancient arrays!

“There truly is no limit in this universe, there is always someone higher! I was truly a frog in a well, average, mediocre!” Ancestor Chi Yan looked to the skies and deeply sighed. The eight trigrams fire array formation ripped open again, leaving a gap the size of a person. Then, he turned around and walked inside, as if he were in a trance.

Lin Ming paused, hesitant, and then entered the eight trigrams fire array formation, following Ancestor Chi Yan.

“Lin Ming, your master taught you about ancient array formations?” Mu Qianyu was able to slowly come to terms with this unthinkable truth after a long time. This was much more stunning than Lin Ming absorbing the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder with a trivial Bone Forging cultivation.

As soon as Lin Ming heard this question, he felt a bit awkward. He didn’t want to lie to Mu Qianyu, but since things had already come this, he had to continue lying. “I don’t know what an ancient array is. What Master taught me, I studied and learned. The truth is that I cannot arrange any array formation, I only know some superficial knowledge.”

If he wanted to arrange such a large-scale array formation, Lin Ming would need at least a cultivation at the Revolving Core realm. Lin Ming naturally didn’t have this ability.

Mu Qianyu hadn’t thought that Lin Ming would have such a master. If Lin Ming’s master was at the Xiantian realm, then she wouldn’t be surprised. After all, the talent that had emerged within Lin Ming really made one think that he wasn’t some common mortal martial artist. But hearing Ancestor Chi Yan’s depressed words, Lin Ming’s master might even have a high chance of being a Supreme Elder who had flown into the Realm of the Gods!

This sort of character could call himself an emperor if he wished. Within Sky Skill Continent, he would be the king of kings, the highest possible existence!

If Lin Ming had such a master, then why wouldn’t he follow him into the Holy Lands to lead a saintly cultivating life? Why would he join the small Seven Profound Valleys?

Mu Qianyu was puzzled.

Or maybe, his master had already flown into the Realm of the Gods?

The two followed Ancestor Chi Yan to his residence, it was a cave mansion that was located in the center of the fire array formation. Perhaps because it had been roasted by the fire origin energy for a long time, the walls of the cave mansion had already been burned into a deep ruby red.

The inside of the cave mansion was filled up with piles upon piles of miscellaneous goods. There were array flags, array formation jade slips, array discs, and all sorts of other treasures. There were even two wooden puppets – these were probably the servant puppets that handled Ancestor Chi Yan’s daily needs.

Seeing all this, Lin Ming could imagine that if someone were to live here daily, only concentrating on array formations and watching these dead puppets day in and day out, even the most normal and well-adjusted of individuals would have mental issues.

“You will stay here today. This old man’s mood is no longer suitable for forging a spear. Tomorrow, I shall fire up the furnace! What this old man has said will not change. I take back the rude words I said, and also apologize to this Little Brother! I will even put up some of my own collection of refining materials as an apology gift to make amends.” As Ancestor Chi Yan said this, he took out a hand sized lump of dark purple metal from his spatial ring and laid it on the table.

The metal in his palm was only the size of a hand, but when it bore down on the table, the table seemed as if it would fall apart at any time.

Lin Ming’s eyes brightened. This dark purple, almost black whatever it was had to be much heavier than dark purple elastic iron or even heavy profound soft silver. Not only that, but he could feel a thick energy emitting from the dark purple metal that caused his heart to race. In the dim light of the cave, he could see the air around the dark purple metal twisting, as if it were distorted.

Before, Ancestor Chi Yan had said that if Lin Ming could point out flaws in his fire array formation, then he would immediately apologize and help Lin Ming forge his spear.

Ancestor Chi Yan had an extremely stubborn and unruly temperament; it was extremely difficult for him to lower his head and apologize to anyone. Lin Ming hadn’t thought that he would not only apologize, but also offer up materials from his own collection. The value of materials that Ancestor Chi Yan would collect could be imagined!

“Is this… Purple Comet?”

Mu Qianyu was bewildered as she looked as this lump of dark purple metal, not daring to be positive in her guess. Because Mu Qianyu had had contact with Ancestor Chi Yan many times, she also had a deep understanding of many different types of refining materials.

Purple Comet was a material that was enough to forge a top high-grade earth-step treasure. Or, if it was purified enough, Purple Comet could even create a heaven-step treasure!

A heaven-step treasure was a priceless object that would often only be used by emperors who were peerless powerhouses!

If the Purple Comet was used in addition to the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo and Sacred Flame Parasol Tree, then the grade of Lin Ming's spear might even surpass that of her own Vermillion Bird Sword!

The Vermillion Bird Sword was one of the twin Ice and Fire Swords of Divine Phoenix Island, and also one of the holy treasures of her sect. How could Mu Qianyu not be startled!

"Good. This is exactly Purple Comet. In my life, I have no plans to try and soar up to the Realm of the Gods, that is too remote a possibility for me. My ultimate goal is to forge a heaven-step treasure, and carve my name so it spreads through history. That is why I collect all the materials I can that can forge a heaven-step treasure. This piece of Purple Comet is too small to make a heaven-step treasure, but it's just right for me to forge a spear for you."

"Senior Chi Yan, this is..." Lin Ming didn't know what to say. Such a material was extremely precious, even to someone like Ancestor Chi Yan. He didn't think that not only would the old man apologize, but he would also take out such a precious material. This old man was serious in keeping each and every one of his promises!

Ancestor Chi Yan gave a deep sigh and slowly said, "My path of refining is just like your path of martial arts. I said that if you can point out the flaws in my array formation, then I will apologize and forge a spear for you. Otherwise, I would cut off your tongue and waste your martial arts.

"Since I wanted to destroy your martial arts, then I naturally have to pay an equal price!"

As Ancestor Chi Yan said, he had already subconsciously placed Lin Ming on the same level as himself. A peerless master like himself was actually talking to someone like an ant about equality. No matter if it were Lin Ming's master or his terrifying perception of the Dao of array formations, Ancestor Chi Yan could see that 100 years from now, Lin Ming would become a peerless powerhouse of his generation.

Lin Ming sighed. Although Ancestor Chi Yan truly did have an eccentric, unreasonable, and sometimes cruel temperament, his heart of martial arts was actually incomparably firm and pure. Someone with such faith in their own beliefs could often walk further down the path of martial arts.

In truth, this kind of person was worth respecting a great deal. Thinking this, Lin Ming said, “Senior Chi Yan, about Senior’s eight trigrams fire array formation, junior has some opinions. I can offer some humble words in the hope that Senior may be inspired just a bit.”

“Mm?” Ancestor Chi Yan’s eyes shined, his voice beginning to pick up with excitement. Naturally, he couldn’t look down on Lin Ming again. “What suggestions do you have? This old man is listening with all ears!”

The eight trigrams fire array formation was one of his lifelines. In order to forge a heaven-step treasure, one of the greatest constraints was the flame itself. For instance, Purple Comet and other materials on the same rank had to be purified enough to make a heaven-step treasure. But to do this was much easier said than done. Even Ancestor Chi Yan didn’t have the current ability to refine them to that extent.

Lin Ming said, “About the fire rune columns I mentioned before, the fire rune columns can increase the power of flame, but it will also dissipate the fire origin energy. But if three arc symbols were carved into the fire rune columns at calculated distances, then the symbols would be able to confine fire origin essence during rotation, reducing the fire origin energy that dissipates. Of course, the problem is that the arc symbols are easily worn out by fire origin energy, and would have to be redrawn every three years.”

“Once every three years is not a problem!” Ancestor Chi Yan blurted out in excitement. He was just too hyped up at the moment. He had deduced the model in his mind, and it really would be viable!

Chapter 306 – Swallowing the Heaven Opening Pill

Chapter 306 – Swallowing the Heaven Opening Pill

…

…

…

“Once every three years is not a problem!” Ancestor Chi Yan blurted out in excitement. He was just too hyped up at the moment. He had deduced the model in his mind, and it really would be viable!

“That’s great! And the second is about the distribution distances of the spiral runes.” As Lin Ming confidently spoke, Ancestor Chi Yan’s eyes became increasingly bright. Everything that Lin Ming said were matters that concerned ancient array formations. He didn’t imagine that not only would Lin Ming be able to notice the flaws in his array formation, but he would also be able to give him insights into possible solutions!

To find flaws and to give solutions to those flaws were two completely different concepts. For instance, there were some flaws that Ancestor Chi Yan could see, but couldn’t solve.

It was hard to imagine that a mere 16 year old child had already understood the incomparably challenging and difficult ancient array formations to such a degree!

“I also have to be careful of the angles and distance between the 36 spiral runes? Before now, I never thought that the connecting angles would actually have a subtle effect on the fire origin energy!” Ancestor Chi Yan eyes widened as if a great thought had suddenly dawned on him. He already looked over a square array plate, starting to imagine the scenario in his head.

"Right! Right! It truly does have subtle effects on the origin energy force field! If used well, then it can even act as a natural boundary against the fire origin energy! Such a wonderfully innovative idea! It seems simple, but in such a complicated and vast array it so actually impossible difficult to find!"

Ancestor Chi Yan was so excited that he could dance with joy at any moment. He constantly practiced the scenarios and constantly asked Lin Ming series of questions. Lin Ming was instantly able to speak on some questions, but some questions he had to think about for a long time. The conversation between the two became increasingly congenial and speculative, and Mu Qianyu could only watch in amazement from the side.

She watched as the young boy and old man talked jovially for over an hour until the sun began to go down, and they still didn't stop. Words and phrases came from their mouths that she wasn't able to completely understand, but she had a feeling that they were very complex and very profound.

As they conversed, Ancestor Chi Yan had a very eccentric appearance. Sometimes he frowned, sometimes he laughed, sometimes he was suddenly enlightened, sometimes he slapped his thighs in happiness, and sometimes he slapped his own forehead, saying "how come I hadn't thought of this sooner?". It wouldn't be difficult to say that with such exaggerated movements and facial expressions, he was just like a very old and crazy-looking child.

Seeing that these two would probably have a conversation that lasted all night, Mu Qianyu didn't know what to do. She stood up, brewed a pot of tea, then filled two cups to the brim and brought them over.

At this time, the two of them spontaneously picked up the teacups to drink, as if their throats had long become dry.

Looking at the two drinking tea with such a natural appearance, Mu Qianyu didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. A dignified and holy Divine Phoenix Island Saintess had actually become a young maid for a day. She couldn't edge into their conversation in any way, and could only be responsible for pouring tea...

The truth was that Lin Ming was also obtaining a great deal of benefits from this conversation with Ancestor Chi Yan. In the memories of the Realm of the Gods' Supreme Elder, there were many facets that didn't suit Sky Spill Continent. For instance, there were some array formation materials that were only found in the Realm of the Gods, and he needed to look for substitutes in Sky Spill Continent. Also, because of his limited cultivation, there were many array symbols that he couldn't control.

This was all information that Ancestor Chi Yan had obtained after a long period of experimentation and experience, he told Lin Ming without any reservation.

Lin Ming silently remembered all of it. Although his current strength wasn't enough, at some point in the future, it would be useful when he wanted to lay down an array formation.

During the conversation, Ancestor Chi Yan's reverence and admiration of Lin Ming's 'master' increased with every minute. Simply by hearing the names of the unattainable materials and the near impossible array symbols the even he couldn't control, the power and breadth of knowledge of this master could be seen.

Really, knowledge was infinite. No matter how strong one was, there was always someone above!

Ancestor Chi Yan sighed as he felt this once again.

....

After another hour passed, Ancestor Chi Yan's face was a bright ruddy red. He pulled Lin Ming and said, "Nephew Lin, this is a great talk that I've had with you. This was enough for me to save another thirty years in seclusion!"

This statement wasn't too exaggerated. These things that Lin Ming had spoken of, Ancestor Chi Yan might not have had such results even if he meditated for 30 years.

"This chat with Senior has also been of great benefit to me." As Lin Ming heard this title of 'Nephew Lin', he thought it was quite strange. But Ancestor Chi Yan considered him a disciple of Divine Phoenix Island, calling him a good nephew was understandable.

"Haha, don't flatter this old man! We are talking about you here! After listening to you, I have gained too many insights. I will have to ponder on them and improve my eight trigrams fire array formation. Nephew Lin, your spear refinement will have to wait until I improve the array formation. With the new refinement effect from the fire array formation, I will even be able to purify the Purple Comet to a certain degree!" Ancestor Chi Yan's voice was filled with excitement. After increasing the might of the eight trigrams fire array formation, he would be one step closer to his ultimate life goal of refining a heaven-step treasure.

"Then… Nephew Lin, Mu Family's baby girl, you can stay in this old man's home. This old man will give you the best place to cultivate. The fire origin energy is incomparably rich here, and is absolutely superior to cultivating at Divine Phoenix Island! If you cultivate here, you can absorb as much fire origin energy as you want!"

As Mu Qianyu heard Ancestor Chi Yan's words, she didn't know whether to laugh or cry. Somehow, Lin Ming had managed to become the honorable Nephew Lin, while she remained the 'Mu Family's baby girl'. There truly were an unexpected number of events that occurred after visiting this kooky old man.

"It's here."

Ancestor Chi Yan pushed open a thick heavy wooden door that was engraved with an sealing array formation. He pointed to a red altar on the far side, telling Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu to follow him there.

As the door opened, Lin Ming felt a surging wave of heaven and earth origin energy rushing over him. The fire origin energy was so thick and pure that it was almost to the point of substantialization!

If one practiced here, their cultivation would proceed at a breakneck pace!

“A stone altar made from Violent Fire Ore, suppressing the fire spirit vein of the land…” Mu Qianyu mumbled. Indeed, this place was a level above in comparison to cultivating at Divine Phoenix Island.

Seeing Mu Qianyu’s surprise, Ancestor Chi Yan also had a satisfied expression. He had absolute confidence in his own cultivation, and this was where he usually cultivated. The reason that he chose this cave mansion in this uninhabited mountain range was to place down the eight trigrams fire array formation here, but to also cultivate in this precious location.

This was the center of the mountain range’s fire spirit vein. The heaven earth origin energy here was thick to the point of manifesting. In addition, he had also spent a great deal of effort and time in order to carefully lay down an ancient spirit gathering array formation. This was definitely the cultivation holy land that all fire-attribute martial artists yearned for!

“Whether it is improving the eight trigrams fire array formation or forging a spear, none of these can be done in a day. You can cultivate here for now; if you need anything, just tell me.”

With that, Ancestor Chi Yan impatiently left, he couldn’t wait to contemplate his array formation.

Ka!

The wooden door slammed shut, and the sealing array formation on the door began to shine. All of the fire origin energy was completely contained within the room.

Mu Qianyu looked around the chamber. Not only was there the cultivation stone altar, but there were also daily necessities and other goods. There was even a bedroom on one side. Of course, there was only one bed.

But this didn't matter to Mu Qianyu. For those at her level, replacing sleep with mediation was simple and also a good idea. Not just that, but she wasn't used to using other's beds.

"Lin Ming, I estimate that the time that Ancestor Chi Yan needs to perfect the array formation and also complete the refining of the spear will be at least a month of two. During this time, you should study some of the Divine Phoenix Island fire cultivation methods with me; how about it?" After Mu Qianyu glanced around, she turned to Lin Ming and smiled. Although the master behind Lin Ming might be some Peerless Emperor, she didn't expect that she would form any relations with that person through Lin Ming. After all, that sort of existence was just too remote for someone like her.

Lin Ming hesitated and said, "Miss Mu, I plan on swallowing a Heaven Opening Pill first."

Mu Qianyu was surprised, she said, "You want to take one now? I think it's just a bit too early for you. A Heaven Opening Pill may be a top-grade medicine, but eating too many will affect your foundation, and you will also need to spend the time to consolidate your cultivation. It might be better if you wanted until you could attack the Houtian bottleneck before you take the Heaven Opening Pill."

Mu Qianyu lightly said. Naturally she didn't think that there would be any waste in Lin Ming taking the Heaven Opening Pill during the Pulse Condensation period.

"No, I've thought it over, I'll take it now."

As Lin Ming cultivated in recent days, he began to gradually realize just how distant a realm the Tempering Marrow boundary was. It was possible that there wouldn't be much effect even if he took several Heaven Opening Pills, much less it having' any sort of negative change on his foundation.

What he wanted to find out was, just how great of an effect would an ordinary Heaven Opening Pill have? How many Heaven Opening Pills would he need to fully complete Tempering Marrow?

Mu Qianyu didn't try to sway Lin Ming. She was already accustomed to believing in Lin Ming. No matter what impossible matter Lin Ming tried, it seemed that if he decided to do it, it would never be impossible, and he would even be successful.

Mu Qianyu walked up, stroked back the hairs stuck on Lin Ming's forehead and said, "Then take it. I have a few bottles of Body Spiritual Ichor, and some other basic medicines. If you take them with the Heaven Opening Pill, the effects will be much better."

As Mu Qianyu said this, she turned her hand, and three crystal clear medicinal bottles appeared in her palm.

One had to pay attention when swallowing a Heaven Opening Pill. There were medicines that were able to direct the Heaven Opening Pill and allow it to display a superior efficacy. The Body Spiritual Ichor was only able to eliminate pill toxins to a certain degree.

Lin Ming received these bottles, and then downed the contents of all of them. Afterwards, he swallowed down that exquisite longan sized jade crystal like Heaven Opening Pill.

Afterwards, he sat down on the stone altar in meditation.

Once the Heaven Opening Pill entered his mouth, it melted, turning into a stream of heat that poured into his body, flowing into all of his meridians. A slight tingling feeling followed. Before this, Lin Ming knew that a major function of the Heaven Opening Pill was to wash the marrows and muscles, removing the foul Houtian air from the body. Of course, washing down the marrows and muscles was naturally an extremely painful and agonizing process.

As his meridians became increasingly hot, his four limbs actually became incomparably cold. This sort of alternating hot and cold feeling was very uncomfortable.

As the drug efficacy melted into his body, the fluctuations of energy within his meridians became increasingly violent and brutal, running through Lin Ming's body and causing pain like he was being stabbed by countless needles. Even though he had previous experience with taking extremely strong medicines, he still tightly clenches his jaws in pain, drops of sweat dripping off of his forehead.

"Tempering Marrow..."

This thought echoed constantly in Lin Ming's mind. He gripped his fists, and with a nearly obsessive willpower, constantly forced the medicinal energy deep into his bones, sinking into his marrow...

Chapter 307 – Medicine Strength Washing Marrow

Chapter 307 – Medicine Strength Washing Marrow

…

….

…

Although the Tempering Marrow boundary lay above the Pulse Condensation period, one didn't actually need to slowly reach the peak Pulse Condensation period before making a breakthrough to Tempering Marrow. To the contrary, to reach the Tempering Marrow boundary, it didn't matter whether one was at the early Pulse Condensation period or even the late Pulse Condensation period.

In other words, Tempering Marrow and Pulse Condensation were belonged to two completely different cultivation systems.

Tempering Marrow belonged to the Realm of the Gods' Body Transformation cultivation method.

As for the Pulse Condensation, Houtian, Xiantian, and Revolving Core realms, those belonged to the essence gathering cultivation system.

When a martial artist went from Strength Training to Flesh Training to Viscera Training to Altering Muscle and finally to Bone Forging, the true essence of one's body permeated deeper within, becoming more and more thorough. Afterwards, once true essence penetrated the marrow, that was Tempering Marrow.

Otherwise, true essence would flood through the body's meridians – this was called the Pulse Condensation period.

After Pulse Condensation, true essence would converge within the dantian by following along the meridians, and one would enter Houtian, Xiantian. Then, when that true essence became a core within the dantian, that would be the Revolving Core realm.

That is, the Tempering Marrow boundary ran parallel to the Pulse Condensation period.

Tempering Marrow laid the foundation for one to enter the Eight Inner Hidden Gates; this was Body Transformation.

But, once Pulse Condensation true essence penetrated through the meridians and converged into the dantian, this was laying the foundation for the essence gathering system.

However, reaching Pulse Condensation was easy, whereas Tempering Marrow was incomparably difficult. That was why normally one would reach the Pulse Condensation period first and then go onwards to the Tempering Marrow boundary.

This was what Lin Ming was doing now.

He followed the methods and principles found within the Tempering Marrow portion of the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' in order to forcefully control the medicinal efficacy and slowly penetrate it into the bone, bit by bit.

The Heaven Opening Pill's medicinal power was extremely savage and violent. If a normal martial artist consumed the Heaven Opening Pill, they could only ease the way and slowly refine it. But if someone did the same as Lin Ming and tried to bind the Heaven Opening Pill's medicinal efficacy with their true essence and force it into the marrow, it would provoke a strong counterattack from the medicinal strength!

Lin Ming felt as if his blood had been replaced by burning lava; wherever it went, there would be a bone-biting pain!

“Lin Ming, are you alright…” As Mu Qianyu watched Lin Ming’s appearance that seemed like he was in deep suffering, she was somewhat worried. If one’s strength was insufficient, they might even die upon eating the Heaven Opening Pill. Since the ancient times, there had been Pulse Condensation period martial artists who wished to rush forwards, and after swallowing the Heaven Opening Pill they would suffer a horribly violent death because they could not fully digest the medicine’s potency.

However, Mu Qianyu hadn’t worried that this would happen to Lin Ming. After all, Lin Ming’s strength was far above that. If he were placed within a small country, his strength would be equivalent to a late Houtian martial artist and above.

But now seeing Lin Ming’s pained appearance, Mu Qianyu’s heart stopped for a moment. Lin Ming’s reaction was just too intense, it was beyond what she had imagined.

In absorbing the Heaven Opening Pill, it was useless for others to try to help. Mu Qianyu could only take a handkerchief and wipe away the sweat from Lin Ming’s forehead.

In this touch, Mu Qianyu found that Lin Ming’s forehead was burning with a raging heat.

“What’s going on?” Mu Qianyu’s eyebrows furrowed together. Was there an accident when he was trying to absorb the Heaven Opening Pill medicinal efficacy?

For a moment Mu Qianyu hesitated, thinking about whether she should use her own deep cultivation in order to forcefully compel the medicine out of Lin Ming’s body. At this moment, Lin Ming waved his hand with some difficulty, clenched his teeth and said, “I… I’m alright…”

When he opened his mouth, Mu Qianyu saw that his teeth were stained red with blood.

It wasn’t that Lin Ming couldn’t withstand the medicinal efficacy of the Heaven Opening Pill, it was only that forcing true essence to enter the marrow was simply too difficult.

Lin Ming felt like his bones were an impregnable bastion. He stiffly forced a wisp of the Heaven Opening Pill's medicinal efficacy a bit at a time, but every time was as if his bones were being drilled into!

At first, Lin Ming had been stuck and at the peak Bone Forging stage for a long time. Finally, his true essence had naturally overflowed, resulting in a perfect breakthrough!

This course of action laid a solid foundation. But his bones had been hardened by the prolonged forging of true essence, and they were nearly perfect in density, without a single flaw.

But the more solid the skeleton was, the more difficult it was to penetrate the drug efficacy into the bone!

However, Lin Ming did not regret this a single bit.

The more difficult it was to break through, the more thorough and complete Tempering Marrow would be!

Only when the medicinal efficacy of the Heaven Opening Pill underwent purification through the dense bone would it achieve the best effect towards Tempering Marrow.

Lin Ming's philosophy was…

In order to lay a foundation, it must be laid in the most complete and solid manner.

In order to break through a boundary, it must be go through a perfect breakthrough!

After a quarter of an hour, Lin Ming's entire body was soaked in sweat. At this time, within his body, in his marrow, there was just the slightest tint of gold that was impossibly difficult to see!

Marrow like golden soup, that was the symbol of Tempering Marrow!

However, Lin Ming didn't even feel the slightest bit of joy, he only felt very depressed. This was because it was an incomparably small amount!

He had used up one fifth of the Heaven Opening Pill's medicinal efficacy, but he only managed to create such a tiny trace of Tempering Marrow that could hardly be seen. If he wanted to fully complete the process, he feared that he would need to repeat this whole process 10 or 20 thousand times. Could it be that in order to fully complete the Tempering Marrow boundary, he needed several thousand Heaven Opening Pills!?!?

Heavens!

Even if the rich and resourceful Divine Phoenix Island were to supply him with several thousand Heaven Opening Pills, he would probably die from stuffing himself with that many!

It had to be known that the Seven Profound Valleys only made between 20 and 30 Heaven Opening Pills every three years. On average, they had eight or nine Heaven Opening Pills every year. As for Divine Phoenix Island, they could make several dozen Heaven Opening Pills in one year. With this speed, it would still take Divine Phoenix Island over a hundred years to gather several thousand Heaven Opening Pills!

No matter how talented Lin Ming was, or how much of a monstrous genius he was, it would be impossible for Divine Phoenix Island to perform such an impossibly difficult feat for him and save up every single one of their Heaven Opening Pills for the next 100 years.

Not only that, but even if Divine Phoenix Island were willing, Lin Ming would not wait.

Was he destined not to fully complete the Tempering Marrow boundary?

Thinking about the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and Nine Stars of the Dao Palace recorded within the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians', and the images of his feet cracking the earth, and his fist shattering stars, Lin Ming was unwilling to let this go. In any event, he would not give up on the Tempering Marrow boundary. As long as he had just a bit of hope, he would still manage to find a way.

He would do it bit by bit, slowly, and inexorably!

After shoring up his resolve, Lin Ming clenched his teeth and continued to absorb the leftover efficacy of the Heaven Opening Pill.

If Lin Ming used the Heaven Opening Pill on his entire body, there might not be any effect from the Tempering Marrow.

Although Lin Ming was rich, he wasn't wealthy to the point of gobbling up Heaven Opening Pills like candy. He couldn't accept eating up such a rare and precious Heaven Opening Pill and not gaining even the tiniest bit of growth in his strength.

Thinking this, Lin Ming used the techniques found within the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians', revolving all of the true essence in his body and forcing every bit of drug efficacy into his right hand.

Since there wasn't any effect in tempering the entire body, then he might as well focus on tempering just a single spot!

Lin Ming chose his right hand. Whether it was the Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist or using his spear, the right hand was the most critical part.

First he would temper his right hand, and then reconsider his options.

The medicinal efficacy rushed to his right hand like a tide. Under the oppression the medicine, Lin Ming's right hand felt as if a saber was being twisted into it. If it wasn't for the many body transformations that he had undergone within the Sorcerer Pagoda that made his body incomparably tough, his hand might have already exploded into bloody bits.

Then Lin Ming forced the medicinal efficacy into his right hand, it was truly difficult.

His entire right hand bulged red like a bag of blood, and the blue veins on his hand throbbed like massive earthworms, fiercely wriggling. Lin Ming fell over, pressing his right hand against his body as he barely held against the pain of the medicinal efficacy tempering his marrow. Beads of sweat tumbled down his hair, flowing to the ground.

Time passed slowly, and finally an hour passed. Lin Ming had finally refined most of the Heaven Opening Pill. At this time, he felt as if he were a weak newborn baby.

His true essence consumption had been too great. Lin Ming rolled over flat on the stone altar, taking great, heaving gasps.

Fortunately, this location was unique. With every breath, a great amount of fire origin energy entered his body, quickly being absorbed into the Heretical God Seed and moistening Lin Ming's dried meridians.

As he looked at his right hand, there was only the thinnest layer of pale gold that just skimmed over the surface of the bone marrow. Although this was far from achieving the boundary of marrow like golden soup, Lin Ming could still feel that this tiny part of his marrow was filled with an overwhelming blood vitality!

"Only a little marrow of my hand has the faintest hint of pale gold. Although there isn't any change in my forearm, it seems to be much redder..."

Lin Ming was speaking to himself. A human had two types of marrow: the first was a yellow marrow, and the second was a red marrow. Only the red marrow could create blood.

When a baby was just born, its entire body was filled with red marrow that could create blood. But as one slowly aged, the bone cavity that held the red marrow gradually filled with fat, turning the red marrow into yellow marrow that could no longer produce blood.

The older a person was, the higher the proportion of yellow marrow would be, causing a person's blood vitality to be insufficient. That was why a baby's blood vitality was so much more vigorous and potent that the elderly's.

Lin Ming's right forearm had already changed into pure red bone marrow. If his entire body's marrow could change to pure red bone marrow, then the power of blood vitality would be much more robust, and whether it was endurance or resilience, all would be much more formidable!

"Lin Ming, are you alright?" Seeing that Lin Ming had finally regained consciousness, Mu Qianyu let out a breath of relief, handing over her handkerchief to him. She hadn't thought that Lin Ming would have such a brutal reaction after swallowing the Heaven Opening Pill.

"I'm alright." Lin Ming waved his hand and took the handkerchief that Mu Qianyu handed over. He found that this piece of cloth that contained a faint heavenly fragrance had already become dirty; obviously, this was because of him.

Lin Ming awkwardly smiled, abashed. He looked down and saw that his entire body was covered in a thick layer of greasy black oil. The Heaven Opening Pill was able to wash the marrows and muscles, a miracle cure that was able to remove the foul Houtian air. After eating one, one would naturally discharge impurities.

Lin Ming couldn't stand the sticky feeling of laying down in this grease. He said to Mu Qianyu, "I'm going to take a bath."

"Mm, go ahead."

At the back of Ancestor Chi Yan's cave was a deep pool that had been excavated. Lin Ming hurried there with long steps, and when he reached it, he didn't actually start removing his clothes to take a bath, but instead looked to see that no one was there, and then took a low-grade human-step treasure sword from his spatial ring.

Looking at the shining tip of the treasure sword, Lin Ming suddenly stretched out his right and grabbed the sword edge. He didn't use any true essence protection but just depended on the bare flesh of his palm, firmly digging his fingers into the treasure sword, kneading and twisting.

Zhi zhi zhi –

In the silence of the bathing pool, there was only the clear screeching sound of deforming metal. Lin Ming felt some slight pain in his hand, but his hand actually wasn't cut at all by the sword edge.

After several breaths, the low-grade human-step treasure sword was completely bent out of shape by Lin Ming. The blade had been twisted into a mess. This was a treasure sword that Huo Gong had made, and could also be considered among the top of all low-grade human-step treasures.

In other words, the toughness of Lin Ming's right had had actually surpassed that of a low-grade human-step treasure!

Lin Ming had once depended on using Flow like Silk to 'meet a bare blade with an empty palm'. But now, he could actually twist a treasure sword without any true essence protection.

The dynamic strength of Lin Ming's right hand's flesh had actually reached such a degree. If he used it with his true essence, his defensive power would truly reach a terrifying level!

Not only that, but the stronger his bodily strength was, the stronger his attack strength would be. With a single punch, he would be able to crack rocks. It could be said that when that happened, Lin Ming's own body would become a treasure weapon.

Chapter 308 – Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle

Chapter 308 – Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle

…

…

…

The 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' had stated that after going through Strength Training, Flesh Training, Viscera Training, Altering Muscle, and Bone Forging by tempering the body with true essence, the biggest impediment after that would be the human marrow. If the marrow is not tempered, it cannot be shocked, and it would be vulnerable to injury. This was the greatest weakness to Body Transformation martial artists.

But after the tempering of the marrow had been fully completed, not only would it eliminate this vulnerability, but it would also enhance the fusion of true essence and the body, within and without, true essence would be seamlessly unified from all directions. Only when this was achieved could one attain the most stable and perfect stage.

Lin Ming stood near the deep pool and continued to revolve the 'True Primal Chaos Formula', feeling the Tempering Marrow boundary. After this change in his hand, the true essence really did unify, and had experienced a qualitative leap.

The 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' was right, but as Lin Ming thought of the exceedingly harsh conditions necessary to fully complete Tempering Marrow, he felt a headache creeping up. If things continued like this, he would probably have to reach the Revolving Core realm before he had the strength to collect the pills he needed to finish Tempering Marrow.

Although Tempering Marrow belonged to a completely different cultivation system from the essence gathering system, it was still better to break through sooner. At least, the best outcome would be if he could do so before he turned 20.

But no matter how heaven defying a talent one was, it was impossible to reach the Revolving Core realm before 20 years of age. After, it would still take an unknown amount of time to collect the materials he needed. If he missed the best time to temper his marrow, then his marrow would age, and it would become much more difficult to fully complete Tempering Marrow.

Just how should he proceed?

Lin Ming quickly took a bath, taking a spare set of clothes from his spatial ring, and then returned to the cultivation chamber.

Mu Qianyu saw Lin Ming come back, his hair slicked back and wet, a new set of clean clothes on, and looking quite refreshed and gallant. She finally breathed a sigh of relief. "Lin Ming, did you take the Heaven Opening Pill to wash your marrow and muscles? I think that you released a very small amount of impurities."

The Heaven Opening Pill had an extremely dominant power to wash the marrow and muscle, especially when used by earthly martial artists. They would often discharge thick layers of gray sludge, but Lin Ming only discharged a bit of the foul Houtian air. This was why Mu Qianyu had asked.

"Mm… I ate it." Lin Ming awkwardly nodded. When he had taken the Heaven Opening Pill, 90% of the medicinal efficacy had been used by him for Tempering Marrow; the little bit left behind was in his meridians. He hadn't used any to wash his marrow and muscles.

Mu Qianyu's eyes swept Lin Ming from head to toe, and finally gave a satisfied nod, saying, "I don't think your cultivation rose by much. Probably, the medicinal efficacy is hiding somewhere in your body. But you don't need to worry about that. After you take the Heaven Opening Pill, you only need to go into seclusion for a period to slowly pull out and absorb the power of the medicine. After that, your strength should be able to break through to the middle Pulse Condensation period, or maybe even the late Pulse Condensation period. But this type of cultivation doesn't come from practice, so it's best if you also spend a good period of time consolidating in order to have the best result. If you eat another Heaven Opening Pill before you reach the Houtian realm, it probably won't do you much good. It's simply not worth it."

"Uh… I, um, I understand." Lin Ming half-heartedly smiled. After such a lie, he also had to use more lies to conceal his last lies. Where was there any leftover medicinal efficacy in his body? All of it had already been cleanly sucked out. His cultivation hadn't risen by much, and he was still quite far from reaching the middle Pulse Condensation period.

Mu Qianyu beckoned Lin Ming over and said, "Lin Ming, sit down over here, I want to test your fire origin energy fusion compatibility."

Lin Ming hesitated, and then nodded. He sat cross-legged in front of Mu Qianyu. He didn't know just what the standards were for Sky Spill Continent or what grade of fire origin energy fusion compatibility he had.

"Relax your body. Don't try to purposely control the way your body absorbs fire origin energy."

Mu Qianyu took hold of Lin Ming's hand and then closed her eyes. Then, Lin Ming felt a strange fluctuation of fire origin energy in his body, as true essence entered into him. He absorbed the true essence, letting it judge just what grade his fusion compatibility with fire was.

Maybe it was because the fire origin energy in the room was too rich, but when Mu Qianyu sat on the altar, she slightly perspired, releasing an extremely delightful and alluring fragrance. Since Lin Ming was so close to Mu Qianyu and they were facing each other, he was somewhat distracted.

A moment later, Mu Qianyu opened her eyes, a bit of disappointment on her face. “You are maybe an inferior sixth-grade fusion compatibility…”

A martial artist that had this degree of fusion compatibility with any element was already heaven defying, much less Lin Ming who was a double-attribute. His thunder origin energy fusion compatibility was definitely higher.

But Mu Qianyu was still a bit dissatisfied. Divine Phoenix Island’s cultivation method had extremely harsh requirements of fire origin energy fusion compatibility. For instance, Mu Qianyu’s fire origin energy fusion compatibility was a superior seventh-grade that absolutely defied the will of the heavens!

A sixth-grade fusion compatibility was just at the barest standard to study the core cultivation methods. However, if Lin Ming wanted to achieve the highest levels of this cultivation method, it would probably be impossible.

Mu Qianyu felt a great deal of regret. Besides his fire attribute, Mu Qianyu didn’t have much in common with Lin Ming’s other strengths. The only thing that could strengthen the bond between her and Lin Ming were the cultivation methods of Divine Phoenix Island.

“Inferior sixth-grade?” Lin Ming wasn’t surprised. Although the Heretical God Seed was amazing, all of the other strengths of his body had no connection to the fire attribute, so of course he wouldn’t have a fire origin energy fusion compatibility that defied the heavens.

‘I wonder what will happen when I take that super valuable spear that Ancestor Chi Yan is refining, and then go to the Southern Wilderness to eliminate the Fire Worm Shaman. After I absorb the Eternal Flame Flame Essence, just what degree of fusion compatibility will my fire attribute reach?’

The greatest and most distinct feature that the Heretical God Force had in comparison to normal martial artists was that it had the capabilities to evolve and grow. Because Lin Ming had absorbed the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, his thunder origin energy fusion compatibility absolutely surpassed a mere inferior sixth-grade.

This was the strange and unbelievable power of the Heretical God Force. Lin Ming sighed. The Heretical God Force was too powerful. It was no wonder that the Supreme Elder from the Realm of the Gods had taken this secret skill as the most precious one he had ever obtained in his lifetime, even above the ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’.

Not only that, but even though the ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’ was extremely rare and precious, there were still some other people who knew about it in the Realm of the Gods. But the Heretical God Force was actually unique; this secret skill was obtained in some ancient ruins, and was probably created by some archaic Evil God.

When that Supreme Elder had discovered the Heretical God Force, it had already been sealed for a countless number of years. Afterwards, the Supreme Elder had carefully kept this secret skill hidden without leaking any details of it. This made it even more precious.

Unfortunately, that Supreme Elder of the Realm of the Gods hadn’t been able to thoroughly study and research the Heretical God Force in detail. He had only practiced it to the third layer, and then he followed Tian Mingzi to the Verdant Feather Holy Lands to steal the Divine Crystal Magic Cube, finally dying with his soul shattered.

Now, discovering any new information on the Heretical God Force depended on Lin Ming’s own luck and ability. He stumbled onto the fact that it responded to thunder and fire attribute origin energy, but as for the other types such as earth, ice, wood, water, or anything else, he had no idea how to utilize those different types of origin energy.

Mu Qianyu looked at Lin Ming then hesitated, saying, “Lin Ming, would you be willing to study Divine Phoenix Island’s fire attribute cultivation methods?”

Lin Ming nodded, “I’d like to try.”

The cultivation methods of Divine Phoenix Island were naturally far inferior to the cultivation methods that the Supreme Elder knew in the Realm of the Gods. However, although the Supreme Elder’s cultivation methods were amazing, they didn’t suit him. At best, there were just a few cultivation methods in the memories, and he couldn't choose a specific direction that he wanted to go in.

In the past, Lin Ming had wanted to study a thunder attribute cultivation method in order to make up for his lack of speed. But, to find a high-grade thunder attribute cultivation method manual within the Sky Spill Continent was much easier said than done. On the other hand, Divine Phoenix Island's cultivation methods were already considered to be at the top.

"Lin Ming, your true essence is far thicker and purer than that of a martial artist at the same level, and your body also has several special places within it. I think that you have already studied some sort of top quality cultivation method from your master. Although I don't know what sort of cultivation method it is, I have to say that the amazing cultivation methods of Divine Phoenix Island won't lose out to any other fire attribute cultivation method." These days, Mu Qianyu had spent a great deal of time with Lin Ming. With her cultivation and great eyesight, she was able to see that there were many unusual aspects about Lin Ming's body. However, she didn't ask about these, as every powerhouse had their own secrets to keep.

"But, since you haven't formally joined Divine Phoenix Island, the most I can pass on to you is the first few layers. Before I pass this onto you, you must swear that you will not leak these cultivation methods." Mu Qianyu looked at Lin Ming with a very serious and solemn expression in her eyes, her each and every syllable pronounced clearly and loudly.

"I swear upon my heart of martial arts, that if I do not have Divine Phoenix Island's permission, I will not divulge anything." Lin Ming took an oath without hesitating. Every sect had their own inheritances and legacies that were equivalent to their lifeblood. These inheritances and legacies were the fundamental basis for every sect.

"Good. Then, this cultivation method is called the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. It originates from the ancient Phoenix Clan. Unfortunately... this cultivation method has a flaw, otherwise, even the few Holy Lands of Sky Spill Continent might covet it."

As Mu Qianyu spoke, she heaved a great sigh. The ancient Phoenix Clan had the bloodline of a Phoenix – that was a true God Beast. It wasn't an existence that a Vermillion Bird or any other Saint Beast could compare with. Since they had left behind a cultivation method, the terrifying fearsomeness of its power could be imagined.

"The two great core cultivation methods of Divine Phoenix Island are the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' and the 'Blue Luan Abstract Phantom Code'. More than half has been lost, otherwise Divine Phoenix Island would have already become a Holy Land! Even though these two cultivation methods have flaws, their formidable power already surpasses many core cultivation methods of fifth-grade sects. If one wishes to study these two sets of cultivation methods to the core boundary, one needs the bloodline of the Vermillion Bird or Blue Lian. Otherwise, the fifth-grade sects would have already long rampaged and plundered Divine Phoenix Island.

"It is said that with the complete secret texts of the ancient Phoenix race, if one cultivated their manuals to the highest realm, then one's body could become like a Phoenix, rebirthing through nirvana in a sea of flames, immortal and indestructible…"

As Mu Qianyu spoke, Lin Ming was shocked.

One's body could become like a Phoenix, rebirthing through nirvana in a sea of flames, immortal and indestructible?

If what Mu Qianyu said wasn't an exaggeration, then the secret texts of this ancient Phoenix Clan were no worse than the top cultivation methods within the Realm of the Gods, and might also be tied with the Heretical God Force that was left behind by an archaic Evil God!

Of course, the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' and the 'Blue Luan Abstract Phantom Code' were just a small part of the ancient Phoenix Clan's secret texts, and most of it was missing, flawed.

Alas, these was how things were. Still, Lin Ming's heart couldn't help but stir and he asked, "Miss Mu said that in order to practice these cultivation methods to the core boundary, I will need the bloodline of a Vermillion Bird or Blue Luan. Does that mean that I cannot cultivate these methods?"

Mu Qianyu sighed. Even if Lin Ming had the bloodline of a Vermillion Bird, he was limited by his fire origin energy fusion compatibility; there was no way he would be able to cultivate it to the highest level.

Mu Qianyu said, "Divine Phoenix Island has a secret technique to transplant part of a Saint Beast's bloodline into you. However, if the bloodline is too thin, it will be insufficient to study the most core section of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. Only if..." As Mu Qianyu spoke, she suddenly fell silent, her face flashing with the color of embarrassment.

Chapter 309 – Child of Flame

Chapter 309 – Child of Flame

…

…

…

"Only if what?" Lin Ming asked, puzzled.

"Mm… nothing, forget about it." Mu Qianyu awkwardly said as she shook her head, "Let's start."

Mu Qianyu tried to switch topics, but Lin Ming could actually see a faint pink blush creeping up behind Mu Qianyu's ears, causing him to be surprised. However, Mu Qianyu seemed to only reluctantly mention this so-called 'what if'. It was best if he didn't press her on the topic.

"This is a jade slip that contains the first layer of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. First, look at the cultivation method and then I'll help you get started. Afterwards you can officially begin practicing."

Mu Qianyu took out a flame-colored jade slip from her spatial ring. Creating a cultivation method jade slip was a very difficult task. First, one had to reach the Large Success stage of the cultivation method and personally master and create it in order for it to work. The fact that Mu Qianyu could carry around a jade slip of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' and look through it at any time was naturally because of her status as a Saintess.

Lin Ming received the jade slip and extended his soul force into it. Suddenly, his heart stirred. This was an ancient manual that unified cultivation methods and martial skills. But the first secret skill caused Lin Ming's to burst with joy. This was a technique to control fire!

The Heretical God Seed was astoundingly strong, and it had the ability to absorb fire. It could even grow strong by hunting other Flame Essences. However, the method to manipulate fire was actually up to Lin Ming to research on his own.

Although Lin Ming had great perception, it was still impossible for him to naturally self-learn how to manipulate fire. With the inspiration he obtained from the Thunderbolt Devilfire Bead, Lin Ming was able to create his own skill, Thunderfire Annihilation. But, his other methods of controlling fire were of the most superficial and basic kind, and that was mostly to use a flame and directly burn the enemy.

But this jade slip actually contained a great deal of methods to control fire.

For instance, there were methods to create flame armor, flame shields, flame guards, flame ropes, flame compression, and many other techniques. In addition to directly controlling fire, there were also special methods such as using fire to place seals on treasure, increase the power of treasure, and many other secret skills that were of great interest to Lin Ming.

This part of how to control fire was enough to make Lin Ming's heart move just thinking about the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'.

While Lin Ming focused his time on studying this jade slip, Mu Qianyu sat in meditation on the side and practiced. She occasionally had some strange feelings well within her.

If one wished to cultivate the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' or the 'Blue Luan Abstract Phantom Code' to the highest level, then one needed to have an extremely rich and pure bloodline of either the Vermillion Bird or the Blue Luan.

But Divine Phoenix Island's special method of transplanting bloodlines, in truth, was only drawing blood from the body of the Vermillion Bird or Blue Luan Saint Beasts and then using a special arcane skill to inject it into someone's body. In addition, this blood of the Vermillion Bird or Blue Luan was very diluted and weak, it was far from being of sufficient purity.

But, there was an exception…

That was to take up intimate relations with those of Divine Phoenix Island who had the richest bloodline of the Saint Beast, and obtain their Primordial Yin energy. By doing so, they could obtain a very pure and rich Saint Beast bloodline and gain the ability to cultivate the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' or the 'Blue Luan Abstract Phantom Code' to the highest level.

But this so-called 'individual' with the richest Saint Beast bloodline was in truth the Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island. In other words, it was Mu Qianyu and her little sister, Mu Bingyun.

This matter was known only to a select few. Divine Phoenix Island would do anything in order to avoid this secret from spreading, because if it did, it would certainly invite a bloody disaster upon their sect. Once, long ago, there was a demonic man who used a fire attribute cultivation method. He captured the Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island, and had wished to violate her and obtain her Primordial Yin energy so that he could cultivate the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. Because of this, a calamity was brought down upon Divine Phoenix Island.

This 'only if' was something that was unspeakable for Mu Qianyu.

Like this, the two of them fell into their monotonous cultivation. Lin Ming was deeply immersed within the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', while Mu Qianyu quietly meditated, absorbing the rich fire origin energy.

Mu Qianyu estimated that with Lin Ming's monstrous perception, it would take him maybe less than half an hour to completely memorize and comprehend a small part of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. It was a pity that Lin Ming's fire origin energy fusion compatibility was his constraint; there was no way to make up for this no matter how high his perception was.

‘Such a pity… I hope that he doesn’t give up on the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. That would be nice…’ Mu Qianyu subconsciously hoped that Lin Ming was able to cultivate the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ to the highest level. Like this, he would truly become a disciple of Divine Phoenix Island.

But this was impossible.

Only if…

Thinking this, Mu Qianyu automatically blushed. Although she had experienced some ambiguous and strange experiences with Lin Ming, in her eyes, she had never thought of Lin Ming like that. In her eyes, Lin Ming was just too young.

Mu Qianyu was 27, and Lin Ming was 16. To those Revolving Core masters that had an prolonged youth, an 11 year difference was nothing. But to the current Mu Qianyu, Lin Ming was simply a young boy.

Not only that, but Mu Qianyu had never thought that she would involve herself with the intimate matters between men and women. Maintaining her pure virgin body and Primordial Yin energy was also of great benefit to her own cultivation.

Maybe it was because the room was too hot, or she had sat for too long, but Mu Qianyu felt a bit uncomfortable. She readied herself to go and take a bath. Mu Qianyu was a woman who loved to stay clean, bathing daily was already a long formed habit of hers.

She turned around to glance at Lin Ming, he was completely engrossed in the jade slip. Then Mu Qianyu quietly left…

………………

“Martial artists cannot directly control fire… they must unify the fire origin energy that can control fire with their own true essence, and through this combination control fire…”

As Lin Ming thought aloud, he clasped his hands together and then slowly opened his palms. A small fire snake appeared in his palms. As he revolved his true essence according to the methods inscribed within the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', the fire snake in Lin Ming's palms began to become slimmer, longer, and more condensed. Finally, it was like a real-life snake.

Under the absolute suppressive power of the Heretical God Seed, the normally savage fire origin energy had become surprisingly docile. Lin Ming was able to knead it and move it around just like a ball of dough.

"Just a bit more..."

Lin Ming continued to revolve the true essence in his body. Finally, the two fire snakes within his palms turned into red flaming chains that linked together.

In the next moment, the flames completely converged together, and the chains seemed to gain substance. There was almost no difference between these flame chains and red hot iron chains!

"I did it!"

Lin Ming was extremely joyous. He withdrew the Heavy Profound Soft Spear from his spatial ring, and then attached the flame chains directly onto the end of the spear. Suddenly, his Heavy Profound Soft Spear had turned into a chained spear!

"Go!"

Lin Ming used his strength and threw the 1200 jins Heavy Profound Soft Spear. The spear flew out like an arrow, and the chains suddenly tightened.

Peng!

With a bang, the Heavy Profound Soft Spear smashed into the cave mansion wall's protective array formation, causing a shimmering light curtain to appear.

The array formation that Ancestor Chi Yan had laid down in his cave mansion was naturally not something that Lin Ming was able to damage.

At this moment, Mu Qianyu finished bathing and returned to the room. As she walked in, she just happened to see with her own wide eyes the flaming chain in Lin Ming's hand that looked no different to a real chain. Mu Qianyu's eyes went perfectly round. It she didn't feel the rich fire origin energy coming from the red chains, she would have thought that they were true chains.

"You… you already learned how to form flame chains?"

Mu Qianyu found this difficult to believe. Creating a flame chain was much more difficult than forming a flame shield or flame armor. Even Mu Qianyu had spent an entire day in order to learn how to do this, but Lin Ming had actually done it in the time that she had bathed?

How could this be so quick!?!?

Lin Ming's fire origin energy fusion compatibility was far inferior to hers!

"Mm…" Lin Ming nodded. Seeing Mu Qianyu's shocked expression, he figured that he probably did something extraordinary and amazing. But he had done this sort of thing often enough, so he didn't think it mattered if he did it a few more times.

In truth, a flame chain was just true essence manifestation, similar to thunder manifestation where energy itself was condensed into substance. Lin Ming knew that his ability to easily control fire origin energy stemmed from the overwhelming power of the Heretical God Seed. This Heretical God Seed could even suppress an earth-grade Thunder Soul like the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder; forcing some fire origin energy into submission was just a joke.

Mu Qianyu was left speechless. She had personally determined Lin Ming's fire origin energy fusion compatibility. She had thought that Lin Ming would encounter many difficulties and problems in learning the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', but she didn't imagine that in just less than half an hour, Lin Ming would already be playing around with flame chains...

Heavens!

What a monster!

This sort of monstrous perception simply couldn't be rationalized through common sense. Mu Qianyu could only attribute Lin Ming's ability to control flame to his terrifying perception. After all, the technique for controlling fire was still a skill, and it would depend on one's own perception to comprehend it.

As Mu Qianyu thought this, she eliminated the doubt in her heart. But then a series of matters happened that caused her mouth to twitch over and over again.

Half an hour later, the flame in Lin Ming's hand turned into a crimson shield.

Then, after another half an hour, a deep ruby red armor appeared around Lin Ming.

Then, after another hour, Lin Ming turned a ball of flames into a series of mystical runes, branding them onto the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, turning the originally silver long spear into a luminescent red.

....

At this time, Mu Qianyu was already numbed senseless.

She didn't know what expression to make to express her feelings. She finally understood why Lin Ming was able to comprehend ancient array formations at a tender age of 16, to a degree at which he formed theories that made even that crazy kook Ancestor Chi Yan dance with happiness.

Lin Ming's perception was something that a human shouldn't have.

She had thought that she would let Lin Ming take a look at the jade slip first and then help direct him into her sect and smooth the path of cultivation for him. Now, it seemed that her thoughts were just a funny joke.

However, what Mu Qianyu didn't know was that these awe-inspiring miracles had just begun.

Two days later, when Lin Ming began to truly start practicing the source cultivation method of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Record', his practice speed bamboozled Mu Qianyu once more.

As Lin Ming sat in meditation, a thick twisting vortex of origin energy had already started to swirl around him, and all of the incomparably rich and pure fire origin energy in the surroundings was continuously gathered into this vortex. It was just like a giant whale sucking in water!

A terrifying amount of fire origin energy flowed into Lin Ming's body, without even a tiny bit leaking out. It was as if Lin Ming's body was a bottomless pit; once it went in, nothing came out. How much fire origin there was, was how much was absorbed.

This fearsome origin energy absorption rate caused Mu Qianyu to be shocked. How could Lin Ming's fire origin energy fusion compatibility only be a measly inferior sixth-grade?

'Something's not right. The technique to control fire partially depends on one's perception. If one has good perception, then having a fast practice speed isn't strange. But, to cultivate the source cultivation depended only on one's fusion compatibility with fire. If the fusion grade isn't high enough, then it's useless even with amazing perception! But Lin Ming's current cultivation speed...'

Mu Qianyu was alarmed. Lin Ming's cultivation speed violated the rules of the world. It was just like the legendary child of flame that was born within the ashes of infernos. A martial artist had to use their true essence to control fire, but a child of flame could suppress fire itself into submission.

Chapter 310 – Divine Spear Complete

Chapter 310 – Divine Spear Complete

…

…

…

At this time, Lin Ming who was cultivating didn't know what Mu Qianyu was thinking, nor did he know that his cultivation speed was far too exaggerated for someone who should have a sixth-grade fire origin energy fusion compatibility.

Lin Ming had already entered into the ethereal martial intent state and sealed off his six senses, completely immersed in the happy feelings that came with cultivation.

The 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' was naturally an unbelievably marvelous cultivation method with a thousand benefits. However, it was only a Body Transformation cultivation method. Above Tempering Marrow was the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

This cultivation system couldn't be used to break through to the Houtian realm or Xiantian realm.

Lin Ming wanted to open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, but he wasn't planning on giving up on reaching Houtian, Xiantian, and the Revolving Core realms.

So Lin Ming had been missing an essence gathering cultivation system to cultivate his true essence. The 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' just happened to fill in this missing space.

Although this cultivation method had many flaws, because of the presence of the Heretical God Seed, all of the fire attribute fire origin energy around Lin Ming was as docile as sheep, freely allowing Lin Ming to manipulate it in any way he wanted. Because of this, Lin Ming could cultivate the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' with half the effort and twice the results. This was simply a cultivation method that was tailored towards Lin Ming's strengths!

When Mu Qianyu had first cultivated the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' she had reached Pulse Condensation at 15, Houtian at 17, Xiantian at 22, extreme Xiantian at 26, and now at 27 years of age, she was a half-step into the Revolving Core realm!

Lin Ming's current cultivation speed of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' was far inferior to Mu Qianyu, someone who possessed a truly terrifying superior seventh-grade fire origin energy fusion compatibility. Even if Lin Ming possessed the Heretical God Speed, that was a speed that he couldn't hope to reach.

But the greatest advantage of the Heretical God Seed was that it could grow. What would happen once he absorbed another Flame Essence?

If that happened, the Lin Ming's cultivation speed would constantly increase, and in the future, he might even surpass Mu Qianyu!

Thinking this, Lin Ming was increasingly hungry for the Fire Worm Tribe's Flame Essence. If the Southern Wilderness wasn't so far away, he would have probably wouldn't have waited for the spear and directly paid a visit to the Fire Worm Tribe.

Because of the incomparably rich and pure fire origin energy, the top quality cultivation method 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', in addition to the perfect fit of the Heretical God Seed in assisting him with the cultivation method, Lin Ming's cultivation speed would be able to progress at 10,000 miles per day. 10 days later, his cultivation had already reached the peak of the early Pulse Condensation period.

Of course, this was also partly due to the amazing merits of the Heaven Opening Pill.

On this day, there was suddenly an extremely loud explosion sound outside of the cave mansion, so forceful that even the protective array formation fiercely trembled. Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu didn't know what happened, so they hurriedly ran out of the cave mansion, and saw a disheveled and messy Ancestor Chi Yan doing a jiggy dance in joy.

"Haha, I did it, I finally did it!"

Seeing Ancestor Chi Yan like this, Mu Qianyu breathed a sigh of relief. She didn't know whether to laugh or to cry; for a moment, she even thought that the entire eight trigrams fire array formation had imploded.

"Haha, Nephew Lin, you came at just the right time. What do you think about my great array formation now?" Ancestor Chi Yan waved behind himself. Because he had been continually working night and day for the last 10 days to perfect his array formation, Ancestor Chi Yan was covered in soot and dirt, most of his robe burnt black. He looked like the crazy old hermit he was.

Lin Ming looked at Ancestor Chi Yan's eyes that shined with an aberrant light, and gulped. He nodded, "It's um… very good. Perfect."

"Haha, today – no, tomorrow, I will forge the best spear for you! First, I must rest for the evening and adjust my condition to its best form!"

………………………………

The next morning –

All the materials were placed atop the stone altar. There was the 10,000 year Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, the 10,000 year Sacred Flame Parasol Tree, a little bit of crystallized fire that was left behind after a Vermillion Bird underwent nirvana, a palm-sized piece of Purple Comet Divine Metal, and about 20 jins of Profound Thunder Stone. These were the main materials to forge the spear.

Every one of these main materials was an absolutely top quality material, any piece enough to make even a Revolving Core powerhouse green with envy. With so many rare materials together, Mu Qianyu was unable to help sighing. This was simply too luxurious, even for her.

Ancestor Chi Yan saw so many top quality materials and his face shined red with joy. With these materials, in addition to the newly evolved eight trigrams fire array formation, he had absolute faith that he would be able to create the best work in his refining career!

With the experience of creating a top-grade weapon, he would also have a better grasp of forging a heaven-step treasure in the future.

Ancestor Chi Yan tied back his crazily scattered hair, and then spat out a cloud of dark green and purple flame. When this cloud of fire appeared, it was like the air had been lit on fire; the surrounding temperature dramatically surged by an alarming degree.

Lin Ming's pupils constricted. That dark green and purple flame was without a doubt a Flame Essence. It should be Ancestor Chi Yan's life's Flame Essence. In terms of how formidable it was, it was probably above the medium-grade earth-step.

Lin Ming had no understanding of how a Flame Essence would be above the medium-grade earth-step, he could only guess.

At this time, Mu Qianyu confirmed Lin Ming's thoughts. She looked at that the dark green and purple flame and exclaimed in praise, "That is the Silent Nine Emerald Flame, a high-grade earth-step Flame Essence!"

The reason that Ancestor Chi Yan could walk with impunity throughout the entire South Horizon Region was, to a great extent, because of this high-grade earth-step Flame Essence.

The Silent Nine Emerald Flame shot out, fusing into the eight trigrams fire array formation. The flames suddenly turned into a dark green and purple, the temperature rising to an absolutely horrifying degree.

Ancestor Chi Yan first took out the supplementary spear casting materials. This included a massive amount of Aged Gold, Cold Star Iron, and Wrought Gold Heavy Water. These wouldn't be used to cast the spear, but would only play a catalytic opening role.

The Aged Gold, Cold Star Iron, as well as the Purple Comet Divine Metal were all thrown into the flames. The Aged Gold and Cold Star Iron only took a brief moment before they melted into a muddle of mixed molten metal. Once the Wrought Gold Heavy Water and another batch of supplementary materials were thrown in, it became a boiling cauldron of molten metals.

Then, Ancestor Chi Yan took out the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo and the Sacred Flame Parasol Tree, immersing them into the boiling molten metal so that these two spiritual woods could absorb the metal essence.

Throughout all of this, the Purple Comet was still in the flame, completely motionless.

Ancestor Chi Yan constantly inputted origin energy into the eight trigrams fire array formation. With the addition of fire origin energy from the Primal Chaos Heavens, this massive fire array formation burned for over four hours.

Purple Comet was a material that could just qualify as being worthy to create a heaven-step treasure. After it had stayed in the burning flames for such a long time, it still didn't show the slightest hint of melting.

Ancestor Chi Yan took a high-grade true essence stone, and began to absorb the true essence stone's origin energy, while simultaneously taking out a purple pill from his spatial ring and tossing it into the flames. As the purple pill fused into the flames, it immediately turned into a drop of liquid that penetrated into the Purple Comet Divine Metal.

With a 'chi chi' sound, the Purple Comet finally began to soften under the effects of the purple pill.

"Huo!"

Ancestor Chi Yan took out a massive crimson hammer from his spatial ring. He flooded this hammer with true essence, and began to repeatedly smash down on the softened Purple Comet Divine Metal, with heavy pounding motions.

Just this large crimson hammer was already a medium-grade earth-step treasure.

Wind whistled, flames twirled.

Ancestor Chi Yan stripped off his robe, revealing a naked upper body that was tightly corded in solid muscle. Just looking at this muscle, there was no way one would think it was the body of an old man.

Clang!

Clang!

Clang!

………………

The sound of metal clashing against metal reverberated throughout the entire mountain rage. Even Lin Ming, who was standing nearby felt his blood begin to boil and his heart rise with passion as he watched. The beauty and majesty of this absolute power was truly shocking.

Refining Purple Comet and removing the impurities was an arduous and exceedingly difficult process. Ancestor Chi Yan's entire body was streaming with sweat, and even the Aged Gold anvil under the Purple Comet was smashed apart.

Lin Ming exclaimed in his heart. This Aged Gold anvil was definitely an extraordinary object, and yet it was smashed apart by Ancestor Chi Yan to such a degree. The tenacity of the Purple Comet and its ability to withstand impact could be imagined.

After an entire day and night, after countless hammerings, the originally palm-sized piece of Purple Comet was finally small enough, just the right size to forge a spearhead.

The Purple Comet served as the foundation core of the spearhead, and then the Vermillion Bird crystallized fire was ground into powder and used to permeate the Purple Comet.

The 20 jins of Profound Thunder Stone was refined into its most basic essence by the Silent Nine Emerald Flame, and then also cast into the foundation core.

With a top thunder and fire material integrated into the spearhead, the hammering continued!

The giant hammer smashing into the Purple Comet became increasingly frequent. The wind picked up, and the surrounding fire origin energy actually turned into a massive vortex.

With every hit, sparks would splash out, arcs of bright electricity would shine, and that foundation core was gradually hammered into the shape of a thin spearhead.

Chi chi chi!

Ancestor Chi Yan sunk the spearhead into a giant bath of Glacial Ice Divine Spring. That originally freezing cold Glacial Ice Divine Spring actually started to boil, emitting massive clouds of steam.

This sort of divine water was extremely precious. The Refiner Faction Sovereign had once spent a great price in order to obtain some Glacial Ice Divine Spring, so that his son Huo Yanluo could soak in it, and depend on this to jump realms and absorb a medium-grade human-step Flame Essence.

Now, this great amount of Glacial Ice Divine Spring was actually used by Ancestor Chi Yan as a hardening agent.

After the quenching was complete, up to now, only the spearhead had been finished. A top quality treasure spear had to be thoroughly hammered nine by nine times for a total of 81 times. The first time hammering was the longest. Afterwards, the amount of time would be reduced, but the total time would always amount to around 20 days or so.

During this period, a reigning master would have to continually consume a high degree of strength. Sometimes, they would not only consume their true essence, but their life energy!

In order to refine a top treasure, a refining master needed to put forth his entire effort and soul. After a long period of time, there were some refining masters that would overtax their life to forge a treasure, and finally end up perishing!

Therefore, to request a refining master to forge a spear with all of their ability was very difficult. If it wasn't for Lin Ming assisting Ancestor Chi Yan in such a great manner, there was no have that he would have helped him forge a top class divine spear.

Time slowly passed, day by day.

Every day, Lin Ming would come over and take a look at Ancestor Chi Yan. But besides this, he spent all of his time cultivating. At this point, his cultivation was slowly reaching the middle Pulse Condensation period.

Finally, on the 20th day, the spearhead and spear shaft integrated into a perfect whole.

The long spear shaft was 10 feet long. It had the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo as the bone, and the surface was twined with the tree silk of the Sacred Flame Parasol Tree. It was both flexible and incomparably difficult to destroy.

With the spear shaft complete, Ancestor Chi Yan started to fully concentrate on drawing the array formation upon the divine spear.

At this moment, in the sky, thunder flashed, and clouds of fire gathered.

The peak of the mountain was the Primal Chaos Heavens. Above the Primal Chaos Heavens, the seven origin energy elements of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, thunder, and wind were in a free state, savage, brutal, and active.

At this moment, the thunder attribute and fire attribute origin energy seemed to be drawn in by some unknown law, gathering together.

Bang!

With a deafening explosion, the Primal Chaos Heavens were ripped apart as if it were the work of some divine hand, and a massive pillar of fire and thunder shot down, bombarding the divine spear!

Ancestor Chi Yan was completely focused on his work, and his physical strength had already been drawn to the limit. He gave a stuffy cough as his entire body was twined with purple lightning and flames, and he tumbled off the stone altar.

“Senior Chi Yan!” Lin Ming was shocked, he quickly ran forwards.

However at this time, Ancestor Chi Yan, whose entire body was burnt black, began to maniacally laugh, the pearly white teeth of his wide smile contrasting against his blackened appearance. “The heavens help me! The heavens help me! A divine weapon is born, bringing forth twin fire and thunder tribulation from the heavens! This is this old man’s best work by far!”

Chapter 311 – Return to the Southern Wilderness

Chapter 311 – Return to the Southern Wilderness

…

…

…

“The spear! Let me have a look!” Ancestor Chi Yan grabbed the treasure spear from Lin Ming’s hand, closely inspecting it. The base of the spear shaft was a deep purple, it was the color of the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo. Around the spear shaft, there were also a countless number of thin red lines. This was the symbol of the fusion between the Sacred Flame Parasol Tree and the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo.

The spearhead was eight inches long, with an high ridge and thin blade, gleaming with a cold light. The spearhead was a fusion of the Purple Comet Divine Metal, the Vermillion Bird’s crystallized fire and Profound Thunder Stone. Not only was it incomparably keen and hard, it was very compatible with thunder and fire, suiting Lin Ming.

The entire spear, from tip to tail, was inscribed with the runes of an array formation. This array formation was for conducting true essence. The Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo and the Sacred Flame Parasol Tree were originally two top quality materials that could channel thunder and fire. Now, with the addition of the array formation, not only was it smooth and unimpeded. There would be an extremely increased degree of strength as well.

It could be said that this spear was tailor made for Lin Ming.

Ancestor Chi Yan caressed the long spear as if it were his most beloved. The grade of the treasure spear was exactly what he expected, a high-grade earth-step treasure. And it was amongst the highest of its level.

Normally, only when a heaven-step treasure was forged would it draw in heavenly tribulation. If a treasure could be tempered with heavenly tribulation, it would become much sharper and stronger.

The spear that Ancestor Chi Yan made didn't qualify to be a heaven-step treasure. But, because it contained too many top quality thunder and fire materials and it was forged near the Primal Chaos Heavens, it was still able to direct the thunder and fire origin energy of the skies, creating a false heavenly tribulation.

Although it wasn't a true heavenly tribulation, it still performed a role similar to tempering, taking the quality of this divine spear a step further.

Ancestor Chi Yan traced the spear for some time, and then he reluctantly parted from it, handing it back to Lin Ming. He said, "This spear is yours, you name it."

Lin Ming took the spear and casually shook it. The entire spear shook with a deep inner power, enough to shatter the bones of an ordinary master.

Pouring a bit of true essence in it, thunder and fire suddenly twined around the entire spear, making violent popping noises that caused ones heart to race. If this terrifying strength was used with the Thunder Annihilation, the might of that strike would be difficult to imagine.

Lin Ming said, "Since this is forged from Purple Comet Divine Metal, I will name it the Purple Comet Divine Spear!"

Now that Lin Ming had obtained such a divine spear, he anxiously wanted to test just how powerful it was. He just had a great test subject in mind.

The Southern Wilderness' Fire Worm Shaman.

………………

Ten days later, Southern Wilderness' 100,000 Mountain Range

The skies were clear and free, the sun shining brightly. Above the forest of the Southern Wilderness, with a sharp whistling, a flying beast with a wingspan of 60 feet was soaring through the endless skies. Its entire body was covered in scales, and it had a long body and tail just like a dragon.

Its wide wings formed a great shadow on the ground. Looking from afar, this flying beast looked like a Flood Dragon with two large wings.

This beast was called a Winged Flood Dragon, and it also had the bloodline of a Winged Rain Dragon Saint Beast. The Winged Rain Dragon was similar to a Flood Dragon, as both were dragon-type Saint Beasts. But, the Winged Rain Dragon had wings, thus its descendants could fly as well.

There was a youth standing on the back of the Winged Flood Dragon, clad in black with a purple spear in his hand, facing the billow wings. The youth was Lin Ming.

Ten days ago, Lin Ming had left Ancestor Chi Yan's mountain range, and he had been gifted this Winged Flood Dragon so he could fly instead of walk. In terms of speed, the Winged Flood Dragon was far beyond what a Heavenly Wing Eagle could compare to. With a single spread of its wings, it could fly for tens of thousands of miles. It was a priceless mount.

Not only that, Ancestor Chi Yan personally used an array formation to conceal the brilliant radiance and true essence fluctuations on Lin Ming's Purple Comet Divine Spear, so that if one looked at it, they would only think it was an extremely ordinary high-grade human-step treasure. Only someone whose cultivation surpassed Ancestor Chi Yan could see through it, otherwise it would be difficult to discern anything.

The Purple Comet Divine Spear was incomparably precious after all. With Lin Ming's current strength, taking such a valuable weapon out in public was no different to suicide.

As of now there were only two people that knew that Lin Ming had the Purple Comet Divine Spear, Mu Qianyu and Ancestor Chi Yan.

Mu Qianyu was naturally trustworthy. Although Ancestor Chi Yan had a very violent and capricious personality, he still had certain codes of conduct he followed and he was a generally upright person. Also, he could be considered a good friend of Lin Ming's, and wouldn't betray him. Much less, he was also the one that personally forged the spear.

The Winged Flood Dragon flew with lightning speed. As Lin Ming stood on the dragon's back, he could see the landscape underneath him rapidly changing, and he was unable to restrain a sigh. It had only been a few months, but now that he returned, his circumstances were completely different to what they once were.

In the past, he had been chased down and nearly killed by Huo Gong. He had risked his life to kill Huo Gong. Afterwards, he was also chased down and nearly killed by the Fire Worm Shaman. If it wasn't for the fact that he had tremendously good luck and met the Vermillion Bird that was on its way to Thundercrash Mountain, who had startled the Shaman's Flame Essence Avatar into hiding, he would have probably fallen to his doom in Blackwater Swamp. After that, he had entered Thundercrash Mountain, and he had barely escaped after risking his life.

It was like all these life and death situations were just yesterday. But now that he returned to the Southern Wilderness today, Lin Ming's strength could no longer be compared to what it once was. There was no longer anyone in the Southern Wilderness that could threaten him.

Lin Ming's first destination was Fog Valley Tribe.

Fog Valley Tribe was located in a deep mountain valley, and this valley would often fill with a noxious fog in the morning. This was where its name came from. It was a small tribe that was quite close to the Fire Worm Tribe, and it only had a population of four or five thousand people.

As Lin Ming flew near Fog Valley Tribe, he let the Winged Flood Dragon forage for its own food in the jungles of the Southern Wilderness. The Winged Flood Dragon had a bloodline purity equal to the Thunder Lizards of Thundercrash Mountain. Its current strength was comparably to a Houtian realm master. In the jungles of the Southern Wilderness, it had no rival, thus there was no need to worry about it.

Lin Ming jumped down from the back of the Flying Flood Dragon. In the 10,000 feet of air, he was just like a fish that was rapidly swimming through water. With a single wave of his sleeve, he was able to decelerate using the Concept of Wind, becoming as light as a feather and gently falling to the ground.

Lin Ming followed the path that he remembered and soon, he found a small house located in the corner of Fog Valley. The gravelled path was filled with blue stones and the thatched roof was bright with drops of rain. It had a very refreshing feeling.

In the red tiled courtyard, there was a young, pretty girl in a thick cotton dress. She carried a wooden basin. She was wringing out the clothes in it and hanging them to dry on a rope underneath the hot morning sun. Under the sunlight, the delicate girl's tender forearm was like a lotus root, her fair skin glimmering.

This girl was a witch of the Na Tribe, Na Shui. When Lin Ming had gone to assassinate Chi Guda, he had given the sisters some gold and settled them in Fog Valley Tribe.

Before entering the Sorcerer Holy Land, Lin Ming had sworn that he would get revenge for the sisters. Lin Ming was a pure and righteous individual who didn't make promises easily, he kept those he did make. Now, he came back to fulfill that promise.

"Big Brother Mo Lin?" As Na Shui saw Lin Ming come into the courtyard, she suddenly froze. Her eyes began to water, revealing a touch of surprise, disbelief, and joy.

"Where's your older sister?" Lin Ming faintly smiled at Na Shui. Mo Lin was a pseudonym that he had once used in the Southern Wilderness.

“She’s in... In... ” Na Shui nodded energetically and then quickly laid down the wooden basin, running into the house as she shouted, “Big Sister! Big Brother Mo Lin is back!”

When Na Shui had first met Lin Ming, he had appeared as a savior in her eyes. Not only did he kill the two men that had kidnapped her and her big sister, after that, he had even killed the man who had murdered her parents. Afterwards, in the jungles of the Southern Wilderness, they had encountered hardships one after the other, but Lin Ming had overcome all of these. Because of this, Na Shui, who had just begun to become interested in the opposite sex, had never forgotten Lin Ming. He held a special place in her heart.

It was just a few blinks of the eye, and then, Na Yi appeared in the doorway. She wore a soiled apron, and her sleeves were pulled up. Her slender and delicate fingers were wet from washing vegetables and they still dripped with water. She was just like a slim and graceful treasure of a family.

When Na Yi saw Lin Ming, she was surprised. She was well aware of just how terrifying and extraordinary Lin Ming’s talent was, and also the difference between Lin Ming and their two sisters’ statuses. She thought that she would never see Lin Ming again in her lifetime, she never expected that he would actually come back.

“Benefactor.” Na Yi bowed, respectfully greeting Lin Ming. In contrast to the normally lively and innocent Na Shui, Na Yi had a calm temperament that completely didn’t suit her age. This had most likely originated from having experienced the sight of her mother’s half eaten corpse, and then sealing off her heart.

Hearing Na Yi call him a benefactor, Lin Ming felt a bit helpless. This title really made him feel uncomfortable. When he killed Chi Guda, he had taken vengeance for the sisters’ parents. He really could be considered a benefactor.

“Let’s go into the house, there are some questions I’d like to ask you.”

As the three walked into the house, the room was a bit dark. There was a basin full of just washed vegetables, and also a steaming hot stove on the other side.

“Has there been any activity in the Fire Worm Tribe these days?” Li Ming casually glanced around, feeling the simple life that these two sisters lived.

“There hasn’t been any.” Na Yu shook her head. Fog Valley Tribe was very close to the Fire Worm Tribe. If the Fire Worm Tribe had sent any troops to wage war against other tribes, she would naturally know.

“Since there isn’t anything happening, then all the masters of Fire Worm Tribe must be gathered in their lair. Mm… do you know where the Fire Worm Church is?”

“Where the Fire Worm Church is?” Na Yi hesitate, her voice tinged with doubt, “I know, does Benefactor… ”

Lin Ming said, “When I went to the Sorcerer Pagoda, I made a promise to you that I would get vengeance for you sisters and kill Chi Guda and the Fire Worm Shaman. Now, Chi Guda is dead, and there is only the Fire Worm Shaman remaining. Not only does this person have enmity for killing your master, but I also have a deep blood feud with him. Also, I want to obtain the Fire Worm Tribe’s Sacred Flame for myself. These are the reasons that I came back to the Southern Wilderness to kill him.”

As Lin Ming spoke, Na Yi’s eyes were wide in shock. Na Shui also gasped, covering her mouth with her hands. Killing the Fire Worm Shaman? Taking the Fire Worm Tribe’s Sacred Flame for himself!?!?

The Fire Worm Shaman’s strength was at least at the middle Houtian realm. He had once easily killed their master. To the twin sisters, such a character was a top master in the entire Southern Wilderness. He was just like an insurmountable mountain. Even Na Yi who had a normally firm temperament, would feel a sense of suffocation and dread in killing such a character to take vengeance for her master. She was aware that in her entire life, she might never achieve the strength to do so.

But now, Lin Ming actually planned to go kill the Fire Worm Shaman?

Heavens!

He was only 16 years old!

When Lin Ming had killed Chi Guda, this act gave Na Yi an overwhelming sense of horror. There were some peerless talents that were recorded down in the ancient texts of the Faith of the Sorcerer that could accomplish this at 15 or 16 years of age. After Lin Ming had returned from the Divine Kingdom and killed Chi Guda, Na Yi was shocked. But she was still able to accept this. Now, he also wanted to kill the Fire Worm Shaman… this was simply unimaginable!

Chapter 312 – Fire Worm Church Leader

Chapter 312 – Fire Worm Church Leader

…

…

…

"Benefactor, the Fire Worm Shaman's cultivation is at least at the middle Houtian realm, he might even be at the late Houtian realm!" Na Yi tried to keep her calm, but her voice was still trembling. She knew how astonishing Lin Ming's talent was, but she found it hard to imagine that Lin Ming's strength would have progressed so much in just a few months.

Now, she didn't have accurate information on just how strong the Fire Worm Shaman was. Much less how strong he was, the Fire Worm Shaman would undoubtedly be surrounded by countless masters. If Lin Ming wished to kill the Fire Worm Shaman in such a situation, he would have to have at least the strength of a peak Houtian master in order to dare to do such a thing.

Seeing that Lin Ming's current cultivation was at most in the Pulse Condensation period, would his true strength actually manage to jump past almost two whole realms?

Na Yi found this unbelievable. Even if it was the Southern Wilderness' Feather Emperor that was recorded down in the Faith of the Sorcerer's ancient texts, his strength wouldn't be so exaggerated at such a young age. In Na Yi's heart, the Feather Emperor of the Southern Wilderness was only inferior to the Faith of the Sorcerer. This peerless master had once created his own empire in the Southern Wilderness that was equal to a third-grade sect. His power was difficult to estimate, unfathomable.

“Benefactor, let me search around a bit more so I can learn just how strong the Fire Worm Shaman is.”

Lin Ming said, “That doesn’t matter. Even if his strength is at the peak Houtian realm, I have enough hidden abilities to kill him, or I can even freely retreat if I wish. The reason I came today was to inform you that I will complete my promise to you, not to find out information from you.”

Na Yi was speechless. Really, if Lin Ming had come to the Southern Wilderness to kill the Fire Worm Shaman, he would have already had some sort of plan. There was no need for him to come ask her for information on how to kill the Fire Worm Shaman. In any case, the information she had was limited, and she wouldn’t be able to give any valuable advice anyways.

“I understand.” Na Yi nodded. In her mind, Lin Ming was a paradox that managed to complete incredible miracles that others couldn’t. She didn’t think that Lin Ming was crazy or hotheaded, she just found it unbelievable.

“When I go to kill the Fire Worm Shaman, whether I succeed or not, you need to take your little sister far away, as far away from the Fire Worm Tribe as you can. This place is too close, it won’t be safe.” As Lin Ming said this, he took a foot long square box out of his spatial ring, and then gave it to Na Yi, saying, “This is for you sisters. In the future, whether or not you want to live an ordinary prosperous life or try to turn your fate and rebuild your tribe, all will be decided by you.”

Lin Ming placed the box on the table. The sisters had given him a very great fortuitous opportunity. This was the kindness he returned to them to consider all of their debts fully repaid.

“Big Brother Mo Lin… you… ” As Na Shui saw that Lin Ming was about to leave, she pursed her lips, her eyes trembling and shining wet. She didn’t know what to say.

Lin Ming faintly smiled, gently rubbing Na Shui's head and said, "Cultivate well. Perhaps, in the future, we will meet again."

As Lin Ming said this, he left the house, activated his movement technique and instantly vanished into the horizon.

Na Yi saw her little sister's longing look as if she was reluctantly willing to part ways, and then sighed, shaking her head.

In the future, Lin Ming would most likely become an existence similar to the Feather Emperor. He would become a figure that dominated a land of several hundreds of thousands of miles. The disparity between them was simply a ravine that they couldn't cross.

How could he still be her Big Brother Mo Lin?

As Na Yi was deep in thought, she casually opened the box that Lin Ming left behind. As she looked at the contents inside, she was stunned silly.

The box was packed full of golden banknotes, each one worth 1000 gold taels. These packs of banknotes looked solid, and looking at the thickness, there had to be at least one or two hundred. This meant that this was a few hundred thousand gold taels. An average person could spend lavishly their entire life and never spend it all. Even if they used this to purchase cultivation materials for martial artists, they still wouldn't spend it all. It was enough for the two sisters to not have to worry about money ever again.

Near the stack of golden banknotes, there was a jade slip. And near the jade slip, there were a few bottles of pills. After opening the pill bottles, a light fragrance wafted out. These were absolutely top-grade pills!

As Na Yi held the jade slip in her hand, she let out a light breath. It was a medium-grade human-step cultivation method. In addition to these pills and golden banknotes, the worth of this box was no less than a million gold taels.

Although Na Yi had been a witch of the great Na Tribe and had been accustomed to wealth, the Southern Wilderness was poorer than the mainland. A great tribe with half a million people would find it difficult to put out so much money.

But Lin Ming had actually casually gifted this, just what degree of influence did he have?

Na Yi suddenly felt that, relative to this great world, the tribes of the south were insignificant ants…

………………

Fire Worm City was 900 miles west of Fog Valley Tribe. It was the center of command for the Fire Worm Tribe, and also the origin of the Fire Worm Church.

Most tribes of the Southern Wilderness had a theocracy that dominated the secular leader. The Fire Worm Tribe was no exception. The Fire Worm Shaman Chi Yue had a higher degree of influence than the Tribal Chief.

Within the very center of Fire Worm City, there were seven great spirals towers. These spiral towers were all above 200 feet, with the largest one in the center at over 300 feet.

The giant complex that these seven spiral towers revolved around was the Fire Worm Church.

The curtain of night slowly fell upon the land. The noisy streets of the day quieted, and the lamplights of 10,000 families in Fire Worm City shined out, shining out against the endless starry sky. This was a rare scene in the entire Southern Wilderness. These past years, the Fire Worm Tribe had constantly been at war, plundering other tribes and taking slaves. Now, the total population of the Fire Worm Tribe reached several million. Fire Worm City also became one of the largest cities in the Southern Wilderness.

Within the highest room of the central spire, there were several people sitting around a round table. The man in the seat of honor was a bald man. He was dressed in a dark black robe, and on his head was tattooed in strange patterns. His face was calm and indifferent.

Besides him was a long and thick staff. This staff was shaped like a spindle, and there was a circle of white skulls hanging from it.

This man was the Fire Worm Shaman, Chi Yue.

At Chi Yue's right hand seat, there was a fat middle-aged man. He was hugging a delicate looking maid, and his pudgy stumpy hands were delving into the clothes of a slave girl, recklessly rubbing against her. The female slave bit her lips until they hurt, her whole body trembling but not daring to speak or react.

Although these fat man's actions were disgusting and lewd and his eyes smiled in a lascivious grin, his eyes actually revealed a hint of murderous intent. "Shaman Chi Yue, the soldiers and horses are already ready, we are just waiting for some masters of the Church to join. As long as Shaman Chi Yue calculates an auspicious day, we shall push forward, and we shall flatten the Agu Tribe in a single sweep! We will plunder their cultivation resources, give them to the Church, kill their heathens, and sell off the slaves to supply the treasure. The rest of the slaves will be used to serve us."

As the fat man spoke, his smile grew wider, and the strength of his hand increased. The slave girl paled in pain, and sweat began to form on her forehead.

But, she clenched her teeth, not daring to utter a single sound. This man who was groping her was the Chief of the Fire Worm Tribe, and he had extremely cruel and brutal methods for dealing with those he disliked. He was even more vicious than Fire Worm Church Founder. These past years, there were countless slave girls who were humiliated or killed by him. If she couldn't bear the pain and interrupted the conference of these three people, her fate would be truly pitiful. She had a sister who couldn't bear the pain and coughed, and then she was thrown into the army camp as a prostitute slave for anyone's use. Now, it was unknown whether she was dead or alive.

Chi Yue sat in the seat of honor, his right hand flipped up, his palm up, and his thumbs tapped his other four fingers. He seemed to be calculating something. A moment later, Chi

Yue slowly said, “Three months later, when the Wolf Star intersects with the Sky Star, that is when you may dispatch the army.”

“Three months? Does it have to be that long?” The Fat Chief frowned. He didn’t want to wait, and he wasn’t satisfied with this time.

With the current strength of the Fire Worm Tribe, demolishing the Agu Tribe was easy. The only problem was how many losses there would be. Chi Yue’s words represented the entire Fire Worm Church. Even if the Fat Chief was the Chief, he could not argue against him.

As the Fat Chief looked at the Fire Worm Great General on his right side, he nodded and said, “Then we shall go in three months. At that time, we shall be depending on the Church of the Shamans to help us at that time.”

“Of course!” Chi Yue said without a break in composure.

As the Fat Chief saw Chi Yue’s expression, he was somewhat unhappy. Every time, this Fat Chief would have to beg the Fire Worm Church to send out masters. Once the cultivation resources were plundered, they were all handed over to the Fire Worm Church. If things continued like this, when would the army ever train a master that would be equal to the masters of the Fire Worm Church? Would they always be reliant on the Fire Worm Church?

Since the Fat Chief wasn’t happy, he groped even more forcefully. Now, the slave girl could no longer bear the pain and uttered a groan.

“Mm!?” The Fat Chief frowned.

As the slave girl heard this sound, her entire body instantly went ice cold.

Her body began to tremble, and now she only had thought in her mind, she was finished. Her fate would be worse than death.

As slaves, they didn't even have the qualifications to commit suicide. According to the laws of the Fire Worm Tribe, the slaves that killed themselves would be used to feed vicious beasts. And, according to the spiritual beliefs of the Southern Wilderness, if the dead were eaten by vicious beasts or humans, they would not be able to enter into the cycle of samsara, and they would never be reincarnated.

Therefore, while many slaves wished that they could die, none of them dared to kill themselves.

The Fat Chief's face darkened as he smiled. He was thinking on how he would punish this slave girl tonight to vent his heart's depression. But, at this moment, an icy voice fell from the sky, covering the entire spiral tower.

"I apologize! I'm afraid that you will not have the opportunity to wait another three months!"

This voice was full of a chilling murderous intent, enough that anyone who heard it would feel their heart race in fear from the hostile aura. The Fat Chief was immediately shocked. He stood up, frightened, and look above his head. He only saw the dark ceiling.

"Who is it!?"

The Fat Chief shoved the slave girl in his hands away, looking startled and alarmed. But, thinking that the Fire Worm Shaman was right near him along with many other masters, he felt a bit more at ease. These fellows would eat people and not spit out their bones, they were truly strong. Otherwise, there was no way that the Fire Worm Tribe would have been able to sweep across the northern Southern Boundary as they had these past years.

Chi Yue's complexion also changed. This person was actually able to hide from his senses, and even sneak into his tightly defended Fire Worm Tower.

"Who is it? Come out and show yourself! Don't hide in the shadows!" Chi Yue kept his calm, and he had the ability and capital to remain calm. His cultivation had already reached the late Houtian realm, and with the help of the Eternal Flame Flame Essence, it would be hard for any other martial artist in the Houtian realm to rival him.

Within the entire Southern Wilderness, he wouldn’t say that he was the strongest, but his strength definitely ranked in the top five. Especially since he was in his own domain, he had help from many of his men. There was just no need to be afraid of anyone or anything.

Chapter 313 – Exterminating Chi Yue

Chapter 313 – Exterminating Chi Yue

…

…

…

On the highest floor of the spiral tower, the candle flames flickered in the night wind, and the shadows of those within disappeared, becoming small and miniscule.

Shaman Leader Chi Yue had an indifferent expression, his hand slowly tracing the side of his staff. His staff jittered, and the skulls hanging from the top began to rattle against each other.

The newly assigned Fire Worm Great General took out the heavy sword from his back, his face calm. He was a man who had struggled and killed his way up the ranks of the army on his own merits and strength, a truly vicious military man. He had been through countless slaughters and battlefields, and had also experienced the bitter taste of attempted assassinations multiple times. Now, facing this unexpected visitor, it was impossible for his heart to feel even the slightest arousal of fear.

The night wind howled, and a black shadow appeared like a desolate ghost on the ledge of the stone window. He held a purple spear in his hand, his eyes cold, and his body overflowing with murderous intent.

"Mm? Early Pulse Condensation period?" The Fire Worm Great General smirked. An early Pulse Condensation boy actually dared to come to their Fire Worm Clan's Holy Land? This boy didn't know how to spell the word 'death'!

“Haha, I was wondering just who it could be, but it turns out it’s merely a foolish idiot. An early Pulse Condensation boy actually dares to come here just to kill himself!” The Fat Chief wickedly grinned, his eyes looking behind Lin Ming. “If you have help, then call them out! Don’t go skulking in the shadows like some rat. I’ll send you both off together!”

As the Fat Chief spoke, a small fire ignited in his palm; this was a sound transmitting talisman. He was using this sound transmitting talisman to pass on a warning. The Fat Chief didn’t think that Lin Ming was really an idiot. If Lin Ming dared to intrude here, that meant there was most likely a master waiting outside for an opportunity to strike.

Although there was only a small danger, the Fat Chief was unwilling to risk his own life.

In the Grand Hall, the Fire Worm Shaman was silent. He froze for a moment as he saw Lin Ming, then instantly recalled just where he had seen him. Several months ago, this youth had killed Chi Guda. Afterwards, the Fire Worm Shaman had sent his own Flame Essence Avatar to chase down Lin Ming through Blackwater Swamp. If his Avatar hadn’t encountered the Vermillion Bird and feared being eaten, then it would have killed Lin Ming long ago.

This youth’s body held countless secrets!

He remembered that when Lin Ming just had a mere peak Bone Forging cultivation, he was already able to fly, and his strength was a level above everyone else. The Fire Worm Shaman was able to determine that Lin Ming had a unfathomable wealthy background and he also had a rare treasure that enabled him to fly. Such a treasure was absolutely priceless. If he could obtain it, then his own power would leap ahead.

Chi Yue flicked his fingers and a wisp of flame ran out from his hands, roaring forth and jumping out the window, making a circle around the spiral tower before it flew back into Chi Yue’s hand.

Then Chi Yue laughed, revealing a vicious grin. His curved lips revealed sharp teeth that were just like a vampire bat, incomparably fierce.

"So it's really just you… a few months have passed and you broke through from the peak Bone Forging stage to the early Pulse Condensation period. But after the mere advancement of a small realm, you actually think you can kill me within the lair of the Fire Worm Clan? You really think you are the Feather Emperor of the Southern Wilderness reborn!? Hehe, you don't know what it means to die!"

Chi Yue stretched out his long crimson tongue, licking his lips. To him, Lin Ming was merely a bag of treasures waiting to be opened. Such a young and ignorant young boy like Lin Ming wouldn't know what true power was. Lin Ming probably assumed that he was some normal Houtian martial artist.

When Lin Ming had killed Chi Guda, his cultivation had been at the peak of Bone Forging. Chi Guda was a half-step into the Houtian realm. Lin Ming hadn't been able to easily kill him; he had to use many hidden cards, including the Heretical God Force and even Thunderfire Annihilation.

At that point, Lin Ming's strength was able to compare to the weakest of all Houtian realm martial artists.

Now, in just three and a half months, Lin Ming's cultivation had only risen by a small degree. Chi Yue simply didn't even think that Lin Ming had any ability to threaten him. Even if he were the god-like Feather Emperor that was worshipped in the Southern Wilderness, he still wouldn't have this ability in the Pulse Condensation period!

Suddenly, the door to the meeting room burst open, and a group of heavily armed guards rushed in. The Fat Chief took this opportunity to scurry behind the bodyguards. These were his deathsworn, special guards that the Fat Chief had handpicked from the army, each and every one willing to die for him. They had fought in many battles, killing countless civilians and masters.

With these deathsworn with him – and also countless other masters in the spiral tower – the Fat Chief was much more calm. Although he was a cruel and ruthless individual, he was actually very afraid of death. To him, his life was worth more than gold. He ruled a large swathe of land, he had many women to play with; there was endless wealth of power waiting for him.

“You all protect me! Shaman Chi Yue will deal with this intruder!” The Fat Chief issued out orders via a true essence sound transmission. He could also be considered half a martial artist, but the reason he cultivated was mainly for physical fitness and to violate women.

“I do not care who you are, but since you have come, do not think that you will walk away!” The Fire Worm Great General gave a loud shout, rushing towards Lin Ming, the heavy sword in his hand cutting down!

Lin Ming calmly held the Purple Comet Spear in his hands. He watched, motionless as the Fire Worm Great General rushed towards him, slicing the heavy sword at him. But then, a chilling light suddenly flashed in Lin Ming’s eyes, and he icily spit out a single word.

“Die!”

It was as if this cold voice was the grim whispers of a death god that emanated from an endless, silent abyss. As soon as the Fire Worm Great General heard this voice, his body instantly shook, and both of his eyes lost focus.

Plop!

It was as if the Great General had his soul sucked out of him. His massive body fell to its knees, and then he keeled over. It was unknown whether or not he was still alive.

“Mm!?” The Fire Worm Shaman’s complexion changed.

Soul attack?

A soul attack wasn’t too surprising, but Lin Ming only had a cultivation at the early Pulse Condensation period. Yet, he was able to use this soul attack to kill a peak Pulse Condensation master in a split-second. How was this possible?

The Fat Chief suddenly panicked. He didn't know that Lin Ming had used a soul attack; he only knew that with a single word, he had managed to directly kill a peak Pulse Condensation Great General. Was this boy a reincarnated demon?

Even those deathsworn near him who had been numbed to the horrors of death and destruction were agitated, unconsciously clenching their fists. They didn't fear death, but even if they didn't fear death, they were people of the Southern Wilderness who had deeply ingrained beliefs. What they feared were the demons, and the current Lin Ming seemed like a demon that they heard from folk tales.

"So... it seems that you have mastered a soul attack secret skill. It's no wonder that you dare to kill me. However, such a secret skill is useless against me!" Chi Yue's expression finally became grim.

At this time, Chi Yue was only slightly serious. As a martial artist with a late Houtian realm cultivation and also the master of a Flame Essence, the strength of a peak Pulse Condensation Great General was nothing in his eyes. Killing him in a split-second simply didn't mean anything.

His right hand flashed, and a mass of crimson flames jumped forth from his palm, "I'll turn you to ashes!"

Chi!

A bright red light shot towards Lin Ming, but Lin Ming didn't evade or dodge. Instead, his entire body was covered with a shimmering azure light, and he lifted his right hand, grabbing out at the red light.

Peng!

The bright red light exploded like a firework in Lin Ming's palm. But Lin Ming's right hand only glimmered with the faintest golden light; not even a single inch of his body had been burned.

"What!?"

The Fire Worm Shaman who had been trying to maintain a calm and collected appearance finally lost his composure. Although he hadn't used the Fire Essence to attack, he had still used 60 to 70% of his strength. And yet, his attack was actually blocked by the enemy, and bare-handed? This… this was impossible!

At this time, the Fire Worm Shaman already imagined that Lin Ming might be a Xiantian master in disguise. But if he was a Xiantian master, then why would he mask himself under the illusion of an early Pulse Condensation youth, and come here to trick him?

He no longer had time to wonder; at this moment, Lin Ming had already lifted his spear!

A spear thrust out, thunder howled, true essence cut the air. The meeting table was shattered into pieces, and the tip of that purple spear pierced towards Chi Yue's chest!

At this critical moment, Chi Yue fiercely bit down on his tongue, and a young boy wreathed in flames flew from his chest, straight towards Lin Ming's spear!

"You finally came out?"

Lin Ming wildly grinned, and true essence erupted from his body like a volcano!

Heretical God Force – open!

The Heretical God Seed howled, and the power of thunder and fire surged through the shaft of the Purple Comet Spear, its power multiplying!

The speartip pointed towards the young flame boy's forehead, between his eyes, azure true essence whistling. This young flame boy was the Fire Worm Shaman's Flame Essence Avatar. And this one strike was to destroy that flame boy's soul mark!

"Ahh!!!"

The flame boy wailed like a demented beast, its young face twisting in horror. Its two little hands tightly grabbed onto the tip of the Purple Comet Spear!

Chi chi chi!

The Purple Comet Spear was forged from divine materials of heaven and earth. As the flame boy held onto this spear, its two small hands began to smoke. But no matter how painful it was or how its face contorted in agony, it still did not let go of this spear!

“Go die!”

Behind the flame boy, Chi Yue flourished his staff, true essence erupting from his body. He smashed down at Lin Ming with all of his strength!

Lin Ming sneered, and the Purple Comet Spear turned. A steel needle engraved with a Purple Flood Dragon burst out from his fingertip.

Bang!

Chi Yue’s staff pounded the ground. Rocks exploded, and the entire spiral tower trembled. However, Lin Ming’s figure had already disappeared like smoke.

Meanwhile, the coiling dragon steel needle had already pierced between the flame boy’s eyes!

Pah!

With a barely audible sound, the coiling dragon needle shot through the flame boy’s head, exiting from the other side. The flame boy’s face froze for a moment and then immediately issued forth an inhuman wail, his once innocent and cute face already completely twisted into a monster.

“Ahhhhhhhh!!!!!”

Chi Yue’s hair scattered, his eyes bloodshot, completely red. Blue veins stuck out on his forehead like large earthworms, covering his entirely bald head. “You! You actually destroyed my Avatar!”

“Not only did I destroy your Avatar, but I will also kill you!”

Lin Ming was the judge, jury, and executioner of Chi Yue’s fate. His spear flipped over, and thrust straight towards Chi Yue’s throat. With the Concept of Wind fused into the spear, its speed drew near the extreme. Chi Yue could not dodge this!

“Then let’s die together!”

Chi Yue’s ugly face distorted, and he snapped off the top of his staff, revealing a shining knife!

At this time, crazy Chi Yue had fallen into despair. He completely ignored Lin Ming’s attack, grabbing onto to his spear and using the long knife end to stab towards Lin Ming’s heart. He wanted them both to perish together!

Pah!

The Purple Comet Spear instantly pierced through Chi Yue’s throat, and Chi Yue’s hand suddenly stilled. Both of his eyes lost focus, and the knife in his hand seemed incomparably distant from Lin Ming…

At this time, Chi Yue had already found that Lin Ming had drawn far away. He held a long crimson chain in his hand, and this chain was directly connected to the end of the purple spear…

Chapter 314 – Night of Flowing Blood

Chapter 314 – Night of Flowing Blood

…

…

…

“You… you…!”

Chi Yue vomited blood, his left hand grasping onto the spear shaft while his right hand vainly reached out as if here were trying to take hold of something. His face was colored with disbelief, a reality that he couldn’t reconcile or resign himself to. He didn’t think that one day, he would actually die at the hands of a young boy. Not only that, but this young boy’s cultivation would be at a trivial early Pulse Condensation period!

Plop!

Chi Yue fell to his knees, the light already gone from his eyes.

In the end, Chi Yue was only a most basic martial artist from a non-sect background. The reason he was able to lord over the Southern Wilderness was because it was an extremely remote location. But his talent, in comparison to geniuses like Jiang Baoyun or Qin Wuxin, was simply nothing at all.

The strongest talent that Chi Yue had known of was the Feather Emperor of the Southern Wilderness. But even the Feather Emperor’s talent could not be compared to someone like Lin Ming.

Lin Ming pulled out the Purple Comet Spear with a spray of blood, and then the body was unceremoniously kicked to the floor. This was his grave, where he could pass with all his regrets.

At this time, the Fat Chief was an ashen gray, as the flickering flame of his hope faded away. His fat body trembled. What had just happened was no different to a nightmare. The unfathomable Fire Worm Clan Founder and Shaman had actually died like this? Until the time when that purple spear had pierced through Chi Yue's throat, the Fat Chief still wasn't able to believe this. This young boy was a demon!

All of the slave girls in the room felt as if they were in a dream. In their eyes, the Fire Worm Shaman was like a dark, evil god, incomparably powerful. And yet he was actually killed by this 17 or 18 year old boy!?

Then just how terrifying an existence was this young boy? Was he the reincarnation of the Sorcerer, come to save them?

Lin Ming looked at his right hand, an extremely satisfied smile crossing his lips. With the combination of his azure true essence and Tempering Marrow boundary, his defensive power had risen by another qualitative level. He was even able to use his empty hand to block Chi Yue's Flame Essence fire attack.

As for the power of fire that had sunk into Lin Ming's body, it was completely suppressed by the Heretical God Seed. It had failed to cause even the slightest bit of damage to Lin Ming's meridians.

The last time he encountered Chi Yue, he couldn't even think of controlling the enemy's flames. Apparently, the effect of the Heretical God Seed to control the power of fire was closely correlated to Lin Ming's own strength.

As he wiped out the last bits of residual flame on his palm, Lin Ming turned to look at the last remaining high-level Fire Worm character in the spiral tower – the Fat Chief.

“What… what do you want? I… I can give you…” The Fat Chief trembled as he stepped back, his voice wobbling. These deathsworn guards around him were only at the Bone Forging stage. On the battlefield, they were similar to sharp blades that rushed forwards. But compared to the Fire Worm Shaman, they were no more than weak insects. In front of this demon, they weren’t even worth mentioning; none of them were able to give the Fat Chief any sense of security.

Lin Ming glared at the Fat Chief with a look of loathing filled with utter disgust. This was a true degenerate, scum that should not exist in this world. He casually flicked his spear and frostily said, “You have nothing that is worth my interest. I only want one thing from you, and that is for you to die.”

“No… don’t kill me, don’t kill me! I can give you wealth, I can give you beautiful women! Even the throne!” The Fat Chief’s face had already scrunched together; his entire fat body was unable to stop jiggling in terror. At this time, his was truly in despair. What had happened? He had sent out a sound transmitting talisman yet no one had come? Where were the masters of the Fire Worm Clan? There was such a loud sound… if they didn’t hear the sound transmitting talisman, they at least should have heard the loud explosions and crashes.

Were they all killed?

Realizing this, the Fat Chief’s heart sank to the depths of despair.

As Lin Ming approached, step by step, each and every footstep seemed to stamp on the Fat Chief’s heart. An invisible pressure surged forth, making it difficult to breathe. A slave girl knelt down, throwing herself to the floor in the deepest kowtow, her eyes full of adoration and worship, completely paying respect and performing the rituals of the Sorcerer.

The Fat Chief’s entire body was wet with cold sweat. He was too scared; even the group of Bone Forging stage deathsworn in front of him could not resist this terrifying pressure.

“Kill him!”

The guard captain suddenly screamed, and over 20 deathsworn took out their weapons, rushing over to bring down Lin Ming.

Lin Ming glanced over them without an expression, then coldly said, “All of you… walk the road of death!”

Cha!

The Purple Comet Spear thrust out, and countless rays of dazzling purple and white thunder blazed along the speartip. It was as if a purple sun had risen within the room.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

The more than 20 deathsworn were pierced by this electric light. The power of thunder ravaged their bodies, destroying their meridians and cooking their organs. They died before they hit the ground.

In a single spear thrust, the more than 20 deathsworn had all died. Now there was only the Fat Chief left!

Several slave girls watched this scene in abstract horror. In a single spear, more than 20 top masters had been killed; this was even more shocking than Lin Ming killing the Fire Worm Shaman earlier. These slave girls’ home tribes had been trampled upon by the Fire Worm armies. They had witnessed these top masters casually slaying their tribe’s bravest warriors. But now, they all died to this young boy’s spear!

What kind of terrifying strength was this?

The Sorcerer!

The Sorcerer had sent his envoy to save them!

A few slave girls prostrated themselves in devout worship. The Fat Chief was despondent; he slumped to the ground, his knees wobbling and weak. He was normally a monster who held the lives of others in his hand, he knew just how terrible death was.

Lin Ming gave a humph of disgust and icily said, “Killing you will only dirty my spear.”

As his voice fell, Lin Ming’s pupils suddenly turned into swirling black vortexes.

Peng!

The Fat Chief’s eyes exploded, blood leaking from his head. The Fat Chief had barely reached the peak Viscera Training stage by relying on pills. Under the power of Lin Ming’s Samsara martial intent, his spiritual sea had directly blown up, his brain already becoming a mush of gray matter.

Now there were only a group of slave girls left in the room. They kneeled towards Lin Ming, trembling.

“You all can leave now.” Lin Ming wasn’t a ruthless murderer who killed without compunction. The reason that he killed those deathsworn guards before was because their murderous aura was too heavy. They had followed the Fire Worm Tribe into many wars throughout the years, and had killed too many innocents and committed too many foul deeds. They had chosen to walk the road of death, and now the killers became those who were killed.

As he spoke, he poked his spear into the dying flame boy on the ground. Suddenly, a deep red fireball shot out from the flame boy’s chest, shooting straight towards the windows!

Bop!

The crimson fireball flew into the window opening and bounced back as if it struck some impossibly hard wall. The window seemed to be covered by an invisible film, unbreakable.

Lin Ming calmly put away the Purple Comet Spear. Before he had entered the spiral tower, he had already laid down the dreamland enchantment.

The enchantment of the Dreamland Pearl that Mu Qianyu gave him could only be broken by a martial artist at the Xiantian realm or above. This little medium-grade human-step Flame Essence was naturally useless against it.

‘So, this Eternal Flame Flame Essence is actually an Earthcore Crimson Flame…’

As Lin Ming thought, he casually threw out several hundred azure true essence threads that shackled the Flame Essence. Recently, he had read through many ancient texts that described various Flame Essences and Thunder Souls, and he now had a very good understanding of them. The Eternal Flame was only a name that was given to it by the Fire Worm Tribe. But, this Flame Essence, within the Sky Spill Continent, was called the Earthcore Crimson Flame.

‘The Earthcore Crimson Flame is a medium-grade human-step Flame Essence. Although its grade isn’t too high, it has been carefully cultivated by the Fire Worm Tribe for all these years. Its power is already near the peak of its grade.’

When a Flame Essence was born into the world, its grade was already decided and could not be changed. However, its power could be slowly raised. This Earthcore Crimson Flame had been built up for a long period of time, and the energy within was close to the maximum saturation amount. This saved a great deal of time for Lin Ming.

“Once I swallow this Flame Essence, I wonder what grade the Heretical God Seed’s Flame Essence will rise to.” Lin Ming mumbled, his fingers interlocking as he began to seal away the Flame Essence.

Whether it was a Flame Essence or Thunder Soul, these were objects that could not be directly stored in a spatial ring; there had to be special preparations. A fire attribute or thunder attribute martial artist had to use their inner elemental true essence and seal it away. Lin Ming had especially studied these sort of seals, and he could now seal a human-step Flame Essence. However, he was not able to deal with an earth-step Flame Essence.

Once the Flame Essence was firmly sealed, Lin Ming found that the group of slave girls hadn’t left, but were actually kneeling on the floor.

“You haven’t left yet?”

The women kept kowtowing. One of them spoke up, her voice trembling, “Sorcerer… Sorcerer Envoy. Everyone’s dead, if we leave we will die. I beg the Sorcerer Envoy to save us… please… we will do anything…”

The woman’s voice had no confidence in it at all. Her deepest wish was to follow Lin Ming as his slave or his maid, but she knew that she had no qualifications.

As he listened to these women’s terrified sobs, Lin Ming sighed. This was a world where power reigned supreme. The strong ruled the weak, and the weak capitulated. This sort of unspoken law had continued for countless years.

Lin Ming wasn’t a weak-willed soft person. He knew that the existence of tragedy was a rule of the world, he knew that heinous crimes and horrifying deeds were committed everywhere, and he also knew that he couldn’t save everyone. But, since he had met these women, he naturally would not turn a blind eye to their plight.

“Tell me, who here deserves to die?”

The woman who spoke was stunned. She immediately clenched her teeth and slowly said, “Those who can live in the heart of the Fire Worm Clan are all high level members. If they haven’t followed the army, looted, raped, pillaged, and murdered countless innocents, then how would they accumulate their military exploits and reach the positions they are at now?”

Lin Ming was a bit surprised looking at this woman. Although she was a slave and although she was frightened, her words were still clear and her thinking was rational. Before she was captured, she was most likely the daughter of some aristocratic family. Of course, this wasn’t strange. If a slave was selected to serve at the side of the Fire Worm Chief, then their background wouldn’t be ordinary.

“I understand.”

Lin Ming took out the Purple Comet Spear from his spatial ring and removed the dreamland enchantment.

Then he jumped out of the window, disappearing into the endless dark night.

After seeing Lin Ming leave, the women stared after him, feeling anxious and helpless.

But quickly, they heard screams coming from outside the spiral tower.

The slave girls rushed to the window, looking out, and saw streaks of purple thunder flashing in the dark. In an instant, seven or eight people were burned to ashes. The women’s minds trembled, shocked. The people who had died were either masters of the Fire Worm Clan or figures who held true power. Just choosing any one of them, one would see a great figure who compelled respect. But now, this black-clothed youth was actually cutting them all down like ants.

Although the women already knew Lin Ming’s strength, witnessing it once again filled them with shock.

The long spear waved, thunder and fire danced together. With every spear thrust, several – or even a dozen people, died at once. And of these people, the worst among them were at the Bone Forging stage, and there were many who had even reached the Pulse Condensation period.

Tonight was fated to be a night of flowing blood…

Chapter 314.2 – Absorbing the Earthcore Crimson Flame

Chapter 314.2 – Absorbing the Earthcore Crimson Flame

…

…

…

Under the spiral tower, horrified screams sounded out one after another. Every scream was extremely short; it was clear that those who died were instantly killed. This was a completely one-sided massacre.

Slowly, the women in the spiral tower became numb to this.

The former rulers of the of Fire Worm Tribe were now nothing more than a messy pile of corpses. A moment later, a cell was opened, and a group of prisoners escaped. Their shackles were shattered, granting them the freedom they dreamed of for a long time. Slaves knelt to their feet, kissing the ground. The slave girls that had been tormented within the barracks cried upon each others' shoulders in joy.

The confusion began to spread. Overnight, the three leaders of the Fire Worm Tribe had been killed, and all of the powerful characters of the Fire Worm Clan were slain. The slaves and prisoners rose up from their chains in a mass revolt, killing their way to the palace!

In this chaos, Lin Ming was like a ghost as he flew from Fire Worm City, arriving at the residence of the Na Sisters at Fog Valley Tribe. His entire body was bathed red in blood and filled with a murderous aura; he was like a monster that had crawled from the depths of the Ashura Hell.

Fog Valley Tribe hadn't yet obtained the news of what had happened, and they were as tranquil as ever. Na Shui was sleeping in her room. Na Yi quickly put on a thin white robe, hurrying out.

Peng!

Lin Ming tossed a bloodstained package on the ground.

As Na Yu saw this crimson colored package, her pupils narrowed. She suddenly realized what it was, and her lips shivered.

"This is Chi Yue's head. Take it as a grave blessing for your master. The Fire Worm Tribe is in chaos, and the slaves have revolted against the palace. Maybe, from now on, there will be no more Fire Worm. The flames of war will spread to Fog Valley Tribe. You and your sister should leave..."

As Lin Ming calmly spoke, he was somewhat depressed. When the Magic Cube had opened the second time, it was because it had absorbed the blood essence of a peak Houtian master.

After Lin Ming killed Chi Yue, he had wanted to use a Houtian master's blood essence to see if the Magic Cube would absorb Chi Yue's blood essence and open up again. However, he was disappointed.

The Magic Cube had absorbed a bit of Chi Yue's blood essence, but there was no reaction.

Was it because the blood essence from the Purple Gold flexible armor that the Crown Prince had gifted him was special?

Or was it because a Houtian master's blood essence had no special meaning for the Magic Cube?

Lin Ming had a faint premonition that it was because of that reason. The flexible armor that the Crown Prince had given him from own judgment, wasn't special in any way.

"Chi… Chi Yue's head?" Na Yi gasped. She hadn't thought that not only would Lin Ming keep his word and kill the Fire Worm Shaman, but he would return so quickly.

Na Yi's trembling hands slowly untied the package, and she saw that the gruesome head of the fire Worm Shaman was within. She appeared excited, but also pained. She remembered the day that her own master had died a horrific death, and now, that great hatred was finally avenged. She had completed the blood oath that she taken on that day, and could now offer the Fire Worm Shaman's head as a sacrifice to her master.

"Thank you… thank you Benefactor!" Na Yi said as she bit her lips, her eyes wet with tears.

"There is no need to thank me, he was a man that I needed to kill. Now, things have been settled. Lady Na Yi, take care. If destiny wills it, we will meet again." Lin Ming's figure flashed, and he left like a ghost…

……………………

Lin Ming's expectations were on the mark. After the core leaders and inner circle were all slaughtered by him, the remnants of the palace could not resist the uprising of the mob of slaves. The Fire Worm Palace was taken that evening, and in a single night, the Fire Worm Tribe was completely destroyed!

Under tyranny, there would be a revolt. Behind vast slave empires, there were often many contentious and contradictory forces working behind the scenes. If a single fuse was lit, it would explode just like a volcano.

Since ancient times, the Southern Wilderness was a land of endless chaos. There were many slave empires that existed in these years. They rose with astonishing speed, annexing large swathes of land. However, as soon as they stood straight, they would fall. This was the flow of history.

The Fire Worm Tribe was not the first, nor would they be the least.

Afterwards, war would burn down the entire country, and many powers would emerge, just like mushrooms that were struggling to grow. There were even some small tribes with just a few hundred people.

Lin Ming wouldn't have imagined that in this chaos, Na Yi would actually rely on the gold that Lin Ming had given her and also the head of Chi Yue to proclaim herself as a Sorcerer Envoy. She would establish vast influence and power, and several years later, she would form a massive tribe with tens of thousands of people.

Na Yi slowly realized the dying wishes of her master and parents, one at a time. Not only was her vengeance fulfilled, but she also reformed the Na Tribe. Afterwards, she and her sister would rely on the resources gathered by her people to step into the Houtian realm together. Of the two sisters, one was cold-blooded, and the other was incomparably warm and gentle, becoming the twin queens that were revered within the Na Tribe.

But in that tribe, there was also a new spiritual belief that would be established, with a new figure as its head. This figure held a long spear in his hand and looked like a youth dressed in black. He was called the Spear Emperor. It was said that the Spear Emperor was an existence even more formidable than the Feather Emperor from 6000 years ago. But after he rose to fame, he returned to his homeland, no one knowing where he went.

It was not only in the new Na Tribe, but also in every major tribe's ancient texts. They all recorded that a legendary figure known as the Spear Emperor had completely slaughtered all of the Fire Worm Tribe's masters. Yet this youth was only between 16 and 18 years of age. Such an incredible matter had countless eyewitnesses, including a group of former slave girls that solemnly testified they had seen Lin Ming, and even referred to him as the Sorcerer Envoy. This young boy had instantly killed the Fire Worm Shaman, this is what the people believed.

The people of the Southern Wilderness worshipped powerful figures the most. To them, these powerhouses were gods. Therefore there were several tribes that had formed from the wreckage of the Fire Worm Tribe and took the Spear Emperor into their spiritual beliefs.

Finally, the Spear Emperor was recorded down within the ancient texts with a status equal to the Feather Emperor within the Southern Wilderness.

Of course, all of this is a story for another time.

…………………

After the downfall of the Fire Worm Clan, Lin Ming hid within a remote cave in the Southern Wilderness, going into seclusion as he prepared to swallow the Earthcore Crimson Flame.

He first used the Dreamland Pearl to lay down an enchantment, so that no vicious beasts would disturb him.

Then he took the Fire Essence from his spatial ring and slowly removed the seals, layer by layer. The Flame Essence suddenly moved, as if he wanted to break free.

Although a Flame Essence was eternal and would never be extinguished, its strength would still slowly fade. If a Flame Essence was sealed for too long a time, it would become extremely weak.

After the battle with Chi Yue, not only did Lin Ming obtain the Flame Essence, but he also understood a rough limit of his strength.

Chi Yue had a cultivation at the late Houtian realm. Because he had a Flame Essence, his strength was comparable to a lowly peak Houtian realm master. Within Chi Yue's so-called Houtian realm, it would be difficult for anyone to rival him. However, this was only within the Southern Wilderness.

There was a vast difference in strength between a common martial artist and a sect's martial artist. This was because the resources they had were different, but also because their cultivation methods and martial skills had a wide disparity between them. Not just that, but there was also the difference in talent. With all of these factors combined together, it was difficult to place them side by side.

If one casually selected someone from a group that contained talents like Jiang Lanjian or Ouyang Ming, they could compare with a middle Houtian realm master. If it was an earth-step talent like Jiang Baoyun, Bai Shuxuan, or Mugu Buyu, they could compare with a late Houtian realm master.

But with Lin Ming's current strength – in addition to the support of the Purple Comet Spear and the coiling dragon steel needle – he could defeat a peak Houtian master with ease.

But this so-called peak Houtian master was much weaker than a true sect's Houtian master like Qin Ziya.

Lin Ming pondered. If he confronted Qin Ziya as he was now, he would definitely be defeated.

But if he also had this Flame Essence…

Lin Ming's gaze shifted to the Earthcore Crimson Flame. He didn't know just how much his strength would grow after he swallowed it.

"Even with this Flame Essence, I fear it would be impossible for me to defeat Qin Ziya. I'm just too weak as I am. Compared to the Xiantian realm Ouyang Boyan, I'm simply nothing."

Thinking of Ouyang Boyan, Lin Ming felt uneasy, like a thorn was stabbed in his back. With such a powerful enemy lurking behind him, he would naturally not be comfortable.

Ouyang Boyan would never dare to kill him outright. On the other hand, it was impossible for Lin Ming to depend on Mu Qianyu's influence to kill Ouyang Boyan. The sect rules of the Seven Profound Valleys not only protected Lin Ming, but they also protected Ouyang Boyan. No matter how high Mu Qianyu's status was, it was impossible for her to kill Ouyang Boyan for wrongdoing without even a shred of evidence. That might possibly cause the disintegration of their alliance.

"Power…" Lin Ming clenched his teeth.

What he needed the most right now was power. As long as he was by himself and revealed his location, there was an extreme possibility that he would be chased down by Ouyang Boyan. Then, there was an absolute chance he would die with no grave!

Lin Ming didn't think that as he was now, there would even be a half chance of him escaping from Ouyang Boyan's grasp.

Not only that, but his parents were forced to hide because of the threat of Ouyang Boyan. Because of the guilt of having to make his parents live life without being able to go out, Lin Ming yearned for power even more.

"Tempering Marrow is just too difficult. I have to temporarily set aside the Tempering Marrow boundary for now and try to break through to the Houtian realm!" Lin Ming decided that as long as he could complete Tempering Marrow before he was 20 years old, it wouldn't be considered too late.

After 20 years of age, the best time for Tempering Marrow would pass. His marrow would age, and it would become increasingly difficult to succeed.

Lin Ming tore off the final seals of the Earthcore Crimson Flame and pressed the Flame Essence directly into his own chest.

The burning hot power of fire immediately rushed into Lin Ming's meridians, recklessly destroying everything in sight.

Lin Ming gave a stuffy cough and his body trembled; his complexion was as red as blood.

With his strength, in combination with the Heretical God Seed, he had the power to suppress the power of fire and absorb the medium-grade human-step Flame Essence. In truth, this wasn't too difficult; it was just that the Fire Worm Tribe had cultivated their Flame Essence very well.

It was just like taming a tiger. There was naturally an enormous difference between taming an adult tiger and taming a tiger cub.

There were many fire attribute martial artists, that in order to absorb a Flame Essence, would first have to wear down the fiery energy of the Flame Essence before barely being able to absorb it. When Lin Ming had jumped realms and absorbed the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, he had used the Magnetic Birthstone to channel and absorb the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder's power of thunder before he could absorb it.

But this time, Lin Ming didn't have a precious fire attribute version of the Magnetic Birthstone that was able to absorb the power of fire from the Flame Essence. Although wearing down the Flame Essence would be relatively easy, having to build it back up again was very troublesome.

Lin Ming didn't want to waste this time.

Lin Ming suppressed the bursts of burning pain within him, and then revolved his azure true essence, constantly pouring it into the Heretical God Seed. A wave of suppression surged forth, potently pushing down the Earthcore Crimson Flame.

The Heretical God Seed had an extremely powerful suppressive strength against fire and thunder. The Earthcore Crimson Flame was divided into parts, scattering within Lin Ming's meridians…

Facing so many flames, Lin Ming meditated in patience, and began to slowly absorb them all…

Chapter 315 – Sect Destruction

Chapter 315 – Sect Destruction

…

…

…

A Flame Essence was an amazingly powerful natural force. In normal circumstances, when it was a highly potent medium-grade human-step Flame Essence, one would have to be a late Houtian master from a sect, or a peak Houtian master to absorb it. Not only that, but one would usually need the assistance of some rare treasure like the Glacial Ice Divine Spring.

But Lin Ming was currently relying entirely on his own powerful body and strength to forcibly tame this Flame Essence. His advantage was that his meridians were incomparably tough, but the burning pain still felt like he was being roasted from the inside out, spreading through his body like a tide. Lin Ming revolved his azure true essence to protect his meridians. The azure true essence was endless; even after being burned away by the flames, it would quickly regenerate.

With such support, Lin Ming began to stamp out the flames that rampaged through his meridians. Each time, the Flame Essence would weaken, but the Heretical God Seed would grow stronger.

Under this reversal, another quarter hour passed and Lin Ming was finally able to take complete control of the situation. Now, absorbing the Earthcore Crimson Flame was only a matter of time.

Chi chi chi!

The Heretical God Seed’s Flame Essence danced excitedly, greedily devouring all of the power of fire and constantly growing.

To a normal martial artist, a Flame Essence was no different from a weapon. Once a weapon was forged, its grade was already decided. Later, when they became stronger, they would have to replace their weapon just like they replaced a Flame Essence.

But this situation would never occur with the Heretical God Seed. The Flame Essence could absorb other Flame Essences and grow from them.

An hour later, Lin Ming used his soul force to tow a tiny amount of crimson flame through his meridians. These were the final dredges of the power of fire in his meridians, and they had fully integrated within him. With the enhancement of his fusion compatibility, the Earthcore Crimson Flame became increasingly lively.

“The absorption has finally ended.”

Lin Ming let out a light breath, and absorbed all of the leftover flames into the Heretical God Seed. Then a vast power of fire erupted from within, integrating with the fire origin energy he had gathered while cultivating the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’.

There was a slight popping sound, as if something had cracked apart, and Lin Ming was surprised. Then, he was ecstatic. He had finally broken through to the middle Pulse Condensation period!

He had finally made his breakthrough. With the little bit of medicinal strength left over from the Heaven Opening Pill, the absorption of the Flame Essence, and also the month-long high-intensity cultivation within Ancestor Chi Yan’s mountain range, these three factors had come together and enabled him to complete his breakthrough. It had been a long and difficult process.

If he were a normal martial artist, things wouldn’t have been so troublesome. After taking a Heaven Opening Pill, as long as his body didn’t explode from the energy, then he would be able to rush to the late Pulse Condensation period or even the peak Pulse Condensation period in a single go.

This was the price Lin Ming had to pay in order to lay down the most solid of foundations. Every time he made a breakthrough, he would have to pay two times, or even three times the cost of a normal martial artist.

It wasn't only Lin Ming, but also sect geniuses like Jiang Baoyun, Bai Shuxuan, Qin Wuxin, and others. Before they reached the Xiantian realm, they would have to make a perfect breakthrough at every stage. This was also why they were superior talents that could fight above their ranks, and the reason they were leagues above any common martial artist.

If there was ever a day that their talent was insufficient to carry them to a complete breakthrough, then that would be the signal that they had reached the end of their cultivation road. In the future, it would be exceedingly difficult to reach a higher realm.

After breaking through to the middle Pulse Condensation period, Lin Ming needed to remove all the impurities in his body that he had recently acquired. He readied himself to return to the Seven Profound Valleys so he could calmly cultivate. While he was there, he would also learn the Mirage Faction's camouflage techniques and explore the mystery of Jiang Baoyun's spiritual attack.

The Southern Wilderness was quite close to Lin Ming's hometown. But, he could not visit his hometown on the way back. He was alone, and now with Ouyang Boyan prowling at the edges, he didn't want to be exposed to the public. Doing so would only invite danger towards his family.

If Lin Ming didn't kill Ouyang Boyan, his heart would never be at peace.

Lin Ming sighed, and then whistled loudly into the air. The Winged Flood Dragon was called down, and Lin Ming jumped onto its back, flying straight in the direction of the Seven Profound Valleys…

However, sometimes matters never proceeded as one planned; everything was up to the whim of fate. Lin Ming never thought that while he was returning to the sect, there would be a shocking event that would affect Divine Phoenix Island and the 19 third-grade sects, and also an event that would change the climate of the entire South Horizon Region…

………………

Two days later –

Lin Ming sat on the Winged Flood Dragon's back, flying at full speed towards the Seven Profound Valleys. A strong heavenly wind blew against him, his clothes flapping in the wind, and his black hair wildly dancing in the air.

At this moment, a bright flame suddenly lit in front of Lin Ming. The flame flashed, and was quickly flown past by the Winged Flood Dragon.

Sound transmitting talisman?

Lin Ming was stunned. He was still in the remote lands of the Seven Profound territory. The only one that could use, or would be willing to use a sound transmitting talisman at this time to find him would be Mu Qianyu. Such a super long-distance sound transmitting talisman had an astronomical price; even Mu Qianyu wouldn't casually use one.

What sort of important matter had happened? She actually used a super long-distance sound transmitting talisman to contact him?

After several breaths, the fuzzy and intermittent voice of Mu Qianyu resounded in Lin Ming's ear.

"In a single night, the Moon Seizing Sect was destroyed. Over 90% of their sect has perished. The entire region has broken out with vicious beast tides. This is absolutely the work of the South Sea Demon Region's Beast Control Clan Sovereign. Remember to be careful."

Mm!?

Lin Ming was stunned. The Moon Seizing Sect was destroyed in a single night!? How did this happen!

The Moon Seizing Sect was one of the 19 third-grade sects under the jurisdiction of Divine Phoenix Island. In terms of strength, they couldn't compare to the Seven Profound Valleys, but they ultimately were still a third-grade sect, and probably had no less than a hundred Xiantian masters, and most likely even a Revolving Core elder who commanded them. But they had actually been destroyed in a single night!

The South Sea Demon Region was actually the first to make a move!

After Lin Ming overcame his shock, he realized what the intention of the South Sea Demon Region was. It was to destroy the alliance between Divine Phoenix Island and the 19 third-grade sects.

The Moon Seizing Sect was closest to the South Sea Demon Region. As long as five or six Revolving Core masters crossed the sea and snuck into the Moon Seizing Sect, they would be destroyed overnight!

The South Sea Demon Region was temporarily unable to move against Divine Phoenix Island. But, if they wanted to act against these third-grade sects, who could stop the combined power of five to six Revolving Core masters?

If the South Sea Demon Region could exterminate the Moon Seizing Sect, then that meant they could similarly exterminate the Seven Profound Valleys!

Maybe only a top third-grade sect like the Falling Cloud Sect or Peacock Mountain would be able to barely defend themselves. Like this, the alliance of Divine Phoenix Island and the 10 third-grade sects would be in imminent danger. If Divine Phoenix Island couldn't protect the other third-grade sects, then who wouldn't be afraid after having the tragic extermination of a fellow third-grade sect placed in front of them?

If Divine Phoenix Island was defeated by the South Sea Demon Region, then the South Sea Demon Region would be the absolute rulers of the entire Divine Phoenix territory. The third-grade sects might be able to maintain a pitiful existence in that situation. But, if they joined hands with Divine Phoenix Island and resisted them, they might not be able to see the next dawn.

Thinking this, Lin Ming couldn't help but be frightened. The South Sea Demon Region was truly a demonic clan, their actions and conduct were decisively ruthless and brutal. Without any delay – or even having sent a warning – they had directly eliminated an entire sect!

Not only was a sect exterminated, but the Beast Control Clan had also acted, stirring up a massive vicious beast tide. There were countless stories of the terrors and dangers of these vicious beast tides found within the ancient historical texts. For all these tens of thousands of years, there had been countless countries within Sky Spill Continent that had been destroyed by a vicious beast tide. In fact, the reason that the Na Tribe of the Southern Wilderness had been destroyed by the Fire Worm Tribe was because they had been weakened by a vicious beast tide.

Beast tide… Lin Ming's heart suddenly shook.

This was bad!

His Lin Family was located in Green Mulberry City. South of Green Mulberry City were the Green Mulberry Mountains. And the mountains continued thousands of miles south, reaching into the Southern Wilderness!

The surrounding area of the Green Mulberry Mountains was nothing worth speaking of, but if one went deep in, there were exceedingly formidable vicious beasts. Once a vicious beast tide erupted, then the city that lay at the foot of the mountains would bear the brunt of their rampage.

This was Green Mulberry City!

Thinking this, Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. He had to return home immediately. Green Mulberry City was his hometown, and was no different than his very roots. He could not see his hometown destroyed.

……………………

As the year ended, and the new year began, the weather started to become warmer with each day, and the fields of snow and ice melted into the ground. The lush world began to regenerate. The trees were thick with vibrant green leaves, and all sorts of little animals began to happily prance through the forests.

This deep valley was like a magical paradise. But, what very few knew was that within this deep valley, there was a relay station that was set up by the Seven Profound Valleys. In truth, this so-called relay station was actually the central transit point of a transmission array. With the background of the Seven Profound Valleys, it was difficult for them to create many long-distance transmission arrays that could span several hundred thousands of miles. So they had to set up transmit points along the way.

These relay stations had masters guarding them all year round. Currently, the deacon stationed there was Liu Yueshan, a master whose cultivation had reached the late Houtian realm.

Beyond the relay station, the land was full of flowers and sun, just like a perfect spring day. But within the relay station, there was an extremely heavy aura. Liu Yueshan frowned. At this moment, his head was lowered, as if he were thinking of something.

Suddenly, a clear roar sounded out from the sky. Liu Yueshan looked up to see the shadow of a winged dragon-shaped creature pass above him, steadily and swiftly soaring down from the sky, shooting past between two mountains and disappearing.

Liu Yueshan didn’t even have time to determine just what had happened, when he saw a black figure jump down from the sky, slowly falling onto the ground.

This just-arrived black-clothed youth seemed to be around 17 or 18 years old, and the sharp contours of his face seemed to hide a sharp energy that made one's heart race.

Liu Yueshan's pupils shrank. This person was…

"Liu Yueshan?" Lin Ming shook a little token in his hand. This pure gold token was a Seven Profound Seal that only direct disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys had.

Liu Yueshan was shocked, direct disciple!?

As a deacon of a relay station, his status was inferior to Huoluo Nation's Seven Profound Martial House Master. As for those lofty characters like the direct disciples that had a status comparable to an elder, that was truly a remote existence.

"Huoluo Nation relay station deacon Liu Yueshan greets Sir."

At this time, Lin Ming was near desperation; it was like his heart was on fire. So he spared the needlessly complicated rituals and directly asked, "Liu Yueshan, I ask you, has a vicious beast tide erupted within Sky Fortune Kingdom?"

Liu Yueshan was the one who managed this relay station, and this relay station was also used to share news. Also, this place wasn't too far from Sky Fortune Kingdom. It was very likely that he would be the first to receive any news.

"Reporting to Sir, this subordinate hasn't received any news. Vicious beast tides have risen up throughout the entire Seven Profound territory. Requests for help are like snowflakes in a winter storm. The Seven Profound Valleys is overwhelmed with requests at this moment."

The Seven Profound territory was extremely large. In comparison, the Seven Profound Valleys was very small. There were between 100 and 200 Xiantian masters, and over a thousand Houtian masters. If the Pulse Condensation disciples and normal disciples were counted, then there might be just under 20,000 people in total. Where would they have the manpower to quell the problems of the 36 countries and also keep enough people to defend their sect, so that they wouldn't be destroyed overnight?

Lin Ming let out deep breath. There wasn't news from Sky Fortune Kingdom, but right now, no news was also good news. He hesitated for a moment, and then said to Liu Yueshan. "Deacon Liu, if I could trouble you to send a message to the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction and ask if they could send some help to Sky Fortune Kingdom. It is fine as long as they are at the Pulse Condensation period!"

Chapter 316 – Beast Tide

Chapter 316 – Beast Tide

…

…

…

Liu Yueshan looked at Lin Ming nervously. If he were to do such a thing, it was likely that he would be scolded and punished. Currently, danger and mayhem had erupted within the entire Seven Profound territory. He had heard rumors that some great Demonic Sect had risen up, and wanted to take over the entire Divine Phoenix Province. Right now, he was just a tiny relay station deacon. He didn't even have the qualifications to use a long distance sound transmission array, much less request the Seven Profound Valleys to send men to help defend a small country.

"This... Sir..."

Lin Ming didn't have time to listen to Liu Yueshan's malingering complaints. He straightforwardly said, "You tell them that Lin Ming requests help."

"Lin Ming?"

Liu Yueshan paused. So the direct disciple in front of him was Lin Ming. Although he hadn't visited the sect for a long time, the great name of Lin Ming still resounded in his mind like thunder. A common martial artist of the 36 countries had actually become champion of the 36 countries; how could he not have heard such an exaggerated matter? He probably would have even if he were deaf.

Come to think of it, wasn't Lin Ming from Sky Fortune Kingdom? No wonder he had this sort of request. According to Liu Yueshan's information, Lin Ming had already become a heaven-step talent that Divine Phoenix Island was training. His status was naturally not equal to an ordinary sect disciple. Even if the sect couldn't afford to send help, they still wouldn't ignore Lin Ming's homeland.

Thinking this, Liu Yueshan immediately replied, "This subordinate will immediately request help."

As he spoke, Liu Yueshan turned and began to activate the long distance sound transmission array. Lin Ming saw that the sound transmission array began to mobilize, and he quickly jumped onto the Winged Flood Dragon.

Lin Ming was strong, but it was impossible for a single person to defend against an entire beast tide. He needed an army to back him up, and other masters at his side. It was pointless for the Seven Profound Valleys to keep Pulse Condensation martial artists around as protection. In front of a Revolving Core master, they weren't even ants. With Lin Ming's current status, it wouldn't be asking too much to request some defenders for Sky Fortune Kingdom.

The Winged Flood Dragon shot forth with lightning speed. As Lin Ming rode on its back, he was able to cross 2000 miles in a single hour.

"Mm? Those black spots in the air are vicious beasts?"

The Winged Flood Dragon was amazingly quick. In just a few breaths of time, those black dots became clear. There were countless fire falcons, flying leopards, man-eating birds, and countless other bizarre and fantastical vicious beasts that Lin Ming didn't know the name of. There must have been tens of thousands in the dense cloud they were gathered in. And this was only in the air – there were probably many more on the ground.

Lin Ming gasped. As he was flying, this was the first time that he had witnessed the beast tide. Although these vicious beasts in front of him were mostly first-level, second-level, third-level, and other low ranking vicious beasts, this was a case of quantity over quality. A mass of them could eventually overwhelm and pile over a master.

It was hard to imagine what sort of supernatural power was used to stir up all of the vicious beasts in the massive several million mile wide land of the Divine Phoenix Province, causing beast tide eruptions on such a terrifyingly large scale!

This demonstration of the South Sea Demon Region's power was to force the 18 leftover third-grade sects to yield to their power. Now, the only way the 18 sects could face the South Sea Demon Region was if they gathered together all of their Revolving Core masters. But what sect would possibly do this? Who would willingly give up the land that they had ruled supreme over for so many years?

If they remained scattered, they could either surrender or die. But if they came together, the price they had to pay was too steep.

This move of the South Sea Demon Region was truly ruthless.

After the rioting vicious beasts discovered Lin Ming, they rushed over to him. Lin Ming took out the Purple Comet Spear from his spatial ring and thrust out. True essence stirred the power of fire within the Heretical God Seed, and a flaming red line slashed through the air as if it were dancing in the wind. Everywhere it went, vicious beasts would turn into charred corpses, falling from the sky like bugs.

With a single spear strike, dozens of vicious beasts would die. The surrounding vicious beasts were overwhelmed by this spear and were frightened of flying forwards. Lin Ming thrust out several times with his spear, planning on tearing his way through this mass of vicious beasts and using the speed of the Winged Flood Dragon to break through.

At this moment, Lin Ming suddenly heard a loud roar, and a large vicious beast approached. It had the body of a hawk and the head of a lion, and its wingspan was 50 feet wide. The lion hawk beast shot towards Lin Ming. This vicious beast was the leader of this flying beast tide.

"Fourth-level vicious beast?"

Lin Ming gave it a side glance, thrusting out his spear like usual.

Peng!

The lion hawk beast was slaughtered by the spear without any resistance.

Lin Ming relied on this spear strike and directly broke out of the encirclement, soaring away…

……………………

At this time, in Sky Fortune Kingdom –

The news of the beast tide outbreak had already spread through the entire country. Every city that was near a forest or mountain was on edge, everyone fearing that they would be the ones rampaged over.

From yesterday until now, they had heard of cities in surrounding countries that had been annihilated under the flood of vicious beasts. In particular, the Eastern Sun Country who lived terrifyingly close to large swathes of forests had suffered the most; countless civilians had perished.

The beast tide had come so suddenly that the Eastern Sun Country didn't even have time to mobilize their army. Over half of the country had been swallowed up within the endless beast tide.

Compared to the Eastern Sun Country, Sky Fortune Kingdom was much more fortunate. Large tracts of their kingdom were plains which usually only had a few tigers. And they only had a handful of cities that were close to the mountains or forests.

The greatest of these were Sky Fortune City which was near the Zhou Mountains, as well as Green Mulberry City which was near the Green Mulberry Mountains.

Regardless of whether it was the Zhou Mountains or the Green Mulberry Mountains, they stretched for thousands of miles. In the depths of mountains were countless extremely horrifying vicious beasts.

However, Sky Fortune City was in a much better situation than Green Mulberry City. This was because the Seven Profound Martial House was located at the greatest mountain within the Zhou Mountain range. The Seven Profound Martial House was a super shield to keep off any beast tide, this caused everyone behind them to feel much more at ease. Even if a beast tide were to occur, it had to get past the Seven Profound Martial House before reaching Sky Fortune City.

In addition, this was also the capital of Sky Fortune Kingdom. It had a large army guarding it, so the aristocrats within were relatively calm.

The Four Majors of Sky Fortune City's four Royal Guard Forces were usually unimportant, only playing a symbolic role. But now, they had become heroes of Sky Fortune City, with an extremely high and mighty status.

The army that guarded the frontier was already quickly rushing towards the capital. But how could the speed of an army compare with a beast tide? Until the army returned, Sky Fortune City had to rely on the four Royal Guard Forces as well as the Seven Profound Martial House to defend.

Zhang Danian was the major who commanded the western Royal Guard Force. These past days, his family household's door had nearly been worn down from knocking. There had been many nobles and aristocrats with statuses higher than his that had been abnormally polite. They gave him rich presents, requesting for the Royal Guard Force to take care of their families.

To these nobles, their properties and the lives of their family were much more important than gold.

Zhang Danian liked this feeling very much. He had commanded the western Royal Guard Forces for many years. As long as he didn't do something extremely stupid or crazy, he would remain the commander, and the western Royal Guard Forces would remain under his control. Zhang Danian was considering whether or not he should send troops to the Seven

Profound Martial House and work with the masters there on the battlefield. Like this, they would be safe from danger.

But at this time, they received a shocking piece of news that left everyone stunned.

During the morning, they learned that Qin Ziya had withdrawn all of the Houtian realm martial artists from the Seven Profound Martial House, and even most of the Pulse Condensation period martial artists. Qin Ziya and his group had left on Heavenly Wind Eagles, flying towards Green Mulberry City. As for the disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House, they had been sent towards the very safe Moonlight City. Now the entire Seven Profound Martial House had been deserted.

Zhang Danian was frightened out of his wits. What was happening? Qin Ziya had abandoned the Seven Profound Martial House?

He felt like he was going crazy. Qin Ziya had actually decided to give up the entire Seven Profound Martial House! Even if most of the resources could be moved away, what about the seven major killing arrays, the Exquisite Pagoda, or the Ten Thousand Killing Array? These treasures were all worth millions of gold, or even tens of millions of gold, and yet they had been so easily abandoned?

But these questions were not what he was concerned about. The crux of the issue was, now that Qin Ziya had abandoned the Seven Profound Martial House, how would their Sky Fortune City manage? Without masters, how would the Royal Guard Forces defend the city?

It wasn't just Zhang Danian, but all of the high-level characters within Sky Fortune City felt like they were just waiting in a frying pan. Their root was Sky Fortune City, their everything was in Sky Fortune City. If it wasn't a last and final resort, no one was willing to leave their home and abandon their family foundation.

………………

"What!? Qin Ziya has snuck away at this life or death moment?" The emperor's younger brother smashed the cup in his hand against the ground. "Outrageous! How dare he! That

Qin Ziya only cares about escaping himself, he doesn't care about anything else! He cannot see the greater picture here! Hurry up and contact that Qin Ziya! I want to personally interrogate him!"

After Qin Ziya had had left the Seven Profound Martial House, the news had quickly spread. At this time they hadn't flown too far, and a sound transmitting talisman was still able to reach him.

As Qin Ziya stood on the Heavenly Wind Eagle, he received a message from the emperor's younger brother asking why he abandoned them, ignoring the greater picture, sneaking away at such a critical time.

Qin Ziya pinched the sound transmitting talisman, he didn't even bother replying.

Ignoring the greater picture?

This so-called greater picture was nothing more than the situation of the Royal Family and the other ruling class individuals. Qin Ziya was not a general of Sky Fortune Kingdom, so he had no obligation to protect the Royal Family.

The command to give up the Seven Profound Martial House and retreat to Green Mulberry City was issued by him. The Seven Profound Martial House was located in the middle of the Zhou Mountains. Once a beast tide erupted, they would easily be sieged from all sides by vicious beasts. The Seven Profound Martial House didn't have the high walls that a city did, and if they stubbornly stayed, they would certainly suffer extremely heavy losses, and those disciples that were too weak would die without a doubt.

So the only path they could take was to abandon the Seven Profound Martial House.

Compared to life, things like buildings and arrays were nothing at all.

Qin Ziya was not an official of Sky Fortune City, so he did not need to shield them.

Since they had to retreat, the choice of where to retreat to was up to him. Green Mulberry City was Qin Ziya's first choice. This was Lin Ming's hometown, and he owed a great favor to Lin Ming. This favor, Qin Ziya would naturally not forget.

The following morning, the sun dawned on the horizon. From the start of the beast tide eruptions until now, a total of two days and nights had passed. Green Mulberry City had entered into a state of extreme readiness, and all of the city's sergeants and commanders were incomparably nervous. Green Mulberry City was a major city, but because they were in the southern hinterlands of Sky Fortune Kingdom, they didn't have much of a garrison. There was just around 10,000 soldiers. It was impossibly difficult to depend on this army to block the vicious beast tide.

The requests for military rescue had already been sent out. But at this time, every other major city in Sky Fortune Kingdom was feeling insecure; none of them were willing to deprive themselves of manpower in order to help Green Mulberry City.

If help came, it would be from the armies of the frontier. But this was just too far, several thousand miles away. By the time the army arrived, Green Mulberry City might already be trampled flat by vicious beasts.

In this situation, there were already those who were frightened beyond their minds and decided to give up their family roots. They took their money and valuables, and fled to other regions.

While a small family could do this, it was much more difficult for a large and prominent family to abandon their foundation; their losses would simply be monumental. Not even mentioning the property, business, possessions, or farms, but the problem was the family itself. A large family could have thousands of individuals. They had the elderly, and also young children. Under the threat of a vicious beast tide, bringing thousands of weak and defenseless individuals safely to another city was easier said than done.

Chapter 317 – Returning Home

Chapter 317 – Returning Home

…

…

…

Gradually, the day began to brighten, and the morning mist was dispelled by the rising sun. On the towers above the city gates, two soldiers stood at attention. They hadn't slept, but they still looked spirited, warily watching all directions.

It had been two days since the beast tide outbreak. If the vicious beasts from the depths of the Green Mulberry Mountains had left at that time, it was highly likely that they would begin to approach the outer edges of the Green Mulberry Mountains.

The city gates had just opened, and a crowd fled through them. Men carried dry food and belongings, and women carried crying children. There were richer families who rode away on carriages, big boxes tied to them. There were even some larger and richer families who had some troops accompanying them. They had hired some martial artists, but, if they truly met a beast tide on the way, these martial artists that they had employed for protection would drop like flies.

Those that fled from the incoming calamity only made up a small portion of Green Mulberry City. Fleeing from Green Mulberry City didn't mean that it would be safe – it might even be more dangerous than staying in Green Mulberry City.

The guards of the city gate had finally reached their shift change, but as the two soldiers on lookout were about to be replaced by two others, at this moment, they saw a vague shadow in the sky, piercing through the morning fog like an arrow. It shot towards Green Mulberry City at an incredible speed.

"Vicious beasts!?"

"Warning! Warning! The beast tide has come!"

The refugees at the city gate suddenly panicked. As the soldiers on the lookout tower were about to sound the city alarm, they discovered that this so-called beast tide was only a single vicious beast. Not only that, but it seemed as if on top of the vicious beast was... a person's figure?

They couldn't see clearly because the speed this vicious beast was travelling at was too fast. Could this vicious beast that was as fast as a bolt of lightning actually be a mount? It clearly wasn't a Heavenly Wind Eagle!

In the minds of the common people, those who could use a Heavenly Wind Eagle as a flying mount were already lofty figures. For instance, the City Lord General might have such a mount, but many prominent families wouldn't.

The soldier didn't sound the alarm. Instead, he used a sound transmitting talisman to inform Green Mulberry City's City Lord. This matter was extremely sensitive. If he sounded the city alarm, it was very likely that the entire city would be thrown into utter chaos. This soldier wasn't able to shoulder the consequences of this decision.

……………………………………

At this time, Green Mulberry City's Lin Family.

Half an hour ago, Lin Ming was able to use a long-distance 1000 mile sound transmitting talisman to inquire about the family situation, and the Lin Family Head, Lin Wanshan had obtained the news that Lin Ming would return soon.

This sudden great news caused Lin Wanshan to pop up from his chair in happy excitement; Lin Ming was finally coming back!

At this critical juncture, the Lin Family needed a figure that could stabilize the situation. Although Lin Ming was strong, he wasn't strong enough to solve the problem of how to deal with the beast tide. Still, as long as he returned, that was enough to give the people hope.

It was not only the Lin Family, but several other important figures of other families had been informed that Lin Ming was returning. At this time, the several great families of Green Mulberry City had banded together in order to ride out this storm.

"Old Lin, is Lin Ming really coming back?"

As several important figures from the other prominent families gathered at the Lin Family residence, this was the first question that the Lu Family Clan's elder, Lu Wuyin had anxiously asked. If Lin Ming came back at this time, the significance of that was just too great. Although Lin Ming's own power wasn't enough to change the outcome, his status was even higher than the emperor of Sky Fortune Kingdom. As long as he stayed within Green Mulberry City, it would be relatively easy to find support.

"Of course. I just received Lin Ming's sound transmitting talisman; he should be arriving soon." Lin Wanshan slowly said as he held a teacup in his hand. At this time, he wasn't in the mood to drink a cup of tea.

"Now that Lin Ming is coming back, are there any masters with him?" The Zhuang Family Head Zhuang Fan asked, his eyes wide. This was the issue that most people were concerned about. In the hall, many other people's ears pricked up to attention, looking towards Lin Wanshan with eager expressions.

Lin Wanshan sighed and said, "Lin Ming happened to be passing through the southern border. He was near Sky Fortune Kingdom so he was able to arrive quickly, and it's only him..."

The Seven Profound Valleys was several hundred thousand miles away from Green Mulberry City. Even if the Seven Profound Valleys sent out a team of experts to help, it would still take at least 10 days if they traveled night and day.

As for the army, that wasn't even worth mentioning.

"Only a single person..." Zhuang Fan sighed, reluctantly smiling. "It's great that he came back. With one more master, there's that much more hope."

It wasn't wrong to be disappointed. Once the beast tide erupted, there would be armies of tens of thousands, or even hundreds of thousands of vicious beasts. With only a single person, no matter how strong they were, how much could they affect a beast tide? Once the gates of Green Mulberry City fell, Lin Ming would be able to easily leave with his strength, but their families...

At this moment, the people suddenly heard a clarion roar in the sky.

What came?

Everyone quickly exited the room, some doubt in their hearts; what sort of beast would make such a cry?

Looking up, they saw that in the skies of the Lin Family residence, a red dragon-shaped creature was flying in circles.

"Mm? What is that?"

Zhuang Fan was amazed. This thing looked like a Flood Dragon that birthed two wings. It had a 70 foot wingspan, and from head to tail was 80 feet long. Its entire body was layered in dark red scales, as if there was a smoldering fire burning on its body.

This aura was not something a Heavenly Wind Eagle could ever compare with.

"Hu!"

The red monster closed its wings and dropped straight down. A powerful chilling energy rushed out, forcing everyone to step back.

At a closer look, this vicious beast was even more alarming. When its wings were spread out, they covered over half the garden. Its eyes were a dark glazed gold, it had teeth were sharp, and its scales glimmered with a cold light. It emitted an aura that caused everyone's hearts to race.

This was clearly a small dragon!

There were a few people present who were Pulse Condensation masters. From the aura that the vicious beast was giving out, they could clearly feel that its strength was at the late Houtian realm, or even higher!

It was impossible to imagine that some godly beast like this could be used as a mount.

Lu Wuyin felt envy in his heart. To have such a grand creature as a mount was an impossible luxury. There was no need to mention its speed or shape, but just its strength alone was at the late Houtian realm or above. Within the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom – not including the Seven Profound Martial House – there was only a hermit hidden off in some remote corner of the kingdom that had barely reached the late Houtian realm.

Even the famous Mister Muyi and State Marshal Qin Xiao were only at the middle Houtian realm! And within all the prominent families of Green Mulberry City, there wasn't a single one that had an early Houtian master.

A black-clothed figure jumped down from the back of the dragon. This was Lin Ming.

"Lin Ming!"

"It's him!"

All of those who had seen Lin Ming's portrait immediately stood up. Although only Lin Ming had come, it was still better than nothing.

"Lin Ming greets the Family Head."

Lin Ming bowed. He naturally recognized Lin Wanshan. The last time he had seen him was during the birthday of an important family figure.

At that time, Lin Ming had only been a cook's assistant.

"Nephew Lin, please get up! This ritual isn't one I can receive." Lin Wanshan hurried forwards and propped up Lin Ming's curved body, his eyes full of satisfaction and gratification.

"Good! Good!" Lin Wanshan rubbed his hands over Lin Ming, feeling his solid body. As he said these words of praise, he sighed in his heart. In truth, this was the first time that he had seen Lin Ming. A branch family child had actually been able to come this far, even able to affect the future destiny of the Lin Family for the next several hundred years. The winds of fate were truly unpredictable.

Besides Lin Wanshan, several other important characters of the other families stood far away, not daring to open their mouths and greet Lin Ming. Lin Ming was now a direct disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys, and his status was comparably to a Seven Profound elder or Seven Profound Envoy. He was an existence who was even above Sky Fortune Kingdom's emperor. The difference between their status and Lin Ming's was just too great. Lin Wanshan was Lin Ming's elder, so he could tentatively speak to him, but no one else here related to him. The Seven Profound Valleys did not care about etiquette, only status. Accordingly, they should have kneeled to Lin Ming.

"House Head, have there been any beast tides at nearby cities?" Lin Ming had hurried on his way there, so he didn't understand the surrounding situation.

"Not right now. Sky Fortune Kingdom is very far from where vicious beasts usually gather, unlike the Eastern Sun Country. I fear over half of their country has already been destroyed." Lin Wanshan sighed, his voice heavy. The Eastern Sun Country had been an enemy of Sky Fortune Kingdom, but now that they had so tragically been ruined by hordes of vicious beasts, it really made one want to grieve for their loss.

At this time, a maid hurried over, reporting, “Master, the City Lord has arrived.”

“Mm? City Lord?”

Lin Wanshan’s eyebrows picked up; he didn’t expect the City Lord to arrive so soon.

As he spoke, a stalwart looking man in his fifties, wearing a robe with kirin boots strapped to his feet strode in. He was very thin, but his bones were wide. He walked bravely and had a very strong, imposing momentum to him.

As this courageous looking man stepped into the courtyard, he had a bright and respectful smile when he greeted Lin Ming, “Green Mulberry City’s City Lord Zhao Yanming greets Hero Lin.”

As Zhao Yanming spoke, he cupped his fists together and bowed. With Lin Ming’s current status, he naturally couldn’t address him by his full name. But a direct disciple wasn’t an official, so he called him Hero Lin.

“City Lord Zhao, there’s no need to be a stranger; it’s good if you can call me Lin Ming. I grew up within Green Mulberry City, and City Lord Zhao is my elder.” Lin Ming naturally recognized Zhao Yanming. He was a City Lord who had a very just and honorable reputation in Green Mulberry City, and Lin Ming also had a favorable impression towards him.

Zhao Yanming let out a breath, his apprehensive heart calming down. Heaven defying talents like Lin Ming, who were young, amazingly strong, and held high positions, often inevitably also had a very arrogant and reckless personality.

But it appeared that Lin Ming was a very humble and reasonable youth.

As he was about to speak, he inadvertently glanced at the Winged Flood Dragon in the courtyard. Suddenly, his complexion changed.

“This… this is a Winged Flood Dragon!?”

Zhang Yanming called the Winged Flood Dragon by its name, surprising Lin Ming. A vicious beast mount like this was something that the people of Sky Fortune Kingdom would rarely hear about.

“Young Hero Lin… is this a mount that the Seven Profound Valleys’ direct disciples can ride?” Zhao Yanming’s voice trembled. When had been a disciple of the Seven Profound Martial House, he had read about the Winged Flood Dragon in the ancient texts. It said that the Winged Flood Dragon had the bloodline of a Saint Beast, and not even mentioning its amazing speed, its strength could possibly reach the Xiantian realm!

The Xiantian realm! To the people of Sky Fortune Kingdom, a Xiantian master was a mythical figure. Could the direct disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys actually ride such a mount to travel? Or… was this treatment only reserved for Lin Ming?

Lin Ming looked at Zhao Yanming, pleasant surprise in his eyes. He said, “City Lord Zhao is truly knowledgeable. This Winged Flood Dragon is not the Seven Profound Valleys’, but mine.”

Chapter 318 – The Beast Tide Comes

Chapter 318 – The Beast Tide Comes

…

…

…

“Yours?” Zhao Yanming was stunned.

“Mm… a Senior gifted this mount to me.” To a Revolving Core master like Ancestor Chi Yan, a vicious beast mount that could reach the Xiantian realm naturally wasn’t anything too precious.

“Gifted…” Zhao Yanming gulped, unable to imagine what kind of character this senior of Lin Ming’s was. They could actually so casually gift away a tamed vicious beast with Xiantian potential like this?

Of the 36 countries and 16 martial families of the Seven Profound territory, only Grace Venerate Nation, the Zhang Family, and a few other forces had a Xiantian master; the other forces simply didn’t have the ability to cultivate one. If a country had a Xiantian master guarding them, they would sleep peacefully, never needing to worry that an enemy would invade. They would have the upper hand in any diplomatic negotiations. Basically, what they said was what would be done.

If a country offended them, a Xiantian master could simply take the head of their emperor!

Thus, a vicious beast with potential to reach the Xiantian realm as an adult had an incalculable value.

Yet this sort of all-powerful creature was actually gifted to Lin Ming…

Zhao Yanming didn't know how to feel; he just stared with his mouth agape. Ultimately, he could only feel regret that this young Winged Flood Dragon hadn't grown up into an adult yet. Otherwise, with the support of a Xiantian level fighter, it wouldn't be a major problem dealing with this beast tide.

As Lin Ming returned, this message was deliberately spread forth from the City Lord's propaganda office, washing through the entire Green Mulberry City like a tide. In the morning, there were 90% less people planning on fleeing the incoming calamity. There were even some who had left, but returned after receiving the news.

The common folk didn't know just what sort of role someone like Lin Ming could play in a beast tide invasion. But, what they knew was that Lin Ming was a true hero who walked the streets of Green Mulberry City. With Lin Ming present, the people felt an invisible and vibrant faith stirring their hearts and souls.

Noon, City Lord Mansion –

Lin Ming's return alarmed all of the high ranking individuals within Green Mulberry City. If this were the past, then if someone with Lin Ming's status returned, a grand scale banquet would be held to welcome him home. The entire Green Mulberry City, including all of the celebrities and top figures of the other nearby cities would gather at this banquet, and experience the fabulous manner of Green Mulberry City's hero.

But now, faced with an enemy that brought the threat of annihilation, everyone was in a panic and weren't able to set a banquet in time.

Within the conference hall in the center of the City Lord Mansion, six or seven people had gathered around a table. These people were all of the major power players of Green Mulberry City. There were the heads of the major families, as well as Green Mulberry City's City Lord and Deputy City Lord.

Green Mulberry City's City Lord Zhao Yanming stood up first and said, "Young Hero Lin. I would first like to thank you on behalf of all the young and old citizens of Green Mulberry City. After the eruption of the beast tide, Young Hero Lin bravely crossed a great distance especially to return home."

Lin Ming waved his hand and said, "City Lord Zhao, there is no need to speak such kind words. I am also a citizen of Green Mulberry City."

"Mm… then I'll dispense with the small talk. The reason that we are gathered here in this meeting room is to discuss how Green Mulberry City should resist against a potential beast tide outbreak. First, let me introduce the others present. This here is the commander of Green Mulberry City's 10,000 garrison troops, General Zhu Ping."

Zhao Yanming pointed to a middle-aged sitting at the side of the table. This man's cultivation was at the middle Pulse Condensation period, and he had a pair of thick and heavy eyebrows. His eyes were raised, making him look particularly sharp.

"Zhu Ping greets Young Hero Lin." Zhu Ping rose from his seat, cupping his fists in respect. Although he was just respectfully greeting him, Lin Ming felt a slight chilling murderous intent in that smiling face.

Zhu Ping?

Someone from the Zhu Family?

Green Mulberry City had several prominent families. There were the Lin, Zhu, Zhuang, Xie, and Lu families. Of these, the Zhu Family had once been the top family of Green Mulberry City. This was because an empress concubine had been born from them, and that empress had a son who also became a titled prince. This was the current Tenth Prince Yang Zhen, and was also the greatest threat to the Crown Prince's ascendancy to the throne.

But later, the Zhu Family genius junior Zhu Yan had come into various conflicts with Lin Ming, with the end result of the Zhu Family being forced into a desperate situation with no way out. Finally, because they had no choice, the Zhu Family had been forced to expel Zhu Yan from the family.

Even so, the contradictions between the Zhu Family and Lin Ming weren't resolved. Lin Ming supported the Crown Prince, but the Zhu Family was long tied to the Tenth Prince on the same ship. Afterwards, Lin Ming had become a direct disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys, and in that single act, the Crown Prince had been able to rise to power with the upper hand. The Tenth Prince's status was precarious; in this case, the situation of the Zhu Family could be imagined.

With things having come to this, how could the commander of Green Mulberry City's armed forces, Zhu Ping, not hate Lin Ming?

Not only that, but Zhu Yan had been Zhu Ping's own nephew, Zhu Ping had watched Zhu Yan grow up. Seeing this young child brimming with talent and entering the Seven Profound Martial House's Heavenly Abode in a single attempt, it was likely that he would be the next head of the Zhu Family. But he was finally forced by Lin Ming onto a desolate and lonely road. Zhu Yan had lost all contact with his family, and no one knew whether he was dead or alive.

As Zhao Yanming introduced the others, Lin Ming responded to them with a smile. But, he was able to feel that those smiling eyes of Zhu Ping contained a very faint murderous intent. This murderous intent was very hard to detect. If it wasn't for Lin Ming's soul force and perception being far above others', he would never have noticed.

After everyone at the conference was introduced, Zhao Yanming said, "So now, I would like to brief you all on the situation of the Green Mulberry Mountain Range. The Green Mulberry Mountain Range is 6000 miles long, and the southern end of it extends into the Southern Wilderness. It then becomes the South Zhao Mountain Range. The mountain range is topped with large, vibrant jungles, with countless second-level and third-level vicious beasts. There are also many vicious beasts that are equal to a Pulse Condensation period martial artist, and even those fourth-level beasts equal to a Houtian martial artist.

“If this beast tide truly erupts, it will be difficult for us to defend Green Mulberry City with our current strength. But we believe that there is only a very small chance that the beast tide will come. The vicious beasts of the South Zhao Mountain range are much closer to the Southern Wilderness. If the beast tide erupts, there should be a higher chance that they will impact the Southern Tribes. It’s not too far away. There’s no reason for the vicious beasts to rush five or six thousand miles to attack Green Mulberry City.”

As Zhao Yanming spoke, he glanced at Lin Ming. Now, most of the people of Green Mulberry City felt as if they had been saved by a stroke of luck, and the beast tide was too far away, so the chances of it erupting were low. If a true beast tide broke out, then tens of thousands, or even hundreds of thousands of vicious beasts would attack Green Mulberry City. At that point, the garrisoned troops at Green Mulberry City probably wouldn’t even be able to deal with the vanguard, and it would be impossibly difficult for Green Mulberry City to stall until the armies came.

Lin Ming thought for a moment, and then slowly said, “I do not know if a beast tide will erupt from the South Zhao Mountain Range, but what I do know is that once a beast tide emerges from the South Zhao Mountain Range, they will absolutely not attack the Southern Wilderness. They will climb mountains, cross rivers, and travel the five or six thousand miles to attack Green Mulberry City.”

“Mm? Why?” Zhao Yanming’s heart went cold as he heard Lin Ming’s words. Although Lin Ming was young, with his identity, he wouldn’t be one to speak nonsense.

Lin Ming said, “Because this beast tide is planned by man. The goal of the enemy is to forcefully annex the entire Divine Phoenix Province, the 19 third-grade sects within and the countries under their jurisdiction. Even our Seven Profound Valleys is included among them. But the Southern Wilderness is a remote land withh no large sect; it naturally could not be considered a target.”

What?

Lin Ming’s words scared everyone present!

Planned by man?

Annex the entire Divine Phoenix Province?

The Seven Profound Valleys was only a single area?

This was just too shocking! Everyone present simply had never heard of the Divine Phoenix Province before. But listening to the intent behind Lin Ming's words, it seemed that the Seven Profound Valleys was just one of the 19 third-grade sects within. The scope of the Divine Phoenix Province might be several times larger than the several hundred thousand miles large Seven Profound territory, or even dozens of times larger!

What kind of terrifying supernatural power could drive all of the vicious beasts in a radius of millions of miles into such a frenzy that vicious beasts tides would erupt?

With their experience and knowledge, this was simply an unfathomable act.

"Young Hero Lin, these words of yours sound a bit like some fantasy novel..." Zhu Ping's fingers gently tapped against the table, a smile creasing his face. Although he was smiling, his words were filled with a mocking tone.

"Does Army Command Zhu not believe me?" Lin Ming asked, his eyes narrowing.

"Of course I believe! What kind of status does Young Hero Lin have, Young Hero Lin would never speak nonsense, your words are definitely true. I am just a trivial shortsighted person of Green Mulberry City, no different than a frog in a well. My experience is limited, it's difficult for me to imagine such a mighty power." As Zhu Ping spoke, he always wore a respectful smile, as if he were truly speaking self-deprecating words.

Lin Ming faintly smiled, not responding.

Zhu Ping then said, "Since Young Hero Lin is so assured, then once the beast tide erupts, they will inevitably come straight to Green Mulberry City. How does Young Hero Lin believe we should face this crisis?"

“Keep a strong defense until support arrives.”

“Mm… as far as I know, Young Hero Lin has a mount equal to a late Houtian realm martial artist, called a Winged Flood Dragon. Right now, this Winged Flood Dragon should have the strongest fighting strength within Green Mulberry City. I wonder if Young Hero Lin minds lending the Winged Flood Dragon to the military?” Zhu Ping unhurriedly spoke as his eyebrows rose in a questioning challenge.

“Mm?” Lin Min frowned. He wanted to borrow the Winged Flood Dragon?

Why would Zhu Ping want to borrow the Winged Flood Dragon? A Winged Flood Dragon wasn’t of much use to the military.

The Winged Flood dragon wasn’t an adult yet. Within such a large-scale beast flood, if it were improperly commanded, it would be in danger of being killed. Lin Ming didn’t want to lend his Winged Flood Dragon to the military. If his Winged Flood Dragon really died, all they could do was apologize, and Lin Ming would truly regret it.

Thinking this, Lin Ming said, “The Winged Flood Dragon has a very wild and unruly nature; it is impossible for your soldiers to control it. If I lend it to you, then you will not be able to use it. I will keep it with me where it can display the strongest war strength.”

“Of course… what a pity.” Zhu Ping’s lips twitched, grimly sighing.

This beast tide was a perfect opportunity to kill off Lin Ming!

The Zhu Family and the Tenth Prince were on the same boat together, there was no escape for either of them. As long as Lin Ming stayed alive, their defeat was a foregone conclusion.

Two days ago, Ouyang Boyan had been recalled back to the Seven Profound Valleys’ Total Faction because of the destruction of the Moon Seizing Clan. Before Ouyang Boyan departed, he left behind two trusted subordinates to ambush Lin Ming; one in Sky Fortune City, and the other in Green Mulberry City.

The one lurking in Green Mulberry City had a strength at the late Houtian realm. His strength was just a step away from the peak Houtian realm.

In Zhu Ping's opinion, if Lin Ming returned alone, then with the strength of Ouyang Boyan's trusted subordinate, he would be able to assassinate Lin Ming.

But now Lin Ming had a Winged Flood Dragon. Not only was this Winged Flood Dragon very fast, but its strength reached the late Houtian realm. Like this, it would be very difficult to kill Lin Ming...

Thus, Zhu Ping had thought of an excuse to borrow the Winged Flood Dragon. But he had actually been declined by Lin Ming!

Chapter 319 – Brutal Melee

Chapter 319 – Brutal Melee

…

…

…

As Zhu Ping was planning on how to kill Lin Ming in the chaos of the battlefield, a flame suddenly lit in front of him; this was a sound transmitting talisman from a scout.

After hearing this sound transmission, Zhu Ping's complexion changed.

"Army Command Zhu? What is it?" Zhao Yanming asked as he stood up.

"The beast tide has arrived. In less than half an hour it will reach Green Mulberry City." Zhu Ping whispered, his voice harsh. The military had sent out a number of scouts to keep watch over the Green Mulberry Mountain Range. He had just received the news from one of these scouts through a series of sound transmitting talismans.

"So they've come…" Zhao Yanming's lips twitched and he slumped back into his seat. He had always been holding out on his single, faint hope. But now, that fleeting hope had been shattered against the ground.

"How serious is the situation?" Zhuang Fan asked.

"They are sheltered under the forest's cover, the scout wasn't able to determine how many there were. The strongest among them are third-level beasts, probably equal to a Pulse Condensation martial artist." As Zhu Ping spoke, he put on an iron helmet. The 10,000 troops of Green Mulberry City had already lined up in formation in the outskirts of Green Mulberry City. Half an hour of time was just enough to prepare.

Zhu Ping glanced at Lin Ming, “Young Hero Lin, will you…”

“Mm. I’ll go to battle with you.” At this dire moment, Lin Ming was not someone who would shirk his responsibilities.

With Lin Ming’s current status, if things were normal and he had noticed Zhu Ping’s hostility towards him, he could have casually killed him even without a shred of evidence, and no one would have dared to utter a single word of protest. But now, vicious beasts were approaching the city, and Zhu Ping was the commander of Green Mulberry City’s garrison troops. Because of that, it was impossible for Lin Ming kill him.

“Thank you, Young Hero Lin. Let us set off at once.”

………………

The garrison troops were stationed 10 miles south of Green Mulberry City.

The sky was replete with dark clouds. Although it was spring, the chill of winter hadn’t yet evaporated, and a cold wind blew through the plains. 10,000 troops were arranged in a giant formation, silently waiting for the bloody battle.

Flags fluttered in the air, and the cold tips of soldiers’ halberds, swords, and other weapons shined with killing intent. In truth, all of the best soldiers within Sky Fortune Kingdom had joined the frontier army. Green Mulberry City’s garrison troops could only be considered a second-rate army. But in this dire situation, they showed a hardened edge and jagged spirit that only tempered veterans had; accustomed to blood and iron, with an unflinching momentum that was unafraid of death.

This was because this was not a fight over land, nor was it a political war. This was a battle for survival. Their city was behind them. If they fell on this field, their parents would die, their wives would die, and their children would die.

Mixed within these armed forces were over 100 outside martial artists. These individuals had voluntarily joined the garrison army at this time of need. All of these individuals had strange appearances. There were some who carried symbol flags and looked like old fortune tellers. There were those who wore bamboo hats and looked like woodcutters. And there were even those who wore long, loose robes, looking no different than a scholar. These people were all between 20 and 50 years old, and all of them had overflowing strong auras of the mortal Jianghu.

And what most surprised Lin Ming was that six of these individuals were Pulse Condensation period martial artists. It had to be known that most Pulse Condensation martial artists would join the government and be bestowed a noble title. There were very few that wandered around in the common world. Even if there was, it was nearly impossible for six of them to suddenly gather within Green Mulberry City.

Green Mulberry City Lord Zhao Yanming said, “Let me introduce you. This is Green Mulberry City’s Salt Clan’s Clan Leader, Shi Linkai.” Zhao Yanming pointed to a middle-aged man wearing a wolf pelt, introducing him to Lin Ming.

Since ancient times, dynasties had taken control of the salt and iron industries in order to control the economic lifeline of their lands. They could sell salt at profits of ten times, or even dozens of times.

This so-called Salt Clan was in fact just an illegal bandit gang that dealt in salt. These sorts of gangs had existed in all eras, and they were of an enormous scale. They often contained over 90% of the mortal world’s martial artists. These people were people of the so-called ‘Jianghu’, and they were individualistic people who viewed the government with disdain. They had their own groups and cliques, and formed clans, groups, and gangs, taking loyalty as their main guideline.

Green Mulberry City’s Salt Clan was the largest private power within the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom. During normal times, Green Mulberry City’s Salt Clan would have been at odds with the military. But now, in this situation, both groups had to ally together and assume a united front against the incoming beast tide.

"Hero Lin! I've heard so much about you, and now I can finally see you today." Shi Linkai cupped his fists together. He already knew of Lin Ming's status. To outlaws and vagabonds, what they most respected were powerful heroes. Shi Linkai was no exception.

"Clan Leader Shi is too kind." Lin Ming cupped his fists together in respect, a bit surprised. This Shi Linkai's cultivation was actually at the late Pulse Condensation period. Although, it was obvious that he had barely broken through, his foundation was shaky, and it would be hopeless for him to break through to the Houtian realm in his lifetime. Still, it was difficult for a roaming wanderer of the mortal world to reach this step.

After hurriedly greeting the people of the Salt Clan, Lin Ming quickly went to the front. The beast tide was less than a quarter of an hour away from arriving.

After Lin Ming left, Shi Linkai constantly shook his head in admiration, his heart amazed by Lin Ming's astonishing talent.

"Boss, this is just a little boy. His cultivation just reaches the middle Pulse Condensation period, and yet he managed to win some sort of valley's martial meeting and became champion? What sort of master is that?" The middle-aged man who spoke wore a bamboo hat and held an iron staff in his hand, his voice full of doubt. He assumed that this martial meeting should have been a gathering of true masters, and the champion should be at least at the Houtian realm.

The truth was, to these roaming figures of the common world, although they knew how terrifying Lin Ming's status was, they didn't have an intuitive concept of just how powerful people like him actually were.

To the common folk, the Seven Profound Valleys was a remote existence. Before Lin Ming had entered the Seven Profound Martial House, he had only heard of the Seven Profound Valleys' name. But he wasn't clear as to what they were, or how strong they were. To these Salt Clan disciples, the Seven Profound Valleys was the same as them; they were also a clan, but just on a larger scale.

“What nonsense. The Seven Profound Valleys’ Total Faction Martial Meeting is a contest between young talents, of course the champion is going to be a little boy. Don’t look at him just being at the middle Pulse Condensation period. If we really fight, then even if Second Brother and Third Brother coordinate with me, we probably wouldn’t win.” Shi Linkai stared at the middle-aged man in the bamboo hat, in a wise and learned tone. The Second Brother and Third Brother he mentioned were the second and third in command of the Salt Clan. Their cultivations were at the middle Pulse Condensation period and the early Pulse Condensation period.

“How could that be… Second Brother has already been at the middle Pulse Condensation period for 10 years, and is just a step away from reaching the late Pulse Condensation period. If Boss and Third Big Brother join with Second Big Brother, the three of you together would still lose against a little boy who just reached the middle Pulse Condensation period?”

“Just wait and see. The difference between the Seven Profound Valleys and us is just like the difference between the Royal Family and a rich country merchant. Maybe this Young Hero’s strength already reaches a Houtian realm master!”

…………………

As Lin Ming stood in front of the army, he grasped the Purple Comet Spear, slanting the spearpoint towards the ground. In this upcoming battle of life or death, where either side would be annihilated, it would be wrong to say that there were no mighty waves that surged through his heart. In the worst case scenario, Green Mulberry City would be trampled over, and his home would be utterly destroyed.

However, Lin Ming’s parents as well as his best friend Lin Xiaodong were no longer at Green Mulberry City. As for the Lin Family, Lin Ming’s feelings towards them were much lighter. If the Lin Family was destroyed, it was not a blow that he wouldn’t be able to withstand. If the worst case situation came to fruition, he would use the Winged Flood Dragon to save several of the important family juniors, and ensure that their family’s bloodline would be preserved.

Perhaps… Lin Wanshan might have already transferred part of the family.

As Lin Ming was thinking, he saw some blurry shadows appear on the horizon. These shadows started out the size of flying insects, but in a few dozen breaths of time, they covered the heavens and the earth.

The beast tide had finally arrived!

The ones to arrive first were naturally the fastest flying vicious beasts. Looking at them, there were probably several hundred.

“There’s only several hundred, and most of them are first-level or second-level vicious beasts. The highest among them are only third-level vicious beasts. Like this, we can still make it.”

Lin Ming was very clear that the vicious beasts that lived within the depths of the Southern Wilderness weren’t gathered together, but instead dispersed into groups. All of the vicious beasts would emerge from the South Zhao Mountain Range, forming a beast tide. But there would be gaps between these groups. The weakest appetizers would be at the front, and the later groups would be increasingly strong. This gave Green Mulberry City a breath of hope. With this opportunity, they might be able to last until reinforcements arrived.

“Javelin throwers, archers, prepare!”

With Zhu Ping’s shout, 200 javelin throwers and 500 archers immediately readied.

The javelin troops that Sky Fortune Kingdom had trained were specially formed to deal with heavy infantry phalanxes. Their javelins could pierce through a palm-thick shield, and against these flying beasts, only a javelin would be able to threaten the large destructive ones. An arrow was too light, it simply couldn’t damage them.

But Green Mulberry City’s garrison troops weren’t an elite army. There was a very expensive cost in training a javelin thrower, thus there were just a mere 200 of them.

As the vicious beasts entered into firing range, a messenger raised the signal flag, and 700 soldiers fired together!

Whiz whiz whiz!

With the whistling sound of splitting air, sharp javelins and arrows shot up like a hurricane. Many of the airborne vicious beasts were pierced with arrows, and there were some first-level and second-level vicious beasts that were wounded in multiple areas, directly falling from the air.

Falling from several hundred feet, they were instantly splattered to death upon reaching the ground. There was no need for the troops to rush forwards and finish them off.

In that moment, of the several hundred vicious beasts, dozens of them had died in a flash. However, these were just the lowest-level vicious beasts. There were about a dozen third-level vicious beasts with strength equal to a normal Pulse Condensation period martial artist that were unscathed.

Moreover, after this volley, the vicious beast group had already reached the army. A third-level vicious beast that looked like a giant blue-eyed falcon dove into a group of soldiers, immediately causing a shower of blood.

“Son of a b*tch! Come down to me!”

As the third-level vicious beast was about to shoot back into the sky, the Salt Clan helped Shi Linkai spring into the sky. His saber slashed down, immediately slicing off a wing of the blue-eyed falcon beast.

“Cawww!”

The blue-eyed falcon issued a keening wail as it fell from the sky, landing in a circle of soldiers where it was stabbed to death.

“Boss, good job!”

The Salt Clan juniors issued a volley of cheers. A single saber strike had brought down a third-level vicious beast, this caused the coalition army’s morale to rise to the heavens!

“Fierce!”

“Truly worthy of a late Pulse Condensation master!”

“Brothers, what are you waiting for, kill ‘em all!”

The soldiers’ cheers were thunderous. For a time, javelins, arrows and spears all stabbed into vicious beasts!

Cold metal shined, blood rained like a spring shower, the masters of the Salt Clan became the sword and saber of the entire army. But, their power also attracted the attention of the other three third-level vicious beasts.

These vicious beasts began to veer towards the Salt Clan masters.

Chapter 320 – Sweeping Away All

Chapter 320 – Sweeping Away All

…

…

…

Third-level vicious beasts could also be divided into the strong and the weak. The strength of third-level vicious beasts could range from the late Bone Forging state to the peak Pulse Condensation period.

The blue-eyed falcon beast that was cut down by Shi Linkai's saber had been the weakest of the third-level vicious beasts, and its strength was only equal to an early Pulse Condensation period martial artist.

Over a dozen third-level vicious beasts shot towards the Salt Clan masters together. The six Pulse Condensation martial artists of the Salt Clan were immediately overwhelmed.

"Go die!"

The Salt Clan's second-in-command drew out a thick saber, slashing down hard on a winged wolf. But the attack was only a slash; the body of the winged wolf was as hard as diamond. It wasn't seriously injured at all.

In a split-second, the tables had turned and the masters of the Salt Clan were surrounded by danger. But Lin Ming's eyes brightened. He had naturally chosen to kill these high-level vicious beasts, but was worried that they would be too scattered in the air, and it would be difficult to kill them. He hadn't expected that Shi Linkai would manage to attract their attention, causing these third-level vicious beasts to gather together. This was the perfect opportunity to wipe them all out.

“First Spear Team, support them!” Although Zhu Ping hoped very much that these fellows who ruined the taxes of Green Mulberry City every year would die, at this time, he had to rely on them to defend the city.

The Salt Clan masters had originally been with the javelin throwers and the archers, but now the archers had retreated, their spot was filled by a more dense, spear wielding military group. Such a change was not easy. The garrison army of Green Mulberry City wasn’t an elite unit, so their formations and movements were a bit messy.

“Ho!”

A Blood Crow howled. Its strength was equal to a late Pulse Condensation period martial artist, and it wanted to directly tear a hole through the layers of troops. However, just as it picked up some spear wielding soldiers and was about to fly back into the sky, hundreds and thousands of azure light beams shot forwards.

These azure light beams converged on a single target, sinking directly into the Blood Crow’s body.

Peng!

With a muffled sound, the Blood Crow trembled, and then blood spurted out from its head. It tumbled down from the sky, but because it was too fast and the inertia from falling a hundred feet was too great, a pile of soldiers on the ground were knocked away. The other soldiers lifted their spears to stab the vicious beast, but found that both of the Blood Crow’s eyes had already exploded, and chunks of internal organs were spewing forth from its beak. It was long dead.

The truth was, in that moment when the azure true essence had struck it, its internal organs had all been instantly torn apart by the power of vibration.

“It’s… it’s dead?”

The soldiers couldn’t even react before they heard sharp whistling sounds in the air. Multiple beams of azure true essence shot forth.

Every true essence ray would unerringly strike their target, sinking into a third-level beast’s body. A moment ago, these vicious beasts had been savage killing monsters. But after they were struck by an azure light ray of true essence, they tumbled down like broken kites, their entire bodies twitching and bleeding from every hole, dead beyond dead.

In just a few breaths of time, 11 of the 13 third-level vicious beasts had died, and the two leftover weren’t in great shape either. The survivors turned around to fly away. Naturally, Lin Ming wouldn’t give them any hope of leaving alive. He flicked his fingers and two rays of azure true essence ran them down. With two light sounds, the two vicious beasts in the air fell to the earth.

Finally, after the two vicious beasts smashed the ground, they had become puddles of crushed meat. One fell into the group of Salt Clan masters, and the other fell within a phalanx of long spear soldiers.

As the people looked at these two third-level beasts that had died such a pitifully horrific death, almost no one could believe it.

They all died… like this?

From start to finish, Lin Ming hadn’t even used his spear. He merely flicked out ray after ray of strange azure light beams, and every strange light beam would instantly kill a third-level vicious beast in a simple and ruthless fashion.

“Ka! Ka!”

After the third-level vicious beasts were instantly killed, the first-level and second-level vicious cried out in alarm, then turned around and began to fly away.

“Block them!”

Lin Ming's eyes narrowed. These vicious beasts were only the vanguard. Once the vicious beasts on land made their way here, the true war would begin. At that time, when these flying beasts returned, it would cause a great deal of trouble. Now that they were defeated and retreating, it was best to kill as many as possible.

After Lin Ming's awe-inspiring performance, his words had unwittingly become like a military order to the soldiers. All of the javelin throwers and archers were stunned for a moment, and then immediately reacted, firing as fast as they could.

Lin Ming also began to flick out more rays of vibrating azure true essence, aiming towards the strongest second-level vicious beasts. As for the first-level vicious beasts, he basically ignored them.

The rays of vibrating azure true essence were Lin Ming's most effortless attack method. Before the real battle began, Lin Ming wanted to save up every bit of energy he could; every attack he sent out contained just the right amount of force to be lethal. He was well aware that in a protracted battle, he had to conserve his strength.

Puff! Puff! Puff! Puff! Puff! Puff!

All sorts of dangerous flying vicious beasts began to fall down from the sky, blood showering forth like rain, and bits of meat flying everywhere. Of the several hundred flying vicious beasts that had come, only a few dozen had managed to escape.

As the man in the bamboo hat saw dozens of flying vicious beats fall from the air because of Lin Ming, and the rest also fleeing, he gulped, his voice trembling as he said, "Boss… you… what you said was right. Even if you add Second Big Brother and Third Big Brother together, you aren't a match for that boy. Is… is he really a middle Pulse Condensation martial artist?"

Shi Linkai's throat twitched, and he ruefully smiled. Let alone three of them, even a dozen of them together wouldn't be able to do anything. As long as those azure beams of light came towards them, they would die without a doubt!

What was that azure true essence attack?

They were all Pulse Condensation period martial artists right? How could the gap between them be so great?

While Shi Linkai was in wonder of Lin Ming's power, he actually hadn't noticed that behind him, just near the long long spear soldiers, there was a black-clothed middle-aged man staring at Lin Ming with gloom in his eyes, the corners of his mouth twitching.

"He doesn't even need his spear to reach this level? Ah, this makes things so much trickier..."

The flying vicious beasts had just retreated. Everyone hadn't even had time to catch their breath, when suddenly horrifying roars and hisses sounded out in the distance.

"Roar!"

"Roar!"

The land-borne vicious beasts had finally attacked! This was a true battle; there were several times more vicious beasts on land than the vicious beasts flying in the air!

Rumble rumble rumble!

The stampeding vicious beasts were just like billowing thunder. Tens of thousands of vicious beasts rampaged forwards, wild and savage. This scene was both terrifying and spectacular, the whole earth trembled!

The vicious beasts that were at the front were packs of Corrupt Wolves. A Corrupt Wolf was a second-level vicious beast, and its strength was equal to an Altering Muscle stage martial artist. They were similar to rabid dogs as they rushed forwards, their tongues out, white fangs exposed, green eyes filled with a crazy killing and bloodthirsty intent. These were vicious beasts that desired to tear into the bodies of their enemies!

A Corrupt Wolf was a vicious beast that only existed in the Southern Wilderness. After Lin Ming had left the Sorcerer Holy Land, he seen that two Corrupt Wolves had almost taken the Na Sisters' lives. They ate the corpses of dead creatures all year long, and their claws were steeped in corpse poison. After being caught by one, it was very easy to die from the following poison.

This poison had an antidote. But in the middle of life and death fighting, who had the time to apply an antidote?

"Che! This is really troublesome!"

"Shield soldiers in the front, protect the long spear soldiers!" With this order, the soldiers wearing 100 jin heavy armor picked up giant tower shields, lifting them high and forming a barrier. The long spear soldiers fitted into the gaps of the shield soldiers, thrusting out their spears through the gaps of the tower shields.

Suddenly, the entire formation of soldiers became a charging line of defense with a forest of spears. The momentum of this charge was no weaker than the tens of thousands of vicious beasts!

This was the power of an army. No matter how strong Lin Ming was, it was impossible for a lone person to block the entire beast tide from reaching Green Mulberry City. But, if 10,000 soldiers created a great wall forged of flesh and steel, it was possible!

"Awoo! Awoo! Awooo! Ao! Ao! Awoo!"

As the Corrupt Wolves rushed halfway, they began to scream one at a time, stumbling to the ground. They were buried by the beasts behind them that were running at full speed. As a Corrupt Wolf fell to the ground, it was easy for it to cause other Corrupt Wolves to also stumble. As a result, a massive number of Corrupt Wolves were trampled to death within the raging stampede!

Because of time constraints, the garrison army of Green Mulberry City hadn't been able to ready too many animal traps. After several thousands of Corrupt Wolves died, the rest finally reached the front line of the army.

"Release the sharp wood formation!"

With a shout from a messenger, rows of sharpened logs were pulled up from the ground at slanted angles, their sharp tips pointed towards the Corrupt Wolves.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Many of the Corrupt Wolves could not dodge. They directly ran into the sharpened wooden logs. As they were rushing forwards at such a high speed, the sharpened logs pierced through their entire body from head to tail, instantly kill them.

Peng peng peng!

After the sharpened logs was the last line of defense. A massive number of Corrupt Wolves slammed onto heavy shields, and some soldiers that could not withstand the impact were sent flying backwards.

"Spear formation!"

1000 long spear soldiers thrust forth their spears from between the slits of the tower shields, stabbing into the soft bellies of the Corrupt Wolves, blood splattering everywhere, organs bursting out.

Although the soldiers were individually weaker than the Corrupt Wolves by far, with the coordination of a battle formation and equipment, they could display a total strength that was far more formidable than their individual strength.

Lin Ming shook his spear and rushed out of the army camp. Closely following behind him were the masters of the Salt Clan. The other masters of the prominent families didn't back down. Even the heads of major families like Lin Wanshan and Zhuang Fan were in the lead.

In this moment of life or death, no one dared to hold back anything.

Shi Linkai rushed forwards, his five foot long saber cutting forth in an epic manner. With every saber slice, large volumes of blood would spray into the air.

Shi Linkai was most suited for this kind of rampaging killing spree, as his saber was meant to storm forwards, cutting away everything in its path. Coupled with his late Pulse Condensation cultivation, he was able to massacre the Altering Muscle stage Corrupt Wolves like they were chickens.

The other martial artists, including Lin Wanshan, Zhuang Fan, Lu Wuyin, and the rest, were slightly weaker, and their swords weren't as good at fighting against large groups. But their killing speed still wasn't slow. With every chop of their blades, a Corrupt Wolf would die.

Shi Linkai was filled with an addicting bloodlust. In just a dozen breaths of time, he had killed a dozen Corrupt Wolves! He killed an average of one Corrupt Wolf per breath of time!

A man and his saber, unstoppable!

Such killing speed could be called terrifying. But when Shi Linkai inadvertently glanced at Lin Ming, in that instant, he suddenly sucked in a breath of cold air.

Lin Ming waved his hand, and the spear in his grip shot forth like an arrow. Seven or eight Corrupt Wolves were pierced by his spear!

Chapter 321 – Hidden Murderous Intent

Chapter 321 – Hidden Murderous Intent

…

…

…

Lin Ming threw the long spear. With a metallic clang, the Purple Comet Spear's base was suddenly connected by a taut red chain!

Fire that had manifested into a crimson red chain had attached onto the end of the spear!

"Total Annihilation!"

Lin Ming waved the red chain in his hand, with himself as the center. The Purple Comet Spear drew a massive full moon. Wherever the spear went, Corrupt Wolves exploded like bags of blood!

In only a single breath of time, over 20 Corrupt Wolves died a horrible death. Then Lin Ming moved, instantly appearing in another place on the battlefield!

With a shout, he swept a giant circle with his spear once again, over a dozen Corrupt Wolves decimated!

"This is just too inhuman…"

Shi Linkai gulped. Although a Corrupt Wolf wasn't considered too strong, it had a robust and hardy body. To cut a wolf in half from the waist took at least 80 or 90% of Shi Linkai's strength. Once he chopped too many times, his arm began to feel sore.

But every time Lin Ming shot out with his spear, he would pierce seven or eight beasts. With a sweep, more than a dozen would perish.

This was inhumanly savage power!

Lin Ming's power was already far beyond the level of a normal martial artist. Especially after he had completed a small portion of Tempering Marrow within his right hand, his strength had risen to another level. It could simply be called unstoppable, able to break through even the toughest defenses.

Not only that, but the Purple Comet Spear was an incomparably sharp weapon. Although the Corrupt Wolf had a strong defense, that was only in comparison to a normal martial artist. In front of the top high-grade earth-step Purple Comet Spear, the defensive capabilities of a Corrupt Wolf were no different than tofu!

As Lin Ming killed his way around the battlefield, Corrupt Wolves were reaped like wheat. Against these second-level Corrupt Wolves, there was no need to use his vibrating true essence. Slaughtering them with the spear was the best way to conserve his strength.

The spear was a weapon that was inherently forged to engage in mass warfare.

At this moment, Lin Ming heard a roar and saw a massive two-headed black wolf rushing towards him. Two-headed Corrupt Wolf?

This was a top third-level vicious beast, and its strength was comparable to a peak Pulse Condensation master.

Then there was another roar, and next to the two-headed wolf was a giant Iron Storm Bear. Its strength was no less than that of the two-headed Corrupt Wolf. And what was terrifying was that the Iron Storm Bear had an amazing defensive power. Within all of the third-level vicious beasts in the Seven Profound territory, it had the absolute strongest defense!

In a massive assault of forces, a vicious beast with astounding defense was much more formidable and difficult to deal with than an agile vicious beast!

Two top third-level vicious beasts appeared, charging straight towards the army's formation!

If these vicious beasts were to rush into the formation, they would easily be able to rip their way through the soldiers' tower shield wall, creating a massive opening. Once a gap was opened in the defenses, vicious beasts would begin pouring in from there!

Lin Ming chose to greet them first.

Shi Linkai's eyes widened as he watched Lin Ming run over. He also wanted to run over and help, at least to divert the attention of the Corrupt Wolves surrounding him so that Lin Ming would be able to kill those two top third-level vicious beasts more easily. But at this moment, Lin Ming's speed reached an extreme, and he suddenly turned into a fading afterimage.

As his steps treaded forwards with Golden Roc Shattering the Void, the packs of Corrupt Wolves that tried to block Lin Ming were simply useless.

Pu pu pu!

Blood sprayed into the air. All of the Corrupt Wolves in Lin Ming's path were torn apart by his spear! As Lin Ming rapidly moved ahead, all that was left behind was a brilliant fog of blood!

"Roar!"

Facing this insolent human, the Iron Storm Bear sent out angry roars. The Two-headed Corrupt Wolf King also howled, rushing towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming didn't even pause, his spear pierced forwards!

Ka!

An azure spear light cut through the void, slashing straight towards the Iron Storm Bear. Its chest was ripped in half, blood gushing out!

The azure spear light actually hadn't even been given the slightest pause by the Iron Storm Bear's tenacious body. This was a top third-level vicious beast known for having the strongest level of defensive power within the Seven Profound territory, but in front of the Purple Comet Spear, its vaunted defenses were nothing more than thin paper!

After the azure spear light ripped through the Iron Storm Bear, its forward force still hadn't stopped, cutting towards the Two-Headed Corrupt Wolf King. The Two-Headed Corrupt Wolf King was famous for its speed, but it simply didn't have a chance to respond; its body was split vertically in half, one head on each side!

A single spear move slayed two top third-level vicious beasts! It was no different to killing an ordinary Corrupt Wolf!

Shi Linkai was dumbfounded. Even Zhuang Fan, Lu Wuyin, and the others sucked in a breath of cold air. What sort of cultivation was that? They couldn't imagine how an early Pulse Condensation period martial artist could be so strong that they could instantly kill two third-level vicious beasts that were equal to peak Pulse Condensation martial artists. Not only that, but he had only used a single spear move to kill both of them!

Before, they didn't know just what it meant for Lin Ming to become champion of the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction Martial Meeting. They only knew that Lin Ming was a great and powerful figure, and had created a record that had never existed in the past 200 years in the 36 countries by becoming the champion of the Total Faction Martial Meeting. But they never knew just what sort of concept that was. But now that they had a front-seat view, they were able to experience what this title truly meant.

After he killed the two third-level vicious beasts, Lin Ming's footsteps suddenly paused, and his spear slowed down. In that instant, he had once again felt a faint hidden murderous intent from the crowds of people around him…

“You want to hide yourself with the help of the crowd?”

Lin Ming coldly snorted. His soul force and perception already far surpassed the Seven Profound Valleys’ Mirage Faction’s. When he first struck out, he had felt this faint murderous intent. Now, after killing the two third-level vicious beasts, he felt it again.

But by the time he expanded his perception, he had lost trace of this person, and was unable to find him.

This caused Lin Ming to furrow his eyebrows. This enemy of his must be well versed in concealment techniques, and was able to use the killing intent of the 10,000 strong army to hide from him. Was this someone sent by Ouyang Boyan?

After the Moon Seizing Sect had been annihilated, all of the Xiantian masters were recalled to the Seven Profound Valleys’ Total Faction. With the collaboration of the Array Faction and an array master of Divine Phoenix Island, they had been able to set up a giant reinforced array formation around the mountain rage and close it off, to prevent a sneak attack from the South Sea Demon Region. Since this happened, Ouyang Boyan had probably left behind several trustworthy subordinates within Sky Fortune Kingdom.

Murdering a Seven Profound Valleys direct disciple was no minor matter. If this matter was made known, then Ouyang Boyan would most likely be put to death. He could probably only trust his personal apprentice…

Logically speaking, an apprentice of Ouyang Boyan should be someone from the Acacia Faction. But Lin Ming didn’t think that a disciple from the Acacia Faction would be so proficient in concealment techniques. If it wasn’t for Lin Ming’s prodigious soul perception, he would never have been aware of this.

With a hidden enemy lurking behind him, Lin Ming couldn’t feel at ease. ‘I can’t expose any more of my strength! This enemy probably hasn’t noticed that I’ve discovered him. In this case, I have to keep my cards in hand and lure him in, take him by surprise, and kill him in that moment.’

Lin Ming's single spear move that had killed two third-level vicious beasts may have been shocking to a common martial artist, but it was simply nothing to a genius of the Seven Profound Valleys. Not to mention Lin Ming, Jiang Lanjian, Qin Wuxin, or even the most disappointing direct disciple Fang Qi, would be able to accomplish the same.

Those two monsters were equal to a normal peak Pulse Condensation martial artist, but Huan Xiaodie and Fang Qi had battle power that reached the early Houtian realm, or even the middle Houtian realm.

With such a difference in strength, instantly killing a pair of third-level vicious beasts was simple!

Thus, Lin Ming's performance just now was all within this hidden killer's expectations.

Lin Ming had to keep his other cards hidden. He needed to hide his strength so he could play the pig to eat the tiger.

'I will suppress my strength to the peak of the normal middle Houtian realm, and lure you in!'

During the stampede of the beast tide, this surrounding chaos was naturally the best time to assassinate Lin Ming. But it was also the best time for Lin Ming to kill this hidden enemy of his. Lin Ming didn't want to leave a ticking time bomb at his side; he wanted to completely uproot and eradicate all of Ouyang Boyan's influence.

"Total Annihilation!"

"Sweeping Wind, Scattering Clouds!"

Every move that Lin Ming made was a wide-range attack. With the flame chain on the spear end, the Purple Comet Spear was like a Flood Dragon diving in a sea of blood. Wherever it went, blood would rain!

Within the chaotic rush of clashing forces, the spear was absolutely the best weapon!

Of course, the requirement was to have an incomparably thick true essence and endurance in order to support such terrifying killing speeds!

But these were two aspects that were no problem for Lin Ming; he did not lack them at all.

His blood vitality was potent, and every breath he breathed out formed large snakes in the air that lingered on.

“Die!”

Lin Ming gripped the fiery red chain, the spear point drawing a huge half-moon arc. Blood spattered all over Lin Ming, covering his entire bodies muscle in a deep crimson shade. The veins of his body bulged out, just like twisted scarlet earthworms.

Puff puff puff!

The garrison army of Green Mulberry City took Lin Ming as the spearpoint of the army and courageously marched forwards. Within 100 feet of Lin Ming, vicious beasts were simply unable to approach. Once they did, they were completely destroyed by the spear light!

Even if there was an occasional third-level vicious beast that appeared with power comparable to a Pulse Condensation martial artist, it was still no exception. It would be just like an ordinary vicious beast, instantly slaughtered by Lin Ming!

“This is too fierce; is this the power of the Seven Profound Valleys’ Total Faction Martial Meeting Champion?”

“The vicious beasts that he has killed by himself are more than the rest of us combined!” Zhuang Fan’s cultivation was just enough to reach the Pulse Condensation period, and he also fought with a sword, so his killing speed was the slowest. As he saw Lin Ming rush into the depths of a pack of vicious beasts, and be no different than a tiger within a flock of sheep, he couldn’t help but envy. “Brother Wanshan, your Lin Family has truly produced a peerless monstrous talent. Within the next several hundred years, your Lin Family will probably become the top family of Sky Fortune Kingdom.”

Lin Wanshan wasn't as happy as Zhuang Fang expected. Instead, he sighed, shaking his head, his heart bitter.

Some time ago, when the snow had still been falling, Lin Ming had obtained a great honor for the Lin Family to truly earn face for posterity.

But now that Lin Wanshan saw Lin Ming's formidable strength with his own eyes, he suddenly had very complicated thoughts and emotions surging within him. A question lingered within his heart, one that he couldn't let go of.

Could Lin Ming really be considered a disciple of the Lin Family?

Before Lin Ming had grown up, he hadn't even used a single bit of the Lin Family's resources!

Lin Wanshan even knew that when Lin Ming's childhood girlfriend had abandoned him for someone else, he hadn't been able to receive any help from the family. Lin Ming probably didn't feel much of a sense of belonging to the Lin Family…

If Lin Wanshan had anyone to blame, he could only blame his own Lin Family for not being able to see someone with such an outstanding talent in front of them. They had missed the chance to raise such a precious uncut jade. Otherwise, if they had been able to initially offer him help, provide resources, and help him recapture his first love, or even confront the Zhu Family because of that, then Lin Ming would have a deep sense of belonging towards the Lin Family. But now…

Lin Wanshan sighed with regret. But then, his heart suddenly skipped a beat. His eyes widened as he looked at a red shadow not too far away that was heading towards them.

"This is bad, that is… a fourth-level vicious beast, Scarlet Flood Python!"

Chapter 322 – Beheading the Python

Chapter 322 – Beheading the Python

…

…

…

The Scarlet Flood Python was over 200 feet long, and its writhing body was thicker than a century-old tree. Every red scale of its body was larger than a soldier's tower shield, and its sharp fangs were like spears. When it opened its mouth, it was wide enough to swallow an elephant.

This python monster was only the weakest of the fourth-level vicious beasts. Still, its strength was equal to a middle Houtian realm martial artist. Within the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom – if one didn't include the masters of the Seven Profound Martial House – it would be difficult for anyone to defeat this beast.

It had to be known that even the State Marshal Qin Xiao and the magnificent Mister Muyi had a cultivation at the middle Houtian realm. But as for Green Mulberry City, there were no Houtian masters stationed there.

"Lin Ming, be careful!" Lin Wanshan screamed from behind, as he watched Lin Ming rush in.

"Young Hero Lin, that is a fourth-level vicious beast! Wait for us brothers to come over and we will fight together with Young Hero Lin!" Shi Linkai was far away, but he immediately began to slash his way towards Lin Ming. If this python monster managed to reach the army, it would be able to sweep away the entire tower shield defensive line with a single swing of its tail. Once the defensive line was broken, the army's loss would be immeasurable; they would all be overwhelmed!

Now they could only rely on Lin Ming.

Lin Ming watched that python that was like a small hill, and his eyes narrowed. This vicious beast's strength was at the middle Houtian realm. At most, it would be equal to Huo Yanluo's level. To the current Lin Ming, instantly killing it was simple!

However, Lin Ming didn't want to reveal the hidden cards in his hands to the pair of eyes that was lurking within the bustling crowd.

Pu pu pu!

Lin Ming's spear swept out, making a killing circle. As all of the Corrupt Wolves around him were swept away, he aimed his spear and thrust towards the Scarlet Flood Python!

"Young Hero Lin, be careful!"

The martial artists of Green Mulberry City had no idea what the limit of Lin Ming's strength was. To them, the geniuses of the Seven Profound Valleys were too remote of an existence. Although they knew that Lin Ming was absurdly powerful, everyone still held their breath as they watched Lin Ming charge towards the Scarlet Flood Python alone with their own eyes.

Those grim eyes that were hiding in crowd locked onto Lin Ming. "A mere Scarlet Flood Python is absolutely not his match. Let's see just how much of his strength he uses."

This chess piece that Ouyang Boyan arranged to stay here originated from the Seven Profound Valleys, so he understood just how terrifying a direct disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys truly was. With his status, when he was young he simply didn't have a chance to fight against talents like Jiang Baoyun. He only understood the power of a direct disciple from rumors and watching these geniuses fight.

But during this Total Faction Martial Meeting, he had been forced to stay behind in Sky Fortune Kingdom, and hadn't seen the battle between Lin Ming and Jiang Baoyun. Because of this, he didn't have a personal concept of just how strong Lin Ming was, and had to personally judge him through watching him.

"Saaa!"

The Red Flood Python cried out with a grating scream, and its massive tail swung towards Lin Ming like whip.

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Lin Ming had deliberately suppressed the speed of Golden Roc Shattering the Void, but he still easily dodged the Scarlet Flood Python's strike.

Bang!

The python's broad tail smashed the ground, cracking the earth and causing the battlefield to shake. Several unlucky Corrupt Wolves were crushed into bloody piles of goo!

As Shi Linkai saw this scene while rushing over, he felt chills run up his spine. A fourth-level vicious beast was truly a fearful existence. If he was struck by that tail, not even his bones would be left over. Not only that, but its attack speed was so quick. With his piddling movement techniques, he had no idea if he could dodge it...

A moment ago, Shi Linkai had shouted out that he would join forces with Lin Ming and kill the vicious beast, but now that he saw just how deadly it was, he wondered to himself: could he really help? He would probably die as collateral damage!

It was not just Shi Linkai, but the other martial artists were in a worse situation. Zhuang Fan and the other were mostly at the early Pulse Condensation period; their own individual strength were all less than Shi Linkai's. If they were even scratched by that Scarlet Flood Python's tail, they would probably die on the spot!

Besides Lin Ming, no one had the qualifications to tangle with the Scarlet Flood Python. Whoever came up would die!

Boom!

Boom!

The Scarlet Flood Python repeatedly smashed the ground with its brutal tail. Lin Ming dodged using his superior movement. It looked like everywhere he went there was a danger that put him in a dead end, but every time he would just manage to barely dodge the Scarlet Flood Python's attack.

Lin Wanshan began to sweat from all pores. If Lin Ming mistimed a dodge even once, he would die!

Lin Ming was the Lin Family's future hope. If he died here then… not only would the Lin Family suffer an immeasurable loss, but they might not even be able to defend Green Mulberry City.

Lin Wanshan gulped. Right now he was incomparably nervous, but he was also completely helpless.

Dozens of massacred Corrupt Wolf corpses lay bloody and grotesque on the ground. None of the other Corrupt Wolves dared to approach, leaving a wide space that was several hundred feet wide for Lin Ming and the Scarlet Flood Python to fight. At this time, the entire beast tide stampede has slowed down.

"Not planning on using your trump cards?" The grim shadow in the crowd muttered to himself. He didn't even believe that there was the slightest chance that Lin Ming would be defeated. He only wondered how much Lin Ming would preserve his strength. After all, this beast tide had just begun, and there were bound to be more vicious beasts behind that were even fiercer.

Fwaaa!

The Scarlet Flood Python opened its gaping maw and suddenly spat out a large glob of venom. This human didn't even dare to fight it head-on, but was actually jumping all around; this caused the Scarlet Flood Python to be thoroughly enraged.

The glob of venom flew into the air and then scattered, falling like driving rain; it was undodgeable.

As Lin Ming was about to be enveloped by this storm of venom, he suddenly turned his spear. Purple arcs of lightning roared out!

Chi chi chi!

Under the clouded skies of the evening, the bright illumination of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder's lightning arcs was even more dazzling!

All of the venom around Lin Ming was burnt away by the power of thunder, his entire body twined with purple lightning. With his spear, he thrust towards the Scarlet Flood Python.

Electric light sparked!

With the ashen clouds as his backdrop, Lin Ming was like a war god of thunder. The Scarlet Flood Python widened its jaws, biting towards Lin Ming!

Pa!

Lin Ming dodged the Scarlet Flood Python's fangs, thrusting his spear into the python's lower jaw. Then he stepped over the python's body, dragging his spear behind him, the spear tip embedded into the python, dragging a deep bloody crevice in its body. Flesh and blood flew into the sky.

This single spear strike had split the python from head to tail!

"Saa!"

The Scarlet Flood Python issued a horrifying scream, its hissing shriek breaking apart stone. Massive purple arcs of lightning wound around its body, and blood erupted like a waterfall from the giant fissure left behind by the spear, gushing out dozens of feet high!

Lin Ming's entire body was bathed in blood, and his hair tie had loosened during the attack. At this moment, he was like a demonic lord that crawled up from the Ashura Hell, infernal and unstoppable!

Seeing this distant one-sided great battle take place, the 10,000 soldiers were left speechless. This 200 foot long great python reached to the skies, its blood raining to the earth. This scene was too impactful on their minds.

He won?

Lin Wanshan was jumping in joy.

Lin Ming had actually won! He had cut down a fourth-level Scarlet Flood Python!

As soon as the Scarlet Flood Python died, the offensive charge of the Corrupt Wolves immediately died down. After a few more symbolic rushes, they began to retreat like an ebbing tide.

"The wolves are retreating!"

"We've defended!"

After withstanding the impacts of tens of thousands of Corrupt Wolves, the exhausted soldiers began to cheer. The archers still shot their arrows, but chasing them was impossible. The soldiers had reached the limits of their strength, and even if they were at top condition, it was impossible to chase a stampede of Corrupt Wolves over a long distance while wearing their heavy equipment.

Lin Ming carried his spear on his shoulder and walked back from the battlefield alone. During this battle, he had killed over a thousand Corrupt Wolves, while killing dozens of third-level vicious beasts and even the fourth-level Scarlet Flood Python. The combined efforts of all the other Pulse Condensation period martial artists didn't even add up to half of this.

Of course, there was no simply no comparing them. Their strength and was not on the same level as Lin Ming's.

"He finally used the power of thunder, but he didn't use that thunder energy weapon of his..."

As the soldiers were returning, the figure in the shadows was mumbling to himself. Although he hadn't seen Lin Ming when he had participated in the Total Faction Martial Meeting, he still had a great deal of information. Lin Ming's trump card was not just his power of thunder, but also a needle-like weapon that was condensed from thunder energy. This weapon was Lin Ming's true killing move.

"If I don't factor in that needle-like thunder energy weapon, then what Lin Ming revealed so far should be his complete strength. He should be able to defeat an ordinary late Houtian realm master, which is actually the same cultivation as me. But, he still isn't my match. If I want to kill him, I have to make sure it succeeds... otherwise, it will be too troublesome!"

The subordinate that Ouyang Boyan had left behind had a cultivation at the late Houtian realm. But he was still a disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys, and his combat strength was much more formidable than a normal late Houtian master.

The wolves receded, the casualties were tallied. More than 800 soldiers had sacrificed their lives and perished on the field.

After Lin Ming returned to Green Mulberry City, he went into seclusion and quickly began to mediate. The truth was his consumption of strength wasn't too high. In addition to his already formidable endurance, he had nearly his complete true essence reserves remaining afterwards. This seclusion was all an act of his.

To lure the snake from its hole and then kill it instead – this was Lin Ming's plan.

After the victory of the first battle, the morale of Green Mulberry City's garrison army had sharply risen. But now was not that time for celebrations. There was likely to be other groups of vicious beasts incoming, and they had to persist until reinforcements arrived.

Dinner was lavish. All of the major families had pooled together their resources, bringing good meat and other satisfying foods. There was enough for everyone.

Although the soldiers regretted that they could not drink, they still heartily ate their fill, taking water instead of wine.

At the banquet, the soldiers frantically talked about how Lin Ming had used a single spear to slaughter the Scarlet Flood Python in the chaos of the battlefield while being surrounded by tens of thousands of wolves. In the minds of an ordinary soldier, Lin Ming was simply a legend come to life.

"Old Lin, your Lin Family have truly produced a hero that will be recorded in history." After dinner, Zhuang Fan spoke as he smoked from a pure gold pipe, walking over to Lin Wanshan's side. Out of all the major power players of Green Mulberry City, the Lin Family and Zhuang Family were closest because of their cooperation in many fields of business.

"I didn't think that our experience would be so shallow. The strength of a Seven Profound Valleys direct disciple can actually reach such a level." As Lin Wanshan gazed off at the warm light within the tent that Lin Ming had retreated to, his mood was complex.

This gap was too amazing! He was unable to comprehend that a direct disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys who was only at the Pulse Condensation period was actually much stronger than the Houtian masters of Sky Fortune Kingdom!

"The frontier army set out two days ago, they should arrive in another seven or eight days. With Lin Ming, we should be able to defend until then. Today, the number of vicious beasts that Lin Ming killed were a tenth of the army's total, but all of the high level vicious beasts were killed by him alone."

Chapter 323 – Uninvited Guest

Chapter 323 – Uninvited Guest

…

…

…

That night when Lin Ming went out, all of the soldiers who saw him would spontaneously stop and salute in respect.

Military men respected the strong. Because of Lin Ming's actions during the battle earlier, their damages had been greatly reduced.

"Young Hero Lin!"

A man wearing a wolf pelt walked up, a happy smile on his face. This man was the Salt Clan's Clan Leader, Shi Linkai.

"Clan Leader Shi." Lin Ming had a favorable impression of this man. During the assault of the Corrupt Wolves, this man had followed closely behind him, fighting boldly and bravely. Except for Lin Ming himself, Shi Linkai had killed the most.

"Young Hero Lin is too kind, it's fine if you call me Old Shi."

"What are the casualties in the army like?" Lin Ming was very concerned about the current state of the army. Without an army, it was impossible to block the beast tide; it was impossible for Lin Ming alone to stop a giant flood of vicious beasts no matter how strong he was. If they passed him, the beasts would be able to dash into Green Mulberry City. Green Mulberry City had 50 feet high city walls, but a high level vicious beast would be able to scale them in just a few hops.

Once that happened, it was useless no matter how may Lin Ming killed.

"We've lost more than 50 javelin throwers and archers, 300 long spear soldiers, 400 tower shield soldiers, and there are also many that are severely wounded and unable to fight. Altogether we've lost around 10% of our fighting force. There are also several brothers of my Salt Clan who have perished..."

As Shi Linkai spoke, he heard the screeching sound of a Heavenly Wind Eagle above the army camp. It was much more resounding and clear than a normal Heavenly Wind Eagle.

"Mm? Reinforcements?"

This was the first thought that popped into Lin Ming's mind, but he immediately dismissed it. It had only been a day since he had been at the transmission relay station and sent news, it was impossible for reinforcements to arrive so quickly.

As soon as the two left the camp to see, they saw a giant Heavenly Wind Eagle that was four or five times larger than normal. Its wings shined like they were carved from gold.

Lin Ming had seen this sort of golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle Before. It was a mount that the Peacock Mountain messenger had ridden. It had the bloodline of a Saint Beast, was exceedingly fast, and it could carry 10 times more than a normal Heavenly Wind Eagle.

Those who could ride this sort of golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle most likely came from a sect.

As the giant eagle swooped down, a buffet of wind directly blew away several army tents. The soldiers inside were also blown away, and landed on the ground with multiple bruises.

"F*ck! Who dares to be so arrogant!?" Shi Linkai was a straightforward man who was honest with his emotions. He thought that this was reinforcements, but now this person had not only come to their army camp without saying anything, but had also overturned many tents, injuring their soldiers. This grated on his nerves and caused his anger to rise.

"Junior-apprentice Sister, we've finally found an inhabited land. It's really been hard for you these past four or five days. The savages that live in the Southern Wilderness are truly barbarians, there isn't even a place to bathe."

Atop the Heavenly Wind Eagle, a yellow-clothed youth around 25 or 26 with a sword on his back was speaking to a 18 or 19 year old girl.

As Lin Ming saw this yellow-clothed youth, he was stunned for a moment. This youth's cultivation was already at the early Houtian realm. An early Houtian martial artist from a sect could still be considered somewhat skillful. Not only that, but he had broken through to the Houtian realm at a relatively young age. He should be at least a top inner court disciple, or maybe even a core disciple.

The girl that he had addressed as Junior-apprentice Sister was wearing an all-white dress. There was a faint crescent moon symbol embroidered on her dress, and she had the appearance of a beautiful and delicate woman.

Her eyes were expressionless as she scanned around where she had landed, silent. She didn't seem to have any desire to speak.

"Junior-apprentice Sister, the beast tide is everywhere now. We have no place to stay currently, so let's temporarily live here."

"Mm..." The girl reluctantly said, then fell back into silence.

The yellow-clothed youth was delighted, he had finally persuaded his Junior-apprentice Sister. As long as he was able to live here for a while and catch his breath, he would be able to realize his wishes.

Before the yellow-clothed youth could say anything, an angry voice suddenly interrupted him. "Who the hell are you? You dare to rush into our army compound and injure our soldiers! And you still have the nerve to speak so casually in front of everyone! Where do think this is? Your home toilet? Come on!"

Shi Linkai was outraged; this yellow-clothed youth was simply pompous, like an arrogant young master.

With the sounds of weapons ringing, soldiers from all around drew their weapons. Dozens of arrows were readied, pulled to the limit, the cold, metal-tipped arrows pointed straight towards the yellow-clothed youth. Several of the Salt Clan brothers also circled the yellow-clothed youth, all of them angry. If Shi Linkai hadn't waved them back, a fight would probably have broken out.

Although Shi Linkai was angry, he hadn't lost his rationality. He wasn't dumb; he had seen enough of the world to know that a golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle was extraordinary, and if this flying beast was able to create gusts of strong heavenly wind that could blow away several tents, then it probably came from a large sect.

It was most likely that this boy and girl also came from a large sect. These kinds of people were existences that Green Mulberry City could not afford to anger unless Lin Ming intervened. But as it stood, this was extremely troublesome for Lin Ming. After all, the other man's cultivation was at the early Houtian realm.

For a while, the atmosphere was tense. The white-clothed girl in the center still had an expressionless face, completely ignoring all the weapons that were pointed towards her.

The yellow-clothed youth gave cold humph, and shot a glare at the soldiers around him. His eyes were full of disdain; in his opinion, these people were nothing more than peasants.

"Who is your commanding officer? Bring him to me. You lot are unqualified to speak to me." The yellow-clothed youth didn't even bother with Shi Linkai. Shi Linkai's entire appearance indicated that he was someone from Jianghu, it was impossible for him to be a general.

"Who do you think you are?" Seeing that this yellow-clothed youth didn't even place him in his eyes, Shi Linkai was incredibly angry. He wished he could just take out his saber and chop these two in half.

At this point, Green Mulberry City's City Lord Zhao Yanming made his way out of the crowd. His expression was dark as he said, "I am Green Mulberry City's City Lord, is there a matter I can assist you with?"

The boy and girl had a cultivation of the early Houtian realm and peak Pulse Condensation period, and they also came from a large sect. After seeing Lin Ming in action, Zhan Yanming had already been made aware of just how deeply terrifying the strength of a martial artist from a sect was. Even though that young girl looked fragile, maybe even all of the Pulse Condensation period martial artists in Green Mulberry City combined together couldn't force her to use her true strength.

At that time, this boy and girl pair would slaughter them and just fly away on their Heavenly Wind Eagle, and they would be helpless to do anything. This was a scenario that Zhao Yanming didn't want to see.

"You are the City Lord? What's your name?" The yellow-clothed youth shot a look at Zhao Yanming, speaking in a haughty and imperious manner.

Zhou Yanming frowned. Without looking at Lin Ming, he sent him a true essence sound transmission. "Young Hero Lin, just where are these two from?"

"I don't know… maybe from some southern sect." As Lin Ming glanced at the crescent moon symbols on their chest, he had a faint guess. Were they from the Moon Seizing Sect?

Moon Seizing Sect was located on the coast of the South Sea, and also bordered the Southern Wilderness along with the Seven Profound territory. It was very close to Divine Phoenix Island and the South Sea Demon Region. Their sect was relatively weak, so they had been the first to have a calamity fall upon them, and their entire sect was exterminated by the South Sea Demon Region.

Listening to their conversation, it seemed as if they had been traveling through the Southern Wilderness for several days. Moon Seizing Sect was also destroyed before the eruption of the beast tides. If these two were survivors of Moon Seizing Sect, then it would match, whether it was time or location.

“Then their strength compared to Young Hero Lin...” Zhao Yanming reasoned that Lin Ming wouldn’t be a match for these two. Lin Ming was only at the middle Pulse Condensation period, and they were all from a sect, so the difference couldn’t be that great.

But during the day, Lin Ming’s performance on the field was simply too awe-inspiring to everyone who watched. Zhao Yanming felt as if Lin Ming was nearly invincible, so that’s why he posed this question.

Lin Min didn’t reply. It was difficult to say just how strong a Houtian master from a sect was. Not only that, but the situation in Green Mulberry City was very complex, and he didn’t want to needlessly expose his true strength.

Zhao Yanming pushed down any anger and calmly said, “I am Zhao Yanming, who are you?”

“Zhao Yanming? Mm, listen up. You don’t need to know who I am. I want you people to prepare a very good mansion and have the place tidied up. Switch out all the bedding and furniture, and send out seven or eight maids that are clean to take care of my Junior-apprentice Sister’s daily living needs. My Junior-apprentice Sister is a vegetarian and loves to stay clean. Prepare a bath of spring water every day, and three meals of tender bamboo shoots and fruits. When the beast tide comes tomorrow, I’ll help you out a bit.”

As the yellow-clothed youth spoke such rampant words, Shi Linkai felt as if his lungs were about to explode from rage. He had never seen such an arrogant young man in his life before!

The truth was, Shi Linkai didn’t know that the attitude of this yellow-clothed man was the near-universal attitude which most geniuses of sects treated common mortals with. To them, the common folk were nothing more than ants. For a human to speak to an ant on equal terms in a kind and reasonable manner was naturally impossible.

As for someone like Lin Ming, he had a humble origin and a reasonable temperament. Although his status had soared into the skies, his natural disposition had never changed because of that. Moreover, he was also from Green Mulberry City, and even when seeing Lin Wanshan he would greet him like any other family junior would.

But now that a normal genius from a sect had come, this genius would not even bother to look their way – the difference in status would just be too great.

“You really think you are all that? You think we don’t have masters here? You really think we need someone like you to ‘help out a bit’!?” Shi Linkai drew out the saber and began slashing the ground, cutting apart a stone block. If he wasn’t well aware that this yellow-clothed youth was dozens of times stronger than him, he would have already started a fight.

Hearing Shi Linkai’s insults, the yellow-clothed youth frowned. He narrowed his eyes and looked at Lin Ming who was standing near Shi Linkai. As his vision fell on Lin Ming, he said, “I see. I didn’t expect there to be a little talent here. So this is your so-called master. But do you think you are worthy of that title? As long as you…”

As the yellow-clothed man spoke, his lips curved up in a smile. He lifted his hands and formed sword fingers, then slashed out twice at Lin Ming. Sharp sword energy broke through the air, cutting towards Lin Ming.

“Mm?” Lin Ming’s expression sank. There were some hidden enemies lurking in the shadows, so he didn’t want to cause any trouble. But now he had actually been rolled together into this mess.

Chapter 324 – The Girl in White

Chapter 324 – The Girl in White

…

…

…

Chi! Chi!

The two sword energies shot out from right and left at extremely tricky angles. Although they were only casual strikes, they were still strikes that came from a sect-based Houtian master. If a normal middle Pulse Condensation martial artist was struck by these two sword energies, they would be severely injured.

The yellow-clothed man thought to establish his reputation to avoid future troubles. And the best way to establish that reputation was naturally to slap down Green Mulberry City's current number one master, Lin Ming.

"You don't even make sense!"

Lin Ming coldly snorted. He had been dragged into this mess for no reason and this random man had actually attacked him out of the blue. Obviously, there was something wrong with his mind.

Azure light flashed, and Lin Ming punched out twice, meeting these two sword finger energies with his fists.

Bang! Bang!

With the sound of an explosion, the two sword energies were broken apart. Lin Ming hadn't even been touched, nor had he taken a single step back.

"Oh?" The yellow-clothed youth's eyebrows slanted up. "A little boy at the Pulse Condensation period can actually block my sword finger attack? You're quite a character aren't you? Hehe, how about if I use 30% of my strength!"

The yellow-clothed character was about to strike out once again, but then he saw that the white-clothed girl was waving her hand at him, interrupting him. "Senior-apprentice Brother, stop it. Don't try to oppress other people with your power like this."

The yellow-clothed youth's cultivation was at the early Houtian realm, but Lin Ming was actually only at the middle Pulse Condensation period. This sort of fight was originally unfair; the yellow-clothed man was simply using his age and cultivation to suppress others. In the opinion of geniuses, even if the yellow-clothed youth won, it still wouldn't be a victory.

The yellow-clothed was a bit unhappy being stopped by the white-clothed girl, but he still understood the meaning behind her words and went along with her request, "Since Junior-apprentice Sister says so, I'll forget it. You, boy, today is your lucky day."

"Oh? I'm lucky?" Lin Ming thought this was hilarious. In that brief tussle a moment ago, that yellow-clothed youth really did only use a small portion of his strength, but Lin Ming had an extremely keen perception, and he was able to feel that the purity of the yellow-clothed youth's true essence. He thought that this yellow-clothed youth might be a core disciple, but now it seemed more likely that he was the a high ranking inner court disciple.

An inner court disciple was simply nothing. Currently, Qin Xingxuan was already an inner court disciple, and once her talent blossomed in the future, she would most likely become a core disciple.

"What, you aren't convinced?" The yellow-clothed youth's eyebrows picked up, "Since my Junior-apprentice Sister has spoken of compassion, today I will not bully the young. If you aren't convinced, there is a simple solution. When the beast tide attacks tomorrow, you and I will both go out, and we'll see just who kills the most. How about it?"

Lin Ming hadn't even spoken when Shi Linkai angrily shouted, "What dog fart nonsense! Like this father needs your help! My Green Mulberry City…"

Shi Linkai had finished, his voice still full of indignant anger, when a loud voice suddenly interrupted him, "Clan Leader Shi, please take note of the current situation and consider the greater good. Green Mulberry City's decisions will be determined by Green Mulberry City's people."

Shi Linkai turned to look, and saw that the person speaking was the garrison army commander, Zhu Ping. He was wearing a military uniform, and seemed to be emitting a little aura of irritation.

Shi Linkai's heart began to blaze with fury. Only Green Mulberry City's people can determine Green Mulberry City's decisions? Were the Salt Clan not people from Green Mulberry City? His brothers had died in order to protect this city, and yet they actually had such a foul reputation?

Shi Linkai's fury was about to spill over and cause an irreversible scene when at that moment, Lin Ming sent him a true essence sound transmission, "Clan Leader Shi, don't bother with this trivial matter, stop here for now."

Before luring out the chess piece that Ouyang Boyan had lain down, Lin Ming didn't want to stir up a needless fight, thus exposing his own strength.

Lin Ming was a hero that Shi Linkai held a great deal of admiration towards. Shi Linkai had no choice but to back down, icily coughing as he stopped speaking.

Zhu Ping turned a smile on the yellow-clothed youth and said, "I will immediately empty the best mansion in Green Mulberry City, change the bedding and furniture, and have several well trained maids brought over. Two masters, please rest freely.

Zhu Ping bowed as he spoke. Such a welcome that was in agreement with all the specifications seemed like a deliberate attempt to nauseate Lin Ming.

Lin Ming lived in the army compound, ate with the soldiers and lived with the soldiers. Yet Zhu Ping had actually set aside a special residence for these two people.

In this regard, Lin Ming didn't mind. Some people were like this. If you treated them kindly, that person might not take you seriously. But if you pushed their face into the ground and slapped them around, they would think of you as a true character that couldn't be offended, and treat you carefully and respectfully.

This kind of person could only be described as shallow and cheap.

Of course, the difference with which Zhu Ping treated Lin Ming and the yellow-clothed youth was also because of hatred and other factors.

Zhu Ping was very glad to see that the yellow-clothed youth and Lin Ming seemed hostile to each other. If these two could fight, and Lin Ming receive a severe injury in the process, killing him would be much easier.

"Hmph, I can tell you're a sensible one. Hurry up and prepare. Remember to prepare several buckets of spring bath water, and incense to clear the smell. My Junior-sister does not like to live in places like this army compound. Rest assured, once the beast tide comes, I'll be able to arrive in just a few breaths of time." As the yellow-clothed youth spoke, he glanced at Lin Ming, an unforgiving expression etched on his face. As for his strike being resisted a moment ago, he naturally wasn't comfortable with this. It was just that he didn't want to go against the wishes of the white-clothed girl.

The yellow-clothed youth and his junior-apprentice sister were truly disciples from the Moon Seizing Sect. The Moon Seizing Sect had been destroyed six days go, and over 90% of the disciples had died. Of the Xiantian masters, all of them had perished.

Luckily, the two of them had managed to escape. They had been traveling under the barest conditions, spending most of their time in the jungles of the Southern Wilderness.

They lived outdoors, ate wild fruits and dried rations, and didn't even have the chance to change clothes. For the white-clothed girl who was used to remaining clean, this was very difficult to endure.

The yellow-clothed youth had seized the opportunity to drop the white-clothed girl in this big mortal city, and rest for a few days.

The truth was, he also had his own reason for doing so. This white-clothed girl was actually one of direct disciples of the Moon Seizing Sect. If she was able to escape this time, that meant there must definitely be many treasures on her body. Her own master had died beside her, how could she not have given her disciple everything?

Earth-steps treasures, rare jade slips, and most important of all… Heaven Opening Pills!

The yellow-clothed youth estimated that this white-clothed girl might have five or six Heaven Opening Pills on her!

Although the Moon Seizing Sect was one of the lowest ranked within the 19 third-grade sects, they had still managed to accumulate several dozens of Heaven Opening Pills. Since the white-clothed girl was one of the top ranked direct disciples in the sect, there was a high possibility she would have many Heaven Opening Pills on her!

Besides the Heaven Opening Pill, the yellow-clothed youth was faintly aware that within the Moon Seizing Sect, there also existed a top-ranked extremely valuable medicine. This medicine's value was far beyond that of a Heaven Opening Pill, and it was said to be related to the former master of the South Sea Demon Region… the master of Silent Demon Emperor City.

Although the Moon Seizing Sect had been on the decline for a long time, it still had a very long and storied sect history, filled with glory and tribulations. 2000 years ago, the Moon Seizing Sect was a top third-grade sect, and its strength surpassed even Peacock Mountain.

At that time, the Moon Seizing Sect had joined forces with the entire South Horizon Region to lay siege to Silent Demon Emperor City. Obtaining such extremely rare and top grade medicine from this siege wouldn't be unusual.

Silent Demon Emperor City used to be a Holy Land rank sect, and the Netherworld Great Emperor was a top figure of the entire Skill Spill Continent. From an existence like that, whatever came from their hand – even if it were a chamber pot – would be a rare and precious artifact that countless small sects would crazily fight over.

The precious medicine that existed within the Moon Seizing Sect was said to have a very high and impactful effect for Xiantian masters that were trying to break into the Revolving Core realm. As for what it specifically was, the yellow-clothed youth had only ever heard some vague rumors. It had been so many years since then, so it might all be gone.

Of course, the yellow-clothed youth didn't expect that the white-clothed girl would have such a precious medicine on her body. Even if she did, he wouldn't be able to swallow a medicine of that level.

His heart's true desire lay in the Heaven Opening Pills. With his talent, it would not be easy to reach the Xiantian realm. But if he had enough Heaven Opening Pills, it wouldn't be a problem.

Who didn't wish to reach the Xiantian realm?

If the white-clothed girl was not an angelic beauty and didn't have countless life-saving measures, this yellow-clothed youth would have already directly snatched it from her body.

The yellow-clothed youth had originally been an inner court disciple of the Moon Seizing Sect, and the disparity between his status and the white-clothed girl's status was immense. In normal times, if these two people met, the yellow-clothed youth would have had to be extremely respectful to her. However, in his heart, he had many unnatural and perverted ambitions towards the white-clothed girl. It wasn't just him, but many of the other male disciples of the Moon Seizing Sect had once dreamed of marrying this white-clothed girl.

Once they did, they would be able to obtain extra resources and have the backing of such a beautiful lady. Wouldn't that simply be perfection?

Of course, the yellow-clothed youth had only ever thought that – it was simply impossible for it to happen.

In particular, just a month ago the white-clothed girl had been chosen as one of the geniuses in the training program carried out by Divine Phoenix Island. She had been one of the 50 human-step talents that were selected.

The Moon Seizing Sect had originally been one of the lowest 19 third-grade sects. When the joint talent training program had first been announced at the Seven Profound Valleys, no one from the Moon Seizing Sect was included in the 20 invited elites. Afterwards, the total joint talent training program had over 100 individuals, and the Moon Seizing Sect merely had a pitiful two disciples chosen.

One was a male disciple, and the other was this white-clothed girl.

Therefore, that male disciple and the white-clothed girl had become the dragon and phoenix pairing of the Moon Seizing Sect. In these circumstances, anyone that had improper thoughts of the white-clothed girl were the same as toads trying to eat swan meat.

The yellow-clothed youth had burned with jealousy. He wished he could kill that lucky fool of a male disciple, take his place, and then obtain the white-clothed girl. He wanted to tear apart her impassionate shell and mercilessly ravage her.

This was probably a common dark and frustrated thought that many of the inner court male disciples in the sect had.

And then, tragedy had befallen the Moon Seizing Sect, and that too-lucky male disciple had actually died. Just this point had caused the yellow-clothed youth to feel immeasurably happy.

The yellow-clothed youth felt as if he were in a dream he didn't want to wake from. As he was fleeing, he met the white-clothed girl who was riding away on a golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle.

This was simply the heavens themselves helping him.

Because the white-clothed girl had lost her master and lost her sect, she must be in immeasurable pain and inner turmoil. For the yellow-clothed youth, this was a golden chance to seize her heart and everything else.

Therefore, for these past days, the yellow-clothed youth had been using all of the experience and knowledge he had of flirting with girls to take advantage of the white-clothed girl's vulnerable state of mind, and leave a favorable impression and goodwill on her.

If there was any disciple within the Moon Seizing Sect that wanted to thank the South Sea Demon Region even after they destroyed their sect, then it would probably only be this yellow-clothed youth.

Chapter 325 – Beast Tide's Night Attack

Chapter 325 – Beast Tide's Night Attack

…

…

…

The white-clothed girl had originally intended to travel to White Peak Sect. The White Peak Sect had a very good relationship with the Moon Seizing Sect, she believed she would be able to take refuge there.

However, the yellow-clothed youth didn't want that to happen. Once the white-clothed girl entered White Peak Sect, she would inevitably become a genius of the White Peak Sect. As for him, he would still remain a nobody. When that happened, where would he have another chance to obtain this white-clothed girl?

Therefore he had hinted to her that the White Peak Sect would covet their cultivation methods, legacies, inheritances, pills, resources, and had also listed out various possible dangers that could befall her. Finally, his suggestions began to slowly sway the white-clothed girl. In conclusion, the white-clothed girl was only 18 years old. To suddenly suffer such a sudden blow to her psyche, it was inevitable that she would be confused and muddled for a while.

So the yellow-clothed youth had flown through the Southern Wilderness with the white-clothed girl and had finally arrived at Green Mulberry City. He was quite satisfied with the size of Green Mulberry City, and was planning to stay there and enjoy the comfortable environment. Meanwhile, he would take care of the white-clothed girl who needed to be comforted, and finally move onto her, savaging her without a thought.

As they say, cooked rice cannot be uncooked.

As the white-clothed girl bathed, the yellow-clothed youth listened from outside. He had very good senses, and could clearly hear the splashing sounds of water, and also the sounds of the several maids cleaning up the white-clothed girl.

As he heard these sounds, his heart began to itch. He was thinking about just how to find an excuse to stay in her room tonight, when at that moment, a loud alarm began to ring throughout the city.

The beast tide had come again!

The yellow-clothed youth cussed. The fall of Green Mulberry City didn't have any relation to him. But once the beast tide crashed in, they would reach this place sooner or later – it was pointless staying in the room.

………………………

Night. The moon was bright and round in the inky sky. Standing above the city walls, one could see a distant dark mass of vicious beasts stampeding over. Most of these vicious beasts were first-level or second-level vicious beasts, with a small number of third-level vicious beasts. There were even more than during the daytime attack; there were probably no less than 100,000.

The white-clothed girl had just put on a pure white dress. This was a special dress that Zhu Ping had prepared, it was made from snow silk. It was extremely comfortable and fit well.

"I apologize for disturbing your rest." Zhu Ping said as he approached them, all smiles.

"I'll only help this one time." The yellow-clothed youth said with a dour expression. He was only borrowing this city to stay for a few days. Helping them out once was already a great gift.

“One time is enough. Two masters may feel relieved. After several more days pass, reinforcements will arrive.” After Zhu Ping froze for a moment, he could only go along with the yellow-clothed youth’s words.

“That had best be so. I do not wish to be disturbed again!”

As the yellow-clothed youth spoke, he slowly extracted a longsword from his spatial ring. At this time, he suddenly found Lin Ming not too far away. He laughed and said, “Boy, would you like to have a little race? Let’s see who kills more. If you can even kill half of my number, then you win!”

The yellow-clothed youth’s eyes flashed. He had to take advantage of the time when his strength was still above his junior-apprentice sister’s, and display his strength in order to win her heart. Of course, to demonstrate his combat prowess, he had to have a foil. And Lin Ming just managed to qualify to be this foil.

If he was just killing vicious beasts by himself, then that would be meaningless.

“Not interested.” Lin Ming replied, not even bothering to return a look. He flicked the Purple Comet Spear in his hands and then jumped out of the army compound.

The yellow-clothed youth frowned. This kid was just too reckless!

Zhu Ping looked at Lin Ming’s rushing form and the corners of his mouth curved in a hint of a smile. At this moment, he heard a muffled true essence sound transmission in his ears, “Are you sure that boy sent his Winged Flood Dragon to another city to request help?”

“Mm, I’m sure. I ask Sir to look for an opportunity as soon as possible. Once the reinforcements arrive, I’m afraid there won’t be another good chance.” Zhu Ping suggested. If Lin Ming didn’t die, it would be difficult for the Zhu Family to survive.

“You do not need to say anything, I already know where things stand.” The man that was hidden in the crowd gave a cold snort, his lips curving in a smile full of murderous intent.

Without the Winged Flood Dragon, he believed he had a 70 to 80% chance of killing Lin Ming.

Roar!

Roar!

Roar!

In the front, the vicious beasts finally reached the trap line. These traps had played a great role during the days beast tide attack, but there had only been time to reset less than half of them. A few hundred scattered vicious beasts stepped on the traps, tumbling to the ground and being trampled to death by the vicious beast army behind them.

The yellow-clothed youth from the Moon Seizing Sect strolled towards the vicious beast tide, grasped his longsword, and casually sliced out.

Ka!

A blue ripple that was visible to the naked eye spread out like a crescent moon, its range reaching dozens of feet away. A large tract of land was chopped apart, and the demonic beasts in front were cut down. Dozens of first-level and second-level vicious beasts that were behind were also cut into two by the sword energy.

“Sword Energy Transverse!”

The yellow-clothed youth followed with a turn of his sword. Sword energy flushed out, twisting into large snake-shapes that reached into the sky, and then fell from the clouds like scattered flowers from celestial beauties. Wherever these dozens of sword energies visited, blood would fly.

“So fierce!”

Shi Linkai was watching from not too far away. As he saw this yellow-clothed youth slash out and instantly kill over a hundred vicious beasts in just two moves, he was shocked. This youth was so strong!

This kind of strength might even be superior to that late Houtian hermit master within Sky Fortune Kingdom.

Shi Linkai had to admit that this yellow-clothed youth was incomparably arrogant, but he had the ability to be arrogant. Even if several dozen of him fought this yellow-clothed man, it would just be a slaughter.

Not too far away from Shi Linkai, Zhuang Fan and Lin Wanshan were also bewildered. There truly was no limit in the universe, there was always someone higher. The heritage of a large sect was beyond their imagination.

For a time, the yellow-clothed youth was the star of the scene. Even the white-clothed girl had a faint smile on her face. Of course, the reason wasn't the yellow-clothed youth's strength. With his ability, he was nowhere near a true genius Houtian master of the Moon Seizing Sect. The reason she smiled was because after several days of fleeing, she had finally arrived at this mortal city and was able to relax.

Seeing so many simple people of this mortal world, she suddenly felt that perhaps listening to the yellow-clothed youth and living in the mortal world wasn't so bad after all. Although her cultivation would be slow, she would be able to live a peaceful and easy life. She wouldn't be tired all the time or nerve-wracked.

Heaps of dismembered beast corpses lay around the yellow-clothed youth. None of the vicious beasts dared to go forward against that formidable sword energy.

In comparison to the yellow-clothed youth, Lin Ming seemed much more ordinary. There were only a few dozen beast corpses around him; the number was a third of the yellow-clothed youth.

“This is too terrifying, that yellow-clothed youth can actually kill vicious beasts three or four times faster than Hero Lin!”

“It only takes a single move to kill a few dozen vicious beasts, and he also uses a sword. Who said that swords were bad against big groups? That sword in the yellow-clothed youth’s hand seems fiercer than Hero Lin’s spear!

“Eh, I don’t want to admit it… but… he really is a bit fiercer…”

“Bah! What nonsense are you speaking? How old is Hero Lin? How old is that man? Can the two even be compared?”

It was unknown who said that, but afterwards, everyone seemed to wake up. Lin Ming was only 16 years old, but that yellow-clothed youth was in his twenties!

The soldiers present were from Green Mulberry City, so they were naturally biased towards Lin Ming. “That’s right, after a few more years when our Green Mulberry City’s Hero Lin grows up, he’ll also reach this degree of power.”

At this moment, there was a shattering roar in the beast tide. Fourth-level vicious beasts had appeared, and there were two of them!

The two were Iron-armor Lizards. One was big, and one was a bit smaller. These Iron-armored Lizards were mighty, and their defensive power was extremely strong. If one couldn’t kill them, they would break through the city walls sooner or later.

“There’s two of them, one for each of us!” The yellow-clothed youth capriciously smiled. He waved his sword, and then rushed straight towards the lizards.

In his opinion, with Lin Ming’s strength, it wasn’t impossible for him to kill those Iron-armor Lizards. But to do so in a massive herd of vicious beasts would be difficult; he’d probably barely accomplish it with a great deal of effort. All of this was perfect to embarrass Lin Ming.

Cha cha cha!

Sword light fell like rain, and every one pierced bloody holes in the Iron-armor Lizard's body. The Iron-armor Lizard tilted its heads upwards, hissing towards the sky.

After having used a single sword to severely wound the Iron-armor Lizard, the yellow-clothed youth was very satisfied with his success. He thought that if he were in Lin Ming's position, he would try to attack the smaller lizard. But as he turned his head to look, he actually saw that Lin Ming had dove into the vast beast tide, killing more the deeper he went.

The yellow-clothed youth smiled with disdain. What a coward. He didn't even dare to kill the small one. Oh well, he alone was enough to kill both!

As he thought of the junior-apprentice sister watching him from behind, the yellow-clothed youth surged with fighting spirit. He turned around and slashed out a martial skill towards the second Iron-armor Lizard, severely wounding it!

In two swords strikes, he had caused two Iron-armor Lizards to suffer heavy wounds. In the eyes of an ordinary soldier, he was simply a god of war that landed in the mortal world!

Even Shi Linkai willingly shut his mouth. Within the Sky Spill Continent, powerhouses were those that earned the respect of the world. The yellow-clothed youth was so much stronger than Shi Linkai, that let alone look down on him, even if he were beat into a pulp he would still recognize this power.

At this time, the more Lin Ming killed, the deeper he went. Although the moonlight was bright, it was still night. Quickly, Lin Ming was submerged in that endlessly vast stampede of vicious beasts.

"Lin Ming! Don't go that far! Come back!" Within the army, the one who most worried about Lin Ming was Lin Wanshan. If something happened to Lin Ming, that would be a loss the Lin Family could not withstand.

“Mm? Lin Ming?” In the army compound, the white-clothed girl heard the name ‘Lin Ming’, and she reflexively froze for a moment, then shook her head. There was no way it was that person. Lin Ming, Lin anything, was a relatively common name. It wasn’t strange for someone to share the same name.

The white-clothed girl restored her indifferent look. Standing in the windy night, she didn’t bother to do anything. In this conflict between mortals and weak vicious beasts, she disdained to bother with it.

Lin Ming killed his way in deeper and deeper. His killing speed was extremely quick. Wherever he went, a death and blood would follow. It was as if he were drawing a crimson line upon the battlefield.

‘In the end, he’s just a little boy. Although he has amazing talent, he’s not mature. He finally felt how terrifying the weight of being suppressed is. If he stayed near the yellow-clothed youth he would just lose face, so he decided to rush in too deep.’ Behind Lin Ming, a blurry shadow followed, hidden within the tide of vicious beasts.

Lin Ming kept fighting. Where his spear went, blood followed. ‘You finally came out? What a clever concealment technique. Even though you’re so close, I only feel a faint murderous intent.’

Chapter 326 – Assassin

Chapter 326 – Assassin

…

…

…

With Lin Ming's strength, rushing full speed into the groups of vicious beast was no different to a saber slicing into soft silk, matchless and unstoppable. In an instant, he had broken more than ten miles deep. There, he was close to the edge of the vicious beast horde.

The blurry shadow that followed behind Lin Ming was suspicious, 'Why is he in so deep? Did he discover me?'

This blurry shadow had thought that Lin Ming was galvanized by the killing speed of the yellow-clothed youth, and didn't have the face to stay near his side, thus he had rushed into the beast tide. But in a single breath, he rushed all the way to the edge of the beast horde – he was just too deep.

'This boy, is he trying to force me out?' The shadow's complexion sank as he thought this.

'He doesn't know how deep my strength is and yet dares to lead me out? He wants to turn the tables and kill me? This boy is truly confident to the point of being arrogant, does he think he is invincible under the heavens!?'

This blurry shadow didn't have full assurance that he would be able to assassinate Lin Ming. After all, Lin Ming was a heaven defying talent that even Divine Phoenix Island was concerned about. Before, he wouldn't have been surprised if he was hiding his strength or some life-saving trump card, but he never thought that Lin Ming would have the ability to kill him.

He was an official faction disciple, his cultivation was at the late Houtian period and he had a solid foundation. How could he possibly be killed by Lin Ming, a little boy at the middle Pulse Condensation period? Not even mentioning Lin Ming, he didn't even place that foppish yellow-clothed youth from the Moon Seizing Sect in his eyes.

Considering all aspects, even if he couldn't defeat Lin Ming, he could still safely retreat. After all, he was still a late Houtian martial artist from a sect. If he used his full force to escape, it would be difficult to stop him, much less kill him.

Although he didn't have a complete grasp on killing Lin Ming, currently he had to act. Otherwise, if reinforcements came to Green Mulberry City, he wouldn't have this chance again. His own life was tied together with Ouyang Boyan. When Lin Ming grew to the point that he was able to disregard the rules of the Seven Profound Valleys, that would be the day he died.

"Die!"

The blurry shadow suddenly accelerated, all of his murderous intent converged onto himself. His entire body shimmered with a dim black illusory light as if he were melting in the air, his body hidden in the void.

"Heart Piercing Blade!"

His sword light was nearly completely hidden in the dark of night. Using the massacre of vicious beasts as cover, he thrust towards Lin Ming's heart!

"You're finally here!"

Lin Ming sneered. He wasn't afraid of thieves, only thieves that lurked in the shadows. As long as they came out, he had nothing to fear.

True essence revolved within his entire body. Lin Ming's spear turned around, lightning flashed, true essence rushed forth, his spear thrust forwards!

“Returning Spear!”

This was one of the basic moves found within the simple Foundation Spear Technique. However, under the enhancement of the azure true essence and power of thunder, the spear’s strength had reached an incomparably terrifying level.

Kacha!

The black sword energy was twisted to pieces; Lin Ming’s spear thrust forth, piercing the shadow’s throat!

“Mm? Afterimage? No… it’s an illusion!”

In that split-second, it was too late for Lin Ming to retract his spear. Wind howled as a sharp sword stabbed from a blind angle, thrusting towards the left side of Lin Ming’s ribcage, wanting to pierce his heart!

Power of thunder!

Bang!

With an explosive eruption, the coiling dragon steel needle hiding within Lin Ming broke free. Countless arcs of lightning twisted within the air, writhing like snakes. The shadow gave a stuffy cough, then rapidly drew back.

But Lin Ming also felt pain in his ribs. His clothes had been torn, and a shallow bloodstain appeared under the left side of his ribcage.

The coiling dragon steel needle that was fused into his body could be used to defend against close-range attacks. This was a move that he had once used to deal with Jiang Baoyun, and had relied on it to stop Jiang Baoyun’s peerless speed.

“You finally came out.” Lin Ming casually swiped away the bloodstain; there was only a tiny inch-long wound left over.

This assassin was an old man. He was tall and stooped down, his face covered with a black mask. He held an extremely thin soft sword in his hand that was only two feet long. This sort of sword was best suited for assassinations. Two feet was enough to reach the heart from any angle, and this thin and short sword was also easy to hide.

As this old man looked at Lin Ming, he could hardly believe that his sword strike hadn't wounded Lin Ming more. His expression sank. Although he couldn't land a solid attack because of the power of thunder, it still shouldn't have caused so little damage. Did Lin Ming have some special method to increase his defense?

"You are Ouyang Boyan's henchman?" Lin Ming tranquilly asked, his eyebrows curved up in a question.

"Hehe, you do not need to twist around words. Between you and me, we have no past injustice nor any current enmity. I only came to kill you because of money. I came here to send you to the netherworld, but do not blame me..." As the old man spoke, his voice was extremely hoarse, and the mask on his face shook. If one looked closely, they could even see the thin edges of this man's face under the mask; he was no different than a skeleton.

Lin Ming suddenly smiled, "The mask you use as a prop in this act is also quite good."

The old looking man's expression sank, "What do you mean?"

"Haha, Martial House Master Bi, even now you still pretend and try to hide. With your ability, why do you need a mask? Just take it off. I've already experienced your appearance changing technique before, and was deceived quite miserably by you. You think that you can fool me again with the same method?"

Lin Ming thought that the one lurking in the shadows was an apprentice of Ouyang Boyan. After all, this sort of matter could only be entrusted to an apprentice; otherwise, Ouyang Boyan would never feel secure.

Since Ouyang Boyan was an Acacia Faction disciple, his apprentice should also be an Acacia Faction disciple. But why was this person so good at concealment techniques? This ability should only belong to a disciple from the Mirage Faction.

And the only Mirage Faction disciple who held a grudge against Lin Ming, and whose cultivation was at the Houtian realm, was Bi Luo!

Only Bi Luo could have planned this with Ouyang Boyan. The two must have totally cooperated, planning on assassinating him.

Lin Ming remembered that originally, Bi Luo's cultivation was at the peak of the middle Houtian realm. But now he had broken through to the late Houtian realm. It might have been because of some help given to him by Ouyang Boyan.

Of course, these were only his guesses. Bi Luo's appearance changing technique was not something that Lin Ming could see through, so he was putting forth a front towards Bi Luo.

The old man was expressionless. He coldly said, "I have no idea what you are saying. Delaying for time is useless. You are not my match, and today you will die without a doubt."

"Oh? You think you can?" As Lin Ming spoke he excitedly smacked his lips, his eyes full of fighting spirit.

After Lin Ming's cultivation had broken through to the middle Pulse Condensation period and he had obtained the Purple Comet Spear and Earthcore Crimson Flame, his strength had increased by a great deal. Now he was hoping to find a good match to assess and confirm his own strength. Before, the yellow-clothed youth who was barking in front of him could not arouse the least bit of interest from Lin Ming.

But Bi Luo was a great choice.

"It is good for the young to be arrogant, but to be too arrogant is the same as being an idiot! Die!"

Xiu!

The old man moved and his body shifted, a gray light shining out from him. Every time this gray light shot out, another one of him appeared.

In an instant, there were 36 clones behind the old man.

This was fast to the degree that a normal martial artist would not be able to see it. It would only leave behind an extremely brief flash on the visual field of the iris; this was the afterimage.

But, Lin Ming's perception was surpassingly keen. It was impossible for this old man to create 36 afterimages, thus, that meant that this old man before him hadn't released afterimages, but illusions.

This was also a Mirage Faction cultivation method!

Lin Ming smiled, "You hid your appearance, but you can't hide your cultivation method. What you just used was a cultivation method of the Mirage Faction."

"What is a Mirage Faction cultivation method? Once you go to the netherworld, I'd love to see how you keep guessing!"

At the same time, the 36 old men flicked the swords in their hands; 36 sword lights flashed!

"36 Swords Absolute Killing Array!"

Cha cha cha cha cha cha cha!

36 sharp beams of light pierced towards Lin Ming from all directions, causing the air to tremble. The thick true essence was at least 10 times better than that of the yellow-clothed youth from the Moon Seizing Sect!

The old man had suddenly used his killing blow. Since things reached this point, Lin Ming naturally didn't need to hide his strength any longer. True essence flushed into the Heretical God Seed.

Heretical God Force – open!

Bang!!!

Compressed azure true essence rushed out of the Heretical God Seed like a tidal wave. The 36 white lights were completely caught within the surging azure true essence waves, and were drowned out by the endless power of the True Dragon!

"What!?"

The old man's complexion immediately changed. The power of the 36 Swords Absolute Killing Array was in the top three of all the skills he knew. Yet it was so easily blocked by Lin Ming.

He had guessed correctly: Lin Ming had been hiding part of his strength. But he never imagined that Lin Ming would he be so strong. If Lin Ming was depending on some sort of special item or incomparably exquisite cultivation method to avoid him, the old man wouldn't have been surprised. But a moment ago, Lin Ming had extinguished all of his sword energies in a full frontal collision!

In a frontal impact, what mattered was how thick one's true essence was. But whether or not true essence was thick depended mostly on one's cultivation. How could a late Houtian realm master's true essence be suppressed by a neophyte at the middle Pulse Condensation period?

How!?

Lin Ming grinned. Since he had opened the Heretical God Force, he planned to bring this battle to a quick conclusion. "Martial House Master Bi, it's quite regrettable that neither you nor Ouyang Boyan had gone to the Total Faction Martial Meeting. Hearing rumors is always inferior to seeing with your own eyes. Martial House Master Bi has made the wrong judgment, and for that reason you will pay the deep price!"

"Humph! What nonsense!" The old man was not intimidated. He would overdraw his true essence and use the even stronger 72 Swords Absolute Killing Array, and definitely be able to kill Lin Ming in a single blow. But at this moment his complexion suddenly changed, because above Lin Ming's speartip, a red wisp of flame and a small purple steel needle appeared.

In the vast night sky, the two tiny lights seemed insignificant. But the old man's eyes suddenly widened, almost rolling back into his head.

'This… this is…'

'Impossible! It's impossible! It cannot be a Flame Essence!'

The old man paled. He almost couldn't believe his own judgment, but he felt a terrifying power of fire within that small red flame.

"Impossible, no, this can't be… a thunder and fire dual-attribute body. A mere 16 year old can control a powerful thunder energy weapon, but can also control a Flame Essence; there probably isn't a single person like that in the entire mainland.

The old man seemed to be in a trance, muttering to himself as his mouth twitched.

"You think that it's a thunder energy weapon?" Lin Ming smiled, extending out his hand. The coiling dragon steel needle immediately jumped into his palm, turning around and around. "Martial House Master Bi, please open your eyes and take a careful look. This is an instrument condensed from pure thunder energy."

Chapter 327 – You Cannot Stop Me

Chapter 327 – You Cannot Stop Me

…

….

…

Brutal and manic power of thunder scattered out.

A two inch long simple steel needle. There was a textured image of a Purple Flood Dragon carved onto the surface, twining around the needle a total of nine times.

Because the coiling dragon steel needle was in a completely static state, the power of thunder was fully restrained within it. The old man had plenty of time to observe the energy structure of the steel needle, and his perception wasn't bounced back either.

As he felt the power of thunder that was compressed to such a terrifying degree, the old man's lips began to fiercely twitch.

"This… this is…"

The old man had never personally seen a Thunder Soul before, but as a Mirage Faction disciple, he knew that the enemy that was best suited to suppress them were thunder-attribute martial artists. The power of thunder was able to dispel illusions, ghosts, and evil powers. This was something that the old man had learned from reading many ancient texts.

This steel needle in front of him didn't send out even the slightest bit of power of thunder at the moment. It was endless, and all of the threads of thunder seemed to contain a consciousness; it was alive.

Consciousness… awareness… thunder with life, endless; this was the symbol of a Thunder Soul!

Compared to a Flame Essence, a Thunder Soul was much more rare. Even a low-grade human-step Thunder Soul was an incomparably precious treasure. As for a medium-grade human-step Thunder Soul, that was enough to cause bloodbaths between Xiantian masters…

Seeing the intensity of the terrifying energy within Lin Ming's hand, this Thunder Soul was absolutely at least a medium-grade human-step Thunder Soul… could it even be a high-grade human-step Thunder Soul!?!?

The old man was unable to imagine that this was a Pulse Condensation period martial artist. Where or how could he have possibly absorbed a high-grade human-step Thunder Soul which only a Xiantian master could absorb?

Even if it were Divine Phoenix Island, they also wouldn't be able to achieve this. To absorb a Thunder Soul, one could only have limited assistance – the true test all depended on oneself.

Not just that, but the boy had a Thunder Soul and also a Flame Essence!

A medium-grade human-step Flame Essence and a possible high-grade human-step Thunder Soul!

Was this a power that a 16 year old boy could have!?!

The old man was suddenly afraid. He felt that this Lin Ming was too strange, he was just like a demon king hiding within humanity!

In his heart, he couldn't help but think about retreating. He hadn't exposed his true identity, and even if Lin Ming hadn't been bluffing about knowing his identity, he still hadn't revealed any clues to who he was. If he couldn't win, then he would flee!

As a Mirage Faction disciple, he was proficient in concealment techniques. As long as he was able to escape Lin Ming's true essence locking rage, he could easily escape in the night, losing Lin Ming.

In the worst case he would just not return to the Seven Profound Valleys. Although not returning to the Seven Profound Valleys was the same as severing his future hope of becoming a Xiantian master, preserving his life was much more important than some distant Xiantian realm.

The old man treasured his life very much. The reason that he would undertake this mission for Ouyang Boyan was because he wished to break through to the Xiantian realm and live to 180 years old.

The old man turned his palm, and a small thunderclap bead appeared. This was a small Array Faction gadget. Once it was thrown, it would explode and create a massive amount of thick fog. He would be able to use this chance and display his illusion techniques to escape.

However, before he could throw the thunderclap bead, Lin Ming's Purple Comet Spear began to shine with a dazzling bright purple and a burning crimson red. In the dark night, it was just like a purple and red sun was rising into the sky!

Thunder and fire intertwined!

Lin Ming thrust out his spear. Suddenly, all the sounds of the world vanished, and the surrounding space twisted.

The old man's face was colored with fear; a dual thunder and fire attack!?

It was too late to run. The old man fiercely clenched his teeth, overdrawing his life essence to forcefully stimulate the true essence in his body to the max.

"72 Swords Absolute Killing Array!!"

This barrage of 72 sword energies was the old man's strongest move. Once he used it, he would be placed in an incomparably weak position for a short period of time. Because of this, he didn't dare to use it rashly. But now he had no other choice left to him. That shining red and purple power of thunder and fire on the spear was too terrifying to do otherwise.

Bang!

The spear light and sword energies struck each other. A horrifying true essence current billowed forth, and all the sword energies were completely shattered!

"What!?"

The old man had expected Lin Ming's strike to be terrifying, but he never imagined that the strongest final blow he had overdrawn his life to use would be destroyed so easily!

....

....

On the outskirts of Green Mulberry City, the beast tide was still coming. The yellow-clothed youth from the Moon Seizing Sect had already killed thousands of vicious beasts, and the blood of countless vicious beasts rained down on the land, dying the earth around him a deep crimson red.

Every sword strike would release dozens of sword energies, and every sword energy was able to take a vicious beast's life. With a single sword slash, this yellow-clothed youth was able to massacre dozens of vicious beasts. If it wasn't for the fact that only a few vicious beasts were left around the yellow-clothed youth at the moment, he would have killed even more.

As for third-level vicious beasts, they were nothing but paper in front of the yellow-clothed youth, and equally as fragile. He was able to kill them with a single sword; there wasn't even a need to stop.

A fourth-level vicious beast would take at most 10 breaths of time to kill. The two Iron-armor Lizards that had attacked the yellow-clothed youth were also equally killed by him!

What kind of abnormal and terrifying strength was this?

Zhuang Fan, Lin Wanshan, and everyone else watching could only sigh in lamentation; martial artists from large sects were just too formidable.

Zhuang Fan and Lin Wanshan who had just stepped into the Pulse Condensation period thought this, and the common mortal soldiers were also stunned. To them, this yellow-clothed youth was just like a war god.

The yellow-clothed youth enjoyed this feeling very much. When he had been at the Moon Seizing Sect, he was only an inner court disciple, and had broken through to the Houtian realm when he was 26 years old. The result could only be considered the most average within the sect. There were just too many geniuses and top-tier talents pressing down on him, making him feel that his existence was weak.

Over the years, the yellow-clothed youth could be considered invisible. But now, he unveiled his power in front of so many people, making him the rising star of this battlefield. This made him extremely happy; even the true essence in his body seemed to be flowing much smoothly than before.

Not just that, but most importantly, he would soon capture the heart of his talented junior-apprentice sister. As long as he was able to obtain her, he would have enough Heaven Opening Pills to attack the Xiantian bottleneck!

He had to thank the South Sea Demon Region. If it wasn’t for them destroying the Moon Seizing Sect, he would never have had this opportunity. Most likely, he would never have had a chance to obtain a Heaven Opening Pill either.

The more the yellow-clothed youth killed, the more vibrant and excited he became. He had originally been hesitant about going to battle, but now he hoped that he could continue fighting for a long time.

But at this moment, he suddenly heard a loud explosion, and the land itself resounded with a deafening thunderclap, He turned his head to a distant spot in the beast tide, his eyes wide with amazement. Purple thunder flashed into the sky, impacting the heavens. Between it, a giant pillar of red flame also ascended upwards. It was as if heavenly tribulation had come down to the world!

‘Mm? What’s going on?’

Although the yellow-clothed youth was extremely far from where it happened, he could still feel the terrifying energy contained in that explosion.

A peak Houtian thunder-attribute martial artist and a peak Houtian fire-attribute martial artist were fighting?

How could that be possible? In this small land, why would two great elders be fighting here?

The yellow-clothed youth hesitated, thinking he would go take a look. But then, those terrifying fluctuations of energy suddenly stopped, interrupted, as if they had been completely sealed off.

‘It’s gone?’

“Senior-apprentice Brother, what was that a moment ago?” The voice of the white-clothed girl’s true essence sound transmission resounded in the yellow-clothed youth’s ears.

The yellow-clothed youth was stunned. He immediately withdrew the shocked expression on his face and replaced it with a casual tone, saying, “Eh, probably some heavenly thunder.”

“Heavenly thunder?”

“Mm.” The yellow-clothed youth calmly analyzed and explained the situation, “If that terrifying power of thunder continued, it would most likely be two great masters fighting.

But since it instantly vanished, it was most likely spring thunder that fell down, splitting into heavenly fire. This kind of phenomenon isn't uncommon."

"But Senior-apprentice Brother… look at the sky."

"Mm?"

The yellow-clothed youth suddenly looked up, and then big beads of sweat began to immediately form on his forehead. Above him, the bright moon was shining in the sky like a silver plate, and the entire night was free of clouds, the stars shining brightly.

In this weather, how could there possibly be thunder?

………………………………

Ten miles away, a black-clothed man was kneeling on the ground, barely propping himself up with his sword. Half of his body was covered in soot and another half of his body's clothes were burnt away. The flexible armor underneath his clothes was fragmented, and his chest, stomach, arms, and legs dripped with fresh red blood.

This man was Bi Luo. Bi Luo had just fallen from the sky, and his illusion technique had been automatically dispelled, reverting from the appearance of an old man into his true self.

If it wasn't for him using a self-defensive ice armor bead at the last moment, he would have been severely wounded to the point of losing every bit of combat strength he had left. If that happened, his fate could be imagined.

"Martial House Master Bi, did your sword strike from a moment ago overspend your true essence, thus causing you to be unable to support your illusion, revealing your true self?" Lin Ming asked the severely wounded Bi Luo, a faint smile crossing his face.

Lin Ming didn't use the full strength of Thunderfire Annihilation, only using one with 40% strength.

This was a technique that Lin Ming had slowly and thoroughly researched, then mastered after spending a month in Ancestor Chi Yan's mountain range.

The complete and full version of Thunderfire Annihilation was very slow, it had a long activation time. It also consumed a great deal of strength. Not just that, but with Lin Ming's current cultivation, simultaneously controlling a low-grade earth-step Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder and medium-grade human-step Earthcore Crimson Flame was impossible.

If he rashly used the complete Thunderfire Annihilation, he might not be able to control the power, and would probably kill himself in the explosion he created.

"You..." Bi Luo's eyes were filled with disbelief as he stared at Lin Ming. Lin Ming's current strength had completely surpassed the scope of his understanding. This was a strength that was impossible for a 16 year old youth to have.

"Hahahahaha!" Bi Luo suddenly smiled, laughing with unbridled impunity.

"Lin Ming, you think that you can kill me today? I may not be your match, but if I wish to leave, you cannot stop me! You have a high-grade human-step Thunder Soul on your body? If I spread this news, then how many Xiantian masters will take an interest in you?" An evil and vengeful smile curved on Bi Luo's face.

Lin Ming blankly looked at Bi Luo, not seeming to care for his words.

"Normally, even if someone were interested in you, you could still stay in the sect and no one would dare to touch you. But now... Divine Phoenix Island and the South Sea Demon Region are about to go to war. In such chaos, do you really think you can always be protected?

"Lin Ming, you are too confident in yourself. But then again, geniuses are always so confident, that is why they die so easily! You thought you could lure me out by hiding your strength? You think you can kill me? Since I dared to kill you, then I naturally have ways to save my own life. You... you cannot stop me!"

“You think I can’t stop you?” The corners of Lin Ming’s lips lifted in a faint smile, revealing a thoughtful expression.

Chapter 328 – No Path to Heaven, No Door to Earth

Chapter 328 – No Path to Heaven, No Door to Earth

…

…

…

"You think I can't stop you?" The corners of Lin Ming's lips lifted in a faint smile, revealing a thoughtful expression.

Seeing Lin Ming's smile, Bi Luo's heart inexplicably went cold. This boy, did he have some plan?

Bi Luo had always treasured his own life beyond all else. He was an expert in many different kinds of escaping techniques, and the Mirage Faction was originally a sect that specialized in camouflage and escape.

Bi Luo was absolutely confident in his own methods and techniques to escape, unless he ran into a Xiantian realm powerhouse. Otherwise, even if he was up against a top half-step Houtian master, he had faith he would be able to run away.

"Lin Ming, you are still so confident! Then why don't you try and stop me!"

As Bi Luo spoke, his entire body began to shake, and his complexion instantly turned bone-white. A mass of bloody fog spurted from his body, soaring around him in the wind. Bi Luo's body turned into a flash of blood-colored light as he soared like an arrow in the opposite direction, his speed reaching an inconceivable degree!

Illusionary Blood Escape Technique!

The Illusionary Blood Escape Technique was a skill that required one to damage one's blood essence and life. They could use this escaping technique to multiply their speed by 10 for a short period of time. This was a speed that not even a Xiantian realm martial artist would be able to catch up to, even if they tried their hardest.

This was also the reason that Bi Luo was so confident in himself. Of course, he could only maintain this extreme speed for an incense stick of time, but that was more than enough time to lose Lin Ming or any Houtian master. He could look for a safe place to hide and restore himself.

Using the Illusionary Blood Escape Technique was the final reserve move of an illusionist. After using it, it would be difficult to recover to one's peak condition even in half a year. Bi Luo was compelled to do this; otherwise, he would never have used such a drastic technique.

You want to run away?

Lin Ming sneered, and didn't even move or attack. In truth, he really didn't have time to attack – Bi Luo was that quick.

The air trembled, wind whistled; Bi Luo was like a bloody meteor that impacted into the horizon.

Peng!!!

There was a muffled smashing sound as the blood fog surrounding Bi Luo suddenly smacked into an invisible barrier. In that instant, his flesh and blood burst apart, and fresh red blood spewed into the sky.

This was just like an overly ripe tomato that was thrown against a glass window with full force; it was directly turned to pulp.

The spatial light screen suddenly shook fiercely for a brief moment, then… the blood-covered Bi Luo, who looked like a lump of rotten meat, slowly slid down from the air.

From start to finish, Lin Ming hadn't even moved.

Bi Luo's entire body was covered in blood, almost every single bone of his body had been shattered. "I… I…"

As soon as Bi Luo opened his big mouth, blood and chunks of organs poured up from within him like a geyser.

He stretched out his broken and trembling arm; he was soaked in blood, his face full of unwillingness and utter disbelief.

"Martial House Master Bi, you spent your blood essence to reach an extreme speed, and yet you actually ran so brutally into an invisible dream world enchantment that you couldn't see. In the mortal commoner world, there is a saying where people kill themselves by smashing their heads against a wall. But I never expected that it was the same for martial artists…" As Lin Ming drawled on, Bi Luo was angry to the point of almost fainting.

"When you were struck by my Thunderfire Annihilation, I had already laid down a dream world enchantment all around us. I was told that this enchantment could only be broken by a Xiantian master, and would isolate all information within and without. Did Martial House Master Bi panic and just flee anywhere, not even noticing the enchantment that was laid down?"

With Bi Luo's cultivation, if he was even the least bit alert, he would have been able to discover the energy fluctuations of the enchantment world. It could only be said that he was too frightened of Lin Ming, and had panicked in trying to escape.

"En… enchantment world…" Bi Luo's lips trembled as he watched Lin Ming's Purple Comet Spear come closer and closer, his face incomparably pale. When a man who was afraid of death approached their time of death, they would fear even more. "Lin Ming… please… don't kill me. I am Sky Fortune Kingdom's Seven Profound Martial House Deputy

House Master. For better or for worse, I am still your teacher. In the future you will become a Peerless Emperor. For a worthless person like me, don't gain the title of being a person who killed their teacher…"

Lin Ming paused, somewhat surprised. Then he began to laugh. This was absolutely the most mentally challenged joke he had heard in his life. "You think you are my teacher? Haha… I have seen shameless people, but never one as shameless as you. You used your illusions to deceive me into walking in a trap; when have you ever once thought of me as your student?"

"I was wrong. I was possessed by my own obsessions. If you let me live, I can help you testify against Ouyang Boyan and reveal everything. With your current status, as long as you can prove that Ouyang Boyan has tried to harm you, then Shi Zongtian will absolutely help you deal with Ouyang Boyan… he might even kill him!" Before Bi Luo died, his mind suddenly sobered, and everything became clear. This was the final straw he had left to grasp.

He was only an unimportant figure. Ouyang Boyan was Lin Ming's true threat. In Bi Luo's mind, it was impossible for Lin Ming's power to surpass Ouyang Boyan in a short time.

"Testify against Ouyang Boyan?" Lin Ming hesitated, thinking about it. This didn't sound like a horrible plan.

"…Yes, yes! As long as I testify and lay the blame on him, even if there is no evidence, Shi Zongtian will be suspicious of him. As long as he suspects Ouyang Boyan, he will send people to monitor him. When that time comes…"

It was like the drowning Bi Luo had finally found a piece of driftwood. He clung to it, speaking more and more excitedly, trying to straighten himself on the ground. But at this time, a cold bright light suddenly flashed; the Purple Comet Spear instantly pierced through Bi Luo's throat.

The spear went in, and the spear went out; it was all finished in a moment, as if nothing had happened except a gaping crimson hole had appeared in Bi Luo's neck…

Bi Luo's eyes looked as if he had lost his spirit. He reached out his hand, as if he were trying to grab something. "...Why..." Because his vocal cords had been torn, Bi Luo's voice was completely hoarse.

"I apologize, but I don't believe you. And most importantly... if I don't kill you here, my thoughts won't be clear." Lin Ming indifferently said as he withdrew his Purple Comet Spear.

"Thoughts... won't be... clear... because of... this... haha..." Bi Luo laughed, and then tumbled onto the floor, lifeless.

Although Lin Ming knew that if he listened to Bi Luo's words, he might have a 70 to 80% chance of resolving the crisis caused by Ouyang Boyan, Bi Luo was someone who held a grudge against him, and Bi Luo was also someone that Lin Ming was disgusted with. Lin Ming's martial arts path was to act in accordance with his thoughts and his nature. He didn't want to endure Bi Luo's miserable life continuing in this world just because he was afraid of potential dangers.

And if Bi Luo really were to testify against Ouyang Boyan in the future, he would make Lin Ming take an oath on his heart of martial artist that Lin Ming wouldn't kill him later.

Lin Ming would not compromise like that with a villain.

Moreover, Lin Ming had a crazy plan in his mind. He wanted to kill Ouyang Boyan and test out the hypothesis he had.

Lin Ming looked at Bi Luo's corpse, then took out a dagger from his spatial ring. He cut out some of Bi Luo's blood essence and tried to have the Magic Cube absorb it. The result was disappointing. It was as if after the second time the Magic Cube had opened, it had lost all interest in a Houtian master's blood essence.

Bi Luo was the second Houtian master that Lin Ming had killed. He was able to confirm that a Houtian master's blood essence was no longer useful to the Magic Cube.

“My guess isn’t wrong, I just don’t know if a Xiantian master’s blood essence can open the Magic Cube again…” Lin Ming muttered to himself.

After he killed Ouyang Boyan and took his blood essence, he would try to open the Magic Cube again…

This was Lin Ming’s plan.

The Magic Cube was from the Realm of the Gods. In the Realm of the Gods, Houtian masters and Xiantian masters were the same as ants. If the Magic Cube was a divine object that countless Supreme Elders would fight over, how could it be content with the blood essence of a mere Houtian master?

Maybe only blood essence on the level of the reverse scale blood could arouse the Magic Cube’s interest?

Lin Ming still remembered when he had first absorbed the reverse scale blood. At that time, his cultivation was insufficient, and Yan Mo’s intention was to seal the reverse scale blood in his body and wait for his cultivation to reach a sufficient level, then slowly absorb it.

As soon as the reverse scale blood had entered Lin Ming’s body, the Magic Cube had become restless, sending out a strong suppressive power and nearly taking the reverse scale blood from Lin Ming’s hands.

When the reverse scale blood had almost been swallowed by the Magic Cube, it had panicked and decided it would prefer to fuse with Lin Ming.

After his accident, the Magic Cube had actually stopped trying to absorb the reverse scale blood, but instead helped Lin Ming fuse with the reverse scale blood by its own initiative.

Because of this, Lin Ming was able to reach a conclusion.

The Magic Cube was intelligent, and was not some dead object.

Then Lin Ming had a faint guess. What the Magic Cube wanted was not the blood essence of a Houtian master, Xiantian master, or even a Revolving Core master; it couldn't take a liking to the blood essence of such low-level existences. What it wanted was the blood essence of a true powerhouse; for instance, Supreme Elders from the Realm of the Gods.

The reason it had absorbed a Houtian master's blood essence was only to send a signal – that it needed blood essence!

But for what reason was it absorbing blood essence?

Lin Ming always thought that the Magic Cube had a somewhat strange nature.

When it was in its own world, it had swallowed the souls of so many Supreme Elders from the Realm of the Gods, causing a catastrophic calamity within the Realm of the Gods. Now that it was in Lin Ming's hands, it began to absorb blood!

Eat souls!

Absorb blood!

These were concepts only found within the cultivation methods of demonic beings. Was it possible that the person who created the Magic Cube was a Demon God?

Lin Ming was not opposed to demonic ways. Any strength – as long as it was powerful – could be used by him as long as it didn't betray his own consciousness.

After there weren't any results for a long time, Lin Ming put away Bi Luo's corpse and quickly returned to the frontline of the army compound.

After he made his way back, Lin Ming found that not only had the beast tide not stopped yet, but it was becoming increasingly violent and dangerous. More and more high-grade vicious beasts were joining the fray, pouring in!

"Fourth-level vicious beasts, and also two of them?" Lin Ming furrowed his eyebrows. If fourth-level vicious beasts kept appearing, sooner or later fifth-level vicious beasts would appear!

Even if it were Lin Ming, dealing with a fifth-level vicious beast would be extremely difficult!

"This is a bit troublesome…" Lin Ming's complexion became solemn.

These weren't just Lin Ming's thoughts, but also the thoughts of all the high-level characters in Green Mulberry City. The waves of vicious beasts this night was much more terrifying than during the day. More and more vicious beasts appeared; over half the army had become casualties.

This was because of the support from the yellow-clothed youth. Otherwise, the beast tide would have already broken into the city.

"This Lin Ming, the city is almost broken into, so where did he go? If he can't be counted on in a critical moment, he might as well be an outsider!"

Zhu Ping put on a haughty air and coldly humphed. Out of all the people present, he was the only one who knew of Bi Luo, and he was also extremely anxious. He didn't know if Bi Luo had succeeded in killing Lin Ming. If he was successful, then why hadn't he come back? To defend Green Mulberry City, he was also counting on Bi Luo's strength.

Chapter 329 – The Feeling of Being Ignored

Chapter 329 – The Feeling of Being Ignored

…

…

…

Hearing Zhu Ping's words that were dripping with irony, Lin Wanshan's complexion became extremely unsightly. "Zhu Ping, what are you trying to say? Didn't Lin Ming go out to fight the enemy?"

"I didn't say that. I'm only saying what I know. From the very start, he ran into the pack of beasts, and now there isn't even his shadow. If it wasn't for that yellow-clothed knight, our army might have already been broken through."

As Zhu Ping spoke here, he glanced at Shi Linkai with open contempt. Originally, Shi Linkai had wanted to throw the yellow-clothed youth, and matters had almost boiled down to a fight. As for Zhu Ping, he was very respectful and managed to have the yellow-clothed youth stay in Green Mulberry City. If it wasn't for his actions, who knows what would have happened in today's battle.

Shi Linkai was just retreating from the battlefield to take a rest when he caught wind of Zhu Ping's words. His face turned red as he said, "Surname Zhu, what are you trying to say!?"

"What? Clan Leader Shi thinks differently? If you fought with that yellow-clothed knight, do you think you could have won?"

Shi Linkai paused, he didn't have anything he could say. If he really did fight with that yellow-clothed youth, he would have been beaten up, maybe even killed.

As several people were speaking, the yellow-clothed youth had just engaged with two fourth-level vicious beasts.

They were two Double-headed Corrupt Wind Wolves, fourth-level vicious beasts that had excellent speed. They attacked the yellow-clothed youth from the right and the left, but were completely not the yellow-clothed youth's match. In just a few sword slashes, the Double-headed Corrupt Wind Wolves turned into puddles of blood.

"Fierce!"

Lin Wanshan couldn't help but acknowledge that this yellow-clothed youth was truly strong. He had persisted in this one-sided massacre for so long, had killed thousands of vicious beasts, and didn't seem to be running low on true essence.

But as for him, Zhuang Fan, Shi Linkai, and the others, they had fought for only a quarter of the time and their true essence was exhausted. They had to fall back to the army camp and recover their strength.

Together, the three of them only managed to kill two or three hundred vicious beasts, a mere fraction of what the yellow-clothed youth killed. The disparity between them was just too great.

As Lin Wanshan's eyes left the yellow-clothed youth, he looked over to where Lin Ming had disappeared, his heart secretly worrying. Just where did Lin Ming go? Only two or three quarters of an hour had passed, but he hadn't even heard from Lin Ming since then. There was also that heavenly thunder that had flashed a moment ago; why would there be thunder in such a clear night sky?

Seeing Lin Wanshan's anxious appearance, Zhuang Fan said, "Old Lin, don't worry, everything should be fine." Because the Zhuang Family and the Lin Family often cooperated in business, the two families had good relations with each other.

Shi Linkai added, “Hero Lin is strong so there isn’t anything to worry about. Even if he encounters several fourth-level vicious beasts, they are not his match. And with Hero Lin’s speed, he can retreat whenever he wants, he is much quicker than these vicious beasts.”

Hearing several people talk, Zhu Ping sneered in his heart. Fourth-level vicious beast? What if he encountered fourth-level vicious beasts, and then was sneak attacked by a master?

That old man’s strength had reached the late Houtian realm. It wasn’t wrong that Lin Ming was a master from a sect, but that old man was too!

Not just that, but the old man was proficient in sneak attacks and concealment techniques. With these skills – and it being a late Houtian master against a boy at the middle Pulse Condensation period – Lin Ming would surely die in the middle of such chaotic combat. Even if Lin Ming had hidden strength, he still wouldn’t be able to block such a strike!

Although he hadn’t known the old man for very long, Zhu Ping could feel that the old man acted in a very safe and cautious manner. He would not do something daring. If the old man said he had a 70 or 80% chance of success, then he wouldn’t fail!

Thinking that Lin Ming had died tonight, Zhu Ping was incomparable excited. ‘Just wait, your Lin Family’s good luck is about to come to an end. As soon as Lin Ming dies and the Tenth Prince ascends the throne, the Zhu Family will marry another woman to the Tenth Prince as the empress. Then, my Zhu Family will rise into the top three families of the Sky Fortune Kingdom. But as for your Lin Ming, they will become history!’

Thinking of the Zhu Family’s endlessly bright and magnificent future, Zhu Ping’s fantasies became a bit carried away. He couldn’t help but gloat as he said, “Young Hero Lin is certainly fast, but sometimes on the battlefield things don’t go as planned. If there is any mistake, death wouldn’t be too surprising. A virtuous and kind man like Young Hero Lin will certainly be blessed by the heavens, so he should be safe. But in case anything happens, Brother Wanshan should be prepared…”

Lin Wanshan was furious. His was anger was about to blow up when suddenly, a loud and cold "humph" resounded in the air, like a muffled cry of thunder in the ears of everyone nearby. When Zhu Ping heard this sound, he felt his entire body shake, his face paling and being forced to take several steps back. The blood in his body violently surged, and he was almost injured.

"Army Commander Zhu, I'm sorry to disappoint you."

In the army compound, a figure emerged from the shadows, his hand holding a long purple spear. This shadow was Lin Ming.

In that instant, all the blood drained from Zhu Ping's face!

No… impossible… didn't that old man say he was going to kill Lin Ming?

Did that mean that Lin Ming had instead killed that old man?

No, this was impossible, absolutely impossible! That old man's strength had reached the late Houtian realm, and he was also a martial artist from a sect. Looking back, it could be said that even if Lin Ming defeated that old man, it was impossible for him not to be wounded.

Where did the old man go? Listening to the intent behind Lin Ming's words, he had already deduced what was happening!

Seeing Zhu Ping's frightened and panicked expression, Lin Ming faintly smiled as he said, "Army Command Zhu, you seem to be very nervous about me coming back safely. Do I look scarier than some vicious beast?"

Lin Ming smiled, but his eyes were cold and pitiless, with a thick murderous intent seeping out. Zhu Ping felt a chill freeze his heart. Before, Lin Ming had always given the impression of a mediocre boy that was harmless. In fact, he had even seemed like he would be easy to bully. This was the impression that Lin Ming had developed in his 15 years of growing up in Green Mulberry City. This image had been set in the minds of many for a long time, and was difficult to change.

Although Zhu Ping was well aware of Lin Ming's current status, with the support of the old man, he had always subconsciously thought of Lin Ming as a boy with half a foot in the grave. He spoke to Lin Ming respectfully, but in his heart he wasn't afraid of him.

But now, facing Lin Ming's merciless eyes, Zhu Ping felt as if his very soul had been penetrated. An invisible suppressive force pressed down on him, causing him to break out in a cold sweat!

Now, he was horrified to see that Lin Ming was no longer that green and naïve boy that was easy to bully, but instead a super master that held the life and death of mortals in his hands!

Zhu Ping gulped, forced a smile and said, "Young Hero Lin, please don't joke with me… since Young Hero Lin has come back safely, I am of course incomparably happy. With Young Hero Lin here, defending Green Mulberry City will be much easier."

"Oh? So it's like this? Haha…" Lin Ming was still brightly smiling, but that smiling face caused Zhu Ping to shiver; it was a pressure from pure and utter domination of strength.

'Calm down… calm down…' Zhu Ping repeated to himself. Even if that old man's sneak attack failed, Lin Ming wouldn't necessarily know that he was related to him. At best, he would only have a guess. There was no evidence.

Zhu Ping comforted himself by thinking this. What he didn't realize – or what he didn't want to realize – was that things such as evidence, rules, laws, or things like that only applied when two individuals were of similar status. For instance, if a normal person was accusing another person, or a high level sect martial artist was accusing another high level sect martial artist.

For those with such an enormous gap in status, for instance, between Lin Ming and Zhu Ping, one didn't even need evidence. Lin Ming's words would become evidence; his words would become the rules, his words would become the law!

At this moment, Lin Ming suddenly heard a pleasant voice, "Perhaps that is Young Hero Lin Ming? My name is Lan Yi, I would like to greet you."

Lin Ming turned his head and saw that the one speaking was the white-clothed girl from the Moon Seizing Sect.

After she came to Green Mulberry City she had bathed, and had already changed into a loose dress made from snow silk. She had the full and mature figure of a beauty, and her clothes were carefully cut close to the body, accentuating her graceful and slim waist. She appeared delicate and exquisite; it was easy to fall into a daydream looking at her.

Lan Yi?

Lin Ming had a very accurate and good memory. He thought back for a moment and didn't recall this person's name on the name lists of the joint talent training program.

An 18 or 19 year old girl that reached the peak Pulse Condensation period and wasn't on the joint talent training program? Or, was she hiding her real name?

Lin Ming was only casually wondering. He politely greeted her, "So it's Miss Lan. It's nice to meet you."

Lan Yi returned a faint smile and said, "Young Hero Lin, a moment ago, southeast of here there was a strike of heavenly thunder that appeared. I wonder if Young Hero Lin witnessed it?"

As Lan Yi asked, her beautiful eyes were wide. When the join talent training program was first announced, she hadn't gone to the Seven Profound Valleys. But, she had heard many rumors of Lin Ming. She had heard that he was a 16 year old that had just reached the early Pulse Condensation period, but was actually able to defeat multiple peak Pulse Condensation period geniuses. It was also said that Lin Ming was a thunder-attribute martial artist with an astonishingly high fusion compatibility, and controlled a surpassingly mighty thunder energy weapon.

This youth in front of her was also named Lin Ming, and his age appeared to be around 16 too. However, his cultivation was at the middle Pulse Condensation period, just a bit higher than the Seven Profound Valleys' Lin Ming. But, if Lin Ming had recently broken through, this would also make sense.

This caused an inevitable association in Lan Yi's mind. Was that terrifying heavenly thunder that occurred a moment ago caused by Lin Ming? The chief disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys, and the only heaven-step talent chosen by Divine Phoenix Island? That Lin Ming?

She had just come to this city, but had encountered the legendary top talent of the 19 third grade sects. The circumstances of this situation were just too bizarre.

Lan Yi didn't have high hopes that this was true, she was only thinking that it might be possible. If he really was Lin Ming… then he might be able to help her fulfill her wish…

Thinking this, Lan Yi widened her smile, trying to seem friendlier. But she had never done these things before, so it was a bit awkward for her.

Lin Ming saw Lan Yi's supposedly sweet smile and was a bit doubtful. His impression of the white-clothed girl was that she had a very cold and frigid personality. Of course, this was reasonable. Just a few days ago her entire sect was destroyed, along with everyone else she knew, so she would absolutely be in a horrible mood. But why was she suddenly smiling so brightly at him?

Lin Ming nodded and said, "I saw the heavenly thunder. Why? Does Miss Lan think that a rare heavenly treasure fell down to the world?"

…….

As Lin Ming was speaking, the yellow-clothed youth suddenly released a stunning sword technique on the battlefield, killing another Two-headed Corrupt Wind Wolf. The soldiers on the field let loose thunderous cheers.

The yellow-clothed youth liked this feeling very much. He had grown up within the Moon Seizing Sect, and had never felt like he existed, let alone enjoyed so many cheers from people.

He turned back to glance at the army compound, his eyes filled with expectation. The yellow-clothed youth wanted to see his little junior-apprentice sister watching him instantly slay the fourth-level vicious beast with his sword in a grand and majestic fashion. However, he happened to see Lan Yi standing near Lin Ming, a warm and sweet smile spreading across her face, as if she were having happy conversation with him.

She didn’t even spare him a glance…

Chapter 330 – Fight

Chapter 330 – Fight

…

…

…

Seeing this, the yellow-clothed youth's heart burned with a raging anger!

Because of the tragedy of her sect being destroyed, there hadn't been times these days when Lan Yi smiled. Even though he flattered and pleased her in every way possible, taking meticulous care of her, the white-clothed girl rarely responded. In the first two days, she hadn't even spoken more than a few words, only having a heartbroken expression.

But now, she was actually smiling so brightly, and also towards another youth who was around her age.

How could the yellow-clothed youth possibly bear this?

He had endured so much suffering and hardship on the way, exhausting himself to take care of her, only to have a few words uttered towards him. And yet this smelly little boy sweet talked her for a little bit and the white-clothed girl was already smiling so happily!

The yellow-clothed youth's lungs exploded with rage.

He never imagined that it was Lan Yi who looked for Lin Ming of her own initiative; he only thought that Lin Ming was cozying up to Lan Yi with his sweet nothings.

Although there hadn't been much progress in their relationship, the yellow-clothed youth already considered the white-clothed girl as his exclusive woman. This wasn't just from the tragic story of a man’s 20 plus years of life, or from the fact that he possessed a strong desire to possess her that was a twisted incarnation of his thoughts of wanting to subtly take revenge for all those years that she had been an irreproachable goddess. It was because the white-clothed girl had many Heaven Opening Pills on her. Those Heaven Opening Pills were his only hope to break through to the Xiantian realm!

“Motherf*cker! I’m killing all these vicious beasts on the battlefield, and not only is that coward not doing anything, but he’s actually moving on my girl from behind!”

The yellow-clothed youth was raging. He felt like he had been taken for a fool. This city that he was saving from the vicious beast horde was that boy’s, and not only was he not doing anything, but he was also moving on his woman. At that moment, all of his murderous thoughts converged onto Lin Ming. The difference in attitude that Lan Yi treated Lin Ming with was like a thorn that pierced his heart. If he didn’t cripple Lin Ming, he would never be able to swallow this insult.

“Boy, just you wait for me!”

The yellow-clothed youth turned around and rapidly returned to the army camp.

………………………………

In the army camp, Lan Yi was still talking to Lin Ming. Lan Yi didn’t know much about Lin Ming to begin with, so she made a few simple insinuations to see if this boy in front of her was the Lin Ming from the Seven Profound Valleys.

This sort of matter was impolite to directly ask. Otherwise, Lin Ming might form an idea that she was trying get close to him because she had some hidden purpose in mind. Once that happened, it would be easy for him to despise her.

Lan Yi was well aware of the difference in status between her and Lin Ming. Not to mention that her Moon Seizing Sect had already been destroyed, but even if the Moon Seizing Sect was still here, the difference between her and Lin Ming was just too far.

According to rumors, if Lin Ming didn't encounter some tragedy, he would one day step into the Revolving Core realm. But as for Lan Yi, it was already nearly impossible for her to reach the extreme xiantian realm. If things turned out well for her in the future, she might reach the middle Xiantian realm, and if she very lucky, she might reach the late Xiantian realm.

If the Moon Seizing Sect weren't destroyed, Lan Yi would have thought this quite satisfactory.

But several days ago, she saw with her own eyes all of her friends, family and everyone else close to her in the Moon Seizing Sect slaughtered in a one-sided bloodbath. As she saw everyone she held dear dying around her, and as she listened to the last dying wish of her master, hatred had already engraved itself deeply into her heart!

At that time, she completely hated herself. She hated that she was weak. She hated that in front of a Revolving Core master, she was nothing but an ant, unable to do anything.

This sort of loathing that originated from her powerlessness caused her to have an intense desire for power. She wished to break through to the Revolving Core realm, and longed for the day that she could unite all the masters of the South Horizon Region to exterminate the South Sea Demon Region. She would ruin the evil ones, exterminate the demons, and take revenge for her Moon Seizing Sect – and for her master and countless fellow disciples that died!

Now, Lan Yi had the resources and final hope that her master had given her before telling her to escape from the Moon Seizing Sect. She was confused about what path to take. She didn't dare to flee to other sects, afraid that they would covet the precious resources that she had.

However, if she didn't go to a sect, it would be difficult for her to become stronger, much less break through to the Revolving Core realm.

At this time, Lan Yi had a thought of which sect she should go to – Divine Phoenix Island.

At Divine Phoenix Island, 90% of the disciples were women, and the disciples had a relatively good reputation for conduct. Not only that, but there were countless masters and top cultivation methods, inheritances, and abundant resources. If she could enter Divine Phoenix Island, then that would be the best possible outcome.

But, Lan Yi was only a genius when placed in a low third-grade sect like the Moon Seizing Sect. As for a top fourth-grade sect like Divine Phoenix Island, she would only be the most basic and generic of disciples. It was even likely that she wouldn't be able to enter. And even if she did manage to enter with luck, she would be an outer court disciple at best. It would be impossible for her to come into contact with the core cultivation methods, and she would waste her life.

In that situation, Lan Yi was also confused about what to do.

Until now, when she met a boy that she suspected was Lin Ming.

Lan Yi knew that Divine Phoenix Island placed a great deal of value on Lin Ming, and there was possibly even some unknown relation between him and Divine Phoenix Island's Saintess, Mu Qianyu.

What kind of existence was Mu Qianyu?

She was the future leader of Divine Phoenix Island. She was a monstrous talent that stepped into the Xiantian realm at only 22 years of age. And within several years, she might break into the Revolving Core realm and become a top master!

In front of someone like Mu Qianyu, all of the so-called talents of the 19 third-grade sects were just a joke.

If Mu Qianyu could put in a few good words of recommendation for her, even if it were only casual, she could be promoted from an outer court disciple to an inner court disciple. This was just a one word difference, but the treatment was vastly different. Lan Yi didn't want the resources of Divine Phoenix Island such as pills or true essence stones. What she wanted were the legacy cultivation methods.

To rely on the mediocre cultivation methods of the Moon Seizing Sect to break through to the Revolving Core realm was basically impossible!

Of course, Lan Yi wasn't planning on asking Lin Ming for help and offering nothing in return. She had only met Lin Ming by chance, they hardly knew each other, so why would he want to help her?

Lan Yi's thoughts were that first she would establish friendly relations with Li Ming, and then at a suitable time she would put out some of the resources from the Moon Seizing Sect as exchange, and then ask Lin Ming for help.

"Miss Lan, if there isn't anything else, I'll head back to the battlefield then."

Lin Ming didn't want to waste time talking to Lan Yi. There were too many vicious beasts, and the army was under a great deal of pressure. Every second meant that another soldier could die.

"Young Hero Lin, can you wait for a bit? My senior-apprentice brother is out at the front, he can last for a moment or two." As Lan Yi spoke these words, the yellow-clothed youth had just rushed back, and happened to hear Lan Yi's words.

'My senior-apprentice brother is out at the front, he can last for a moment or two.'

The meaning behind this was that while the yellow-clothed youth would be fighting at the front, the two of them could continue to chat.

F*ck!

The yellow-clothed youth was mad to the point of almost vomiting blood. Never in his entire life had he been so mad. He had been taken for such a fool. He had gone to fight the beast tide, yet someone wanted to take his woman?

'A mere common Pulse Condensation boy actually had thoughts on Lan Yi? What is so good about you? Are you worthy?'

‘So what if you’re a genius? This father will kill you now!’

Ka!

With harsh wind blowing, the angry yellow-clothed youth landed on the ground. He stood in front of Lin Ming, a sullen and simmering expression on his face, his lips constantly twitching.

“Boy, you have guts!”

Lin Ming tilted his head, frowning. He didn’t understand why this yellow-clothed youth had suddenly rushed towards him like a rabid dog and starting barking.

“Senior-apprentice Brother, what are you saying!”

The white-clothed girl was startled. She hurriedly ran in front of Lin Ming, blocking him. She didn’t know why the yellow-clothed youth had suddenly rushed up like he wanted a taste of Lin Ming’s spear, but with that murderous look in his eyes, he wanted to start a fight with Lin Ming.

“Junior-apprentice Sister! You… you’re protecting him?” The yellow-clothed youth tightly gripped the sword in his hand, biting his pale lips.

“Good! Very good!” The yellow-clothed youth stared at Lin Ming with hatred in his eyes. He said in a true essence sound transmission, “You are surnamed Lin? Surname Lin, let me clearly tell you now that my junior-apprentice sister is not someone that a common man like you can match up with! Now leave her alone!”

Seeing the situation rapidly devolve like this, Lan Yi was extremely nervous. She quickly sent the yellow-clothed youth a true essence sound transmission, “Senior-apprentice Brother, what are you doing? Do you know who he is?”

“Who is he!? Why would I care who he is!” The yellow-clothed youth almost went insane to the point of losing all reasoning, so why would he consider Lan Yi’s words? This boy had actually moved on his woman. Even if he was the emperor of heaven, he still wouldn't be able to stand this!

And in this trivial little mortal city, just what sort of amazing character could there be?

"I'm warning you one last time, hurry up and get away from her. Otherwise, I will have you pay a deep price!" The yellow-clothed youth used a true essence sound transmission to threaten Lin Ming again.

"Crazy idiot."

Lin Ming didn't want to bother with this rabid dog anymore and waste his time. He was also disinclined to explain the misunderstanding. It was better to say that he disdained giving an explanation. With his strength and status, why would he even want to waste his breath arguing with this yellow-clothed youth?

The beast tide was becoming increasingly fierce, and now several masters were returning to the army camp. The army would soon be unable to cope with the beast tide.

At that moment, the beast tide ripped a hole in the army's defensive wall.

Mm?

Lin Ming frowned, took out the Purple Comet Spear, and directly rushed towards the vicious beast tide.

"You want to run away?" The yellow-clothed youth sneered, raising his sword and following. He basically hadn't listened to listen to Lan Yi's words.

"Are you a turtle? You don't dare to compete with me in killing vicious beasts, and you also are too afraid to kill fourth-level vicious beasts. You only run away, are you still a man?"

The army formation was broken, and the beast tide rushed in. The death toll was rapidly increasing; where would Lin Ming have the time to bother with this yellow-clothed youth?

In the blink of an eye, all of the vicious beasts at the gap were instantly cleared away! The nearby soldiers didn't even have time to react.

After resolving the threat of Bi Luo, Lin Ming naturally had no need to hide his strength anymore.

The might of this spear move was only displayed through a casual sweep, but it actually caused Lan Yi's eyes to contract. This was a power that surpassed the limits of a Pulse Condensation period martial artist, and he could even compare with the yellow-clothed youth. At least, it was no less that his.

Lan Yi didn't even have time to think about what this meant when her face suddenly paled. She watched as the yellow-clothed youth thrust out with his sword, and over a dozen sword energies pierced towards Lin Ming's back, the wind rippling in their wake!

"Boy, you actually dare to ignore me? Take my sword!" In his apoplectic anger, the yellow-clothed youth didn't hold back. These sword energies were aimed towards Lin Ming's vital points. If they hit, it would be enough to cut Lin Ming's meridians, severely wounding him, or even crippling him!

"Shameless! Don't you even care for face!?" Lin Ming's complexion sank. Now that the beat tide was rushing in, he didn't want to fight with this yellow-clothed youth. But this yellow-clothed youth chasing him again and again caused him to lose his patience.

Bang!

A spear swept out, and azure true essence howled forth. There were only slight popping sounds as all of the sword energies of the yellow-clothed youth were shattered by Lin Ming's spear.

Chapter 331 – Sludge Monster

Chapter 331 – Sludge Monster

…

…

…

The yellow-clothed youth was shocked as he saw Lin Ming shatter all of his sword energies. This boy, he had some real skill!

He hadn’t stayed his hand in that last strike, but because he had slashed out so quickly, he hadn’t used the sword techniques and cultivation methods of the Moon Seizing Sect. The power in that last move was only 20-30% of his strongest sword technique.

“I wonder how many swords you can block? Sword Energy Transverse!”

The aura of the yellow-clothed youth suddenly changed, true essence twining around his body, becoming sharp and deadly. Murderous intent surged out from him.

The yellow-clothed youth was prepared to fight with everything he had.

Lin Ming’s expression sank. He only thought that this misunderstanding was strange and inexplicable. Even if he explained it, the explanation wouldn’t be clear. How would the yellow-clothed youth ever believe that the goddess of his heart had approached Lin Ming by her own initiative? Even if Lin Ming could prove it, this yellow-clothed youth still wouldn’t accept it.

Lin Ming flourished his spear, the power of thunder sparkling. True essence jetted into the air like fabric that was being harshly torn.

Although the yellow-clothed youth wasn't too talented, for better or for worse he was still a Houtian master from a sect. If Lin Ming wanted to end this battle quickly, he had to take it seriously. The Heretical God Force still hadn't been fully restored, but even if it was, Lin Ming wouldn't use it just for this.

As the battle between the two was about to begin, at that moment, a gigantic roar resounded throughout the entire battle field, no different than a thunderclap.

The yellow-clothed youth was startled, his heart trembling. He looked towards the depths of the beast tide and saw a vast shadow moving towards them, shaped like a hill.

The yellow-clothed youth was shocked; what was that!?

Lin Ming was also taken aback, his expression becoming solemn.

"Fifth-level vicious beast?"

A fourth-level vicious beast was already equal to a common mortal's Houtian level martial artist. As for a fifth-level vicious beast, that was equal to a common mortal's Xiantian level martial artist!

Of course, because martial artists of the common world had an unstable foundation, they had practically no chance of ever reaching the Xiantian realm. Thus, this level of strength didn't actually exist. A fifth-level vicious beast was most likely equal to a sect's peak Houtian martial artist, or even one that was a half-step into the Xiantian realm.

This was also Qin Ziya's strength.

"ROAR!"

The terrifying roar was no different to landslides and tsunamis, the entire ground shook.

When an ordinary person heard this roar, their ears became deaf and their mind shook. Many soldiers whose strength were already at the limit were almost thrown to the floor with this roar.

As a result, the formation made up of thousands of soldiers was suddenly in disarray, in a precarious situation!

In contrast, the tens of thousands of vicious beasts that heard this roar became even more ferocious, as if they had been doused in blood.

The entire battlefield was in chaos.

Zhuang Fan and Lin Wanshan's complexions changed. The situation had changed so quickly that they hadn't even had time to respond. Against a fifth-level vicious beast, what could they possibly do?

Now, Lin Ming was too busy to bother with the yellow-clothed youth anymore. If he let that fifth-level vicious beast break through the lines, the army would inevitably collapse. When that happened, Green Mulberry City would be overwhelmed in a single swoop.

He had to divert that vicious beast somehow. If Lin Ming faced that vicious beast head-on, he wasn't confident he could defeat it. Its strength was higher than his, and most importantly, the Heretical God Force that he had used to deal with Bi Luo had only been restored to about 70-80% capacity. If he used Thunder Annihilation now, he wouldn't be able to unleash its maximum power.

He had to stall for time.

Lin Ming turned and saw that the yellow-clothed youth had actually turned somewhat pale. Lin Ming laughed loudly and said, "Hm, what's wrong? Are you scared?"

The yellow-clothed youth was stunned for a moment before he furiously said, "You have the face to say I'm scared? Who do you think is the turtle from earlier? From the very start you went into hiding, and only just came back!"

Lin Ming didn't even seem to hear the yellow-clothed youth's taunt. He said, "You want to bet? Let's see who can persist against this fifth-level vicious beast for the longest, and who can damage it the most. The loser has to stay far away from Lan Yi, how about it?"

The yellow-clothed youth smiled and said, “The loser has to stay far away from Lan Yi? Haha, who do you think you are? What a toad that wishes to eat swan meat. You think you qualify to make a bet with me?”

Lin Ming indifferently said, “It doesn’t matter who qualifies, only who dares and who dares not. If you don’t want to bet, then I’ll just go myself.”

After Lin Ming finished speaking, he ignored the yellow-clothed youth and rushed out with his spear!

The yellow-clothed youth’s complexion changed. This boy actually went by himself!?

He thought that Lin Ming was deliberately needling him, trying to provoke him into doing something stupid, and didn’t have the courage to go in. He didn’t think that Lin Ming would actually do it. He could feel Lan Yi’s eyes on him from behind. It seemed as if Lan Yi already had a good impression of this boy; how could he let him show off again?

The yellow-clothed youth instantly understood Lin Ming’s plan. A fifth-level vicious beast was strong, and this massive vicious beast in front of him truly did have a terrifying strength. But, it was slow. As long as he was careful and didn’t get too close, he wouldn’t be in any danger. This boy was actually thinking of making a bet against this fifth-level vicious beast so he could look good, showing off his heroism and bravery but without placing himself in danger. This plan was truly well-crafted!

Thinking this, the yellow-clothed youth ground his teeth in anger; he had almost been fooled by this boy again!

He grasped his longsword and followed Lin Ming.

It only took a moment for Lin Ming and the yellow-clothed youth to cross five miles. After they approaching, they saw just how massive the vicious beast was. It was over 200 feet tall, and its body was a dirty ash-gray all over. Its build resembled a giant octopus, and it was covered with dozens of thick and coarse tentacles.

"Sludge Monster."

Lin Ming had seen the record of this vicious beast in the ancient story books within the Seven Profound Martial House. This beast lived in the darkest swamps of the Southern Wilderness, and was usually hidden within the thick mud of the swamps. It used its great tentacles to catch its prey. Once a martial artist was wrapped by its tentacles and dragged into the mud, it was only a matter of waiting to die.

Because the Sludge Monster stayed underground all year long, its main body was actually very slow, and an exceedingly good target!

Of course, that was only its main body. Its tentacles were extremely fast. If one assumed that it was slow and thus posed no threat, that person was truly an idiot waiting to die.

Woosh!

As Lin Ming approached, a giant tentacle slashed towards him like a whip!

Although the Sludge Monster was strong, he was still able to block a single tentacle. He displayed his movement technique and dodged, running around the Sludge Monster.

He had to stall for time so he could completely restore the Heretical God Force, rather than engage in an epic struggle with the Sludge Monster.

Behind Lin Ming, the yellow-clothed youth rushed up just in time to see this scene. "He won't even dare to attack a tentacle, and runs away from the Sludge Monster? This fellow still actually looks down on me, he is too outrageous!"

The yellow-clothed youth's teeth itched with resentment. He was already fully assured that Lin Ming was acting, and putting on a fearless appearance so he could play a hero in front of Lan Yi, when the truth was, he was actually nothing.

"If you want to act, then I'll follow you. Let's see whose acting skills are better." The yellow-clothed youth sneered. He had complete self-confidence in his strength. As for acting? Then that would look at who was stronger. Whoever was stronger would be able to display an ever greater performance!

At this moment, the wind roared, and a thick tentacle slapped towards the yellow-clothed youth!

Seeing this, the yellow-clothed youth instantly became happy. Who the real deal was would naturally be seen.

“Sword Sweeping 1000 Soldiers!”

The youth’s entire body coursed with reckless sword energy. Sword Sweeping 1000 Soldiers was his strongest move. Once he used it, it was absolutely overwhelming, able to move even mountains!

Countless sword energies bombarded the thick tentacle, causing wounds several feet deep. Green slime splashed into the sky.

Aoo!

As the Sludge Monster felt pain, it reflexively shrunk its tentacle.

The yellow-clothed youth was very satisfied with the outcome of his attack. He didn’t even have time to turn back and smile at Lan Yi when, at that moment, his expression changed.

Hu hu hu hu!

A dozen tentacles swept towards the yellow-clothed youth like a wave from all sides. He was able to repel a single tentacle, but if so many came together, could he still force them back?

The Sludge Monster had already turned all of its attention to the yellow-clothed youth. To the Sludge Monster, that wound was simply nothing. It had dozens of tentacles, and even having a few cut off didn't matter to it. Not only would it not affect its combat strength, but those severed tentacles would even regenerate.

Besieged from all sides, the yellow-clothed youth was suddenly in danger.

In comparison, only a random tentacle occasionally attacked Lin Ming. Lin Ming would never use his spear to block it, only avoiding it with his movement technique.

"This damn fellow!"

The yellow-clothed youth felt as if he had been tricked again.

'You want to make a fool of this father? No way! This father will not play with you!'

The tentacle monster's main body was moving very slowly. As long as the yellow-clothed youth was able to distance himself from its attack range, he would win the bet anyways. It simply wasn't worth entangling himself within all these weird tentacles.

Thinking this, the yellow-clothed youth turned around to run, but at this moment, he heard a true essence sound transmission in his ears, "Sorry, but it doesn't seem you'll be able to run. There's a dreamland enchantment placed outside..."

"Mm? What!?"

The yellow-clothed youth was startled. He didn't even have time to react when he felt a pain in his head; he had run into an invisible light screen!

Hold on, what was this!?

In a split-second, the yellow-clothed youth didn't even time to think before several tentacles sliced towards him from behind.

Bang!

With an explosive sound, the yellow-clothed youth barely managed to avoid the strike as the tentacles pounded against the dreamland enchantment, causing the entire enchantment to shake. Lin Ming let out a cold breath, this was a truly strong attack!

The attack from a few tentacles had already caused the dreamland enchantment to vibrate so greatly. If that Sludge Monster smashed into it with all its strength, the dreamland enchantment might even rip apart!

Although Mu Qianyu had said that the dreamland enchantment could stop any attack from a martial artist below the Xiantian realm, the Sludge Monster was not a martial artist. Its attack power was much stronger than that of a martial artist of the same level.

The yellow-clothed youth's complexion completely changed, dreamland enchantment!?

How could a Sludge Monster release a dreamland enchantment!?!? He naturally assumed that the one who laid down the dreamland enchantment was the Sludge Monster; he never thought that the one to do so was Lin Ming. In his opinion, Lin Ming didn't have the ability to lay down such a strong dreamland enchantment. Even if he had this ability, he still wouldn't close himself into it with the Sludge Monster.

"What do I do?"

The yellow-clothed youth panicked. There was nowhere to retreat to, the Sludge Monster had already locked onto him!

At this moment, Lin Ming was taking advantage of the Sludge Beast being attracted to the yellow-clothed youth. He clenched a medium-grade true essence stone, recovering his power as fast as he could. The Heretical God Force was quickly recovering.

Chapter 332 – Brilliance of Thunderfire

Chapter 332 – Brilliance of Thunderfire

…

…

…

“Brothers, while we have two masters in front dealing with the tentacle monster, we will defend against the beast tide! As long as we can last, and the two masters can kill that strange tentacle beast, we will win!” A soldier shouted out from the battlefield.

However, the soldier’s words didn’t have much effect. Anyone could see that the yellow-clothed youth and Lin Ming were in a very disadvantageous position against the Sludge Monster. After the yellow-clothed youth had been injured at the very start, he was forced into danger. As for Lin Ming, he was worse than the yellow-clothed youth, dodging around the sides and not even attacking once.

In this situation, it was already good for the yellow-clothed youth and Lin Ming to not die against the Sludge Monster, let alone kill it.

Even so, none of the soldiers retreated. Behind them was Green Mulberry City, where their parents, wives, children, and everyone they else that they loved lived. If Green Mulberry City fell, everyone within would die.

How could they even think of retreating?

Rumble rumble rumble!

Tentacles lashed out like a flurry of whips. The yellow-clothed youth was desperately dodging all of the attacks; he didn’t even have any strength to launch a full counterattack.

Occasionally, he would gasp in exhaustion and slash out with several sword energies towards the dreamland enchantment.

However, the dreamland enchantment wasn't something the yellow-clothed youth could hope to break through; his sword couldn't even cause the barrier to shake.

"Boy called Lin, I... I've already... caught its attention, quick... hurry up and attack the Sludge Monster! Otherwise we'll both die here!"

The yellow-clothed youth was thinking of escaping and having Lin Ming attack to draw the attention of the Sludge Monster. However, Lin Ming remained unmoved.

Seeing Lin Ming turn a deaf ear to his pleas and not even help just a bit, the yellow-clothed youth became angry. He rushed over to Lin Ming, intending to drag him down too, but Lin Ming was just too speedy and nimble. There was no way the yellow-clothed youth could catch him.

"Ah!!!"

The yellow-clothed youth suddenly let out a miserable cry. His leg had rubbed against some corrosive mucus, and was immediately covered in blood.

A wound of this level wasn't enough to disable him, but it made dodging even more difficult.

The yellow-clothed youth gritted his teeth and used this life and death crisis to push his body to its limits. But he knew that he simply wouldn't be able to keep this up for much longer.

At this time, Lin Ming had already poured a vast majority of the true essence in his body into the Heretical God Seed, constantly compressing it. The power of the Heretical God Seed had already been restored to 95%!

"Just hold on a bit longer."

Lin Ming looked at the shaking enchantment barriers around him, his mind in complete concentration. Although the Sludge Monster was attacking the yellow-clothed youth, every time it did so, the attack would also splash onto the dreamland enchantment, causing an enormous impact upon it.

The Sludge Monster's strength was over 100,000 jins. There was no way that the dreamland enchantment would be able to resist this sort of force for much longer.

"It's almost ready."

Lin Ming could feel that the total compression of the Heretical God Seed's power was about to be completed, but the dreamland enchantment wouldn't be able to last much longer.

The dreamland enchantment had a great practical value for Lin Ming, he didn't want to lose it like this. Just as the dreamland enchantment reached its limit, at that moment, Lin Ming waved his hand and directly stored the Dreamland Pearl away.

At this time, the Heretical God Force was fully saturated!

Peng!

The yellow-clothed youth was slapped by the Sludge Monster's tentacle. He flew backwards, spitting blood, no different than a broken ragdoll.

As the yellow-clothed youth flew back, spitting blood, the air whistling in his ears, he didn't need to look to see that the tentacles were attacking him once again. At this critical moment, the yellow-clothed youth stirred up all of the remaining strength he had, completely willing himself up with his survival instincts, fighting back the intense pain in his organs, and then rushing forwards, barely escaping the fatal blow.

He desperately shouted at Lin Ming, "If… I… if I die, then you'll die an even worse death! Hurry up and attack its eye… its weakness! Otherwise… we'll all die!"

In the turbulent wind, the yellow-clothed youth's voice was barely audible, cut off again and again. In truth, he didn't know the weakness of the Sludge Monster. Perhaps the Sludge Monster didn't even have a weakness. The yellow-clothed youth only said this because he wanted to lure Lin Ming in to attack the Sludge Monster's eye, angering it.

However, the yellow-clothed youth also knew that there was no way a timid and cowardly fellow like Lin Ming would ever attack.

But he didn't expect to see Lin Ming's spear and entire body flashing with bright sparks of thunder and flame, incomparably radiant.

Seeing this, the yellow-clothed youth was stunned, and then started chuckling to himself. This boy was finally fooled!

It seemed that the boy called Lin was finally making his move, and not only that, but it looked like his ultimate strike. With that boy as a diversion, the yellow-clothed youth might be able to survive. A moment ago, he had felt the dreamland enchantment finally vanish, or he would have hit the barrier.

As the dream world enchantment vanished, the boy called Lin impulsively rushed towards the Sludge Monster to launch his attack. This attack would inevitably attract the Sludge Monster towards him.

This was the best chance he would have to escape. The yellow-clothed youth could only hope that Lin Ming's attack was strong enough to provoke the Sludge Monster. He would have thanked Lin Ming in gratitude for giving him this opportunity to escape, but it would have been nothing but a joke. If it wasn't for Lin Ming, how would he ever have been caught in this dangerous situation? He looked forward to seeing Lin Ming die under the Sludge Monster's strike.

The yellow-clothed youth withstood the pain and displayed his highest movement technique to escape. This time, the only thing that mattered to him was escaping all of this.

What Green Mulberry City? He didn't care at all about the soldiers' lives, and even Lan Yi's life was nothing compared to this.

Wind whistled. Lin Ming opened up the Heretical God Force, the Thunder Soul and Flame Essence in his body intensely trembling.

Although everyone could see that Lin Ming was about to launch his attack, no one besides him knew just how terrifying the power of this strike would be.

True essence crazily flooded into the Heretical God Seed. The compressed power of thunder and fire was at its limits, like a dam that was about to burst open. With the Purple Comet Spear in his hand, the power of thunder and fire was enhanced to the extreme.

Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder!

Earthcore Crimson Flame!

With the Thunder Soul and Flame Essence as its source, this would be the strongest Thunderfire Annihilation. Even if Lin Ming opened up the Heretical God Force, it would be exceedingly difficult to control its power.

The spearpoint faced out. Lin Ming's entire body was twined with arcs of lightning and wreaths of fire; he directly shot towards the Sludge Monster like a blazing meteor!

Time seemed to slow down. The waving tentacles, the shouts of the soldiers, the roar of the beasts, all of this disappeared, leaving only the terrifying reverberations of thunder and fire echoing in the air.

Peng! Peng!

Two tentacles swiped at Lin Ming. But, they were instantly pierced through by Lin Ming and his spear! The green corrosive mucus was instantly burnt to nothing by the thick power of thunder and fire in the air. Lin Ming rushed towards the Sludge Monster, overwhelming, unstoppable!

Thunderfire Annihilation!

Bang–!

An ultimate power broke forth. In the night sky, it was like a purple sun had dawned. A large fissure appeared in the Sludge Monster, a massive amount of blood and viscous green liquid flowing out.

Lin Ming carried on his slaughter straight through, penetrating the Sludge Monster's body and rushing out the other side, a shower of green blood appearing in his wake!

"Houu—aa—!"

A gorgeous and shining pillar of flame and thunder pierced into the sky; the Sludge Monster roared in pain.

Flames lit the entire night sky. Countless vicious beasts were charred alive by the fire, there were innumerable casualties as vicious beasts fell to the floor.

Even the nearby yellow-clothed youth almost died. The flames' shock wave smashed into him, sending him tumbling onto the floor, his hair and clothes burnt.

At this time, he couldn't care about these things. He could only look at that raging inferno with incredulity, feeling the life-force of the Sludge Monster weakening, his heart shaking.

The Sludge Monster died?

How… what… just what had happened?

The Sludge Monster seemed to be the leader of the second tide of vicious beasts. As its corpse burnt within the fire, all of the vicious beasts stopped as if they had lost all of their courage, and stopped attacking.

Every vicious beast turned towards the Sludge Monster that was wrapped in a cloak of flame. Then, after several breaths of time, they began to retreat like an ebbing tide, running away from Green Mulberry City.

Hualalala…

Soon, all of the vicious beasts on the battlefield retreated, leaving behind only corpses.

The vicious beasts retreated?

All of Green Mulberry City's soldiers, standing among mounds of flesh and blood, their bodies exhausted and barely able to stand, could hardly believe as they watched the vicious beasts retreat.

That dreadful inferno that pierced through the heavens seemed to cast a warmth on their bodies, heating up their cold spirits.

We won?

No one could believe this as they stared at the giant hill that was the Sludge Monster. That invincible Sludge Monster had actually been killed by Lin Ming in one move.

"We won!"

"The vicious beasts have retreated!"

After a moment of silence, all of the soldiers burst out in thunderous cheers. Many people embraced each other in excitement, hot tears streaking down their faces. The tears ran down faces that were matted with dust and blood, leaving behind clear traces.

These soldiers were different from Lin Ming. After all, they were only mortal. If Green Mulberry City could not be defended, Lin Ming could freely retreat. But as for them, they did not have such a luxury. During this war, the soldiers who came were already prepared to die on this battlefield.

The vicious beast tide seemed endless. They were already at their limits, but then the Sludge Monster had appeared, and the vicious beasts grew increasingly violent, nearly overwhelming their hearts.

However, against everyone's expectations, the Sludge Monster had been utterly destroyed by Lin Ming in a single strike. After the amazing reversal that followed, they had won!

…………………………

Beside the Sludge Monster, Lin Ming knelt on the floor, propping himself up with his spear. His energy consumption had been massive; this single blow had exhausted a full 60% of his true essence.

With his current strength, even though he had opened the Heretical God Force and also had the increased power of the Purple Comet Spear, he couldn't use the full strength of Thunderfire Annihilation. He was just barely able to use 70-80% of its strength. Even so, it had still drained him of so much energy.

As Lin Ming looked at the giant pyre of flames, he took a deep breath, and pulled out a pill from his spatial ring, eating it to help restore his true essence. Although it sounded terrifying that he had killed the Sludge Monster in a single blow, this didn't mean that Lin Ming had strength equal to a sect's peak Houtian martial artist.

The Sludge Monster had a massive body, and it was also slow. In the end, it couldn't avoid attacks and became an easy target.

Lin Ming's most outstanding aspect was his attack power. Once he used Thunderfire Annihilation, its power was truly earth-shattering. But, when facing a top Houtian martial artist like Qin Ziya, he might not have the chance to do so.

Chapter 333 – Lan Yi's Request

Chapter 333 – Lan Yi's Request

…

…

…

The flames burned brightly. Lin Ming carried the Purple Comet Spear and walked towards the flames. With a wave of his hand, an invisible energy rushed forth, dividing the flames and revealing a passageway.

The Sludge Monster had already stopped struggling. There were only a few tentacles that were still roasting in the fiery heat, curling up as they burnt to ash.

With a single spear, Lin Ming slashed apart the Sludge Monster, walking directly into its body.

Chi chi chi!

Green mucus fell like rain, but it was all burnt away by flames.

A moment later, Lin Ming took out a fist-sized inner core pearl from the Sludge monster, placing it into a spatial ring.

All vicious beasts above the fourth-level had core pearls within them. Whether it was for alchemy or for countering poisons, the Sludge Monster's core pearl would be an extremely good material. Naturally, Lin Ming wouldn't leave it.

The Sludge Monster's sinews were also a good material. But the Sludge Monster had been slashed apart by Lin Ming, and had also been charred black. These sinews no longer had any value.

The flames separated into a path as Lin Ming carried his Purple Comet Spear and walked out from the blazing inferno, his spearpoint leading the way. At this time, his hair was loose, and he was covered in residual arcs of purple lightning and flame. At this moment, he looked like a peerless demon god.

The person closest to Lin Ming was the yellow-clothed youth from the Moon Seizing Sect. The yellow clothed-youth was slumped on the ground, exhausted. As he watched Lin Ming emerge from the fire, his lips twitched, and his eyes were blank like he had lost his soul.

He thought that Lin Ming was inviting death with that spear of his, but he never imagined that a single blow was able to kill the Sludge Monster…

This was a fifth-level vicious beast, whose strength was comparable to a peak Houtian martial artist. As for Lin Ming, his cultivation was only at the mere middle Pulse Condensation period!

Who was he?

The yellow-clothed youth was very clear just how terrifying it was to have this strength at this cultivation, and at such a young age!

It was impossible for him to be unknown.

At this moment, he heard a rallying cry spread through the entire army, as if it were an endless tide.

"Long live Hero Lin!"

"Long live Hero Lin!"

"Long live Hero Lin!"

"Long live Hero Lin!"

To an ordinary soldier, Lin Ming was their benefactor and also their savior. Without Lin Ming, not only would they have died, but all their family that stood behind them would have been turned to bones by the vicious beast tide.

Surname Lin… His surname was Lin…

A 16 year old genius surnamed Lin… a name suddenly popped up in the yellow-clothed youth's heart, causing him to be completely petrified. He sat on the ground like a statue, watching as Lin Ming walked past him…

The cheers continued. Lin Ming looked in the distance to see that the soldiers were all bloodied, but they were cheering in high spirits, and his mood became complex.

In this battle, the ones that had the greatest impact were the masters. But, if these soldiers hadn't used their own bodies to create a wall of flesh and blood to block off the beast tide, then no matter how strong Lin Ming was, or how many vicious beast he killed, they would have broken into Green Mulberry City and killed innocents.

In this fight, these ordinary soldiers had paid the greatest cost, but the cheers and accolades they received were the least.

He even saw a soldier who had lost his arm in battle. After a simple wrap to staunch the bleeding, this soldier used all of his weary strength to raise his right arm, saluting Lin Ming.

At this moment, Lin Ming's heart suddenly felt heavy. This was a war of mortals. In an army that was once 10,000 strong, there were now only a few thousand left. To the soldiers, being able to survive, or knowing that their families were safe, was already the best possible result.

Thinking of the culprit that was behind this entire farce – the South Sea Demon Region, Lin Ming's mind and heart filled with waves of surging hatred.

To a lofty fifth-grade sect, the lives of mortals were no different than ants.

In order to swallow Divine Phoenix Island and the South Horizon Region, and to warn the 19 third-grade sects, the South Sea Demon Region didn't hesitate for a second before setting off a terrifying beast tide that embroiled the entire Divine Phoenix Province. Because of their actions, death reigned everywhere, and countless innocent lives were lost.

Lin Ming walked towards the army camp and hadn't even arrived when he was swarmed by people. They were all being led by high level people of Green Mulberry City such as Lin Wanshan and Zhuang Fan.

That vivid image of Lin Ming killing the Sludge Monster with a single strike of his spear could be described as a miracle. The monster was the size of a hill, but was stabbed to death with a single move. Purple lightning and roaring flames had impacted the heavens; this had left a greatly humbling impact upon everyone watching.

The Salt Clan's Shi Linkai had a very ruddy complexion, red with excitement. He laughed loudly and said, "Hero Lin, you are truly a war god reincarnate!"

He was ready to let out some more praise, when he found that something didn't seem right about Lin Ming's condition.

"Hero Lin, is everything alright?"

Lin Ming waved his hand and said, "I'm good. I just need to rest for a moment."

Lin Ming had only consumed too much energy; it wasn't because he was injured by the Sludge Monster. The Sludge Monster had a great deal of corrosive mucus in its body, but most of it was burnt away by the power of thunder and fire. As for the rest, it wasn't able to melt through Lin Ming's protective true essence.

At this time, a white-clothed girl came out from the crowd. Her delicate red lips parted, and she carefully called out, "Sir Lin."

This girl was Lan Yi. She had seen all she needed in that brief moment to confirm that this was Lin Ming. Within all of the talents of the 19 third-grade sects, who could display this level of power besides Lin Ming?

In fact, according to Lan Yi's impression, Lin Ming should not have had this amount of terrifying combat strength. This was not strength that a Pulse Condensation period martial artist should have. In fact, there were even certain elders within the Moon Seizing Sect that couldn't match up. The Moon Seizing Sect was a relatively weak and small sect, and some of the outer court elders were only at the peak Houtian realm. Their attack power would never reach this level.

For a 16 year to have attack power that compared favorably to an outer court elder of the Moon Seizing Sect… Lin Ming truly deserved his title as the top talent and young genius within the 19 third-grade sects.

Lan Yi never expected that she would meet Lin Ming in such a remote mortal city. Naturally, she would not miss this rare opportunity.

Lin Ming looked up at Lan Yi, "What's the matter?"

At this point, Lin Ming was able to confirm that Lan Yi had recognized him. The reason she repeatedly approached him must be because she had some matter to discuss.

"Sir Lin, this is a Blue Lotus Pill, it can help you recover your strength." As Lan Yi spoke, she took out a small bottle from her spatial ring. A rich aroma emitted from the pill – it was indeed a top-grade pill.

"I don't need it." Lin Ming waved, "I already have pills. If Miss Lan has any matters to discuss, please speak frankly."

"This…"

For a moment, Lan Yi seemed somewhat embarrassed. To brazenly and openly ask others for help was quite difficult.

At this point, Shi Linkai also revealed a mischievous smile, his eyes lighting up with a ‘hehe’ expression. He gave Lin Ming a meaningful glance, silently saying ‘Brother, you are very fierce!’, and quickly excused himself and left.

Obviously, to Shi Linkai, Lan Yi was infatuated with Lin Ming. To him, this was a completely normal matter. After all, beautiful women loved heroes, the two were of a similar age, and Lin Ming had an attractive aura to him.

As Shi Linkai thought that he was being clever, this caused Lan Yi to be even more embarrassed. She coughed and said, “Sir Lin, I would like to request a favor, may I speak with you alone?”

“Alright, let’s go to the army compound.” Lin Ming also wanted to understand how the Moon Seizing Sect was attacked, so he didn’t reject her.

Chapter 334 – Moon Seizing Sect’s Hidden Treasures

Chapter 334 – Moon Seizing Sect’s Hidden Treasures

…

…

…

Seeing Lin Ming and Lan Yi’s departing forms, Zhuang Fan glanced at Lin Wanshan and said, “Old Lin, Lin Ming is 16 this year isn’t he?

“Mm… it’s about time for engagement.”

According to the traditions of Sky Fortune Kingdom, once a man reached 16 years of age and became an adult, he could be engaged, and once he reached 18 years of age, he could get married.

But a martial artist was fundamentally different. It wasn’t strange for a Xiantian realm martial artist to not be married even at 100 years of age. Lin Wanshan didn’t know what sort of plans Lin Ming had for marriage, or if he even planned to. With a single word from Lin Wanshan, he could decide who a common Lin Family junior would have to marry. If they wanted to marry who they wanted, they would have to leave the family.

But as for something so important as Lin Ming’s marriage, that was something that Lin Wanshan had absolutely no power to influence. It would all be up to Lin Ming’s own choice.

Zhuang Fan sighed, then shook his head. He casually spoke a few words regarding Lin Ming’s age of engagement, but Lin Ming was destined to never marry into their Zhuang Family as a son-in-law. Their Zhuang Family simply couldn’t produce a daughter that was able to match up to Lin Ming. He guessed that every noble family in Sky Fortune City already had their eyes on him. As long as Lin Ming revealed the slightest bit of interest, all of the noble families would probably line up their daughters, waiting in line to deliver them up to Lin Ming, even willing to send them off as concubines.

…………

Lin Ming's tent was in the center of the army camp. The arrangements inside were very simple, but actually very comfortable. There was a sturdy wooden cot that was covered with clean cotton sheets. Because it was pressed a bit too much, it was a little hard to sit on.

"Sit." Lin Ming indicated the wooden cot as he spoke to Lan Yi.

"Sir Lin, my name is Zhou Xinyu. The name of Lan Yi was only my childhood nickname…" The reason that Lan Yi hadn't given her true name was because she wanted to conceal her identity. But now that she was requesting something from Lin Ming, she naturally had to be honest in her intentions.

"Zhou Xinyu…" Lin Ming thought back and remembered that in Divine Phoenix Island's joint talent training program, there was a girl with this name. She was one of the 50 human-step talents. "Miss Zhou is a disciple of the Moon Seizing Sect?"

Zhou Xinyu hesitated for a moment, then nodded. There was no longer any reason to hide her identity, and this was easily found out.

"I'm sorry, but could Miss Zhou tell me who destroyed the Moon Seizing Sect?" Lin Ming tried to make his tone as gentle as possible as he poured a pot of tea, in order to not aggravate her wounds.

As the topic of her sect's destruction was brought up, a look of hatred mingled with sorrow in Zhou Xinyu's eyes. She still vividly recalled that bloody day when her master had died a tragic death.

“They were all Revolving Core masters. Seven of them in total.” Zhou Xinyu spat out between clenched teeth.

Within the entire Moon Seizing Sect, only their Highest Elder had barely managed to break through to the Revolving Core realm. Even with several dozens of Xiantian masters combined together, none of them could block the slaughtering rampage of seven Revolving Core powerhouses – there was even one at the middle Revolving Core stage.

Lin Ming’s heart sank. With this extermination line-up, even the Seven Profound Valleys would face certain doom. Even Peacock Mountain and Falling Cloud Sect would suffer serious losses.

He let out a heavy breath and then continued, “And what matter does Miss Zhou have to discuss with me?”

“Mm… that is, I… I want to join Divine Phoenix Island. I… would like to ask that Sir Lin recommend me, if possible. I would like to have a chance to study Divine Phoenix Island’s core cultivation methods. I would be very grateful.” Zhou Xinyu started out a bit embarrassed, but afterwards just spoke her request in one go. She had originally planned to befriend Lin Ming and then slowly lay down her request, but now that the situation has become like this, there was no point in beating around the bush.

“You want to study the core cultivation methods?” Lin Ming furrowed his eyebrows. If it was simply a recommendation, then Lin Ming would easily be able to help. With Zhou Xinyu’s talent, it wouldn’t be too difficult to join Divine Phoenix Island.

However, if he wanted to recommend her to study the core cultivation methods, then that was something he wouldn’t be able to do.

Divine Phoenix Island had two main core cultivation method manuals, ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ as well as ‘Blue Luan Abstract Phantom Code’. These were the both legacies left behind by the ancient Phoenix Clan, they were incomparably precious.

These two cultivation methods were normally only passed down to core disciples. Ordinary disciples could only study the most superficial knowledge of them. Even Lin Ming, who hadn't yet officially joined Divine Phoenix Island, was only taught the first layer of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. Not only that, but Lin Ming had also made a pledge on his heart of martial arts that he wouldn't leak out this cultivation method.

This was because there were too many profound secrets contained within the, 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' as well as 'Blue Luan Abstract Phantom Code'. As the legacies of the ancient Phoenix Clan, it was said that if one managed to cultivate them to the highest realm, one's body would be like a phoenix, and they would be able to rebirth in a nirvana of flames, immortal and indestructible.

Such a precious ancient legacy was enough to cause many powerhouses to covet it, even with all the flaws they had.

The 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' and 'Blue Luan Abstract Phantom Code' were difficult to cultivate if one didn't have the bloodline of the Vermillion Bird or Blue Luan. Of course, this didn't mean that one couldn't cultivate it entirely. In the history of Divine Phoenix Island, there was once an demonic man who cultivated fire-attribute cultivation methods, and had stolen away the Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island to plunder her Primordial Yin, so that he could double cultivate the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. Like this, a catastrophe was brought down upon Divine Phoenix Island.

But Divine Phoenix Island had learned from this grave mistake. From that point on, they had strictly controlled these secrets.

"I apologize, I cannot help you." Lin Ming said, directly rejecting Lan Yi. "The core cultivation methods of Divine Phoenix Island are only passed down to the core disciples. If you could become a core disciple, then you don't need my help to do so."

Zhou Xinyu was stunned, and then her entire complexion was colored with disappointment. Core disciple… with her talent, the most she could be was an outer court disciple. There was no way she could compete against the inner court disciples, much less a core disciple.

Thinking of the vengeance she needed to take for her master and her sect, Zhou Xinyu absentmindedly asked, “Divine Phoenix Island will not pass on the core cultivation methods to inner court disciples?”

Lin Ming shook his head, “An inner court disciple can only learn the first few layers of the core cultivation methods. Divine Phoenix Island is very strict in the management of their core cultivation methods. Sorry, but I simply cannot help you…”

“Sir Lin… I…” Zhou Xinyu had a begging expression, but the words she wanted to say were caught in her throat. Her original intent was to produce a few Heaven Opening Pills as a reward for Lin Ming’s help.

But now it appeared that Heaven Opening Pills were useless. Lin Ming wasn’t lacking in Heaven Opening Pills. According to what Zhou Xinyu had heard, Lin Ming had already obtained three Heaven Opening Pills. Once Lin Ming stepped into the Houtian realm, there would probably be more.

A core disciple of Divine Phoenix Island probably received similar treatment to Lin Ming. To use a few Heaven Opening Pills in exchange for the treatment of a core disciple was simply too naïve.

Zhou Xinyu was aware that with her own talent, the most she could achieve would be becoming an inner court disciple; there was no way she would ever be able to learn the full core cultivation method manuals and enter into the Revolving Core realm. Divine Phoenix Island was too strong, a core disciple had a high chance of entering the Revolving Core realm, otherwise, this Revolving Core realm would be too worthless.

Did she really have to put out that…

If she gave it to Mu Qianyu, she might be able to trade it for a core disciple position. But… the price was too steep.

After the Moon Seizing Sect was destroyed, the treasure that they left behind was the hope of her master, as well as the hope for the future revival of the Moon Seizing Sect.

Without it, even if she became a core disciple and was able to learn the core cultivation methods, it would be too difficult to step into the Revolving Core realm.

But if she had it, then she wouldn't be able to reach the Revolving Core realm as she wouldn't have a high-grade cultivation method. If she didn't reach the Revolving Core realm, she wouldn't have the qualifications to avenge her master or rebuild the Moon Seizing Sect.

As Zhou Xinyu thought of this, her mind was torn…

"I've disturbed Sir Lin, excuse me." Zhou Xinyu barely smiled, and then quietly left the tent.

As she left, Lin Ming saw her desolate back, and he suddenly sighed with emotion. He hesitated for a moment, then said, "I will bring this up with Divine Phoenix Island's Miss Mu. However, what she does will depend on her.

Zhou Xinyu was happy. She hurriedly thanked Lin Ming and said, "Thank you Sir Lin, I will engrave this kindness within my mind."

After Zhou Xinyu profusely thank him, she finally left. Lin Ming could only shake his head. The road of a martial artist was fraught with hardships and emotions. Talents such as Zhou Xinyu may seem like fairy maidens to a common mortal, but if they truly wished to reach the Revolving Core realm, they had to pay a great cost.

In order for a common martial artist to earn a few resources, they had to venture through lands filled with vicious beasts and risk their lives to hunt for precious materials. These materials were also what young and beautiful girls sought from the Seven Profound Valleys' Acacia Faction. In order to reach the Pulse Condensation period and extend their lives, they would exchange their own virginity for the longer-lasting youth. These sect talents were the envy of countless others, in order to search for lucky opportunities, they would enter into dangerous lands and possibly die…

The road of martial artists seemed bright and attractive, but once one stepped onto it, it was full of thorns and perils. If one fell off for any reason, there was no more hope for them.

Zhou Xinyu had a wish and obsession to revive her sect and avenge her master. This obsession was truly worthy of Lin Ming’s pity and respect. However, at most, Lin Ming would only be able to mention this subject to Mu Qianyu; he couldn’t help her in any substantial way.

No longer thinking about these things, Lin Ming closed the tent curtains and then took out a spatial ring. This spatial ring was left behind by Bi Luo. After Lin Ming killed Bi Luo, he had only taken the spatial ring because he was in a hurry to return to the battlefield; he hadn’t had time to investigate what was inside.

Bi Luo had a limited status within the Seven Profound Valleys. Lin Ming didn’t have much hope that there would be anything within that was too valuable. He started with the mindset that it would be like looking for meat in a mosquito leg, and he began to remove the objects inside one at a time.

There were several medium-grade human-step treasures, as well as a high-grade human-step treasure sword and flexible armor. There were several bottles of high-grade pills for a Houtian realm martial artist to increase their cultivation, over 1000 true essence stones, and several jade slips.

There was no need to look at treasures like the flexible armor. To Lin Ming, these treasures were things he could just give away. As for the high-grade cultivation pills, those were barely up to standards. They were probably gifted by Ouyang Boyan, so it would be useful to keep them. As for the 1000 true essences tones, they were better than nothing.

Afterwards, Lin Ming picked up the jade slips and began to casually glance through them. Suddenly, he was surprised. Mm? There was a medium-grade earth-step auxiliary secret skill jade slip?

To a sect, core secret skills were the unique legacies of those sects. For instance, Divine Phoenix Island's 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', and the Acacia Faction's 'Divine Acacia Power' had no grade.

But there were some secret skills that were spread out and thus obtained a grade. A medium-grade earth-step cultivation method jade slip was equal to a top medium-grade earth-step treasure in value.

Initially when Lin Ming had learned the 'Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist', that had only been an incomplete medium-grade earth-step martial skill. But, the abstract principles found within were extremely profound. Although a medium-grade earth-step auxiliary secret skill was just a bit lower in value, it was more than enough to exchange for two Heaven Opening Pills.

"This Bi Luo, he was actually thinking of trade for two Heaven Opening Pills with this secret skill after he reached peak Houtian, and then breaking through to the Xiantian realm! How ambitious..."

Lin Ming didn't think that Bi Luo's treasure trove was so deep that it would have such a precious treasure.

As Lin Ming swept through the contents of the cultivation method, his heart immediately stirred. This was a set of appearance changing and concealment methods!

No wonder Bi Luo's appearance changing technique and concealment skill had been so superb!

Chapter 335 – Concealment Technique

Chapter 335 – Concealment Technique

…

…

…

Lin Ming hadn't been able to see through Bi Luo's appearance changing technique.

When Bi Luo had lured Lin Ming into a trap by telling him of the Seraphic Pond Mountain, whether it was temperament, appearance, or breath, all of those were indistinguishable from the true Qin Ziya. Even though Lin Ming felt that something was strange during that time, he was still tricked. This was because Bi Luo's appearance changing technique was simply too perfect.

At that time, Lin Ming thought that he couldn't see through Bi Luo's disguise because their strength was too far apart. But now, Bi Luo had changed into an old man, and Lin Ming's strength was beyond Bi Luo's. Still, even though he had correctly guessed Bi Luo's identity, even though he widened his eyes and looked, releasing his entire perception, he still didn't manage to see a single flaw in Bi Luo's appearance changing technique. Lin Ming had to admit that Bi Luo's disguise was too clever.

Moreover, Lin Ming cultivated the 'Overbearing Soul Tactic', so his soul force and perception were far beyond that of a martial artist at the same level. Afterwards, he had comprehended the Samsara martial intent and his perception had taken another step forwards. Even so, he was completely powerless to see through Bi Luo's appearance changing technique.

Lin Ming had thought that this sort of appearance changing technique came from the Mirage Faction, and was a technique that was known by all the disciples of the Mirage Faction.

But now that he thought of it some more, during the Total Faction Martial Meeting when he had fought the Mirage Faction core disciple Bi Tinghua, he had seen through his illusions. It was impossible for every disciple of the Mirage Faction to be as fierce as Bi Luo, otherwise it would simply be too absurd.

Not only was Bi Luo skilled in appearance changing techniques, but he was also skilled in concealment techniques. Usually, a martial artist had to reach the Xiantian realm and achieve the state of returning to one's true origin in order to hide their cultivation. Bi Luo was still short of this, but he could hide in the army so that Lin Ming couldn't discover where he was. Even after Lin Ming had rushed deep into the tide of vicious beasts, he hadn't even noticed Bi Luo until the very last moment before he was attacked.

Lin Ming sighed, this auxiliary secret skill was just far too formidable. He had no idea where Bi Luo managed to obtain it, but it was probably at some ancient site. If he exchanged it at the Seven Profound Valleys, he would probably be able to obtain several Heaven Opening Pills, more than enough to help him reach the Xiantian realm. The reason that Bi Luo hadn't exchanged it immediately was most likely because he was trying to keep a low profile. After all, his cultivation was insufficient and he wouldn't be able to immediately swallow the Heaven Opening Pills. Once it was revealed that he had so many Heaven Opening Pills on his body, it was possible he would suffer a catastrophe when others coveted them.

Bi Luo's plan was to wait until he reached the peak Houtian realm, and then exchange the secret skill with the Seven Profound Valleys for the Heaven Opening Pills as soon as possible. If Bi Luo hadn't run into Lin Ming, then he might have actually reached the Xiantian realm.

Lin Ming began to read the jade slip. The more he read, the more impressed he was. Not only was the concealment method able to hide cultivation and true essence fluctuations, but it could also change one's personal appearance. The only flaw of the otherwise perfect technique was that it couldn't hide one's killing intent; it was when Bi Luo had released a faint killing intent that he was found out by Lin Ming.

As for Bi Luo's appearance and true essence fluctuations, he had hidden them very well. From beginning to end, there wasn't even the slightest flaw.

This sort of secret skill didn't have any combat strength, but it was very practical for Lin Ming.

There was no need to mention how broad and useful an appearance changing technique was, but in conjunction with the concealment technique, it could be used in sneak attacks and could also be useful in escaping.

Lin Ming was thinking of immediately studying this secret skill, but a flame suddenly lit in front of him; this was a sound transmitting talisman from Qin Ziya.

The message was very simple. Qin Ziya informed Lin Ming that early the next morning he would be arriving at Green Mulberry City with several masters, including Qin Xingxuan and Mister Muyi.

"Martial House Master Qin is coming?"

Lin Ming was surprised. He didn't think that even before the support from the Seven Profound Valleys arrived, Qin Ziya would come first.

From the eruption of the beast tide until now, it had only been two days and two nights. Qin Ziya needed to arrange sending the lower rank disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House to a safe city, and then also inventory the property and resources and pack up. In addition to the time it took to fly here, it was already a very fast pace.

Although Qin Ziya did this because he owed Lin Ming a favor, Lin Ming was still very grateful.

"Martial House Master Qin should have already obtained a Heaven Opening Pill, but he shouldn't have had time to eat it yet. Once he takes the Heaven Opening Pill, he will need to go into seclusion for a short period of time. The chances of Martial House Master Qin breaking through to the Xiantian realm are gigantic. Once he does, he will become a Seven Profound Valleys elder. Once he arrives tomorrow morning, the safety of the city will be set!"

'So, there are finally some matters which I don't have to be scrupulous about. I guess it's time to clear out some trash…'

Thinking this, Lin Ming's figure disappeared from his tent.

……………………

At this time, in the army commander's tent, Zhu Ping still hadn't taken off his armor. He was sitting at the table, looking at the casualty report in his hands. But as he glanced at the report, Zhu Ping's thoughts were in chaos; he didn't even know what was written on that report.

One matter was very clear. That master that Ouyang Boyan sent had died, killed at the hands of Lin Ming!

This was a late Houtian master from a sect, yet he was still killed by Lin Ming?

Zhu Ping's hands began to sweat. His treasure sword was on the table, but this sword wasn't even able to give him the slightest sense of security.

Before now, he had heard that Sky Fortune Kingdom's Royal Family took orders from the Seven Profound Valleys. But to Zhu Ping, the Seven Profound Valleys was an extremely remote existence. No matter how terrifying its influence was, or how strong its disciples were, Zhu Ping had no clear understanding.

With the backing of a master, in addition to the many masters of the army, he hadn't even placed Lin Ming's strength in his eyes. He had subconsciously looked down on Lin Ming, thinking of him as a snotty nosed brat that had just managed to run into a great stroke of luck. He was thinking of killing him in the chaos and saving the Zhu Family.

However, now it seemed that his idea was just laughably absurd. This night, he had seen Lin Ming kill a Sludge Monster with a single spear strike, letting loose an aura that was like a peerlessly evil demonic god. Seeing this had caused all of Zhu Ping's courage to shatter into tiny pieces.

The youth that he tried to have killed actually turned out to be such a terrible demon.

Now, if Zhu Ping looked at Lin Ming, all he felt was a fearful pressure that made his heart sink. This was the feeling of one's fate being completely in the hands of another.

Zhu Ping had even thought of escaping this night. But Green Mulberry City was surrounded by vicious beasts all around – where would he be able to run to?

"It shouldn't matter, at most he only suspects me, there is no evidence. Also, I'm the commander of the army. If he kills me, the morale of the troops will falter and they'll fall into chaos..."

Zhu Ping thought aloud, comforting himself. Before now, he had even thought of an excuse to absolve himself of any guilt.

Although he didn't expect that Lin Ming trusted him, Zhu Ping was sure that Lin Ming only had some speculative thoughts, and no true proof. Although he was just a mere mortal, he was still the commander of Green Mulberry City's garrison troops. During this beast tide, he couldn't be killed on a whim.

Thinking this, Zhu Ping calmed down. He took up the report in his hand and began to review it with a red ink brush.

The higher the position one was in, the more drunk they were on power, and the more they latched onto authority. They feared losing it and dying, especially someone as young as Zhu Ping. He was only 40 years old, and had broken through to the Pulse Condensation period with his own strength. He had an excellent future, and over a hundred years of life still to enjoy.

Like this, how could he not fear death?

He took a deep breath, then began to write. Because he was somewhat distraught, his handwriting was crooked from his trembling hands.

At this moment, a nightmarish voice abruptly sounded out, “Army Commander Zhu, you seem a bit cold?”

“Ahh!”

Zhu Ping reflexively recoiled, throwing away the red ink brush in his hands like he had been bitten by a snake. He looked before the table, and saw a black-clothed youth standing there like a demon. This was Lin Ming!

“Young... Young Hero Lin.” Zhu Ping’s throat was dry, his complexion pale. He reluctantly managed to compose himself, and calmly said, “Young... Young Hero Lin visits so late at night, I welcome you.”

Lin Ming casually sat in a chair, and flatly said, “Zhu Ping, there’s no need to put on an act or play games with me. I’ll ask you now, how many people does Ouyang Boyan have in Green Mulberry City?”

“Ouyang... Ouyang Boyan? The Seven Profound Valleys elder, Mister Ouyang? Young... Young Hero Lin, I am such an unimportant person, how could I possibly know anything about Mister Ouyang’s matters?” Zhu Ping forced out with a bitter smile.

“Really?” Lin Ming sneered. He hadn’t had any hopes that Zhu Ping would actually know Ouyang Boyan’s plans.

“Well....” Lin Ming stretched out a finger, and lightning crackled on his fingertip, “You can die now.”

Zhu Ping suddenly stiffened, his face filled with fear. He was preparing to justify himself and give out some excuses, “Wait… wait! Young Hero Lin, I…”

Pu!

A purple light directly pierced Zhu Ping’s throat. Zhu Ping’s frightened eyes opened wide, as if he couldn’t believe this reality.

His throat broken, blood began to crazily spurt out. Zhu Ping futilely held onto his throat as if he was trying to block the blood from oozing out.

Zhu Ping never thought that as the commander of Green Mulberry City’s garrison army, a viscount of Sky Fortune Kingdom, as well as a Pulse Condensation period martial artist and an important character of Green Mulberry City’s Zhu Family, he would actually be sentenced to death here without even a trial.

When Lin Ming killed Zhu Ping, he had first laid down the dreamland enchantment so that he wouldn’t disturb anyone. It wasn’t that he was afraid of anyone. With his status and power, he only needed to find a casual reason to take Zhu Ping’s life, and no one would have been able to dispute him.

The reason that he had let Zhu Ping live up to this point was because Zhu Ping was the commander of Green Mulberry City’s 10,000 garrison troops. During the invasion of the beast tide, it was impossible for Lin Ming to kill the commander. But now that Qin Ziya was about to arrive and the situation would soon be decided, keeping someone like Zhu Ping around was pointless.

The reason that he laid down the dreamland enchantment was that he didn’t want to alarm the soldiers and cause the morale of the troops to be unstable. Once tomorrow arrived and Qin Ziya came, everything would be fine.

Lin Ming turned Zhu Ping’s corpse to ashes with the Earthcore Crimson Flame, then returned to his own tent and ate some pills as he sat down in meditation, awaiting the arrival of tomorrow.

However… tonight was destined to not be a tranquil night.

………….

Several uninvited guests silently appeared outside Green Mulberry City’s army camp, lurking in the dark of night.

“Is it here?” A man wearing a bamboo hat asked. The bamboo hat blocked part of the man’s face, only revealing a sinister pair of eyes that shined with greed.

He had searched so hard, and he had finally found it…

Behind the bamboo hat man, there were also five to six men. Their cultivations ranged from the Pulse Condensation period to the Houtian realm, and several of them had a faint crescent symbol on their chest, marking their identities. These people were from the Moon Seizing Sect…

Chapter 336 – Sharing Secrets

Chapter 336 – Sharing Secrets

…

…

…

"My sense towards the Golden Wing shouldn't be wrong, only if she didn't ride the Golden Wing." Within the five to six men, a short, average looking man spoke out in a low and grating voice. His beady eyes flashed as he stared at the far off army camp.

The Golden Wing that this man spoke about was the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle.

The South Horizon Region was a vast, limitless land. Once one left the Moon Seizing Sect, the horizon was endless and complex, no matter where one went. To the west was the convoluted Southern Wilderness. If one wanted to hide in the Southern Wilderness, they could hide themselves in any small tribe. If one didn't have a special method of searching, looking for someone there would be like searching for a needle in a haystack.

This group of people came all this way to track down Zhou Xinyu. The short man used to be the handler of the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle. Although he was weak, he had been born with a special talent that allowed him to communicate with animals. In order to avoid losing the precious golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle, he had developed a special link with it, and was able to sense it in a range of several hundred thousands of miles.

These were all survivors of the Moon Seizing Sect. They had found this small man and had used him as a guide. Together, they had crossed mountains and rivers, crossing the Southern Wilderness, and suffering the countless vicious beasts along the way, and now they had finally caught up to Zhou Xinyu.

“Hehe… I didn’t think she would hide in a city of mortals.” The bamboo hat man licked his lips, seeming extremely excited.

“Second Uncle, although this little girl’s cultivation is only at the peak Pulse Condensation period, Apprentice Uncle Shui Yue may have left her some hidden cards which she can use to escape. Also, there are many people in this army camp. Once chaos breaks out, it will be easy to lose her. First, I’ll put down a barrier formation. Then even if she has wings, she won’t be able to escape.”

“Cough cough…” A middle-aged man wrapped in black fog coughed. His face was unnaturally gray, he had apparently been injured.

“How are we going to deal with these mortals?” The man called Second Uncle casually asked.

“If we can successfully catch Zhou Xinyu without leaking any secrets, then we can let them go. After all, this is the area of the Seven Profound Valleys. If we kill too many people here, it will be too troublesome. But if the secret is revealed, we have no choice but to kill them and blame the beast tide. The beast tide is wreaking havoc everywhere these past days; an army of a few thousand disappearing isn’t anything unusual.” The bamboo hat man sounded extremely cold and indifferent. To a sect martial artist, the lives of a few thousand mortals were simply nothing at all.

“Good, then we’ll proceed as you say.” As the Second Uncle spoke, he took out an array disk, preparing to lay down the array formation. The others also helped him. This array formation wasn’t anything too complicated, it could only hold down a master for a brief period of time; but this was enough to stop Zhou Xinyu and capture her.

Also, this barrier formation had an addition role, and that was to disallow mortals from escaping. As they were disciples of the Moon Seizing Sect, once it was known by the Seven Profound Valleys that they were wantonly slaughtering mortals within their domain, it would be extremely troublesome.

As the bamboo hat man was placing down the barrier array a step at a time, he took off his hat, revealing a very handsome face that was only marred by the fierce and brutal gaze that emitted from his eyes. He sneered as he spoke to himself, “Apprentice Uncle Shui Yue, you were too biased and cruel. Now, do not blame me, Huang Sanping, for being heartless.”

In the middle of the night, the moon was bright in the sky. Lin Ming was meditating in his tent, combining various medicines and a medium-grade true essence stone in order to recover his strength.

At this time, Lin Ming took out the jade slip from the spatial ring that Bu Luo had left behind. He had briefly studied the skills within the jade slip, and found that they weren’t too hard to cultivate.

He was about to enter the ethereal martial intent and ponder the contents of the jade slip, when suddenly, his heart stirred. “Huh?”

Lin Ming quietly and slowly got up from his bed, moving towards the tent’s windows like a dexterous cat. He drew open the curtains and looked out, seeing the deep blue starry sky and the endlessly black hills. He didn’t see anything different, but he had clearly detected an unusual true essence fluctuation just a moment ago.

There was someone lying in ambush.

Lin Ming’s complexion sank. As he was thinking of how to deal with them, at that moment, he saw the silhouettes of four people riding two Heavenly Wind Eagles in the distance, flying over to the army compound at a leisurely pace.

Although they were very far and the light was dim, Lin Ming was still able to clearly see all of their appearances. They were dressed unusually, and their clothing was covered with dust; obviously, they had traveled a long and tiresome journey.

Of these four people, two of them were at the Pulse Condensation period, and the other two were at the Houtian realm. One was at the middle Houtian realm, but the other one, a middle-aged man whose entire body was wrapped in a shroud of darkness was shockingly at the peak Houtian realm, not too far off from Xiantian!

Seeing this, Lin Ming's expression changed. Looking at the thickness of their true essence, they were most likely martial artists from a sect. As Lin Ming was right now, he was not a match for a sect's peak Houtian martial artist!

As they closed in, one of the Houtian martial artists took out a purple bead from their spatial ring, and tossed it into the sky without hesitation.

There was a loud explosion, like a thunderclap striking the earth, and then a violent shock wave burst forth with a turbulent surge of wind, lifting up all of the nearby tents in the army camp. All sorts of weapons, clothing, food, bedding, and other items were thrown into the air, and dozens of soldiers that had been fast asleep were blown upwards by the blast, then fell down onto the ground, turning black and blue from the bruises and pitifully screaming out in pain.

The army camp was in immediate chaos. Many soldiers assumed that the beast tide had come again, and hastily grabbed their weapons and rushed out to meet the beast tide. With the ever-present threat of the beast tide, the soldiers hadn't taken off their armor, but in the rush, many of them had taken the wrong weapon, wore the wrong shoes, or wore the wrong helmet.

After the second beast tide and been repelled, Zhou Xinyu had stayed in the army camp because she wanted to speak to Lin Ming more. As she heard the loud thunderous roar, she immediately dressed and came out from her tent. As she looked into the sky, she was immediately stunned.

"Huang Sanping, Huang Zixuan... why are they here?" Zhou Xinyu was confused for a brief moment. Huang Sanping was the other genius from the Moon Seizing Sect that had been selected for Divine Phoenix Island's joint talent training program. He didn't die? Why would he be here with Second Uncle Huang Zixuan? Were they looking for her?

Thinking of the possible reasons, Zhou Xinyu seemed to suddenly realize something, and her expression immediately changed.

“This is bad!”

She was frightened like a squirrel and immediately retreated back to her tent, her face draining of color.

Although Zhou Xinyu had grown up since childhood at the Moon Seizing Sect and was inexperienced about the ways of the world, she was no fool. She didn’t think that Huang Sanping came here looking for lost disciples of the Moon Seizing Sect in order to rebuild the sect together. Huang Sanping must have known what she had on her body, and was eyeing the treasures of her master all along.

“What should I do?”

Zhou Xinyu panicked. She didn’t know why Huang Sanping hadn’t died, or why he knew what treasure was on her, or how he had pursued her all the way to Green Mulberry City. But what she did know was that the man with Huang Sanping was their Second Uncle from the Moon Seizing Sect, an outer court elder, and a master who was only a step away from reaching the Xiantian realm.

Such an existence could crush her to death with just a few fingers.

Zhou Xinyu bit her lips and quickly changed into a black set of clothes. She quietly touched the edge of the tent, wanting to mix into the chaotic crowd and flee in the whole mess. To her, this was the only possible way out.

“Who’s the boss here, come out!” Huang Sanping shouted loudly as he glanced at the crowd beneath him with a contemptuous gaze.

The man in charge was originally Zhu Ping, but Zhu Ping had been killed just an hour ago by Lin Ming, with not even his skeleton remaining. The guards that protected the commander didn’t know, and only thought that their lord had disappeared somewhere, though they didn't know why or what he was doing. At this time, the entire army camp was in total confusion. With Zhu Ping dead, no one stood up.

However, with this shout, the soldiers quickly realized that a vicious beast tide wasn't coming. Like this, they soon calmed down.

Since Zhu Ping wasn't present, Lin Wanshan walked out. As he saw the cultivation of the several people in the sky, his heart thumped. If these people came here with ill intentions... and sure enough, one of them was a peak Houtian martial artist.

He cupped his fists together and said, "I wonder what brings several masters here, is there a matter?"

"You have a young girl here that came riding a golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle. Where is she?" As Huang Sanping spoke, he pointed to a corner of the army camp where a golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle was lying.

Lin Wanshan's eyes widened. These people most likely didn't have any good intentions looking for Lan Yi. However, this had nothing to do with them, and he didn't want to block this danger for Lan Yi.

Lin Wanshan was about to tell them where Lan Yi was, when suddenly Huang Sanping's Second Uncle, Huang Zinxuan's eyebrows rose. He hoarsely said, "Over there, she just touched my array formation."

"Hey! You want to run?" Huang Sanping licked his lips and immediately directed his Heavenly Wind Eagle towards where Zhou Xinyu was.

When Zhou Xinyu touched the array formation, in that moment she paled, her entire body trembling. She knew that she had been discovered, and immediately turned to run back into the crowd. The army camp was huge, as it was able to hold 10,000 soldiers. In addition, it was night and she wore black travelling clothes, so it was easy to quietly mingle into the crowd, rushing through the tents. Like this, it wouldn't be easy to immediately find her.

“Haha, Junior-apprentice Sister, if you keep hiding then I’ll make my own move. Do you want these mortals to be buried along with you?” Huang Sanping brazenly laughed, completely like a cat that was playing with a mouse. Everyone within the Moon Seizing Sect assumed that he and Zhou Xinyu were like a dragon and phoenix that loved each other. However, they didn’t know that because of the struggle for resources, they had extremely bad relations with each other, to the point of hating the other.

And now, he had brought masters with keen eyesight to look for his formerly haughty and lofty Junior-apprentice Sister. There was nowhere to run for her, no way to escape; she was just like mouse scurrying through the streets. With this, his mind was incomparably comfortable, and he laughed with self-satisfaction.

At this time, Lin Ming stood in the shadows and watched the four people in the air, silent. With his keen perception, he could see that the peak Houtian master whose entire body was covered in a black fog seemed to be injured. Even so, that peak Houtian master wasn’t someone he could deal with. He and Zhou Xinyu weren’t relatives, nor were they friends. There was no reason to risk his life against such a master in order to save her.

But at this moment, a sobbing, tearful true essence sound transmission sounded in Lin Ming’s ears. “Sir Lin, I beg you to save me! If you save me, I have secrets of the Moon Seizing Sect on me. Save me and I’ll share them with you!”

Chapter 337 – Take Action

Chapter 337 – Take Action

…

…

…

“Mm? Secret?”

Lin Ming paused. The man in the bamboo hat had called Zhou Xinyu his junior-apprentice sister a moment ago. From this, he knew that they were also from the Moon Seizing Sect.

Now that the Moon Seizing Sect no longer existed, these surviving disciples began to eat each other. They were probably fighting over something, and it seemed to be this so-called secret.

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes as he looked at the black-shrouded man on the Heavenly Wind Eagle. Lin Ming didn’t immediately answer Zhou Xinyu, because he simply wasn’t a match for that black-shrouded man. Although that man had strength similar to the Sludge Monster, the difference between fighting that Sludge Monster and that black-shrouded man was immense. The Sludge Monster was a relatively immobile creature that, coupled with its huge size, was easy to strike with his Thunderfire Annihilation. But the black-shrouded man was different; Lin Ming might not even have the chance to strike.

If Lin Ming used Thunderfire Annihilation at the highest level he could, it would instantly consume 60% of his true essence reserves. If he missed, he would no longer have the strength to resist.

Not only that, but there was also a middle Houtian master standing near the black shrouded man. Outside of the barrier array, there was also a late Houtian master controlling the array formation.

These three great Houtian masters were at the middle, late, and peak stage; it was simply a full Houtian line-up. Against them, Lin Ming would absolutely lose.

“It’s a pity that Qin Ziya is still on his way. Otherwise, there wouldn’t be any need to fear them…”

Lin Ming had a contemplative expression, when suddenly he heard the high pitched cry of a bird, and a strong wind immediately blowing out. The golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle had blown away a dozen nearby tents, and shot up into the sky.

However, the person sitting on the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle wasn’t Zhou Xinyu, but was a small and wretched looking man that was slyly smiling. He rode the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle towards Huang Sanping. As for Zhou Xinyu who had originally ridden the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle, she was sent lurching forwards by the violent wind current.

Looking at the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle fly towards Huang Sanping, Zhou Xinyu paled, “How… how could this be…”

She had wanted to rely on the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle to break through the barrier array formation and escape, but she never imagined that her mount would abandon her like this.

“Haha, Junior-apprentice Sister Zhou! The golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle will listen to its handler! Give up! Obediently surrender to me, serve me, and I might let you live another day!”

Huang Sanping lasciviously smiled and then flicked his fingers. Several silver true essence threads shot towards Zhou Xinyu.

Pu pu pu!

The silver true essence threads exploded. Although Zhou Xinyu had managed to dodge most of the attacks, the explosive shockwaves sent her staggering, shredding most of her clothes.

“Junior-apprentice Sister Zhou, you can also fall from the skies! You were once the top talent of the Moon Seizing Sect, all of the resources there were yours to enjoy, and that old idiot Shui Yue only had you as the apple of his eyes. Otherwise, how could I still be stuck at the peak Pulse Condensation period? I would have already broken through to the Houtian realm!” Huang Sanping viciously smiled as his true essence attacks struck Zhou Xinyu. Compared to her, he was three years older and his strength was naturally above Zhou Xinyu’s. After several attacks, Zhou Xinyu was in a miserable state.

On the side, Huang Zixuan hadn’t moved, letting Huang Sanping recklessly attack. He knew that these past years, Huang Sanping had suffered from bias towards Zhou Xinyu by the Sect Master Shui Yue, causing a simmering fire to burn in his heart. Now was the best time to let him give vent to this rage to clear his spirit; it would be advantageous to his future cultivation efforts.

Bang!

Two thick true essence threads blew up, and a terrifying air blast send all the soldiers around soaring backwards, spitting blood. The tents were blown up, and all sorts of weapons and armor were sent flying backwards. Countless people had been injured or crushed by the attack.

But in the center of this strong explosion was an ice-blue shield; this was the defense Zhou Xinyu had summoned to block Huang Sanping’s attack.

Huang Sanping’s eyebrows rose, and he smiled, “I see that Disciple Uncle Shui Yue and Disciple Uncle Lan Yue both loved you so much, they gave you methods to save your own life? This is the sect’s earth-step defensive treasure, ‘Blue Water Flower Curtain’. Good!

Once I cripple your cultivation, I'll be able to collect both a great treasure and my adorable little Junior-apprentice Sister!"

Huang Sanping evilly smiled, and then extracted the Blue Moon treasure sword from his back. The longsword slashed out, and three sword energies cut forth.

Bang!

The Blue Water Flower Curtain shook, the curtain of light trembling. Although the earth-step defensive treasure was formidable, it all depended on who used it. Zhou Xinyu was only 18 years old, her true essence was much thinner and weaker than Huang Sanping's.

"Sir… Sir Lin!" Zhou Xinyu was forced into a dead end. Her shaking voice was engulfed within the thunderous true essence explosion, slurred. "Moon Seizing Sect… once… top third-grade sect, had obtained… Netherworld Great Emperor… 72 Shattered Demon Heart Crystals, now… still 12 left over! My spatial ring has one! This shattered crystal can… increase… a Xiantian master's chances of breaking through to the Revolve Core realm! Sir Lin… rescue me!"

"Shattered Demon Heart Crystal? A miracle medicine that could help increase a Xiantian master's chances of reaching the Revolving Core realm?"

Lin Ming was stunned. He had never heard of this Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, but he knew who the Netherworld Great Emperor was. He was the top master of the South Horizon Region that had ruled for over 1000 years. Even including the entire Sky Spill Continent, he was one of the top ranked Peerless Emperor powerhouses. He had founded a sect on the level of a Holy Ground – Silent Demon Emperor City. But he committed all sorts of evil and atrocious deeds, killed boys and girls, and recklessly plundered talented women from all over. Finally, he moved on the daughter of an emperor of Sky Spill Continent. Then he aroused the hatred and outrage from all over, and was finally killed by a collaborative effort of several of Sky Spill Continent's emperors.

Afterwards, some of his subordinates lived and fled far away to the South Sea where they founded their own sect, which was the current South Sea Demon Region.

When Silent Demon Emperor City had been wiped off the map, many sects from the South Horizon Region had participated in the effort. At that time, the Moon Seizing Sect was a top third-grade sect whose influence was even above Peacock Mountain. It wasn’t strange that they would participate, and it was highly likely that they obtained some kind of treasure!

For a legendary character like the Netherworld Great Emperor, anything that came from him would definitely be an extraordinary treasure!

If there was a medicine that could help a Xiantian master reach the Revolving Core realm, then its value could be imagined. Perhaps…

As Lin Ming realized a possibility, his heart began to race.

The Heaven Opening Pill could help a Houtian master reach the Xiantian realm. But, the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal could increase the chances of a Xiantian master successfully reaching the Revolving Core realm. Both of them were medicines that washed the muscles and marrow, and were top quality medicines that could help one break through bottlenecks. If the Heaven Opening Pill could help him in Tempering Marrow, then wouldn’t the medicinal efficacy of the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal be stronger?

And wouldn’t it be an even greater help for him to complete Tempering Marrow?

Thinking this, Lin Ming’s mind began to race. His breath became fast, and his eyes widened. This was a big opportunity that also came with a correspondingly big risk. With this great lucky chance before him, any life threatening battle was worth the risk!

But just because he was willing to take the risk didn’t mean he should commit suicide. If he rushed out, he simply wasn’t a match against that black-shrouded man; what should he do?

Calm down, calm down!

Under the effects of the ethereal martial intent, Lin Ming instantly calmed down, his breath becoming incomparably gentle and slow, as if here were one with the void. His eyes closed, his senses faded away, and his keen perception rushed out in all directions like a tide, searching for the only chance to save Zhou Xinyu!

When Lin Ming cut off his senses, he also cut off contact with Zhou Xinyu. This caused Zhou Xinyu's true essence sound transmission to no longer reach him.

"Lin… Sir Lin… Sir Lin…"

Zhou Xinyu helplessly looked at Lin Ming, her true essence sound transmission unable to reach him. He had both eyes closed, and seemed to be ignoring her. Suddenly her heart plunged into the depths of despair.

Looking at the indifferent Lin Ming, Zhou Xinyu could only ruefully smile.

Yes. Lin Ming was someone she had only met by chance, why would he want to save her? To do so would put his life in great danger, and might even kill him. Even between husbands and wives, in a critical life and death situation, they might not help each other live.

As the despair and hopeless anguish in her heart began to thicken, Zhou Xinyu bit her lips and desperately supported the Blue Water Flower Curtain with all her strength. However, under Huang Sanping's constant and savage attacks, the Blue Water Flower Curtain gradually weakened, almost to the point of breaking apart.

"Haha, Junior-apprentice Sister Zhou, I wonder how long you can last!"

Huang Sanping's hair crazily floated in the wind, his eyes crazed as he lifted his sword with both hands and jumped down from the Heavenly Wind Eagle. He pointed his sword straight at Zhou Xinyu; this blow would absolutely crush her Blue Water Flower Curtain!

Zhou Xinyu's lips flowed with blood, and her eyes contained a decisive and resolute color. At this moment, she no longer held any hope of living. She would rather die than let herself fall into Huang Sanping's hands.

The sword in Zhou Xinyu's hand began to vibrate, releasing a keening sound. Her eyes widened, and she revolved the true essence within her body to the limit. She was about to send out her strongest attack, when at this moment, a thunderous roar suddenly exploded from beside her, and a dazzling purple lightning lit up the entire night sky!

Zhou Xinyu hadn't even had time to figure out just what had happened. She only saw a shadow fly past at the limit of speed, his entire body wreathed in flames and thunder, shooting forwards like a glorious meteor. This figure held a spear in his hand, directly thrusting towards Huang Sanping's chest!

At this moment, time seemed to stand still, and all of the noise and chaos around seemed to disappear. In Zhou Xinyu's eyes, there was only a flash of flame and thunder. This figure that bathed in this heavenly thunder and fire with his long hair dancing in the wind seemed like a peerless god of war!

"Ping'er!"

Huang Zixuan's expression gravely changed. This enemy attack was too sudden, and its speed was too fast! Even the peak Houtian master Huang Zixuan couldn't react in time!

"Who dares!?"

Huang Zixuan shouted, and all of the black fog that surrounded him erupted outward. He slapped with his palm, and the black fog formed into a massive python, roaring towards Lin Ming!

However, in his haste, Huang Zixuan had used the fastest move he could. But how could it compare with Lin Ming, who had gathered all of his potential in this one strike!

Bang!

The massive python burst apart, the Purple Comet Spear rushed past!

“Damn!” At this point, Huang Sanping was in an extremely dangerous situation. He abruptly changed his sword technique midway, and a blue sword fell on Lin Ming’s spear in torrents. At this time, he didn’t care about Lin Ming’s cultivation, he only thought it was a sneak attack from a master.

Ding ding ding ding!

The sword energies slammed into the vibrating azure true essence, all of them breaking at once. That spear light crossed 1000 feet, unstoppable, crashing into Huang Sanping’s chest!

Puff!

Huang Sanping had just been so insufferably arrogant with a thick fighting intent, but with the spear breaking through his chest, he vomited a mouthful of blood and organs, his body flying back like a ragdoll.

Chapter 338 – Speed of Life and Death

Chapter 338 – Speed of Life and Death

…

…

…

As Huang Zixuan saw Huang Sanping instantly suffer a major injury, his eyes turned red with rage, “Scoundrel! I’ll kill you!”

Now he would naturally kill Lin Ming first. However, just as Huang Zixuan’s eyes lit with a grim light and he was about to use his master stroke, his complexion instantly changed.

Huang Zixuan saw that another spear had appeared in Lin Ming’s hand. As Lin Ming grasped the long spear, his body erupted with true essence, the energy circulating within him to the limit, 20,000 jins of human strength bursting forth.

Sou!

The spear shot out, piercing forth like an arrow towards Huang Sanping. The air trembled, the wind howled, the power of his spear was enough to level a palace!

Huang Zixuan’s eyes were bloodshot, “You scoundrel, I’ll have you remember me!”

Huang Zixuan didn’t have time to deal with Lin Ming right now. He launched his movement technique and had to chase after the spear. Otherwise, if the severely wounded Huang Sanping who had been put into a coma was struck, he would die without a doubt.

“Go!”

Lin Ming sank. He grabbed the stunned Zhou Xinyu and rushed out of the camp.

If Lin Ming wanted to rescue Zhou Xinyu under the gaze of Hang Zixuan, this was the only way. Otherwise, with Lin Ming's speed, it was impossible to escape from Huang Zixuan while bringing someone else. He could only strike at Huang Sanping and force Huang Zixuan to save him; this was their only chance at survival!

"Where are you going?"

At this time, Lin Ming suddenly heard a shout from above him, and then the howling of sword energy. The man who attacked him was the man who had stood with Huang Zixuan, the middle Houtian realm martial artist.

This middle Houtian martial artist felt that Lin Ming was strong, and only wanted to pin down Lin Ming and prevent him from escaping, letting Huang Zixuan return and kill Lin Ming himself. Thus, he had slashed out with a large amount of sword energy, wanting to force Lin Ming into a sieged position and blocking him from running.

"Out of my way!"

At this time, Lin Ming overflowed with killing intent. Whoever dared to stop him would die! He flicked his finger, the coiling dragon steel needle howled!

Boom boom boom!

The sword energies were completely shattered. The coiling dragon steel needle roared as it shot towards the middle Houtian martial artist, his complexion completely changed, paling. The man linked his hands together, and five true essence shields appeared before him. However, there was only a popping sound as the true essence shields blew up. When the last true essence shield was about to break, the coiling dragon steel needle exploded, purple thunder radiated out, and the man screamed. Half of his body was blown to bits, and he fell down from the sky.

Lin Ming didn't even glance at him. Both of his feet moved at full speed towards the outside of the barrier array. After the coiling dragon steel needle had nearly killed the middle Houtian martial artist, it whistled as it caught up to Lin Ming, submerging back into his body.

With the Concept of Wind fused into his movements, Lin Ming's body began to fly up. At that moment, Zhou Xinyu only felt Lin Ming pulling up her hand, the whirring wind in her ears. She looked down to see that her feet were getting farther and farther away from the ground, and she was incredulous as in a brief moment, she was suddenly dozens of feet up in the air. After steadying her mind from the series of electric brilliances that had made her dizzy, she finally realized that an impossible matter had occurred.

"We're… flying… flying up?"

How was this possible?

Lin Ming could actually fly!?

This was clearly an ability that only a Xiantian master could have!

In the chaos, Zhou Xinyu no longer had any words to voice her thoughts. As she saw a great curtain of light approaching, her complexion changed; the barrier formation was ahead!

Lin Ming's pupils narrowed. Although he didn't look back, his perception was already locked onto the black-shrouded man. This fellow had already rescued Huang Sanping, and was now chasing him!

Time was extremely tight! If he stopped to attack the barrier array, even if it only took several breaths of time, the black-shrouded man would catch up!

"Boy, you cannot run away!" As Huang Zixuan chased Lin Ming from behind, he saw with his own eyes as Lin Ming brought Zhou Xinyu flying into the sky, and a inexplicable horror quickly passed over his face. "What sort of rare flying treasure does this boy have? Humph it doesn't matter. With the barrier array formation supported by Third Brother, it will take him time to break it. I'll capture this boy alive and take a good look at what secrets he has on his body!"

"Sir Lin, in… in front!"

Seeing Lin Ming not even slow down as he approached the barrier array, Zhou Xinyu's pretty face drained of all blood. She thought it was impossible that Lin Ming hadn't discovered the barrier array, but now it seemed that Lin Ming was even helplessly running into it!

His speed was too quick. From the time that Zhou Xinyu had felt that something was strange to the point that she spoke, it was already too late!

"Ahh!"

Zhou Xinyu screamed in panic as she closed both her eyes. At this speed, it was equal to crashing into the ground from thousands of feet high. If they didn't die, they would at least be severely wounded!

Hu!

At the split second that Lin Ming and Zhou Xinyu dashed into the barrier array, the space in front of them seemed to have a strange distortion. Lin Ming and Zhou Xinyu flew through the barrier array like a swallow through smoke, rushing past, unimpeded!

Close behind Lin Ming in hot pursuit, Huang Zixuan had been counting on the barrier array to stop Lin Ming. But now, his eyes widened as he stared at this scene before him.

How was this possible!?

At this moment, on Lin Ming's back, Zhou Xinyu had her eyes closed, and her face was pale as she screamed with all her might.

A girl's scream contained a truly terrifying energy.

She had screamed out for several breaths of times before she found that something was wrong. She opened her eyes and saw the surrounding scenery rapidly blurring. They had apparently already made it outside the army camp.

They passed through the barrier array?

She turned her head to look. The barrier array was truly behind them!

“This… what… how… how did this happen?”

Zhou Xinyu was instantly placed in a confused state of mind… how had they managed to pass through?

At first, Lin Ming had saved her from a nearly impossible situation from under the watchful eyes of Huang Zixuan. Then, they had flown into the sky without help from any tools or treasures, and now they had flown past the barrier array without any hindrance!

As impossible events occurred one after another, Zhou Xinyu was overwhelmed. She could only look in incredulity at Lin Ming’s hand grabbing hers. From her angle, she could only see Lin Ming’s profile.

His face was expressionless. Whether she screamed or was turned silly, he remained unmoved, only rushing forwards. Through that entire series of life and death events that had caused Zhou Xinyu’s heart to stop one after another, Lin Ming had never lost his calm even once. His eyes that looked straight forward seemed to be as deep and profound as the stars in the night sky, giving off a sense of security and a feeling that he was someone she could rely on, as if he were an omnipotent being…

At that moment, turbulent waves began to surge in Zhou Xinyu’s heart…

…………………

“Damn, why was the barrier array malfunctioning at this time? Just what is Third Brother doing!?”

Huang Zixuan was enraged. He quickly attributed everything to a malfunction in the barrier array. His third brother was only the most basic and crude of array masters, but a situation in which there was a glitch in the array formation had never happened before.

As Huang Zixuan cursed his third brother as an incompetent mess, he launched his movement technique and rushed forth, wanting to cross through the barrier array. This sort of shoddy array formation naturally didn't recognize individuals. If Huang Zixuan wanted to pass, he didn't need to destroy it, but he still had to put in a decent amount of effort.

But now that the barrier array had failed, there was no need to waste so much time. He could directly rush through and save himself the effort.

Dozens of feet passed in a fleeting second.

Soon, as Huang Zixuan was about to break through the barrier array at full speed, he suddenly felt that something was wrong.

Mm?

He tried to make an emergency stop, but there wasn't enough time. With a 'peng' sound like a piece of pork slapping against a cutting board, Huang Zixuan collided solidly against the barrier array. His head was knocked into confusion, and even his intestines seemed to be scrambled.

Seeing this, Zhou Xinyu's eyes widened. She watched as Huang Zixuan struck the barrier array like a blind fly, spitting blood and limping down to the floor…

Zhou Xinyu's mouth widened in surprise. What happened to Huang Zixuan?

Zhou Xinyu wanted to take a good look at just how this unusual and fortunate change of events occurred, but Lin Ming was too fast. In a blink of an eye, Huang Zixuan had disappeared into the endless night, invisible.

……………………

"You idiot!"

Huang Zixuan was furious. He tossed back a bunch of healing pills and screamed out, "Third Brother you idiotic fool! Hurry up and remove the array, we'll catch up to him together!"

"Ah—a–!"

A high-pitched bird cry sounded out, and the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle shot into the sky. Huang Zixuan, the handler, the severely wounded Huang Sanping, Huang Zixuan's younger Third Brother, and a Houtian martial artist all leapt onto the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle together, chasing after Lin Ming.

Heard the cry of the eagle, Zhou Xinyu panicked. She had been wondering how Huang Zixuan had found her so quickly, and it seemed as if the truth lay within the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle!

Alas, this golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle which was her only means of transportation, as well as the beast that had protected her life, had actually become something that had almost killed her.

"Lin… Sir Lin… they're riding the Golden Wing…"

As Zhou Xinyu worriedly spoke, she hadn't even finished when she suddenly shut up. Her eyes widened as she saw a massive dragon-shaped beast with a 60 foot wingspan and a long tail, its entire body covered in shimmering scales, fly up from a deep dark mountain valley.

Its scales were like crimson fire, and its eyes were a deep glazed gold. Its teeth were sharp, and it gave off an aura that made one's heart race! This was clearly a winged red dragon!

This… this is…

Zhou Xinyu gulped, her expression bitter. With the beast tide freely rampaging area, they had actually encountered such a high-grade vicious beast. This was normal, but for them to encounter such a beast at this time and have to fight it off, that was simply bad luck.

Zhou Xinyu didn't know what to do. But at this time, Lin Ming yanked her hand, throwing her straight towards the Winged Flood Dragon.

"Roar!"

The bass dragon roar resounded throughout the world; the clouds split in half!

Zhou Xinyu was stunned. Lin Ming stepped onto the back of the Winged Flood Dragon, and then the Winged Flood Dragon spread open its massive wings. It was like a flaming red feathered arrow, directly piercing into the dark blue sky!

Zhou Xinyu was speechless with horror. Now that she stepped onto the solid back of the red dragon beast, she could hear the howling of the wind and the terrifying roars of the beast, like a saber cutting through grass. Just by the wind buffeting against her, one could imagine how fast this red dragon beast was flying!

'This is... Sir Lin's mount?'

'It is... a Winged Flood Dragon?'

In the rush a moment ago, Zhou Xinyu wasn't able to clearly recall the origins of this vicious beast. But when she calmed down a bit and had time to think, she suddenly remembered that she had read about this Winged Flood Dragon in the ancient texts. Its value was at least 10 times higher than the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle! And after growing up, it would be a vicious beast equal to a Xiantian master!

She opened her mouth several times, but as she saw Lin Ming standing in front of her, a cold and indifferent expression on his face, she didn't know what to say.

“What do you want to say?” Lin Ming suddenly turned his head, looking at Zhou Xinyu.

Chapter 339 – Barren Mountain Dead End

Chapter 339 – Barren Mountain Dead End

…

…

…

"Sir Lin… I…" Zhou Xinyu opened her mouth, as if she wanted to say something to Lin Ming, but in the end she didn't know what to say. "Sir Lin… is this your mount?"

After asking this, Zhou Xinyu was a bit embarrassed. This was a question with an obvious answer, she was just trying to find some way to open up a conversation.

Lin Ming nodded, "Yes, its name is Chi Yan."

"What a beautiful Winged Flood Dragon. This is my first time seeing one. Before, I had only ever seen it in the ancient texts." Zhou Xinyu looked at the fiery flame-colored wings of the Winged Flood Dragon, a very fond look in her eyes.

These long crimson feathers were truly gorgeous.

"I heard that the Winged Flood Dragon has the bloodline of the Winged Rain Dragon, and that after growing up it can compare with a Xiantian powerhouse." Zhou Xinyu's large eyes widened as she curiously stroked the Winged Flood Dragon's cold and hard dragon scales.

"Yes, but right now Chi Yan is only a child, so its strength is only at the middle Houtian, late Houtian realm." When Lin Ming had rescued Zhou Xinyu a moment ago, he hadn't dared to summon the Winged Flood Dragon early. He was afraid that the Winged Flood Dragon would be blocked by the black-shrouded man or someone else. Also, with the

Winged Flood Dragon's strength, it wouldn't be easy for it to break through the barrier array.

"That's right, Sir Lin, how did you pass through the barrier array?" This thought just popped into Zhou Xinyu's mind. After so many inconceivable matters had occurred one after the other a moment ago, she wanted to ask why, but in the end she didn't because the questions she might ask would involve Lin Ming's secrets.

Lin Ming casually explained, "The man who laid down the barrier array was an extremely amateurish array master, and I also happen to have a slight understanding of array formations."

Normally, laying down such a massive array formation required at least a Xiantian cultivation. For instance, the Seven Profound Martial House's Ten Thousand Killing Array and seven major killing arrays were all laid down by Xiantian masters. Huang Zixuan wasn't from the Array Faction, and his cultivation wasn't high. He had barely been able to lay down the array formation, so naturally it was full of flaws and holes.

As for Lin Ming, he had inherited the memories of an array master from the Realm of the Gods, and he had also been able to point out many flaws in Ancestor Chi Yan's eight trigrams fire formation. Afterwards, he had even discussed array formations with Ancestor Chi Yan for nearly an entire month.

Ancestor Chi Yan's understanding and comprehension of array formations was naturally not something that a nobody like Huang Zixuan could compare with, or even something the Seven Profound Valleys' Array Faction could compare with. Lin Ming had benefitted a great deal from his talks with Ancestor Chi Yan, gradually merging together the Realm of the Gods' array formation principles and those of Sky Spill Continent.

As for the current Lin Ming, although he hadn't yet laid down array formations himself, his understanding of the principles behind array formations had reached an extremely high level. After all, the theoretical cores of the Realm of the Gods' array formation techniques and Sky Spill Continent's array formation techniques were the same.

Just before they had escaped, Lin Ming had entered into the ethereal martial intent and was able to examine the barrier array. As he carefully studied the structure of the barrier array, he had found a significant flaw which had allowed him to successfully pass through.

Otherwise, if he directly rushed through, even if Lin Ming understood array formation principles to a much greater degree, he wouldn't be able to break through the barrier array without pausing.

Listening to Lin Ming's casual explanation, Zhou Xinyu could only ruefully smile. Could this still only be considered as having a 'slight understanding' of array formations?

Although Huang Zixuan wasn't very accomplished in array formations, a barrier array couldn't be easily passed through as if it never existed.

It could only be said that Lin Ming's degree of array formation understanding was on an equal level with Huang Zixuan. Zhou Xinyu was completely unable to imagine how Lin Ming could have such astonishing progress in his martial arts cultivation and also be skilled in the Dao of array formations at a tender age of 16. From ancient times until now, what array master hadn't spent dozens of years before finally being able to gain some accomplishments in the Dao of array formations?

Zhou Xinyu could only sigh. Lin Ming's talent was already completely beyond her realm of understanding.

At this point, Zhou Xinyu suddenly heard a vague eagle cry from behind. Her heart turned cold, and she looked back. Under the bright moon, against the inky jet black night sky, there was a golden speck rapidly chasing them.

Zhou Xinyu's heart jumped, she nervously said, "Sir Lin, they're chasing us!"

"Mm, I know." Lin Ming didn't look back. When that golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle had been taken back by its handler, he had already expected this.

The golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle was several times faster than an ordinary Heavenly Wing Eagle, and was a precious mount that had the bloodline of a Saint Beast. Its bloodline could be traced all the way back to the Golden-winged Roc.

Although the Golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle's bloodline purity was much less than that of the Winged Flood Dragon, the Winged Flood Dragon that Lin Ming sat on was still a child. As for the Moon Seizing Sect's golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle, it was in the prime of its life.

Thus, the Winged Flood Dragon had no advantage in terms of speed.

"Sir Lin, what do we do?" Zhou Xinyu was already accustomed to relying on Lin Ming. After those matters that happened awhile ago, they had given Zhou Xinyu a faint feeling that no matter what danger they would be in, Lin Ming would always have a way out.

"We'll run away first then figure it out." Lin Ming's reply was very cheeky. First he would leave the range of Green Mulberry City, so he wouldn't draw them into any possible calamity.

As long as the Winged Flood Dragon and the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle didn't have too great a difference in flying speed, everything would be much easier. Qin Ziya wasn't too far off. If they could use a sound transmitting talisman soon to find out where Qin Ziya's location was and then fly to him, it would only take a few hours with the Winged Flood Dragon's speed.

After they reached Qin Ziya, nothing would be a problem.

At this moment, Zhou Xinyu was startled. She said, "Sir Lin, this is bad, they suddenly accelerated by a lot."

"Mm?" Lin Ming turned back and glanced at the horizon. He saw that the figure of the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle had grown larger, and although it was still far away, he could see that the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle's body seemed to be colored in a touch of red.

“That’s the Golden Acupuncture Technique. They use a three foot long needle that’s as thick as a finger to stimulate the full potential of the Golden Wing, letting it break through to it’s speed limit.” Zhou Xinyu clenched her teeth as she said this, her heart full of anger and hate. This technique would cause irreversible damage to the Heavenly Wind Eagle, and if it continued flying for too long, it would exhaust its life force.

Although the reason that Zhou Xinyu had ended up in this position was the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle, in the end, the Golden Wing didn’t differentiate between right or wrong, it just obeyed commands as it followed its instincts. It wasn’t at fault. If there was someone to blame, it would be Huang Sanping for being too cruel.

The golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle became increasingly fast. In an instant, it had closed half of the gap between it and Lin Ming. Zhou Xinyu could even clearly make out the figures on the back of the Golden Wing; Huang Sanping’s face was full of blood and hideous.

Huang Sanping’s cultivation was only at the peak Pulse Condensation period. Lin Ming had struck out with intent to kill, but his move was blocked by Huang Zixuan. Finally, he had only been able to severely wound him

When Huang Sanping woke up after eating many pills and medicines, he still had multiple broken bones, was covered with bruises, and even his meridians were damaged.

Such a heavy injury couldn’t be considered a debilitating disability that affected his future cultivation, but it was enough for him to stay home for several months. For those talents that seized every second and minute they could to cultivate, not being able to do so for such a long time was naturally a great loss. Now Huang Sanping wanted to capture Lin Ming and Zhou Xinyu alive and brutally cripple them, wasting their martial arts. He would torture Lin Ming until he begged for death, and then he would imprison Zhou Xinyu, violating and abusing her.

Only this would be able to assuage the hate in his heart.

Because his anger had aggravated the true essence in his body, Huang Sanping gave a stuffy cough and almost spat blood. He took a pill from his spatial ring, swallowing it, then asking the small man, “Can you go faster?”

The value of the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle was naturally not worth mentioning in comparison to Lin Ming and Zhou Xinyu. Also, this was Sky Fortune Kingdom – the territory of the Seven Profound Valleys. If they didn’t catch up to those two and they managed to find support, then everything would be much more difficult.

“Not possible. If I pierce the Golden Wing again, it won’t be able to hold out.” The small man held a long, cold needle in his hand. Under his feet, the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle’s back was layered in red, and its golden feathers stood on end, shivering.

“Ping’er, don’t worry. Up ahead is a barren mountain. Even if they have support, they won’t arrive so quickly. As long as we can catch up to them before they reach the barren mountains, they won’t be able to run away.” Huang Zixuan’s eyes shined with a cold light. He also loathed Lin Ming.

“Second Uncle, who is that boy? Do you know?” Huang Sanping asked.

“I don’t.” Huang Zixuan shook his head. “But his cultivation isn’t at the Houtian realm. He should be some large sect’s genius disciple, most likely an earth-step talent. If it’s like this, then we definitely cannot let him leave. If we do, then I fear we won’t have any place to safely go in the future.

Huang Zixuan was sullen. He thought for a moment and said, “Or maybe our situation has already been revealed by him using a sound transmitting talisman. We’ll have to bet everything we have on this gamble; our only chance is to succeed at all costs. After we obtain the resources, we’ll leave the Divine Phoenix Province and conceal our identities. With the resources of the Moon Seizing Sect, we’ll be able to establish our own influence!”

As Huang Zixuan thought this, he felt the blood in his body accelerate. To be the founder of his own sect and become a sect master, just how thrilling and wonderful would that be?

…………………………

The wind whistled. Lin Ming had already ridden the Winged Flood Dragon to the skies just before the barren mountains. This was a lone mountain range within Sky Fortune Kingdom; there was rarely anyone here.

But their pursuers were getting closer and closer. If it continued like this, they would catch up in half an incense stick of time.

Zhou Xinyu stood behind Lin Ming and was also anxious as she saw the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle approach, but also felt a twinge of guilt. She looked at Lin Ming, her heart confused, and she said, “Sorry, I’ve put you in danger.”

“There’s nothing you need to apologize to me for. Lucky chances come with their own risks. This is a decision I made of my own will; I’m just doing what I need to do.”

“Oh…” Zhou Xinyu bit her lips and sighed in her heart. Although she felt grateful and guilty towards Lin Ming, hearing him say that he was just doing what he needed to do still made her heart feel inexplicably uncomfortable. Even she felt this feeling was ridiculous and didn’t make any sense at all. Maybe it was because she was at the edge of death and was looking for some way to console her spirit, but she subconsciously didn’t want this life and death experience to be because of what benefits they would offer each other…

As Zhou Xinyu thought this, she shook her head in self-deprecation.

Chapter 340 – Shattered Crystal Blood Diffusion

Chapter 340 – Shattered Crystal Blood Diffusion

…

…

…

Lin Ming naturally didn't notice Zhou Xinyu's young, girlish thoughts. He was only quickly thinking of a way to escape from this predicament.

Once Huang Zixuan caught up, Zhou Xinyu would die. As for him, facing an assault from a late Houtian master and a peak Houtian master, his odds weren't looking too great either.

As for attacking Huang Zixuan's mount, if Lin Ming could attack the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle, then the enemy could also attack his Winged Flood Dragon. If Lin Ming wanted to compare his single attacks to the attacks of three Houtian masters against each other's mounts, he would be the one on the losing end.

No matter how Lin Ming looked at things, he had been forced into an absolute dead end.

Calm down, calm down, there's always a way out… Lin Ming completely relaxed his mind, and his breathing slowed down. He slowly thought about the possible escape methods and rejected them one at a time.

It seemed… as if there was only one road to walk…

But walking down this road was also extremely dangerous. A single careless mistake and he would be beyond redemption!

Lin Ming took a deep breath and soon decided. In the path of martial arts, there were already countless risks. In the 3000 endless universes, there were countless lands like the Sky Spill Continent, and innumerable geniuses. Yet, the number that managed to reach the peak of martial arts was actually very few. Even if they were like Lin Ming and others who had received a great fortuitous opportunity, if they didn't experience many risks and dangers, wanting to set foot on the peak of martial arts was just an idiot speaking nonsense.

Lin Ming firmed his resolve, clenched his teeth, and said, "Miss Zhou, I remember that you said before that the Moon Seizing Sect had obtained 72 Shattered Demon Heart Crystal shards, and there are still 12 left over. You have one in your spatial ring right?

"Yes… that's right." Zhou Xinyu was stunned for a moment, then nodded.

"Tell me, what exactly is the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal?" Lin Ming's voice was low and rapid. Now that Huang Zixuan and his group had caught up to less than 10 miles away, it was time to drop all modesty.

Zhou Xinyu didn't know why Lin Ming would have the heart to care about this at this moment, but she quickly explained, "1000 years ago in the holy war to punish the demonic sect… the Southern Horizon Region's allied armies invaded Silent Demon Emperor City, and the Netherworld Great Emperor was put to death by several great emperors. The Netherworld Great Emperor was a man who cultivated peerless devil arts, and when he died in battle, the Demon Heart in his body was shattered by one of those emperors. At that time, one of those Demon Heart Crystal fragments was obtained by my Moon Seizing Sect's Sovereign. Afterwards, the Sovereign returned to the sect and refined this Demon Heart fragment into 72 Shattered Demon Heart Crystals. Every piece of these shattered crystals contains a vast inherent energy, making them a top quality miracle medicine. Take one, melt it with medicine and direct it into the body, and fuse it into the meridians and body points. Like this, it can help a Xiantian master break through to the Revolving Core realm."

"Help a Xiantian master break through to the Revolving Core realm… if it's really like you say, then why has the Moon Seizing Sect been in decline for the last 1000 years?" Lin Ming asked reasonably.

Zhou Xinyu said, “When my Moon Seizing Sect participated in the demonic holy war a thousand years ago, although we managed to obtain a Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, we also lost a massive number of masters, and even the Sovereign of that time was extremely wounded. After returning to the sect, the Sovereign went into life or death close door seclusion. However, he died before he was successful… my Moon Seizing Sect’s legacy cultivation methods were never considered too good to begin with. In these past years, the fact that we could produce Revolving Core masters to guard the sect is all thanks to the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal.”

“So that’s how it is, I see now. I also have another question. You said that the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal needs a medicine to direct it into the body, what sort of medicine is that?”

“Melt it with blood. As long as the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal is melted with one’s own blood essence, they can directly swallow it into their bodies.” Zhou Xinyu’s spoke quickly. As the two were speaking, Huang Zixuan had already pulled in several miles closer. If he pulled closer again, he would enter into a sword’s long-distance attack range.

“I understand. Can you show me your spatial ring’s Shattered Demon Heart Crystal?” Lin Ming suddenly stretched out his hand, his intent clear.

Zhou Xinyu bit her lips. Although this was her sect’s most precious and valuable treasure, there was no reason in hesitating at this moment.

She quickly took out a transparent crystal bottle from her spatial ring. Suspended in the center of this crystal bottle was a red sphere the size of a water drop; this was the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal.

As soon as Lin Ming received the crystal bottle, his eyes narrows. This small red crystal actually emitted a faint but ancient endless energy that made one’s heart race.

Just by this energy, Lin Ming could tell that Zhou Xinyu’s words weren’t an exaggeration.

At this time, Zhou Xinyu seemed to suddenly realize something, and rapidly said, “Sir Lin, don’t tell me you are planning to swallow the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal and then fight a final battle with Huang Zixuan! This… you absolutely cannot do this!”

“Why?” Lin Ming lifted his head to look at Zhou Xinyu.

Zhou Xinyu urgently said, “Sir Lin, this medicine was meant to be taken by a Xiantian master. But you Sir Lin are only at the Pulse Condensation period. If you eat it, your body will blow up, killing you! Not only that, but even if it were a Xiantian master that swallowed this medicine, they would experience a truly painful and debilitating body quenching process. During this time, not only would their strength not increase at all, but because of the disorder and chaos in their true essence, their combat strength would drop!”

“I know.” Lin Ming quietly replied. Everything that Zhou Xinyu had said lined up with his expectations. In fact, most pills that increased one’s cultivation were extremely violent and fiercely potent medicines that had the same effects as the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal. For instance, the Heaven Opening Pill was the same too.

In a top quality pill, the energy contained within was vast and pure. In order to rein in and subdue this energy, one naturally had to struggle for it. When a martial artist was using their own true essence to struggle against the pill energy, their own combat strength would decrease in the meantime. Therefore, when a martial artist decided to take a pill like this, they had to find a safe place first.

A sect’s martial artist could choose to go into seclusion in an undisturbed chamber. As for other martial artists, they could ask a person they trusted to guard them.

Lin Ming didn’t currently didn’t have these choices, but he could create them.

……………………………

“Second Uncle, that is the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal! That slut, she actually gave it to an outsider!” Four to five miles away, with Huang Sanping’s sharp eyesight, he could clearly see just what was in the crystal bottle.

Huang Zixuan frowned, “Don’t worry, he won’t swallow it unless he wants to commit suicide.”

Huang Zixuan wasn’t worried that the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal would be eaten, he was only worried that it would be ruined, or even destroyed. “Hurry, hurry up!” Huang Zixuan’s voice was ice cold.

“This boy!”

A cold light flashed in Huang Zixuan’s eyes. He could only watch helplessly from several miles away as Lin Ming cut open his wrist, and dripped some blood into the crystal bottle.

“Second Uncle, this boy knows he cannot keep the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, so he wants to ruin it!” Huang Sanping’s eyes were red with fury. The Shattered Demon Heart Crystal had to diffuse into one’s blood so it could be guided into the body. If it mixed with the blood essence of others, half of the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal would be ruined.

“He actually dares to ruin my Moon Seizing Sect’s Shattered Demon Heart Crystal! I will waste this boy’s martial arts! I’ll cut him to pieces, and have him suffer an agonizingly slow death!”

Huang Sanping clenched his jaws as he spoke.

....

Lin Ming watched as his blood flowed into the crystal bottle. As his bright red blood touched the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, it immediately began to boil with excitement.

Gu gu gu!

As the blood roiled, the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal began to melt. Lin Ming watched in fascination as the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal and his blood began to fuse together, eventually becoming a viscous, syrupy liquid in the crystal bottle.

“Get ready, we’re going down.”

As Lin Ming's voice fell, the Winged Flood Dragon let out a roar and then plunged straight towards the vast barren mountain range.

The golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle followed right behind!

In terms of body, the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle was several times larger than the Winged Flood Dragon. From this distance, it looked just like a massive eagle that was hunting a small, red snake.

At this time, Lin Ming was tranquil like the surface of a calm lake. He slowly took out the Dreamland Pearl from his spatial ring; this was his final hope.

In that instant that the Winged Flood Dragon touched the ground, Lin Ming held Zhou Xinyu's hand and jumped down from its back. At that same time, he threw out the Dreamland Pearl…

The dreamland enchantment activated!

Hu!

Lin Ming and Zhou Xinyu were completely isolated from the outside world. Zhou Xinyu suddenly felt as if a subtle change had occurred in her surroundings, "This is…"

"It's an illusionary world. it can guarantee us safety for some time." Lin Ming calmly said.

The Dreamland Pearl created a sealed off dreamland enchantment world. It was impossible for anyone below the Xiantian realm to break through. Naturally, it could block any attack from Huang Zixuan.

However, it was impossible for the dreamland enchantment to continue forever. As long as it was active, the enchantment would consume energy. At full energy, the Dreamland Pearl would be able to keep the enchantment up for an entire half day. However, if it was under a sustained barrage of attacks, then it might last only three or four hours.

These three to four hours were all the time Lin Ming had left.

Huang Sanping was stunned silly as he saw Lin Ming and Zhou Xinyu disappear. “What… what happened? Where did they go?”

“Humph, it’s only an illusion, what an insignificant skill.” Huang Zixuan closed his eyes and let his perception flow out. He easily discovered some unusual true essence fluctuations nearby. With his strength, it was easy for him to discover just where the dreamland enchantment was.

“It’s here.”

Huang Zixuan pointed towards a clearing. With his perception scanning the area, he was able to clearly sense a spherical enchantment of some sort, forming its own independent space.

“Haha, so it’s like this.” Huang Sanping grinned. He also felt the existence of the enchantment.

“It’s just an illusion enchantment, isn’t this like an ostrich burying its head in the sand?”

“Third Brother, break his array!” Huang Zixuan didn’t attack, instead letting his Third Brother do the work while he stood by, just in case Lin Ming decided to suddenly launch an attack or escape.

Escaping into this enchantment was equal to a death wish. But then again, even if they didn’t enter this enchantment, they would still die.

The man who was called Third Brother looked 30 to 40 years old. His eyebrows were high, and the angles of his face were just like slanted scars. He took a thick saber in his hand, “Saber technique – Wind Chopper!”

This saber strike contained 70 to 80% of Third Brother’s strength. An azure half-moon of saber energy roared out, slamming into the enchantment.

Bang!

The saber energy shattered. The enchantment only shook a little, without even the slightest bit of

damage.

“Mm?”

The man named Third Brother was taken aback; even Huang Zixuan knitted his eyebrows. The strength of this enchantment had exceeded his imagination.

…………..

At this time, within the enchantment, Lin Ming was sitting cross legged on a rock, unaware of all the fierce and violent attacks that were striking the enchantment from the outside. He took the crystal bottle of the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal that had been melted with his blood, and glanced at Zhou Xinyu, whose entire face had blanched, saying, “Guard me, I will now begin to swallow the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal!”

Chapter 341 – With Effort, Everything Is Possible

Chapter 341 – With Effort, Everything Is Possible

…

…

…

"You… you want to absorb the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal under the protection of the enchantment world!?!?" Zhou Xinyu was stunned; this was simply madness.

Let alone an extraordinary medicine like the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, even a top-level medicine like the Heaven Opening Pill usually required a martial artist to take multiple steps beforehand. They would bathe in incense, seal themselves off in a room, lay down layers of defensive array formations, enter into an absolute quiet where no one would dare to disturb them, and then finally revolve their power to swallow the pill.

But Lin Ming was surrounded by wolves on all sides, each waiting for an opportunity to rip his throat out. The attacks from the outside were endless, and the enchantment wouldn't stop shaking; even the ground trembled. It was unknown just when the energy of the enchantment would run out. In this situation, Lin Ming, a boy with a mere Pulse Condensation cultivation actually wanted to absorb the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal which only a Xiantian master could swallow?

Insanity! Madness!

"Sir Lin, how could you do this, this is suicide!" Zhou Xinyu was extremely anxious.

“There’s no other way.” Lin Ming flicked his fingers, and under the attraction of his soul force, the red liquid in the crystal bottle shot out, turning into a red sphere.

How could Lin Ming not know that this decision was crazy?

The Shattered Demon Heart Crystal was a completely unknown and unfamiliar medicine; he had no idea what total effects it would have if he swallowed it.

Perhaps he might not be able to withstand the baptism of energy, and then blow up.

Even if he could persist through that, the dreamland enchantment would only last for a few hours. If he couldn’t completely absorb the medicinal efficacy in a few hours, and then fully restore his combat strength, he would still die!

Bang!!

With a loud crash, a terrifying explosion sounded from outside the enchantment, the ground suddenly shaking. Huang Zixuan had finally moved. Within the enchantment, Lin Ming could clearly see each and every action that Huang Zixuan took. This sort of oppressive feeling was just like a common mortal facing off against a tiger with only a soon-to-be broken pane of glass between them.

Normally, a martial artist would never be able to calm their hearts and circulate their energy. If anything went wrong, they could be instantly overcome by their inner demons.

But Lin Ming actually wanted to absorb the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal in this situation, and also needed to recover his combat strength within a few hours.

Lin Ming stared at the red ball of liquid that exuded a faint and boundless energy. His mind moved, and the liquid ball split in half, one half drifting towards Lin Ming.

As the red liquid closed in, Lin Ming could feel the blood through his entire body began to boil, as if it were being forcefully summoned upwards.

This demonic blood had an amazingly evil aura!

“No matter how difficult the road ahead of me is, I believe – with effort, anything is possible!”

Xiu!

That melted half of the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal mixed with Lin Ming’s blood shot into his mouth.

As the red liquid entered, a sweet and metallic taste spread through his mouth; this was the taste of blood.

Lin Ming closed his eyes, shut off his six senses, and immediately entered into the ethereal martial intent. Now, the explosions that rocked the earth below him no longer affected him at all.

However, this ethereal state was only maintained for a mere 10 breaths of time, when he was interrupted by a severe pain pouring forth from his dantian, as if it were breaking in half.

Roar!

In Lin Ming’s ears, he could hear a demonic cry sound like a thunderclap, as if it could split stone and dispel clouds. The roar shook Lin Ming’s ears, and blood began to flow from his nose.

This… what is this?

Lin Ming was shocked. He clearly felt that the drop of the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal contained an enormous and terrifyingly overwhelming will! It blotted out the sky, obscuring the mountains and the seas!

Were these the ruined thoughts left behind by the Netherworld Great Emperor?

As this idea popped up, Lin Ming suddenly felt his mind shake.

Bang!

Lin Ming’s consciousness was suddenly pulled back to his spiritual sea. There, in his mind, countless fragmented scenes appeared, each one of these extremely lifelike and real.

Innumerable demons shot up into the sky from his spiritual sea. Their upper bodies were naked, and their skin had a grayish-blue metallic luster. Their bodies were corded with thick muscles, entangled in chains, and they held death scythes in their hands.

Hou hou hou!

As the roars of these demons resounded, all of them suddenly rushed towards Lin Ming. But at this time, Lin Ming had been reborn into an ancient demon god. He held a large mountain axe in his hand, and he stood high in the sky!

That axe was 10 feet long, and thicker than an arm. The axehead was over three feet wide, and the blade itself was a deep, blood red. It emitted a savage and violent energy, causing one’s heart to race.

“Kill kill kill!”

The ancient demon god brandished that large axe, and chopped apart all those rushing demons with a single axe stroke!

In that moment, limbs flew everywhere, blood shot out to all corners of the land.

Every time the ancient evil god killed a demon, he would drink its blood until its eyes went dark and lifeless. But in their wake, countless demons rushed up behind them.

Demonic blood dyed the skies red.

Was this ancient evil god the Netherworld Great Emperor?

Lin Ming was startled. He had a strong feeling that what he was seeing wasn't just illusions, but true events that had occurred in the past. These were the memories of the Netherworld Great Emperor!

Then what were these demons? Where did they come from? Why had this brutal war erupted? Just who was good, and who was evil?

"Hahahahaha!"

Between the heavens and the earth, the Netherworld Great Emperor suddenly burst into wild laughter. His voice was magnificent and boundless, resounding through the universe!

The skies broke apart, and a will that defied the heavens surged forth like a tsunami!

The great axe pointed to the heavens, his foot stepped upon the earth. Within the universe, he alone ruled all!

Bang!

The demonic battlefield suddenly exploded. For a moment, Lin Ming thought that his spiritual sea had disintegrated. He suddenly opened both of his eyes to see that his clothes had all broken, and his entire body was dyed red with blood!

At this moment, Zhou Xinyu's beautiful face had already drained of blood. She didn't know what to do, but when she saw Lin Ming open his eyes, she was worried but also excited. Her voice shook as she said, "Sir Lin, Sir Lin..."

Lin Ming wanted to reply, but as he opened his mouth, all that came out was a mouthful of blood. Lin Ming finally understood the mystery behind the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal. At the same time that it contained a pure and terrifying energy, it also contained the remnants of the Netherworld Great Emperor's consciousness.

Swallowing the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal meant that one had to withstand destruction of both the mind and the body!

Outside the enchantment, Huang Zixuan and his entire group were attacking. The dreamland enchantment began to tremble more and more, and the land which the enchantment was over was already turned to slag.

However, Lin Ming simply wasn't in the mood to care about this. He felt as if his entire body was pinned down with 1000 needles, and 10,000 sabers were twisted into his body. Even with Lin Ming's formidable will, this kind of pain was difficult to resist.

It was enough to cause someone to want to kill themselves.

He was like a sun dried shrimp on the ground. Even his teeth had cracked a bit from him biting down too hard.

Bang!

Lin Ming's consciousness was once again thrown into chaos. The remnant thoughts of the Netherworld Great Emperor were like a tide that broke into Lin Ming's spiritual sea, wanting to wash away all!

Normally, once a martial artist's body had been tortured to the extreme, and they wished to die, their spiritual protection would be incomparably fragile. When the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal's remnant consciousness rushed in at this moment, it was likely they would turn into an idiot.

A peak Houtian master would absolutely not be able to withstand this dual attack. Thus, the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal was only barely able to be absorbed by someone who had a Xiantian cultivation.

Lin Ming's cultivation was only at the Pulse Condensation period. Under the attack of the Netherworld Great Emperor's remnant consciousness against his spiritual sea, even though he was extremely strong-willed, he still had a mind-splitting headache, and his ears bled profusely.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

In a few breaths of times, it was unknown how many times Lin Ming had been bombarded by this remnant consciousness. Towering waves appeared in Lin Ming's spiritual sea, but he was still able to withstand it!

The attack of the Netherworld Great Emperor's remnant conscious was the most dangerous phase for any martial artist that swallowed the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal. But for Lin Ming, it was more scary than truly dangerous.

Before now, Lin Ming had already swallowed the memory fragments of two Supreme Elders from the Realm of the Gods. No matter how strong the Netherworld Great Emperor was, he simply wasn't comparable to the beings from the Realm of the Gods.

Lin Minch clenched his teeth, and began to wear down the Netherworld Great Emperor's remnant consciousness with his own mind and soul. He was aware that if he wanted to absorb the energy from the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, he first had to eliminate the Netherworld Great Emperor's remnant consciousness.

The pain of soul force and consciousness wearing down on each other was unimaginable. It was worse than polishing a gaping bloody wound with sandpaper.

This was true soul-rending pain. When Lin Ming had absorbed the memories of the two elders from the Realm of the Gods, he still hadn't experienced this great a pain. The Supreme Elders from the Realm of the Gods had, after all, only left behind a fragmented soul, without any self-consciousness, only a soul's instinct. As for the Netherworld Great Emperor, he had left behind a true remnant consciousness. To erase this cruel and heaven-defying ill was no easy matter.

Time passed a second and a minute at a time. Lin Ming bled profusely from his head. As he fell over, even the rock underneath him was stained red with blood. If it wasn't for Lin Ming's blood vitality having been enhanced several times by entering the Sorcerer Pagoda, he would have already died from excessive blood loss.

After an endless period of agony, Lin Ming finally stamped out the remnant consciousness left behind by the Netherworld Great Emperor.

Thus, although the energy of the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal was still violent and unruly, without direction from the will of the Netherworld Great Emperor's thoughts, it could finally be moved around by Lin Ming.

"Tempering Marrow!"

Lin Ming's mind echoed with this one thought as he did his best to revolve the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' technique to direct Tempering Marrow. He controlled the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal's energy and directed it into his skeleton; there wasn't much time left!

At first, when Lin Ming had used the energy from the Heaven Opening Pill for Tempering Marrow, because his Bone Forging was too thorough and his bones were perfectly compact, it had been extremely difficult because it was as if they were made from stone. Like this, Tempering Marrow was not easy at all.

Lin Ming had thought that it would also be extremely difficult to force the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal's energy into his bones, but he was wrong. The energy of the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal was like heavy mercury, seizing all opportunities to spread, invading at any chance.

It was like a pointed cone that drilled into Lin Ming's dense skeleton, flowing towards the marrow.

As the energy entered the marrow, Lin Ming felt as if his own marrow had been poured into a vat of boiling oil. What followed was an extremely harrowing marrow pain.

Chi chi chi!

The marrow impurities were burned away by the energy. This feeling was just like his marrow being tossed into a frying pan, all of the impurities being burned away!

Lin Ming was soaked in sweat. This was the last step to absorb the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal.

In the throes of this excruciating pain, Lin Ming maintained his calm and collected thoughts. He realized that the energy from half of the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal wasn't nearly enough to help him complete Tempering Marrow. He had to make a choice. He could first temper a part of his body…

Chapter 342 – Marrow like Golden Soup

Chapter 342 – Marrow like Golden Soup

…

…

…

When Lin Ming had swallowed the Heaven Opening Pill, he had only been able to temper a portion of his right hand because of the limited medicinal efficacy.

After Tempering Marrow, Lin Ming's right hand experienced a massive increase in defensive power and attack power. But, at most it was equal to another trump card; the overall increase in Lin Ming's total strength wasn't too great.

This time, Lin Ming decided to use half of the energy to temper both of his hands, and the other half to temper his entire body.

Only when his entire body had undergone Tempering Marrow would his overall strength rise.

Pa pa pa!

With a sound that was like firewood crackling in flames, Lin Ming grit his teeth and began to revolve the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians'. The manic energy burned through the impurities of his marrow. This painful ache as if one's bones were being set on fire could be imagined.

Lin Ming was supporting himself with his will alone. Once the energy had been swallowed into his body, it could only be refined; failure meant immediate death!

With the advancement of the tempering, a blackish-red color began to appear on Lin Ming's body, and a violent energy surged everywhere in his body. Lin Ming's body quickly heated to a scalding temperature, and blood seeped out from his pores, covering him in a shell of red blood, seeming as if it would tear like broken paper at the slightest touch.

From the side, Zhou Xinyu could only watch in shock. Where did Lin Ming resemble a human at this moment? He was like a fish that had been taken out from a pool of blood and then dried out over a fire. The fact that Lin Ming was alive right now was a miracle in itself.

In fact, to swallow the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal at the Pulse Condensation period and still last for over half an hour and already surpassed the scope of Zhou Xinyu's understanding.

However, it didn't seem as if this miracle could continue. Lin Ming's breath was becoming increasingly faint, and whilst he had been painfully struggling before, his struggles were weakening, like a lamp that was almost out of oil. Finally, he stopped moving altogether, his expression frozen in time like a crimson sculpture. His twisted face looked like a suffering soul that had been nailed to an execution column in hell.

Zhou Xinyu's heart began to gradually sink.

In this situation, it was meaningless even if Lin Ming survived. All of the blood in his body seemed to have been drained away. Lin Ming didn't even have strength anymore, not to mention his combat strength.

If he was in a safe and secure room, with the support of many precious medicines and under the care of masters, Lin Ming might have been able to be reborn from this trial. For a mere Pulse Condensation period youth to swallow a Shattered Demon Heart Crystal and survive, his future achievements could be imagined!

However… he wouldn't have this opportunity. He had chosen the wrong place and the wrong time to swallow the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal. Even with his talent, this was pushing it too far!

Hong hong hong!

Outside the dreamland enchantment, the attacks of Huang Zixuan and his group began again!

Zhou Xinyu closed her eyes in anguish and took out a coldly shining dagger from her spatial ring. Zhou Xinyu had been prepared for this from the time that Lin Ming had absorbed the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal. If Lin Ming died, she would commit suicide. If she fell into Huang Sanping's hands, her fate might be worse than death.

The dreamland enchantment began to shake more and more fiercely. In this half hour, Huang Zixuan had been waiting outside of the enchantment, never leaving. During this time period, they would bombard the enchantment every once in a while.

Even though Zhou Xinyu didn't understand anything about array formations or this enchantment, she was still able to see that the energy that supported the dreamland enchantment was being continuously consumed; it probably wouldn't be able to last much longer.

Ka ka ka –

Because of the violent tremors, the ground under Zhou Xinyu's feet had cracked, and the rocks had broken open. It looked no different than a crushed cookie.

The violent storm of attacks lasted for another quarter hour and then died down. It was probably because Huang Zixuan feared he would consume too much energy, and even if he broke the enchantment, he wouldn't have the strength to stop Lin Ming from escaping. Thus, after every quarter hour of attacks, he would stop and sit down, meditating and restoring himself to his best battle state.

Zhou Xinyu let out a long breath and turned to look at Lin Ming. She was surprised to see that with Lin Ming's terrifying appearance, he had stopped bleeding. It wasn't that his wounds had healed, but rather that he had reached the point where there was no more blood to flow.

His skin blackened red and cracking, his blood charred into a shell of blood, it was like he had gone through the ancient torture of being sliced up and then tied to a blazing copper pillar.

Only that method could mimic Lin Ming's miserable appearance at this time.

If she hadn't been able to feel a faint, nearly invisible breath coming from Lin Ming, Zhou Xinyu would have thought that he already died.

Zhou Xinyu's heart surged with waves of despair. She couldn't depend on Lin Ming. Although he had created a miracle and didn't die after swallowing the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal with his Pulse Condensation period cultivation for an hour, at present, how could he have the ability to fight?

Zhou Xinyu stared at the dagger in her hands. She made her decision. When the enchantment broke, she would first kill Lin Ming, and then commit suicide. After all, the only reason that Lin Ming had ended up in this state was because of her. If she let Lin Ming fall into their hands, his death would be even more tragic.

One hour… two hours… three hours…

Lin Ming seemed dead. Sitting on the broken rock, his eyes dull and lifeless, the only sign that he was alive was the weak fire of life that burned within him.

From the outside, he didn't appear any different than a corpse that was charred in a fire; there wasn't even blood. But throughout Lin Ming's entire body, the marrow was slowly coated in a pale gold color…

Energy tempering marrow!

The moment that Lin Ming's blood had run dry, he had been surprised to find that the tempering marrow process became much easier!

Because his blood was exhausted, the unforgettable pain had numbed his entire body. At this point where it was nearly impossible for him to direct the flow of true essence in his body, he found that the energy that tempered his marrows proceeded at a much smoother pace!

Then, he realized that blood and marrow were originally intertwined. Marrow gave birth to blood, and blood fed the marrow, both of them dependent on each other.

Thus, if one wanted to temper marrow, they had to change their blood first!

It was only when the old blood was drained away, the marrow was tempered, and new blood regenerated, would it be the complete Tempering Marrow process.

Therefore, Lin Ming no longer tried to stop his body's old blood from leaking, letting it cleanly flow out. As for Lin Ming, relying on his strong inner vitality, he was just barely able to maintain the fire of his life.

As the eastern sky brightened in the dawn, the golden color of Lin Ming's marrow became increasingly rich, as if golden flakes were mixed within.

Marrow like golden soup!

At the moment that Lin Ming finished absorbing the medicinal efficacy of the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, his new and improved marrow began to regenerate blood.

With the rapid consumption of the origin energy within Lin Ming's body, new blood flowed unceasingly from his marrow.

This new blood was incomparably thick and heavy, just like red mercury flowing in his blood vessels. Wherever this blood went, the wounds would rapidly heal.

The recovery of Lin Ming's body and the production of new blood rapidly consumed Lin Ming's true essence. Although Lin Ming's true essence was extremely thick, over half of it was still used.

However, after the true essence had been consumed to a certain point, the compressed true essence in the Heretical God Seed automatically released itself. The energy of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder and the Earthcore Crimson Flame were also released along with it. The power of thunder and fire, especially the power of thunder, contained an extremely raw and vibrant force of life.

Legends said that in the most ancient of times, when the infinite universe was in primal chaos, there was no life. It was only when thunder struck the ancient sea were the most primitive of life forms born.

With the raw and lively power of thunder helping to complete the final Tempering Marrow process, a faint purple light appeared in the thick, new blood, as if lightning had fused into the blood.

Lin Ming's body underwent many subtle changes. But, from all appearances, the fire of Lin Ming's life still seemed incomparably weak. His true essence had hidden within the Heretical God Seed – aside from Lin Ming himself, no one else could feel this.

…………………

Bang!!

Outside of the enchantment, Huang Zixuan and his group began another round of attacks. Huang Zixuan was already impatient, he hadn't expected that such a fragile looking enchantment would actually be so tough.

"Second Uncle, let's use our finishing blows together, we can't let this drag on any further. It's already been over three hours, if this continues much longer, reinforcements might arrive. When that happens, it will be extremely troublesome."

Huang Zixuan hesitated. Before now he had always been staying his hand, in fear that even if he broke the enchantment, he would consume too much of his strength and wouldn't be able to grab Lin Ming. Now after so many repeated delays, he had gradually and finally lost his patience. It was just like Huang Sanping said. In the end, this was the territory of the

Seven Profound Valleys and that boy seemed to be some renowned genius from a sect. If they stayed here too long, a master might come to rescue him.

"Alright, let's attack together!"

Huang Zixuan gave a clear, loud cough, and the black fog around his body began to thicken. His Third Brother and also that short, weak man also began to prepare their finishing blows.

As they attacked together, their strike was like a brilliant comet that cut a shining bright path through the air, smashing into the dreamland enchantment.

Bang!

In the hazy dawn of the valley, a dazzling sun seemed to rise. The earth shook, and massive amounts of rocks and stones flew into the air. Several massive craters dozens of feet deep had appeared in the ground underneath the dreamland enchantment.

The protective enchantment dramatically deformed, like a drifting boat riding massive waves in the high sea. All the rocks around the enchantment had broken, and Zhou Xinyu's face was incomparably white, her forehead beaded with sweat.

"Try harder!"

Huang Sanping shouted. The one that had used the most effort here was him. After all, regardless of how much true essence he used, he still wouldn't be Lin Ming's match, so he was able to go all out.

Huang Zixuan frowned. He ignored the energy in his body which was no longer at its optimum level, and grit his teeth as he released another powerful martial skill.

Ka ka ka…

With the sound of cracking glass, the dreamland enchantment that had withstood a massive barrage of attacks for a long time was finally nearly depleted of energy, visible cracks appearing on the barrier.

Seeing these cracks, Zhou Xinyu stopped breathing for a moment. No one wanted to die, especially her since she still had a deep blood feud she wanted to settle. Under this enormous pressure, she clenched her teeth. The reason that she was persisting until the last moment was because she was waiting for some miracle to occur.

Chapter 343 – Broken Bones

Chapter 343 – Broken Bones

…

…

…

However, now that three hours passed, Lin Ming's breath of life was almost at its end, and there was no master that accidently passed by to save them. It seemed as if… the god of death had cast his final judgment!

Zhou Xinyu bit her lip until it hurt, then she suddenly swiveled towards Lin Ming behind her, thrusting the coldly shining dagger she held into his chest!

Pu!

The dagger pierced through!

Lin Ming was thrust back by the impact of Zhou Xinyu's dagger. At that same time, with an explosion, the dreamland enchantment completely shattered!

How… how could this happen?

Zhou Xinyu was shocked. This dagger of hers was a high-grade human-step treasure. After she poured her true essence into it, she would be able to cut Lin Ming like a piece of tofu, especially since he didn't have any true essence protecting him. But as the dagger slid a third of the way through, it suddenly became stuck in his ribs.

To stab, it would not stab through.

To pull out, she could not pull it out.

However, in this short delay, Zhou Xinyu had already lost the chance to commit suicide.

“You want to die? It’s not that easy!”

Huang Zixuan was like a ghost as he appeared near Zhou Xinyu’s side. His skinny hand grabbed Zhou Xinyu’s wrist, forcefully pinching, wringing the dagger out of her hand. At this time, a thick influx of true essence entered her body, directly sealing all of her meridians.

With a sect peak Pulse Condensation martial artist and a sect peak Houtian martial artist, the difference between the two was just too great.

“Ah!” Zhou Xinyu screamed, her beautiful face paling. A thought emerged in her heart: her true essence was sealed, she wouldn’t even have the chance to alienate her meridians and kill herself!

“Haha, you whore, I wonder where you’ll run off to this time?”

Huang Sanping contemptuously laughed, brazenly looking over Zhou Xinyu’s mature and fabulous figure, his eyes full of immoral and lascivious thoughts. Ever since he had been deprived of his status as the successor to the Sect Master, and then all the overwhelming amount of resources had also gone over to his junior-apprentice sister, he had regarded her as a thorn in his side. Ever since then, he had wanted to lock her up, then completely humiliate and ravage her to no end.

“Junior-apprentice Sister, I was hoping for this day to come. Finally, you have fallen into my hands. Be relieved, I won’t kill you. I don’t know how many times I wished that I could lock you away, waste your martial arts, and plunder you daily.” Huang Sanping greedily licked his lips; this was truly the most wonderful and greatest event ever. Naturally, as a genius of the Moon Seizing Sect, he had no lack of women swarming around him. But the woman in front of him was different. She was the one that was favored by the Moon Seizing Sect’s Sect Master to be the future successor. Being able to ruin someone with Zhou Xinyu’s status brought him a great deal of excitement and satisfaction.

Zhou Xinyu had lost all color. The situation had changed so quickly that she hadn't been able to react. How come the dagger hadn't pierced Lin Ming's heart, but had gotten stuck in his chest?

Lin Ming's inner vitality was obviously incomparably weak, and he didn't even have 20% of his true essence left over, so how could he possibly have blocked her dagger?

No, she no longer had the time to dwell on this. Thinking about the hellish future she would have to live, she only felt absolutely horrified! With her true essence sealed, she didn't even have the ability to commit suicide. As for biting her tongue to kill herself, even mortals wouldn't die, much less a martial artist.

"Mm? This fellow?" Huang Sanping saw Lin Ming suddenly lying on the ground, a dagger stuck in his chest, and his eyes filled with puzzlement. How did he become like this? His entire body was a blackened red; this method of dying was truly tragic!

"What happened to this boy?" Huang Sanping stopped appreciating Zhou Xinyu's frightened expression as he shifted his attention to Lin Ming.

"He probably swallowed the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal. How stupid of him. Did he think he could rely on the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal to make a breakthrough in this final moment, and reverse the tables to kill us? Humph! Even if I swallow the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, I will still die when my body explodes from the energy!" Huang Zixuan sullenly said as he sneered.

"Motherf*cker!" Huang Sanping flew into a rage as he heard this, "This idiot! If he dies then he should die alone, but why does he have to touch my precious Shattered Demon Heart Crystal! F*ck!"

As Huang Sanping spoke, he suddenly realized something and then turned onto Zhou Xinyu, his wicked eyes changing into those of a wild beast that wanted to take a bite out of its prey, "You slut, why would you give him the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal!"

As he spoke, he grabbed Zhou Xinyu's hair and viciously yanked, causing her to painfully scream.

"Slut! Slut! You dare help outsiders! I will let you know what it means to beg for death! Second Uncle, break this slut's meridians first and ruin her martial arts, lest she cause any more trouble in the future!" As Huang Sanping spoke, he discovered that Huang Zixuan stood there as if he hadn't heard him. Instead, his eyes were shifted onto Lin Ming.

Huang Sanping looked down, and suddenly paused; he could feel a faint breath of life coming from Lin Ming's body.

"This boy hasn't died!? He's like this, but he still has life?" Huang Sanping said with surprise.

Huang Zixuan frowned, then slowly said, "To live up to now even after swallowing the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal is really a cause for surprise. Looking at his appearance, he should have already persisted for a long period of time, yet he hasn't died!"

"Humph! He hasn't died? Even better. First I'll tear apart his hand and feet tendons, and then I'll save him. I want him to experience a life worse than death!" Huang Sanping's eyes flashed with a bloodthirsty elation. If Lin Ming had died so easily, it would be difficult to erase the hate in his heart.

Huang Zixuan shook his head and said, "It's useless. Since he swallowed the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, he will die without a doubt. Even a Xiantian master with insufficient cultivation will die, let alone this boy."

"Every moment he can live longer is fine." Huang Sanping grinned as he walked over, grabbing Lin Ming. First he would feed him some pills to sustain his life, then before anything else, he would slice Lin Ming's wrist and cut apart his wrist tendons.

Pu!

The saber stabbed down. But, it didn’t enter that deeply. The blade pierced down just a bit, cutting apart the blackish-red skin, then was stuck there as if it were mired, unable to enter any further.

“Mm? What happened?”

Huang Sanping frowned. He saw Lin Ming’s skin began to rustle as it flaked away like dried scraps of paper being burned away by fire. Then, under that blackened exterior was tender flesh that seemed as if it were from a newborn baby.

As Huang Sanping’s blade attempted to cut into this tender pink flesh, it wasn’t even able to leave behind a scar.

Huang Sanping looked as if he saw a ghost while he watched this scene. But, he didn’t believe in superstitious nonsense. He kept slicing at Lin Ming’s body, but each sword was only able to rub off the blackened red skin, revealing the incomparably soft skin underneath, without even a single blade scar left behind.

“Ping’er, fall back!”

Huang Zixuan’s expression changed; something wasn’t right!

However, his voice hadn’t even faded when it was too late. The entire scene suddenly charged. Lin Ming, who was lying like a corpse on the ground suddenly opened his eyes, his pupils colored with a deep glazed fold, thunder shooting out from his sharp gaze.

Lin Ming glanced at the panic-stricken Huang Sanping with indifference in his eyes.

Huang Sanping was someone who wouldn’t be afraid even if he saw a corpse jump up from its grave. However, Lin Ming’s gaze was too terrifying. It was just like the eyes of a death god, a callous apathy that froze the soul, causing anyone who saw it to shiver.

Huang Sanping instantly paled.

“Ping’er! Hurry up and run!”

Huang Zixuan began to circulate the black fog that covered his body. In that moment, he had felt a terrifying killing intent from Lin Ming's body. He didn't know where this sudden burst of overwhelming vitality came from; how was this even the least bit like a dying man!?

He wanted to give a loud shout as a warning, however, it was too late.

Lin Ming's right hand flashed atop of the horrified Huang Zixuan's palm, clenching down.

Kacha!

The crisp sound of bones breaking echoed in the mountain valley; this was especially clear in the extraordinarily silent morning dawn!

Huang Sanping watched in helpless horror as his right hand was suddenly bent awkwardly, bones protruding from his wrist. For a time, he was silent, in complete disbelief at what just happened.

"Ahhhhh!!!!"

Huang Sanping wailed in pain and desperation. At the same time, Huang Zixuan shot forwards!

"Die!"

In a rush, he wasn't able to think about why Lin Ming didn't die, or how he had suddenly crushed Huang Sanping's bones. His sword thrust forth, directly towards Lin Ming's chest!

Lin Ming suddenly turned around, and his once silent true essence erupted like a volcano, along with the power of thunder and fire from the Heretical God Seed. Lin Ming's momentum had climbed to the extreme!

Lin Ming's right hand flashed with the radiance of his azure true essence, he reached out and grabbed Huang Zixuan's sword!

Ka ka… zhi zhi zhi!

To Huang Zixuan's imminent horror, Lin Ming had actually seized the sword with his bare heads, and twisted that high-grade human-step treasure with the bare flesh of his palms!

What!?

Huang Zixuan was in utter disbelief. Although Lin Ming's palm was enveloped in azure true essence, it was impossible for human flesh to warp a high-grade human treasure! There were martial artists who were masters at fist and palm fighting skills, but they all covered their hands with treasure gloves. Otherwise, how could the human body possible compare to a treasure weapon?

In that split-second, Huang Zixuan could no longer reflect on this. As Lin Ming's right hand gripped the treasure sword, his left hand formed a fist.

Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!

An immense and brutal vibrating true essence erupted forth like a massive tsunami. In that moment, Huang Zixuan felt like his own body was a single leaf in a giant hurricane – he could be torn apart at any time!

In this critical moment, Huang Zixuan gave a loud shot, and true essence in his body revolved to the limit, transforming into a sharp sword light that collided with Lin Ming's fist.

Kacha!

The sword light was smashed to pieces and Huang Zixuan flipped backwards like a broken kite, the blood in his body surging. He barely managed to keep his balance as he dropped to the ground, forced to take several steps back. His face was colored with dread.

It wasn't only Huang Zixuan, but the eagle handler, and the Third Brother also had a complete change in their complexion. Just what had happened? How had Lin Ming who was lying on the ground like a corpse suddenly revived? Where did the true essence in his body come from?

And the most startled was Zhou Xinyu. She was the one who had stayed together with Lin Ming this entire time, and was able to see the physical changes of his body. She had seen more than half of Lin Ming’s true essence leave his body, and the fire of his life become incomparably weak. Where did this terrifying strength come from?

Chapter 344 – Thunder Breaking Demon Arts

Chapter 344 – Thunder Breaking Demon Arts

…

…

…

"You… who are you?"

Huang Zixuan looked at Lin Ming, alarmed. Before they had chased him all the way here, in that short instant when they fought, he hadn't been able to clearly see Lin Ming's cultivation. But now that Lin Ming was in front of him, he saw that he was at the late Pulse Condensation period.

For someone who had just entered the Pulse Condensation period to actually be able to swallow the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal with that cultivation and not die, yet also have the strength to suppress him afterwards… was there really such a person in this world?

Lin Ming didn't waste time responding to Huang Zixuan's nonsense. After he swallowed the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal and tempered his marrow, his body had to produce new blood. Although he had smoothly entered into the late Pulse Condensation period, the process of creating new blood after tempering his marrow had exhausted nearly all of his true essence. Now the energy he used was almost purely from the compressed true essence that was hidden within the Heretical God Seed. But, this sort of true essence would be consumed quickly. It was equal to opening the Heretical God Force – it was impossible for it to last long.

Lin Ming's right hand shook, the Purple Comet Spear flew forwards!

Azure true essence howled in the air, the space around the spearpoint began to tremble.

Huang Zixuan's complexion sank. He coldly said, "It seems you want to die quickly. You think you won against me with just a single move? Don't force me to use the Moon Seizing Sect's forbidden technique! We'll both die together!"

Hearing the words 'forbidden technique', Lin Ming didn't respond, but Zhou Xinyu's paled. Obviously, this forbidden technique that Huang Zixuan mentioned was not fake.

"Sir Lin, the Moon Seizing Sect's forbidden technique was obtained on the same year they invaded the Silent Demon Emperor City. It's half of a demonic secret skill jade slip that they obtained, 'Blood Shadow Great Technique'. You can kill 1000 at the loss of 800. To use it requires one to sacrifice their life force and cultivation as the price. The power of this skill is astoundingly strong!" Zhou Xinyu quickly said to Lin Ming through a true essence sound transmission. This battle would naturally be determined by Lin Ming, she only wanted to inform him.

Huang Zixuan was able to guess from Zhou Xinyu's facial expressions that she was using at true essence sound transmission to speak to Lin Ming, and then a smug smiled appeared on his face. He threateningly said, "Boy, let me give you a tip. Once I use this technique, you will die without a doubt. But, I do not want to injury my life and cultivation. In comparison to my life, the treasures that the Moon Seizing Sect left behind are naturally insignificant! If you are willing to agree to a truce, then I will let you off. You can even take away some of the treasures. Otherwise... you will die!"

Lin Ming didn't respond to Huang Zixuan with words. They only thing that responded to him was Lin Ming's spear, billowing with the power of rolling thunder and fire!

Hong long long!

Air shook, true essence howled.

Huang Zixuan's face flashed with a hideous expression, "You have forced my hand! Blood Shadow Great Art!"

Pah!

Countless lines of blood suddenly appeared in Huang Zixuan's arms. His true essence fused with the blood, becoming a bloody mist. Suddenly, the black fog that surrounded his body turned into a vibrant crimson color.

Huang Zixuan's eyes turned blood red, the muscles of his hands bulging, his nails extending out like demonic claws. His gaze was full of bloodlust. This Blood Shadow Great Art not only damaged one's life and cultivation, but it would also affect their will. Once they used it, they would not be able to control the desire for slaughter and thirst for blood that rampaged in their hearts.

"Die!"

Huang Zixuan rushed out with a punch. A massive crimson demon claw flew towards Lin Ming, accompanied by the wails and cries of ghosts, and a surge of bloody wind and air.

This blood wind was not an illusion, but was truly blood – Huang Zixuan's blood.

As Lin Ming faced this massive crimson demon claw, his vision narrowed.

"Hou—!"

A deafening dragon roar impacted the heavens. In that moment, the dragon cry broke the clouds and split stones, the eminent might of a dragon filling the endless space, shocking the minds and bodies of anyone who heard it.

That short moment was like an illusion, like a dream. The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder that lurked within the Heretical God Seed roared forth, transforming into the shadow of a Purple Flood Dragon as it clashed with the demonic claw.

Bang!

The crimson demon claw broke apart, a shock wave surging in all directions. Broken stone flew everywhere, and all the land within dozens of feet was overturned or razed. But amidst the bloody mist, the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder broke through, crashing into Huang Zixuan.

Huang Zixuan's face immediately paled, "What kind of thunder is this!?"

The power of thunder was the element that most suppressed ghosts, evil, and demonic beings. During a thunderstorm, ghosts could not be born. Those that cultivated demon arts or ghostly arts were often turned to ashes and extinguished when facing heavenly tribulation during their disaster of thunder. As for the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, that was a high-level Thunder Soul, and it also contained the peerless and inherent might of a dragon. Lin Ming's blood was also fused with the blood of a True Dragon. How could a little beginner's demon art possibly resist it? Much less Huang Zixuan who only had half of the whole.

Facing the roaring Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, Huang Zixuan had no time to think. He bit his tongue and spat out his blood essence. The black and red mist transformed into a bloody shield in front of him, blocking the attack of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder.

Bang!

The shield shattered. Huang Zixuan gave a miserable cry as he flew backwards. Lin Ming didn't give him the smallest chance to catch his breath. He immediately displayed Golden Roc Shattering the Void, and his body flashed as he appeared near Huang Zixuan, his spear stabbing out!

The power of thunder and flame blasted out. Lin Ming used 20% of the true Thunderfire Annihilation!

A terrifying energy rushed out from the spear, forming a vacuum in space. Huang Zixuan's face twisted. He gathered together his final strength to counterattack. He slashed out with his demon claw, avoiding the Purple Comet Spear to grab Lin Ming's rib. Attacking Lin Ming's main body was the only way to force Lin Ming to retreat.

However, how could Lin Ming give him such a hope? Lin Ming's hand loosened and he suddenly stormed backwards, a crimson flaming chain appearing at the end of the long spear. He had shot out the Purple Comet Spear!

Puff!

The Purple Comet Spear easily pierced through Huang Zixuan's body. The 20% power Thunderfire Annihilation didn't explode, but turned into a manic and violently brutal energy that broke into Huang Zixuan's body, tearing all of his organs and meridians into pieces.

Huang Zixuan spat out a mouthful of blood, and desolate hopelessness flashed in his eyes. His dantian wasn't destroyed so he wouldn't die immediately, but he could only live for a few more breaths.

Ka!

The crimson chain tightened, and the Purple Comet Spear was pulled loose. As the spear came out, blood rained on the floor, and Huang Zixuan's corpse fell to the ground.

Seeing Huang Zixuan's blood dye the rock red, the handler and Huang Zixuan's third brother were ashen. They couldn't believe everything that had just happened. An outer court elder of the Moon Seizing Sect, Huang Zixuan, whose strength reached the limit of the Houtian realm was actually killed in less than 10 breaths of time by such a young boy!??!

The battle was fast, the moves were fierce. It was bewildering and unexpected!

But at this moment, Lin Ming turned his head, an icy gaze shooting out. Everyone that followed Huang Zixuan felt like their hearts had jumped into their throats.

The eagle handler was frightened to the point where he immediately slumped to the ground, but the other two Houtian masters glanced at each other, and without a single word, launched their movement techniques and flew in separate directions, rapidly escaping!

“You want to run?”

Lin Ming sneered, then activated the Golden Roc Shattering the Void movement technique and the Concept of Wind. He would first let that middle Houtian realm master off for now, and chase down the late Houtian man called Third Brother!

Lin Ming’s speed wasn’t where his strength lay, but that was only relative to those monstrous geniuses whose speed reached the limit, such as Jiang Baoyun. Now, with Lin Ming’s cultivation having continuously broken through, along with his understanding of the Concept of Wind having increased, how could an ordinary late Houtian master compare to him?

As the two ran away, Lin Ming soon caught up in just a dozen breaths of time.

A spear thrust forth.

Flow like Silk!

10,000 vibrating true essence threads roared into the area, weaving into an inescapable net, directly blocking the path of the man.

“Ah!”

The third brother gave a desperate cry, his saber slashing down at the azure true essence. However, the azure true essence was infinitely tough – how could he cut through it? Not only that, but as he struck it, a terrifying vibrating force transferred up his weapon, causing his blood to roil and his weapon to nearly shake free from his hand.

“Don’t!”

In the moment of life or death, the third brother left out a cry of despair. However, Lin Ming showed no mercy. A spear pierced through the man’s dantian, twisting his true essence. The man’s dantian broke apart, and he bled from the head, immediately dying.

Lin Ming took the man's spatial ring and then retrieved his spear. He turned towards another direction to chase down the middle Houtian martial artist.

Although Lin Ming's cultivation had reached the late Pulse Condensation period, with his strength chasing one person was fine, but chasing two was a bit troublesome. With Lin Ming's current soul force strength, he wasn't yet able to completely lock onto someone. This vast barren mountain had valleys and stone cliffs everywhere. If this man looked for a place to hide, then it would be very difficult to find him.

However, Lin Ming wasn't alone; he also had the Winged Flood Dragon.

At the same time that Lin Ming chased after the third brother, Chi Yan was following that middle Houtian master. Although Chi Yan was still a child, it also had the strength of a sect's ordinary Houtian martial artist. It was completely able to follow and hound a middle Houtian master.

Once followed by Chi Yan, the man was extremely anxious. With his limited strength, he couldn't do anything about Chi Yan. He had attacked several times with no results. Instead, he was just wasting his time.

And at this time, Lin Ming arrived. He carried the Purple Comet Spear that was stained red with blood. His entire body was covered with rags, and the aura that he was emitting was the same as a blood-crazy demon.

Seeing him, the man was frightened out of his wits.

"Young Hero please forgive me, I was only forced by Huang Zixuan! I am innocent…"

His voice abruptly ended here. Lin Ming stabbed out with his spear, directly crushing the man's dantian to pieces!

"Innocent?" Lin Min sneered.

In this world, no one was innocent.

If a man tried to kill others for their own benefit, then they had to be prepared to die in exchange.

To be filled with such bloodlust and excitement when killing someone, but actually proclaiming themselves innocent when they were at the door of death… this sort of person should die sooner.

Lin Ming took this man’s spatial ring, hopped atop Chi Yan, and flew back.

Huang Zixuan had already died, and all his hopes with him. Huang Sanping’s wrist was shattered by Lin Ming. To a normal Pulse Condensation martial artist, a broken wrist wasn’t a wound that was fatal. But before this, Huang Sanping had already suffered an extreme attack from Lin Ming, and had spat out a great deal of blood and viscera. Now that there were injuries piled atop his old injuries, he no longer had any strength to resist.

Seeing Lin Ming return, Huang Sanping’s face showed a touch of despair and fear, just like a man on the execution grounds who had been sentenced to death.

Few people were unafraid of death, especially those promising talents of sects. Huang Sanping’s lips trembled, and his voice shook as he asked, “You… you are Lin Ming?”

Chapter 345 – Reborn

Chapter 345 – Reborn

…

…

…

Huang Sanping's lips trembled, and his voice shook as he asked, "You… you are Lin Ming?"

Lin Ming glanced at Huang Sanping in surprise; he hadn't expected that the mewling kid in front of him would guess his identity the moment before his own death. But, it wasn't too difficult to guess. The strength he had just shown belonged to a sect's absolute top talent, and this was also the territory of the Seven Profound Valleys. His name had been floating around for a while, ever since Divine Phoenix Island had announced him as their sole heaven-step talent.

This time, Lin Ming had no need to hide anything. He indifferently nodded and said, "That's right."

"So you were…" Huang Sanping's frightened face bent up in an awkward smile. As he smiled, his face began to twitch, and it looked somewhere between an extremely ugly laugh and a cry.

As one of the geniuses on Divine Phoenix Island's joint talent training program, how could he never have heard the name of Lin Ming, the only heaven-step talent that was listed. A heaven-step talent could enjoy treatment equal to a core disciple of Divine Phoenix Island.

How many people envied?

How many people were jealous?

Huang Sanping had always been an extremely jealous man. When he had heard of this, jealousy had flooded his entire body, incapacitating him. He had always kept a thought in the back of his mind that he would take revenge on Lin Ming one day, but he never thought that...

Genius? How ridiculous!

Huang Sanping had been labeled a genius ever since he was a child. Now, that title, in front of this monster, was nothing more than a joke. In front of this monster, he didn't even have the slightest ability to resist. Huang Sanping always thought that if he could obtain the treasures left behind by the Moon Seizing Sect, then the future world would be his for the taking. He would become the heroic lead of the entire Sky Spill Continent. But now, all his hopes and dreams seemed incomparably comical, a complete farce.

A monster like Lin Ming was able to swallow the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal with a mere Pulse Condensation period cultivation. Against this person, how could he possibly compare to him in any measure?

Lin Ming looked at Zhou Xinyu and said, “Do you want to do it yourself?”

Lin Ming assumed that the resentment and grudges that ran between Huang Sanping and Zhou Xinyu were deep. If she finished this by her own hands, it would be easier for her to clear her thoughts and spirit.

Zhou Xinyu glared at Huang Sanping with hate seething in her eyes. Although Huang Sanping was severely injured, that still didn't resolve the hostility in her heart. She had almost been captured by him. And if she were, she would have suffered a life of endless torment, being humiliated daily.

Thinking this, Zhou Xinyu shuddered.

Zhou Xinyu grit her teeth, took out a treasure longsword, and stabbed Huang Sanping's heart.

Blood shot out, and Huang Sanping's eyes turned lifeless. As Lin Ming saw this, he sighed; yet another genius had fallen from the skies.

On the path of martial artists, a mediocre person may not have a good life, but a genius could die a miserable death at any time.

Of course, to a sect at the level of Divine Phoenix Island, Huang Sanping couldn't even be considered a genius; he would have been long eliminated before the Xiantian realm.

The Xiantian realm, Revolving Core realm, and even higher realms above, every stage had a vast number of martial artists that were eliminated from advancement. To talents that were even more amazing and extraordinary than Huang Sanping – like Qin Wuxin – they would be stopped after the Xiantian realm. To talents even more outstanding than Qin Wuxin – like Jiang Baoyun – they might be eliminated from advancing after reaching the Revolving Core realm.

As for talents even more exceptional than Jiang Baoyun – like Mu Qianyu – they might be stopped after becoming a Peerless Emperor…

The path of martial arts was infinite and endless. Lin Ming could feel in his soul that if he didn't seize every chance to enhance his cultivation, then one day, the destiny of being eliminated would fall upon his own head!

After witnessing the inimitable war within the Realm of the Gods, Lin Ming's scope of vision had already transcended Sky Spill Continent and stood on a higher level. He would never be complacent with any achievements that he attained.

He knew that he was just a frog in the well that had taken a brief scenic trip on the outside before returning. Even when it came to the most basic of Body Transformation's realms, the Tempering Marrow boundary, he had only traced the very edge of it.

Lin Ming guessed that in order to fully complete Tempering Marrow, he would need thousands upon thousands of Heaven Opening Pills.

Although the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal was strong, a dozen or so of those crystals could not match up to several thousand Heaven Opening Pills. With the help of half a Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, Lin Ming's Tempering Marrow was only semi-complete. Even with a dozen more Shattered Demon Heart Crystals, it would still be nearly impossible to thoroughly complete Tempering Marrow.

However, in the path of Tempering Marrow, the quality was much more important than quantity. Normally, the first time a pill was eaten would have the greatest effect. Afterwards, the effects would increasingly weaken every time. Although the Heaven Opening Pill was good, after one or two thousand, Lin Ming would reach the limit of its effectiveness; anything more than that wouldn't help.

The Shattered Demon Heart Crystal was a top-level high quality potently powerful pill in comparison to the Heaven Opening Pill, but what effects would there still be if he ate 10?

Lin Ming wasn't sure, but even in a bad situation, he should still be able to complete 60-70% of Tempering Marrow. With that success, he might not even need to fear Ouyang Boyan.

He might even kill him instead.

If this idea of Lin Ming's was known by other martial artists, they might have died from vomiting blood in anger. The incomparably precious Heaven Opening Pill was actually considered being taken in units of 1000; if they weren't struck to death by thunder, they would be irritated to death.

After tidying all of Huang Zixuan's followers, Lin Ming returned to Zhou Xinyu and begun to search through the spatial rings.

Lin Ming didn't have much hope that these people would have anything too interesting; a third-grade genius' belongings could only be considered change to him now.

After looking through everything, the only objects of notice were several high-grade human-step treasures, the Moon Seizing Sect's cultivation method jade slips, several thousand low-grade true essence stones, and also some bottles of pills. Through everything, there wasn't even a single Heaven Opening Pill.

He didn't know that the reason Huang Sanping had gotten tangled into this mess was because he had given his Heaven Opening Pill to Huang Zixuan to swallow.

The cultivation method jade slips were all given back to Zhou Xinyu. Naturally, he had no need for things like this. He kept the treasures and pills, for future use or if he needed to give them to anyone. As for the true essence stones, they were kept for spending money. As for the rest, Lin Ming didn't have much hope, and his Lin Family didn't need it either. He was preparing to throw it away, but at this moment he took another casual glance and found something interesting.

This wasn't Huang Zixuan's or Huang Sanping's, but it belonged to the weakest eagle handler. It was a very ancient jade slip that contained some sort of technique called the Psychic Soul Art.

In summary, it was a secret method to communicate with beasts. This eagle handler was a complete mess when it came to martial talent and cultivation, and at 40 to 50 years of age had only reached an early Pulse Condensation cultivation, and that was also relying on pills to forcefully raise it. His combat strength wasn't better than a common martial artist; in fact, it was even worse.

However, because he had a talent that was able to communicate with beasts, he was appointed by the Moon Seizing Sect to handle the golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle. It seemed that this eagle handler's talent had a great connection to this jade slip.

Although this jade slip didn't seem very practical, it looked like a lot of fun. Thus, Lin Ming readily placed it in his spatial ring.

“Let’s go, we’ll look for a cave to rest in. I have to meditate and restore my true essence.” Lin Ming said to Zhou Xinyu.

“Mm.” Zhou Xinyu timidly nodded. The series of events that just occurred was too shocking for her. Lin Ming, with his Pulse Condensation cultivation had swallowed the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal and hadn’t died. Not only that, but afterwards he had revived and killed Huang Zixuan in less than 10 breaths of time!

However, there were things that confused Zhou Xinyu. The Shattered Demon Heart Crystal was supposedly a top quality miracle medicine that needed one to be at least a Xiantian master to take; its medicinal efficacy could be imagined. Since Lin Ming swallowed half of one at only a cultivation of the Pulse Condensation period, his cultivation should have rapidly risen, directly breaking through to the Houtian realm. But how did he only advance by such a small level that he was stuck in the late Pulse Condensation period?

Zhou Xinyu really couldn’t understand this, but she tactfully decided not to ask.

The two quickly found a distantly hidden mountain cave.

At this time, the sun had just risen.

Inside the mountain cave there was a deep pool that came from a steadily flowing mountain stream; it was very cool and light. Lin Ming said, “I’m going to take a bath, you can wait for me at the entrance.”

Lin Ming’s entire body was currently covered in blood and shorn off black and red skin. His entire body was also in rags. Not taking a bath as soon as he could would be a travesty.

“Mm.” Zhou Xinyu nodded, and then politely waited at the entrance.

Lin Ming finished his bath in a quarter of an hour, and then changed into some loose and unlined clothing from his spatial ring. He had also eaten up some strong true essence supplementary pills, and meditated for a short period of time. The true essence in his body was nearly restored, and the Heretical God Force's compressed true essence reserves were at maximum capacity.

Then, Lin Ming called Zhou Xinyu into the cave.

When Zhou Xinyu saw Lin Ming after he had trade his clothes and washed off all the bloody scabs and torn skin from his body, she was stunned.

After the preliminary Tempering Marrow, Lin Ming's looks had changed beyond recognition. Underneath the bloody scabs was the tenderest skin, delicate like a newborn babe. His entire body seemed to be brimming with potent vigor, and the slightly bulging and protruding muscles of his body only seemed to accentuate his healthiness and give him an extremely symmetrical and beautiful appearance, just like a graceful cheetah.

His stature had raised some, making him seem even more righteous and tall.

There were even subtly significant changes to his features. Originally, Lin Ming seemed valiant and noble, but in truth that was because there was a sharp aura that came from his forehead. In terms of Lin Ming's looks, he couldn't have been considered too outstanding, but now, after Lin Ming had been reborn, his eyebrows were sharp like swords, his eyes shone like the infinite stars in the sky, and his face seemed to be like the most valuable jade that had been carved by a saber. He was simply a jade-like god, yet not losing any of his sharp fortitude and masculine handsomeness.

All with the simple and unlined blue clothes that clung to his tight and compact body, as he stood illuminated against the rising sun of the morning, and the rays of the dawn sprinkled upon his comely appearance. He seemed to have an ethereal sense of beauty.

All of this caused Zhou Xinyu to fall into a silly trance.

After several breaths, Zhou Xinyu finally came to her senses. She then haltingly said, "Sir Lin… I… I'm sorry for what I did. I thought you died, so…"

Zhou Xinyu was naturally referring to when she had stabbed Lin Ming's chest with her dagger. Now looking back at it, Zhou Xinyu only thought she was an incompetent fool, she simply had no merits to speak of.

"Forget about it. I know that you were well-intentioned in your actions. But actually, about the Moon Seizing Sect's hidden treasures, I was wondering if Miss Zhou could tell me?" Lin Ming's gaze swept past Zhou Xinyu. When Zhou Xinyu had stabbed him, the truth was that he could have dodged. But, he still had finished tempering his marrow with the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal. He also didn't want to prematurely quicken the true essence stored within the Heretical God Seed; that was the last of his strength.

The reason that Lin Ming had let Zhou Xinyu freely stab him was because he had enough confidence in his own body's defense after the preliminary Tempering Marrow phase.

"The hidden treasure..." As Zhou Xinyu heard Lin Ming mention this, her face was full of a complex color. She didn't think there would be a day when the treasures that her master had entrusted to her to revive the Moon Seizing Sect would be personally given to an outsider by her.

Chapter 346 – Location of the Hidden Treasure

Chapter 346 – Location of the Hidden Treasure

…

…

…

Zhou Xinyu knew that the reason Lin Ming had taken such a big risk and gambled his own life was for the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal. If Lin Ming hadn't helped her, she would never have survived this calamity, much less have any hope of reviving the Moon Seizing Sect.

The reason she made this choice was that she had been compelled by circumstance…

Thinking this, Zhou Xinyu felt much better in her heart. She whispered, "I have the key to the hidden treasure on me. As for where it is, it's within the South Sea, located on Dark Moon Island."

"Dark Moon Island?" Lin Ming was stunned for a moment. These past few months, he had read many ancient texts, and had a much better understanding of the major powers of the South Horizon Region, as well as the local customs, conditions, and geography. As for Dark Moon Island, that was a place he had read about. It was a dangerous area within the South Sea, and was the eye of the South Sea's Yin earth pulse. All year round, frost Yin energy was gathered there. It was said that in ancient times, an unparalleled war had taken place on that island, and countless powerhouses had died.

Since then, a bone-chilling wind and a black fog covered the island all year, and many fierce and vicious ghosts and otherworldly beasts existed there. Just the chilling wind by itself was dangerous for Pulse Condensation martial artists. As for the ghosts and other dangerous residents of that island, there were many powerhouses that were comparable to Houtian masters, and it was even said that there were Ghost Kings that were equal to Xiantian masters.

Thinking this, Lin Ming frowned, “Your Moon Seizing Sect actually placed their treasure trove in such a location?”

“Mm. Well, Dark Moon Island is rarely visited and mostly inaccessible, so it’s much more secure. Sir Lin may not know, but 1000 years ago, the South Horizon Region didn’t truly wish to participate in the siege of Silent Demon Emperor City. Rather, it could be said they were forced too. The might of Silent Demon Emperor City was titanic, not even the entire coalition force together was larger than Silent Demon Emperor City. In that war, the Moon Seizing Sect did have a harvest, but the losses were severe, countless sect masters fell from the sky. If the treasures were kept in the Moon Seizing Sect, it would probably have been looted in the years since then…” As Zhou Xinyu spoke, she let out a sigh. She remembered the glorious and magnificent history of the Moon Seizing Sect, but also their recent destruction; it really made her heart ache.

100 year dynasty, 1000 year sect, 10,000 year Holy Land. For a third-grade sect to last one or two thousand years was already a long period of time.

Lin Ming nodded. Indeed, if it wasn’t so, then the Moon Seizing Sect would have suffered a disaster in their weakened state, and all their treasures would have been looted. “But… even if it’s Dark Moon Island, can it stop an extreme Xiantian master?”

“An extreme Xiantian master naturally won’t find Dark Moon Island dangerous. However, Dark Moon Island’s black rock can inhibit and prevent soul perception. As long as the secret door is hidden underground, it’s nearly impossible to find. In addition, Dark Moon Island is an extremely vast land. Without a guide, a Xiantian master could spend several years on Dark Moon Island and still not find the location where my sect hid their treasures.”

“I see…” Lin Ming realized that going to Dark Moon Island wasn’t the best choice. If he became confused and walked into danger, things might turn out poorly.

Zhou Xinyu saw Lin Ming’s worries and said, “Dark Moon Island is dangerous, but my sect also left clever techniques to avoid danger, so it isn’t too risky.”

“Then I’ll have to trouble Miss Zhou to guide me at the time… before, I also heard Miss Zhou say that the Moon Seizing Sect’s hidden treasures include a total of 12 Shattered Demon Heart Crystals left over? And there are also many cultivation method jade slips, rare and precious pills, materials, treasure armor and weapons, true essence stones, and so on?”

Zhou Xinyu nipped her lips and nodded. Her sect was a third-grade sect that had prospered for a thousand years. Although they had declined afterwards, they still had a rich legacy and inheritance. The total wealth and resources they accumulated over the years was an amount that was difficult for ordinary martial artists to imagine.

“Miss Zhou, you said that if I helped you, you would share the treasure with me. How about we discuss how we will split the treasure now?” Lin Ming casually said.

Zhou Xinyu’s heart tightened. She was on the extremely weak end of the bargaining table, without any weight to add to her words. If she were forced by Lin Ming, she could say something like ‘The hidden treasure is fundamental to the revival of my Moon Seizing Sect. if you want to take it, then you’ll have to kill me first.’, or something like that.

But now, she had asked Lin Ming to help her on her own initiative, and had also agreed to share the hidden treasure with him. Lin Ming had rescued her multiple times, and during this entire process, she had only added to the chaos without being able to help at all. Because of the above, she was too ashamed to object to anything; she could only hope that Lin Ming’s demands weren’t too rough.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and said, “I don’t want the cultivation method jade slips, nor do I want true essence stones, treasure weapons or armor. If there are some Heaven

Opening Pills, then I will take some. And if there are some other treasures that I'm interested in, we can negotiate. As for the 12 Shattered Demon Heart Crystals, I'll take 10!"

Lin Ming was crazy for these Shattered Demon Heart Crystals; they were the reason that he had risked his life. Those crystals were his hope to further his completion of Tempering Marrow. With 10 Shattered Demon Heart Crystals and more Heaven Opening Pills, he wondered what percentage of Tempering Marrow he would be able to complete.

Zhou Xinyu listened to Lin Ming's request. Although she was a bit distressed, she knew that Lin Ming wasn't asking for much. Or, it was better to say that nothing else interested him.

Also, she just didn't have any room to bargain further.

The truth was that for the revival of a sect, it didn't depend on a top medicine like the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, but rather the inherited cultivation methods, true essence stones, and a massive quantity of basic treasures and pills. These were the materials that most beginning disciples could use.

She bit her lips and said, "Thank you, Sir Lin."

"Then Miss Zhou, I'll have to trouble you to follow me for the next few days. If you don't mind, could you hand me the key to take care of?" Lin Ming's eyes narrowed. Although his approach was a bit villainous, he couldn't depend on the heart of someone he didn't know. Zhou Xinyu might run off somewhere when he wasn't looking.

As Zhou Xinyu listened to Lin Ming's blatant distrust of her, she became angry. Her beautiful eyes flared at him, and then she finally angrily opened her collar and took out a pendant, throwing it to Lin Ming as she coldly said," The key is inside, you can take it."

Lin Ming grabbed the pendant and then traced his nose in embarrassment. He awkwardly said, "I'm sorry for offending Miss Zhou, I ask that Miss Zhou be a little understanding and forgive me."

Lin Ming touched this pendant that carried Zhou Xinyu's body warmth. It had a very unique shape, just like a ceremonial dagger. As he sensed it with his soul force, Lin Ming was surprised to find that there was a pocket dimension inside. This pendant was actually a storage treasure, just like a spatial ring. Also, the grade was quite high.

Inside was only a single item. It was an exquisite hexagonal box that was colored gold and red, less than three inches wide, just large enough to be placed in the center of a palm. The wood looked as if it were made of metal, but it felt warm, and a full moon was carved onto the surface.

With further investigation, the wood of this key was very strange, emitting an ancient breath. At least, it wasn't a fake and he wouldn't have to worry about Zhou Xinyu somehow tricking him while he travelled with her for these next few days.

"Thank you for your understanding Miss Zhou." Although Lin Ming seemed thankful, he didn't imply that he was letting Zhou Xinyu walk away.

Zhou Xinyu didn't speak in anger; it was unknown what she was thinking.

With the atmosphere a bit awkward, Lin Ming cleaned up a corner in the cave to sit down and restore his true essence. Zhou Xinyu also sat down in front of the wall opposite to Lin Ming and meditated too. After revolving her true essence several times, she felt sleepy, and leaned against the stone wall to rest.

She truly was tired; she hadn't yet had a full night of sleep. To a Pulse Condensation period martial artist, a night without sleeping was nothing. But before Zhou Xinyu came here, she had fled through the Southern Wilderness for four to five days without rest until she arrived at Green Mulberry City. Then, almost immediately, the fierce war with the beast tide had erupted, and she had to flee that very night. After that, Lin Ming went through an intense battle because of the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, and Zhou Xinyu had to wait with extreme anxiousness for three hours while the dreamland enchantment was slowly whittled away. Now that she could finally relax her guard, she was naturally sleepy.

Zhou Xinyu rested for three or four hours, and when she woke up it was the afternoon. The barren mountain was still the wilderness. While Zhou Xinyu was sleeping, she kept her guard up a bit just in case. Feeling Lin Ming leave, she didn't care that much. As she stepped out of the cave, she saw that Lin Ming had cleared out an open space, built a fire, and was roasting two rabbits.

In these sparsely populated hills, there were few natural enemies, so the rabbits were especially plump. Their entire bodies were roasted gold, and a fragrant smell wafted in the air.

Smelling this delicious aroma, Zhou Xinyu was immediately hungry. She hadn't eaten for almost an entire day and night.

She was quite happy to eat this roasted rabbit meal. When she finished eating, she licked her fingers in delight. She didn't think that Lin Ming would have this sort of skill; the barbecue flavor was just so good.

Lin Ming got up and said, "Before we go to Dark Moon Island, I'll have to make a number of preparations. So, I'll have to trouble Miss Zhou for these next few days…

Green Mulberry City –

After the chaos of last night due to Huang Zixuan, the army camp finally discovered one thing – Zhu Ping was missing.

The entire camp searched tirelessly for him, but couldn't even find his corpse. Even the scouts reported that they didn't see Zhu Ping leave the camp. It was as if he evaporated into the air.

When the investigation reached this point, the high level characters of Green Mulberry had a faint guess about what had happened. Zhu Ping had been killed, and it had been by someone who had a grudge against him. For that person to be able to kill him in the camp without raising a single sound, there could only be one.

As Lin Wanshan, Zhuang Fan, Lin Wuyin, and the others realized this, their complexions turned extremely ugly. They didn't have the qualifications to question Lin Ming's decisions, nor did they dare to, but the problem was that Lin Ming had been chased down by a group of masters and was missing, and their army commander was killed too.

What would they do if the beast tide came again?

Everyone was nervous like ants in a hot pan, until late in the morning of the second day, Qin Ziya and his group arrived at Green Mulberry City on their Heavenly Wind Eagles.

There were dozens of Heavenly Wind Eagles with two or three masters on each. With such a large group flying overhead, the guards instantly panicked, making a report of the chaos to headquarters.

Lin Wanshan and everyone hurriedly ran over.

Heavens!

There were over 100 masters! Looking at their true essence fluctuations, if they weren't at the Pulse Condensation period, then they were at the Houtian realm!

Lin Wanshan and everyone else were shocked. What was going on? In the midst of a raging beast tide, over a hundred masters had actually come. They knew just what this meant. This could be the lifeline of their Green Mulberry City. But, why had they come here?

They didn't recognize the white-clothed man that was leading them, but there were people that recognized the two behind him.

"Those… aren't those two Mister Muyi and Miss Qin from the Marshal Quarters?" Zhuang Fan look at Qin Xingxuan and Muyi who were standing atop a Heavenly Wind Eagle. He had seen Muyi and Qin Xingxuan before. But currently, they should definitely still be at Sky Fortune City.

Chapter 347 – A Storm Is Coming

Chapter 347 – A Storm Is Coming

…

…

…

“Miss Qin from the Marshal Quarters?” Green Mulberry City’s City Lord Zhao Yanming was surprised, “Are you saying that Miss Qin is Qin Xingxuan?”

“Of course it’s her. Although Marshal Qin has many granddaughters, the only Miss Qin that walks with Mister Muyi is Young Miss Qin Xingxuan.

Qin Xingxuan?

That was the proud lady of the Marshal Quarters, and also the beloved favorite of Marshal Qin. Why would such a figure come to Green Mulberry City at such a time? And who was that white-clothed person standing in front of Qin Xingxuan?

As Zhaoying was alarmed and indecisive for a time, Qin Ziya asked, “Which of one of you is the leader here?”

Since Zhu Ping died, it was Zhao Yanming who stood in for him. He said, “That’s me. Zhao Yanming, Green Mulberry City’s City Lord.”

“I see, so it’s City Lord Zhao. I am Sky Fortune Kingdom’s Seven Profound Martial House Master Qin Ziya, and these 120 masters with me are also from the Seven Profound Martial House. We seek entrance to Green Mulberry City and would like to request City Lord Zhao make the arrangements.”

‘120 martial artists from the Seven Profound Martial House are coming to Green Mulberry City?’

Zhao Yanming could hardly believe this; this was simply a most propitious event! It had to be known that during this beast tide, many cities within Sky Fortune Kingdom were suffering. Even the capital Sky Fortune City wasn’t able to escape. During this time, the Seven Profound Martial House actually sent 120 masters to Green Mulberry City on Heavenly Wind Eagles, and even Martial House Master Qin Ziya personally came. Just why would this be?

Zhao Yanming felt such a strong sense of happiness that he thought he would faint, and stood stunned for a good four or five breaths of time. Afterwards, he said extremely flattered, “I welcome Martial House Master Qin. I represent all the people of Green Mulberry City in thanking Martial House Master Qin for this timely help.”

Qin Ziya didn’t wait for Zhao Yanming’s kind words. He directly asked, “City Lord Zhao, as far as I know, Lin Ming should be at Green Mulberry City, but how come he isn’t here?” Qin Ziya had sent out his sense a moment ago, but wasn’t able to find Lin Ming anywhere.

“This...” Zhao Yanming’s complexion suddenly turned bitter. Lin Ming’s status was extremely important, and now that he was in trouble, Zhao Yanming feared that something bad may have happened.

He braced himself and explained the entire matter: that there were three or four sect Houtian masters, and even a peak sect Houtian master chasing him. Qin Ziya frowned, but the color of Qin Xingxuan’s beautiful face suddenly deteriorated at a distressing degree.

He was being chased by a peak Houtian master from a sect? And more than one!?

Qin Xingxuan felt like her heart was being twisted.

Qin Ziya took out a sound transmitting talisman and spoke a few random words before igniting it, but still wasn’t able to find Lin Ming’s position. Only a high-grade sound transmitting talisman from Divine Phoenix Island would have the range, otherwise most sound transmitting talisman wouldn't spread more than 100 miles away. Qin Ziya had notified Lin Ming last night through a series of sound transmitting talismans.

"City Lord Zhao, who were they? What sort of special characteristics did they have?" Qin Ziya asked, his voice sinking.

"This lower official does not know..." Zhao Yanming shook his head at a loss. He could only give a vague description, but none of this seemed helpful.

Finally, Zhou Yanming mentioned that Zhou Xinyu had a faint crescent symbol on her clothes, and Qin Ziya understood. They must have been from the Moon Seizing Sect, and somehow Lin Ming had foolishly decided to involve himself in the disputes between direct disciples of the Moon Seizing Sect.

....

Throughout the day, there were only a few sporadic surges of the beast tide at Green Mulberry City; there wasn't even a need to utilize the whole army. The 100 plus masters of the Seven Profound Martial House were nearly enough by themselves. Every master was equivalent to at least several hundred soldiers, equaling an army of tens of thousands. Against a beast tide of tens of thousands of second-level vicious beasts, they only needed to send the Houtian masters to slaughter the fourth-level vicious beasts and the beast tide would naturally disperse.

However, even though the beast tide was no longer a problem, the entire army camp still wasn't relaxed, as if a dark cloud had descended on the entire camp. This was because no one knew whether Lin Ming was dead or alive.

City Lord Zhao Yanming and the other heads of the major families came to gradually understand one thing, and that was that the reason Qin Ziya had come this far from Sky Fortune City, and had even brought Qin Xingxuan and Mister Muyi together, was not to rescue Green Mulberry City, but to protect Lin Ming's family.

Zhao Yanming couldn't imagine what sort of great show of face this was.

Even the Lin Family Head Lin Wanshan couldn't sit still. He never imagined that Qin Ziya, whose status was higher than the emperor, would actually rush to Green Mulberry City and protect his family. This awed and flattered him.

But Zhao Yanming was even more nervous. He knew that Lin Ming's status was high, but now it seemed that not only was his status high, but he was of unparalleled importance to the Seven Profound Valleys. He had even heard from Qin Ziya that the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction had sent help too. It was only that they were too far, so they weren't able to arrive at the border of Sky Fortune Kingdom quickly enough.

Now that matters had risen to the level of the sect itself, Zhao Yanming naturally found it difficult to understand. He didn't know what a future Revolving Core master, and not only that, but a top Revolving Core powerhouse, meant to the Seven Profound Valleys. Even if Lin Ming wasn't a disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys in the future, being on good terms with Lin Ming would still ensure that the Seven Profound Valleys would experience peace and prosperity for several hundred years.

At this time, Zhao Yanming had already forgotten about the matter of Zhu Ping's murder. He organized guards to constantly search for Lin Ming's whereabouts. However, all his efforts came to nothing.

As Zhao Yanming saw Qin Ziya's increasingly gloomy complexion, he nervously walked circles. Gradually, he began to realize something. If Lin Ming really did disappear and possibly die, then this wouldn't just be a case of simple negligence. No, the consequences would be serious, very, very serious. Even Qin Ziya might be implicated in the entire mess.

Qin Xingxuan's heart was heavy with worry. She skipped lunch as she had no appetite; Lin Ming had already been gone for over ten hours.

Then at around evening, there was a small red dot that appeared on the western horizon. The guards immediately reported this to a master with better eyesight, and he was able to clearly see that it was a red winged dragon. But on the back of this dragon stood two figures, and the one in front was Lin Ming.

With Lin Ming returning, Qin Ziya let Zhao Yanming, Lin Wanshan, Mister Muyi, Qin Xingxuan, and everyone else waited at the army camp.

As the Winged Flood Dragon drew closer, Zhou Yanming let out a long breath, and Lin Wanshan was also incomparably excited.

As for Qin Ziya, he was happy and a bit doubtful at the same time. Since Lin Ming was returning so calmly and relaxed, the ones chasing him should have been…

Qin Xingxuan didn’t worry about any of this. Finally, that heavy feeling in her heart was relieved. As she considered herself a good friend of Lin Ming, she was supposed to be extremely happy to see him, and of course she had reason to be. But as she took a few steps, Qin Xingxuan slowed to a stop, until she finally stood there, unsure. She saw with her beautiful, unblinking eyes another girl behind Lin Ming, whose looks were no less exquisite than her own…

During the day when Zhao Yanming had explained what had happened, Qin Xingxuan had listened clearly and heard Zhao Yanming say several Houtian masters had attacked the army camp at night for a girl. This girl had no relation to Lin Ming, but he had actually taken action and risked his own life in order to save her…

Qin Xingxuan’s eyes turned; she didn’t know what to think.

“Young Hero Lin, you truly frightened me to death.” Zhao Yanming felt like a giant stone he had been carrying on his shoulders was finally lifted. He nearly collapsed to the ground in relief.

Seeing so many people anxiously waiting for him, Lin Ming was a bit embarrassed. Because he had consumed too much true essence and had also just absorbed the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, his breath wasn’t yet steady and he had to meditate for a long time. He didn’t think so many people would be worried about him.

“Lin Ming, where did you go for such a long time? What happened last night?” Qin Ziya asked.

Lin Ming cupped his hands across his chest in greeting and said, “Martial House Master Qin, I apologize for being neglectful and not returning earlier. It was just that during the battle I used too much energy, so I had to find a cave to meditate in and the delay was longer than I anticipated.”

Qin Ziya and Lin Ming walked into tent a together. “Lin Ming, the ones who chased you were disciples of the Moon Seizing Sect? I heard from Green Mulberry City’s City Lord that there was also a peak Houtian master?”

Lin Ming hesitated, and then honestly said, “Yes, that person was killed by me.”

Qin Ziya was shocked. A peak Houtian master wasn’t much weaker than Qin Ziya himself, but yet this man was killed by Lin Ming? It was hard to imagined this. Did that mean that Lin Ming had attained a strength that surpassed even his own?

Qin Ziya was temporarily unable to accept such a terrifying rate of progress; it was beyond his understanding.

“Martial House Master Qin, I would also like to request that you keep this matter a secret and not publicize that I escaped.” Lin Ming didn’t want this news to spread to the Seven Profound Valleys’ Ouyang Boyan’s ear. He wanted to hide his own strength so that his enemy would lower his guard.

“Alright…” Qin Ziya opened his mouth as if he wanted to say something, and then finally shook his head. This boy was just a monstrous genius.

“That’s right, Martial House Master Qin, about this beast tide, what response does Divine Phoenix Island have?”

Speaking of this matter, Qin Ziya sobered up. “According to the news from the Total Faction, after this beast tide ends, Divine Phoenix Island will most likely begin to move against the South Sea Demon Region…”

Qin Ziya sighed. This great war would sweep throughout the entire Southern Horizon Region, rolling up every single player and force within. This time, who knew how many martial artists would have to perish, or how many sects would be destroyed because of this.

However, a war was also a time for geniuses to stand out. Since ancient times, heroes and masters were forged in the fires of war. The South Horizon Region hadn't seen such a large-scale war for over a thousand years. Perhaps it had been peaceful for far too long…

Lin Ming nodded without a word. Qin Ziya's words didn't exceed his expectations. This was probably the effect that the South Sea Demon Region wanted to create. If the South Sea Demon Region actively attacked Divine Phoenix Island, Divine Phoenix Island would have the advantage of their home ground. With the aid of the massive arrays that protected the island, the South Sea Demon Region would suffer serious losses.

But if they pulled them out, this situation wouldn't happen.

……………

As Qin Ziya and Lin Ming were conversing, a maid was carefully packing away the camp supplies. Qin Xingxuan was just sitting on the edge of a curtain, staring at the beautiful crimson clouds that were illuminated by the falling sunset. This falling light spread through the entire Green Mulberry Mountains, and Qin Xingxuan watched, spellbound.

"Silly girl, what are you thinking about?" Muyi said as he walked over.

"Master!" Qin Xingxuan panicked. She quickly stood up and greeted him as a courteous disciple did. She wanted to find an excuse for sitting there, but she didn't expect Muyi to speak up already, "Don't tell me you're worried about the city, and wondering how to repel the beast tide."

Qin Xingxuan turned red, awkwardly not speaking.

Chapter 348 – A Young Girl’s Desires

Chapter 348 – A Young Girl’s Desires

…

…

…

Seeing Qin Xingxuan’s reaction, Muyi grinned and said, “There are some matters that are too late once you miss your chance; you don’t think that boy will approach you on his own initiative do you?”

Muyi’s words that hit the mark caused Qin Xingxuan to not even be able to lift her head in shame. Although the traditions of Sky Fortune Kingdom were on the conservative side, the truth was that there were always many girls that would boldly court those they liked. Back during the grand banquet at Sky Fortune City, Lin Ming had been encircled by mobs of cawing girls. Some of them were pushed by their parents, and some went of their own volition. This situation was common, and elders that saw this would just smile and laugh; it was a perfectly normal situation.

However, Qin Xingxuan had always subconsciously felt that the matters between a man and woman couldn’t be forced, nature had to take its course. If one purposefully pushed things, there might not always be a happy ending. She didn’t know whether or not Lin Ming liked her in that manner. If he didn’t, then it would be an awkward situation for both of them.

Muyi saw through Qin Xingxuan’s thoughts. He said, “Of course, if the tide comes to you, then that’s a great thing. But sometimes, if you don’t take action and the tide ebbs, it might go and be taken by someone else. Do you remember who Lin Ming came back with today?”

As soon as Zhou Xinyu, the girl that came back with Lin Ming was mentioned, Qin Xingxuan's words stuck in her throat, speechless…

………………………….

The beast tide had passed, and Green Mulberry City was safe and sound. Especially in the last few days; because of the help from the masters of the Seven Profound Martial House, there were nearly no losses among the soldiers.

1000 miles away, even Sky Fortune City was safe. Although they were weaker than Green Mulberry City in terms of masters, the Zhou Mountains that bordered the north of Sky Fortune City were much friendlier and more pleasant than the Green Mulberry Mountains which extended all the way to the great swamps of the Southern Wilderness. The highest level vicious beast in the Zhou Mountains were fourth-level vicious beasts. Naturally, they were no match for the masters of the Royal Family, much less, Sky Fortune City originally had 40,000 elite garrison soldiers stationed there. Along with the help from the military nearby, they had an army that was 100,000 strong. With such a massive army encircling Sky Fortune City, there wasn't a single vicious beast that was able to touch the city walls.

However. Besides Sky Fortune City and Green Mulberry City, the other cities that were swept in the beast tide were not so lucky…

These days, Lin Ming lived with Qin Ziya, Qin Xingxuan, and some others at the residence of Green Mulberry City's Lin Family.

Seven Profound Valleys' direct disciple, Seven Profound Martial House Martial House Master, State Marshal Qin's most beloved granddaughter, these titles caused all the country nobles in Green Mulberry City who heard them to feel trepidation and awe.

For a time, the Lin Family became a restricted zone within the entire Green Mulberry City. Although there were countless visitors that hoped to see Lin Ming or maybe Qin Ziya, they were limited because of their status. They weren't even able to enter past the Lin Family gates. At most, they would be able to meet Lin Wanshan.

Lin Ming had gone into seclusion within his room and begun to refine the impurities within his true essence. He had taken too many pills lately and his cultivation had increased too quickly. If he didn't take the time to refine his true essence, it would inevitably affect his foundation.

Besides Lin Ming, Qin Ziya had also gone into seclusion, making the final preparations to attack the Xiantian realm bottleneck.

……………

Two days later, during a sunny morning, there were many people waiting at the Lin Family courtyard. These included Lin Ming, Qin Xingxuan, as well as the important figures of the Lin Family.

A Heavenly Wind Eagle fluttered down into the courtyard, and after the cover was removed, a little fat youth plopped down, helping a middle-aged couple step down from the Heavenly Wind Eagle.

This young fat youth was 16 or 17 years old. As soon as he jumped off of the back of the eagle, the fat layers of his body jiggled. He held the arm of a woman with coiled hair, who wore a simple blue silk dress. Although she was nearing 40 years old, she was still beautiful. It was only that her face showed that she had lived a life of work and hardship. Especially when one looked at her hands, they could see that her palms were covered in calluses, and the backs of her hands were rough and red. This was the result of being wet too often in the winter.

Women of this age naturally didn't need help from others. But the little fat youth was still extremely attentive and helpful, supporting her arm as she came down.

The man beside the middle-aged man seemed extremely ordinary. He had a slim, medium build, and he wore a light blue robe. He had a very kind, honest, and pleasant smile.

The fat youth called out from the distance, "Brother Lin!"

Lin Ming stood there. He could see the three people approaching. They were his father, his mother, and also his friend that he had grown up together with and had shared everything. When he was having a difficult time in Sky Fortune City, scraping to get by, it was this brother that cared for him so much – Lin Xiaodong.

Lin Ming didn’t know how many times he had imagined this reunion in his mind. When he had taken nearly his entire family’s savings and raised his iron-clad determination to leave home, he had been gone for almost an entire year.

During this time he had withstood unimaginable pressure, and also suffered unimaginable pain. There was surprise, there was glory, there was grief, there was anger, sorrow, slaughter galore, and his own life had hung by a thin thread several times.

He had worked wholeheartedly to fight for his success when he returned, but he also knew that he wouldn’t necessarily be able to bring glory back home. Maybe he might have fallen down in the world, and even come back disabled. Not only would he not be able to bring honor to his ancestors, but he would draw the mocking taunts and jeers of his neighbors.

However, what Lin Ming knew without a shadow of a doubt, was that regardless of how he came home – whether it was with riches or rags – his parents would never, ever abandon him, even if he lost everything.

This was the purest and truest love in this world. A love that had no cost, nor was it required to be returned.

Lin Ming wasn’t excited, nor did he cry.

He silently kneeled on the floor, deeply kowtowing to his parents.

“Father, Mother, your child has returned…”

…………………………

Several days passed peacefully at the Lin Family. Lin Wanshan had always wanted to mention to Lin Ming about the matter of visiting the ancestors. According to the rules of the Lin Family, only true Lin Family juniors could burn incense at the ancestral temple, and only true Lin Family juniors could be written in the family tree. Currently, Lin Ming was only a branch member.

Lin Wanshan wanted to raise this matter with Lin Ming several times, but never found the time to say it. Especially after the event with Qin Ziya, Lin Wanshan began to gradually realize just how terrifying Lin Ming's future would be.

Even though Lin Wanshan had never met more than a handful of Houtian masters, he had actually learnt that above the legendary Xiantian realm, there was an even higher realm. And in the future, Lin Ming would be a powerhouse who stepped into this realm. Let alone Sky Fortune Kingdom, or even the entire Seven Profound territory, this character would be an existence that could control all the nearby areas around the Seven Profound territory.

An existence of this level already surpassed Lin Wanshan's scope of understanding. Within the scope of a million miles, population was usually measured in billions, or tens of billions. Lin Wanshan was aware that if his Lin Family was thrown into this land, it would be nothing more than a grain of sand in a desert.

He hesitated to speak of this matter, then decided to wait for Lin Ming and his parents to pass some days in peace before bringing it up.

Lin Ming's parents lived a very comfortable life these days. Every morning, the couple would go out and meet the always-smiling face of Qin Xingxuan. To this old married couple, she was an extremely pleasant and likeable girl. Her smile was always just right, and she didn't seem to care about status. She was sweet, delightful, and elegant yet restrained.

Qin Xingxuan was often followed by a young maid who carried a box of food, delivering breakfast to the old couple. These were all famous tastes of the capital. There were delicious cakes and many types of desserts. The old husband and wife had worked in a restaurant for half their lives, and as soon as they bit in, they could tell that it was the work of a famous chef.

In the afternoon, Qin Xingxuan would accompany Lin Mu for a chat. Qin Xingxuan's manner of speaking was graceful, and she also had very rich understanding of all the different clothes of different areas; she would often bring Lin Mu to laughter.

Sometimes Qin Xingxuan would send out her maid to bring back several different sets of clothing patterns, and cut them out with Lin Mu. These patterns were all styles that came from famous masters of the capital.

Sometimes Qin Xingxuan would play chess with Lin Fu. Qin Xingxuan was quite good at chess, this caused Old Lin to be full of praise. For such a young girl to have such high skill in chess, he could only compliment Qin Xingxuan for being such an intelligent young lady.

In particular, Qin Xingxuan understood tea ceremonies. Old Lin loved to drink tea. When he had run a restaurant, he was still considered well-off among the ordinary families. Because of this, Old Lin had drank many different types of tea and had a decent understanding. However, he hadn't yet drank these famous teas from the capital.

Qin Xingxuan had brought a great number of famous teas. Although these teas that cost a few thousand taels weren't considered much to Old Lin now, he still didn't have an understanding of their intricacies. To him, it was simply like a cow chewing on peonies. At this time, Qin Xingxuan would kindly smile, and steep the teas for Old Lin. She would make each kind of tea, then they would smell the tea, drink the tea, enjoy the tea, and she would explain the background and philosophies of the tea. All of this put Old Lin in high spirits.

The old married couple were not foolish. They could well imagine why Qin Xingxuan was approaching them so frequently. Lin Ming was already 16 years old. According to the customs of Sky Fortune Kingdom, that was the ripe age for engagement.

Madame Lin’s eyes were bright as she looked at Qin Xingxuan. Qin Xingxuan was beautiful and also smart, well versed in books and principles. She had already been thinking about her.

From Qin Xingxuan’s manner of speaking, her appearance and also her experience, she probably came from a noble birth. As Madame Lin asked whose daughter she was, she was surprised to high heavens to find out that she was Marshal Qin Xiao’s most beloved granddaughter! Within the Marshal Quarters, she was the brightest pearl of all. It was said that she was a proud woman that even the Crown Prince was not worthy to match!

To the common folk of Sky Fortune Kingdom, they actually didn’t have much of an idea about what the Seven Profound Valleys was. No matter how much others said how awesome or amazing or mighty they were, they would still be confused. But Qin Xiao was different!

Country Marshal Qin Xiao was a figure who had single-handedly turned the tides of war 80 years ago. He had single-handedly supported Sky Fortune Kingdom on his shoulders during the chaos and famine caused by war. His character was unparalleled, and his position was such that even the Crown Prince had to be respectful to him.

The Qin Family was ranked among the best within the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom. Besides the royal Yang Family, even the Allied Trade Association’s Zhang Family couldn’t compare with the Qin Family. Although the Zhang Family was richer and stronger, they simply could not compare to the Qin Family in terms of status and reputation. Sky Fortune Kingdom’s agricultural, manufacturing and merchant professions were all seen by the common folk as humble and inferior professions. Only a family that had a great deal of exploits and heritage could truly be a first rate family.

“Do you think the lady from the Qin Family has taken a liking to our Little Ming?” At night, Lin Mu was speaking to Lin Fu with an expression of disbelief. She had thought that Qin Xingxuan might be the daughter of some random aristocratic family. These days, there were many dignitaries and other high-ranked individuals who offered their daughters up, even making it clear that they would just be concubines.

Lin Mu didn’t think that Qin Xingxuan would actually be the most outstanding granddaughter of Marshal Qin. She knew her son had a high status, but even that legendary Marshal Quarters was approaching them with hints of marriage; it was quite difficult for her to accept.

If a matchmaker from the Marshal Quarters came to propose marriage, then Lin Mu could accept this impossible reality.

But, Qin Xingxuan had personally come. Lin Mu knew when a young girl was acting with and without restraint. For a young girl to appear in public with an old couple, wasn’t this forcing their hand?

Chapter 349 – To Inherit

Chapter 349 – To Inherit

…

…

…

Lin Ming was silent. For a full hour, his mother had discussed marriage with him. As he remembered the hidden bitterness in her eyes, even he felt a headache coming on.

Lin Ming subconsciously tried to avoid love and marriage. This wasn't because he had failed ins this field or before. Although Lin Ming was very sad when Lan Yunyue betrayed him, this sadness was more because of himself. He hated that he didn't fight back, and he hated that he didn't have the power to.

Now, these matters had been cleared long ago; it hadn't even left much of a mark on Lin Ming's mind.

Lin Ming would be lying to himself if he said that he didn't have feelings towards Qin Xingxuan, because he did. However, he could not marry her, because he could not afford to shoulder this responsibility. He was destined to leave Sky Fortune Kingdom, leave the Divine Phoenix Province, leave the South Horizon Region, and break through the martial void.

This path was extremely dangerous. A single accident, a single misstep, and he would be doomed. It was impossible to bring Qin Xingxuan along this road, because she would die.

But if he didn't bring Qin Xingxuan with him, and asked that she stay home with his mother, that would also be impossible, because it was just too unfair for her.

The only one with the ability to walk with him might be Mu Qianyu. If she was willing...

Huu!

A flame lit in Lin Ming's room. This was a top sect's specific sound transmitting talisman.

Mu Qianyu's voice sounded in Lin Ming's ear, speaking two messages.

First, Divine Phoenix Island would soon wage war with the South Sea Demon Region.

Second, he needed to return to Divine Phoenix Island within three months and enter the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

"Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm..." Lin Ming paused, he didn't expect it to be so soon.

When Lin Ming was listed as the only heaven-step talent on the joint talent training program, he was able to enjoy treatment equal to a core disciple of Divine Phoenix Island, and he was also given an opportunity to enter the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

Lin Ming had asked Mu Qianyu just what the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was. It wasn't a testing zone that was set up by Divine Phoenix Island, but rather a wondrous place that was left behind by the ancient Phoenix Clan.

When one entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, there was a chance of dying. The chances weren't high – it was only around 10%. But what was terrifying was that who lived and who died didn't depend on strength, but seemed to be a matter of luck. There were no laws stating who would die or why. The strong could die, while the weak could live.

Of those that came out, some obtained advantages, some obtained increases in strength and cultivation, some obtained valuable materials, some obtained high-grade treasures, and there were even some that obtained the precious bloodline of Saint Beasts.

"Three months... I'll have to see what the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm is like..." Lin Ming sat on a cushion and continued to practice the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', slowly consolidating his cultivation and refining out the pill toxins. Lin Ming's essence gathering cultivation system now relied on the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. The ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ was only a Body Transformation cultivation method manual, and was no longer suited for him to practice at the Pulse Condensation period to reach a higher realm.

Like this, another two days passed. Every day, Lin Ming would leave his quiet room and pass time with his family and friends. This day, Lin Ming had just finished eating with his parents, and was playing chess with Lin Xiaodong, when he suddenly heard someone say, ”Lin Ming.”

When he looked back, he saw a splendidly dressed Qin Xingxuan. She was holding a tray of tea in her hands, and was standing against the brilliant sunset, beautifully smiling.

As Lin Xiaodong saw Qin Xingxuan, his plump face wrinkled in a cheap, sly grin, and he deliberately shouted out with great exaggeration, “Oh! I just remembered that I have something very important to do! I’ll be going first!”

As he said this, he speedily scurried away, leaving behind only an awkwardly smiling Qin Xingxuan. She slowly arranged the tea set on the stone table.

It was a lazy day. The sunlight of the bright spring afternoon shined down, glimmering. To sit in a garden pavilion with tea, having some refreshments, with a beauty pouring the tea and being able to view the flowers, this was a fairy-like life.

However, Lin Ming actually wasn’t able to enjoy any of this at the time. Instead, he was somewhat afraid...

Qin Xingxuan unhurriedly rinsed the teacups, steeping the tea. A light fragrance wafted out, refreshing the heart.

“Brother Lin, these past few days have been really distressing for you, right?” Qin Xingxuan whispered as she gently placed a teacup in front of Lin Ming.

Lin Ming paused. Qin Xingxuan had always called him by his full name. She had never been someone who referred to him with such a distant and respectful title like ‘Brother Lin’. Lin Ming didn’t know why, but he felt a slight twisting pain in his heart.

With the fragrance of the tea filling the air, the two people fell into a silent lull. Slowly, as the teal cooled down, Qin Xingxuan quietly said, “Tomorrow I will be going back to the capital.”

“Mm.” Lin Ming replied, an unhappy feeling in his heart.

Seeing Lin Ming’s expression, Qin Xingxuan suddenly smiled. The radiant sunlight sprinkled on her light yellow dress; it was utterly compelling to the human eye. She said, “Brother Lin, these days I’ve been thinking about many things. And, it seems that there are some matters that are destined to not be right. For instance, several hundred years from now, when I become an old lady, even I won’t be able to tolerate it…”

Qin Xingxuan’s voice seemed to have a jokingly playful tone that was masking the bitterness in her heart, causing Lin Ming to be very uncomfortable. Several hundred years from now, Lin Ming’s looks wouldn’t have changed too much. As for Qin Xingxuan, it would be extremely difficult for her to break through to the Revolving Core realm. Several hundred years from now, she might already be reaching the end point of her life.

Just this point caused these two individuals to live in separate worlds, unable to be together.

This was the matter that Qin Xingxuan mentioned she wouldn’t be able to tolerate; she absolutely did not want such a scene.

An afternoon tea was drank for less than half an hour. The tea still had a fragrant smell, but it seemed to have a bitter taste to it that pained the heart.

Even after Qin Xingxuan left, Lin Ming was still in a daze. Thinking of her beautiful face gradually waning under the knife of time, Lin Ming felt his heart pained with regret.

Only if…

Suddenly, Lin Ming's mind shook. Qin Xingxuan wasn't even 16 years old yet, and her cultivation was at the mere Bone Forging stage. If she tossed aside all of her current cultivation and retrained from scratch, then…

Lin Ming had already completed the preliminary true essence physical transformations stage of the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians'. As for the 'True Primal Chaos Formula', Lin Ming had reached Large Success of the third layer. That was the main true essence revolution method of the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians'. With this foundation, he might try to engrave this knowledge of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' onto a jade slip.

If he could leave some cultivation methods and inheritances of the Realm of the Gods to his own wife and future children so that they could become stronger, only in that way would Lin Ming have true peace of mind. With Qin Xingxuan's sixth-grade talent, if she learned some of the legacies of the realm of the Gods, and also had a few lucky chances, then reaching the Revolving Core realm should be nothing at all.

In the future, Qin Xingxuan might even be of great assistance to him.

With his mind set, Lin Ming entered the quiet room, took out a blank jade slip, and began to engrave the 'True Primal Chaos Formula'. Engraving a cultivation method manual was an arduous and exceedingly complicated process, and the person engraving and to be very proficient in this cultivation method. This was also the reason that cultivation method jade slips were so incomparably precious.

Lin Ming spent a full afternoon and night to finally engrave the first half of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' Of course, there were many flaws and some omissions, but this was the best that Lin Ming could do, unless he could cultivate the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' to Perfection.

If Qin Xingxuan practiced this cultivation method, she would have to take many detours and it would be much more difficult than when Lin Ming had practiced it. But, it was far superior to practicing the third-rate cultivation methods of the Seven Profound Valleys.

At midnight, the oil lamp in Qin Xingxuan's room was still shining brightly. She was cultivating on her bed, but her heart wasn't calm. She envied Mu Qianyu to the bone; if only she had her talent and strength...

Qin Xingxuan was not afraid of aging, nor did she wish for immortality. What she feared was that when her husband still seemed to be a strapping, handsome young man, she would be a white-haired granny. To her, this was an incomparably scary and horrifying future. Even if her husband could accept this, she could not.

The door sounded, it was Lin Ming.

Qin Xingxuan was stunned. It wasn't polite to enter a woman's room late at night, especially if it was seen by others. This must be an extraordinary matter.

Qin Xingxuan carefully welcomed Lin Ming into her room, puzzled. She asked, "Brother Lin, is there an urgent matter?"

"For you."

Lin Ming didn't speak any idle chatter. He took out a jade slip and placed it on the table.

Qin Xingxuan picked up the jade slip, it was still warm to the touch. This jade slip was obviously newly engraved, otherwise it would have already been polished smooth by the touch of hands.

As she slipped her sense into the jade slip, Qin Xingxuan was stunned. She continued to look carefully. After a quarter of an hour, Qin Xingxuan withdrew her sense, shocked, and glanced at Lin Ming with incredulity in her eyes.

Although Lin Ming hadn't engraved the entire 'True Primal Chaos Formula', with Qin Xingxuan's intelligence and talent, she already realized how precious this cultivation method was. It was absolutely more precious and rare than any core cultivation method of the Seven Profound Valleys.

"This… this cultivation method is…" Qin Xingxuan's voice trembled as she spoke. Maybe this incomparably precious cultivation method was obtained by Lin Ming when he risked his life in some ancient ruins somewhere. How could he so easily give this away?

Now, giving this to her was a commitment, a promise and a pledge. It was much more reliable than sweet whispered nothings and words of love.

There was no need to say anything anymore.

For a time, many chaotic thoughts surged into Qin Xingxuan's mind. It was so sudden that she wanted to cry.

Lin Ming said, "This cultivation method is only a part. I don't have the original jade slip, I can only practice. This matter is very difficult to explain. I just want to say that this cultivation method is extremely important, and it is imperative that it remain confidential. Otherwise, it will provoke a calamity. Afterwards, when I have the ability to engrave the rest, I'll do so and give it to you. Everything's for you."

Qin Xingxuan held the jade slip close to her bosom, her lips pursed as she gazed at Lin Ming. Lin Ming's eyes were soft and gentle, broad and warm. Looking at him, she couldn't help but close her eyes, her eyelashes trembling.

After Qin Xingxuan calmed herself down, she opened her eyes and said, "I won't tell this to anyone."

"Give up the cultivation method you were practicing, and take this 'True Primal Chaos Formula' as the foundation, retraining yourself through Strength Training, Flesh Training, Viscera Training, Altering Muscle, and Bone Forging. Remove all the impurities of your body and refine the tempered true essence from your body. This is the only way you can reset your foundation.”

Lin Ming didn’t plan on having Qin Xingxuan learn Tempering Marrow. The conditions for Tempering Marrow were simply too difficult, thus the reason why he would teach Qin Xingxuan the foundation ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’. As long as Qin Xingxuan built up the foundation and continued to practice an essence gathering system, everything would be possible. Later, when Qin Xingxuan swallowed pills, he could also use his Flame Essence to help her rid her body of impurities.

With this matter complete, Lin Ming was extremely happy. In that moment, it was as if a great amount of pill toxins in his body had disappeared.

With no more worries, Lin Ming would go to Dark Moon Island, and take the hidden treasures of the Moon Seizing Sect.

Chapter 350 – Dark Moon Island

Chapter 350 – Dark Moon Island

…

…

…

There were many dangerous locations within Sky Spill Continent, and there were countless places where Xiantian masters had perished. There were even many dangerous places that would be fatal to Revolving Core masters.

Relatively speaking, Dark Moon Island wasn't much of a dangerous land; at most, it was threatening to Houtian masters. When a true Xiantian master came, they naturally wouldn't be threatened by an existence like the Ghost King. In fact, even if a Xiantian master and the Ghost King met, chances were that the two masters wouldn't fight each other. With two strong beings fighting, there would definitely be injuries on both sides. If it wasn't for some great treasure or benefit, then naturally there was no need to risk a life or death battle.

With Lin Ming's current cultivation, it was still dangerous coming to Dark Moon Island. But with the Moon Seizing sect's secret skill to hide one's breathe, the chances of being found by the Ghost King were slim.

Before coming to Dark Moon Island, Lin Ming also visited Huoluo Nation's Seraphic Pond along the way.

This was from a bet that Huoluo Nation's Seven Profound Martial House Master Liang had lost before. But because Lin Ming had been constantly busy dealing with other matters, he hadn't had time to visit Huoluo Nation.

Now that he was going to Dark Moon Island, he just happened to pass by.

With Lin Ming's arrival, even though Martial House Master Liang loathed to do so with all his heart, he still had to treat him with utter respect, and show an expression of awe and amazement.

This was something he couldn't help. Lin Ming's current status was too terrifying. Let alone Martial House Master Liang, even his backer at the Seven Profound Valleys had to treat Lin Ming with respect.

Huoluo Nation's Seraphic Pond certainly had its own good points. Its water was like a fine jade nectar, and as he scooped up a handful, it was incomparably clear and even a bit sticky. As he held it in his hand, it didn't leak through his fingers.

As Lin Ming plunged into the pond, his entire body was comfortable. He took a deep breath, and then dove straight to the bottom and sealed away all six of his senses. He was just like a baby suspended in his mother's womb.

Lin Ming didn't intend on being polite. He swallowed big gulps of the fine nectar-like water, and let the water flow through his body. Then, black oils began to discharge from all the pores of his body, and the foul Houtian air in Lin Ming's body left along with it. A pure heaven and earth origin energy flowed through his meridians, and a part of it stayed within.

Slowly, Lin Ming began to realize the benefits of the Seraphic Pond. The thin origin energy of the Seraphic Pond couldn't be compared to a top quality pill, but this sort of thin origin energy actually had a purifying effect on the impurities in his body; this was just to Lin Ming's liking.

While underwater, he immediately began to revolve the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', manipulating the Fire Essence so that it burnt off small amounts of pill toxins.

Lin Ming soaked in the Seraphic Pond for an entire day, using up all of the heaven and earth origin energy that had been saved up within the Seraphic Pool for half a year. The anxious Martial House Master Liang could only bear the pain as his heart bled, and cheerfully smile as he waited for Lin Ming to finish.

Finally, at sunset, Lin Ming stepped out of the Seraphic Pond and dried his wet hair. Martial House Master Liang forced out a smile, and had a maid bring Lin Ming a dish of fruits.

There was no need to kick a person while he was being so polite. Like this, all matters between Lin Ming and Martial House Master Liang were settled.

After he left the Seraphic Pond, Lin Ming's cultivation hadn't increased – it was still at the late Pulse Condensation period. It was only that many of the pill toxins in his body had been cleared. Although it had a wonderful effect, half a year of the Seraphic Pond saving up heaven and earth origin energy was only enough to soak a single time. This was somewhat useless; no wonder the Seven Profound Valleys had let Huoluo Nation's Seven Profound Martial House take over the Seraphic Pond.

These days, Zhou Xinyu had been very silent. When she had been in the Lin Family residence, she had usually stayed in her room, not leaving.

As the two crossed the sea, the color of the sea became increasingly deep. Lin Ming probed the sea with his perception. The bottom of the sea had already surpassed the limit of his sense, and was over half a mile deep.

It was said that in the deep regions of the South Sea, the sea went down hundreds of thousands of meters. This was at the Rue Abyss, and horrible terrors lived there—massive vicious beasts of the sea. For instance, there were rumors of the Giant Leviathan Saint Beast, a creature that was said to be tens of thousands of feet long. Of course, no one knew the veracity of these rumors.

"Is that Dark Moon Island ahead?" Lin Ming stood on the Winged Flood Dragon and asked Zhou Xinyu as he pointed at a gray shadow in front.

Zhou Xinyu nodded, "Mm."

When Lin Ming saw Dark Moon Island with his own eyes, he realized that it was much larger than he had imagined. As he stood tall above the Winged Flood Dragon, he quickly passed a few hundred miles. The land below him was completely dark red, with a chilling black fog swirling above it. From above, it was impossible to see anything.

“How big is Dark Moon Island?”

“At least a few thousand miles long and wide, I don’t know the specifics.” Zhou Xinyu casually said.

Lin Ming let out a light breath. A range of a couple thousand miles wasn’t much smaller than the entire territory of Sky Fortune Kingdom. He had heard that Dark Moon Island was just a normal island of the South Sea. If he had to speculate, then it was very likely that the main islands of Divine Phoenix Island and the South Sea Demon Region were tens of thousands of miles long and wide.

Was that still an island? Even calling it a mini continent wasn’t an exaggeration.

After some reflection, it realized that this was natural. If it really was a small land, then it wouldn’t be able to support such great powers.

“Let’s go down, it should be near.” Zhou Xinyu took out two symbol papers from her spatial ring and gave one to Lin Ming. “Pour some true essence into this and stick it to your body. It will isolate the vitality in your body so that you won’t be bothered by ghosts and demons.”

Lin Ming received the yellow symbol paper and saw that a strange red mark was drawn in the center of symbol paper. This was most likely a blood curse. This was likely from the same area of inscription symbols, and also another skill domain unknown to Lin Ming.

As he poured true essence into the symbol paper, the symbol paper burnt away and formed into a red line of blood that sunk into Lin Ming’s body. The power of Lin Ming’s blood vitality was instantly hidden, and his originally healthily tanned and exquisite skin was now pale with an ashy color. His body temperature was ice cold, and an aura of death was emanated. This symbol paper had caused a strapping young boy that was brimming with blood vitality to look like a dying man.

“What an impressive method.” Lin Ming was thoroughly impressed. According to ghost stories, ghosts loved to eat blood vitality. It was said they could smell a stranger’s blood vitality from dozens of miles away. If a person’s blood vitality was sealed so that they were no different from a corpse, then naturally these ghosts wouldn’t come looking for food.

“It’s just an insignificant skill. The Moon Seizing Sect didn’t refine weapons or set down arrays; all they were good at were symbols. Whether they were offensive symbols, defensive symbols, or inscription symbols, they were skilled in them all.” Zhou Xinyu sighed as she spoke. She was sad as her heart remembered all the inheritances and legacies of her sect that had been destroyed.

“Oh? They also understood inscription symbols?”

“Mm. My master Shui Yue was an inscription grandmaster.” Zhou Xinyu spoke and no longer dwelled on this. She lit the symbol paper in her hands, and soon her blood vitality was sealed. Her rosy face turned white like paper, and she gave off a feeling as if she was ill with several terminal diseases.

As the two went down and set foot on the land of Dark Moon Island, they immediately felt a chilling wind, seeing only an endless black fog wherever they turned. If a normal mortal were to come into contact with this sort of black fog, they would immediately die from corpse poison, and then turn into a zombie, becoming an undead slave of the land.

Even a Pulse Condensation period martial artist couldn’t stay out here for too long. If they weren’t able to supplement their true essence with pills, then the true essence around their bodies would fade, and they’d be poisoned to death.

This was the first time that Zhou Xinyu had come here. She carefully advanced forwards, holding the jade slip in her hands and constantly comparing the contents to the environment.

Not to mention the ghosts that lived in the black fog, the black fog also carried the faint sounds of ghosts crying. Even the land of Dark Moon Island was creepy; it was all a dark crimson red, as if massive amounts of blood had been spilled here. Lin Ming tried to send out his perception to check and see if he really couldn't penetrate the ground, but as he did so, he quickly drew his soul force back. The red rock was just like a sponge that absorbed water.

The ground everywhere was covered with half-foot tall stalagmites, every one of them incomparably sharp, just like the fangs of a red demon. If a mortal wasn't careful, they could fall and impale themselves on a stalagmite. Their intestines would be punctured, and their stomach would soon rot.

After walking such a long distance, they still hadn't seen a living creature. They only saw some scattered bones everywhere, and over some of these bones were flowers. These flowers were a deep bright red, as if they were made of blood. The flowers had no leaves, only thick and countless roots that dug deep into the corpses, sucking out all of their nutrition.

The air was rank with a mixed smell of blood and sulfur. The deeper they went, the stronger this smell was. This strangely cold wind seemed to directly penetrate their bodies, and seemed just like a knife that was scraping against the soul.

Lin Ming didn't feel much, but Zhou Xinyu seemed like she couldn't persist much longer. She had even pasted a few blood symbol marks on her body, but she couldn't stop shivering, her arms subconsciously grasping her own body. At this time, Zhou Xinyu's response was just like a thinly clad and fragile mortal girl who was standing in the cold.

Lin Ming breathed out a light breath and with a flick of his fingers, sent several threads of azure true essence into Zhou Xinyu's body. The azure true essence's power and endless vitality bloomed, and the chilling Yin wind was expelled. As they walked, Zhou Xinyu felt several warm currents echoing in her body, keeping her limbs warm. With the chilling ghost wind expelled from her body, Zhou Xinyu turned and was surprised to see Lin Ming already receiving his hand. As for those several threads of true essence, they remained in her body without even the slightest bit of dissipation.

This caused Zhou Xinyu to be surprised. Normally, the true essence that a martial artist released would dissipate once it lost the support of the body's soul force; it would slowly unravel out of control, and then slowly dissipate. Without the support of soul force, the true essence would become uncontrolled and gradually dissipate. To help protect someone from the chilling wind, someone would need to place a hand on her back and continuously input true essence.

But none of this applied to Lin Ming. That strange azure true essence he released seemed to have a life of its own, continually destroyed the chilling Yin mist. As more and more of the black mist was being destroyed, his consumption of energy was actually very little.

As long as more than 50% of Zhou Xinyu's true essence was consumed, Lin Ming would flick his fingers and send two more threads of azure true essence into her body, completely eliminating all of the chilling air in Zhou Xinyu.

"Thank you." Zhou Xinyu whispered.

"Don't worry about it. It's been quite a bit of time hasn't it?" The two had already used almost an hour to search around.

Although Zhou Xinyu had a map in her hands, identifying the direction in which they were travelling in such a thick black mist wasn't easy. Especially since this was her first time coming here, and she wasn't able to use her perception to sense the surroundings.

Zhou Xinyu said, "If I'm not wrong, it should be in front of that stone wall."

Lin Ming looked up. The stone wall that Zhou Xinyu had mentioned was less than a hundred feet away. It was just like a red monster that was hidden in the black fog.

"The entrance should be in the stone wall." Zhou Xinyu said with confidence as she compared once again with the jade slip.

Chapter 351 – Entering the Treasure Storeroom

Chapter 351 – Entering the Treasure Storeroom

….

…

…

In front of Lin Ming was a rock wall several hundreds of feet high; it was a steep cliff that looked like it was carved from a saber.

Zhou Xinyu crouched in front of the wall and took out a red symbol paper, then began to feel along the wall bit-by-bit until runes on the red symbol paper began to flash. Carefully, Zhou Xinyu pasted the symbol paper onto the wall, and a short time after, the symbol paper began to burn.

After it burned to ashes, there was a crackling sound along the stone wall as a palm-sized hexagram hole appeared in the cliff.

Lin Ming swiped his spatial ring and pulled out the reddish-gold hexagonal key box and handed it over to Zhou Xinyu.

Zhou Xinyu pressed gently on the center moon symbol of the key box and watched as it began to expand with a snapping sound. Six triangular pieces of metals stuck out from the edges of the box, turning the box into a hexagonal shape that matched the hole on the wall.

Then, Zhou Xinyu fit the key box into the hole, twisted halfway to the left, and stepped back. After several breaths of time, a white curtain of light flashed on the red cliff, and then enveloped Lin Ming and Zhou Xinyu.

Lin Ming could see that this curtain of of light with an illusory magic array enchantment that was used to prevent others from peeking in.

Within the magic array, Lin Ming and Zhou Xinyu looked as if they had vanished from where they stood, and only the original cliff remained.

But within the magic array, the deep red rock rumbled and moved, revealing a human-high hole that extended in a red stairway all the way down into the darkness.

Zhou Xinyu glanced at Lin Ming and walked in first. She saw that Lin Ming hadn't been too trusting of her, so she decided to be a bit generous and lead the way.

The stairs stretched down for a few hundred few before they came to an end. There, they saw an altar with an array engraved in the middle. Around this array formation were 18 low-grade true essence stones.

To use a short distance transmission array, normally a few low-grade true essence stones were enough. Lin Ming saw that these true essence stones still had more than half their energy remaining, and thought that Zhou Xinyu would immediately start the transmission array. However, she slowly picked up 12 of the 18 true essence stones and switched six with medium-grade true essence stones and the other six with impure lowest-grade true essence stones. Each of the true essence stones were placed in different positions that were matched with a chart in the jade slip.

This caused Lin Ming to be secretly speechless. If one didn't know the true essence arrangements and opened the transmission array hastily, then they probably wouldn't have a good ending.

Especially because of those six impure true essence stones that cost four to five hundred gold each; those were true essence stones that only common martial artists would use. A sect genius would never bring those along with them.

"Come on." Zhou Xinyu said to Lin Ming.

After Lin Ming carefully observed the transmission array for a moment, he was able to understand the principles behind it. After he confirmed that there wasn't a problem, he stood on the altar.

The array formation started, and the 18 true essence stones began to glow. Lin Ming felt startled for a moment, and then suddenly appeared in an enclosed main hall. There was a damp and dull feeling in the air; Lin Ming guessed he was underground – very deep underground.

To have the treasure storehouse built here and only be connected to the outside world with a transmission array was truly very subtle and secretive.

The main hall was 300 feet wide, and the fluorescent materials were lined up on the walls. A dim green light illuminated the hall, allowing Lin Ming to clearly see what was there.

There were four or five separate rooms that were divided by walls, and also rows of wooden shelves. These shelves had armor, weapons, jade slips, and several boxes as large as a person. Besides the boxes there were also stone doors, it was unknown just what those stone doors were for.

"Will anything happen if I open the box, like traps?"

Lin Ming asked Zhou Xinyu. Zhou Xinyu's head still hurt at this moment. After passing through space via the transmission array, she wasn't able to adapt to that strange feeling so quickly, so she stood there rubbing her temples. After she heard Lin Ming's question, she stopped.

"No. If you're worried, I can open them for you." Zhou Xinyu's voice was a bit icy.

Although Lin Ming could hear the resentment in Zhou Xinyu's heart, he still had her open the box as she suggested. The Moon Seizing Sect used to be a top third-grade sect after all. In the sect, there were many Xiantian masters. Any one of them could create a trap or curse that could instantly kill him.

Pa! Pa! With the sound of two golden locks opening, Zhou Xinyu opened the closest two boxes.

In the these two boxes were rows of true essence stones. Not only that, but they were pure medium-grade true essence stones, and there were several thousand of them; this was just a fortune.

Facing all these true essence stones, even Lin Ming's heart stirred a bit. However, he had agreed that he wouldn't take any true essence stones, so he naturally didn't covet them.

Zhou Xinyu looked at these shining medium-grade true essence stones and silently took several hundred of them into her spatial ring, then covered up the rest. After all, this secret chamber was still the safest place for them to be. It wouldn't be safe to bring such a great wealth outside.

Zhou Xinyu was clearly planning on using these true-essence stones to cultivate. A few hundred medium-grade true essence stones for a few months of practice was not a waste of wealth that the Moon Seizing Sect would ever splurge on. However, they naturally weren't able to manage this anymore.

As the third, fourth, and fifth box opened, inside were bottles upon bottles of pills.

There were Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pills, Black Jade Tiger Bone Pills, Golden Snake Scarlet Pills, Blue Miracle Pills, and also many other kinds of expensive pills, all placed in large quantities. Any one of these pills were treasures that common martial artists would wish for in their dreams. For instance, the Crimson Gold Dragon Marrow Pill was what Lin Ming had obtained for becoming first place candidate in the Seven Profound Martial House's entrance examination. After putting so much effort in, he had finally obtained one in a jade box. That pill couldn't be bought in a mortal city, and it had caused the envious gaze of many others to fall on him.

But now, the Crimson Gold Dragon Pill and other pills of that level were gathered in in massive jars; it really caused Lin Ming to feel a bit melancholic.

After rummaging through the medicine box, Zhou Xinyu pulled out a box of pills. The box itself was made from Millennium Artic Jade, and it had a unique chilling aura. If a pill were stored inside, then none of the pure heaven and earth origin energy of the pills would dissipate.

As his soul force swept out, Lin Ming was able to probe just what was inside – Heaven Opening Pills.

He didn't think that there would be many, there looked to be around 30 or so. There was just too great a need for Heaven Opening Pills. Normally, a sect would keep a large batch of Heaven Opening Pills in storage and slowly pass them out as the next batch was being prepared in the furnace. Most of these pills would be used to strengthen the sect – only a few dozen would be left behind for emergencies.

"I want half." Lin Ming simply said.

Zhou Xinyu didn't bargain with him. She opened the Arctic Jade box and counted out 18 Heaven Opening Pills, handing them over to Lin Ming.

The last box was entirely red, and also the smallest. There was a small lock on top.

To martial artists, a metal lock could simply be broken open. But, Lin Ming didn't think this lock was so simple. If it wasn't handled properly, it might be destroyed along with everything inside.

Zhou Xinyu carefully took out another key and opened the lock, and then slowly lifted the box's top. The box was mostly empty, but on the bottom were 12 bottles carved from blood jade.

Lin Ming took deep breath. He didn't need to probe with his sense to guess just what was in these 12 blood jade bottles.

Shattered Demon Heart Crystals!

These small treasures were what Lin Ming had risked his life for, and also what had caused his body to almost explode.

"As per our agreement from before, I'll take 10!" Lin Ming's voice was a bit excited. With these Shattered Demon Heart Crystals, he would be able to further consolidate his cultivation and continue tempering his marrow; he could even do so in this stone chamber!

Zhou Xinyu clenched her teeth, then eventually took out 10 of the blood jade bottles and handed them to Lin Ming. The remaining two were left inside the box.

This empty box had once held 72 Shattered Demon Heart Crystals. Now, there were only two left…

With the blood jade bottles in his hand, Lin Ming could clearly feel an ancient breath emitting from them. And also the remaining thoughts of the Netherworld Great Emperor's indomitable will.

These were the key to his Tempering Marrow!

As he carefully put away the 10 Shattered Demon Heart Crystals, Lin Ming's goal for coming here could already be considered successfully completed. As for the treasures and jade slips on the shelves, Lin Ming wasn't very interested in them.

As he swept past the jade slips with his perception, most of them were cultivation methods. As for the treasures, most were medium-grade human-step. There were also a few earth-step treasures, but Lin Ming didn't take a fancy towards any of them.

Finally, he used his perception to look at the several stone rooms. He didn't have much hope for anything, but after seeing what was inside, Lin Ming was actually a bit excited.

Among the rooms, there were some very interesting things.

Lin Ming strode over and checked inside, then gasped.

These were inscription materials! Every room was full of inscription materials!

That’s right! The Moon Seizing Sect used to be a sect that excelled in symbol techniques. No matter whether it was inscription symbols, offensive or defensive symbols, the Moon Seizing Sect was skilled in them. Zhou Xinyu’s master Shui Yue was also an inscription grandmaster. In the Moon Seizing Sect’s hidden treasure trove, it would make sense to have so many inscription symbol materials.

As he made a cursory glance over these materials, Lin Ming was jubilant with happiness. These materials were all rare and precious types; collecting them wasn’t easy at all.

The value of these materials wasn’t too obscene, but collecting them was difficult. Something like the Heaven Opening Pill – as long as one paid a high enough price – could certainly be bought from any sect. But inscription materials were different. They were just too limited in quantity. Besides some sect professions, it was impossible for a seller to find buyers, or for a buyer to find sellers.

Therefore, many inscription associations built warehouses to store materials and collected a massive amount of them. Whether or not it was useful at the moment, they would store it inside. The Moon Seizing Sect was also like such. These materials had accumulated for over a thousand years.

For the past half year, Lin Ming’s inscription technique had stalled, and a major reason behind that was that he didn’t have materials to practice his technique. Now, this problem was easily solved.

Now he could finally spend some time to make some high-level medicinal inscriptions, and enhance the Heaven Opening Pills, and even the Shattered Demon Heart Crystals’ medicinal efficacy.

Chapter 352 – Seclusion

Chapter 352 – Seclusion

…

…

…

“I want these inscription materials, I’ll trade you five Heaven Opening Pills for them. I can’t pay you now, but I’ll be sure to pay you back within the next two years.” Lin Ming said to Zhou Xinyu as he pointed at the massive pile of materials in the room.

Five Heaven Opening Pills was far from covering the entire price of the room of rare and precious materials. Not only that, but Lin Ming was only making a future promise for what he would owe. Of course, they had already stated beforehand that besides true essence stones, treasures, and cultivation method manual jade slips, all else would be divided between them. Although these materials were precious, they weren’t very useful to Zhou Xinyu in comparison to Heaven Opening Pills. Lin Ming also added on, “And I won’t take anything else.”

Zhou Xinyu agreed as before. After entering the treasure storehouse, almost everything had been divided according to Lin Ming’s thoughts; she didn’t oppose his suggestions at all.

Lin Ming also said, “I’ll be going into seclusion here for three months. Afterwards, I’ll be leaving for Divine Phoenix Island. Would you like to travel together with me?”

Mu Qianyu had given Lin Ming three months before he had to return to Divine Phoenix Island and enter the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. He would be idling around for these three months, so cultivating here was perfect. Not only that, but there were also some essence gathering arrays in this treasure storehouse, and the heaven and earth origin energy here wasn't any worse than at the Seven Profound Valleys. The one who constructed this treasure storehouse probably had similar plans of what to do here. In this treasure storehouse, they could seek safety in asylum and also cultivate.

Lin Ming opened a door and found that there was a decent-sized underground lake within. In the lake there were also some plump white fish. This confirmed his guess, there was even a connected food source here.

Zhou Xinyu had nowhere to go, so she prepared to go into seclusion as Lin Ming would. Afterwards, she would go to Divine Phoenix Island with Lin Ming. That place was the holy land of cultivation for Zhou Xinyu. Zhou Xinyu dreamed of breaking through to the Revolving Core realm, and this would be impossible without the support of a large sect.

Like this, the boring and tedious days of cultivation began.

Lin Ming had a great number of things he needed to accomplish in this period, a timeline of three months was already very tight.

Lin Ming and Zhou Xinyu each took two separate side compartments of the room. There was an invisible line drawn between the rooms. With this midline as the separating point, they wouldn't try to enter into each other's territories; this was a request that Lin Ming had made.

After Zhou Xinyu heard this, her faced turned red and white with anger. In the situation of men and women sharing a room, the one most nervous would usually be the woman, because their strength was often far inferior to the man. Although Zhou Xinyu had a multitude of discontented thoughts about Lin Ming, she felt that his character was upright and trustworthy.

However, she didn't think that Lin Ming would be the one to make this request. It was as if he were afraid that she was a cougar that would take advantage of him; how could she not be mad?

Lin Ming didn't think that he would anger Zhou Xinyu in this way. The truth was that he only wanted to hide the secret of medicinal inscriptions from Zhou Xinyu. Not only that, but his cultivation process was a bit horrifying. If it was known by Zhou Xinyu that he would be eating Heaven Opening Pills like candy, her chin would probably fall to the ground.

At the start of Lin Ming's secluded cultivation, he spent most of the time practicing inscription. Only after most of his soul force had been consumed would he meditate and then refine out the impurities and pill toxins from his body.

Back when Lin Ming was poor, he wasn't even willing to use inscription materials for practice. Instead, he used his true essence to simulate the process, drawing the same symbols tens of thousands of times.

Now however, he had a massive amount of top quality materials that he could use with impunity, and he also had the support of his powerful soul force. Once his true essence was exhausted, he could just use a medium-grade true essence stone to restore it. He was able to trade low-grade true essence stones to Zhou Xinyu for medium-grade true essence stones.

Peng!

A mass of gorgeous lights lit up the entire dark stone chamber, just like a pile of beautiful fireworks. However, the value of this beautiful display was several hundreds of true essence stones in materials. Even just one stalk of 500 year old Nepenthe Grass was worth 100 true essence stones. In an instant, 100,000 gold had turned into nothing but ashes.

Such a failure would happen many times in a single day.

Every day three or four medium-grade true essence stones would turn white and explode into dust. By using this prodigal money-wasting method, and also with the memories of the Supreme Elder from the Realm of the Gods, Lin Ming's inscription technique increased by leaps and bounds.

Sometimes Lin Min would look at the inscription technique jade slips in the stone chamber. Although these jade slips were second-rate in comparison to the inscription techniques from the Realm of the Gods, these jade slips were still able to provide Lin Ming with some inspiration. After all, the inscription materials of the Realm of the Gods were very different from the inscription materials of Sky Spill Continent.

Every day, when Lin Ming's soul force was depleted, he would resist the urge to sleep and instead begin to meditate, refining the impurities from his true essence. After several hours, Lin Ming would always feel very hungry, and he would catch some plump white fish from the underground lake and roast them over a fire. He would give some to Zhou Xinyu, and this was one of the few times when the two would exchange words.

Each time she ate a fish, Zhou Xinyu would maintain a completely calm surface demeanor. However, her innermost feelings were constantly in amazement at Lin Ming's cooking technique. Especially when she had seen Lin Ming take out a small knife from his spatial ring and slice out all of the fish bones in just a few dozen strokes. Even the small bones and pieces were cut out, leaving only gorgeous cuts on the tender fish flesh. This caused Zhou Xinyu to feel greatly surprised. This sort of cooking craft was completely irrelevant and separate from cultivation. Without a long time of practice, it was impossible to do this.

This fish bones were placed into a pot and made into fish bone soup. This strange white fish that didn't have even eyes was originally a bony fish. Once the fish bones were boiled for about an hour, a delicious and mellow fragrance would drift out.

The only drawback in this situation was that Lin Ming didn't cook enough. Sometimes he would stay in seclusion for four or five days, completely immersed in his practice.

During this time, Zhou Xinyu could only try to catch fish herself and roast them according to Lin Ming's method and make soup. However, after killing several fish Zhou Xinyu was only just able to do so. But even so, she wasn't able to achieve the same grilling effect, and the taste was miles apart. Also, it was impossible for her to slice out the fish bones with a knife like Lin Ming did.

Like this, an entire month passed. 100 medium-grade true essence stones were turned to white dust. These medium-grade true essence stones were traded from Zhou Xinyu according to market price. 100 medium-grade true essence stones had cost Lin Ming 10,000 low-grade true essence stones.

In addition to the massive amount of materials that were ruined, the losses were already in the tens of thousands of true essence stones.

Today, Lin Ming's eyes were bloodshot. He clenched his teeth as he crushed a yellow symbol paper and a fire lit in the dark room just like a beacon of light. The flame wrapped around the Heaven Opening Pill, and within a few blinks of the eye it turned into a beautiful flame brand that marked itself atop the sparkling jade-green pill. After the fleeting radiance, the room became as dark as it was before.

"It's finally complete!"

Lin Ming gasped for breath. This medicinal inscription symbol would be able to increase the effects of the Heaven Opening Pill by around 50%.

An increase of 50% medicinal efficacy seemed like just a bit, but the truth was the effect was much more. In general, pills had a limit to their medicinal efficacy according to their grade. Once this limit was surpassed, it would be useless to eat any more.

The inscription symbol was able to increase the medicinal efficacy by 50%. This was equal to increasing the grade of the Heaven Opening Pill by a great amount, and also increasing its value by several times. In an environment where Heaven Opening Pills were extremely scarce, if this matter were made known to a large sect, it would be an extraordinary matter.

Lin Ming didn't dare to randomly swallow the Shattered Demon Heart Crystals. However, he wasn't this cautious about the Heaven Opening Pills. Lin Ming sat in meditation, restoring some of his strength, and then directly popped the Heaven Opening Pill into his mouth.

A moment later, the Heaven Opening Pill turned into a flow of heat that sank into his body and scattered in all directions. As it mixed into all of his meridians, he felt a familiar tingling feeling. But, after Lin Ming had suffered the ungodly torture of the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, pain of this degree was just nothing to him.

Normally when a martial artist took the Heaven Opening Pill, they would feel the burning hot origin energy flowing through their meridians and skin before dissipating from their pores. This was also the same feeling when Lin Ming had taken the Heaven Opening Pill last time.

But this time, the origin energy was contained inside by an invisible strength from the medicinal inscription symbol, forcibly caged within Lin Ming's body.

The hot origin energy repeatedly rushed against this invisible energy, but it wasn't able to overcome it. This only made the origin energy even more violent, rushing left and right within Lin Ming's meridians. The medicinal efficacy had become extremely brutal at this point.

If a normal martial artist encountered this situation, it would be a curse and not a blessing. In fact, they would not even be able to persist through such a savage attack. But Lin Ming had already fought many of these battles before, and even the Heaven Opening Pill with 50% increased strength was only able to cause his eyebrows to tighten and his palms to sweat. It wasn't too much suffering; it was only like he drank a bowl of scalding hot water.

After a quarter of an hour of time, the crazy flow of heat succumbed to Lin Ming's strength, allowing him to control it. Now, the process of Tempering Marrow could truly begin.

After the increase in power from the medicinal inscription symbol, the effects of the Heaven Opening Pill were much better. Lin Ming used this Heaven Opening Pill to temper his left arm.

This time, Lin Ming didn't even absorb the tiniest bit of origin energy to enhance his cultivation. There were still many pill toxins in his body. If he hastily increased his cultivation like this, it would only harm him.

After several days of meditation, his marrow had completely absorbed the medicinal efficacy. Now, Lin Ming began to immediately draw the second medicinal inscription symbol.

After he inscribed the second Heaven Opening Pill, he then swallowed it down.

This similar stinging sensation came back, but much lighter than it was before. Lin Ming used a continuous quarter of an hour before he finally controlled the medicinal efficacy and began to temper his right foot.

After two days, the second Heaven Opening Pill was finally absorbed; this was much faster than the first time.

This process continued for a month. Lin Ming kept taking Heaven Opening Pills that were enhanced by the medicinal inscription symbol again and again. Finally, he began to use part of the Heaven Opening Pill to wash his marrows and muscles, removing some of the gray impurities from his body. But, because he had eaten too many Heaven Opening Pills, the impurities in Lin Ming's body had reached a point where they couldn't be removed anymore.

As the energy within Lin Ming's body constantly accumulated, the effects of the Heaven Opening Pill continuously weakened. This was an unavoidable reality.

Lin Ming originally guessed that he would need around one or two thousand Heaven Opening Pills to complete Tempering Marrow. But the truth was that the only Heaven Opening Pills that would play any role were the first 100-200 Heaven Opening Pills. After 30-40% of Tempering Marrow was complete, Heaven Opening Pills would be useless.

At the end of the month, Lin Ming only needed an hour of time to fully absorb the medicinal efficacy of the Heaven Opening Pill. From this, one could see just how fast the medicinal efficacy had dropped.

From the 18 Heaven Opening Pills that he had obtained from the treasure storehouse along with the two he had obtained earlier, Lin Ming had collected a total of 20 Heaven Opening

Pills. However, after eating all of these, Lin Ming had only completed 10% of Tempering Marrow. With the part of the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal that he had swallowed before, Lin Ming's Tempering Marrow had reached around 20% completion.

But at this time, the residual medicinal efficacy in Lin Ming's body had already reached the limit.

Chapter 353 – Divine Phoenix Island

Chapter 353 – Divine Phoenix Island

…

…

…

The remaining medicinal efficacy of the Heaven Opening Pill was naturally an incomparably valuable resource; Lin Ming used this leftover medicinal efficacy to cultivate the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ and the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’.

With the medicinal efficacy circulating in his meridians, Lin Ming wholly immersed himself in cultivation. Without knowing night or day, several days passed, and the built up medicinal efficacy in Lin Ming’s meridians gradually began to melt away like a fine spring stream. At this moment, Lin Ming held a thin cracking sound.

With this thin cracking sound, the true essence broke through the barriers of the meridians and flowed through the body, even reaching the tiniest blood vessels on the edges.

“I’ve finally broken through to the fourth layer of the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’!” Lin Ming let out a loose breath, the air forming a vaporous white arrow that shot forth dozens of feet, smashing against the rock walls and causing them to shake.

After so many days of continuous cultivation and repeatedly exhausting his true essence, the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ had finally made another breakthrough.

The ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ was the true essence revolution law formula that was contained within the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’, and was also the foundation of the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’. Later, no matter how great his Tempering Marrow was or how progressed he was in the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, he still couldn't abandon this foundation.

Not only that, but as Lin Min broke through further layers of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' and obtained a deeper understanding, he could better record it onto a jade slip and assist Qin Xingxuan in easing her cultivation path even more.

Finally, a full three months passed. Lin Ming had swallowed all of the Heaven Opening Pills he possessed and also reached the fourth layer of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula'. Tempering Marrow had reached nearly 20% completion.

Although Lin Ming's cultivation was still in the late Pulse Condensation period, his true strength had increased by a great amount.

With this feeling like his body was bursting with strength, Lin Ming was looking forwards to finding a Houtian genius and challenging him to a spectacular duel.

"The three month period is up. It's about time I go to Divine Phoenix Island..." Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a purple thunder; he was filled with anticipation towards the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

....

In the legends of the ancient times, when Sky Spill Continent was first formed, there were four Saint Beasts that lived in the four cardinal directions: the foreign east Azure Dragon, the northern waste Black Turtle, the western domain White Tiger, and the southern mountain Vermillion Bird. Afterwards, the heavens and earth changed, and the seas rose while the southern mountains vanished into the waters. The Vermillion Bird was reborn through nirvana in the South Sea, turning the surrounding 10,000 miles into Divine Phoenix Island. Looking down from the Primal Chaos Heavens, Divine Phoenix Island looked like a phoenix that was spreading its wings out to fly; it really caused one to wonder at the infinite mysteries of nature.

The truth of history had already disappeared into the vast ocean of time. Even the ancient history books or carvings were unable to endure the passage of tens of thousands of years. The truth had long become unknown.

Lin Ming flew several thousands of feet in the air, above the endless cloudy sea, overlooking the 10,000 mile island below.

Within Divine Phoenix Island, there were also six smaller islands that surrounded it, immersed in a thick mist as they revolved around Divine Phoenix Island.

Around these islands there were also smaller islands. They were scattered all over the vast sea like stars in the sky. Lin Ming could faintly make out that these small islands that surrounded Divine Phoenix Island were part of a titanic guardian array formation!

It was impossible to use true essence stones as the basis of an array formation of such a terrifyingly massive scale. A sect, no matter how wealthy, would not be able to withstand such a terrifying consumption of resources.

If he didn't guess wrong, then this colossal array formation used heaven and earth origin energy as its strength, drawing the origin energy from the boundless sea, forming a self-sustaining and perfect system.

To lay down such a large array formation… the resources needed could be imagined. This caused Lin Ming to sigh, he couldn't help but marvel at the terrifying heritage of Divine Phoenix Island.

No wonder the South Sea Demon Region didn't dare to engage in a frontal assault against Divine Phoenix Island, and had to use beast tides and the threat of the extermination of other sects to force Divine Phoenix Island to engage in a war on a different battleground. Otherwise, if Divine Phoenix Island had the backing of these thousands of islands along with the myriad masters of the 19 third-grade sects, the South Sea Demon Region might enter but not leave.

The Divine Phoenix Island Sect was located at the center of the main island's Divine Phoenix Mountains.

In the 10,000 miles of the main island, there were numerous martial families. Of these martial families, the greatest ones among them already had a heritage of 2000 years. Their legacies were no less inferior than that of the Moon Seizing Sect.

These could also be considered as a part of Divine Phoenix Island.

At this time, in the main hall of Divine Phoenix Mountains' highest peak, a woman in scarlet clothes sat above a jade platform. She looked to be around 30 to 40 years old, and her hair was white, like thousands of threads of snowy silk. Her hair was swept up by silver lace in a phoenix shape, incomparably elegant.

The woman's eyes were closed in deep meditation. At this moment, her eyes suddenly opened and then flashed with a strange light. She muttered, "Yu'er mentioned a youth to this old woman a few months ago and called him a rare cultivation talent. She said that this little boy's talent even surpassed her imagination, and had gone beyond even hers and Bing'er's. Although Yu'er is naturally modesty, in truth, underneath that veneer she is extremely arrogant. For her to give a youth such a high appraisal… this old woman is really curious. Today, this old woman was meditating and suddenly felt a touch of the mind… it's probably that little boy that Yu'er mentioned. This old woman really wants to have a look and see just how strong he is. If he can't even compare to the core disciples of my Divine Phoenix Island, then this old woman will truly be disappointed."

As the woman spoke to herself, she flicked her fingers and a flame flashed in the air. She didn't need to use a sound transmitting talisman to pass on a message.

……………………

The immortal mountains were layered in clouds, thick, billowing veils of mist winding around the 1000 peaks. From afar, it looked just curtains of the lightest white gauze were draped over the entire mountain range, hiding it from view.

In midair, an ethereal jade palace appeared silently like a mirage among the clouds. This immortal pavilion was without a doubt, the location of the Divine Phoenix Island Sect!

They hadn't even closed in, but they could see all sorts of spirit boats and flying mounts shuttling back and forth in the air. Even the Winged Flood Dragon that Lin Ming sat on didn't attract too much attention.

"It is truly worthy of being called a top fourth-grade sect, the aura is truly extraordinary." Standing behind Lin Ming, Zhou Xinyu felt a deep emotion springing from with her. Compared to Divine Phoenix Island, the Moon Seizing Sect was nothing more than a small town, not worth mentioning at all.

Lin Ming didn't speak. His eyes were focused on a spirit boat that was flying towards him, as he waited for the other to come up and question him.

"Who goes there?" A man in a red robe stood on the prow of the spirit boat, sweeping his eyes over Lin Ming, his vision full of arrogance and pride.

This arrogance was deliberately revealed, but had already been etched within his bones from the time of his birth. This was an arrogance and pride that stemmed from being a disciple of a top sect within the South Horizon Region.

"I am Lin Ming, Seven Profound Valleys' disciple." Lin Ming cupped his hands together, neither arrogant nor humble.

"Lin Ming?" The red-robed man looked up Lin Ming once more, "You're the heaven-step talent that Uncle Master Mu mentioned?"

"If you're speaking about the heaven-step talent under the joint talent training program, then that's me."

The red-robed man had a peculiar look in his eyes as he glanced at Lin Ming once more. He turned around, saying, "Follow me!"

As he spoke, he turned the spirit boat around and directed it to fly straight towards Divine Phoenix Island.

Zhou Xinyu said with a bit of dissatisfaction, “This fellow really looks down on everyone else.”

“It’s normal.” Lin Ming calmly said. The difference in strength between Divine Phoenix Island and the Seven Profound Valleys was greater than the difference between the Seven Profound Valleys and Sky Fortune Kingdom. He only had to think back to the attitude that the Seven Profound Valleys’ disciples held towards the Sky Fortune Kingdom disciples to understand the reason for this red-robed man’s haughty attitude. Even the residents of a large city would look down on humble country folk with contempt in their hearts.

They rode the Winged Flood Dragon to the entrance along with the red-robed man. At this time, the red-robed man was already waiting at the stone steps in front.

“From here you have to walk, you cannot fly. These are the rules of Divine Phoenix Island.” The man pointed at Zhou Xinyu, “Who is this girl?”

Zhou Xinyu seemed unhappy to have a finger pointed at her in such a manner. She walked up and unhappily said, “I am Lan Yi. I came to Divine Phoenix Island to formally enter as a disciple.”

“Enter as a disciple?” The red-robed man traced his chin, comparing Zhou Xinyu’s cultivation to her age. He said, “Three months from now, Divine Phoenix Island will recruit outer court disciples. With your talent, you should barely be able to qualify. Before this, you cannot enter through the gate.”

“You...”

“A war will soon break out at any moment. No unauthorized personnel may enter the mountain.” The red-robed man icily said. As he was speaking, two spirit boats flew over them, directly flying towards the main hall.

Zhou Xinyu looked up at the spirit boats and coldly snorted, “Didn’t you just say that from here we have to walk to the entrance? Then what about those spirit boats?”

The red-robed man frowned, “Do you think I lied to you about sect regulations to lead you on or play with you? Those two spirit boats have a sun symbol flying above them. That symbolizes that they are emissaries from the Five Element Region’s Sunfire Sect. It just so happens that it will soon be my Divine Phoenix Island’s Exalted Vice Island Master Tianguang’s 400th birthday. All sorts of emissaries from different sects will be arriving to celebrate. This emissary from the Sunfire Sect is either a Revolving Core elder or the sect’s direct disciple. With their status, they may ride their spirit boat to the palace square and then afterwards they will have to walk!”

Zhou Xinyu didn’t retort. Although this red-robed man was arrogant, he wasn’t deliberately making matters difficult for them. The truth was that she hadn’t received any invitation, and it wouldn’t make any sense for them to let her through the gate. In fact, other sects also managed their entrances like this.

Zhou Xinyu sighed. She turned to Lin Ming and said, “Just inform me by sound transmission later. First I’ll find someplace to stay.”

Lin Ming hadn’t yet said anything when the red-robed man’s face suddenly changed. He looked at Lin Ming strangely, and then coldly said, “I just received orders. You may both enter, but you…” The red-robed man pointed at Zhou Xinyu, “After you enter the mountain gate, you may not climb the mountain, you can only stay at the guest hall outside. As for you Lin Ming, you follow me to Parasol Tree Pavilion, and we’ll arrange a place for you to stay there.”

As the red-robed man spoke, he waved his hand and sent out a sound transmitting talisman. This was an order to the disciples of the Parasol Tree Pavilion, so that they would prepare living quarters for Lin Ming.

In the Divine Phoenix Mountains, there was a mountain peak that was covered with a forest of parasol trees. Underneath the towering trees, a young girl was sitting, a blade of grass between her lips. The red-robed man's sound transmitting talisman lit right beside her.

The young girl softly coughed.

"What's the matter, Junior-apprentice Sister?" Beside the girl, there was another red-robed man meditating.

"I just received a message from Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang. He said that the boy that Uncle Master Mu recommended has arrived, and he will also be arranged at our Parasol Tree Pavilion."

Chapter 354 – Parasol Tree Pavilion

Chapter 354 – Parasol Tree Pavilion

…

…

…

"Oh? He'll be living at our Parasol Tree Pavilion?" The red-robed man's eyebrows rose in a challenge, and then his face sank. This man was a core disciple of Divine Phoenix Island's Vermillion Bird Faction, named Yan Fuhong, otherwise called Sir Fuhong.

In Divine Phoenix Island, the disciples were ranked in the same manner as in the Seven Profound Valleys. The direct disciples were at the top, and there were around 10 of them. As for core disciples, they were only inferior to these direct disciples. Lin Ming was evaluated as a heaven-step talent, and he would be receiving treatment equal to a core disciple.

Yan Fuhong said, "The Parasol Tree Pavilion is where the core disciples of the Vermillion Bird Faction live. Do the masters really intend on taking this fellow in as a core disciple?"

"I think that's the meaning." The young girl shrugged, not to happy that Lin Ming would be sticking his spoon in the pot of soup. "But since Uncle Master Mu has given him such a high evaluation, he should have talent comparable to us; it's not wrong that he lives at Parasol Tree Pavilion. You know Uncle Master Mu's personality – she isn't someone who exaggerates things."

As Mu Qianyu was mentioned, Yan Fuhong's complexion was even uglier. He was naturally aware of her Saintess' evaluation of Lin Ming. It was said that when the Seven Profound Valleys held their Total Faction Martial Meeting, her highness the Saintess had sent Uncle Master Qinghong especially to observe the competition. It was only a small third-grade sect's Martial Meeting, and yet Uncle Master Qinghong was set out. Afterwards, the Saintess had even personally gone to the Seven Profound Valleys and stayed there a full two months.

This caused Yan Fuhong to feel uncomfortable. Mu Qianyu was an extremely high and transcendent existence within Divine Phoenix Island. Whoever she thought highly of, that person would rise to fame. "In less than half a year, the Parasol Tree Pavilion has gained another core disciple. After the 10 direct disciple spots are taken from the quota, there are only six more spots for those who can enter the central main hall of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. Now there's some fellow that popped out from nowhere who wants to steal our food! You should know that those people who can only enter the ordinary places of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm are incomparable to those who can enter the central main hall!"

The girl in red glanced at Yan Fuhong and said, "There are only six spots, you think he can obtain one?"

"To enter the core hall doesn't look at strength, only at one's total comprehensive evaluation. And that evaluation score is decided by the elders. Don't forget, Uncle Master Mu's voice has great sway among the others.

As the girl in red listened to Yan Fuhong's words, she hung her head, thoughtful, "Then, what do you want to do?"

Yan Fuhong hesitated for a moment and then asked, "I heard that he was 16 years old?"

"Mm."

"16 years old… no matter how talented he is, his cultivation shouldn't surpass the peak Pulse Condensation period. At most he should be at the mid or late Pulse Condensation period. Even if he is talented, he should be naïve and his strength minimal. Since it's the Exalted Vice Island Master Tianguang's 400th year celebratory feast, then as long as we see an opportunity…" As Yan Fuhong spoke, he tore out a pile of parasol tree leafs, his hands clenching as a fire flashed in his hands, burning the leaves to ashes.

………..

Divine Phoenix Island's main hall was a sprawling area that was covered by many buildings across dozens of mountain peaks. Lin Ming followed the red-robed Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang for over a half-hour walk before they reached a mountain range that was covered entirely by parasol trees. The trees were long and straight, reaching to the sky. Any one of these trees had a history of hundreds of years.

As Lin Ming walked through the parasol tree forest with Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang, he saw many youthful elites and heroes along the way, all of them around the age of 20 or so. Most of these youths all wore one of two types of clothing. The Vermillion Bird Faction disciples wore red robes with a Vermillion Bird and parasol tree image embroidered on their chest, and the Blue Luan Faction disciples wore blue clothing with a Blue Luan and jade bamboo embroidered on their chest.

Among these young heroes and elites, Lin Ming also saw youths that wore seven other different kinds of patterns. These clothing styles were obviously not from Divine Phoenix Province's 19 third-grade sects.

Lin Ming couldn't help but ask, "What sect do these people come from?"

Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang responded, "Since it's almost Exalted Tianguang's 400th birthday celebration, there are a total of eight other sects coming to celebrate. Among them is the South Horizon Region's Supreme Mystery Temple and Dire Space Sect, but also those from the Five Element Region. For instance, the Sunfire Sect, Thundercrest Sect, Deep Earth Sect, Arctic Ice Palace, and so on."

"Five Element Region?" Lin Ming's curiosity was piqued. This was the first time that he had heard of matters outside of the South Horizon Region. Indeed, when one was stronger they would also have a broader view of the world. Before now, his view of the horizon had been limited to the Divine Phoenix Province only.

"Mm. The Five Element Region is a land west of the South Horizon Region, and their area is also larger than the South Horizon Region. The heaven and earth origin energy of the Five Element Region is different from the South Horizon Region, and the elements of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, and thunder are all split up. Therefore, over 90% of the martial artists in the Five Element Region have a true essence attribute, and that's why there are also single attribute sects that arise such as the Sunfire Sect, Deep Earth Sect, and Thundercrest Sect."

"That's possible? The heaven and earth origin energy of two lands next to each other can be different?" Lin Ming was stunned; he didn't think that the Five Element Region would be so spectacular.

Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang had already expected that Lin Ming would be ignorant about these things. He smoothly explained, "The 'territories' of Sky Spill Continent aren't divided randomly. There are large differences between every region. For the heaven and earth origin energy to be different between these lands isn't unusual at all. Even the heaven and earth origin energy above the Primal Chaos Heavens is different. In the Five Element Region, because the people there have been studying single-attribute cultivation methods and styles for countless generations, it could be said that their individual attribute arts have reached the pinnacle. For instance, the Sunfire Sect and Arctic Ice Palace think that their techniques of controlling fire and ice are superior to my Divine Phoenix Island. Since it is Exalted Tianguang's celebratory birthday banquet, how could they miss such an opportunity to show off? They definitely must take this chance to compare their skills with my Divine Phoenix Island.

"Oh? Comparing cultivation methods at a birthday banquet?" Lin Ming was a bit surprised by this.

"It's always been like this. Between the large sects, all they care about is face. As long as it's some grand event like a the marriage or century birthday of a high-level character, then great powers will always gather together. At that time, there will always be a contest where they will compare skills and have a little bit of fun. In truth, this is just a display to see whose disciples are the most outstanding and who legacies are stronger. To the old cronies of the sect who want to know that their legacies are the best, their face is more valuable than their life."

Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang was speaking with a friendly air as if he was proudly being a good teacher. To someone like Lin Ming who was ignorant of what happened in large sects, this was a satisfying chance to show off his psychological knowhow.

Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang seemed to be addicted to this feeling. He non-stop introduced the sects and their most excellent disciples to Lin Ming.

"The Five Element Region has a total of seven fourth-grade sects. Because of the characteristics of the heaven earth origin energy in their land, there is a fourth-grade sect that's formed over each gathered elemental origin energy. As for the South Horizon region, we have a total of three fourth-grade sects and one fifth-grade sect. Although this sounds like less, we wouldn't lose to them in terms of combat strength. For instance, our Divine Phoenix Island has the power to go against two fourth-grade sects!"

As Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang said this with a completely self-satisfied expression, Lin Ming was utterly speechless. Divine Phoenix Island was a top fourth-grade sect, so it wasn't wrong that they could go against two other fourth-grade sects, but the so-called fifth-grade sect was obviously the South Sea Demon Region.

Could the South Sea Demon Region really be called a sect of the South Horizon Region!? If the South Horizon Region really fought with the Five Element Region, it would already be great if the South Sea Demon Region didn't stab them in the back first.

"Do you see that girl in front? It doesn't look quite obvious but she has a very fiery temper and is prone to fits. Be careful around her unless you want to bring disaster upon yourself." Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang lowered his voice and then simply changed to true essence sound transmission. "She's called Huo Ruyan, and is also known as the Sunfire Princess.

She's one of the top direct disciples of the Sunfire Sect, and her strength among the young heroic elites is listed in the second rank! Her technique at controlling fire is superb; not even our Vermillion Bird Faction's Elder Senior-apprentice Brother could necessarily compare with her."

Lin Ming followed as Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang said this, and casually glanced over at the parasol trees, seeing a young, confident looking girl wearing a crimson colored flexible armor. By her side was a young maid, and the two were chatting as they walked.

As they saw Lin Ming and Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang, the girls casually glanced at them and then no longer paid attention.

She really did have the qualifications to ignore them. Her cultivation was already at the early Houtian period, and Lin Ming was just at the late Pulse Condensation period. As for Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang, he was only at the peak Pulse Condensation period.

"How old is this Sunfire Princess?" Lin Ming was a bit interested. He could sense a very rich and pure fire origin energy emitting from this girl's body. This sort of feeling absolutely came from a Flame Essence. Not only that, but it wasn't a low-level Flame Essence.

"Should be around 18 or 19 years old. This Sunfire princess intends to put on a great show during this banquet." Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang sourly said. In front of the famed Sunfire Princess, he naturally didn't have any pride.

Lin Ming nodded, an 18-19 year old Houtian master was truly extraordinary.

"The Five Element Region's seven sects have terrifying attainments in single-attribute cultivation methods. There is also someone at the Thundercrest Sect who is comparable to the Sunfire Princess. Their name is Zhou Lie, and this person is also called 'the Thunderclap', and was said to have absorbed a high-grade human-step Thunder Soul! This heroic elite is also listed as a second rank!"

"Arctic Ice Palace's Bai Aoxuan is called the 'Northern Snowy Sword'. His strength is also at the second rank!"

“There is Deep Earth Sect’s Shi Yun, his bodily defensive power is terrifying; his strength is at the third rank!”

“That is Gold Bell Mountain’s Liu Yue; his strength is third rank…”

Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang’s mouth was like a blossoming lotus as he spouted on and on, introducing over 20 people in a single endless breath. Lin Ming suddenly asked, puzzled, “There are second rank and third rank talents, but what about first rank?”

“First rank? Hehe…” Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang disdainfully laughed. “They wish. Well, the first rank talents are called ‘Saints’. In my current generation of Divine Phoenix Island, there isn’t any young heroic elite that is ranked as a ‘Saint’ talent. But, ten years ago, there were actually two…”

“Oh? Who were they?” Lin Ming asked, unthinking.

Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang looked at Lin Ming like he was an idiot. He patiently said, “They are Her Highness Mu Qianyu and Her Highness Mu Bingyun. They are twin sisters, didn’t you know?”

Lin Ming almost choked on himself, then silently traced his chin in embarrassment. He should have known this, it was just that he had always subconsciously regarded Mu Qianyu as a top character senior, and had ignored her age.

Mu Qianyu was only a young 27 years old. Ten years ago, she would have been around his age, and would have been a junior of her generation.

However, thinking of Mu Qianyu’s monstrous talent, he could imagine just how terrifying a ‘Saint’ level talent truly was. No wonder the seven fourth-grade sects of the Five Element Region couldn’t easily produce a Saint level talent.

As Lin Ming and Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang were speaking, there were others talking about him. Deep within the forest of parasol trees, there was a blue-clothed man with clouds embroidered on his chest eating some pine nuts as he asked Yan Fuhong, “Brother Yan, that’s the fellow from your Divine Phoenix Island that is regarded so highly by Fairy Maiden Mu?”

Chapter 355 – Entering the Sect

Chapter 355 – Entering the Sect

…

…

…

The youth who spoke was named Zhan Yunjian, and he was a disciple from Storm Valley. He was 19 years old, and his cultivation had just reached the top of the early Houtian realm, just a step away from reaching the middle Houtian realm.

This youth and Yan Fuhong were old acquaintances. After they had 'accidently met', Yan Fuhong had struck up a conversation, and during it, he had mentioned Mu Qianyu's high evaluation of Lin Ming. He wanted to stir up Zhan Yunjian's arrogance, and have him ruin Lin Ming's prestige at the birthday banquet.

To teach Lin Ming a lesson was a matter that was only suited to outer court disciples. The so-called competitions that happened at the banquet would be an extremely casual affair. Whoever wanted to compete with whoever would only have to call a name or jump up onstage to declare a duel. Sometimes they might not even compare just martial arts fighting skills. They might compare fire skills, secret techniques, martial skills, Concept comprehensions, and so forth.

In short, there were many ways to show off one's skills. And these competitions usually had an unspoken rule that disciples of the same sect couldn't challenge each other. Since Yan Fuhong and Lin Ming were from the same sect, it was naturally an inappropriate affair.

As Zhan Yunjian heard Yan Fuhong speak of Lin Ming, someone who was highly thought of by the Saint rank talent Mu Qianyu, he began to pay attention to Lin Ming's cultivation.

“Mm? He’s only at the late Pulse Condensation period; it’s hard to believe that someone of that cultivation is thought of so highly by Fairy Maiden Mu. How old is he?”

“16 years old.”

“Really now? A 16 year old with a late Pulse Condensation cultivation is about satisfactory. If his strength is also outstanding, then he deserves to be thought of highly by Fairy Maiden Mu.” Zhang Yunjian casually evaluated Lin Ming with a few words then began to walk away.

Yan Fuhong anxiously said, “Brother Yun, aren’t you interested in him?”

“Interested?” Zhan Yunjian’s footsteps paused, and he faintly smiled at Yan Fuhong, his hand still peeling pine nuts. “It looks like you have some problems with this Lin Ming kid. I am interested, but I also don’t have the qualifications to move against him. He’s three years younger than me, and his cultivation is also lower by a great deal. How could I possibly compare anything with him like this? If he were three years older, then I might be interested in having a little match with him.”

Zhan Yunjian was a character who was ranked among the top disciples of Storm Valley, and was equal to the Sunfire Sect’s Sunfire Princess, or the Thundercrest Sect’s Thunderclap. He was someone who liked to challenge those at higher levels, especially those that were older or had a higher cultivation. But, Lin Ming was only a young little 16 year old boy, and his cultivation was also only at the late Pulse Condensation period. At the banquet, he would almost be the same as a little child. If Zhan Yunjian challenged Lin Ming, even if he didn’t fight Lin Ming, he would be laughed to death by others.

If he really fought with Lin Ming, it would still be a useless endeavor. There was no glory in winning, nor would it be fantastic. Zhan Yunjian didn’t want to participate in such a thankless and unflattering event.

Yan Fuhong wasn’t willing to let this go. He tried to urge further and said, “Brother Yun shouldn’t look down on him. Even though his cultivation isn’t high, he’s quite strong, otherwise there’s no way he would have entered the discerning eye of the Saintess. He’s only

16 this year, and he defeated many aspiring heroes and elites to win first place at the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction Martial Meeting…"

"Seven Profound Valleys? Is that a third-grade sect in your Divine Phoenix Province? Haha, Brother Fuhong, there's no need to even mention this matter. A third-grade sect's Total Faction Martial Meeting champion simply doesn't count for anything. When I was 15 years old I challenged the chief disciple of a third-grade sect under Storm Valley and defeated him in less than 10 moves."

Zhan Yunjian casually said this, obviously not placing much importance on this memory. He saw Yan Fuhong's hesitant appearance and said, "Well, Brother Fuhong, it seems that you are also forced. It seems this little fellow will be divvying up a great part of your resources. So be it then. I'll ask a few of my younger junior-apprentice brothers to go up and frustrate him a bit. What is he best at?"

The banquet matches were not for the purpose of defeating one's opponent, but for showing off one's skills. Zhan Yunjian asked what Lin Ming was most skilled at because he wanted to suppress him in whatever he excelled at. This would be the most rewarding method of punishing Lin Ming.

Yan Fuhong was instantly happy. He said, "That boy is best at controlling thunder!"

"Controlling thunder? That's the domain of the Thundercrest Sect. I just happen to know a young junior-apprentice sister from the Thundercrest Sect who is around 17 years old. For her to compare a bit with him sounds about right."

"17 years old?" Yan Fuhong frowned. Although he didn't think that Lin Ming was too strong, he didn't doubt Lin Ming's talent. How could his talent be poor if he was someone that Mu Qianyu valued? "She's young. Do you have confidence she'll win?"

"Haha, don't underestimate her. In another one or two years, she'll be able to enter the second rank."

In the absence of a monstrous talent like a Saint rank character, the second rank would be the top; there weren't too many of these talents in a sect. This let Yan Fuhong feel at ease. This young girl was also a year older than Lin Ming.

"Many thanks Brother Yun. Today's my treat. Let's go to Over Mountain Hall!"

"Over Mountain Hall? That's a good place! I heard that it takes a medium-grade true essence stone to eat there, and a meal there is the same as a common martial artist's hard earned cultivation for a whole year; how could I miss this opportunity, haha!"

……………………

The Parasol Tree Pavilion had a total of 360 buildings, and most of these buildings were empty. The Vermillion Bird Faction only had a mere 20 core disciples, so most of the buildings were empty spares used for other events. For instance, for the exalted Tianguang Revered Master's 400th birthday banquet, the young heroes and elites would be staying at the Parasol Tree Pavilion.

Lin Ming lived in the 22nd building. The one who lived across from him was the red-robed youth who had led him through the mountain gate, Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang. These days, Lin Ming had become much more familiar with him, and even knew his name – Zhang Zhen.

The small building he was supplied had its own courtyard. For cultivation, Lin Ming would practice in the early morning when the eastern sun first rose, and the courtyard would fill with heaven and earth origin energy. The origin energy of Divine Phoenix Island was much richer than the Seven Profound Valleys', and cultivating here was like soaking in a sea of heaven and earth origin energy; it was an incomparably pleasant and luxurious feeling.

Parasol Tree Pavilion had been very noise and bustling with activity these days. There had been too many disciples that had come in, and many of them had unique skills and were itching to do something. Unable to wait for the banquet to start, they had already gone to the open areas of the parasol tree forest to compete with each other in a test of skills. When these individuals began to compare skills, it would often attract a great deal of onlookers.

Lin Ming stayed in his small building for three days, and nobody bothered paying attention to him. The people of Divine Phoenix Island were extremely busy preparing for the smelting trials of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, and also the birthday banquet of Tianguang Revered Master.

In the afternoon of the fourth day, a young maid spoke at Lin Ming’s door. “Sir Lin, Her Highness the Saintess requests your presence at the Back Palace.”

The maids of Divine Phoenix Island were similar to the janitor disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys. If they served the Saintess or other elders, their rank might become a little higher. Although this young maid was around Lin Ming’s age, she had a Bone Forging stage cultivation.

“Then I’ll have to bother Miss to guide me there.” Lin Ming respectfully said.

The little maid shyly giggled and led Lin Ming to the Back Palace of the Parasol Tree Pavilion. This was not the mountain gate or the palace entrance, so one could fly here.

The peaks of Divine Phoenix Island stretched without end, and there were a variety of peaks that showcased the splendors of the land, even dangerous peaks that seemed sculpted from the greenest jade. Divine Phoenix Mountains’ Back Palace was located at the summit of an extremely high and wondrous mountain that was blanketed by endless green parasol trees. A dense fog wound around the entire mountain, forming a haze green illusion.

The Back Palace was hundreds of feet high, and covered several miles of land, the entire structure made of exquisite blue stone. As Lin Ming walked in, he saw a woman in a red robe sitting in a high chair made of the purest green jade. Although the woman had silver hair, she didn’t seem old, and still seemed to be in the glorious and magnificent prime of her life. At the woman’s right sat another elegant woman. This woman was Mu Qianyu.

Without a doubt, that silver-haired woman was a master of a generation. Lin Ming respectfully bowed and said, “Junior Lin Ming greets Senior.”

“Lin Ming, this old woman has heard of Yu’er mentioning you.”

The beautiful woman kindly smiled, her eyes containing a lingering charm that befuddled the eyes as she glanced over Lin Ming. “The truth is that since you are part of the joint talent training program, you could cultivate here at Divine Phoenix Island even if you don’t join my sect, and also enjoy the treatment of a core disciple. But, I heard from Yu’er that she has already passed on the first layer of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ cultivation method to you, and that you also intend to further study this cultivation method. However, this cultivation method is a strict legacy of my Divine Phoenix Island that cannot be passed to outsiders. Thus, this old woman would like to ask you: do you want to join my Divine Phoenix Island as a core disciple?”

Lin Ming’s voice caught in his throat, he didn’t immediately respond.

The beautiful woman smiled and said, “I see that you are a man of honor, and that you’re also reluctant because of the Seven Profound Valleys. Haha, a true man knows graciousness and pays his debts. This old woman is already aware of the matter between you and the Seven Profound Valleys. As this old woman understands, you are not an official disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys, and the Seven Profound Valleys also hasn’t put forth any effort in cultivating you. If you choose to enter Divine Phoenix Island, there won’t be any problems. Also, concerning Shi Zongtian, this old woman has already discussed this matter with him, and he has agreed that after you enter Divine Phoenix Island, you may also be considered half a Seven Profound Valleys disciple.

This beautiful woman said this all casually and plainly, but the truth was that Divine Phoenix Island had made many concessions in order to appease the Seven Profound Valleys.

Lin Ming hesitated; entering into a sect was a life-changing decision that would concern his entire future. Initially, when he was at the Seven Profound Valleys, he hadn’t truly entered the sect. As he was considering, he saw that Mu Qianyu was winking at him, hinting for him to quickly agree.

“Senior, this junior has a question. What sort of duties does a Divine Phoenix Island core disciple have?”

The beautiful woman was stunned. She meaningfully looked at Lin Ming and smiled, “You want to discuss conditions with this old woman? The young are truly brave! To think of all the young heroes and elites that have stepped over each other and struggled so furiously to become a core disciple of my Divine Phoenix Island, and yet you are asking of conditions. Truly confident!”

The beautiful woman’s words seemed like praise, but they were filled with a sense of dissatisfaction. To her, Lin Ming’s words were a bit insolent.

Mu Qianyu was secretly worried on the side.

Lin Ming slowly and calmly said, “Senior, I am a man who has full faith in the commitments and promises that he makes. The ancients have a saying – a master for a day, a master for life. If I enter into a sect, then then this truth is also similar. Since this is a commitment that I will have for my entire life, naturally I must consider it twice and not easily answer. Senior mentioned that there are many young geniuses that rush over each other to enter Divine Phoenix Island, but aren’t these people coming just for Divine Phoenix Island’s resources? The world is splendid, and there are advantages to be found everywhere. In this world, there are countless people that go crazy for their personal benefit, but those that are crazy for righteousness and honor are rare. Those that are the first to rush to become a disciple of Divine Phoenix Island, won’t they also be the first rushing to escape when Divine Phoenix Island suffers a calamity? That is what I believe.”

Lin Ming’s words were neither haughty nor weak, and they resounded in the hall. The beautiful woman had a surprised look; she didn’t think that a 16 year old boy would say such words. Even Mu Qianyu was slightly shocked.

After a period of silence, the beautiful woman suddenly smiled. “Good! Well said! Righteous and crazy! As long as your talent and abilities are to this old woman’s satisfaction, then you may enter my Divine Phoenix Island without any obligation, as long as you have honor and conscience!”

Chapter 356 – The Birthday Banquet Begins

Chapter 356 – The Birthday Banquet Begins

…

…

…

Divine Phoenix Island was extremely powerful. They did not lack in those that pretended to be humble, nor did they lack in talents. However, nobody knew just how many of these talents were truly loyal to Divine Phoenix Island.

The beautiful woman didn't fully approve of Lin Ming just because of her words. But, she could affirm in her heart that Lin Ming wasn't someone who faked appearances.

A truly ungrateful person that forgot grace and held no virtues, well, their promises were useless. As for those righteous individuals that didn't betray their mortality, there was no need to have them make any promise. Thus, the beautiful woman gave Lin Ming the greatest degree of freedom equal to a secret disciple.

"First you will apprentice under Yu'er. She will also be the one to hand down and teach you the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle. This old woman is called Yuhuang. Later, you will also call this old woman Master Ancestor Yuhuang! If you can blossom in radiance within the year or maybe if you reach the Houtian realm before 17 years of age, then I will personally teach you."

The beautiful woman spoke her words and then left. Mu Qianyu bowed to see her off, and Lin Ming also deeply bowed like a good disciple.

In a flash, only Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu were left in the hall. The serious expression that Mu Qianyu had quickly faded, and as she looked at Lin Ming, she couldn't help but laugh.

Lin Ming subconsciously traced his nose, sheepishly saying, “What makes Miss Mu smile?”

“What did you just call me?” Mu Qianyu winked, grinning as she sardonically looked at Li Ming.

“Ah…” Lin Ming was a bit embarrassed, “Master Mu.”

“Who are you calling Master Mu? Just call me Master. I didn’t think that Master would place you under me as my disciple. In fact, you are my very first disciple. Divine Phoenix Island has over 30 core disciples, and around 20 of those were from the Vermillion Bird Faction and another dozen or so from the Blue Lian Faction. All of those disciples have masters that are Revolving Core powerhouses, and I’m the only one whose cultivation is below the Revolving Core realm!” Mu Qianyu sounded a bit excited. The first time being someone else’s master always gave a very unusual feeling.

Lin Ming was utterly speechless. He thought that being Mu Qianyu’s disciple was an outlandish and strange turn of events. In truth, he was hoping to apprentice under an elder. For instance, that old lady Yuhuang.

It looked like the only route he had was to show off his talents as soon as possible and attract the attention of that old woman Yuhuang, so he could apprentice under her and quickly get rid of this crappy status.

Mu Qianyu noticed Lin Ming’s astonished expression and that it was somewhat funny. She continued to say, “Alright, I won’t mess with you. I know your status is only temporary. I’ll be honest with you. You haven’t yet obtained the approval of my master. Although I’ve already spoken of your talent to Master, seeing is better than believing. Whether it is entering the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm or my senior uncle’s 400th birthday banquet, both are opportunities for you to display your talent. The sooner you can enter as a disciple of my master and become a direct disciple, the more advantageous it will be for you.

The 10 direct disciples of Divine Phoenix Island were all taught by top masters like old lady Yuhuang. Although Mu Qianyu was a monstrous genius, in terms of being someone's master, she simply didn't have the experience.

Lin Ming said, "I have to attend Tianguang Revered Master's celebratory birthday banquet?"

"Mm. Since you're a core disciple, you naturally have to participate in the birthday banquet. It is also a process for my master to approve of you. Remember, although you will be entering the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, there are also good areas and bad areas. One kind is for the ordinary group which can only enter around the periphery of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. As for the other, they may enter the main Ancient Phoenix central hall. The difference between the two is astronomical, and there is a limit of 16 individuals that may enter the main hall. 10 of those will be the direct disciples, leaving only 6 spots for the core disciples. If you can't display a great enough talent, then one of those spots won't be given to you."

"So it's like this..." Lin Ming's mind stirred. Naturally, he didn't want to miss out on this Ancient Phoenix central hall.

"Now return. And don't underestimate everyone else here. They are all talents that are much higher than anyone from the Seven Profound Valleys. Even if Jiang Baoyun was placed here, he wouldn't be anything special." As Mu Qianyu spoke, she flipped her hand and two red jade slips appeared in her palm.

"This is the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' jade slip. Take good care of it and definitely don't lose it somewhere!"

Lin Ming took a deep breath and solemnly took the jade slip. This was the core cultivation of Divine Phoenix Island, its value could be imagined.

Although there was most likely a special mark on this jade slip to track its location, for Mu Qianyu to give this jade slip to him like this was already a reflection of the enormous trust she held in him.

....

That night, the moon hung bright in the sky. Lin Ming sat in the garden of his little building, tranquilly meditating over the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’.

Of the two jade slips, one recorded the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’, and the other contained insights from when Mu Qianyu had cultivated it. Not only were they the experiences of Mu Qianyu, but also the experiences that many other seniors had left behind, all of them reorganized by Mu Qianyu and completely engraved onto the jade slips. When she had been cultivating, she had also held a jade slip in her hands. Whenever she thought of something useful, she would record it.

Those things that were recorded in the jade slip were all mostly related to the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. There were some supplementary materials, some skills, some analyses on how to make a better breakthrough, and other such experiences. This small jade slip was the accumulated wisdom of generations of wisdom.

“Good stuff!” Lin Ming couldn’t help but exclaim.

Although the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ was a top cultivation method, it was still incomplete. If one didn’t have these supplementary materials, it would be even more difficult to cultivate.

Lin Ming used a full half hour to skim through the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ and then laid down the jade slip, rubbing his forehead. The ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ was shocking; it was even more terrifying than when he had first cultivated the ‘Heretical God Force’.

According to the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’, if one filled in the empty spots and restored this cultivation to the full glory of the Ancient Phoenix Clan – and also cultivate it to the highest levels with the pure bloodline of the Ancient Phoenix – one could rebirth themselves in the fires of nirvana.

After nine nirvanas, they could reach Perfection of this cultivation, becoming immortal and indestructible.

Even the two Supreme Elders' memories that Lin Ming had inherited didn't dare to boast about any cultivation like this. The senior that left behind the Sorcerer Pagoda also lived for tens of thousands of years, but in the end was unable to escape the samsara of life and death, eventually leaving the mortal coil after failing his closed door seclusion.

However, considering the characteristics of the phoenix itself, this 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' didn't seem to be like empty talk. Of course, whether or not any of this was true couldn't be verified. To complete the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan's secret technique was simply a dream.

As Lin Ming's conscious was immersed within the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', he also quickly entered into the ethereal martial intent state, sealing off his six senses and letting the flow of time drift past him.

The rich fire origin energy flowed into Lin Ming's body, forming a vortex of origin energy that swirled around him. This was the rich fire-attribute origin energy of the Parasol Tree Pavilion; if one practiced the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' here, they would have twice the result with half the effort.

After the origin energy entered Lin Ming's body, it was all absorbed by the Heretical God Seed without even the least bit leaking out. It could be said that Lin Ming's body was a bottomless pit; whatever went in, wouldn't come out.

Even Mu Qianyu had been shocked by Lin Ming's talent at fire-attribute cultivation methods. She had called him the 'child of flame'.

The Heretical God Seed began to excitedly stir, and the Flame Essence that revolved around the Heretical God Seed began to howl. After some time, an invisible ring of fire rippled outwards from Lin Ming, quickly spreading. This invisible ring of fire was fast like a gust of wind, rustling all of the parasol tree leaves of the forest.

Those that lived near Lin Ming's little building were mostly Vermillion Bird Faction core disciples, and they were extremely sensitive to fire origin energy fluctuations. As the felt the fire origin energy blowing in the wind, they were surprised.

Just what was that?

Everything had happened too fast; they didn't have time to investigate just what the source of that fire origin energy was. They released their senses to detect the source, but after being unable to find anything, eventually gave up.

The fire origin energy gradually faded. Lin Ming let out a long breath and opened his eyes. He had finally reached Perfection of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' cultivation method's first layer!

If it wasn't for too many pill toxins being left in his meridians, then reaching Perfection of this cultivation method's first layer would have already been enough to help Lin Ming break through to the peak of Pulse Condensation.

From the Pulse Condensation period to the Houtian realm and Xiantian realm, the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' was no longer applicable to help him advance. However, this 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' seemed as if it were tailor made for his body, perfectly complementing with the Heretical God Force and allowing Lin Ming's cultivations to increase by leaps and bounds. In addition to Lin Ming's ethereal martial intent, his martial talent no longer hindered him.

Lin Ming cultivated for the entire night until early the next morning. As the day dawned, the entire Parasol Tree Pavilion was bustling with lively activity; today was Tianguang Revered Master's 400th birthday banquet.

A Revolving Core martial artist could live up to 500 to 600 years old. As they only had a few century birthdays in their life, naturally they had to make grand arrangements.

The Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang that lived across from Lin Ming knocked on his door in the morning and began to talk to him about the banquet and the rules he needed to follow. His superiors had already informed him that he needed to bring Lin Ming to attend the banquet.

“For this banquet, eight great sects have arrived to attend the celebrations. There are more than 10 Revolving Core masters and 100 Xiantian masters. Nearly everyone else that isn’t a Xiantian master is a core disciple of their sect, and each one has talent comparable to a monstrous genius. Heh, such a great scene, let alone you, even I rarely see this. Don’t make a fuss about everything just because you’re a newbie, otherwise you’ll lose face.”

As Zhang Zhen spoke, he looked over Lin Ming’s clothing to see if there were any faults. Since eight great sects had gathered together, everything had become a matter of the sect’s honor. Naturally, no one could slack off in any aspect.

Lin Ming smiled and nodded. Although this Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang was a bit arrogant and overly stiff, his heart actually wasn’t too bad. These days he had taught Lin Ming many of the rules and customs of Divine Phoenix Island.

“Those that can enter the banquet stage are already famous characters. You’re a bit young and your cultivation is also low, and you’re even a new disciple, so there shouldn’t be anyone that is willing to take the initiative to challenge you. Just have a good time and eat everything you can. This birthday banquet has the best feast with delicacies from everywhere. If you eat a big meal, it will be equivalent to many years of hard earned cultivation for a common martial artist.”

“Also, if someone challenges you and they are a bit older, you don’t have to bother with them. There will be some senior-apprentice brothers that will stand up for you. You can compare skills with someone who’s close to your level though, but don’t go beyond that. Understand?”

“I understand.” Lin Ming didn’t refute Zhang Zhen’s words. The scenario that no one would take initiative to challenge him was only Zhang Zhen’s wishful thinking. As Lin Ming had walked down the road these past days, he could feel the gaze of others on him. There were disciples of Thundercrest Sect, and also disciples of Storm Valley.

Lin Ming didn't know any of these people. They were probably ordered to bother him at the behest of others after arriving at Divine Phoenix Island.

Zhang Zhen looked at the time and said, “The birthday banquet will begin in half an hour. Let's go over now.”

Chapter 357 – To See Blood

Chapter 357 – To See Blood

…

…

…

Among the countless dangerous and magnificent peaks, there was one peak covered with thick green bamboo that was dozens of feet high.

Within this green bamboo forest, there was a lake with clear rippling water. On this lake was a green hall that seemed to be carved from jade. This was the land of the Blue Luan Faction – Blue Luan Palace. Tianguang Revered Master was a Vice Island Master of Divine Phoenix Island, and was also a Great Elder of the Blue Luan Faction. His 400th year birthday banquet would be held here.

As Lin Ming arrived at Blue Luan Palace with Zhang Zhen, less than a third of the seats were filled. Most of them were juniors, and not even the direct disciples of the sects had arrived yet.

“Little Junior-apprentice Sister, that is Lin Ming.”

At a corner of Blue Luan Palace’s square, Zhan Yunjian was pointing at Lin Ming as he spoke to a purple-clothed girl. He wasn’t afraid that Lin Ming would find him looking at him, because it wasn’t anything out of the ordinary.

“16 year old late Pulse Condensation period? Not bad.” The purple-clothed girl stroked her smooth and pointed chin as she gazed at her opponent for this banquet, her words sounding a bit old.

Zhan Yunjian wanted to laugh. He thought to himself, wasn't this little girl only 17 years old?

"Mm, that's right. He is a junior of Divine Phoenix Island who is well regarded by Fairy Maiden Qianyu. However, Divine Phoenix Island is a bit lacking in talent these days. Ever since the Saint rank talents Fairy Maiden Qianyu and Fairy Maiden Bingyun appeared, there hasn't been any outstanding heroic elite in the current young generation. Even the Vermillion Bird Faction chief disciple Mu Dingshan and the Blue Luan Faction chief disciple Mu Xiaoqing aren't any better than the direct disciples of the seven sects from the Five Element Region." As Zhan Yunjian spoke, he sighed, "Divine Phoenix Island has really had a great stroke of luck. Even if the next few generations of Divine Phoenix Island are all failures, as long as Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun exist, then Divine Phoenix Island will prosper for the next several hundred years."

In the minds of the many young heroes and elites, a Saint level talent was like an unattainable peak that they could never approach. Even the arrogant Zhan Yunjian had to acknowledge the difference between him and a Saint level talent. This sort of talent would only appear in a fourth-grade sect every hundred years; it was stroke of fate that couldn't be forced.

After listening to Zhan Yunjian, the purple-clothed girl smiled, extremely bright and happily.

"Mm? Why are you smiling?" Zhan Yunjian asked.

"Hehe, I'm just smiling, it's nothing." The purple-clothed girl was clearly hiding something. A 17 year old girl had limited trust, and her mood was written all over her face.

Zhan Yunjian was puzzled; what caused this little girl to be so happy?

Was she implying that the Thundercrest Sect also had a Saint level talent?

As he thought of this, Zhan Yunjian's expression changed. Then, he thought of it some more and shook his head. 'It's unlikely. The seven sects of the Five Element Region all closely monitor each other; even I'm familiar with the direct disciple of the Thundercrest Sect. If they have a Saint level talent then it's impossible that I wouldn't have heard a rumor of it.'

As Zhan Yunjian thought to himself, he wasn't too sure in his heart. If this was true, then the balance between the seven great sects of the Five Element Region would be broken. Once a Saint level talent grew up, it would be hard to find a worthy opponent for them!

After half an hour passed, more and more people began filtering into Blue Luan Palace. Many important figures began arriving one after another. Even in a fourth-grade sect, Revolving Core masters weren't too common.

Tianguang Revered Master finally arrived. He wore a long green robe, and he had a three foot long white beard. His emitted a very calm and extraordinary temperament.

Behind him followed several disciples, and even Mu Qianyu was among them. As Lin Ming saw Mu Qianyu, he was stunned for a bit.

'Mm… something feels off?'

As he noticed her blue clothing, Lin Ming suddenly realised that this woman was Mu Qianyu's younger sister, Mu Bingyun. He had heard that Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun were twin sisters, but normally there would be some differences even between twins. However Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun seemed almost entirely alike; there wasn't even a mark on their face to distinguish between them.

There was only a slight difference between their temperaments. It seemed that Mu Bingyun was a bit less noble, a bit icier, and a bit more indifferent.

Throughout the entire time, Mu Bingyun silently followed behind Tianguang Revered Master.

As if it were arranged, right after Tianguang Revered Master arrived, the old Revolving Core masters of the eight sects soon followed. The front door opened wide, and an old man in a red robe walked in with a group of disciples. This old man’s entire face was red all over, and his steps were light. He and his group had a ball of sacred flames embroidered on their chests – these were all disciples from the Sunfire Sect.

“Haha, Mu Tianguang, how have you been? You haven’t changed in such a long time!” The old man smiled. If this old man was able to call Tianguang Revered Master by his full name, then he was naturally a character on the same level as Tianguang Revered Master.

“Haha, I didn’t think the Sunfire Sect Sovereign would personally come. This old man truly has face!” Mu Tianguang cupped his fists together. Obviously, he and the Sunfire Sect Sovereign were old friends.

As the two old men greeted each other and exchanged some small talk, Lin Ming noticed that there was a red-robed girl following behind the Sunfire Sovereign. She looked around 18-19 years old, and her cultivation was at the early Houtian realm. She was the girl known as the Sunfire Princess, Huo Ruyan.

At this point, all eyes had gathered on Huo Ruyan, even more so than the Sunfire Sovereign. After all, the majority of those present were young heroes and elites. A high level figure like the Sunfire Sovereign had no relation to them, so they wouldn’t pay attention to someone like him. But as for another young heroic elite like Huo Ruyan, she was someone that everyone noticed. After all, a bit later from now, they might have to challenge her in a contest.

As the disciples of the Sunfire Sect took their seats, they were soon followed by those from the Thundercrest Sect. What surprised Lin Ming was that even the Thundercrest Sect Sovereign himself had personally come.

It stood to reason that a normal Revolving Core master would come to this birthday banquet, but a Sovereign wouldn’t personally attend. It had to be known that there were around 20 some high-level figures like Tianguang Revered Master in the great sects of the Five Element Region and the South Horizon Region. If the sect Sovereigns were to attend all the century birthday celebrations of these figures, they would have to make a trip every five years. Making such a long and distant journey was an arduous event, and it wasn't like the various sect Sovereigns didn't have anything else to do.

After the Thundercrest Sect arrived, those from the Deep Earth Sect, Arctic Ice Palace, and Golden Bell Mountain also arrived. Most of those that came were Sovereigns of their sect, and the worst among them were Vice Sovereigns, this really surprised Lin Ming.

Did Tianguang Revered Master really have such great face? A century birthday celebration actually had so many Sovereigns in attendance?

Finally, the last one to appear was the old lady Yuhuang of Divine Phoenix Island. As an Island Master of Divine Phoenix Island and also the leader of the Vermillion Bird Faction, old lady Yuhuang had a status that was even higher than Tianguang Revered Master. All the Sovereigns cupped their hands together. Of the entire audience present, old lady Yuhuang was the strongest; no one dared to disrespect her.

However, old lady Yuhuang had a very unpleasant expression. She gave a few casual smiles, and then sat in the seat of honor, not speaking as an awkward silence and sullen atmosphere floated around her.

Tianguang Revered Master was a bit embarrassed. He stood up, raised his glass and said, "Everyone who has arrived today has shown me the highest honor. First, I will raise a cup to you all!"

As Tianguang Revered Master spoke, he drank a toast to all the guests and the guests all raised their glasses too, offering a number of birthday congratulations and speeches. Then, the atmosphere of the banquet was revived.

Lin Ming couldn't help but whisper, "How come High Master Yuhuang is looking at the eight sect Sovereigns with such a dour expression?"

Zhang Zhen, who was sitting near Lin Ming, heard his question. He reluctantly said, "I don't know why, but I guess it's because the talks of the alliance didn't go too well..."

“Alliance?” Lin Ming was stunned, and then immediately understood. “An alliance to go against the South Sea Demon Region?”

“Mm, yes.”

Lin Ming had a flash of insight. No wonder so many Sovereigns and Vice Sovereigns had arrived. They actually came to discuss such an important matter. It seemed that Tianguang Revered Master’s birthday banquet was just a ruse, and the truth was that they came to discuss an alliance to resist the South Sea Demon Region.

A war between superpowers at the rank of Divine Phoenix Island and the South Sea Demon Region wasn’t like the wars between two small countries. Just because they declared war on each other didn’t mean they would immediately begin. Even though these two great powers had decided to engage each other, there were still many considerations and preparations that had to be made. Before, Divine Phoenix Island had drawn in the 19 third-grade sets, and now it seemed they were even trying to draw in the fourth-grade sects from the Five Element Region. The situation had already escalated to this degree. It was probable that the South Sea Demon Region was also looking for their own allies!

Lin Ming said, “If Divine Phoenix Island is defeated, then would the Five Element Region be able to live their future days in peace? Don’t they know about the concept of co-interdependence?”

Zhang Zhen stared at Lin Ming like he was an idiot, obviously looking down on Lin Ming’s shallow experience. “What do you mean co-interdependence? Divine Phoenix Island is millions of miles away from the Five Element Region. Even if it was when Silent Demon Emperor City still existed, the Five Element Region didn’t suffer a disaster. The reason they came here is to see if we could offer conditions to these old fellows’ satisfaction. Now that the talks have broken down, Uncle Master Yuhuang isn’t feeling too happy about the situation.”

“So it’s like this…” Lin Ming was already used to Zhang Zhen looking down on him. But it didn’t matter, he really didn’t know anything about the Five Element Region.

Zhang Zhen said, “Uncle Master Yuhuang has a very ardent and strong personality. If you are good to her then she is friendly to everyone. But, if she doesn’t feel comfortable, then she doesn’t care about giving anyone face. You can see from her expression that she’s not hiding anything at all. It looks like this banquet is going to be a lively one.”

“Mm? Lively?”

“Hehe, do you think that Uncle Master Yuhuang won’t vent her fire here? If matters of the alliance had come to a pleasant agreement, then the atmosphere of the banquet would be enjoyable. But now that things have gone south, it seems that when we compare skills I’ll have to be serious; even blood might spill now.” As Zhang Zhen spoke, he seemed to be filled with excitement.

“Uh… will it come that?” Lin Ming’s expression changed as he craned his neck.

“Heh, just wait and see. Uncle Master Yuhuang is not in a pleasant mood. If anyone causes her to lose anymore face today, they might anger her at their own peril. Just look at Senior-apprentice Brother Mu Dingshan’s appearance.” Zhang Zhen winked with his eyes.

Lin Ming glanced at Mu Dingshan and saw that he really did have an extremely bitter and pained expression.

“Does Senior-apprentice Brother Mu not have confidence in himself?”

“How can he have confidence like this? Senior-apprentice Brother is fierce, and he’s no worse than any of the other direct disciple of the Five Element Region, but now it’s one against eight. Oh, well with the Blue Luan Faction’s Mu Xiaoqing, that makes it two against eight. How can they resist so many of them? Now that Uncle Master Yuhuang is so angry, losing like this will mean a miserable future for them.”

“The direct disciples of the Five Element Region aren’t some random weaklings. Even if Senior-apprentice Brother Mu put forth his full strength, it isn’t necessarily true that he’ll defeat them. Since he’s going to be going all-out, it won’t be strange to see blood spill.”

Chapter 358 – Skill Competition

Chapter 358 – Skill Competition

…

…

…

Under old lady Yuhuang's influence, the entire atmosphere of the banquet seemed on edge, as if daggers had already been drawn. Lin Ming could even feel a raging fire that was contained with old lady Yuhuang's eyes. How was this a banquet? It was more like a battlefield on the brink of explosion.

Now, old lady Yuhuang really was full of fire. These old zombies were just too greedy for their own good. In order to request them to send out a few masters, they were like lions that had opened their mouths, completely insatiable. If Divine Phoenix Island had gone along with their conditions, then even if they won the war against the South Sea Demon Region, Divine Phoenix Island would probably drop from a top fourth-grade sect to an ordinary fourth-grade sect. If they wished to reach the threshold of a fifth-grade sect, it would probably take another thousand years of accumulating resources. How could she possibly endure this?

The negotiations had continued for three days, and these old bags had only made some slight unimportant concessions. When it came to those core benefits, they wouldn't let go no matter what. It was as if they already assumed that Divine Phoenix Island wouldn't be able to defeat the South Sea Demon Region, and would come begging for help from the Five Element Region's seven great sects.

Old lady Yuhuang had laid down her pride and reached her bottom line; she had already expected the situation to devolve to this point with these old geezers.

To borrow an early Revolving Core master for one year, they had to pay 30 Heaven Opening Pills. If these were normal times, then requesting such a sky high price was simply robbing them when they were in trouble!

Old lady Yuhuang had stated that if they truly paid such a great price, Divine Phoenix Island would lose a thousand years of accumulation, and fall back to an ordinary fourth-grade sect.

But at this time, the Thundercrest Sect Sovereign had spoken a few words that had caused old lady Yuhuang to nearly go crazy and storm out.

He said, “Falling to an ordinary fourth-grade sect is still better than having your entire sect exterminated.”

As old lady Yuhuang remembered these words, her fingers began to tremble from rage. She turned her head to stare at the Thundercrest Sovereign Lei Jingtian, wishing with her entire being that she could massacre this old man.

However, facing the murderous eyes of old lady Yuhuang, Lei Jingtian was calm, drinking heartily with the guests around, completely disregarded old lady Yuhuang.

“Lei Jingtian! I want see just what’s so great about you!” Old lady Yuhuang shook her glass and the wine inside began to boil; this was the fire-attribute true essence that she was inadvertently exuding.

As the Divine Phoenix Island core disciples that sat near old lady Yuhuang saw the wine in her glass boil, they all felt a nerve-racking horror swell up within them.

This was truly a tragedy. In the upcoming matches, they would need to treat each one as if their life was on the line. Whoever caused old lady Yuhuang to lose face would definitely suffer a miserable fate.

At this moment, Lin Ming was buried to his head in food, eating as much as he could. Suddenly Mu Qianyu’s voice resounded in his ears. “Lin Ming, Master isn’t too happy at the moment. During this competition it seems as if events will be taken to the extreme. Just do what you have to do, and don't be prodded to action by others. There might even by some martial arts contests with true fighting, be careful that you aren't wounded.

"In addition, the contest isn't just martial artists, but also other skills and abilities. For instance, the Sunfire Sect might challenge our disciples in techniques to control fire. If there are people that try to stir you up to compete, don't immediately answer. The Sunfire Sect has refined their fire controlling techniques for thousands of years. As for you, you just started, so you won't be their match."

Mu Qianyu's voice was filled with concern, and this warmed Lin Ming's heart. He replied, "I know what to do."

"Mm."

After three rounds of drinking, the atmosphere was very lively and festive. Suddenly, old lady Yuhuang smiled and said, ""I wonder if everyone is enjoying the festivities?"

"Haha, I am enjoying myself to the max! With such great hospitality, how can I not enjoy myself?" Lei Jingtian stood up, laughing, and said, "However, the wine and food is good, but without dance and fighting it's a bit boring. How about I have some of my Thundercrest Sect's disciples go onstage to display some of their poor techniques, so that we can enliven this scene a bit!"

As Lei Jingtian finished speaking, a 16 or 17 year old boy leapt onto the stage. He wore purple clothes and had a purple gold crown on his head. He cupped his fists to everyone present and said, "Fellow seniors, fellow martial cultivators, I am Lei Yu, a disciple of the Thundercrest Sect, currently 17 years old. I would like to display some of my insignificant skills and minor abilities, and hope that I can have everyone smile."

As Lei Yu spoke, he flicked his finger and lightning jumped into his palm. This lightning was like a living purple snake, continuously swaying in Lei Yu's hands, sometimes growing, sometimes shrinking, but always extremely gorgeous and brilliant.

After a dozen breaths of time, Lei Yu shook his hand and the purple lightning snake turned into a purple jade ribbon. This jade ribbon emitted a very rich thunder origin energy, and didn't seem any different from purple silk.

"Good!"

"Good!"

Many of the Five Element Region martial artists under the stage began to applaud. However, there wasn't a single martial artist from Divine Phoenix Island that was clapping. The reason for this was old lady Yuhuang who was sitting in the seat of honor. With old lady Yuhuang displaying such a frigid and icy expression, who would dare to clap in her presence?

A Vermillion Bird Faction disciple couldn't sit still and jumped onstage. He said, "Brother Lei Yu has quite the amazing skill. I also happen to understand some similar small tricks, I wonder if I could compare with Brother Lei Yu?"

The disciple didn't wait for Lei Yu to respond before he waved his hand and a fiery serpent shot into the sky. After it flashed, it turned into a chain of flame. The chain converged, turning into a red chain that was no different from a real chain, even reflecting light like metal would. It was just like a fine iron chain that had been heated red in flames.

This was exactly the fire controlling technique that was covered in the first layer of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' – Flame Chains. Lin Ming also knew this technique.

Huala!

The red chain intertwined with the purple silk ribbon. The two disciples seemed to be friendly towards each other, but as soon as they chains and silk twisted together, the two went wild, putting their full strength into defeating the other!

The chain tightened around the silk ribbon, going taut. Thunder and fire flashed. Neither of them stepped back an inch, each of them using the full extent of their strength. After ten breaths of time, there was the sound of silk ripping as the purple silk ribbon was torn in half, but the red chain was in fine condition.

“Haha, I had wanted to compare strength with Brother Lei Yu and gain some good fortune from this banquet, but I didn’t think I would actually tear apart Brother Lei Yu’s lightning silk ribbon. I truly apologize.”

Lei Yu’s expression was ashen. He coldly snorted and then walked offstage. The disciples of Divine Phoenix Island had a very smug and proud expression on their faces. The Divine Phoenix Island disciple turned towards old lady Yuhuang to claim some credit, but as soon as he saw her icy expression, all hope of any accolades soon turned to dust.

This was just the beginning. In a match between two forgettable disciples, whoever won had no effect at all. Against the high-level characters of the sects, this was only worth a laugh.

“Looks like this is going to blow up…” Zhang Zhen clicked his tongue. He turned to Lin Ming and said, “Do you want to go up and show off a bit? If you want to go on you should hurry up. Right now only the most basic core disciples enter the stage. Soon, the middle ranked ones will go up, and then the top ranked disciples. Above those are the direct disciples!

“At that time, you won’t have a chance to show off any more. Just do as I say and take advantage of the moment. Go and challenge someone you’re sure you can take, otherwise you’ll embarrass yourself.”

Lin Ming was the youngest of everyone present. As long as he defeated a disciple that was 17 to 18 years old, to Zhang Zhen, that was already a very flagrant display of his skills.

“I’m in no hurry.” Lin Ming smiled. He had already sensed that there were people from Storm Valley that were eyeing him, especially the purple-clothed girl from the Thundercrest

Sect. This entire time she had been staring at him with extreme provocation in her eyes. Even if he didn't go up, soon there would be people naming him in their challenge.

Once the matches began, they wouldn't stop.

Just after the match between the two ended, more people walked on stage.

A Divine Phoenix Island Blue Luan Faction core disciple challenged an Arctic Ice Palace Disciple in ice skating techniques. Cold light flashed as their ice skates cut across the ice, but finally, the Blue Luan Faction girl managed to break apart her opponent's skates, gaining another victory.

What was happening now was a comparison of skills, rather than a head-on match of strength.

In the flash, 6 or 7 matches had already passed. Zhang Zhen also went on stage. He was named by the purple-clothed girl from the Thundercrest Sect. Her name was Zhou Xiaoling, and she was 17 years old. She had a baby face, and smiled with a harmless expression.

Lin Ming was already aware that Zhou Xiaoling had locked onto him. During this banquet, it was inevitable that he would fight her. The reason that she had called out Zhang Zhen was most likely because she saw Zhang Zhen walk with him, and wanted to use him as a demonstration of her meaning.

"Do you know me?" Zhang Zhen was stunned for a moment. His opponent could only be described as a charming and cute girl; she gave off a rather pleasant aura.

Zhang Zhen was in an excellent mood. Such a beautiful young girl had actually remembered him.

The young girl giggled, not answering. This Zhang Zhen was quite thick-headed.

'This beautiful girl has a very sweet smile. I didn't think she would know my name, but she actually challenged me by naming me. Is it possible that she has a favorable impression of me, then especially made inquiries about me and wanted to contest in martial arts in order to better know me?'

This was the fantasy that was inevitably produced by such a narcissistic man. Especially when the other party had such a sweet smile.

"Vermillion Bird Faction core disciple Zhang Zhen, just reached 18 this year. Please advise."

Zhang Zhen also introduced himself. Everyone that went on stage had to report their age. Normally speaking, when disciples fought, the greatest difference between their age could only be around a year. This was the fairest method, and it also made it so that even if they lost it wouldn't be too ugly.

Although Zhang Zhen had a good impression of this beautiful girl, he didn't dare to underestimate her. Anyone that dared to enter the stage wouldn't be weak. He guessed that he would only need to go onstage once, and there was no way he could let himself be defeated here like this. He shook his hand, and a fire python sprang into the air, clawing the skies.

This was the meaning of comparing skills.

Zhou Xiaoling's two hands moved, and a thin ribbon of purple silk flew into the air. This one move caused Lin Ming to sigh in his heart; this little girl was quite adept at controlling thunder. She could directly let loose a ribbon of purple silk, and didn't even need to transform the thunder beforehand.

Zhang Zhen's expression was solemn. The fire python fought with the thin ribbon of purple silk for a moment, and in just a few breaths of time, there was a shattering sound as the purple-clothed girls silk ribbon tore the fire python in half.

Zhang Zhen immediately flushed red. He looked at the fire python that was still struggling in the air. As he faced this young girl Zhou Xiaoling that was a full head shorter than him, he wished that he could find a hole to crawl into.

‘This little girl that came out of nowhere is just too abnormal! Her cultivation is the same as mine, but she’s a year younger. Yet she was able to cut apart my fire python in just a few breaths of time!’

Chapter 359 – Fury

Chapter 359 – Fury

…

…

…

Zhang Zhen gulped as he sat back down in his seat, distressed. He didn't dare look at how frosty old lady Yuhuang's countenance may have become.

At this moment, Zhou Xiaoling smiled. She wasn't smiling at Zhang Zhen, but at Lin Ming. The challenge in this smile was very obvious.

"I was too careless, far too careless, I actually looked down on such a little girl." Zhang Zhen was ashamed. He was originally a very arrogant individual. Losing was one thing, but the one he lost to was not only a year younger than him, but also a woman.

"My fire controlling technique isn't good enough. If we compared martial arts, I might not lose to her." As Zhang Zhen thought back, he created another flimsy excuse in order to save whatever face he had left.

Lin Ming smiled, not bursting his bubble. After all, the reason Zhang Zhen was in such dire straits was because of him. This Thundercrest Sect girl was obviously aiming at him. Without a doubt, she was someone who was at the rank of a direct disciple. Although she was young, in another two to three years, Zhou Xiaoling would most likely become someone who was equal to the Sunfire Princess or the Thunderclap. Zhang Zhen naturally wasn't her match.

Until now, there had been a total of seven matches. Divine Phoenix Island had lost four and won three. Although they were falling a bit behind, Divine Phoenix Island was still one against six. To have this sort of result was already very good. Of the eight sects that had come, the South Horizon Region's Supreme Mystery Temple and Dire Space Sect hadn't taken action. They probably cared about maintaining their friendship because they shared the same region, and didn't try to challenge Divine Phoenix Island. If the South Sea Demon Region was ever restored to the same grandiosity to the degree of Silent Demon Emperor City, then their days wouldn't be much better. For them, it was better to yield to Divine Phoenix Island and accept their bottom line offer.

This time, at the seat of honor, old lady Yuhuang's expression wasn't the least bit relieved or happy. She was well aware that no matter how pleasant or humble she became, it was not possible to offset the greediness of the Five Element Region sects. Those old bags wouldn't ever accept any concessions.

So it was better to just meet them head-on. In the world of martial artists, there was a prevailing rule – if one couldn't convince them, then defeat them. Strength was the best bargaining chip. If Divine Phoenix Island could win a total victory at this comparison of skills, then the other parties would obviously be at a disadvantage at the negotiating table. This invisible momentum was greatly beneficial to any kind of diplomacy.

But as old lady Yuhuang thought of Mu Dingshan and Mu Xiaoqing's strength, she was ultimately a bit doubtful. Mu Dingshan and Mu Xiaoling were strong; they would definitely have a chance of defeating any of the chief disciples from the Five Element Region's sects. But, to have the two of them fight continuous opponents would put an extreme pressure on them, and would be very hard for them to do.

Of the seven great sects from the Five Element Region, the Verdant Wood Sect didn't come to the birthday celebrations because of faults within their younger generation. As for the South Horizon Region's Supreme Mystery Temple and Dire Space Sect, they wouldn't take action against them. Thus, Mu Dingshan and Mu Xiaoqing were two against six!

Besides Mu Dingshan and Mu Xiaoqing, there was also Lin Ming. Yu'er had strongly recommended him based on his strength, so he should be able to show some skills. But, Lin Ming was inevitably too young, and his ability was insufficient for the challenges ahead. He was also a bit young at 16 or 17 years of age. To have him share the burden of Mu Dingshan and Mu Xiaoqing would be very difficult for him.

……

After Zhou Xiaoling left the stage, Zhan Yunjian sighed. These years, the Thundercrest Sect was becoming increasingly fierce. In a few years, even he might not be able to look down on her.

The Verdant Wood Sect had already produced two continual generations of waste. As for the Thunderclap Sect, they produced two top second rank talents in the Thunderclap and Zhou Xiaoling. The balance of the Five Element Region's seven great sects was becoming increasingly unstable.

As Zhan Yunjian was thinking, he noticed that Divine Phoenix Island's Yan Fuhong was winking at him from afar, indicating for him to make his move.

Zhan Yunjian shook his head, sighing. This Yan Fuhong's jealousy and pride was too heavy on his soul. Such a person would never have great achievements.

As he thought about it, he turned to the junior-apprentice brother near him and said, "Junhui, go and challenge Lin Ming."

"Hehe, you finally want me to make a move?" The youth named Ma Junhui twisted his neck, looking at Lin Ming like a wolf spotting his prey, a rabid excitement dawning in his eyes.

If he managed to injure Lin Ming so that he needed a day to recover in bed, he would be given five medium-grade true essence stones. If he injured Lin Ming so that he needed 20 days, then he would receive 100 medium-grade true essence stones.

If he could damage Lin Ming's meridians and make him need months to recover and delay his cultivation, he would receive 300 medium-grade true essence stones. This amount of true essence stones was equal to the resources he received in an entire year.

As for how to do so in a comparison of skills, Ma Junhui didn’t take it too seriously. In a battle between juniors, often one would become too angry and injure the other. If he used his full strength, how could Lin Ming not be injured?

Besides, there was a vast murderous intent that flooded the entire stage. The top characters of both sides were anxious to massacre the other party. As long as he didn’t kill anyone, then a bit of blood wasn’t anything at all!

“Will that Yan fellow keep his promise?” Ma Junhui asked as he cracked his knuckles.

“He will. He’s already given me 50 medium-grade true essence stones as a deposit.”

“Hehe, that’s good. I just happen to be lacking true essence stones for practice, and now someone’s just delivered them to me.” Ma Junhui thrillingly said as he licked his lips.

“Don’t underestimate him, that boy isn’t simple. For him to reach the late Pulse Condensation period at 16 is already very good. Not only that, but Mu Qianyu thinks highly of his strength. I fear his talent is probably on the same level as someone like the Sunfire Princess, if not more so.” Zhan Yunjian warned.

“Who cares how good his talent is. How can a late Pulse Condensation boy challenge my half-step Houtian cultivation? This boy has potential, however, he’s just too young and naïve.” Ma Junhui said as he leapt up. With the assistance of his wind-attribute true essence, he flashed onto the stage.

“Storm Valley’s Ma Junhui, 18 years old. I challenge all heroes present!” Ma Junhui said as he cupped his fists across his chest.

“Ma Junhui, he came up so quickly. Before, I thought that it would be someone like Zhou Xiaoling coming on stage, but it seems that the Storm Valley core disciple Ma Junhui wants to challenge someone. I remember he’s at the upper middle ranks of the core disciples.” The disciples of the Five Element Region’s seven great sects had a good understanding of each other. The name Ma Junhui was known by many people.

“Mm. It’s mostly been the lower or middle rank core disciples going on stage. Now that Ma Junhui has gone onstage, the level of the matches has increased yet again. It might difficult for us to find an opportunity to display our skills. I wonder who made Ma Junhui so anxious that he jumped up so early to challenge them.”

As the disciples of the Five Element Region murmured to themselves, Ma Junhui swept his gaze past the Divine Phoenix Island disciples. He pointed to Lin Ming and said, “You’re the one called Lin Ming right? Do you dare to face me?”

“What?” Zhang Zhen was the first to be shocked. This kid was too f*cking shameless, didn’t he care about face at all? An 18 year old against a 16 year old, and he actually had the gall to open that big mouth of his?

A two year gap didn’t seem like much, but the truth was to those top talented youths, every day was extremely precious.

Two years was enough to accomplish many things. For instance, Mu Qianyu had reached Pulse Condensation at 15, and that was considered a Saint level talent. However, if she was late by two years and reached Pulse Condensation at 17, then she wouldn’t be considered much. That was something that any casual student of the Seven Profound Valleys could accomplish. But when Mu Qianyu was 16 years old, she had already stepped into the Houtian realm.

If Lin Ming was given another two years, breaking through to the Houtian realm would be simple; he might even be able to defeat a Xiantian master. That was not a level that someone like Ma Junhui could compare with.

Therefore, in a comparison of skills, it was always between individuals that were similar in age. Even if there was a one year difference, it would usually be the junior challenging the senior. If the tables were reversed, then this despicable action was really looked down on by others.

“Lin Ming, there’s no need to go up. This little punk probably wants to harm you.” Zhang Zhen could feel a dark intent coming from Ma Junhui.

Old lady Yuhuang was silent. She turned to glance and Mu Qianyu and saw Mu Qianyu returning a little nod of the head to her, also not speaking.

“Since this is a boy that Yu’er thinks so highly of, if he can’t even overcome a mere two year gap, he’s no better than Xiaoqing or Dingshan. This old woman wants to see just what sort of surprises you have in store for me.”

Ma Junhui ignored everyone around him that was glaring at him with disgust. He pointed to Lin Ming as before and shouted, “Boy, do you dare?”

Lin Ming rose up. “I didn’t think that my name would actually reach the Five Element Region; it is truly the highest of honors. Since you challenge me, then I naturally must accompany you.”

As Lin Ming spoke, he directly walked over to the square, ignoring Zhang Zhen’s frantic winking.

“So he’s Lin Ming.”

“Mm. He also live at Parasol Tree Pavilion. This is my first time seeing him. I heard that he is 16 years old, and that Her Highness Qianyu thinks very highly of him.”

“Then we’ll see just how strong he is. If he can deal with that Ma Junhui then he has some skill, but it isn’t a shame if he loses either.”

Lin Ming was only known to a few people from the Five Element Region, but he was already famous throughout the entire Divine Phoenix Island. He was a talent that Mu Qianyu valued, and one that she had personally recruited from the Seven Profound Valleys. As soon as he entered the sect, he was admitted to the Parasol Tree Pavilion. All of this was enough to make him the focus of the disciples from Divine Phoenix Island.

"Hehe, you think I heard your name in the Five Element Regions because of some glorious deed you accomplished? I only heard that you betrayed your sect and whored yourself out to Divine Phoenix Island to become a core disciple. Am I right?"

Ma Junhui sneered, his words extremely poisonous and insidious. He was intentionally trying to provoke Lin Ming, so that it would be a completely justifiable action to wound him to the point that he would need to recuperate in bed.

"Insolence!"

Ma Junhui's voice had just fallen when he heard a voice like a thunderclap explode in his ears. He instantly turned white, forced back several steps.

"Ignorant boy, you dare to spread such preposterous talk!?" Old lady Yuhuang slapped her right hand against her chair, and a terrifying surge of energy flooded out towards Ma Junhui. Ma Junhui only felt his entire body go ice-cold, as if he were a tiny boat about to be overturned in a endlessly churning ocean.

Ma Junhui was terrified. He didn't think that with just a few words, Mu Yuhuang would not care about her status as a Revolving Core master and move against a junior.

But at this moment, a surge of wind rolled forwards, protecting Ma Junhui's body, sweeping away that terrifying tide of energy. A black-clothed old man stood up and said, "High Master Yuhuang, please calm down. Junhui, what sort of utter nonsense are you speaking of! Hurry up and apologize!"

Ma Junhui let out a breath of relief as the dangerous moment passed. This old woman was an utterly crazy old bag. He had just mocked Lin Ming, but hadn't cursed her at all. How many days had Lin Ming been in the sect and how many times had he seen old lady Yuhuang, for her to move against him like this?

The truth was that Ma Junhui was too negligent. When he said that Lin Ming had whored himself out, that was no different than slandering Mu Qianyu's crystal clear reputation. Mu

Qianyu was Mu Yuhuang's most beloved disciple; how could she tolerate someone disparaging her?

Lin Ming glanced at Mu Qianyu whose expression wasn't looking too good, and his eyes suddenly fell to sub-zero temperatures. He turned to Ma Junhui, his voice desolate and somber as he said, "You want to intentionally provoke me into a rage so that I'll participate in some little deathmatch with you? Well, then I must congratulate you. You have succeeded."

Chapter 360 – Don't Worry

Chapter 360 – Don't Worry

…

…

…

Although the banquet stage was brimming with tension, that didn't mean everyone would lose their sense of decorum or reasoning. Those offensive words that Ma Junhui had said a moment ago were brainless; they were words that a mentally normal person would never say.

Lin Ming didn't have any past enmity with Ma Junhui, nor any injustice. In fact, Lin Ming had never met Ma Junhui. Ma Junhui was just like a rabid dog that was randomly biting others; If he wasn't instigated by others, this was still his personality.

Ma Junhui laughed as he sneered, saying, "You're right, I really am trying to provoke you. Those superficial skill matches that have happened so far are just too boring. However, I wasn't lying when I said that you whored yourself out to become a Divine Phoenix Island core disciple; there really is a rumor that is spreading around like that. As they say, where there's smoke there's fire. Today, how about I be your touchstone to see just how true this rumor is, hmm?"

"Touchstone? You really think highly of yourself." Lin Ming jeered, "I'm afraid your touchstone will break with just a little touch!"

As Lin Ming spoke he took out the Heaven Profound Soft Spear from his spatial ring. Ever since he had acquired the Purple Comet Spear, he hadn't used this silver spear of his.

However, the Purple Comet Spear was a top high-grade earth-step treasure, it was just too shocking. Ancestor Chi Yan had left behind a camouflage array on the Purple Comet Spear, and no one below Ancestor Chi Yan's cultivation should be able to see the truth. However, there were many old Sovereigns here that had keen eyesight and perception, so surely there would be those that recognized it.

A top high-grade earth-step treasure was something that even a Revolving Core master would covet. Although Lin Ming had Divine Phoenix Island backing him and didn't fear exposing the Purple Comet Spear, it was best to keep this news as quiet as possible. With so many people here, it would undoubtedly spread in less than a day.

Ma Junhui saw Lin Ming take out a medium-grade human-step silver spear from his spatial ring and laughed, "Am I seeing things? You are a core disciple of Divine Phoenix Island, but you actually use such a trashy weapon? Even a third-grade sect's direct disciple can obtain an earth-step weapon, but here you are using a medium-grade human-step weapon? Are you joking with me?"

Lin Ming's lips curled up in a smile. If everyone was being friendly and having a nice match, then he wouldn't mind leaving his opponent some face. But now this idiot was being so aggressive and was obviously being strung on by someone else. Naturally, he wouldn't forgive him so lightly.

"To deal with low-level trash like you, my empty hands would have been enough. But now my spear wants to see a drop of blood. After five spear moves, if you can still stand, then consider me having lost."

Lin Ming's words shocked everyone present.

His empty hands were enough?

He took out the spear to see a drop of blood?

Defeat Ma Junhui in five moves or it would be his loss?

Zhan Yunjian looked at Lin Ming with relish; this boy was truly confident in himself. He turned to glance at the Thundercrest Sect's Zhou Xiaoling, and saw that the little girl appeared extremely excited, obviously looking forward to watching this match.

"Oh? You also think Lin Ming will win in five moves?" Zhan Yunjian asked with a true essence sound transmission.

"Hehe, I don't know if he'll win or not, but whatever the outcome, things will be very interesting after five moves. There will definitely be a side that suffers a miserable loss. I'm looking forward to seeing the loser's face. The loser might even lose his confidence and ruin his path of martial cultivation, and never be able to recover. How can I not be excited about something so fun?

As Zhan Yunjian heard the innocent tone in which Zhou Xiaoling spoke, he felt chills crawl up his spine. When this little girl grew up, she would definitely be a grade A disaster.

Of those present, the disciples of the Five Element Region were mostly watching for fun. But as for the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island, they had a variety of thoughts. There were some that were worried for Lin Ming like Zhang Zhen, but there were also those that were extremely jealous and angry, and wanted to see Lin Ming beaten into the ground, such as Yan Fuhong.

Yan Fuhong had a gloating smile strung across his face, and he fiddled with his ring finger as he thought to himself, 'He truly came from a poor land, he actually took out a medium-grade human-step treasure to disgrace himself. I had just wanted to have someone cripple you for a bit so that you'd miss out on the chance to enter the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, but now it seems that even your heart of martial arts will be damaged. What an idiot, you actually dug your own grave.'

Mu Yuhuang was silent. She looked at Mu Qianyu, an obvious question in her eye.

Mu Qianyu was speechless; this Lin Ming really made one worry. It was fine to just beat this fellow up, but now Lin Ming drew himself into a corner. Facing Mu Yuhuang's questioning gaze, Mu Qianyu clenched her teeth and nodded. She still had full faith in Lin Ming.

Mu Yuhuang frowned, “Didn’t you say that that old fool Chi Yan made a top high-grade earth-step treasure spear for Lin Ming? And it was also better than your Vermillion Bird sword? How come he isn’t using it?”

“This…” Mu Qianyu forced a smile. “He probably doesn’t want to stir up any trouble by revealing it…”

Mu Yuhuang coldly said, “If he stirs up any trouble, he still has our Divine Phoenix Island supporting him. At least it’s much better than losing. Taking out such a trashy spear is truly disgraceful, what is he going to do if it breaks? Once his weapon breaks, he might not even be able to settle the match in five moves. Even if his strength is greater than his opponent’s, he’ll still be laughed at by others. I hope he knows what he’s doing and doesn’t make himself into the butt of a joke.”

After Ma Junhui listened to Lin Ming’s words, he didn’t even get mad – he just laughed. He looked at Lin Ming like he was an idiot and said, “Have you gone dumb today? I’ll stand here and see just how you will defeat me!”

Lin Ming held the spear in his right hand and used his left hand to trace the cool shaft, a familiar feeling spreading through his body. He had used this Heavy Profound Soft Spear for the longest time. It had been with him when he defeated Zhang Guanyu, when he had fled through the Southern Wilderness, and it had even accompanied him throughout the entire Seven Profound Valleys’ Total Faction Martial Meeting.

When Lin Ming had said he would defeat Ma Junhui in five moves, he had already left a great deal of room for himself. When Lin Ming had just started Tempering Marrow, he was already able to totally defeat the peak Houtian Huang Zixuan. But this Ma Junhui was only a half-step Houtian. So what if he was a fourth-grade sect’s talent? Not just that, but Lin Ming had already completed 20% of Tempering Marrow.

As Lin Ming's feet trod the floor, under the support of Golden Roc Shattering the Void, his speed instantly reached the limit. His body became a series of phantoms as an azure light condensed on the spearpoint, shooting straight towards Ma Junhui's chest!

"I'll cut your stupid garbage spear!" Ma Junhui shouted and slashed with his blue sword, seven or eight wind blades howled forth. These wind blades whistled through the air with a grating sound like a saber carving through glass.

Facing these wind blades, Lin Ming neither blocked nor evaded; he thrust his spear straight through.

The endless azure true essence carried the vibrating power of Flow like Silk; it smashed against the wind blades!

Ping ping ping ping ping ping!

With a series of sounds like crystal breaking, all of Ma Junhui's wind blades were shattered. But, Lin Ming's spear potential didn't diminish at all; the spear light was only ten feet away from Ma Junhui.

"Mm!?"

Ma Junhui was shocked. He stretched out his hand and blue wind origin energy gathered around him, forming a whirlwind around his body.

"Wind Shadow Shield!"

Peng!

Ma Junhui hadn't even finished yelling 'Wind Shadow Shield' when the Heavy Profound Soft Spear smashed into the whirlwind, creating a whistling sound that pierced the ears. The Heavy Profound Soft Spear only slowed down for the tiniest bit, but then continued piercing through!

"What!?"

Mu Junhui's complexion finally completely changed. His defensive power was outstanding, and he was even able to borrow the power of wind to create the Wind Shadow Shield, yet he couldn't even block a single attack? He retreated, but the Heavy Profound Soft Spear homed in on him!

"Cool Breeze Cut!"

Ma Junhui's eyes were cold. He gave a loud shout and slashed at the Heavy Profound Soft Spear. The sword in his hand was a low-grade earth-step treasure. Even if he didn't use any true essence, it could still cut a medium-grade human-step treasure in half!

Now that he had even used a sword skill, he should have been able to cut apart Lin Ming's spear like a candle. But he never thought that as he cut down on the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, his sword would be mired by the endlessly strong azure true essence, and that even the true essence he had poured into his sword would all be scattered by a strange vibrating strength.

What the hell kind of cultivation method was this?

Ma Junhui couldn't believe what was happening. He didn't even have time to think as this spear potential rushed towards him like a massive tsunami. Even after he had tried to cancel it out with three moves, it still contained a terrifying power.

All of the space around him seemed to be locked down, and the wind origin energy ran wild. The overwhelming spear light smashed into Ma Junhui, hitting him and his flexible armor.

In that moment, Ma Junhui felt like he had been struck by a massive hammer. A giant gaping hole was twisted into his high-grade human-step flexible armor, and even the true essence in his body was smashed apart like broken porcelain. Ma Junhui spat out a mouthful of blood before flying several dozens of feet backwards. There was only a banging sound as Ma Junhui struck several birthday banquet tables. His entire body was covered with wine and food, and also small bits of broken jade dishes.

Because the spear light had been countered a great deal, Ma Junhui hadn't been severely injured. However, his pride had been ruined and brought to the ground. He crawled up from the floor, his lips twitching, his eyes red with blood, and his face flushed with anger.

The entire hall was quiet, even the disciples of the Five Element Region were stunned silly. They hadn't expected such a scene to happen. In just a single move, Ma Junhui had been struck backwards like an insect. Although he wasn't wounded too seriously, Ma Junhui had used three moves to block Lin Ming's spear, yet the end result was this. This gap in their strength was obvious. They were simply on completely different levels.

As the entire audience was silent, a bright laughter like the jingling of silver bells resounded at this untimely moment. Zhou Xiaoling laughed as she slapped her table, tears almost running down her cheeks.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Ma, hurry up and take off those noodles around your neck, I'm going to die laughing here! Hahaha!"

At this time, a bowl of birthday noodles hung around his neck. These noodles were made with special spirit valley ingredients and were especially chewy; they hadn't even broken yet. There were even drops of sauce streaming down the ends.

Ma Junhui looked like he had been bitten by a snake. He tore off the noodles around his neck, his face turning from red to purple.

Seeing this, many Divine Phoenix Island disciples wanted to laugh, but it was quite contemptible to laugh in this sort of situation, so they restrained themselves even though it was hard to endure.

However, those that repressed their laughs didn't include Zhang Zhen. Zhang Zhen's eyes were wide as he stared at Lin Ming, a bit stunned. Out of all the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island, he had been the one that had been in contact with Lin Ming the most. He had brought him through the mountain gate, eaten with him, and had taught him most things.

He had been leading Lin Ming around for several days, but had no idea just what kind of monstrous genius he had been bringing around.

Mu Qianyu let out a long breath of relief, wanting to rebuke Lin Ming a bit. Although she had confidence in Lin Ming, she wasn't sure what sort of progress he had made these past months, and was a little doubtful of what could happen.

"This Lin Ming, he really does make one worry for him."

Chapter 361 – Surrounded by Six Sects

Chapter 361 – Surrounded by Six Sects

…

…

…

“Lin Ming, I’ll kill you!” Ma Junhui was burning with anger from the shame he had received. He gripped the longsword in his hand, a purple layer of light covering the blade. His entire body emitted a blue glow; he was about unleash his full force.

Lin Ming was calm as before. He held the Heavy Profound Soft Spear straight in his hands, waiting for Ma Junhui to come.

“Enough!” At this time, Storm Valley’s Valley Master gave a cold cough. “A loss is a loss, fall back!”

Ma Junhui’s gathering of true essence was disrupted by Storm Valley’s Valley Master’s cold cough, his face flushing red. He argued, unwilling to accept this outcome, “Honorable Sect Master, I merely underestimated the enemy. I still haven’t even used the ‘Wind Conversion Art’, and I still have the Concept of Wind. I…”

“Shut up!” Storm Valley’s Valley Master was finally angry. “An 18 year old challenging a 16 year old and being sent flying back with a single strike is already disgraceful enough, and yet you still have the face to give an excuse! Hurry up and get out of the way, you are shaming me on that stage!”

Ma Junhui gulped, then glared at Lin Ming with bitter hatred in his eyes as he stepped down in humiliation.

“Boy, just you wait. I will definitely return the favor someday!” Before Ma Junhui left the stage, he sent Lin Ming a sinister true essence sound transmission. When he had fought a moment ago, he hadn’t used the ‘Wind Conversion Art’ or the Concept of Wind. In his haste, he didn’t even fully summon his true essence. In his own foolish self-confidence, he had hypnotized himself into thinking he could never lose to Lin Ming, and this was the reason for his sudden and immediate loss.

Only thinking this made Ma Junhui feel a bit better. He had lost today’s match in too miserable a fashion, he didn’t even have any face left at all. If he scavenged some reasoning from somewhere, it would have a major effect on his future martial cultivation and confidence.

Lin Ming didn’t bother to respond. Against a blithering idiot like Ma Junhui, then there no reason to bother with him. What he was more concerned was just who had spurred Ma Junhui and Zhou Xiaoling to deal with him.

“This boy!” Yan Fuhong clenched his teeth under the stage. Lin Ming’s combat strength was secondary. It was Lin Ming’s talent that was too terrifying. Ma Junhui was a core disciple of Storm Valley and his talent could be arranged around the upper middle reaches of all the core disciples, yet he was actually swept away by a single one of Lin Ming’s spears.

Although Ma Junhui said he had underestimated his enemy and hadn’t used his complete strength, didn’t Lin Ming not use his complete strength too?

That meant that Lin Ming’s talent was at least at the likes of Mu Dingshan and Mu Xiaoqing! Maybe he surpassed them! In another two or three years, Lin Ming would become the second Mu Dingshan.

This caused Yan Fuhong to have a feeling of profound crisis. He had a likely chance of being one of the people able to enter the main Ancient Phoenix Hall of the Divine Phoenix Mystic realm. But if Lin Ming came, then his chances of being selected would be greatly reduced.

By the time Lin Ming walked offstage, Zhang Zhen was stunned. Sitting by Lin Ming, he gulped and said, “Big Brother Lin, you are really fierce!”

Big Brother Lin?

Lin Ming had an amused expression. Zhang Zhen was older than him by two years and was someone that was naturally arrogant to the bones. This was not a good state of mind for anyone to have. To be more accurate, it could be said that this was a condition that every disciple of Divine Phoenix Island had: in the reaches of their hearts, they all looked down on those from smaller sects.

But when meeting a truly amazing individual, such as Mu Dingshan, the Sunfire Princess, and so on, Zhang Zhen lost all of his proud nature and arrogance. If that person was even more amazing, such as Mu Qianyu or Mu Bingyun, then Zhang Zhen would even fall over in worship.

The higher one’s cultivation was, the more they understood just how terrifying these characters were.

“Brother Lin, you’re so strong! Do you think you can win against that Zhou Xiaoling girl?” Zhang Zhen asked as he rubbed his hands, it seemed that he had taken his loss to that little girl to heart.

Lin Ming laughed, “You want me to challenge her and gain back some face for you?”

Zhang Zhen smiled, a bit embarrassed, “I just think that little girl is a bit too rampant…”

Earlier, Zhang Zhen has narcissistically assumed that Zhou Xiaoling had challenged him onstage because she had taken a fancy to him. But after he went onstage, he was defeated in a few blinks of the eye. Finally, Zhang Zhen understood that the reason that little girl had called him up was especially to defeat him; this greatly damaged Zhang Zhen’s self-esteem.

Lin Ming said, “Don’t worry about that Zhou Xiaoling. Even if I don’t bother with her, she will challenge me.”

"Ah?"

Lin Ming didn't speak any more. He glanced over at Zhou Xiaoling and smiled. She was impishly smiling back at him, and her eyes held mischievous provocation. This girl, she definitely wasn't someone who was easy to deal with.

Although Lin Ming had sent Ma Junhui flying back with a single spear, he didn't look down on the seven great sects of the Five Element Region. Normally, a fourth-grade sect would have around 10 direct disciples and even more core disciples.

Ma Junhui was only a core disciple ranked around the upper middle reaches, and he was ranked around 20th or so among the disciples of Storm Valley.

The difference between the first disciple and the 20th disciple was humongous. For instance, taking the Seven Profound Valleys as an example, the Total Faction Martial Meeting's tied second and third ranking were Mugu Buyu and Jiang Baoyun, and the 11th place was Fang Qi – the difference in their strength was evident.

But, Ma Junhui's status in Storm Valley was even less than that of Fang Qi in the Seven Profound Valleys. Lin Ming wouldn't look down on Zhou Xiaoling because of Ma Junhui, even if she was only 17 years old.

At this moment, a voice resounded in Lin Ming's ear, it was Mu Qianyu's true essence sound transmission. "Good job! But don't be so hasty next time. Before you figure out your opponent's strength, just have a steady fight with them."

Lin Ming followed the voice and looked at Mu Qianyu, seeing a happy smiled touching her lips. He replied, "Don't worry. This Ma Junhui was just too rude, I only wanted to give him a little lesson."

If he defeated Ma Junhui according to proper rules and conduct, then even if he spat blood it wouldn't mean much. To a martial artist, being injured was a normal event. After recuperating in bed for a few days and taking some pills, they would be spirited soon enough.

But, if he swept away his opponent's face and struck his confidence, this was the most vicious method that left a pressuring mark on his heart. This was the only way that Lin Ming would feel better.

Mu Qianyu knew that the reason Lin Ming had sent Ma Junhui into such a miserable state was because of those words claiming he had whored himself out to become a core disciple of Divine Phoenix Island. Not only did these words castigate Lin Ming, but they also slandered Mu Qianyu's pure reputation.

Lin Ming probably did all this as a means of avenging her honor. Thinking of this, Mu Qianyu smiled, and didn't say anything more.

After that fight a moment ago, Mu Yuhuang's complexion was finally a bit better. Lin Ming truly hadn't disappointed her, it would be no problem for him to enter the top of the second rank talents. If this generation of Divine Phoenix Island could have the trifecta of Mu Dingshan, Mu Xiaoqing, and Lin Ming supporting them, that would truly be a fortuitous event.

As old lady Yuhuang was thinking this, she accidently caught a glimpse of Lei Jingtian's bright smile, and her face sunk.

"That old fox!"

She hated Lei Jingtian's smile that seemed to think he had everything within his grasp. A few days ago at the negotiation table, this old man had been blocking her at every turn.

"Could this old man have something that he can rely on?"

The matches onstage continued. Ever since Lin Ming and Ma Junhui's battle, no one else competed with their skills or techniques. Now, everyone that went on stage was engaging in true battle.

“Storm Valley core disciple Zhang Lin challenges the heroic youths of Divine Phoenix Island. Does anyone dare to compete with me?” On the center of the stage, a youth in a green robe clearly spoke as he held two swords in his hands.

He was one of the top three ranked core disciples of Storm Valley.

Divine Phoenix Island’s martial artists had very ugly expressions. Normally at this sort of banquet competition, besides fellow disciples challenging each other, it was a casual affair for other sects to challenge other sects. Divine Phoenix Island would challenge the sects of the Five Element Region, but the sects of the Five Element Region would also challenge each other. For instance, Golden Bell Mountain, Thundercrest Sect, and Sunfire Sect would also compete against each other.

However, what had continually happened was that the sects of the Five Element Region had gathered today to challenge Divine Phoenix Island. Now, this Zhang Lin had already spoken words that he was aiming at Divine Phoenix Island.

Divine Phoenix Island was strong, but they were absolutely unable to cope one against six.

“Divine Phoenix Island’s Hua Hong, please advise!” A young girl in red jumped on stage. She was the fifth ranked core disciple of Divine Phoenix Island, and was about the same as Zhang Lin in terms of strength.

After the match began, Zhang Lin didn’t hold back at all. He immediately used the core cultivation method of Storm Valley, the ‘Wind Conversion Art’. It was clear that he was going to go all out from the start.

Hua Hong clenched her teeth and used the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ with determination. She already realized that this would be an uphill battle, and even if she won, she would have to do so using every possible effort, and it would be impossible for her to fight again in the near future.

True essence collided, and wind and fire swirled together onstage. A formidable true essence shockwave surged out, blowing away several nearby tables.

An elder of Divine Phoenix Island who was skilled in array formations moved and sent out several array symbols with his hands, confining all of the terrifying true essence waves within the stage.

After the two individuals exchanged dozens of moves, Hua Hong finally defeated Zhang Lin by the weakest margin. But, she had already been forced to her utter limits.

“My technique is inferior, I admit defeat.” Zhang Lin cupped his hands together across his chest and then stepped down from the stage.

Although Hua Hong had won, her complexion was very pale. She wouldn’t be able to restore her energy in a short period of time, and she could already see that the Thundercrest Sect’s Zhou Xiaoling was itching for a fight. She obviously was planning on going onstage, and the ones she would challenge would most likely be Divine Phoenix Island disciples.

The top five core disciples of Divine Phoenix Island could match up to the top three core disciples of the Five Element Region’s sects. But one against six was the same as six against 18. If this continued, Divine Phoenix Island might reach a situation where no one would be able to go onstage.

“Big Brother Lin, that little girl’s thinking of going on stage!” Zhang Zhen had sharp eyes; he had already noticed the malicious intent in Zhou Xiaoling’s devious smile.

“Mm. She deliberately waited some time to give me a break so that I could restore my condition, and so it wouldn’t appear in poor taste for her to challenge me.” Lin Ming indifferently smiled. The truth was that he hadn’t really used any energy at all in his battle against Ma Junhui. Even if he did consume a great deal of energy, he was able to quickly recover.

In terms of restorative ability, Lin Ming had absolute confidence in himself. After he had entered the Sorcerer Pagoda, his blood vitality was like a raging inferno, and his recovery power was far above and beyond any martial artist of the same level.

Afterwards, he had also completed 20% of Tempering Marrow. Now Lin Ming's restorative strength was even more terrifying than before. Maybe even a Xiantian mater might not be able to compare with Lin Ming in terms of recovery power.

Zhou Xiaoling had wanted to give the usual opening remarks and challenge someone to come onstage, but she found that Lin Ming had already stood up. She smiled, revealing her sharp canines. "So you already knew!"

Chapter 362 – Close Contact Combat

Chapter 362 – Close Contact Combat

…

…

…

As soon as Divine Phoenix Island's Lin Ming and Thundercrest Sect's Zhou Xiaoling walked onstage, it caused an immediate sensation.

Lin Ming and Zhou Xiaoling were both top second rank talents among the juniors. Several years from now, they would be top level characters equal to the Sunfire Princess and Zhan Yunjian. Naturally this attracted the attention of everyone present.

"Lin Ming is 16 and a half years old, and Zhou Xiaoling is 17 years and one month old. There's a seven month difference between them…" There were many nosy individuals that had collected as much information as they could, and were able to pinpoint their ages accurately to the month.

"I think that Lin Ming has a higher chance of winning. For better or worse, that Storm Valley Ma Junhui is still a core disciple ranked in the upper middle reaches. He was sent flying out by Lin Ming in one move; I don't think that's something that Zhou Xiaoling can accomplish.

"Don't be silly, that Ma Junhui was just an idiot, he was far too arrogant. He didn't even treat Lin Ming as a true threat and didn't use the 'Wind Conversion Art'. He deserves to be struck down like a fly. If he was serious, then the gap between Lin Ming and Ma Junhui wouldn't have been so great. I think Lin Ming might not be able to defeat Zhou Xiaoling.

Don’t forget, she’s at the peak of Pulse Condensation, but Lin Ming is only at the late Pulse Condensation period!”

To a true genius, jumping ranks and fighting those above was natural matter. But when the one you were against was another genius, then that was another matter altogether. That was extremely difficult, and every small difference in cultivation was an extremely large gap.

“I think that Zhou Xiaoling has a higher chance of winning. In another half a year, if Lin Ming can reach the peak Pulse Condensation period, then it might be a fair match.”

All the nosy busybodies were speculating on the outcome of Lin Ming and Zhou Xiaoling’s match. To these young heroic elites, they also liked to compare their sense of judgment. In any case, even if they were wrong it wouldn’t be a loss.

Old lady Yuhuang glanced at Mu Qianyu as usual, and Mu Qianyu nodded in return, indicating that this wouldn’t be problem. She had complete confidence in Lin Ming. In truth, a seven month gap wasn’t too great a difference. Even if his opponent was a top second rank talent, Lin Ming should still be able to win.

Seeing Mu Qianyu’s confidence, old lady Yuhuang was much more reassured. She thought to herself, ‘It seems that Lin Ming’s talent is even more remarkable than Dingshan and Xiaoling’s. Yu’er has really found a treasure for my Divine Phoenix Island.’

……….

On the stage, Lin Ming and Zhou Xiaoling were 100 feet apart from each other.

Lin Ming’s mind stirred, and then he asked with a true essence sound transmission, “Miss Zhou, could you tell me who has such a great interest in me that they would send so many people after me?”

Zhou Xiaoling’s eyes narrowed. She smiled, replying, “Someone offered 300 medium-grade true essence stones to beat you up really bad. If you defeat me, then I’ll tell you. But if you lose, you lay in bed for a month like a good little boy and let me win those true essence stones. How about it?”

There was no foolproof plan in this win, especially since Yan Fuhong had no friendship with Zhan Yunjian. If there was a true investigation, Zhan Yunjian was unlikely to keep Yan Fuhong’s secrets for him.

Lin Ming’s eyebrows rose in challenge, “Oh, is that a promise?”

“This little lady keeps her word. But, it seems that you’re overly confident in defeating me.” Zhou Xiaoling unfolded her arms, and purple lightning twisted around her hands, snaking into the air around her, causing the surrounding space to tremble. She had high expectations of Lin Ming’s strength. For heroic elites of similar age, engaging in a true battle with someone of similar strength was an extremely rousing and mentally stimulating event.

Lin Ming faintly smiled, “Against a thunder-attribute martial artist, I will always be confident.”

He flourished the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, and the silver spearpoint droned as it began to shudder. True essence flooded into the Heretical God Seed and the power of thunder erupted. In a split-second, a purple white electric current surged forth from the spear, tearing the void.

The was the power of thunder that used the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder as its foundation – it was incredibly violent!

Zhou Xiaoling’s eyes instantly widened, her originally large eyes almost doubling in size, blinking as she stared at the power of thunder that wrapped around Lin Ming’s Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

Those present were also shocked, they didn’t think that Lin Ming would be a thunder-attribute martial artist. Wasn’t he a disciple of Divine Phoenix Island? How could he be a thunder-attribute martial artist?

The common folk watched for fun but the experts could see the true skill. The elders of the Thundercrest Sect as well as their core disciples' pupils narrowed as they saw Lin Ming release the winding thunder. This power of thunder contained the will of thunder – it absolutely had the support of a Thunder Soul!

Zhou Xiaoling traced her pretty chin, praise on her lips, "I never thought it would be like this. When I listened to that person say you knew how to control thunder, I thought you just had some minor skills. But now it seems like you even have a Thunder Soul! Hehe, things are getting more and more fun!"

As Zhou Xiaoling spoke, she took out a large golden ring from her spatial ring. This ring was three feet wide, and was as thick as a thumb. Its edges were sharpened, but there was a blunt section that one could grab onto. This was the first time that Lin Ming had seen such a strange weapon.

"Looks like a low-grade earth-step treasure made from Gold Thunder Rock..."

When Lin Ming had his Purple Comet Spear made, he had researched many different thunder-attribute materials, and thus he was able to recognize the ring in Zhou Xiaoling's hands. This was a weapon made from Gold Thunder Rocks. Although it was worse than the Profound Thunder Stones that were used in his spear, it was still a very good thunder-attribute material.

This ring of Zhou Xiaoling's was a top low-grade earth-step treasure. It was far superior to the Blood Wave Saber that the Zhang Family from the Seven Profound Territory possessed.

"You aren't going to switch your spear?" Zhou Xiaoling asked.

"Unnecessary."

"I don't want to take advantage of you." Zhou Xiaoling said, her eyes squinting, "Even if I win, others will say it wasn't because of my skill."

Lin Ming thought this was quite funny, this little girl was very confident in herself. “Say that after you’ve won.”

“We’ll know after we fight! Purple Thunder Cut!”

Zhou Xiaoling trod the floor, and her body moved forwards like a slippery fish. The golden ring in her hand was completely engulfed in a shining purple light. The ring rapidly rotated, and arcs of lightning flashed out, turning into a vicious flywheel. Wherever this weapon went, even the air itself seemed to be sliced apart.

The power of this move startled everyone; just how was Lin Ming going to block such a fierce attack?

If that silver spear struck the spinning flywheel, it would probably be cut in half; there was no way to undergo a direct confrontation!

Lin Ming wasn’t nervous or in a hurry. He languidly stepped back, and as the spinning flywheel was about to strike him, he stabbed his spear into the center of the ring. Although the Heavy Profound Soft Spear really couldn’t meet this weapon head on, as long as it was in the center of the ring, it would be absolutely safe.

Zhou Xiaoling’s eyes flashed with a brilliant light.

“You want to avoid a collision? Nice try!”

With a thought, the power of thunder within the flywheel burst out, and a thick current of electricity plunged into Lin Ming’s Heavy Profound Soft Spear like a snake.

At such a close distance this was impossible to dodge. In an instant, that purple snake of thunder had sunk into Lin Ming’s body.

Once one was struck by such a powerful electric current, they would be momentarily paralyzed. In a battle of masters, this momentary paralysis was fatal.

“Hehehehe…”

Zhou Xiaoling maliciously laughed. She raised her fist and punched out towards Lin Ming's right eye.

"Let me give you a panda eye!"

To curse someone and then beat up their face was a style consistent with Zhou Xiaoling. To give Lin Ming a panda eye was a very fun idea.

However, when her fist was halfway there, it was actually grabbed by another hand!

In that moment, Zhou Xiaoling felt like her hand was stuck in an iron clamp, even her bones were on the verge of breaking.

"Ah!"

Zhou Xiaoling screamed in pain, her beautiful eyes filled with horror and disbelief. How was this possible!? Lin Ming was struck by her purple thunder, so how come he wasn't affected!?

Zhou Xiaoling desperately let out a burst of thunder from her left hand, wanting to shake free from Lin Ming. But Lin Ming was simply unafraid of this electric shock. Whatever thunder surged into Lin Ming's body seemed to disappear without a trace.

Zhou Xiaoling clenched her teeth, waving her hand to try and loosen herself. However, Lin Ming's hand seemed to be cast from iron, immovable and unshakable; his hand gripped Zhou Xiaoling to the point where her bones nearly shattered.

Lin Ming's expression was cold, there was no fun or entertainment in his eyes. In that moment, he would have been fine if he was struck. But if another martial artist was punched in the eyes, there was a high chance they would go blind.

When a martial artist was paralyzed, their defensive power would be lowered by a great deal; how could a fragile eye withstand a fist that was flooded with true essence?

This little girl seemed simple at heart with an innocent and childish spirit. But this childish spirit was no reason to play with the lives of others. This little girl was spoiled too much by her master, what she needed was a good awakening lesson.

“Let go of me.”

Zhou Xiaoling angrily said. Her right hand gripped the golden ring, slicing towards Lin Ming’s arm.

However, Lin Ming only gripped Zhou Xiaoling’s arm and pulled.

After Tempering Marrow had reached 20%, his strength had already reached tens of thousands of jins – it was impossible for Zhou Xiaoling to compare with such a terrifying strength. In front of Lin Ming, Zhou Xiaoling was nothing more a chicken being held, she had no power to resist at all. With just a slight movement, Lin Ming pushed Zhou Xiaoling to block the sharp-edged ring with her own arm.

Zhou Xiaoling was shocked. She quickly stopped the attack.

In a battle between two young masters, it had actually devolved into a close combat melee. This sort of scene was extremely rare.

The audience stared with wide eyes, bewildered. In a normal battle between martial artists, it would usually be an exchange of martial skills, or a comparison of whose true essence was thicker, or whose moves were more vicious; how could there ever be a melee like this?

Zhou Xiaoling blushed. She had never felt so powerless in her life before. With her hand gripped, it felt like it was about to break, there was just no way she could loosen herself. “You idiot, let go of me!”

Suddenly, her foot lashed out towards Lin Ming’s vital male weakness between his legs. But, this move was thankfully blocked by Lin Ming’s knees.

“So young and yet your actions are already so inhuman. This fist is for your neglectful parents!”

As Lin Ming spoke, he raised his first, and directly punched Zhou Xiaoling’s stomach. His fist was imbued with vibrating true essence, and his entire hand was wrapped in an azure light. Zhou Xiaoling’s complexion changed. With her hand grabbed by Lin Ming, there was no way she could dodge this.

Bright Thunder Shield!

At this critical moment, a dazzling purple shield of thunder appeared around Zhou Xiaoling.

Kacha!

Vibrating true essence erupted, and the thunder shield shattered like glass. Lin Ming’s fist smashed into Zhou Xiaoling’s stomach!

“Ahh!”

Zhou Xiaoling felt like her stomach had been struck by a heavy iron hammer. She cried out in pain as she flew backwards, spitting out a mouthful of blood.

Chapter 363 – Special Body

Chapter 363 – Special Body

…

…

…

Zhou Xiaoling smashed into the array formation barrier, then bounced to the ground, her entire appearance ruined and her face bloodied.

The audience was stunned, their mouths hanging wide. They didn't know what to say; how could such a fight happen? Grabbing an opponent's arm, confining their motions, and then viciously punching them?

"Did I see something wrong? Can you tell me what happened? I saw Lin Ming struck by Zhou Xiaoling's lightning, so how come nothing happened?" A disciple asked what everyone else was thinking.

Nobody could answer him, because this was already beyond their comprehension.

"He only used ten breaths of time to defeat Zhou Xiaoling, the difference between them is too great!"

"Not surprising. I don't know why, but Zhou Xiaoling's power of thunder is useless against Lin Ming. Zhou Xiaoling is a thunder-attribute martial artist, and using the power of thunder is her only means of attack. Once her power of thunder is sealed, there isn't anything she can do."

The martial artists of the Thundercrest Sect had very ugly expressions. Immune to thunder? Then how could they defeat such a person? Wouldn't they also be suppressed and lose? They could already tell how their battles with Lin Ming would go by looking at how Zhou Xiaoling ended up.

Because there weren't many thunder-attribute martial artists to begin with, and their own combat strength also had its superior facets, they had always had a deep sense of superiority. Now, someone had appeared that could completely ignore anything they did; they were simply unable to accept this.

Even the Thunderclap Zhou Lie asked Lei Jingtian with a sullen expression, "Senior Uncle Sect Master, how is this possible? Why is the boy immune to the power of thunder?"

Lei Jingtian frowned. He hesitated for a moment then slowly said, "He isn't immune to thunder, it's only that he's immune to Xiaoling's thunder. In other words, her cultivation is too low. If this boy faces someone much stronger than him, he would have no way to resist. I was carefully tracking Xiaoling's thunder a moment ago, and after it entered Lin Ming's body, it seemed to have been absorbed by him."

"Is that even possible?"

"The truth is already set before you. He should have some sort of special body. The world is large, there are far more wonders out there than we can ever imagine. For instance, Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun both have spiritual fire and spiritual ice bodies. A hundred years, ago, there was even someone who appeared at our Thundercrest Sect that had an astral thunder body..." Lei Jingtian shook his head, looking regretful. This young genius had such a special thunder type body but he wasn't obtained by his Thundercrest Sect – it was just too great a pity.

"Special body?" After Lei Jingtian spoke, a young man standing behind him raised his eyebrows, his eyes flashing with lightning as he locked onto Lin Ming. "Things are getting more and more interesting!"

"Limitless, don't look down on the opponent." Lei Jingtian said with a true essence sound transmission.

“I’m not underestimating him.” The youth called Limitless was very pale. There was a faint mark between his eyes like it were a piece of ivory. “He truly has the qualifications to be my opponent. But, I’ll have to wait until he reaches the Houtian realm…”

Onstage, Zhou Xiaoling bit her lips, her fingers touching the blood that leaked from her mouth. She stared at the bright crimson that stained her fingers, unable to believe what had happened. She was struck so hard that she had actually spit blood?

Ever since she was small, because she was such a talent, she had never been beaten by those old fogies of her sect before. Yet now she had received such a beating. That punch had been so solid and without even a single ounce of pity, even her internal organs seemed to have been severely injured.

For a time, resentment and grievance swelled up within her heart. Tears began to shine at the edges of her eyes.

Her talent was good, but her cultivation method was completely suppressed by Lin Ming. The power of thunder didn’t work against him, and in a close quarters fight, she was like the little girl she was, unable to resist his attacks at all.

“You’re a meanie, a bad meanie!” Zhou Xiaoling grit her teeth, a grinding sound coming out.

Lin Ming watched her with cold eyes. He noticed that the old man from the Thundercrest Sect had an ugly expression but didn’t come out to defend her. It seemed that whatever doting master she had that had spoiler her to this point hadn’t attended today’s festivities.

“When you treat others so viciously, you should also expect that someone will treat you the same way another day. Do you want to have another go?” Lin Ming’s tone was frosty.

Zhou Xiaoling’s was enraged, her face flushing red. She knew that if she continued to fight with Lin Ming, there was no way she could win. But she still couldn’t humiliate herself to admit defeat.

“Xiaoling! A loss is a loss, now get down from there!” From the Thundercrest Sect area, the Thunderclap Zhou Lie shouted. He was Zhou Xiaoling’s big brother.

Zhou Xiaoling stamped her feet for a moment and then angrily stormed offstage.

Lin Ming sent a true essence sound transmission, “Don’t forget the agreement. You have to tell me who it is that is aiming at me.”

“I will ask!” Zhou Xiao clenched her jaws, hating everything that had happened.

The Five Element Region’s disciples suddenly began talking.

“Zhou Xiaoling was also defeated. Is this Lin Ming really 16 years old?”

“Zhou Xiaoling was suppressed too greatly. It’s impossible to see how deep Lin Ming’s strength is from this match. We must ask a non thunder-attribute martial artist to go up and test Lin Ming’s true strength. Jin Yue, how about you go up and give it a try?”

The youth called Jin Yue came from Golden Bell Mountain. When a martial artist became famous, they would often establish a family clan or a sect that was named after the weapon or cultivation method they used. For instance, the Seven Profound Valleys’ Zither Faction Founder had the surname Qin, meaning zither. As for the seven great sects of the Five Element Region, there were many martial artists that took their own attribute as their last name. For instance, the Sunfire Princess Huo Ruyan. Jin Yue was the same. He was a famous talent within Golden Bell Mountain, and in terms of reputation of strength, he was the strongest disciple under the Houtian realm.

“Why would I want to go up?” Jin Yue asked.

“Hehe, our Five Element Region’s seven sects are inexorably linked together. We’ll back you up, there’s no need to be afraid.”

“Are you trying to stir me up? How about you go up yourself? You’re not a thunder-attribute martial artist. Naturally, you’ll be able to test his true strength. How about it?” Jin Yue said, faintly smiling.

In the battle between Lin Ming and Zhou Xiaoling, it was truly impossible to see his true strength. But, Jin Yue could approximately guess that Lin Ming’s true strength was already comparably to an early Houtian realm core disciple!

Although Jin Yue was known as the strongest disciple underneath the Houtian realm, and was also a direct disciple, there was still a very large gap between him and a core disciple that had stepped into the Houtian realm. Going up and challenging Lin Ming was just looking for trouble. Jin Yue was not accustomed to being a stepping stone for other talents. Also, Lin Ming was only 16 years old – losing to such a young boy would be an unforgettable shame.

The martial artist that had been trying to stir up Jin Yue immediately shut up, unable to speak from embarrassment. His strength was inferior to Jin Yue’s. If he walked onstage knowing he would lose, then he would truly be a fool.

After Lin Ming’s and Zhou Xiaoling’s match, all of the disciples from the Five Element Region whose cultivations were below the Houtian realm had lost all interest in competing. Originally, they had been zealously trying to wipe out all the Pulse Condensation disciples of Divine Phoenix Island, but now Lin Ming stood in front of them. He was like a towering mountain that loomed over them, it was impossible for them to cross this chasm.

Against Lin Ming, they didn’t even have the courage to try and wear down his strength by repeatedly challenging him. Those whose cultivation was below the Houtian realm had already given up any hope of winning against him.

If they couldn’t defeat Lin Ming, then there was no meaning to defeating any of the other Pulse Condensation period martial artists of Divine Phoenix Island.

The youth Ma Junhui who was defeated earlier by Lin Ming had a very pained expression. When he had fought with Lin Ming, he was already lucky that he wasn't disabled. Fortunately, Lin Ming's first spear had been a probing shot, and he had managed to escape with his body intact.

After Mu Junhui had lost, he had thought that he would seek out Lin Ming in the future and ruin him. But now that he looked back on his thoughts, he was terrified. If he tried to harm Lin Ming without understanding his true strength, the consequences of his actions would have been disastrous. This Lin Ming was simply not normal.

The Pulse Condensation period disciples no longer dared to step onstage, so now only Houtian realm disciples could step up. Suddenly, an eight foot tall youth jumped onstage. He growled, "Deep Earth Sect's Shi Hanshan, 19 years old. I wish to challenge the heroic elites of Divine Phoenix Island, please enlighten me!"

As Shi Hanshan spoke, the truth was that his eyes had been on Lin Ming, and he was also hoping to fight him. However, to challenge him would be a complete loss of face. For a Houtian realm martial artist to challenge a Pulse Condensation period martial artist was bad enough, but Lin Ming was also 3 years younger. This challenge simply couldn't be justified.

"Shi Hanshan is the second ranked core disciple of the Deep Earth Sect. These damn kids are really trying to bully us!" A Divine Phoenix Island disciple called out the injustice of the act.

"Since they cannot defeat the Pulse Condensation Lin Ming, now they want to compare Houtian talents. Our Divine Phoenix Island doesn't have too many Houtian elites, how should we deal with them?"

Within the sub-20 year old younger generation of Divine Phoenix Island, there were 10 direct disciples and around 30 core disciples.

Of the 10 direct disciples, seven were at the Houtian realm.

As for the 30-something core disciples, there were a total of eight that had reached the Houtian realm.

Altogether, this was 15 individuals.

A direct disciple wouldn't necessarily be stronger than a core disciple. This division of ranks only applied to talent, and didn't consider strength.

Although there were some direct disciples with high talent, because of their age, their strength wasn't too amazing. For instance, Golden Bell Mountain's Jin Yue and the Thundercrest Sect's Zhou Xiaoling were like so.

The Five Element Region sects' situation was even worse than Divine Phoenix Island's. Every sect had around 10 Houtian elites, but with six sects added together, that was 60 individuals in total. They could simply pile up on the Divine Phoenix island disciples until they died.

To use many to bully the less, the Divine Phoenix Island disciples could only mutter their complaints.

Mu Zhaoxuan, the second ranked core disciple of Divine Phoenix Island, gave a cold snort and stood up, wanting to meet this fool head on. But, she was actually pulled down by the fourth ranked core disciple, Song Xiaoyue. "Senior-apprentice Sister Zhaoxuan, let me deal with this man. The more powerful individuals haven't moved yet, you must maintain your best condition to deal with them. Your battles will be much more important.

The battles of those heroic elite core disciples that were ranked first or second would naturally have a much greater significance than the battles of those behind them.

Mu Zhaoxuan nodded, "Junior-apprentice Sister Song, you need to be careful. The disciples of the Deep Earth Sect have an amazing defensive power, they are very difficult to handle."

“Mm, I know.” Song Xiaoyue said as she stepped onstage. She clearly said, “Divine Phoenix Island’s Song Xiaoyue, 19 years old. Please advise!”

Shi Hanshan stared at Song Xiaoyue with a salacious expression. He thought to himself that Divine Phoenix Island really had many beautiful women. Out of every 10 disciples, eight of them were women. Not only that, but all of them had exquisite looks. It was very different to the Deep Earth Sect, which was like a temple of monks. After staying within the boring Deep Earth Sect for four or five years, even if he saw someone grisly looking he would still finding it pleasing to the eye. Thus, as Shi Hanshan’s vision fell upon Song Xiaoyue, his gaze inevitably lingered upon her face and chest for several breaths of time. One couldn’t blame Shi Hanshan for his blatant lust. After all, this was a completely normal bodily response for a man that had stayed in a temple of monks for so many years.

Song Xiaoyue’s complexion immediately went sour.

Chapter 364 – Trap

Chapter 364 – Trap

…

…

…

“You disgusting pig, watch where your eyes are going!” Song Xiaoyue said with a true essence sound transmission. Naturally, she could not say such harsh words out loud.

“Hehe, little lady, what’s wrong with someone looking at your body? Is it off limits? How are you going to stop me? If you were my wife then I’d let you manage me, but you’re not. Divine Phoenix Island has so many beautiful women, it’s such a shame that they are all wasted. How about you marry into our Deep Earth Sect?”

Shi Hanshan’s words caused Song Xiaoyue to explode into an apoplectic rage. Especially the ‘it’s such a shame that they are all wasted’. Just what did he take the female disciples of Divine Phoenix Island for?

“I’ll kill you!”

Song Xiaoyue gave a cold humph and then a longsword appeared in her hands. She thrust straight towards Shi Hanshan!

She immediately used the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’, conjuring a shower of flames that looked like gorgeous fireworks, bombarding Shi Hanshan.

Boom boom boom!

Shi Hanshan created a thick brown wall to block all of Song Xiaoyue's attacks. This brown wall weathered Song Xiaoyue's barrage of attacks like a leaf swaying in a storm. Every time it seemed as if it would break, but it would always bounce back.

After 20 to 30 moves had passed, Song Xiaoyue hadn't been able to break through that defensive wall.

"What's the matter with Xiaoyue? She lost her presence of mind. The Deep Earth Sect disciples are famous for their defensive strength. What they wish for the most is for their opponent to crazily attack to consume their true essence. If Xiaoyue's like this, the most she can hope for is a tie." Mu Zhaoxuan anxiously said.

"Junior-apprentice Sister Song is strong, but she lacks combat experience. She has only competed in a few sect Martial Meetings or core disciple contests and assessments. This is the first time that she's fought with a disciple from another sect."

Against the Deep Earth Sect, when they created a shield, the best method to deal with this was to just completely ignore it. This sort of earth-attribute safety mask consumed true essence. If one ignored it, then he would naturally not continue. But if someone were to madly attack him, then this was what he would wish for the most.

Divine Phoenix Island's disciples worried. In such an intense fight, there was no way they could remind Song Xiaoyue about this with a true essence sound transmission.

After over 30 moves had passed, Song Xiaoyue also realized that something was wrong. She had nearly consumed half her true essence, and her opponent's true essence hadn't weakened in the least.

She couldn't help but slow down her offensive barrage. But at this time, Shi Hanshan slyly smiled and punched out, slamming straight towards Song Xiaoyue's face!

Song Xiaoyue clenched her shining teeth, cutting down on Shi Hanshan's fist with her sword!

Peng!

The grating sound of metal colliding rang in the air. Shi Hanshan had an earth-step treasure glove on his hand. Most of the disciples of the Deep Earth Sect were fist fighters.

As he blocked Song Xiaoyue's sword with his fist, he jabbed out at Song Xiaoyue's stomach with his other fist!

"Sky Splitting Strike!"

Shi Hanshan's exposed a fierce and barbarous smile. With a punch, the air around him seemed to stir up.

Song Xiaoyue had consumed too much true essence. She was unable to summon the necessary true essence, and was continually forced back by the fist's true essence.

As she retreated step by step, how could Shi Hanshan give Song Xiaoyue the chance to come back?

As they reached the front of the stage, the hard stone tiles under Shi Hanshan's feet that were reinforced by an array formation began to crackle.

"Stone King's Astral Sky Fist!"

Shi Hanshan's fist was like the wind, dozens of fist shades dancing in the air. The fist potential was like a roiling tide that swept out, completely dissipating all of the flaming true essence that gathered on Song Xiaoyue's sword.

"Fist Setting Universe!"

Shi Hanshan punched out one last time, the power of this first at the extreme, like landslide, like the shattering of a dam!

Puff!

Song Xiaoyue flew backwards, her face pale, her mouth spilling blood, and several of her ribs broken.

“Xiaoyue!”

“Senior-apprentice Sister!”

Several of the Divine Phoenix Island’s female disciples gathered around her to help her up. “Xiaoyue are you alright?”

“I’m fine.” Song Xiaoyue sat up with some difficulty. She bit her lips in shame and said, “I lost. I was too stupid, I’ve brought disgrace to everyone.”

Song Xiaoyue understood that Shi Hanshan was using words to provoke her, but his stupid and simple expression had caused her to relax her guard. In the end, this could only be faulted on Song Xiaoyue having grown up as a child in Divine Phoenix Island and lacking the necessary real world combat experience. Otherwise, there was no way she would have been stirred up by just a few words and lost in such a manner.

If she could have fought slowly and steadily, then she could at least have obtained a draw. Song Xiaoyue felt apologetic towards everyone that was counting on her. She had requested to go up on her own initiative, and in the end had lost in such a horrible fashion.

Mu Zhaoxuan looked over Song Xiaoyue’s injuries. She had several broken ribs, but to a martial artist, they would be quickly healed with a few pills and some rest. But, it was no longer possible for Song Xiaoyue to continue participating in this competition.

Now, of the 15 Houtian juniors of Divine Phoenix Island, Song Xiaoyue had lost her combat strength, and the fifth listed core disciple Hua Hong had consumed too much of her strength in her battle against Zhang Lin, and would be unable to fight in a short period of time. There were only 13 individuals left over with the ability to fight. But, of the six opposing great sects, the first ranked core disciples still hadn’t even taken action, nor had their direct disciples.

Once several more rounds passed, there might not be anyone left in Divine Phoenix Island that could still fight.

Mu Dingshan had a very troubled expression. He could only watch helplessly as his core disciple juniors fell into such a troubling position. Yet, he was unable to do anything about it.

At these sort of banquet competitions, there was an established and unspoken rule that those entering the stage would do so in order of weakest to strongest. First, the weakest disciples would come onstage, and then the middle core disciples, the upper-middle core disciples, the top core disciples, the direct disciples, and finally the chief disciple would step on stage.

In terms of cultivation, it would be those at the Pulse Condensation period first, then those at the Houtian realm. This event would usually last the entire day, and the true masters would exchange blows last. Otherwise, there would be no opportunity for the common disciples to step onstage.

If Mu Dingshan stepped onstage at this moment, it would ruin this rule. Not only that, but then the Sunfire Princess, Zhang Yunjian, and other similar characters would step on stage. He and Mu Xiaoqing would be two against six; this pressure would be no less than what the core disciples were feeling.

When that time came, they would also fall into the position of not being able to sit down, and having to give arguments like a loss is a loss.

“These Five Element Region fellows really don’t care about face.” Mu Dingshan said with a dour expression.

“Mm. In usual years during these kinds of competitions, there would not be such obvious targeting. The Five Element Region’s seven great sects would challenge each other, and also the South Horizon Region would have Supreme Mystery Temple and Dire Space Sect participating to share the pressure. Every time, our Divine Phoenix Island would be able to shine. But now because of the South Sea Demon Region, everyone is competing against us and going all out each time. The various measures are endless.” The one who answered was Tianguang Revered Master. Now that his 400th birthday celebration had devolved to this point, he could only ruefully smile.

As the two spoke, more people stepped on stage. They were top ranking core disciples from Divine Phoenix Island and Arctic Ice Palace. Fire and ice collided together, and the defensive barrier trembled. After several moves, their strength was about the same. The Five Element Region’s seven great sects had contested with Divine Phoenix Island for a long time, and they each had an approximate understanding of the other’s strength. When two opponents went onstage, their strength would be about the same.

As the two battled for an incense stick of time, both of them were wounded, but they still continued, the match undecided.

“There’s no more meaning to continue fighting, call this a draw!”

An Arctic Ice Palace elder said.

The two disciples were already severely wounded. If this continued, it would become a life and death struggle.

The Divine Phoenix Island disciple stepped down with extreme unwillingness. At this time, the Deep Earth Sect’s Shi Hanshan unexpectedly jumped onstage. The nearly nine foot tall Shi Hanshan stood on the center of the stage, looking no different to an iron tower. He said, “Deep Earth Sect’s Shi Hanshan, I wish to challenge the young heroic elites of Divine Phoenix Island!”

“This bastard, he actually jumped out again!”

According to the unwritten rules of the banquet competition, one could continue fighting if they won, without limit. But if they lost, they could only obediently sit in the audience. Only if others challenged them would they be able to go up. Otherwise, they wouldn’t have the qualifications to step onstage and challenge others. Since Shi Hanshan won, he naturally had the qualifications to fight again.

Shi Hanshan was very excited. This sort of opportunity for the Five Element Region to battle the South Horizon Region was very rare. If he achieved better results, not only would he become more famous and gain more honor, but he would be given additional attention by the sect, and would even have rewards after returning home.

After exhausting Song Xiaoyue and then defeating her, he actually hadn't consumed much true essence. He had used the time after the match to take some restorative pills and meditate for an incense stick of time, restoring his condition to near perfection.

The reason he stepped onstage was to continue challenging.

"I wonder which heroic elite of Divine Phoenix Island could advise me?"

Shi Hanshan's voice was like thunder to the ears. Song Xiaoyue grit her teeth, glaring with utter resentment at this duplicitous pig, wishing she could savagely beat him up. The third, fourth, and fifth ranked core disciples of Divine Phoenix Island had already stepped onstage. Now, only the first and second ranked core disciples were left. If they went up to deal with Shi Hanshan, later there would be no one else to deal with the top ranked core disciples of the other sects.

Hua Hong clenched her teeth, preparing to go onstage and meet this pig's challenge. She had won her match, and thus also had the qualifications to fight again. Although she had consumed a great deal of energy, she had been able to restore the greater portion of it in this last half hour.

"Junior-apprentice Sister Hua, don't be so rash. This Shi Hanshan is a bad match for you. You haven't recovered to your top condition yet. Wait for a few more matches and then restore your best condition before going onstage again, otherwise you'll only let the villain become increasingly arrogant."

As Mu Zhaoxuan pulled back Hua Hong, she glanced at all the other Houtian core disciples. Besides her and the top ranked core disciple Mu Dianqing, there was no one else that had the capabilities to step on stage. The only ones left over were the direct disciples, who couldn't act yet.

It seemed that the only path left was for her to step onstage. Mu Zhaoxuan stood up, but at this time, a true essence sound transmission resounded in her ears. "Senior-apprentice Sister, allow me to go up."

Mu Zhaoxuan turned around, astonishment in her eyes. She saw Lin Ming stand up.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you will challenge a Houtian realm master?" Mu Zhaoxuan was stunned.

"Yes."

Lin Ming hadn't stepped onstage, and had instead observed the first two fights so he could get a grasp of the strength of a fourth-grade sect's Houtian genius. He had a plan from the start.

He concluded that a top ranked core disciple of a fourth-grade sect like Shi Hanshan or Song Xiaoyue had a strength similar to Huang Zixuan, who had had killed three months ago.

Although Huang Zixuan was a poor talent, he was still a peak Houtian master that came from a small sect. These fourth-grade sect core disciples could compare to a peak Houtian master at the early Houtian realm. When they reached the peak Houtian realm, they might even be able to compare with a Xiantian master.

This strength was also aligned with Lin Ming's expectations.

Shi Hanshan saw Lin Ming stand up. He was surprised, and that surprise quickly turned to excitement. He raised his sleeves, rubbing his nose, and smiled as he said, "Hehe, how interesting. Come. I've already wanted to challenge you."

Chapter 365 – I'll Take All Comers

Chapter 365 – I'll Take All Comers

…

…

…

Shi Hanshan wanted to have a match against Lin Ming. However, because their difference in cultivation was too great, he had no way to challenge him.

He didn't think that Lin Ming would actually offer himself up.

Shi Hanshan didn't look down on Lin Ming. Rather, it was because of Lin Ming's overabundance of talent that he had aimed for him. He believed that with Lin Ming's talent, he would become a lofty character in the future, a powerhouse on the level of Zhan Yunjian. But now, his current ability was far too weak.

Shi Hanshan realized that he wouldn't be a match for Lin Ming in a few years. So while Lin Ming was still small and weak, he would take this opportunity to savagely crush him underneath his boot. To crush a monstrous genius beneath one's boot was a very rewarding experience.

Thinking this, the smile on Shi Hanshan's face became increasingly wide. He was originally a sorry and foul looking figure, but now with such a bright smiling face, it really caused one's skin to crawl.

"Lin Ming, don't be so impulsive. Are you sure? If you aren't then let me go on first. You've already taken the title of number one amongst the Pulse Condensation period. Even if you don't fight anymore, no one will say anything about you. If you lose, you'll also lose all the honor that you've gained." Mu Zhaoxuan nervously said.

Lin Ming nodded, his words honest, “I have complete confidence.”

Complete confidence?

Mu Zhaoxuan was shocked. She already thought it would be extraordinary if Lin Ming had a 60 or 70% assurance to win. That would leave some room for doubt. But she didn’t expect that Lin Ming would directly say that he had full confidence he would emerge victorious!

If he said this with such belief, then how could she possibly reject him?

Lin Ming had just stepped onstage when Mu Qianyu’s true essence sound transmission resounded in his ears, “Lin Ming, you won’t have a problem this match, right?”

“No problem at all.” Lin Ming turned around and was surprised to see Mu Qianyu looking at him with a fond smile in her eyes. This startled Lin Ming, was there something to be so happy about?

“Mm. I guess that since you walk on stage so decisively, you won’t have a problem.” After Lin Ming continuously defeated Ma Junhui and Zhou Xiaoling, Mu Qianyu suddenly remembered that Lin Ming himself was a monstrous talent of preposterous proportions, and that all her worries had been in vain. At Thundercrash Mountain, he had even absorbed a low-grade earth-step Thunder Soul, so what other matter could be impossible to him? She smiled as she said, “Lin Ming, Honorable Master bids me to tell you that if you can defeat Shi Hanshan, she’ll have a reward for you.”

“Oh?” Lin Ming was immediately happy. This was a great fortune! A reward that a top fourth-grade sect would give out would naturally be some fantastic treasure.

“What sort of reward?” Lin Ming asked with gusto, his spirit stirred up.

“Haha, you really wake up without some rewards, hm? How about you take a guess?” Mu Qianyu said, keeping Lin Ming in suspense. Lin Ming paused – whatever could have Mu Qianyu keep him in suspense would truly be a wonderful treasure.

What could it be?

Heaven Opening Pills?

Medium-grade, or even high-grade true essence stones?

Although these objects were valuable, they were still relatively popular and common, and were equivalent to money. They shouldn't be able to enter Mu Qianyu's eyes.

Maybe it was some miracle medicine like the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal that could help a Xiantian master reach the Revolving Core realm?

That was impossible. Old lady Yuhuang had no idea that he was hiding away his Tempering Marrow realm. And the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal was no different from the purest poison to a Pulse Condensation period martial artist. Old lady Yuhuang would not reward him with something unreasonable that wouldn't help him at this stage.

"Is it some valuable material that can help increase one's strength?" Lin Ming casually guessed.

"That sort of thing is useless to you. You already have enough Heaven Opening Pills, so you're probably tired of eating them. And if you eat too many, you'll build up too much pill toxin. What Honorable Master promised to reward you is the blood of the Vermillion Bird, this is the transplantation of a Saint Beast's bloodline!

Transplanting a Saint Beast's bloodline? When Lin Ming had first heard about the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', he had also heard Mu Qianyu mention that the Vermillion Bird bloodline could be transplanted onto another person.

In order to cultivate the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' and the 'Blue Lian Abstract Phantom Code' to their core realm, one had to have the bloodline of the Vermillion Bird or Blue Luan. Otherwise, it was impossible to cultivate.

In Divine Phoenix Island, there were very few individuals that were truly born with the Vermillion Bird Bloodline. Most of the disciples that had this bloodline had it transplanted within them during the Houtian realm. This so-called ‘transplant’ was in fact taking the blood of the Vermillion Bird Saint Beast and sealing it into one’s body using a secret technique, forcing the Vermillion Bird blood to penetrate into one’s bone marrow and fuse with their own bloodline.

This sort of bloodline transplant was very modest. It could only increase a disciple’s fire-attribute true essence fusion compatibility and ability to cultivate the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ by a small amount. Its effects were very limited.

Let alone expecting this bloodline transplant to allow one to cultivate the core sections of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ and ‘Blue Lian Abstract Phantom Code’.

But for Mu Qianyu to emphasize this reward so much, this would definitely not be the usual Saint Beast bloodline transplantation.

Lin Ming couldn’t help but ask, “Miss Mu shouldn’t be speaking of the same bloodline that the inner court disciples have, right?”

“Of course not.” Mu Qianyu snapped back. “You really are too greedy, you can’t lose a bit at all. It is the Vermillion Bird’s blood essence transplant. Honored Master has said that the more geniuses you defeat, and the stronger they are, the richer the bloodline that will be bestowed to you. Honorable Master has the capital, and this is an extremely rare opportunity.”

Mu Qianyu laughed as she spoke. Because Lin Ming could have such a grand opportunity, her mood was also very good.

Lin Ming was jubilant, this was actually the Vermilion Bird’s blood essence transplant! Blood essence and blood were to completely different concepts. Whether it was a Saint Beast or martial artist, losing a bit of blood wasn’t anything at all. They could easily recover it in several days. But if one lost blood essence, that would harm their very foundation.

Once one's blood essence was drained, that was equal to one's life being damaged, and also losing cultivation. If a martial artist lost their blood essence, that was an absolute death sentence.

Even Lin Ming didn't dare to risk his own blood essence. The power of his blood vitality used his blood essence as its base.

For a Vermillion Bird to leave behind blood essence, there were only two possibilities. The Vermillion Bird had either been killed, or had died a natural death.

Ultimately, a Vermillion Bird was a Saint Beast. It was not an endless and immortal being like a phoenix. Its so-called bathing in the fires of nirvana was really only used to treat wounds. Even the most grievous of wounds could be treated by undergoing the fires of nirvana. But, undergoing nirvana would not actually lengthen a Vermillion Bird's lifespan.

At the end of a Vermillion Bird's life, they would complete their final nirvana, and also die in nirvana.

After a Vermillion Bird died, they would leave behind a small cup of blood essence.

If Lin Ming could obtain enough Vermillion Bird blood essence and transplant it within himself, his bloodline might not be as pure as that of Mu Qianyu or Mu Bingyun, but it was more than enough to cultivate the core section of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'!

This was too important to Lin Ming's future cultivation of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'.

Prior to this, the reason that Lin Ming had joined Divine Phoenix Island, besides Mu Qianyu, was that he had joint interests with Divine Phoenix Island. Divine Phoenix Island valued Lin Ming's talent, but Lin Ming also needed the resources that Divine Phoenix Island could provide. In the future, if Lin Ming could reach the Revolving Core realm, he would in turn be able to help lead Divine Phoenix Island to a stronger position, and even help assist them in becoming a fifth-grade sect.

Lin Ming didn't think that he was taking advantage of Divine Phoenix Island in any way – that was why he didn't even prostrate himself in front of old lady Yuhuang.

But now, after Lin Ming heard Mu Qianyu mention the Vermillion Bird blood essence, even he found it difficult to keep his beating heart calm. This was Vermillion Bird blood essence! It was an enormous benefit to any Divine Phoenix Island disciple. From the founding of Divine Phoenix Island until now, just how many Vermillion Birds had died? How much Vermillion Bird blood essence could there possibly be? By comparison, after generation after generation of Divine Phoenix Island disciples coming and going, who knew who how many individuals there were.

Since Vermillion Bird blood essence could be preserved this far, it must be precious to the point that even old lady Yuhuang was reluctant to use it. Yet she had taken out something so treasured and was even rewarding it to him. This act of kindness was enough to engrave itself upon Lin Ming's mind.

But even though old lady Yuhuang had taken out the blood essence as a reward, the ultimate goal was a joining of mutual interests. Lin Ming also firmed his resolve. In his life, he would help Divine Phoenix Island become a fifth-grade sect. Once he became a Revolving Core Supreme Elder, this shouldn't be too difficult for him.

Lin Ming couldn't help but glance at old lady Yuhuang. He was surprised to find that she was still sitting in her chair, her expression reticent and cloudy.

Seeing Lin Ming look at her, old lady Yuhuang sent him a true essence sound transmission, "Boy, don't be happy so early. If you lose then you won't get anything. At that time, don't come crying to me."

Lin Ming grinned, "Hey, I can win!"

"Humph, I believe you can defeat Shi Hanshan. But once you win, there will be even more Houtian masters challenging you. Do you think you can defeat the dozens of Houtian masters from the six great sects?"

As old lady Yuhuang spoke, a wave of heroic pride and dignity flooded through Lin Ming. He took a deep breath, calmly saying, “Whoever comes will come. I’ll take all comers!”

Old lady Yuhuang was shocked. This boy was really too arrogant. But, the young should be a bit arrogant, and they should also have an indomitable and cavalier attitude with absolute belief in their own abilities. Only then would they be able to bring out their true potential!

“Good. Then let this old woman have a look at just how many you can take!” Old lady Yuhuang was also looking forward to seeing just how far Lin Ming could go.

Old lady Yuhuang had just finished speaking when another voice sounded in Lin Ming’s ear, “Brother Lin, are we going to do this or what?”

Lin Ming turned to see Shi Hanshan grinning at him. He looked like a simple and honest man, but the truth was that it was only a veneer that hid his cunning edge.

Lin Ming discovered that he had been speaking with Mu Qianyu and old lady Yuhuang too long, and was just standing at the edge of the stage, not even having entered yet.

Shi Hanshan naturally assumed that Lin Ming was afraid.

Because he had impulsively stood up, he had walked halfway but suddenly regretted it. With Lin Ming’s age and cultivation, if he decided to change his direction midway, although it was shameful it was also an understandable action.

This was not what Shi Hanshan was hoping to see.

He cupped his hands across his chest and said, “Brother Lin, you’re very strong. Perhaps within the entire Five Element Region, there is no junior in the Pulse Condensation period that can defeat you. Even Thundercrest Sect’s Junior-apprentice Sister Zhou is not your match at all. Although I am at the Houtian realm, my talent is much worse than yours. Against a ‘Lesser Saint’ talent like yourself, I’m not any better. However, Brother Lin is still young. If Brother Lin doesn’t wish to fight, then I naturally will not force the issue. It’s just that I will find it truly regrettable that I won't be able to experience the top sub-Houtian master of the South Horizon Region."

Shi Hanshan's words seemed to be filled with yearning emotion, but that 'Lesser Saint' title was intended to deliberately belittle themselves and raise Lin Ming's proud nature. This truth was that this was another method of provoking that was completely different from the demeaning kind of the idiotic Ma Junhui. Perhaps this method of prodding was even more effective.

Chapter 366 – The Same Trick

Chapter 366 – The Same Trick

…

…

…

Shi Hanshan spoke to everyone else so that when he dealt with Lin Ming, it wouldn't be the strong bullying the weak. With Lin Ming's strength that could even suppress Zhou Xiaoling, he was able to challenge a Houtian master, so he should be able to fight. Shi Hanshan had placed himself in the same position as Lin Ming, so if he won it would also be a satisfying win.

As Shi Hanshan's voice fell, the Five Element Region's disciples began to engage in a heated discussion as to what the result of the battle would be.

"Lin Ming should have the ability to challenge a Houtian master, but going against against Shi Hanshan is a bit too much. He should have started with a weaker opponent."

"This Shi Hanshan's defense is like a turtle shell. If Lin Ming's attacks aren't able to break Shi Hanshan's defense, there will be nothing he can do, and he'll eventually lose."

"Not quite. Lin Ming has the advantage in speed, it's not to be trifled with. Even if he can't defeat Shi Hanshan, he still has a way to not lose."

"Humph! According to your idea it's just a way to escape; at most it will be a tie."

In the Thundercrest Sect section of the banquet, Zhou Lie was sipping a cup of tea. He watched as his sister had a very resentful expression plastered on her face. He couldn't help but smile and ask, "Xiaoling, who do you think will win?"

Zhou Xiaoling curled her lips in disgust, saying, “That big stupid one is going to lose in a big stupid way.”

“Oh? You’re sure that Lin Ming can win? How do you know?” Zhou Lie was a bit surprised. He didn’t think that Xiaoling would assume Lin Ming would win so easily. Since Lin Ming’s body was immune to thunder, it was hard to tell just where the limits of his true strength were.

“I just know.” Zhou Xiaoling pouted, not bothering to explain anymore.

In comparison to the disciples of the Five Element Region, the Divine Phoenix Island disciples were mostly worried, not interested in discussing the outcome of the match. Since things had come to this point, there were already many people who were jealous of Lin Ming and were hoping to see him beaten to a pulp. Divine Phoenix Island was already pushed to the end of the line by the collaboration of these sects. Lin Ming was the last one standing who could possibly earn some face back for them. If Lin Ming lost here, then Divine Phoenix Island might suffer a complete meltdown.

Onstage, Lin Ming and Shi Hanshan stood 100 feet apart.

Shi Hanshan was quite happy. Lin Ming had come up and had finally accepted this match. He was looking forward to defeating Lin Ming and seeing just what miserable expression would appear on his face.

“Lin Ming.” Shi Hanshan called out with his true essence sound transmission, “Do you know why I was hoping to fight you so much?”

Lin Ming was silent, waiting for Shi Hanshan to finish his monologue.

“Hehe, the truth is very simple. Your talent is just too amazing, people can’t help but want to step back from your radiance. Back when I wasn’t a disciple of the Deep Earth Sect, I was only a poor kid in a big town. My city had a daughter from a wealthy family, whose looks were enough to cause the fall of nations. Looks, temperament, elegance, she had everything I ever wished for. And then, I had an idea! I thought that no matter how perfect she was, or how many men she had entranced as their one true love, I would make her nothing but a slut that waited upon this father's crotch. Afterwards, I came back and took her maidenhead. That taste, even if I think about it now, is just to die for! Afterwards, that girl married a noble that matched well with her. Every time I think about how such a noble woman was once pressed under this father's body, I truly find it perfect.

"Now, you are the same as that woman. No matter how great you are in the future, you will have been defeated by my hands. You will be just like that slut that was ridden by me."

Shi Hanshan was very happy, saying all of this with a proud and assertive expression. Lin Ming listened, and then suddenly smiled. "You speak so much nonsense. Are you trying to use that same old trick again and provoke me into a fury so that I'll attack your shield with my full force? Are you such a loser with no confidence in defeating me that you have to use such an underhanded method?"

After listening to Lin Ming's words, Shi Hanshan's expression slightly changed.

This boy!

"Surname Lin, let alone me, even you aren't completely confidence. I am confident but I still use this trick to stir you up. But if you are so confident, do you dare to attack me?"

Lin Ming took out the Heavy Profound Soft Spear from his spatial ring, grinning as he did so. "As you wish!"

With that last word, Lin Ming's entire aura suddenly exploded. The Heavy Profound Soft Spear flashed with a purple light, and the air surrounding him began to violently churn, creating a vortex of wind.

"Against scum like you, I love beating them up!"

Lin Ming's feet trod the ground and he shot forwards like an arrow. Spear wind howled, and the Heavy Profound Soft Spear was layered with an azure light. This spear was enveloped by the energy of the True Dragon!

“This is bad! It looks like Lin Ming was tricked!” Mu Zhaoxuan saw that Lin Ming and Shi Hanshan had stood across from each other for several breaths of time and felt that something was wrong. It looked like Shi Hanshan was using the same old trick again, and was angering Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission.

Just a quarter of an hour ago, Song Xiaoyue had also fallen for this trick. Mu Zhaoxuan thought that Lin Ming was a bit younger and had a slightly less immature disposition, so he wouldn’t fall for the same trap that Song Xiaoyue had fallen into. But now looking at Lin Ming’s all out attack, he was most likely stirred into a fury by Shi Hanshan’s words!

Mu Zhaoxuan could already foresee Lin Ming repeated the same mistakes and finally being defeated. She couldn’t help but feel a thick surge of despair in her heart.

“The nature of the young is just too impulsive.”

“Lin Ming will lose, I have no idea what he was thinking.”

Before this battle, the disciples from the Five Element Region had favored Lin Ming by a small margin. But now, they had all changed their judgment.

Zhan Yunjian also shook his head. He had been favoring Lin Ming to win, but a cool-headed martial artist should not be swayed by their emotions, not to mention that Shi Hanshan’s method of provocation was so clumsy.

Shi Hanshan’s lips curved up in a sneer. He didn’t think that there would be such an idiot. Lin Ming knew his idea perfectly well but still decided to rush him like this. This simpleton was simply swayed by his personal feelings too much. No matter how talented he was, it was impossible for him to remain a genius. He would die halfway!

“Earth Essence Shield!”

With both hands propping up a shield, a thick brown defensive barrier immediately flashed into existence. Shi Hanshan was far too familiar with this. No matter what attack was used, no matter what storm hit, he would steadfastly defend against them all!

He had once gone into a mystic realm with other martial artists. When they had encountered a disaster, the ones to survive were martial artists from the Deep Earth Sect. Shi Hanshan had full confidence in his defense.

However, when that Heavy Profound Soft Spear that was wrapped in an azure light smashed down, Shi Hanshan's complexion changed. He felt that it wasn't a spear that struck him, but a collapsing mountain!

Bang!!!

The Heavy Profound Soft Spear smashed into the Earth Essence Shield. Shi Hanshan felt both of his arms tremble, and he completely lost feeling below the elbows. A terrifying pressure passed down his arms into his legs, blowing up the tiles under his feet!

What… what kind of strange power was this?

Shi Hanshan felt an inexplicable horror rise in his heart. He had inborn divine strength and also practiced specialized horse stance techniques during the Body Transformation Stage. Yet, this attack almost made him fall to the ground.

"Oh? You withstood it?"

Lin Ming was a bit surprised. He had used the strength of Tempering Marrow a while ago, and struck down with a body strength of tens of thousands of jins. The azure true essence was only used to protect the Heavy Profound Soft Spear; a medium-grade human-step treasure wouldn't able to withstand such a collision.

This Shi Hanshan really did have the ability to back up his proud heart.

Lin Ming's lips curved up in a grin. He lifted his spear and smashed down again on the turtle shell-like Earth Essence Shield. This strike was even more dangerous than the last.

Power of thunder!

Within the Heretical God Seed, the silent Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder suddenly erupted. The Heavy Profound Soft Spear shined with a purple light, carrying the prestige of rolling thunder!

Bang!

A spear smashed into the Earth Essence Shield. Shi Hanshan's five organs were shaken, and his blood roiled. Under that terrifying strength, a faint power of thunder had penetrated through the Earth Essence Shield. It was like a venomous serpent that drilled into Shi Hanshan's body, causing his entire body to go numb.

"Damn!"

Shi Hanshan clenched his teeth and galvanized all of the true essence in his body to the limit, thickening the Earth Essence Shield.

The third spear – Flow like Silk!

The Heavy Profound Soft Spear's azure true essence began to vibrate, sending humming sounds in the air. The azure-wrapped Heavy Profound Soft Spear howled like a silver dragon going to sea!

The Heavy Profound Soft Spear smashed into the Earth Essence Shield. In that instant, a power of vibration pierced through the shield, spreading into Shi Hanshan's body. Shi Hanshan only felt like his entire body was coming apart, all of his organs trembling!

Fourth spear!

Fifth spear!

Lin Ming's attacks were like a storm. Shi Hanshan's true essence shield bent under this vicious barrage of attacks, but didn't actually break. This was the defensive shield technique of the Deep Earth Sect, and was maintained by the caster's true essence. As long as true essence was supplied, it wouldn't break.

The reason that Shi Hanshan had been able to keep the shield from breaking was because he was crazily overdrawing the true essence from his body, injuring himself. Not only that, but while maintaining the shield, he also had to withstand the dual attacks from the power of thunder and Flow like Silk.

This situation could be described as beyond miserable.

However, because of the Earth Essence Shield and the flashing purple light, most disciples only saw a brilliant and gorgeous collision of true essence. They didn't realize just what situation Shi Hanshan was in.

Song Xiaoyue and Mu Zhaoxuan were extremely anxious. Yan Fuhong was filled with anticipation as he saw Lin Ming on the brink of defeat. As for the disciples of the Five Element Region, they talked about the match, comparing their insight of the battle and understandings of cultivation methods.

"Lin Ming is too naïve. In a situation where their strength is about the same, breaking through the Deep Earth Sect's Earth Essence Shield will require several times more true essence than the Deep Earth Sect disciple will use. It looks like no matter how fiercely Shi Hanshan's Earth Essence Shield is deforming, it is impossible to break."

"Mm. The Deep Earth Sect's Earth Essence Shield can be strong when you want it strong, and weak when you want it weak. There is simply no waste of true essence in using it. When Song Xiaoyue attacked, the Earth Essence Shield had also fiercely distorted. After some thought, it seems that the only reason was because Shi Hanshan wanted to save his strength."

"Haha, Brother Jin's experience is too extensive and broad. According to my knowledge, the Deep Earth Sect has many different kinds of defensive shields. As for the Earth Essence Shield, that's quite an uncommon one. I'm surprised that Brother Jin has such a thorough understanding."

“It’s nothing. I just happened to battle a Deep Earth Sect disciple who used the Earth Essence Shield once. Lin Ming is talented, but he is just too impulsive. With such a disposition, it’s very difficult to become a true master. Unless, maybe after he grows up–”

As Brother Jin was speaking, he was immediately interrupted. “Brother Jin…”

“What?” The surnamed Jin asked, a bit annoyed.

“I think I saw that Shi Hanshan in the Earth Essence Shield cough blood… it seems like his entire body is covered in blood…” A 15 or 16 year old youth hesitantly said as he stared with wide eyes.

Chapter 367 – Saint Rank Talent

Chapter 367 – Saint Rank Talent

…

…

…

"What did you just say? He's coughing blood?"

The youth surnamed Jin couldn't believe this as he looked towards the center of the stage. He just happened to see the moment that Lin Ming withdrew his spear, and the brilliant purple light dimmed. The Earth Essence Shield also lightened, and there was a short moment where he could see Shi Hanshan's bleak and miserable appearance as he struggled to maintain the Earth Essence Shield.

His hair was disheveled, his face wan, his nose bleeding, and he was coughing blood. Even his clothes were stained crimson.

The youth surnamed Jin was stunned, his mouth hanging open. As he witnessed Shi Hanshan's incredibly tragic situation, he was aghast.

Shi Hanshan could be described as pathetic beyond belief. He was long on the edge of collapsing, but if he didn't stubbornly harm himself to maintain the shield, once the Earth Essence Shield broke, his situation would be even worse!

As Shi Hanshan saw Lin Ming gather his strength to stab out with his spear again, he felt his heart shiver. What he encountered on this stage wasn't a man, but a vicious beast in human form. Not only that, but this vicious beast was above the fifth-level!

Because he was concerned about face, he grit his teeth and refused to admit defeat. He was hoping that Lin Ming wouldn't be able to continue such a barrage of high intensity attacks. After all, he was in a defensive position, and in an extended battle he would be the one with an advantage. Not only that, but the Deep Earth Sect's Earth Essence Shield was able to save a significant amount of true essence. Lin Ming's true essence consumption surely had to be several times his own.

But after withstanding four or five more spear strikes, Shi Hanshan was on the verge of breaking. He could not suppress the roiling blood in his chest much longer, and he felt like he was about to vomit out his organs. On the other hand, Lin Ming looked completely unconcerned, as if he were just standing there watching him. Spear after spear after spear! Each spear was faster and more ruthless than the last!

He wanted to shout out and admit defeat, but Lin Ming's spear attacks were too quick. Before he had the chance to call out, another spear attack had already arrived!

But, this spear caused Shi Hanshan's face to go white, his mind trembling. He wouldn't be able to block this!

"Stop!"

An old man from the Deep Earth Sect wearing a loose yellow robe stood up. But at the same time, Lin Ming's Heavy Profound Soft Spear had already smashed down.

Bang!

Dazzling thunder sparked, and blue light flashed. Shi Hanshan's Earth Essence Shield was finally at its limit, and it was no different than an egg struck by a hammer – it exploded into pieces!

Shi Hanshan felt like he was struck by a mountain as he flew backwards, his clothes torn to shreds, a sweet, coppery taste in his throat as he spat out a mouthful of blood. He didn't know how many bones he had broken, but he was tossed back like a broken doll.

Before Shi Hanshan hit the barrier array, the yellow-robed old man appeared behind him, casually ripping open the barrier and taking Shi Hanshan in his hands, gently falling onto the stage.

The entire audience was silent. The youth surnamed Jin was stunned silly. Shi Hanshan's Earth Essence Shield had actually been… broken? Not only that, but his opponent had been a Pulse Condensation period martial artist?

Most people at the banquet hadn't even noticed that Shi Hanshan had been coughing blood. They had been casually looking at the action on stage, comparing their knowledge of the martial arts match. They thought that Lin Ming wouldn't be able to persist, but after that sudden explosion, the Earth Essence Shield had shattered, and Shi Hanshan had flown backwards. Such a quick reversal was completely unexpected!

Mu Zhaoxuan, Mu Dianping, Hua Hong, and all the other Divine Phoenix Island core disciples that had been worrying about Lin Ming felt like they were in a dream. Lin Ming won, but he also did so in such a fierce manner.

Zhan Yunjian sucked in a breath of cold. He casually glanced at Zhou Lie and saw that his expression was like the surface of a calm lake. "This fellow Lin Ming is too terrifying. He hasn't even grown up but he can already defeat Houtian core disciples! Not just that, but with plenty of strength left over!"

"Such a fearful talent… once he reaches the Houtian realm…" Zhang Yunjian didn't dare to think about what would happen. Three words echoed in his mind, causing his heart to tremble…

Saint rank talent!!!

As long as another year or two passed, Lin Ming would step into the Houtian realm and become a Saint rank talent! He would be a Saint rank talent that was in no way inferior to Mu Qianyu from ten years ago!

How was this possible? He had heard that this Lin Ming had been found from a small third-grade sect. A person that Divine Phoenix Island had dug out from some small third-grade sect actually had such terrifying talent!

Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun. These twin sister Saint rank talents were already enough to cause the seven great sects of the Five Element Region to be extremely jealous. Once Lin Ming was added…

Zhang Yunjian was unable to think of the future. In just a mere ten years, three Saint rank talents had appeared!

He had a foreboding feeling that as long as Divine Phoenix Island would be able to endure this disaster from the South Sea Demon Region, they would have a high possibility of becoming a phoenix that underwent nirvana, being reborn into a true fifth-grade sect!

At this moment, it wasn't just Zhan Yunjian, but also many others that felt this. Lin Ming's talent was already enough to be considered at the Saint level. It was just that he was too young, thus he was too weak at the moment. Stepping into the true Saint rank was just a matter of time. He probably didn't even need two years – one year would be enough.

The Sunfire Princess' beautiful eyes stared at Lin Ming, unblinking.

Tianguang Revered Elder stroked his beard as he laughed.

All of the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island gazed at Lin Ming with a mixture of disbelief, awe, and worship in their eyes.

Even the indifferent Mu Bingyun was colored with surprise as she gazed at Lin Ming. This young boy that her elder sister had found had far surpassed any of her expectations.

The yellow-robed old man from the Deep Earth Sect examined Shi Hanshan's physical condition and his face sank, his eyes filling with murderous intent. He stared at Lin Ming, an ominous color flashing in his eyes. "Young boy, you are quite ruthless! You've broken all his ribs, crushed his sternum, and severely injured his organs! It was only a minor match, and yet you were so vicious!"

The yellow-robed man wished to kill Lin Ming with a slap of his hand, but in the moment that he revealed his murderous intent, he felt a rich and blazing energy lock onto him. This energy came from Mu Yuhuang, and although it was smoldering hot, it caused his body to go completely ice cold, as if he was sinking into the nine layers of the abyss.

This was the feeling of standing near death's door.

The yellow-robed man's mind went cold. He of course had only thought this: it was impossible for him to truly do anything to Lin Ming. At most he would emit an aura to suppress him, but he hadn't thought that just as he released his murderous intent, Mu Yuhuang would instantly lock onto him, and with such a terrifying energy!

"Everyone says that this old woman from Divine Phoenix Island has reached the late Revolving Core realm, but also that her life's fire comes from the Silent Nine Emerald Flame found within the bottomless abyss. This fire is divided into nine parts and contains extreme heat and extreme cold. With just a touch, not even your bones would be left. Its might is beyond terrifying..."

The yellow-robed old man didn't dare to provoke Mu Yuhuang. A character that could become an Island Master of Divine Phoenix Island was no ordinary character, especially since this was the territory of Divine Phoenix Island.

He quashed his thoughts of suppressing Lin Ming with his aura. As he held onto Shi Hanshan, he flicked a white pill into his mouth.

He coldly stared at Lin Ming and gave an icy cough, "So young, and yet your actions are so evil. Yet you actually have the face to preach to Thundercrest Sect's Zhou Xiaoling. Truly ridiculous!"

Since he wasn't able to punish Lin Ming, the yellow-robed old man could only mock him. Less than half an hour ago, Lin Ming had taught Zhou Xiaoling a lesson for being too vicious. The yellow-robed old man planned to use this matter to embarrass Lin Ming.

Lin Ming maintained his calm. He slowly put away the Heavy Profound Soft Spear and slowly said, "I don't understand what Senior is implying. Shi Hanshan used vicious words to provoke me, using shameless methods to stir me up. Should I have endured his baseless insults and humiliation, and then stayed my hand and treated him with courtesy? The Deep Earth Sect's defensive shield martial skills are tough and also conserve true essence. If I don't go all out with my attacks, then what happens once my strength is all consumed? When my strength is exhausted, will your good disciple easily defeat me and then proudly claim to everyone how he did so, wagging his silly little tail?

"If I'm verbally humiliated by others, should I stretch out my face and let them slap me? Does Senior think I am so cheap? Is the Deep Earth Sect so sad that they shame the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island, but don't have the guts to withstand retaliation?"

Lin Ming's words were extremely insidious. Not only were they derisive, but they also pointed out the conflict between Divine Phoenix Island and the Deep Earth Sect.

After seeing the yellow-robed old man being berated, the Divine Phoenix Island disciples felt much more relaxed in their hearts.

The yellow-robed old man's lips twitched. He coldly humphed, saying, "What a flippant tongue! Do you think that I'm blind? Your strength obviously surpasses Shi Hanshan by a great deal, and you could definitely have restrained your hand after breaking his shield so that you didn't injure Shi Hanshan. Yet you still made such a vicious attack, severely wounding him. How can you explain this!

Lin Ming unhurriedly said, "I can't explain and I don't want to explain. But if Senior really insists on asking for an explanation, then I also want Senior to explain a matter to me. The Five Element Region's six sects together obviously surpass Divine Phoenix Island by a large margin. Yet, at this banquet, you dare to band together to bully my Divine Phoenix

Island, taking several people to fight a single person to wear them out. Where is the honor in this? Where is the honor in trying to force Divine Phoenix Island into a situation where they have no one they can send out to battle. How can Senior explain this?"

The yellow-robed old man suddenly looked ashen, unable to speak. In such an embarrassing debate, his own words had been thrown back at him, and he was completely lacking a means to respond. One had to feel sorry for this Revolving Core master. His strength far surpassed Lin Ming, and yet he had lost to Lin Ming in a war of words. Once this event was made known, he would become the laughingstock of the entire Five Element Region.

"Well said!"

With such a fantastic matter, the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island couldn't help but applaud. They had been holding their breath this entire time, refraining from speaking, and at this moment Lin Ming had spoken for everyone, maliciously ruining the face of this Deep Earth Sect elder.

Ahh, this was just too refreshing a feeling!

Even old lady Yuhuang, whose expression had been sullen and icy from the start of the banquet, had a hint of a smile on her face. "Shi Zhongkun, you too have a day where you were defeated under the hands of a junior. I wonder just how you'll swallow this shame."

In the texts, they often described wars of words between scholars, who used their lips as spears to argue, piercing through the other's heart of understanding. Between martial artists, this was sometimes the case too.

Although Lin Ming's words weren't able to shake Shi Zhongkun's heart of martial arts, it was still enough to make him eat his own crap.

It also made Mu Yuhuang, who had been very uncomfortable for these last couple of weeks, much happier.

“Boy, well done. I’ll also note this down as your win and reward you.”

Mu Yuhuang said with a true essence sound transmission.

Lin Ming happily replied, “Thank you, Senior Yuhuang.”

Lin Ming had subconsciously changed from Master Ancestor Yuhuang to Senior Yuhuang. Calling this old lady Master Ancestor Yuhuang was just too weird.

But Mu Yuhuang was very happy at this moment. Naturally, she wouldn’t care about such minor matters.

As Lin Ming looked up, he happened to see Mu Qianyu looking at him. She was brightly smiling at him, a vibrant shine in her eyes. She said with a true essence sound transmission, “Fantastically done!”

Chapter 368 – Disdaining All Heroes

Chapter 368 – Disdaining All Heroes

…

…

…

After Lin Ming brutally beat up Shi Hanshan and defeated Shi Zhongkun in a war of words, the morale of the Divine Phoenix Island disciples sharply rose, the morose atmosphere that surrounded them instantly swept away.

After suffering the indignity of the six sects' actions and then also being suppressed by their joint effort, a simmering rage had been brewing within their chests.

This wasn't only Lin Ming's victory, but a victory that emboldened everyone. With just a few words, he had been able to give voice to the thoughts of the Divine Phoenix Island disciples, and vent out their frustrations for them.

At this moment, Lin Ming's previous status as an outsider had been fully accepted by everyone else; no one envied him anymore. Instead, their admiration and fondness for him continued to grow. Several young girls gazed at Lin Ming, ooh-ing and aah-ing at him, talking about him, their young and pretty faces flushed red with excitement.

But the complexions of the Five Element Region disciples were actually not good at all. Their hearts were full of jealousy that showed on their faces.

"This Lin Ming is far too arrogant!"

“Humph. His arrogance won’t last for long. Since he has a Houtian realm strength, he’ll be drawn into the battle of Houtian masters. Lin Ming’s talent is real, but he’s still far too young and naïve.”

“Yes, Shi Hanshan is a core disciple, but his talent is just so-so. There are also direct disciples stronger than him, and above that are even disciples like Huo Ruyan, Zhou Lie, Bai Aoxuan, and other such characters.”

“Mm. The six sects’ chief disciples aren’t to be messed with. Not mentioning the other sects, Shi Hanshan’s senior-apprentice brother Shi Dingtian won’t stand idly by after this.”

“A beautiful tree in a forest will be destroyed by the wind. The six great sects won’t let things end so simply.”

Now that things had come to this, the simmering anger between Divine Phoenix Island and the six great sects had reached the boiling point. Now it was no longer just a comparison of skills. As soon as one went onstage, they would be using their full strength and all of their special skills until the other party was defeated.

Once they were defeated, it would be a miserable end.

Onstage, Shi Zhongkun’s complexion had fallen to the ground. He was a Revolving Core master, since when did he have to suffer the berating words of a junior? Wasn’t this even more embarrassing than losing to those other old bags?

“Good, very good! Heroes always come from the young; this old man has truly experienced a wonderful scene! Hanshan’s character is honest and his talent is low. He cultivates diligently every day and seeks the martial path with his whole heart, but now he was actually bullied by your strength today and wounded to this point! Since Hanshan is weaker than you, this old man has nothing to say! But, let me tell you, there is always a higher mountain and always a stronger human. When you use your greater strength to bully others in such a cruel fashion, you should also expect that someone else with an even deeper cultivation will one day use you as a stepping stone and crush you under their feet!”

"My Five Element Region's six great sects have countless masters all around. This old man wants to see, for just how long will you be able to win?"

Shi Zhongkun's words could be considered harsh, but Lin Ming only sneered. What a well said 'honest character, low talent'. If such a scumbag could be considered honest and simple, then the master Netherworld Demon Emperor of Silent Demon Emperor City could be considered the most kind and merciful of individuals.

Lin Ming said loud and clearly, "The world is vast, and there are as many geniuses as clouds in the sky. I've never thought that I am among the top heroic elites of this world's youths. Even at my age, there are many powerful people that already surpass me. You said that I use my strength to bully others, and you're not wrong, but that's because I always wish to beat up the scum of the earth. If there are people of your Five Element Region that wants to rely on their cultivation to crush me under their heel, then I, Lin Ming, am standing right here! I will receive all comers! Whoever many come, I'll fight that many!"

Lin Ming's words were like a divine clarion bell; they reached the clouds, split the earth, and resounded through the entire audience.

Even Shi Zhongkun was stunned. He stared speechless at Lin Ming, this boy was crazy! He wanted to single-handedly resist all the masters of the six great sects?

With Lin Ming's word, the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island were seething in an elated frenzy. The men were yelling, and the women were screaming.

"Big Brother Lin is too awesome!"

"Big Brother Lin, well said!"

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin is too sexy! Aah!!"

Whether or not Lin Ming could fulfill his words, no one knew. But presently, when Lin Ming had spoken, his heroic spirit had speared straight into the skies, causing the Divine

Phoenix Island disciples' blood to boil, as if their entire bodies had been lit with an explosive passion.

People were creatures that were easily infected with emotion. But to those that were able to incite the mood of the crowd, this was the most charming time of their lives.

At this time, Even Mu Qianyu, who was sitting beside old lady Yuhuang, felt her heart speed up a bit. She lightly said, "This fellow Lin Ming really knows how to stir up trouble."

Old lady Yuhuang showed a rare smile. She knew that the reason Lin Ming had said these words was that he wanted to repay her gratitude. She laughed a bit and said, "This kid, he hasn't even bothered with the rabbit but wants to shoo the eagle. If he wins the next five or six matches, all the treasures I've been saving will be robbed by him."

Mu Qianyu covered her mouth as she giggled, not saying anything.

Old lady Yuhuang glanced at Mu Qianyu with a sarcastic eye, "Yu'er, how come you're smiling? Don't you feel bad? These things were meant to be passed to you later."

Mu Qianyu was a Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island, and the Vermillion Bird blood essence would naturally be passed to her later. As for Mu Bingyun, although she too was a Saintess, she had the bloodline of the Blue Luan within her body; the Vermillion Bird blood essence was useless to her.

Mu Qianyu said, "Yu'er doesn't feel bad at all. Although the Vermillion Bird blood essence will be beneficial to my cultivation, it will be of far greater benefit to Lin Ming. Using it on Lin Ming would be the best use of it. Honorable Master will surely not regret this decision."

Mu Qianyu was born with a very pure and rich Vermillion Bird bloodline. With the fusion of some Vermillion Bird blood essence, her bloodline concentration wouldn't increase by much; at best it would enhance her fire-attribute true essence fusion compatibility by a bit. But, if given to Lin Ming, it would greatly increase his Vermillion Bird bloodline to the point where he would be able to practice the core sections of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', and thus greatly enhance his strength.

"I didn't say I wouldn't give it to him, but you actually feared that I would go back on my promise…" Mu Yuhuang meaningfully glanced at Mu Qianyu. Mu Qianyu instantly panicked, and then quickly calmed her manner and restrained herself.

……………

Shi Zhongkun sneered, saying, "Boy, remember the words you just said. Words that you speak are the same as water that's thrown out – it can't be taken back. Now you've flaunted your fast tongue and made such a ridiculous and foolish challenge! This old man wants to take a good, hard look at just how many of the heroic elites from the six great sects you will be able to challenge!"

When Shi Zhongkun spoke to this point, he didn't bother to speak anymore. He lifted the half-dead Shi Hanshan and stepped offstage. Against a stupid junior that was soon going be turned into a complete fool, there was simply no need to argue.

Of course, this was only a method of consoling his own mind. In fact, after he stepped down from the stage, his face remained livid, to the point where the many disciples of the Deep Earth Sect were afraid to even take a breath.

As all the disciples of the banquet exploded in a range of emotions, the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island madly cheered on Lin Ming. No matter whether or not he would be able to fulfill the words of his declaration, their anger had been vented.

As for the Five Element Region disciples, they were completely dismissive of Lin Ming. They held the mindset of watching the matches and waiting to see Lin Ming be tormented.

"I wonder how long Lin Ming can last?"

"I'm guessing at most two or three matches. The six great sects will not allow Lin Ming to keep showing off his arrogance. Once one is defeated, the next one to go up will be stronger. But as for the six chief disciples, they won't participate in this demeaning show, or else Lin Ming won't even be able to last past the first round."

“Mm, Senior-apprentice Brother Sun is right. Lin Ming is just disgracing himself. Senior-apprentice Brother Sun has extraordinary strength, and has also stepped into the Houtian realm. Perhaps Senior-apprentice Brother Sun would like to go onstage yourself and have a good match against this Lin Ming!”

“Well, uh…” The voice of the youth surnamed Sun paused. He wished he could slap this ass-kissing idiotic junior-apprentice brother to death. He hesitated, and then pretended to ponder for a moment before finally saying, “I’ll have a look at how things go first.”

……………………

The Deep Earth Sect disciples were suppressed too much by Shi Zhongkun’s incensed expression. Finally, one disciple couldn’t bear it any longer and jumped onstage. He stood at the center of the stage and clearly said, “Deep Earth Sect’s Chen Kun, currently 19 years old. Please advise!”

“Chen Kun! He’s a Deep Earth Sect direct disciple!”

“I didn’t think that the first one to go onstage would be a direct disciple! This banquet competition has developed too quickly. It’s been an hour or two, but the level of the participants has already risen to the level of direct disciples; the other people hadn’t even had a chance to go onstage.”

“Who knew that this random factor Lin Ming would show up from nowhere. But, this Chen Kun is not someone who can be easily played with. The outcome of this match is hard to determine, but he will definitely be able to force Lin Ming into using his full strength.”

Chen Kun extracted a long staff from his spatial ring. This staff was one of the common weapons of the Deep Earth Sect.

“Boy, it’s not that I, Chen Kun, am bullying you, but it is that you are far too arrogant. You don’t even place my Five Element Region’s six great sects in your eyes. Since you dare to challenge the six great sects with your lone strength, how could I fear you? Watch my staff!”

Chen Kun fired his staff. This staff was naturally an elastic staff. The staff danced in the sky, creating brown phantoms that connected into a single stretch, as if sand had covered the entire sky. It was impossible to tell where Chen Kun's attack would come from.

Against these overwhelming staff phantoms, Lin Ming only thrust out his spear. This spear brought forth 10,000 filaments of vibrating true essence. The azure vibrating true essence flushed out like a tide. Under such a tide, all of the staff phantoms were dispelled, turning into nothing.

In an instant, Lin Ming arrived in front of Chen Kun, stabbing his spear towards Chen Kun's stomach!

"Mm!?" Chen Kun's complexion changed, "Cliff Rock Barrier!"

As a disciple of the Deep Earth Sect, he naturally knew several defensive martial skills. Chen Kun waved his hand, and a thick wall of earth appeared in front of him. Lin Ming's spear smashed into the wall, shaking the origin energy that created it!

Chen Kun insidiously smiled. He took advantage of when Lin Ming's weapon was caught in the wall and raised his staff, pounding down on Lin Ming's shoulder. "Earth Opening Staff!"

The long staff howled as it came down, the origin energy twisted around it, turning into a three foot thick staff shade. As it came down, it looked like a golden pillar that was about to smash Lin Ming. If this staff struck, it would definitely break his collarbone, causing Lin Ming to lose his combat strength.

In that split-second, Lin Ming cried out, "Explode!"

Flow like Silk erupted. The foot thick earth wall was actually blown into powder by 10,000 vibrating azure true essence filaments!

Lin Ming's spear swept out, his spear potential like an unstoppable wave!

It collided with the golden staff shade!

Bang!

As the staff and spear intersected, the golden pillar staff shade broke apart, but Lin Ming's Heavy Profound Soft Spear curved into a crescent moon, as if it were about to break.

"Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!"

In that last moment, Lin Ming had actually held onto the spear with a single hand. With his free right hand, his punched out!

At this moment, Chen Kun was using his full strength to support the staff in his hands – where would he have the strength to defend? He could only stare with disbelief as Lin Ming's fist punched his chest.

Chen Kun only saw his eyes go dark for a moment as he flew backwards.

Chapter 369 – Battle Marathon

Chapter 369 – Battle Marathon

…

…

…

Chen Kun flew back several dozen feet before finally managing to use his staff to ground himself. He kneeled on the floor, panting and taking in great gulps of air. The punch that had struck his chest was too strange; the energy in that attack had spread through his organs, causing his blood to roil.

He stood up, an expression of shock coloring his face. In a battle of masters where both parties were using their full strength, they naturally had to also utilize their utmost concentration. If there was even the slightest mistake, it was possible that they would be defeated. But Lin Ming was actually able to hold a spear in one hand and use his other to attack.

What sort of strange strength was this?

After a martial artist reached the Pulse Condensation period, their bodily strength wouldn't increase by much. They could only depend on using the true essence to indirectly enhance their strength. But because the Deep Earth Sect martial artists had earth-attribute origin energy, they had a large advantage in the aspect of strength.

But in that moment, Chen Kun had been completely suppressed by Lin Ming's brute force.

Chen Kun could not accept this.

"I admit defeat."

Chen Kun clenched his teeth, then turned around and walked offstage.

As he admitted defeat, there was a collective gasp among the banquet audience.

“This Lin Ming, I don’t know, but he must have studied some cultivation method that gave him such a bizarre body strength. He was actually able to withstand Chen Kun’s Earth Opening Staff and retaliate, it’s no injustice that Chen Kun lost.”

“Lin Ming defeated two Deep Earth Sect masters in a row, even the direct disciple Chen Kun lost. After him would be the top four or five ranked direct disciples.”

“It’s impossible for Lin Ming to win. But even so, to win by wearing him down in a battle of attrition would be truly disgraceful. Even after they win, the Five Element Region’s six great sects will still lose face. Just look at the Thunderclap’s complexion.”

At the Thundercrest sect’s banquet table, Zhou Lie had a poor complexion. Ever since Lin Ming had said he would challenge the six great sects of the Five Element Region, he hadn’t been able to relax.

He wasn’t worried that Lin Ming would continuously win. After all, if dozens of Houtian martial artists all challenged a Pulse Condensation period martial artist, he would eventually slip and be defeated. This was inevitable. Let alone Lin Ming, even the Mu Qianyu of the past would not have been able to do this.

What Zhou Lie worried about was the entire situation of the Five Element Region’s Houtian masters waging a protracted war against a Pulse Condensation period junior. Once this matter was made known, it would truly be shameful.

He couldn’t help but glance at Zhou Xiaoling. His little sister was actually still eating at this moment, her head nearly in her bowl. Zhou Lie frowned, “You’re still in the mood to eat?”

“If I don’t eat then what am I going to do here?” Zhou Xiaoling vaguely muttered as she looked at Lei Zhenzi, puzzled. She had a very bored and tired look in her eyes. “Anyway, fights of this level have nothing to do with me, so what about it.”

Zhou Lie was speechless. He sighed as she said, “It’s as you said, Lin Ming really won!”

As Zhou Xiaoling swallowed some food, she said, “It’s not simple for him to lose. Why don’t you go up and finish this yourself then?”

Zhou Lie was exasperated with his little sister. To tell him to go up onstage himself, that was a complete joke.

Mu Dingshan and Mu Xiaoqing still hadn’t moved. Lin Ming had challenged the heroic elites of the Five Element Region, but that didn’t mean that the other disciples of Divine Phoenix Island would just stand there.

Zhou Lie expected that if he or any of the other chief disciples took action, then Mu Dingshan and Mu Xiaoqing would come out to meet them. These two fellows were very difficult to deal with, especially Mu Dingshan. His cultivation was just a step away from reaching the middle Houtian real. Zhou Lie had to admit that his odds of defeating him were less than half.

At that time, things would become a battle between the direct disciples of the sects. Meanwhile, Lin Ming would walk offstage and recover his strength.

This was not what Zhou Lie wished to see.

Even for Zhou Lie, he couldn’t afford to lose or win against this fellow. He could already imagine that if he entered the stage, there would be a rumor spreading throughout the entire Five Element Region and South Horizon Region, that the Five Element Region’s six great sects had collaborated to besiege the 16 year old Divine Phoenix Island Saint rank talent Lin Ming. Even the chief disciple Zhou Lie had to use the strategy of having several others wear Lin Ming down, and then only managing to barely defeat him.

These rumors were unpredictable. Especially because those that spread these rumors would embellish many details to bring more attention to their stories.

Therefore no matter how Zhou Lie won, the end result would be that Lin Ming's status and influence would rise. As for his own reputation, he would be extremely discredited in the Five Element Region, his face falling to the floor. Zhou Lie didn't want to place himself in this situation.

…………

At this time on the stage, Lin Ming had taken a pill from his spatial ring and swallowed it. In these two matches, he had consumed a small bit of his strength. Lin Ming's endurance was amazing. He had an excessively abundant amount of blood vitality, and after he had reached Tempering Marrow where his blood was like gold soup, Lin Ming's blood vitality was like a massive raging inferno.

Such a martial artist that had an extremely blood vitality, even if they fell into the 10,000 layers of the abyss, no ghost of spirit would dare to approach them, or they would instantly be purified.

After eating up a pill and revolving the 'True Primal Chaos Formula', Lin Ming rapidly restored the true essence he had consumed.

"Who wants to be next?"

Lin Ming's arm pressed against the barrel of his spear, the nine foot nine inch Heavy Profound Soft Spear proudly displayed. A man and his spear stood with complete pride in the center of the stage, challenging all martial artists from the six great sects to meet him. At this time, the only way to describe Lin Ming would be that his heroic spirit soared to the skies!

A quarter of an hour ago, the Divine Phoenix Island disciples had been continuously challenged by the Five Element Region disciples. All of the junior disciples had gathered, but they were overwhelmed facing against such an endless enemy.

But now, with just a few words from Lin Ming, they suddenly all filled with a rapturous pride. At this moment, the image of this solitary figure onstage had etched itself into the hearts of many present.

Of course, the reaction of the Five Element Region disciples was the complete opposite.

“F*ck! This kid is too arrogant!”

“He dares to bully my Five Element Region!?”

The youths were easily stirred up. Now, with someone challenging them while looking down on them at the same time, how could they sit still?

A youth carrying a longsword that was sat near Zhan Yunjian stood up. “Senior-apprentice Brother Zhan, I’ll go up and compete against him.”

The youth was already itching to fight. In the last year, his strength had increased by leaps and bounds, and he was looking for a chance to display his newfound strength. Now that Lin Ming had won a series of battles, if he could stop his winning streak, he would surely become famous.

“Mm…” Zhan Yunjian nodded. Since the Five Element Region had already decided to defeat Lin Ming in a battle of attrition, they should double down on this plan. In any case, their reputation had already fallen. Several days from now, this series of events would spread regardless of what happened. Thus it was best to just send a few of the top direct disciples out and end this farce as quickly as possible.

Otherwise, if Lin Ming defeated the next seven or eight challengers, that would truly be an ugly sight to behold.

“He shouldn’t have much strength left, just go up and directly defeat him.” Zhan Yunjian said.

The youth smiled, “This boy is dreaming. Does he really think he can keep winning? Not even a chief disciple can accomplish this. I think that this boy wants to become famous so badly that he’s gone insane. Since I’m going up, I’ll make sure to awaken him from this fanciful dream!”

As the youth spoke, he leapt onstage.

Zhao Yunjian let out a long breath. Even if Lin Ming lost, he would still become famous throughout the entire South Horizon Region and Five Element Region. His reputation might even compare to that of Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun; this was not something that the direct disciples of the Five Element Region could compare with.

But in the end, Lin Ming was lacking time – this was as far as he came. Although he was able to defeat Chen Kun, how would he fare against a top direct disciple? He would probably barely be able to win. In the worst case, even if he won, he would still exhaust his strength. If so, how many could he defeat?”

“Storm Valley’s Chu Yunfei, I wish to experience just what ability you have to be confident!” Chu Yunfei pointed between Lin Ming’s eyebrows, the provocation obvious in his voice and actions.

Storm Valley’s Chu Yunfei was the fourth ranked direct disciple. It was worth mentioning that he was less than 19 years old and had an astonishing talent. He was considered one of the top four heroic Storm talents.

Because a fourth ranked direct disciple had entered the stage, after that would be the third and second ranked direct disciples. And after the top direct disciples were the chief disciples, characters like Zhan Yunjian, Bai Aoxuan, Zhou Lie, and others.

However, Lin Ming also knew that the chief direct disciples were proud and haughty, and would not participate in this group siege.

‘Since these chief disciples aren’t going to move, I’ll sweep clean the direct disciples of the six great sects, and use these battles to consolidate my Tempering Marrow boundary and enhance my strength.’

Lin Ming never thought to take the initiative and challenge the six chief disciples. He couldn’t discern the true strength of these individuals. Although Lin Ming had full confidence in a one on one fight, as for fighting several of them in a row, he wasn’t arrogant to such a degree.

As Lin Ming faced Chu Yunfei on the stage, he took out the Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

“Hehe, your winning streak stops here!” Chu Yunfei brightly smiled. Without any action at all, the blue sword that was in the scabbard on his back flew out on its own, into his hand.

Lin Ming was slightly surprised. “This is… the Concept of Wind?”

Lin Ming instantly realized that the sword was pulled out from the scabbard by wind, then sent to Chu Yunfei’s hand. This was a sort of ability that allowed one to control wind. This sort of wind controlling ability was truly eye opening. “The top ranked direct disciples of the Five Element Region really have their own strengths. For the Storm Valley martial artists to comprehend the Concept of Wind also makes sense!”

“Oh? You saw through it? Not bad. My comprehension of the Concept of Wind ranks among the top of Storm Valley’s younger generation!” Chu Yunfei was completely confident in himself. He had broken through to the Houtian realm at 18 years of age, and was also called one of the four heroic Storm talents. Naturally, he had areas he excelled in.

“To be defeated under my hands is not an injustice!”

Chu Yunfei slashed out. His sword speed was fast to the point that only the sword light could be seen.

His knees were slightly bent, his body flying, his movements strange. Strong winds formed a whirling blue vortex around him, his figure turning into a series of images. Every sword light turned into a thin light, hiding in the gaps in the air. This true essence was highly compressed but also had a strange attack pattern; it was virtually impossible to defend against!

Lin Ming’s expression was solemn. He sent out his sense and captured the location of every sword light.

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Under the support of the movement technique, Lin Ming’s figure instantly vanished.

Cha cha cha!

The floor tiles were torn apart by the sharp sword energy, the cuts smooth like a mirror.

Lin Ming was like a fish in water. Every sword light was forced apart by Flow like Silk, and he danced within the storm of sword energy, seizing every chance to attack.

“Humph, in terms of speed you cannot compete against me!” Chu Yunfei’s lips arced up. He flicked his wrists, and the sharp lines of sword energy dissolved into fluttering cotton, fusing into the wind.

In that moment, wind swirled up into several vortexes. Several blue tornadoes appeared on the stage, swaying like massive snakes as they closed in on Lin Ming.

Chapter 370 – Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky

Chapter 370 – Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky

…

…

…

Three blue tornadoes twisted on the stage. Because of their rapid rotation, they issued a keening sound like a saber that was carving ice. Even the floor tiles that were supported by an array formation were grinded to pieces. If one was caught in this wind, their miserable fate could be imagined.

These three tornadoes were likely sword formations created by wind.

The power of the Concept of Wind lay in its ability to fuse sword and wind. The wind would never disperse. If wind was cut, it would still be wind. And in that wind was contained a sword energy that also wouldn't fade away.

"The sword energy formed a tornado formation. What a terrifying Concept of Wind. Chu Yunfei is truly a talent blessed by the heavens; he might have already touched upon the origin of all wind!"

"Truly a rare spectacle. The four heroic Storm talents truly live up to their outstanding reputation."

"The sword energy that formed the tornadoes cannot be cut. I wonder how Lin Ming will block this attack."

Everyone under the stage watched with shining eyes, waiting to see if Lin Ming would be able to resolve this attack, or if he would lose.

When masters exchanged moves using their full strength, it was normal for the winner to be decided in just a few moves.

Lin Ming saw the tornadoes formed from sword energy and let out a light breath. This Chu Yunfei's comprehension of the Concept of Wind might even surpass his own.

The seven great sects of the Five Element Region had studied and researched their sole attribute for countless years. It was normal for them to have comprehended the Concepts of their various attributes. When Lin Ming had fought Shi Hanshan, his Earth Essence Shield had also contained a shadow of the Concept of Earth. It was only that he didn't truly understand the Concept of Earth, so he was unable to realize it.

Now that he though back the tenacity that the Earth Essence Shield had displayed when it deformed but still didn't break, Lin Ming realized that this was probably some skill that belonged to the Concept of Earth.

Lin Ming still had a ways to walk on his own path of martial arts.

He concentrated on the Heretical God Seed and began to revolve the true essence within his body. He could already hear the sharp wind edges begin to cut apart his true essence protection; this was the aftermath of the sword energy and wind fusion.

Chu Yunfei sneered. "True essence is fused into the wind, and the sword energy melts into the wind. The wind is the sword, the sword is the wind, if he truly wants to dodge this sword energy, that's only possible if he can dodge the wind itself! Now die!"

Sword energy erupted, and the three tornadoes rushed towards Lin Ming from all angles, wanting to strangle any path of escape.

Lin Ming's hair fluttered, his flapping clothes only torn apart by the tornadoes. He quickened the true essence in his body to the extreme, and his hand grasped the Heavy Profound Soft Spear. The power of fire that was contained within the Heretical God Seed suddenly erupted.

Huu!!!

The azure light that covered the Heavy Profound Soft Spear faded away. In its place, a blazing fire combusted on the spear, a brilliant red light that shined like the setting sun, causing everyone watching to avert their gaze from such a blinding radiance.

“What!?”

Chu Yunfei was shocked beyond measure – dual-attribute body!?

This Lin Ming actually had a rare thunder and fire dual-attribute body! He could control thunder and control fire at the same time! No wonder he had been able to enter into the Vermillion Bird Faction.

In that split-second, Chu Yunfei wasn’t able to reflect on what was happening. Lin Ming’s spear seemed to ignite the void, the Heavy Profound Soft Spear billowing with a deep scarlet red as it swept at a tornado.

Suddenly, the wind that contained true essence was set on a blazing fire. Lin Ming’s spear, to the utter disbelief of Chu Yunfei, broke apart a blue tornado.

After sword energy and wind fused together, it couldn’t be cut apart. But, if the wind origin energy was burned to nothing, then the sword energy tornado would naturally be broken!

At the moment he had cut apart a tornado, Lin Ming suddenly felt as if there was a fire burning in his heart. The power of fire within the Heretical God Seed seemed endless, as if it were about to explode at any given moment.

This is…

Lin Ming suddenly realized that this was the result of continuously cultivating the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ for four months and reaching the second layer. The power of fire had gathered within the Heretical God Seed, tightly packing within.

The qualitative and quantitative changes that had occurred had stirred up a resonance within the Heretical God Seed!

The law formulas of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ flashed across his mind. Lin Ming passed through the gap between the tornadoes, his feet treading upon the Golden Roc Shattering the Void movement technique as he suddenly accelerated.

Flames spewed forth, the Heretical God Seed roared.

Lin Ming suddenly thrust out his spear!

“Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky!”

Bright flames soared forth. What Lin Ming had shockingly used was a fire-attribute martial skill from the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’.

A raging fire wound out, a brilliant crimson phoenix spread out its wings from the tip of the Heavy Profound Soft Spear and soared out!

Chu Yunfei was shocked. He gathered all of the true essence and wind origin energy that hadn’t dispersed, cutting down with his sword.

Bang!

An inferno erupted. Chu Yunfei’s hastily slashed sword naturally wasn’t able to stop the Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky that Lin Ming had gathered his potential to use. The fire origin energy burned away the wind, burned away all!

Soon, Chu Yunfei’s figure was engulfed in flames. The true essence that protected his body severely trembled, and suddenly broke. Chu Yunfei flew backwards, his hair and clothes singed in countless spots. In that moment, the power of fire had sunk into his meridians, causing him severe internal injuries.

The disciples of Divine Phoenix Island were shocked. Lin Ming was actually a rare thunder and fire dual-attribute martial artist? Not only that, but he had actually studied the core Divine Phoenix Island cultivation methods? Just when did he study it?

Some disciples suddenly remembered that just a few days ago, there was an extremely fast ring of fire that had spread out from the Parasol Tree Pavilion. It was like a tornado that suddenly grew, blowing away the leaves of the parasol tree forest. Now that they thought back on it, the center of this ring of fire was the small building 22, where Lin Ming was staying.

Without a doubt, the one who had unleashed this ring of fire origin energy was Lin Ming during his cultivation. In order to have this sort of incident, one needed an extremely pure power of fire.

The Divine Phoenix Island disciples' minds were still wandering in the clouds as if they were in a fog. Mu Qianyu's beautiful eyes widened; she looked to the sky in incredible disbelief, staring at the flames that were still burning.

Four months ago, she had handed the jade slip that contained the first layer of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' to Lin Ming. And now, he had already reached the stage of Perfection.

Although this was an extremely fast speed, it wasn't enough to make her lose her calm.

But what she found inconceivable was the Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky. That was a martial skill that was only found within the second layer of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. But, she had only given the jade slip with the second layer to Lin Ming yesterday.

In that short time, he had actually learnt it?

What kind of monstrous learning speed was this!?

Mu Qianyu's chest was palpitating. At this moment, she met the puzzled eyes of old lady Yuhuang.

"Yu'er, what's going on here?"

"Honorable Master, Yu'er didn't violate the rules of the sect. Four months ago I had only passed down the first layer of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' to him. It was only when I obtained Honorable Master's permission yesterday that Yu'er gave him the following jade slip as well as some supplementary notes."

"You mean that he took only four months to fully complete the first layer of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', and then used this as the foundation to learn Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky in just a single day?" Mu Yuhuang stared with a charming pair of eyes that were filled with grace, making absolutely sure that Mu Qianyu wasn't making some joke.

"Um, it should be like that..." Mu Qianyu wryly smiled. She felt that her own words held no credibility either. "Honorable Master, even Yu'er is inferior to Lin Ming's talent at cultivating the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. When I had first passed him the first layer, I had only gone to take a bath, but by the time I returned he had already learnt how to create flame chains."

Mu Qianyu had spent an entire day learning how to create flame chains. As for Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky, she had spent over half a month.

Mu Qianyu was a seventh-grade martial talent, and she also had a seventh-grade fire origin fusion compatibility, while also having a body with an inborn Vermillion Bird bloodline.

Compared to her, Mu Yuhuang had spent an even longer time.

Mu Yuhuang was well aware what it meant for Lin Ming to have such a terrifying practice speed. Although even Mu Yuhuang found this hard to believe, since Mu Qianyu had said it was so, this couldn't be fake.

“This Lin Ming. He has a dual-attribute physique, his talent is amazing, and he has the perception of a monstrous genius. Not only that, but he has a martial intent, and also controls an earth-step Thunder Soul... how can such a person exist in this world?” Mu Yuhuang’s intuition told her that Lin Ming must have experienced some heaven-defying lucky opportunity.

There were countless lucky opportunities that could be found within the Sky Spill Continent, and there were many geniuses that had managed to obtain these chances. There were even some people that went from mediocrity to becoming a master overnight. However, Mu Yuhuang carefully analyzed Lin Ming’s results, and came to the conclusion that his results weren’t necessarily all because of the benefits from some lucky opportunity.

‘His constitution and cultivation could be obtained by some lucky chance. But his perception and martial intent should be an inborn talent. As for that earth-step Thunder Soul, Yu’er has already told me the complete process of how that happened. It was all because Lin Ming had risked his life in order to obtain it. Luck was a factor, but Lin Ming himself was the most important part. Regardless of anything, Lin Ming himself is a perfect talent. If the heavens have given Lin Ming a lucky chance, then right now the current Lin Ming is also a lucky chance of Divine Phoenix Island. If my Divine Phoenix Island can overcome this South Sea crisis, then my Divine Phoenix Island will truly live in a prosperous time...’ Mu Yuhuang took a deep breath as she thought to here. She glanced at Mu Qianyu. Mu Qianyu’s eyes weren’t moving, it was unknown what she was thinking.

Onstage, Lin Ming stood with his eyes closed. His thoughts were still immersed in that fleeting moment when he had used Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky, perceiving its insights and letting the fire origin energy freely flow.

A moment ago, he had only felt that the fire origin energy within his body had reached an extreme, and he had to vent it out or else he would have been sick. He had a revelation at that moment, and was able to recall the law formula for the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ second layer’s Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky. Then, he was able to smoothly use it without any jerky feeling, as if he had practiced this skill for a long time.

The reason that Lin Ming was able to learn the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ to such a degree and at such a speed had little to do with his perception. It was almost completely because of the Heretical God Seed.

With the Heretical God Seed, the power of fire within Lin Ming’s body was constantly nourished. It was not only extremely powerful, but also extremely obedient. When necessary, it could suddenly erupt from its compressed state, instantly enhancing Lin Ming’s strength by a large degree.

With such a strong controlling force, cultivating the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ was naturally much faster and easier.

In this match, although he hadn’t been able to reach a state where his cultivation was consolidated, it allowed Lin Ming to gain more insights and a deeper understanding of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. If he could lay such a foundation, it would be much easier to practice the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ later.

There were many martial skills found within the second layer of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ cultivation method. This was also a very timely boon for Lin Ming. Before now, Lin Ming’s style of attack had been too singular. Besides Flow like Silk, he had the coiling dragon steel needle and Thunderfire Annihilation.

Thunderfire Annihilation and the coiling dragon steel needle were both final master moves. As for Flow like Silk, that was not a pure martial skill. Thus, most of the time Lin Ming had used the ‘Foundation Spear Technique’. For instance, Flood Dragon Goes to Sea, Flowers in the Storm, and so on. When his cultivation had been lower, this was completely sufficient. But now, it was increasingly apparent that this was a weakness of his.

‘A battle is really a good way to enhance my strength. The competition at this banquet is actually a really good place to temper myself.’ Lin Ming thought with some happiness. He swallowed down a pill and relied on his formidable blood vitality to restore his true essence.

He held the Heavy Profound Soft Spear in his hands, his clear voice ringing in the air, "…Who is next?"

Chapter 371 – What Can You Do To Me?

Chapter 371 – What Can You Do To Me?

…

…

…

‘Who is next’!???

Wasn’t this just a brazen challenge to them all? This was simply a naked slap to the face!

As Lin Ming shouted these words, the faces of the Five Element Region disciples began to turn blue.

Was this boy some invincible iron man? He had been in three continuous matches and had won all three, each opponent stronger than the last! But Lin Ming didn’t seem to show any signs that he was weakening!

“Too arrogant, he is far too arrogant! So f*cking, so so f*cking arrogant!!!”

A Deep Earth Sect disciple turned red; he had to use two continuous curse words to express how angry he was.

“This is really angering me to death! How come our chief disciples aren’t going onstage? Bao Aoxuan, Huo Ruyan, Zhan Yunjian, or any of them can make this kid eat his own words. As soon as they go up, he’ll be defeated!”

“You idiot, once the chief disciples go up, what do you think Mu Dingshan and Mu Xiaoqing are going to do? Once that happens, when the chief disciples battle each other won’t that little punk be able to go down and rest? We’ve had to wear him down in a battle of attrition, but if we let all our efforts be for naught and start again from zero, what will happen to us?"

"Damn, this father is going to go up and ruin this punk's haughty attitude!"

A disciple stood up but was instantly pulled down by someone next to him. "Don't be dumb. Your strength isn't enough to reach the top five direct disciples. If you go up, you're just giving him more chances to show off!"

"Humph. I don't believe his physical strength is so great that he can be fine even through three battles. Does he think he's made of iron or something? Even if I can't win, I'll still waste away his strength!"

As the six great sects argued amongst each other, they couldn't help but acknowledge the inconceivable situation that was laid before them. That was that Lin Ming's endurance was beyond terrifying!

Although he had consumed true essence after every battle, this slow rate of consumption was simply outrageous to the point of making one's blood boil. It completely emitted a feeling that made one feel hopeless.

In five full breaths of time, there was actually no one who dared to enter the stage. After Chu Yunfei – who had ranked fourth among the direct disciples of Storm Valley – had been defeated, besides Zhan Yunjian, there were only two people that ranked above him.

Thus, even if the second ranked direct disciple went to meet Lin Ming's challenge, even he might not be safe!

In a war of attrition, Lin Ming would lose without a doubt. Even a Saint rank talent wouldn't be able to persist through dozens of Houtian masters. But, the crux of the issue was just who would be the cannon fodder?

Of the six great direct disciples, any of them were an existence that was far more outstanding than Jiang Baoyun; their arrogance could be imagined. They were characters that valued their own image and pride above all else.

Even though this war of attrition was a disgraceful matter, everyone still wished to be the last one who was able to finally defeat Lin Ming and gain fame. How could these arrogant and proud disciples tolerate placing themselves in the position of cannon fodder for others?

"Ah! Someone hurry and go up! That kid just took some medicine, he's recovering!"

After ten breaths of time, some disciples of the Five Element Region were beginning to turn green. They were actually challenged and stopped here by a mere 16 year old boy who had trash talked them, and yet no one dared to step up. What kind of situation was this?

Especially since at this time, the newly converted Linmaniacs of Divine Phoenix Island began to raucously shout.

"Big Brother Lin, that's my boy!"

"Big Brother Lin, you rock!"

"Big Brother Lin is a true man, a man whose flesh and blood are iron!"

"Lin Ming, you can do it, we believe!"

"Ah! Lin Ming, you sexy beast!"

The Divine Phoenix Island disciples were proud and jubilant. Before this they had been the ones who had been challenged to battle, and they were already stretched too tightly to deal with it.

But now, when Lin Ming had challenged the Five Element Region disciples to battle, no one dared to appear. There was simply no better feeling in the world.

Of course, there were a few disciples like Yan Fuhong that had an increasingly ugly complexion. Their faces had already sunk as far as they could. Yan Fuhong was horrified. He didn't think that he had actually tried to mess with such an abnormal boy. If Lin Ming ever found out… Yan Fuhong dared not to think about what would happen. Just the possibilities already sent shivers running down his spine.

Many of the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island had stepped on their chairs, some stripping their clothes and waving them.

This was simply a revival of madness.

It had to be known that Divine Phoenix Island disciples were always especially proud and arrogant individuals with a high view of themselves. Especially core disciples – they were the chosen of heaven among all chosen of heaven. The men cared much about their image, much less the women. Any random female disciples of Divine Phoenix Island already had a status that was hundreds of times superior to a country's princess.

But now, these young infatuated girls had lost all restraints and disregarded any pride, screaming and crying out at the top of their lungs.

Divine Phoenix Island had many female disciples. As these young Linmaniacs wept and moaned and screamed, even some of the other female disciples flushed red. These women were simply devolving into sex-crazed beasts! How could the disciples of the Five Element Region possibly permit this?

To male animals in nature, the most painful affront was to have many other beautiful female animals taken by another male animal, being unable to lift their heads.

Although humans often flaunted their wisdom and morals, this sort of animal disposition was etched into their very bones. These were the most basic instincts that were impossible to suppress.

The disciples of the Five Element Region were unable to bear such a massive pressure. A desperate blue-clothed youth stood up, a calm expression in his eyes, like a spirit that was unafraid of walking on death's edge. He walked onstage with resolution, preparing to serve as cannon fodder and bravely face death for the Five Element Region, becoming a heroic martyr. This self-sacrifice immediately ushered in looks of admiration and sympathy from those around him.

The blue-clothed youth had a thought that echoed in his mind. That was that he could die, but he would not die on his knees, and other such sayings.

To sacrifice one's life for honor and die as a martyr, for fame and justice – that was a worthy death.

Lin Ming was utterly speechless as he watched this idiot stand up. The reason that he had participated in this war of attrition was because he wanted to repay Mu Yuhuang and also to force himself to his limits, and use this chance to enhance his strength.

But this fellow that came up was only wasting his time.

His cultivation wasn't even at the Houtian realm.

However, fortunately a direct disciple of Storm Valley was finally unable to watch such a sad scene and stood up. He was the third ranked disciple of Storm Valley, Zhan Huo. He was slightly stronger than Chu Yunfei, but against someone like Lin Ming, he didn't have much confidence in himself.

"Brother, which one of us should go up?" The peak Pulse Condensation martial artist saw Zhan Huo stand up and asked him, his heart quivering. When he walked onstage, he was finally able to feel the pressure. This was a completely different feeling from the heroic self-sacrifice that clouded his mind earlier. This pressure made him intensely nervous, and as he heard the cheering from both sides, this pressure had reached the extreme.

As he faced Lin Ming who was standing calm and straight onstage, this pressure became a massive oppressive feeling, a crushing aura that he couldn't withstand.

He finally understood why even though there were dozens of Houtian realm disciples, no one had gone up for a full ten breaths of time. With all the heaven blessed talents and Revolving Core Elders watching this fight, the pressure to succeed could be imagined. Under such a compelling pressure, every person had to be careful about walking onto the stage.

Zhan Huo looked at this blue-clothed idiot and sighed. He sent a true essence sound transmission, “Go back. In the time that you fight him, he’ll recover more energy than you can make him consume.”

The blue-clothed youth turned green. At the moment that he wasn’t sure what to do, Zhan Huo had walked onstage. “Storm Valley’s Zhan Huo, please advise.”

Zhan Huo pulled out his weapon, surprising everyone. This weapon was actually a whip.

A whip was much more difficult to use than a spear. Zhan Huo’s whip seemed to be made from twisted animal sinews. The surface of the whip was embellished with a variety of sharp metal features, every one with keen edges and corners. If one was really lashed by this whip, their flesh would be mutilated.

This whip was very long, it was around 50 feet. Brandishing it was also very difficult in terms of control.

Lin Ming casually waved his spear, and drew a crescent move on the floor with the spearpoint. “Make your move.”

Zhan Huo’s lips curved up, showing a trace of a sly smirk and also a taunt. Lin Ming frowned, what was this fellow planning?

“Boy, consider it bad luck that you met me!”

As Zhan Huo spoke, he bent his knees and then suddenly leapt upwards!

“Mm? He jumped up?”

Zhan Huo jumped over 100 feet high, and then his ascending speed began to slow down. When he finally reached the point where he should fall back down, an unexpected event occurred.

Zhan Huo opened both arms wide, the clothes around him fluttering in the wind as he stopped in midair.

He's floating?

The Divine Phoenix Island disciples were shocked. Besides Storm Valley, the disciples from the other Five Element Region sects were also stunned. There were even slight changes in the expressions of some Divine Phoenix Island elders.

"Oh? This fellow is quite interesting. Storm Valley truly does produce geniuses that have an amazing comprehension of the Concept of Wind!"

"Zhan Huo is also one of the four heroic Storm talents. This weird comprehension of a Concept is no worse than Chu Yunfei's. Storm Valley's 1000 years of accumulated knowledge truly lives up to its reputation.

"Haha, the sect inheritances are one thing, but this Zhan Huo boy also has very good perception. This sort of flying technique is not something that any Storm Valley disciple can learn; it is an extremely difficult and challenging skill to grasp. In the younger generation, only Zhan Huo has understood this Concept utilization.

Lin Ming's face revealed a very strange expression.

Flying technique?

He watched as Zhan You swayed in the air. Periodically, a small current of air formed around him. This was a sign of the unstable wind origin energy that he controlled.

If this technique was compared to the Golden Roc Shattering the Void that Lin Ming cultivated, it had zero combat value. It could only be described as an extremely shoddy and useless technique.

However, Lin Ming was able to understand one matter. For someone below the Xiantian realm to fly was not a big deal at all. The reason that he had hid the secret of Golden Roc Shattering the Void was because he feared that this cultivation method would be too shocking and draw in a disaster. However, it seemed as if any heaven blessed rare talent with good perception would be able to comprehend a flying technique from the Concept of Wind.

Now he no longer needed to hide this. He had already revealed some secrets that had caused others to believe he had a monstrous perception. Even if he revealed his comprehension of the Concept of Wind, it shouldn't be too shocking; no one should suspect anything.

If one could freely use Golden Roc Shattering the Void, it was possible to suddenly change directions in midair. If this skill was used in combat, it would be very difficult to guard against.

At this time, Zhan Huo had already flown more than 200 feet high, there was only a palm-sized shadow left from him on the ground. He cunningly smiled, and then loudly said, "Lin Ming, in this battle I am now in an invincible position. Just what can you do to me?"

Zhan Huo was smart. He realized that he wasn't a direct match for Lin Ming, so he used his flying technique to float in the air. Then, he could use the superior length of his whip to attack. With the addition of his true essence fused into the wind, he would have an advantage in long distance attacks, and slowly consume Lin Ming's energy. With this, if the fight continued, even if he eventually lost he would have used up all of Lin Ming's energy, and he wouldn't have the ability to fight any longer.

Lin Ming could only passively be beaten by him. Although a martial artist was able to jump 200 feet high, by the time they did, they would have already lost their striking strength and velocity. At that time, all Zhan Huo had to do was move away from Lin Ming’s jumping trajectory, calmly dodging him.

Chapter 372 – Spear Dancing In the Clouds

Chapter 372 – Spear Dancing In the Clouds

…

…

…

Zhan Huo proudly floated 200 feet in the air, a smug smile crossing his lips.

“The art of war says that those with the higher ground occupy the overwhelming advantage. Lin Ming, you have already lost!”

The truth was that Zhan Huo was hoping Lin Ming would jump into the air and fight with him. For any martial artist below the Xiantian realm, they would not be able to find leverage in the air. Thus, they naturally wouldn’t be able to block his attacks. At that time, Lin Ming would lose all of his jumping momentum and be at his weakest point.

Also, he wouldn’t be able to dodge any attacks, becoming nothing but an easy target. If Lin Ming dared to jump up, that was the same as putting his face out so that Zhan Huo could slap him. This was what Zhan Huo wished for.

“What a bastard!” A Divine Phoenix Island disciple openly denounced him. There were many other disciples that wished they could take the dishes and bowls on the table and throw them at Zhan Huo in the air.

“What a cheap and shameless method, is this the way you fight?”

“Are you Five Element Region disciples turtles or something? If you’ve got the guts, come down and fight!”

“This person doesn’t care about face at all! So shameless!” The young girls of Divine Phoenix Island made a simple judgment.

The Five Element Region disciples also had an ugly look. But as they remembered how Lin Ming had just stood there challenging them a moment ago, some calmed down, and some grit their teeth in anger; they didn’t want to be belittled and impeded by Lin Ming.

As long as they could defeat Lin Ming, any immoral and ignominious act would be permitted.

As for Zhan Huo, he turned a deaf ear to the jeers from the Divine Phoenix Island disciples. In every true battle since ancient times, as long as a tactic won, that was the only measure that mattered.

“Lin Ming, just stand there and be beaten by me. I’ll lash you to death. Watch my whip!”

Zhan Huo moved. True essence stirred within his entire body, and a blue light wrapped around his silver whip. There was a sharp sound as if the sky was split in half by the whip. The 50 foot long whip naturally couldn’t reach Lin Ming, but Zhan Huo had incorporated the Concept of Wind into his every attack.

With the whip shades fused into the wind, it was simply unpredictable.

Pa pa pa pa pa!

Dozens of whip phantoms slashed downwards, the silver metal mixed with a blue light brightening the sky. The thin lines of blue energy wove together, cutting apart the entire stage’s tiles like a sharp knife, leaving deep scars.

Lin Ming covered his body with azure true essence. Even moving he was still struck by some true essence from the whip phantoms. He could instantly feel a faint icy energy contained within the whip phantoms that drilled into his body like a poisonous snake. This energy also contained a light corrosive nature, melting away the true essence in his body.

Even though the power of the True Dragon was endless and immortal, it still required a great deal of energy to counteract.

Ka!

A large hole was ripped in Lin Ming's clothing.

'Mm? The whip contains an icy energy that can pass through my protective true essence, what a bizarre attack method. The world is truly great, so many fantastic individuals exist.'

With the whip phantoms fused into the wind, one could manipulate the thousands of whip phantoms to simultaneously attack. One could even change attack directions at will. This was truly a breathtaking technique.

Lin Ming was interested in studying this technique and having a little match with Zhan Huo to gain some insights. But, now he had consumed a bit too much true essence. If he really wanted to have an extended match with Zhan Huo, he wouldn't have the ability to fight a chief disciple once they appeared. Although a chief disciple was arrogant and treasured their own pride, if he continued winning, they would definitely challenge him.

"Haha, Lin Ming, are you only planning on hiding? You're just like a rat in the street, getting smacked around!

"Good! Since you want to hide then I'll turn your clothes into rags. When you're finally naked, let's see just how you'll continue hiding!"

Zhan Huo was deliberately angering Lin Ming. It seemed that the disciples of the Five Element Region really liked to use this approach. Lin Ming realized that since Zhan Huo was in the air and also attacking while maintaining his flying technique, his true essence consumption was much greater than his own. Zhan Huo's plan must have been to anger him so that he would jump into the air on his own. If he did that, Zhan Huo would have a great advantage.

Before a martial artist reached the Xiantian realm, they would minimize any unnecessary jumping as to avoid any opportunity of being aimed at. This was a common sense approach that even martial artists at the Strength Training or Viscera Training stage knew.

As for jumping dozens of feet, that was simply a suicidal attack that only an idiot would try. Initially, when Huo Gong had tried to assassinate Lin Ming in the skies of the Southern Wilderness, because he had engaged Lin Ming in the sky, there was no place for him to leverage his strength. The result was that a high and mighty half-step Houtian master had been severely wounded by the Altering Muscle cultivation Lin Ming. Afterwards, he was even killed.

Of course, Lin Ming was an exception to this rule. The air was his grand stage.

"Since you want to anger me so much, it will be as you wish!" Lin Ming's lips curved up in a smile, and he waved his long spear. His knees bent down, and he prepared to jump high.

"Mm?" Zhou Lie realized what Lin Ming was about to do, surprised in his eyes. He sneered, saying with disdain, "If he jumps then he will lose!"

Facing Zhan Huo's roguish fighting style, the only way to deal with him was to compare consumption of energy with him. Since Zhan Huo was in the air, his true essence consumption must be much higher than Lin Ming's. Once Zhan Huo's true essence was fully exhausted, it would be Lin Ming's victory. Of course, Lin Ming would also consume a corresponding amount of true essence. But it was still better than being defeated.

Jumping up into the air was tantamount to stepping into Zhan Huo's home turf. When that happened, Lin Ming would only be a target, there was nowhere for him to find leverage to counterattack. If he couldn't find a way to defend or dodge, he would undoubtedly lose.

Mu Yuhuang furrowed her eyebrows. Although she only knew Lin Ming for a short time, she could still feel that Lin Ming wasn't an impulsive character. He was courageous, but not blindly so. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for him to obtain the Purple Flood

Dragon Divine Thunder within Thundercrash Mountain. So why was he jumping into the air? Did he have some backup plan?

Mu Yuhuang glanced at Mu Qianyu and saw the she was looking unsure too. They no longer spoke, instead turning their full attention to the match.

Peng!

The stage tiles that Lin Ming stepped on burst apart. Lin Ming shot upwards into the sky like an arrow!

“Haha, you’re seeking death, boy!”

Zhan Huo raised his right hand and slashed out with his whip. This whip produced a wave of whip phantoms, converging on Lin Ming from all sides. This was just like a massive hive of bees coming at him, he would be ripped to shreds!

In a moment, Lin Ming would smash into this inescapable net!

“Lin Ming will lose.” Zhan Yunjian’s eyebrows rose and he shook his head. Lin Ming was too eager to win, leading to his loss.

He hadn’t expected that the Five Element Region would win in such a manner. Still, in the end they won…

The Five Element Region disciples’ eyes lit up. This idiot had actually jumped up of his own volition, running himself into an attack!

Against such a dense and terrifying attack, one would be severely wounded after being stuck. But in such a match, once one was injured like this, it was the same as losing.

The Five Element Region disciples were elated. This palpable joyful feeling revealed itself in their words and actions.

“You small fry, let’s see how you’ll challenge anyone again! What kind of act are you going to show now!?”

“What goes up must come down, you will pay the price for your rampant arrogance!”

“Go die, you idiot!”

At this moment, Lin Ming didn’t know that these Five Element Region disciples had assumed they had won and were cursing him. Of course, in that split-second, these curses were only in their hearts. Before they had even spoken halfway, Lin Ming had already run into the endless whip phantoms.

All of the whip phantoms converged from all directions! From the audience’s perspective, they could clearly see that all of these whip phantoms that covered the heavens formed a dome. And in the center of this deadly dome was Lin Ming!

The dome of whip phantoms began to shrink at an alarming rate. As for Lin Ming, he rushed into the center! Lin Ming was about to run into this concentrated attack. Even if he had thick true essence that protected his body, he would still be bombarded by so many attacks and severely wounded!

As all of the whip phantoms converged onto a single point, Lin Ming suddenly dropped! His speed approached an extreme, and all that was left was a afterimage.

Bang!

With a fierce explosion, blue air currents surged in all directions. But Lin Ming was like a swift bird that flew out from the storm. As soon as he dropped, he flashed forward at an incredible speed, crossing the air in a half arc and bypassing this massive explosion. With his long spear in hand, he stabbed towards Zhan Huo from behind!

At this time, Zhan Huo was watching the brilliant rainbow energy that was produced from the explosion, a happy smile on his lips. He didn’t think that he would win so easily. This Lin Ming was nothing but a mediocre simpleton in the end. Although he was brawny, he couldn’t handle the provocation and had jumped up like the idiot he was to die. But he wouldn’t be killed in a terrifying explosion like this, right?

If he had really died like this, that wouldn’t be fun. It was best if he became a complete cripple, or at least if several of his meridians were destroyed. Maybe he could even win some true essence stones to spend.

As Zhan Huo thought that he had completed his mission and was preparing to come down, he suddenly felt a horrific fire origin energy stirring behind him. The sound of a roaring flame reached the back of his ears.

“Mm!?”

Zhan Huo turned around. To his horror, he saw a fiery crimson phoenix flying towards him, growing larger. It had already flooded his entire field of vision.

Lin Ming held his long spear, the spear point directed at him, spear dancing in the clouds!

Flames roared forth, reaching the heavens.

Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky!

Bang!

The massive inferno explosion produced a sound like a clarion phoenix cry, echoing throughout the world. Zhan Huo’s body was suddenly engulfed in this blazing flare!

As the explosion of fire passed, a shockwave of true essence blew out. Zhan Huo was like a dead fish, falling straight down from the sky.

The situation had changed too fast, this was completely unexpected!

Many of the Five Element Region disciples that were cursing and making nasty comments suddenly had their words die in their throats. Their arrogant and prideful expressions froze on their faces, utter disbelief clouding over them.

How… how was this possible!?

What just happened?

Lin Ming's speed was too fast. In addition, because of the cover of the explosion of fire, only a few people were able to clearly see Lin Ming's movements.

He had changed direction in midair. Not only that, but it was completely sudden and he had done so twice! Such agility and deft movement was totally alarming!

Even the Xiantian masters present gasped. Although they could fly, their movements in the air were inferior to their movements on ground. But Lin Ming's speed and ability to change angles in the air caused them to feel utter shame!

Especially the many masters of Storm Valley. They all had expressions like they had seen a ghost.

This was absolutely the Concept of Wind! When had Lin Ming comprehended the Concept of Wind!?

And it was even more profound and wonderful than the Concept of Wind from Storm Valley. In comparison, Zhou Huo's flying technique was nothing but a joke!

Chapter 373 – Legend of the Saintess

Chapter 373 – Legend of the Saintess

…

…

…

A flying technique was a very peculiar utilization of a Concept's comprehension; not every disciple of Storm Valley was able to learn it. It had extremely high requirements of skill and perception, and usually within an entire generation, there would only be one or two people that were able to comprehend it. Zhan Huo's flying technique was already considered very good. It was just that his speed wasn't too fast, and it was impossible for him to hurry. In terms of combat potential, it was best used in the manner that Zhan Huo had just displayed, using crafty guerilla tactics.

But Lin Ming's flying technique was clearly usable in actual combat. In the air he was swift and agile, and he had completed three consecutive changes in direction. In just a breath of time, he had managed to completely dodge the terrifying explosion, soaring away in an arc. This left a deep image in everyone's mind.

Such flexible speed was not much inferior than a martial artist on the ground!

How had he managed to comprehend such a powerful Concept?

Within the knowledge of Sky Spill Continent, something like a Concept could only be realized by oneself – one had to comprehend it based on their own individual perception. If Lin Ming was a wind-attribute martial artist and was exposed to wind origin energy every day, and also practiced a wind-attribute cultivation method, everyone would just be able to accept this.

But Lin Ming was a dual thunder and fire martial artist, so how was he able to achieve such a high level of understanding of the Concept of Wind? It even overshadowed the disciples of Storm Valley!

The Storm Valley people looked extremely depressed. The blue-clothed elder that led them there had a pathetic, heartbroken expression. He felt like he was a normal chess player who was matched up against a chess master. He had thought he had won, and now everything was crumbling before him.

In the presence of so many people, where would Storm Valley recover its face?

Just where had this Lin Ming boy come from? How could someone with such a high perception exist?

In Divine Phoenix Island's seat of honor, Mu Yuhuang was taking a deep breath, her eyes shut, digesting the scene from just now.

Within a single night, he was able to learn Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky.

He wasn't a wind-attribute martial artist, yet he was able to comprehend the Concept of Wind. Not only that, but his attainments in the Concept of Wind even surpassed the disciples of Storm Valley.

Lin Ming's perception had already completely surpassed the scope of her understanding.

Mu Yuhuang couldn't really believe that there was a youth that had such a terrifying degree of perception; Lin Ming must have experienced many lucky opportunities. But, what was undeniable was that his perception was truly outstanding. This included his heart, mind, talent, persistence… in a few words to describe him, he was simply a man who lived for the martial path.

"Am I witnessing the rise of a Peerless Emperor?" Mu Yuhuang muttered to herself.

She wasn't really excited. Instead, it was better to say that she was disturbed. If Lin Ming was an ordinary Saint rank talent that would stop at the Revolving Core realm in the future, Mu Yuhuang would be incomparably happy. But, if there was a chance that he would become an almighty Peerless Emperor, that was an outcome that caused her to worry.

The birth of a Supreme Elder required the accumulation of destiny. Not only the destiny of that genius, but also the destiny of a sect.

When such a character was born within a sect, it was no different than a very difficult childbirth. In order to birth one, it would require a massive twist of destiny. Some sects might not be able to bear this. To them, when such a monstrous earth-shattering genius appeared, it was not luck. Instead, it was the greatest of all disasters.

This sounded absurd, but history had already repeatedly probed this point. A future Peerless Emperor would often live an extraordinary life from the time they were young. As a youth they would cause great storms in the world, stirring wars and world-changing events. Causing a vast loss of life was nothing surprising.

Some sects that were insufficient in their heritage would often disintegrate within such a storm. But, because these Peerless Emperors were often influenced by the luck of their destiny, they would escape from the jaws of death, continuing in the world on their path to becoming a Peerless Emperor.

Does Divine Phoenix Island have such a heritage?

Mu Yuhuang was not able to answer this question.

If they did, Divine Phoenix Island might be able to fly into the future with endless prosperity, becoming a fifth-grade sect, or even becoming one of the few Holy Lands within the entire Sky Spill Continent.

It had to be known that a Peerless Emperor hadn't been born within the Sky Spill Continent for thousands of years. Mu Yuhuang had no idea how many of these powerhouses were left in the Sky Spill Continent. Most of them were secretive, hidden masters that were rarely seen. Perhaps most of them had already flown up into the Realm of the Gods.

But, if Divine Phoenix Island was found to be lacking…

Mu Yuhuang let out a loose breath, her mind in chaos. 27 years ago, the twin sisters Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun had been born into this world. They each had the respective Vermillion Bird and Blue Luan bloodlines. They were seventh-grade martial talents that also had a seventh-grade fire and ice origin energy fusion compatibility. A blessing like the appearance of these twin babies had never occurred within the entire history of Divine Phoenix Island.

Now Divine Phoenix Island was facing a powerful enemy in the South Sea Demon Region. But, the Five Element Region's six sects actually wanted to take this chance to loot them. Divine Phoenix Island was in a truly precarious and dangerous situation.

But at this time, Lin Ming appeared!

This tumultuous event was like a dense fog that covered Mu Yuhuang's eyes, giving her a sense of confusion. She was unable to predict what the future of Divine Phoenix Island would be like.

"Everything in this world has a destiny. The heavens give nothing but danger. If I act wrongly, there will be disaster! My Divine Phoenix Island stands at the crux of destruction and glory. If I hesitate in my actions, then I fear that the day of our doom is not too far away…"

Perhaps Lin Ming was a chance that the heavens bestowed upon Divine Phoenix Island. If they did not receive this chance, it might instead become a calamity.

After a long time, Mu Yuhuang opened her eyes and looked at Mu Qianyu. She calmly said, "Yu'er, after this banquet competition ends, I will receive Lin Ming as my official disciple. At that time he will be your junior-apprentice brother. Make sure that you guide him well."

Mu Qianyu was stunned. She happily said, “I was planning on it even if Master didn’t say so.”

………………

As Zhan Huo fell, he was received by Storm Valley martial artists who jumped up to grab him. Otherwise, if he fell from 200 feet in the air, he would be severely wounded.

After assessing Zhan Huo’s situation and seeing that he was only burned and not too injured, Zhan Yunjian calmed down. He turned to the blue-clothed old man from Storm Valley and said, “Uncle Master, Zhan Huo is already the third ranked master of my Storm Valley’s younger generation. He had used every means, even shameless means to win, but was still defeated. Next would probably be the second ranked direct disciples of the six great sects. If they cannot win, I will personally challenge him!”

“Mm? You want to challenge him?”

“Yes. But we must first fight Mu Dingshan and Mu Xiaoqing. Us six against those three. First we will fight Mu Dingshan and Mu Xiaoqing so that Lin Ming can restore his strength. I don’t wish to take advantage of others when they are vulnerable!”

The blue-clothed old man traced his beard and then sighed, shaking his head, his heart filled with emotion. “Divine Phoenix Island has a great destiny approaching them. This Lin Ming is a dragon in a deep pool. With two more phoenixes added together, I have no idea what this will mean for the future of the South Horizon Region and the Five Element Region…”

After defeating Zhan Huo, Lin Ming ate a true essence supplementing pill. A pill wasn’t a cure for everything; the true essence from this pill was different from the true essence that one saved up. Eating too many would ultimately affect one’s strength.

Lin Ming hadn’t even called out a challenge yet when a man stood up on his own. He was from the Golden Bell Mountain table area, and wore a loose golden robe. He was bald, and looked like a monk from a secluded monastery.

“Golden Bell Mountain’s Xiao Chi, 20 years old. Please advise!”

The golden-robed youth’s words and actions gave off a very stable and safe feeling. Lin Ming’s pupils narrowed – middle Houtian realm!

The Five Element Region’s six chief disciples all had cultivations at the top of the early Houtian realm. But none of them were truly at the middle Houtian realm. Yet this current youth, though he was not a chief disciple, was actually at the middle Houtian realm!

“That’s Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao, the elder disciple from Golden Bell Mountain!”

“Hey, a heavyweight finally came out. He is the elder brother of Golden Bell Mountain, and has already been famous for a long time!”

This man’s fame was like the shadow of a tree. When Xiao Chi was 17, he had already become known throughout the region. When he was 19 years old, he became the top ranked direct disciple of Golden Bell Mountain. His talent was a bit lacking, thus he wasn’t able to become the chief disciple of Golden Bell Mountain. But no one doubted his strength.

Within the younger generation, Xiao Chi was the same as an elder senior-apprentice brother. It could be said that within all of the non-chief disciples of the Five Element Region’s six sects, Xiao Chi was ranked at the top.

“Haha, Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao also entered the stage. With Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao here, Lin Ming will be nothing but a grasshopper jumping around!”

No matter how many matches Lin Ming won, the Golden Bell Mountain disciples all believed with their hearts that their elder senior-apprentice brother would be able to sweep him away.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao, you can do it!”

As if they were trying to overwhelm the cries from the Divine Phoenix Island disciples, the Golden Bell Mountain disciples began to raucously scream and shout.

On the stage, Xiao Chi had a calm and serene expression. He didn’t respond to the cries from the Five Element Region disciples. Instead, he smiled as he looked at Lin Ming, “In a few more months, I will be 21 years old. This banquet competition will probably be the last event that I participate in with my status as a junior. Originally I had wanted to challenge Mu Dingshan. Even though I’m weaker, I wanted to have a fair and honorable match against him. However, I didn’t think that my last battle would be against you. Not only that, but I’m taking advantage of you in a vulnerable situation. Really, this act is truly without integrity.”

As Xiao Chi spoke, he shook his head, laughing at himself.

According to the customs of the large sects, one would no longer be a junior of the younger generation once they reached 21 years of age. Since Xiao Chi had long been famous, he was a figure that many of his younger juniors looked up to. Naturally, he attached a great importance to his own character and reputation. Yet now, he was forced to battle against Lin Ming. But now that he was in this situation, he would stand up and face it.

“My talent is low, but I am taking advantage of my age to be in a superior position. Below the Five Element Region’s six chief disciples, I am confident that I will not lose to anyone. If you can defeat me, then you have obtained the qualifications to challenge the chief disciples. But… don’t look at the chief disciples’ cultivations. Even though they are inferior to me in cultivation, their strength actually surpasses me by a great deal.

A chief disciple had always been raised to become the next successor of the sect. These fourth-grade sects had pooled all of their resources to train a single chief disciple. Naturally, the strength of other disciples couldn’t compare to them.

“Thank you for the advice. Now, make your move.” Lin Ming had a very good impression of this Xiao Chi character. He truly was strong, and would be a very formidable opponent, especially since Lin Ming wasn’t in his top condition.

Then Lin Ming was surprised as he saw Xiao Chi take out a long spear from his spatial ring. The spear shaft was a deep gold, nine feet long, with another nine inch long spearhead. Lin Ming’s eyes brightened.

Xiao Chi actually used a spear?

As Lin Ming and Xiao Chi stood across each other on the stage, within the Thundercrest section of the banquet, a pale youth was sitting, his hands folded against his chest. He had a hint of a smile on his face, and between his eyebrows was a light ivory mark.

“Limitless, why are you smiling?” Zhou Lie frowned. He didn’t like this mysterious and powerful junior-apprentice brother. Whenever he smiled, Zhou lie could feel that there was a sinister and dark intent behind it.

“Hehe... I just had a sudden idea. I was wondering if I could be like Lin Ming, and challenge all the masters of the South Horizon Region including Divine Phoenix Island. How would that be like?”

“You want to challenge the geniuses of the South Horizon Region?” Zhou Lie didn’t think much of this, but Lei Jingtian was actually surprised. “What for?”

The pale youth traced his chin. He watched Mu Qianyu from afar, darkly saying, “I just remembered a legend about Divine Phoenix Island’s Saintess. It’s quite interesting...”

Chapter 374 – Metal Essence

Chapter 374 – Metal Essence

…

…

…

The pale youth traced his chin. He watched Mu Qianyu from afar, darkly saying, “I just remembered a legend about Divine Phoenix Island’s Saintess. It’s quite interesting…”

“Legend of the Saintess? What legend?” Lei Jingtian seemed to remember something, but he wasn’t sure of himself.

Zhou Lie’s ears pricked up to listen. But what happened next left him speechless. His junior-apprentice brother bluntly said, “I saw some ancient texts that were found within the South Sea about Divine Phoenix Island. The legend was…”

As he spoke to here, the conversation immediately switched to true essence sound transmission.

This caused Zhou Lie to be extremely morose. He had been suffering because of this fellow recently, it was like he was acting against him.

This pale fellow was truly abhorrent.

He didn’t know what was going on. It seemed as if this punk knew many matters about many things. Zhou Lie simply didn’t know where he had read and heard about so many events.

As Zhou Lie was daydreaming, the pale youth finished speaking. Lei Jingtian rubbed his chin, deep in thought.

Then, the pale youth said to Zhou Lie, “Go challenge Lin Ming afterwards. If Mu Dingshan or Mu Xiaoqing come up, I’ll deal with them. It’s enough for you to fight Lin Ming.”

This command made Zhou Lie very uncomfortable.

He really didn’t want to answer him, but apparently this was also the intent of his master, so he could only agree.

At this moment, onstage, Lin Ming looked at the long spear in Xiao Chi’s hand. He had used the Heavy Profound Soft Spear for a long time, so he was able to determine that the spear in Xiao Chi’s hand was nine feet nine inches, the exact same as the Heavy Profound Soft Spear.

This spear was an entirely gold color all over, he had no idea what material the spear shaft was made of. It was like metal, but it was also very flexible. Lin Ming saw Xiao Chi shake his spear, and the spear trembled, creating a large flowery image. This spear’s elastic properties were much better than the Heavy Profound Soft Spear’s.

This was a low-grade earth-step treasure spear. No… perhaps it was even a medium-grade earth-step treasure spear.

Lin Ming was surprised to discover that he wasn’t able to actually determine the grade of this spear.

He suspected that it was a medium-grade earth-step flexible spear. But to forge such a high grade flexible spear from metal was not something an ordinary refining master could do!

Xiao Chi noticed the look in Lin Ming’s eyes, he was very familiar with this look. When a martial artist saw a weapon that they liked, they would often reveal this expression. He smiled as he said, “Lin Ming, are you sure that you want to use that Heavy Profound Soft Spear? I noticed that in every match you’ve had to separate some of your true essence to protect your spear, causing your combat strength to be reduced. If you like, I can lend you a spear."

With Xiao Chi's eyesight, he was naturally able to see what material Lin Ming's spear was made from. It was Heavy Profound Soft Silver. To mortals, this was a rare and priceless material. But in a large sect, it was no different than common iron.

Lin Ming's eyebrows rose, "You have many earth-step treasure spears?"

Xiao Chi smiled. "Correct. My Golden Bell Mountain is the greatest refiner faction within the entire Five Element Region. Within the entire area of several million miles, the best refining masters are all located within my Golden Bell Mountain. Especially spear refining masters – there are countless numbers of them at Golden Bell Mountain, and that is because the main weapon of my Golden Bell Mountain is the spear!

Lin Ming's eyes shined; a sect whose main weapon was the spear!

"Spear, pikes, halberds, lances... the most charming of these is of course the spear. The spear is the king of 100 soldiers! And the best spear refining masters are those Revolving Core masters who are proficient with metal origin energy, and have also comprehended the Concept of Metal. Only then can one create the best possible flexible spear!"

Lin Ming took a deep breath. Concept of Metal! To create a spear using the Concept of Metal, just what kind of approach was this?

Of the Five Element Region's seven great sects, each sect was extremely proficient in their correlated elements, and also had an extremely high comprehension of that element's Concept. The Concept of Metal, in addition to the top metal materials of Golden Bell Mountain, could allow an originally hard metal to turn into soft and flexible steel! Perhaps this level of skill could only be achieved once one understood the Concept of Metal and also comprehended the Laws that governed the structure of metal.

In addition, they were all metal-attribute martial artists. The quality of the spears they forged could be imagined!

‘This world truly has capable geniuses being born every moment. How laughable that I used to think that metal could never be used to create a top quality spear. It seems that I was nothing but a frog in a well. If there was really a Peerless Emperor refining master, even creating a heaven-step flexible treasure spear from metal might not be too difficult.’

As Lin Ming thought this, he radiantly smiled and said, “Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao, we shall be friends over wine, but opponents on the field. Today on this stage I have continuously defeated four opponents! However, this match with you is the one that I am most looking forward to! I’ll be honest with Brother Xiao. Before now, I have never fought against an opponent that used a spear!”

“Haha, I just happen to be the opposite. Ever since I was child, all of the martial artists around me used spears. I only practiced spear play, and only looked at pictures of spears. But even though I’ve done so for 20 years, I still haven’t had enough! Junior-apprentice Brother Lin spoke well. The chance for me to fight you in a fair match is extremely rare. Without accident, I won’t have an opportunity to fight Junior-apprentice Brother Lin again in the future. In this match, I will also put forth everything I have!”

As Xiao Chi spoke, he lifted his right hand, a golden light flashing in his palm. A moment later, that golden light condensed into a golden metallic liquid, as if it were liquid gold.

“Mm?” Lin Ming probed with his sense, and was able to feel an extremely pure and strong metal origin energy coming from that golden liquid.

“Metal Essence! It is the same as a Flame Essence, a spiritual existence of the world. This Metal Essence is bred from within heavenly materials or at least earth-step treasures. After all sorts of rigorous and difficult conditions are met, it will finally be born if it there is a heaven-defying lucky coincidence. If I relied on this Metal Essence, I could use it to create my life’s treasure weapon. Of course, I don’t have this ability, but it is still a possibility…”

Xiao Chi placed the Metal Essence in his palm on the spear shaft. Then, an incredible scene took place. The Metal Essence seemed to be alive as it spread along the spear. A moment later, the entire spear was covered; the Metal Essence had even seeped within! After that, Xiao Chi's spear was officially upgraded to a medium-grade earth-step treasure!

Not only that, but it was a top medium-grade earth-step treasure! Lin Ming was shocked. Metal Essence could actually enhance a treasure by a single grade?

It had to be known that a medium-grade earth-step treasure was able to tempt the heart of Revolving Core powerhouses. As for a high-grade earth-step treasure, that was enough to cause Revolving Core masters to go into a maddened frenzy.

Flame Essence, Metal Essence, Water Essence and so on… along with Wind Souls and Thunder Souls, each and every kind of these spiritual existences that their own unique functions. The strange and magical things of this world could always cause one to fill with a sense of astonishment, novelty, and shock.

If… he could obtain his own Metal Essence and fuse it into the Purple Comet Spear with a special technique, just what would happen then?

Could his Purple Comet spear become a heaven-step treasure?

Thinking this, Lin Ming was at first excited, then he immediately shook his head, ruefully smiling. Heaven-step treasures were mostly weapons that only a Peerless Emperor could qualify to use. If he wanted to have his Purple Comet Spear become a heaven-step treasure, he would most likely need a similar heaven-step Metal Essence. This was no easy matter at all.

However, even if he had a low grade Metal Essence to use, it would still be able to greatly improve the quality of the Purple Comet Spear.

The majority of the Purple Comet Spear's weight was concentrated in the spearhead. The spear shaft itself was too light. Not only that, but the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo also lacked a sense of texture; there were many faults that could be found within this spear.

“Lin Ming, let me ask you again, are you sure you want to use that Heavy Profound Soft Spear? I can lend you a low-grade earth-step treasure spear. Although the quality might be be too great, at least it will still be better than your spear by a great margin.”

Xiao Chi asked again. He had a magnanimous and generous disposition, truly a man worth knowing. He did not take advantage of someone when they were in a helpless situation, and had the aura of a true gentleman.

However, the Five Element Region disciples weren’t feeling too well about Xiao Chi’s actions.

Of course, because it was Xiao Chi, no one dared to loudly oppose him. They could only privately whisper to each other.

“Is there a mistake? He wants to lend this fellow a spear?”

“He’s already running so rampant with such a garbage spear. Just what will happen if he has a better spear? Isn’t Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao just shooting us in the feet?”

“These Divine Phoenix Island bugs obviously have no one capable of forging spears. But what would happen if they learn how to forge spears from Golden Bell Mountain’s spears?”

“Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao is too reckless. How can he give someone like this away?”

Although this Five Element Region disciples spoke in hushed tones, Lin Ming had extremely good hearing, and was able to listen to everything with extreme clarity.

Lin Ming simply didn’t care for this nonsense talk. He cupped his hands across his chest, bowing to Xiao Chi as he said, “Before now, the four opponents that I continuously defeated were either scum or villains. When I first met Brother Xiao, I felt like I was meeting up with an old friend. Good friends drink wine together. Naturally, the best wine and the best wares must be brought out. Only then can a truly hearty time be had. Since we are facing against each other, I will not be stingy in my actions.”

As Lin Ming spoke, he put away the Heavy Profound Soft Spear, and slowly extracted the Purple Comet Spear from his spatial ring.

Xiao Chi was a man who truly understood the spear. Lin Ming would need him to appraise this spear; how to join a Metal Essence to it, and just what type of Metal Essence would be the best.

And another reason that Lin Ming had taken out his Purple Comet Spear was to fight in his top condition, and use this match to increase his own understanding of spear techniques. Until now, his spear skills were limited to the Foundation Spear Technique.

Golden Bell Mountain had thousands of years of accumulated spear techniques. Towards such a heritage, Lin Ming naturally had an extremely vibrant yearning.

The Purple Comet Spear appeared, a purple light radiating outwards.

Within the deep purple spear shaft, one could faintly see nine bamboo nodes. Between the deep purple, there were also countless dense red lines, just like blood vessels that ran through it. This was what was left behind from the Sacred Flame Parasol Tree after it was blended into the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo.

The spearhead was eight inches long with a high ridge and thin edge, and an icy cold emitting from it. It was forged from the fusion of Profound Thunder Stone, crystallized Vermillion Bird flames, and Purple Comet. All of these materials were priceless treasures.

Lin Ming hadn’t infused the spear with true essence, but the entire spear shined with a faint touch of thunder and fire, causing the air around it to slightly tremble. It was like an unrivaled divine weapon had appeared, slaughtering the world.

Seeing this dazzling spear light, Xiao Chi suddenly froze, his heart full of wonder. This spear was actually a top high-grade earth-step treasure!

“The spearhead is made from Purple Comet? But also Purple Comet that was refined?” Xiao Chi found this hard to believe. Purple Comet was a top quality metal that was good enough to create a heaven-step treasure. Besides his Golden Bell Mountain, there were actually others capable of refining Purple Comet?

He didn’t know what material the spear shaft was made from, but looking at the vast inherent power of thunder and fire, it was an inestimable top quality material. Lin Ming just happened to have a dual thunder and fire attribute body; could this treasure spear possibly have been especially forged for his unique body?

Thinking this, Xiao Chi gasped. Just who had forged this spear?

Everyone present naturally had an extraordinary breadth of experience. When Lin Ming took out the Purple Comet Spear, it instantly became the focus of the audience.

This was a top high-grade earth-step treasure spear! It was something that even Revolving Core masters would go crazy with jealousy over!

Chapter 375 – Spear Potential

Chapter 375 – Spear Potential

…

…

…

A Five Element Region disciple was already hypothesizing, “If I’m not wrong, that’s a high-grade earth-step treasure. Not only that, but at the top of its level!”

“How could this weapon be given to a little Pulse Condensation boy to use? This is a weapon that an almighty Revolving Core elder should use. In fact, not every Revolving Core master would be able to have one!”

“The spearhead is made of Purple Comet, but what is the spear shaft made from? Why does it contain such strong thunder and fire origin energy?”

“The spear shaft is Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, and it looks no less than 10,000 years old! Profound Thunder Stone is also fused into the spearhead!” This was said by some Thundercrest Sect disciples. They were very familiar with all sorts of mystical thunder-attribute materials. Naturally, they understood what it was.

“Not only is there Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, but there is also Sacred Flame Parasol Tree within it; it too looks no less than 10,000 years old. It’s divided into threads and integrated into the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo!” The one who spoke was a Sunfire Sect disciple. In terms of their understanding of fire-attribute wood materials, their understanding even went beyond Divine Phoenix Island’s.

“The spearhead also has crystallized Vermilion Bird flame!”

There were many experts present that had a great knowledge of thunder and fire-attribute materials. Also, since Lin Ming knew that he would be exposing this spear in battle soon, he didn’t activate the array formation that Ancestor Chi Yan had left behind to conceal the spear. Thus, after just a short period of time, the audience was able to decipher every material that was used to forge the Purple Comet Spear!

Refined Purple Comet, Profound Thunder Stone, 10,000 year old Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, 10,000 year old Sacred Flame Parasol Tree, crystallized Vermillion Bird Flame Essence. Of these materials, any one of them would be top quality materials. It was rare enough that everyone stood dumbfounded, staring in shock.

With so many precious and rare materials gathered together, in addition to it being forged by a top refining master, the quality of this spear almost caught up to a heaven-step treasure!

With such a treasure in front of them, many Revolving Core masters couldn’t remain calm. In the Golden Bell Mountain banquet area, two elders looked at this spear, an amazing look of acclaim on their faces.

“In the path of refining, there are many roads. My Golden Bell Mountain understands metal refining to an exquisite degree, but we are lacking in those that can refine wood. The method in which this Purple Comet was refined is truly amazing!”

“Yes, the keen sharpness of this spear cannot match with the treasures that my Golden Bell Mountain refines, but in terms of increasing the power of elemental attribute true essence, my Golden Bell Mountain is far inferior.”

The two Golden Bell Mountain elders were extremely modest. Since ancient times, Golden Bell Mountain had always been a very low key sect that stayed out of most affairs. As a sect, they were usually refining various treasures in seclusion. In fact, their chief disciple had the least significant reputation out of all the other chief disciples in the Five Element Region.

As for the Divine Phoenix Island banquet area, most disciples were excitedly talking. They were naturally able to recognize the crystallized Vermillion Bird flame and Sacred Flame Parasol Tree. These were all treasures of Divine Phoenix Island.

Yan Fuhong's face had sunk until water was coming out. The crystallized Vermillion Bird flame and Sacred Flame Parasol Tree were extremely valuable and precious resources even within Divine Phoenix Island. Yet, this was all given to a stranger. How could he not be jealous?

"Damn it all! I had applied for some crystallized Vermillion Bird flame so that I could use it to cultivate the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', and I wasn't able to obtain any. Yet now, this was all given to some boy so that he could use it to forge a spear!"

Yu Fuhong grit his teeth. Because he saw that Lin Ming was too strong, he had already lost all desire to oppose him. But now that he saw the difference in their treatment was so great, the simmering embers of his jealousy blew up, he couldn't even suppress it anymore.

"Good spear! It seems that we can have a hearty fight!" Xiao Chi laughed. He had offered to lend Lin Ming a low-grade earth-step spear, but now he saw that the spear Lin Ming had was no worse than a spear that a Golden Bell Mountain elder would use. It seemed that his worries were unfounded.

"Take my spear, Supreme Energy Becomes One!"

Xiao Chi's kind eyes suddenly became fierce and wild. He suddenly grabbed his spear and thrust forwards. The long spear was like a golden beam of lightning, roaring as it stabbed towards Lin Ming. The surrounding air began to rumble, sending out howling sounds.

This spear seemed solid and unhurried, but in a split-second it had already rushed to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's eyes flashed. This was pure spear play. In a normal situation, if someone sent out such an attack, he would have used the Golden Roc Shattering the Void movement technique to dodge. But now, he didn't want to hide from this move.

Flood Dragon Goes to Sea!

Lin Ming thrust out his spear. This spear contained no power of thunder or fire, and it didn't have any vibrating strength; this was only the most common of spear moves.

He wanted to use this opportunity to sharpen his spear skills. Compared to Xiao Chi's spear skills, Lin Ming's spear skills were beyond clumsy! He had taken the 'Foundation Spear Technique' as the foundation of his spear skills, but this so-called Flood Dragon Goes to Sea was what most mortal armies used for training. It was also the most common foundation spear move that a soldier would learn.

Peng!

As the two spears crossed, in that instant Lin Ming was able to hear the sound of metal screeching in his ears. Xiao Chi's spear contained a very strange energy. As soon as his Purple Comet Spear was touch, it was like an earthquake had struck it apart. Xiao Chi's spear curved along the Purple Comet Spear. It seemed to have intelligence as it climbed the spear shaft of the Purple Comet Spear, like a snake crawling a tree, thrusting towards Lin Ming's throat.

"This spear skill!"

Lin Ming was surprised. His toes pushed the ground; Golden Rock Shattering the Void!

Lin Ming's figure drew back, and he was just able to avoid the danger of this spear. The spear wind had blown against his bodily true essence, and Lin Ming could clearly hear the piercing 'chi chi' sound of his true essence being scratched apart.

'Good spear skill!'

Lin Ming was shocked. If this had only been a contest of spear skills, he would have already lost!

With Golden Bell Mountain's thousands of years of heritage and accumulated spear skills, the popular and common 'Foundation Spear Technique' simply could not compare at all.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao lives up to his fame! Well done!"

The Five Element Region disciples had been too ruthlessly suppressed by Lin Ming. As a single man, he had blocked their path. Out of the dozens of them, none of them had dared to challenge him. The shame and aggrievement that came from such an awkward situation could be imagined.

Thus, as Xiao Chi gained the upper hand in this first move, these disciples began to crazily cheer.

Xiao Chi frowned. He ignored these people, and looked at Lin Ming with a puzzled expression, "What spear skills does Junior-apprentice Brother Lin use?"

"Foundation Spear Technique." Lin Ming casually said.

"What?" Xiao Chi was stunned.

It wasn't only Xiao Chi, but the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island were shocked too. Even the Five Element disciples that were waiting for Lin Ming to be defeated were the same.

Foundation Spear Technique?

In the Five Element Region, there were also similar things such as the Foundation Spear Technique, Foundation Saber Law, and other such manuals. But, cultivation methods at this level didn't even have a formal name. They weren't even able to pass the threshold for basic entry.

What Lin Ming cultivated was actually the Foundation Spear Technique?

"Is this boy messing around?" The first reaction of most people was to not believe this. But, as they thought more about it, they realized that Lin Ming's spear skills truly weren't worth much. Basically they were simple stabs, chops, cuts, waves, and other such basic moves.

The reason that he was able to defeat his opponents wasn't because of his spear moves but because of his thick true essence, the power of his thunder and fire, as well as his terrifying attack power.

"Maybe this boy studies a top grade Foundation Spear Technique!" After some people thought about it, they came to this conclusion.

"A month staff, a year fist, and even longer for the spear. This spear is extremely difficult to practice. It turns out this boy is only a simpleton, he's just acting with this spear."

Some people were immediately happy. They would never give up any chance to belittle Lin Ming. This was their psychological issue. Although they knew that Lin Ming was a ridiculously powerful individual, they still wouldn't admit this. They would only look for more chances to discredit and dismiss him.

"He doesn't know any spear moves, but still uses a spear. That is a top high-grade earth-step treasure spear you know! What a waste of a treasure!"

Xiao Chi remained silent. In fact, in his heart, he also felt that this high-grade earth-step Purple Comet Spear was a bit wasted on Lin Ming. This sort of spear was a weapon that would need a Revolving Core master to display its true strength.

He said, "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you seem to have this idea to fight me with spear play. But if you can only use the Foundation Spear Technique, it's impossible for you to defeat me."

Lin Ming said, "In my match with Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao, if I rely on my thunder and fire true essence to win, this fight no longer has any meaning to me."

Xiao Chi's eyebrows curved up, he was provoked by Lin Ming's competitive spirit. "You want to depend on just your spear skills to compete with me?"

“Unless I’m forced otherwise.” Lin Ming still gave himself a way out. This so-called spear play included spear skills as well as using one’s true essence to display these abilities.

If he didn’t use martial skills, Flow like Silk, thunder and fire true essence, his Thunder Soul and Flame Essence, cutting away all of these abilities, then Lin Ming would hardly have anything left. He would only have the simplest of spear skills, and his combat strength would be greatly reduced. Much less that he wasn’t in the best condition, nor did he know where Xiao Chi’s bottom line was, so he didn’t act tough.

Lin Ming’s words immediately caused a stir in the audience.

“Lin Ming wants to use the Foundation Spear Technique to fight against the accumulated thousands of years of spear play knowledge of Golden Bell Mountain? Lin Ming is mad!”

“It’s just an act. Didn’t you hear him say that he would use it ‘unless forced’? I wonder just how many moves he’ll be able to last until he’s ‘forced’, and then will have to use Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky or something else.” A Five Element Region disciple curled his lips in disdain, obviously not believing Lin Ming’s boastful claims.

Even the Divine Phoenix Island disciples that had always had faith in Lin Ming weren’t sure. Lin Ming was strong, but in terms of spear play, how could he compare with Golden Bell Mountain?

“This Lin Ming, what kind of devilish plan does he have up his sleeve?” A Golden Bell Mountain elder furrowed his eyebrows. He didn’t think that Lin Ming’s spear play would be able to compare with Xiao Chi’s. If Lin Ming had hastily uttered these words without having some chance of winning, and then was forced to use the power of thunder and fire within a move or two, that would truly be laughable.

“If I’m not wrong, then Lin Ming wants to exchange blows with Chi’er to spur his limits and make up for his shortcomings in spear play. The reason that he participated in this banquet competition wasn’t to win, but to hone his strength.” Another Golden Bell Mountain elder slowly said.

A fight was always the best way to hone one's strength. There were many talents keen on learning from their challenges. In his view, Lin Ming was such a person.

"Interesting. The idea is good, but if he's only going to use pure spear play, I wonder just how long he'll be able to last." The Golden Bell Mountain elder began to sound very interested in what was about to happen.

……………..

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, spear skills are difficult to learn and even harder to master. Divine Phoenix Island has no heritage of spear skills. If you blindly practice spear skills on a whim, you will only end up harming yourself." In Xiao Chi's opinion, the reason that Lin Ming hadn't practiced spear skills was because Divine Phoenix Island mostly used swords. Perhaps even when Lin Ming was choosing a weapon, he had gone stupid for a moment and thought that since a spear dance was quite beautiful, he would choose a spear.

"Since you insist, take my spear!" The golden spear in Xiao Chi's hand stabbed out. His momentum suddenly rocketed to the sky. With a slide of his hand, the spear shaft slid out too. His hand slapped the spear shaft, and the entire spear moved like it was intelligent, waving around like a venomous serpent.

This spear in Xiao Chi's seemed to have its own consciousness. It could actively attack the enemy's weaknesses, it was very difficult to dodge.

"How will he defend against his?"

Whether it was a disciple of Divine Phoenix Island or the Five Element Region, they all rubbed their eyes, waiting for Lin Ming to make a move with his spear. If he didn't use thunder and fire true essence, and only used the Foundation Spear Technique moves, defending against this spear would be beyond difficult!

Spear wind howled, spear light dazzled.

Facing this flurry of golden snakes from the spear, Lin Ming’s pupils contracted. The true essence within his body erupted to the limit, and his bones began to emit a popping sound. Behind Lin Ming, an azure True Dragon’s phantom appeared, clawing out. It was condensed to the point of seeming solid and lifelike. If one looked carefully, they could even see the flashing azure dragon scales!

A clarion dragon roar burst forth from Lin Ming’s body. The resonant dragon roar was loud and clear, slamming into the heavens, washing away all the cloud in the sky.

Long spear manifesting dragon!

Lin Ming’s spear skills naturally had no area worthy of notice. It could even be said to be very clumsy and rough. But ever since he had absorbed the blood of the True Dragon, as soon as Lin Ming struck out, the bloodline of the True Dragon within him would animate, bringing forth the potential or rivers and mountains, containing the majestic prestige of a dragon that echoed between the heavens and earth!

This was strength that originated from his bloodline!

Seeing Lin Ming make this spear move, Xiao Chi was stunned. But the spears were too fast, and he couldn’t respond; the two spears collided.

Bang!

It was like an Azure Dragon and golden snake had smashed into each other. A shockwave of azure true essence surged out, turning into hundreds of faint Azure Dragon phantoms, scattering in all directions!

The strange power that was contained with Xiao Chi’s golden spear was actually lost within the vast sea of spear potential.

Xiao Chi rapidly drew back, retreating dozens of feet. As for Lin Ming, he drawn back dozens of steps. In this one move, they had actually achieved parity!

Xiao Chi looked at Lin Ming with incredulous disbelief in his heart, an inexplicable feeling of horror blossoming within him.

It wasn't only Xiao Chi that was stunned, but everyone present was speechless. Lin Ming's 'potential' had actually reached such a level.

The so-called 'spear potential' or 'sword intent' referred to the inherent soul that was contained within a spear or sword. A martial artist that fought with spears or swords would normally only use the shape of the weapon itself to attack. But a true master could integrate the soul of the weapon into their moves.

As the saying went, saber like tiger, spear like dragon. A good spear was similar to a True Dragon. Its soul was also the soul of a dragon.

At Lin Ming's young age, he had already achieved spear like dragon. The inherent dragon prestige within the spear was already thick to the point that it was able to manifest a True Dragon phantom behind him. This was a talent that defied the heavens!

If the advantage in Xiao Chi's spear skills hadn't been so great, that spear might have injured him a moment ago, and result wouldn't have been evenly matched.

Mu Yuhuang breathed a light breath. She recalled the power and majesty of the spear move a moment ago. Behind Lin Ming, the phantom of a True Dragon had appeared. The roar of a dragon had even pierced through the heavens.

Long spear manifesting dragon…?

No, it shouldn't be…

Whether it was the dragon roar or the Azure Dragon phantom, they hadn't been caused by Lin Ming's spear potential.

No, just the opposite. The dragon roar and Azure Dragon phantom were the reason for Lin Ming's spear potential. This was why his spear power was like tsunamis and landslides, a dragon soaring through the nine heavens.

The reason that Mu Yuhuang was so sure was that during that moment when the dragon roar had pierced through the skies, she could clearly feel the Vermillion Bird bloodline within her body shivering, a faint feeling of fear that suppressed her bloodline into submission!

"Yu'er, you said before that Lin Ming might have some strange Flood Dragon bloodline within him?" Mu Yuhuang slowly asked with a true essence sound transmission.

If she wasn't wrong, then this was Lin Ming's lucky opportunity. By relying on 'it', he was also able to absorb the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder...

Chapter 376 – Pale Youth

Chapter 376 – Pale Youth

…

…

…

With a mere Bone Forging stage cultivation, Lin Ming had been able to absorb the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder that only a middle Xiantian master should have been able to. If there wasn't any secret within Lin Ming's body, Mu Yuhuang would never have been able to believe this. But, if Lin Ming's bloodline was used as the explanation, she could reluctantly come to terms with it.

After all, the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder contained the brutal will of a Flood Dragon. If it was to encounter a more formidable and ancient bloodline, this Flood Dragon bloodline would be awed into submission. With Yu'er's help, this could also explain how Lin Ming was able to absorb it.

Mu Qianyu nodded, saying, "This is also the first time disciple has seen the phantom behind Lin Ming. When Senior-apprentice Sister Qinghong returned from the Seven profound Valleys, she described to me what she had seen. It was probably a similar scene… disciple believes that this is an ancient noble bloodline similar to my Divine Phoenix Island's that Lin Ming managed to obtain through some lucky chance."

As for Lin Ming's life and background, they had already been clearly researched by Divine Phoenix Island. The common people of Sky Fortune Kingdom had been mortals for generations, it was impossible for Lin Ming to have this kind of bloodline from his family. Thus, the only other reason was that the heavens had gifted him a lucky miracle.

"Ancient noble bloodline?" Mu Yuhuang hesitated. Perhaps matters weren't so simple. Just what sort of ancient noble bloodline could cause even the Vermillion Bird bloodline within her to shiver in fear?

Could it be a God Beast?

Mu Yuhuang dared not believe this. A God Beast did not exist in the Sky Spill Continent. It was said that above the Sky Spill Continent was the Realm of the Gods. But, even within the Realm of the Gods, a God Beast was an extremely rare existence. Where did Lin Ming find the blood essence of a God Beast to transplant into his bloodline?

Even if he had gotten that far, how could a mere Bone Forging boy have absorbed such a bloodline?

In any case, it was true that Lin Ming had a secret bloodline within him, and that this bloodline had an extraordinary origin.

However, Mu Yuhuang didn't wish to pry into his secrets. In truth, lucky chances were also a part of one's destiny. A great lucky chance came with a correspondingly great destiny. Destiny was the essential truth that an unrivaled talent needed to become a Peerless Emperor. Ever since ancient times, the birth of Peerless Emperors usually resulted from the accumulated destiny of a character that stood at the pinnacle.

If one didn't have such a destiny but still coveted these things, they would instead attract an unexpected catastrophe upon themselves. History had proven this point again and again throughout the annals of time. These so-called unlucky calamitous treasures were often priceless. However, what was strange was that if one obtained it, they would die as if they had been struck by a curse. If one didn't have a great destiny as if they were the protagonist of the world, they would not be able to gather such treasures to them.

In order to birth a genius that would become a Peerless Emperor, perhaps not even Divine Phoenix Island had such a destiny. Much less, Mu Yuhuang was just an old lady with a few hundred years of life left in her. This sort of calamitous treasure was not something she would be able to afford. Even if she managed to peacefully obtain it without accident, with her age, it was basically useless.

What Mu Yuhuang most wanted to see now was only that her Divine Phoenix Island would be able to enter an age of prosperity.

………………

On the martial arts stage, Lin Ming and Xiao Chi fought once more. Both spears clashed. One side was a spear skill genius of Golden Bell Mountain whose every move contained profound principles. But as for the other side, he had a deep comprehension of spear potential. Although his spear skills were simple and lacking, every spear was like a landslide, every spear was like a tsunami, every spear contained the power of endless mountains and rivers. These two were well matched against each other.

Clang clang clang clang clang!

With every strike, a violently raging true essence shockwave erupted, an azure color mixing with a golden color, causing the ground itself to shake. Because of the intense shockwaves in the air, the audience that witnessed this battle scene seemed to be watching it under the twisted ripples of water.

Every spear that Lin Ming thrust out contained an enormous pressure. Even though Xiao Chi's spear contained a strange power, it was actually forcefully dissolved by Lin Ming's strength.

The two youths fought for several dozen moves. Lin Ming had consumed a great deal of true essence, but so had Xiao Chi.

This battle was the longest that Lin Ming had ever fought.

With his strength, he could simply have used the Thunder Soul and won with overwhelming force. But, he did not do this.

He needed this battle to see what degree of skill one's spear play could reach.

Xiao Chi turned, thrusting out his spear. Although this spear skill looked very slow, in just a split-second the spearpoint would instantly arrive in front of you. This sort of strange and confusing spatial skill was nearly impossible to defend against.

Pah!

Even Lin Ming was unable to completely dodge the spear with such a confusing spatial skill. The spearpoint rubbed against Lin Ming's bodily true essence, and with a ripping sound, an incomparably sharp golden spear had pierced through Lin Ming's bodily true essence, taking just a touch of blood.

"Mm?"

Xiao Chi was surprised. What was going on? In that attack, he had felt like his spear had stabbed into iron, it simply hadn't been able to do much damage.

But at the same time, Lin Ming's spear came smashing down like an avalanche!

Xiao Chi quickly lifted his spear to block.

Clang!

As soon as this blow smashed down, the golden spear in Xiao Chi's hand curved into a crescent moon. He staggered back, every step creating a deep imprint in the ground. The tiles of the stage that were supported by an array formation were broken by the pressure of his feet, cracks littering the stage.

After retreated 70 to 80 feet, Xiao Chi finally came to a stop. He felt like his right arm was numb, and even his fingers were shaking.

"What a terrifying strength and spear potential!"

Although he managed to block that last attack, he felt the blood within his body roiling and his meridians in crazy disorder.

In the audience, the Golden Bell Mountain elder gasped. “What a terrifying boy. Chi’er used a special technique to unload the force on his body. Lin Ming’s strength and spear potential that he unleashed poured along Chi’er’s muscles and skeleton, entering the ground through his feet. Even though he had let so much strength pass through him, he was still wounded. The power of this spear potential is simply like having a mountain fall on you.”

“Indeed… this boy is truly a spear genius. But it’s such a pity that he doesn’t have a great master that can teach him spear skills. If all he learns is some Foundation Spear Technique skills, then it is truly wasteful…” Another Golden Bell Mountain elder said with some regret, obviously sad that Lin Ming hadn’t joined his Golden Ball Mountain.

…………

“Haha, what a great fight!” Xiao Chi suddenly put away his spear. His entire forehead was covered with sweat, and his face was flushed red. Blood was surging within his body, and he had obviously consumed a great deal of strength.

“Same here.”

Lin Ming was also panting for breath. After several continuous battles, even with pills to supplement him, he had consumed over 70% of his true essence. Not only that, but within the true essence of his body, there were many complex and strange factors. Lin Ming’s current combat strength was less than half of his optimal condition.

“You’re just a monster. You fought through five straight fierce matches and yet you can still fight to this degree and have energy left over. I admit defeat.” Xiao Chi sighed, lamenting the result. He had been evenly matched with Lin Ming, but it turned out that Lin Ming’s endurance was much greater than his. If they continued, his defeat was simply a matter of time.

“Well fought.” Lin Ming cupped his hands together and bowed. During this match against Xiao Chi, he had learned many things and gained many insights. It seemed that he really needed to look for a spear art manual in order to make up for his deficiencies there.

After Xiao Chi admitted defeat on his own, the entire audience was silent. The strongest direct disciple under the six great chief disciples had actually lost.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao was defeated…”

Even the Five Element Region disciples that were desperately cheering for Xiao Chi were unable to accept this. The truth was, when Lin Ming hadn’t used this power of thunder and fire, yet was still able to fight evenly with Xiao Chi using just his spear play, they had already foreseen the ending that Xiao Chi would lose. It was just that they weren’t willing to accept this truth.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao lost. Above Xiao Chi, there are only the six great direct disciples…”

Although everyone knew that Lin Ming was already spent of all energy, there was no direct disciples that went onstage to challenge him. Lin Ming’s winning streak had left them breathless, and no one had the courage or qualifications to challenge him.

Lin Ming swallowed a pill and propped himself up on the stage using his spear. This time, he did not challenge anyone to battle. He was well aware that if he fought again, it would be against a chief disciple.

Six great chief disciples… it was unknown just how many he could fight.

Lin Ming turned to look at Mu Dingshan and saw that he was preparing. Next would be a contest between chief disciples!

“Dingshan, Xiaoqing, if you fight, try to delay as much as possible so that Lin Ming can have more time to recover.” Mu Dingshan and Mu Xiaoqing simultaneously heard the true essence sound transmission of old lady Yuhuang.

“Yes, Honorable Sect Master.”

……………………

Within the Thundercrest Sect banquet area, the pale youth glanced at Zhou Lie, ordering him to go onstage. “You challenge Lin Ming to draw out Mu Dingshan, I’ll help you take him!”

The pale youth tersely said.

Zhou Lie frowned. He absolutely did not wish to do something so insidious like taking advantage of someone while they were in a vulnerable situation. This was not how a true gentleman acted. With such a large audience present, he couldn’t afford to lose.

“Hehe, what’s the matter? You think you’re taking advantage of someone while they’re down? Alright, we’ll take a break and look for another reason when they lose.”

The pale youth casually spoke, his words carrying an imperious tone that made Zhou Lie feel uneasy.

‘This fellow seems very keen on what he said before, and wants to challenge the direct disciples of Divine Phoenix Island by himself. What does he want from all this?’ Zhou Lie thought, baffled.

At this moment, the pale youth used a true essence sound transmission to communicate with Lei Jingtian. Then, Lei Jingtian stood up and smiled, “High Master Yuhuang, your great island’s Lin Ming is truly a hero that from among the young. However, after he competed against five masters from my Five Element Region, it seems that he has already exhausted himself. How about we have a truce and take a break so that Lin Ming can rest. Afterwards will be the final competition between chief disciples. How about it?”

“Mm? Mu Yuhuang’s willowy eyebrows rose. This fellow, just what did this little weasel want? What was he thinking about? He actually offered to call a momentary truce?

It had to be known that Lin Ming had consumed too much energy. Even if Mu Dingshan and Mu Xiaoqing were able to delay for a few matches so that Lin Ming could rest, he still wouldn't be able to fully recover in this short time.

After Lei Jingtian spoke, he sat down with a cheerful laugh before waiting for Mu Yuhuang's answer.

Zhou Lie was confused, just who was this pale youth? It seemed that his master seemed to care about his opinion a great deal.

'This fellow is shrouded in mystery, he's just like a frosty snake! Master said that he was a Saint rank talent that he found in the northern domains, but I always felt that this explanation was too farfetched. His martial talent is surprisingly good and he also understands many different cultivation methods. His cultivation is only at the early Houtian realm, yet he can easily defeat me! Not only that, but he seems to know some secrets about Sky Spill Continent, such as the legends of the Saintess…'

There was definitely a problem with this man!

Just who was he?

For some time, Zhou Lie even suspected that the pale fellow was possessed by some ancient monster. Of course, this was something that only existed in fantasy novels; he had no idea if things like possession existed.

As Zhou Lie was daydreaming, Lei Jingtian was exchanging a true essence sound transmission with the pale youth. "We'll follow everything as you planned. Events should progress smoothly…"

"Mm, very good!"

Chapter 377 – Demon Region's Saint Son

Chapter 377 – Demon Region's Saint Son

…

…

…

The interim break was decided to be two hours. Onstage, a thick and tall incense was placed as a timer.

Lei Jingtian sat in his chair, his eyes closed in contemplation. Zhou Lie sat beside him, sullenly watching the pale youth, seeing him on the other side of the banquet table, a 100 year old pot of excellent wine in one hand and a jade cup in the other, freely drinking.

"Xiaoling, who do you think that Lei Mubai fellow is?" Zhou Lie had a deep sense of suspicion in his heart that had weighed on him for too long and he couldn't help but ask his little sister.

"Huh? What person?" Zhou Xiaoling looked bewildered as she picked up a spirit fruit and bit into it. "Isn't Senior-apprentice Brother Lei a Saint rank talent that Master found from the northern domains? Hehe, speaking of which, our Five Element Region hasn't had a Saint rank talent for the last few hundred years. This time the six other sects will truly be scared silly. I can't wait to see their stunned expressions, how funny would they be?"

Zhou Lie frowned, thinking something just didn't seem right. Zhou Xiaoling continued to proudly say, "Big Brother, you don't know, but when the banquet started, and that idiot Zhan Yunjian was talking about Lin Ming, he was also sighing about how great Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun were. Hehe, I wanted to smile at that time, but I pressed it down and didn't mention Senior-apprentice Brother Lei. Otherwise if Zhan Yunjian knew that Senior-apprentice Brother Lei was even fiercer than Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun at their age, I wonder what kind of funny expression he would have!”

“How hilarious that that cocky braggart Zhan Yunjian thought he had a good understanding of our Thundercrest Sect’s talents. This time his jaw will definitely drop!” As Zhou Xiaoling spoke, she had an extremely smug expression on her face, her small face flushed as if that great honor was also her own. She stopped eating her spirit fruit, instead vacantly gazing out with a longing expression, “I really want to see Senior-apprentice Brother Lei go out onstage and defeat everyone. That Mu Dingshan, Mu Xiaoqing, and especially that damned loser Lin Ming! I hope that Lin Ming gets beaten up until he can’t walk anymore!”

As Zhou Xiaoling spoke, she became more and more animated as if she couldn’t stop spouting off. But as she spoke, Zhou Lie’s expression was becoming increasingly ugly. He had a very dark foreboding feeling in his heart, as if his doom was arriving. As he saw Zhou Xiaoling’s expression flush red with joy and excitement, that scary premonition was finally fulfilled. He used a true essence sound transmission and sharply asked, “Xiaoling, don’t tell me you like that boy!”

Xiaoling suddenly froze, then immediately blushed. She was just like a small kitten whose tail was stepped on. “Big Brother, stop making stuff up!”

Zhou Lie’s heart shook, this was bad! If his little sister liked that boy, then this would be an absolute tragedy! Even if there wasn’t a problem with Lei Mubai’s status, Zhou Lie knew that this pale and sinister-seeming fellow would never take his sister seriously. At most, she would be some playtoy. But now, he knew that Zhou Xiaoling would never listen to anything he said. Not only that, but the key was that all he had were baseless assumptions, and not even a shred of evidence to back up his suspicious.

‘This fellow!!!!!!!’

…………………………

As half an hour passed, many of the people at the banquets had already left to rest, go to the restroom, chat, laugh, or have small competitions with each other. The entire mountain was bustling with activity.

Lei Mubai sat at the banquet table the entire time, slowly drinking.

"Mu Yuhuang noticed me." Lei Mubai suddenly said using a true essence sound transmission.

Lei Jingtian's eyes were still closed in meditation, as calm as before, "Mu Yuhuang is already at the late Revolve Core realm. Even if you try to conceal your energy, you cannot escape her sense, nor can you hide the thick true essence of your body."

Lei Mubai sneered, "At most she only sees that my cultivation is deep, but she won't be able to see through the ancient Devil Arts that I cultivate. I joined the Thundercrest Sect three years ago when I was 14, and have already been there for a long time. I've also practiced the core cultivation methods of the Thundercrest Sect. Truly, I'm not different to a real disciple. When she discovers that I am a Saint rank talent of the Thundercrest Sect, at most she'll be suspicious, but she won't be able to find any fault with me."

The pale youth was very confident in himself. He practiced a cultivation method that his Master Ancestor had found 300 years ago within a scroll inside some ancient ruins of the South Sea. Even if Mu Yuhuang was a Peerless Emperor, she wouldn't be able to see through his status using this point.

Once that ancient Devil Art was mentioned, Lei Jingtian suddenly moved. He opened his eyes, his voice low, "Your master will not go back on his words, right?"

The pale youth slyly smiled, "Of course not. This war between the South Sea Demon Region and Phoenix Island will be a perpetual war that draws in the entire South Horizon Region; it's not something that will be settled in just a year or two. When the time comes, we will also be relying on the Thundercrest Sect Sovereign's help, so how could my master go back on his promise? Since Master has promised to bestow a scroll of the first layer of the ancient Devil Art to the Thundercrest Sect Sovereign, it will be delivered to your hands a month from now."

Lei Jingtian humphed and icily said, "You better not be playing any tricks. Otherwise, I'll have you regret your words!"

"Haha, of course! Otherwise, if you galvanize the alliance between the Five Element Region and Divine Phoenix Island, my South Sea Demon Region would find this war increasingly difficult. Of course, since you have now ruined the alliance between Divine Phoenix Island and the Five Element Region, that is truly an act worthy of praise. I shall truthfully report this to my master so that Sovereign shall gain merits."

"Then I'll have to trouble the Saint Son. As long as this old man's conditions are met then everything will be fine."

"Rest assured, my South Sea Demon Region is only interested in cooperation with the Five Element Region and isn't interested in conflict. The Five Element Region is several millions of miles away from the South Horizon Region. Even if my South Sea Demon Region becomes a Holy Land in the future, we won't threaten the Five Element Region."

Lei Jingtian showed no expression. Although this South Sea Demon Region's Saint Son was like a cold and calculating serpent, his words about this matter still sounded truthful. Throughout the ages, he hadn't heard of a Holy Land crossing two domains to conquer others. Initially, even Silent Demon Emperor City didn't cause waves within the South Horizon Region.

Lei Jingtian closed his eyes and slowly said, "Once the South Sea Demon Region conquers Divine Phoenix Island, will they be able to become a Holy Land?"

"It will probably be much more difficult. In order to become a Holy Land, we will most likely need to swallow the Dire Space Sect and Supreme Mystery Temple." Lei Mubai said, shaking his head. A normal fifth-grade sect was a far, far distance from becoming a Holy

Land. They would probably need hundreds or even a thousand more years of accumulated power.

“In order to become a Holy Land, plundering more resources is useless. What is most important is developing a Peerless Emperor. I believe that Your Highness the Saint Son will have a promising chance of achieving this!” Lei Jingtian said as he looked at Lei Mubai, a rare compliment coming from him.

“Haha!” Lei Mubai smiled. Even though he knew he was only flattering him, it still caused his mood to become much better. “In the past, I might not have been so confident. But now I have the ancient Devil Tome in my hands, and with my seventh-grade thunder origin energy fusion compatibility, I truly have a chance of succeeding! However, I will also need a great destiny to fall upon me!”

Something like destiny was truly an elusive and enigmatic idea. Within the 100,000,000 miles of the Sky Spill Continent, there were trillions of people. Within so many people, there were also countless geniuses. However, those who were able to claim the title of Peerless Emperor were extremely rare. Besides the old monsters that hid in their own areas and sought a breakthrough, those that were truly known to the world were no more than 10 individuals.

Even these ten individuals were secretive in their movements and locations. Perhaps there were some that had already ascended to higher realms.

This near-zero chance had caused many geniuses to sigh in utter disappointment. Even if they were Saint rank talents, they would most likely stop in the late Revolving Core realm, or even the extreme Revolving Core realm.

Those geniuses that wished to become a Peerless Emperor had to experience a massive lucky opportunity, or even many of them. This was the so-called ‘destiny’ that one needed. In a sense, that Lei Mubai could be born into a fifth-grade sect, be accepted as a disciple of the sect master, and even later cultivate the ancient Devil Tome, could also be considered a kind of destiny.

Every Peerless Emperor would accumulate a vast destiny upon their bodies. As youths, they would be geniuses that encountered major fortuitous events, endless lucky chances, and their strength would leap past all others'. They would shake the world, showing disdain for all other heroes!

When these Peerless Emperors were young, they might meet many formidable opponents. For instance, those peers that were known as invincible powerhouses. Within their domain, they would be called the top junior of their sect. However, when such a person fell under their boot, defeated by another that was at their cultivation – or even someone that had jumped realms in order to defeat them – then that victory would gradually seep into their bones, becoming a faith that implanted itself into their heart, becoming a part of their strength and talent!

Against any odds, they would be unafraid!

This faith, in addition to the destiny that gathered to them, would be enough for a genius to soar into the heavens.

To break into the Revolving Core realm before 30, to reach extreme Revolving Core before 50, and to become a Peerless Emperor before 100 years of age!

However, once one passed this age, it would become too difficult to progress in their cultivation again.

For instance, someone like Mu Yuhuang. That old bag Mu Yuhuang would only be able to increase her own cultivation by a small realm even if she used 100 years of time. To her, this was already a great fortune.

For instance, someone like Lei Jingtian. He had already been stuck at the middle Revolving Core realm for a full 150 years, crazily trying to overcome the mire he was in. Otherwise, how would he have come up with such a dire plan to cooperate with the South Sea Demon Region? This was all so that he could cultivate the ancient Devil Tome.

Lei Jingtian suddenly remembered something. He calmly said, “That boy called Lin Ming might become your opponent in the future. I never imagined that Divine Phoenix Island would actually produce such a good weapon. Aren’t you afraid that he’ll steal your position? How do you plan on dealing with him?”

“Haha, I’ll think about this issue once Divine Phoenix Island is destroyed.” Lei Mubai lightly said. In normal circumstances, when two top sects declared war on each other, they would first destroy the core of their enemy’s strength. These would be the Xiantian and Revolving Core powerhouses. As for the disciples of these sects, they wouldn’t be deliberately aimed at.

A war between large sects would last at most one or two years. No matter how talented one was, it was impossible for a junior to become a Revolving Core master in that time. Thus, they would have no influence on the war.

On the contrary, after the war ended, the disciples of the sect that was destroyed would be under the threat of death. Under this pressure, there were many people that would be willing to betray their sect and join the victor. They would be willing to have a restricting seal placed on them and be used.

This was what a demonic sect would usually do after a war. Because they too would suffer a massive loss of monsters, they would require additional manpower to rebuild their sect.

Lei Mubai glanced at Lin Ming, derision thick in his voice as he said, “Once Divine Phoenix Island is destroyed, if he knows what’s good for them, he’ll be a good little boy and let my South Sea Demon Region place a restriction seal on him. Otherwise, I’ll suck out his blood essence and use it to cultivate my martial arts, and I’ll use his corpse as a zombie protector for myself. That should be making the best use of him.”

As Lei Mubai spoke, the long and thick incense on the stage began to slowly burn to its end…

Chapter 378 – Purple Air Dawns from the East, A Pair Of Dragons Will Struggle

Chapter 378 – Purple Air Dawns from the East, A Pair Of Dragons Will Struggle

…

…

…

The Divine Phoenix Island and Five Element Region disciples had already returned before the two hour break had ended, anxiously waiting to see the unparalleled clash that would follow.

Within the memories of these disciples, this would be the highest level duel that had occurred between the Five Element Region and Divine Phoenix Island since they could remember. This was a rare event that wouldn't even happen once in a decade; naturally, no one wanted to miss it.

"Haha, it's about to start, I can't wait!"

"Lin Ming, Senior-apprentice Brother Dingshan, Senior-apprentice Sister Xiaoqing – the ultimate trifecta! Can the Five Element Region manage to stop them?"

"I'm most looking forward to seeing Senior-apprentice Brother Lin Ming fight. In order to allow Senior-apprentice Brother Lin Ming to recover his top condition, he should be the last one up. I wonder how many chief disciples Lin Ming will manage to overcome."

The Divine Phoenix Island disciples were excitedly discussing. They had a great deal of confidence Lin Ming. Lin Ming had used just his spear to evenly match with Xiao Chi; he absolutely had the strength to fight with a chief disciple.

Therefore, these minor Divine Phoenix Island disciples had taken Lin Ming as their idol, and instead of saying that Lin Ming couldn't win, said that he could in fact defeat several chief disciples.

Of course, the disciples of the Five Element Region would never admit this. They still believed that Lin Ming would suffer a disastrous defeat in his last battle.

The six great chief disciples were the most outstanding disciples of their sect that had passed through multiple selection processes. But in terms of these Five Element Region disciples' mental states and morale, if the most powerful junior of their sect was defeated by someone who was even younger than them, this would be a serious blow to their self-esteem.

The incense finally burnt out. As Mu Yuhuang was about to stand up to speak, she actually gasped in surprise. She turned her head towards the banquet square's entrance, as if she couldn't believe her own eyes. A moment later, she quickly rose up to meet the new arrival.

The audience didn't know what was happening. Then, they saw an old woman with shining silver hair walking into the square, leaning on a walking stick with a smile on her face. She wore a long shawl embroidered with a hundred birds and phoenixes, and a crimson phoenix coronet was placed upon her head. She was very old, looking no different than a mortal woman who was around 70 or 80.

Everyone was petrified. The Divine Phoenix Island disciples were stunned speechless.

"Is… is that… is that the High Ancestor?"

"The High Ancestor has actually come!"

"I've been in the sect for dozens of years, yet this is the first time that I've seen the High Ancestor!"

Divine Phoenix Island's High Ancestor was a woman named Mu Fengxian. Her cultivation was at the extreme Revolving Core realm, and in the past she was the Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island. In her youth, she was also a Saint rank talent.

Of those present, besides a few Revolving Core masters, the rest of them had only seen Mu Fengxian's appearance in portraits.

Over 200 years ago, Mu Fengxian had gone into seclusion within the back mountains of Divine Phoenix Island, no longer caring about human affairs. No one thought that during this banquet competition, Mu Fengxian would actually appear!

It had to be known that Mu Fengxian had seen this rare high level competition scene many times. When she was young, she had also participated in many of these events, and had even been a champion, conquering all the heroic elites, her name shaking the land.

It could be said that these sorts of events were trivial matters to her. She simply didn't need to bother with attending.

Thus when Mu Fengxian had arrived, everyone was incomparably surprised.

"Elder Master, how come you personally came?" Mu Yuhuang asked, puzzled.

"Haha, within the back mountains, I saw purple air rise from the east, a pair of dragons will struggle. Today, a grand event will occur – a True Dragon will be born. Though, I do not know who will win. This old body wants to come out and take a look."

"A True Dragon will be born? A pair of dragons will struggle?" Mu Yuhuang was startled, Mu Fengxian was without a doubt referring to Lin Ming. But, was the other dragon… that strange youth from the Thundercrest Sect?

Mu Yuhuang noticed that Mu Fengxian was really scrutinizing Lei Mubai, and her willowy eyebrows pressed together. The Thundercrest Sect really had a Saint rank talent! No wonder Lei Jingtian was so emboldened earlier. Even in the face of Lin Ming's stunning performance, he maintained the sense that he was in control of all events.

After Mu Fengxian glanced at Lei Mubai, she only smiled as she looked at Lin Ming. After several breaths of time, she then nodded with a satisfied expression. As Mu Yuhuang held her hand, she walked over to the seat of honor and quietly sat down.

Lin Ming gazed at this old woman. Extreme Revolving Core! That was only a step away from becoming a Peerless Emperor. Of course, this single step was no different than a moat; to cross it was beyond difficult.

Within the Thundercrest Sect banquet area, Lei Jingtian saw Mu Fengxian appear and lost a bit of his calm. “This old bag, why would she come out? She shouldn’t have seen any flaws.”

Lei Mubai frowned. “She shouldn’t have. Even though Mu Fengxian is like some old ghost, it should still be impossible for her to recognize my cultivation method. Not only that, but I also cultivate the Thundercrest Sect’s ‘Nine Heavens Profound Thunder Law’ and I control a Thunder Soul. Saying that I am a true Thundercrest Sect disciple is no exaggeration!”

“I hope so.” After thinking about it some more, Lei Jingtian also thought there wouldn’t be anything amiss. Not even the Thundercrest Sect Vice Sovereigns knew of Lei Mubai’s status.

Lei Mubai’s expression was cloudy as he said, “This old bag Mu Fengxian, I wonder how many dozens of years of life she has left. Looking at how old she is, she’s probably no less than 700!”

After a martial artist reached the Revolving Core realm, depending on their state, they could reach 500 years of life to 800 years of life.

A martial artist also aged very slowly. For instance, although Mu Yuhuang was already 400-500 years old, she still had the appearance of a very beautiful middle-aged woman. But, when her life was about to reach its end, she would rapidly age until she became like Mu Fengxian with just several dozen years of life left.

Originally, the South Sea Demon Region was planning on waiting until Mu Fengxian died before they attacked Divine Phoenix Island. But, Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun were growing too quickly. If Mu Fengxian didn’t die and these two sisters still broke through to the

Revolving Core realm, they would have wasted all their time. The gains simply didn't balance out the losses.

So they had no choice but to take action first, taking advantage of the fact that the two sisters hadn't grown yet.

Mu Fengxian put away her walking stick and said, "This old woman just wants to have a look at the fun. You do not need to be so formal, go about as usual."

Although Mu Fengxian had said this, in her presence, the Divine Phoenix Island disciples were extremely careful and respectful. To them, Mu Fengxian was an existence that only existed in ancient texts. Within many of the ancient texts of Divine Phoenix Island, Mu Fengxian's portrait was recorded. But as for Mu Fengxian herself, younger disciples never saw her. Mu Fengxian was just a character of legends, no one dared to be rash in front of her.

However, even though they were careful, with Mu Fengxian's arrival, the grand spectacle of this competition had reached the ultimate height, causing the disciples to shiver with excitement.

With Mu Yuhuang's announcement, the competition could finally begin!

A blue-robe girl moved, appearing like a burst of smoke on the stage. This girl was Mu Xiaoqing.

Although Mu Xiaoqing looked comparatively ordinary, she had a very majestic and elegant temperament that gave off a fresh feeling. "Divine Phoenix Island Blue Luan Faction Chief Disciple Mu Xiaoqing, 19 years old. I challenge all heroic elites of the Five Element Region's six sects. Please advise!"

"It seems Mu Xiaoqing is going onstage first."

Within the Thundercrest Sect banquet area, Lei Mubai faintly smiled. Mu Xiaoqing was weaker than Mu Dingshan, thus the reason that she was sent out first. Without waiting for the other chief disciples to respond, Lei Mubai entered the stage.

As Lei Mubai walked onstage, he aroused the attention of everyone immediately. Even the Sunfire Princess Huo Ruyan who was readying herself to step up was shocked.

“Who is this fellow? Did he just come out of nowhere?”

“Thundercrest Sect? It isn’t the Thunderclap Zhou Lie entering the stage?”

“A new person? I don’t remember seeing such a character within the Thundercrest Sect.”

The Five Element Region disciples began talking amongst themselves. In this level of fight, only a chief disciple should have the qualifications to participate. For someone else to go onstage, that was truly disgraceful.

There were even many Thundercrest disciples that didn’t know who this Lei Mubai was. They only saw this pale fellow walking with the Thunder Sovereign. They believed he was a new disciple and didn’t pay much attention to him, but it seemed that the fellow had the gall to openly step onto the stage.

What was going on?

Mu Xiaoqing frowned, not speaking. No matter who it was, since they came onstage, she would treat them equally and impartially. She took a blue sword in her hand and coldly said, “Make your move!”

“Haha, Senior-apprentice Sister Mu, there’s no need to be so hasty. There are still several words I wish to say.” Lei Mubai smiled. However, as this smiled crossed his face that looked like it had never seen the sun, this smile instead gave off a very spooky and disturbing feeling. Lei Mubai cupped his hands across his chest, saying, “Thundercrest Sect’s Lei Mubai, 17 years old.”

With these words, the audience was startled. 17 years old?

Lei Mubai was very tall, and it was difficult to see how old he was. But, he was actually 17 years old and his cultivation was already at the early Houtian realm. This result was on par with Mu Qianyu!

However, a 17 year old genius that was able to reach the Houtian realm wasn't necessarily a Saint rank talent. Although there were those whose martial cultivation talent defied the heavens, they could still be weak in terms of their true combat strength. Thus, these individuals could not be considered as Saint rank talents.

Mu Qianyu had a seventh-grade fire origin energy fusion compatibility and also had a very pure and rich Vermillion Bird bloodline. In combination with her outstanding cultivation method, she was able to qualify as a Saint rank talent. As for Lei Mubai, it was impossible to determine whether he was strong or weak.

Zhan Yunjian narrowed his eyes as he looked at Lei Mubai. He remembered that as the banquet started, Zhou Xiaoling had been mischievously smiling about something, like there was some wicked secret she was holding in. Now, Zhan Yunjian finally realized what that was all about. 'So that's how it is. What Zhou Xiaoling was thinking about was this man. A Saint rank talent? The Thundercrest Sect actually managed to raise a Saint rank talent?'

Zhan Yunjian's complexion sank. The Thundercrest Sect already had two masters in Zhou Xiaoling and Zhou Lie. If they also had a Saint rank talent…

Lin Ming sat below the stage, deeply gazing at Lei Mubai. From this man's body, he was able to sense thick true essence and a savage aura hidden within. It was as if this person was a monstrous beast that came from the abyss.

'This fellow is not simple at all.'

Lin Ming gave a judgment in his heart. This Lei Mubai gave him an unfathomable feeling.

Onstage, Lei Mubai crossed his hands across his back, no intention of moving from his pose. He waited for the buzz to calm down and then slowly said, "To all the seniors of Divine Phoenix Island, I have two small propositions to make. I wonder if we can discuss it here."

“What propositions?” The one to speak was Mu Yuhuang.

Lei Mubai slightly bowed to Mu Yuhuang, and smiled as he said, “The first proposition I want to make is that I would like to challenge all of the young heroic elites of Divine Phoenix Island!”

With this sentence, all of the Divine Phoenix Island disciples were at first stunned. Then, together, they all exploded into rage.

Chapter 379 – Spit In Your Face

Chapter 379 – Spit In Your Face

…

…

…

Challenge all the heroic elites of Divine Phoenix Island?

Although Lin Ming had done so a moment ago, he had been compelled to do so by the Deep Earth Sect Elder. The Deep Earth Sect's Shi Zhongkun had verbally mocked him, this Lin Ming had to do so, or it would have only weakened his momentum.

However, no one had forced Lei Mubai. Not only that, but Lei Mubai had no reputation, there was simply no one who had an idea of who he was. For a 17 year old to reach the Houtian realm was a very amazing event, but one's cultivation speed didn't necessarily correlate to an equally good combat strength.

To so openly shout a challenge at all of the Divine Phoenix Island disciples was not different than kicking them in the foot; how could these Divine Phoenix Island disciples possibly tolerate this.

"This boy wants to die!"

"Who the hell does he think he is!?"

"He wants to challenge all the heroic elites of my Divine Phoenix Island? F*ck, who does he think he is, does he think he's Junior-apprentice Brother Lin? Even Junior-apprentice Brother Lin challenged the direct disciples and hadn't fought the chief disciples. This fellow is too arrogant! Junior-brother Apprentice Lin should just come up and finish him in a flash!"

The Divine Phoenix Island disciples were scolding this Lei Mubai while they cussed. Even the Five Element Region disciples didn't believe that Lei Mubai would be able to do so. Even if his cultivation was high, that didn't mean he would have a combat strength that defied the heavens. Even if his strength reached that of a Saint rank talent, he wouldn't necessarily win. Divine Phoenix Island had more than 10 Houtian juniors. Not to mention anyone else, but just Mu Dingshan, Mu Xiaoqing, and Lin Ming, these three people were able to have Lei Mubai eat dirt.

"Seniors, please be patient, I haven't finished speaking yet." As Lei Mubai stood onstage, he smiled with complete confidence. There was a calming true essence fluctuation that was hidden between his words. In a flash, all of the disciples that were lower than the Houtian realm were affected, and the commotion began to die down.

Lin Ming was a bit stunned "Directly impacting soul force?"

Although these disciples that were affected were the lower grade disciples, the effect was over an extremely wide range. To be able to affect so many disciples at the same time was a truly remarkable feat.

It's just… this sort of soul force fluctuation gave Lin Ming a sense of déjà vu, as if he had sensed it before. But as he thought about it, he couldn't remember just where he had felt it.

Did he sense incorrectly?

Lin Ming carefully thought for a moment, but ultimately wasn't able to come up with anything. He could only attribute this to being a coincidence or an error of his own. After all, sometimes there would be similar soul force fluctuations between two people that had no relation. It was just like two strangers that had similar looks.

Onstage, Lei Mubai continued to say, “I did such, not because I have any evil intentions, but only for one thing, and that is to prove my strength and talent. With this, I would like to propose a marriage to Divine Phoenix Island!”

Propose marriage?

After Lei Mubai spoke, everyone present was frozen.

Lin Ming was also shocked speechless, what was this fellow trying to accomplish?

“Yes, this is my second proposition. My Thundercrest Sect would like to propose marriage to Divine Phoenix Island, and hope that we can forge an alliance to jointly resist the demonic sect together.”

Propose marriage to Divine Phoenix Island, forge an alliance, and resist the demonic sect together!

Such important words could only be spoken by the top figures of the Thundercrest Sect – no one else had the qualifications to do so. Mu Yuhuang frowned, turning to look at Lei Jingtian.

Lei Jingtian laughed and then stood up. He said, “High Master Yuhuang, Mubai is the Limitless Envoy of my Thundercrest Sect and carries the Purple Thunder Command. The words that he says can also represent my Thundercrest Sect.”

“Limitless Envoy?” Mu Yuhuang’s eyebrows arched up. Within the Thundercrest Sect, the one that held the title of ‘Limitless’ was one that was a Saint rank talent. The Limitless Envoy was also equal to the Divine Phoenix Island’s Saintess, and would be able to inherit the position of Sovereign. As for the Purple Thunder Command, that was a symbol of great authority. With it, one could appoint or dismiss outer court Elders, or command inner court Elders. If Lei Jingtian’s words were true, then Lei Mubai was already a top power figure within the Thundercrest Sect.

If such a powerful figure wanted to propose marriage, and also wanted to prove their strength and talent through battle, the object of this marriage was obvious.

“Who do you want to marry?” Mu Yuhuang asked, straight to the point. Her two eyes flashed with an icy coldness, aggressively staring at Lei Mubai. If someone with a weak will met these eyes, they would feel weak at heart and wouldn’t dare to look back.

However, Lei Mubai seemed extremely confident. “I hope that High Master Yuhuang can marry Her Highness Qianyu to me. If so, the Thundercrest Sect is willing to assist Divine Phoenix Island in any way to resist the South Sea Demon Region.

As Lei Mubai spoke, Mu Qianyu was petrified; he actually wanted to marry her?

But as for the Divine Phoenix Island disciples, they were like a pot of sizzling oil that was poured into a vat of cold water; they instantly exploded into an apoplectic rage.

Especially the male disciples, their hearts erupted with rage. Mu Qianyu was the Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island. In the minds of these disciples, she was no different than a goddess. Wanting to marry Mu Qianyu as a wife? This was an unthinkable act. Because in the eyes of these male disciples, Mu Qianyu was a sacred and inviolable existence.

Now some fellow had actually come from the Thundercrest Sect, and dared to blatantly profane the goddess of their hearts?

This was beyond tolerable. If this wasn’t in public, all of these righteously indignant male disciples would have already all rushed towards this Lei Mubai and torn him limb from limb.

“You’re just a toad that wants to eat swan meat! Marry Her Highness the Saintess? Why don’t you take a good look at yourself first!? What qualifications do you have?!”

“He’s just a stupid idiot. He must have gone crazy when he cultivated his thunder skills and fried his brain, turning into a retard!”

“Stupid child, you haven’t even grown all your hair. Stop talking like this is a dream. Get out of my sight and f*ck off home!”

Compared to the stormy furor of these Divine Phoenix Island disciples, Lin Ming’s response was much more calm.

Marry Mu Qianyu? This sort of marriage proposition had to have some sort of nefarious scheme behind it. Either it was a combination of interests or other reasons. In short, it was impossible that Lei Mubai wished to marry because of love or desire for beauty, and then decided to take Mu Qianyu’s marriage as the price for cooperation between the Thundercrest Sect and Divine Phoenix Island.

Lin Ming subconsciously clenched his fists, his knuckles cracking. Although he didn’t know the exact reason why Lei Mubai proposed this, all he knew was that he wanted to go onstage and flatten that smile on Lei Mubai’s stupid face.

Against the verbal abuse of the Divine Phoenix Island disciples that was like a rolling tide, Lei Mubai still smiled all the same. In truth, what he wanted the most was to take both Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun into his harem. Not to mention, how great would the feeling be to be able to enjoy twin sisters as his wives? That was simply utter bliss. And, what was most important was that Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun both had the bloodline of a Saint Beast. Whether it was the Vermillion Bird bloodline or the Blue Luan bloodline, both would be a great benefit to his cultivation. Not only that, but he could also study the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ and the ‘Blue Luan Abstract Phantom Code’. That would be a great cause for rejoicing.

If he could obtain everything, then that would not just be a lucky chance, but simply a massive destiny that fell into his hands!

As for the Thundercrest Sect assisting Divine Phoenix Island, he would definitely be able to circumvent that.

First, he would begin a bumbling attack against the South Sea Demon Region and kill a few people to assuage Divine Phoenix Island. Then, once he managed to obtain Mu Qianyu's virginity, he would have the Thundercrest Sect make a sudden betrayal. When that time came, perhaps Divine Phoenix Island's war with the South Sea Demon Region would be finished much earlier than expected.

The only regretful matter would be that he wouldn't be able to obtain Mu Bingyun. When Divine Phoenix Island broke under his hands, Mu Bingyun would probably prefer death. What a pity that her bloodline would perish along with her pretty body…

As Lei Mubai thought of this regretful future, he smiled and glanced at Mu Bingyun, covering up the greedy desires that sprung up within his heart.

"You want to marry Qianyu?" Mu Yuhuang smiled as she looked at Lei Mubai.

"Yes, I ask High Master for help…"

"Dream on!!!" Lei Mubai hadn't yet finished, when he was violently interrupted by a thunderous roar from Mu Yuhuang.

Lei Mubai's smile stiffened. In his opinion, the conditions he had placed out were already very good. Divine Phoenix Island was current in a very precarious position – one could even say that they were facing the threat of extinction. To take the marriage of a Saintess in exchange for the support of a fourth-grade sect seemed like a completely reasonable matter.

Moreover, it was marriage, and not like she was selling her body. With his status, looks, and strength, he was completely worthy of Mu Qianyu. Marrying her wouldn't be dishonoring her in any way.

"Why does Master Ancestor Yuhuang say this?"

Mu Yuhuang sneered, her expression vicious as she said, "This old woman is disinclined to argue with such a disgusting lecherous womanizer like yourself. If you want to challenge all the juniors of my Divine Phoenix Island, then you may. But if you wish to marry Qianyu, then dream on!”

Lei Mubai’s pale complexion was very ugly. In this situation, he was actually berated as a ‘disgusting lecherous womanizer’, this was truly embarrassing. He only reluctantly managed to keep the smile on his face, suppressing the simmering anger in his heart. He turned to glance at Mu Fengxian. After all, this old bag was still the supreme authority of Divine Phoenix Island.

But as he glanced at her, he saw that Mu Fengxian’s eyes were half closed, a smile playing across her lips like she was dreamily asleep.

Lei Mubai’s pale face completely sunk, “High Master Yuhuang, please be careful of the manner in which you speak. If you do not wish to offend others, you shouldn’t make such indiscreet and irresponsible remarks in public. Otherwise, you might regret it if you affect the alliance between the Five Element Region and Divine Phoenix Island.”

“…You might regret it if you affect the alliance between the Five Element Region and Divine Phoenix Island? Are you threatening this old woman? Hehehe! Hahaha!” Mu Yuhuang suddenly pounded the table with her fist. With a crumbling sound, the banquet table that she slapped completely turned into powder! Even the jade bowls and dishes shattered into tiny pieces!

“Little ignorant boy, do you believe that this old woman won’t slap you to death with a single hand? You think that the alliance between the Five Element Region and my Divine Phoenix Island can really be so easily promised by a junior like yourself? What a joke! If Lei Jingtian really had this intention, he wouldn’t have created so many stupid obstacles in my way, trying to block me at every turn! Do you think that this old woman is gullible like a snotty three year old child? You had no intention of forming this alliance to begin with, so this old woman has no interest in asking you for anything. You really think that my Divine Phoenix island is destined to perish just because I won’t have help from your sect!?!?”

“If you wish to challenge the heroic elites of my Divine Phoenix Island, then go ahead and fight as much as you want, but don’t blather so much foolish nonsense in front of me! Xiaoqing, make your move!”

Mu Yuhuang’s rapid series of retorts that barraged Lei Mubai caused his face to turn ashen. Even Lei Jingtian was shocked, He hadn’t though Mu Yuhuang would have such a staunch and violent reaction.

Lei Jingtian coldly snorted and said, “Mu Yuhuang, I gave you three points of respect and yet you ignore all decorum and bully the weak!”

Mu Yuhuang sneered. “So what? I will bully you and what can you do about it!? For several days you’ve blustered with your stupid swagger in front of this old woman, repeatedly ridiculing in your snide tone and even destroying the alliance that this old woman proposed. To friends and guests, this old woman is polite, but to such a cheap little b*tch like you, this old woman only wants to spit in your face!!!”

After Mu Yuhuang spoke, there was complete silence, even the drop of a pin could be heard throughout the entire banquet square. Every Divine Phoenix Island disciple had been stunned silly. This was Lei Jingtian, the Sovereign of the Thundercrest Sect! With just a stamp of his feet, he could cause waves to rise within the Five Element Region. Yet during such a formal event, Mu Yuhuang had derided him and called him a cheap little b*tch!

“You… you……!” Lei Jingtian trembled with rage. “Well said, Mu Yuhuang! This old man…” Lei Jingtian had also wanted to spit out several ruthless words. But, after he noticed Mu Fengxian who was sitting near Mu Yuhuang, he stopped himself, the words dying in his throat, swallowing his saliva and panting like he was short of breath.

Lei Mubai’s face had fallen to the point that it was almost dripping water. “Since High Master Yuhuang has spoken, let it be so. Then, I still ask for advice from all the young heroic elites of Divine Phoenix Island. Since High Master seems so self-assured, I would like to ask: if I can defeat all of Divine Phoenix Island’s disciples by myself, what then?”

Chapter 380 – Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder

Chapter 380 – Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder

…

…

…

Lei Mubai’s face had fallen to the point that it was almost dripping water. “Since High Master Yuhuang has spoken, let it be so. Then, I still ask for advice from all the young heroic elites of Divine Phoenix Island. Since High Master seems so self-assured, I would like to ask: if I can defeat all of Divine Phoenix Island’s disciples by myself, what then?”

Lei Mubai’s words were obviously daring her to act. He calculated that Mu Yuhuang had a very tough and unbending personality that wouldn’t accept defeat, so he could only provoke her like this.

“You want to incite me so that I’ll somehow take the matter of Qianyu’s wedding as a gambling stake with you?”

Lei Mubai calmly stared at Mu Yuhuang, this idea clearly in his heart.

Mu Yuhuang bleakly laughed twice. Suddenly, her willowy eyebrows shot up, and the aura of her entire body erupted forth. In the blink of an eye, a visible crimson ring of fire burst forth from around her; this was the terrifying power of fire condensed from fire origin energy.

Huu!

That ring of fire instantly spread throughout the entire banquet audience. It caused no damage, and not even a single dish was broken in half, but everyone present felt a terrifying pressure like a mountain top was crushing down on them. Especially Lei Mubai, who bore the brunt of this ferocious aura; he felt like his organs had been struck by a sledgehammer and was forced several steps back, his feet hitting the floor with a 'deng deng deng' sound.

Mu Yuhuang's voice was chilling, "Give up on this idea in your heart. This old woman has never feared anyone in making a gambling bet. But this old woman will also not take Qianyu's marriage as a gambling stake. If you wish to bet on anything else, this old woman will accompany you!"

As Mu Yuhuang spoke, Mu Qianyu had slowly moved behind her, looking at Mu Yuhuang's hair that had long turned silver, and pursed her lips. Mu Qianyu didn't say anything. She was aware that Mu Yuhuang had never married in her entire life, and also never had children before. She knew that Mu Yuhuang had viewed her as her own flesh and blood daughter.

The scene was tense, as if it could blow up at any moment.

Lei Mubai took deep breaths, slowly suppressing the roiling true essence within his body that was aggravated by Mu Yuhuang's terrifying aura. "I'm not interesting in betting anything else. Since High Mastert is not interested, then that too is fine. With my status as the Thundercrest Sect's Limitless Envoy, I challenge all the heroic elites of Divine Phoenix Island!"

Lei Mubai's words were filled with arrogance and contempt. As the Saint Son of the South Sea Demon Region, and also the top talent of a fifth-grade sect, he naturally looked down on the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island.

'I had wanted to use this method of marriage to take Mu Qianyu's virginity and then use this chance to have the Thundercrest Sect betray Divine Phoenix Island. But I have no idea what sort of drugs this old bag Mu Yuhuang took that she immediately labeled me as a lecherous womanizer, and didn't even consider the matter before rejecting me. Does she want Mu Qianyu to end up like her and never marry in her lifetime?'

'Could this old woman have found something wrong with my body?' Lei Mubai thought of this and his heart tightened on the spot. However, he immediately shook his head. 'No, that's impossible. With her personality, if she really did recognize me, then she would probably capture me right here. Not just that, but there is no flaw with my body. Could it have just been her intuition that told her I had another scheme in mind and thus flatly refused me?'

Lei Mubai grit his teeth, wishing in his heart that he could tear Mu Yuhuang to pieces. 'Since I can't take Mu Qianyu's virginity, I'll ruin all the chief disciples of Divine Phoenix Island. Since I have determined to become a Peerless Emperor, I must step over the corpses of a massive number of geniuses to arrive at that peak. I will shatter their confidence and engrave this experience in my heart! Mu Yuhuang, since you dare to act like this to me, I will break the spirit of your disciples so that they'll find it difficult to ever step into the Revolving Core realm! This is the revenge that I will take for your insults against me today!'

Thinking this, Lei Mubai looked at Mu Xiaoqing, the corners of his mouth curving up in a nefarious grin. First, he would start with this girl! What a pity that the Blue Luan bloodline within her body was too thin, otherwise having a taste of her would be very delicious.

Mu Xiaoqing frowned. She felt that this Lei Mubai in front of her was no different than a cold and dangerous snake, his eyes filled with aggressiveness.

She flourished her longsword, coldly saying, "Take out your weapon!"

"Weapon?" Lei Mubai crossed his arms behind his back, speaking with utter disdain, "To deal with the likes of you, I don't need my weapon. If you can last against five of my moves, I'll consider this your win!"

"What!?"

Mu Xiaoqing's slender eyebrows shot up, anger pulsing in her heart.

It wasn't just Mu Xiaoqing, but all the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island were angry. This Lei Mubai was simply too arrogant! These words were all said to humiliate the other party! Normally when other martial artists fought, even if one knew their opponent was far inferior, they would still respect their opponent. But, these words were obviously all said to shame the other party and attack their confidence.

"You are too detestable!"

Mu Xiaoqing clenched her teeth, when had she ever been humiliated like this before?

Lin Ming shook his head. Since Lei Mubai had already spoken such words, this battle would continue, and not only that, but continue in the most violent and desperate manner possible. There was no point in trying to persuade Mu Xiaoqing otherwise. If she was humiliated by her opponent like this and chose to retreat, swallowing this fateful shame, the result would even be worse than suffering a crushing defeat.

"Xiaoqing, Lei Mubai is a Saint rank talent. If you do not have the ability to cope with him, admit defeat now." Mu Yuhuang feared that Mu Xiaoqing would be provoked into doing something completely irrational, so she cautioned her with a true essence sound transmission.

"Saint rank talent?" Mu Xiaoqing gasped. The truth was that she had already expected this. If Lei Mubai had dared to speak ruthless words, how could he not be confident in his strength?

But deep down, she had an unyielding disposition that had no intention of conceding.

'So what if you're a Saint rank talent? Even if I'm weaker than you, I will still force you to use your weapon. At least, even if I lose, I won't let you defeat me within five moves!'

Mu Xiaoqing stimulated the true essence in her body to the extreme, revolving the 'Blue Luan Abstract Phantom Code'. Although she was angry, she still maintained her calm reasoning, not losing her heart. If she violently attacked him, she would just be defeated faster.

"Hehe, you're quite smart. But still useless."

Lei Mubai gathered his hands together, and red arcs of lightning flashed in his hands like a beautiful living spirit. A faint crackling sound lingered in the air. These red arcs of lightning faintly exuded the aura of blood.

"Red lightning?"

This was the first time that Lin Ming had seen lightning of this color.

As the red light began to radiate more brightly, becoming increasingly dazzling, the thunder in Lei Mubai's hands seemed to become a floating blob of blood.

"Thunder Soul! It's actually an earth-step Thunder Soul!" A Thundercrest Sect disciple shouted out, stunned.

Even Zhou Lie was stunned. He had a Thunder Soul in his body, but that was a high-grade human-step Thunder Soul. Even so, his Thundercrest Sect had paid a great price in order to assist him in completing its absorption.

Mu Qianyu let out a light breath; this was actually the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder. In the legends, it spoke of many ancient battlefields on which countless powerhouses fell from the sky, creating a dark and ominous land. These battlefields also happened to be places where there was intense thunder. After tens of thousands of years passed, a Thunder Soul would be born from absorbing the blood essence of the countless powerhouses, thus becoming this Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder!

The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder could swallow an enemy's blood essence and use it for oneself. This was an extremely evil and diabolical kind of thunder.

Not only that, but it was a low-grade earth-step Thunder Soul. It was on par with Lin Ming's Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder!

Such a grade was not something that a non-middle Xiantian realm master would be able to absorb.

Even if a large sect used all sorts of supplementary materials and provided all sorts of facilities and assistance, paying a massive price, at most they would be able to assist an early Xiantian master in absorbing this!

But now, it was actually absorbed by this Lei Mubai. Of course, this didn’t mean that Lei Mubai had strength equal to an early Xiantian master, but it meant that in the aspect of thunder talent, it was possible that he was a peerless monstrous genius!

Naturally, this was far worse than Lin Ming, who had absorbed the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder with a cultivation at the peak of Bone Forging; Lei Mubai had absorbed this Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder at the early Houtian realm. This fact was enough to cause the shock in Mu Qianyu’s heart to subside some.

Mu Yuhuang’s voice was heavy, “This Lei Mubai already has the talent to become a Peerless Emperor. As long as he can gather destiny around him, he will become a Peerless Emperor a hundred years from now!”

In order to become a Peerless Emperor, talent and destiny were indispensable. Mu Yuhuang had believed that Lin Ming had a great hope to become a Peerless Emperor, and that was because she saw a great destiny upon his body.

As for this Lei Mubai, he had a sufficient heaven-defying talent, all he lacked was a great enough destiny!

“Honorable Master, if that truly is the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder, then Xiaoqing will be in danger. If something goes wrong, there will be invisible injuries left within her, affecting her future cultivation.

The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder could swallow a martial artist’s blood essence. But once once lost blood essence, it was very difficult to recover from this loss. With just a bit gone, it would affect one’s future achievements.

Mu Yuhuang's eyebrows twitched. Against the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder, it was naturally a dangerous situation. But if Mu Xiaoqing retreated without a fight, this would also create an evil spirit within Mu Xiaoqing's heart; it would be extremely difficult for her to ever overcome this hurdle. Not just that, but Lei Mubai was younger than Mu Xiaoqing, and his cultivation was only at the early Houtian realm, whereas Mu Xiaoqing was at the peak of the early Houtian realm.

Mu Xiaoqing surpassed him in age and cultivation. If she was humiliated and didn't fight back, this sort of disgrace would become a fatal blow to a martial artist's hearts of martial arts.

In the square, Lei Mubai's Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder had twined around his entire body. It was just like a venomous serpent that was wound around a man.

"Take my first move, Blood Thunder Claw!" Lei Mubai suddenly stepped forwards, the red light around his hand condensing into a giant claw!

The red light in his hands rushed out, expanding into a massive bloody claw that grasped at Mu Xiaoqing.

The bloody claw wasn't even close, but Mu Xiaoqing felt the blood essence within her body experience a traction force, causing turbulence within her true essence.

In this situation, Lei Mubai didn't dare to flagrantly swallow Mu Xiaoqing's blood essence. With that old lady Yuhuang behind her shielding her, he had to let this go. Still, he could severely injure her.

The claw flew out, bringing the rolling sound of thunder with it. Mu Xiaoqing bit her lips, and a deep and vibrant blue light burst forth from the blue sword in her hands. The phantom of an ice lotus appeared behind Mu Xiaoqing, the ice lotus flower beginning to blossom.

"Blue Lotus Sword!"

The spinning blue lotus flower collided with Lei Mubai's crimson bloody claw, and a brilliant light flashed out, extremely gorgeous. Countless blue ice crystals were like flowers scattered in the air by celestial beauties all around, with red arcs of lightning savagely flying throughout.

True essence surged, blood vitality tumbled. A terrifying cold air flew out in all directions, and a layer of ice instantly covered the ground. However, these ice crystals were all coated with a strange blood red, as if they were exquisite red crystals.

In the moment that the true essence shockwave passed over Lin Ming, his heart shook.

'Mm? It's this feeling again!'

Lin Ming felt a very familiar soul fluctuation within this true essence shockwave. At the time when Lei Mubai went onstage, he also felt this once. He thought he had sensed wrongly, but now he had felt it once more.

What was causing this?

Lin Ming was anxious, his heart doubtful.

Chapter 381 – Netherworld Emperor's Descendant

Chapter 381 – Netherworld Emperor's Descendant

…

…

…

In the brief time that Lin Ming was lost in thought, Mu Xiaoqing's ice lotus had already been crushed by Lei Mubai's blood claw!

After the blood claw tore apart the icy blue lotus, it continued on, striking at Mu Xiaoqing. Mu Xiaoqing flew backwards, her blue sword shining with a keen cold light as she thrust it out.

Ding ding ding!

There was the sound of metal colliding. Mu Xiaoqing let out countless sword lights that pierced the blood claw, sparking a cloud of bloody flog.

Bang!

The blood claw finally exploded, the blood mixing with the crimson lightning to splash onto Mu Xiaoqing. Mu Xiaoqing's clothes and body were completely stained red with blood.

Her face paled. She took several heavy steps backwards, each step creating a bloody footprint on the stage.

Lin Ming could clearly see that the truth was, this blood was generated from the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder's blood essence that it had absorbed after it was stimulated with true essence. This was real blood!

This Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder truly seemed like an evil weapon.

Mu Xiaoqing looked at the bloodstains on the ground and then at Lei Mubai's grinning face. A sense of deep humiliation surged within her heart. She knew that she had already lost, Lei Mubai was simply playing with her. In that single strike from a moment ago, if Lei Mubai hadn't stood idly by afterwards, there was nothing she could have done to defend against it!

It wasn't just Mu Xiaoqing who realized this, many of the Five Element Region disciples also saw what was happening. Many of them begin to feel pity towards Mu Xiaoqing.

Anger, shame, and unwillingness swelled up within Mu Xiaoqing's heart. She knew that she was inferior to Lei Mubai, but in this situation, how could she possibly allow herself to admit defeat?

She clenched her teeth, sending a true essence sound transmission, "You and I have no past hatred or injustice against each other, so why are you demeaning me like this?"

"Haha, if you want to blame anyone then blame your master. She suppressed me, frustrating my spirit, so naturally I must retaliate against her. I don't have to the ability to directly oppose her, but within the rules of this banquet I can still ruin you. Having her feel sick and nauseous also isn't a bad idea. Since this is all done within the proper rules, all she can do is swallow her insults. As for you, just consider it a stroke of bad luck!"

"So that's the reason." Mu Xiaoqing dismally smiled.

"Not just that. Since I've resolved myself to become a Peerless Emperor, in order to walk that road I must step over the corpses of a massive number of geniuses, and etch onto my bones the belief that I am at the apex of existence. As chief disciples of a top fourth-grade sect, you reluctantly qualify to be a body that paves the road for me. After I become a Peerless Emperor in the future, you can also consider this an honor.”

These words caused Mu Xiaoqing to be thoroughly incensed. “Die!”

Mu Xiaoqing attacked, her figure rapidly rushing forwards. With every step she took, ice lotuses bloomed on the ground. She slashed out her sword, and a strong wind howled, carrying a terrifyingly freezing ice energy.

“Hey! Anything you do is useless!” Lei Mubai disdainfully smiled. His eyes filled with pity as he looked at Mu Xiaoqing. Then, he spread out his arms, and a deep crimson light erupted outwards. “Blood Prison!”

Hoo!

A massive amount of blood essence gushed out like a tide. All the space within dozens of feet around Lei Mubai seemed to thicken as if it were overflowing with sticky blood.

As Mu Xiaoqing rushed in, she felt as if there was a pressure bearing down on her chest. She found it difficult to breathe.

Lei Mubai cruelly smiled as he thrust a palm towards Mu Xiaoqing.

In the moment that the Blood Prison erupted forth, Lin Ming suddenly remembered something.

When Lin Ming had first swallowed the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal to break into the Tempering Marrow boundary, he had seen a true illusion. This was the evil will that the Netherworld Great Emperor had left within the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal.

And the feeling that the Netherworld Great Emperor’s soul had given him was somewhat similar to Lei Mubai’s soul fluctuations!

Could it be…

Lin Ming was alarmed. After he had swallowed the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, he had borne witness to the endless war that followed. It had left a very deep impression within Lin Ming's mind.

The Netherworld Great Emperor was similar to an ancient demon god. He held a large bloody red axe in his hand, the shaft over ten feet long and as thick as an arm. The axe blade was three feet wide, and with a single cut it was able to slice a devil in half! Every time he killed a devil, the Netherworld Great Emperor would drink its blood!

Until now, Lin Ming wasn't able to understand what the devils that the Netherworld Great Emperor killed were. These devils were naked, their skin a dark blue and gray metallic color, their entire bodies threaded with thick and angry muscles. Their entire bodies were clasped with large hoops, and there were even those that were wrapped in chains. They had devilish, exaggerated features and were incomparably ugly beings. They weren't human at all.

As for the Netherworld Great Emperor, he was actually over 10 feet tall. His hair was a deep red, his skin a pale blue, and pupils a dark gold.

Although he had the face of a human, his height, skin, eyes… could there really be humans that grew up into that sort of appearance?

Lin Ming could never be sure if the Netherworld Great Emperor was human or not. Or perhaps, was this appearance the result of deeply cultivating the devil arts?

At the time, this scene had etched itself onto Lin Ming's heart.

The Netherworld Great Emperor's great axe pointed to the heavens, his feet stepped upon the earth. Within the universe, he alone ruled all! This overwhelmingly lordly spirit had caused Lin Ming's heart to race.

And now, Lin Ming had truly felt the same kind of energy coming from Lei Mubai's body.

This was demon energy… although it was very faint, there was no way he was wrong!

Was he… the descendant of the Netherworld Great Emperor?

This thought suddenly appeared in Lin Ming’s heart, leaving him absentminded for a moment.

If he was the descendant of the Netherworld Great Emperor, then what sort of concept would that be?

Was he… someone from the South Sea Demon Region!?!?

As Lin Ming thought of this possibility, all sorts of scenarios flashed in his mind. From Lei Jingtian’s destruction of the proposed alliance, to his self-confident smile, to when he had even supported Lei Mubai to propose marriage to Divine Phoenix Island… and all the way to now, Lei Mubai had even used the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder!

The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder didn’t have a problem in itself. Although it was considered evil, the evil factions within the Sky Spill Continent weren’t too clear. For instance, the Seven Profound Valleys’ Acacia Faction and Puppet Faction both practiced devil arts. As for Lin Ming, his Heretical God Force wasn’t an orthodox ability either.

But with the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder added with all the previous issues, Lin Ming had a guess!

And that was that this pale youth’s real name wasn’t Lei Mubai. In fact, that was just an alias he used within the Thundercrest Sect. He was most likely a very important character within the South Sea Demon Region!

There was too much at stake on this speculation; even Lin Ming couldn’t easily confirm it.

If he were right, then there would be nothing left of Lei Mubai. But if he were wrong, it would create a horrible mess. It might even cause the Thundercrest Sect to ally with the South Sea Demon Region!

Lin Ming suppressed his desire to tell Mu Qianyu of his guess. Instead, he calmed his mind and closed himself off until there was nothing left but his sense, using this to observe each and every action of Lei Mubai.

On the stage, Lei Mubai and Mu Xiaoqing's battle was reaching its conclusion. Mu Xiaoqing was obviously not anywhere near being Lei Mubai's match. She was stuck within the Blood Prison, and was completely unable to free herself.

As Lin Ming compared the aura that Lei Mubai emitted to the residual will of the Netherworld Great Emperor within the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, he was increasingly sure that this Lei Mubai had a very close relation with the Netherworld Great Emperor, and was most likely a descendant of some sort. At the very least, he would be a person who cultivated the same kinds of devil arts as the Netherworld Great Emperor!

The South Sea Demon Region was at war with Divine Phoenix Island and would soon invade. Now, Lei Mubai had suddenly appeared at this time. In addition to all of Lei Jingtian's various actions, this was enough to confirm the relation between Lei Mubai and the South Sea Demon Region. Otherwise, how could there be such a perfect coincidence in this world?

As Lin Ming made up his mind, he opened his eyes.

At this time, he witnessed Lei Mubai's final strike.

Bang!

The crimson blood claw burst apart. Mu Xiaoqing spat out a mouthful of blood, and she flew backwards like a broken kite, her face paler than paper.

This was the home of Divine Phoenix Island. No matter how brave Lei Mubai was, he still wouldn't dare to suck out Mu Xiaoqing's blood essence. But this level of injury was enough for her to be bedridden for at least ten days.

The truth was that being bedridden for 10 days wasn't too big of a deal. The crux of the issue was that Mu Xiaoqing's confidence had suffered a heavy blow. In the future, this could possibly affect her cultivation.

Mu Yuhuang was pale. No matter how she justified matters, in this case her disciple was simply weaker, thus she had been humiliated. There was nothing she could say. Otherwise this so-called competition of learning from each other was meaningless.

Lei Mubai wickedly smiled at Mu Xiaoqing. Then, he swept his eyes across the entire audience. "Who's next?"

All of the Divine Phoenix Island disciples had extremely ugly complexions. Their hearts were filled with extreme resentment, and they wished that they could rip apart this Lei Mubai. But this time, who would dare to go up? That would simply be disgracing themselves!

Lei Mubai smiled as he glanced at Mu Dingshan. As for Lin Ming, he wanted to save him for last. The one that was the greatest eyesore to him here was Lin Ming.

"Brother Dingshan, if you don't come up then how can we have a match?"

Mu Dingshan's expression was pale. He tightly clenched his fists together. Ever since he was born, when had he been oppressed like this? Someone was looking down their nose at him, openly provoking him, and yet he was helpless in this situation.

However, this time, he had to step up no matter what. In the end, he was the elder senior-apprentice brother of all the direct disciples. He grit his teeth, and was about to step onto the stage when he was stopped by a firm hand on his shoulder.

He turned and saw that the one who stopped him was Lin Ming.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Mu, I'll do it." Lin Ming frankly said. There was much at stake. Through an actual battle, he would be able to more precisely determine Lei Mubai's true identity.

Mu Dingshan’s heart filled with a tender and touching emotion as he looked at Lin Ming. This Lei Mubai was simply too strong. Even Saint rank talents were separated by the disparity in their talents. He feared that this Lei Mubai was much stronger than Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun when they were at this age.

Even if Lin Ming was also a Saint rank talent, he was just 16 and a half years old. Not only that, but there was a great gap in their cultivation. Mu Dingshan didn’t believe that Lin Ming had the assurance to deal with Lei Mubai.

Lei Mubai had defeated Mu Xiaoqing and hadn’t even used his weapon. Who knew what else he had up his sleeve. He was simply an unfathomable character. There was no way that Lin Ming was able to completely understand the enemy’s full strength. In order to challenge Lei Mubai, one needed have considerable courage. But, since this competition had progressed to this stage, a loss would be a great blow to one’s confidence.

Could Lin Ming win?

To Mu Dingshan, this hope was too faint and uncertain.

He heartily patted Lin Ming’s shoulder, a bit like he was stepping onto an execution stage. “Brother Lin, please be silent. You are the last hope of my Divine Phoenix Island, so let me go up first. My cultivation is higher than Xiaoqing’s, so I should be able to test out some of the cards he has in his hand. With that, it will be easier for you to deal with him.”

Lin Ming faintly smiled, no longer attempting to persuade Mu Dingshan. Instead, he took out his Purple Comet Spear and directly leapt onstage.

“Divine Phoenix Island’s Lin Ming, please advise!”

Chapter 382 – Thunder Soul Clash

Chapter 382 – Thunder Soul Clash

…

…

…

As Lin Ming leapt onstage, he immediately aroused the attention and cries of the audience. Everyone fell silent, their breath abated; all of them had been waiting for this battle between the two greatest talents of the Five Element Region and the South Horizon Region.

However, everyone also thought it was very unfortunate that Lin Ming and Lei Mubai weren't on the same level. For one at the late Pulse Condensation period to go against someone at the early Houtian realm… that wasn't a small gap at all.

"Lin Ming, this damn fellow, he's just disgracing himself." At the Thundercrest Sect banquet area, Zhou Xiaoling was glaring at Lin Ming with resentment in her eyes. She raised her fists that were covered in soy sauce, waiting for Lin Ming to be defeated.

As for Zhou Lie, he helplessly looked at his little sister. He thought that after Lei Mubai had proposed marriage to Divine Phoenix Island, Zhou Xiaoling would drop whatever fond desires she held towards Lei Mubai. But, it seemed as if she hadn't changed her mind about him at all. He had no idea what she was thinking.

"Lin Ming isn't so simple…" Zhou Lie said. "We have already underestimated him once, do not underestimate him again."

"Humph! Just you want and see!" Zhou Xiaoling didn't bother to argue, she was a staunch supporter of Lei Mubai.

Zhou Lie shook his head. Although he couldn't help but admit that in comparison to Lei Mubai, Lin Ming was sorely lacking. If another year passed and Lin Ming stepped into the Houtian realm, then they would be able to see a fierce competition. But this had happened far too early!

He too hoped that Lin Ming would win, but this hope was very faint. Whether it was Lei Mubai or Lin Ming, neither of them had displayed their true and complete strength. But comparatively speaking, Lei Mubai was much more profound and unfathomable. In front of him, Mu Xiaoqing didn't even have the strength to resist!

.....

"Lin Ming, you are too impatient. I was prepared to face you last, but I didn't think that you would be the second to come onstage." Lei Mubai looked at Lin Ming as he leapt onstage, his arms crossed behind his back. From his entire body he emitted an arrogant attitude, that of someone who held complete confidence in themselves, and looked at all the heroes of the world with nothing but disdain. As a Saint rank talent from a fifth-grade sect, facing Lin Ming, who was not only from a fourth-grade sect but also had a lower cultivation, he naturally looked at him with contempt.

"I had originally wanted to experience the many chief disciples of the Five Element Region one at a time. After all, this sort of event to compete against so many masters is a very rare occasion. But because some matters have occurred, I've changed my mind." A faint smiled touched upon Lin Ming's lips, a deep meaning behind it.

Lei Mubai frowned. He didn't know why Lin Ming was smiling, but this smiling expression caused him to feel disgust. "You think that you have a chance of winning? You don't seem to have realized the situation you're in!"

Lin Ming shook his head. "No, it's just the opposite. You haven't realized what situation you're in."

Lin Ming spoke, but at this time, Lei Mubai ignored him. Lei Mubai only thought that Lin Ming was trying to provoke him.

“Haha! I haven’t realized my situation? It looks like you’re quite confident in yourself.” Lei Mubai suddenly took his hands out, then clenched his fists. An enormous force arose within him, and a thick true essence emerged, nearly substantial. It spilled out like mercury, crushing all the stone tiles of the floor and sending them flying back with true essence.

“What a thick true essence!”

The hearts of everyone present at the banquet were shocked. Was this true essence something that an early Houtian martial artist could have? If they let out their perception, they would be able to feel a thick swirling vortex of true essence with Lei Mubai at the center. It was hard to believe that he was just at the early Houtian realm.

“Words are useless.” Facing Lei Mubai’s true essence that swept out at him, Lin Ming’s clothes fluttered in the air. Lin Ming grasped the Purple Comet Spear, pointing it towards the ground, his indifferent eyes touched with a hint of scorn.

“Your eyes really disgust me. Make your move. I’ll have a look to see whether or not you can force me to use my weapon!” Lei Mubai’s hands gathered together and the dazzling Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder sparked within his palms.

Chi chi chi!

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes as he stared at the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder. He sneered in his heart, ‘If you were a true Thundercrest Sect disciple, I wouldn’t be able to take anything from you. But since you’re not, don’t blame me for stripping you of everything you have!’

“Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky!”

Lin Ming suddenly stepped forwards, a luminous flame burning across his entire body. It was like the mountains and rivers had erupted; he thrust a spear towards Lei Mubai’s chest!

Under this spear, the space around it seemed to tighten, a flame phoenix swirling around it. Flames surrounded Lei Mubai!

"This is your move? Too bad, it's useless against me!" Lei Mubai's demeanor was calm. He lifted his palms and launched the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder. In an instant, it vanished and turned into a pair of bloody netherworld blood claws that shot towards the flame phoenix.

Bang!

The blood claws and the flame phoenix collided. The blood claws latched onto the flame phoenix's wings, dispersing the fire. The blood claws issued a 'chi chi chi' sound as plumes of blue smoke spewed into the air.

"Die!"

Lei Mubai gave a loud shout and suddenly twisted his hands, the blood claws following. There was a sad and shrill phoenix cry that pierced the air, and Lin Ming's flame phoenix was ripped in half by Lei Mubai!

The hearts of the Divine Phoenix Island disciples suddenly skipped a beat, even Mu Dingshan's expression changed. Lin Ming's Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky had been so easily broken!

"I said it was useless!" Lei Mubai jeered. But at this time, his smile froze on his face. After he tore apart Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky, a purple light split the smoke, shooting towards him at an incredible speed!

This needle was two inches long, and a Purple Flood Dragon coiled around the shaft. This was the coiling dragon steel needle!

"Mm? This is…!"

Lei Mubai was beyond shocked. He could feel in that purple light a thunder origin energy that had been compressed to an extreme degree!

“Thunder Soul!?”

Lei Mubai flew backwards, but the purple light followed him. No matter how fast he was, how could he compare to the speed of that coiling dragon steel needle?

As Lei Mubai saw the coiling dragon steel needle about to stab him between the eyebrows, he gave a shout and swiped at his spatial ring, pulling out a deep red blood halberd! This halberd had a nine foot long shaft and a foot long blade edge. It was a deep crimson like fresh blood, and its murderous aura soared into the sky. It was just like a terribly vicious beast all over, causing those who saw it to feel a deep and abiding fear.

Lei Mubai gripped the blood halberd and instantly slashed down at the coiling dragon steel needle.

In that moment, it was like the entire space was blocked by the blood halberd, and the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was trapped within. The blood halberd carried a vast and endless violent momentum as it fiercely chopped down.

Bang!

The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was cut by the blood halberd. Countless arcs of purple thunder splashed out, like purple snakes chaotically writhing in the air. Lei Mubai bore the brunt of this shock and his entire body was numbed by electricity. But Lin Ming was no better. His mind was connected to the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, and when it was cut he had turned pale.

Lin Ming waved his right hand, and the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder that possessed an intelligent will flew back towards Lin Ming, revolving within his hand.

Lei Mubai held the halberd, standing his ground. He looked at the small steel needle in Lin Ming’s hand, and tumultuous waves surged in his heart.

It wasn't just Lei Mubai, but the eyes of everyone in the audience were fixed upon that normal looking steel needle.

Most of them didn't know what this coiling dragon steel needle was. They could only marvel at the power of this small object. "It looks likes Lin Ming's strength is greater than I anticipated. He might have the ability to fight with Lei Mubai. But, that is only to fight. As for what will happen, that will all depend on how much strength Lei Mubai is still hiding..."

A Deep Earth Sect disciple analyzed the situation with an air of self-importance. But this analysis only caused the surrounding Thundercrest Sect disciples to glare at him with derision.

'You idiot!'

A Thundercrest Sect thought in his heart. As disciples of the Thundercrest Sect, they naturally recognized what this coiling dragon steel needle was. It was a low-grade earth-step Thunder Soul!

It contained an extremely terrifying compressed thunder origin energy. In this aspect, it was far superior to the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder!

"A boy with a late Pulse Condensation cultivation was actually able to absorb a low-grade earth-step Thunder Soul? How is this possible!?" Zhou Lie cried out. He was unable to accept this. He was well aware of how difficult and painful it was to absorb a Thunder Soul of that level!

With his Houtian realm cultivation and also with the support of many of the Thundercrest Sect's treasures, Zhou Lie had managed to jump ranks and absorb a high-grade human-step Thunder Soul. But the pain that followed had him wanting to kill himself. Finally, he had broken through his limits and forcefully absorbed it!

Zhou Lie thought that he had achieved the ultimate heaven-defying act, and was pleased with his talent. But afterwards, he had discovered that Lei Mubai had absorbed a low-grade earth-step Thunder Soul with his Houtian cultivation, and suffered a heavy blow to his self-esteem.

But as Zhou Lie thought that Lei Mubai was an existence that had a chance of becoming a Peerless Emperor in the future, he was just able to accept this reality. But now, it seemed that Lin Ming with his mere late Pulse Condensation cultivation had actually managed to absorb a low-grade earth-step Thunder Soul! Heavens! Was he really a human!?

Zhou Xiaoling stared with wide eyes. It was also because of the act of absorbing a Thunder Soul that her admiration of Lei Mubai had risen so high. But now in just a few days, that act had actually been surpassed by Lin Ming! She also found this hard to accept. In her eyes, Lei Mubai was the most talented and gifted individual in the world – it was impossible for anyone to exceed him. But now, it looked like Lin Ming had already eclipsed him.

Within the Divine Phoenix Island banquet area, Mu Qianyu bore witness to the intense and violent reaction from the Thundercrest Sect disciples, and her lips curved up in a satisfied smile. ‘These fellows are already so surprised. If they knew that Lin Ming had already absorbed the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder over half a year ago, and that his cultivation had only been at the peak Bone Forging stage when he did so, just what sort of reactions would they have? Now that Lin Ming’s cultivation has reached the late Pulse Condensation period, with a sect’s help he might even be able to absorb a medium-grade earth-step Thunder Soul!’

“I never thought this was possible, I never expected this at all.” Lei Mubai shook his head. “I really underestimated you! I have to admit that you have the qualifications to make me a bit serious, but that is also only a bit more serious!”

Lin Ming smiled, a light laugh touching his lips. This idiot, he was knocking on death’s door and yet he still felt so smug about himself. This was also the reason that so many other geniuses died like dogs. Pride blinded their eyes and arrogance blinded their hearts, letting them believe that everything was under their control.

But the truth was that he couldn’t blame Lei Mubai. In this situation, he would also never have imagined that his identity was seen through by Lin Ming.

If there was anything to blame, one could only blame Lei Mubai for having such bad luck.

Since ancient times, Peerless Emperors were existences that had a heaven-defying talent as well as a great destiny that gathered unto their bodies. Lei Mubai’s talent was satisfactory, but it was a pity that he had no great destiny to follow him. Instead, what had fallen upon him was a calamity. Unfortunately, in this life, he had now encountered Lin Ming. And what was most tragic was that he never would have dreamt that Lin Ming had swallowed a Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, and that within that Shattered Demon Heart Crystal was the blood essence of the Netherworld Great Emperor. As for Lei Mubai, the Netherworld Great Emperor bloodline that he was so proud of and that he had hidden, had actually been recognized by Lin Ming.

Lei Mubai slapped the blood halberd and held it across his chest. In that instant, a fierce and violent energy broke forth. This was a top medium-grade earth-step treasure.

“This halberd is a desolate and dangerous treasure – it is a replica of the Forsaken Blood Halberd. Although it is a replica, it has been tempered through a thousand years and stained with the blood of countless lives. I’m anticipating that today this halberd will drink freely of your blood!”

Chapter 383 – Great Desolate Blood Halberd

Chapter 383 – Great Desolate Blood Halberd

…

…

…

Forsaken Blood Halberd replica?

Even Lin Ming, who didn't know much about the top sects of the Sky Spill Continent, had heard the fierce name of this Forsaken Blood Halberd. The Forsaken Blood Halberd's former name was the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, and it was a heaven-step treasure that was excavated from an ancient ruin. It was 10 feet long, as thick as an arm, and blood red all over.

It was rumored that this halberd was a high-grade heaven-step treasure.

The original master and creator of this Great Desolate Blood Halberd had long been lost in the vast stretches of time. But it was known that this halberd had existed at least 70 or 80 thousand years ago.

Afterwards, the Great Desolate Blood Halberd was spread through the Sky Spill Continent and passed through several owners. Of those who held this weapon in hand, it could be said that any of these characters were masters that could shake the world, among which were many Peerless Emperors!

However, this blood halberd was simply too dangerous and portentous a treasure. According to the ancient records, everyone that had ever possessed the Great Desolate Blood Halberd eventually died a miserable and violent death. Even the so-called Peerless Emperors were no exception to this rule. It could be said that their destiny which was described within the ancient texts wasn’t enough, and they died to the curse of the blood halberd.

For instance, a thousand years ago the Netherworld Great Emperor had managed to obtain the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. Unfortunately, he perished under the hands of several Peerless Emperors.

Afterwards, this blood halberd was said to have been obtained by a Supreme Elder. But according to rumors, this Supreme Elder had gone into an ancient mystic realm and had been missing for hundreds of years. Until now, there still wasn’t anyone that had a hint of where he was. Thus, the Great Desolate Blood Halberd had vanished along with him.

Humans were wonderful and contradictory creatures. The more ominous a treasure was, the more it would arouse the crazed envy of others. This was because many of them assumed that they were fated for great deeds, as if the heavens themselves had mandated that they would succeed. They believed that a great destiny had come to them and that they wouldn’t die from the blood halberd’s curse. The Great Desolate Blood Halberd even became a symbol of being a Peerless Emperor. Thus, replicas of this Great Desolate Blood Halberd had spread everywhere, and it wasn’t unusual for a genius whose ambition was to one day become a Peerless Emperor to have one.

“So you also use a long weapon.” Lin Ming’s expression was calm. Compared to the spear, the halberd head had many crescent blade tips that could be used to slash and kill. Those that wielded the spear could also wield the halberd.

“Hehe, allow me to remind you. With this blood halberd assisting me, my Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder can become 50% stronger!”

“Oh? What a coincidence. With the help of the Purple Comet Spear, my Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder can also display its greatest strength!”

As the two stared each other down, the young heroic elites present held their breaths, their hearts rapidly racing. This battle was far more wonderful than they had assumed. They thought it would be a one-sided match, but it had actually stayed even until now.

Such a fight was what these people desired to see the most. They opened their eyes wide, fearing that they would miss any of the exciting moments.

Lei Mubai swept out his blood halberd, and his aura suddenly erupted. The true essence within his body revolved to the limit and a thick bloody energy surged forth from his body.

Chi!

The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder flowed into the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, the entire halberd shaft growing increasingly bright red as if it were dripping blood. The savage halberd blade began to issue out a keening cry!

“Blood War Throughout the World!”

Kacha!

The tiles under Lei Mubai’s feet suddenly shattered, cracks spreading throughout like a spiderweb. Lei Mubai waved his halberd, and a bloody storm twisted into existence, sucking in all the surrounding stone, tearing it to pieces!

Facing such a powerful attack, Lin Ming gripped the Purple Comet Spear. The spearpoint drew a crescent moon on the ground and began to howl. The coiling dragon steel needle had fused into the Purple Comet Spear. Spear and thunder became one, thunder flashed, arcs of lightning danced in the air.

Lin Ming thrust out his spear, the phantom of an Azure Dragon appearing behind him once again. With this strike, it carried a primal azure true essence as well as a massive snake of thunder that was as thick as a tree trunk. With a cry from the audience, this spear contained an unstoppable momentum as it thrust towards the bloody storm.

Bang bang bang!

A series of explosions sounded in the air. The bloody light mixed with the smashed tiles and the purple electric radiance. All of the stones within were smashed into dust. As the dust mixed into the bloody storm, it transformed into red sand!

The protective array formation that the Revolving Core master had laid down began to vibrate. Cracks appeared out of thin air, and with a light ‘chi chi chi’ sound, the protective curtain of light was punctured. A savage beam of true essence pierced through!

“Be careful!”

Everyone was shocked. Several Revolving Core Elders hurried to lay down a new enchantment. However, because it was too quick, the new enchantment wasn’t able to be instantly laid down. The electric light and true essence explosion shockwave flooded out, overturning the banquet tables and smashing apart the jade dishes!

All the heroic elites of the sects began to revolve true essence around their body to protect themselves. The ones with high cultivation protected those with low cultivation. As the true essence shockwave collided against their true essence, it created a rainbow of colors that dazzled everyone present.

“Who are these two!? The true essence shockwave from their battle can break open the protective array formation and also force our disciples to resist with all their strength!”

“This is too terrifying. Look over there. Even the Deep Earth Sect’s Houtian disciples who excel at defense find this difficult to resist. Can a Houtian master truly have strength of this level!?”

“What Houtian master? That Lin Ming is clearly at the Pulse Condensation period!” With these words, everyone felt as if they were living a waking dream.

That’s right! Lin Ming wasn’t at the Houtian realm! He was even a step away from reaching the peak of Pulse Condensation!

Because of Lin Ming's strong and dominating performance, everyone had faintly forgotten the fact that Lin Ming wasn't a Houtian master. Just what was wrong with this world!

The ones most shocked were the Xiantian masters. As the backbone of their fourth-grade sects, they were above 30 years old, and there were even some around 40 or 50 years old.

"Such a strong attack power, is this really the strength of the younger generation? When I was at the peak Houtian realm, even I didn't have such abnormal attack power!" Those that were able to attend this banquet celebration weren't average martial artists. When they were at the Houtian realm, they were also outstanding martial artists that surpassed others.

"If this continues, they won't need much time to compare to a true Xiantian master! An early Houtian realm youth can actually compare to a Xiantian master; just how strong will they be in the future? They might even become Peerless Emperors!"

The difference between the Houtian realm and the Xiantian realm was like a moat that separated the two. As one stepped from the Houtian realm into the Xiantian realm, a martial artist would be reborn as they eliminated the foul Houtian air within themselves and experienced a qualitative change to their true essence that greatly increased the intensity and thickness of it. The Xiantian realm was also considered a massive bottleneck. Every normal Houtian martial artist that had an unstable foundation would be stuck there forever; the only ones left that had a chance of ascending were the most outstanding of individuals. Even Qin Ziya, who was considered a top-class Houtian master, would only be the lowest of Xiantian powerhouses. This showed just how strong a Xiantian realm martial artist truly was.

Therefore it was especially difficult for a Houtian powerhouse to be able to jump realms and fight against a Xiantian master. Within a small sect like the Seven Profound Valleys, it was already good if there existed two or three people that could accomplish this. Not only that, but these two or three people would often be at the peak Houtian realm or even a half-step into the Xiantian realm.

On the stage, Lin Ming and Lei Mubai had already separated from each other. All of the tiles within a 100 foot radius of them had been completely demolished, and the spot where the two youths had collided had been turned into fine sand. After this sand was stained red by the blood essence within the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder, it had turned the center of the stage into a crimson desert.

Lei Mubai hadn't expected that Lin Ming would be powerful to such a degree. When he was Lin Ming's age, he didn't possess this strength – did that mean that Lin Ming's talent exceeded him?

Lei Mubai's heart had always been heavy with pride. How could he tolerate a fourth-grade sect genius ever surpassing him!

"I really underestimated you. But, my strength is far more than that! For you to be able to force me to use my true strength, that alone is enough for you to be proud of!"

The true essence within Lei Mubai's body began to rapidly revolve. Within his meridians, the bloody energy became increasingly thick and concentrated. His entire skeleton began to crackle, and his aura exploded along with it, frightening everyone who sensed it!

Ancient devil arts!

Huu!

The space around Lei Mubai seemed to become its own separate space; his aura increased several times over!

What he was using was the power of the ancient Devil Tome that his master had found within far off ruins!

He didn't fear using this cultivation method. This wasn't a cultivation method of Silent Demon Emperor City, but rather a recently unearthed ancient cultivation method manual. Regardless of whether it was Mu Yuhuang of Mu Fengxian, neither of them would be able to recognize it.

Although this wasn't an orthodox strength, the South Horizon Region sects had never distinguished between good or evil. Everything was based only on the respect for the strong. So, there was nothing wrong with using this ancient devil art technique.

Even if there was something wrong with using this, he no longer cared. If he didn't defeat Lin Ming here, then he would only frustrate his own spirit!

"Mm? This cultivation method!" Mu Yuhuang's eyes shined. With the breadth of her knowledge, she was able to instantly recognize the uncommon and extraordinary nature of this cultivation method. This was obviously not the cultivation method of the Thundercrest Sect, and even if it was, it would be recently obtained by the Thundercrest Sect. There was even a high chance that it was this Lei Mubai who had found it!

"Master Ancestor, do you recognize this cultivation method?" Mu Yuhuang asked Mu Fengxian with a true essence sound transmission.

Mu Fengxian squinted her eyes as she looked at Lei Mubai, thoughtfully deliberating for a moment. Then, she hesitated and shook her head, "This cultivation method should have recently appeared in the world, this boy's lucky fortunes are very great!"

Mu Yuhuang let out a light breath and turned to glance at Lei Jingtian. She saw that his own eyes were shining with acclaim. Suddenly, Mu Yuhuang's heart went cold – there was an absolute chance that this cultivation method was found by Lei Mubai!

With such a great lucky opportunity falling upon him, she feared that Lei Mubai really might become an almighty Peerless Emperor!

Lei Mubai's ancient devil arts were truly amazing. But Lin Ming was indifferent. Among everyone present, there was no one who was more experienced in the highest level cultivation methods that him.

In the fragmented memories of the Realm of the Gods' Supreme Elders, there were countless incomplete cultivation methods, most of them being sporadic and fragmented worthless bits. But Lin Ming still looked over these one at a time. As he compared them to

Lei Mubai's ancient devil arts, he came to the conclusion that these ancient devil arts were probably created by a Peerless Emperor that originated from the Sky Spill Continent.

Perhaps this Peerless Emperor died of old age or perhaps he soared up into the Realm of the Gods. Regardless of what happened, this cultivation method that he left behind as his legacy could only be considered the lowest third-rate cultivation method within the Realm of the Gods.

Under the shadow of the crimson light, Lei Mubai gripped the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, his clothes fluttering in the wind and his jet black hair recklessly flying. With the bloody lightning that twined around his entire body, he was like an ancient demon god that descended into the world.

Lei Mubai stood there, his aura filled with utter disdain for the world. All the young heroic elites felt that Lei Mubai was no different than a giant mountain that stood before him, an unattainable and distant existence. As for the young female disciples of the Five Element Region, their beautiful faces blushed and their hearts wildly beat. As for Zhou Xiaoling, her eyes never left Lei Mubai for a second.

Zhou Lie saw the entranced expression on his younger sister's face and sighed. He didn't say anything further. Whether it was Lei Mubai or Lin Ming, they were both characters that had already surpassed the realm of his comprehension.

"Lin Ming! Do you still think you can defeat me!?"

Lei Mubai slowly said, his every word dripping with overbearing arrogance!

His strength had grown two-fold. If he used Blood War Throughout the World again, the power of that move would also be doubled!

Chapter 384 – Tempering Marrow VS Devil Arts

Chapter 384 – Tempering Marrow VS Devil Arts

…

…

…

Facing the blazoning might of the ancient devil arts and the crazy Lei Mubai whose hair was bathed in a blood red light, Lin Ming was finally able to completely confirm that Lei Mubai was from the South Sea Demon Region.

‘The ancient devil arts can multiply one’s own strength?’ Lin Ming’s lips curved up in a smile, ‘If I hadn’t completed 20% of Tempering Marrow then I would absolutely have lost this battle. But now, Lei Mubai is able to have me fight to the limits of my strength! With 20% Tempering Marrow added together with the opening of the Heretical God Force, just what would the result be?’

Lin Ming gripped the Purple Comet Spear horizontally and stood tall on the stage, his body exuding a virtuous light. Suddenly, his aura began to thicken, becoming increasingly swift and fierce, and a spear intent that could sweep away all surged forth. At this moment, Lin Ming was like a unrivalled treasure spear, immeasurably keen. With a single thought, he could pierce through the world!

“Mm? Lin Ming’s aura is also intensifying!”

“It’s not only his aura that is intensifying, but the true essence in his body is becoming increasingly thick! Heavens! How can a Pulse Condensation period martial artist have such thick true essence within their body!?”

In this instant, everyone was able to clearly feel the vast aura emitting from Lin Ming's body like an endless ocean. His true essence was like the wild waves of a storm, boundless and infinite!

With just Lin Ming's meridians and acupoints, he was naturally unable to release such terrifying true essence. A great deal of Lin Ming's true essence had been hidden within his marrow, and now all of that hidden true essence had spewed out; the power of 20% of Tempering Marrow completely broke free!

On the banquet's seat of honor, Mu Fengxian's sleepy eyes suddenly popped open, an expression of disbelief coloring them. She quietly watched Lin Ming for several breaths of times, took a deep breath, and then said to herself, "This child is a dragon within a deep pool. If my Divine Phoenix Island has a great enough destiny and we are able to survive the incoming cataclysm to wait until the day that this dragon soars into the sky, my Divine Phoenix Island will also be a phoenix that rebirths through nirvana, soaring along with it..."

As Lin Ming's aura increased, all of the juniors beneath the stage stared with wide eyes. Their mouths were dry, and they watched with utter astonishment.

Lei Mubai couldn't bear it. As this aura rose, he was no longer willing to wait.

The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder erupted. Lei Mubai cried out, "Blood Dyes the World!"

The blood halberd swept out. After this move broke forth, the aura of the stage suddenly changed, as if tumultuous and violent waves of blood were crashing around. Lei Mubai tread forwards, and his body was like a phantom as he instantly flashed in front of Lin Ming, his spear sweeping towards his waist.

This halberd strike carried a heavy, roaring potential. Even a small mountain peak would be crushed by this sweeping blow!

In the halberd, Lin Ming could feel all the blood of his body being pulled by an invisible force, rushing to the surface and boiling in his veins as if it would break out of his body!

‘This is the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder’s effect on blood essence? Lei Mubai has no intention of staying his hand at all. If a normal martial artist were to be swept by this halberd, their blood would flow backwards and they would have already died from shock!’

Lin Ming’s mind raced. The coiling dragon steel needle had fused into the Purple Comet Spear, and now the spear seemed to contain its own indelible will. A spear swept out, and because of the instant acceleration, the Purple Comet Spear slightly bent like a whip as he crashed into the blood halberd.

Kacha!

As soon as the blood halberd collided with the Purple Comet Spear, the blood halberd was suppressed. It was like a blood red massive shark that was abruptly pressed down in the water!

The Purple Comet Spear pressed down on the Great Desolate Blood Halberd! The compressed blood vitality of the halberd broke free, creating crashing waves of vibrant blood!

The two young masters struggled, their spear and halberd clashing with each other as red and purple thunder sizzled the air.

The impact of the intense purple and red true essence formed a howling tornado. The tornado picked up the countless crushed stones on the ground, and sent them shooting towards the protective light array enchantment.

Ping ping ping!

The reinforced light screen severely trembled once more.

The complexions of all the heroic elites changed, especially the Xiantian realm martial artists’. They were all frightened, unable to comprehend what was happening. With two juniors fighting, their auras were actually filled with the power of crushing avalanches and tsunamis. Was this really battle between two of the younger generation?

Lei Mubai clenched his teeth, all of the muscles of his body bulging, his blue veins popping up. He had no choice but to admit that Lin Ming had the qualifications to fight him on equal standing!

‘This boy, his true essence is as thick as my own even after I used the ancient devil arts; how is this possible!? A frontal attack is not possible, I have to avoid his Purple Comet Spear and only attack his body.’

As Lei Mubai thought this, he suddenly rapidly dashed around, his footwork accelerating. As he stepped back, his form began erratic, drifting from place to place. The blood halberd in his hand also became a series of blood shades!

“You want to compare speed?” Lin Ming’s smirked. Lei Mubai was not a martial artist who specialized in speed like Jiang Baoyun. If he wanted to have a battle of speed, then he was not afraid. Not to mention that his comprehension of the Concept of Wind deepened with every day, and his Golden Roc Shattering the Void also drew closer to the second layer with every passing day. Soon, it would break through to the next level!

Ca!

Lei Mubai appeared like a ghost behind Lin Ming, his halberd cutting down. However, this halberd directly cut through Lin Ming’s waist, but passed straight through. At this moment, Lin Ming had vanished, leaving nothing behind by an afterimage!

It was just an instant, but Lin Ming had already moved dozens of feet away. “You are fast, but your weapon is a halberd. A halberd is not suited for speed!”

Lei Mubai’s pale face darkened. In terms of speed, a halberd was naturally inferior to a sword. This was common knowledge. But now, since he couldn’t directly confront Lin Ming, he could only compare his speed. “I don’t need you to teach me anything!”

Lin Ming sneered, and suddenly a invisible cyclone of wind formed around his body, propping him up. After he had exposed his ability to fly, he had no more need to conceal the secret of Golden Roc Shattering the Void. “How skillful. In terms of speed, I too am confident in myself!”

On the stage, forceful gales rampaged through the air. Lin Ming stepped forwards with Golden Roc Shattering the Void, and his body became a series of phantom images. With the Concept of Wind fused into the Purple Comet Spear, every spear strike contained a whistling wind origin energy.

In that moment, Lin Ming’s spear shade turned into wind, and the wind became the spear shade. It could not be dispersed, it could not be avoided!

Hu!

Hu!

Suddenly, all of the red and purple lightning on the stage was swept up into a massive vortex, Lin Ming and Lei Mubai disappearing together.

“Where are they?”

“There’s only the afterimage left, I can’t see them!”

Those whose cultivation was below the Houtian realm had already lost track of Lin Ming and Lei Mubai’s shadows. Even the Houtian realm disciples found it hard to see just where they were.

Zhan Yunjian took a deep breath, sighing as emotion filled his heart. So this power was that of the Kings of the younger generation? Perhaps in his entire life he would never be able to surpass them!

“Their strength can actually compare to a Xiantian master!”

Within the banquet area of Golden Bell Mountain, an early Xiantian master shook his head, overwhelmed by the scene in front of him.

“Before, I had thought that their strength was slightly better than when I was at the Houtian realm, but it seems that now, even I don’t dare to say that I could defeat them!”

………………

“Blood Scattering Endless Sky!”

Lei Mubai gripped the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and smashed down. With an explosion, a massive hole dozens of feet deep was created within the stage. However, Lin Ming had already dodged early, avoiding this attack. Even so, the blood within his body still violently tumbled within him.

“This fellow is too strong!” Lin Ming forcefully suppressed his surging blood. He still had his two final cards: the Heretical God Force and Thunderfire Annihilation. However, these two moves could only be used once, and he had to do so wisely. Otherwise, if he missed or failed, he would instantly be defeated!

Lei Mubai grinned. “You’ve forced me to this point. Now that the battle has reached this stage, even if I have to sacrifice my strength I will still cut you underneath my halberd!”

As Lei Mubai spoke, the skin all over his body began to crack open with a ‘ka ka’ sound. Clouds of bloody fog ruptured forth from these cracks.

“Blood Shadow Avatar!”

As Lei Mubai cried out, the blood fog actually turned into a red human’s shadow that took Lei Mubai’s form. This shadow had no weapon. Instead, there was a long devil claw that was its hand.

Lin Ming was surprised but he didn’t panic. He had already seen a similar attack method at the Seven Profound Valleys’ Total Faction Martial Meeting.

“Go! Suck dry his blood essence!”

The crimson Blood Shadow Avatar uttered a shrill scream, and then reached out its giant claw towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming appeared calm. His moved with Golden Roc Shattering the Void and his figure instantly drew back. At the same time, the Purple Comet Spear in his hand flashed with thunder. The power of thunder was the most effective counter to demons and ghost. He didn't believe that this Blood Shadow Avatar would be able to block the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder.

"Your opponent is me!"

Lei Mubai's cold words resounded within Lin Ming's ears. At the same time, the Great Desolate Blood Halberd slashed down!

Pincer attack?

Lin Ming frowned. The Purple Comet Spear in his hand thrust forth to meet the Great Desolate Blood Halberd!

Dang!

As the spear and halberd collided, the blood essence within Lin Ming's body roiled and his true essence went into disorder. As for Lei Mubai, his organs were violently shaken by the azure true essence and his face turned ashen.

"Ahh!"

At this moment, the Blood Shadow Avatar cried and extended its claw. The claw grasped at Lin Ming's throat!

But at this time, Lin Ming's Purple Comet Spear was already thrust out. He would not be able to pull it back in time and then thrust out again!

At this crucial moment, Lin Ming's right hand released the Purple Comet Spear. A deep azure light formed on his fist, carrying the power of thunder. This fist punched towards the Blood Shadow Avatar's blood claw!

"Humph, you are seeking death!" Lei Mubai grinned like a demon. The Blood Shadow Avatar's claw was as hard as a divine weapon; its toughness was comparable to a low-grade earth-step treasure. To use a flesh and blood fist to meet this claw was no different than courting death!

"Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!"

In that moment, Lin Ming's true essence revolved to the limit. 10,000 vibrating true essence filaments roared forth, carrying the integrated power of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder as well as the power of the 20% completed Tempering Marrow. This strike contained his full strength!

Bang!

Lin Ming's fist smashed into the Blood Shadow Avatar's claw. The power of vibration and the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder erupted. There was a loud 'chi chi chi' sound as the blood claw was ignited by the thunder before it suddenly exploded into a bloody fog!

"What!?"

Lei Mubai's mind shook and then he spat out a mouthful of blood. The Blood Shadow Avatar was connected to his body – if it took damage, so would he!

As Lei Mubai spat blood, he kneeled on the floor, a looked of incredible disbelief in his eyes as he stared at Lin Ming. How was this possible? A bare human fist had shattered the Blood Shadow Avatar's demon claw!?

"Lei Mubai is injured!"

“Heavens! This is too fearful. Lei Mubai’s strength is already so terrifying, but he was actually severely wounded by Lin Ming!?”

All of the young heroic elites present sucked in a deep breath.

Everyone believed that Lei Mubai had been hiding his strength, but no one imagined that he would be so strong.

However, what was even more unbelievable was that this amazingly strong Lei Mubai was actually severely wounded by Lin Ming!

Chapter 385 – Battle of Kings

Chapter 385 – Battle of Kings

…

…

…

The entire audience was shocked speechless. No one imagined that the battle between the Kings of the younger generation would be at such a terrifying level.

The stage floor underneath the two youths' feet had been strengthened by an array formation, becoming as hard as iron. But now, it was all left in ruins.

Lei Mubai's Blood Shadow Avatar that he released had been destroyed by Lin Ming, causing him to spit out a mouthful of blood. His injuries were definitely serious. Although Lin Ming wasn't wounded, his face was very pale; obviously, he had also consumed a great deal of blood vitality.

Originally, with Lin Ming's astonishing recovery ability, this wouldn't be a problem. But Lei Mubai's extremely strange moves were able to affect the blood essence within Lin Ming's body, causing it to tumble within him. In order to suppress the roiling blood essence, he had to waste a massive amount of energy – and that was why he was exhausted to this degree.

"Lin Ming's hand is also injured!"

The audience discovered that Lin Ming's right had was slicked red with blood. Obviously, this was the result of the collision from a moment ago!

"His fist was injured when he shattered the blood claw."

“This is normal in such a violent collision. After all, Lin Ming doesn’t practice fist fighting nor did he bring any treasure gloves.”

All of the heroic elites present expressed their views. But as Lei Mubai heard these, he could only grimly smile.

Normal!?

Lin Ming didn’t practice fist fighting?

Didn’t bring treasure gloves?

This group of idiots knew nothing!

Besides Lei Mubai, no one was aware of just how terrifyingly hard the Blood Shadow Avatar’s demon claw was. It was able to compare to a low-grade earth-step treasure!

If Lin Ming was able to crush it with his fist, did that mean that his fist was comparable to a low-grade earth-step treasure?

How was this possible!?

Lei Mubai took a deep breath, his eyes glimmering as he looked at Lin Ming.

“Lin Ming, you are the strongest junior that I have ever met in my life. I have an incomparable desire… and that is to personally destroy you!” Lei Mubai grinned, showing his white teeth within his bloodstained mouth, his expression still grim and savage.

“You want to destroy me, and I want to destroy you. Not just that, but perhaps I will kill you much sooner.” Lin Ming wiped off the blood from his right hand, his expression cold and resolute. His words revealed his murderous intent, he had no desire to hide the fact that he wished to kill Lei Mubai.

“Haha! You want to destroy me? Good, then I will give you the chance! I didn’t think that I would be compelled to use my final card in this battle. I will use my own blood essence as the price to make this attack. After I use this move, if you cannot block it, you will die!”

A move that costs one’s own blood essence?

Lin Ming’s eyebrows curved up. Blood essence was extremely important to martial artists. Even if Lei Mubai swallowed other martial artists with the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder, this didn’t mean that he could easily waste his own blood essence. If this move cost him his own blood essence, it would surely be Lei Mubai’s strongest attack.

This would also be his final move!

“Lin Ming…” Mu Qianyu sat behind Mu Yuhuang, her lips slightly trembling. Now that the battle had come to this point, it was a life and death match between two great geniuses. Even they wouldn’t be able to control their own strength, and neither would they want to. Once this match was decided, one could be severely wounded or even crippled.

However, this time, it was clearly unrealistic to ask them to settle this with a truce.

“Yu’er, don’t worry. With the High Ancestor here, there won’t be a problem.” Mu Yuhuang noticed Mu Qianyu’s anxious expression and rapidly beating heart, and knew what she was worrying about.

“Mm…” Mu Qianyu nodded, slightly calming down.

……………………

As these two young Kings were about to make their final blows in this desperate battle, all of the martial artists present held their breath. Not to mention the young heroic elites, even the old Revolving Core masters were the same, staring with round eyes as they gazed at the center of the stage, none of them daring to miss a single second of this exciting match.

On the stage, the two fighting in this match had the possibility of becoming future Peerless Emperors! So this was a match between two young Peerless Emperors! This battle was destined to be written down in the ancient texts, left behind as a legacy for future generations, lasting tens of thousands of years from now!

Who could miss such a grand event!?

On the stage, strong winds blew, blood sand drifted into the sky.

"Hah!"

The Blood Shadow Avatar that was severely wounded by Lin Ming merged into Lei Mubai's body, melting into him. As this happened, a strange blood red color emerged over Lei Mubai's body.

"Blood Prison Descends!"

Lei Mubai gave a loud shout, and his aura started to become increasingly wild, increasingly manic, surging forth with a monstrous wave. His entire body was wrapped with red lightning, his long hair fluttering in the wind.

His foot stepped upon the bloodstained sand, his blood halberd directed straight towards the endless skies!

At this moment, he was like a descended demon god, insufferably arrogant, above all others!

Lin Ming let out a light breath; no wonder this Lei Mubai had been so rampant, he actually had so many cards in his hand. With one killer move after another, it was hard to find a martial artist at this level that could defeat him.

This Blood Prison Descends took one's own blood essence as the price in exchange for doubling one's strength. This was a move that damaged oneself at the cost of damaging the enemy even more.

In this situation, Lin Ming no longer planned to withhold anything anymore. In this final strike, he didn't need to care about how much true essence he consumed. He could use everything he had, putting forth his complete strength to meet this strike of Lei Mubai's.

"Heretical God Force – open!"

Bang!

The highly compressed true essence within the Heretical God Seed erupted. Lin Ming's aura soared again, and his thick true essence was like a dangerous, unstoppable force of nature. In that instance, his momentum was like an unstoppable spear light, piercing the skies!

"What!?"

"Impossible!"

"His aura increased again, and his true essence has strengthened by another 60 to 70%! At this time, Lin Ming was still hiding such a massively great strength!?"

The shock that Lin Ming had created was too great. Even Mu Fengxian's expression changed. This turn of events was even more startling than Lei Mubai. Lei Mubai had burnt his own blood essence in exchange for strength, but Lin Ming hadn't done so at all. This was only the compressed true essence that had been hiding within his body!

"How can a Pulse Condensation period martial artist hold so much true essence within himself? Is his body a bottomless pit!?"

Everyone present, from the young heroic elites to the old Revolving Core masters all stared with eyes wide, filled with shock and disbelief.

A Xiantian martial artist shook his head, ruefully smiling, "Can he really be considered a Pulse Condensation martial artist? The thickness of his true essence is already equal to mine."

For a Pulse Condensation martial artist's true essence to be as thick as a Xiantian master's… this was simply unthinkable. If he hadn't confirmed with his own eyes that a true essence vortex hadn't formed within Lin Ming's dantian yet, he would rather die than believe Lin Ming was only at the trivial late Pulse Condensation period.

"However, although the strength that Lin Ming has been hiding is impressive, it is still worse than Lei Mubai's!"

A Golden Bell Mountain disciple evaluated as he compared the auras of Lin Ming and Lei Mubai. The strength that Lin Ming had now was inferior to the strength that Lei Mubai had obtained at the cost of burning his own blood essence.

After all, that was blood essence; one would forever lose what they burnt away.

Now, Lei Mubai's hair was crazy and his momentum filled the skies, his strength had approximately doubled. As for Lin Ming, his spear intent spread through the world, sharp and keen. But in terms of his momentum, it was slightly worse – his strength had increased by about 60 to 70%.

Originally, their strength had been about the same. But now after they increased their strength, a gap was immediately opened up between them!

"Lin Ming is in danger!"

"This is Lei Mubai's final move with everything he has. If he cannot block it, Lin Ming will be seriously injured or even crippled!"

The Divine Phoenix Island disciples held their breath. The young female girls that had a favorable impression towards Lin Ming felt their hearts hanging in their throats. Their beautiful eyes were wide and unblinking, lest they miss what was about to happen.

Mu Qianyu let out a light breath as she folded her hands together, her grip tightening. She prayed in her heart, 'Lin Ming, please, don't let anything happen to you.'

Lei Mubai’s mouth was full of blood. Because of the constant and insufferable pain from the blood vessels in his body rupturing, his face was bleak and ghastly. “Lin Ming! I never imagined that you would still be holding a final finishing move in your hand. Your strength truly shocks me to an endless degree. But, this is as far as you go! In the end, your final card is inferior to mine!

Because of the combustion of his blood essence, Lei Mubai’s voice had changed. It was hoarse and deep, as if he were laboring for breath. He slowly and clearly spoke, enunciating every syllable, “Take my final strike. Demon – King – Descends!”

As he spoke these words, Lei Mubai grabbed his halberd with both hands, slashing out!

Monstrous and dreadful waves of blood surged into the sky. At that moment, even the void itself seemed to tear apart. With this strike of Lei Mubai, an indomitable momentum was brought forth. It was an unstoppable, apocalyptic momentum that seemed as if it could destroy the very world! Even those people outside the protective light curtain felt their entire bodies’ blood essence swelling forth, their blood tumbling; this was an unbearable feeling!

Too strong!

Just the shockwave of this attack was enough to have many disciples with low cultivation to vomit blood from the sick feeling in their bodies. How could Lin Ming possibly stop this attack?

Everyone’s hearts seemed to stop beating. Mu Qianyu wringed her hands together, her heart tightly clenching.

On the stage, facing this crazy storm of blood, Lin Ming’s clothes fluttered in the wind, his long hair blown around by the chaotic storm.

At this time, his expression was calm like a placid lake. He linked his sense to the Heretical God Seed. Above the Purple Comet Spear, a purple arc of thunder and a tiny flame began to tremble!

10,000 year old Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo!

10,000 year old Sacred Flame Parasol Tree!

With the increased power from these top quality materials, flames twisted, thunder howled! The savage and manic power of thunder and fire burst forth, like the dam holding back a raging river had been shattered!

The spearpoint was straight, endlessly driving forwards!

The power of thunder and fire gave off terrifying explosive sounds that reverberated in the air. The Purple Comet Spear was like a meteor wound with thunder and fire, piercing forwards!

In that instant, the Earthcore Crimson Flame and the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder connected…

Thunderfire Annihilation!

Bang!

An extremely horrific energy detonated. In that moment, it was like all sound had been swallowed, and the sun itself had lost its color. Time seemed to suddenly slow down!

Lin Ming’s vision was completely flooded with a blinding light, it was like he had been instantly sent into a separate dimension. He could clearly hear the sound of his heart beating, and even the billowing heat and excited cries within the Heretical God Seed.

Kacha!

The protective barrier array enchantment that had been reinforced was able to resist the all-out attack of an early Xiantian master. Now, this protective enchantment shattered once again. The true essence shockwaves that originated from the explosion were too terrifying. Even the master who had laid down this protective enchantment would never have thought that the battle between a late Pulse Condensation martial artist and an early Houtian realm martial artist could reach such a level!

The blazing white light lasted for several breaths of time. All of the tables at the banquet celebration had been completely overturned. Fortunately, the masters present had already foreseen that something dangerous was about to happen, and they created shields just in time to protect everyone from injury.

The martial arts stage had already been blown to ruins. Lin Ming propped himself up with the Purple Comet Spear, finding it difficult to stand.

But, at this time, Lei Mubai's entire body was dyed red with blood, and even his eyes had glazed over.

Plop!

Lei Mubai fell to his knees, his body shaking.

Seeing this scene, everyone was petrified. They needed time to digest just what had happened.

Lin Ming… he won!?!!?

Chapter 386 – Action First, Consequences Later

Chapter 386 – Action First, Consequences Later

…

…

…

The Thundercrest Sovereign Sect Lei Jingtian was shaking in disbelief. No one understood more than him just how terrifying Lei Mubai's strength was. But now, this Lin Ming had actually jumped realms and defeated him! The mental impact that this brought was too great, he simply couldn't believe it!

As for the young disciples of the Five Element Region, all of them were still in a daze. Whether it was Lei Mubai or Lin Ming, the power of these two had already surpassed the scope of their understanding. And now, Lin Ming's victory made them feel like they were living a lucid dream.

This was the first time they ever realized that a late Pulse Condensation martial artist and an early Houtian martial artist could achieve such a degree of power.

This shock was too intense, none of them were able to open their mouths to speak. Even a Saint rank talent wasn't insufficient to describe Lin Ming. In their view, he was like a character that had only existed in ancient legends. For instance, the Netherworld Great Emperor, who had once taken the heads of all the sect leaders of the Five Element Region…

Within the Sunfire Sect banquet area, the Sunfire Princess stared at Lin Ming, her heart pounding and her face flushed red, sighing. She had been feeling a bit resentful because the spotlight had been stolen from her, but after bearing witness to the glorious battle between

Lin Ming and Lei Mubai, she instead felt that she was very lucky. With her strength, if she went onstage it would be nothing more than a good laugh.

“How deplorable. I once thought that I was a top talent, but now, it seems I was just a frog in a well.”

It wasn’t just the Sunfire Princess, but even the proud Zhou Lie, the clear Zhan Yunjian, and the indifferent Bai Aoxuan, all of them had the same idea. Ever since they were children, they had grown up under the aurora of being top geniuses, and they had no peers that were able to compete on their level. This inevitably gave birth to thoughts that they would become the future heroes of the world. But now, if they compared themselves with Lin Ming, they feared that they would never catch up to him in their lifetimes.

Mu Fengxian withdrew her gaze, her eyes slowly closing. Lin Ming was a genius that had exceeded the ability of Divine Phoenix Island to raise. Such an existence should have appeared in a fifth-grade sect, or even a Holy Land.

Only a great power that had thousands or even tens of thousands of years of accumulated destiny would be able to raise a genius like Lin Ming so that he could one day become a Peerless Emperor. He would one day ascend to the skies, eventually leaving behind an indelible legacy in his people, being known as an unrivalled Peerless Great Emperor.

Within the entire square, no one spoke for several breaths of time; the audience was starkly silent. The Revolving Core Elders were sighing in their hearts, and the young heroic elites were etching the details of this battle between young Kings in their mind. This battle had simply left too great an impression on their minds, and had completely subverted the way in which they view the world. Before, many of them had dreams of being a chosen of heaven that would ascend to the heavens, but now, it was as if they had been rudely awakened from this dream. Perhaps, to them, this wasn’t a bad thing at all.

In the silence of the square, as the audience was still disoriented, Lin Ming recovered the Purple Comet Spear and moved towards Lei Mubai, one step at a time.

At this time, Lei Mubai was kneeling on the floor, the light in his eyes dim and his mouth wet with blood. He still remained conscious, but because his injuries were too heavy and he had consumed too much blood essence, he was on the verge of teetering over on the floor.

Seeing Lin Ming walk towards him, Lei Mubai's once dim eyes turned a bright blood red. His murderous intent and will to kill burst forth. He wanted to open his mouth to spit out several words, but as he tried to speak, all that came flowing out was blood, and he simply couldn't say a word.

Today's shame had forever etched itself into Lei Mubai's heart. If he didn't avenge this disgrace, this would become a barrier in Lei Mubai that would frustrate his spirit and stymie his every effort.

Those that cultivated in the demonic path were much more focused on making sure that their thoughts flowed freely and their spirit was unburdened. The demonic path had always been synonymous with doing whatever one wished, unlike the righteous path where there were still many morals and principles one had to follow.

Those that cultivated the demonic path took the world as their enemy and went against all living beings. If they didn't act in a manner that satisfied their own desires, then what was the point of cultivating the demonic path? They may as well pray to Buddha!

Lei Mubai couldn't speak, thus he only cursed in his heart. 'On the day that Divine Phoenix Island is exterminated, I will have you beg for death. I will waste your martial arts, break your four limbs and stick you in a box. I will have you watch as I freely use all of the resources that Divine Phoenix Island has accumulated. I will also waste Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun's martial arts, and strip their clothes naked in front of you. I will ravage them, humiliate them, and obtain their bloodlines!'

As Lei Mubai thought this, his lips curved up in a smile. The destruction of Divine Phoenix Island would happen sooner or later, that day was not too far away.

As he saw Lin Ming's eyes contain a murderous intent that wished to kill him, he sneered. 'Pitiful. No matter how talented you are, you're still trapped in the fourth-grade sect that is Divine Phoenix Island. This is no different than placing shackles on your feet. You will never ascend to the heavens!'

"Lin... Ming... one day... I will avenge today's shame!" Lei Mubai said with a true essence sound transmission. With his current condition, even using a true essence sound transmission was very difficult.

Lin Ming acted as if he didn't even hear Lei Mubai's true essence sound transmission. Instead, he brightly smiled as he sauntered over and placed his hand on Lei Mubai's shoulder, a friendly gesture as if he wanted to help lift him up.

Lei Mubai's entire body stiffened, "You..."

"Before, I had said that you didn't understand the situation you were in. And even now, you still don't understand just what situation you're in. Avenge the shame of today? I'm sorry, but it seems that you'll never have the opportunity to do so." Lin Ming's lips moved, his bone chilling true essence sound transmission sounding in Lei Mubai's ears, making him feel like he had fallen into an icy sea.

"You're... crazy...!"

"Now die!"

Lin Ming's smiling face suddenly turned cold. He lifted his palm and smashed it down on Lei Mubai's chest.

Pulse Cutting Palm!

Peng!

Lei Mubai's body shook. He was already weakened to the point that he could no longer resist. Lin Ming's brutal power broke into his meridians, shredding them all to pieces!

Puff!

Lei Mubai crazily spat out blood, his mind filled with incredible disbelief. This Lin Ming, he was utterly mad!

This incident had happened so suddenly that when Lin Ming had struck Lei Mubai with his palm, none of the Revolving Core masters were able to stop him. Everyone thought that Lin Ming was about to support Lei Mubai up by his arm, but none of them thought that Lin Ming would take advantage of this time when Lei Mubai had lost all strength to resistance to lay down such a heavy strike. What was he doing? Was he trying to provoke a war between Divine Phoenix Island and the Five Element Region?

Divine Phoenix Island was already in a very precarious situation. If they provoked such outrage and stirred up a war with the Five Element Region, they would absolutely die!

Lin Ming's actions were only digging his own grave! Even if he was a character that was destined to become a Peerless Emperor in the future, at this moment, Divine Phoenix Island would not dare to protect him!

"Boy, you are seeking death!"

No one was more enraged than Lei Jingtian. Lei Mubai was the Saint Son of the South Sea Demon Region! He was the future leader of the South Sea Demon Region!

If he died here, the South Sea Demon Region would vent their rage upon him. Even if the South Sea Demon Region didn't bother with him now because of their war with Divine Phoenix Island, they would not pardon him in the future. As for his dreams of the ancient Devil Tome, that had all fallen apart!

Lei Jingtian had never felt so angry before. His hands flashed with a purple electric light and his palm slammed down towards Lin Ming. This palm strike was able to instantly kill a late Xiantian realm master; Lin Ming would absolutely die.

Everyone was too surprised to even call out. Lei Jingtian's palm was already coming down. Under the violent compression of energy, the space around Lin Ming tightened as if it were rooting him in place, not allowing him to move. But the truth was, even if Lin Ming could freely move, he still wouldn't be able to dodge.

"Lei Jingtian, what are you doing!?"

At this critical moment, Mu Yuhuang appeared like a blaze of flame on the stage, her palm coming up to meet Lei Jingtian. A loud thunderclap roared through the square!

Bang!

Lei Jingtian was forced back several steps. As for Mu Yuhuang, she shook for a moment before firmly steadying herself.

Lei Jingtian's was shaking with fury. "What am I doing!? I should ask you what you are doing! Mu Yuhuang, are you planning on allowing your disciple to recklessly murder others!?"

At this moment, Mu Yuhuang had a very ugly complexion. In the moment that Lin Ming had taken action, she had heard a true essence sound transmission from him, "Lei Mubai is a spy from the South Sea Demon Region!"

Lin Ming had completely taken action first and worried about consequences later. Mu Yuhuang hadn't even had the time to respond!

Even the strong-willed Mu Yuhuang was in a complete mess. The consequences of this incident were simply too great; six of the seven great sects of the Five Element Region were present today and closely watching. This boy Lin Ming, how was he planning on revealing everything!?

If he didn't have proof to back up his thoughts, even Divine Phoenix Island wouldn't be able to maintain his life!

She wanted to rebuke Lin Ming, but now was not the time to reprimand him. Since what had happened had happened, first, she had to resolve this issue.

The Elders of the Five Element Region's sects had also stood up, anger on their faces as they glared at Lin Ming. No matter what, the Five Element Region's seven great sects of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, and thunder were all connected to each other; how could they tolerate something like this occurring?

At this point, Lei Mubai already seemed to be dying, the faint embers of his life flickering away. All of his meridians had been shattered, but he still clung to his single breath and didn't faint. He wasn't even able to make an expression of anger on his face. He could only relentlessly stare at Lin Ming, unadulterated hatred in his eyes; it was absolutely alarming!

Lei Mubai hadn't yet realized just what Lin Ming had done to him. He only felt that the meridians in his body had broken in many places. Although it was difficult to treat damage to the meridians, a fifth-grade sect still had the means to do so. It would only require him to stay in bed for several months.

Of course, this was only Lei Mubai's one-sided wishful thinking.

Lin Ming completely ignored the hate within Lei Mubai's eyes and faced the anger from the Elders of the Five Element Region's six sects. He confidently cupped his hands across his chest in a polite ritual and said, "Thunder Sovereign said that I killed him. But that is wrong. Even though my method was extreme, Lei Mubai is still alive."

Lei Jingtian didn't think that these would be the first to come out of Lin Ming's mouth. He began to tremble with anger. "You shattered all his meridians and yet you speak such sarcastic words! Today, this old man will beat this little bastard to death!"

Lei Jingtian's momentum exploded. But with Mu Yuhuang in front of him, there was nothing he could do.

Lin Ming said, “All of the actions I’ve taken naturally have a reason, and that is that Lei Mubai is from the South Sea Demon Region. Don’t tell me that the Thunder Sovereign doesn’t know this fact!”

“What!?”

With Lin Ming’s words, the entire audience was startled, their minds shaking. Even Lei Jingtian was filled with disbelief. How was this possible? How had he discovered this!?

However, he had lived for several hundred years and managed not to lose his composure. He immediately denied this. “What irresponsible fiction! Mubai is the genius that I personally discovered within the northern domains three years ago! His background is clean; how could he possibly be a spy!?

Although Lei Jingtian was very skilled at covering his expression, there was still a slight true essence fluctuation that he emitted from the shock of a moment ago. All of this was keenly captured by Mu Yuhuang’s senses.

Chapter 387 – Confrontation

Chapter 387 – Confrontation

…

…

…

Although Lei Jingtian was very skilled at covering his expression, there was still a slight true essence fluctuation that he emitted from the shock of a moment ago. All of this was keenly captured by Mu Yuhuang's senses.

'This old fox!' Mu Yuhuang's face darkened. She finally understood why Lei Jingtian had been so adamantly opposing her, obstructing her repeatedly. It was highly likely that he was collaborating together with Lei Mubai. 'Lei Jingtian most likely sold himself out to the South Sea Demon Region. There's a high chance that what Lin Ming said was true. Action first, consequences later, what a brave boy! The key is, how can he prove this? In this situation it's impossible to torture the information out of this Lei Mubai.'

Mu Yuhuang knew what was at stake. If Lin Ming couldn't provide a clear and adequate explanation, he would most likely die a horrible death. It was impossible for Divine Phoenix Island to protect him in that case.

Lei Jingtian's entire body flashed with arcs of thunder. His eyes were like those of a savage beast staring at its prey.

Even the Deep Earth Sect's Shi Zhongkun was standing behind him. Before, he had been humiliated and defeated by Lin Ming in a battle of words. Now that he had an opportunity to kick Lin Ming while he was down, how could he possibly miss it?

“You are making false allegations boy! Good! What vicious thoughts you have! Because of some dispute, you even shattered all the meridians of Nephew Lei Mubai. If you do not give an explanation for this, then I will break all of your meridians. Otherwise, how much face will my Five Element Region still have!?”

As Shi Zhongkun spoke, the aura of his body erupted. With the combination of two middle Revolving Core masters suppressing Lin Ming together, even though Mu Yuhuang stood in front of him, he still felt the pressure on him surging.

Lin Ming didn’t have a single good impression towards this Shi Zhongkun. His voice was low as he said, “Elder Shi, it’s irresponsible to speak nonsense.”

Shi Zhongkun sneered. “As if you know not to blabber nonsense. You say that Nephew Lei Mubai is a spy from the South Sea Demon Region? Then what evidence do you have? If you cannot produce evidence, then prepare to pay with your life!”

As Shi Zhongkun spoke, the Five Element Region disciples were stirred into a frenzy. Especially those that had been so miserably oppressed by Lin Ming, such as Chu Yunfei, Chen Kun, and Shi Hanshan. All of them were clamoring to have Lin Ming pay with his life.

“Lin Ming, this isn’t a trivial matter. If you have evidence, then quickly produce it. Otherwise, I cannot protect you.” Mu Yuhuang said with a true essence sound transmission. There was a faint hint of criticism in her heart. This was such a great matter but he hadn’t even spoken to her before acting.

Lin Ming took a deep breath then replied, “Senior Mu, I didn’t have a choice; I just didn’t have conclusive evidence at the time to confirm my suspicious. If I had told you in advance, the Council of Elders might even need to be convened. If that happened, I fear that someone might be informed in advance, and the result would be Lei Mubai escaping somehow. Thus I had no choice but to act first and explain later.”

Lin Ming was aware that even though Mu Yuhuang trusted him, she wouldn’t act with just his side of the story. She would absolutely bring this matter up with the Council of

Elders, and then the matter would be dropped. After all, this spy was just a junior. Even if he was killed it wouldn't have a big impact on anything. But if they were wrong, then that would be a catastrophe.

When that happened, Lin Ming would only be able to helplessly watch Lei Mubai leave Divine Phoenix Island and return to his South Sea Demon Region. He would become a serpent that lay in wait to bite him.

Lin Ming had family, he didn't want someone like that aiming for him. One Ouyang Boyan was already enough for him. Ouyang Boyan was from the Seven Profound Valleys so he wouldn't dare to act too recklessly, but as for Lei Mubai, he wasn't restricted by these scruples. Therefore he had no choice but to cripple Lei Mubai to cut off any path of retreat for him.

Mu Yuhuang's complexion completely changed. "What did you say? You don't have conclusive evidence? This was only a guess!?"

Lin Ming said, "No, I still have assurance that I'm right..."

As Lin Ming spoke, he stepped forwards and stood in front of Shi Zhongkun and Lei Jingtian, directly facing the pressure of these two Great Elders.

Shi Zhongkun's expression was a taunting sneer, as if he had already seen the future where Lin Ming's meridians would all be broken.

As for Lei Jingtian, he looked very savage. He felt his heart speeding up a bit, but he still didn't believe that Lin Ming had evidence. As long as Lin Ming couldn't put forth any evidence, he could insist that any accusations Lin Ming made were nothing but baseless lies and slander.

Lin Ming cupped his hands across his chest in a polite gesture and calmly said, "Thunder Sovereign, please be patient. If you are able to confirm that I am lying, then you may kill me or torture me or do anything else you want."

Lei Jingtian frowned, his eyes flashing with murderous intent. “This is what you said! If you do not have evidence, this old man will beat you to death!”

As Lei Jingtian spoke, his eyes were actually on Mu Yuhuang. He said to her, “High Master Yuhuang, this is what your disciple personally said. Do you have anything to say!?”

Mu Yuhuang’s complexion became increasingly ugly. At this moment, no matter how strong she was, it would be impossible to justify any reason to protect Lin Ming.

My Yuhuang’s voice sunk by several points, her voice reaching arctic temperatures, “Since Lin Ming made this promise himself, naturally I will not interfere. If Lin Ming is truly making false allegations, then Thunder Sovereign may handle this matter however he wishes. But if Lin Ming is able to produce evidence, and there are also those who would deny it, then this old woman will personally act and kill everyone who does!”

As Lei Jingtian heard these words that were filled with murderous intent, his heart stilled for a moment. But he still sneered and said, “High Master should remember the words that she has said!”

Since the matter had reached this stage, Mu Qianyu could no longer sit still. She nervously looked at Lin Ming, her heart in tumult.

The entire audience’s eyes were locked onto Lin Ming. Lin Ming took a deep breath, and then asked in a completely calm voice, “There are several questions I would like to ask Thunder Sovereign…”

“Go ahead! I want to know just what you ask!” Lei Jingtian responded in a contentious tone.

Lin Ming said, “First question, when Lei Mubai fought me, was the cultivation method he used from the Thundercrest Sect?”

Lei Jingtian frowned, “No! The cultivation method that Lei Mubai used was one that he found in some ancient runes. Since ancient times, true geniuses have always had a great destiny fall unto them. Obtaining a lucky opportunity from some ancient ruins is a completely normal matter!"

"Then it is as the Thunder Sovereign said." Lin Ming nodded. "Second question. Is Lei Mubai's Thunder Soul handed down from the Thundercrest Sect?"

Lei Jingtian's voice spoke. This boy, was he trying to set up verbal traps for him to jump into?

After thinking about it and not finding out where any of these traps might be, Lei Jingtian said, "No, Mubai found his Thunder Soul after adventuring into an extremely dangerous and ominous land. It is not from my Thundercrest Sect."

Lei Jingtian had made up his mind that he would distance himself from everything as much as he could, in order to prevent Lin Ming forcing him to give unclear explanations in the future, forcing him to lie more.

Lin Ming nodded. "Third question. Who are Lei Mubai's parents? And did Lei Mubai ever mention his own background to Thunder Sovereign before?"

Lei Jingtian said, "Mubai was orphaned as a child. His parents were mortals, and they died in the chaos of war!"

Mortal parents, and they also died. Lei Jingtian believed that no matter how great Lin Ming's ability was, he didn't have the means to prove otherwise.

Lin Ming said, "My questioning is over. Senior Mu, may I request that you lay down an enchantment that can inhibit true essence sound transmissions?"

Mu Yuhuang's eyes shot up. She didn't know what Lin Ming was planning, but she still looked for a Divine Phoenix Island array master and had an enchantment laid down to his specifications that could inhibit true essence sound transmissions.

After Lin Ming confirmed that the enchantment had been laid down, he swiped his spatial ring and took out a red crystal that was the size of a drop of water. “Do you know what this is?”

“Mm?”

Lei Jingtian’s eyes narrowed. From this small little thing, he could feel an ancient and endless energy emitting. Obviously, it was some sort of extraordinary object.

Just what was this?

Lei Jingtian didn’t know, but Shi Zhongkun’s expression changed. He had seen something similar recorded down in the ancient texts before. This boy actually had such a treasure!

Mu Fengxian stood up, her eyes bright. She looked at Lin Ming with a profound expression before saying, “After the fall of the Netherworld Great Emperor, the Devil Demon Heart he cultivated was crushed into three fragments. Rumors said that each of these three fragments were obtained by separate Revolving Core powerhouses, and used to produced many Shattered Demon Heart Crystals. After one dissolves and absorbs this blood essence, it is able to increase a Xiantian master’s chances of reaching the Revolving Core realm. This old woman has seen one before. If I’m not wrong, then this red crystal that Lin Ming has is a Shattered Demon Heart Crystal.

The Netherworld Great Emperor had fallen over 1000 years ago. The Revolving Core old monsters present were only a few hundred years old, and there were very few people that knew just what a Shattered Demon Heart Crystal was. Most people had only seen such an object recorded in the ancient texts. As for someone who had seen one with their own eyes, that would only be Mu Fengxian. At the time, she had already broken through to the Revolving Core realm, and the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal was no longer very useful to her.

Lei Jingtian's eyebrow arched up. 'A treasure that could increase the chances for a Xiantian master to break through to the Revolving Core realm? This boy actually had such a precious object?'

Lin Ming said, "That is exactly what this is."

Lin Ming had obtained a total of ten Shattered Demon Heart Crystals from Zhou Xinyu. When he was being pursued by Huang Zixuan, he had been forced to take half of one. Now, he had a total of nine and a half crystals left over.

Half of a Shattered Demon Heart Crystal was able to help Lin Ming's full body Tempering Marrow reach 5%. After that, he had gone into seclusion on Dark Moon Island for three months. Lin Ming had swallowed many Heaven Opening Pills that had been massively enhanced by medicinal inscription symbols, and had managed to raise his Tempering Marrow to 20%. As for the Shattered Demon Heart Crystals, Lin Ming worried that he had too many pill toxins within his body, so he hadn't taken any more. Now within his spatial ring, were a total of nine and a half Shattered Demon Heart Crystals.

Now that he had to take one out, even Lin Ming felt his heart ache.

"Boy, what are you planning on doing?" Lei Jingtian felt a faintly foreboding feeling in his heart.

Lin Ming sad, "Thunder Sovereign may not know, but the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal contains the remnant will of the Netherworld Great Emperor. After swallowing it, one can sense the energy of the Netherworld Great Emperor… when the time comes, you will naturally know what I mean."

As Lin Ming spoke, he glanced over at the crowd and said, "I would like to request several seniors to come onstage and confirm a matter!"

Lei Jingtian's expression changed. This contained the will of the Netherworld Great Emperor? What did that mean? If he swallowed the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, would he be able to sense something?

He inadvertently glanced at Lei Mubai. He saw that at this time, Lei Mubai was lying on the ground, his face ashen, his lips pale, and his eyes glazed, as if the embers of his life were burning to an end. Lei Jingtian's heart sank; Lei Mubai was finished!

"Elder Jin, may I ask that you step up? And also Elder Bai." Lin Ming separately asked the Golden Bell Mountain Elder and the Arctic Ice Palace Elder. In his opinion, these two forces would be relatively fair. Golden Bell Mountain had always been very low-key. As for Arctic Ice Palace, they were rather cold and proud individuals – they shouldn't have any reason to cover for Lei Mubai. In fact, besides Lei Jingtian, there shouldn't be anyone there that would risk the wrath of the world and sell themselves out to the South Sea Demon Region.

Lei Jingtian's heart went completely cold. He now knew why Lin Ming had asked for an enchantment to be laid down that inhibited true essence sound transmissions. And that was to prevent him from discussing anything with these two Great Elders!

What about those earlier three questions? Why did he ask them? Lei Jingtian was confused, brooding over this. The foreboding feeling in his heart was becoming increasingly intense. He thought that if something happened, he would find a way to leave by himself. As for Lei Mubai, he could die here alone.

Chapter 388 – Alliance

Chapter 388 – Alliance

…

…

…

Lin Ming coolly divided the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal into thirds, and then gave one third to the Golden Bell Mountain Elder and another to the Arctic Ice Palace Elder. These two were still confused about what was happening, so Elder Jin asked, “Lin Ming, what’s the meaning of this?”

Lin Ming faintly smile and said, “Once you swallow this Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, you will be able to feel the energy of the Netherworld Great Emperor. When that happens, you two will discover that this energy is the same as Lei Mubai’s!”

“Mm!?” Elder Jin’s expression chanced. If Lin Ming was willing to use his life as the stake in this matter, he was most likely confident in this!

Elder Jin gave Lei Jingtian a deep look. After he saw the ugly expression of Lei Jingtian, he already had certain conclusions made up within his mind.

Lin Ming bowed and said, “Since this matter is related to my life, I would like to kindly request that two seniors take a pledge to their heart of martial arts that their words will ring true.”

Taking a pledge on one’s heart of martial wasn’t truly effective for any situation. When it came to matters that were extremely important to oneself, one could still break it. But in this situation, the two Elders naturally wouldn’t renege on their word.

"That's understandable here. Then, this old man will swear on his heart of martial arts that every word I say will be true." Elder Jin frankly said.

After Elder Jin made his pledge, the female Elder from Arctic Ice Palace followed him.

The two of them fused their blood with the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal and prepared to swallow it. The Shattered Demon Heart Crystal only had a very small effect on a Revolving Core elder. But, it would still be able to slightly increase their cultivation.

After the two of them swallowed the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal thirds, they sat in meditation and steadily breathed. The two of them had a cultivation at the middle Revolving Core realm. Naturally, once the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal's energy was released into their bodies, it wouldn't be dangerous at all.

The two Elders had agitated expressions. They too had seen the same scene as Lin Ming. They saw the Netherworld Great Emperor as he fought against countless demons. This sort of boundless and unreachable magnificence and momentum that resounded through the universe really made one's mind tremble in awe.

A moment later, Elder Jin let out a long breath; he was the first to open his eyes.

Mu Yuhuang's eyebrows rose. Mu Qianyu's heartbeat also quickened. At this moment, everyone's eyes were focused on Elder Jin.

Lin Ming was silent. He only quietly watched Elder Jin, waiting for his final judgment.

Elder Jing meaningfully looked at Lin Ming. He didn't directly respond, instead asking, "Lin Ming, have you swallowed the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal? Otherwise, there is no way you would have known this so clearly."

Lin Ming nodded, acknowledging this.

“Haha! You are truly a thousand year talent of the South Horizon Region. You only have a cultivation at the mere Pulse Condensation period, yet you can swallow the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal. This old man is too surprised!”

Elder Jin heavily sighed, and then spoke in a clarion tone that resounded through the square, “What Lin Ming said is true. This old man truly felt the energy of the Netherworld Great Emperor come from Lei Mubai’s body. This kind of energy can only originate from a bloodline legacy. If this old man guesses correctly, then this so-called Lei Mubai is most likely a direct descendant of the Netherworld Great Emperor!”

As Elder Jin spoke, the entire audience was petrified. Lei Jingtian’s face was already colored like liver. As for Shi Zhongkun, he also had a very ugly expression. He had come up to antagonize Lin Ming, but he was once again humiliated by him.

Arctic Ice Palace’s Elder Bai also opened her eyes at this moment, slowly nodding, fully agreeing with Elder Jin’s words.

Mu Yuhuang was finally able to relax, her heart calming down. She looked at Lei Jingtian and coldly asked, “Lei Jingtian, do you have anything to say about this? Lin Ming just asked you a question a moment ago, and you said that his parents had been mortals.”

“But according to this old woman, the Netherworld Great Emperor’s descendants had all ran away to the South Sea Demon Region, now becoming the core of that evil sect. This old woman had never once heard that there were any mortals that had this bloodline, and had also died in the chaos of mortal wars!”

Lei Jingtian was forced speechless by Mu Yuhuang’s words, he simply had no way to respond to this. He finally clenched his teeth and said, “Everything that I knew about Mubai’s background was told to me by him, how was I supposed to know what is true or false? Moreover, even though Elder Jin was likely correct in his assumption, that doesn’t mean that it is absolutely true.”

Elder Jin glanced at Lei Jingtian with contempt. At this time, he was still speaking his useless sophistry and attempting to leave a way to back out by saying that he may have been wrong.

Compared to Lin Ming's fuzzy judgment, Elder Jin was much more clear in his assessment. Lin Ming had swallowed the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal a long time ago. As for Elder Jin, he was able to contrast the energy within the Shattered Demon Hearty Crystal with Lei Mubai in front of him. Naturally, his assurance of the facts was much greater.

Seeing Lei Jingtian quibble over such minor issues, Lin Ming grinned and said, "Thunder Sovereign, I just happen to know some methods of torture that are good at extracting information. If Thunder Sovereign isn't opposed, I can attempt to try these methods on Lei Mubai, and perhaps we may be able to obtain some 'unexpected' information.

As Lin Ming bit out the word 'unexpected', Lei Jingtian suddenly felt a cold chill run down his spine. This boy, he was actually threatening him!

As Lei Jingtian looked at this dead-eyed Lei Mubai who was lying on the ground like a dead dog, he felt fear grip him. He wasn't able to guarantee that this fellow wouldn't randomly bite him in his desperate state.

The South Sea Demon Region had a very vile reputation. If Lei Jingtian was known to have formed an alliance with the South Sea Demon Region for his own personal gain, then everything he had ever done would be vilified. He would lose any face he had, and he would be held in contempt by everyone.

Lei Jingtian's face changed colors, alternating between red and blue. As he stood on the stage, there wasn't a single word he could say!

Lin Ming whispered some words into Mu Yuhuang's ear, and Mu Yuhuang suddenly smiled. She waved her hand to release the true essence sound transmission inhibiting enchantment, allowing Lei Jingtian to speak.

“Boy, what do you want to do?” Lei Jingtian asked with a true essence sound transmission. At this time, Lei Jingtian was fuming with outrage. He was a proud and dignified Sovereign of a fourth-grade sect, and yet he was actually pushed to this point by Lin Ming. He even had to humbly talk conditions with Lin Ming; how could he not be angry?

“Thunder Sovereign, perhaps you can speak with Senior Mu about creating the alliance again. How about it?”

Although Lin Ming hoped that he would be able to cripple Lei Jingtian, this was only a fanciful thought. Even it was proven beyond a doubt that Lei Jingtian had secretly made deals with the South Sea Demon Region, he wouldn’t be able to do anything to him. At most, he could only ruin his reputation forever.

After all, Lei Jingtian was the Thundercrest Sovereign, and also an almighty Revolving Core Supreme Elder. What could Divine Phoenix Island do against him? If they killed him here, that would rouse retaliation from the Thundercrest Sect.

“Are you threatening this old man!?”

“Threatening you?” Lin Ming smiled. “Does the Thunder Sovereign still believe that your deal with the South Sea Demon Region can continue in these circumstances?”

Lei Jingtian grit his teeth.

As for Mu Yuhuang, she was smiling. She had never expected that this banquet competition would have such a dramatic result. Lei Jingtian had fallen into his own trap. Just thinking about made her feel extremely satisfied.

Mu Yuhuang intentionally spoke in the presence of everyone, “It seems as if Thunder Sovereign has been deceived by Lei Mubai. If I were the Thunder Sovereign, I would immediately kill Lei Mubai here and clean the sect of this trash.”

Mu Yuhuang’s words had instantly placed Lei Jingtian into a dilemma. If he killed Lei Mubai, that would directly make him an enemy of the South Sea Demon Region. If he didn’t kill Lei Mubai, everyone would suspect that he had an unclear and dangerous relationship with him.

Lei Jingtian clenched his teeth, and sent a true essence sound transmission to Lin Ming and Mu Yuhuang, “Don’t push things too far! Early tomorrow morning I will speak to the Five Element Region’s Elders again about forming the alliance! Now, give me Lei Mubai!”

Now that matters had devolved to this point, Lei Jingtian only wanted to obtain the ancient Devil Tome in Lei Mubai’s spatial ring. Although it was only the first volume and the rest would be impossible to obtain, it was still better than nothing.

Lin Ming said, “Lei Mubai can be handed to Thunder Sovereign, but he cannot be brought down the mountain. As for Lei Mubai’s Thunder Soul and spatial ring, these will be left behind.”

Lei Jingtian frowned, “You still want to loot in this chaos? Most of what is in Lei Mubai’s spatial ring belongs to my Thundercrest Sect! Why should I give anything to you!?”

Lin Ming smiled, “Thunder Sovereign is really forgetful. Before, didn’t Thunder Sovereign say that Lei Mubai’s Thunder Soul and cultivation method were found in some ancient ruins somewhere? Thunder Sovereign also added that since ancient times, geniuses had always had great destinies fall on their bodies. Since what Lei Mubai has doesn’t belong to the Thundercrest Sect, and Lei Mubai is also a spy who was captured by me, then according to this, it stands to reason that everything he has should belong to me. What does Thunder Sovereign think of this?”

As Lin Ming leisurely spoke, his words almost caused Lei Jingtian to vomit blood on the spot.

Lei Jingtian felt that today he had been made into a complete fool, being led in circles all day. He pointed at Lin Ming, his fingers shaking, but ultimately didn’t say anything. Finally, he grit his teeth and turned around to leave. As the Thundercrest Sect disciples saw Lei

Jingtian's anger that was like a billowing inferno, none of them said anything, only quickly following behind him.

Only Zhou Xiaoling was left, slumped over on her chair. She watched Lei Mubai, who was lying prone on the ground like a dead dog, and her eyes glazed over.

Lei Mubai was defeated by Lin Ming… Lei Mubai was a spy… Lei Mubai's meridians had all been wasted by Lin Ming…

As her mind echoed with these thoughts, she felt as if she was going crazy.

Zhou Lie glanced at his little sister and deeply sighed, not saying anything. He knew that at this moment, no matter what he said, she wouldn't listen to him.

On the stage, the only Elder left was Shi Zhongkun. His expression wasn't much better than Lei Jingtian's. He also felt like he had been made into a clown. He had stupidly jumped onto the stage to get some revenge, but not only did he fail, he also attracted scorn and ridicule.

"Elder Shi, is something wrong?" Lin Ming asked with a smile.

Shi Zhongkun coldly humphed, "Truly, heroes come from the young. Young Hero Lin, this old man admires you very much!" After Elder Shi said this, he quickly walked offstage. As for the Deep Earth Sect disciples, they began to file out of the square. At this time, there were only disciples of the four other sects left over. Because of the fight between Lin Ming and Lei Mubai, all of the tables had been overturned and the dishes had all been shattered. Naturally, there was no way to continue the banquet celebrations.

The other four great sects bid their farewells and also left.

Mu Yuhuang was in an extremely good mood. Even if tomorrow's alliance didn't work out, the fact that she could ruin Lei Jingtian's face today also made her feel fabulous.

Not only that, now that she had his weakness, it was highly likely that Lei Jingtian would yield tomorrow. The reason that the last meeting with the six great sects from the Five Element Region hadn't worked out was because Lei Jingtian had bit down and wouldn't let go, not allowing concessions anywhere. Since the other sects didn't want to lose out, the whole negotiation had broken down.

But as long as Lei Jingtian would seal his loud mouth, the negotiations could smoothly proceed.

Mu Yuhuang looked at Lin Ming, revealing a grateful and happy smile. Lin Ming was truly Divine Phoenix Island's lucky star. At today's banquet celebrations, Lin Ming had single-handedly earned the greatest merit!

Lin Ming had not only displayed a magnificent performance as he defeated all the heroic elites that challenged him, allowing Divine Phoenix Island to gain face, but he had also made Lei Jingtian eat his own sh*t, making it so that he had no choice but to renegotiate with Divine Phoenix Island. This reversal of fortune that was impossible for Mu Yuhuang to accomplish had actually been accomplished by Lin Ming.

Chapter 389 – Celebration Party

Chapter 389 – Celebration Party

…

…

…

That night, the usually silent Parasol Tree Pavilion was seething with a festive atmosphere, the entire island overflowing with excitement. Within the glades of the Parasol Tree Pavilion, massive bonfires were held in celebration, with giant parties roaring in full swing.

At Divine Phoenix Island, disciples would rarely eat something like barbecue. Usually, what they ate originated from the spirit valleys. There were spirit grains, spirit vegetables, tender bamboo, and other such delicate and soft foods. There were even many female disciples that hadn't touched meat for years. This was truly a land that was untouched by the tainting smoke and fire of the mortal world.

Divine Phoenix Island was a very serious and no-nonsense land, and the amount of rules one had to adhere to was breathtaking. The chance for one to indulge themselves in a massive bonfire party like tonight rarely happened even once in several years. Without explicit approval, if one attempted something like this, they would be punished and forced to reflect on their faults.

The young core disciples of Divine Phoenix Island – no matter how high and lofty their status – were still youths, and thus still had the mindset and disposition of youths. At night, they would usually seclude themselves in their rooms, cultivating, cultivating, cultivating, and then cultivating some more. This sort of monotonous activity would continue for months on end. After a long time, the suppressed unrest in their hearts made them feel anxious. Thus, with tonight's chance of being able to participate in such a rare bonfire celebration, none of the core disciples or direct disciples dared to miss this chance. The inner court disciples could only mix in by finding an entrance through their connections, vowing to enjoy the absolute revelry that was occurring tonight.

Within Divine Phoenix Island, 80 to 90% of the disciples were women. Not only that, but most of them were the beautiful and exquisite of women. At a glance, a group of these women chattering together was truly a beautiful sight to behold.

Among these individuals was actually the Moon Seizing Sect's Zhou Xinyu. As a new disciple, she didn't have the qualifications to enter a core disciple bonfire celebration like this, but Zhang Zhen remembered that this girl had arrived at Divine Phoenix Island together with Lin Ming, and it was also Zhang Zhen who had received them. Zhang Zhen guessed that Zhou Xinyu might be Lin Ming's maid or even something like a concubine, and that was why he had deliberately brought her here. In Zhang Zhen's opinion, with Zhou Xinyu's talent, she would also be placed as a maid within Divine Phoenix Island. Of course, she might be the head maid and have the fortune of serving the daily living arrangements of a direct disciple.

When Zhou Xinyu had been led forwards by Zhang Zhen, she had felt a bit foggy. She didn't have the qualifications to participate in the morning's birthday banquet, so she hadn't witnessed the fight between the Kings of the younger generation that everyone was abuzz about. She had only heard the details through Zhang Zhan, who had also exaggerated many parts. But in her heart, she still found it hard to believe. A Pulse Condensation period youth was able to compare to a Xiantian master?

Zhou Xinyu didn't need to listen to anything else. Just this thought was enough to be a demonic curse that branded itself onto her heart, making her feel as if she were living a waking dream.

The Xiantian realm… that was once a goal that Zhou Xinyu had struggled towards, and was also the symbol of being a Moon Seizing Sect Elder. If Zhou Xinyu ever saw any of these Elders, she had to be completely respectful and bow.

But now, Lin Ming had attained strength that was equal to an inner court Elder of the Moon Seizing Sect?

As Zhou Xinyu was lost in thought, suddenly she heard Zhang Zhen cry out, “Big Brother Lin, Big Brother Lin!” As Zhang Zhen held a roasted blue-eyed pheasant in one hand, he madly waved to the approaching Lin Ming with the other.

If she didn’t see this with her own eyes, Zhou Xinyu would hardly have believed it. This core disciple of Divine Phoenix Island who had just been full of swagger and bluster a few days ago, was actually charmingly smiling at Lin Ming, taking the role of a little brother greeting his big brother.

Lin Ming had just come back from meeting with old lady Yuhuang and had been invited to participate in this bonfire party. Without a doubt, he was tonight’s center lead.

The entire bonfire party was suddenly in pandemonium, everyone’s eyes turning to look at him. In most of these eyes shined worship and admiration. Of course, there were also some eyes that were filled with envy. And for most of the people here, this was the first time that they had seen Lin Ming.

“He’s Lin Ming? He doesn’t seem like he would be as strong as a Xiantian martial artist.” A 15 or 16 year old inner court disciple suddenly said. As he looked at the aura that Lin Ming exuded, it was much worse than a Xiantian realm master.

“You stupid idiot, you know nothing. Senior-apprentice Brother Lin usually keeps his aura hidden. When he needs to, in a critical moment he can erupt with endless strength. Not only that, but he can erupt twice! It’s no problem for his momentum to increase by five, six, seven, eight times over!”

In the battle with Lei Mubai, Lin Ming’s true essence had erupted twice. The first was when he has used the power of Tempering Marrow, and the second time was when he had opened the Heretical God Force. The impression that this had left on everyone’s mind was simply too deep.

After Lin Ming arrived, he saw Mu Xiaoqing and Mu Dingshan and smiled at them in greeting. Then he walked over to Zhang Zhen and sat beside him.

“Zhou Xinyu?” Lin Ming discovered that Zhou Xinyu was also there.

“Mm, Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang allowed me to come.” Zhou Xinyu carefully put down the barbecue in her hands and said, “I want to thank you. I became an inner court disciple of Divine Phoenix Island and… Her Highness the Saintess also allowed me to study a jade slip with the first layer of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. She also promised that within a month she will transplant the Vermillion Bird bloodline within me.”

Zhou Xinyu’s voice was a bit cautious. Lin Ming’s halo was simply too bright and dazzling now. She unconsciously spoke to him in a respectful manner. As for the young and fanciful thoughts of a girl that she had held for Lin Ming after he had repeatedly rescued her from danger, she had already deeply suppressed these within her heart.

“Good, I’m happy for you.” Lin Ming had mentioned Zhou Xinyu’s matter to Mu Qianyu. With a word from Mu Qianyu, this situation was quickly resolved. Of course, the Vermillion Bird bloodline that Zhou Xinyu would have transplanted within her was far inferior to the one that Lin Ming would receive through the Vermillion Bird blood essence. Although each inner court disciple had the Vermillion Bird bloodline, it was also divided by rank. Mu Qianyu had promised a very high rank to Zhou Xinyu, enough for her to practice the first few layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’, and also to obtain a certain fire-attribute true essence fusion compatibility.

With the pleasant and enjoyable atmosphere of the party, Lin Ming was introduced to everyone by Zhang Zhen. Among many of these were the direct disciples of Divine Phoenix Island, including Yan Fuhong.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Yan.” Lin Ming smiled as he cupped his hands across his chest.

Yan Fuhong's face was somewhat stiff. Originally he would rather die than attend this party, but all the other direct disciples and core disciples were participating. If he didn't come, that would be a blatant admission of his guilt.

Yan Fuhong's heart was troubled. If he had known earlier just how abnormal this Lin Ming was, he would never have had the courage to oppose him. In the future, Lin Ming had the possibility to be a character that exceeded the likes of Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun. If old lady Yuhuang felt like it, she might even randomly assign a title on Lin Ming like the Saint Son of Divine Phoenix Island. Even though Yan Fuhong wasn't a small fish, he wouldn't even be enough for Lin Ming to stick between his teeth.

Yan Fuhong barely managed to cling to the bitter and pained smile on his face. He didn't know whether or not Zhang Yunjian had sold him out, but with Lin Ming's current influence, if he had asked Zhan Yunjian, Zhan Yunjian would absolutely speak the truth. As he thought this, Yan Fuhong's face was like a beaten up eggplant. He raised his head and took a drink of his wine, hesitating as to whether or not he should confess everything and beg for mercy. But at this time, Lin Ming had already turned to leave. Yan Fuhong let out a long sigh of relief, his palms sweaty.

After he had been introduced to most of the disciples present, Lin Ming found a free seat near a bonfire and sat down, placing his total concentration into cooking barbecue. Lin Ming liked barbecue, and he was also very talented at cooking.

Quickly, Lin Ming became to focus of everyone at this bonfire. Of course, the attention of the female disciples was unavoidable. The female disciples of Divine Phoenix Island were famous throughout the entire South Horizon Region; they were top in both quantity and quality. Most of the disciples at this party were women, and they were dressed in exquisite clothing; this was truly a gathering of beauties.

During this period, from time to time an amazingly gorgeous and well-dressed girl would intentionally or unintentionally sashay over to where Lin Ming was at this bonfire.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, that fire origin energy fluctuation I felt during that evening at the Parasol Tree Pavilion was so fierce. I heard that Senior-apprentice Brother Lin has studied the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ for only a few months to reach this level. I’ve practiced for two years and have just broken through to the second layer. Perhaps Senior-apprentice Brother Lin could come over some time and personally guide me?”

A cute and lovable 15 or 16 year girl gazed at Lin Ming with her black eyes shining, hope and longing within them.

“Uh, well… I’ve also only reached the second layer. If I can cultivate to a higher layer, I will have the opportunity to assist you.”

“Really! If Senior-apprentice Brother Lin says so, then a promise is a promise.”

“Mm. A promise is a promise.”

“Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, can you taste this chicken wing that I’ve roasted?” Another cute girl came along. She had brought a carefully selected pheasant wing; this was the best one that she had managed to roast after a long time.

“Thank you.” Lin Ming faintly smiled as he received it, feeling a bit helpless. He was beginning to think that an imbalance between men and women wasn’t necessarily a good thing.

Divine Phoenix Island had an excess of female disciples. If any one of these Divine Phoenix Island girls were to be placed in the mortal world or a small sect, they would be the proud and most talented woman there. Naturally, they had no liking for mortal men. Without mentioning, just the gap of youth between a martial artist and a mortal was enough. As for marrying the disciples of other fourth-grade sects, they would have to face the choice of leaving the sect. But once they left, they wouldn’t be able to continue practicing Divine Phoenix Island’s cultivation methods. And as for staying to enhance the Vermillion Bird bloodline purity in their bodies, that would become impossible.

Because of these reasons, the female disciples of Divine Phoenix Island tried as hard as they could to marry within the sect. Therefore all of the male disciples were extremely sought after. In fact, it was common for very outstanding male disciples to have many wives and concubines. For instance, with Zhang Zhen, a disciple of his level might have several maid disciples serving him in the bedroom even after he was married. A disciple like that within Divine Phoenix Island was equivalent to a janitor disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys in status – there was simply a massive number of them.

Most of the female disciples of Divine Phoenix Island would rather be a concubine than marry into strange and distant fourth grade sects. But as a concubine, they also had to settle on someone. Appearances were secondary. What was most important were their talent and potential.

Someone like Lin Ming, who was very handsome and was also strong to the point of being abnormal, would naturally be their top choice.

Although the female disciples of Divine Phoenix Island had a very noble and virtuous personality, when they were looking for a man, they would drop any qualms they had. Especially when it came to such a top choice like Lin Ming, the slightest bit of hesitation would cause them to lose out.

At first, there were just some girls that came up to chat with Lin Ming out of accident or design. Then, there were girls that started to come up to him, giving him barbecue to taste. Soon a massive plate near Lin Ming was piling over with barbecue. When Zhang Zhen saw this, he was speechless. His stomach was rumbling with hunger, and yet Lin Ming wouldn't even be able to eat all this.

Zhang Zhen couldn't help but take out a few pieces of barbecue from that giant pile. He hadn't even bitten into it when he felt a chill climb up his back. He turned around and was surprised to see several young girls glaring at him with deathly murder in their eyes. Zhang Zhen's neck shrank, and his courage dimmed as he quickly and meekly placed back the barbecue.

……………………………………

As the bonfire party reached its peak, Mu Qianyu arrived. Several of the surrounding disciples saw her and quickly stood up to bow. Mu Qianyu smiled and said, “Everyone relax, please be casual. Today I’ve only come to have a look at the fun, there’s no need to pay attention to me.”

As Mu Qianyu said this, she walked over to the bonfire that Lin Ming was sitting at.

Chapter 390 – Absorbing the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder

Chapter 390 – Absorbing the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder

…

…

…

At the central region of the bonfire party, there was a bevy of six or seven young girls excitedly speaking as they formed a circle. Along with everyone else, it was simply packed tight with people close enough to push each other.

"Lin Ming." A woman's crisp and clear voice sounded.

Lin Ming turned his head to see that the one who spoke was Mu Qianyu.

All the disciples that were sitting around the fire quickly rose up to salute. Compared to an Elder of Divine Phoenix Island, Mu Qianyu's status was even higher than some.

Mu Qianyu smiled and said, "Lei Mubai is locked up in the dungeon, would you like to go and see him now?"

Lin Ming was slightly stunned, then he happily said, "Alright."

Before this, Lin Ming had been called over to Mu Yuhuang, and they had conversed for a good two hours. He didn't even have time to spare a thought to Lei Mubai.

When Mu Qianyu arrived, the entire atmosphere of the party became wary. Mu Qianyu glanced at all the young girls that surrounded Lin Ming and faintly smiled, sending him a true essence sound transmission, “Do you think my Divine Phoenix Island is heaven on earth for male disciples?”

Lin Ming’s voice paused. He ruefully smiled, “Miss Mu, please don’t joke with me. It was just a short time but I’ve already had to make many promises to them.”

“Haha,” Mu Qianyu chuckled, “from now on you may call me Senior-apprentice Sister. Honorable Master has already received you as a disciple. Also, Master Ancestor would like to see you.”

“Mm.”

“Master Ancestor should probably want to discuss the matter of entering the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. That’s right, weren’t you interested in all those things that Lei Mubai had?”

“I am indeed interested.” Lin Ming honestly replied.

“Mm. Master said to hand everything to you as long as you don’t kill him. As I remember, your methods were sufficiently ruthless. The elder that was healing Lei Mubai used a great deal of top medicines, but that fellow is still lying half-dead without much hope to live longer. All of the meridians in his body have been depleted and shattered, and his martial arts have been wasted.” Mu Qianyu looked at Lin Ming, a deep expression in her eyes. This was the first time that she had seen such a martial arts crippling technique. She had no idea where Lin Ming could have studied this from.

Lin Ming laughed twice and didn’t answer. The Realm of the Gods’ Pulse Cutting Palm was an extremely sinister and cruel move. As for wanting to heal the damage, well… not even the miracle medicines of the Realm of the Gods might be effective, much less anything that could be found within the Sky Spill Continent.

“Let’s go.”

The two of them left the Parasol Tree Pavilion together and walked towards Divine Phoenix Island's dungeons.

The Divine Phoenix Island dungeon was located within the hillside and extended several hundred feet deep. Within the depths of the dungeon was an array formation. Once this array formation was fully activated, its defensive capabilities were strong enough to withstand even the full bombardment of a Revolving Core master.

Within the deepest reaches of the dungeon, there was a sealed stone chamber. Lei Mubai was lying there on the ground as if he were dead, his complexion was wan like he had lost all his blood. His spatial ring had already been taken out and placed on a table where it was sealed up, and the Great Desolate Blood Halberd replica was also set aside.

Lin Ming looked at Lei Mubai in this state and knew that his heart had already died. A proud man whose arrogance had sunk into his bones, and had vainly dreamed to one day rule the world and control the fate of all others in his hand, had suddenly suffered such a great attack. In this situation, losing all hope was a completely normal event.

"Lin Ming, you seemed to care about the Thunder Soul in Lei Mubai, right?" Mu Qianyu asked.

"Mm." Lin Ming nodded.

Mu Qianyu's eyebrow arched up. "If I'm not wrong, the final move that you defeated Lei Mubai with not only used a Thunder Soul, but also a Flame Essence?"

Mu Qianyu had a special physique and was very sensitive to anything related to fire. Lin Ming's Thunderfire Annihilation had passed in an instant, but the energy of the Flame Essence had been sensed by Mu Qianyu.

Lin Ming hesitated a bit before honestly acknowledging this. He would be in contact with Mu Qianyu for a long time. Sooner or later, she would find out his secret. Lin Ming said, "My body is special. I can absorb many Thunder Souls and Flame Essences."

Although she had speculated about this earlier, hearing Lin Ming's affirmation caused Mu Qianyu to take a deep breath. Just what kind of bloodline did Lin Ming have? He was actually able to absorb multiple Thunder Souls and Flame Essences? This was simply unheard of!

Normally, as a martial artist's strength grew, they would need to replace the Thunder Soul or Flame Essence within their body. After someone had a Thunder Soul or Flame Essence within their body for a long time, they would be able to smoothly utilize its strength. But once they traded it in for another, more powerful one, they would need to adapt to the new properties of the Thunder Soul or Flame Essence, completely learning and developing new skills. This was a process that took a very long time.

But, Lin Ming was actually able to absorb multiple Thunder Souls and Flame Essences. Not only would he be able to avoid the hassle in this aspect, but he could also increase the power of thunder and fire within his body. This was simply a talent that defied the heavens!

Mu Qianyu looked at Lin Ming as if she were looking at some spooky monster. "Just how many Thunder Souls and Flame Essences can you absorb?"

"This... well, I don't really know." Lin Ming didn't know whether or not the Heretical God Seed had an upper limit. The Supreme Elder of the Realm of the Gods hadn't possessed this secret skill for a long time. Before he could thoroughly research it, he had been reduced to ashes. Now, everything was left over for Lin Ming to ponder himself.

Not wanting to continue this line of questioning, Lin Ming took out a small crystal bottle from his spatial ring. There was a small red crystal sphere sealed within.

"That's right, this is for you..."

Mu Qianyu looked at the small crystal bottle and a surprised expression crossed her face, "This is the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal? You still have it?"

Mu Qianyu saw that this Shattered Demon Heart Crystal looked complete, very different to the one third he had left from proving Lei Mubai's guilt. This sort of treasure would make Xiantian masters of any sect jealous; how could Lin Ming have so many?

"Mm, this is a gift for you."

Lin Ming placed the small crystal bottle in Mu Qianyu's hand. He smiled, jokingly saying, "Since I entered the sect and have a master now, I should give Senior-apprentice Sister a gift on the first meeting."

Mu Qianyu was in the process of breaking through to the Revolving Core realm. Although reaching the Revolving Core realm was only a matter of time, if she had the help of the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, she might be able to make her breakthrough several months earlier. To a top genius, several months was an incomparably precious amount of time.

Mu Qianyu stared at the small crystal bottle that Lin Ming had placed in her hand and muttered, "I really don't know what sort of special body you have. You actually ate this Shattered Demon Heart Crystal!"

"Mm, I ate a bit more than half." Lin Ming casually said.

Mu Qianyu already felt a bit numb. This was a top miracle medicine that even a Xiantian master had to be careful when taking. As for Lin Ming, he had swallowed half with a mere Pulse Condensation period cultivation. Really, this special body of his was too abnormal.

She eventually took the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal. She had wanted to say some word of thanks, but as the words reached her lips, she felt a bit sentimental and decided not to say anything. As she thought back, Mu Qianyu remembered that just half a year ago, she and Lin Ming were strangers. But now, their relationship had developed to the stage where she could accept such a gift without needing to thank him. It was just like they were close siblings.

As she realized they had such a close relationship, Mu Qianyu felt warm in her heart. She looked at Lin Ming with a trace of happiness in her eyes and smiled, “Are you going to absorb the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder? Would you like me to help?”

“Mm. It would be great if you could stay around, just in case something happens.”

As he opened the dungeon seal, Lin Ming went to investigate Lei Mubai’s condition. At this point, his cultivation had already dropped to the Flesh Training stage. Not only was that, but the residual true essence in his body continued to dissipate. Sooner or later, it would all disappear. After another day or two, Lei Mubai would become a cripple; his body would even be worse than a normal mortal’s.

“Lin Ming…” Lei Mubai’s eyes opened as he looked towards the heavens, his mouth spasming as he spat out this hateful name that had become unforgettable to him.

Lin Ming didn’t respond. Instead, he undid the seal on the table and took Lei Mubai’s spatial ring.

“You will die! Wait until the day that the South Sea Demon Region tramples over Divine Phoenix Island! On that day you will be flayed alive and destroyed without even a body to bury!”

Lei Mubai’s life was at its end, and his heart was like dying embers. Now, the only thing that supported him was his undying and eternally utter hatred of Lin Ming.

Lin Ming grabbed onto Lei Mubai’s arm and began to link his true essence to the Heretical God Seed. As he clearly felt the energy coming from the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder, the Heretical God Seed within him began to restlessly spin about.

This was a low-grade earth-step Thunder Soul that was no worse than his Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. If it wasn’t for the fact that Lei Mubai’s cultivation was completely wasted at this time, it would be impossible to seize it.

The Heretical God Seed began to excitedly whine. Lin Ming poured true essence into Lei Mubai's body, turning it into a net of true essence that covered the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder.

Because of Lei Mubai's weakened state, the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder didn't have much ability to resist. After a quarter of an hour passed, Lin Ming's true essence net had finally tightly wrapped around the Thunder Soul.

The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder fiercely struggled under the true essence shackles. However, under the formidable coercive pressure of the Heretical God Seed, there wasn't much trouble it could cause.

Puff!

With a light sound, the blood red Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder was violently pulled out. Lei Mubai's entire body fiercely trembled and he vomited a mouthful of blood. He immediately went limp on the ground as if someone had pulled out his spine.

All of Lei Mubai's ambitions and hopes had come to an end. As Lin Ming looked at his pitiful and wretched appearance, he didn't feel a single ounce of pity or compassion in his heart. Someday, if Lei Mubai ever became an extreme Revolving Core Supreme Elder or even a Peerless Emperor powerhouse, there was no telling how many rivers of blood would flow or how many people would die because they had been used for him to cultivate his martial arts.

As the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder appeared, it was just like a red serpent. Crimson energy recklessly erupted from it, as if it wanted to fly into Lin Ming's body and suck up all his blood essence.

Lin Ming locked his hands together, and according to the method of sealing a Thunder Soul, drew up dozens of runes. All of these runes fell onto the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder, causing its radiance to dim by a few degrees. After several breaths of time, Lin

Ming was able to galvanize his azure true essence into forming a cage, imprisoning the savage Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder.

The deep red Thunder Soul smashed against the cage that imprisoned it. However, it was unable to break through the endless azure true essence.

“This really is a sinister and evil Thunder Soul.”

Lin Ming let out a light breath. Even though it was trapped in a cage, he could still clearly feel the rich blood energy and atmosphere that emitted from the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder. It was as if he had been caught in a hellish blood pond, and all the blood vitality in his body was being sucked out.

“There’s a quiet room at the side. I’ll guard you.” Mu Qianyu said.

“Mm.”

After he walked into the nearby quiet room, Lin Ming sat down on the stone bed and placed a hand on the cage. Suddenly, the true essence he was revolving erupted. A powerful force filtered through the Heretical God Seed and began to influence the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder.

In that moment, the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder that was crazily smashing against its cage suddenly felt uneasy. The vast pressure coming from the Heretical God Seed was causing it to feel fear.

As the immense cover of pressure began to fall down, the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder felt increasingly uneasy. Its manic efforts of breaking out of the true essence cage increased as it impacted the cage again and again. A crack had actually developed in the endless azure true essence, spreading out!

“Do you need me to help?” Mu Qianyu asked. Lin Ming had to handle the last and final absorbing process himself. But, she could still assist in suppressing the Thunder Soul at the start.

“No need!” As the azure true essence cage finally broke, Lin Ming reached out a hand and grabbed the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder. Then, he pressed it into his chest!

Chapter 391 – New Thunder Soul

Chapter 391 – New Thunder Soul

…

…

…

As Mu Qianyu saw what Lin Ming had done, she was scared into a cold sweat. Lin Ming had actually directly pressed the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder towards his heart! But, the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder was an evil existence that could swallow blood essence. Directly putting such a thing into your heart was just too risky!

"Lin Ming, you…"

Chi chi!

The clothes on Lin Ming's chest were burned to ash. In that instant, his skin there had also lost color. This was the direct result of the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder absorbing one's blood essence!

Mu Qianyu's mind jumped. But as she thought of the repeated miracles that Lin Ming had accomplished in the past half year, she didn't say anything. Instead, she fished around in her ring for some pills that could help replenish blood. She found a Nine Revolution Blood Vitality pill, and gave it to Lin Ming.

The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder could swallow one's blood essence. Having a pill that could restore the power of blood vitality a bit would greatly assist in alleviating the pressure on Lin Ming.

Lin Ming swallowed the Nine Revolution Blood Vitality Pill and waved his head, saying, “I’m alright.”

Initially, when his cultivation was only at the peak Bone Forging stage, he had been able to absorb the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. Now that his cultivation had increased by a great deal, it naturally wouldn’t be dangerous to absorb the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder.

In fact, as the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder entered his heart, it was already completely suppressed by the Heretical God Seed. Due to their toughness and strength, Lin Ming’s meridians were already able to withstand nearly any impact it could offer.

As for the blood that the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder was swallowing, or even the blood essence, Lin Ming simply didn’t care. This was a necessary process in absorbing the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder.

One had to use their own blood vitality and blood essence to feed the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder.

If the power of one’s blood vitality wasn’t enough, then the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder would suck dry all of that person’s blood, and that person would die. Afterwards, the Thunder Soul would just escape.

On the other hand, if one’s power of blood vitality was robust enough and their meridians were also tough enough, they would be able to suppress and control the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder. As for their blood essence that it had absorbed, it would all become their own again. As long as the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder didn’t escape, there would be no loss.

But the feeling of having the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder absorbing his blood essence was also a very unpleasant sensation. Lin Ming felt half his body go cold, and his hands and feet became dull. His sense of touch was becoming less sensitive, and he felt like the other half of his body didn’t even belong to him.

The power of thunder within the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder had a very powerful corrosive effect. When it circulated in one's meridians, it was no different than a strong acid – it was an incomparably burning and painful feeling. Along with the mass consumption of blood essence, one would feel like they were dying.

Mu Qianyu could clearly see thin black strings running out from Lin Ming's heart like words, spreading everywhere throughout his body. They spread to his arms, his legs, and even his neck.

This was the breath of death; it was caused by the loss of a massive amount of blood essence.

Mu Qianyu had a certain understanding of the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder. Although there were many martial artists that were able to finally absorb it, their body would suffer a major deficit in their blood and undergo necrosis in certain parts because of a lack of blood. Afterwards, they would have to spend a long period of time recuperating in bed. She didn't hope that this was what would happen to Lin Ming. If the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm officially opened and Lin Ming wasn't able to attend, he would need to wait another three years. Once he was almost 20 years old, he would have missed the best time to participate.

As Mu Qianyu thought this, she also took out a Blood Yang Pill from her spatial ring. This Blood Yang Pill was refined from 1000 year old Blood Yang Lingzhi and was a priceless treasure. It was also one of the pills that Mu Qianyu saved as life insurance.

"Lin Ming..."

"I'm alright. I'm just letting it absorb whatever blood essence it wants. I have an idea of what I'm doing."

Lin Ming pushed away the Blood Yang Pill. His power of blood vitality was extremely formidable. In addition, he also had the endless azure true essence. With these things, he would be able to restrain the breath of death that spread in his body. There was no need for Mu Qianyu to waste such an important pill that was used to insure her life.

The reason that he was allowing the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder to crazily swallow whatever blood essence it wanted to in his heart was to fuse with it on a deeper level and have better control over it. Finally, he would completely integrate it into the Heretical God Seed.

But he didn’t expect that the savage and greedy nature of the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder had even surpassed his imagination.

At this time, the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder in Lin Ming’s body was like a massive leech that was plump with blood. With the great attractive force of the Heretical God Seed acting on his entire body, no matter how hard or frantically the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder struggled, it still wouldn’t be able to escape from this vortex of suction.

“Ah”

The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder suddenly uttered a hoarse scream. At one end, an open mouth formed. This mouth was only the size of a bean, but it had long rows of dense and sharp fangs. As Lin Ming looked within his body, his heart suddenly went cold; it was too spooky and unnatural for a Thunder Soul to suddenly develop a mouth with fangs in it.

“Ah! Ah!”

The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder screamed over and over, and suddenly bit into the walls of Lin Ming’s heart!

Puff! Flesh and blood splattered out!

Lin Ming’s body shook, his face went pale. No matter how extremely formidable his blood vitality was, it was very difficult to withstand the pain of his heart being injured!

Lin Ming grit his teeth, and then conjured up a net of azure true essence that fell over the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder, forming a cocoon that wrapped around it.

“I see… you’re the one that’s making trouble!”

Lin Ming became aware of a will that was placed within the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder, and his mouth curved up in a smile. With a thought, a crazy surge of true essence emerged around the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder. In that moment, there was only a tearing ‘chi’ sound as if a flame was going out. A wisp of a residual soul turned into smoke as it was destroyed from within the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder.

Lei Mubai, who had been lying down on the stone floor next door, fiercely trembled. He spat out a mouthful of blood, and this blood even contained a faint hint of blood essence.

His complexion was now no different than golden funeral paper. His lips trembled; he knew that the wisp of residual will that he had hid within the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder had been exterminated by Lin Ming!

He humorlessly smiled, his entire mouth wet with blood. He had placed that wisp of remnant will within the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder a long time ago, before his cultivation had been wasted. He thought that even if he couldn’t prevent Lin Ming from absorbing the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder, he should still at least be able to damage the blood vitality of his enemy. But he didn’t that that his residual will would be so easily destroyed.

Lei Mubai was filled with a sense of despair. His eyes looked up at the ceiling, and now there was no longer any light left within them.

…………………

After Lei Mubai’s residual will was destroyed, the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder seemed to have lost its strength and vigor. It no longer had the ability to resist the massive attractive force, and it was sucked flying into the vortex of the Heretical God Seed.

"Ahhh!"

The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder gave out a final miserable shriek before it was received into the coiling dragon steel needle. The two inch long coiling dragon steel needle suddenly grew to three inches, and on the surface of it appeared a small red snake. This small red snake coiled around steel needle a total of eight times.

It connected together with Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder.

Bang!

In that instant, a new coiling dragon steel needle was born, and an unbridled power of thunder erupted forth, flooding through all of Lin Ming's meridians. This power of thunder was so brutal that Lin Ming only felt his entire body shake and his skeleton pop all over. The impure pill toxins within his meridians were all burned by a blazing hot power of thunder, instantly turning into ash!

Lin Ming stuffily coughed, then vomited a mouthful of black blood.

Mu Qianyu was shocked. She quickly held onto Lin Ming and propped him up, disregarding the taboos that existed between men and women. She extended her perception into Lin Ming's body, and suddenly she was shocked, and then immediately overjoyed.

Lin Ming's meridians had linked up once more and the tenacity of his meridians had increased by another great margin. He had finally stepped into the peak Pulse Condensation period!

"Lin Ming, you broke through!"

"Mm, it was a breakthrough."

Lin Ming let out a long breath. He had already been stranded in the late Pulse Condensation period for far too long. During the three months he had spent at Dark Moon Island, he had built up too many pill toxins within his body. He had been constantly refining and eliminating them, but it was still very difficult to cleanly remove them all. He hadn't thought that this time, with such a savage power of thunder coursing through him, it would completely remove all of the impurities in his body. The black blood that Lin Ming had spat out was all of the pill toxins and impurities in his body.

Lin Ming's cultivation had already approached the peak Pulse Condensation period. At the banquet competition, his cultivation had consolidated once again, and in addition to breaking through to the second layer of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' as well as clearing up all of the pill toxins in his body, he had successfully reached the peak Pulse Condensation period.

"I wonder if my strength can exceed an early Xiantian master now?"

When Lin Ming opened the Heretical God Force, he was able to attain the strength to suppress a common early Xiantian master. But, the Heretical God Force could not last in perpetuity. When a battle dragged out for a long time, he would most likely lose. At best, he would fight to a draw.

Now that he had broken through to the peak Pulse Condensation period, Lin Ming's strength had surged upwards again. He wanted to find an early Xiantian master and test out his newfound strength; being comparable to an early Xiantian master and defeating one were two entirely different concepts.

He immersed his sense in the newly evolved Thunder Soul. Suddenly, Lin Ming was surprised, "Mm? There's this change?"

On the new coiling dragon steel needle, he felt two energies. He felt the manic and violent Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder that was like an unstoppable force, but he also felt the evil and cruel Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder that thirsted for life!

"It actually completely retained both Thunder Souls' characteristics?"

"Not only that, but it was also improved to a medium-grade earth-step Thunder Soul!"

Although it was currently the weakest and most basic of the medium-grade earth-step Thunder Souls, Lin Ming was satisfied.

As Mu Qianyu saw Lin Ming's excited appearance, she finally relaxed. It seemed that Lin Ming had managed to keep everything under control. At this time, even the black lines along Lin Ming's body were beginning to fade away, and they soon disappeared. His original healthy looking skin was also restored to its vibrant color.

Mu Qianyu's beautiful eyes turned. She suddenly had an idea that she wanted to take a close look at Lin Ming's Thunder Soul. But the truth was that this sort of request was very rude and impolite for martial artists. Even between friends, one wouldn't rashly ask to see the other's final resort. Not only that, but this Thunder Soul also involved the secrets within Lin Ming's body.

However, once a girl's curiosity was aroused, it was very difficult to restrain. Mu Qianyu really wanted to know why Lin Ming was able to contain two Thunder Souls in his body. She blinked, and then softly said, "Lin Ming, may I have a look at your Thunder Soul?"

Such a soft and sweet tone was very comfortable to hear. Lin Ming also didn't have much hesitation towards Mu Qianyu. He directly took out the Divine Demon Thunder Soul.

Chi!

The three inch long Thunder Soul steel needle immediately leapt out from Lin Ming's fingertips and paused atop his palm, circling there as it floated.

On the steel needle, there was a Purple Flood Dragon that coiled around the body, but there was also a red serpent. One dragon, one snake – both were very vivid and lifelike. Every scale was outlined, and even their clear eyes could be seen. It was just like a real dragon and snake had been trapped within the steel needle.

As the Thunder Soul appeared, reddish-purple arcs of electricity scattered out in all directions, and the thunder origin energy of the entire stone chamber suddenly became frenzied as if it were constantly being sucked into the Divine Demon Thunder Soul, forming a purplish red vortex.

Mu Qianyu's bright eyes widened, shock coloring her expression. "This… this is the Thunder Soul?"

Chapter 392 – Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm

Chapter 392 – Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm

…

…

…

This was the first time that Mu Qianyu had seen a Thunder Soul that looked like this. A Thunder Soul could manifest into an object, but, a martial artist needed to compress their true essence to an extreme degree. But Lin Ming's Thunder Soul didn't seem to have any compressed true essence to it, and yet it already had this appearance.

"Can I… touch it?" Mu Qianyu asked, after hesitating for a moment.

"Of course you can." Lin Ming replied. There wasn't any danger in touching the Divine Demon Thunder Soul when it was in this state. Not only that, but the truth was that even if he stimulated the Divine Demon Thunder Soul to its maximum strength, it was just impossible to wound someone like Mu Qianyu who had an extreme Xiantian cultivation.

Mu Qianyu stretched out a jade-like finger, and gently placed her fingertip firmly on the Divine Demon Thunder Soul. As she traced her finger up Lin Ming's steel needle, she was able to feel an ice cold sensation, as if this Thunder Soul steel needle was really made of metal.

"How amazing…" Mu Qianyu was aware that this was part of Lin Ming's secret, and was certainly related to his special physique. That Lin Ming would be so unreserved in sharing such a secret with her really caused a strange sensation to flutter in her heart.

She faintly smiled, and then retracted her jade-like finger. She said, "The Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm will open half a month from now. You should rest well tonight. Tomorrow, the High Ancestor will see you. She'll also pass down Vermillion Bird blood essence as well as the transplantation method so that you can obtain a greater harvest it the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm."

"Mm, ah, yes, the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal that I gave to you earlier, you should absorb it here if it's convenient."

Mu Qianyu thought about it for a moment and then said, "Okay."

In order to take the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, one needed to fuse it with their blood essence to guide it into their body. Mu Qianyu bit her own finger, and then forced a drop of blood essence into the crystal bottle. After the dark red blood and the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal touched, the blood immediately began to bubble in excitement, the blood rolling around in waves. The Shattered Demon Heart Crystal began to melt until it finally became a thick, viscous red liquid within the bottle.

An endlessly vivid energy spread out along with it, as if this bottle of dark red liquid came from an unknown world. It was like an ancient and undiscovered gate was slowly opening its doors to Mu Qianyu.

"It's so mystifying!" Mu Qianyu said.

"This Shattered Demon Heart Crystal contains the residual will of the Netherworld Great Emperor. Once I absorb his will, my understanding of the origin of all martial arts will also deepen by a bit."

Mu Qianyu nodded, and swallowed down the bottle of sticky red liquid. The sweet, coppery taste of blood began to spread within her mouth.

As the red liquid entered her body, she immediately felt the blood within her body move, as if it were boiling. A scalding heat began to swell up, spreading along her meridians and heating up her body.

"Mm?"

Mu Qianyu's mind shook, and she was suddenly pulled back to her spiritual sea. The scene that Lin Ming had seen before was now replaying itself in front of Mu Qianyu. Mu Qianyu saw the Netherworld Great Emperor grasp his great axe and crazily slaughter 10,000 demons until the heavens themselves were dyed red in blood. This was truly a shocking sight.

Mu Qianyu had a profound cultivation. Although she hadn't yet reached the Revolving Core realm, she was already comparable to a common early Revolving Core martial artist. As for her combat strength, it was even beyond that. Thus, the remnant will of the Netherworld Great Emperor wasn't able to shake her mind.

It was just the energy that was contained within the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, but Mu Qianyu wasn't able to absorb in in a short time. This was a complete Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, and her cultivation was lower than Elder Jin and Elder Bai's by a great degree. Mu Qianyu's breathing quickened, and she began to perspire with drops of fragrant sweat.

"How do you feel?"

"A bit hot."

Mu Qianyu took a handkerchief from her spatial ring and wiped away her sweat. Her neck was flushed red with blood.

As Lin Ming saw the beads of crystal clear sweat drip down Mu Qianyu's pale cheeks, he was dazed for a moment. To him, it seemed as if there were simply no impurities within her body. Otherwise, if she ate this sort of pill that washed the muscles and marrows, she should at least have discharged some impurities.

However, as he remembered Mu Qianyu's daily life in Divine Phoenix Island where she only ate the rare and valuable fruits of spirit valleys and drank the sweet morning dew, he realized that it was normal for her to have no impurities in her body. When Lin Ming had first eaten half of the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, his entire body had bled from the head down, but Mu Qianyu had only sweat a bit.

The sweat matted her hair and caused her clothes to stick tightly onto her body. This was quite an uncomfortable feeling. Mu Qianyu couldn't bear this, so she tugged at her wet clothes, accentuating the contours of her body.

Seeing this sight, Lin Ming couldn't help but swallow a mouthful of saliva. A bit embarrassed, he said, "I'll go and get some ice water."

"No need. I'll finish soon, I've already absorbed more than half. After this I'll take a bath." As she spoke, Mu Qianyu seemed to suddenly realize something and her cheeks flushed red. She moved her fire-attribute true essence and all the sweat on her body evaporated.

As her clothes dried and loosened again, that beautiful spring scene disappeared. "Tomorrow morning I will take you to see the High Ancestor."

Lin Ming awkwardly coughed, "Okay."

…………………………

On the back mountains of Divine Phoenix Island, there was an abundance of green plants in bloom. At this time in the morning, a dense mist shrouded the mountain, the entire mountain looking like a picturesque scene from a painting. A spring stream trickled, and a gentle breeze rolled in. The music of the morning faintly sounded in the air.

Between the bamboo groves, there were deep and winding trails that spread through. On the bamboo leaves was fresh morning dew that dripped down. As Lin Ming walked down the trail, he sighed; this was truly like an immortal paradise on earth.

This bamboo grove was where Mu Fengxian lived in seclusion – Emerald Bamboo Pavilion.

At the end of the path, there was an elegant bamboo house. As one walked up, they could smell the fragrant bamboo mixed with a deep earthy scent, causing anyone here to feel relaxed and comfortable.

As Mu Qianyu and Lin Ming arrived, they were about to announce themselves when Mu Fengxian's voice sounded out, "Come in."

"Lin Ming, Honorable Master has called for you. I'll wait for you here."

Lin Ming nodded, then opened the bamboo leaf door and strode in.

The furnishings within the bamboo house were very simple. There were a few wicker chairs and a plain wooden table. As one walked on the bamboo floor, they could even hear a creaking sound.

Mu Fengxian was sat on one of these wicker chairs and wore a long red dress. Her silver hair was tied back with a hairpin, and she smiled as she looked at Lin Ming, glancing over at a wicker chair opposite to her. "Sit down."

"Mm."

Lin Ming politely sat down.

Mu Fengxian had already heard the news that Lin Ming had broken through to the peak Pulse Condensation period and wasn't surprised. She poured a cup of tea and handed it to Lin Ming, slowly saying, "As Yuhuang's personal disciple, you may call me Master Ancestor. Half a month from now, the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm will open. Do you know what the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm is?"

Lin Ming shook his head. Before now, all he had heard about the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm were some vague rumors, and he didn't know any specifics.

"The Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm is a legacy that the Ancient Phoenix Clan left behind. Its history goes back tens of thousands of years – or even hundreds of thousands of years..."

Lin Ming was shocked, "That long? But Divine Phoenix Island is only..."

"Mm. Divine Phoenix Island only has a history of 3000 years. My Divine Phoenix Island may claim to be descendants of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, but the truth is that 3000 years ago, my Divine Phoenix Island was just a third-grade sect with mostly female cultivators. At that time, Silent Demon Emperor City had just risen to prominence. Because my Divine Phoenix Island had many young female disciples, the sect feared that they would be attacked by Silent Demon Emperor City, and the women captured as slaves to use in sexual cultivation. Thus, the sect decided to relocate and escape to the South Sea's Divine Phoenix Island. This island wasn't originally called Divine Phoenix Island. Instead, it was named that afterwards.

"After the sect was stationed here, the Sect Master came across a great lucky chance within Divine Phoenix Island. She was the first person to enter the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. After she came out, she had managed to obtain the Vermillion Bird bloodline, the Blue Luan bloodline, and a massive amount of treasures. Afterwards, she founded Divine Phoenix Island. Therefore, to my Divine Phoenix Island, the Divine Phoenix Mystic realm is its origin and also its lifeblood."

As Lin Ming heard this, he was shocked. This was the first time that he had heard the history of Divine Phoenix Island. Because the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm could only be accessed by the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island, he had assumed that it was a smelting trial that the disciples used to practice.

But this explanation also made sense.

"Master Ancestor, what happened to the Sect Master afterwards?" Lin Ming couldn't help but ask.

"That Sect Master was also the founder of my Divine Phoenix Island. Afterwards, she paused at the extreme Revolving Core realm, and her immortal soul entered the eternal Samsara over 2000 years ago."

Lin Ming sighed, this was to be expected. Otherwise, there was no way that Divine Phoenix Island would only be a fourth-grade sect. "The founder obtained such a great lucky chance but still wasn't able to become a Peerless Emperor. No wonder they say the there are only a mere 10 Peerless Emperors within the entire Sky Spill Continent."

“Hahaha,” Mu Fengxian smiled, “The path from Revolving Core to Peerless Emperor is truly a long and unbearable road. Break into Revolving Core before 30, extreme Revolving Core before 50, and become a Peerless Emperor at 100 years! Just this step is able to trap countless unrivalled geniuses for 50 years. But although there are countless hardships and obstacles, there are far more than a mere 10 Peerless Emperor powerhouses. It’s just that you are too weak so you have no way of knowing any of this. Many Peerless Emperor powerhouses live in seclusion in certain desolate lands of the world. Of course, even if there are some that occasionally appear, you would never know this.”

Lin Ming nodded. As one climbed up to a mountain peak, they would also be able to see the scenery below that mountain peak. If he ever became a Peerless Emperor powerhouse, he would also be able to step into the world of a Peerless Emperor.

Mu Fengxian stood up. She took a red box from her spatial ring and handed it to Lin Ming, saying, “This is Vermillion Bird blood essence. Place it onto your bodily acupoints a drop at a time and you will gain the qualifications to practice the core sections of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. You must slowly build this up, and then diligently work towards stepping into the Revolving Core realm. As for becoming a Peerless Emperor, your talent is enough; the rest will depend on your destiny!” Throughout the ages, there were many martial artists that had the talent to become a Peerless Emperor. But the vast majority of them fell or had an accident, and were ultimately unable to step foot in this realm.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and respectfully thanked Mu Fengxian, he then put away the Vermillion Bird blood essence. He would etch this kindness into his heart.

Mu Fengxian nodded and said, “Now go. Half a month from now, the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm will open, and you will gain one of the spots to enter the Ancient Phoenix main hall. During this time, make sure you practice well.

Lin Ming bowed and then left. Mu Fengxian sighed, a deep emotion swelling in her chest. Destiny was an illusory dream. As for how great Lin Ming’s destiny was, it would manifest during his trip to the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

To people, destiny was like a rainbow. For instance, the founder of Divine Phoenix Island was able to obtain a great lucky chance inside. However, it was a pity that the founder's talent was missing a single step, and they were ultimately unable to become a Peerless Emperor.

Chapter 393 – Drops of Blood, Entering the Mystic Realm

Chapter 393 – Drops of Blood, Entering the Mystic Realm

…

…

…

The 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' was an extremely broad and profound cultivation method. As Lin Ming practiced more and more, he increasingly became aware of this point. Not only was the cultivation method to practice contained within, but there were also many techniques to control fire, fire-attribute martial skills, and most importantly, there was also the understanding of others regarding the origin of fire. That is to say, the Concept of Fire.

Something like a Concept could only be realized through one's own contemplation, it couldn't be explained. Just a few words were enough to provide many nights of deep reflection.

In addition, there were also ways to cultivate the mind and heart. There were ways to adjust one's mentality to communicate with fire origin energy, so that a martial artist could completely immerse themselves in a sea of fire origin energy and break through their shackles.

However, these mysterious skills all depended on one's own understanding and studying. As for Lin Ming's perception, it was considered quite good. In these recent days, he had learned a great deal.

Time passed day by day. Lin Ming would wake up every morning and absorb the rising energy from the fire of the sun, practicing all day. At night, he would again ponder the cultivation methods. Such a day seemed boring, but the wonderful feel of advancing in one's cultivation let Lin Ming be at ease and happy.

Of course, not every day was spent on statically practicing from dawn till dusk. Occasionally, there would be a 15 or 16 year old girl, or even a group of them together, coming to Lin Ming, asking him for guidance on some puzzling questions about the cultivation method.

These girls with their soft-spoken voices, sweet tone and flushed cheeks as well as watery eyes that were filled with hope... Lin Ming found it hard to refuse them. Every time he would try to carefully explain to the best of his knowledge. In truth, Lin Ming's theoretical knowledge wasn't much, but fortunately, these girls were usually the lower end disciples at the Pulse Condensation period, so he was able to barely deal with their questions.

Every night, Lin Ming would take a drop of Vermillion Bird blood essence and place it on the acupoints of his body. In 12 days, he had used 12 drops of blood essence, half of which were placed between his eyebrows.

As the Vermillion Bird blood essence touched the skin between his eyebrows, he had a faint dizzy feeling as it slowly penetrated through. At this time, Lin Ming felt as if all the blood essence of his body was moving towards this spot between his eyebrows, as if it were trying to turn into a crystal there.

As this feeling slowly vanished, the Vermillion Bird blood essence was also thoroughly absorbed. Lin Ming then felt his entire body fill up with blood vitality, and energy surged within him to the point of overflowing and roughly moving everywhere in his body. With a casual movement, he could even hear popping sounds in his bones. This was an extremely comfortable feeling. Every time it happened, he wanted to bend back and let out a great yawn.

“Drinking the immortal dew wine from the Realm of the Gods’ Supreme Elder’s memory is probably like this feeling.” These past two years, Lin Ming had eaten a great deal of medicines. But most of these medicines were extremely overbearing and contained a cruel energy; it was almost the same as eating poisoned food.

This Vermillion Bird blood essence was the first one that had felt thoroughly pleasurable as he transplanted it within himself.

In order to promote the absorption within his body, Lin Ming would take out the Purple Comet Spear after he placed a drop on his body and then practice his spear skills. After Lin Ming had his match with Elder Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao Chi from Golden Bell Mountain and competed in spear skills with him, Lin Ming’s skill at spear play had made great progress. He repeatedly practiced what he had left, and he felt the strength of his body endlessly growing.

Lin Ming looked at the leftover Vermillion Bird blood essence, there was only around 10 drops of so left; it was enough for 10 days. Seeing this made Lin Ming feel some regret.

Also, this Vermillion Bird blood essence was like the Heaven Opening Pill. The first drop would have the greatest and most obvious effect. Afterwards, each following drop would be continuously weaker. Now, on the 12 drop, the effect wasn’t even half of the first drop’s.

As this continued, he estimated that the last drop might only have around 20% of the first drop’s effect. This was truly a waste.

As Lin Ming thought this, his mind suddenly stirred. Maybe he could save these last remaining drops and give them to Qin Xingxuan?

Qin Xingxuan’s talent could only be considered the most basic within Divine Phoenix Island. But with the help of the Vermillion Bird blood essence, she would have a ray of hope that she could one day step into the Revolving Core realm.

However, Divine Phoenix Island had given the Vermillion Bird blood essence to Lin Ming, and that was to let Lin Ming use it. He had no right to give it away to someone else. The only way would be if Lin Ming's status rose once again, and he gained a strong enough influence and authority to do so.

Lin Ming shook his head, and temporarily erased this thought, putting away the Vermillion Bird blood essence. He would wait until he had the strength to do so before thinking about this again.

…………………

In a flash, another three days passed. Finally, it was the day to enter the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

Within the depths of the Divine Phoenix Island mountain range, a spirit boat slowly landed within a clearing of the mountain valley. A line of people stepped down from the spirit boat, including Mu Yuhuang, Mu Qianyu, and Lin Ming.

This was where the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was located. Just by looking at the surrounding scenery, it was no different than anywhere else on Divine Phoenix Island. It was just that the surrounding mountains formed a tight formation around this mountain valley, and the heaven and earth origin energy here was very vibrant, especially fire origin energy and water origin energy.

Lin Ming glanced at the disciples that would enter the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm with him. Mu Dingshan and Mu Xiaoqing were impressively among them. In fact, nearly all of the core disciples and direct disciples had arrived, even Zhang Zhen was among them. It was just that he wasn't eligible to enter the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall.

Seeing Lin Ming, Zhang Zhen happily smiled at him and waved.

"During this trip into the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, your primary concern should always be your own safety. Do not try anything beyond your capabilities. Understand?" Mu Yuhuang asked.

Every time the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was opened, there might some disciples that died. Although this was a very small probability, these people – especially those that entered the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall – were those most outstanding talents that Divine Phoenix Island had cultivated. If they died every time, then Divine Phoenix Island would truly suffer.

And what was most horrifying was that life or death within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm didn't depend on one's talent or strength. The weak might live, and the strong might die.

This was mainly because those geniuses that were strong and had immense talent would always be particularly confident in their own ability, and try to reach out to a great lucky chance. Finally, the results of this would only be that the dangers that followed would multiply by several fold, and they would fall like a meteor from the heavens.

For the weaker, lower-tier disciples, having several die was bad enough. But if direct disciples on the level of Mu Dingshan died, that would cause Divine Phoenix Island to be pained like their heart was bleeding.

Mu Yuhuang's eyes swept over all the disciples that would enter the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm one at a time. Finally, her eyes paused on Lin Ming. She said to him in a true essence sound transmission, "Lin Ming, the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall has a history of tens of thousands of years. The Ancient Phoenix Clan also had a much richer and purer Saint Beast bloodline than we do. In fact, they might even have had the bloodline of a God Beast, and the talents that existed in their era are beyond our understanding. You may be considered a monstrous talent in this life, but compared to those existences from tens of thousands of years ago, you might not necessarily be too outstanding. Therefore, do not be blinded by your confidence, and do not try to do anything that is beyond your capabilities in the smelting trial. If something happens to you, that is a blow that my Divine Phoenix Island may not be able to bear!"

What Mu Yuhuang was most anxious about was Lin Ming. She knew that back when he had been at Thundercrash Mountain, Lin Ming had scaled the summit when he only had a cultivation at the mere peak Bone Forging stage. He had taken advantage of the battle between Mu Qianyu and the Thunder Flood Dragon to directly sneak into the Flood Dragon's cave and then loot the treasures within, finally obtaining the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo and the Magnetic Birthstone. Because of this Magnetic Birthstone, he was able to absorb the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. That was a Thunder Soul that only a middle Xiantian realm master could absorb, but Lin Ming had done so with just a pitiful Bone Forging stage cultivation!

At first, Lin Ming was not a disciple of Divine Phoenix Island. Thus, when Mu Yuhuang had heard of this from Mu Qianyu, she thought highly of and also appreciated Lin Ming's decisive actions and courage in the face of danger. But now, Lin Ming had become her disciple, and Mu Yuhuang's feelings had undergone a complete change. When most people saw others' children taking risks and placing themselves in danger, they might praise them. But when they saw their own children doing the same, they might not feel the same way. Instead, they would only be anxious.

If Mu Yuhuang had a choice, she would rather Lin Ming would be able to steadily and calmly reach the extreme Revolving Core realm in the future; this would also be a great additional strength to Divine Phoenix Island.

As for the path to becoming a Peerless Emperor, one needed to constantly seek opportunities. It could be said to be a dangerous path with many narrow escapes. Mu Yuhuang didn't dare to guarantee that something as illusory and vague as destiny would be able to accompany Lin Ming through his journey. Through the ages of the Sky Spill Continent, there were countless top geniuses that had tried to become a Peerless Emperors. But the number that succeeded was mind-bogglingly low.

"Disciple understands." Lin Ming nodded.

"Good. Well, now I will join forces with the other Elders to open up the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. The ordinary disciples usually stay inside for three days. After those three days, they will automatically be transferred outside. As for those disciples that enter the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall, they will have 7 to 10 days. When the time arrives, everyone will also be sent out. Now, would any of you like to withdraw?"

After Mu Yuhuang casually asked, no one volunteered to quit. Of course, this was natural. All of the disciples were struggling for spots to enter the Divine Phoenix Mystic realm. Such insignificant danger was simply nothing to them. As people that walked on the path of martial arts, they had to experience countless life and death dangers. Even in a friendly competition of martial arts, it was possible that a situation would arise in which they would be killed. If they feared death, they would forever be stranded in the Houtian realm or Xiantian realm, and find it near impossible to ever reach the Revolving Core realm.

“Very good!”

Mu Yuhuang nodded, “Tianguang, we’ll work together to break the seal so that these juniors can go in.”

As the powerful figure of the Blue Luan Faction, Revered Master Tianguang was the representative of the Blue Luan Faction disciples. He nodded, waved his hand, and a shining blue sword flew out; this was splendidly a high-grade earth-step treasure weapon.

Mu Yuhuang gathered her hands together and released a series of flaming runes that blended together with Revered Master Tianguang’s blue treasure sword. A moment later, there was a ‘zi zi zi’ sound, and the space in front of the crowd began to tremble as if it were the surface of a still lake that was being disturbed, ripples constantly appearing.

Suddenly, a jet black vortex appeared out of thin air, constantly spinning with the faint sound of wind and thunder coming from it. The surrounding heaven and earth origin energy frantically converged on this vortex. The origin energy around was restless, and great gusts of wind picked up, causing everyone’s clothes to flutter in the wind and all the rocks and sand to fly in the air.

Finally, after several dozen breaths of time, the swirling vortex slowly stabilized and the wind died down. In front of the crowd, there was a black entrance that was 10 feet wide. This opening through the void was suspended in the air, and it was impossible to see inside, as if it were the gateway to another world.

“Go! And remember, do not do anything that exceeds your limits!” Mu Yuhuang repeatedly urged.

Mu Dingshan and Mu Xiaoqing were the first to jump in. Their figures flashed for a moment, and they were suddenly swallowed up by the black opening. Lin Ming followed them and also jumped in.

Chapter 394 – Concept of Fire

Chapter 394 – Concept of Fire

…

…

…

Lin Ming was dizzy from the feeling of space warping around him. By the time he opened his eyes, his heart shook. Before entering the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, Lin Ming had imagined many times just what the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm would look like. But he had never imagined that it would be such a shocking scene!

In front of Lin Ming was an endless expanse of dark red rock. It was barren, without a single touch of green, and between the red rocks were large flowing rivers of lava. These rocks seem to have been roasted red by the lava. Giant pools of boiling lava appeared everywhere, with giant bubbles of air tumbling upwards through the lava. With a thick popping sound, the noxious smell of sulfur washed out along with a billowing wave of heat. This haze was toxic, a normal person would have suffocated and died here after just a moment.

If it was this alone, Lin Ming wouldn’t have been so shocked. But what he found unbelievable was that behind him was a vast field of ice!

Wind and snow mixed together, and the fields of ice were as smooth as a mirror. The tips of massive glaciers stuck up through the ground like high towers, and they glowed with a cold sheen, shining and twinkling like a field of stars. The strong wind brought a thick hail of ice that scattered in all directions, its speed like arrows. If a normal person stood here, this hail would have been enough to pierce through their body, ripping an opening through flesh!

On one side was a land of lava and on the other was a field of ice, one side blazing hot and the other freezing cold. This extremely contradictory feeling was unbelievable.

"This is the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm!" Mu Dingshan said in one breath. This was the second time that he had come here, and he had seen this scene before.

The Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm had a prohibitory limit based on one's skeletal age. In addition, the time gap between each opening was very long. Normally speaking, a martial artist would only be able to enter here twice in their lifetime.

On the road that Lin Ming stood on, bright lights flashed periodically. With every flash of light, a new disciple was warped in. After they adapted to the strange feeling of space warping, they opened their eyes and were dumbfounded after seeing the same scene that Lin Ming saw.

This was the first time that these people had come to the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. Although some of them had already heard others describe the scene within, truly seeing it for the first time was an inexplicably shocking feeling. After all, hearing and seeing were two completely different matters.

After all of the disciples had arrived, Mu Dingshan said, "Good. This Divine Phoenix Realm is an independent world, it isn't part of the Sky Spill Continent. The two lands of fire and ice are actually divided by an enchantment and extend a great distance. Choose one according to your attribute and enter! Blue Luan Faction disciples enter the ice field, and the Vermillion Bird Faction disciples enter the lava world! Remember, do not forget Honorable Sect Master's warning, and take your own safety as the highest priority. Now, either go with others or go by yourself. Disperse!"

Independent world?

As soon as Lin Ming looked up, he saw that there were actually two blazingly hot suns hanging in the air. The sun of the fire world was extremely hot, and even emitted a faint blue light that looked like a massive fireball in the sky. Around the edge of the sunlight, the air itself was distorting from the heat, making the sun seem like an illusory mirage.

But the sun in the ice world seemed lifeless, like a distant and unaffected object. As the sunlight from there shined down on one's body, there wasn't even the slightest sense of heat. Instead, it only caused one to feel like they had fallen into a pool of ice water. This marvel, if not an illusion, was truly impossible to be seen within the Sky Spill Continent.

If this wasn't the Sky Spill Continent, and was a separate and individual world, then was this a world that was naturally formed, or was it a world that was created by a Supreme Elder?

Lin Ming couldn't help but indulge in his fanciful daydreams. At this time, Mu Dingshan asked, "Lin Ming, would you like to go together? Or would you like to go by yourself?"

"If I go by myself, will I be able to reach the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall? Or would I become lost?"

"No, this world has endless layers of profound principles and enigmas that direct it. No matter where you go, three days from now you will eventually come to the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall."

"Then I'll go alone."

"Haha, I also suggest you go alone. This Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm is an incomparably broad and vast land. Until now, there has never been any disciple in any generation that has ever managed to trace the end of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, even though every time we are warped here brings us to a different location. The Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm contains countless lucky chances waiting around, but if several people go together, the area they will be able to cover is much smaller. Even if they come across some lucky chance, it would be difficult to split it between multiple people. If you go alone, then everything will depend on your own destiny. Naturally, that is the best path to take."

“I would also like to advise Junior-apprentice Brother Lin that the deeper you go, the more dangers there are. If you would like to remain conservative and a bit safer, then stay around in the vicinity of the edges; there won’t be any danger there. Three days later, you can also enter the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall. Of course, if you do so, you won’t encounter any lucky chances.” Mu Dingshan was the one here with the highest understanding of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, so he told Lin Ming everything he knew.

The deeper one went, the more danger there was. But correspondingly, the lucky chances they would encounter would be greater too.

Lin Ming understood this, and he was also increasingly clear why within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, it was possible to die no matter how high your strength or talent. Or why it was possible that if one was exceptionally talented, their chance of dying was higher. This was because the temptation of exploring the deepest and most unknown parts of the mystic realm was too hard to resist.

To those that walked on the martial path and dreamed of climbing to the peak of all martial arts, these individuals had the blood and will of adventurers flowing through them; this was a desire that was impossible to suppress.

Lin Ming also wanted to journey to the depths. If he stayed nearby on the edges, he would only walk through the paths that others had crossed, and there would be no meaning to it.

“Thank you for the warning Senior-apprentice Brother Mu. I shall go first then.” Lin Ming cupped his hands together, bowed, and then left alone. The direction that he chose was naturally the world of fire. The more he walked, the faster he went, until he was nearly to the point of flying.

As Mu Dingshan saw Lin Ming disappear into the endless red mist and lava, he sighed. Although Mu Yuhuang had urged over and over to be safe, she was probably well aware that Lin Ming would journey through thick and thin to explore the deepest parts of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. Otherwise, what point was there in entering the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm?

The blazing hot wind blew in his face as if it were roasting him. The air was filled with the pungent and sour smell of sulfur, and as he looked in the distance, everywhere he saw was covered by a thick red fog. Lin Ming's vision was already reduced to around 1000 feet, but the deeper he continued to go, the more his field of vision would decrease!

After flying at high speed for almost a full day, with Lin Ming's endurance, he simply didn't need to stop and rest. This sort of speed was rare even through all the previous generations of Divine Phoenix Island disciples.

The Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm had no night; the fierce and fiery sun simply didn't move. After an unknown amount of time, Lin Ming suddenly heard a loud rumbling sound coming up from above him. As he looked up, he immediately sucked in a breath. In the sky, there were dozens of rainbow colored beams of light that were crashing down at an alarming rate.

These were shockingly ten feet wide meteorites, or even larger. They were wrapped in burning flames and had long tails of fire. They whistled as they came smashing down onto the ground.

How much power was contained within these meteors? A meteor just a few dozen feet wide might be able to completely level a village with the impact! This was not something that mortal flesh was able to resist, unless it was a Supreme Elder from the Realm of the Gods.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

As meteorites crashed in the distance, they smashed into the dark red rock or into the giant pools of lava, sparking massive explosions. Lin Ming could see lava shooting hundreds of feet into the sky, or even a thousand feet and more!

The ground trembled and a dreadful shock wave billowed past; it was impossible for someone to stand firmly on the ground here.

Lin Ming maintained complete concentration. The speed of the meteorite shower was simply too quick. Although the area was big, he couldn't outrun the explosion, he could only escape in advance. Fortunately, the shower of meteorites wasn't too dense, and massive meteorites were in the minority.

As Lin Ming stimulated the bodily true essence that protected him to the max, he moved according to the trajectory of the rainbow colored lights he saw. From this, he was able to determine the direction and speed at which the meteorite was falling. At this moment, his eyes widened. He saw a three foot wide smaller meteorite rapidly approaching him, it would crash not too far from where he was!

Golden Roc Shattering the Void instantly erupted. Lin Ming let loose his entire perception to track the path of the meteorite while he galvanized the true essence protecting him to the limit in order to avoid the full impact of this meteorite.

If the shock wave of the collision hit him from such a close range, the true essence that protected Lin Ming would be torn apart like paper.

Bang!

The meteorite hit the ground, and the resulting explosion was like a deafening thunderclap to Lin Ming's ears, nearly blowing apart his eardrums. He was sent flying by the shockwave, and fell directly into a pool of thick lava.

Fortunately, the azure true essence that protected Lin Ming was endless. Being in this lava for a short period of time was nothing.

As Lin Ming instantly jumped, he saw that the rocks in the ground around him had cracked for hundreds of feet. The lava shot up into the sky, and fire blazed like a soaring inferno, directly piercing through the sky!

This is…

Lin Ming stared with wide eyes. He could clearly feel the active whining of the Heretical God Seed within him as well as the restlessness of the Fire Essence. Suddenly, Lin Ming was enlightened… originally, there wasn't any fire in the giant pool of lava, but after the meteorite struck, it actually formed a massive flame…

Bang! Bang! Bang!

As meteorites crashed down in the distance, the roaring flames reflected in Lin Ming's pupils. It was like he could see the origin of fire…

The origin of fire was it's Law, and also the Concept of Fire.

The collision, movement, and the following terrifying explosion created a massively blazing flame. The more violent the explosion was, the more terrifying the flames would become.

If a high-speed meteorite strike the ground and create such a terrifying fire, then what if it were true essence instead?

If high-speed true essence struck, would it create an even more terrifying fire?

Woosh!

Another meteorite came crashing towards Lin Ming, it was even larger than the last one. Lin Ming flew away with Golden Rock Shattering the Void. However, he didn't go too far. His intention was to be a bit close, so that he could keep his perception in constant contact with the meteorite.

Bang!

The earth seemed to tear apart. The billowing lava and violent destructive shockwave that followed was even more terrifying than the last time and waves of lava were sent surging out. Lin Ming stood within the ensuing storm, and was instantly sent flying backwards.

Lin Ming felt like his internal organs were struck by a hammer and he spat out a mouthful of blood. However, his eyes were filled with joyous ecstasy!

"The Concept of Fire, I've touched it!"

Even though he was just severely injured, Lin Ming didn't care. He summoned his true essence and thrust out with the Purple Comet Spear!

Facing the wave of flame and lava that approached him, the Purple Comet Spear swept through the flames, colliding with the tide of lava.

The essence of the fire and heat was produced through impact...with true essence simulating this, the power of fire could immediately be doubled!

Chapter 395 – Fallen Star Flame

Chapter 395 – Fallen Star Flame

…

…

…

“Hou!”

Under the thrust of the spear, the tide of surging lava was like a tsunami that was split in half!

“Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky!”

A blazing crimson phoenix soared into the skies. This phoenix’s body was actually several times more powerful than the one displayed at the banquet competition! And the flames the flickering on its body were also several times more luminous!

Without a doubt, this was related to breaking through to the peak Pulse Condensation period and also gaining a deeper understanding of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. But the greatest factor was that Lin Ming had suddenly touched upon the origin of fire, and had now comprehended the Concept of Fire!

With the Concept of Fire supporting the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’, his move now seemed to contain a soul!

The long spear sliced through the lava, spear light shining through. Lin Ming’s spear skills were becoming increasingly swift and increasingly fierce. With each thrust of his spear, flames howled as they burned. In that moment, the Purple Comet Spear itself seemed to have turned a fiery force of nature, unstoppable!

Lin Ming's mind flashed through the formulas and laws of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. Then, his spear potential turned, "10,000 Flames Burning World!"

This was another fire martial skill contained within the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' that was a level harder than Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky. In order to use it, one would normally need to reach Perfection of the second layer of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. But, with the help of the Vermillion Bird blood essence and the Concept of Fire, he was able to use this technique.

"Hou!"

Dozens of true essence flames shot out, piercing through the wall of lava like arrows. The flames split in all directions, incinerating the void!

10,000 Flames Burning World could be used in a large area attack, but it could also be concentrated all onto a single target. It was the strongest move within the second layer of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'.

As Lin Ming continuously used 10,000 Flames Burning World, at this time, the shower of meteorites began to thin. At the final moment, Lin Ming suddenly felt a terrifying oppressive presence falling down towards his head. As he looked up, he gasped. Far in the sky, there was a giant flaming meteor that was dozens of feet wide, wantonly smashing down. It had dozens of flaming tails that trailed its presence!

Without regard for anything else, Lin Ming instantly turned around and bolted away. This massive meteor would undoubtedly be able to shatter even a mountain.

The moment that the meteor landed, Lin Ming plunged headfirst into a pool of lava.

Bang!!!

The collision was as if the hand of a god had struck the earth, completely tearing apart the land. Lava everywhere flew thousands of feet into the sky, breaking through the clouds.

Lin Ming hid within the lava while stimulating the azure true essence to protect himself, also releasing his perception to investigate what was happening on the surface. The final meteor had impacted around five or six miles away from Lin Ming, and the intense damage had caused a massive amount of rocks to swell back like a wave, forming a crater in the earth. The lava around it began to flow into this crater.

Lin Ming gasped, and then jumped out from the lava.

If someone were to be hit directly by such a giant meteor, even a Revolving Core elder would perish.

As the last meteor fell, the meteor shower completely stopped. Unfortunately, even though the last meteor had caused a massive explosion, Lin Ming had to hastily dodge and hadn't been able to release his perception to sense the Concept of Fire.

The fires still raged as before, and the ground was left in a complete mess. The choppy lava boiled up, and scorching waves of heat erupted.

Lin Ming stood on the hot rocks, carefully feeling and grasping what he had just experienced. The faint touch he had of the Concept of Fire was becoming increasingly clear.

"The Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm is truly wonderful. Without being able to witness such a rare and fantastic scene, wanting to touch upon such an ethereal Concept of Fire would be far too difficult!"

Comprehending the Concept of Fire was more difficult than comprehending the Concept of Wind. One needed a fire-attribute physique that had a high fusion compatibility, perception that was higher than others', and also years of practicing with fire origin energy. This was the only way to gain a bit of insight into the Concept of Fire. For instance, the Sunfire Princess was a character on this level.

Concepts were an idea that could not be explained, only personally understood. Lin Ming had relied on simulating the meteorites smashing into the ground with his true essence in order to understand the Concept of Fire. But in truth, this was only a single kind of comprehension of the Concept of Fire. Even if he were to tell others, they wouldn't be able to imagine this, and they also wouldn't be able to simulate this scene with their true essence. They would most likely blindly attempt and waste their time, ultimately amounting to nothing.

After Lin Ming received his spear, he was about to leave when he had a very strange feeling come over him.

'Mmm? This is...'

The Heretical God Seed began to restlessly move in agitation. The surrounding fire origin energy trembled. The source of all of this seemed to be from the impact site of that giant meteor.

Lin Ming couldn't help but take a couple of steps towards this peculiar sensation. Suddenly, he heard the wind whistle, and all of the surrounding fire origin energy seemed to be pulled in by some absorbing force, flowing past him and into that giant meteor crater.

The fire origin energy began to speed past him faster and faster. The cries of the Heretical God Seed became increasingly rapid. A moment later, a giant vortex of fire origin energy formed within the meteor crater, crazily absorbing the fire origin energy from a massive radius. A strong wind picked up from this vortex, scraping past Lin Ming's body like a knife across his skin.

"What a horrifying absorbing force!" Lin Ming could even feel the fire origin energy within his own body being hauled towards this force. But, under the pressure of the Heretical God Seed, the fire origin energy was eventually contained within him.

The absorption was becoming increasingly wild. Even the lava ponds began to seethe and boil in excitement, and the giant bubble of lava became increasingly violent, the level of the lava pools rising by a great deal.

Bang!

With a muffled sound, a column of lava burst dozens of feet into the air, and was pulled in by the absorbing force, rushing towards the meteorite crater.

After this first column of lava burst out, more and more columns of lava began to erupt into the sky, all of them flowing into the central crater. The crater was like a whale that greedily absorbed everything. The red rocks on the floor were broken apart by the raging fires, and shattered pieces of stone flew into the air. The entire earth began to collapse as avalanches occurred all over.

Lin Ming was stunned; just what was going on? The Heretical God Seed in his body was screaming in an increasingly urgent manner. He helplessly watched as lava filled the giant crater that was produced by the meteor collision, and then even began overflowing past the high ridges. In the heart of the lava lake, a deep blazing crimson light shot into the sky. This blazing crimson light was only a foot thick, but was like a divine sword that stabbed the vault of heaven.

This shining crimson light began to slowly coalesce into a fist-sized object. Within this red light, Lin Ming felt a terrifyingly rich and pure fire origin energy.

This… this… this was…

Flame Essence!?

Lin Ming's mind shook, was he witnessing the birth of a Flame Essence?

The flames of the world had spirit. In some strange and dangerous lands with an incomparably rich fire origin energy, it was possible that a Fire Essence would be born. The requirements for a Flame Essence to be born were extremely harsh; it was similar to the qualifications a martial artist needed in order to become an Emperor level powerhouse. Not only did there need to be an exceedingly rich fire origin energy, but it also required the hand of destiny.

The birth of a Flame Essence often required many different coincidences to coincide together into an accidental result; this was simply impossible to duplicate.

In many cases, lands where special types of fire had existed for thousands of years would be unable to give birth to a Flame Essence.

Witnessing the creation of a Flame Essence was thousands of times more difficult than finding a Flame Essence!

Thus, as Lin Ming watched this Flame Essence continuously grow with wide eyes, he was beyond shocked.

This was the Fallen Star Flame, a Flame Essence that was born from the combustion of a meteor. The amount of this type of Flame Essence that existed in the world was rare to the point of sending those who searched for it into despair; it was nearly a unique existence in the Sky Spill Continent.

The Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm originally contained an incomparably rich fire origin energy. As the lava surged for countless years, undoubtedly many types of Flame Essences had been born. And in this place, a Flame Essence was already being formed. But, it was far from completion.

And then a miracle had happened. The massive meteor had smashed the ground, and terrifyingly high temperatures had skyrocketed along with a fervid impact, becoming the primer to manifest the gathering of the power of fire.

However, the original Flame Essence that was brewing here was still unable to form. As the Fallen Star Flame absorbed the fire origin energy that had gathered here for tens of thousands of years, a new Flame Essence was born!

The Flame Essence that was being born had actually become the nutrition of the Fallen Star Flame. In turn, the Fallen Star Flame's grade had climbed to an even higher level.

Lin Ming was short of breath. Just what grade was this Fallen Star Flame?

Lin Ming took out his Purple Comet Spear. He tread his feet, flying forwards until he reached where the Fallen Star Flame was. The speed at which he flew was very slow; he was being vigilant of any and all dangers.

"The energy of the flame is increasing, it's already at the medium-grade earth-step level!" Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. A medium-grade earth-step Flame Essence would be intelligent. Combined with its extremely fiery power of fire, he didn't know whether or not he would be able to deal with it.

Lin Ming approached a foot at a time. When he was only 200 feet away from the Fallen Star Flame, a sudden change occurred!

The Fallen Star Flame violently trembled, and suddenly the lava pool exploded. A thin column of lava shot towards Lin Ming's chest like an arrow.

"It's quite intelligent, it even knows to attack me!"

Lin Ming drew back, circulating the true essence in his body. The Purple Comet Spear slashed down, and the thin column of lava was dispersed. However, the lava pool growled again, and dozens of the small magma columns shot up, striking towards Lin Ming like a fiery python. Lin Ming calmly wielded the Purple Comet Spear in his hand and thrust out at each lava column. Every spear strike contained the Concept of Fire, and the columns of lava broke one after another!

Lin Ming launched Golden Roc Shattering the Void and gradually moved forwards, slowly approaching the Fallen Star Flame.

When he was once again 200 feet away, this time, another change occurred!

The Fallen Star Flame suddenly issued a sharp wailing scream that caused one's scalp to tingle! The vortex of origin energy suddenly began to violently move, the absorbing power increasing. The ground was crushed, and huge holes appeared. Large chunks off rocks flew into the air until there were hundreds, then thousands, all shooting towards the Fallen Star Flame.

Ka ka ka ka –

The pieces of rocks constantly fell onto the Fallen Star Flame. Because the speed of the rocks was so fast, a whistling sound rang in the air.

The fire of the Fallen Star Flame was extremely hot and savage. All of the rocks that touched it were instantly refined, turning all of the impurities into black smoke with only the purest essence left behind. This rock essence constantly gathered and compressed until it completely wrapped the Fallen Star Flame. The volume continued to increase.

Gradually, it unexpectedly cemented into a rock beast. Its body was 100 feet long and 50 to 60 feet tall. It was a deep crimson red all over, and had the appearance of a leopard.

Lin Ming sucked in a breath. What was this?

Roar!

The crimson rock leopard let loose an earth-shattering roar, and the ground trembled beneath Lin Ming’s feet.

Chapter 396 – Subdue

Chapter 396 – Subdue

…

…

…

The higher grade a Flame Essence was, the more intelligent it would be. Some high grade Flame Essences could even use attribute skills. This Fallen Star Flame had probably used such a skill.

The crimson leopard roared and rushed towards Lin Ming. Lin Ming wanted to swallow the Fallen Star Flame, but the Fallen Star Flame also sensed the rich and pure fire origin energy within Lin Ming's body and wanted to eat him to evolve.

As this 100 foot tall and several dozen thousand jin heavy rock beast ran, the entire ground shook and lava shot out. Lin Ming held his spear flat in front of him, revolving the true essence in his body to the limit.

As the fiery rock beast was about to lunge at him, Lin Ming's pupils contracted and he thrust out his spear.

Ka!

The Purple Comet Spear pierced through the fiery rock monster's chest, but the powerful impact had caused the Purple Comet Spear to bend like a crescent moon.

Lin Ming used his waist and pushed forwards. The true essence that was hidden with his bone marrow completely exploded, and his strength instantly reached a terrifying degree. He forcefully picked up the giant rock monster!

"Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky!"

Bang!

A flaming phoenix soared into the sky, striking the stomach of the fiery rock beast and violently detonating.

"Mm? No damage!?"

With a single Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky, it had managed to create some cracks within the belly of the fiery rock beast. But compared to its giant body, it was simply negligible damage.

"Hou!" As the fiery rock beast landed, it opened its mouth and spat out a giant purple fireball. Lin Ming was too close and wasn't able to dodge it in time. Instead, he flourished the Purple Comet Spear and struck the fireball.

The fireball blew up, and the purple flames landed on Lin Ming's body before sputtering out. The true essence that surrounded Lin Ming's body made 'chi chi chi' sounds as it was melted away. Lin Ming's blood tumbled; the power of fire in that attack was like a serpent that snuck into his body where it rampaged along his meridians. Finally the Heretical God Seed shook, and used its suppressive power to restrain the power of fire.

"This purple fire can actually corrode the true essence that protects my body?" Lin Ming's heart went cold. This monster was truly tricky to deal with. Not only was it immune to fire based attacks, but the purple flame attacks it sent out were extremely fierce. If a normal Divine Phoenix Island disciple had run into this spook fellow, they would have been unable to deal with a single attack.

The Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was a world of fire and ice. To the Divine Phoenix Island disciples that specialized in the fire and ice elements, there were lucky opportunities to be found everywhere. However, even if one came across a lucky chance, wanting to take hold of it wasn't an easy matter.

For instance, the Flame Essence would rebel to protect itself, and fire-attribute or ice-attribute valuable materials had powerful vicious beasts protecting them. If one wished to comprehend Concepts, they would also have to place themselves in danger. However, if one wasn't lucky, it would be extremely easy to die.

"Roar!"

The fiery rock beast opened its gaping jaws and took a deep breath. All of the nearby fire origin energy nearby began to rapidly gather, forming a vortex of energy.

Lin Ming's eyes widened. Without hesitation, he activated Golden Roc Shattering the Void and threw himself to the side.

Bang!

A purple beam of intense fire shot out from the fiery rock beast's mouth, striking the lava pool that had been behind Lin Ming. Plumes of lava soared hundreds of feet into the sky.

After the strike missed, the fiery rock monster suddenly sped towards Lin Ming. Although it had a massive body, its speed was extremely quick, and every step it took was like a clap of thunder.

At this time, Lin Ming had flown in the air. His figure paused for a moment as he connected true essence to the Heretical God Seed. The Thunder Soul howled!

At the moment that the fiery rock monster lunged at Lin Ming, he became like a feather that was blown back by the wind. As he flew backwards, he opened his hand and a three inch long steel needle appeared, shooting out like a flash of electric light. Its target was the fiery rock beast's left eye!

Pah!

The Divine Demon Steel Needle pierced into the fiery rock beast's eye and then exited from the other side!

Rock exploded and and purple red blood sprayed out. As Lin Ming took a closer look, that blood was actually thick magma.

To use fire rocks as meat, magma as blood, and a Fire Essence as its heart; such a vicious beast caused Lin Ming to be amazed in acclaim.

However, it had just taken form and still hadn't absorbed enough fire origin energy. Thus, its strength was reduced by a great deal.

As its left eye was ruined, the fiery rock monster let out a painful and angry roar. It aimed towards Lin Ming and spat out several purple fireballs.

However, each one of these fireballs was dodged by Lin Ming. With a flick of his fingers, the Divine Demon Steel Needle roared out and pierced through the fiery rock monster's right eye.

"Awoo-!"

The fiery rock monster issued a pitiful cry. Lin Ming saw an opportunity and shot forwards like an arrow; the Purple Comet Spear in his hand thrust straight towards the fiery rock monster's gaping mouth.

The power of thunder and fire intersected; Thunderfire Annihilation!

Bang!

Thunderfire Annihilation exploded within the center of the fiery rock monster's mouth. For a period, crushed rock and magma scattered in all directions, filling the sky. From the front of the fiery rock monster, half of its body had been exploded into bits. Lin Ming's concentrated his true essence into protecting his body and resisting the shattered rocks and magma that struck him. At the same time, he released his perception, accurately sifting through the tens of thousands of fragments until he found the true body of the Fallen Star Flame.

“There it is!”

Lin Ming saw that around 100 feet away, there was a palm-sized ball of purple flame; it had a very glum expression.

Lin Ming waved his sleeve and his body was like a fish as it passed through the 100 feet distance, immediately grabbing the Fallen Star Flame.

The Fallen Star Flame instinctively felt a deep and abiding fear, wanting to escape. But it had suffered a great blow a moment ago, so it was impossible for it to escape Lin Ming’s grasp.

As Lin Ming held onto the Fallen Star Flame, the azure true essence he surrounded his hand with began to issue ‘chi chi chi’ sounds. In an instant, a hole had burned through the azure true essence that protected his body.

“This Fallen Star Flame has such a strong corrosive strength!”

There were many special Flame Essences and Thunder Souls that were born in special conditions and locations, thus obtaining different properties. For instance, the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder was born in desolate lands that were filled with blood and death, so it had have bloodthirsty characteristics. As for this Fallen Star Flame, it actually had corrosive properties.

Because of the extreme rarity of the Fallen Star Flame, the ancient texts only contained a vague and cursory mention of it. There hadn’t been a description of just what sort of properties it had.

Lin Ming first drew up a few dozen azure runes, letting them all fall onto the Fallen Star Flame. This was the technique to seal a Flame Essence.

Chi chi chi!

Every rune that touched the Fallen Star Flame was corroded into ashes. Lin Ming remained unperturbed, his fingers moving faster and faster until they were just shadows.

As the number of symbol runes continuously increased, the Fallen Star Flame fiercely struggled. Many runes were destroyed, but there were a number of runes that managed to stick onto the Fallen Star Flame. Finally, the layer of runes became thicker and thicker and the light of the Fallen Star Flame became increasingly dim, until it was completely sealed.

Lin Ming let out a long breath. His locked his fingers together and released winding threads of true essence that wound around the Fallen Star Flame, eventually forming a cocoon around it.

Success.

Lin Ming took out a special jade box and placed the true essence cocoon within, and then placed it into his spatial ring. Now was not a good time to absorb the Fallen Star Flame. After all, it was still a medium-grade earth-step Flame Essence. With Lin Ming's current strength, he would just barely be able to absorb it. Not only that, but there were boundless dangers within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm and there was no one here to stand guard over him. If anything went awry at all, he would most likely die.

Chapter 397 – Ancient Phoenix Main Hall

Chapter 397 – Ancient Phoenix Main Hall

…

…

…

The environment within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was incomparably complex and convoluted. The lucky chances here had accumulated for 100,000 years, or even several hundred thousand years.

Because the fire origin energy within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was incomparably pure and rich, it was extremely easy for all sorts of fire-attribute materials and treasures to develop here, including even Flame Essences.

Within the Sky Spill Continent, there was an extremely low number of Flame Essences, each one of these Flame Essence was exceedingly rare. But within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, there was comparatively many of them. However, it was a pity that there were too many limitations on entering the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. The time limit was only a few days, and even then, if one wished to find a Flame Essence, they would need extremely good luck.

After Lin Ming obtained the Fallen Star Flame, for the following two days he only found a common stalk of Flame Grass within a pool of lava. Besides that, he had found nothing else.

As the third day ended, that would also be the last day to explore the wide open land of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

The sun began to fall close to the ground, and then it rose again. Afterwards, at the end of Lin Ming's sight, a fire-red palace appeared. The palace waved in his eyes, as if it were a mirage in a desert.

"This is the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall."

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes and traced a jade tablet within his spatial ring. This was the key to entering the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall. There was a total of 16 jade tablets. If one didn't have this jade tablet, then as the 16 people entered the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall, they would be sent out of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, thus ending their trial.

At the same time, within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, Mu Dingshan, Mu Xiaoqing, and the rest of the 16 individuals all saw the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall appear in front of them. These past three days, they each had their own harvests. Mu Dingshan had found a very precious fire-attribute ore. He also found a valuable material that could be used to increase the fire-attribute true essence within one's body. As for Mu Xiaoqing, she had obtained a Snow Lotus Ice Blossom after subduing an ice-attribute spirit beast.

However, these were all inferior to the precious Fallen Star Flame that Lin Ming had obtained. Not only was Lin Ming's destiny greater, but even if Mu Dingshan had come across this medium-grade earth-step Flame Essence, he wouldn't have had the strength to deal with it; the only route he would have been able to take was a hasty escape.

In similar situations of luck, the ability one had corresponded to how much of an advantage they could grasp from their lucky chances.

Lin Ming looked in the direction of the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall, activated his movement technique, and then flew towards it.

The people had a saying that one would run their horse dead before reaching the mountain in sight. Lin Ming thought that the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall was only a palace, and it would take about an incense stick of time to reach. However, he hadn't expected that all his ideas were incorrect; it had taken him nearly two hours to reach the palace!

As he approached the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall, Lin Ming gasped. This was just too big, way too big. Big to the point of horrifying him! No wonder it had seemed so close when it had been so far away!

The towering walls of the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall reached the skies, and were completely made of dark crimson rock; they were no less than 1000 feet high. Above that, there was a massive circular phoenix totem image that was no less than 200-300 feet in diameter.

Every column of the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall would take a least a dozen people holding their arms to fully encircle it. On these columns were all sorts of pictures. There were Saint Beasts, God Beasts, masters of mankind, all sorts of treasures, pills, valuable materials, and mounts. Among the columns, there were even those with large groups of nefarious looking demons. They grasped large axes or scythes, and their entire bodies were entwined in thick chains, the muscles of their bodies bulging like dragons under their skin.

As Lin Ming saw these depictions on the columns, his pupils shrank. He had seen this race of beings before. After swallowing the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, he had seen the Netherworld Great Emperor take his great axe and slaughter a nearly endless amount of demons. After he killed one, he would always drink their blood.

The demons that the Netherworld Great Emperor massacred were entirely alike with the reliefs depicted on these columns.

However, the ones that the Netherworld Great Emperor massacred were apparently nothing but small fries. The ones depicted on the columns were all supreme experts. The mounts they rode were Flood Dragons, Hornless Dragons, and other such Saint Beasts. These demons on the columns should at least be Revolving Core realm masters, and even many extreme Revolving Core masters and almighty Peerless Emperors.

As he looked from a broader perspective, there were hundreds – if not thousands of these demons engraved onto the columns. Lin Ming was shocked. These hundreds and thousands of great masters also had hundreds and thousands of Saint Beasts. Not even a Holy Land of the Sky Spill Continent would have power on such a massive scale!

If these reliefs weren't exaggerations, then it could only be said that the world of the past era that the Ancient Phoenix Clan once lived in was many times more terrifying than the present!

Lin Ming sighed. It seemed that the present Sky Spill Continent, in terms of the quality and quantity of its powerhouses, was much lower than that of the past.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you've arrived here so quickly!"

As Lin Ming was gazing at the reliefs, he suddenly heard an affable and hearty voice from behind him. Lin Ming turned to see Mu Dingshan enter the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall. Mu Dingshan had a very worn out expression that was covered with dust, and his clothes were torn or charred in several places. Even his hair was scorched. It seemed that in these past three days, he had experienced a great deal of trials.

As Mu Dingshan saw Lin Ming look at him, he smiled and brightly laughed, "Junior-apprentice Brother, please don't laugh at me. My luck has been quite good. I found a Flameheart Flower that could be used to enhance one's fire-attribute true essence. However, it was guarded by a nearly sixth-level Fire Python. My strength is limited, so I was barely able to wound Fire Python and then take the Flameheart Flower. However, I was also heavily injured in the process."

Mu Dingshan smiled with a self-deprecating expression. At this time, Mu Xiaoqing and the other direct disciples arrived one after another. Whether they were from the Vermillion Bird Faction or the Blue Luan Faction, they all eventually came to the same Ancient Phoenix Main Hall.

The 16 disciples all arrived together, not a single one of them had died. This was good news indeed!

The 16 disciples had all received some wounds, but all of their faces were filled with excitement and passion. Especially the third ranked direct disciple Sun Yu – he was finding it hard to conceal the happy pride on his face.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Sun, it seems that you had a very great lucky chance during this time in the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm? What did you get? Why are you so happy?” A cheerful looking youth asked. He was the eighth ranked direct disciple, Zhang Yan.

After they entered the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall, they still had around an hour to rest. During this time, it was inevitable that they would discuss whatever harvests they managed to obtain during their jaunt into the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

Sun Yu smiled, and then took out the treasure he had obtained in the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. As disciples from the same sect that had friendly relations, there weren’t many taboo subjects between them. Not only that, but after exiting the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, they also had to register whatever the found. There were some things that even the sect would bid for.

Sun Yu took out an exquisite jade box and carefully opened it. A dim, hazy red light suddenly shot into the sky, causing all of the surrounding disciples to exclaim in awe.

“If I’m not wrong, that’s Sunfire Jade!”

“That’s right! I’ve seen one from my master before, you’re definitely not wrong!”

Within the delicate jade box, there was a small red jade the size of a longan. The surrounding fire origin energy continuously gathered onto the small red jade, creating a small vortex.

“It’s really Sunfire Jade! Junior-apprentice Brother Sun, your luck is awesome!” Even Mu Dingshan was moved. In comparison, even what he had obtained was lacking.

“Haha, I just have good luck. I’m sure that everyone’s harvest is not much worse than mine.” Although Sun Yi spoke modestly, his eyes were shining with excitement and pride that he couldn’t suppress, and his body was shaking in giddy joy.

This Sunfire Jade could not be refined nor could it be taken to increase one’s own strength. But as long as one wore it on their body somewhere, they could increase the amount of fire origin energy that gathered around them. Thus, they could speed up their cultivation speed to a certain extent. In battle, it would also increase a martial artist’s recovery capability; this was truly a rare treasure.

After being stimulated by the appearance of the Sunfire Jade, the other disciples began to take out the treasures they had obtained. The ones that had greater harvests naturally showed off more. As for the ones with smaller harvests, they could only sigh and watch on in envy and longing. There were even two disciples that looked sad and dejected, not bothering to even speak. They had searched everywhere that was in their capabilities for the last three days, but hadn’t managed to find anything.

Many disciples believed that if they didn’t find anything within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, then that would signify that their destiny was poor; this was not an auspicious sign.

Even the quiet and low-key Mu Xiaoqing showed off her harvest. Although the Snow Lotus Ice Blossom was valuable, it was still far from being able to compare with Sun Yu’s Sunfire Jade. Sun Yu couldn’t hide his smile, feeling sublime in his heart. Although Mu Dingshan and Mu Xiaoqing were stronger than him, they hadn’t obtained a better treasure than him. This meant that he had the greater destiny.

After Mu Xiaoqing finished showing off what she had found, Sun Yu turned to Lin Ming, who was staring at the reliefs on the columns. He said, “Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, what did you obtain in the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm? Let us have a look!”

“Oh?” Lin Ming turned his head. He said, “My luck was good. I managed to obtain a Flame Essence.”

"Flame Essence?"

Everyone was immediately interested. Something like a Flame Essence would sell for a great price, even if it was a low-grade human-step one.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin has such great luck."

"Even the most basic of Flame Essences are worth many true essence stones. Junior-apprentice Brother Lin's luck is too amazing."

"As expected of our Junior-brother Lin." Sun Yu also complimented, smiling as he continued, "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, what level of Flame Essence is it? Take it out so we can have a look."

"Yes, yes, let us take a look!" The many disciples were very eagerly waiting to see, even Mu Dingshan was looking expectant.

Lin Ming didn't bother hiding anything. He immediately withdrew the jade box from his spatial ring and took out the cocoon that was formed from azure true essence. As he undid some of the true essence threads, he revealed the tightly sealed Fallen Star Flame.

This purple flame, although sealed, still released an aura that made one's heart race. As soon as the azure true essence that contained it was undone, the Fallen Star Flame once again made a racket as it was exposed to the world, struggling and roaring like a small leopard. The symbol runes that bound it released 'chi chi chi' sounds as they were unexpectedly being constantly corroded by the Fallen Star Flame.

At the same time, the surrounding fire origin energy instantly became restless, howling as it flew towards the Fallen Star Flame and formed a giant fire origin energy vortex from thin air. This vortex was countless times more formidable than the one that had been produced by the Sunfire Jade.

Mu Dingshan's complexion immediately changed. He could clearly feel the fire origin energy with his own body being pulled, as if it wanted to break free from his body.

Sun Yu also stared with wide eyes, his expression full of shock and disbelief. After he repeatedly confirmed the truth in front of him, he finally realized an incredible fact.

“Medium-grade earth-step Flame Essence!”

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you managed to subdue a medium-grade earth-step Flame Essence!?”

Mu Dingshan and Sun Yu nearly spoke at the same time. As their voices fell, the other disciples that didn’t understand what level of Flame Essence this was were immediately bewildered, their eyes widening and their hearts shaking.

Medium-grade earth-step Flame Essence?

This sort of Flame Essence could kill someone. If they encountered it, it would already be a good result if they didn’t die. But Lin Ming was actually able to subdue it?

Chapter 398 – Bloodline Test

Chapter 398 – Bloodline Test

…

…

…

In order to subjugate and obtain a medium-grade earth-step Flame Essence within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, it wasn’t only a question of one’s destiny – one also needed sufficient strength! As Mu Dingshan thought back to half a month ago when he had witnessed a battle between two Kings of the younger generation, he could only sigh with emotion. “Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, good thing it was you. If I were the one that encountered this Flame Essence, I would be lucky to even escape with all my limbs intact.”

In fact, the last time that Mu Dingshan had entered into the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, he had also come across a great lucky chance. Within the center of a lava pool, he had seen a Rainbow Blaze Fruit growing there. This kind of miracle medicine was able to extend the life of a fire-attribute martial artist!

Although it had a limited effect on one’s cultivation, if the news that he had managed to obtain it was spread to the old Revolving Core monsters or even the Emperor level powerhouses, then they would most likely desperately bid for it. When that happened, Mu Dingshan could just open his mouth and request any treasures he wanted, from high-grade Flame Essences to top medicines.

Unfortunately, this Rainbow Blaze Fruit had been guarded by a top sixth-level vicious beast. Mu Dingshan had instantly turned tail and ran away. Luckily, he had quickly and decisively run away. Otherwise, if that vicious beast had caught scent of him, he would certainly have died there.

Although he regretted it, he realized it was the only path he could take. With his strength, Mu Dingshan simply wasn't able to attain a treasure like that.

"This is a Fallen Flame Star?" Mu Dingshan had a wide breadth of experience and recalled the name of this Flame Essence.

"Mm, yes." Lin Ming nodded.

"The Fallen Star Flame is rare even within the entire Sky Spill Continent. That Junior-apprentice Brother Lin can obtain one means that you have tremendous luck!" Mu Dingshan praised. He wasn't clear that this Fallen Star Flame had already mutated. When the meteor had crashed down in a terrifying explosion, it had caused the Fallen Star Flame to absorb the Flame Essence that was forming in the lava pool, creating an unknown chance. A Fallen Star Flame was originally extremely rare. As for this mutated Fallen Star Flame, it was simply a singularly unique existence in the world.

Hearing the name of the Fallen Star Flame, the surrounding disciples also began to sigh in admiration. As they spoke, the envy in their voices was thick.

Absorbing a Flame Essence could not only increase one's combat strength, but also enhance their cultivation. With Lin Ming's strength and talent, it probably wouldn't be long before he was able to absorb this Flame Essence. When that happened, his cultivation might make another breakthrough. At that time, who else could be Lin Ming's match?

"Alright. We have less than an hour before the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall opens. At that time, 16 jade platforms will appear. Every person can select any platform they wish to enter to Ancient Phoenix Main Hall. I hope that all of you will take advantage of the time available to rest up, and adjust to your best condition by the time the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall opens. I do not want any of you to die here, this is also the mission personally given to be by the Honorable Sect Master!"

Mu Dingshan repeated his warning, his voice serious and humorless. When they were travelling the world of the Ancient Phoenix Mystic Realm, if any of the lower ranked core disciples had died, it wouldn't mean much. However, if any of the current 16 direct disciples were to die, it would be a great loss to Divine Phoenix Island. After they entered the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall, Mu Dingshan wouldn't be able to protect any of them. So he could only repeatedly urge them to stay safe.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Mu, what will happen in the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall?" A youth asked. This was the first time had had entered the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall, and also the first time he had entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

"Everyone who enters the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall will have different encounters. The Ancient Phoenix Main Hall is a trial that the Ancient Phoenix Clan used to test the experience and talent of their juniors. When the time comes, you will all be separated based on your talent and bloodline, and then sent to a smelting trial with a corresponding difficulty. Within the smelting trial, there is a chance that you can die. If anything happens, do not try to be brave. If you need to give up, then give up."

As Mu Dingshan spoke, he deliberately glanced over at Lin Ming. "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, please do not be overly confident in your abilities and try to show off. Honorable Sect Master has bid me to mention this to you again and again. Her Highness the Saintess also has very high hopes for you. If anything happens to you at all, I will not have the face to return."

Although Lin Ming was truly strong, the difficulty of the smelting trial depended on one's talent. When that happened, strength was useless.

In terms of bloodline talent, Lin Ming was a bit worse. Although he had absorbed the Vermillion Bird blood essence, it was still far worse than Mu Qianyu or Mu Bingyun.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Mu, please rest assured, I will definitely return safely." In the past one to two years, Lin Ming had experienced countless dangerous life or death situations. Compared to all of that, the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall was comparatively safe.

“That’s right. Senior-apprentice Brother Mu, do you understand the reasons behind the murals and reliefs in the Main Hall?” Lin Ming pointed to the walls and columns. He had a strange nagging feeling that these depictions were a record of earth-shattering events that had happened in ancient times.

“Oh, you’re curious about these… the last time I came here, I also saw them. I went back and asked Honorable Sect Master what they were, but Honorably Sect Master only said that they were scenes from ancient times. As for who these images specifically depict, Honorable Sect Master wouldn’t know even if they were people from the Sky Spill Continent. We can only vaguely speculate on possibilities.”

Mu Dingshan’s answer wasn’t too far from Lin Ming’s expectations. The Ancient Phoenix Main Hall had already existed for countless tens or hundreds of thousands of years. But, Divine Phoenix Island only had a history of a mere 3000 years. Naturally, Divine Phoenix Island wouldn’t be clear as to what these images that were depicted meant.

The passage of time was simply too long. The Realm of the Gods may have existed for hundreds of millions of years. As for the Sky Spill Continent, he had no idea how long it had existed for. The ancient texts only recorded history that went back a few tens of thousands of years. Everything before that had already been destroyed or lost to the vast and endless flow of time, and was unable to be found again. Perhaps the martial world of Sky Spill Continent had already been destroyed and reborn several times.

Lin Ming shook his head, no longer thinking about these matters. If he wanted to further explore these things, he would have to wait until he obtained the strength to do so. Perhaps those majestic Holy Lands with deep legacies might have records concerning this.

“Alright everyone, let’s get started and meditate. If you are lacking pills, just tell me.” Mu Dingshan said to everyone.

Before entering the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, everyone had come fully stocked with pills. But, one couldn’t rule out the possibility that someone had run into danger multiple times and had taken all their pills.

The 16 individuals sat down and began to meditate together. Lin Ming hadn't consumed too much energy, but he still entered the ethereal martial intent state. Entering the deep ethereal state and absorbing the surrounding origin energy to make up for whatever energy he used would be the best way to restore his top condition.

Time passed. Suddenly, the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall's floor began to slightly tremble. Lin Ming opened his eyes; it was finally time to enter the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall!

Ka ka ka!

With the sound of a gears slowly turning, the ground in the center of the Main Hall began to lift, and a large altar dozens of feet wide appeared. On the outer ring of the alter, sparkling, crystal clear jade platforms appeared. There was a total of 16.

"Good. Everyone come up and choose any jade platform." As Mu Dingshan spoke, he stepped onto the altar, selected a jade platform, and then stood in front.

Lin Ming followed. Each of the 16 jade platforms had the same shape, but there were also subtle differences. Every jade platform had different patterns carved into it; there seemed to be mysterious array symbols that were etched onto the surface of the jade platforms. On the jade platform, there was a groove – its shape just happened to match the key he had been given to enter the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall.

Lin Ming casually took the jade tablet out from his spatial ring.

"Place a drop of blood onto the jade tablet, and then place the jade tablet into the groove. Then, the smelting trial will open. Every smelting trial will be different. Everyone, this is where we part from now. I hope that seven days from now, I will be able to see the safe return of everyone here!"

As Mu Dingshan spoke, he cut his finger and let his blood drip onto the jade tablet. The jade tablet turned a dazzling blood red, and then Mu Dingshan placed it into the jade platform's groove. With a flash of crimson light, Mu Dingshan instantly vanished.

The altar began to flash with sparks of light. The Vermillion Bird Faction disciples were covered with a deep crimson red, and the Blue Luan Faction disciples were covered with a light blue. Suddenly, there were only a few of the 16 disciples left.

Lin Ming put a drop of blood on the jade tablet and then inserted it into the groove. In the next moment, he felt a warm light envelop him, and the space around him seem to twist. After several breaths of time, he was warped to a fully enclosed chamber.

Lin Ming could vaguely make out his surroundings in the dark chamber. The chamber was only 100 feet wide and long, and the walls were engraved with different sorts of reliefs, just like the columns and walls he had seen before. There were all sorts of Saint Beats, humans, and demons…

Some seemed to be celebrating festivals, some seemed to be waging war.

Hu!

A flame lit in the dark void within the chamber, and the fire origin energy of the room began to gather towards the flame, forming numerous radiant red dots. A moment later, these spots warped into human shape, and then began to substantialize into a red person. Its appearance was a bit fuzzy, and its build was about the same as Lin Ming. Its cultivation was at the peak Pulse Condensation period, and it held a spear in its hands.

Sou!

The red figure stabbed out a spear at Lin Ming.

“Is this the beginning of the test?”

Lin Ming raised his spear and calmly counterattacked. Although this red figure’s cultivation was the same as his, its strength was far worse.

Swiping away the red figure’s thrust, Lin Ming pierced his spear through its chest.

Peng!

The scarlet person dissipated into countless red lights. But after several more breaths of time, these points of lights once again gathered together and condensed into a red figure. Its appearance was still fuzzy and it still wielded a spear, but its cultivation was at a half-step Houtian.

A spear thrust forth!

“Too weak.”

Lin Ming acted without hesitation, not bothering to change his style. The Purple Comet Spear thrust forth like before, and punctured the red figures chest.

Peng!

The second red figure fell over and dissipated once again. In the next moment, another red figure appeared. Its appearance, build, and weapon were still the same, but not its cultivation. It had risen by another level – it was at the early Houtian realm.

“Testing my limit?” The corners of Lin Ming’s lips curved up in a grin. If these red human figures became stronger every time they were defeated, then next time it would be at the middle Houtian realm. These red martial artists were probably comparable to the level of someone like Zhang Yanzhao or Huan Xiaodie in terms of talent. They were weaker than Qin Wuxin and Jiang Lanjian. As for comparing to Lin Ming, the disparity was even greater.

Slightly raising the true essence in his attack, Lin Ming thrust out like before, eliminating his opponent!

……………………

At this time, in 15 other chambers, all of them were participating in the same test. Mu Dingshan expended a great deal of effort and finally cut apart a peak Houtian realm martial artist. But in the next moment, the scattered red light once again converged into a red figure. This time, it was a half-step Xiantian martial artist.

Mu Dingshan ruefully smiled. His cultivation was only at the peak of the early Houtian realm. As for the red figure, its talent was comparable to a third-grade sect's direct disciple. If they were on the same level, then Mu Dingshan would naturally be able to easily deal with such an opponent. But now, his opponent had jumped stages yet again; it was at the point where he couldn't handle it any longer.

Against a third-grade sect's direct disciple with a half-step Xiantian cultivation, Mu Dingshan was more likely to lose than win.

Mu Dingshan's result was considered fairly good. Of the 15 other disciples, the majority of them had already been defeated. They could challenge a late Houtian realm martial artist, but not one at the peak Houtian realm.

After they were defeated, these martial artists were all transferred to their smelting trial path, where they would begin their smelting trial.

Chapter 399 – Realm of the Gods' Language

Chapter 399 – Realm of the Gods' Language

…

…

…

Mu Dingshan was finally defeated by the half-step Xiantian red person. After doing his best and cutting off the red person's arm, he was defeated by its sword.

However, what shocked Mu Dingshan was that after he cut off the red person's arm, the section of the arm that was cut off burst into red lights. Some of the red lights scattered away, and some of them flowed into his body, numbing him. Not only did his injuries heal, but the true essence in his body became increasingly pure.

"This is…"

Mu Dingshan was astonished. The last time he had entered the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall, he hadn't experienced such a scene. "Is it possible that if I jump realms to a certain degree, I can obtain benefits?"

The Ancient Phoenix Main Hall was a smelting trial that was created for the younger generations of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, so that they could enhance their strength through these tribulations. It wasn't strange that a situation like this would occur.

As Mu Dingshan became aware of this, he felt a bit of regret. Unfortunately, cutting off that red person's arm was his limit. Although he had obtained a pure fire-attribute origin energy, the amount was too little. It was not enough for him to break through to the middle Houtian realm.

This benefit was something that he could only see, but not obtain.

At this time, Mu Dingshan heard some icy sounds resound within the chamber, as if it were some sort of language. But Mu Dingshan didn't know what was being said. A moment later, a red light flashed and Mu Dingshan was sent out of the chamber to begin the smelting trial that corresponded with his talent.

………

At this time, within Lin Ming's chamber, he was facing a peak Houtian martial artist.

This red person was equal to a talent like Huan Xiaodie if she were a peak Houtian master. In truth, this wasn't weak; it was already better than a half-step Xiantian Qin Ziya.

Lin Ming's Purple Comet Spear glared with the blinding light of thunderfire. Each time he defeated an opponent, he would conserve as much true essence as possible. He would use the most ordinary move, and absolutely no martial skills. He would defeat them in one move, and not waste another. This was because he didn't know how many more opponents he had to face every time he defeated another red person.

The red person's spear was a spear, but it also understood martial skills. It thrust out its spear, and the fire that wrapped around it manifested into the phantom of a phoenix.

Lin Ming moved, Golden Roc Shattering the Void erupting as he instantly came up behind the red person, the Purple Comet Spear shooting out. Avoiding a collision with the enemy and bypassing its attacks was the best way to save true essence.

This peak Houtian red person was quite strong. It felt Lin Ming's spear behind it and turned around to block it.

However, relative to Lin Ming, the red person was far too weak. Especially after Lin Ming had broken through to the peak Pulse Condensation period. Now his strength had even surpassed Lei Mubai by a level.

Azure true essence erupted. Lin Ming thrust his long spear towards the red person, and the spear stabbed through its dantian. Lin Ming twisted the spear, and tore its dantian to pieces.

The red person exploded into shining red lights again. But what surprised Lin Ming was that after some time, a part of these red lights began to flow into Lin Ming's body.

This was an extremely pure fire origin energy. After it surged into Lin Ming, he felt his entire body pleasantly warm up, as if the true essence in him was speeding up.

"This is..."

Lin Ming felt the red light flowing within him, and discovered that it was circulating through his meridians before gathering into his dantian and settling there.

"Dantian!" Lin Ming was shocked, and then overjoyed. The difference between the Pulse Condensation period and the Houtian realm was that a Houtian realm master could save and condense true essence in his dantian. But, a Pulse Condensation period martial artist could only contain true essence within their meridians. Naturally, the dantian could hold a much greater amount of true essence than the meridians.

Only a very small amount of true essence flowed into Lin Ming's dantian. However, this small amount was still proof that he was taking great steps towards reaching the Houtian realm!

"There's too little true essence, there isn't much increase in my cultivation. But it still opened up the path leading from my meridians to my dantian. Later, when I step into the Houtian realm from the Pulse Condensation period, there won't be any barriers, and it will be completely successful. This Ancient Phoenix Main Hall is truly wonderful!"

As Lin Ming was thinking, the red lights in front of him began to condense again. This time, another red person holding a spear appeared, but their cultivation was at a half-step Xiantian.

Half-step Xiantian!

Lin Ming was excited. What would happen if he defeated this half-step Xiantian martial artist?

With the Purple Comet Spear in his hand, Lin Ming made a preemptive move. When the figure was still materializing, Lin Ming thrust towards its chest.

Clang!

Sparks scattered in the air. Lin Ming's spear had been blocked by the red person, and a wild true essence tore through the air. As the red person blocked the spear, it gripped its own spear with one hand and swept towards Lin Ming's neck.

Lin Ming instantly drew backwards, and the spear light erupted – 10,000 Flames Burning World!

Hu hu hu!

Wind and fire began to pick up within the chamber, and pillars of flame shot out like a blazing meteor. In that instant, the red martial artist had been completely surrounded by flames. But this red martial artist was agile. In this situation, it still managed to retreat as it stabbed out with its spear again, stabbing into the pillars of flame!

There were several dozen pillars of flame, but in the blink of an eye, they were all scattered by the red martial artist! However, as the last pillar of flame exploded into nothing, a purple arc of lightning lept out! This was the Divine Demon Steel Needle!

Lin Ming had hidden the Divine Demon Steel Needle within 10,000 Flames Burning World, taking the red person by surprise!

Pu!

With the speed of light, the Divine Demon Steel Needle pierced through the scarlet martial artist's neck, and a rain of dazzling light showered out! The red martial artist burst apart into a deluge of red sparkling lights.

If Lin Ming didn't use a sneak attack like this, he still would have been able to defeat the red martial artist. But, he would have needed to exert a great deal of effort.

The red light once again gathered onto Lin Ming, flowing into his body.

The pure fire true essence spread through all the meridians of Lin Ming's body before finally converging into his dantian where it settled down. After the half-step Xiantian martial artist had died, the fire origin energy it left behind was several times richer and purer than the red person that had come before it.

"This fire-attribute origin energy is extremely pure and dense. When it is gathered in my dantian, it can act like a seed and lay the foundation for me to break into the Houtian realm in the future."

As Lin Ming was secretly rejoicing in his fortune, he saw the red lights begin to condense again. This time, Lin Ming's heart went cold. Without a doubt, the new red person that would emerge would be a Xiantian realm martial artist!

Lin Ming's expression was solemn. The difference between a half-step Xiantian and a true Xiantian master was enormous! Without hesitation, Lin Ming used the strength of Tempering Marrow. Instantly, the true essence that was contained within his marrow began to violently gush out, and Lin Ming's momentum shot up!

As the red person was forming, Lin Ming's figure flew forwards like the wind, the Purple Comet Spear piercing outwards.

Spear light shined, and the red person's figure suddenly distorted, completely avoiding Lin Ming's spear. The spear stabbed into the wall, causing the array formation on the wall to severely shake!

Sou!

The red person struck out with its long spear. With a sound like tigers and dragons roaring, a spear swept out at Lin Ming's waist.

Peng!

The red person's long spear collided with Lin Ming's Purple Comet Spear, causing the shaft to bend. Lin Ming withdrew, and the red person closely followed him, striking out with the long spear in its hand like a serpent. With every spear thrust, spear light shined out, and the spear itself seemed to contain an intelligent will, making Lin Ming feel as if he were being overwhelmed by this barrage of attacks.

"What great spear skill!' Lin Ming's pupils contracted. The red person was only a puppet that was formed from energy, but he never thought it would have such skills in spearmanship. Lin Ming's body began to emit popping sounds as he suddenly gave a loud shout; the phantom of an azure True Dragon appeared behind him.

"Roar!"

The cry of a True Dragon flushed into the sky. Lin Ming gripped his spear and swept out. With a nearly irresistible momentum, Lin Ming broke apart all of his enemy's spear lights!

"Heretical God Force!"

Lin Ming didn't plan on challenging the next opponent. Against a middle Xiantian realm martial artist, he had no confidence that he would win. It would be best to go all out and finish off the red person currently in front of him.

As the Heretical God Force opened, Lin Ming's momentum dramatically spiked up once again. He didn't have the exquisite and skillful spear skills that the red person had. What he could rely on to win was absolute subjugation by strength. With superior strength, he would break apart the red person's skills!

Spear energy crashed in the same place, and suddenly a terrifying vortex of wind appeared in the completely airtight chamber. If a weaker martial artist was caught in this brutal vortex of wind, they would only meet a miserable death.

Ka ka ka!

The protective array formation on the walls began to fiercely shake!

The spear lights were broken apart by Lin Ming one at a time. As he swept out his spear, his attack contained the power of thunder and fire. But at this time, the red person suddenly moved, and he disappeared like smoke.

Without even looking, Lin Ming turned around and thrust out the Purple Comet Spear. On the edge of the spearhead, the Divine Demon Steel Needle roared out!

The red person lifted his spear to block. The Divine Demon Steel Needle struck above the red person's spear shaft along with the Purple Comet Spear.

Bang!

A violent explosion followed. The red person was sent flying backwards by the power of thunder, and brutally slammed into the protective array formation. A faint crack had even appeared in the spear that was formed by energy! This blurry spear was naturally unable to compare with a top high-grade earth-step treasure like the Purple Comet Spear.

Lin Ming didn't let this opportunity pass. He rushed forwards, thrusting out. The power of thunder and fire intertwined; Thunderfire Annihilation!

Lin Ming only used 30% of his energy in this Thunderfire Annihilation. After all, this chamber was a completely enclosed space. If a full energy Thunderfire Annihilation had exploded within the chamber then Lin Ming himself might not have been much better off.

The red person didn't have any wisdom or thoughts. It only lifted its cracked spear to dodge this 30% Thunderfire Annihilation of Lin Ming's.

The result was unsurprising –

Bang!

The red person's spear was completely broken to pieces, and the confined space began to violently shake. In the following true essence shockwave from the attack, the red person's body was broken apart, turning into a dense group of red lights. As for Lin Ming, even he had been injured. His blood vitality was roiling, and his right hand was dripping wet with blood.

Hu!

The red person dispersed into a mass of red lights that merged into Lin Ming's body. This light was much richer than anything that came before; even the wound that Lin Ming had just received was beginning to regenerate at a visible speed.

The condensed true essence within his dantian strengthened once again, paving the way for Lin Ming to reach the Houtian realm. As long as Lin Ming was able to fill his dantian with true essence, he would naturally break through to the Houtian realm. He wouldn't even need to stop at the half-step Houtian realm.

"Just what sort of origin does this Ancient Phoenix Clan have, that it can construct such a wonderful and unbelievable smelting trial. No wonder Divine Phoenix Island considered this Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm the basis of their sect, and why so many core disciples struggle for a spot to enter the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall.

As the wounds of his body healed, Lin Ming began to think about how to challenge a middle Xiantian master's moves. He wanted to take a good look and see just how great the disparity was between him and a middle Xiantian master.

But to his surprise, a middle Xiantian realm red person didn't appear. Instead, the enclosed chamber suddenly quieted. As Lin Ming waited, nothing happened. He stood there puzzled, and as he was beginning to have some doubts, an icy voice rang out in the air. It was a language that Lin Ming had never heard of before, but seemed oddly familiar.

After a few words, Lin Ming’s heart began to shake. This was… the language of the Realm of the Gods?

Chapter 400 – Final General Level Smelting Trial

Chapter 400 – Final General Level Smelting Trial

…

…

…

Lin Ming didn't have a comprehensive understanding of the Realm of the Gods' language from the memory fragments in his mind. He carefully recalled them, and was then just able to barely understand the meaning of the words.

"Talent is satisfactory for the general level requirement. You may continue onto the final general level smelting trial!"

Final general level smelting trial?

Lin Ming was shocked.

Who was speaking? This Ancient Phoenix Main Hall had existed for tens of thousands of years or even hundreds of thousands of years. Besides some Supreme Elders of the Realm of the Gods who had already thoroughly understood the profound mysteries and principles of life death, no one should be able to live this long. There shouldn't still be anyone living in the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall; was this a message left behind by the one who created all of this?

This was a indeed a possibility. Of course, there were also some magic array formations that could record sounds and preserve them for an extremely long time.

Just what was the final general level smelting trial?

A light shined down, enveloping Lin Ming. In the next moment, he suddenly felt like he was being warped somewhere else.

After several dozen breaths of time, Lin Ming slowly adapted to the strange and uncomfortable feeling of being spatially warped somewhere. As he slowly opened his eyes, he saw that he seemed to have been warped away from the Main Hall. Behind him was a cave, and in front of him was an endlessly vast plain. There were no giant glaciers and no rivers of lava, only black, sparse land with scattered rocks and some vegetation.

As Lin Ming looked closer, he could see that there were several broken swords, spears, and other weapons buried in the dirt. There were even incomplete skeletons. But after such a long time, these skeletons were brittle to the point of turning to dust if handled too roughly.

Lin Ming's mind stirred. He gingerly extracted several bones from the ground and compared them to a human's anatomy. He wasn't able to find any differences between them.

"The Ancient Phoenix Clan was from the human race of the Sky Spill Continent?"

Lin Ming couldn't help but wonder this.

At this moment, a mass of hazy flashing lights appeared in front of Lin Ming. A second later, it merged into a human's face, just like a ghost.

"Is this also an opponent formed from energy?" Lin Ming subconsciously took out the Purple Comet Spear, true essence circulating through his entire body as he prepared to fight at any moment.

However, what startled Lin Ming was that the human face opened its mouth and actually began to unbelievably speak. "Smelting trial…"

It sounded monotone and cold, without the slightest bit of emotion. The language that it spoke in was shockingly from the Realm of the Gods.

Lin Ming stared in complete confusion. Was this ghostly thing some sort of remnant spiritual body left behind?

But what sort of spiritual body could live so long? Had it been protecting the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall for the last tens of thousands of years, or even hundreds of thousands of years? It could live this long?

“Who are you?” Lin Ming asked. After he recalled the fragmented memories of the Supreme Elders from the Realm of the Gods, he managed to stitch the words together to compose this sentence. This was the first time he had used the cumbersome language of the Realm of the Gods, and his pronunciation was awkward. But, the ghost in front of him seemed to understand this.

“I am the Palace Spirit, the guardian of this land.”

“Palace Spirit? You’re already dead?” Lin Ming asked with a stunned expression. Within the Sky Spill Continent, things such as ghosts, vampires, and zombies weren’t anything new. In fact, there were even some martial artists that were able to separate their soul from their body, to the point where after they died their soul would become a completely separate ghostly martial artist that relied on swallowing the souls of others to cultivate.

“Dead? No, I’ve had this appearance since birth. I am part of the Spirit race. Or to be more accurate, I am of the Stone Spirit race.”

“Stone Spirit?” Lin Ming’s eyebrows arched up; this was the first time that he had heard of the existence of such a race.

“Rocks have souls, mountains have souls, the world has a soul. Once a rock has passed through countless years, it can nurture a ‘spirit’. This is my Stone Spirit race. My race’s life is as long as a rock itself. When we sleep, we slumber among the rocks and can rest for 100,000 years at a time. This is nothing unusual.”

Heavens!

Lin Ming was speechless. Life as long as a rock's? How long could a rock last? If a rock was placed in a spot, if it didn't crack or melt, it could weather almost eternity.

A single period of sleep could last 100,000 years. From the very beginning that this Ancient Phoenix Main Hall existed, this fellow could have been sleeping until now.

Lin Ming guessed that this fellow was the same sort as Yan Mo from the Sorcerer Holy Land. It was sent by its master to manage and watch over the smelting trial. Thus, he asked, "I would like to ask, what is the meaning of the final general level smelting trial?"

"The Ancient Phoenix Main Hall is the training grounds of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's army. Altogether, there are a total of three levels. The king level, general level, and sergeant level. Your companions that followed you in and participated are currently in the sergeant level smelting trial. As for you, you are chosen for the general level smelting trial!"

Lin Ming's mind was startled. He never imagined that this Ancient Phoenix Main Hall was a training ground for the Ancient Phoenix Race's army! For this place to exist on such a massive scale, just what kind of army was being trained? What sort of war did they participate in?

The words sergeant level smelting trial meant that it trained soldiers. Thus, Mu Dingshan, Mu Xiaoqing, and the rest could only be considered ordinary soldiers. As for himself, he could be considered a general, or at least a military officer of some kind. And the so-called king? What rank was that?

Lin Ming couldn't help but ask, "What kind of talent does a king level participant need?"

"A king level doesn't just need talent, but more importantly needs the bloodline of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Although you have a small trace of a God Beast bloodline within you, it is not the same bloodline that my Ancient Phoenix Clan possesses." The Palace Spirit said without a trace of emotion.

Lin Ming was shocked; the reverse scale blood within him had actually been noticed by this Palace Spirit. But, it wasn't strange. The level of understanding concerning God Beasts that this Ancient Phoenix Clan achieved naturally couldn't be compared with Divine Phoenix Island.

"What are the details of the final general level smelting trial? Will I die if I lose?"

"The content of the smelting trial is to fight an army. If you are defeated, you may retreat to this cave and try again. But, if you die within the smelting trial, you will truly die. Whether it is the sergeant or general level training trial, both need to undergo a baptism of blood in order to grow. Otherwise, it will be impossible to face the cruelty and brutality of the battlefield. After a period of time, I will return to assess your situation."

"What is the time period? Is it seven days? What happens if I cannot complete the tasks of the smelting trial within seven days?" Lin Ming couldn't help but ask. He had heard from Mu Dingshan that the normal time period within the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall was seven days. But after listening to this Palace Spirit, it seemed it would be difficult to complete the general level smelting trial within that seven day time period.

"Seven days is only the period of time laid down within the sergeant level smelting trial. Within the general level smelting trial, it will only end upon completion, or upon your death."

"Until completion? How much time would that be?"

"The time required is different for every person. If it is a short time, then around two years. If it is a long time, then even 10 years is possible."

"What!? Ten years!?" Lin Ming was beyond startled. He himself had only lived for 16 years, and had only cultivated for around four years. Yet this Palace Spirit had so casually tossed out a 10 year time period!

If he really cultivated for five or ten years here, just what sort of concept was that!

Lin Ming was left completely speechless. To practice here in this sealed off area for such a long time was absolutely no faster than cultivating outside and experiencing all sorts of other trials, let alone having to do so for such a long time. Maybe even Divine Phoenix Island would think that he had died here. Also, there were his parents that he had to consider; how would they feel if they thought he had died?

“I refuse!”

Lin Ming said without hesitation.

“I apologize, but I am only a messenger and do not have the ability to change how the smelting trial is managed. The array formation has already started. Now, you have choice but to complete the smelting trial; it will not come to an end before you finish. But do not be so hasty in refusing. If you can complete the smelting trial, you will also receive rewards that you cannot imagine. The quicker you complete the smelting trial, the greater the rewards will be.

“What rewards?” Lin Ming couldn’t imagine any reward that would stir his heart and make up for several years of his life. But as he spoke, he suddenly remembered something and he began to run short of breath.

He remembered the story that Mu Fengxian had told him. Divine Phoenix Island used to be a small ordinary sect. But 3000 years ago, because of the rise of Silent Demon Emperor City, they had no choice but to depart for safer lands and relocate themselves within Divine Phoenix Island.

At that time, the founder of Divine Phoenix Island had happened upon an accidental lucky chance, and had entered the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall. There, she had simultaneously obtained both the bloodline of the Vermillion Bird Saint Beast and the Blue Luan Saint Beast. This was the sole reason that Divine Phoenix Island managed to attain 3000 years of glory!

The bloodline of the Vermillion Bird and Blue Luan Saint Beasts could be inherited by future generations. There were many descendants of the founder that had managed to inherit these bloodlines, and there were even descendants that cropped up every couple generations whose bloodline was not diluted. For instance, Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun both had the bloodline of a Saint Beast within them, and this was because they had inherited it from the founder of Divine Phoenix Island!

Although Lin Ming had the Vermillion Bird blood essence within him, this was still acquiring the bloodline through forcibly transplanting it. And the transplantation technique was devised by Divine Phoenix Island – it wasn't necessarily some great technique.

With just a bit of Vermillion Bird blood essence, the bloodline within Lin Ming was very weak. But, if he could obtain the transplantation of these two bloodlines from the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall, and increase his bloodline purity to the level of the Divine Phoenix Island founder, it would be a tremendous help in his cultivation of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'!

"Blood of the Vermillion Bird! Blood of the Blue Luan! Are these rewards possible?" Lin Ming urgently asked.

"Not just the blood of the Vermillion Bird or the Blue Luan, but even the blood of the Ancient Phoenix is a possible. But, it is unable to be obtained by someone with your talent." The Palace Spirit blankly said, as if this was a statement of fact.

"Blood of the Ancient Phoenix!" Lin Ming's mind began to race and his heartbeat quickened, "What is the Ancient Phoenix? A Phoenix God Beast?"

This question may seem silly, but it was very important; there was simply too much at stake. Naturally, Lin Ming had to have complete assurance in this.

"Of course."

"What are the required conditions?" Lin Ming impatiently asked. He had thought that there would only be the Vermillion Bird and Blue Luan bloodline, he never imagined that he could obtain the blood of a Phoenix God Beast!

Even if it was only a tiny amount of the Ancient Phoenix, like an amount such as the reverse scale blood, it would still enough to give him a massive advantage!

If he had the bloodline of the Ancient Phoenix, what would cultivating the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ be like? Lin Ming simply couldn’t imagine it!

‘The blood of the Ancient Phoenix is usually a reward in the king level smelting trial. Normally, a general level talent would never be able to obtain it. There is one exception, and that is if you can complete the entire smelting trial within one year.”

One year!

Lin Ming took a deep breath. If he fully thought about everything the Palace Spirit had said so far, completing this smelting trial training in one year was a nearly inconceivable matter. But he still couldn’t help but ask, “From when you started guarding the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall, how long has it been? Has there ever been a person who was able to complete the general level smelting trial within a year?”

“My deep sleep has lasted too long, I no longer remember the passage of time. But over the many years, there truly was a person who was able to complete the general level smelting trial in one year. However, he was from the lineage of the Royal Family – it was just that he was relegated to the general level.” The Palace Spirit’s voice was a bit slow. It was as if too much time had passed, and it could no longer clearly remember the events of the past.

“Since someone can do this, it means that I can too!” Lin Ming was confident in himself. This was an opportunity that he had to grasp with everything he had. Moreover, even if it wasn’t because of the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, Lin Ming still had to pass this trial as quickly as possible to leave the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall. According to normal circumstances, he should only be in here for seven days. If he was gone for too long, then Mu Qianyu would probably assume that he had died!

Chapter 401 – Seven Days

Chapter 401 – Seven Days

…

…

…

"Do you insist?" The Palace Spirit said as it apathetically looked at Lin Ming.

"Everything depends on effort!"

"Trying to complete the smelting trial hastily will only make it easier for you to die in the middle of the trials! However, since you insist, I will not stop you." The Palace Spirit icily said. As a being from the Spirit race, it naturally lacked emotions. "I will be going to sleep. If you can survive and complete the fifth smelting trial, then you shall obtain a midway reward. At that time, I will awaken."

After speaking these words, the Palace Spirit instantly vanished.

"The fifth smelting trial?" Lin Ming's mind stirred. It seemed that the general level smelting trail was itself divided into different levels. With his current strength, just how far would he be able to reach in a single go?

As Lin Ming was thinking, the entire land beneath him began to tremble. Rocks rolled down the hills and a moment later, in the distance plains, red symbols began to light up. These red symbols were several dozen feet high and were crowded together, creating a long length of light. There were hundreds and thousands of them, extending all the way to the end of the horizon!

“This is... an array formation?” Lin Ming was shocked, this was truly a terrifying array formation. The area it covered was at least a hundred miles; this was a massive display of power!

As the array formation appeared, the origin energy of the world began to fiercely shake. The ground began to increasingly vibrate, rocks broke in half, land cracked, and giant fissures began to spring up, creating mounds of rocks as if the earth itself was bubbling.

Lin Ming gripped his spear; he felt the killing intent that the array formation was releasing.

This was a true killing array. Once he was killed, he would die!

Peng! Peng! Peng!

The mounds of rocks exploded, and puppets made of black rock emerged from the ground. There were several hundred of them, and there were even many of these rock puppets that burned with fire. Without a doubt, these flaming rock puppets were much stronger than the rest.

“These are the enemies of the smelting trial? The enemies of the first trial should always be the weakest. The enemies behind will become increasingly strong!” Lin Ming revolved true essence in his body, his heart brimming with warrior spirit. All of these puppets were no weaker than a Houtian realm martial artist, and there were several hundred that came up at once!

Although this was difficult, it wasn’t enough to trap Lin Ming for more than a year. That could only mean that the strength of the enemies behind them would rapidly increase!

Lin Ming left the resting cave and stepped onto the plains, walking into the massive array formation.

Roar!

Roar!

The rock puppets issued earthshaking bellows, and the several hundred rock puppets rushed towards Lin Ming to kill him. These rock puppets were all more than ten feet tall and weighed several thousands of jins! When they ran together, the earth would shake, and their loud cries resounded through the skies!

Lin Ming grasped his long spear. He was one man alone facing such a mighty force. Such a scene caused the blood in his heart to burn and his soul to seethe with boiling excitement!

“I never thought that I would have to face so many enemies that are comparably to Houtian realm martial artists. When I fought in the beast tide at Green Mulberry City, most of the beasts that I killed were weak vicious beasts! This is also only the first step of the general level smelting trial. Above this is also the king level smelting trial! No matter what, I cannot fall here!”

Lin Ming grit his teeth, and his eyes flashed with a cold and brutal killing intent! He could already see the bloodthirsty and crazed crimson eyes of the rock puppets, and the ferocious spikes that covered their body.

“Die!”

Lin Ming rushed into the first rock puppet. With a loud shout, azure true essence erupted. His figure was like a leopard that leapt into the air, and the Purple Comet Spear was as nimble as a whip. He directly smashed down on the rock puppet’s forehead.

Kacha!

Rock exploded, and fire-attribute energy that formed its eyes shot out.

“First!”

Lin Ming borrowed the recoil of smashing the rock puppet's head and flew off to another side. The Purple Comet Spear in his hand lashed out like a serpent and stabbed a second rock puppet in the eyes!

Bang!

As its eyes exploded, Lin Ming was pushed flying backwards by the impact, the Purple Comet Spear bending like a crescent moon as he offset most of the impact. Otherwise, with Lin Ming's flesh and blood body, his wrist would still shake with numbness.

After killing two rock puppets, Lin Ming fell into a group of rock puppets. In this situation, Lin Ming remained incomparably calm, sending out his sense to capture the movement of every rock puppet. He was like a gust of wind as he swiftly dashed through the openings between the rock puppets.

With every thrust of Lin Ming's spear, almost every rock puppet that he attacked would die!

The eyes were the weakness of the rock puppets. Every time Lin Ming thrust out, his spear would contain vibrating true essence. His attack would smash apart the fire origin energy within the eyes!

"Mm? Not good!"

At the moment that Lin Ming jumped, two columns of fire suddenly shot out from the puppet group, swiping by Lin Ming as they directly shot past him and into the sky. Although Lin Ming had dodged this sneak attack, the space he had dodged into was also locked down by a pillar of fire.

Roar! Roar!

A three headed rock puppet instantly came into a pincer position, surrounding Lin Ming. A big first came crashing down, blocking every direction he could dodge in!

At this critical moment, Lin Ming's pupils contracted. The Divine Demon Thunder Soul howled as it flew out!

Puff! Puff! Puff!

With a series of light sounds, all three eyes on all three heads of the rock puppet exploded. Lin Ming took advantage of this opportunity to heavily punch the rock puppet's chest. The power of vibration erupted, directly shattering its body.

As the rock puppet fell over, Lin Ming rushed forth and out of the circle. His feet trod with Golden Rock Shattering the Void, and he flew into the sky!

"So close!"

The blood in his body tumbled. If he had been struck by several fists at once, he would have been severely injured. That would have been very dangerous.

However, there was no time for Lin Ming to relax. With several 'shoo shoo shoo' sounds, dozens of columns of flames were shot out by the rock puppet group, aiming at Lin Ming.

"This is bad! If I fly then I'll just become a target!"

Lin Ming dived down, escaping the columns of flame that came at him. Once again, he was caught in a brutal melee.

With just him against several hundred Houtian realm rock puppets, if he wasn't careful he would be caught in an endless siege from all sides! Even with Lin Ming's strength, if there was an accident, he would be severely wounded. But, if he was wounded to that extent, that would spell death in the midst of so many rock puppets!

The probability of dying within this general level smelting trial was absolutely higher than the sergeant level! In order to create a general, one had to undergo numerous life and death challenges! This was also a matter of last resort. In an army, it was difficult to find true leaders. The position of a general was much more important than that of a soldier!

……………………

Quickly, seven days passed.

In a dark chamber in the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall, a light flashed and a ragged and bloodstained youth appeared, sprawled on the floor.

"That was a close call!" The youth let out a long sigh of relief. This youth was Mu Dingshan.

He took out pills from his spatial ring to swallow and also smeared medicine on his wounds. Mu Dingshan couldn't resist the temptation to accept the smelting trial that was at the limit of his strength. It had been incomparably difficult to complete, and he had fallen into many dangerous situations. Finally, his potential had erupted and he was able to pass through danger after danger to complete the smelting trail. Not only that, but his cultivation had broken through to the middle Houtian realm!

"I've finally broken through."

Mu Dingshan sighed. With just this, everything was worth it.

"I hope that the other junior-apprentice brothers and junior-apprentice sisters weren't as reckless as I was. But… with such an opportunity laid in front of them, there are few people that would be able to resist the temptation. If they were to repeatedly avoid danger for the comforts of safety, they might never achieve anything great in their lives. I can only hope that they return safely.

As Mu Dingshan was thinking, he saw a blue light flash, and Mu Xiaoqing appear. She was also bloodied, but her overall appearance was much better than Mu Dingshan's.

Mu Dingshan felt relief as some weight came off his shoulders. In this smelting trial, her importance was only inferior to Lin Ming's. It was wonderful that she could safely return.

Then, more lights began to shine, and disciples came popping out one after another. Some were completely find, and some were wounded. There was even one who was grievously injured, and his entire body covered with blood.

Mu Dingshan hurried over and helped him swallow some pills.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Song, did you break through to the Houtian realm?” Mu Dingshan said with astonishment. This Junior-apprentice Brother Song was only 18 years old, and his strength placed him at the bottom end of the direct disciples. Before he entered the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall, his cultivation head been at a half-step Houtian. But now, he had managed to break through to the Houtian realm. An 18 year old with a Houtian realm cultivation was an extremely good result.

“A lucky breakthrough.” Although the youth surnamed Song was covered in blood, he couldn’t conceal the happy smile on his face. Entering this time was truly worth it. Now that he had reached the Houtian realm at 18 years of age, entering the Revolving Core realm in the future was nearly guaranteed.

The other disciples had various degrees of benefits. Some had broken through to the next stage, and most of them hadn’t been able to break through, but their strength had increased by a great deal.

The disciples excitedly chattered with each other, “Senior-apprentice Brother Mu, you are the fiercest one here. Now that you’ve reached the middle Houtian realm, none of those other Five Element Region chief disciples will be your match!”

As several disciples congratulated Mu Dingshan, he smiled, but felt somewhat uneasy in his heart.

Why hadn’t Lin Ming come out?

According to his past experiences, in another quarter of an hour they should all be sent out. But where was Lin Ming?

"Mm? Junior-apprentice Brother Lin? Junior-apprentice Brother Lin hasn't come out yet?" The youth surnamed Song said with surprise as he suddenly discovered this fact.

Now the disciples found out that there were 15 of them altogether; they were only missing Lin Ming.

The disciples in the chamber stared in a daze.

"There's still time." Mu Dingshan frowned. He would not believe that Lin Ming couldn't pass the smelting trial.

…………………………………

At this time, at the Divine Phoenix Island's back mountains, the Saintess' Palace –

Mu Qianyu was holding onto an ancient book. While she was reading it, she was also recording her thoughts in a jade slip.

"Yu'er, from what I calculate, the disciples that have entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm should leave today or tomorrow."

Mu Qianyu glanced up. The one who had spoken was her master, Mu Yuhuang.

"Of the disciples that had gone into the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, we've already lost one. I hope that this time there won't be any losses of those that entered the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall." Mu Yuhuang shook her head, her voice filled with lament.

"Mm…" Mu Qianyu placed the jade slip down, looking lost in thought…

"Yu'er, are you worrying about Lin Ming?" Mu Yuhuang asked with a smile.

"A bit…" Mu Qianyu nodded. That fellow Lin Ming was too adventurous, he liked taking risks too much. This was what she was worried about.

Mu Yuhuang laughed, smiling as she said, “Be relieved. Lin Ming’s talent is heaven defying. Not only that, but the High Ancestor has said that a great destiny has fallen upon Lin Ming. He will not fall in the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall.”

Chapter 402 – News of Death

Chapter 402 – News of Death

…

…

…

As Mu Qianyu and Mu Yuhuang spoke, a red-robed maid hurried over. Within the quiet and elegant corridors of the Saintess' Palace, her echoing footsteps rang exceptionally loud.

There was a knock on the door, the sound was still as urgent as before.

Mu Yuhuang slightly frowned, "Enter."

The red-robed maid opened the great doors. Her face look flustered, and she didn't bow before saying, "Your Highness Qianyu, Island Master, there has been an accident. Sir Lin Ming has not yet returned from the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm!"

"What?"

Mu Yuhuang's eyes widened and she immediately stood from her chair.

As Mu Qianyu heard these words, she couldn't believe her own ears. Her eyes widened as she simply stared at the red-robed maid, her hands tightly gripped against the armrests of her chair. Because of the strength of her grip, her fingers had gone pale.

"Sir Mu Dingshan and Lady Mu Xiaoqing have returned. 16 people left, and 15 people returned. Only Sir Lin Ming is missing!"

16 people left, 15 people returned, only Lin Ming was missing!

As these words reverberated in her ears, Mu Qianyu felt as if all the strength in her body had been sucked out, and all her feelings were gone. Her heart felt empty, but she didn't know what this meant.

It was like the world had slowed to a crawl. She was confused, anxious, sad, in complete disbelief…

Mu Yuhuang's body stiffened for a long time. Finally, she took a deep breath and waved her hand, ordering the red-robed maid, "Return…"

After the maid withdrew, she sighed, "Is the destiny of my Divine Phoenix Island not enough? Or do the heavens themselves wish to punish my Divine Phoenix Island?"

The South Sea Demon Region had already sounded the clarion call of war. And in this dark time, a talent that was brimming with promise and hope had appeared. Yet, he had only been at Divine Phoenix Island for less than a month, and he had fallen within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm!

Such an amazing genius had fallen within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, where death itself had such a low chance of occurring! If this wasn't the will of the heavens, then what could it possibly be?

"Yu'er…"

Mu Yuhuang turned to look at Mu Qianyu, but saw that she was tightly holding onto a chair with her hand, her face pale and showing a confused expression.

"Yu'er, let us go. We have to inform the Council of Elders of such a great matter…"

"Inform…" Mu Qianyu propped herself up, "inform them of what?"

"Inform them of Lin Ming's death. Even if I do not inform them, they will know. I gave all of the extra Vermillion Bird blood essence to Lin Ming. I had already borne a great deal of pressure to do this, but now, the Elders will not let go of this opportunity to take advantage in this dire time.” Mu Yuhuang ruefully smiled and shook her head.

Vermillion Bird blood essence was extremely precious to Divine Phoenix Island. If one wished to cultivate the core sections of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’, they had to have a rich and pure Vermillion Bird bloodline. There were many talented Divine Phoenix Island disciples whose bloodline purity was off by just a bit, and thus were unable to cultivate the core sections of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. These disciples might have needed only two or three drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence in order to reach the necessary bloodline purity.

However, there was simply too little Vermillion Bird blood essence. Unless one had sufficient talent or backing, they would not receive any. Even core disciples were not able to enjoy this treatment.

But in this case, Mu Yuhuang had actually given all of the Vermillion Bird blood essence to Lin Ming. It had to be known that Lin Ming didn’t have even a tiny bit of the Vermillion Bird bloodline with him. In order to help him rise to the peak from having none at all, that required a massive amount of Vermillion Bird blood essence to be consumed. This sort of matter was normally impossible.

Not only that, but Mu Yuhuang had given Lin Ming a far greater amount of Vermillion Bird blood essence than she needed. She had bet everything on Lin Ming, sorely anticipating that one day he would lead Divine Phoenix Island into breaking through to being a fifth-grade sect.

This decisive resolution had caused many people to be discontent. However, Lin Ming’s talent was just too inspiring. Even a character like Mu Fengxian had been convinced, how could anyone else argue otherwise?

All of those whose bloodline needed to be just a bit purer in order to cultivate the complete ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ secretly slandered Lin Ming. However, no matter how much resentment they felt, they dared not speak publically.

But now, Lin Ming had died! And therefore all of the Vermillion Bird blood essence was completely lost!

When Lin Ming was alive, there were people that were already darkly jealous of him. In particular, those like Yan Fuhong, core disciples that were stuck in the middle. Because of Lin Ming's appearance, their chances of climbing up had even worsened.

But Lin Ming's suppressive presence was too great. His talent surpassed even Mu Qianyu, and someday in the future, he might even be titled as the 'Saint Son'. Although he hadn't yet grown, he had obtained the support of Mu Qianyu, Mu Yuhuang, and Mu Fengxian. As for his future, it would be incredible. When he reached the Revolving Core realm, he even had a possibility of becoming the Highest Elder. Who would dare to provoke such a person?

Now that Lin Ming had died, the situation was completely different. The wall that had pushing everyone down had vanished, and those like Yan Fuhong who lost resources because of Lin Ming would not miss this opportunity to vent their dissatisfaction. And there were many of these people that also had connections – they represented a fairly large and influential force.

Mu Yuhuang was already ready to deal with them. Like the Seven Profound Valleys, Divine Phoenix Island was not some monolithic block of opinion and ideas. As the Island Master of Divine Phoenix Island, and also the leading power and authority, there would naturally be those who refused to accept this fact.

Although it wasn't possible to topple Mu Yuhuang because of Lin Ming's death, it was still enough to make her feel disgusted and sick.

"Yu'er, I know you are sad, but a human's death is like an extinguished lamp; you have to accept this…" Mu Yuhuang saw Mu Qianyu's oblivious expression and sighed. Perhaps it was best for Yu'er to not participate in this meeting with the Council of Elders…

"Master… is Lin Ming really dead? Is there no other possible reason?" Mu Qianyu looked at Mu Yuhuang, her voice trembling.

Mu Yuhuang shook her head. Although she also very much wanted to find and alternative reason, the situation with the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm had been the same ever since Divine Phoenix Island was founded 3000 years ago. Every time people entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm's smelting trials, they would also leave at the same time. If anyone was missing, they would forever be missing. There had never been an exception.

"I do not believe this!" Mu Qianyu stubbornly said, "I know Lin Ming the best! From when I met him, he broke into the Flood Dragon's cave, cured my wounds, absorbed the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, became the champion of the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction Martial Meeting, cultivated the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' until he defeated Lei Mubai; what has he done that hasn't been beyond all expectations? He has already given too many surprises, why can it not happen one more time!?"

As Mu Qianyu spoke, life seemed to come back into her eyes. Her voice became faster, and more and more confident. "I cannot believe Lin Ming is dead, I will not believe Lin Ming is dead!"

Mu Yuhuang didn't know what to say. Her lips moved, but eventually no words came out.

After a long silence, Mu Yuhuang asked "Would you like to go to the Council of Elders?"

"I'm going!" Mu Qianyu stood up. No matter what, she was the Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island. She was not some opinion-less little girl who would be affected by news that she could not verify herself.

………………………

Within the Grand Hall of Divine Phoenix Mountain, a flame colored spirit boat slowly landed. Mu Yuhuang and Mu Qianyu both disembarked from the spirit boat. After they entered the Grand Hall, they found that many other Elders had already gathered.

As they saw Mu Yuhuang arrive, many of these Elders had expressions of regret and sorrow. Divine Phoenix Island had lost a supremely talented disciple, and also the chance of being promoted to a fifth-grade sect. But, there were also many faces that sneered. Among these was a Vermillion Bird Faction Great Elder, Mu Chihuo.

Within Divine Phoenix Island, all the major power players had the last name Mu. They were the direct descendants of Divine Phoenix Island's original Master Ancestor who had founded the sect. This Mu Chihuo was Mu Qianyu's distantly related uncle, and also her uncle master.

Mu Chihuo had competed with Mu Yuhuang for the position of Island Master. But, Mu Fengxian had in the end chosen Mu Yuhuang as her successor, and thus Mu Chihuo was only able to take the role of a Great Elder.

As the Island Master, Mu Yuhuang directly controlled the distribution of all resources; it was far above the authority of a Great Elder by a wide margin.

It had to be known that there were extremely complex and divisive internal relations within Divine Phoenix Island. After 3000 years of growth, all sorts of close relatives, distant relatives, mentors, disciples, fellow apprentices, family, friends, all of them were gathered in once place. Sometimes, there were even those that were unable to determine just what relationships they had. In this case, it would be handled by certain leaders within Divine Phoenix Island who had been chosen to represent the interests of those that were blood related and those that had a master and disciple relationship. This was because the allocation of resources was of utmost importance!

A family clan's younger generation and direct descendants – just who didn't need resources? Just who didn't want to have more achievements? One or two drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence was often enough to bridge the gap between the extreme Xiantian realm and the Revolving Core realm. How could this not arouse the jealousy and resentment of others?

As he saw Mu Yuhuang arrive, Mu Chihuo sneered and didn't speak.

Mu Yuhuang directly walked to the seat of honor and sat down. Then she glanced at everyone and clearly spoke, stressing each word, “Lin Ming has died!”

Those around her didn’t have much response, this matter was already known to everyone.

“This is my matter and also my responsibility.” Mu Yuhuang frankly said. Although she obtained Mu Fengxian’s approval before gifting Lin Ming with all the Vermillion Bird blood essence she possessed, she was the one to originally raise this idea.

“Your responsibility?” Mu Chihuo rudely said, “High Master Yuhuang, you should know that in the younger generation, those core disciples at the edge only need one or two drops of blood essence to enhance their talent to the degree where it is enough to practice the core sections of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ cultivation method. In the future, there is no question that they would be able to become Revolving Core masters. But you have given Lin Ming more than 20 drops of blood essence! Over 20 drops! That is equal to over 10 Revolving Core masters that we will no longer have! Divine Phoenix Island’s Vermillion Bird Faction and Blue Luan Faction have a combined total of only several dozen Revolving Core powerhouses!”

Mu Chihuo wasn’t exaggerating any of his words, this was how important and precious Vermillion Bird blood essence was to Divine Phoenix Island. Two drops were enough for an extreme Xiantian master to break through to the Revolving Core realm. This was the truth.

And Revolving Core realm masters were the backbone of Divine Phoenix Island. To lose all of the Vermillion Bird blood essence at once, this responsibility was not small!

At this time, another Elder said, “Island Master. Before, I did not oppose you in giving Lin Ming the Vermillion Bird blood essence. But you should at least have waited until he safely returned from the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm before doing so. And yet you gave the Vermillion Bird blood essence to Lin Ming before he entered. What was the reason for this?”

The second one who spoke was an old man named Yan Yusheng. He was an Elder of Divine Phoenix Island who didn’t share the last name Mu. Generally speaking, these Elders that didn't share this last name were weaker. Thus, they wisely wouldn't interfere with the interpersonal faction battles. However, this Yan Yusheng was the grandfather of Yan Fuhong. Originally, Yan Fuhong was able to enter the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall. But because of Lin Ming's appearance, he had been removed from the list of participants. This was the last time that Yan Fuhong would have been able to enter the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. The next time that it opened, he would no longer have the qualifications!

As for the Vermillion Bird blood essence, there was no share given to Yan Fuhong.

Yan Fuhong had originally been pressured by Lin Ming and wasn't even able to have a bit of a temper. But now that Lin Ming had died, all of Yan Fuhong's hate and enmity had burst out, and he had gone to tearfully complain to his grandfather. Yan Fuhong was Yan Yusheng's most outstanding and talented grandson, and the family had great expectations of him. Thus Yan Yusheng would try to get some justice for Yan Fuhong.

Chapter 403 – Endless Trial

Chapter 403 – Endless Trial

…

…

…

Mu Yuhuang coldly glared at Yan Yusheng. In normal times, she wouldn’t even bother to play along with his nonsense. But now, facing the pressure from the Council of Elders, she had no choice but to explain, “During the assessment in the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall, bloodline density is the most important influencing factor. In order to obtain greater lucky chances in the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall, one’s bloodline must naturally be more purer!”

“To give Lin Ming great lucky chances, you took the risk and gave him so much Vermillion Bird blood essence? Then what about the other disciples? Their bloodline purity is almost sufficient enough to practice the core sections of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. They put so much effort into their cultivation, all for a single chance to become a fish that passes through the dragon gate. Isn’t this just too unfair to them?”

Yan Yusheng’s voice wasn’t as emboldened or energetic as Mu Chihuo’s when he was arguing with Mu Yuhuang. He only spoke in a calm and moderate pace, but there was sharpness to his words that cut to the point.

Mu Yuhuang’s eyes became increasingly cold. “Elder Yan! If you find this unfair, then you may say so to the High Ancestor. The Vermillion Bird blood essence was personally granted to Lin Ming by the High Ancestor herself!”

Mu Yuhuang was very clear that the reason that Mu Chihuo and Yan Yusheng were launching verbal attacks against her together was to demand more authority.

There would be more Vermillion Bird blood essence in the future, and they wanted to the authority to control it. At least, they wanted to use this incident as a pretext to diminish Mu Yuhuang's power, and request for the distribution of the Vermillion Bird blood essence to be left to the Council of Elders to decide, as opposed to the Vermillion Bird Faction Sovereign singularly controlling it.

It had to be known that the next Vermillion Bird Faction Sovereign would be Mu Qianyu. Mu Qianyu was also someone who stood by Mu Yuhuang. Mu Qianyu's natural talent was outstanding, and in the future she would most likely reach the extreme Revolving Core realm. Once she held power, it would last for seven to eight hundred years!

If this happened, then Mu Chihuo's faction would never be able to stand up!

If no master was born in a faction, then they would slowly decline and wither away. Eventually, they would even degenerate into a collateral branch.

After Mu Chihuo, there were also many Elders in the same faction that spoke. To them, Lin Ming's death was a prelude to an intense internal power struggle.

The other unrelated Elders mostly stayed silent during this. They didn't want to involve themselves or stir up any trouble in the struggles of internal factions. They could only regret that such a great genius of Divine Phoenix Island had been lost.

……………..

Within a small guest room at one of the mountain peaks of the Divine Phoenix Mountains, Lei Jingtian was meditating when suddenly a fire lit in front of him. As the message passed to his ears, he suddenly let out happy laugh. "Lin Ming fell within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm? Haha! The heavens truly favor me! This boy, I'm glad he died early!"

The Five Element Region and Divine Phoenix Island's negations were still continuing. Such an important negation involved massive benefits, and even involved the rise and fall of a sect. It wasn't a matter that could be decided in just a few days. With both sides cooperating, there were also many details that needed to be hammered out. Negotiations had continued for half a month, and both sides had made concessions. However, they hadn't yet reached a final agreement.

Lei Jingtian naturally stayed in Divine Phoenix Island and hadn't left yet. Now that he heard the news of Lin Ming's death, he was overjoyed!

"The heavens are righteous; he is finally dead! Divine Phoenix Island's destiny is only this. They thought that they could soar into the heavens, hehe, but now it's unknown whether or not they can survive this South Sea crisis!"

As Lei Jingtian received news of Lin Ming's death, the other sect Elders of the Five Element Region also received it. The Golden Bell Mountain Elder was filled with deep emotion; such a singular talent of a generation had fallen. As for the Deep Earth Sect's Shi Zhongkun, he was the same as Lei Jingtian, taking pleasure in this news. To him, Lin Ming's death was a matter worth celebrating.

Out of the entire Divine Phoenix Island, only Mu Qianyu believed that Lin Ming was still alive. When Lin Ming had first entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, he hadn't left behind a destiny soul jade slip. This sort of jade slip required a martial artist to separate a sliver of their own soul and seal it into a jade slip. When the main body died, the jade slip would shatter.

However, separating a wisp of one's soul would cause an extremely great soul wound. Normally, only the mediocre would leave behind a soul jade slip. A true genius would never do such a thing.

Without clear evidence from something like a destiny soul jade slip, Mu Qianyu would not believe that Lin Ming had died.

……………………………

Bang!

Within the battlefield of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, Lin Ming's spear burst through a rock puppet, causing its body to explode into flames. He supported himself up with the Purple Comet Spear, partly kneeling on the ground. His back was covered in blood, and the bones of his left hand had been broken. The right hand that held the spear was also trembling.

He had finally crossed the second wave!

The first wave of rock puppets was the easiest to kill and the easiest to pass. Lin Ming had only need to kill them using his overwhelming strength. But the second wave of rock puppets was a notch stronger. The first time that Lin Ming had attempted to massacre all the rock puppets, he had been seriously wounded and almost died, eventually failing to finish them off. He had returned to his cave to heal his wounds, but unexpectedly found that the puppets he killed off were all being rapidly regenerated by the array formation.

As Lin Ming recovered, so did the rock puppets!

The second time that he attacked, Lin Ming had gained experience from the previous attempt and had barely managed to kill them. He had also been grievously wounded as before.

The third wave was absolutely not something he could defeat!

Lin Ming clenched his teeth, and swallowed down a healing pill.

At this moment, the array formation started to revolve, and the crimson blood colored runes began to light up one at a time. These past 10 days, Lin Ming had already discovered the rules of the smelting trial; soon, new rock puppets would appear. He launched his movement technique and quickly returned to the cave.

If he wanted to pass this smelting trial within the year, he would need to do everything possible to increase his strength.

This was the general level smelting trial of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Lin Ming's talent far surpassed other juniors within the South Horizon Region, but when he compared himself to those of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, he wasn't so sure of himself. The Palace Spirit had stated that during the entire time it had guarded the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall, only a single person had passed the smelting trial within a year. Not only that, but this person had come from the Royal Family, and had only been relegated to the general level smelting trial. The other general level talents hadn't been able to achieve this.

Lin Ming revolved the 'True Primal Chaos Formula', and within an hour the true essence in his body had been restored.

Then, Lin Ming took out a vial of viscous red liquid. This liquid was a Shattered Demon Heart Crystal.

Before, Lin Ming had obtained 10 Shattered Demon Heart Crystals. He had eaten half of one, given Mu Qianyu one, and had used part of another when he was revealing Lei Mubai's secret identity. Now, he had a bit over eight left.

This was an extremely brutal and potent medicine. The first time that Lin Ming had taken this, nearly all the blood in his body had been drained away.

With his current strength, he wouldn't end up in such a pitiful state. Still, he didn't dare to absorb too much. Not just that, but if there was too much energy, he wouldn't be able to absorb it. The safest way would be to take half of a Shattered Demon Heart Crystal every few days and refine it in the heat of battle.

Lin Ming took out a medicinal inscription symbol that he had drawn up when he had been at Dark Moon Island. This medicinal inscription symbol had been used to increase the potency of the Heaven Opening Pill. Although this medicinal inscription symbol was a bit too low level for the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, it was still better than nothing.

As Lin Ming drank the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, his entire body began to burn with a scalding heat. In his mind, the scene of the Netherworld Great Emperor fighting against countless demons appeared once more. But this time, Lin Ming wasn't lost in the immersive dream like before. He quickly broke through the illusion, manipulating the energy of the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, and began the process of tempering his marrow!

The Tempering Marrow boundary. This was the most important factor he would depend on to complete this smelting trial within a year!

Chapter 404 – Strange River

Chapter 404 – Strange River

…

…

…

Even though Lin Ming's current cultivation had reached the peak of Pulse Condensation, controlling the energy of the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal to temper his marrow still caused the same aching pain as before. It was as if a saber was being twisted into his very being!

This kind of energy contained the remnant will of the Netherworld Great Emperor. It was cruel, brutal, arrogant and unruly. In order to force it to yield so that Lin Ming could use it for himself, he had to erase this will.

What Lin Ming could do was use his own soul and slowly wear down the remnant will of the Netherworld Great Emperor.

Lin Ming grit his teeth as sweat streamed down him. Periodically there would be small amounts of energy that escaped from his pores, but this energy was all imprisoned by the power of the medicinal inscription symbol and contained within his body.

The principle behind this medicinal inscription symbol was to reduce the loss of medicinal efficacy. This medicinal inscription that was able to be fully utilized on the Heaven Opening Piil could still slightly affect the Shattered Demon Hearty Crystal.

Thus the energy within Lin Ming's body was increasingly manic and savage.

Lin Ming forcefully used the tempering marrow method found within the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ and urged the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal energy to enter his skeleton a bit at a time. The energy was thick and heavy like mercury, and also extremely pervasive. Even though Lin Ming’s bones were extremely dense, the energy easily penetrated through.

As the energy entered the marrow, Lin Ming could hear ‘chi chi chi’ sounds coming from his bones. This was the energy burning his marrow, slowly refining it and changing its very nature. This was similar to when a blacksmith had to fry a wooden spear shaft in a massive wok of oil in order to cause all the impurities within them to explode. This pain was deep within his bones and utterly agonizing.

Lin Ming’s forehead was dripping with sweat. But compared to the last time that he had absorbed the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, he was in a much better condition. The first time, almost all of his blood had been drained out, forming a bloody carapace that covered his body. But this time, there was only pain and sweat.

In the sweat, there were traces of faint gray substances, but only a small amount. These were the impurities within Lin Ming’s body. After Lin Ming had gone through several experiences of washing down his marrow and muscles, this was the result. Although Lin Ming’s bodily purity couldn’t compare with someone like Mu Qianyu, he also didn’t have many impurities left within him.

Time passed slowly. Finally, a full two hours had passed, and Lin Ming absorbed the last of the energy. He opened his mouth and vomited a mouthful of black blood.

This vomit actually didn’t stop. Lin Ming kept vomiting blood until the entire ground was covered in blood. It was quite a disturbing sight. Finally, it ended, and Lin Ming wiped his mouth. He looked within himself and found that the blood within his blood vessels was extremely bright red, and thick like mercury.

Marrow and blood were inextricably linked. Marrow produced blood, and blood rejuvenated the marrow. In order to temper one’s marrow, one needed to create new blood.

After Lin Ming ate half of the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, the golden color of his marrow was much richer than before; he had come closer to completing Tempering Marrow by another 5% or so.

Half of a Shattered Demon Heart Crystal was 5%, and a whole one would be almost 10%. Now, Lin Ming's Tempering Marrow was around 25% complete. Even though the future medicinal efficacy of these pills would weaken, once he finished eating the eight Shattered Demon Heart Crystals, Lin Ming estimated that he should complete Tempering Marrow by around 60 to 70%.

Tempering Marrow was a great boundary. Completing it was much more difficult than Lin Ming had previously assumed. He didn't know just how strong he would be after completing Tempering Marrow.

As Lin Ming sat in meditation for half an hour, his stomach began to growl in hunger.

Before Lin Ming had entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, he had filled his spatial ring with all sorts of food. As he took out cured meats and dry rations, he heard a faint trickling sound coming from within the cave, as if there was water nearby.

Lin Ming's mind stirred. He put away the dry rations and began walking into the cave. After he walked several hundred feet, he saw that there really was an underground river in the cave.

The river water was incomparably clear and beautiful. However, Lin Ming felt that there was something not quite right. As he reached out his hand to scoop some up, he suddenly sucked in a breath of cold air. This river water was very heavy. At least, it was no lighter than mercury. Not only that, but the temperature of the water was terrifyingly high; it was already several times above boiling.

As Lin Ming was cupping the water, he found out that during that time a great amount of the true essence that protected his body had melted away.

"What kind of river is this!?"

Lin Ming's complexion wasn't too good. Everything he found within this Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was strange and dangerous.

"Mm? What's that?"

Lin Ming discovered that there were actually creatures within the river. These creatures looked like giant crabs, and their whole body was covered with red bony armor as they lurked underneath the water. They stared at him with wide eyes.

The two claws were over two feet long!

"If it can survive in this place, then it's not some friendly animal." The temperature was several times the boiling temperature, but these crabs could still survive here. Even Lin Ming wouldn't be able to do so. He could stay under the water for a long time, but he would eventually have to give up after his true essence was exhausted. But these crabs took this river as their home, and simply didn't fear the high temperatures.

A giant crab with a four or five foot tall body suddenly rose up. It brandished its two foot long claws as it tried to clamp down on Lin Ming, as if it wanted to cut him off at the waist.

"It takes me as prey?"

Lin Ming sneered. He punched out with the Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist; azure true essence erupted!

Bang!

The crab flew backwards, rolling around. It finally stopped, jumped up and ran away.

"It didn't die?"

Lin Ming was shocked. This punch was able to kill a late Houtian martial artist. But this big crab had actually resisted it!

Too strong!

Soon, seven or eight giant crabs gathered in the river. Lin Ming was stunned for a moment, and then realized that the crab fellow had gone back to gather its buddies.

These crabs were the overlords of the river. They had never suffered a loss like this before. Now, they swore to eliminate Lin Ming!

Pu! Pu!

Seven or eight giant crabs ran out of the river together, rushing to kill Lin Ming!

This time, Lin Ming no longer held back. He took out the Purple Comet Spear and fused the Divine Demon Thunder Soul into the shaft. The power of thunder exploded, and with a flourish of the spear, the entire cave was basked in a radiant purple light.

Kacha!

Seven or eight bolts of thunder dropped down from the sky, each one striking a giant crab. All of the crabs were instantly killed by Lin Ming.

As Lin Ming looked at the giant crabs on the ground, he suddenly remembered something. The Palace Spirit had said that this cave was the residence for those participating in the general level smelting trail; was this the food and water that were supplied?

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment, and then walked over to a giant crab. He grabbed it, and then used a great deal of effort to smash its palm-thick shell. Inside was glisteningly tender red and white meat. He dug out a big chunk and began to roast it over a fire.

Lin Ming had already become accustomed to bringing along salt and other seasonings. He casually sprinkled some onto the crab meat, and a delicious fragrance began to waft out.

Lin Ming took a careful bite. This strange giant crab's meat was extremely savory and tender, yet still chewy.

Lin Ming took his time. After he carefully determined that there weren't any side effects, he began to heartily chow down.

This strange giant crab's meat was very resistant to high temperature. No matter how he roasted it, it would not char or become over burnt. As he tasted it, its flavor was extremely delicious, and was even better than the dishes found within famous restaurants.

"This is the good stuff."

Even Lin Ming, a connoisseur who was relatively picky about food, couldn't help but praise this strange crab meat.

"Mm? The crab meat in my stomach seems to nourish my body's true essence?" Lin Ming was surprised to discover. As the crab meat entered his stomach, a low heat began to flow out and dissipate. This was an extremely comfortable feeling. He felt the fire-attribute true essence in his body slowly strengthening.

The magnitude of enhancement from this crab meat was far less than eating pills, but it absolutely won in terms of purity. There were no impurities and toxins contained within.

It was equivalent to eating spiritual vegetables and spiritual grains. However, the effects were at least 100 times greater than the spiritual foods found within Divine Phoenix Island!

Lin Ming was shocked. This was what participants in the Ancient Phoenix Clan's general level smelting trial ate?

The Ancient Phoenix Clan. Lin Ming only needed to hear this name to roughly guess that they would have the bloodline of a God Beast within them; it was difficult to imagine just how formidable their talent was. In addition, they studied the techniques and skills of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, they had training grounds like the smelting trial in the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, and also all sorts of amazing medicines and foods.

How could their talent not be outstanding?

It was no wonder that the weakest and most inferior king-level talent within the Ancient Phoenix Clan could also complete the general-level smelting trial within a year.

"Maybe… only the king-level are true members of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. And, the so-called general level is only for the subordinates of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

As Lin Ming realized this, the original contentment in his heart vanished.

The road he walked was still inestimably long!

However, the more it was like this, the more it aroused the competitive spirit within Lin Ming's heart. If he had already stood at the top of all the geniuses of the 3000 infinite universes, then, with no goal to pursue, he would feel desolate and bored.

But now, it looked like he fell far short.

After he ate a giant portion of crab meat, Lin Ming drank the water from the river. The river water also had similar effects to the crab meat; it was able to moisten and refine the true essence within his body.

"Even water has this effect. Not just that, but the fire-attribute true essence here is much richer than the outside. If I wish to practice actual combat, there is still a giant battle waiting outside for me. This is truly a great place to practice!

Within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, if one wanted to battle there were countless opponents outside. If one wanted to cultivate, there was extremely rich fire-attribute true essence; even eating or drinking would increase one's strength. What place would be quicker to cultivate in than here?

After Lin Ming drank his fill, he felt the crab meat and water turning into heat within his body and scurrying around. His body flushed with a frantic energy. If he didn't release this energy soon, he would be feeling unwell for a while. Lin Ming couldn't wait to go out and fight!

Lin Ming took out the Purple Comet Spear from his spatial ring and launched his movement technique, directly flying out of the cave. Outside the cave, several hundred rock puppets had already gathered on the plains. But this time, the flaming rock puppets were in the majority. These flaming rock puppets were much stronger than the ordinary rock puppets.

As he saw this vast number of rock puppets, Lin Ming's fighting spirit shot up. He trod forwards, his body shooting out like an arrow, creating a perfect arc as he landed in the midst of a puppet group.

The rock puppets roared, and columns of flames came blasting towards Lin Ming. He faintly smiled and instantly activated Golden Roc Shattering the Void. He was like a swallow within a storm, dancing in the midst of the crowded flames, like thread through the needle!

Hu hu hu!

All of the columns of fire passed by Lin Ming. A 1000 foot distance was crossed in the blink of an eye. As Lin Ming arrived in front of the first flame puppet, the Purple Comet Spear came sweeping down!

Bang!

With a loud explosion, the flaming puppet was broken apart by Lin Ming's spear!

As strength flowed through his entire body, Lin Ming could hear his bones popping and snapping; this inestimably comfortable feeling made him want to groan and shout!

Fight!

After tempering his marrow and eating a massive amount of crab meat, Lin Ming felt energy crashing throughout his entire body. If he didn't vent this energy, then he would never feel comfortable.

Peng peng peng!

A spear thrust out. Arcs of lightning shot out into all directions, blazing flames jetted into the sky, and an azure light sliced through the void. Wherever the Purple Comet Spear went, crushed stone would fly!

Chapter 405 – War Begins

Chapter 405 – War Begins

…

…

…

"Great!"

"Well done!"

"Again!"

The more Lin Ming fought, the more excited he became, and the more he burned with fighting spirit. The wounds on his body kept increasing, but no matter how much blood came out, it was like he didn't feel anything at all.

As Lin Ming massacred every single puppet, his entire body was slick with blood, and his true essence was depleted.

As he lay prone on the ground, pain coming from all over his body, Lin Ming felt a pleasant satisfaction in his heart.

There were those that were born for battle; Lin Ming was undoubtedly such a person.

Every day, he would cultivate the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' as well as the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians'. He would eat, drink, and build up the true essence within his body with the food he ate. When he needed to practice, he would go outside to the battlefield. Like this, time quickly passed.

Lin Ming cultivated without a care of time. But as he continued progressing on the general level smelting trial, there were actually tremendous changes in the outside world.

The war between Divine Phoenix Island and the South Sea Demon Region had finally erupted!

Although the South Sea Demon Region was a fifth-grade sect, their strength was at the lowest of fifth-grade sects. As for Divine Phoenix Island, they were at the very peak of all fourth-grade sects. Thus, the gap in strength between the two parties wasn't too great. In addition, Divine Phoenix Island had also obtained the assistance of the 19 third-grade sects in the Divine Phoenix Region, as well as support from an alliance with the Five Element Region. Whether or not the South Sea Demon Region would emerge victorious was uncertain.

Both sides had their own scruples and matters to settle. The war originally would have been stalled for a much longer period of time, but because of Lei Mubai's utter ruination, he had become the fuse that had prompted the advanced outbreak of war!

As the war started, it would first revolve around a few true essence stone vein deposits that were located in the South Sea. Later, the two sides would begin a complete large-scale war. The main force of the war was naturally the Xiantian and Houtian realm martial artists.

Revolving Core masters rarely fought. Even if they did, the opponent may look miserable but still be full of energy. In truth, it was an incomparably difficult task to kill the enemy. When it came to a martial artist at the level of a Revolving Core master, defeating one was easy, but completely eliminating one was another matter altogether.

The war went on for a full two and a half months without a single Revolving Core master dying. Those that died were mostly Houtian and Pulse Condensation martial artists as well a great number of Xiantian masters.

War was a disaster that led to calamity throughout the land. But to geniuses, this was also a great chance. Since ancient times, the eras in which Supreme Elders and other characters like that had arisen from within the Sky Spill Continent had always been eras in which the flames of war had blazed all over.

If the young flowery geniuses never experienced and tempered themselves through the true terrors of war, they would never grow. Thus, regardless of whether it was the South Sea Demon Region or Divine Phoenix Island, they would send their core disciples to battle. Mu Dingshan, Mu Xiaoqing, and others had already gone to battle many times. Even Mu Qianyu had fought. Of course, every time she did so, she was accompanied by a Revolving Core master who would ensure her life was never in absolute danger.

………………

At the front of the South Sea, on an island several hundred thousand miles away from Divine Phoenix Island, Mu Qianyu was standing vigilant on a beach, staring at the endless sea. Her eyes were full of sorrow.

The sky was overcast, and the sea breeze caused Mu Qianyu's silky hair to dance in the air. It seemed as if it could rain at any moment.

For the past three months, Mu Qianyu had been in a miserable mood. There had still been no message or news of Lin Ming, and even Mu Qianyu's confidence began to waver with the passage of time.

These days, as she stood alone, she couldn't help but remember when she had been at the base of Thundercrash Mountain, and her experiences there with Lin Ming.

It had been over a year ago. Yet, she could clearly recall it like it had been yesterday.

She hadn't expected that events would turn out like this. It was as if she were living a dream…

"Cousin Qianyu, what are you thinking about?" A gentle voice asked from behind Mu Qianyu. He was an extremely handsome man who held a longsword in his hand. He was Mu Qianyu's distant cousin, Mu Qingshu, as well as the most outstanding grandson of the Vermillion Bird Faction's Third Elder. He was 32 years old, and a half-step into the Revolving Core realm.

He had amazing talent and a splendid background. Within Divine Phoenix Island, Mu Qingshu was a nearly unapproachable man that many beautiful female disciples yearned for. Not to mention the 20 to 30 year old female disciples, but even the younger ones all took Mu Qingshu as their dream lover.

Mu Qianyu didn't bother turning her head. These past few months, when she had gone to battle, it would always be with Mu Qingshu. Even when they lived in their small houses, it would be in neighboring ones.

All of this had obviously been arranged by certain individuals.

Mu Qianyu knew more or less that these was the actions of the Third Elder. From a young age, the Third Elder had brought up matters of marriage and engagement with Mu Qingshu to Mu Yuhuang. At the time, this had been turned down by Mu Yuhuang.

To Divine Phoenix Island, Mu Qianyu's future marriage was a very important matter. Mu Qianyu was the Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island. One didn't even need to discuss her lofty status, temperament, or awe inspiring beauty, one just needed to know that the Vermillion Bird bloodline within her body was no less than that of Divine Phoenix Island's founder. If one could marry Mu Qianyu, they would also be able to obtain the Primordial Yin energy that came from being the one to take her virginity. Thus, one would also gain a very pure Saint Beast bloodline.

Who didn't desire something so wonderful?

If Mu Qianyu were to be married, then the Third Elder believed that his grandson Mu Qingshu was the only one within the entire Divine Phoenix Island who was suitable and qualified to match up to Mu Qianyu. However, Mu Yuhuang had also looked at Mu Qingshu with disdain. Mu Qingshu was okay, but he was only at the level of Mu Dingshan. He wasn't even a Saint level talent; how could he possibly be worthy of her Mu Qianyu?

But three months ago, Mu Yuhuang had given all of the Vermillion Bird blood essence to Lin Ming, without even the thought that Mu Qianyu would marry Lin Ming in the future. However, the future was hard to predict. After Lin Ming had entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, he had not returned. And thus, all of Mu Yuhuang's hopes and dreams had faded into nothingness. At this time, some of the Great Elders had united together to attack her!

Mu Yuhuang had no choice but to start thinking about potential allies to consolidate her position in her faction. And the Third Elder was a good candidate to do so.

But if she wanted to win over the Third Elder to her side, the price she had to pay was obvious.

Mu Yuhuang didn't want to take the matter of Mu Qianyu's future marriage as an exchange. But as she thought about it more, it did seem that besides Mu Qingshu, there was no one in the entire Divine Phoenix Island who had the qualifications to marry Mu Qianyu. If Mu Qianyu had to be married in the future, then the only one she could marry would be Mu Qingshu.

As Mu Yuhuang realized this, she also tacitly yielded to the Third Elder's wishes and made some arrangements. Thus, the situation now was that Mu Qianyu and Mu Qingshu always went out to battle together.

Mu Qianyu was well aware of everything.

"Cousin Qianyu, the skies seem as if they are about to rain soon. How about returning to our lodgings?"

“Please do not worry about me Senior-apprentice Brother. Senior-apprentice Brother, please return first.” Mu Qianyu’s voice was neither cold nor hot, and her words held a strange hint of tempered unfamiliarity.

Mu Qingshu laughed twice, and then shook his head saying, “Cousin Qianyu wants to bathe in rain? Haha, well as martial artists, staying under the rain is no problem. Then, I shall accompany Cousin Qianyu in showering under this rain. This can be considered an act of elegance.”

Mu Qianyu was somewhat taken aback. Since he had already said this, she had nothing left to say. She silently stood there.

“Cousin Qianyu, are you worrying about the South Sea war?” After a period of heavy silence, Mu Qingshu tried to raise a topic of conversation.

“No, I am just in a poor mood.” Mu Qianyu shook her head, unwilling to say more.

“This...” Mu Qingshu reluctantly smiled, but the corners of his lips still twitched several times. He wasn’t an idiot, and he clearly knew why Mu Qianyu’s mood was so poor.

Ever since the Third Elder had spoken of marriage matters to Mu Qingshu, Mu Qingshu had already started to regard Mu Qianyu as his fiancé. And what man could tolerate his own fiancé thinking of another man, even if that person was already dead?

The heavy rain came. But, Mu Qianyu had no interest in soaking under the rain. Every raindrop that touched her would instantly be evaporated by fire-attribute true essence.

“Senior-apprentice Brother may stay here, I shall return first.”

As Mu Qianyu finished speaking, she deeply looked at the shadow of rain over the endlessly vast waters. She sighed in her heart, and then turned around and walked away.

Mu Qingshu also had no more interest in following her. He stood in the heavy rain alone, his complexion ugly. His originally handsome appearance was also twisted into nothing.

"He's already dead, but he can still have you worry so much?" Mu Qingshu didn't feel happy. "You have no choice in your future marriage. Sooner or later, the one you marry will be me. If you can love me wholeheartedly and take care of me well, then I will also be good to you and do the same. But if your heart is filled with other men even after our great wedding, then do not blame me for being heartless in the future."

Time passed day by day. Four months… five months… half a year…

Divine Phoenix Island still hadn't announced Lin Ming's death. But, news of his death still slowly spread. The Seven Profound Valleys was an ally of Divine Phoenix Island, and was also participating in the war with the South Sea Demon Region. To the Seven Profound Valleys' geniuses, this was also a good opportunity to hone their strength. Their disciples contacted the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island, and they thus learned that Lin Ming had died.

At the start they had assumed this was a rumor. But afterwards, they were able to gradually confirm it.

The Seven Profound Valleys' disciples were shocked. Most of them had bore witness to the complete process of when Lin Ming had become champion of the Total Faction Martial Meeting. This Lin Ming who was overflowing with talent, actually fell from the heavens?

This was simply unbelievable!

"Unimaginable, really unimaginable!" On a small island in the South Sea, a blue-clothed swordsman held a jug of wine as he sat on the beach, his sword stabbed into the ground in front of him.

This blue-clothed swordsman was the top talent who had grandly lost to Lin Ming during the Total Faction Martial Meeting, Jiang Baoyun. At that time, Jiang Baoyun's strength was not much worse than Lin Ming's. Thus, ever since then, Jiang Baoyun always felt a familiar and friendly feeling towards Lin Ming.

"I had wanted to take you as my goal in life, hoping to chase after your shadow. I did not think that even the heavens would be so jealous of someone with your ability, that you actually fell within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm! That I have lost all chances to fight you in the future, that is my life's great regret!" Jiang Baoyun heaved a deep sigh, and poured the jug of wine onto the beach.

"My sword is your monument and the sand is your mound. This wine is my parting gift to you. In life you were a heroic man, and in death may you be an outstanding ghost!"

Of course, there were also those within the Seven Profound Valleys that were heartily enjoying news of Lin Ming's death. And among these, the one who felt the greatest joy was Ouyang Boyan!

One year ago, Ouyang Boyan's nephew Ouyang Dihua had died to Lin Ming. But, because of Lin Ming's unique status, he couldn't do anything against him.

Of course, in reverse, Lin Ming certainly couldn't do anything against Ouyang Boyan. Ouyang Boyan's cultivation had already reached the peak of the early Xiantian realm, and was close to reaching the middle Xiantian realm. As one of the senior Elders of the Seven Profound Valleys, there were many complicated forces supporting him from behind. Lin Ming had no proof that Ouyang Boyan had tried to kill him, but even if he did, it would be very difficult to bring him down.

Lin Ming could only avoid Ouyang Boyan. He had even entrusted Qin Ziya with arranging his parents to a safe place, in fear of Ouyang Boyan's retaliation.

The seeds of hatred had already been planted within Ouyang Boyan's heart. But after Lin Ming had gone to Divine Phoenix Island, Ouyang Boyan could only hopelessly dream of his revenge. He had not thought that today, he would actually obtain the great news of Lin Ming's passing!

“Hahahahaha! The great heavens are righteous! This boy has died well!” In a high loft, Ouyang Boyan laughed. “Regrettably, I was unable to personally kill you and resolve the hate in my heart!”

Ouyang Boyan clenched his fists, and suddenly seemed to think of something. The corners of his mouth curved up in a fiendish grin. “Come to think of it, that boy’s lover Qin Xingxuan is also in my Seven Profound Valleys… good. Since I cannot kill you myself, I shall vent all my anger upon your lover. Little girl, do not blame me. If you want to blame someone, then blame Lin Ming!

Chapter 406 – Transfer Order

Chapter 406 – Transfer Order

…

…

…

When Lin Ming was alive, Ouyang Boyan wouldn't have dared to act against Qin Xingxuan. But now that Lin Ming had died, he didn't need to hesitate any longer. He only feared that Divine Phoenix Island wouldn't be indifferent to Lin Ming's matters.

But as Ouyang Boyan thought of a person, he frowned. "That Qin Ziya, because of his relationship with Lin Ming, he was able to receive a Heaven Opening Pill and that lucky bastard actually broke through to the Xiantian realm, becoming an Elder! Those idiotic Zither Faction fellows care about such boring things like favors and friendship and graciousness. If I want to deal with Qin Xingxuan, then he'll most likely try to stick his face in!"

Ouyang Boyan's ideal result would be that he would lay a trap for Qin Xingxuan and then capture her, bringing her to the Acacia Faction so that he could cultivate his Divine Acacia Power on her. After he sucked dry her Yin energy, he would kill her. That would be the best way to vent his anger. But, Qin Xingxuan was an official disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys, and also had Qin Ziya protecting her. If he wanted to quietly do this, the chances of success were low.

"Humph, since there's an annoying fellow hanging around, I'll let you live for another couple days. If I do anything now then I'll be too obvious. First I'll wait for some time to pass and look for an opportunity to send Qin Xingxuan into a certain death battlefield, and kill her using someone else. Hehe, this is also good. If she died to those demon art cultivators of the South Sea Demon Region, that would be even more fun!"

Thinking of this, Ouyang Boyan's smile became increasingly malevolent.

....

"Die!"

Lin Ming stepped forth with Golden Roc Shattering the Void and the Purple Comet Spear in his hand fiercely thrust out, directly smashing a rock puppet into pieces.

But at the same time, four or five more rock puppets had surrounded him.

"I can't hold on!"

Lin Ming grit his teeth, and decisively opened the Heretical God Force!

His aura completely erupted. Lin Ming's strength instantly rose to a new level.

"Thunderfire Annihilation!"

Bang!

A violent explosion destroyed all the puppets that had surrounded him, instantly blowing them to pieces. Lin Ming used the explosive thrust force of the shock wave and leapt back, shooting like an arrow out of the surrounding puppet group and returning to the cave.

"Close call!"

Lin Ming let out a long breath of relief. The probability of death in this general level smelting trail was very high. If here were to be injured and then surrounded by puppets, death could occur at any moment.

Lin Ming had continuously used the Heretical God Force and Thunderfire Annihilation as his final cards. If he couldn't persist in the battlefield any longer, he would detonate Thunderfire Annihilation, killing all the puppets around him so he could escape.

"Tempering Marrow is around 40% complete, and my true essence has already filled to the limit of Pulse Condensation. As long as I can go up a bit further, I'll be able to break through to the Houtian realm!"

Currently, Lin Ming's true essence in his meridians had already filled to the limit, and true essence had gathered in his dantian. As long as he could connect these two, he would be able to truly step into the Houtian realm. But Lin Ming was thinking of letting his meridians overflow, so that he would spontaneously break through to the Houtian realm. If he did it this way, his foundation would be even more stable.

As Lin Ming meditated, he took out the sealed Fallen Star Flame from his spatial ring.

He untied the seal. The Fallen Star Flame appeared. It had transformed into the shape of a small leopard and was violently struggling against its bonds.

"It's your turn!"

Lin Ming directly pressed the Fallen Star Flame into his chest.

A tremendous energy that was contained with a medium-grade earth-step Flame Essence burst forth. A massive amount of energy broke into his meridians, savagely conflicting with Lin Ming's own true essence!

Under this trembling surge of energy, the energy in Lin Ming's dantian and meridians also received a severe shock. As the energy of the Fallen Star Flame began to be gradually assimilate into his true essence, after some time, Lin Ming could hear a cracking sound; the true essence within his dantian and meridians had connected!

"Mm? Houtian realm!"

Lin Ming forced a smile. He didn't think that he would break through to the Houtian realm during this critical period, but this was also good. With the support of his dantian, it would be even easier to absorb the Fallen Star Flame. Otherwise, with Lin Ming's current strength, absorbing the medium-grade earth-step Flame Essence wouldn't be easy.

……………………

Three months later, Sky Fortune King's magnificent Eastern Palace welcomed its new master.

"Hahahahahahahahahaha, I never thought that through the winding paths of life, the one that would have the last laugh would be me!" The Tenth Prince Yang Zhen traced the throne of the Eastern Palace, his fingers trembling with excitement.

"This is all mine as it should be. Third Brother, all the fear that I felt this year, I shall return it back to you! I will let you know how it feels to have everything you own in the control of others, knowing that your head can fall at any moment!"

As Yang Zhen spoke, his face flashed with the utter ecstasy of a fulfilled revenge.

At this moment, a cold voice sounded behind him. "Yang Zhen, do not forget who it is that supported you to become the new Crown Prince of Sky Fortune Kingdom."

Yang Zhen's body trembled, and all of the overbearing arrogance that he had displayed was immediately restrained. "Martial House Master, please rest assured. This little prince will never forget your kindness. Later, this little prince will follow all directions of Mister Ouyang."

"Mm! Remember this well. As long as you obey, you will be guaranteed a century of rule!" The one who spoke to Yang Zhen was a cloaked man. This man was the new Seven Profound Martial House Master of Sky Fortune Kingdom. After Qin Ziya had broken through to the Xiantian realm, he had returned to his sect as an Elder. Thus, the position of Sky Fortune Kingdom's Seven Profound Martial House Master was naturally empty. This man was a new candidate that had been chosen by Ouyang Boyan.

This cloaked man was a disciple that Ouyang Boyan had received a long time ago. His cultivation was at a half-step Xiantian, but as a sect's half-step Xiantian martial artist, he was able to completely sweep away the entirety of Sky Fortune Kingdom's martial world. Even if Muyi and all the other masters of Sky Fortune Kingdom gathered together, they would not be his match!

"Martial House Master, in order to clear out the Qin Family, I shall be counting on Martial House Master's help.

When a new emperor came in, he would assign his own courtiers and his own subordinates. Often, the first step towards this was clearing out all the court officials of the past era. The first reason was as a show of power, the second reason was to recover wealth and authority, and the third reason was to consolidate their own rule and eliminate any chance of rebellion.

Since ancient times, powerful ministers and officials would never have a pleasant end. Not to mention Qin Xiao's fame. Within Sky Fortune Kingdom, the common folk all knew his name, but might not know the name of the emperor.

In this situation, because of Lin Ming, Qin Xiao had supported the Crown Prince. So how could Yang Zhen possibly tolerate someone like Qin Xiao.

"I will naturally help you in clearing out the Qin Family." The cloaked man indifferently said. If he wanted to deal with the Qin Family, then he would also be able to conveniently deal with Qin Xingxuan. Qin Xiao may have been a god to the military of Sky Fortune Kingdom, but in his eyes, he wasn't even a fart. If he wanted to take Qin Xiao's life, no one in the Marshal Quarters could stop him!

After Yang Zhen obtained the assurance of the cloaked man, he really wanted to laugh several times. 'Lin Ming, Lin Ming, I didn't expect that your actions would help me in the end. Without you, there was no way that Ouyang Boyan would have supported someone so insignificant as myself, and it would also be impossible for me to clear out the obstacle known as Qin Xiao. I really pity Qin Xiao. Qin Xiao has been brilliant and brave his entire life, yet his family produced such a catastrophic mess like Qin Xingxuan!'

'There is also Green Mulberry City's Lin Family. But there's no need to hurry. Once I sit on the throne, I will slowly deal with them!'

……………………

"They want me to go to the open sea battlefield?"

After Qin Xingxuan saw the Seven Profound Command, she was dazed for a moment.

These past months, Qin Xingxuan was in a very dark state of mind. After she heard the news that Lin Ming had died, she hadn't believed it at first, but slowly, she had no choice but to accept this fact.

She had left the Seven Profound Martial House by herself, and with the arrangements of Qin Ziya, she had gone to see Lin Ming's parents. But, she hadn't told the old couple the news.

Qin Ziya hadn't yet either. This old couple still didn't know that their son had already fallen within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

Qin Xingxuan and Lin Mu lived together for several days. Lin Mu was very happy and concerned about her, and had even made several veiled attempts to bring up the matter of marriage. In the past, this would have caused Qin Xingxuan to feel very warm and happy, but now, this only made her feel sad and morose.

Two months ago she had been sent to the South Sea battlefield. She didn't resist; she thought that battle might be able to ease her depression.

Then, she had received the transfer order to go to the open sea battlefield.

"Open sea battlefield…"

Qin Xingxuan ruefully smiled. For almost a whole year, the Divine Phoenix Island Alliance and the South Sea Demon Region intermittently fought, but neither side committed to a life and death battle. Otherwise, these two great sects might not be able to afford the price.

However, the open sea battlefield that revolved around the three large true essence stone lode islands was incomparably brutal from the start until now. Even two Revolving Core masters had fallen there!

These three great islands were simply execution grounds!

“Someone wants me to die?” Qin Xingxuan’s eyes flashed as she looked at the martial artist that had delivered the Seven Profound Command, not concealing her frigid tone. A few months ago, Qin Xingxuan had learned of the simmering hatred that Ouyang Boyan had for Lin Ming and Qin Ziya. Qin Ziya had warned her to be careful. Two months had passed in peace since then, but now someone wanted to plot against her!

The person who delivered the Seven Profound Command was an inner court disciple of the Acacia Faction. His cultivation was at the middle Houtian realm, and his name was Ou Xiong.

Ou Xiong frowned, “Qin Xingxuan, what are you trying to say? This time 20 disciples have been dispatched to the open sea battlefield, you are only one of them. This is also a strategic plan of the sect. I hope that you take the overall situation seriously!”

Take the overall situation seriously?

Qin Xingxuan’s heart was filled with derision, “May I ask which Elder’s Seven Profound Command this is?”

After Qin Xingxuan asked this question, Ou Xiong didn’t look happy at all. “Qin Xingxuan, are you questioning whether or not this Seven Profound Command is real?”

Qin Xingxuan coldly said, “I have no doubt that it is real. All Elders have the authority to issue Seven Profound Commands, but I do not have to follow every Elder’s orders.”

Ou Xiong's expression sank. "The person who issued this command was the vice war commander, Elder Liu. Does he have the qualifications to order you?"

Qin Xingxuan's heart sank. Elder Liu… the internal relations within the Seven Profound Valleys were complex and mysterious. Ouyang Boyan had a very wide net of connections. If he wanted to obtain a transfer order, it would be simple!

As Ou Xiong saw Qin Xingxuan's complexion, he faintly smiled and used a true essence sound transmission to say, "Qin Xingxuan, I will spare you the chitchat. Yes, you have someone backing you, but Qin Ziya is only an Elder who was recently promoted; who do you expect can help you. Yes, that's right, I forgot to tell you something else. After another month, the new emperor of Sky Fortune Kingdom will ascend to his throne. The new emperor is called Yang Zhen or something like that, and he also has the support of the current Seven Profound Martial House Master. I heard that he has already taken control of your Qin Family. Your grandfather has been placed under house arrest. You should be a good little girl and follow directions. Then, your Qin Family will only be relieved of its military authority and your grandfather will be able to die naturally and peacefully of old age. Otherwise, if he happens to be charged with the crime of rebellion, then… hehe, well, you know the consequences!"

As Qin Xingxuan heard this, it was like she had been struck by a bolt of lightning. Her body trembled, and her beautiful face that had been red with anger had now lost all color.

"You… despicable beast!"

"Despicable? Are you really so naive?" Ou Xiong looked Qin Xingxuan up and down, then disdainfully said, "Who do you think you are? You think there are still people who can support you? If you don't want to go to the open sea battlefield and die, then I can offer you a path out. Dress up so you look pretty, and then go to Mister Ouyang and beg for mercy. Serve him well, take care of him, and then maybe if Mister Ouyang is happy, he'll release your Qin Family."

Chapter 407 – Rescue Letter

Chapter 407 – Rescue Letter

…

…

…

Qin Xingxuan's willowy eyebrows shot up. She grit her teeth, her chest heaving. He fists were tightly balled, but she eventually didn't punch him.

She knew that her strength was inferior to his, and her influence was also inferior. What could she do? She could only endure this torment!

Ou Xiong glanced at Qin Xingxuan with pity and said, "What, do you think I insulted you or something? The Acacia Faction has many female disciples, we do not lack a Qin Xingxuan! Since you decided to live so haughtily, then ready yourself to die!"

Ou Xiong sneered and then left the hall.

The one left behind was Qin Xingxuan. Her hands shook. If Ouyang Boyan wanted to deal with her grandfather, then that was simply too easy a matter! Ouyang Boyan didn't even need to do anything! As long as his disciple supported Yang Zhen and fabricated a false charge of plotting rebellion, then the Qin Family would immediately be capsized overnight!

The only hope Qin Xingxuan had was Qin Ziya. She shivered as she took out a long distance sound transmitting talisman from her spatial ring and recorded a message, then lit it…

…………………………

Several hundred miles away, Qin Ziya was sitting on a sandy beach. He lightly stroked a zither as a mass of flames slowly died out in front of him.

Qin Ziya heavily sighed. He shook his head, saying, "When Lin Ming was alive, no one dared to bully him or anyone related to him. But now that Lin Ming has died, all the brilliance and glory that he possessed has lost any meaning… Ouyang Boyan has been silent these past few months so I thought he had quit, but it seems that he will start his revenge on Lin Ming's family and friends. I owe Lin Ming for his graciousness so I cannot idly stand by. If I let this happen, then this will run contrary to my Zither Heart. Unfortunately, I have just been promoted to an Elder and my strength is weak, my connections are also limited. If I want to resist Ouyang Boyan, it is simply impossible unless I look for help.

"Of those that knew Lin Ming, the strongest one and the one who can most help me is Mu Qianyu. If she could stand up for Qin Xingxuan, then she can guarantee 100 years of safety for the Qin Family and Lin Family!"

Mu Qianyu was the future leader of Divine Phoenix Island. With just a few words, no matter how gutsy or courageous Ouyang Boyan was, he would never dare to harm Qin Xingxuan ever again!

But the question was, would Mu Qianyu help?

Qin Ziya had never seen Mu Qianyu before, he had only heard that she and Lin Ming were close friends. As to what sort of person she was, Qin Ziya was completely unclear.

"I cannot abandon hope here. If Mu Qianyu isn't willing to help, then I can still look for other ways."

As Qin Ziya though this, he wrote a letter and sent it to Divine Phoenix Island's Mu Qianyu.

Since the outbreak of war within the South Sea, the Seven Profound Valleys had allied with Divine Phoenix Island. Both of them corresponded with each other, and the methods in which they did so were much more than sound transmissions. Of course, letters were much more frequent. The consumption of true essence stones in sending these letters was much more efficient.

Within the South Sea battlefield, Qin Ziya found a letter delivering transmission array that the Seven Profound Valleys managed and then started the array to send out the letter.

The South Sea was and extremely vast swathe of land. The islands that Qin Ziya and Mu Qianyu were on were separated by nearly half a million miles. After several passes through transmission arrays that took three days, the letter finally reached Mu Qianyu.

At the receiving location, there was a disciple who was responsible for receiving the letters and then classifying and separating them, so that they could be further processed to other locations.

“Mm? A letter for Her Highness Qianyu? The Seven Profound Valleys’ Elder Qin Ziya? A third-grade sect’s new Elder wants to deliver a letter to our Saintess?”

With Mu Qianyu’s status, this disciple wasn’t qualified to deliver a letter to her.

“That’s right, the Seven Profound Valleys is the sect that Lin Ming came from...” The disciple had an unsettled expression.

In order to speed along the matter of Mu Qianyu and Mu Qingshu’s wedding, the Third Elder had arranged for Mu Qianyu to stay at this island. Naturally, everyone here was under the control of the Third Elder. Mu Qingshu was their master, and any matter that occurred must first be reported to him.

The disciples on the island almost all knew the delicate relationship between Mu Qingshu, Mu Qianyu, and Lin Ming. Not only that, but they knew that Mu Qingshu’s mood had been extremely bad these last few days. This letter came from the Seven Profound Valleys that had once been Lin Ming’s sect. As a result, this was an extremely unusual situation.

Thinking this, the disciple sent a sound transmitting talisman to Mu Qingshu, “Senior-apprentice Brother Mu, an Elder from the Seven Profound Valleys has sent a letter to Her Highness Qianyu.”

After Mu Qingshu received this sound transmitting talisman message, he frowned. Seven Profound Valleys’ Elder? He was probably connected to Lin Ming!

“Give me the letter!” Mu Qingshu’s mood was just terrible at this moment.

“Yes.”

Soon, the letter was delivered and Mu Qingshu impolitely opened it. Although the letter was sealed, it could still be resealed without looking any different. If it wasn’t some letter that was related to Lin Ming, then he might as well pass it to Mu Qianyu.

As soon as Mu Qingshu opened the letter, he read through it and was immediately angry. “Lin Ming!? It’s really about that damn fellow. Even though he’s dead his ghost still haunts me!”

“Mm… this is….”

As Mu Qingshu continued to read, he was no longer angry. In fact, as he read along, his angry expression turned to a happy smile. “Haha, so it’s about this. Now that Lin Ming has died, all of his enemies from before are looking for revenge! Who is this Qin Xingxuan? From what I can tell, it seems she had a significant relationship with Lin Ming! Interesting, interesting! Later this might even involve the Lin Family. If something so fun didn’t occur, that would really be far too regrettable.”

Mu Qingshu’s lips curved up in an evil smile. He was anticipating watching this play, and in his eyes, Qin Xingxuan was the perfect actress.

“Not bad. Even though my mood is poor, you’ve come to put on a play for me. I hope that you can act it out a bit more tragically and realistically, otherwise it will be too boring.” Mu

Qingshu stretched out his fingers and channeled a flame. The letter immediately ignited, and then turned into ash.

“Since my young cousin is so busy, I shouldn’t disturb her with trivial things like this. Lest she be moved by the occasion and recall that fellow who keeps haunting her like a ghost. That would just be too unpleasant. Ah, cousin of mine, oh cousin of mine, you should quietly be my darling wife and offer me your perfectly beautiful body and Primordial Yin energy. If you take care of me with all your heart and soul, then I will treat you well too. I will make you feel so much pleasure that you would die! Hahaha!”

Mu Qingshu smiled with self-satisfaction and then blew away all the ash. Now that he was finally able to get back at Lin Ming, he was in an incomparably happy mood.

……………………………….

Another month passed. Since the time that Lin Ming had entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, an entire 10 months had passed.

On this day, the Crown Prince Yang Zhen officially ascended to the throne!

The old emperor of Sky Fortune Kingdom was designated as too sick and sent into the back palace. The original Crown Prince Yang Lin was placed under house arrest in Sky Fortune City, and was unable to leave.

The ceremony of the throne ascension would last for a full seven days. Yang Lin sat alone in his palace, drinking by himself. Just a few steps away were armed guards; Yang Lin wasn’t even able to take a half-step out of his room.

As he listened to the loud horn sounds of the ascension ceremony, Yang Lin bitterly smiled. He drank some wine, then filled up another glass and sprinkled it on the ground.

“Brother Lin, it seems that in a few days I’ll follow you down to the yellow springs…” Yang Lin sighed. Now that Yang Zhen has ascended to the throne, he would either be killed or put under house arrest for life. No matter what happened to him, it was all the same. Not just that, but a miserable ending awaited his younger sister and mother…

……………………

After Qin Ziya sent his letter, he began to count the days. He waited and waited, and after a full ten days, there was no message!

Qin Ziya feared that because of how complex and fierce the war on the battlefield was, there might have been an accident with the letter. Thus, 10 days later he had a second letter delivered. But this letter disappeared like before, as if it would never return.

One month passed. Qin Ziya finally gave up. Ten days ago, Qin Xingxuan had accepted the transfer order and now had to go to the open sea battlefield. She had no choice but to do so. The life of her Qin Family and its entire people were within Yang Zhen's grasp!

To the absolute power of a strong martial artist, the military power of the mortal world was only joke. Qin Xiao may have been a hero within Sky Fortune Kingdom, but in front of the Seven Profound Martial House Master Ouyang Lin, he was nothing more than a lamb to be slaughtered!

As Qin Ziya looked at the misty sea, he let out a deep sigh. "Human death is like the extinguishing of a lamp. Both of my letters seem to have been dropped into the sea. I fear that Mu Qianyu will not care for the family of a dead man. Much less, with Qin Xingxuan's status, she might not be to Mu Qianyu's liking…"

Qin Ziya could only ruefully smile. In truth, he actually thought that his letter simply didn't have the qualifications to reach the hands of Mu Qianyu. But no matter what happened, there was no difference to him. The end result was that the letter wasn't delivered. Even if Qin Ziya personally went to Divine Phoenix Island, it would be impossible for someone of his status to see Mu Qianyu. It was just like a commoner that wanted to meet the princess; there was simply no chance to do so.

"Xingxuan, now that it's come to this, all I can do is try to preserve the lives of your family. The open sea battlefield is extremely dangerous, but it doesn't mean guaranteed death. As long as you can persist within the open sea battlefield and last until the end of the war…"

Qin Ziya shook his head, mocking himself. If he had to blame anything, he could only blame his strength and background for being too weak. He was only one person, and in the past he had also been a solitary musician by himself. He had found shelter within the Seven Profound Valleys and had been given the last name of Qin. He could not deal with someone like Ouyang Boyan who was from the Seven Profound Valleys and also had the backing of the Ouyang Family Clan.

He was clear that if Qin Xingxuan was forced to stay at the open sea battlefield, with her cultivation which had just broken through to the Pulse Condensation period, it was highly unlikely that she would be able to live until the end of the war.

…………………………

Within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, on the endless red plains, a terrifying explosion shot up to the sky, as the entire earth seemed to overturn. A Bone Dragon that was crimson all over was turned to ashes from the power of that blast!

With the combination of the Divine Demon Thunder Soul and the Fallen Star Flame, the might of Thunderfire Annihilation was earth-shattering!

Lin Ming supported himself on the ground with the Purple Comet Spear, chest heaving as he gasped for breath. Now that he had fought all the way here, his enemies were no longer limited to rock puppets. There were massive numbers of skeletons, demons, vicious beasts, and even that giant Bone Dragon that he had destroyed.

This Bone Dragon's defensive strength was too amazing. In a prolonged battle with Lin Ming, Lin Ming had been forced to use the complete Thunderfire Annihilation to destroy it, turning it into ash.

Even though Lin Ming's cultivation had reached the middle Houtian realm, the complete, full strength Thunderfire Annihilation still consumed 50% of his true essence!

"With the enhancement of the Flame Essence and Thunder Soul's grade, the energy that Thunderfire Annihilation consumes is increasingly terrifying. My cultivation is already at the peak of the middle Houtian realm and Tempering Marrow has reached 60% completion. All that's left over is the last Shattered Demon Heart Crystal!"

After breaking through to the Houtian realm, because of his solid foundation, Lin Ming's cultivation had increased by leaps and bounds. In just half a year, he had gone from the early Houtian realm to the top of the middle Houtian realm. He was just a single step from reaching the late Houtian realm.

Lin Ming held the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal in his hand, "Once I eat this last Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, I'll almost reach a breakthrough. My Tempering Marrow will also reach 65% completion. I wonder just what sort of effects that will have."

As Lin Ming was about to eat the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, the space in front of him suddenly blurred.

"Mm? Palace Spirit?"

Lin Ming looked at the mass of white light in front of him. The Palace Spirit that had been in a deep slumber ever since the start of the smelting trial had finally reappeared...

Chapter 408 – Exit

Chapter 408 – Exit

…

…

…

After experiencing a full ten months in the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, the current Lin Ming looked like an utter mess. He was in rags, almost completely naked. Lin Ming had originally brought several sets of clothes to change into in his spatial ring. When his clothes were all torn apart in battle, he would switch them for new ones. Soon, all of them were torn. Lin Ming just left a single set of relatively complete clothes for the time that he would leave this place. Thus, that was why Lin Ming was left but nothing but his body and some rags.

Lin Ming's hair had originally been long. But now it was scattered and messy, and it had grown longer, reaching just past his waist.

The Palace Spirit floated in front of Lin Ming like a wisp of ghostly fire, and then condensed into a white human face. It had a somewhat surprised expression.

"I passed the smelting trial?" Lin Ming asked the Palace Spirit.

"All that remains before you is the last smelting trial. Before, I had said that if you are still alive by the time you complete the fifth smelting trail, then you would be able to obtain a midway reward, and that I would awake at that time."

Lin Ming was surprised for a moment, and then remembered that the Palace Spirit had spoken such words at the very start. However, he had been in an incredibly tense and difficult situation where he had slaughtered countless enemies. Because of this, he had already mostly forgotten these words and relegated them to the back of his mind.

“The fifth smelting trail. I’ve only completed the fifth smelting trial?”

“Yes. Every stage of the smelting trial is very long. You have only one last smelting trial left – the sixth smelting trial. It is the shortest, but it is also the hardest. If you can complete it then you may leave. And at that time… I shall give you the blood of the Ancient Phoenix!” The Palace Spirit deeply and solemnly looked at Lin Ming. If Lin Ming could do so, then he would be the first person who wasn’t from the Royal Family that would have completed this general level smelting trail within a year!

Lin Ming was overjoyed. He finally saw the light at the end of the tunnel! Although his strength had progressed quickly here every day, after going through endless battles and endless trials, all he felt was endless loneliness. Lin Ming had nearly become nothing but a killing puppet. If this continued, there would definitely be a problem with his mental state.

“Now, I shall grant you the reward for passing the fifth smelting trial. Since you have completed it in 10 months, you can obtain the highest rewards. You may choose from the Vermillion Bird blood essence, a cultivation method jade slip, as well as a fire-attribute miracle medicine. Of these three, you may choose one.”

Vermillion Bird blood essence, a cultivation method jade slip, as well as a fire-attribute miracle medicine!

Lin Ming first eliminated the Vermillion Bird blood essence, since he wanted to fight for the Ancient Phoenix bloodline and also because the Vermillion Bird blood essence would only have a limited effect.

Then, he also removed the cultivation method jade slip. Lin Ming didn’t lack any sort of top quality cultivation method.

The fire-attribute miracle medicine seemed to be the best bet. If this was a medicine from the Ancient Phoenix Clan, it definitely wasn’t ordinary. Perhaps it might be able to enhance his Tempering Marrow boundary by another 20 to 30%. If that happened, then his Tempering Marrow would be 80 to 90% complete, and he would be close to Perfection.

However, just to be prudent, Lin Ming asked, “What sort of cultivation method jade slip and fire-attribute miracle medicine is it?”

This was just a random question, but the response of the Palace Spirit caused Lin Ming’s heart to nearly jump out of his chest, and to have a shortness of breath. The Palace Spirit said, “The cultivation jade slip is the first eight layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ cultivation method manual. The fire-attribute miracle medicine is the 3000 year Nine Revolution Fire Lotus Grass…”

The first eight layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’!

Lin Ming was beyond shocked.

That’s right, he should have realized this sooner. Divine Phoenix Island’s ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ and ‘Blue Luan Abstract Phantom Code’ were both obtained by the founder after she went to the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. That he would be able to obtain the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was only natural!

The Divine Phoenix Island founder’s ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ that she had obtained was riddled with flaws. According to Lin Ming’s knowledge, there were only the first five layers of the cultivation method!

Even with so many flaws, the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ was no worse than cultivation methods from fifth-grade sects!

It had to be known that the higher one went in a cultivation method, the more terrifying its power was. A true and complete ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ would be a top cultivation method even within the Realm of the Gods. Within the legends of the Ancient Phoenix cultivation methods, it was said that after completely practicing it, one could bathe in the fires of nirvana and rebirth themselves, becoming endless and immortal!

If one could really achieve this effect, then he feared that this cultivation method might even surpass the Heretical God Force.

The ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ was extremely significant to Lin Ming. Within the memories of those Supreme Elders from the Realm of the Gods, there were many different types of cultivation method manuals. However, not all of them were suited for Lin Ming to cultivate. For instance, ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’. Lin Ming had practiced this for such a long time, and yet had only been able to touch the second layer, and he still struggled. In terms of speed, Lin Ming wasn’t some monstrous genius. Back during the Seven Profound Valleys’ Total Faction Martial Meeting, he had even by suppressed by Jiang Baoyun in speed.

Ultimately, ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’ simply wasn’t a suitable technique for Lin Ming. Much less, Lin Ming didn’t even have wind-attribute true essence fusion compatibility.

But, the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ was different. With the support of the Heretical God Force, when Lin Ming practiced the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ he was even quicker than Mu Qianyu.

This miracle medicine would only benefit Lin Ming by himself, and there would always be chances to obtain more rare medicines in the future. But, the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ was actually very difficult to find. If he could obtain the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ jade slip, then not only would it help Lin Ming, but it would also help Mu Qianyu, and eventually even Divine Phoenix Island would benefit.

If he took out the first eight layers of this cultivation method, then it was likely that many people of Divine Phoenix Island would go crazy for it!

Lin Ming took a deep breath and then asked, “How many layers does the complete ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ have?”

"Nine layers! However, the final layer is only for the Royal Family; it cannot be rewarded. Therefore, you cannot obtain it."

Lin Ming felt this was a touch tragic. But still, just the first eight layers was incredible in itself!

"I want the cultivation jade slip!" Lin Ming said without any hesitation.

"As you wish!"

A red light flashed, and then a crimson blood-like jade slip appeared in Lin Ming's palm. When it touched his palm, it was very warm. It was twice the size of a normal jade slip, and very heavy in his hand.

Lin Ming casually swept through it with his sense, and suppressed the impulse to immediately read it. He first stored it in his spatial ring.

Since there was only one stage left and it was also the shortest, Lin Ming had to rush past it with overwhelming force. Now, he didn't have the time to practice the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', and his heart wasn't calm enough to do so.

At this moment, the smelting trail array began to revolve once again!

With a rumbling sound, the earth split and a massive blood red demon with a huge axe appeared, crawling out of the earth.

This demon was 20 feet high, and had chains wrapped all around its body. Its face had two large fangs just like a wild boar, and its fiery crimson hair wantonly hung all over it.

Lin Ming looked in shock. This demon… actually looked very much like the Netherworld Great Emperor!

It was only that this demon was twice the height of the Netherworld Great Emperor, and its skin was a deep red as opposed to the Netherworld Great Emperor's blue.

“What’s going on here?”

Lin Ming had some suspicions in his mind and wanted to ask the Palace Spirit. But at this time, the white light flashed and the Palace Spirit had already disappeared.

Lin Ming also didn’t bother to think about this. In short, this was an enemy, and he would do everything he could to defeat it!

He wasn’t in a hurry to go onto the battlefield. First, he controlled his breathing and sat down in meditation. He mixed the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal with his own blood essence and swallowed it.

Lin Ming could now absorb an entire Shattered Demon Heart Crystal with ease. He had long gotten used to suppressing the remnant will of the Netherworld Great Emperor. He began the familiar and easy technique of directing the crystal’s energy to temper his marrow…………….

……………………………………

Half a month later, within a remote mountain of Divine Phoenix Island, there was a deafening explosion. Rocks cracked, dirt flew everywhere, and an vortex appeared that had enough strength to send an early Xiantian realm guard flying away!

“Enemy attack!”

“The South Sea Demon Region has arrived!”

“What!?”

It was a scene of chaos. This was a sacred ground of Divine Phoenix Island, and also the fundamental basis for the existence of Divine Phoenix Island that it relied on – the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. For them to encounter the enemy attack here was terrifying.

“You… you are…” The Xiantian realm guard’s mouth dropped down, slack jawed as he stared disbelieving at this youth in front of him. This youth was tall, straight, with a handsome and delicate appearance. His face seemed to have been hewn by sabers, and his two eyebrows were straight and slanted upwards. There was a very clear flame mark between his eyebrows that looked like a natural scar.

This person's hair was a mess. In comparison, his clothes were fairly clean. The more the guard looked, the more this youth seemed like...

How... how was this possible!?

Bang!!!

Dust rose from everywhere. The youth had actually flown into the sky and soared away. His speed was fast enough to shame every Xiantian master present.

"I... I'm not wrong!"

"That youth, didn't he look like Lin Ming?" The guards present had all seen Lin Ming before when he had first entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

"That's right. That youth was just a bit taller than Lin Ming, and also has those flame marks between his eyebrows."

A year ago, Lin Ming was a handsome, somewhat pretty boy. Now, Lin Ming had become a heroically handsome young man.

"Could it really be..."

The complexion of everyone present change.

Lin Ming was alive!?

They hurriedly took out a sound transmitting talisman to report such a massive matter.

Lin Ming's speed was extremely fast. Before the several guards had passed out the sound transmitting talismans, he had already arrived at Divine Phoenix Island's Vermillion Bird

Main Hall. His speed was amazingly fast, and this was not just because of his outstanding movement technique. I was also because his true essence was too thick; it was thick to the point that even Xiantian masters couldn't compare to it!

"Who are you? This is a restricted area...halt! You may not enter!" A young woman cried out. She was the guard of the Vermillion Bird Main Hall's entrance. She drew her sword to block Lin Ming, but a sudden gust of wind stopped her, forcing her back. In the blink of an eye, Lin Ming had already entered the Main Hall.

Lin Ming was incomparably anxious at this moment. He didn't know what had happened while he was in the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. But, as he listened to the surprised words from the guards, he was able to discern that the South Sea Demon Region had already started its war with Divine Phoenix Island.

First he hurried over to find Mu Qianyu or Mu Yuhuang, to understand out what the present situation was.

Also, Lin Ming worried over another matter, and that was whether or not his parents had received news that he had died. Lin Ming was their only child, and also their only hope. If something had happened to his parents because they thought that he had died, he would never be able to live with the consequences!

By the time Lin Ming entered the Main Hall, the sound transmitting talisman flame had just extinguished in front of Mu Yuhuang.

Mu Yuhuang had learnt what had happened from the guards. Still, she could not believe her own eyes as she watched a 17 year old Lin Ming walk through the entrance!

Looking at the heroic and comely youth that seemed to shine with inner spirit, Mu Yuhuang, who could watch a mountain collapse without blinking an eye, was completely and thoroughly shocked.

Lin Ming had stayed within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm for a full 10 and a half months, and he had actually survived and come out! Not only that, but his cultivation had actually reached the late Houtian realm!

Heavens!

A 17 year old with a late Houtian realm cultivation!?

Even when Mu Qianyu was the same age she was only at the early Houtian realm!

“Honorable Sect Master.” Lin Ming was in too much of a hurry to bow, “What is the situation now? Do my parents think I have died? How about Senior-apprentice Sister Mu?”

Mu Yuhuang was stunned. She caught her bearings and said, “Yu’er… has gone to the battlefield. As for news of your death, it has already spread…”

Lin Ming’s mind sank, panic almost setting in. He could not imagine what condition his parents were in now. First, he had to immediately find Qin Ziya and see his own parents.

Chapter 409 – To the South Sea Battlefield

Chapter 409 – To the South Sea Battlefield

…

…

…

“Honorable Sect Master, I would like to request permission to immediately go to Sky Fortune Kingdom so that I may see my parents. I would also like inform Senior-apprentice Sister Mu of my return, and I hope that Honorable Sect Master may help me send the message.”

“Oh…” Mu Yuhuang unconsciously nodded. She didn’t know why, but now that she was facing Lin Ming, she felt something very special. This feeling was vague and indistinct, as if it came from the depths of her bloodline.

Her eyes paused on the light flame marks between Lin Ming’s eyebrows, and she felt her heart suddenly began to beat faster. She couldn’t help but ask, “Lin Ming, just what have you experienced within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm?”

Lin Ming said, “It’s a long story. Honorable Sect Master, what I’m worrying about now are my parents. I just don’t have the time or patience to speak of it all. But when I return, I will have good news to tell you.”

“Good news?” Mu Yuhuang’s heart stirred. She expected that Lin Ming must be referring to his lucky chances. Without a doubt, Lin Ming had experienced a massive stroke of luck within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

This was truly good news.

Mu Yuhuang would never have thought that this so-called good news of Lin Ming's would be referring to the first eight layers of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. If this matter were to be announced, then it would cause a massive earthquake within all of Divine Phoenix Island!

"Honorable Sect Master, where is my Winged Flood Dragon?"

"The Winged Flood Dragon is in the pens of the sect. But, its speed is far inferior to the Vermillion Bird. You may go and fly my life's Vermillion Bird; it will save you some time, and the Vermillion Bird can also protect you."

Lin Ming was overjoyed. He said, "Thank you, Honorable Sect Master."

Mu Yuhuang's Vermillion Bird was in the back of the Vermillion Bird Main Hall. This was a grown up Vermillion Bird, and its wingspan reached 100 feet.

Mu Yuhuang personally escorted Lin Ming to the rear palace. This was her life's Vermillion Bird, and without her command it would not listen to orders or assist others.

As Mu Yuhuang entered deep into the Main Hall, the Vermillion Bird was already alerted in advance. A Saint Beast was psychic to a certain extent, and also understood the emotions and intent of others. Mu Yuhuang directly said, "Fireshine, this time you bring… mm?"

Because they shared lifeblood, Mu Yuhuang was able to feel the panic and anxiousness coming from Fireshine. Obviously, this sort of anxiousness was because of Lin Ming.

Mu Yuhuang was surprised, what was going on with Fireshine?

"Fireshine, bring Lin Ming to Sky Fortune Kingdom. Before you return to Divine Phoenix Island, make sure that you obey Lin Ming's orders." Mu Yuhuang said as she pet Fireshine's big head. This sort of restless feeling still pervaded within Fireshine's heart. This caused the doubts in Mu Yuhuang's heart to deepen. Was it possible that… what Lin Ming had obtained within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was comparable to that of Divine Phoenix Island's founder? And that was what caused Fireshine to be so nervous?

As Mu Yuhuang was lost in her thoughts, Lin Ming had already hopped atop the Vermillion Bird and shot into the sky.

A grown Vermillion Bird's speed far exceeded the max velocity of a Revolving Core powerhouse. Lin Ming could only hear a sharp whistling sound in his ear, and in an instant, he had already left Divine Phoenix Mountain far behind!

Although they were flying at a rapid speed, Lin Ming was still able to sit down and sense Fireshine's jitters.

He knew that the reason for this was the bloodline within his body. Just two hours ago, he passed the last smelting trial. Since he had finished the general level smelting trial in 10 and a half months, the Palace Spirit had abided by its words and bestowed upon Lin Ming the blood of the Ancient Phoenix.

Before he was infused with the blood, Lin Ming deliberately asked if the reverse scale blood and the blood of the Ancient Phoenix would conflict with each other. The answer he received was that since ancient times, dragons and phoenixes had been friendly with each other and had never conflicted. Instead, they would even mutually support and reinforce the other.

The concentration of the Ancient Phoenix blood was about the same as the reverse scale blood. Although it was just a small amount, it was still enough for any number of Emperor level Supreme Elders to go crazy for it!

The Palace Spirit had used a secret skill to inoculate the blood of the Ancient Phoenix in between Lin Ming's eyebrows. The blood had been like burning hot lava had been dropped between his eyebrows, and was an incomparably painful feeling, like he had been melting. The blood had completely burned through the spot between Lin Ming's eyebrows and had finally left behind a flame mark. This flame mark was where the blood of the Ancient Phoenix dwelled!

Lin Ming tried to comfort Fireshine after sitting down, calming it down as much as he could. Fireshine finally seemed to sense Lin Ming's good intentions, and gradually no longer feared him.

With a shrill cry, they rapidly flew. Through the endless sea of clouds before them, they quickly left everything behind...

…………..

War had already erupted for a full 10 months. The total number of people that died on the three great islands within the open sea battlefield was more than the combined number of every single other battlefield together.

And of these three great islands, the most dangerous was the land known as Blood Demon Island.

Blood Demon Island was similar to the Dark Moon Island, where Lin Ming had gone before to look for the Moon Seizing Sect's hidden depository. There had once been an unparalleled and cataclysmic war within the South Sea, and Dark Moon Island and Blood Demon Island had both been battlefields. At that time, many powerhouses had died there.

This Blood Demon Island was the eye of the South Sea demons' origins. All year long, demonic blood energy would gather, filling the air with a dense red fog. Here, countless blood demons would be born and multiply that could absorb the blood essence of others; it was an incomparably dangerous land.

By all rights, a land like this should have been a barren island just like Dark Moon Island. But Blood Demon Island also had an extremely high quality true essence stone lode, and was ripe with medium-grade true essence stones. This allowed Blood Demon Island to have value to be developed and used.

These blood demons were usually suppressed and eliminated by Divine Phoenix Island. They did not dare to rebel, and usually hid deep underground. But now, Divine Phoenix Island and the South Sea Demon Region were at war with each other, and a massive number of martial artists had died on Blood Demon Island. Now, this island became a paradise for these blood demons. Every day they would absorb fresh blood essence, allowing them to rapidly grow in strength.

The contest that revolved around Blood Demon Island had already continued for over three months. In these past three months, both sides had launched attacks against each other, struggling for land. Not only were the two forces fighting, but they were also plundering the resources within the mineral lodes. Before, Divine Phoenix Island had managed the mining of this island and they wouldn't damage the spiritual pulse of Blood Demon Island. But now, who would still care about conservation matters like this? Everyone had bet their lives on plundering, and had plundered everything they could. A medium-grade true essence stone was extremely precious, not even the Moon Seizing Sect's hidden treasure vault had held many of them.

However, no matter how valuable medium-grade true essence stones were, the ongoing war on Blood Demon Island was just too bloody and savage. Thus, Divine Phoenix Island acquiesced and allowed everyone who participated in the war on Blood Demon Island to mine true essence stones and give them to their own sect.

Qin Xingxuan's battlefield was Blood Demon Island…

Peng!

Qin Xingxuan's sword cut apart a blood demon. Her face was pale like paper; she had been on Blood Demon Island for almost a month.

In this month, she had been severely injured several times. Now, what kept her walking was the support of her own convictions. The wounds began to pile up within her body, and caused damage to the very source of her life. Her body was far too thin and bony, and the fires of her life were like a dim candle flickering in the wind. If this continued, she didn't know how much longer she would be able to hang on.

"Oh, you're still alive."

A cynical voice sounded near her. The one who spoke was the Acacia Faction's inner court disciple, Ou Xiong. He was the one who had delivered the Seven Profound Command to Qin Xingxuan, and had also threatened her to come here with the life of her family on the line.

"It's you… get out of my way!" Qin Xingxuan bit her lips, her eyes frosty.

Ou Xiong's complexion was cold, but soon eased down. "Junior-apprentice Sister Qin, how about you don't lose your temper so easily. Ah, let's talk about it if you're so angry then. How about you tell me where Lin Ming's parents are hiding, and then once I verify this, I'll let you return."

"Dream on!" Qin Xingxuan coldly humphed before turning around and walking away.

Ou Xiong's complexion completely sunk. "Humph. Qin Xingxuan, don't forget that your Qin Family has already been placed under house arrest in Sky Fortune Kingdom! I hope you don't want anything to happen to your grandfather!"

Qin Xingxuan instantly stiffened. Her fists clenched until her nails dug into the meat of her palms and drew blood. "I don't know! Lin Ming's parents were not handled by me, nor have I seen them!"

Ou Xiong's eyes turned. He thought that Qin Xingxuan's words rang true. After all, Lin Ming's parents were arranged somewhere else by Qin Ziya, so Qin Xingxuan naturally wouldn't know. Qin Ziya was nonetheless an elder, and also one of those fancy righteous characters. Although Ouyang Boyan had a very wide network of friends, it was unlikely that he would be able to deal with Qin Ziya.

"Good. I'll believe you for now. So give me your true essence stones. These days, I heard that you managed to obtain quite a few!" Ou Xiong said. He extended his hands towards Qin Xingxuan and rubbed his fingers together.

The Seven Profound Valleys had ruled that whoever mined medium-grade true essence stones would be able to keep 60% of them. This was a very high reward that corresponded to the very high risk of being on this island.

“Rest assured, I only want 60%. As for the other 40%, you can deliver them.” Ou Xiong said as he proudly smiled.

Qin Xingxuan’s lips trembled. Oh how she wished she could chop this Ou Xiong in half!

Ou Xiong also felt the bone-deep hatred that was emanating from Qin Xingxuan. He casually said, “Junior-apprentice Sister Qin, you should know that Qin Ziya is occupied with military orders and cannot leave his island even half a step. If he leaves though, that would be even better. Then Elder Ouyang would have an excuse to accuse him of a crime! In any case, who were you counting on to protect your Qin Family? You are a Seven Profound Valleys disciple, so you are protected by the rules and regulations that govern us. However, your Qin Family is not. Do not forget your grandfather. Hehe, trading some true essence stones for a few months of your grandfather’s safety… what a valuable a trade that is! And you won’t be living much longer, so leaving any true essence stones with you would be a waste.”

Ouyang Boyan had used secular means of the mortal world to deal with Qin Xingxuan. This was completely within the rules of the Seven Profound Valleys. In a normal kingdom, clearing out officials that were accused of fomenting a rebellion was a common matter. So, this left Qin Xingxuan in a basically helpless situation! With her grandfather in their hands, they also held onto Qin Xingxuan’s weak point.

In this world, strength was everything! If one had enough strength, even the so-called rules of the Seven Profound Valleys were nothing but pieces of paper!

Qin Xingxuan clenched her fists until her knuckles turned white and bit her lips until they bled. She tossed out the medium-grade true essence stones in her spatial ring; there was no longer any meaning for her to keep these.

As Ou Xiong received the bag of true essence stones, he squeezed his hand and then suddenly grinned. “That’s the way! Junior-apprentice Sister Qin, good work! I’ll come back in a few days to visit you again. In truth, you don’t have to do this you know. As long as you nod your head and be a good little girl, you can go take care of Elder Ouyang. If you do, I guarantee that you'll be alright. What do you want to suffer all this pain for? If you're not careful, you might fall here, or even be captured by some devil art martial artist who will use you to cultivate their Yin energy. That feeling is truly to die for! Hahaha!"

Ou Xiong greedily glanced at Qin Xingxuan's figure and then swaggered away as he laughed.

Qin Xingxuan clenched her teeth, but she still couldn't stop the tears from running down her cheeks, her eyes dimming.

"Lin Ming… if you can hear me in the underworld, then please, bless me… I would come down to be with you, but I cannot let anything happen to my grandfather!"

………………

In the endless sea, Qin Ziya sat alone on the beach, his fingers drifting across his zither as the sea breeze washed over him. In this South Sea war, his duty was to guard this island as well as the inferior true essence stone vein that existed there…

Qin Ziya had to strictly follow the military orders, he couldn't even take one step off this island. Otherwise, he would be deposed by the sect rules.

As Qin Ziya heaved a deep sigh, he painfully smiled. What meaning was there to cultivation the martial path? What meaning was there to have talent that far exceeded anyone in the Sky Fortune Kingdom? In front of absolute strength, he was nothing but a drifting cloud…

As he sighed with emotion, at this moment, a dazzling flame lit in front of Qin Ziya; this was a super long-range sound transmitting talisman!

As soon as he heard the message from the sound transmitting talisman, Qin Ziya suddenly shook, all of the strings breaking under his fingers!

Chapter 410 – Destination: Blood Demon Island

Chapter 410 – Destination: Blood Demon Island

….

….

….

The sea breeze swept past him, and the strings that were broken shivered. Qin Ziya stood up on the beach, still like statue.

This was Lin Ming's sound transmitting talisman?

Lin Ming hadn't died!?!?

Qin Ziya was petrified for a long time. The contents of the sound transmitting talisman were very simple. Lin Ming asked about his parents' situation and whether or not they had received news of his death, and whether anything had happened to them because of a broken heart. Then he left behind a new sound transmission mark and asked Qin Ziya to wait for him on the island. Soon, he would fly over and meet him.

Lin Ming was alive!

Qin Ziya took a few deep breaths to calm himself. Then, he took out a long distance sound transmitting talisman from his spatial ring that was used to report on military situations. He gave a simple and brief summary of the current situation and then with a shake of his hand, the talisman ignited.

……………

10,000 miles away, a mass of flames appeared in front of Lin Ming but was instantly left behind by Fireshine's terrifying speed. The message briefly echoed in Lin Ming's ears…

"Lin Fu and Lin Mu are well, there is no need to worry about them. Yang Lin has been overthrown and Yang Zhen has ascended to the throne. Marshal Qin has been placed under house arrest, and Ouyang Boyan used the threat of the Qin Family's lives to compel Qin Xingxuan into a certain death dead end on the open sea battlefield's Blood Demon Island. It has already been one month since then… my ability is weak, and because of a military command, I have been trapped on Star Coconut Island, and cannot leave this place to rescue her…"

After hearing this message, Lin Ming's complexion instantly paled.

Ouyang Boyan!!!!!!!

Lin Ming's heart burned with a raging anger. When he left the Seven Profound Valleys, he had also left behind this dangerous serpent. It wasn't that he didn't want to kill him, it was just that he didn't have the ability to.

Ouyang Boyan represented the Seven Profound Valleys' Acacia Faction and the Ouyang Family Clan. The forces that supported him from behind were far too great, and his cultivation had already been at the peak of the early Xiantian realm for dozens of years. Against such a character, there simply wasn't anything he could do.

Lin Ming had deliberately arranged for the safety of his parents and Lin Xiaodong, but he didn't expect that Ouyang Boyan would actually target Qin Xingxuan!

Qin Xingxuan was a disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys. Without a reason, he couldn't visibly deal with her. But now, he had secretly trapped all the lives of the Qin Family, and had held onto Qin Xingxuan's weakness!

"Damn!"

Lin Ming's fists tightened until loud popping sounds could be heard from them, and flashes of electricity sparked up from his hands. Even the flame mark on Lin Ming's forehead turned an angry red.

"First I will rescue Qin Xingxuan. Then, Ouyang Boyan, I will have you pay the deepest price for your actions!"

Lin Ming bent down and touched Fireshine's back, continuously injecting true essence into Fireshine's body. "Fireshine, hurry, as fast as you can!"

Lin Ming was incomparably nervous. The South Sea region was a vast, endless land. Even with Fireshine's speed and transmission arrays, it would still take time to reach her!

He didn't know whether or not a calamity would befall Qin Xingxuan during this time.

……………………

"Elder Qin, where are you going to?" An Acacia Faction disciple asked with a bright smile. This disciple was sent by Ouyang Boyan to monitor him, and his cultivation was at the middle Houtian realm.

Qin Ziya looked at the hourglass in the corner, estimating his time. Without caring for the middle Houtian Acacia Faction disciple behind him, he walked into the operations room and picked up the sea map, wrapping it up.

As he picked up the sea map, all the little flags that were on top fell onto the floor.

The Acacia Faction disciple's expression was immediately ugly, "Qin Ziya, what is the meaning of this?"

"No meaning. I'm just going to go out for a few days. I'm borrowing this sea map, and then in a few days I'll return it." Qin Ziya casually said.

"Qin Ziya, are you planning to rebel?" The Acacia Faction disciple was angry, but as he thought about it, he sneered and said, "Humph, this is also good. Since you are defying military orders, you are just digging your own grave. Don't blame me for what I'm going to do. I'll write down all your crimes and report you to the sect. When that happens, they'll impeach you! Mm, what's with that look? What are you thinking of doing? You want to kill any witnesses to your crime?"

The Acacia Faction disciples derisively smiled. Although his cultivation was only at the middle Houtian realm, he had the support of Ouyang Boyan. Not just that, but he was also part of the Acacia Faction; he didn't necessarily need to fear the Zither Faction's Qin Ziya.

Qin Ziya looked at this man with pity. At this moment, a shrill phoenix cry sounded in the skies. The Acacia Faction disciple jumped in shock and then rushed out. He saw flames and wind coming from all directions, as a massive Vermillion Bird landed outside of the command post. The phoenix extended its huge, fiery wings, covering the entire courtyard.

As for who the Vermillion Bird was carrying on its back, it was actually a red-robed youth. His hair was disheveled and flew everywhere, and his eyes flashed with thunder. His appearance was outstanding, and his momentum was utterly threatening. Between his forehead was a flame mark that caused those who saw it to feel their heart palpitate with fear.

"This... this..." The Acacia Faction disciple was stunned. Just what was going on?

As the Acacia Faction disciple looked more closely at the red-robed youth, his eyes became increasingly dazed.

"This... doesn't this person look like..." The Acacia Faction disciple's eyes met Lin Ming's, and he suddenly felt as if he had fallen into a massive black vortex. In just a few breaths of time, his mind shook as he turned white, and then spat out a massive amount of blood!

Lin Ming hadn't intentionally hurt him. It was just that he had learned of Qin Xingxuan's situation, and his innermost murderous intent was overflowing everywhere, spilling out and covering the world. After almost an entire year of trials within the Divine Phoenix Mystic

Realm, he had experienced an endless scene of slaughter and his murderous intent had reached the degree where it could manifest in reality.

Now this murderous intent could spill out depending on his mood. His vision was like a flash of thunder that could directly pierce through an ordinary martial artist's spiritual sea.

This Acacia Faction disciple's cultivation was at the middle Houtian realm. But with just a single glance from Lin Ming, he had been injured by Lin Ming's killing intent!

"You… you are… Lin… Lin Ming!?" The Acacia Faction disciple's legs began to shake.

Lin Ming frowned, and the black vortex in his eyes began to spin once again.

"Allow me." As Qin Ziya spoke, he took out a long zither from his spatial ring and then played a few notes. The Acacia Faction disciple's legs went soft, and he tumbled onto the ground.

Qin Ziya said, "He won't remember you. Now we won't alarm the Seven Profound Valleys."

Lin Ming nodded. Now wasn't the time to make public the news that he was still living. Once this news spread, Ouyang Boyan would be able to prepare in advance. Maybe, when that happened, Ouyang Boyan might even run away.

"Let's go!"

Qin Ziya jumped onto Fireshine's back, and Fireshine spread its great wings, soaring into the sky!

"Martial House Master Qin, what is Xingxuan's sound transmission mark?" As the strong winds blew against Lin Ming's hair, his eyes were frosty and determined.

Qin Ziya sighed, "After Qin Xingxuan went Blood Demon Island, her sound transmission mark was cancelled. Now, I cannot reach her."

If Ouyang Boyan wanted to deal with Qin Xingxuan, then he naturally had to shut off all ways for her to contact Qin Ziya.

Lin Ming's mind sank, and his killing intent thickened by several degrees. "Without the sound transmission mark, then how will I find Xingxuan on the vast Blood Demon Island?"

"I already expected that she would be pushed into a dead end. So I had her separate a sliver of her soul and sealed it into a jade slip to create a soul jade slip. I had wanted to use this to know whether or not she was still living, but this soul jade slip can also be used to determine her position by sensing it." Qin Ziya took out Qin Xingxuan's soul jade slip.

Lin Ming looked at it and then felt his heart tighten. A soul jade slip's soul sliver was connected to the main soul. It could be used to determine the current situation of its owner.

Lin Ming could feel that Qin Xingxuan's life was like a flickering candle in the wind. This was an extremely bad situation!

Qin Ziya sighed. "Blood Demon Island has an incomparably rich blood demon energy. Even without considering how much she has probably been fighting, but even if she didn't, that blood demon energy would still slowly corrode her, causing her life to continuously weaken. A Houtian martial artist would be relatively fine, but Xingxuan is only at the early Pulse Condensation period.

Lin Ming didn't speak, he only remained silent. The strong gales howled in his ears, but the air around Lin Ming seemed to completely stop without a single trace of air flow. This was result of the amount of killing intent that he was emitting, which almost formed a domain around him. The thickness of this killing aura was even enough to make Qin Ziya feel suppressed.

Qin Ziya gasped. A while ago, he had been in a hurry and hadn't carefully probed Lin Ming's situation. But now that he looked, he only felt a simmering fear and cautiousness; this youth was like a raging Demon God!

If God blocked him, then he would kill God. If Buddha blocked him, then he would kill Buddha!

He couldn't imagine that the one standing beside him was a late Houtian realm martial artist. Just what had Lin Ming experienced in this past year!?

The atmosphere was tense for a very long time. Qin Ziya thought of something to say, and then hesitated before saying, "About the Qin Family and Lin Family's situation, I wrote a letter to Her Highness Mu Qianyu, and even sent two, but there was no response from her..."

Lin Ming frowned. He didn't doubt Mu Qianyu's character. If she knew that this was happening, then she wouldn't idly stand by.

In fact, Mu Qianyu didn't know of the grudge he had with Ouyang Boyan. Not just that, but currently Divine Phoenix Island was embroiled in a war. After confirming that he had died, she would most likely send some gifts to Green Mulberry City's Lin Family, but would never have thought that someone would try to deal with his friends and family.

However, Qin Ziya had written a letter. So where did that letter go?

Lin Ming's voice sank as he said, "Martial House Master Qin, I understand Mu Qianyu's nature very well. She owes me a favor, so she would never do something like this. Your letter disappearing and coming to nothing would absolutely not be her intention. I will investigate this matter!"

Lin Ming's voice was somewhat cold. He knew that ever since he appeared in Divine Phoenix Island, not everyone appreciated his presence. There were many people that were intensely jealous of him. Not just that, but he had taken their resources, and even the vial of Vermillion Bird blood essence; he had no idea how many people were madly resentful of him!

This time, because of what had happened, Lin Ming had learnt a crucial lesson. Against all his enemies, he must be ruthless!

“Lin Ming, 6000 miles up ahead is a new transmission array that is set up by the Five Element Region’s Thundercrest Sect that can directly send us to Blood Demon Island. If we go from there, we can arrive at Blood Demon Island in just a few hours, and save an entire two days.”

The South Sea was incomparably vast. During this great war, every sect had to find ways to easily transport themselves, thus there were many temporary transmission arrays that had been set up. The reason Qin Ziya had taken the sea map a while ago was to determine the positions of every transmission array and plan the quickest route.

“I got it.” Lin Ming poured true essence into Fireshine’s body, speeding up Fireshine. At this moment, in his heart, his killing intent had risen to a monstrous level!

6000 miles passed before too long. With Fireshine’s full speed, it took a mere two hours to reach there. In Lin Ming’s field of vision, an island appeared just as stated on the sea chart.

Chapter 411 – Demon God

Chapter 411 – Demon God

…

…

…

At the transmission array on the island, there were seven or eight youths, men and women, sitting in a circle.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang, what a great harvest! Haha, over 600 medium-grade true essence stones, and also a Blood Demon Crystal. That Blood Demon Crystal is a great treasure!"

Around a unibrow man there were several 20 something year old youths looking at a small wooden crate in front of the unibrow man, their faces full of envy.

This small wooden crate was packed to the brim with medium-grade true essence stones. And on top of the true essences stones, there was a finger-sized gem the color of blood. This gem was the Blood Demon Crystal. This Blood Demon Crystal was the core that an almost 1000 year old Blood Demon had condensed; it was extremely beneficial to Xiantian masters.

The unibrow man was very satisfied with himself, this harvest was truly great. He said, "To be honest, much of this is thanks to this temporary transmission array. Otherwise, it's impossible for me to have such a high efficiency rate. If I didn't have this transmission array and also a Golden-winged Heavenly Wind Eagle to ride, then going back and forth would be a 10 day round trip.

Around Blood Demon Island, the sects of the Five Element Region had laid down their own respective transmission arrays. This sort of long-distance transmission array cost a fairly great price to construct, and also had a limited lifetime of use. Every sect cherished their own long-distance transmission array and constructed one themselves. But this sort of construction was expensive, thus the disciples that came from Blood Demon Island to had to take out parts of their own harvest as the price to activate it.

The Thundercrest Sect and the Seven Profound Valleys were different. The disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys had relatively low strength, and when they came to Blood Demon Island it was nearly certain death. But, disciples of the Thundercrest Sect had a much high chance of survival. Although their probabilities of dying were still high, their harvest was also correspondingly enormous.

To the common disciples of the Thundercrest Sect, medium-grade true essence stones were very rare and valuable. Thus, there were some desperate disciples that pursued treasures and came to Blood Demon Island at their own risk.

These people present were basically all in this situation.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang, I think that before you are 30 years old you’ll be able to step into the extreme Xiantian realm! Your cultivation speed isn’t much worse than that Lin Ming from a year ago!” A flattering youth nonsensically said.

“Haha!” Although this was clearly irrelevant drivel, the unibrow man still enjoyed this. He seemed to suddenly realize something, and then traced his mustache and shook his head, saying, “Although Lin Ming was a genius, he still died. No matter how great he was, or how heaven defying he was, a genius that falls from the sky is no longer a genius.”

During Revered Master Tianguang’s birthday banquet, this unibrow man had personally witnessed Lin Ming’s performance. He was an accompanying Xiantian disciple and had been sitting in the banquet’s corner.

“Come on, you can each take four or five of these medium-grade true essence stones. Consider it your reward.”

“Thank you Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang.” These disciples were overjoyed and each took five medium-grade true essence stones.

These young disciples were all in their twenties and most had a cultivation at the Houtian realm; there were some that were still at the Pulse Condensation period. To them, these five medium-grade true essence stones were enough to last them for half a month.

The unibrow man enjoyed being the center of attention. In the Thundercrest Sect, an inner court disciple like himself simply had no presence at all in front of a core disciple or direct disciple. But, to these weaker inner court disciples, or even outer court disciples, he was their absolute big brother. Much less, these people’s cultivations were all lower than his.

At this moment, he suddenly saw a red dot rapidly approaching from the distant skies.

“Mm? Who is it?”

The unibrow man stood up, and the other disciples did the same. During a time of war, they naturally had to be vigilant of any sudden surprises.

“Vermillion Bird?” The unibrow man was shocked, “It’s someone from Divine Phoenix Island!”

Bang!

The 100 foot wingspan Fireshine landed on the ground, and a massive cloud of dust and mist erupted into the air. There were even some Pulse Condensation period disciples that were blown back several steps before steadying themselves.

Damn!

The unibrow man was furious, these fellows simply didn’t know the rules! This was their Thundercrest Sect’s domain!

His vision swept past Qin Ziya who was atop Fireshine, and the unibrow man frowned. The other party had dropped down so roughly and rudely – obviously they had ill intentions!

“Who are you?” The unibrow man called out. Although his cultivation and Qin Ziya’s were about the same, he wasn’t afraid. Not too far behind him was the Thundercrest Sect’s station, and there were also several Xiantian masters that had been garrisoned there.

“I would like to borrow your transmission array!” Lin Ming stepped forwards, and with a single step, his momentum erupted. His eyes were like a bolt of thunder that instantly locked onto the unibrow man.

With these two eyes locked on him, the unibrow man felt as if a saber had pierced through his heart. A cold chill swept up his back.

“This… this person is…”

The unibrow man saw Lin Ming’s face, and he froze on the spot, his expression distorted. For a time, he was in utter disbelief and his face switched through various expressions.

He hadn’t died? How was he alive? Was his death only a smokescreen that Divine Phoenix Island released?

There was a dream he could never forget. Almost one year ago during the banquet competition, this youth had battled Lei Mubai, another youth who was like a reincarnated Demon God. Yet, that Lei Mubai was defeated under Lin Ming’s spear! It had to be known that Lei Mubai was in truth the Saint Son of the South Sea Demon Region. That was the Saint Son of a true fifth-grade sect! And yet, Lin Ming had jumped realms in order to eliminate him!

Not just that, but Lin Ming had also swept the ground with the Deep Earth Sect’s Elder Shi Zhongkun as well as the Thundercrest Sect Sovereign. After whatever plans they had were ruined, Lei Mubai had suffered a miserable fate.

This was definitely a man who could not be crossed!

And what was most terrifying was that Lin Ming’s cultivation at the time was only at the late Pulse Condensation period. Now, he had actually reached the late Houtian realm!

Heavens! What had happened this past year? In less than a year he was able to jump an entire realm!

Lin Ming had already been such a terrifying monster when he was at the late Pulse Condensation period. At that time, his strength was comparable to a Xiantian master. But now that he had reached the late Houtian realm, just what kind of abnormal existence was he?

The unibrow man fell listless as he thought this, But, the disciples behind him didn’t notice the change in the unibrow man. They only heard two people wishing to borrow the transmission array, and then began to laugh in anger.

“Did I hear it correctly? They want to borrow the transmission array?” A disciple carelessly said, his words full of derision.

“What an idiot. This transmission array is for our sect’s use. If an outside wants to borrow it, then no way!”

“Those two are mentally ill. They come down so aggressively and cover this father’s face with dirt, and yet want to borrow the transmission array. Just who the hell do they think they are?”

Lin Ming’s complexion sunk. At this moment, his heart was overflowing with murderous intent. He was like a powder keg that could explode at any moment. With just the slightest provocation or accident, he would erupt!

“I will repeat myself one last time. Let me borrow the transmission array!”

Lin Ming’s voice began to turn frosty. The unibrow man who bore the brunt of this began to sweat all over.

“I am speechless. To think I met...a...crazy...”

“Shut up!” As a disciple was speaking, the unibrow man fiercely cut him off midway. “Shut up and open the transmission array!”

The disciple was stunned for a moment, “Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang, why… huh?”

“Hurry up!”

The unibrow man’s forehead was already dripping with sweat. He had seen with his own eyes just how terrifying this Lin Ming truly was. At that time, he was at the Pulse Condensation period and was so horrifying. The unibrow man simply couldn’t imagine what Lin Ming’s current strength was after he reached the late Houtian realm. Just by being locked down by Lin Ming’s aura, he felt as if a serpent was poised to strike at him!

The disciples around the unibrow man were confused. Just what was boss doing? How were these people scary? One was at the early Xiantian realm and the other was at the late Houtian realm. Although that late Houtian fellow had a pretty intense momentum, there were four or five Xiantian masters not too far away behind them. Any one of them could turn this fellow into mush.

The unibrow man saw a disciple extremely reluctant in placing a true essence stone on the transmission array. A fire lit in him, and he suddenly walked over and kicked him away.

“Motherf*cker! Have you not eaten enough? Stop being so greedy!”

The unibrow man kicked away the hapless disciple, grabbed his true essence stone and personally placed it down. When he had faced Lin Ming’s murderous intent alone, he felt that he could have died at any moment.

This man was simply a demonic villain. Under the lockdown of such a murderous intent, the unibrow man was extremely afraid that if he didn’t hurry up, Lin Ming would instantly kill him in the next moment.

“You seem to know me.” The unibrow man stiffened. Lin Ming’s true essence sound transmission had reached his ear.

“I… I know. I was also present at the banquet competition.”

“I hope that you won’t spread any news of me being alive. Otherwise, I will take your life!”

“Yes… yes… I swear, I will never speak of this.” The unibrow man quickly made a pledge. Normally, it was an unimaginable matter that a late Houtian martial artist would threaten an early Xiantian martial artist, not to mention that the unibrow man was a disciple of the Thundercrest Sect. But the unibrow man didn’t doubt that as long as Lin Ming was given more time to grow, he might even be able to kill his way through the Thundercrest Sect!

The transmission array was finally activated. Lin Ming inspected it for a moment. After he determined there wasn’t a problem, he stepped on with Qin Ziya and Fireshine.

As a curtain of light was enveloping him, Lin Ming sent out a true essence sound transmission. “Today I, Lin Ming, have to rush to Blood Demon Island. I owe you a favor.”

Then, Lin Ming’s figure vanished. The unibrow man waited for Lin Ming to completely disappear before he let out a long sigh of relief, wiping away all the sweat on his forehead. Thank the heavens, this scary Demon God had finally left. The unibrow man had a very strong suspicion that even if all the Xiantian masters that were stationed here joined together, they might not necessarily be Lin Ming’s match!

“Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang, who was that?”

“Why did you allow him to use the transmission array?”

“Just using this transmission array once takes a large amount of resources. Even we are reluctant to use it whenever we need to!”

These Houtian and Pulse Condensation disciples found this unbearable, so they all opened their big mouths and repeatedly asked.

The unibrow man was speechless, he simply couldn't say anything about Lin Ming's identity. He clenched his teeth and bit out, "That person was my relative."

Even he couldn't believe this ridiculous lie. Obviously, these low level disciples wouldn't be tricked either.

Relative? A relative caused you to break out in a cold sweat?

Facing the doubts of these disciples and even some contempt, the unibrow man felt extremely wronged. F*ck! These fellows simply knew nothing! He should have let these idiots suffer a moment ago and let them personally find out just what sort of calamity he had let pass them.

As he felt that the big brother image had had set up had already collapsed, the unibrow man was disinclined to explain any further. He simply coldly snorted and said, "Cut the nonsense, if you have so much time to speak, then go practice! No one will speak of what happened today or I will take back your true essence stones!"

Chapter 412 – The Sound of Broken Jade

Chapter 412 – The Sound of Broken Jade

…

…

…

On Blood Demon Island, within the thousand miles of the island, the entire land was covered with a hazy, thick blood-red fog all year round. This fog had magical properties. If it touched a wound, it would be like a leech that dug into a person’s body, corroding their blood essence.

Thus, if someone were to be seriously injured on Blood Demon Island, they would quickly die if they didn’t receive prompt treatment!

At this time, the sun was high in the sky. On Blood Demon Island’s Thundercrest Sect transmission array, there was deafening thunderclap. A blaze of flames scattered out, sending several Houtian disciples that had been defending the location flying away by the forceful and intense winds. Fireshine spread its massive 100 feet long wings and shot into the sky.

“What… this… what is happening!?”

A disciple flew in, his eyes filled with complete disbelief as he watched the giant Vermillion Bird shoot up into the sky. What was going on? How could a Vermillion Bird have come out of their transmission array?

Fireshine was far too fast. In the blink of an eye, it had already turned into a dot in the horizon.

The group of stunned Thundercrest Sect disciples were left puzzled, entirely unsure of what was happening…

………………

“There’s a response from the jade slip…” Qin Ziya looked at the soul jade slip in his hand, the sliver of soul inside was dimming even further.

“It’s most likely in that position.” Qin Ziya pointed. The soul jade slip could only make out a vague direction when it came to long distances.

“Give me the jade slip!” Lin Ming received the soul jade slip, controlling which direction Fireshine was flying.

Blood Demon Island had a thousand mile diameter. If the jade slip could accurately indicate which direction she was in, he could quickly find Qin Xingxuan.

At this moment, Lin Ming’s mind began to shake. He slowly lowered his head to look at the jade slip in his hand, and heard a ‘ka ka ka’ sound emit from it. This light ‘ka ka ka’ was as if the jade slip was under a tremendous pressure and was about to shatter at any moment.

Lin Ming’s complexion completely changed, and his heart stopped beating for a moment. As he held the jade slip in both hands, even his fingers began to tremble.

If this soul jade slip broke, that was proof that Qin Xingxuan had died!

The jade slip slowly shook for several breaths of time, and then finally stopped. The gentle glow of the soul sliver within the jade slip had completely vanished. Qin Ziya’s face was full of lament. “Qin Xingxuan is still alive. It’s just, Xingxuan now…”

Qin Ziya didn’t continue speaking. A soul jade slip was connected to a martial artist’s soul. Even if they were physically injured, had their limbs broken or even arms cut off, the soul jade slip would not emit sounds that it was breaking!

The only reason was if the soul of the martial artist themselves was on the verge of collapsing, or if their blood essence was seriously damaged!

Whatever the situation was, both of these were extremely bad results.

It could be said that Qin Xingxuan's life was no different from a dying candle in a stormy ocean; it could disappear at any moment!

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a killing light filled with carnage. He silently placed the soul jade slip into his chest pocket, letting it touch his skin. He swore to himself, "Ouyang Boyan, if Xingxuan dies, I will bury your entire Seven Profound Valleys' Ouyang Family Clan as tribute!"

Suddenly, the murderous intent of Lin Ming's body erupted like a cataclysmic volcano. Even Qin Ziya, who had a cultivation at the early Xiantian realm, felt suffocated by this killing intent, like he could drown at any time within a sea of blood. Qin Ziya thought that in the moment that Lin Ming had witnessed the dimming of the soul jade slip, it was like he had turned into a demon of war!

The Vermillion Bird let out a deafening cry; flames appeared all around it, forming a swirling storm of fire. All of the blood demons around were forced to run away by this momentum that seemed to pierce the heavens, and none of them dared to approach.

There were even some slower blood demons that couldn't run away in time, and they were rapidly engulfed in these burning flames and incinerated to ashes!

……………………

At this time, in a corner of Blood Demon Island, six martial artists were being besieged by dozens of blood demons within a clearing in the mountains.

Blood demons. The more people died, the more blood essence they could suck, and the more powerful they would become.

At the start of the war, both sides would fight each other on Blood Demon Island. Occasionally, they would also fight blood demons. But as more and more people died, at this point, often both sides would be slaughtering blood demons!

This sort of situation could not presently be resolved. They could only wait until the end of the war, and the side that won in the end would organize a party of masters to completely clear out the blood demons.

The blood demons were only four to five feet high. They looked like humans, but they were like beasts that crawled on the ground with four limbs. Their facial features were blurred, and mostly only a big mouth and dark glowing green eyes were left behind, like a wolf stalking at night.

Blood demons were like sharks – they were able to sense the smell of blood. They had surrounded these six martial artists and were ready to pounce at any given moment!

However, every time a blood demon rushed over, they would bounce off a clear, shining barrier. Any part of their body that touched this barrier of light would be instantly charred!

“Senior-apprentice Brother Ou, if this continues we won’t be able to last much longer!”

These six individuals were disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys. The one that spoke was from the Array Faction. This great array had been laid down by him in advance. Although Array Faction disciples had poor combat strength, if they were able to lay down their arrays in advance, they could play a huge role in positional battles.

This Senior-apprentice Brother Ou was Ou Xiong. The reason he had come to Blood Demon Island was to monitor Qin Xingxuan, and also to trap her. Since it was convenient, he would also take away all the medium-grade true essence stones that Qin Xingxuan had obtained.

As for mining for medium-grade true essence stones on Blood Demon Island and killing his way through blood demons to do so, Ou Xiong had never thought of this. To him, it was not worth the risk. He hadn’t lived long enough! As a disciple of the Acacia Faction, Ou

Xiong had seven or eight concubines, and also more than a dozen pleasure maids. How could Ou Xiong ever give up such a wonderful arrangement?

However, when Ou Xiong saw that the disciples of the Five Element Region had obtained a Demon Blood Crystal, he couldn't help but feel his heart stir with greed.

Blood Demon Crystal!

This was a very useful treasure to a Xiantian realm martial artist. If he could obtain a Blood Demon Crystal, he would be able to exchange it for a minimum of two or three Heaven Opening Pills with the sect!

With Ou Xiong's talent, it was unlikely he would be able to break through to the Xiantian realm. The only chance he had would be if he swallowed down three or four Heaven Opening Pills. Only then would he have a chance of stepping into the Xiantian realm!

However, Ou Xiong's last name was Ou, not Ouyang; who would give him three or four Heaven Opening Pills? Ou Xiong had already lost all hope of entering the Xiantian realm, but now, this opportunity had appeared in front of him. How could he not be tempted by this!

Within the Seven Profound Valleys, a Xiantian master was an Elder. The treatment that an Elder received was beyond that of a normal disciple. All those proud and arrogant women that had looked down on him with disdain…if he were an Elder, he could recklessly push them all down to serve his crotch!

Thinking of this, Ou Xiong became incomparably excited. Not just that, but a Xiantian realm martial artist removed the foul Houtian air from their bodies, and their life was a hundred years longer than a Houtian real martial artist. If he had an extra hundred years of life, he could enjoy blissful days for another hundred years, and play with beautiful women for another hundred years!

Thus Ou Xiong had decided to take a risk, and enter Blood Demon Island with this Seven Profound Valleys squad.

Within this squad, besides Ou Xiong, there were also two Acacia Faction disciples, one Array Faction disciple, a Zither Faction disciple, and finally Qin Xingxuan.

Qin Xingxuan was in an extremely bad situation, her lips and face had already lost all traces of color. This was the result of accumulated loss of blood essence over time. Not just that, but this time, she had been sneak attacked by a blood demon and had been bitten on the right arm, having a massive amount of blood essence sucked out of her.

Once a martial artist lost their blood essence, it was extremely difficult to recover!

When a martial artist lost blood essence, that also meant a loss of strength and life!

On Qin Xingxuan's right arm, her sleeve had been completely ripped off, revealing an open wound that dripped with blood. This wound caused her life to continuously pour out of her.

The blood essence within her body was being continuously corroded. With her present ability, there was no way she could prevent this from happening.

Qin Xingxuan mirthlessly smiled; perhaps today, here, she would finally fall.

Even if she managed to return by a stroke of luck, she would not last another month. She had lost a massive amount of blood essence, and the source of her life was like a lamp that had run nearly completely dry…

"Senior-apprentice Brother Ou, the array formation will not last much longer. At most it can continue for another half an incense stick of time. We have to break through the encirclement afterwards!" The array faction disciple said.

Of everyone present, besides Ou Xiong who was at the middle Houtian realm, everyone's cultivation was either at the peak Pulse Condensation period or even half-step Houtian realm.

Only Qin Xingxuan was at the early Pulse Condensation period. Her cultivation was the lowest, and her situation was also the worst.

"Break through..." Ou Xiong grit his teeth. Outside of the array formation, there were dozens of blood demons waiting to attack. There were even two higher level blood demons that weren't much weaker than him. To break through this trap wouldn't be easy at all.

"Blood demons are fast. If we have to break through, we have to have some people protect the rear and stop them from following."

As Ou Xiong spoke, his eyes swept past everyone and fell on Qin Xingxuan.

Qin Xingxuan's eyes were chilling. But, the one who actually became angry for Qin Xingxuan was the Zither Faction girl. "Ou Xiong, what are you trying to say!? Junior-apprentice Sister Qin is already severely injured. You want her to bring up the rear? Are you still human!?"

Ou Xiong callously shook his head, saying, "She cannot escape from here, her blood vitality is too weak. Whether or not she guards the rear, she will die. So if she is going to die, then why not make a sacrifice for the sect?"

"You...!" The Zither Faction girl's eyes shot open, "You are shameless! Sacrifice for the sect! Maybe the one who should be sacrificed for the sect is you!"

Ou Xiong coldly sneered, "Since that is what you think, then you can go ahead and stay with her. Do as you wish!"

"Ou Xiong, you cruelly harm a fellow disciple and have violated the rules of the sect. Once I return to the Seven Profound Valleys, I will report this to the Elders and have them punish you for your crimes!"

After Ou Xiong heard these words, he frowned and his eyes flashed with killing intent. "Violate the rules of the sect? Have I killed you? Have I harmed you? I have not. Do you not want to break through? Dream on! Qin Yao, since you say so, then do not follow me when I break through this encirclement, you can stay with Qin Xingxuan!"

The Zither Faction girl shook with rage. She turned to look at the other disciples but found that they were avoiding her eyes. In a life or death situation, they would first think of themselves. Who would still bother to care for the fate of others?

Of everyone present, the one with the highest cultivation was Ou Xiong. With Ou Xiong, they had a slim hope for survival. Without him, they would undoubtedly die.

Ou Xiong looked at Qin Xingxuan and sent her a true essence sound transmission, "I really feel sorry for you. You are beautiful and talented, just don't take this personally. You've lost your blood essence. Even if you can escape from here, you won't last another month. And for you, escape is simply not possible. So, I have a pill here for you. This is a Blood Burning Pill. It can stimulate all the potential in your body. Once you eat it and you guard the rear, I can guarantee that your Qin Family will be safe. You should know that Elder Ouyang wants to deal with you and the Lin Family – he simply doesn't care for the Qin Family." As Ou Xiong spoke, he handed Qin Xingxuan a blood-red pill.

As the Zither Faction girl saw Ou Xiong give this pill to Qin Xingxuan, her complexion immediately hung. "Blood Burning Pill! Junior-apprentice Sister Qin, do not take it, this is simply a suicidal pill!"

Ou Xiong glanced at the Zither Faction girl and sneered. He continued to speak through a true essence sound transmission, "Junior-apprentice Sister Qin, I am willing to take an oath on my heart of martial arts. As long as you can bring up the rear when we break out, I will guarantee the safety of your family. Although my promise is not too valuable, it is still an oath that I make. I won't damage my heart of martial arts just for the lives of a few mortals. Much less, I have no enmity with your Qin Family."

Chapter 413 – An Eternal Instant

Chapter 413 – An Eternal Instant

…

…

…

In the skies above Blood Demon Island, Lin Ming stood atop Fireshine’s back. He had the soul jade slip in one hand, and the Purple Comet Spear in the other. He stood upright atop the Vermillion Bird, his long hair scattered in the wind, his murderous intent wantonly overflowing.

Underneath Lin Ming, Fireshine seemed to sense his killing intent. Fireshine gave keening cry, and all the red fog around was burnt to nothingness by flames!

According to the signal from the soul jade slip, he was already very close to Qin Xingxuan. But, the soul jade slip could only sense a vague location within a few dozen miles around. Lin Ming still needed to find her himself.

At this time, Lin Ming had extended his sense to the limit, carefully investigating the area around him. “Mm? A blood demon’s corpse!”

In a mountain valley below, there were several pools of wretched looking blood. These were left behind after a blood demon died and melted away. But judging by the looks of these blood pools, they had been recently killed.

There had been a battle here!

Lin Ming let Fireshine slow down. He stood on Fireshine’s back, closing out all six senses of his body and entering the ethereal martial intent state. Now, there was only his perception left behind. It was like the ripples of a lake that were spreading out in all directions.

That thick blood fog was pierced through by his perception!

Currently, almost all that Lin Ming saw in his mind’s eye was a world of red. He felt the lurking blood demons that were hiding in the blood fog, waiting to ambush someone, and he also felt the bones buried within the dark red soil.

“Mm? This is… a battle? There are people fighting!”

Lin Ming’s eyes shot open, and thunder flashed in his pupils. He felt that in the distance, a group of martial artists were in a desperate life or death struggle with blood demons.

“Fireshine, go!”

Fireshine gave a shrill cry and spread its wings. The surrounding red fog was twisted into a giant vortex with the gale wings.

“One… two… three… five in total!” Lin Ming’s perception of the world was becoming increasingly clear. There were a total of five people that were fighting dozens of blood demons. And of these five individuals, besides the strongest of them, the rest were in a tragic state!

“No… I’m wrong… there’s not just five, there are six people. But one is already on the verge of death! Their true essence fluctuation is too weak, I almost didn’t feel it!”

As Lin Ming sensed the existence of this sixth person, he felt an inexplicable sense of grief and loss. It was like someone had stabbed a sword into his heart and twisted it!

“Xingxuan… is that you?”

Lin Ming bit his lips until the skin broke and he bled. With Fireshine’s speed, the time it would take to fly this distance was only several breaths of time. But to Lin Ming, this time seemed to be over 100 years long!

At this moment when that group that contained six lives, one of the fires of life was suddenly extinguished. Now there were only five left!

In a short instant, someone had died!

Lin Ming's breath caught in his chest. He trembled as he looked down, and saw that the soul jade slip hadn't broken.

It wasn't Qin Xingxuan!

Xingxuan… was still alive!

As this thought just flashed in Lin Ming's mind, he suddenly heard the horrifying 'ka ka ka' sound emit from the jade slip!

The soul jade slip shook, and seemed as if something heavy were crushing it. On the very top of the jade slip, a thin, small crack appeared!

In that instant, Lin Ming only felt as if his own heart had been ripped out. His eyes filled with blood, and his eyes caught on the soul jade slip. That small crack finally stopped spreading!

Qin Ziya's face filled with utter sadness. "It's breaking… it's breaking… although it hasn't split yet, but…"

They were a step too late! Once a jade slip cracked even a bit, that proved that Qin Xingxuan's life had received a massive amount of damage, a point of no return. At most, she would only be able to survive for 10 more days!

Lin Ming didn't even speak a single word, remaining silent. Because of Lin Ming's silence, the surrounding atmosphere became oppressive like they were in a pool of viscous blood.

This invisible pressure even frightened Qin Ziya, causing him to feel a tinge of fear. He wanted to speak, but found that there was nothing to say…

……………………

"Junior-apprentice Sister Qin!"

With a clear cry, Qin Yao slammed down on her zither, producing a series of notes that exploded behind Qin Xingxuan, throwing away the blood demon that had attached itself to her back, destroying it.

However, as that blood demon was destroyed, it had already sucked away the last wisp of Qin Xingxuan's blood essence. She had eaten the Blood Burning Pill, but the truth was that Qin Xingxuan had long ago run out of blood essence!

At this time, from head to toe, there was not a single hint of color on Qin Xingxuan. Her clothes were torn, her lips shivered, and she was just like a dying person who was thrown into an icy storm, freezing to death.

She could have sliced apart the blood demon that had attacked her, but Qin Xingxuan actually didn't have any strength left to lift a sword.

"Senior-apprentice Sister Qin Yao… leave me…" Qin Xingxuan's eyes were full of tears; she didn't want to drag her friend Qin Yao down with her.

Half a year ago, Qin Xingxuan had met Qin Yao when she was at the Seven Profound Valleys. The two of them had a very good friendship. Qin Yao was older than her by four years. Her talent was mediocre, but she still wanted to try and reach the Xiantian realm. Thus, she had risked danger to come to Blood Demon Island.

During this month on Blood Demon Island, Qin Yao was like a big sister who constantly looked over Qin Xingxuan's well-being. Through their adversities, they had become closer. If it wasn't for Qin Yao, Qin Xingxuan would have long since died.

During the month she had been on Blood Demon Island, Qin Xingxuan was confused. She had no idea what she was fighting day and night for. Lin Ming had died. Her Qin Family was under the control of others. And under the suppression of the giant force known as the

Seven Profound Martial House, even her master Mister Muyi was unable to do anything, along with her grandfather. Now, all that she could do was wait for the newly crowned emperor to fabricate a false charge against her Qin Family, and the heads of all her family members would roll onto the ground!

She didn't want to yield. So, she persisted, she fought, she revolted as far as she could. She wasn't ready to resign herself to such a tragic destiny. But she thought that even if she persevered and continued to live longer, so what?

She simply could not resist the existence known as Ouyang Boyan!

She wasn't willing to die like this. But everything she did only added to the fun that Ouyang Boyan had, watching her suffer in pain!

Confusion.

Helplessness.

Despair.

In her fragile mind, the endless blood demons around her coalesced into a massive ancient monster, as if it was ready to swallow her soul…

"Junior-apprentice Sister Qin, over here!"

Qin Yao played several dozen notes, blocking the five or six blood demons that rushed at Qin Xingxuan. But Qin Xingxuan's true essence was exhausted, and she had no blood essence left. She simply couldn't activate any movement technique to escape.

In that brief moment, Qin Yao and Qin Xingxuan were surrounded by blood demons. The two of them had been completely cut off from Ou Xiong and his group.

Ou Xiong turned to look at them, the corners of his lips curving up an a demonic smile. "Zither Faction, Sword Faction, all they can produce are righteous idiots like this. Qin Yao knows perfectly well that she'll die if she stays, and yet she still won't leave. Well then, she can be buried here with Qin Xingxuan. This is also good, the two of them are enough for the blood demons to eat.”

As for Ou Xiong’s two Acacia Faction junior-apprentice brothers, as they saw Qin Xingxuan and Qin Yao being surrounded by the mob of blood demons, their faces were full of regret. They didn’t regret Qin Yao and Qin Xingxuan’s deaths, but rather that these delicious and drool-worthy beauties would be spoiled by the blood demons before they had the chance to sample them…

The three of them began to kill their way out of the encirclement. As for that Array Faction disciple, he had already been sucked dry by blood demons a moment ago. The Array Faction disciple had the weakest combat strength. When he had been surrounded by blood demons, he had called out for help. But, Ou Xiong and his two junior-apprentice brothers naturally didn’t bother to save him, lest they be dragged down and suffer the same miserable fate as him.

“Mm? What’s that?”

As Ou Xiong chopped a blood demon into pieces, he suddenly looked up and saw that a mass of flames was rapidly approached them at an amazing speed!

“Vermillion… Vermillion Bird? It’s someone from Divine Phoenix Island!” Ou Xiong was immediately overjoyed.

They were saved! Even Ou Xiong didn’t have absolute confidence that he would be able to break out of this tight encirclement. After all, there were still two high level blood demons that weren’t much weaker than he was.

“Here! Over here!” Ou Xiong began to wildly shout, fearing that this person wouldn’t see or hear them. He promised to himself that after he escaped from here alive, he would never come back to Blood Demon Island. He would hug his seven or eight concubines to sleep – to hell with the Xiantian realm!

Ou Xiong waved his sword, signaling to the Vermillion Bird. The Vermillion Bird was really flying in his direction, but… it wasn't slowing down!

As he saw the Vermillion Bird expanding in his eyes with terrifying speed, Ou Xiong was petrified. A figure leapt down from the Vermillion Bird!

Bang!!

An inferno of flames gushed out like a wave!

Lin Ming's spear swept out; over 20 blood demons were directly turned to nothing but ash! Even the two high level blood demons that were equal to a Houtian realm martial artist were instantly killed!

Ou Xiong and his two junior-apprentice brothers were sent flying backwards. They landed flat on the ground, dazed like dead dogs. Ou Xiong's eyes were wide, he couldn't believe what was happening. It was a spear! Only a spear! And yet two high level blood demons and over 20 blood demons were instantly killed!

Who… just who was this!?

As the terrifying explosive shock wave swept over them, Qin Yao was frightened. However, she was surrounded by blood demons and didn't know what had happened.

She had paused, but in that moment of delay, a blood demon leapt towards her, and two other blood demons also leapt towards Qin Xingxuan!

Qin Yao grit her teeth, and the zither in her hands burst with notes. But, she had consumed too much true essence. Although these notes exploded from her zither, she was unable to fend off three blood demons!

"Junior-apprentice Sister Qin, be careful!" Qin Yao loudly shouted.

Lin Ming's eyes were like electricity. He was able to clearly determine the situation from 200 feet away. But in this instant, these 200 feet seemed like an eternity!

200 feet distance, but only an instant in time!

Lin Ming’s eyes emitted a savage and utterly brutal light.

The power of Tempering Marrow burst out from within his bones.

Heretical God Force – open!

Every strength he had was unleashed to the limit.

“Die!!!!”

Bang!!!

The rocks under Lin Ming’s feet suddenly blew up, the shattered stones flying dozens of feet into the air. Lin Ming shot forwards like a bolt of lightning. With the Purple Comet Spear in hand, he was like an avatar of thunder!

Hu!

Lin Ming’s skeleton issued out crackling sounds through his entire body. A glorious dragon roar emerged from his depths, shooting straight into the sky!

“Divine Demon Thunder Soul!”

The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was the ultimate suppressive power against demons and ghosts.

But, the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder was just the opposite: it could instead absorb their power!

Regardless of which one it was, both of them were the absolute nemesis of blood demons!

Within Lin Ming’s body, the Heretical God Seed began to howl in elation. Lin Ming’s figure was completely enveloped by the phantom of an Azure Dragon. The Divine Demon Thunder Soul fused into the Purple Comet Spear; the power of thunder flared out!

The terrifying purple and red dual-colored lightning formed a vast net of electricity that came crashing down!

Bang!

All of the blood demons that surrounded Qin Xingxuan and Qin Yao were instantly and completely exterminated!

When a normal martial artist killed a blood demon, the blood demon would become a puddle of blood on the ground. But when Lin Ming hand instantly killed them, the blood demons had actually turned to ash, without a single drop of blood remaining!

Qin Yao was utterly stunned. She watched helplessly as the horde of blood demons around her were instantly turned into floating ash, annihilated in a single second without being able to offer an ounce of resistance. She felt as if she were living a dream. Just... what was going on?

However, Qin Xingxuan stood there in the same place, her body swaying as she stared at Lin Ming, her face devoid of any color.

Slowly, her once dim eyes began to fill with a range of emotions.

Joy...

Affection...

Happiness...

Contentment...

No regrets.

Her lips bent awkwardly. She wanted to smile, but she failed to.

Then, she began to fall over, like a broken butterfly in the late autumn cold...

Chapter 414 – Do Not Move, You Will Be Safe

Chapter 414 – Do Not Move, You Will Be Safe

…

…

…

In an instant, Lin Ming had appeared at Qin Xingxuan’s side, grabbing hold of her waist before she could fall.

At this time, Qin Xingxuan’s body was heartbreakingly frail. She was as light as floating silk, and there was no sense of weight to her.

As Lin Ming looked at Qin Xingxuan’s pitiful appearance, he felt a stabbing pain in his heart, as if his chest were about to burst open.

Nearby, Qin Yao stood stock still like a statue. She looked the youth who was holding Qin Xingxuan in his eyes, and she was completely dazed. “You… you are…”

A name echoed in Qin Yao’s mind. But, how could she possibly believe this!

At this time, Ou Xiong had a charming and affable smile pasted on his face as he rushed over. Ou Xiong had great desires in his heart, he never thought that he would run into an expert like this. If he could form good relations with this expert, then he might be able to obtain great benefits.

Thinking this, Ou Xiong’s smile became even more dazzling and bright. “Senior, many thanks for the graciousness of saving our lives. I wonder what Senior’s great name is…”

As Ou Xiong spoke to here, the rest of his words caught in his throat. He was like a crowing rooster whose throat had been seized by a butcher.

For a time, dismay and fear alternated on Ou Xiong's face. His lips paled, his fingers trembled, and a cold sweat seeped out from all over him.

Lin Ming!

He was alive!

Not only was he alive, but his cultivation he reached such a terrifying degree!

The other two Acacia Faction disciples also paused. As disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys, there was no one who didn't know the legend of Lin Ming. According to what they knew, Lin Ming had a very special relationship with Qin Xingxuan. As the two remembered what had just happened a moment ago, they felt their legs shiver.

Lin Ming didn't even glance at Ou Xiong and the other two. He placed a hand on Qin Xingxuan's back to support her and continuously infused true essence into her body. He took a life maintaining pill from his spatial ring, and gently placed it between Qin Xingxuan's lips.

Qin Xingxuan let out a light sigh, and her face flashed with an unusual rosy color. She wanted to lift her hand and trace the contours of Lin Ming's face, but to someone like her who didn't even have the strength left to speak, this was nothing but a dream.

Her pale lips moved, but Qin Xingxuan could not form any words or sounds. All she could feel was the life rapidly leaving her broken body!

"I've got you, don't move, you'll be fine. Just lie down and relax."

Lin Ming's words rang in Qin Xingxuan's ears. Qin Xingxuan only felt her nose burn a bit, and tears silently fall from the corners of her eyes…

At this moment, she was completely satisfied. This feeling of Lin Ming holding her cold body was very warm, and she felt at ease in his arms.

She knew that she was nothing but an oil lamp that had run dry. But, she could die in Lin Ming's arms. And as she stood at death's door, she learned that Lin Ming was still alive. This life's content was enough for her to pass in peace.

With Lin Ming here, her grandfather would be safe, and her Qin Family wouldn't suffer any longer.

The corners of her lips bent, revealing a light, sweet smile.

At the end of one's life, a woman's beauty only lasted a moment…

Lin Ming carefully placed Qin Xingxuan on the ground. Qin Ziya sighed, a melancholic expression on his face. He shook his head and said, "Miss Qin has exhausted all her blood essence. It is too difficult to recover. I fear that…"

Qin Yao was also sad. If Lin Ming had come just a bit earlier, even if it were just a day, then he could have rescued Qin Xingxuan. But now, it seems that he could only helplessly watch as she passed away in his arms.

Lin Ming said nothing, it was as if he hadn't even heard Qin Ziya's words.

He took out a small red jar from his spatial ring; inside of this jar was exactly the Vermillion Blood Essence that Mu Fengxian had given him.

Of the 22 drops, Lin Ming had used 12. he had planned to leave the last 10 drops for Qin Xingxuan, but he didn't have enough authority at Divine Phoenix Island to do so. It wasn't up to him to so casually pass along Divine Phoenix Island's Vermillion Bird blood essence to others whenever he wanted to.

But now circumstances had changed. Lin Ming had obtained the first eight layers of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' cultivation method manual. Let alone giving away some Vermillion Bird blood essence, even if he wanted to give away Fireshine, Mu Yuhuang would have nothing to say.

Lin Ming carefully took a drop of Vermillion Bird blood essence and used a special jade spoon to attentively and gently place it between Qin Xingxuan's eyebrows. His expression was one of supreme focus. In his eyes, there was only that drop of Vermillion Bird blood essence.

Ou Xiong and his two juniors looked at each other. They noticed the deep fear in each other's eyes, and began to unconsciously and slowly back away…

But this action was seen by Qin Yao. She furiously shouted, "You three scumbags want to run away!? If it weren't for you three giving Junior-apprentice Sister Qin a Blood Burning Pill and ordering her to protect the rear, how could she end up in such a miserable state!"

Qin Yao's voice was loud and clear. As soon as Lin Ming heard these words, in that moment, his hands shook, and the jade spoon in his grip nearly shattered!

However, he eventually calmed himself. He meticulously placed a second drop of Vermillion Bird blood essence on Qin Xingxuan. At this time, even if an earthquake or tsunami were to occur in front of Lin Ming, he would not be distracted at all.

An invisible killing intent subsequently filled the air, suppressing everyone in the area. Ou Xiong's legs both became weak like jelly and his entire body began to drip with cold sweat. He wanted to turn around and immediately escape, but he lacked the courage to do so. If he ran away he would die, if he stayed he would die. No matter what he did or what route he took, he had already foreseen his miserable ending. Now, his heart could only pass away like dying embers.

……………

Lin Ming was incomparably focused. He placed one drop, and then another.

In Qin Ziya and Qin Yao's experience, blood essence could not be transplanted into someone else. However, Divine Phoenix Island actually had a secret technique that was able to transplant Vermillion Bird blood essence. If there was an individual that had a small amount of Vermillion Bird bloodline within them, as long as they had one or two drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence transplanted in them, it would be enough for them to practice the core sections of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' cultivation method. It wasn't enough of an exaggeration to say that two drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence was enough to birth a new Revolving Core master for Divine Phoenix Island!

As for several drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence, that was enough to cause a dispute within the highest echelons of Divine Phoenix Island.

Thus, it could be seen just how precious Vermillion Bird blood essence truly was.

Without any reservations, Lin Ming had placed all 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence onto several of Qin Xingxuan's important acupoints.

Vermillion Bird blood essence had very mild properties. Once it came into contact with skin, there would be a slight itching feeling, as if all the blood essence in their body was rushing over to a spot between their forehead, and condensing into a crystal. When Lin Ming had transplanted the Vermillion Bird blood essence into himself, he didn't feel any painful or burning feeling at all. Instead, he only felt incomparably comfortable as if he were resting in the palace of an immortal and drinking fine wine.

So although Qin Xingxuan was in an incomparably fragile state at this moment, there was no worry that she wouldn't be able to withstand the effects of the Vermillion Bird blood essence.

As the Vermillion Bird blood essence seeped into Qin Xingxuan's skin, her face was finally restored to a colorful and rosy complexion.

Qin Ziya lay witness to this entire process from the side. At the end, when he saw Qin Xingxuan's complexion restored and flush with blood, he was shocked. "What did you do?

What is that red liquid? There is actually some miracle medicine that exists in the world which can restore blood essence?"

After Lin Ming finished placing the last drop of blood essence, he let out a deep sigh of relief. Miracle medicine? Vermillion Bird blood essence could be considered this. Just now, he had used enough Vermillion Bird blood essence to create five almighty Revolving Core masters in exchange for the life of the early Pulse Condensation period Qin Xingxuan!

Such a luxurious and disproportionate exchange was all to restore the blood essence within Qin Xingxuan!

This was a great price that not even the total accumulated wealth of the Seven Profound Valleys could match up to!

As the Vermillion Bird blood essence silently baptized Qin Xingxuan's body, her eyes were tightly shut. Sometimes smoke would come from between her eyebrows, and sometimes she would twist around. From time to time she would reveal a happy smile, as if she were having a pleasant and wonderful dream.

Lin Ming silently waited by Qin Xingxuan's side. He waited for her to gradually calm down and her breathing to even out. Eventually, it seemed as if she were sleeping.

At this moment, Lin Ming finally stood up, a knowing and loving smile touching his lips.

But this smile only lasted for an instant. Suddenly, and without a hint, that smile suddenly turned wholly cold. He turned his head, and his vision fell onto Ou Xiong and his two juniors, like the eyes of a death god had locked onto them.

The time period in which Lin Ming had treated Qin Xingxuan was only a few dozen breaths of time. But to Ou Xiong and his group, those few dozen breaths of time were no different than 10 years. It was like they were prisoners on trial, and although they were incomparably frightened, they could only wait for judgment.

"Mister Lin… I… I…"

As Lin Ming's eyes fell upon Ou Xiong, his overflowing murderous intent also enveloped him. Ou Xiong's legs were like jelly as he fell to his knees, prostrate.

As for the other two Acacia Faction disciples, they were in an even worse state. Their legs trembled, their fingers trembled, and they couldn't stop shaking.

They couldn't be blamed for this, Lin Ming's aura was currently too terrifying. When that middle Houtian disciple who was monitoring Qin Ziya on Coconut Star Island met Lin Ming's eyes, he spat out blood on the spot!

After experiencing the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm for a year, Lin Ming had fought in countless battles, slaughtering innumerable enemies. The killing intent that leaked from his body had reached a degree where it could already manifest into reality.

"Mister Lin, forgive me, forgive me, forgive me, please! I well help you testify against Ouyang Boyan! I know how he arranged everything! I know it all!"

Ou Xiong went all out as he groveled for mercy. But Lin Ming only chillingly smiled, like a cruel beast, "…Help me testify against Ouyang Boyan?"

"Yes… yes, if Mister Lin doesn't believe me, then you may plant a seal within my body!" Ou Xiong was someone who feared death. In order to live, there was nothing he wouldn't do.

"I do not need you to testify against Ouyang Boyan – I only want to kill Ouyang Boyan!!" Lin Ming's voice was filled with a cold and domineering energy. At this time, he was just like a king who held life and death in his hands!

Testify against Ouyang Boyan? That was to use the rules of the Seven Profound Valleys as a weapon to defeat Ouyang Boyan. But if Lin Ming had strength, then Lin Ming would be the rules! Why would he need anyone to testify for anything!?

"Now, you can die!"

After Lin Ming had suffered this loss, he did not wish to leave behind any more enemies. Even if it was just a nobody who was following orders, it was still a hidden serpent in left behind. Someday in the future, this serpent might return to bite him!

Lin Ming flicked his fingers, and three crimson arcs of lightning shot out, shooting towards Ou Xiong and his two junior brothers.

Ou Xiong's complexion completely changed, and he turned around to flee.

The other two also cried out and ran away, choosing different directions to escape in.

However, those crimson arcs of lightning followed them. In an instant, they had already caught up. There was only a 'chi chi chi' sound as those crimson arcs of lightning attached themselves to the three like leeches and begun to ruthlessly devour their blood essence!

The two juniors issued piercing screams. However, despite how much they struggled, it was all meaningless. Their bodies began to rapidly wither, and after several breaths of time, they had turned into desiccated mummies.

Ou Xiong was able to last for a few breaths of time longer. The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder pierced his thigh, and his thigh began to rapidly wither. Ou Xiong desperately screamed and then used his sword to chop off his thigh. But at this time, the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder was like a serpent as it latched onto Ou Xiong's other leg.

"AhhhHH!!"

Both of Ou Xiong's eyes filled with blood. He chopped down with his sword once again!

Unwillingness. Pain. Despair. Ou Xiong's face was already completely twisted. He grabbed his own face, wishing he could tear off his skin.

Qin Yao was frightened as she looked from a distance. In that moment, she suddenly had a feeling as if Lin Ming himself were a demon…

Chapter 416 – The Feeling of Not Losing Her, How Blissful

Chapter 416 – The Feeling of Not Losing Her, How Blissful

…

…

…

Ou Xiong died, and it was also a painful struggle before he died. Because his cultivation was high, the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder wasn't able to instantly kill him. But this only meant that he suffered more pain, and in the end, all that was left of him was a dry corpse.

The three arcs of Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder howled as they flew back towards Lin Ming's hand, and integrated into the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder's Thunder Soul.

Qin Yao gulped. Such a killing method was extremely eerie, to the point where it made her skin crawl. This was absolutely not the righteous path.

Lin Ming turned around to look at her. Qin Yao jumped. Before she knew it, her hands were wet with sweat.

"Thank you." Lin Ming said. Lin Ming had seen the moment when Qin Yao had rescued Qin Xingxuan. He imagined that Qin Yao had looked after Qin Xingxuan many times. Otherwise, with her current condition, it was impossible that she would have survived until he arrived to save her.

"This is for you." Lin Ming took out two bottles of pills from his spatial ring.

When Lin Ming had taken the spatial ring from the South Sea Demon Region's Saint Son, Lei Mubai, besides the Great Desolate Blood Halberd replica and the ancient Devil Tome cultivation method jade slip, there were also many various precious and rare pills and treasures. Some of the pills were even more valuable than the Heaven Opening Pill.

Lin Ming was not stingy. He had taken out a bottle of Origin Balancing Pills and a bottle of Earth Spirit Pills. These pills were miracle cures that were respectively used by Xiantian realm and Houtian realm martial artists. These two pills were able to stabilize one's cultivation, and could build and refine the true essence in one's body.

This so-called strengthening one's energy was in fact creating a more solid and stable foundation. Lin Ming's foundation was already at the limit of stability when he had broken through. Therefore these two bottles of pills were relatively useless to him.

Pills that could stabilize one's foundation were much more valuable than pills that could enhance one's foundation. Every two Earth Spirit Pills were equal to a Heaven Opening Pill, and, as for the Origin Balancing Pill, every one one was much more valuable than a Heaven Opening Pill!

In a single breath Lin Ming had given away eight Earth Spirit Pills and three Origin Balancing Pills.

Qin Yao took the pill bottles. After smelling the fragrance that wafted from them, she was utterly stunned. "These are… Earth Spirit Pills!?"

To Qin Yao, Earth Spirit Pills were pills only found in legends. Within the Seven Profound Valleys, only a faction's chief disciple like Jiang Baoyun, Qin Wuxin, or other characters like that could obtain one or two Earth Spirit Pills after they reached the early Houtian realm in order to solidify their cultivate energy.

But Lin Ming had handed her eight of them!

Every two Earth Spirit Pills were equal to a Heaven Opening Pill!

To a martial artist from the Seven Profound Valleys, this was a staggeringly expensive pill that would leave anyone dumbfounded; how could she possibly eat these?

Since she had Earth Spirit Pills, she might as well trade them for Heaven Opening Pills. Although Earth Spirit Pills had a great effect, a similar effect could be accomplished through accumulated effort over time.

But, a Heaven Opening Pill was different. Without a Heaven Opening Pill, no matter how diligent one was, it would be impossible to step into the Xiantian realm.

Therefore, to a Seven Profound Valleys disciple, an Earth Spirit Pill was just like delicious and valuable vicious beast meat was to a poor man. A poor man wouldn't even be able to eat steamed buns, why would they eat valuable vicious beast meat? They might as well trade it in for several bags of rice and flour, that would be a much better use of it.

"I..." Qin Yao didn't know what to say. She knew what an Earth Spirit Pill was, but she had never seen an Origin Balancing Pill before. Still, just from looking at the rich heaven and earth origin energy that was condensed within the Origin Balancing Pill, she guessed that this precious pill was even more valuable than the Earth Spirit Pill.

In truth, one or two Heaven Opening Pills were more than enough for her. The reason that she had risked her life to come to Blood Demon Island was to obtain enough medium-grade true essence stones in order to trade for Heaven Opening Pills. As for these Earth Spirit Pills, they were completely luxurious treasures.

Lin Ming was able to guess what Qin Yao was thinking. He smiled and said, "The Earth Spirit Pills are for you to eat. You inner true essence is very messy, and your foundation is unstable. Otherwise, a few blood demons would not be able to deal with you. With your current condition, it will be very difficult for you to reach the Xiantian realm. If you have these Earth Spirit Pills, you can stabilize your cultivation so that your chances are much higher. As for these Origin Balancing Pills, you can use them to exchange for Heaven Opening Pills. Three Origin Balancing Pills are enough to trade for at least three Heaven

Opening Pills. Once your foundation becomes stable, two or three Heaven Opening Pills are more than enough for you to reach the Xiantian realm!"

Three Origin Balancing Pills can be exchanged for three Heaven Opening Pills?

Qin Yao was stunned.

At this moment, Qin Ziya laughed and said, "Qin Yao, these Origin Balancing Pills are for a Xiantian martial artist to use. Its value is truly above a Heaven Opening Pill. I can ask the Sovereign to help you trade. The Seven Profound Valleys' Elders would be glad for this business.

Qin Ziya was a Zither Faction Elder. If he helped her in the trade, then she wouldn't need to fear that she would be scammed, and it was also safer. Qin Ziya didn't have Heaven Opening Pills, otherwise he would be happy to make a trade too. To a Xiantian master, Heaven Opening Pills were useless. But Origin Balancing Pills could be used to solidify their cultivation base.

Qin Yao was speechless with excitement. Her hands clutched her chest as she ran short of breath. Everything that happened seemed to be like a dream!

Xiantian realm! She had long ago decided that she would firm her resolve and make the sacrifices necessary in order to work towards this high goal in her life. But yet, this goal had actually been realized in an instant!

As Lin Ming watched Qin Yao's excited expression, he couldn't help but sigh with emotion. He understood very well her emotions at this time. In Sky Fortune Kingdom, there were many martial artists whose lifelong goal was to step into the Pulse Condensation period. To them, a Xiantian martial artist was no different than gods from ancient legends.

But now, these two bottles of pills were able to create a Xiantian martial artist, and realize the lifelong aspirations of a third-grade sect disciple.

It could only be said that the disparity in this world was too great. All living beings were no different than ants. As for some people who believed they were above others, they were just bigger ants.

Lin Ming's own road that he had to travel was still impossible long.

"Qin Yao, please do not spread the news that I am alive."

"I… I understand." Qin Yao forcefully nodded. Although she tried to calm herself, her voice was still a bit shaky.

Lin Ming smiled. Then, he bent down and lifted up the peacefully sleeping Qin Xingxuan.

As he temporarily flattened his killing intent, Lin Ming looked for a peaceful place in the vicinity of Blood Demon Island and spread out a temporary bed of grass and clothing, letting Qin Xingxuan rest on top.

Once Qin Xingxuan's condition was completely restored, he would have the peace of mind to go and pay a visit to the Seven Profound Valleys.

Qin Xingxuan rested for two whole days. During this period, Qin Ziya lived nearby. In these two days, Qin Ziya discussed the Zither Faction's cultivation methods with Qin Yao; the two were simply birds of a feather. Qin Ziya's natural talent was extremely high, it was just that he started cultivating martial arts too late in his life, and thus missed the best window of time to do so. But, he still had a very rich experience and depth of knowledge about the Zither Faction's cultivation methods, and also into the intricacies of the Zither Heart. As he and Qin Yao conversed for two days, Qin Yao benefited a lot.

Two days peacefully passed. Lin Ming had laid down a simple isolating array formation. Fireshine was just too conspicuous. Although he was hidden in a cave, he didn't fear blood demons, but rather that any fight would disturb Qin Xingxuan's rest.

…………

Qin Xingxuan slept soundly. Her expression was tranquil, and her face was cute and flushed, just like a baby.

Occasionally, she would frown, and a look of panic would come over her. Presumably, this was because the shadows of her heart had deepened too much from these past days. Lin Ming's death, her Qin Family's imminent demise, the serpent Ouyang Boyan, and even the perilous Blood Demon Island; all of these were Qin Xingxuan's nightmares, weighing down on her chest, making it hard for her to breath.

Whenever Lin Ming saw Qin Xingxuan like this, he could only worry and be nervous. He quietly held onto her hands during this time, hoping it would give her comfort...

This approach was truly miraculous. Whenever he did so, Qin Xingxuan would always slowly calm down, and sometimes even a happy and content smile would appear on her lips.

The cave was cool. Moisture would condense at the top of the cave, turning into crystal drops of water. Once these water drops were big enough, they would fall down, releasing a clear ringing sound that echoed.

However, Qin Xingxuan did not feel cold. The Vermillion Bird blood essence continuously and subtly transformed her bloodline, causing her blood vitality to be vibrant like a stove. Sometimes, Qin Xingxuan would even fragrantly perspire until she dripped. She would subconsciously pull off the blanket, and even tug away on her clothes.

When this happened, Lin Ming could only blush and gulp as he embarrassedly tucked Qin Xingxuan back in her blanket, waiting for the Vermillion Bird blood essence to penetrate into her marrow and completely fuse with her.

Time slowly marched on. Like this, another day passed.

It was late at night, and the shining bright moon was hanging in the dark night sky. Because of the endless red fog that never left Blood Demon Island, the round moon looked as if it were dyed red. But this only made it seem especially beautiful.

Qin Xingxuan had already completely calmed down. The flushed ruddiness of her face already vanished.

The bloodline transformation had quietly completed.

A single tear formed at the corner of Qin Xingxuan's eyes. Under the red demon moon, the light that fell down was a pale red. It was like a blood-colored pearl was hidden in the night sky. This scene was particularly poignant.

As the tear rolled down her cheek, it was actually caught by a finger. Lin Ming gently wiped away this tear, feeling some heartache.

At this moment, Qin Xingxuan loudly coughed. She revealed a pained expression and then… she opened her eyes.

As her blurry vision began to clear up, in her eyes, she saw Lin Ming's face.

She was immediately shocked.

These past two days, she had encountered countless colorful dreams and terrible nightmares. Now, Qin Xingxuan found it difficult to distinguish between dreams and realities. Between these dreams, she vaguely recalled that before she died, she saw Lin Ming coming to her on a Vermillion Bird. From time to time, this image would pop into her mind, but in the end she didn't know whether Lin Ming was alive or dead.

At the moment when she had awakened, she thought that she would be a lone girl that would have to face this desolate and bleak world. But, what she saw was Lin Ming sitting beside her, a tender and happy smile on his face.

Now, Qin Xingxuan's tears couldn't stop. She threw herself into Lin Ming's arms, crying and sobbing.

She tightly held onto Lin Ming's waist. She feared that if she let go, she would lose him.

“It’s all right, everything’s fine. I’ve got you now.” Lin Ming gently caressed Qin Xingxuan’s back. His heart filled with emotion. This feeling of not losing her was truly blissful.

Like this, Qin Xingxuan held onto Lin Ming. She cried without words. All of the grievances, injustices, and sorrows she had held within her now melted away like snow under the summer sun.

Qin Xingxuan suddenly felt that her life was inseparable from Lin Ming’s. Even if the gap between them became a moat that divided them, she would do everything in her power to pursue him. She wouldn’t leave him, even if she had to be a moth that got too close to the flames…

With a fragrant and jade-like Qin Xingxuan pressed against his chest, Lin Ming was also enjoying this scene that sent his stomach fluttering. After a long time, Qin Xingxuan whispered, “Um… I’m hungry…”

After three days of not eating anything, Qin Xingxuan was starving.

Chapter 417 – Towards the Seven Profound Valleys

Chapter 417 – Towards the Seven Profound Valleys

…

…

…

“Oh? You’re hungry?” Lin Ming brightly smiled. Hunger meant that she was much better.

Qin Xingxuan nodded, a bit embarrassed. She was hungry and she was also thirsty.

“I’ll cook up something delicious for you, I guarantee you’ll like it.”

After Lin Ming spoke, he lit a fire and took out some pots; he had always brought along cooking utensils in his spatial ring.

He placed a giant pot on the fire and added water. Then, Lin Ming took out a great piece of bright red meat from his spatial ring and tossed it in the pot.

He sprinkled on some salt and spices, and then covered the pot to let it boil.

After a quarter of an hour, a delicious mouthwatering fragrance began to drift out. Lin Ming slowly handed Qin Xingxuan a big bowl. The soft and red meat glittered, and the rich soup was a pale red. It looked like a vintage wine, and also extremely tasty.

After a sprinkle of diced green onions and a dash of cooking wine, not even an immortal could find anything better.

“What is this?”

Qin Xingxuan asked in awe as she looked at delicious-seeming bowl of red and green soup.

Lin Ming smiled but didn't say anything. This was food that he had brought back from the Divine Phoenix Mystic realm, and was also the meat from those strange giant crabs. The river underneath the cave was very long, so Lin Ming was impolite and took some time to go hunting for a giant heap of those strange crabs. He had even taken a great amount of the river water.

These two things were absolutely the best spiritual food and water. Within the Sky Spill Continent, there was nearly no place where something this great could be found. Lin Ming's spatial ring wasn't big enough, but Lei Mubai's was. His low-grade earth-step spatial ring had over a hundred square feet of space inside. So, Lin Ming had packed it full of crab meat. The space inside a spatial ring was a separate dimension; food placed within would never spoil, and it had an effect of always maintaining freshness. It would be alright even if food was stored within for hundreds of years.

After Qin Xingxuan drank the soup, she also had some crab meat. Qin Xingxuan looked surprised. The crab meat was soft and tender, yet full of strength. The soup was also extremely savory. Not only that, but once the crabmeat entered her stomach, it turned into a gentle flow of heat that slowly dissipated, spreading throughout her body and nourishing her true essence, making her feel warm. After drinking and eating this food, she felt completely comfortable.

"What is this? Is it expensive?"

When Qin Xingxuan was at the Seven Profound Valleys, she had also eaten spiritual food. Top quality spiritual food might even cost hundreds of true essence stones. But compared to this crab meat, that spiritual food was nothing. Could the cost of this crab meat be factored by thousands of true essence stones?

Lin Ming said, "It's great as long as you eat it. These are all things that I obtained in the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, they can help you recuperate from your wounds."

With 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence as medicine and then supported by the highest quality spirit food to assist in recovery, such an extravagant method of treatment was enough to make up for all the blood essence that Qin Xingxuan had lost.

Qin Xingxuan's eyes widened, "Lin Ming, what have you been doing for this last year? What happened to you in the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm that you had to stay away for such a long time?"

"It's a long story. Wait for me and I'll tell you slowly. That's right, how well have you practiced the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' that I gave you?"

Qin Xingxuan said, "I've only practiced the first layer to the Large Success stage. I encountered many questions, the jade slip explanations aren't too clear."

The 'True Primal Chaos Formula' jade slip that Qin Xingxuan had was recorded by Lin Ming and given to her.

It was not a simple or easy task to record a cultivation method onto a jade slip. There were many mysterious and profound principles involves. If one wished to engrave a cultivation method onto a jade slip, they had to be incomparably proficient at it. At least, they should have almost reached Perfection.

Someone who didn't completely understand the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' wouldn't be able to engrave it onto a jade slip, but even if they were given a complete copy of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula', it would be impossible for them to duplicate it. It was just like a person who didn't understand how to carve seals. If someone were to place a seal in front of them and told them to copy it, they wouldn't be able to create a seal that was entirely alike.

This was also the reason that cultivation method jade slips were so rare and precious.

Lin Ming himself had only practiced the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' to Largess Success of the third layer. This led to there being many ambiguities and omissions in the jade slip that he created. This was also the reason that Qin Xingxuan found it difficult to proceed, with problems everywhere she looked.

Not just that, but more importantly, Qin Xingxuan didn’t have the memories of the Realm of the Gods’ Supreme Elder within her mind and the cultivation experience that came with it. Thus, even with her sixth-grade talent, her cultivation speed was very slow.

Lin Ming sighed. Qin Xingxuan had now reached the Pulse Condensation period. If she wanted to complete the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ and then subsequently practice the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ and walk down the road of Tempering Marrow, that would simply be too difficult.

So, she might as well start practicing the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence was enough for Qin Xingxuan to cultivate the hardest and most difficult core sections of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. In fact, it was highly possible that she would even be able to practice the additional three layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ that he had obtained from the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

Thinking this, Lin Ming asked her, “Xingxuan, are you willing to join Divine Phoenix Island?”

Qin Xingxuan was stunned by this question. Then, her eyes shined. “Join Divine Phoenix Island? Can I?”

Divine Phoenix Island was a top fourth-grade sect. With her sixth-grade talent, she was a once-in-a-generation talent within Sky Fortune Kingdom. Within the Seven Profound Valleys, her talent was also good. But if she were placed in Divine Phoenix Island, her talent was only ordinary. For instance, Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun were both superior seventh-grade talents. As for Qin Xingxuan, she was only a medium sixth-grade. Within Divine Phoenix Islands, most of the maids there were at least inferior sixth-grade talents.

Of course, Qin Xingxuan also desired to join Divine Phoenix Island. In terms of cultivation resources, the difference between the Seven Profound Valleys and Divine Phoenix Island was like night and day. And the most important factor was that Lin Ming was also at Divine Phoenix Island.

If she could go to Divine Phoenix Island, that meant she could be closer to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming smiled, “If you are willing, then of course you can! This time I’ll take you to Divine Phoenix Island. There is no longer any need for you to stay at the Seven Profound Valleys!”

The Seven Profound Valleys was a very complex environment. Lin Ming had far more enemies than friends. If Qin Xingxuan stayed there, Lin Ming would not be able to pass his days in peace.

That evening, Lin Ming lay down next to Qin Xingxuan. They kept their clothes on, and held hands. Lin Ming happily reiterated his experience this past year to Qin Xingxuan. The conversation of these two continued throughout the entire night, as they gazed into each other’s eyes. Without either of them sleeping, they were still speaking until the dawn arrived…

………….

Next day, early in the morning, Lin Ming took Xingxuan’s hand and led her out of the cave. In the distance, they could hear the faint sounds of zithers playing. This was Qin Ziya and Qin Yao discussing zither music theory.

As Qin Yao saw Qin Xingxuan leave the cave, she let out a breath of relief. Although she already realized that nothing would happen to Qin Xingxuan, it wasn’t until she saw her friend truly awaken that her heart rose back up from her stomach.

“Junior-apprentice Sister Qin, you’ve awoken!” Qin Yao grasped Qin Xingxuan’s hands, a cheerful smile on her face. Qin Xingxuan’s face unconsciously flushed red, as if she had been caught doing something naughty.

Towards Qin Xingxuan, Qin Yao felt a bit of sisterly envy. Lin Ming had flown hundreds of thousands of miles non-stop in order to rescue Qin Xingxuan. What girl didn’t dream that the one they loved would rescue them in such a daring manner, a dashing knight that radiating a glorious momentum?

Not just that, but Lin Ming was extremely handsome, and his future was limitless.

Originally, Qin Yao didn't envy Qin Xingxuan; there simply wasn't anything to be envious of. But now she did. The two bottles of pills that Lin Ming had given her were enough for her to step into the Xiantian realm. As for whatever he could give Qin Xingxuan, it was surely enough for her to step into the Revolve Core realm.

The Revolving Core realm! It was also the realm of the Highest Elder. One would also have 500 to 600 years of life. Thinking this, Qin Yao sighed. Her Junior-apprentice Sister Qin was really lucky!

At this moment, a flame suddenly lit in front of Qin Ziya. This was a sound transmitting talisman. As Qin Ziya heard the message from the sound transmitting talisman, he frowned, and then he sneered.

"Mm? What's going on?"

Qin Ziya said, "It is a Seven Profound Command to summon me back. Ouyang Boyan has accused me of being derelict in my duties and defying military orders, saying that not only did I secretly leave Star Coconut Island which was under my supervision, but also that I injured his disciple and stole away the sea map. This time, Ouyang Boyan is preparing to impeach me in front of the Council of Elders."

Lin Ming smiled, but his smile was very cold. It contained a thick, deadly, murderous intent.

"Well since that's the case, Martial House Master Qin, let us return to the sect. I'll go back together with you and have a look at just how they will impeach you!"

Chapter 418 – Seven Profound Valleys Banquet

Chapter 418 – Seven Profound Valleys Banquet

…

…

…

“You will go to the Seven Profound Valleys? Now?” Qin Ziya was startled. In his view, Lin Ming was truly formidable, and was even stronger than him. But if he went to the Seven Profound Valleys, there were countless Xiantian realm masters scattered around like clouds – and even extreme Xiantian masters. Ouyang Boyan was himself already strong, but no matter how fierce Lin Ming was, how could he possibly do anything to Ouyang Boyan within the Seven Profound Valleys? At best, when Lin Ming went there, anything he tried would come to nothing.

“Yes, I’m going to go now.” Lin Ming’s voice trembled with a light note of killing intent. The surrounding temperature seemed to drop by several degrees.

“Lin Ming, don’t be so rash. Think about this.” Qin Xingxuan was afraid that Lin Ming would lose and that something would happen to him. It had to be known that within the complex and layered forces that existed within the Seven Profound Valleys, the Ouyang Family Clan was one of the greatest and most notorious. Ouyang Boyan was an important character of the Ouyang Family Clan, and his network covered the entire Seven Profound Valleys. A strong dragon shouldn’t press local snakes. If he faced off against Ouyang Boyan within the Seven Profound Valleys, it would be easy for him to suffer a loss.

“Lin Ming, how about this, let’s go to Divine Phoenix Island first and see if we can use Divine Phoenix Island to pressure the Seven Profound Valleys…”

“No need. I will solve this matter by myself. Now, let’s go!”

“This… alright.” Qin Ziya glanced at Lin Ming’s killing intent and nodded. “When the time comes, try to negotiate as much as possible. I’m sure the Seven Profound Valleys would convene the Council of Elders…”

Qin Ziya thought that the Seven Profound Valleys would punish Ouyang Boyan themselves. If this happened, they wouldn’t have to draw in Divine Phoenix Island.

“But…” Qin Xingxuan was full of worries.

Qin Ziya said, “It’s alright. Lin Ming shouldn’t be able to accomplish anything on this trip. But no matter how courageous the Seven Profound Valleys is, they wouldn’t dare to lay their hands on him.”

Qin Xingxuan bit her lips then nodded. She whispered, “Lin Ming, be careful alright?”

Qin Ziya paused and then said to Lin Ming. “Let’s look for a safe place first and settle Miss Qin down. Afterwards you and I can go to the Seven Profound Valleys together.”

Lin Ming shook his head. He said, “War is erupting in all lands and directions – there is no safe place in the South Sea. Even if it was an isolated island in the middle of nowhere I wouldn’t feel relieved. Xingxuan, it’s best if you travel with me. Let us go to the Seven Profound Valleys together.”

“This…” Qin Ziya was a bit worried, “Lin Ming. When the time comes, there are bound to be some battles that occur. If there is some accident, Miss Qin might be harmed…”

Lin Ming’s expression went cold. “If there is anyone who dares to harm Xingxuan, I will exterminate the entire Seven Profound Valleys!”

As these words came out, the murderous intent that had been hiding within Lin Ming began to overflow once again. Qin Ziya suddenly felt his back go cold, and he realized that

Lin Ming was not joking. He prayed that when the time came, they would be able to peacefully settle matters. “That is… well, let’s not tarry any longer. We’ll go now.”

…………………

The Seven Profound Valleys, Acacia Faction –

A light mountain fog hung at the bottom of a vast lake. On top of the lake, there were a number of man-made islands. From far away, it looked like these islands were connected together by strings of shining pearls.

Today, the Acacia Faction was very lively and festive. Within the sect, they were holding a grand banquet.

There were three celebrations happening at the same time. The first was that the Acacia Faction Great Elder Ouyang Guang was taking a concubine. Second, was that the Acacia Faction’s chief disciple Ouyang Ming had made a breakthrough to the Houtian realm. And third, the faction Elder Ouyang Boyan, who had been stranded at the peak of the early Xiantian realm for dozens of years, had finally made his breakthrough to the middle Xiantian realm!

Of these three happy events, the most important two events were the celebrations of breakthroughs in cultivation. As for Ouyang Guang taking a concubine, that was an event worth celebrating, but to Acacia Faction Elders who had groups of wives and concubines, it wasn’t that great a deal. It was just that he was joining in with the rest and having a little celebration himself.

As for Ouyang Ming and Ouyang Boyan making a breakthrough in their cultivation, this would greatly strengthen and consolidate the Ouyang Family Clan’s status within the Seven Profound Valleys.

These years, the top master of the Seven Profound Valleys had mainly been the Jiang Family Clan. But, they couldn’t keep up with the Ouyang Family Clan’s flourishing descendants. The Elders had groups of wives and concubines, and many more girls that they played with.

The larger their foundation of descendants, the more talents they could produce.

Under such a situation, the Ouyang Family Clan's population was several times that of the Jiang Family Clan. They had already nearly equaled them in power.

On the main island of the lake, there were seven distinguished and broad stone bridges that connected to the other islands. These bridges were made of iridescent white marble, and were 50 feet wide. It was enough to allow two large carriages to pass by each other with room to spare. It was quite spacious.

As this time, on these white marble bridges, there was a steady stream of people walking back and forth. Most of these people were from martial cultivation families, or were top figures of small sects.

"Haha, Brother Boyan, congratulations!"

A man with a long face greeted Ouyang Boyan as he saw him, cupping his fists together across his chest.

"You as well." Ouyang Boyan laughed in return. At this time, he was flushed with success and filled with elation. At this time, he had broken through to the middle Xiantian realm, Lin Ming had died, and his great blood grudge had been resolved. His thoughts flowed freely, and his heart was at ease. The true essence that had been blocked within him had finally connected, and he had made a successful breakthrough.

Also, there was another event that caused Ouyang Boyan to feel very happy. And that was that Qin Ziya, the man that had kept obstructing him, had finally gone stupid and did something idiotic, injuring the disciple that he had sent to monitor him at Star Coconut Island. Not only that, but he had then swept away the sea chart and left without authorization from the sect. The Seven Profound Valleys had very strict rules. In times of war, they were even stricter. This time, Qin Ziya would not be able to emerge from this even unscathed.

It was just a pity that Ouyang Boyan still hadn't been able to make Qin Xingxuan submit to him and serve him. Although Ouyang Boyan was an Elder, the most he could do was pressure her using his influence and a military command. As for forcefully ravaging her, she was still a Seven Profound Valleys disciple, so that was impossible.

This caused Ouyang Boyan to feel some regret. Otherwise, if he was able to possess and thoroughly enjoy the woman that Lin Ming had loved before his death, then that would be the greatest and most carefree dream that would make his mind flow even more freely.

"Elder Ouyang, congratulations. To reach the middle Xiantian realm before 160 years of age, it's not impossible for you to step into the extreme Xiantian realm in the future." A long bearded daoist priest smiled in congratulations as he flicked his whisk around.

This long bearded daoist priest was the master of a second-grade Daoist Temple. The Seven Profound territory had many small second-grade powers within it. They were not part of the Seven Profound Valleys, but still maintained a good relationship with them. Sometimes they would pay tribute with some top quality goods, and thus the Seven Profound Valleys would tacitly allow their continued existence.

"So it's Temple Master Qin, please, enjoy yourself." The atmosphere of the event was very happy and festive. As one of the main hosts of honor of this event, Ouyang Boyan had to smile even when greeting these leaders of second-grade sects. He had fully stepped into the middle Xiantian realm, and had now officially joined the ranks of masters within the Seven Profound Valleys. Ouyang Boyan was only 150 to 160 years old; he still had much room to rise. After several more decades, it wouldn't be surprising if he reached the late Xiantian realm.

And the late Xiantian realm was where the true top level masters of the Seven Profound Valleys were. It had to be known that extreme Xiantian masters were exceedingly rare within the Seven Profound Valleys. Within the entire Ouyang Family Clan, there was only a single extreme Xiantian master.

A grand feast had already been arranged on the islands. The seats around the tables faced the lakes, and the beautiful pavilions shimmered like they were carved from the purest jade. They were crystal clear, high, and absolutely gorgeous.

Those that could enter these pavilions were the top characters of second-grade sects, or they might be heads of certain great martial cultivation families. As for the main island, that was mostly reserved for the Elders of the Seven Profound Valleys. Those of lesser status celebrated on the surrounding islands. The entire banquet seating arrangement was organized by a very distinct separation of status.

Ouyang Ming naturally sat at the main island. A year later, he was still as handsome and talented as before, it was only that his calm and restrained atmosphere was even more intense than before. As he sat there, he was instantly the focus of everyone present. His every movement caught the attention of the outstanding heroic elites present.

Ouyang Ming had stepped into the Houtian realm at only 21 years of age. In the future, there was great hope that he would be able to reach the extreme Xiantian realm. Then, the Ouyang Family Clan would be able to usher in another golden age of unlimited prosperity!

The young men present couldn’t help but compare themselves to Ouyang Ming. As for the young women, especially those that came from small family clans or small sects, they all constantly tried to enter the eyes of Ouyang Ming. These girls of common talent all dreamed that Ouyang Ming would fancy them and take them as his concubine. Not only would their status in their family clan or sect dramatically rise, but they would even have the support of the Acacia Faction’s resources. With that, breaking through to the Pulse Condensation period would be simple.

For these young girls, this temptation was a fatal poison that they couldn’t resist. Not to mention that Ouyang Ming had extremely good looks that seemed sculpted from jade. If they gave their bodies to him, they wouldn’t consider it a loss.

“Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, is that Ouyang Ming really so fierce? He’s at the early Houtian realm, but he can actually jump ranks to defeat a late Houtian master? Doesn’t that mean he is also more formidable than Elder Senior-apprentice Brother?” In a gazebo near the lake waters, a 20 something youth said in a quiet voice. He was from a small second-grade sect in the Seven Profound territory.

His Elder Senior-apprentice Brother was nearly 30 years old, and his cultivation was at the late Houtian realm. In their small sect, this Houtian realm disciple was their top number one talent.

The Elder-apprentice Brother nodded and said, “This late Houtian realm disciple should be a sect’s martial artist. Here, any casual inner court disciple is already far beyond me. Lamentably, I am inferior to Ouyang Ming. I am already 29 years old and Ouyang Ming is only 21. The difference between us is just too great!

“But...” That Elder Senior-apprentice Brother changed the topic, “Liu Xuan from the Fierce Flood Sect is not some common nobody. This time, he might have thoughts to show off his skills during this banquet competition and brilliantly shine. Perhaps he might even think of challenging Ouyang Ming.”

Within the South Sea Horizon and the Five Element Region, it was normal that a sect would hold a friendly competition during grand banquets. The Seven Profound Valleys was no exception. This was also a good opportunity for young talents to display their skills.

Martial artists at the Pulse Condensation period and the Houtian realm could go onstage. But, the truth was that most of these second-grade sects’ Houtian realm martial artists were nearly 30 years old; they couldn’t really be considered as ‘youthful’ heroic elites. But in order to allow the Seven Profound Valleys’ Houtian realm disciples to show their skills, they had no choice but to go up onstage.

In truth, many disciples were stilling willing to go up. When facing against a Seven Profound Valleys disciple, losing was no shame, and winning meant great honor.

For instance, the Fierce Flood Sect's Liu Xuan had stumbled into the cave domain of a South Horizon Region master that had passed away a long time ago, and had obtained a lucky chance from the legacy he had left behind. Now, he wished for the opportunity to go up onstage in the banquet competition and amaze the world with his display of skills.

Over time, important figures of the Acacia Faction as well as some Elders of the Array Faction, Mirage Faction, and Refiner Faction began to arrive.

However, there were very, very few people from the Zither Faction and Sword Faction..

The Seven Profound Valleys had many internal contradictions. As the saying went, those who walked different paths had to go separate ways. Because of the different cultivation methods that they practiced, those from the Sword Faction and Zither Faction had very different personalities from those of the Acacia Faction. The Acacia Faction did not have harmonious relations with these two other factions. Since Ouyang Ming had Ouyang Boyan had made a breakthrough, only those Elders from the Sword Faction and Zither Faction that personally had connections with those from the Acacia Faction had arrived.

There were multiple rounds of drinks, and the celebratory atmosphere had reached a peak. Now, the banquet competition would begin!

This was the highlight of the banquet. Many young heroic elites smiled as they went onstage. These geniuses were the greatest talents of their sects. Naturally, they had waves of applause.

But at this time, just several hundred miles away from the Seven Profound Valleys, Lin Ming was standing on Fireshine's back as he flew in the direction of the banquet. He could already see the Profound Sky Mountains from several hundred miles away. To Fireshine, this several hundred mile distance would only take an incense stick of time to traverse…

Chapter 419 – Take Your Life

Chapter 419 – Take Your Life

…

…

…

In the center of the white marble stage, a sword light flashed, and a Seven Profound Valleys disciple gave a miserable cough as he was sent flying off the stage.

“Fierce Flood Sect’s Liu Xuan, victory!” The referee deeply looked into Liu Xuan’s eyes as he announced the result.

“Fierce! This Liu Xuan has won three continuous matches!”

“And he still has strength remaining.”

“The younger generation is really spilling forth with heroic elites. Liu Xuan, Ye Tian, Zhang Yan – all are more powerful than the last.”

“But the truly fierce ones are the masters of the Seven Profound Valleys. The ones that have followed Liu Xuan up are the inner court disciples. Although they lost, the difference between them isn’t too great. If the Seven Profound Valleys’ core disciples or direct disciples enter the stage, then I have no idea what those battles will be like!”

A disciple sighed. Everyone couldn’t help but glance over at Ouyang Ming, and were surprised to see that he had a clear, dreamy expression on his face as if he simply didn’t care about these fights that were occurring onstage.

Obviously, battles of this level – even those including Liu Xuan – simply didn't enter Ouyang Ming's eyes.

Those who glanced at him to gave birth to an an extremely deep and profound feeling.

"Just how far does the degree of Ouyang Ming's strength reach?" Some people couldn't help but ask.

"I cannot fathom. In short, all I can tell is that he is surpassingly strong. Perhaps he is even stronger than our sect's Sovereign." The one who spoke was a disciple from a small sect. His sect's Sovereign had already reached the peak Houtian realm.

"Stronger than your Sovereign? Isn't that just too exaggerated!?"

....

At this time, Ouyang Boyan was sitting atop the main island, watching the stage as the battles progressed and listening to the sounds of gently instruments float to his ear. He had a very enjoyable expression on his face, as if he was taking in all the luxuries of life. He had beautiful women swaying by his sides. These were his concubines and his maids. As these beautiful women weaved around him, it was a truly beautiful sight.

Today was the happiest day Ouyang Boyan had ever experienced.

Lin Ming had died. Qin Xingxuan would suffer a miserable and painful death. The Qin Family and Lin Family, both would be destroyed. And soon, Qin Ziya would quickly be penalized. All of Ouyang Boyan's thoughts were smooth.

Not just that, but during this banquet there was even a second-grade sect that had offered him 12 Pure Yin girls.

These 12 Pure Yin girls had to have a talent above the third-grade and also be below 20 years of age. And most importantly, they also needed to be beautiful, virgin women. The most demanding requirement was their date of birth; it was extremely difficult to collect these 12 girls. Initially, Zhang Guanyu had offered a batch of 12 Pure Yin girls to Ouyang Dihua for his assistance. And, the final result of this was that Ouyang Dihua had instead lost his own life.

12 Pure Yin girls were extremely beneficial to one’s cultivation of the Divine Acacia Power. Ouyang Boyan had already looked over these 12 young and beautiful girls and he was extremely satisfied by what he saw. Tonight, he would take their virginity and use it to enhance his own cultivation.

Thinking of this, Ouyang Boyan’s thoughts began to heat up with lust; his mind had already drifted onto the bodies of those 12 beautiful girls.

But at this moment, a flame suddenly lit in front of him. It was a sound transmitting talisman.

Ouyang Boyan heard the message from this sound transmitting talisman and was shocked, “Someone from Divine Phoenix is forcing their way into the Seven Profound Valleys?”

Ouyang Boyan doubted this for a moment, and then heard the clarion cry of a phoenix. Ten miles away, a massive Vermillion Bird cut through the skies, leaving a path of flames that burned the heavens!

Ouyang Boyan stood up.

The Vermillion Bird was the absolute symbol of Divine Phoenix Island. If one saw a Vermillion Bird, they would know without a doubt that it was Divine Phoenix Island. But, why would someone from Divine Phoenix Island come to the Seven Profound Valleys? They couldn’t be coming to congratulate him right? Divine Phoenix Island had countless Xiantian masters. To them, Ouyang Boyan who had just broken through to the middle Xiantian realm wasn’t even worth a fart. So how would they possibly come here to celebrate?

Everyone present also saw the massive Vermillion Bird approaching. No one was allowed to fly over the Seven Profound Valleys’ entrance, but no one dared to stop this Vermillion Bird!

Lin Ming flew straight towards the Profound Sky Mountains. There were several small spirit boats that approached him, wishing to inquire about who he was, but they were instantly thrown off by Fireshine. Fireshine's speed was even quicker than a Revolving Core master.

"Heavens! Is that a phoenix!?"

"A phoenix! I'm not seeing things!"

"It's coming down! It's coming down!"

Several thousand pairs of eyes were wide as they stared into the sky. Everyone stood. Most of the people present were only from second-grade sects, when could they ever witness the advent of a Saint Beast!

They could not distinguish the difference between a phoenix and a Vermillion Bird.

A 100 foot long wingspan and a body entirely wreathed in roaring flames; strong gales formed a vortex, making it difficult to breathe for everyone below. Fireshine closed its massive wings, and looked down on the world with utter impunity as it dropped straight down!

Bang!

Flames combusted in all directions. Fireshine fell directly onto the middle of the lake island, and the hot streams of fiery wind smashed away all the furniture. Those martial artists with weaker cultivations were even forced back several steps by this strong wind!

All of those present were frightened. Fireshine was Mu Yuhuang's Vermillion Bird. It was a grown Vermillion Bird. Compared to Mu Qianyu's Little Flame, it was over double the size!

"Is that Divine Phoenix Island's envoy?"

"Divine Phoenix Island also sends congratulations to Elder Ouyang? Elder Ouyang's face is truly great!"

The many disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys were excitedly speaking amongst themselves. They assumed that the reason Divine Phoenix Island had sent an envoy here was to congratulate Ouyang Boyan. This sounded improbable, but during the last Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction Martial Meeting, Divine Phoenix Island had also sent an envoy to visit.

In their limited worldview, it was possible that Divine Phoenix Island would send someone to congratulate Ouyang Boyan for breaking through to the middle Xiantian realm.

Of course, Ouyang Boyan never entertained such a fanciful idea. His expression was solemn, and his eyes had already turned onto the several figures that were being carried on the Vermillion Bird's back…

A youth jumped down. In that moment, every single Seven Profound Valleys disciple fell silent.

Several thousand eyes turned their gazes towards this youth, completely stunned.

This person wore black clothes, and his long hair was recklessly scattered. He held a deep purplish-red long spear in his hand.

His handsome face seemed as if it was hewed by a saber, and his two straight eyebrows slanted up. His eyes were deep and profound as if they contained the endless night sky! He only stood there, but yet a giant, invisible wave of pressure rushed out from him like a tide; even those people hundreds of feet away could clearly feel this aura. It caused them to find it hard to breathe and their hearts to palpitate!

At this moment, that youth standing in the center of the square was like a heavenly God of War.

“Who?”

“Who is that?”

The second-grade sect disciples began to speak amongst themselves. They had heard Lin Ming's name, but they had never seen Lin Ming before.

However, the Seven Profound Valleys' disciples were bewildered. Many of them subconsciously rubbed their eyes, thinking that they were hallucinating.

Lin Ming!

It was really Lin Ming!

He hadn't died!?

Ouyang Ming's face had completely changed. The calm smile of before had vanished, replaced by a deep awe and reverence that stemmed from the depths of his being. He would never forget the events of a year and a half ago. At the Total Faction Martial Meeting, the early Pulse Condensation period Lin Ming had completely defeated him, he didn't even have the slightest bit of ability to resist!

Now, over a year had passed, and Ouyang Ming had reached the early Houtian realm. He once believed that Lin Ming had died, but never thought that he would stand in front of him here today. Not just that, but his cultivation had risen to the late Houtian realm!

In just a year and a half, Lin Ming's cultivation had risen by an entire realm and half!

At the beginning, Lin Ming's cultivation was weaker than Ouyang Ming's. But presently, Lin Ming had cast Ouyang Ming far behind!

If a early Pulse Condensation period Lin Ming already had the ability to defeat the peak Pulse Condensation period Jiang Baoyun, then how terrifying was the current late Houtian realm Lin Ming?

Could he have strength equal to the early Xiantian realm?

Ouyang Ming only felt his mind tremble, he no longer dared to imagine the possibilities!

Ouyang Boyan's eyes fiercely twitched, his fists tightening and his palms sweating.

Lin Ming hadn't died!

Why!?

Why didn't he die!?

Not only was he alive, but his cultivation had actually reached the late Houtian realm! In just a year and a half, how could this have happened!?

Ouyang Boyan screaming in his heart!

He hated!

He was unwilling!

He feared!

It was impossible that Lin Ming hadn't discovered what he had done these past months. Perhaps Lin Ming might not be able to threaten him with his current strength, but what about later?

If his growth continued at this breakneck speed, then in a year, Lin Ming might even be able to kill him!

When that time came, he couldn't count on anyone in the Seven Profound Valleys raising their head to defend him. Under the suppression of absolute strength, even the Seven Profound Valleys would not hesitate for a second to sacrifice him.

That meant all he could do was escape. If he stayed in the Severn Profound Valleys, all that awaited him was death.

Ouyang Boyan coldly looked at Lin Ming. He did not do something foolish or useless like apologizing. In the moment that Lin Ming had dropped down, he was able to feel the thick and overwhelming killing intent surging from his body. Ouyang Boyan knew that Lin Ming had already resolved to kill him!

Unfortunately, Lin Ming was far too impulsive. If he had just patiently waited for another year, then he really might have been able to kill him.

In that moment, many thoughts flashed through Ouyang Boyan's heart. He didn't lose his calm. Instead, he stood there steadily like a tree.

"Elder Ouyang! How have you been since we last met? I hope you've been well!"

Lin Ming's expression was blank as he spoke. But, his voice was like a cold wind that billowed up from the ninth layer of the abyss. The entire atmosphere of the banquet suddenly chilled to subzero degrees.

Many of those who were from second-grade sects didn't know who this youth was standing before them. But what they could understand was that this person absolutely did not come to congratulate them, but instead to ruin the scene!

Who was this? He dared to force his way into the Seven Profound Valleys? But looking at the Saint Beast, this youth was definitely not common. Perhaps he came from some large family clan or sect. Many of those in the Seven Profound territory only knew that the greatest power was the Seven Profound Valleys – they didn't know the existence of Divine Phoenix Island. This wasn't surprising. After all, only those that stood at the top would be exposed to a greater world. Initially, Lin Ming hadn't known of Divine Phoenix Island's existence either.

Ouyang Boyan's expression was ugly. He wanted to smile, but eventually stopped trying. "You are not here to celebrate with this old man!"

Lin Ming held his spear down, and lazily traced a full moon on the white marble square. He chuckled, and then slowly and unhurriedly said, "Of course not. I'm here to take your life!"

With this sentence, the entire audience was shocked. Most of the Seven Profound Valleys disciples didn't know that Ouyang Boyan had enmity with Lin Ming. As for those second-grade sect individuals, they didn't even know what Lin Ming looked like, let alone something like that.

"What!?"

"Take Ouyang Boyan's life!? Did I hear wrong?"

No one was able to understand what was happening. This was the Seven Profound Valleys' domain, and someone dared threaten to take the life of a Seven Profound Valleys Elder? Were these words that a normal person would say?

Not just that, but this youth's cultivation was only at the late Houtian realm. Even though his momentum was formidable, just what would he able to do?

Even Ouyang Ming, who acknowledged Lin Ming's strength, also felt that Lin Ming was being naïve. With so many Acacia Faction Elders present, how could Lin Ming possibly kill someone in front of them? In fact, he probably wouldn't be able to defeat Ouyang Boyan.

Qin Ziya forced a smile.

Ultimately, it seemed that they couldn't escape this result…

Chapter 420 – Those Who Block My Path Will Die

Chapter 420 – Those Who Block My Path Will Die

…

…

…

“Take my life? Hahaha!” Ouyang Boyan richly laughed. “This old man is standing here. I want to see just how you will take my life!”

Lin Ming sneered, not responding. With a shake of the Purple Comet Spear, arcs of lightning began to flash atop the spearpoint!

As Lin Ming took a step at a time towards Ouyang Boyan, his momentum began to increase, solidifying to the limit!

“How presumptuous! Where do you think you are!?” At this time, a dragon-bearded man stepped forwards, holding a nine foot long staff in his hand. This dragon-bearded man came from a second-grade sect, and his talent was also decent. His cultivation was a half-step into the Xiantian realm. But because of his limited resources, had had been trapped at this stage for ten years and hadn’t been able to reach the Xiantian realm.

This time he came to request help from Ouyang Boyan. He had prepared a great number of gifts in order to infiltrate into the Acacia Faction and cultivate the Divine Acacia Power, hoping to find an opportunity to break through to the Xiantian realm.

Since the dragon-bearded man needed help from Ouyang Boyan, he would naturally raise his head at this time to show his utter loyalty.

He simply didn’t know who Lin Ming was, nor did he notice the pity in the eyes of Ouyang Ming, who was looking at him from behind.

However, the dragon-bearded man was not stupid. Since this youth came here on a phoenix, his strength possibly surpassed even his own. With a wave of his hand, three people that were standing behind him jumped forwards; their cultivations were at the peak Houtian realm.

They were all from the same sect. Today, they had all come to submit themselves to the Ouyang Family Clan.

“The four of us are going to attack him together. Don’t hold back, this fellow won’t be easy to deal with.” The dragon-bearded man said to others with a true essence sound transmission.

“Okay.”

The four of them had gone through many tribulations together, and already seamlessly understood each other and were able to coordinate well. They had an implicit faith and understanding in each others’ strength. If they attacked at the same time, rushing Lin Ming’s weak angles from four different directions, then it should be impossible for Lin Ming to block from so many attacks at once.

“Out of my way!”

Bang!!!

A terrifying air wave of pressure erupted. Lin Ming didn’t even bother to move – it was simply the massive momentum that was contained within him suddenly breaking out at once. A savage and violent true essence recklessly shot out, and an incomparably sharp and deadly storm lifted the marble tiles off the floor.

Puff!

All four of them spat out blood as they flew backwards, their bodies smashing into the floor and rolling back dozens of feet like gourds that had been kicked. Two of them even helplessly fell into the lake.

As for Lin Ming, he hadn't even moved at all!

The entire audience was petrified.

"What?" He defeated four peak Houtian masters with a single move? How is that possible?"

"A move? You think that Lin Ming actually made a move? I didn't even see it! He stood there, not moving at all. He only shouted 'out of my way', and all those people were sent flying backwards by his aura!" A Houtian realm Seven Profound Valleys disciple said. His strength was better so he was able to see what had happened much more clearly than these second-grade sect disciple.

"Lin Ming?" The second-grade sect disciples were startled, "What? That youth is Lin Ming? Which Lin Ming?"

"Don't speak such stupid nonsense. Naturally it is the one who became the champion of the last Seven Profound Valleys Total Faction Martial Meeting! That Lin Ming!"

With this remark, there was a series of gasps within the square and then silence. At this time, no one cared to ask why Lin Ming hadn't died. Instead, they were only baffled by his overwhelming strength.

Lin Ming was only 17 years old!!!

17 years old. Not only was his cultivation at the late Houtian realm, but his strength had reached such an abnormal degree that he was able to send four peak Houtian masters and even a half-step Xiantian master flying back, wounded! Now, the competition that these so-called talents had before was simply like little babies slapping each other – nothing but an unsightly event!

The second-grade sect martial artists felt like they were living a dream. This was a true top talent? A person like this really existed in this world?

The Fierce Flood Sect's Liu Xuan watched Lin Ming at the center of the square, his palms oozing sweat. He had grown up under the halo of a genius even since he was a baby, and his character had become naturally arrogant and proud. He believed that after stumbling into the cave mansion of a long-dead mysterious master of the South Horizon Region and obtaining a great lucky chance, that he himself would be able to enter the ranks of the top talents. But now, compared to Lin Ming, he was nothing but a joke.

He couldn't help but glance over at Ouyang Ming, and saw that his expression was also very perturbed.

Although Ouyang Ming hadn't thought that these four people would be able to threaten Lin Ming's life, there had still been four of them, and they were also skilled in combination attack techniques. At least they should have forced Lin Ming to expend some effort to deal with them. He never imagined that Lin Ming would only give a single shout, and those four would be sent flying backwards!

Lin Ming's talent was even more terrifying than it was a year and a half ago! A chill ran up Ouyang Ming's spine.

Lin Ming coldly glanced at everyone present. His voice contained a thick murderous intent as he said, "This is the last and final time I will show mercy. If anyone blocks my path again, then they have walked onto the path of death!"

All of the Seven Profound Valleys Elders' complexions completely changed. Most of the Elders present were at the early Xiantian realm, and there were even several that had just entered the early Xiantian realm a few years ago. A moment ago, they were able to see everything that had happened clearly. Although that dragon-bearded man and his companions were from a small sect and also had ordinary strength, their cultivations were still at least at the peak Houtian realm. If they were in Lin Ming's position, they wouldn't have been able to win like Lin Ming!

Facing the current Lin Ming, this caused them to give birth to the belief that they could not block his way!

Lin Ming gripped the Purple Comet Spear, walking forwards a step at a time. On the spearpoint, the power of thunder and fire flashed out!

Ouyang Boyan's complexion sank until it was able to leak water!

He finally realized the most important and dreadful truth. That was that Lin Ming had the ability to deal with him!

With every step that Lin Ming took forwards, his momentum became increasingly formidable!

Ouyang Boyan felt a heavy pressure weigh down on him. The current Lin Ming was like a Death God, and he was listening to the sounds of the netherworld slowly approach!

"You are dissolute! You really think that no one in my Acacia Faction will stop you!?"

Just now, a drum like voice sounded out. A white-robed old man flashed and instantly appeared on the square. He was the Acacia Faction Elder Ouyang Guang, and his cultivation was at the peak of the middle Xiantian realm!

This banquet was also a celebration of him taking a concubine. As one of the hosts of this banquet, how could he allow someone to ruin it like this?

Lin Ming calmly looked at Ouyang Guang. His voice was bone-chilling as he said, "You want to block my way?"

"What a joke. This is my Acacia Faction, it is not a place where you can be so rampant. You really think you are invincible within this world? How about you kill this old man first."

Lin Ming held the Purple Comet Spear horizontally in front of him, and indifferently said, "Those who block my path will die!"

Lin Ming already didn't have the tiniest bit of a favorable impression towards the Acacia Faction. Not to mention the actions of the Acacia Faction in the past, just this matter of Ouyang Boyan trying to deal with Qin Xingxuan, how could he have done so and suppressed Qin Ziya if not for the help of his connections through the Acacia Faction?

The Acacia Faction was a scourge upon the Seven Profound territory. All that the Acacia Faction produced were the lowest of scum. Lin Ming was not a bloodthirsty or vicious person, but in dealing with the scum from the Acacia Faction, he had no qualms about killing them at all.

"Truly an arrogant junior; you have no idea what it means to die! With your mere late Houtian realm cultivation you can roll over martial artists at your level, so you think no one in this world can defeat you. Today, this old man will let you experience what a Xiantian master's strength is like!"

Ouyang Guang gave a loud shout, and true essence erupted from his body. Purple hued true essence gushed out from his dantian. A Xiantian realm martial artist's dantian contained a cyclone of true essence; their true essence was much purer and thicker than a Houtian realm martial artist's.

A dazzling purple flame instantly condensed into a purple bone lance in Ouyang Guang's hand. From the body of this lance, ghostly cries were emitted.

This was the Purple Flame Bone Lance of the 'Divine Acacia Power'. Lin Ming had already seen this move many times. But compared to what he had seen before, the purple bone lance in Ouyang Guang's hand was much thicker and larger. Not just that, but the end was also shaped like a grim and ominous skull – it seemed incomparably fierce.

"Junior, prepare to die!"

Ouyang Guang threw out the bone lance in his hands. His target was Lin Ming's stomach. Although he didn't dare to kill Lin Ming, he absolutely wouldn't let him leave unscathed.

The ghostly skull lance was fast like lightning. A blurry shadow followed behind it, along with a long tail of purple flames. It cut through the air with the keening wail of ghosts, almost piercing through one's eardrums.

Lin Ming's expression was the same, and his eyes were cold. Azure true essence billowed around his body like flames, and one could clearly hear the sound of this incomparably sharp true essence splitting the air.

"Divine Demon Thunder Soul!"

Lin Ming thrust out his spear. Thunder howled. A thick arc of purple lightning mixed with a bright blood red bolt of lightning, twining together and forming a giant, revolving beam of lighting. This beam of lightning collided against the Purple Flame Bone Lance!

Against ghosts and devils, the power of thunder was absolute suppression!

After the Divine Demon Thunder Soul crashed into the Purple Flame Bone Lance, there was only a high pitched 'chi chi chi' sound. The Purple Flame Bone Lance was actually like a ball of snow that fell into a blazing furnace – it instantly melted away!

The power of thunder didn't diminish in the least. With the sound of rolling thunder, it impacted straight towards Ouyang Guang!

Ouyang Guang's eyes widened in surprise and shock. Everyone present was also amazed. Just how was this possible?

Everyone already expected that Ln Ming had the strength of a Xiantian realm martial artist. But he shouldn't have been able to so easily break apart Ouyang Guang's killing move!

"My power of thunder is especially capable at destroying ghosts and devils. Does Elder Ouyang not know even something as basic as this?"

Lin Ming’s voice contained a hint of ridicule. But, the attack in his hands didn’t slow at all. After the Divine Demon Thunder Soul was sent out, Lin Ming’s spear potential turned, the Fallen Star Flame erupted!

“10,000 Flames Burning World!”

First thunder, now flames. Lin Ming displayed the might of thunder and fire to the limit!

Ouyang Guang paled. He gave a loud shout, and the air around him distorted. The tiles underneath his feet were seared red by heat. He thrust his hands out like he was forming claws. A blood red light seemed to envelop his entire body.

“Blood Demon Claws!”

With a flash of blood colored light, a crimson blood claw shot out. This was a martial skill from the sixth layer of the ‘Divine Acacia Power’. It contained over 90% of Ouyang Guang’s true strength!

Lin Ming smiled. The ‘Divine Acacia Power’ was originally martial arts from the demonic path. In the past, Zhang Guanyu’s Life Severing Dead Bone Blade, Ouyang Dihua’s Soul Severing Blood Skull, Ouyang Zifeng’s Purple Flame Bone Lance, and even the current Ouyang Guang’s Blood Demon Claws – all of them were the same school of martial arts. With each attack, it consumed one’s own blood vitality. Thus, those who cultivated these skills had to double cultivate and suck dry the Primordial Yin energy of women in order to make up for their own lost energy.

To use this cultivation method against someone like Lin Ming, well, that could only be considered their bad luck.

“Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder!”

Within Lin Ming’s hand, the light of thunder began to turn, becoming a crimson blood colored python of electricity. The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder was born to suck dry blood essence!

Kacha!

The crimson python opened its great jaws and directly chomped down on the Blood Demon Claws, instantly swallowing it!

What!!??

Ouyang Guang was unable to believe what had happened in front of his own eyes.

However, he no longer had time to even feel dismay. The purple flames and thunder had already arrived in front of him!

Ouyang Guang took out a longsword and slashed down!

Bang!

After being weakened twice, the python of lightning was chopped apart by Ouyang Guang's sword. However, the Fallen Star Flame made a solid strike against Ouyang Guang's bodily true essence protection.

The Fallen Star Flame had a unique ability to corrode anything it touched. It immediately ripped open dozens of tiny gaps in Ouyang Guang's bodily true essence protection, and the full power of that corrosive flame sunk into Ouyang Guang's meridians. Ouyang Guang immediately shook, paled, and bled from his nose!

As the audience saw this, every martial artist fell silent. The peak of the middle Xiantian realm Ouyang Guang had already been injured so heavily after just a few rounds of battle!?

Chapter 421 – Sweeping All Away

Chapter 421 – Sweeping All Away

…

…

…

Lin Ming's strength had already exceeded the scope of understanding of every martial artist present. All of the young heroic elites present that thought to display their skills during this banquet competition suddenly realized that compared to Lin Ming, they were no more than little ants crawling around.

Lin Ming was younger than them, and the difference in their strength was like the heavens and earth; how could they still live knowing this?

At this time in the center of the square, the Acacia Faction Elder Ouyang Guang was bleeding from his nose, and his face was red all over. Previously he said that he would show Lin Ming just how strong a Xiantian realm master was, but now, in just a few moves, he had been injured to the point of bleeding from his nose.

In front of a group of juniors, Ouyang Guang had disgracefully lost!

Lin Ming's spear shook, and the Purple Comet Spear was pointed directly towards Ouyang Guang's head. The spearpoint began to twinkle with lightning!

Ouyang Guang's face turned liver-red, this Lin Ming had gone too far!

For someone as noble and respected as Ouyang Guang, what he most valued was his face. But now, he was actually being provoked by a junior who was pointing a spear at his face!

And on top of that, what was most atrocious was that he couldn't stop Lin Ming. If he tried to attack him again, the result would be the same!

This was slapping him on the face, this was simply slapping him again and again and again on the face!

"Good! Very good!" Ouyang Guang trembled with rage, "What are you all doing standing around like stunned idiots! Are you planning on letting this rampant boy strut around however he wants!?"

At this time, Ouyang Guang no longer cared about what face he had left. He waved his hand, calling all the Acacia Faction Elders to join together.

At this time, The Acacia Faction's pride had already been demolished by Lin Ming. If they didn't brace themselves and act together, then maybe their Acacia Faction might not even have the face to stay in the Seven Profound territory anymore.

There were five Acacia Faction Elders that came to attend this banquet celebration. Besides Ouyang Guang and Ouyang Boyan, the rest of them were at the early Xiantian realm.

For five Elders to surround and besiege a junior, let alone the Acacia Faction disciples, even the martial artists from other small sects felt their faces burn with shame.

....

Ouyang Ming looked at the scene in the center of the square and felt tense. He could no longer watch this. "Send a sound transmission to the Sovereign. Have the Sovereign leave seclusion! Or else our Acacia Faction will be demolished by Lin Ming!"

As Ouyang Ming helplessly spoke, he was already completely numb to Lin Ming. A year and a half ago, he had seen the early Pulse Condensation period Lin Ming defeat the peak Pulse Condensation period Jiang Baoyun. Although this was undoubtedly amazing, he could still accept this reality.

Just a moment ago, with just a cultivation at the late Houtian realm, he had managed to defeat the middle Xiantian realm Ouyang Guang. This was simply unbelievable.

Now, he would resist the combined strength of five Great Elders by himself!

‘Lin Ming, oh Lin Ming, just how much will you rampage until you are willing to give up?’

……………………

“Soul Severing Blood Skull!”

Within the square, Ouyang Boyan had also joined the battle. With a single move of this Soul Severing Blood Skull, half the square was instantly covered with brilliant purple flames.

Behind Ouyang Boyan, two newly promoted Acacia Faction Elders used Life Severing Bone Blades, blocking off all directions that Lin Ming could dodge in!

Soon after, Ouyang Guang used the Purple Flame Bone Lance once more. The Purple Flame Bone Lance and Ouyang Boyan’s Soul Severing Blood Skull fused together, creating an overwhelming blood wave that swept down from the sky!

This blood wave was monstrous, it was as if the void itself were tearing apart. The five Elders had gone all out in their attacks!

At this moment, they had thrown away any face they had left. For this, they were prepared to make any sacrifice. If they couldn’t defeat Lin Ming here, their Acacia Faction would never be able to walk out in the light of day!

With the five Xiantian Elders joining their attacks together, an incomparably formidable power was created. The martial artists present could only feel their blood essence swell up, as if their blood itself was being attracted towards the center of the stage and wanted to break out of their bodies. This was an extremely discomforting feeling!

Many martial artists couldn’t help but conjure up all the true essence of their body to resist the deadly corrosive effect that the aura of this attack was having on their blood and soul.

“It’s too strong!”

“Truly worthy of being a joint attack from five great Xiantian Elders. If just the aura itself is so strong, how could anyone possibly defend against this!?”

Facing this turbulent attack that was like the raging waves of the sea, Lin Ming’s expression sank.

Tempering Marrow true essence erupted!

On the Purple Comet Spear, the Divine Demon Thunder Soul and Fallen Star Flame Flame Essence madly howled. A series of popping sounds exploded from within Lin Ming’s body. Behind Lin Ming, a solid, lifelike phantom of an Azure Dragon appeared. Flames converged, thunder roared!

Berserk true essence erupted like a volcano!

Thunderfire Annihilation!

Bang!!

Lin Ming thrust out his spear, and a terrifying power of thunder and fire exploded out, echoing in the air. In that instant, it seemed as if the world itself had lost all color!

A blinding light obscured the vision of everyone present. In that moment, the thunderous sound left everyone deaf. The power of thunder and fire surged out like a massive tsunami, and the waters of the lake raised into rough waves dozens of feet high, causing all the nearby pavilions to crash down; every banquet table was overturned! Every nearby martial artists was sent flying back! And some of them who were weaker vomited blood and then crashed onto the floor, unconscious.

The competition square was located on the main island, thus, most of the disciples present were from the Acacia Faction. That they had to bear the full brunt of this attack was just their bad luck. In comparison, the martial artists from small sects had an insufficient status and were stationed on the nearby islands. They all began to count their lucky stars for being able to avoid this catastrophe.

Plop! Plop! Plop! Plop!

Dozens of Acacia Faction disciples that had been sent flying backwards landed in the lake. The entire island was in a state of absolute chaos!

After the blinding flash of light passed, the entire square was in confusion. In the center of the square, there were only three individuals left standing. Lin Ming, Ouyang Boyan, and Ouyang Guang.

As for the other three early Xiantian realm Acacia Faction Elders, their bodies were lying still on the ground, on the verge of death.

With the might of his spear, Lin Ming had struck down three great Xiantian Elders!

As the martial artists that had their bearings saw this, they sucked in a breath of cold air. Qin Ziya was shocked, and even Qin Xingxuan behind him had the same expression plastered on her face. She knew that her Lin Ming was extremely strong, but she never imagined that it would be to such a terrifying degree. No wonder Lin Ming had dared to single-handedly storm the gates of the Seven Profound Valleys' Acacia Faction.

Lin Ming gripped the Purple Comet Spear, the spear pointed towards the ground. His long hair was blown up by the waves of true essence, recklessly floating in the wind. At this time, his appearance was no different from that of a God of War .

As Ouyang Guang faced Lin Ming, he unconsciously took several steps back. His lips trembled, and a deep fear arose from his scattered mind.

Was this really strength that a human could possess? At 17 years of age, this Lin Ming had resisted a combined attack from five Xiantian Elders! Not only that, but three of them had been severely injured!

“Die!” Lin Ming didn’t intend to give any of them a chance to catch their breath. His feet trod the ground, and he shot forwards, his spear stabbing towards Ouyang Boyan!

The normally cold and gloomy-looking Ouyang Boyan now only had an expression of utter fear on his face. He realized that if he was unlucky today, he might really die here!

Under the threat of imminent death, Ouyang Boyan punched himself in the chest, forcing out a mouthful of blood and then spraying it on his own treasure sword. The originally blue treasure sword had turned an eerie blood red after absorbing the blood.

This was a move from the ‘Divine Acacia Power’ that damaged one’s cultivation and required the steep price of blood essence to use! Once he used it, it would be difficult to recover the damage to his origin energy, and it would take at least a year to recover. As for his blood essence, that was forever lost.

Ouyang Boyan did not have Vermillion Bird blood essence, nor did he have the secret techniques of Divine Phoenix Island to transplant blood essence. Once he lost blood essence, he would never be able to recover it!

After he used a move that cost him a part of his life and cultivation, Ouyang Boyan’s expression was fierce and grim. His face was a deep, vivid red, as if he had been possessed by a demon.

Ouyang Boyan already hated Lin Ming to the marrow of his bones, he wished to kill him as quickly as possible!

“Lin Ming, you die here!”

A sword slashed down. The sword blade became increasingly bright red, as if it were dripping fresh blood. Horrifying screams filled the air. Sword energy howled, and monstrous waves of blood covered the skies!

Ca!

Ouyang Boyan stabbed out with his sword. The crimson sword formed a crimson storm. The marble tiles under his feet once again shattered, flying into the sky. Wind swirled around the sword, creating a long red line that directly shot towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming sneered. The Divine Demon Steel Needle fused into the Purple Comet Spear. Spear and thunder became one, arcs of lightning crazily sizzled!

“Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder!”

Lin Ming thrust out his spear, and his entire body emitted explosive crackling sounds. The Purple Comet Spear was enveloped in a thick red electric python. It howled as it struck the crimson storm.

Hong hong hong!

A series of explosions split the air. The crimson storm was constantly being torn apart and shredded by the power of thunder. At the same time, the red electric python also melted. Ouyang Boyan had burned his own blood essence as the price to make this desperate attack, and he was actually able to evenly match with Lin Ming!

“Mm?”

Lin Ming was a bit surprised. Immediately, he turned his spear and the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder instantly shrank into the Divine Demon Steel Needle. It found an opening and pierced into the crimson blood storm!

As Lin Ming and Ouyang Boyan were locked in a desperate struggle, they didn't have much strength left over to do much else. The scarlet blood storm that managed to approach Lin Ming was burnt away to nothing by the raging power of the Fallen Star Flame.

Meanwhile, the Divine Demon Steel Needle had reached Ouyang Boyan's front!

As Ouyang Boyan saw a small flash of light, his heart was incomparably shocked. He revolved his protective true essence to the limit, and countless purple flames emerged from his body, covering him.

At this point, the purple and red Divine Demon Steel Needle mercilessly stabbed into the purple flames. With a small sizzle of electricity, it penetrated through the protective purple flames!

In that moment, Ouyang Boyan felt like his spirit had left his body; he could clearly feel the breath of death approaching him!

His bodily true essence protection was able to resist for just a moment. Then it was completely burnt away and disappeared by the power of thunder. In this critical moment, Ouyang Boyan yelled out, and reached out a hand to grab the Divine Demon Steel Needle.

"Ahhhh!"

As Ouyang Boyan stretched out his left hand and grabbed the Divine Demon Steel Needle, his left hand was instantly charred black, and the blood and energy within his arm were rapidly absorbed by the Divine Demon Thunder Soul through his meridians. In that instant, Ouyang Boyan's left arm had withered down to nothing.

Ouyang Boyan's eyes filled with blood. Without hesitation, he sliced off his own left arm. Blood spurted out.

Pa!

A shriveled arm fell onto the floor like a slab of overly cured bacon.

As everyone on the island saw this, they fell into absolute silence.

A lost arm!

Ouyang Boyan was disabled!

A severe wound and a disability were two entirely different concepts. In many cases, to a martial artist, when their arm was cut off it wasn't much different than killing them!

Before this, many of those present had subconsciously thought there would be a little bit of drama and a nice play before matters settled. Although Lin Ming would be able to show off his strength, in the end he wouldn't be able to do much to harm Ouyang Boyan. But now, it seemed as if this banquet celebration was about to become a battlefield of spilled blood!

Lin Ming coldly sneered. In order to stop his blood essence from leaving his body, Ouyang Boyan had cut off his own arm. These Acacia Faction martial artists were truly decisive when it concerned their survival.

"But how will you defend against my next attack?

Lin Ming flexed his fingers. The Divine Demon Steel Needle that had forced Ouyang Boyan to cut off his own arm appeared once again. With a flick of his fingers, it rushed towards Ouyang Boyan!

At this time, Ouyang Boyan's hair was disheveled. His left arm was gone, and he was charred all over and dripping with blood. As he saw the Divine Demon Steel Needle approach in his own eyes once again, his eyes began to glaze over with the color of dying despair.

As long as this needle pierced him, he would die!

At this moment, a loud shout rolled out like thunder, "Stop!"

Chapter 422 – Acacia Sovereign Ouyang

Chapter 422 – Acacia Sovereign Ouyang

…

…

…

At this moment, a loud shout rolled out like thunder, “Stop!”

Everyone in the square followed the source of the loud voice. One thousand feet away, they could see a white-clothed man quickly closing in at an extreme speed. Even though he was 1000 feet away, he was able to cross a hundred feet in an instant. All of the Acacia Faction disciples were immediately overjoyed.

“It’s the Sovereign! The Sovereign has come!”

The Acacia Faction’s Sovereign was Ouyang Shenxiu. His cultivation was at the extreme Xiantian realm. Within all of the Xiantian masters of the Seven Profound Valleys, his strength was ranked in the top four.

However, Lin Ming didn’t care about Ouyang Shenxiu’s warning; he still drove the Divine Demon Thunder Soul towards Ouyang Boyan for the killing blow!

“Insolence!”

Ouyang Shenxiu was still a few hundred feet away. It wouldn’t be easy for him to stop this Divine Demon Steel Needle.

“Go!”

Ouyang Shenxiu slashed out with his sword and a red sword energy accurately struck the Divine Demon Steel Needle. However, this move was too hasty, and it was too far away. Although the Divine Demon Steel Needle fiercely trembled, a massive power of thunder still fell onto Ouyang Boyan's body like a typhoon.

In the blink of an eye, the fragile true essence that protected Ouyang Boyan was torn to shreds. He gave a pitiful scream, and then his body was tossed high into the air. His hair was completely singed off, and he crashed back down like a pheasant that had been shot, his entire body covered in blood.

Ouyang Boyan's body twitched, and then he vomited out a large pool of blood. He had already lost a great deal of energy, and now there was almost nothing left.

As Ouyang Shenxiu arrived at the square, his saw Ouyang Boyan's pitiful state and his complexion sunk. He had warned in advance, but Lin Ming had still turned a deaf ear and cast down a heavy-handed attack!

Pu! Pu!

Closely following behind Ouyang Shenxiu were two white-clothed men. They were both disciples that Ouyang Shenxiu had received many years ago. They had just broken through to the early Xiantian realm about 10 years ago, and could be considered among the most shallow and weak of Elders.

As one of them saw Ouyang Boyan's current state, his eyes turned red. He was someone who shared a father and mother with Ouyang Boyan, his blood brother, Ouyang Boxu. He instantly appeared at Ouyang Boyan's side and fed him some life maintaining pills. As Ouyang Boxu stood up, his eyes were filled with a murderous intent, no different from a raging vicious beast.

"Lin Ming! I'll kill you!"

Ouyang Boxu raised his sword and was about to rush forwards when Ouyang Shenxiu coldly snorted and said, "Draw back!"

Ouyang Boxu immediately paled. He grit his teeth and drew back a single step. But, his eyes still flashed with fury and bone-deep loathing as he kept them glued to Lin Ming.

…………..

"Lin Ming, you've returned!"

Ouyang Shenxiu indifferently looked at Lin Ming. During the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction Martial Meeting, Ouyang Shenxiu had once casually met with Lin Ming. He had even invited Lin Ming to join the Acacia Faction, but had eventually let it go.

"Sovereign Ouyang." Lin Ming said as he faced Ouyang Shenxiu. His expression was the same.

Lin Ming did not fear Ouyang Shenxiu. He knew that sooner or later this old man would jump out of the woodworks; he was the only enemy here that he needed to take seriously.

Before this old man appeared, Lin Ming was trying to reserve as much strength as he could. He would never have used Thunderfire Annihilation a moment ago if he didn't have to fend off the combined attack of five Elders. But even though he had used that move, he had only used 30% of its total strength. There was still 70% of the power of thunder and fire left within the Heretical God Seed, and it was also recovering at a breakneck pace.

"Lin Ming, the Seven Profound Valleys has been good to you. You studied at Sky Fortune Kingdom's Seven Profound Martial House, and afterwards you became champion of the Total Faction Martial Meeting. The Seven Profound Valleys even granted you a Heaven Opening Pill. But you still forced your way into the Seven Profound Valleys and severely wounded and crippled Elders of my Acacia Faction. Just what is your reasoning behind this?"

"Has been good to me?" Lin Ming coldly sneered. "The Seven Profound Valleys plundered the martial cultivation resources of Sky Fortune Kingdom, making it so that the martial artists of Sky Fortune Kingdom wouldn't have resources available to them. To them, even breaking through to the Pulse Condensation period is something they can only vainly aspire towards. The Seven Profound Martial Houses are just a form of returning some of the resources that you lot have plundered, and the so-called fostering talents is so that the Seven Profound Valleys can use them for themselves. Is it some form of graciousness? Hardly.”

“A year and a half ago, I was of great value to the Seven Profound Valleys, so the Seven Profound Valleys naturally treated me well. But, after the Seven Profound Valleys heard news of my death, Ouyang Boyan finally decided to take revenge for personal grudges between us. He repeatedly acted and plotted against Qin Xingxuan, the Qin Family, Lin Family, and everyone else involved with me. Weren’t these deeds all done through the connections of your Ouyang Family Clan? When I left the Seven Profound Valleys, Divine Phoenix Island already paid a high enough price for me. I no longer owe the Seven Profound Valleys anything. The reason that I came here today is to demand that justice be served. Ouyang Boyan must die!”

Ouyang Shenxiu deeply frowned. He had rushed to the scene and yet Lin Ming had let out this raving rant in front of him. If he allowed Lin Ming to kill Ouyang Boyan here, then how would he be able to establish himself in the martial arts world?

“This old man is not clear about what matters you speak of!” Ouyang Shenxiu was not lying. As a top figure of the Seven Profound Valleys, he naturally wouldn’t concern himself over these minor matters. But, he believed that Lin Ming was mostly speaking the truth, and he also had a certain understanding of Ouyang Boyan’s character. Someone like him could absolutely do what Lin Ming had described.

“Even if what you said is true, isn’t that young girl behind you Miss Qin? Even if Ouyang Boyan had tried to harm her, she is safe and sound. Yet you actually cut off Ouyang Boyan’s arm and severely wounded him, completely wasting away his road of martial arts! Haven’t you just gone too far?”

“Haha!” Lin Ming chuckled. “Safe and sound? What a well said ‘safe and sound’! By holding the lives of the Qin Family in his hands, Ouyang Boyan forced Qin Xingxuan to go to Blood Demon Island for over a month! When I arrived there, Qin Xingxuan’s body had already been exhausted of all the blood essence she had, and her life was at its end. If it wasn't for me using miracle medicine that is sufficient to create several Revolving Core masters, then she would have already turned to ashes. And that is what you call 'safe and sound'?"

Lin Ming's words caused the entire audience to gasp in shock. Sufficient miracle medicine to create several Revolving Core masters?

Heavens!

If what Lin Ming said was true, then using such amazing medicine that could create several Revolving Core masters on a Pulse Condensation period junior was simply a careless waste of heaven's treasures!

Ouyang Shenxiu's lips twitched. Even he had distant hopes to one day step into the Revolving Core realm. But these were only hopes, and were in reality an unachievable dream. In this generation of Seven Profound Valleys Elders and Sovereigns, only the Sword Faction Sovereign Jiang Wuji had a slim chance to break into the Revolving Core realm, but, it was more likely that he would fail.

The one with the greatest hopes of stepping into the Revolving Core realm was currently the Sword Faction's chief disciple, Jiang Baoyun.

Ouyang Shenxiu couldn't help but ask Ouyang Guang a question through a true essence sound transmission, "How strong is Lin Ming?"

Ouyang Guang thought deeply about this for a moment and then responded, "He should be equal to a late Xiantian realm master. Just a moment ago, me, Ouyang Boyan, and three other Elders collaborated in a joint attack on him, but we were actually defeated in a single move. And that move should also be Lin Ming's final decisive ability. "

"Late Xiantian realm…" Ouyang Shenxiu's complexion sank. Ouyang Guang's strength was already at the peak of the middle Xiantian realm. Yet even though four other Elders had joined forces with him and combined their attacks, they were defeated by Lin Ming's counterattack. Lin Ming's strength had absolutely reached at least the late Xiantian realm!

A 17 year old with strength at the late Xiantian realm! That was simply an unimaginable dream! Within the Seven Profound Valleys, there were nearly 100 Xiantian masters, and over half of them were stranded at the early Xiantian realm. 20 to 30 were at the middle Xiantian realm, and as for those at the late Xiantian realm or extreme Xiantian realm, there were only a mere handful of Elders. In fact, there weren't really more late Xiantian realm masters than there were extreme Xiantian masters. The Acacia Faction only had two Vice Sovereigns that had been able to reach the late Xiantian realm. They had gone to participate in the South Sea war and still hadn't returned.

Thus, one could see just how rare the late Xiantian realm was.

If it were possible, Ouyang Shenxiu wouldn't want to make Lin Ming his enemy. But now he was unable to back down. He had ridden the tiger, and there was no disembarking from this wild ride. If someone were freely allowed to sweep away his Acacia Faction at such an important occasion without any punishment, then how could his Acacia Faction further establish themselves in the future?

Ouyang Shenxiu grit his teeth and said, "Since that's the case, Ouyang Boyan has already paid a sufficient price. Relinquish this matter and I will no longer pursue it. But, since you forced your way into my Acacia Faction's greatest peak and also injured so many Elders and disciples, I have no choice but to punish you! Take my three moves. If you can take my three moves, then regardless of whether you live or die, I will consider everything settled."

"Relinquish this matter and you will no longer pursue it?" Lin Ming's eyebrows rose and then he sneered. "I am the one that Ouyang Boyan had tried to deal with, just what qualifications do you have to say that you will no longer pursue anything at all? Today, I will take Ouyang Boyan's life! As for anyone who tries to stop me, from now on they will only be my mortal enemy!"

"Lin Ming!" Ouyang Shenxiu's complexion was extremely ugly. He had already taken a step back and tried to resolve matters. Although he had said regardless of life or death, the truth was that he didn't dare to kill Lin Ming. The most he would do was severely wound him. As long as Lin Ming was just injured, he would be fine after resting up. This matter would be settled, and he would also gain face for being able to resolve matters like this. But, he hadn't expected that Lin Ming would be contemptuous and try to bully others like so. This caused Ouyang Shenxiu to burn with anger.

"Lin Ming, do you really think that there is no one in my Acacia Faction that can stop you!? Good! I had originally planned to just give you a light little spanking, but since you insist on being so arrogant and pushing things beyond your limits, then today I will have to personally see whether or not you can take Boyan's life!!"

As Ouyang Shenxiu finished speaking, he took a fierce step forwards. His aura erupted, and waves of roiling blood surged out, overwhelming the world!

Whether or it was the Elders or disciples, everyone nearby was forced back by this suppressive aura.

There were already those that had learned their lesson. The lower level disciples had already experienced this before, and besides several Great Elders, all the other disciples launched their fastest movement techniques to flee from the main island to avoid being collateral damage.

Even Ouyang Ming was forced back and retreated all the way to the edge of the main island. As for the proud Liu Xuan from the Fierce Flood Sect, he naturally couldn't lose face by running. He wanted to stay on the main island, but after looking at the Ouyang Shenxiu's intimidating aura, he grit his teeth and returned to a pavilion that floated on the water. The shockwaves of Lin Ming's Thunderfire Annihilation had already forced him to use every bit of his strength to just barely be able to resist it. Now, in the face of this even higher level battle, Liu Xuan realized that he didn't have the qualifications to stand nearby.

"Lin Ming, you are far too unruly, not respecting others and acting like you can dominate anyone you cross. Even if you have the backing of Divine Phoenix Island, I will still teach you a lesson. In these three moves, I will not hold back. Whether you live or die, that will be the price that you pay!

Lin Ming held the spear horizontally in his hands, silent. His eyes were like the stars in the deep night sky – bright and calm. However, at this time Lin Ming was actually feeling the blood boiling within his body; his fighting spirit was brimming over!

Extreme Xiantian!

Not too long ago, he had believed that those at the extreme Xiantian realm were top masters. Shi Zongtian, Ouyang Shenxiu, Jiang Wuji, which one of these characters weren't gods among men that could shake the entire Seven Profound territory with but a single word!?

A year and a half ago, facing these characters, he could only vainly look up at them. But now, Lin Ming was standing right in front of an extreme Xiantian master, ready to fight!

When an ant became a fierce tiger, he would look back on the road he walked and inevitably feel vibrant and ambitious after seeing just how far he had come.

“In this battle, by exchanging blows with an extreme Xiantian master, I'll be able to find out just what martial arts realm a 65% Tempering Marrow boundary can bring me to!”

Chapter 423 – Purple Flame Crystal Conversion

Chapter 423 – Purple Flame Crystal Conversion

…

…

…

Ouyang Shenxiu stood in the center of the square, coldly looking at Lin Ming. It was unknown when, but a light black fog began to cover his face, making it difficult for others to see him. In this black fog, there was only a pair of vibrant red eyes that shined through. A cold light continuously flashed out from these eyes, causing anyone who dared to glance at them to feel a deep despairing fear.

Ka ka ka!

Ouyang Shenxiu gripped his fists together, and a purple flame ignited on his hands; this was similar to the Purple Flame Bone Lance that Ouyang Guang had used earlier.

“What is going on? Sovereign Ouyang is not using a sword?”

On the various lake islands, all the Acacia Faction disciples were surprised as they spoke. Those of the Acacia Faction used a sword. If a sword user were to use their fists, their power would naturally weaken by a great deal.

In conclusion, Ouyang Shenxiu still feared Divine Phoenix Island. Since he clearly knew that he couldn’t kill Lin Ming without provoking a calamity upon himself, he might as well not use his sword and only use his fists and sword fingers. Everyone could see this modest and humble act.

If he easily defeated Lin Ming without using his sword, he would be able to display his own style and aura as a master. No one would say that he was a senior that was bullying the weak and the young, but instead would say the his strength was vast and fathomless.

This was Ouyang Shenxiu's plan. If he were to defeat Lin Ming by creating a big ruckus and using an overwhelming momentum, he would lose face even if he won.

On a small island, another Acacia Faction disciple blankly stared at the disciple who had just spoken, "What do you know. Sovereign Ouyang is going easy on Lin Ming, this is the Sovereign's grace. Even in this situation, he is still staying his hand. I can only hope that Lin Ming knows what's good for him and doesn't ignore this kindness, otherwise the Sovereign will teach him a harsh lesson."

"So it's like this! The Sovereign is indeed great."

All the lower level disciples couldn't help but compliment and praise the Sovereign. Within the entire Acacia Faction, there was only a single person who had practiced the 'Divine Acacia Power' to the limit of the seventh layer. To all the disciples of the Acacia Faction, Ouyang Shenxiu was no different than a god.

"You won't draw your sword?" Lin Ming asked with a smile.

Ouyang Shenxiu sneered. Although his swordless strength was lacking, his sword fingers were still far more than enough. If Lin Ming thought that he would be able to take matters lightly just because he wasn't using a sword, then he would be sorely mistaken.

10,000 Shadow Fingers!

Ouyang Shenxiu flicked his fingers, and thousands upon thousands of purple beams shot out from his hands like a violent storm of purple rain.

Lin Ming's spear shook, and his entire skeleton began to emit crackling noises; he used 30% of his Tempering Marrow true essence.

10,000 Flames Burning World!

Hoh!

A raging inferno of fire swept out. A gale of wind swept up Lin Ming's long hair, scattering it in the wind. The fiery conflagration smashed into the purple beams of light, and with explosive 'ka ka ka' sounds, the flames and purple lights began to melt together, shattering against each other!

Ouyang Shenxiu's sword fingers issued a sharp whistling sound. Lin Ming stood against this strength, and his Tempering Marrow true essence erupted with 50% force. The might of the spear – irresistible!

The sword fingers were suddenly torn apart by the flames.

"Mm?" Ouyang Shenxiu frowned. The area where their energies were colliding was becoming increasingly intense!

Xiu!

An azure true essence that seemed to devour all light shot out. Lin Ming's spear shook, and the phantom of an Azure Dragon appeared behind him; his spear thrust straight towards Ouyang Shenxiu's chest.

Explosions filled the air like rolling thunder.

The power of this spear erupted. 10,000 vibrating threads of true essence locked down the void. Ouyang Shenxiu only felt a sudden tightening of the space around him, and a strong oppressive sense as his aura began to distort under this pressure.

As Ouyang Shenxiu saw the shining spearpoint stabbing towards his chest, his expression finally changed. He waved his hand, and a deep red light condensed in his hands, gradually manifesting into a four foot long sword.

Peng!

Ouyang Shenxiu’s sword cut down on Lin Ming’s spearpoint! When a sword and spear collided, the sword would always be at a disadvantage!

Lin Ming’s lips panned up in a dark grin; the complete strength of Tempering Marrow opened!

The violent and tempered power of thunder and fire mixed with the complete Tempering Marrow true essence, exploding like a volcano.

Peng!

Sword and spear crossed. Ouyang Shenxiu felt as if his sword had cut across a mountain. A chaotic and uncontrollable flux of energy broke into his body, causing his blood to stop. His body suddenly shook, and he was forced to soar backwards and into the air by Lin Ming’s unstoppable spear potential.

Lin Ming’s attack was extremely quick, but Ouyang Shenxiu’s retreat had also been extremely quick. To the casual observer, it seemed as if Lin Ming’s spear had sent Ouyang Shenxiu flying backwards!

Lin Ming’s spear shot towards Ouyang Shenxiu in the sky. Ouyang Shenxiu’s blood red eyes shot open.

Ahhh –

“Break for me!”

Ouyang Shenxiu gave a loud shot, and purple flames broke forth from his entire body. This was the eruption of an extreme Xiantian master’s true strength. Under the impact of this strong force, Lin Ming’s offensive finally disintegrated!

As Lin Ming flew through the air, he finally stopped, his toes pointing towards the ground. Like a feather, he gently floated onto the square, his spear still pointed at Ouyang Shenxiu in the sky.

The entire audience fell into silence. All of the Acacia Faction disciples that had been speaking so highly of Ouyang Shenxiu shut up.

Ouyang Shenxiu had been forced to fly away by a spear!

“Lin Ming’s strength is equal to that of Ouyang Shenxiu?”

A second-grade sect’s Elder said, stunned. Although it had seemed like Lin Ming had suppressed Ouyang Shenxiu with his attack, the truth was that Ouyang Shenxiu had taken great care to not use a weapon, and also held back in his attack. Thus, this was the result, and that was why to this second-grade sect Elder, it seemed as if Lin Ming’s strength was almost equal to that of Ouyang Shenxiu.

“How could that be possible? Sovereign Ouyang used less than half his strength in that last move!” An Acacia Faction disciple stubbornly said. In their eyes, Ouyang Shenxiu was an invincible existence. “Just wait to see our Sovereign use the seventh layer of the ‘Divine Acacia Power’. The world itself will change. This Lin Ming boy won’t be able to block it!”

“Humph! Let alone Lin Ming, even if Jiang Wuji came here himself he would still have three points of fear!”

The Acacia Faction disciples all held their breath as they spoke. But, the disciples of the smaller sects didn’t quite believe this; it was obvious from their eyes that were filled with suspicious.

At this time on the square, Lin Ming gave off a feeling like he was an ocean, an unfathomable and inestimable force. Perhaps Ouyang Shenxiu’s seventh layer of the ‘Divine Acacia Power’ was incomparable in power, but who knew what other secret cards Lin Ming had hidden up his sleeve?

Since he had the confidence to force his way into the Seven Profound Valleys and take Ouyang Boyan’s life, his strength might even be beyond this!

Ouyang Shenxiu was deeply ashamed. Before, he had only used his sword fingers, but not only was he not able to suppress Lin Ming in the first move, but he was actually forced by Lin Ming to use his sword and even forced to retreat into the air.

This boy's strength was at least equal to someone at the top of the late Xiantian realm. It was even possible…

As Ouyang Shenxiu thought this, his expression changed.

That was simply impossible!

A late Houtian realm martial artist could have strength equal to an extreme Xiantian martial artist?

He couldn't accept this conclusion. His own cultivation was at the extreme Xiantian realm. If a late Houtian boy were to have the same level of strength as him, then that would simply be too pitiful to bear! He could not accept this!

Regardless of how strong Lin Ming was, it was true that when he was fighting Ouyang Guang and his group, he had still been hiding his strength!

Ouyang Shenxiu's eyes were brilliant as he stared at Lin Ming. Before, he had said that after three moves, he would drop all matters regardless of life or death. But, if he couldn't even manage to harm a single hair on Lin Ming after three moves, and was also forced back because of a counterattack, he would completely lose any face he had.

This boy!

Ouyang Shenxiu's eyes gradually turned ice cold. He extended his longsword and then gave a loud shout. With a whistling sound, Ouyang Shenxiu's longsword suddenly kindled to life with purple flames. A moment later, these purple flames shrank, manifesting into reality and attaching onto the sword. These purple flames turned into a thin layer of purple crystal. This sword had become an amethyst blade.

“That’s the Purple Flame Crystal Conversion!” An Acacia Faction disciple shouted from a small island.

The Purple Flame Crystal Conversion was a magic technique that was only found within the seventh layer of the ‘Divine Acacia Power’. Once one cultivated the ‘Divine Acacia Power’ to the seventh layer, they would have long lasting youth, and their Yang essence wouldn’t dissipate. Although it was impossible to extend one’s life beyond what was allowed by their cultivation, just that fact that their Yang essence wouldn’t fade was already a great temptation for many Acacia Faction disciples.

Currently, within the entire Acacia Faction, only Ouyang Shenxiu had cultivated the ‘Divine Acacia Power’ to the peak of the seventh layer. This was also the reason that Ouyang Shenxiu, although he was 300 to 400 years old, still appeared to resemble an attractive middle-aged man.

“The Sovereign used the Purple Flame Crystal Conversion from the seventh layer of the ‘Divine Acacia Power’ cultivation method.”

As this amethyst sword appeared, many Acacia Faction disciples felt proud and happy. When Ouyang Shenxiu had been pushed back by Lin Ming a moment ago, they had almost fallen into despair.

“Haha, the Sovereign is finally serious!”

“Let’s see just how this boy will block the Purple Flame Crystal Conversion this time!”

Once Ouyang Shenxiu used the seventh layer of the ‘Divine Acacia Power’, that was his message that he would no longer use a light hand.

Lin Ming slightly narrowed his eyes. As he looked at the amethyst sword in Ouyang Shenxiu’s hand, he was able to see that the purple flames’ dark Yin energy had disappeared, and instead turned into pure energy.

“The highest level of the ‘Divine Acacia Power’ can force the dark Yin energy to return to its natural state? This cultivation method also has a few good points.”

Lin Ming held the Purple Come Spear flat, and readied himself to completely invest everything he had in this battle. Before this, he had repeatedly saved his strength, and it was all for this moment. Lin Ming’s power was very explosive, but it was simply unable to last for an extended period of time. In the end, his cultivation was simply too insufficient. The true essence in his dantian and tempered marrow combined was still far inferior in thickness to that of an extreme Xiantian master. He had to ensure that he would be at his best condition when facing Ouyang Shenxiu.

The purple lights gathered from all over towards Ouyang Shenxiu’s sword. The entire blade radiated a dazzling purple light, and ghostly cries emitted from it. On Ouyang Shenxiu’s body, dozens of purple beams of light shot into the sky. All of these light beams were spurred by Ouyang Shenxiu’s sword, and then pierced towards Lin Ming.

Sound seemed to disappear. This sword had created a near perfect ‘potential’. This strange sword attack swallowed all sound side, touching upon a faint and elusive Concept!

“What a terrifying sword. This Ouyang Shenxiu has not only cultivated the ‘Divine Acacia Power’ to the limit, but he also has such a deep and profound understanding into swordsmanship. I wonder just how Lin Ming will defend against this! Within a pavilion on the lake, a martial family head with great eyesight spoke.

Facing the full force of Ouyang Shenxiu, Lin Ming’s expression was calm as usual. However, the true essence within his body had already been circulating to the limit.

In the realms of martial artists, the higher one’s cultivation, the greater the disparity in between boundaries. When Lin Ming was at the late Pulse Condensation period, his strength was comparable to an early xiantian master. However, he was not naïve enough to think that after his cultivation had jumped an entire realm, his power was now equal to a Revolving Core master.

Against the full force of Ouyang Shenxiu, Lin Ming did not underestimate him at all.

Heretical God Force – open!

After experiencing the trials within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm for nearly an entire year, the power that came from reaching the second layer of the Heretical God Force completely erupted!

Chapter 424 – Horrifyingly Fierce

Chapter 424 – Horrifyingly Fierce

…

…

…

As the Heretical God Force was opened, Lin Ming was like a monster that leapt out from an endless abyss; his momentum completely broke free.

As Lin Ming gripped the Purple Comet Spear, the ground underneath him began to shake, and cracks began to spread out from where he was like a spiderweb. He flourished his spear, and countless tiles of white marble rolled up like a mat, with countless stones and rocks being sent swirling in a high speed vortex. If a weaker martial artist were to be touched by these chunks of stone, it would pierce a bloody hole through their body.

After the Heretical God Force's aura of the second layer erupted, all of the martial artists present, including even the Xiantian Elders, felt a great suppressive pressure. They had no choice but to revolve their true essence to resist it.

Ouyang Shenxiu's amethyst sword cut down. On top of the sword, the amethyst layer had already grown nine feet long. That four foot sword had actually become a nine foot long greatsword!

"Break!"

Ouyang Shenxiu's sword cut out!

Kacha!

Sword energy and spear light wove as they smashed into each other, creating a cold and terrifying storm of true essence.

The true essence tore apart the earth, sending massive crushed stones flying high into the air. Giant waves appeared on the lake as if it were in the middle of a sea storm. Under the force of such a crazily strong impact, Lin Ming's body was blown backwards like a leaf.

Puff puff puff!

Lin Ming was flung away from the main island and fell on top of the lake. Just as he was about to land, Lin Ming waved his sleeves and a cool breeze surrounded him, supporting his body in the air. Lin Ming slowly settled down, bouncing atop the churning waves before steadying himself.

The heavy impact from a moment ago had caused him to pale, and a thin line of blood leaked out from the corners of his lips.

His explosive strength was strong, but the difference between their cultivations was just too great. After all, his foundation was weaker. Lin Ming's Tempering Marrow true essence was fine. It was just that the meridians in his body weren't able to withstand such a vicious impact and he received a wound.

Ouyang Shenxiu was forced dozens of feet away by the true essence shockwaves. When he saw that Lin Ming was injured, he let out a light breath. However, before he had a chance to speak, his pupils suddenly narrowed.

A small purple and red flash of light was approaching him. It was only several inches long, but was moving at an incredible speed. The chilling aura that it released was just like a serpent that shot towards Ouyang Shenxiu's chest!

"Mm?"

Ouyang Shenxiu raised his sword to cut down on it. However, he had just used some of his gathered strength and hadn't recovered enough. With the true essence in his body in chaos, he couldn't make a decent counterattack.

That small ray of light struck apart Ouyang Shenxiu's sword, piercing through his chest and causing a fountain of blood rain to gush out!

In that moment, Ouyang Shenxiu felt as if all the blood essence within his body was rushing towards that small light.

"Ahhh!"

Ouyang Shenxiu's eyes widened. He roared out and then punched himself in the chest. The power of the seventh layer of the 'Divine Acacia Power' manically erupted, and finally forced that small bright light out of his body.

Xiu!

That flash of light became a three inch long steel needle. There was the image of a dragon and snake engraved on the needle. It flew back into Lin Ming's hand, submerged into his fingertips, and vanished without sight!

Ouyang Shenxiu's chest was stained in blood and his face was pale. His eyes were like a wild beast as he stared at Lin Ming, hatred glowing within them.

What a terrifying and strange steel needle! Not only was it able to break through such the powerful storm of true essence, but it wasn't destroyed and still managed to pierce through Ouyang Shenxiu's chest, severely wounding him. It had even carried away a little wisp of blood essence.

A martial artist's blood essence was incomparably precious. Although Ouyang Shenxiu had no plans of trying to reach the Revolving Core stage, he still treasure his own life beyond all else. Blood essence was immediately able to influence one's lifespan. Now that he had lost his blood essence, that also meant that he had lost additional years of life!

“Ouyang Shenxiu is injured.”

“And heavily so!”

“I can’t believe that an extreme Xiantian master was actually injured to this extent by a junior, and even had a portion of his blood essence taken away.”

The disciples from the distant small islands were spectating this battle with looks of fear and suspicion on their side. To martial artists from a second-grade sect, Ouyang Shenxiu was one of the top controlling characters of the Seven Profound territory.

Although the Seven Profound territory had a single Revolving Core old master, it was said that that old monster was nearing the end of his life. There were even some rumors that he had gone into closed door seclusion to extend his life. With that Revolving Core master unable to attend to any matters anymore, in the minds of many martial artists, Ouyang Shenxiu and those like him represented the top figures of the Seven Profound territory.

But now, Ouyang Shenxiu was actually wounded by a junior!

If he was so fierce at the late Houtian realm, what would happen once he stepped into the Xiantian realm?

The present Acacia Faction martial artists had long turned silent. They looked onstage towards the bleeding Lin Ming who was soaked in blood, and were able to feel a deep fear coming from their hearts.

This was just too horrifyingly fierce. Just what was that steel needle? Before, everyone had seen a small flash of light attack Ouyang Boyan. But there were also those who didn’t catch it in time. These people only assumed that it was a concealed needle weapon or even a hidden weapon. There were some martial artists that excelled at hidden weapons or even hidden weapons like needles. There were even some martial artists that used hidden weapons and would engage in sneak attacks. But, these sneak attacks weren’t some glorious or correct method, and many martial artists despised those who relied on them.

Now it seemed as if their guesses were completely different. If this weapon could submerge into a martial artist's body or even fuse together with the martial artist, then there was only one possibility, and that was that this needle was a manifestation of pure energy.

"What is going on? How could he be so strong!?"

Many of the martial artists present had limited knowledge. They had never seen a Thunder Soul, and they also didn't know what this Divine Demon Steel Needle was.

Lin Ming gently stroked the Divine Demon Steel Needle. Because it had just absorbed Ouyang Shenxiu's blood essence, the crimson snakes of lightning became bright and more vibrant. This was the terror behind the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder. Once it drilled into one's body, no matter what effort was made, it would still equally attract their blood essence. Unless one was able to immediately shake it off, they would permanently lose blood essence.

Unfortunately, Ouyang Shenxiu had a very deep cultivation, and it took him an instant to stop the Divine Demon Steel Needle. Otherwise, the longer it took, the greater Ouyang Shenxiu's loss would have been.

Distantly, Ouyang Shenxiu was glaring at Lin Ming, his eyes thickening with a dreadful killing intent!

"Lin Ming! I have gone easy on you everywhere I could, and yet you actually damage my blood essence!?"

"Gone easy on me? You have?" Lin Ming sarcastically asked. Ouyang Shenxiu had continuously used the seventh layer of the 'Divine Acacia Power'. If he hadn't opened the Heretical God Force, there was no way he would have been able to defend against it.

Even so, Lin Ming had relied upon the formidable defensive and recovery power of Tempering Marrow in order to exchange damage. He calculated that as long as Ouyang Shenxiu still hadn't recovered his strength, he wouldn't be able to make some sort of sneak attack. Otherwise, there was no way that Lin Ming would have managed to emerge with an advantage from the exchange a moment ago.

“This Lin Ming is far too arrogant!”

Around the square, the Acacia Faction disciples were all clenching their fists. Lin Ming plainly didn’t place their Acacia Faction in his eyes.

“Good! Very good!” Ouyang Shenxiu began to sizzle with anger.

“Ho–!”

Purple flames completely wrapped around Ouyang Shenxiu. Suddenly, it wasn’t just his sword, but his entire body was wrapped in amethyst crystal.

The so-called three moves that Ouyang Shenxiu had settled upon earlier had already been completely abandoned. He now only desired to cause severe harm to Lin Ming, otherwise he would never be able to release this hatred that festered in his heart.

“Die!”

Ouyang Shenxiu slashed out with his sword. The space around Lin Ming suddenly tightened, collapsing.

Lin Ming was calm as usual. The Purple Comet Spear in his hands was like a whip as it fiercely slashed out. Because of its extreme speed, even the spear shaft bent. The spearpoint cut through the air, causing a sharp howl that pierced the ears.

Peng!

Spear and sword collided. A strange vibrating power penetrated through the amethyst sword and into Ouyang Shenxiu’s body, causing his entire body to shake.

“This boy has such a strange attack skill!”

Ouyang Shenxiu was darkly amazed. But, although this power of vibration was strange, he was still barely able to melt it away once it entered his body.

The collision of the two became increasingly intense. Spear light and sword energy haphazardly intertwined together. Lin Ming's spear had the Concept of Wind fused into it, and his spear shadow melted into the wind. The wind itself became his spear, overwhelming and with no gaps!

Bang bang bang!

The roiling true essence swirled into a giant storm, completely crushing the ground. Within the lake waters around the main island, the strong gales and intense true essence caused massive columns of water to rise into the air. Dozens of columns of water soared into the air, turning into giant waterspouts that hung in the sky, slowly being dragged into the massive storm.

All of the surrounding martial artists could only look on in helplessness and awe. Against such a terrifying fight, let alone taking any of these blows, if they just walked a few steps closer, it was likely that they would be shredded to bits by this storm of true essence and immediately die!

Blood Flame Slash!

As Ouyang Shenxiu slashed out, the aura of his body suddenly changed. His entire body was enveloped in a bloody fog, and it was as if waves of blood were surging out from him. The intense impact of true essence created a tornado that swept up the countless broken shards of white marble from the floor.

Peng peng peng!

As this tornado of debris was thrown towards Lin Ming, it was also swept up by the azure true essence that Lin Ming released, continuously exploding in the air and becoming a fine white sand.

Lin Ming thrust out his spear. He had to take the offensive and finish this fight in the next few dozen breaths. Otherwise, the power from the Heretical God Force would soon exhaust itself!

“You want to exchange wounds? Dream on!”

The sword in Ouyang Shenxiu’s hand suddenly accelerated. His attack speed was significantly faster than Lin Ming’s!

A sword cut down onto Lin Ming’s chest. At this time, because of his lost blood essence, Ouyang Shenxiu had been driven to madness and desperately attacked.

Kacha!

Spear and sword locked together. Most of Ouyang Shenxiu’s sword attack was blocked by Lin Ming. However, most of the sword energy still cut towards Lin Ming, ripping open his clothes, slicing his chest, and causing blood to shoot out.

Ouyang Shenxiu’s smile didn’t even last an instant before it froze on his face. Lin Ming simply ignored this chest injury and cut down with his spear towards Ouyang Shenxiu.

“What? He’s alright!?”

Ouyang Shenxiu hadn’t left any room for dodging after making his move. Lin Ming’s Purple Comet Spear was like the blade of a guillotine as it came towards him. He was struck by that spear and sent soaring back!

Bang!

Ouyang Shenxiu crashed into the floor. Within the ruined ground, another crater appeared. His mouth was already full of blood, several of his ribs were broken, and his organs were crushed. His face was pale white and his entire body was damaged all over. This battle was brutal beyond his imagination!

All of the current martial artists were stunned silly. Lin Ming had used his own body to forcefully withstand Ouyang Shenxiu's sword energy? And then he had made a counterattack?

A single spear had sent Ouyang Shenxiu cratering into the ground. What kind of character was Ouyang Shenxiu? But he had actually been struck by a junior and sent slamming into the ground. A fight of this level was too terrifying!

Lin Ming's own situation wasn't too good. He had relied on the powerful defensive capabilities of his 65% completed Tempering Marrow and withstood Ouyang Shenxiu's sword energy. But, his meridians had been damaged in many sections and his chest was already stained red with blood. The Heretical God Force could only last for about 10 more breaths of time!

Seeing Ouyang Shenxiu stand up, Lin Ming fiercely grit his teeth. He shot forwards, and the Thunder Soul and Flame Essence on his spear connected.

Thunderfire Annihilation!

Ouyang Shenxiu's two eyes were bloodshot. He grabbed his sword with both hands, and all of that amethyst crystal completely manifested onto the blade of the sword. The absolute limit of the 'Divine Acacia Power's' seventh layer of strength transferred to the sword, slashing down at Lin Ming!

Bang!!!

In that moment, it was like a bloody sun rose within the center of the square. Ouyang Shenxiu's body was like a piece of broken straw as he was thrown backwards…

Chapter 425 – Stones Dyed With Blood

Chapter 425 – Stones Dyed With Blood

…

…

…

Bang!!!

Ouyang Shenxiu fell into a pile of rubble, stirring up a large cloud of dust and dirt.

As the bright light from the explosion faded, the true essence shockwaves subsided. The lake was quiet, and even the wild, turbulent waves became gentle once again. On the main island, every building was completely razed to the ground, turned to crushed stones and tiles. There was now nothing left but a long stretch of ruins!

Pa ta!

A drop of bright fresh blood trickled down from the cold point of the Purple Comet Spear. As this drop of blood fell onto the ruins, it broke apart. In the utter silence of the square, this sound was incomparably clear.

Lin Ming stood within these ruins, his entire body dyed in blood. Part of this blood was from Ouyang Shenxiu, and part of it was from himself.

At this time, Lin Ming was like a Killing God that crawled out from an Ashura battlefield. All of the martial artists that looked at Lin Ming had a shine of fear and horror in their eyes. Even though the extreme Xiantian master Ouyang Shenxiu had emerged to stop Lin Ming, he was still beaten to the edge of death!

Ouyang Ming heaved a deep sigh of relief. In the face of someone like Lin Ming, he was completely paralyzed. Even Liu Xuan, who had grown up under the halo of being a genius, had a complex expression on his face. He now learned that there was no limit in this world; no matter how strong he was, there was always someone stronger. No one wanted to admit that they were a frog in a well. But now, he had no choice but to acknowledge the world outside of the well. He had discovered that the world outside of this well was much more broad and limitless than he could have ever imagined.

Ouyang Shenxiu lay waiting the ruins of the main island, half his body buried within the crushed stoned. Ouyang Shenxiu had long fallen unconscious. In comparison to the bloody Lin Ming who stood next to him, this left an extremely strong visual impact on all that saw this.

This strong visual impact, as well as the thick and frightening killing intent that still filled the air, caused everyone around to not dare to make even the smallest noise.

The entire square had fallen under an oppressive pall of silence. The tyrannical aura seemed thick enough to manifest into reality.

Pa ta!

Pa ta!

More and more blood dropped onto the ruins. As drop of blood after drop of blood fell down, it formed a blossoming flower of blood atop the crushed stones.

Lin Ming's body swayed twice.

Peng!

The Purple Comet Spear struck the ground. Lin Ming supported himself by grabbing onto the spear shaft, finally coming to a halt. Even though he had consumed too much true essence and he was heavily injured, he still managed to stand firm.

“He’s reached his limit!” Ouyang Boxu narrowed his eyes as he stared at Lin Ming, finally relieved.

‘No matter how formidable you are, since you have reached your limit, there is nothing to fear from you!’

“Five Great Elders of the Acacia Faction combined to attack him, and even Ouyang Shenxiu fought him; it’s already a miracle that he could still stand at this point. But, there is no longer any need to fear him!” Ouyang Guang said to several other elders on the main island with a true essence sound transmission. To everyone present, it was obvious that Lin Ming had reached the end of the road.

Lin Ming raised his Purple Comet Spear and began to slowly move towards Ouyang Boyan. On the chilling point of his spear, a cold light flashed.

But at this moment, Ouyang Boyan’s younger brother Ouyang Boxu was standing in front of him.

“What? This boy is even trying to kill my brother now? Is his brain filled with water? He is simply seeking death!”

With his longsword in hand, Ouyang Boxu’s eyes flashed with a deep murderous intent. He wished that he could immediately kill Lin Ming. But in this situation, he didn’t have the courage to do so.

“Lin Ming! If you take one step close, I will cut you down with my sword!” Ouyang Boxu shouted out with a dour expression.

His entire body’s true essence was revolving to the limit. And beside him, even Ouyang Guang had once again taken out his longsword and was prepared to fight at any given moment.

Lin Ming was expressionless as if he hadn’t heard anything at all. He continued to slowly walk and stumble towards Ouyang Boyan.

The corners of Ouyang Boxu's lips twitched. Ouyang Guang said, "Boxu, us three will attack together. Although we can't kill him, we can still severely injure him and ruin his blood essence and meridians. Even if we do so, Divine Phoenix Island won't say anything. After all, Lin Ming was the one who attacked first, and he also injured Boyan and the Sovereign's blood essence. If we damage his blood essence and meridians then that will be a perfectly justified matter; there is no reason that Divine Phoenix Island would punish us!"

"That's right. At this time Divine Phoenix Island needs our hearts united in order to face the South Sea Demon Region. They would not dare to bully us like that, otherwise the already loose alliance will disperse and Divine Phoenix Island will suffer a major loss. We will damage Lin Ming's blood essence today and have him pay the price for his rampant and flagrant actions!"

Ouyang Boxu devilishly smiled. 'This Lin Ming is such a self-important idiot. He is already wounded with this miserable appearance, but he still wants to kill my brother. If he was smart and had just a bit of respect, he would have stopped here and I wouldn't have had an excuse to harm him. But now, he can die!'

"Go!"

Ouyang Guang gave a loud shot. Ouyang Boxu led the way, rushing to the front, his sword slashing towards Lin Ming's right arm.

"First I'll take your arm!"

Ouyang Boxu's lips curved up in a savage grin and his longsword whistled. Lin Ming faltered in his step, but still walked forwards.

This sword contained all of Ouyang Boxu's potential! If Lin Ming's arm was severed, he could still reattach it, but at that point the damage would have been done.

"Lin Ming!"

Behind Lin Ming, Qin Xingxuan screamed as she covered her mouth in absolute horror. Even Qin Ziya was pale. The zither in his spatial ring suddenly appeared in his hand. But, Qin Ziya was only at the early Xiantian realm. Against these three great senior Xiantian masters and even the middle Xiantian realm Ouyang Guang, Qin Ziya was limited in what he could do!

The thousands of people in the surroundings widened their eyes. For Ouyang Boxu to take advantage when someone was in such a helpless position was truly despicable, but this was also the best opportunity he would have. Lin Ming was a lamp that had run out of oil, just how would he be able to defend against this?

“Die!”

Ouyang Boxu’s longsword slashed down, a brilliant purple flame enveloping it.

In a split-second, Lin Ming’s eyes suddenly condensed. The phoenix flame mark between his eyebrows suddenly combusted in a fiery blaze!

Phoenix true blood, Nirvana Rebirth!

“Hoh!”

A clarion phoenix cry sounded out, directly impacting through the heavens. From between Lin Ming’s eyebrows, a powerful and dominant power of fire erupted. Phoenix true blood poured through the blood vessels of Lin Ming, causing his blood to boil

A phoenix was immortal and endless. Similarly, its bloodline was the same. It was able to bathe within the blazing fires of nirvana, and had the effect of being rebirthed even from the precipice of death!

Normally, when a martial artist burned their blood essence they could trade it for a powerful strength in return. But once blood essence was burned away, it was gone forever!

However, phoenix true blood was different – it itself was already capable of rising from the ashes of fire. Even if it were burned, it would not be reduced by the tiniest bit!

This was the effect of the Phoenix true blood, a power that was capable of defying the heavens themselves!

After this phoenix true blood poured into Lin Ming, half of his bodily wounds were restored in just a blink of an eye. As for his true essence that was nearly depleted, with the combustion of the phoenix true blood, it began to violently rise!

Lin Ming's eyes were cold, just like stars from quiet nine heavens. The forceful coldness of his vision pierced through the hearts of those who met his eyes.

As Lin Ming vision's touched Ouyang Boxu, Ouyang Boxu subconsciously froze for a moment. He felt as if he were being glared at by a catastrophic monster, and chills ran all over his body. He had an ominous foreboding feeling creep up his heart, but…

It was already too late!

Lin Ming shook the Purple Comet Spear in his hands, and the vigorous Fallen Star Flame combusted. Under the blessing of the Phoenix true blood, the flames became an increasingly deep and vibrant purple!

"Go die!"

Lin Ming's icy words were like an arctic wind that came from the endless abyss. His spear thrust out, flame howled, and the air trembled!

The shining flames condensed into a phantom of a phoenix, directly shooting straight towards Ouyang Boxu!

"Divine Phoenix Within the Heavens!"

This was shockingly a killing move that Lin Ming had learnt from the third layer of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. Its might was naturally inferior to that of Thunderfire Annihilation, but it was still more than enough to deal with the early Xiantian realm Ouyang Boxu!

“What!? How is this possible!??”

The Lin Ming who had been like dying embers had suddenly ignited in a burst of raging power. As Ouyang Boxu saw this with his own eyes, he felt a sense of intense panic overtake him. He couldn’t believe what was happening in front of his own eyes. But in this critical moment, Ouyang Boxu no longer had time to reflect on the reasons behind it. As the blazing flames swept towards him, Ouyang Boyu’s expression completely changed. He loudly shouted and then slashed out at the flaming phoenix!

Peng!

It was just an instant, but the purple flames on Ouyang Boxu’s sword were completely swallowed by the flaming phoenix. And then, that flaming phoenix continued to soar towards Ouyang Boxu.

“What!?”

As Ouyang Boxu witnessed the flaming phoenix swallow his flames, he felt as if he had gone mad. He revolved his bodily true essence protection to the limit!

Chi chi chi!

There was only the sound of cracking, as if molten metal were being poured atop cold ice. Ouyang Boxu’s protective true essence melted in an instant, and the flames engulfed him, swirling around his body.

Ouyang Boxu sent out a miserable shriek.

At the same time, Lin Ming stabbed his spear through Ouyang Boxu’s dantian and then twisted. As Ouyang Boxu’s dantian was shattered, he immediately died on the spot.

All of the surrounding martial artists had fallen deathly silent, none of them were able to respond to this sudden change.

How was this possible?

Lin Ming, who had already spent all his energy, was actually able to suddenly erupt with strength to instantly kill Ouyang Boxu?

Lin Ming's spatial ring flashed and Ouyang Boxu's corpse was sucked into it. Ouyang Boxu's spatial ring wasn't able to be placed into the pocket dimension, so Lin Ming took that himself.

A single spear had killed Ouyang Boxu. At this time, Ouyang Guang and another Elder were halfway to Lin Ming, and they suddenly lagged as this saw this horrifying scene. Most of their momentum instantly dissipated.

Lin Ming didn't stop. His eyes flashed with a cold light and he took a step forwards, his spear thrusting towards Ouyang Guang!

Ouyang Guang had already lost a massive amount of true essence from his earlier fight, and had even been wounded. Although he was at the crest of the middle Xiantian realm, now his strength was at the lowest of the middle Xiantian realm masters!

His complexion completely changed. He now realized how terrifying and severe Lin Ming's killing intent was. This spear was not a sparring shot or a deterrent, it was a true killing strike!

If he could not block this, he would die!

In that instant, Ouyang Guang felt cold sweat trickle down his back.

Just then, a purple light flashed at his side. The Acacia Faction Elder who had attack together with him had abandoned all else and ran away!

The disciples of the Acacia Faction had never had much loyalty to begin with, they had always placed their own lives as their top priority in life. As this Elder saw Lin Ming lock onto Ouyang Guang, he immediately escaped. Compared to his life, honor was nothing!

“Damn!”

Ouyang Guang’s eyes widened. However, he now had no choice but to face Lin Ming’s spear!

“You’ve gone too far!”

Ouyang Guang’s sword potential turned. From the bottom up, he cut against Lin Ming’s Purple Comet Spear. However, as his sword cut against the spear, he felt a strange vibrating energy spread into his body from the spear. His arm shook, and the sword fell from his hand.

Ouyang Guang was shocked. At this time, Lin Ming’s spear swept out, the cold tip of the Purple Comet Spear carrying a billowing flame!

Peng!

Ouyang Guang’s sword slashed down on the flames of the Purple Comet Spear. However, a tiny wisp of purple Flame Essence split off from the flames and silently fell onto Ouyang Guang’s chest…

Puff –

The Fallen Star Flame was like a serpent that penetrated into Ouyang Guang’s body.

Chapter 426 – Auspicious Sign of the Heavens

Chapter 426 – Auspicious Sign of the Heavens

…

…

…

The corrosive Fallen Star Flame Flame Essence drilled straight through Ouyang Guang's stomach, piercing through his dantian and shooting out from behind!

Ouyang Guang grabbed onto the shaft of the Purple Come Spear. He slowly looked down at the hole in his stomach that was pouring out thick, black blood, his face colored with disbelief.

He extended his hand out, waving it in front of him as if he wanted to grab onto something. However, his eyes relaxed and dulled, and the light faded from them.

Ouyang Guang fell to his knees, and then softly plopped onto the floor.

So far, of the seven Elders and Sovereign from the Acacia Faction, some had died, some were severely wounded, and some had escaped; there were none left!

The entire main island was emptied, even Ouyang Ming had returned to a small island. Now, on the main island, the only one left standing was Lin Ming.

With his own strength, not even the seven Great Elders of the Acacia Faction had been able to stop him. Such a frightening strength caused all the surrounding martial artists to hold their breath, afraid that they would attract the attention of this monster in human form.

Lin Ming took the Purple Comet Spear and walked in front of Ouyang Boyan. At this time, Ouyang Boyan only had a single breath of life left. He glanced at Lin Ming, but his eyes had already glazed over.

The Purple Comet Spear flashed with a cold light, and there was a light piercing sound as a gaping hole appeared in Ouyang Boyan's stomach, followed by a shower of blood.

All of the surrounding martial artists from small sects jumped, feeling faint at heart. Just a moment ago, this had been a lively and grand celebratory banquet. Ouyang Boyan had been filled with happiness and elation due to his breakthrough, but now, that happy man had been slaughtered in a way no different from a farm chicken!

Such a great contrast caused everyone to feel a deep sense of awe and dread.

Lin Ming placed Ouyang Boyan's corpse into his spatial ring. He wanted to verify something. Was a Xiantian martial artist's blood essence able to open the Magic Cube once again?

"Lin Ming! You're alright!" Qin Xingxuan ran over to Lin Min and helped support him, her face filled with worry and concern. Lin Ming's appearance was just too horrible at the moment. He was bruised all over, and his true essence had been overdrawn.

"I'm alright." Lin Ming brightly smiled at Qin Xingxuan to reassure her at let her feel more at ease. He said, "Come on, let's go home…"

……………………………….

"Senior Master… Ouyang Boyan had died."

In the back mountains of the Seven Profound Valleys, Shi Zongtian stood outside of a cave mansion, his face solemn.

As the Seven Profound Valleys' Valley Master, the only one that Shi Zongtian would refer to with such respect would be the Highest Elder of the Seven Profound Valleys, Jiang Huan.

Jiang Huan was now 500 years old. He had been stranded at the early Revolving Core realm, and was reaching the end of his life. In these past many years, he had gone into closed seclusion.

The reason that Jiang Huan was in seclusion was not because he wanted to break past the early Revolving Core realm; he was well aware that his life was nearly exhausted, and breaking through was nothing but a wild dream. Jiang Huan had used this method of seclusion in order to delay the embers of his flickering life from fading. He greatly hoped that he would be able to maintain his feeble existence and linger on in the world until the day that Jiang Baoyun made a breakthrough to the extreme Xiantian realm.

Only such a super powerhouse like that would be able to guarantee the stability of the Seven Profound Valleys.

Therefore in these past years, regardless of any matter, Jiang Huan rarely left his cave mansion, and that why was rumors had been passed along in the smaller sects that Jiang Huan was in life or death closed door seclusion.

"I know..."

As Jiang Huan slowly spoke, his voice had a faint dying energy.

In fact, Jiang Huan had already been made aware of the situation ever since Lin Ming had broken into the Seven Profound Valleys, and was very clear on the entire process of what had happened.

Shi Zongtian hesitated and said, "Should I go and speak with Lin Ming?"

Although the Sword Faction and Acacia Faction had many disagreements, and even many areas in which they were complete and polar opposites, they were still in the same sect. Lin Ming had killed one after another within the Acacia Faction, and this would ruin their Sword Faction's reputation too. If this spread out, then others would say that the Seven Profound Valleys had been invaded by a 20-something year old baby, and no one dared to even admonish him.

Jiang Huang said, “There’s no point in you going. Since Lin Ming came to the Seven Profound Valleys, he naturally has something to rely on. If it’s as you said and Lin Ming truly does have a reason to take revenge, then Ouyang Boyan wouldn’t have sat idly by. I thought that he would rely on the Acacia Faction and pay off Lin Ming with some high price, but I never thought that he would underestimate Lin Ming’s strength to this degree. In truth, it wasn’t just him who underestimated Lin Ming, but also me. I never would have dreamed that Lin Ming’s strength was already formidable to this degree!”

Shi Zongtian listened silently, not speaking. He had a certain understanding of Lin Ming’s personality. Even if he went, he would just lose face in the end no matter what he did. If that was the case, then he might as well not go. Not just that, but Lin Ming also came here riding a Vermillion Bird. The Vermillion Bird represented Divine Phoenix Island and wouldn’t recklessly attack the Seven Profound Valleys, but it was still a form of deterrence.

Thinking things over, Shi Zongtian sighed. Finally, he decided not to involve himself with this matter. Everything would be settled by Lin Ming and the Acacia Faction.

……………………

On the highest peak of the Acacia Faction, a resonant phoenix cry echoed through the heavens. The Vermillion Bird shot into the sky. Nobody dared to stop Lin Ming. In the view of the surrounding martial artists, Lin Ming had forced his way into the Acacia Faction and killed several of their Great Elders. But, the other six factions of the Seven Profound Valleys hadn’t even appeared, and Lin Ming had cockily sauntered his way out.

The banquet naturally couldn’t continue. The martial artists from the small sects quickly excused themselves and left. After the seven Great Elders had been completely wasted by Lin Ming alone, the one with the highest status left on scene was Ouyang Ming.

The martial artists quickly spoke their farewells to Ouyang Ming. Ouyang Ming ruefully smiled, he never thought that the celebratory banquet the Acacia Faction held today would have such a result.

Ouyang Ming was no longer inclined to think about Lin Ming. He and Lin Ming were destined to follow different paths and tread on different worlds. He wouldn't take Lin Ming as his goal in life; instead, he would just believe that Lin Ming no longer existed.

The wind howled.

Lin Ming, Qin Xingxuan, and Qin Ziya all stood atop the Vermillion Bird. They had already left the range of the Seven Profound Valleys' mountains.

Lin Ming said, "Martial House Master Qin, what are you planning to do in the future?"

Qin Ziya thought for a moment and then said, "I will stay in the Seven Profound Valleys in the future. There were already many conflicts between the Zither Faction and the Acacia Faction. Although I have offended the Acacia Faction this time, it won't affect me much."

"Martial House Master Qin, how about switching sects? For instance, joining Divine Phoenix Island?"

"Divine Phoenix Island... consider it finished. In my life, I pursue the zither with my heart and soul. I can only do this within the Zither Faction, Divine Phoenix Island does not suit me."

Lin Ming nodded. What Qin Ziya said was right. He had spent half his life cultivating the zither, it was impossible for him to branch out and practice other cultivation methods again.

"Then, I must separate with Martial House Master Qin. When I was stranded within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, it was all thanks to Martial House Master Qin that Xingxuan remained safe for as long as she did. I, Lin Ming, will engrave this kindness onto my mind."

Qin Ziya laughed and said, "If it wasn't for you, I would never have stepped into the Xiantian realm. If we are speaking of kindnesses, then yours is greater than mine. This time in helping Miss Qin, the truth is that I didn't play much of a role, I could only do as much as I could in order to not frustrate my thoughts."

To those from the Zither Faction and Sword Faction who were mostly honest and held a greater value towards integrity, they would never feel comfortable if they owed anyone anything. Only when they returned the favor would they feel at peace. So in general, these individuals didn't often owe favors to others.

"Lin Ming, this is where we part. I bid you farewell, take care of yourself." Qin Ziya waved his sleeves, and then leapt down from the Vermillion Bird. His white clothing quickly vanished within the strong heavenly winds.

Lin Ming watched as Qin Ziya's figure disappeared. He cupped his fists across his chest and said, "Martial House Master Qin, please take care…"

"Lin Ming… where will we go to?" Qin Xingxuan asked as she stood beside Lin Ming.

She had already prepared to follow Lin Ming to the edges of heaven and the ends of the earth.

"First we'll go home, and then we'll go to Divine Phoenix Island. You can cultivate within Divine Phoenix Island."

"Mm, then let's do as you say." Qin Xingxuan bit her lips, feeling incomparably at peace. With Lin Ming, she no longer worried about anything at all.

....

Sky Fortune Kingdom was several hundred thousand miles away from the Seven Profound Valleys. Transferring news was often a very slow and arduous process. In order to activate a sound transmission array once, it required a great amount of true essence stones, and would also wear down the limited integrity of the array formation, shortening its life.

In normal circumstances, the current Seven Profound Martial House Master who was also Ouyang Boyan's disciple would only make a report to Ouyang Boyan once a month. Now that Ouyang Boyan had died, there was no longer anyone to manage this chess piece he had left within Sky Fortune Kingdom.

In fact, besides Ouyang Boyan, not many people knew that Yang Zhen and this cloaked man were followers of Ouyang Boyan. These people were on a very low level. The Acacia Faction Elders naturally wouldn't bother with them.

The news of single-handedly killing his way into the Acacia Faction and wrecking them hadn't yet spread out. Before the second-grade sect disciples had returned to their sect, Lin Ming had already arrived back at Sky Fortune Kingdom. With the Vermillion Bird's astoundingly extreme speed along with the use of two transmission arrays, Lin Ming had managed to return to Sky Fortune Kingdom in a single day and night.

On this day, all of Qin Xingxuan's anxieties and fears had been clearly seen by Lin Ming's eyes. The Qin Family members' lives were all at stake, so of course Qin Xingxuan was nervous.

It was an ordinary morning in Sky Fortune City. The sun had just risen, and the fresh and bright sunlight had just started spreading throughout the city. The common peasant workers held their hoes across their shoulders as they headed to the fields outside the city to farm. Merchants sold their wares in their shops. At this moment, a bright red light flashed on the horizon. From afar, it was like a massive group of flames was burning the air.

This flame was at first very small, but it began to grow at an alarming speed. Everyone quickly realized that this wasn't a group of flames, but rather a fiery bird!

Everyone couldn't help but stop whatever work they were doing and stare at the sky, dazed.

A resounding phoenix cry spread through the horizon. The massive Vermillion Bird with its 100 foot wingspan cut across the limitless blue sky!

All of Sky Fortune City's residents were shocked!

"Phoenix!"

"Heavens! Is that a phoenix!?"

“Am I dreaming?”

To mortals, a phoenix was an existence that they had only heard about in ancient stories and legends. In the legends, when an emperor had united the dynasty and performed a great deed, a phoenix would appear unto the world; this was the so-called auspicious sign of the heavens.

“The phoenix is flying to the Royal Palace!”

With that, people quickly came to their senses. This must be related to the great deeds of the newly crowned emperor!

Thinking of this, everyone quickly kneeled on the ground, prostrating themselves in worship as they stared at this phoenix in the sky.

At this time, in the vast grand hall of Sky Fortune City’s Royal Palace, Yang Zhen was meeting his court. Within 30 days of ascending the throne, he had summoned the representatives of the difference provinces and was to meet with them.

Under the grand podium, hundreds of leaders and officials from the various provinces were kneeling. Yang Zhen was sitting grandly above them. At this moment, he heard a shrill cry as someone entered…

A court eunuch burst into the grand hall, a great smile on his face as he shouted, “Emperor! This is a great occasion, a great occasion! An auspicious sign of the heavens has come! An auspicious sign of the heavens!”

Chapter 427 – Changing Heavens

Chapter 427 – Changing Heavens

…

…

…

All of the officials and officers looked over. Their faces were filled with surprise as they saw this fat eunuch that looked like a giant meatball barge into the palace's grand hall.

After attracting everyone's attention to himself, the middle-aged eunuch seemed to notice that and began to wave to everyone as he happily reported such a wonderful event.

He coughed to clear his throat, and then the middle-aged eunuch said, "Emperor! An auspicious heavenly sign has arrived! A phoenix has come!"

"Mm? Phoenix?" Yang Zhen was startled, and then a joyous smile immediately crossed his face. "Really?"

Just as Yang Zhen asked that, there was suddenly a resounding phoenix cry from overhead. All of the officials and officers were startled. Could it be? Was that actually a phoenix flying overhead?

Everyone quickly ran out of the grand hall, not daring to believe unless they could verify this with their own eyes. They ran out and were incomparably shocked when they saw a massive phoenix with a 100 foot wingspan gently floating in midair. And on the back of that phoenix were several immortal beings.

The wind whistled and flames howled around them. Such an auspicious event caused everyone's eyes to go round like moons; this was a scene that had only ever been described in ancient legends.

Yang Zhen was euphoric. He had usurped the throne, forced his father to abdicate the throne, and had even placed his elder brother under house arrest. None of these were glorious actions, but now that an almighty phoenix had arrived, this was the perfect chance for him to restore his honor.

As he was about to bow to the two immortals on the phoenix and introduce himself, at this moment, the bright smile on his face suddenly froze.

As he saw the young man and woman on top of that phoenix, Yang Zhen's face went from a disbelieving happiness to abject horror!

"Lin Ming! Qin Xingxuan!"

Lin Ming moved, stepping on the wind and slowly falling from the sky. A faint aura emanated from him. Combined with the phoenix behind him that burned with brilliant radiant flames, this image was too impactful. Everyone else couldn't help but fall to their knees in worship.

Yang Zhang was already afraid, but now he was frightened out of his mind. How was this possible? Wasn't Lin Ming already dead?

"Lin... Mister Lin..." Yang Zhen stuttered, "You... you're alive. I'm so excited that I can... see you... again..."

Yang Zhen‘s entire body was in a cold sweat. In just a few words, sweat had already begun to drip down his fingertips.

Besides Yang Zhen, there were a few officials that recognized Lin Ming from a banquet a long time ago, when he had displayed his amazing movement techniques. They had a very high status within Sky Fortune Kingdom, and they had also heard many things concerning Lin Ming. Thus, they deeply understood just what Lin Ming's status was!

Lin Ming sarcastically looked at Yang Zhen, "Excited? Yang Zhen, how come I can see you shaking?"

Lin Ming's words shocked everyone present, including all the officials and ministers. Most of those present didn't recognize Lin Ming. To them, the world that Lin Ming lived in was just too distant a reality. In their minds, the emperor was the heavens, a nigh unreachable existence.

Just who was this person? He spoke to the emperor directly using his full name, and it was also obvious that the emperor feared him!

After Yang Zhen had ascended to the throne, he had launched a massive campaign to clear out all the past officials, making everyone feel insecure of their own position. Even the legendary and renowned Marshal Qin Xiao had been placed under house arrest; who else still dared to oppose Yang Zhen? With just a few words from Yang Zhen, their entire families would be beheaded and their fortunes taken!

And yet, this cold-blooded and heartless emperor was at the moment frightened to the point that he was dripping sweat?

"Mister Lin… I beg you, spare my life. I was confused. The new Seven Profound Martial House master tricked me, and Ouyang Boyan forced me to do what I did. I can be your most faithful servant. I can even testify against Ouyang Boyan on your behalf if you give me the chance to do so…" Yang Zhen said with a true essence sound transmission. This year his cultivation had managed to reach the Altering Muscle stage, and he was able to use this skill.

Lin Ming sneered, "Ouyang Boyan has been slain by my hand. If you want to testify against him, then you can do so in hell!"

"Wh… what?" Yang Zhen uttered in a daze. Ouyang Boyan had been killed by Lin Ming!?

Ca!

An azure light flashed, and Yang Zhen’s expression was forever frozen in this dazed look. A thread of azure true essence had been injected into his heart, directly bursting it. Yang Zhen had died on the spot.

Plop!

Yang Zhen slumped to the ground. After his heart burst open, blood began to flow out from his nose and mouth.

“Emperor… Emperor!” The middle-aged eunuch was horrified, his face turning white.

After Yang Zhen suddenly died, the Royal Palace was in chaos. Everyone was terrified, falling to the ground on their knees, begging as their hands trembled. All of the officials looked as though they had lost their souls. In just a breath of time, the emperor had been killed in front of everyone!

Some officials who knew a bit more of what was happening fell silent. They understood one thing, and that was that the heavens would change.

Yang Lin would ascend to the newly emptied throne, and Qin Xiao would be restored to his great position and authority. All of those who assisted Yang Zhen in clearing out the old guard would be demoted and cast away, or perhaps, maybe their entire families would be slaughtered.

This was the brutality of a struggle for authority. But in front of absolute power, any authority paled in comparison.

After Lin Ming killed Yang Zhen, he didn’t even bother to say anything to the chaotic crowds of people at the Royal Palace. He hopped onto Fireshine and rode non-stop to the Seven Profound Martial House.

The Seven Profound Martial House was located at Sky Fortune City's Zhou Mountains. This distance of 10 miles was just a blink of an eye to the extreme speed of a Vermillion Bird!

As he spread his sense down, Lin Ming instantly located the current Seven Profound Martial House Master that Yang Zhen had spoken of. Within the entire Martial House, he was the only half-step Xiantian martial artist.

Bang!

The main hall fiercely shook. The cloaked man that was cultivating in seclusion was suddenly startled, he jumped out from his quiet room!

"Who is it? Who dares to force their way into my Seven Profound Martial House!?" The cloaked man was furious. Then, he froze as he saw the massive Vermillion Bird and the two individuals that stood on it.

Lin Ming! Qin Xingxuan!

Not only did the cloaked man see Lin Ming, but many of the disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House saw him. With such a giant Vermillion Bird flying into the Seven Profound Martial House, it was difficult to not notice this.

The disciples that had entered into the Seven Profound Martial House with Lin Ming hadn't graduated yet. As they saw Lin Ming atop the Vermillion Bird, they were stunned.

"Is that person… Senior-apprentice Brother Lin?"

To the disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House, Lin Ming was a fable, a living legend that they worshipped. After he stayed at the Seven Profound Martial House for just half a year, he had become the champion of the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction Martial Meeting! It was like he was a hero from the myths!

Afterwards, they had heard that he had been personally selected by some large sect and had also become that sect's top disciple.

Without a doubt, Lin Ming would become a Xiantian master in the future. To the disciples of the Seven Profound Martial House, a Xiantian master was also a character only heard of in legends.

There were many new disciples that had heard of Lin Ming's great name even before they had joined the Seven Profound Martial House. They dreamt that one day they would become an awe-inspiring powerhouse like Lin Ming.

"It really looks like him. And behind him... is that... Senior-apprentice Sister Qin?"

"This... how is this possible? Wasn't it said that Senior-apprentice Brother Lin died? Not just that... but what are they riding? Is that a phoenix?"

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin's cultivation is..."

Several Viscera Training stage youths stared with wide eyes, but they still couldn't see Lin Ming's current cultivation!

For a Viscera Training stage martial artist to not be able to see someone's cultivation, that could only mean that they were at least at the late Pulse Condensation period, or even the peak Pulse Condensation period!

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin has already broken through to the peak Pulse Condensation period? That's impossible!"

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin is indeed powerful, he's so fierce! 17 years old and yet he is at the peak Pulse Condensation period. In the future he'll become a Xiantian master!

"I wonder why Senior-apprentice Brother Lin came back to the Seven Profound Martial House? Does had have something he needs to speak with the Martial House Master about? Could it be about the next Total Faction Martial Meeting!?" As soon as someone mentioned the Total Faction Martial Meeting, everyone – especially the younger disciples – became giddy with excitement.

As they were discussing this, Wang Yanfeng was silently gazing at Lin Ming in the sky, his eyes shining.

He wasn't at the peak Pulse Condensation period, but at the late Houtian realm… Wang Yanfeng gasped and then clenched his fists. Not too long ago, he had participated in the Seven Profound Martial House entrance examination with Lin Ming. At that time there had been a fierce battle for first place. But now,the difference between them was like clouds and mud.

…………..

"Who are you? Why have you come here?" The cloaked man's expression changed. These past years, he had been travelling the world for his own pleasure and hadn't been at the Total Faction Martial Meeting. Naturally, he wouldn't know what Lin Ming looked like.

Although Lin Ming's cultivation was inferior to his, he had a faint sense that this youth in front of him was a terrifying being!

"Are you the current Seven Profound Martial House Master?" Lin Ming blankly asked.

The cloaked man frowned. He faintly felt that Lin Ming came here with ill intent, but there was no way to deny this. He nodded his head and said, "I am!"

"Oh really…" Lin Ming coldly smiled. He heard from Qin Xingxuan that Yang Zhen had used the support of the current Martial House Master in order to successfully ascend to the throne. Afterwards, when the campaign had been launched to purge the old officials, Qin Xiao had been captured without a fight because of this cloaked man.

"Then… it's not an injustice for you to die…" Lin Ming stretched out his palm, a purple arc of thunder flashed out!

"Humph!" After he sensed Lin Ming's ill intent, the cloaked man was already on high alert. He coldly snorted and then drew out the longsword from its sheath, his entire body boiling with purple flames!

A sword cut down on the purple thunder. But as soon as the longsword touched the purple thunder, the purple flames that enveloped the sword were instantly scattered by the power of thunder!

Siii –

A finger-long arc of purple electricity sunk into the cloaked man’s body, and all of his organs instantly blew up!

The cloaked man vomited out a massive amount of blood, and then fell down from the roof of the main hall.

Peng!

The cloaked man crashed into the ground, his blood spattering all over the floor!

In that instant, all of the Seven Profound Martial House disciples were frightened. They couldn’t believe their own eyes as they looked at the dead cloaked man, their eyes completely round.

What was this all about?

Lin Ming had instantly killed the new Martial House Master?

The purple light had just flashed. Although it was fast, it still left behind an afterimage in the eyes of everyone present. Not just that, but the cloaked man had also used his sword in a counterattack. But still, in that flash, the cloaked man had suddenly died!

The new Martial House Master whose cultivation was at a half-step Xiantian, and who was no weaker than the old Martial House Master Qin Ziya, was actually killed in an instant?

How was this possible?

And… why did Lin Ming do this?

The entire Seven Profound Martial House was buzzing with noise.

Wang Yanfeng also didn't fully understand what was happening. But at this moment, he saw a white light flying towards him – it was a porcelain bottle. He subconsciously reached out his hand to grab it, and as soon as he glanced at it, he saw that it was a bottle of pills.

A sound echoed near Wang Yanfeng's ears. "These are pills for a Pulse Condensation period martial artist. The Seven Profound Valleys will soon send a new Martial House Master. Farewell Wang Yanfeng! If it is in our fates, we shall meet again!"

After Lin Ming sent his message, he jumped onto the Vermillion Bird's back. The Vermillion Bird shot up into the sky and quickly vanished into the endless sea of clouds.

Wang Yanfeng held the bottle of pills in his hand. He gazed at the Vermillion Bird as it faded into the foggy skies above the Zhou Mountains. For a time, he stood there, absently staring into the skies…

……………

"Lin Ming, do you know that young man?" Qin Xingxuan asked from atop the Vermillion Bird.

"Not really, I just found that he has a firm heart of martial arts so I'm giving him a hand." Lin Ming thoughtlessly said. If one didn't have resources, it would be difficult to practice to the upper reaches of martial arts. To reach the highest boundaries was simply too difficult. Whether it was Wang Yanfeng's heart of martial arts or his talent, both were adequate. If he were to waste too much time because of his lack of resources, that would be too pitiful.

"Lin Ming, where are we going now?"

"We'll go to your family." Lin Ming smiled at Qin Xingxuan. On the trip here, he hadn't had the chance to study the Magic Cube. He would go to the Qin Mansion and take a rest there. In the meantime, he would be able to confirm his suspicions about the Magic Cube.

Chapter 428 – Opening the Magic Cube Again

Chapter 428 – Opening the Magic Cube Again

…

…

…

Sky Fortune City, Marshal Quarters –

The Marshal Quarters had been surrounded for over a month by the army, and not even servants were allowed to leave. But now, within a quarter of an hour of Yang Zhen's death, those officials that had realized the vast changes that were about to sweep through the nation instantly lifted the order of house arrest for Qin Xiao.

Undoubtedly, Crown Prince Yang Lin would make a return and ascend to the throne. As for Qin Xiao, he would be restored to his position as one of the highest officials, and his status would be even more terrifying than it was in the past.

During this time, anyone who didn't try to curry favor with these two would be fools.

Qin Xiao was surrounded by many officials that had come to the Marshal Quarters. They discussed plans to pave the way for a smoother future.

Even those who accompanied Qin Xiao received a high level of respect. Even nobles dared not to disrespect them. These nobles constantly referred to them as 'little brother' or 'old master' in case they be seen as not paying their due respects.

Especially those nobles that had defected to Yang Zhen's side before. They were all in absolute fear, and they all wished that they could cut out their hearts and let Qin Xiao know the depths of their newfound loyalty.

It had to be known that in a struggle for authority, the winning side would often engage in a bloody purge. As for all those that had followed Yang Zhen, they might also be exterminated.

In this situation, how could they not be afraid? They all wished to take Qin Xiao as their own father and venerate him in the same way.

As Qin Xiao and the group of nobles that followed him entered past the gates of the Qin residence, they saw a massive Vermillion Bird fly down onto the courtyard. Its brilliant red feathers burned with radiant flames as it sent out a pulsing aura; all of the nobles' throats twitched as they stared as this magnificent creature.

"Master! Master! Mister Lin has brought the Young Miss back, they are waiting for you in the rear courtyard." A middle-aged steward said.

"Xingxuan..." Qin Xiao shook, and his heart filled with a surge of emotion. He thought that he would never have the chance to see his precious granddaughter ever again. But who knew that in just one night, the situation would change so much.

Qin Xiao followed the steward to the rear courtyard. The other nobles stayed back. They were aware of their own status. What kind of existence was Lin Ming? How could they possibly have the qualifications to see him? To someone like Lin Ming, nobles, royalty, or even the emperor himself were nothing but clouds of smoke, merely meaningless existences.

Therefore these people very casually greeted the housekeeper and sat down in the lobby, drinking tea and chatting with each other.

....

"Grandfather!"

As soon as Qin Xiao entered the rear courtyard. Qin Xingxuan gave a loud cry and threw herself into Qin Xiao's arms. She had anxiously worried over her grandfather's condition for over a month. Now that she saw her grandfather safe and unharmed, Qin Xingxuan couldn't suppress all the pain and worry she had been keeping down until now; tears flowed down her cheeks like strings of crystal beads.

"Grandfather is alright." Qin Xiao patted Qin Xingxuan on the back. At this age, Qin Xiao had already lived through many great storms. In this world, there was very little that could cause Qin Xiao to feel great sorrow or great happiness. Now, what Qin Xiao worried about was only the legacy of his Qin Family, as well as his most precious children and grandchildren.

Qin Xiao looked at Qin Xingxuan, his eyes full of grandfatherly love. To have such an outstanding granddaughter was truly the blessing of the heavens.

Qin Xiao glanced at Lin Ming. Towards this amazing young man in front of him, Qin Xiao wasn't sure what to feel. Gratitude, happiness, fear, awe… all sorts of emotions intertwined in the same place. Qin Xiao didn't even know what he should call Lin Ming.

Before this, he had received the news that the current Seven Profound Martial House Master had already been slain by Lin Ming in a single instant.

The young and respectful youth in front of him was a man that even the Seven Profound Valleys' Valley Master had to pay three points of respect to! This was a level that had already surpassed Qin Xiao's understanding.

He hoped that he could urge Qin Xingxuan and Lin Ming to wed. But, this sort of matter wasn't something he could ask. He no longer had the ability to arrange or manage his granddaughter's life.

"Marshal Qin, please catch up with Xingxuan. I will leave first for a moment." Lin Ming bowed as a respectful junior would, and then left the room…

………..

Outside of the room, the middle-aged steward was waiting for him.

“Mister Lin, there is someone waiting to see you.”

“See me? I thought I said I didn’t want to see anyone?” Lin Ming didn’t want to see the nobles of Sky Fortune City. All they wanted to do was to kiss up to him and shower him with gifts, he had no interest towards any of this.

“Well… she said she was an old acquaintance of yours.”

“Old acquaintance?” The first one Lin Ming thought of was Lan Yunyue. However, when he saw who it was he was a bit taken aback. The one waiting for him was a young, delicate looking girl who had an air of elegance.

This was… Bai Jingyun.

Bai Jingyun and Murong Zi were called the Seven Profound Proud Pair, and they were also top characters within the Seven Profound Martial House. Lin Ming and Bai Jingyun didn’t have much contact with each other, it was just that he had helped her make several inscription symbols for treasures before. Towards Bai Jingyun, Lin Ming didn’t have a deep impression, and had nearly forgotten who she was.

When Bai Jingyun saw Lin Ming, she faintly smiled and bowed, “Mister Lin.”

Lin Ming was a bit awkward at being called Mister Lin. He said, “Please refer to me as you used to. After all, we used to be fellow disciples.”

“Mm… then I’ll call you Brother Lin.” Bai Jingyun smiled, “To be honest, when I first saw Brother Lin enter the Seven Profound Martial House, I thought that Brother Lin had infinite potential to grow. But, I never thought that in just a few years, Brother Lin would have already reached this point…”

Bai Jingyun couldn’t help but see. The first time that Lin Ming had rushed into the Ten Thousand Killing Array, his rank had been lower than hers. But now, even the Seven Profound Martial House Master had been instantly killed by him.

This was simply like a dream.

“Mm, I’ve obtained some great opportunities. My luck has been too good.”

“Destiny is also a part of talent.” Bai Jingyun shook her head, and then looked unsure, as her eyes flashed with a strange light, “Brother Lin, may I ask you a question?”

“Please ask.”

Bai Jingyun hesitated, and then slowly asked, “A year and a half ago… were you the one… that killed Ouyang Dihua?”

There were only a few people within the entire Sky Fortune City that knew of the grudge between Lin Ming and Ouyang Dihua. Besides Yang Zhen, the cloaked man, and some others, no one else was aware.

People didn’t even know that Yang Zhen had drawn relations with the cloaked man. They only assumed that Yang Zhen had gained the backing of some great figure within the Seven Profound Valleys. As for who it was, no one knew.

Bai Jingyun naturally didn’t know. However, she was able to trace some clues and make a guess. For instance, in the past before Lin Ming had left the Sky Fortune Kingdom, he had his parents moved away. The new Martial House Master came from the Acacia Faction, Ouyang Boyan had once visited Sky Fortune Kingdom, and after news of Lin Ming’s death spread, Yang Zhen began to move against the Qin Family…

This series of events were all related. Bai Jingyun managed to connect them, and therefore she had come to ask Lin Ming to verify this.

At this moment, Lin Ming didn’t have any reason to hide it. He nodded and said, “I was the one who killed Ouyang Dihua.”

After Bai Jingyun heard Lin Ming’s words, she let out a long breath. Her eyes gently closed, and her eyelashes trembled.

The pressure that had been on her heart and mind for this past year and a half seemed to vanish. Although this matter was now complete, and she had obtained a truth that had no significance behind it, she still felt tired.

As her eyes opened, Bai Jingyun was calm once again, “Thank you, Brother Lin…”

Lin Ming shook his head, “There is no need to thank me. The reason that I killed him was because he had the intention of killing me first.”

Humans were all different. In truth, the Acacia Faction was not so terrible to female disciples. If they could lay down their modesty and pride, then they would be able to obtain many things that they desired from the Acacia Faction. There were even many girls that only had ordinary talent, but were still considered beautiful, that were desperately trying to join the Acacia Faction in order to obtain wealth and longer youth.

Lin Ming sighed, and then took out a pair of pill bottles from his spatial ring. He said, “Senior-apprentice Sister Bai, of these pill bottles, one is for you. As for the other, could you pass it to Lan Yunyue if you see her? These medicines have very mild properties, and if you eat them carefully, it will guarantee that you step into the Pulse Condensation period…”

Bai Jingyun’s talent was considered good within the Seven Profound Martial House. As a martial artist, she also hoped that one day she would be able to break through to the Pulse Condensation period. But now, as she looked at these pill bottles, Bai Jingyun didn’t feel any joy. After experiencing a number of things, it was as if she no longer wished to pursue these things.

Bai Jingyun hesitated and then silently received the pair of pill bottles. She said, “Miss Lan has been managing her fabric shop in the northern end of town for the last few years. About Brother Lin returning, she is probably already aware…”

Bai Jingyun was implying that Lan Yunyue didn’t want to see Lin Ming. Now that things had changed between them, there was no longer any meaning in them seeing each other. It would just make things embarrassing for the both of them.

Lin Ming was silent, and then sighed in his heart. Perhaps these calm and peaceful days were much more suitable for Lan Yunyue… this bottle of pills that he gave to her could be considered the last of their karma. From now on, all that was between them would completely vanish into nothing…

After Lin Ming bid Bai Jingyun farewell, he returned to his room alone. He had already told the steward that no one was to disturb him, not even to deliver meals.

Like this, Lin Ming entered the ethereal martial intent and sat in meditation for three or four hours.

When he opened his eyes, it was already evening.

Lin Ming stood up and then took out a small jar from his spatial ring. There was a thick red liquid within this small jar; this was the blood essence that he had taken from Ouyang Boyan as well as Ouyang Boxu!

From the last time that Lin Ming had touched the Magic Cube with the blood essence of a Houtian master and opened it to today, it had been nearly two years.

In two years, Lin Ming's strength had reached the extreme Xiantian realm!

What he wanted to know was: could a Xiantian master's blood essence open the Magic Cube once more?

Lin Ming impatiently wanted to verify this hypothesis.

Lin Ming ruefully smiled and then shook his head, mocking himself, "My mind is too messy. This mentality isn't suitable for opening the Magic Cube…"

The more valuable something was, the more he needed his heart and mind to be at peace. Otherwise if his heart was spurred by greed, it might expose all sorts of flaws in his mind.

Currently, Lin Ming wasn't too desperate or desiring of the legacies within the Magic Cube. What he wanted the most was to explore the secrets of the Magic Cube. Where did it come from? Who created it? How was it made? What was it guiding him to do?

Lin Ming always felt that the Magic Cube was sentient. It was only that this Magic Cube seemed to stand at the height of all existence, and looked down on everything with indifferent disdain, including even Lin Ming himself.

This so-called heartless to all of heaven and earth, taking all of existence as nothing but straw dogs; to the Magic Cube, it cared about nothing. It was indifferent to everything, and would stay this way despite any change to the world...

As Lin Ming's mood calmed down again, he stripped off his clothes, exposing a strange symbol on his left chest. This pattern was the mysterious inscription of the Magic Cube...

Chapter 429 – Demon Emperor

Chapter 429 – Demon Emperor

…

…

..

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He had washed his hands, his face, burned incense, and had adjusted his own mindset so that there wasn't even the slightest trace of turbulent emotions.

Then he poured the blood essence onto his chest.

The crimson blood essence dripped down. At first there wasn't a reaction, but after a breath of time, there was a 'chi chi chi' sound. The blood essence seemed to be corroding, and was emitting a faint trace of blue smoke.

As a burning pain emitted from his chest area, Lin Ming furrowed his eyebrows. He felt his heart, and then released his sense to investigate the Magic Cube under his chest area that was releasing strange fluctuations of energy, hoping to find some clues.

After it went to sleep near Lin Ming's heart, the Magic Cube seemed to have disappeared. If it didn't reveal itself of its own initiative, Lin Ming would never have been able to sense it.

But now, as the Magic Cube absorbed the blood essence, Lin Ming was finally able to detect its existence.

However, right after, Lin Ming felt his spiritual sea tremble. The perception he released seemed as if it were being sucked into the Magic Cube. Against this powerful suction power, Lin Ming couldn't react in time; he simply wasn't able to offer any resistance.

In the next instant, Lin Ming's consciousness had arrived into a dark, jet black space that stretched infinitely outwards. It was as if he were floating in the starry sky.

He was extremely familiar with this space – this was the space within the Magic Cube.

Beside Lin Ming, dense mist floated all around him. Within this mist there were many shining lights. They slowly revolved around a giant foot-wide light sphere in the center, as if they were stars in heaven.

"I'm finally here."

The second time it had been a Houtian martial artist's blood essence that had opened the Magic Cube. The third time it had been a Xiantian master's blood essence. The fourth time would probably require that of a Revolving Core master…

Lin Ming was sure that even if it was a Revolving Core master's blood essence, it wouldn't have much of an effect on the Magic Cube. In fact, this was most likely the Magic Cube finding a way to tell him that it needed the blood essence of powerhouses.

The giant soul shard light sphere in the center shined with a milky, soft light. The countless soul fragments around it were like sparkling crystal.

Although Lin Ming had arrived within the Magic Cube space, he still felt a bit of disappointment; even now, he didn't understand anything more about the Magic Cube.

As Lin Ming released his sense to touch upon all the soul fragments, he discovered to his surprise that not only was his soul force growing stronger with time, but also that he could feel the vague aura that the soul fragments released.

Some soul fragments were gentle, and others were overbearing. There were even those that had a faint hint of blood and devil arts.

This should be because of the cultivation methods that they had cultivated while they were alive.

The energy was extremely faint, Lin Ming could only roughly approximate. As he looked at the soul fragments, he did so very carefully. He couldn't guarantee beyond a doubt that all of these soul fragments were ownerless. There was a possibility that there were some soul fragments on which the spirit mark wasn't destroyed yet. If he selected one like that, he would be in a worst case situation. All of these Supreme Elders of the Realm of the Gods were earthshaking characters that dominated worlds before they died. Even if there was just the tiniest amount of leftover will within a soul fragment, there was no way that Lin Ming would be able to resist it.

Lin Ming had been in the Magic Cube space for a long time. He didn't dare to rashly release his sense everywhere, he passively sensed his surroundings. After some time, Lin Ming's eyes suddenly popped open. He turned around with an incredulous expression as he watched a light red colored soul fragment slowly floating past him.

This soul fragment was only the size of a small nail and sparkled like a ruby crystal. As it slowly spun around through space, it left sprinkles of red light wherever it went.

Lin Ming paused, this feeling was…

Back when Lin Ming and Lei Mubai had fought, he had also felt a similar aura!

Netherworld Great Emperor?

Ancient Devil Tome?

Lin Ming hesitated. Then he stepped forwards, and a wisp of his true essence locked onto that soul fragment.

As he looked at the soul fragment that was bound by true essence, Lin Ming could clearly feel that it contained a bloody energy.

When Lin Ming had swallowed the Shattered Demon Heart Crystals, he had witnessed the great figure of the Netherworld Great Emperor's giant axe pointed at the sky, his feet firmly upon the ground. There had also been countless numbers of demons that surrounded him.

Lin Ming's heart suddenly surged with an inexplicable desire to swallow this soul fragment. Just what would happen if he did?

Lin Ming grit his teeth, and then reached out a hand to grab the red soul fragment.

Xiu!

As Lin Ming touched the soul fragment, it melted into a stream of light that submerged into his body.

Lin Ming's strength was far more formidable than it had been in the past. But, this soul fragment was also more formidable than any one he had absorbed before. As a countless amount of information emerged within Lin Ming's mind, his spiritual sea suddenly shook, and fuzzy scenes and sounds appeared in front of him.

Of these various demons he saw, there were also those that were etched upon the walls of the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall.

War… blood… battlefields…

Powerhouses waved their earth-shattering weapons in the air. Countless corpses flew back, burned into nothing but countless specks of ash. The yellow sandy ground was dyed completely red…

Faintly, Lin Ming could see a massive city hewn from rock. The buildings within this city were rough and looked wild, but it was filled with an uninhibited sense of power and beauty. And the residents within this city were all the demons that Lin Ming had seen before. They were all over 10 feet tall, and some were even 20 feet tall.

"Giant Demon?"

Lin Ming's mind echoed with these two words. After the chaos of fragmented memories was finally organized by Lin Ming, he finally understood that these demons were really just a human-like race!

Their bodies were wrapped in chains, and long horns and tusks came from their faces. They had fiery crimson hair that recklessly hung down. This was not unique to the Netherworld Great Emperor. In truth, they were a separate race – the Giant Demon race.

"So that's how it was. The Netherworld Great Emperor was not a human to begin with. When I swallowed the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal and saw him slaughter countless demons with his great axe, it's likely that the location was a gathering place of the Giant Demon race.

"And the red demon that I encountered during the last smelting trial of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was also a kind of Giant Demon…"

The puzzles that had plagued Lin Ming's mind suddenly became much clearer.

"No wonder I was able to feel the same bloodline legacy of the Netherworld Great Emperor from Lei Mubai. I'm even able to sense the difference in this small red soul fragment. The reason is that it simply doesn't originate from the bloodline of humanity, so it's a bit more special."

……………………

As Lin Ming opened his eyes, he left the Magic Cube space. He opened the doors and walked out. The moon was bright in the sky, it was already late at night.

The night air was a bit humid. As a cold breeze wafted on his face, Lin Ming sobered up by a great deal. He rubbed his forehead and felt a deep, aching pain in his brain, as if it had slept for too long and his mind wasn't cleared yet.

As Lin Ming suppressed this aching feeling, he carefully examined the memories he had acquired. Suddenly, Lin Ming was fiercely startled, "This is…"

Great Desolate Blood Halberd!

Lin Ming was shocked. In the image in his mind, this weapon was 10 feet long, and the halberd shaft was as thick as an arm. This great and ominous halberd was a deep blood red all over!

This… this Supreme Elder of the Realm of the Gods was actually the first master of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd!

Lin Ming's was mind-boggled.

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd had left behind endless legends. It was said that it was at least a medium-grade heaven-step treasure, or possibly even higher. This halberd had existed for 70-80 thousand years already. Because of the vast expanse of time, it was no longer possible to find out just who the first master of the weapon was. All of the masters that followed – including even the Peerless Emperor powerhouses – had an insufficient destiny and would be cursed to death by this ominous halberd!

This even included the Netherworld Great Emperor!

Lin Ming subconsciously took out the ancient Devil Tome from the spatial ring. This ancient Devil Tome was taken from Lei Mubai. After he read it, Lin Ming began to laugh and cry at the same time. It turned out that this ancient Devil Tome was actually a cultivation method that the Supreme Elder who had first owned the Great Desolate Blood Halberd had created himself, just before he left for the Realm of the Gods!

Such a coincidence could only be said to be the will of the heavens. It was probably because of all these vague connections that Lin Ming was able to sense that familiar energy coming from the blood red soul fragment.

"To think that one of the 10,000 powerhouses from the Realm of the Gods that had laid waste to the Verdant Feather Holy Lands was someone who had flown up from the Sky Spill Continent."

“The first master of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd… 80,000 years ago, he was an Emperor powerhouse of Sky Spill Continent, titled the Demon Emperor! He had founded his own sixth-grade sect that lasted for over 16,000 years!”

Demon Emperor!

Anyone who dared to call themselves this was probably the top figure of the demonic path!

Because the memories were incomplete, it took a long time for Lin Ming to reorganize them. There were many bits and pieces of information; he simply was at a complete loss at many of these confusing scenes.

As Lin Ming slowly digested these memories, he looked through them. Within the memories of this Demon Emperor’s soul fragment, most of them were memories of scenes that involved his participation in wars. There were countless scenes of slaughter and blood!

“This Demon Emperor is really bloodthirsty!

Lin Ming sighed. Although this soul fragment was larger than the last two, there were very few memories of cultivation methods. There were a few, but even those were mostly incomplete. As Lin Ming continued to organize the memories of the soul fragment, he was suddenly startled.

“Mm? This is…”

A halberd art?

Lin Ming’s heart moved. In truth, the essence behind a spear and halberd was nearly the same. Spear skills could be used with a halberd, and halberd arts could be used with a spear!

What Lin Ming lacked the most now was spear skills. When he had fought a master of Golden Bell Mountain in a match, it had fully reflected a weakness of his, and that was that he lacked finesse and technique in his spear skills. If it wasn’t for the blood of the True

Dragon that had augmented his spear powers, Lin Ming would have undoubtedly lost to Xiao Chi in a battle of spear skills.

"This Giant Demon race mostly uses long weapons! Humans mostly used swords and sabers, but the Giant Demon race – maybe because of their height – are more familiar with long pole-type weapons. For instance, the Netherworld Great Emperor used a long handled great axe and the blood halberd. Lei Mubai also used a halberd. As for this Demon Emperor, he also used a halberd."

And what was impressive was that this 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' was one of the Demon Emperor's ultimate law formulas. Not only did it contain halberd skills, but it also contained a cultivation method. Its power was simply enormous.

The ancient Devil Tome that Lei Mubai had cultivated was only a tiny fraction of the full 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'.

What Lin Ming was apprehensive about was that cultivating the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' was not easy. It required one to constantly kill, sucking up the enemy's blood essence and accumulating one's own murderous intent!

"Killing…" Lin Ming frowned. During these years that he had practiced martial arts, he hadn't killed many. As for all those that he killed, they each had reasons to die and had simply walked the road of death.

When the Demon Emperor had practiced the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art', he had killed countless others in an absolute bloodthirsty frenzy, all in order to improve his own cultivation method. But Lin Ming could not do the same. He could not, and would not kill innocent people.

"This demon way martial arts seemed to have two different paths. There is the killing path along with the lustful path. The Netherworld Great Emperor had stepped upon both of these, but as for the Demon Emperor of 80,000 years ago, he had only walked the killing path!

“And the killing path is the only way left to me…”

…

Chapter 430 – Returning to Divine Phoenix Island

Chapter 430 – Returning to Divine Phoenix Island

…

…

…

As Sky Fortune City entered fall, the days began to be filled with a faint chill.

In the ninth month, Crown Prince Yang Lin ascended to the throne. The grand ceremony continued for a total of nine days. Before this, all of the officials that had been purged and were still living were once again restored to their former glory. They entered the palace again and again, being promoted continuously.

As for officials that had followed Yang Zhen, some were demoted and some were exiled. Even though Yang Lin was a naturally kind-hearted man, after becoming emperor he would also begin to gradually show a ruthless side.

In the middle of the ninth month, Lin Ming brought Qin Xingxuan back to his hometown of Green Mulberry City.

Before this, Yang Lin had already sent summons to meet Lin Ming's parents.

Yang Lin was clear that his life was protected and he would finally be able to ascend the throne all because of Lin Ming. Although this was a great graciousness of Lin Ming, there was no way that Yang Lin could return the favor. What he could offer Lin Ming were common things such as authority and money. However, these things no longer held any significance to Lin Ming.

However, Yang Lin was still a wise and smart character who knew the best way to do things in any situation. Since he couldn't offer Lin Ming anything he wanted, he would then give a title to Lin Ming's parents.

He titled Lin Ming's father as the Duke of Lu County with a scope of land over 500 miles wide. This Lu County also included Green Mulberry City within its borders. Henceforth, Green Mulberry City was the home grounds of the Lin Family.

As for Lin Ming's mother, she was titled as a first-class madame. Even Lin Xiaodong was given the title of a first-class viscount.

These titles were extraordinary. Whether it was a duke or a first-class madame, neither of them had official government power, but they were titles that were still only inferior to a prince or king, and were top characters among any noble circles.

These titles were also hereditary. Once titled, they would not be removed unless there was a major crime that was committed. Thus, the Royal Palace would not easily bestow these noble titles onto others. Besides times of great war or in the founding of the nation, they would almost never be given. If one thought that they could receive this title during times of peace, then that was simply nonsense.

It had to be known that the title of viscount within Green Mulberry City would include a 30 mile manor as well as 1000 servants.

As for the several great families of Green Mulberry City, besides the Zhu Family who had obtained some status because their daughter had become the empress concubine, the other family heads were not even second-rate barons. As for the commoners, the best among them could be considered the wealthy gentry of the countryside.

Between the common people and the nobility there was an insurmountable gap. The nobility represented the most honored positions. Although great merchant families were large and powerful, within the minds of the common people, their social status was inferior to nobles'.

Thus, to Lin Ming's parents, being able to receive a title and become a duke or a madame was simply a dream come true. This was an event worthy of a grand celebration, and would also bring great honor to their ancestors.

As Lin Ming saw the happy look on his parents' faces, he was deeply satisfied. He didn't think that such a common title of the mortal world would let his parents become this pleased. The last time that Lin Ming had come back, even the pills that he had given them that would let them extend their lives by a hundred years hadn't caused his parents to be so happy.

As Lin Ming's mother affectionately felt the imperial decree, her smile went from ear to ear. She decided that she would have a beautiful sandalwood box made and then place the imperial decree within. Later, when she passed onto the next world she would be able to raise her head high when she saw her ancestors. Lin Ming wasn't sure whether or not to laugh or cry when he heard these ideas.

As Lin Mu happily spoke, the cry of a little baby was suddenly emitted from the west wing of the residence.

This baby was Lin Ming's little sister.

Lin Ming had been stranded within the Divine Phoenix Mystic for nearly a year. Under Qin Ziya's protection, Lin Ming's parents hadn't even heard the news of Lin Ming's death from the beginning to the end. They had lived an entire year happily in peace, and had even popped out a little sister for Lin Ming.

This could all be accredited to Lin Ming's pills. This couple that had worked hard for half a lifetime suddenly felt much younger. The wrinkles on their skin vanished, and their bodies constantly improved. Now, the husband and wife were no different from anyone else in their early thirties.

Lin Ming's little sister was only a few months old and was still nursing. Her name was Lin Xiaoge, and her nickname was Little Pigeon.

This little girl had surprisingly large eyes and wasn't afraid of strangers. As she saw Lin Ming, she stared at him with her bright black eyes shining, intently watching him.

Lin Ming was very fond of this cute baby. He took out a soul jade pendant from his spatial ring and placed it around Lin Xiaoge's neck.

This little baby had arrived right on time. Lin Ming was worried that his parents would be lonely after he left, but now that Little Pigeon was here, that wouldn't be the case. Perhaps in the future there might also be another little brother or sister, and they would also be able to inherit the family title. As for Little Pigeon, she might marry into the Royal Palace and become an empress in the future. At that time, his parents should no longer have any regrets…

Lin Ming hadn't been planning on telling his parents what had happened this year, but after the couple had been home for a while, they learned what happened. After Lin Mu heard this news, she was frightened out of her mind.

Especially after she had heard that Lin Ming was soon leaving Sky Fortune Kingdom again, and this time it would be a very long time before he returned. Lin Mu's originally happy mood fell, and she didn't speak for an entire day.

She didn't know what Lin Ming's experiences were when he went out, but what she knew was that it would undoubtedly be dangerous. Not just that, but she wouldn't be able to see her son for several years. Lin Mu wasn't happy at all.

The only one who could make Lin Mu smile was Qin Xingxuan. Although Lin Ming was only friends with Qin Xingxuan, in Lin Mu's opinion, since Lin Ming had brought her back to his home, that was the same as bringing a woman back to meet the in-laws. No matter how Lin Mu looked at it, she was very satisfied with this future wife. Qin Xingxuan had a good background, she was intelligent, kind, well-mannered, and also very beautiful.

Lin Mu made several insinuations, asking many times when Lin Ming would marry and produce some grandchildren that she could hold. Lin Ming didn't know whether to laugh or cry. She might as well wait for Little Pigeon to grow up and have some children herself.

A martial artist traveled throughout the world and had no fixed home. It was simply impossible for them to look after their own child. This was also the reason why most martial artists had children at a very late stage in their life. Normally only when they had reached the end of their potential and stabilized at whatever boundary they were at would they consider having children. Normally, a Revolving Core Supreme Elder wouldn't have children until they were at least a hundred years old.

Lin Ming lived at home quietly for half a month. During this time, he didn't cultivate much. Most of his time was spent accompanying his parents or teasing the Little Pigeon.

It was only late at night that Lin Ming would meditate over the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' left from the Demon Emperor. The more he pondered it, the more incomparably profound he discovered this cultivation method was, and he also encountered many difficulties.

Finally, the day to depart arrived. Lin Ming had to return to Divine Phoenix Island, and Qin Xingxuan would follow him there. As for his bonds with the Seven Profound Valleys, they could already be considered finished.

Next day, early morning –

The fall wind blew, the leaves were withered and yellow, and flocks of birds flew through the bright blue sky to the south. Lin Ming stood under the massive wings of Fireshine, all of his clothes flapping in the breeze blown by the flames.

Behind Lin Ming, Lin Mu covered her mouth, unable to help the tears streaming down her cheeks.

Lin Fu also sighed. He was proud to have a son like this, but to have a son like this also meant that his son was destined to not stay by their side. Otherwise, he would never be able to fly high.

"Father, Mother, take care!" Lin Ming knelt down and bowed his head to the ground three times. Then he jumped onto Fireshine's back. Fireshine opened its massive wings and shot up into the sky with Lin Ming and Qin Xingxuan onboard.

The Vermillion Bird soared into the heavens. The wind howled, and flames dyed the skies red…

Those that walked the road of martial arts were doomed to be alone. They lived long lives, and it was impossible for them to spend their years together with their family.

This was also the reason why many Supreme Elders – such as the Sorcerer of the Southern Wilderness – would return to their homeland after many years and finish the causal bonds that they held with the world they once knew.

"Lin Ming, are we going straight to Divine Phoenix Island?" Qin Xingxuan asked from atop the Vermillion Bird.

"Yes, we're going straight to Divine Phoenix Island!"

Chapter 431 – No Choice Left

Chapter 431 – No Choice Left

…

…

…

Divine Phoenix Island, back mountains, Vermillion Bird Palace –

Divine Phoenix Island's Third Elder, Mu Yanzhuo, strode out of the Vermillion Bird Palace, scowling.

"Third Elder!"

A pair of maids outside of the Vermillion Bird Palace bowed to Mu Yanzhuo.

Mu Yanzhuo only gave a light humph, not bothering to reply to them. As he stepped 100 feet away from the entrance of the main hall, Mu Yanzhuo waved his sleeves and then flew away.

Although there were no rules stating that one could not fly at the Vermilion Bird Palace's front square, Vermillion Bird Palace was still the palace of Mu Yuhuang, and also where the supreme power of the Vermillion Bird Faction lay. A normal person would only fly outside of the square and then walk in, but Mu Yanzhuo no longer bothered to pay attention to any manners or rules. The conversation he had with Mu Yuhuang just a while ago had left him very unhappy.

The Saintess engagement ceremony that he had proposed had been pushed back by Mu Yuhuang. She had found some random excuse to turn it down, and now it was extended indefinitely!

Hu!

A sound transmission talisman lit in front of Mu Yanzhuo; the one who had contacted him was Great Elder Mu Chihuo.

Mu Yanzhuo frowned. His relationship with the Great Elder was average. There were many complex power struggles within the intricate internal stage of Divine Phoenix Island. Mu Yanzhuo was the Third Elder, and represented a faction. As for Mu Chihuo, he also represented another faction.

Between these two great factions, there were many places in which they naturally conflicted. This had led to the relationship between Mu Yanzhuo and Mu Chihuo being discordant – this was unavoidable.

Mu Yanzhuo hesitated and then flew to the Fire Soul Palace where the Great Elder was waiting.

“Haha, Brother Yanzhuo, it’s been a while since we met each other like this. How have you been?” Outside of Fire Soul Palace, Mu Chihuo was wearing a long red robe as he waited there with a smile on his face.

“I thank Brother Chihuo for your concern. I’m fine.” Mu Yanzhuo lightly landed and then cupped his hands together in greetings.

“Fine? What fine, I’m afraid you’re not fine at all!” The Great Elder said with a faint smile.

Mu Yanzhuo frowned, not refuting anything.

“Brother Yanzhuo, I know that you’ve worked very hard for Qingshu’s wedding. But if I could speak frankly, Brother Yanzhuo should just forget about this. It seems that Mu Yuhuang has already decided to have Mu Qianyu marry Lin Ming. Not only that, but looking at how close Mu Qianyu and Lin Ming are, they are both likely willing to agree to this marriage. It seems that Qingshu will have to make other plans in the future!”

Mu Chihuo's words were harsh. Mu Yanzhuo was very sullen. He already knew this, but he was still having trouble accepting this truth.

Mu Chihuo smiled and said, "Brother Yanzhuo is a sensible man. Before, there really were some unpleasant problems between us, but in the end, we are both surnamed Mu. Within the last 3000 years of Divine Phoenix Island, there have been many disciples with different last names that have joined, but in the end they aren't Elders with the same surname. I'm afraid that in the future, Lin Ming will continue to progress and will become an Elder! Lin Ming's status is becoming more and more important. In the future, if he marries Mu Qianyu, he might even become the Island Master of Divine Phoenix Island."

Mu Yanzhuo said, "In these last 3000 years, there has never been someone whose last name was not Mu who became the Island Master. This is basically no different from handing Divine Phoenix Island to others. The Council of Elders would never agree to this; who could guarantee that an outsider wouldn't be harboring evil intentions?"

Divine Phoenix Island was a sect, but in truth they took bloodline heritage very importantly. Most of those on the island had the last name Mu, and it was very similar to a family clan.

A family clan would never hand over the position of family head to an outsider. Therefore, Divine Phoenix Island's Elders would also not accept someone with a different last name becoming the Island Master.

"Hehe, that's not necessarily true. Mu Fengxian very much favors this Lin Ming, and Mu Yuhuang also places a great deal of faith in him too. Not only that, but Lin Ming's potential is simply too terrifying. Brother Yanzhuo may not know, but this time Lin Ming forced his way into the Seven Profound Valleys' Acacia Faction and fought seven or eight Elders of the Acacia Faction by himself. He even defeated the extreme Xiantian Acacia Faction Sovereign!"

"What!?" Mu Yanzhuo's complexion immediately changed. "You say that the late Houtian realm Lin Ming defeated an extreme Xiantian master!?"

"Yes! This is a level of talent that only a future Emperor powerhouse will have. Thus, that is why I said that Lin Ming would become the Island Master of Divine Phoenix Island in the future. Even controlling all of Divine Phoenix Island is not impossible. At that time, we really won't have anywhere to go!"

Mu Yanzhuo's complexion was extremely ugly. He grit his teeth, "If that's the case, then this old man has nothing to say. Lin Ming's rise is simply unstoppable. I will try to advise Qingshu to give up this engagement and focus on cultivating. If his talent is inferior to others, then he can do nothing but accept this fate! Although in the future I will be under the control of others and my influence will slowly decline, I will still be able to survive. It is far better than being destroyed! I urge Brother Chihuo to also not bother with Lin Ming! Such a character will become extremely terrifying once they grow up in the future! If anyone offends him, their deaths later will be extremely miserable!"

Mu Chihuo disdainfully said, "Brother Yanzhuo, why do you try to protect yourself? We have already offended him!"

"Humph, it is only Brother Chihuo that has offended him. Brother Chihuo is like water and fire with Island Master Yuhuang. I, Mu Yanzhuo, do not have the courage to struggle for authority with others. I'm fine with being subject to others. Brother Chihuo should best not try to pull me down too!"

"Hehe," Mu Chihuo suddenly sneered, "Brother Yanzhuo is too naïve. Does Brother Yanzhuo know why Lin Ming killed his way into the Seven Profound Valleys' Acacia Faction?"

Mu Yanzhuo paused. He gave a light humph and then didn't reply. He didn't know the circumstances between Lin Ming and Ouyang Boyan. To Divine Phoenix Island, anything like these minor matters that happened within Sky Fortune Kingdom were no different than little ants fighting. It was not enough to arouse the interest of Divine Phoenix Island, not to mention that Divine Phoenix Island was already busy with the chaos caused by the war they were in.

Mu Chihuo laughed and said, “Several months ago, news of Lin Ming’s death had been passed onto the Seven Profound territory. One of Lin Ming’s enemies wanted to use this chance to take some revenge, and decided to retaliate against the Lin Family and also forced a little girl that Lin Ming is extremely close to into a dead end. The ones who did this were the Seven Profound Valleys’ Acacia Faction. This was the reason that Lin Ming killed his way into the Acacia Faction. In fact, all of the people that he killed were Elders of the Acacia Faction, Xiantian masters.”

“And? So what?”

“Hehe, it seems that Brother Yanzhuo really doesn’t know. Brother Yanzhuo, think for a bit. If Lin Ming’s family and friends were forced to the brink of death, why would they not ask for help from Divine Phoenix Island? After all, they know that Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu are friends. However, what is unfortunate is that Mu Qianyu was together with your grandson Mu Qingshu. Then, for some unknown reason, your grandson decided to burn away the letter that was sent to Mu Qianyu. In fact, he burned away multiple letters, not giving any of them to Mu Qianyu. Afterwards, this almost caused that girl who has an intimate relation with Lin Ming to die on the battlefield.”

As Mu Chihuo slowly spoke, Mu Yanzhuo’s expression didn’t change at all. Mu Chihuo wouldn’t lie about something like this, and there was a very high chance this was true. Mu Chihuo was aware of what sort of personality Mu Qingshu had, and it was likely that he would do something like this.

Mu Yanzhuo’s eyebrows rose. He flared at the Great Elder, and then coldly said, “You have someone spying on my arrangements?”

If this Great Elder hadn’t hidden some spy within his own people, then he would never know such trivial matters.

“Haha, Brother Yanzhuo shouldn’t speak so harshly. It’s best to spend this time to think about how to deal with Lin Ming’s anger. This Lin Ming is a person who will definitely take vengeance on any grudges he has; one just needs to look at the miserable state of the Acacia

Faction to find out. Once Lin Ming returns to Divine Phoenix Island, he will inevitably investigate this matter and try to trace back clues. In the past, your grandson thought that Lin Ming had died, so he was very casual in his actions and wasn't clean in erasing his traces. If Lin Ming investigates this matter, it won't be difficult to find out who it was. With Lin Ming's current ability, he won't be able to harm Qingshu. But in the future, after Lin Ming reaches the Revolving Core realm, will Brother Yanzhuo still be able to protect Qingshu? At that time, perhaps Qingshu…"

As Mu Chihuo spoke he began to shake his head. Mu Yanzhuo grimaced. Mu Qingshu was his bloodline's most outstanding character. If there weren't any accidents, he would become an Elder in the future and take over his position.

The position of an Elder was extremely important. If a faction didn't have an Elder, they would have no power within the upper echelons of the sect. The result was that they would slowly wither away, and finally disappear.

If this was a normal conflict, Mu Yanzhuo would apologize. But in this matter, even if it were Mu Yanzhuo who had committed it, Lin Ming still might not forget it!

Mu Yanzhuo's expression changed several times. Finally, he asked with a true essence sound transmission, "Does Brother Chihuo have a plan?" In Mu Yanzhuo's opinion, with Lin Ming's current talent and strength, in addition to Mu Fengxian's support, it was impossible to pose a threat to Lin Ming even if he joined with Mu Chihuo.

"Brother Yanzhuo, there is no need to worry. There is always a way. Brother Yanzhuo, how about we return to my Fire Soul Palace and then slowly discuss this matter?"

Mu Yanzhuo nodded. He simply had no choice left.

…………………………

On an island 1000 miles away from Divine Phoenix Island, the reef was rugged and the waves surged against the beach.

A squad of Divine Phoenix Island disciples were carrying out a routine patrol. Just before noon, the Xiantian leader of this squad suddenly saw a bright flame in the distant skies. His eyesight was exceptional, so he was the first one to see that it was a Vermillion Bird!

And also a fully grown Vermillion Bird!

Divine Phoenix Island only had a few grown Vermillion Birds. Those that could ride a Vermillion Bird out to travel were most likely Elders.

The disciple immediately lit a sound transmitting talisman.

……………………

In the center of a small island, in an elegant small building, Mu Qianyu was watering flowers.

These past days, Mu Qianyu had been in a very good mood. When she had spare time, she would plant some flowers and plants.

Mu Qingshu was standing in the courtyard, silently looking at Mu Qianyu watering flowers.

These days, Mu Qianyu's attitude towards him was much better than before. But this sudden change in attitude did not make Mu Qingshu happy.

Since Mu Qingshu had learned that Lin Ming was still alive, he had a very poor complexion. It wasn't that Lin Ming was still alive, but because his cultivation had already reached the late Houtian realm.

A 17 year old with a late Houtian realm cultivation had already surpassed Mu Qianyu when she was at this age.

This caused Mu Qingshu to feel a deep sense of crisis. If this speed continued, then perhaps in a few years, Lin Ming's strength would outstrip his own.

When that time came, he would not have the slightest advantage.

These next few years were his last chance.

Mu Qingshu already has his grandfather try to make final effort. Although the chances weren't great, his still had a glimmer of hope. That was because he had an enormous advantage over Lin Ming, and that was that his last name was Mu.

At this moment, a flame suddenly shone in front of Mu Qingshu.

"Mm? Some people are coming here on a Vermillion Bird?"

....

Chapter 432 – I'll Compensate

Chapter 432 – I'll Compensate

…

…

…

During these chaotic times of war, those that rode a Vermillion Bird to travel were most likely Elders, 'Could there possibly be news from Grandfather's side?'

As Mu Qingshu thought of this, he was conflicted. The Council of Elders within Divine Phoenix Island was mainly composed of conservative old hypocrites. It wasn't necessarily true that they would allow Lin Ming to become a leader of power in the future, so the situation wasn't hopeless for him.

As Mu Qingshu was lost in his thoughts, he heard the high-pitched phoenix cry of the Vermillion Bird. The Vermillion Bird was extremely fast; just a few breaths of time after Mu Qingshu had received the sound transmitting talisman, it had already flown over the island's skies.

Mu Qianyu was momentarily startled. She lay down the flower pot in her hands and looked towards the skies.

Hu!

The Vermillion Bird landed on the ground, setting off a wild wind that blew away the surrounding greenery.

There was a man and a woman standing on top of the Vermillion Bird. The young man was a handsome youth. As he smiled, his eyes were soft, but they contained an inexplicably fierce will. The girl that stood behind him was delicate, but her attitude was a bit cautious.

They were Lin Ming and Qin Xingxuan.

Lin Ming didn't return straight to Divine Phoenix Island. Instead, as he was crossing a South Sea transmission array, he asked a disciple who was stationed there where Mu Qianyu was and came to look for her first.

Lin Ming had an exceptionally warm feeling towards Mu Qianyu. In a way, it could be said that Lin Ming was willing to contribute to Divine Phoenix Island mostly because of Mu Qianyu.

When Lin Ming had first left the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, if it wasn't because he was frantically trying to rescue Qin Xingxuan, he would have looked for Mu Qianyu first.

As Mu Qingshu saw Lin Ming appear, the smile on his face instantly froze.

Lin Ming!

It was actually him!

As Mu Qingshu saw Lin Ming's smiling face, he felt like he had eaten a fly. For now, he had to consider protocol. He could only hide the disgust and loathing he felt in his heart, and keep on a fairly calm expression.

"Lin Ming!" Mu Qianyu lightly breathed out. She looked as she usually did, but it was hard to conceal the joy shining in her eyes.

"Senior-apprentice Sister Mu." Lin Ming hopped off the back of the Vermillion Bird. Qin Xingxuan also followed him, carefully jumping off Fireshine and then politely standing behind him. She was still a bit stiff and unsure; she had already heard that Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu were very close.

As Qin Xingxuan came down, Mu Qianyu's vision also fell onto her. After several breaths of time, she began to see Qin Xingxuan squirm a bit, like a cat on a hot floor. At this moment, Mu Qianyu faintly smiled and said, "Is this Miss Qin? I've just recently heard of Miss Qin's problems. Since the Qin Family was in distress, that is also an oversight on my part. I'm really glad that Miss Qin is safe and sound."

"Your Highness Saintess is too kind." Qin Xingxuan respectfully bowed. This was the first time that she had seen Mu Qianyu. She had already heard that the Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island was a divine fairy maiden of the world. When Qin Xingxuan saw her today, there was inevitably a small part of her self-esteem that felt inferior. No matter how she saw it, in terms of status, strength, or anything else, she was simply unable to compare with Mu Qianyu. This caused Qin Xingxuan's aura to weaken by several degrees.

"This is..." Lin Ming turned his eyes to Mu Qingshu.

"I am Mu Qingshu, I've heard Junior-apprentice Brother Lin's great name already. I'm glad to meet you!" Mu Qingshu cupped his fists together, keeping a neutral tone.

"So it's Senior-apprentice Brother Qingshu." Lin Ming politely greeted him in return. But at this time, a true essence sound transmission sounded in Lin Ming's ear. "Be careful of Mu Qingshu. Because of some... reasons... he might harbor some hostility towards you."

"Mm? Have I done something to offend him?" Lin Ming asked, slightly startled.

"This..." Mu Qianyu didn't know what to say, so she vaguely said, "just be careful!"

"Got it." Lin Ming marked this down.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, since you've been within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm for such a long time, you must have gotten some great lucky chance right?" Mu Qingshu indifferently asked.

"Mm, I found some lucky chances, that's why I was stranded in their for so long and caused everyone to worry."

‘Worry?’ Mu Qingshu sneered in his heart, ‘What I worry about is how you didn’t die.’ As Mu Qingshu thought this, he turned away. He feared that if he kept facing Lin Ming, he wouldn’t be able to continue suppressing the hatred he felt in his heart.

Mu Qianyu heard Lin Ming’s words and said, “It’s been a full 10 months; it’s truly been a long time. Fortunately you still managed to come out in time, otherwise there would have been a tragedy.”

As Mu Qianyu spoke, her eyes turned to Qin Xingxuan, “Miss Qin, the truth is, if the Qin Family had met with any troubles, you could have sent a letter to me. If I knew that any of this was happening, I would have immediately come to help in any way I could have. Miss Qin, there is no need to be a stranger.”

“Mm…” Qin Xingxuan frowned. She naturally knew of the letters that Qin Ziya had sent to Mu Qianyu. As she listened to Mu Qianyu’s tone of voice, she didn’t know what to take from it. Looking at her sincere and honest expression, it didn’t seem like she was lying. Qin Xingxuan bit her lips and wasn’t sure if she would say anything. At this time, Lin Ming said, “Miss Mu, when the Qin Family was in dire trouble, my Elder wrote two letters to Miss Mu. But it seems as if these letters disappeared somewhere, and there was never a response.

At these words, Mu Qingshu’s eyebrows jumped. He felt weak at heart, but he continued to maintain his tranquil expression, casually standing by the side.

Mu Qianyu frowned. “You’ve written two letters and they disappeared?”

“Yes.”

“It’s… they might have been lost in the chaos of war.” Mu Qianyu thoughtfully said, not even glancing at Mu Qingshu from the corner of her eyes.

“Is that really so?” Lin Ming didn’t really believe Mu Qianyu’s assumption. The truth was that transmission arrays that passed on letters weren’t really affected by the conflict of war. Not just that, but for two letters to be completely lost seemed a bit unjustified.

“It should be like that.” As Mu Qianyu spoke, she also sent Lin Ming a true essence sound transmission, “I’ll investigate this matter. Junior-apprentice Brother Lin shouldn’t worry. I will give Junior-apprentice Brother Lin a full account of what happened.”

Lin Ming was stunned. There could only be one reason that Mu Qianyu had spoken to him with a true essence sound transmission, and that was to guard against a person. That person could only be Mu Qingshu.

Lin Ming was doubtful, “I’ve offended Mu Qingshu?”

“This…” Mu Qianyu was speechless. How could she possibly speak of what happened? Should she tell Lin Ming that the Elders wanted her to marry Mu Qingshu, and that was why Mu Qingshu’s envy was aroused? And that even later, this engagement was postponed? Wasn’t that implying that Honorable Master Yuhuang was trying to facilitate a marriage between her and Lin Ming?

As Mu Qianyu thought of marriage, her heart was a mess. Her personality deviated towards being independent and free. She did not desire the emotions that lay between men and women, and only wished to pursue the peak of martial artists.

As for what she felt towards Lin Ming, even Mu Qianyu wasn’t clear of it.

Between her and Lin Ming, from the curiosity she felt towards him that became admiration, the two of them should have become close friends and confidants. However, because of those ambiguous experiences within Thundercrash Mountain, a great deal of confusion had been mixed in with these feelings.

Mu Qianyu had followed Mu Yuhuang ever since she was a little child. From then until now, she had very little contact with men, much less having a man touch her body.

Mu Qianyu also couldn’t help but acknowledge that when she had learnt of Lin Ming’s death, she was extremely heartbroken, as if she had lost her soul and everything was gone.

Thinking of this, Mu Qianyu unconsciously glanced at Qin Xingxuan. She looked as if she wanted to say something, but eventually didn't speak at all...

As for Lin Ming, ever since he learned that someone may have sabotaged the sent letters, his expression had sank. Regardless of who it was, once he learnt of it, he would never let this matter go.

"Lin Ming, let's go back to Divine Phoenix Island together. Honorable Master is probably impatient."

"Mm, alright."

....

Divine Phoenix Island, Vermillion Bird Palace –

The front door of the Elders' meeting hall was crafted by 1000 year parasol tree wood. Within the meeting hall there was a 30 foot long table with 10 parasol tree chairs. Nine year flame flowers filled the room. These flowers blossomed after nine years, and after blossoming, they were able to absorb fire origin energy. They were extremely rare fire-attribute spiritual plants. These flowers were very beautiful and were mainly used for decoration around the rooms in Divine Phoenix Island.

Mu Yuhuang sat at the seat of honor, and Mu Qianyu sat beside her. There was also seven or eight individuals gathered in the surrounding wooden chairs. Of these seven or eight people, Lin Ming had only seen one before, and that was Revered Master Tianguang, Mu Tianguang.

Beside Mu Tianguang was an old woman dressed in red. Her two eyebrows were over a foot long, and all her hair was red; she looked somewhat similar to Ancestor Chi Yan.

Lin Ming's soul force was much more formidable now than it used to be, so he was able to faintly feel the level of her cultivation. This old woman was at the middle Revolving Core realm. Within Divine Phoenix Island, most of the Elders were at the early Revolving Core realm. Someone at the middle Revolving Core realm was considered quite strong.

As the old woman saw Lin Ming look at her, she smiled and nodded.

Lin Ming smiled back in return. During this time in front of the Council of Elders, Lin Ming had suppressed his own energy as much as possible in order to show his respect and humbleness.

Besides this long eyebrow old woman, most of the others here were also woman. As they looked at Lin Ming, their expressions varied. Some appeared appreciative, and some weakly smiled. There were also a few that completely ignored Lin Ming, not bothering to acknowledge him at all.

The Council of Elders was the highest authority center within Divine Phoenix Island. All of these Elders were truly powerful characters within Divine Phoenix Island. As long as any four or five of them joined together, that was enough to place sufficient pressure onto Mu Yuhuang.

Mu Tianguang was actually extremely friendly to Lin Ming. After he sat down, he began to look of Lin Ming. As he sensed the profound true essence fluctuations within Lin Ming's body, he was very surprised. It was simply hard to imagine that these were the true essence fluctuations that could come from a Houtian realm martial artist. However, as he looked over Lin Ming's dantian, he was able to see that the true essence hadn't yet formed a cyclone there and was still scattered. Evidently, he still hadn't set foot into the Xiantian realm.

"Lin Ming, during your time within Divine Phoenix Island you must have greatly benefited." Mu Tianguang smiled as he spoke.

"Mm, disciple's luck has been good, and I've managed to obtain some lucky chances; that's also why I was stranded there for so long."

"Good. If you can grow up faster, then that will be another great war force added to our Divine Phoenix Island!" Mu Tianguang chuckled. Of course, he was only speaking thoughtlessly, he didn't really believe that Lin Ming would be able to play any significant role in the war between Divine Phoenix Island and the South Sea Demon Region. In a fight of this level, even an early Revolving Core powerhouse was limited in what they were able to accomplish. As for Lin Ming, his cultivation was far below that.

As the Elders began to arrive one after another, with the Vermillion Bird Faction and the Blue Luan Faction added together, there were around 20 Elders in this Divine Phoenix Island council in total.

At this moment, the meeting hall door swung open, and a tall, vigorous looking old man walked in. Behind this old man, there was a very diminutive looking old man with calm eyes who was walking in using a 10,000 year old parasol tree cane.

These two were Divine Phoenix Island's Vermillion Bird Faction Great Elder Mu Chihuo as well as Third Elder Mu Yanzhuo.

Mu Chihuo swept his eyes over everyone present. He finally glanced at Lin Ming, and then smiled a bit, before heading straight to his seat.

Mu Yuhuang coldly looked at these two old men that sat in their seats and then calmly said, "During this conference of Elders, there are three matters that will be discussed. First there is the announcement of a new appointment. Second is the war plan against the South Sea Demon Region that will occur next month. And third is that Lin Ming will narrate his experiences within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm."

The Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was vital to the existence of Divine Phoenix Island. However, Divine Phoenix Island only had an extremely limited understanding of just what the Divine Phoenix Mystic was. Every time a disciple returned from the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, they would reiterate their experiences for future reference and information.

This time, Lin Ming had been stranded within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm for almost an entire year. Naturally, the information of what he had experienced inside was extremely significant; it would allow Divine Phoenix Island to deepen their insight into the

Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. Therefore Mu Yuhuang had especially convened the Council of Elders in order to allow Lin Ming to narrate his experiences.

Of course, this meeting of Elders also had another meaning behind it, and that was to allow the Council of Elders to affirm Lin Ming's value.

"First, I will speak of the new appointment. I propose that Lin Ming be appointed as the new Vermillion Bird Envoy. I wonder what everyone thinks about this?"

Divine Phoenix Island's Vermillion Bird Envoy was usually aimed at Xiantian disciples. There were extremely few cases in which Houtian disciples were appointed. The appointment of a Vermillion Bird Envoy meant that the disciple was a future candidate for an Elder.

If one became a Vermillion Bird Envoy, not only would they have true authority, but they would also enjoy rich resources.

Since Mu Yuhuang said these words, that was equal to appointing Lin Ming as an Elder ahead of time.

Regarding this matter, nearly half of the Elders reacted calmly. This was already within their calculations, everyone could see just how much Mu Yuhuang valued Lin Ming.

However, there was a section of Elders that frowned. If Lin Ming became an Elder with real power that didn't share their last name, then that was similar to a foreign official serving at one's court. It normally wouldn't mean too much, but now with how much Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian valued Lin Ming – along with his amazing talent – it wouldn't be as simple as just being an Elder with a different surname.

Divine Phoenix Island was a sect that was very similar to a family clan. Most of the Elders shared the last name Mu, and it was very difficult for those with a different last name to become an Elder with true power and authority. 1000 years ago, there was an Elder who appeared that was not from the Mu Family. He had betrayed Divine Phoenix Island, causing them to suffer massive losses. Divine Phoenix Island had never forgotten this.

With Lin Ming's talent, in the future his authority would only grow. This was equal to handing over the entire Divine Phoenix Island to Lin Ming; it was difficult to say just what Lin Ming's character was!

The atmosphere suddenly became quiet.

After several breaths of time, the Great Elder slowly stood up and said, "This old man does not have an opinion on the Sect Master's decision to appoint Lin Ming as the Vermillion Bird Envoy. However, this old man only wishes to ask Lin Ming some questions about a matter."

Mu Yuhuang's expression was cold, she had a very poor relationship with Mu Chihuo. "What matter?"

The Great Elder stood up and smiled as he looked at Lin Ming. He slowly said, "According to what this old man knows, when you were stranded within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm and news of your death spread, there was an enemy of yours who wished to take revenge and retaliate against your family and friends, and even forced a girl that you are very intimate with into a hopeless situation where she would die. When you broke through the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, you hurried to rescue this girl. This girl's life was near its end, and she was about to die. Thus, you took 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence as a price in order to revive this girl's blood essence and revive her. This girl is a medium sixth-grade talent, and her cultivation is at the Pulse Condensation period. Besides her appearance being simple and beautiful, she has no other strong points. Also, she has no relations to my Divine Phoenix Island. I wonder if anyone knows of this matter?"

The Great Elder's words were extremely vicious. 'Besides her appearance being simple and beautiful, she has no other strong points' that was simply saying that Lin Ming drooled and lusted over Qin Xingxuan's beauty, and that was the reason that he took out 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence to save her!

With just these few words, the expression of all the Elders present changed. Their eyes all turned to closely look at Lin Ming. For a time, the vision of all these Revolving Core masters was completely concentrated on a single person – the pressure could be imagined!

Even Mu Yuhuang's willowy eyebrows were pinched together. If this was true, then this would really lead to massive outrage. Vermillion Bird blood essence was beyond precious! Just one or two drops of this blood essence was able to create a Revolving Core Supreme Elder!

Divine Phoenix Island had countless disciples and many lower level Elders that dreamed of being able to obtain just a single drop of Vermillion Bird blood essence so that they could cultivate the core parts of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. However, there was a limited supply of Vermillion Bird blood essence. Mu Yuhuang had defied the pressure of everyone and given Lin Ming all the Vermillion Bird blood essence. This had already caused dissatisfaction among many Elders. Yet Lin Ming had wasted away 10 drops of this Vermillion Bird blood essence in a single go. Because of the deep and private love between a man and a woman, Lin Ming had rescued this girl's life with this high price. This would inevitably cause anger among many Elders, and touch upon their point of rage!

Even Mu Yuhuang who favored Lin Ming to the extreme was disgruntled by this act!

Everyone waited for Lin Ming's reply. At this time, the atmosphere was filled with a terrifying silence, as if the air itself was condensed into essence. All of the Elders, including the long eye browed old woman who had been friendly, were currently glowering at Lin Ming. Only the Great Elder was still faintly smiling as he smirked, calmly looking at Lin Ming.

Against such a enormous pressure, Lin Ming was still as calm as before. He looked at everyone present, and then after several breaths of time, he deeply said, "Everything that the Great Elder said is true!"

With just these words, all of the Elders present were thrown into a boiling rage. Several Elders that were already skeptical of Lin Ming's character immediately stood up, "Lin Ming! You've got guts! Who gave you this authority!? For just your own affairs you wasted away 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence!"

“To trade the life of some young girl for 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence, Lin Ming, you have really opened this old woman’s eyes!”

“If you used 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence to trade for a girl’s life, then another day, after you become a truly powerful Elder of Divine Phoenix Island, won’t you even give away the entire Divine Phoenix Island as a gift to some demonic sect? As this old woman knows, the current spiritual leader of the South Sea Demon Region is an extremely beautiful woman!” The long eyebrow woman shook her head as she looked at Lin Ming with disappointment.

“How great of you! As long as he had two drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence, this old woman’s grandson would be able to practice the core sections of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. He diligently practices, is not bitter, and yet he still cannot obtain any, unlike you! You actually used 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence to rescue a piece of trash!” The old woman’s voice was very shrill, and her words were sharp and cruel!

In the eyes of these Elders, a sixth-grade talent that didn’t have the Vermillion Bird bloodline still couldn’t be considered trash, but, even if several hundred of these people were added together, they would still be unworthy of a single drop of Vermillion Bird blood essence. To even use half a drop on her was a waste!

Of all the Elders present, their words were all one-sided scolding. Mu Qianyu sighed, she was the only one here that understood Lin Ming. It could only be said that Lin Ming was swayed too much by his emotions and feelings of righteousness. However, what he did was hard to explain!

Lin Ming was willing to take the criticism of all these Elders in his stride. That was, until someone labeled Qin Xingxuan as a piece of trash. Then, Lin Ming’s eyebrows rose up in anger. He coldly said, “I, Lin Ming, will compensate for these 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence!”

“Compensate!? Hahaha!” The Great Elder savagely smiled, “This old man has really heard the funniest joke. 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence is equal to 10 Revolving Core masters; just what do you have to compensate?”

Chapter 433 – Blood Red Jade Slip

Chapter 433 – Blood Red Jade Slip

…

…

…

After hearing that Lin Ming would compensate for the 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence, not only did Great Elder Mu Chihuo laugh, but all the other Elders thought this was farcical. A red-robed old man coldly snorted and said, "The value of a single drop of Vermillion Bird blood essence is inestimable. This old woman wants to see whether or not you have anything worthy of compensating for it!

This red-robed old woman was the one that had just called Qin Xingxuan a piece of trash.

"The reason that Divine Phoenix Island gave you the Vermillion Bird blood essence was not for you to give it to others, and especially not to waste it to court some random hussy! Exactly what qualifications do you have to do this!?"

This red-robed old lady spoke aggressively and also recklessly sent out her aura, directly pressuring Lin Ming. If it wasn't for her grandson lacking some Vermillion Bird blood essence, he would have absolutely been able to break through to the Revolving Core realm. This caused the red-robed old woman to feel a deep resentment. Now, with Lin Ming's words, she used her aura to pressure Lin Ming!

For a middle Revolving Core Supreme Elder to send out an aura to oppress a Houtian master, it would be able to frighten him out of his wits!

But this red-obed old woman knew that Lin Ming wasn't an ordinary Houtian master. She wouldn't be able to kill him with her aura. The most she could do was embarrass him and make him wet his pants. Thus she did not lighten her hand at all, releasing her aura with full force.

As soon as Mu Yuhuang saw this her complexion changed. She immediately wanted to stop this, but as she raised her hand halfway, she noticed that Lin Ming had induced too much onto himself; she simply couldn't resist the outrage that had been stirred up in order to protect Lin Ming. Not just that, but Mu Yuhuang was also very dissatisfied with what Lin Ming had done this time.

As for the Great Elder, he wasn't bothering to hide his smile, he was waiting for Lin Ming to make a fool of himself.

However, Lin Ming sat still tightly in his seat. His face was not red, and his heart wasn't palpitating – he didn't even look troubled. It was as if the red-robed old woman's aura was just like the air.

Mm?

The red-robed old woman was shocked. She had released her full aura in order to suppress a junior, but now she was being completely ignored? How was this possible!?

It had to be known that even within the boundaries of the Revolving Core Elders, if an early Revolving Core master was being suppressed by a middle Revolving Core master, they wouldn't be able to be so relaxed!

She thought that Lin Ming would be overwhelmed, unable to withstand the pressure and begin to grit his teeth and sweat. But she didn't expect that he would simply ignore her. What face did she have left?

Unable to stop from embarrassment, the red-robed old woman revolved all of her true essence and began to galvanize her aura to the extreme. Seven of the fire flowers near her had their petals blown away by her momentum. But Lin Ming only coldly looked at her, remaining completely unmoved.

All of the Elders present were awed. The red-robed old woman was a top ranked Elder among those present. Lin Ming was strong, but there was no way he was strong to this degree. How was this possible?

Lin Ming calmly stood up, his eyes coldly glaring at the old woman. He slowly said, “I, Lin Ming, have truly used the Vermillion Bird blood essence to save a girl. This girl was forced into a desperate situation because of me. She was alone and in despair. Not only that, but I also owe her graciousness for her kindness to me in the past. Even if it wasn’t so, I would still not sit idly by and do nothing at all. If it’s as Senior says, then in the relationships between people, is the only important factor how valuable they are? Is the only measure in which they can be evaluated how much they can be used?”

Lin Ming’s words were combative. As he spoke, the Ancient Phoenix bloodline from within his eyebrows naturally emitted, releasing a pulsing aura that caused everyone’s hearts to quicken. The woman in red bore the brunt of this momentum, and her heart suddenly stopped for a moment. She didn’t know why, but at the time, she felt the very depths of her being tremble. It was as if this was… bloodline suppression.

Hu-

An incredible scene took place. The red-robed old woman’s aura was like late winter snow. In just a few breaths, it completely melted away!

Mm?

All of the Elders present turned to Lin Ming, the look in their eyes changing.

Lin Ming calmly stood in front of the table as before. He indifferently said, “Divine Phoenix Island has been kind to Lin Ming. I was originally planning to freely offer something to Divine Phoenix Island, but since everyone intends to be so calculating about ‘worth’ and ‘value’, I shall offer this object to Divine Phoenix Island as per the rules. Great Elder, if Lin Ming is not wrong, then the rules of Divine Phoenix Island state that after entering the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, any treasures obtained belong to whoever obtained them, and they could also be exchanged with Divine Phoenix Island for resources of an equal value. Am I correct?"

"That's right!" Mu Chihuo's eyes jumped. He was still startled thinking about the scene where Lin Ming so easily broke apart an Elder's aura.

"Since that's the case, I shall hand out part of this object in exchange for 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence. As for the rest, we shall negotiate further!"

"What!?"

With these words, everyone was shocked.

Hand out part of an object in exchange for 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence and then negotiate for the rest!?

Listening to Lin Ming's words, he seemed think that whatever he had to offer was actually equal to at least 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence?

The Great Elder's expression sank, "Lin Ming, this old man wants to see just what you can take out!"

"Then I shall have to ask Honorable Sect Master to take a look."

As Lin Ming spoke, he took out a blood red jade slip from his spatial ring. This jade slip was twice as large a normal jade slip, and the face of the jade slip was crisscrossed with crimson lines. It looked extremely mysterious.

Mm? Jade slip?

Cultivation method?

All of the Elders present were startled. As for the Great Elder Mu Chihuo, his eyes were riveted to the jade slip. No matter how he looked, he didn't know what to think.

This jade slip was obviously from the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm!

What could it be?

Cultivation method? Martial skill?

Mu Yuhuang deeply looked at Lin Ming before she took hold of the jade slip. As she held it, she felt as if she were holding onto an object from ancient times. Brilliant flames shined on the jade slip, and it emitted a very ancient and profound energy – this was certainly an extraordinary object!

Mu Qianyu was sitting beside Mu Yuhuang. As she looked at this jade slip, she turned to look at Lin Ming, her heart racing. She silently waited for Mu Yuhuang to reveal the results of her investigation.

As Mu Yuhuang slipped her sense into the jade slip, her heart suddenly shook; the beginning of the jade slip was the first layer of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'.

Could it be…

Mu Yuhuang suddenly realized a possibility, and that was that this jade slip Lin Ming had brought back was able to fill in the flaws of the current 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle!'

If this was so, the value of this jade slip was difficult to imagine.

As she silently looked down, Mu Yuhuang swept past the fifth layer of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. As she saw the sixth layer, she gasped, her eyes flickered and her breathing became rapid!

With Mu Yuhuang's understanding of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', she was certainly able to determine whether this cultivation method was real or fake.

The founder of Divine Phoenix Island had obtained only the first five layers of the cultivation method. But even with so many flaws, the ‘Vermilion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ was not inferior to any cultivation method of a fifth-grade sect, or even a Holy Land! It was only that one needed the Vermillion Bird bloodline in order to practice this cultivation method. Thus, this cultivation method was not coveted by fifth-grade sects.

The higher this cultivation method went, the more terrifying its might was. With the first six layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’, it would become a top cultivation method capable of creating an Emperor level powerhouse!

If this cultivation method was obtained by Divine Phoenix Island, then there was a possibility that they could become a Holy Land!

This was certainly not something that several drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence could compare with. Even if it were a few dozen drops, or even a hundreds drops, it simply could not compare!

However, at this moment, the unbelievable occurred. After the sixth layer of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’, there was actually the seventh layer!

Heavens!

The seventh layer of the cultivation method!

Mu Yuhuang’s hands actually began to slightly tremble. As the Elders present saw this, their eyes began to change. They looked at the jade slip in Mu Yuhuang’s hands – just what did Lin Ming bring back that could cause her to have such a violent reaction?

Then, after she looked at the seventh layer of the cultivation method, Mu Yuhuang’s heart nearly stopped for a moment. After the seventh layer of the cultivation method was shockingly…

The eighth layer of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’!

Eighth layer…

Mu Yuhuang felt cataclysmic waves going off in her heart and mind, as if the world itself were overturning. How powerful the eighth layer of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ was, she simply could not imagine.

Mu Yuhuang’s fingers trembled and she had to use her hand to support herself on the table. She looked at Lin Ming with absolute amazement in her eyes.

“Sect Master, just what is in that jade slip?” The red-robed old woman who had been arguing with Lin Ming couldn’t help but ask as she saw Mu Yuhuang’s violent reaction.

Mu Yuhuang laid down the jade slip and closed her eyes in order to restore her tranquil mood. After a long time, she handed over the jade slip and said, “See for yourself.”

As the red-robed old woman received the jade slip, she was already able to faintly guess what it was. There was probably only a single situation in this world that could cause Mu Yuhuang to react like this.

Her sense swept down. Suddenly, the red-robed old woman’s heart shook – it was true!

However, as she continued, her expression became increasingly stunned, shocked, and awed. Finally, she felt completely slack-jawed.

Although she had prepared in advance, she had never imagined that this jade slip would contain the eighth layer of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle!’

“What is it?” The surrounding Elders asked together.

“The ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’…” The red robed old woman whispered. She turned to look at Lin Ming, and then after several breaths of time, she haltingly said, “The first eight layers of the cultivation method!”

“What?”

“First eight layers?”

All of the Elders were shocked beyond measure. When they had seen Mu Yuhuang react like that, they already had some faint guesses in their heart. But when the red-robed old woman spoke the truth, they finally realized that they had far underestimated just how terrifying this jade slip was.

Third Elder Mu Yanzhuo looked completely befuddled. He looked at Lin Ming and felt an increasing amount of awe in his heart. When the founder of Divine Phoenix Island had first entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, she had found a great lucky chance and obtained the first five layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ cultivation method. After that, she had founded Divine Phoenix Island. But now, Lin Ming had taken out the first eight layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ from the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. How!? He simply couldn’t imagine the circumstances.

The Great Elder also looked gloomy. As he looked at the blood red jade slip in Mu Yuhuang’s hands, his fists clenched together; he didn’t know just what to think.

The other Elders had various looks. If it was just the complete first five layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ cultivation method, then they would already be delighted. It had to be known that they had all reached the fifth layer of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. However, many of them were still stranded at the early Revolving Core realm or middle Revolving Core realm. If they wished to break through to a higher step, they had to reconsolidate the fifth layer of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ in order to purify their understanding of this cultivation method and try to make a breakthrough.

This was all because they did not have the sixth layer of the cultivation method!

Chapter 434 – Sitting and Gathering Treasures

Chapter 434 – Sitting and Gathering Treasures

…

…

…

If they had the sixth layer of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', they would be able to directly cultivate to the sixth layer. Even if their foundation was bad, it was still far faster than repeatedly consolidating and building up the first five layers!

Anyway, these Elders no longer hoped or expected to become an Emperor level powerhouse, what did it matter to them if their foundation was bad?

To achieve the late Revolving Core realm or even the extreme Revolving Core realm was already their life's greatest goal.

Thinking this, everyone's eyes became eager and ardent. Some people were extremely regretful that they had tried to argue with Lin Ming a moment ago. In the end, the struggle for Vermillion Bird blood essence was a matter of juniors. If they could make a breakthrough, increase their strength and also extend their lives by a few hundred years, then whatever struggles the juniors went through were irrelevant!

Compared to the eight layers of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence were simply nothing to speak of!

Everyone's eyes unanimously focused on Lin Ming, their vision earnest.

According to the rules of Divine Phoenix Island, everything that was obtained from the Divine Phoenix Island smelting trials fully belonged to the one who obtained it. Not only could they exchange it to the sect, but they could also exchange it to the Elders as long as both sides were satisfied with the term.

Of course, these Elders didn't expect to solely own this blood red jade slip, it was already enough to be the first one to enjoy it. As for the jade slip, there was only one. Meanwhile, there were over a dozen Vermillion Bird Faction Elders. If an Elder meditated over a jade slip, it would at least take a month or two. For all of them to have a look, it would take one or two years.

All the Elders that had been glaring at Lin Ming seemed to have completely forgotten the embarrassing scene from a moment ago. A white-haired old woman asked, "Nephew Lin, what are you planning on exchanging that jade slip for with the sect?"

"This old man has a 900 year old Sunfire Flower. I wonder if Nephew Lin is interested?"

As another Elder butted in, everyone looked at him with contempt.

A mere 900 year old Sunfire Flower? Really? This old man actually had the gall to bring up something like that?

The atmosphere was becoming increasingly fiery, even Great Elder Mu Chihuo had an extremely ugly expression. Of course he greatly desired to study the eight layers of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' too, but how could Lin Ming possibly give it to him?

Mu Chihuo grit his teeth and said to Lin Ming, "Lin Ming! What do you want in exchange!?"

Lin Ming faintly smiled. "Before, I was planning on freely offering this as a gift to Divine Phoenix Island. But now, I have changed my mind! I will lend this jade slip to Divine Phoenix Island for 100 days, and that should be sufficient for the value of 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence!"

"What!?"

Mu Chihuo’s complexion sank. Lin Ming was actually only lending the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ jade slip to Divine Phoenix Island for 100 days!

Pondering a jade slip through meditation was an extremely slow process. In order to understand it, meditating over it for one or two months was nothing strange. If Lin Ming lent this jade slip out for 100 days, at most that would only be enough time for three people to study it!

However, even having said that, before Lin Ming had obtained the this jade slip, if the Elders present knew that they could exchange three drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence in order to study the first eight layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ for a month, they would have been tripping over themselves to rush for this chance.

But now that Lin Ming had brought the jade slip back, the Elders had regarded this jade slip as property of Divine Phoenix Island. To trade 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence for 100 days, how could they possibly agree to that?!

Lin Ming didn’t seem affected. He unhurriedly said, “I’m not done speaking. After this 100 days, for the rest of the time, if any Elders wish to study it, we can continue to discuss terms. If both sides are satisfied then the jade slip can be continued to be lent out.

And also discuss terms?

With these words, all of the Elders present wanted to cuss out Lin Ming. This move of his was just too black-hearted! He wasn’t exchanging the jade slip, he was lending it out! From now on, if an Elder wished to meditate over this cultivation method, they would have to pay a massive price.

The Great Elder coldly snorted and said, “You’ve really thought this out well! The Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm is part of my Divine Phoenix Island! For my Divine Phoenix Island to exchange for the jade slip that you took out of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm is already showing great tolerance and doing everything possible to accommodate you, and yet you are insatiable. After being given an inch, you want to take a yard? You think you can just sit there and gather all the treasure?”

Lin Ming coldly smiled and said, “According to what I know, the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was a smelting trial land laid down by the Ancient Phoenix Clan. But, the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island are not the subjects of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. In comparison, when I entered into the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall, I managed to obtain the approval of the Palace Spirit, thus I was granted this jade slip with the first eight layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. It’s difficult to say just who is the owner of the Divine Phoenix Mystic realm. To say the least, even if the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm belongs to Divine Phoenix Island, I still want to ask a question. When Great Elder was young, did Great Elder also enter the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, and just what did the Great Elder obtain?

As Lin Ming calmly spoke, it was like stabbing with needles until they were bloody. Especially that last sarcastic question, it caused the Great Elder’s face to turn liver red. When the Great Elder had entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, he also had a lucky chance. But when compared to the first eight layers of ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’, it wasn’t even worth a fart.

“The first eight layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ cultivation method have always been within the Ancient Phoenix Main Hall for the last 3000 years, and have been guarded by the Palace Spirit. Those who have the ability to do so many take it away. If anyone thinks they can just take this jade slip, then they are nothing but idiots spouting nonsense! Since the Great Elder said that the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm belongs to Divine Phoenix Island, I wonder if Great Elder has any personal disciples that can enter into the Ancient Phoenix Mystic Realm and obtain the first eight layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’?”

Lin Ming’s refutation caused Mu Chihuo to be bamboozled! All of the other Elders stayed silent. They were still watching Lin Ming, obviously refusing to give up.

Lin Ming sneered in his mind. In the presence of all these Elders, he pushed the blood red jade slip towards Mu Yuhuang. “Honorable Sect Master, this disciple is busy with practice, so this cultivation method will be temporarily placed with Honorable Master. Anytime anyone wishes to rent out this jade slip, Honorable Master may do so in place of disciple. Is this alright?”

Lin Ming was well aware that the significance of this jade slip for Divine Phoenix Island was too great. According to the rules of Divine Phoenix Island, the jade slip should be controlled by Lin Ming. However, when it came to objects that were important, following this rule wasn’t possible.

Thus, Lin Ming had already planned to hand this jade slip over to Mu Yuhuang to deal with, and she could also decide what the terms would be. It was already enough that he would receive a portion of the exchange.

Not just that, but this was equal to delivering a huge graciousness to Mu Yuhuang. If Mu Yuhuang controlled this jade slip, then she would have the authority over who could see it and also have the power that followed. This was equal to holding the weak point of all the Elders; who would dare to oppose Mu Yuhuang?

As for the Great Elder, if he wanted to stir up trouble, he would have to deal with someone much stronger than himself in order to do so. Now that Mu Yuhuang had the jade slip in her hands, it would be extremely difficult for him to form an alliance to deal with her. Nobody would try to offend Mu Yuhuang at this time.

Not just that, but if the Great Elder wanted to practice the first eight layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’, he would also have to obtain permission from Mu Yuhuang and Lin Ming. Thinking of this, Mu Chihuo felt sick to his stomach like he had swallowed a fly.

Chapter 435 – Marriage Matters

Chapter 435 – Marriage Matters

…

…

…

“Lin Ming, inform the fellow Elders of just what you experienced when you entered into the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.” Mu Yuhuang gently said as she played with the jade slip in her hands.

Mu Yuhuang was in an exceedingly good mood. Originally, Lin Ming’s background had been a major problem. But now, after Lin Ming took out this jade slip and gave it to her, no one could question anything about Lin Ming anymore.

If his background was questioned, one would first have to contrast just who had a greater contribution towards Divine Phoenix Island.

“Yes.” Lin Ming nodded. There was no point in hiding anything that he had experienced within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. He might as well tell these fellows. After all, they could only look, and couldn’t obtain anything from it.

Lin Ming reiterated his entire experience from when he first entered all the way to the complete process of the final general level smelting trial to these Elders.

The 10 month-long experience as well as the six different smelting trials, Lin Ming told these Elders everything besides the fact that he had obtained the blood of the Ancient Phoenix.

After the Elders listened to Lin Ming’s story, they all fell into silence.

There was a general level smelting trial? As well as a king level smelting trial?

That meant that the smelting trial they had participated in before was just for little ground soldiers!

All of the Elders present were characters who could stamp their feet and cause huge waves within the entire Divine Phoenix Province. But now, if they were placed with the Ancient Phoenix Clan, they were actually just… little soldiers!

This was difficult for them to psychologically accept.

After Divine Phoenix Island had obtained the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, it was like obtaining a massive hidden treasure. However, they now knew that whatever they had uncovered was just an insignificant little portion. If the rewards for completing the general level smelting trial were so luxurious, then what would it be like for the king level smelting trial?

It was unimaginable!

"The six smelting trials, how difficult were they?" An Elder couldn't help but ask. Her grandson was already 12 years old. Although he hadn't yet been announced as a direct disciple, he was surpassingly talented. Perhaps… perhaps he might too have the chance to participate in the general level smelting trial?

Although they knew the chances were low, people always harbored a bit of hope.

Lin Ming said, "When I faced the last and final sixth smelting trial, my opponent was equal to a martial artist with an extreme Xiantian cultivation. Not just that, but a powerhouse within the extreme Xiantian realm that was not considered weak. At that time, my cultivation was at the late Houtian realm."

"A late Houtian realm martial artist facing off against an extreme Xiantian master!"

The old woman Elder sighed, a bit depressed. To cross such a large gap in battle and succeed, she thought about it and then directly eliminated this idea.

“Lin Ming, you said that there was also a king level smelting trial?” Mu Yuhuang asked.

“Mm, yes. If one can complete the king level smelting trial, it is possible to obtain the complete ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’.”

“Then will you be able to enter next time?” Mu Yuhuang had a very eager expression. Every disciple was able to enter the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm two times, but Lin Ming had only gone in once.

Lin Ming shook his head, “My chances aren’t too great.”

When he had left the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, he had asked the Palace Spirit about the rules for the king level smelting trial. The age limitation was a bit more loose; one could enter as long as they hadn’t reached 30 years of age. However, his bloodline concentration just wasn’t high enough.

As for the ninth layer of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’, that didn’t really hold much meaning to the Elders present. One needed the bloodline of the Ancient Phoenix in order to cultivate that final layer. Even if it were Lin Ming, he would still be unqualified to practice it.

Let alone the ninth layer, even if it were the eighth layer or seventh layer, the Elders wouldn’t bother with practicing it. To them, the sixth layer was already more than enough. If it wasn’t for the fact that a jade slip couldn’t be cut or duplicated, Lin Ming wouldn’t have even bothered to take out the last two layers of the cultivation method.

“Everyone, the contents of this current Council of Elders meeting is very important. Everyone will have to ensure that they closely guard the secrets from today. Before we leave, I’ll have to bother everyone…” Mu Yuhuang took out a scroll from her spatial ring. This scroll was crimson colored, and looked as if it had been dyed red from blood.

"It's not that I do not trust everyone here, but the stakes are simply too high. If news of the eight layers of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' were to leak out, then Divine Phoenix Island would suffer an irreparable disaster. Everyone, please sign your name on this scroll."

The crimson scroll that Mu Yuhuang had taken out was a form of a bloodstain contract. It was a contract based upon bloodline foundations. All of the Elders present were direct descendants of Divine Phoenix Island, and had either the bloodline of the Vermillion Bird or the Blue Luan, so they would be restricted after they signed this contract.

If they dared to violate the conditions of this contract, their bloodline would be obliterated. Of everyone present, their cultivation used either the Vermillion Bird or Blue Luan bloodline as the foundation. If their bloodline were to vanish, they would lose their cultivation method and everything else that came with it.

This scroll was created by the founder of Divine Phoenix Island. Thus, only her descendants would be restricted by this. As for those others that had the bloodline implanted they wouldn't be affected. This was also a reason why the Elders who shared the same last name excluded those who didn't.

As the Great Elder saw this bloodstain contract, his lips twitched. In truth, this bloodstain contract had been prepared for him. When Mu Yuhuang had spoken, she was mentioning that she didn't trust him.

In order to break out of the limits set by this bloodstain contract, one needed to have a cultivation at the extreme Revolving Core realm. However, of all the Elders present, no one had a hope to reach that realm besides Mu Yuhuang. As for the others, no one dared to even think of it.

Unless they were able to meditate and understand the last three layers of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', and make their breakthrough with that. However, that jade slip was now in Mu Yuhuang's hand, and she controlled the power!

Thinking of this, Mu Chihuo clenched his fists, his expression becoming increasingly gloomy.

Mu Yuhuang was the first one to cut her palm and write her own name down on the bloodstain contract.

As the characters ‘Mu Yuhuang’ were written onto the bloodstain contract, it strangely began to burn. After several breaths of time, a Vermillion Bird design appeared on top of the bloodstain contract. Within the image of the Vermillion Bird was the sealed character of ‘Mu’.

Then, Mu Qianyu also calmly wrote down her name.

Then it was Mu Chihuo’s turn.

“Great Elder, if you may!” Mu Yuhuang coldly said.

Mu Chihuo coldly snorted, cut his finger with his nail, and waved his sleeves as he signed his own name down.

After Mu Chihuo, the Second Elder and Third Elder signed their names one after the other on the bloodstain contract. If anyone leaked information about the last three layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ in any way whatsoever, the curse of the bloodstain contract would attack them, and their bloodline would melt away along with their cultivation.

Finally, the only one who hadn’t signed their name was Lin Ming. Even if he signed it, it still wouldn’t work. Also, he had no reason to spread this news, as he was the one who had taken this jade slip out from the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

“I apologize for hassling everyone.” Mu Yuhuang swept up the bloodstain contract and calmly put it away. “Now, we shall discuss the war with the South Sea Demon Region that has been occurring for the past several months!”

As Mu Yuhuang spoke, a flame lit in front of her; it was a sound transmitting talisman.

As Mu Yuhuang heard this message, her heart stirred. “Yu’er, Lin Ming, the High Ancestor wishes to see you two. You may leave now.”

Mu Qianyu’s heart jumped, Mu Fengxian wanted to see her?

She didn’t know why, but her heart suddenly thought of a possibility. It shouldn’t be…

“Mm, alright.”

Lin Ming turned to leave, departing together with Mu Qianyu.

For the entire time on the way over, Mu Qianyu felt butterflies fluttering in her stomach. Finally, they arrived at the end of a bamboo grove trail where the Emerald Bamboo Pavilion was located. This was where Mu Fengxian lived in seclusion.

“Lin Ming, come in.”

“Yes, Master Ancestor.”

This was the second time that Lin Ming had stepped foot into Mu Fengxian’s residence.

The simple arrangement inside the bamboo house hadn’t changed since he had last been here. There were several plan wicker chairs and also a wooden table. As he walked in, he could hear his footsteps causing the bamboo floor to creak.

As Lin Ming entered the residence, Mu Fengxian didn’t speak. She only smiled as she looked at Lin Ming. Like this, around half an incense stick of time passed.

Finally, Lin Ming wasn’t able to stand it. He tentatively asked, “Master Ancestor… what is the matter that you wanted me for?”

Mu Fengxian laughed, “I’ve heard the content of the meeting already.”

Creating a short distance sound transmission array with the meeting room of the Council of Elders and synchronizing it so that it could be heard was very easy.

Although Mu Fengxian had slowly faded away from managing the matters of Divine Phoenix Island, if there was a meeting that involved significant matters of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, she would still be concerned about that.

“This time you have brought back the first eight layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ cultivation method. To my Divine Phoenix Island, that is simply a great graciousness!”

“Master Ancestor is too kind.” Lin Ming’s attitude was very polite and low-key. If someone treated him with courtesy, then he would return it. However, if someone tried to suppress him, he wouldn’t object to brutally slapping them back in the face.

Mu Fengxian smiled. She continued, “Lin Ming, this time when you entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, was the only reward you obtained the first eight layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ cultivation method?”

As Mu Fengxian spoke, her eyes shifted towards the light flame mark between Lin Ming’s eyebrows. As soon as he had entered the room a moment ago, Mu Fengxian had been able to feel the energy of a very pure and powerful ancient bloodline coming from Lin Ming’s body.

But, this sort of energy was obviously different from the bloodline of the Vermillion Bird. Before Lin Ming had entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, he didn’t have this aura.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment and then nodded, “When I went into the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, I managed to obtain a bloodline through a stroke of luck.”

“I see.” Mu Fengxian’s eyes lit up and her heart immediately filled with emotion. Lin Ming’s rise was now unstoppable. As long as he didn’t fall, he would absolutely become an Emperor level powerhouse!

But, she just didn't know if Divine Phoenix Island had the destiny to follow him and become a Holy Land!

"Lin Ming, this old woman has a question to ask you. You must answer me truthfully." Mu Fengxian's voice was suddenly serious.

"Master Ancestor, please ask."

"The truth is that I had this idea a while ago. It's just that you are too young so I had placed it aside for the moment. But now, I think it's best for both of us if we can clarify this matter as soon as possible in order to avoid any future misunderstandings or accidents, instead resulting in one of us outplaying ourselves…" As Mu Fengxian spoke, she looked Lin Ming deep in the eyes, and slowly and clearly said, "I want to ask you, are you willing to marry Qianyu and take her as your wife?"

Every single word of My Fengxian's final sentence was clearly articulated. As Lin Ming heard this, he became petrified; marry Qianyu and take her as his wife?

"It's not too late for a martial artist to be married even when they are 100 years old. I don't need you to answer me now, I just wanted to ask you this question earlier so this issue doesn't drag on for too long and give birth to misunderstandings." Mu Fengxian watched Lin Ming's expression as she slowly spoke. To her, this matter of marriage was extremely significant.

Lin Ming's status was becoming increasingly important. However, Lin Ming was not from the Mu Family. Even Mu Fengxian, who favored Lin Ming, was concerned about this point. After all, Lin Ming had joined Divine Phoenix Island just over a year ago. Although he had a very upstanding and kind moral character, she didn't know just how much of a sense of belonging Lin Ming felt towards Divine Phoenix Island.

Chapter 436 – Slaughtering Path of the Battlefield

Chapter 436 – Slaughtering Path of the Battlefield

…

…

…

The Vermillion Bird blood essence was a kindness that was given to Lin Ming. But after he had returned from the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm and taken out the first eight layers of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', he had returned this kindness dozens if not hundreds of times over. Now, Lin Ming no longer owed Divine Phoenix Island anything, but rather it was Divine Phoenix Island that owed Lin Ming.

If this was true, then what sense of belonging did Lin Ming feel for Divine Phoenix Island that still remained?

Even if he left now, no one would say anything. Why would Lin Ming stay at Divine Phoenix Island, or even help Divine Phoenix Island rise to the level of a Holy Land?

My Fengxian had thought that Lin Ming and Qianyu were very intimate with each other, and she wanted to let this relationship between them naturally develop instead of trying to interfere ahead of time. But this time, Lin Ming had killed his way into Blood Demon Island and rescued a young girl called Qin Xingxuan; this left Mu Fengxian no choice but to shift the inquiry of this matter to an earlier date.

After all, this sort of scene in which a man desperately gave his all to save a woman like a shining knight would cause most girls to be moved. Like this, that girl would absolutely fall in love with Lin Ming.

Once the two of them were together for enough time, the girl would take initiative and show meticulous care for Lin Ming. If the result of this was that the two of them developed extremely intimate relationships together and even made love together, that wouldn't be strange at all.

Mu Fengxian could see that what was between Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu went beyond a casual or even close friendship. However, the problem was whether or not Mu Qianyu could be like Qin Xingxuan and pursue Lin Ming. This… was clearly impossible.

If matters continued like this, then several years from now, Lin Ming might marry Qin Xingxuan. When that time came, what would Mu Qianyu do?

Lin Ming stood there, frozen, not knowing just how to answer.

Lin Ming certainly felt something towards Mu Qianyu. It was just that he didn't want to consider something like marriage currently. In the future, he didn't know just where he would go. Whether it was the South Horizon Region or even the Sky Spill Continent, neither of these places would where he stopped.

Once a marriage was set down, he would have another responsibility. In the future, he would adventure all over and might even face death many times. With another bond tying him down, he might always feel some qualms in his mind.

Lin Ming thought about this for a very long time. Finally, he said, "Reporting to Master Ancestor, this disciple would not like to consider the matter of marriage before 40 years of age."

Lin Ming said 40 years of age in order to give himself some time. 20 years was more than enough time for many things to change. At that point, he might have the power to affect the Sky Spill Continent.

Mu Fengxian hesitated. Lin Ming was obviously trying to find an easy way out and avoid the question; how could she be satisfied with an answer like this?

Suddenly Mu Fengxian's mind jumped as she remembered something. She slyly smiled and said, "Alright, then I shall not you ask about that. Instead, let's talk about something else. I'm not sure if you know this, but recently the Vermillion Bird Faction's Third Elder has been wanting to discuss matters of marriage with me. He wishes to have his grandson Mu Qingshu marry Qianyu. He thinks that they should be engaged this year, and 10 years from now they can share intimacy with each other. Lin Ming, I wonder just what your opinion on this is?"

Lin Ming's words died in his throat. He helplessly looked at Mu Fengxian. The Third Elder wanted to discuss marriage matters with Mu Fengxian, but now Mu Fengxian wanted to ask him about this instead?

As he thought back to a few days ago when he met Mu Qingshu on the island, he was able to feel the man's hostility. At that time, Mu Qianyu had a very difficult and awkward expression. Suddenly Lin Ming became aware of what had happened – so that's how it was!

Mu Qingshu had regarded him as a rival in love. No wonder Mu Qianyu had been so embarrassed to explain the reason, and had even needed to use a true essence sound transmission to warn him of Mu Qingshu…

As soon as Lin Ming thought of Mu Qianyu's reddened face that was a bit embarrassed, he felt an inexplicable pang in his heart, like warm and tender waves filled with sweetness began to surge through him. Lin Ming thought back to that dubious night in the forests of Thundercrash Mountain. He even thought about how after Mu Qianyu arrived to the Seven Profound Valleys, she had helped him forge his spear, and had given all sorts of precious materials without holding anything back or having any ulterior motive…

As these scenes flittered through his mind, he also thought about what might happen 10 years from now. Mu Qianyu would have to accept marriage with someone she didn't like, and would be forced to have intimate relations with someone whose actions almost killed Qin Xingxuan… thinking this, Lin Ming suddenly felt his heart stop.

Lin Ming looked up to see Mu Fengxian smiling at him. That smiling expression of hers was somewhat like a wily old fox…

Mu Fengxian had lived for many years. Naturally, she was very familiar with human emotions and desires. She was able to approximate just what Lin Ming was thinking.

‘You want to play with this old woman? Hehe, let’s place the option of Qianyu and Mu Qingshu’s marriage on the table and I’ll see just how nice you’ll be.’

“Lin Ming, so what do think about this matter?” Mu Fengxian amicably asked again. The smile on her face only grew wider.

As Lin Ming saw Mu Fengxian’s cunningly bright smile, he was simply left speechless, “Master Ancestor, please don’t play tricks on this disciple…”

“Play tricks? Do you think this old woman will take something so important like Qianyu’s marriage to play little tricks on you? I just want to ask you, if you think it’s acceptable, I will decide Qianyu and Qingshu’s marriage.”

At this time when Mu Fengxian asked again, Lin Ming had called down, “I do not wish for that to happen.”

Mu Fengxian let out a long breath, and she lovingly smiled at Lin Ming. “Alright, as long as I have your word, it is fine. As you said before, it’s alright not to consider marriage before 40 years of age. I am also in favor of this. In fact, it isn’t considered too late if a martial artist marries at 100 years of age. You have a will focused on the martial arts, but so does Yu’er, so it’s even better. Unless you have some double cultivation method, prematurely releasing your Primordial Yin essence doesn’t help anyone.”

As Mu Fengxian spoke to here, she also said, “Oh, you also seem to be planning on having that girl you brought back enter into Divine Phoenix Island?”

“Yes.” Lin Ming honestly said.

“Mm… alright. However, that girl’s talent could only be considered ordinary. She will only be relying on the transplanted Vermillion Bird blood essence to have the opportunity to practice the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. You should also know what Vermillion Bird blood essence means to other disciples. Ten drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence, well, that’s something that every disciple has longed for in their dreams. But now, it’s been used by you on a girl whose talent is only ordinary. These disciples will not dare to oppose you, but to Qin Xingxuan, I’m afraid that they will inevitably be hostile to her…”

Lin Ming could imagine just how true Mu Fengxian’s words were. A woman’s jealousy was much stronger than a man’s. There were many areas in which women were much more manipulative and there was often serious infighting. If Qin Xingxuan were to become an inner court disciple and be placed into this gaggle of girls, it was possible that she would be isolated or even bullied.

She had a different surname, and her talent came from having 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence transplanted into her. Any one of these reasons was enough for Qin Xingxuan to be isolated. When that time came, they would use arguments such as that she was depending on her man to get a foot up in life. This opinion might spread, and with Qin Xingxuan, she might not be able to stand up to the criticism behind these arguments.

No matter how strong the deterrent of Lin Ming was, it was impossible to control just what these girls said in private.

Mu Fengxian said, “How about this. Let’s have that girl be a maid disciple and she can accompany Yu’er around. You should already be well aware of Yu’er’s personality; Yu’er will not mistreat her or be unkind to her. As for cultivation methods and resources, she will be assigned treatment equal to a core disciple.”

As Mu Fengxian spoke, a smile hung on her face throughout. It was best to have Qin Xingxuan together with Mu Qianyu to avoid her following Lin Ming around, in which case something could occur between the two too fast.

Not just that, but after Qin Xingxuan followed Mu Qianyu around and they became familiar with each other, she might be too embarrassed to compete with Mu Qianyu.

Lin Ming didn't think too much on this. He nodded and said, "That would be great."

"As for this South Sea Demon Region war, would you like to go out to battle with Yu'er?" Mu Fengxian was planning on having Lin Ming go out for some experience and a little adventure. If he was together with Yu'er, it would be easier to protect them, and it would also be easier to promote the personal feelings between the two.

However, Lin Ming actually said, "Master Ancestor, this disciple wishes to be alone while participating in the South Sea war.

"Mm? Alone?" Mu Fengxian was a bit surprised. She shook her head and said, "Alone is not good. It's just too dangerous. Also, if you are recognized and the South Sea Demon Region finds out, the consequences will be dire!"

Lin Ming said, "I will be careful. I have an appearance changing technique that I can use to disguise myself. Only someone who is much stronger than me will be able to see through it. Otherwise, they won't be able to. As for those middle and late Revolving Core masters, they will not appear randomly in these early skirmishes. Even if they do show up, they won't necessarily be able to recognize me.

On both sides of this war, there weren't many times when Revolving Core masters personally acted. Even if they did, it was often in fights on the same level. When they fought, the skies would darken and the earth would shake, but the truth was that it was rare for any of them to fall.

The true main forces of this war were the Xiantian masters.

Lin Ming already intended to participate in this great war against the South Sea Demon Region. What he needed the most right now was spear arts; Lin Ming knew very few, and of those he knew, they were quite weak. Only the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' was the best fit for him.

The ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ was a cultivation method from the demonic path. Walking down this road meant walking down the road of death. In order to practice it he would need to slaughter many enemies.

For this, the best and most suitable place was the South Sea battlefields!

But if he went with Mu Qianyu and had the protection of a Revolving Core master, it would be hard to find many opportunities to engage in combat. Not just that, but those he would fight in would be easy, superficial skirmishes – this was not want Lin Ming wanted.

He wanted to experience the true depth of fighting on the front line.

As Mu Fengxian saw Lin Ming insistence, she slightly frowned. Although his strength would grow much faster if he fought on the front lines, the danger level would double or even quadruple.

“You’ve already decided this?”

“Yes.”

“Alright.” Mu Fengxian sighed. Then, she took out a small bottle from her spatial ring and also a silk sack. “Here is one Scarlet Blood Pill, two Yang Reversion Pills, and also an Escape Symbol. If you encounter true danger, use them. Don’t try to be brave and show off. Coming back safe and alive is what is most important.

Lin Ming received the pills and Escape Symbol, and also a jade slip that described how to use them.

The Scarlet Blood Pill was able to greatly enhance one’s strength for a short period of time. There were many similar pills, but the side effects were serious and often deadly. This Scarlet Blood Pill had very few side effects, and after using it one would only be weakened for a period of time. This was the reason why the Scarlet Blood Pill was so expensive.

As for the Yang Reversion Pill, it was a wonderful life saving pill. No matter how grievous a wound was, as long as it wasn't a soul wound, the Yang Reversion Pill could help one recover in a short period of time. It could even restore damage done to meridians and could restore exhausted true essence.

Compared to the Scarlet Blood Pill, the Yang Reversion Pills were much more precious. Not just that, but they weren't something that was simply purchasable with true essence stones.

Finally, the Escape Symbol was the rarest and most expensive of the three gifts.

As Lin Ming took the Escape Symbol, he saw many simple lines on it – these were actually an ancient array formation.

Ancient array symbols?

Lin Min was stunned. Once activated, this Escape Symbol could transfer one several hundred miles away. It was truly a life-saving tool.

Without a doubt, this was obtained from some ancient ruins somewhere. With the Sky Spill Continent's current level, these were impossible to produce. Every single one of these was extremely precious.

Chapter 437 – Life Destruction

Chapter 437 – Life Destruction

…

…

…

Lin Ming silently accepted these three treasures. Mu Fengxian had treated him very well. Whether this stemmed from sincere affection in her heart, or whether it was because she valued his future contributions, the truth was that she had helped him out a great deal.

These three treasures she had taken out were treasures that he sorely needed.

“Thank you Honorable Master. This disciple will be sure to return alive.”

Mu Fengxian sighed. She already had a faint understanding of Lin Ming’s personality. When he was at Thundercrash Mountain, he dared to entire the Flood Dragon’s cave with just a mere Bone Forging stage cultivation, much less take the risks he did now.

However, she knew that if it wasn’t for this character of his, he never would have reached this step at a mere 17 years of age.

If she wanted to restrict him because of his safety, it would only imprison Lin Ming’s potential. A dragon that was locked in chains would never be able to fly up to the nine heavens.

“Lin Ming, you’ll be able to do it. I believe.”

“Mm.” Lin Ming nodded, and just as he was about to leave, he suddenly remembered something. He said, “Master Ancestor, I have a matter I would like to inquire about.”

"What is it?"

"Disciple has discovered that a first-grade family clan or sect would take a Pulse Condensation period martial artist as an Elder. A second-grade sect would take a Houtian realm martial artist as an Elder. a third-grade sect would take a Xiantian realm martial artist as Elder, and a fourth-grade sect would take a Revolving Core realm master as an Elder. Every increasing grade corresponded with a higher standard of strength in their Elders. According to this logic, a fifth-grade sect would take an Emperor level powerhouse as an Elder. But, from what disciple has discovered, the disparity between a fifth-grade set and a fourth-grade sect doesn't seem too great. Only a top fifth-grade sect or even a sixth-grade sect might have an extremely rare few Emperor level powerhouses."

Lin Ming had always had these doubts. When he had inherited the fragmented memories of the Realm of the Gods' Supreme Elders, their memories of different boundaries and their strengths were very fuzzy. In addition, there might be differences in the situation of the Realm of the Gods and the Sky Spill Continent, thus Lin Ming had asked this question.

Mu Fengxian said, "That is indeed true. The difference between a Revolving Core master and an Emperor level powerhouse is just too great. This is because from the Revolving Core realm to becoming an Emperor level powerhouse, one has to pass through stages of Life Destruction. Life Destruction is extremely dangerous – any failure will result in death without even an intact corpse. As for those truly powerful fifth-grade sects, their Elders are mostly stranded within the Life Destruction stages."

"Life Destruction?" Lin Ming asked, curious. He had never heard of this term before.

Mu Fengxian smiled and said, "This so-called 'Emperor' level powerhouse is only a title. It is not a boundary or anything like that. The realm that an Emperor level powerhouse is at is called the Divine Sea. Since ancient times, a Peerless Emperor powerhouse has nearly always had a cultivation at the Divine Sea realm.

"Nearly always?" Lin Ming's mind stirred.

“Yes. There are a few who haven’t yet stepped into the Divine Sea realm. These individuals are still in the Life Destruction stage, but because their individual strength is so great, they are also labeled as Emperor level powerhouses.

“What is this Life Destruction?”

Mu Fengxian said, “From the extreme Revolving Core to becoming an Emperor level powerhouse, there is only a single step. But, the truth is that this step is too distant a dream. After the Xiantian realm there are two more boundaries – Revolving Core and Divine Sea. A Revolving Core martial artist has their true essence condensed into a core within their dantian. If one day they could shatter this core again and again until it turned into a sea, changing the world of their dantian into a vast expanse of water, this is the Divine Sea realm.

“A Divine Sea realm Supreme Elder is also known as an Emperor level powerhouse. Step into Revolving Core before 30, reach extreme Revolving Core before 50, and becoming a Peerless Emperor before 100! From extreme Revolving Core to the Divine Sea, one would need to use at least a full 50 years. In order to step from extreme Revolving Core to the Divine Sea realm, one has to experience several stages of Life Destruction. But every time one undergoes Life Destruction there is a high risk of death. This is the same as a top level vicious beast crossing through their heavenly tribulation.

“Every time one undergoes Life Destruction, one has to break apart their core, and even shatter their very body, undergoing a brutal transformation and being completely reborn. This is why an extreme Revolving Core master can live for 800 years, but a Divine Sea Supreme Elder can live for 1000 years or even up to 10,000 years!”

As Mu Fengxian spoke, Lin Ming’s mind shook. This was a right! 1000 year sect, 10,000 year Holy Land. The reason that a Holy Land could exist for 10,000 years was because they had an Emperor level powerhouse that could also live up to 10,000 years. With an Emperor level powerhouse guarding the Holy Land, that Holy Land would never be destroyed for that full 10,000 years.

As for the Sorcerer and Demon Emperor that had flown up to the Realm of the Gods, they could even live for tens of thousands of years!

“Has Master Ancestor experienced Life Destruction?” Lin Ming couldn’t help but ask.

Mu Fengxian slowly nodded. “I have undergone a Life Destruction. I will never forget the agonizing pain and suffering of being on the verge of death. That enduring memory will never fade.”

Speaking of this, Mu Fengxian heavily sighed. During every Life Destruction, one’s flesh and bones would shatter, their meridians would break, and even their soul would be torn. That sort of pain was simply unimaginable. And in the process of Life Destruction, one’s awareness would teeter on the brink of life and death. They would lose all concept of time; it was truly enough to made one go utterly insane.

Mu Fengxian had only experienced a single Life Destruction. Because of that, she had nearly perished. She didn’t expect that she would be able to undergo another Life Destruction, and that was why she decided remain within the extreme Revolving Core realm for the rest of her remaining life, and not try to step into the fabled Divine Sea realm.

Lin Ming asked, “How many Life Destructions did the founder of Divine Phoenix Island experience?”

“Three times. During that third Life Destruction, she failed to condense her core again and died. In order for a Revolving Core master to try and step into the Divine Sea realm, one needs a tremendous amount of courage. Because one has to undergo Life Destruction several times, there are very few who have managed to fully step into the Divine Sea realm! In fact, most Revolving Core powerhouses are like this old woman. We live a life of mediocrity, and after several hundred years we return to the earth.

Mu Fengxian spoke with a bit of self-deprecation as she smiled. For a Revolving Core master who had an unsteady foundation, trying to undergo Life Destruction was simply suicide.

Even if one’s foundation was stable, there was still a high chance of dying during Life Destruction. In order to become an Emperor level powerhouse, one not only needed a heaven defying talent, but also a great destiny to fall upon them.

From the Revolving Core to Divine Sea, this was only a single boundary, but one’s life would increase by 10 times. The temptation of this was just too strong for many.

Lin Ming couldn’t help but sigh. Even the Founder Master Ancestor of Divine Phoenix Island had perished during Life Destruction. Even though she had such a great lucky chance, she had still died! Obviously, stepping into the Divine Sea realm was an incomparably difficult task.

No wonder almost the entire Sky Spill Continent only knew of a mere 10 or so Emperor level powerhouses that existed. Even if those unknown ones were added, there might not be more than 100.

Lin Ming asked, “Master Ancestor, from the extreme Revolving Core realm to the Divine Sea realm, how many Life Destruction stages does one have to undergo?”

“It’s different for every person. Some only need to experience Life Destruction four times, some five times, and there are even those that need seven times, eight times, or the fabled nine stages of Life Destruction!”

“Every Life Destruction is a trial of life or death. With every stage of Life Destruction, true essence becomes thicker, blood vitality becomes more vibrant, and meridians become more tenacious. Thus the more times one experiences Life Destruction, the more powerful they will become. When I said that there are Life Destruction Supreme Elders that are already Peerless Emperors, that is because that have experienced many stages of Life Destruction. Once they reach the Divine Sea realm, these characters would have an extremely terrifying strength!”

"But even so, most martial artists only hope to go through four stages of Life Destruction and reach the Divine Sea realm. As for nine Life Destructions, just thinking about it is a frightening prospect!"

"I understand. Thank you, Master Ancestor."

"Mm. Sooner or later you will personally experience the Life Destruction stages. My own life will soon come to an end. I only wish to see you become an Emperor level powerhouse someday." As Mu Fengxian spoke, her face revealed an endearing and affectionate smile.

"Mm." Lin Ming solemnly nodded. Reaching the Divine Sea boundary was his first step into entering the Realm of the Gods. If he couldn't even accomplish this, then there was no point in him thinking of reaching the pinnacle of all martial arts.

"Alright. When you go out tell Yu'er to come in."

"Of course."

As Lin Ming left, he called Mu Qianyu to enter. Mu Qianyu was inside speaking with Mu Fengxian for nearly an entire incense stick of time.

Afterwards, Lin Ming heard the light footsteps of Mu Qianyu as she walked out.

However, the sound of those footsteps paused at the entrance of the bamboo house, as if she were hesitating behind the door for a long period of time. Finally, she slowly pushed apart the leaf door. As she saw Lin Ming looking at her, Mu Qianyu actually blushed red, her expression somewhat awkward.

"I… I thought you might have already left." Mu Qianyu incoherently babbled.

Lin Ming was stunned. He understood just why Mu Qianyu felt a bit awkward in facing him. He tactfully said "I'll go and pack my things to prepare for the South Sea."

"South Sea…" Mu Qianyu was in a trance for a moment. She had already heard from Mu Fengxian that Lin Ming was going to head to the South Sea alone. Regarding this, she certainly didn't wish for it, but she also knew that it was impossible for her to persuade Lin Ming otherwise. She lightly sighed and quietly mumbled, "Take care okay… if you go to the South Sea… make sure you send a letter every once in awhile… so I can know you're safe."

Mu Qianyu hesitated for a long time before biting her lips and speaking.

Lin Ming nodded, "I will."

………………………………

Ten days later, South Aurora Island –

South Aurora Island was one of the larger islands of the South Sea, it had a diameter of four or five thousand miles.

On South Aurora Island there were two treasure locations. The first was a medium-grade true essence stone vein deposit, and the other was a spiritual forest.

There was no need to explain the medium-grade true essence vein deposit – it was very valuable for a fourth-grade sect.

As for the spiritual forest, because of the features and energy of the land, it was rich in all sorts of precious medicines that grew there year-round. It was no less valuable than the true essence stone vein deposit.

South Aurora Island was within the territory of Divine Phoenix Island. This island was quite far from the South Sea Demon Region, so it was considered safe. But in the last several months, because of changes in the war, the fires of war had already made their way here. Now, South Aurora Island had become the front line of the battlefield.

On this day, a black-clothed youth wearing a bamboo hat rode an ordinary Heavenly Wind Eagle to land on South Aurora Island.

This youth stood tall and straight. He had plain, regular looking features, and his cultivation was at the late Houtian realm. He carried a nine foot long weapon on his back, and this weapon was wrapped in cloth. The sharp half-moon blade of this weapon stuck out; it was possible that this weapon was a halberd.

This youth was Lin Ming, who had changed his appearance. Lin Ming didn't know in which ancient ruins or cave mansion he had found this technique, but the contents of the jade slip were incomparably exquisite and useful. Once used, he would be able to completely mimic the appearance, temperament, and odor of another person, to the point where even a dog wouldn't be able to distinguish between them.

In fourth-grade sects, there were many high level cultivation methods. However, this sort of useful and strangely crafty unorthodox technique was hard to find. Even if they did, it would be much worse than what Bi Luo had found within some ancient ruins.

With this appearance changing technique, even a middle Revolving Core master wouldn't necessarily be able to see through Lin Ming's disguise.

This greatly reduced the degree of danger for Lin Ming.

Chapter 438 – South Sea Wartime Alliance

Chapter 438 – South Sea Wartime Alliance

…

…

…

As Lin Ming asked people along the way and compared his location with his map, he began to move and finally determined where he needed to go. He tipped down his bamboo hat and immediately began to move towards a town. Within this town was a very prominent building; it was over 200 feet high, and on the gate was a large signboard with the words – South Sea Wartime Alliance.

This was an organization that had just been established in the last half year. After all, the South Sea Demon Region qualified as a fifth-grade sect. It had gathered the reluctant support of some deep islands within the South Sea, and it had a very great influence. Even though Divine Phoenix Island had the joint help of some sects from the Five Element Region, it was still difficult to defend against the South Sea Demon Region.

This was mainly because the Five Element Region sects were only passively and lightly assisting Divine Phoenix Island; it was impractical to expect them to be the main force of the war.

Divine Phoenix Island could only count on itself.

However, as the war continued for nearly a year, the outer court disciples were seriously damaged and a great deal of inner court disciples were also used. In this situation, Divine Phoenix Island had no choice by to seek another alliance.

During this dire time, the South Sea Wartime Alliance was formed.

Divine Phoenix Island had created an alliance of all the influential martial artists within the South Sea Horizon. There were even several free martial artists from nearby lands that had come to join in on the South Sea battlefield.

According to one's military exploits, they could obtain true essence stones or even other rewards.

Of all free martial artists that had come, 60-70% either did not have a sect or came from a first-grade or second-grade sect background. Of course, the rest were martial artists of large sects that had come out for adventuring.

The rewards that Divine Phoenix Island offered were quite rich, there were many free martial artists that were willing to enter the South Sea battlefield in for them. They would accumulate military exploits and then exchange them for goods.

Lin Ming intended to disguise himself as one of these free martial artists.

His status was just too sensitive at the moment. Not mentioning that he was currently the top talent within Divine Phoenix Island, but just the fact that he had killed the Demon Region's Saint Son Lei Mubai was enough for the South Sea Demon Region to expend any and all efforts to kill him.

Lei Mubai was the Saint Son that the South Sea Demon Region had raised with every resource at their disposal. His talent had far surpassed anyone else in the South Sea Demon Region, and he was even a direct descendant of the Netherworld Great Emperor. For this sort of existence to be killed by Lin Ming, the hatred that resulted because of this could be imagined.

It could be said that if Lin Ming's identity was eve found out, it would cause all of the nearby Revolving Core masters to arrive. In this situation, Lin Ming had to be extremely cautious of his actions. During this sojourn to the war against the South Sea Demon Region, news had been spread that he would be going into seclusion and studying the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'.

Only Mu Fengxian, Mu Yuhuang, and Mu Qianyu knew the truth that Lin Ming had gone to the South Sea battlefield.

Once he disguised himself as a free martial artist and changed his weapon from a spear to a halberd, it was unlikely he would attract much attention.

....

As Lin Ming entered into the town, he found that the crowded streets were dotted with brand new buildings that looked like they had been constructed just a few months ago. There were simple stone houses and also large halls and pavilions. There were also many streets around the town square where people had set up booths.

Most of these vendors were martial artists, and their cultivation wasn't low either. The lowest were at the Pulse Condensation period, and the majority of them were at the Houtian realm. There were even some at the Xiantian realm.

Of course, whatever items the Xiantian martial artists were selling would certainly be expensive. These Xiantian martial artist vendors had very high sights, and would basically not bother to respond to martial artists that weren't on the same level as them.

In these stalls there were all sorts of pills, poisons, charms, cultivation method jade slips, treasures, and everything else that could be expected to be found.

Without a doubt, most of these things were spoils of war obtained from the battlefield.

When these free martial artists killed their enemies on the battlefield, not only would they be able to accumulate military exploits, but they would also be able to amass wealth in another way, and that was taking the belongings of their enemies.

This was a way to make windfall. As for what one obtained, that all depended on luck.

Thus on the battlefield, there were even naked corpses. In these situations, it was mostly because the enemy was wearing flexible armor, and as a result, after they died even their clothes would be torn apart.

For these martial artists that were incomparabe beings among mortals, to die in the wilderness with just a naked corpse left made one sigh.

As Lin Ming walked through the streets and glanced at the stalls, he was able to see what items were being sold. There were many good things to buy, but these were most useful to lower grade martial artists. To Lin Ming, they basically didn't have any appeal.

War was a chance for one to gain riches. By gaining military exploits and taking the belongings of those that died, a poor martial artist could suddenly become wealthy overnight.

This was why so many free martial artists had joined the Wartime Alliance in this last half year.

In this town, besides high level martial artists there were still many low level martial artists in the Body Transformation stages. These martial artists were mostly here to provide services.

In this place where there were so many people and where nearly all of them were wealthy, it was naturally easy to have thriving businesses. There were restaurants, inns, teahouses, and even brothels.

The battlefield was a place where a tremendous amount of pressure was placed on soldiers. Every day, one would have to risk their life, and their spirits would be tense. When they returned to their quarters, there were many martial artists that chose to visit the brothel in order to vent their pent up emotions. Within this town, there were two big brothels and both were very prosperous.

Lin Ming quickly walked over to the Wartime Alliance building, not raising anyone's attention along the way.

Lin Ming was currently a late Houtian realm martial artist, his energy was hidden within his body, and his appearance was also ordinary. In this small town where there were Houtian realm martial artists everywhere, he simply didn't seem like anything special.

Lin Ming walked into the main hall. It was over 200 feet high and the space inside was very broad.

Around this main hall, there were many teahouses and also soldiers sitting and drinking together. There were over a dozen people in front of the main hall looking in, sympathy and compassion on their faces.

Lin Ming had just entered the gate when a burly bearded Xiantian martial artist lazily stretched his limbs and sized up Lin Ming. He asked, “Are you here to enter the war?”

“Yes!”

“Name?”

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment then said, “Wild Halberd.”

Wild Halberd was a codename that Lin Ming had chosen for the battlefield. There were many martial artists that had taken a code name. One reason was that it was easier to remember, and the second was that many people didn't want to reveal their real names.

The large Xiantian fellow didn't care. He took a registration form and placed it on the table, then pushed it towards Lin Ming. He said, “Fill this out and return it. Then wait a bit and you'll go through the strength test. Afterwards, we'll arrange you in a squad.”

The most basic combat units of the South Sea war were squads. These squads had different occupations and they were also able to look after each other. Otherwise, after battle, one would often be severely wounded. Without someone backing them up, the survival rate would be too low.

Lin Ming filled out the form and was then brought out to the square behind the main hall. The surroundings were a dark misty gray, it was hard to see anything.

In the center of the square there were over ten free martial artists already milling around. Their cultivations were all at the Houtian realm and they were also waiting to participate in the strength test.

Of these ten or so individuals, there were men and women and old and young. As they saw Lin Ming join them, most of them didn’t have any expression. Some of them were sitting in meditation adjusting their conditions, and some of them looked tense.

Although these people had been martial artists for many years, this was the first time that they were participating in a massive battle on this scale.

Lin Ming swept his eyes through his surroundings. He looked calm, but he scoffed in his heart. These surrounding martial artists didn’t feel anything out of the ordinary, but Lin Ming had discovered that they were already trapped within an illusory magic array.

Outside of the illusory magic array there were four Xiantian martial artists standing around. They were pointing at the people within and commenting on them. Because they were behind the shield of the illusory magic array, they didn’t hold back anything in their words.

Of these four, two of them were at the late Xiantian realm, and two of them were at the middle Xiantian realm.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Zhou, what do you think about the people this time?” A middle Xiantian martial artist who looked around 40 years old asked. In a fourth-grade sect, a man with a middle Xiantian realm cultivation in his forties could only be considered a poor outer court disciple. In his life, unless he came across a heaven defying lucky chance, it would be impossible for him to ever set step into the Revolving Core realm.

The man called Senior-apprentice Brother Zhou stroked his beard. His face was long and thin and his eyes were deep. He glanced at everyone that was about to be tested and said, “These are all cannon fodder!”

“War is a good way to get rich, but one also needs their life in order to enjoy whatever riches they have. Of these people, I think that 80-90% of them will die!”

“Free martial artists, ha! You really think that they will be strong? Besides a few of them that come from large sects for adventuring, most of them are martial artists from the mortal world. Whatever inheritances or legacies they have are utter garbage and they also lack resources. Their foundation is a mess too. Of course they can’t be compared to a sect’s martial artists.”

“Mm, of these people, I only think that the woman and the man with the halberd will be so-so. I think they might be able to compare to a second-rate martial artist from a fourth-grade sect.

That Senior-apprentice Brother Zhou pointed to Lin Ming and another woman – obviously he was referring to them.

As these four individuals spoke, every single word fell onto Lin Ming’s ears.

Lin Ming smiled, not minding what they said. These people were not from Divine Phoenix Island, but rather part of the martial artists alliance.

The martial artists alliance was located within the Supreme Mystery nation of the South Horizon Region and was a very loose and broad organization. When some individuals or forces encountered trouble, they would often come to the martial artists alliance to take on missions. The martial artists alliance would hand a martial artist a task and then take half of the commission.

In addition, the martial artists alliance provided a training platform and also gave a regular stipend to strong powerhouses.

There was no conflict in participating in the martial artists alliance and joining a sect. Currently, these four Xiantian martial artists were all outer court disciples from Supreme Mystery Temple.

After another two hours passed, there were 20 people gathered altogether. The man surnamed Zhou lazily stood up and removed the illusory magic array.

Hu –

The surrounding scene suddenly changed, and the gray mist dispersed, showing the back of the main hall. Currently, four men stood in front of the main hall and looked down with condensation on these 20 free martial artists.

The sudden transformation startled everyone, they hadn't expected that they had been within an illusory magic array.

"Alright then. You 20 people come up, we're about to start the strength test. First, I will say that the mortality rate for participating in the war is very high. If you want to quit, there is still time!" The man surnamed Zhou slowly said as he closely observed everyone present, his eyes stopping for a moment on Lin Ming and a woman.

Chapter 439 – First Class Soldier

Chapter 439 – First Class Soldier

…

…

…

After arriving at this point, naturally there wasn't anyone who would quit. The man surnamed Zhou nodded with satisfaction and said, "If that's the case, then you may enter the Ten Thousand Killing Array and we shall judge the level of your strength based on your points. Afterwards, you will be enrolled in squads corresponding with your strength. I fully urge you all to display your full strength so that you can join a squad with a higher combat strength. It will be easier for you to accumulate military exploits as well as increase your chances of living!

"Now, all of you come up one at a time! You, come up first!" The man surnamed Zhou casually chose someone. As he spoke, a man beside him activated the Ten Thousand Killing Array. The Ten Thousand Killing Array appeared in the square behind them; most of those here had experienced this array before.

This was the most common illusory killing array within the South Sea Horizon Region to test a martial artist's strength.

"Anyone who can reach 100,000 points is a first class soldier, 50,000 points is a second class soldier, 20,000 points is a third class soldier, and as for anyone below that, I advise you to go home lest you just go to the battlefield and die before you can accomplish anything.

Anyone who obtained less than 20,000 points would be the weakest sort of Houtian martial artist; they would be in trouble even if they faced a third-grade sect's Pulse

Condensation period disciple. If they went to the battlefield, they didn't even have the qualifications to serve as cannon fodder.

As the first man entered the Ten Thousand Killing Array, a martial artist on the side lit an incense stick. As the incense stick burnt down, the martial artist's complexion turned white, and then he drew back from the Ten Thousand Killing Array.

"36,000 points, third class soldier!" The man surnamed Zhou impassively announced.

As the man who was just tested heard this score, he was a bit surprised for a moment. It was hard for him to accept this momentarily. Because many free martial artists rarely met other martial artists of the same level, they were always very confident in themselves. Otherwise, they would never have come to the South Sea battlefield that had such a high mortality rate.

But now that the result of this test was announced, he was only a third class soldier. It was unavoidable that his confidence would be attacked.

"Next!" The man surnamed Zhou casually swept over to another man, continuing down the line.

A second man entered, and after an incense stick of time passed, he left.

"28,000 points, third class soldier!"

....

"33,000 points, third class soldier!"

"40,000 points, third class soldier!"

"19,000 points, you are unqualified!"

As 10 people were tested, none of them actually passed 50,000 points. They were all third class soldiers, and there was even one that didn't qualify.

That unqualified man took a major strike to his self-esteem, he left with an extremely depressed expression.

The man surnamed Zhou was still calm, he had already expected that something like this would happen. He pointed at the woman who he had mentioned earlier and said, “You, your turn!”

The woman wore all black and was thin with average looks. After she entered the Ten Thousand Killing Array, a man from the back lit an incense stick. This time, the incense burned for a much longer time. After the first stick of incense burnt down, even the second incense stick burnt down.

When the third incense stick was almost burnt halfway, the woman gave a light cough and then left the Ten Thousand Killing Array.

“96,000 points, second class soldier!”

All the other martial artists in the room exclaimed in surprise. They didn’t think that this black-dressed, ordinary looking woman would actually be so strong.

96,000 points was over two times as much as the next highest scoring person!

The woman’s expression didn’t change – it seemed that she had already expected a result like this.

“You’re next! Come up!” The man surnamed Zhou pointed at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming slowly walked over to the Ten Thousand Killing Array. He turned his head and asked, “This Senior-apprentice Brother, could you tell me how points are calculated?”

“Mm? Why are you asking? Just give it your best try and that’s the end.” The man surnamed Zhou impatiently said.

“I just want to know so that I can keep track.”

The man surnamed Zhou looked disgruntled as he said to Lin Ming, “Killing an extreme Houtian will net you 10,000 points, late Houtian will net you 2000 points, and middle Houtian will net you 300 points.”

“I understand.”

As Lin Ming spoke, he walked into the Ten Thousand Killing Array.

A white light flashed in front of Lin Ming, and suddenly seven or eight martial artists appeared in front of him. Their cultivation ranged from the middle Houtian realm to the peak Houtian realm.

“These are probably the weakest sort of martial artists, they are about the same strength as when I first participated in the Seven Profound Valleys’ Total Faction Martial Meeting.”

Lin Ming readily extracted a long halberd from the variety of weapons offered around him. The reason he had asked about scoring was because he was afraid that he would kill too many, causing people to pay attention him.

Hou!

Three or four martial artists rushed at Lin Ming together. Lin Ming swept out his halberd and the three or four martial artists were instantly split in half at the waist, exploding into showers of bloody rain!

This was simply an instant kill!

Afterwards, a peak Houtian martial artist rushed at him. Lin Ming didn’t bother to change his style and swept out with his halberd again; that peak Houtian martial artist was also cut in half!

With Lin Ming’s current strength, facing these low level martial artists was simply a massacre.

....

Outside of the Ten Thousand Killing Array, the incense was slowly burning away. The man surnamed Zhou crossed his arms across his chest and was playing with his mustache with a thoughtful smile on his face, waiting for Lin Ming's results.

As the first incense stick burnt out, the second incense stick was lit. Just as the second incense stick was burning, at this moment, a light flashed and Lin Ming left the Ten Thousand Killing Array.

"Mm? So fast?"

The man surnamed Zhou was a bit shocked. He had thought that with Lin Ming's strength, lasting through two or three sticks of incense definitely wouldn't have been a problem.

But as he glanced at the score, the man surnamed Zhou smiled. This boy, he had quite the skill.

The other free martial artists didn't really care about Lin Ming's score. That is, until the result was announced…

"101,000 points, first class soldier!"

Hua-

The head of every single martial artist instantly swiveled towards Lin Ming. This fellow was a first class soldier? He was even stronger than that formidable woman?

Most of the people present had already entered the Ten Thousand Killing Array and were fully aware of just how difficult it was to reach 100,000 points.

"Hehe! This boy is good, he's about the same as me when I was young!" The man surnamed Zhou traced his chin as he spoke, impressed with Lin Ming.

"For a late Houtian realm martial artist to have this strength, he should be about the same as an outer court disciple of a fourth-grade sect."

“He’ll have a future. That is, if he manages to survive in the South Sea battlefield.

Lin Ming calmly walked down. He had already calculated just what he would need to gather 100,000 points and be ranked as a first class soldier.

The Wartime Alliance used squads as the combat units. War intelligence, which included the location of the enemy, was distributed to the different squads for convenience. In that case, Lin Ming had to join as high level a squad as he could in order to quickly familiarize himself with the battlefield and also gain more important information.

As for the reason that he had been inside the illusory array for a whole incense stick of time, that was entirely intentional on Lin Ming’s part. The truth was that he only needed a dozen or so breaths of time to reach 100,000 points; he could have done so sooner, but the refreshing rate of the Ten Thousand Killing Array was just too slow. As for the remaining time, Lin Ming had loitered within so that he could avoid leaving early and shocking everyone.

As Lin Ming returned to the group, the surrounding free martial artists all looked at him with awe in their eyes. Even that woman looked at Lin Ming for several seconds, and then kept to herself.

After Lin Ming, the rest of the martial artists also measured their strength. The highest remaining score was 45,000 points; they were all third class soldiers.

A third class soldier was the lowest level on the South Sea Demon Region battlefield.

“You two, come with me!” The man surnamed Zhou pointed at Lin Ming and the woman.

The other 18 free martial artists watched as Lin Ming and the woman left together, sighing. Their eyes were a bit sad and also had a hint of envy, the gap between them was simply too great.

“Now I’ll lead you to enter your squad. If you join a strong squad, you’ll be much safer if you meet danger. Of course, there are also times when a strong squad will meet even stronger enemies. As for which one you want, just choose yourself!”

As the man surnamed Zhou spoke, he pushed open the door. Behind the door was actually a noisy and busy tavern.

The entire tavern was built with gray tones. There were colorful true essence stone lamps hanging on the ceiling above. On a stage in the center of the tavern, a young woman with almost nothing on was dancing a hot and sexy dance that Lin Ming had never seen before. Compared to the traditional martial arts of the South Horizon Region, this sort of dance was just wantonly flaunting all of the sexy and private parts of a woman’s body, sparking waves of cries and cheers from the surrounding martial artists.

“Hey, you like what you see?” The man surnamed Zhou nudged Lin Ming, revealing a lascivious smile that all men understood. “This is a dance that comes from the Demon Region, it has quite the style! That Demon Region really does have some good stuff! Haha!”

The man surnamed Zhou lewdly smiled, not noticing the disgusted look in the woman’s eyes next to him.

“Everyone, stop, we have two newbies today. There is a 101,000 point first class soldier, and a 96,000 point second class soldier. If your squad needs one of them, just say it.”

The tavern instantly quieted, even the girl doing her sexy dance stopped mid-step. All of the martial artists that were enjoying the revelry shifted their vision onto Lin Ming and the woman, sizing them up.

It was quite different from what Lin Ming expected; there wasn’t anyone scrambling to pick him up.

‘It seems like a 101,000 point first class soldier isn’t worth much here, or perhaps these top squads don’t really need someone with just 101,000 points.’ Lin Ming kept a composed smile as he thought this.

“Hey, boy, how about joining us?”

After a few breaths of time, a large fellow called out. He held a big pot of wine in his hand, and he was shaking back and forth, much of the wine was spilling out.

As Lin Ming glanced at this big fellow, he saw that his cultivation was at the peak Houtian realm and his true essence was abnormally thick. He was obviously a powerhouse of those within the same level.

“Our little squad has three Xiantian masters and our squad captain is a middle Xiantian realm. Every one is a first class soldier that has been battle hardened already. The rest are at the peak Houtian realm and half-step Xiantian realm. We’re one of the top squads of the Wartime Alliance. If you join our squad, you will have the best chances to gather military exploits. To be honest, if it wasn’t for the fact that we lost some people a few days ago, we wouldn’t normally take a late Houtian martial artist.”

Many veteran squads were reluctant to take in new recruits. A recruit often lacked combat experience and would panic during a life or death situation, throwing everything into chaos. In the end, they would just become a burden to everyone else. On the battlefield where life or death could be decided in a split second, any burden on the squad could result in unimaginable consequences.

In this man’s opinion, Lin Ming was simply too immature. Within his squad, he would be of the lowest level; it was difficult to say just what his future performance would be like.

Chapter 440 – The Killing Hunt Begins

Chapter 440 – The Killing Hunt Begins

…

…

…

After the big fellow spoke, the man surnamed Zhou said to Lin Ming, “This person isn’t lying, they really are one of the top squads within the Wartime Alliance. It’s a good idea to join them.”

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment, not immediately answering.

The big fellow saw Lin Ming’s concern and said, “Come to my team lounge and have a look first. If you want, you can directly join in. But let’s get the ugly talk out of the way first. We can help you out at the start, but don’t think that you’ll be able to always count on help from other members. If after several operations you still cannot adapt to life or death battles, don’t blame anyone when you are kicked from the squad. Our squad will not support people that drag us down. Otherwise, when we are putting our lives on the line, it’s possible that a single person’s mistake could cause the entire team to suffer.”

“Of course.” Lin Ming calmly answered, “I want to ask this Senior-apprentice Brother, how are the squad’s intelligence channels?”

“On both sides of this war, intelligence is the single most important factor. All top squads will enjoy intelligence as soon as it is found. Not only that, but we also have a very formidable member who has skilled perception and is responsible for investigating and gathering intelligence.”

“I understood. I’ll join your squad. I’ll have to ask this Senior-apprentice Brother to look after me.”

“Oh?” The big fellow looked at Lin Ming with surprise; it seemed as if this boy really cared about intelligence? But this wasn’t too weird. He directly said, “I’ll take you over to see the rest of the members.

As the big fellow spoke he laid down his pot of wine and brought Lin Ming through the tavern. After they passed through several corridors, they finally entered into a courtyard. The courtyard wasn’t too big, but it had a very elegant interior.

In the small courtyard, there was a purple-clothed woman sitting in meditation. A purple mass of air circled around her with faint hints of electricity sparkling within it. She was clearly a thunder-attribute martial artist.

The woman’s face was like a peach and she had a slim figure and a refined appearance. As Lin Ming arrived, she opened up her beautiful eyes to look at him, nodded, and then continued to meditate.

Besides the woman, there were two youths playing chess not too far away. These were actually a pair of twins, and their cultivation was at the peak Houtian realm.

“Hey, it’s a new squad member.” As the twins saw the big fellow walk over with Lin Ming, they laid down their chess pieces and greeted them.

“Mm, introduce yourself.” The bearded big fellow said to Lin Ming.

“Wild Halberd, late Houtian realm, 101,000 points at the Ten Thousand Killing Array test, first class soldier.”

“101,000 points? That’s great! Haha, you will have a bright future here. My name is Green Tree and this is my little brother Green Forest.”

Green Tree, Green Forest, these were also nicknames that they had chosen before. Lin Ming could feel light wood-attribute origin energy fluctuations coming from these twins; they were most likely wood-attribute martial artists. If these sorts of martial artists also had some sort of special technique, they could be very skilled at healing others. These were very popular teammates to have on a battlefield. With a martial artist that excelled at healing others around, the chances of surviving would be much higher.

"This is our vice-captain. You can call her Violet Rain." Green Tree pointed at the purple-clothed woman. Her cultivation was at the peak of the early Xiantian realm.

"Senior-apprentice Sister Violet Rain." Lin Ming greeted.

Violet Rain faintly smiled, she had a very calm reaction.

"Our squad name is the Fire Ax Squad, and Fire Ax is also the name of our squad captain. We belong under the third squadron of the Wartime Alliance. Wild Halberd, you will be this squad's ninth member. We'll be going to the battlefield a few days from now. Wild Halberd, don't let me down!" The bearded big fellow stretched out his limbs as he spoke with a grin.

Lin Ming smiled, "I'll try my best."

"Haha, don't be too nervous!" The big fellow patted Lin Ming's shoulder. "That's right, Wild Halberd, what attribute are you?"

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment then said, "Thunder."

A Thunder-fire dual-attribute physique was extremely rare. Naturally, Lin Ming couldn't expose information like this, so he chose to say that he was a thunder-attribute martial artist. If he said that he was a fire-attribute martial artist, he would inevitably need to use martial skills like Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky or 10,000 Flames Burning World. These were all martial skills that belonged to the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. It would be very easy for others to associate him with Divine Phoenix Island, thus Lin Ming simply chose to say thunder.

Although there were only a few thunder-attribute martial artists in Divine Phoenix Province, there were many of them within the Five Element Region as well as the Supreme Mystery Temple. It wouldn't draw anyone's attention even if he used a Thunder Soul.

"Thunder? That's the same attribute as Violet Rain. You can ask her for some tips later. Violet Rain is from the Violet Profound Sect within the Supreme Mystery Province, so her thunder-attribute cultivation method is good!"

The Supreme Mystery Province that the bearded big fellow spoke of was a land under the jurisdiction of Supreme Mystery Temple, one of the three great fourth-grade sects of the South Horizon Region. The South Horizon Region's three fourth-grade sects were Divine Phoenix Island, Supreme Mystery Temple, as well as the Dire Space Sect.

Divine Phoenix Island once had 19 third-grade sects under it. But after the entire Moon Seizing Sect was destroyed, there were only 18 left.

Supreme Mystery Temple also had third-grade sects under their control. The Violet Profound Sect was naturally one of these.

Violet Rain calmly said, "If you have any questions on thunder-attribute techniques or control, then feel free to discuss them with me."

Lin Ming gave a cursory nod.

"Alright, well, you can go to your room for now. A few days later we'll be going to the battlefield. During this free time, make sure to raise yourself to your best condition." The bearded big fellow threw Lin Ming a small badge with a room number written on it.

Lin Ming glanced down at his room number. He had been assigned room '9'.

"Thank you... that's right, can you lend me a map of the enemy's forces and how they're distributed?" The reason that Lin Ming had joined this squad was to a large extent because of the information they could offer.

The South Aurora Island region was simply too great. It was thousands of miles in diameter, and it would be extremely difficult to determine where the South Sea Demon Region's forces were located. If Lin Ming tried to search, he would be like a headless fly that searched everywhere for enemies to slay. Not only would it be extremely inefficient, but it would be extremely dangerous.

"A map of the enemy forces?" The bearded big fellow was puzzled for a moment but readily said, "Okay. Green Forest, take out a jade slip copy of the enemy force's locations."

All of the military intelligence information as engraved into a jade slip. Of course, this information always lagged a bit behind reality and there would be some discrepancies.

Lin Ming received the jade slip and immersed his sense into it. He discovered that there was a massive map within the jade slip, and on this map were many red and blue dots of different sizes.

"What are these dots?" Lin Ming asked.

"Those are the forces of the South Sea Demon Region and also our own. If you immerse your sense further you can obtain greater information"

Lin Ming did, and found that the information contained within was astonishingly detailed. There was a list of every base along with a description of their corresponding strength. This included information on masters as well as the possible size of the team. There was also information on array formations and just what sort and how strong those array formations were.

As Lin Ming carefully looked through the jade slip, his eyes lit up. This was it!

The third position, a squad with a middle Xiantian realm master leading it. It was a sentry point at the southernmost tip of South Aurora Island's true essence stone vein deposit… Lin Ming slowly locked his attention onto this small red point within the jade slip's map.

“I have absolute confidence that I’ll be able to defeat a middle Xiantian master. Since it’s my first time on the battlefield, I’ll start with a middle Xiantian enemy and familiarize myself with the process. Once I have more experienced, I’ll start to go against the extreme Xiantian masters…”

Against a extreme Xiantian master, Lin Ming was a bit worried.

Ouyang Shenxiu was an extreme Xiantian master, but the truth was that his strength could only be considered very mediocre within those of his level. If Lin Ming were to meet an extreme Xiantian master who was a core disciple of a large sect, he would completely lack assurance in defeating him.

If he had bad luck and somehow met an extreme Xiantian top level powerhouse like Mu Qianyu, he might have to use his Escape Symbol.

Thus, he first chose a middle Xiantian master as his goal in order to ensure success.

A martial artist’s strength also had multiple areas in which it could grow besides cultivation. The longer they lagged behind, the greater the gap would be.

Lin Ming decided he would begin tonight. The bearded big fellow had said that the official battle would start several days from now, but Lin Ming couldn’t be bothered to wait so long.

The reason he came to the South Sea battlefield was to slaughter all his enemies.

When practicing the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’, the more powerhouses he killed and the stronger they were, they greater the might of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’.

As Lin Ming memorized the information on the jade slip, he returned to his room by himself and prepared to begin his brief trip…

……………

At night, the bright moon shined in the inky sky.

At the very southern end of the true essence stone vein deposit, there was a very remote and small town.

The small town was surrounded by a simple wooden fence and most of the houses were in ruins. These were the remains left behind after the South Sea Demon Region invaded and the refugees fled.

Because the martial artists of the South Sea Demon Region had bloodline origins related to the Giant Demon race, they didn't see themselves as the same as humans. Once the war began, it also became a war between races. In a battle, it was common for everything to be exterminated – not even a common mortal would be spared.

This war in the South Sea was a woeful calamity upon every resident of the South Sea's islands.

Divine Phoenix Island had assigned many ships to transport refugees away from the warzone. However, the distance that separated the South Sea islands was simply too great, and even riding ships was very dangerous. If one encountered vicious sea beasts or turbulent weather, it was a common matter to simply be swallowed into the endless waters.

In this war, the civilian casualties were incalculable.

Under the ash blue sky, a shadow passed through like a ghost, gently landing on a large tree. This shadow was Lin Ming.

Lin Ming had extremely keen eyesight. By borrowing the moonlight, he was able to clearly see that on a hillside around 10 miles away, there was a pitch black cave.

This was a base of the South Sea Demon Region martial artists. Normally, the martial artists of the Divine Phoenix Province would set up a tent, or if they were staying longer, they would construct a simple cabin.

But the South Sea Demon Region martial artists liked to live in caves.

“The data showed that this group of South Sea Demon Region martial artists were spotted here around seven days ago. Since there’s also a giant true essence stone vein to be mined here, they shouldn’t have left so soon.”

As Lin Ming neared the cave, he slowed down. Soon after, at the entrance of the cave he saw two large vicious beasts that looked like wolves. These wolves were over 10 feet long and patrolled back and forth. Their sullen emerald eyes were like two lanterns in the dark, and their crimson tongues drooped under their sharp fangs. Saliva trickled down their jaws, and every once in awhile they would issue whining sounds.

This was a vicious beast that the South Sea Demon Region commonly used for security purposes. They had extremely sensitive senses of smell and hearing. If Lin Ming hadn’t been using the concealment techniques that Bi Luo had left behind, it would have been very easy for these two animals to discover him.

“If these wolves are there, then the info should still be right. It looks like my trip isn’t in vain after all.” The corners of Lin Ming’s lips curved up in a smile.

Chapter 441 – Blood Drinking Seal

Chapter 441 – Blood Drinking Seal

…

…

…

The cave entrance was around the height of two people, and within the cave, there were six or seven South Sea Demon Region martial artists that were gathered together, chatting.

“Captain, these past three months we’ve already mined over a thousand medium-grade true essence stones. In addition, we’ve also accumulated a ton of military exploit points by killing our enemies. After going back, Captain should be able to be promoted to a 3-star Devil General. When that happens, us brothers will also share in the glory!” The martial artist who spoke was around nine feet tall. In comparison to a normal human, he was much taller and his skin was also slightly blue toned.

“Haha, with Captain’s talent, being promoted to a starred Devil General was only a matter of time!” Another South Sea Demon Region martial artist said, crazily laughing.

Within these people, the one they called captain was a martial artist with a cultivation at the middle Xiantian realm. He didn’t look any different from a human; he had a handsome, delicate face and his skin was a bit pale, as if he were constantly sick. At first glance, he looked like a human youth. His temperament was a bit similar to Lei Mubai’s; he was most likely a descendant of the Netherworld Great Emperor.

Hearing the flattery of so many people, the youth chuckled and said, “Strength is the foundation of all. Titles like starred Devil General or anything else are simply meaningless vanity! In this South Sea war, my greatest harvest isn’t my military exploits or the true essence stones I've acquired, but having cultivated my Monster Killing Law to the third layer!"

On the endless battlefield where the only true friend was slaughter, it was the best time to master cultivation methods such as the Monster Killing Law.

"Since Captain says that strength is most important, we'll have to give our all and kill more during this war!"

"Humph! 3000 years ago, the humans of the South Horizon Region were merciless to my people. Now it's time for them to pay blood with blood... mm?" As soon as the youth spoke here, his complexion changed. He expanded his sense and heard two light sounds outside of the cave as both of the wolf beasts guarding were immediately killed!

"The enemy is attacking!"

The Demon Region youth's complexion paled. The surrounding six martial artists also tensed up.

"Let's go!"

With a cry from the demonic path youth, there was a loud bang as the entire cave suddenly exploded. Rocks were crushed to pieces, and a terrifying shockwave cracked all the way through the mountain and created a massive gap. Large chunks of stone came crashing down.

The seven Demon Region martial artists escaped out of the cave in distress. One of them was covered in blood, his entire arm was turned into bone chips and meat. He didn't have time to react when a blood red light suddenly flashed past him light a rainbow; the speed was too fast for him to have any response!

Puff!

A long halberd stabbed through the dantian of that Demon Region martial artist. The crescent moon blade twisted, and the youth’s dantian shattered – he died on the spot.

As this martial artist fell, an incredible scene took place. The martial artist’s body suddenly collapsed in on itself, turning into countless bits of flesh and blood that rained down. And in this endless shower of blood, a red streak of lightning that looked like a small red snake circled around. The blood and flesh gave off a faint blood energy that was completely condensed into the red lightning. That red lightning darted back into a black-clothed youth’s hand.

This black-clothed youth was Lin Ming, and that red lightning was the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder!

Lin Ming flicked his finger and a red line separated from the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder, circling around Lin Ming’s fingertip. After a few breaths of time, this red line condensed into a strange crimson seal. On that seal were faint lines that emitted a bloody energy!

‘So this is this blood needed to form the Blood Drinking Seal described within the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’…’ Lin Ming bent his finger, and the Blood Drinking Seal sunk into Lin Ming’s body. Suddenly, an icy cold energy spread through his body, and a wave of killing intent surged through Lin Ming’s heart. Along with this, he could feel a slight change in his aura. His aura had become even fiercer, and contained a faint murderous intent.

The ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ followed the slaughtering road. Every time someone was killing, their blood essence would be used to create a Blood Drinking Seal. The stronger the victim, the stronger the Blood Drinking Seal!

The martial artist that Lin Ming had cut down a moment ago was at the peak Houtian realm. He wasn’t even enough to form the weakest kind of Blood Drinking Seal. This sort of Blood Drinking Seal – whether it was attack power or defensive power – would be extremely weak.

Blood Drinking Seals could constantly fuse together. In the midst of carnage, if one killed one million people, they could create one million Blood Drinking Seals, fusing them together to create an even stronger Blood Drinking Seal.

As one slaughtered more and more, the power of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ would also become increasingly strong!

If one could create tens of thousands of high-grade Blood Drinking Seals, then they could travel wherever they wished between the heavens and earth!

This was the killing road of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’.

Lin Ming didn’t walk the demonic path, so he would naturally have more problems in condensing a Blood Drinking Seal. However, this problem was solved by the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder.

The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder was able to absorb blood essence. With this ability, it would only take a blink of an eye to fully condense a Blood Drinking Seal.

As the Demon Region youth stared at the blood seal within Lin Ming’s hand, his complexion became extremely ugly. “This is a demonic path cultivation method!”

“A human martial artist actually practices a demonic path cultivation method!’ The Demon Region youth’s face darkened, “A mere late Houtian realm human dares to kill their way to my base. You are quite confident in yourself!”

As the Demon Region youth spoke, the martial artists around him had all come out of their earlier panic, they had all drawn their weapons.

Lin Ming casually glanced over the six remaining martial artists. A middle Xiantian realm, an early Xiantian realm, and also four peak Houtian realms.

The six of them should be able to condense two Blood Drinking Seals.

“Captain, let’s kill this boy and make a corpse guard from his body so we can take revenge for Old Seven!” A Xiantian martial artist in the squad pointed his long spear at Lin Ming, his eyes flashing with killing intent. On the demonic path, there were many martial artists who used spears or halberds!

“Be careful, this boy isn’t so simple!” The Demon Region youth reminded everyone. Since this boy dared to rush into their base, he naturally had something he relied on. But he still didn’t believe that a boy with a late Houtian realm cultivation could simultaneously deal with the six of them.

“Die!” The early Xiantian realm martial artist with a spear rushed at Lin Ming.

The Demon Region youth savagely grinned and also rushed forwards. His weapon was a spear over 10 feet long. The blood red spear edge gave off a thick bloody energy!

“Kill! Kill!”

The six individuals rushed towards Lin Ming together. In a war where the only purpose was to kill, they naturally wouldn’t care about something idiotic like rules or fairness. As soon as they attacked, every strike they made was an all-out offensive to kill their enemy.

For a time, six weapons were pointed at Lin Ming. Once these martial artists attacked, their murderous auras billowed. These were elite soldiers that had thrived on the killing fields!

“10,000 Flames Burning World!”

Hou!

Tens of thousands of flames swept up like a tide, directly rushing over the Demon Region youth. Lin Ming swept out with his halberd, and heard a loud bursting sound as three peak Houtian martial artist exploded into a bloody rain. A small red snake twisted around these piles of flesh, and all the blood essence became a faint red line that was completely absorbed by the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder!

"Old Six! Third Brother!"

A halberd-wielding martial artist's eyes turned red. It was just a single exchange of moves, and yet even with the six of them combined, three of them had been instantly killed!

"Die!" The Demon Region martial artist cut down at Lin Ming with his halberd. But as he did so, the Demon Region youth's complexion changed. The youth had realized one thing, and that was that this black-clothed youth in front of him was absolutely a God of Death!

"Old Second, don't do it..."

The Demon Region youth's words had only partially come out, but it was too late.

Lin Ming's halberd thrust out, meeting that Xiantian martial artist's attack head-on. Tempering Marrow true essence suddenly erupted, and an incomparably peerless strength broke forth. That Xiantian martial artist felt his arm shake, and then the grip of his hand tremble; his weapon was sent flying away!

Pu!

A purple light flashed, and in a split-second, Lin Ming's halberd had pierced through that Xiantian martial artist's body. With a twist of the halberd, the martial artist's dantian shattered!

"Old Second!" As the Demon Region youth saw this, his eyes widened. These Demon Region martial artists had been together with him for years, they were no different than his brothers.

He grit his teeth, and without a single word, turned around and fled.

The only one left was a last peak Houtian martial artist. As he saw this, he also turned and fled. The direction he chose was completely different from the Demon Region youth.

"Smart idea, but too bad... it's too late."

Lin Ming flicked his finger and a red light and a purple light shot out.

The red light was the Blood Drinking Seal he had just condensed, and the purple light was the Divine Demon Steel Needle!

Pu!

The red Blood Drinking Seal instantly overtook the peak Houtian martial artist with an astonishing speed. It was like a serpent as it drilled through his body.

The martial artist's body shook, and his eyes glazed over. The Blood Drinking Seal had already penetrated through his every blood vessel, and had cleanly absorbed every last bit of blood essence.

After several breaths, the martial artist's body withered away. The Blood Drinking Seal burst out from his body, and the seal's red lines were much clearer than before.

Lin Ming extended his hand, and the Blood Drinking Seal submerged back into his body. At the same time, the Divine Demon Steel Needle also caught up to the Demon Region Youth!

"Go die!"

The Demon Region youth's hair was in chaos, and his eyes were bloodshot. He turned around and struck the Divine Demon Steel Needle with his spear!

Bang!

The spear struck against the Divine Demon Steel Needle, and a terrifying compressed power of thunder suddenly burst forth. The Demon Region youth was struck by the overwhelmingly violent shockwave and sent flying backwards. He tasted a sickly sweet taste in the back of this throat, and then spat out a mouthful of blood!

Pu!

The Divine Demon Steel Needle didn't give the Demon Region youth any chance to recover, it immediately pierced through between his eyebrows!

The Demon Region youth's body trembled, and his eyes were filled with unwillingness that gave away to despair before going dull. All of his meridians were destroyed by the manic power of thunder, torn into pieces.

After a breath of time, the youth's body collapsed and then turned into a shower of bloody rain. The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder sucked up the faint traces of blood essence and then returned to Lin Ming's fingertip.

In just 10 breaths of time, six Demon Region martial artists – including a middle and early Xiantian realm martial artist – had all been annihilated!

If these people had decided to escape at the very start and had taken different directions, then Lin Ming would only have been able to kill three or four of them at most. But because they sensed that Lin Ming's cultivation was low, they had looked down on him and underestimated him. By the time they had decided to separately escape, it was already too late.

"It seems like my cultivation is the best disguise for me."

Lin Ming looked at the two crimson Blood Drinking Seals in his hands and the corners of his lips curved up. He only had two Blood Drinking Seals now, but he couldn't imagine what it would look like when he had tens of thousands of these Blood Drinking Seals. At that time when he put them all together, its power would be extremely horrifying.

Chapter 442 – Fire Ax

Chapter 442 – Fire Ax

…

…

…

When many Blood Drinking Seals formed atop the blood halberd, if this was combined with the halberd laws, it could form a near perfect offensive and defensive battle system.

When the Blood Drinking Seals were concentrated to a certain level, they could even manifest into a tangible Slaughter Domain. When a mentally weak person stepped into this Slaughter Domain, they would be suppressed to the point of collapse. Even someone with a strong will would be affected.

As Lin Ming recalled the description of the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art', he couldn't help but sigh. Lei Mubai really did have a great streak of lucky chances. The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder, ancient Devil Tome, and Great Desolate Blood Halberd replica all perfectly complemented each other. If he could have practiced the first few layers of the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art', he would have had an enormous chance of being able to break into the level of an Emperor powerhouse in the future.

Unfortunately, Lei Mubai had encountered Lin Ming along his path…

The ancient Devil Tome was originally a fragmented volume of the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' and the Great Desolate Blood Halberd was also a weapon that the Demon Emperor once used. As for the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder, that was a top quality Thunder Soul that was able to extract blood essence.

Lei Mubai could be said to have been in the perfect place to cultivate. However, no matter what he had accomplished, he had still ended up with his fate.

This was the natural brutality and cruel danger that accompanied those that walked the path of martial arts. There were countless geniuses within the Sky Spill Continent that had the qualifying talent to become an Emperor level powerhouse, however in so many years, there were very few that were able to step into the Divine Sea realm.

Lin Ming glanced at the time, it was still the middle of night. On the jade slip there was still a red spot and it was also very near; he could take a short trip to solve the problem there while he was at it.

…………

Early next morning.

A tall man wearing bright red armor strode into the Fire Ax squad's small courtyard.

As this man walked, he exuded a powerful aura, as if all the surrounding fire origin energy was being sucked into him.

"Captain!"

The big bearded fellow was laughing and chatting with the twins. But as he saw the red armored man walk over, he stood up and greeted him.

"Mm." The red armored mildly nodded. He was the captain of the Fire Ax Squad – Fire Ax. His cultivation was at the middle Xiantian realm, and he was the absolute core of the Fire Ax Squad's strength. Regardless of whether it was combat experience, leading ability, or individual strength, he was number one in the squad, and he also held an absolute standing in the squad.

The other squad members all respected Fire Ax from the heart.

As Violet Rain heard the commotion, she also opened the door to her own room. She faintly smiled at the red armored man and said, “Captain, what’s the battle situation like?”

“We encountered a small squad let by two middle Xiantian realm martial artists. We killed three peak Houtian martial artists. Besides Cool Foam being injured, we didn’t suffer any other damage.” The red armored man calmly said.

“Two middle Xiantian realm martial artists?” Violet Rain was startled.

“Haha! Captain is Captain, he can go one against two!” The big bearded fellow laughed.

Ten days ago, Fire Ax had picked up a transportation mission. But because the difficulty wasn’t too great, he had only brought half the squad with him and was letting the other half rest. He didn’t expect that he would encounter a squad led by two middle Xiantian realm martial artists.

Within South Aurora Island, since there weren’t any Revolving Core martial artists, Xiantian martial artists were the strongest ones. Fire Ax had a cultivation at the middle Xiantian realm, and was also considered quite strong for those within his level; he could be considered a top class master of South Aurora Island.

However, it was still troublesome for him to kill martial artists at the same cultivation level. In that battle, he had been able to kill three peak Houtian realm martial artists, but the two middle Xiantian realm martial artists had escaped.

Fire Ax pulled out three jade tablets from his spatial ring and casually threw them on the table. These three jade tablets were shot through with bloody lines.

“Hehe!”

The bearded big fellow eagerly picked up the three jade tablets; these were the tablets given by the Wartime Alliance for recording military exploits. After killing an enemy, it was possible to stain the jade tablet with the enemy’s blood essence before their dantian’s true essence dissipated as a record. One could use this jade tablet to see the enemy’s cultivation.

“We got another 300 military exploit points! Haha, what a great harvest, awesome!”

“Divine Phoenix Island is offering very good fire-attribute cultivation methods and they even have a top high-grade human-step Flame Essence. Captain, if you can accumulate some more military exploits then you can exchange it for a high-grade human-step Flame Essence. With your strength, even a late Xiantian realm martial artist won’t be your match! When that time comes, we will be the unrivalled squad of South Aurora Island! Haha!”

The Fire Ax who rarely smiled revealed a slight grin as he was infected by the bearded big fellow’s enthusiasm. He had long been yearning for a high-grade human-step Flame Essence.

“Don’t boast too outrageously, there are some very strong fellows with the South Sea Demon Region. For instance, there is still Blood Bone, Viper, and Nightmare. Even if I manage to absorb a high-grade human-step Flame Essence, I will still be far from their match.”

As Fire Ax mentioned these three people, the bearded big fellow’s neck shrank and he didn’t speak any further. Obviously, he dreaded even the mention of these three.

For this past half year, the greatest powerhouses of the South Sea Demon Region within South Aurora Island were Blood Bone, Viper, and Nightmare. Within South Aurora Island, they were called the Big Three of the Demon Region.

These three were all slaughter-frenzied killing stars. If any squad encountered them, they would probably be annihilated.

Fire Ax smiled and said, “Once I absorb a high-grade human-step Flame Essence, the most I’ll be able to handle is a late Xiantian realm martial artist. And that is only defeating them – killing them is another story!”

When martial artists fought those at the same level and their strength wasn’t too different, it was easy to defeat the other. However, it was extremely difficult to kill them. If one of them decided to run with all their might, it would be difficult to stop them.

“Good, let’s discuss the plan for the operations three days from now. Call in all the members.”

....

The Fire Ax Squad had a total of nine members. The captain was Fire Ax, a middle Xiantian realm martial artist who also served as the core of the squad. There was vice-captain Violet Rain, whose cultivation was at the early Xiantian realm, and who excelled at controlling the power of thunder; her combat power couldn’t be understated.

There were the twins Green Tree and Green Forest whose primary ability was to cure wounds. There was the bearded big fellow, who didn’t have any attribute. He fought with a sledgehammer and his cultivation was at the peak Houtian realm…

As the eight old members sat around a table, Lin Ming sat at the rearmost position.

“Hehe, is this our newly arrived little brother?” Within the eight old members, there was a woman whose cultivation was at a half-step Xiantian. She was quite attractive and petite. But what drew one’s attention was that her hands were white like porcelain, and her nails were sharp and long. Obviously, these two beautiful hands of hers were murder weapons.

“I’m called Wild Halberd. Attribute: thunder.” Lin Ming introduced himself in a simple manner.

“Wild Halberd? That’s a fun nickname.” The woman was habitually cleaning her nails. She giggled and said, “My name is Enchanting Shadow. My job is an alchemist.” Enchanting Shadow pointed to a shyly smiling youth beside her. “This is Cool Foam. He has outstanding sense and therefore is responsible for scouting and detection.”

Lin Ming introduced himself to the several members that he was unfamiliar with, and then individually remembered their names.

“Alright, let’s have a look at how the current enemy forces are distributed.” As Fire Ax spoke, he spread a map on the table.

On the map there was the locations of South Sea Demon Region martial artists; they were indicated by red circles.

“Here, here, and here. These three places are the core of the South Sea Demon Region martial artists’ forces, and is also where the Big Three of the Demon Region, Blood Bone, Viper, and Nightmare gather. We have to make sure that our combat zone avoids them as far as possible. With the strength of those three, if we meet any one off them, it’s possible that even the combined strength of our entire squad won’t be able to resist.”

Fire Ax was speaking for Lin Ming, the other members were already aware of this.

“Now, within South Aurora Island, there are actually two times the number of Wartime Alliance martial artists than there are South Sea Demon Region martial artists. However, the quality of our forces is inferior. Thus, although there aren’t many South Sea Demon Region martial artists, they are dispersed all over the island and are occupying important true essence stone vein locations. As for us, we have many people, but we have to gather together in fear that we’ll be wiped out.”

“Three days from now, the goal of our mission will be… here!”

As Fire Ax spoke, he pointed at a spot on the map. As Lin Ming saw the marked locations, his complexion suddenly became awkward. This was the stronghold that he had just visited last night. The leader inside was the pale-looking Demon Region youth, and Lin Ming had already annihilated every single Demon Region martial artist within.

Could there be such a coincidence?

Fire Ax certainly didn’t know any of this. He continued to say, “Our strength is slightly higher than theirs, and it shouldn’t be a problem to defeat them. The key is, just how many can we kill…”

The enemy would flee in separate direction if they notice an incoming squad with seven or eight members. If this happened, they would only be able to kill a few of them.

Many Demon Region martial artist squads depended on their strength in order to flagrantly penetrate deep within South Aurora Island and blatantly plunder the true essence stone vein resources.

If they couldn't win they would run. Losing a few late Houtian or peak Houtian martial artists was an acceptable loss.

The reason that the Fire Ax Squad chose this stronghold was because this enemy base was far too deep in their territory. When Lin Ming had been deciding where to go, this was also the reason that he went there. Thus, the two of them had decided the same way.

"The Demon Region squad captain should be at the middle Xiantian realm. He is a bit weaker than me, but as long as he wishes to escape, no one here can stop him. It's not realistic to kill him. However, he has an early Xiantian realm martial artist under him. If we take him as our main goal and catch this big fish, we'll be able to earn 1000 military exploit points!"

The Wartime Alliance stated that killing a peak Houtian realm martial artist would earn one 100 military exploit points, and killing a half-step Xiantian would earn 200 military exploit points.

Killing a early Xiantian martial artist was 1000 military exploit points.

This illustrated just how great the disparity was between a Xiantian martial artist and a Houtian martial artist. On South Aurora Island, killing a Xiantian martial artist wasn't easy at all.

"Hehe, 1000 military exploit points. I can't wait!" The bearded big fellow was immediately roused and began to crack his knuckles, making 'ka ka ka' sounds. Of those that came to the South Sea battlefield, most were those that enjoyed the thrill of battle.

Only Lin Ming was completely silent, he was simply speechless. This was going to be a wasted errand, but it wasn't as if he could open his mouth and tell everyone what he had done last night. It stood to reason that it was impossible for him to know something like this.

“Alright, I’ve reported the operation details. If no one has any comments, we will set off three days from now.” As Fire Ax spoke, a flame lit in front of him – it was a sound transmitting talisman. As he heard the message, Fire Ax was stunned.

“What’s the matter?” Violet Rain asked, puzzled. Most of the time their captain was very calm, he rarely revealed expressions like this.

Fire Ax ruefully smiled and shook his head, “The operation is cancelled!”

“What? The mission plan was rejected?”

“No… it’s that the Demon Region squad was already annihilated…”

Chapter 443 – Spiritual Forest

Chapter 443 – Spiritual Forest

…

…

…

“They were annihilated?” Violet Rain asked, bewildered.

“Yes. They’ve discovered seven corpses, some of them turned into puddles of blood; they should have been completely annihilated! It wasn’t just that squad, but a nearby squad that had six people was also eliminated. Without a doubt, all of them were killed. The two squads should have been killed by the same squad, the manner of death is similar.”

Fire Ax couldn’t even believe the words he said. If they encountered a powerful enemy and knew they couldn’t win, some of them should have been able to escape. Unless, the difference in strength was too great.

For instance, a squad led by two or three late Xiantian realm masters might be able to accomplish this.

Within the squads of South Aurora Island, there were only two squads that could continuously kill two squads of the South Sea Demon Region, and not only kill them, but completely annihilate them. However, these two squads had no need to hide their actions.

“Who did it? Nobody came to claim the military exploit points?” Enchanting Shadow asked.

Fire Ax shook his head. If someone came to collect the military exploit points, there wouldn’t have been so many doubts.

…………

At this time, within the command center of the Wartime Alliance, an old man was holding the latest intelligence report, pondering something.

This old man was responsible for the alliance operations on South Aurora Island. In truth, those that were placed in charge weren't too strong. They were often limited by their talent, but they were rich in experience and knowledge, like this old man.

"Old Liu, any news from that strange investigation this morning?" A calm voice sounded out. The one speaking was a middle-aged late Xiantian martial artist.

"Mm. Whoever it was only killed people, but didn't claim any military exploit points. He should probably be a master with some great background, therefore he doesn't have any liking towards our rewards."

"Perhaps. Or maybe it is an extreme Xiantian master who was passing by and decided to help on a whim." The South Sea battlefield was vast and broad. If the medium-grade true essence stone vein deposit of South Aurora Island was placed within all the strategic locations of the South Sea battlefield, it wouldn't be considered too important. Whether it was Divine Phoenix Island or the South Sea Demon Region, neither of them would place their main forces there.

"What I found strange is that from the information I received, the one who did this has a cultivation method that doesn't follow the orthodox path. Those demonic path martial artists that died all had their blood essence sucked dry..."

"Oh?" The middle-aged martial artist was a bit surprised, "Could it be infighting?"

"I can't say. Of the free martial artists of the Wartime Alliance, it isn't strange for any of them to practice cultivation methods of the demonic path."

Within the South Horizon Region, respect for cultivation methods had always been based on strength. Although demonic path cultivation methods were known as unorthodox means, there were still many sects that practiced them. For instance, the Seven Profound Valleys' Acacia Faction practiced demonic path martial arts. They wouldn't do something as boring as moralizing on others. Of those sects that practiced demonic path cultivation methods, they were easily swayed by their emotions and would even be provoked to killing and exterminating others.

"No matter who it is, they are neither our friend nor our enemy. We will continue with the operation plan and see how the situation develops...

....

Three days later –

Lin Ming accompanied the Fire Ax Squad for the first time to battle.

Including Captain Fire Ax, there were nine people altogether. They rode a small spirit boat into the spiritual forest, taking advantage of the cover of night.

In the deep and boundless forest late at night, a small spirit boat seemed very common.

"During this mission, we are going to intercept and kill a South Sea Demon Region convoy. It should happen sometime between midnight and dawn."

As Fire Ax spoke, he also compared time.

Ultimately, the reason for this war was to plunder resources. The two great resource sources of South Aurora Island were the true essence stone vein deposit as well as the spiritual forest.

The South Sea Demon Region attacked and occupied parts of South Aurora Island. Naturally, they would ship back the massive amount of resources that they stole.

The Wartime Alliance obtained news that tonight there would be a squad picking the plants within the spiritual forest that was about to ship off everything they had accumulated. Fire Ax had received the mission to kill off this convoy.

“Is this news reliable?”

“It should be reliable, it was delivered by ‘Camo’.”

The ‘Camo’ that Fire Ax mentioned was an inside spy that the Wartime Alliance had snuck into the South Sea Demon Region. ‘Camo’ was only a code name. Besides the top level characters of the Wartime Alliance, nobody knew just who this ‘Camo’ character was, or even if he was human or someone from the South Sea Demon Region.

Of course, there were inevitably spies of the South Sea Demon Region within the Wartime Alliance. In a war, intelligence work was extremely important. Otherwise, squads would be blind. On such a big mass of land like South Aurora Island, it would simply be impossible to track the movements of the enemy.

“We’ll arrive soon. When we go down, don’t attract any attention.” Fire Ax said.

“Okay.” The one responsible for driving the spirit boat was Cool Foam. He operated the spirit boat to descend, and they quickly made their way into the forest.

Lin Ming was standing near a window. As he saw the spiritual forest at night, he was unable to help gasping; this forest…too big!

Lin Ming meant that the plants within the spiritual forest were too big, not the area itself. The trees grew to a terrifying degree. A single tree would take dozens if not hundreds of people to surround it, and shot up thousands of feet, piercing into the sky.

The branches and leaves that spread out were like a mini city in the air. The thinnest branches were as thick as a water barrel, and the leaves were several feet wide. If a leaf was placed on water, it could even be used as a small raft.

In this abnormally large forest, the 50 foot wide spirit boat was like a fish in water as it cruised through, smartly making its way through. Whenever the ship encountered branches or leaves, Cool Foam would manipulate the spirit boat in a clever manner and move around any obstacles. One couldn’t help but praise his refined driving skills.

"Wild Halberd, this is the first time you've been to the spiritual forest so I'll give you a brief rundown of the situation." Fire Ax beckoned Lin Ming.

"Only a fifth of the spiritual forest is on land, the rest is on the sea. There are many high-grade vicious beasts here, even ones that are strong enough to compare to an extreme Xiantian realm martial artist."

"That strong?" Lin Ming was stunned. Naturally he didn't fear an extreme Xiantian vicious beast, but a common squad simply wouldn't be able to resist such a monster.

"Haha, Brother Wild Halberd should feel relieved. There are only a few kinds of the strongest vicious beasts and we understand their behavior and habitat. Naturally we have the means to avoid them." The bearded big fellow laughed as he spoke; he had assumed that Lin Ming had become nervous upon hearing that there were extreme Xiantian vicious beasts here.

Lin Ming nodded. A vicious beast had limited intelligence. As long as they could figure out its habits, it was truly easy to avoid them.

"That's right, if we really meet a top-grade vicious beast, our squad can only escape into the wilderness. Let alone us, even if the Demon Region's Big Three encountered then, it would be a very tricky situation." Fire Ax smiled as he spoke.

"There should be around seven or eight South Sea Demon Region squads stationed in the spiritual forest. However, they are very far from each other. As long as we can settle the battle quickly, we won't be surrounded.

Within the South Sea battlefield, the reason that small squads were the combat units instead of large-scale armies was for the sole purpose of plundering resources.

Squads could be like locusts – they were able to spread out and quickly gather resources. As for large armies, they would only be used to attack and capture a sects supreme stronghold. However, this didn't make sense for the Wartime Alliance. What martial artists wanted were resources, not territory.

A sect consumed resources at an astonishing rate. Even a small sect like the Seven Profound Valleys had over a hundred Xiantian realm martial artists, much less a fifth-grade sect like the South Sea Demon Region.

Not just that, but the South Sea Demon Region had many smaller sects under them. If these were all added together, they were a massive force.

With so many martial artists depending on resources from deep within the South Sea, naturally these resources would become stretched.

That was why there were so many combat squads distributed throughout South Aurora Island.

Any elite squad would have a Xiantian master as its core. A Xiantian master was absolutely the main force of this great war. Although a Revolving Core master was formidable, they were extremely limited in number. They could only fight in a decisive battle. Normally, they would just play a deterring role by frightening others.

As they approached the location of their mission, the spirit boat began to slow down. Cool Foam released his sense and began to investigate the surroundings. A martial artist with a formidable perception was utterly important to a squad. They were that squad's eyes and ears. If their perception was inferior to the enemy's, they would be discovered first and thus attacked first. If they were ambushed, they would fall into the weaker, passive role, and this was likely to directly lead to defeat.

"Captain, there shouldn't be any ambushes nearby."

With South Aurora Island, every mission carried a chance that there would be an ambush. However, the Fire Ax Squad was an elite squad with outstanding members. They would rarely be ambushed, and even if they were, they had the capability to deal with it.

As the spirit boat touched the ground, Cool Foam was the first to jump off the spirit boat, carefully investigating his surroundings to see if anything was strange.

Lin Ming was displaying his usual demeanor. However, the truth was that he had already felt a formidable energy fluctuation several miles away. Judging from this energy, they were without a doubt South Sea Demon Region martial artists.

It was possible that they were the Demon Region squad described in the intelligence report, and the ones shipping the raw medicinal materials.

………………

In the dark forest, over a dozen manic wolves the size of calves were patrolling back and forth, their green eyes shining in the dark. Every now and then they would issue out a low roar, causing those that heard it to feel as if their heart stopped.

Within this group of hungry wolves, there were eight black-armored martial artists holding spears. In front of them, there were a couple dozen youths with medicine baskets fixed on their backs. After digging up the medicinal plants, it was best to place them in the medicine basket in order to preserve the maximum degree of medicinal potency. If these plants were placed in a spatial ring, they would soon die. The mini dimension within a spatial ring could not hold life.

These medicinal plants had just been discovered a few days ago. Although they hadn't yet fully matured and reached their maximum effect, no one would care about these things in a war. If they didn't pick it themselves, that meant that it would be left in enemy hands.

"Faster, go faster!" The leader among these eight black-armored soldiers loudly shouted.

These young boys and girls that picked medicine were slaves from the South Sea Demon Region. Most of them were at the first or second stage of Body Transformation. They were strong enough to withstand the heavy and grueling physical labor required, but were weak enough that they had no power to resist; they were the ideal slaves.

After being yelled at by a black-armored soldier, these boy and girls lowered their heads and increased their efforts to collect herbs. They feared that they would be punished if they didn't gather enough.

Chapter 444 – Zombie Guard

Chapter 444 – Zombie Guard

…

…

…

As a black-armored man saw the slaves' medicine baskets growing heavy, he smiled and said, "Big Brother, we've really hit it big this time. There are many more medicinal herbs than we expected. Once we return, we'll receive a great number of military exploit points. Not just that, but us brothers will also be able to keep a bit! When that happens, Big Brother's status will surely rise within the family clan!"

"Yah! We've already been in this bird shit land for half a year, finally we'll be able to accomplish something!"

"When we head back, I can't wait to see just what those old fool Elders' expressions will be like!"

The several black-armored men enthusiastically spoke. They were from a third-grade martial family clan that was subordinate to the South Sea Demon Region. The South Sea Demon Region covered countless large and small islands, and there were even many strange and foreign races within them. There were dozens of third-grade sects and martial families, and some of those third-grade sects were formidable to the point that they surpassed even Peacock Mountain and came close to becoming fourth-grade sects.

In this great war between the South Sea Demon Region and Divine Phoenix Island, the larger the scale of the opponents, the greater the scope involved. All of these small sects under the South Sea Demon Region participated in order to grab a share of the spoils.

This also meant that more and more Xiantian martial artists came to the South Sea battlefield. A massive number of squads were formed for this war, and some of them weren't even part of either side; they were fully private and voluntary squads that were created to seek fortune in the chaos of war. For these most basic martial artists, even picking up the junk left behind by powerhouses was enough for them to live for several years.

………………

In the dense, dark jungle, when the Demon Region martial artists' squad was about seven or eight miles away, Cool Foam suddenly stopped. "I've found them. There are around seven to 10 powerhouses, and also some weak life fluctuations – those should be the herb gatherers."

Normally, the person in the squad with the best perception was also the strongest. However, the Fire Ax Squad was an exception. Cool Foam was very talented in this aspect, and as for Fire Ax, although he was strong, his perception was his greatest weakness.

"Mm, good job. Let's get ready to ambush them. Violet Rain, you and me will hold back the Xiantian masters. As for everyone else, concentrate your efforts on finishing off the peak Houtian martial artists. We'll follow the same plan as we've done before. Wild Halberd, this is your first time coming to the battlefield with us, so you don't need to be in front. Just wait for a good opportunity to attack!" Fire Ax glanced at Lin Ming as he spoke. Normally, the new recruit would inevitably be nervous during his first foray on the battlefield, and it would lead to abnormal reactions. Even if they were a veteran of war, they would still be a burden due to this. This time he would allow Lin Ming to adapt to the situation, no one expected that he would be able to accomplish much.

"Haha, no need to be nervous. It's alright, since it's your first time on the battlefield, let's compare our strength!" The bearded big fellow laughed as he patted Lin Ming's shoulder.

Lin Ming smiled, "Okay."

“Everyone prepare for battle!” As Fire Ax issued his order, everyone else extracted their weapons. “Go!”

Woosh!

Nine people ran out. Under the full speed impact of a master’s speed, this wasn’t a long distance at all!

“Mm? The enemy is here!”

The leader among the eight black-armored soldiers turned around, his complexion changing, “Prepare to meet them!”

Cha cha cha!

Eight spears pointed towards the Fire Ax Squad together. But at this point, Captain Fire Ax had already reached the front, “Mountain Splitting Ax!”

Bang –

A red inferno burst forth like a volcanic eruption. Fire Ax’s ax chopped down, his strength exploding to the limit. This was Fire Ax’s way of fighting: lacking finesse, but sweeping away all opposition with absolute strength.

Clang!

The captain of the black-armored soldiers crossed his spear to block Fire Ax’s strike. However, Fire Ax’s attack was too strong, the powerful impact forced the black-armored soldier to take a step back, directly miring his feet in the ground.

“Die!”

Fire Ax chopped down with his ax again!

The black-armored martial artist waved his lance to fight again, but he was sent flying backwards dozens of feet.

At this time, Dark Sword, Violet Rain, and the rest of them were all locked in battle. Dark Sword was the third Xiantian realm martial artist of the Fire Ax Squad. His cultivation was at the most early Xiantian realm and the weapon he wielded was a darksteel heavy sword.

As for Violet Rain, she didn't use any weapon, but her hands flashed with purple thunder. Her entire body was wrapped in glittering electric lights. With just a touch, a black-armored soldier was paralyzed. The power of thunder entered into his meridians, wreaking absolute havoc!

Violet Rain's palm thrust towards the spot between the enemy's eyebrows!

"Woman, I am your opponent!"

With a thick murderous intent flowing out from him, a black-armored martial artist thrust his spear towards Violet Rain's chest, forcing her to take several steps back. The one who attacked her was another Xiantian master of this Demon Region squad.

The black-armored squad had two Xiantian martial artists, one less than the Fire Ax squad.

Because of this, no one was able to stop Dark Sword.

"Ah!"

With a miserable scream, the weakest black-armored soldier's stomach was pierced by a jet black sword. The sword twisted, shattering his dantian; he died right on the spot.

Of the eight black-armored soldiers, one of them had died to a sneak attack and now there were only seven left. But the Fire Ax Squad had nine people, and they also had an extra Xiantian master; the disparity in their combat strength was already obvious.

The Fire Ax Squad’s bearded big fellow and the rest had already anticipated this and stepped in front of black-armored soldiers, blocking their escape. Even if they couldn’t kill all of them, they would at least kill half!

“You really think that we are fish on the chopping block, hm!?” The captain of the black-armored soldiers wiped the blood from his lips and savagely smiled. He didn’t seem to care that they was ambushed by others. Since he was carrying out missions on South Aurora Island, he knew that every moment there was one more moment on the precipice of life and death. At any moment it was possible that they would be surrounded and ambushed. Every soldier had to be ready to fight at all times, and also know that death could come for them at any time.

“Mice of the Wartime Alliance, since you’ve come today, you won’t be leaving!”

The black-armored captain swiped his spatial ring and two large wooden boxes appeared. These were actually two coffins.

As the coffins hit the ground, they began to violently tremble. There was grating sounds coming from within, as if zombie corpses were scratching at the coffin lids with their nails.

“Zombie guards?”

Fire Ax’s complexion changed. Within the cultivation methods of the demonic path, refining the corpses of the dead into a zombie guard was an extremely notorious one.

“You will all die here today!” The black-armored soldier’s face flashed with a mad grin.

The coffin lid began to shake more and more. Two groups of black fog rose from the coffins, forming into two thin ghost claws. These claws were completely black and were sharp like sabers. The hands were full of bone spurs, and between the spurs were boiling pustules.

After the ghost claws extended, they suddenly turned and ripped opened the lid of the coffins. Two zombie guards stiffly stood up from the coffins, their bodies covered in bubbling pustules and bone spurs.

As their withered eyes opened, they revealed two scarlet eyes. In the middle of the night they were especially vivid.

Lin Ming's heart stirred as he saw these two zombie guards, 'So that's how it is. The Seven Profound Valleys' Puppet Faction's corpse puppets are in reality a demonic path cultivation method used to make zombie guards.'

Refining a corpse into a puppet was in truth creating a zombie guard. Mugu Buyu had even transformed a part of his body into that of a zombie guard; no wonder Mugu Buyu had grown up into such a creepy mummy-like appearance.

"Peak of early Xiantian zombie guards!"

Fire Ax's complexion sank. At this moment, the number of enemy Xiantian masters now outnumbered them by one!

"Violet Rain, you handle the zombie guards. Your power of thunder is best at suppressing the dead!" Although the current battle had flipped around, Fire Ax was still calm. "Wild Halberd, you're also a thunder-attribute martial artist. Support her from a distance, and do not approach!"

Fire Ax darkly sighed in his heart. 'To think that his first battle would be so fierce, this is truly a brutal test for Wild Halberd. Whether or not he can persist is difficult to say.'

"Let's go!"

Fire Ax loudly shouted, and grasped his ax as he rushed over to the black-armored captain. His entire body's true essence was revolving to the limit. If he could kill this enemy captain, the battle was as good as won!

Hong hong hong!

Fire Ax and the black-armored martial artist fiercely battled. Fire Ax was a bit stronger, but to defeat his opponent in a short period of time was impossible.

Violet Rain's exquisite eyebrows pressed together. She said to Lin Ming in a low voice, "Follow close to me. Do not leave my electrical net of protection. Otherwise I won't be able to distract myself and save you!"

As Violet Rain spoke, she shot towards the two zombie guards. The purple electrical network around her expanded, becoming wider and allowing Lin Ming to move around.

Lin Ming steadily followed. Although he had only known these people for a few short days, these fellow squad members had been very good to him.

As for the other Fire Ax Squad members, they were all engaged in fierce combat with the other black-armored soldiers.

Dark Sword was facing the other black-armored Xiantian martial artist. Although he was a bit weaker, he wouldn't be defeated so easily.

As for the others, they were almost equally matched. But, the greatest pressure was on Violet Rain. Because the black-armored squad now had one more Xiantian realm master, she had to face two enemies in order to protect the squad behind her.

Even though the power of thunder had a great effect on restraining the corpse energy, going one against two was still going to be extremely tricky.

In front of Lin Ming, Violet Rain took out a blue soft sword. As purple arcs of electricity sparkled on the blue sword, it was like bright flowers blooming at night!

Chi!

Violet Rain's sword cut down on a zombie guard's claw. The power of thunder ignited the corpse, causing faint traces of black smoke to appear.

Violet Rain frowned – she couldn't cut through!

The early Xiantian realm zombie guard had been fused with tough metals from top to bottom; its body was comparable to a treasure. Although Violet Rain's power of thunder was able to burn away the corpse energy around the zombie guard, destroying it was another matter altogether!

"Rahh!"

The zombie guard issued a hoarse growl and was forced back by Violet Rain. Another zombie guard rushed forward at Violet Rain, its chilling claws grasping towards her chest.

Violet Rain gave a loud shout and purple lightning erupted around her body. It concentrated on the top of her longsword, manifesting into a large blue bird!

"Thunder Shock Sword!"

The three foot long soft sword carried the blue bird as it chopped down on the zombie guard. The zombie guard was enveloped by the blue bird, causing blue flames to erupt all over its body. It fiercely trembled, and then was sent flying back by the shaking!

But at this moment, the other zombie guard had already rushed in front of Violet Rain. The nails of its black claw were over a foot long and emitted a sickening black light. Once she was grabbed, it would create five bloody holes.

Violet Rain's complexion changed. She didn't have time to draw back her sword and defend against this attack. She could only use her foot to kick away the zombie guard!

Flesh and blood against a zombie guard's claw! Once they collided, Violet Rain would inevitably be injured!

Lin Ming's eyebrows jumped. He flicked his finger, and two small arcs of purple electricity instantly shot into the zombie guard's eyes. Lin Ming was deliberately restraining his power.

But even so, the power of thunder that contained the will of the Divine Demon Thunder Soul was not something that the frail zombie guard's eyes could resist.

The zombie guard shook, and it suddenly slowed down. But at this moment, Violet Rain had enough time to heavily smash her foot into the zombie guard's face, directly kicking it away!

Chapter 445 – Behead

Chapter 445 – Behead

…

…

…

Bang!

Violet Rain's kick sent the zombie guard flying away. With some disbelief, she turned around to look at Lin Ming in surprise.

Violet Rain was extremely sensitive to thunder energy changes. A moment ago, it was clearly this youth's lightning strike that had delayed the zombie guard's attack! This thunder attack wasn't strong – it had only been one tenth of the power of thunder that she had released. But even though the power of thunder was weak, it was unusually concentrated and sharp. Once it was shot into the zombie guard's eyes, it was able to completely disrupt its attack!

To have such precise control and accurate judgment on the battlefield… Violet Rain couldn't believe it. Was this really a new recruit?

"Wild Halberd, you…" Violet Rain didn't know what to say at this time.

"Senior-apprentice Sister Violet rain, they come." Lin Ming coolly said. The power he had displayed just a moment ago wasn't strong, it was just that the utilization was clever; it wasn't enough to arouse any suspicious.

Violet Rain clenched her teeth and suppressed any questions she had. She turned round to meet the two zombie guards. Of the two zombie guards, one had been struck hard by Violet

Rain and the other one’s eyes had been injured by Lin Ming. However, neither of them had suffered any great losses.

As Lin Ming saw Violet Rain courageously rush up to meet the two zombie guards, he sighed. In the end, Violet Rain was only from a small sect; the grade of the Thunder Soul she had absorbed was low. Because of this, her attack power was also low. Even if Lin Ming created a good opportunity for her to attack, Violet Rain wouldn’t be able to cause heavy damage to the two zombie guards.

This fight couldn’t drag on for too long, Lin Ming had to find an opening. Otherwise, the Fire Ax Squad members might have casualties. These past few days, the Fire Ax Squad had been very kind to Lin Ming. Lin Ming didn’t want any of them to fall here.

Xiu! Xiu!

Violet Rain slashed out twice in a row. Because she was inspired by Lin Ming, this time she chose to target the zombie guard’s eyes.

However, this wasn’t as simple as Violet Rain thought it would be. The electricity that shot into the zombie guard’s eyes injured it, but it still mercilessly attacked Violet Rain as before.

In fact, zombie guards didn’t rely on their eyes to sense the enemy. They used their perception to feel the enemy’s ‘life force’. Even if they didn’t have eyes, they would still be able to determine the exact location of their enemies.

Violet Rain and the zombie guard attacked each other twice, and she was forced back several times. She began to feel some panic in her heart. What Lin Ming had done a moment ago seemed simple, but now that she tried it herself, how was the result like this?

Lin Ming said, “Senior-apprentice Sister Violet Rain, I will infuse the power of thunder into your body and coordinate with you, it may have a good effect.”

There was no other way. Violet Rain's attack power was simply too low. If the battle dragged on, she would be killed by the zombie guards after a war of attrition. Lin Ming could use this method in order to increase Violet Rain's attack power.

"Alright, assist me." Violet Rain deeply looked at Lin Ming. She had already recognized that this little junior-apprentice brother of hers was not simple at all.

As Violet Rain flicked the sword in her hands, the electric net around her suddenly contracted, now only protecting her own body instead of also covering Lin Ming. Violet Rain understood now that Lin Ming probably didn't need the electrical net to protect himself, what she had done was purely superfluous. If she gathered the power of thunder closer to her, she would be able to increase her attack power by a bit.

"Roar!"

The two zombie guards rushed towards Violet Rain at the same time. After several exchanges of blows, their bodies were already burnt black. Even though nearly all their corpse energy was burnt away, their bodies were still as hard as a treasure, and they were fundamentally undamaged.

"Thunder Shock Sword!"

A dazzling blue bird manifested atop Violet Rain's longsword again. At the same time, Lin Ming pressed his hand against Violet Rain's back. Power of thunder that contained the will of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder began to continuously flow into Violet Rain's body.

Although Lin Ming was suppressing his strength and he only poured a very small amount of power of thunder into Violet Rain's body, in terms of purity, it was far above what Violet Rain's low grade Thunder Soul could compare with.

If Violet Rain's power of thunder was a sword, then the bit of power of thunder that Lin Ming had poured into her was like covering her dull blade with the sharpest steel.

In that instant, as Violet Rain released the blue bird, it seemed to have a soul of its own as it let out a shrill cry. The first zombie guard was struck by the blue bird, and the blue bird directly tore through its body!

Zi zi zi!

Arcs of lightning danced. The zombie guard began to violently twitch. The area of its stomach which the blue bird had passed through began to wither away at a speed visible to the naked eye.

Ca!

Violet Rain slashed backwards with her sword, her slash sending the zombie guard flying backwards! Blue smoke began to issue from the zombie guard’s body.

She won?

Violet Rain was shocked. In that instant, she had been able to feel the purity of Lin Ming’s power of thunder. That was absolutely not something that someone from a small sect could have. Was Lin Ming a martial artist from a large sect coming out for adventure?

Violet Rain wasn’t able to indulge herself in daydreams in the chaos of battle. Although the first zombie guard had been severely damaged and could no longer fight, the second zombie guard had already rushed over to Violet Rain.

Violet Rain had just used the Thunder Shock Sword a moment ago. She wouldn’t be able to use it again so quickly. She released purple arcs of lightning from her body, trapping the zombie guard in an electric cage.

During this open time, Lin Ming glanced over the situation of everyone else fighting. There were seven black-armored soldiers against nine members of the Fire Ax Squad. Besides Lin Ming and Violet Rain fighting against the two zombie guards, there was enough for a one on one for everyone.

Fire Ax was suppressing the enemy leader. And although Dark Sword was a bit weaker, he wasn't in any danger.

However, as Lin Ming saw Green Tree, Green Forest, and Cool Foam, his eyebrows furrowed together. These three were specialized martial artists – their true combat strength was relatively weak. In just a few moves, they were already in danger.

"Damn! These fellows are really tough!"

A saber forced a black-armored martial artist back. The bearded big fellow was running out of breath. The armor of these Demon Region fellows was made out of some unknown material. They had high defensive capabilities and were able to resist his saber energy.

"Big Beard, hurry and finish your opponent so you can help Cool Foam – that boy won't be able to last much longer!" Enchanting Shadow's true essence sound transmission sounded out near the bearded big fellow's ears.

The bearded big fellow looked over at Cool Foam. After exchanging several moves with his opponent, his face was already pale. He was apparently being shaken by his opponent's true essence.

If this continued, Cool Foam wouldn't be able to last much longer!

The bearded big fellow clenched his teeth and gave a loud shout. The muscles all over his body bulged out, and the thick saber in his hands seemed especially epic at this moment. Obviously, he had used some sort of secret skill at this time.

"Die!" The bearded big fellow forced back his black-armored opponent and shot towards where Green Tree, Green Forest, and Cool Foam were.

"Green Tree! Green Forest! Cool Foam! Run to me!"

Ping ping ping!

His great saber struck against the enemy spears and sparks scattered everywhere. The bearded big fellow was releasing an unusually overwhelming amount of power. With just his strength, he was able to share the burden of Green Tree, Green Forest, and Cool Foam.

The three black-armored martial artists simultaneously retreated.

“Humph! He’s looking for death! Does he think he’s invincible just because he’s turned crazy!?”

“Since this fellow wants to die so badly, let’s concentrate our attacks and kill him first!”

“Kill!”

Three spears thrust towards the bearded big fellow at the same time!

These three black-armored martial artists were battle-hardened masters that were experienced on the field. Their spears were like cunning snakes. As the bearded big fellow chopped down, two spears were aimed towards his heart and another towards his dantian.

“Be careful!”

Green Tree shouted out. At this time, he didn’t have much combat strength left.

“F*ck off to your grandma!”

The bearded big fellow crossed his saber horizontally, took a step forwards, and slashed out at two black-armored martial artists.

“Big Beard!”

Cool Foam’s complexion changed. His perception was the most sensitive here. In that split second he was able to instantly judge that Big Beard’s saber strike absolutely wouldn’t be able to block the simultaneous attacks of both black-armored martial artists!

This situation naturally fell into Lin Ming's eyes. At this critical moment, Lin Ming's eyes flashed, and two black swirling vortexes appeared in the depths of his pupils.

Samsara martial intent!

Bang!

A chaotic tsunami of thoughts and scenes appeared within the spiritual seas of the two black-armored martial artists. Their minds shook, and their eyes glazed over, losing all focus.

"Die!"

The bearded big fellow slashed out with his saber; his saber slid past the spears and directly beheaded both black-armored martial artists!

Pu! Pu!

Two heads soared through the air, and columns of blood erupted like fountains. Two of the black-armored martial artists actually had their heads severed by the bearded big fellow in a single strike!

Green Tree and Green Forest were shocked. Even the bearded big fellow appeared in complete disbelief as he blankly stood there and stared at the saber in his hands.

Although he was a bit sloppy and rough, that didn't mean that he couldn't tell the difference between his attacks and his enemies'. In that moment, the saber attack had exhausted most of his strength, and he realized he should have been in a dangerous situation clashing against two spears like that. How could this have happened?

"This is... what happened?"

The bearded big fellow mumbled. It seemed as if the two opponents had deliberately let him attack.

As for Cool Foam, he was looking a bit thoughtful after seeing the expressions of the two black-armored martial artists before they had died.

If a person's neck was quickly cut off by a saber, their expression should retain a fright and unwillingness. However, those two had dulled, glazed eyes, and their expressions were slackened. It didn't seem as if they were terrified of the bearded big fellow's saber slicing off their heads at all. What happened here? Could it be that the devil arts they cultivated backfired at this critical moment? That was just too much of a coincidence.

"Holy shi*t, did this father's crazy attack level up?" The bearded fellow couldn't figure out a reason, so he attributed it to this. "Whatever, I'll kill off the rest of these damn turtles first before I figure it out."

The bearded big fellow flourished his large saber and entered the fray again.

………

"Mm!?" In this fierce battle, the black-armored captain occasionally released his sense to determine the general situation. At this moment, he was completely shocked. Two of his squad had died, and even a zombie guard had been ruined!

How was this possible!?

His squad's combat strength was absolutely higher than the opponents', and they even had an extra Xiantian master. How did they lose?

How could they possibly lose!?

Should he give up everything and escape?

With his strength, he had absolute confidence that he would be able to escape. But, his men would not be able to do so. Another Xiantian master might be able to escape with him, but the rest would most assuredly die here!

These people were all his direct subordinates. In the future, they would return to his family clan and help him contribute. Most of those here were future Xiantian masters.

There was no need to mention the loss of his subordinates, but even the medicinal plants would all vanish!

Even his military exploit points would be reduced.

He was not willing!

He had gone through countless life or death situations and suffered for half a year in the flames of war on South Aurora Island. How many times had he fought? He had done it all in order to exchange it for a chance to soar into the skies. How could things have come to this?

Chapter 446 – Demon Emperor's Letter

Chapter 446 – Demon Emperor's Letter

…

…

…

Bang!

A blazing electric light illuminated the night sky, the second zombie guard was also slain under Violet Rain's sword!

Seeing this, the black-armored captain felt his heart go completely cold.

He had to run, otherwise even he would die here!

"Split up and escape!"

As the black-armored captain shouted out this order with difficulty, his swept out his lance, knocking back an incoming ax and then turned around and ran.

The other martial artists also turned tail and fled.

How could the Fire Ax Squad let them escape so easily? Enchanting Shadow, Big Beard, Dark Sword, and all the others immediately went all out in their attacks. Several black-armored martial artists were pressed down, unable to run.

Chi-la!

Violet Rain slashed out with her sword and purple thunder flashed in the dark, severely injuring a black-armored warrior. To take such heavy damage at this time meant that they could only wait there to die.

Lin Ming also flung out a few arcs of electricity. Two black-armored martial artist were struck by them, and their bodies went completely numb for a moment. The bearded big fellow laughed and said, “Wild Halberd, well done!”

The heavy saber cut down and a head flew high!

“Damn!”

The black-armored captain’s heart bled as he heard the miserable screams from behind. But there was nothing he could do. If he slowed his pace by even a bit, Fire Ax would catch up to him!

“Haha, how fun!” The last peak Houtian black-armored martial artist was killed by the joint effort of Enchanting Shadow and the bearded big fellow. The black-armored squad’s last Xiantian martial artist was also exterminated by Dark Sword and Violet Rain’s combined attack.

Besides the captain, the entire black-armored squad had been completely wiped out!

Fire Ax hadn’t been able to block the black-armored captain from escaping. If he pursued too deep into this spiritual forest, he was bound to encounter some lurking danger.

“Record the military exploits and then we’ll go!”

As Fire Ax issued his order, the bearded big fellow and the rest took out their military medals and began to record the military exploit points they would receive.

“What about these people?” Enchanting Shadow pointed to the edge of the battlefield where a group of frightened slaves were trembling in fear. These slaves looked to be around

20 years old, and some even looked 14 or 15 years old. Whether it was the men or the women, they all had slender bodies and delicate features.

“Bring them with along. They are part of the Forest Fairy race; they’ve been slaves since birth.” As Fire Ax said this he sighed. A race that was born to be slaves was truly a sorrowful tale.

“Forest Fairy?” Lin Ming was a bit taken aback. After he left the Divine Phoenix Province, Lin Ming became increasingly aware of just how vast and complex the Sky Spill Continent was.

“They have some bloodline relationship to the Fey race. The Fey, whether it is men or women, are born extremely beautiful. After they were plundered by the South Sea Demon Region and brought up in captivity, and their mindset is no different from slaves’. Those with high talent are even used by others to practice their devil arts.”

Lin Ming felt his heart quiver in sympathy. To be reared like an animal in captivity… this fate was truly pitiful.

“Let’s collect the medicinal herbs and board the spirit boat, it’s best not to stay here too long.”

These medicinal herbs from the spiritual forest were naturally good materials; of coruse they wouldn’t leave it out here to rot.

As they boarded the spirit boat, the bearded big fellow glanced at the seven military medals as well as the piles of herbs. He heartily laughed and said, “Big Brother, we’ve hit the jackpot this time!”

“Mm, we’ve gotten a great harvest this time?” Fire Ax also couldn’t conceal a happy smile, “Oh, I forgot to ask since we we’re in a hurt, but our strength should have been inferior to them; just how did you win?”

Fire Ax had been completely concentrated on his fight with the enemy captain. In a battle between masters, diverting his attention even a bit meant a possible catastrophe; he simply wasn't able to notice anything else on the battlefield.

"Big Beard killed the most, ask him." Enchanting Shadow threw her hands up. From start to finish, she had only killed a single black-armored martial artist.

Big Beard scratched his head in embarrassment, "Oh I don't know. I chopped at them with my saber and they all died!"

"Mm?" Fire Ax frowned. How could this be possible? All of those black-armored martial artists had a very high combat strength.

"Violet Rain, how did you win?"

Fire Ax remembered that Violet Rain had killed two peak early Xiantian realm zombie guards by herself. Although it was well established that the power of thunder restrained corpses and ghosts, the suppressive effects shouldn't have been so great. Originally, Fire Ax would have been happy if Violet Rain was able to stall the two zombie guards for a moment.

"Well…this is all thanks to Wild Halberd." Violet Rain turned to smiled at Lin Ming, "Wild Halberd first attacked the zombie guard's eyes to save me. Then, he fused his power of thunder into my body to strengthen the power of my martial skill. Wild Halberd is definitely a genius from some large sect; his Thunder Soul is even better than mine."

As Violet Rain spoke, everyone was startled. Wild Halberd's Thunder Soul was even stronger than Violet Rain's? Violet Rain's Thunder Soul was a high-grade human-step Thunder Soul. If Lin Ming's was better, that meant that his Thunder Soul was at the peak of the high-grade human-step level. Or, perhaps it even approached the earth-step.

A Thunder Soul was far more precious and valuable than a Flame Essence. If a martial artist didn't have a deep background it was basically impossible for them to obtain this level of Thunder Soul.

And even in a large sect or family clan, if one didn't have enough talent, then no one would waste such precious resources on them.

So, there was only one possibility, and that was that Lin Ming was a top talent from a large sect or family clan. This sort of talent would absolutely have the combat strength of a half-step Xiantian martial artist at just the late Houtian realm; he could even protect himself in front of a Xiantian master.

Thinking of this, everyone began looked towards Lin Ming with eagerness in their eyes. In this brutal and violent war, if a strong new companion was added to their squad, that meant that their chances of surviving would be that much higher. And from the looks of it, Lin Ming had great potential to grow.

"Wild Halberd, you must have participated in life or death battles before. Otherwise, there's no way you could be so calm; you're aim is even better than mine!" Violet Rain was naturally referring to the two small bolts of lightning that Lin Ming had shot out to injure the zombie guard's eyes. This move appeared simple, but Violet Rain knew that it wasn't something she could accomplish in a similar situation.

"Mm, I've been in a few tight situations before."

"Haha, you should have said so earlier! You made me worry over you in vain. I thought that you were some new rookie that hadn't seen true battle yet." The bearded big fellow gently patted Lin Ming's shoulder. Normally, a martial artist trained in a sect would have a great deal of experience fighting> However, they would rarely have experienced true life or death struggles. In times of peace, there wouldn't be others at the same level that tried to kill them.

Everyone returned to base in a jubilant and ecstatic mood. During this battle, they had obtained complete victory without losing anyone on their side. They aha also obtained a massive amount of military exploit points and precious herbs.

However, what they didn't know was that the seven black-armored martial artists that were killed by them were all arranged onto a list of names. This list of names passed through several hands and was finally delivered to an isolated island deep within the South Sea Demon Region.

Of course, this list was just a trivial one in a thick stack that just wasn't worth mentioning.

Pa!

A pair of long black fingernails came down with a heavy slap atop the stack of papers.

"In these past 10 days, within the South Horizon Region, Five Element Region, and us, there have been a total of 80 Xiantian martial artists and over 400 Houtian martial artists that have died!"

The owner of this hand was a handsome and middle-aged man. He had a feminine air whenever he spoke. If one just listened to this voice, it would be hard to tell whether this person was a man or a woman.

"What's the matter; you aren't satisfied with these figures?" A lazy voice sounded out from in front of the feminine man; the one who spoke was an enchanting beauty that was reclining back in a relaxed posture. It wasn't known what material her clothes were made of, but she was tightly wrapped in shining, black leather. Her collar was exaggerated to outrageous proportions, and stood up very high. The collar extended deeply, all the way to the bottom of her stomach, revealing a good portion of her round and plump snow-white breasts, causing the imaginations of anyone who looked to run wild. At her throat hung a small red snake. If it weren't for the fact that it flicked out its tongue every now and then, it would really seem as if this small red snake was a necklace.

This woman was the Sovereign of the South Sea Demon Region's Western Faction. Although she had a sexy and enchanting appeal, the truth was that she was immeasurably cruel and merciless; she could kill without batting an eye.

“this figure is indeed lacking, but....we can also improvise still. After all, we aren’t ready yet. Take your time, we aren’t in a hurry.

The enchanting woman laughed, her laughter were as clear as silver bells ringing, “You should hurry up the preparations. If things drag on, then that old bag Mu Fengxian might come here to see what the problem is!”

“Humph, that Mu Fengxian is a mere first order Life Destruction. Even if she knew what happened, there is nothing she can do! This past year she’s paid every price to create alliances and make war preparations within the South Sea. She even organized the Wartime Alliance. It’s as if she thinks my South Sea Demon Region really cares about her little island’s resources and women!”

“Hohohaha! The enchanting woman laughed in a salacious manner. “Would you say that you aren’t tempted by that proud pair within Divine Phoenix Island – Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun?”

“Those two women...hehe......” The feminine man licked his lips, “I really do want them, but it’s not worth the price! Not just that....but their cultivation is too low. Once they broke through to the Revolving Core realm, plundering them and ravaging them will be much more interesting!”

“But having said that, that old fool Mu Fengxian has been diligent in helping my prepare. All those martial artists who have joined the Wartime Alliance make the best fertilizer./”

“Mu Fengxian isn’t an idiot! Don’t look down on her, otherwise we will suffer a loss. If it weren’t for the fact that the last time we entered the South Sea Ancient Mystic Realm and obtained the ancient Devil Tome and the jade slip with the Demon Emperor’s letter, then we would never know so many secrets.”

As the enchanting woman spoke to here, the feminine man’s expression sank. As she mentioned the ancient Devil Tome, the feminine man could not help but remember his disciple Xuan Ji.

Xuan Ji was his personal disciple and also his great grandson. After they had entered the Ancient Mystic realm and obtained the ancient Devil Tome and Demon Emperor's letter, the feminine man had immediately cultivated the ancient Devil Tome to the third layer. After he had cultivated enough, he was just barely able to reproduce the first layer of the ancient Devil Tome so that Xuan Ji could practice it.

The feminine man had a harem with over 3000 beauties and he was also over a thousand years old. He had countless sons, grandsons, and an even greater amount of great grandsons. However, Xuan Ji had been different from all of them. Xuan Ji had inherited the perfect Giant Demon bloodline, his talent was almost at the eighth-grade, and he had an astonishingly high thunder origin energy fusion compatibility. He had cultivated the halberd arts within the ancient Devil Tome and with just his early Houtian cultivation, he was able to compare to an early Xiantian master's combat strength. It could be said that he was the greatest talent that the South Sea Demon Region had seen for the last 500 years!

The feminine man had personally taught Xuan Ji. He hoped to raise Xuan Ji into a Divine Sea Supreme Elder, and once again restore the majesty that the South Sea Demon Region had experienced 3000 years ago.

But delicate flowers grown in the greenhouse could not withstand the wind and rain. When Xuan Ji was 15, the feminine man had sent him out to adventure and experience the world. But, Xuan Ji did not disappoint him. He had obtained the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder by himself during his adventures, and his cultivation had broken through to the Houtian realm, further increasing his strength.

But, no one had expected that he would actually fall at the hands of a youth named Lin Ming! All of the efforts that the feminine man had spent for the last many years had been completely wasted!

How could he not hate!

Chapter 447 – Might of the Halberd Arts

Chapter 447 – Might of the Halberd Arts

…

…

…

Two months later, at the edge of the spiritual forest, the South Sea Demon Region had just established a new stronghold here 10 days ago. The edge of the spiritual forest was a relatively safe location.

The moon was bright in the sky, the stars shined, and in the forest, the sounds of conversation drifted through the trees.

"That damn Blood Demon, he really makes everyone uneasy. I don't know he is, but he's really messing with us. Every three or four days we have to change location." The one who spoke was a black-armored man who held a spear in his hands.

This black armor and spear were common battlefield equipment given to soldiers of the South Sea Demon Region. The Blood Demon that the black-armored man spoke of was a mysterious killer that had haunted the South Sea Demon Region martial artists for the past few months; everyone panicked at his name. This person was vicious, savage, and every time he killed someone he would suck out all of their blood essence. This was why he was given the name Blood Demon.

Another black-armored martial artist shook his head and said, "There's nothing to complain about, this is simply what war is like. Our side's Blood Bone, Viper, and Nightmare are also the same. They've killed the South Horizon Region martial artists to the point that they don’t dare to show their faces. Now most of them have withdrawn to the Wartime Alliance headquarters and are too scared to even come out.”

Since the Blood Demon was so vicious, the Big Three of the South Sea Demon Region naturally wouldn’t idly sit by and let this happen. They also killed a massive amount of Wartime Alliance soldiers. Although the Wartime Alliance had a great number of martial artists, it was a very mixed bag of quality. The majority were second rank or third rank soldiers. Compared to the Big Three South Sea Demon Region masters, they were just cannon fodder.

“I wonder how strong Blood Bone, Viper, and Nightmare are compared to that Blood Demon?”

“Who knows? Blood Demon is extremely strong, and also very mysterious. In fact, no one knows if he’s a single person or a squad. It would be nice if the sect could send a Revolving Core Elder to South Aurora Island to clear up this Blood Demon.” The black-armored martial artist said. The South Aurora Battlefield couldn’t be considered important, all it had was a medium-grade true essence stone vein deposit as well as a parcel of spiritual forest. South Aurora Island simply wasn’t important to the war situation, and even if it was taken it wouldn’t be much help, so why would a Revolving Core powerhouse come? Not just that, but finding this Blood Demon in so many thousands of miles was not an easy task.

“Hey, don’t count on those Revolving Core Elders to do anything. Who knows what those old men are doing. The battlefront has paused here at Blood Demon Island and South Aurora Island for almost half a year, and yet they haven’t advanced in the least. If this continues, life will just be wasted on the battlefield. Divine Phoenix Island and the South Sea Demon Region are much smarter. They rarely use their disciples, and instead use the disciples of smaller sects as cannon fodder!”

The black-armored martial artist carelessly said, his tone filled with complaint and dissatisfaction. As he finished speaking, he dragged a forest fairy girl into a tent, and the sounds of ripped clothes and cries followed.

The captain of the black-armored men frowned, “Old Seven, stop messing around, if you want to play with women then return to base!”

“Hey, this is what I’m like. If I don’t get to relax like this then what’s the point of living. And if the Blood Demon really comes, our squad won’t be able to deal with him. Captain, your cultivation is at the late Xiantian realm, and in addition to our…”

As the man in the tent spoke to here, his voice was cut off!

Pah!

A man’s head rolled onto the ground, and blood gushed out from his body like a fountain, spraying all of the forest fairy girl’s face.

“Ahhh!”

The young girl screamed in abject horror.

“Old Seven!” The black-armored captain was shocked. He rushed into the tent and saw Old Seven’s head roll over the ground like a rubber ball. His body was still stiff, and his hands were still clutching the young girl’s clothes as she trembled in fear.

“Ah!”

“Ah!”

As the black-armored man rushed into the tent, he heard two pitiful screams from the outside. Two peak Houtian Demon Region martial artists had also been murdered in cold blood.

“Damn!”

The black-armored man’s entire body erupted with true essence. He flourished his spear and rushed out just in time to see the bodies of his two brothers burst open, and two bloody symbols fly out from their bodies. It was clear that these bloody symbols had ripped apart his brothers' bodies.

"Blood Demon!" The black-armored man's eyes were filled with a crazy light, "Everyone below Xiantian, spread out!"

The black-armored man issued this command that he thought was wise, however it had no meaning. As long as it was a peak Houtian or half-step Xiantian martial artist, as long as they were struck by this blood symbol it would be fatal! Their speed was in no way faster than this blood symbol!

The blood symbols danced in the air and blood splattered. In just two breaths of time, nearly everyone below the Xiantian realm in his squad had perished.

"Big Brother, he's over there!" There was a shadow in the forest holding onto a nearly 10 foot long halberd. As this shadow stood within the trees, half his face covered by darkness and the other have covered by the mercurial moonlight, he looked like a killing god.

Twelve Blood Drinking Seals flew back through the air, spinning around the edge of the halberd. These Blood Drinking Seals were in essence masses of energy, and also the foundation on which all moves of the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' relied on.

The stronger the Blood Drinking Seals, the mightier the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' would be. Not only did the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' contain skills, but also a cultivation method. Otherwise, if one was only skilled in moves, they would at most be able to defeat martial artists at the same level. Against the suppression of absolute strength, it would all be useless.

Solely reaching the pinnacle of a style in halberds arts couldn't be called top halberd arts.

These 12 Blood Drinking Seals that revolved around his halberd were the end result after Lin Ming had spent two whole months refining them. In these two months, Lin Ming had rarely gone to battle with the Fire Ax Squad. To him, the Fire Ax Squad's main role was to provide information.

Facing the sudden arrival of the Blood Demon, the black-armored man panicked and ran away in haste. He hadn't even noticed Lin Ming's cultivation.

All he knew was that in just two short breaths of time, Lin Ming had annihilated every single martial artist below the Xiantian realm. This was a strength much greater than what he had imagined He originally thought that with his late Xiantian realm cultivation and with the assistance of his squad, he would be able to resist the Blood Demon. But now, it seemed as if it was nothing more than wishful thinking!

"Separate and escape!" As the black-armored captain shouted out an order, Lin Ming had already rushed forwards.

All that was left over were three Xiantian masters. Lin Ming chose the weakest one, an early Xiantian realm master.

Samsara martial intent!

As the early Xiantian realm martial artist was about to run, he felt his spiritual sea tremble. Countless scenes and images chaotically surged in his mind, and he stood stopped in his tracks.

The halberd swept out, a head flew high!

At this time, a middle Xiantian martial artist had escaped about 50 steps away!

"Primeval Halberd Strike!"

Lin Ming wielded his halberd, and the 12 Blood Drinking Seals began to spin on the halberd blade, forming a swirling red vortex! All of the space around the Blood Drinking Seals began to warp. The Xiantian martial artist that was flying away felt as if an invisible force was pulling on his body, greatly reducing his speed.

This… what was going on!?

The martial artist was frightened! The space around him became thick and viscous like tar. It was as if he was a fly caught in a spider's web. No matter how he tried to fly, he couldn't move quickly!

Not only was it him, but the black-armored captain was the same.

At this time, they could no longer afford to wonder what the reason was, a maddening murderous intent had already locked onto them.

The middle Xiantian realm black-armored martial artist turned around to see Lin Ming's halberd thrusting towards him. The halberd was very slow, he wanted to raise his spear to block, but in that moment, the halberd seemed to pass through space, instantly appearing in front of the black-armored martial artist!

Puh!

Blood sprayed into the air. The black-armored martial artist looked with utter disbelief at the halberd that was embedded into his chest. This chaotic speed that confused his mind seemed to be even crazier than the pain in his chest.

How could this be…

That was the black-armored martial artist's last thought as Lin Ming twisted the halberd in his hands, directly tearing apart the black-armored martial artist's heart!

"Second Brother!"

The black-armored captain's eyes were red with rage. His body felt as if it were being suppressed by a sticky strength. He couldn't fly quickly, and could only watch in helplessness as his brother died in front of him.

"Go die!"

The black-armored captain knew that he couldn't escape. In his despair, he desperately pushed his true essence to the limit and swept his lance towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming moved his halberd to meet the attack. On the halberd blade, Blood Drinking Seals danced about.

Pah!

Spear and halberd intersected! The Blood Drinking Seals fell atop the spear, and in that moment, the black-armored captain felt like his spear was stuck in stone – he couldn't pull it back.

"Die!"

Lin Ming swept his halberd out. The black-armored captain screamed, threw away his spear and retreated.

Whoosh –

The Blood Drinking Seals floated off of the spear and attached themselves to the halberd. Lin Ming thrust his halberd, and the black-armored captain felt the space around him tighten as if it were collapsing around him. He couldn't avoid this halberd strike!

"Ahhh!"

The black-armored captain gave a miserable cry. He punched at Lin Ming!

But how could flesh and blood be as tough as a weapon? Not just that, but there were strange Blood Drinking Seals that were adhered onto Lin Ming's halberd.

Peng!

The black-armored captain's fists exploded into bloody messes. The halberd pierced through his head, directly extinguishing his life!

The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder shot out, submerging into the black-armored captain's body. It was silent for a few moments, and then the body of the black-armored captain suddenly shook. A fog of blood sprayed into the air, and then condensed into the 13th Blood Drinking Seal!

At the same time, all the martial artists that Lin Ming had slaughtered had their blood essence sucked up by the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder, turning into pure flows of energy that nourished the other 12 Blood Drinking Seals.

As Lin Ming looked at this 13th Blood Drinking Seal that floated in air, he waved his hand and gathered all the Blood Drinking Seals. “Now I’m stuck at the very early section of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’. Thirteen Blood Drinking Seals is about my limit. If I create any more, I won’t be able to control them. The lethality of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ is much greater than the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’, otherwise if I had to deal with so many enemies at the same time and they decided to run away, there’s no way I would have been able to stop them all without the Primeval Halberd Strike.”

The killing potential of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ was much higher than the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. But, that did not mean that the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ was worse than the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’.

This was mainly because the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ was inherently biased towards killing moves and styles; it wasn’t particularly splendid in terms of increasing one’s cultivation. The ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ was mainly used to nourish the dantian and make breakthroughs in cultivation. Skills such as Phoenix Wings Ascending Sky and 10,000 Flames Burning World were supplementary abilities. Both of them placed emphasis on different aspects.

Chapter 448 – Blood Springs

Chapter 448 – Blood Springs

…

…

…

“The most outstanding aspect of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ lies in its killing potential. When Lei Mubai had practiced the ancient Devil Tome, it had only been a miniscule portion of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’s’ cultivation method. In terms of cultivation method, the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ is far inferior to the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. If I use the cultivation method of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ along with the killing techniques of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’, there are some places that don’t really match…”

Lin Ming thought out loud. Although his cultivation method was top class, it was a bit complicated; there would inevitably be areas in which things didn’t mesh well.

However, Lin Ming didn’t worry too much. The reason that he studied the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ was solely because of its techniques. Once his techniques reached the extreme of perfection, it would become a Law.

For instance, when Lin Ming had used the Primeval Halberd Strike as well as the move that made time spin around chaotically, those had both been similar to the use of Laws. It was just that Lin Ming’s perception and cultivation weren’t high enough for him to comprehend the Laws used. He could only rely on the energy of the Blood Drinking Seals to achieve an effect similar to Laws.

Even so, the power was absolutely amazing. If it wasn't for the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art', Lin Ming would have at most been able to kill two Xiantian masters – everyone else would have managed to run away.

"I don't know how much longer this war will last. I wonder how Miss Mu and Xingxuan are doing…" As Lin Ming was thinking, he glanced at his intelligence jade slip and began to look for the next target…

…………………………

At an island 3000 miles away from Divine Phoenix Island, Qin Xingxuan just happened to be sitting down on a cushion in a martial arts cultivation room. Fire origin energy swirled around her, forming a vortex with her in the center and steadily converging into her body.

After her body was thoroughly quenched with 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence, Qin Xingxuan had gained the talent necessary to practice the more core sections of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. In addition, Qin Xingxuan was already a natural sixth-grade martial talent. Although her cultivation speed wasn't heaven defyingly fast, she was still making new changes every day, and her progress was extremely fast.

In these few months, Qin Xingxuan's cultivation was nearing the middle Pulse Condensation period.

This was mostly because Qin Xingxuan had just started to practice the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', and it required that she slowly accumulate fire origin energy. If she had practiced for a longer time and at a higher realm, she would probably have made a breakthrough.

"Miss Qin, how are you feeling?"

Mu Qianyu was all smiles as she entered into the martial arts cultivation room. As she looked at the vortex of fire origin energy swirling around Qin Xingxuan, she had a very satisfied smile on her face.

Although Qin Xingxuan's rank in Divine Phoenix Island was only the lowliest maid disciple, she actually had maids and servants serving her, and she didn't need to do any labor. The status of a maid disciple was only a title in order to reduce the pressure of public opinion on her. With Qin Xingxuan's status and talent, the fact that she had obtained 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence could easily arouse criticism from others.

A drop of Vermillion Bird blood essence was indelibly related to a martial artist's lifespan and future; who wouldn't be utterly jealous of Qin Xingxuan?

Qin Xingxuan usually followed Mu Qianyu around, and all questions she had were personally answered by Mu Qianyu. She had servants taking care of her daily living needs, and her cultivation speed was at least two or three times faster than when she had been at the Seven Profound Valleys.

"Senior-apprentice Sister Mu." As Qin Xingxuan saw Mu Qianyu enter, she immediately stood up. Although they had already been together for two months, she still felt a sense of restraint when facing Mu Qianyu.

"Miss Qin, Lin Ming has sent a letter." Mu Qianyu smiled. When the two met each other, they would always maintain a respectful manner.

"Ah?" Qin Xingxuan called out in surprise, a light fluttering feeling of happiness in her heart.

Mu Qianyu laughed and then took out a paper letter from her spatial ring, handing it over to Qin Xingxuan. In these past two months, Lin Ming would always send out three letters at a time. He would send one to Mu Yuhuang, Mu Qianyu, and Qin Xingxuan. Although Qin Xingxuan's letter only contained trivial musings and some other matters, the content of the letter was unimportant. Qin Xingxuan mainly wanted to know that Lin Ming was safe.

……………………

As the days passed by, Lin Ming killed more and more Demon Region martial artists. His cultivation was still at the late Houtian realm, but his combat strength had risen by leaps and bounds. He still had 13 Blood Drinking Seals, but they were even more vivid and vibrant, and even more lethal.

As Lin Ming killed more people, the name of Blood Demon began to sound like thunder within the ears of those on South Aurora Island. His spotlight was even brighter than the Demon Region's Big Three!

Normally when the Demon Region's Big Three killed squads there would be a few survivors. With three to five Xiantian masters escaping in separating directions, it was difficult to kill them all. However, no one escaped the Blood Demon, there were simply no witnesses!

To be attacked by the Blood Demon meant utter and total annihilation.

There had even been one occasion when two Demon Region squads had joined together. Although they weren't considered top squads, there were still 15 martial artists in total including five Xiantian masters – one middle Xiantian master and four early Xiantian masters. But even with a squad of this size, after encountered the Blood Demon, they were all killed! Not a single one had managed to escape!

After this news spread out, all of South Aurora's martial artists were shocked. Fifteen martial artists killed, and all of their blood essence sucked dry. There were even many of them that had been killed a thousand steps away. Obviously, they had all been prepared to escape. However, what was most horrifying was that all five Xiantian masters had escaped in separate directions, but they were still all killed!

What sort of strength was necessary to achieve this?

Even with five Xiantian masters combined together, they still couldn't survive. Besides the squads of the Demon Region's Big Three, what other squad had confidence they would be able to survive the terror of the Blood Demon?

After that, the Demon Region martial artists rarely went past a hundred miles outside of their headquarters. The deterring effect of the Blood Demon was actually greater than all of the squads of the Wartime Alliance combined!

This sounded like an exaggeration, but it was the truth. In this month, there were more Demon Region martial artists that died at the hands of the Blood Demon than at the combined hands of every other martial artist within the Wartime Alliance squads.

It had to be known that during an encounter, although the battle would be fierce, not many people would actually die. If half of them died, that would be considered an extremely fierce life or death fight. But, once a squad encountered the Blood Demon, that was certain annihilation. There wasn't even a chance to escape. This just made people despair too much. This also caused the squads of the South Sea Demon Region to not even have the courage to bring up the Blood Demon's name.

…………………

It was deep into the night. In a hidden cave within South Aurora Island's spiritual forest, Lin Ming had quietly snuck in. As soon as he was there, he grabbed a handful of spatial rings from his pocket. With just a thought, everything within these spatial rings poured out.

Because of the war, these Demon Region martial artists were extremely wealthy. Of course, these were all treasures of ordinary Xiantian masters. Lin Ming wasn't particularly attracted to many of these things.

However, a little made a lot. If everything was exchanged into true essence stones, it would be a massive fortune. Although Lin Ming didn't use true essence stones now, he never knew when he would need to in the future. If he saved up some money now, it would help avoid any complications in the future.

"Around 3000 medium-grade true essence stones and a massive number of treasures and pills. Most of these are ghost streamers, demon runes, blood treasures and so forth. These things are mostly used by martial artists of the demonic path, they aren't that useful to me."

Lin Ming practiced the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’, and it required him to gather and refine fresh blood essence. All of these treasures and objects that had stored blood essence for a long time were simply useless to him.

Lin Ming casually and quickly divided everything. True essence stones were placed in one ring, valuables in another, and objects that weren’t worth much in yet another.

After Lin Ming gathered everything back up again, he launched his movement technique and returned to base.

“Wild Halberd! You went out to practice again, haha!” The bearded big fellow happily greeted. If he greeted anyone else on the squad, he would always joke around and give them a lesson that actual combat was better than cultivating and other nonsense. However, he usually never said these things to Lin Ming.

In these past months, Lin Ming’s strength had become obvious to everyone. It wasn’t just that one time in the spiritual forest, but every time that Lin Ming would go to battle with the Fire Ax Squad, he would have spectacular and outstanding performance. In fact, there had been a time that if it wasn’t for the timely actions of Lin Ming, Enchanting Shadow and the bearded big fellow would have already had their heads chopped off. Whether it was individual combat prowess or insight on the battlefield, Lin Ming was at the top of the class. Everyone was naturally happy to have such a great member on their squad.

Unfortunately, Lin Ming didn’t have much time or opportunities to do much else with the squad; he was always out practicing his martial arts by himself.

“Captain, I think that Wild Halberd’s true strength is much more awesome!” The bearded big fellow loudly said as he drank a large cup of wine and poured himself another.

“Mm, Wild Halberd’s true strength is very deep and profound. He should be able to defeat an early Xiantian master by himself. In fact, he might even be stronger than Violet Rain. But Wild Halberd likes to remain low-key, you just have to see how he did on his original strength test to know. He had only gotten a bit more than 100,000 points, just enough to reach the standard for a first class soldier."

"He should be a direct disciple of some large sect, or even the last disciple of some high master. He isn't really interested in whatever can be exchanged with military exploit points."

"Haha, mentioning no interest in military exploit points, I wonder which master that Blood Demon is. In these recent days he has killed countless Demon Region martial artists – the military exploit points he would have accumulated would be terrifying. South Aurora Island's Demon Region martial artists won't even show their faces because they are scared of being killed by him."

"Blood Demon should be an extreme Xiantian genius from a sect. A Revolving Core master wouldn't do something so frivolous."

"Mm, I think so too."

Even though Lin Ming and the existence known as the Blood Demon had appeared on South Aurora Island at nearly the same time, nobody ever expected that Lin Ming was the Blood Demon. Lin Ming's cultivation was true. How could Fire Ax or anyone else believe that a late Houtian martial artist would have such abnormal combat strength like the Blood Demon?

....

At this time at the South Sea Demon Region's stronghold, a martial artist that was as skinny as a corpse was holding a wine glass in his hands. The cup was filled with a thick and bright red liquid that emanated a bloody energy; this liquid was shockingly actually blood.

In front of the skinny martial artist sat a man with pale skin. This pale-skinned man's eyes were closed, "Many martial artists have already left South Aurora Island. The existence of the Blood Demon had already made the situation untenable, it is simply unprofitable to stay there."

Because of Lin Ming, many martial artists squads didn't dare to go out alone. Naturally, this meant that less and less were willing.

As the skinny martial artist emptied the glass of blood, he licked his lips and said, "I'd like to meet this Blood Demon. It's just that this fellow seems intent on avoiding us. Otherwise, there is no way he would have been able to avoid our intelligence. If he has the guts, he would have come for us sooner! In other words, he is afraid of us!"

"He might not be afraid of us, but rather afraid that he won't be able to kill us all… have you found that whenever the Blood Demon moves, he won't leave any witnesses? It's as if he has some secret that he's scared of being discovered…"

Chapter 449 – Ancient Battlefield

Chapter 449 – Ancient Battlefield

…

…

…

“He has some secret he’s afraid others will discover?” The skinny martial artist’s heart stirred.

“That Blood Demon probably has an extreme Xiantian cultivation; around the same as you, me, and Nightmare. If he wants to kill us, it will be too difficult. If we want to kill him, it won’t be easy either! I discovered that whenever the Blood Demon killed others, he would suck dry their blood essence. Most likely he is cultivating some sort of devil art. I even think he might be someone from the South Sea Demon Region who’s killing those like him in order to improve his devil arts.”

“Mm?” The skinny martial artist’s complexion changed. If this was true, then it was a serious matter. “Viper, should we report this?”

“Heh, those at top won’t even bother with us. These past days, those Revolving Core Elders have all been busy with some important event. As for what it is, I’m not too sure. They simply don’t have time to deal with something so minor like South Aurora Island.” Viper calmly said. For the last half year or so, the South Sea Demon Region had been deadlocked with the Wartime Alliance and hadn’t been able to advantage. Instead, both forces fought, causing massive amounts of death.

The most obvious point was that Revolving Core masters were participating in the war less and less. Both sides were engaged in a battle of attrition, and there were increasingly less disciples in the army. Those that went to fight were usually martial artists from small sects that served as cannon fodder. They were tempted by the rewards of Divine Phoenix Island and the South Sea Demon Region, and would most likely die on the battlefield.

What was the South Sea Demon Region trying to do? Could they have thought that the war was unsustainable and began to abandon the war effort?

If so, then this battle was simply meaningless. They would lose so much, and yet there wasn't anything to gain from it.

Viper frowned, simply not knowing what was going on.

……………………

Several hundred miles away, Dark Moon Island –

Dark Moon Island was located at the eye of the South Sea's Yin pulse. There was a legend that in ancient times, an unrivalled war had been fought here, and countless powerhouses had died. A chilling wind blew all year around on Dark Moon Island, and the air was filled with a black fog. Many powerful and fierce ghosts were bred from this island.

This island was different from the neighboring Blood Demon Island. There was no true essence stone vein, and only endless dangers and traps. Thus, no one visited Dark Moon Island.

In the past, the Moon Seizing Sect had hidden their treasures in Dark Moon Island because of the security offered here. Not only was almost no one ever on Dark Moon Island, but there was also a strange phenomenon that occurred on Dark Moon Island, and that was that the black fog that permeated the island was able to inhibit one's soul perception. As long as a secret entryway was hidden well, even a Revolving Core master wouldn't be able to locate it.

This phenomenon had once roused the interest of many masters. They came to Dark Moon Island in droves to explore the land and discover the reason behind this. However, they weren't able to obtain any results, and thus let the matter go at that.

As time passed, everyone slowly became accustomed to this strange phenomenon. No matter what level martial artist, no one would bother coming to this barren land.

However at this time, there was a group of shadows shrouded in the thick black fog on Dark Moon Island. They were seven or eight black-robed old men, and on their robes was a dark blue design. This was a totem design of the Giant Demon race.

These old men all had a cultivation at least at the middle Revolving Core realm. There were even late and extreme Revolving Core masters.

Behind this group of old men stood 10 tall men, their entire bodies wreathed in bulging muscles. Their skin was a light blue hue; obviously they shared some blood with the Giant Demon race. However, there were varying degrees of the Giant Demon bloodline. These large fellows had a relatively poor Giant Demon bloodline. Compared to the Netherworld Great Emperor of the past, it was much worse.

These 10 large fellows all had a cultivation at the late Xiantian realm. A long spear rested atop these large fellows' shoulders, each one over 200 feet long and as thick as a water jar. It wasn't known was sort of metal these spears were forged from, but the tips of the spears were extremely thin, like a drill.

"It's here, let's start!" An Elder held an array disc in his hands. After he repeatedly confirmed his position, he decided that this was the location.

As this Elder finished speaking, two other Revolving Core Elders behind him waved their hands, and true essence attached onto the top of the massive spears.

Sou!

The spear on a large fellow's shoulders flew into the air!

After reaching around 1000 feet of altitude, the spear tip swiveled downward as it fell, smashing straight down like a meteor

Bang!

The earth trembled, and cracks appeared in the ground like it was an earthquake. Rocks exploded; the 200 foot spear had sunk halfway into the ground.

“Spin, dig all the way!”

A black-robed Elder calmly said.

With that, the 10 large fellows all extracted iron rods from their back as thick as an arm. They inserted these into slots on the spear!

“Hah!”

The 10 large fellows shouted out together, and the muscles on their bodies bulged to ridiculous proportions. Their true essence revolved to the limit as they pushed these iron rods with all their strength. Slowly, the spear began to spin.

Ka ka ka –

The sound of rocks bursting and cracking filled the air. The spear crushed through the earth with its tip, slowly spiraling downwards.

Even with 10 late Xiantian masters revolving their true essence to the limit, they were only making progress with great strain and difficulty.

As an old man saw this he faintly smiled and said, “The rock bed here is truly tough. Even spears made of metal-breaking steel are just barely able to drill down.”

“The Demon Emperor’s letter is true!”

As the spear found it harder and harder to drill down, the several Revolving Core Elders began to use their own special techniques and methods to force the spear drill down. Slowly, the rock cracked, and a dark red liquid began to ooze out of the ground. This liquid was blood.

At the start, only a small amount of blood spurted out. But later, the blood began to shower out like a fountain. Finally the blood exploded like a geyser, flying dozens of feet into the air. Even the crushed rocks were sent flying away by this stream of blood.

“The seal is really here. The blood pond seal and the blood from this blood pond were all absorbed from the ancient battlefield. This land is vast, and it was originally filled with the smell of blood. Because the black rock is able to block perception, no one was able to discover these even through so many years.”

“There should be a total of six blood ponds. We’ll go and open them, and then followed the method written down in the letter to open the seal. The blood sacrifice should be enough…”

“If it’s still not enough, we will launch an all-out offensive. At that time, the blood should suffice!”

“Hehe, the old bat Mu Fengxian, she could never imagine that there was such a great secret hidden underneath Dark Moon Island and Blood Demon Island! As for the true goal of this South Sea war, she never would have imagined the truth.”

The several Revolving Core Elders were all speaking to each other with true essence sound transmissions.

If one flew 100,000 feet into the Primal Chaos Heavens and looked down, they would find that the South Sea war front nearly composed a circle. And the center of this circle was Dark Moon Island and Blood Demon Island!

The Demon Emperor’s letter had said that the entrance to the ancient battlefield was located between Dark Moon Island and Blood Demon Island.

However, because of time, wanting to open the massive array of the ancient battlefield was far too difficult. At this time, the South Sea Demon Region had declared war upon Divine Phoenix Island. In truth, all of those martial artists that died on the battlefield were nothing more than pawns to be used in a blood sacrifice on an immeasurably vast scale! This was also the reason that they hadn't advanced in such a long time.

The large array created by the natural features of the land were able to gather blood to nourish the blood pond seal. With the secret techniques on array formations written within the Demon Emperor's letter, they would be able to fully open the blood ponds.

In the name of war, they were perfectly able to justify such a massive blood sacrifice. Otherwise, the South Sea Demon Region would never have been able to find so many Houtian and Xiantian martial artists to kill.

Not just that, but after the ancient battlefield was opened, they would rely on this to exterminate Divine Phoenix Island. This war could be considered as exhausting Divine Phoenix Island's strength ahead of time; it was a plan that killed two birds with one stone.

A Revolving Core Elder couldn't help but sigh as he said, "According to the Demon Emperor's letter, the ancient battlefield that has been sealed away is in fact a small independent world. I just can't imagine what sort of great supernatural power and magical strength must be required to create an independent world."

"Maybe calling it a broken world is more suitable. This world was damaged by the shock and disaster of the ancient war, it might only last for several more millennia."

"Several millennia is enough for me enough for me and my people. I want to have a look at just how brilliant and majestic this Supreme Elder from the ancient times truly is!"

Although history was hidden in the dust of time and could no longer be investigated, there was one truth that never changed. And that was that the martial artists of ancient times were much more formidable than they were now. In those times, there were many Great Emperors, Saints, and all other sorts that appeared. These were existences that could cause an apocalypse with a wave of their hand, destroying the heavens and earth!

The Demon Emperor was one such existence. As for these ancient battlefield, it was even more ancient than the Demon Emperor. In a way, this ancient battlefield where the broken world existed was the lair of the Demon Emperor. When he had come here, he had used his formidable strength to take this realm as his own.

After a blood pond was opened, it was covered up with an array formation. Then, the group of people continued over to open the second blood pond.

In an entire day, of the six blood ponds, they managed to open four.

As for the fifth blood pond, they failed.

A black-robed Elder no longer had the strength to speak as he looked at this last blood pond. He whispered, “After these tens of thousands of years, even with the natural array of the land nourishing the blood pond, it is still dry. Launch the offensive.”

“Mm, launch the offensive!”

…………………………

Lin Ming was sitting inside a hidden cave near the Wartime Alliance Headquarters. In front of him were the 13 Blood Drinking Seals, floating around. As long as Lin Ming didn’t die, even if the Blood Drinking Seals were destroyed, he could recreate them.

Lin Ming took out the Great Desolate Blood Halberd replica. After he had killed Lei Mubai, he had never actually used it. The Blood Drinking Seals excitedly smacked into each other as they floated around the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, issuing whining sounds.

“It seems that even a replica of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd can greatly enhance the power of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’. This is something that even the Purple Comet Spear cannot achieve.”

Although the Purple Comet Spear was a higher grade weapon, it was only able to increase the power of thunder and fire. As for the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’, it had nearly zero effect.

A halberd thrust out. All of the space around seemed to twist in confusion; it was simply impossible to determine the position of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd.

Hu! Hu!

Lin Ming wildly danced with the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. All of the rocks in the cave were sucked up into a vortex of energy, flying into the air.

But at this moment, Lin Ming suddenly heard a loud sound from outside, as if there was a massive explosion of energy.

Lin Ming’s eyes widened. He dashed over to the cave entrance, and was surprised by what he saw. In his eyes, he could see that the Demon Region martial artists had gathered and were beginning their offensive against the Wartime Alliance headquarters! All sorts of energy was blowing up in the air, the battle was intense!

Chapter 450 – The Ancient Array Opens

Chapter 450 – The Ancient Array Opens

…

…

…

Within the headquarters of the Wartime Alliance, Commander Lu Huo – the Xiantian martial artist who was responsible for overseeing this island – deeply frowned as he saw the overwhelming number of South Sea Demon Region martial artists that blotted out the sky.

"Is the South Sea Demon Region crazy?"

The South Sea Demon Region's martial artists had an individual strength that surpassed those of the Wartime Alliance martial artists. For example, the Big Three of the South Sea Demon Region; it was difficult for them to find anyone from the Wartime Alliance that was at their level and also a worthy opponent. But the Wartime Alliance still had a large defensive array set up as defense. If this big array was activated, the South Sea Demon Region martial artists would fall into a passive, defensive situation. If they attacked the Wartime Alliance headquarters on their own initiative, they would absolutely have to pay a higher price.

And even if they won, taking control of this town wouldn't have any effect. It was simply meaningless.

"Mm? That is…" Lu Huo's mind stirred. In the distant camp, he could see a red-robed skinny man as well as a pale middle-aged man. These two were Blood Bone and Viper of the Demon Region's Big Three.

And in front of these two, there was a red-haired man who looked as pale and exquisite as a jade carving. Blood Bone and Viper were treating this red-haired youth with a great amount of respect. Obviously this red-haired youth had a very high status.

The red-haired youth had a cultivation at the extreme Xiantian realm, and looked around 20 to 30 years old. He wore a long black robe, and on the fabric of his left chest was embroidered a Giant Demon totem.

As Lu Huo saw this totem, he gasped. A Giant Demon totem was the symbol of the South Sea Demon Region. This meant that this red-haired youth was almost certainly a genius from the South Sea Demon Region sect!

Even extreme Xiantian martial artists were divided by strength. For instance, Lu Huo was also an extreme Xiantian master, yet he was almost 200 years old. In truth, he was the most basic and weakest of extreme Xiantian masters, and there was no hope for him to break through to the Revolving Core realm during his lifetime.

As for Blood Bone, Viper, and Nightmare, they were at a higher level. They could be called strong extreme Xiantian masters, and they had a small hope that they would one day break into the Revolving Core realm. This was also the reason that they were so famous within South Aurora Island.

And even higher was a sect genius like this red-haired youth. There were few with this talent even in a large sect.

They would often reach the extreme Xiantian realm at around 30 years of age. In addition, they would also have many hidden trump cards and rare treasures. Their truth combat prowess was not what Lu Huo could compare with; they could be considered the pinnacle of extreme Xiantian masters. If there wasn’t an accident, they would step into the Revolving Core realm, and perhaps even reach the middle or late Revolving Core realm!

This red-haired youth in front of him was obviously such a pinnacle extreme Xiantian existence!

With such a powerhouse at this level helping, there was no doubt that the South Sea Demon Region was taking this offensive as a serious objective.

After this speculation, Lu Huo swept past everyone. Indeed, he found that among all the martial artists in this offensive, there were a massive number of direct descendant disciples from the South Sea Demon Region.

It had to be known that the South Sea Demon Region didn't have that many direct descendant disciples – they only had several tens of thousands. In such a massive war that covered the entire South Sea, there wasn't enough of these disciples. Most of these direct descendant disciples would be sent to the battlefield by the South Sea Demon Region in order to gain experience. There were very few that would even be brought to such an invasion offensive; this was normally the job left to cannon fodder.

"What's going on? Why is the South Sea Demon Region placing so much importance on such a small South Aurora Island battlefield?"

As Lu Huo was pondering, at this moment a sound transmitting talisman lit in front of him. As he heard this message, he was at first overjoyed, and then his happiness turned to worry.

What he was happy about was that Divine Phoenix Island had already obtained the news that South Sea Demon Region was beginning their offensive, and had thus sent a massive amount of direct descendant disciples to support them. However, what he was worried about was that South Aurora Island was simply too far from the main battle zone. If the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island rushed their way over, it would still take an hour of time. Only the heavens knew just what sort of situation the rag tag martial artists of the Wartime Alliance would be in after that time passed.

During this moment, a beautiful rain of light came pouring down from the sky. The giant light curtain of the protective array formation began to fiercely tremble, and then it rapidly began to dim down, as if it were on the verge of shattering.

“Demonic Fire Ballista!”

Lu Huo was stunned. He saw that within the forces of the South Sea Demon Region, there was a 50 to 60 foot long black ballista.

This sort of ballista was named the Demonic Fire Ballista. It was forged with metal-breaking steel and even had a bit of precious Purple Comet metal mixed within. The cost of a Demonic Fire Ballista was immeasurable, and every bolt cost hundreds of medium-grade true essence stones as energy to fire. For such a weapon to be used on the South Aurora Island battlefield was simply overkill.

As the red-haired youth saw the dazzling rain of light scattering over the battlefield, his lips curled up in a grin. There was only one goal in this offensive, and that was to kill as many people as possible.

However, he only looked down at these scruffy martial artists with disdain. The reason that the South Sea Demon Region had sent him here was mainly to control the Demonic Fire Ballista and destroy the defensive array formation so that their forces could break through the enemy lines.

As the red-haired youth saw the soldiers of the Wartime Alliance in disarray underneath their array formation, he cheekily sneered. He waved his hand, and another bolt was shot out!

The brilliant demonic fire bolt pierced through the void, issuing a keening whistle as it heavily smashed into the large defensive array like a meteor.

Bang!

With a loud explosion, the array formation immediately collapsed, disintegrating into large bursts of light sparks that rained down.

Lu Huo’s complexion paled! All of the other Wartime Alliance martial artists were also shaken by fear at this sight.

The great protective array formation was broken!

“Kill them, leave no one alive!” The red-haired youth gave the order without any expression.

The Demon Region martial artists began their frenzied attack!

Gorgeous martial skills cut through the clear blue sky; the Wartime Alliance base was bombarded with all sorts of abilities.

The Wartime Alliance martial artists had true essence to protect their bodies. Those that had a strong cultivation were safe, but those that were weak had their protection broken, instantly dying and becoming just more cannon fodder!

“Kill!”

“Kill!”

“Kill!”

At the forefront of this battle, the Demon Region martial artists had already engaged the Wartime Alliance martial artists in a desperate melee. Those that came to the front were almost nearly all Xiantian realm martial artists, the weakest were at the peak Houtian realm.

The South Sea Demon Region had the support of direct descendant disciples, and they also came well prepared. As for the other side, most of them were a mixed bunch of soldiers that had been recruited by the Wartime Alliance. From the very beginning of this battle, the Wartime Alliance was hard-pressed to resist!

Fresh blood flowed, pitiful screams pierced the air over and over again!

Especially the Big Three of the South Sea Demon Region – they rushed into the Wartime Alliance’s base like three sharp knives! Every martial artist below the Xiantian realm was instantly killed, and even the early Xiantian realm martial artists weren’t their opponent!

These random soldiers of the Wartime Alliance had come to South Aurora Island in order to take risks and obtain treasures, it was impossible to expect them to be unafraid of death. Thus, a great portion of these people were scared witless by this scene and began to retreat!

However, trying to escape in the chaos of this battle was difficult. There were many martial artists that turned around to escape just to be pierced by the spears of the Demon Region soldiers!

Seeing this, Lu Huo maintained a calm appearance, but his back was already dripping with a cold sweat. He knew that he couldn't lose his cool during this situation, but he was also unable to think of any command that would be able to change this situation.

"What a bunch of trash!" The red-haired youth looked down from distant high ground, jeering at the Wartime Alliance martial artists, "This mob is just garbage, and yet they had me personally come out to deal with them. This is just too disappointing!"

....

Ten miles away from the battlefield, Lin Ming held onto his halberd as he calmly and quickly ran through the forest. He didn't have the ability to change a battle of such a great-scale, nor did he dare to be too aggressive and reveal himself.

A late Houtian realm youth with an extreme Xiantian master's combat strength was far too loud and excessively unbelievable. Within the entire South Horizon Region, the only person that had this strength was Lin Ming. At that time, if he exposed his strength then at least half of them would be able to successfully guess his identity.

This was easily cause for a Revolving Core Supreme Elder to come. Once his appearance changing technique was seen through, he would be in danger.

Since he didn't have the power to change the outcome, Lin Ming decided to find the Fire Ax Squad and help them through this disaster. This could also be considered as putting an end to their causality and karma.

……………

"Haha! This is great! This battle is long overdue, I have no idea what those South Sea Demon Region Elders were thinking!" At the front of the battlefield, a man with white-hair that hung to his waist was wantonly slaughtering everyone around him. He had a handsome and delicate appearance, and was also a bit effeminate. This man was Nightmare of the Demon Region's Big Three.

"If that Blood Demon dares to come out at this time, I'll take him on. I want to see just what kind of strength he has!" Blood Bone said nearby Nightmare.

"Humph, there's no point in caring about this fellow that never shows himself. How about this, let's make a bet on who can kill more. If you lose, then you will give me your Demon Bloodstone. How about it?" Nightmare asked with a provocative smile. As he spoke, he also launched a spirit attack on a Wartime Alliance martial artist, easily destroying his spiritual sea.

"Haha, so you've taken a liking to my Demon Bloodstone. Good! I've also taken a fancy to your 'Soul Amplifying Technique'. Let's have a match!"

Blood Bone laughed and then rushed into the Wartime Alliance's base. He extracted a crimson colored 10 foot long halberd and began to massacre everyone around him with abandon. But at this time, the entire South Aurora Island began to violently shake!

"Mm?" Blood Bone's expression changed, "Is this an earthquake?"

Ka ka ka!

The earth began to shake more and more wildly. Boulders broke, mountains trembled, and massive cracks that were dozens of feet wide appeared in the earth, splitting the ground. The two sides that had been fighting spontaneously stopped as they were all stunned by this phenomenon.

What was going on?

More and more fissures appeared in the earth. A distant mountain peak collapsed in a great avalanche. This was not an effect that would be caused by an ordinary earthquake!

Bang!

With a deafening explosion, in the distance seas, dark clouds covered the skies, and titanic crimson columns of blood directly pierced through the Primal Chaos Heavens!

From afar, these six columns of blood were like crimson pillars that supported the heavens; it was as if they alone were holding up the skies!

“What is that!?”

“That’s from the direction of Blood Demon Island and Dark Moon Island!”

Both sides were unknown what was happening. At this time, the entire South Aurora Island began to collapse!

Those fissures in the ground that were dozens of feet wide suddenly increased to hundreds of feet wide. The Wartime Alliance headquarters was like a sand castle; it instantly disintegrated into nothing!

“Hurry and fly!”

All of the Xiantian realm martial artists soared into the air. However, the Houtian realm martial artists were in a pitiful state; they couldn’t fly!

Those that were close to their companions and friends were carried up into the skies. As for those rich ones that could afford a spirit boat or were near one, they instantly boarded it. But, a vast number of Houtian martial artists were like slips of paper as they dropped into the bottomless abyss. Their wailing screams were drowned out by the earth shattering explosions that were ringing around; no one was able to listen to their last cries.

They were like grains of sand tossed into the sea; there was nothing they could do.

Rumble rumble!

A giant black vortex appeared under the land after South Aurora Island began to collapse. It was like the maw of a monster, devouring and destroying all....

Chapter 451 – The World is About To Collapse

Chapter 451 – The World is About To Collapse

…

…

…

Lin Ming looked at the massive swirling gray vortex beneath his feat, his eyes filled with bewilderment. As he extended his sense into the vortex, it was immediately cut off; it was just as if there was another world that existed behind that gray vortex.

A terrifying dragging force suddenly erupted from the vortex, affecting everyone. At this time, the surrounding space seemed to transform into a separate dimension – it was impossible to escape!

Even the overweeningly arrogant red-haired youth turned white.

Just what was going on!?

Those six massive beams of light from a moment ago seemed to have come from where the sect Elders were gathered. What had happened over there?

Hong hong hong!

The entire South Aurora Island was being crushed and torn apart. The turbulent sea crazily surged, turning into massive waves that towered in the sky. These waves were then sucked into the vortex, completely disappearing.

As the towing force grew stronger, all of the Xiantian masters that had flown into the sky began to be forcefully slowed down. Gradually they were forced to a halt by this immense force, and then they slowly began to be pulled into the swirling vortex!

“No!”

A late Houtian realm martial artist that was riding a spirit boat had his spirit boat smashed apart by the force of the vortex. Afterwards, he was like a leaf in a storm; he was sucked into that massive swirling vortex and shredded into pieces.

“This is…!”

As everyone saw this, their hearts turned cold. Anyone that fell here would die!

But if they wanted to escape, they couldn’t!

“Ahhh!”

Several Houtian masters that were picked up by their comrades were tossed into the swirling vortex, twisted into nothing! At this time, the true face of human sentiment and friendship was tested to the limit. Those brothers that shared life and death clung to each other. As for those that were only normal friends, they immediately dropped their comrades, only thinking to preserve their own lives!

Pu! Pu!

Two people were immediately torn into fragments by the vortex of energy. Another man screamed in desperation and began to revolve his protective true essence in a last ditch hope.

Ka ka ka ka!

The vortex of energy was like a razor that shaved off true essence, slowly wearing it away. As the martial artist’s bodily true essence was breaking, he clenched his teeth and revolved his true essence to the limit. Finally, the vortex of energy torn open a hole in his true essence, shredding his arm!

The martial artist howled. He fiercely bit his tongue, combusting his blood essence!

Bang!

The true essence of his body instantly rose several times over. Finally, he was able to withstand the tearing pressure of the swirling vortex of energy, and passed through the swirling layer.

Seeing this, all of the Xiantian martial artists in the air were stunned, and then immediately overjoyed. If a peak Houtian martial artist could safely make his way through the swirling vortex of energy, then they would naturally have an easier time in doing so. Although they didn’t know just what was behind the vortex of energy, having this knowledge that they would be able to survive for a while longer was great news.

The pulling force of the energy vortex increased. Some Xiantian martial artists knew that they wouldn’t be able to resist for much longer, and decided to save their energy and fly directly towards that swirling vortex. They stimulated their bodily protective true essence to the limit and safely rode their way through.

As for the peak Houtian martial artists, those that were strong were able to directly pass through. As for those that were weaker, they combusted their blood essence and safely passed through.

There were less and less people still in the air. Lin Ming was able to feel the surrounding space around him compressing, as if it were tightening around him. Even if he was able to resist this terrifying suction, he feared that he wouldn’t be able to escape. Not just that, but there were changes in the energy vortex that were occurring; it was impossible to know what would happen next. Thinking this, Lin Ming grit his teeth, pushed his true essence to the limit and flew towards the swirling vortex of energy…

………………

Hundreds of miles away, at the point between Blood Demon Island and Dark Moon Island, 10 black-robed people were suspended high in the air. Their expressions were inscrutable as they watched the massive swirling vortex thousands of feet beneath them.

This swirling vortex of energy was tens of times greater than the one that had appeared at South Aurora Island!

The vortex of energy that appeared at South Aurora Island was an ash-gray that spun with an amazing momentum, as if it were a rolling thunderclap.

But this vortex of energy was completely black. When one looked into it, they could see all sorts of faint and blurred illusions, as if they were staring into the endless void of chaos.

The swirling black vortex here was much more peaceful. Despite the surging waves that were swallowed by the vortex, there wasn't any noise. But this strange feeling was instead much more profoundly terrifying, and the reason was that this swirling vortex swallowed all, even the sound of the sea...

Without a doubt, the tearing strength of this pitch black vortex was several times more horrifying than the one at South Aurora Island!

"What a terrifying space storm! If we go down we'll die!" A black-robed Elder said, frowning.

A moment ago, those 10 late Xiantian large fellows that had opened the seals, because they were too near to the entrance when it had opened, were torn apart by the vortex of energy. They had been pulled into the space storm and ripped into a bloody fog before completely decomposing into fine dust; there wasn't even any residue left over.

"We've made an error in judgment! The degree to which the ancient battlefield decayed has exceeded our every assumption! Even the entrance has been covered by a space storm, the inside is probably much worse!"

“I thought that this broken world would be able to last for a few thousand more years, but it seems that it’s already begun to collapse. If we enter, we will encounter layers upon layers of dangers. This world can collapse at any moment. If we are inside when it does, we will be annihilated along with the world!”

After a world collapsed, the space storm it produced in the void would be extremely terrifying; even an Emperor powerhouse wouldn’t necessarily be able to resist it.

Moreover, as they looked at the situation of this entrance, they realized they couldn’t enter. They were not able to withstand a space storm of this level.

“We’ve spent so much time and effort in order to open this ancient battlefield, but all we’ve found is a world on the verge of collapse. We don’t even have the ability to access the inside. Our South Sea Demon Region’s plans have come to nothing!”

According to this letter of the Demon Emperor, the small world contained in this ancient battlefield had many different Laws. If a martial artist could practice within, they could be exposed to origins of all sorts of energies. If one had excellent perception, they might even be able to comprehend these origin Laws!

If the South Sea Demon Region could have moved into this ancient battlefield world and then blocked the entrance with a secret skill written in the Demon Emperor’s letter, the ancient Demon Region would be able to obtain a surpassingly good stronghold. Not just that, but they would obtain the massive amount of treasures that the Demon Emperor had left behind. Once all these treasures were obtained, being able to raise an Emperor level powerhouse would no longer be a fantasy.

Thus, as long as they had several hundred years, the ancient Demon Region would be able to become a Holy Land! When that time arrived, they would dominate the entire South Horizon Region. They would be able to reproduce the grand majesty and brilliance of the Silent Demon Emperor City from 3000 years ago!

But now, this plan was nothing but a dream that was popped like a bubble.

“We can’t use this world, but this world still has treasures left over from the Demon Emperor and the ancient battlefield. If we can take some of it, our efforts wouldn’t have been in vain!” The one who spoke was a woman with a veil covering her face and who wore a long black robe. Although she covered her face, she couldn’t cover up her impressively buxom figure; she was the Demon Region’s Western Faction Sovereign.

“We cannot go through the main entrance. Even this old man’s third stage Life Destruction won’t be able to pass this terrifying space storm. If we want to enter… we can only go through other entrances.” As the man spoke, he glanced around. At the edges of this main vortex, there were also 36 small vortices; the vortex that had appeared at South Aurora Island was one of these.

“That’s useless. Those are just broken spaces that are separated from the main world. If we go into one, we still won’t be able to enter the main world unless we can shatter the barriers of space!” The Demon Region Sovereign vacantly said. When a world first began to collapse, it would split into fragments first. These 36 smaller vortexes all corresponded with a splinter of the main world.

If they entered into small worlds, they would at most be able to obtain some treasures left behind on the ancient battlefield. Although these might be high quality treasures, they didn’t hold much appeal to the South Sea Demon Region Elders. What they longed for were the treasures within the Demon Emperor Palace!

At this time, wasting their time to go treasure hunting in a small splintered world was ridiculous.

“The situation is worsening. If this continues, we’ll be discovered soon; even Supreme Elders from the South Horizon Region and Five Element Region might show up. If Life Destruction masters or Emperor level powerhouses show up, there won’t be anything left for us.”

After hearing these words, all the Elders fell silent. They had thought they would be able to open the seal and obtain an independent world. Then they could follow the techniques written on the Demon Emperor's letter and open and close the entrance of the world as they pleased, obtaining all the treasures within.

Who knew that the situation would turn out like this?

………………

Several hundred miles away, at South Aurora Island's gray vortex.

Peng!

Lin Ming smashed into the ground. He felt dizzy, he had just passed through the vortex of energy a moment ago. Even though his body was protected with true essence, he felt a painful sensation as if his entire body was being torn apart.

Presumably the other martial artists were in a worse situation.

Lin Ming didn't immediately stand up. He kept his eyes closed and diffused his perception outwards, sensing everywhere around him. First, he had to scout his surroundings.

He was in a vast and desolate land, surrounded by groups of martial artists who had fallen down with him.

There were no plants on the ground, and the dirt was a dark red color, as if it had been stained by blood. There were countless crushed large and small stones suspended in the air, as if there was no gravity here. Within this entire world, there was not a single hint of wind – it was eerily peaceful.

What place was this?

Lin Ming had a very uneasy premonition in his heart. At this time, more and more martial artists began to crawl up. There were Demon Region martial artists and also Wartime Alliance martial artists. Nearly everyone that survived were Xiantian realm martial artists, with peak Houtian masters being in the minority. Not just that, but all of them had extremely pale complexions; they had obviously consumed a great deal of energy to survive.

Lin Ming also quietly stood up. In the crowd of so many martial artists, he seemed unremarkable.

He took stock of the treasures on his body. He still had his spatial rings, and his meridians and organs weren't damaged. As he glanced at the Demon Region martial artists, he impressively saw the red-haired man along with the Demon Region's Big Three!

Both of these hostile parties had suffered through the catastrophe. But now that they stood up, they were all filled with a wary vigilance. The martial artists of the Wartime Alliance became flustered and unconsciously pulled away from the South Sea Demon Region martial artists, finally separating and gathering together.

However, the final result of this was frightening to the point of many panicking; The remaining Wartime Alliance martial artists numbered only a third of those from the South Sea Demon Region!

This didn't include the top masters of the South Sea Demon Region – the Demon Region Big Three and the red-haired man!

As long as the South Sea Demon Region people wanted to kill them, they wouldn't even have their bones left!

Chapter 452 – Hidden Death Traps

Chapter 452 – Hidden Death Traps

…

…

…

The Wartime Alliance martial artists quickly grabbed their weapons. The situation was critical. In terms of quality of martial artists, the scattered free soldiers of the Wartime Alliance were inferior to those of the South Sea Demon Region. The only advantage they had was in their overwhelming numbers.

But within the swirling space storm, everyone that was weak had either fallen into the abyss or died. Because of this, the losses that the Wartime Alliance had suffered were much worse than those of the South Sea Demon Region.

Lu Huo's forehead was dripping sweat; this situation was really, really awful.

The white-haired Nightmare grinned wickedly as he looked at the martial artists of the Wartime Alliance. That look was like he was glancing at fish on a cutting board. He tilted his head and said to the red-haired youth, "Sir Envoy, let's clear up this trash first. If we encounter some sort of crisis or danger in this world, they might take advantage to retaliate against us."

The red-haired youth from the South Sea Demon Region appeared dark and ominous. Countless rocks floated in the air around him, giving him a solemn aura. His background was from the South Sea Demon Region, so his experience was naturally much broader and richer than Nightmare, Blood Bone, and Viper's.

He could faintly sense that they had been drawn into an independent space!

This sort of space might not even have an exit!

If he were stranded for the rest of his life in such a space… thinking of this, the red-haired youth's complexion became ugly. He was a rising star with a great and bright future, he didn't want to die in such a damned land!

"Sir Envoy, do you think…" Nightmare saw that the red-haired youth didn't respond, so he asked again.

"Silence!" The red-haired youth was in an extremely bad mood at the moment.

As Nightmare was yelled at by the red-haired youth, he was a bit taken aback. To someone of his level, nearly everyone that saw him had to be respectful. Since when was he the one that was scolded by others? But facing the red-haired youth, he could only endure this shame. Not to mention the red-haired youth's strength, but many of the current Demon Region martial artists were direct descendant disciples of the South Sea Demon Region.

At this moment, the red-haired youth was no longer in the mood to care about Nightmare's thoughts nor about the war between Divine Phoenix Island and the South Sea Demon Region. He had a premonition that the reason they were sucked into this unknown space was related to the secret mission that the South Sea Demon Region Elders had been preoccupied with!

Those six blood-colored beams of light that shot up from Blood Demon Island and Dark Moon Island were most certainly due to the actions of the sect Elders.

Perhaps even the offensive was related to the secret mission of the sect Elders. Otherwise, there was no point in launching such a senseless attack.

"These old geezers actually used me as cannon fodder!" The red-haired youth gripped his fists, his expression grim.

The red-haired youth heavily exhaled and then glanced over to the Wartime Alliance martial artists, "Which one of you is the leader here?"

The Wartime Alliance martial artists all looked at Lu Huo.

Lu Huo's heart cried out in complaint. He was only the nominal leader. In truth, he had a very weak command over the others. Everyone here were free martial artists, and they also had the nature and bearing of mercenaries. Just who would listen to him? At this time, who would help cover for him?

Lu Huo braced himself and said, "I am."

The red-haired youth looked over Lu Huo. Lu Huo's cultivation was at the extreme Xiantian realm, however, his foundation was shaky and weak. He was the sort of strength that had accumulated slowly over the ages, just barely tracing the extreme Xiantian realm. His true combat strength was limited.

"We will have a truce for now. First, we have to leave this damned place. But until then, all of you have to listen to me, otherwise I don't mind killing you all!" As the red-haired youth spoke, he naturally emitted a murderous aura. All of the surrounding Wartime Alliance martial artists had weak cultivations. In front of this presence, they felt their breath catch in their throat, as if the surrounding temperature had suddenly chilled.

Lu Huo didn't have any room to reject such a proposal. He remained silent, tacitly agreeing.

"Now, all of you move together. If you discover anything out of the ordinary then inform me! Especially anything related to that energy vortex!"

The energy vortex was the entrance to this different space. Now, the red-haired youth could only count on finding the vortex of energy to return to his own world.

As Blood Bone, Viper, and Nightmare saw the grim expression of the red-haired youth, they looked at each other and didn't say anything further. It was obvious their situation was serious beyond their imagination – this place was not simple at all!

Lin Ming hid among the crowd, seeming unremarkable. He slowly realized that this was a different space. If he couldn't leave, then he would be stuck here for the rest of his life. There wasn't anything better than letting the red-haired youth search for an exit out of this place.

"Wild Halberd, hey! It's really you!"

A voice resounded from among the crowd. Lin Ming turned his head to see the bearded big fellow from the Fire Ax Squad, it seemed that he had lived too. This was also within his expectations. Although the bearded big fellow didn't have a high cultivation, he could still go crazy and kill martial artists at this level. His protective true essence was also quite formidable.

"Wild Halberd, I knew you'd be alright!"

Another voice sounded out, and Lin Ming turned to see Captain Fire Ax walking towards him. At Fire Ax's side were Dark Sword, Violet Rain and Enchanting Shadow, all of them safe. Although Enchanting Shadow's expression was a bit white, she was still relatively unharmed.

However, Cool Foam, Green Tree and Green Forest were all missing…

Lin Ming's mind sank. These three were martial artists with specialized roles – their combat strength wasn't too high. He feared that they hadn't been able to withstand the space storm.

Fire Ax sighed and said, "In the offensive, Cool Foam, Green Tree and Green Forest all had limited combat strength, thus I told them to stay in the rear where it was safer. I never thought that… South Aurora Island would collapse…"

Fire Ax didn't say anything else. Whether it was that gaping abyss or the space storm after, both were fatal to them.

Violet Rain and Enchanting Shadow also appeared somber and gloomy.

Only the bearded big fellow was happily smiling. He said, “That Cool Foam kid is a once in a millennium punk, how could he die so easily? Also, he has a spirit boat in his possession!”

Cool Foam’s perception was quite strong, and he was the one that drove the Fire Ax Squad’s spirit boat. Naturally, the spirit boat would be in his spatial ring.

However even the protective true essence of a martial artist wasn’t able to withstand the tearing power of the space storm, much less a spirit boat.

Lin Ming sighed. This was the cruelty of war. These Fire Ax Squad members were all used to seeing life and death before their eyes, and before he had come, they had probably replaced their old comrades many times.

Lin Ming was silent, not speaking. Violet Rain, Enchanting Shadow, and Big Beard were also muted.

But at this moment, a miserable scream suddenly sounded out from in front of them. Lin Ming was surprised, and he instantly spread out his perception. His heart immediately went cold. At the front, an early Xiantian master had been sliced apart by something. His body fell away in two halves, and he spewed blood all over the ground!

“What is that?”

Lin Ming was suddenly on full alert. A held spear was easy to dodge, but a trap was difficult to prevent. This sort of sneak attack that could evade all perception was the most horrifying sort of attack!

Sou! Sou!

In the center of the group, several people quickly flew overhead, arriving where the martial artist had violently died. These were the Demon Region’s Big Three as well as the red-haired youth.

As the red-haired youth saw the two split halves of the body, his expression turned grim again.

The wound started from the dead man's right ribcage, cutting at a slant through his chest and body and being pulled through the left side of his waist. It was like he had been cut apart by a sharp saber.

He wasn't able to sense anything even though he spread out his perception.

The red-haired youth's eyebrows trembled. At this time, he suddenly seemed to realize something. His complexion completely changed, and he began to slowly retreat backwards. Could it be...

Suddenly, the red-haired youth grabbed a Wartime Alliance martial artist and threw him to the front!

"Ah!"

The martial artist miserably screamed, and then an incredulous scene occurred. As that martial artist flew through the air, his body was strangely torn apart. Like a carrot thrown on a sharp wire, he was cut in half!

Peng! Peng!

The two halves of the corpse fell onto the ground, blood splashing everywhere!

The surrounding martial artist were mostly from the Wartime Alliance. All of their expressions changed. At this time, they simply couldn't be angered by their comrade being thrown to his death. They could only feel absolute fear from being so close to this unknown was that like a god of death.

The red-haired youth's expression was solemn and grim. So it really was a space crack. In this collapsing world, having massive space cracks was normal. These space cracks couldn't be seen nor could they be sensed. But, once they were hit, even an extreme Xiantian martial artist would be cut in half!

Although the red-haired youth was arrogant, he wasn't crazy to the point that he believed he could resist being sliced in half by the space crack!

These undetectable cracks that spread through the air were like an invisible death god that opened its maw wide, waiting to swallow any life delivered to it.

Since he couldn't investigate, there was only one way to explore the way forth. The red-haired youth coldly said, "All the Houtian martial artists from the Wartime Alliance immediately go to the front of the group. Hurry up!"

With these words, all of the Wartime Alliance martial artists around the red-haired youth turned furious. Just now, the red-haired youth had killed their companion, regarding his life as worthless. And now, he also wanted to use the Houtian masters of the Wartime Alliance as cannon fodder! At this time, being thrown to the front to explore the way couldn't even be described as a zero percent chance of survival!

What happened once all the Houtian martial artists died? Would it be the turn of the Wartime Alliance's Xiantian martial artists?

All of the Wartime Alliance martial artists felt a fire igniting in their hearts.

Lin Ming frowned. His cultivation was at the Houtian realm, and Enchanting Shadow was also at the Houtian realm. At this time he saw Enchanting Shadow lose all color in her face, and a trace of despair clouded her eyes. She could already imagine just what her fate would be like. But if they didn't follow orders, who would be able to resist the South Sea Demon Region?

Enchanting Shadow subconsciously looked at Lin Ming. These months, no matter what danger they encountered, Lin Ming had always remained calm. In her mind, she had already formed an omnipotent halo around Lin Ming.

Not just that, but Lin Ming was also a Houtian realm martial artist. He would face this calamity alongside her.

“Do not move from the line.” Lin Ming calmly said. His right hand was already pressed against his spatial ring.

“Right, don’t move. Our strength is truly weaker than theirs, but we won’t be pushed around either!” Fire Ax said as he grit his teeth.

Chapter 453 – Ten Breaths of Time

Chapter 453 – Ten Breaths of Time

…

…

…

At this crucial moment, everyone realized that they were being treated as cannon fodder, and no one wanted to stand out. Some martial artists already held onto their weapons, their true essence faintly flowing.

The red-haired youth's eyes flashed with light, "I'll give you ten breaths of time, otherwise, all those Houtian realm martial artists who do not walk will be executed! Do not presume that you can muddle your way through this mess; I can sense all of your cultivations." This icy voice contained a very strong killing intent.

Under the shadow of this killing intent, some Houtian realm martial artists felt their foreheads begin to ooze sweat and their knees bending with weakness.

They were only normal peak Houtian martial artists. Against this extreme Xiantian red-haired youth that came from a fifth-grade sect, the disparity between them was simply too great.

This red-haired youth could kill instantly kill any one of them with just a thought.

"Ten!" The red-haired youth yawned.

At this moment, a Houtian martial artist angrily shouted out not too far away from the red-haired youth, "You can dream on if you think we will help you! We would rather die than become stones that pave your way out of here! Brothers! Let us unite! If this continues, then we can only...”

Nightmare sneered and concentrated his thoughts.

Peng!

In a split-second, that Houtian martial artist burst apart like a watermelon, suddenly and violently dying. Even Lu Huo, who was standing near him, didn’t have time to react. Lu Huo’s lips twitched, but finally he was only able to sigh.

All of the surrounding martial artists cried out in alarm, a surge of anger and hate flowing through their hearts. There was a wave of ‘cha cha cha’ sounds as some martial artists drew out their weapons. But still, no one dared to do anything rash.

“You are going too far!” An early Xiantian realm martial artist heatedly shouted.

Nightmare smiled with disdain, “Do you want to die too?”

The martial artist paused, he was somewhat afraid to face Nightmare. Nightmare was a martial artist who shined in soul attacks. He was able to detonate his enemy’s spiritual sea with his soul force, and could even shatter their heads. This was also the origin of Nightmare’s nickname. He could easily kill a low level martial artist. In that split second that it took him to kill a martial artist, it was impossible for anyone else to save them.

The early Xiantian martial artist grit his teeth, finally not saying anything. At that moment, a deep sense of humiliation filled his mind. He hated that he had no power to stand up to these monsters.

The red-haired youth didn’t even seem to have noticed what happened. He continued and blankly said, “Nine...”

With the invisible pressure pushing down on them, several Houtian martial artists were suppressed by the pressure; they were barely able to hold on.

"Eight!"

"Seven!"

Between every breath was a chilling voice!

"What can we do?" Fire Ax asked Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission. Even Fire Ax, who was normally calm, was flustered into his situation.

Lin Ming remained silent. He had truly grown a great deal these past days, but he still lacked assurance he would be able to win this battle.

A character like the red-haired youth simply couldn't be compared to someone like Ouyang Shenxiu. Not just that, but he also had the Demon Region's Big Three at his side. Any one of them would be far beyond Ouyang Shenxiu.

And with so many South Sea Demon Region direct descendant disciples added on, this would absolutely be a brutal and bloody battle!

….

….

….

"Six!"

"Five!"

"Four!"

The red-haired youth calmly counted down. But, Lin Ming was gathering his potential in silence, his eyes brilliant as he stared at the red-haired youth. His entire body was beginning to boil with fighting spirit!

"Three!"

As the red-haired youth counted to here, he slowly took out a halberd from his spatial ring. This blood halberd was 10 feet long and gleamed with a red light; it was also a Great Desolate Blood Halberd replica. However, its quality was far inferior to that of Lei Mubai's. Although the red-haired youth was stronger than Lei Mubai, his status within the South Sea Demon Region was naturally lower.

The blood halberd emitted a bloody energy. As several Houtian martial artists faced this aura, they couldn't help but tremble. Many of them walked out from the crowd. Facing this blood halberd, they simply lacked the courage to further resist.

If they didn't come out, they would certainly die. But if they stood out and were careful in exploring the path, they might have a slight chance of living.

"Two!"

The red-haired youth's count slowed a bit, the murderous intent that flowed from him condensing even further.

More and more Houtian realm martial artists realized their fate and stood out, pale, their eyes like dying flames. As the Xiantian martial artists of the Wartime Alliance saw this, they could only silently grieve.

In this strange and unknown world, there were probably dangers even greater than these space cracks. Once the Houtian realm martial artists died, it would be their turn.

"One!"

As the red-haired youth counted out this last number, he suddenly laughed, "What great courage! You really aren't afraid of death!"

Suddenly, his eyes fell on Lin Ming. In fact, he had already noticed Lin Ming from a moment ago. His cultivation wasn't high, but his true essence was thick to the point that it wasn't what a normal Houtian master could have.

"Interesting! How interesting!"

As the red-haired youth approached step by step, behind him were still Blood Bone, Nightmare, and Viper. With the illustrious renown of the Demon Region's Big Three as well as the red-haired youth that was stronger than them, these four released an aura that none of the Wartime Alliance martial artists had the courage to compete with. They were even afraid of meeting their eyes.

Lin Ming calmly looked as the red-haired youth approached and stood in front of the Fire Ax Squad. Behind Lin Ming, Enchanting Shadow and Big Beard tightly gripped onto their weapons, their palms slick with sweat.

Captain Fire Ax also had a grim expression and his nerves were on tight wires. In this critical situation, even the tranquil Violet Rain had purple arcs of electricity jumping between her fingertips.

The red-haired youth ignored Fire Ax and everyone else, only looking at Lin Ming. "Boy, you're quite good. You're standing in front of my aura and yet you can remain calm!"

Lin Ming was unmoved. He only traced the halberd in his spatial ring – the Great Desolate Blood Halberd!

Against this red-haired youth from a fifth-grade sect, as well as the Demon Region's Big Three and the countless Demon Region Xiantian masters behind them, Lin Ming was prepared to go all-out. He wouldn't hide his strength, nor could he; this would be a battle that decided life or death!

The powerful oppressive force caused all the surrounding martial artists to retreat, many of them having mournful expressions, "Finished… the Fire Ax Squad is finished. Fire Ax can at most face a normal late Xiantian master, but he would still be killed by any of these four in a second. Although that late Houtian boy has an intimidating aura, there is nothing he can do in the face of absolute suppression by cultivation!"

"What should we do? Do we help?"

"If we help them we will die! They can kill us without us even knowing!"

"But, if we don't resist them, we'll be at their mercy…" A man didn't say any more. It was better to die fighting gloriously in battle than as cannon fodder.

The man who had spoken before sighed, not saying anything else. They only had a third of the enemy's numbers, and their quality was also far inferior. What could they do? It was like trying to crack a rock with an egg.

This was also what most of the Wartime Alliance martial artists were thinking. The other side was the army of the South Sea Demon Region. As for them, they were just a gathered bunch of free martial artists.

The red-haired youth had already approached within 50 feet of lin Ming, his expression full of praise, "Good! Very good! I also admire those that do not fear death. But, not being afraid of death is not a positive, because those people usually die quickly!"

Bang!

The red-haired youth's body erupted with true essence. His blood-red hair whipped around in the vortex of true essence. He held his right hand out, and the 10 foot long halberd lay flat. A surge of violent bloody energy broke out; facing him was like facing a roaring army!

"My name is Xuan Chang! Now you can die knowing who killed you!"

Lin Ming didn't utter a single word – he had been silent from the very start, gathering his potential! His entire momentum was revolving to this limit and barely restrained. True essence chaotically surged around in the Heretical God Seed, and the 13 Blood Drinking Symbols rapidly circulated in his meridians, ready to break out at any time!

A deluge of savage murderous intent filled the air, seeming as if manifested into reality.

"Die!"

Xuan Chang shouted and took a step forwards, his blood halberd smashing down. The ground under his feet suddenly cracked, and the crimson blood halberd emitted a sorrowful grieving wail.

In this instant, Lin Ming finally pressed down on his spatial ring. With a flash of light, the Great Desolate Blood Halberd appeared with 13 shining souls around it. It was like a blood dragon had suddenly appeared, sweeping away all!

This weapon was the exact same as Xuan Chang's, it was just that the inherent blood energy it emitted was even richer!

Clang!

The two halberds intersected, rocks exploded around them! The nearby martial artists found it hard to keep their balance in the turbulent and savage currents of wind that followed. Lin Ming's feet sank into the ground. With the Great Desolate Blood Halberd in his hands, he had firmly blocked Xuan Chang's strike!

"What!?"

Xuan Chang's expression was filled with disbelief – this boy had blocked his strike?

All of the other martial artists were shocked, including the Demon Region's Big Three. Xuan Chang had only casually attacked, but this attack still wasn't something that a late Houtian martial artist should have been able to resist.

As for that blood halberd in his hand, it was almost the exact same as the one in Xuan Chang's hands. It was just that the aura was even more formidable, to the point where glancing at it caused one to feel a deep sense of impending doom!

What halberd was that?

"You…" Xuan Chang looked at Lin Ming and his complexion changed. Within the South Sea Demon Region, there were countless Great Desolate Blood Halberd replicas. Xuan Chang wasn't able to recognize that this blood halberd in Lin Ming's hand had once been Lei Mubai's, but he could tell that the blood halberd's forging method was without a doubt from the South Sea Demon Region. Just how did it end up in this youth's hand? Who was he?

"Damn it all!" In front of so many people Xuan Chang had been blocked by a mere late Houtian martial artist. Now that he lost face, all he could feel was a blazing rage, "Blood Mountain Seal!"

As he drew out a seal with his hand, he placed it atop the blood halberd. The entire blood halberd suddenly burst into a radiant light; this was a martial skill that Xuan Chang had used.

The Blood Mountain Seal was a cultivation method that had been passed down within the South Sea Demon Region for over 3000 years, it was not at all part of the ancient Devil Tome. Although its power was inferior to that of the ancient Devil Tome, Xuan Chang had cultivated it for many years and he was confident he could destroy even the hardest defenses!

Lin Ming's eyes shined with a sharp light. His Tempering Marrow true essence completely erupted! 13 Blood Drinking Seals screamed as they burst forth, "Primeval Halberd Strike!"

With a thrust of his halberd, a dizzying red vortex formed on the blade edge of the halberd! The surrounding space seemed to twist around this halberd; the power of this halberd strike had faintly touched the edges of Laws.

As the two halberds crossed again, it was like a bloody sun had risen in this dark world. Xuan Chang felt a strange and astonishing spinning power spread through him. He was nearly sent flying away!

He revolved his true essence and forcefully stilled himself, but he had still been forced to retreat seven or eight steps!

“You! Who are you!?” Xuan Chang’s eyes were bloodshot. His vision shined brightly as he stared at Lin Ming like a man who had been bitten by a beast.

Chapter 454 – The Title of Blood Demon

Chapter 454 – The Title of Blood Demon

…

…

…

In the midst of the battlefield, Lin Ming held the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. The 10 foot long blood halberd extended straight out. The two foot long blade edge gleamed with a cold light, and the pole was like a thick python.

At that moment, the figure of Lin Ming standing there was like a deadly halberd. His aura was staggering and his flowing murderous intent was breathtaking!

All of the surrounding martial artists trembled at this presence. If Lin Ming had just barely managed to defend against Xuan Chang's probing strike, they would have been able to accept that. But now Xuan Chang had used a martial skill and Lin Ming had still blocked it, instead forcing Xuan Chang to take several steps back. This was simply unbelievable.

It had to be known that Lin Ming's cultivation was more than an entire boundary worse than Xuan Chang's!

How could such a person have been unknown and unremarkable all this time?

Violet Rain bit her lips, her eyes shining, "Captain, has Wild Halberd been hiding his cultivation?"

Fire Ax was silent, hiding his cultivation? If Wild Halberd wanted to hide his cultivation in front of them, that could only be possible if his cultivation was higher. But now, it looked like even Xuan Chang had recognized that Wild Halberd was a Houtian realm martial artist.

Could Wild Halberd be a Revolving Core Supreme Elder? But why would a Revolving Core master hide amongst them? Was it for fun or something?

Fire Ax's eyes were radiant as he looked at the Great Desolate Blood Halberd in Lin Ming's hands. He whispered, "Maybe Wild Halberd is the Blood Demon..."

Hearing Fire Ax's hypothesis, Violet Rain was shocked.

Blood Demon?

Yes, Wild Halberd's might match the strength that the Blood Demon was rumored to have. Also, Wild Halberd and the Blood Demon appeared on South Aurora Island at nearly the same time. With both of these truths combined together, it meant that Wild Halberd and Blood Demon were almost certainly one and the same!

At this time, not only did Fire Ax make this guess, but the Demon Region's Big Three, Lu Huo, and other perceptive martial artists also thought of this.

Lu Huo's eyelids fluttered. If Wild Halberd was the Blood Demon, then was it possible to have Wild Halberd take the lead and engage with the South Sea Demon Region in a final life or death showdown?

Even if they had the Blood Demon on their side, this battle would still be dancing upon the razor-thin edge of death!

But if they didn't fight, wouldn't they perish anyway?

Nightmare's lips moved as he sent Xuan Chang a true essence sound transmission.

Xuan Chang frowned, Blood Demon?

He wasn't satisfied with this answer. Where did Blood Demon come from? How could such a ridiculous genius randomly appear out of thin air? He had to have some sort of origin, unless he was a martial artist who came from a distant land.

This Blood Demon's cultivation method was absolutely a top cultivation method of the demonic path. In that one collision a moment ago, the energy within wasn't too great, but that strange rotating power made Xuan Chang feel as if he was unable to resist at all. This cultivation even surpassed the legacies of the South Sea Demon Region!

If he took one step back and thought about it, there was only a single talent within the South Horizon Region that could compare to a genius like this, and that would be Divine Phoenix Island's Lin Ming. Both of them were at the late Houtian realm, and both also had such outrageous combat strength…

Mm, could it be…

Thinking this, Xuan Chang's eyes widened.

As he thought of Lin Ming, even Xuan Chang felt frightened. A year ago, Lin Ming had defeated Xuan Ji, who had disguised himself as Lei Mubai!

Xuan Ji was the most radiant and outstanding talent that had appeared in the South Sea Demon Region for the last several hundred years. He reached the Houtian realm at a mere 17 years of age, and he also had the perfect Giant Demon bloodline. His talent was almost at the eighth-grade, and he also had an extremely high thunder origin energy fusion compatibility. He cultivated the ancient Devil Tome's Halberd Arts, and with his just Houtian cultivation, he could defeat an early Xiantian martial artist from a large sect!

Against Xuan Ji, Xuan Chang simply didn't have the courage to compete. But this sort of monstrous genius was actually defeated by Lin Ming, who had even jumped realms in order to do so!

If this Blood Demon was Lin Ming…

"It shouldn't be possible. Lin Ming uses a spear and Blood Demon uses a halberd. Not just that, but there is a great stylistic difference in their cultivation methods. Blood Demon practices a top demonic path cultivation method, but Lin Ming practices Divine Phoenix Island's cultivation method…"

‘No matter where this fellow comes from, as long as I can kill him here today, I will be able to forever rid myself of this future calamity!’ As Xuan Chang thought this, his entire body flowed with true essence.

Netherworld Devil Arts – Universe of Bloody War!

The Netherworld Devil Arts was the original cultivation method that the Netherworld Great Emperor had used to become infamous. Although it was inferior to the ancient Devil Tome, it wasn’t that much worse. With Xuan Chang’s cultivation as an extreme Xiantian warrior, he would undoubtedly be able to display the formidable power of the Netherworld Devil Arts.

Suddenly, waves of surging blood appeared. All of the surrounding space was filled with the thick energy of blood, and some weaker martial artists felt extremely ill.

If the shockwave was so powerful, then facing this head on would truly be an inconceivable terror.

Lin Ming’s vision was profound; he stimulated his Tempering Marrow true essence to the limit. In this battle, he wouldn’t be able to hold back at all. Perhaps even his status would be revealed.

Xuan Chang waved his halberd. True essence wrapped around the waves of blood, rushing towards Lin Ming, breaking the earth wherever it went.

“Blood Seal Twisting Murder!”

Lin Ming clenched his right hand and stabbed out the Great Desolate Blood Halberd with indomitable momentum! Atop the blood halberd, 13 blood seals crazily spun around.

This was still a spinning force, except this time it was spinning outwards.

This halberd strike that contained a spiraling power was like a thin steel needle as it tore apart the waves of blood, dispersing them all. This was the inherent style of the ‘Great

Desolate Halberd Art'. If it wasn't for the Blood Drinking Seal's spinning power, Lin Ming would have to spend at least twice the true essence to scatter the waves of blood.

"Mm? This style...!"

Xuan Chang was shocked. Even the ancient Devil Tome's Halberd Arts was left in the dust in terms of the exquisiteness of the technique.

As Xuan Chang saw Lin Ming's halberd piercing towards him with a spinning force, he quickly raised his halberd to block. But at this moment, an amazing scene took place. Lin Ming's halberd seemed to penetrate through the space itself, instantly arriving in front of Xuan Chang!

'What!?'

Xuan Chang's expression completely changed. At this life or death moment, he gnashed on his tongue, "Explode!"

Bang!

Waves upon waves of blood instantly blew up. Many surrounding martial artists were sent flying back in the air, several of them spitting out blood.

"Be careful!"

"Withstand it! Do not step back!"

The martial artists quickly intensified their protective true essence. At this time, everyone would rather withstand the explosive waves of blood and be injured than escape to the periphery of the group. Who knew what sort of invisible space cracks were around them. If they stepped into a space crack, that meant certain death!

A massive amount of bloody fog filled the air, shrouding Lin Ming and Xuan Chang within. No one could see or hear within; even perception was being torn apart by the spiraling power.

All of the martial artists felt their heartbeats quicken in nervousness.

“Die!”

Within the bloody fog, Xuan Chang swept his halberd towards Lin Ming!

Lin Ming didn’t say a single word as he similarly swept his halberd.

On the blade!

13 crimson blood seals blocked Xuan Chang’s halberd blade, grounding it in place.

“Mm? This is…” Xuan Chang felt as if someone had poured molten metal onto his halberd; there was a great resistance that acted on it.

In this moment, Lin Ming thrust his halberd towards Xuan Chang.

“Humph, explode for me!”

Bang!

True essence erupted, washing away all of Lin Ming’s Blood Drinking Seals. Xuan Chang howled, raising his halberd and slicing down at Lin Ming!

Clang!

Two halberds crossed. Lin Ming felt a strong force transmit through him and his right leg pushed down, crushing all the rocks beneath him. He was forced a step back, the blood in his body tumbling.

Chi-la!

The clothing on his chest was ripped apart, exposing his smooth and firm muscles. There was also a layer of bloody energy attached to him, constantly corroding Lin Ming’s body.

This bloody fog… Lin Ming's inner true essence vibrated, scattering all the bloody fog. He looked up and saw Xuan Chang take a step back; his situation was much better than Lin Ming's.

Indeed, if Lin Ming didn't open the Heretical God Force, then in terms of absolute strength he would be inferior to Xuan Chang. However, facing so many enemies at the same time, Lin Ming didn't dare to rashly open the Heretical God Force.

"This is tricky!"

Lin Ming's eyebrows tightened. He did have a lot of final master moves he could use, but he didn't dare to use any of them casually. Any one of those moves consumed a great deal of energy. If he had to use it, he must ensure that Xuan Chang would be severely injured; otherwise he would be in danger.

Xuan Chang looked at Lin Ming, his heart becoming increasingly perturbed. 'Just what cultivation method is this? Is this the legacy of some other great demonic path sect?'

'The Blood Demon's style is extremely bizarre. It has many similarities with the ancient Devil Tome, but it seems to be even stronger than the ancient Devil Tome!'

Thinking this, Xuan Chang's heart suddenly shook!

Could it be…

As he carefully looked at the Great Desolate Blood Halberd in the Blood Demon's hand, it looked exactly the same as Xuan Ji's. Not just that, but although the cultivation method that the Blood Demon used was different from the ancient Devil Tome, it was truly somewhat similar! It was as if… as if his cultivation method was derived from the ancient Devil Tome, a higher evolution!

Could it be that… Lin Ming had obtained Xuan Ji's Great Desolate Blood Halberd and also the first layer of the ancient Devil Tome cultivation method, and then proceeded to independently practice and perceive its secrets to this degree???

Heavens!

Did he improve upon the cultivation method of an ancient Supreme Elder? Just what sort of monstrous perception was this, to be able to improve the cultivation method that an ancient Supreme Elder had created!?

Thinking of this, Xuan Chang's complexion completely changed, and beads of sweat began to roll down his forehead. He was simply stunned by Lin Ming's monstrous talent.

Nightmare, Blood Bone, and Viper were all unclear as to why Xuan Chang's expression had changed so suddenly. It was as if he had just discovered something terrible a moment ago…

The surrounding martial artists also weren't clear as to what was happening.

Xuan Chang's complexion became increasingly grim and solemn. If this Blood Demon truly was Lin Ming, then he must kill him now! Otherwise, with Lin Ming's monstrous perception and talent, he would probably be able to instantly kill him in another six months!

This sort of person was an abnormal being that couldn't be stirred up.

But, the key of all this was – could he kill Lin Ming?

Although Xuan Chang also had many finishing blows he hadn't used, he was aware that Lin Ming had even more methods!

If he was stronger than Lin Ming by a bit, then with the help of the Demon Region's Big Three he could suppress Lin Ming. But if Lin Ming turned around and escaped, in this world with space cracks everywhere, stopping him would be hard!

If he rashly pursued him into a space crack, he would lose his head!

If he couldn't chase and kill Lin Ming, and Lin Ming found an exit, then that abnormal youth could find a place to cultivate for a few years. In the meantime, Xuan Chang would be living in constant fear and unease, until the day that Lin Ming returned to kill him!

Xuan Chang suddenly found that he had jumped on the tiger and could no longer back down; just what should he do?

As Nightmare saw Xuan Chang's ugly complexion, he couldn't help but ask with a true essence sound transmission, "Sir Envoy, this person is a bit tricky. Would Sir Envoy permit me to help in secret? Although I cannot deal with him alone, I can use my soul force to secretly attack his spiritual sea. I have complete confidence that I will be able to slow or restrain his movements. When that happens, Sir Envoy can kill him with ease!"

Xuan Chang's heart stirred. Nightmare excelled at soul attacks, this plan was indeed feasible. If he was successful, he could stop Lin Ming from running. But… this was a gamble. Should he make this gamble or not?

Chapter 455 – I Was Impulsive

Chapter 455 – I Was Impulsive

…

…

…

Although Xuan Chang was proud, since this involved his life, he still wasn’t above admitting defeat and apologizing in the presence of everyone. This was something he was still willing to do. However, what Xuan Chang was afraid of was that even if he capitulated and apologized, Lin Ming would still bear a grudge against him in the future.

Perhaps in several years, or even less, Lin Ming would be able to crush him like an ant. At that time, his life or death would all depend on Lin Ming’s mood! Xuan Chang was unwilling to hand his fate over to others like this.

Xuan Chang clenched his teeth and gripped the blood halberd in his hands. He didn’t need Nightmare’s soul attack to wound Lin Ming. As long as Lin Ming hesitated for just a second… he would be able to kill him!

“Nightmare, when I attack, you join in; use everything you have to kill him, leave nothing behind! Otherwise, we won’t have another chance!”

Xuan Chang had an extremely grim expression. This sort of attack that took one by surprise could only be used once. The second time, Lin Ming would have protective measures in place and there wouldn’t be much of an effect. And if he escaped in advance, then in this broken world full of space cracks and other dangers, whether it was chasing or running or hiding, everything was a death-defying act.

All of it would depend on one one's destiny. And Xuan Chang was not confident to the point where he thought his own destiny was greater than Lin Ming's.

"Alright." Nightmare was a bit surprised, Xuan Chang seemed to take this Blood Demon especially seriously. Did he know the identity of this Blood Demon?

"Netherworld Devil Arts!"

Xuan Chang shouted, and true essence erupted from him like a volcano. He activated the third layer of the 'Netherworld Devil Arts' cultivation method. Xuan Chang had just managed to trace the threshold of this third layer. When trying to control the overbearingly savage and violent demonic path cultivation method, if his technique or control was insufficient, it was highly likely that he would end up suffering a backlash and wounding himself. He might even drive himself to madness. For Xuan Chang to use this now proved just how desperate he was!

As Xuan Chang's dreadful aura flooded out, his hair billowed in the wind. At this moment, he was like an all-powerful war god that no one could defeat, looking down at the world with arrogance!

All of the surrounding martial artists felt their backs turn cold as they witnessed Xuan Chang's power. Even the South Sea Demon Region's Big Three were alarmed and frightened.

"This is too terrifying! Were Xuan Chang's early moves just tentative attacks?"

"His strength suddenly rose up so high. All of us are at the extreme Xiantian realm, yet the difference is so great!"

"Who can resist Xuan Chang like this?"

All of the Wartime Alliance martial artists felt despair fill their hearts, even Lu Huo had dispelled his thoughts of teaming up with the Blood Demon to deal with Xuan Chang. With Xuan Chang and the Big Three of the South Sea Demon Region, whether it was quality or quantity, they were stronger. If they resisted, they would all die!

Lu Huo sighed. Just how many people would be able to survive this impending disaster?

.....

Lin Ming's pupils contracted. He naturally knew that his opponent was planning on going all-out with everything he had. As for his own card that he had in hand, it was a pure killing move he could only use once – he was saving it for a situation in which it would absolutely be successful. But this time he had no way of holding back, otherwise he would be severely wounded here. If he couldn't escape, then he would die soon after.

"When I faced Ouyang Shenxiu, I only opened the Heretical God Force – I didn't burn the blood of the Ancient Phoenix. And after the battle, my condition wasn't at its best. But now that I'm facing Xuan Chang, my strength has greatly increased and I'm also in top condition. I wonder just how far I can go!"

Lin Ming began to seethe with fighting spirit!

Hou!

The blood of the Ancient Phoenix combusted! The flame marks between Lin Ming's eyebrows began to shine with a golden flame light. The most potent ability of the Ancient Phoenix's blood was that it was able to bathe in flames and be reborn. This mean that the blood of the Ancient Phoenix could be burnt without limit, and none of it would be lost!

"Die!"

Xuan Chang tightened the grip on his blood halberd and all of his upper body clothes tore apart. His red hair scattered in the air, and with every step he took, the ground shattered. A vast surge of true essence turned into a giant red eagle, flying towards Lin Ming!

Ka ka ka!

A halberd was wielded; the surrounding space seemed like it was being torn apart.

Lin Ming's eyes were deep. His true essence touched upon the Heretical God Seed.

Heretical God Force – open!

A vast amount of terrifyingly compressed true essence erupted from the Heretical God Seed. In that instant, the true essence of Lin Ming's body was like a vast and endless ocean, turbulent waves of true essence ceaselessly crashing into the world!

All of the surrounding martial artists paled as they experienced this crazily fierce aura. Even Fire Ax didn't dare to believe his own eyes. He knew that Blood Demon was strong, but he never would have imagined that he was strong to this degree. Was that violent battle from a moment ago just a small part of his strength?

Nightmare's complexion turned white. He originally thought that Xuan Chang wouldn't even need his help, but now it looked as if it might not even be enough!

Nightmare revolved true essence within his body. At this critical moment, he stared at Lin Ming. His spiritual sea rushed forwards, his soul pierced out!

At this time, Lin Ming no longer cared about hiding his status. The highly compressed power of thunder and fire within the Heretical God Seed exploded forth. At this moment, his entire body flashed with arcs of thunder and blazed with soaring flames. At the same time, Nightmare's soul attack pierced Lin Ming's spiritual sea!

Mm?

Lin Ming's mind stirred; sneak soul attack?

Lin Ming barely even bothered to react. The savage and wild power of thunder that had been slumbering within his spiritual sea burst forth and attacked this strange and sneaky soul attack!

Meanwhile, a swirling black vortex appeared in the skies of Lin Ming's spiritual sea – this was the Samsara martial intent!

This martial intent that was formed from experiencing 100 Samsaras came from the legacy of the Sorcerer Pagoda's seventh floor. How could it allow its territory to be desecrated?

Peng!

The swirling black vortex was like the massive maw of a demon, directly tearing that fragment of soul energy to pieces.

"AhhhHHH!"

Nightmare screamed, falling to his knees as he clutched his head and collapsed. Just a moment ago he had attacked Lin Ming with his soul force per Xuan Chang's instructions. He had exhausted all of his strength in that attack. A soul was a martial artist's most fragile aspect. If a martial artist attacked someone who had a strong soul force defense with an all-out attack, it was no different from smashing a rock with an egg; they would suffer a horrendous backlash!

Many martial artists heard Nightmare's pitiful screams. But at this time, no one could reflect on just what this meant; Xuan Chang's halberd was already coming down.

But at this time, the Great Desolate Blood Halberd in Lin Ming's hand had at some point been exchanged for a red and purple spear!

A manic power of thunder and flame interweaved into a singularity – Thunderfire Annihilation!

Bang!!!

In this dark and desolate world, a gorgeous purple sun seemed to rise into the air. All sound was swallowed, and a blazing light flooded the vision of everyone present!

All of the surrounding martial artists were considered extraordinary geniuses of their generation and lands. But facing such a dangerous explosion, they were like leaves in a storm. All of them were blown away, scattered about in disorder.

In that maelstrom of thunder and fire, Lin Ming and Xuan Chang both flew backwards.

But, the difference was that Lin Ming balanced himself and fell to one knee, his face paling. As for Xuan Chang, he smashed into the ground, vomiting a giant mouthful of blood.

Seeing this, all of the martial artists were awed, especially the scene of Nightmare suffering a backlash. None of them could believe their eyes. The extreme Xiantian Nightmare was infamous throughout the South Sea battlefield for his soul attacks. But a moment ago, Nightmare had sneak attacked Lin Ming during the chaos, and not only was Lin Ming alright, but Nightmare was severely wounded in return!

Viper and Blood Bone both had extremely difficult expressions. They best understood Nightmare and knew just how strong his soul attacks were. After suffering the piercing of his spiritual sea, let alone attacking as usual, even standing would be difficult.

However, Lin Ming seemed to have shrugged off this attack with no response. Not only did he resist Nightmare's soul attack, but he had accepted Xuan Chang's strongest strike and had also beaten him into vomiting blood!

Was this really a human?

“He is too terrifying!” Blood Bone's lips twitched. Against Lin Ming, he simply couldn't muster the courage to face him!

“Luckily… we didn't encounter Blood Demon earlier.” Viper gulped, his forehead sweating. If they had really encountered Blood Demon earlier, it wouldn't have been strange if one or two of them had died! Thinking of this, he was horrified.

Everyone was in complete silence. Xuan Chang crawled up from the ground, his face white. As he smeared the blood off his lips, he glanced at Nightmare who was twitching on the floor, and his complexion became even uglier.

Xuan Chang had overdrawn his true essence to make an all-out strike. During this time, Nightmare had also used his soul attack. However, not only was his attack blocked, but he had been beaten into such a miserable state!

How was this possible?

How could this Lin Ming be formidable to this degree?

Was he really only 17 years old? Was his cultivation really only at the late Houtian realm?

Xuan Chang's heart filled with waves of despair. Let alone forcing Lin Ming to stay on scene, it didn't seem as if he could even defeat him!

He knew that several months ago Lin Ming had killed his way into the Seven Profound Valleys and had slain several Great Elders of the Acacia Faction. He had even fought the Acacia Faction Sovereign and severely wounded him, causing him to lose blood essence. Finally, he had killed his own enemy with his own hand in front of all the Acacia Valley Elders. But the Seven Profound Valleys' Valley Master didn't dare to stop him or publically reveal this information

If he didn't kill Lin Ming today, then maybe a dozen or so years from now, Lin Ming would have the ability to kill his way into the South Sea Demon Region, and in the presence of the sect Elders, squash him like a bug!

But… could he kill Lin Ming?

It was looking more like he would be killed by Lin Ming!

Thinking of this, Xuan Chang felt his intestines turn green with regret; how could he have provoked such a dark star!

To come to such an insignificant South Aurora Island and run into Lin Ming, his luck was truly the ultimate trash.

Lin Ming wiped off the blood from his lips and slowly stood up. The truth was that the actual situation wasn't what Xuan Chang had imagined.

For Nightmare to suffer a counterattack in his soul attack, that could be considered his bad luck. With the Heretical God Seed's Thunder Soul in addition to his Samsara martial intent, Lin Ming's soul defense was formidable to the point of being utterly abnormal.

For Nightmare to try and pierce Lin Ming's spiritual sea, that was simply a suicidal action.

As for the Thunderfire Annihilation a moment ago, because he still had so many enemies to face, he didn't dare to use the complete Thunderfire Annihilation. Even so, he had still consumed around 30% of his true essence.

But this strike had only severely injured Xuan Chang, his opponent still had a high combat effectiveness left.

As Lin Ming took stock of himself, whether it was opening the Heretical God Force or burning the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, neither could be sustained for too long. If this lasted, then at most both he and Xuan Chang would be severely wounded. As for the South Sea Demon Region's Big Three, he absolutely wouldn't have the power to resist them!

What should he do?

Lin Ming already expected that this would be a difficult uphill battle, but he had no choice other than to fight. As for escaping from here, Lin Ming also dreaded those space cracks that existed everywhere.

At this time, an incredible scene happened. Xuan Chang abruptly lowered the halberd in his hands and said, "I admit defeat. I…was impulsive in my actions a moment ago, and I apologize for that. Forgive me."

What?

Lin Ming was shocked.

It wasn’t just Lin Ming, but all the surrounding martial artists were dumbfounded.

Just what had happened?

Chapter 456 – Nirvana Dragon Root

Chapter 456 – Nirvana Dragon Root

…

…

…

Lin Ming did have the overwhelming upper hand against Xuan Chang. However, this was just in a battle with the two of them.

If this battle spread to both sides, then no matter how powerful Lin Ming was, he still wouldn't be able to overcome the overwhelming numerical advantage that the South Sea Demon Region had. It was impossible for him to single-handedly defeat 100 to 200 Xiantian masters and half-step Xiantian masters, not to mention that there were also still the Demon Region's Big Three powerhouses.

"Is Xuan Chang afraid?"

"He's actually begging for mercy publicly?"

"Is the Blood Demon that fearful?"

"What is going on here?"

Violet Rain glanced at Fire Ax and whispered, "Xuan Chang probably knows who Wild Halberd is…"

When Xuan Chang had first exchanged blows with Lin Ming, his expression had completely changed and he had begun to sweat from his forehead, as if he had discovered something terrible. The most reasonable explanation for this was that Xuan Chang had recognized just who Wild Halberd was, and there was something about him that caused Xuan Chang to be afraid.

"Perhaps..." Fire Ax mumbled as he ruefully smiled. As he glanced at Wild Halberd again, whether it was origin or background, it simply wasn't something he could imagine...

"Mm..."

Violet Rain nodded, her face flushed red. Nightmare was an extremely formidable character that would cause any one of them to panic just by hearing his name. But now he was slumped silly on the floor, and this was all because of Wild Halberd. Wild Halberd's cultivation was only at the late Houtian realm – this was simply unimaginable.

Lin Ming was silent. If this fight continued, both sides would suffer major losses.

If they fought to the death, the most he would be able to do was to finish off the rest of the Demon Region's Big Three, Blood Bone and Viper; he wouldn't be able to change the general situation. If he ran away, he would face all sorts of unknown dangers, and not just that but the Fire Ax Squad he would have to leave behind would die.

Lin Ming didn't wish for that to happen.

As Xuan Chang saw Lin Ming hesitate as if he was willing to accept a truce, he hurriedly said, "As for the question of who will explore the path, first I will have my side's martial artists release their zombie guards. After the zombie guards are finished, then we shall have martial artists from both sides continue, half from each side; what do you think?"

Hearing these words, the Wartime Alliance martial artists were flattered. These conditions that Xuan Chang offered were simply too good!

These zombie guards were part of the combat strength of the South Sea Demon Region martial artists. Refining a zombie guard required a great deal of resources and efforts. In the eyes of most here, a Xiantian rank zombie guard was much more valuable than a peak Houtian realm martial artist.

Having the South Sea Demon Region explore the path forwards with their zombie guards could be considered a massive hemorrhage on their part.

Some of the Wartime Alliance martial artists were happy yet perplexed. When a good man turned evil, it would be easy to despise him. But when an evil man – especially a strong evil man – turned good, this was something to celebrate.

Just why did Xuan Chang fear Lin Ming to this degree?

They didn't know Lin Ming's true identity, only that Xuan Chang was scared silly by Lin Ming's infamous title.

Xuan Chan was very self-aware that if he couldn't kill Lin Ming, he was only seeking his own death.

Now he was trying everything he could to patch up the relations between him and Lin Ming since he no longer wanted to mess with him, and also didn't want him to bear a grudge in the future.

Lin Ming looked at Xuan Chang doubtfully and asked with a true essence sound transmission, "Do you recognize me?"

Lin Ming had just used Thunderfire Annihilation and also the Purple Comet Spear. Although the Wartime Alliance martial artists may not know what these meant, Xuan Chang was a talented disciple of the South Sea Demon Region and had most likely obtained information like this. It wouldn't be strange if he was recognized.

Xuan Chang felt his heart go cold. Lin Ming's identity was simply too sensitive, Xuan Chang didn't want to bring any trouble onto himself. The Western Faction's Great Elder Xuan Wuji had been obsessed about this matter. If he was found to be withholding any information pertaining to Lin Ming, then he would surely suffer serious and fatal consequences back at the sect. Not just that, but a month or two later, Lin Ming's strength might even make another breakthrough. At that time, Lin Ming might even think that it was a good idea to silence all witnesses.

Thinking of this, Xuan Chang foolishly mumbled, “I have recognized you, Young Hero should be Blood Demon!”

Lin Ming’s eyes narrowed. He didn’t believe Xuan Chang’s words, but investigating this matter was useless, he remained silent for now…

…………..

Dark Moon Island, above the South Sea –

The massive black swirling vortex slowly spun around. A vast amount of seawater was swallowed up by the vortex without a single sound. It was strangely peaceful and quiet.

12 black-robed Elders floated high above the swirling vortex, they still hadn’t found a solution to the problem.

After a long silence, an Elder with a masked face slowly spoke, his voice deep and hoarse like coarse gravel. “If this continues, then in just several days there will be several Revolving Core fogies or even Life Destruction powerhouses arriving here. They will be from the demonic path, righteous path, South Horizon Region, Five Element Region, or even beyond. When that time comes, there will inevitably be a fierce battle here. Perhaps even this old man will perish here. Xuan Yuqie, do you really expect us old men to go all out even in this situation when we’re kept in the dark!?”

The Xuan Yuqie he referred to was the Sovereign of the Demon Region Western Faction.

Although Xuan Yuqie was nearly 1000 years old, after a martial artist underwent their second Life Destruction, they would be reborn and their body remade. Their life would lengthen, and their appearance would remain young. With some secret make-up techniques, her appearance was still like a beautiful woman around 30 years of age, ardent and aphrodisiac.

“Haha.” Xuan Yuqie smiled, but she didn’t immediately respond. She glanced at the feminine-looking man beside her; this person was Lei Mubai’s master and great grandfather – Xuan Wuji.

As the two quickly exchanged true essence sound transmissions, the masked Elder quietly waited.

A moment later, Xuan Yuqie smiled and said with alluring flattering, “Elder Zhou may not believe me, but we were really planning on informing everyone of the situation within once the ancient battlefield was opened.”

As long as there were people, there would be infighting. Even within the South Sea Demon Region, there were still struggles over power and interests; this was simply an inevitable facet of human nature.

When Silent Demon Emperor City was destroyed, the remnants of the defeated armies fled to the South Sea. Many of these remnants had the direct bloodline of the Netherworld Great Emperor as well as the Devil Generals.

Between the various bloodlines and clans, there would be conflict of interests. Who didn’t want their juniors to soar into the sky and for their Elders to safely pass through the death door of Life Destruction? This also caused the relationship between the various clans to be rocky.

The ancient Devil Tome and Demon Emperor’s letter were first obtained by the direct descendants of the Netherworld Great Emperor. The Demon Emperor’s letter had always been controlled by Xuan Wuji and Xuan Yuqie.

If they didn’t require the help of the other South Sea Demon Region Elders in order to open the ancient battlefield, then Xuan Yuqie and Xuan Wuji would have kept all the treasure to themselves.

Elder Zhou flung his sleeves and calmly said, “This old man is listening with full attention.”

Xuan Yuqie smiled, “Well, when the Demon Emperor had taken this broken world’s ancient battlefield as his stronghold, he also construction an Imperial Palace here; the treasures within are countless.”

Elder Zhou frowned and said, “According to what this old man knows, the Demon Emperor didn’t die, but instead flew towards the Realm of the Gods. If that’s true, why would he leave behind treasures within his stronghold?”

Unless the Demon Emperor had suddenly fallen, there was no way that he would have left treasures at this stronghold so that others could take them away.

Xuan Yuqie smiled tenderly and said, “Elder Zhou is wise. The Demon Emperor did take his treasures with him when he flew to the Realm of the Gods. But… there were some things that he couldn’t take with him.

“Since I invited everyone here and also spent such a great amount of effort to open the ancient battlefield, naturally I wouldn’t do so in vain. According to the Demon Emperor’s letter, there were two things that he couldn’t carry away. One was… the medicine garden!”

Medicine garden? Elder Zhou’s heart moved, but he maintained his calm composure, waiting for Xuan Yuqie to speak.

“In this broken world, there are special rules that exist along with the layers of array formations that the Demon Emperor laid down, this means that this medicine garden is truly special! When the Demon Emperor flew up, he naturally carried off some of these rare and valuable medicines. But there were some medicines that hadn’t ripened, and there was no meaning for him to take them. He left them here to be nourished by the special rules of the broken world and allow them to grow. Now, tens of thousands of years have passed!”

As Xuan Yuqie spoke, Elder Zhou’s eyebrows twitched. Tens of thousands of years?

Normally, a medicine that was just 1000 years old would be considered extremely precious. As for one that was tens of thousands of years old, that was simply astounding!

“There aren’t many medicines that can survive for tens of thousands of years!”

“Correct, there are indeed very few medicines that can survive that long. Most of the plants in the Demon Emperor’s medicine garden should have already wilted away. But, there is one extremely precious medicine named the Nirvana Dragon Root that can survive for over 100,000 years!”

“Oh? What is that?” Elder Zhou was surprised. According to Xuan Yuqie’s meaning, this meant that it should be some absurdly precious treasure; he had never heard of it before.

“According to the description written within the Demon Emperor’s letter, the use of this medicine is to create new blood and wash one’s marrow. The Demon Emperor’s letter described a Body Transformation cultivation method called the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’. One could use the Nirvana Dragon Root to have true essence enter into the marrow.”

“True essence entering marrow?” Elder Zhou eyebrows arched up. “The significance of true essence entering marrow doesn’t concern us much anymore. This old man is not interested in any sort of Body Transformation cultivation method.”

All of the Elders present had already condensed their true essence into their dantian and formed a revolving core. If they chose this time to practice such a basic Body Transformation cultivation method, they would have to do so from the start. Thus, no matter how great this cultivation method was, it simply made no sense to do so.

“Haha, of course, I am also not interested in this. But according to the Demon Emperor’s letter, after refining the Nirvana Dragon Root and washing the marrows with new blood, one can increase the chances of successfully crossing through the Life Destruction stages!

“What!?!?”

Not only was Elder Zhou visible moved, but all of the other Elders present too. Increase the chances of crossing through the stages of Life Destruction!

“How much can it increase by?”

Elder Zhou was unable to contain his excitement.

Life Destruction....it was like an endless moat that lay in front of all Revolving Core martial artists. To cross through Life Destruction was to step over the gates of hell, walking the tightrope over the endless abyss. The truth was that many extreme Revolving Core masters already had the cultivation levels to attempt their passage through Life Destruction. But, they did not dare to do so. If they didn’t attempt it, then could live for 800 years. But if they tried to cross Life Destruction, there was a chance they would instantly die!

And what made people despair was that no one ever knew how many Life Destructions they would have to cross. Crossing this again and again and again, that truly led people into anguish.

If there was some valuable material that could increase the chances that Life Destruction would succeed, even by 20%, then that would absolutely cause countless Revolving Core masters to go crazy with greed.

Chapter 457 – Ancient Transmission Array

Chapter 457 – Ancient Transmission Array

…

…

…

Elder Zhou and everyone else's reactions were well within Xuan Yuqie's expectations; who wouldn't be tempted by something like this?

After she had the Elders hungrily hanging onto her words, she slowly said, "The Nirvana Dragon Root can increase the chances of crossing Life Destruction by 20 to 30%. Not just that, but… the enhancement is permanent!"

20-30% increased chances, permanently!

This so called 'permanence' was that after successfully washing the marrow, every time one attempted to cross through the stages of Life Destruction, their chances would increase by 20-30%, all the way until they successfully broke through to the Divine Sea realm!

Elder Zhou felt as if he was going crazy. 20-30% seemed like an astounding exaggeration, not to mention that this was a permanent increase.

Normally, those martial artists that could cultivate to the Life Destruction boundary were all top talents. Of course, even among the top talents there were differences. Those that had a better foundation had a greater chance of crossing Life Destruction. As for those that had a worse foundation, their chances might be just 10-20%.

Elder Zhou wasn't considered too bad. With his original 40-50% chances, along with the Nirvana Dragon Root and some other precious materials, he would have a near certain chance to cross Life Destruction. It would be blessedly safe.

If he didn't dare to cross Life Destruction with an over 80% chance of success, then he might as well not practice martial arts and retire, waiting for his life energy to exhaust itself and then die in peace.

"How about it? Is Elder Zhou satisfied with this answer?" The one who spoke was Xuan Wuji. He was the Great Elder of the Demon Region Western Faction and also the previous Demon Region Western Faction Sovereign. He was older than Xuan Yuqie by several hundred years, and he had crossed through the third stage of Life Destruction.

"If this precious medicine is able to increase the chances of successfully passing through the Life Destruction stages, this old man naturally desires it." Elder Zhou deeply looked at Xuan Wuji. The two of them had never been on the best of terms. But Elder Zhou was aware that with his status in the South Sea Demon Region, he would already be content to obtain a Nirvana Dragon Root.

As for the other treasures, even if it were a heaven-step treasure, Elder Zhou didn't desire those much. Any treasure paled in comparison to his own life.

"I heard Sovereign Xuan say that besides the medicine garden there was also another treasure. Just what would that be?"

Xuan Yuqie said, "The second couldn't be considered a treasure, it is the Demon Emperor's familiar. This familiar is named the Giant Leviathan. When the Demon Emperor flew into the Realm of the Gods, his familiar remained within the mortal world. This Giant Leviathan is an extremely formidable beast, its body contains a vast space. For these past tens of thousands of years, it has been slumbering in perpetuity within the ancient battlefield. If we can summon it, then it will become a part of our war strength!"

"Giant Leviathan?"

Elder Zhou's mind jolted. In the legends, the Giant Leviathan could grow to thousands of miles, it was an ancient Saint Beast of the past. If the Giant Leviathan floated to the surface, its back would be like an endless mountain range with great gales of wind. Its body was broad like an island, and in the legends, the Giant Leviathan would enter into deep hibernation for tens of thousands of years at a time. During this long period, the Giant Leviathan's back would be covered with dust and dirt, and even plants would grow there. People would think that this Giant Leviathan was a real island, and they would live upon it for generations.

This legend and all the others were really shocking.

If they could tame this Giant Leviathan, the war strength of the South Sea Demon Region would vastly increase. But, to Elder Zhou, the significance of this wasn't too great; he only cared about the Nirvana Dragon Root. 'I don't know whether or not what Xuan Wuji and Xuan Yuqie say is true, but my request isn't too high. I just need to obtain a small cut of the Nirvana Dragon Root to assist me through the third stage of Life Destruction. As for other things, I simply do not need them.'

.....

In the broken world, pieces of thick clouds were suspended in the air. Under these ink black clouds, hundreds of martial artists were cautiously walking forwards. There was a massive group of zombie guards in the front. These zombie guards were skinny and their eyes were glazed over. The held treasures in their hands, vacantly waving them around in order to detect any space cracks in the way.

If a treasure weapon was suddenly sheared off, then that would indicate that there was a space crack located there. The zombie guard's master would then command the zombie guard to leave a mark there.

However, every so often, there would be a small space crack that was as fragile as thin glass. Once it was knocked a bit by a treasure, it would cause this small space crack to collapse, twisting any zombie guard near it into bits and pieces.

There were also some times when there would be a large space crack and it would have a great pulling power. When a zombie guard approached, it would be directly sucked in, and then torn apart by the space storm.

Thus, over half the zombie guards had been ruined so far.

Xuan Chang's complexion wasn't too good. They had already touched upon space cracks several times, this meant that the collapsing world wasn't too big. If it was completely sealed up, then he would simply vomit blood.

"Mm? That is..."

Xuan Chang looked up, his eyes widening. A bit more than 10 miles away, there was a huge altar. This altar was hidden in the hazy fog, so they couldn't clearly see it.

"Brother Wild Halberd, let us go have a look." Xuan Chang said from not far behind Lin Ming. Throughout this entire way, Xuan Chang had been exceptionally polite towards Lin Ming, continually referring to Lin Ming as Brother Wild Halberd. Whenever something came up, he would politely discuss it with Lin Ming. Lin Ming simply didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. He knew the chances were that Xuan Chang knew who he was, and was a afraid of his status.

The truth was that he couldn't blame Xuan Chang for being so timid. Seeing was believing. Xuan Chang had fought Lin Ming and had even overdrawn his true essence in his attack. In addition, there was also Nightmare assisting him. Yet, he had been defeated and Nightmare was put into a miserable state. Xuan Chang naturally didn't dare to become enemies with Lin Ming anymore.

"Let's take a look!" Xuan Chang said to the South Sea Demon Region martial artists. He immediately ordered those that controlled the zombie guards to head over to the altar.

What was surprising was that as they approached the altar, there were less and less space cracks present. Obviously the space here was relatively more stable.

After they approached, the discovered the this altar was over a hundred feet high, and it was forged from gray rock. On the rock, there were many different kinds of beautiful and exquisite reliefs carved.

As they walked up the stairs, they saw that there was a vast flat space atop the altar. There were many lines traced into the ground; it was incomparably mystical and mesmerizing.

As the several hundred martial artist saw this altar and the relief images etched upon it, they were all keenly interested. But as for Lin Ming, as soon as he saw these lines, his heart stirred – he recognized these.

These lines were runes from the Realm of the Gods. Carved atop this giant altar was actually a massive array formation.

Lin Ming pondered. It seemed as if… in ancient times, the Realm of the Gods was inextricably linked to the Sky Spill Continent.

Whether it was the ancient array formation jade slip that Ancestor Chi Yan had found, or all the different kinds of arrangements within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, and now even this massive altar within the ancient battlefield, they all involved the Realm of the Gods. It was as if the Realm of the Gods had once been present here, but with the changing flow and ebb of time, all the legacies from the Realm of the Gods had been slowly lost.

‘Tens of thousands of years ago, the martial arts world of Sky Spill Continent was much more magnificent and glorious than it is now. All sorts of Emperors had emerged, such as the Southern Wilderness’ Sorcerer and the South Sea’s Demon Emperor. At that time, that was just the South Horizon Region; other areas certainly had characters as strong, if not stronger. I don’t know what happened all those years ago, but it seems as if the once great martial arts world slowly declined, and now within the entire Sky Spill Continent, Emperor level powerhouses rarely appear. There are only a dozen or so known, and with all the ones hidden, there might be around a hundred of them. Not just that, but these Emperor level powerhouses can’t hold a candle to the Sorcerer and Demon Emperor of the past!’

Lin Ming sighed, shaking his head. He no longer thought about this things. Rather, he began to observe the altar, carefully inspecting the array formation. As he glanced over the runes and general pattern, he slowly began to discover that this was an ancient array formation.

Looking at the massive scale of the transmission array as well as the complex array formation inscribed upon it, Lin Ming was unable to restrain a gasp. There were even over 100 slots for true essence stones on the edges of the array formation! ‘I wonder just how far this massive transmission array goes to. It shouldn’t be like those of the South Sea that send one tens of thousands of miles away. This one should work for hundreds of thousands, or even millions of miles!’

What sort of concept was that? Lin Ming simply couldn’t imagine it.

After Lin Ming had absorbed the memories of the Realm of the Gods array master, he had come to understand a great deal about the Realm of the Gods’ array formations. Although he couldn’t arrange his own massive array formation, understanding the principles behind it wasn’t too difficult.

After a quarter hour, Lin Ming finally understood the approximate theory and principle behind this ancient transmission array. For a single use, not only did this transmission array require 72 medium-grade true essence stones, but also 36 high-grade true essence stones! One also had to pay particular attention to placing down these true essence stones. If one didn’t understand the rules of arranging them, they would never open this transmission array.

‘Seventy-two medium-grade true essence stones as well as 36 high-grade true essence stones. A high-grade true essence stone is worth 100 medium-grade true essence stones…’

Lin Ming was secretly flabbergasted. The price to open this transmission array just once was astonishing. If he hadn’t killed so many people at the South Sea Demon Region and taken their belongings, he never would have even come close to being able to activate this. This transmission array was from so long ago, could it still start?

As Lin Ming was calmly thinking about this, he suddenly felt a wetness on his face – a drop of rain had clearly fallen on his cheek.

“Mm?” Lin Ming looked up to the skies and found that the dark clouds were becoming increasingly thick. But he remembered that when he had entered into this broken world, the sky was pitch black but it was clear; he could even see the countless bits of rock suspended in the air. But now, these dark and dense clouds had swallowed up all the suspended rocks.

“Rain? This world also has rain?”

The surviving martial artists also looked up to the skies. In the skies, the dark clouds were growing larger, and countless raindrops pattered onto the floor as they fell in a deluge. It was like they were in the middle of a monsoon.

Even if two people were just a few dozen feet away, they still couldn’t see each other because of the great curtain of rain. One could even see the water gathering on the altar at a visible speed. What sort of rain was like this? It was simply like standing in the midst of a waterfall.

Lin Ming’s mind stirred…

He stretched out his tongue, tasting the rainwater. It had a slight salty taste to it.

It was true!

This wasn’t just rain, but it was seawater that had been sucked up by the swirling gray vortex!

The seawater was shredded by the space storm until it became a fine mist that floated in the air. Eventually, it condensed into dark clouds. Once the dark clouds grew too heavy, they turned into rain that fell down.

If this was true and he wasn’t mistaken, there should be a pathway in the air!

Yes, they had searched the ground all this time, but they had forgotten to search the air.

Chapter 458 – A Storm Is Stirring

Chapter 458 – A Storm Is Stirring

…

…

…

In the great and limitless South Sea, mighty waves raged endlessly and the high sea was turbulent with chaos. In the depths of the South Sea, there were waves that frequently reached hundreds of feet into the air. These large waves would pierce towards the sky, washing even the clouds away. In such a sea, even a 1000 foot long dragon boat would be thrown around like a leaf in a storm.

The water depth there was difficult to calculate. In ancient times, there were Sacred Beasts like the Giant Leviathan with a 1000 mile body that lived in the South Sea. Thus, it could be seen just how deep the South Sea was.

Within the deep sea, there were winding mountain ranges on the seabed that were thousands of miles long. Within the canyons of these mountain ranges were glowing blue barriers of light. Within these light barriers, one could see tall and great buildings, vast swathes of underwater forests as well as broad plazas.

Within a grand temple among the buildings, there were six or seven bluish black-skinned humans sitting around a square stone table. They didn't look any different from normal people, except they were covered with dark blue scales and their nails were especially sharp and long.

They were the dominant overlords of the nearby several million miles of sea – the Black Flood Dragon Clan.

These six or seven Black Flood Dragon clansmen all had an astonishing cultivation. Besides one at the late Revolving Core realm, the rest had a cultivation at the extreme Revolving Core.

The Patriarch of the Black Flood Dragon Clan had two green scales on his forehead. He held a jade slip to his forehead, his eyes closed in meditation as he pondered the contents of it. The surrounding Black Flood Dragon clansmen were all patiently waiting.

A moment later, the Black Flood Dragon Clan Patriarch lay down the jade slip and slowly said, "So that's how it is. I wondered what those old bags of the South Sea Demon Region had been doing all these years, but it seems as if they found some way to open the South Sea's ancient battlefield..."

The South Sea Black Flood Dragon Clan had already existed for 20,000 years. The life of their clansmen was much longer than a normal human's, thus, they also had a much richer and deep understanding of the South Sea's history than humans. Just the Patriarch of the Black Flood Dragon Clan had already lived for over 3000 years; he had been living when the Netherworld Great Emperor was alive.

"It looks like what is recorded in our clan's ancient texts is true."

"Mm, according to the ancient texts, the broken world of the South Sea battlefield is where the sixth-grade sect Demon God Imperial Palace once existed. The size of it is truly terrifying. Even Silent Demon Emperor City of the past cannot dream of comparing to it!" Another Black Flood Dragon clansman slowly said.

A few of the younger clan Elders gasped as they heard the term sixth-grade sect. A top fifth-grade sect could call itself a Holy Land. As for what concept a sixth-grade sect was, they simply couldn't imagine it. In a fourth-grade sect, Revolving Core powerhouses were Elders, and in a fifth-grade sect, those extreme Revolving Core masters that had crossed the stages of Life Destruction were Elders. In a sixth-grade sect, wouldn't Emperor level powerhouses be Elders?

What kind of cultivation did the strongest powerhouse of that sect, the Demon Emperor, have?

It was just too hard to imagine. During its grand times, the Demon Emperor had taken the ruins of an independent world as his sect's Demon God Imperial Palace. The countless legacies within were unimaginable, and the treasures must be endless.

Why would such a great power fall?

"This old man has already obtained accurate information. Although this broken world has been opened, because of the terrifying space storms that cover it, those old idiots of the South Sea Demon Region cannot enter. This is the chance for our Black Flood Dragon Clan! Once we succeed, there is a chance that we will rise to become a Holy Land!"

With these words, the six or seven Elders in the temple had different expressions; some were excited and some were nervous.

Their Black Flood Dragon Clan was among the lowest of the fifth-grade clans. Their heritage was already sufficient. As long as there was an Emperor level powerhouse that was born within their clan, they would only need to add on a few more Life Destruction powerhouses and then they would become a Holy Land!

However, since ancient times, opportunities came with dangers. This was absolutely a great storm that was stirring within the South Sea. They didn't know how many powerhouses would gather to this, but disputes would be unavoidable. If they were too weak, they would be swallowed with not even bones left.

Not just that, but who knew what sorts of dangers existed in this broken world?

But the temptation of the Demon God Imperial Palace was simply too great. Not even mentioning the prospects for their Black Flood Dragon Clan, these Elders thought mostly for themselves. If they could obtain some sort of lucky chance, they could pass their first Life Destruction and extend their lifespan by hundreds of years.

Many times, the reason that extreme Revolving Core powerhouses risked their lives to try and cross Life Destruction was not for strength, but for a longer life.

An extreme Revolving Core master was what sort of awesome character? If they wanted rain they had rain, and if they wanted wind they had wind. How could such a person be willing to die? They had cultivated for their entire lives, only to turn to dirt in the end? They were unwilling!

………

Meanwhile, north of the South Horizon Region – Great Zen Region.

The Great Zen Region was larger than even the combined area of the South Horizon Region and the Five Element Region. In the Great Zen Region, Buddhist sects were the most prosperous and grand. The head of all these was the fifth-grade sect Great Zen Temple. They had united many third-grade and fourth-grade sects and created an alliance of the righteous path. In the past, the Great Zen Temple had once participated in the siege of Silent Demon Emperor City.

At this time, in a hidden pagoda at the Great Zen Temple, there was an eminent monk wearing a golden cassock. He was holding in his hands a letter that had crossed millions of miles to arrive.

This letter came from Divine Phoenix Island, and was Mu Fengxian's personally written letter.

The monk silently read the letter and then folded it and returned it to its envelope. He sat in meditation for a long time and then mumbled, "This is truly the hand of destiny. Three thousand years ago, Master Ancestor was urged by a close friend and participated in the siege of Silent Demon Emperor City. Now, 3000 years later, I also receive a letter from Divine Phoenix Island's Mu Fengxian. It looks like I will have to go to on a journey to confront and eliminate the evil remnants of that Silent Demon Emperor City. This is a lucky chance of the South Horizon Region, yet Mu Fengxian actually writes a letter to this old monk. It seems as if she has already completely lost control of the South Sea!"

The Great Zen Region and Divine Phoenix Island were simply too far away from each other. Even with such a great matter, it was difficult to immediately obtain news. It was simply impossible for the Great Zen Region's intelligence network to extend that far and in such a distant land. If it wasn't for Mu Fengxian informing him on her own initiative, the Great Zen Temple would never have known about this.

This also meant that Mu Fengxian was aware that she wasn't strong enough to win this war. She could only depend upon the righteous path alliance of the Great Zen Region to carve out the spoils of the ancient battlefield. Even if nothing was found, as long as Great Zen Temple was able to suppress the South Sea Demon Region and cause great losses to several Elders of the South Sea Demon Region, this could help ensure that Divine Phoenix Island would not be destroyed!

This was Mu Fengxian's gamble.

....

On the South Sea, vast areas of South Aurora Island had collapsed. In these areas, there were countless large and small swirling waves of water.

Strong winds rose from all directions, and the sea waves stirred. At this moment, a massive whirlpool suddenly sprayed out water, and a group of ragged martial artists flew out from the whirlpool!

The following second and third groups had less and less people. Most of the martial artists that came out were pale and wounded all over.

In around an incense stick of time, all the martial artists had rushed out, soaring into the skies above the wild sea. Many of them had overwhelming joy and gratefulness for having been able to survive such a calamity.

"I finally made it out!" It was as Lin Ming had expected, the exit was in the air.

Lin Ming glanced at the number of martial artists in the sky, there were still around a hundred martial artists missing. During the second time that the martial artists had soared out of the whirlpool, some of the peak Houtian martial artists had perished.

Lin Ming sighed. If any of these peak Houtian martial artists went to a mortal country, they could live a life of absolute glory and wealth. It was just that many of them were unwilling to resign themselves to a less than 200 year long lifespan, and wished to take that step past the peak Houtian realm to the Xiantian realm. This single step would extend their life to 400 to 500 years. Yet this was also the reason that they had died here.

Winners fly to the sky, and losers become nothing but bones…

After this successful escape from the jaws of death, both sides naturally no longer held a mindset to continue the battle. They separated in the air, and the Demon Region martial artists flew back to the South Sea Demon Region headquarters. As for the Wartime Alliance martial artists, they were a bit at a loss as for what to do. Their headquarters were destroyed, yet many of them had military exploit points they couldn't trade in. The reason that they had come to fight at the South Sea was for these military exploit points. They wanted to accumulate enough in order to trade them for a Heaven Opening Pill, but now that the Wartime Alliance headquarters were destroyed, where could they go to trade them? It probably wasn't even recorded…

As the martial artists thought of this, they were dazed. The joy of surviving this calamity was watered down a great deal.

Even the Fire Ax Squad members didn't seem happy.

As Lin Ming saw this, he sighed. This was the difficulty of a small sect martial artist's path. They were better off than a common martial artist, but they still had to rely on their own abilities.

Lin Ming took out a handful of spatial rings. He held them in his hand and said, “Captain Fire Ax…”

“Brother Wild Halberd.” Fire Ax turned to look at Lin Ming, “What is Brother Wild Halberd planning to do after this?”

“I will wander the world and temper my martial arts.”

“Wander the world? Does Brother Wild Halberd plan on leaving?”

Fire Ax didn’t know what Lin Ming’s true identity was, only that he was the Blood Demon. The bearded big fellow, Violet Rain, and Enchanting Shadow all looked at Lin Ming, their expressions complicated, sad, and a tad morose. The truth was that they knew the situation well enough. For someone like Lin Ming, it was impossible that he would remain with them.

“Mm. The reason I came to the South Sea battlefield was to adventure and gain experience. But now something seems to have happened and I don’t know what changes will come from it. I will have to rest for a period of time and wait to see what happens. These are some things… these are the spoils of war that I have collected these past months. I have no use for them, so I give them to you.” As Lin Ming spoke, he extended his hand. In his palm were over 20 spatial rings.

“This…” The Fire Ax Squad members were stunned for a moment. All of these spatial rings were at the high-grade human-step rank or above. Not to mention what was in them, but just these spatial rings in themselves could sell for a great number of true essence stones.

From the looks of it, Lin Ming had mostly thrown away the medium-grade spatial rings and only kept the high-grade treasures.

“This is too valuable, I cannot take it.”

Lin Ming said, “I have left the true essences stones here too, and taken what I’ve needed. Inside these are mostly common treasures, pills, and other such things. To be honest, I cannot sell them unless I set up a stall and sell them one at a time. I don’t have the time to do this. But for you, these resources are much more meaningful and will be put to better use.”

Although Lin Ming hadn’t been with the Fire Ax Squad for a long time, Lin Ming was still touched by the squad members’ affection and support towards him. With this warmth etched in his heart, if Lin Ming had the chance to help them then he naturally would. Much less, he didn’t have any use for these things.

Chapter 459 – Gathering of Lords

Chapter 459 – Gathering of Lords

…

…

…

Fire Ax stared at Lin Ming for a long while, and then finally received the gifts. These things were truly practical for him. As for someone like Lin Ming, they were just too basic and low-level. Not to mention that purple and red spear he had used, but even that blood halberd was far beyond what his total net worth was.

“Everyone, this is where we part. Take care.”

As Lin Ming bid goodbye to each member of the Fire Ax Squad that remained, he turned around and flew into the skies like a shimmering rainbow, flying off to distant lands…

………….

The sea was choppy and whirlpools were everywhere. The deep color of the sea gave of an extremely suppressive pressure.

Lin Ming quickly skimmed over the sea, the strong winds that passed him leaving a trail on the surface.

Lin Ming had chosen to walk the path of martial artists. Most of the time he would have to be alone. When he had decided to tread on the road of becoming a master, he had been destined to a lifetime filled with loneliness. However, that didn’t mean that he didn’t long for friendship.

As he flew for around an hour, Lin Ming heard a sound transmitting talisman flicker in front of him, and then Mu Qianyu's voice passed into his ears. "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, are you alright? I am at Small Wave Island. If you receive this message, quickly return at once."

As he heard the short message that was filled with concern, Lin Ming felt a warmth in his heart. He realized that Mu Qianyu must have noticed the sudden change within the South Sea and had quickly gone over to Small Wave Island, periodically sending a sound transmitting talisman.

Otherwise, there was no way he would have received this sound transmitting talisman after escaping from the broken world.

Knowing that someone cared for him like this naturally felt good. Lin Ming took out a sound transmitting talisman and then simply said, "I'm fine. After two days I'll come over to Small Wave Island."

Hu –

The sound transmitting talisman burnt off in a pile of flames.

Lin Ming didn't immediately go to Small Wave Island, instead, he found a deserted island and set up a simple dwelling there. He had some business to do first. His appearance had been seen by Xuan Chang. Naturally, he couldn't use it again.

As he looked in the direction of Blood Demon Island, he saw six thin pillars of light directly piercing through the sky. In the sky, dark clouds raged, and thunder faintly sparkled in the dim gloom.

Lin Ming didn't know just what had happened, but he had a faint premonition that a great storm was coming to the South Sea.

…………

As the days passed, the chaos of the South Sea battlefield was being sorted out. Groups of surviving martial artists that had fallen into the broken world were coming out, and these survivors gathered onto isolated islands, dazedly waiting.

As for Lin Ming, he arrived at Small Wave Island. There were already many South Sea Demon Region Revolving Core Elders that had gathered there.

“Lin Ming!” After Mu Qianyu saw Lin Ming, she let out a long breath of relief. Although Lin Ming had changed his appearance, Mu Qianyu was still able to recognize him at first glance.

For her safety and in a hurry, Mu Qianyu had left Qin Xingxuan back behind the lines where it was safe. When she had heard that most of the South Sea Demon Region martial artists had been sucked and twisted to bits by the space vortex, she had become anxious. She came to Small Wave Island and had used several dozens of Sound Transmitting Talismans, but still didn’t receive any reply. If she had known which broken world Lin Ming had been sucked into, she would have personally gone to find him.

Finally, after dozens of hours had passed, she had received Lin Ming’s message. Otherwise, Mu Qianyu thought she was about to die from a heart attack.

After Lin Ming met Mu Qianyu, he began to learn what had happened at the South Sea.

“The ancient battlefield opened?” Lin Ming asked, his eyebrows arcing up.

“I’m not too sure.” Mu Qianyu shook her head. “Divine Phoenix Island’s history only goes back 3000 years. The ancient texts of the sect are very vague about the South Sea’s history. As for this ancient battlefield, it might have a history that goes back tens of thousands of years.

Compared to the legacies of those long and glorious sects, Divine Phoenix Island was simply too young; the sect wasn’t even as old as the Black Flood Dragon Clan’s Patriarch.

“Now there is already a massive number of Revolving Core martial artists that have gathered at the South Sea battlefield. There are even many extreme Revolving Core masters. And then these strange old masters began to gather together, trying to connect to the ancient battlefield’s entrance.” Mu Qianyu said.

“Connect to the ancient battlefield’s entrance?”

“Mm. It is reported that the space storms that cover the entrance to the world are simply terrifying, no one can enter. They have to connect through a smaller broken world into the main world. Now, there are over 30 late and above Revolving Core masters that are negotiating. Master and Master Ancestor are both inside.”

“Over 30!” Lin Ming’s heart jumped. Late Revolving Core powerhouses or even higher, and there were actually more than 30! To his knowledge, Divine Phoenix Island only had a handful of Revolving Core masters that were at the late period or above.

As for the Five Element Region, it was already good if every sect had one or two of them. Just how could there be so many here?

Mu Qianyu understood what Lin Ming was thinking and said, “Master Ancestor has contacted those from a righteous path alliance. There are over 10 that have come from the righteous alliance and nine of them are at the Life Destruction boundary. Also, the South Sea Demon Region has sent eight people, six of which are at the Life Destruction boundary. The Five Element Region also has eight masters, but they are all at the late Revolving Core realm. And there are also some free martial artists that have come to take a share of the treasures.”

“Free martial artists?”

“Mm. There are some senior Supreme Elders that have already long since left their sects and live in seclusion, trying to make breakthroughs. Some of these seniors are exceptionally strong.

Lin Ming nodded. This opening of the ancient battlefield seemed like it would be a gathering of champions and heroes.

"With so many powerhouses arriving, it looks like this ancient battlefield won't have anything to do with the likes of us." Lin Ming was confident in himself, but he wasn't stupid enough to think that he could steal treasures from a group of Life Destruction masters. Any one of these characters could kill him with just a single breath.

Let alone him, but even Mu Fengxian couldn't do anything to this group of characters. The reason that Mu Fengxian had invited those from the righteous alliance to come was so that they could muddy the waters and cause chaos. Otherwise, she simply wouldn't have the qualifications to contend with the South Sea Demon Region.

Mu Qianyu smiled and said, "We can also enter the ancient battlefield. Life Destruction powerhouses have all come here in order to enter the Imperial Palace and look for some rare treasures that can increase their chances of crossing the stages of Life Destruction. If there is a treasure like this, it will be in the Imperial Palace. But there are also some smaller palaces around the edges. If we have good luck we'll also have a decent harvest, and this could be considered an adventure to gain experience and temper ourselves." Mu Qianyu said with ease. The extreme Revolving Core realm was simply too far from her right now. With her current strength, there was no way she could obtain anything that could enhance her chances of crossing through Life Destruction.

A heavenly material that could increase one's chances of crossing Life Destruction?

Lin Ming wasn't interested in something like this. As he was now, he simply couldn't make use of it.

"That's good. At that time, I'll also take this as an adventure."

………………

Five days later, South Sea's South Aurora Island.

After the space vortex had devastated the entire island, over half of South Aurora Island had collapsed in destruction and large tracts of land were submerged into the sea. When Lin Ming had learned that the Life Destruction powerhouses would gather at South Aurora

Island, he didn't know whether to laugh or cry. He didn't think that these old fellows would finally choose to go to South Aurora Island. It seemed as if the broken world here was relatively stable, and they could cut a space channel and directly access the main world.

This was simply a crazy idea. And only with dozens of Life Destruction powerhouses gathering together would they be able to display the great supernatural power required to make a connection between two different dimensions of space.

"If I knew this earlier then I would have just waited in the broken world." Lin Ming joked. He had learned from Mu Qianyu that there were also some small lucky chances that could be found in these broken worlds, but he hadn't been able to find anything when his group was searching.

With 20 to 30 Revolving Core masters at the late period or above floating in the air, it gave off an extremely horrifying oppressive feeling. The wind in the air seemed to have been intentionally or unintentionally changed by their auras.

Lin Ming stood in a corner, secretly watching these floating top masters.

In this group of 20 to 30 people, there were only three from Divine Phoenix Island. Mu Yuhuang, Mu Fengxian, and also a blue-clothed old woman. Lin Ming didn't know exactly who this was, but he expected that she was someone from the Blue Luan Faction.

Nearby the three from Divine Phoenix Island there were also 10 monks wearing cassocks. They were those that had come from the Great Zen Region's righteous alliance. These monks had ring scars on their bald heads, and appeared serene.

Across from these monks were the Elders of the South Sea Demon Region. They wore long black robes and their expressions were chilling as they glared at these uninvited guests. At their side, there were also four or five Black Flood Dragon clansmen, their bodies covered in dark blue scales.

As Lin Ming looked at these people, he couldn't help but be flabbergasted. Although he had heard that the Sky Spill Continent was extremely vast and broad, and that there were countless masters everywhere, he had only heard of them, but had never seen them with his own eyes. Now, he saw such a big group of these old Life Destruction fellows. And it seemed as if most of these people came from fifth-grade sects; most of them were stronger than Mu Fengxian.

At this moment, waves of melodious tunes and drumbeats came from the sky. Lin Ming looked up with surprise and was shocked to see that not too far away there was a golden flash in the sky. A luxurious and somewhat overly fancy spirit boat was slowly headed their way, being pulled by nine Winged Flood Dragons. Around the golden spirit boat, there were also over a dozen Xiantian warriors in shining golden armor and a group of musicians playing different instruments. Behind them were beautiful maids that were also at the Xiantian realm.

This way of travelling left Lin Ming stunned. It was simply like how the heavenly gods in the stories he had read as a child travelled.

“Humph, that old man really has no shame, he comes at such a late time!”

At the South Sea Demon Region’s side, Xuan Wuji coldly glared this opulent gold spirit boat, his eyes filled with loathing and disgust.

“Don’t try to mess with him. If he is angered then it will be extremely troublesome.” Xuan Yuqie said. Although she was also disgusted in her heart, she always had a cheerful smile on her face.

As the golden spirit boat came down, Lin Ming discovered that these nine Winged Flood Dragons had feathers as long as swords, and also looked like Hornless Dragons. Obviously, they had a very rich Flood Dragon bloodline, and they were all equal to extreme Xiantian masters.

This caused Lin Ming to be speechless. Raising nine Winged Flood Dragons required no small price, but whoever this fellow was had only used them to pull his cart.

“Haha, this old man was late just a bit, I hope that all the fellow martial artists here do not mind!” Along with a loud and hearty voice, a middle-aged man stepped out of the spirit boat. He wore a nine-claw imperial robe and a golden purple jade belt at his waist. As he stepped down from the spirit boat, he was holding a white-dressed fairy-like beauty in each arm. Although he had said words of apology, this old fellow’s bright red face obviously didn’t hold a single bit of apology.

Not just that, but the two beauties had faces like peach blossoms. Their faces were flushed red with blood as if they were shy about being in the open. Their skimpy clothes even had sections that were exposed; it wasn’t hard to imagine just what this old man was doing to them with his hands.

Seeing this, the Life Destruction powerhouses present all had ugly complexions.

Chapter 460 – Breaking through the Void

Chapter 460 – Breaking through the Void

…

…

…

"Nanyun Wang seems to be very interested; it looks like he has much more confidence than during his last jaunt through the ancient battlefield!" Xuan Wuji said, his smile not reaching his eyes. They were both third stage Life Destruction masters. Although he feared Nanyun Wang a bit, it wasn't excessively so.

It was said Nanyun Wang was originally a martial artist from the common mortal world and lived a bleak and desolate life. However, he seemed to have encountered some sort of heaven defying chance, and experienced a meteoric rise to glory. Afterwards, he joined a third-grade sect within the South Sea.

Because of Nanyun Wang's overwhelming talent, that third-grade sect had placed the utmost importance on him, not sparing any resources in raising him. They hoped that one day in the future, Nanyun Wang would soar into the heavens and lead their sect to becoming a fourth-grade sect.

However… every so often, a sect's destiny simply wasn't equal to the destiny of its geniuses.

Nanyun Wang had amazing talent. However, as a result of his talent being too high, when Nanyun Wang was at the Xiantian realm, he had provoked a great number of Revolving Core masters, finally bringing a calamity onto his sect. That third-grade sect was completely obliterated, and as for Nanyun Wang, he managed to escape, growing until he became a third stage Life Destruction powerhouse.

This Nanyun Wang seemed to incomparably long for an emperor's life. He build a palace and filled it with a harem of 3000 beautiful concubines. On the body of each of these women, he had placed a restricting spell. Every day, Nanyun Wang would summoned four or five concubines into his palace to serve him. When he travelled, he would have golden guards clearing his way and a bevy of beautiful maids attending to his every need.

However, this Nanyun Wang had always been a martial artist of the demonic path who followed his heart. Thus, all of this reckless behavior didn't affect his heart of martial arts.

"Since everyone has arrived, let's open the space channel." The one speaking was the abbot of the Great Zen Temple. This elderly monk wore a golden-threaded cassock and held a staff in his hands. His two large ears drooped like two big jugs and his white brows hung down to his shoulders. Whether it was waiting or the arrival of Nanyun Wang, this white-browed monk didn't have any change in expression. He was in meditation with his eyes closed.

"Let us do as master says. For now let us join our strength and open up the space channel. If we delay any further, there might be more troubles that occur." Xuan Yuqie tenderly smiled. Although she hated these fellows that came to steal all her goods, she didn't have any good reason to reject them. With just their South Sea Demon Region's people, it was simply impossible for them to open up the Demon God Imperial Palace.

More than 30 Revolving Core and Life Destruction Supreme Elders floated down, falling into the central space vortex of South Aurora Island.

The swirling space vortex that was able to instantly rip apart a peak Houtian master was just like a gust of wind against these Revolving Core and Life Destruction masters; it only gently lifted their clothes.

After these masters went down, the Five Element Region's seven sects, Divine Phoenix Island, and the South Sea Demon Region disciples quickly entered into the swirling space vortex. These disciples were the younger heroic elites that had been chosen to come.

This broken world was the ruins of a sixth-grade sect. Naturally, there would be many treasures that were left behind. These things were scattered through the broken world. Thus, the various factions had all reached a tacit understanding that the juniors of these factions would be able to enter to adventure and experience.

Every sect had a quota of disciples they could bring based on their power; they could only bring a few, not too many. Divine Phoenix Island had brought around 30 people. Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu were among them.

"Lin Ming, Yu'er, you two be careful. Don't separate and remember to take care of each other. In this foray into the ancient battlefield, there will inevitably be life or death battles!" Mu Yuhuang said to them with a true essence sound transmission as she entered into the swirling vortex. She had already said these words to them countless times before, urging them to be safe.

"Understood, Master." The one who replied to Mu Yuhuang was a blue-clothed girl with delicate looks that weren't too spectacular. This was Mu Qianyu.

This was an appearance changing technique that Lin Ming had passed on to her. These past five days, Lin Ming hadn't done anything else besides assiduously teaching Mu Qianyu this technique.

Bi Luo's appearance changing technique had been found within some ancient ruins. Although it was strange, it wasn't too difficult to learn, much less with Mu Qianyu's natural talent and astonishing perception. In this few days she had been able to grasp its general concepts.

Mu Qianyu had a very sensitive status. There were many people from the South Sea Demon region that had her on their mind, wanting to obtain her. It would be easy for her to become a target. After changing her appearance, it would save everyone a great deal of trouble.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, let's go."

"Mm!"

All of these young heroic elites of the major sects were like big fish as they dove into the swirling vortex of space. Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu appeared unremarkable among them.

Hua la la –

As Lin Ming reentered the world shard of South Aurora Island, the first sound that he heard was torrential rainfall. It was like a vast waterfall pouring down.

The air was filled with thick mist that had a slightly salty and bitter flavor. The vast amount of seawater that the space vortex had sucked up was already dozens of feet high. Between the heavens and earth, this misty world gave an extremely suppressive feeling.

"This is..." As Mu Qianyu saw this scene she was startled.

"This is the seawater that was sucked in by the space vortex." Lin Ming had already expected this. Looking ahead, he could see many small and large whirlpools in the water, they were like the greedy maws of deadly vicious beasts. Lin Ming knew that under these whirlpools, there were the hidden deathtraps known as space cracks.

This small and scattered world was filled with countless space cracks. Some of them had already collapsed onto themselves, sucking in the seawater and forming whirlpools.

There was a massive amount of seawater that came in from the main space vortex, which was balanced out by the seawater that left from the space cracks. Otherwise, in these past five or six days, this broken little world would have already long been filled with seawater.

In this heavy rain, visibility was very low. But all of the martial artists that came in were geniuses and masters. Their radiating sense of perception was not affected at all.

Among the curtains of rain, a dim halo glowed, just like a lamp in a rainy night. Lin Ming placed a symbol paper on himself, and then a golden light completely surrounded him, reaching 50 feet around.

This was a symbol paper that wasn't too special or complicated to make. But in this broken world, it was a life-saving treasure. As long as one approached a space crack, the countless glowing lights would be stirred by it, and the user would immediately be able to see the disturbance.

After using this symbol paper, as long as they were slow and steady in their movements, they wouldn't have any accidents.

In front of this crowd of people, the 30 plus top powerhouses led the way. To them, these space cracks weren't much. As long as these old fellows joined forces, they could even open up channels in space. These trivial space cracks weren't worth mentioning to them.

However, since they had to look after the juniors behind them, they couldn't fly too quickly.

The small broken world carved out from the main one wasn't too large. Even though they were flying very slowly, they managed to reach the edge of the zone in about an hour.

Here, one could see that the vast amount of seawater suddenly vanished, as if it had been cut apart by an immeasurably sharp saber.

"It's here!" Nanyun Wang lazily said. He was lying atop a flying carpet, his arms still grasping onto the bosom of a beautiful woman.

"According to our position, this shouldn't be wrong." Xuan Wuji said. After these old fellows had discussed for the past several days, they had designated this area and route as the best entrance. If they made a space channel here, they would be able to save a great deal of strength.

The Black Flood Dragon Clan Patriarch that had been flying a bit further back suddenly waved his hand. A massive column of water shot into the air, turning into a water-shaped flood dragon that roared and then shot forwards.

With a banging sound, the water dragon smashed into an invisible wall and then immediately collapsed.

“Everyone, begin! Third stage Life Destruction in the front!” From the group, Xuan Wuji stepped forwards, his expression blank.

Following him, the white-browed monk also stepped forwards, floating in the air.

“Hey,” Nanyun Wang laughed and slapped the butt of the woman hugging his chest, “Baby girl, you wait for me outside.”

Nanyun Wang lazily turned his flying carpet and slowly flew beside Xuan Wuji.

Great Zen Temple’s white-browed monk, South Sea Demon Region’s Xuan Wuji, and well as loner Nanyun Wang.

Of the over 30 top masters that had gathered here, only these three were at the third stage of Life Destruction.

As for Xuan Yuqie and the Black Flood Dragon Clan Patriarch, they were at the second stage of Life Destruction.

Of these 30 some people, there weren’t many at the second stage of Life Destruction – there were only a mere seven. The others were stranded at the first stage of Life Destruction or below; Mu Fengxian was one of them.

It had to be known that those present were from three great fifth-grade powers, eight fourth-grade powers, and also many free martial artists from all around. Yet, they only had this many second stage Life Destruction masters. From this, it could be seen just how difficult and treacherous the gate of death was that lay between the extreme Revolving Core realm and the Divine Sea realm. Every extreme Revolving Core master that came to this path had to be exceptionally cautious in traversing it.

The white-browed monk flipped his hands and his monk staff flew out. Xuan Wuji took out a jet-black treasure sword. As for Nanyun Wang, he took out a thick black ruler from his spatial ring.

Nanyun Wang looked at Xuan Wuji's treasure sword and chuckled, “Brother Wuji, I heard from somewhere that some years ago you managed to obtain a heaven-step treasure. How about you take it out today and let my sectless country hick self take a good look at just how grand it is?”

Xuan Wuji looked at Nanyun Wang and calmly said, “Since ancient times, heaven-step treasures have nearly always belonged to Emperor level powerhouses. I haven't yet been able to experience such a lucky chance!”

“Haha, is that right?” Nanyun Wang laughed, a bit of disbelief in his voice.

Behind these three great masters, the various sect Elders and powerhouses also took out their treasures. These various treasure shined and bloomed along each other, mutually enhancing their beauty.

“Go!”

With a shout from the white-browed monk, the over 30 top masters all simultaneously attacked the space boundary!

This range of magnificent martial skills, power of the elements, storm and thunder, could be called earthshaking!

The young heroic elites of the great sects had retreated several thousand feet back. But even so, they felt as if they would be blown away by this violent and crazy true essence storm.

Monstrous waves were stirred up in the seawater. The space boundary fiercely trembled and a multitude of lights splashed out. The loud noises were like billowing thunderclaps.

The power of these 30-some top masters combining their attacks together was evident. But to smash apart this space boundary was extremely difficult. With every step they advanced forwards, they had to consume a great deal of energy, and many Elders were already dripping with sweat.

Chapter 461 – Main World

Chapter 461 – Main World

…

…

…

This barrage of attacks continued for half an incense stick of time. Finally, just as many Elders were at the edge of their stamina, a tiny crack appeared on the surface of the space boundary.

After this tiny crack was produced, it began to continually expand. As it it approached the level of the seawater, a massive whirlpool appeared. A large amount of seawater was sucked in, vanishing into nothing.

After several breaths of time, there was an explosive sound as if the world itself was cracking apart. The wall of space finally completely broke apart, and a giant vortex appeared out of thin air. It was like a grey spiral over ten feet wide, leading into the endless abyss.

“Hehe, we’ve finally made a connection through the space wall! This old man has lived for a thousand years yet has never experienced something like this before.”

“A space wall is incomparably firm and sturdy. Once it is broken it will be permanently broken. Repairing it is far more difficult than creating it; it should be considered fairly stable!” As Xuan Wuji spoke, he took out a zombie guard puppet from his spatial ring, saying, “Go!”

The zombie guard fearlessly flew into that pitch-black channel. After half an incense stick of time, it returned unharmed.

"There aren't any problems with this channel. Those above the Xiantian realm will have the ability to enter. We have spent a great deal of true essence. First we'll rest for two hours here, and then after that we will all enter together. As for those things such as treasures, it will all depend on your own ability and luck."

No one objected to Xuan Wuji's proposal. After everyone was returned to full strength, relying on their own ability to compete would be the most fair.

The various heroic elites of the sects naturally waited together. Their cultivations were mostly at the Xiantian realm, but there were also some Revolving Core Elders mixed in among them. Within the ancient battlefield, the greatest lucky chances would all be concentrated within the Demon God Imperial Palace. However, the Demon God Imperial Palace already had over 30 top masters entering it, they simply didn't wish to compete with them.

Thus, these Revolving Core Elders that were a bit weaker could only go to the ancient battlefield with the juniors in order to test their luck.

After all, these were still the ruins of a sixth-grade sect. Not just that, but this independent world had different and strange rules that governed it. After all these tens of thousands of years, it was possible that all sorts of heavenly materials were born.

……………

Two hours quickly passed.

The extreme Revolving Core masters were all restored to their top form. Xuan Wuji calmly stood up and said, "Let's go!"

As he spoke, he was the first one to step into the space channel. Facing the enormous attractive force of the vortex, Xuan Wuji lightly stepped through, no different than passing through a door.

Nanyun Wang followed after, along with the Great Zen Temple's white-browed monk.

The strong powerhouses who had been blessed with a great deal of destiny stepped in. After them were the late Revolving Core masters. Although they had the qualifications to enter into the Demon God Imperial Palace, the chances of them obtaining any top treasures would be slim. However, if their luck was good, it was extremely likely they would still be able to obtain a small lucky chance somewhere.

After the 30-some top powerhouses entered, the weaker Revolving Core Elders among the juniors entered.

“It’s our turn.” Mu Qianyu said. She had been waiting with Lin Ming around five or six miles away from the vortex. In such a far position it was easy to not attract attention to themselves.

“Mm.” Lin Ming nodded. There weren’t many martial artists remaining outside.

As the two of them flew forwards, Lin Ming caught a glimpse of a blue-clothed woman not too far away. She was tall with a veil covering her face. From her head to her toes, she naturally exuded an icy temperament as if she were a blossoming snow lotus.

This woman was Mu Bingyun. Even though Lin Ming had been at Divine Phoenix Island for such a long time, he had only seen her a few times.

Although Mu Bingyun and Mu Qianyu were twin sisters, the two of them didn’t have the usually harmonious and close relationship that siblings usually had. It was just the opposite. They rarely spoke to each other, and had only met several times.

Mu Bingyun also saw Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu. She turned to glance at them and nodded. Although Mu Qianyu had changed her appearance, Mu Bingyun still recognized her big sister.

Beside Mu Bingyun there was also a middle-aged woman in blue. Her cultivation was at the peak of the early Revolving Core realm. Since she was with Mu Bingyun, she was most likely a protector that the Blue Luan Faction had sent to guard Mu Bingyun. Mu Bingyun already had the strength to fight a Revolving Core master. If the two of them were together, there likely wouldn't be any accidents on the ancient battlefield.

Mu Bingyun and the blue-clothed middle-aged woman quickly vanished into the swirling space vortex.

Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu followed.

As they entered the space channel, Lin Ming immediately felt a great tearing force acting upon him. He floated around with a confused feeling, but the channel wasn't too long. After several breaths of time, Lin Ming blinked his eyes, dizzy, and suddenly he had arrived into a bright and shining world.

This world was the ancient battlefield and also where the Demon God Imperial Palace was located.

The opening of the space channel was high in the sky. Lin Ming floated in the air, looking down at the ground beneath him. Below, a vast and endless forest extended to the horizon. The world was dotted with lakes and rivers, and the plants seemed primate and wild. It gave off a very ecological sense of beauty.

"Forest?"

Lin Ming was stunned. Several days ago when Lin Ming had first entered into the broken world, he hadn't seen anything living at all, much less this massive expanse of forest.

This meant that this broken world was much more stable than the shard world he had been in before. At least, it didn't have space cracks everywhere. Otherwise, under the chaos of so many space storms, it would be difficult for either animals or plants to survive and multiply.

Li Ming was part of the last batch of martial artists to enter. As he looked all around him, the martial artists from before had already flown a great distance away. Some went alone, some went in groups of two or three, and some went with more. The advantage of being alone was that any lucky chance they found would belong only to them. If they went in a group, they would have to split what they found, though it would be a bit safer.

“Lin Ming, I guess that you want to go alone, but… hehe, Master has specifically asked me to go together with you.” Behind Lin Ming, Mu Qianyu naughtily winked. Lin Ming’s strength was still far from being able to match someone at the Revolving Core realm. If he went alone, this world might be too dangerous for him.

“Going with Senior-apprentice Sister Mu is also good.” Lin Ming smiled. Even if he gave all the lucky chances he found to Mu Qianyu, he wouldn’t care at all.

“Mm, let’s go. I don’t know where the Demon God Imperial Palace is, so let’s head towards the center of this world first.”

“Okay.”

The two of them flew forwards. But after a bit of time, Lin Ming felt that something was wrong. He turned his head and saw that Mu Qianyu also had a doubtful expression.

“Something’s wrong. My inner true essence has been suppressed by a great deal.” Mu Qianyu said, frowning.

“The surrounding heaven and earth origin energy is very rich here, but… it seems like my body’s true essence is being forcefully suppressed by some sort of invisible strength. It seems to be weakened by around 40%…” Lin Ming said after he carefully checked himself.

“I’m also about 40% weaker… doesn’t this mean that I’m only 60% as strong as I usually am?”

“If everybody is suppressed to 60% of their full strength then it would be fair. But somehow I feel… I feel like… my perception is also being suppressed.” Lin Ming released his perception all around him, and was shocked to discover that he could only sense around 200 to 300 feet away. Such a short distance meant that his perception was basically useless!

His perception had already been greatly increased by the Samsara martial intent as well as the ‘Overbearing Soul Tactic’, and his sense was much greater than that of martial artists at his level. If his perception only went out this far, other martial artists would be in even worse shape.

“Same with me…” Mu Qianyu found this difficult to adjust to. A martial artist was used to using their perception to sense their surroundings. If they lost their perception, it was just like a common mortal losing their eyesight.

The two of them carefully advanced forwards. However, soon enough, they felt something strange happen. They began to fly lower and lower, and once they came down, they couldn’t go back up.

“We can’t fly anymore!”

Lin Ming had been relying on the Concept of Wind to fly, but now he felt that no matter how hard tried to control the wind, he still constantly fell.

Not just that, but the more they dropped, the less they were able to fly. Finally, Lin Ming completely lost the ability to fly and he began to fall faster and faster. Mu Qianyu was in a worse situation. Although she was stronger than Lin Ming, she had been depending on her true essence to fly, not the Concept of Wind. Because of this difference, it seemed she had lost the ability to fly even faster!

They were still 10 to 20 thousand feet in the air. If they crashed into the ground from this height, they wouldn’t die but they would definitely suffer.

“Give me your hand!”

Lin Ming grabbed onto Mu Qianyu’s hand, relying on the Concept of Wind to just barely decelerate.

Once they reached a four to five thousand foot altitude, Lin Ming's Concept of Wind completely lost any and all function. The two of them could only glance at each other and ruefully smile.

They could only galvanize the protective true essence in their bodies to the max and fall like this.

'Luckily this space is much more stable and doesn't have space cracks. If we fell onto a space crack, that would really be an unjust way to die.' Lin Ming thought. He could hear the whirring sound of air passing by as he approached the forest beneath him at breakneck speed.

Lin Ming aimed at a thick tree branch and grabbed at it.

Ka ka ka!

After Lin Ming grabbed onto the thick tree branch, it bent like a drawn bow underneath the formidable impact. The great recoil force caused Lin Ming's speed to slow by a great deal.

'Mm? It didn't break!?'

This thought had just popped into Lin Ming's mind when he heard a snapping sound and the tree branch broke in half. Although it had broken, Lin Ming's falling speed had already dropped by over half. As he plummeted to the ground, there was a muffled crash. Lin Ming's legs were half submerged into the dirt. With the protection of his true essence, he only felt a slight numbing tingle in his legs.

Mu Qianyu's skill at land wasn't any worse than Lin Ming's. However, the only problem was that she had been wearing a long skirt. As she rapidly fell through the dense forest, there was a ripping sound as a great section of her skirt was torn away, exposing a length of smooth jade-like calf.

'The trees are tough beyond my imagination.'

A normal tree wouldn’t be able to withstand such a force falling at such a high speed; even an iron bar would have been bent in half.

“The trees here are completely different from those in the outside world. I’ve never seen any of these before. It’s as if these species of trees are all from the ancient times…” As Lin Ming spoke, he turned, looking all around him. His heart suddenly stirred. Wasn’t this species an iron ridge tree that existed in the Realm of the Gods?

Chapter 462 – Different Laws

Chapter 462 – Different Laws

…

…

…

The iron ridge tree had bark that was as hard as metal. Its juices were materials that were used to produce inscription symbols. Lin Ming had once specifically checked for it, and he didn't find this sort of tree recorded in the records of Sky Spill Continent. He never expected to see them in this broken world.

"Mm? What's wrong?" Mu Qianyu asked.

"Nothing. I just remembered that this tree is recorded in some ancient texts I once read." Lin Ming casually found an excuse to dodge the question. He didn't want to mention the Realm the Gods to Mu Qianyu.

Mu Qianyu nodded, not asking any further.

This stretch of virgin forest was very hot, and the air was thickly humid with water. The leaves on the trees and shrubs stretched out like giant fans, and the green grass was high and thick. There were chunky vines that twined around everyone like a slithering mass of pythons. The large trees pierced straight through the skies.

The air was filled with a slight rotten woody flavor of branches and leaves. Because of the shade from the trees, visibility was very low, and no matter how great one's perception was, it couldn't be used, neither could one fly. It was impossible to clearly see any road in front nor to distinguish direction. In this virgin forest, it wasn't any different from being blind.

"The true essence suppression on the ground is much stronger than in the air. 70% of my true essence is being suppressed."

When they were high in the sky, their true essence had only been suppressed by 40%. But now that they were on the ground, their true essence was being suppressed by 70%. They had already lost most of their strength.

Lin Ming silently revolved the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. Without any surprise, he found that his true essence was compressed by 70%.

As he switched to revolving the 'True Primal Chaos Formula', he held out on some hope that a miracle could occur. However, even this cultivation method that came from the Realm of the Gods was unable to release him from the binding chains of this world's strange rules. His true essence was still suppressed by around 70%.

However, the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' was a cultivation method that refined one's body – true essence was only part of the combat efficiency. Lin Ming's formidable strength also lay in his great physical strength and his flesh and blood body that was as durable as a treasure.

Lin Ming subconsciously clenched his fists, his knuckles cracking. 'The laws of this world are able to suppress true essence, but these tyrannical laws cannot suppress the strength of the body. I have some advantages, but compared to a late Revolving Core powerhouse, it's nothing worth mentioning. As for Life Destruction masters, there isn't even a point of thinking about it.'

The gap in strength between the Xiantian and Revolving Core realm was massive. Even a Saint level talent like Mu Qianyu with her extreme Xiantian cultivation was just able to compare to an early Revolving Core powerhouse. As for Lin Ming, his cultivation boundary was just too far away.

A late Revolving Core master, even if his strength was suppressed to 30% of what it usually was, could still instantly kill him.

Couldn’t fly, couldn’t see the path clearly, perception was limited and dulled. In this forest, a martial artist was somewhat similar to a mortal; it was impossible to find out where to go.

Mu Qianyu realized that she had once felt this helpless feeling a long time ago. In a trance, she thought back to when she was at the base of Thundercrash Mountain. That night, she and Lin Ming were together. She had lost the ability to fly and she was also seriously wounded.

They were supposed to walk towards the center of this broken world, but as time passed, they had both become a bit disoriented.

Mu Qianyu subconsciously looked at Lin Ming. Lin Ming hesitated for a moment and then said, “Wait for me here.”

As he spoke, he jumped up, straight onto a big tree. Borrowing leverage on the trunk and branches, Lin Ming jumped again. After he jumped a few times, his figure disappeared into the dense canopy.

It was true that he couldn’t fly in this world. However, to Lin Ming, crawling up trees was as simple as breathing.

As he stood at the crown of the tree, his line of sight was no longer blocked. Lin Ming quickly found that space wall behind him, and was able to discern the approximate direction of the center off this world.

However, this was only a temporary measure. As they went deeper, he wouldn’t be able to see the space wall anymore, and they would become lost again.

Lin Ming looked up to the skies. This world had no sun, yet there was still sunlight. He didn’t know where it came from, only that the sky was the same as the small broken world he had been in before. There were gray rocks that floated in the air, and all sorts of large and small rocks were suspended in longs chains that surrounding the land.

Lin Ming remembered this extremely unique shape of rocks, and quietly waited there. An hour slowly passed. Lin Ming had a great deal of patience. During this hour, the position of these rocks hadn't changed at all. Lin Ming silently recorded down the position of the rocks in his mind, and then jumped down from the treetop.

"I recognized a figure of rocks in the sky. We can walk in this direction and after every few miles I can jump back up to compare. Although it isn't too accurate, it's much better than us wandering aimlessly around."

Mu Qianyu looked at Lin Ming with surprise and then silently nodded in agreement. Although Mu Qianyu was astoundingly strong, she had zero experience surviving in the outdoors. When she was together with Lin Ming, she always felt a sense of ease in her heart, as if any challenges or problems could be easily solved with Lin Ming.

The shrubs and vines of this forest were very lush and thick. Every so often, Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu would have to cut them apart with their swords and sabers in order to clear a way. These plants were from ancient times. The stems were abnormally tough, and cutting them apart was relatively difficult.

"Mm?"

Lin Ming's eyes suddenly widened in challenge. He immediately flipped around and punched behind him.

Bang!

Vibrating true essence erupted. A four or five foot long black scorpion had its head burst open by Lin Ming's fist, and black juices splashed out. However, this scorpion was unbelievably tough. Even though its head had been burst open, its tail still swept over, thrusting straight towards Lin Ming's eyes.

Ca!

Sword light flashed and the scorpion tail was cut into pieces in midair. Mu Qianyu had only moved slightly, and then her sword was instantly returned to its scabbard. Only the sword light of her move had been seen.

“This is a vicious beast from ancient times.” Lin Ming looked at the twitching scorpion corpse on the ground. The vitality of this scorpion was simply too tenacious.

During the ancient times of Sky Spill Continent, these kinds of vicious beasts that existed were much closer to those from the Realm of the Gods. They were much stronger than the vicious beasts that existed today, and much more dangerous.

The laws of this world were all in a self-contained system, and were completely different from the outside world. After countless tens of thousands of years, the vicious beasts that had been trapped in this main world had multiplied and bred for generations; who knew what sort of changes had been produced.

The scorpion wasn’t too scary. It was just surprising. It was unknown what other dangers existed in the depths of this forest.

As for the entrance into this world, that was 20 to 30 thousand feet in the air. Now that no one could fly any longer and no one could jump that high, the path to the outside world was closed to them. No one could say if they would encounter a lucky chance or walk into their graves as they trudged forwards.

“Let’s hurry and get out of this forest.”

Lin Ming had just spoken when he heard a series of branches breaking in succession. The bushes in front of him violently trembled, as if something was about to rush out.

Lin Ming took out the Purple Comet Spear and Mu Qianyu also readied her longsword, both of them at full alert.

“Roar!”

The bushes were suddenly parted. A long-horned black leopard flew out. Without a word, Mu Qianyu cut down. As her sword sliced down, a visible ripple of compressed fiery sword energy spread out.

Clang!

The leopard was cut by Mu Qianyu, but the strike against its body made a sound as if metal had struck metal. Its speed slowed a bit and a wisp of blood came out. The leopard was angered. It became more manic, crazier, fiercely rushing towards Mu Qianyu.

Mu Qianyu was startled. She hadn't felt a strong aura from the black leopard a moment ago and thought that she could casually strike to kill it. Although she had harmed it, he had only scratched the black panther. The vicious beasts in this forest had a horrifying defensive power and her true essence was suppressed by too much.

Lin Ming gripped the Purple Comet Spear and stepped forwards, blocking off the black leopard's attack route.

"Be careful!" Mu Qianyu called out; she feared that Lin Ming would be injured.

Lin Ming gave a loud shout and almost 70% of Tempering Marrow's strength exploded outwards. Since his true essence was compressed to 30%, it was best if he used attacks based on pure strength.

He held the spear in both hands and mercilessly swept out.

Bang!

With a loud explosive sound, the black leopard was sent flying back by Lin Ming. The black leopard was like an arrow as it shot backwards. It smashed into a series of trees, severing them and letting out waves of sorrowful howls.

The black leopard crawled up from a bed of broken branches and leaves. Its head was soaked wet with blood and it looked at Lin Ming with fear; it was simply horrified by Lin Ming's abnormal strength. The black leopard turned around, limping as it escaped.

"What strong and good defense!" Lin Ming was astonished. That spear strike felt like he had struck a massive chunk of iron.

Although he was much stronger than the black leopard, if he had taken his own spear attack without true essence protecting his body, his bones would have been broken. However, that leopard that didn't have any true essence fluctuations in its body was actually able to use its own flesh to withstand such an attack.

Mu Qianyu looked at Lin Ming with surprise. She hadn't expected that Lin Ming's attack would be so strong. "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, the progress of your strength is just too fast these days. Even I can't see just how far you've come."

Lin Ming shook his head, "It's not that exaggerated. It's just that the Body Transformation cultivation method I practice isn't suppressed as much by the arbitrary laws of this world. But these vicious beasts have such strong bodies and yet they don't even use true essence.

After Lin Ming spoke, Mu Qianyu noticed the problem. These vicious beasts had an extremely high defense and attack strength, yet their bodies were void of any true essence. They were completely different from the normal vicious beasts that existed on Sky Spill Continent.

"The different laws of this world have also produced different cultivation systems. The creatures in this forest all have extremely formidable bodies. It's not just the beasts, but even the trees and plants are abnormally tough. I don't know what we'll meet as we continue. That black leopard might not even be considered strong. There might even be stronger vicious beasts ahead." Mu Qianyu's tone was tinged with concern. She didn't know how her master and the others were faring.

As she worried, a loud sound came from deep in the forest, followed by a loud voice that echoed through the trees, “All martial artists are welcome to come with me! This forest is very strange, but if we work together we can get out of here and then look for lucky chances!”

No one knew if the one speaking had used a secret skill, but his voice was like rolling waves, spreading out to a very far distance.

In this forest, true essence was suppressed to 30% of what it usually was. Even perception was suppressed and it was difficult to distinguish just what direction they were in. Thus, the martial artists that had been scattered and competing against each other naturally thought to unite.

Chapter 463 – Sorry, Please Make Way

Chapter 463 – Sorry, Please Make Way

…

…

…

As this voice sounded out, there were constantly responses from surrounding martial artists. It seemed that most of them had also suffered greatly here.

“Lin Ming, they are most likely disciples of Great Zen Temple. Should we have go and have a look?” Mu Qianyu asked Lin Ming.

Lin Ming thought about it for a moment and said, “That sounds like a plan. This forest is too strange, there’s no knowing what could be behind us. We should get out of here before we think about our next course of action.”

After tens of thousands of years of evolution, the situation inside the ancient battlefield had already surpassed everyone’s imagination. In such times, one needed to be extremely cautious. After all, these were the remains of an ancient sixth-grade sect. Lin Ming wasn’t so arrogant that he believed his strength allowed him to go wherever he wanted to.

Most of the marital artists present also thought this. Thus, all of the martial artists that had been scattered around in the forest had gathered to this Great Zen Temple disciple after he shouted out.

Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu walked several miles and finally came upon a forest glade. There were several dozen martial artists gathered here. Some wore golden colored cassocks; these were naturally the disciples of Great Zen Temple. There were those that were dressed in all black and had an ancient Giant Demon totem embroidered on the chest of their robes; these were the Demon Region disciples. And there was also a minority of Black Flood Dragon clansmen, Divine Phoenix Island disciples, and Five Element Region disciples.

When Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu arrived, they didn't arouse anyone's curiosity. Lin Ming's heart suddenly shook as he saw two early Revolving Core powerhouses in front of him. However, the two of them didn't even care about him.

"It seems like because of the laws of this world, true essence is suppressed to 30% and these early Revolving Core powerhouses cannot see through Bi Luo's appearance changing technique because of that. This appearance changing technique is quite marvelous."

After Lin Ming confirmed this he was much more at ease. Otherwise, if he met someone from the South Sea Demon Region who had been related to Lei Mubai, it would be really troublesome if that person tried to do something to him behind the scenes.

At this moment, Lin Ming suddenly heard a happy tone, "Cousin Qianyu, is that you? I'm glad you also made it here safely."

Lin Ming turned around to see a handsome elite-looking man joyfully striding over to Mu Qianyu's side. This person was Mu Qingshu.

Mu Qingshu already knew that Mu Qianyu had entered the ancient battlefield. Although he wasn't able to see through her appearance changing technique, for a Divine Phoenix Island disciple that he didn't recognize to suddenly appear here with the same cultivation as Mu Qianyu, it was naturally easy for him to deduce her true identity.

This caused Mu Qingshu's heart to itch with greed. In the end, he really couldn't give up on Mu Qianyu. He kept continuing to struggle for a slim chance to win her over; unless he fought, he would never win anything. Not to mention Mu Qianyu's divine beauty and elegance, but Mu Qingshu incomparably longed for Mu Qianyu's pure bloodline. He dreamt of pressing Mu Qianyu down beneath him and recklessly unleashing his desire upon her. However, because of the existence of Lin Ming, all of these dreams had been destroyed!

As Mu Qianyu saw Mu Qingshu, her face was colored with utter disgust and loathing. Originally, she didn't have much of a favorable impression towards Mu Qingshu. In fact, she didn't have any impression towards him at all. However, she hadn't found him so repugnant at that time. But several months ago, she had discovered that Qin Ziya's letter that he had sent to Divine Phoenix Island to rescue Qin Xingxuan had been intercepted by Mu Qingshu. Mu Qianyu was no righteous saint herself, but towards something so ruthless and insidious, that slight annoyance she had towards him had turned into outright disgust.

"Cousin Qianyu, there are dangers everywhere in this ancient battlefield. It's too dangerous if you go alone. If you go with me and my grandfather then no danger will fall onto you." Mu Qingshu's grandfather was naturally Divine Phoenix Island's Third Elder, Mu Yanzhuo. Mu Yanzhuo had also entered the ancient battlefield.

"No need." Mu Qianyu coldly said.

Mu Qingshu felt like he had kicked his foot. He felt a bit embarrassed. At this time, he noticed Lin Ming, who was standing near Mu Qianyu. As he noticed Lin Ming's cultivation, his face immediately became dour. He had guessed just who Lin Ming really was.

Lin Ming also coldly looked at Mu Qingshu. Mu Qianyu had already told him the matters about the letter from beginning to end. When Lin Ming was still at Divine Phoenix Island he naturally couldn't do anything to Mu Qingshu. However, now they had met on the ancient battlefield. It could be said that they were only enemies that had just crossed each other's path.

The two of them were already like water and fire, it was just that they were maintaining decorum by being outwardly polite.

Mu Qingshu clenched his teeth and said with a true essence sound transmission, "Cousin Qianyu, if you come with us then we are all from the Mu Family Clan. With the Mu Family's bloodline oath, it is impossible for any of us to betray you. You can trust your own people. But this little boy..."

Before Mu Qingshu finished, Mu Qianyu suddenly interrupted him and said, "I'm sorry, please make way."

Mu Qingshu lagged, freezing on the spot. Mu Qianyu didn't even bother to glance at him. She pulled Lin Ming's hand and said, "Let's go over there."

As she spoke, she pulled Lin Ming to pass by Mu Qingshu's stunned body.

Mu Qingshu immediately paled, turning ashen. His outstretched hand was still stiff in the air. He turned his head and was shocked to see that Mu Qianyu and Lin Ming had already sat down on a clean clearing of grass underneath a large tree. They were very close to each other, and they hadn't even let go of each other's hand yet.

Seeing this scene, Mu Qingshu nearly cracked his teeth apart by grinding them.

Lin Ming also couldn't react in time. Although he had a very close relationship with Mu Qianyu, the feelings between the two of them were still seeds that had yet to bud. They had touched skin, but that was only because the circumstances of the time had required it. They had simply never leisurely held hands like this.

If he had to say it though, Mu Qianyu's hand really felt nice in his own. Her hand felt creamy, soft, and incomparably delicate; he was reluctant to ever let go.

Lin Ming knew Mu Qingshu's thoughts on Mu Qianyu. At this time, he naturally couldn't ignore a moment to anger Mu Qingshu. He held onto Mu Qianyu's hand and played with it, squeezing it in his own. This touch that was like soft and tender jade... Lin Ming found it hard to put down.

Mu Qianyu's complexion also reddened a bit. She had only thought to get rid of Mu Qingshu's incessant bothering of her, but she never thought that after she gave Lin Ming an inch he would try to take a yard. She hesitated for a moment, but didn't draw her hand back.

Third Elder Mu Yanzhuo was watching all of this from a distance and his face darkened. Although he no longer held any hope that Mu Qingshu would one day marry Mu Qianyu, he still didn't want to see his own grandson shamed like this.

"Qingshu, come back!" Mu Yanzhuo said with a true essence sound transmission.

Mu Qingshu clenched his teeth but didn't respond. At this time he was trembling with anger. He wished that he could castrate Lin Ming! He wished that he could cut him to pieces!

"Qingshu, have you not shamed yourself enough!? I told you not to bother with Mu Qianyu again, she isn't someone that the likes of you can obtain." Mu Yanzhuo's expression flashed with anger, and he began to earnestly become angry. He already knew that Mu Qingshu was already obsessed with this matter. If things continued like this, it would definitely become a knot in his heart that would stifle his thoughts, thus affecting all of his future martial arts cultivation.

"I am unwilling! If I do not fight, that's the same as admitting defeat!" Mu Qingshu's expression was grim. His fists were so tightly gripped that his nails dug deep into his flesh.

"You have already lost. All you need to do is cultivate well. Your talent is good, you should be able to reach at least the middle Revolving Core realm." The middle Revolving Core realm was also the cultivation boundary of the Vermillion Bird Faction's Great Elder, Mu Chihuo. This realm had originally been satisfactory for Mu Qingshu. However, in comparison to Lin Ming, it was just garbage!

Mu Qingshu couldn't accept the feeling that such a massive gap existed between him and Lin Ming!

He looked at Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu, his eyes flashing with a cruel light. He said, "It's not over yet, not until the last moment!"

As Mu Yanzhuo saw the grotesque animus in Mu Qingshu's eyes, Mu Yanzhuo's complexion changed. "Qingshu, what are you thinking of? Don't do anything crazy. If you use some method to deal with Mu Qianyu then you will absolutely die a miserable death. Mu

Yuhuang will never forgive you, and whatever you do might even reach the crime of betraying your bloodline. You are a Mu Family member and you also have the Mu Family bloodstain contract mark. You should know just what the fate for betrayers is!”

The bloodstain contract was a special document created by the Divine Phoenix Island Founder. This contract took the bloodline as its basis. As long as one had the bloodline of the Mu Family, they would be restricted by this.

If they dared to violate the terms within, their body’s bloodline would melt away. The cultivation methods of Divine Phoenix Island took the bloodline as their foundation. Once one’s bloodline melted, the Divine Phoenix Island cultivation method they practiced would naturally dissipate along with it.

The only way to break through the limitations set down by the bloodstain contract was if one’s cultivation reached the extreme Revolving Core realm and had a strength that approached the Divine Phoenix Island Founder’s. If they had this power, they would naturally be able to break through the restrictions of the bloodline contract.

The direct descendants of Divine Phoenix Island were all required to sign the bloodline contract once they became an adult. They had to sign that they would never betray the sect. In the future, if there were other situations that arose, they might have to sign the contract yet again. For instance, Mu Yuhuang had many Elders sign the bloodstain contract again so that no one would reveal the existence of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’s’ eighth layer. This was also a reason why Divine Phoenix Island favored those juniors that had the Mu family name, but distrusted those that didn’t share this last name.

Mu Qingshu’s strength was naturally inferior to Mu Qianyu’s. If he wanted to use some method to deal with Mu Qianyu, he could only find someone else to do his dirty work. This was already enough to become a crime of betraying one’s sect.

Mu Qingshu grit his teeth, trying to suppress these dark thoughts in his heart. However, once a heart demon was planted, it was difficult to erase!

At this time, the forest shook again, and a few more red-robed Divine Phoenix Island disciples came into the forest glade. The old man in front leading them was tall and thin. He had a wide frame, and held a 10,000 year Sacred Flame Parasol Tree cane in his hand. His long beard fell all the way down to his chest.

As Lin Ming saw this person, his eyes narrowed. This old man was the Vermillion Bird Faction's Great Elder, Mu Chihuo. Lin Ming's relationship with Mu Chihuo was also like that of enemies.

After the 30-some top masters had directly flown to the Demon God Imperial Palace, all of the other Revolving Core Elders on the ancient battlefield were at the early Revolving Core realm with a small few at the middle Revolving Core realm. Mu Chihuo was one of these people.

As Mu Qianyu felt Lin Ming tense up, she sent him a true essence sound transmission, "Don't worry. No matter how much the Great Elder hates you, he won't dare to do anything to you."

"Mm, I understand."

Mu Chihuo's eyes passed over all the Vermillion Bird Faction disciples before he paused for several seconds on Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu. There was no look in his eyes. Finally, he moved over towards the rest of the Divine Phoenix Island disciples.

After Mu Chihuo arrived, Mu Bingyun followed in. She glanced at Mu Qianyu, nodded, and then sat in a corner of the forest glade, meditating and clearing her mind.

In addition to Divine Phoenix Island, the disciples of other sects also continued to arrive there in abundance.

Of these martial artists, those from the South Sea Demon Region and Black Flood Dragon Clan that practiced demonic path cultivation methods had all gathered together. As for

Divine Phoenix Island’s side, those from Great Zen Temple, the Five Element Region, Dire Space Sect, and Supreme Mystery Temple had all gathered together. Because there were more sects, those on the side of the righteous path sects were double the number of those from the demonic path sects.

Chapter 464 – Demon God Imperial Palace

Chapter 464 – Demon God Imperial Palace

…

…

…

Lin Ming sat in a corner and began to observe all of the martial artists that were present. The South Sea Demon Region, Black Flood Dragon Clan, and the Great Zen Temple all had middle Revolving Core masters protecting their juniors. As for those Life Destruction powerhouses, they had already long since rushed towards the Demon God Imperial Palace. The special rules that governed this world may not necessarily have been able to suppress those strange old fellows.

The other disciples were mostly at the Xiantian realm. There were some Revolving Core realm masters, and Houtian disciples were only a very small part.

“Big Brother Lin, is that you?”

At this moment, Lin Ming suddenly heard someone call out to him. He turned and was surprised to see that the one who called out was Zhang Zhen, the Divine Phoenix Island core disciple who had been the one to first welcome him to Divine Phoenix Island.

Originally, Zhang Zhen had been the one who brought Lin Ming to attend Revered Master Tianguang’s birthday banquet contest. He had also told Lin Ming many things about Divine Phoenix Island and the Five Element Region. The two of them were on very friendly terms with each other.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Zhang, you also came?” Lin Ming was startled. With Zhang Zhen’s strength, coming to such a dangerous land was really pushing his luck.

Zhang Zhen listened to Lin Ming's words and ruefully smiled, "I just happened to be nearby the ancient battlefield and wanted to come along and see what it was like. I didn't expect that it would be so dangerous here..." As Zhang Zhen spoke, his expression was of exasperated annoyance.

At this moment, a clump of dirt under Zhang Zhen's foot rose up.

Lin Ming's pupils shrank, "Be careful!"

Sou!

A red-patterned snake that had the thickness of an arm darted out of the dirt! Lin Ming's reflexes were fast; the Purple Comet Spear in his hand thrust out like a bolt of lightning!

Puff!

The spear directly pierced into the red-patterned snake, tightly nailing it into the ground.

Black blood spurted out and sprinkled on the ground, all of the nearby green foliage began to rapidly whither!

Zhang Zhen was in a cold sweat from fear. That red-patterned snake's attack was fast like lightning and the toxins inherent in it were frightening. If it wasn't for Lin Ming promptly helping him a moment ago, he had no doubt that he would already be dead.

Meanwhile in the forest glade, several other red-patterned snakes shot out from the earth, quickly attacking the disciples from other sects. Several disciples with weaker cultivations tried to dodge but had their throats torn out by these snakes.

"Ah!"

A heart-pounding scream rang in the air. A martial artist had been bitten by a red-patterned snake and his face immediately turned into a deep purple black.

“Junior-apprentice Brother!” A youth that was nearby the bitten martial artist cried out, his face turning red with rage. He slashed out at the red-patterned snake with his sword, but as his cut fell upon the snake’s back, there was the sound of metal colliding; he was simply unable to cut through. During this time, the martial artist that had been bitten had already died.

In this split-second, his junior-apprentice brother that had practiced with him for over ten years had suddenly died. The youth was deeply grieved by this loss.

“Everyone be careful! These snakes are hard to deal with!”

The martial artists that had been meditating on the ground had already stood up.

Because their true essence was suppressed to a mere 30% of what it usually was, these normal Xiantian powerhouses’ attacks weren’t able to break through the formidable defense of these red-patterned snakes.

Cha cha cha!

The Revolving Core powerhouses acted together, cutting apart any red-patterned snakes they saw. However, these snakes had an astonishing vitality. Even if they were cut in half, their mouths still bit towards any martial artist present.

“Evil beast, prepare to die!”

A long-bearded monk from the Great Zen Temple gripped his staff and pounded down with it. There was a flash of golden light and faint Buddhist hymns began to ring in the air. A massive golden Buddha statue appeared in the sky and dropped down, smashing several red-patterned snakes into mush.

After this long-bearded monk began to attack, the pressure on everyone else was greatly reduced. But at this moment, everyone heard a loud rustling in the distance, as if a rainstorm were coming their way. It seemed as if hundreds and thousands of snakes were crawling their way towards the martial artists.

"Run!"

Even middle Revolving Core masters didn't have confidence they would be able to face such a massive group of these snakes. Everyone displayed their movement techniques and quickly ran into the forest.

"Lin Ming, let's hurry up and go!" Mu Qianyu hurriedly said.

"Mm!"

Lin Ming didn't say anything else. He quickly picked up Zhang Zhen and rushed straight into the deep forest.

The Revolving Core masters led the way. The light of many treasures flashed out in all directions. Vines were cut apart and grass was hewed away, fluttering in the air.

Spiritual sense was suppressed here; no one was able to detect anything more than a few dozen feet away. Such a distance was basically useless. By the time they were able to discover any danger, that danger would already be in front of them.

As they fled at high-speed, a red vine silently crept up from the ground. It pointed at a Xiantian martial artist and shot out like lightning!

Pu!

The Xiantian martial artist's protective true essence was pierced through as if it were nothing but thin paper. The red vine clasped onto the martial artist's thigh and countless tiny roots pierced into his flesh, immediately sucking up vast amounts of blood.

"Ahh!"

The martial artist emitted a soul-piercing scream. His body began to wither at a visible rate, and the red vine that sucked his blood swelled up like a balloon.

"Be careful! It's a vampiric plant!"

The red vines were extremely tenacious. Those Xiantian martial artists that had their true essence suppressed to 30% were simply unable to do anything. Any martial artist that was grabbed by a red vine would die here!

“Little Brother!”

A Black Flood Dragon Clan Revolving Core master saw as his own little brother was stabbed in the stomach by a vampiric vine and his eyes turned red with anger. His saber slashed out at that vampiric red vine, and blood gushed out from a small gash in the vine. However, only a little part had been broken. The vine still gripped the little brother’s body, quickly sucking up all his blood.

“Damn it all!”

That Black Flood Dragon Clan Revolving Core master reached over to the vine and ripped it out from his brother’s body. However, as he pulled out the vine, the vine had already penetrated deep into the little brother’s body and taken root. Flesh and organs were pulled out with the vine. The little brother gave a pitiful, feeble cry. His face whitened and his life was on the verge of collapse.

“These vines fear fire!” A Divine Phoenix Island disciple suddenly shouted. A moment ago he had used a martial skill from the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ to attack the vine, and had burned it.

Following this, Mu Chihuo gave a loud shout. He pressed his hands out flat, and a wave of searing fire burned down from the heavens. As the vines met these waves, they began to rapidly wither away. Soon, the vines had completely retreated back into the depths of the forest.

This scene startled Lin Ming. This middle Revolving Core old man was still so powerful even though his strength was reduced to 30%.

Everyone gave a sigh of relief, catching their breath.

“We need to leave, it’s not good to stay here.” Mu Chihuo said.

No one dared to be careless. They displayed their movement techniques and rushed deeper into the woods.

“What horrible luck. I thought there would be some lucky chances here, but this accursed land has no such thing. There are no good lucky chances here. The only lucky chance is the chance to die everywhere!”

“Don’t complain. We can’t go back anymore, we can only move forwards.

In just this short window of time, over 10% of the martial artists in the group had perished. There weren’t any Revolving Core powerhouses that died. Those that died were early and middle Xiantian realm disciples as well as Houtian realm disciples.

After having suffered two attacks, the martial artists were increasingly wary. Even if their perception couldn’t extend to too far, if they sent it continuously out they would at least be able to prevent dangers from underneath the ground arising.

…………………

At this time a hundred miles away above a desert, over 20 rainbow-colored lights flashed in the sky. These were the lights that were left behind when top masters flew.

This broken world had fundamental rules that suppressed flight. However, these rules weren’t able to completely suppress these Life Destruction powerhouses; it was only that their flying speed was severely restricted. Otherwise, they would have been able to easily cover this distance of a hundred or so miles in half an incense stick of time.

At this time, there were three more lights that began to slow down the more they continued, dipping deeper and deeper. The two men and a woman finally landed on the ground. Their cultivation was at the late Revolving Core realm. As they entered deeper into this broken world, the laws that suppressed them became increasingly intense. And now, these late Revolving Core powerhouses no longer had the ability to fly.

The female Elder among the three watched as the 20 plus beams of light in the air became increasingly blurry as they moved into the distance. She sighed and said, “It looks like we won’t have the fortune to enter the Demon God Imperial Palace.”

“Hehe, this old man originally came for some fun anyway. Even if I go to the Demon God Imperial Palace, with those Life Destruction fogies around, there is no way that any of us would have been able to obtain the Nirvana Dragon Root. At most we would be able to obtain some small chances. But I never imagined that we wouldn’t even be able to enter. But, this is also a bit of a relief.”

“Mm. Although it’s a pity that we cannot enter the Demon God Imperial Palace, it’s not necessarily a good thing to enter. No one knows what dangers are inside. And if we’re outside, that doesn’t mean we won’t come across some lucky chance…”

………….

As the suppressive laws that governed this world intensified, Mu Yuhuang was also nearing the limit of her abilities. Among all the late Revolving Core masters, she was the one who had persisted the longest.

“I see it. That should be it.”

Mu Fengxian’s true essence sound transmission sounded out in Mu Yuhuang’s ears.

Mu Yuhuang looked out in the distance. In the distant skies, a vague ghostly image emerged out of the blue; it was a magnificent and enormous palace.

‘Demon God Imperial Palace?’

Mu Yuhuang was shocked.

The entire Demon God Imperial Palace looked like it was a mirage, it didn’t seem as if it were real.

The Life Destruction powerhouses that flew in the front also discovered this massive Demon God Imperial palace, and they sped up.

The giant Demon God Imperial Palace stretched out for countless miles. The palace towered high above the desert and was surrounded by numerous thick columns, each of them engraved with a multitude of totem reliefs.

In the center of the Demon God Imperial palace was a massive demon god statue that held a great ax in it's hands. This statue was over a thousand feet high and stood there, imposing. As it stood there, an ancient atmosphere naturally emanated from it, spreading out in all directions. It spread between the heavens and earth, shaking the minds of anyone who felt it.

It had to be known that this demon god statue had already stood here for tens of thousands of years. As the Life Destruction powerhouses flew to the statue, they were no different than a swarm of mosquitoes, simply insignificant creatures.

"True essence has been suppressed to 20%." Xuan Wuji was secretly shocked. The laws of this world were simply too strange. Even late Revolving Core powerhouses weren't able to fly. Now, facing this giant statue, Xuan Wuji couldn't help but want to fall to the ground, prostrating himself in complete worship.

This feeling frightened Xuan Wuji out of his wits!

He had no idea just who it was that carved out such a terrifying statue, but it seemed to be above the laws that ruled this world. If so.....if a mere statue could make him feel like this, then if he entered into the Demon God Imperial palace and encountered something, would he still be able to put up any form of resistance?

Xuan Wuji took a deep breath. The further he went in this broken world, the more he discovered that compared to the Demon Emperor of tens of thousands of years ago, he was nothing but a little defenseless baby!

"This Demon Emperor's cultivation was immeasurably deep. I'm afraid that even the current Emperor level powerhouses of Sky Spill Continent would be nothing in front of him!"

Chapter 465 – Bloody Wilderness

Chapter 465 – Bloody Wilderness

…

…

…

As Xuan Wuji was thinking, he saw a black light flash past him. The Black Flood Dragon Clan Patriarch suddenly sank and turned into a violent black typhoon that shot towards the Demon God Imperial Palace!

The Black Flood Dragon Patriarch's cultivation was already at the second stage of Life Destruction. In his opinion, any defensive measures or array formations that were left behind at the Demon God Imperial Palace would have already failed after these tens of thousands of years. Still, even so, as a precaution he galvanized his true essence to the max. Behind him, the faint phantom of a Black Flood Dragon appeared.

As Xuan Wuji saw this he was unmoved. He only sneered and thought to himself, 'Idiot!'

Hua!

As the Black Flood Dragon Patriarch was about to burst into the main entrance of the Demon God Imperial Palace, a red light flashed. At the entrance of the palace, a shining halo appeared out of thin air, rushing out like an overwhelming tide and smashing into the Black Flood Dragon Patriarch's body.

With a dull thump, the Black Flood Dragon Patriarch was kicked backwards like a rubber ball. He was sent flying backwards, spitting blood!

As the other Life Destruction powerhouses saw this, their complexions changed. This palace that had been abandoned for tens of thousands of years actually still had the protection of an array formation? Not just that, but this array formation was astoundingly strong! Even the second stage Life Destruction Black Blood Dragon Patriarch spat blood in the collision!

Although the Black Flood Dragon's true essence had been suppressed to 20% of its normal potency because of the rules that governed this world, it had to be known that this was only a single defensive array that protected the entrance to the Demon God Imperial Palace!

If a single defensive array was able to cause the Black Flood Dragon Patriarch to spit blood, then wouldn't an offensive array violently and instantly kill them?

All of the Life Destruction powerhouses were alarmed. This Demon God Imperial Palace was too terrifying. They thought if this palace hadn't already decayed for tens of thousands of years, they would have suffered an even more miserable fate.

The Black Flood Dragon Patriarch wiped the blood from the corners of his lips. As he looked at the still flashing defensive array, his face was gloomy. What in the world was this ghostly array formation? It was actually able to maintain itself for tens of thousands of years? And not just that, but it was still so powerful. Was this really something that could be created by a human?

………………

In the forest, there was hidden murderous intent everywhere. As the group continued running, there were constantly martial artists that died. Two hours later, as they finally made their way out of the forest, around 30% of the martial artists had perished.

"This place is…"

In front of the crowd were endless plains of dark red, bumpy land. There were thick bones half buried in the ground, and all around were dark gray stone tablets that were stuck in the land. There were big and small stone tablets, and each one had been engraved with all sorts of intricate symbols. These symbols were different from the symbol system that existed on the Sky Spill Continent; the martial artists weren't able to understand what they meant or represented.

These dark red plains gave off an extremely oppressive feeling. Even the sky was a dark red, and it glowed faintly with a bloody light.

From the virgin forest to this bloody wilderness, the intense visual difference was shocking to the mind.

With the experiences of the forest still fresh in their minds, everyone present maintained 120% vigilance as they faced these strange red plains.

At this point, continuing on was dangerous, but staying in the forest was also dangerous. If they had to make a choice then they had to proceed; they might even be able to find a lucky chance here.

"Let's go." The first one to step onto the dark red plains was the hawk-nosed old man from the South Sea Demon Region. He was the South Sea Demon Region Elder, Lian Chengji. His cultivation was at the middle Revolving Core realm. The South Sea Demon Region side had two middle Revolving Core realm Elders and also nine early Revolving Core powerhouses. Of those early Revolving Core masters, two or three of them had already reached the peak of the early phase. With their strength, the South Sea Demon Region was the strongest force amongst the sects present, so they were also the most confident.

As soon as Lian Chengji stepped onto this vast red plain, his complexion changed. This blood wilderness was even fiercer in suppressing his true essence; he could actually only use 25% of his true essence efficacy.

"Another 5% of true essence is suppressed!" Lian Chengji dismally said.

"The laws of this world are too strange. If this continues then the situation will only become more dangerous." Another Elder also appeared worried. He decided that if his true essence was suppressed below 20%, he would no longer go forwards. Otherwise, there was a possibility that he really might be killed by these powerful and strange vicious beasts.

After the South Sea Demon Region martial artists walked forwards, the other sects' martial artists followed them onto the bloody wilderness. Many of them had already activated a protective cover to detect space cracks. There was no life here, none of them knew whether or not this was caused by those terrifying rifts in space, so it was better to activate preventive measures just in case.

Everyone continued carefully, maintaining their minds at full alert. No matter how they looked at it, this bloody wilderness was stranger than the forest and even more dangerous.

However, they didn't expect that after they walked for half an hour, they actually hadn't encountered any dangers.

Some people couldn't help but whisper to themselves. At this time, the hawk-nosed South Sea Demon Region Elder suddenly swiveled, his hand slapping downwards.

There was an explosive sound as the ground was split open. The martial artists behind were all shocked. They thought there was a surprise enemy attack, but they didn't think that after the earth had burst open, a thick greatsword would come flying out.

This five foot long sword was jet-black as if it were made from ink, and the aura that it emitted was comparable to a high-grade earth-step treasure!

"What!?" All of the martial artists' eyes shined. That Elder had just casually taken an item from the ground, but it was a high-grade earth-step treasure!? No... this wasn't right... it wasn't a high-grade earth-step treasure. From the energy fluctuations, this should only be a medium-grade earth-step treasure. Yet, it was several times better than a normal medium-grade earth-step treasure. This should be amongst the rarest of medium-grade earth-step treasures.

Lin Ming traced his jaw. He thought to himself, 'This is a normal medium-grade earth-step treasure that was forged by an ancient refining master. It is several times superior to an ordinary medium-grade earth-step treasure that is forged by the refining masters of the current era.'

A medium-grade earth-step treasure was exceedingly valuable and precious. The Great Desolate Blood Halberd replica that Lei Mubai had used was also a top medium-grade earth-step treasure.

Lin Ming had very high standards. Naturally, he didn't think too much of this weapon. But all of the martial artists at his side had widened eyes filled with greed. Most of them used low-grade earth-step treasure. Seeing such a rare medium-grade earth-step treasure in front of them, they were all envious.

After passing through that gauntlet of dangers and surviving, they finally saw a lucky chance appear!

This was the thought that most martial artists present had.

This bloody wilderness may have seemed dangerous, but the truth was that it wasn't dangerous at all. Instead, there were all sorts of buried bones and treasures here. It was like this was an ancient battle site.

If they followed behind the ass of the South Sea Demon Region, they wouldn't be able to pick up anything. If they fought with them, they also couldn't win.

Thinking this, many of the martial artists began to part ways in small groups, quietly changing directions and leaving the main group. Out of precaution, these martial artist had at least an extreme Xiantian master leading them, or even two or three late Xiantian realm masters.

As the main group continued, more and more martial artists left, and even the South Sea Demon Region martial artists began to spread out on their own. Everyone wanted to pick up some treasures. If they followed behind Lian Chengji, they wouldn't even be able to obtain scraps.

"Let's go towards that side." Lin Ming said to Mu Qianyu. As there were fewer and fewer people in the group, the image of Lian Chengji in front of them became increasingly dangerous.

"Mm."

Mu Qianyu and Lin Ming left the group together. They didn't know whether or not this bloody wilderness was truly safe!

Most of those present also understood this. But, they were all blinded by greed. As they saw Lian Chengji pick up a top medium-grade earth-step treasure in front of their eyes, none of them were able to resist the temptation to go off by themselves.

Perhaps this ancient battlefield had not only treasures, but also other things. For instance, they might even pick up a spatial ring that contained the complete worth of a top master. At that point they would really rise up in power.

Mu Qingshu watched Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu's backs from a distance, and bitterly ground his teeth together. He even wanted to hire someone to kill them. But if he did that, the bloodline in his body would completely melt away within half a year, and he would lose all of his cultivation.

Since he didn't have any means to retaliate against Lin Ming, he could only helplessly watch as Lin Ming walked closer and closer to Mu Qianyu, seeming to be very intimate and close to each other. He felt like he could vomit blood at this sight.

As Mu Yanzhuo watched this from afar, he could only sigh.

Reality was cruel. The result was already obvious, but many times, not everyone was willing to accept the truth in front of them, especially when someone's object of desire was stolen away. The taste of this feeling was truly hard to swallow…

………..

Lin Ming cautiously made his way forward, completely opening his perception. In this strange world, Lin Ming was only able to extend his sense to around 200 feet. If it was underground, it was even shorter at around 100 feet.

And this 100 feet of earth was completely flooded by a massive amount of skeletal bones.

“There are so many bones!” Lin Ming gasped. These skeletons and bones came in all sizes. Some seemed ordinary and had turned to oil after tens of thousands of years underground, but there were also those that hadn’t changed in the least, still remaining a jade-like translucent color. There were even some bones that shined like a rainbow. Obviously, this was related to the cultivation method that the deceased had practiced before their death.

“There is also a spatial ring…”

Lin Ming discovered that there was a hand bone with a spatial ring on it. With a wave of his hand, the spatial ring flew up from underground. However, as he investigated it with his soul force, he shook his head in disappointment. The mini dimension inside of the spatial ring had already collapsed upon itself.

This sort of man-made world was originally unstable. Normally, the world inside a low-grade earth-step spatial ring would last for several thousand years before disintegrating.

It wasn’t just the spatial ring, but many treasures had decayed. Those treasures that could be buried in the earth for tens of thousands of years and remain pristine and everlasting were quite special. Lin Ming walked for a quarter of an hour but still hadn’t discovered one.

“Mm? That seems to be…” Mu Qianyu’s mind stirred. As she looked several hundred feet in the distance, there were actually exotic looking flowers there.

In this vast blood wilderness, this bunch of flowers was very unexpected.

“Blood Ghost Flower? I didn’t think that something like that would appear here…” A Blood Ghost Flower was a sort of spiritual flower that loved to grow in lands that were filled with dark and bloody influences and had gone through great periods of carnage. Only under those circumstances would they be able to nurture themselves and germinate, slowly growing. Normally it would take millennia to flower, and that was why it was extremely rare within the Sky Spill Continent, and to think that there would be such a large bunch of them here.

However, the ruins of this ancient battlefield had already been rich with bloody and demonic influences. Not just that, but no one had appeared here for tens of thousands of years. It wasn't strange for such a large batch of these flowers to be born here.

"These Blood Ghost Flowers will be of great help to Little Flame's evolution! This is really a lucky chance!" Mu Qianyu was delighted. As she went forwards to pick them up, she suddenly stopped in her steps and frowned. She could clearly feel the energy of a few people hidden in the vicinity of the Blood Ghost Flowers. They gave of a faint murderous aura like a tiger that was crouching in the brush.

This energy belonged to a human. It was most likely one of those 'companions' that had just been in their group, and was also a Revolving Core powerhouse.

"They want to use the Blood Ghost Flower as bait and kill us to rob our possessions?" Mu Qianyu sneered.

Chapter 466 – Complete Suppression

Chapter 466 – Complete Suppression

…

…

…

“It should be a martial artist from the South Sea Demon Region.” Lin Ming said with a true essence sound transmission. He had discovered the people hiding around the Blood Ghost Flowers at nearly the same time that Mu Qianyu had. They had been hiding using a kind of camouflaging secret skill.

These people had seen this bunch of Blood Ghost Flowers and yet they didn’t gather it. Instead, they had hidden around these flowers waiting for others to appearance; their goal was obvious.

They were waiting for others to be attracted by these Blood Ghost Flowers. In their joy at obtaining such rare treasures, they would relax their guard. Then, these hidden people could sneak attack and kill them.

These people should have already realized that most of the ancient battlefield’s treasures had decayed; looking for one in a usable condition would not be easy. If this true, then killing someone and taking all of their belongings would be a much faster way to gain wealth and treasure. After all, the weakest of those that entered this ancient battlefield were core disciples of large sects – there was no way that they would be poor.

“The heart of man is truly dangerous. Just a while ago, all of the martial artists were brought together by the dangers from all around and were able to temporarily unite against a common enemy. But now that treasures were found and everyone has spread out, as long as one cleanly kills someone else, it would be equal to a unknown disappearance." Lin Ming's fingers calmly traced his spatial ring.

Mu Qianyu's footsteps hesitated for just a moment, and then she continued to pick the Blood Ghost Flowers as she pretended that she hadn't noticed anyone.

Not too far away from the Blood Ghost Flowers, there were two blurry shapes of distorted light hiding in the shadows. Of these two, one was an old man at the very early Revolving Core realm. He walked towards Mu Qianyu a step at a time, his eyes deep. He had complete confidence in his camouflage technique. And even if he was noticed, the cultivation of his two prey was only at the Xiantian realm and Houtian realm.

Beside the old man was a young man with a surprisingly large head. He greedily looked at Mu Qianyu and licked his lips as he said, "Old Zhou, you are far too careful. You still think we need to sneak attack to deal with these two?"

"It's better to be safe than sorry. I only broke through to the Revolving Core realm a mere 20 years ago. But, these people are all the top talents of their sects. They will invariably have various outstanding methods to save their lives. Once they escape it will be extremely troublesome! When we attack, I'll deal with that woman and you deal with that little Houtian brat."

"Hehe, that Houtian realm boy actually thought to come here to split the spoils, but he was only chasing death." The youth named Lian Jie sneered and took out a shining black saber from his spatial ring.

"Don't underestimate that boy. He likely has the combat strength of a Xiantian master. Those martial artists that came here are only nearly all geniuses. For him to come this far with his Houtian cultivation proves that he isn't simple!" As the old man spoke, he revolved his true essence. His concealment technique was able to isolate his true essence fluctuations, thus he didn't fear alerting Mu Qianyu with his murderous aura.

"Hehe, if he has a Xiantian master's combat strength, then that's the same as me!" Lian Jie spoke with great confidence. He was one of the direct disciples of the South Sea Demon Region. Although his cultivation was only at the early Xiantian realm, he was actually able to compare to an extreme Xiantian master. Generally speaking, if he ran into a martial artist with a cultivation similar to his own, he would be able to easily kill them.

Mu Qianyu calmly bent over to pluck the Blood Ghost Flowers, completely exposing her back to the enemy. At this time, the black-clothed man grinned demonically and said, "Go!"

Chi!

A black sword light slashed through space like a serpent spitting out poison.

Mu Qianyu gently smiled and swished around. It was unknown when, but Mu Qianyu had extracted a four foot long crimson-colored sword and was firmly gripping it in her hand. Luminescent flames flashed out and a phoenix of blazing flames shot to the sky!

In this year and a half, although Mu Qianyu hadn't been able to break through to the Revolving Core realm, her strength had been constantly rising. Especially in these last three months, Mu Qianyu had been able to meditate on the sixth layer of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' cultivation method that Lin Ming had brought back. Although she had only managed to comprehend some of the basics within, it was enough to allow her strength to climb to yet another peak!

Bang!

The black sword light was crushed. The flaming phoenix, without diminishing in the least, opened its beak wide to swallow the black-clothed old man!

"What!?"

The black-clothed old man's complexion completely changed. His sneak attack was completely routed with a single move. A Xiantian realm girl was able to forcefully resist a

Revolving Core master! Within the entire South Horizon Region, the number of top talents like this could be counted on a single hand! How could he have such horrible luck!?

As the black-clothed man attacked, the large-headed youth also moved. His four foot long saber cut through space. The blade edge shined, its target was naturally Lin Ming.

The big-headed youth had a strength comparable to a normal extreme Xiantian master's combat strength. If he was at his full and complete strength then Lin Ming might have to waste effort. But now, almost 80% of the big-headed youth's true essence was suppressed. In the face of Lin Ming's power of Tempering Marrow, it was simply a joke and a half.

Lin Ming didn't even use his spear, he only smashed down with his fist!

Bang!

The power of Tempering Marrow that completely ignored the laws that suppressed true essence erupted. As the big-headed youth's saber was pulverized into pieces, a look of fear entered into his eyes. Lin Ming's fist punched into the big-headed youth's top right chest.

With the sound of flesh and bone being crushed, the big-headed youth gave a miserable scream and spat out a mouthful of blood as he flew backwards. Because his right chest had been smashed apart by Lin Ming's fist, his right hand was lying limp at an odd angle. It was obviously broken.

“Mm? He didn't die?” Lin Ming was a bit surprised. The big-headed youth's cultivation was only at the early Xiantian realm and his true essence was also mostly suppressed. He had thought that a random fist attack would be able to kill him, but he didn't expect that this big-headed youth would live. This fellow was probably some well-known genius from the South Sea Demon Region.

As the black-clothed old man was flustered by Mu Qianyu's counterstrike, he turned around to see that the big-headed youth was sent soaring backwards and immediately blanched.

“Lian Jie!” The black-clothed man panicked. He obviously cared about the life of this youth named Lian Jie. He wanted to turn around and rescue him, but at this moment, Mu Qianyu’s second sword attack was already cutting straight down at him!

Flaming true essence roiled and rolled. Where it went, stones and soil would burst apart.

“You idiot!”

The black-clothed man angrily cried, breathless. He lifted his sword to resist Mu Qianyu’s strike, but his body was sent flying away by the flame blast, his face paling.

However, he had borrowed the impact of this blow to fall beside the big-headed youth.

“Lian Jie!”

The black-clothed old man forcefully pressed down the tumbling messy true essence in his body. He held up the half-dead Lian Jie and force fed him a pill.

In a life or death battle, how could he give the enemy the chance to recover from their wounds? Lin Ming stepped forwards preparing to attack, but at this time, the black-clothed man suddenly said, “There is no need to fight. If we continue there is no advantage to any of us!”

As Lin Ming listened to this he almost laughed, but was also angry at the same time. This man thought it was fine to ambush them to kill them, but now that his attack had failed and he was discovered, he thought that he was alright to not finish this battle?

What a joke!

Lin Ming was disciplined to bother with the black-clothed old man’s nonsense. He took out the Great Desolate Blood Halberd from his spatial ring and stabbed towards the black-clothed old man, 13 Blood Drinking Seals flying in the air!

Blood Seal Twisting Murder!

Lin Ming had already been wanting to fight with a Revolving Core powerhouse. However, the gap between a Xiantian master and a Revolving Core master were simply too great. Normally, Lin Ming wouldn't have anywhere near the ability to do so, but in this broken world, his opponent's true essence was under an enormous suppression. Naturally Lin Ming would not miss this chance.

In an instant, Lin Ming had directly opened the Heretical God Force. The power of Tempering Marrow was also galvanized to the limit!

As the black-clothed old man saw Lin Ming's halberd thrusting towards him, his heart burned with a raging anger. Although he realized he wasn't a match for Mu Qianyu, that was his bad luck for meeting her here. But this mere late Houtian realm youth actually thought to come and attack him too, how could he not be angry!?

"Get out of this old man's way!"

The black-clothed old man's sword slashed down at Lin Ming, and a thick sword light shot towards Lin Ming's chest. As Mu Qianyu saw this she felt her heart tighten and wanted to move. But at this time, she actually saw that the 13 Blood Drinking Seals on Lin Ming's Great Desolate Blood Halberd were twisting into a swirling crimson vortex. The black-clothed old man's sword bounced off of this vortex!

"What!?"

The black-clothed old man was rattled. He had never dreamed that his sword would actually be deflected by a mere late Houtian realm junior!

Just how was this possible!?

At this time, Lin Ming's halberd had bounced off the black-clothed old man's black sword and was piercing towards his chest!

At this critical juncture, the black-clothed old man bit down on his tongue and prepared to retreat. However, at this time, the spinning Blood Drinking Seals' repulsive force had turned into an attractive force, pulling in the black-clothed old man's body. The black-clothed old man was surprised to see that he actually was unable to retreat!

This world's laws already disallowed him to fly. Coupled with the attractive power of this crimson vortex, the black-clothed old saw with his own eyes as he was being sucked in. In horror, he felt as if his own spirit was fleeing his body!

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd shined, directly thrusting towards the black-clothed old man's throat!

"Ahhhhh!"

The black-clothed old man howled and crazily chopped down on the Great Desolate Blood Halberd.

Bang –

A bloody light shot into the sky. Waves of true essence swept out, but under the suppressive laws of this world, these true essence waves only managed to spread out a few dozen feet before completely disappearing! The power of the laws that suppressed true essence in this world were made extremely clear.

The black-clothed old man grasped his long black sword. His right hand was stained red with blood. As he looked at Lin Ming, his eyes were filled with abject terror.

Was this really a late Houtian realm martial artist?

This was impossible!

"You… who are you?"

The black-clothed old man's voice trembled. In the ancient legends and texts, there had been many stories recorded of Xiantian masters killing Revolving Core masters, Revolving Core masters killing Life Destruction masters, or Life Destruction masters killing Divine Sea masters. But, in all of these records, there had never been one where a Houtian realm boy had the strength to kill a Revolving Core master!

This was simply impossible!

The Sky Spill Continent had a legend. There was a man named Emperor Shakya who had seven different kinds of martial intents. He had meditated under a bodhi tree for seven days and seven nights, fusing these seven martial intents into one, gaining a golden immortal body and shattered the martial void. But even Emperor Shakya would not have been able to fight a Revolving Core master at the Houtian realm!

The black-clothed old man's complexion was extremely ugly. He thought that Lin Ming might be some late Revolving Core master, or even one of those strange old Life Destruction realm fogies that was hiding himself to trick him. But, he instantly crossed out this insanely absurd idea. Why would one of those old monsters do something like that? They should have all gone to the Demon God Imperial Palace; why would they be interested in toying with him?

As Mu Qianyu arrived beside Lin Ming, she was also surprised. But, it was only a bit of surprise; it wasn't to the degree that she couldn't accept it. As she travelled with Lin Ming, she had been able to faintly guess that Lin Ming had some sort of strange ability to avoid the laws that ruled this world. Lin Ming already had the strength of a top Xiantian master. With the laws of the world aiding him, it wasn't strange for him to force back an early Revolving Core master.

Chapter 467 – Killing Strike

Chapter 467 – Killing Strike

…

…

…

“Careful, this fellow wants to run away.” Mu Qianyu said with a true essence sound transmission.

“Mm…” Lin Ming quietly stepped to the side, faintly sealing away the direction that the black-clothed man could escape in.

If this was the outside world, in a battle between Revolving Core powerhouses whose strength were about the same, killing the other party would be very difficult. This was because when a Revolving Core powerhouse gave up everything to desperately escape, the speed at which they could fly away was amazing.

But in this world, not only was true essence suppressed, but most of all… they couldn’t fly away!

This greatly increased the difficulty of any escape.

The black-clothed old man also naturally realized this point, and his complexion became increasingly grim and cloudy. If his luck was bad today, there was a high chance he would perish here.

Lin Ming locked his perception onto the black-clothed man. As he kept himself on guard, he began to think of something.

A moment ago when he had used the Blood Drinking Seals, Lin Ming had discovered that the power of the Blood Drinking Seals was completely unfettered by the suppressive laws that governed this broken world.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming's mind stirred.

Of course! This 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' was a cultivation method which was originally created by the Demon Emperor. The laws of this broken world naturally wouldn't be able to suppress the Blood Drinking Seals if this world was ruled by the Demon Emperor. How could someone set down laws that caged their own cultivation method!

Thinking this, Lin Ming revolved true essence within his body according to the cultivation method of the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'. However, he discovered that his true essence was still suppressed by unfathomable laws.

In other words, this broken world was only able to suppress true essence. It was unable to suppress other forms of energy.

The reason that the Blood Drinking Seals had the unique ability to transcend the suppressive laws of this world was likely because they were a special form of energy. These Blood Drinking Seals were formed of blood essence and could be attributed as being life force.

Whether it was non-attribute true essence, or the five elements, or wind and thunder, or even heaven and earth origin energy, all of these were suppressed by the laws of this world.

But the power of the human body, the strength of Tempering Marrow, and the Blood Drinking Seals actually didn't belong to the category of true essence, and thus existed outside of these laws of suppression.

Thinking this, Lin Ming understood. In this world, there were many people that practiced the form of energy known as 'true essence'. But in other worlds and other lands, there were many other races and beings that practiced cultivation methods using different forms of energy. It wouldn't be strange if they had a completely different sort of martial arts civilization.

As Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu approached, the pressure on the black-clothed man began to multiply. He gripped his sword, his true essence revolving to the limit in his body, and suddenly said, "There is no need to fight. If we continue there is no advantage to any of us!"

This was the second time that this black-clothed old man had said this.

Mu Qianyu's curiosity was piqued, "What are you trying to say?"

The black-clothed man's expression was sullen as he coldly said, "The youth that you just severely wounded is called Lian Jie. He is a genius of my South Sea Demon Region's Lian bloodline. He is a talent of great worth within the Lian bloodline!"

"And so what?"

The black-clothed man coldly snorted. He said, "His grandfather Lian Chengji's cultivation is at the middle Revolving Core realm, and he is also one of the Elders that entered into this broken world with the South Sea Demon Region! There is a special spell on Lian Jie's body. If you severely wound him or kill him, all of this will be recorded within the spell and then sent to Lian Chengji. Although you are strong, you cannot defeat Lian Chengji, much less the combined strength of the South Sea Demon Region forces. It is simply not something that your Divine Phoenix Island can compete with!"

As Lin Ming listened to the black-clothed old man, he frowned. Before, he had heard of some people calling out for an Elder Lian of the South Sea Demon Region. And this big-headed youth's surname was also Lian. Not just that, but this black-clothed man had appeared extremely nervous before. It was most likely that he wasn't lying.

Even Mu Qianyu's delicate eyebrows were pushed together. If they managed to make a mortal enemy of Lian Chengji, that would indeed be very troublesome.

The black-clothed old man saw Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu's reactions and felt relieved. At the same time, he smiled with self-satisfaction and said, "Humph, what this old man said is all true, and I am willing to take an oath on my heart of martial arts that if you two stop and let us go, I will lead Lian Jie to leave this place. I do not think that you would be willing to see the Divine Phoenix Island and South Sea Demon Region forces fight each other just because of this little matter! This old man will speak frankly. If the two sides fight, then everyone from Divine Phoenix Island will die!"

The black-clothed old man's voice became gradually louder and tougher. He was well aware that if he didn't take a tough approach at this time and 'overwhelm' the other two, there was no way he would be making it out of here. There was no way that kind or sweet words would get him safely out of this predicament, thus the best method of survival was to make them be afraid for their own lives.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment and then said, "You said a moment ago that if Lian Jie is severely wounded or dead, the spell within him will record it. So if that is true, our appearances are already known by Lian Chengji!"

The black-clothed old man assumed Lin Ming was afraid and was overjoyed. He said, "This is true, but as long as the injuries are healed, I can seek mercy for you two in front of the Elder. Perhaps he might not even bother with this matter!"

"Hehe, I really want to thank you. Ah, so this spell really does just record our appearances." As Lin Ming spoke, his lips curved up in a dark smile and his murderous intent suddenly poured from all sides!

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd in his hand stabbed out!

"You!!!" The black-clothed old man's complexion immediately changed. At this time, all he could do was lift his sword to defend. "Do you want to die? Lian Chengji will..."

The black-clothed old man couldn't even finish his words. At this time, Mu Qianyu's attack also arrived. Flames twisted all around her body, and Mu Qianyu appeared like a crimson butterfly of fire, suddenly arriving beside the black-clothed old man. The Vermillion Bird Sword slashed out at a cunning angle, cutting towards the black-clothed old man's left ribcage!

"Ahhh!"

The black-clothed old man shouted and his body erupted with true essence. However, under the suppressive laws of this world, how much could erupting with true essence help him?

Boom!

The black-clothed slapped away Lin Ming's halberd and abandoned his left hand to slap away Mu Qianyu's sword. It had to be said that the strength a man on the verge of death could find in his final moments was truly terrifying.

The black-clothed old man was able to shockingly deflect Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu's attack, and then immediately turned to escape!

Lin Ming sneered. The halberd laws in his hand changed, "Primeval Halberd Strike!"

Thirteen Blood Drinking Seals formed into a crimson vortex that howled out. A powerful towing force spread out, covering the black-clothed old man's body!

"It's this move again!"

The black-clothed old man's heart filled with a wave of despair. As he was on the ground, this force wasn't enough to pull him back, only reduce his speed. But this was already a fatal period of time; Mu Qianyu's sword of death had already arrived in front of the black-clothed old man.

A sword flashed; a thick sword light pierced towards the black-clothed old man's chest.

After both of his arms were injured, the black-clothed old man was no longer able to resist this strike from Mu Qianyu again. He madly spat out a mouthful of blood, and his form was stained red as he was sent flying backwards.

Pu!

The black-clothed old man felt a cold feeling at his back, and helplessly looked down to see a crimson halberd edge coming out of his chest, having pierced his heart and lungs!

Unwilling to accept this outcome, the black-clothed old man cried out a few times, and then perished on the spot

“He’s dead…” Lin Ming whispered, a bit staggered by his own abilities. Although he had borrowed the power of the suppressive laws that governed this world, this was still the first time that he had killed a Revolving Core master!

After Lin Ming took the black-clothed old man’s spatial ring, he glanced at the corpse. He hesitated for a moment. The first thought he had was to feed the black-clothed old man’s blood essence to the Magic Cube.

The last time he had used Ouyang Boyan’s blood essence. This time, he would probably need the blood essence of a Revolving Core master.

However, feeding the Magic Cube this blood essence and obtaining a new soul fragment wouldn’t be effective in any way for increasing his current combat strength. Not just that, but there was no safe place in this broken world to enter into the Magic Cube.

Thus, this time he might as well take the blood essence to practice his Blood Drinking Seals. In his current situation, he desperately needed any way to increase his strength.

And the Blood Drinking Seals were not suppressed by the world’s laws; they would be exceptionally potent in battle.

A Revolving Core master's blood essence was several times superior to that of a Xiantian master, and the Blood Drinking Seal formed of the blood essence was also many times better. This Blood Drinking Seal, compared to the other 13 Blood Drinking Seals, could most likely increase the power of the 'Great Desolate Blood Halberd' by 50%.

Thinking this, Lin Ming grit his teeth. The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder shot into the old man's body, and with crackling sounds, the black-clothed old man's body erupted into a fountain of blood fog. The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder that had some blood essence stuck onto it flew back to Lin Ming's hand, where it slowly turned into a new Blood Drinking Seal.

This was the 14th Blood Drinking Seal!

As for the Magic Cube, Lin Ming wasn't worried. As long as he gained the power to kill a Revolving Core master outside, it was only a matter of time before he opened it again; there was no need to be anxious about it.

Mu Qianyu looked at Lin Ming with surprise. She hadn't known that Lin Ming was practicing a cultivation method of the demonic path. "Lin Ming, you..."

"I found the cultivation method jade slip at some ancient ruins and decided to just study it since it was convenient." Lin Ming casually made up an excuse.

Mu Qianyu looked a bit worried. "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, if you practice too many cultivation methods rather than refine what you have, it can easily lead to impure true essence and other complications."

Mu Qianyu didn't care what sort of cultivation method Lin Ming practiced, even if it was one from the demonic path. She was only worried that Lin Ming was practicing too many things of too great a variety, and that this would cause his true essence to become impure.

Lin Ming had already thought about this. To him, the three cultivation methods he practiced, the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians', and 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' all had different and separate functions.

The ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ was an essence gathering system of the Xiantian, Revolving Core, and Divine Sea realms.

The ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ was used in Tempering Marrow, opening the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

As for the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’, the truth was that it couldn’t be considered a cultivation method, and thus there would be no situation that arose where Lin Ming’s true essence would become impure. The reason that Lin Ming had practiced the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ was for spear skills and killing strength.

Otherwise, Lin Ming’s spear skills would be at too great a disadvantage.

As Lin Ming turned around to glance at the big-headed youth that had been lying on the ground after having been fed a pill by the black-clothed old man. The youth’s bleeding had already stopped, and his face lacked any color.

As this big-headed youth noticed Lin Ming’s eyes on him, he panicked in fear. He tried to sound fierce even had his heart shook, almost fainting, “If… if you kill me, then… you… you will die!”

Lin Ming didn’t even bother speaking. He waved his hand and a bloody light flashed. A wave of blood poured down the big-headed youth’s throat, and he died where he lay.

With a ‘peng’, all of the big-headed youth’s blood essence was absorbed by the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder!

After Lin Ming took the youth’s spatial ring, he flicked his fingers and two fireballs shot out. One landed on the big-headed youth and the other on the black-clothed old man, turning their bodies into ashes. The wind blew, and every last remnant of them scattered into the wind without a trace.

Chapter 468 – Nameless Manual

Chapter 468 – Nameless Manual

…

…

…

“Let’s go. It’s not a good idea to stay here any longer.” Lin Ming said.

“Mm!” Mu Qianyu rolled her long sleeves up and directly took the Blood Ghost Flowers into her spatial ring. Like this, the two of them immediately left the scene.

After they fled dozens of miles away, Lin Ming slowed down and finally stopped. He turned to Mu Qianyu and said, “Senior-apprentice Sister Mu, let’s use our appearance changing technique again.”

Since the big-headed youth had a spell on him that was able to record the appearances of those that killed him, they would use Bi Luo’s appearance changing technique. With this technique, they could change appearance, sound, or even temperament.

The reason that Lin Ming had killed the black-clothed old man and the big-headed youth was that he didn’t want to cloud his thoughts by not doing so. Lin Ming didn’t want to swallow an insult and then forever watch out for a knife to his back. But after the killing, he had to completely clean up the aftermath of his actions.

Mu Qianyu also had this idea; she didn’t want to have any conflict with the South Sea Demon Region.

Since their appearances were recorded, not only did they have to change their looks, but also change their clothes. If they had changed their appearances and ended up getting caught and exposed because their clothes were the same, it would truly be stupid on their part.

Lin Ming quickly stripped down and took out a new set of clothes from his spatial ring to wear. He casually tossed his old clothes to the side and burnt them away.

As he turned around to glance at Mu Qianyu, he saw that she had formed a curtain of fire origin energy, completely covering her body from view and hiding everything behind.

A woman would naturally be slower at changing clothes. After Mu Qianyu came out, she had switched into a long blue dress and seemed filled with a spring freshness, with a bit of fragrant cloying flavor. The slim fit dress perfectly outlined Mu Qianyu's elegant and sumptuous figure, causing Lin Ming's eyes to brighten at the sight. Although Mu Qianyu was beautiful, the women of Sky Spill Continent usually preferred loose clothing that obscured their body; it wouldn't be so stunning like it was now.

Mu Qianyu walked over to Lin Ming, leaving a sweet wind behind her. Between the two of them, although they didn't have many feelings of exchange, the seeds of their sentiment had quickly begun to bud in their hearts.

The bloody wilderness didn't have any true dangers. As they made their ways forwards, there was nothing that blocked their path. But, they didn't encounter a lucky chance such as the Blood Ghost Flowers again.

Lin Ming used the free time to examine and organize all the items within the black-clothed old man and the big-headed youth's spatial rings. The two of them were important individuals of their sect and were naturally wealthy.

There was a massive number of medium-grade true essence stones as well as many high quality treasures. Although they were not of much useful to Lin Ming, if they were exchanged for true essence stones, they would be worth a great deal.

Lin Ming placed these objects in another spatial ring. At this time, among all the other miscellaneous objects, Lin Ming found a manual that seemed to have been passed down for a number of years. The manual was black and had no title. Although some of the pages had been torn out, they had all been bound back again.

“Mm… this is…” Lin Ming flipped open the manual and found that the contents inside were records of all sorts of heavenly treasures and materials that had long since vanished from the Sky Spill Continent. If his guess wasn’t wrong, then this was an ancient text of the Demon Region. The history of Silent Demon Emperor City was much longer and more magnificent than Divine Phoenix Island; it wasn’t strange that they would have a great number of ancient texts.

As Lin Ming browsed through the pages, he found that a page in the middle had been intentionally folded. When he opened it, he found that the treasures drawn within were something similar to a common ginseng. It was only that the root hairs were much thicker and meandering like a dragon. Next to this image were small lines of dense characters. On top, the first three words were – Nirvana Dragon Root.

Lin Ming’s mind stirred and his breath quickened. As he read the note below the image, his fingers subconsciously clenched the pages.

“Nirvana Dragon Root is a miracle medicine from the memory of the Supreme Elders from the Realm of the Gods that is used in Tempering Marrow. Could something like the Nirvana Dragon Root really exist within the Sky Spill Continent?”

Lin Ming had believed with good cause that this and other wonderful medicines from the Realm of the Gods would be impossible for him to obtain, no matter what sort of good fortune he had. Thus, he could only look for substitutes to use for Tempering Marrow.

Even within the Realm of the Gods, the Nirvana Dragon Root had a sky-high price. The Nirvana Dragon Root had a very long lifespan. It could life for tens of thousands, or even hundreds of thousands of years! But, for the Nirvana Dragon Root to be an effective medicine for Tempering Marrow, it had to be above ten thousand years old!

This also increased the threshold of Body Transformation. And relative to the law formulas of Body Transformation, it was much simpler than walking the essence gathering path of the Xiantian, Revolving Core, and Divine Sea realms.

"Is the treasure within the Demon God Imperial Palace the Nirvana Dragon Root?"

Lin Ming suddenly had this idea. Otherwise, there was no way that the black-clothed old man would have this ancient manual in his spatial ring and also have especially folded it at this page. He probably had the idea that he might be lucky and thus thoroughly studied this treasure in advance. If he could obtain some benefits from this, that would be best. But, if he couldn't, that wouldn't be a loss either.

Lin Ming turned to Mu Qianyu and asked, "Senior-apprentice Sister, when Master Ancestor went to the Demon God Imperial Palace, did she tell you what would be found inside?"

Mu Qianyu shook her head and said, "Master Ancestor wasn't too clear on what would be found within the Demon God Imperial Palace. But she deduced that it was some sort of heavenly treasure or material that would be able to increase the chances of a Revolving Core master crossing the stages of Life Destruction. Otherwise, there was no way that so many great Life Destruction masters would gather together within the South Sea."

The Nirvana Dragon Root had been recorded within the Demon Emperor's personally written letter. Although Xuan Wuji and Xuan Yuqie had announced this matter already, they had only told it to the Elders of the South Sea Demon Region. They naturally wouldn't spread this news to those outside. As for those like Nanyun Wang and Mu Fengxian, they had probably obtained some sort of news, but weren't sure about the exact situation.

However, even if there was such a great treasure located within the Demon God Imperial Palace, it wasn't something that the likes of Lin Ming could ever come into contact with no matter how far he stretched his toes. Thus, no matter whether the Demon God Imperial Palace had been opened or not, he wouldn't miss anything at all.

Lin Ming stared at this nameless manual and quietly thought to himself, 'This broken world has already had more than one connection to the Realm of the Gods. For instance, the transmission array as well as the vicious beasts in the ancient forest. It wouldn't be strange if there were also heavenly materials from the Realm of the Gods here! This Nirvana Dragon Root can live for an extremely long time, and is nearly impossible to cultivate even in a great sect. But in this broken world, it might have existed for over tens of thousands of years. If this Nirvana Dragon Root really exists, it must have reached a horrifying degree.' If he used it for Tempering Marrow, it might even be enough to help complete it!

Thinking this, Lin Ming was excited. Originally, he didn't care much about the treasures of this broken world. That was because he didn't lack any cultivation methods nor did he need weapons. But now, with the Nirvana Dragon Root that lived for tens of thousands of years in front of him, he couldn't suppress the desire in his heart.

Reaching the end of Tempering Marrow was extremely difficult. In particular, the tempering of the spinal cord. The spinal cord and marrow were similar, but the truth was that they were two completely different bodily systems. The marrow created blood, and while the spinal cord didn't create blood, it distributed signals from the nerve center.

The spinal cord was located at the spinal column. If he couldn't complete the tempering of the spinal cord, Lin Ming's spine would always remain his weakness. The last bone would be unable to resist such a powerful pressure. If a human's spine was cut off, they would lose all ability to act and function.

Due to the limited amounts of precious medicines, even disciples from the Realm of the Gods failed to complete Tempering Marrow. This would cause their foundation to be unstable, and this legacy of physical weakness would continue through their lives.

Lin Ming's Tempering Marrow was only 60% complete, and he was finding it difficult to continue any longer. If he ate another Shattered Demon Heart Crystal now, it might not even increase his Tempering Marrow by another percent. Not just that, but he had already eaten all of the Shattered Demon Heart Crystals.

So to Lin Ming, coming across a Nirvana Dragon Root that had lived for tens of thousands of years could only be considered serendipity!

However, as Lin Ming thought about all the Life Destruction powerhouses that had gathered together at the Demon God Imperial Place, his passionate thoughts began to cool down. These Life Destruction fellows – even if their true essence was suppressed to a mere 10% – would still have the ability to instantly kill him. How could he possible struggle with these people for treasures in the Demon God Imperial Palace?

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, what are you thinking about?"

"Nothing… just some unrealistic nonsense." Lin Ming ruefully smiled, putting the ancient nameless manual away.

With such a great opportunity in front of him, he was a bit unwilling to not even try to fight for it. However, even if he wanted to fight, just how could he do that? If anything went wrong, he would simply lose his life!

………..

At another end of the bloody wilderness, there were already over a hundred martial artists gathered. The bloody wilderness was shaped like a narrow funnel, with thick and thin ends, and the surrounding was also blocked off by arrays. Thus, all of the martial artists that had dispersed into the wilderness earlier had gathered back together as one.

Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu quietly joined the crowd. As they looked around, they were shocked to see that around 30 to 40% of the original number were missing!

There were even some Revolving Core Elders that had disappeared.

There were some sects, such as the Five Element Region's Verdant Wood Sect or Deep Earth Sect, that had a few Revolving Core Elders leading their disciples. But now, many of them had perished!

This caused Lin Ming to gasp. In this bloody wilderness there were no obvious dangers, yet so many people had died. Just how did they die?

It went without saying!

Whether it was those from the righteous path killing those from the demonic path, or those from the demonic path killing those from the righteous path, none of this was strange. Righteous path, demonic path, in the end, these were nothing but labels. This bloody battlefield was already filled with a thick killing aura from those that had passed away here before. This broken world also contained all sorts of benefits. For the two sides to coexist in peace together was obviously impossible!

When all of the martial artists were gathered together, there were those that were apprehensive and did not dare to start a fight. But when they had dispersed into smaller groups, a slaughter was inevitable. Let alone the righteous path against the demonic path, even in one's own camp there was a chance that they would be betrayed. Killing each other in this bloody wilderness was extremely likely.

Even in that primal forest where they had been attacked by vicious beasts and monstrous vines, they still hadn't lost so many people.

Humans were truly the most fearful beings.

Those who had survived remained silent or expressionless. It was unknown what they had experienced in the bloody wilderness or even what they had obtained.

There were only a few juniors that couldn't help but conceal a bit of a happy smile. Obviously, they had obtained a great harvest from the bloody wilderness.

However, in the crowd, there was one person whose expression was gloomy and terrifying.

He was the South Sea Demon Region Elder, Lian Chengji…

After two hours passed and he didn’t see any new martial artists arrive, Lian Chengji suddenly coldly said, “Who is the one that killed my grandson!?”

A surge of murderous intent flowed out, enveloping everyone. They were all stunned for a moment, but naturally no one spoke at this time.

“Hehe!” Lian Chengji cruelly smiled. After Lian Jie had died, the spell that was on him at the time had transmitted some vague information about who had done it. Besides appearance, he had also found out the culprit’s approximate cultivation – the Houtian realm.

Although he didn’t find anyone in the crowd who matched in appearance, the number of Houtian realm martial artists in the crowd couldn’t be counted with more than a single hand!

Chapter 469 – Arrogance

Chapter 469 – Arrogance

…

…

…

Lian Chengji's eyes had already locked onto a Houtian realm martial artist from the Verdant Wood Sect. He didn't believe that a mere Houtian realm martial artist had the ability to kill his grandson, but if he could find the Houtian martial artist that had been present at the time of the murder, then he would be able to find out just who the murderer was.

"You, come over here!"

Lian Chengji pointed at the Houtian martial artist and his entire body overflowed with killing intent. He was originally a martial artist from the South Sea Demon Region, and his path in life had involved the wholesale massacre of countless lives. His killing intent was able to nearly manifest into reality. If he sent it out like it was now, it wasn't a force that a Houtian realm martial artist could resist.

Let alone the Houtian martial artist that was noticed by Lian Chengji, even some Xiantian martial artists were frightened. They cast their eyes down, not even daring to breathe in this suppressive atmosphere.

"Humph!" Seeing that the martial artist's legs had already become weak, Lian Chengji coldly snorted and then stepped forwards. He reached out his hand and a massive suction force appeared out of nowhere, directly catching that Houtian martial artist in his hand.

"Ahh!"

The disciple cried out in panic, his expression turning white as snow!

Bam!

With a light sound, Lian Chengji opened a scroll painting; the image on it was Lian Jie.

“Have you seen him?”

Lian Chengji’s voice was absolutely cold as he showed the scroll painting to the disciple.

The poor disciple was terrified. His entire body shook and his voice quivered as he said, “No… no I haven’t…”

“You haven’t? Hehe, then don’t blame me!”

Lian Chengji slapped his palm down on the disciple’s head and true essence suddenly surged downwards, directly shattering that disciple’s spiritual sea into pieces. This was the Soul Searching Technique.

The Soul Searching Technique was one of the cruelest and most malevolent demonic path secret skills. Once it was used, it would turn someone directly into a hapless idiot, or they might even die on the scene.

The disciple futily grabbed onto Lian Chengji’s hand. His body began to violently shake like an epileptic. His face turned white like paper, and two rivers of blood flowed from his nostrils.

As the other lower disciples saw this, they also paled in fright. But those from the Verdant Wood Sect actually didn’t dare to make a sound. Their Revolving Core Elder Ancestor had already perished within the bloody wilderness just a moment ago! In this broken world, true essence was thoroughly suppressed; they could only use a mere 20% of their original strength. If one couldn’t fly, then escape was difficult. Thus, many Revolving Core Elders had died because of this reason!

Let alone that their Elder had already died, but even if he was still living, he was in no way Lian Chengji's match.

Now, within the entire group left over of the Verdant Wood Sect, the strongest one was an extreme Xiantian master. In front of Lian Chengji, they weren't even worth a fart. No matter what Lian Chengji did, even if it was the Soul Searching Technique on one of their fellow disciples, they didn't have the strength to resist. Many of them were even hoping that Lian Chengji would finish his Soul Searching Technique quicker and leave, so that a calamity wouldn't befall them too.

"Humph, you really don't know, what waste!" As Lian Chengji finished, he casually threw away the disciple like a dead dog. That disciple was bleeding from all over his head, his body was still quaking, and his eyes had turned completely white. He wasn't likely to live much longer.

There weren't masters present on the level of Lian Chengji. The Great Zen Temple's long-bearded monk and Divine Phoenix Island's Great Elder Mu Chihuo all remained silent, turning a blind eye to this tragedy.

"He is too arrogant!" As Lin Ming saw this, he grimaced.

"Lin Ming, don't be impulsive." Mu Qianyu couldn't help but caution Lin Ming. Getting into a conflict with Lian Chengji at this time was not wise.

"Mm, I know." Lin Ming's voice was calm. But in his heart, he was already estimating Lian Chengji's strength. Since he came to the exit of the bloody wilderness, he found that his true essence had been suppressed by another 5%, and now he had only 20% of his true essence strength left. As he evaluated himself, he also had a newly-minted Revolving Core level Blood Drinking Seal, and the Blood Drinking Seals had the ability to completely disregard the suppressive rules of this world!

With this advantage, would he be able to fight?

Lin Ming lacked full confidence in his mind. After all, Lian Chengji was a middle Revolving Core realm master, and he had an extremely profound heritage of abilities to draw from. As for what the limit of his strength was, it was hard to say!

“Rest assured, it’s impossible for Lian Chengji to look for us due to some unfounded speculation. Although Divine Phoenix Island is currently weaker than the South Sea Demon Region, if we really fought, then the South Sea Demon Region would also fear us. There is still the Great Zen Temple that is trying to snipe them from the side. If we fight, the ones to benefit won’t be them – there’s no way they would do that.” Mu Qianyu said. But, even she didn’t know that Lian Chengji was finding clues about the murderer based on cultivation. If she knew, there was no way she would be so relaxed.

This time, Lian Chengji turned to a Houtian realm martial artist from the Deep Earth Sect. The disciple was immediately frightened and he turned ashen. “Senior, mercy, mercy, please forgive me, this useless one doesn’t know anything, I have never seen that man before!”

Lian Chengji sneered, “Whether you have seen or not, I will still search your soul for proof!”

“Ahhh!”

The disciple screamed in despair, then turned around and tried to escape. However, in front of a middle Revolving Core master, trying to escape was just fooling himself.

Liang Chengji reached out his hand and directly caught that Deep Earth Sect disciple; he used the Soul Searching Technique!

All of the other Deep Earth Sect martial artists didn’t dare to step forwards to protect their fellow disciple. Even those other fellow apprentices that had good relations were silent. A chill thrummed in the air, and their eyes turned to the side. They feared that if they got involved in this mess, then the one to die next would be them!

Seeing this, Lin Ming’s complexion sunk. Two continuous times, Lian Chengji had looked for a smaller sect’s Houtian martial artist. The smaller sect he could understand, as he didn’t yet dare to bully someone from a larger sect, but why would he only look for a Houtian martial artist?

Could it be…

Lin Ming gasped. Before, he had only considered the question of whether the spell would record appearances. But what if the spell could also record cultivation?

Lin Ming didn’t have the ability to hide his cultivation. Even in front of Lian Chengji, whose true essence was suppressed to 20%, his appearance changing technique was barely able to hold on.

As he turned to look at Mu Qianyu, she had also realized this. Her complexion was grim.

“Humph, also a waste!” Lian Chengji tossed aside that Deep Earth Sect disciple that had been turned into an idiot. Then his eyes turned to Divine Phoenix Island and the Great Zen Temple.

There were only three Houtian realm martial artists left, and all of them belonged to these two forces.

These two forces were particularly difficult to deal with, especially Great Zen Temple. Their overall strength wasn’t any worse than the South Sea Demon Region’s!

As for Divine Phoenix Island, their current strength was only around half of the South Sea Demon Region’s, so he could still bully them with his strength.

Not only had Lian Jie been Lian Chengji’s grandson, but he was also one of the greatest talents of the Lian bloodline. It was impossible for Lian Chengji to let him perish here in such an unjust manner, otherwise his thoughts would never be clear. There had only been five Houtian realm martial artists present, so how could he not try to find out just who had killed his grandson?

He first turned to Divine Phoenix Island's side and his eyes locked onto Lin Ming. "You, have you seen the person on this scroll painting?"

Facing this suppressive aura, Lin Ming remained unmoved. With only 20% of his aura left over, even if it was released by a middle Revolving Core realm master, it was nothing to Lin Ming!

His expression was the same as he said, "I have not seen nor do I know!"

"Right…" Lian Chengji sneered, but he was secretly shocked. This boy wasn't frightened at all by his aura?

The two martial artists before had been frightened to the point that they had also dropped to their knees from shaking. Lian Chengji's path was a killing path, and his killing intent was thick and ominous; it wasn't something that a Houtian martial artist could resist!

But Lin Ming remained calm throughout!

This boy!

Lian Chengji grit his teeth. He could faintly feel that there was something wrong with Lin Ming's face, as if there was something there blocking his perception.

Mm? There was definitely something suspicious about this boy!

Lian Chengji had a premonition that this boy was absolutely related to his grandson's death!

"Humph! Whether you know or not is unimportant. Come back with this old man, this old man naturally has the means to make you think about it!"

Facing Divine Phoenix Island, Lian Chengji didn't dare to recklessly use the Soul Searching Technique. But, even taking a step back, he would still bring Lin Ming away.

The truth was that this was only to give Divine Phoenix Island's Elders a way out. Once Lin Ming really did go back with him, he would certainly die.

Lian Chengji was taking advantage of his strength and position to bully Divine Phoenix Island, forcing them to hand over Lin Ming.

Facing this scene, Great Elder Mu Chihuo grabbed his own walking stick, lowering his head in thought. As for Third Elder Mu Yanzhuo, his eyes moved, but he didn't seem to want to intervene.

As for Mu Qingshu, as he saw this scene, his heart went wild with joy!

He had never dreamt that something so fantastic and lucky would happen. This dark star Lian Chengji had actually decided to look for Lin Ming!

This was simply a wonderful dream!

'Search his soul! Turn him into an idiot!

'Search his soul! He definitely has to search his soul! Make him die! Give him a life worse than death!'

Mu Qingshu hated Lin Ming to the extreme. He cried out in his mind. He was even willing to exchange 50 years of his life to turn Lin Ming into an idiot!

"Grandfather, if a fight really breaks out, don't help. Let him turn Lin Ming into an idiot!" Mu Qingshu's face was hideous as he spoke with a true essence sound transmission. Because of the limitations of the bloodstain contract, he wasn't able to directly deal with Lin Ming. But in a situation like this, not doing anything was the best course of action. After all, if he had to sacrifice Lin Ming to protect the sect, how could that be betraying the sect?

As he thought about Lin Ming's future in which he couldn't even eat food by himself, or pee or shit on his own, and constantly have that stupid dull-witted and blank appearance on his face, Mu Qingshu couldn't restrain the overwhelming ecstasy in his heart from leaking out.

Mu Yanzhuo glanced at his grandson as if he wanted to say something, but eventually remained silent. Today, if he let Lian Chengji do whatever he wished to deal with Lin Ming, Divine Phoenix Island would have no face left. But, if he didn't do anything, he could remove Lin Ming as an enemy, and his grandson might be able to obtain the bloodline within Mu Qianyu's body. In this case, losing facing wasn't anything great at all.

Not just that, sacrificing Lin Ming was also justified. In terms of power they would lose to the South Sea Demon Region. This could be considered giving up a rook to save the kind.

As for a future in which Lin Ming might become an Emperor level powerhouse and lead Divine Phoenix Island into becoming a Holy Land, Mu Yanzhuo didn't care at all. Not to mention the chances of such a thing happening, but even if it did and Divine Phoenix Island became a Holy Land, it would be ruled by Lin Ming and Mu Yuhuang's bloodlines. What else would he be able to obtain from that? Under Lin Ming's shadow, his faction's influence would only become increasingly weak, up to the day that they were completely ruined!

Mu Yanzhuo didn't wish to see this.

At that moment, Mu Yanzhuo decided – he would not help.

"Lian Chengji, don't go too far!"

As a deep voice sounded out, a surge of crimson aura appeared between Lin Ming and Lian Chengji, blocking Lian Chengji's aura. However, this was just barely. Obviously, this person's cultivation was much lower than Lian Chengji's.

Chapter 470 – Fight

Chapter 470 – Fight

…

…

…

A white-haired blue-clothed old woman walked forwards, standing in front of Lin Ming. She was the Fifth Elder of the Blue Luan Faction, Mu Qingyi. She was the Elder sent here to protect Mu Bingyun, and her cultivation was at the early Revolving Core realm.

Although Mu Qingyi didn't have any friendship or much relation at all with Lin Ming, she wouldn't allow someone to bully a disciple of Divine Phoenix Island publicly, much less the fact that Lin Ming was a talent that Divine Phoenix Island was specifically training.

Originally, Mu Qingyi shouldn't have needed to step forwards; the leader of the Divine Phoenix Island forces was Mu Chihuo. However, she never imagined that from the beginning to now, he would turn a blind eye to everything, not having any intention to intervene.

'That old fool!'

The blue-clothed old woman had already heard that Mu Chihuo and Lin Ming had some problems between each other, but she didn't think their hostility extended to this degree.

At this time, Mu Bingyun also silently stood and walked over to the blue-clothed old woman's side. Although her cultivation was only at the extreme Xiantian realm, she still had the ability to defend against an early Revolving Core master; she was no worse than Mu Qianyu.

"Oh? Is that right? And you're going to stop me?" Lian Chengji's complexion became increasingly cold as he looked at the blue-clothed old woman, his entire body emitting a thick and strong killing intent.

The bloody killing intent crossed with Mu Qingyi's blue aura, and a screeching sound emitted. It was clearly heard that the old woman's aura was being pierced through.

Mu Qingyi impressively did not give way. She took a step forwards. Although her body was thin, facing against Lian Chengji's oppressive momentum, she stood straight and proud. "He is my Divine Phoenix Island's disciple, how can I just let you carry him off because you want to? Simply ridiculous!"

"Hehe, since this old man wants to carry him off, I naturally have my reasons. When my grandson died, I know that there was a Houtian realm martial artist present. Out of all the Houtian youths present, this boy is the most suspicious one. Not just that, but I feel there is something strange with the true essence fluctuations coming from his face. He is probably using an appearance changing technique! What a good appearance changing technique! Even this old man's perception was nearly tricked. If he wasn't feeling guilty, why would he use one!? So, me carrying off this boy to interrogate him is also a natural matter! Elder Chihuo, what do you think?" Lian Chengji glanced at Mu Chihuo.

Mu Chihuo frowned. He didn't want to speak, but now there wasn't anything he could do. He looked at Lin Ming and coldly said, "Since there is evidence, you may interrogate him. Although he is a disciple of my Divine Phoenix Island, if he really killed your grandson, then this old man will not cover for him."

As soon as Mu Chihuo finished speaking, he flung his voluminous sleeves and gripped the parasol tree walking stick in his hand, standing off to the sidelines.

Mu Qingshu wanted to laugh as he heard Mu Chihuo speak, he was really enjoying this chance to gloat as Lian Chengji's killing intent covered Lin Ming. He couldn't wait for Lin Ming to turn into an idiot. He decided that after Lin Ming's spiritual sea was shattered, he would feed Lin Ming some medicines to help nourish his soul so that he wouldn't die straight afterwards. He wanted Lin Ming to pass the rest of his life as an idiot.

Just thinking about this made all of his thoughts flow smoothly; it would even be better than obtaining Mu Qianyu!

'Humph, just the middle Revolving Core realm Lian Chengji is enough to handle them, not to mention there are also several other Lian bloodline Elders. Without Great Elder Mu Chihuo, Mu Qianyu, Mu Bingyun, as well as Mu Qingyi and whoever else will not be able to save him. Lin Ming will die here!

'Boy, for you to have provoked such a calamity upon yourself could only be considered your bad luck. The heavens have eyes. Rest assured that when you die, I will help look after Mu Qianyu for you! Even if she hates me, she won't be able to defy the orders from the sect. I will inevitably be the one to obtain the bloodline from her virgin body!'

Thinking this, Mu Qingshu's lips curved up in a sinister smile.

After Lian Chengji heard that Mu Chihuo wouldn't intervene, he drily smiled. It seemed that this boy was really unpopular.

He looked at Mu Qingyi and said, "Didn't you hear Elder Chihuo's words? I advise you to smarten up and not try to fight a hopeless battle, otherwise your old bones might not be able to resist being tossed around!"

As Lian Chengji spoke, his killing aura became increasingly thick. At this time, three Revolving Core Elders also stood up; they were Lian bloodline clansmen from the South Sea Demon Region.

As for the other bloodline families of the South Sea Demon Region, none of them stood up. Between the clans of the South Sea Demon Region, there was a great deal of friction as well as some benefits. Lian Jie was a talented junior of the Lian bloodline, so naturally this situation should be resolved by Lian Chengji. Only if things came down to a true life or death war would the Elders from the other families decide to act.

As the three early Revolving Core Elders stood up, in addition to Lian Chengji's middle Revolving Core realm, there were four Elders there. As their auras all broke out, it was a weight that Divine Phoenix Island was almost unable to withstand.

As the other sects saw that the situation was becoming increasingly volatile and tense, none of them dared to make a sound. As for the Black Flood Dragon Clan and the Thundercrest Sect, they had the mentality to step back and enjoy the fun.

"Hehe, Divine Phoenix Island really has shit luck this time. From Lian Chengji's words, it seemed that his grandson was killed by Divine Phoenix Island!"

"That boy is dead. But, he does have some skill. In the face of Lian Chengji's all out oppressive momentum, he's not even budging. But since it's like this, that just means he will die faster." A Thundercrest Sect Elder crowed. He had been one of the ones that had entered Revered Master Tianguang's banquet competition. He had never forgotten the hatred in his heart after the entire Thundercrest Sect had been done in and humiliated by Divine Phoenix Island.

Of those from the Thundercrest Sect that had come to this broken world, many of them were disciples that had participated in Revered Elder Tianguang's banquet. One of them tipped his eyebrows and muttered, "Lian Chengji thinks that this boy has changed his appearance? He is just at the late Houtian realm but his strength is already so formidable. If he changed his appearance, then could it be Lin Ming?

With these words, all of the surrounding people were stunned. Lin Ming!?

With no time to think, Lian Chengji coldly snorted and then stepped forwards. His right hand formed a claw, and his entire body emitted surging waves of blood. "You think you can stop me with just you? How preposterous!"

Bang!

The earth shattered and bloody sand billowed in the air. Mu Qingyi only felt a strong force approach as a vortex of blood formed around her.

"Blooming Blue Lotus!"

Mu Qingyi cut down with her sword, and a road of icy blue crystals appeared in the air, slicing towards the maelstrom of blood, wanting to tear it apart.

However, the gap in their cultivation began to display itself. Liang Chengji grasped out with his right hand, and a red claw made of true essence formed in the air, smashing down on Mu Qingyi!

That bloody claw seemed as if it was about to suck in all the blood from everywhere. Such a powerful distortion force made Mu Qingyi go pale. At this time, a voice resounded near her ears.

"Blue Luan Sword, Fragmented Ice Cloud!"

Mu Bingyun was expressionless as she stepped forwards, the four foot long Blue Luan Sword in her hands slashing straight out. There was also the clear sound of shattering crystals as icy blue ripples filled the air above the blade, like ripples in a clear lake.

In the meantime, Mu Qianyu also moved. With a resonant phoenix cry, a brilliant wave of fire came soaring down, filling the air with raging fire-attribute true essence.

As the two masters' true essence weaved together, there was a rumbling sound. As all the weaker martial artists saw this, they began to retreat far, far away!

"They're really going to fight.

"Divine Phoenix Island's strength doesn't match up, and they also have internal conflicts. I think that boy is already finished."

"It's a pity. He's a genius, but his cultivation is only at the Houtian realm."

As the disciples from the sects began to discuss the situation, there was a sense of pity. As for those that had participated in Revered Master Tianguang's banquet, they were all silent. A single question haunted their minds: was this boy Lin Ming?

“Let’s attack together!”

“Humph! Since they really want to fight a useless battle, waste the boy and then search his soul afterwards!”

The four Elders of the Lian bloodline attacked together!

“Are you not going to do anything!?” Mu Qingyi angrily shouted behind herself as she chopped out blades of sword energy. Of the Divine Phoenix Island Elders that had come to this broken world, besides Mu Yanzhuo, Mu Chihuo, and Mu Qingyi, there were also two other early Revolving Core Elders present.

They also didn’t have a friendship with Lin Ming. They were waiting to see how the situation developed and hoping not to fight, but now that things had come this far, they could only brace themselves and join the fray.

Bloody sand billowed and true essence shockwaves surged forth. With the two large sects fighting each other, almost 10 Revolving Core strength masters were engaged in a brutal melee; the scene was horrific!

Lian Chengji was facing the combined force of Mu Qianyu, Mu Bingyun, and Mu Qingyi by himself.

“Boy, I’ll see who helps protect you now in the midst of battle!” In this melee, a South Sea Demon Region Elder approached Lin Ming. Both of his hands were formed into claws, and waves of blood boiled around him.

“Be careful!” Mu Qingyi cried out in alarm. However, she wasn’t able to get away from her current battle.

As for Mu Qingshu, he was wild with a savage joy. This was the moment he had been waiting for! His heart cried out. Kill him! Let him die! Ruin him!

In that instant, all of the bloody sand around Lin Ming was stirred up by true essence, forming a red storm around him. Lin Ming felt his body go light, as a huge attracting force acted on him, wanting to tear his body apart.

In this storm, Lin Ming's expression was calm. His gaze was like the stars shining in the deep depths of the nine layered abyss, his stare breathtaking.

"Primeval Halberd Strike!"

His body was light, and his hands gripped the halberd, thrusting out! At this time, the Great Desolate Blood Halberd seemed to have turned into an archaic and brutal blood python as it shot forwards! Fourteen Blood Drinking Seals roared atop the halberd blade, forming a violet vortex of chaotic energy!

Among these 14 Blood Drinking Seals, one of these shined like flames, sending out a savage and beautiful red light. This Blood Drinking Seal was the one that had been formed from the blood essence of the black-clothed old man. And in this broken world, the power of the Blood Drinking Seals was completely unfettered by the suppressive laws that ruled this land!

The massive primal vortex brought along a swallowing force; it collided with the bloody storm!

Peng!

There was a loud explosion as the land was torn apart, bloody sand blasting into the air like volcanos exploding, rising thousands of feet high! The bloody storm of sand that the South Sea Demon Region Elder had sent out was completely swallowed by Lin Ming's terrifying vortex!

"What!?"

The South Sea Demon Region Elder had thought that his casual strike would be able to easily destroy Lin Ming. But he never thought that this stroke of his would be deflected like this instead! For a time, his mind went blank!

“Die!”

Lin Ming continued without pause. The Great Desolate Blood Halberd carried the 14 Blood Drinking Seals as the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder crawled over it. This attack cut across space!

In that moment, Lin Ming’s hair flew out recklessly. As black silk fluttered around him, he was like a world-destroying god of war!

“You bastard!” The South Sea Demon Region Elder recovered from his moment of surprise. In a panic, he slashed out with his sword!

Bang!

The land collapsed and a storm of true essence shot up into the sky. Crimson thunder shot out in all directions.

Everyone present couldn’t believe their eyes. The South Sea Demon Region Elder’s protective true essence was shattered. He spat out a mouthful of blood, and his body was sent soaring backwards…

Chapter 471 – Renowned Name

Chapter 471 – Renowned Name

…

…

…

Bang!

The Elder fell hard onto the ground, a wave of dust swirling in the air.

In the fierce melee, this scene was especially dazzling. All of the other sects' martial artists were stunned; what had just happened was like a dream. A South Sea Demon Region Elder had been struck and sent flying away by a little Houtian kid?

Since ancient times there had been countless examples of Houtian defeating Xiantian or Xiantian defeating Revolving Core. But, none of them had ever heard of a Houtian martial artist being able to defeat a Revolving Core martial artist. That was something as unbelievable as a little dog trying to bite a massive tiger to death!

Mu Qingshu's eyes widened, his expression petrified. He had been anticipating and fantasizing about Lin Ming's miserable appearance and suffering, but he never imagined that this would be the result!

How was this possible!?

He knew that although Lin Ming was only at the late Houtian realm, he had the combat strength of an extreme Xiantian master. But the extreme Xiantian realm was still only the extreme Xiantian realm; it was far from being able to match someone at the Revolving Core realm.

For a late Houtian boy to fight someone at the extreme Xiantian realm was abnormal, but it was still within the bounds of logic. This was also a feat that the legendary Emperor Shakya would have been able to achieve. However, in these short three to four months, it was difficult to imagine that Lin Ming's strength had risen to this degree. Could he actually defeat a Revolving Core master?

Mu Qingshu bit his lips and dug his nails into his palms until they bled. He was unwilling to believe this!

"You..."

The South Sea Demon Region Elder crawled up from the crater in the ground, wiping the blood from the corners of his lips. He couldn't believe he had been injured by a mere Houtian boy. Those terrifying bloody runes were like knives that tore through his protective true essence like paper.

As Lin Ming saw the South Sea Demon Region Elder crawl up from the ground, his heart went dark with regret. If he had opened the Heretical God Force a moment ago, or even burned the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, then he would have been able to ruthlessly kill him instead of just severely wounding him.

But whether it was the Heretical God Force or the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, he could only maintain it for a few dozen breaths of time once it was activated. Thus, Lin Ming didn't dare to use it so rashly.

"Is that... a Great Desolate Blood Halberd?"

Within the South Sea Demon Region forces, an Elder recognized that the weapon in Lin Ming's hand was a Great Desolate Blood Halberd replica. For these past tens of thousands of years, there were countless Great Desolate Blood Halberd replicas that had been forged. But that Elder was able to recognize one that came from his South Sea Demon Region, and also that the one Lin Ming held had once belonged to Lei Mubai!

"That is Xuan Ji's weapon... you are the one that killed Xuan Ji? You are Lin Ming?"

The South Sea Demon Region Elder's heart stirred and he immediately called out Lin Ming's name!

In that moment, the entire crowd exploded. The deeds and name of the boy called Lin Ming had already spread through the South Horizon Region; his name was renowned, and everyone had heard of him.

There were too many rumors of Lin Ming, and a great number of them were unbelievable. Many young heroic elites thought that one day they would be able to exchange blows with Lin Ming, but now, that legendary Lin Ming was standing in front of them!

"He is Lin Ming?" A Dire Space Sect disciple asked with astonishment.

"The rumors said that Lin Ming's strength far outstripped his cultivation, but... this... this is too strange! A Houtian realm being able to fight a Revolving Core realm..." Another Supreme Mystery Temple disciple gulped. He was also an outstanding heroic elite of his generation, and originally had thoughts that he might one day compete with Lin Ming. But in this current situation, he could only ruefully smile.

As the waves of wonder passed through the crowd and many eyes filled with disbelief, Lin Ming grasped the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, silent.

He had already expected that his status would be revealed in this battle. If he didn't use the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, then he would have had to use the Purple Comet Spear. Many people present had already seen the Purple Comet Spear. If he had revealed that, it was no different than directly telling others that he was Lin Ming.

At the South Sea Demon Region side, two Xuan bloodline Elders slowly stood up, their expressions dark and ominous.

When Lian Jie had died, that had been a matter concerning the Lian bloodline clan; it had nothing to do with the Xuan bloodline clan. The Xuan bloodline clan were the direct descendants of the Netherworld Great emperor, and the Lian bloodline were the descendants of one of the top Devil Generals underneath the Netherworld Great Emperor. Between the two great clans, there were many disputes. Not just that, but the South Sea Demon Region and Divine Phoenix Island had been at war for over a year with countless casualties on both sides. It was natural for someone to die, and if anyone wanted revenge, then that would all depend on their own strength to attain it. Thus, the Xuan bloodline did not help the Lian bloodline.

But Lin Ming was the one who had killed Xuan Ji. Xuan Ji was the most outstanding youth of their Xuan bloodline, and also the cherished great grandson of the top person within the South Sea Demon Region – Xuan Wuji. They absolutely had to take revenge for this grudge. Otherwise, they would be criticized and looked down upon. Not to mention the loss of face that would occur, but once they returned, Xuan Wuji would absolutely not forgive them.

Although the Xuan bloodline had only sent out two Elders, one of them was at the middle Revolving Core realm – his strength was no worse than Lian Chengji's!

Suddenly, the pressure on everyone increased by many times!

"You are Lin Ming?" The middle Revolving Core Elder known as Xuan Zhan asked.

"Yes!" At this time there was no need to play games, Lin Ming directly admitted it.

"You once killed a man called Lei Mubai. That man was this old man's great nephew. Since you took Xuan Ji's life, then you will pay for it with your own; all of this is perfectly justified!"

Lin Ming sneered, not bothering to respond.

"My grandson Lian Jie was also killed by you!" Lian Chengji's eyes were blazing as he glared at Lin Ming. If he used his full strength here, killing Lin Ming would be as simply as turning his hand.

Lin Ming smiled, "Oh? I killed him? And so what? Not to mention the South Sea war, but just in this bloody wilderness, how many disciples of other sects have you South Sea Demon Region martial artists killed? Killing someone and robbing them here is common practice.

Since your grandson attacked me, did you want me to stretch out my neck so he could finish me faster?"

Lian Chengji's eyes gleamed with a cold light as he heard this. "You killed my grandson and you even dare to admit this in front of me! Good! This old man will use strength to teach you a lesson. Those that are weak can only stretch out their necks to die, and any resistance will be met with immediate death!"

As Lian Chengji spoke, he reached out a claw towards Lin Ming!

True essence formed into a bloody claw, and the faint rumble of wind and thunder rolled in the air. Wherever the claw went, countless particles of bloody sand formed, turning into a swirling crimson tornado. The ground was suddenly shattered apart by a terrifying gale force.

Lian Chengji was going to personally deal with Lin Ming!

"Lin Ming, be careful!" Mu Qianyu wanted to help him, but at this time she was blocked by another Elder.

This was the first time that Lin Ming had faced a middle Revolving Core realm master. As one reached the Revolving Core realm, there existed a massive gap between every level. It was common for Houtian or Pulse Condensation juniors to jump levels and fight those with higher cultivation, but in the Revolving Core realm, those that could leap over levels to fight were few. Even crossing over a small boundary to do so was insanely difficult.

Lin Ming's expression was somber. He linked his true essence to the Heretical God Seed.

Heretical God Force – open!

Bang!

Highly compressed true essence erupted like a violent volcano. Lin Ming's body howled as his muscles began to make reverberating popping noises; the power of Tempering Marrow was pushed to the extreme!

"Blood Seal Twisting Murder!"

14 Blood Drinking Seals floated recklessly atop the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. These Blood Drinking Seals that completely ignored the suppressive laws of this world was the greatest advantage that Lin Ming was depending on!

A blood vortex that formed around the Great Desolate Blood Halberd cut down onto Lian Chengji's bloody claw. A crimson power of thunder twisted around Lin Ming, fusing with him, as if he were wrapped by a thick red python!

Ka ka ka!

True essence fiercely collided. Lian Chengji's bloody claw was twisted apart by Lin Ming's Blood Seal Twisting Murder and then smashed into pieces!

"What!?"

Lian Chengji couldn't believe his eyes. Lin Ming's strength had already completely surpassed his comprehension, he was just like an infallible general!

This child could not be allowed to live!

This was the first time that Lian Chengji had ever felt fear facing a Houtian junior. He didn't know what sort of secret skill Lin Ming had used to achieve this ridiculous power, but without a doubt, he was certain that even if Lin Ming didn't use such a secret skill, he would still be powerful to the point of making others tremble!

Bang!

The bloody claw exploded into pieces, but Lin Ming's Blood Seal Twisting Murder that he had used with his full force had also collapsed. A massive pit was blasted into the ground, and bloody grains of sand shot into the skies. The true essence shockwaves caused all of the surrounding martial artists to step back again and again. For a fight of this caliber to happen in this broken world where their true essence was suppressed to 20% was unimaginable.

"Heavens! He was even able to resist a middle Revolving Core master's attack!"

"He's really only at the Houtian realm!"

All of the surrounding martial artists were shocked dull with surprise. But at this time, Lin Ming's expression was grim. In that collision a moment ago, his 14 Blood Drinking Seals had instantly disintegrated. Although he could reform them, their light was much dimmer than before. A middle Revolving Core master was just too strong. Even though his strength was suppressed by the laws of this world, he was still so terrifying.

Lin Ming had opened the Heretical God Force a moment ago in order to strike out with his full strength. Although it looked as though they were evenly matched, the truth was that he was the one with a disadvantage. And the most important factor was that Lin Ming could not keep this state up forever!

He couldn't use Thunderfire Annihilation. His Thunder Soul and Flame Essence would have a supportive effect at beast. In this situation where his true essence was suppressed to 20%, even if he did use the complete Thunderfire Annihilation, it would just be like using a large firecracker in front of Lian Chengji – not even enough to hurt him.

If Lin Ming had an advantage, then that would only be one.

That was the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art!'

"Fight me!"

Lin Ming grit his teeth, and the flame marks between his eyebrows began to shine with a radiant light, emitting an overwhelming mysterious and ancient aura along with it.

At this moment, Lin Ming was burning the Vermillion Bird blood essence!

Lin Ming’s momentum suddenly and dramatically shot up!

“What!?”

Lian Chengji felt as if the world was going crazy. Lin Ming’s aura was rising even further!?

In that instant, Lian Chengji no longer had time to think. Lin Ming’s Great Desolate Blood Halberd was already thrusting towards him. The Blood Drinking Seals spun around the blade, turning into a crimson vortex that seemed to swallow the void.

“Humph! Break for me!”

Lian Chengji clawed out with his hands, and true essence formed into a bloody eagle. The bloody eagle let out a clarion cry that rang through the skies, emitting a thick killing intent. The Lian bloodline was most adept at claw techniques.

However, when the true essence blood claws were about to grab the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, an incredible scene happened. The Great Desolate Blood Halberd seemed to penetrate space, instantly arriving in front of Lian Chengji!

“Mm!?”

Lian Chengji was shocked. At this critical moment, he drew backwards while slashing out with his hands and releasing dozens of crimson palm shadows, taking on this strike from Lin Ming!

But at this moment, Lin Ming’s direction of attack suddenly changed. The Great Desolate Blood Halberd penetrated through space again, instantly disappearing. In the next instant, it appeared in front of a black-clothed old man. This black-clothed old man was the Elder that had been injured by Lin Ming, and was now recovering.

As the black-clothed old man saw Lin Ming’s halberd piercing towards him, his expression completely changed.

He quickly wanted to lift his sword and meet this oncoming strike, but how could he keep off the likes of Lin Ming in his wounded state!

Pu!

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd pieced through the old man’s dantian, twisting and shattering it. The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder shot through, carrying a fine mist of blood essence along with it!

In that next moment, this blood essence condensed in the air, forming into a new Blood Drinking Seal.

As for that old man, his body twitched, his fading expression one of fearful incredulity.

Chapter 472 – Tragic

Chapter 472 – Tragic

…

…

…

"An Elder died!"

All of the surrounding martial artists' hearts went cold. The two sides hadn't even been fighting for ten breaths of time, but a Revolving Core Elder had already died here, and at the hands of Lin Ming!

Defeating someone and killing someone were two entirely different concepts!

No matter what sort of secret skill Lin Ming had used, the truth was that in this broken world, Lin Ming had strength equal to a middle Revolving Core master's combat strength!

In this situation, all of the martial artists were in increasing awe and fear of Lin Ming. It wasn't just Lin Ming, but also Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun; it was difficult to imagine just what sort of incredible combat strength they had. If the two sisters united in their attacks, and with Mu Qingyi's support, then they were able to keep on par with the middle Revolving Core realm Elder Xuan Zhan!

The combat strength of Divine Phoenix Island had already surpassed the imagination of many disciples. Not just that, but two Elders of Divine Phoenix Island hadn't even joined in!

Of course, the Elders of the South Sea Demon Region also hadn't acted yet; it wasn't just the Lian bloodline and Xuan bloodline that were present.

…………..

After the Revolving Core Elder died, his blood essence twisted and turned into a mysterious crimson seal. The number of Blood Drinking Seals that twirled along the Great Desolate Blood Halberd suddenly turned into 15.

After the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ was cultivated to the highest level, Blood Drinking Seals could be condensed nearly infinitely. One could create and use millions or even billions of Blood Drinking Seals to attack or defend; it was a top combined offensive and defensive combat technique.

Of course, the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ had an enormous weakness, and that was that its cultivating method was mediocre.

“You!”

Lian Chengji’s expression darkened with horror. Lin Ming had fought with him, but in his presence, not only had Lin Ming successfully defended, but he had also killed a South Sea Demon Region Elder! He had lost all of his face!

“Good! Good! Very good!” Lian Chengji stared at the Blood Drinking Seal that was slowly condensing. From beginning to end, Lin Ming had been using martial arts from the demonic path. Lian Chengji had already noticed this. But a moment ago, Lin Ming’s strange moves had caused his heart to be shocked.

What Lin Ming used was an extremely strange and peculiar cultivation method, it even had many similarities with the ancient Devil Tome!

It was only that those crimson seals were not mentioned within the ancient Devil Tome.

“What’s going on?” Lian Chengji was alarmed. He certainly didn’t believe that Lin Ming had modeled this technique by using the ancient Devil Tome as a main source of inspiration. This sort of cultivation method might not even be able to be created by an Emperor level powerhouse, so where did Lin Ming’s devil arts come from?

Lian Chengji clenched his teeth. There were too many mysteries swirling around Lin Ming! But at this moment, Lian Chengji no longer had time to think about this. He saw the faintest and weakest of the 15 Blood Drinking Seals suddenly explode, and then divide and fuse into the other 14 Blood Drinking Seals. The dim Blood Drinking Seals instantly became much more radiant and dazzling!

Lian Chengji's heart sank. Without doubt, Lin Ming had attracted the blood essence of the dead Revolving Core master in order to increase the power of his own technique!

This boy!!!

Lian Chengji's heart raged with a brutal anger. His grasping claws swooped straight down, and waves of blood rolled down with them. He vowed to killing Lin Ming in a single stroke!

"Come on!"

Lin Ming shouted. His current combat strength couldn't last forever. He had killed the black-clothed Elder in order to take his blood essence and strengthen the power of the Blood Drinking Seals. If he was going to engage in direct battle with Lian Chengji, then the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' was all he could rely on. His Thunder Soul and Flame Essence had already lost all effect underneath the enveloping suppression of this world's laws.

If he couldn't severely wound Lian Chengji, Divine Phoenix Island would eventually lose this battle.

As true essence gushed out, the blood of the Ancient Phoenix combusted. Lin Ming held the blood halberd in his hands; the Great Desolate Blood Halberd swept out!

"Carnage!"

Lin Ming's body began to explode with crackling sounds. He galvanized the potential of his body to the extreme, and even his complete willpower was all poured into the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, merging with it into one being! Not only would this strike wound his enemy, but it would also injure himself!

This was a cultivation method from the demonic path that had used the tenacious body of the Giant Demon Race as the model for the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’. Although Lin Ming had reached the point where his marrow was like golden soup and his body was abnormally strong, using this move still resulted in a giant burden on his body!

As Lin Ming rushed in at high speed, he felt as if his own body was caught in the storm of energy formed by the Blood Drinking Seal. His body was in pain everywhere, especially his spine that hadn’t undergone Tempering Marrow yet; it was barely able to withstand this powerful distortion.

“Die!”

Lian Chengji’s face twisted in a horrible expression. Behind him, the phantom of a crimson eagle appeared. It spread its wings to fly, its keening screech piercing the heavens!

The bloody claws and the Great Desolate Blood Halberd collided. The swirling Blood Drinking Seals were like a sharp needle as they pierced through the air, created rippling waves!

Bang!

A bloody light radiated outwards, and the sky itself seemed to change color. A crimson vortex of energy twisted apart a blood claw, shattering it to pieces. However, there was still another that sailed through the energy vortex, grabbing towards Lin Ming!

Meanwhile, the crimson halberd light had enveloped Lian Chengji!

This was a battle of attrition. Lin Ming was aware that in fighting Lian Chengji, whether it was combusting the blood of the Ancient Phoenix or opening the Heretical God Force, in several dozen breaths of time all that he would accomplish was wounding each other.

Lin Ming’s protective true essence wasn’t too noticeable, but his bodily defensive power was absolutely terrifying. After reaching this stage in Tempering Marrow, Lin Ming could use his unarmed flesh to twist apart a high-grade human-step treasure!

As for Lian Chengji, his bodily true essence was formidable, but unfortunately, in this broken world where the laws that governed it suppressed true essence, just how strong could it be? As for his bodily defensive strength, he was a martial artist that had only cultivated to creating a dantian; his bodily defensive strength was equal to nothing at all!

Lian Chengji's expression changed, he didn't think that Lin Ming could be so ruthless.

"Humph, this old man does not believe that you can withstand this claw!"

As they fought to here, they had already exchanged moves several times, and every single move was filled with utter desperation and their complete strength. Lian Chengji was fuming with anger. But, if he could kill Lin Ming with this claw in exchange for some superficial injuries, then that was a bargain he was willing to make!

No matter what sort of secret skill Lin Ming was using, his true essence had been weak throughout – this was an immutable fact!

"Break for me!"

Lian Chengji shouted, and Lin Ming's bodily true essence protection was ripped apart by that blood claw like a thin piece of paper. The crimson claw smashed into Lin Ming's chest!

In that moment, Lin Ming felt as if he had been struck by a mountain and that his body was going to turn into paste. But as that strength transmitted to his ribs, it was actually abruptly withstood by them!

When Lin Ming had completed Tempering Marrow to 30 to 40%, he had already repeatedly tempered his ribs. The cavity that housed his heart and lungs was a key point, so he naturally had to temper his ribs first.

Lin Ming's ribs were like an impregnable fortress. Under this great impact, most of the force struck this barrier and twisted, most of it melting away into nothing. However, a great deal of that energy still sank into Lin Ming's organs!

Puff!

Lin Ming spat out a mouthful of blood and soared backwards!

As for Lian Chengji, his situation wasn't much better. With his true essence suppressed to 20%, that violent halberd light had cut apart his protective true essence. Although over half of it dissipated in order to break through his defenses, the rest still slashed onto Lian Chengji's body. A long cut extended from his shoulder to his stomach, his collar bones were broken, and he had suffered intense damage to his organs. The brutal bloody force had even penetrated into his meridians, recklessly destroying anything in its path!

As the fight had arrived at this stage, tragic was no longer enough to describe it.

"Damn!" Lian Chengji cursed in anger. He revolved his true essence and suppressed this strange bloody force that rampaged in his body. "This boy is hard to deal with, but he's done for..."

Lian Chengji propped himself up from the ground, his other arm hanging limp. With his collar bone broken, it was hard for him to summon any strength.

As Lian Chengji remembered the scene where his blood claw had torn apart Lin Ming's protective true essence like scrap paper, he had felt much more relieved. Obviously, Lin Ming had spent a great deal of strength and placed everything into this attack. With such a strong attack, there was no way he could have summoned any true essence to protect his own body, and that was why it was so weak.

He took out a precious miracle medicine and even as his heart ached a bit, he popped it into his mouth. This sort of pill was able to slowly recover true essence in combat, and also had a healing effect on wounds. For most restorative medicines, one had to sit down and meditate in order to allow it to work.

Every pill that could be used in combat like this was extremely precious and rare. Even Lian Chengji only had several of them, and they were all for him to save his life at critical points. However, the current situation was just too complex. Divine Phoenix Island was already so difficult to deal with, and there was also the Great Zen Temple watching from the side. In comparison to his life, a minor sacrifice like this wasn't worth mentioning.

"Mm? He's alive?" Lian Chengji felt true essence fluctuations coming from Lin Ming's body; the boy actually hadn't died yet. Lian Chengji wanted to curse. He was about to head over and finish the deed, but at this time, his face froze in stunned disbelief, and mind went grim and dark.

He watched helplessly as Lin Ming stood back up and casually wiped the blood off the corners of his lips. He seemed entirely unmoved by the situation, even letting the blood on his chest flow freely.

"This... how is this possible!?"

It wasn't just Lian Chengji, but all of the surrounding martial artists widened their eyes. Lin Ming had clearly been struck by Lian Chengji's attack a moment ago. His chest should have been reduced to pulp, so how come he was still moving!?

As they looked at the injury on Lin Ming's chest where the bones were nearly exposed, they all felt a chill crawl up their spines. Lin Ming was like an unstoppable and invincible general. No matter how strong the enemy, he would not back down. And what was more terrifying was that he refused to die, he refused to be killed!

"You... you... are you really human?" Lian Chengji clenched his teeth. This question seemed absurd, but the truth was that at this moment, Lian Chengji had real suspicions of whether Lin Ming was a human, or whether he was a true descendant of the ancient Giant Demon race!

This terrifying devil art that Lin Ming practiced might very well be a legacy of the Giant Demon race!

Lin Ming was disinclined to bother with this stupid talk. His right hand touched his spatial ring, and he took out a crystal clear green pill and ate it. This was the Yang Reversion Pill that Mu Fengxian had given to him to save his own life.

As Lian Chengji saw this pill, he almost bit his own tongue; it was actually the Yang Reversion Pill!

The Yang Reversion Pill was similar to the miracle medicine that he had used, but the effects were nearly three times better! And the cost of the Yang Reversion Pill was at least 20 times more!

Let alone him, but even a late Revolving Core realm Elder might not have such a lifesaving medicine!

And now, Lin Ming had taken out this Yang Reversion Pill and eaten it without batting an eye! This caused Lian Chengji to feel a sort of deep despair in his heart.

Lian Chengji's cultivation was higher than Lin Ming's, and his true essence capacity was naturally much larger. If Lin Ming ate a similar miracle medicine, his true essence would be restored much quicker. But now, Lin Ming had eaten the Yang Reversion Pill, with three times the effects!

Chapter 473 – Slaughter

Chapter 473 – Slaughter

…

…

…

After eating the Yang Reversion Pill, Lin Ming felt a warm energy melt within his dantian, turning into pure true essence and fusing within all the meridians of his body. Even the duration of the Heretical God Force was lengthened!

In the midst of battle, if he could still his heart and meditate for half an hour, he would be able to restore his peak combat condition. This was how powerful the Yang Reversion Pill was.

The power of Lin Ming's vitality was originally vivid and exuberant. After tempering his marrow, the resilience of his body had reached a terrifyingly formidable degree. In addition to the Yang Reversion Pill's heaven defying effects, Lin Ming felt the stream of blood trickling down his chest instantly stop. The wound was repairing itself at a visible speed!

Seeing this, Lian Chengji's eyes went wide like two moons; was this really the restorative speed of a human!? Even if he himself ate up the Yang Reversion Pill, there was no way that he would recover at such an extreme pace!

How could he have encountered such a dark star? His cultivation was higher and he was obviously stronger, and he believed he had the absolute advantage in this battle, but as the fight wore on, his situation was becoming increasingly desperate.

"Who are you… are you a human or a demon?" Lian Chengji whispered.

Lin Ming didn't reply. He only held the Great Desolate Blood Halberd slanted in his hands, and drew a crescent moon on the ground.

At this time, on the battlefield, a Divine Phoenix Island Vermillion Bird Faction Elder gave a pitiful scream as he was sent flying backwards, his head wet with blood. With his severe wounds, he wouldn't be able to fight any further.

On the Divine Phoenix Island side, besides Lin Ming and the Mu sisters, the other Elders were all surrounded by several other Elders of the South Sea Demon Region. They were stretched to their limits and were surrounded by dangers on all sides!

"Ninth Elder!" Mu Qingyi cried out. This Elder that had been grievously wounded was only a side Elder of the Vermillion Bird Faction. He wasn't involved in the conflict of interests between the different factions, and was usually honest. Although he was hesitant to participate in the conflict between Divine Phoenix Island and the South Sea Demon Region, he had still helped in the end. Although the situation wouldn't have been worse if he hadn't joined, at present, he had been severely wounded and he was in a life threatening situation.

When Mu Qingyi saw that the Ninth Elder had been injured to this extend, the raging anger in her heart soared to the heavens! "Mu Chihuo! Since you won't help, then after I return to the sect, I shall have you impeached in front of the Council of Elders and have you suffer the punishment of the sect and have your bloodline extinguished! You have brought ruin and disaster upon yourself!"

As Mu Chihuo heard this screaming voice, his eyebrows trembled, but he didn't move in the end. However, Mu Yanzhuo wasn't able to resist these words.

The pressure was simply too great. Since the battle had already reached this point and he still had not helped, he really would be severely punished by the sect once he returned.

"Brother Chihuo, this old man really wants to go and help. If we wait any longer, even if Lin Ming dies in battle, in the future us two old men won't have any place to stand! Mu

Fengxian will absolutely not forgive us! Not just that, but there is no way that we will be able to prevent news of this matter from spreading to the sect; we have already been witnessed by many people!"

Mu Chihuo was quiet. He sent a true essence sound transmission to Mu Yanzhuo.

Mu Yanzhuo's complexion changed, "What did you say? Are you speaking seriously right now?"

"I have an 80 to 90% assurance!"

Mu Chihuo's words were like the whispers of a siren to Mu Yanzhuo. Mu Yanzhuo's complexion continuously changed, and finally he clenched his teeth and his words died in his throat.

"Mu Chihuo! You!" Mu Qingyi's rage had risen to the extreme. However, Mu Chihuo was still unmoved. But Mu Yanzhuo, who was standing near Mu Chihuo, seemed to be suffering a great deal of agony, and his expression was pained as if he were undergoing an intense psychological struggle.

The situation was becoming increasingly bad! After the Ninth Elder had been injured, the pressure increased on Divine Phoenix Island! Even Mu Qingyi was in immediate danger!

As for Lin Ming, although he had managed to gain an advantage by using the rules of this world and pills, he could only maintain the Heretical God Force for around 30 more breaths of time!

If this continued, they would all be forced into a dead end!

Lian Chengji's eyes flashed with a hideously savage color, "Lin Ming! No matter how strong you are, you cannot change anything! How long can you last for? Give this old man the devil arts jade slip you have like a good little boy, and this old man will let off the other people and let you die a painless death. Otherwise, this old man will torture your soul, and have you suffer endlessly for over a hundred years!"

Lin Ming grinned, revealing a shining row of sharp teeth. He took out a crimson pill from his spatial ring and popped it into his mouth.

Before he came to the South Sea battlefield, Mu Fengxian had called Lin Ming to the back mountains to give him three pills and also a silk sack. Of these three pills, two were Yang Reversion Pills and one was a Scarlet Blood Pill.

The pill that Lin Ming had just eaten was a Scarlet Blood Pill.

This was a special pill that was used by the inner leaders of Divine Phoenix Island. There were all sorts of precious materials that were used to refine one, and it even required a massive amount of Vermillion Bird blood. Although ordinary Vermillion Bird blood was much less valuable that Vermillion Bird blood essence, it couldn't be produced in massive amounts. This meant that the value of the Scarlet Blood Pill wasn't much lower than the Yang Reversion Pill.

The Scarlet Blood Pill could only be used by disciples with the Vermillion Bird bloodline. After using one, one's strength would skyrocket for a brief period of time, but they would be greatly weakened for a long period of time afterwards.

Because of this side effect, Lin Ming hadn't yet used it, nor had he been in a situation where he needed to.

As Liang Chengji saw Lin Ming take this Scarlet Blood Pill, he didn't know what it was. He only thought that it was some sort of recovery pill.

This caused him to be nervous. This boy simply had too many top quality pills on his body. He couldn't let Lin Ming continue to recover. At least, he had to delay him until the other Elders were victorious in their battles.

"Die, boy!" Lian Chengji gave a loud shout and slammed a claw down on Lin Ming. The surging true essence behind him formed into a massive bloody eagle dozens of feet long. Lian Chengji's skinny face twisted into a devilish visage. This was an attack with 120% of his strength!

Lin Ming had just swallowed the Scarlet blood Pill. He felt as if a fire had ignited in his stomach, and a burst of energy erupted within him, recklessly riding through his meridians.

“Mm? This feeling is…”

The Scarlet Blood Pill was able to strengthen a Divine Phoenix Island disciple by galvanizing their Vermillion Bird bloodline. But now, to Lin Ming’s amazement, he discovered that the Scarlet Blood Pill was causing the burning Ancient Phoenix blood within his body to become increasingly vibrant!

The Scarlet Blood Pill had caused a chain reaction with the blood of the Ancient Phoenix. Lin Ming was surprised, but then understood. The Vermillion Bird shared a homologous bloodline with the Ancient Phoenix. If the Scarlet Blood Pill was able to energize the bloodline of the Vermillion Bird, then it would also be able to energize the bloodline of the Ancient Phoenix.

At that moment, Lin Ming felt the blood within his entire body burning, as if his body was about to explode with energy.

“Hah!”

Lin Ming shouted, and his body emitted loud popping sounds. As he stretched out, his bones seemed to snap together, emitting a resonant dragon roar that pierced the heavens. Behind Lin Ming, the dual phantoms of an Azure Dragon and Ancient Phoenix appeared.

The Ancient Phoenix that could be reborn through a sea of flames. The Azure Dragon that soared in the skies. Dragon and Phoenix rejoiced together.

At that moment, Lin Ming’s momentum climbed to the utter extreme!

His full energy, his full strength, all of his will was poured into the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. The wind howled and 14 Blood Drinking Seals madly spun around, lifting red sand into the air and forming a bloody tornado!

"Slaughter!"

A halberd cut forth. Time seemed to come to a standstill, and the bloodstained sand filled the air through the battlefield. Throughout heaven and earth, it was as if the only image left over was the exquisite Great Desolate Blood Halberd. It split apart space. The world seemed to lose its color and all sounds faded away. As the fluctuations of energy ravaged forth, there was strangely not a single noise.

A wave of blood shot into the sky, blooming like a fiery lotus at night – beautiful and deadly!

Even the sound of Lian Chengji gasping was torn apart by that bloody storm. He helplessly looked on as the Great Desolate Blood Halberd shattered his blood claw and minced the bloody eagle to pieces. And then… it became a twisting wind that pierced his dantian!

"Ahhh!"

Lian Chengji's expression was crazy with unwilling disbelief. He grabbed the Great Desolate Blood Halberd with one hand and clawed down at Lin Ming with the other!

"This old man will have you follow me in death!"

Lian Chengji vomited blood, and his teeth were stained red. At that moment, it was as if he had gone mad!

The burning hot fire of the Scarlet Blood Pill was still flooding Lin Ming's body like before. As Lin Ming saw the claw reaching towards him, he shouted out like a savage beast and punched with his fist!

Kacha!

That skinny claw was directly broken apart by Lin Ming's fist!

After Lian Chengji's dantian had been twisted apart, he had lost most of his true essence. At this time, his claw was only supported by his fragile mortal body; how could he possibly resist Lin Ming's tempering marrow and his impenetrable fist!?

After Lin Ming's fist shattered Lian Chengji's claw, it continued through and smashed into Lian Chengji. As Lian Chengji's bodily true essence protection had mostly dissipated, Lin Ming's fist penetrated right through and crashed into him!

After losing their bodily true essence protection, a martial artist's body was exceedingly frail. In that instant, blood shot everywhere as Lian Chengji's internal organs were demolished by Lin Ming's fist!

"Come out! Blood Drinking Seal!" Lin Ming gave a deep roar; the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder howled!

Lian Chengji's entire body became enveloped by the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder. His body trembled, and blood gushed down his head.

"I… I… I… I am unwilling! I refuse!"

Lian Chengji gave one final scream. However, in the end, it was futile. There was a muffled explosion as a cloud of bloody fog broke free of Lian Chengji's body, arriving in front of Lin Ming and quickly turning into a mysterious, ancient-looking seal. Lian Chengji's bloodshot eyes rapidly lost their color.

The blood seal constantly twisted. Compared to the ones before, this one was much deeper and much more ominous! This was the first Blood Drinking Seal that Lin Ming had formed from a middle Revolving Core master!

As all of the surrounding martial artists saw this, they were stunned to the point that their courage broke down in Lin Ming's presence. They couldn't believe that someone like Lian Chengji had been killed by Lin Ming!

A middle Revolving Core master had his dantian pierced by Lin Ming's halberd, and then his organs were crushed by a punch and his blood essence was taken. This was absolute overkill!

Especially the scene where Lin Ming's fist had broken through Lian Chengji's bloody claw. This caused quakes to go through everyone's minds. Lin Ming was like an ancient vicious beast in human form!

As Mu Qingshu witnessed this battle from afar, after seeing so many unimaginable scenes he was already scared witless.

Lin Ming stood on the battlefield, grasping the 10 foot long Great Desolate Blood Halberd in one hand while carrying the dead and twisted corpse of Lian Chengji in the other. The aura that he was emitting at this moment was that of a world destroying god of war! Mu Qingshu's face whitened and his lips shivered. He couldn't believe that this was real!

That corpse in Lin Ming's hand wasn't some nobody; that was a middle Revolving Core Supreme Elder! It was a character who was equal to his own faction's Great Elder! That man had been so arrogant and dominant a moment ago, but now, he was nothing more than a piece of dead meat in Lin Ming's hands.

Chapter 474 – Continuously Killing Three People

Chapter 474 – Continuously Killing Three People

…

…

…

The entire crowd quieted down as a hushed silence swept across the battlefield. The battle that had been raging like a wildfire had slowed by several points. A middle Revolving Core master had actually died here!

As Mu Qianyu looked at Lin Ming, her breathing quickened. She had already been incomparably surprised that Lin Ming had been able to block the attacks of Lian Chengji, but now, he had actually been able to counterattack and kill Lian Chengji!

In this broken world, besides those old monsters at the late Revolving Core realm and above that had gone to the Demon God Imperial Palace, a middle Revolving Core martial artist was a top master. If two middle Revolving Core masters fought, then usually one party would be defeated. But, to kill them before they could run away was extremely difficult!

And now, Lin Ming had killed Lian Chengji!

This was absolutely incredible. Even if Lin Ming had eaten the Scarlet Blood Pill, he shouldn't have been so terrifying!

Even the usually calm and expressionless Mu Bingyun's eyes flashed with wonder as she looked at Lin Ming, her expression filled with shock.

As Xuan Zhan looked at Lin Ming, his gaze became grim. He wasn't any stronger than Lian Chengji. If the one that Lin Ming had attacked was him and not Lian Chengji a moment ago, there was a very high possibility that he wouldn't be anything but a cold corpse right now. Xuan Zhan began to feel deep regret. He shouldn't have joined this fight, otherwise how could he have provoked this demonic star!

As for the other four Elders from the South Sea Demon Region that hadn't joined in, they all stood up at once, and their faces became ugly with fear. Before, it had been the Divine Phoenix Island Elders that didn't have the courage to join the battle. But now, facing Lin Ming who was like a world destroying war god, the South Sea Demon Region Elders were the ones that didn't dare to fight!

What a joke! A middle Revolving Core master had been killed; how could an early Revolving Core martial artist still survive?

These four Elders were all at the early Revolving Core realm. They weren't individuals from the Lian or Xuan bloodline. In a sense, this conflict could be considered a personal grudge and not part of the South Sea war; it wasn't related to them much,

But now, even Lian Chengji had been killed. As they saw that this life and death battle between the South Sea Demon Region and Divine Phoenix Island was nearing its climax, they couldn't help but join the fray.

What should they do?

These four Elders were now facing the same difficult problem that the Divine Phoenix Island Elders had just faced a moment ago. Should they brace themselves and join the battle? Or escape?

However, Lin Ming did not plan on giving these people the chance to regret their hesitancy. He now only had several dozen more breaths of time of the Heretical God Force left. With the Scarlet Blood Pill burning his blood, he still managed to maintain his rationality. But the murderous intent that swept off him was like an erupting volcano – it could not be suppressed!

Cultivating the devil arts that led him on the road of slaughter, along with this Scarlet Blood Pill that burned in his veins and mind, Lin Ming only wished to hold his halberd in hand and sweep away the world!

“Die!”

As Lin Ming’s killing intent reached the peak, he gave a loud shout and joined the battle. The Great Desolate Blood Halberd was like a bloodthirsty python that brutally dashed into the fray. Although he could only persist for a few dozen more breaths of time, no one was able to resist the edge of his blade!

15 Blood Drinking Seals were like the scythe of a death god. In particular, the Blood Drinking Seal that was formed from Lian Chengji’s blood essence was a much more vivid and solemn red than the others. The power of these Blood Drinking Seals that were unfettered by the suppressive laws of this world was truly terrifying when their strength was unleashed to the limit!

An Elder that bore the brunt of Lin Ming’s attack was alarmed. He waved his weapon to stop Lin Ming’s halberd.

“Out of the way!”

The Elder heard a shout in his ear just as Xuan Zhan rushed over to his side. Xuan Zhan raised the spear in his hands, thrusting out. A billowing wave of powerful bloody true essence surged out, rushing forwards!

Bang!

The halberd light wantonly radiated outwards. With the 15 Blood Drinking Seals free from the laws of this broken world, they chaotically spun around. Not only were they wonderfully fast, but they approached at a cunning angle and were also incomparably sharp!

Ca!

Xuan Zhan's figure flashed and he retreated dozens of steps back, the blood in his body tumbling. The clothing on his right arm had been torn, and a trail of blood leaked out!

In just this single exchange, the one that had been injured was Xuan Zhan!

All of the other surrounding sects' martial artists were petrified by this scene; they had already lost all ideas of what to say here.

Lin Ming's existence had completely surpassed their common sense.

Some of them faintly guessed that Lin Ming was using some sort of secret ability to evade the suppressive laws of this world to a certain extent. But even so, Lin Ming was only at the late Houtian realm. No matter what, he shouldn't be able to kill a middle Revolving Core master!

"Press on together!" Mu Qingyi took this opportunity and issued an order to attack!

If Xuan Zhan had to face Lin Ming, Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun naturally didn't have a match. In this last year and a half, these sisters had progressed considerably in their overall strength. Their combat prowess already exceeded that of a basic early Revolving Core powerhouse!

In addition, the two of them were attacking together!

"Vermillion Bird Sword, Heaven Burning Inferno!"

"Blue Luan Sword, Fragmented Ice Cloud!"

Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun's swords slashed out like the wind, and a brilliant tapestry of fire and ice was woven together. The South Sea Demon Region Elder who was took this attack had his true essence protection instantly broken, and he spat blood as he was sent flying backwards!

"Damn it all!" Xuan Zhan's expression sank.

"Kill them!"

"Slaughter them all!"

With another South Sea Demon Region Elder severely wounded, the momentum of the Divine Phoenix Island forces shot up like a dazzling rainbow. Even the Ninth Elder who had been severely wounded seemed to recover some of his strength, and the flames on his sword grew ever brighter.

As for the South Sea Demon Region, because of their abject fear from watching Lin Ming's fight, their strength had sharply dropped.

In terms of a large scale fight, martial artists were much worse and less organizational than the armies of common mortal men. A common army did not fear death in their charge, but a martial artist was different. Which one of these Demon Region Elders weren't characters were overwhelming characters with a harem filled with countless beautiful women? How could these characters who held power in the palms of their hands possibly give their life like an ordinary soldier? The only possibility was if it was a huge temptation that could further their cultivation and life. Otherwise, it was fundamentally impossible!

The situation had escalated out of control!

The original one-sided balance of power had been completely reversed because of the existence of Lin Ming!

"Retreat!"

As Xuan Zhan saw another Elder injured by Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun, he couldn't help but issue this order. In truth, he was able to feel that Lin Ming had used some sort of arcane ability in order to stimulate the potential of his body, and this was the reason that his strength had risen so suddenly and so sharply. But this sort of ability should not be able to last much longer.

However, Xuan Zhan wasn't willing to gamble on how much longer it could last, and he didn't know whether or not Lin Ming would be able to use it again. Xuan Zhan was not willing to use his own life as a gambling stake!

Facing Lin Ming, he was thoroughly terrified. Lin Ming didn't even use bodily true essence to block Lian Chengji's claw and had come out almost unscathed. In his counterattack, he had even killed Lian Chengji!

Lin Ming was simply a freakish beast that he couldn't muster the courage to face.

As for the four Demon Region Elders that hadn't moved at the start, as they heard Xuan Zhan's order to retreat, they all let out sighs of relief. They had been saved!

As long as they were ordered to leave, they would not need to join the battle. As for how many people would die in such a large scale retreat, none of them cared about this. In any case, they were much faster at running away than the lower level disciples. If anyone died, it wouldn't be them.

The South Sea Demon Region martial artists began to withdraw as they fought, with several Revolving Core Elders bringing up their rear. But at this time, Lin Ming's offensive became increasingly rabid and fierce. The blood in his body boiled as it burned up, bursting with a final brilliant radiance.

"Primeval Halberd Strike!'

"Blood Seal Twisting Murder!"

With the swirling attractive force of the Blood Drinking Seals in addition to the sense of spatial disorientation that it caused, Lin Ming's halberd stabbed through the South Sea Demon Region Elder that had been injured by Mu Qianyu, ending his life!

The South Sea Demon Region had lost another Elder!

"You bastard!"

Xuan Zhan's eyes were red with rage. In truth, this battle had lasted a mere 30 breaths of time. But the South Sea Demon Region had lost three Elders, and all three of them had died at Lin Ming's hands!

"Retreat!"

Xuan Zhan finally suppressed the anger in his heart. He swept his spear across the ground, creating a series of explosions.

As Xuan Zhan withdrew his spear, he launched his movement technique and quickly escaped.

At this time, Divine Phoenix Island no longer had the ability to pursue the South Sea Demon Region Elders that escaped. Not to mention that Lin Ming had reached his limit, but the situation of the other Divine Phoenix Island Elders wasn't much better.

As the surrounding martial artists saw the dozens of South Sea Demon Region Revolving Core and Xiantian martial artists fleeing, they were left stunned and speechless.

They had never imagined that the South Sea Demon Region which had supposedly been stronger would be completely clobbered by Divine Phoenix Island, and had to finally flee in a frenzied panic!

Not just that, but three of their Elders had died, and one of them had even been a middle Revolving Core master!

It had to be known that since the start of the South Sea War, the South Sea Demon Region had only lost around seven or eight Revolving Core masters. But in this one battle, Lin Ming had killed three of them himself!

No one knew just how to react at this moment.

On the Divine Phoenix Island side, Mu Qingshu had lapsed into a sluggish state. His lips were trembling and his face was white like paper.

In his fantasies, he had imagined that Lin Ming would turn into an idiot. But, this fantasy had become nothing but a joke. Lin Ming was like an insurmountable mountain peak in front of him; just looking at him made a deep and abiding sense of despair well up within his soul!

“Qingshu, we’re leaving.”

At this time, Mu Qingshu heard the true essence sound transmission of Mu Yanzhuo.

“Grandfather, I… I…” As Mu Qingshu heard Mu Yanzhuo’s voice, he nearly burst into tears. His confidence had shattered into pieces, and he no longer had the courage to confront Lin Ming.

“Do not speak, walk away with me. I have something to tell you.”

As everyone’s vision was focused on Lin Ming at this time, Mu Yanzhuo and Mu Chihuo slowly retreated. They decided to no longer stay there.

Mu Qingyi noticed this, but she only coldly snorted. Wherever they went or whatever they did, she had already decided that when she returned to the sect, she would impeach Mu Chihuo and Mu Yanzhuo in front of the Council of Elders and have them suffer the deepest and most grievous punishments allowed within the sect rules.

Lin Ming’s Heretical God Force had ended, and the blood of the Ancient Phoenix had finally stopped burning. At this time, an endless feeling of exhaustion welled up within him, and he became unsteady on his feet. Because he took the Scarlet Blood Pill, this condition would only become more and more serious.

Lin Ming grit his teeth and placed the South Sea Demon Region’s Revolving Core Elder’s corpse in his spatial ring. Then, he barely propped himself up from the ground with the Great Desolate Blood Halberd.

“We’re also leaving!” Mu Qingyi ordered. It was no longer a good idea to stay here. They had all been left in an extremely poor state, and those from the Great Zen Temple were still here. If they had any dark or evil thoughts, the consequences would be disastrous.

After this danger had passed, Divine Phoenix Island only had around 27 or 28 people left. Around 10 of them had died here.

And what pleasantly surprised Lin Ming the most was that Zhang Zhen, whose strength was a complete mess and on a much lower level than everyone present, was still alive.

“Big Brother Lin! Oh, you are my greatest idol! I’ll carry you!” Zhang Zhen was inexplicably excited when he saw Lin Ming. Without saying anything further, he stepped in front of Lin Ming, facing his back to him, and squatted down.

“What rubbish.” Mu Qingyi snapped at Zhang Zhen. “You’re not even fast yourself and yet think you can carry others. Qianyu, take Lin Ming with you, we’re leaving this place!”

Chapter 475 – The Traitorous Trio

Chapter 475 – The Traitorous Trio

…

…

…

At this time, within the Divine Phoenix Island forces, the ones with the highest combat efficiency remaining were Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun. If the two of them joined their attacks, they would be able to defend against a middle Revolving Core master. For such a large troop to have such a small fighting force was really dangerous. First, they had to find a safe place to recover from their wounds.

Mu Qingyi had Zhang Zhen shoulder the Seventh Elder, and carried the Ninth Elder herself. Lin Ming was held by Mu Qianyu, and together, they all launched their movement techniques and quickly left.

The long-bearded monk from the Great Zen Temple saw this and lowered his head, reciting Buddhist mantras. It was unknown just what he was thinking.

"Senior-apprentice Brother, should we let them go like that?" A middle-aged man who wore a long white robe asked. "That young boy called Lin Ming, he seems to possess some sort of secret skill that can allow one to avoid the suppressive laws of this world. If we can obtain this secret skill, then we might be able to restore our Revolving Core realm strength…"

"Junior-apprentice Brother Yuan Kong, do not try to further any disputes. Greed is simply the demon of the heart, it will corrupt your soul. Not just that, but that boy is a hidden dragon in a pool. If we offend him, then there is no choice left but to absolutely exterminate him. Otherwise, our Great Zen Temple will never have another peaceful day again. Junior-apprentice Brother, do you want our Great Zen Temple to be just like the South Sea Demon Region in the future, and also go to all-out war with Divine Phoenix Island?”

Yuan Kong was stunned. He immediately said, “Senior-apprentice Brother’s teachings are the true path.”

“As for that sort of secret skill, even if it exists, it’s not something that we can practice in a day or even a week. It won’t help us in any way. In this broken world, we must tread carefully with peace in our hearts, otherwise we will come across calamity.”

“Yes, Senior-apprentice Brother.”

....

The wind whistled past Lin Ming. His body was just too weak at this moment. From the very start, nearly his entire weight was being held by Mu Qianyu. Finally, he simply lay flat on Mu Qianyu and she carried him on her back.

As the scenery passed by him, a fragrant, delicate smell wafted into the air and filled Lin Ming’s senses. As Lin Ming was laying on Mu Qianyu’s soft and heavenly shoulders, at this moment, he very incomparably peaceful.

He couldn’t help but greedily breathe this fragrance into his nose and mouth. As a blurry wave of love filled his heart, Lin Ming’s consciousness began to become gradually faint.

As a faint but pleasant voice entered Lin Ming’s ear, he wanted to respond, but at this moment, it seemed as if the world itself had faded away from him...

“Lin Ming... you...” As Mu Qianyu felt Lin Ming lying on her back, she felt his hot breath scorch her collar, and a curious but exciting itching feeling spread down her back. She called out to Lin Ming, but he seemed to have fainted, and her voice couldn’t wake him.

“There’s an open area in the front, we’ll rest there. Everyone stay on high alert.” Mu Qingyi said.

“Mm.”

As the 20-some disciples gathered in the open glade, Mu Qianyu placed Lin Ming down. At this time, Lin Ming’s forehead was covered in sweat and his lips were a pale white. In his extremely weak condition, he looked like a chicken that had been slapped around.

As for all of the surrounding disciples, their eyes were full of admiration and awe as they looked at Lin Ming.

Whether or not Lin Ming had used the special laws of this world to his advantage, the indisputable truth was that he had killed the middle Revolving Core master Lian Chengji without much difficulty. For a late Houtian realm martial artist to kill one at the middle Revolving Core realm was simply unbelievable!

If it wasn’t for Lin Ming turning the tide of the battle in that moment and forcing away the South Sea Demon Region, the consequences of that battle would have been incalculable!

It was even possible that all of those younger disciples would have been put to death!

Mu Qingyi said, “Help Lin Ming recover. He ate a Scarlet Blood Pill; he’ll be weak for a very long time.”

“Mm.” Without hesitation, Mu Qianyu took out a Yang Reversion Pill from her spatial ring and fed it to Lin Ming. As a Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island, Mu Qianyu naturally had a Yang Reversion Pill with her.

After eating two Yang Reversion Pills in a row, the effect would be weakened a bit. But at this time, the best pill was still a Yang Reversion Pill.

As the Yang Reversion Pill entered Lin Ming's mouth, it melted into a warm current of energy that flowed into Lin Ming's body. Because Lin Ming was still unconscious, Mu Qianyu stayed near him, revolving her energy to help him heal.

After being out of battle, the effect of the Yang Reversion Pill was significantly better.

Lin Ming's condition was truly miserable at the moment. The Scarlet Blood Pill was a pill that overdrew one's bloodline potential. Even Lin Ming, whose life force was incomparably formidable, was now hot and dry. His lips trembled like he had a dangerous illness.

As Mu Qianyu saw Lin Ming like this, she felt very depressed.

Mu Bingyun quietly walked over and handed Mu Qianyu a small bottle, "Senior-apprentice Sister... Verdant Ice Shard."

Mu Bingyun didn't call Mu Qianyu her big sister, but rather Senior-apprentice Sister. After the two sisters were born, they were sent to the Blue Luan Faction and Vermillion Bird Faction where they grew up. In addition to that, they spent most of their time cultivating; the two of them had very few chances to meet. Also, because of Mu Bingyun's cultivation method, she had an extremely indifferent character. There was very little of the usual intimacy between her and Mu Qianyu that sisters usually had.

"Thank you." Mu Qianyu took the bottle of Verdant Ice Shards. This was a valuable medicine that was unique to the Blue Luan Faction. It was used to nourish one's spiritual sea, and was also a top quality medicine in treating soul injuries.

Pills such as the Scarlet Blood Pill and others that stimulated one's potential to the limit often had the effect of driving one into a rage or trance via self-hypnosis. This would cause a martial artist's spirit to be extremely energized, but it also might damage the soul a little.

Of course, because the Scarlet Blood Pill itself was a top quality medicine, and Lin Ming's spiritual sea was formidable to begin with, the truth was that this damage wasn't considered much. However, Lin Ming was very important to Divine Phoenix Island. Thus, Mu Bingyun had readily taken out this bottle of Verdant Ice Shards to cure any possible wounds.

Mu Qingyi had already placed the grievously wounded Ninth Elder down and fed him some recovery pills. This time, a reason that the situation had turned out well was because the Ninth Elder and Seventh Elder had helped. And, what was peculiar was that the Seventh Elder wasn't even part of the Mu bloodline.

This caused Mu Qingyi to sigh. Within Divine Phoenix Island, those Elders that didn't share the surname Mu had influence and power much lower than those that did. However, when it truly mattered in a life or death moment, Mu Chihuo and Mu Yanzhuo had both betrayed Divine Phoenix Island together.

Under the tremendous pressure from the South Sea Demon Region, the one that had steeled their hearts and joined the fray was an Elder that didn't have the surname Mu. If it wasn't for Lin Ming erupting with a surprising battle strength and turning the tables, then in that battle, it was possible that the Elders would have died. They might have even been completely annihilated!

It could be said that the Seventh Elder risking his life to help was especially rare.

"Elder Zhang, I am truly ashamed. Those traitors Mu Chihuo and Mu Yanzhuo actually betrayed us. For Elder Zhang to help this time, I am truly overwhelmed by your graciousness. I will never forget this. If I still have a single breath when I make it out of this world, I will speak of Elder Zhang's deeds in front of the High Ancestor!"

Elder Zhang shook his head and said, "Elder Mu is too polite. This old man is still someone from Divine Phoenix Island. Although this old man doesn't have many relations with Lin Ming, my grandson is actually friends with him. All this way, I have been told of many good things that I hadn't known…" As Elder Zhang spoke, he pointed to Zhang Zhen. Zhang Zhen scratched his head, a bit embarrassed.

As Elder Zhang pointed at Zhang Zhen, Mu Qianyu also glanced at Zhang Zhen. She hadn't known that Zhang Zhen was Elder Zhang's grandson. No wonder that Zhang Zhen had managed to enter this broken world with his early Houtian realm cultivation, and still live up until now.

This Zhang Zhen was probably one of the most outstanding juniors of the Zhang Family. This time, Elder Zhang had probably brought his grandson to experience this world. Within Divine Phoenix Island, Elders that weren't of the Mu bloodline often didn't have high ambitions. Rather, they only wished that their descendants would be able to peacefully live on.

As for those Elders of the Mu bloodline, they would often struggle because of power and authority, and battles would arise from all around. In summary, those Elders that weren't of the Mu bloodline didn't struggle for much because they knew that there wasn't any meaning to it, as Divine Phoenix Island wasn't truly part of their world. But those Elders of the Mu bloodline were different. Power and authority were truly the roots of all evils and wars.

"High Master Qingyi, since the Great Elder and Third Elder left, I'm worried about what they might..." Mu Qianyu hesitated as she spoke.

"Don't worry. As long as they aren't mad, they won't dare to commit a rebellious crime against the sect. They still have a bloodstain contract on their bodies. The only way they would be able to break it is if they reach the extreme Revolving Core realm, and others cannot release it. Once they betray the sect, their bloodlines will melt, and their cultivation will all vanish within half a year. Mu Chihuo and Mu Yanzhuo have already lived for 200 to 300 years; it is impossible for them to cultivate from the start again. Once their cultivation vanishes, their vitality will also dry up, and their lives will come to an end."

Mu Qingyi was completely unworried that Mu Chihuo would betray them. In fact, in these past 3000 years there hadn't single Mu bloodline Elder that had betrayed the sect. To completely lose their cultivation they had spent several hundreds of years developing and even compensate with their life, there just wasn't anyone that could withstand paying such a steep price.

There had been some Mu juniors that had betrayed the sect. But, their bloodline was not rich and they were young. There were even some that wanted to purposefully melt their bloodline to cultivate devil arts. But ultimately, they had come to a tragic end.

"Take this chance to heal your injuries. And remember, everyone stay alert!" Mu Qingyi said. With Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun in their forces, as long as didn't have to face two middle Revolving Core masters together, they would still be able to cope with it.

As the Divine Phoenix Island forces were taking this time to recover from their injuries, Mu Yanzhuo, Mu Chihuo, and Mu Qingshu were still in the wilderness, quickly walking.

Mu Chihuo was walking at the front, his expression blank. But, Mu Yanzhuo's expression was uncertain, as if he were still grappling with his choices.

"Brother Chihuo… how confident are you in this matter? If we fail, we will no longer have a place in this world." This was the second time that Mu Yanzhuo had asked this question.

Mu Chihuo smiled, "Brother Yanzhuo, if you are always so scared and indecisive, how will you ever have great accomplishments? If you wish to seek power and riches, then there will also be danger. If you wish to maintain some sort of 'place' in this world, then you will forever be suppressed by others. You will reach the middle Revolving Core realm, be stuck there, nursing your hatred until your death. Hundreds of years later, even your clan will be wiped out. And you still have plans of soaring into the heavens, reaching Life Destruction and becoming the leader of Divine Phoenix Island?"

Mu Yanzhuo was silent. He understood the truth behind Mu Chihuo's words. However, thinking about it and laying down his determination to do it were two completely different concepts. Without a doubt, this would be the greatest gamble of his life!

If he won, he would flourish! But if he lost, he would lose everything!

So how could he not hesitate?

As Mu Chihuo saw Mu Yanzhuo's frightened and unsure appearance, he continued to speak, "Brother Yanzhuo, you must understand that if Lin Ming leads Divine Phoenix Island into becoming a fifth-grade sect or even a Holy Land in the future, that won't have anything to do with you or me. Instead, our clans will be pushed to the side by others until there isn't anywhere left for us. On the other hand, if someday Divine Phoenix Island is led by you and me, then we will not need to become a Holy Land. Even if we become the lowest sort of fifth-grade sect, just what sort of scene would that be? We will be worshipped and glorified by the future generations and become characters just like the Founder. Our descendants will become even more prosperous!"

Chapter 476 – Opening The Array

Chapter 476 – Opening The Array

…

…

…

Wasn't the scene that Mu Chihuo described just what Mu Yanzhuo had yearned for? Whether the sect prospered or not, it was key that it was tied to their own fates. The poor people of a powerful nation were often much more pitiful than the wealthy of a poor nation.

"No true man lacks venom in their hearts. If you cannot endure the pressure now and question your own decisions because of your so-called morality and ideas of honor or righteousness towards your sect, then you will never accomplish anything great. Instead, you will only be killed and become a stone for others to step on." Mu Chihuo turned to look at Mu Qingshu and said, "What do you think? Qingshu?"

Mu Qingshu clenched his teeth, and his eyes flashed with resentment. "Great Elder, as long as Lin Ming still lives within Divine Phoenix Island, there will never be a place for me to go. This time, even if there is only a 10 to 20% chance of success, I will still bet everything on it!"

"Haha, well said, Qingshu! This is the way of looking at important matters. Brother Yanzhuo, you should try to be as decisive as Qingshu! Whether what I say is true or false, I believe that Brother Yanzhuo has the ability to distinguish between them. It's just that you haven't acknowledged your own resolute thoughts! Not just that, but we will also have a late Revolving Core master helping us. This matter can already be considered a near-certain success.

Mu Yanzhuo grit his teeth and carefully thought of his options. He also believed that most of what Mu Chihuo said was true. Ever since ancient times, in gambles of life and death, the winners had been kings and the losers were the villains; history was written by the victor. In the future, as long as he could rise and become the victor among the ashes, he would be able to create his own history and develop his own rules.

Mu Yanzhuo wasn't young but he wasn't too old either; he was just a bit over 200 years old. He still had a chance of reaching a higher realm. Also, he had to consider not just himself, but his own family clan, and especially Mu Qingshu.

Thinking this, Mu Yanzhuo closed his eyes. When his eyes opened once more, they shined with a grim color. In any case, he no longer had a route to retreat. If he had to do this, then he had to go until the end.

"Brother Chihuo, I already know. In any case, there is no other path left for me to take!"

"Haha, good!" Mu Chihuo laughed.

"Great Elder, I have a small request to make…" Mu Qingshu hesitated as he spoke to here.

Mu Chihuo faintly smiled at Mu Qingshu and said, "What Qingshu wants is Mu Qianyu, right? Certainly, after this matter is successfully concluded, Mu Qianyu will be yours. At that time, you may do whatever you want with her."

As Mu Chihuo said this, Mu Qingshu's eyes shined with joy. As he thought about the time when he would be able to savage Mu Qianyu under him, his hands began to tremble.

This was his obsession. He wanted to tear down her noble manner and violently violate her body, conquering the maddening desire that he had. This was something that he had long desired. Ever since he had been overshadowed by Lin Ming and his self-esteem was damaged by the proud Mu Qianyu, all of these resentments had accumulated within him and formed into a heart demon.

If he could not cripple Lin Ming and plunder Mu Qianyu, completely conquering her heart, then he would never be able to eliminate this demon in his heart, and his thoughts would never be smooth.

Thinking of this future scene, Mu Qingshu excitedly clenched his fists. “Just you wait Lin Ming. I will cripple your martial arts and have you watch with wide eyes as I take Mu Qianyu’s body. I will obtain her bloodline and seal away her cultivation, training her until she becomes my slave. Lin Ming, I will take everything that was yours!”

As Mu Yanzhuo saw Mu Qingshu’s crazy appearance, he didn’t know whether the feeling in his heart was joy or sorrow.

Many of those geniuses that were gifted by the heavens were shrouded with all sorts of radiant halos since birth. However, if there was a day when all aspects of their talent was suppressed by another, they had to live in the shadows of others, and their honor, status, and even the women they loved were taken, it would be easy for them to fall astray onto the path of dark compulsions and depravity.

Mu Qingshu was obviously in this current situation. The animus in his heart had finally gathered to the point that it had become a dark demon that haunted him. Naturally it would be good if he could eliminate this heart demon, but Mu Yanzhuo thought that this would only bring Mu Qingshu further down the demonic path.

Only following one’s desires and wants – this was the heart of martial arts that those of the demonic path cultivated.

Whether this was good or bad, he did not know.

Mu Yanzhuo felt that he could no longer change anything. If he didn’t allow Mu Qingshu to reach the end of this obsession, the situation would only become worse. Since ancient times, geniuses had been incomparably proud. There were even historical accounts of wise and intelligent men, such as military strategists, that would vomit blood and die after being outplayed and done in by others.

So Mu Yanzhuo could only allow this situation to naturally develop. As Mu Yanzhuo looked at the sky, he found that it was bright throughout, without a single black cloud or spot. He also didn't know what time it was in this broken world. "Brother Chihuo, has this late Revolving Core master not come yet?"

Mu Chihuo said, "He'll come. The signal has already been sent out. It shouldn't take more than another hour. Be patient..."

As Mu Chihuo said, a bit after another half hour, an old man appeared above the wilderness. He wore purple robes, and his two eyebrows were like sharp swords.

This old man was actually the Sovereign of the Thundercrest Sect – Lei Jingtian!

"Thunder Sovereign?" After Mu Yanzhuo saw Lei Jingtian arrive, he was startled. He didn't think that the late Revolving Core realm master that Mu Chihuo had spoken about would be Lei Jingtian.

But as he thought about it some more, Lei Jingtian had been stranded at the peak of the middle Revolving Core realm for a long time. For his past year, he had disappeared into seclusion somewhere. One reason was to avoid the spotlight, and the second reason was likely to try and attempt to break through his bottleneck.

"Thunder Sovereign, it's been a long time!" Mu Chihuo cupped his hands together.

After a year and a half passed, Lei Jingtian's aura had become increasingly aggressive. As he stood there, faint sparks of lightning formed around him. Even though he was in this broken world and his true essence had been suppressed to a mere 20%, his every action was still able to stir up the heavens, and earth origin energy around him.

Lei Jingtian's eyes swept over Mu Yanzhuo and Mu Qingshu. He frowned, "These two are..."

"Rest assured, they are Elders from Divine Phoenix Island and are firmly on our side."

Lei Jingtian knew that the reason these two extra people were there was because Mu Chihuo had found the pressure too great to bear, and was looking for allies to share this pressure. But none of this had anything to do with him. He flung his sleeves and coldly said, “Humph. This old man doesn’t care. We shall go with the agreement as stated before!”

“Of course.” Mu Chihuo smiled. He subconsciously scratched his palms together, as if everything was perfectly under his control…

…………

At this time, outside of the Demon God Imperial Palace –

“Xuan Wuji, stop keeping us guessing, you must know a way to break through this array!” The Black Flood Dragon Patriarch angrily said. He had brought a clansman here who was familiar with array formations, but even after he had studied the array outside of the Demon God Imperial Palace for an entire two hours, he still hadn’t made any progress at all.

Throughout this entire process, Xuan Wuji had a faint taunting smile playing on his lips, as if he was laughing at everything that happened.

“This old man doesn’t have any means to break through this array.” Xuan Wuji held his hands behind his back, straightening his back as if he were a bystander.

“You don’t have any means to break through!? Humph, then let’s just idle here together!” The Black Flood Dragon Patriarch didn’t believe Xuan Wuji’s words. He had made up his mind to follow Xuan Wuji. If he couldn’t obtain anything here, he wouldn’t let Xuan Wuji obtain anything either.

Chapter 477 – Lei Jingtian Approaches

Chapter 477 – Lei Jingtian Approaches

…

…

…

Xuan Wuji said, “This array formation is called a universal array. The entire array formation is a self-contained system, and the only way in which it would consume energy is if it were attacked. Normally, it can sustain itself, and it consumes a very minimal amount of energy.“

No one spoke, waiting for Xuan Wuji to continue his explanation. Obviously, he knew just what this universal array was. If he didn’t have the assurance that he would be able to break through, then he wouldn’t have paid such a high price to open the path to this ancient battlefield.

However, Xuan Wuji spoke to that point and then stopped. He casually glanced over everyone present and slowly said, “Everyone, concerning the treasures of the Demon God Imperial Palace, shall we discuss how we will be dividing them? This old man personally found the Demon Emperor’s letter within an ancient ruin, and also spent a great price to open the way to this ancient battlefield. Since I have arrived here today at this step, I do not wish to give away the fruits of my labor to others!”

Xuan Wuji’s final words came out with a sharp and intimidating burst. Suddenly, the dominating aura that belonged to a third stage Life Destruction powerhouse surged out.

The reason that he had waited for such a long time and had allowed the Black Flood Dragon Clan to mess around as they pleased was all in order to tell these people this.

Without Xuan Wuji, none of them would have had the chance to even think about obtaining the treasures within the Demon God Imperial palace!

“Sir Xuan, if it wasn’t for our help, do you think you would have been able to open the space channel by yourself?” The Great Zen Temple’s white-browed monk slowly said as he clasped his hands together.

“Baimei, I have no interest in negotiating with you. What my South Sea Demon Region wants is half of the treasures within the Demon God Imperial Palace. As for the rest, you can divide them as you wish!” Xuan Wuji calmly said.

“Half!?”

As everyone heard Xuan Wuji’s greedily rapacious offer, the other sects’ Elders had very poor expressions. Out of so many sects, the truth was that the Great Zen Temple was even stronger than the South Sea Demon Region. In addition, there was also Nanyun Wang who was representing all those other free martial artists. With Divine Phoenix Island representing the union of all the smaller sects, how could they split anything if Xuan Wuji decided to take half?

“Hehe!” Nanyun Wang coldly sneered, “Let me see if I can wake you up from your dream!”

“Nanyun Wang, don’t think that I fear you!” Xuan Wuji glowered, his killing intent spilling out.

“What about it? You want to give it a go?” Nanyun Wang casually stepped forwards, his voice dark. The aura that he emitted was slightly stronger than Xuan Wuji’s. In terms of strength, Nanyun Wang, who was a top talent whose name once thundered throughout the South Sea, was stronger than Xuan Wuji.

All of the surrounding Elders unconsciously took a step back from the pressure. If these two old monsters decided to fight here, then even if their true essence was suppressed to a mere 20% of what it usually was, they were still existences that could move mountains. None of the Elders wanted to get involved in this struggle and end up as collateral damage.

Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian also stepped back with the other Elders. As they saw this scene they could only force a smile. They had already expected that coming to this Demon God Imperial Palace would be filled with layers upon layers of troubles and difficulties. But they didn't think that before they had even passed the first protective measures of the Demon God Imperial Palace, that many of the greater forces here would decide to take advantage of the situation and act. If they truly saw the treasures within the Demon God Imperial Palace, then wouldn't the following frenzy be earth-shattering?

In front of one's own absolute interests, this sort of vulnerable and fragile union would immediately fall apart…

……….

As all of the forces were fighting for their interests and opportunities, time passed slowly. In this broken world, there was no way to differentiate day and night, and it was unknown just how many days passed.

Lin Ming's strength slowly restored itself. Although he had used the top quality Yang Reversion Pill and Verdant Ice Shard, he was still in an extremely weak condition.

Ever since they had found a safe place to settle in for a bit, he simply hadn't been able to walk. It wasn't known where Zhang Zhen had went or what he searched for, but he had come back with some pieces of wood and silk and fashioned a sedan chair out of it that could be carried by others. As Lin Ming sat inside, he felt a bit delicate.

With the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal that Lin Ming had eaten and all the marrow washing he had done, his skin appeared delicate and smooth. If a person didn't know the situation, they would only see a fair and handsome youth riding a sedan chair, surrounded by a group of extremely attractive men and women. In the mortal world, it would really seem as if he was the weak and fragile scholarly son of a rich family that went out to travel.

Roughly around three days later, Lin Ming's condition had improved. In these three days, he had recovered enough of his strength. One reason for his quick recovery was that he had eaten such top quality medicines, and the other reason was that Lin Ming's vitality was so formidable to begin with. Otherwise, if someone were to eat the Scarlet Blood Pill, it would be normal for them to be bedridden for one or two months.

As several more days passed, they had left the wilderness and arrived at the shattered ruins of temples and palaces.

Even though tens of thousands of years had passed, these buildings were mostly preserved. With such a grand scale of construction, it was easy to imagine that this was once a sixth-grade sect, and what sort of unimaginably prosperous times they must have passed through.

From the start, as the disciples saw these palaces, they were filled hope and anticipation. But after they went in, they were disappointed. The insides were a mess. It seemed that they had all been ransacked, and there was nothing left.

As for some other buildings, they were actually protected by array formations. If anyone tried to enter, they would be directly bounced back by the array formation and some were even injured.

This caused the Divine Phoenix Island disciples to sigh in praise. These array formations actually persisted even though tens of thousands of years had passed, and were not damaged. This was simply an inconceivable concept.

"The array formations of ancient times are incredible." Mu Qianyu said with heartfelt feeling near Lin Ming.

As Mu Qianyu didn't hear a response, she turned to glance at Lin Ming. But, she found that Lin Ming had lowered his head as if he were deep in thought.

In fact, ever since Lin Ming entered these ruins, he had increasingly felt that they were familiar.

When Lin Ming had been rummaging through the memories of the Demon Emperor, he had quickly sealed off these sorts of memories. He had originally thought that these memories were useless, but now he had actually found something similar here.

It was just that too long a time had passed and this palace had been abandoned; it didn't quite match up to his memories.

This place, if he was correct, should be the ruins of the pavilion that the inner court disciples of the Demon God Imperial Palace once lived at. One hundred miles from here should be the main temple of the Demon God Imperial Palace and also the inner chambers of the Demon Emperor!

The medicine garden that the Nirvana Dragon Root was planted in was also located within the Demon Emperor's inner chambers!

Thinking of this, Lin Ming found it hard to calm his mood. Should he leave by himself and try to find the Nirvana Dragon Root?

But as Lin Ming also remembered just how many old Life Destruction masters there were, he was well aware that his chances of obtaining a Nirvana Dragon Root were close to zero. It didn't matter if those Life Destruction masters had their true essence suppressed to a mere 20%, they would still be able to instantly kill him.

There was no way that he could confront those Life Destruction fogies. The only chance he had was if their true essence was suppressed to 1 or 2%. Only then would he have the slimmest amount of hope.

However, this was also impossible.

"Lin Ming, just what are you thinking about?" Mu Qianyu asked.

Lin Ming shook his head, "Nothing really, just thinking about the Demon God Imperial Palace. I wonder how Honorable Master is doing inside."

Mu Qianyu smiled, “Don’t worry, Master and Master Ancestor won’t try to fight for the Nirvana Dragon Root within the Demon God Imperial Palace. At most just some small lucky chances would be enough for them. More than that, they also have some agreement with High Monk Baimei. So they shouldn’t have any problems.”

“Mm.” Lin Ming nodded. In that group of powerhouses, Mu Fengxian and Mu Yuhuang were on the weaker end. Naturally, it was uncertain that they would be able to obtain the Nirvana Dragon Root.

As they explored the pavilion ruins, Lin Ming passed through the central court that disciples used. Sure enough, he found that there was an illusionary killing array there that the inner court disciples once used to practice with; it was almost the exact same as in the memories of the Demon Emperor.

This ancient altar had passed through the long passage of time, but still stood there complete and well. The mysterious array patterns and symbols of the altar were buried in a deep layer of dust, but were still intact.

Besides the illusionary killing array, there was also a transmission array. If he remembered correctly, this transmission array could go to the central square of this broken world. And once there, one could directly transmit themselves to the Demon God Imperial Palace.

As Lin Ming thought of this, his heart ached a bit. Could he use this transmission array to go to the Demon God Imperial Palace to take a look?

Unfortunately, he had only absorbed some of the Demon Emperor’s fragmented remnant memories, and what he knew was very fuzzy on the internal layout of the Demon God Imperial palace. He also didn’t know what sort of traps or secret passages might be found inside.

It could be said that if he entered into the Demon God Imperial Palace, he would have no advantage at all. He could easily be killed by any of those Supreme Elders within. Even if he stumbled onto some great luck and was able to pick the Nirvana Dragon Root, it would still be taken away by others. It was impossible to expect Mu Fengxian to be able to cover for him.

Thinking this, Lin Ming hesitated. He was not someone who was timid in the face of opportunity. Otherwise, there was no way that he would have snuck into the Flood Dragon's cave by himself. But this time, the chances of success after going into the Demon God Imperial Palace were slim to the point of being desperate. If he decided to compete for the Nirvana Dragon Root in this sort of situation, then that wouldn't be decisiveness or wiseness. That would only be a foolishly stupid act that would bring about his own death.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, are you interested in this array formation?" Mu Qianyu asked after she saw Lin Ming stand there for a long time.

Although Mu Qianyu didn't know anything about ancient array formations, she only had to glance at the faint runes on the illusionary killing array to feel the faintly complex and subtle principles and exquisite work within. Every symbol gave off an extremely delicate and ancient sense of art. Mu Qianyu then remembered that Lin Ming really did have some interest and knowledge about ancient array formations. She casually asked, "What sort of array is this?"

"This is an illusionary killing array used by inner court disciples to practice; it has no true killing potential." Lin Ming replied.

"Oh, haha, Junior-apprentice Brother really understands much." Mu Qianyu had given up trying to understand Lin Ming's perception. He only needed a glance to understand just what sort of effect this array formation had.

The techniques of the Dao of array formations could not be understood quickly, even if one had the best of legacies. It took a great deal of time, and also an excellent perception.

As the Divine Phoenix Island forces didn't find anything valuable in this pavilion, they turned to slowly leave. As for Lin Ming, he didn't step onto the transmission array. He only watched as it slowly disappeared from his range of sight.

Mu Qingyi said, "There are some more palace ruins in front. Let's go and have a look, we might be able to find something valuable there..."

Mu Qingyi hadn't finished speaking when a bawdy laugh came from the sky, "Hehe, there is no need to go. This old man has already searched through those ruins, and there is nothing for you to find!"

With this voice, Mu Qingyi, Mu Qianyu, and Lin Ming's expressions completely changed. For someone to arrive near them without them discovering him, that could only mean that this person's cultivation was at least at the late Revolving Core realm!

Lin Ming looked up and his pupils immediately shrank.

It was actually that old man!

Chapter 478 – Escape Symbol

Chapter 478 – Escape Symbol

…

…

…

Floating above them, this old man had sword-like eyebrows that slanted outward, and he wore a purple robe embroidered with seven stars! Around his body, countless arcs of electricity flashed, sending out faint ‘chi chi chi’ sounds. This was the intense shaking of thunder origin energy.

This person was the Sovereign of the Thundercrest Sect, Lei Jingtian!

“He’s flying in the air!”

Mu Qingyi’s complexion changed. After they had entered this broken world, they hadn’t gone far before they had lost the ability to fly and were forced to descend to the ground. But this Lei Jingtian in front of them had actually maintained the ability to fly.

This was just how formidable a late Revolving Core realm master was.

Beginning from Revolving Core, the gap between every small jump in boundaries was enormous. Passing ranks to fight someone at a higher cultivation was extremely difficult. Even Saint level talents like Mu Bingyun and Mu Qianyu would only be able to jump two small boundaries to fight after they reached the Revolving Core realm.

To them, a late Revolving Core martial artist was an invincible existence.

"When did you come in!?" Mu Qingyi clearly remembered that Lei Jingtian hadn't been among those present when they had entered into the broken world.

"Hehe, this old man's status is now a bit sensitive. That old fool Xuan Wuji has already blamed Lei Mubai's death on me. Naturally, I wasn't able to openly appear. After every large sect entered into the ancient battlefield, there were still several hundred disciples left over and they were all over the place. It wasn't too hard for me to hide among them!" Lei Jingtian proudly said with a smirk.

"What do you want?" Mu Qingyi asked as she went on alert. She wasn't naïve enough to think that someone like Lei Jingtian just came over to greet them.

"Hehe, what do you think?" Lei Jingtian's lips curved in a smile, and suddenly the power of thunder in his body erupted. A vast purple net of lightning fell over everyone!

The purple lightning grid was several hundred feet wide and was extremely fast; it was like a dream.

Mu Qingyi hadn't thought that Lei Jingtian would suddenly attack.

"Break for me!" Mu Qingyi drew her longsword and slashed out at that purple electric net.

Lin Ming's pupils shrank and he instantly took out the Purple Comet spear from his spatial ring, thrusting towards that flashing purple net. At that same time, the Mu sisters, the Seventh Elder, and newly recovered Ninth Elder also attacked.

Chi chi chi!

Six different true essences slashed open the purple net of electricity. However, after this electric net was cut apart, it didn't fade away. Instead, it turned into countless small arcs of lightning that rained down on everyone.

Electric light flashed, falling onto the bodies of over 20 lower order disciples. After they were struck by this power of thunder, their eyes instantly glazed over with countless scenes.

Some early Xiantian martial artists weren't able to bear this sort of crazy imagery and softly plopped onto the ground.

This was followed by the middle Xiantian martial artists, late Xiantian martial artists…

In just several breaths of time, besides the six martial artists that had strength equal to a Revolving Core master, the remaining 20-some disciples had all fallen unconscious on the ground.

Mu Qingyi's complexion was completely dark. What Lei Jingtian had just used was a soul attack. She had already heard that Lei Jingtian had a very unique sort of Thunder Soul, named the Disenchanting Dream Light.

In legends, The Disenchanting Dream Light was a Thunder Soul that was bred within the body of an ancient thunder-attribute sea beast. Its natural ability was to destroy the soul. With Lei Jingtian's late Revolving Core cultivation, it was simple for him to cause 20 some Xiantian martial artists to lose consciousness.

Mu Qingyi tightly gripped her sword, her forehead becoming damp with sweat. If they really battled here, their situation would be extremely bad. Lin Ming had already eaten a Scarlet Blood Pill, and it was impossible for him to take another in such a short period of time.

If someone had to use a Scarlet Blood Pill, it would have to be herself, Mu Qianyu, or Mu Bingyun.

The younger one was, the stronger their life force was. If they ate a Scarlet Blood Pill, the side effects they would experience afterwards would be smaller. If someone several hundreds of years old like Mu Qingyi ate a Scarlet Blood Pill, her situation would be perilous afterwards. Her cultivation would drop, and there was the chance she might even lose her life!

Not just that, but the Scarlet Blood Pill's effects weren't heaven defying. Lin Ming was a singular exception. If Mu Qingyi ate the Scarlet Blood Pill, her strength would only barely touch the middle Revolving Core realm. It was difficult to say whether or not she could deal with Lei Jingtian at that point.

“Just what do you want?”

“Hehe, I was asked by others to eliminate their troubles.” As Lei Jingtian spoke, his eyes moved until they came to Lin Ming, shining with interest.

Seeing Lei Jingtian’s vision on him, Lin Ming sneered inwardly; this old man had really come for him?

Mu Qianyu’s heart went cold and she subconsciously kept Lin Ming behind her. In this critical moment, Lin Ming wasn’t in his top condition. If they really fought with Lei Jingtian, then their side would be at a great disadvantage.

As Mu Qingyi looked at Lei Jingtian, she seemed unsure.

Asked by others?

The first ones she thought of were Mu Chihuo and Mu Yanzhuo.

Were they insane? Their hate had reached the point that they no longer cared about their cultivation or bloodline? Not to mention that they weren’t sworn enemies or anything like that. Even if they killed Lin Ming, just what would they be able to do? If they openly betrayed the sect, they would suffer the fatal criminal punishments of Divine Phoenix Island. Was this worth it?

No matter how she thought about it, Mu Qingyi couldn’t figure how any way that they could evade the punishment of the bloodstain contract.

“So that’s how it is.” Lin Ming’s face held a touch of irony. His hands turned, swapping out the Purple Comet Spear for the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. “I really am your common enemy. The enemy of an enemy is a friend. Mu Chihuo had already plotted with you long ago. You made the weaker disciples faint but didn’t harm them, this was probably at the behest of Mu Chihuo. It seems like he does have some scruples after all; he doesn't dare to openly slaughter so many others. Our current position was also given to you by Mu Chihuo, right, Thunder Sovereign?"

Mu Chihuo was originally the leader of the Divine Phoenix Island forces. It wasn't strange for him to have some sort of location method.

Lin Ming didn't have the mindset of Mu Qingyi that no one would be able to defy the bloodstain contract, and thus no Elder would be able to rebel. Lin Ming had never placed any faith in this bloodstain contract. Thus, he was able to simply and clearly see things for what they were.

At this moment, bawdy laughter came from afar. In the distant ruins, two old men and one young man strolled out; the one in front was Mu Chihuo.

At this time, Mu Chihuo had a victorious expression. Behind him, Mu Yanzhuo appeared a bit grim and restless. As for Mu Qingshu, he looked extremely pleased with himself, as if he were already imagining the way that Lin Ming would die.

"Haha, boy, well said. It is exactly this old man that wants to take your life! As long as I live, all the other disciples and future disciples will submit to me. Naturally I will not harm them!"

"Oh? So you seem to have some way to break the bloodstain contract?" As Lin Ming watched Mu Chihuo's confident expression, he didn't know just what his plan was in the end. Even if he could break the bloodstain contract and smoothly kill him without problems, what would he be able to do? Mu Fengxian would never forgive them for this.

The only method was if he killed everyone here, silencing every witness to this crime.

However, if Mu Chihuo would kill so many outstanding talents of Divine Phoenix Island just because of some hatred, then it could only be said that he had lost all rationale and had descended into madness.

“Mu Chihuo! Are you crazy!? You want to rebel against the sect!?” Mu Qingyi’s heart burned with anger. Her eyes blazed as she glared at Mu Chihuo, wishing she could cut him to bits and pieces.

“Rebel against the sect? No, of course not!” Mu Chihuo shook his head, “This old man’s bloodline lies within Divine Phoenix Island, so why would this old man rebel against the sect? No, I only wish to take back those things that belong to me!”

“What belongs to you?”

“Power! Status! Authority! Cultivation methods!” As Mu Chihuo spoke to here, his eyes flashed with thick hatred. He had been excluded from the eight layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’; how could he not hate!

“Mu Qingyi, I only wish for Lin Ming to die and do not want to harm you. If you step back, I will let you leave here.”

“Dream on!” Mu Qingyi flourished her longsword, her eyes decisive.

“Humph! It looks as if you no longer care about your life!” Mu Chihuo’s eyes turned to the others, “And you? Do you wish to die too?”

There was no need to mention the Mu sisters’ decision. As for the Seventh Elder and the Ninth Elder, they did not respond. They only took out longswords from their spatial rings and quietly stood in front of Lin Ming. Their intent was already obvious.

If this was the battle from before against the South Sea Demon Region, then perhaps they would waver in their decision. However, during that battle, Lin Ming had eaten a Scarlet Blood Pill and had fought a bloody battle with courage in order to turn the tide.

On the other hand, Mu Chihuo and Mu Yanzhuo had run away at a crucial moment. Then, a few days later, they had actually looked for Lei Jingtian to deal with them. If they surrendered to the enemy and betrayed their morals here, they might as well not be human.

“Hehe, well then, I have nothing else to say. I don’t want to hurt you, but swords are blind.” Mu Chihuo took out his longsword. If it were possible, he had hoped that Lei Jingtian would have been able to use his Disenchanting Dream Light to force them into unconsciousness, but unfortunately they were too strong. The only path left now was a battle.

Mu Qingshu savagely smiled, “Lin Ming, this time you will die. Lei Jingtian, Great Elder, and my grandfather are also here. With the three of them together, I wonder just how your ragtag group of useless trash will be able to stop them! Lin Ming, rest assured that I will not kill you. I will cripple your martial artists and have you suffer a life worse than death. I will take care of Senior-apprentice Sister Mu for you, and have you watch with wide eyes as I play with her.” Mu Qingshu spoke in a true essence sound transmission so only Lin Ming could hear.

Although Lin Ming had always thought of Mu Qingshu as an idiot, he was right about one thing. There was no way that his group would be able to stop the combined effort of Lei Jingtian and Mu Chihuo.

Not to mention that Lin Ming could not eat a Scarlet Blood Pill, but even if he did eat a Scarlet Blood Pill while simultaneously opening the Heretical God Force and burning the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, he would still be suppressed by Lei Jingtian. Not just that, but he would only be able to last around 30 breaths of time. No matter what he did, he would lose!

That was just Lei Jingtian. With Mu Chihuo and Mu Yanzhuo tacked on, there was absolutely no chance of victory.

Lin Ming’s expression was solemn. If this was so, there was only one way…

His hand moved, and a plain ancient jade talisman appeared in his palm. Lin Ming lightly moved his lips, sending a true essence sound transmission to Mu Qianyu, “Has Master Ancestor given you an Escape Symbol?”

“Escape Symbol? What’s that?” Mu Qianyu was stunned.

As Lin Ming heard Mu Qianyu’s surprised words, his heart suddenly sank.

When Lin Ming had first gone to the South Sea battlefield, Mu Fengxian had given Lin Ming three pills, and also a silk bag. The three pills were two Yang Reversion Pills and a single Scarlet Blood Pill. But in the silk bag was an Escape Symbol. After it was used, it would teleport the user several hundred miles away. This extremely precious talisman was discovered by Mu Fengxian in some ancient ruins. It was no exaggeration to say that this talisman was another life.

Lin Ming had thought that Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun might have their own. But he didn’t think that he would be the only one.

This was bad… Lin Ming’s palms oozed with sweat as he held the jade talisman in his hands. He did not dare to leave Mu Qianyu here while escaping on his own…

Chapter 479 – Wait For Me There

Chapter 479 – Wait For Me There

…

…

…

Lin Ming knew that Mu Chihuo and Lei Jingtian had come specifically for him. If he left Mu Qingyi or the other Elders here and ran away, nothing would happen to them.

But Mu Qianyu was different. Mu Qingshu desired Mu Qianyu as well as her Vermillion Bird bloodline, and had been drooling over it for a long time. With Lei Jingtian here, there was nothing that Mu Qianyu could do to resist him. As for Mu Qingshu, he was an extremely depraved individual that was capable of any despicable action imaginable. Lin Ming did not dare to imagine the consequences that would happen if he left Mu Qianyu here and escaped by himself.

If that happened, then even if he escaped and reached the Revolving Core realm in the future, it would be a tragedy that could never be recovered from even if he tore Mu Qingshu into pieces!

As Lin Ming felt the Escape Symbol in his hand, his mind rapidly raced and his forehead was already wet with sweat. He knew that this Escape Symbol was precious, but he didn’t think that it was precious to the point that even Mu Qianyu wouldn’t have one. Before this, Mu Fengxian must have thought that Mu Qianyu would never be any fatal danger; she never imagined that Mu Chihuo would have ignored the bloodstain contract and rebelled against the sect!

As Lei Jingtian held the Thunder Light Sword in his hand, a hazy purple electric light spun around the blade, like an ephemeral dream. This unique Disenchanting Dream Light was like thunder and also light; it was elusive and confounding. They didn't even need Mu Chihuo – just Lei Jingtian was enough to deal with everyone present.

"Hehe, Lin Ming, I want to see just what tricks you have up your sleeve this time!" Mu Qingshu disdainfully said as he sneered.

However, he hadn't started speaking again before the silent Lin Ming suddenly shot out!

As the blood of the Ancient Phoenix shined with a dazzling red glow between his eyebrows, the Heretical God Force also erupted. Atop the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, the crimson blood seals rapidly spiraled around!

In that instant, Lin Ming had used every card in his hand. His strength shot to its highest point!

"Primeval Halberd Strike!"

15 Blood Drinking Seals twisted, forming a giant vortex. Lin Ming's sudden action caused Mu Qingshu's complexion to instantly changed. His original crazy grin had frozen in place. Mu Qingshu immediately felt a formidable pulling force working on him, and he couldn't help but be caught up in the suction force. Mu Qingshu realized that Lin Ming knew he had no hope of escaping, so he would eliminate him before he died!

"Grandfather, save me!"

Mu Qingshu was greatly shocked. In front of Lin Ming, he simply didn't have the ability to defend. He did not want to die. He was just about to see Lin Ming die and obtain Mu Qianyu! If he died here, he would have nothing at all!

"Humph, how naïve!"

Lei Jingtian waved his palm, and a normal-looking purple thunder that seemed like electricity and light instantly launched into the crimson vortex.

Bang!

As soon as the attacks struck each other, the crimson vortex violently burst apart. The 15 Blood Drinking Seals were blasted in all directions. Lin Ming coughed and flew backwards, soaring dozens of feet until he smashed into the ground.

He had tried to instantly kill Mu Qingshu to save himself from future troubles, but Lin Ming's plan had failed. His strength wasn't at its peak condition. Compared to Lei Jingtian, the strength difference between the two at this moment was just too great!

"Haha! You idiot! You want to hurt me? Dream on!" Mu Qingshu contemptuously laughed. Seeing Lin Ming in this state, his thoughts were smoother and his inner energy felt better; his entire body was incomparably comfortable.

"Lin Ming!" Mu Qianyu's eyes blazed as she rushed towards Lin Ming's side. "Lin Ming, are you alright!?"

"I'm fine." In fact, Lin Ming hadn't been wounded. He looked deeply into Mu Qianyu's eyes and said with a true essence sound transmission, "Wait for me at the entrance to the bloody wilderness..."

"What?" Mu Qianyu paused. She didn't know why Lin Ming would suddenly say this.

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with determination. He clenched the Escape Symbol in his hand, spoke the incantation, and then pressed it into Mu Qianyu's hand...

"Mm, this is..." Mu Qianyu felt something cool slip into her hand. Before she could react, a dim light emerged from her palm. Mu Qianyu's heart suddenly surged with a discomforting restlessness, "Lin Ming, you..."

"Wait for me there!"

These simple words were firm, confident, and filled with the air of one unafraid of death! As they fell into Mu Qianyu's ears, every word sunk into her being. In that moment, the sound of countless thunderclaps exploded in Mu Qianyu's ear, and a deep, agonizing, and inexplicable pain filled her heart.

As these words echoed in her mind, they began to distort, as if sound itself was being endlessly stretched out... In that moment, Mu Qianyu felt as if she had lost something important. The faint restlessness in her heart became stronger and stronger. Mu Qianyu's eyes widened as her body was suddenly surrounded by a strange energy. Lin Ming's features blurred as they faded into an infinite expanse of space, going farther and farther away.

"Lin Ming!"

Mu Qianyu cried out. She reached out to grab Lin Ming, but at this time, all sounds and all sights instantly vanished into the horizon...

....

"Damn! What trick is this!?" Mu Qingshu could only watch helplessly as Mu Qianyu was covered by a hazy white light, instantly disappearing. He could not believe this had happened, and he could also not accept that this had happened!

Mu Qianyu had been sent off by Lin Ming!

If Mu Qianyu disappeared, then how would he give vent to this rage in his heart?

"Lin Ming, I will kill you!" Mu Qingshu cried out, his eyes turning mad.

Mu Chihuo's complexion was also ugly. He was able to recognize that what Lin Ming had just used was Mu Fengxian's Escape Symbol. "It's a bit troubling for that girl to escape. Brother Lei, let's not delay any further and kill Lin Ming. Then we can look for Mu Qianyu. It wouldn't be good if that girl managed to get a message back to Divine Phoenix Island!"

“Hehe, alright!” Lei Jingtian smiled with indifference. Whether or not news of this matter returned to Divine Phoenix Island, it would not impact him. In truth, all he wanted to do was kill Lin Ming and obtain the ancient devil art techniques in his spatial ring, as well as his Purple Comet Spear and two Thunder Souls!

In addition, what was most important was that Lei Jingtian wanted to know just how Lin Ming had managed to fuse two Thunder Souls into one. If he could also achieve this feat, then it would be of great advantage to him.

The reason that Lei Jingtian was willing to come and kill Lin Ming was first because of the old hatred between them, and second because Mu Chihuo had promised that as long as he killed Lin Ming, all of the secrets, cultivation method manuals, and other treasures that Lin Ming had would belong to him. Just as long as Mu Chihuo was able to keep Lin Ming’s corpse.

“This boy is too emotional, he cares about this sort of sentimental love too much. He gave a woman his only chances to escape… what an idiot!” Lei Jingtian laughed. In his opinion, this sort of self-sacrificing action was for the stupid.

Mu Qingyi had watched from the side and witnessed the entire process. Lin Ming had given his chance to escape to Mu Qianyu. This action caused her heart to ache with pain.

“Lin Ming, hurry up and run! We will hold him off!” As Mu Qingyi spoke, a chilling sword light covered her as she slashed her sword at Lei Jingtian.

Fragmented Ice Cloud!

“Humph! You think you are qualified?” Without waiting for Lei Jingtian, Mu Chihuo stepped forwards and shot out his palm. Without even needing his sword, a brilliant inferno of roaring flames suddenly shot out, cracking the ice crystals and then directly pulverizing them!

Meanwhile, Mu Yanzhuo stopped Mu Bingyun, and Lei Jingtian attacked Lin Ming!

The sound of rolling thunder filled the air. It mixed with a shining dream-like light, turning into a thick purple beam that pierced towards Lin Ming.

Bang!

The beam of light penetrated through the earth, causing rocks to scatter into the air. Lin Ming jumped back, avoiding the frontal attack. However, he was still injured by the shockwaves.

As that endless purple light touched Lin Ming's body, it was like countless steel needles had pierced his spiritual sea. Lin Ming's body suddenly trembled!

Cha cha cha!

In Lin Ming's spiritual sea, that purple light fell like rain. In that critical moment, the massive black vortex of the Samsara martial intent appeared, blocking the attack of the purple rain!

That endless purple light was twisted into the swirling black vortex and disappeared without a trace!

"Heh! Lei Jingtian sneered, but then the smile froze on his face.

"What!? He's fine even after taking the attack of my Disenchanting Dream Light?"

Lei Jingtian did not believe that a mere Houtian realm martial artist was able to defend against his Disenchanting Dream Light. How could this be possible?

"You want to run away? Think again!"

When Lei Jingtian saw that Lin Ming wanted to run away, he coldly snorted and shot forwards! With Lei Jingtian's formidable strength, he was able to overcome the suppressive laws of this world to a certain extent and fly. With a speed two or three times faster than Lin Ming's, he chased after him!

"Damn." Lin Ming grit his teeth and galvanized Golden Roc Shattering the Void to the limit, shooting forwards like a bolt of lightning. But no matter how amazing Golden Roc Shattering the Void was, Lin Ming's attainments were limited to a general understanding of the Concept of Wind. He hadn't even yet crossed into the Concept of Space, so how could his speed compare to the late Revolving Core master Lei Jingtian?

In just a few blinks of the eye, Lin Ming was overtaken by Lei Jingtian!

"Die!"

Lei Jingtian pressed down his palm at Lin Ming! The might of the palm strike was followed by billowing thunder. The space around Lin Ming seemed to tense up, as if completely locking him within.

This palm strike was one that Lei Jingtian had used with his full and complete strength. Even if Lei Jingtian's true essence were suppressed to 20%, it still wasn't something that Lin Ming would be able to stop.

Lei Jingtian wanted to kill Lin Ming with a single palm. He had originally thought of capturing Lin Ming, but after being surprised by Lin Ming's burst of strength again and again, he had changed his mind.

This palm strike was unavoidable. It pressed down with overwhelming strength. At that moment, the specter of death was rapidly closing in!

Lin Ming gave a loud shot, and his pupils filled with crimson light like they were ponds of blood!

"Blood Drinking Seal, explode!"

Bang!

Atop the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, a Blood Drinking Seal formed from an early Revolving Core master exploded and a crimson light emanated outwards. The explosion from the Blood Drinking Seal formed from a Revolving Core master was able to defend against Lei Jingtian's palm strike. However, Lin Ming was still struck by the wind of the palm, and his body flew back like a leaf caught in a brutal storm.

As Lin Ming vomited out a mouthful of blood, his face had whitened to the point of being terrifying!

"What!?" Lei Jingtian was shocked. He absolutely didn't think that Lin Ming would be able to defend against a strike that he had placed his full force behind. 'This boy, just how strong is his soul defense? Every time I attack, it is combined with a soul attack. Not to mention a Houtian martial artist, but even an early Revolving Core martial artist would fall unconscious if struck by my soul attack.'

The difference in their cultivation was simply too great, and the soul defense capabilities of the Samsara martial intent were not invincible. At this time, Lin Ming had a splitting headache, and his thoughts were in a disorganized mess. Even the path in front of him seemed to blur.

At that moment in his mind, a sense of primal desperation began to wash through him.

'I cannot die here!'

Lin Ming bit down on the tip of his tongue, spraying out blood essence. Since he could not take another Scarlet Blood Pill, the action that Lin Ming had taken was to combust his own blood essence!

Chapter 480 – I Will Walk My Life With You

Chapter 480 – I Will Walk My Life With You

…

…

…

As Lin Ming burnt the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, he also ignited his own blood essence!

If the blood of the Ancient Phoenix was burnt, it would never fade away. However, once he combusted his own blood essence, it would disappear.

Blood essence was extremely difficult to recover. But, that didn’t mean there weren’t ways to replenish it. For instance, Divine Phoenix Island had a method of making up blood essence by transplanting the blood essence of the Vermillion Bird. Once blood essence was burnt, Lin Ming could find some way to restore it. However, if he lost his life, there was no going back!

After combusting his blood essence, the flame mark between Lin Ming’s eyes began to shine with an ever-brightening incandescence.

Even though Lin Ming burnt a bit of his blood essence in exchange of power, the effect of this was much weaker than when he had swallowed the Scarlet Blood Pill. Not to mention that it was weak, but even if he had attained power equal to that of taking a Scarlet Blood Pill, at most he would be able to defeat a middle Revolving Core master; it was simply impossible for him to defeat Lei Jingtian.

And now, Lin Ming’s Heretical God Force only had around 20 breaths of time before it vanished. To kill Lei Jingtian in this brief period of time was nothing but a dream.

As Lin Ming borrowed the power of his blood essence, his speed rose once again. He shot away like a flash of lightning!

“This boy!” Lei Jingtian’s face darkened, becoming increasingly gloomy. He didn’t believe that Lin Ming would be able to run away. With Lin Ming’s mere late Houtian cultivation, there were an entire two great boundaries that separated them. If he could truly escape from the reach of his hand, then that would truly surprise Lei Jingtian!

“I wonder what sort of special ability he has to avoid the suppressive laws of this world. If I can obtain that, then I might have a chance to go to the Demon God Imperial Palace and fight for the treasures there.”

Lei Jingtian’s mind raced, but his steps never paused. He flew high into the sky, and in just a few breaths of time he closed the gap with Lin Ming. During this time, he had taken out the Thunder Light Sword!

“I’ll slice off your legs!” Lei Jingtian grinned like a madman, cutting his sword towards Lin Ming’s legs!

Without looking, Lin Ming suddenly swept the Great Desolate Blood Halberd backwards.

Blood Seal Twisting Murder!

Kacha!

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd and the Thunder Light Sword collided. Blood and thunder splashed out. By relying on the power from combusting his blood essence, Lin Ming was able to withstand this attack.

“What!?” Lei Jingtian stared with wide eyes. Lin Ming was just too terrifying an existence. Even though his cultivation was only at the late Houtian realm, he had managed to keep off his attack by only combusting his blood essence.

If he was allowed to step into the Revolving Core realm, what would happen then!?

However, Lei Jingtian knew that Lin Ming wouldn't be able to last much longer in this state. If he could just delay a bit longer then everything would be easy.

"Lightning Cage!"

The Thunder Light Sword shook, and a vast twinkling electric purple net came falling down. That net seemed to isolate space, enveloping Lin Ming.

As Lin Ming saw the electric net coming down on him, he clenched his teeth and released the complete potential of his body. All of his will was poured into the Great Desolate Blood Halberd –

"Carnage!"

Bang!

With the sound of deafening thunder, Lei Jingtian's lightning net was torn apart. Lei Jingtian felt a tightness and his chest and was forced several steps back, the blood in his body tumbling.

As for Lin Ming, he borrowed the force of the explosion and rushed away. In the last moment, he was able to use this force to momentarily escape from the suppressive laws of this world, flying into the sky!

And in front of Lin Ming was the altar of the illusionary killing array that disciples of the Demon God Imperial Palace had used to practice!

"What? He's flying!?" Lei Jingtian's complexion changed. This proved that at this moment, Lin Ming's strength was approaching that of a late Revolving Core powerhouse!

"This boy, he cannot be allowed to leave!"

Lei Jingtian grit his teeth and raised his sword high, the true essence of his body revolving to the limit. Thunder began to flash between his eyebrows, and his body emitted billowing claps of thunder. A thunderstorm sounded out like tigers and dragons roaring together. The lightning surrounding the Thunder Light Sword grew, becoming increasingly terrifying. The heaven and earth thunder origin energy was completely sucked into this thunderstorm. Even under the suppressive laws, it was still able to change the color of the world.

This was Lei Jingtian's strongest move – Heavenly Thunder Suppression. It was the move that contained the strongest energy as well as the strongest spiritual attack. Even if a late Revolving Core master were to resist it, they would still be wounded.

Before now, he had never dreamed that one day he would have to use this move on a Houtian realm martial artist.

"Die!"

The thunderstorm shot towards Lin Ming with a terrifying speed. But as Lin Ming stood there on the altar, all of his perception was completely focused on the altar as he distributed the 30 medium-grade true essence stones and six high-grade true essence stones onto the altar array.

"Illusionary killing array, open!"

Lin Ming had already seen through the principals behind this illusionary killing array. Now, this illusionary killing array was his only resort. Otherwise, even if he combusted his blood essence, he would only be able to attain strength equal to a middle Revolving Core master; how could he possibly fight the late Revolving Core Lei Jingtian?

If he fought, the one to die first would be him!

On the altar, the ancient runes began to glow with a dazzling crimson color. After Lin Ming crazily poured his true essence into them, they began to shine with a bright light all around, hitting Lei Jingtian's thunderstorm!

Bang!

A terrifying explosion shook the ground and a purple beam of lightning shot into the sky. Even Lei Jingtian was forced to retreat by the shockwaves. When the storm finally subsided, Lei Jingtian was completely shocked. In his eyes, he could see a faint creamy barrier covering the altar, like an incomparably fragile soap bubble. But even that horrifying explosion from a moment ago hadn't been able to move it a single inch.

"This… this is…"

Lei Jingtian didn't dare to believe his own eyes; this was an ancient array formation!

Was this array formation started by Lin Ming?

Lin Ming had a way to start an ancient array formation?

Lei Jingtian was stunned. How could Lin Ming have possibly studied ancient array formations? Even if he did, he wasn't even 20 years old yet, so how could he possibly understand the complex and profound principles behind these ancient array formations?

"This boy!"

Lei Jingtian's grip on his sword tightened until his knuckles paled. In this situation, Lin Ming had actually been able to escape?

He could not accept this! This was unbelievable!

Lei Jingtian coldly snorted and said, "The ancient array formation is indeed formidable, but it also needs to consume energy. This old man won't believe that the ancient array formation can last forever. I will attack until all of its energy is exhausted!"

…………..

Atop the endless bloody wilderness, Mu Qianyu stood there in her red dress, dazed.

All around her were endless blood red plains. As she stood there alone, the desolate feeling that surrounded her was amplified.

The hot wind blew against Mu Qianyu's clothes and face, drying her tears. But she still felt cold inside.

At this moment, the image that flashed repeatedly in Mu Qianyu's mind was that of Lin Ming's blurry face.

At this moment, she finally understood why Lin Ming had asked her about an 'Escape Symbol', and as for this Escape Symbol, there had only been one.

And Lin Ming had given it to her.

Then what about him?

Facing the late Revolving Core Lei Jingtian, Mu Qianyu couldn't think of any way that Lin Ming could win. There wasn't even a way for him to escape.

The difference between a late Revolving Core master and a middle Revolving Core master was enormous. And even if Lin Ming had swallowed a Scarlet Blood Pill in his top condition, he would only be able to fight a middle Revolving Core master.

And now, Lin Ming didn't even have a second Scarlet Blood Pill to eat.

If he did eat one, he would die!

"Wait for me there!"

These simple words reverberated in Mu Qianyu's ears. His words had been filled with a decisive resolution that faced death without fear. Every word had been like a thunderclap, and every word had been etched onto her heart with blood; she would never be able to forget these words in her lifetime!

'You asked me to wait for you here…

'I'm here.

‘But will you come?’

Mu Qianyu felt a stabbing pain in her heart. She bit her lips until blood flowed from the corners of her mouth. As the wind blew against the creamy white skin of her face, she was like a snow plum in full bloom.

If it had been possible, she would have rather burned all of the blood in her body and died together in battle with Lin Ming!

However… that hadn’t happened.

Her safely standing there might be at the cost of Lin Ming’s life.

As Mu Qianyu thought of this, her chest tightened with pain, making it hard for her to breathe. It was like someone had torn the heart out of her body and left her chest empty.

Before now, when Lin Ming had gone into the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, Mu Qianyu had also thought that Lin Ming had died, and she had grieved for him. But it wasn’t like today. She was sad to the point of collapse, to the point where she couldn’t shed another tear, to the point where she didn’t want to live any longer.

Unconsciously, in Mu Qianyu’s mind, Lin Ming had already occupied an important position, one that Mu Qianyu herself hadn’t noticed.

“I’ll wait for you here! If you do not come, then I will leave this place. In the future, I will kill every person that harmed you! Then… I will return here, and spend the rest of my life accompanying you!”

…………..

Within the pavilion runes, the light of thunder and fire blazed into the sky. Mu Chihuo, Mu Yanzhuo, Lei Jingtian, and even Mu Qingshu were desperately attacking the altar formation’s barrier,.

However, that barrier of light stood motionless, not even shaking, as if it were mocking their incompetence.

“What do we do!?”

Mu Yanzhuo’s forehead was dripping sweat. In this gamble, there were two absolute conditions that he had to complete. The first one was to kill Lin Ming, and the second was to return to Divine Phoenix Island before Mu Fengxian did.

But now, Lin Ming had entered into this strange array formation, out of reach. If he couldn’t kill Lin Ming, then all of the plans they had made – including those of evading the bloodstain contract – became nothing but a dream!

“Don’t panic!” Mu Chihuo coldly snorted, “An array formation must consume energy. Once we consume its energy, we will find Lin Ming inside; there is nowhere else that he can go! As long as we can kill Lin Ming, it will be our victory. Stepping back, even in the worst case situation, we just have to give up our cultivation method!”

When Mu Fengxian and Mu Yuhuang entered this broken world, they had been aware of the dangers and had left the jade slip with the first eight layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ at Divine Phoenix Island. Mu Chihuo’s original plan was to kill Lin Ming, and then after completing his plan, he would head back to Divine Phoenix Island and steal away the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ jade slip. But now, it seemed like he might have to give up his plans on that. But if he could still complete the first task of killing Lin Ming, then it wouldn’t be too terrible.

“I know.” Mu Yanzhuo forced himself to calm down. There was no point in panicking at this time. There was no longer time to regret, there was no other path he could take out of this. All he could do was fight.

At Mu Yanzhuo’s side, Mu Qingshu clenched his teeth and desperately attacked, as if he wasn’t hitting the array formation’s barrier but rather Lin Ming himself. He was completely venting the grievances that had accumulated for these past two years!

‘This is all because of him, it’s because of him again and again! After I break this barrier, I will torture you until you beg for death!’

Chapter 481 – The Desperation of Mu Qingyi

Chapter 481 – The Desperation of Mu Qingyi

…

…

…

Hong Hong Hong!

Fire and thunder constantly smashed into the protective barrier. However, the glowing curtain of light was entirely unmoved. Not to mention that it wasn't close to breaking, but the light it gave off didn't even dim a bit.

In this broken world where the power of true essence was suppressed by the governing laws, Mu Chihuo's power of fire and Lei Jingtian's power of thunder were extremely limited. As they attacked the defensive light barrier, there was simply no effect.

After a quarter of an hour passed, they still hadn't made any progress. Mu Qingshu had lost his breath, panting.

"You! Come and help attack!" Mu Qingshu pointed at Mu Qingyi and ordered.

After Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu had left, Mu Qingyi and the rest was simply not Lei Jingtian's match. Quickly, they were all paralyzed by Lei Jingtian's cultivation and locked into a cage of lightning.

At this time, Mu Qingyi's dantian was sealed by a thunder mark; she was unable to revolve any of her true essence.

As Mu Qingyi heard such a stupid command from Mu Qingshu, she looked at him like he was an idiot. She sneered and said, “Are you stupid? You think that I would help you break through the defensive barrier? Those are the words of an idiot! Dream on! If you want to kill me then kill me!”

“Kill?” Mu Qingshu laughed, “I know that you aren’t afraid to die, but I’m also not planning on killing you. Your old life might still be useful in the future. But, if you don’t help attack, then... hehe...”

As Mu Qingshu spoke, his eyes turned to Mu Bingyun and he lasciviously licked his lips. “What a young beautiful woman, you look entirely like your big sister. Even if I can’t have her, taking you might make up for a bit of my regret...”

Mu Bingyun’s complexion instantly changed, and a chilling murderous intent passed through her eyes.

Beside Mu Bingyun, the other lower disciples were filled with outrage as they heard Mu Qingshu say this.

“You! You beast!” Mu Qingyi was angry to the point of spitting blood. Mu Qingshu actually dared to face so many disciples and say such an outrageous thing as violating a Saintess!

“Qingshu, don’t mess around right now. First kill Lin Ming and then speak! Not just that, but if we return to Divine Phoenix Island in the future, you have to watch yourself and don’t overstep your boundaries!” Mu Yanzhuo frowned and sent a true essence sound transmission to Mu Qingshu. If it was Mu Qianyu then it was different. In the past, he had tried to hurry Mu Qingshu’s engagement to Mu Qianyu because her Vermillion Bird bloodline was useful to his grandson. But now, his desire towards Mu Bingyun was purely for his own lust. The bloodline of the Blue Luan was useless to Mu Qingshu.

However, Mu Qingshu ignored Mu Yanzhuo and greedily stared at Mu Bingyun. His eyes were barbaric and filled with a violent aggression. As he looked at Mu Bingyun, his heart stirred. Mu Bingyun was frosty like an icy cloud, but she was still an otherworldly beauty. As he thought about it more and more, even if he didn't have Mu Qianyu, it would still be an extremely pleasurable thing to be able to ravage Mu Bingyun, who looked exactly like Mu Qianyu, under him.

Mu Bingyun's expression turned cold. Her right hand turned, revealing a shining dagger.

"You want to commit suicide? You can try, but with your true essence sealed away, we'll have to see if you or I are faster." Mu Qingshu smiled as he stepped forwards. It was true that in a situation where her true essence was sealed away, Mu Qingshu was absolutely faster than Mu Bingyun if she tried to kill herself. Not just that, but a knife wound wouldn't immediately kill her. He could also heal her with medicines.

"Mu Qingshu, you are even worse than an animal!"

Mu Qingyi insulted Mu Qingshu and then aimed her palm at his face. However, Mu Qingshu easily dodged the palm and kicked out, striking against Mu Qingyi's stomach. Mu Qingyi gave a pitiful cough and fell backwards.

"Humph, you're just looking to die."

Mu Qingshu coldly snorted, looking at her with disdain as he stepped forwards again. The lower level disciples were all forced back by Mu Qingshu.

As he saw the panic in the eyes of these lower level disciples, as well as Mu Bingyun's reaction, he felt the pleasant sensation of revenge, as if he were venting all the indignation he had suffered for the past year.

Mu Bingyun held her dagger, the killing intent becoming increasingly rich as she glared at Mu Qingshu. But, Mu Qingshu appeared completely indifferent. He kept stepping towards Mu Bingyun and said, "A rose really does have thorns. I truly love your eyes. Even though your true essence has been completely sealed, your eyes still scream out that they want to kill me. How scary! Hehehe!"

"If you have to blame someone, then blame Lin Ming. He was the one who forced us to this point, making us resort to this plan. If he didn't send off Mu Qianyu, then my thoughts wouldn't be interrupted and I wouldn't start thinking of you. Ah, Lin Ming is really cruel to leave you here, Otherwise, he would have helped you escape… hehe…"

As Mu Qingshu spoke, he already closed in to just a few dozen steps away from Mu Bingyun. But at this time, Mu Qingyi's eyes flashed with an agonizing pain. She miserably said, "Stop! I promise I will help you!"

"What?"

"I will help you attack the array formation together, so stop." Mu Qingyi bit her lips. To her, Mu Bingyun was no different than her granddaughter. She could not idly watch as Mu Bingyun was ruined.

"Qingshu, come back and stop messing around, we have to consider the greater plan and kill Lin Ming. Otherwise, there is no way we will live." Mu Chihuo naturally took the matter of killing Lin Ming as his top priority. Otherwise, they wouldn't be able to break free of the bloodstain contract and their bloodline and cultivation would all melt away within half a year.

If he had Mu Qingyi's help, breaking through this barrier would be much faster.

'Damn old fool, he's really ruining my fun times.' Mu Qingshu cursed in his heart. He dared not to disobey Mu Chihuo's orders.

Lei Jingtian stepped forwards and wrapped a rope of thunder around Mu Bingyun, completely sealing her movements; he didn't want to her to kill herself somehow.

Then, he undid the cultivation seal he placed on Mu Qingyi.

Mu Qingyi grit her teeth and joined them in breaking through the defensive barrier. As for what Mu Qingshu would do to Mu Bingyun after the barrier was broken and Lin Ming was killed, she dared not imagine the possibilities.

She had no choice, she simply could not watch as Mu Bingyun was ruined like this. The only hope they had of being rescued was if she managed to drag this on…

"Old bag, I advise you not to try any tricks. It will be clear to this old man just how much of your strength you are using!" Lei Jingtian coldly snorted.

Mu Qingyi felt like a knife twisted into her heart. At this time, she had no choice but to go forth with all her effort and pray that the array formation barrier was strong enough that an extra early Revolving Core martial artist wouldn't be enough to shatter it.

"Lin Ming, please forgive me. This time I have to be selfish…"

……….

As Mu Chihuo, Lei Jingtian, and the rest of them madly attacked the illusionary killing array, Lin Ming was actually calmly standing within the array, his heart like a lake of placid water.

In front of Lin Ming, a massive shadow appeared, trembling like a splash of water. It slowly turned solid until it formed into a 10 foot tall Giant Demon. It held a great axe in its hand, and its body was twined in thick chains. Its cultivation was at the early Revolving Core realm.

In the past, this illusionary killing array was where the disciples of the Demon God Imperial Palace would practice. It was similar to the Seven Profound Valleys' Ten Thousand Killing Array where everything that appeared within were phantoms. Although it was similar to a real fight, one would not die.

Once one experienced the illusion of being 'killed', one would be expelled from the illusionary killing array.

In his present state, Lin Ming could easily defeat this early Revolving Core Giant Demon. But, after this Giant Demon was slain, a stronger enemy would appear. Lin Ming could defeat four or five enemies in a row at most before he was sent out of the protection of array formation. When that happened, the consequences could be imagined!

Lin Ming closed his eyes in concentration, removing all distractions and illusions. He carefully followed the memories of how to break through the array formation, and gradually, step by step, moved forwards.

His goal here was not to practice by killing enemies. Rather, his goal was to break through the illusionary killing array to reach the nearby transmission array. This transmission array was able to reach the center of this broken world. But, from the transmission array at the center, one could go to every nook and cranny of this broken world; one could even go directly to the Demon God Imperial Palace.

Just a quarter of an hour ago, Lin Ming had stood here and thought of using the transmission array to head to the Demon God Imperial Palace. He had hesitated, and finally decided to give up. After all, it was just too difficult to think of competing for the Nirvana Dragon Root against a bunch of old Life Destruction masters.

But he didn't think that in this short period of time, he would actually be forced into this position. It seemed that the Demon God Imperial Palace had become Lin Ming's only path out of this madness.

"Roar!"

The Giant Demon illusion howled, lifted its great axe and rushed at Lin Ming. But Lin Ming only backed up one step and took three steps to the left. Suddenly, the surrounding scenery changed, and the Giant Demon illusion suddenly disappeared.

Step by step, Lin Ming closed in on the transmission array. The fading image of Mu Qianyu echoed in his mind along with Mu Qingshu's dark and dastardly smile. Lin Ming's mood was actually calm throughout all of this; this was only the quietness of blood. It was a repressed, silent killing intent in his heart that was waiting to erupt.

The transmission array was here!

The disciple court illusionary killing array was an important building to the Demon God Imperial Palace. Naturally it would be connected via transmission array to the center hub in order to better facilitate communication between the Demon God Imperial Palace disciples. Otherwise, within the Demon God Imperial Palace's world that spanned thousands of miles and also had laws that limited flying, it would be extremely inconvenient to communicate.

Lin Ming placed two medium-grade true essence stones on the transmission array and started it according to the principles behind it in his memory.

A faint white light covered Lin Ming. He felt space warping around him, his surroundings blurring…

……….

In the central zone of this broken world, a 100 foot wide altar was floating, suspended in the air. This stone altar had all sorts of symbols and runes engraved into it. These were all ancient array patterns.

Around this large stone altar, ten more smaller stone altars floated. All of these stone altars were wrapped in a layer of pale white light, it exuded a serene and mysterious feeling.

In the next moment, a dim light shined atop the stone altar. The figure of a bloodied youth appeared on the stone altar – this youth was Lin Ming.

This single transmission had crossed hundreds of miles.

Lin Ming used the Great Desolate Blood Halberd as support to stand up, and then nearly fell over again as a dizzy spell passed over him. He was currently in a very poor state.

He swiped his spatial ring and took out the second Yang Reversion Pill that Mu Fengxian had given him, swallowed it, and then sat down in meditation.

He didn’t worry that Mu Chihuo would find him through this transmission array. For this sort of transmission array, it was impossible to activate it unless one understood the principles behind it.

As Lin Ming escaped from the illusionary killing array, a crazy plan had already formed in his mind.

Chapter 482 – Crazy Plan

Chapter 482 – Crazy Plan

…

…

…

If Lin Ming hadn't run across Mu Chihuo, then he would have just stayed outside of Demon God imperial Palace's inner quarters, looking for some lucky chances on the sidelines and then safely leaving this broken world. But now, he was forced by Mu Chihuo onto this dangerous path, and a crazy thought of entering the Demon God Imperial Palace was born in his mind.

Planning on challenging a group of Life Destruction Supreme Elders that could exterminate him with a turn of their hand was undoubtedly an incomparably crazy plan. Running into the tiger's mouth wasn't even enough to describe the audacity of this idea.

In this sort of situation, Lin Ming wasn't naïve enough to expect that the Demon God Imperial Palace would suppress the cultivation of these Life Destruction Supreme Elders to less than 1% so that he could freely kill them.

If he had an advantage, then that would only be his understanding of ancient array formations from the Realm of the Gods.

But what was inside the Demon God Imperial Palace? What was the internal layout like? Were there secret passages somewhere? Where was the Nirvana Dragon Root?

Lin Ming was completely unsure of any of these things.

The fragmented memories he obtained were too incomplete, he simply couldn't remember!

At this time, this so-called advantage that Lin Ming had was marginal. Entering into the Demon God Imperial Palace in this state to compete for the Nirvana Dragon Root was no different from suicide.

However, the moment that Lin Ming entered into the illusionary killing array, he suddenly realized that he had missed a very important thing....

Lin Ming swiped his spatial ring and took out a corpse; this was the corpse of the South Sea Demon Region's early Revolving Core powerhouse.

After entering into this broken world, Lin Ming had killed a total of four Revolving Core masters. The first was when he had been walking in the bloody wilderness. Lian Jie was a Revolving Core master who was trying to use some Blood Ghost Flowers as bait and wait for others to step into his trap. Because of this plan, Lian Jie had tried to kill him and Mu Qianyu, with the end result being that this Revolving Core master was directly killed by Lin Ming, and all of his blood essence was used to refine a Blood Drinking Seal.

The second to the fourth had been during the brutal battle between him and the South Sea Demon Region. He had killed three Revolving Core Supreme Elders, and even slayed the middle Revolving Core master Lian Cheng.

The first two were used by Lin Ming to help refine his 14th and 15th Blood Drinking Seal. As for the last Revolving Core powerhouse, Lin Ming had killed him when the South Sea Demon Region had begun retreating, so Lin Ming had instead put his body away in his spatial ring.

That Revolving Core powerhouse was this corpse.

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He flicked his finger and a red arc of lightning submerged into this Revolving Core master's corpse, quickly pulling out all his blood essence. Then, the

Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder flew back towards Lin Ming and pierced towards Lin Ming's heart like a small red serpent.

The blood essence was released, and was greedily absorbed by the Magic Cube....

Then, a familiar trembling feeling transmitted through Lin Ming's spiritual sea once again. Lin Ming was already expecting this. He closed both his eyes and fortified his mind. In the next moment, all of his perception and consciousness was sucked into the Magic Cube....

As Lin Ming opened his eyes again, his consciousness had already arrived at a vast and boundless space. He was floating in a completely jet-black space surrounded by twinkling lights.

This was the space within the Magic Cube that he was familiar with.

As thick clouds of fog fluttered around, the central spinning sphere of light became partially visible; it had not changed in the least.

After using the blood essence of a Xiantian master, Lin Ming had once again opened the Magic Cube space with the blood essence of a Revolving Core master.

This was the fourth time that Lin Ming had come into the space of the Magic Cube. Within this space, there were countless memories floating around like treasures. However, these things could not immediately translate into combat strength.

It was impossible for Lin Ming to swallow a soul fragment, increase his strength, and return to defeat Lei Jingtian.

....

The soul fragments shimmered in the pale mist like dazzling stars. Lin Ming released his perception, carefully feeling the faint energy of these fragments.

A wave of diamond-like soul fragments breezed by, carrying with it an incomparably gentle energy.

Lin Ming let it drift past him. Then, a few glimmering shards of soul fragments came that emitted a bloody energy. Lin Ming also let them pass by.

As Lin Ming felt the energy of these soul fragments, his mind was calm like still water. He stood there patiently, not moving.

He didn't know how much time passed, but after a while, a pigeon egg-sized soul fragment slowly began to spin towards him. This soul fragment glowed with a red light, and it left a path of twinkling crimson lights in its wake.

“This is it!”

Lin Ming suddenly opened his eyes!

This fragment had the same energy as the Demon Emperor.

The last time Lin Ming had entered into the space within the Magic Cube, he had found the soul fragment of the Demon Emperor and was able to discover that Lei Mubai had a bloodline relation with the Giant Demon race because his body emitted the energy of the ancient Devil Tome.

This time, he had also been able to sense the soul fragment of the Demon Emperor!

In the Realm of the Gods, when those Supreme Elders' souls had been sucked into the space of the Magic Cube, they had been broken into many pieces. Naturally, other pieces could be found in the same area.

Lin Ming clenched his teeth. He wanted to absorb this soul fragment, but he stopped himself. He marked this soul fragment and continued his search.

He didn't know how long he searched, but he continued until he found a second soul fragment.

This soul fragment was only the size of a fingernail.

He gave up this fragment too and continued searching.

Then, every time Lin Ming found a soul fragment that belonged to the Demon Emperor, he would record its position. After a long time, Lin Ming finally found over 20 soul fragments of the Demon Emperor.

If these soul fragments were put together, they would nearly be the complete soul of the Demon Emperor.

Of these 20 soul fragments, the largest one was the size of a baby’s palm.

The smallest was the size of a bean.

What Lin Ming wanted from this were the memories of the Demon God Imperial Palace!

However, he didn’t know what would be found within these soul fragments, or how many memories each contained.

Thus, the biggest palm-sized one would have the greatest chances of being the one with the memories he desired.

But Lin Ming had never absorbed a soul fragment as large as this baby-sized palm before. If his soul force was lacking, then he would suffer a massive backlash from the Demon Emperor’s remnant consciousness and turn into an idiot.

Lin Ming grit his teeth.

At this point, he no longer had any other path to take!

Lin Ming touched his soul force to the largest soul fragment and reached out his hand.

Woosh!

The soul fragment submerged into Lin Ming’s body, bringing with it a rich scent of blood.

In that instant, Lin Ming's spiritual sea trembled, and all sorts of visions entered into his mind.

Lakes of blood, battlefields, demons, various great wars and endless slaughtering; it seemed as if everything the Demon Emperor remembered was endless killing and endless war.

Lin Ming already had experience absorbing these soul fragments. He steadfastly defended his mind, ridding his heart of all distractions. The Samsara martial intent's swirling black vortex appeared in his spiritual sea, completely covering his mind.

In terms of soul defense, after Lin Ming had passed through the trial of 100 Samsaras, it could be considered to be heaven defying.

However… as Lin Ming was resisting these visions in his mind, a sudden change occurred!

Within the rush of scenes, a vicious-looking hell dog crawled out from a pond of blood and began to race towards the swirling black vortex!

Ca!

The demonic hell dog swiped its paws, and tore apart half of the Samsara martial intent's swirling black vortex!

Pu!

Outside the space of the Magic Cube, Lin Ming's true body coughed up a mouthful of blood, his face turning white.

In that moment, Lin Ming could clearly see a grim smile on that demonic hell dog's face… could it be…

Lin Ming's hands and feet instantly went cold.

He suddenly realized one possibility, and that was that this baby palm-size soul fragment was not some ownerless soul, but had its own independent consciousness.

A human soul was comprised of two parts. First, a spirit mark, and second, memories.

If the spirit mark was erased, then the soul would have no owner. If the soul only had its most basic instincts, then there was nothing to fear.

But, this soul fragment was obviously different!

Before this, Lin Ming had known that there were many dangers surrounding the absorption of these soul fragments. He had been careful before, but this time he was forced to desperation and had gambled everything on this one bet, finally bringing this calamity upon himself!

Even if these soul fragments contained just a sliver of the independent consciousness of a Realm of the Gods Supreme Elder, it wasn't something that Lin Ming could defend against!

Bang!

The crimson hell dog attacked again; the Samsara martial intent's swirling black vortex directly collapsed!

In that moment, Lin Ming felt as if a giant iron ball slammed into his head. He gave a stuffy cough and blood leaked from his nostrils. He almost fell onto the ground where he was.

"Ahh!"

Lin Ming couldn't resist this pain at all. It was as if countless knives had been stabbed into his mind. This sort of pain was to the extent that a normal person would have killed themselves to relieve themselves of this suffering.

The Samsara martial intent was truly worthy of being a martial intent comprehended from the seventh floor of the Sorcerer Pagoda. In this situation, it even condensed once again into a swirling black vortex…

The crimson hell dog revealed a disdainful sneer and then threw itself at the black vortex again.

Peng!

The swirling black vortex exploded into pieces once more.

Lin Ming's body shook and he nearly fainted. This dog was too strong…

This unstoppable force caused Lin Ming to feel despair.

This was the consciousness that once belonged to a Realm of the Gods powerhouse?

It was just a tiny sliver of surviving consciousness…. not just that, but it had undergone countless tens of thousands of years of slumber and weakening, and yet he wasn't able to resist it at all?

Lin Ming clenched his bloodied teeth, and his nails dug into the flesh of his palms. He had made his decision to reach the peak of martial arts so how could he die here!?

"Divine Demon Thunder Soul!"

Bang bang!

Within the sky of Lin Ming's spiritual sea, the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder and Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder appeared together. The power of thunder was the nemesis of ghosts and demons, and was the best at countering souls! Lin Ming had resorted to using the Divine Demon Steel Needle in this final life or death battle!

Woosh!

The Divine Demon Steel Needle howled towards the crimson hell dog.

Meanwhile, the Samsara martial intent's black vortex enveloped the crimson hell dog's body. Although it couldn't tear the hell dog apart, it could reduce its power.

However, the crimson hell dog only contemptuously smiled. It howled, and with a simple great leap, jumped out of the swirling black vortex, smashing its paws on the Divine Demon Thunder Soul!

Kacha!

The Divine Demon Steel Needle that had been formed with Lin Ming's complete mind exploded into bits, dissolving into the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder and Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder before scattering to pieces. Lin Min's body shook, and he fell to the ground, his face white like paper.

Chapter 483 – White Light

Chapter 483 – White Light

…

…

…

The Divine Demon Thunder Soul scattered into pieces. But a blackened scorch mark was left behind on the hell dog's claws; this was the result of the power of thunder.

After all, countless years had passed since the Demon Emperor's soul was torn apart. The power of the Demon Emperor's remnant consciousness was extremely weak.

The hell dog glanced at its claws and growled, baring its fangs; this was the same anger as being bitten by an ant.

"Roar!"

The hell dog howled and rushed straight towards Lin Ming! It vowed to tear apart this little bug that had caused it pain!

At this time, Lin Ming's vision was blurred as he had an agonizing headache as countless chaotic images entered into mind. He bit down on his own tongue to force himself awake from this aching pain. As he saw the blood-colored eyes of the hell dog closing in on him, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a savage color.

He grit his teeth and thrust out his hand. The Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder and Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder that had scattered into the air suddenly converged onto his hand, forming a purple and red spear of thunder. The torn pieces of the Samsara martial intent turned into countless tatters that swirled around the spear.

Between Lin Ming's eyes, the flame mark ignited in dazzling brilliance. Behind Lin Ming, the twin phantoms of an Azure Dragon and Ancient Phoenix appeared. In that instant, Lin Ming had overdrawn his complete will and soul into this life or death attack!

As the hell dog rushed towards him, it brought billowing waves of bloody wind. Lin Ming shouted out, his feet bearing down on the void. His hands gripped the purple and red thunder spear and pierced towards the jaws of the hell dog!

Kacha!

Under this great pressure, the spear of thunder broke apart!

However, the broken thunder spear was like a thorn in the hell dog, piercing through its upper jaw and towards its brain!

"Awoo!"

The hell dog howled, falling to the ground. On top of its head, the wound from the thunder spear made 'chi chi chi' sounds as it burned its flesh, almost etching a big hole.

"%@#!"

The hell dog spat out a line of unknown language. Its eyes were blood red as it lifted its two front paws and tried to grab the broken thunder spear in its jaws; it wanted to pull it out!

Even this didn't kill it…

Lin Ming ruefully smiled. His ears and nostrils were already bleeding out, and after overdrawing his soul, he no longer had the strength to resist again. He fell to his knees and his surroundings began to blur, and all sound completely disappeared as if the world was fading away from him.

In his dim vision, he saw the sphere of light in the center of the void begin to emit a white mist. Then, Lin Ming completely lost consciousness.

Countless visions crossed Lin Ming's mind, and his thoughts first returned to his childhood. His parents, Lin Xiaodong, Lan Yunyue, Qin Xingxuan... he vividly recalled these people one at a time, as if he was once again experiencing the trial of 100 Samsaras. Then, Lin Ming felt as if he was bathed in a pleasantly war sunlight, just like a baby in its mother's womb... he was incomparably peaceful and relaxed.

As his blurry vision began to slowly clear, Lin Ming opened his eyes and found that he was still in his spiritual sea. But, the sort of aching tiredness in his mind had already disappeared. As for the hell dog, it was still howling pitifully, but this time, it seemed to be very crestfallen, its entire body torn to pieces.

This is....

Lin Ming was shocked. He didn't think that his spear of thunder would have this effect. As he recalled that misty white light from a moment ago, he suddenly realized something.

Lin Ming withdrew his consciousness from his spiritual sea and looked over to the center of the Magic Cube space. There, the one foot wide sphere of light was quietly floating, surrounded by countless soul fragments that endlessly rotated around it...

It was this!?

Lin Ming carefully released his senses, feeling the space around the sphere of light. He was able to feel a faint white light that was warm and comforting. If he wasn't wrong, then this sphere of light was what had released the white mist.

This sphere of light was like the spirit of the Magic Cube, and the Magic Cube seemed to have a will of its own because of this sphere of light. Ever since he had obtained the Magic Cube, Lin Ming had never had any communication with it. But Lin Ming was certain that the Magic Cube was intelligent and had a will of its own.

As for that white sphere of light, Lin Ming always had a guess.

All of the surrounding soul fragments that drifted around this sphere of light were from the Realm of the Gods powerhouses. Their souls were torn to pieces by the Magic Cube and sent into this space. Then, the Saintess that had controlled the Magic Cube also had her soul twisted into the Magic Cube. Could her soul be at this center point of the space?

Lin Ming tried to communicate by sending out his sense, but whenever anything touched the sphere of light, it would sink in and disappear.

Lin Ming finally gave up. At this time, he felt his mind stir and he returned to his spiritual sea. To his amazement and dismay, he found that the hell dog that had been torn to pieces was trying to reattach itself!

“So stubborn!”

Lin Ming was startled. This remnant soul fragment from a Realm of the Gods Supreme Elder was just a tiny fraction that had gone through countless years of weakening, and yet it was still terrifying to this extent. If it was the complete consciousness of a Supreme Elder, then he couldn’t imagine what sort of horror it would be. It probably wouldn’t fade away even without hundreds of thousands of years of being sealed away!

But the Magic Cube, in just an instant, had twisted apart the souls of thousands of Realm of the Gods powerhouses… just what sort of earth-shaking existence was that…

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. The stronger he became, the more he understood just how great the gap was between him and these Realm of the Gods powerhouses.

As he looked at those wiggling pieces that were trying to crawl towards each other, Lin Ming coldly snorted. The hell dog wanted to fuse into one whole again; how could Lin Ming allow it to do that?

He waved his hands, and the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder appeared in his left and the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder appeared in his right. Thunder flashed, and the purple and red thunders turned into bolts of thick lightning that fell onto the hell dog like a shower of deadly rain!

The power of thunder was the best at suppressing the strength of spirits. The hell dog that was trying to fuse back into a whole again was blown apart by Lin Ming, its soul sizzling.

Right after, Lin Ming used the Samsara martial intent. A black vortex crashed onto the fragments of the hell dog's will, sending out 'ka ka ka' sounds like bits of metal that had been dropped into a meat grinder. However, no matter what Lin Ming did, these remnant pieces of consciousness refused to be annihilated!

"It's really tough."

Lin Ming didn't think he could finish off these pieces of remnant consciousness. The difference in their levels was really just too great.

And ridding himself of this consciousness was the same as giving up on the soul fragment he had absorbed. Naturally, Lin Ming was reluctant to do this.

'I'll have to individually seal away these pieces of consciousness. As long as they don't re-fuse together, they won't be able to affect me.' After thinking it over, Lin Ming chose this risky path. When he became stronger in the future, he would be able to slowly wear away these fragments.

Lin Ming thrust out his hands, the purple-red power of thunder tightly wrapping around him like gloves. Then, Lin Ming began to carefully separate the pieces of consciousness from the black vortex. His fingers moved, surrounding the pieces of consciousness with threads formed from the power of thunder.

After these threads turned into a thick cocoon around the remnant consciousness, completely isolating it from the rest, Lin Ming tossed it into his spiritual sea.

Like this, Lin Ming slowly wrapped every other pieces with the power of thunder, and submerged them in different areas of his spiritual sea. This was so that one day, if Lin Ming's spirit was ever weakened for some reason, these pieces of will wouldn't have a chance to take advantage of him.

“Finally done…”

Lin Ming let out a long breath and withdrew his mind from the Magic Cube space. At this time, he was incomparably tired, and just wanted to have a good rest without caring for anything else.

But, time was urgent. Lin Ming wasn’t sure how many hours had passed. He sat in meditation for a moment to catch himself, and then endured the headaches as he looked through the memories of the Demon Emperor’s soul fragment…

…………

At this time, since Lin Ming had escaped, it had already been four hours.

Lei Jingtian and the rest of them had been engaging in a full on onslaught against the illusionary killing array until their hands were tired. But the protective barrier of the array formation was like an unshakeable mountain; there was just no response!

In this situation, Lei Jingtian was already feeling a despair like the world was collapsing. A late Revolving Core master, a middle Revolving Core master, and two early Revolving Core masters had joined together to ceaselessly attack for four hours and yet there was still no effect. This little array formation from a sixth-grade sect was already comparable to a great protective land array from a fourth-grade sect.

“This damn law suppression.” Even the normally calm Mu Chihuo was angry, and he suddenly stopped his attacks. Mu Chihuo wavered on his feet. His true essence was in chaos, his body was shaky, and he could barely stand.

All of this fell into Mu Qingyi’s eyes. Mu Qingyi sneered and said, “Mu Chihuo, this suffering is what you have reaped. The bloodstain contract within you is already beginning to take effect. Within a month, 30% of your Divine Phoenix bloodline will fade away. Half a year from now, it will completely vanish, and your life force will exhaust itself and you will perish!”

"My Divine Phoenix bloodline?" Mu Chihuo smiled with disdain before laughing out, "The so-called Divine Phoenix bloodline is nothing more than the thin bloodline of the Vermillion Bird, losing it is nothing pitiful. As long as I can kill Lin Ming, I will be obtain to obtain the true Divine Phoenix blood in his body!"

As Mu Chihuo spoke, Mu Qingyi was shocked, her heart immediately shaking! She finally understood just why Mu Chihuo would risk everything in order to kill Lin Ming.

Ever since Lin Ming had emerged from the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, his body had been emitting an aura that made her heart palpitate. Between Lin Ming's eyebrows, there was also a faint and peculiar flame mark. During the battle with the South Sea Demon Region, that flame mark had ignited. In that moment, Mu Qingyi was able to clearly feel a deep fear that originated from the depths of her bloodline!

If she was right, then it was highly likely that Lin Ming had obtained a very rich and pure bloodline within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. This bloodline far surpassed what the Divine Phoenix Island Founder had received when she entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

And Mu Chihuo's goal was Lin Ming's bloodline.

The bloodstain contract only had the power to bind the descendants of the Mu Family Clan based on their bloodline, it wasn't able to restrict Lin Ming. As long as Mu Chihuo was able to obtain Lin Ming's bloodline, then he would naturally be able to free himself from the restrictions of the bloodstain contract. As for losing the Mu bloodline, if it was lost then it was lost – he simply didn't care about it.

Mu Qingyi realized she had been wrong from the beginning. The reason that Mu Chihuo had tried to kill Lin Ming was not for revenge, but rather to obtain a higher power. If he could steal Lin Ming's bloodline and also snatch away the first eight layers of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', then all he had to do was wait for Mu Fengxian's life to eventually end of old age. At that time, he would be able to rule the entire Divine Phoenix Island with his strength!

Perhaps Mu Chihuo might have had this all planned out before he came into this broken world!

Thinking of this, Mu Qingyi felt a sense of despair.

If she had to blame someone, she could only blame herself for thinking that the restrictions of the bloodstain contract were infallible.

Chapter 484 – Into the Imperial Palace

Chapter 484 – Into the Imperial Palace

…

…

…

In the central transmission array of the broken world, Lin Ming forced a smile after he read the leftover memories of the memory fragment.

The memories of the Imperial Palace didn't have any knowledge about secret paths that could be taken, or perhaps there were never any at all. If there wasn't a secret path then it would be very difficult for Lin Ming to go in and out of the Demon God Imperial Palace without encountering those Life Destruction powerhouses.

In this broken world, his perception was suppressed to only 200 feet. But, these Life Destruction powerhouses' perception might even radiate farther out than 1000 feet or even 10,000 feet; it would just be too easy for them to discover him. Even if he found any treasure, he wouldn't have his own share.

Lin Ming now knew a great deal about the Demon God Imperial Palace's inner layout, but what he knew made him feel hopeless: the Imperial Palace was filled with endless puppets.

The Imperial Palace occupied a swathe of land over hundreds of miles long. During the glory times of the Demon God Imperial Palace, there were tens and hundreds of thousands of people milling around; these people were all martial artist.

For this number of people, there were countless miscellaneous jobs that needed to be filled, all of which were done by the puppets, including guard duty and patrol duty.

Those puppets that were responsible for random daily chores had strength at the Xiantian realm. Those puppets responsible for patrolling were equal to the Revolving Core realm.

A Revolving Core master's combat strength didn't seem too terrifying, but their strength was not suppressed by the laws of this world. To a martial artist from the outside, they would nearly be equal to a Life Destruction powerhouse; it simply wasn't what Lin Ming could contend with.

These puppets discerned people from their bloodline of the Giant Demon race, there wasn't any knowledge of secret skills to control them in the Demon Emperor's memories.

In short, he would be overwhelmed with difficulty.

The only thing that Lin Ming could take relief in was that he had found the location of the Demon Emperor's medicine garden in the memories. If he wasn't wrong, then the Nirvana Dragon Root should be there too. As for the array formation that guarded it, Lin Ming was a bit unsure.

Also, some other very valuable information was that not too far away from the Demon God Imperial Palace's medicine garden, there was a one way transmission array that he could use to leave.

Just relying on these things, Lin Ming found it difficult to imagine how he would take the Nirvana Dragon Root from a crowd of Life Destruction masters.

"If I don't have a way to avoid those sentry puppets, how will I be able to enter the Demon God Imperial Palace with those Life Destruction masters? If it's like this, then my chances of obtaining the Nirvana Dragon Root are close to zero…" Thinking this, Lin Ming ruefully smiled.

"But… in the memories of the Demon Emperor, besides the medicine harden there is also a sealed treasure that is a top grade pill furnace. As for where this pill furnace is, the memories are completely unclear about it. As for the technique to manipulate it, it's also vague on that…"

Lin Ming let out a deep sigh. He was aware that something like this was hopeless from the start. If he wanted to obtain treasure, then first he would need strength capable of doing so.

Normally, a martial artist of his cultivation would be diligently taking a Heaven Opening Pill.

During this trip to the Demon God imperial Palace, Lin Ming just wanted a single root hair of the Nirvana Dragon Root. He would be satisfied if he could push his Tempering Marrow to 80 or 90% completion.

……….

100 miles away, Demon God Imperial Palace –

Even through tens of thousands of years of weathering, the Demon God Imperial Palace was still magnificent; it was hard to find any traces of damage on the walls of the Imperial Palace.

Within the Imperial Palace, there was a thick column that stood several thousands of feet high, as if it supported the heavens themselves.

The 20 to 30 Life Destruction powerhouses that gathered at the entrance to the Demon God Imperial Palace had gone through several days of effort, and finally, an opening had been made in the defensive barrier of the Demon God Imperial Palace that was wide enough for a single person.

This was what Xuan Wuji had studied from the Demon Emperor's letter for several years, and finally found a way to break open the defensive barrier. Simply put, they first had to isolate a part of the defensive array from the power source and then slowly attack it and wear down the energy that kept the barrier up. Afterwards, they would be able to break through the barrier.

“Let’s enter, this entrance can only be maintained for a single hour. Afterwards, the shield will automatically close again. When that times comes, we will have to work together again to reopen the shield.”

To have to spend so much time and effort to open the defensive barrier… there was simply nothing else they could do. The Demon God Imperial Palace had been a sixth grade sect. Their Elders were Emperor level powerhouses, their enforcers were at the Life Destruction realm and their deacons were Revolving Core martial artists.

Of Xuan Wuji and the rest, they mostly ranged from the first Life Destruction stage to the third. With their cultivation suppressed to 20%, they probably weren’t much stronger than those Revolving Core deacons.

For less than 30 of those lowest level deacons and enforcers to gather together and open the Demon God Imperial Palace would naturally not be easy.

Xuan Yuqie was the first to enter, followed by Nanyun Wang. Two days ago, outside of the barrier, Nanyun Wang didn’t fight with Xuan Wuji. The two of them had fallen into an impasse, glaring at each other as sparks flew.

Finally, they entered together – a total of 28 people.

Of these 28 people, they were divided into approximately five groups. The first group was the South Sea Demon Region, the second was the Great Zen Temple, the third group was the free martial artists that were represented by Nanyun Wang, the fourth group was smaller sects represented by Divine Phoenix Island, and the last was the Black Flood Dragon Clan.

The relations between these five major groups were complex and chaotic. Although they all aimed for them treasures in the Demon God Imperial Palace, they had already reached an agreement on how to distribute the treasure, and their representatives had even taken an oath on their heart of martial arts.

But, everyone also knew just how tenuous and fragile his agreement was. This agreement mostly applied to the basic treasures. If they truly encountered the Nirvana Dragon Root that was capable of increasing the chances of passing the Life Destruction stage, then taking some small damage to one's heart of martial arts was nothing at all.

Of these five major groups, Divine Phoenix Island and the small sects were the weakest. But, Mu Fengxian was also aware of this. Before she entered here, she had reached an agreement with the Great Zen Temple. She would give up all chances of getting the Nirvana Dragon Root and other such great lucky chances in exchange for asylum and protection. So at least preserving their lives wouldn't be a problem.

"These fellows that haunt us like ghosts are really hard to deal with. If they keep following us around, it will be hard to avoid a fierce battle later." As Xuan Wuji swept his eyes past everyone, he sent out a true essence sound transmission. He wanted to separate from everyone to look for treasures himself, but he knew that since he was the one with the Demon Emperor's letter, and also because he understood the location of the Demon God Imperial Palace's treasure, it would be impossible for them to give up on following him.

"Mm… besides the Nirvana Dragon Root, there is also the Giant Leviathan and the Universe Heaven Melting Furnace. We are the only ones that have the technique to control the Giant Leviathan, so it is inevitably ours. We have to fight for the Nirvana Dragon Root. But, of all these things, the Universe Heaven Melting Furnace is the most valuable one of all… I can't imagine what happened in ancient times that the Demon Emperor would actually leave such an important furnace in the Demon God Imperial Palace." The one who answered was Xuan Yuqie. In the past, Xuan Wuji and Xuan Yuqie had read the Demon Emperor's letter together.

"If I had to guess, then the Universe Heaven Melting Furnace was left behind by the Demon Emperor in order to protect the Demon God Imperial Palace. It was likely that the Demon Emperor was thinking that he would one day re-enter this broken world in order to rebuild the Demon God Imperial Palace. But, for some unknown reason, he was unable to return. This Universe Heaven Melting Furnace is the most precious treasure here by a landslide. Unfortunately, the stove is sealed within the Demon God Imperial Palace and has already become one with this land; it just cannot be moved by us. We had already spent our complete effort in order to create a small opening in the entrance's defensive barrier. If we want to take the Universe Heaven Melting Furnace as our own, then the chances of that are practically zero.”

As Xuan Wuji mentioned the Universe Heaven Melting Furnace, Xuan Yuqie felt her heart itch. According the Demon Emperor’s letter, this furnace was used to refine heavenly pills. Tens of thousands of years ago, it was the number one pill furnace throughout the entire Sky Spill Continent. There were all sorts of valuable treasures sealed within the Universe Heaven Melting Furnace. For instance, there were top quality pills within. Their profit would be immense if they could obtain just a bit of this.

Moreover, the Universe Heaven Melting Furnace was a top treasure. If an enemy was sealed within and burnt by the furnace fires, it would be easy to turn anyone into nothing but ash.

It wouldn’t be an exaggeration at all to say that with this treasure, she would be able to step into the Divine Sea realm with Xuan Wuji, and the South Sea Demon Region would rise to become a Holy Land. They would be able to reproduce the magnificence of the Silent Demon Emperor City from 3000 years ago.

Xuan Wuji shook his head and said, “Don’t even think of obtaining the Universe Heaven Melting Stove. The Nirvana Dragon Root is much more practical for us.”

“Mm...” Xuan Yuqie nodded and then suddenly thought of something. She said, “Let’s at least take a look. Once these fellows take a look at the Universe Heaven Melting Furnace, they will absolutely struggle for it. When that time comes, it will be to our advantage.”

As Xuan Yuqie spoke, a trace of a devilish smile appeared on her beautiful face, without the slightest hit of disharmony. If someone evil and stunning like Xuan Yuqie ever appeared in the mortal world, then they would truly die in a miserable fate.

“Hey, if a dozen or so of those fellows died, then that would be perfect...” Xuan Wuji traced his chain, his eyes flashing with a cold light.

As these Life Destruction Supreme Elders entered the Demon God Imperial Palace, at a transmission array 10 miles away, a white light flashed. A pale youth appeared. This youth was Lin Ming.

"This is the Demon God Imperial Palace…" Lin Ming breathed out. He had finally arrived. "If I remember correctly, this is the far square of the Demon God Imperial Palace. The main entrance is 10 miles ahead. The Imperial Palace's main entrance also has a great protective array. If I want to enter, I'll have to spend a great deal of effort.

Although there was a method to pass the barrier at the entrance, Lin Ming's cultivation was just too low; wanting to enter would be difficult.

Lin Ming cautiously advanced according to the path in his memory. If he followed behind these Life Destruction Supreme Elders and was found, then he would have to resign himself to his fate.

"Mm? The barrier has already been opened by them."

As Lin Ming looked at the barrier, he saw a hole there just the size for one dog. Worry crossed his expression. This meant that those Life Destruction powerhouses had already entered the Demon God Imperial Palace, and it was likely that they obtained some information about the Imperial Palace.

Thus the one advantage he had was greatly lessened.

Lin Ming clenched his teeth and decided to sneak through anyways.

The barrier was able to slowly restore itself. That hole that had been wide enough for one person was not just two square feet. Lin Ming crawled on the ground and barely fit through.

Chapter 485 – Exposed

Chapter 485 – Exposed

…

…

…

After sneaking past the barrier, Lin Ming glanced around to see the entry hole he went through slowly vanishing. At this rate, a human wouldn't be able to pass through in another quarter of an hour. That meant there really was no path to escape; all he could do was tread forwards and leave through the transmission array within the Imperial Palace.

This was one of the few bits of valuable information from the memories of the Demon Emperor. The premise of this was that he could obtain some treasures and leave, otherwise the transmission array wouldn't be that helpful.

Lin Ming sighed a long breath, and slowly walked into the Demon God Imperial Palace.

The main temple of the Demon God Imperial Palace occupied a swathe of land almost a hundred miles wide. Its peaks grazed the sky, and the inside was incomparably vast. This massive main temple was no different from its own mini country

The main temple door was over 200 feet high. On both sides of the large doors, there were great demon statues that were hundreds of feet tall. These statues were formed from blood-red rock, and they had long wings behind them. Their expressions were extremely ferocious and cruel.

As Lin Ming entered through the main entrance, he saw a massive hall over 1000 feet wide. Dozens upon dozens of thick columns vaulted towards the heavens, vanishing into the dark.

In this main hall, there were 10 tunnels, each leading to a different area of the Demon God Imperial Palace. Lin Ming chose according to his memories, and walked over to the first path on the very left. This large path was 40 to 50 feet high, and the ground was covered with all sorts of runes. The walls to the side were hewed from thick sparkling crystal. Although the tunnel was sealed off from the sun, there was still a light that came from somewhere that clearly illuminated everything.

There were many spells etched into the walls and ground. Wanting to break open these walls was no easier than breaking through the great protective array of the Imperial Palace.

A long corridor spread forth. From time to time, Lin Ming could see stone doors at the side. Every stone door was engraved with exquisite reliefs and images; these were probably because of the spells that were placed on them. Even though tens of thousands of years had passed, there was surprisingly not even a single grain of dust. The fine golden reliefs shined with a dazzling bright light.

As Lin Ming calmed his heart, he could faintly feel a trace of residual true essence; these were true essence fluctuations that were left behind from a violent fight.

"These true essence fluctuations must be from when those Life Destruction fellows fought the puppets here. According to this, it seems those old fellows were just here an hour ago. Even though the battle was so violent, there isn't the least bit wreckage. Those old fellows probably divided the trash and took it away so that they could research it when they returned..."

Lin Ming was able to quickly estimate the situation that had happened about an hour ago. These ancient puppets had a great research value. If they could imitate them, then the value they had to a sect's strength would be immense; taking away the remains wasn't anything strange.

At this moment, Lin Ming could hear faint rumbling explosions in the distance. He was well aware that this sound was from the Life Destruction powerhouses once again fighting the guard puppets.

Following far behind these people wasn't necessarily any better, or even safe. If he encountered some puppets that they left behind, then he would be in danger. Not just that, but he wouldn't be able to obtain any treasures from following behind these fellows.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming bitterly sighed. He didn't have a better way to approach this.

He could only continue from here and hope that the Life Destruction powerhouses would spread out. If his luck was good, he might be able to pick up some things that they forgot.

If he caught up to them, not only would he not obtain any treasures, he might even call a calamity down upon himself.

After all, he was the one who had slain Lei Mubai. When he entered this broken world, he still had his appearance changing technique. Because those Revolving Core martial artists had their strength suppressed to such a low state, they weren't able to see through Lin Ming's disguise. But in front of these Life Destruction powerhouses, Lin Ming wasn't so stupid as to fool himself into believing it would still work.

The South Sea Demon Region Elders might not have seen his picture. If there was some South Sea Demon Region Elder here that shared a blood relation with Lei Mubai, there was a chance that they would instantly kill him.

Although Mu Fengxian and the Great Zen Temple had reached an agreement to cooperate, whether or not the Great Zen Temple's Abbot Baimei would protect him was another matter altogether.

"From the sounds I just heard, they should be no less than ten thousand feet away. But for caution's sake, I'll still wait a bit, just in case something might happen."

Facing these Life Destruction old fellows, Lin Ming had to be extremely careful. Any one of these fellows could casually be a monster that lived for over a thousand years. Whether it was cultivation or calculating, it wasn't something he could compare with.

Struggling for treasures with these people was difficult to the point of making one feel despair.

After Lin Ming waited for around an incense stick of time, he felt a faint unease in his heart, as if something was wrong.

After a few breaths of times, his complexion suddenly changed. He turned around, wanting to run away, but just as he took one step, he froze where he was, his face going completely dark and gloomy.

He had been found out!

As he listened to those faint explosive sounds a moment ago, he had guessed that they were ten thousand feet away. From such a far distance, Lin Ming didn't believe that these Life Destruction fellows would be able to sense him under the suppressive laws of this world. But, the fact was that they could; this was simply inconceivable. A moment ago, as he wanted to run away, an ice-cold voice from one of those strange old fellows sounded in his mind.

"If you do not want to die, then immediately come out!"

What bad luck!

Lin Ming felt that his entire trip through this broken world could be described as heaven-defying bad luck!

From the time that the broken world had been opened, Lin Ming had entered two times. Not only did he not obtain even the slightest lucky chance, he instead drew all sorts of troubles onto himself.

He had killed a Revolving Core Elder that had tried to sneak attack him, and this matter was discovered by the South Sea Demon Region, causing a fierce battle. Then, there was a betrayal that occurred from within Divine Phoenix Island. Lin Ming didn't know what Mu Chihuo's goal was, but that man was willing to sacrifice everything to kill him.

Lin Ming had been forced into a dead end and had to risk swallowing the soul fragment of the Demon Emperor, and nearly lost his life in exchange. And what was most depressing was that even with the new information he had obtained, his chances of obtaining the Nirvana Dragon Root were still as slim as before.

He had risked death and finally snuck into the Demon God Imperial Palace. But just as he was only a little bit in, these Life Destruction fellows had actually used some sort of method to discover him!

Lin Ming wanted to cry until there were no more tears left. Nothing had gone well for him since he had entered this broken world.

Lin Ming felt as if he was being locked in place by some suppressive energy; his complexion became extremely ugly!

He couldn’t escape!

If this was an Elder of the South Sea Demon Region who was related to Lei Mubai in some way…

Lin Ming didn’t dare to imagine this scenario. But at this moment, a true essence sound transmission was sent out once more.

“I’ll give you 30 breaths of time. Come out now, or all that awaits you is… death! This old man’s patience is at its limit!”

Lin Ming bitterly sighed. He could only brace himself and move forwards. In this case, there was nothing he could do to resist. He could only pray that the Great Zen Temple would protect him under their wing, and at worst pay some price to do so.

This 10,000 foot path was an extremely long walk. As Lin Ming paced down the hall, he could clearly hear every step in the corridors, and even the echo of his own footsteps.

He wanted to understand how he was found. There was no way that these Life Destruction old fellows had a perception that could stretch so far back. The only possibility was that they had left a spell behind, and as soon as Lin Ming had walked past or touched it, he had been discovered!

As Lin Ming realized this, his complexion became increasingly bitter. He didn't think that these old fellows would be careful to this extent.

As 30 breaths of time slowly passed, Lin Ming thought about what countermeasures he could take. But in the end he couldn't think of anything that could work.

As he reached the end of the path, he turned a corner and came upon an incomparably broad space. Although Lin Ming had the memories of the Demon Emperor, and knew just how massive the halls of the Demon God Imperial Palace were, seeing with his own eyes was still utterly shocking.

The length and width of this hall was a thousand feet long and wide, and also several thousands of feet high; it was enough to hold a small mountain.

On the vast ground, there were countless obsidian statues that littered the floor. These statues were all 10 feet tall carvings of Giant Demons, the rations were on a 1:1 scale.

These statues were arranged in neat rows. They held all sorts of weapons, from spears to halberds to heavy swords to shields. Every one of these Giant Demon statues had hideous expressions, and even cracks in their armor were clearly reflected.

There were some Giant Demons that rode giant war dogs. As Lin Ming looked at the demonic visage of these beasts, his heart stirred. These hellish demon dogs were extremely similar to that crimson hell dog that had invaded his spiritual sea after he swallowed the Demon Emperor's soul fragment.

With tens of thousands of these statues gathered together, they naturally emitted a surging, majestic aura that was filled with vigor; it would shock anyone who saw it.

However, Lin Ming didn’t have the mind to be shocked at the moment. This was because… within this massive hall, there was a group of Life Destruction old fellows that were floating in their air. Relative to this massive hall they were nothing more than mosquitoes in the sky. But, they exerted a great pressure on Lin Ming.

Mu Fengxian and Mu Yuhuang were also among these martial artists. Lin Ming could see that their complexions immediately changed; they hadn’t expected that the intruder they caught would be Lin Ming.

As for Nanyun Wang and the rest, they all revealed surprise as they saw Lin Ming. They obviously didn’t expect that a junior martial artist that hadn’t even reached the Xiantian realm would be able to come here.

As for the South Sea Demon Region’s side, as Xuan Yuqie saw Lin Ming, she gently smirked with a ‘heh’. And as for Xuan Wuji, as he saw Lin Ming, his complexion immediately sunk to the bottom.

“Junior, what is your name!” Xuan Wuji’s voice was grim, and contained a hint of murderous intent. He too had seen Lin Ming’s portrait before, but that picture had been an estimation that had passed through several people and had many dissimilarities with Lin Ming. Thus, Xuan Wuji asked this question.

Lin Ming felt his heart thump. He had been carefully paying attention to the responses from everyone here. But now, it looked as if Xuan Wuji was related in some way to Lei Mubai.

Lin Ming suppressed the shock in his heart and calmly said, “This junior’s surname is Ling, Ling Sen.”

As Lin Ming casually tossed out the name Ling Sen, Xuan Wuji only sneered, “Ling Sen? Hehe, this old man doesn’t know whether or not that’s true, but for a junior with a Houtian cultivation to be able to safely arrive here, there isn’t even a handful among the entire South

Horizon Region, Five Element Region, and Great Zen Region altogether! Lin Ming! Even if this old man didn’t see your portrait, I would still correctly guess that it was you! To think that I searched so far and wide only to find you here! I truly have saved so much effort! This old man will refine your soul, and have you begging for death!”

Chapter 486 – Trap Puppets

Chapter 486 – Trap Puppets

…

…

…

As Xuan Wuji spoke, he smiled fiercely and struck his palm down on Lin Ming.

Mu Fengxian's complexion changed, "Stop!"

With this word, Mu Fengxian shot out. At the same time, the Blue Luan Faction's blue-clothed old woman also moved!

The dual energies of fire and ice swept out at the same time, surging like a wave towards Xuan Wuji. Xuan Wuji only sneered, "Screw off!"

Bang!

The ice and fire energy were both scattered by Xuan Wuji, and Mu Fengxian and the blue-clothed old woman were forced to fly backwards. As for Xuan Wuji, he had only paused for the slightest moment before being reinvigorated and attacking Lin Ming as before!

"Abbot Whitebrow, please rescue my disciple!" Mu Yuhuang nervously shouted. Against a top ranked master like Xuan Wuji, Mu Yuhuang was completely outmatched; she wouldn't even be able to stop him for a second.

"This old monk knows."

During this trip into the Demon God Imperial Palace, Divine Phoenix Island was a very good boost to him. As for Xuan Wuji, he was the main competition for the Great Zen Temple. Abbot Whitebrow naturally knew which side he should help.

With a toss of the staff in his hand, Abbot Whitebrow began to recite to himself like the steady beat of a drum. A golden light mudra appeared around his hands, and he pressed his palm down at Xuan Wuji.

At the same time, to Mu Yuhuang's astonishment, Nanyun Wang also moved. Nanyun Wang wildly laughed as he turned his hand, producing a scarlet-bladed sword and then cutting down at Xuan Wuji!

As Xuan Wuji saw the two third stage Life Destruction masters acting together, he paled. He had no choice but to draw back.

Bang!

True essence collided and the air trembled. The brutal true essence shockwaves weren't something that a normal Revolving Core powerhouse would be able to resist.

Mu Yuhuang's figure flashed and she flew over to Lin Ming's side. She held onto him with a hand, creating a light red shield of flame to block the true essence storm.

Ka ka ka!

The true essence shockwave smashed into the flame shield with a grating sound, as if it would wear it down.

Behind Mu Yuhuang, Lin Ming let out a long breath of relief. He had narrowly made it past this situation. If Abbot Whitebrow hadn't helped him, he would inevitably have died here.

However, that purple-gold-robed Supreme Elder, wasn't his name Nanyun Wang? Why would that man help?

"Nanyun Wang!"

Xuan Wuji glared at Nanyun Wang, his expression black.

If Abbot Whitebrow helped Lin Ming, then he had nothing to say. But if Nanyun Wang acted too, he was just trying to mess with him. Several days ago, Xuan Wuji and Nanyun Wang had almost engaged in a fierce battle outside of the Demon God Imperial Place. Ever since then, Nanyun Wang had been acting out against Xuan Wuji whenever possible.

"Hehe." Nanyun Wang disdainfully smiled. His eyes said 'so what will you do?' In terms of combat strength alone, Nanyun Wang was even slightly better than Xuan Wuji. He simply didn't need to fear him at all.

A dark light flashed across Xuan Wuji's face. Then, Xuan Wuji forcefully suppressed the anger that was rising in his heart. He coldly snorted and no longer tried to attack.

Fighting two third stage Life Destruction masters at the same time was a stupid decision.

"Haha!" As Nanyun Wang saw Xuan Wuji give up, his thoughts were incomparably smooth. He said to Lin Ming, "Boy, you've got some skills. You're just at a mere Houtian realm cultivation and yet you're qualified to become enemies with that old thief Xuan. Come on, tell me just how you've pissed him off."

Nanyun Wang intentionally spoke in a very loud voice, intending to annoy Xuan Wuji; this left Lin Ming completely speechless. He thought for a moment, and then briefly summarized the reason to Nanyun Wang in a true essence sound transmission.

"So that's what happened! You killed that little loser Xuan Ji! You did well! You killed well! Good job!" Nanyun Wang clapped his hands together in applause. As for this behavior of adding fuel to the fire, Lin Ming wasn't sure whether to laugh or cry. After all, Nanyun Wang didn't need to fear Xuan Wuji, but he was the one that had killed Xuan Wuji's great grandson. Xuan Wuji would absolutely kill him whenever he had a chance to.

As he glanced over at Xuan Wuji, he saw that Xuan Wuji's complexion was already back to normal, without the slightest difference. Not only did he ignore Nanyun Wang, but he also completely ignored Lin Ming. This caused the worry in Lin Ming's heart to weigh down on him even more.

If he hadn't guessed wrong, then the one who left behind the spell that detected him was Xuan Wuji. That old fellow was too shrewd and incomprehensible. Lin Ming felt jumpy and apprehensive to be following him.

Lin Ming subconsciously backed away from Xuan Wuji.

Nanyun Wang noticed this and pulled out a jade pendant from his spatial ring. He chuckled and said, "This old man feels like I've been old friends with you for a long time. I must say that we've hit it off well together. Haha, this protective jade pendant is a gift to you. After you activate it, you'll be able to withstand the all-out attack of a second stage Life Destruction martial artist. It can only be used one time, but in a critical moment, it can be used to save your life."

With Nanyun Wang's peak third stage Life Destruction cultivation, creating such a protective jade pendant wasn't hard at all. Although it was useless in front of someone like Xuan Wuji, it would still be able to delay him for a moment. This was enough time for Abbot Whitebrow or Nanyun Wang to help.

Lin Ming looked at Nanyun Wang with surprise and took the jade pendant, "Thank you, Senior!"

This jade pendant was really too useful. Even if he didn't use it this time, he would definitely be able to make use of it in the future. Ever since he had come to the ancient battlefield, Lin Ming's regard for life-saving treasures had risen tremendously. The three pills and Escape Symbol that Mu Fengxian had given to him before had played a great role in saving his life.

“Hehe, this old man likes you; I see good things in you. Cultivate well, and in the future try to kill off more great grandsons of that old bastard Xuan! Or better yet, destroy the entire South Sea Demon Region! Haha!”

As Nanyun Wang delighted in his taunting of Xuan Wuji, Lin Ming rolled his eyes. This Nanyun Wang really wanted to provoke Xuan Wuji.

He probably wanted Xuan Wuji to attack again so that he could block him once more…

Thinking this, Lin Ming was extremely distressed.

Originally, Lin Ming had been hoping to rely on the memories of the Demon Emperor to pick up some lucky chances that everyone missed. But who knew that these Life Destruction old fellows would be so careful and actually discover him.

“Lin Ming, how did you come to the Demon God Imperial Palace?” Mu Fengxian’s voice was full of rebuke. “Abbot Whitebrow and Nanyun Wang can protect you for now, but they have no way to keep protecting you in the future. If they start fighting for treasures, then no one will take you into consideration. When that happens, Xuan Wuji will be able to instantly kill you! Even I wouldn’t be able to protect you!

“Also, what point is there to come here? The Nirvana Dragon Root is not something you can fight for. Let alone you, but even I realized this earlier, and only want to obtain some slight opportunity that might come my way.”

Mu Fengxian felt a bit angry and also sick to her stomach. The defensive barrier outside must have been resealed by now. Even if Lin Ming wanted to leave, there was no way he could do so. He had no choice now but to follow them. If he left by himself then his chances of dying to Xuan Wuji were even higher.

Lin Ming ruefully smiled and informed Mu Fengxian and Mu Yuhuang about the matter of Mu Chihuo’s betrayal with a true essence sound transmission.

Mu Fengxian was shaken. “What did you say? Mu Chihuo openly collaborated with Lei Jingtian to kill you?”

“Yes.”

“How is that possible… is Mu Chihuo crazy? For just a little bit of hatred, he no longer cares for his cultivation?” Mu Yuhuang found this incomprehensible. Ever since Divine Phoenix Island was established 3000 years ago, there had never been a case where an Elder with the surname Mu had betrayed the sect.

Mu Fengxian frowned, her complexion changing several times. Finally, she sighed and said, “That evil traitor Mu Chihuo… his plans are really too deep, and his observation is too sharp… Lin Ming, the truth is that I’ve long noticed the flame mark between your eyebrows. Have you inherited the bloodline of the Ancient Phoenix Clan?”

As Mu Fengxian spoke, Mu Yuhuang’s heart shook. Before this, she had also noticed a deep and powerful bloodline on Lin Ming’s body, but hadn’t thought too much about it. Now that this point was raised by Mu Fengxian, she was suddenly enlightened.

Lin Ming nodded, “It is the bloodline of the Ancient Phoenix Clan – the blood of the Ancient Phoenix.”

“Blood of the Ancient Phoenix.”

Mu Yuhuang gasped. The Ancient Phoenix and Vermillion Bird were existences on two completely different levels. The Vermillion Bird was merely a Saint Beast, and Saint Beasts were also divided by ranks. Within the rankings of Sky Spill Continent’s Saint Beasts, the truth was that the Vermillion Bird was quite low.

But, the Ancient Phoenix was a God Beast. Even within the Realm of the Gods, a God Beast was an extremely rare being! The blood of the Ancient Phoenix was absolutely not something that the Vermillion Bird bloodline could compare with!

No wonder that Mu Chihuo was willing to gamble everything away. If he could really obtain Lin Ming's bloodline and also steal away the first eight layers of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', then even Mu Chihuo might have a chance of becoming an Emperor level powerhouse in the future!

"This is all my negligence!"

Mu Yuhuang blamed herself. If she hadn't placed so much trust in the bloodstain contract, then she would never have allowed Mu Chihuo to enter into this broken world, creating such good conditions for him to betray the sect.

Now that the Demon God Imperial Palace was sealed away, she couldn't leave even if she wanted; she could only continue moving forwards.

"Now isn't the time to talk about such things. Lin Ming, since you've already come here, follow behind me and keep far away from Xuan Wuji. As for treasures or things like that, don't dwell on them, those things aren't something you can obtain. Even if you have a heaven-defying stroke of luck and obtain some sort of treasure, it will still be taken away by others."

Lin Ming nodded. He naturally understood such simple truths.

His greatest advantage now was that he was skilled in ancient arrays. However, if he always followed these old fellows, then even if he found a treasure it would be taken away. Not just that, but in the future, if there was a brutal melee for treasures, then he would also draw a calamity onto himself.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming's mind was heavy with anxiousness.

At the end of the group, everyone slowly made their way through the hall. At this moment, he heard a dull thumping 'peng peng peng!' sound, as if something extremely heavy was closing in on them.

Everyone immediately stopped and looked at the turning point of the corridor. Everyone's expressions became grim. As for Nanyun, he had a carefree appearance. He casually unsheathed the scarlet sword, his eyes revealing a hint of excitement.

Xuan Wuji coldly snorted and stretched out his two palms. A black energy surrounded his body, and the momentum around him soared. The technique he was using was the same Netherworld Devil Arts that the Netherworld Great Emperor had created.

At this time, that heavy thing finally turned around the corridor. It was over 10 feet in height, and its entire body was built from some unknown red metal. Its build was similar to a Giant Demon, and it grasped a massive war hammer in its hands. Its moves appeared extremely slow.

"Giant Demon Puppet."

Lin Ming recalled the name of this puppet. This Giant Demon Puppet had strength equal to a late Revolving Core master. Under the suppressive laws of this world, this puppet would even be able to suppress a first stage Life Destruction martial artist. Of course, in front of Xuan Wuji and Nanyun Wang, it wasn't much at all.

Chapter 487 – Toxic Gray Frog

Chapter 487 – Toxic Gray Frog

…

…

…

As the puppet appeared, Nanyun Wang growled and leapt upwards. The saber in his hand slashed out, and a bloody light flashed with a resounding 'kacha', and a huge cut was opened directly in the red metal of the Giant Demon puppet's chest.

Nanyun Wang's blows rained down, and cracks appeared on the Giant Demon puppet's body. Its entire body was soon cut to pieces, and then it fell onto the floor, shattering into bits.

Then, Nanyun Wang waved his hand and took all of the remains into his spatial ring. The value of this late Revolving Core puppet to a sect could be imagined. If it wasn't for Nanyun Wang, then even Mu Fengxian would have trouble dealing with it.

After this Giant Demon puppet, there were two more that arrived.

Xuan Wuji didn't make a sound. A dark energy flowed around his body, and his palms shined with a ghostly light as he slammed his hand down on a puppet. At the same time, Abbot Whitebrow also flourished his staff to attack the other puppet.

These three Giant Demon puppets were cleanly destroyed by these three people.

And all of the puppet remains were also taken by them.

The massive underground place was nearly 100 miles long, and it was an extremely long path to the medicine garden. The entire time, Lin Ming carefully followed behind everyone to maintain distance from Xuan Wuji. But it seemed as if Xuan Wuji had completely forgotten about Lin Ming, and was concentrating all of his efforts into killing any puppets that they saw, not even bothering to glance at Lin Ming.

As everyone walked through the Imperial Palace, the path looked entirely the same. Although it seemed complicated, it was basically a well-designed branching layout. The truth was that as long as one chose a direction and walked there, they would eventually reach the same destination, so there was no fear of getting lost.

Bang!

Three more puppets were also destroyed by the three third stage Life Destruction masters. In this time, there had already been over a dozen Giant Demon puppets that had appeared.

But this path was only one among countless others within the Demon God Imperial Palace. If just this path had so many puppets, then perhaps in the entire Demon God Imperial Palace there might be over 10,000 Giant Demon puppets!

These puppets all had strength equal to a Revolving Core martial artist. In a fourth grade sect, that was equal to an Elder.

A combat strength of 10,000 Revolving Core masters comprised only of puppets. If all the other martial artists in the sect were counted too, then it was even more incredible. To have Emperor level powerhouses as Elders, Life Destruction masters as protectors, and Revolving Core martial artists as deacons… the deep heritage of a sixth grade sect was truly terrifying!

On reflection, one could see just how much more developed the martial arts civilization of the Sky Spill Continent was tens of thousands of years ago; it was far superior to how it was currently. There were many Realm of the Gods array formations and even cultivation methods that had once appeared in the Sky Spill Continent. However, some unknown event had occurred, and afterwards, the Sky Spill Continent had become what it was today.

“Mm? That in front is…” Lin Ming carefully looked at the corner up head and saw that there was a 20 foot tall frog statue.

This giant frog had its mouth open, with rows of vicious fangs peeking from its maw. Its tongue was like a long and sharp sword that stretched out, and its entire body was a dark mottled gray. Its entire body seemed like a small lump, and it gave off a very savage and dangerous feeling.

“This is the ancient Toxic Gray Frog…” Lin Ming recalled details about this statue from his memories. In fact, it was not a statue, but a corpse puppet made from the body of a slain Toxic Gray Frog.

This corpse puppet had strength equal to an extreme Revolving Core master, which was also the strength of a first stage Life Destruction martial artist. It had an appearance no different from a statue, nor could it be sensed by one’s perception. It seemed as if it were placed in the Demon God Imperial Palace as an ornament, but the truth was that it was a guard statue.

Lin Ming’s mind stirred and he immediately slowed down his pace. But Xuan Wuji and the others all calmly walked around the corner, not realizing that this was a Toxic Gray Frog.

Xuan Wuji also noticed this statue, but only looked at it for several moments. He swept through it with his sense and didn’t discover anything strange, so he didn’t care too much about it. Quietly, he went around the corner.

However, as they passed several feet from the Toxic Gray Frog, its eyes suddenly lit up. Its tongue shot out like an arrow!

“Mm!?”

Xuan Wuji’s complexion immediately changed, and a black fog instantly wrapped around his body. He slammed out two palms and retreated backwards.

Peng!

The arrow-like tongue was struck by Xuan Wuji's true essence-wrapped palms. The direction of the tongue was slightly deflected, and with a splattering sound, that tongue actually savagely pierced through a South Sea Demon Region first stage Life Destruction Elder. Although this Elder had true essence protecting him, that tongue pierced through his heart and lungs!

This sudden change had only taken a split second, leaving everyone in shock. But at this moment, that blood-red tongue changed direction with a speed difficult to see and shot backwards, piercing through the dantian of that Elder.

Pu!

Blood shout out. The Elder stared with wide eyes at the tongue that came out of his stomach, his vision filled with disbelief. All this way through the Demon God Imperial Palace there hadn't been any danger, so he never thought that anyone would perish here…

Life or death only took a moment to decide. Although this old man's cultivation had reached the first stage of Life Destruction, he simply couldn't block the Toxic Gray Frog's attack while being suppressed by the laws of this world.

With a 'peng' sound, the tongue rewinded. The Life Destruction Elder's body burst open in a shower of blood.

Lin Ming gloomily sighed in his heart and lightly shook his head. It was just a pity that Xuan Wuji hadn't been wounded. Also, there was such a good Life Destruction powerhouse corpse in front of him that would go to waste. Lin Ming didn't believe for a second that he would be able to feed the Magic Cube that Life Destruction Elder's blood essence or even refine a Blood Drinking Seal with so many people here.

"Evil beast, die!"

Xuan Wuji was furious. The Elder who had died was part of his Xuan bloodline.

He shouted out and took a black spear from his spatial ring, and then thrust it at the Toxic Gray Frog; this was also the first time that Xuan Wuji had used a weapon here.

Ping!

Xuan Wuji poured 70 to 80% of his true essence into this strike and struck the Toxic Gray Frog. However, the attack only sunk in just a bit.

“Mm!?”

Xuan Wuji’s face flashed with dark surprise.

Behind Xuan Wuji, Abbot Whitebrow also attacked. He saw just how difficult this Toxic Gray Frog would be to deal with.

Abbot Whitebrow covered himself with golden light, and a Buddhist chant seemed to sound out in the air. A golden light wrapped around Abbot Whitebrow’s staff, and he pounded it down at the Toxic Gray Frog.

The Great Zen Temple’s secret Buddhist techniques seemed extremely capable of suppressing the Toxic Gray Frog. With explosive sounds, cracks began to appear on the back of the Toxic Gray Frog like a spider web.

The Toxic Gray Frog had no concept of pain. It opened its great mouth and spat out massive clouds of gas.

Xuan Wuji gave a cold humph and then flicked his fingers. A black bolt of lightning shot out, and there was a simmering ‘chi chi chi’ sound as the gas clouds were covered by small arcs of lightning and then burnt completely clean.

Then, Xuan Wuji’s spear and Abbot Whitebrow’s staff slammed onto the Toxic Gray Frog’s body. Nanyun Wang also attacked.

He flourished his thick scarlet saber too. There was a series of explosive sounds as the Toxic Gray Frog was attacked by three great masters; it just couldn’t defend itself at all.

“Die!”

Xuan Wuji’s spear finally pierced through the Toxic Gray Frog’s mouth. The eyes of the puppet immediately dimmed, and no longer shined.

Although they had solved the threat of this Toxic Gray Frog, the atmosphere was extremely poor. Especially those first stage Life Destruction old fellows – they all had very grim expressions.

This was the first time that someone had died since they entered the Demon God Imperial Palace. Of these Life Destruction fellows, which one wasn’t an amazing overlord-like existence? They lived over a thousand years. They could topple mountains and turn seas with their strength, and also receive everything they wanted. Naturally, such a person would treasure their own life to the extreme.

They were all aware of their own situation and weren’t planning on fighting for the Nirvana Dragon Root. They only wanted to pick up some other lucky chances on the way. But, if this opportunity cost them their life, then it really wasn’t worth it at all.

They were only halfway along their path into the Demon God Imperial Palace. Against that violent sneak attack from the Toxic Gray Frog, a first stage Life Destruction powerhouse didn’t even have the strength to resist. Who knew whether or not they would suffer the same fate as they continued down this path?

Xuan Wuji put the Elder’s remains into a coffin. The remains of the Toxic Gray Frog were also taken by him. As he swept his eyes past the other first stage Life Destruction martial artists, he sneered at them with disdain. He naturally didn’t care if they lived or died.

“All the Elders of the South Sea Demon Region, stick closer to me.”

As Xuan Wuji spoke, he gathered all the remaining South Sea Demon Region Elders and slowly made his way forth. As for the other free martial artists, they grouped closer with Nanyun Wang, and the other smaller sects all grouped together with the Great Zen Temple.

Along the way, the entire group became increasingly cautious. They also encountered several more Toxic Gray Frogs. However, after being prepared this time, the three great masters attacked at once to eliminate the Toxic Gray Frogs, and there wasn't a single martial artist that died again.

After they went along the dangerous path for a while, they began to walk up flights of stairs. Lin Ming guessed that they were less than 1000 feet from ground level. As for the Demon Emperor's medicine garden, they were closing in on it. It was probably around 10 miles away still.

As Lin Ming realized this, he felt a hundred emotions pass through his heart. The Nirvana Dragon Root was almost in front of him, but his chances of obtaining it were near zero.

After they walked another distance, a low stone platform appeared in front of everyone. This stone platform was inscribed with faint lines. These lines seemed extraordinary; they were obviously runes.

As Xuan Wuji walked past the stone platform, whether intentionally or unintentionally he stopped his steps and swept his sense through the stone platform as if he were searching for something.

This was noticed by all the other old fellows. Nanyun Wang smiled with a 'hehe' and said, "What is it Brother Xuan, are you interested in this ancient array?"

Nanyun Wang knew that this stone platform was some sort of ancient array. As for what sort of ancient array it was, he was completely clueless.

Xuan Wuji coldly humphed and said, "And what does it matter to you if this old man is interested in this ancient array or isn't interested in this ancient array. Whatever I do has no relation to you!"

As Xuan Wuji finished speaking, he withdrew his perception and strode away.

As for Nanyun Wang, he smirked and did a few laps around the stone platform to see if he could discover anything. However, he had no understanding at all about the complex runes carved onto this ancient array.

The other old fellows also did the same. It was only Lin Ming whose eyes flashed as he saw this ancient array. He was able to faintly guess just what it was that Xuan Wuji was trying to do.

A hint of a smile began to bloom on Lin Ming’s lips. If he had an opportunity to ruin Xuan Wuji, he naturally wouldn’t miss it.

Chapter 488 – Opening the Demon Emperor's Medicine Garden

Chapter 488 – Opening the Demon Emperor's Medicine Garden

…

…

…

These Life Destruction powerhouses gradually crowded together around the stone platform. Some of them used their perception to investigate the stone platform, and there were even some that used their hands to examine it, hoping that they would be able to trigger some sort of switch to a secret room or some other lucky chance. There were even some who suspected that this array formation was related to the Demon Emperor's medicine garden.

However, no matter what they did, the stone platform array formation gave no response.

Those who looked couldn't help but turn to glance at Xuan Wuji. However, they saw that Xuan Wuji had already withdrawn his sense and had passed through the corridor as if he had no intention of staying here.

These people pondered over this stone platform for a bit longer and finally gave up.

Perhaps Xuan Wuji really was just a tad curious about this stone platform, and there wasn't anything particularly special about it. Anyway, it was best that they stayed tightly together with Xuan Wuji for fear that they would miss the medicine garden.

Thinking like this, several second stage Life Destruction old fellows first left.

But at this time, Lin Ming touched the stone platform, his hand covering a rune on top of it. These many Life Destruction masters had constantly been touching it to sense something, so this sort of minor action didn’t arouse anyone’s suspicions.

Lin Ming was clearly aware that this stone platform was in fact an ancient transmission array.

The Demon God Imperial Palace occupied a range of land over a hundred miles long and wide. There were countless paths inside, and trying to leave from the inside was very troublesome. Therefore, within the Demon God Imperial Palace, there were four or five transmission array points like this.

Lin Ming remembered two of these transmission array points, and one of those that he remembered was this one.

‘Xuan Wuji most likely knew about this transmission array from the Demon Emperor’s letter. It’s highly possible he even knows how to activate this transmission array. The reason that he investigated this array a moment ago was likely to determine whether or not he would be able to use it. He’s thinking to use this transmission array to leave by himself after the treasure hunt is over.’

After everyone had broken through the Demon God Imperial Palace’s defensive barrier and entered, the defensive barrier was able to repair itself, completely sealing everyone within. If anyone wanted to leave, they would have to spend another four or five days breaking through the barrier again. In addition, with going back and forth within the Demon God Imperial Palace, it might take seven or eight days longer.

If Xuan Wuji grabbed the treasures, he would be able to use this transmission array to leave. As for everyone else, they would be stranded within the Demon God Imperial Palace, unable to compete for the treasures he had.

This was a really well thought out plan.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming's lips curved up with a hint of a devilish grin. After entering the Demon God Imperial Palace, nothing had gone right for him. As for obtaining the Nirvana Dragon Root, the hope for that was slim enough to send one into despair. Lin Ming no longer entertained any ideas of obtaining a lucky chance. Rather, it would be good enough if he could ruin Xuan Wuji's day.

With the assistance of the Demon Emperor's memories as well as the understanding he had of ancient array formations, Lin Ming quickly understood the structure of this transmission array and also the specific array symbol order to start it.

Within the Imperial Palace, every transmission array had a specific set of array symbols that needed to be ordered for the transmission array to start. If the array symbols were not in order, then the transmission array simply would not activate.

Lin Ming looked as if he were aimlessly fumbling around with the ancient array, but his two hands were actually repeatedly rubbing a row of three symbols, quietly changing their order.

The only way that Xuan Wuji would be able to decipher this new order of array symbols was if he was as equally skilled in the concepts of ancient transmission arrays as Lin Ming.

'I don't know when, but if Xuan Wuji is really planning on using this transmission array to leave, I wonder just what sort of expression he'll have.' Thinking of this, Lin Ming's heart was bubbling with anticipation.

After modifying several array symbols, Lin Ming calmly withdrew his hands behind his back. Even Mu Yuhuang, who was standing near Lin Ming, didn't suspect anything as she saw Lin Ming touch the stone platform. She only smiled and said, "Forget it Lin Ming, this stone platform is not some ordinary platform. Even if there is some sort of lucky chance sealed inside, it isn't something we can start by just touching it. Let's get walking."

"Yes, Master Ancestor." Lin Ming casually said as he followed Mu Yuhuang away.

……………

The further they walked, the more difficult it became to move forwards.

Everyone also became increasingly careful.

Besides that dangerous Toxic Gray Frog puppet, there were also many mazes and deadly traps. When they arrived at a corridor, a gray projectile shot out. Nanyun Wang managed to dodge it, but it directly pierced through the chest of an old man behind him. Immediately, a large hole the size of a man’s head appeared in his chest, and a scorched smell filled the air.

Without even a chance to speak, the old man instantly died on the spot.

As everyone saw this, the atmosphere became even grimmer. Lin Ming also sucked in a breath of cold air. He knew that there traps in this part of the Imperial Palace, but he wasn’t clear about most of them. If he had entered the Demon God Imperial Palace by himself, then he would have absolutely died here.

At this time, they were only several miles away from the Demon Emperor’s medicine garden. The closer they were, the slower their pace became. Xuan Wuji, Abbott Whitebrow, and Nanyun Wang led the way, releasing all of their senses and keeping their guard at the highest level.

Finally, the group tentatively passed through the last hall. They came onto a slightly dimmed staircase and after passing through another corner, they encountered a massive stone gate.

The stone gate was 100 feet high and appeared extremely heavy and thick. Atop the stone gate, there was a massive eye that was carved onto it. Around the eye, there were many scattered flame-shaped patterns. This looked like an extremely strange and mysterious totem.

As Abbot Whitebrow and Nanyun Wang saw this stone gate, they gathered next to Xuan Wuji.

Xuan Wuji's eyes flashed with a sharp light, but he maintained his calm and collected appearance. Slowly, he walked over to the stone gate. According to the Demon Emperor's letter, behind this stone gate was the Demon Emperor's medicine garden!

After pouring in so much effort and paying such a great price, he had finally made it to the Demon Emperor's medicine garden!

At this time, even the calm Xuan Wuji couldn't help but worry over what would happen. Regarding the spells and traps that were laid down in the Demon Emperor's medicine garden, the Demon Emperor's jade slip did not record enough details.

Only the approximate type of spell was described onto the jade slip, without any precise details or explanation. Not just that, but the description of the array formations used terminology from tens of thousands of years ago, and they had scant little to do with Xuan Wuji's current understanding of array formations. He simply wasn't able to understand the complex arrays that lay within.

These past years, Xuan Wuji had put forth all his effort and gathered all sorts of things together in a flimsy patchwork of ideas. He had read through all sorts of ancient texts, and yet he only found a single viable way to barely break through the array formations inside. But he didn't know whether or not this method would work.

Xuan Wuji took a deep breath, and pushed in the stone gate. There were no spells on this stone gate; all of them would be located within the medicine garden.

With a rumbling sound, the 100 foot high stone gate swung open.

As the stone gate opened, everyone's vision was suddenly filled with light, as if a dazzling sunrise had risen within the dark corridor. As everyone saw the scene in front of them, they were struck by amazement.

Behind the stone gate, there was no clear blue stone path, no stone platform, no trap puppets. Instead, it was a fairy-like land of prairies and forests that seemed to come from a dream. And strangest of all was that this prairie was wrapped in fluttering white snow, as if a blanket of white silk had fallen over the land. In this cold weather, a gorgeous frosty glaze filled the world; it was heart-achingly beautiful.

And in the center of this prairie, there was a winding river. This river hadn't frozen, but it still emitted a chilling energy. This cold river in this wonderland of snow was marvelous and hard for one to immediately accept that it would appear in this massive palace. It was difficult to accept such a strong visual difference.

Xuan Wuji was the first one to step into this snowy world. The other Life Destruction old fellows behind him hesitated, and then began to follow after him.

As Lin Ming saw this image of the Demon Emperor's medicine garden, he wasn't too surprised. He had some faint memories of this from the Demon Emperor's memories.

After entering this frozen wonderland, Lin Ming immediately felt a biting chill in the air. The Demon Emperor had planted the Nirvana Dragon Root in his medicine garden, and the Nirvana Dragon root was a cold-attribute treasure. If he was correct, then after the Nirvana Dragon Root was grown here, it began to naturally gather cold energy around it, causing this miniature frost world.

This chill seemed as if it could drill through his bones. It wasn't much to these Life Destruction old fellows, but Lin Ming had no choice but to revolve his true essence to protect his body. This was the only way he was able to prevent the cold air from entering his body.

At this moment, Lin Ming felt a warm current enter his body. As he turned to look, he saw that Mu Yuhuang was injecting her fire-attribute true essence into him.

"Lin Ming, stay behind me. Once we enter the medicine garden, don't get too close in order to avoid the true essence shockwaves from any battles that might occur."

"Mm, I understand." Lin Ming nodded as he sensed Mu Yuhuang's concerns towards him. He was also well aware that if these old Life Destruction fellows really decided to fight each other, then the true essence shockwaves alone would be able to kill him.

……………

The Demon Emperor’s medicine garden was around 20 to 30 square miles large. The area where the Nirvana Dragon Root was planted was in a small core area at the center of the medicine garden, where the spiritual pulse of this land was located.

As for everywhere else, it was just common spiritual land. As everyone walked in a bit, the Black Flood Dragon Clan’s Patriarch gave a sudden cry. He immediately moved, flying hundreds of feet away.

“Azure Orchids! It’s really Azure Orchids!”

In front of the Black Flood Dragon Clan Patriarch, there was a group of purplish blue flowers. The flowers were wrapped in thick ice and looked unremarkable.

“Haha, what great luck!”

The Black Flood Dragon Clan Patriarch carefully reached down to pick up this bunch of Azure Orchids, placing them into his spiritual ring. Azure Orchids were ingredients for ancient medicines, and were extremely difficult to find. The Black Flood Dragon Clan just happened to have a medicinal formula that used Azure Orchids, but he never imagined that he would unexpectedly find them here.

As Xuan Wuji saw the Black Flood Dragon Clan Patriarch gather the Azure Orchid flowers, he didn’t say anything. Compared to the Nirvana Dragon Root, these tiny little Azure Orchids were nothing at all.

With such a valuable treasure awaiting him, he naturally didn’t have any interest in fighting with the Black Flood Dragon Clan Patriarch over such little things.

However, no one imagined that the Azure Orchids were only the beginning.

Next, all sorts of various plants appeared. And for most of them, their value was no less than the Azure Orchids.

“Medium-grade earth-step Blue Spirit Grass!”

“3000 Year Essence Melting Fruit!”

“Medium-grade earth-step Misty Clear Tea!”

…….

As the group continued through, they constantly saw all sorts of precious medicines. This land had existed for tens of thousands of years without a single person setting foot inside; the number of medicinal herbs that were growing here was really too many.

Chapter 489 – Two Spiritual Roots

Chapter 489 – Two Spiritual Roots

…

…

…

If one was able to obtain medium-grade earth-step medicinal herbs by just walking down the path of the medicine garden, then the value of the herbs at the very core of the garden could be imagined.

Along the way, Lin Ming also picked two 2000 year old precious medicines. Although they weren't top medicinal herbs, they were still more than enough to be traded in for 1000 to 2000 medium-grade true essence stones.

“Haha, this trip was finally not in vain!”

Within the group of people, a first stage Life Destruction old man sighed. He was the Highest Elder of the Five Element Region's Golden Bell Mountain, but among all these forces, his medium fourth-grade sect was only considered a tiny sect.

“Mm, we finally have some harvest. I also thought that this trip might be fruitless.”

All of the current first stage Life Destruction masters present were aware the only reason they could obtain these herbs was because there was the much more important Nirvana Dragon Root in the center. But even so, they were still content.

“Foggy Ice Flower, high-grade earth-step medicinal herb!” As Lin Ming was picking a thousand year old medicine, he was sifting through the leaves when he found a high-grade earth-step medicinal herb. This sort of herb was quite rare even if placed within a fifth-grade sect.

The Foggy Ice Flower was an ice-attribute heavenly material that martial artists dreamt of. It wasn't of much use to Lin Ming himself, but it could be used to exchange for a fire-attribute or thunder-attribute material of the same value. It had to be known that there were often many sorts of resources that could not be purchased solely with true essence stones. Powerhouses often had little need for true essences stones. At this time, they would only trade materials for materials. In these moments, a high-grade earth-step Foggy Ice Flower would be able to play a great role.

Because everyone was busy looking for medicinal herbs, they were scattered. Lin Ming looked to see that no one was paying attention to him, and began to quietly place the Foggy Ice Flower in his spatial ring. At this moment, a melodious Buddhist chant sounded out behind Lin Ming.

"Amitabha, little sir, can this old monk take a look at the material in your hands?"

After Lin Ming heard these Buddhist chants, his face suddenly became a bit ugly, 'This old fart, his eyes are quite sharp!'

Even as Lin Ming cursed in his heart, he naturally knew that he couldn't conceal anything. Lin Ming extended his hand, revealing a crystal clear Foggy Ice Flower in the center of his palm.

"3000 year old Foggy Ice Flower, high-grade earth-step treasure. If this old monk isn't wrong, then little brother is a fire-attribute martial artist. This Foggy Ice Flower won't be of much use to little brother. I fear that..." The elderly monk said with a sympathetic tone. This monk was a second stage Life Destruction master from the Great Zen Temple; Lin Ming was absolutely not his match.

Not of much use? Lin Ming wanted to curse out loud. Who wouldn't this type of medicine be useful for? Not to mention that Divine Phoenix Island's Blue Luan Faction also cultivated ice-attribute techniques. He would rather take this away and give it to Mu Bingyun.

Lin Ming was just about to say that it was useful to him, but the old monk didn't even give him the chance to speak before saying, "This old monk just happens to practice the Cold Ice Palm technique. The Foggy Ice Flower can also be considered a serendipitous event for this old monk. Little friend, how about this, this old monk also has three medium-grade earth-step spiritual grasses here, two of which are fire-attribute. How about I exchange them to you for the Foggy Ice Flower, hmm?"

As the elderly monk spoke, he smiled and extended his hand. In his palm were three medium-grade earth-step spiritual grasses he had just picked.

"F*ck." Lin Ming cursed in his heart as he looked at these spiritual grasses in this wrinkly old monk's hand. This was simply a slap to the face. The total combined value of these three spiritual grasses was less than half of the Foggy Ice Flower in his hand. Medium-grade earth-step spiritual grasses could usually be purchased with true essence stones. But a high-grade earth-step spiritual grass often had to be exchanged with other treasures; it simply couldn't be purchased.

"Little brother, how about it?" The old monk was still smiling, but it was a bit forced. Lin Ming resisted the impulse to punch the old monk in the face. He knew that that Mu Fengxian and the Great Zen Temple had already come to a previous arrangement that any treasures would be given to them in exchange for protection.

In a sense, the reason that Lin Ming could safely come here was because of the deterrence known as the Great Zen Temple. Without Abbot Whitebrow defending him, Nanyun Wang would not have helped him hold off Xuan Wuji. Mu Fengxian and Mu Yuhuang would also not have been able to come here.

"Lin Ming, give it to him. When we return, Master will compensate you." At this time, Mu Yuhuang's true essence sound transmission sounded in his ears. She was afraid that Lin

Ming would be possessed by the impulsiveness of youth, and would not be able to swallow this loss.

Lin Ming replied, “Master has no need to worry, this disciple also understands that the Great Zen Temple will not protect us for nothing. This senior monk also put out three precious medicinal herbs, so it isn’t considered as going too far.”

Lin Ming suppressed the pain in his heart to smash this damned old monk, and then handed over the Foggy Ice Flower.

The old monk was immediately overjoyed, “Haha, thank you little friend. This old monk can only be considered as sowing karma with this little friend. If we meet some other day, then this old monk can also give little friend some good luck too! Amitabha, praise, praise.”

Hearing this wily old monk still chant Buddhist mantras, Lin Ming was speechless. This old monk’s skin was far too thick.

“I’ll just consider this as feeding a dog. For better or worse, I still obtained a great find of five medium-grade earth-step spiritual grasses. Even if I cannot obtain the Nirvana Dragon Root, I didn’t come here in vain. If it wasn’t for these monks helping us, then there was no way I would have been able to obtain these five medium-grade earth-step medicinal herbs.” Lin Ming thought out this reasoning, accepting his fate.

Although this spiritual land wasn’t small, the medicinal herbs were mostly distributed along the edges of the river. When one looked farther away from the river, there weren’t any medicinal herbs. As they continued, there weren’t too many things to pick. At most, everyone was able to find seven or eight herbs. Basically, those that found them first kept them. Those that were stronger had a stronger perception, and were naturally able to find more herbs.

As the group marched several miles ahead, all of the martial artists that had been looking for herbs gradually stopped. At this time, in front of them was a light blue barrier. This blue barrier seemed to twist and writhe, and the light inside seemed to be distorted; it was unclear just what was happening inside.

Although one couldn't clearly see inside, nearly everyone was able to guess just what was behind the blue barrier.

This was the core of the Demon Emperor's medicine garden – the location of the Nirvana Dragon Root!

All of the martial artists – especially those second stage and third stage Life Destruction masters that had a higher chance of obtaining it – felt their breath quicken. But at this time, no one moved. As they saw the blue barrier in front of them, they realized that this Nirvana Dragon Root would not be easy to obtain.

There was even the possibility that they would return with nothing.

Everyone carefully took several steps forwards. Although the light was distorted behind this blue barrier, one could still faintly see what was inside.

The core area of the Demon Emperor's medicine garden was very small, and wasn't filled to the brim with medicinal herbs as everyone had imagined. It was just the opposite. Inside the barrier, the land was completely barren except for two spiritual plants.

These plants were twisted like ginseng, their roots meandering all over the place. These two Nirvana Dragon Roots were not far from each other, and their roots were even tangled together in some areas.

Although there was a defensive barrier between them, everyone could clearly feel the icy ancient energy emanating from these two Nirvana Dragon Roots. It was as if one could see the passage of tens of thousands of years of time; their minds instantly stopped!

"It really is the Nirvana Dragon Root!"

Lin Ming's mind stirred. These two Nirvana Dragon Roots looked exactly the same as in the pictures from the little text that Lin Ming had obtained from killing a Revolving Core powerhouse. There was no way that he was wrong.

'This Nirvana Dragon Root is truly one of the world's most extraordinary medicines. According to common sense, this central core of the Demon Emperor's medicine garden is where the eye of the spiritual pulse should be, so the heaven and earth origin energy here should be the richest. There should be many other types of plants growing here, but there aren't. Instead, they are all on the edges outside. This is most likely because the Nirvana Dragon Root is simply too overbearing and tyrannical; it completely occupied all of the heaven and earth origin energy in this area, causing all the other spiritual plants here to have died early. They just couldn't grow here.'

Lin Ming quickly understood just why the core of the medicine garden was deserted. In the Realm of the Gods, Tempering Marrow pills made from the Nirvana Dragon Root were very overwhelming.

As Nanyun Wang and Abbot Whitebrow saw the Nirvana Dragon Root, they gathered to Xuan Wuji.

Xuan Wuji took a deep breath, finding it hard to keep his heart still. He was already at the third stage of Life Destruction. If he crossed Life Destruction a few more times, there was the chance that he could enter into the Divine Sea realm and become a legendary Emperor level powerhouse!

He could live for 10,000 years, and rule the entire South Horizon Region. He would be able to establish his own Holy Land and leave a name that would be passed down for hundreds upon hundreds of generations. In the future, he could even fly up into the Realm of the Gods and reach for higher realms of martial arts.

How could he not be excited to imagine this? Which Life Destruction powerhouse did not yearn to cross through the gate of death earlier, and achieve the nearly omnipotent Divine Sea realm that was admired by all?

For this Nirvana Dragon Root, he had prepared far too much, in case he would fail at this last step, and everything would come falling apart.

“Old thief Xuan, hurry up and move!” Nanyun Wang said as he stood there, his arms crossed behind his back. “We will distribute according to our previous arrangement. If you do not open the barrier, then you can also give up any ideas of leaving here.”

Xuan Wuji’s complexion sank. He coldly said, “Give me everything that we had agreed to earlier!”

“Humph, even you don’t know whether or not you can open this barrier. So what if you can’t? Can I also get back the things that I’ve given?” Nanyun Wang’s two hands were still behind his back, he had no intent of taking them out.

“In order to open this ancient battlefield, you have seen yourself just what sort of price I had paid. Whether or not I can open this array formation will all depend on the will of the heavens, and I will have to resign myself to whatever happens. This old man will do everything possible in order to open it, but once I have, how can I still trust that you will keep the promise you made beforehand? Should I rely on something as ridiculous as an oath on your so-called heart of martial arts?”

After being publicly ridiculed by Xuan Wuji, killing intent flashed over Nanyun Wang’s face. However, he suppressed it and exchanged a true essence sound transmission with Abbot Whitebrow. He hesitated for a moment, and then took out a spatial ring.

Abbot Whitebrow also took out a spatial ring. The two of them tossed the spatial rings at Xuan Wuji.

Xuan Wuji didn’t directly use his hands to receive the spatial rings. He wrapped true essence around the two spatial rings and gingerly received them.

Seeing Xuan Wuji be so cautious, Nanyun Wang laughed and said, “Old thief Xuan, you really are cowardly. Do you think this old man messed with the spatial ring?”

“Better to be safe than sorry. This old man doesn’t want to be tricked at the last step.” After being ridiculed by Nanyun Wang, there was no change in Xuan Wuji’s complexion. After he confirmed that there weren’t any problems with the spiritual rings, he sunk his divine sense into the rings and swept through them, receiving them with satisfaction.

Chapter 490 – Xuan Wuji Destroys the Array

Chapter 490 – Xuan Wuji Destroys the Array

…

…

…

Obviously, Xuan Wuji, Nanyun Wang, and Abbot Whitebrow had come to an agreement before. During this opening of the Demon God Imperial Palace, Xuan Wuji had the greatest role. Without him, none of them would be able to break open the array. It was also understandable that Abbot Whitebrow and Nanyun Wang had to pay some price that was within their limits.

During this time, the search for the riverside medicinal herbs had mostly concluded. Those first stage Life Destruction powerhouses also circled the array to watch the scene.

Although their hope of obtaining the Nirvana Dragon Root was slim, and most of them had the thought that it was impossible, they still had to support those on their side. Even if they couldn't eat the meat, they might be able to drink some soup.

Xuan Wuji stood before the Demon Emperor's medicine garden's defensive spell, pondering for a moment. He repeatedly compared the defensive spell here in the medicine garden with the description in the Demon Emperor's letter, and then took out a series of array flags from his spatial ring.

Every time he walked four or five steps, he would place down an array flag. Soon, there was a line of 36 array flags around the array formation.

As Lin Ming saw these array flags, he sighed in praise. These 36 Polar Sky Flags were used especially for breaking through enemy defensive array formations. Not just that, but they were extremely valuable.

But Polar Sky Flags were only used to destroy array formations, not to open them.

If one said that array formations were a lock, then breaking through an array formation was simply smashing open the lock. As for opening it, it would just be taking a key and turning it. Naturally, the effort required to open an array formation was much, much less than destroying one.

The array formation that the Demon Emperor had left behind in his medicine garden only had a protective function. Naturally, there would be a method to open it. If one followed this method, the array would easily open. However, wanting to forcefully break through it would be difficult.

This sort of ancient array formation was highly complex and unique, there was a lot of footwork put into creating it. Not to mention the clueless Xuan Wuji, but even if Ancestor Chi Yan came, who also had a bit of understanding into ancient array formations, he would only be able to stand idly by and stare without knowing a single way to open the array formation.

How could an important array formation of a sixth-grade sect be so easily destroyed? Compared to this array formation in the medicine garden, the protective one that defended the entire palace covered a length of several hundred miles, so it was much more fragile. This medicinal garden array formation only covered a radius of a few dozen feet. Naturally, it was much tougher and stronger.

If it wasn't for Xuan Wuji having the letter from the Demon Emperor, it would have been absolutely impossible for him to think of breaking through.

Lin Ming watched as Xuan Wuji placed down the flags and compared the formation to the memories of the Demon Emperor. He combined it with his understanding of ancient array formations, and began to think about just how to open this ancient array.

In truth, this ancient defensive array was split into a north and south layer, and each one covered a Nirvana Dragon Root.

The methods to open the north and south array formations were different. But to Lin Ming, this was not a problem. He was confident that given enough time, he would be able to decipher the method to open the array.

Of course, Lin Ming wasn't stupid enough to open the array formation. If that happened, then not only would he not be able to obtain the Nirvana Dragon Root, but he would instead be interrogated about how he understood the opening method of the Demon Emperor's ancient array formation. Perhaps these old fellows might even capture him and force him into a tool that they could use.

As Xuan Wuji placed down the 36 Polar Sky Flags, he continuously poured true essence into them. As true essence flooded into the ground, golden symbols began to light up all around the medicinal garden.

These golden symbols were the ancient array formation's array symbols.

Above the Polar Sky Flags, another golden light flashed, colliding with the ancient array formation's array symbols!

Xuan Wuji also knew that this ancient array was divided into a north and south layer. But, these two array formations were interlinked as one and supported each other. If he wanted to destroy them, he would have to destroy them together.

But destroying them together also meant that the difficulty would multiply.

As the energy of the array symbols and array flags were smashing into each other, a skinny old man walked out from the South Sea Demon Region side. He calmly took out an array disc from his spatial ring and tapped it with his fingers. Between his fingers, shadows began to form.

The skinny old man began to send out a dazzling series of symbols. Lin Ming could see that this skinny old man was an array master, and he was also accomplished in the Dao of array formations.

However, no matter how advanced he was down the path of array formations, in front of an ancient array formation, any master of the current era paled in comparison.

As the golden runes shot out, the golden light atop the Polar Sky Flags began to become brighter and more vivid. The array symbols around the ancient array formation began to violently tremble, and everyone squinted as they saw this scene. As for Nanyun Wang and Abbot Whitebrow, they revolved all of their true essence, waiting to take action right after the array formation was broken.

At this time, Xuan Wuji's forehead was already dripping with beads of sweat. His voice was grim as he said, "Whitebrow, Nanyun, go and help by pouring in your true essence. Don't think of playing any tricks this time, otherwise none of us will be able to obtain the Nirvana Dragon Root!"

As Xuan Wuji spoke, Nanyun Wang frowned, "That wily old fox is too cautious!"

To destroy the array formation required a massive amount of true essence; it was enough to affect one's combat strength. If a battle occurred right after, whoever lost so much true essence would be at a disadvantage. Thus, Xuan Wuji had said for all three of them to join together in breaking this array formation.

Although they didn't want to help, at this time, they had no way to refuse.

The three of them continuously poured their true essence into the Polar Sky Flags. As the three streams of true essence flowed in, the confrontation between the Polar Sky Flags and the ancient array symbols became increasingly intense. In the distance, one could see golden light shoot out in all directions like a fireworks display; it was quite beautiful and ephemeral.

This scene continuous for three quarters of an hour. These three third stage Life Destruction old fellows had to take out several high-grade true essence stones from their spatial rings, and also absorb the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy as they poured their true essence into the Polar Sky Flags.

The symbols began to vibrate more and more. After an hour passed, the ancient array formation's defensive barrier began to vibrate.

As everyone saw this, all of their hearts went cold. Now that it seemed the array formation could break at any time, they all revolved their true essence together and went on guard. Once this barrier was broken, the several forces would come into conflict with each other. They would also be pulled into the battle because of whatever side they were supporting. As for that previous oath they made on their heart of martial arts to distribute the treasures, all of that became nothing at all.

How could a bit of damage to one's heart of martial arts possible compare to the Nirvana Dragon Root?

As the defensive barrier shook, Lin Ming was surprised. It seemed that there were some quite valuable records about ancient array formations contained within the Demon Emperor's letter. Otherwise, Xuan Wuji with his mere third stage Life Destruction cultivation that was only suppressed to 20%, would have never been able to reach this stage, no matter how many patchwork things he tried or how many incomplete texts on ancient arrays he read.

"Lin Ming, step back." Mu Yuhuang whispered.

As the array formation began to increasingly tremble, Mu Yuhuang pulled Lin Ming farther away, lest he be caught up in the ensuing battle and die from the true essence shockwaves.

Lin Ming nodded. Just as he was walking back, he heard a resounding cracking sound. He looked over to see that around the ancient array formation, it seemed as if the 36 Polar Sky Flags could not withstand the pressure of the impact, and a crack appeared in a flag!

Xuan Wuji's complexion immediately changed but he didn't panic, "Yuqie!"

"I know!" Xuan Yuqie, who had been standing guard from the side, immediately took out another array flag that looked exactly the same as the Polar Sky Flag. She walked over and shot it in like an arrow, inserting it right near the array flag that was cracking.

With this, the array-destroying energy stabilized.

'They came quite prepared; they even have extra array flags. These Polar Sky Flags probably cost over 1000 medium-grade true essence stones to make for every one. 36 array flags is 36,000 medium-grade true essence stones. What a waste of money. They could have opened this array formation with barely any effort, but now they have had to use such outrageously expensive array flags.'

Lin Ming sighed. If he had a way to safely exchange the method to open this array for something like a Nirvana Dragon Root's root hair along with 36,000 medium-grade true essence stones, then he would have gladly taken this exchange.

Unfortunately, he didn't have the strength, thus he didn't have the qualifications to made a trade with these old Life Destruction fellows. Otherwise, he would just be eaten up with nothing left. Not just that, but after this array formation opened, there would inevitably be a brutal battle. When that time came, it would be everyone for themselves. Who would still care about something as laughable as an agreement they made with a junior?

As Lin Ming was imagining the possibilities, he heard another cracking sound; a second array flag had broken.

"Mm?"

Xuan Wuji deeply frowned, his expression becoming increasingly solemn. Although Xuan Yuqie quickly replaced the second flag, this meant that things were clearly headed in a bad direction.

After a mere half incense stick of time, a third array flag shattered!

At this time, Xuan Wuji's complexion was already deathly pale. Xuan Yuqie was just about to replace it with a new array flag, but here was another clear 'kacha' sound as another array flag shattered!

In the formation of the 36 array flags, it was simultaneously disrupted on both sides. The entire true essence system immediately lost balance!

After this happened, the skinny old man that was using an array disc shook and vomited out a mouthful of blood. In an instant, seven more array flags broke; the entire array formation system completely collapsed!

Bang!

As the array formation exploded, a massive amount of energy reversed and shot out, golden lights flying all over. The remaining 21 Polar Sky Flags flew out!

In the turbulent explosion of energy, Xuan Wuji, Nanyun Wang and Abbot Whitebrow simultaneously drew back. Their faces were pale and their hearts were heavy.

They failed!

Xuan Wuji's mood sunk to the bottom. In this treasure hunt, no one paid a greater price than him! After obtaining the Demon Emperor's letter, he had prepared for this moment for a full 10 years!

He had dreamt of using the Nirvana Dragon Root to break through into the Divine Sea realm. One day, he would become an Emperor level powerhouse and lead the South Sea

Demon Region to rule over the entire South Horizon Region. However that hope was now crumbling before him!

He felt as if the world had slowed to a pause. His breath became thick in his chest, and he clenched his fists tightly. There were still 30 some Polar Sky Flags in his spatial ring, but this number was simply insufficient. If he tried to break through the array formation again, then the only outcome was failure.

Before, he never imagined that an array flag would shatter on two different sides.

When he had obtained the Demon Emperor's letter, he had also prepared for defeat. Xuan Wuji was well aware that the path of an Emperor level powerhouse was covered with difficulties and tribulations. Otherwise, how could there be so few Emperor level powerhouses throughout the entire history of the Sky Spill Continent?

There were many Life Destruction old masters that had tried to reach the Divine Sea realm and had made all sorts of sacrifices and efforts. But in the end, all they encountered was failure. Many of them had even paid with their life. Xuan Wuji had also come here with that conviction. However, seeing this scene occur in front of his eyes, he still found it hard to accept.

Chapter 491 – A Vow to Break the Array

Chapter 491 – A Vow to Break the Array

…

…

…

Xuan Wuji sighed deeply. At that moment, he appeared to be much older.

He was already a thousand years old. If this plan failed, it meant that his hopes of reaching the Divine Sea realm were slim to none.

"Motherf*cker!" Nanyun Wang looked at the array flags that were scattered around and loudly cursed. He had originally suspected that Xuan Wuji was trying to trick him, and only used this method of breaking the array formation as a smokescreen while hiding the true method to break it. But as he thought about it some more, he realized that Xuan Wuji wouldn't be so naïve as to think such a naïve method could conceal the truth from him and Abbot Whitebrow.

In any case, Nanyun Wang had already decided that he would not leave if Xuan Wuji was still here.

Compared to Nanyun Wang losing his cool, Abbot Whitebrow was much calmer, a solemn light in his eyes. In truth, it was relatively easy for him to cross Life Destruction. The Great Zen Temple had a very deep and historied legacy, and the Buddhist cultivation techniques and mantras caused one's heart and mind to be much more determined and firm than one who practiced those from the demonic path. At least, if he even tried to go into closed off seclusion to cross Life Destruction, he wouldn't have to worry about his mind losing itself in delusions.

As for the other old Life Destruction fellows from the smaller sects, they faintly smiled as they saw this, taking joy in seeing others' misfortunes. It was uncertain that they had any hope of obtaining the Nirvana Dragon Root; it was enough that they had obtained some rare medicines. At least this trip hadn't been in vain.

If they couldn't obtain something, then others also couldn't. Even the third stage Life Destruction masters from glorified fifth-grade sects didn't have a much greater harvest than they did. Thinking of this, their thoughts were much smoother and more pleasant. Naturally, no one dared to reveal that they were thinking this. On the surface, they all had dour expressions and shook their heads while sighing, lamenting with regret at the failure to destroy the array.

Mu Fengxian looked tranquil. She had an agreement with the Great Zen Temple, and it would be to her advantage if they could obtain the Nirvana Dragon Root. But, she didn't place much faith in such any such agreement.

On the contrary, Mu Fengxian thought that it was much better if the Nirvana Dragon Root was never unleashed unto the world. At least there would be one less life or death battle. If a battle truly occurred here, she had no idea how many people would perish. If Lin Ming was caught up in the destruction, then that would be even worse.

Xuan Wuji, Nanyun Wang, and Abbot Whitebrow still gathered around the double north and south ancient array formation, unwilling to leave. As for some of the other Life Destruction powerhouses from smaller sects, they lost their patience and began to leave, looking for more spiritual grasses and herbs along the riverside.

Although they had already swept through the area before, that didn't mean they couldn't have missed one or two plants. If they were able to find just one, then that would be a great boost to their wealth. Their belongings were in no way greater than a fifth-grade sect's.

"Old thief Xuan, since your method to break through the array formation has been defeated, you should give back the treasures you received to this old man!" Since the array formation couldn't be broken, Nanyun Wang thought that he wouldn't have suffered a great loss if he took back the treasures he gave to Xuan Wuji.

At this time, Xuan Wuji had already placed away his morose and saddened appearance. His eyes flashed with a cold decisiveness. "A loss is a loss. Nanyun, the path to the Divine Sea realm from the Revolving Core realm is filled with countless difficulties and pitfalls. Did you think that you could instantly succeed without paying any price or suffering any defeat? How ridiculous!"

As Xuan Wuji laughed, Nanyun Wang's eyes went cold. He glared at Xuan Wuji and coldly said, "Then do you have any other way?"

"The array is dead, but people are living. The living cannot be suppressed by dead objects. This time, if I, Xuan Wuji, cannot obtain the Nirvana Dragon Root, then I vow to never leave the Demon God Imperial Palace!"

As Abbot Whitebrow heard Xuan Wuji say such brave and determined words, his eyebrows pricked up. "Oh? Does Sir Xuan have a method to destroy the array?"

"I do not! But no matter how exquisite an array formation it is, it must have a weakness and it must have an energy supply! Otherwise, it would not have lasted so long! If we combine our forces, we will be able to destroy it. I do not believe that I cannot break through this array formation. If one year is not enough, then I'll spend 10 years! If 10 years is not enough, then I'll spend 100 years! Before I came to Demon God Imperial Palace, I already made plans for the worst case scenario. I made an oath to break this array formation!

Xuan Wuji's words were like a giant steel ball that smashed into everyone. Obviously, these were true words spoken from his heart. Nanyun Wang frowned. If it was true that this array formation could be broken with ten years of time, then he didn't mind staying here for ten years.

However, this wasn't necessarily true. Although he didn't have much of an understanding into array formations, he still knew that an advanced array formation like this was able to absorb heaven and earth origin energy from the surroundings to supplement its energy cycle. If their attacks consumed energy than what the array formation absorbed, then they would never be able to break through this array formation.

As for staying here for a hundred years or more, Nanyun Wang thought he heard a joke. As opposed to wasting a hundred years on an uncertain result, he might as well go out into the world to look for other lucky chances. Also, who the hell knew whether or not this broken world would collapse within a hundred years? If this world collapsed, then let alone him, but even Emperor level powerhouses would not be able to survive the massive ensuing space storm that would occur.

“Amitabha.” Abbot Whitebrow clasped his hands together and slowly said, “This old monk did not imagine that Sir Xuan’s heart would be so firm. If you truly have this intention and hope to reach the Divine Sea realm, then this old monk will also follow Sir Xuan for another ten years. Ten years later, regardless of the result, this old monk will leave. If none of us can obtain the Nirvana Dragon Root, then that only proves that I am not fated for this treasure.

Hearing Abbot Whitebrow say such words, Nanyun Wang also hesitated. Now he no longer had any other path to take, and had to wait here. If he lost his patience and left in advance, only for Xuan Wuji to really have a way to break through the array, and then lost the Nirvana Dragon Root because of this, he would really be a fool.

Thinking of this, Nanyun Wang grit his teeth and said, “Good! Then I will also follow your madness this one time. I, Nanyun, will stick it to the end!”

As the three great masters reached an agreement, everyone else’s complexions turned ugly. This Demon God Imperial Palace was protected by a massive array formation. Not just that, but the way back was filled with traps and puppets. Without these three great masters leading the way, it was impossible for them to leave!

If these three masters wanted to stay here for ten years, that meant they would have to accompany them for ten years. If they could divide the spoils, then they wouldn't mind too much. But it was most likely that they wouldn't even be able to split a single root hair!

Abbot Whitebrow correctly guessed everyone's thoughts. He said, "Everyone, if you can assist us, then after we break through the barrier, you will be repaid. The two Nirvana Dragon Roots should have around 18 root hairs. This old monk makes an oath to Buddha that these 18 root hairs will be divided to you, according to your strength. Second stage Life Destruction masters will receive two root hairs, and first stage Life Destruction masters will receive half a root hair. If you agree, then let's work together! I wonder if Sir Xuan or Sir Nanyun have any objections to this plan?"

As Abbot Whitebrow spoke, his eyes slowly panned over Xuan Wuji and Nanyun Wang. The two of them nodded.

They had already made such agreements many times. But, this was the first time that the agreement was based not on what force they were behind but only on their own strength; it seemed much more credible and trustworthy. But, many people were muttering in their hearts, wondering whether or not they would be dumped to the side when the time really came. Those Life Destruction masters from smaller sects were the most worried about this point.

However, they didn't have any other better plan. Since they had to stay, they might as well help. If they didn't, then those three masters might begin to loathe them. And if a fight broke out, the first ones to suffer would be them.

This way, the 20 some Life Destruction old fellows all expressed their willingness to help.

Lin Ming stood by himself in a distant corner, looking at everything that was happening. He ruefully smiled in his heart. He obviously was glad that Xuan Wuji's plan to break through the defensive barrier was defeated. But he wasn't too happy for so long. At this moment he could only force a smile. At this time, it was impossible for him to secretly take the treasure.

As for staying in here for 10 years, that was completely a joke to Lin Ming. Even if he knew that he could obtain the Nirvana Dragon Root by staying here for ten years, he would absolutely not want it.

Fortunately, Lin Ming did not have to worry about leaving. Less than five miles away, there was a conveniently placed transmission array. This transmission array was in a secret location; Xuan Wuji most likely didn't know about it. Otherwise, he would have certainly chosen that transmission array to make his future escape. It was closer and far more secure.

To Lin Ming, the problem was not leaving. The problem was, after he did, just how would he deal with Lei Jingtian? If he couldn't improve his strength, then the result wouldn't change. After arriving to this step, Lin Ming had a faint fantasy that he could obtain the Nirvana Dragon Root, no matter how little hope he had. But, no matter how much he logically thought it out, there was no chance for him. This crowd of old Life Destruction fellows had lived for a long time. They were intelligent, powerful, and much more perceptive. Wanting to struggle with them for treasures was far too difficult.

Xuan Wuji said, "Breaking through this array formation may take many years. Let's not hurry too much. Since everyone has consumed a great deal of strength, let's take a rest for a day and restore ourselves to top condition. 24 hours later, we'll combine our strength and break this array!"

As Xuan Wuji finished speaking, he moved to the side and began to meditate. In trying to destroy the array formation a moment ago, he had consumed a great deal of strength.

Nanyun Wang and Abbot Whitebrow also moved somewhere to restore their condition. As for the other Life Destruction powerhouses, some of them began to meditate, some idled around, and some even tried to test their luck look for more medicinal herbs.

There were ever some that had a bit of understanding into array formations and began to study the ancient array formation that covered the Nirvana Dragon Root with great relish.

Everyone was curious; who would miss a chance to study an ancient array formation? Moreover, what if they were able to figure out some way to open it?

In their minds, they were simply locked outside of a door. They didn't have the key, but they could still take a wire and fiddle around with the lock. Perhaps they might be able to chance their way into opening it.

Of course, in Lin Ming's view this was simply impossible. The probability of this was negligible enough to ignore. He had already figured out the method to open the north and south array formation, and quietly stood not too far away, appearing as if he were idling around.

These Life Destruction old fellows quickly scattered out. Some of them were even almost out of the range of the Demon Emperor's medicine garden.

Lin Ming casually glanced around. He planned to go to the place in the Demon Emperor's memories where the hidden transmission array was. He didn't want the situation to happen where the transmission array malfunctioned or was out of use.

He was about to move when he heard as sudden piercing 'chi' sound, followed by a scream, and was instantly shocked and surprised.

Mm!? What just happened?

The other Life Destruction old fellows also immediately stood. Xuan Wuji looked over to the direction of the sound, a complex light shining in his eyes. It was unknown just what he was thinking in his heart.

Chapter 492 – Cosmic Melting Furnace

Chapter 492 – Cosmic Melting Furnace

…

…

…

“What’s going on!?”

All those old fellows reached out with their perception, but were unable to detect anything.

From the sound a moment ago, whatever had happened had only occurred only two or three miles away. Even though their senses were suppressed in this world, they were still able to clearly investigate this distance. But they actually didn’t sense anything. This was extremely unusual to these old Life Destruction fellows.

“Let’s go take a look!”

All of the old fellows instantly set out. Xuan Wuji also stood. Compared to everyone he else, he seemed much calmer and unaffected. He coolly patted the dirt from his clothes and also headed over.

The two to three mile distance was crossed in the blink of an eye. As they reached the site of cry, everyone was amazed to find that at the edge of the medicine garden was a giant cave.

The cave was located underneath a common looking hill. As everyone approached this cave, bursts of roiling heat waves billowed over them, forming a sharp contrast with the extreme cold that was coming from the Demon Emperor’s medicine garden.

As the cold and heat mingled together, even though everyone present were masters, it still made them feel uncomfortable.

“This cave is able to shield against perception.” A South Sea Demon Region martial artist said. If it weren’t so, then they would have already discovered this cave.

“Mm? This is....”

As the Black Flood Dragon Clan Patriarch walked into the cave, he suddenly shook after seeing the scene inside.

The space inside the cave was enormous. It had a radius of hundreds of feet, and in the center of the space was a giant 30 foot pill furnace. This pill furnace was surrounded by eight flaming red columns,and these fiery columns had statues of Horned Dragons carved into them. The eight Horned Dragons aimed their wide maws at the pill furnace. Waves of red tinted energy breathed out from the statues, enveloping the pill furnace and creating an image like a rising dawn.

The 30 foot high pill furnace was about equal to the height of four men standing on top of each other. This was the first time that Lin Ming had ever seen such a massive pill furnace. On the surface of the pill furnace, there were many intricate designs and reliefs carved into it. Among these was a chart of the heavens and earth, with a red Golden Crow design in the center.

The reliefs on pill furnace seemed rough, but if one looked carefully, they could sense an ancient, boundless aura, a savage and primal energy that rushed out. The things that were carved into this furnace were not images, but rather true worlds!

A top treasure!

All of the old fellows present were knowledgeable individuals. With just a look, they were able to determine that this giant pill furnace was an incredible treasure!

It was very possible that this was an extremely valuable treasure to the Demon Emperor!

They were unable to distinguish just what rank of pill furnace this was, and that was because they hadn't come into contact with such a high ranking treasure before. But, they could tell that even if this furnace were placed within the entire Sky Spill Continent, it would absolutely be a top treasure!

"Cosmic Melting Furnace… it's really here." As Xuan Yuqie saw this pill furnace, she sent a faint true essence sound transmission to Xuan Wuji.

"Mm… unfortunately, we cannot even obtain the Nirvana Dragon Root right now, much less this Cosmic Melting Furnace. If we could obtain the Cosmic Melting Furnace, then the Nirvana Dragon Root wouldn't be too important…"

"Haha! This was the first divine furnace of the Sky Spill Continent. It's impossible for us to seize something like this. But, there might be a slim chance for us to take some of the treasures inside.

In the end, the Cosmic Melting Furnace was a pill furnace, but it was also considered a fire-attribute treasure.

A treasure on that level naturally wouldn't be considered as valuable as a heavenly material like the Nirvana Dragon Root.

However, the precious value of the Cosmic Melting Furnace didn't lie solely in it being a furnace, but rather the treasures and pills that were contained inside. The Demon Emperor's letter hadn't specified just what sort of treasures were within, but without a doubt they were extremely valuable.

Casually taking any one of these out would start a bloody battle within the Sky Spill Continent.

However, if one wanted to obtain the Cosmic Melting Furnace, they had to pass the surrounding Eight Dragon Jade Light Array that protected it. The Demon Emperor's letter had given no clue on how to bypass this array formation.

The Demon Emperor's medicine garden array formation was only able to defend. If one couldn't break it, then the worst that would happen was that the Nirvana Dragon Root would remain unreachable.

But, this Eight Dragon Jade Light Array that surrounded the Cosmic Melting Furnace was actually a true killing array!

A single mistake meant death!

"Mm… this is…" As the Black Flood Dragon Clan Patriarch saw the ashes on the ground, a foreboding feeling rose within him. He quickly turned to glance at the clansmen behind him, and his heart sank as he counted them. A moment ago, because of that scream, all of the martial artists had ran over to this cave. But his Black Flood Dragon Clan was actually missing the Seventh Elder.

Without a mistake, these ashes on the ground were those of the Black Flood Dragon Clan's Seventh Elder…

"Old Seven…" The Black Flood Dragon Clan Patriarch felt a stinging pain in his heart, and finally sighed. He took out a jade box and with a wave of his hand, collected the ashes with his true essence, completely receiving them into the jade box and then placing it back into his spatial ring.

In an instant, a first stage Life Destruction powerhouse had perished. In the Realm of the Gods, the existence of a Life Destruction powerhouse was simply nothing at all.

Lin Ming shook his head. The pursuits of fortune often led to death. This Old Seven from the Black Flood Dragon Clan was undoubtedly the first one to discover the Cosmic Melting Furnace. At that time, his thoughts must have been that he could take this furnace by himself, and keep it as his own.

A first stage Life Destruction master must have experienced many things to reach that stage, so how could they not have known of the dangers surrounding this Cosmic Melting Furnace? However, they had been blinded by greed. Even though they knew it was dangerous, they still decided to take the risk. The result of this was that they were now nothing more than ashes on the ground.

As for the other Life Destruction powerhouses, they all looked at the Cosmic Melting Furnace and pondered, lost in thought. After seeing the fate of someone else, they were even more cautious.

Lin Ming stood within the crowd, sifting through the incomplete memories.

The second Demon Emperor soul fragment had very few memories of the Cosmic Melting Furnace. He was only able to faintly remember that there was a highly valuable furnace within the Demon God Imperial Palace. As for where this furnace was or how valuable it was, he could not remember.

Lin Ming had some vague memories of this Eight Dragon Jade Light Array, but relying on just these blurry memories to break through the array would not be easy.

Lin Ming couldn't help but glance outside of the cave. At this time, he was surprised to see that there was not a single person left over in the Demon Emperor's medicine garden; everyone had gathered at the Cosmic Melting Furnace. Lin Ming immediately had an impulsive idea to open the array formation within the Demon Emperor's medicine garden, but as he thought about it some more, he pushed down the idea. The ancient array formation in the medicine garden was simply too close. Also, the commotion from opening the array formation wouldn't be small. There was no way he could conceal this from these old Life Destruction fellows.

Lin Ming constantly thought of many possibilities, but ultimately had to reject them all.

At this time, a South Sea Demon Region Elder put out a zombie guard. He pointed towards the Cosmic Melting Furnace and said to the zombie guard, "Go!"

The straight zombie guard's eyes flashed with a red light, and it walked over to the Cosmic Melting Furnace without fear of death. The closer it was to the pill furnace, the higher the temperature was. When the zombie guard was around 100 feet away, it was like being in the furnace itself. Billowing waves of heat smashed into the zombie guard, creating ‘chi chi chi’ sounds.

As the zombie guard reached 50 feet away, it was just about to step onto the platform where the eight coiling dragon columns were. At this time, a flaming red light shot out, striking the zombie guard. There was only a crackling sound as the zombie guard was sent flying backwards, instantly turning into ashes!

With this, everyone was able to understand just how the Black Flood Dragon Clan Elder had died.

“Hehe.”

A Life Destruction Elder from a smaller sect laughed with self-deprecation. He turned around and walked away. This Eight Dragon Jade Light Array was even more terrifying than the ancient array formation that protected the Nirvana Dragon Root. He was quite aware of just how capable he was. In any case, this pill furnace had nothing to do with the likes of him. He had no reason to join in on the fun. If he was struck by a shockwave of that red light and was killed, then that would really be an injustice.

As this Life Destruction Elder left, many other Elders from small sects hesitated for a moment, and then began to quietly draw back.

They went back to the river edge to search for more medicinal herbs. Although nearly every herb had been plucked after several sweeping passes, it was still better than nothing. If they could find one, it wouldn’t be as valuable. But, their sect’s wealth was not comparable to that of a fifth-grade sect, and even far off from Divine Phoenix Island. They naturally had to be prudent in this.

As the Elders from several small sects left, Nanyun Wang and Abbot Whitebrow remained nearby the Cosmic Melting Furnace. Obviously, they had some designs on this treasure.

Nanyun Wang couldn’t help but glance at Xuan Wuji.

Xuan Wuji's eyes were closed, a 'do as you wish' air coming from him.

Nanyun Wang couldn't hold it in. "Old thief Xuan, you never told me that you knew this was here before."

Xuan Wuji opened his eyes and slowly said, "This old man naturally knew that this was here. But, this old man is also aware of his own strength. Nanyun, let me advise you for free. If you don't want to die, then don't bother to have any ideas on this Cosmic Melting Furnace! A greedy snake might eat himself to death. Even if an Emperor level powerhouse came here, they still wouldn't be able to move this stove!"

It was rare for Xuan Wuji to speak the honest truth. He certainly didn't care for whatever happened to Nanyun Wang. However, he also needed him and Abbot Whitebrow to assist him in breaking open the defensive barrier. If Nanyun Wang died here, then he feared it really would take 100 years to open up the ancient array formation in the medicine garden.

"So this furnace is called the Cosmic Melting Furnace." Nanyun Wang licked his lips, his eyes flashing with a touch of greed and unwillingness to give up. Although he understood that what Xuan Wuji said was mostly true, there weren't many people in this world that could remain unmoved after seeing such a precious treasure placed in front of them.

After an incense stick of time, another old Life Destruction fellow put out another puppet and used it to cautiously approach the Cosmic Melting Furnace. The result was that this second puppet was also burnt to ashes.

With these two tests, everyone discovered a rule of the Eight Dragon Jade Light Array. As long as one didn't step onto the platform where they were, then they would not be attacked by that red light.

At this time, Abbot Whitebrow suddenly moved. He put away his staff, took off his cassock, and then slowly walked over to the Cosmic Melting Furnace.

As everyone saw this, their eyes widened. Even though the situation had already been clearly spelled out in front of them. Abbot Whitebrow had still decided to try. He must have some method to rely on.

Xuan Wuji was even more on guard. Both his eyes were unblinking, as his hands that were at his back were now loosely hanging down, his expression filled with doubt and alert.

Chapter 493 – Terrifying Red Light

Chapter 493 – Terrifying Red Light

…

…

…

Xuan Wuji certainly wanted to obtain the Cosmic Melting Furnace. However, the Demon Emperor's letter hadn't contained any records of the Eight Dragon Jade Light Array that surrounded the Cosmic Melting Furnace. Xuan Wuji's only choice was to suppress the rising greed in his heart. Originally, he had thought of using this Cosmic Melting Furnace to pit everyone against each other, but now that he wasn't even able to break through the barrier that guarded the Nirvana Dragon Root, he had to give up on that line of thinking.

However, as he saw Abbot Whitebrow move towards the Cosmic Melting Furnace, Xuan Wuji began to stand alert.

If no one could obtain the Cosmic Melting Furnace, then there was nothing else to say. But if Abbot Whitebrow had a method to open the Cosmic Melting Furnace and a treasure appeared, he would snatch it there and then. Whatever treasure it was, it would be no worse than the Nirvana Dragon Root!

Abbot Whitebrow slowly walked. After every step, he would take a full ten breaths of time before taking the next one. At the same time, his revolved his true essence to the limit. A blazing halo of golden light surrounded him, filled with faint Buddhist seals that circled around. This was a secret Buddhist technique – Diamond Vajra Body.

The Buddhist martial arts focused on tenacity and extreme defense. But, they were relatively weak in attacks. This time, Abbot Whitebrow was displaying the mighty defensive techniques of the Buddhist martial arts to the limit.

But could such a defense even have the possibility of resisting that piercing red light?

This question filled everyone’s mind. In the past, the Elders of the Demon God Imperial Palace were Emperor level powerhouses. So, this Eight Dragon Jade Light Array should be able to injure Emperor level powerhouses too.

However, tens of thousands of years had passed. The Eight Dragon Jade Light Array’s power must have weakened by a considerably great amount. Because of this, this sort of reddish dawn light shouldn’t be as terrifying.

Abbot Whitebrow arrived just a small distance away from the platform that contained the coiling dragon columns. If he took another step forwards, he would activate the attack of the Eight Dragon Jade Light Array.

Abbot Whitebrow closed his eyes, feeling the flow of energy throughout the array formation. A brief moment later, he suddenly opened his eyes, his palms shooting forwards.

“Bright Buddha Palm Seal!”

With a loud explosion, a massive golden Buddha phantom appeared behind Abbot Whitebrow. That massive Buddha moved its hand, a giant palm stretching towards the Cosmic Melting Furnace!

Bright Buddha Palm Seal! This was a top ability of the Great Zen Temple’s highest holy technique, ‘Great Zen Mantra’. It was difficult to learn and difficult to control, but those who did would wield a great power. The giant hand that formed was said to be able to churn the sea, shake the earth, control the heavens, and even pluck out the stars and moon from the sky.

‘This old bald donkey is really a sly snake!’ Xuan Wuji cursed. Obviously, Abbot Whitebrow had discovered that he wouldn’t activate the array formation as long as he didn’t step on the platform with the coiling jade platforms. Then, as long as he didn’t step foot on the platform and instead used his secret Buddhist technique to grab the object from a distance, there wouldn’t be a problem!

‘If this old bald monkey has cultivated the Bright Buddha Palm Seal to Perfection, then he really might be able to move the Cosmic Melting Furnace!’

Xuan Wuji’s complexion changed. If Whitebrow wasn’t able to take the treasure, then it wouldn’t matter. But if he did, just what should he do?

He hadn’t even obtained the Nirvana Dragon Root yet. If there was a falling out in the alliance here, then that was equal to giving up on the Nirvana Dragon Root. But if Whitebrow obtained the treasure, then that also wasn’t good. It was unknown whether or not he could obtain the Nirvana Dragon Root, but this treasure would already be in hand.

If it was a heavenly material, then there was no need to mention its value. It would not be any less rare or precious than the Nirvana Dragon Root.

If it was an offensive or defensive treasure, then even though its value would be lower, it would still be able to greatly increase one’s strength in the short run. In the near future, it would give Whitebrow an enormous advantage in competing for the Nirvana Dragon Root.

Although Xuan Wuji was a meticulously careful and prudent person, he couldn’t think of a foolproof countermeasure in such a complex situation.

At this time, that giant golden Buddha palm phantom had already hit the Cosmic Melting Furnace. Although Abbot Whitebrow hadn’t cultivated the Bright Buddha Palm Seal to Perfection, he could still easily crush a mountain peak from 10,000 feet away!

And Abbot Whitebrow was only 40 to 50 feet away from the Cosmic Melting Furnace. The power of using the Bright Buddha Palm Seal at such a close distance could be imagined! If it wasn't the Cosmic Melting Furnace but rather a normal earth-step pill furnace, then this attack from Abbot Whitebrow could twist it into bits!

The great golden palm wrapped around the Cosmic Melting Furnace, trying to raise it up. Abbot Whitebrow wanted to grab the entire furnace!

"Humph! Dream on!"

Xuan Wuji sneered. This old bald monk donkey was far too greedy. Did he really think the Cosmic Melting Furnace was something that was his for the taking? He even wanted to grab the entire thing. This old man was really greedier than a snake.

Sure enough, as the great palm wrapped around the Cosmic Melting Furnace, the furnace was entirely still. Instead, Abbot Whitebrow's face flushed red. Obviously, he was making a great effort.

Abbot Whitebrow frowned and then moved the palm to the next best thing. He grasped towards the Cosmic Melting Furnace's lid!

The Cosmic Melting Furnace had three feet and two handles. The lid was round and also engraved with a Golden Crow image. As Abbot Whitebrow grabbed it, there was a loud smashing sound like a morning bell being struck. The incomparably heavy lid actually began to shake!

Although it was only an extremely slight vibration, it was enough to change the complexion of everyone present!

It shook!

Prior to this, all of the Supreme Elders from nearby had used their most powerful moves in an attempt to break through the ancient array formation that defended the Nirvana Dragon Roots. But, they weren't able to make even a tiny bit of progress. This had caused an idea to be planted in everyone's hearts that nothing in the Demon God Imperial Palace could be touched!

But now, Abbot Whitebrow had actually caused the lid of the Cosmic Melting Furnace to move; it filled everyone with hope.

As Abbot Whitebrow saw this, a light flashed in his eyes. He revolved the ‘Great Zen Mantra’ to the extreme, his bones emitting popping sounds!

“Rise for me!”

Abbot Whitebrow gave a loud shout, and blue veins stuck out from his forehead. The golden Buddha palm seemed to manifest into reality at that moment, firmly grasping the lid of the Cosmic Melting Furnace and pulling up!

Angg!

In the moment that the lid shook, the Cosmic Melting Furnace suddenly issued a sound like a dragon roaring. It was a resonant cry that pierced into the heavens, a rumbling thunder that echoing throughout the world. A massive wave of pressure fell down on everyone. All of the Life Destruction Supreme Elders were forced back by this pressure, their hearts filling with fear and horror!

In that split second, they were able to feel a vast, primal, wild energy rush out from the Cosmic Melting Furnace. It was as if the Cosmic Melting Furnace contained a vast world, and that lid was only the door to this endless world where limitless, infinite mysteries were sealed.

The moment that the lid shook, two shining lights of red and blue shot out, followed by another dragon’s roar. These two fist-sized red and blue lights swirled in the air.

“Mm? What is that!?”

As everyone saw these red and blue lights, they were on alert, their eyes fixated on these objects. The red light seemed like a thick red liquid, no different from blood.

For this object to remain in the Cosmic Melting Furnace for tens of thousands of years and for the blood to not dry out, the value of it could be imagined!

As for that blue light, it wrapped around a blue-hued pill. Waves of icy cold energy emanated from the pill. It was hard to imagine that such a freezing cold object could exist within the blazing heat of the furnace.

This is…

Several Life Destruction Elders with sharp senses instantly realized what this ancient icy cold energy was. This energy of from tens of thousands of years past was 80 to 90% similar to the Nirvana Dragon Root!

Was it possible that this blue pill was a medicine refined with a Nirvana Dragon Root!?

The Nirvana Dragon Root was already a heaven-defying treasure. If more heavenly materials were added in and further refined into a pill, just what sort of effect could it have?

Could it completely wash one's marrows, or even cause one to directly pass through stages of Life Destruction?

If this was so, then it wouldn't be hard at all to cultivate for another few hundred years and become an Emperor level powerhouse!

As everyone realized this, their thoughts became hot and fiery. If the Nirvana Dragon Root was a treasure they dreamed of, then this Cosmic Melting Furnace was enough to make then go crazy and lose all rational reasoning!

Several Life Destruction Elders couldn't help but move forwards several steps. But on the Great Zen Temple's side, a big-headed monk suddenly jumped out, his entire body crackling with popping sounds. A great golden Buddha phantom also emerged from behind him, only much blurrier than the one that Abbot Whitebrow formed.

"Senior-apprentice Brother, I will help you!"

The big-headed monk’s expression flashed with a crazy greed. His palms were flat as he shot them out, and a massive golden palm reached towards the two red and blue lights!

But at this moment, something changed!

Atop the platform, the eight coiling dragon columns trembled, and then a deluge of red lights came shooting out!

Sou sou sou!

The red dawn light shot out at a speed that was hard to fathom. Abbot Whitebrow’s complexion immediately changed and he hastily drew back. At the same time, his palm came slamming downwards. The Bright Buddha Palm Seal struck the red lights, but in that instant, those red lights instantly penetrated the Bright Buddha Palm Seal that was at a realm near Perfection!

“Ahhh!”

Abbot Whitebrow burst into a roar, his body contorting, twisting at an unbelievable angle in the air. The red light finally sizzled past Abbot Whitebrow’s right chest. His secret Buddhist technique, Diamond Vajra Body, instantly exploded. Abbot Whitebrow’s right chest was charred black!

However, other people didn’t have the cultivation that Abbot Whitebrow did; they were completely helpless against this rapid red light. There was simply nothing they could do!

As for that big-headed monk that helped Abbot Whitebrow to take the treasures, the red light directly pierced through his head!

With a light flashing sound, the big-headed monk’s upper body instantly turned to ash. All that was left over were two fat legs that were stuck into the ground like radishes.

But several rays of red light still shot out. Two of them randomly swept towards the Life Destruction powerhouses closest to the Cosmic Melting Furnace. Without any delay, the people weren't even able to cry out before they were directly burnt to ashes!

In the blink of an eye, four Life Destruction powerhouses violently died. As for the third stage Life Destruction Abbot Whitebrow, whose defensive power far surpassed everyone present, he was also severely wounded!

Bang!

Abbot Whitebrow smashed into the ground. His right side had been scorched black, and his face was white, sweat streaming down it.

With trembling hands, he took a pill from his spatial ring and swallowed it. Finally, some color returned to his face.

As everyone saw this, they fell into complete silence, a cold sweat dripping down their backs.

A moment ago, if they had also subconsciously drawn a few steps closer because of their greed, then they too would have suffered a similar fate!

This was far too horrendous!

Chapter 494 – Opening the Ancient Array

Chapter 494 – Opening the Ancient Array

…

…

…

Even Abbot Whitebrow – a third stage Life Destruction Supreme Elder who cultivated the amazing holy Buddhist techniques – had nearly died a miserable death. If it were them instead, then there was no amount of luck that would have helped them escape.

If they didn't have the fortune to enjoy the treasure, then it was worthless to them no matter how rare and precious it was.

The Life Destruction Elders began to move towards the cave entrance. This cave was simply too dangerous to them. If there was some accident and that red light flashed into them, it would really be the day of their death! They couldn't afford such a gamble. Not to mention that many of them were considered the backbone of their sect. If they perished here, then their sect would be in a dangerous position.

Thus, more than a dozen Life Destruction Elders immediately left the cave. They had already made a resolution that even if this was a treasure that they could eat and use to ascend to the the Realm of the Gods, and even become immortal, they still wouldn't try to touch it!

Xuan Wuji calmly retreated back to the cave entrance. What he cultivated were the devil arts. While he had great offensive power, his defensive power was lacking. If that red light from a moment ago had come after him, then even if he couldn't guarantee he would be able to block it!

Nanyun Wang hesitated for a moment and also retreated several steps. But in the end he wasn't willing to leave the cave yet.

He also wanted that miraculous divine medicine that was refined with the Nirvana Dragon Root. As long as he was able to obtain it, then crossing that deathly river known as the stages of Life Destruction would not be difficult at all!

This Eight Dragon Jade Light Array was truly terrifying, but wasn't crossing the calamitous stages of Life Destruction also terrifying?

The Life Destruction boundary was truly an inestimable test of suffering and resilience on a martial artist's mind and soul. If they crossed it, then they could become a Peerless Emperor that lived for 10,000 years. But, if they failed, they could also turn into ash that disappeared with the wind.

Nanyun Wang had a very great ambition. Among most of the Elders present, the truth was that they had already completed their contingency plans to die in the Life Destruction realm. But Nanyun Wang was not willing!

If he didn't want to face the bone-chilling probability of failing to cross Life Destruction when the time came, then his only choice was to face the terrifying red light from this Eight Dragon Jade Light Array!

The Nirvana Dragon Root was undoubtedly much safer. But, the ancient array formation that protected it was too strong; who knew when it would be broken?

In comparison, although the Cosmic Melting Furnace was much more dangerous, at least he had seen the treasures within. There was always a sliver of hope!

As many of the Elders slowly left the cave one after another, Lin Ming was actually standing in a corner of the cave, calmly staring at this Eight Jade Dragon Light Array.

He had already discovered a number of ways to approach the furnace. For instance, the place where he now stood was the result of his meditation on this.

The position he stood at was carefully chosen. The Eight Dragon Jade Light Array would only actively attack intruders that approached within 100 feet of the Cosmic Melting Furnace. If one were further, they would only suffer the spilled red light. As for this spot where Lin Ming stood, it was a dead angle where the red lights couldn't reach. As long as he remained motionless there, it was impossible for those red lights to touch him.

The Demon Emperor's second soul fragment had some incomplete memories about the Eight Dragon Jade light Array. Lin Ming constantly pondered this using the knowledge he also had of ancient array formations, filling in the gaps himself and deducing what was missing. Lin Ming was confident that with less than a quarter of an hour, he would be able to break open the Eight Dragon Jade Light Array.

However, the truth was that Lin Ming also knew that even if he managed to break through the array, it was useless. He didn't have Abbot Whitebrow's strength. If he wanted to rely on his own strength, then he would never be able to lift the lid of the Cosmic Melting Furnace, even if he was able to stand right next to it.

But, no matter how hopeless it was, Lin Ming decided that he would first understand how the array formation operated and then think about whether or not he could use this information.

Drawing back a step, it could be said that even if he couldn't obtain the treasures inside the Cosmic Melting Furnace, he still might be able to use this Eight Dragon Jade Light Array to protect himself.

If Xuan Wuji decided to chase after him and kill him, then he would escape into the Eight Dragon Jade Light Array.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming glanced over at Xuan Wuji. After noticing where Xuan Wuji stood, his mind suddenly stirred.

Xuan Wuji now stood outside the cave. Perhaps he could…

Lin Ming had also once thought about this approach. However, at that time Xuan Wuji and everyone else had been gathered around the Nirvana Dragon Root. Lin Ming simply didn't have a chance.

But now, everyone's attention had dispersed. Xuan Wuji, Nanyun Wang, and Abbot Whitebrow, the three great masters here, had turned their full attention towards the Cosmic Melting Furnace.

Thinking of the transmission array that he had messed with, a crazy plan began to form in Lin Ming's mind…

……………………………………

Originally, during this journey to the Demon God Imperial Palace, nearly 30 Life Destruction old fellows had come. But now, there were only 20 left. Those old fellows that had died were all overlords of their lands. Just mentioning their names brought the admiration of their sects and the terror of their enemies.

However, even existences on this level were only a blink away from death within the Demon God Imperial Palace. They did not have any strength to resist the dangers here.

At this time, outside of the cave, some of those Elders that had luckily survived had chosen a place to begin meditating and restoring their condition. Some of those that were more familiar with array formations went to study the ancient array that protected the Nirvana Dragon Root. There were also some from a grimmer and more mediocre background that went to the riverside to search for medicines, not unlike poor old working men that plucked plants.

Such a state lasted for several hours. Then, those at the riverside finally realized that they couldn't even find any herbs anymore. They bitterly pulled back their hands and moved to find a spot to meditate.

But, those that studied ancient array formations were still refusing to give up. Occasionally, there would be an old man that would gasp in surprise as he traced the ancient array, as if he found something and was suddenly enlightened. All of the others would immediately ask him what discovery he had made.

Then, the old man that had been ‘enlightened’ would share his ‘enlightenment’ with a proud expression.

After others heard this, they would also appear enlightened and follow with some compliments and praise. At this time, that old man that had shared his thoughts would appear extremely happy. Of course, there would sometimes be opposition from others that led to a fierce debate. During this time, everyone would rely on their own knowledge and comprehension of ancient arrays to struggle for a winner.

Sometimes, in order to verify their thoughts, these old fellows would even bring out their array disks or array flags in order to test out their theories. Of course, no matter what they did, the ancient array formation would remain unmoved.

The truth was that these old fellows did not expect they would be able to break through this ancient array formation. What they wanted was to learn from it and further define and deepen their own understandings of array formations. Compared to the current existing array formations of the Sky Spill Continent, this ancient array formation was undoubtedly more powerful.

If they could comprehend just a bit of something, then they would gain a benefit for life.

It wasn’t known when, but a young man had infiltrated the group of old men as they discussed array formations, and began to feel over the ancient array formation.

“You little rascal, what are you here for, don’t try to get in this old man’s way!” A white-haired old man that held an array flag in his hand said with dissatisfaction as he saw Lin Ming loitering about.

In order to meditate and perceive the array formation, one needed to be tranquil at heart. In the eyes of this old man, having Lin Ming wandering around him was obstructing his thinking.

Lin Ming apologetically smiled and cupped his fists across his chest, saying, “Junior just came to casually see.”

“Humph, what do you think you will see? Even this old man is puzzled about many aspects of this array formation. Don’t get in this old man’s way of understanding it!”

“Yes, junior will immediately leave.” Lin Ming said, his face covered with a contrite smile as he retreated. But as he walked away, he conveniently touched an array symbol. The array symbol’s surface wasn’t changed at all, and one couldn’t see a difference either. It was only that the flow of energy within that array symbol had been altered. If one didn’t have a thorough understanding of ancient array formations, then there was no way they would notice the difference.

“Little rascal, don’t go randomly fumbling around!” The white-haired man obviously hadn’t looked at Lin Ming, but he still noticed Lin Ming’s minor actions. This caused Lin Ming to secretly shrink backwards. He thought to himself, ‘This old bag is really sensitive. Luckily, he doesn’t understand anything about ancient array formations, otherwise there is no way I could hide what I’m doing from him.’

Lin Ming let out a breath of relief. He grimly said, ‘This is the third array symbol…’

He looked to the direction of the cave where the Cosmic Melting Furnace was. Xuan Wuji had already moved around 200 feet from the cave and was meditating on a rock.

Although his eyes were closed, the truth was that he always had a slight strand of his perception branching out to the Nirvana Dragon Root’s ancient array formation.

However there were all sorts of self-proclaimed ‘Sages’ and ‘Grand Masters’ of array formations that surrounded the ancient array formation, studying it. Lin Ming seemed unremarkable among all of them.

‘Next is… the fourth array symbol.’ Lin Ming silently walked over to the location of the fourth array symbol.

At this time, in the cave, Abbot Whitebrow had just restored his condition. It wasn't known what sort of miracle medicine he had used, but in just two hours of time, his right chest already looked a healthy tender red. Besides his complexion being a bit paler, he seemed alright.

Obviously, Abbot Whitebrow also hadn't given up on the Cosmic Melting Furnace.

....

Lin Ming continuously opened nine array symbols. In his mind, he was constantly deducing the various situations that would happen once he opened the ancient array formation.

The opening of the ancient array formation was a short process. This little time was enough for Xuan Wuji to sense and instantly come rushing over. As for Nanyun Wang and Abbot Whitebrow, they were in a worse state. They were in the cave at the moment, concentrating their attention on the Cosmic Melting Furnace.

If there wasn't an accident, then after the ancient array opened, the Nirvana Dragon Root would fall into Xuan Wuji's hands.

Now, apart from Xuan Wuji and a few other people, everyone else believed that the Demon God Imperial Palace was completely sealed off.

If it were Abbot Whitebrow or Nanyun Wang who grabbed the treasure, there would inevitably be a great battle. They had no way to escape, and could only rely on their strength to speak for them. Finally, they would have no choice but to distribute the treasures according to their relative strength.

If this happened, Lin Ming would obtain not even the slightest benefit. Instead, he might be caught up in the aftermath of the battle.

However...

Xuan Wuji was different.

Xuan Wuji knew how to leave the Demon God Imperial Palace through the transmission array…

………

‘This is the tenth array symbol.’

After Lin Ming opened the tenth array symbol, he planned to stop for some time before continuing. Although his current movements didn’t arouse anyone’s attention, he still decided to remain supremely cautious. He went down to the riverside and took a short walk, passing by the cave entrance of the Cosmic Melting Furnace.

After a quarter hour, Lin Ming began to continue activating the array symbols again, one at a time.

Finally, after the 36th array symbol was activated, the originally calm ancient array suddenly began to release a hazy white light…

Chapter 495 – A 10 Mile Distance

Chapter 495 – A 10 Mile Distance

…

…

…

“Mm!?”

As those great masters of array formations saw this scene occurring, they were all incomparably shocked!

Everyone stood up. As for Xuan Wuji who had been sitting on a rock, his eyes immediately opened, his gaze like a flash of lightning as he turned towards the trembling ancient array formation.

What was going on?

Could these array masters really have bumped into some kind of miracle and managed to open the ancient array formation?

Xuan Wuji’s thoughts raced and he moved. His body was like an arrow as he shot forwards! At the same time, all of the other martial artists also quickly approached the core of the medicine garden!

At that moment, Abbot Whitebrow and Nanyun Wang were still in the cave, neither of them having noticed anything. The cave itself was able to block one’s perception. As they were about to come out to assess the situation, they heard the ancient array send out a grinding ‘ka ka ka’ sound. The ancient array had already opened!

Abbot Whitebrow and Nanyun Wang's complexions changed. Their first reaction was – they had been tricked!

Xuan Wuji must have had the means to open the ancient array formation. But he must have intentionally failed in doing so the first time in order to trick the two of them into entering the cave, all so that he himself could take sole possession of the Nirvana Dragon Root!

"That wily old fox!"

"Damn!"

Abbot Whitebrow and Nanyun Wang both rushed out. But it was already too late.

Of the north and south double ancient array formations, the one that Lin Ming had opened was the southern one, and also the one that was closer to Xuan Wuji.

As the ancient array opened, an incomparably pure and ancient icy cold energy surged outwards!

As all of the surrounding array masters saw this, they couldn't even believe their eyes. Although they had been discussing how to open it earlier, the truth was that all of them were well aware that this was simply impossible at their level.

"It's really opened!"

"The Nirvana Dragon Root!"

"Heavens!"

At the moment that the ancient array formation opened, all of the surrounding martial artists moved in, wanting to take the Nirvana Dragon Root. At this time, Xuan Wuji loudly shouted, and the 'Netherworld Devil Arts' revolved to the highest limit. His body erupted with true essence without a single bit in reserve!

"Get out of my way!"

With a roar like roiling thunder, Xuan Wuji took out a 12 foot long spear from his spatial ring, smashing downwards.

The shaft of the spear was thick like a python and looked rough and unadorned. At first glance, it seemed unremarkable.

"Heaven-step treasure!"

A light flashed in the eyes of all the Elders present. Before they had entered the Demon God Imperial Palace, they had heard Nanyun Wang say that Xuan Wuji might have a heaven-step treasure. But, they didn't think that this would actually be true!

"Those in my way will die!"

Xuan Wuji roared, his thick spear crashing down! In that moment, space distorted, and a terrifying explosive sound filled the air.

The first stage Life Destruction old fellows that saw this paled. They immediately flew backwards to evade.

Kacha!

The spear was like a bolt of lightning that appeared from thin air. The force was enough to collapse the ground; there was no one who could safely approach.

Xuan Wuji wildly laughed and grabbed at the ground, directly taking the Nirvana Dragon Root of the southern ancient array formation. He turned towards the direction of the transmission array and flew away!

At this time, Abbot Whitebrow and Nanyun Wang were only a few hundred feet away. As they saw this, they wanted to tear out their eyes. They had planned and calculated for every variable, and yet they had still been done in by Xuan Wuji!

Before they could do anything, they felt the other Life Destruction Elders immediately rush into the core of the medicine garden. Besides the main stem of the Nirvana Dragon Root, there were also nine root hairs!

Xuan Wuji had pulled out the most important stem and also the two thickest root hairs. But, seven of the thinner root hairs had broken away in the ground!

In his haste, Xuan Wuji didn't have time to dig through for the root hairs. This was an opportunity for these other Life Destruction old fellows.

If they didn't take this time to grab it, when would they!?

Over a dozen Life Destruction Elders rushed in. In just an instant the seven root hairs fell into everyone's hands. There were even some root hairs that had broken into two pieces!

And two of these root hairs had actually fallen into Xuan Yuqie's hands.

"You dare!? You're all staying!" Nanyun Wang's eyes were red with rage; all of the root hairs were gone! If he joined forces with Abbot Whitebrow, then they could be said to be invincible here. But now, he wasn't even able to get a single root hair!

Xuan Yuqie tenderly smiled, her charming curved lips contained a hint of luscious provocation. Her buxom body was like a ghost as she flashed away, chasing towards Xuan Wuji!

As for the other Elders that had obtained a root hair, and also every South Sea Demon Region and Black Flood Dragon Clan Elder, they didn't say anything further. They turned tail and bolted away!

Since Xuan Wuji ran away, not running away themselves was just looking for death!

As for the Elders from the Great Zen Temple that had obtained a root hair, they didn't run away as their leader was still with them.

"You evil beasts!" Abbot Whitebrow was no longer able to maintain his calm demeanor. The Nirvana Dragon Root was already taken. But him, who was one of the strongest in the group, had come out empty-handed!

"Chase them! Surround them! Don't let them leave!"

Abbot Whitebrow flew into the sky, his sleeves swirling about. He was like the inevitable tide of the sea as he rushed away.

"Fairy Maiden Mu, you must also lend this old monk a hand. The Nirvana Dragon Root cannot fall into the hands of those from the demonic path! If all of it can be recovered, then this old monk will leave Fairy Maiden Mu a root hair!"

As Abbot Whitebrow rushed out, Mu Fengxian heard a true essence sound transmission. Her heart moved. If she could really obtain a root hair, then that would have gone far beyond any of her expectations.

At this time, in order to chase the martial artists of the South Sea Demon Region, the Great Zen Temple and Nanyun Wang had asked for their help. Their promises had a high degree of credibility.

Mu Fengxian clenched her teeth and brought those from Divine Phoenix Island to chase after everyone!

The South Sea Demon Region martial artists rushed out of the door to the medicine garden. Xuan Wuji led the pack, directly rushing towards the transmission array.

"Haha, you want to chase this old man?"

Xuan Wuji sneered and then fished out a purple Profound Thunder Pearl from his spatial ring!

This Profound Thunder Pearl was personally refined by Xuan Wuji. With his third stage Life Destruction cultivation as well as being a thunder-attribute martial artist and even a top array master of the region, the power of the Profound Thunder Pearl that he produced could not be underestimated.

“Go die!”

Xuan Wuji activated the spell in the Profound Thunder Pearl and casually flung it backwards. Because of gravity, the Profound Thunder Pearl slowly fell from high up, spinning towards the South Sea Demon Region martial artists.

The South Sea Demon Region Elders were naturally able to recognize this Profound Thunder Pearl. They grit their teeth, pushing their true essence to the max and raising their speed yet again.

As Xuan Wuji approached the first corner in the hall, he flew forwards and smashed his hand against the wall, using the rebound force to quickly change directions. Behind him, the other South Sea Demon Region martial artists quickly followed suit.

As for the rapidly tumbling Profound Thunder Pearl, it struck the stone walls; a terrifying explosion followed!

Bang!

A violent and brutal shockwave mixed with countless arcs of lightning pierced outwards. Because the entire hall was protected by spells, the explosive true essence shockwave was compressed, making it even more terrifying!

The speed of the shockwave was immensely fast. As for the other Elders, they also approached at an extremely fast pace!

“Damn!”

Several Elders that were in the front of the pursuing pack revolved their protective true essence to the limit. At the same time, they extracted their weapons, cutting a path forwards!

Peng!

The violent shockwave was like a brutal and endless ancient beast that roared towards them. Several first stage Life Destruction Elders collided with this force and were sent flying away, their blood tumbling within them.

As for the second stage Life Destruction Elders, they were able to break through the wall of energy, but their speed suddenly slowed to a halt, unable to move any further.

At this point, a loud shout came, “Out of the way!”

With a rumbling sound like a surging tide, Abbot Whitebrow waved his voluminous sleeves, rushing out of the crowd. The scattered lightning that shot everywhere was swept away by his sleeves!

Following closely behind Abbot Whitebrow was Nanyun Wang. His expression was ghastly and his eyes were blood red. His entire being emanated a suffocating murderous intent!

“Chase after them! Kill every single South Sea Demon Region martial artist! Eliminate them with no mercy and no quarter!”

“Every root hair taken from the South Sea Demon Region and Black Flood Dragon Clan will be divided in half!”

“As for the other treasures taken, I will not take them at all!”

Nanyun Wang’s words echoed throughout everyone’s ears. At this time, because of the Profound Thunder Pearl, the distance between them and the South Sea Demon Region martial artists had increased by a lot.

Under the strange suppressive laws of this world as well as with the winding halls, Nanyun Wang and Abbot Whitebrow found it hard to display their highest speed.

The transmission array was 10 miles away from the Demon Emperor’s medicine garden.

This 10 mile distance was extremely short!

Also, it had been cleared of guard puppets and all the traps been activated once already. These old men had all remembered the locations of these traps in their minds. As Xuan Wuji's group flew down the hall, they could be said to be unimpeded!

Xuan Yuqie closely followed by Xuan Wuji's side. It was unknown what sort of secret technique she used, but her body was like a plume of blue smoke. With just a few flashes, she was able to traverse several miles; her speed was no less than Xuan Wuji's!

At this moment, a miserable scream echoed out. The first stage Life Destruction Elder furthest to the back had his spine chopped in half by Nanyun Wang's saber!

This Elder had just reached the extreme Revolving Core realm less than ten years ago, and his cultivation was also the weakest amongst all of the Demon Region martial artists. At this time, with his spine being split in half, his fate could be imagined!

"Elder Sun." Xuan Yuqie frowned.

"Humph. If he's dead then he's dead. For him to be able to buy a bit of time could be said to be his highest contribution." Xuan Wuji thought little of this Elder's death. Compared to the Nirvana Dragon Root, the death of an Elder who wasn't even of the Xuan bloodline was nothing at all.

With a sneer, Xuan Wuji took out another pale blue array bead from his spatial ring. This bead was obtained by Xuan Wuji the same time that he found the 'Ancient Devil Arts' as well as the Demon Emperor's letter in some ancient ruins. This bead was named the Enchantment Bead!

With Xuan Wuji's speed, he didn't fear that Abbot Whitebrow or Nanyun Wang would be able to catch up to him. He was only looking after the other South Sea Demon Region Elders. If too many of their Elders died, then the overall strength of the South Sea Demon Region would suffer a great setback.

“What a bunch of stupid pigs. This old man has exhausted himself, suffered endless hardship and paid an immense price all in order to open a path to the Demon God Imperial Palace. How could I possibly give it away like this?” Xuan Wuji activated the spell inside of the bead and tossed it out!

Behind the South Sea Demon Region Elders that followed him, the Enchantment Bead suddenly activated. A pale blue enchantment flashed into existence like a thick spider web, blocking the path.

Meanwhile, the transmission array was just in front of them. Xuan Wuji had already investigated this transmission array earlier. This transmission array could be used!

As long as he passed through the transmission array, he could escape outside. As for the others, without him and his secret technique, they would likely be trapped in the Demon God Imperial Palace. Just leaving here would be a major problem!

Chapter 496 – Under the Heavens, Who Can Stop Me?

Chapter 496 – Under the Heavens, Who Can Stop Me?

…

…

…

Thinking of this, Xuan Wuji viciously grinned. When he had opened the Demon God Imperial Palace's defensive barrier array, he had intended to use it to stop them. Without his secret technique, opening the array that covered the Demon God Imperial Palace would be difficult.

Xuan Wuji had experienced failure when he first tried to open the portal to the ancient battlefield, and that had drawn the attention of all these sharks that were trying to take advantage of his efforts. After he had outwitted them, he planned to take the Nirvana Dragon Root and leave via the transmission array, trapping all these arrogantly self-righteous people in the Demon God Imperial Palace. Even if he couldn't keep them trapped forever, he could still stall them for eight to 10 years. During that time, he could calmly summon the Giant Leviathan Saint Beast that the Demon Emperor had left behind in the world.

After he took out the Giant Leviathan Saint Beast that stabilized this broken world, this world would become even more fragile and dangerous; who knew whether or not these people would be able to make it out with their lives!

If these righteous path figures disappeared, and Xuan Wuji also obtained the Giant Leviathan, then he would be able to easily dominate the South Horizon Region and develop the South Sea Demon Region.

He could even use the Nirvana Dragon Root to quickly cross another stage of Life Destruction and have his strength ascend to new heights. At that time, the South Sea Demon Region would truly rise to the level of a medium fifth-grade sect!

This was Xuan Wuji's immaculate plan!

However, he hadn't thought that the Demon Emperor medicine garden's ancient array would be formidable to such a degree. Xuan Wuji's plan to break through it had been defeated, and his dreams had vanished into ash.

But through the twists and turns of life, dawn came after the night. He didn't know who broke through the barrier or how, but one of those so-called array formation Grand Masters must have lucked themselves into doing so. In short, the ancient array formation had unexpectedly been opened, and Xuan Wuji had relied on his own brute strength to steal the Nirvana Dragon Root!

Although he felt that something was strange, and there was something suspicious about all of this, the truth was the Xuan Wuji had firmly obtained the Nirvana Dragon Root. At this time, he didn't have to to think about just what had happened.

Xuan Wuji wasn't greedy. He hadn't thought that he could have obtained the Cosmic Melting Furnace from the start. If he could obtain the Nirvana Dragon Root and completely wash his marrow, and also obtain the Giant Leviathan Saint Beast afterwards, then his objectives would be completed.

With the Nirvana Dragon Root, he had complete confidence that he would be able to break through to the Divine Sea realm! After he reached the Divine Sea realm, he would be considered a Peerless Emperor! This was Xuan Wuji's greatest wish and singular obsession. As long as he could accomplish this, nothing else mattered.

At this time, the transmission array was only 1000 feet away. Xuan Wuji smiled like a madman!

Success!

‘If this old man has another hundred years, then I will reach the Divine Sea realm and unify the entire South Horizon Region!’

Bang!

Nanyun Wang’s attack smashed into the barrier that was created by the Enchantment Bead. However, the barrier only shook, it didn’t break!

“Break for me!”

Abbot Whitebrow attacked simultaneously. He thrust his palm out at the barrier, and countless golden Buddhist lights flashed as a golden palm crashed into the barrier with an explosive sound. The barrier suddenly sunk, seeming very fragile. There was a massive handprint in it, but it still didn’t break!

At this time, Xuan Wuji had already stepped foot onto the transmission array.

As he saw Nanyun Wang and Abbot Whitebrow attack the barrier, Xuan Wuji laughed. “This Enchantment Bead won’t be so easily broken. Nanyun, Whitebrow, did you really think that I, Xuan Wuji, would just take all these insults sitting down? I was the one who found the Demon Emperor’s letter in the ancient ruins. I was the one who spent 10 years of painstaking time and effort, and didn’t even hesitate to start a war in the South Sea, all in order to obtain the Nirvana Dragon Root! You did nothing at all and yet you plan to share in the spoils of my effort? How can I possibly let you do so!? I’ll give you some advice for free. Without my secret techniques, breaking through the array formation that protects the Imperial Palace will be extremely difficult. In fact, it will be no easier than breaking through the array formation in the medicine garden! Hahaha! Nanyun, Whitebrow, I hope that I can see you break through the barrier 10 years from now!”

As Xuan Wuji spoke, Nanyun Wang and Abbot Whitebrow's complexions became extremely ugly. They had helped in breaking through the Imperial Palace's array formation, so they were well aware of how difficult it was. Without Xuan Wuji, it would not be easy at all.

Abbot Whitebrow sizzled with anger. He extended his palm; the Bright Buddha Palm Seal smashed down!

Bang!

The barrier violently shook. Even though it took a strike from the complete strength of the Bright Buddha Palm Seal, it didn't break, only becoming dimmer, as if it consumed a great deal of energy to block this attack from Abbot Whitebrow.

"Hehe, I urge you to save your strength. Even if you break through the barrier, it is too late for you now!" As Xuan Wuji spoke, Xuan Yuqie also floated onto the transmission array and stood by his side.

"Nanyun Wang, Great Zen Temple, wait for me. Once this old man reaches the Divine Sea realm and becomes a Peerless Emperor, I will definitely visit your homes one by one. At that time, under the heavens of the South Horizon Region, Five Element Region, Great Zen Region, or even the entire South Sea, who can stop me!? They can only bow their heads and pledge their loyalty to Xuan Wuji!"

Xuan Wuji spoke excitedly and in high spirits. This had been his dream for the past 1000 years! Now, it was close at hand and about to be realized. At this time, reveling in his glory in front of his enemies, he was fervent, overjoyed, and his thoughts were incomparably smooth!

It could only be said that the psychological pressure created by the Life Destruction stages was too great. Even with someone as solemn and scheming as Xuan Wuji, as they saw the shackles of Life Destruction suddenly destroyed in front of them, his eyes rose high in ecstasy and joy!

It had to be known that he had reached the extreme Revolving Core realm before he was 100 years old. But afterwards, the great mountain known as Life Destruction had suppressed him for nearly 1000 years. Throughout these difficult times, he was unable to release the anxiety that he had created in his heart. Once someone who stood so proudly was finally released from their troubles, the craziness from their catharsis would be even crazier than an average person.

“Xuan Wuji, you are far too arrogant! The Nirvana Dragon Root only increases your chances of successfully crossing Life Destruction! Do you really think you can become a Peerless Emperor? Perhaps during your next attempt to cross Life Destruction, you’ll be burnt to ash and die!” Nanyun Wang angrily shouted, breathless. He continuously attacked the barrier like a madman while he yelled at Xuan Wuji.

“Hahaha! This old man naturally has backup plans, it’s just that you are clueless! Do you think that this ancient treasure is so simple? I, Xuan Wuji, have been preparing to enter the Divine Sea realm for nearly a thousand years. How could I not have understood all of this!?

“The value of this Nirvana Dragon Root far surpasses your imagination! Not only can it increase the chances of crossing Life Destruction, but it can also wash one’s marrow, causing a martial artist’s cultivation to reach a higher level! However, you do not need to worry about any of this. It’s best that you figure out how to leave the Demon God Imperial Palace before this broken world collapses on top of you!”

As Xuan Wuji spoke, Nanyun Wang’s hate was so deep that he almost crushed his own teeth. When they had first entered the Demon God Imperial Palace, he had already guessed what tricks Xuan Wuji had up his sleeve, and had always been prepared. However, since he didn’t have the Demon Emperor’s letter nor did Xuan Wuji allow him to look at it, he was naturally placed in a passive position!

However, with such opportunities in front of him, Nanyun Wang had entered even though he knew all of the risks involved. And yet, he didn’t think that he would end up like this!

“Break for this old monk!” Abbot Whitebrow smashed his Bright Buddha Palm onto the barrier once again, wanting to tear apart this enchantment. At this time, there was a loud groaning sound as if the enchantment was overwhelmed and about to shatter apart.

Xuan Wuji smiled and said, “The Bright Buddha Palm Seal is truly of worthy of being called the Great Zen Temple’s highest cultivation technique. But what a pity, it is too late! I urge the Great Zen Temple to keep the ‘Great Zen Mantra’ in good condition. Perhaps in ten years, this old man might come over to take a look! It is said that the Buddhist cultivation methods can complement those from the demon path, I wonder whether or not this is true!”

“You are far too insolent! Xuan Wuji, this old monk swears to the great Buddha that in my life I will destroy all the evils demons of the South Sea!” Abbot Whitebrow had completely lost every bit of his former cool. At this time, his beard and hair were flying upwards, his expression grim, like an evil elephant.

“Haha? Buddha? What is Buddha? Does it exist? With endless power, I will become Buddha! I will be god!”

“My destiny will be controlled by me and me alone! The South Sea Demon Region’s future will also be written by me, Xuan Wuji! I will restore the glories of the Silent Demon Emperor City of the past with my own hands! After I reach the Divine Sea realm, under the heavens, who can stop me!?”

“Transmission array, start!” As Xuan Wuji spoke, he suddenly stamped his feet. The ancient transmission array underneath him emitted a flash of light. However, this light shined for several breaths of time before dimming. A moment later, it went completely quiet.

The South Sea Demon Region Elders that stood behind Xuan Wuji stood on the transmission array, not moving at all.

“Mm?” Xuan Wuji was stunned for a moment.

The South Sea Demon Region Elders were unclear as to what was happening. But, the beautiful face of the always demure and enchanting Xuan Yuqie paled. “What’s wrong?”

Xuan Wuji panicked for a moment, but immediately calmed down. Before this, he had already investigated this transmission array and found that it could be used. He recalled the method to start the array formation from the Demon Emperor’s jade slip… it shouldn’t be wrong…

Xuan Wuji stamped his feet again, “Transmission, start!”

As if hope was dying, there wasn’t the slightest change in the surrounding scenery. But, on the other end, Abbot Whitebrow and Nanyun Want continued their all-out attack on the enchantment barrier. That barrier was on the verge of breaking!

In that instant, Xuan Wuji felt his body stiffen. He felt as if countless crows were flying overhead.

“Motherf*cker, just what is the problem!?”

“Senior-apprentice Brother, what’s wrong?” Xuan Yuqie asked, also nervous. Did the ancient array formation fail?

How could they be so lucky!? All this way, none of the ancient array formations of the Demon God Imperial Palace had failed, so how could this one alone have failed!?

The other South Sea Demon Region Elders felt their scalps tingling, and their knees weakening.

Their strength was limited. If this transmission array failed, then Xuan Wuji would be able to escape. As for them, this most likely meant death!

“Transmission, go!”

With one last attempt, Xuan Wuji determined that the problem wasn’t with his method to activate the transmission array, but rather that there were problems with the transmission array itself. Now, the normally calm Xuan Wuji felt sweat dripping down his forehead!

From his high-spirited mood a moment ago, Xuan Wuji had been able to see the scene of reaching the Divine Sea realm and leading the South Sea Demon Region to conquer the South Horizon Region. But now, he was helpless. With just a mere four people, how could he resist the myriad others from all the other major powers? Xuan Wuji felt as if he had fallen from heaven to hell…

“F*ck! I was tricked!”

Chapter 497 – The Second Nirvana Dragon Root

Chapter 497 – The Second Nirvana Dragon Root

…

…

…

In these past 10 years, Xuan Wuji had collected a great deal of information on ancient array formations. Not just that, but the Demon Emperor's letter had a very clear and simple explanation on how to activate the transmission array. Xuan Wuji did not think that he made a mistake.

However, the truth was that the array formation didn't start. The Demon Emperor's letter shouldn't have been wrong on this!

Could it be…

As a number of little clues gathered together, Xuan Wuji felt a growing sense of unease in his heart. He was filled with a strong sense that he had been tricked by someone!

However, he didn't have time to reflect on just what had happened. With a thunderous explosion, the enchantment barrier he had laid down was suddenly torn to pieces by Nanyun Wang and Abbot Whitebrow!

"Shit!" Xuan Wuji was shocked, "Don't attack, I have words I need to say!"

"You can go f*cking speak in hell!" Nanyun Wang was already filled with a burning anger. As soon as he rushed forwards, he revolved his true essence to the limit, and a thick murderous intent surged out from his body. His saber slashed down. The saber light cut through space, directly slicing towards Xuan Wuji!

"Damn!"

Xuan Wuji couldn't speak, he could only respond to the attack. He had to protect Xuan Yuqie and the rest of them, so he was unable to avoid this strike. And in this narrow hall, there just wasn't room to avoid!

Xuan Wuji drew out a heaven-step treasure spear from his spatial ring, thrusting it towards Nanyun Wang's spear energy.

"Quickly retreat!"

Xuan Yuqie's charming face paled and she quickly drew back with the other two Life Destruction Elders. Nanyun Wang and Abbot Whitebrow were two top third stage Life Destruction masters. If they combined their forces to fight Xuan Wuji, the shockwaves would be extremely terrifying!

"Nanyun Wang, stop! I too was tricked by others!" The situation was too complex. And in the midst of battle, Xuan Wuji's thoughts were in disarray. He couldn't figure out just who had planned everything with such an omnipotent eye. Not only had they anticipated everything to this degree, but they had done it so meticulously!

"Old thief Xuan, your words are useless from now on! This old man will no longer believe another word that you say, or my last 800 years of life are nothing but a waste!" Nanyun Wang's attack was like the wind, monstrous waves of blood filling the air. He simply didn't give Xuan Wuji a chance to speak!

He had almost been trapped in the Demon God Imperial Palace while Xuan Wuji fled with the treasure. And it would have been for a truly miserable eight to 10 years!

In this sort of situation, how could Nanyun Wang possibly believe Xuan Wuji's words again?

Xuan Wuji's strength was slightly weaker than Nanyun Wang's. But, he had a heaven-step treasure. In terms of true combat strength, he was slightly stronger than Nanyun Wang.

But Nanyun Wang also had Abbot Whitebrow.

Abbot Whitebrow was also confused as to why Xuan Wuji hadn't escaped through the transmission array. But now, he couldn't ponder the reasons. No matter what had happened, he had to join forces with Nanyun Wang to ruin Xuan Wuji. He'd speak again after obtaining the Nirvana Dragon Root and the Demon Emperor's letter!

A crippled Xuan Wuji would be much easier to control. And everything would be made clear once he was able to read the Demon Emperor's letter. Why did he have to follow Xuan Wuji and listen to his nonsense?

"Bright Buddha Palm Seal!"

Abbot Whitebrow pressed down his palm. A massive golden hand came crashing down through the air, overwhelming all!

"You bastard!"

Xuan Wuji was also raging with anger. He had been tricked, but before he could figure out who had done it, he was being ruthlessly attacked by Nanyun Wang and Abbot Whitebrow! How could he not be angry?

"Do think that I, Xuan Wuji, fear you… break for me!"

Xuan Wuji's eyes flashed with a grim light. His spear pierced towards that giant golden palm!

Bang!

The Bright Buddha Palm Seal was punctured by Xuan Wuji's spear, but he was also sent flying backwards by the force. At this time, everyone else engaged in battle with the other South Sea Demon Region Elders.

Seeing that they were surrounding by menacing Elders from all side, the three South Sea Demon Region Elders felt bitter in their hearts, their legs cramping. Even the always charming and beautiful Xuan Yuqie was extremely pale. As for the other two Elders, their faces were red like liver.

……………

As the Elders engaged in a ruthless melee, there was only Lin Ming left over in the Demon Emperor's medicine garden.

As for Great Zen Temple and all the small sects that were represented by Divine Phoenix Island, they already had an agreement together, so they naturally pursued Xuan Wuji. They did not expect to obtain the main stem of the Nirvana Dragon Root, but they would be utterly content with just half of a hair root.

After passing through several trials and tribulations, there were only slightly more than 20 Elders still alive. If the four from the South Sea Demon Region were eliminated, there would only be around 17 or 18 Elders left. As for root hairs, there were nine of them. If they could wipe out the South Sea Demon Region and also play a great enough role in doing so, it was hopeful that they would be able to obtain half a root hair.

The Demon Emperor's medicine garden had been instantly cleared out.

Lin Ming, of course, had been left in the Demon Emperor's medicine garden. It was naturally impossible for Mu Fengxian to bring Lin Ming along with her, not to mention that Lin Ming was very slow. The greatest problem was that once a fierce battle begun, it would be easy for Lin Ming to be caught up and accidently die.

Lin Ming suppressed the excitement in his heart. He closed his eyes, and then silently counted the time.

One breath of time… two… three…

The transmission array was 10 miles away from the Demon Emperor's medicine garden, and the perception of a normal Life Destruction Supreme Elder only extended for several thousand feet in this broken world. Lin Ming had enough time to open the ancient array formation of the medicine garden.

Also, they were in fierce pursuit at the moment. It was unlikely that they would notice him here.

After 10 breaths of time, Lin Ming estimated that those old Life Destruction fellows had already left the range where they could sense the Demon Emperor’s medicine garden. No matter what he did now, he would be safe!

Lin Ming took a deep breath and suddenly opened his eyes!

The Demon Emperor’s medicine garden had an ancient array at the core that was basically split into two separate north and south arrays. There were two Nirvana Dragon Roots, each being separately sealed in an array formation!

The two array formations mutually supported each other. Xuan Wuji wasn’t able to understand the principles behind this, so he could only try to break both at a time. As for Lin Ming, he was able to open up the array formations one at a time.

In order to help Xuan Wuji snatch away the Nirvana Dragon Root, Lin Ming had opened the southern array formation. As for the northern one, he hadn’t touched it.

Thus, the southern Nirvana Dragon Root had been taken, but the northern one hadn’t moved at all.

In pursuit of wealth, there were often equivalent risks; this was undoubtedly the best chance to do so!

If he lost this chance, he wouldn’t have it ever again!

Lin Ming stepped forwards, his body jumping forth like a highly compressed spring. He flew towards the first array symbol nearby and slapped out his palm, instantly changing the structure. The first array symbol… energy penetration!

In the past few hours, Lin Ming had already simulated opening the array formation countless times. All of this was to save time.

For Lin Ming right now, time was life! Who knew when those old Life Destruction fellows would return.

If Xuan Wuji succeeded in escaping through the transmission array, those old fellows would quickly return. Lin Ming wouldn't have had much time.

But… that transmission array had already been tinkered with by Lin Ming…

Lin Ming had really wanted to see just what sort of expression Xuan Wuji had. If that man realized that he had been tricked by Lin Ming, he would probably eat his own heart.

If he couldn't run away, then there would inevitably be a fierce battle. This gave Lin Ming more time.

Lin Ming was confident that he his plans were solid enough. Even if those old fellows felt that something was wrong after the battle and came back, it would still be around a quarter of an hour to half an hour. That was more than enough time for Lin Ming to finish everything he wanted to do.

Opening the ancient array of the medicine garden normally wouldn't have taken much time. But, Lin Ming had shortened this to the extreme. This was because he needed more time to go and attempt something else!

The ancient array in the medicine garden was just like a complex combination lock. The ancient array would only open if he made the correct change to every array symbol's structure.

Lin Ming moved like the wind, quickly running between the 36 ancient array symbols.

After only several breaths of time, all of the array symbols' energy structure had been changed by Lin Ming. As he finished, the entire array formation began to emit a hazy white light.

In that instant, Lin Ming's heart caught in his throat!

Please don't have anything go wrong!

During the dozen breaths of time that it took for the array formation to open, Lin Ming's palms became slick with sweat. His eyes shined and he held his breath as he stared at the barrier that protected the Nirvana Dragon Root.

"Hu!!"

As the array formation opened, a vast, endless, icy cold energy spread out. Lin Ming only felt a bone-chilling cold through his entire body. He forcefully revolved his true essence to the limit, and was barely able to resist the onslaught of this icy energy.

"What a fierce cold energy!"

Lin Ming was at full alert. The moment that the array formation completely opened, he bolted forwards, instantly arriving near the Nirvana Dragon Root. He wrapped true essence around both his hands, and then reached out towards the Nirvana Dragon Root.

Lin Ming's hands shivered with excitement.

It was his!

This was the heavenly material that countless Life Destruction Supreme Elders yearned for in their dreams – the Nirvana Dragon Root!

The Nirvana Dragon Root was twisted like a ginseng, and it was a dark gray all over. It looked extremely unremarkable, except for the root hairs that gripped together like Horned Dragons.

This was a spiritual plant that had existed for tens of thousands of years. Even within the Realm of the Gods, the Nirvana Dragon Root would be harvested after ten thousand years; it wouldn't be allowed to grow for tens of thousands of years.

There were very few sects that were willing to spend tens of thousands of years to grow a medicinal herb. And this was because many sects themselves did not exist for tens of thousands of years.

The reason that this Nirvana Dragon Root was able to grow for such a long time was entirely accidental, a series of circumstances that had combined together. Within the entire Sky Spill Continent, there weren't many heavenly materials that had a much greater value than this!

As Lin Ming touched the Nirvana Dragon Root, his heart raced. Even though he had thickly wrapped true essence around his hands, he still felt an icy cold energy pierce through his palms, and there even seemed to be a faint flow of icy energy rush through his meridians, spreading to his bone marrow; it was extremely comfortable.

“Unbelievable. I'm only holding it, but I can feel the Nirvana Dragon Root resonating with my bone marrow. It's as if this was born for the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’!”

Lin Ming carefully and quickly scooped out the nearby dirt around the Nirvana Dragon Root. He quickly cleaned it up, not even allowing the tiniest root hair to escape.

Then, after several breaths of time, the complete Nirvana Dragon Root was taken out by Lin Ming. He placed it in a jade box he had prepared and then packed it with some of the soil, completely wrapping the Nirvana Dragon Root again.

Then he pasted a seal onto the jade box and carefully put it away. This sort of spiritual plant was still alive, it couldn't be put into his spatial ring.

Chapter 498 – Entering the Cave Once More

Chapter 498 – Entering the Cave Once More

…

…

…

"It's finally mine!"

As Lin Ming put away the jade box, he had a feeling as if everything that was happening was a dream. It had to be known that before now, there were over 30 old Life Destruction fellows that were all trying to obtain the Nirvana Dragon Root together. They had taken countless risks and ventured forth into the Demon God Imperial Palace, and over a dozen Life Destruction Supreme Elders had perished for it!

Xuan Wuji had carefully spent 10 years of the utmost care and calculation, and he hadn't even hesitated to start a war in the South Sea for it!

But now, the Nirvana Dragon Root was lying in his own jade box, in a complete and unbroken state without a single root hair missing.

The process of obtaining it appeared extremely easy; he hadn't even needed to fight.

However, the truth was that for Lin Ming, he had already paid a great price!

After he had entered this ancient battlefield, Lin Ming had engaged in a fierce battle with the South Sea Demon Region. He had swallowed a Scarlet Blood Pill and had exhausted his life like a lamp at the end of its wick, nearly dying in the process. Then, he had been ambushed and betrayed by others, and had to part with Mu Qianyu in life or death circumstances. He had burned his blood essence, detonated his Blood Drinking Seals, and pushed himself to the limit all in order to flee the jaws of death. He had swallowed the fragment of the Demon Emperor's soul, and his Samsara martial intent had collapsed several times, nearly turning him into an idiot. In the end, he didn't even obtain too much valuable information. Lin Ming then risked his life to enter the Demon God Imperial Palace, and because his cultivation was too low, he had nearly been killed at the hands of Xuan Wuji.

With dangers surrounding him from all sides, Lin Ming had repeatedly unleashed everything he had, not even hesitating to leave behind hidden wounds in his body. He had completely used up the Scarlet Blood Pill and Escape Symbol, and had even eaten three Yang Reversion Pills. Finally, at the very last moment, he had found success and obtained the Nirvana Dragon Root. To Lin Ming, everything he suffered was now worth it!

As Lin Ming felt the warm touch of the jade box against his chest, his heart was filled with emotion.

There were countless talents in the world, but actually very few that were able to traverse up the winding path to the peak of martial arts. It could be said that there was not a single genius who made it there that didn't come across a massive lucky chance.

However, people only thought about how great these lucky chances were. No one thought about just what sort of price had been paid in order to obtain them. In this world, there was no opportunity that would fall into one's hand without a cost. A lucky chance was only for the prepared. If one didn't have the courage, then even if a thousand opportunities were presented in front of them, it would still be useless!

As for destiny, the truth was that it was just an illusory conception. To Lin Ming's understanding, the so-called 'destiny' was merely a martial artist's struggle for lucky chances. Ultimately, it was the pursuit and test of a martial artist's determination to reach the peak of martial arts, as well as a trial of their strength, courage, and wisdom.

Thus, fighting for one's own greatest benefits was naturally what a talented martial artist should do.

As Lin Ming finished his business there, he looked up towards the cave where the Cosmic Melting Furnace was.

Lin Ming was well aware that even if his strength reached the second or third stage of Life Destruction and he lived for a thousand years, he wouldn't be able to create a foolproof plan. Even if he became someone on the level of those old monsters, reaching this step and obtaining an entire Nirvana Dragon Root was already very difficult.

With this Nirvana Dragon Root, he would be able to fully complete Tempering Marrow; his harvest had been enormous.

As for the Cosmic Melting Furnace, although Lin Ming had a way to decipher the Eight Dragon Jade Light Array, that Cosmic Melting Furnace had obviously been sealed away with some strange arcane technique by the Demon Emperor. It was impossible for him to take it - even opening the lid was questionable.

Once those Life Destruction Elders returned, Lin Ming would undoubtedly die. There would be no one that would save him!

But as Lin Ming had thought before, every lucky chance was followed by dangers and tribulations. If he didn't fight for every opportunity that presented itself to him, then he would only remain a mediocre man for the rest of his life; it would be absurd for him to think of ever reaching the peak of martial arts.

Lin Ming grit his teeth. In any case, he still wanted to try. If he couldn't open the lid then he would give up.

Lin Ming's figure flashed a few times and he arrived at the cave. The heat waves still billowed out as they did before. On the ground, there were still two piles of ashes; these were from two Elders that had been struck by that deadly dawn-red light.

The Great Zen Temple's big-headed monk's body had already been collected into a coffin by Abbot Whitebrow. Of these two piles of ashes, one was an Elder from a small sect and the other was a free martial artist. After they died, there was no one to collect their ashes for them. For a master that ruled over their territory, a Supreme Elder that decided the fates of countless others, to end up like this, the brutality and cruelty of the road of martial arts could be seen.

Lin Ming sobered as he thought this.

Time was running out, and he couldn't be bothered with these ashes. He recalled the method to pass through the Eight Dragon Jade Light Array and carefully walked forwards.

The fiery heat in the air became increasingly intense. It felt as if he was walking deeper into a volcano. His mouth was dry, and every breath he took was like a stream of fire that passed into his lungs.

With every wave of heat that surged forwards, Lin Ming felt a needle-like pain cross his face.

As his gaze fell onto the Cosmic Melting Furnace's eight coiling dragon columns, Lin Ming clearly felt a vast and ancient energy emanate from these columns.

To open the furnace, he first had to open the Eight Jade Dragon Light Array.

Lin Ming wrapped true essence around his palm and walked over to the first nearby coiling dragon column.

The coiling dragon column was thick and high, it was unknown just what sort of metal it was made of. It was over 100 feet high, and had a lifelike Horned Dragon carved into it. A deep red flame came shooting out from the column. At this time, it was as if the Horned Dragon was alive and had opened its great jaws, constantly unleashing a dawn-red fire at the Cosmic Melting Furnace.

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He meditated for a moment on the law formula, and then gently wiped three spots on the coiling dragon column. With a light crackling sound, the light of the coiling dragon column began to dim down.

Lin Ming's figure flashed, and he arrived at another coiling dragon column. This time, he changed methods and pressed his fingers five times on the column. Finally, the second coiling dragon column's light also dimmed down like the first.

After reaching another coiling dragon column, Lin Ming repeated his method. After ten breaths of time, the eight coiling dragon columns trembled in unison, and the low roar of a dragon filled the platform.

Soon after, there was an explosive sound, and all of the red lights faded away. At the same time, the scarlet eyes of the eight Horned Dragons dimmed down.

The dawn glow that had enveloped the Cosmic Melting Furnace also immediately disappeared. All that was left over were the waves of heat, as if they were a reminder to others as to just how powerful this Eight Dragon Jade Light Array was.

It was finished!

Lin Ming let out a long breath. Since he had some of the Demon Emperor's memories, figuring out a way to break through the Eight Dragon Jade Light Array wasn't too difficult for him. But, the problem was… how would he open it?

Lin Ming approached the Cosmic Melting Furnace and felt waves of scorching heat pass over him. Looking at the bright red furnace, he didn't know just how high of a temperature it would be. If he directly touched it with his hand, he feared that it would directly penetrate his true essence protection and scorch his hand to the bone!

"This Cosmic Melting Furnace is the most valuable treasure of the Demon God Imperial Palace, according to the Demon Emperor's memories. It was originally used to stabilize the Imperial Palace. Perhaps, for these past tens of thousands of years, the reason that the Demon God Imperial Palace's spells and guard puppets could still be maintained and kept running is all related to this Cosmic Melting Furnace. Otherwise, those spells and formations should have slowly weakened over thousands of years…

Before, Abbot Whitebrow had used the Bright Buddha Palm Seal to open the lid of the Cosmic Melting Furnace, and two treasures had appeared: a bright blue pill, and a mass of deep red blood.

That blue pill, if he weren't wrong, should be refined with a Nirvana Dragon Root as part of its materials. Its value could be imagined.

As for that mass of dark red blood, Lin Ming wasn't sure what it was. He could only feel an ancient, powerful demonic energy emitting from it, horrifying any who sensed it.

Lin Ming was faintly aware that there were more than two treasures in the Cosmic Melting Furnace. There were most likely other treasures that were suppressed deeper within the furnace.

It was just that Abbot Whitebrow was only able to open the shallowest layer of the Cosmic Melting Furnace, thus he couldn't see what else was inside.

"I wonder what sort of treasures are contained at the deepest level. The Demon Emperor's soul fragment didn't contain many memories about this Cosmic Melting Furnace."

Lin Ming shook his head. He didn't intend on looking for the treasures at the bottom of the Cosmic Melting Furnace, he simply didn't have the ability to do so. As for moving the Cosmic Melting Furnace, that was an even greater joke. The Cosmic Melting Furnace was connected to the Demon God Imperial Palace. Let alone Lin Ming, even if an Emperor level powerhouse were to arrive, it would be impossible for them to take it. At best, they would only be able to open the lid and take the treasures within.

Lin Ming didn't ask for much. As long as he could slightly prop open a corner of the furnace and then take out a small portion of the treasures, he would be content.

However, Lin Ming didn't have the powerful Bright Buddha Palm Seal. He also didn't have secret techniques of powers to open a furnace. Thus, he could only resort to the most primitive approach…

He took out the Purple Comet Spear from his spatial ring and stuck it into the edge of the lid. Then, Lin Ming's feet sank, and he pressed down on the spear shaft!

If Abbot Whitebrow had seen this approach then he would most likely have vomited blood. He had used the supreme and almighty 'Great Zen Mantra' and the Bright Buddha Palm Seal in order to let out an earth-shattering hand, but was still unable to pass through the Eight Dragon Jade Light Array. The result was that Abbot Whitebrow had been unable to obtain the rare treasures within the Cosmic Melting Furnace. As for the Eight Dragon Jade Dawn Array, it had counterattacked and instantly killed four Life Destruction Supreme Elders. Even Abbot Whitebrow, who was famed for his defensive ability, had still been grievously wounded.

And yet presently, Lin Ming had easily bypassed the Eight Dragon Jade Light Array and had actually used such an old and crude method to open the furnace; it could only be said to be a joke.

With Lin Ming's complete effort, the Purple Comet Spear bent. But, the Cosmic Melting Furnace didn't budge at all.

As Lin Ming saw this scene, he couldn't help but laugh at himself. He had really been an idiot. Although the Purple Comet Spear could contain power well, it was ultimately a flexible spear. It would be extremely difficult to use it to open the furnace.

Lin Mind's hand turned and he swapped the Purple Comet Spear for the Great Desolate Blood Halberd.

A halberd and spear had a similar shape, but, they were a bit different. And that was… that all halberds were hard weapons. For instance, this shaft of this Great Desolate Blood Halberd was completely made of metal.

Lin Ming placed the halberd blade into the lid edge. He gave a loud shout, releasing his full pressure!

Ka ka ka!

At the point where the halberd blade and lid met, a sound of bending metal pierced out. Lin Ming grit his teeth and opened the Heretical God Force without hesitation!

The power of Tempering Marrow erupted. In an instant, Lin Ming's strength had climbed to 100,000 jins!

After reaching almost 70% Tempering Marrow completion, Lin Ming had rarely relied on his complete strength in his battles. But even so, the Cosmic Melting Furnace didn't budge!

Lin Ming savagely clenched his teeth; he combusted the blood of the Ancient Phoenix!

Zhi zhi zhi –

Even the Great Desolate Blood Halberd began to bend under this terrifying pressure.

But the Cosmic Melting Furnace's lid only trembled for a moment, it was still far from opening.

"It's this tight!?"

Lin Ming's face flushed red with blood.

He had been constantly estimating the remaining time he had left. Currently, those Life Destruction Supreme Elders had been gone for half an incense stick of time. Assuming that they would engage in a fierce melee for a quarter hour, that would be three incense sticks of time; that was more than enough.

However, Lin Ming didn't dare to rely on such assumptions. He was prepared to leave the Demon Emperor's medicine garden after another incense stick of time.

But at this moment, an old voice sounded out, causing Lin Ming to feel as if he had fallen into an ice bath!

"Hehe, little baby boy, the Cosmic Melting Furnace is not something you can open!"

Chapter 499 – Old Dog

Chapter 499 – Old Dog

…

…

…

"Who is it!?" In that moment, Lin Ming felt as if his soul had frozen. He suddenly jumped up like an arrow, twisting around with the Great Desolate Blood Halberd in front!

This was just an instinctive reaction. He was well aware that if any one of those old Life Destruction fellows came back, they could easily kill him with a flip of the hand!

However, the cave was empty behind him, with not a soul in sight.

Lin Ming felt a cold sweat trickle down his back, his mind vigilant.

Even though he opened all of his perception, he couldn't see a single person.

Were they hiding?

With the strength of those old masters, it simply wasn't worth it to do this. If they did, then it was just a mindset of a cat wanting to play with a mouse.

"Boy, there is no need to look, you cannot find this Saint. However, this Saint is also very surprised. Although you're just a little baby boy, you managed to put that group of 1000 year old men into such a miserable state. It really… is to this Saint's liking!"

"You…" Lin Ming was shocked, his mind racing. This Saint!?

Even those old Life Destruction masters didn't proclaim themselves as a Saint. Such an arrogant and proud name…he feared that only an Emperor level powerhouse would dare to call themselves such!

The old voice echoed in his mind. This was either a true essence sound transmission, or… this voice was coming from his own spiritual sea!

As Lin Ming thought of this, he was suddenly shocked. Could it be…

"You are the Demon Emperor!!!"

"Demon Emperor? Heya, this Saint is not him!"

"You aren't?" Lin Ming was stunned. He was certain that this old voice was the remnant consciousness that was left within the Demon Emperor's soul fragment, so how could it not be the Demon Emperor? "You are that red dog that was contained in the Demon Emperor's soul fragment?"

"Dog!? You actually dare to call this Saint a dog!?" The old voice seemed to suddenly stir, and then Lin Ming felt a fierce struggle in the sections of his spiritual sea that he had used to seal away the red dog. Lin Ming felt a throbbing pain in his head, as if he were being bitten like there were ants inside.

However, no matter how strong this remnant consciousness was in the past, it was now in a pitiful state. First it had been cut into several pieces by the Magic Cube, and then it had been sealed away by Lin Ming with the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder and Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder, and then sunk and suppressed within his spiritual sea. Although it was angry now, it could only uselessly pant and toss around. The spiritual power that it consumed was far greater than Lin Ming.

After all, when it had been sucked into the Magic Cube, its main consciousness had been twisted to pieces by the soul current. And, it had been sealed within the Magic Cube for an inestimably long stretch of time.

However, this old voice simply wasn't able to admit defeat. It coldly said, "Boy, if you dare to disrespect this Saint again, then this Saint will eventually shatter your spiritual sea!"

Lin Ming rolled his eyes. He just didn't have time to chit chat with this fellow. He turned and said, "If you want to, then you should come out, don't sit there and idly talk with me!"

Hearing Lin Ming say this, the voice sounded a bit prouder, "Hehe, boy, you're quite smart! Yes, yes, if this Saint comes out now, then you shall be bestowed a great lucky chance!"

Lin Ming's eyebrows arched up. "Lucky chance?"

"You want to obtain the Cosmic Melting Furnace, right? This Saint knows the technique to control it!"

"Mm?" Lin Ming hesitated for a moment. He believed that this fellow truly did have the method to control it, but he also believed that this fellow wouldn't help him with good intentions.

"And what's the price?"

"Talking to you really saves time. This Saint will tell you how to open the Cosmic Melting Furnace. But, the condition is that you unseal my separated consciousness from your spiritual sea and then restore me."

"Impossible!" Lin Ming immediately ruled out this possibility. He just wasn't this old dog's match. The Magic Cube had helped him in sealing away that horrifying dog. Without its help, releasing that old dog's consciousness now was just seeking his own death. Perhaps it might even try to possess him. Rather than taking such a tremendous risk, Lin Ming would rather not have the Cosmic Melting Furnace at all.

"Boy, think about it! This Cosmic Melting Furnace is a great fortune! Also, once I'm restored I know a way to control the Cosmic Melting Furnace! This Saint can even allow you to take away the entire Cosmic Melting Furnace, allowing you to make it your own spiritual tool!”

Take the entire Cosmic Melting Furnace?

Lin Ming’s heart beat quickened as he heard the old dog suddenly say this. However, he eventually suppressed the rising greed in his heart. He coldly said, “It’s impossible for me to meet your conditions. You should just give it up. Time is of the essence right now, I don’t plan on staying any longer.”

Lin Ming put away the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and began to leave. The old dog sounded a bit more nervous now. It said, “Hey, hold on! You only need to unseal a part of my consciousness, not all of it. This Saint will still help you to obtain the Cosmic Melting Furnace!”

“Unseal just a part of your consciousness?” Lin Ming’s mind stirred. At first, this old dog and been torn into seven or eight pieces by the Magic Cube. If it was just one of these pieces, then Lin Ming was completely confident he would be able to subdue it. After all, when Lin Ming had fought with this old dog, he had also caused it a great amount of damage.

“Who are you? How are you related to the Demon Emperor? And why were you in the Demon Emperor’s soul fragment?”

“You asked who I am? Hehe, you probably haven’t heard about me.” The old dog’s voice was proud and filled with disdain. Indeed, if this old dog came from the Realm of the Gods, then Lin Ming was unlikely to have heard about him.

Lin Ming didn’t want to idle away speaking nonsense with this dog. Now, with this old dog delaying him, over 20 breaths of time had passed. At most he had half an incense stick of time before he had to leave. Otherwise, it would become dangerous.

But this old dog’s conditions… who knew what sort of plot it had?

Did it want the treasures within the Cosmic Melting Furnace? Those pills or whatever else was inside would be useless to it!

One needed a flesh and blood body to swallow those pills. Lin Ming had never heard of a spiritual body that was able to take pills.

As he thought it over, Lin Ming thought more and more that this was harmless. After all, it was just a part of the dog's remnant consciousness; it wouldn't be his match.

Even if the dog had some plot, then the worst thing that could happen was that he wouldn't be able to obtain the Cosmic Melting Furnace. Lin Ming had already intended to give up on it, so even if he couldn't obtain it, it wasn't much of a loss.

Time was tight. Lin Ming didn't have enough time to think it over. Since there wasn't any danger, then he would simply agree to its condition. Giving up some lucky chances because of a bit of worry just wasn't Lin Ming's style.

"Alright! Then I'll unseal a part of your consciousness."

Lin Ming entered deep within his own spiritual sea. Within his spiritual sea, that old dog's consciousness had been divided into many pieces and individually suppressed in different corners of Lin Ming's spiritual sea. Every piece was wrapped in a thick bundle of lightning, as if it were a cocoon.

As Lin Ming saw this, he was a bit impressed. For that old dog to still be able to speak to him like this… those old Realm of the God fellows had a terrifyingly resilient soul consciousness.

Lin Ming chose the weakest and smallest section of consciousness, and prepared to unseal it.

The old dog also seemed a bit dissatisfied. "Boy, where's your courage? This Saint's strength has sharply fallen. Now, all that I have left is the form of my soul, and yet you still only release the smallest piece? Even if several pieces of my consciousness joined together, I still wouldn't be able to harm you! In order to open the Cosmic Melting Furnace, this Saint will have to expend a great deal of soul force. If you only unseal such a small piece, then this Saint will damage himself from overdrawing soul force!"

Lin Min thought little of this. He calmly said, "You're right, I'm not that courageous. Less idle talk - do you agree or not?"

Lin Ming guessed that this old dog had some ulterior motive. But now, time was just too tight, and he didn't want to negotiate. Since he had determined that it wasn't dangerous to him, then he would deal with it as it came and try to obtain the maximum amount of benefit that he could, fishing for whatever was available. With the other party's strength so weak, the one with the advantage here was him.

"F*ck, to think that a tiger like me would be bullied by a dog. Fine, I don't want to bother bargaining with you. Now unseal my consciousness."

'Tiger being bullied by a dog? Aren't you just a dog yourself?'

Lin Ming thought this in his mind, but was disinclined to say it. This old dog didn't seem like the great Demon Emperor, but rather an old swindler.

Lin Ming flexed his fingers and began to unseal the wrapped lightning around the piece of soul consciousness. He said, "I'll say this in advance. I only have half an incense stick of time. If you don't succeed in that time period, then I'll be leaving!"

"Half an incense stick of time? More than enough!" Obtaining freedom after being sealed away for such a long time was like a person that had been suddenly released after being tied down with ropes. The old dog's consciousness stretched out its spirit body, and then comfortably cried out, "Woof!"

Hearing this, Lin Ming was speechless. How was this not a dog?

However, what was even more mind boggling was what happened afterwards. As Lin Ming saw the old dog rush out from his spiritual sea and turn into a visible form, he nearly bit off his own tongue.

In front of him was a half-foot long miniature puppy. Its tail was the size of a finger, and it was covered with red curls. Its ears drooped, and it stuck out its lolling tongue, a pair of small black eyes staring out.

It was a pug, it was definitely a pug.

“You… you…!” Lin Ming was at a loss for words.

“What’re you looking at!? This Saint’s soul force is greatly damaged. Naturally, my body will shrink a bit. What’s so strange about it!?” Seeing Lin Ming’s shocked expression, the old dog was a bit unsatisfied and wanted to blame him for being surprised.

Lin Ming didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry. If this was a Saint, and this was also its soul shape, then it truly was difficult to connect the two disparate images together. But now was a moment of life or death, and Lin Ming couldn’t spare the time to care about this. He wouldn’t relax his guard just because this mini pug appeared harmless.

Lin Ming was certain that this old dog had some plan. Otherwise, why would it be so nice as to help him open the Cosmic Melting Furnace? It probably wanted to look inside to see what sort of benefits it could fight for.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming revolved the true essence in his body, staying at full alert. The Samsara martial intent also began to form in his spiritual sea, ready to attack the old dog at any time.

The pug slowly drifted towards the top of the Cosmic Melting Furnace, both eyes staring at the lid. It stretched out its long tongue and licked its lips, revealing a very lascivious and disturbing smile towards Lin Ming. Then, it began to slowly mumble.

As the old dog mumbled, its two short front paws also began to randomly gesticulate in the air. Lin Ming looked at this for a while, and then began to understand that these movements were creating seals.

Lin Ming felt as if he had been struck by lightning

Chapter 500 – Receiving the Furnace

Chapter 500 – Receiving the Furnace

…

…

…

The dog, or rather a pug, assumed an air of self-importance as it chanted, its two front doggy paws waving in the air with a lewd smile plastered over its angry face. This really challenged the limit of Lin Ming's visual comprehension.

No matter how he looked at it, this fellow was more like an old tricky scoundrel.

But although this old dog seemed as if it wasn't too dependable, it seemed to know what it was talking about. The Cosmic Melting Furnace began to release a vibrant red light, and the furnace body also slightly vibrated, emitting a great deal of energy that surged outwards.

However, as the red light shined, the pug wasn't able to maintain its obscene expression. Its soul form seemed to twist around, as if its soul force was weakened. As the pug had said before, opening the Cosmic Melting Furnace with just this small part of his consciousness released was pushing the envelope.

The furnace began to emit a bright white light, and it also began to increasingly vibrate. It seemed as if it were ready to fly away from the platform at any moment.

Lin Ming's eyes shined. This pug wasn't just opening the Cosmic Melting Furnace, but rather taking the entire thing!

"You… can you really take the entire Cosmic Melting Furnace?"

“What nonsense!” Although the pug looked as if it were barely holding on, it still made an effort to glare at Lin Ming with a great deal of disdain, trying to ridicule him. “Do… do you even… know who this Saint is?”

Looking at this pug that had to clench its teeth and force out words with extreme difficulty, Lin Ming felt a drop of sweat drop down his forehead. This fellow, was he really one of those old monsters that lived for tens of thousands of years?

Lin Ming didn’t bother thinking about this much more. His eyes were wide as he stared at the Cosmic Melting Furnace that continually vibrated, the energy becoming increasingly dense. This pug clearly had some association with the Demon Emperor, and it was possible that it had even been the Demon Emperor’s contract beast. If this were the case, the dog’s strength should also be at an extremely high level. Taking the Cosmic Melting Furnace shouldn’t be anything too strange.

However, Lin Ming didn’t know just what the pug was planning on doing with the Cosmic Melting Furnace. It only had a soul body, so what use was a pill furnace to it? Unless, it was planning on fusing itself into the treasure and becoming a treasure spirit.

Was this pug wanting to become a treasure spirit?

If there was a tangible flesh and blood body, then who would want to become a treasure spirit? The only kind that would willingly do so were those like the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm’s Palace Spirit, who was originally from the Spirit race and not a human. The Palace Spirit had preferred to take long and peaceful rests, for tens of thousands of years at a time.

But, this pug was obviously not the same.

Lin Ming’s mind raced. His fingers unconsciously traced his spatial ring.

At this point, a surprising scene took place. The Cosmic Melting Furnace began to wildly spin on the platform. And as it spun around, it began to shrink!

The large 30 foot high pill furnace was instantly reduced to less than 10 feet!

At the same time, the Cosmic Melting Furnace's lid shook tremendously, as if it were about to fly off.

As the pug saw this, its eyes flashed with a greedy light, "Up!"

The pug's paws moved as it spat out words.

Peng!

The lid shot up into the air, and the blue-colored pill and red mass of liquid also flew out!

That blue-colored pill was the pill that had been refined with a Nirvana Dragon Root!

As for that red mass of liquid, Lin Ming had noticed that it was blood that emitted an ancient demonic energy!

The pug waved its paw and pressured the blue pill back into the pill furnace. Although this blue pill was precious, the pug only had its soul body, so it didn't have any use for it.

Therefore, there was only that red mass of blood left over in the air!

As the pug saw this mass of blood, a smile blossomed on its face as it cackled, "Hahaha, this ancient Giant Demon blood is this Saint's!"

Lin Ming was shocked, ancient Giant Demon blood?

He suddenly remembered that the white sphere of light within the Magic Cube would often absorb the blood essence of masters, sometimes rather desperately. Perhaps there was some sort of secret ability that allowed a soul body to nourish itself with blood essence?

This was bad!

If this pug managed to absorb the ancient Giant Demon blood, would he still be able to deal with it?

Lin Ming didn't know how much strength the pug would restore once it absorbed this blood, but in this life or death situation, he couldn't allow something to happen that might spiral out of his control.

Without delay, Lin Ming instantly revolved his Samsara martial intent. He hadn't planned on fighting the pug and hurting each other. If things were in his control, then he might have even divided a portion of the ancient Giant Demon blood and given it to the pug. But he absolutely could not allow it to wantonly devour the entire thing!

Lin Ming was planning on rushing forwards, but the pug was even faster. The pug waved a paw and the ancient Giant Demon blood flew over. It smiled devilishly as it opened its mouth, ready to swallow the entire mass of blood. But at this moment, a crimson light shot out from Lin Ming's chest, from the mark of the Magic Cube!

Woosh!

With a light ringing sound, that red light enveloped the ancient Giant Demon blood at an unimaginable speed, then rewound again at the same inconceivable velocity!

The entire process happened in less than the blink of the eye; Lin Ming simply couldn't respond.

Kacha!

The pug bit down on nothing and nearly cracked its own teeth. As it didn't bite into anything, the happy devilish smile on its face suddenly froze.

Lin Ming froze where he was. He felt a warmth in his chest as that mass of blood drilled its way into his body and then was absorbed by the Magic Cube. The Magic Cube trembled several times, and then quieted down.

"F*ck!"

The pug flew into a rage. It had overdrawn its soul force and had obtained the ancient Giant Demon blood only after extreme difficulty. It had originally wanted to use the blood to nourish its broken soul, but didn't think that it would be swallowed without a trace in just a blink of an eye!

“Boy, this Saint will bite you to death! Woof!”

The pug howled like a wolf and bit down at Lin Ming!

Lin Ming was left speechless. The sudden movement from the Magic Cube was surprising but not unexpected. After all, since the ancient Giant Demon blood was able to nourish the soul, the Magic Cube would naturally fight for it. As for discussing about the ability to struggle for blood essence, the difference between the pug and the Magic Cube was without a doubt like the heavens and earth, separated by 108,000 miles. When the Magic Cube took action, even the blood of the True Dragon shivered in fear!

Seeing the pug rush towards him, Lin Ming calmly revolved all of his true essence. The Samsara martial intent created a massive black vortex in the waters of his spiritual sea. At the same time, the Purple Flood Dragon and Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder dual Thunder Souls also sparked within the skies of his spiritual sea!

“Hu!”

The pug threw itself into Lin Ming's body like a gust of wind. Since it had no true body, biting Lin Ming was just a feint. If it wanted to attack, all it could do was attack Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

However, in just a breath of time, there was only a pitiful ‘awoo’ sound as the pug cried out. It was tossed away, a pained expression on its face.

A soul collision was extremely dangerous. Lin Ming's soul force defense was peculiarly strong; it even exceeded many old Revolving Core masters'. After the pug rushed into him, he was directly oppressed and ended up sustaining a number of injuries.

“F*ck f*ck f*ck! This tiger is being bullied by a dog! This Saint is mad! This Saint is mad!” The pug cursed, its puppy face flustered red. Lin Ming’s spiritual sea had an extremely strong soul force, a black vortex, and also a red and purple dual colored Thunder Soul. As an incomplete being, it was simply oppressed into a miserable state.

“Just wait for this Saint to restore his strength… I’ll swallow you whole then!” The pug rubbed its aching head with one paw and then pointed another paw at Lin Ming as it shook in anger.

Lin Ming remained expressionless, his voice cold, “I advise you not to play any more tricks. We only have several dozen breaths of time left. If those old Life Destruction masters come back during this time period, then I’ll have to answer to them. But, you won’t be in a much better situation yourself. What do you think those old fellows will do once they find the remnant consciousness of ancient creature from the Realm of the Gods here? What do you think they would do to you?”

As Lin Ming spoke, the pug’s complexion became increasingly ugly. “You smelly little boy, are you threatening this Saint?”

“I’m only reminding you to not speak any more nonsense or play any more games, or both of us are finished.”

“Damn! You swallowed this father’s Giant Demon blood!”

Lin Ming sneered, “It wasn’t me that absorbed it but rather the Magic Cube. I thought that since you were some great being that came from the Realm of the Gods, you would know about the existence of the Magic Cube that had absorbed your soul consciousness?”

As Lin Ming suddenly mentioned the Magic Cube, the pug seemed to suddenly remember something horrifying. Its angry expression was instantly replaced with one of terror-stricken panic.

“Magic… Magic Cube… heavens! You… you swallowed the Divine Crystal Magic Cube into your body!?” The pug spoke in a stuttering haze. It hadn’t known why it had been torn apart into seven or eight pieces, but now that he was reminded by Lin Ming, he was suddenly enlightened as to just what happened!

“You… you…” The pug flapped its mouth, unsure of what to say.

Lin Ming was growing impatient. “Are you done yet? Once we take the Cosmic Melting Furnace, we will divide the treasures 40-60. You 40, me 60!”

“Why me 40, you 60?” The pug was extremely unhappy, “Only I know the method to collect the Cosmic Melting Furnace! There has to be at least equal division!”

“Fine, we’ll divide it equally.” Lin Ming immediately agreed. He wasn’t prepared to wrangle over this matter at this time.

As the pug saw Lin Ming agree so readily, he felt that there was something wrong.

However, it was too late for him to think about it. The pug continued to weave an incantation. The Cosmic Melting Furnace that had shrunk to less than 10 feet shrunk even more.

Within several breaths of time, that giant furnace was reduced to less than half a foot in height. It could even be held in one hand.

“This Cosmic Melting Furnace was known as the greatest pill furnace of the Sky Spill Continent, and it is also a top treasure. It does not need to be placed into a spatial ring, but can be directly integrated into the body, where it will become its own space. This Saint only has a soul form so I naturally cannot receive the Cosmic Melting Furnace. Humph, consider this a bargain for now, boy. This will be kept in your body for now, but don’t be so presumptuous as to think you can keep it for yourself!”

“Okay!” Now that Lin Ming was bound together with the pug, he didn’t believe it would start any dirty tricks, so he readily agreed.

The pug waved its paws, and with a whistling sound the Cosmic Melting Furnace flew into Lin Ming's body.

At that moment, Lin Ming only felt a heat within him. As he looked within himself, he found the Cosmic Melting Furnace had appeared within his dantian, where it slowly turned.

As the Cosmic Melting Furnace flew into Lin Ming's body, the pug let out a strange cry, its face immediately filling with regret. "F*ck! This father thought that something was wrong; I really was tricked!"

Chapter 501 – The Great Escape

Chapter 501 – The Great Escape

…

…

…

“No! This father just lost everything! I only have a soul body and I can’t even use anything in the Cosmic Melting Furnace besides the blood of the Giant Demon!” The pug muttered to himself with an extremely unhappy expression.

At this time, Lin Ming couldn’t even be bothered about this. From the time that those old Life Destruction fellows rushed away until now, it had almost been an entire incense stick of time. He had to leave as soon as possible.

However, just running away like this wasn’t good. If others suspected that Lin Ming was the culprit, then even if he managed to successfully run away, he would still bring a great calamity upon Divine Phoenix Island…

Lin Ming quickly reactivated the eight coiling dragon columns of the Eight Dragon Jade Light Array.

After several breaths of time, the eight horned dragons began to emit a sparkling dawn light again, and the Eight Dragon Jade Dawn Array was once again active.

Then, Lin Ming took out a corpse from his spatial ring. This corpse was that of the South Sea Demon Region Revolving Core Elder that he had killed. Afterwards, when Lin Ming had opened the Magic Cube again, it was with the blood essence of this Revolving Core Elder.

Lin Ming took off one of his own spatial rings and slipped it onto the Revolving Core Elder's finger. Then, he stepped back four or five steps and casually tossed the corpse towards the Eight Dragon Jade Light Array.

Chi!

The burning dawn light flashed once, and the corpse was directly struck, instantly turning to ashes!

Thus, besides the two piles of ashes from those old Life Destruction masters, there was a third pile of ash. As for Lin Ming's charred-black spatial ring, that was also mixed within the ashes.

The pug glanced over at Lin Ming with some surprise, "Boy, you're quite the clever one. If you do this then you really might have the good luck to muddle your way away."

As the pug thought of all those old Life Destruction fellows and what a great price they must have paid to come here, and yet the true greatest treasure here was pocketed by this boy while they didn't even know just what had happened and who had done it...

Thinking of this, the pug subconsciously traced its own stubby nose. If he really stayed with this body then one day he might be the one to fall in the ditch...

As the pug was lost in his thoughts, he found that Lin Ming had already moved towards the cave entrance.

"Hey, wait up! Wait for this Saint!" The pug barked out before hurrying along.

According to the memories of the Demon Emperor, on the other side of the Demon Emperor's medicine garden, there was another transmission array not too far away. If he went through this transmission array, he would be able to directly leave the Demon God Imperial Palace.

If Lin Ming was outside, he would be able to cross the distance to the transmission array in just several breaths of time.

But, he had to be much more cautious within the Demon God Imperial Palace.

“Hey, are there any traps or spells here?” Lin Ming asked the pug, abruptly swallowing the word ‘pug’ before it came out.

“This Saint is not called ‘hey’! This Saint’s true body is that of a holy three-headed demon dog! My title was Saint Lord Demonshine! I reached the Saint Lord realm 100,000 years ago and roamed the endless void, crossing everywhere! At that time, your grandfather hadn’t even been born yet!”

As the pug said this, he proudly raised his head, as if he had found a point of pride.

Although this story didn’t seem too reliable, Lin Ming was aware that this pug truly was skilled as he boasted, otherwise he wouldn’t have had the qualifications to be embroiled in the fight for the Magic Cube.

“Saint Lord? What’s that?”

“Just like your Sky Spill Continent has so-called Emperor powerhouses, a Saint Lord is also the title given to powerhouses of a certain boundary. In the past, this father was also a Saint Lord!”

“Didn’t you just say you were a holy three-headed demon dog? How come you only have one head now?” After leaving the Demon Emperor’s medicine garden, Lin Ming was much more relaxed. He had obtained the Cosmic Melting Furnace and Nirvana Dragon Root; he was in an excellent mood.

As he mentioned this, the pug deflated like a sad rubber ball, all of his previous bravado erased. “If it wasn’t for that horrifying woman destroying this Saint’s Large Success diamond form divine body, sucking my divine soul into the Divine Crystal Magic Cube and sealing it away for countless years, then how could I end up like this? This Saint’s mind was once a trinity, but now this Saint's mind is singular and incomplete; how could I possible maintain my original state?"

As the pug spoke, he entire face was flushed red with anger.

"So that's what happened. By the way… were you the Demon Emperor's soul pet?" Lin Ming nonchalantly asked.

"What do you mean 'soul pet', that is such a rude term! This Saint was the Demon Emperor's contract soul beast. Humph, if it wasn't for the Demon Emperor tricking me in the past, then how would this Saint sign a contract with him? If he didn't have this Saint, the Demon Emperor would have already died countless times within the Realm of the Gods!" The pug grunted. But, it had inadvertently revealed that it didn't have an equal relationship with the Demon Emperor in the past. It seemed that they once had a master and servant contract.

"Demonshine, does this path have any danger?"

"Humph, the Demon God Imperial Palace is so big, and this Saint only stopped by here for a very short time, so how would I be so aware of any of this!"

Hearing the pug's capricious words, Lin Ming was speechless. All he could do at this moment was open his perception and sense as far away as possible.

However, unexpectedly the two to three mile distance was very calm. As they made their way, nothing happened. Lin Ming followed the directions in his memory, and finally arrived at a low hanging stone platform. This platform didn't have any dangerous spells on it. After he walked up the platform, it became clear it an ancient transmission array. The transmission array was fully intact and could be started at any time.

As Lin Ming saw this, he was immediately filled with happiness.

Lin Ming only needed several breaths of time to decipher the symbol order to start the ancient transmission array. After he reconfigured the symbols, a hazy white light flashed out. Lin Ming stepped into the heart of the array, and his form quickly faded away…

………

After a quarter hour – Demon Emperor's medicine garden…

Within the empty Demon Emperor's medicine garden, several old men stood by where the Nirvana Dragon Root had once been, their expressions grim.

The ugliest one was Xuan Wuji! In the fight against Abbot Whitebrow and Nanyun Wang a moment ago, he had shown his low-grade heaven-step treasure and had even used countless accumulated aces from the 3000 year long history of the Silent Demon Emperor City. Yet, he had been constantly forced to retreat by Abbot Whitebrow and Nanyun Wang.

It had to be known that the legacy of the Great Zen Temple was only slightly less compared to that of the perished Silent Demon Emperor City. As for Nanyun Wang, although he was a loner, he still had a talent that surpassed the will of the heavens. In terms of individual strength, he was the strongest of the three.

Originally, even if Xuan Wuji lost in the outside world, he would still be able to calmly escape.

But since he was sealed within the Demon God Imperial Palace, he had nowhere he could run. Not just that, but the Demon God Imperial Palace was filled with countless dangers. If he randomly fled in any direction then that would be no different from committing suicide!

Finally, if it wasn't for Xuan Wuji taking out the God Extinguishing Thunder Pearl that the Netherworld Great Emperor had left behind from long ago and also used the combustion of his blood essence as a threat, he really would have been killed by Abbot Whitebrow and Nanyun Wang!

The truth was that even if Xuan Wuji was pushed to the brink of desperation and used every last card in his hand, he would most likely die here. But, it was only that Abbot Whitebrow and Nanyun Wang would also pay a steep price. This caused them to feel a faint fear and also to hold back their hand.

In the end, Xuan Wuji was forced to hand over the main stem of the Nirvana Dragon Root, and all he was left with was two thick root hairs.

And thus, they had come to a truce.

Xuan Wuji felt like his heart was bleeding.

He had always felt as if something was just a bit off. That is, he had spent so much effort to open up the ancient array formation and yet it remained close, so why would it suddenly open on its own?

If someone had told him that one of those array maters had accidently opened it by chance, then that was too far-fetched a story!

Once the transmission array that he had inspected before had suddenly malfunctioned in a key moment, Xuan Wuji had a strong premonition that he had been tricked by someone!

However, Abbot Whitebrow and Nanyun Wang had attacked him without giving him a chance to explain, wanting to take advantage of him during this time period and finish him off; he simply didn't have time to think about this.

But now that he came back to the Demon Emperor's medicine garden, the truth was finally revealed. Xuan Wuji felt like his lungs were about to burst from rage!

Luring the tiger from the cave… with such a simple strategy, he had been forced to give up another Nirvana Dragon Root!

If Xuan Wuji felt that his lungs were about to explode after seeing that the second Nirvana Dragon Root was missing, then after he arrived at the cave and saw that that the Cosmic

Melting Furnace had vanished from the platform even as the Eight Dragon Jade Light Array was still active, he only felt an immense dizziness, almost falling to the ground!

Abbot Whitebrow and Nanyun Wang also paled. They had originally been counting on obtaining the treasures within the Cosmic Melting Furnace, but now they had lost everything. Even the furnace itself had been taken away!

“Who!? Who was the one that did this!?” Xuan Wuji’s eyes were bloodshot as a dark light shined as an ominous light shined in his eyes. “Who was still left over in the Demon Emperor’s medicine garden? Who!?”

Xuan Wuji‘s glare was ruthless as his eyes swept over everyone. Mu Fengxian shrank back, but she didn’t reveal any difference in expression.

However, as Xuan Wuji saw Mu Fengxian, he was also reminded of Lin Ming. He took a hard step forwards and the full aura of a third stage Life Destruction powerhouse swept out, immediately suppressing Mu Fengxian. “Lin Ming! Where did that boy go off to! He didn’t leave the medicine garden!”

“I do not know!”

Mu Fengxian stoically replied. But, her thoughts were actually extremely confused; just where did Lin Ming go? What had happened to him?

Was it possible that others had ransacked the Demon Emperor’s medicine garden and Lin Ming had encountered an accident?

It wasn’t just Mu Fengxian that thought so, Mu Yuhuang’s heart was also filled with an extremely disturbing premonition that made her feel restless and incomparably panicked.

“Xuan Wuji! A thief like you shouldn’t be crying ‘stop thief’!” Nanyun Wang coldly snorted. His eyes shined as he glared at Xuan Wuji, “I do not believe that a little late Houtian baby boy would be able to break the Cosmic Melting Furnace’s killing array and also steal it away. Don’t you think it’s rather ridiculous to push this all onto him!?”

“Nanyun, are you saying you suspect that this old man was the one who took the Cosmic Melting Furnace?”

“Hehe, didn’t you say it yourself? Since you are the only one that has seen the Demon Emperor’s letter, you also know how to up the ancient array formation and also the method to take the Cosmic Melting Furnace! A quarter hour ago, you completely drew all of us out from the Demon Emperor’s medicine garden. If you weren’t the one responsible for stealing away the second Nirvana Dragon Root and the Cosmic Melting Furnace, then just who is!?” Nanyun Wang stepped forwards, his eyes shining.

“Nanyun! You...” Xuan Wuji was angry to the point that he wanted to vomit blood. The second Nirvana Dragon Root had been stolen and even the Cosmic Melting Furnace was missing. He had labored for ten hard years, paying an immeasurably steep price and effort, and finally all he ended up with was two root hairs.

Not just that, but he had been tricked by someone and had taken the blame for everything! If such an unlucky mattered happened, it would cause anyone to seethe with rage!

Chapter 502 – Absorbing the Nirvana Dragon Root

Chapter 502 – Absorbing the Nirvana Dragon Root

…

…

…

Xuan Wuji became increasingly mad as he thought about this adventure within the Demon God Imperial Palace. His South Sea Demon Region had eaten the greatest losses!

"All that is left of my South Sea Demon Region is here and we've all been chased down by you for the last 10 miles. How can we possibly have obtained the Cosmic Melting Furnace and Nirvana Dragon Root?"

"Old thief Xuan, do you think that such a weak excuse is good enough? When we broke through the palace's protective array, the entrance remained open for a very long time. How hard could it have been for you to arrange for a disciple to sneak in and avoid our perception? You first pretended that you couldn't open the array formation, and then you used the Cosmic Melting Furnace to lure me and Abbot Whitebrow to enter the cave. You used this chance to open the ancient array formation and steal away the Nirvana Dragon Root. Then, using the method of luring a tiger, you forced us to follow you and let your good little disciple obtain the second Nirvana Dragon Root and Cosmic Melting Furnace while we were away. At the same time, you could also use the transmission array to escape. This plan was truly far too perfect! Two Nirvana Dragon Roots and also the Cosmic Melting Furnace would all be within your palm! And you would be able to escape unscathed. But what a pity, life is full of twists and turns. The transmission array failed and you became trapped here with us. You missed your last chess move and now you've suffered the consequences!"

As Nanyun Wang confidently spoke his opinion, Xuan Wuji's face turned green.

Xuan Wuji couldn't help but acknowledge that Nanyun Wang's nonsensical guess actually sounded quite reasonable!

If Xuan Wuji were to reverse positions with Nanyun Wang, then he would probably have made this guess too!

Xuan Wuji was depressed the point that he wanted to run into a wall. Through his thousands of years of cultivation, he was always the one that fooled others - since when did he become the one that was tricked?

In truth, he also suspected that Lin Ming didn't have this ability. But just who else could it be? Who could put him in such a miserable state? Or was it some fourth stage Life Destruction, or even fifth stage Life Destruction powerhouse that quietly entered into the Demon God Imperial Palace and took advantage of everyone?

At this point, Abbot Whitebrow suddenly said, "There are more ashes on the ground."

"Mm?"

Everyone glanced over and saw that there were three piles of ashes around the Cosmic Melting Furnace's platform.

Some of the more cautious Elders remembered that there were originally four others that died around the Cosmic Melting Furnace. And two of those piles of ashes had been collected into coffins already. There should only be two more piles of ash left over, but now there was a third. Could it be…

Mu Fengxian suddenly paled and Mu Yuhuang also felt her heart stop, as if someone had tightly gripped it. Her breath caught in her throat, and beads of sweat began to form on her forehead.

Lin Ming… he… he died here?

Abbot Whitebrow hesitated for a moment and then walked over to the ashes. He squatted down, reaching over to touch them and then calmly said, “The ashes are still warm. He probably died less than a quarter of an hour ago, and was probably scorched to death by the Eight Dragon Jade Light Array…”

As Abbot Whitebrow spoke, he fished out a spatial ring from among the ashes and used his divine sense to search within. Because the spatial ring had been charred by the Eight Dragon Jade Light Ray, the miniature unstable dimension within was already beginning to collapse, and was partially destroyed. There were already many things that couldn’t be taken out, but one could still clearly see what was inside.

“Fairy Maiden Mu, come have a look.”

Abbot Whitebrow handed over the ring to Mu Yuhuang.

Mu Yuhuang’s fingers trembled as she received the ring. As she immersed her divine sense within, Mu Yuhuang only felt a faint dizzy spell; she saw the jade slip, one that had the first three levels of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ recorded upon it…

Her grip tightened on the spatial ring. Mu Yuhuang felt a deep weight press down on her heart.

She had placed too many of her hopes and dreams on Lin Ming. She had even planned to betrothe Mu Qianyu to Lin Ming, but now…

“Yuhuang, calm down. Lin Ming might not have died.” Mu Fengxian said to Mu Yuhuang with a true essence sound transmission. Although she was also worried, she didn’t believe that Lin Ming would have died here like this. “The Purple Comet Spear and Great Desolate Blood Halberd are not within the spatial ring…”

“I know, but…” Mu Yuhuang was still unable to calm down. This spatial ring should be one of Lin Ming’s secondary spatial rings. As for the Purple Comet Spear and Great Desolate Blood Halberd, they should be placed within Lin Ming’s main spatial ring. It was possible that Lin Ming’s main spatial ring had been stolen away, or that the Eight Dragon Jade Light

Array had completely burnt it away. Just depending on this single point could not prove that Lin Ming was still alive.

“Xuan Wuji, what words do you have to say for yourself?” Nanyun Wang ominously said as his eyes flashed at Xuan Wuji.

“Humph, you think that this pile of ash is Lin Ming? If Lin Ming really died at the hands of my disciple, then why wouldn’t he just completely destroy the corpse, and instead allow you to discover it?”

“Hehe, perhaps you also thought of this point already and intentionally left it here to cover up for your crimes!”

Xuan Wuji’s mouth twitched and his face distorted as he faced Nanyun Wang’s aggressive accusations.

“Nanyun, it seems you in any case you will not believe me no matter what I say. Perhaps you might want to fight with me in a life or death battle? In a true life or death match, I may not have the luck to survive, but you won’t be any better off. I wonder just how you’ll leave the Demon God Imperial Palace!”

Nanyun Wang sneered, “Humph, once I kill you and obtain the Demon Emperor’s jade slip, I will also know the secret techniques. How hard would it be for me to break through the barriers then?”

“Haha, if I die then I will certainly destroy the Demon Emperor’s jade slip first. How hard would that be!” Xuan Wuji didn’t take a single step back and he was also disinclined to explain his situation. These old men had originally mutually suspected each other, not to mention that neither of them cared to listen to explanations in this sort of situation. If so, then it would better to show a tough side and hold Nanyun Wang’s own life against him in a desperate bid!

And sure enough, when Xuan Wuji said that he would destroy the Demon Emperor’s jade slip, Nanyun Wang’s complexion also paled.

……………

One hundred miles away from the Demon God Imperial Palace on a series of array platforms, a white light flashed. The figure of a young man appeared in the shadow of the light at the center of the platform.

The youth was handsome and his eyes were clear and bright. His aura was distinct and valorous, but also contained a hint of weary fatigue.

This was Lin Ming, who had fled the Demon God Imperial Palace through a transmission array.

"I've finally come out…" Lin Ming took a deep breath and wiped the sweat off his palms.

During this trip to the Demon God Imperial Palace, he hadn't had a single battle. However, it had been much more thrilling and perilous than his battles in the war against the South Sea Demon Region. With the powerhouses of several major forces struggling against each other, Lin Ming's nerves were constantly on edge, without a single moment to relax. Ultimately, he used their own manipulations to pit them against each other and collect spoils; this was an extremely risky and dangerous gamble!

When Lin Ming came out, he didn't even take a moment to rest. He instantly rushed over to the other array platforms, completely changing all of the symbols upon them. He feared that Xuan Wuji also knew the position and method to use other transmission arrays. If he used other transmission arrays to come out, then that would put him in a dire situation!

"Demonshine, how long is the defensive barrier around the Demon God Imperial Palace able to stop that group of old fellows for?"

"Probably four or five days. In addition to the time they need to come out of the Demon God Imperial Palace, perhaps five or six days might be possible."

"Five or six days…" Lin Ming hesitated for a moment. That should be enough time.

“Hey, are you thinking of summoning the Giant Leviathan Saint Beast that is slumbering within this broken world? You should forget about it. If you want to control the Giant Leviathan, you are far from some sufficient even if you have the secret technique to do so. You must also have the soul force and strength to support it, otherwise you wouldn’t even be able to summon it. With this Saint in such a pitiful condition, it is also impossible for me to take the Giant Leviathan.”

Lin Ming shook his head and said, “The Giant Leviathan is useless to me right now. I have to go out and adventure, so how could I possibly bring a Giant Leviathan the size of an island with me travelling? If I gave the Giant Leviathan to Divine Phoenix Island, then it could be used to protect the sect. But since there are already some people suspecting me, if I also steal away the Giant Leviathan and keep it at Divine Phoenix Island, then that would really be pushing Divine Phoenix Island into a storm.”

Lin Ming wasn’t too interested in the Giant Leviathan. If he could, he wanted to use some method to prevent Xuan Wuji from taking it. However, his cultivation was simply too low, and he didn’t have this ability.

“Then what do you plan on doing in the next four or five days?”

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a bright light. He said, “In these next four or five days, I will absorb the Nirvana Dragon Root!”

“You…” The pug was shocked by Lin Ming’s words. “You, a mere late Houtian baby boy want to swallow the Nirvana Dragon Root? You are a madman!”

Lin Ming’s eyebrows arched up in challenge, “What about it? Aren’t there any Body Transformation talents in the Realm of the Gods’ Holy Lands that will absorb a Nirvana Dragon Root at the Houtian realm?”

“Hehe, little boy, let me tell you, within the Realm of the Gods there are very few people that walk down the path of essence and body dual cultivation. They either follow the Essence Gathering system and go down the Revolving Core and Divine Sea realm path, or walk down the Tempering Marrow and Eight Inner Hidden Gates Body Transformation path. Only those highest top tier talents with absolute belief in themselves would engage in essence and body dual cultivation. Although an essence and body dual cultivator will have a major advantage over a martial artist at the same level, they would also have to pay a price and effort dozens of times greater. Simply put, in the grand scheme of things, the gains simply aren't worth the loss!"

The pug spoke with a preaching demeanor.

"So it's like that?" Lin Ming was a tad surprised, and then immediately laughed at himself. He had assumed that all of the martial artists in the Realm of the Gods would have to go through Tempering Marrow, but now it looked as if he had inadvertently chosen a path that only geniuses within the Realm of the Gods would follow.

Realm of the Gods genius…

As Lin Ming thought of this, a strange color crossed over his face. Just what sort of boundary was a Realm of the Gods genius?

The pug seemed to be addicted to his exhortations. He continued to say with a smug expression, "I advise you to take this step by step in an orderly fashion. You shouldn't be too worried about Tempering Marrow for a while. Even those essence and body dual cultivators in the Realm of the Gods would usually wait until the late Xiantian or extreme Xiantian realm to complete Tempering Marrow. It's still too early for you. Also, this Saint urges you to choose a main direction to focus on; either the Body Transformation system or the Essence Gathering system. This Saint believes that the Essence Gathering system is quite good. Body Transformation simply requires too many resources. In the Realm of the Gods, only large sects are able to support it!"

Lin Ming ignored the pug's advice and said, "You don't need to bother yourself with worrying over me. I have to absorb this Nirvana Dragon Root, and I have no other choice but to do so." As Lin Ming thought of Mu Qianyu, he knew he had to urgently increase his strength.

Lin Ming no longer bantered with the pug. He deeply breathed, and then took out the jade box.

Within the jade box, the Nirvana Dragon Root lay with all nine root hairs in pristine condition. The root hairs gripped each other like Horned Dragons, and it was difficult to distinguish between them.

The Nirvana Dragon Root was wrapped in soil thick with origin energy. This soil was the best packaging to preserve the spiritual strength of the Nirvana Dragon Root.

Chapter 503 – Refining the Dragon Root

Chapter 503 – Refining the Dragon Root

…

…

…

“Hey, hey, hey you! Boy, it’s best if you don’t try to show off. Although this Nirvana Dragon Root isn’t considered too potent or violent a medicine, the energy will be too strong for you; it isn’t something that a martial artist at your level will be able to withstand.” The pug gulped as he saw Lin Ming take out the Nirvana Dragon Root, his expression growing a bit more serious.

“I’m confident in myself.” Lin Ming cautiously held the Nirvana Dragon Root in his hand and said, “Demonshine, is there a special method for absorbing the Nirvana Dragon Root?”

The memories that Lin Ming had inherited were incomplete. He couldn’t remember if there was a special method or medicine needed to absorb the Nirvana Dragon Root.

“The Nirvana Dragon Root is naturally best if refined into a pill. But, since this is currently impossible, the way to achieve the maximum possible effect will be to boil clear spring water and seep into the Nirvana Dragon Root, allowing the medicinal efficacy to enter the water. You can enter the water and completely absorb all of the essence into your body. If you do this, it will be much better than directly eating the Nirvana Dragon Root. Not only is the medicinal efficacy more temperate, but it will be absorbed much more easily. Remember not to damage the Nirvana Dragon Root so that the least amount of origin energy leaks out.

There were many rare heavenly materials that contained their own essence energy. Once that object was damaged, the essence energy would escape. For instance, a millennium ginseng would be much more valuable complete than if it were cut into pieces. This was also a reason that when someone dug for medicines, then would spend an entire day and use a small brush to gently wipe the roots of the ginseng a bit at a time, completely preserving each and every root hair.

The Nirvana Dragon Root was countless times more valuable than a millennium ginseng, but in truth they were similar in this regard. At the time that Lin Ming had obtained the Nirvana Dragon Root, it was in a complete state. Naturally, the medicinal efficacy was several times greater than the one that Xuan Wuji had grabbed.

"Clear spring water?" Lin Ming's mind suddenly stirred and he took out a big barrel of water from his spatial ring. This barrel contained spring water that boiled at a temperature several times higher than normal.

When Linn Ming had accepted the general level smelting trial test within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, he had lived in a cave. Within this cave, there were strange crabs that lived there, and also a very peculiar underground river. This underground river flowed with water several times hotter than boiling water. Not just that, but the river water was very heavy like liquid mercury.

The crabmeat and spring water had contained a very rich heaven and earth origin energy, and were very useful in helping build up one's inner true essence. And rarest of all was that it contained a very pure and delicate origin energy. Without any impurities or toxins, it was similar to spiritual foods, but the effect was a hundred of times better than any spiritual food found within the Sky Spill Continent.

Lin Ming naturally couldn't let such a great treasure waste away. When he left the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, he also carried off a great deal of this precious water.

This water barrel was one that he had brought out from there.

“Can I boil it with this water?” Lin Ming glanced over at Demonshine.

As Demonshine saw this barrel of water, he didn’t care at first. But as he felt the rich origin energy emanating from it, he was a bit startled. He peaked over the barrel with both paws on top, staring straight into it, his long dog tongue lolling about.

After several breaths of time, both of Demonshine’s eyes lit up. “This… is probably spring water from the Solar Origin! Boy, you really are a lucky bastard!”

As Demonshine spoke, he wanted to pull up some water with his paws. But since he was only a soul form, his paws passed straight through the water without even the slightest ripple.

Demonshine’s excited face immediately became depressed.

As Lin Ming saw this, he suddenly felt that this fellow was quite pitiful. All he had left over was his soul form.

“What is the Solar Origin?”

“The Solar Origin is a vast and endless lake. It was said that a true Ancient Phoenix was once born from this lake. Water from the Solar Origin is heavy and flaming. It looks a bit like the water in this barrel, but it is heavier and also much hotter.” As Demonshine looked at the water barrel, his expression was a bit strange. “It seems that this isn’t water from the Solar Origin…”

Lin Ming was silent. But even if this wasn’t water from the Solar Origin, it was most likely connected to it. Since it was said that an Ancient Phoenix was born within the Solar Origin, it was probably related to some sort of holy spring from the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

“What sort of effect will there be if I boil the Nirvana Dragon Root in this water?”

Demonshine said, “Naturally, the effect will be much better than if you boiled it in normal water. But, using firewood to heat it up would be a bit poor. Using the fire from a martial artist’s dantian would be the best…”

“Dantian fire… how’s this?” Lin Ming waved his hand, and the Heretical God Flame Essence appeared, fused with the Earthcore Crimson Flame and the Fallen Star Flame.

As Demonshine saw this Heretical God Flame Essene, his beady eyes immediately went perfectly round. “You actually have a medium-grade earth-step Flame Essence?”

In Demonshine’s experience, a medium-grade earth-step Flame Essence wasn’t considered much at all. But, Lin Ming was only at the late Houtian realm. It was extraordinary that Lin Ming would be able to possess a medium-grade earth-step Flame Essence, especially considering that Lin Ming was a martial artist from the mortal realm.

“A medium-grade earth-step Flame Essence might be enough to steam the Nirvana Dragon Root.” Demonshine thoughtfully said as he lightly scratched his doggy chin.

Now that there was water and a Flame Essence to steam the Nirvana Dragon Root, all that was missing was the container.

Using a container from the mortal world was naturally not good, since most anything would be instantly destroyed once it came into contact with the Flame Essence. Lin Ming had a sudden insight, and quickly took out the Cosmic Melting Furnace from his dantian.

The half-foot Cosmic Melting Furnace turned into a golden stream of light as it flew out of Lin Ming’s dantian. With a gust of wind, the furnace quickly grew to 10 to 20 feet in just a few breaths of time.

“With this?”

“Hehe, boy, you are actually quite smart! This Cosmic Melting Furnace is naturally the best tool to steam the Nirvana Dragon Root. If you use this, not only can you condense the total heating time to less than four hours, but you will also be able to maintain the highest degree of the Nirvana Dragon Root's medicinal efficacy."

"What is the method to open the furnace?" As Lin Ming looked at the Cosmic Melting Furnace, he was a bit helpless and frustrated. There were many treasures sealed within the Cosmic Melting Furnance, but he still wasn't able to open it.

As Demonshine heard Lin Ming say this, his excited faced brightened with a victorious smile, "The method to open the furnace... naturally, this Saint knows of it. I can also tell you, but... hehe, there is a condition, and that is that you must first completely unseal this Saint's consciousness from your spiritual sea."

Hearing Demonshine's condition, Lin Ming frowned. He thought about this for a moment, and then nodded and said, "I can!"

"Eh?" Demonshine froze for a moment. He didn't think that Lin Ming would agree so easily. The reason that he had put forth this condition was because he had intended to bargain with Lin Ming.

"But, I have a condition too. That is that I will only completely unseal your consciousness after I successfully complete Tempering Marrow. If there is any mistake in the process that causes me to fall short, then I will not be able to fulfill my end of the agreement." Lin Ming wouldn't relax his guard against the pug just because their relationship had warmed a bit. He wouldn't even know if there were problems with this method that Demonshine taught him to absorb the Nirvana Dragon Root.

Also, after reaching Large Success of Tempering Marrow, Lin Ming would no longer need to fear the incomplete Demonshine. Even if he allowed the pug to restore his consciousness, it wouldn't be too big a deal.

"You little boy, your suspicious nature is too great! Good! This Saint promises you!" Demonshine rolled his eyes and then agreed to Lin Ming's conditions; there was no need for Lin Ming to lie to him.

And then, Demonshine taught Lin Ming the method to open the Cosmic Melting Furnace from start to finish.

Lin Ming silently recorded all of this in his heart. He suddenly thought of something and asked, “If I steam the Nirvana Dragon Root within the Cosmic Melting Furnace, will the treasures sealed within the furnace be affected by the heat of the flames?”

Demonshine smiled at Lin Ming’s question, “Boy, are you stupid? You think that with just your meager ability that you will be able to destroy the treasures within the Cosmic Melting Furnace? The reason that this Cosmic Melting Furnace has the word ‘Cosmic’ in its name is that there are several individual sealed spaces within. At your current level, the most you’ll be able to do with the method I taught you is just barely open the lid. And that is only the very first layer of sealed space within. If you wish to open up further spaces sealed deeper down, then it is simply impossible!”

The Cosmic Melting Furnace was once known as the Sky Spill Continent’s number one Divine Furnace. With Lin Ming’s current strength, he naturally wouldn’t be able to control it.

“I understand.”

As Lin Ming spoke, he slowly weaved his hands together, creating seals. The Cosmic Melting Furnace flew upwards. Revolving his true essence, Lin Ming pointed forwards and the lid suddenly shook.

A moment later, the Cosmic Melting Furnace completely opened. The water from the Solar Origin as well as the Nirvana Dragon Root was completely sucked into the Cosmic Melting Furnace.

As Lin Ming saw this, he smiled. He flicked his finger and the deep red Fallen Star Flame dropped in.

At this time, a surprising scene took place. As the Fallen Star Flame fell into the Cosmic Melting Furnace, it completely disappeared within, vanishing without a trace. It wasn’t as

Lin Ming had imagined - that the Fallen Star Flame would surround the Cosmic Melting Furnace and heat it up in an inferno of flames.

Lin Ming gave a little ‘eh’ of surprise.

Demonshine said, “Don’t be too surprised. The flame was only absorbed into the furnace’s dimensions. It will heat up the space that corresponds to the materials. You only need to continuously supply flames to it. “

“So that’s how it is. “ Lin Ming was greatly impressed. This pill furnace actually had multiple dimensions within it. It was hard to imagine what sort of existence was able to craft this treasure, and just what their cultivation would be.

Demonshine was extremely satisfied with Lin Ming’s surprised expression. He proudly said, “This Cosmic Melting Furnace can be considered a good treasure even within the Realm of the Gods.”

The Fallen Star Flame burned with a brilliant light. Within the first layer dimensional world, the Solar Origin water formed a giant sphere with the Nirvana Dragon Root wrapped in the center. Flames filled the skies.

As the fires burned, the Solar Origin water slowly began to turn an amber hue. The amber color became increasingly rich, until the sphere of water became a deep golden red, just like molten gold.

Four hours later, the flame suddenly vanished and the lid flew up. A golden ball of water came soaring out, shining with a dazzlingly bright light underneath the sunlight.

A strong fragrance wafted out from the golden water, attracting anyone near it and warming the heart. As one took a deep breath of this scent, it was extremely refreshing, and all of one’s pores seemed to open in complete relaxation. It was impossible to not let out a whimper of joy.

‘This golden spring water that has boiled the Nirvana Dragon Root contains a countless amount of essence energy. Just the scent itself contains true essence rich enough to condense into form. If one were to practice in this environment, meditating and breathing this in, then their cultivation speed would be monstrously fast. This Nirvana Dragon Root that has grown for tens of thousands of years is truly amazing.’

As Lin Ming thought this, he no longer hesitated. He took off all his clothes and directly soared into the golden sphere of liquid floating in air.

Chapter 504 – Tempering Marrow Large Success

Chapter 504 – Tempering Marrow Large Success

…

…

…

Because it had been doused in scorching flames, the golden liquid was already at an extremely high temperature. After Lin Ming entered, he felt as if he had jumped into a stove and all of his skin was being roasted. However, because he had refined flames within his body for a long time, and also because of his previous experiences with searing flames, such an experience was nothing at all to him.

The fragrance of the golden liquid flooded his senses like a finely aged wine. The liquid was exquisitely sweet; a single gulp was like a stream of heat that flowed down his mouth and throat, warming his stomach, spreading to his limbs and filling him with a brilliantly radiant energy. All of the muscles of his body stretched out and he emitted loud popping sounds.

All of Lin Ming's pores dilated, and pure energy flooded through them. As the heat flowed in, he felt a pin-like pain through his pores. However, this aching pain through his body actually made Lin Ming excited instead.

This medicinal juice brewed with a Nirvana Dragon Root that was tens of thousands of years old held an incomparably pure energy. The energy filtered through Lin Ming's bones, entering into his marrow where it constantly accumulated.

Chi chi chi!

As the pure energy entered his marrow, it was a painful experience. But at this time, Lin Ming only felt comfortable all over, and his mind was in a bright and clear state. There wasn’t even a hint of the pain that he had experienced when he used the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal for Tempering Marrow.

Within the golden juice, Lin Ming stretched out, relaxing all his limbs. He took great gulps of the golden fluid, swallowing as much as he could.

After this golden fluid had filled all of Lin Ming’s meridians, it began to discharge from his pores. The energy continued to accumulate. Although there was a dull ache, it was extremely wonderful, as if he were flying to the heavens and becoming an immortal.

However, this peaceful feeling didn’t last too long. As Lin Ming used the law formula of the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ to control the energy for tempering, he felt the aching pain grow increasingly strong and vibrant. Lin Ming felt like his body was becoming a balloon that was filled to the brim with energy, about to pop open at any moment.

The raging energy crashed through his meridians. Even though Lin Ming’s body had been toughened already by Tempering Marrow, he still almost couldn’t withstand it.

“Boy, hurry up and seal your pores. Concentrate the excess energy into your spear and release it through your moves. It will help you complete Tempering Marrow.”

As Lin Ming approached the point where he couldn’t control the energy, he heard Demonshine’s voice resound in his ears.

Lin Ming’s thoughts suddenly cleared, and he flicked his right hand. The Purple Comet Spear appeared and he displayed the moves of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’. As the Purple Comet Spear thrust through the golden juice, every swing was met with great resistance. With every spear move, Lin Ming’s bones issues out sounds like crackling thunder. Strips of his yellow bone marrow became bright red, and from that bright red they began to shift to a golden hue.

More and more golden strips appeared, until all of his marrow became a deep shining gold.

As every spear move struck out, the rich golden juice was cut apart by the Purple Comet Spear. His true essence shot out like a sharpened blade.

Lin Ming didn't know how many spear moves he had made, or how many hours he had done so. He only felt his blood boiling and his true essence endlessly growing. Even with all this effort, he didn't feel a bit tired.

The energy that filled his body was contained within by his sealed pores. As his spear moves used up the excess energy and he absorbed the rest, his pores opened once again, wantonly absorbing energy from the golden juice. As time passed, the golden juice became increasingly pale, and over half of it had already disappeared.

At this moment, Lin Ming felt a sharp pain his back, as if someone were taking a fiery needle and piercing his spine!

In that moment, the pain was enough to cause Lin Ming to break into a cold sweat. But he wasn't surprised. Pain in his spine meant one thing – that energy had entered into his spinal cord!

The spinal cord and bone marrow were different. The spinal cord was a center of nerves. It was extremely fragile and fragmented. If the spinal cord could not be tempered, then the spine would become the weakness of the body, simply unable to bear the immense pressure.

Tempering the spine was the final step of Tempering Marrow. And, it was also the most difficult. There were even some disciples of the Realm of the Gods that could not afford the precious and rare raw materials and medicine required, and became unable to completely and thoroughly temper their spine. This caused their foundation to be shaky, and this weakness of their body carried through.

But the material that Lin Ming had used to make the medicine was a Nirvana Dragon Root that had lived for tens of thousands of years. Naturally, he wouldn't have this problem.

Lin Ming didn't know how many times he had displayed the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'. He continued until the sphere of liquid became completely clear, and all of the golden juice had been absorbed.

But, at the moment that the golden juice was completely absorbed, the scattered true essence in Lin Ming's dantian began to spontaneously condense into a twisting vortex, slowly spinning around.

The originally chaotic state suddenly became organized.

Xiantian realm!

The sign of the Pulse Condensation was true essence meridian penetration, the sign of the Houtian realm was true essence accumulating in the dantian, and the sign for the Xiantian realm was true essence forming an organized system within the dantian.

Lin Ming's true essence system was… a vortex.

Lin Ming's eyes flashed open, his eyes twinkling with arcs of thunder.

Hua!

The ball of water that had been bound together by true essence completely collapsed on itself. A massive amount of water splashed onto the ground, and Lin Ming fell stark naked onto the floor. At this moment, he was in extremely high spirits.

In a single leap, his cultivation had broken through to the Xiantian realm, and he had also completed 100% of Tempering Marrow!

After Tempering Marrow reached 100%, it could be said that Lin Ming had been reborn. His skin was more delicate, and his fine muscles were toned and symmetrical. Lin Ming was now an absurdly handsome young man, his body containing both auras of strength and a soft beauty. It was as if he were an exquisite masterpiece that had been sculpted by hand.

Lin Ming's appearance also became more mature. His original sharp aura converged together. If one didn't pay careful attention, it would be difficult to sense this.

This current Lin Ming gave a feeling like a gentle breeze; it had a hint of returning to his original state.

"Xiantian?" The pug said as it lifted his doggy head up and down with great exaggeration. He sized up Lin Ming and said, "You really are a lucky bastard that stepped into dog shit with heaven defying luck. You stepped into the Xiantian realm and you probably aren't even 18 years old yet."

'Lucky bastard that stepped into dog shit with heaven defying luck?' As Lin Ming heard the pug speak, he didn't know whether to laugh or cry. Hearing a dog say dog shit was always quite strange.

"If you depend on medicines to break through to the Xiantian realm, your foundation will not be steady. You must take time to consolidate it."

When cultivating through the Essence Gathering system, one had to pay extremely careful attention to each step and proceed in an orderly fashion. Fortunately, this Nirvana Dragon Root that had grown for tens of thousands of years had very few impurities. Refining it into his system wasn't too difficult.

Xiantian realm, and 100% Tempering Marrow!

Lin Ming unconsciously gripped his fists together, his knuckles cracking. The sound was like mini thunderclaps.

As he punched out, the wind whistled. At this time, he felt that his body was filled with power, and he could tear apart a Xiantian realm Thunder Lizard with his bear hands. The blood throughout his body had already become as pure and thick as golden mercury.

Lin Ming took out a low-grade earth-step treasure sword from his spatial ring. He gripped its hilt in one hand and grasped the blade edge with the other. As he held the sword in both hands, he suddenly twisted his arms!

With an echoing ‘kacha’, the low-grade earth-step treasure sword was folded in half by the pure brute strength of Lin Ming’s body!

“After I reached 100% of Tempering Marrow, my strength might have reached 200,000 jins!”

When Lin Ming had first obtained the memories of that Realm of the Gods Supreme Elder, he knew that Body Transformation powerhouses in the Realm of the Gods had a body strength as high as hundreds of thousands of jins, to even a million jins and more. Lin Ming had thought that this was simply inconceivable. But now, without knowing it, he had achieved that incredible strength!

“Demonshine, how long did my Tempering Marrow take?”

“Mm… probably a bit more than 40 hours.” The pug said after some thought.

“Over 40 hours… that’s two days… two days, that’s already a bit early for those Life Destruction powerhouses to have left the Demon God Imperial Palace. I’ll have plenty of time to finish what I have to do!”

When Lin Ming had taken the Cosmic Melting Furnace, he realized that he could not stay within the South Horizon Region. The only way to do so was to conceal his identity, and live in seclusion in far off mountains while remaining completely anonymous. Since he didn’t have the strength to resist a third stage Life Destruction martial artist, he would never be able to go out, otherwise he would draw a calamity unto himself.

And, it wouldn’t be just him, but Divine Phoenix Island would also be caught up in his troubles.

However, if he stayed in seclusion to cultivate and didn't go out to journey and adventure, the chances of him breaking through to the next stage were simply too low. Thus, Lin Ming could only choose to temporarily leave the South Horizon Region, and go to far off lands.

But before he left, there were some matters that he had to finish...

……

……

……

The dark crimson wilderness was vast and endless. The bare and desolate ground was covered with gray stone monuments, and the stone tablets were covered in shining crimson charms. They were no different from graves that had been destroyed.

Between the stone monuments, there were countless bones that were buried deep in the ground. Whether they were humans or beasts, they were all left underneath this limitless bloody sky. They had been buried here alone for tens of thousands of years, and they would continue to be alone through the passage of time.

This land was a cemetery...

But at this time, atop this barren cemetery, there was a slight and delicate figure. This figure stood alone in the cold wind, wrapped in dreary solitude.

A red dress, a perfectly beautiful appearance... this figure was completely out of place within this dark world.

This woman was Mu Qianyu. At this time, her complexion was filled with an utter sadness...

It had already been six days...

Mu Qianyu looked out at the hazy sky in a dazed and confused state. These past days, thick clouds had gathered in the bloody wilderness. The clouds were red to the point that they seemed to drip blood; it was extremely suffocating.

Mu Qianyu stared at the gloomy skies, her figure motionless for a long time. She was just like a beautiful sculpture that existed in the wild.

Wait for me there...

These words echoed within Mu Qianyu’s mind. It was as if she had lost her very soul. In her entire life, she had never felt like this before.

Emptiness...

Sorrow...

Grief...

Loneliness...

Helplessness...

The dark clouds in the sky grew increasingly thick and heavy. Finally, a quarter of an hour later, a crimson bolt of lightning lanced through the heavens, and a torrential downpour of rain came crashing down in an overwhelming deluge.

Large drops of water hit her body. And, there was actually some pain...

Rain... this world also had rain?

Mu Qianyu was lost in her thoughts, her eyes in a trance.

This storm of rain was terrifying. The rainwater was incomparably salty, and the thick curtain of rain suppressed vision to only several dozen feet. It was like the skies had split asunder, and the entire South Sea’s water had flooded into this world.

The entire bloody wilderness was enveloped in this endless shower of rain.

Mu Qianyu remained still, despite the water flowing down her body. No matter what happened, she seemed unaware. At this moment, her thoughts of Lin Ming were at the point that they almost became tangible.

Chapter 505 – In the Rain

Chapter 505 – In the Rain

…

…

…

This cold and salty rain was from the waters of the South Sea. It was sucked into this broken world by the space storms and then turned into countless sprays of mist. After it condensed in the skies, it formed dark and thick clouds. These clouds had already gathered for over 10 days, and they were waiting to spill over. Now, they blotted out the sky as they formed curtains of overwhelming rain, hard enough that it was even difficult to open one's eyes.

In just several breaths of time, the water was already deep enough to reach the ankles. As the rain scattered throughout the bloody wilderness, it fell onto the stone tablets, washing over them and causing the crimson symbols to glow even brighter.

Mu Qianyu's entire body was soaked. In this cold and unforgiving shower of rain, her bright and clean dress was now stained with dirt.

She didn't know how long she had stayed in this position. For the last six days, she hadn't slept, eaten a grain of rice, or drank a drop of water.

In that moment when she had been enveloped in the white light of the Escape Symbol, his facial features lingered in her mind, haunting her.

She had never missed someone with such an insane intensity. If it was possible, she was willing to give up all of her cultivation in to see him again.

However, the slim hope she held in her heart became increasingly endangered. It had been so long… if he was fine, then why hadn't he come to the bloody wilderness to find her?

Only now when she had lost something dear to her did she feel this unforgettable pain.

Mu Qianyu had lost her parents as a child. Growing up, she had followed her master. Besides her master, Mu Yuhuang, Lin Ming had undoubtedly occupied the most important position in her heart.

Maybe… this was what people called love.

Mu Qianyu reflected on herself. If she could just live a plain and ordinary life with Lin Ming, then even as a mortal it would be a warm and happy life…

The rain fell in this vast world until it overflowed to the knees. Then, Mu Qianyu suddenly heard the faint sound of water parting behind her, as if someone were wading through.

Mu Qianyu suddenly woke from her stupor. She turned back in shock to see, in that endless curtain of rain, a blurry figure stepping over the water towards her.

Mu Qianyu's breath caught in her throat. In the misty weather and with the laws of this world that suppressed perception, it was impossible to tell just who this other person was. But even so, as Mu Qianyu saw this figure, her body stiffened and tears began to roll down from her eyes.

She did not need to guess, she did not need her eyes to see, nor did she need her perception to sense this figure. A deep and throbbing feeling in her heart was all that Mu Qianyu needed to recognize this person. This faint figure, was exactly the person that she had been dreaming of for the last six days…

"Lin Ming!"

Mu Qianyu forgot everything. In that moment, she was no longer the lofty and proud Saintess, nor was she an extreme Xiantian master. At this moment, she was just a girl. A simple girl who was affected by thoughts towards her lover.

In this pouring rain, she desperately rushed into Lin Ming's embrace.

Her white arms were like white lotus roots that clung to Lin Ming's back, as if she wanted to melt into him…

"I'm back."

Lin Ming bent over and softly spoke in Mu Qianyu's ear.

"I know… I know…" Mu Qianyu buried herself in Lin Ming's chest, unable to stop the tears from falling.

In this incomparably icy torrent of rain, Lin Ming could clearly feel warmth in his chest.

As the pair tightly hugged each other, in this world - besides the heavy rain - there was not a single sound. It was as if this curtain of rain isolated everything from the world, and all that was left were their hearts, closely nestled together.

After an unknown period of time, the two of them began to slowly separate. At that moment, a loud 'kacha' split the air, and a crimson bolt of lightning cut through the skies, as if a god in the heavens was casting down spells.

This lightning was completely reflected in Lin Ming's eyes. In the bright flash of light, one could see a deep and thick murderous intent flowing forth.

At this moment, Mu Qianyu's heart stirred as she saw Lin Ming's eyes. She never knew that the world was so dark before. Lin Ming's eyes were as bright as the stars; they were dazzling enough to illuminate this world.

Lin Ming closed his eyes, and then opened them once more. As the lightning dissipated, his murderous intent also receded back into his body. He said in an extremely calm tone, “Let’s go. Come with me… to kill.”

These simple words contained a dominating confidence and arrogance as if he was able to hold life and death in his hands. They caused Mu Qianyu’s heart to stir.

She discovered that in these last six days, Lin Ming’s cultivation had actually broken through to the Xiantian realm!

Not just that, but Lin Ming’s body seemed to emanate a mysterious and powerful aura. Even though she couldn’t recognize just what it meant, it was enough to make her heartbeat quicken!

“Lin Ming, you…”

“I went to the Demon God Imperial Palace and obtained the Nirvana Dragon Root.” Lin Ming didn’t plan on hiding anything from Mu Qianyu. He couldn’t, wouldn’t, nor was there any need to.

“What!?” Mu Qianyu was shocked. The Nirvana Dragon Root? Heavens! Wasn’t that a miracle medicine that those Life Destruction Supreme Elders were competing over? How could it possibly have ended up in Lin Ming’s hands?

“It’s a long story. I can’t really explain it, but this is for you…” Lin Ming took out a rectangular jade box from his spatial ring. After opening the jade box, one could see a dry root within, as if it were an exquisite wild ginseng that had been dried.

“This is…” Mu Qianyu found this unbelievable. This root was exactly like the Nirvana Dragon Root listed out in the ancient manual that the Revolving Core master from the South Sea Demon Region had. It was very similar to the drawing, except that it was much drier and more withered-looking.

Lin Ming said, “This is the Nirvana Dragon Root. I boiled it to make medicine, and 80 to 90% of the medicinal efficacy is gone. What’s left over is 10 to 20%, but it is still far superior to those broken root hairs from the Nirvana Dragon Root!”

The main stem of the Nirvana Dragon Root accounted for 70% of its essence energy. As for the nine root hairs, that was only 30%. The Nirvana Dragon Root inherently contained a very rich and pure essence energy. Once it was broken or damaged, a massive amount of this essence energy would dissipate. A root hair was originally only a tiny portion of the Nirvana Dragon Root. If it were also broken off and the essence energy dissipated, then it truth there wasn’t much left. At least, it would be far, far inferior to this complete withered Nirvana Dragon Root that Lin Ming had boiled once to make medicine.

“If Master Ancestor Fengxian wishes to break through into the second stage of Life Destruction, she can boil this Nirvana Dragon Root to make medicine, or she can even directly consume it.” Lin Ming pressed the Nirvana Dragon Root into Mu Qianyu’s hand. This Nirvana Dragon Root was meant for Mu Fengxian. And when Mu Qianyu finally came to a point that she too needed to use a Nirvana Dragon Root, Lin Ming has absolute confidence that he could be to refine a far superior Tempering Marrow medicine for Mu Qianyu.

Lin Ming pulled Mu Qianyu’s hand into his, “Come with me. Let us bring an end to all of this!”

………….

At this time, 100 miles away, at the ruins of the inner court disciple housing of the Demon God Imperial Palace…

The torrential downpour had already begun to slowly stop. Although the clouds hadn’t cleared yet, faint rays of light now shined through.

Above the illusionary killing array platform, Lei Jingtian saw that it was completely empty, and his face filled with a terribly grim expression!

With Lei Jingtian's initial late Revolving Core strength, even if he combined forces with Mu Chihuo, Mu Yanzhuo, and everyone else here, they still wouldn't compare to half of a Life Destruction Supreme Elder.

Originally, the 30 some Life Destruction old masters had gathered together at the Demon God Imperial Palace. They had spent a great deal of strength, and even with Xuan Wuji's secret technique they were barely able to break through the defensive barrier of the palace.

Although the array formation of this temple was far weaker than the array formation of the palace, it still couldn't be broken so easily.

Lei Jingtian had joined forces with Mu Chihuo an Mu Yanzhuo, and had continuously attacked this array for the last six days. Still, they had failed to break through this illusionary killing array every time.

But now, the heavy rain had turned the tables in their favor.

The power of thunder from this rainstorm was actually not suppressed by the laws of this world. Lei Jingtian had used his own ability to control thunder, and with another array formation, he was able to make enough preparations to direct the heavenly thunder to strike down at the illusionary killing array, becoming the final strike needed to shatter it.

But when the illusionary killing array had been broken, Lei Jingtian and Mu Chihuo saw that it was completely empty; there was not even a single shadow left over!

Mu Qingyi let out a long breath of relief as she saw this. Lin Ming had finally managed to escape. It was good. Otherwise, she would have spent the rest of her life blaming herself, unable to repent for her sins.

"That bastard!" Lei Jingtian wanted to vomit blood. As for Mu Yanzhuo and Mu Qingshu, they felt as if they were about to faint. They were unsteady on their feet as they almost fell over. Even the usually placid Mu Chihuo found himself unable to maintain his calm, his heart racing in panic.

All of his plans were based upon the precedent that he would be able to smoothly kill Lin Ming. If he couldn't kill Lin Ming and obtain his Divine Phoenix bloodline, then within half a year, the bloodstain contract would cause him to lose all of his martial arts cultivation, and he would become a cripple!

At that time, what point was there in obtaining the first eight layers of the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' or becoming the Island Master of Divine Phoenix Island. There was simply no meaning to any of that!

"Brother Chihuo… what… what should we do?" Mu Yanzhuo's voice trembled. This was not a laughing matter. It was possible that Mu Fengxian would soon emerge from the Demon God Imperial Palace. If they were unable to kill Lin Ming before that old woman came back, then they would absolutely lose everything they had!

Although he had already prepared for the worst before he made this desperate gamble, now that he finally arrived at this step, he was unable to accept the reality of the situation.

"Stop panicking!" Mu Chihuo coldly said. However, there was a cold sweat dripping down his forehead. "Calm down. As long as we can find him within the next few days, it's not too late…"

Mu Chihuo grit his teeth as he spoke. As he turned around he saw Mu Qingyi's sneering face, and a fire suddenly blazed in his heart.

"You dead old woman!"

Ca!

Mu Chihuo's sword violently thrust forwards. The blade was like a striking snake, stabbing towards Mu Qingyi's throat.

As Mu Qingyi saw this, she coldly snorted and remained unmoved. She didn't even blink her eyes, only waiting for this sword to pierce her.

From the beginning, Mu Qingyi had never been afraid of death.

“You damn old woman, you really want to die? It won’t be that easy!” Mu Chihuo’s sword stopped only an inch away from Mu Qingyi’s throat.

At this time, killing Mu Qingyi was useless. First, he had to find Lin Ming.

Mu Chihuo’s expression changed countless times. Finally, a plan formed in his heart, and he cruelly smiled.

If he couldn’t find Lin Ming, then he would use whatever ways possible to force him to come out.

Chapter 506 – Your Thunder Soul Isn't Too Bad

Chapter 506 – Your Thunder Soul Isn't Too Bad

…

…

…

Of course, if he wanted to force Lin Ming to come out, the only way that it would happens was if Lin Ming was idiotic enough to do so. Mu Chihuo wasn't absolutely sure that it would work, but at this time he refused to give up, and he also didn't have any other way.

"Mu Qingyi, hurry up and tell me what Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu's sound transmission mark is!" Mu Chihuo waved his sword across Mu Qingyi's neck, cutting a thin red line of blood.

Mu Qingyi sneered, ignoring him.

"If you don't want to care for face… Mu Qingyi, it seems that you have a short memory. You're right, if we can't find Lin Ming then we'll die. But, before we do so, there are still many matters that we can finish. For instance…"

As Mu Chihuo spoke, his eyes turned towards Mu Bingyun and flashed with cruelty, "Qingshu, haven't you been frustrated lately? If you want, then… hehe…"

"Mu Chihuo!" Mu Qingyi's heart raged with anger and she grinded her teeth together. "You are less than an animal! If anyone dares to touch a single hair on Bingyun then I will burn my complete blood essence and sanity and die with them!"

Mu Qingyi's eyes were bloodshot. As an early Revolving Core martial artist, if she used her life as the price and completely burned away her blood essence, then she would be able to gain strength to fight a middle Revolving Core martial artist.

If she also ate a Scarlet Blood Pill during this time period, she would be even more formidable. Even someone like Mu Chihuo would have trouble dealing with her.

"OId woman, if you know what's good for you then hurry up and speak!" Lei Jingtian took a step forwards, his suppressing aura falling over Mu Qingyi.

Even if Mu Qingyi burnt all of her blood essence, Lei Jingtian didn't fear her even a bit. All that Lei Jingtian thought about was the ancient Devil Tome in Lin Ming's spatial ring, as well as the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder and whatever other secrets he might have.

Mu Qingyi's face flashed with a complex emotion. Finally, she told him Mu Qianyu's sound transmission mark information. As for Lin Ming, she wasn't on familiar terms with him, so she didn't know. But Zhang Zhen actually knew, as he one of Lin Ming's good friends.

"Zhang Zhen… Lin Ming's sound transmission mark… please give it." Mu Qingyi's eyes were filled with a deep guilt.

Zhang Zhen bit his teeth. At this time it wasn't just Mu Bingyun in danger, but also his grandfather, the Seventh Elder, was in the enemies' hands. He simply had no other choice. His lips moved, and Zhang Zhen gave away Lin Ming's sound transmission mark information.

The truth was that he had already expected what Mu Chihuo was about to do. He could only hope that Lin Ming would not be swayed by things like this.

"Humph, you stupid boy, if you knew it then you should have spoken earlier." Because Mu Qingshu couldn't find Lin Ming, he was fuming with anger. He punched Zhang Zhen in the stomach, and Zhang Zhen folded onto the floor.

“Qingshu, don’t cause needless complications. Finding Lin Ming is the most important matter.” Mu Chihuo took out two sound transmitting talismans. In this broken world, sound transmitting talismans were suppressed by the laws of this world. They could also be blocked by enchantments, array formations, and all sorts of other barriers. Mu Chihuo pegged his hopes on the possibility that Lin Ming wasn’t too far from them, and that there also wasn’t a barrier blocking the sound transmitting talisman.

Mu Chihuo flicked his fingers and the two sound transmitting talismans burned. “Lin Ming, Mu Qianyu, I know that you two are together. Listen to me now. Mu Qianyu, I have your little sister as hostage. If you don’t want her to be violated, then show up together with Lin Ming within 10 hours. If you don’t, I will let others ravage Mu Bingyun. Not just that, but for every hour that you don’t appear, I will kill one person!”

As Mu Chihuo spoke, even he felt that his threat towards Lin Ming was a bit weak. But, at this time he could only hope that Lin Ming was an idiot that came forwards to die of his own volition.

“Qingshu, start the time!”

Whether or not Lin Ming came out, Mu Chihuo would do as he said. He already had no scruples or honor, and if he didn’t kill Lin Ming, then he would be the one to die.

Mu Qingshu took out a foot high hourglass from his spatial ring and placed it atop the platform. The grains of sand within the hourglass slowly drifted downwards.

As time slowly passed, the sand at the top of the hourglass drained away. Then, Mu Qingshu turned the hourglass. This hourglass was enough to measure one hour.

As Mu Qingshu turned over the hourglass, he looked over at Mu Bingyun, his eyes flashing with a hideously lascivious light. At this stage, Mu Qingshu had already gone completely insane; he no longer cared about any consequences.

As the sand ran out, he turned over the hourglass again. Like this, two hours had passed.

Mu Qingyi's heart was in chaos. Zhang Zhen also felt like an ant in a hot pot. But as for Mu Bingyun, she was expressionless as she sat down in meditation, saving her strength for the final battle.

Mu Bingyun was well aware that whether Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu came back or not, fighting was inevitable. At that time, how many people would survive was unknown.

If Lei Jingtian really wished to be ruthless, the lower level martial artists wouldn't even have the qualifications to escape. Even if everyone split up in separate directions and ran, all Lei Jingtian would have to do was send down a massive net of Disenchanting Dream Light, and every martial artist below the Revolving Core realm would instantly fall unconscious.

As the hourglass turned for the third time, the Divine Phoenix Island disciples grew increasingly nervous. In the face of a battle at death's door, very few were able to remain calm like Mu Bingyun.

When the third hourglass was halfway finished, at the end of the temple ruins, the figure of a man and a woman suddenly appeared…

As Mu Chihuo saw this, he shot up. He couldn't believe his eyes; they really came?

Lei Jingtian was also shocked. His eyes swept past the two figures, and he immediately laughed. They were too stupid, he had never seen someone so stupid before! They had wasted so much energy and strained themselves to escape, but had actually returned to die just because they cared for others. They really were idiots of a completely different caliber.

But as for those from Divine Phoenix Island, as Mu Qingyi and Lin Ming saw Mu Qianyu appear, she was filled with guilt and regret. She already decided that as soon as the battle began, she would completely combust her blood essence and also swallow the Scarlet Blood Pill as penance for her sins.

Mu Bingyun traced the spatial ring on her left hand. Her mind was already connected to the Blue Luan Sword; she was only waiting for the battle to begin.

“Haha! You are such an idiot!” Mu Qingshu savagely laughed, “You really came to die!”

If Lin Ming came, then they had a chance to live. Even if they couldn’t obtain the first eight layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’, they would profit as long as they obtained his Divine Phoenix bloodline.

After Lin Ming arrived 300 feet away, he stood firm and held the Great Desolate Blood Halberd in his hands. He was expressionless as he kept the halberd blade pointed at the floor.

Beside Lin Ming, Mu Qianyu had taken out the Vermillion Bird Sword. A cool wind blew through her hair, making it dance in the air.

“Hahahahaha!” Lei Jingtian held the Thunder Light Sword in his hand and stepped forwards, “Lin Ming, although they say you are a genius, I only think you are a fool. You clearly knew that coming here meant death, but you still stepped into this trap. Since you’re such an idiot, let this old man help you along.”

Lei Jingtian’s arms shook, and purple electric light appeared atop his hands. This was the Disenchanting Dream Light.

As Lin Ming looked at Lei Jingtian’s Thunder Soul, he grinned.

“Mm? Why are you smiling?”

“I’m smiling because… I’m thinking your Thunder Soul isn’t too bad.”

“I do not need you to evaluate my Thunder Soul!” Lei Jingtian heard the implicit meaning behind Lin Ming’s words. He only felt extremely uncomfortable at Lin Ming’s confident appearance. This bastard, what sort of cards could he possibly be hiding?

Mm?

At this moment, Lei Jingtian suddenly noticed Lin Ming’s cultivation. He was stunned. “You broke through to the Xiantian realm?”

Xiantian?

As Lei Jingtian spoke, everyone else also noticed Lin Ming's cultivation. He had truly entered the early Xiantian realm!

Mu Qingyi's eyes were wide and filled with disbelief. Even the usually calm and emotionless Mu Bingyun was stunned.

Lin Ming had gone from the late Houtian realm to the early Xiantian realm in just six days?

Just what had happened in these past six days?

It must be unimaginable!

For a martial artist to reach the Xiantian realm before 18 years of age… this was already beyond the scope of anyone's understanding.

Such cultivation and such strength at such a tender age!

Throughout the entire Sky Spill Continent, an achievement of this degree might be unprecedented in the last tens of thousands of years. This might never have happened from the ancient times until now!

At that moment, everyone was stunned into silence. Lei Jingtian also felt a deep fear stirring in him. Lin Ming was just too terrifying, terrifying enough to make everyone afraid to give him time to grow!

"So that's how it is. You have the confidence to return just because you reached the Xiantian realm. What are you planning on doing? Do you think you can fight me?"

Lei Jingtian sneered and stepped forwards, pointing the Thunder Light Sword at Lin Ming.

Prior to this, when Lin Ming had combusted his blood essence, he had gained strength at the limit of an early Revolving Core master; he had still been far from reaching a middle Revolving Core master's strength.

But having broken through to the Xiantian realm from the late Houtian realm, his strength had risen by two boundaries.

Logically speaking, in the path of martial arts, the disparity in gaps of cultivation increased the further one went. The difference between the late Houtian realm and Xiantian realm was much less than the difference between an early Revolving Core and late Revolving Core master.

However, Lei Jingtian also knew that Lin Ming could not be judged by common sense.

Lei Jingtian didn't think he would lose, but he would still exercise the utmost caution.

As Lei Jingtian and Lin Ming faced each other, Mu Qianyu calmly walked over to Mu Bingyun's side. The two sisters, with the swords of ice and fire, faced Mu Chihuo together.

As for Mu Yanzhuo, he would be dealt with by Mu Qingyi and the Seventh Elder.

Thus, if Lei Jingtian wasn't able to suppress Lin Ming, Mu Chihuo's side would be at a great disadvantage.

"Lin Ming, I admit that you have the ability to make me serious. In this broken world and under the suppression of these laws, I'll have to be serious with you!

"But in terms of strength, you still fall far short! Shaking Thunder Sword!"

Lei Jingtian's sword cut forwards and his blade pierced forth. A deep purple electric light flashed, and the loud sound of thunder howled in the air!

In this first sword strike, Lei Jingtian was only testing Lin Ming.

However, Lin Ming had no intention to follow along with this test. The corners of his lips curved up in a fiendish grin, and he connected his true essence to the Heretical God Seed.

Heretical God Force – open!

The power of Tempering Marrow also completely erupted!

“Die!”

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd turned. Lin Ming’s body emitted explosive crackling sounds. Above the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, 14 Blood Drinking Seals twisted into a crimson vortex.

Primeval Halberd Strike!

Kacha!

Lin Ming’s halberd thrust forwards as if it were able to twist space itself into pieces. Lei Jingtian’s Disenchanting Dream Light was completely swallowed by that crimson vortex. A powerful tearing force enveloped Lei Jingtian, twisting his life force and causing his blood to swell. Lei Jingtian immediately lost balance.

“What!?”

Lei Jingtian couldn’t believe his own eyes. The Blood Drinking Seals had broken through his sword energy and pierced through his protective true essence. A ribbon of fresh blood shot into the wind!

Chapter 507 – Irresistible Power

Chapter 507 – Irresistible Power

…

…

…

"You…"

Lei Jingtian was forced a few steps back. A deep wound ran down his shoulder, the bone peaking through. If it wasn't for Lei Jingtian's outstanding cultivation and his thick protective true essence, then that strike might have sliced off his arm!

How could it possibly be like this?

Lei Jingtian was unable to accept this reality. Before now, Lin Ming had combusted his blood essence, but still hadn't been his match. He had used everything and even exploded his Blood Drinking Seals in order to barely escape.

But now, with just the passing of several days, Lin Ming had become formidable to this degree.

As the Divine Phoenix Island disciples looked at the temple stage, they were stunned into silence. A strike had injured Lei Jingtian! Just what could have possibly have happened in the last few days?

"This… this is…" Mu Qingshu's lips trembled as he looked at Lin Ming. He was usually proud and arrogant, but in front of Lin Ming, all of that came crashing down. Even though he knew he was inferior to Lin Ming, he never thought that even Lei Jingtian would be injured by him.

Thinking of the miserable fate he would suffer if he couldn't kill Lin Ming, Mu Qingshu's face paled until there wasn't even a hint of blood. Once he lost his bloodline and cultivation, he would be no different from a mortal with a few dozen years of life. He would even have to spend this life in punishment… thinking of this, he didn't even have the courage to dwell on these thoughts.

"Lin Ming, you have angered me! For this, I will have you pay the price!" Thick blue veins bulged on Lei Jingtian's forehead, making him look extremely ugly. With one hand on his Thunder Light Sword, his other hand drew a deep purple rune in the air, "Come out, thunder beast!"

Lei Jingtian flung the rune into the sky and it flashed like lightning before exploding. Then, a five foot long beast appeared in the air. This beast looked like a monkey, but it had a bird's beak and a mouth full of sharp teeth. Its entire body sparkled with purple lightning.

"Contract beast?"

Lin Ming was shocked. A martial artist could form a contract with a beast in order to summon them into battle. For instance, Mu Qianyu's Vermillion Bird or the Demon Emperor's holy three-headed divine hound were both kinds of contract beast.

A martial artist's contract could increase their strength by a greal deal, but there weren't many martial artists that actually had one. The reason for this was that the conditions for having a contract beast were simply too high.

In order to raise a contract beast, one had to put in a massive amount of energy and resources. For instance, the reason that Mu Qianyu had invaded Thundercrash Mountain and fought there was all in order to help her life's Vermillion Bird evolve. Not just that, but the more talented a martial artist was, the higher grade of a contract beast they needed. Otherwise, their contract beast would not be able to follow them forwards, and it would only weaken them.

Lin Ming had never imagined that Lei Jingtian would actually have a contract beast. It seems that this was his hidden ace.

“Thunder beast, fuse!” Lei Jingtian shouted. And then, an inconceivable scene occurred. That thunder beast’s body suddenly became intangible and fused together with Lei Jingtian’s Thunder Light Sword, disappearing without a trace.

“Energy life form?”

Lin Ming was stunned. An energy life form was extremely rare. He hadn’t thought that Lei Jingtian would make a contract beast out of an energy life form. The master of a sect really couldn’t be underestimated.

Zi zi zi!

The fused thunder beast and Thunder Light Sword shined with a much greater light. As arcs of lightning twisted around it, it emanated a dangerous energy, constantly piercing the air. Just looking at this light was painful to the eye.

Lei Jingtian no longer underestimated Lin Ming, he had used every last card in his hand.

As Lei Jingtian’s complete strength was revealed, Mu Qingyi and everyone else went cold for Lin Ming.

Although Lei Jingtian was suppressed by the laws of this world, he was still a late Revolving Core Supreme Elder. As for Lin Ming, his cultivation was still shallow. In a true life or death battle, it was hard to say just who would win!

Mu Chihuo and Mu Yanzhuo also felt their foreheads covered with sweat at this time. Both of them were shaking with unease. Lei Jingtian was their final hope. If Lei Jingtian was unable to kill Lin Ming, they were finished!

After they had come to this stage, they naturally had no intention of fighting with Mu Qingyi. If Lei Jingtian was defeated, there was no point in gaining any advantage in battle.

Lei Jingtian's entire body was wreathed in a storm of thunder. His long hair recklessly danced, "Lin Ming, I do not know how you broke through to the Xiantian realm, but this sort of chaotic method of breakthrough will only ruin you. You can give up on your dantian's true essence ever being stable again!"

"Words are useless. Come, let's fight."

With the word 'fight', the flame mark between Lin Ming's eyebrows combusted in a dazzling radiance. He opened the Heretical God Force, and once more burnt the blood of the Ancient Phoenix.

"Humph, what self-confidence you have." Lei Jingtian's eyes sank. The difference between the late Houtian realm and Xiantian realm was great, but it was nothing compared to the gap between an early Revolving Core and late Revolving Core master. With Lin Ming's talent, he had strength several times that of a Xiantian realm martial artist. But, he shouldn't be strong to the degree of defeating him.

Lei Jingtian didn't believe that with displaying all of his ultimate abilities, he still couldn't suppress Lin Ming.

"You are strong, but you will still die by my hands. Heavenly Thunder Suppression!"

Lei Jingtian's sword pierced forth, and a billowing wave of lightning rushed forwards, followed by ear shattering thunderclaps. It was like the howl of a tiger and the roar of a dragon, directly impacting through the heavens. A swirling thunderstorm condensed around the Thunder Light Sword, driving all of the thunder origin energy in the world.

This sword strike contained the power of thunder as well as the Disenchanting Dream Light's soul attack; it was one of Lei Jingtian's strongest moves.

In this life or death battle, he fought with everything he had, no longer holding anything back.

In the face of this dazzling thunderstorm, Lin Ming remained impassive. Between his eyebrows, the blood of the Ancient Phoenix burned, filling his body with power and vigor. Lin Ming poured his will and strength into the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. As the halberd pierced out, the Blood Drinking Seals whistled.

Slaughter!

With merging of his whole will and being into this Blood Drinking Seal, damaging the enemy would damage himself. But now, Lin Ming had reached Large Success of Tempering Marrow. Using this move wasn't dangerous at all. Instead, it gave him a light and easy feeling.

A crimson light shined. Lin Ming's halberd thrust forth, tearing apart the space.

Everyone present held their breath, their foreheads wet with nervous sweat. Mu Qianyu tightened her hands, her knuckles white. She felt her heart catch in her throat. As for those disciples with a lower cultivation, they subconsciously stepped back in order to not be caught up and destroyed in the aftermath.

In the sight of everyone, the crimson vortex smashed into the purple thunderstorm!

However, in that instant, there wasn't the massive explosion that everyone expected. They only saw that bloody red light shoot into the sky. As for that purple thunderstorm, it was torn into pieces by that crimson vortex. In the howling gale, one could hear the faint miserable cry of the thunder beast.

Lin Ming's red halberd light was like the all-destroying sword of a war god; Lei Jingtian's thunderstorm immediately disintegrated under this terrifying destructive force!

"What!?" Lei Jingtian's complexion changed, "This is impossible!"

Bang!

The thunderstorm completely broke apart. Lei Jingtian was sent flying backwards. His clothes split apart, and he spat out a giant mouthful of blood!

As Mu Chihuo saw Lei Jingtian spit blood, he felt like he had fallen into a sea of ice!

Lei Jingtian… lost!?

Mu Qianyu and Mu Qingyi's eyes were round like twin moons. They wouldn't have been surprised if Lin Ming defeated Lei Jingtian after a bitter struggle, but in just this first exchange of moves, he had completely defeated Lei Jingtian's strongest strike.

From just the late Houtian realm to the early Xiantian realm, how could Lin Ming's strength have risen so much?

Lin Ming didn't give anyone a second to be surprised. As soon as he sent Lei Jingtian soaring away, he immediately stepped forwards. The ground underneath his feet exploded from the powerful momentum, and Lin Ming shot forwards with the Great Desolate Blood Halberd in hand.

"Die!"

A halberd struck out; the 14 Blood Drinking Seals cut towards Lei Jingtian like flying swords.

"Boy! Don't push me too far!" Lei Jingtian pressed down his tumbling blood and gripped the Thunder Light Sword tightly, slashing down. But at this time, the writhing thunder on the Thunder Light Sword began to emit whining howls. Obviously, the thunder beast had been severely wounded, and it wouldn't be able to withstand another intense collision like before.

"Damn." Lei Jingtian's heart sank. He wasn't willing to give up the thunder beast. If he struck out now, then the thunder beast would most assuredly perish. He had raised this thunder beast for the last several hundred years, and had paid a great price to develop it.

"Return!"

Lei Jingtian received the thunder beast. The shining light of the Thunder Light Blade immediately dimmed.

"Disenchanting Dream Light!"

Lei Jingtian struck out his palm. A sizzling beam of light shot out, smashing into the Blood Drinking Seals.

Chi chi chi!

The Disenchanting Dream Light constantly melted. As for the Blood Drinking Seals, they were like sharp razors that shaved it away!

As Lei Jingtian saw this, he no longer had the willpower to fight. He spat out several bolts of the Disenchanting Dream Light and then turned around to escape!

"Boy, do well to remember me!"

"You want to run away?" Lin Ming's lips curved in a sneer. His specialty was to kill everything in sight. During the war in the South Sea battlefield, a great part of the reason that Lin Ming was titled the Blood Demon was because whenever he slaughtered people, there was never a living witness. Whatever squad that had the bad luck to bump into Lin Ming would suffer annihilation. The reason for this was that none of them could escape!

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd rose up and then pierced forth, "Primeval Halberd Strike!"

The Blood Drinking Seals on the halberd blade rapidly rotated, forming a massive red vortex dozens of feet wide. The surrounding space seemed to twist apart under this power. Lei Jingtian felt as if an invisible force was pushing down on his body, greatly reducing his speed.

What was going on!?

Lei Jingtian was stunned. He felt the space around him thicken and become sticky. An enormous force enveloped him. It was impossible for him to fly away; it was like he fallen into a swamp!

If this were the outside world, Lin Ming would naturally be unable to do this. But in this broken world and under the suppression of its governing laws, Lei Jingtian's speed was already sharply lowered. It was already at his limits to fly, but now that he was being sucked in by the Primeval Halberd Strike, his speed had fallen by over another half. It had to be known that Lin Ming's Blood Drinking Seals were not restricted by this world's laws.

"Lin Ming, do not force me into a corner!" Feeling the thick murderous intent behind him, Lei Jingtian suddenly swiveled around and saw Lin Ming's halberd thrust towards him.

"Blood Seal Twisting Murder!"

14 Blood Drinking Seals cut down. Lei Jingtian hastily lifted his sword to meet the strike, but he was unable to block all of them.

Cha cha cha!

Three Blood Drinking Seals cut through Lei Jingtian's protective true essence, stabbing into his body. A great mist of blood shot out!

Chapter 508 – End of the Road

Chapter 508 – End of the Road

…

…

…

"Lin Ming!" Lei Jingtian's eyes were bloodshot. Just a moment ago, three Blood Drinking Seals had pierced through his left shoulder, causing a shower of blood to rain down. Every time that a Blood Drinking Seal successfully attacked, it was able to absorb an enemy's blood essence.

"Do you really want fight me in a life or death battle!?" Lei Jingtian's eyes flashed with a ferocious light, "Although you can suppress me, you will still have to pay a great price if you want to kill me!"

Lin Ming didn't respond with a single word, only slashing out with his halberd. 14 Blood Drinking Seals weaved in the air!

As Lei Jingtian saw these Blood Drinking Seals, he felt his scalp tingle with fear. "Do not force me to burn my blood essence!"

"Try it!" Lin Ming's eyes were decisively cold; he would kill Lin Jingtian. Otherwise, the secret that he had obtained the Nirvana Dragon Root might be revealed. This time, Lin Ming could not let a single one of his enemies escape alive.

"You bastard!"

Lei Jingtian revolved his true essence to the extreme limit. At his age, his blood vitality had already long declined. If he combusted his blood essence, it would damage his life. Not just that, but his strength wouldn't even increase that much, even if he burnt his blood essence.

On the other hand, Lin Ming had an incomparably formidable and vibrant blood vitality. Not just that, but he had fully completed Tempering Marrow. His marrow was like golden soup and thick as mercury. He even had the reverse scale blood and the blood of the Ancient Phoenix supporting him. Even if he burnt a bit of blood essence it wasn't that big of a deal.

"Lin Ming, stop! I can compensate you a medium-grade earth-step Thunder Soul!" Under the powerful pressure of Lin Ming, Lei Jingtian started to plead for mercy.

Lin Ming sneered, "Medium-grade earth-step Thunder Soul? How could that compare to the Disenchanting Dream Light within you?"

"You!" Lei Jingtian raged with anger, "This old man will bet everything against you!"

Lei Jingtian shouted out and then tread forwards, stabbing his sword towards Lin Ming's chest.

Lin Ming turned the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. The Blood Drinking Seals gathered together, "Become blade!"

The halberd thrust forth; the 14 Blood Drinking Seals sealed away the Thunder Light Sword.

"Mm?" Lei Jingtian felt as if the sword in his hand had been imbedded in stone. He was unable to pull it out or move it at all. At the same time, the Blood Drinking Seals shot towards Lei Jingtian's throat.

"Explode for me!"

Lei Jingtian gave a loud shot and a burst of energy erupted from within him, blasting away Lin Ming's Great Desolate Blood Halberd. He seized this chance and stabbed his sword at Lin Ming's chest!

“Humph!”

Facing Lei Jingtian’s sword, Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a savage light. He didn’t evade nor did he dodge; he simply counterthrust his halberd at Lei Jingtian.

After completing Tempering Marrow, Lin Ming’s bodily strength and tenacity far exceeded that of an earth-step treasure. He was not afraid of a battle of attrition.

Lin Ming’s sudden counterattack surprised Lei Jingtian. At the same time that Lei Jingtian’s sword pierced through Lin Ming’s chest, Lin Ming’s halberd light enveloped Lei Jingtian.

“You!”

Pah!

Lei Jingtian’s sword light easily penetrated Lin Ming’s protective true essence. The blade pierced Lin Ming’s chest and caused a touch of blood to shoot into the air.

But at the same time, a crimson halberd light broke through Lei Jingtian’s protective true essence and stabbed into his body.

A Revolving Core martial artist’s core and greatest weakness were their dantian. Even though Lei Jingtian’s body was powerful, it still couldn’t resist Lin Ming’s attack. In particular, every time the Blood Drinking Seal stabbed his body, it would also take away a bit of blood essence.

More injuries were added onto Lei Jingtian. He staggered, almost falling onto the ground.

“Severely harming yourself to kill your enemy, crazy boy, you are mad!”

“Severely harming myself?” Lin Ming scoffed. When Lei Jingtian’s sword had stabbed him a moment ago, it had been caught and stopped by his rib. Ultimately, it was just a little wound of the flesh that didn’t matter at all.

Lin Ming's strength was originally incomparably formidable. Now that he also had the complete power of Tempering Marrow backing him up, the resilience of his body had reached a terrifying degree. The wound bled for several breaths of time and then stopped. It even began to regenerate at a visible speed.

As Lei Jingtian saw this, he paled. His sword light had easily penetrated Lin Ming's protective true essence, but it hadn't done any major damage? Was this even the body of a human being?

Lei Jingtian felt as if he had fallen into despair. If he wanted to fight, he couldn't. If he wanted to run, he would get sucked in by that strange martial skill. And in terms of defensive power, he was far inferior.

He had been injured several times. If this continued, sooner or later he would just be worn to death.

"Lin Ming, this is because you forced me!" Lei Jingtian clenched his teeth and combusted his inner blood essence.

"You've finally given in?" Lin Ming's eyes were filled with contempt. Lei Jingtian had wanted to escape and not burn away his blood essence. If he had decided to fight Lin Ming with his life on the line from the very start, then it would have been very troublesome indeed. At least, Lin Ming would also have had to burn his blood essence in order to kill Lei Jingtian.

But now, Lei Jingtian had been injured several times, and he was greatly weaker than he was at the start. And most importantly, his contract beast had been injured and could no longer fight, causing the power of all of his moves to drop precipitously.

Burning away his blood essence at this time was simply too late!

Thunder flashed between Lei Jingtian's eyebrows, and the Thunder Light Sword began to emit rays of fiery light.

Kacha!

A purple beam of lightning fell from the sky, falling onto the Thunder Light Sword. All of the thunder origin energy between the heavens and earth was in the control of Lei Jingtian.

“Heavenly Thunder Suppression!”

With this move, a purple storm enveloped Lin Ming once more!

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a ruthless light. He saturated his complete will and strength into the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, fusing together with 14 Blood Drinking Seals. The halberd thrust out, breaking into the thunderstorm!

Cha cha cha!

Lin Ming’s protective true essence was twisted apart in the storm and blood shot out from wounds.

At the same time, the Blood Drinking Seals rapidly twisted. The spiraling power was like an iron needle that pierced through the thunder storm, tearing it to shreds. The space and time laws of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ were also integrated into this one attack.

“Damn!”

As Lei Jingtian saw Lin Ming’s unstoppable strike, he was left panting in fear. He tried to withdraw from the storm, but at this instant an incredible scene took place. The Great Desolate Blood Halberd seemed to instantly penetrate through hundreds of feet of space, arriving in front of Lei Jingtian.

“What?”

In panic, Lei Jingtian didn’t even have time to receive his sword and strike again; he could only use his palm to hit the Great Desolate Blood Halberd.

A bloody light flashed and Lei Jingtian's palm was chopped into pieces by the Blood Drinking Seals. At the same time, Lei Jingtian felt a chilling cold spread from his stomach. He looked down, his eyes filled with disbelief.

What he saw was a halberd pole going into his stomach, the halberd blade had already completely penetrated his dantian…

He looked up to see Lin Ming standing in front of him, his entire body covered in blood and a taunting sneer on his face.

"You…"

Lei Jingtian spat out a massive mouthful of blood, as strength rapidly escaped from his body. He had never dreamt that one day he would die at the hands of a junior who wasn't even 20 years old.

"I said that today I would kill you!"

Lin Ming suddenly tore out the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and a fountain of blood rained down. At the same time, the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder penetrated into Lei Jingtian's body. With an explosive sound, Lei Jingtian's chest blew apart into a bloody fog. All of his true essence was sucked away by the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder and gathered into Lin Ming's hand, condensing into a new Blood Drinking Seal.

"I… refuse to…" Lei Jingtian saw as all of his blood essence was used to form a Blood Drinking Seal. He stretched out his hand, wanting to take it back, but before he even lifted it halfway, his hand already dangled down, no longer capable of moving. His eyes dimmed down, the fires of life were completely extinguished…

Chapter 509 – Disenchanting Dream Light

Chapter 509 – Disenchanting Dream Light

…

…

…

Lin Ming took off Lei Jingtian’s spatial ring and then flicked a fireball at the corpse, turning it into ashes. Like this, a fierce and ambitious Sect Master of his generation, a late Revolving Core powerhouse, perished in a breeze of floating ashes.

Lei Jingtian… had died!

All of the Divine Phoenix disciples fell into utter silence. A harrowing fight had concluded in an equally harrowing manner. Lin Ming’s entire body was soaked in blood, and Lei Jingtian didn’t even have a single bone remaining. In just two breaths of time, a late Revolving Core Supreme Elder was forced into a dead end by Lin Ming, and was finally abruptly and brutally killed!

Mu Qingyi let out cold breath, and even Mu Bingyun’s expression was complex. Killing and defeating someone were two entirely different concepts. Even if Lin Ming had borrowed the power of this world’s laws in order to do so, it was still an incredible feat.

In time, if Lin Ming were given space to grow, it was unimaginable just what realm he would be able to reach.

In the time that Lei Jingtian turned into ashes, Mu Yanzhuo felt a tilting dizziness, and his vision almost went back, almost falling to the ground. As for Mu Qingshu, he felt as if the sky had collapsed atop of him. He looked at Lin Ming in the distance and his lips paled, a chill crawling up his entire body.

From the beginning of their betrayal, they no longer had any way to return to how things once were. As for the bloodstain contract in their bodies, it was a guillotine that constantly hung over their heads.

“Let’s go!”

Mu Chihuo’s voice suddenly resounded in Mu Yanzhuo and Mu Qingshu’s ears.

Go? Go where?

Mu Yanzhuo stared off in the distance, as if he hadn’t heard a single word.

“Useless!” Mu Chihuo was also seeped in a cold sweat at this moment. He had originally planned for the three of them to escape in different directions. If it were like this, then he might have a chance to escape. But looking at Mu Yanzhuo’s current listless expression, if he tried to run away by himself, then Lin Ming would most likely use that strange space locking martial skill on him. Thinking about this, Mu Chihuo felt a cold chill sneak up his spine.

The bloodstain contract only gave him half a year. Could he find a backer in this short period of time and kill Lin Ming?

“You two idiots!” Mu Chihuo’s expression was fierce, “This is our last chance to escape. If you want to wait to be capture and for all your skills to be crippled and be sentenced to death and die, then this old man will not follow you along!”

Mu Chihuo’s words were like a bolt of thunder that sounded in Mu Qingshu’s ears. Mu Qingshu grabbed onto that final straw of hope, “Senior Master Mu, please save me. What can we do? I don’t want to die!”

“If you don’t want to die then burn your blood essence and run away with me. This is our only chance!”

A cold wind blew, scattering Lei Jingtian’s ashes in the air.

Zi zi zi!

A faint lightning light flashed in the ashes. A purple ball of light suddenly flew out from the ashes, flying straight up into the sky!

As soon as Lin Ming saw this, he coldly snorted and thrust out his hand. A purple net of thunder fell down from the sky, covering the purple ball of light.

The purple ball of light violently thrashed about, but no matter what it did it could not break through the shackles of the electric net; it could only obediently stay trapped.

"This is the Disenchanting Dream Light!"

Lin Ming waved his hand and grasped the ball of light. This thunder ball was only the size of a fist. On the surface, there was a fierce face, as if it were the visage of some ancient beast.

The legends said that the Disenchanting Dream Light was a special Thunder Soul bred from ancient thunder-attribute sea beasts. 10,000 years after the thunder-attribute sea beast died, the Thunder Soul would form if there was a series of coincidences that came together. This Thunder Soul had the inborn ability to extinguish and devour souls. It could cause a human to instantly lose consciousness or turn them into idiots. With some special techniques, it could even be used to erase or search memories.

"Maybe the face on this ball of light is the so-called ancient thunder-attribute sea beast. But, I have no idea just what sort of vicious beast it could be. This Lei Jingtian must have had some great lucky chances if he was able to obtain a Thunder Soul like this.

Lin Ming was just about to draw up some symbols in order to seal away the Thunder Soul, but at this time he suddenly felt a thick murderous intent break out from Mu Chihuo's body.

Lin Ming sneered, "You are seeking death!"

"Do it!"

Mu Chihuo cried out and grabbed his longsword. Together with Mu Yanzhuo, he dashed towards Mu Qianyu. At the same time, Mu Qingshu shot towards Zhang Zhen.

The three of them burnt their blood essence in unison!

Within the Divine Phoenix Island forces, Mu Qianyu and Zhang Zhen were the two closest to Lin Ming. Especially Mu Qianyu – she was extremely important to Lin Ming. If they could capture her, they would have a last hope of living.

“Dream on!”

Mu Qingyi stepped up, wanting to help defend Mu Qianyu, but she was forced back by Mu Yanzhuo’s sword light.

Mu Chihuo was extremely quick. He arrived in front of Mu Qianyu in an instant, his sword slashing down!

After all, Mu Chihuo was still a middle Revolving Core master who also burnt his blood essence. He was naturally much stronger than Mu Qianyu.

Seeing Mu Chihuo’s strike, Mu Qianyu didn’t miss a single beat as she stepped back and twirled the Vermillion Bird Sword in her hand, revolving the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ to its limits. Her sword pierced forth, brilliant flames shooting out.

Meanwhile, at her side, Mu Bingyun quietly appeared. The Blue Luan Sword appeared, bone-chilling ice spreading out in all directions.

Ice and fire combined, the Luan and Phoenix battled!

Peng!

True essence shockwaves ruthlessly swept out. Mu Chihuo’s strike which was backed by his combusted blood essence was actually blocked by Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun’s combined move. The two of them were only sent flying backwards. Although the two of them had consumed a great deal of energy, neither of them were injured.

Mu Chihuo’s heart raced with nervousness. He wanted to follow up on them, but at this moment, an icy voice sounded in his ear, “Go die!”’

Primeval Halberd Strike!

With the swirling of the Blood Drinking Seals, a powerful suction forced acted on Mu Chihuo’s body, causing his speed to immediately drop a great deal.

Mu Chihuo issued a deep roar. However, no matter how he struggled, he couldn’t break through the bindings of the Blood Drinking Seals.

Mu Chihuo’s complexion changed, “Lin Ming, wait, I have words I want to say…”

“Go speak them in hell!” Lin Ming’s expression was cold and decisive. His halberd pierced forth. The Great Desolate Halberd seemed to pass through space, instantly appearing in front of Mu Chihuo.

“Ahhhh!” Mu Chihuo’s eyes flashed with a crazed and desperate light. With all of his strength, he cut his sword down at the Great Desolate Blood Halberd!

Kacha!

The sword energy collapsed, and the swirling waves of fire true essence were swept away by the powerful vortex. Lin Ming’s halberd thrust towards Mu Chihuo’s dantian.

At this critical moment, Mu Chihuo bit down on his tongue. True essence wrapped round his palm, and he slapped down onto the shaft of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd.

Blood flew out. In Mu Chihuo’s desperate strike, he had managed to change the trajectory of Lin Ming’s strike. It barely missed his dantian, but it still stabbed into his stomach all the same, passing straight through!

Mu Chihuo’s mouth filled with blood. Despair appeared in his eyes, “You…”

“Die!”

Lin Ming's expression didn't change. He twisted the Great Desolate Blood Halberd within Mu Chihuo, breaking apart all of his organs. A massive amount of blood and bits of flesh poured out.

"Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!"

True essence gathered onto Lin Ming's right hand, and 10,000 vibrating true essence threads burst forth. Lin Ming punched Mu Chihuo's chest, directly causing it to cave in and shattering all of his ribs!

With Lin Ming's punch, Mu Chihuo was sent flying back like a broken kite. He crashed into the floor, on the verge of death.

"Brother Chihuo!" As Mu Yanzhuo saw this, he was startled. His eyes glazed over, and he lost the last remnants of his courage to fight.

On the other side, Mu Qingshu also had a grim and dark expression. His heart was filled with despair. When he battled with the other juniors, in a single exchange of moves, four or five sword lights had pierced him. His clothes had been ripped apart, and he fell to the ground, covered in blood.

"Ku ku ku!" Mu Qingshu coughed out mouthfuls of blood as he propped himself up. As he looked at Lin Ming, his eyes were full of resentment and unwillingness.

"Lin Ming!" Mu Qingshu bit his lips until they bled. After reaching this point, he had lost all hope. Because of Lin Ming, he had lost everything. He had lost Mu Qianyu, he had lost the title and status of being the number one male disciple of the Vermillion Bird Faction juniors. And even now, he would lose his cultivation and cultivation methods.

Lin Ming bent down to glance at Mu Qingshu. There was no hate in his eyes, only a sad pity. A person like Mu Qingshu didn't have the qualifications for Lin Ming to hate him.

"You hate that I took everything from you?" Lin Ming sneered. He had already seen through all of Mu Qingshu's thoughts. "You are weaker than others, and yet your jealousy forced you into a dead end. Truly, it is pitiful."

Mu Qingshu didn't speak, only glaring at Lin Ming with naked hate in his eyes as he revolved his true essence to the limit. The deep enmity in Mu Qingshu's vision was to the point where he wished he could flay Lin Ming alive.

"You want to kill me? You won't have the chance!" Lin Ming suddenly drew out his palm and slammed down on Mu Qingshu's chest. A savage true essence sunk into Mu Qingshu's body, ripping apart all of his meridians!

Pulse Cutting Palm!

Pah!

Mu Qingshu spat out an arrow of blood. All of the true essence he had gathered was cleanly scattered. He lay on the ground like a dead dog, his lips trembling and his eyes popped wide in anger.

Lin Ming didn't give his opponent a single chance to make a comeback. Being ruthless was the safest method to rid himself of troubles in the future.

This was the profound lesson that Ouyang Boyan had taught Lin Ming.

If it wasn't for Lin Ming's prompt rescue, then Qin Xingxuan would have already long since perished.

"Qingshu!"

As Mu Yanzhuo saw Mu Qingshu crippled by Lin Ming's palm, he felt a deep pain. At the very start of this gamble, he had expected that he might experience this miserable fate. But, he didn't think that it would be sad to this degree.

“The winner is the king, and the losers are villains. I, Mu Yanzhuo, am sorry to my ancestors.” Mu Yanzhuo said with despair. Then, all of the true essence in his body exploded. There was a series of ‘peng peng peng’ sounds as clouds of blood burst out from all over his body. He had destroyed all of his own meridians and killed himself!

Mu Yanzhuo plopped face down onto the floor, rivers of blood streaming from his body.

“He’s dead.”

Mu Qingyi sighed. The traitors had all died. But, she wasn’t the least bit happy. The won this fight, but Divine Phoenix Island had suffered a great blow. A middle Revolving Core Elder and an early Revolving Core Elder had died. Not just that, but the future Revolving Core Mu Qingshu had also perished. And all of this was because of human nature. They fought because of power, and bled because of greed.

Lin Ming glanced at Mu Yanzhuo and then took out the Disenchanting Dream Light that Lei Jingtian had left behind. He drew up dozens of symbols and wrapped the Thunder Soul in layers of seals. Them, he took out a jade box and placed it inside.

As for Mu Yanzhuo’s left over possessions, Lin Ming didn’t bother with them. These were originally Divine Phoenix Island’s things. He shouldn’t take them, nor did he lack these things.

Chapter 510 – Ten Year Period

Chapter 510 – Ten Year Period

…

…

…

From the beginning of the fight until the end, only several dozen breaths of time had passed. Lei Jingtian and Mu Chihuo, respectively late Revolving Core and middle Revolving Core top masters, had both been successively killed by Lin Ming.

As Lin Ming stood on the battlefield, his entire body was bathed in crimson blood, and his face was pale. During this time, whether he meant to or not, he released a startlingly dark and compelling aura. As the Divine Phoenix Island junior disciples saw this, they couldn't help but gawk at Lin Ming in awe.

With such an impressive ability, coupled with Lin Ming's age, it was truly incredible.

Lin Ming put away the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. His eyes touched upon Mu Qingyi and Mu Bingyun. He solemnly said, "Senior Mu Qingyi, Senior-apprentice Sister Mu Bingyun, junior has some words that he would like to speak with you."

"Mm?"

"Let's go somewhere else to talk."

Lin Ming, Mu Qianyu, Mu Qingyi, and Mu Bingyun, all moved over to the illusionary killing array. Lin Ming then calmly said, "Senior Mu, Senior-apprentice Sister Mu, I have two matters that I need to speak of. The first is… about today's events, do not reveal them to anyone, otherwise it will call a great sect-destroying calamity upon Divine Phoenix Island!"

“Why?” Mu Qingyi was startled, “What happened?”

Lin Ming said, “This breakthrough to the Xiantian realm… the truth was that this is because I snuck into the Demon God Imperial Palace and obtained the great treasure that the South Sea Demon Region, Great Zen Temple, and Black Flood Dragon Clan were all searching for – the Nirvana Dragon Root. In addition to that, a treasure more valuable than the Nirvana Dragon Root, the Cosmic Melting Furnace, also fell into my hands. After I obtained these treasures, I made it appear as if I had died. If these powers were to know that I am still alive, they would definitely join together and force themselves onto Divine Phoenix Island. At that time, Divine Phoenix Island will be bound to perish!”

Even though Lin Ming’s words were calmly spoken, Mu Qingyi was shocked the entire time. “What did you say?”

She didn’t know how to express the panic and horror rising in her heart. A treasure that the South Sea Demon Region, Great Zen Temple, and Black Flood Dragon Clan were chasing after. Not just that, but there were many old Life Destruction masters and even third stage Life Destruction Supreme Elders that were present; how could this treasure have possibly fallen into Lin Ming’s hands?

Not just that, but Lin Ming also returned safely and tricked everyone into believing that he had died. Just how had he done this?

It wasn’t just Mu Qingyi, but Mu Bingyun also thought this was an inconceivable matter. She looked at Lin Ming with deep eyes but didn’t say anything.

“Besides us, no one else knows you are alive?” Mu Qingyi asked, a bit of dread in her voice. She no longer bothered to ask just how Lin Ming had obtained the treasures; she was well aware just how grave a matter this was. If this were to be revealed, then it was likely that Divine Phoenix Island would be flattened by the combined forces of these powers!

“No one. Not even Master Ancestor Fengxian knows. However, the techniques and weapon that I used to kill Lei Jingtian are very unique. If these were to be known, then there could be trouble. I will have to bother Senior Mu Qingyi with attending to these matters. If there are people that still won't believe you, then you can consider detaining them for the next ten years."

There were currently 20 some Divine Phoenix Island disciples present. Who could be trusted or who was untrustworthy, all of this would be decided by Mu Qingyi. Lin Ming believed that after the matter of Mu Chihuo's betrayal, she would no longer place any faith in Divine Phoenix Island's bloodline contract.

"The next ten years?" Mu Qingyi's eyebrows arched up as she instantly understood Lin Ming's meaning. If she was correct, then he meant that in these next ten years, he had confidence that he would grow strong enough to deal with a third stage Life Destruction powerhouse!

As Mu Qingyi thought of this, she sucked in a breath of cold air. What bold confidence this was! Ten years later, Lin Ming would be the same age as Mu Qianyu was now.

Of the ancient Emperor level powerhouses, they would reach Xiantian at 20, Revolving Core at 30, extreme Revolving Core at 50, and become a Peerless Emperor at 100!

But as for Lin Ming, if he could compare with a third stage Life Destruction master before he was even 30 years old, then he could even become a Peerless Emperor at 40 years of age. An event like that was simply a story from a fable or legend. But, now that it came from Lin Ming's own mouth, Mu Qingyi actually didn't doubt it at all.

"Lin Ming, you've decided in a period of ten years… are you planning on leaving?" Mu Qingyi became aware of this point. Lin Ming's current status was simply too sensitive. If he were discovered now, then the consequences would be disastrous!

"Yes. This is the second matter that I wish to speak of. All of the seniors of Divine Phoenix Island have treated me well for the past year. I, Lin Ming, will always keep this kindness in mind. The South Horizon Region no longer has a place for me. I can only travel the world and adventure. If I were to hide away in seclusion and conceal my identity, then I fear that it would be impossibly difficult for me to progress anywhere. I have decided on a timeline of ten years. Ten years from now, I will absolutely return!” Lin Ming’s words were filled with a resolute courage; he had long since made this decision.

Ten years…

Mu Qingyi stared off in a trance, lost in her thoughts.

To a Revolving Core martial artist that lived for several hundred years, the truth was that ten years was a very short period of time. However, these ten years were different!

The South Sea Demon Region was currently at war with Divine Phoenix Island. It was the South Sea Demon Region that started this war. Part of their reasons was to open the ancient battlefield, but they might also take this opportunity to return to the South Horizon Region.

In these ten years, the flames of war would burn through the South Horizon Region. Ten years later, it was unknown just what the fate of Divine Phoenix Island would be!

Similarly, these next ten years would also be a perilous trial for Lin Ming. He would leave the South Horizon Region and also the safety of the sect. Stepping into the vast and strange world by himself, facing countless and endless dangers… who knew if he would fall there?

The path of martial arts was filled with risks. Countless geniuses fell midway in their path, their bones littering the earth. The birth of every Revolving Core powerhouse was atop the piles of bones from numerous middle class geniuses. The birth of every Life Destruction powerhouse was also from atop a pile of top class geniuses. As for a Peerless Emperor, they were born from the endless corpses of Saint level talents!

Not just that, but Lin Ming also carried a great treasure with him. To have treasure was to be in danger. If news of this treasure were to be revealed…

As Mu Qingyi thought of this, she found it hard to remain calm. She wanted to speak up and persuade Lin Ming, but she eventually didn’t say anything. A genius was destined to walk a path of loneliness, and doomed to encounter pitfalls and dangers.

In a way, Divine Phoenix Island could no longer provide a large enough stage for Lin Ming. If Lin Ming was forced to stay in the South Horizon Region, it would only suppress his potential.

The younger a martial artist was, the easier it was for them to make breakthroughs. Once they were old, the progress they could make would be limited. For instance, from the time that Mu Qingyi had broken through to the Revolving Core realm until now, over 200 years had passed. But during this entire time, she still hadn't been able to reach the middle Revolving Core realm.

If they wasted their time and their potential was exhausted, then they would at most become a top tier talent like Nanyun Wang. But, they would never become an Emperor level powerhouse.

As Mu Qingyi thought this, she sighed, not speaking.

"Lin Ming, do you really plan on leaving?" In truth, Mu Qianyu had already known that Lin Ming was planning on leaving. She didn't say a single world to urge him otherwise. She only stared at Lin Ming with a faintly reluctant light in her eyes.

The future was unknown and the dangers were great and ever-present. Ten years from now, who knew what sort of accidents or changes there would be. It would be a lie if she said that she wanted Lin Ming to leave.

Mu Qianyu's tender and soft eyes seemed to speak a thousand words. In that moment, Lin Ming's will was shaken. For a moment, he really thought about finding a quiet secluded place to retreat to, and live a quiet and peaceful life together with Mu Qianyu. However, he quickly tamped down and eventually wiped away this charming thought that made his heart flutter.

"I have chosen to go. I will definitely return within ten years." Lin Ming decisively said.

Lin Ming's current strength was far from enough! Although he was able to kill Lei Jingtian, this was with the suppressive laws of this broken world aiding him. If he left this broken world, then he absolutely would not be Lei Jingtian's match.

On the path of martial arts, the difference in every further realm increased at an exponential rate. The further one went, the greater the disparity between the realms.

A small realm, such as between a middle Revolving Core and late Revolving Core, might have a difference of about two times the amount of true essence. For a large realm, such as a peak Houtian and early Xiantian, then the difference in strength would be four times or even five times.

Although the gap between the peak Houtian and early Xiantian realm seemed great, the truth was that it paled in comparison to the gap between the middle Revolving Core and late Revolving Core realm. This was because the difference from those stages was exponentially greater and more terrifying.

Those old fellows from the South Sea Demon Region and Great Zen Temple were Life Destruction powerhouses. As for Lin Ming, he was only a mere Xiantian realm boy. There were two great realms that separated them. Any battle between them would be a hopeless one.

"I understand." Mu Qianyu shut her eyes for a while, and then opened them once more; the peace was restored in her gaze. She looked at Lin Ming as if she wanted to brand his appearance upon her mind.

"I will wait for you to return. I will always be waiting for you."

Mu Qianyu whispered. Her words seemed like a simple promise, but they contained an undying faith. They were similar to the words 'wait for me' that Lin Ming had said to her when he had given her the Escape Symbol. Those were words that had sunk into her body, into her very marrow.

Lin Ming didn't respond. He knew that from today on, his heart would have another worry weighing down on it. He wouldn't avoid dangers because of this worry. Rather, in a dangerous situation, this worry would cause him to burst out with an even greater potential, and seek life in the midst of death.

He wanted to return, he had to return! He had to fulfill his promise to Mu Qianyu. After he obtained enough strength, he would stand together with Divine Phoenix Island and face the great threat known as the South Sea Demon Region.

"Lin Ming, how do you plan on going, and where are you going?" Mu Qingyi asked.

The South Horizon Region was one million miles long and wide. The Five Element Region was to the west, and the larger Great Zen Region was to the north. As for the south, that was the vast South Sea.

These forces that Lin Ming had offended could be considered all-seeing and all-knowing powers; they could find anyone just by sticking out their toe. After they left the Demon God Imperial Palace, they would definitely mobilize all of their networks and resources in order to conduct a comprehensive search for the Nirvana Dragon Root and Cosmic Melting Furnace. When that time came, even if Lin Ming escaped very far, he would still be in danger of being found.

In particular, Lin Ming was himself a dazzling existence. In his adventures, he would inevitably be forced to fight. An 18 year old Xiantian realm master with strength that far surpassed his realm was like a star that shined brightly in the night sky; it was hard for anyone to ignore him!

In this situation, just how could Lin Ming go adventuring?

Lin Ming said, "I already have some ideas about this. If there isn't a problem, then I won't arouse the interest of anyone..."

Chapter 511 – Departing

Chapter 511 – Departing

…

…

…

The exit of the ancient battlefield hung tens of thousands of feet in the air. This connecting path to the ancient battlefield was formed when 30 Life Destruction powerhouses joined forces to create it.

This exit way was a smooth spatial barrier a few dozen feet wide. If one couldn't fly because of the suppressive laws that governed this broken world, then one wouldn't even be able to leave.

At this time, tens of thousands of feet into the air, a young man was holding onto a red-clothed woman, slowly flying towards the spatial exit. The young man was naturally Lin Ming. As for the red clothed woman, that was Mu Qianyu.

After Lin Ming reached the Xiantian realm and achieved 100% Tempering Marrow, he had already surpassed Lei Jingtian with the suppressive laws of this world supporting him. Like so, he was able to fly high into the air. But as for Mu Qianyu, she didn't have this ability; she could only fly with Lin Ming's support.

The cool breeze slowly passed by. Neither one of them spoke to each other. Mu Qianyu only silently embraced Lin Ming's back, as if she wanted to remember this feeling forever.

As they silently passed through the spatial exit, Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu arrived at the fragmented world that they had originally started at.

As soon as they entered this small world fragment, they immediately encountered a torrential rainstorm. This fragmented world was very small; the skies could not support too much seawater, so the rain was almost non-stop.

The rainwater was dozens of feet deep. Because of the existence of space cracks littered throughout the fragmented world, the vast expanse of water was turbulent, with whirlpools everywhere.

Lin Ming took out a charm and placed it on his body. Around Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu, a 50 foot globe of sparkling dust appeared, completely surrounding them. From a distance, they looked like a beacon of light in the rainy night.

In this small fragmented world, there were space cracks everywhere. With this sort of symbol charm, once one approached a space crack, the sparkling dust would be disturbed by the space cracks so one could discover them ahead of time.

Also, this small fragmented world no longer suppressed the ability to fly. However, Mu Qianyu seemed to have forgotten this. She held onto Lin Ming as before, quietly resting on Lin Ming's shoulders, not saying a word.

The twisting gales swept up the deep black ocean waves. The thick bolts of lightning that cut through the sky were like blood-red halberds thrown from a war god. In this vast and endless world, there was only Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu left, the two of them tightly snuggled together.

"We're here, this is it." Lin Ming suddenly stopped atop the water; he had already investigated the scene below the water.

A halberd cut out. 15 Blood Drinking Seals twisted into a spiral, forcibly separating the water and creating a black channel. Lin Ming held onto Mu Qianyu and entered the water.

Below this area was a giant altar. The altar was almost 1000 feet high, and was built with dark gray rock. On the altar, there were all sorts of complex and exquisite symbols. These simple and mysterious symbols were the runes of an array formation.

“This is....” Mu Qianyu was shocked. She didn’t think there would be such a great altar hidden in this tiny fragmented world.

“This is an ancient array formation.” Lin Ming calmly said. When he had first been sucked into the space fragment at South Aurora Island, he hadn’t managed to obtain any lucky chances. But, he did manage to find this ancient transmission array.

This transmission array altar was the largest one that Lin Ming had seen until now. Around the altar, there were 108 spaces for true essence stones. This transmission array required 72 medium-grade true essence stones as well as 36 high-grade true essence stones to start.

“A transmission array?” Mu Qianyu was startled. In Divine Phoenix Island, the largest transmission array there could bring one 100,000 miles away. But, that transmission array was several dozen times smaller than this one.

In particular, this transmission array was an ancient array formation. Ever since entering the broken world, Mu Qianyu had come to a deep realization of just how powerful ancient array formations were. It was hard to imagine just how far this transmission array would be able to send someone. Could it go 10 million miles? Or even 100 million miles?

Lin Ming took out true essence stones from his spatial ring and began to place them around the transmission array. These true essence stones had to be placed in a specific order, otherwise, if there was even a single mistake the array formation would be unable to start.

“Lin Ming, you’ve really decided that there isn’t a problem with this transmission array? If you go, what happens if it sends you to someplace dangerous? Or what happens if you can’t return?” Mu Qianyu felt fear as soon as she saw this transmission array. Who knew just what lay on the other side of this transmission array? Also, what would happen if there was a mistake with the transmission array and one got lost in the turbulent flow of space?

“Senior-apprentice Sister Mu, I already studied this transmission array the last time I saw it. There shouldn’t be any problems. There was a similar array formation in the Demon God

Imperial Palace that didn't have a problem, so this one shouldn't either. Senior-apprentice Sister Mu, If I can ask you, please take good care of my parents and take them safely away to some hiding place. Since I'm in a hurry to leave, the fewer people that see me the better. It's impossible for me to go back and see my parents."

Lin Ming felt a bit guilty and regretful that he wasn't able to visit his parents before he left. Normally speaking, the trials of martial artists wouldn't bring disasters onto their families. It wasn't a moral issue, but rather for a martial artist the concept of family was very weak and vague. For instance, taking someone like Nanyun Wang, his parents had already died many, many years ago. But Lin Ming was different. He had just stepped onto the road of martial arts a few years ago. To him, his family was very important.

"I swear I will take good care of Uncle and Aunty."

"There's also another matter. Xuan Wuji had obtained the Demon Emperor's letter. There might be other secrets of the Demon God Imperial Palace that are listed within. For instance, in the ancient battlefield, there is a catastrophic Giant Leviathan Saint Beast that is slumbering within. If I'm not wrong, then Xuan Wuji has the method to summon this Giant Leviathan..."

Lin Ming was helpless to prevent Xuan Wuji from summoning the Giant Leviathan. Although he knew the method to take control of it, his strength was lacking. Not only was he unable to summon it, he didn't have the time to do so either.

He could only tell Mu Qianyu of this matter and hope that it would be helpful.

"Mm, I understand."

"Alright. Then, it's time for me to go. Within ten years, I will definitely return!" After Lin Ming made this pledge again, he flew to the center of the transmission array.

At this time, a voice spread in Lin Ming's mind, "Boy, so this was what you were playing for..."

As soon as Lin Ming heard Demonshine's voice, his mind stirred, "You know about this transmission array?"

"I have a slight impression of it. But, this Saint's divine consciousness is injured, so I can't clearly remember what this transmission array is. If I'm not mistaken, this transmission array will send you a great distance; it is an ultra-long transmission array! If you want to use this kind of transmission array, you'll barely be able to do it!" Demonshine nodded his head as he spoke.

"Barely?" Lin Ming's heart went cold.

"This sort of ultra-long distance transmission array will allow you to travel across space. You will inevitably encounter numerous spatial turbulences. At the speed of which you travel through that space, your body must be strong enough to withstand the squeezing intrusion of space onto you. If your cultivation is weak and you travel through this transmission array, then you'll just end up a lump of flesh at the end."

"That can happen too?" Lin Ming's heart sank. It seems that this long distance transmission array wasn't as simple as he had assumed, "Do you think my cultivation isn't enough?"

"It's enough!" Demonshine pinched his doggy chin with his paw as he spoke. He seemed to ponder for a moment before lifting his eyes and saying, "You have 100% Tempering Marrow and your foundation is also stable. If you go through this transmission array, you'll be able to just survive."

Listening to Demonshine's words, Lin Ming sharply said, "Don't play with me."

"What are you saying? Of course what this Saint says will be true."

"In ancient times, how would a lower level martial artist use a long distance transmission array?"

"It's not like it was impossible. If you had some strong enough tool you could use it to resist the squeezing of space. For instance, the Cosmic Melting Furnace that you have right now is a relatively strong spatial resistance tool. Unfortunately, with your cultivation you cannot enter the world within the Cosmic Melting Furnace no matter how hard you try. But, you can also temporarily place your important possessions inside. If you do so, then your things will be much safer if your inferior spatial ring worlds are crushed by the space storms!"

"That can happen too?" Lin Ming let out a cold breath. For a spatial storm to be able to crush the world within a spatial ring, that proved just how terrifying it truly was.

There was no other way. Lin Ming could only take out the Cosmic Melting Furnace from within his body. The Cosmic Melting Furnace had a limited space to hold things. Lin Ming placed the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, Purple Comet Spear, as well as all his top quality pills, medium-grade and high-grade true essence stones, and also some cultivation method jade slips inside. All of this was placed within the separate world of the Cosmic Melting Furnace before Lin Ming placed the Cosmic Melting Furnace back within himself. As for the other things that weren't as valuable, Lin Ming put them into his highest grade spatial ring.

"I have to use this transmission array even if there are dangers." Lin Ming stimulated his protective true essence to the limit, and then decisively opened the transmission array.

In the instant that the transmission array opened, a purple beam of light fell down from the heavens, directly impacting the center of the transmission array. Lin Ming was completely enveloped by this purple light.

1000 feet away, Mu Qianyu stood in the air as the howling gales swirled around her, her features blurred by the endless purple light.

Lin Ming could see Mu Qianyu's lips slightly move. A faint voice traveled through the horizon and entered his mind, "I'll wait for you here… until you return…"

As the voice ended, all of it seemed to be blown away by the wind; it was unclear just what the following words were. After Lin Ming heard these final words, he had already stepped into the vast and mysterious space channel…

…………

Besides Mu Qianyu and a few others, no one else knew about Lin Ming leaving. As for the disciples that had seen Lin Ming depart, they had been given the command to not utter a single word; there were even some that were locked away.

This truth was of great importance. If it was ever leaked out, Divine Phoenix Island would be placed in a situation beyond redemption. Mu Qingyi was extremely careful, she had already learnt a lesson from Mu Chihuo. This time, she would ensure Divine Phoenix Island would keep this secret completely safe.

When the 20 some Life Destruction masters finally exited the Demon God Imperial Palace, they launched a crazy, all-encompassing search for Lin Ming, the Nirvana Dragon Root, and the Cosmic Melting Furnace. All of the large sects exercised their spy networks and connections, but their searches were fruitless. It really did seem as if Lin Ming had died.

A few years later, these greater powers would slowly forget this matter. Lin Ming was just a rare talent that fell from the sky, like a falling meteor. When people mentioned this number one talent of the South Horizon Region, there would be those that sighed as well as those that envied. There were even some that couldn't help but gloat at this fact.

A genius that died was no longer a genius.

In the absence of Lin Ming, the South Horizon Region still remained in chaos. The South Sea war continued as it had before. Although Xuan Wuji had failed in his search for the Nirvana Dragon Root, in the end, the Giant Leviathan Saint Beast fell into his hand. With the involvement of the Black Flood Dragon Clan, the flames of war burnt through the entire South Horizon Region…

Chapter 512 – Laws of Space and Time

Chapter 512 – Laws of Space and Time

…

…

…

“This is a space channel?” Lin Ming looked at the channel around him that overflowed with vibrant color, surprised to the point where he couldn’t even speak. He felt as if he was living in a kaleidoscope, with countless colors flowing past him at a rapid rate. These colors blended and merged into one, causing Lin Ming to feel dizzy from the overwhelming visual sensation.

As Lin Ming saw the strips of multicolored energy, his mind stirred; were these lines the so-called space energy?

The ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ technique had many moves that included the Concept of Space and the Concept of Time. Similarly, ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’ also revolved around the Concept of Space. However, until now, Lin Ming hadn’t even begun to understand just how the Concept of Space worked. This was because he had no idea where to come into contact with this sort of elusive and mysterious space energy.

Normally, the space within a world was in a steady state and the space energy was hidden away. Only in a space channel would one be able to see the power of active space.

Lin Ming felt as if his mind had fused into one with this space energy. His spirit, his will, and even his body seemed to transform into a state of energy, perfectly fitting with the flow of space. As he quickly traveled through an endless distance, he felt an indescribably wonderful feeling.

Was this the Law of the Space? The Concept of Space?

As Lin Ming was immersing himself in perceiving the Concept of Space, he suddenly heard Demonshine's voice in his ear, "This Saint urges you not to indulge too much in this feeling, otherwise you will lose yourself in the turbulent space and your body will deconstruct into energy; there will no way to bring you back together! I don't care about you, but this Saint is still residing in your spiritual sea. I don't want to die together with you."

Demonshine's words were like a ringing alarm that woke up Lin Ming. Lin Ming was shocked to suddenly discover that the energy around his body was scattering away, like a dandelion being blown about in the wind.

Lin Ming's heart went cold, and he quickly withdrew his perception. As he was halfway there, he suddenly felt a shaking in his body, and something like a sharp cone piercing him, followed by a massive migraine. His thoughts slowed down, and it was like he was living a nightmare; he was obviously conscious, but it was impossible for him to move. Even breathing was difficult.

"This is… a space storm?" Lin Ming finally said to Demonshine with some effort.

"No… a space storm does not look like this… This is the twisting of space and time…" Demonshine's voice also came in intermittent bursts; it seemed he couldn't adapt perfectly to this situation.

Space and time were twisted?

Lin Ming's mind shook and he instantly understood what Demonshine meant. The so-called space warp was changing the scale of space that one was accustomed to, and was different from actual space. As for the distortion of time, that was subjective to one's own time, and was different from the flow rate of normal time.

Were these the Laws of Space and Time that were described within the 'Great Desolate Blood Halberd Art'?

Lin Ming felt as if he could almost touch upon some threshold. But, in this time, he couldn’t afford to meditate on this. He could only try to remember this helplessly strange feeling of space and time twisting around him.

He tried to adjust his thoughts and inner true essence flow in order to adapt to this different time and space. The true essence in Lin Ming’s meridians constantly condensed together and changed, but he still wasn’t able to keep up with the twisted passage of time. This caused all of Lin Ming’s movements to appear incomparably slow.

This was a new and novel experience to Lin Ming, but it was also extremely dangerous. This was also the first time that Lin Ming had come into contact with the mysterious Laws of Space and Time.

At this moment, the weak and hurried voice of Demonshine appeared in Lin Ming’s ear, “In front of you, space turbulence!”

“Mm!?”

Lin Ming was startled. He looked up to see that there was a break in the channel of rainbow-colored lights in front of him. The energy of the space lines there was chaotic and messed up, as if a storm was blowing through it.

“This is bad!”

Lin Ming grit his teeth and revolved his bodily true essence to the limit. Arcs of lightning surrounded Lin Ming, and at the same time 15 Blood Drinking Seals also spun around Lin Ming, twisting about.

Bang!

Lin Ming suddenly shook, and the arcs of thunder that surrounded him were instantly dispersed. The Blood Drinking Seals were even scattered, immediately becoming much dimmer.

In that moment, Lin Ming felt as if he were being squeezed together by two mountains; his organs were on the verge of exploding. Even after having completed 100% Tempering Marrow, his skeleton kept issuing out popping sounds, unable to bear such a great pressure.

Peng!

On Lin Ming's ring finger, a low-grade spatial ring instantly exploded, the pieces falling into the turbulent flow of space. Lin Ming watched as a pile of jade slips and pills turned into ash, instantly and utterly annihilated.

It was shocking watching these material objects turn into ash and disappear without a trace; it was difficult to put into words.

Bang!

As the spatial ring exploded, Lin Ming felt as if he had pounded into a thick metal wall. His organs shook, and a sweet taste came from the back of his throat as if he spat out a mouthful of blood.

But even now, Lin Ming had endured this pressure and hadn't opened the Heretical God Force. He was aware that this was just the start of the turbulent space flows. If he opened the Heretical God Force now, then he wouldn't be able to resist the more violent and dangerous space storms that lay behind this one.

Unfortunately, in this space channel, there was no room for him to perceive the Concepts of Space and Time. He could only brand the feeling into his mind and try to remember as much as possible.

"Lin Ming, in front of you! A second turbulent space flow!"

Demonshine's voice sounded out in Lin Ming's mind. He looked up to see that not too far away was also a completely chaotic mass of space energy…

Sometimes a blessing was a curse, and this curse could not be avoided. Lin Ming took out a pill from his main spatial ring and swallowed it. He revolved his bodily true essence to the limit and summoned the Blood Drinking Seals, directly rushing into the turbulent flow of space…

……….

After several days –

Lin Ming woke up from his coma. His eyes opened, and the fuzzy blur around him began to clear. He was surprised to find that he was lying on a vast and broad grassland. The grass beneath him was wet, and it stuck uncomfortably to his body.

Lin Ming ruefully smiled as he recalled the experience from a few days back.

When he had taken a transmission array before, he had arrived at this destination in the blink of an eye. But, this ultra-long range ancient transmission array actually had a transmission that lasted a whole three days!

In these three days, Lin Ming had experienced countless dangers in the space channel. The turbulent space flows, space storms, space whirlpools, mysterious black holes, and even the warping of time; all of this was shouldered by Lin Ming. With his will, he was able to persist through all of them. He had even cleanly eaten almost all the pills that he had.

Then on the third day, even Demonshine, who was resting in Lin Ming's spiritual sea, had helped Lin Ming resist the space storm. After all, they were all in a boat together and as soon as Lin Ming died, they would both die.

At the end, Lin Ming was a lamp that had burnt through all its oil and even Demonshine had overdrawn his soul force, being forced to fall into a deep slumber. But then, they had finally escaped the turbulent flow of space.

However, after stepping out of the transmission array, Lin Ming could only complain of the hardship in his heart. It turned out that the exit point of the transmission array was on a violently dangerous mountain peak that rose into the Primal Chaos Heavens.

The Primal Chaos Heavens were where the origin energies of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind and thunder all existed in their strongest states; it was incomparably brutal and tyrannical. If a martial artist with insufficient cultivation were to be exposed to the Primal Chaos Heavens, then they would be struck to death by the deadly origin energy flows.

If Lin Ming were in his top condition, he naturally wouldn't care about being struck by these sort of origin energy currents. But at this time, he was completely exhausted of energy. After being struck by these origin energy currents, the situation of his body became even worse. After he used the last remaining dregs of his strength to escape the Primal Chaos Heavens, Lin Ming didn't even have any energy left to fly.

Back when Lin Ming was at South Aurora Island he had eliminated a great number of South Sea Demon Region squads and had taken their spatial rings, and also seized a few spirit boats. If it wasn't for these treasures that he could take out to ride on instead of walking, then Lin Ming might have really perished here at the Primal Chaos Heavens.

Before he knew it, Lin Ming lost control of the spirit boat because of his weak true essence and crashed into the grasslands, immediately falling unconsciously afterwards.

He didn't know how long he had been unconscious for, but after he woke up he felt a rumbling in his belly. Lin Ming was very hungry.

After inspecting his body, he found that of his original six or seven spatial rings, there was only one high-level one left. As for the other spatial rings, they had all exploded under the pressure of the turbulent space flows.

The Cosmic Melting Furnace still existed safe and sound within Lin Ming's dantian. All of Lin Ming's most precious treasures, pills, jade slips, and even the Disenchanting Dream

Light were all contained within the Cosmic Melting Furnace. Thankfully, there were no problems with them.

It was just that with Lin Ming's current condition, not to mention opening the Cosmic Melting Furnace, but even summoning it was impossible.

As for his body, Lin Ming wryly smiled.

Around 70% of his meridians had been damaged, and he simply couldn't connect his true essence. This caused Lin Ming's dantian to become like a waterless lake, almost dried up.

And the worst was that Lin Ming's bones, marrow and organs had been injured. Lin Ming had a very stronger recovery ability, but it would still take a long time to recover damage to his bone marrow.

"This is really bad..."

Lin Ming sighed. He forced a smile and shook his head. If he couldn't connect true essence in his meridians, then he couldn't practice his cultivation methods. If that were so, then he would take this time to properly meditate on the Laws of Space and Time that he had experienced a few days ago. This could be considered the greatest harvest he had from traveling through space.

In this way, a few days passed. Lin Ming hungrily ate his dried rations and thirstily drank the Solar Origin Water within his spatial ring. As he meditated on the Laws of Space and Time, he quietly waited for his bone marrow and body to regenerate.

But on this day, a caravan appeared in the grassland. The sound of camels entered Lin Ming's ear. He looked up and gasped. The so-called 'camels' were large to the point of being terrifying. The camels were 30 to 40 feet high, and a single leg was as high as two people. When Lin Ming saw the 'people' that were riding atop the camels, he was even more shocked.

The ‘person’ was a dark blue-gray metal tone all over. He was bare-chested, and his muscles were massive. His arms were thicker than an adult’s thighs, and he had pointed ears that were half a foot long. He carried a great ax on his back, and the shaft was as thick as an arm. At this time, this figure was looking at Lin Ming with disdain.

“Giant Demon?”

Lin Ming was stunned. This ‘person’ right now was actually a member of the Giant Demon race!

That was the same race as the Netherworld Great Emperor and the Demon Emperor! Heavens! Had he arrived in the same world as the Giant Demons!?

Chapter 513 – Giant Demon World

Chapter 513 – Giant Demon World

…

…

…

Was this the world that the Giant Demon race lived on or was this the Sky Spill Continent?

Lin Ming was astounded. He wanted to summon Demonshine, but because the Demonshine had overdrawn his soul force he had been forced into a deep slumber. No matter how Lin Ming tried to summon him there was no response.

Lin Ming finally gave up trying to contact him. Thinking about it, the Demon Emperor himself was from the ancient Giant Demon race. If so, then it wouldn't be strange if the Demon God Imperial Palace's ultra long-range transmission array connected to the Giant Demon race's world!

Did the Netherworld Great Emperor that appeared three thousand years ago also come from the Giant Demon World?

As Lin Min was thinking, his complexion suddenly changed and a grim light shined in his eyes. He saw the Giant Demon on the large camel's back pull out a thick chain from a pocket and throw it at him!

What!?

Looking at the other's joking eyes, Lin Ming fumed with anger. His entire body was seriously injured, and he wasn't able to use his true essence or the power of Tempering

Marrow at the moment. Even after several days of recovery, he was only able to use a bit of his bodily strength. With Lin Ming's current condition, he would only be able to match up to a normal Houtian realm martial artist.

Lin Ming moved sideways, dodging the chain and taking advantage of the time to stand up. The Giant Demon atop the camel's back glared at him, and Lin Ming subconsciously wanted to take out his weapon. However, regardless of whether it was the Great Desolate Blood Halberd or the Purple Comet Spear, both of them were within the Cosmic Melting Furnace that he couldn't take out. Even if he could, Lin Ming wouldn't have dared to. With his current weakness, taking out those sorts of treasures was only asking for someone to come and murder him for his possessions.

"Mo Da, what's going on?" Another voice came from behind the camel-riding Giant Demon.

Lin Ming was astonished. This was actually the language of the Giant Demon race. Lin Ming had inherited the memories of the Demon Emperor, thus he was able to understand around 80 to 90% of the opposite party's words.

"Hehe, today is a lucky day, we managed to grab another slave. A Houtian realm martial artist is worth a bit of money. But, what a pity… his foundation is lacking."

The Giant Demon called Mo Da said as he jumped off the camel.

In Lin Ming's current situation, his meridians were blocked in many places, and the true essence in his dantian was messy and deficient. No matter how one looked at it, it was as if he were a Houtian realm martial artist. A Xiantian realm martial artist had their true essence condensed into a cyclone in their dantian; it definitely didn't look like this. Also, there were many blockages right now in Lin Ming's meridians which was a major sign of an unstable foundation. This was why the Giant Demon named Mo Da had assumed this.

“A human, well, you can only depend on their cultivation. It’s already not bad that this one has reached the Houtian realm!” Another Giant Demon jeered, “This fellow might be worth a low level Blood Demon Crystal!”

As the two Giant Demons bantered, they had completely taken Lin Ming to be some sort of farm animal. This caused Lin Ming to burn with anger. But, his current situation was extremely poor; it would have been a very dumb decision on his part to start any conflict here.

‘They think I am a slave! No wonder they threw the chain at me from the beginning, they want to lock me up just like a slave.’

Lin Ming knew that in some far away, barren lands, such as the Southern Wilderness, if one caught a savage then that savage would be their slave. And now that he was in the Giant Demon World, as a human, it wasn’t strange that he would be turned into a slave if he was caught out in the wild.

Lin Ming looked at their cultivation and was surprised to see that their dantian was completely empty. It could even be said that they didn’t have one.

Mm? Were they not even Houtian realm martial artists?

It looked as if these two Giant Demons also hadn’t even connected their meridians. If they were humans, they would have connected their meridians as long as they hit the Pulse Condensation Period.

They weren’t Pulse Condensation Period martial artists either…

Lin Ming’s heart went cold, and then he suddenly realized what was happening. It could be that they simply did not follow down the Xiantian realm, Revolving Core realm path of the Essence Gathering System. It was highly likely that what they refined was their own bodies, and followed the Tempering Marrow path!

‘So that’s what it is!’ Lin Ming was finally clear why there was such strange laws within the broken world of the Demon God Imperial Palace that suppressed true essence based systems.

Most of the disciples of the Demon God Imperial Palace had practiced refining their bodies. This way, if the Demon God Imperial Palace were to ever be invaded by martial artists of the Essence Gathering System, then those martial artists would be suppressed by the laws there. Naturally, the Demon God Imperial Palace would hold a great advantage in this situation.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming ruefully smiled. It seemed that the great lucky chance he had found at the Demon God Imperial Palace that he had taken advantage of was because of this reason…

“Boy, I advise you to smarten up and not resist, otherwise you will experience pain of the flesh!” Mo Da sneered as he looked at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a cold light. However, he eventually didn’t do anything. If he fought now, then it was likely that he would die.

He turned to look at the caravan behind Mo Da, only to find a massive caravan with dozens of people. But, including Mo Da, there were only three of them that were of the Giant Demon Race; the rest were humans.

Of the dozens of humans, some were male and some were female. Most of them were young adults, but there were also a few elderly mixed within.

Most of these were mortals, and only some were martial artists. Of those martial artists, their cultivation was very low. None of them surpassed the Altering Muscle stage.

These humans followed the caravan or carried baggage with them. They all wore worn out gray clothes and thin cloth shoes, and some of them also had large patches on their clothes.

As Lin Ming saw this, it dawned on him that all of these people were slaves!

In the world of Giant Demons, it seemed as if Giant Demons were the higher race. Then, it wasn't strange if different races were to be taken as slaves…

Behind the Giant Demon, an old man that was following the caravan looked at Lin Ming and sighed. Lin Ming was obviously young and talented. He had reached the Houtian realm, but was still caught to become a slave.

"I'll give you three breaths of time to think about it. Do you want to obey? Or die?" Mo Da said somewhat impatiently.

Lin Ming tamped down the burgeoning anger in his heart. In the next moment he had calmed down. Although he didn't know what the cultivation of these three Giant Demons was, he could still approximate that their strength was above that of a normal Xiantian martial artist.

With Lin Ming in such a poor state, he absolutely would not be their match. He could only endure this until he had fully recovered his strength.

Seeing Lin Ming give up his resistance, Mo Da was very satisfied, "Looks like you're quite smart. Now go to the back of the group. You will be given mining work arrangements later. If you work hard enough, you might even be able to get rid of your slave status!"

Lin Ming didn't say a single world, he silently walked over to the group.

Mo Da was in a very good mood. He shouted out at the caravan and continued down the road.

After Lin Ming quietly arrived at the back of the caravan, he eventually came over to an old man who was driving a cart. This old man's cultivation was at the Altering Muscle stage and he was driving a 30 foot wide carriage by himself. In front of the carriage, there were six horses that were at least three times larger than the horses that Lin Ming usually saw. Every horse was extremely strong and vigorous, with thick, sturdy legs. Not just that, but every one of these horses had a horn sticking out of its head.

“Young man, you’re from the outside, right?” The old man was very skilled at driving the carriage. As he drove, he also smoked.

Lin Ming’s eyebrows shot up, “Hm? From Uncle’s meaning, are there often outsiders?”

Chapter 514 – Slap Yourself 50 Times

Chapter 514 – Slap Yourself 50 Times

…

…

…

Lin Ming needed to understand this strange Giant Demon World as soon as possible and learn of its general situation. He needed to know the distributions of powers, how many masters there were and how powerful they were, and all sorts of other things in order to prevent himself from wading into trouble. The more confused he was, the more danger he would be in.

"Outsiders don't often come. It's just that your clothes don't resemble those of someone from Bewitching Cloud Prairie. In this prairie, humans aren't allowed to put on colored clothes; they can only wear gray clothes. Otherwise, the will be punished. This is the only reason that I said you were an outsider. Did you lose your way within the Bewitching Cloud Prairie?"

Lin Ming took this opportunity and nodded, "Yes, I indeed came from the outside. Uncle, how big is this Bewitching Cloud Prairie? What sort of forces are here?"

"Bewitching Cloud Prairie…" The old man flicked away his smoke ashes and said, "Bewitching Cloud Prairie is a very vast and broad land. There are hundreds upon thousands of large and small Giant Demon tribes that exist here, and there is also a small number of human tribes…"

"Human tribes?" Lin Ming was stunned, "Humans can also establish tribes here?"

“Mm… yes, there are also strong humans. In this Bewitching Cloud Prairie, strength is power, and strength is respect. As long as one is strong and has some heritage, they can gather a group of martial artists together. They can cultivate, develop, grow, strengthen, and bring in mortal people in order to develop even more… Like this, a tribe would be formed.”

Lin Min nodded. It seemed that this Giant Demon World was even more chaotic than the Sky Spill Continent. He didn’t need to ask to imagine that these tribes competed for resources. There was territory, true essences mines, and other things. Great slaughters must also be inevitable. If a tribe was exterminated, it was probably a casual or even overnight affair.

As Lin Ming thought about this, he asked, “Uncle, have you heard about the Sky Spill Continent?”

“Sky Spill Continent?” The old man was surprised, “I don’t know what the Sky Spill Continent you are talking about is, but this mainland is called the Holy Demon Continent. The Bewitching Cloud Prairie is also just a small part of the Holy Demon Continent.”

So that’s how it was…

Although he had been partially expecting this, Lin Ming was still secretly startled to hear the old man talk about this. The Sky Spill Continent was also very broad, and the South Horizon Region was just a tiny corner of that landmass. But up until now, Lin Ming had never left the South Horizon Region.

And currently, it seemed as if this Holy Demon Continent wasn’t any smaller than the Sky Spill Continent.

“Uncle, I was wondering, in this Bewitching Cloud Prairie, who is the strongest Giant Demon leader?”

“Strongest… this old man isn’t too clear. But, I know that there are some large tribes in this Bewitching Cloud that might have a Demon King powerhouse. The largest tribes might have a two-star Demon King, or even a three-star Demon King.”

Lin Min was a bit confused, “What human realm does a three-star Demon King correspond to? Xiantian? Revolving Core?”

The old man looked at Lin Ming with surprise; obviously, he thought it was strange that Lin Ming didn’t seem to know anything. But he still gave a detailed explanation, “The Giant Demon Race practices a cultivation method that is different from us humans. We cultivate the dantian, and they cultivate their body and demon crystal. Those that start off in the Body Transformation realm are called Demon Soldiers. Those that have condensed their demon crystal are called Demon Generals. Once they have reached Large Success of their demon crystal, they are called Demon Kings. And above Demon Kings, there are Demon Emperors, but those existences are legends.”

“Demon Soldiers, Demon Kings, and Demon Generals are all divided into six ranks. If you want to know what human realm a Demon General or Demon King corresponds too, then that is too difficult. That is because within the Giant Demon Race, their talent, body, and overall fighting strength are higher than a human’s. A Demon King level powerhouse might be equal to a human Revolving Core powerhouse in terms of relative status within their tribes, but a Demon King powerhouse will always look down on a human Revolving Core powerhouse.”

The old man gave a great deal of information. Lin Ming was able to quickly estimate what the cultivation divisions were within the Giant Demon Race.

The one to six stars of a Demon Soldier were likely equal to the six stages of a human’s bodily transformation period.

A one to six star Demon General was probably equal to humans’ Houtian and Xiantian realms.

And a one to six star Demon King was probably equal to humans' Revolving Core martial artists.

As for Demon Emperors, they were equal to the Divine Sea realm.

Of course, this was only a rough estimation. The cultivation methods of the Giant Demon Race were completely different from those of humans; Giant Demons had stronger bodies than humans did. Lin Ming only made this estimation in order to come to a better understanding of the situation.

"It looks like the Giant Demon Race's cultivation method isn't the same as the Body Transformation system from the Realm of the Gods. There really are countless roads to take in the path of martial arts. I wonder just how strong I would be in my most complete state?"

After Lin Ming had broken through to the Xiantian realm and had simultaneously completed 100% Tempering Marrow, he only had a vague understanding of his own strength. He was able to kill Lei Jingtian under the suppression of the broken world's laws. If so, then his strength might be at the most early of the middle Revolving Core realm powerhouses. He might even be a bit stronger than Mu Qianyu, but not by too much.

Lin Ming asked, "Uncle, what realm is that Giant Demon Mo Da at?"

The old man quickly paled at this question. He quickly whispered, "Young man, don't speak so rashly. Mo Da has many ears here. In this Bewitching Cloud Prairie, a slave cannot call their master directly by the name. They must refer to them as Lord or Master, otherwise their tongue will be cut off!"

Tongue will be cut off… Lin Ming frowned. It seemed that this Bewitching Cloud Prairie had extremely strict hierarchical rules.

The old man didn't seem to know how to use true essence sound transmissions. He put away his smoking pipe and in a hushed whisper said, "Lord Mo Da is a five-star Demon General; a human Xiantian master will not be Lord Mo Da's match."

A five-star Demon General, up the point of the Demon King realm, should be equal to the middle and late Xiantian realm. But, this old man actually said that a human Xiantian martial artist was no match for Mo Da…

Lin Ming casually smiled. This Giant Demon race might be naturally stronger than humans, but it was also probably because the humans within the Bewitching Cloud Prairie were just too weak.

If it were a Xiantian martial artist like Mu Qianyu or Mu Bingyun, then 10 Mo Das would just be serving up food.

Lin Ming chatted with the old man, and finally came to a basic understanding of Bewitching Cloud Prairie. As the old man just had a cultivation of the Altering Muscle stage, he didn't know too much about what was happening outside of the Bewitching Cloud Prairie. Like this, they spoke until the sun set, before finally reaching their destination. This Silent Green Tribe that they came to was just a medium sized tribe within the Bewitching Cloud Prairie.

Within the Silent Green Tribe, there was not a single stone building. Instead, it was almost completely tents. These tents were much larger than the ones Lin Ming had seen before. There were even some tents that were 200 feet high and looked more like palaces.

The entire tribe was colored in a dark gray style. Matched with the broad sunset of the vast grasslands behind it, it gave off a very heavy and solemn feeling.

The Silent Green Tribe did not have and walls. Outside of the massive gathering of tents, there was only a fence of logs that circled around them. This fence was over a 100 feet high, and the tips were sheared into sharp points. They were like sharp swords that stabbed into the sky, hideous and fierce.

Walking into the tribe, one could see 10 foot high Giant Demons everywhere. They were all bare-chested, and their skin was the color of dark metal. Lin Ming wasn't short himself, but compared to these Giant Demons, he only barely reached their shoulders.

When these Giant Demons saw Lin Ming and the other humans, they either ignored them or glanced at them dismissively. Giant Demons were arrogant and believed in the superiority of their race. To them, ‘human’ was the same word for small and weak slaves.

Within the Silent Green Tribe, there were at least twice as many humans than there were Giant Demons. Most of the humans here had the status of slaves, but there were a small portion that had the status of being a ‘commoner’. However, although they were called a commoner, their status wasn’t much higher than a slave. Every year they would have to perform a large number of services in exchange for meager rations, all in order to barely maintain their lives.

Whether it was a commoner or a slave, everyone had a identification plate. A commoner’s identification plate had their name written down. As for a slave, they had their number and owner’s name written down. Giant Demons would often refer to their slaves by these numbers.

After Mo Da entered the city, he simply didn’t bother with Lin Ming. Compared to a five-star Demon General that a human Xiantian master could not even match up with, a Houtian martial artist with a shaky foundation like Lin Ming had no need for his concern.

Mo Da had a servant bring Lin Ming to a slave registration hall, and then went off into the tribe to enjoy himself.

Lin Ming was brought to the Giant Demon Race’s human affairs hall. There, he was assigned a place, an identification plate, as well as his division of labor.

The Giant Demons that managed the human affairs hall were slightly shorter than most other Giant Demons. The one in front of him was only nine feet tall. On this Giant Demon’s face, there was a very vicious looking scar.

Lin Ming indifferently glanced at him. After a long time, he still wasn’t able to accurately determine just what this Giant Demon’s cultivation was. But, he could estimate that with his aura, this scar-faced Giant Demon was most likely a three-star Demon General. That would mean he was equal to a human Houtian realm martial artist.

The scar-faced Giant Demon lazily looked at Lin Ming. He impatiently said, “Cultivation? Age?”

“Early Houtian realm cultivation. 23 years old.” Lin Ming calmly replied, his tone even.

At this moment, Lin Ming’s dantian was in a mess and very cloudy. Many of his meridians were also blocked. He looked no different from a common Houtian realm martial artist. Let alone this scar-faced Giant Demon, even if Lei Jingtian were to stand in front of him, he probably would not be able to sense Lin Ming’s true cultivation.

As for lying about his age, that shouldn’t arouse any suspicions. It was just too shocking for a human martial artist to appear that had reached the Houtian realm before he was 18.

The scar-faced Giant Demon sized up Lin Ming, looking him over from head to toe. He noticed all of the blocked meridians that Lin Ming had, and revealed a disdainful expression. This sort of martial artist with an unstable foundation would not have any future. In their lifetime, they would at most be able to reach the late Houtian realm.

This scar-faced Giant Demon was himself a two-star Demon General. Because the Giant Demon Race had an advantage in talent over humans, this scar-faced demon wouldn’t even place a human Houtian martial artist at the same realm in his eyes, much less this shaky early Houtian realm Lin Ming.

“Who is your master?” The scar-faced Giant Demon slowly asked as he made a few strokes on his paper.

Hearing the term ‘master’, Lin Ming slightly frowned. But, he held it down and replied, “Mo Da.”

Now that his situation was extremely bad, it would be hopeless if he tried to start conflict with the Silent Green Tribe.

“F*ck!” The scar-faced Giant Demon pounded the table, “Know the rules! Your master’s name is not something a worthless slave like you can call out! Every slave that refers to their master by name must have their tongue ripped out. Seeing as you have just entered the Silent Green Tribe, I will be lenient to you. Slap yourself 50 times!”

Chapter 515 – Get an Inch, Want a Mile

Chapter 515 – Get an Inch, Want a Mile

…

…

…

Hearing the scar-faced Giant Demon’s words, Lin Ming’s heart overflowed with murderous intent; he immediately wanted to lash out.

However, he took stock of his situation again. His strength right now was only equal to a Houtian realm martial artist and he couldn’t use his two weapons. In this case, it was hard to tell whether or not he could fight this scar-faced Giant Demon, much less someone like Mo Da.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and calmed the murderous emotions that swelled in his heart. He said, “I’ve just entered Silent Green Tribe and am unfamiliar with the customs here. I hope that milord is able to…”

“Shut up!” Lin Ming hadn’t even finished speaking before the scar-faced Giant Demon rudely interrupted him, “You think you can balance out your crimes just because you don’t know the rules?”

The scar-faced Giant Demon sneered, but his eyes actually fell onto Lin Ming’s spatial ring. The corners of his mouth curved up in a greedy smile. “Take out a low-grade Blood Demon Crystal and I’ll forget that this matter happened. Otherwise, slap yourself 50 times and no less! If you don’t want to slap yourself, then follow the rules and cut off your own tongue!”

The scar-faced Giant Demon mentioned a Blood Demon Crystal once again. Lin Ming had already heard about Blood Demon Crystals before. Back in the South Sea battlefield, Blood Demon Island also produced many Blood Demon Crystals. There were many martial artists that went to Blood Demon Island in the hope that they would be able to obtain a Blood Demon Crystal. However, those that went to Blood Demon Island were mostly delivering themselves into the hand of death. Qin Xingxuan had also been sent to Blood Demon Island. If it wasn't for Lin Ming arriving on time to save her, then Qin Xingxuan would have perished there.

Mo Da and the scar-faced Giant Demon had both mentioned the Blood Demon Crystals. It seemed that Blood Demon Crystals were quite valuable to the Giant Demon Race.

"I don't have any Blood Demon Crystals." Lin Ming blankly said. But he wasn't feeling too well in his heart; he had discovered that he had overlooked a matter. The spatial ring on his hand was a low-grade earth-step spatial ring. Although it wasn't anything special to him, it was an extremely valuable treasure to normal Houtian realm martial artists.

If this were to be discovered by the scar-faced Giant Demon, it would be extremely troublesome.

"Hehe." The scar-faced Giant Demon sinisterly laughed twice. He didn't expect that Lin Ming would have something precious like a Blood Demon Crystal. The reason that he had opened his mouth was to lay down this trap for extortion.

"Then what do you have?" The scar-faced Giant Demon had made clear that he wanted to extort Lin Ming. There were many slaves who were martial artists at the Pulse Condensation period or even Houtian realm. Their belongings belonged to their master, but the truth was that a master usually didn't take the belongings of a slave.

For instance, there was Mo Da. Mo Da himself was a five-star Demon General and considered invincible among human Xiantian martial artists. He had a very high status within Silent Green Tribe and was extremely wealthy. How could he possibly look at the belongings of a common Houtian realm martial artist? Such little worth really held no interest to him.

On the contrary, these belongings could be useful if they were left to the slave. The Silent Green Tribe's slaves were sent to gather Blood Demon Crystals, but in order to mine the ancient ore that contained the Blood Demon Crystals, there were layers upon layers of dangers that one could encounter. These belongings could therefore save a slave's life and increase their combat strength.

"There are some pills, true essence stones, cultivation method jade slips..." Lin Min coolly said.

"F*ck! What does this father want to do with your shitty human cultivation method jade slips! Take off your spatial ring and I will look through it myself!"

The scar-faced Giant Demon immediately put out his hand, not allowing Lin Ming the chance to reject.

Lin Ming's mind sank, this was what he had been afraid of happening. Luckily, he had kept all of his greatest treasures, such as the Purple Comet Spear, Great Desolate Blood Halberd, a massive amount of medium-grade true essence stones, the most precious pills, and other such items within the Cosmic Melting Furnace. The Cosmic Melting Furnace was located within Lin Ming's dantian, so it was impossible for others to detect it.

But, the problem was the low-grade earth-step spatial ring in comparison to Lin Ming's cultivation; it would be difficult to make an explanation.

If he aroused suspicions...

"Motherf*cker, are you retarded? Hurry up and take out the spatial ring or do you want to defy my orders?" The scar-faced Giant Demon impatiently said. Searching a slave a taking their belongings was a tacitly allowed custom among the Giant Demon tribes. As long as they left a slave a weapon and some minor recovery pills and some bits of true essence stones, then they could take everything else away. The slave's master wouldn't say anything about this.

A slave didn't have much, but many slaves had accumulated a decent sized fortune.

"This father's patience is limited. Do you want to die? It will only take me a breath of time to kill you!" The scar-faced Giant Demon had finally lost his patience. He sullenly stood up, his hands gripped into fists that were making popping 'kakaka' sounds.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and slowly slid the spatial ring off his finger. This spatial ring was given to him by Mu Qianyu after he had arrived at Divine Phoenix Island. Although it couldn't be considered anything too valuable, it still had significant sentimental value.

"Damn! Bring it out!" The scar-faced Giant Demon grabbed the spatial ring. He wanted to punch Lin Ming also, but Lin Ming had dodged his fist.

"What? Boy, you also dare to hide? This father will ruin you... mm?" The scar-faced Giant Demon had just revolved the energy of his demon crystal when his mind suddenly stirred. He looked with disbelief at the spatial ring in his hand. The scar-faced Giant Demon had examined many spatial rings through the years. He only had to casually touch the spatial ring to tell that it was uncommon.

"This is..." The scar-faced Giant Demon's eyes widened, "A low-grade earth-step spatial ring!"

The boy actually had a low-grade earth-step spatial ring!? This sort of treasure was valuable even to someone like Lord Mo Da!

If he remembered correctly, Mo Da also had a low-grade earth-step spatial ring. And the quality of that ring was inferior to the one in this boy's hand!

"Where did you get this ring from?" The scar-faced Giant Demon's eyes shined brightly as he looked at Lin Ming.

“In a secret underground road. I picked it up from a dead martial artist.” Lin Ming had already come up with a reasonable explanation.

“This seems…” The scar-faced Giant Demon looked at Lin Ming suspiciously. But, this explanation made sense. No matter how he saw it, there was no other way that someone as weak as Lin Ming would have been able to obtain a spatial ring like this.

“Hehe, you have quite a good spatial ring…” The scar-faced Giant Demon played with the spatial ring, his eyes flashing with greed. In truth, the most sensible approach would have been to report this matter to Mo Da. But, if he did that then he wouldn’t have his share of this spatial ring.

If he pocketed this ring for himself, he would suffer if Mo Da were to find out. This wasn’t just a matter of several hundred low-grade true essence stones. Normally, if he were to take a slave’s belongings then those from above would turn a blind eye to his actions. But a low-grade earth-step spatial ring was simply too precious.

Thinking of this, the scar-faced Giant Demon’s eyes were filled with uncertainty. If it wasn’t too troublesome to explain why he killed Lin Ming, then he would definitely have done so in order to silence everyone who knew about this.

Lin Ming was able to faintly guess what the scar-faced Giant Demon was thinking of. He took a step back, nearing the exit. If this Giant Demon were to really come at him, then he would rush towards the door immediately.

As the scar-faced Giant Demon saw this, his savage expression was replaced with a funny smile. He thought for a moment, “You’re quite smart! Hehe, if I were to hand over this spatial ring and say that you found it at some ancient ruins, then what do you think the higher ups of the Silent Green Tribe would do? At that time, I think they might call you in for a little ‘interview’.”

“Are you threatening me?” Lin Ming seemed angry on the surface, but he was sighing with relief in his heart. What he had feared most was that this spatial ring would attract the attention of others to his identity, but this Giant Demon was just too corrupt; he wouldn't make this public.

It was much easier to handle things this way. In any case, Lin Ming really didn't care about the belongings within the spatial ring. As long as he was able to survive for a period of time and recover his strength, that would be ideal.

"Humph! You are not qualified for me to threaten! I want this spatial ring. This level of treasure is not something that matches with a common martial artist like you! I urge you to smarten up and not go around spouting nonsense, otherwise if I run into bad luck, then your last days will also be miserable!" As the scar-faced Giant Demon spoke, a thick murderous aura flowed out.

Lin Ming had calmed down, but he still maintained the expression of anger, as he if were mad to the point that it was difficult to speak. "You are going too far. A high-grade human-step spatial ring is worth several hundred medium-grade true essences stones. If you just take it…"

As Lin Ming spoke here, the scar-faced Giant Demon was stunned and then immediately happy. This foolish human had actually thought that this top low-grade earth-step spatial ring was a high-grade human-step one! But, this wasn't too strange. A spatial ring was already much more valuable than a treasure of the same level. For instance, a high-grade human-step spatial ring was worth almost as much as a low-grade earth-step treasure. To a normal Houtian realm martial artist, it wasn't something they would encounter in several lifetimes.

This mistake was for the best. Like this, it wouldn't arouse Mo Da's interest. The scar-faced Giant Demon was relieved. He turned his hand and spilled out a bunch of things from his own spatial ring. Then, he tossed his own medium-grade human-step spatial ring at Lin Ming along with a jade slip and an identification plate. He coldly said, "Take your things and get out of my sight!"

Lin Ming remained silent. He stared at the scar-faced Giant Demon for a moment, and then picked up the medium-grade human-step spatial ring, received his belongings and turned to leave.

“Wait!” The scar-faced Giant Demon suddenly shouted.

Lin Ming stopped in his steps.

The scar-faced Giant Demon took out a symbol paper from another spatial ring and ignited it. It turned into a Giant Demon totem that floated onto Lin Ming’s body…

“This is a slave tracking spell. I advise you not to think of escaping, otherwise you will pay a deep price!”

Lin Ming quietly linked his perception to this spell and he quickly understood the principles behind it. This sort of spell was used to deal with martial artists below the Xiantian realm; it was basically useless against him.

………

The scar-faced Giant Demon hadn’t taken any of Lin Ming’s belongings within the spatial ring. Afterwards, the jade slip that he had thrown at him had been inscribed with Lin Ming’s dwelling, and the identification plate held his number – 9566.

Atop this number was written one name – Mo Da.

Lin Ming received these items and followed the directions on the jade slip. Finally, he came to a small tent located at the corner of the Silent Green Tribe. This tent looked very old and worn out, and some places were even patched. But, the outside had been scrubbed clean.

To Lin Ming’s surprise, there was a hazy orange light that came from a window in the tent. Was there already someone living inside?

To Lin Ming’s amazement, a cute and lovable-looking 10 or 11 year old girl with pigtails came walking out from the tent…

Chapter 516 – Qing He

Chapter 516 – Qing He

…

…

…

How come there was a little girl at his assigned residence?

Lin Ming looked at this 10 or 11 year old little girl. She was wearing trousers and her sleeves were pulled up. There were patches on her pants, and she carried a heavy wooden basin in her hands. The bangs that covered her forehead were still dripping with drops of crystal clear water, and her dainty face had a small nose that curled upwards. Her lips were round and her cheeks were flushed red; she was like an apple wet with the morning dew. A fresh, simple, and natural air rolled off of her.

As the little girl saw Lin Ming, she was also surprised. But, after several breaths of time, she seemed to understand what was happening. "Are you Lord 9566?"

"Lord?" Lin Ming shook his head, "I am no lord. Do you also live here?"

"Mm! My name is Qing He and I live here with my grandma. In the future, my grandma will also take care of Milord's daily needs."

As the little girl spoke, the tent curtain was pulled aside. A 60 year old plus old woman appeared at the tent entrance. She had a head full of white hair, and her face was engraved with years of labor. Her eyes were slightly rusty but revealed a hint of respect.

"Milord, dinner is almost ready. Milord, please enjoy yourself."

The old woman and her granddaughter Qing He were both slaves. But even within slaves, there was still a large difference in the statuses between them. To them, Lin Ming was a martial artist, thus someone who was to be called ‘Lord’.

In the Giant Demon Tribe, those martial artists that were at the Pulse Condensation period or above were the main producers; gathering Blood Demon Crystals depended on these people. In order to guarantee that they could put more of their energy into mining, they had special people to look after their daily life.

This grandmother and granddaughter combo were Lin Ming’s assigned servants.

The tent was nearly completely empty. It could be described as utterly poor. Within the center of the tent there was a short table. On the table there were vegetables, pickled vegetables, and a small dish of cured meat. There was also a bowl of fragrant rice.

It wasn’t considered a sumptuous dinner, but there was a very pleasant and rich smell. For the past several days, Lin Ming had been trapped in the prairie, eating dry rations day after day until he felt like his lips had gone numb. Seeing such a dinner on the table, he took the chopsticks and picked up a piece of cured pork, biting down on it and devouring this delicious scent.

“Great taste!”

Lin Ming praised. As a martial artist, his appetite was much greater than normal person’s. He quickly cleared out all the vegetables on the table.

After quickly eating, Lin Ming inadvertently looked up, only to see Qing He standing in a corner of the tent, quietly pursing her lips as she stared at the cured meat underneath his chopsticks.

As Qing He saw Lin Ming looking at her, she immediately panicked and asked with a bit of fear, “Does Milord wish to drink some water?”

“I’m not thirsty. Have you eaten yet?”

“I’ve eaten. We already ate first.” The old granny walked beside Qing He, quickly hinting for her to pour Lin Ming a cup of water.

Lin Ming seemed to discover something. He put down the chopsticks and walked around the tent. This tent was very small, it only took several steps for him to see everything. There wasn’t much furniture inside. On the stove there was a pot, and behind that was a tank of rice. He picked it up, sensing the lightness of it.

He turned and lifted the pot cover. Within it, there was a small amount of rice gruel. Within the gruel, there were some vegetables. Almost all of the rice grains had been eaten. It seemed that this was the dinner of the grandma and granddaughter.

Seeing this, Lin Ming didn’t know what sort of feeling swelled in his heart. This grandmother and granddaughter were mortals and also slaves. In this Giant Demon Tribe, it was hard to imagine just how difficult their life had been.

As for today’s food, he had eaten a great deal of their rations, especially that slab of cured meat… as he remembered the gleam in Qing He’s eyes, Lin Ming felt a bit guilty.

In this Giant Demon Tribe, a mortal slave had no status. They really were no different from a farm animal. If they were unlucky enough to be owned by a bad master, then their fate would be miserable.

“Is this what you usually eat?” Lin Ming put the pot lid back on.

“Mm…” Qing He silently nodded, her eyes red.

“And the cattle and sheep in the back courtyard?” Lin Ming pointed outside of the tent. In the back, there was a number of cattle and sheep that were tied up.

“That is the main family’s cattle and sheep. If we let them out every day, we can exchange for some rice.”

Lin Ming sighed. He took out true essence stones from his spatial ring and placed them on the table, "Qing He. Tomorrow, go and buy some fish, ducks and chicken. And buy some more rice too."

"This... this can't be used." Qing He whispered. "Here, only blood crystal can be used to buy things. Other things cannot be used. Not just that, but we are slaves. If we take a blood crystal to go out and buy things, then we could be robbed..."

A bloodstone was currency made from the most low quality Blood Demon Crystals. 10,000 bloodstones were equal to one Blood Demon Crystal. The Giant Demon tribes had no rules that protected slaves. If a slave were to have their bloodstones stolen away as they went shopping, that was their bad luck. They could even be killed. As long as their master was compensated, then anything was possible.

Lin Ming felt uncomfortable in his heart. He put away all the true essence stones and said, "You go rest. I'm going to cultivate..."

"Mm..."

The tent was very small. The grandma and granddaughter left the main tent and squeezed themselves into a small adjacent tent, leaving Lin Ming alone. Lin Ming sat down on a bed and took out some pills, swallowing them down. He began to repair his meridians a bit at a time, directing his true essence to help speed up his marrow regeneration. If he continued for four or five days, he would be able to fully recover.

Before that time, Lin Ming could only endure all of this.

In order to recover from his wounds, Lin Ming didn't sleep for the entire night.

Early in the morning, just after daybreak, Lin Ming heard the sound of pots and pans colliding from the nearby tent. Before long, Qing He opened up the curtains. She popped in her tiny head and said, "Milord, your meal is ready."

The morning meal was very simple. There was a dish of pickled vegetables and half a pot of gruel. Because he had arrived, the gruel was much thicker today than it was yesterday. This was probably the reason that Qing He ate with such gusto. She cleaned out her bowl, and even licked the bottom.

“I’m full.” Qing He said. She rinsed out her dishes and went to the back, pulling up the cattle and sheep. “I will go graze the animals.”

“Be careful.” The grandma urged as she began to pick up the dishes.

Seeing this, Lin Ming didn’t say anything as he finished his gruel. A 10 or 11 year old girl with an undeveloped body only had a bowl of gruel to eat. Not just that, but she also had to go and graze sheep. This was the life of a common human…

The truth was, there was also some crab meat in his spatial ring that came from the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. It was only that the crab meat required a cooking temperature that was far too high in order to cook, and the energy was too rich so a mortal was unable to eat it. Today, he was prepared to exchange some true essence stones for a bloodstone in order to improve the life of the grandmother and granddaughter.

But at this time, the rear fence door opened, and two ten foot tall Giant Demons appeared in the back. As Qing He saw these two Giant Demons, her small face paled and she took several steps back. Her small fists were unconsciously balled together at her chest. Obviously, she was extremely afraid of these two Giant Demons.

“Lord Mo Da’s third wife has given birth to a boy. You do not need to help the cattle and sheep graze. We will take them.” The Giant Demon in the front blankly said. Since Mo Da’s third wife had given birth to a son, there was to be a big feast in three days. Thus, these animals had to be slaughtered.

After he finished speaking, the other Giant Demon went to gather the animals. There was a total of two cows and five sheep.

“This…” The granny felt a bit of foreboding in her heart. If she had been able to graze these sheep and cows for another half month, she would have been able to get a bag of rice. If they were taken, could she still obtain rice? “Two lords, these cattle and sheep…”

The Giant Demon that was rounding up the animals didn’t bother to respond to her. But then, he suddenly looked up and saw Lin Ming. ‘Mm? There was a martial artist here?’

A common mortal slave was poor and had few belongings. But, a martial artist was different. This sort of slave usually had many possessions that could be taken.

“Mm? There are two sheep missing?” The Giant Demon suddenly said.

The grandma’s face went white as a sheet. “My lord, how is that possible. We had taken five sheep at the start, how could there be any missing…”

“Cut the nonsense! If I said there are two missing then there are two missing!” As the Giant Demon spoke, he angrily pushed at the grandma. This Giant Demon was very strong. If he were to push down this grandma, then it was likely that she would break some bones.

However, the Giant Demon’s arm only reached halfway before he was stopped by someone else’s hand. Lin Ming had quietly and calmly appeared by the old grandma’s side.

“Boy, you are quite brave!” The Giant Demon was angry and wanted to move his hand. But, no matter how he tried to move it, it was like his hand was stuck in space; it was impossible to move.

“Cut the crap. How much are two sheep, I will compensate you!” Lin Ming’s mind was bright like a mirror. He was well aware just what this Giant Demon’s goal was. He didn’t need to banter around with them. He would remember everything that happened here today. Later, he would completely clear away all of their debts.

“Take out ten bloodstones!” The Giant Demon stretched out his hand.

“You…” Qing He’s eyes were red with anger, and her hot tears almost spilled out. “Ten bloodstones are enough to buy five cows!”

The Giant Demon only sneered; he simply didn’t care about Qing He’s words.

“I do not have bloodstones. I only have true essence stones.”

“Heh, 100 true essence stones are one bloodstone!” A true essence stone wasn’t much help to a Giant Demon. Thus, the exchange rate was very low.

“I will give 100 true essence stones, so leave behind two sheep. This is my bottom line!” As Lin Ming spoke, he grabbed onto the Giant Demon’s arm. As he suddenly pressed down his fingers, a thick wave of killing intent covered the Giant Demon.

The Giant Demon broke into a cold sweat from the pain. Lin Ming’s hand was like a pair of iron pliers. After all, this Giant Demon was only a Demon Soldier. As soon as Lin Ming pressed down on him, he felt a bit of fear. He took the true essence stones, left behind two sheep, and hurriedly left…

……….

At noon, the granny was cooking a feast of steaming lamb stew and sheep soup. Little Qing He’s face was flushed red, and she was happily smiling.

“Big Brother, this is for you to eat.”

As Little Qing He ate, she would constantly place some meat in front of Lin Ming. Every time she would wait for Lin Ming to eat it and then ask, “Is it delicious?”

“Delicious.” Lin Ming would honestly say. He was unable to restrain a sigh. With meat to eat and some clothes, it was enough for a common mortal to be happy.

After Lin Ming ate, he sat in meditation to recover from his wounds. He had to restore himself as quickly as possible, thus he wasn’t able to spend time trying to comprehend the Laws of Space and Time.

Like this, the days slowly passed. The Silent Green Tribe still hadn't organized anyone to go and mine Blood Demon Crystal ore. And on this day, Lin Ming's injuries and meridians had finally healed.

In his reconnected meridians, true essence happily flowed through. A thick swirl of true essence was condensed in his dantian, extremely eye catching. In his bones, his marrow was like thick and shining golden soup…

Lin Ming gripped his fists together. "It's time to collect my debts. But before that, I have to first absorb the Disenchanting Dream Light."

Chapter 517 – The Third Thunder Soul

Chapter 517 – The Third Thunder Soul

…

…

…

When Lin Ming had obtained the Disenchanting Dream Light, he had to run away, thus he didn't have time to absorb it. After he had entered the ancient transmission array and crossed countless miles of space, he had been severely wounded by the spatial storms. Afterwards, he wasn't even able to take out the Cosmic Melting Furnace, much less absorb he Disenchanting Dream Light.

Now Lin Ming was completely recovered. After being rebirthed like a butterfly in a cocoon, his true essence was more stable, and he was steadily into the early Xiantian realm.

For a martial artist to enter the early Xiantian realm before reaching 18 years of age… within the Sky Spill Continent, that was an unprecedented achievement since ancient times!

Lin Ming summoned the half foot sized Cosmic Melting Furnace from his dantian. The furnace revolved in the air, floating there. On the round furnace there was a chart of the myriad universe carved upon it. And in the center of this chart was a deep Golden Crow relief. This Golden Crow's entire body burned with flames, and it exuded a mystical aura.

Lin Ming used the secret method to open the first layer of space within the Cosmic Melting Furnace. The Purple Comet Spear, Great Desolate Blood Halberd, and all sorts of precious medicines and elixirs flew out.

These things were all completely taken into Lin Ming's spatial ring. After using earth-step spatial rings, Lin Ming wasn't very familiar with this basic medium-grade human-step spatial ring.

After taking all of these possessions, all that was left over was a jade box in Lin Ming's hand.

He opened the jade box, revealing an oval-shaped cocoon. This cocoon was completely covered in a red and purple striped pattern.

This was the sealed Disenchanting Dream Light!

Lin Ming linked his fingers together, and slowly peeled off the seals on the Thunder Soul. The Disenchanting Dream Light was finally revealed. It was a ball of light, and on the surface of this ball of light was the visage of a fearsome beast.

A high-grade earth-step Thunder Soul!

The truth was that there was still a large gap between different high-grade earth-step Thunder Souls. This Disenchanting Dream Light was one of the lower level high-grade earth-step Thunder Souls, but it was still much stronger than the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder and Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder.

Lin Ming took several deep breaths, adjusting his condition to a calm and empty state. Then, he pressed the Disenchanting Dream Light over his heart.

As soon as the Disenchanting Dream light entered Lin Ming's body, it immediately became furious. It turned into an ancient vicious beast, directly impacting towards Lin Ming's spiritual sea!

The Disenchanting Dream Light was a Thunder Soul that had been transformed from an ancient vicious beast's spiritual sea. The most difficult aspect of absorbing this Thunder Soul was to withstand the impact that it had on one's spiritual sea. But to Lin Ming, who had an extremely powerful soul defense, this wasn't a problem at all.

Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, the black vortex of the Samsara martial intent appeared. At the same time, the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder and Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder wove a massive network of lightning that fell over the Disenchanting Dream Light!

Before this, even when that demonic three-headed dog had broken into Lin Ming's spiritual sea, it had still been injured in a showdown with him. Now, this ancient vicious beast from the Sky Spill Continent naturally couldn't create too big a wave.

However, when the Disenchanting Dream Light collided with the black vortex of the Samsara martial intent, the result surprised Lin Ming. He felt a stabbing headache as a large portion of the black vortex was torn apart by the ancient vicious beast!

Mm?

Lin Ming paled. He nearly fell over from where he sat.

How could this happen?

Lin Ming's cultivation had broken through to the Xiantian realm. With his complete Tempering Marrow, his individual strength approached that of a middle Revolving Core martial artist. In addition, he also had the deterring power of the Heretical God Seed. Coupled together with his powerful soul defensive abilities, it should have been easy absorbing this high-grade earth-step Thunder Soul.

"Roar!!"

The ancient vicious beast sent out a howling cry, and a crazy, savage light shined in its eyes. It madly launched itself at Lin Ming's spiritual sea. From its actions, it seemed to hate Lin Ming to the bones and wanted both of them to perish together.

This was...

Lin Ming's mind stirred, and a sneer emerged on his face. That wily old Lei Jingtian! Even after he died, he was still trying to sabotage him!

“Extinguish for me!”

Lin Ming bit down on his tongue, forcefully waking himself up. He linked his true essence to the Heretical God Seed and opened it without a second of hesitation.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, the red and purple thunder began to furiously twist around.

In particular, the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder. It turned into a massive python that shot towards the ancient vicious beast!

“Lei Jingtian, you left behind a last wisp of your consciousness in the Disenchanting Dream Light in the hopes that you would destroy me in my spiritual sea. If I was a normal martial artist, then I would have really been done in by you. Too bad for you, I have experienced the vast inner space of the Magic Cube and now my soul defensive powers are far too strong. All of your plans have gone to waste!”

Lin Ming grit his teeth and a massive wave of pressure fell down from the Heretical God Seed. The Disenchanting Dream Light was immediately locked in space. The two-colored lightning had fully turned into a great python and Purple Flood Dragon that wrapped around the ancient vicious beast.

In the end, Lei Jingtian’s remnant consciousness couldn’t compare to that of the Supreme Elders from the Realm of the Gods. There was a sizzling ‘chi chi chi’ sound as the ancient vicious beast constantly emitted smoke. The beast’s face distorted, and a human face could be seen in the burning flames.

“Lin… Ming… even as a ghost, this old man… will not let you go… ahhhh!!!”

A guttural voice filled with hatred echoed in Lin Ming’s ears. Lin Ming remained unmoved. His eyes were cruel as he coldly said, “You won’t even have the chance to become a ghost. Now, turn to ash!”

Peng!

The Disenchanting Dream Light fiercely shuddered as if something inside had burst apart. Then, a surge of purple smoke emerged into the air. Within this smoke, there was the image of a grim face. This face was somewhat similar to Lei Jingtian's. It seemed to be in extreme agony. And then, it slowly drifted away in the wind before completely disappearing…

"Humph, he would rather split his soul and try to die together with me. He really is hopeless." After Lei Jingtian had died. Lin Ming hadn't even placed the threat of him in his heart.

After losing the support of Lei Jingtian's remnant soul, the Disenchanting Dream Light wasn't able to further resist the pressure from the Heretical God Seed. It was quickly sucked into the black vortex of the Samsara martial intent…

After an hour passed, the Samsara martial intent's black vortex began to slowly fade away. Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, a four-legged purple vicious beast appeared. This vicious beast looked like a lion, with the added bit of a spiral horn on its head that exuded a powerful and brutal aura.

"So it was originally a Purpleglow Thunderlion."

Within the Sky Spill Continent, the ancient vicious beast known as the Purpleglow Thunderlion was nearly extinct. This Disenchanting Dream Light had probably been bred within the spiritual sea of a dead Purpleglow Thunderlion for tens of thousands of years…

The formation of every Thunder Soul was unimaginable difficult. Much less, this was a high-grade earth-step Thunder Soul. This sort of Thunder Soul was worth the entirety of a third-grade sect like the Seven Profound Valleys.

"I've fully recovered from my injuries, and I've also absorbed the Thunder Soul. Now, it's time for me to settle all these debts… but, before that, I need to arrange an escape path for Qing He and her grandmother…"

Lin Ming had sworn that he would turn this Silent Green Tribe upside down. But, he didn't want to involve Qing He in this fight.

Suddenly, he heard Qing He's voice. "Big Brother Lin Ming, it's time to eat."

A few days ago, ever since Qing He had found out Lin Ming's name, she had referred to him as "Big Brother Lin Ming."

A hot lamb soup was served up, garnished with simple green onions. A fragrant smell wafted up. There was really no doubting old granny's cooking skills.

"Big Brother Lin Ming, I helped cook this stir fried lamb. Come and taste it!"

Qing He placed another dish of lamb in front of Lin Ming, her cherubic face full of hope.

These days, Qing He frequently cooked for Lin Ming. To her, hearing Lin Ming's praise was the highlight of her day.

"It smells great." Lin Ming was always generous in his praise of Qing He, not to mention that her cooking skills were also really good.

After hearing Lin Ming's praise, Qing He happily smiled. She picked up a large bowl of rice and began to dig in. After Lin Ming had exchanged some of his true essence stones for bloodstones, they didn't need to eat gruel any longer.

As the granny saw this, she also gently smiled.

"Granny, do you know if there are any nearby human tribes?" Lin Ming suddenly asked after he ate several mouthfuls of rice.

"Yes… what is Milord thinking of?"

Lin Ming placed down his chopsticks and said, "If you go to a human tribe, you should be a civilian there, right?"

“Go to a human tribe?” The granny suddenly guessed what Lin Ming’s idea was, and she paled. “My lord, please don’t speak nonsense. If we secretly leave the Silent Green Tribe, then we will have committed the sin of rebellion. I don’t know what secret ability these demons have, but they can catch everyone that runs away. Then, they will flay them alive and use their skins to make skincrows. They hang these skincrows up in the market as a warning to others.”

A skincrow was made from the complete skin of a human. After a human was flayed alive, the skin would be filled with straw and then sewed shut again. This was the so-called skincrow.

Hearing this word, Lin Ming’s eyes glistened with a cold light. “I am not running away. What I will do is overturn this Silent Green Tribe. This sort of place should already be removed from the map!”

Pa!

The granny’s chopsticks fell to the ground. She stared at Lin Ming with her old eyes, unable to react to his words.

Beside her, Qing He also covered her mouth in shock. Although she was young, she also understood the meaning behind Lin Ming’s words.

“Big Brother Lin Ming, you can’t beat them, they are just too powerful and there are also too many of them!” Qing He nervously said. In her opinion, Lin Ming was only five or six years older than her. But, there were countless Giant Demon masters. Not to mention others, but just their master Mo Da alone could flatten a small hill with a single punch. To little Qing He, this was simply the power of a god.

Lin Ming patted the pitiful-looking Qing He’s little head. He said, “Qing He, don’t worry. I know what I’m doing.”

“No, no, no, Big Brother Lin Ming, you will really die, really!” Qing He began to cry in fear. These past days, she had already come to rely on Lin Ming and had taken him as her big brother. She didn’t want to see him walking to his own death.

Lin Ming didn’t know what to say. At this time, there was a rough and impatient call from outside the tent. “9566, get your ass out here! All of you slaves set out, it’s time to go mine the ancient Blood Demon Crystal ore!”

The Silent Green Tribe’s Blood Demon Crystal mines were located tens of thousands of feet within the depths of the earth. These ancient mines were filled with countless dangers. In order to mine Blood Demon Crystals, one had to be a martial artist. This was also the main task of all the slave martial artists in the tribe.

The reason that Lin Ming had been captured was to work at the ancient mines. It was just that the last group of miners hadn’t come out yet, so Lin Ming had been able to rest in the tribe. Now, it was finally his turn to go to the mines.

As Lin Ming heard the shouts of the Giant Demon outside, he coldly smiled and said, “Coming.”

Lin Ming slowly put down his bowl and calmly lifted the tent curtain, walking out…

Chapter 518 – Rebel

Chapter 518 – Rebel

…

…

…

Outside of the tent, two Giant Demons carried a long chain as they impatiently waited. When they saw Lin Ming's slow and deliberate appearance, one of them immediately grew angry. "Hurry the f*ck up!"

There were several human martial artists behind these two Giant Demons. Their cultivation ranged from the Pulse Condensation period to the Houtian realm. But, without exception, every single one of them was almost empty of true essence. Their meridians were in chaos, and their foundations were extremely unstable.

They were all shackled with the chain. Because of the tracing mark, the Giant Demon race wouldn't normally put shackles on their slaves as it limited the slave's ability to work. But, when they rounded up martial artists to go and mine the ancient Blood Demon Crystal ore, there would often be hundreds or even thousands of martial artist slaves. At this time, if the slaves banded together and rebelled, it would be extremely thorny. Thus they would use an essence sealing chain to lock up the martial artists.

When Lin Ming came out, none of these martial artists even glanced at him. The light was faded in their listless eyes; it was as if they had lived in nothing but despair their entire lives.

As Lin Ming saw their mental state, he shook his head. If a martial artist lost heart to struggle and resist, it would be difficult for them to ever make another tiny step forwards in their lifetime. But, if these people really wanted to rebel against the Giant Demon tribe, it was truly impossible to know where to begin.

Huala!

A Giant Demon suddenly snapped the essence sealing chain in his hand, causing a sharp metallic cracking sound. At the same time, the Giant Demon coldly said, “Go to the back.”

Lin Ming looked at the chain. All sorts of Giant Demon runes were carved into the essence sealing chain. This chain would at most be able to seal away a Xiantian realm martial artist.

“Faster!” As the Giant Demon saw Lin Ming still be indifferent, he thunderously shouted, “Are you f*cking deaf!?”

“F*ck! You are just looking to die!” Without an explanation, the Giant Demon used the chain as a weapon and lashed out towards Lin Ming.

The Giant Demon soldier had a very strong hand strength. If he punched someone, it would be very easy for him to break the bones of a normal martial artist.

As Lin Ming saw the chain coming towards him, he coldly humphed and stretched out his hand. With a ‘ka’ sound, he firmly grabbed the chain in his hand.

“You!” As the two Giant Demons saw this, they were stunned, and then slowly filled with a raging anger. Both of them were single star Demon Generals. Although they were only equal to a Houtian realm martial artist, they had an overwhelming body superiority and didn’t place a human Houtian martial artist in their eyes.

A human dared to openly rebel against them; how could they endure this?

The Giant Demon gripped the chain and pulled hard, wanting to force Lin Ming over. However, he never thought that after he tugged the chain with all his strength, the one to stagger would be him and not Lin Ming. Lin Ming’s feet were like iron nails that were hammered into the ground, he remained completely motionless.

“This bastard…” Before the Giant Demon could react, the other one took out an axe. The axe was as thick as an arm and gleamed in the light. He cut down at Lin Ming, “Die!”

Facing this sharp axe, Lin Ming was indifferent. His foot kicked out and hit the Giant Demon’s wrist. With a ‘kacha’ sound, the axe was sent flying backwards. The Giant Demon grasped his wrist and screamed miserably. His wrist was bent at a weird angle, and on the side of his hand, one could see white, blood-stained bones sticking out of the skin.

“Ahhh!! You rebel!” The Giant Demon shouted, but his voice was abruptly cut off. Before he could say anything more, Lin Ming had grabbed onto his throat. With a sharp snapping sound, the Giant Demon went limp. His entire throat had been cruelly crushed by Lin Ming!

The Giant Demon spat out a mouthful of blood and his eyes popped out. He instantly died.

“You… you…!” The other Giant Demon looked at his companion in disbelief, his mind going blank. How could this be? Wasn’t this boy a Houtian realm martial artist? The information had clearly shown that Lin Ming was only an early Houtian realm martial artist. But, at this time he no longer had a chance to probe. A faint purple light sunk between the Giant Demon’s eyebrows. His body shook and his spiritual sea instantly burst apart. Both of the Giant Demon’s eyes went white as he fell onto the ground.

Behind the two dead Giant Demons, the martial artists that were locked by the essence sealing chains were startled. They had never thought that Lin Ming would immediately kill the two Demon Generals. This man was crazy! He wanted to rebel!

At this moment, no one cared about Lin Ming’s cultivation. In their mind there was only a single thought that kept playing over and over. Once this rebellion was suppressed, all of them would be treated as fellow rebels. They would all be put to death!

“Big Brother Lin Ming!” Behind Lin Ming, Little Qing He covered her mouth in shock. Her eyes were filled with a fearful panic. The old granny trembled beside her. In her many years, she had seen other martial artists that had rebelled and tried to escape. However, there was not a single one that wasn’t caught, flayed alive, and turned into a skincrow.

Lin Ming was so young… how could he possibly rebel against the massive Silent Green Tribe? In the Silent Green Tribe, there were numerous elders and countless masters about. How could a single child possibly contend with all of them?

Ten years ago, there was even a massive large scale martial artist slave rebellion. There had been over seven or eight hundred martial artists that had banded together in revolt, but all of them had failed together! Every single participant had died a miserable death, and even the servant slaves that waited on them were turned into skincrows!

This granny was 60 years old. She no longer feared being put to death. But, she didn't want her young granddaughter Qing He to encounter such a tragic end.

"Child, you… you…" The granny's old eyes were filled with tears. She didn't refer to Lin Ming as lord. "Child, you were too reckless. Now, you have to run! Please, I beg you to take Qing He away with you…"

Lin Ming turned around and glanced at the granny. He flicked his hand and two small rays of lightning fell onto the granny and Qing He. These two rays of lightning were condensed from the Disenchanting Dream Light. They would protect the grandmother and granddaughter, while simultaneously working as a tracking mark so that he could find them in the ensuing chaos.

Lin Ming's lips moved. He said with a true essence message, "I've left two bags of bloodstones in the room. Take them and find a safe place to hide. Wait for my news!"

Lin Ming didn't explain any further, because any explanation he made wouldn't make sense to them. He looked over at the several martial artists that were locked by the essence sealing chains. Most of them appeared panicked, but there were two among them whose eyes were filled with hope and excitement.

Lin Ming's mind moved, "What are your two names?"

"My name is Huo Yuan and this is my brother Huo Zhen. We were part of a reconnaissance team from the Skyrise Tribe but we were captured and made into slaves. We thought that there was no hope of escape, but never thought that we would bump into such a fierce and brave hero. I beg you to cut off our essence sealing chains! The three of us will be able to escape the Silent Green Tribe. As long as we can return to the Skyrise Tribe, us two brothers will be sure to repay your graciousness!”

The two of them said that the Skyrise Tribe was a human tribe near the Silent Green Tribe. It was almost as large as the Silent Green Tribe. In these past years, there had been countless skirmishes between the two tribes. But, because the humans that lived in the Bewitching Cloud Prairie had been weak for so long, the Skyrise Tribe inevitably felt fear in battle. Thus, they had often suffered losses.

Hearing these two brothers say they wanted to flee the Silent Green Tribe, it sparked a hope in several other martial artists that they could escape too. If they could escape, then they would; who was willing to remain a slave? It was only that they feared the tracing mark on their body would prevent them from doing so. But at this time, some of them noticed Lin Ming’s cultivation. He was actually at the Xiantian realm! Like this, there was a small chance that they would be able to make an escape from here!

Suddenly, the light was restored in several of the martial artists’ eyes. They stepped forwards and pleaded, “Please take us with you! We have had enough of this damned place!”

“Escape?” Lin Ming glanced over these martial artists and calmly said, “I will not escape this place. I am going to kill them. If you have the courage to follow me, then I will lead you to kill our way into the Silent Dark Green Tribe headquarters. If you don’t have the courage, then stay here and help me look after this grandmother and her granddaughter…”

Lin Ming pointed at Little Qing He and her granny. However, as these words fell into the ears of the other martial artists, it was no different from a bolt out of the blue.

All of them were shocked; none of them dared to believe their own ears.

What?

This young man actually wanted to destroy the Silent Green Tribe. He was crazy!

Lin Ming calmly took out a low-grade earth-step treasure saber from his spatial ring. The saber light flashed, and it directly sheared apart the essence sealing chain like it was nothing but deadwood.

It had to be known that this essence sealing chain was specially crafted and also engraved with the Giant Demon race's unique runes. It was extremely hard for even a Xiantian realm martial artist to cut it in a short period of time. But to Lin Ming, it was simply junk.

After cutting off the chain, Lin Ming casually tossed the low-grade earth-step saber at Huo Yuan. He also took out the Purple Comet Spear from his spatial ring.

Lin Ming hadn't used the Purple Comet Spear in a long time. In the South Sea battlefield, he he had used the Great Desolate Blood Halberd in order to hide his status. And in the Demon God Imperial Palace, the suppressive laws there rendered the power of thunder and fire useless, so he had to use the Great Desolate Blood Halberd there too.

In truth, only by grasping the Purple Comet Spear would Lin Ming be able to utilize the complete peak strength of thunderfire and display his highest level of strength.

"Brave Hero, you..." Huo Yuan blankly received the low-grade earth-step saber, somewhat dumbfounded. Not many early Xiantian realm martial artists would even have the qualifications to have a weapon like this. But it was actually given to him so simply?

"Help me look after the grandmother and her granddaughter." As Lin Ming spoke these words, he flew up. After reaching the Xiantian realm, Lin Ming had never rushed out at full speed. But this time he displayed the Golden Roc Shattering the Void movement technique. The Concept of Wind, combined with a Xiantian martial artist's ability to fly, instantly caused Lin Ming's speed to climb to the extreme!

In the flash of an eye, Lin Ming's figure faded away. The other martial artists were still stunned. The direction that Lin Ming flew in was the Silent Green Tribe's headquarters!

He really went!

With just his own strength, he planned on opposing the Silent Green Tribe?

Lin Ming's cultivation was only at the Xiantian realm, and he looked like he was in his early twenties. He was even younger than them!

But in the Silent Green Tribe, there were as many as four or five six star Demon Generals, and over 10 five star Demon Generals. If these forces combined their strength, then it would be extremely terrifying!

As Huo Yuan saw Lin Ming directly shoot towards the Silent Green Tribe headquarters, his eyes flashed with alternating fear and excitement. Finally, he handed the low-grade earth-step treasure to his younger brother and said, "You look after the grandmother and granddaughter. I will follow that hero!"

Chapter 519 – Blooming Blood

Chapter 519 – Blooming Blood

…

…

…

Lin Ming's tent was located in a very obscure corner of the Silent Green Tribe. After the two Giant Demons were killed, it wasn't immediately discovered. Lin Ming was extremely fast. In just a few breaths of time, he was able to rush to the slave registration office.

It was exactly here that the scar-faced Giant Demon who had taken Lin Ming's spatial ring worked. With his character, how could he possibly swallow such a humiliating insult? Not to mention that the spatial ring had been a gift to him from Mu Qianyu.

Within the slave registration office, the scar-faced Giant Demon was leaning back in his chair, still unaware of anything that had happened. He was looking at the body of a female martial artist slave with lidded eyes.

This female martial artist slave looked around 24 or 25 years old and was exquisitely beautiful. Facing this fearful looking scar-faced Giant Demon, her face was wan. She was only at the late Pulse Condensation period. Compared to the scar-faced Giant Demon, her strength was lacking by far.

"You… don't go too far!" The woman said.

"Humph! You had better be careful about what you say. I'm not afraid to tell you that in the future, you'll be going to mine ancient Blood Demon Crystal ore with your little brother. In the mines, there are countless dangers. There are some places where you will be knocking on death's door! I am the one who will decide your work plans. If you don't want you and your little brother to be sent to your deaths, then you'd best be a good little girl!"

The woman's face flushed red with humiliation. She clenched her teeth and took off her spatial ring, tossing it over to the scar-faced Giant Demon.

"That's right." The scar-faced Giant Demon licked his lips. In truth, he didn't really care about the spatial ring of a mere Pulse Condensation period martial artist. He just took pleasure in the feeling of playing with others.

The scar-faced Giant Demon took the spatial ring and swept through it with his mind; it really was lacking. Nothing inside entered into the scar-faced Giant Demon's eyes.

"There's nothing good in here!"

The woman's face turned a shade of blue. She bit her lips, forcing back the swelling anger in her heart. "Since you haven't taken a liking to anything inside, give it back to me!"

"Haha, wait a little. This isn't too bad..."

The scar-faced Giant Demon obscenely smiled. He traced the spatial ring and actually took out a pink colored bellyband. He played with it in his hands, "This is great!"

"You! You scum!" The woman couldn't bear the anger in her heart anymore. She took out a low-grade human-step longsword and stabbed towards the scar-faced Giant Demon.

The scar-faced Giant Demon's expression turned cold. "You really don't care for face. Just who do you think you are!?"

The scar-faced Giant Demon reached out his hand and directly caught the woman's long sword in his hand. He forcefully gripped down and with a 'kakaka' sound, the low-grade human-step treasure sword was slowly twisted like an iron bar. Then, he grinned demonically and grabbed the collar of the woman, tossing her to the ground.

“Humph! You have nothing that interests me, but, I am a little bit interested in you. If you’re smart, then follow me for a few nights. If you make me happy, then I might give you and your little brother a good job! Hehe!”

The scar-faced Giant Demon greedily stared at the woman’s beautiful and buxom body. The Giant Demon race practiced a variety of devil arts. They liked to slaughter, and they liked the obscene. Their desire towards beautiful human women even surpassed their desire towards the women of their own Giant Demon race. This was one of the reasons so many humans had been born with the Giant Demon bloodline.

The woman glared at the scar-faced Giant Demon with loathing in her eyes. She spat out a glob of blood.

Peh!

“F*ck! You don’t know what’s good for you. This father will....mm?” The scar-faced Giant Demon was just about to punish her when he suddenly stiffened. He looked up. Around 50 feet away, there was a youth looking at him with cold indifference.

“You?” The scar-faced Giant Demon had a very deep impression of Lin Ming. He wasn’t happy that his good fun had been spoiled. “What the f*ck are you here for? Get out of here!”

“I’m here to take back my spatial ring. My low-grade earth-step spatial ring...” Lin Ming slowly said. His eyes were like sharp daggers that pierced through the scar-faced Giant Demon.

As soon as the scar-faced Giant Demon heard this, his complexion changed. This boy! He clearly knew what rank his spatial ring was, but yet he had been playing the fool! A dark uneasy feeling inexplicably rose in his mind. He instantly thought to murder Lin Ming and cover his steps. The scar-faced giant Demon growled, “I don’t know what you’re talking about. I think you want to die!”

“The one dying will be you, not me. Not only am I going to take back my spatial ring, but I’ll also take a bit of interest. That interest is... your life!”

“F*ck! I will flay you alive!”

The scar-faced Giant Demon took out a long-handled axe from his spatial ring. He stepped forwards, rushing towards Lin Ming!

Facing this scar-faced Giant Demon, Lin Ming only punched out.

Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!

His bare fist collided with the low-grade earth-step treasure axe!

The scar-faced Giant Demon grinned as his saw this. As for the girl that had fallen to the ground, she covered her mouth and cried out in alarm! She could already see the fate of Lin Ming’s fist. His hand would be split apart and smashed in half!

Peng!

Lin Ming’s solid fist struck the axe. The axe had a three foot long blade edge, and was several thousand jins heavy. However, after Lin Ming punched it, an unimaginable sight happened. There was a loud crashing noise, and the long-handled axe directly burst apart, turning into countless fragments of metal that flew out!

As for Lin Ming’s fist, it remained unchanged after breaking apart the axe. His fist impacted the scar-faced Giant Demon’s chest!

Peng!

Muscles burst. Ribs collapsed. Lin Ming’s fist penetrated through the scar-faced Giant Demon’s chest, piercing all the way through his lungs!

“You… you…” The scar-faced Giant Demon’s blue face was twisted in agony. He looked at the broken axe in his hand with disbelief. He couldn’t believe what had just happened. A single punch had broken apart his low-grade earth-step treasure… was this even the power of mankind?

Plop! Plop!

Blood trickled down Lin Ming's elbow, dripping to the floor. It was especially loud in the near-silence. The scar-faced Giant Demon's lips twitched. His face twisted as he tried to clutch Lin Ming's shoulder with a trembling hand.

As he looked at Lin Ming, his expression slowly turned from shock to fear. It was as if some demon from hell had appeared before him.

"No... no..." The scar-faced Giant Demon was terrified. He could feel that Lin Ming's hand had passed through his lung, and was now gripping onto his beating heart!

"No... don't kill me, I was wrong... I beg you... I will give you all my belongings. I've hidden them away. If you kill me then you can't obtain them..." Sweat rolled down the scar-faced Giant Demon's forehead. His voice shook. As he spoke, blood constantly flowed down the edges of his lips.

Lin Ming sneered. His eyes and voice were merciless as he said, "I have no interest in your things."

Peng!

Lin Ming clenched his fist. The scar-faced Giant Demon's heart exploded in a pile of broken meat.

"Ahhhh!"

The scar-faced Giant Demon howled miserably. A massive amount of blood gushed out from his chest, spraying onto Lin Ming and completely dyeing him in a deep blood-red.

The Giant Demon fell to the floor. As for Lin Ming, he took back his hand, his expression unchanged. His hand was covered in crushed meat and blood; it was dazzlingly red.

As the woman saw this, she was stunned dizzy. What she had just seen was like a dream. This boy had destroyed an earth-step weapon unarmed, and had also used a single fist to kill the scar-faced Giant Demon! But, this youth only looked to be around 20 years old. From his appearance, he was likely younger than her!

Who was he? Why did he come here?

At this moment, the woman no longer had time to think. Outside of the tent, there was a series of loud noises and footsteps. A group of Demon Generals and Demon Soldier rank Giant Demons rushed in. “Who is causing all this trouble!?”

The head of these guards was a four star Demon General. After he rushed, he saw the scar-faced Giant Demon on the ground who had died pitifully from having his heart crushed. His anger surged. Someone had actually dared to come in here and kill the Giant Demon who managed this place!

The guard leader’s eyes were red with rage as he looked at Lin Ming. He released his perception and looked at Lin Ming’s dantian, immediately investigating his cultivation. An early Xiantian martial artist. He was surprised that an early Xiantian martial artist could instantly kill the scar-faced Giant Demon, but he didn’t think that this man had even the slightest chance of surviving any longer.

Because this guard leader could easily kill a middle Xiantian realm human martial artist.

He looked at Lin Ming as if he were watching a dead man. But once Lin Ming fell in his hands, his death wouldn’t come so easily.

“Hold him down! Slice apart his tendons but do not kill him! We must bring him back for his death sentence!”

Five one star Demon Generals rushed at Lin Ming, surrounding him. Lin Ming didn’t take out a weapon. He only reached out a hand towards the scar-faced Giant Demon’s corpse.

Peng!

The corpse exploded, and a thick cloud of bloody mist burst out, immediately condensing into a Blood Drinking Seal. With a swishing sound, the Blood Drinking Seal instantly pierced through the five Giant Demons' bodies. These Giant Demons exploded in a cloud of blood all at once!

Blood essence filled the air, gathering into new Blood Drinking Seals!

In the blink of an eye, five Blood Drinking Seals appeared in Lin Ming's palm. These Five Blood Drinking Seals were like beautiful flower petals that danced in his hand, slowly and silently revolving. Five Giant Demons had just died. But as for Lin Ming, he hadn't moved a single step. It was as if the one who had killed them wasn't him.

The guard leader was completely shocked at this startling scene. He froze up in a cold sweat. He firmly grasped the handle of his saber, but didn't dare to make a move. He felt as if this wasn't a youth in front of him, but rather a god of death. Fear filled the guard leader's heart.

"You… just who… who are you?"

Lin Ming remained expressionless. The five fingers of his right hand suddenly sprung wide open!

Pu pu pu!

The Blood Drinking Seals shot off in all directions, creating a bloody tornado!

"Ahhhhh!!"

Heart-piercing screams filled the entire slave registration hall. The hall filled with blood, and thick drops of blood rained down everywhere. The several dozen foot high tent had been ripped apart by the bloody storm!

Over ten guards died on the spot. Their corpses flew out, leaving only the four star Demon General guard leader by himself. The guard leader kneeled on the ground as he grabbed his saber. Several holes had been drilled into his body. As he looked at Lin Ming, his eyes were filled with fear and despair. “You…”

Peng!

The guard leader’s body exploded, and a new Blood Drinking Seal slowly drifted up from the pool of blood…

Chapter 520 – Step Onto the Killing Path

Chapter 520 - Step Onto the Killing Path

…

…

…

“So that’s how it is…”

The ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’. The Blood Drinking Seals that were formed from the blood of Giant Demons were much more powerful than those from humans. This four star Demon General was only equal to a mid to late Xiantian human martial artist. But, the Blood Drinking seal condensed from his blood was not much worse than one condensed from a human Revolving Core martial artist…

Lin Ming muttered as he looked at the Blood Drinking Seal in his hand that had been formed by the guard leader. But the more he thought about it, the more normal it seemed. Compared to humans, Giant Demons had superior physical attributes and a much more vibrant vitality. Their strength was higher than that of humans at the same level, so naturally Blood Drinking Seals that were formed from their blood essence would also be stronger.

“The Demon Emperor cultivated the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ with the blood of his own race… these truly are a bloodthirsty race.” Lin Ming didn’t have much ill will towards the Giant Demon race. The conflicts between the Giant Demons and humans were only because of their race and other minor differences.

He reached out his hand and Blood Drinking Seals floated up from all the corpses. They were like red petals dancing in the warm spring wind.

At this time, the slower Huo Yuan finally arrived at the slave registration office. As he arrived, all he saw was a completely destroyed tent as well as torn corpses scattered everywhere.

And in this pile of corpses, there was Lin Ming, calmly standing there with his entire body dyed a deep blood red. Over a dozen bloody seals danced around him; he was no different from an Ashura demon.

Huo Yuan was shocked speechless. He was just a few steps late, but the entire place had been razed to the ground!

“Heavens! There has been a rebellion! The slave registration office has been turned upside down!”

“So many guards died!”

“Who is that young man!?”

Outside of the slave registration office, many people saw Lin Ming kill numerous guards. This scene was simply too shocking. The ground was littered with corpses and the air was thick with the smell of blood. Only he stood there, his body stained in blood, as if he had just brutally slain the gods.

“He is a Xiantian martial artist! The early Xiantian realm…”

“He definitely had some argument with those fellows from the registration office which led to him going mad with anger and killing them. How come he hasn’t run? He’s just waiting for death here!”

As the surrounding martial artists and commoners discussed this, the more timid among them had already turned around and fled, for fear that they would be caught up with Lin Ming’s actions. Everyone sighed with regret. For such a genius to be caught and turned into a slave for the Silent Green Tribe… that was just too pitiful.

"A general has arrived!"

As everyone was talking, a group of Giant Demon riders rode in from around the tribe. They were riding on jet black wolves that were 20 feet long and came billowing in like a gust of wind. These were the guard group that escorted the elders, and were also the elite among the elite in the Silent Green Tribe.

This squad of riders all had a cultivation at the Demon General level. As for the leader of this squad, he was wearing compact plated armor. He was holding onto a thick war spear, and the wolf he rode was much larger than the others. He had long and majestic hair that rolled down his back, and his limbs were strong and healthy like a galloping horse.

This black-armored general had a helmet with a faceguard that covered his face. A heavy murderous intent flowed out from his body.

"So it was you!"

The black-armored general sneered. He slowly took off his faceguard. This Giant Demon general was Mo Da!

This area was originally managed by Mo Da. All of the surrounding slaves were also under the command of Mo Da. Thus, when some incident occurred, Mo Da was the first to rush in.

"It's General Mo Da!"

"The five-star Demon General, General Mo Da! Everything is over! There's no way that boy will be able to escape!"

"Even if General Mo Da didn't come, he still wouldn't be able to escape. There is a tracing mark on his body."

In this part of the tribe, Mo Da's influence and strength were too great. Although his cultivation was only equal to a mid to late Xiantian martial artist, because of the fierce talent of a Giant Demon, even human extreme Xiantian martial artists weren't a match for him.

A year ago, there had been a human late Xiantian martial artist that had rebelled against Mo Da. The result of this was that he had been split in half by Mo Da's spear, and suffered a miserable death.

"I didn't think that I would be mistaken in my estimation of you; you are actually a Xiantian realm martial artist." Mo Da leapt off his wolf and casually flicked up his faceguard, revealing his deep amber eyes. "To reach the Xiantian realm at such a young age, what a great talent! It is truly brave of you to rebel, but… also very stupid!"

Mo Da grinned demonically as he looked at Lin Ming. He had no love for Lin Ming. This was a deeply ingrained contempt that came from the heart. Lin Ming was a human, and as such was a mortal enemy of the Giant Demons. The geniuses of humanity had to be exterminated, lest they inevitably become a catastrophe.

Lin Ming calmly looked at Mo Da. Several Blood Drinking Seals slowly floated around him. Just what sort of Blood Drinking Seal would a five-star Demon General's blood essence be able to create? Lin Ming discovered that after arriving at this Giant Demon world, this was simply a natural slaughtering land to cultivate the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'.

"Although we are enemies, I still appreciate you. I will give you a fair chance in this battle. If you can withstand my attacks for 20 breaths of time, then I will give you a way out! Otherwise, according to the rules of my Giant Demon tribe, you will be flayed alive for revolting against your master!" As Mo Da spoke, his fierce aura erupted. All of the surrounding martial artists were suppressed by this aura and they all fell back.

They all knew the truth. Mo Da was only being magnanimous to allow others to see the supreme authority that he commanded here and also the results of being defiant. Within human Xiantian martial artists, he could be considered invincible. Even a human extreme Xiantian martial artist would find it difficult to deal with Mo Da's attacks, much less a young man who was only at the early Xiantian realm. Even if this young man was much stronger than a martial artist at the same level, it was still meaningless.

Twenty breaths of time were already more than enough for Mo Da to display his utter strength; this young man was a dead man standing.

All of the surrounding human martial artists couldn't help but sigh. What a pity. What sort of future could such a talented young man have? If he were raised in a human tribe, then it was highly possible that he could reach the Revolving Core realm in the future. If he did, he could be a powerhouse that created his own tribe.

A 13 foot long spear swept out. The snake-like point was now a white beam of chilling cold. Standing there with his heavy black armor, Mo Da was like a dark iron tower; even the sunlight was hidden by him!

This imposing aura had formed over many years. The slave martial artists felt a suffocating sense of pressure. The female slave that had been saved by Lin Ming had already fled from his side, her face pale. As for Huo Yuan, who stood not too far away, he stared at Lin Ming with wide eyes. Lin Ming's strength had already exceeded his expectations. If Lin Ming had ran away with him, then there would have been a 60% chance that he could have successfully escaped and become a fugitive. He could have become someone who was able to resist the Silent Green Tribe...

"You won't use a weapon? Do you not have one?" Mo Da frowned as he saw Lin Ming with empty hands as before.

Lin Ming expressionlessly opened his hands. He murmured to himself, "In the future, I will inevitably step onto the killing path, then, let me take that first step today..."

As he spoke, his ten fingers flicked out. The several Blood Drinking Seals shot outwards!

Blood-red lights cut through the void. They issued a teeth-grinding sound, piercing straight towards Mo Da!

"Humph! You can't even see your own weakness!" Mo Da could see that this was only a casual strike that Lin Ming had used. If Lin Ming believed that this could kill him, then that was simply laughable!

“Break for me!” Mo Da shouted. The demon essence from his demon crystal erupted and he slashed out with his spear! This spear would cut down those Blood Drinking Seals and also cut down Lin Ming!

“Haa!”

The energy on the black spear gathered together, forming a mad wolf that rushed towards the Blood Drinking Seals. From the outside, this was a completely disproportionate collision of energy. But, the result was shocking enough to make one’s eyes blow up!

With a loud ‘kacha’, the Blood Drinking Seals crashed into the energy that had formed a crazy black wolf and directly sliced it to shreds! Then, the Blood Drinking Seals didn’t slow down for even a bit as they shot towards Mo Da!

“What!?”

In that moment, Mo Da could only feel a cold sweat down his back like his soul had fled his body. In those dozen or so Blood Drinking Seals, he could feel a fatal portent!

At this critical moment, Mo Da cried out and the energy in his demon crystal gushed out. The demonic essence wrapped around his hands as he punched at the Blood Drinking Seals. At the same time, the demon essence that protected his body was galvanized to the limit!

Cha cha cha!

Mo Da’s protective demon essence was like thin paper that was sliced apart by the Blood Drinking Seals. His fists that were comparable to steel were torn open by the Blood Drinking Seals, crushing his bones and causing blood to fly out!

Mo Da screamed in pain. A dozen holes appeared in his body. He had lost his spear and his hands were completely destroyed. His entire body, from top to bottom, was gushing blood!

If one didn’t personally see this shocking scene, then it was simply unbelievable. A five-star Demon General was actually brought to the brink of death by an early Xiantian realm youth with just a wave of the hand! It had to be known that in this Giant Demon world, the Giant Demons had always been a step higher and victorious over humans. There were very few times when a human had been able to leap realms in order to defeat a Giant Demon, much less with such an exaggerated difference in their abilities!

The originally noisy scene was instantly silenced. All of the martial artists, whether they were humans or Giant Demons, had their mouths hanging wide open. They were unable to close them for a long time.

Huo Yuan was stunned for a long time. Then, he suddenly remembered something. He took out a sound transmitting talisman that had been especially hidden away within his spatial ring. He gulped, spoke a message, and then lit the sound transmitting talisman, releasing it.

Maybe… maybe the Silent Green Tribe could truly be destroyed… as Huo Yuan thought of this, his heart trembled.

“Mm? His heart was pierced and he still isn’t dead?” Lin Ming was surprised. The Blood Drinking Seals had shot through several vital areas of Mo Da’s body, yet it wasn’t enough to instantly kill him. The life force of a Giant Demon was truly powerful.

He casually stretched out his right hand, and suddenly gripped his hands together again.

Ca!

The dozen or so Blood Drinking Seals flew back and shot through Mo Da once more.

Pu pu pu!

After talking a dozen more wounds, Mo Da suddenly shook, and the luster faded from his eyes. As he tumbled onto the floor, his body was like an iron tower that had been destroyed!

Bang!

In the instant that Mo Da fell, all of the martial artists present felt like they were in a dream. Mo Da, who had ruled this section of the tribe for over 20 years, had died like this? Not only had he died at the hands of a youth who looked like he was 20 years old, but he didn't even have the strength to resist! This young man hadn't even taken out his weapon!

Lin Ming flexed his fingers, and a scarlet arc of lightning sunk into Mo Da's corpse. The lightning made a quick circle, bringing out a rain of blood. Then, a new Blood Drinking Seal slowly formed together. Compared to the previous ones, this one was even more beautiful and dazzling!

Chapter 521 – The Six Elders

Chapter 521 – The Six Elders

…

…

…

As the Giant Demon wolf riders saw Mo Da's blood essence turn into a Blood Drinking Seal, all of them felt a chill creep up their backs and their hairs stand on end. They realized that the several strange crimson runes that floated around Lin Ming were condensed from the blood essence of slain Giant Demons!

What sort of cultivation method was this? Why did it seem even more demonic than their own cultivation methods?

"Run!" All of the Giant Demons instantly reacted, they turned tail and ran.

As Lin Ming saw this, he casually waved his hand. "All of you… also walk my path of slaughter!"

Ca!

Over a dozen Blood Drinking Seals shot out. Dark red light shined, and blood fell like rain. The protective true essence of these Giant Demon wolf riders was also torn apart like thin paper. The Blood Drinking Seals easily pierced their bodies. They all tumbled off their wolves, dead before they hit the ground.

Screams echoed out again and again. This land had completely become an Ashura execution ground.

Lin Ming flicked his fingers and the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder howled. Fogs of blood burst out from the dead Giant Demons, turning into new Blood Drinking Seals that flew back to Lin Ming's hand, floating above his palm.

As the surrounding martial artists saw this scene, all of them were numbed. This was a massacre beyond slaughter; it was a completely one-sided battle!

They couldn't believe that this young man was only a Xiantian realm martial artist. Humans had always been weak. Humans had always been looked down on by Giant Demons and spurned for their essence gathering cultivation system. Could a human really be strong to such a degree?

In this world of Giant Demons, human martial artists had a very low status. The Giant Demon tribes dared to wantonly slaughter human tribes, but human tribes did not dare to do the same. This was because they feared the swelling anger from the Giant Demon tribes and that they would group together and kill them.

But this situation wasn't formed because the human population was too low. In fact, humans reproduced at a rate much higher than Giant Demons. All of this was because the talent and cultivation system of the humans here were too poor. The humans' essence gathering cultivation system seemed as if it could never compare to the Giant Demons' demon essence cultivation system.

Within the vast Bewitching Cloud Prairie, the number of human Revolving Core martial artists could be counted on one hand. But there were actually more than 20 Demon King masters scattered within the various Giant Demon tribes. Not just that, but a mere 1-star Demon King was able to battle a middle Revolving Core master on even ground.

In this sort of situation, it was inevitable that the humans would be enslaved by the Giant Demons. There were even many human martial artists that had given up because of this. They subconsciously thought that humans would never be as powerful as the Giant Demons and blamed the weak essence gathering cultivation system. But as they saw Lin Ming now, a faint hope rekindled within them.

A human martial artist had jumped levels to kill a Giant Demon!

The essence gathering system could defeat the demon essence system!

As they realized this, all of the present human martial artists could feel the simmering fighting spirit that had been suppressed for all these years finally begin to ignite.

As Huo Yuan saw all this, his heart suddenly stirred. He saw a bloodied spear on the ground. He leaned down, and with a great deal of effort, picked up that spear from the bluestone tiles. With a muffled sound, he attracted the attention of everyone.

Huo Yuan lifted the spear and thrust that sharp spear towards the deep blue skies.

“Fellow brothers! Fellow compatriots!

“The Giant Demon race has oppressed us for far too long! We cannot stop their wolf riders, but…

“Our destiny is in our own hands! Do you want to be a slave for your entire life? If you don’t, then follow me and fight with the war god!

“With our swords and with our sabres, we shall take our suffering in blood! We will tell the Giant Demons that they can no longer act so recklessly, because the ground underneath our feet is our grasslands!”

It had to be said that humans were animals that were easily susceptible to emotional infection. Especially now, as they bore witness to Lin Ming’s unstoppable slaughter and were again incited by Huo Yuan’s shouts, all of the humans’ blood began to boil!

They did not want to be slaves anymore. Only for this single wish, at this moment, they were willing to die without fear!

This unexpected change caught Lin Ming off guard. He glanced at Huo Yuan; he didn’t think this fellow had certain talents in this regard. Although he didn’t need the help of the humans, if he had them on his side, he could more thoroughly wipe out the Silent Green

Tribe. Otherwise, with just him alone, it was impossible to kill off an entire tribe of Giant Demons.

"Kill!"

"Let's go brothers!"

"With the war god!"

Hearing this title, Lin Ming didn't know whether to laugh or cry. Lin Ming's casually spoken words had actually turned him into some so-called war god.

The truth was, what human martial artists feared the most were the Demon Generals at two-star or above, especially the wolf rider guards. Compared to them, the humans with the highest cultivation were only at the early Houtian or middle Houtian realm. Not just that, but they had very shaky foundations. To the wolf rider guards, they were nothing more than an unruly mob.

But these wolf riders had collapsed in front of Lin Ming with just a single strike!

This day was bound to be a day of blood. Slaughter would arise from all directions of the Silent Green Tribe!

The news of the human martial artist rebellion, as well as the death of Mo Da, quickly propagated throughout the tribe like a tidal wave. When a wolf rider galloped into the tent that Qing He and her grandmother were hiding in, Huo Zhen, who was protecting them, was immediately tense. He thought that Lin Ming and his brother had been killed, and this wolf rider had been sent to kill them all.

He nervously gripped the low-grade earth-step treasure sword that Lin Ming had given him. It wasn't until the rider took off his helmet that Huo Zhen was able to clearly see who he was. He was a martial artist that hadn't reached 20 years of age, and his cultivation was only at the Bone Forging stage.

The young man excitedly jumped off the wolf, his entire face red. He was out of breath, but still shouted, “Huo...General Huo wishes me to tell you that the war god Lord Lin instantly killed Mo Da! Now, the human martial artists have organized into a rebel army, and are going straight to attack the Silent Green Tribe’s headquarters!”

This sudden news shocked Huo Zhen speechless. Behind him, Qing He was also covering her mouth in shock. As a common mortal, she didn’t understand the differences in the realms between martial artists. But, Mo Da’s terrifying strength had long since penetrated into her heart. She had once seen with her own eyes Mo Da break open a small hill with just his fist.

In this city, the name Mo Da was synonymous with invincible. He was a king, no one could defy him!

On the other hand, in Qing He’s eyes, Lin Ming had always been a kind and gentle older brother with a sweet temperament. Before, when a Giant Demon had stirred up trouble and accused them of stealing sheep, Lin Ming had endured this insult and compensated with bloodstones. She had never thought that her gentle big brother Lin Ming would instantly kill Mo Da...

“General Huo... is that my big brother? War god... is that Lord Lin?” Huo Zhen mumbled to himself. His big brother had actually become a general? Rebel army... was it possible Lin Ming could really lead the human martial artists to overthrow the Silent Green Tribe?

....

On the killing road, Lin Ming had taken the lead at the front. No one could catch up to his speed. Dozens of Blood Drinking Seals danced in the air around him, and deadly beams of crimson light cut through the air. Sharp screams emitted in the skies. At this time, Lin Ming was a storm of blades. Wherever he visited, blood would rain!

There was basically no Giant Demon that could approach Lin Ming. With just a single strike, these Giant Demons would be beheaded! Not just that, but before their corpse even hit the ground, a blood fog would burst out from their bodies and condense into a new Blood Drinking Seal that gathered at Lin Ming's side.

Any three-star Demon General or higher was turned into a Blood Drinking Seal. As for the lower level Giant Demons, their blood essence was sucked out to nourish the other Blood Drinking Seals.

Otherwise, there would already have been hundreds of Blood Drinking Seals around Lin Ming.

The rebel army rampaged down the roads as if they were an unstoppable force. As for Lin Ming, over 70% of the dead Giant Demons had perished at his hands, including all of the three-star Demon Generals and above. Those that the rebel army had killed were basically the ones that had run away from Lin Ming.

The human martial artists that followed Lin Ming were shocked to see him cut down these high-level Demon Generals like vegetables. And then, that shock turned to numbness. Under Lin Ming's hand, it was as if these Demon Generals weren't the haughty and all-powerful beings they were before, but rather lambs that were to be butchered.

The Silent Green Tribe headquarters was broken into. The 100 foot high gates were torn down by the Blood Drinking Seals like tofu!

Bang!

The walls of the headquarters disintegrated. The tent walls were made from Sky Worm Silk. They were able to resist the cut of sabers and the burn of fire, but these tent walls were ripped apart by the Blood Drinking Seals. Within the great tent, six Giant Demon elders were standing side by side!

They were all six-star Demon Generals!

These six individuals were the greatest powerhouses within the Silent Green Tribe, and also represented the highest authority. To the mortal slaves of the Silent Green Tribe, they were no different than gods!

The six Great Elders looked old. They wore long black robes, and standing shoulder to shoulder, they emitted a powerful, incomparable aura. They were like six divine beings; they gave off a feeling that no one would be able to contend with them.

Even the previously heroic and unparalleled rebel army timidly paused in front of these six. They couldn’t stop their hearts from shaking!

Every one of these six six-star Demon Generals was several times stronger than Mo Da. If they combined their strength, could Lin Ming still win one against six?

At this time, no one doubted Lin Ming’s strength. It was just that the six Great Elders’ strength and influence were too great!

“Junior! What is your name? It’s impossible for someone like you to remain unknown. Are you a talent raised from a human sect in the Northern Domain of the Holy Demon Continent?” The first Elder on the right said.

The Bewitching Cloud Prairie was only a small, immaterial part of the Holy Demon Continent that was barely worth mentioning at all. As for all of the other lands, the people of Bewitching Cloud Prairie commonly grouped them together as the Northern Domains.

Lin Ming was silent. He was secretly estimating the strength of these six Elders in front of him. If he were to use their blood essence to make Blood Drinking Seals, just how strong would they be?

“Junior! I will give face to your sect and consider this matter finished. You will apologize to my Silent Green Tribe, and we will no longer pursue this matter. Otherwise, the six of us will join forces and put you to death!”

Another Elder spoke. His voice was low and hoarse. He wasn't afraid of Lin Ming, but rather the sect that stood behind Lin Ming. Although it was said that humans within the Holy Demon Continent were much weaker than the Giant Demons, this didn't mean that humans didn't have their own powerhouses. If a sect could raise such a terrifyingly monstrous powerhouse, they had to be a fourth-grade sect or higher. That was an existence that their small Silent Green Tribe was unable to provoke.

As the Elder spoke, all of the human rebels were surprised, and then anxious. They feared that Lin Ming would choose to compromise. In that case, Lin Ming would be safe, but all of them would be flayed alive.

Lin Ming only faintly smiled. He calmly said, "Sorry, but I am not the least bit interested in your proposal!"

Chapter 522 – Polaris, Blood Slaughter Steppes

Chapter 522 – Polaris, Blood Slaughter Steppes

…

…

…

"You are begging to die!"

Because of Lin Ming's arrogant answer, the Silent Green Tribe Elders' complexions had turned somber and bleak. "You refuse our offer only to end up suffering yourself! Let's attack him together! Kill him!"

Facing Lin Ming, none of these six Great Elders dared to underestimate him. After all, Lin Ming was able to instantly kill Mo Da, and Mo Da was a master who was only inferior to these six Great Elders. This proved that Lin Ming might be stronger than any one of them.

"This boy's background is too deep. Do not keep any witnesses, kill every human present!"

The six of them attacked together. Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light and he extracted the Purple Comet Spear from his spatial ring. This was the first time in this melee that he had used a weapon.

These six individuals were the final trump card of the Silent Green Tribe. Lin Ming didn't plan on holding back, he directly opened the Heretical God Force.

Compressed true essence erupted. Lin Ming's formidable aura instantly rose to the pinnacle. He flicked his finger, and the Divine Demon Thunder Soul which was fused from three Thunder Souls shot out. On the three inch long needle, there was a Purple Flood

Dragon and a crimson snake curled around the base. On the crown of the needle, there was a fierce image of a thunder beast.

The Divine Demon Steel Needle howled. It pierced towards the first Elder on the right. At the same time, dozens of Blood Drinking Seals swirled around the Purple Comet Spear, forming a spinning red storm.

“Primeval Spear!”

A spear thrust out and it seemed to swallow all sound. The powerful suction force caused all six Elders to pause. At this time, the triple Thunder Soul fusion Divine Demon Steel Needle arrived.

“Demon Essence Palm!”

An Elder struck down at the Thunder Soul with his palm. His billowing demon essence was like a rolling tide of clouds. But as these demonic clouds met the Divine Demon Thunder Soul, they instantly melted away like snow in the hot summer sun!

“Damn!”

The old Giant Demon’s face turned grim. Although he expected Lin Ming to be strong, he didn’t think that his own Demon Essence Palm would be broken so easily.

“Old Six, help me!”

Seeing the Divine Demon Thunder Soul howl towards him, the old Giant Demon couldn’t help but cry for help.

Ping!

A ghostly knife cut down on the Divine Demon Thunder Soul; this was the rescue from the Giant Demon known as Old Six. The two Great Elders combined their forces, but they were still unable to break apart the Divine Demon Thunder Soul.

“Explode!”

Lin Ming suddenly clenched his hand, and the Divine Demon Thunder Soul exploded. The three-colored light of the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, Disenchanting Dream Light, and Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder burst out, causing the six Great Elders to struggle.

Meanwhile, he grasped the Purple Comet Spear. He thrust out – slaughter!

All of his potential and will was fused into this Purple Comet Spear strike. The spear light cut through though the void!

“This boy!”

Two Elders cried out as they resisted the arcs of lightning. With a staff and halberd, they struck out at Lin Ming.

Bang!

The ground fissured. The cracks spread through the earth like an ever-growing spider web. With the sound of torn silk, the several dozen feet high headquarters of the Silent Green Tribe, which was made with Sky Worm Silk, was completely ripped to shreds!

Blood Drinking Seals danced in the air. Two Elders screamed. Blood Drinking Seals had pierced through their bodies, causing blossoms of blood to bloom!

“Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder!”

The Divine Demon Thunder Soul roared as it felt the energy of blood essence. As soon as it touched blood essence, it completely sucked it dry. The Giant Demon Elders felt a great deal of their blood essence being absorbed and they suddenly paled.

Just several breaths of time had passed. In just the flash of an eye, Lin Ming had battled against six enemies and had taken the upper hand.

Lin Ming didn’t relent in his attacks. The Purple Come Spear shot out like a snake!

The cold spearpoint was directed towards an injured Elder's heart. At this critical moment, a ghostly blade blocked Lin Ming's spear, saving the injured Elder from the maw of death. But as this blade touched Lin Ming's spear, it became stuck.

The blade-wielding Giant Demon Elder's complexion changed. "We have to use everything we have together! Otherwise we will die!"

Lin Ming's vast strength had far outstripped their imagination.

As the six Great Elders heard this, all of them used their special skills. For a time, the billowing demon essence was like a titanic pillar that shot into the sky. It penetrated into the clouds, as if it were connecting the heavens and earth!

The six Great Elders attacked together. Their momentum was like a heaven-breaking spear. All of the surrounding martial artists were horrified. In the Silent Green Tribe, these six Great Elders were god-like existences. The six Great Elders combining their attacks caused everyone to flee backwards, lest they be caught up in the swirling storm of demon essence!

Against this strike that could change the heavens and earth, Lin Ming's Tempering Marrow true essence completely erupted. At the same time, he combusted the blood of the Ancient Phoenix. Lin Ming's skeleton emitted explosive crackling noises. Behind him, the phantom of an Azure Dragon appeared. A resounding dragon roar impacted through the horizon!

A spear thrust out. On the Purple Comet Spear, thunder and flame howled, twining together at a single point. A violent energy burst out…

Thunderfire Annihilation!

Lin Ming consumed 60% of his inner true essence to display the full and complete might of Thunderfire Annihilation. This was Lin Ming's strongest ability. Especially after absorbing the Disenchanting Dream Light, the power of Thunderfire Annihilation was even more terrifying than before. Within the ancient battlefield, he hadn't been able to use Thunderfire

Annihilation because of the suppressive laws of that broken world. But, he could it in this one. Thunderfire Annihilation immediately formed a black hole of origin energy. All of the power of thunder and fire between the heavens and earth howled out!

Bang!

Thunder and fire wove together, exploding against the billowing clouds of demon energy. The horrible shock wave rolled out in all directions, breaking through all of the walls, causing sand to fly and completely shattering all of the floor tiles. The detonation had caused a 100 foot deep pit to appear in the ground. As for the great Sky Worm Silk tent which had been torn apart by the Blood Drinking Seals, it was disintegrated by the great currents of energy, vanishing into ash.

In just a moment, the entire Silent Green Tribe headquarters had been razed to the ground.

Of the six Giant Demon Elders, three of them were lying down in a pool of their own blood, barely hanging onto their lives. As for the other three, they had been severely injured. Their bodies dripped with blood. They stood among the ruins, their faces filled with fear and disbelief.

As for Lin Ming, his clothes were torn, his forehead was stained with blood, and his face was pale. He only had around 30% of his true essence remaining.

“You...” A Giant Demon Elder stretched out a trembling, bloody finger at Lin Ming, as if he wanted to say something.

“Die.”

Lin Ming didn’t wait for this Giant Demon Elder to spout his nonsense. The Purple Comet Spear thrust out. Blood Drinking Seals flew in the air. Slaughter!

Facing this ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ spear skill, the severely wounded Elders were unable to resist any longer. Lin Ming’s spear directly pierced through the front Elder’s heart.

Blood spurted out into the wind. The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder flashed as it sunk into the Giant Demon Elder's body.

Pu!

A mass of blood fog burst out from the Elder's corpse, slowly condensing into a Blood Drinking Seal. This Blood Drinking Seal was several times larger than the last Blood Drinking Seals, and the light that shined from it was an even deeper red.

"Third Brother!"

As a Giant Demon Elder saw his brother's death occur right in front of him, his eyes turned red with rage.

Knowing that living through this was hopeless, the Giant Demon went crazy. He grasped his saber and cut down at Lin Ming!

To this, Lin Ming only gathered his hands together.

Pu pu pu!

Blood Drinking Seals pierced through the Giant Demon Elder like a honeycomb.

The second Giant Demon Elder died, and the Blood Drinking Seals continued their flight of death. Blood burst out from the other four Giant Demon Elders' bodies, turning into streams of blood.

Finally, all six Giant Demon Elders had been utterly struck down by Lin Ming!

The entire area fell into silence. All of the surrounding martial artists were speechless as they stared at the blood-drenched Lin Ming. None of them knew what to say in their current states of shock.

From the very start, all of those that rose up to rebel against the Silent Green Tribe and had rushed their way to the headquarters had come with the bitter determination that their lives could be ended at any moment, like the frailest of jade. After all, the disparity of strength was just too great. But, none of them expected that as they killed their way over, over 70%of the enemy, including every Demon General at three-stars or above, would be all killed by Lin Ming. Just a single touch was all it took for them to die. And in the end, even the six Great Elders of the Silent Green Tribe had been swept away by him!

Those that followed on Lin Ming's heels hadn't experienced any bitterly dangerous battle. It could be said that the Silent Green Tribe was completely destroyed by Lin Ming alone!

Fresh streams of blood flowed over the ground. Corpses were everywhere. Lin Ming put out his hand, and masses of blood blossomed on the ground. One, two, three... until the sixth Blood Drinking Seal.

"This Giant Demon blood essence is truly suitable for the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'." Lin Ming mumbled as he glanced at these Blood Drinking Seals. Their quality was nearly as good as those formed from a human middle Revolving Core powerhouse.

After Lin Ming formed these Blood Drinking Seals, he also took the spatial rings of all six Giant Demon Elders.

The six spatial rings were all low-grade earth-step. Their quality wasn't much worse than Lin Ming's own. As he used his sense to scan through these six spatial rings, he sucked in a deep breath. There were thousands of Blood Demon Crystals within these six spatial rings.

"These six Giant Demon Elders were quite rich. It seems that most of the accumulated wealth of the many years of the Silent Green Tribe had fallen into their hands!"

When Lin Ming had killed his way over to the headquarters, he had also taken the spatial rings of those he had slain. But, the combined wealth from all of those spatial rings couldn't compare to a single one of the six Elders.

The use of Blood Demon Crystals to Giant Demons were like true essence stones to humans. But since the Blood Demon Crystals also contained a very strong vitality power, they were also useful for humans. A single Blood Demon Crystal was worth dozens of medium-grade true essence stones.

Besides the Blood Demon Crystals, the spatial rings also held many pills and treasures. However, Lin Ming didn't care much for these things.

"Mm… this is…"

Lin Ming's mind stirred. He took out a red token from a spatial ring. The token was the size of palm. It was heavy, thick, and a crimson-colored 'kill' word had been carved into the front. On the back, there was an engraving of an ancient Giant Demon's head. It had curved horns and sharp teeth, making it seem hideously fierce.

As Lin Ming took the token in his hand, he could feel a faint murderous aura coming from it. This token seemed to have some sort of charm within it. Just by looking at it, one's consciousness seemed to fall inside.

"What is this?"

Lin Ming could vaguely feel that this token wasn't ordinary. Suddenly, he poured his true essence into the token. Then red light shined, forming a line of Giant Demon words in the air.

It read, 'Polaris, Blood Slaughter Steppes'.

Lin Ming furrowed his eyebrows; what was this?

He subconsciously glanced at the surrounding martial artists to see if any of them knew what this was. But, almost all of them were surprised. Only Huo Yuan was steadily staring at the token in Lin Ming's hands.

"Huo Yuan, do you know what this is?" Lin Ming asked.

Huo Yuan was startled. Then, he hastily nodded. “My Lord, I haven’t seen this token before, but I can guess a bit of the origins of this token…”

Chapter 523 – 12 Winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo

Chapter 523 – 12 Winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo

…

…

…

“Oh?” Lin Ming didn’t think that Huo Yuan would know anything about the origins of this token. After all, Huo Yuan’s cultivation was only at the Houtian realm and he came from a common background, so his experience was naturally limited. “Tell me, what sort of token is this?”

Huo Yuan pondered for a moment. He organized his thoughts and said, “Lord Lin, this token, if I’m not wrong, is the city entrance token for the Blood Slaughter Steppes’ Heavenly Demon Polaris City.”

“Mm? City entrance token?” Lin Ming was surprised, “Are you sure?”

Looking at the token, it must have had some long history behind it. Not just that, but it gave off a very thick infernal aura. Obviously it wasn’t some common everyday object. How could it just be a city entrance token? What level was this Heavenly Demon City?

“I’m not too sure. I only read this in some ancient texts. However, Heavenly Demon Polaris City is not an ordinary city, but one of the 12 main cities of the Blood Slaughter Steppes.”

“Oh? What sort of power is this Blood Slaughter Steppes?” A moment ago, this ‘city entrance command’ had the words ‘Blood Slaughter Steppes’ appear on it. Huo Yuan also mentioned this Blood Slaughter Steppes again. It seemed as if there was some history behind this power.

Huo Yuan glanced at Lin Ming with surprise. He was bewildered that Lin Ming also hadn't heard of the Blood Slaughter Steppes before, but, he still gave a detailed explanation. "The Blood Slaughter Steppes is a special region that is handed down from ancient times. There is rich infernal energy gathered there, and it is a paradise of death and slaughter."

"The history of the Blood Slaughter Steppes is too glorious and deep. It may have existed for even more than 100,000 year, thus no one knows just who formed the Blood Slaughter Steppes. There are many different stories. Some say that there is a powerful and ancient Saint Beast sealed off within the depths of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. It was said that there was a war that erupted from the Blood Slaughter Steppes once that lasted for thousands of years. There are even more outrageous stories. Some say that the truth is that an unrivaled powerhouse from the Realm of the Gods came down to the Blood Slaughter Steppes and slayed a True Dragon there. The dragon's blood dyed the grounds, and in short... there are just many different stories. No matter what its origins are, what is certain is that many Demon Emperors have died within the Blood Slaughter Steppes. This is a well-known historical fact! There are over 10 Demon Emperors recorded that have died there!"

Over 10 Demon Emperors?

Lin Ming was speechless. Above a six-star Demon General was a Demon King. Above a six-star Demon King was a Demon Emperor. A Demon Emperor was equivalent to a human Supreme Elder at the Divine Sea realm, and was also an Emperor level powerhouse. Perhaps, because of the inherent talent of the Giant Demon race, their Demon Emperors might even be stronger than the human Divine Sea powerhouses. It had to be known that within the entire Sky Spill Continent, Divine Sea Supreme Elders were extremely rare. Yet, in this Blood Slaughters Steppes, over 10 Demon Emperors had fallen. It was truly inconceivable.

Lin Ming didn't speak. He just stood there, listening.

Huo Yuan continued, “The Blood Slaughter Steppes is a cursed land. One reason is because it contains a massive amount of infernal energy and another reason is its secret that no one can discover. Since ancient times, there have been numerous Demon Emperors, and also five-star and six-star Demon Kings, that have wanted to unravel the secret of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. They wanted to seek out their own lucky chances, or at least use an array formation to channel all of the infernal energy for their own use. But the result was that they all died, and all of them from mysterious and strange causes. Some rumors said that they were cursed to death, and some say that they were killed by the mystical power that lies within the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

“Slowly, over time, fewer and fewer masters had the idea of taking advantage of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. Afterwards, let alone Demon Emperors, but not even high level Demon Kings dared to set foot within the Blood Slaughter Steppes. They all feared that they would die within. But, low level martial artists also feared stepping into the Blood Slaughter Steppes because the infernal energy there is just too strong and the entire region is lawless. One could die anywhere… thus, it turned into a paradise for martial artists at the middle level, and is also a gathering place for martial artists that walk on the killing path.”

“Killing path?” Lin Ming’s eyebrows arched up; he immediately had a great interest towards this land. He knew that within the cultivation methods of the Giant Demon race, it was common for those to walk the killing path or carnal path. Within the Holy Demon Continent, it would be easy to gather hundreds of thousands or even millions of martial artists that cultivated in these techniques.

Huo Yuan said, “The Blood Slaughter Steppes contains very special supernatural laws. With the strong infernal energy there, anyone cultivating the killing path can do so at astonishing rates. In particular, the infernal energy of the Blood Slaughter Steppes is concentrated within 12 areas. If one can practice in these source areas, then they can obtain the greatest benefits.

“Gradually, the middle level martial artists established 12 Heavenly Demon Cities within these 12 infernal energy source areas. Any martial artist that has a Blood Slaughter Steppes entrance token can enter the Heavenly Demon Cities and absorb the infernal energy there, forming a Heavenly Demon Tattoo. After killing others, one can steal their infernal energy, finally manifesting your own Heavenly Demon Tattoo. The complete tattoo is a 12 Winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo. At this time, the Heavenly Demon Tattoo will merge with the martial artist and create a special sort of martial intent…"

"Mm? Martial intent?" Lin Ming's heart stirred, "What sort of martial intent?"

Huo Yuan said, "This sort of martial intent is called the Heavenly Demon martial intent. Once this Heavenly Demon martial intent is used, it will form a unique domain of infernal energy. This is called 12 Winged Heavenly Demon Forbidden Zone. Anyone that steps within this zone will be suppressed by infernal energy. As for what other uses there are, I am not too sure."

"Oh? So there are things like this…" Lin Ming was somewhat stunned. This Blood Slaughter Steppes was truly marvelous to contain such a mysterious power. A land where Demon Emperors could die. A land where even the greatest powers did not dare to establish themselves. Like this, this Blood Slaughter Steppes had truly become an unruly land.

There, strength was everything!

All of those that had the city entrance token could enter the Heavenly Demon Cities and obtain the infernal energy, condensing it into a Heavenly Demon Tattoo. But, if one killed others, they could steal away their infernal energy to supplement their own.

It could be said that this Blood Slaughter Steppes was simply a killing grounds.

"if I go to this Blood Slaughter Steppes…" Lin Ming hesitated. He needed to adventure and increase his strength as much as he could. No matter how he looked at it, this Blood Slaughter Steppes was a prime location.

Also, if he could condense a complete 12 Winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo, then he could possibly gain another martial intent.

Lin Ming now had the ethereal martial intent and the Samsara martial intent. If he could gain the Heavenly Demon martial intent, then that would be a total of three.

The ethereal martial intent didn't seem as if it was too useful. But in fact, it greatly compensated for Lin Ming's insufficient talent. If he didn't have the ethereal martial intent, then it would have been very difficult for him to practice any cultivation method, and he would never have broken through to the Xiantian realm so easily.

As for the Samsara martial intent, there was no need to mention how useful it was. The Samsara martial intent was even a powerful soul defense. In the Demon God Imperial Palace, it had already saved his life twice.

If he could add on the Heavenly Demon martial intent…

The more martial intents one had, the more terrifying they were. Lin Ming was aware that thousands of years ago within the Sky Spill Continent, there was a Divine Sea master named Emperor Shakya. He had seven different martial intents! He sat under a Bodhi tree for seven days and seven nights, and finally fused all seven martial intents together, achieving supreme enlightenment. He broke through the martial shackles and gained an immortal body. He flew through the martial void and soared into the Realm of the Gods!

Lin Ming wasn't clear whether or not this 'breaking through the martial shackles' meant that Emperor Shakya had broken through to realms above the Divine Sea. But, what he knew without a shadow of a doubt was that when one accumulated more martial intents, they would have a terrifying qualitative change.

This qualitative change could be related to perception. Otherwise, there was no way that Emperor Shakya would be described as having achieved supreme enlightenment.

Lin Ming's perception was never bad. But that was only concerning a small sect like the Seven Profound Valleys. Now, as Lin Ming grew stronger, he began to discover that his perception was becoming a constraint. It was a weakness that hindered him from growing.

Lin Ming's martial talent had never been good. But with the support of the ethereal martial intent, God Beast bloodlines, and the Heretical God Force giving him an abnormally high fusion compatibility with thunder and fire cultivation methods, Lin Ming's cultivation speed hadn't been slow.

However, perception remained that threshold that Lin Ming had yet to cross.

Lin Ming had practiced 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void' for almost two years now. But, because he had limited comprehensions of the Concept of Wind, he wasn't able to advance in it.

Within the memories of the Realm of the Gods' powerhouses, Lin Ming had inherited knowledge of ancient inscription techniques and array formations. However, in order to achieve a complete mastery and understanding of these, he needed an extremely high perception. Presently, Lin Ming's inscription skill wasn't able to keep up with his burgeoning strength, resulting in him not being able to use many areas of it. As for array formations, Lin Ming was only relying on the memories of the Supreme Elder to understand them. As for laying down his own array formations, that was almost impossible.

There was also the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'. In the latter period of the true 'Great Desolate Halberd Art', every move contained a Concept, especially the Concepts of Space and Time. Lin Ming had never passed this zone. Several days ago, Lin Ming had even personally experienced the turbulent flow of space after going through the ancient transmission array. He was able to experience the power of space and time, but even so, he hadn't been able to comprehend much from this!

In the end, this was all because his perception was lacking.

If he could go to the Blood Slaughter Steppes and gain another martial intent, then this was an opportunity that Lin Ming wouldn't shirk from.

As Lin Ming was daydreaming, he suddenly heard a loud explosion. He looked up and was surprised to see that in the distance, great fireworks lit up the sky. Lin Ming was startled.

“This is… I decided to inform my tribe on my own.” Huo Yuan guiltily explained. He hadn’t expected this battle to end so easily and quickly. He had originally thought of calling over the tribe so that they could collaborate from the inside and out. He never imagined that Lin Ming would handle the elites of the Silent Green Tribe by himself, thus ending in such an easy victory. If the talented people of his tribe came, they would probably steal the fruits of victory.

Lin Ming said, “It doesn’t matter. Since your tribe has come, they can take over control of the Silent Green Tribe.”

Lin Ming naturally didn’t care about these so-called ‘fruits of victory’. Things such as manpower, mineral resources, sheep and cattle, grain, land, and all these other things were useful to a tribe. However, they were meaningless to him. If it could be acquired by them, it would be a good choice for Qing He and her grandmother to stay there.

“Ah… this…” Huo Yuan was sorry. This Silent Green Tribe had a massive amount of wealth, and also operational Blood Demon Crystal mines. Every year, these mines could generate a massive amount of Blood Demon Crystals. And yet Lin Ming was so easily willing to give it away?

Lin Ming said, “I’m not interested in these things. After hearing your story, I’ve decided to go to the Blood Slaughter Steppes.”

“Ah… you… you want to go to the Blood Slaughter Steppes?” Huo Yuan was shocked. As he thought about it, he realized that Lin Ming truly had the qualifications to go there!

Chapter 524 – Muk Gu

Chapter 524 – Muk Gu

..

…

…

Huo Yuan's human tribe was called the Skyrise Tribe. Currently, they were being led by an extreme Xiantian senior.

This person was already over 100 years old. For a Xiantian martial artist, a hundred years was only the middle years of their life. But if it took them 100 years to reach the extreme Xiantian realm, then without a stroke of luck, they would never step into the Revolving Core realm.

Prior to this, Huo Yuan had relayed the situation to the leading general. As the general saw Lin Ming and how young he was, he was filled with disbelief. But as he looked at the corpses that were strewn behind Lin Ming, as well as the thick murderous intent that flowed from him, he couldn't help but believe.

"This is the genius from a great sect who came out to adventure?" The old man whispered to himself. In a sense, the martial artists of Bewitching Cloud Prairie weren't much stronger than common martial artists. Their legacies were lacking and many of their martial artists at the Houtian realm had very shaky foundations. Only a few of them were able to stumble their way into the Xiantian realm, and this was completely because of the massive amounts of battle and fighting that occurred year-round. A cultivation that came from only fighting could not compare to those talents from large sects.

To meet this sort of genius coming out to the Bewitching Cloud Prairie for adventure, and not only that, but to have him smoothly eliminate the Silent Green Tribe… well, it could only be said that they struck gold.

This youth was indeed nonsensically strong. The general had seen some sect talents before, but compared to Lin Ming, they were nothing more than mud to the clouds.

If they could involve themselves with the sect that stood behind Lin Ming, then their benefits would be endless.

“That… Lord Lin…” The general was forming a humble greeting when at this time, a young little girl in black clothes came running over. She was crying as she shouted out, “Big Brother Lin Ming!”

This little girl was Qing He. She had heard the news that the Silent Green Tribe had been overthrown. She was excited, nervous, and also worried about Lin Ming. All of these feelings mixed together within her, causing tears to fall down her cheeks.

“Everything’s okay, Qing He.” Lin Ming patted Qing He’s head.

“Excuse me, Elder, but I’ll have to trouble you with looking after Qing He.” Lin Ming said to the general that was leading the Skyrise Tribe troops.

“Of course, of course.” The general struck his chest in a promising gesture as he saw that he was able to help Lin Ming with a matter.

“Big Brother Lin Ming, are you leaving?” Although Qing He was still a child, she was quite intelligent. She immediately realized the meaning behind Lin Ming’s words.

“Mm, I have to go…” Lin Ming looked at Qing He and smiled. He was aware that ever since Qing He had been born, there had never been anyone besides her grandmother who treated her kindly. She had lived in poverty and hunger.

In such a situation, especially for young girls like Qing He who were incomparably pure and innocent, it was easy for them to be moved by those who treated them well. After meeting him, she had no longer been starving or afraid. He had helped her drive out the bad guys, and he had treated her kindly. Naturally, it was easy for her to form a sense of dependence on him and to wholeheartedly consider him as her big brother.

Unfortunately, Qing He was only a mortal. She might have some martial arts talent, but in the end this was limited. It was unlikely that their paths would cross again in the future.

"I... I know." Qing He kindly didn't say anything further. She only deeply looked at Lin Ming, a trace of reluctance and sentimentality in her eyes.

Qing He was also aware that Lin Ming was only passing by here. He was just like the birds in the sky. Although he might stop by for a rest, he would fly away eventually.

In this way, Lin Ming embarked on the next step of his journey. Under the gaze from the numerous martial artists around him, he slowly walked away...

....

Ten days later...

The high skies were clear and cloudless. But, what was strange was that the sky seemed to be stained with blood. It wasn't a bright sky blue, but rather the color of flowing crimson blood.

Underneath the skies, the land was barren, vast, and endless. At the ends of these barren plains were several towering mountain peaks.

Woosh!

Two streaks of light cut between two mountains at an extreme velocity. From afar, they were like streams of prismatic light; it was incomparably beautiful.

“Junior-apprentice Sister, the Blood Slaughter Steppes are in front of us. Let me ask you again, are you sure you want to go with me?”

This blue rainbow was actually a giant blue bird. It was unknown what species it was, but it was at least 10 times faster than Lin Ming’s Winged Flood Dragon.

The one who just spoke was a black-clothed youth who stood atop the back of the blue bird. He was tall, stately, and had an imposing appearance. Between his eyebrows, there was a faint infernal energy emanating. Although this youth was suppressing it, it was still unwittingly being sent out.

“Senior-apprentice Brother, I’ve already made my decision. There’s nothing more to say.” A black-clothed girl said. She was standing atop another blue bird that that was beside the black-clothed youth. She had a gauzy mask on. Her shapely body emitted a supremely charming aura. A faint infernal energy also emanated from her. She gave off an aloof and haughty feeling.

These two fellow apprentices were humans. But, they practiced demonic cultivation methods. What they walked was the killing path.

Within the Holy Demon Continent, this was a very common phenomenon. Humans that practiced demonic cultivation methods would naturally be inferior in talent to a Giant Demon. But on the other hand, even if they practiced honest and righteous cultivation methods, they would also be inferior to Giant Demons.

With this being the case, good and evil did not matter. Not to mention that there was rich and thick demonic energy that permeated through the Holy Demon Continent. Cultivating demonic arts was much smoother than in the Sky Spill Continent.

Thus, there were large numbers of those from demonic sects that were here. At this moment, this man and woman were two outstanding talents that came from a large demonic sect.

“Junior-apprentice Sister, as soon as we walk upon the path of slaughter then there is no turning back. We will either kill or be killed. There are very few that are able to cross this sea of blood. You should think carefully about what you want to do!”

“Senior-apprentice Brother, I am naturally clear about all of this!” The black-clothed woman calmly said.

The young man sighed and then didn’t speak again. Suddenly, at this moment, there was someone flitting past below him. It was a blue-clothed youth. Although this young man didn’t have a mount, he was quickly flying by himself.

It had to be known that within the Holy Demon Continent, even if one took transmission arrays to hurry along, there were still great distances that were calculated in 100,000 mile units. Without a mount to ride, flying would consume a great deal of true essence. The average person wouldn’t do something like this.

“Mm? He’s comprehended the Concept of Wind? If he coordinates the Concept of Wind with his flying ability, then it would truly be effortless to fly. No wonder he’s so fast. He must be a talent from some sect.”

The black-clothed youth turned his bird mount to catch up to the young man, “Fellow martial cultivator, I am Muk Gu of Sky Pavilion City!”

“What do you want?” Lin Ming responded. He didn’t give his name. The more he closed in on the Blood Slaughter Steppes, the more cautious he became. Here, murdering and robbing someone was a completely natural and common occurrence.

“Just a greeting from a chance meeting. I assume that you are a talent from some large sect too, huh?” As Muk Gu spoke, he was stunned. He had discovered that Lin Ming’s cultivation was only at the early Xiantian realm. Was it possible that he was headed to the Blood Slaughter Steppes? For an early Xiantian realm youth to head for the Blood Slaughter Steppes, that was truly the height of confidence!

“Friend, I don’t know whether or not you’re going to the Blood Slaughter Steppes, but I would like to advise you that the Blood Slaughter Steppes is not a peaceful place. There, the people can murder you without batting an eye. I see that your cultivation is only at the early Xiantian realm. I wonder whether you are going to the Blood Slaughter Steppes for adventure, or whether you have some matter to attend to? It looks like you have a Blood Slaughter Token on you from the faint infernal energy aura that you’re emitting. Would you be willing to sell it to me? I believe I can provide you with an adequate reward that will satisfy you.”

“My apologies, this Blood Slaughter Token is useful to me, I will have to decline your offer.” Lin Ming flatly refused. He remained calm on the surface even as he went on alert. From his experiences, it wouldn’t be strange if this man tried to rob him or some other strange thing.

Muk Gu smiled after being refused. He said, “Since friend doesn’t wish to, then I will not force you. But, let me give you some last advice. Not everyone in the Blood Slaughter Steppes will be as easy-speaking and reasonable as me, especially those from the Giant Demon race. They won’t even talk with you before killing you. Frankly, if you weren’t a human and rather a Giant Demon, then I might have done the same.”

Muk Gu heartily laughed and then spurred the blue bird to return back to his junior-apprentice sister’s side.

“Senior-apprentice Brother, what is it?” The black-clothed woman asked afar.

“Nothing much. It was just that the young man had a Blood Slaughter Token. I was hoping to purchase it so our fellow disciples could use it too, but it looks like I was rejected. It doesn’t matter anyways. I believe he is from some large sect, and his sect might not be much different from our own. I didn’t know who that heroic youth was, so I was just hoping to get his name.”

……………………

Lin Ming didn't continue flying until he saw Muk Gu leave his range of sight. From a moment ago, he could feel Muk Gu's formidable aura; he could tell he was an extremely self-confident individual. Although his words were respectful, the truth was that he was arrogant, and he also had the strength to match his arrogance. His inner true essence was very thick, and although his cultivation was only at the half-step Revolving Core realm, his strength might not be any weaker than a Revolving Core powerhouse. He didn't even look over 30 years old! Such an age and strength meant that he wasn't much inferior to Mu Qianyu!

"I haven't even reached the Blood Slaughter Steppes and I've met a talent like this. It seems that the Blood Slaughter Steppes is truly not a quiet place." After Lin Ming arrived at the Holy Demon Continent, he felt that the average quality of the martial artists here was much higher than those from the South Horizon Region and Five Element Region.

This was because Giant Demons had outstanding talents, and they were naturally born warriors. The second reason was that war and fighting constantly occurred within the Holy Demon Continent. This was the ideal condition for a martial artist to grow. Therefore, even a human martial artist was much more formidable than those from the South Horizon Region.

For instance, take the Bewitching Cloud Prairie. If the Bewitching Cloud Prairie were placed within the South Horizon Region, it would at best be equal to the Seven Profound Territory. However, the entire Seven Profound Territory of the South Horizon Region only had a single Revolving Core master. But here, in the Bewitching Cloud Prairie, there were 20 to 30 Revolving Core realm powerhouses. Although the majority of them were Giant Demons, there were still seven or eight human Revolving Core masters.

After several days passed, Lin Ming fully entered the Blood Slaughter Steppes. To his surprise, not only did he see humans and Giant Demons, but also many other races.

Among them, one of the races was exceptionally beautiful. The men were handsome and eye-catching, and the women were beautiful. They had alluring jade eyes, long and sharp ears, and ocean-green hair. Besides their eyes, ears, and coloring, they were very similar to humans. Some had radiant patches of scales on their faces, and some even had charming tails.

Afterwards, Lin Ming learned that this was the Fey race of the Holy Demon Continent.

Chapter 525 – Murder in the Streets

Chapter 525 – Murder in the Streets

…

…

…

The Fey had a very long and glorious history. Now they occupied the Western Region of the Holy Demon Continent. Because both the men and woman of the Fey race were exceptionally beautiful, they were often captured to be used for sexual cultivation purposes. Within the Holy Demon Continent, there were countless martial artists that walked down the road of obscenity, including both men and women.

Due to this, the sexual slave trade of the Fey race was flourishing. Besides sexual slaves, the beautiful mortal Fey were often indentured as servants, concubines, or catamites. There were even mortal Fey and untalented Fey who were willing to contract themselves to powerhouses to seek asylum. In this cruel and brutal Holy Demon Continent, this was an easier way to survive.

Besides the Fey, there were also the Dwarves, the Primates, the Ferals, and all sorts of other races. This was a major eye-opener for Lin Ming. Within the Sky Spill Continent, this was an unprecedented marvelous sight.

In terms of influence and power, the Giant Demon race ranked number one within the Holy Demon Continent. This was followed by the Dwarves, the Primates, and then humans as fourth. The Fey and the Feral race were even lower than humans.

……

Blood Slaughter Steppes, Sun Flood City…

Sun Flood City was not one of the 12 main cities of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. Rather, it was a smaller city at the edge of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. But there were many travelers, merchants, and commoners here, thus Sun Flood City was very prosperous. The city had millions of residents, and the city square, restaurants, and inns were lively and blooming.

Sun Flood City was not one of the original cities of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. It was impossible to steal someone's infernal energy by killing them. Thus, far fewer murders occurred here. But it was common for events like that to explode at any moment.

Sun Flood Pavilion was the greatest marketplace for treasures within Sun Flood City. The buildings within were all 12 stories high, luxuriously decorated, and often frequented by wealthy and powerful patrons. In front of the gates of the Sun Flood Pavilion, there was a very large square. This was a small city square of Sun Flood City. Many martial artists set up stalls here to hawk their wares. At this moment, all sorts of people were gathered at this square. There were people from all races, and the stalls had all sorts of wonderful items.

"There are so many good things here." As Lin Ming walked along, his heart filled with emotion. Within the Blood Slaughter Steppes, there were many exceptional and distinguished middle level cultivation martial artists. Naturally, there would be more good things.

"Divine Blood Pill! To think something like this would actually be sold." Lin Ming exclaimed.

The Divine Blood Pill was similar to the Yang Reversion Pill. They were both miracle medicines that were used to save a life. Normally, in a top fourth-grade sect, there would only be one or two pills given to the top talents there. They were extremely valuable and precious.

Back when Lin Ming was at the Demon God Imperial Palace, he was lucky to have a Yang Reversion Pill. Otherwise, his life would have been in much greater danger. Due to these experiences, Lin Ming naturally had an interest in life-saving pills like this Divine Blood Pill. So he asked, "Hello friend, what are you selling this Divine Blood Pill for?"

The stall vendor was a Giant Demon with a long face. Currently, he was looking down on Lin Ming with a barely tolerable disdain on his face. Within the Holy Demon Continent, Giant Demons loathed the weak and pathetic humans, not to mention that Lin Ming was also only an early Xiantian realm martial artist. Just from a glance, he could tell that he wasn't able to afford his Divine Blood Pill.

"Where did this little brat come from? This father's Divine Blood Pill will only be traded for 100 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals! 100 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals, and not a single one less!"

Within the death-filled Blood Slaughter Steppes, a life-saving medicine like the Divine Blood Pill only became more precious and rare. This Giant Demon must have been urgently in need of money if he were taking this sort of pill out to sell!

"Medium-grade Blood Demon Crystal…" Lin Ming was stunned. He had many medium-grade true essence stones, but not many medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals. When he killed the six Elders of the Silent Green Tribe, he had obtained a great number of Blood Demon Crystals. But they were the most inferior kind with too many impurities.

The long-faced Giant Demon had already long guessed that Lin Ming couldn't afford anything. He impatiently said, "Don't block this father from doing business. Now go away, this isn't something that someone like you can afford."

After being scolded several times by this Giant Demon, Lin Ming frowned. This Giant Demon was really a rude snob. As Lin Ming was pondering, he suddenly heard a laugh.

"Haha! What a great spear! With this spear, the strength of I, Ao Ri, will rise yet again!"

From within the great hall of the Sun Flood Pavilion, a tall Giant Demon came strutting out. He wore red armor, and had a newly-purchased spear in his hands. There were many people that seemed to know this red-armored Giant Demon. Many of them came up to greet him.

“A medium-grade earth-step spear! And a top medium-grade earth-step spear at that! What a great weapon! Brother Ao Ri, you really know how to show off!”

The red-armored Giant Demon laughed, his face covered with a proud smile as he said “With this spear, my War God Technique will be even more powerful!”

Beside Ao Ri, another Giant Demon said, “I heard that you came back from Polaris City. How was it? Did you kill to your heart’s content?”

Polaris City?

Lin Ming’s mind stirred. He had originally come to this city square for a casual stroll to see if there was anything that interested him. He didn’t care about what noise happened here, but now that he heard someone mention Polaris City, he couldn’t help but pay attention. The Blood Slaughter Steppes had 12 main Heavenly Demon Cities. One of these was Polaris City, which was the one he was intending to go to.

“Haha, of course I killed a bunch! In this past half year, I’ve already killed over 100 masters! My infernal energy is accumulating to the point where it can almost manifest!” Ao Ri smiled and put away his spear, trading it for a jug of wine. He drank a great mouthful of it.

“Ao Ri, you spent half a year at the outer city? You haven’t gone inside?” As Ao Ri was showing off, a less happy voice suddenly sounded out. The one speaking was a short Giant Demon.

“Humph, you think that the martial artists of Polaris City are mud I can pinch apart? The inner city is fine by itself. I’ve been in the outer city for half a year, and I’ve already met over 10 masters. None of these people are ones you can casually mess with.”

“Oh? Which masters are you talking about?” As soon as people heard about the masters of Polaris City, they were immediately interested.

“There are the Giant Demons Da Gu, Mo He, the Dwarf Chi Yan… well, in short, there are just too many masters to count. Polaris City is really a crouching tiger, hidden dragon. There are too many masters disguised there; you can’t even look down on those at the same level. It’s not wrong that you would be a genius, but so would everyone else there. Unless… the other side was a human. That is, humans are the best to kill. Among all the races, humans are the weakest. Let alone if they were at my level, even if they were higher than me by a small boundary, there are few that would be my match!” Ao Ri arrogantly said as he drank his wine.

“Haha, humans are just too weak. Although their current status can be placed fourth within the Holy Demon Continent, this ranking is only because of their numbers and the fact that they can breed like rabbits. In terms of fertility, the humans are truly the winners, hehe. But what a pity, in terms of martial arts talent, the humans are a complete mess. Compared to us Giant Demons and the little Fey, the difference is like cloud to mud.

Several Giant Demons spoke loud and brashly, not holding anything back. All of the human martial artists around them glared as they heard the Giant Demons’ conversation. However, as they noticed the Giant Demons’ aura and cultivation, they could only remain silent.

These Giant Demons were not some nobodies.

Ao Ri said, “The Fey race are truly the favored of the heavens. If it wasn’t for them being so few in number, I fear they would be the number one race within the Holy Demon Continent. To you and me, we might be considered invincible among human martial artists at the same level, but if we are compared to the Fey, then we aren’t too exceptional. The truth is, besides humans, the Ferals aren’t much either. The humans have a weak body that can break with a touch, and the Ferals are all brainless idiots. What a pity. The Ferals have a tyrannical physique, but their perception is pathetic. They need to spend several years just studying the simplest of cultivation methods. They can forget about ever understanding the more advanced kind.”

“You f*ck, who are you saying is stupid!?” As the Giant Demons were loudly speaking, there was suddenly a roar. A Feral man over 10 feet tall and draped in animal skin leapt forwards. His hair was long and messy, and his mouth was full of sharp fangs. He had a thick, prominent lower jaw, and his face was similar to a gorilla’s.

“Heh, speaking of Ferals, one just came up to die.” Ao Ri looked at this Feral with disdain. His hands were relaxed at his side; he simply hadn’t put this Feral in his eyes.

“Cut the trash, take out your weapon!” The Feral roared. Then, he took out a thick spiked iron rod from his back.

“Humph, you think someone like you is worthy for me to take out my weapon? You are looking down on the brutal battles of the Blood Slaughter Steppes’ Polaris City. Now go die!”

Ao Ri suddenly took a step forwards and kicked out!

“Eat my rod!” After being provoked by Ao Ri, the Feral flew into a rage. He shouted as he smashed his rod down at Ao Ri’s leg. All of the surrounding martial artists sucked in a sharp breath. The Feral race were famous throughout the Holy Demon Continent for their great strength. If this rod hit that Giant Demon’s leg, then it would definitely shatter every single one of his bones!

However, this leg kick of Ao Ri’s seemed to carry the momentum of rivers and mountains. After kicking out his leg, demon essence flooded out like a sea in a raging storm, unstoppable and irresistible. The Feral’s rod was affected by this aura and faltered. But in this moment, Ao Ri’s leg actually struck the Feral’s throat.

Peng!

With a muffled thumping sound, the Feral's neck cracked apart. His body flew backwards, smashing into the ground and sliding back dozens of feet!

Looking at the Feral, one could see his eyes were bulging and his neck was twisted in a weird angle. His neck had actually been broken by Ao Ri’s kick!

A pool of blood soon flowed out from the Feral's head, dyeing the ground red.

"He's dead?"

Lin Ming was surprised. This wasn't even one of the 12 main cities of the Blood Slaughter Steppes, and there was already murder in the streets. This land was truly a killing paradise.

Although the surrounding martial artists looked alarmed, this was only towards Ao Ri. As for these killings in the street, they seemed extremely common.

"Humph, that is what you get for biting off more than you can chew. He was so weak yet he dared to provoke others!"

"Haha, whether they are Ferals or humans, they are the most welcome match within the Heavenly Demon cities! They are simply delivering infernal energy to us Giant Demons." Ao Ri licked his lips, very satisfied with his frightening performance. But, it didn't seem as if he had enough fun yet. He turned around and suddenly found a black-clothed young girl in the crowd who was wearing gauzy mask. He lewdly smiled at her and said, "Hehe, pretty little girl, do you want to come up and play? Rest assured that this father will treat you with care."

As Ao Ri spoke, Lin Ming also glanced over. His eyes widened. He had met this black-clothed woman just a few days ago. At the time, she had been riding a big blue bird. She was the junior-apprentice sister of Muk Gu.

Chapter 526 – Soaring Red Light

Chapter 526 – Soaring Red Light

…

…

…

When the black-clothed girl heard this Giant Demon calling out to her, she pressed her delicate eyebrows together in a frown. A faint aura of infernal energy between her eyebrows almost erupted, but she kept it down.

‘I wonder where that Muk Gu went…’ Lin Ming only saw the black-clothed girl, and didn’t see Muk Gu nearby.

“Pretty little girl, why don’t you come and play with me?” Ao Ri provoked again.

At this time, some of the human martial artists were already quietly retreating. They didn’t want to be caught in Ao Ri’s crosshairs.

The black-clothed girl’s eyes flashed with a murderous light and she instantly drew her longsword from its sheath. One didn’t see the movement, but one could clearly hear the piercing sound of the sword energy as it passed through the air. The sharp sword light shined, thrusting straight towards Ao Ri’s forehead!

“Humph!”

Ao Ri coldly coughed, and smashed that sword light apart with his fist!

With a ringing explosion, the sword light was broken apart by that fist!

Deng deng deng!

Ao Ri drew back three steps, his fist dyed red with blood.

The black-clothed girl's expression was surprised underneath her mask. Her opponent had received her sword attack with his bare fist, but he had only been forced three steps back. His fist had been injured, but he was more or less unharmed. This Giant Demon's strength was no less than her own.

She had originally wanted to teach this scum a lesson, but she didn't imagine that his strength would be like this. If they truly fought, then it would be difficult to decide a victor in a short period of time. She also had important matters to attend to and didn't want to waste her time getting caught up here. She turned around and stepped away. Quickly, her enchanting figure submerged into the crowd, lost.

"That little b*tch!" Ao Ri cursed. But, he didn't chase her. From that one exchange, he could tell that this little human girl was exceedingly strong. She was most likely a top talent from some sect. Although he didn't use a weapon, his skill with a weapon wasn't much better than him using his fists. And yet, not only was his fist injured, but he had also been forced back three steps.

"What crap luck, I actually met a top human talent here." Ao Ri was crestfallen. He had just been full-throated bragging that there wasn't a single human genius that could compare with him. The result of this was that he had been publicly shamed in front of everyone, and by a young girl at that. That little girl was able to stand evenly against him, and she also looked to be just a bit over 20 years old. She was most likely even younger than he was.

As his heart burned with anger and shame, he swept his eyes across everyone. Immediately, everyone drew back, lest they draw trouble onto themselves.

With all of the human martial artists bowing or backing away, the calm and confident-looking Lin Ming naturally stood out. Ao Ri's eyes instantly fell on him. "Hm? This boy, it seems that there is some condensed infernal energy on his body. Is that a Blood Slaughter Token?"

The 12 Heavenly Demon Cities had a limited number of Blood Slaughter Tokens. Blood Slaughter Tokens were used by martial artists to assist in condensing their infernal energy and forming the Heavenly Demon Tattoo. If one didn't have a Blood Slaughter Token, then the infernal energy they gain from killing others would slowly disperse. It would take a much greater amount of effort to condense a Heavenly Demon Tattoo.

Ao Ri had already stayed at in a Heavenly Demon City for over half a year, so he was sensitive to the energy emitted from a Blood Slaughter Token. He was 50 to 60% sure that Lin Ming had a Blood Slaughter Token on him.

But the question was, how could a mere Xiantian realm boy have gotten a Blood Slaughter Token worth dozens of medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals?

Although Ao Ri was wealthy, he wasn't rich enough that he could ignore the temptation of a treasure worth dozens of medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals. It had to be known within Polaris City, a life-saving miracle medicine like the Divine Blood Pill was worth 100 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals.

For a Xiantian realm boy to carry around such a valuable treasure… well, it wasn't Ao Ri's style to not steal it.

"Boy! Come over here!" Ao Ri said as he licked his lips. He looked at Lin Ming as if he were some delicious prey.

Lin Ming frowned. He hadn't said anything and he was also standing in an inconspicuous location. And he was the one that was eyed among everyone else here?

"F*ck! Lord Ao Ri is calling for you! Are you deaf!?" Beside Ao Ri, a few of his minions shouted out. To the people of Sun Flood City, anyone that could make a round trip to one of the 12 Heavenly Demon Cities and return safely was absolutely a ruthless monster. It would be advantageous and prestigious to be a minion or someone like this.

“Haha, boy, what bad luck you have.” Behind Lin Ming, the Divine Blood Pill vendor was enjoying his misfortune. He knew that once Ao Ri had locked onto someone, they wouldn’t escape unscathed. “Go away. Why don’t you go join in the fun.”

As the minions saw Lin Ming remained unmoved, they all cussed at him, “F*ck, who does he think he is? Let’s go teach him a lesson!”

As they spoke, they all rushed at Lin Ming. The black-clothed girl’s cultivations had been too high. They hadn’t been her match, so they naturally wouldn’t rush at her so recklessly. But facing Lin Ming, an early Xiantian realm amateur, his realm wasn’t any higher than theirs and he was also a human. This was their opportunity to show off in front of their boss.

The minions attacked together. They deliberately intended to avoid his vital points and attack his limbs. If they ruined this Xiantian martial artist’s body and crippled his arms and legs, then he would become nothing more than waste.

Ca!

A bloody crimson light shot forth. Lin Ming flicked his five fingers, and five Blood Drinking Seals flew out like arrows! The bloody light leapt into the air, filling the skies with a fierce and deadly murderous intent that came falling down, enveloping everyone. All of the surrounding martial artists shuddered in fear.

One Blood Drinking Seal flew at each of the five Giant Demon minions. Bloody lights cut through the void.

“Ahhh!”

The five Giant Demons cried out in pain as they grasped onto their right arms. Their right hands were all rolling on the ground; they had been chopped off, with blood crazily spraying everywhere! In an instant, Lin Ming had sliced off their hands, but he hadn’t even moved at all.

“What!?”

“What did that boy do? What was that red light? Was that a concealed weapon?”

“Where is the boy from!?”

With a single move cutting off the five Giant Demon’s hands, Lin Ming had shown mercy. After all, if he could cut off their right hands then he could also cut off their heads!

In the square, every martial artist, regardless of race, and all of the various vendors and customers were staring in shock. They had been waiting to see just how miserable Lin Ming would end up. But how could they have expected that this young-looking man was so ruthless?

In fact, if they knew that Lin Ming’s true age was only 18 years, their chins would probably have hit the ground.

The crimson light was too quick. It was fast to the point that they hadn’t been able to see what it was. They only felt a thick and vibrant bloody energy in that instant, and a chilling shiver crawl up their backs.

“You smelly brat!”

Ao Ri grimaced.

F*ck, how could he have such shit luck today? Both of these young humans that he bumped into had been abnormal freaks.

Ao Ri could also defeat those five minions in an instant. But, he wasn’t sure whether or not this young boy had more cards he was hiding. With such an estimate, the chances of defeating this young man were basically a coin flip.

Was this little bastard really an early Xiantian powerhouse of humanity? Even a saint level talent of the Fey couldn’t match up!

Ao Ri grumbled in his heart. In his half year at Polaris City, he hadn’t run into such monstrous human powerhouses. But today, he managed to catch them all.

He had ridden the tiger and now he couldn't back down. Within Sun Flood City, Ao Ri was an infamous character. If it was known that he was smacked around by a human Xiantian realm boy and ran away with his tail between his legs, then he would be laughed at in the future by everyone. There was no way to extricate himself from this situation.

'Although I'll lose face against this brat, I'll still try my best. If I can catch him by surprise, then I'll be able to gain the upper hand for three to five moves at least. If that happens, I can just back away and consider it as honorably stepping away.'

As Ao Ri thought of this, he coldly said, "Boy, I admit that I underestimated you a moment ago. You do have some skill. Since you injured my men, I'll give you a chance. If you can take three moves of mine, then I will let this matter go!"

Ao Ri shamelessly proclaimed. At this time, he no longer dared to scheme about Lin Ming's Blood Slaughter Token. All that was in his mind was how to gain the upper hand in these next three moves and avoid losing his hard earned reputation.

Lin Ming's face had a hint of a taunting smile. He'd let this fool bumble about as he wished.

Ca!

Ao Ri flourished his weapon. This was the medium-grade earth-step spear that he purchased from the Sun Flood Pavillion at a great price. He hadn't even taken out his weapon against the black-clothed girl, but against Lin Ming, he had no choice but to go all out.

"Boy, you won't use your weapon?" As Ao Ri saw that Lin Ming wasn't moving, he felt ill. "If you look down on me, then you're just asking to die!"

"Demon Tyrant World!"

Ao Ri loudly shouted and thrust his spear out. Behind Ao Ri, the shade of a Demon King manifested. On the back of this Demon King shade was a great pair of wings.

As the Demon King shade appeared, Ao Ri's aura instantly erupted. It was like the heavens and earths were being stirred up by his spear.

"It's the Heavenly Demon Tattoo; Ao Ri is serious now."

"He condensed the Heavenly Demon Tattoo in Polaris City. It is able to increase the power of demonic martial skills. I'm so jealous of him."

Everyone sighed. At this time, Lin Ming attacked. Without a weapon in hand, he took a sudden step forwards and punched out.

Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!

Vibrating true essence combined with dozens of Blood Drinking Seals as they shot out. The sky filled with flashing red lights, and the winged Heavenly Demon shade was directly cut into pieces by the Blood Drinking Seals. Right after, the vibrating true essence broke it apart, disintegrating it into nothing!

"What!?"

Ao Ri's expression changed. He desperately stimulated all of his bodily demon essence protection to the limit. However, how could mere bodily demon essence stand up to the incomparably sharp Blood Drinking Seals?

Pu!

Ao Ri's protective true essence was torn apart like it was thin paper. He spat out a mouthful of blood and flew backwards, landing unconscious on the floor.

After winning with a single move, Lin Ming wasn't moved. With his current strength, there were very few people in the younger generation that were a worthy opponent for him. Not to mention that Ao Ri wasn't even a top talent of the younger generation. That fellow Muk Gu that he had met before was much more formidable.

"He's too strong; Ao Ri isn't even on his level!"

“This strength may not be able to sweep away everyone in the outer ward of Polaris City, but it should be enough to rule over a small area! This fellow is only at the early Xiantian realm, but he looks so young. I don’t know which sect raised a talent like this. It’s hard to imagine that a human Xiantian martial artist would be able to cultivate to this degree...”

As the surrounding martial artists discussed Lin Ming, the Divine Blood Pill vendor behind him turned ashen. In Sun Flood City, although casual murder in the streets didn’t happen often, it did happen. If this young man could defeat Ao Ri so easily, then he could die just as easily. It wasn’t difficult to imagine the scene that would occur. As the vendor thought back to his rude and dismissive behavior towards Lin Ming, he felt chills crawl up his spine. He was terrified...

1000 feet away from the square, a black-clothed youth faintly smiled. “Hoh, you really can’t judge a book by its cover. Junior-apprentice Sister, this young man is much stronger than you are.”

The black-clothed youth who spoke was Muk Gu. Beside him was the black-clothed girl, his junior-apprentice sister Muk Qing.

“He is truly stronger than I am, but, I believe I will be able to surpass him in the next several years!” Muk Qing said, not too satisfied.

“Surpass him? That might not be possible. He might even be younger than you.” Muk Gu glanced at Muk Qing and smiled.

Chapter 527 – Robbers

Chapter 527 – Robbers

…

…

…

Muk Qing was 23 years old. In her sect, she was a rising Saint level talent. It was possible that her future achievements might even surpass Muk Gu's; she was no worse than someone like Mu Qianyu.

As she heard Muk Gu say that Lin Ming might be younger than her, Muk Qing's words caught in her throat. There wasn't anything she could say. She was used to surpassing others, so that's why she reflexively said that she had confidence she could pass Lin Ming in several years. But now that she knew that Lin Ming was younger than her, she found this hard to accept.

"Let's go. He's probably going to Polaris City. Most of the martial artists that pass through Sun Flood City will be going to that Heavenly Demon City. I can't believe that I told him to be careful of robbers. It's a bit laughable now that I think back on it. Perhaps at that time, if I had tried to steal from him, I might even have been defeated by his hand…"

"Senior-apprentice Brother, even you think you're not his match?" Muk Qing said, surprised.

"It's hard to say… it seems that a few years from now, there will be a new super powerhouse in Polaris City." Muk Gu sighed.

Those humans that willingly came to the Blood Slaughter Steppes were the most outstanding talents among juniors.

As for the older generation, most of them were powerful. But, few came to the Blood Slaughter Steppes; they were afraid of the strange and fantastical curse that enveloped the land. Not just that, but it was meaningless to adventure and gain experience with the juniors.

As for as the weaker amongst the older generation, they didn't usually come to the Blood Slaughter Steppes either. If they were weak at their age, they most likely wouldn't have much further enhancements in their achievements. If they came to the Blood Slaughter Steppes, what they risked was death. They might lose their life in vain without even the chance to further their cultivation. The gains simply didn't match the loss.

It could be said that the Blood Slaughter Steppes was the Holy Demon Continent's gathering land for the most superb youths. Here, everyone was a genius. If one could jump ranks to defeat others, then so could everyone else. No matter how strong one was, no one underestimated anyone, even if they were on the same level. Even if their opponent was young or their realm was low, they still had the possibility to kill them.

Within the Blood Slaughter Steppes, even a tyrannical dragon had to be cautious. Otherwise, who knew whether or not they would provoke an even more powerful foe.

As Muk Gu finished speaking he returned to the building behind him. Muk Qing grit her teeth, gave Lin Ming one last look, and then turned around to follow.

....

"Young Hero, Young Hero, this Divine Blood Pill, I will trade it to you for only 10 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals. I just hope that you overlook..." In the square at the Sun Flood Pavillion, the Giant Demon vendor who was selling the Divine Blood Pill turned green with regret as he saw Lin Ming's terrifying performance. Not only had he missed his chance to befriend such a top talent, but he also became enemies within him. Sun Flood City was not like some normal city. Here, when martial artists had grudges, it was possible that they would act on them even in the streets. This was a completely normal matter. Thus, the Giant Demon was scared witless. In order to not offend Lin Ming any further, he could only offer up this Divine Blood Pill at a discount. If it wasn't for the fact that he really did need Blood Demon Crystals, he might have directly given the Divine Blood Pill to Lin Ming.

Hearing the vendor take such an initiative to be friendly, Lin Ming naturally didn't refuse, "I don't have any medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals. I only have medium-grade true essence stones and low-grade Blood Demon Crystals. You can name your price from that."

The vendor was surprised. Just where did the fellow come from? He was so talented yet he didn't have any medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals? The exchange rate between low-grade Blood Demon Crystals and medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals was 100 to 1. Although this ratio was a bit inflated, it was because low-grade Blood Demon Crystals weren't all that useful to geniuses, thus the average person wouldn't be willing to accept them.

The vendor clenched his teeth and said, "1000 low-grade Blood Demon Crystals, and you've got a deal I'll consider it a discount!"

As he finished speaking, he helplessly looked at Lin Ming. He only hoped that Lin Ming would overlook the matter from earlier. In the future, he wanted to stay in Sun Flood City without having to look over his shoulder every day.

Lin Ming didn't know that the vendor was having such troubles. He didn't plan on rejecting the Divine Blood Pill either way. "2000 low-grade Blood Demon Crystals, you can count it."

Lin Ming tossed over a spatial ring; this ring had belonged to the six Elders of the Silent Green Tribe.

As soon as the vendor heard 2000 low-grade Blood Demon Crystals, he was instantly happy. It seemed that this human martial artist was still kind enough and wasn't forcing him to the ledge. But, after he took the spatial ring and looked through it, he was left speechless. The Blood Demon Crystals in this spatial ring could be called garbage. They were literally the discarded Blood Demon Crystal ore that no one would want. 2000 of these so-called Blood Demon Crystals might not even match up to 1000 pure low-grade Blood Demon Crystals.

Just where had this human come from?

The vendor was speechless. This sort of Blood Demon Crystal would only be used by common mortal martial artists.

In this situation, the vendor could only bow his head and grit his teeth. He had no chance to voice his grievance. These were the iron rules of the Blood Slaughter Steppes…

……………………

After Lin Ming left Sun Flood City, he bought a mount and quickly hurried on. He really didn't have many Blood Demon Crystals on hand. He had to fill in the missing amount with true essence stones in order to purchase a blue-winged bird. It wasn't too fast at flying, but Lin Ming was mainly using it so he could rest.

After all, the deeper one went into the Blood Slaughter Steppes, the more dangerous it would be, and the more common murder and death became. Lin Ming needed to always maintain his top fighting form.

As Lin Ming rode forwards, he encountered several groups of martial artists. Among them were humans, Giant Demons, Fey, and all sorts of other races. As he looked at them, he could see that they had thick and pure true essence, and they were also young.

"The martial arts cultivation atmosphere of the Holy Demon Continent is much more flourishing than that of the Sky Spill Continent. One reason is because the other races have such outstanding talent and the other is because there are so many different races. They go on adventures every year and constantly fight, so it's easier for powerhouses to be born here." Constant fighting was truly an easy way to produce geniuses. During ancient times, Emperor level talents were most likely to appear when war swept over the entire land.

As Lin Ming approached Polaris City, he saw more and more outstanding youths, enough so that even he was stunned and amazed. Especially the Fey race. Their natural talent was even superior to the Giant Demons. Unfortunately, they were few in number, otherwise they might have already dominated the Holy Demon Continent.

Along the way, Lin Ming saw two heroic Fey youths that he suspected were Saint level talents.

“The Holy Demon Continent originally had many geniuses, and the Blood Slaughter Steppes is the gathering point for this massive number of geniuses. It is truly astonishing!” Although Lin Ming sighed as he said this, he was actually feeling excited and thrilled. It was ideal that he would be here alongside those competitors that could offer him challenge. Only like this could his progress become faster. After all, it was impossible to comprehend the essence of martial arts by going into closed-door seclusion.

It was right that he came to the Blood Slaughter Steppes!

………………

“We’ve waited such a long time, and now a tiny fat sheep has finally arrived.” Several miles away from Lin Ming, several Impish martial artists had gathered together. They were sizing Lin Ming up like prey.

“He’s only at the early Xiantian realm and his mount is normal. Do you think he might be too poor?”

“Mm… although his cultivation is lower, his true essence is incomparably thick. For better or worse, he must also be a talent from a large sect, so he should have a good amount of possessions. For an early Xiantian boy to wander into the Blood Slaughter Steppes… he must really believe in himself. But those that have too much self-confidence are always the ones that die first.

When many geniuses heard of the Blood Slaughter Steppes, they might rush there because of their arrogance, even if their cultivation was insufficient. In their recklessness, they would finally perish in the wilderness without even reaching the city gates. This was because of the numerous robbers that existed in the wild.

These robbers were mostly of the Imp race. Within the Holy Demon Continent, the Imps could be called infamous for this behavior. Although the Giant Demons were incredibly brutal and bloodthirsty killers, for better or worse, they also had scruples. In some matters, there were bottom lines that they wouldn’t cross.

But the Imps were greedy, despicable, sinister, and committed all sorts of crimes with glee. They bullied the weak and feared the strong. They lusted over beauty, and their behavior was abnormal and obscene. Besides the Ferals, they would chase after the beauties of every single other race. If a woman were to fall into the hands of an Imp, they would suffer the most miserable of fates before being tortured to death.

“Hehe, if we didn’t have such a person, then what would us brothers eat!” The Imp in the front said as he licked his lips.

“Let’s go. Kill him!”

All of them rushed out with their full strength. Although these Imps had a cultivation that surpassed Lin Ming, there were also many humans behind him. As they attacked together, it was like dark clouds of demonic energy were roiling in the air!

Lin Ming sneered. He didn’t even slow down as he crashed directly into the dark clouds.

‘I’ve already heard that the Blood Slaughter Steppes is filled with murderers and robbers. I’ve come so far into the Blood Slaughter Steppes and this is the first group that I’ve run into. If I consider my low cultivation and the fact that I’m alone, then I could be considered really lucky.’

Lin Ming laughed in his mind. He didn’t even take out his spear. He flicked ten fingers, and ten Blood Drinking Seals shot out!

The crimson red lights cut through the void. In the next moment, blood flew out, dyeing the earth red. Seven or eight Imps had been sliced to pieces by Lin Ming's Blood Drinking Seals! The remaining Imps stood there, stunned, their eyes filled with disbelief.

Peng peng peng!

Bloody fog exploded from the corpses of the Imps, turning into new Blood Drinking Seals.

"Mm? Blood Drinking Seals condensed from Imps are also good. They aren't any worse than those made from Giant Demons." Lin Ming muttered as he glanced at the glowing crimson symbols in the air. He seemed that humans just had the worst power of vitality, so the Blood Drinking Seals they made were also the weakest.

"Did you see that!? That blue-clothed boy just raised his hand and sent out several hidden weapons. He instantly killed seven or eight Imps, and those Imps all had a cultivation higher than him!"

"Mm, these Imps might have disgusting characters, but their strength is still good. They are especially good at escaping. But, they were instantly killed. Just who is that young man? Even a Saint level talent wouldn't be so terrifying in the Xiantian realm."

"Interesting. There hasn't been a human talent in Polaris City for a long time. Unfortunately, this fellow's cultivation is too low. Compared to the Giant Demons' Da Gu or Mo He, the disparity is just too great. Those two have recently maintained a total string of victories. I've no idea just how many wings have appeared on their Heavenly Demon Tattoos..."

From the time that a martial artist reached the 12 Heavenly Demon Cities, they would have a faint Heavenly Demon Tattoo. As they accumulated infernal energy, their tattoo would become increasingly solid and lifelike. When they reached a certain amount of infernal energy, their tattoo would grow wings. It would grow four wings, six wings... all the way to twelve wings.

And the way to plunder infernal energy was to kill others, or to utterly defeat them.

In the challenge match stage of the Blood Slaughter Steppes' Polaris City, the probability of death was over 60%. And, whether one died or was defeated, 50 to 70% of their total accumulated infernal energy would be added onto the winner's body, while the rest of their infernal energy would dissipate. These were the strange rules that governed the 12 Heavenly Demon Cities.

"Da Gu... Mo He..." This was the second time that Lin Ming had heard these names. "These two should be the most outstanding of the Giant Demons, I wonder how strong they are. There also seems to be the Imps' Chi Yan. If they were famous enough for Ao Ri to mention them, they are probably not normal individuals."

Chapter 528 – Polaris City

Chapter 528 – Polaris City

…

…

…

Before arriving at Polaris City, Lin Ming had already imagined how it would look several times. After he had experienced the magnificence of the Demon God Imperial Palace, Lin Ming believed that even if Polaris City had walls hundreds of feet high or was thousands of miles long like a limitless mountain range that stretched to the horizon, he still wouldn't be surprised.

But as he truly saw Polaris City for the first time, Lin Ming was stunned. This wa a shock that came from the heart. Polar City was built upon a vertical cliff that rose sixty to seventy thousand feet in the air!

This cliff seemed as if it had been formed by a god. It was as if a divine being had used a heavenly sword to cut the earth, forming a square piece of land that shot into the sky like a celestial halberd!

Polaris City was located atop the peak of this cliff that looked like a heaven-supporting pillar. The city walls were hundreds of feet high, but it didn't stretch as long as Lin Ming had imagined. The walls were the color of dust, and thousands of thick steel wires rose 60 to 70 thousand feet into the air. They were like white strands of silk that connected to the galaxy. Every thread and buckle was as thick as a man's thigh.

Lin Ming found it hard to imagine just how heavy these steel wires were, or even how they were attached to the city walls. If the walls could withstand the weight of such heavy cables, then just how solid were they?

After approaching these thick steel wires, Lin Ming noticed that from beginning to end, for the entire tens of thousands of feet, it was completely engraved with a dense pattern of shimmering symbols!

These symbols included those from the language of the Giant Demons, the ancient language of the Realm of the Gods, and even the dazzling language of the Fey…even though there were so many symbols and they should have eroded through the years, they still remained incomparably bright and clear.

Just by touching them, one could feel an energy flowing forth. There was heavy sense of suppression, as if a suffocating wind was blowing out.

Lin Ming couldn't imagine just what sort of supernaturally powerful Supreme Elder had opened up the skies and laid down the foundations for this city!

Polaris Heavenly Demon City. No wonder it had taken this name.

This height of 60 to 70 thousand feet was truly worthy of the title 'Polaris'!

As Lin Ming looked up, he found that there were many martial artists climbing up the thousands of chains, step by step. They were like lonely climbers, slowly, stubbornly, and persistently conquering their path of martial arts, even if they knew that failure meant they would fall to their deaths!

"Polaris City restricts flight…"

Lin Ming already found out about the specific laws here. Although they didn't suppress true essence, they did prevent flight. Let alone him, even if some Life Destruction Supreme Elder arrived here, they might have to honestly climb up, one step at a time.

These thick chains were the entrance to the city. Otherwise, even if a Xiantian realm martial artist wanted to scale this 60 to 70 thousand foot high cliff without the aid of flight, it would be extremely difficult.

Lin Ming chose a chain and began to slowly make his way up.

These thick chains were chillingly cold and also slippery. If one's cultivation wasn't high enough, then they wouldn't be able to enter the city. If one were to fall down the cliff from this height, then even a Xiantian realm martial artist would turn into goo.

Lin Ming used an hour to climb most of the distance in a single go. He turned around and looked down. From far away, the vast crimson plains were endlessly majestic and boundless. Clouds floated underneath his feet. As these thousands of chains rose into the great blue sky, it was as if they were broken. Such a grand picture was splendid enough to leave anyone stunned!

The martial artists that climbed up to Polaris City were like tiny ants as they made their way up the chains. However, Lin Ming knew that as these martial artists turned to look back, they would have a field of vision like an eagle in the sky. This was the road of a martial artist. The higher they stood, the farther they would see.

As one finally reached the top off the cliff, a howling gale blew. Such a quick wind was enough to sweep away any common person.

On the gray rocks of the clifftop, the city walls had stood tall for countless years.

The front gates were 500 feet high and made of dark gray metal. Every rivet of the gate was as big as a large bowl. At this time, the gate was open; it seemed to be the massive maw of some metallic beast, eating all of the martial artists that entered.

The words 'Polaris City' were written in large characters on a plaque above the gate. The letters were like draconic snakes flying in the air, domineering and vicious.

As Lin Ming walked into Polaris City, he could see all of the buildings were constructed out of dark gray stone. All of these stones seemed primitive; they hadn't undergone much polishing or cutting. They retained their edges and corners, giving of a powerful, primal feel.

The streets were wide enough for several carriages to pass through shoulder to shoulder. At this time, there were numerous heroic geniuses walking along the road. There were even extremely rare Saint level talents here. Although there weren't too many, they weren't an uncommon sight.

"What rich origin energy and infernal energy. Polaris City is great!"

Lin Ming praised. But, his praise didn't last for too long. He suddenly heard a scream coming out from an alley in the street, and a spurt of blood shot into the air. A martial artist with a broken hand came crazily careening out of the alley. Four martial artists jumped out afterwards in hot pursuit!

The martial artists' hands were wielding different weapons, and they sent sword and halberd energies sizzling through the air, all of them aimed at the vital points of the fleeing martial artist. Obviously, they were planning on killing him.

This scene immediately reminded Lin Ming that this was the Blood Slaughter Steppes. Here, the massive amount of martial artists almost uniformly walked the killing road. Those martial artists that walked this path could accumulate their formidable aura from killing others, and even use this to help raise the progress of their cultivation. Thus, it wasn't too strange for these types of people to wantonly kill others.

In this land, everyone was a possible enemy. As long as one killed others, not only could they enhance their cultivation method and strength, but they could also obtain the massive amount of resources in their spatial ring.

However, if one wanted to plunder the ‘infernal energy’ of Polar City to complete their Heavenly Demon Tattoo, they had to go to the middle of the city where the concentration of infernal energy was. There, martial artists fought on specialized killing stages.

Lin Ming didn’t want to arouse trouble. He followed the street to the center of the city, and quickly arrived at the source of the so-called infernal energy.

Here, the only building was a massive arena battlefield that covered dozens of miles. As long as one stepped into this killing field, they could directly steal the ‘infernal energy’ of others by murdering them, further completing their Heavenly Demon Tattoo.

“Mm… this is…?”

Lin Ming hadn’t reached the arena battlefield when he suddenly felt the Blood Slaughter Token he was carrying become scorching hot. A heat flowed out from the Blood Slaughter Token, spreading out and then converging into his meridians.

A small, faint whirlpool of infernal energy spun around the Blood Slaughter Token.

Lin Ming’s mind stirred and he immediately understood. This was the natural reaction of the Blood Slaughter Token after entering a source area of infernal energy. A burning fire seemed to sizzle on his right arm. As Lin Ming watched, he saw a faint Heavenly Demon Tattoo slowly forming there.

This image had two devilish horns, sharp fangs, and even though it was blurry, one could see it had an unusually grim countenance.

This was the Heavenly Demon Tattoo…

Chapter 529 – Polar Skysplit Tower

Chapter 529 – Polar Skysplit Tower

…

…

…

“Mm?”

The moment when the Heavenly Demon Tattoo manifested on his arm, Lin Ming found that just in front of him was an Imp with a curved dagger looking at him. His eyes shined, as if he thought Lin Ming were his prey. Beside him were also several other Imps.

The Imp with the curved dagger giggled and smiled. “Oh, a newcomer and he’s also a human. My favorite are the humans. This newbie’s cultivation is also only at the Xiantian realm… keke, he’s only 20 some years old. He must be quite tasty.”

As the Imp with the curved dagger spoke, the other Imps surrounding him laughed and whistled at Lin Ming.

Once the Blood Slaughter Token was activated, it would temporarily merge with the martial artist, helping to form the Heavenly Demon Tattoo.

If someone were killed outside of the arena battlefield, then they wouldn’t be able to steal away their infernal energy. Thus, none of the Imps attacked Lin Ming.

Lin Ming glanced at the Imp with the curved dagger. This Imp was particularly short. Most Imps were around six feet tall, but this one was five and a half. His face was full of black, dry folds that were covered with long hairs. It caused anyone who saw him to feel disgusted.

Lin Ming didn’t bother with them and directly walked over to the arena battlefield.

Standing at the entrance of the arena battlefield were seven or eight guards. They directly stood in front of Lin Ming, blocking him. “Admission to Polar Skysplit Tower is one medium-grade Blood Demon Crystal.”

Polar Skysplit Tower?

The name of this arena battlefield was quite aggressive. But what was really staggering was the expensive price of admission. It had to be said that the cost of the Divine Blood Pill which was sold at Sun Flood City was 100 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals. But, this was only enough for 100 individuals to enter the arena battlefield; this was absolutely squandering resources.

Although those that came to Polaris City were most often the talents of their sects, they would still feel pain if they frequently passed in and out of the arena battlefield.

“Low-grade Blood Demon Crystal?” Lin Ming asked.

The arena guard looked at Lin Ming with contempt and coldly said, “200 low-grade!”

A medium-grade Blood Demon Crystal was worth around 100 low-grade Blood Demon Crystals. But, this guard had actually opened his loud mouth and said 200, and his attitude was indifferent. Obviously he preferred not to take low-grade Blood Demon Crystals.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then took out some low-grade Blood Demon Crystals from his spatial ring. He hadn’t obtained too many Blood Demon Crystals from the Silent Green Tribe, and their quality wasn’t too high either. After he had killed the six Great Elders, he had gained several thousand low-grade Blood Demon Crystals. To the martial artists of Bewitching Cloud Prairie, this was an obscenely great wealth. However, once he came to the Blood Slaughter Steppes, he was about to run out even though he just used them a few times. The difference between martial artists from one land to another was simply too great.

Lin Ming took out 300 low-grade Blood Demon Crystals and gave them to the guard.

The guard impatiently received these 300 low-grade Blood Demon Crystals and then let Lin Ming into the arena battlefield.

“You’re letting a beggar like that go through?” Another guard asked.

“Heh, since he wants to go die, then he can go ahead. These people always think that Skysplit Tower is some casual place they can go to adventure in. They will only realize that they are nothing but insignificant fertilizer after entering.” The guard responded with disdain.

....

As Lin Ming walked into the main hall of the arena battlefield, he sucked in a deep breath as he was able to see the tall walls that surrounded the area. He finally realized why this place was called the Polar Skysplit Tower. This arena battlefield was thousands upon thousands of feet high. It was originally built atop this 60 to 70 thousand foot high cliff. In addition to the central pagoda that was thousands of feet high, it was truly worthy of being called the Skysplit Tower.

Skysplit tower was thick at the bottom and thin at the top; it was shaped like a cone. The higher floors were hidden in a hazy, disturbing red fog. This fog was condensed from a great amount of infernal energy. Because the higher levels were concealed by the infernal energy, it was impossible to see just how high Skysplit Tower was.

Lin Ming walked into the first level of Skysplit Tower. He discovered that the internal structure of this arena battlefield was much more complex than he had imagined. As he strolled along, he saw that there were a variety of bars, inns, restaurants, and even brothels.

Lin Ming had only taken a few steps when a gaudily dressed prostitute slyly winked at him. There were many human and Fey prostitutes, and some of them were even martial artists. These martial artists’ talent was simply too poor, and their cultivation was too low. In their lives, they wouldn’t have any great achievements in the path of martial arts.

However, if they engaged in the sex trade, they could still gain some Blood Demon Crystals for their own use.

It was fine when the human and Fey prostitutes solicited him, but when Lin Ming saw that there were also Giant Demon and Imp prostitutes giving him flirty winks, he almost tripped. His stomach turned. Luckily, he had a solid psychological foundation, otherwise he might have vomited.

The Giant Demon prostitutes were all taller than Lin Ming by at least a head, and their breasts were like two giant rubber balls hanging on their chests. Their blue skin was smeared in a coat of thick powder. It was quite nauseating. There was no need to mention the Imps. They were short, their faces were full of creases and their skin was dark; they looked no different from granny monsters.

If Lin Ming had just seen these types of prostitutes, then he would still have been able to reluctantly accept it. After all, there were many Giant Demons and Imps here, and their aesthetic standards might be different.

However… when Lin Ming watched with his own eyes as a male Fey martial artist pulled a Giant Demon prostitute into a room, he was left speechless.

“A Fey martial artist… their tastes should run…” Lin Ming mumbled under his breath. He imagined that the life within Polaris City was just too difficult. Coupled with the constant hostility that filled the air and distorted the hearts, it forced others to have to vent out these feelings. For some, it might make them do abnormal things.

“This Skysplit Tower is too large. It occupies an area over several miles long and there are all sorts of facilities inside. Once I pay the admission fee, I can live here as long as I want. No wonder there were so few people outside.”

Lin Ming arrived at an arena area of Skysplit Tower’s first floor. He pushed open the door, and a surge of humidity and noise rushed past him.

Lin Ming had seen a number of martial stages before. The arena was in the center, and it was surrounding by a ring of stands. The audience politely sat in the stands where they could comment on the battle or even cheer. But here, this concept of fighting was completely subverted.

These were true killing grounds. The air was suffocating and fanatical. The arena was filled with tens of thousands of seats. However, very few of these people were sitting. Most of those there stood on their feet, screaming, laughing bawdily, or even waving around weapons in their hands.

There was a massive number of individuals here from all races. There were Giant Demons, humans, Fey…

The Giant Demon martial artists were originally cruel and brutal. This sort of environment naturally suited their disposition. They crazily howled and roared like mad beasts.

In other areas, there were youthful Fey woman. Their beauty was enough to cause the downfall of a nation; they were fairy princesses that had stepped out of a book. But even they had taken off their coats, exposing their luscious skin and shapely bodies. They held glasses of bright red wine in their hands, and it looked like the corners of their mouths were overflowing with blood. It was strangely beautiful.

Lin Ming even saw a Giant Demon martial artist push down a Fey woman on the spot and brutally ravage her as the battle onstage was reaching its climax. But, this Fey woman looked as if she was enjoying this as she wantonly screamed.

On the martial stage, there weren't just martial artists, but also a massive number of beautiful slaves. They carried drinks and wore little clothing; it wasn't even enough to wrap up their butts. They delivered wine and water to the stands as they endured the abuse and groping of the martial artists.

This atmosphere where alcohol and sexual desires mixed together continually provoked the taut nerves of the martial artists present.

Hong hong hong!

In the center of the martial stage, a Giant Demon was holding an axe as he recklessly attacked a large human fellow. This human was nine foot tall and his arms were thick and around. But, compared to the Giant Demon, he was rather small and his strength was also inferior. He had already been forced back by the Giant Demon several times, and was in increasing danger.

“Kill! Kill him!”

“Kill! Kill! Kill!”

A strong manic sense filled air. With the thick infernal energy here, in addition to the catalyst of alcohol and obscene desires, it was easy for a person to lose their reasoning and fall into madness.

“Die! Die! Haha!” The Giant Demon roared. He kicked the human onto the floor and then chopped down his axe on him.

Kacha!

The human's spine was severed and his heart was cut open from behind. The human martial artist gave a pitiful wail as he died!

“Yes!”

“Well fought!”

“Zha Na, you are too fierce, too brave!” A female Giant Demon screamed. From her zealous expression, it seemed she was about to rush on stage and ravage Zha Na herself.

Zha Na was obviously this large Giant Demon fellow. At the moment that he killed the human martial artist, a thick dark and bloody energy escaped from the human's corpse. Some of it dissipated, but the large majority of it was absorbed into Zha Na's body.

After absorbing this infernal energy, Zha Na felt like he had smoked a great deal of opium. His entire body felt great, and he couldn't help but howl out like a wolf.

"Haha! Awesome! Who wants to come up next!?" Zha Na shouted to the clamoring crowd in the stands.

A friend of that human martial artist that had died raged in anger to the point where his eyes almost popped out. He wanted to run onstage and tear that Zha Na into pieces, but he held back and didn't go. He clearly knew that he wasn't his match. If he went up, then his fate would be the same.

"All you Feral and human garbage, you are all cowards! None of you dare to come up? Hurry and come up so I can taste your delicious blood! For trash like you lot to die at my hands, that is already your honor! Haha!"

Zha Na cruelly laughed. As he laughed, so did all the other Giant Demons present, as they enjoyed ridiculing the Ferals and humans together. In Polaris City, only those with strength and power had the qualifications to be respected by others. Otherwise, their fate was only to be trampled and killed by everyone else.

But whether they were humans or Ferals, they were synonymous with cowards.

"F*ck, he's too arrogant!" A human martial artist wanted to go up but he was stopped by his friend. "Don't be so impulsive. He already has a five match win streak. Within Skysplit Tower's first floor, that fellow strength is definitely at the top. He just killed three human martial artists a moment ago, and two Feral martial artists also died under his axe. We aren't much stronger than those that just went on stage. If we go up, we are just sending ourselves to die."

"F*ck!" That human martial artist cursed. Finally, he was able to suppress himself.

Lin Ming was standing beside this human martial artist and clearly heard their conversation.

“That person just said that Zha Na’s strength is at the top of Skysplit Tower’s first floor. So, the higher I go in Skysplit Tower, the stronger the martial artists are…” Lin Ming muttered, “I’ll have to pass this first floor as soon as possible. I have to go to a higher level so I can hone my strength.”

Chapter 530 – First Victory

Chapter 530 – First Victory

The chapter title is a spoiler, you can hover over it to read it

…

…

…

"Kill! Kill! Kill!"

Skysplit Tower echoed with this thunderous cry. It was easy for the major races to form opposing factions, especially since humans and Giant Demons were mortal enemies; it was normal for them to target each other in the arena. However, in most cases, it was the human side that was defeated.

This was because the humans in the Heavenly Demon Cities were weak on an individual level, and there were also far fewer of them than the Giant Demons.

It was true that the population of humans far surpassed all others on the Holy Demon Continent. But among the humans, there were fewer that walked the killing path, and their talent was also relatively lower. Thus, there weren't too many human martial artists that ventured to Polaris City.

On the other hand, not only was the Giant Demon race filled with geniuses, but the vast majority of them chose the killing path. Thus, a massive amount of outstanding Giant Demon youths existed in Polaris City.

Because of these reasons, humans in Polaris City were in a naturally weaker position with no status at all.

As for the Ferals, they weren’t much better than the humans. They were naturally slow and lacking in perception, so no matter what cultivation method they practiced it was less effective. So, there were fewer Feral talents, and less that walked the killing path.

It could be said that beside Polaris City, the other Heavenly Demon Cities were all the worlds of the Giant Demons. Besides the Giant Demons, Imps also accounted for a small role. As for the Fey, there were few of them, but by virtue of their formidable individual strength, no one dared to provoke them. Even the arrogant and mouthy Giant Demons didn’t dare to spout nonsense in front of the Fey. A truly powerful Fey was ruthless to the point of eating others without spitting bones.

“Just too weak.” At this time, several beautiful Fey women were merrily laughing in the stands. It seemed as if they enjoyed this blood and slaughter filled Skysplit Tower.

Now, even the usually impulsive and hot-tempered Feral martial artists could only patiently endure this insult. None of them jumped onstage to confront Zha Na. Zha Na was among the strongest of the strong of Skysplit Tower’s first level. Although these Ferals had inferior perception, they weren’t stupid. They knew when they could fight and when they couldn’t, otherwise they wouldn’t have lived up to now.

“Let's go.” Several human martial artists couldn’t withstand the pressure and wanted to leave the arena.

“Ugh, they really are useless. They can’t even withstand this sort of pressure, and yet they still say they want to walk the killing path? F*ck off and scurry home!” Zha Na loudly ridiculed.

The group of human martial artists turned red, and they all clenched their fists. A smaller human martial artist in his twenties almost couldn’t stand the repeated insults and was about to jump up onstage himself.

“Don’t be reckless!” An older, black-clothed martial artist pushed down that smaller martial artist’s hands.

“Hey, boy, do you have the balls to come up?” Zha Na gloated.

At this moment, Lin Ming calmly stood up. He said, “I’ll come.”

The first floor of Skysplit Tower was very ordinary in terms of strength. Lin Ming wanted to pass it quickly, he didn’t want to get caught up here for any longer than he needed. His figure flashed and he flew onstage.

As the several human martial artists finally saw their fellow comrade enter the stage, they were happy. But, as they discovered Lin Ming’s cultivation, all of them were stunned. That excitement and happiness also sunk into a deep gloominess.

“Early Xiantian realm…”

Although they could see that Lin Ming’s true essence was pure and thick, far exceeding that of any other early Xiantian realm martial artist, the fact was that his cultivation was too low. Between humans and Giant Demons, even when humans were at the same realm or a bit higher than a Giant Demon, they would still be weaker. Much less, Lin Ming’s cultivation was lower than his opponent’s.

“This…” A human martial artist’s complexion turned ugly, he didn’t know what to say. Lin Ming had a good future, but now that he acted this time, he had presented himself to the slaughter. This meaningless death would only allow the Giant Demons to laugh at them more.

As they expected, as the Giant Demons and Imps saw Lin Ming jump onstage, they were stunned at first and then they all immediately burst into laughter.

“There aren’t any humans left? They actually let a little baby come up?”

“Haha, early Xiantian realm, I’m not wrong! He isn’t even enough to use as a toothpick!”

“Yo! That boy is a sexy little looker! It would be such a pity if he died. Come to big sister here, this big sister will take great care of you.” A curved and charming Fey woman giggled.

In Polaris City, even if one were a human martial artist, they would usually be bloodthirsty and vicious; there were very few that were handsome.

On the stage, Lin Ming turned a deaf ear to these comments.

Zha Na crossed his arms across his chest and looked at Lin Ming with relish in his eyes. "Hehe, in Polaris City, there are plenty of idiots that bite off more than they can chew, but I haven't seen someone as stupid as you. An early Xiantian boy thinks that he can challenge me? Is this your first time out of your sect? Do you think that all the other martial artists here are the same as the garbage in your sect, the type that you can jump realms to defeat?"

Lin Ming impatiently looked at Zha Na and asked, "Are you here to fight or are you going to continue blabbering?"

As soon as Zha Na heard Lin Ming's words, he scowled. His eyes flashed with killing intent as he said to Lin Ming, "Arrogant little boy, you don't know what it means to die! I'll deliver you to hell!"

Zha Na suddenly flourished a large axe and chopped down on Lin Ming.

The majesty of the axe combined with the roiling demon essence behind it. It was similar to a roaring ancient vicious beast, blowing in the wind. As Lin Ming stood there, he could faintly hear the screeching of countless souls within the demon essence.

Lin Ming traced his spatial ring, and the Purple Comet Spear appeared. A flashing red thunder crackled atop the spearpoint.

"Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder!"

Kacha!

The red thunder light was like a crimson python that shot towards Zha Na. The power of thunder was particularly potent at annihilating ghosts and demons. After the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder collided with the dark clouds of demon essence, it was like a red-hot iron rod that was inserted into snow. There was a *‘chi chi chi’* sound as the clouds of demon essence rapidly melted away.

“Mm!?”

Zha Na was shocked. He thought that he would be able to split Lin Ming in two with a single strike, but he never imagined that he would be the one that was suppressed.

“Ghost Shadow Cut!”

As Zha Na saw the massive crimson python rush towards him, his eyes flashed with a grim light. He chopped his axe down at the python’s head.

Peng!

Zha Na’s arms were shocked numb. He instantly drew back, the blood in his body swelling. He had barely managed to force back the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder, and at this moment, his mind filled with panic and fear.

How could this boy possibly be so strong!?

In that split second, Lin Ming didn’t give Zha Na the chance to recover. He instantly stepped forwards, his momentum exploding. He attacked with the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder again!

He wanted to stay at the top of Skysplit Tower for a long time. In the future, he would face all sorts of opponents. If his moves were all revealed, then he would naturally be in a much more dangerous situation. Thus, he repeatedly used the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder. The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder was originally a power of thunder biased towards the demonic path; it was good for supplementing demonic cultivation methods. At this time, it was especially suitable.

“F*ck off!”

Zha Na roared. Both of his eyes were red and crazed. He grabbed his axe with two hands, and chopped down at Lin Ming.

But at this time, Lin Ming's form trembled and faded away. 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void' was displayed, and he dodged this attack with a speed like ghosts and demons.

Bang!

Behind Lin Ming, the gray stone tiles burst apart. Underneath these tiles was a layer of thick darksteel that was supported by an array formation. As this axe attack cut down, it left shallow marks on the surface.

"This boy is tough to deal with!"

After his attack failed, Zha Na's figure also flashed away. But, he wasn't able to dodge Lin Ming's spear.

The spear light swept out. The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder chased after Zha Na, shooting towards him.

Zha Na roared and punched at the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder. There was an explosion as the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder burst apart. But Zha Na's entire body was paralyzed, and his fist was charred black.

"Die!"

Lin Ming's spear sunk in, directly piercing towards Zha Na's heart. The Giant Demon race's demon crystal was located exactly in their heart!

"Ahhhh!" Zha Na's eyes were bloodshot. Facing the imminent threat of death, he erupted with 120% of his strength. He savagely bit down on his tongue, using the pain to rid himself of his paralysis. Then, he grabbed onto the Purple Comet Spear, wanting to lock it between his hands.

But just as he touched the Purple Comet Spear, an azure true essence burst out. The power of vibration was like a tidal wave as it crashed into Zha Na's arm, directly shattering it!

Puu!

The Purple Comet Spear easily pierced through Zha Na's heart. The spear passed through his body, and blood shot out from his back into the wind!

As soon as the spear thrust through Zha Na's vital point, Lin Ming mercilessly finished the job. He twisted the long spear, shattering Zha Na's demon crystal to pieces!

Zha Na's body shook and he glared at Lin Ming. As he looked at Lin Ming with disbelief, the life faded from his bloodshot eyes.

From the start of the battle until Zha Na's death, only four or five breaths of time had passed. Currently, all of the Giant Demons and Fey that had been laughing and mocking had frozen in place.

Zha Na died!?

Zha Na, whose strength was among the highest of the high within the entire first floor of Skysplit Tower, had died, and he had also died at the hands of an early Xiantian realm human martial artist…

The entire arena was utterly silent. All of those human martial artists that felt pity and regret for Lin Ming had their mouths fall wide open, to the point where an egg could fit inside. This 20 some year old youth had actually defeated Zha Na?

The vast gap that existed between martial artists of humans and Giant Demons had long since been deeply ingrained in these people's hearts. Although they didn't want to admit it, they had no choice but to acknowledge the truth.

They stared at Zha Na's corpse as it hung on Lin Ming's spear. From Zha Na's back, blood still bubbled out…

Peng!

A misty fog burst out from Zha Na’s corpse, flying into Lin Ming’s hand where it rapidly condensed into a Blood Drinking Seal, and then immediately vanished.

As for Zha Na’s corpse, it quickly withered away until it became a desiccated mummy. Then Lin Ming tossed it away like a broken sack.

‘This Zha Na was truly an outstanding youth amongst the Giant Demons. His blood vitality is incomparably strong, it’s perfect to create a Blood Drinking Seal from.’

After killing someone and sucking away their blood, there was no change of expression on Lin Ming’s face. He turned, his eyes sweeping the arena as he clearly said, “Who’s next?”

‘This boy!’

All of the Giant Demon martial artists’ expressions towards Lin Ming had changed. He had used just four or five breaths of time to defeat Zha Na. Now no one dared to underestimate him anymore.

The Fey woman that had teased Lin Ming suppressed her stunning smile. “He actually practices a blood absorbing cultivation method. It could be considered the demonic path within demonic paths, the true killing road amongst killing roads. This little fellow looks like a cute harmless animal, but I never imagined he would practice a cruel cultivation method like this! I was almost fooled by his appearance.”

The Fey woman was a bit scared. If she really did try to tempt Lin Ming so she could suck up his yang essence, then she might have been the one to be eaten without a single bone left.

Chapter 531 – Battle

Chapter 531 – Battle

…

…

…

Lin Ming suddenly felt a burning hot energy surge through his feet, sending his spirit soaring into the heavens.

After this energy charged into his body, it recklessly rushed through his meridians, spreading in all directions. All sorts of illusions presented themselves in Lin Ming's mind. It was like a manic power that had long been repressed in his heart began to wildly gallop around. It crashed through his body, causing his blood to boil…

"This is infernal energy?"

Lin Ming looked at Zha Na's corpse; this really was the energy that was dissipating from his body. Before, Lin Ming had been relying on the Blood Slaughter Token to absorb a small amount of infernal energy so he hadn't noticed it, but now that such a massive amount of infernal energy had entered him, Lin Ming suddenly felt his deepest and most primitive desires aroused. It was as if the darkness lurking in his soul was rising to the surface!

He wanted blood, he wanted to kill, he wanted to indulge in and ravage beauties!

At this time, Lin Ming's mind throbbed with an inexplicable desire and pleasure. He wanted to vent these feelings and lash out like a beast.

This sudden change caused Lin Ming's heart to go cold. He quickly calmed his mind and entered the ethereal martial intent, allowing his mood to settle.

Lin Ming had practiced the ‘Overbearing Soul Tactic’ for a very long time. In addition to the great power of his spiritual sea, the frantic infernal energy only erupted for an instant before it was suppressed.

“This infernal energy can really disturb a person’s mind. No wonder the people of Polaris City are so crazy and strange. It’s probably because the infernal energy has seeped into their souls over a long time.”

As Lin Ming remembered the ecstatic expression that Zha Na had when he absorbed infernal energy, as well his disturbed green eyes, he couldn’t help but let out a loose breath. If he couldn’t manage to suppress the infernal energy, it was possible that he would be controlled by it. In the end, he might even become a zombie that only knew to kill.

Lin Ming silently closed his eyes. After a few breaths of time, he opened them again. This time, his eyes once again shined with a clear and pure brilliance.

Atop his arm, the blurry Heavenly Demon Tattoo became a bit more solid, and that hideous demonic face also became fiercer.

“This boy’s mental strength is really stable.” A Giant Demon said as he stared at Lin Ming, his expression solemn. “This is his first time at the killing arena. When an average person absorbs infernal energy for the first time, they will become irrational and rabid due to the influx of infernal energy. But, this fellow actually just closed his eyes for a moment to recover. He’s not simple at all!”

“Mm. Zha Na was originally one of the strongest of the strong in Skysplit Tower’s first level. He had accumulated a great deal of infernal energy and that fellow sucked up over half of it. Yet he was still able to maintain his calm. This sort of turbulent infernal energy can cause the desires and impulses of even geniuses to spiral out of control!”

“Heh… how interesting.” Beside the two Giant Demons that spoke, a Fey woman said. She exuded a thick sexual appeal. She drained the red liquid in her glass, her eyes flashing with excitement as she licked her lips.

Seeing the Fey woman's response, the Giant Demon laughed. "Bloodrose, are you thinking of seducing him? Don't be too confident, or your plan might fail and he'll be the one to use you."

"Haha! I don't need you to worry about me. As long as they are a man, there is no way they can control their inner desires." The Fey woman said, her giggle like the tinkling of bells.

On the arena stage, several male slaves quickly rushed up and dragged away Zha Na's corpse. But, they left behind Zha Na's spatial ring. According to the customs of the arena battlefield, all of the deceased's belongings, including spatial rings, went to the victor. The only thing that Skysplit Tower kept after the death of a participant was the Blood Slaughter Token.

"Sir, this is yours." A male slave brought Zha Na's spatial ring and cautiously handed it to Lin Ming.

"I have a question for you." Lin Ming stopped the slave who was putting away the corpse.

The slave was shocked scared. He quickly said, "What question does sir have?"

"What are the conditions for entering the second level?"

The slave respectfully said, "Sir, according to the rules of Skysplit Tower, in order to enter the second level, a contestant must obtain a 12 win streak at the first level, or obtain victory to the point that no one dares to challenge them."

"I understand."

Lin Ming casually tossed a low-grade Blood Demon Crystal at the slave. A 12 win streak wasn't too difficult. Presumably, all of the geniuses with higher cultivations directly went to the second level of Skysplit Tower or even higher. Within the first level of Skysplit Tower, there was no one here that made him feel threatened.

“Will anyone else come up?” Lin Ming asked. His eyes swept over the area where the Giant Demons were.

The tide could turn at any moment. Before, it was the humans that were being forced back by the Giant Demons. But now it was the Giant Demons that were being forced back by the humans.

“This boy, he must really think he’s invincible.” In a corner of the arena, a large Giant Demon fellow crushed the glass in his hands. This Giant Demon wore black clothes and carried a nine foot long claymore on his back. His strength was also amongst the elites of Skysplit Tower’s first floor.

Within the first elite group, there were also those that were weaker and stronger. This large Giant Demon fellow was stronger than Zha Na.

“You want to go up? That boy’s thunder is quite tricky, it has the ability to restrain our cultivation methods. If I’m not wrong, then that thunder should come from a medium-grade earth-step Thunder Soul.”

“As if I would place a medium-grade earth-step Thunder Soul in my eyes. I just don’t know whether or not that fellow has any other abilities.”

“Heh, so what if he does? Don’t you also have final resort abilities?”

“That’s right.” The black-clothe Giant Demon laughed and then stood up. “I’ll fight you!’

The black-clothed Giant Demon jumped up. He directly leapt over the audience. His ten foot tall body carried the weight of a several thousand jin claymore. As he landed onstage, it was like a massive hammer struck the ground, directly breaking apart the tiles where he landed.

“Ho!” After the black-clothed Giant Demon landed, he let out a savage roar like a wild beast. His shout was deafening. His naked upper body was wrapped with thick steel chains.

As he moved, these thick chains struck each other; this Giant Demon looked like he was a massive gorilla.

Lin Ming looked at the black-clothed Giant Demon. Just from the strength of his aura, he could tell that his opponent far surpassed Zha Na.

“That is the Carnage Demon Sect’s Claymore King, Gu Yue.” Several people in the stands instantly recognized this black-clothed Giant Demon.

“The Carnage Demon Sect is a fifth-grade sect, and Gu Yue is a direct disciple. His strength can be ranked in the top ten. This time, that boy is shit out of luck.”

“Gu Yue, kill him! Kill that boy!”

All of the Giant Demons in the arena raucously shouted. There were even several Fey women screaming as they took out their bellybands and wildly waved them in the air.

Gu Yue took out the claymore from his back. He flourished the blade, struck the floor with the tip and caused the tiles to shatter. He crudely smiled and said, “Boy, if that last battle was everything you had, then just sit there and die.”

“Black Sun Shining Sky!”

The claymore chopped down, and a black light appeared in front of Gu Yue’s blade. At this time, a billowing demon essence formed a massive black sun around Gu Yue’s body. Black flames burned around him, turning the ground into molten lava.

Lin Ming’s spear thrust out. Thick arcs of Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder drilled through that black flames, directly piercing through the black sun. However, when crimson lightning wanted to break through the black flames, it was actually caught by the demonic essence.

“Heh! All you can do is repeat this move? Then go die!” Gu Yue grinned fiendishly. His Black Sun Shining Sky wasn’t suppressed by this power of thunder, it was extremely resilient. With the black sun binding the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder, he rushed at Lin Ming.

Bang!

A terrifying shockwave surged outwards, lifting all of the tiles of the floor. All of the tiles on the floor melted, and even a shallow section of the darksteel floor underneath was melted.

During this explosion, Lin Ming's figure flew backward. Only his clothes had been slightly burnt.

"Humph, you're quite good at running. But, just because you can escape for a moment doesn't mean you can do it forever!"

Gu Yue unfolded his arms and thick beams of demonic essence shot out from his body. They rapidly spread all around him, completely surrounding him and Lin Ming. In just several breaths of time, hundreds of beams formed from demonic essence wove together in a tight net that completely enveloped the two.

Lin Ming calmly looked around. All he saw were countless thick beams of demonic essence wildly waving around, as if they were black pythons dancing in the air.

"Hehe, Gu Yue has even used his Blacksnake Prison. This fight should be finished soon. It's said that the Blacksnake Prison is an inescapable net that covers the heavens and earth. Now, this boy can only meet Gu Yue in a frontal collision, and this is what Gu Yue specializes in the most!"

All of the Giant Demons in the arena grew excited as they saw this. The talent of the Giant Demon race was mostly represented by their strength as well as their defensive and offensive capabilities. But, they were inferior to humans in speed. If Lin Ming's speed was limited by the Blacksnake Prison, then he could only confront Gu Yue head on. If a human were to attack a Giant Demon in a vicious melee, then that was simply asking to die.

“Let’s see where you can run now!” Gu Yue howled, “Black Sun Shining Sky!”

Bang!

A black sun appeared once more around Gu Yue’s claymore. This one was larger than before, and blazed with an even hotter energy. Although Gu Yue was rampant and cruel, he still didn’t underestimate Lin Ming. This strike contained a full 30% of his true essence. He grasped his claymore with both hands and cut down. The black sun was like a flaming black meteor that crashed towards Lin Ming!

With the Blacksnake Prison all around, there was simply nowhere to run. In this face of this blazing black sun, Lin Ming chuckled as he said. “It looks like all you can do is repeat this move too?”

“Humph! You’re at death’s door and you're still acting glib! Go die!”

The nine foot long claymore cut down!

Just as the blazing black sun approached, Lin Ming lightly flicked his finger. Three Thunder Souls gathered as one; the Divine Demon Thunder Soul roared out!

Pu!

With a barely audible piercing sound, the Divine Demon Thunder Soul sunk into the blazing black sun and broke out from the other side. With a speed that was almost invisible to the naked eye, it approached Gu Yue’s throat.

“Screw off!”

Because of the incredibly compressed energy of the Divine Demon Thunder Soul, Gu Yue thought that this was an ordinary hidden weapon. Without a second thought, he punched out at it. In truth, this weapon was too fast so he couldn’t send out a stronger attack.

However, even if Gu Yue’s fist had been tempered, or even if it were wrapped in demonic essence, how could it possibly compare with the incomparably sharp Divine Demon Steel Needle?

Gu Yue’s protective true essence was pierced through by the Divine Demon Steel Needle like it was thin paper, directly slicing through. The Divine Demon Steel Needle didn’t slow at all nor did it change trajectory. Without the least bit of difficulty, it drilled through Gu Yue’s throat!

Puff!

Gu Yue’s throat was pierced through, and his neck exploded in a bloody mess. He stared with wide eyes filled with shock. The Divine Demon Steel Needle had been too fast, he hadn’t even been able to properly react in time…

Chapter 532 – Unchallenged

Chapter 532 – Unchallenged

…

…

…

In that split second after the Divine Demon Steel Needle pierced Gu Yue's throat, it instantly returned to Lin Ming. Gu Yue blankly stared at the burning black sun in front of him, his vision beginning to fade away.

"You… me… let's die… together…"

Bang!

Before he could finish he words, the burning black sun was sliced apart by dozens of streaking red lights. The rest of the impact force was sucked into the swirling vortex formed by the Blood Drinking Seals, and the power of the burning sun was completely suppressed by the crimson light.

"Sorry, but I have no plans on dying together with you."

Lin Ming waved his hand, and all of the Blood Drinking Seals flew back into him, discreetly hiding themselves.

Gu Yue supported himself with his claymore as his other hand held his throat together. Blood poured out like a waterfall as he stubbornly glared at Lin Ming, his eyes full of unwillingness and despair. "How could you… break it… so easily… how…"

Gu Yue's voice was hoarse and choking. The vocal chords in his throat had been torn apart. If a human's throat was pierced, they would perish in several breaths of time. The bodies of Giant Demons were truly resilient.

In the arena, the previously shouting crowd collectively gasped. The seductive Fey women that were waving their bellybands around had their hands hanging by their sides. Those Giant Demons that had been convinced that Lin Ming would lose all had their mouths hanging open.

Gu Yue was also defeated!

Black Sun Shining Sky had been instantly broken. How could this human boy possibly have defeated Gu Yue in a frontal collision? Just what sort of monstrous freak was he!?

"What was that purple light that pierced Gu Yue's throat?"

"It was too fast... I wasn't able to see it clearly..." In the arena, all of the people of various races discussed this. When they looked at Lin Ming, their eyes held a trace of fear.

In Polaris City, humans and Ferals were often looked at with contempt. This was because they were weak. But, the truly strong and formidable humans were equally dreaded by all the other races.

In Polaris City, strength was the highest law.

Bang!

Gu Yue fell face down onto the floor, splashing puddle of blood as he fell.

Lin Ming flicked his finger and the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder flew out. All of Gu Yue's blood essence was absorbed and slowly turned into a Blood Drinking Seal.

"That's it!" A Fey youth's eyes flashed with light. "Just then, those red seals are what cut open Black Sun Shining Sky!"

Although the Blood Drinking Seals were fast, they couldn't avoid the eyes of some masters.

If it was found out then so be it. Lin Ming hadn't been able to defeat Gu Yue with just the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder, thus he could only expose his Blood Drinking Seals and Divine Demon Thunder Soul.

However, all of this was just a tiny portion of Lin Ming's true strength.

Lin Ming wasn't arrogant enough to say that he was invincible within Skysplit Tower. He had to be cautious. The higher he went, the more masters he would encounter.

In the future, there wouldn't be any martial artists that would issue a challenge if they knew they were just walking to their deaths. If a martial artist did, they that meant they had the confidence they could win.

At this time, once all of one's moves were discovered and the limit of their strength was seen, then their death wouldn't be too far off.

After withdrawing the Blood Drinking Seals, Gu Yue's infernal energy turned into a burning hot heat that sunk into Lin Ming's body, spreading through all of his meridians. Soon, those maddening and bloodthirsty desires attempted to invade Lin Ming's mind once again.

But this time Lin Ming was prepared. He closed his eyes for a time. Once he opened them, his eyes were pure and bright once more.

Several male slaves scurried over to recover Gu Yue's corpse. They left behind Gu Yue's spatial ring for Lin Ming. Lin Ming didn't even glance at it before putting it away.

"Next, is there anyone willing to fight?"

After Lin Ming won another battle, he asked this question again. But no one in the arena dared to answer him.

“This boy is too arrogant!” A Giant Demon spat out as he clenched his jaws. But, they only spoke. None of them dared to step onstage.

Gu Yue, who had just died, was stronger than Zha Na. Even amongst the first group he was ranked near the top. However, even this character had been quickly dispatched by Lin Ming. So who would still dare to challenge Lin Ming?

Even the usually insidious and avaricious Imps were looking at Lin Ming with fear and hate in their eyes. Some of them felt uncomfortable and quickly left. But there were many Fey women that looked at Lin Ming with interest. There were some that even batted their eyes at him and were sending him flirtatious signals.

The entire arena had been muted. Of the over 10 thousand martial artists, none of them dared to fight.

A human martial artist stared at Lin Ming onstage, a complex expression on his face. A stirring emotion filled his heart as he said, “It’s a complete blowout…”

“Mmm…in Skysplit Tower, it’s been over ten years since a human has caused a complete blowout…”

This so-called blowout was when no one dared to challenge a martial artist in the arena. This sort of situation usually only happened with the Giant Demons and the Fey.

Every level of Skysplit Tower had certain requirements for a martial artist’s cultivation. The martial artists that had a higher cultivation had to go to a higher level of Skysplit Tower. Therefore, those martial artists that were able to cause a complete blowout amongst those at their cultivation level had to be the most supreme of talents. To humans, this was far too difficult. Even Saint level talents weren’t enough.

“This is incredible. I have no idea what sect he’s from. This sort of talent, as long as he doesn’t perish, will absolutely become a Peerless Emperor!”

‘It’s best if we don’t involve ourselves with this sort of matter. There are martial artists that don’t like to reveal their origin.”

………

Time slowly passed. During the pregnant silence of the arena, a formal looking blue-skinned middle-aged man stepped onto the stage. He calmly proclaimed, “In half an incense stick of time, no one has come up to challenge. This is a complete blowout!”

“Congratulations. With this trial, you have earned the right to enter the second level of Skysplit Tower, an Invincible Glory Emblem, as well as 10 slaughter points.”

“Invincible Glory Emblem? Slaughter points?” Lin Ming’s eyebrows rose. He knew very few of Skysplit Tower’s rules; this was his first time hearing about these things.

The blue-skinned man smiled. He could already tell that Lin Ming was unfamiliar with the customs and rules of Polaris City. Really, just where had this young man come from?

He continued to explain, “In Skysplit Tower, every martial artist has a corresponding authority. A normal martial artist only has an authority rank of one star. Every time you obtain a Glory Emblem, your authority will rise by another star. The highest is 12 stars. For instance, you currently have a two star authority rank. On all of Skysplit Tower’s expenses, you may receive a 5% discount. As your authority increases, so will the benefits you receive. There are many areas in Skysplit Tower that you can’t enter if your authority isn’t high enough.”

“Mm? What sort of places?”

The blue-skinned man mysteriously smiled and said, “For example, there are special auctions, or special cultivation areas and treasures…”

“Cultivation areas?” Lin Ming’s mind stirred. After practicing martial arts for so many years, he was fully aware of just how important one’s cultivation place was. Back when he had cultivated at the Seven Profound Martial House, his experience was completely different after using the seven great killing arrays there.

Of course, the difference between the Seven Profound Martial House and Skysplit Tower was like the heavens and earth. The Skysplit Tower was a source of infernal energy in the Blood Slaughter Steppes, and also contained strange laws that even Emperor level powerhouses weren't able to break through. The quality of these cultivation areas could be imagined!

"What sort of Glory Emblems are there?" Lin Ming asked. He was very interested in these cultivation areas.

"There are many of them. Besides the Invincible Emblem, there is the 100 Victory Emblem, 1000 Killer Emblem, Destructor Emblem, Lord Emblem, and so on..."

Lin Ming wasn't clear was the so-called Destructor Emblem and the others were. He asked, "What are slaughter points? What are they used for?"

"Slaughter points can be used to purchase special things. For instance, when I previously mentioned cultivation spaces, those spaces require not just authority, but one also needs to pay Blood Demon Crystals and slaughter points in order to enter. Also, for certain specialized auction houses, there are certain goods that can only be purchased with slaughter points." The blue-skinned man patiently explained to Lin Ming.

"Understood. When I entered Skysplit Tower, I heard that strength was the only rule here. But you just spoke about so many different rules. Were these rules of Skysplit Tower already established since long ago, or were they developed by individuals?"

The blue-skinned man smiled and said, "Some of these rules were naturally written by others. But, it is exactly because they are strong that they are able to maintain these rules. The reason that these rules still exist is because the one who maintains them is the Ten Winged Lord."

"Ten Winged Lord? Not twelve wings?"

"You don't have to worry about these things. When you arrive at that level, you will know." The blue-skinned man was silent after he spoke.

Lin Ming had to give up on his questions. He took the emblem from the blue-skinned man – this was the Glory Emblem. After he thanked the man, he walked down the arena stage steps.

Wherever Lin Ming walked, the crowd would naturally part in front of him. No one dared to block his path. Several Fey women actually coyly blinked at Lin Ming, but as they saw that he didn't even look their way, they only gave a snappy humph.

Lin Ming didn't bother with them. He walked towards the exit. Now that there wasn't any problem with him entering the second floor, he just wanted to find a place to rest and refine the infernal energy within his dantian.

"Greetings, Brother!"

As Lin Ming reached the exit, a human martial artist called out to him.

As he turned around, he saw that this martial artist that called out to him was one of the human martial artists that was being forced away by Zha Na.

As they saw Lin Ming look over to them, they awkwardly smiled. Compared to Lin Ming, they were a bit ashamed by their actions.

The human martial artist at the front cleared his throat and said, "I thought that fellow brother is not too familiar with Skysplit Tower. If you don't mind, then you're welcome to come with us. I'll take you to find a quiet place where you can stay, and also give you an introduction to Skysplit Tower's rules. How about it…?"

Lin Ming thought about it for a moment and then simply agreed. If he had a guide then things would be much easier.

"Then I'll have to trouble you."

“Haha, Brother is too polite. The ones that should be saying thanks are us. You have really regained the pride of the humans in Skysplit Tower. You might not know, but usually humans don’t come to the arena. If it wasn’t for you appearing today, then we might have been in danger. Even if we left safely, we would still have been humiliated.” The human martial artist sighed from the heart. The arena was truly the world of Giant Demons and Fey. When humans came, they would be under an unimaginable amount of pressure.

Not just that, but there were many places in Skysplit Tower where killing was not forbidden. In this case, one had to sleep with their eyes open and be on full alert at all times. The burden this placed on a martial artist was immense.

Chapter 533 – Seven Star Heavenly Demon

Chapter 533 – Seven Star Heavenly Demon

…

…

…

As Lin Ming left the martial arena with these fellows, he learnt their names. The one that was leading them was called Xu Yan, and the one who was barely 20 and was almost provoked to action by Zha Na was called Wang Dong.

Skysplit Tower was extraordinarily large. This arena that was capable of seating tens of thousands of people was just a very, very tiny part. There were countless stone buildings stacked atop each other, and an inexplicably astonishing amount of people.

The paths and roads of Skysplit Tower were always square and the corners were sharp and angled. All of the buildings were made of dark gray stone. It was solemn and simple.

As Lin Ming's group walked along, he saw many common mortals. There weren't just humans, but also Fey and Giant Demons.

These common mortals were mostly young and beautiful women, as well as some handsomely strong men and pretty boys.

"There are so many mortals, how did they reach Polaris City?" Lin Ming couldn't help but ask.

Polar City was built atop a 60 to 70 thousand foot tall cliff face, accessible only by the thick chains that connected it. Not even a Pulse Condensation period martial artist would be able to crawl up those chains. A mortal would only be able to arrive if they were carried by a top master. As Lin Ming walked along, he saw hundreds of mortals. These mortals should only have been a miniscule portion of those in Skysplit Tower. In total, there might be at least 100,000 mortals living in Skysplit Tower.

Xu Yan glanced at the mortals that were bustling about and said, “Skysplit Tower has existed since age immemorial. These mortals were mostly born in Polaris City. Their ancestors were originally slaves who were brought here. Afterwards, they stayed in Polaris City and had children. For generations, it was and still is impossible for these people to leave Polaris City. The only chance they have is if they die. Their ashes will be scattered from the cliff. In a sense, they can return to their lands.”

“I see…”

Lin Ming was suddenly aware. Polaris City was vast and required a massive amount of mortal commoners to serve and attend to the basic necessities of the martial artists’ lives. But, these mortals did not understand martial arts so they would never be able to leave Polaris City.

Polaris City had limited land resources. Normally, the dead would not be given a grave. After death, they would be cremated and their ashes would be scattered from tens of thousands of feet in the air. This could truly be said to be dust to dust, ashes to ashes.

This was the life of a mortal. And, in Polaris City, the martial artists that died here also shared the same fate…

Lin Ming asked, “I heard that blue-skinned man mention a Ten Winged Heavenly Demon Host Lord. What is that?”

Xu Yan said, “There are a great number of sect geniuses that pass through Polaris City every year, thus, there is also a great deal of interest here. Wherever there is interest, there will also be greedy individuals that wish to take it. You should have heard this, but since ancient times there have been all sorts of super forces and powerhouses that have tried to take the 12 Heavenly Demon Cities. The end result was that they were all completely killed by the mysterious curse that envelops this land.

"Afterwards, people discovered that the curse of the Blood Slaughter Steppes only applied to foreign forces. The curse did not affect talents that developed here due to the infernal energy. Therefore, some of the extreme powerhouses gathered together and laid down rules. These powerhouses are mostly Ten Winged Heavenly Demons; the Heavenly Demon Tattoo on their body has condensed ten wings or more."

Xu Yan spoke in a breathless and envious tone. Obviously, he greatly wished that he could amass such strength and wealth in Skysplit Tower like those fabled powerhouses.

Lin Ming understood. He continued to ask, "Of these Ten Winged Heavenly Demons, most of them are Giant Demons and Fey, with very few humans, right?"

As this was mentioned, Xu Yan's originally excited expression became crestfallen. "I've also heard some rumors about the Ten Winged Heavenly Demons. In Polaris City, it seems there aren't any human Ten Winged Heavenly Demons, nor are there Ferals. This is another reason why humans and Ferals have such a pathetic status here."

"Is the natural talent of humanity really that much worse than that of the Giant Demons? Then, as one goes higher, wouldn't the disparity be greater?" Lin Ming frowned. He didn't really care that there weren't any human Ten Winged Heavenly Demons in Skysplit Tower. But he did feel sad about the fact that humanity's talent was so poor. Did this mean the further he cultivated, the more problems he would encounter?

Xu Yan saw Lin Ming's expression and guessed what his concerns were. He said with some envy, "Brother Lin, the truth is that the answer to this question isn't so simple. The reason that humanity's talent is worse than the Giant Demons' is because of their bones and meridians. But, after a human martial artist passes through the stages of Life Destruction, their body will be reforged, and they gain a new body as they try to reach the Divine Sea. But, a Giant Demon will not experience this. From a six-star Demon King to Demon Emperor, they will not experience Life Destruction. Thus, when a human reaches the Divine

Sea, they won't necessarily be any worse than a Giant Demon. There are even some Emperor level powerhouses that experienced seven or eight Life Destructions before they stepped into the Divine Sea realm, and their bodies might even be stronger than those of the Giant Demon race's Demon Emperors!"

"So that's how it is…" Lin Ming let out a long sigh of relief. The path of martial arts was truly complex and diverse. The different races also had different corresponding cultivation systems.

As long as there was a method to overcome the gap in body structures, then Lin Ming had the confidence he could succeed.

"Brother Lin, with your talent, if there isn't a problem then you will definitely reach the Divine Sea in the future. You won't be like me; it would already be a great stroke of luck if I managed to reach the late Revolving Core realm." Xu Yan sighed.

It had to be said that when Mu Fengxian was the Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island, she wasn't any worse than Mu Qianyu. But when she finally reached the first stage of Life Destruction, she couldn't proceed any further. As for these human martial artists at Skysplit Tower, their talent was inferior to Mu Qianyu's, so the late Revolving Core realm was already their natural limits.

Xu Yan said this, but in fact he didn't even know Lin Ming's actual age. If he knew Lin Ming was only 18 years old, he would most likely be stunned speechless.

…………

At this time, on the third floor of Skysplit Tower, there was a great table placed in a large black stone room. The surface of this table was carved with intricate runes. Nearby, there was an array disc with all sorts of complex symbols, and there were even Blood Demon Crystals that flashed on it.

Above the array, there were phantom images flashing around. When one looked carefully, they could see that these images were a replay of the entire battle between Lin Ming and Gu Yue.

This sort of special light array was a sort of illusory magic array. The production process for creating one of these was extremely complex. One could record the light and use it to replay the scene from the illusory magic array.

At this time, there was a young Giant Demon watching this play. He had rough facial features and he wore red armor.

This was a youth who held the title of Six Star Heavenly Demon in Skysplit Tower, as well as being one of the most illustrious and famous Giant Demons in Polaris City. This was his first time paying attention to a human youth whose cultivation was only at the early Xiantian realm.

He had watched this fight three times already.

At this time, a young and delicate looking Fey girl walked over. Her eyes were ink-black and bright. There were two vibrant scales on the corners of her eyes; she looked exceptionally cute.

The young Fey girl saw the young Giant Demon and began to giggle, “Da Gu, you’re studying your opponent! You’re always studying your opponent! Aren’t you tired of this!?”

“Know yourself, know others, and victory will be in your grasp.” After Da Gu spoke, he wholly absorbed himself into watching the moving images. At this time, he was specifically watching the scene where Gu Yue attacked Lin Ming with his demonic essence.

“Eh? Isn’t that kid Gu Yue? I also know a bit about him; he’s staying on the first level of Skysplit Tower. I can’t believe you have the time to watch these little kids’ fights, how boring could that be? Why are you so concerned about Gu Yue?”

Da Gu shook his head.

"You aren't looking at Gu Yue, but that other boy?" The young Fey girl stroked her chin. "Yo, he's been surrounding by Gu Yue's demon essence. That boy is probably going to die…"

But just as she spoke, the flow of battle suddenly changed. In the flash of an eye, Lin Ming struck Gu Yue wit the Divine Demon Thunder Soul and broke open Black Sun Shining Sky with the Blood Drinking Seals.

"Eh?"

The young Fey Girl was stunned; the change in situation was too fast. Completely contrary to her expectations, Gu Yue died, and the human boy won.

"I didn't think that he would defeat Gu Yue. He should have the strength to enter the second floor and even make a bit of a mess there, but he's still far from fighting us on the third floor."

Da Gu didn't deny the young Fey girl's words. He only slowly said, "That human's name is Lin Ming, and his cultivation is only at the early Xiantian realm."

"What?" The young Fey girl's eyes widened. She hadn't been able to see Lin Ming's cultivation from the phantom images in the illusory magic array. "He's only at the early Xiantian realm? Is that a joke? How could a human possibly be so strong?"

"It's the truth. Also, he might not be any older than you."

"That's impossible!" The young Fey girl said with disbelief.

"It's possible. Humans don't live as long as you Fey. From his appearance, at most he will be in his early twenties." Da Gu said as he closed the light image array disc and put it away in his spatial ring. "He'll be an interesting opponent if he can reach the third floor within the next two years."

Many martial artists would stay in Skysplit Tower for several years or even dozens of years at a time. For these high level martial artists that lived for hundreds of years, several years wasn't anything at all.

Moreover, every battle in Skysplit Tower could involve one's life or death. When a martial artist entered the stage, they would naturally be extremely careful.

Most people spent a great deal of their time observing fights and figuring out their opponents, or cultivating. They would only challenge others when they believe they had the strength to do so.

It had to be known that every floor in Skysplit Tower had 10 to 20 thousand martial artists. But, every floor only had a single arena, and several hundred matches occurred in these arenas every day.

The young Fey girl's competitive spirit was aroused by Da Gu's words, but she wasn't totally convinced yet. She said, "Even if he's younger than me, that doesn't mean he will be stronger than me once he reaches my age. At that time, I'll have advanced even more. He can give up the thought of catching up with me."

After listening to the young Fey girl, Da Gu faintly smiled and didn't say any more.

The Fey were long-lived; even the common mortal Fey would live up to 200 years. This 20 some year old Fey girl could only be considered young. Her disposition was the same as a teenager's.

Currently, the young Fey girl beside him seemed cute and harmless, but she was also a Seven Star Heavenly Demon. If one looked down on her because of her age, then they would definitely suffer a miserable end.

"This Lin Ming is truly an amusing opponent. But, that's only when he grows up. Right now he is just too tender."

Chapter 534 – Remembrance

Chapter 534 – Remembrance

…

…

…

Xu Yan brought Lin Ming through several winding streets before he arrived at a luxuriously decorated stone building at the northwest corner of Skysplit Tower.

Although this stone building was built from gray rock, the gray walls were framed with thick pieces of decorative wood and there was a fragrant scent emitting from the area. There were all sorts of precious silks hung from the entrance, and there were massive peony images embroidered upon them. There were several beautiful young girls standing in front of the screen, wearing enchanting clothes that highlighted their sex appeal. Most of them were humans with a small number of them being Fey.

"Hehe, this is a great place." Xu Yan said with a cajoling tone.

As Lin Ming saw this place, an odd look suddenly crossed his face, "A brothel?"

"No, but if Brother Lin wishes, it could also have this function…" Xu Yan grinned meaningfully. "Simply put, this is a service lodge for martial artists. It is especially targeted for human martial artists. Here, as long as you have Blood Demon Crystals, you can enjoy all the services you can dream of.

"The truth is that the martial artist service lodges on the first floor of Skysplit Tower are the worst. At the higher levels, as long as you have the authority, points, and Blood Demon Crystals, you can buy anything you want. There are top treasures, rare and precious materials, powerful contract beats, top cultivation methods, exquisitely beautiful women to cultivate with, and so on. As long as you can think of it, it will be available. Skysplit Tower could be said to be a paradise for the most outstanding of martial artists.”

As Xu Yan spoke here, a woman approached them from the screen door. This woman was around 30 years old and was charmingly appealing. She wore a long, flowing dress, and welcomed them with a smile. “Did I just hear Sir Xu speaking ill of us? Ahh, we are already the worst.”

The red-dressed lady had very sensitive ears. Although she managed a business in Skysplit Tower, she still had a cultivation at the Houtian realm.

Xu Yan chuckled and said, “My words were wrongly spoken, I hope that Madame Wei isn’t offended.”

“Haha, I’ll have Hui’er punish you later.” The red-dressed lady genially spoke. She waved her slender fingers and then turned to Lin Ming, “Sir Xu has brought a friend today. How should I greet this young man?”

The red-dressed lady had opened this service lodge specifically for human martial artists. Within Skysplit Tower’s first floor, Xu Yan was considered decently strong amid the human martial artists. Thus, he often came here for the services, and they naturally were well acquainted with each other.

“Hehe, my friend is surnamed Lin; he is not your average person.” Xu Yan bragged.

“Of course he’s not average! If one can come to Skysplit Tower, how could they possibly be average, much less this sir is so young.” The red-dressed lady giggled as she waved her handkerchief at Lin Ming.

“It’s not as simple as you think.” Xu Yan grasped the red dressed lady’s hand, he didn’t want her silly behavior to bother Lin Ming. “Does Madame Wei know Zha Na and Gu Yue?”

As Xu Yan mentioned these two names, Madame Wei's rosy complexion immediately paled. She forcefully laughed and said, "Of course I know them! Why does sir mention them, it's no fun at all!"

Opening a business in Skysplit Tower was not simple. Although one had to pay a massive tax and also protection fees, Skysplit Tower only protected the shop from being destroyed and from being robbed. There were many cases when a strong martial artist would go to a store and act excessively. This was behavior that Skysplit Tower did not manage.

This was particularly true for when humans opened a business; they were extremely vulnerable to bullying. Oftentimes, a Giant Demon would come and not pay for their food, steal away beautiful maids, or even kill someone on the spot. Even if this happened, they could only silently bear it.

Zha Na and Gu Yue were fierce and illustrious figures within Skysplit Tower, so how could Madame Wei not know them? If she saw these individuals, she might even need to immediately close her business.

Xu Yan smiled and said, "Just a moment ago, both of these fellows died under Brother Lin's hand."

"Ah?" Madame Wei was frightened and she almost dropped her handkerchief. "You said that Zha Na and Gu Yue died? And they died to…" Madame Wei looked at Lin Ming, her eyes full of disbelief. Estimating his age, at most he was 20 some years old, and he had an exceptionally handsome, delicate, and stoic appearance. He didn't seem like the ruthless type at all.

"Everything is absolutely true. And both fights together didn't even add to ten breaths of time. So, oh, you know…"

Xu Yan's words trailed off here, but Madame Wei's eyes brightened. Skysplit Tower was a land where strength was king. If one didn't have strength, then they were destined to be bullied and harassed by others. If Lin Ming's reputation rose in the future and he became a top talent comparable to a Seven Star Heavenly Demon, then as long as he took care of her small store a little, although she couldn't say that she would be rolling in wealth, at least she wouldn't be bullied.

But to Madame Wei, this was far more than enough. Thinking of the possibilities, Madame Wei's heart ignited with a fire. "Little Apricot, Little Peach, what are you doing? Hurry up and help greet the guests. Bring out the 500 year old wine from the cellar and bring out the altar. Notify the kitchen and have them prepare a table of the best dishes. Today, all of Sir Lin's expensive are free!"

This sort of comprehensive martial artist service lodge had various sorts of service. It was a place for martial artists to relax and decompress from their daily stress. In a situation where a martial artist faced life and death, they would constantly be tense from the great amount of pressure placed on them, and they had no choice but to find a way to vent it.

However, when a beautiful girl moved towards Lin Ming, she was actually rejected by him.

"Sir Lin, is this girl not to your satisfaction?" Madame Wei attentively asked.

Lin Ming shook his head. He said, "A quiet room is good enough for me. Have the food delivered to my room."

"This... Sir Lin..." Madame Wei looked at Xu Yan with some embarrassment.

Xu Yan saw that Lin Ming didn't have much interest in the festivities. He said, "Don't worry about it. Prepare a quiet room for Brother Lin and we'll go and play ourselves."

"Welll... alright..." Madame Wei nodded. She looked for a beautiful maid and ordered her to escort Lin Ming upstairs.

The room was very elegant. The floors were dark blue, and the walls were plastered with pleasant decorations. The beds were neat and white, and there was a simple wooden table in the center. There was also a pot of flowers on the table that emitted a refreshing fragrance.

Lin Ming glanced over at the girl who led him here, “You can leave.”

“I…” The girl blushed. She fidgeted around and stared at her toes with her clear eyes, embarrassed.

“What’s wrong?”

“Mm… if I leave, then Madame Wei will blame me.” The girl mumbled as she bit her lips. Even though she was quiet, these simple uttered words caused her neck to flush red and spread to her ears.

Lin Ming wasn’t a fool. He instantly understood what this girl meant. As he looked at her more carefully, he was surprised to see that she was actually a virgin.

The common mortal women of Polaris City had neither freedom nor status. To them, there was no better result than to be taken in by a martial artist as a maid or a concubine.

As for things such as love, these girls might have never even heard of the word before. After they came of age, their first time would often be given to a special ‘guest’ like Lin Ming.

Lin Ming unconsciously felt compassion for this girl. “What’s your name? How old are you?”

“My name is Wan’er, and I am sixteen this year.” The girl adorably replied.

“Sixteen years old… you’re a year younger than Xingxuan.” Unknowingly, Lin Ming’s thoughts flew back to his days at the Sky Spill Continent, and he recalled Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu.

“I wonder how Xingxuan is… with Miss Mu watching over her, she should be alright…” Lin Ming muttered to himself. The South Sea was in chaos. When he left, the war between the South Sea Demon Region and Divine Phoenix Island was still ongoing.

The total strength of the South Sea Demon Region was estimated to be much greater than Divine Phoenix Island's. The reason that they didn't launch a full on assault against Divine Phoenix Island was probably because their goal was the Demon God Imperial Palace.

Now that the issue with the Demon God Imperial Palace had come to an end, Lin Ming feared that the South Sea Demon Region would continue the invasion with their complete attention and force. Divine Phoenix Island might have been able to join forces with Great Zen Temple to fight for the Nirvana Dragon Root, but it was impossible for them to think of having the Great Zen Temple assist them in dealing with the South Sea Demon Region.

As for the Five Element Region, those fourth-grade sects might cooperate, but in the end they would only be motivated by benefits to their own foundations. If they acted, it would be at no small price.

Divine Phoenix Island might be able to support itself for another year or two. If the war dragged on, they probably wouldn't be able to afford the rising costs.

If this continued, the fate of Divine Phoenix Island was worrying.

As Lin Ming thought of this, he had a heavy heart. He knew that walking away at this moment was very irresponsible and regretful, but if even the slightest rumor of him leaked out, then Divine Phoenix Island would face immediate and total annihilation.

"Wan'er…" Lin Ming returned from his thoughts. He looked up at the young girl.

"Mm." The girl quickly responded. As she looked at Lin Ming, her eyes were complex, and there was a faint tenseness to her.

"If Madame Wei asks, then tell her it is my decision. She won't blame you." Lin Ming didn't have the time for such things as romantic or flowery thoughts. All he wanted to do was increase his own strength as soon as possible.

As the girl heard Lin Ming say this, she bit her lips and said, "Mm… Wan'er understands…"

Lin Ming couldn't bear to see the disappointment flash in the girl's eyes. In truth, he knew how difficult a life these girls lived. It was difficult if not impossible to find a powerful martial artist that also had a good character.

In Skysplit Tower, because of the great pressure that martial artists bore at all times, this often caused them to have abnormal or monstrous dispositions. Because of this, it was common for female slaves to be tortured to death.

To her presently, Lin Ming was not only strong but also kind. He looked young and was outstandingly handsome. Naturally, he was the best candidate to be her master.

In this situation, her hopes had been crushed. Wan'er felt a bit of loss. After leaving Lin Ming, she wasn't sure of just what her fate would be in the future.

Lin Ming sighed. In the end, he couldn't bear being too cruel. He said, "Well then, how about you go and wait outside in the hall. When there is some matter then I will call for you. Don't let anyone else enter."

Wan'er's heart rose with happiness. She quickly nodded and then stepped outside into the hall as she closed the door behind her.

Lin Ming waited for the door to close and then casually drew a few runes and placed a spell on it. Afterwards, he also placed down a simple array formation to prevent others from monitoring him and took off his shirt. Then, he took out the spatial rings that he had received from Gu Yue and Zha Na...

Chapter 535 – Threaten

Chapter 535 – Threaten

…

…

…

TLN: the Primate race has been changed to the Goliath race

“These two were quite wealthy.” Lin Ming muttered to himself as he searched through Gu Yue and Zha Na’s spatial rings.

Within the two spatial rings, there were several hundred medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals. In addition, there were all sorts of pills and treasures. Although they weren’t considered too precious, it was enough so that Lin Ming wouldn’t be in an awkward situation where he didn’t have enough Blood Demon Crystals available.

“Mm? Is this a high-grade Blood Demon Crystal?”

Lin Ming took out a rectangular jade box from within Gu Yue’s spatial ring. As he opened it, he saw that there was a bright red crystal inside.

A high-grade Blood Demon Crystal was equivalent to 100 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystal. Even Gu Yue only had a single one.

Blood Demon Crystals and true essence stones were similar: both were stones that contained massive inherent energies and could be used in cultivation. However, true essence stones could only be used to condense true essence and cultivate the dantian. As for Blood Demon Crystals, they contained a vast amount of heaven and earth origin energy as well as infernal blood energy. They could be used to refine and strengthen the body, bolster the soul, as well as many other uses.

Martial artists that followed the orthodox path also used Blood Demon Crystals. No one ever complained that their blood vitality was too powerful.

In addition, Blood Demon Crystals were much rarer. All of these factors made the price of Blood Demon Crystals much higher than that of true essence stones.

Lin Ming placed this high-grade Blood Demon Crystal in his hand and began to absorb the pure energy from within it.

A high-grade Blood Demon Crystal was worth 100 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals, but the infernal blood energy within was only equal to 50 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals. Using a single one was the same as using 50 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals.

Of course, cultivating with high-grade Blood Demon Crystals was far more efficient.

But wasting so much precious energy just for this increase in efficiency was a cost that not even a talent form a large sect would so easily pay. This was also the reason that Gu Yue had a high-grade Blood Demon Crystal on him.

Currently, Lin Ming only wished for more efficiency. He could earn more Blood Demon Crystals in the future, but time would not wait for him. All he thought of was the day that he gained the strength to battle with Xuan Wuji and return to the South Horizon Region.

Because that was his foundation, that was his home.

The pure power of heaven and earth origin energy and blood energy constantly flowed into Lin Ming. The light of the Blood Demon Crystal also began to gradually dim.

Within the Blood Slaughter Steppes, fire origin energy was relatively thin. In comparison, there was an incomparably thick infernal blood energy that permeated the land. Here, cultivating the dantian with the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ was far inferior to practicing the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’.

The pure energy of the Blood Demon Crystal combined with the infernal energy within the Heavenly Demon Tattoo and was then greedily refined by Lin Ming. Those that practiced the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ walked the killing path. Using this infernal blood energy to cultivate it was especially useful.

Lin Ming felt a burning hot energy rampage through his meridians, making circle after circle before entering into his dantian where it fused with the billowing vortex of true essence within.

In this process, Lin Ming’s soul and body were both nourished.

Every cultivation method had its strengths and weaknesses. For instance, for those that followed the righteous path, they would usually focus on cultivating the soul after reaching the Xiantian realm.

But, those martial artists that followed the demonic path were partial to tempering and refining their bodies after reaching the Xiantian realm.

If Lin Ming only practiced the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’, then his cultivation would be biased towards fire-attribute true essence, as well as his path being limited to a single essence gathering system. If he reached the Life Destruction realm in the future, then his cultivation method system would be too frail and his strength would correspondingly be limited.

If he supplemented this with the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ which focused on offensive skills, then this would fill many gaps in the problem.

The truth was that many people understood this, but there was still nothing they could do. For a large sect, it was already fantastic if they had a single top cultivation method. What sort of sect could be like Lin Ming and choose from numerous cultivation methods that were of the highest level? It had to be said that when Lei Jingtian had been mired in the Revolving

Core realm, he had sacrificed his honor and name and colluded with the South Sea Demon Region, all in order to acquire the ancient Devil Tome.

Lin Ming immersed himself in cultivating and eventually lost track of time. When he next opened his eyes, he saw that the lamp on the table had already been extinguished, and there was a light hazy mist all around. It seemed that the dawn had just broken.

As Lin Ming stood up, his entire skeleton emitted crackling noises that were crisp and loud. The high-grade Blood Demon Crystal in his hand had already dimmed to nothing; there wasn't much energy left in it. His body was sticky with sweat and his sweat was tinged with the faint color of blood. The coppery smell of blood wafted out from around him.

Within his dantian, his early Xiantian cultivation had further consolidated. He was almost at the peak of the early Xiantian realm.

"I've already been stuck at the early Xiantian realm for months. I have no idea how long it will be until I can break through to the middle Xiantian realm; the demonic path cultivation methods are truly quicker than those from the righteous path… if I can reach the Revolving Core realm before I'm 22 years old, then I wonder how strong I will be compared to Life Destruction master…" Lin Ming mumbled to himself, lost in thought. He wanted to take a shower when his mind suddenly stirred. He moved so he was sideways to the door and slowly pushed it open.

Outside in the hall, there was a pretty and delicate little girl leaning against the door. Her head was nodded down. Apparently, because of her extreme sleepiness, she had fallen asleep where she stood.

"Wan'er."

"Ah!" The little girl was startled. She jumped up, instantly sober. "Sir, I…"

Wan'er was like a little child who had been caught in the act of doing something wrong.

"Why are you standing here? Haven't you gone to sleep?"

Wan’er hurriedly said, “Sir asked me to keep guard outside in the hall.”

Lin Ming was speechless. He had only been casually speaking, but he never thought that Wan’er would be guarding the door all day and all night. She was a mortal. If she stood for so long, then her legs would be swollen.

But this was the fate of a maidservant. There were many maids of wealthy families that had to stand outside of their master’s room. They had to pour water, clean the chamber pot, and instantly rush forwards if they were summoned. In places with stricter rules, even yawning was forbidden and would be punished with slaps. After a maid grew old, they would often be left without support. This was a reason why many maids dreamt of becoming concubines.

This was the first time that Wan’er stood watch at night. She was afraid of appearing lazy thus she fell into a panic.

“You go and rest.”

Lin Ming sighed. He had thought about buying Wan’er’s freedom, but now he considered that matter finished. In Polaris City, even if a mortal commoner had freedom, they were still at the mercy of everyone else. If they had wealth, then that would actually be a dark star that attracted calamity. She might as well stay with Madame Wei where she had a modicum of safety. It was also impossible for Lin Ming to take her. In this dangerous land, Lin Ming simply couldn’t divert any attention to protect her.

“I…”Wan’er hesitated.

“Go to sleep.” Lin Ming said in a tone that couldn’t be refused. Wan’er bowed and excused herself.

Lin Ming hadn’t yet gone to the second floor. He planned to stay at the first floor of Skysplit Tower until he reached the peak of the early Xiantian realm. Currently, he wasn’t too far from this goal.

Thus, Lin Ming cultivated, ate, and slept at the martial artist service lodge every day.

His daily care such as washing clothes and changing were all taken care of by Wan’er. In the blink of an eye, 15 days had passed. Lin Ming was now only a tiny step away from reaching the peak of the early Xiantian realm.

Today, Lin Ming left the service lodge. He wanted to go to the second floor of Skysplit Tower to have a look.

There was a great gap in strength between the martial artists of Skysplit Tower’s first floor and second floor. Gu Yue, whose strength could be considered at the pinnacle of the first floor, was only at the bottom of the second floor.

The first floor had tens of thousands of martial artists, but the second floor only had several thousand. The amount was dozens of times less. There were many crouching tigers and hidden dragons amongst these groups of people. Even if a Saint rank talent were to come here, they wouldn’t dare to be arrogant. They wouldn’t even dare to fight with someone at their own level. Who could say that the person they provoked wasn’t a future Peerless Emperor?

In these last 15 days, Lin Ming had also gained some understanding of Skysplit Tower from Xu Yan. According to the laws of Skysplit Tower, martial artists from the first floor could not enter the second floor. But, martial artists from the second floor could freely enter the first floor. The only prohibition they had was that they couldn’t rashly kill others on the first floor. If they violated this rule, they would be chased by the enforcement team and killed.

Lin Ming followed Xu Yan’s instructions and walked towards the entrance of the second floor. Because it was early in the morning, there weren’t many people walking the corridors of Skysplit Tower, and there wasn’t a soul in sight at the entrance to the second floor.

A solitary gray platform appeared in front of Lin Ming. On top of the platform was a small transmission array. As long as one entered with their second level permit pass, they would be able to directly enter the second floor.

As Lin Ming took out his permit pass from his spatial ring, he suddenly felt a hidden murderous intent lock onto him. His heart chilled, he began to emit thick infernal energy. “Who is it?”

There was empty silence for a while. Then, a hoarse voice sinisterly laughed and said, “Hehe, boy, you’re quite perceptive.” Right after, the space near Lin Ming began to distort and two men appeared. One was short, one was tall, and both wore black capes.

The short one with the black cape was an Imp. His face was wrinkled like a dried walnut and his eyes were dim and yellow. It was hard to imagine that this fellow Imp was actually a youth.

As for that tall man, his skin was dark like ink; he was from the Goliath race. As he looked at Lin Ming, it was as if he were looking at delicious prey.

Lin Ming was calm as he quietly traced his spatial ring and revolved his true essence. Although he couldn’t tell the cultivation of these two because of the difference in their cultivation systems, he was still able to approximate from their auras.

These two fellows were absolutely more formidable than Gu Yue.

“Hehe, you don’t have to worry yourself. We are martial artists from the second floor. Rest assured, we will not kill you. That is because… the rules do not allow it.”

Lin Ming wasn’t surprised. If these two were more powerful than Gu Yue, then it was normal for them to be from the second floor.

“What do you two want?”

“We’re looking for you because we need a little favor.” The black-caped Imp said. The martial artists of the Imp race even had black tongues; when they spoke, it was like a toad flapping its mouth.

“I’m sorry, but I’m not interested!” Lin Ming coldly declined.

“Hehe, there’s no need to refuse. Otherwise, you might regret it.” The black-caped man confidently said. As he spoke, he flicked his finger, sending an array disc spinning in the air. As the array disc spun, countless lines of light burst forth, creating images in thin air. As these images moved, Lin Ming could see it was clearly the martial artist service lodge where he stayed.

“Mm?” Lin Ming was taken aback; this was the first time he had seen such a strange phantom image array disc.

In the phantom images, Lin Ming could see Wang Dong and Xu Yan. He could see Madame Wei who had just woken up, and he could see Wan’er who was washing his clothes.

But at this moment, a bizarre gray energy enveloped the entire martial artist service lodge. All of the people within seemed to have lost their souls. Madame Wei and Wan’er immediately slumped to the ground. Xu Yan withstood it for a few breaths of time before he too fell to the ground, unconscious.

This was a soul attack!

Lin Ming grimaced. “What do you want?”

Chapter 536 – Skysplit Tower's Second Floor

Chapter 536 – Skysplit Tower's Second Floor

…

…

…

"I heard that you wanted to enter the second floor, so I waited there in hopes of fighting you. But I didn't think that you would stay on the first floor of Skysplit Tower and cultivate for half a month…" The black-caped Imp said. As he spoke, the images in the array disc changed yet again. In Wan'er's room, a several dozen foot long snake fell down from the rafters. Its body was as thick as a bucket, and it curled itself around the unconscious Wan'er.

As Lin Ming saw this, his eyes flashed with killing intent. Although Wan'er was only his maid, she had taken care of his daily needs for these past 15 days and her work could be considered meticulous. Lin Ming would not tolerate someone using her to threaten him.

The black-caped Imp saw Lin Ming's eyes flash with murder. He giggled, "You really are as I thought you'd be. From these last few days, I could already tell that you have some misplaced, pathetic sympathy towards mortals. Jeje, I really have no idea where you came from. How could someone like you possibly step onto the killing path?"

"You were spying on me?" Lin Ming was disquieted. He practiced the 'Overbearing Soul Tactic' and also had the Samsara martial intent; he was confident in his own soul defense. His perception was no less than that of a middle Revolving Core realm master. But there had actually been someone spying on him for these last 15 days without him noticing?

Luckily, he hadn't taken out the Cosmic Melting Furnace. Otherwise… the consequences would be unimaginable.

As Lin Ming thought of this, his killing intent thickened even more.

"Hehe, there are many ways to spy on people. I don't need to personally appear near you to monitor you. Even… a small snake can become my eyes." The black-caped Imp said. The Imp had no fear that his method of spying was known by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming frowned. He didn't understand the arcane skills of these foreign races so he had ended up suffering a loss. "Why are you paying attention to me?"

"Hehe, it's not just you, I'm also interested in everyone new to the second floor. To be frank… I want to fight with you in the arena!"

Lin Ming's lips twisted with derision, "So that's what it is. It seems that you are so weak that you can only pick on newcomers?"

"Humph! What would you know!?" The black-caped Imp sneered. "You think that you're so great just because you caused a complete blowout in the first floor? You think you're great because you killed Gu Yue within ten breaths of time?" The second floor of Skysplit Tower is not something that the first floor could even dream of comparing with. The second floor has practice areas that the first floor doesn't. If you practice their, your results will astronomical. No matter what race you are from, you will also be influenced by your surroundings. If a group of geniuses gathers together, and you mix in a bunch of powerful opponents, then everyone will become stronger. In the second floor, there are even many monstrous characters that have the strength to go to the third floor but actually choose to hide on the second."

"I'm not considered weak on the second floor. But, I have accumulated too much infernal energy so there have been many masters eyeing me, hoping they can obtain my infernal energy to build up their Heavenly Demon Tattoo. Hehe, I won't let those fellows succeed."

"So that's why you aim for new people? So all that so-called infernal energy you have is taken from newcomers?" Lin Ming scoffed. He didn't think that Skysplit Tower would have such wonderful characters, but this method was indeed effective. If one had patience and was willing to resort to any method to accumulate infernal energy, they could then use this infernal energy to practice their devil arts. Their results would soar into the sky.

"You're right. After I reached a five match winning streak on the second floor, I became much more cautious. Now, I've reached a 19 match winning streak. It's a pity but new people that enter the second floor are usually timid. They won't fight. Instead, they'll hole themselves in their rooms and cultivate for half a year at time, or they might never leave at all. So… I have no choice but to use some minor methods to draw you out. You can rest assured that I will not kill you. I only want your infernal energy and to increase my winning streak. You can even consider it good luck for me to be your first match! Well, at least others won't be as soft-hearted as I am. If you meet them, you might not even have a corpse left over." The black-caped Imp giggled. His voice was gentle but his words were malicious. Just looking at his wrinkly face and disgusting smile made one feel extremely sick to their stomach.

"So, I should be thanking you?"

"Right. If you fight with me, you can quickly understand the rules of the second floor better. After this match, I'll even give you some benefits and tell you some tips about how to survive in the second floor. Don't look down on these tips, they've been earned with the lives of other martial artists." The black-caped Imp said with a tempting tone.

"And if I say no?"

"Hehe, you're a smart one. There are many ways for you to gain infernal energy, but if you offend me, I have many ways to make you suffer in the second floor, or you might even end up accidently dying. Also, I don't think you want that young maid of yours to be cruelly tortured to death by some perverted Giant Demon, hahaha!"

The black-caped Imp brazenly laughed. The rules of Skysplit Tower prevented martial artists from the second floor from killing those from the first floor. But, this only applied to martial artists. Mortal commoners were exempt from this rule.

Lin Ming suppressed the simmering killing aura in his heart. On the surface, he was neither angry nor disturbed. He said, “Let them go. I agree to fight with you.”

“Alright.” The black-caped Imp said with a refreshed tone. In truth, he wasn’t afraid that Lin Ming would renege on his promise. In Skysplit Tower, it was difficult to protect a mortal, but killing them was easy. If Lin Ming decided to go back on his word, then he could definitely find some casual opportunity to kill the girl.

“I’ll wait for you on the second floor. I hope that you don’t have me wait too long!” The black-caped Imp licked his lips. He took out his pass from his spatial ring and inserted it into the transmission array. With a flash of light, he disappeared along with the Goliath youth.

Lin Ming was expressionless as he turned around. By the time he returned to the martial artist service lodge, everyone who fainted was already beginning to wake up.

The young girls of the martial artist service lodge were at a loss. They didn’t what had just happened; they only felt as if they had experienced a terrible dream.

But the martial artists such as Xu Yan actually knew that they had been ambushed by a master with a soul attack.

A dominant and terrifying power had instantly covered the entire martial artist service lodge. He wasn’t even able to resist for a bit before he fainted, the difference in strength was too great. If the opposite party had wanted to kill them, they could have done so with a thought!

This sort of person could only be a martial artist from the second floor!

Xu Yan was alarmed. He didn’t know what this other person’s purpose was, but as soon as he saw Lin Ming come in, his mind stirred. Could it be…

“Brother Lin, a moment ago…”

Lin Ming waved his hand. “Brother Xu, today I’ll be going to the second floor. I’ll have to trouble you with taking care of Wan’er.”

Hearing Lin Ming say that he was heading to the second floor, Xu Yan was even more assured of his guess. “Brother Lin, is someone from the second floor aiming for you?”

Lin Ming neither denied nor confirmed this. He said, “Whether or not someone is aiming for me, I will still go to the next floor.”

Xu Yan looked at Lin Ming’s decisive appearance and he sighed. He knew that Lin Ming was a dragon in a pool; it was impossible for him to stay very long on the first floor. The reason he came to Skysplit Tower was obviously to gain experience.

“Brother Lin, take care.”

Lin Ming packed up his things and bid farewell to everyone. Then, he walked away from the martial artist service lodge. Wan’er didn’t say a single word as she watched Lin Ming’s fading back. For a long time, she didn’t say anything…

……………

“Welcome to the second floor of Skysplit Tower.”

When Lin Ming stepped out of the second floor transmission array, a sweet voice sounded in his ear. As he turned around, he saw a beautiful Fey girl standing there. Her cultivation was only around the Pulse Condensation period. Obviously, she worked here as a greeter and guide.

“Sir, may I ask if you would like to go to the martial arena or find a place to practice?” The Fey girl politely asked as she bowed.

Practice place?

Lin Ming raised his eyebrows. He had heard about the practice areas of Skysplit Tower's second floor before. The black-caped Imp said that cultivating there would give one astronomical results.

Polaris City was an original source of infernal energy and it had an extremely long history. There were countless ancient arrays that were engraved within this place. Lin Ming was looking forward to seeing just what sort of practice places were in Polaris City.

As Lin Ming thought about this, he asked, "What sort of authority requirements do I need to enter the practice areas?"

The young Fey girl said, "The second floor has no authority requirements. One only needs to pay the required Blood Demon Crystals depending on the area you wish to go in. A high quality practice area will require not only Blood Demon Crystals but also slaughter points. For instance, a top practice area will require one slaughter point every ten days. As for more general areas, they usually require one slaughter point per year."

"A single slaughter point for ten days… that's quite expensive…" Lin Ming was secretly stunned speechless. Right now he only had ten slaughter points that he had acquired at the same time as the Invincible Glory Emblem. For a top level practice area, that was only enough for 100 days. "Thank you. Bring me to the martial arena first."

Lin Ming wanted to settle all his grudges and scores with the black-caped Imp.

"Good. Then, please follow me." The young Fey girl's dulcet voice called out. When she spoke, it was very comfortable.

…………………

Skysplit Tower was wider at the bottom than the top; it tapered the higher it went. The second floor was smaller than the first floor, so the martial arena in the second floor was also smaller. There was only enough space to seat 8000, but this was already more than enough because the second floor only had several thousand martial artists in total.

When Lin Ming arrived at the martial arena, there were only several hundred people there. The other martial artists were either resting or off cultivating.

Although there were few people, the entire arena was still wild and filled with a bloody atmosphere.

“The boy came!” In a corner of the arena, the black-caped Goliath youth saw Lin Ming.

“Hehe, that stupid little kid is pretty fast. Because of something as stupid as compassion, he actually ruined himself…” The black-caped Imp stroked his wrinkled chin, his eyes flashing with bloodlust.

“Mm? Are you planning on killing him?” The black-caped Goliath youth asked, surprised.

“Of course I’m going to kill him. Although this fellow isn’t too strong right now, his talent is terrifying. If you cut the grass then you have to destroy the roots to eliminate any future problems.”

“This is… but if word of you killing him spreads out and other newcomers find out, then they will be prepared. It won’t be easy to find new people to fight with us.”

“It doesn’t matter. I’ve already decided to kill him. Once I do then I’ll have a 20 match winning streak. I’ll obtain two slaughter points and will also be able to form my four winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo. At that time, I’ll go and cultivate for two years. Once I finish, my strength will have greatly increased and I won’t need to target newcomers anymore.”

As the black-caped Imp spoke to here, his eyes flashed with excitement. He was already looking forwards to this day.

Chapter 537 – Shattered Soul Domain

Chapter 537 – Shattered Soul Domain

…

…

…

“Lan Xing wins, who will be the next challenger?” On the stage of the martial arena, a black-clothed referee announced after a blue-haired Fey defeated a Goliath youth.

The black-clothed referee was similar to the blue-skinned man that Lin Ming had met earlier. They had the characteristics of several races; this was typical of hybrid races.

Within Polaris City, because of the constant number of people being born, there were often many individuals that had the blood of other races within them. Using someone who was a hybrid to be a referee was much fairer to everyone involved.

“This Lan Xing fellow has already won two in a row. If he wins again, then it will be his third win in a row. How come I’ve never heard of him before?”

“It’s normal if you haven’t heard of him. In fact, this fellow is new here. I heard that he had a complete blowout just a year ago and gained ten whole slaughter points. After he came up to the second level he chose not to fight. Instead, he holed himself up and cultivated for an entire year. This is the first battle that he’s had since he came out!”

“He went into seclusion for an entire year? This fellow is quite terrifying, he actually has the patience to wait. Even a two winged Heavenly Demon master lasted less than 10 breaths of time under his hand. He’s most likely still hiding part of his strength. I guess that his true ability should be near that of a four Winged Heavenly Demon!”

As the audience discussed the match, Lin Ming was closely listening in. He couldn't help but pay attention to this Lan Xing a bit more.

The truth was that ever since he came to Skysplit Tower, he found that because all the different races here had different cultivation systems, it was very inaccurate to compare cultivation realms to find relative strengths. This wasn't even considering that everyone here was a genius that could jump ranks to fight. A five-star Demon General of Skysplit Tower could probably defeat a one-star Demon King from the outside.

Because of this, it was much more accurate to differentiate the strength one had with the winged Heavenly Demon Tattoos.

The stronger a martial artist was, the more wings they would have on their Heavenly Demon Tattoo.

From two wings, four wings, all the way to ten wings and twelve wings.

Lin Ming's own Heavenly Demon Tattoo had quickly condensed two wings. In the future, as he fought in more battles in the arena, his Heavenly Demon Tattoo would also grow.

"Lan Xing! You've only won two games, do you really think you're invincible with just that?"

A red-haired big fellow leapt onstage; he was also a Goliath race martial artist. Obviously, he had stepped up with the intention of regaining some honor for his companion. In Skysplit Tower, the races were very conscious about their own groups. When individuals of the same race fought, they wouldn't kill each other often. But, if individuals of different races fought, then their every move would be ruthless. It was common for someone to die during these situations.

"With just you? It looks as if I'll easily obtain my three win streak!" Lan Xing contemptuously glanced at the red-haired Goliath youth and flourished his sword.

"This Lan Xing is too arrogant, he's not even placing Hong Mao in his eyes."

"For better or worse, Hong Mao has been on the second floor for less than half a year but his strength is near that of a four winged Heavenly Demon. It would be unwise for Lan Xing to underestimate his opponent."

As everyone saw Lan Xing being so arrogant, public opinion began to turn towards the red-haired Goliath youth.

As the red-haired big fellow heard Lan Xing's words, he laughed loudly and extracted a heavy sword from his back. "Easily obtain? It's already a miracle that someone like you could live in Skysplit Tower until now. But your good luck stops here. Now die!"

As Hong Mao spoke, his heavy sword cut down at Lan Xing!

Kacha!

The floor tiles exploded into pieces as Lan Xing's figure faded away like an illusion.

"Great movement technique. What a profound Concept of Wind."

Lin Ming could see that Lan Xing had an extremely high understanding of the Concept of Wind; it was even far beyond his own.

It could be said that the entire Fey race was the beloved of all natural Laws.

The talent of the Fey far exceeded that of everyone else in the Holy Demon Continent. In terms of physical strength, they were inferior to the Giant Demons. But they had inborn physiques that placed them in tune with the natural Laws. This allowed them to easily comprehend the power of Concepts and Laws.

This also caused the cultivation methods of the Fey to be infinitely varied; they were impossible for one to guard against.

"Sacred Edge – Blade of Wind!"

In that instant, Lan Xing's sword disappeared, vanishing into the wind. In that instant, the endless wind of the world had become Lan Xing's sword. It was everywhere, and impossible to defend against.

Ding ding ding!

For a time, it was unknown just how many sword strokes struck the Goliath fellow's heavy sword. It caused him to nearly drop his weapon.

True essence recklessly shot out. Hong Mao was startled, his large figure instantly drew back.

However, Lan Xing's sword followed him closely; there was no escaping it.

Hong Mao loudly shouted, about to resort to his master move. But at this time, three sword lights stabbed out.

Pu pu pu!

Hong Mao gave a miserable shout and flew backwards. Three bloody holes appeared in his body. As he fell to the ground, a large pool of thick blood formed beneath him.

"You didn't die? Then consider yourself lucky!" Lan Xing didn't even spare a glance at the half-dead Hong Mao before he stepped offstage.

The entire audience was stupefied. Victory and defeat had been decided in a mere five breaths of time!

Under the stage, several Goliath youths rushed up, quickly lifting away Hong Mao.

"Lan Xing, three win streak!" The black-clothed referee announced.

"Three win streak. He went into seclusion for one year, and as soon as he comes out he gains a three win streak. This Lan Xing absolutely has the strength of a four-winged Heavenly Demon. Looking at him, he only seems to be around 20 some years old. If he doesn’t die, then with enough time he will definitely have the ability to step onto the third floor!

“It seems another rising star came out. But to put it in perspective, there have been countless rising stars in Skysplit Tower these past years. Yet, there are only a few people with the ability to become ten-winged Heavenly Demons.

“Mm. The higher you go the more difficult it becomes.”

People began to discuss just what would happen to Lan Xing after his three win streak.

Normally, in Skysplit Tower, a martial artist wouldn’t continue past a three win streak in a single round. In a high level fight, one would greatly consume strength and true essence. The only exceptions were if one was too strong. At these times, a five or ten win streak would appear.

“Is there anyone willing to come onstage next?” The black-clothed referee loudly announced from the stage.

As the referee’s voice fell, the black-caped Imp smiled and stood up. He looked at Lin Ming, his eyes narrowing.

“Little Brother, let’s go up together.”

The black-caped Imp’s true essence sound transmission sounded in Lin Ming’s ear.

“This fellow is such a coward.” Lin Ming thought with disdain. This fellow obviously feared that he wouldn’t follow him up onstage, and that someone else would challenge him. This black-caped Imp didn’t have a single ounce of confidence.

Lin Ming leapt onstage.

The black caped Imp closely followed.

“That’s Blackrat. That fellow is really sad, he’s still bullying the newbies.” Some of the people in the audience recognized the black-caped Imp. He truly was worthy of the name ‘Blackrat’.

“Heh, you don’t need to say it. That Blackrat’s trick is quite useful. He’s almost a four-winged Heavenly Demon, and he’s about to earn his 20 win streak.”

“Haha, he might become the weakest four-winged Heavenly Demon!”

“Don’t look down on that Blackrat fellow, he has quite the ability. It’s just that he is far too cowardly for his own good. These newcomers are just too stupid and naïve. I know that the new boy onstage just had a complete blowout half a month or so ago. These young newcomers are usually arrogant and full of fighting spirit and boiling blood. They have no idea how strong they are or just how deep the waters of Skysplit Tower can be. Sooner or later, they will suffer for it.”

“Mm. I mean, just look at Lan Xing. He also had a complete blowout, but then he went into seclusion on the second floor for an entire year. Lan Xing’s arrogance isn’t misplaced, he indeed has the qualifications to act like that. Compared to Lan Xing, that boy onstage is just too impulsive…”

Very few people were optimistic about Lin Ming’s chances. Although it was true that he was very talented, a newbie was still a newbie. Both his age and cultivation were simply not enough; he had to be tempered in the forge of battle. In Skysplit Tower, those that were too bold and careless were also the most likely to die.

“Hehe, little boy, don’t be so nervous. I’ll go easy on you.” The black-caped Imp rubbed his hands together as he looked Lin Ming up and down. His black and beady eyes were narrowed. With his wrinkly black skin, he really did look like a sad black rat.

Lin Ming calmly took out the Purple Come Spear. Thunder flashed on the spear tip.

Lin Ming's eyes locked onto the shoulder of the black-caped Imp. He could clearly see the Heavenly Demon Tattoo there. This tattoo had two pairs of wings. The second pair was much blurrier than the first.

"Four-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo… he has over ten times the infernal energy that I do right now. If I can take his, then it will save me a great deal of effort."

As Blackrat thought Lin Ming was his prey, Lin Ming also thought the same of Blackrat.

"Match, start!" The referee shouted.

Blackrat took out two curved short sabers from his spatial ring. "Little boy, relax; my attacks won't be too painful."

Blackrat giggled. Suddenly, his beady eyes flashed with a thick killing intent - Shattered Soul Domain!

Hoo!

The surrounding environment suddenly changed. On the arena stage, thick infernal energy filled the air. It was as if the arena itself had turned into an Ashura battlefield that surrounded the audience. For a time, everyone heard the endless howls of shrieks of the abyss; they had all entered the illusion.

"The Shattered Soul Domain is Blackrat's killing move. Once he uses it, it will void the souls of everyone within a hundred feet. If the damage is light, then the one struck will turn into an idiot. If it's heavy, then that person will die. This fellow, he really wants to take that newcomer's life."

"Mm, although that newcomer's cultivation isn't too high, his talent is just too terrifying. He could actually create a complete blowout at the early Xiantian realm. Blackrat does not want any troubles to appear in the future."

"Haha, a human genius is about to die! Great! Awesome!"

There were countless geniuses that perished in Skysplit Tower, it wasn't just Lin Ming. Perhaps as soon as tomorrow, everyone here would have forgotten Lin Ming's face.

In the stands, as everyone was talking, Lin Ming was standing motionless on the stage without any response.

"Little boy, if you want to blame someone then blame yourself for having too great a talent. I'm also forced to do this, so don't blame me when you're a ghost." Blackrat giggled. His body was like a ghost as he dashed towards Lin Ming, his curved short sabers aimed towards Lin Ming's throat.

But at this time, Lin Ming's eyes suddenly flashed with a radiant light. The Purple Comet Spear in his hand struck out like a whip!

Woosh!

"What!?"

Blackrat was shocked. He thought that even if Lin Ming's soul wasn't destroyed, he still should have fallen into a deep illusion without any ability to resist. He never thought that Lin Ming would be able to counterattack.

"Shattered Soul Saber!"

Blackrat's saber changed angles and shot up. He placed the entire strength of his soul attack in his blade, cutting down on the Purple Comet Spear's shaft.

Pa!

The curved saber was struck out of Blackrat's hand; Blackrat was sent flying back like a ball by Lin Ming's spear!

At the same time, Blackrat's soul attack spread into Lin Ming's spiritual sea via the Purple Comet Spear. It rushed into him like a thunderstorm, menacing and dangerous!

But in the next instant, this soul attack was completely buried with the vast swirling vortex of the Samsara martial intent. Not even the slightest ripple was stirred up.

Lin Ming already knew that Blackrat excelled at soul attacks. When Blackrat had caused everyone at the martial artist service lodge to faint, this was all due to his soul attack.

Chapter 538 – Strength of a Four-winged Heavenly Demon

Chapter 538 – Strength of a Four-winged Heavenly Demon

…

…

…

Bang!

Blackrat smashed into the floor, crushing all of the tiles beneath him. Half of Blackrat's body was stuck in the broken stones.

The hundreds of martial artists that saw this were dumbfounded. They thought that Blackrat would easily win, but the result was beyond their expectations. Lin Ming had thrust out his spear and directly sent Blackrat halfway into the ground.

Although Blackrat was a coward and his character was wretched, the truth was that he was still a genius from a fifth-grade sect of Imps. Once he used his Shattered Soul Domain, it was nearly impossible for someone to defend against. There were many individuals that had lived on the second floor for a long time that weren't willing to face Blackrat's Shattered Soul Domain. They never imagined that a newcomer could actually make such a surprising counterattack.

"Damn, how did that happen!?" Blackrat leapt up from the rubble. His wrinkled face was covered with blood and he was a bit dizzy.

At this time, a true essence sound transmission from the black-caped Goliath sounded in Blackrat's ear. "Boss, are you okay?"

“Shit, that boy’s strength is too freakish. Even a Feral on the same level is just trash in front of him.” Blackrat angrily replied with a true essence sound transmission.

Lin Ming was indeed the strongest of those he had fought. A mere early Xiantian realm boy had easily swept him away with a spear. If Blackrat hadn’t used demon essence to protect his wrist, then that single strike would have broken his hand already.

“That boy… was he injured? Although my saber strike was sent back, my Shattered Soul Domain entered into his spiritual sea. Even a human Revolving Core powerhouse would have suffered some soul damage!” Blackrat asked the black-caped Goliath as he glared at Lin Ming. When he was sent flying away by the spear, he hadn’t noticed anything. But now that he looked at Lin Ming standing there motionless, he couldn’t tell what sort of damage he managed to do.

“He must excel in defense against soul attacks. I don’t see that he’s injured…” The black-caped Goliath muttered. After Lin Ming had struck Blackrat, he stood there onstage not moving at all. There was no vacant or stressed light in his eyes either

Blackrat had truly kicked himself in the foot this time!

Blackrat complained in his heart. If you stood at the riverside too long, your shoes were bound to get wet. Blackrat kept picking newcomers to challenge, and on this day he finally fell into this situation. But, if he didn’t choose newcomers it would have been impossible to reach a 20 match winning streak. He would have long since been ruined by others.

In the end, within Skysplit Tower, people spoke with their strength.

Here, strength was everything.

Lin Ming grasped the Purple Comet Spear and walked forwards.

As he took his first step, everyone in the audience sucked in a cold breath. This steady and robust step proved that there was not a single problem with Lin Ming.

Blackrat wasn't considered too strong in the second floor, but that didn't mean he was easy to handle. There were many veterans here who didn't dare to withstand Blackrat's soul attack straight on. But Lin Ming had done so in such manner, it was just too abnormal.

Blackrat grimaced. The fight had already reached the supernova stage. There was no way he could afford to lose here. Once he lost, his 20 win streak would end. Not only would he not gain slaughter points but he would also lose most of the infernal energy that he had struggled to save over the last three years.

This was not a setback he could bear!

"Boy, you've forced me to do this!" Blackrat's face flashed with a fierce light, and all the skin folds of his wrinkled face twisted together.

"Soul combustion - spiritual sea… open to the limit!"

Blackrat shouted. Between his eyes, a dark crack appeared. This crack shined with a black light; it was like a third eye.

"Blackrat combusted his soul. It looks like he's planning to go all out."

Soul combustion was a technique unique to soul attack martial artists, and its cost was much greater than the combustion of blood essence. When one burned blood essence, they could pay a great price to restore it with various methods. But, if one burnt their soul, it was far more difficult to recover from; it would create a permanent loss in their soul force. The only way to recover from this was if one had top soul regenerating medicines. But, these precious medicines were not any less rare than something like the Nirvana Dragon Root.

After combusting part of his soul force, Blackrat's aura began to rise. His appearance changed. His wrinkled face became extremely grotesque, and two fangs gleamed at the corners of his mouth. His eyes turned bloodshot. He looked no different from a rabid animal.

"Soul Storm!"

Blackrat crazily shouted into the skies. A terrifying vortex of soul force energy formed into a storm. All of the nearby martial artists couldn't help but retreat, lest they were caught up in the attack. After all, it was no joke if their soul was injured.

"What an impressive Soul Storm."

"Even the shockwaves are terrifying. This feeling reminds me of when I was still a mortal. It's as if I was standing in the midst of a winter snowstorm without clothes."

There were many people that thought Blackrat was weak. But as they saw this tyrannical soul attack, all of them paled. They couldn't help but wonder: if they stood onstage facing this Soul Storm, could they withstand it?

The possibilities send chills down their spines.

Rumble rumble rumble!

A great purple storm bore down on Lin Ming like a savage beast. Keening howls and shrill shrieks were mixed within; it was like the entire martial arena had turned into an Ashura hell!

Lin Ming's figure was enveloped in this storm, completely disappearing.

Blackrat wielded his two curved short sabers and rushed forwards. Behind him, a massive demonic shadow appeared. This shadow had bright red eyes, two cruel fangs, and sharp rows of shining teeth.

But as he was halfway to Lin Ming, the Soul Storm suddenly parted in half. A purple light shot forth like a meteor as it tore through the void, directly cutting towards Blackrat!

After burning away his soul, Blackrat no longer had the ability to dodge. His body suddenly shook!

Pu!

A bloody hole appeared on Blackrat's forehead. This purple light had easily pierced through his head!

However, the aftermath of the Soul Storm that Blackrat had sent out crashed into Lin Ming. But as it struck him, it passed over him like a gentle spring breeze without the slightest impact.

Match, end.

Crash!

Blackrat slumped to the ground, a large stream of blood flowing out of his forehead.

"Lin Ming, victory!"

The referee declared after a brief pause. The audience was stunned silent.

Blackrat had been killed by a single move from Lin Ming. This wasn't surprising. After all, Blackrat's defensive capabilities and close range combat skills were exceedingly weak.

But what they couldn't imagine was just how that terrifying Soul Storm that Blackrat had released hadn't injured Lin Ming. Did this fellow not have a soul? Or was he completely immune to soul attacks?

"Could it be that this boy has some sort of special physique? The Imps' physical strength and body are weaker than the Giant Demons'. In terms of Laws and compatibility with concepts, they are far inferior to the Fey. Even their perception is inferior to humans'. But in terms of soul force, they are second to none within the entire Holy Demon Continent. This Blackrat also specially studied soul attacks, so how could this be the result?"

"Don't look down on him. This fellow, even if we put aside his freakish soul defense, still has the strength of a four-winged Heavenly Demon. No wonder he dared to accept Blackrat's challenge. Blackrat has accumulated a great deal of infernal energy these past three years. This boy has gained a great deal.

As the surrounding martial artists talked amongst themselves, a great portion of the infernal energy within Blackrat had turned into a warm flow of heat that submerged into Lin Ming.

Ho!

From his head to his toes, the infernal energy flooded Lin Ming's body. This infernal energy was twice as much as before and several times more concentrated. Although Lin Ming had a naturally calm disposition, the flush of infernal energy still stirred his impulsive thoughts. It was like the countless unbidden desires in his heart were being rapidly inflated.

"What a rich infernal energy!"

After Lin Ming absorbed the infernal energy he looked at the Heavenly Demon Tattoo on his arm. He saw that the first pair of wings became fully formed, and there was even a vague outline of the second pair. If he could obtain the same amount of infernal energy again, then the second pair of wings would truly manifest. At this time, Lin Ming would be a genuine four-winged Heavenly Demon.

"With this infernal energy, I can practice the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' with double the result and half the effort."

Lin Ming took a deep breath and calmed his restless mind. He flicked his fingers, and a bloody fog exploded from Blackrat's corpse. It slowly turned into a Blood Drinking Seal before flying into Lin Ming's hand.

Even Blackrat's spatial ring was taken by Lin Ming. Lin Ming was quite looking forwards to Blackrat's spatial ring; he was very curious about the secret soul cultivation skills that the Imp race practiced.

"He even used the blood essence of the dead to form a blood seal. This boy's cultivation method is ruthless enough."

“He and that Fey Lan Xing are both the rising stars of today’s martial arena. Both are newcomers, both have extremely high talent, and both have the strength of a four-winged Heavenly Demon. But, Lin Ming is a tad stronger. Lan Xing secluded himself into training for a year after entering the second floor before he had his strength, but Lin Ming hadn’t even practiced at all before reaching here! That is even more terrifying!”

……………

“Lin Ming is stronger than me? Hehe, how interesting!” After Lan Xing obtained his three win streak, he didn’t leave the martial arena. Instead, he stayed to watch Lin Ming’s fight. He hadn’t been optimistic about Lin Ming’s odds. He thought that Lin Ming would perish under Blackrat’s hand, but he didn’t think this would be the outcome.

“They put me on par with Lin Ming. They thought that I took a year off once I reached the second level before I was able to reach Lin Ming’s level. Humph, those fools never realized that I already had the strength of a four-winged Heavenly Demon a year ago. If this is the case, then isn’t my one year of training just a waste?”

Lan Xing’s lips curled and his eyes shined with fighting spirit.

He had decided. He would fight with Lin Ming

But now, Lin Ming had just finished a fight. It didn’t matter how small his true essence loss was. Lan Xing wanted to defeat Lin Ming under completely fair conditions, so that no one would be able to come up with excuses.

“My Fey race’s Fey Emperors have all stepped on the bones of countless geniuses in order to ascend the throne of the Emperor. I, Lan Xing, will also become a Fey Emperor in the future. Lin Ming, you will be one of my stepping stones!”

Lan Xing was genius from a high fifth-grade Fey sect. Normally speaking, a top fifth-grade sect was a Holy Land. A high fifth-grade sect was just a step away from reaching that point. As long as an Emperor level powerhouse appeared in that sect, the sect would be able to take that final step and complete the transformation.

Lan Xing's goal was to become a Peerless Emperor. So, he set foot by himself to journey the world and gain experience. His ambitions would not remain low. He would become the reason that his sect would become a Holy Land...

Chapter 539 – Three Straight Wins

Chapter 539 – Three Straight Wins

…

…

…

“Will anyone else challenge Lin Ming?”

As Lin Ming stood atop the arena stage, the black-clothed referee loudly asked this question.

The reaction below the stage wasn’t very energetic. In Lin Ming’s battle against Blackrat, his strength had shot up to the level of a four-winged Heavenly Demon. Not just that, but many present were puzzled as to the strange immunity that Lin Ming seemed to have to soul attacks. Relative to Lin Ming’s strength, he had a very small amount of infernal energy, just a tad more than a normal two-winged Heavenly Demon would have. To the other masters in the audience, this degree of infernal energy was nothing at all.

No one knew whether Lin Ming had hidden strengths or not. If they fought with Lin Ming, even if they won they would still be forced to reveal many of their cards. If they exposed their trump cards to others, then that just did more harm than good. The small amount of infernal energy they would obtain was not worth it.

So, many of the masters present lacked interest in Lin Ming.

“Golden Light Sect’s Xu Feng wishes to fight!”

A thin voice sounded out, and a small man leapt onstage.

This man was actually human martial artist. He looked around 20 some years old. The Heavenly Demon Tattoo on his arm only had two wings, and it was also a bit blurry.

Lin Ming was startled. This was the first time in Skysplit Tower that he would fight a human martial artist.

“You aren’t my match.” Lin Ming quickly glanced over Xu Feng’s cultivation. With the imposing aura that this man released, Lin Ming was quickly able to determine the limit of his strength.

He was probably equal to a mighty half-step Revolving Core martial artist. This strength, relative to Xu Feng’s age, would have been extremely stunning within the South Horizon Region. His talent was comparable to that of the Five Element Region’s Zhan Yunjian, Sunfire Princess, and the other geniuses there. But in Skysplit Tower, this was very, very ordinary.

“I know.” Xu Feng indifferently said. “I come from a bottom tier fourth-grade sect. I could not find anyone in my sect at my age that could match me, thus I traveled the world hoping to find powerhouses and experience their skill. I want to understand the gap that exists between us. Today, I saw Brother Ling’s battle and now I have gained a deep admiration of Brother Lin’s skills. I hope that I can see the disparity that exists between us. But let me say this first, I am very, very poor. There isn’t much of value on my body, so I hope that Brother Lin will be a bit gentle with me.”

Xu Feng embarrassedly smiled and flashed the ring on his finger. It was a very ordinary low-grade earth-step spatial ring.

As Lin Ming heard Xu Feng’s words, he was dumbfounded for a moment before he burst out laughing. It was true. Xu Feng saw that Lin Ming was also a human martial artist and was hoping that if they fought, then Lin Ming would not be as ruthless. This was the only reason that he dared to step onstage. Indeed, someone like Xu Feng would find it difficult to stay on the second floor of Skysplit Tower. Those like him did not seek victory. For them, fighting onstage even once was an extremely rare and precious experience.

Lin Ming sighed. As the chief disciple of a fourth-grade sect, Xu Feng was invincible among his peers there, but after arriving at Skysplit Tower he was not much at all. The disparity was simply too great.

Then in the far off future, if Lin Ming himself ever flew up into the Realm of the Gods, would he himself be in a similar situation?

If he ever became an all-powerful earth-shaking existence within the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent, would he have to be careful within the Realm of the Gods, and tread lightly there?

Thinking of this, Lin Ming felt an enormous pressure. He had never been complacent about his own strength before. This was because he had seen the terrifying worlds inside of the Magic Cube, and he knew that the whole of the Sky Spill Continent was nothing more than a drop in the ocean.

“Match, start!”

The referee loudly announced.

“Sword Wind Void!” Xu Feng shouted. He made the first move, thrusting his sword towards Lin Ming’s chest.

Lin Ming took a single step back. The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder flashed on the edge of the Purple Comet Spear, and he easily deflected Xu Feng’s sword.

“Sword Light Across the World!

“Sword Shattering Clear Sky!”

Xu Feng displayed one sword move after another. His sword was extremely fast. All of his moves flowed as one without a single flaw. A weaker person would have found this shining sword light impossible to block. However, Lin Ming only used a single spear thrust to counter this. Although it seemed slow, it contained an inherent might as steady and implacable as a mountain. As Xu Feng's sword light thrust into this, it was like a spring breeze blowing against a hill; it was unable to cause a single change.

Ka!

Xu Feng managed to avoid the spear light of Lin Ming's attack, but the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder scraped past his side. Blood bloomed on his body, and he drew back several steps.

As Xu Feng's balance was unsteady, Lin Ming stepped forwards. The Purple Comet Spear seemed to pass through space itself as it flashed in front of Xu Feng, straight towards his throat.

A freezing air emanated from the spear tip. Xu Feng felt a cold chill crawl up his spine. In that instant, he thought that he had died.

"I've lost."

Xu Feng knew that Lin Ming had stayed his hand, because his strength didn't match what he had shown in his battle with Blackrat. Lin Ming's truly formidable strength lay in his powerful killing moves. This sort of spear technique was just child's play.

"Well fought." Lin Ming said as he cupped his fists together.

"After I grow stronger, I will return to request a match from you." Xu Feng said before he leapt off the stage. However, the infernal energy in his body remained onstage, slowly converging into Lin Ming's body.

It didn't matter whether one killed their opponent or not. As long as someone was defeated, the winner would obtain over half of the loser's infernal energy.

It was just that Xu Feng's infernal energy, relative to Blackrat's, couldn't be considered much at all.

After Xu Feng was defeated, the referee asked if anyone else wished to continue challenging Lin Ming. Then, another human martial artist stepped onstage.

This was the third match.

“This is meaningless!”

In a corner of the arena, Lan Xing shook his head and turned around to leave. He had originally stayed in order to see just what other cards Lin Ming might have, and whether or not someone could force him to use more of his strength. However, the match he just saw could only be described as disappointing. It seemed as if there wasn’t a master that would step up today.

“That’s fine. I’ll wait until my battle with you and then I will personally test what sort of strength you have hidden. I hope that you won’t disappoint me.”

As Lan Xing thought out loud, his lips curved up in a smile. Contrasted with his beautiful face, it was an enchantingly haunting look.

………………

“Lin Ming wins! Three win streak! In his Lin Ming’s first appearance he obtains a three win streak! There have been two newcomers who have managed to obtain a three win streak in their first battle. What a surprising result!” The black-clothed referee said after Lin Ming defeated his third opponent.

It wasn’t common for a newcomer to obtain a three win streak, and especially rare for two to appear in a single day.

“Will you continue?” The referee asked Lin Ming.

“No.” Lin Ming shook his head. Increasing one’s strength was a slow process of accumulation. Lin Ming wasn’t worried. He was planning on staying at Skysplit Tower for a long time. After every battle, he would need time to comprehend and digest what he learned.

Lin Ming stepped out from the battlefield and found the young Fey girl who had originally brought him there. He said, “Please take me to a practice area in Skysplit Tower.”

“Oh… good… okay…” The young Fey girl was startled for a moment before she quickly nodded.

Skysplit Tower itself was thousands upon thousands of feet high. Every separate layer was hundreds of feet, and the interior was divided into many smaller, complex structures. There were countless buildings within.

The young Fey girl brought Lin Ming on a long path. They passed through several floors, and finally they came to a practice area.

When the young Fey girl pushed open the thick wooden door, Lin Ming was surprised as he saw what was within.

Behind this wooden door was a vast, deep abyss. The abyss was cylindrical, and it was over 10 miles in diameter. The abyss was completely surrounded by walls of jet black rock. The walls were smooth, and one could even see that the black rock walls were divided by thin lines. As one looked out from afar, this abyss looked like a crisscrossed honeycomb.

Lin Ming was at one of these doors. His position was at the middle of this abyss.

As he looked upwards, he could see the abyss extended thousands of feet high. The infernal energy was rich at the top, and the air was hazy.

As he looked downwards, his eyes became lost in a dark and endless abyss. He couldn’t tell what was down there, but he could feel an infinitely rich and incomparably thick infernal energy drafting up from down below. The chilling cold winds that blew up felt as if they could freeze the soul. It was like this pitch black abyss was an entrance to the 18 layers of hell.

“The practice area was built in this place.” Lin Ming finally understood. This massive circular abyss must pass through the entire Skysplit Tower. One could imagine this abyss as a titanic pipe in Skysplit Tower. And guessing from how deep it went, this abyss was located square in the center of the towering cliff that Polaris City was located atop.

The young Fey girl already expected that Lin Ming would be surprised. She faintly smiled and then thoughtfully explained, "This abyss is the source of infernal energy. The infernal energy within Polaris City gushes out from tens of thousands of feet deep within the land. The deeper you go, the richer the infernal energy is. Thus, the deeper the practice area is, the higher the charge."

"But, the martial artists of Skysplit Tower's second floor can at most travel down to a depth of 10,000 feet. Any further and they would die. I would like to remind Sir Lin that even though this abyss looks extremely spacious and empty, the truth is that there are all sorts of traps and secrets formed by array formations and spells. Also, flying is prohibited here. If you want to leave this area and go practice somewhere else then you cannot travel through the abyss. You must go through the paths of Skysplit Tower, otherwise you will encounter an accident."

The young Fey girl winked, her bright and beautiful eyes shining.

One could not travel through the abyss, and there were also a variety of spells and array formations. Then, the security of these practice areas should have some guarantee to them. It wasn't like the martial artist service lodge where he had been spied on without his knowledge. Just this point alone caused Lin Ming's heart to move; there were simply too many secrets on his body.

"Sir Lin, over there is a registration office for the second floor practice areas. If Sir Lin must stay here, then please register at the registration office." The young Fey girl closed the thick wooden door to the abyss, and respectfully pointed to a room not too far away.

Lin Ming looked at the registration office. It was a simply and crude stone building. The exterior was plain, and there was only a single plaque that hung up above the entrance. There were two words written in ink by a strong and steady hand. It said, 'Martial Pavilion'.

As Lin Ming pushed open the doors and entered, he paused. The Martial Pavilion was only a small space. A gray-skinned middle aged man sat behind a table in this room. But, in front of him was a beautifully handsome Fey man. This Fey man was Lan Xing.

As Lin Ming walked in, Lan Xing only shot him a glance before turning away again.

“The first practice area, I would like to open a room there for another year.”

“Mm. Then it will be one slaughter point and 500 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals.”

As Lin Ming heard the words ‘500 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals’, he sucked in a deep breath, This practice area was really not a normal kind of expensive! It had to be said that when he killed Blackrat, the spatial ring he received had less than 2000 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals.

This amount was only enough for three years of practice time.

“Great!” Lan Xing invigoratingly took out a small box of Blood Demon Crystals from his spatial ring. He glanced back at Lin Ming, a faint smile on his lips.

Chapter 540 – Top Grade Practice Area

Chapter 540 – Top Grade Practice Area

…

…

…

When Lan Xing looked at Lin Ming, although there wasn't any hostility, there was a slight hint of haughty superiority.

The middle-aged man opened up the small box. It was stacked to the brim with medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals. The light of the crystals was very pressing on the eye.

As the young Fey girl beside Lin Ming saw this scene, her beautiful large eyes shined. Her own cultivation wasn't too high, so this box of pure Blood Demon Crystals left a really large impact on her.

"500 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals, no more and no less." The middle aged man nodded, satisfied.

Lan Xing said, "Administration deacon, I would also like to trade in a few new battle array discs."

As Lan Xing spoke, he took out four or five array discs from his spatial ring. Lin Ming had seen Blackrat use these array discs before. These were phantom array discs. They could display light images on top and also record scenes.

The middle-aged man glanced over these array discs and said, "Five array discs, 500 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals."

"Okay!"

Lan Xing took out another small box that was filled with medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals. Now he had spent a total of 1000 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals.

The young Fey girl gulped. These past years she had experienced a number of fantastic scenes. But, she still couldn't help but be dazed in wonder at such a large transaction.

"What is that battle array disc?" Lin Ming couldn't help but ask. A battle array disc cost 100 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals and it was only a rental? What was recorded in that array disc that could be so valuable?

The young Fey girl said, "This is a recording of masters fighting. There are battles between Demon Generals and Fey Generals, there are battles between Demon Kings and Fey Kings, and there are even battles between Demon Emperors and Fey Emperors. This is the wealth of Skysplit Tower, so fees are collected to view them."

"Fights of Demon Emperors?" Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. Until now, although he had frequently heard of Demon Emperors, Fey Emperors, and all sorts of Divine Sea Supreme Elders, he still hadn't actually seen these honorable figures before. To him, these characters were legendary existences. What sort of scene would a battle between Demon Emperors be like? Lin Ming was truly looking forwards to this.

"Are there authority requirements to watch the Demon Emperor battle scenes?"

"Mm…not just that, but it requires slaughter points. I'm not too sure of the exact price and authority requirements, but Lan Xing should be wanting to see battles of four-star Fey Kings and above."

A four-star to six-star Fey King was equal to a human Life Destruction powerhouse.

Normally speaking, a human single stage Life Destruction powerhouse was much weaker than a four-star Fey King. But, there were many stages of human Life Destruction. Could every single layer after layer after layer still be weaker than a four-star Fey King? What about a master at five to six stages of Life Destruction?

And what's more, once a master crossed seven or eight stages of Life Destruction, this sort of monstrous genius' strength would have already reached that of a Divine Sea Supreme Elder. To them, defeating a six-star Fey King would be simple.

"Four-star to six-star Fey King battles cost 100 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals to rent one time. This price is expensive enough!"

In summary, a four to five-star Fey King, was also Xuan Wuji's level.

"This is Skysplit Tower, everything here is expensive. All of the food and water here is transported from other lands by Xiantian martial artists with spatial rings. Not just that, but there are many heroic youths here. Not a single one of them can be considered poor, and all of them have great wealth. Where there is a great deal of wealth, prices of resources will naturally rise." The young Fey girl said with an obvious look.

In Skysplit Tower, even mortals would have Blood Demon Crystals on them. After all, as long as one encountered a swanky martial artist and served them well, gaining some rewards would also be normal.

Lan Xing examined these five new battle array discs and placed them in his spatial ring after a nod of satisfaction. His eyes floated onto Lin Ming. He casually glanced at him and said, "I'm quite interested in fighting with you. I hope that in the upcoming days you will appear in the arena, and not try to avoid fighting."

Lan Xing's declaration of war wasn't out of Lin Ming's expectations. He had noticed that Lan Xing's eyes filled with thick fighting intent whenever he saw him. It was just that this Fey youth's imperious tone made him feel a bit unhappy.

"Whether I enter the arena or not will all be my own choice. I will not deliberately avoid anyone, but even if I did, it wouldn't be the likes of you. If you wish to challenge me in the arena, then I will welcome you anytime.” Lin Ming indifferently said as he straightened his sleeves.

“Ho! Those are some pretty confident words. You should hurry up and choose your practice area. I also want to advise you not to rent a place for too long, otherwise you might find that you’ll have wasted all that extra time.”

“Oh? So you want this to be a battle to the death?”

“Swords are blind. In a battle with life and death on the line, death is par for the course.”

The words exchanged between the two were edged and barbed. At this time, the administration deacon impatiently said, “If you two want to get all spicy with each other then you can go to the arena. This building is for registration of practice areas. If you want to register then do so now. If you don’t then go outside.”

The middle-aged man angrily waved his hand.

“I will register.”

Lin Ming calmly walked in front of the deacon’s desk and handed over his pass. His information was listed within it.

The administration deacon looked over Lin Ming’s pass and wrote down some numbers on a piece of paper. He lackadaisically said, “The practice areas of the second floor are separated into five grades. The lowest is the fourth-grade. This area requires 20 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals per year. The third-grade takes 80 Blood Demon Crystals, the second-grade takes 200 Blood Demon Crystals, and the first-grade takes 500 Blood Demon Crystals as well as a single slaughter point…”

The practice area Lan Xing had chosen a moment ago was a first-grade practice area. It required 500 Blood Demon Crystals as well as a single slaughter point every year.

“You said the practice areas are divided into five grades. There is also a top-grade area?” Lin Ming asked after he mulled over it.

“Yes, but... there are only two top-grade practice areas on the entire second floor. It requires 200 Blood Demon Crystals every 10 days as well as a slaughter point.

The administration deacon glared at Lin Ming, a bit impatient. This top-grade practice area was empty most of the time. After all, the fees were simply too high. He would normally introduce it to famous individuals; otherwise, he wouldn’t bother at all.

For one year in this top-grade practice area, it would cost 7200 Blood Demon Crystals and 36 slaughter points. There was simply no one who would pay such an extravagant price. When they did, they would rent for 10 days. Even so, there were still very few people that did. It hurt the heart to have to pay such an extravagant price. It was just like a common poor person that couldn’t afford silk. They would rather take the money and buy ten times the amount of cotton instead.

However, this top-grade practice place was very useful. Cultivating in there for a single day was the same as cultivating in other places for four to five days. Some great figures of the second floor would sometimes pay the price if they were stuck at a bottleneck in their cultivation. They would enter the top-grade practice area for ten days or maybe even twenty, in the hopes that they could make a breakthrough to the next realm.

Lin Ming had heard of the effectiveness of this top-grade practice place before. He thought for a moment and then said, “I’ll rent it for 50 days.”

“50 days?” The administration deacon looked at Lin Ming with bewildered eyes. It had to be known that even the famous figures of the second floor would only rent out a top-grade practice area for 10 or 20 days at a time.

Renting one for 50 days meant it would cost a total of 1000 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals as well as five slaughter points. 1000 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals was already a big deal, but those five slaughter points were especially heartbreaking.

This was because slaughter points were that difficult to earn! Not just that, but slaughter points had too many uses. At auctions and trade fairs, there were many precious and rare things that required slaughter points to buy. Even a top rank powerhouse would be frugal with their slaughter points.

“Are you sure?”

“I’m sure.” Lin Ming nodded. The truth was that he had planned on staying on Skysplit Tower’s second floor for 50 days or so. Afterwards, he planned on attacking the third floor. That was where Lin Ming might stay for a few more years.

Hearing Lin Ming’s assured tone, the administration deacon clearly warmed up to Lin Ming’s cavalier attitude. If he could rent out this top-grade practice area for 50 whole days, then as the steward of the area, he too would have some benefits. “50 days, great! I’ll register you!”

The administration deacon had completely wiped away his previously languid manner. He flourished his pen and began to write with great strokes.

As for that young Fey girl who had come with Lin Ming, she was feeling ill.

1000 medium-grade blood Demon Crystals and five slaughter points for a mere 50 days of rent…

Even if one’s practice efficiency was five times higher, so what? That was equal to 250 days at a first-grade practice area. To save a mere 200 days… the cost was unbelievable!

This was simply a waste, an absolutely self-destructive waste.

Lin Ming naturally knew what function slaughter points had. But, he didn’t lack when it came to treasures, pills, or cultivation methods, so he had no need to go to a trade fair or an auction. Secondly, he had complete confidence that he would be able to earn more slaughter points a short time later. As a result, he happily spent as many slaughter points as he needed to.

As for those 1000 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals, they meant nothing to him. He never cared too much for something as vague as wealth to begin with. As for practice, he only used high-grade Blood Demon Crystals. Medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals were for spending.

Lin Ming took out two boxes that held a total of 1000 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals. These were the wealth that Blackrat had left behind after his death.

Lan Xing grimaced at the side.

This boy!

He was actually showing off his wealth in front of him?

Lan Xing was naturally proud. He felt uncomfortable that there was someone trying to push him down. He already thought that his own spending was lavish, but as he watched Lin Ming in front of him, even he felt pained by his actions. He didn't care much about Blood Demon Crystals, but slaughter points were a completely different matter.

'This fool, he'll rue the day he indiscriminately wasted so many slaughter points!'

Lan Xing darkly thought in his heart.

"Young Hero, would you like to rent some battle array discs?" The administration deacon's voice was filled with hospitality. If he managed to rent out a high-level battle array disc, then he would also have some benefits from that.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment before slowly asked, "Do I have the authority to rent out an array disc of Emperor level masters?"

"This… no, it's not possible. Also, the second floor does not have any. The highest recorded battles we have here are battle array discs with quasi Emperors. They cost 1000 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals and a slaughter point for one month of rental time.

A quasi Emperor was the realm between a six-star Demon King and Demon Emperor. It was equal to a fifth or sixth stage Life Destruction Supreme Elder, and was at a much higher level than Xuan Wuji.

“Mm. Then I’ll take one.” Lin Ming had just obtained a Glory Emblem, so he had a two-star authority now. As for Blood Demon Crystals and slaughter points, he didn’t care too much about that. Once he entered the third floor, it would naturally be much easier to obtain slaughter points than on the second.

As the young Fey girl heard the tone of this conversation that was like Lin Ming was buying cabbage from a street market, she was stunned speechless.

As for Lan Xing, his eyes flashed and he sneered, “In order to push me down, you still do such pathetic things? Is your head really that swollen? You really are childish. As far as I know, you don’t have any more slaughter points than I do, and yet you’re wasting them like this to get to me. You are such a stupid idiot!”

Chapter 541 – Enlightenment Once More

Chapter 541 – Enlightenment Once More

…

…

…

Lan Xing finished his rant, and without any intention of staying at this place any longer, turned around and stomped out.

Lin Ming didn't think that Lan Xing would have such an explosive reaction. As he watched Lan Xing stride away, Lin Ming shook his head and said, "How ridiculous."

He calmly took out another box of Blood Demon Crystals and set it on the table. "There are 1000 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals here, you can count them."

"Mm, alright." The administration deacon happily smiled and swept over the box with his divine sense. Then, he kindly placed it away. The more this type of guest came back, the greater his profits would be.

"Do you need any other battle array discs?" The administration deacon enthusiastically asked.

Lin Ming thought about it for a moment. He said, "I'll take three battle array discs with three-star Fey Kings and Demon Kings. I don't need any others."

Lin Ming's interest in Life Destruction level powerhouses was much lower than his interest in Emperor level characters. But, it was also helpful if he understood the different sorts of combat techniques of the Fey and Giant Demon races.

“Alright. That will be a total of 600 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals.”

So far, Lin Ming had already used up all the medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals that he obtained from Blackrat. But if he combined the Blood Demon Crystals of Zha Na and Gu Yue, then he had more than enough.

Lin Ming received the key to the practice area as well as seven array discs. He turned to the young Fey girl and said, “Miss, please take me to the practice area.”

“Okay, great!” The young Fey girl’s eyes filled with eager passion as she looked at Lin Ming. It was rare for anyone to see such a rich master. And even if she did, it might not even be her turn to serve him. That Lan Xing was already extremely opulent.

The space within Skysplit Tower was immense. Since Lin Ming’s practice area was thousands of feet deep, it was an extremely long walk. Along the entire way the young Fey girl endlessly chattered about the going-ons of Skysplit Tower, whether that information was useful or useless. She even completely informed Lin Ming about everything she knew about the powerhouses of the second level.

The more the young Fey girl spoke, the closer she approached to Lin Ming. Finally, she was close enough that she was nearly hanging off Lin Ming. Her curvaceous and luscious body melted onto his, and she constantly traced his arms.

Lin Ming ignored the girl’s advances several times, but this young Fey girl was abnormally blind in her flirting. Lin Ming finally grew impatient. A cold light flashed in his eyes and infernal energy emitted from his body. The young Fey girl shook and scurried away, her eyes filling with fear and worry.

Within Skysplit Tower, as the lowest level of all martial artists, the young Fey girl was considered slightly better than a senior slave. Those like her could not even dare to provoke the challengers, which was why the young Fey girl was so terrified.

As Lin Ming saw this, he couldn’t help but think of little Qing He. As he thought about the fate of these pitiful slaves, his heart softened. He said, “Continue speaking. This is for you.”

As Lin Ming spoke, he tossed over a small bag of Blood Demon Crystals.

The young Fey girl hesitated for a moment. Then, she bit her lips and slowly took the bag. As she weighed it in her hand, she feared that there were more than a dozen Blood Demon Crystals inside.

The young Fey girl continued to warily inform Lin Ming on the situation at Skysplit Tower, but this time she didn't dare to approach Lin Ming even a bit.

As the two reached the practice area, they opened the door, and within was a single transmission array.

The young Fey girl said, "Young Hero Lin, I can only bring you here. You can use the key to activate the transmission array. Then, you can enter your room. The room has layers upon layers of spells and array formations covering it; you do not need to worry that others will spy on you, so please rest assured."

"Good." Lin Ming nodded. He placed his key into the array formation, and with a white flash of light, he was suddenly in a dark room.

As he entered this room, the first feeling he felt was cold. There was extreme chilling energy here that made him feel incredibly creeped out.

The room was filled with a layer of misty black fog that wafted around. This was a rich infernal energy that had condensed into essence.

"To think that the infernal energy in this room is rich to this degree. If a lower level martial artist were to come here, they would lose their mind. Even a Xiantian realm powerhouse would find their heart affected if they stayed here for too long!"

The room was only 30 feet by 30 feet. There was a bed made from black rock and the only thing on it was a hard pillow. There weren't even any bedsheets; it was extremely depressing to see.

If an average person had to live in this environment for an entire month, they would probably descend into madness.

However, this couldn’t be considered much to Lin Ming. A martial artist’s seclusion was originally a lonely and devout path.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and then sat down on the bed. He pulled out the quasi Emperor battle array disc that recorded their battle.

He placed a Blood Demon Crystal in the array disc, and a series of phantom illusions beamed into the air.

Above the boundless jet black sea, the waves rolled and storms surged in the air. Two silhouettes were suspended high above the sea.

One wore a black cloak, and he held a long spear in his hand. This man was a Giant Demon.

As for his opponent, she was an ice cold beauty. She wore a black veil, and her two pointed ears peeked out from the sides. Her inky hair fell down like a waterfall, and shiny scales glimmered at the edges of her eyes. She was a Fey beauty.

“Two great quasi Emperor masters!”

Although Lin Ming couldn’t see their cultivation in these phantom images, for some unknown reason, he actually felt somewhat scared. This was a fear that swelled up from the depths of his being!

“A mere illusion can still retain such an aura, what would happen if it was the real person? This is also only at the quasi Emperor level. If it was the true Emperor level, a Divine Sea Supreme Elder that had crossed Life Destruction seven or eight times, then what would that be like?”

As Lin Ming thought out loud, he felt his blood boil with passion.

Woosh!

The Giant Demon was the first to make a move. He stabbed his spear out at the icy Fey beauty. The fierce combat had begun!

With Lin Ming's eyes, he was completely unable to track the movement of the battle. He could only see the sea's waves crash in massive tides, and the sky permeated with intense demonic essence. Sword and spear energies cut through the heavens and earth, and dark clouds roiled in the skies.

The space was disturbed. Visible ripples radiated out in the sky. From high above, it was like black flowers blooming in the air.

"Mm? This is..."

As Lin Ming glanced at the sea, he saw that the ripples had created a small vortex in the water. A massive amount of seawater was being swallowed up into this vortex and completely disappearing.

Was this... a space crack?

When Lin Ming had journeyed through the broken world, that entire world had decayed into fragments. That broken world had been flooded by a massive amount of seawater that came from the South Sea, and Lin Ming had also seen a number of similar vortexes there. If a martial artist ran into them, they would be directly ripped in half!

These space cracks hadn't been here before the two quasi Emperor level masters battled. If he wasn't wrong, then these space cracks were the result of intense true essence shockwaves and energy vortexes that tore apart space.

"Just a fight between quasi Emperor level masters can create tears in space? What would happen in a battle between Emperor level masters?"

Lin Ming exclaimed out. Over time, he found that these small vortexes in the ocean slowly shrunk until they finally disappeared.

“Torn space cracks in a fight of quasi Emperors are only temporary. It seems like stable space has the ability to independently regenerate, unless it was like the disintegrating broken world in which the Demon God Imperial Palace was located. Otherwise, it wouldn’t have been so easy for those Life Destruction Supreme Elders to create a space channel.”

Lin Ming fully concentrated on the fight again, watching it over and over. No matter how many times he saw it, his current eye speed wasn’t able to keep up with the speed of the two quasi Emperors’ moves. However, these moves and martial skills weren’t important to Lin Ming; what he wanted to experience were the Concepts and Laws!

“The quasi Emperor Giant Demon’s Concept seems to contain a desperate and frenetic strength. Just from looking at his spear moves, it feels like my own soul is breaking apart… maybe… is this the Concept of Annihilation?”

Lin Ming was secretly surprised. These were just phantoms from a recording, and yet there was such a preeminent aura. If he was actually watching them fight, then he didn’t know what sort of situation he would be in. This Concept of Annihilation was too terrifying. From just a glance, a martial artist with an infirm will would have their very souls destroyed.

“The Fey woman seems to be using the Concept of Water and the Concept of Wind. Her moves are too fast; they leave one feeling as if space and time are in upheaval. I fear that her moves also contain the Concept of Time and the Concept of Space. The Fey are truly beloved by the natural Laws. This Fey woman understands too many Concepts. And, what is most terrifying Is that her mastery of these Concepts has reached a degree where she can freely use them and fuse them into her attacks. This is simply unbelievable!”

This battle did not have an end. As the phantoms reached the white hot stage, they finally vanished, without showing who won or lost. Lin Ming thought this was a pity, but he had still gained a great deal of benefits from watching this. In particular, that Fey woman. Her understandings of wind, time and space seemed to raise a certain awareness in his heart.

This awareness combined with what Lin Ming had experienced as he traveled through the space channel to the Holy Demon Continent. He had a faint sense as if something was almost within reach, but he still couldn't touch it.

The power of space and time within that space channel echoed within Lin Ming's mind. At this time, time seemed to bend, and even Lin Ming's thoughts seemed to slow down. It was like a film was slowly playing in his mind.

Like this, Lin Ming became lost in thought as he unknowingly entered the ethereal martial intent state.

With the support of the ethereal martial intent, spiritual sense's concentration increased ten times over. Even his breathing seemed to fall into a vague state; there wasn't even a single sense of perception or leftover thought in his body.

A circle of black infernal energy gathered around Lin Ming, forming into a faint black fog. It quietly floated into Lin Ming's body. Without any external guidance, the infernal energy instinctively revolved in a nearly perfect route through Lin Ming.

Lin Ming had unconsciously reentered into a state of enlightenment. As he maintained this state, time seemed to pass by him. Unknown to him, several days passed…

……….

Days later, at the second floor's arena –

"Lan Xing, victory!" The black-clothed referee held up Lan Xing's hand. "This is a seven win streak as well as Lan Xing's seventh victory! If he continues winning and reaches a ten win streak, will these be the first slaughter points that he wins from the second floor? Does anyone else here dare to challenge Lan Xing?"

The black-clothed referee’s voice was filled with crazed passion.

“This Lan Xing is too fierce. I said that he had the strength of a four-winged Heavenly Demon before, but it seems I’ve underestimated him. He might even have the strength of a four-winged back section Heavenly Demon!”

There was an extremely long path from a four-winged Heavenly Demon to a six-winged Heavenly Demon. Thus, as the sixth set of wings of the Heavenly Demon Tattoo was being formed it would be divided into the front section, middle section, and back section.

“It looks like Lan Xing will reach a ten win streak. The masters of the second floor won’t stop him until he reaches that point.”

“Yes, this is what usually happens. It’s rare to be able to raise such a fat sheep. Lan Xing will only be of value to those masters once he earns a ten win streak and some slaughter points.”

Chapter 542 – Another Step Further

Chapter 542 – Another Step Further

…

…

…

The rules of Skysplit Tower stated that one could earn a single slaughter point after reaching a ten win streak. But, this slaughter point could not be immediately used. One had to win again in order to activate this point for use, and if they lost, this slaughter point would be transferred to the victor.

These were the rules of Skysplit Tower.

Thus, the masters of the second floor were like hunters. They specifically focused on martial artists who had reached a ten win streak. If they could defeat this sort of martial artist, they would obtain not only infernal energy but also a slaughter point.

The martial artists that were targeted were often referred to as fat sheep.

A 10 win streak was a hurdle, and a 20 win streak was another hurdle. But, this 20 win streak was a much more difficult and pitiful path, because those that reached this number of victories were more likely to provoke a master.

The last time, when Lan Xing had gone onstage for the first time, the great arena had only held several hundred people. But this time there were thousands of individuals, many of them being masters of the second floor.

These people were all sizing up Lan Xing, estimating his strength in their hearts. This was because to them, Lan Xing was their prey.

Lan Xing sneered in his heart, ‘They really think I am some prey. Humph, when the time comes, let’s see who will become the prey here! The reason that I didn’t step into the martial arena even once after entering the second floor and instead went into seclusion for an entire year was all for you lot!’

As Lan Xing was deep in thought, another martial artist jumped onto the arena stage.

As the eighth match started, Lan Xing grinned. To him, dealing with this person was simple.

……

“Eighth match, Lan Xing is victorious!” The referee announced once more.

“An eight win streak! A newcomer has reached an eight win streak! What an astounding result!” Beneath the stage, all of the martial artists were paying more and more attention to Lan Xing.

“I heard that Lan Xing said he wanted to challenge Lin Ming and decide just who was the strongest newcomer of the two. But where has Lin Ming disappeared to these days?”

“Could he be in closed-door cultivation? Or he might even be hiding from Lan Xing. Lan Xing is truly too strong. He’s shown a strength even greater than when he achieved his three win streak; it wouldn’t be strange if Lin Ming thought he couldn’t defeat him. After all, Lan Xing has already cultivated on the second floor for an entire year.”

“Mm. Although avoiding a battle might muddy your thoughts, it is necessary for a martial artist to know patience every now and then. Especially in Skysplit Tower. All of the impatient ones have already died off.

Within Skysplit Tower, one’s own life came first; avoiding a battle was not disgraceful. On the other hand, rushing headfirst into a battle that one knew they had no chance of winning was an act to be laughed at by everyone.

After the eight win streak, there was a nine win streak!

After achieving three win streaks in the last three days, Lan Xing was only a single win off from 10!

“Today’s three matches are already over. Young Hero Lan, would you like to continue?” The black-clothed referee respectfully asked. No matter where one was, if one had power then one had respect. Not to mention that Lan Xing also had a promising future. In the future, if there wasn’t a problem, he might even become a Fey Emperor. Of course, the basis for this was that he didn’t perish here.

“I’m stopping for today. The one I wanted to fight hasn’t appeared yet. Tomorrow, I hope that my opponent will appear in the arena and not let me down!”

This opponent was naturally Lin Ming. There were many people that greatly wished to see the battle between these two rising star newcomers. However, after Lin Ming had gone into seclusion, everyone had lost sight of him. It was as if he had simply disappeared.

“Lan Xing’s words are the same as a direct challenge!”

“Humph, challenging someone is also useless. If Lin Ming could arrive at this point, he’s not an idiot. If I were Lin Ming, then I wouldn’t come out. What would Lan Xing do to me? Rather, I’m looking forwards to Lan Xing’s 11th match tomorrow. I wonder which master will make their move, and whether or not Lan Xing will be able to keep his slaughter points.”

“Mm. I’m also looking forward to this. There will definitely be a great number of people coming here tomorrow, and there might be many masters appearing.”

....

The abyssal practice area. In the flash of an eye, four days had passed.

Lin Ming sat motionless on the bed like a sculpted statue. A rich infernal energy covered his body, layering onto him like a thick cocoon.

Within Lin Ming's mind, various chaotic pictures were alternatingly appearing. The journey through time and space, the memories of 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void', the Concepts of Space and Time within the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art', and more.

These images were becoming increasingly clear within Lin Ming's mind. After some time, Lin Ming felt as if something suddenly appeared in his heart. A great energy swelled forth from his dantian, spreading through his meridians.

If he couldn't give vent to this energy, then he would go mad!

Lin Ming took out the Purple Comet Spear from his spatial ring. A single spear thrust out, and the Purple Comet Spear seemed to escape into the void, disappearing without a trace.

Peng!

The spear struck the protective arrays of the practice area. The entire array formation shook, and the Purple Comet Spear bent like a crescent moon under the impact.

There was a slight pause. In this moment, Lin Ming's body seemed to completely violate all laws of physics as everything suddenly reversed. Even the Purple Comet Spear appeared back in his spatial ring. It was as if Lin Ming hadn't even moved at all.

In terms of his dantian, Lin Ming's true essence cyclone had expanded. He was only a step away from reaching the middle Xiantian realm.

"My cultivation has already reached the extreme pinnacle of the early Xiantian realm. I have also managed to touch a bit upon the Concepts of Time and Space through meditation."

Lin Ming lightly breathed out. It really wasn't easy perceiving these Laws through meditation.

From the point that he had obtained ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’ to when he practiced the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’, these two highest quality cultivation methods had both mentioned the Laws of Time and Space. In addition to his journey through space and time via the ultra-long distance transmission array as well as the battle disc array of the quasi Emperor level battle, this series of opportunities had allowed Lin Ming to understand the smallest fraction of the Laws of Space and Time.

“Compared to the Fey who are beloved by the natural Laws, my compatibility with Laws is nothing to speak of. If it wasn’t for the support of my ethereal martial intent, I fear that four days would have been nowhere close to enough.” Lin Ming sighed in disappointment. He felt that his perception of the Laws through meditation would always be unsatisfactory.

“As for my cultivation, it has been rapidly increasing. At most I am a month away from reaching the middle Xiantian realm. If I have just a bit more time then I’ll be able to make my breakthrough. The Blood Slaughter Steppes truly lives up to its reputation. With top quality cultivation areas and top quality practice, in addition to the constant life and death battles, it is easy to stimulate a martial artist’s potential. As long as one cultivates for several years without dying in the Blood Slaughter Steppes, their cultivation will inevitably rise a great deal.

It could be said that the accelerated pace of progress within the Blood Slaughter Steppes was paid with the deaths of countless heroic youths and geniuses. This was like a group of bees selecting a queen. A competitor would have to kill the rest before taking the position of queen bee. The life and death battles of the Blood Slaughter Steppes were naturally much more effective than the great martial meetings of Sky Spill Continent’s sects. And in return, the price was that much greater.

Lin Ming had practiced for four days in a single go. He felt his stomach rumble; these hunger pangs were truly unbearable. His body had also emitted a great deal of sweat so he felt very sticky and uncomfortable.

He prepared to take a bath and have a meal.

Lin Ming's top-grade practice area was small, and there was no place to rest either.

Lin Ming left through the transmission array in the room. He arrived at a martial artist service lodge on the second floor. A surge of bustling air suddenly blew past him as he entered.

Here, as long as one had Blood Demon Crystals, they could enjoy a wide range of services. There was everything that one could want or imagine. Bathing and eating were the most simple services. There were even martial artists that came here to vent their sexual desires on beauties; it wasn't strange for a martial artist to come here and pick up a dozen beauties to go take a bath together.

Lin Ming found a decent-looking restaurant to sit down at. Before he had even ordered food, he found that there were many people looking towards him, their lips moving. Obviously, they were speaking to each other through true essence sound transmissions. As they noticed Lin Ming looking at them, they had a strange light in their eyes.

'Mm? When did I get so much attention?'

Lin Ming could be considered a minor celebrity on the second floor. But, this shouldn't have been enough to capture the attention of so many people.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. Then, he took out a sound transmitting talisman and crushed it in his hands, sparking a small fire.

After a period of time, a young Fey girl rushed into the restaurant. At this time, Lin Ming was slowly eating some beef with sauce.

"Sir Lin."

The young Fey girl bowed. Before, she had left Lin Ming her sound transmission mark so that he could call on her.

Lin Ming hadn't even asked a question when the young Fey girl said with a true essence sound transmission, "Sir Lin, you can't go to the martial arena. Lan Xing is currently fighting at the martial arena. Before now, he had challenged you by name, but it was just that Sir Lin was in closed-door cultivation so he didn't have the chance. He's had a three win streak every day, and he's already claimed a nine win streak. If he wins again, then it will be a 10 win streak. Sir Lin, if you go to the martial arena now, he will absolutely challenge you."

"Oh? Something like that happened?" Lin Ming traced his chin. He also knew the rules of Skysplit Tower. If one reached a ten win streak then they could obtain a slaughter point. After watching the battle between the quasi Emperor level masters, he had obtained a great deal of benefits from those illusions. Lin Ming had come to a new understanding of slaughter points. They really were a good thing; the more the better.

If he could earn more slaughter points, he could trade them for more battle array discs with quasi Emperors that were familiar with the Concepts of Space and Time. Or even, once his authority rose again, he could rent out a true Emperor level master's battle array disc. With this, his understanding of these Laws could reach new heights. Lin Ming would naturally not miss out on such a great advantage.

The young Fey girl saw that Lin Ming's interest had been piqued and she blanched. She began to hastily explain in a panic. "That's right, Sir Lin, please do not underestimate him. Lan Xing has shown a strength much greater than what he revealed in his first battle. He hadn't been taking the three win streak of that first day seriously!"

"I understand." Lin Ming suddenly realized why so many people were staring at him. They were waiting for a good show.

Lin Ming took out a medium-grade Blood Demon Crystal from his spatial ring and placed it on the table. He said, "Waiter, I'm done here."

Lin Ming directly stood up.

“Sir Lin, what are you planning on doing?” The young Fey girl’s expression changed. Her heart filled with an unlucky foreboding feeling.

Lin Ming faintly smiled, “I’m going to the martial arena to have a little look. I want to see what this Lan Xing’s so-called hidden strength is like.”

Lin Ming’s voice wasn’t loud, but which martial artist in the restaurant wasn’t a master? They all clearly heard Lin Ming’s words.

Suddenly, many of these people revealed an interested look. Lin Ming was well aware that there was a tiger on the mountain and yet he still walked towards its lair!

However, there were also many people that shook their head and many that also laughed. Several Giant Demon martial artists looked at Lin Ming with schadenfreude in their eyes. They looked at Lin Ming like he was an idiot. They wanted to see how miserably he would be defeated or how horribly he would die.

Chapter 543 – Fey King Battle Body

Chapter 543 – Fey King Battle Body

…

…

…

Whether they wanted to watch for the fun or to see how Lin Ming would suffer, everyone stood up in unison to do one thing – pay the bill.

For a moment, the waiter was swamped with collecting money. The martial artists all hurried over to the martial arena.

"Sir Lin, you…" The young Fey girl was speechless. She had specifically tried to persuade Lin Ming not to go, but it had the opposite effect. The young Fey girl had some good feelings towards Lin Ming. Of course, this wasn't even the least bit like the romantic feelings between men and women. Rather, it was the thankfulness of a servant that was treated kindly and wasn't harassed by her master.

In the environment of Skysplit Tower, there were very few men that could remain pure of heart and mind without being corrupted by the malevolent influences. Naturally, she didn't want anything to happen to Lin Ming.

She wanted to say something, but Lin Ming had already left the restaurant. He directly shot towards the martial arena.

"Haha, how interesting! I'm looking forward to Lin Ming and Lan Xing's battle. I hope that they do not disappoint me!"

“The results are already plain. The young are just too wild and rambunctious, they don’t consider matters too much. Lin Ming hasn’t seen Lan Xing’s battles these past few days. It’s unwise for him to rush out like this.”

“Lin Ming isn’t bad, and he most likely has some hidden cards in his hand. But in Skysplit Tower, who here isn’t an outstanding genius amongst their peers, and who doesn’t have hidden strengths? In this case, those who underestimate others are most likely to suffer. If he presumes that his hidden cards are enough to kill the other, then those are the thoughts of an imbecilic fool. This sort of person is most likely to die.”

Masters in Skysplit Tower were as numerous as clouds in the sky. Here, there were tigers and dragons lying around every bend. Even masters of this level would have to thoroughly investigate their opponent’s strengths and true limits before making a move. Otherwise it would be extremely dangerous.

“I wonder what’s happening at the martial arena right now. Perhaps Lan Xing has already obtained his ten win streak.”

“That’s probably happened.”

……………………

At this time, at the martial arena –

“Ten win streak! Lan Xing has finally obtained a ten win streak!” The black-clothed referee loudly announced.

Lan Xing was simply too strong. He had officially manifested a complete four-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo, and there was even a pale outline of a third pair.

As the audience expected, Lin Ming hadn’t appeared. Since he didn’t appear, there hadn’t been anyone willing to step up and challenge Lan Xing’s ten win streak. It was with great difficulty that Lan Xing found a Fey martial artist to step up. This martial artist had no hope to win originally.

"The 11th match is the most important!"

"Haha, I've been looking forward to this for a long time. I have no idea who will step onstage!"

"These powerhouses have already come to an agreement according to their strengths. If I remember correctly, it should be time for Huyan Luo to enter the stage!"

Every chance to earn slaughter points was incomparably valuable. On the second floor, there were four different methods to earn slaughter points.

The first one to obtain winning streaks. 10 wins, 20 wins, 30 wins, 40 wins, and so forth, one could obtain corresponding slaughter points with every set of 10 winning streaks.

But in Skysplit Tower, if a high level martial artist defeated a much weaker martial artist then this win wouldn't be counted towards their winning streak. Thus, as a winning streak continued towards the end, the matches one faced would become increasingly ferocious.

At this time, even a powerhouse had to be careful of when they fought. It also became increasingly difficult to earn slaughter points.

The second method to earn slaughter points was nearly the opposite of the first method. It was to end the winning streak of an opponent. For instance, if someone were to end Lan Xing's ten win streak, then that slaughter point would go to them.

The third method was to obtain a Glory Emblem. Every Glory Emblem gave a certain number of slaughter points.

The last method was to gamble on a match. Once two sides made an agreement, they could bet slaughter points. The one who won would obtain these slaughter points.

In this situation, the easiest way to earn slaughter points was the second method: to end the winning streaks of others. This was especially for newcomers like Lan Xing; they were looked at as the best to make a move on by the masters.

Everyone was envious of these chances. Between the masters of the second floor, they already had an unwritten set of rules in order to divvy up these chances. And this time, it was Huyan Luo's turn.

Huyan Luo was a Giant Demon. He stood 12 feet high, and he was considered tall and powerfully built even for a Giant Demon. His weapon was a massive sledgehammer with a handle as thick as an adult's arm. Its weight was absolutely in the tens of thousands of jins.

Bang!

As Huyan Luo jumped onstage, he directly shattered the tiles where he landed, causing the entire arena stage to shake!

"Hehe, little baby boy, don't be too nervous. I'll go easy on you. Such a talented person like you is the best origin of our slaughter points. I will definitely not harm you, so don't worry." Huyan Luo's eyes shined as he looked Lan Xing up and down, licking his lips in anticipation. His body was over twice as large as Lan Xing's, it was like comparing an adult to a child.

Lan Xing smugly said, "Do you really think I'm some sheep? Do you believe that you can just keep me around and harvest points from me every now and then?"

"Haha, your thinking is also quite good! Boy, resign yourself to your fate. Skysplit Tower is a land where strength reigns supreme. If you can gain strength, then you can do the same as me!"

"Not bad, I agree with you. But before we begin our battle, I have a suggestion."

"Say it!"

"I want to also make this a gambling match with slaughter points. I'll bet two points. That means if you win, then you will obtain three slaughter points! Of course, if you lose then those points are mine!"

Lan Xing's suggestion stunned Huyan Luo. Huyan Luo suddenly laughed and said, "Good idea, good idea!"

He hadn't expected that such a great gift would deliver itself to his door. This Lan Xing really thought that a single point wasn't enough and wanted to bet another two!

"Hehe, boy, if you thought you could beat me because I said I would go easy on you then you're dead wrong. I will let you personally experience the strength of a challenger from the upper floor!"

As Huyan Luo finished speaking, he gave a loud shout and an imposing aura erupted form his body. Demonic essence surged out and infernal energy soared through the heavens!

Lan Xing sneered. The reason he had dared to make this bet with Huyan Luo was that he had already investigated everything about him. He had even researched the sect that Huyan Luo had come from, and had a deep understanding of just what his cultivation method was. He had even looked up battle array discs with Huyan Luo's battles.

Of course, it was inevitable that Huyan Luo had several hidden cards. But even so, Lan Xing estimated he had a 70 to 80% chance of winning. In Skysplit Tower, a 70 to 80% chance was already worth gambling on.

Lan Xing's lips curved up like a cackling fiend. He slowly extracted a longsword from his spatial ring…

…………..

"The infernal energy at the martial arena is so thick!"

"Who is fighting who? It's reached such a degree!"

As Lin Ming shot past the path towards the martial arena, he heard martial artists along the way in heated discussions. Truly, the martial arena was emanating an extremely rich infernal energy; this was proof of just how heated the battle had become.

As Lin Ming entered the martial arena, he looked over from far away towards the central stage. A large Giant Demon fellow was standing there, his entire body wet with blood and his hair a mess. A young Fey youth was monstrously smiling at him. This Fey youth's body was covered in a layer of amethyst armor. There were several deep wounds in his body, but he seemed unaware of this. In fact, this pain seemed to excite him.

"Is that Lan Xing?"

Lin Ming was surprised. This Fey youth had long blue hair that fell to his ankles and there were many runes etched onto his body in strange patterns. He did look like Lan Xing, but the Fey energy that wrapped around him was even more macabre.

"I never thought that Lan Xing would have successfully practiced the Fey King Battle Body! If this continues then Huyan Luo won't be able to last much longer!"

"Mm, no wonder Lan Xing has such outstanding talent. His Ancient Fey bloodline is too rich, he can even use the Fey King Battle Body!"

"Ancient Fey bloodline?"

Lin Ming's mind stirred. Before now, he had heard of the Ancient Giant Demon race. That massive glob of blood essence that had shot out of the Cosmic Melting Furnace was the blood essence of the Ancient Giant Demon race. Demonshine had wanted to swallow it in order to strengthen himself, but the end result was that it had been sucked up by the Magic Cube.

From the looks of it, it seemed as if the Ancient Fey were similar to the Ancient Giant Demons. Without a doubt, whether they were the Ancient Fey or the Ancient Giant Demons, both of them were races with heaven-defying talent.

Perhaps even the Ancient Phoenix Clan was the same.

"Sir Lin, that is the Fey King Battle Body!" At this time, the young Fey girl breathlessly gasped from behind Lin Ming. She had been following him this entire time. She sucked in another breath, her voice trembling as she said, "Sir Lin, Lan Xing can use the Fey King

Battle Body because he has been recognized by the Ancient Fey. With the Fey King Battle Body, he can increase his strength by 40 to 50%!

Increasing one's strength by 40 to 50% was indeed a considerable amount. An adult at his prime might be 40 to 50% stronger than a young teenager, but this adult might be able to defeat four or five of these teens.

As the young Fey girl saw Lin Ming's uncaring expression, she sighed. There wasn't anything else she could say to console him, she had said all she could say.

Bang!

On the arena stage, Huyan Luo's great sledgehammer was thrown high, rapidly spinning in the air. At the same time, Lan Xing stepped forwards, a fierce wind blowing from his longsword.

Woosh woosh woosh!

Blood splashed out. Huyan Luo roared like a cornered beast and then punched his fist out at Lan Xing.

“Die.”

Lan Xing's voice was icy cold. His figure disappeared into the wind. In the next moment, his cold, shining sword had pierced straight through Huyan Luo's neck.

A single sword to seal the throat!

At this time, there was a loud explosion as the sledgehammer that Lan Xing sent flying had finally reversed its course and smashed into the ground. As for Huyan Luo, his eyes were wide with disbelief as he looked at the longsword in his neck, his blood dripping down its blade. Slowly, his eyes glazed over.

Pu!

Lan Xing shook his sword and sliced off Huyan Luo's neck. The massive head rolled into the blood, and a column of blood spurted 20 feet straight into the air.

"Lan Xing, victory!"

With the referee's announcement, the audience was stunned silent for a moment. Huyan Luo, whose strength was number one within the second tier, had actually died like this.

"What a fierce Concept of Wind. In the final strike, Lan Xing used the Concept of Wind to avoid Huyan Luo's fist and also to make the killing strike!"

"For real. This Lan Xing is only 23 or 24 years old. In the future, there's hope of him becoming a Fey Emperor!"

The audience loudly talked amongst themselves. There were indeed many outstanding heroic youths within Skysplit Tower. But, there were truly few potential Peerless Emperor level talents like Lan Xing.

Lan Xing ignored the discussion of the crowd. As he slowly raised his head, his eyes passed over to Lin Ming. His smile widened, and it seemed even more wicked than before.

Chapter 544 – Measure for Measure

Chapter 544 – Measure for Measure

…

…

…

Ka ka ka…

The amethyst armor that covered Lan Xing's body began to gradually sink back into his body, and the arcane runes on his face began to fade away until he appeared like the unbearably handsome Fey youth from before. But, blood still stained his face, giving him a fierce look.

As Lan Xing looked at Lin Ming, his eyes were filled with pride and an intention to fight.

"Young Hero Lan has obtained an 11 win streak. He has officially gained one slaughter point as well as two slaughter points from his gamble with Huyan Luo. Would Young Hero Lan like to continue battling?"

"No," Lan Xing shook his head, "I will rest for two hours before I begin my 12th match."

Everyone had thought that Lan Xing would continue and try for a 12 win streak in a single go. But his words had surprised them.

"This boy! From his gamble with Huyan Luo, I had the sense that he was incredibly brazen, but now it seems that he is actually quite calm. He has consumed just a bit of energy but hasn't gotten carried away by his victories. He actually decided to take a rest for two hours before continuing."

“Mm. It looks like it wasn’t a moment of impulse that caused him to make a bet with Huyan Luo. It’s likely that he investigated Huyan Luo ahead of time and believed he had a high chance of winning.”

“Hehe, did you notice that Lin Ming also arrived? Do you think that Lin Ming will dare to stay here for two hours?”

“This isn’t a question of whether he dares to but rather if he’s an idiot and will be swayed by his mood. Lin Ming arrived just in time to see Lan Xing’s last fight; that Fey King Battle Body is no joke. Lan Xing’s combat prowess has already reached the first tier of Skysplit Tower’s second floor, and not just that, but he can’t be considered too weak amongst the first tier!”

As the audience spoke, many of those present were looking at Lin Ming. They were looking forward to seeing how Lin Ming would respond to this.

Under the watchful eyes of the audience, Lin Ming didn’t have much of an expression. Instead, he calmly walked onstage.

‘Mm? Lin Ming is stepping onstage?’

People had just had this thought when Lin Ming leapt up. Slowly, he fell onto the arena like a dragonfly on a still lake.

Lin Ming glanced at the black-clothed referee and calmly said, “I would like to fight.”

“Ah!”

Many of the audience gasped in surprise and excitement. Lin Ming hadn’t left nor did he meditate to rest. Instead, he had entered the arena stage to fight. Was he trying to prove a point here?

Lan Xing was also a bit stunned. He immediately smirked and then closed his eyes, returning to meditation to restore his mind.

He didn’t need to look before realizing that Lin Ming wouldn’t encounter any decent opponents. Although there was a great deal of masters that were present today, none of them would make a move against Lin Ming, and this was simply because there was no advantage in doing so.

At most, some of the weaker second tier human martial artists would come to challenge Lin Ming. These individuals came to gain experience as well as to challenge the gap between them and others. The martial arena of the second floor was never lacking in these types of martial artists, thus it was never difficult for one to gain a ten win streak. But, for those above a ten win streak, there were mighty masters everywhere. This was because they could gain slaughter points by ending someone else’s winning streak.

And because the strength of these individuals might be too close, when a heated battle occurred, oftentimes death would accompany it.

“White Wind Sect’s Zhou Tianyu kindly requests Sir Lin’s guidance!”

A human martial artist jumped onstage. He wasn’t some random nobody. In fact, he had condensed a two-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo; his strength could be considered decent.

There were many martial artists on the second floor that would condense a Heavenly Demon Tattoo and then lose a round. They would then have to spend another period of time condensing it again, and repeat this process many times. But as long as they kept their life then failure wasn’t much at all.

As the referee announced the start of the match, Zhou Tianyu’s sword flashed towards Lin Ming’s chest like a serpent. His sword strike contained a vague hint of the Concept of Water. His sword energy was long, liquid, and couldn’t be cut.

However, this was completely nothing to Lin Ming. As soon as his spear power was displayed, a vibrating wave of true essence erupted. That wave of endless true essence smashed into the sword energy, shattering it into nothing.

A spear thrust out, the tip like a bolt of lightning. It seemed to disappear into the void and instantly appeared between Zhou Tianyu's eyebrows.

Chi!

Infernal energy suddenly converged on him. Zhou Tianyu felt a chilling cold between his eyebrows, and the hairs on his back began to stand on end. In that moment, he felt as if Lin Ming's spear would cut through his head.

"I… I've lost."

Zhou Tianyu was secretly relieved, but he discovered that his back was wet with sweat. Just then, he almost thought that he would die.

"Well fought."

Lin Ming withdrew the Purple Comet Spear, and a surge of infernal energy within Zhou Tianyu rolled out and into Lin Ming's body. Although it wasn't much, it was still able to make Lin Ming's Heavenly Demon Tattoo a bit more solid.

"Lin Ming, victory!" The referee loudly announced.

"What a powerful spear. Whether it's his spear power or infernal energy, he can freely use them with skill and ease. I wonder if Lin Ming is hiding any more strength."

"Mm. Lin Ming is indeed powerful, but his opponents are too weak. Even if he wins beautifully it doesn't mean much. If Lin Ming wants to defeat Lan Xing… the chances aren't too high."

Zhou Tianyu wasn't even at the same level as Huyan Luo. There were very few people that believed Lin Ming would win.

However, in a corner of the martial arena, a white-haired middle-aged man was deep in thought. In that split-second, his sense of space and time seemed to have been mixed up.

"Was that an illusion? That seemed like just a casual strike from that boy, but if I were to face it, even I would find it difficult to avoid…"

Four win streak, five win streak, six win streak…

Lin Ming obtained an eight win streak in a single go. Every match didn't exceed three moves. He was like an unstoppable juggernaut that mowed down everyone before him.

Although none of Lin Ming's opponents were masters, every battle was easily won. In all these rounds, Lin Ming's breathing hadn't even quickened. This secretly startled some people present.

"Eight matches, eight victories. This is Young Hero Lin's fifth match today. Do you wish to continue with a sixth match?" The black-clothed referee asked.

Within Skysplit Tower, a martial artist normally wouldn't fight more than three battles a day. The truth was that this was for the sake of caution. They wanted to avoid seeming too arrogant and cocky, thus drawing out some masters to suppress them.

As Lin Ming was now, he could breeze through these past five matches like nothing.

"Perhaps." Lin Ming glanced over at Lan Xing, thinking about how much time was left. He, like Lan Xing, wouldn't underestimate his opponent. Lin Ming was looking forwards to seeing just what this Fey King Battle Body was all about.

After Lin Ming stepped offstage, everyone's eyes were on him. They wanted to see whether he would leave or stay in the martial arena.

Lin Ming was a pure newcomer, much newer than Lan Xing. Lan Xing had already practiced on the second floor for an entire year. At this time, facing this sort of opponent, it wouldn't be a shame if Lin Ming avoided battle.

However, Lin Ming only silently walked over to a seat and sat down. These several matches hadn't really tired him, he was only sitting to adjust his mentality.

"He sat down! Heh, the newborn calf really doesn't fear the tiger!"

"He's only treating him equally. He's already aware that Lan Xing will challenge him yet he doesn't care. Instead, he calmly welcomes Lan Xing's challenge."

"This is quite fun to watch!"

When masters fought, especially two rising star talents, it often drew a great crowd. The news of the potential battle spread out, and more and more people crowded into the arena. There was constantly people streaming through the entrance of the martial arena. Soon, there were 4000 to 5000 people in the stands. Besides some martial artists that had gone into closed-door seclusion, most of the other martial artists had come. There were even some lower level martial artists that mainly did business on the second floor who also came, hoping to see the fun.

The entire martial arena was filled with people. As for the center stage of the martial arena, there actually wasn't anybody fighting. They were all waiting for Lin Ming and Lan Xing to fight.

Time slowly passed. Lin Ming was like a monk as he sat in meditation, and Lan Xing wasn't in a hurry either.

The crowd around the two began to loudly shout in their discussions.

In truth, Lan Xing didn't even need an hour to restore his peak condition. But even so, he still stayed in meditation without any desire to stand up. In this situation, a normal person would inevitably become impatient and jump onstage for the waiting audience. But, Lan Xing completely disregarded all of this. Since he said he would rest for two hours, he would rest for two hours.

The mental stability was startling.

"It's time." Two full hours later, Lan Xing opened his eyes from his quiet meditative state. His voice was calm like a placid lake.

"What a strong mentality!"

Some people in the audience couldn't help but cry out in acclaim. People with this sort of disposition could maintain their peak battle condition at all times. There were very few external factors that would be able to affect their state of mind.

"This fellow is quite scary. Not only is his strength heaven-defying, but he also has a calm personality."

Lan Xing looked over to Lin Ming, the corners of his lips rising in a grin, "Since you've been waiting here for me, it looks like you've already decided to fight me. Since that's the case, let's go onstage!"

Lan Xing's figure blurred and he appeared on the arena stage. Lin Ming followed, lightly falling onto the stage.

"Lin Ming, during my match with Huyan Luo, I made a bet with slaughter points. Do you dare to follow my gamble?" Lan Xing taunted.

"How many do you want to bet?" Lin Ming asked.

"The same, two. If you can defeat me, not only will you obtain slaughter points from stopping my winning streak, but you can also win two slaughter points from a bet. Of course, this all depends on whether or not you can win."

"Then let's do it!" Lin Ming readily agreed.

"Haha, great! Wonderful! Then I won't be polite!" As Lan Xing spoke, he extracted a longsword from his spatial ring. The blade began to hum in the wind.

This was the achievement of integrating the Concept of Wind into one's sword skill.

In terms of the Concept of Wind, Lan Xing's understand far surpassed that of Lin Ming.

Lin Ming also took out the Purple Comet Spear. A tranquil yet indomitable aura suddenly burst out from him. He was like a towering mountain, unreachable and unattainable.

Chi chi chi!

The two hadn't even fought but their auras were already colliding with each other. Compared to Lin Ming's steady aura, Lan Xing's aura was like flying arrows, both sharp and penetrating.

"Heh! You are truly extraordinary. Then I will see just how much of my strength you will be able to pull out!" As Lan Xing spoke, his expression changed. His eyes flashed like cold stars in the sky, a chilling light emanating from them.

"Sword of Wind!"

As Lan Xing finished speaking, the sword in his hand disappeared. His sword had fused into the wind. One could only see the wind, but not the sword.

In that instant, countless sword lights wove into a net that covered the sky, falling down onto Lin Ming.

"Golden Roc Shattering the Void!"

Lin Ming instantly vanished. The tiles that were underneath his feet were sliced into pieces by that the sword energy!

Chapter 545 – Bloody Battle

Chapter 545 – Bloody Battle

…

…

…

“Mm? The Concept of Wind?” Lan Xing’s sword slowed for a brief moment. He was extremely sensitive to the Concept of Wind. The movement technique that Lin Ming had just used had contained an inherent touch of the Concept of Wind.

“What a pity. Compared to me, the difference in our Concept of Wind is like the heavens and earth. A human’s understanding of Laws is truly revolting. Although your movement ability is adequate, you cannot dodge my blade!”

Lan Xing’s sword cut out once more. The speed of his moves made his attack difficult to distinguish; it was as if his body itself seemed to meld into the wind, leaving nothing but a series of fading phantoms. It was almost impossible to tell where he was, he was nowhere and everywhere at once.

Sword lights crossed in the air, forming a net of fine lines. There was no gap in this attack; it was unavoidable!

The highly compressed true essence combined with the Concept of Wind to a nearly perfect degree. The swiftness and deadliness of such an attack was daunting.

Lin Ming repeatedly retreated, but he couldn’t avoid these sword lights. His clothes began to tear apart, and he was surrounded by dangers on all sides.

“Lan Xing’s sword is too sharp and the attack angles are tricky. There isn’t any way to follow it. If I had to face this sword light, even I would have a headache. If Lin Ming only tries to dodge, then he will absolutely lose.”

“In the end, this is the disparity of Concepts. Lin Ming’s understanding of Concepts is far inferior to Lan Xing’s. If he wants to fight Lan Xing with Concepts, then he is only fooling himself. Attacking the enemy where he is weaker is a fool’s errand!”

“True. In terms of Concepts, how can a human compare with a Fey?”

In a corner of the arena, two veteran challengers were watching this match. They had very accurate vision and judgment, and were able to approximate the level of Concepts on stage. “Mm? He’s been forced into a corner. Let’s see what he can do!”

On the arena stage, Lin Ming had been caught in the middle of dozens of swords lights. There was no place to dodge to anymore. In the stands, there were many Giant Demons whose faces were twisted with pleasure and glee. They wanted to see Lin Ming beg for death. That idiot, trying to compare Concepts with a Fey was just looking for abuse.

“A dead end!” Lin Ming frowned. In truth, breaking through Lan Xing’s sword light trap was simple. As long as he used the Primeval Halberd Strike or burst out the hundred some Blood Drinking Seals within him, the following vortex of energy would immediately smash every sword light into nothingness.

But Lin Ming didn’t want to do this. The first reason was because he wanted to hide his abilities as much as possible before entering Skysplit Tower’s third floor, and the second reason was that he wanted to experience this Concept and improve his own.

The further one walked down the path of martial arts, the more obvious the importance of Concepts became. Compared to a common martial artist, Lin Ming’s comprehension of Concepts far exceeded theirs. But, he wasn’t satisfied with this. This was because his eyes were always trained on the Realm of the Gods. Because of his poor ability to understand

Concepts, he hadn’t been able to display the true strength of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ and ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’.

This fight with Lan Xing was an excellent opportunity to sharpen his comprehension of Concepts. How could Lin Ming miss this chance?

As Lin Ming saw the endless sword lights cut towards him, he grit his teeth and rushed into those blinding sword lights.

“Mm? Has this boy gone mad!?” Lan Xing was startled. Lin Ming actually headed into his sword lights?

Everyone’s eyes widened. There wasn’t even enough time to cry out.

But at this moment, Lin Ming’s figure and pace seemed to distort, and then, the unbelievable happened. Lin Ming’s body phased through the curtain of sword lights without the slightest injury. His spear thrust towards Lan Xing’s front!

“What!?!?”

Lan Xing was shocked. But he was still a master and his reactions to all circumstances were extremely fast. His sword cut down on the tip of the Purple Comet Spear!

Zi----

A flash of lightning snuck into Lan Xing’s body like a hidden snake. It numbed his arm and caused his blood to tumble!

Lin Ming raised his spear to stab out again at the moment that Lan Xing’s body was paralyzed. At this critical moment, Lan Xing bit down on the tip of his tongue and rushed backwards, barely dodging Lin Ming’s spear strike.

“What happened?” The audience was astonished. Even Lan Xing was alarmed.

In that instant, Lin Ming seemed to pass through the void itself. He passed through the dangerous curtain of sword lights, arriving right in front of Lan Xing.

“Is… is that the Concept of Space?” A veteran challenger gasped out as he suddenly thought of this. The Concept of Space was elusive and ephemeral. Even among the Fey, who were loved by the natural Laws, there were very few who could comprehend the Concept of Space. This was because… they couldn’t contact it!

The Concept of Wind, the Concept of Water… these things could be seen and touched. As long as one frequently came into contact with these Concepts, they would always be able to touch upon their rules and thus comprehend the corresponding Concept.

But the existence of space, although it was everywhere, could not be felt. As a result, there were very few powerhouses that were able to comprehend the Concept of Space, and even fewer legacies that were passed on. Thus, to the martial artists of the Holy Demon Continent, the Concept of Space was a very mysterious and inscrutable existence.

“You think that boy comprehended the Concept of Space? This…” Another veteran challenger found this hard to accept. After all, Lin Ming was only a human. Humanity’s affinity to the Laws was not any better than the Giant Demons’.

“I shouldn’t be wrong. I’ve seen martial artists that have comprehended the Concept of Space before. But, I never thought that the humans could produce such a monstrous genius.” A veteran Giant Demon challenger breathed out with emotion. Lin Ming’s talent had completely surpassed the talent of their Giant Demon race’s younger generation.

…………………

“So that’s how it is. You really aren’t an opponent that can be easily defeated. You are the strongest junior that I have ever encountered. Even though you are younger than me, you have the strength to threaten me. I really, really want to… hehe, I want to kill you myself!” As Lan Xing spoke here, a cold light flashed in his eyes. “Fey King Battle Body!”

Bang!

Lan Xing's aura exploded like a volcano. The surrounding crushed stones were all blown away by this momentum, shooting out like arrows in all directions. An amethyst battle armor suddenly appeared on Lan Xing's body. His hair grew longer, and all sorts of ancient Fey runes appeared on his body, radiating with a bright light.

As Lan Xing displayed the Fey King Battle Body, his entire body began to emit a resplendently evil energy. His dark amber pupils turned blood-red, and his eyes filled with a thick killing intent.

"Fey King Battle Body! Lan Xing finally used this move!"

"Haha, what can Lin Ming do now?" Under the stage, the Fey martial artists began to seethe with excitement.

The Fey King Battle Body was the pride of their Fey race, because this was the brand imprinted in their bones by the ancient Fey bloodline. This was the source of their race's superiority, and the symbol of their race's glory. Because of this, they were the paramount race. Because of this, humans were nothing but lowly beasts in their eyes.

"This is the true battle. Everything else up until now was just a warm-up. Let's see just how Lin Ming deals with this." As all the other races' martial artists saw Lan Xing's Fey King Battle Body, they all had looks of envy in their eyes. As they saw the Fey King Battle Body again, they were shocked once more by its terrifying aura.

Without a doubt, Lan Xing had the qualifications to become a Fey Emperor. But Lin Ming also had the qualifications to reach the Divine Sea realm. Two heroic youths of this level exchanging moves, even within Skysplit Tower, was a rare event.

As Lin Ming looked at Lan Xing, he just felt pity at the turn of events. He had wanted to take this chance to sharpen his comprehension of Concepts, but after Lan Xing displayed the Fey King Battle Body, he clearly wished to compete in a battle of strength.

Lin Ming slowly said, "You want to destroy me, but I also want to destroy you. This is Skysplit Tower. Here, it is kill or be killed. People die every moment, there are no innocents here. They have all chosen to walk the killing path. That includes you, and that includes me!"

Every person who appeared at Skysplit Tower had hands dyed red with blood. Those that came here, if it wasn't to kill others, then it was to experience life and death battles and seek breakthroughs on the precipice of annihilation. Otherwise, no one else would come to Skysplit Tower.

"Destroy me? Haha… you really think you will have that chance?" After Lan Xing completed the Fey King Battle Body, his mindset began to turn crazed, and even his voice became a guttural bark.

"You'll know whether I have the chance soon enough. I advise you to stop spouting crap, I doubt you can maintain this state much longer." With just a glance, Lin Ming could see that Lan Xing's Fey King Battle Armor had similarities to his own Heretical God Force. Both of them were eruptions of true essence from within the body. This condition was bound to fade sooner or later.

"You're looking to die!" Lan Xing's eyes blazed with heavy killing intent. The stones on the martial arena stage began to blow as the strong winds picked up. Lan Xing held his sword with his right hand and swiped the blade with his left. A beautiful coat of rich red blood was wiped onto the longsword.

"Sword of Wind – Bloodstained Sky!"

At this moment, Lan Xing's ankle-length hair shot into the sky, recklessly flapping around. He grasped his longsword with two hands and cut down. A whistling wind rose up, bringing with it a thick, bloody energy and red sword lights filled the sky. This was Lan Xing's killing path. His murderous aura erupted all at once, filling the heavens and earth with bloody energy!

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a chilling light. He instantly judged that with his current strength, he would still be able to take this sword strike. But, he would be injured.

Within Skysplit Tower, with so many masters lying in wait all around, Lin Ming would not give any of them an opportunity to take advantage of him. Thus, his mind touched the Heretical God Seed, directly releasing the Heretical God Force!

Highly compressed true essence erupted like a tidal wave. Lin Ming's aura instantly climbed to the pinnacle. His true essence was like an unstoppable spear light, slicing into the heavens!

This sudden change caught all the martial artists off guard; all of them were stunned. Without even a chance to react, Lin Ming's spear had already thrust forth!

"Primeval Spear Strike!"

Over a hundred spinning Blood Drinking Seals danced in the air, revolving around the Purple Comet Spear and forming a massive red vortex. Flashes of thunder twinkled in this vortex. As the spear shot forwards, it seemed to cut apart the void itself.

Bang!

A terrifying explosion sounded out like a heavenly thunderclap. Countless bits of gravel shot into the air. Everyone's vision was completely engulfed by a blazing light as a massive true essence shockwave blew out. The Blood Drinking Seals were like saws as they sliced through Lan Xing's sword potential. Lin Ming's hands grasped his spear, and he arrived in front of Lan Xing in an instant. His spear moved, thrusting straight towards Lan Xing's heart!

"What!?"

Lan Xing was greatly shocked. He absolutely never expected that the sword strike in which he had placed his full and complete strength would be so easily broken.

In this life or death moment, Lan Xing no longer had the chance to draw back his sword to defend. He could only form his palm into a sword and cut towards Lin Ming's throat! "If you want to kill me, then don't plan on leaving alive!"

Lan Xing’s eyes flashed with savagery. But at this moment, the incredible occurred!

The Purple Comet Spear in Lin Ming’s hand seemed to penetrate through space and appear right in front of Lan Xing. As for Lan Xing’s palm sword, he had just started his movements.

Pu!

With a light sound, Lan Xing’s bodily protective true essence shattered. The incomparably sharp Purple Comet Spear pierced his heart!

Bright red blood shot into the wind!

Chapter 546 – Great Harvest

Chapter 546 – Great Harvest

…

…

…

“You…”

The sword energy on Lan Xing’s palm had already faded away. His blood-red eyes were wide as he stared at Lin Ming. He never imagined that he would be defeated so quickly. He still had finishing moves that he hadn’t used yet, but… he no longer had the chance!

What a fantastical Concept of Space. Before Lan Xing had even brought down his palm sword, the Purple Comet Spear had already seemingly teleported in front of Lan Xing and pierced his heart.

“I… never thought… I would lose to a human in Concepts…”

Lan Xing clutched the shaft of the Purple Comet Spear and ruefully smiled. As he opened his mouth, he coughed up great mouthfuls of blood. His heart and lungs had shattered, and blood filled his chest, pouring out of his throat.

Lin Ming withdrew his spear. Vibrating true essence had already broken apart every single meridian in Lan Xing’s body. With his heart burst apart too, there was absolutely no way for him to leave alive.

Ever since he had suffered under Mu Qingshu, Mu Chihuo, and Ouyang Boyan, almost causing those close to him to pay with their lives, Lin Ming had become increasingly decisive and ruthless. He would stamp out the trouble at the source before it was allowed to bloom.

A massive amount of blood sprayed out. The tiles under Lan Xing's feet were stained red. This shocking scene completely silenced every martial artist present.

Before now, there was almost no one that believed Lin Ming would win. But not only had he won, he had won so quickly!

During the entire fight onstage there had only been several moves exchanged. Lin Ming defeated Lan Xing with overwhelming strength and speed!

It could be said that Lan Xing couldn't dodge the last strike because Lin Ming had a touch of the Concept of Space within his spear. But without a doubt, even if Lan Xing was able to dodge this attack, he would still have been defeated in the end!

This was because after they had used all their hidden cards, Lin Ming's aura had already suppressed Lan Xing's. This was illustrated by Lin Ming breaking apart Lan Xing's curtain of sword light with his spear potential.

"Lan Xing was defeated! This boy!" In the audience, a pale Giant Demon who had been waiting for Lin Ming to lose now had an extremely ugly expression on his face. Over the years, he had already formed an inborn sense of arrogance and racial superiority. There was no way he could accept that a mere human had surpassed all of the heroic youths of his Giant Demon race.

"I fear he might have the strength of a peak four-winged Heavenly Demon. This strength could be ranked in the top 10 of the entire second floor of Skysplit Tower.

"Unbelievable. A genius like Lan Xing already had the qualifications to become a Fey Emperor in the future. But, this boy actually defeated Lan Xing. Could it be that..."

"Humph, one's aspirations aren't equal to their own prominence. Lan Xing had the qualifications to ascend to a Fey Emperor, but that is only the qualifications. Above a Saint level talent is an Emperor level talent, but how many Emperor level talents appear every year, and how many of those are truly able to become a Fey Emperor or Demon Emperor?

They die halfway, buried, with all their potential gone. Everything they once grasped they will lose. It's far too early to call this boy Lin Ming a Peerless Emperor!"

A Fey martial artist bitterly said. Within the Holy Demon Continent, the humans and Ferals had the lowest number of Emperor level powerhouses. Lin Ming had just killed a Fey genius, and others had said he could become a Peerless Emperor in the future, so he naturally wasn't feeling too happy about matters.

Lin Ming ignored the discussion of the surrounding martial artists. At this moment, he was quietly baptizing himself within a rich infernal energy. Lan Xing had accumulated a great deal of infernal energy, and now over half of it was Lin Ming's. This flow of energy was extremely suppressing.

The dark desires of his heart and his obsessions were rapidly stirred up by the thick infernal energy. They percolated with Lan Xing's own ambitions...

Power, beautiful women, glory, the martial arts boundary of a Fey Emperor... all of this poured into Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

These sudden and intensely strong desires and passions were like demons that rapidly multiplied in Lin Ming's spiritual sea, trying to take root there.

"This Skysplit Tower is truly a paradise of corruption!"

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light. The black vortex of the Samsara martial intent suddenly appeared, directly sucking up all those desires and obsessions and tearing them to shreds.

As Lin Ming's heart calmed down, he quickly recovered his thinking.

'I already have a strong soul force, but I was still affected by these desires. There are many martial artists present whose soul force is far inferior to mine, and they probably can't resist this invasion of desires. Although they might not be dominated by these thoughts and turned into slaves of them, their hearts would still be affected. But, the cultivation methods of the demonic path already veer one into doing whatever they please, so losing a bit of their thinking isn't much at all.'

One could look at the fate of the slaves of Skysplit Tower to see just how distorted the personalities of the Skysplit Tower challengers became. Being cruelly ravaged, humiliated, mistreated, or even killed… these slaves suffered everywhere and at all times.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and the infernal energy within his body began to revolve within him. On his arm, the Heavenly Demon Tattoo began to condense. After the first pair of wings was completed, the second pair was nourished by the infernal energy, and began to slowly form…

Four-winged Heavenly Demon!

After killing Lan Xing, Lin Ming had finally reached the realm of a four-winged Heavenly Demon.

The realm itself was unimportant to Lin Ming. But, the accumulated infernal energy was greatly advantageous to the cultivation of the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'.

Lin Ming took Lan Xing's spatial ring and glanced at it. Impressively, it was a medium-grade earth-step spatial ring.

This was truly the background of a genius from a large sect. The spatial ring was a medium-grade earth-step treasure, and not just that, but a very good one amongst its rank.

As for the Blood Drinking Seal, Lin Ming naturally wouldn't forget about it. But for better or worse, Lan Xing still had an extremely high status within the Fey race. He didn't cause Lan Xing's corpse to explode and embarrass the Fey. Instead, he let the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder make a circle within Lan Xing's corpse, directly sucking up all of his blood essence.

After this was all finished, several of Skysplit Tower's staff came up and carried away Lan Xing's corpse.

Those who killed could end up being killed. Lan Xing, who had been overweeningly arrogant and swollen with self-importance, also perished here. Every martial artist present knew that they could suffer the same fate someday.

“Well... Young Hero Lin, would you like to continue?” The referee’s voice was a bit unnatural. This Lin Ming’s talent was just too terrifying. As long as he didn’t die here, he would inevitably become a high ranking figure within Skysplit Tower. He might even become his superior.

“No, I’ll stop here for today.” Lin Ming refused to continue. After this battle, he had obtained some more insights into the Concept of Wind. He wanted to head back to his room and contemplate on them.

“Great. Young Hero Lin, if you will.” The referee’s attitude was exceptionally respectful.

Lin Ming turned and stepped off the stage. The martial artists in the audience had a touch of awe and wonder in their eyes as they watched him leave.

Lin Ming arrived the martial arena’s exit. The young Fey girl was waiting there. She blankly looked at Lin Ming, unsure what to say.

“Sir Lin, you...”

Lin Ming tossed the young Fey girl a small box of Blood Demon Crystals and said, “Five days from now, wait for me at Morningdew Inn.”

Morningdew Inn was an inn that was near the transmission array that led to Lin Ming’s practice area. Normally speaking, there wasn’t anything inside a martial artist’s practice area. Thus, most martial artists would choose to stay at inns. They would return to their practice area to cultivate.

“Ehm... okay... alright...” The young Fey girl quickly replied. If another martial artist wanted to meet her inside an inn, then she would understand what they wanted her to do.

But Lin Ming wasn't someone who was interested in those things, otherwise he would have already done so.

"What would Sir Lin like to do?"

"I want you to bring me somewhere where I can rent out battle array discs. They only need to be at the quasi Emperor level or above."

Renting out high level quasi Emperor battle array discs required a slaughter point. Even the top geniuses of large sects weren't willing to watch these more than a few times. But listening to Lin Ming's meaning, it seemed that he wanted to rent out a great number of these.

The young Fey girl gulped and blankly nodded.

"Then… I'll see you five days from now." Lin Ming left after he finished speaking. He didn't seem as if he was moving quickly, but the ground beneath his feet seemed to shrink. He only took a few steps, but he had already disappeared around the corner…

……………

Lin Ming sat atop the bed in his practice area. He had completely taken out all of Lan Xing's possessions from his spatial ring and had looked over them. He was secretly shocked. Killing others and taking their wealth was truly the fastest way to become rich. Lan Xing's total wealth was several times greater than that of Blackrat.

There were tens of thousands of medium-grade true essence stones, and also several dozen high-grade true essence stones.

In addition to that, there were countless large and small bottles, jade slips, and treasures.

There was no need to look at the medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals, they were all for spending.

As for the high-grade Blood Demon Crystals, they were for cultivating. Lin Ming put those away.

After carefully inspecting the pills, Lin Ming separated them by different general classifications.

All that was left over were the jade slips.

Lin Ming was looking forward to the jade slips in Lan Xing’s spatial ring. He immediately immersed his perception in the jade slips, slowly sweeping through them. He patiently took over an entire hour to scan them. Suddenly, Lin Ming’s eyes brightened.

This was it!

Lin Ming had picked up a common-looking jade slip from among the pile. This jade slip didn’t record cultivation methods or martial skills. Instead, it was the accumulated experiences of Fey masters about the Concept of Wind.

Looking at the soul imprints on the jade slip, it obviously didn’t come from a single person. Rather, it was the collected attainments and experiences of a great number of Fey masters. This was absolutely a priceless treasure!

This sort of Concept comprehension jade slip was similar to a cultivation method jade slip: the contents could not be duplicated. One could only write down the contents if they had a deep understanding of it. This only served to raise its value. The reason that Lan Xing brought this with him was likely so that he could meditate on it at any time.

“The Fey are born beloved by the natural Laws. They have countless masters who have reached Large Success in Concepts. These masters leave behind their legacies, and this continues onwards. As these experiences accumulate, the Fey race’s superiority in Laws and Concepts will also widen.

Several generations, dozens of generations, the total accumulation of these people was terrifying. This was also the reason why the more ancient clans had a more profound heritage.

“With this jade slip and my original understanding of the Concept of Wind, my own Concept of Wind will inevitably rise to a higher level!”

Speed had never been Lin Ming’s strength. If he could further his Concept of Wind, then in addition to a basic understanding of the Concept of Space, Lin Ming was confident he could break through to the second layer of ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’. At that time, his strength would rise.

Chapter 547 – Enhanced Concepts

Chapter 547 – Enhanced Concepts

…

…

…

As Lin Ming immersed his consciousness into the jade slip, not only did he see an introduction to the Concept of Wind, but also a variety of images. Lin Ming watched the swirling breeze images for a long time, perceiving the endless mysteries contained within. The patterns of wind contained within the jade slip seemed to have an infinite variety of changes, as if it could be fused into a spear or step…

Lin Ming decided to test it out. In the practice area, he used 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void'. Although the practice area was only a few dozen foot wide square room, Lin Ming's steps were not restricted at all. He was extremely flexible, and he trailed over the ground, up the wall, over the bed, and even on the ceiling.

The Concept of Wind constantly fused with the Concept of Space. Lin Ming's understanding of 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void' increasingly deepened. After being stuck at the first layer of 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void' for years, he was finally making great progress towards reaching the second layer.

Time passed unconsciously. In his closed-door cultivation, five days passed for Lin Ming.

During this time, Lin Ming would often exhaust his true essence to the limit. After emptying most of his true essence, Lin Ming would take out a high-grade Blood Demon Crystal from his spatial ring, and absorb infernal energy from the air, constantly nourishing his own true essence.

Compared to the mild true essence stones, Blood Demon Crystals, particularly high-grade Blood Demon Crystals, seemed to contain an implacable will. A common weak-will martial artist would find it impossible to absorb.

Lin Ming would first wear down this will before he could smoothly absorb the Blood Demon Crystal's energy. But, in comparison to true essence stones, the advantages of Blood Demon Crystals were obvious. They were able to nourish a martial artist's blood vitality whilst also nourishing their soul.

Peng!

A high-grade Blood Demon Crystal burst apart in Lin Ming's hand. The warm and dark red hue of the crystal had already disappeared, leaving nothing but a pale gray glow behind. It had spent all of its energy.

The infernal blood energy merged into Lin Ming's body, blending with the Heavenly Demon Tattoo before continuing to Lin Ming's dantian where it gathered. Under such favorable cultivation conditions, Lin Ming's 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' could be said to be advancing at a ridiculously rapid pace.

"I've only cultivated for five days but I've used up 10 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals. That's the equivalent of 1000 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals. In addition to the cost of the practice area as well as the pills, jade slips, and other resources, this isn't something that a small sect would be able to afford. All the resources that I have right now were taken from others. None of them could bear to use their wealth so wildly. Not even someone like Lan Xing dared to spend so freely."

There had only been 20 some high-grade Blood Demon Crystals in Lan Xing's spatial ring. It seems that when he cultivated, he had mostly used medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals with the occasional high-grade Blood Demon Crystal mixed in.

The higher realm a martial artist arrived at, the greater the costs were. This was also why common martial artists would forever be inferior to sect martial artists. Likewise, this was also the same reason that martial artists from the mortal worlds would always be inferior to martial artists from the Realm of the Gods.

Lin Ming didn't hesitate to spend any resources. In exchange, the effects on his cultivation were significant. He estimated that it wouldn't be much longer before he could break through to the middle Xiantian realm. At the same time, with his increasing comprehension of the Concept of Wind, he was nearing the second layer border of 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void'.

Lin Ming glanced at the large hourglass in his room. It had been a full five days; it was time for him to go out and rent some battle array discs.

Lin Ming stepped into the transmission array. With a flash of light, he disappeared from the room. In a few more moments he arrived at Morningdew Inn.

This was an old-fashioned inn. The decorations inside weren't luxurious, but it was simple and elegant. It gave off an extremely pleasant and comfortable feeling. In Skysplit Tower, this sort of style was extremely rare.

"Sir Lin."

When Lin Ming entered Morningdew Inn, a beautiful young Fey girl was already quietly standing there. After she had received Lin Ming's order, she had arrived here before the break of dawn and had been waiting here until the present time. As she saw Lin Ming walk in, she quickly welcomed him. She didn't dare to be the least bit negligent when it came to the tower challengers, especially one as powerful as Lin Ming.

"How is the matter that I asked of you?"

"Sir Lin, please rest assured that I have contacted every place possible. A quasi Emperor level battle array disc is almost only rented out by the official Skysplit Tower offices and they do so at proper prices. There should be no issues with authority ranking."

"Great. Bring me there."

....

The eastern section of the second floor also held the largest trading market. Not only was there the official Skysplit Tower store, but there were also private shops and stalls held by martial artists.

Without exception, everything here was the highest quality goods. After all, everyone that came to Skysplit Tower had a deep background. If anyone dared to pull out some garbage to sell, then no one would buy it. Instead, they would even be ridiculed by others.

As Lin Ming and the young Fey girl walked forwards, they saw a greater number of martial artists that had set up stalls in the street. These stalls stretched out as far as the road did.

"It's really lively here." Lin Ming had been at Skysplit Tower for a while already but he had never come to the public marketplace. It could be said that he had been missing out.

"Mm… because of the constant fighting in Skysplit Tower, murder is commonplace here. After someone dies, their property will be taken. There are many things that aren't needed, thus they are then brought here and sold. This is why the trading market is so busy. Setting up a stall here for just a single day costs 50 medium-grade true essence stones. Also, fighting is restricted here. If anyone dares to stir up trouble, they will be chased down by the enforcement squad, so there isn't normally a problem with security."

The young Fey girl was very familiar with the workings of the second floor. She patiently explained this all to Lin Ming.

"So that's how it is. Most of those killed are the heroic youths of the largest sects, so naturally they wouldn't be lacking in possessions. This Skysplit Tower is truly the paradise of the strong. Even if one is broke, they can still loot a great deal of resources from others as long as they have the ability to do so. At the same time, they can also purchase the highest quality materials and pills that Skysplit Tower has to offer as well as receive the treatment of an Emperor.

Lin Ming casually glanced over at the stalls. He saw a stall that specialized in selling various jade slips. The cultivation method jade slips were marked at 500 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals each.

If a single jade slip was worth 500 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals, then a dozen or so of those jade slips could be almost 10,000 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals. The scale of transactions of just this small stall was not something that even a third-grade sect could compare to.

But, the stall vendor's attitude was too wretched. He was dismissive, unhelpful, and unbelievably rude. He shooed away anyone that was only looking.

This attitude left one tongue-tied. These martial artists were normally the most arrogant and proud of their generation. Even if they set up a stall and were hawking items, they still wouldn't lower their heads to others.

Lin Ming stopped in front of a stall in a larger area. The vendor was a fat Fey man. A Fey martial artist was usually slim, compact, and graceful. It was rare to see such a fat Fey like this.

The fat vendor looked a bit lackadaisical, as if he wasn't noticing anyone at all. But as he saw Lin Ming walk over, his eyes widened. "Lin Ming?"

After Lin Ming's fight with Lan Xing, he had become infamous. He was already recognized as one of the top ten powerhouses of Skysplit Tower's second floor.

"Haha, Young Hero Lin graces my little store. Is there anything that you need?" The fat vendor grinned as he spoke. Although he was surprised to see Lin Ming here, he wasn't scared at all. Instead, he had a teasing tone.

"I want to exchange for some new Blood Demon Crystals."

In the trading market, the common currency was medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals. Occasionally, there would be high-grade Blood Demon Crystals. Low-grade Blood Demon

Crystals were never used. Besides some that servants were rewarded with, no one ever used them. It was because they were simply too slow to cultivate with.

"Oh? Would you like to exchange some medium-grade ones for high-grade?" The fat vendor's eyes shined as he correctly guessed Lin Ming's thoughts.

"Yes."

The fat vendor blinked and said, "Young Hero Lin is a rich man! Ah, medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals must be too slow for you. If you want to exchange for some high-grade Blood Demon Crystals, then of course you can! If you exchange for at least ten, then I can do a trade with you of one for every 115."

The normal conversion cost was normally 100 to one. But in Skysplit Tower, this price was more appropriate, as high-grade Blood Demon Crystals were much rarer.

"Alright!" Lin Ming readily agreed, "I'll trade for 100."

100 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals were equal to 11,500 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals. After Lin Ming acquired all of Lan Xing's wealth, this was a simple amount to produce.

"Hey, I only have 30 available right now. I'll give them to you in advance." As the fat vendor spoke, he took out a small jade box from his spatial ring. He opened it, revealing rows of incomparably pure high-grade Blood Demon Crystals.

A rich blood energy mixed with pure heaven and earth origin energy leaked out into the air. The young Fey girl's eyes widened. As she saw over 30 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals suddenly presented in front of her, this sight was just too visually shocking.

She couldn't help but take several deep breaths, as if she wanted to suck up all the heaven and earth origin energy that the high-grade Blood Demon Crystals were emanating. This sort of pure origin energy was extremely helpful if she could attract some into her meridians.

Truly, comparing between people was ridiculous. These top geniuses already had naturally heaven-defying talents. If they also used this sort of Blood Demon Crystal to cultivate, then the rate of their practice speed could be imagined.

The young Fey girl helplessly mused to herself.

Lin Ming glanced at the jade box. After he confirmed that there was the correct number, he bluntly handed out 3450 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals and took the jade box.

"I'll come back in a few days for the rest. 100 pieces are too few and 200 pieces are too many."

Lan Xing had more than 30,000 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals in his spatial ring. Lin Ming had planned to spend 20,000 of them and use the rest for cultivating.

"Okay. I'll help you raise the rest within ten days." The fat vendor promised. He wasn't some nobody from the second floor, otherwise he wouldn't have been able to instantly produce 30 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals.

Lin Mind nodded. He turned to the young Fey girl and said, "Let's go and buy some array discs."

"Ah… alright."

Exchanging for these high-grade Blood Demon Crystals was only a small trip. Lin Ming's main destination today was the center of the trading market, where the Hundred Treasures Hall was located.

Hundred Treasures Hall was a store opened up by a ten-winged High Lord of Skysplit Tower. They only sold the highest quality of all high quality items.

As for battle array discs with quasi Emperor level masters, Hundred Treasures Hall had the most comprehensive collection. It was several times superior to what was at the registration office.

Hundred Treasures Hall was nine stories high. The surroundings were all covered and protected by different spells. After Lin Ming stepped inside, he saw that there were only seven or eight martial artists within. These places never had too many people.

But of these seven or eight martial artists, Lin Ming actually recognized one.

“Mm? It’s you?”

Before Lin Ming even said anything, the other party had already spoken.

Chapter 548 – Eighth Stage Life Destruction

Chapter 548 – Eighth Stage Life Destruction

…

…

…

A black-clothed girl stood in front of Lin Ming. She wore a dark veil, and one could faintly make out the edges of her face. In terms of beauty, she did not lose at all to the Fey. She was tall and curved, and she wasn't much shorter than Lin Ming. A light infernal energy emitted from her body.

That symbolized that this beautiful girl also walked the killing path.

This girl was named Muk Qing. Lin Ming had encountered her along the road as he was headed to the Blood Slaughter Steppes. Her cultivation had actually increased by a small realm since he had last seen her.

Only a mere month had passed. This girl's growth left Lin Ming speechless. Her talent was probably no less than Mu Qianyu's.

"You're also on Skysplit Tower's second floor?" Lin Ming was surprised. With this black-clothed girl's strength, she barely qualified to reach the second floor.

Within Skysplit Tower, one could enter the first level as long as they paid a Blood Demon Crystal. But, if one wished to enter the second floor, they would need a certain level of cultivation or have astonishing strength, enough that they could fight their way from the first floor.

Normally, the first floor was commonly referred to as the outer city. The second floor and above was called the inner city. Muk Qing had once evenly fought a Giant Demon in the outer city. Now that her cultivation had increased by a small realm, she barely qualified for the second floor. If she entered the martial arena as she was now, she would probably be eaten alive.

“Mm? Is there a problem?” After being completely outdone by Lin Ming in Sun Flood City, Muk Qing had always remained somewhat unconvinced.

Lin Ming laughed. “I naturally don’t have a problem. I just think that you...”

Lin Ming had wanted to give her a few words of advice. But as he thought about it, it was better if he didn’t meddle in other people’s business. Muk Qing’s senior-apprentice brother was obviously a veteran challenger of Skysplit Tower, so he had probably figured this out himself.

“Have you stepped onto the martial arena stage yet?” Lin Ming casually asked.

“I haven’t. I just arrived at the second floor. My senior-apprentice brother has already rented out a practice area in the second floor for me. He wants me to cultivate for a year before I test myself.” As Muk Qing spoke to here, her lips curled. Apparently she wasn’t satisfied with Muk Gu’s arrangements.

“Haha, practice well first. Skysplit Tower has very good areas to cultivate in. From what I know, there are many heroic youths that come to Skysplit Tower and cultivate for a year or two before they step onto the martial stage.

Lin Ming suddenly realized that Muk Gu only allowed Muk Qing to come to the second floor to cultivate. With her talent, she would have the qualifications to challenge the martial arena after she practiced for a year. This was certainly a good idea, but one also had to have the required resources to do so.

As he was thinking, a black-clothed man walked through the doors of Hundred Treasures Hall. This person was tall, lofty, and had an imposing appearance. He exuded a faintly haughty attitude. This man was Muk Qing's senior-apprentice brother, Muk Gu.

"To think that it's you! To think that we've met three times already, this must be the hand of fate." As soon as Muk Gu saw Lin Ming he cupped his fists together. He wasn't too surprised that he saw Lin Ming in Skysplit Tower. After all, when he saw Lin Ming in Sun Flood City, he had guessed that Lin Ming would most likely come to Polaris City.

Muk Gu was naturally happy if he could make friends with such a heroic youth like Lin Ming. If Lin Ming didn't die in the future, then he had high chances of approaching the Divine Sea realm. If he could become friends with a quasi Emperor level powerhouse, then the advantages could be imagined.

Lin Ming also cupped his fists together, returning the kindness.

"My name is Muk Gu. May I know yours?" This was the second time that Muk Gu had introduced himself.

Lin Ming had no need to hide his identity. He said, "My name is Lin Ming."

"Lin Ming?" Muk Gu was stunned for a moment before immediately laughing. "So that's how it is! You're that human genius I've been hearing about that caused a complete blowout and also defeated Lan Xing. This is really too great of a coincidence. In truth, I should have thought about this earlier."

Muk Gu had brought Muk Qing to the second floor of Skysplit Tower while Lin Ming had been in closed-door seclusion. As soon as he arrived at the second floor, he had heard the rumors about Lin Ming. Originally, he assumed that someone with the skill to defeat Lan Xing would be around 24 or 25 years old. That, he could still accept. But he never imagined that Lin Ming was the youth that he had bumped into at the entrance to the Blood Slaughter Steppes. He was even younger than Muk Qing!

This was seriously incredible. His previous judgment of Lin Ming had already been extremely high. But now, it seems as if he had underestimated him.

With Lin Ming's talent, as long as he didn't fall here, then he had over a 90% chance of becoming a Divine Sea powerhouse.

As Muk Gu thought of this, his smile became more radiant and welcoming. Even if he couldn't become good friends with such a person, he could at least leave a good impression so that they didn't have conflict in the future.

"Brother Muk's praise is too high." Lin Ming casually replied.

Muk Qing, who was standing near Muk Gu, was staring at Lin Ming with disbelief. Her eyeballs were rapidly turning. She had just arrived at the second floor a few days ago, and this fellow was Lin Ming?

To Muk Qing, a complete blowout wasn't much at all. But, defeating a master of the second floor who could rank in the first tier was another matter altogether; it was somewhat hard to believe. She had accompanied Muk Gu to watch some matches in the martial arena, and although they were some of the lower level martial artists, she couldn't help but admit that if she were the one onstage, she might not be able to defeat them.

"Have you come to Hundred Treasures Hall to buy some things?" Muk Gu asked, a bit curious. When he had seen Lin Ming buy a mount at Sun Flood City, he didn't seem to have any wealth on him. Otherwise, he wouldn't have taken out such a massive pile of impure low-grade Blood Demon Crystals to buy a second-rate mount.

He really didn't know where this Lin Ming fellow came from.

"I'm not here to buy things, I came to rent out some battle array discs."

"Battle array discs? We're also here to rent some. Hundred Treasures Hall's battle array discs all record a minimum of late Revolving Core powerhouses battling. There are even sixth stage and seventh stage Life Destruction powerhouses and quasi Emperor masters. The higher level array discs are all on the upper floors. Let's go up together."

"Okay."

The four of them made their way up. Hundred Treasures Hall had a total of nine floors. One could casually enter the first few, but the higher ones required necessary qualifications to enter. As they arrived at the fourth floor, a handsome servant blocked them.

"Guests, please show proof of identification. Only four-winged Heavenly Demon martial artists or above may enter this floor."

Lin Ming didn't bother playing around and directly took out his status token. His own Heavenly Demon Tattoo had already surpassed four wings, so there naturally wasn't a problem. As for Muk Gu, he was close to reaching the realm of six-winged Heavenly Demon.

But Muk Qing was lacking; she didn't even have the first two wings completed on her Heavenly Demon Tattoo. As Lin Ming thought that Muk Qing would be barred from entering, Muk Gu took out a jade slip that looked like a pass token from his spatial ring and handed it over to the servant. The servant glanced over it and then allowed Muk Qing to enter; he even allowed the young Fey girl that accompanied Lin Ming to enter too. The young Fey girl was pleasantly surprised. After all, to a low level martial artist like her, the higher floors of Hundred Treasures Hall were a legend. She had only heard mysterious stories about this place.

Lin Ming glanced at Muk Gu with surprise. He wondered just what sort of background Muk Gu had. But as he looked back at the servant, he found the servant remained calm and not particularly impressed. If Lin Ming didn't guess wrong, then that jade slip was most likely a special privilege given to the more advanced challengers of Skysplit Tower.

Thinking this, Lin Ming didn't bother inquiring further. The group finally arrived at the fifth floor of Hundred Treasure Hall, and a purple-robed middle-aged man welcomed them with a jovial laugh. He dusted off his clothes and said with a smile, "What do you need?"

“I want to rent battle array discs.” Lin Ming said.

“What cultivation boundary do you need?”

“Quasi Emperor level.”

“Oh?” The purple-robed man was startled. A quasi Emperor level battle array disc was expensive to rent. A normal martial artist wouldn’t be able to afford it. “How many would you like?”

“Five.” Lin Ming calmly replied.

With this answer, not only was the purple-robed man stunned, but even Muk Gu was dazed. He had come here with Muk Qing to rent out battle array discs, but he had only planned to rent out 10 first or second stage Life Destruction master battle array discs.

As for the quasi Emperor level disc, because of Muk Qing’s repeated nagging, he finally caved in and decided to bleed a bit of heart blood and rent one for her as an eye opener. Just this was enough to cause Muk Gu to feel a deep painful loss, yet Lin Ming had requested to rent out five in a single go. This was just too extravagant!

As he turned to look at Muk Qing, he saw that she had a look of dissatisfaction on her face. Apparently she was complaining inwardly about what a stingy man he was. Muk Gu could only ruefully smile. This Lin Ming fellow really didn’t care about slaughter points at all.

“Please come here.” The purple-robed man immediately respectfully escorted Lin Ming and the group to an elegantly furnished room. This room had a very exquisite layout. There was an antique octagonal table in the center along with four wicker chairs.

As two pretty Pulse Condensation period girls saw guests come in, they immediately carried pots of tea and kneeled down, placing cups on the table and pouring the tea.

“Several guests, please try this tea. This is Five Color Spirit Tea. It is made from five different special tea leaves and specially processed. Not only is the taste sublime, but it can also nourish the soul.”

Lin Ming nodded and took a sip. Really, this tea was very fragrant.

“What sort of battle array discs does Young Hero need? Human Life Destruction powerhouses? Giant Demon or Fey quasi Emperors?”

Lin Ming said, “The race doesn’t matter. As long as they are a quasi Emperor level master that is skilled in the Concept of Time, the Concept of Space, and the Concept of Wind, then it will do. I need a total of five.”

When Lin Ming had caused a complete blowout, he had earned a total of ten slaughter points. Then, he had taken three from Lan Xing, for a total of 13 points. When he rented his practice area, that cost five points, and when he rented the quasi Emperor battle array disc, that had been another. Now he had seven points remaining. He could afford to spend five points to rent some battle array discs.

The purple-robed man thought for a moment and then said to a girl, “Go to the first pavilion, third pavilion, seventh pavilion, and bring over all of the battle array discs…”

“Yes.”

The young girl bowed and left. The purple-robed man said, “If you want to search for a master skilled in the Concepts of Wind, Space, and Time, then I’m afraid we might not be able to collect five. We do happen to have a top master that is familiar with the Laws of Space and Time, and this would be consistent with Young Hero’s requirements, but it’s only that…”

“Only what?”

The purple-robed man smiled and said, “This master isn’t a quasi Emperor. Although his cultivation hasn’t reached the Divine Sea realm, he is actually an eighth stage Life

Destruction martial artist. In terms of strength, he is beyond even Demon Emperors and Fey Emperors!”

“Mm?” Lin Ming’s mind stirred.

Eighth stage Life Destruction!

He had heard about human eighth stage Life Destruction powerhouses before, but he had never seen them for himself. He never thought that there would be a battle array disc that recorded an eighth stage Life Destruction master!

Chapter 549 – Muk Gu’s Suggestion

Chapter 549 – Muk Gu’s Suggestion

…

…

…

Lin Ming had long been looking forwards to witnessing an eighth stage Life Destruction master. Ever since he had arrived at the Holy Demon Continent, one fact had constantly been pounded into him. This was that humanity’s talent was mediocre!

In terms of bodily strength, humans were inferior to the Giant Demons and Goliaths. In terms of soul force, they were weaker than the Imps. In terms of Law affinity, they could not hold a candle to the Fey.

The one small advantage that humans had was in their perception. But, this wasn’t an obvious trait because they weren’t much better than the Fey.

In such a situation, how could humans defeat other martial artists of the same level? Along with the Ferals, they were constantly bullied within the Holy Demon Continent.

After Lin Ming learned of this, he didn’t feel comfortable. After all, he was also a human. If the talent of humanity was naturally poor, then that meant he would encounter countless difficulties in his future cultivation.

It wasn’t until later that he had heard about humanity’s Life Destruction. After Life Destruction, one would be reborn. Slowly, their physical vitality would catch up to that of the Giant Demons. This was especially true of human powerhouses that reached seven or eight stages of Life Destruction. Their physical strength would instead surpass the Giant Demon race’s!

An eight stage Life Destruction master would not lose in strength to a Demon Emperor!

Thus, to humans, Life Destruction was a special realm associated with Revolving Core. It was a cocoon-like rebirth process. The dangers were obvious, but once passed, one would shatter the cocoon and emerge a butterfly, transforming into a more perfect existence.

Giant Demons and Goliaths did not undergo Life Destruction. In terms of strength, a Demon Emperor was on par with a Divine Sea master that had undergone five or six stages of Life Destruction. As for a seven stage Life Destruction Divine Sea Supreme Elder, a Demon Emperor was somewhat weaker. But compared to an eighth stage Life Destruction Divine Sea powerhouse, they were by far inferior.

Unfortunately, whether it was the Sky Spill Continent or the Holy Demon Continent, there were very few humans that managed to cross eight stages of Life Destruction. Crossing six stages of Life Destruction was already considered elite. Most martial artists could not withstand the pressure and unimaginable pain of a single Life Destruction, and would perish during their attempt to reach the third or fourth stage.

This was also the reason that it was so much more difficult for humans to produce a Divine Sea Supreme Elder than it was for the Giant Demons to produce a Demon Emperor.

“I want to rent that array disc, how many slaughter points will it be?” Lin Ming was greatly interested in this quasi Emperor level array disc. Ignoring the fact that the martial artist was an eighth stage Life Destruction master, what was most important was that he was a powerhouse that comprehended the Laws of Space and Time!

The Laws of Space and Time were illusory concepts, it was rare for a human to understand them.

At the same time, someone that could survive eight stages of Life Destruction was even rarer.

With the two combined, this human powerhouse was undoubtedly a genius amongst geniuses.

In the future, perhaps he might even soar into the Realm of the Gods!

Towards a battle array disc of such a legendary character, Lin Ming definitely wanted it!

The purple-robed man said, “This battle array disc should technically require a three-star authority. But since it’s placed on the second floor, a two-star authority should barely suffice. It will require three slaughter points as well as 3000 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals.

Three slaughter points! 3000 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals!

Muk Gu, who had been standing near Lin Ming, staggered as he heard this price. This sort of price was completely terrifying! Talk about scary!

Lin Ming didn’t hesitate to agree. Being able to look at the phantom battle of this fight was most important. Slaughter points were nice, but they could be earned again. As long as he could further his comprehensions, wasting any amount of slaughter points was worth it.

The purple-robed man saw Lin Ming agree and immediately beamed with joy. This time, he didn’t even ask his servant, he personally went into the storage area to retrieve the battle array disc.

After the purple-robed man walked away, Muk Gu heard Muk Qing’s true essence sound transmission in his ear, “Senior-apprentice Brother!”

Muk Gu’s ear rang. He began to complain in his heart. If he had known about this today, then he wouldn’t have followed Lin Ming up here. Who knew that this Lin Ming fellow actually didn’t care about money at all!

“Junior-apprentice Sister, please don’t ask me for that quasi-Emperor level battle array disc. It just isn’t a price that I can afford.”

“It’s not that. I just want to… do you think that… after Lin Ming has finished watching the battle array disc, he might let us borrow it?”

Muk Gu shook his head, “Even if you want to, he might not let you. And even if he did, do you think that you are the first to think of borrowing others’ battle array discs? Skysplit Tower already has rules in place regarding this. Every battle array disc has spells engraved into it. Only that specific person can watch it, even if others wanted to they wouldn’t be able to. If they forcefully break the spells and violate the rules, then the consequences will be dire.”

Muk Gu’s words dashed away Muk Qing’s hopes. But, her heart still itched with want. That was a battle array disc that recorded an eighth stage Life Destruction Master! This sort of character was even rarer than a general Divine Sea Supreme Elder.

Let alone an eight stage Life Destruction, even a seven stage Life Destruction was extraordinary. In the entire Holy Demon Continent, there was almost a hundred human Divine Sea Supreme Elders. In comparison, the number of individuals that passed eight stages of Life Destruction could be counted on a single hand!

How could Muk Qing not want to see this battle array disc?

Muk Gu was naturally able to sense Muk Qing’s thoughts. He said, “Aren’t you convinced yet? In fact, if you can fight for three slaughter points then you can rent that battle array disc. I can help you with the Blood Demon Crystals.”

Relative to three slaughter points, 3000 Blood Demon Crystals was nothing.

As Muk Qing heard Muk Gu say this, she was suddenly discouraged. Although she was an arrogant and proud talent of her generation, after coming to Skysplit Tower she had been able to see that gap that existed between her and all the other heroic elite youths here. She didn’t think that she would be able to acquire three slaughter points in a year.

The purple-robed man quickly came back. He had a cube-shaped box wrapped in yellow silk. He carefully opened the silk, revealing a jade box that was sealed with layers of spells.

The fine jade box was carved with exquisite patterns and was warm to the touch. The purple-robed man began to slowly unravel the spells one at a time, before handing over a heavy array disc from within the jade box to Lin Ming.

"Young Hero, this is it!"

Lin Ming swept over the array disc with his divine sense, finding it hard to quell the beating excitement in his heart. He quickly took out a box of Blood Demon Crystals from his spatial ring and passed it over to the purple-robed man. "Here are 5000 medium-grade blood Demon Crystals. I want this array disc as well at two more quasi Emperor level battle array discs."

"Great! Please wait a moment." The purple-robed man smiled as he received the Blood Demon Crystals. The reason that he could manage Hundred Treasures Hall was because he had a good relationship with the ten-winged High Lord that owned this store. If Hundred Treasures Hall had great profits, then he would benefit too. It looked like today would be a great deal for him.

Soon, Lin Ming chose two array discs with the help of the purple-robed man and the servant. The two array discs were both recordings of quasi Fey Emperors. They were respectively skilled in the Concept of Wind and the Concepts of Space and Time.

After Lin Ming finished, Muk Qing also found an array disc that she liked. But after being exposed to the eighth stage Life Destruction battle array disc that Lin Ming rented, her originally excited mood was dampened somewhat.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, since I'm several years your elder, I'll call you Junior-apprentice Brother Lin. Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, I have a suggestion for you..."

"Oh? Brother Muk, please speak." Lin Ming turned to listen to Muk Gu after putting away the array discs.

"It's about this. Does Brother Lin remember that after Lan Xing obtained his ten win streak, he was challenged by a senior powerhouse challenger? I think it was Huyan Luo, right?"

"Mm, yes."

Muk Gu said, "The truth is, Skysplit Tower has unspoken rules. After a newcomer obtains a ten win streak, a veteran challenger will come out for the eleventh battle. This is because after a martial artist's winning streak is stopped, their slaughter point will be given to the person that can break their winning streak. Thus, everyone wants to fight in the eleventh match and take away that slaughter point."

"There are too many monks and too little meat. Simply put, there just isn't enough to go around, thus the powerhouses form rules with each other to divvy up these points. Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, your strength is already enough to step into the second floor's first-tier. You also have the qualifications to fight for such chances."

"Oh? There's something like this?" Lin Ming swallowed down a cup of tea. This really was a good method to earn slaughter points. Otherwise, just relying on a winning streak to earn slaughter points was extremely limited. This was because the higher one's winning streak became, the less matches there were to be found.

Muk Gu said, "This is the easiest way for martial artists to obtain slaughter points in Skysplit Tower. But, you have to be careful of a few people. One is the Fey woman, her nickname is the Sable Witch, and her fighting style is unpredictable and strange. Another one is a Goliath named Xue Man. His strength is incredible and his nature is extremely bloodthirsty; rarely does anyone survive after meeting him onstage. The last one is the Giant Demon Xing Tian. This person has already stayed on the second floor for three years. Out of all of the martial artists on the second floor, his strength is the most terrifying!"

"What? He's stayed here for three years? In three whole years he hasn't gone to the third floor?" Lin Ming was surprised. When he was on the first floor, one had to go to the second floor after they reached a 12 win streak or achieved a complete blowout.

But on the second floor, it seemed that no one wanted to go to the third floor. Blackrat himself had already obtained a 19 win streak on the second floor.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. He asked Muk Gu, “What floor are you at?”

Muk Gu said, “I’m on the third floor.”

“With your strength, would you easily be in the second floor’s first-tier? It shouldn’t be too difficult to earn slaughter points here.”

Muk Gu wryly smiled, “No, I’m already over the age limit; I can only stay on the third floor. In truth, a martial artist only needs to obtain a 20 win streak or surpass a five-star Demon General cultivation level. If they can satisfy any of these conditions then they can enter the third floor. However, there are actually very few martial artists that desire to go to the third floor. They will only go if they arrive at the age limit. This is because it is much easier to gain slaughter points on the second floor, and the martial artists of the third floor are both older and have higher cultivations.

“There are many senior martial artists on the second floor that are extremely strong, and have long since gained the qualifications to enter the third floor. But, they actually stay on the second floor for several years. For instance, Xing Tian. He absolutely is a terrifying being. Although I’m on the third floor, I have to admit that I am far from his match. If you negotiate with him, then you have to be careful not to anger him. Although your strength is considered in the first-tier here, the difference in strength between the martial artists of the first-tier are enormous. This Xing Tian has already obtained a Hundred Win Emblem. On the second floor, he is almost a King.”

Lin Min nodded. If he accumulated slaughter points on the second floor and exchanged them for a massive amount of resources, then in combination with painstaking cultivation, he would progress at tremendous speeds. If he continued this for three or four years, his strength would be terrifying.

Lin Ming said, “I thank Brother Muk for the pointers. I will look for the veteran challengers of the second floor and negotiate for my slaughter points.”

“Mm. Us humans are a minor group in Skysplit Tower, so we will receive unfair treatment here. If you have to fight, then fight, but if you can endure, then endure. Adapt to the situation and don’t be too impulsive.” Muk Gu thought for another moment and said these words.

Chapter 550 – Xing Tian

Chapter 550 – Xing Tian

…

…

…

Deep within the abyss that was the source of all infernal energy, in a deep underground chamber, there was a shimmering dark space. Here, a dim candle shined in the dark. Infernal energy here was rich to the point that it condensed into a thick layer of black fog. The candlelight flickered between the black fog, shadowy and macabre.

In the middle of this dark chamber floated a long table. Currently, there were six battle array discs on the table. These battle array discs had already been injected with energy, and phantom images appeared atop the array discs.

These floating phantoms were recorded scenes of some fights of Skysplit Tower's challengers. On one of the array discs, there was even a scene playing of Lin Ming and Lan Xing's battle.

"Brother Shengong, this is the data on the currently listed six individuals. What do you think?"

A square-faced, 30 some year old looking man opened his mouth. On his arm, there was a tattoo of a fierce demon. The size of the tattoo was several times greater than a normal martial artist's, and every texture and line of the tattoo was very clear. As one counted, this tattoo had a total of ten wings.

A ten-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo was the symbol of Skysplit Tower's High Lords.

“The third floor’s Bai Ling and the second floor’s Lin Ming are too inexperienced; there isn’t any need to fear them.”

The one that answered was a Giant Demon martial artist. He also looked to be in his mid-thirties and his body was wrapped in thick chains. There was also a ten-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo on his arm.

The square-faced man thought for a moment and said, “Although these two have a low cultivation, their talent is exceptional. If we let them develop, they might be able to threaten our status in the future.”

In Polar Skysplit Tower, there was a total of 12 ten-winged Heavenly Demon High Lords. If a new Heavenly Demon High Lord was born, then they would have to split the wealth. Many of the older Heavenly Demon High Lords didn’t want to see this situation occur.

In this case, when a martial artist reached an eight-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo, the High Lords would send someone to negotiate with them. If these martial artists were willing to accept their conditions, they could become a demon envoy under their control and both parties could be happy. If the martial artist refused, then the High Lords would use a more forceful approach and cause them to be defeated on the arena stage, causing them to lose a massive amount of infernal energy.

“These two can be placed under closer observation. The difficult ones to deal with are the other four, especially that fellow called Da Gu. He’s getting close and closer to becoming a ten-winged Heavenly Demon! Is he not willing to accept our conditions?”

The square-faced man said, “Da Gu is very stubborn; he simply doesn’t bother with the messenger that we sent to him. Half a year ago we started to gather together the famous seven-star Heavenly Demons of the third floor, and now we already have five of them. But, it’s just this Da Gu that is refusing to yield. His Heavenly Demon Tattoo has already reached over eight wings. If he defeats some more masters and has a few more chances then he will become a ten-winged Heavenly Demon.”

“Humph, his ambitions are quite lofty. To think that he actually wants to become a ten-winged Heavenly Demon. The more and more infernal energy one gathers in their Heavenly Demon Tattoo, the more difficult it becomes to accumulate. However, it can be lost extremely fast. As long as he is defeated, he will lose at least 60 to 70% of his infernal energy.” The Giant Demon surnamed Shengong sneered as he spoke.

“That’s fine. But other than Da Gu, we can’t lower our guards against the others either. We have to prepare contingencies for them.”

“Mm… we should try to finish the other five as soon as possible. We can leave Bai Ling to Gumu Lang. As for Lin Ming, since he’s on the second floor, we can have Xing Tian handle him…”

As the Giant Demon spoke to here, he took out a sound transmitting talisman from his spatial ring. With a wave of his hand, he lit it on fire.

…………………………

“The High Lord wants me to take care of Lin Ming?” Xing Tian muttered as a bright flame flashed in front of him. He had been cultivating in his secret chamber when the voice of High Lord Shengong sounded in his ears.

Skysplit Tower was a collection of contradictions. On one hand, Skysplit Tower put out a great deal of tempting conditions such as pills, cultivation method manuals, battle array discs, and various other resources in order to attract all the geniuses of the Holy Demon Continent to come here and kill each other. Because these geniuses gathered, they brought along their various destinies. After they died, their blood would soak the ground and become the essential fertilizer for Skysplit Tower’s infernal energy.

But on the other hand, the High Lords of Skysplit Tower did not wish for the tower challengers to experience true growth. Because if they did, then their interests would be threatened and they would have to divide their power.

Simply put, the ideal scenario that the 12 Heavenly Demon High Lords wished for was this: All of the geniuses of the continent would gather at Skysplit Tower. Here, they would endlessly kill each other until there was no one left, bringing and leaving the massive amount of wealth and resources that they had accumulated in their lives, while their blood became the water the nourished Skysplit Tower's source of infernal energy.

Or, if an individual was to grow, then they would obey the 12 High Lords and work as their minion, maintaining the daily operations of Skysplit Tower for them.

If this didn't work, then they could reluctantly accept that this genius would leave Skysplit Tower before becoming a ten-winged Heavenly Demon. Although they would take away a massive amount of infernal energy and wealth with them, they wouldn't harm the essential infernal energy of Skysplit Tower.

It could be said that any genius that wished to become a ten-winged High Lord was their enemy. They would do anything to stop them, even if it meant killing them. Regarding the great sects that lay behind these geniuses, the ten-winged High Lords simply didn't care, nor were they afraid of any retaliation. This was because the Blood Slaughter Steppes were forbidden grounds for the strong due to the mysterious curse that existed here. Any top powerhouse from the outside would die a miserable death if they came, and even Emperor level powerhouses were no exception.

This way, the 12 ten-winged High Lords were the local tyrants of Polaris City. Here, they were gods.

"I didn't expect that this Lin Ming would have developed his Heavenly Demon Tattoo to such an extent after just arriving at the second floor, at least enough that the High Lord is concerned. If this boy grows up, he could be quite an interesting match. But… since the High Lord has given the command, I will eliminate him."

Xing Tian extinguished the flame with his hand and slowly stood up. If Lin Ming were a Giant Demon, Fey, or even Imp, then the High Lords might be more agreeable to cooperate. But humans would not receive this preferential treatment.

At this moment, another flame lit in front of Xing Tian. This was a sound transmitting talisman sent from Sable Witch.

As Xing Tian heard the sound transmitting talisman's message, he smiled, "How fun, this is just too interesting! I didn't think that this fellow Lin Ming would actually want to see!"

Xing Tian revealed a thoughtful look, then lifted his feet to leave his chamber…

……………………

The southeast corner of Skysplit Tower's second floor was the most degenerate and depraved area of Skysplit Tower. It was a derelict area that was spooky to walk through. As one walked down the streets, they could see all sorts of restaurants and brothels. There were even prostitutes standing in the streets naked, exposing their bodies to attract potential customers. There were no taboos here.

In the deepest section of this region, there was an extremely luxuriously decorated restaurant. The martial artists referred to this place as the Midnight Gloom Restaurant. This restaurant occupied over one-third of the road.

Here were the most beautiful slaves of the entire second floor, and the most exotic singers. There was a cellar filled with thousand year wine, great treasure, materials, and the tastiest meals.

Of course, the cost of patronizing this establishment was staggering. A single glass of wine costing dozens or even hundreds of medium-grade true essence stones was a normal matter.

Any non top powerhouse of the second floor would not have the courage to set foot in here.

The Midnight Gloom Restaurant didn't have many guests; they didn't even add up to half of the staff.

When Lin Ming first entered the restaurant, he felt a jolt in his heart. At the hall of the restaurant, there was a row of 20 to 30 carefully chosen Fey girls. These Fey girls had exceptional appearances even among the Fey. These girls were all 17 or 18 years old, and all of them wore completely transparent clothing, exposing their beautiful curves and the creamy white skin of their thighs.

Whenever a guest arrived, these girls would greet them with the sweetest smiles. As for the attendants in the main hall, they all served on their knees. They served food on their knees, poured wine on their knees, and even had to accept the harassment of some guests on their knees.

Although these young girls wore clothes that exposed their bodies, most of them were in fact virgins. They had been trained for a long time and were all skilled in a variety of techniques. If one wished to obtain a slave from here, they would have to pay over a thousand Blood Demon Crystals. In the outside world, this was an extreme price that only an idiot would pay.

Before arriving, Lin Ming had already become accustomed to the debauched and degenerate lifestyle of Skysplit Tower. But as he saw this scene, he couldn't help but marvel. In order to satisfy every desire of the guests, the owner of this restaurant pulled out every stop.

As he arrived at outside of a reserved room, a Fey slave knelt on the ground and began to help Lin Ming take off his shoes. Then, she held Lin Ming's feet and pressed them against her full breasts. In the Midnight Gloom Restaurant, it was a custom to warm one's feet on the milky white breasts of a slave.

Lin Ming had no interest in stepping on the chest of a woman who had probably been trampled on all her life. He drew his foot back and coldly said, "You can leave."

"Yes." The slave was surprised, but respectfully excused herself.

Lin Ming lifted his feet and entered the room. As he saw the scene inside, he frowned.

Xing Tian was lounging back, surrounding by five exposed Fey girls. Behind him, a girl had placed his head between her creamy breasts as she rubbed his temples. The other four were all massaging his hands and feet. They were beating, kneading, or even rubbing with their breasts. As for Xing Tian himself, he had a very enjoyable expression. His eyes were squinted, and he looked completely indifferent to Lin Ming's arrival.

Lin Ming quietly entered the room, sitting in front of Xing Tian.

After a long time, Xing Tian opened his eyes and lazily said, "Why are you looking for me?"

Lin Ming put down a glass and emotionlessly said, "In Skysplit Tower, the main method to obtain slaughter points is to end a winning streak. As far as I know, anyone that belongs in the first-tier can obtain these points depending on their own strength, and everyone has a chance to divide the spoils. I want the portion that belongs to me."

After Xing Tian heard Lin Ming's words, he smiled. His smile grew more and more wide, until finally he began to keel over with laughter. All of the surrounding Fey girls were frightened by his behavior.

Lin Ming's frown deepened. His eyes flashed with a cold light as he said, "Is it so funny?"

"Haha, so this is the reason that you're looking for me. You are so… ridiculously stupid!"

Chapter 551 – Decided Battle

Chapter 551 – Decided Battle

…

…

…

Lin Ming scowled. He put down his wine cup and coldly looked at the chuckling Xing Tian, “Are you done laughing?”

“Hehe!” Xing Tian licked his lips and insidiously smiled, his eyes cold, “On Skysplit Tower’s second floor, no one has dared to speak to me like that in years.”

“That is because you haven’t gone to the third floor yet. What’s so funny about my question?” Lin Ming glared at Xing Tian with determination. He didn’t fear Xing Tian’s pressure.

Xing Tian sneered, the infernal energy on his body becoming richer, “You’ve got guts. But I don’t really know if that’s brave or stupid. I have 100 ways to make sure you never arrive at your practice area after leaving the Midnight Gloom Restaurant!”

“You can try.” Lin Ming indifferently said. There was no fear on his face.

“Humph!” Xing Tian coldly snorted, and a murderous light flashed in his eyes. Killing Lin Ming outside of the martial arena could only be done as a last ditch resort. Skysplit Tower amassed its great wealth from the massive number of heroic elites that came here. This was their basis. If followers of the ten-winged High Lords were found to be wantonly killing top talents here, then who would dare to come?

Within the Holy Demon Continent, Skysplit Tower always had a mysterious quality to it. Many geniuses came here for adventure and experience, desiring the rich source of infernal energy as well as the greater amount of cultivation resources here. But they never realized that they themselves were the best fertilizer for the infernal energy here.

The high level characters of Skysplit Tower always hoped that these top geniuses would all die here, but none of them dared to go out and randomly assassinate them. Otherwise, if they did this once or twice and continued, it would inevitably lead to suspicions.

Thus, the Heavenly Demon High Lords would use their minions to get rid of these individuals with the potential to grow. As for the Heavenly Demon High Lords themselves, they would never personally act. They would rather allow a top genius to become a ten-winged Heavenly Demon than damage the reputation of Skysplit Tower.

This could be considered Skysplit Tower's bottom line for how it handled matters.

There were even some sects with incredibly deep histories that were well aware of Skysplit Tower's secrets. But, they still sent their young heroic elites out to Skysplit Tower to adventure. As long as they were strong, then they had no fear. Looking at the greater picture, even if they were weak, they could still leave after becoming an eight-winged Heavenly Demon. This way, both parties would be winners.

Of course, Lin Ming didn't know any of this.

Xing Tian suddenly slyly smiled and restrained all of the infernal energy that he had been emitting. "Hehe, since you want to end others' winning streaks, then I'll be happy to oblige you!"

Lin Ming was silent. He had originally been prepared for rejection, but never thought that Xing Tian would agree with him.

Xing Tian laid down his wine cup and playfully said, "Leave your sound transmission mark. When it's time for you to appear onstage I will inform you."

Lin Ming left behind his sound transmission mark. Since he had no need to chitchat with this fellow, he got up and left.

After Lin Ming left, Xing Tian savagely smiled. Then, he began to take out another sound transmitting talisman…

…………………………

After Lin Ming left the Midnight Gloom Restaurant, he returned to his own practice room. He took off his shirt and sat on the cold stone bed, beginning to meditate.

‘This Xing Tian obviously intends to kill me. On Skysplit Tower’s second floor, those martial artists with the strength to rank in the first-tier should be able to obtain the chance to end others’ winning streaks. But I’m different because I am a human, and just this reason is why Xing Tian wants to kill me? Or were some of the Giant Demons I killed before his family or friends?’

Lin Ming thought for a bit longer but wasn’t able to come up with a concrete reason. In any case, regardless of the results, he had to be ready to deal with whatever came his way. Lin Ming did not fear challenges. Rather, he feared stepping onstage to an empty and floundering silence, where no one would dare to fight him.

He took out the battle array disc from his spatial ring that recorded the fight of the eighth stage Life Destruction martial artist. After he adjusted his mental condition and relaxed, he injected true essence into the battle array disc. Immediately, a series of phantom illusions shot forth from the array disc.

The battlefield was a vast and limitless desert.

Tens of thousands of feet in the air, a white-robed man was flying, holding a sword in both hands.

This man had a very easygoing atmosphere to him. With his loose long hair, he looked a bit lazy and contemptuous. If it wasn’t for him being the only human in the phantom illusions, then Lin Ming wouldn't have imagined that this man was an eighth stage Life Destruction human powerhouse.

"The last time I saw the battle of a quasi Emperor, although I wasn't able to feel an aura from the illusions, I still felt tense and apprehensive. But this time, as I'm looking at this eighth stage Life Destruction senior, it's as if I'm looking at an ordinary person. To be able to return to one's own origin to this degree, it really is startling. Not just that, but he only looks to be in his twenties to thirties. After a martial artist reaches Life Destruction their lifespan will be greatly lengthened. But, to be able to maintain such a youthful appearance means that he stepped into the Life Destruction realm at a very young age. This senior is absolutely a pinnacle existence among all Emperor level talents."

A Saint level talent would stop growing at the first stage of Life Destruction.

An Emperor level talent had the qualifications to step into the Divine Sea. Of course, there were enormous disparities within the Divine Sea. A fifth stage Life Destruction Divine Sea master could probably be instantly killed by an eighth stage Life Destruction Divine Sea powerhouse.

As Ming thought this, he also looked over to the human man's match. The man actually had two opponents. One was a Giant Demon and the other was an Imp. Without a doubt, both were at the quasi Emperor level.

"To think that he's facing off against two people. The Giant Demon race has a powerful body and they excel at close combat fighting. The Imp race has a formidable soul force and excels at long distance attacks. One can attack from afar while the other engages the opponent in combat. This is extremely difficult to deal with; I wonder how this senior will handle this."

Lin Ming waited with bated breath. At this time, the quasi Emperor Giant Demon moved first. He grabbed a massive mountain ax and moved forwards. An earth-shattering wave of true essence surged forwards, causing countless tiny space cracks to appear everywhere.

Although this was only an illusion of the fight, Lin Ming still felt this heaven-destroying attack.

But, that eighth stage Life Destruction human powerhouse only wildly laughed. He grabbed his sword and rushed straight in.

“He’s going to fight him head on?”

Lin Ming’s eyes shined. If a human fought a Giant Demon, they would normally have to depend on their speed to win. If both collided in a frontal attack, then the human would be far inferior to the Giant Demon.

But this senior, facing this Giant Demon’s great strike that seemed to sunder the heavens, rushed straight in without a moment’s hesitation.

From the moment that the sword and mountain ax smashed into each other, sparkling light illuminated the world. Even though there was no sound coming from the phantom illusions, Lin Ming could still imagine the terrifying explosions that even washed the clouds away.

“The Giant Demon was forced back!”

Lin Ming watched with wide eyes as the Giant Demon was cut by the human’s sword and sent soaring back. The Giant Demon spat out a mouthful of blood, seemingly heavily injured.

But at this moment, the quasi Emperor Imp’s withered lips moved and he spat out a number of purple seals.

The human senior saw this and sneered. His sword stabbed forth, and although they were separated by a full distance of 10,000 feet, an incredible scene occurred. The sword simply ignored the 10,000 foot distance and pierced towards the quasi Emperor Imp’s front. It was as if space itself had been squeezed together and then pierced by that human powerhouse’s sword!

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with naked light as he closely tracked this sword. The terrifying utilization of this Concept caused his mind to tremble!

The quasi Emperor Imp panicked. He wanted to dodge this sword, but the space around him suddenly tightened, completely blocking off his every escape route.

Pu!

A sword pierced the heart!

The sword twisted, drawing out a river of blood; the quasi Emperor Imp was split in half!

“He died?” Lin Ming was completely shocked. A quasi Emperor master had died like this!

The quasi Emperor Giant Demon began to panic, his face paling. He apparently hadn’t expected that this human powerhouse’s strength would be so terrifying. He paused for a moment, and then decisively turned to escape.

But at this moment, another implausible scene occurred. The quasi Emperor Giant Demon’s speed suddenly slowed. Although he was trying to fly away with all his strength, his speed wasn’t any faster than a Revolving Core powerhouse’s. It was like he had fallen into a swamp, struggling to move.

By now, the human senior had caught up. A sword stabbed forth!

This sword seemed slow, but it actually instantly appeared right behind the Giant Demon, just where his heart was!

The quasi Emperor Giant Demon wanted to turn around to block this attack, but his speed was caught in a time swamp and he wasn’t able to move in time. Ultimately, the human powerhouse’s sword pierced his heart from behind.

Blood shot into the wind. The quasi Emperor Giant Demon died on the spot.

The phantom illusions ended here!

Lin Ming let out a long breath, inexplicably shocked. Two great quasi Emperors had been killed in three sword strikes!

Compared to eight stages of Life Destruction, a quasi Emperor Giant Demon and Imp were far too lacking. Also, this senior was a genius at comprehending Laws, and had even understood the vague Laws of Time and Space. Thus, all of this together results in a one-sided battle, with the other side being cleanly killed off.

Humans' talent wasn't weak. It was just that the trials they endured were far too cruel. How many people were able to reach the eighth stage of Life Destruction?

But, the more arduous this challenge was, the more Lin Ming was excited. He did not fear the demands of these trials, he only feared that he wouldn't have the chance to even take these trials.

"This human senior's two swords seemed to contained limitless mysteries. I don't know how much I'll be able to perceive through meditation." Lin Ming thought. Just as he was preparing himself to undergo masochistic closed-door seclusion, a fire flashed in front of him; it was a sound transmitting talisman.

Right after, Xing Tian's voice sounded in Lin Ming's ear. "Human boy, you're in luck. Five days from now you will have a chance. A martial artist will obtain a ten win streak. If you're afraid of dying then don't come. Don't complain to me that I never gave you the chance."

"So quick…" Lin Ming pinched out the fire and sneered. No matter what tricks this fellow was trying, he didn't need to bother with it. As long as he had absolute superiority in strength then there was no need to fear anything.

"Five days should be enough for me to meditate on this battle array disc. I might even have some time leftover to enhance my cultivation." As Lin Ming thought of this, he completely put aside the matter of the pending battle. He quickly entered the ethereal martial intent and immersed himself in perceiving the Laws.

During this time, in a dark room at the Midnight Gloom Restaurant, Xing Tian was drinking millennia-aged wine. He was wickedly grinning at a black-skinned man. “Xu Man, I remember you wanted to earn your 70 win streak. That fool Lin Ming is actually thinking of ending others’ winning streaks to gain slaughter points. I think it’s quite appropriate for you to go onstage! Hahahahahaha!”

“Big Brother, although this Lin Ming’s talent is good, in the end he is just a naïve newcomer. You want me to go up? He’s just a dumb rookie. I might not even get a win if I defeat him.” Xue Man said as he tore off a large chunk of barbecue, dissatisfaction heavy in his voice.

Chapter 552 – Middle Xiantian Realm

Chapter 552 – Middle Xiantian Realm

…

…

…

Xing Tian said, “I also think the High Lord is making a big deal over nothing. Although this human’s talent is decent, he hasn’t developed enough that we need to bother with him. It would be better if we wait several years and have him solve some potential problems for us before we act again.”

In Skysplit Tower, letting the geniuses kill each other was the best method to solve all the potential threats. If two strong challengers fought each other, then one of them would be wounded. Lan Xing originally would have been considered a strong threat, but he actually fell at Lin Ming’s hands.

“In any case, this is a direct command handed down by the High Lord. Since it’s so, we have to handle this situation. This is mainly because he is a human – if he were a Giant Demon or Goliath, then High Lord would have been glad to train him.”

…………..

While cultivating in the practice area, Lin Ming was unaware of all that was happening around him. He was in a peculiar state; he grasped his spear, thrusting out again and again, without a single ounce of true essence infused into it.

With Lin Ming’s spear speed, he could have thrust out hundreds of times in a single moment, where even the afterimages would link together and where he wouldn’t cause a single drop of water to splash if he hit a lake. But currently, Lin Ming's spear speed wasn't fast. Rather, it was slow to the point where even a mortal could clearly see it.

Without true essence, without the limit of speed, Lin Ming's spear looked like it was from a martial arts rookie. If his old instructor from the Seven Profound Martial House saw him now, he would certainly criticize that his foundation was weak and give his spear play a bad grade.

It was just that there was something special about Lin Ming's spear moves. Whether it was his speed or trajectory, both were constantly changing, giving off an unpredictable feeling. Sometimes it would start fast and then slow down, or start out in a straight line and then diverge midway.

These strange spear moves seemed very uncoordinated.

Time passed slowly. As the sand in the hourglass slowly dripped down, Lin Ming was completely immersed in his cultivation.

Unconsciously, Lin Ming's spear shadow began to twist. Although the Purple Comet Spear was straight, it seemed to erratically flit around, like a ubiquitous phantom.

Three days passed… five days… ten days…

Before going into closed-door cultivation, Lin Ming had taken three fasting pills to ward off hunger. Now, he had completely forgotten about time and the match that was to be held in five days. In the dark, he practiced his spear, ignorant of everything else.

In this practice area rich with infernal energy, the infernal energy was gradually pushed around by Lin Ming's spear powers. Every spear thrust was filled with killing intent. Although there was no true essence behind it, for some strange reason, when facing this spear, it seemed to be like facing an unstoppable army. The spear seemed to confuse space and time itself, making one unable to accurately determine just where the spear was.

Lin Ming didn't know how many spear strikes he had practiced, but the great hourglass in the corner of the room had already been cleaned of sand.

Lin Ming's eyes suddenly flashed open. In that instant, all of the infernal energy he cultivated with coiled into a whirlpool that centered on Lin Ming's dantian, compressing into essence.

"Middle Xiantian realm!"

Lin Ming let out a long breath, his heart overjoyed. He had finally broken through to the middle Xiantian realm. If he could enter the Revolving Core realm, he would have the ability to return to the South Horizon Region!

Lin Ming glanced over at the hourglass in the corner of the room. Because the sand had already drained down, he didn't know how long he had spent here. Every turn of the hourglass was four days, so it must have been at least four days.

"Over four days passed like that?" Lin Ming was stunned a bit. He thought it had only been 14 or 15 hours. "Xing Tian said I had a five day deadline, I wonder whether I passed it or not. Well, even if I did it doesn't matter."

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then passed a sound transmitting talisman to the young Fey girl. After he asked what day it was and then received her reply, he froze.

It was the Silkfire month, Rainglaze day...

Counting the days since he entered, it had been a total of 30 days!

He had cultivated here for 30 days?

Lin Ming found this hard to believe. Although when a martial artist went into seclusion, it was normal if they did so for eight to 10 years at a time. But, Lin Ming had never experienced such a long closed-door seclusion before. Just like that, 30 days had passed in a flash. But for him, it felt like it had only been several hours.

"It was said that cultivation was timeless. If so, then when I reach the Revolving Core realm, going into closed-door seclusion for 30 days unaware would be nothing. If I were a Life Destruction powerhouse or Divine Sea Supreme Elder, then even dozens of years might pass in the blink of an eye!

Lin Ming looked inward and inspected his dantian and meridians. He found that in his dantian, the true essence cyclone there had already condensed a bit of liquid mist; his foundation couldn't be any more solid. This sort of cultivation effect had far exceeded Lin Ming's hopes.

"I don't know if it's because I entered into an ethereal state or because of the high degree of my spiritual concentration, but the effects of these last 30 days have been far better than usual. Not only did I gain new insights into the Concepts of Space and Time, but my cultivation has firmly stepped into the middle Xiantian realm. If this continues, I wonder if I can reach the Revolving Core realm before I turn 20 years old…"

Normally, a Saint level talent like Mu Qianyu would be able to reach the Revolving Core realm by 30 years of age. A normal Emperor level talent would be able to reach the Revolving Core realm at around 25 or 26 years of age. For someone to reach the Revolving Core realm at 20 years of age… that could be considered unprecedented within the Sky Spill Continent.

…………

"F*ck! Big Brother, we've been tricked by that boy!"

Xue Man was angrily shouting in a restaurant. He had already let out the word that he would fight against Lin Ming five days after obtaining his 70 win streak. But then, not even his shadow was seen.

Now an entire 30 days had passed by!

"This boy clearly knows he isn't my match so he's trying to avoid me. He's hiding in his practice area and not coming out!"

In front of Xue Man, Xing Tian was also frowning. If Lin Ming stayed in that top-grade practice area, then there just wasn't anything they could do to him.

"That boy isn't as stupid as we thought. I thought he was a hot-headed emotional idiot, but to think that he was actually so cautious. Maybe he'll be like Lan Xing and hide away, cultivating for an entire year!"

"An entire year! With his talent, then a year later, even if I can defeat him, I would still have to put in some effort." Xue Man hesitated for a moment. Although he didn't think too highly of Lin Ming's current strength, he had to acknowledge that human boy's latent talent.

"It doesn't matter. Even if we give him more time to cultivate, he'll have to come out sooner or later. I remember that he only rented out that practice area for 50 days. If he just cultivates with nothing else, then there's no reason to come to Skysplit Tower to begin with. If he doesn't experience true combat, then he will inevitably encounter a bottleneck in his cultivation."

There was no martial artist that could rely on just closed-door training to repeatedly break through the shackles of martial arts. They had to go into the wide world, experiencing and adventuring.

As Xing Tian spoke, a bright flame sparked in front of him. After hearing the message, he smiled and said, "Hehe, I never thought this fellow to be so restless. He's already come out, and now he's bathing at the Morningdew Inn."

Xue Man's eyes brightened, "Then let's go to the martial arena. I wonder if this boy will dare to follow."

Xing Tian slyly smiled, "Don't worry. That sound transmitting talisman just now was from that boy. He said to me that he forgot about the time because he was cultivating and that's what took him so long. He also asks me if he can make up the missed opportunity to enter the stage."

Xue Man listened, paused, and then burst out in great laughs, “That boy is really in a hurry to die! I thought he was being careful and afraid to come out, but now it looks like I was just worrying too much.”

“Xue Man, don’t underestimate him. Although his cultivation is low, his strength isn’t. He might have hidden trump cards, so be careful.”

“Heh, don’t worry, I’m well aware!”

……………………

News of Xue Man’s match with Lin Ming spread like a tidal wave.

With a 70 win streak, Xue Man was one of the second floor’s top masters. The Heavenly Demon Tattoo on his arm had already condensed six wings. At his level, it was already difficult to accumulate a higher winning streak unless he ascended to the third level.

With Xue Man acting, it required notification ahead of time in order to attract all the masters. Otherwise, it would just be a complete blowout.

“Oh? Xue Man is fighting today?” In a deteriorated section on the second floor’s southeast area, a martial artist just obtained this news.

“Hey, if Xue Man goes onstage then he’s just playing around. It’s probably going to be a clownish mess.” Another martial artist quickly dismissed the idea.

“Mm. Xue Man is too ruthless, there are rarely any survivors. The average person wouldn’t dare to challenge him, but Skysplit Tower’s second floor is a den of crouching tigers and hidden dragons. Although Xue Man is one of the top masters here, there are several martial artists that aren’t weak either. There’s a chance that one of them managed to break through a realm and declared war on Xue Man. After all, Xue Man has obtained a 70 win streak. If he were defeated, not only could someone obtain seven slaughter points but they’ll also be able to take a certain portion of their winning streak.”

“Let’s go! We’ll head to the martial arena and see what’s going on!”

There were many people that shared this idea. Soon, a great number of martial artists gathered at the martial arena, quickly filled up the auditorium.

Most of them had come to join in on the fun. Over 20 days ago, Xue Man had just obtained his 70 win streak. Now within the entire second floor, there wasn’t anyone that could threaten him besides Xing Tian. Now with him personally going on stage, it would just be a bunch of theatrics; nothing much would come of it.

In this group of people, Lin Ming had changed into a new set of blue robes and entered the martial arena.

The reason that Lin Ming had contacted Xing Tian was entirely for slaughter points. Right now, he only had a mere two slaughter points on him. Once his rental time was up for the top-grade practice area, he would not have the slaughter points to renew it, so he would have to go to a lower level practice area. Lin Ming certainly didn’t want this to happen.

At this moment onstage, there was currently a match happening between a Giant Demon and a Goliath. Lin Ming glanced over before ignoring it. If the other party’s strength was poor, then there was no reason to watch it.

Lin Ming quickly entered into the ethereal martial intent state, and sat with his eyes closed in meditation.

Many of the surrounding martial artists recognized Lin Ming but weren’t concerned with him. The reason that they came today was for Xue Man. Although Lin Ming’s limelight was bright, in the end he was still a newcomer and thus naturally inferior to an established powerhouse.

“You think that someone will challenge Xue Man?” A martial artist suddenly asked.

“I think Crazy Dog might do it. Half a year ago he challenged Xue Man, and although he was defeated, he was able to retreat with his life intact. Against Xue Man, there aren’t many that can leave alive! I heard that Crazy Dog went into closed-door seclusion after his defeat. Today should also be the day that he comes out.”

“Hehe, it’s impossible for Crazy Dog to come out. As far as I know, he still has one month left to cultivate. I think the one stepping up this time might be that Fey Sable Witch…”

Chapter 553 – Fighting Xue Man

Chapter 553 – Fighting Xue Man

…

…

…

As the people were discussing, Lin Ming heard the names of two masters: Crazy Dog and Sable Witch. These two individuals had strength that could be considered in the top ten. They already had the qualifications to enter the third floor, but they refused and chose to stay on the second instead.

At this time, the match occurring on the arena stage was finally settled. The Goliath master was lying face down in a pool of his own blood before he was lifted away by the arena staff. But the Giant Demon master wasn't much better off. He had several severe wounds on his body, and he had used up nearly all of his demon essence.

"Congratulations to Zang Gao for another victory! Now, this is already his fourth win. We applaud this victory and wish him greater glories in the future!" A black-clothed referee announced as he stepped onstage, helping Zang Gao leave. Then, an even more excited expression crossed his face. He shouted loudly, "Now I would like to cordially invite the super master of the second floor who has obtained a 70 win streak onstage. Welcome, Xue Man!"

The black-clothed referee's voice seemed to contain a tremulous power. When he announced Xue Man's name, the entire martial arena broke out in cheers. Many of the Fey women issued piercing screams. Not only were they not afraid of Xue Man's bloodthirsty nature, but rather, it was a symbol of his majestic and domineering nature.

To the audience's loud cheers, the bare-chested Xue Man carried a two-bladed mountain axe onto the stage. He was ten feet tall, and muscles burst out from his body as if his body couldn't contain them. His skin was dark like iron, and his hair was very peculiar – a tight bun twisted on top with everything else shaved off. Whether it was his head, face, or anywhere else on his body, he was entirely covered with scars, as if he had been hewed down by sabers, pierced by swords, scratched with claws, or torn with teeth. All of these scars could have been eliminated with some precious medicines, but Xue Man happily left them on his body as mementos, because these were all the prized symbols of his countless killings.

After Xue Man strode onstage, he stood there like an iron tower. The temperature around him lowered because of the thick infernal energy that coiled around him.

Beside Xue Man, the black-clothed referee only reached his shoulders. The referee shouted, "In the last four months, Xue Man has come onstage four times! But, no one dared to challenge Xue Man for three of those, so Xue Man has only one a single match during that period! Now, Xue Man has finally obtained his 70 win streak. If someone can defeat Xue Man, they can obtain seven slaughter points as well as a massive amount of infernal energy and also a part of his winning streak count!"

According to the rules of Skysplit Tower, if the winning streak of the two opposing challengers had a difference over 30, then the winning party could obtain a certain portion of the winning streak.

This sort of rule was to avoid situations in which someone appeared that was too overwhelmingly strong, and after just a few matches, would not find anyone else to fight them, only meeting empty silences on stage and thus be unable to accumulate a winning streak.

"Which brave martial artist is willing to challenge Xue Man and obtain ultimate glory?"

The referee's voice resounded throughout the entire martial arena. He poured demon essence into his words, causing them to reverberate through everyone's hearts. However, not a single martial artist was willing to budge.

Xue Man was simply an ancient vicious beast in human form. His most terrifying aspect lay in his strength. In terms of brute strength, he might even surpass Xing Tian!

Many of Xue Man's opponents had been ripped apart by his hands; he had even torn apart many treasures with just his bare fists! This sort of bloody and savage way of killing left people trembling in fear. If one were to be defeated by Xue Man, then their fate was to be torn apart!

If this were a normal martial artist, then there might have been some experienced fighters willing to step onstage. But against Xue Man, no one had the courage to do so. What use were slaughter points, infernal energy, or winning streaks if one didn't have their life?

The audience was in chaos. They began to turn around, looking for a martial artist that was qualified to step onstage. But Sable Witch and Crazy Dog were not present. There was Feng Ling, whose strength ranked around fifth or sixth in the second floor, but he was sitting there calmly with his eyes closed, meditating, apparently with no intention of moving.

"If Feng Ling isn't going to go up, then is nothing going to happen?" Some of the martial artists that deliberately came to watch the fun were disappointed.

As everyone was speculating, Lin Ming stood up and crossed the arena. As he arrived on the edge of the stage, he immediately attracted everyone's attention.

"Lin Ming!?!?"

On Skysplit Tower's second floor, Lin Ming was already a bit famous for being the number one newcomer, thus there were some martial artists that knew him and called his name.

But a newcomer was still a newcomer, they were unable to compare with a veteran challenger. They were in two completely separate groups. The gap between them was just too great.

Lin Ming wished to challenge Xue Man?

“Haha, Young Hero Lin, you must challenge Xue Man?” The referee asked excitedly. Lin Ming against Xue Man, the number one newcomer against a top veteran challenger; this would be an absolutely magnificent match!

For this sort of great match, the martial arena would normally collect admission fees and the price would be quite high too.

“Yes. I want to challenge Xue Man.” Lin Ming unquestionably said.

His voice wasn’t loud, but it clearly spread throughout the entire martial arena. Suddenly, the entire martial arena quieted in response.

Lin Ming had disappeared a month ago, chance was that he had gone into closed-door cultivation. And now, after leaving, the first battle he chose was actually to fight against Xue Man!

Xue Man’s savage reputation had already spread throughout the entire Skysplit Tower. It was impossible that Lin Ming wasn’t aware of the great pile of bones that Xue Man rose from, and yet he still dared to challenge him.

This act, this self-confidence, could only be described by one word.

Crazy!

If Lin Ming was a complete newcomer, then others might say he was a stupid fool. But one month ago, Lin Ming had gone against all odds and killed Lan Xing. Not just that, but it was a completely one-sided affair!

With this battle on his belt, no one dared to call Lin Ming stupid.

Because he had the capital to act arrogant.

However, Xue Man had already obtained a 70 win streak. And in this case, besides Xue Man himself, no one knew where the limits of his strength were. Even though Lin Ming had absolutely no data on Xue Man, he still dared to challenge him. This self-confidence, this rampant and aloof nature that went deeper than bone, caused the audience the tremble with fear!

What a frightening young man!

No one was discussing what Lin Ming's chances of winning were at this moment. Just the fact that he stepped up was an act that the martial artists present couldn't help but admire. Even the sixth-ranked Feng Lin did not have the guts to do this.

Seeing Lin Ming calmly step onstage, a martial artist suddenly realized something. He quickly picked up a sound transmitting talisman and lit it.

"Third Brother, there's about to be an explosive match in the martial arena! Hurry up and come!"

"I'm busy right now, what the hell sort of explosive match are you blathering about? Isn't it Xue Man going onstage this time? I thought no one would dare to face him? What sort of fool decided to bring death onto himself and challenge Xue Man?" The martial artist was currently pressing a beautiful Fey woman underneath him and venting all of his pent up emotions. After he received the sound transmitting talisman, he reluctantly responded to it.

"I don't know whether he's stepping up to die, but the one onstage isn't an idiot! It isn't Sable Witch or Crazy Dog, or even Feng Lin, but is the number one newcomer, Lin Ming!"

Chapter 554 – Supernatural Strength

Chapter 554 – Supernatural Strength

…

…

…

"What? Are you joking with me?" The martial artist that had been happily enjoying himself was suddenly shocked. In a sense, Lin Ming challenging Xue Man was even more startling than the Sable Witch or Crazy Dog!

The Sable Witch's strength was more or less understood, but Lin Ming's strength was an enigma. If he could fight Xue Man and even make him struggle, then that would be an incredible feat! If this was true, then not only would he be an Emperor level talent, but one that was among the upper echelons!

"Save a seat for me! I'm coming right away!" The martial artist pushed off the sexy Fey woman. The Fey woman fell onto her butt, giving a yelp as she rubbed the pain away. The martial artist ignored the woman's charmingly cute anger as he tossed on some clothes and rushed over to the martial arena.

This scene repeated itself in many places. There were powerhouses that came not just for the fun, but also to see what sort of hidden strength Xue Man and Lin Ming had. Of these two, one was a current superstar of the second floor and the other was a rising nova. Having a better understanding of them and the second floor was only beneficial. In the future, if they encountered some incident that was related to this they could be safer.

The referee intentionally slowed down the start of the match in order to allow the streaming martial artists to enter the stadium. All of the martial artists that were already inside did not need to pay an admission fee, but the rest of the martial artists that arrived had to pay an admission fee of 80 Blood Demon Crystals.

The audience in the martial arena kept growing larger and larger. Xue Man looked at Lin Ming with hunger in his eyes, “Hehe, little boy, you’ve got guts to come up, you’re quite good! It’s too bad. You once had a future, and even a chance of becoming an Emperor level powerhouse…

“Do you know why I love to kill geniuses? That’s because every time I imagine these future overlords of their lands dying by my hands, my blood boils with ecstasy!”

As Xue Man spoke, a crazy light appeared on his smiling face.

But Lin Ming only looked at him with calm indifference and said, “So, you’re saying that in our battle there will be no giving up, and death will decide victory and defeat?”

“Victory and defeat? Hehe, you don’t seem to understand the gravity of the situation you’re in. When we start, that will be the beginning of my grand killing feast!” Xue Man suddenly extracted his axe and smashed it against the ground. With an explosive sound, cracks spread out like a growing spiderweb. Even the strange golden floor underneath the tiles was ripped apart. This simple movement had caused a gaping hole to appear in the ground; Xue Man’s brute strength was truly startling.

Lin Ming glanced at the hole in the ground. He slowly leveled his Purple Comet Spear and said, “Show me what you’ve got!”

He truly didn’t know where the limits of Xue Man’s strength lay. In this match, he would not underestimate his opponent.

“Hehe, as you wish! Earth Splitter!” Xue Man shouted. Without waiting for the referee to announce the start of the match, he grasped his axe with both hands and rushed towards Lin Ming!

The physical strength of a Goliath's body was in no way inferior to a Giant Demon's, and Xue Man's own strength was that of an extreme top master. As he dashed forwards, his charging impact strength far exceeded everyone else on the second floor.

As Xue Man shot forwards, all of the tiles underneath his feet shattered under the pressure. A terrifying imposing aura erupted out of him, as if he himself were an unassailable army of one. The entire audience trembled with fear.

Lin Ming stared at the rushing Xue Man and his mind unconsciously fell back to the battle array disc he had seen. That eighth stage Life Destruction senior had faced a similar situation. When the quasi Emperor Giant Demon had rushed at him, that senior had sent the Giant Demon flying away with a single sword strike!

The trajectory of that strike path appeared in Lin Ming's mind. In that instant, Lin Ming was enlightened. He did not open the Heretical God Force. Instead, he directly faced Xue Man, his spear thrusting force!

His strike carried the potential of raging rivers and towering mountains!

Nobody expected that Lin Ming would actually meet Xue Man in a head to head collision! The Purple Comet Spear was a flexible spear. The spear shaft was as thick as an arm and nine feet nine inches long. This weapon was meeting the impact of a mountain axe that weighed tens of thousands of jins!

Not just that, but Lin Ming was only a human. Humanity had never excelled in frontal combat and matches of pure strength…

Madness! Absolute madness!

In that moment, everyone had this idea pass through their hearts. However, they weren't able to say anything in that split second. The Purple Comet Spear was like a violet dragon that crashed into the vast sea, mercilessly meeting the mountain axe!

Bang!

The spearpoint and axe blade collided, the two completely disproportionate weapons ramming into each other. Light shot out everywhere. True essence and demon essence twisted together in a vortex of energy that shot into the sky. All of the surrounding tiles were completely torn off the floor, and massive amounts of crushed stones shot out like arrows.

All of the martial artists that sat in the first row were overwhelmed by the shockwave of energy that surged over them, causing their blood to overturn. They had no choice but to push their bodily true essence to the limit and barely resist this force. Of these people, none of them were weak. The reason that they had been pushed back in such a distressed manner was completely because the outbreak of energy was too strong.

The crushed stones burst apart into fine sand. Lin Ming was forced back a few steps, a faint surge of blood rising in his throat before he suppressed it. But in comparison, Xue Man was sent flying backwards. His hand was shattered, and the blood vessels on his right arm had exploded, causing blood to shoot out!

Bang!

Xue Man heavily crashed into the ground. He shouldered himself with his mountain axe as he knelt on a single knee. The tiles underneath him had completely exploded!

He looked at the blood that dripped off his right hand, and then turned towards Lin Ming. His eyes began to fill with horror, panic, disbelief!

For many years since he had become infamous, he had tasted defeat. But among his peers in the younger generation, there had never been someone that could force him back in a battle of brute strength. Not even Xing Tian could do this!

But today, he had been pushed back by someone that was not only younger than him, but also a mere human! How could this be possible!?!?

It wasn't just Xue Man that was shocked. All of the martial artists present were shaken to their cores, and the entire martial arena was drowned in a deafening silence. This battle had originally been ambiguous. After all, there was still a small number of people present that thought Lin Ming could defeat Xue Man. The reason for this was that one month ago, Lin Ming had easily defeated Lan Xing.

But none of them imagined that in a frontal collision, Lin Ming would actually sent Xue Man flying back with just his strength. Lin Ming had even shattered Xue Man's hand and caused his blood vessels to explode. As for Lin Ming himself, he had only been forced back a few steps.

What sort of strange strength was this? Was this fellow really human?

"This boy called Lin Ming, could he have cultivated a body transformation law formula?" The black-clothed referee mumbled to himself. He had heard that in ancient times, humans had once practiced body transformation law formulas. But, there were great differences with the ones that the Giant Demons cultivated. They were extremely difficult to practice. One had to invest over dozens of times the resources, and in battle, it was inferior to the Essence Gathering System. Because of this, these body transformation law formulas were judged as weak, and slowly lost to time.

"That shouldn't be the case. Not to mention that the human body transformation law formulas are pathetic, but they are also extraordinarily difficult to practice. And even if he did, he shouldn't have such amazing strength. This damn fellow, could his talent really be so outrageous? Or perhaps he ate some sort of heavenly material or treasure?"

It wasn't just the black-clothed referee that was guessing. After a short period of stunned silence, the audience began to discuss this unexpected scene.

Lin Ming had actually directly rebuffed Xue Man. Not just that, but his cultivation and age were far lower than Xue Man's!

Humanity had always only been able to rely on their slightly better speed and perception. Since when did they become so fierce?

On the martial stage, as Xue Man listened to these martial artists discuss amongst themselves, his heart bubbled with shame and anger. Being forced back by a human was his life's greatest shame!

"Well done, boy! You have successfully enraged me... now, I will have you die without leaving a corpse!"

Chapter 555 – The Power of Conception

Chapter 555 – The Power of Conception

…

…

…

With a great shout, Xue Man's aura erupted. His black muscles originally had a beautiful red sheen to them, but now it looked as if they were leaking blood.

"That is the 'Supernatural Demonic Blood Law'!"

Some of the audience members were able to recognize Xue Man's special technique. Xue Man came from a great fifth grade Goliath sect. The 'Supernatural Demonic Blood Law' was a top cultivation method within that sect. With the 'Supernatural Demonic Blood Law' active, Xue Man was currently in his most fearful incarnation.

"Xue Man is going all out now. He underestimated that boy once and suffered for it." A Giant Demon said. He was one of those that were hoping Lin Ming would be ruined.

"You idiot, don't be stupid. It's true that Xue Man wasn't using all of his strength in that last attack, but how do you know that the human boy was using all of his?"

"Just wait and see. This is a true fierce melee between tigers and dragons. I really have no idea what that human boy has cultivated!"

As several people were speaking, they suddenly felt a cold air around them. It was like a chilling wind was seeping into their bones, causing them to shiver.

"Mm?" A martial artist turned and suddenly froze where he was, his breath caught in his throat.

Close behind him, a Giant Demon was standing. This Giant Demon towered there with a massive heavy sword strapped to his back. As the Giant Demon locked his eyes onto the arena stage, his face darkened.

"Xing Tian!"

Within Skysplit Tower's second floor, Xing Tian was synonymous with King. With Xing Tian's appearance, everyone was silenced, afraid to take even a breath.

Xing Tian had actually come to watch the match!

Several martial artists in front of Xing Tian were spooked. Xing Tian hadn't appeared in the martial arena for over half a year.

On the arena stage, Xue Man also saw Xing Tian appear. This caused his face to twist in a grimace. With a loud clap on his own chest, he had personally guaranteed he would solve the problem known as Lin Ming. But now, Lin Ming had forced him back with a single strike. Just what sort of pride did he have left?

"Boy! I will kill you!"

Xue Man shouted out, waving his mountain axe around as he rushed towards Lin Ming. This time, he did not intend to hold anything back. He would tear Lin Ming to pieces.

Lin Ming looked at Xue Man and took a single step back. His hands held onto his spear; he had no intention of opening the Heretical God Force.

After breaking through to the middle Xiantian realm, Lin Ming wanted to test his own limits, and he also didn't want to expose too much of his strength.

After being focused on by Xue Man and Xing Tian, Lin Ming began to slowly discover that something was unusual, as if someone was eyeing him. If so, then keeping a bit of his strength hidden would always be helpful.

The massive mountain axe became a giant cloud of bloody demonic energy. From afar, it looked like a roiling sea of blood. Lin Ming took a sudden step back and used ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’, his figure instantly blurring into numerous afterimages.

Ever since he had obtained a deeper comprehension of the Concept of Wind and the Concept of Space, Lin Ming’s ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’ had already firmly stepped into the second layer. Now, using this technique was as natural as breathing itself.

“You stupid fool, stop your futile struggles! In front of absolute power, all skills become meaningless. Break for me!”

Bang!

The axe light suddenly skyrocketed, covering the entire martial arena. This way, no matter how elegant or superb Lin Ming’s movement technique was, there would be no room to dodge.

Chi chi chi!

Lin Ming’s afterimages were all engulfed by this demonic blood cloud, twisting into nothing. But, Lin Ming himself was also caught in the vortex of this demonic blood cloud. The raging ax light relentlessly crashed into Lin Ming’s body, chipping off his bodily protective true essence as it fiercely collided with him.

With the sound of tearing silk, Lin Ming’s protective true essence was broken apart. His clothes were ripped off of him as a small trace of blood flew into the air.

Drawing back dozens of feet from this storm, Lin Ming stabbed the Purple Comet Spear into the ground to stop his momentum. But because the inertial force was too great, his spear sliced into the ground, creating long furrows that were dozens of feet long, nearly ripping open the entire martial arena.

As the audience saw this scene, they all began to scream out. In the last move, Lin Ming had gained the advantage. But now, Xue Man had instantly turned the tables. If this continued then no one knew just what the outcome would be.

Xing Tian stood in a corner, a relaxed expression never appearing on his feet. Although Xue Man's attack had forced Lin Ming back several dozens of feet, Lin Ming had only been slightly injured. These injuries simply weren't enough to affect his battle efficiency.

"This damn boy, is his body made of iron?" Xing Tian was aware of just how terrifying Xue Man's strike was. All of Lin Ming's bodily true essence had already been torn apart, and the demonic blood cloud was ripping into him. If it had been a normal middle Xiantian realm martial artist, then their entire body would have been torn to shreds after being struck by that axe light. But Lin Ming had only experienced a minor superficial wound!

Lin Ming wiped the blood from the corner of his lips. After completing Tempering Marrow, his entire body was comparable to a treasure in toughness. Moreover, he also had a freakish level of regeneration. This tiny wound wasn't anything at all.

'Xue man's attack is amazingly fierce, but it contains no Concept, nor does it have a Concept attack; it simply lacks soul. It's far from being enough for me to fear. It's just that his demon essence is far too thick. If I want to defeat him without opening the Heretical God Force, it may be a bit difficult...'

Lin Ming turned around and glanced at Xing Tian in the stands. At this moment, Lin Ming understood that for some unknown reason, Xing Tian wanted to kill him. Xue Man was only a vanguard pawn that he had assigned.

'As my existence violates the interests of the Giant Demons or Goliaths?'

Lin Ming sneered in his heart. He did not fear the enemy, but that didn't mean he was stupid enough to expose the entirety of his strength to the enemy. If he had, then the one in front of him today wouldn't have been Xue Man, but a much stronger opponent.

"Lin Ming! Suffer death!"

Xue Man rushed forwards once again. Wherever he trod, the ground beneath him burst apart as he waved his mountain axe around.

Lin Ming's pupils shrank, and his mind touched upon the Heretical God Seed. Finally, and quietly, he opened the Heretical God Seed.

There was no need for him to bring out all of the compressed true essence in a single burst. He only needed to use 30 to 40% of its strength. This way, the Heretical God Force would last longer.

A spear thrust out, and an endlessly growing azure true essence howled forth.

Ding!

Lin Ming's spear struck the axe's edge. The triple Thunder Soul fused Divine Demon Steel Needle shot out, flying towards Xue Man's eye!

"Humph!"

Xue Man suddenly drew back, his axe cutting down on the Divine Demon Thunder Soul. It was no secret that Lin Ming had a Thunder Soul; Xue Man was already prepared in advance.

Kacha!

The Divine Demon Steel Needle exploded into pieces as it was cut apart. A red and purple electric light violently flew out, stabbing straight towards Xue Man like a venomous snake.

"Out of my way!"

Xue Man gave loud shout. As he roared, his voice fused with true essence and physically manifested. This was a sonic attack. It was a similar attack method to the Seven Profound Valleys' Zither Faction.

The sonic wave and streaks of lightning collided. True essence surged out like a tidal wave, and the energies began to melt against each other. During this intense impact, several invisible and intangible purple strands of light penetrated the sonic wave, flying towards Xue Man.

Bang!

In that instant, Xue Man's body shook. Countless earth-rending thunderclaps sounded in his ears as his spiritual sea came under the spiritual assault of the Disenchanting Dream Light.

In the combined physical and soul attack, Xue Man was able to fend off the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder and Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder with his countering sonic wave. But, he actually wasn't able to break apart the invisible Disenchanting Dream Light.

"Damn!" Xue Man's eyes widened, blood-red.

But at this moment, Lin Ming took a step forwards. He activated another 20% of the Heretical God Force's strength, and thrust his spear out at Xue Man.

Destruction!

All of his will and strength was poured into this strike. The Purple Comet Spear seemed to instantly pass through space as it appeared in front of Xue Man!

With his spiritual sea disturbed, Xue Man was paralyzed. Even so, his eyes flashed with a savage and crazy light as he bit down on his tongue, forcing himself awake. But by this time Lin Ming's Purple Comet Spear had already reached Xue Man's front. Xue Man moved a step too late. In addition, his mountain axe was inferior to the Purple Comet Spear in both flexibility and speed; there was no longer any time to block it!

“Boy, I bet everything against you!”

Xue Man shouted and his axe cut down at Lin Ming. He actually wanted to use the method of savagely pitting their lives at each other!

Since he could not dodge, he had to bet everything on this desperate move and try to force Lin Ming back.

As Lin Ming saw Xue Man coming at him with the intention of dying together, he grimaced. If this was normal times, then he didn’t mind engaging in a battle of attrition, trading wounds until one of them fell. With his 100% complete Tempering Marrow and his terrifying defensive abilities, he knew he would be the last one standing in that situation. But currently, he was being eyed by Xing Tian from the side. Lin Ming naturally could not give him an opening!

Lin Ming drew back. As he shot his spear out, the path of the Purple Comet Spear seemed to undergo some strange change as an incredible scene took place. In terms of length, the Purple Comet Spear was obviously shorter than the giant mountain ax. As they say, an inch longer, an inch stronger. By all rights, if the mountain axe reached Lin Ming then the Purple Comet Spear shouldn’t have pierced through Xue Man yet.

But what happened was just the opposite. Lin Ming dodged Xue Man’s mountain axe, and at the same time his Purple Comet Spear pierced through Xue Man’s chest!

Blood shot out and Blood Drinking Seals erupted. Xue Man gave a muffled cough and was thrown backwards.

But Lin Ming had escaped the direct attack of the axe and was only struck by the axe light. His bodily true essence was broken again, and the blood in his body tumbled, but he quickly suppressed it.

“What’s wrong?”

"What just happened? Lin Ming obviously hadn't thrust at Xue Man before he retreated, so how could his spear injure Xue Man?"

As the audience saw what happened onstage, they were all shocked. That strike from Lin Ming contained a very bizarre and incongruous feeling. In a near-impossible situation, Lin Ming had dodged Xue Man's attack while simultaneously thrusting his spear at Xue Man's chest, piercing him and sending him flying backwards.

"It really is the Concept of Space! This damn boy!" Xing Tian's complexion grew uglier. Lin Ming had already exposed that his spear skills were fused with the Concept as Space as early as his battle with Blackrat. At that time, not many people had cared. But now his Concept of Space had clearly progressed another step further.

The Concept of Space was an elusive and obscure ideal. There had been countless heroic Fey elites who could not perceive it through meditation no matter how hard they tried, but Lin Ming, a mere middle Xiantian realm boy, was able to perfectly apply it to his spear.

'This boy's growth is too fast! If I let him be, sooner or later he will become a catastrophe!' Xing Tian's eyes flashed with a thick killing intent.

On the martial arena, Xue Man crawled up from the ground. A shockingly gaping hole was punctured in his chest, and a massive amount of blood was gushing forth. To a Goliath, it was a wound that he was just barely able to continue from.

"You bastard! I'll kill you!" As Xue Man spoke, he coughed blood between every word.

Lin Ming frowned, 'He's really persistent. It's a pity that my comprehension of the Concept of Space is insufficient, otherwise my spear could have stabbed deeper and I could have made the Blood Drinking Seals implode from within his body, then he would surely have died!'

Chapter 556 – Xing Tian Declares War

Chapter 556 – Xing Tian Declares War

…

…

…

Lin Ming frowned, “He’s really persistent. It’s a pity that my comprehension of the Concept of Space is insufficient, otherwise my spear could have stabbed deeper and I could have made the Blood Drinking Seals implode from within his body, then he would surely have died!”

“I will rip you apart!” Xue Man grit his teeth and revolved his demon essence to the limit. A three foot thick crimson beam of light shot out from him. This attack was completely formed from demon essence; Xue Man had already been pushed to the edge of desperation.

“Uselessly stubborn!”

Lin Ming raised the Purple Comet Spear, his eyes full of indifference. On the tip of his spear, the power of space trembled and a bloody light flashed.

Blood Seal Twisting Murder!

The spear thrust out, bringing with it an immense spiraling power. It was just like a spinning arrow. This was the defense breaking technique of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’. With the revolution of Blood Drinking Seals grinding away the demonic essence cloud and washing it away, and adding in Lin Ming’s advantage in true essence and the utter suppression in ability, this spear was unstoppable!

The axe light broke apart, and the dazzling python-thick spear light reached Xue Man's front.

"Ahhhh!" Xue Man let out a heaven-shaking thunderous roar. "I refuse to lose here! Heaven and Earth Axe!"

No matter what, Xue Man was still a battle-hardened master who had experienced countless fights. Although he was being completely suppressed by Lin Ming, he still wouldn't give up without a struggle as he saw Lin Ming's spear coming at him. To defend himself, he immediately withdrew all of the overwhelming demon essence in the air and cut his axe down at Lin Ming's Purple Comet Spear.

"Your attack has no Concept, and most importantly of all – it has no soul. No matter how profound your cultivation is, everything you do is useless!"

With a flash of bloody light, Lin Ming's spear drove away the mountain axe. The Blood Drinking Seals split the wave of bloody energy apart. With the Concept of Space fused into the Purple Comet Spear, the spearpoint pierced through space, instantly appearing in front of Xue Man.

At this time, Xue Man was no longer able to resist.

Puff!

Xue Man's bodily protective demon essence was torn apart like thin paper. The Purple Comet Spear thrust straight into his chest. A powerful spinning force erupted within Xue Man's body, twisting his heart into ground meat!

A stream of blood shot out from behind Xue Man. Lin Ming's spear had pierced all the way through him!

"You!!!" With his heart crushed, Xue Man's face was distorted and grotesque. He glared at Lin Ming, his eyes bursting with absolute hatred. "Let's die together!"

Xue Man gave another shout, his axe cutting towards Lin Ming's head. He had already lost all rationality, and there was nothing left but a crazed husk.

But how could Xue Man, who had lost all sanity, possibly wound Lin Ming?

Lin Ming's feet trod with 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void', and his figure instantly disappeared from where he stood, leaving nothing but a phantom image behind.

Kacha!

Xue Man's large axe smashed into the ground.

"I…"

Xue Man's eyes began to glaze over. The Purple Comet Spear was drawn out, and a fountain of blood sprayed out from his chest.

As Xue Man's vision gradually blurred, his eyes passed over Lin Ming and fell onto Xing Tian, who was standing in a corner of the martial arena. Xing Tian's expression was grim, and his vision was filled with thick murderous intent.

"Big Brother…"

Xue Man wanted to say something else, but his skin burst like a broken water bag. A mass of bloody fog shout out from his body, quickly condensing into a Blood Drinking Seal. At the same time, the Heavenly Demon Tattoo on Lin Ming's arm seemed to come alive, waving its claws around as it guzzled all of the infernal energy that dissipated from Xue Man's body.

Xue Man's infernal energy was too rich. After the second pair of wings full formed, a third pair began to take shape. At a speed visible to the naked eye, it gradually became more and more clear, until it finally stopped just a bit away from being a complete six-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo.

The moment that the Heavenly Demon Tattoo stopped growing, a red light flashed in Lin Ming's eyes before quickly fading.

After Xue Man died, the audience of 6000 to 7000 was left in utter shocked silence. For a very long time, no one spoke a single word.

The truth was that ever since Lin Ming first injured Xue Man, a great number of people expected that Lin Ming might be victorious in the end. But seeing this scene happen in front of their eyes still left them dazzled in disbelief.

Xue Man had long been infamous on Skysplit Tower's second floor; he already had the strength to enter the third floor.

In the second layer, Xue Man was synonymous with slaughter, cruelty, and absolute tyranny. His reputation, his 70 win streak, had been built upon 70 corpses.

Xue Man's brutal and barbaric nature caused those who knew of him to tremble. Over the years, his phantom had long been ingrained within everyone's minds. None of the top ten ranked individuals of the second floor dared to accept his challenge. But now, that Xue Man had actually died at the hands of a human newcomer. As for that human's age, he was at most in his early twenties, and his cultivation was only at the early Xiantian realm.

"Powerful defense, incredible strength, a thickly condensed true essence completely at odds with his cultivation, and in addition to all that, his comprehension of Concepts and Laws… this fellow!"

Xian Tian gazed at Lin Ming, his expectations set. As long as Lin Ming didn't die, his future achievements would be boundless.

"Lin Ming, victory!"

The middle-aged referee shouted as he stepped into the arena. As he looked at Lin Ming, his eyes held a touch of awe. "Young Hero Lin, will you continue your challenge?"

"No!"

Lin Ming flatly refused. After his war against Xue Man, he was no longer in his best state. Not just that, but there were many masters present that wanted to take his life.

“Haha, it’s good to take a rest.” The referee guffawed, “Young Hero Lin has such great strength at such a young age. In the future, your success will be limitless!”

“Thank you.” Lin Ming faintly smiled. He took Xue Man’s spatial ring and turned to leave.

“Lin Ming!”

As Lin Ming was about to leave the stage, a deep voice suddenly sounded within the martial arena, echoing through every nook and cranny.

Lin Ming’s footsteps paused. He glanced over and saw that the person speaking was actually Xing Tian.

Xian Tian – the king of the entire second floor.

With just a few words, he caught everyone’s attention.

Xing Tian smiled, “Lin Ming, you have really surprised me. Out of all the young human elites that I have encountered, your talent is by far the most outstanding! But even so, I never imagined you could defeat Xue Man! You have truly given me a great surprise! Good! Good! Very good!”

Xing Tian said ‘good’ three times in a row, but his eerie and ominous aura carried a thick killing intent.

Lin Ming was silent for a moment, his eyes burning brilliantly as he stared at Xing Tian, “Just what do you want?”

“Hehe, simple. Since you can kill Xue Man, that means you already have the ability to fight me. It’s been a long time since anyone on the second floor has interested me. I hereby challenge you. Do you have the guts to accept?”

These words shocked the entire audience. Several thousand eyes that were focused on Xing Tian swiveled to Lin Ming.

Xing Tian had challenged Lin Ming!

For a moment, everyone was silent, stunned.

Xing Tian was easily acknowledged as the number one master of the second floor. He hadn't fought for over half a year and had instead been diligently cultivating.

Half a year ago, there had once been a master on the second floor who was more powerful than even Xue Man. Xing Tian's last battle had been with him. Ultimately, Xing Tian had killed his opponent and cut off his head!

At that time, Xing Tian's strength had already far surpassed Xue Man's. Now that he had gone into closed-door seclusion for half a year, no one knew just what the limit of his immeasurably deep strength was.

No one expected that he would challenge Lin Ming. This would be his first match in six months!

In this situation, would Lin Ming agree? Would he even dare to agree?

In the massive martial arena, no one made a single noise. The audience waited with bated breath as they looked towards Lin Ming for his answer.

One was the top king of the second floor. He had dominated the martial arena for years and remained undefeated throughout.

The other was the king of the newcomers. He was the super genius that had killed Lan Xing and Xue Man. He was definitely a peerless genius amongst his generation.

Without a doubt, if Lin Ming was left to freely grow, then he would one day surpass Xing Tian. But, the question was whether or not Xing Tian would give him this chance.

Perhaps he was afraid that Lin Ming threatened his status, or perhaps he was worried that he would one day fall under Lin Ming's hands. Regardless of the reason, Xing Tian had decided to act preemptively.

This approach was not glorious, but neither was it wrong.

"Heh, too scared to accept?" Xing Tian jokingly grinned.

Lin Ming laughed, "It's not that I don't dare, but it's you who is a coward. Although you're smiling, the truth is that your heart is already racing with panic!"

Lin Ming's words were sharp, piercing right into Xing Tian's deepest feelings. Xing Tian was truly panicking! Lin Ming's exponential rate of growth had left him panting in fear, thus the reason he decided to take initiative.

Xing Tian frowned and his eyes filled with a brilliant killing light. "You are arrogant to the extreme! In Skysplit Tower, the arrogant die the quickest!"

"Haha, then according to you, if I agree to your challenge, doesn't that make me even more arrogant?" Lin Ming retorted, leaving Xing Tian speechless.

"You sure spout enough crap. Do you dare to fight me or not?"

Lin Ming faintly smiled, "Why wouldn't I fight? But, the time will be decided by me!"

Xing Tian was startled. This boy, he couldn't be thinking of delaying the match by a year, right?

But in Skysplit Tower, if Lin Ming retreated to his practice area and didn't come out, there was nothing he could do anyway. Xing Tian nodded, "Fine!"

"One month. One month from now, we will decide life and death!"

Lin Ming's voice resounded throughout the entire martial arena.

In his fight against Xue Man, Lin Ming had still kept a large portion of his strength back. Defeating Xue Man wasn't much more difficult than defeating Lan Xing. This was mainly because Lin Ming had broken through to the middle Xiantian realm, and his strength has risen by another level.

Even with so many cards still hidden, Lin Ming still set the fight to one month from now. This wasn't because he feared Xing Tian, but rather he was apprehensive of the mysterious power that backed him.

Lin Ming would eventually enter Skysplit Tower's third floor. Compared to the second, the third floor was truly a den of crouching tigers and hidden dragons; dangerous opponents would simply be everywhere. He had to set aside some time for himself to grow.

One month?

Xing Tian sneered. He had thought that Lin Ming would set some ridiculously long time, but it was only a single month. Lin Ming had just broken through to the middle Xiantian realm, so it would be impossible for him to break through to the late Xiantian realm in such a short time. As long as he didn't make another breakthrough, then any growth of his strength could be handled.

"One month… good, I will wait for you then!"

Xing Tian readily agreed.

The quiet martial arena audience suddenly burst into noise. One month from now, Lin Ming would fight Xing Tian!

No one understood where the limits of Lin Ming's strength were. But at the same time, no one understood what Xing Tian's limits were either!

This was a battle in which both sides knew nothing about the other.

"When Lin Ming fought Xue Man, he must have been hiding most of his strength, otherwise how would he dare to fight Xing Tian? This is too terrifying! For that battle to reach such a point, yet he was able to still hide his strength?" A martial artist suddenly realized this. Lin Ming wasn't stupid. If his strength was only that great, then wouldn't fighting Xing Tian just be delivering himself to die?

"So what if he's hiding his strength? His opponent is Xing Tian! Lin Ming's one month deadline is just too short!"

The martial artist who spoke didn't think Lin Ming would win. The fear of Xing Tian's formidable strength had already been deeply entrenched in his psyche.

The unfathomably deep Xing Tian…

Lin Ming, whom none knew just what strengths he was hiding…

This battle caused the two martial artists to feel incomparable anticipation…

Chapter 557 – Ancient Tome

Chapter 557 – Ancient Tome

…

…

…

In his practice room, Lin Ming was looking over his Heavenly Demon Tattoo. The tattoo had three pairs of wings. The first two were already fully formed, and the third was quite clear.

"I'm only a step away from being a six-winged Heavenly Demon. Xue Man's infernal energy was too thickly condensed and potent. If I didn't carefully train in suppressing my inner thoughts, then even I would have been affected by the infernal energy. Although I wouldn't have lost my rationality, it would have still affected my character."

A human's disposition would always change because of various factors. But, Lin Ming didn't want his character to change because of infernal energy.

Lin Ming took out Xue Man's spatial ring and withdrew everything inside. There were several boxes of medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals and a small box of high-grade Blood Demon Crystals. There was also a massive amount of pills, jade slips, and treasures. This Xue Man was far, far richer than Lan Xing had been.

Lin Ming roughly estimated the goods. There were around 80 to 90,000 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals and over 70 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals.

This was truly a terrifying amount of wealth. Xue Man killed nearly all of his opponents; it wasn't surprising that he had accumulated this much wealth.

As for those jade slips, most of them were cultivation methods and secret manuals. Xue Man came from a large fifth-grade sect. These cultivation methods were worth quite a bit, but they weren't too useful to Lin Ming.

He swept over everything and was preparing to put it away, when suddenly something caught his attention.

In the messy pile, Lin Ming found a simple wooden box. As he opened the box, there was an ordinary-looking jade slip within. Near this jade slip was an extremely old tome of bound skins.

Lin Ming first picked up the jade slip. Inside were some notes recorded down by Xue Man.

The Goliath language was the same as the Giant Demons'. Lin Ming was completely able to understand it all.

Lin Ming kept examining it, and several phrases popped up to him. One was High Lord Xue Yan. In Skysplit Tower, a ten-winged Heavenly Demon was called a High Lord. This High Lord Xue Yan was one of Polaris City's 12 High Lords.

Whenever Xue Man mentioned High Lord Xue Yan in the jade slip, his words were filled with great reverence and respect. This was a sort of respect that came from the depths of one's heart, and even a bit of fear. This caused Lin Ming to be incomparably surprised. In his view, Xue Yan was an extremely rampant and cruel individual; how could he possibly respect someone out of his heart? Just what was so special about this High Lord Xue Yan?

Besides this, there were several other words that caught Lin Ming's attention – Eternal Demon Abyss and Demon God Bone.

Xue Yan's jade slip mentioned these things, but the records weren't too clear. In the end, Lin Ming wasn't able to tell what these were.

Looking through, there wasn't any more valuable information. Lin Ming then put away the jade slip and turned his eyes towards the old tome.

As Lin Ming opened the tome, he saw that inside were portraits of Giant Demon and Goliath martial artists. They should have been rubbed off and copied from stone carvings.

Near every portrait was written the person's name, brief life story, and also their specific cultivation. Most of them were Demon Emperor level powerhouses.

Among these individuals were characters from tens of thousands of years ago and even ones from just a few thousand years ago.

Without exception, they all shared one trait. All of them… had died.

Regardless of what sort of peerless, legendary talents they had once been, or what sort of overweeningly arrogant, undefeatable existence they were, whose mere presence could move the entire Holy Demon Continent… all of them had died.

Who were these people? Why were their portraits rubbed into this tome? How else were they connected to each other?

As Lin Ming was lost in his thoughts, his mind suddenly shook. In the tome, there was a face that he had seen before. This person held a bloody 10 foot long axe. He had a full head of flaming hair, and his expression was grim and dark.

This face was similar to that of the fierce red demon that Lin Ming had seen when he absorbed the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal.

Could it be…

Lin Ming's eyes fell over to the notes of this portrait. In them was written: "Netherworld Great Emperor. Born in the Holy Demon Calendar year of 36,500, died in the Holy Demon Calendar year of 39,700. He lived for over three thousand years. This man's talent was comparable to a Demon God. He achieved the Demon King realm at 24 years of age, entered into the quasi Emperor realm at 50 years of age, and reached Large Success of the Devil Arts at 60 years of age, entering into the Emperor realm. The Netherworld Great Emperor searched for 100 years to find a rival. Finally, he strangely went missing, falling from the sky after 3000 years. His cause of death is still unknown.”

After Lin Ming saw these notes, he was dumbfounded. The Netherworld Great Emperor who had founded the Silent Demon Emperor City was actually in this tome!

Without a doubt, the unknown cause of his disappearance was because he went to the Sky Spill Continent. Since he had gone to the Sky Spill Continent, how could the author of this tome have known where he had gone or if he had perished?

Lin Ming was lost in thought as he continued to read. After several pages, he saw a surprising figure – the Demon Emperor.

“The Demon Emperor is actually in this tome?”

Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. Compared to the 3000 year old Netherworld Great Emperor, the Demon Emperor was far different. He lived for tens of thousands of years before finally soaring up into the Realm of the Gods. Even there, he was a heaven-shaking figure. Finally, he had joined in the siege of the Verdant Feather Holy Land. He was truly a legend among legends.

This figure that had existed tens of thousands of years ago had very little information left behind about him that still existed. Even so, this ancient tome actually had it recorded?

As Lin Ming looked over the notes near the Demon Emperor’s portrait, there was only a handful of words. “Demon Emperor. His birth was ominous and his death was ominous. Cause of death is unclear.”

They even knew that the Demon Emperor had died?

Lin Ming felt his heart go cold. The Demon Emperor had died in the Realm of the Gods.

After suppressing his shock, Lin Ming continued flipping through the tome. The figures behind were from tens of thousands of years ago. Some didn't even have names, let alone cultivation realms.

Halfway through the tome, not only were there Giant Demons and Goliaths, but even humans, Fey, and other races began to appear. Of course, these were all earth-shaking peerless geniuses of their times.

Most of them were at the Emperor level.

Those that hadn't reached the Emperor level were those that had died at a young age. Normally, this was below 50 years of age. But all of these individuals that perished were the absolute heaven-defying talents of their generation. They often reached the Revolving Core realm at 24 or 25 years of age, and then stepped into the Life Destruction realm at 30 to 40 years of age.

In other words, these individuals might not have reached the Emperor level, but if they hadn't died they definitely would have become Peerless Emperors!

This tome had recorded all the top geniuses for the last tens of thousands of years.

"Since this ancient tome is a collection of rubbed images, there should originally be carvings somewhere. But just who carved so many powerhouses?" Lin Ming couldn't help but wonder this question. It had to be known that the powerhouses here were all extremely secretive in their actions. So how could the sculptor know whether or not they died?

Not just that, but the portraits in this tome all had extremely lifelike expressions. For instance, the Netherworld Great Emperor and the Demon Emperor were all extremely similar to what Lin Ming had seen in his memories. But the Demon Emperor was a character from tens of thousands of years ago, so how could someone possibly know how to carve his visage?

Lin Ming's heart filled with doubts.

Since he couldn't figure out the reason, he closed the tome and placed it back into his spatial ring.

"It's useless worrying about this now. My match with Xing Tian is only in one month. I have to seize all the time I have left to practice."

After Lin Ming killed Xue Man, he had accumulated an additional seven slaughter points. In addition to his own two slaughter points, he now had nine in total. This was enough for him to freely practice in a top-grade area.

Lin Ming took out some high-grade Blood Demon Crystals from his spatial ring. He grasped one in his hand and placed nine more on the ground beside him. Using 10 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals together could be considered an ultimate luxury. Even someone like Xue Man would only use a single high-grade Blood Demon Crystal at a time and never do something so wasteful.

It had to be known that Xue Man only had 70 some high-grade Blood Demon Crystals in his spatial ring. If he used them so extravagantly then they would only last at most ten days.

Lin Ming did not care about the costs at all. As long as he could increase his cultivations speed, any price was worth it.

The 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' was originally a top cultivation method manual. In addition to the rich infernal energy in this top-grade practice area, the support of a six-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo, and the function of the ethereal martial intent, Lin Ming's cultivation speed could be called astronomical.

And like this, ten days passed. All of the high-grade Blood Demon Crystals were completely used up.

Lin Ming left his practice room and went straight to the second floor's city square. He found the fat Fey that he contacted several days ago.

As soon as the fat vendor saw Lin Ming, his entire face was covered with a humble smile. Ten days ago, the story of Lin Ming killing Xue Man had already spread throughout the entire second floor. The fat vendor was very clear as to how strong Xue Man was, yet such a legendary figure had died under Lin Ming's hands. Now that he saw Lin Ming, he felt his heart jump.

"Young Hero Lin, how may I help you?" The fat vendor asked with his hands down, a respectful smile plastered on his lips.

"Have you exchanged for high-grade Blood Demon Crystals as I requested?"

"Yes, there should be a total of 100. Please count them." The fat vendor took out a box and opened it. The inside shined with radiant high-grade Blood Demon Crystals.

Lin Ming glanced over it; the number was correct.

"As according to our agreement, 100 of these is a total of 11,500 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals. I'll give them to you now."

As Lin Ming spoke, he took out 11 boxes of Blood Demon Crystals.

The fat vendor nervously laughed, "Young Hero Lin is too polite. Well, how about we go with the lowest price; I don't want to overcharge you. 10,000 crystals should be fine!"

"We'll go with what we agreed." Lin Ming counted out 11,500 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals. He wanted to exchange the massive amount of medium-grade crystals he had for high-grade ones as soon as possible. If he shorted the fat vendor of money, then he might be able to trade one or two more times, but eventually the fat vendor wouldn't be able to endure the loss and Lin Ming would have to find someone else.

"Then I… thank Young Hero Lin." The fat vendor laughed, his eyes narrowing.

"I'm only doing what's necessary. This time I want to trade for more high-grade Blood Demon Crystals; the more the better. Also, I want to have you sell some things for me on commission. I'll give you a 5% cut. Don't play tricks on me. I have a general idea of how much it will be."

As Lin Ming spoke, he took a spatial ring off his hand and tossed it over to the fat vendor.

The fat vendor immersed his soul force into the spatial ring and casually swept through it. He suddenly became secretly startled. Nothing in this ring was of low value. The treasures were mostly left over after Lan Xing and Xue Man's deaths. If he completely sold everything, including the jade slips, pills, and so on, then it would be no less than 100,000 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals. If he could take a 5% cut, then that was 5000 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals.

This was not a small amount of wealth. The fat vendor's breath quickened. He puffed out his chest and slapped it in guarantee. "Young Hero Lin, please feel relieved. I will never have the guts to take advantage of you!"

"It's best if you can change them all into high-grade Blood Demon Crystals. I have no need for medium-grade ones."

"Young Hero Lin, rest assured, I will handle this matter with absolute grace."

Chapter 558 – The Match Begins

Chapter 558 – The Match Begins

…

…

…

Cultivation passed without sense of time. One month of practice was just too short…

Clear Wind Pavilion was one of the few restaurants in Skysplit Tower's second floor that was opened by humans. The restaurant had an elegant design and brusque atmosphere. The waitresses were all beautiful young human and Fey women.

At this time, in a great lobby of Clear Wind Pavilion, several longsword-carrying blue-clothed martial artists walked in.

"I want a feast of blood sheep here!" A youth called out. Blood sheep were a sort of high quality vicious beast. Not only did they taste delicious, but they contained a very strong inherent blood vitality. Eating them was of great benefit to the human body.

Of course, this sort of blood sheep feast had a correspondingly high price.

"Good, good, come in!" With such a lavish customer in front of him, the waiter attentively greeted them before going to the kitchen.

"Haha, Big Brother, recently it seems as if us humans have been able to win some glory. At least, we aren't despised by those fellows everywhere. This is all thanks to Sir Lin's limelight."

Within Skysplit Tower, there was only a small number of humans, and their strength was relatively poor. Whether it was on the first floor or second floor, humans were the minority group that was always being pushed around. Because Lin Ming killed Xue Man and even accepted Xing Tian's challenge, he had gained glory for humanity. Because of the lingering fear of Lin Ming, the other martial artists on the second floor did not dare to bully the humans there.

"Mm. Tomorrow should be when Lin Ming and Xing Tian's decisive duel will be. I have no idea what Lin Ming's chances of winning are." The man called big brother looked around 25 or 26 years old. He wore a blue scarf around his neck with a blue robe; he had a very dignified appearance.

"Sir Lin can definitely win." A 20-some year old girl interrupted. "Sir Lin defeated Xue Man and defeated Lan Xing. The only reason he would accept Xing Tian's challenge is that he has confidence he can win. Those that can reach this step would never accept hopeless battles."

"Mm… that's correct, but at the same time Xing Tian also wouldn't make such a bold declaration without confidence in himself. In short, this fight will be filled with suspense…"

As many people were discussing, a voice suddenly rose up. "What were you fellows just talking about? Lin Ming will fight Xing Tian?"

Several martial artists turned around. The one speaking was a black-clothed youth. He looked around 27 or 28 years old, and he had a commanding appearance. Beside him was a black-clothed girl who seemed just a tad over 20 years old. Although she wore black clothes and wore a black veil, one could still make out her exquisite features.

This man and woman were Muk Gu and Muk Qing.

Muk Qing had been cultivating on the second floor for the last month, and as Muk Gu came to check up on her, they happened to hear this news.

“Ah, yes, Lin Min will be fighting Xing Tian tomorrow. Are you a newcomer? Why would you not know this?”

In the view of these martial artists, those that didn’t know Lin Ming and Xing Tian had an upcoming match were mostly newcomers. This news had long since caused an uproar.

Muk Gu sucked in a cold breath. He had been gone these past few days and suddenly Lin Ming had accepted a challenge from Xing Tian.

Although Muk Gu was a martial artist of the third floor, in terms of strength he had to admit that he was far inferior to Xing Tian. Xing Tian had already stayed on the second floor for many years and his strength had reached unfathomably deep levels. Yet Lin Ming had the courage to challenge him?

Muk Qing also found this unbelievable. Although she didn’t feel too well being overshadowed by Lin Ming, she had to acknowledge his talent. Moreover, Lin Ming didn’t seem like an idiot. If he dared to accept Xing Tian’s challenge, then did he already have the qualifications to defeat him?

“Friend, we are new to the second floor, would you mind sharing some of the particular details? What is the reason that Lin Ming is fighting Xing Tian and when was it decided? As far as I know, Lin Ming hasn’t been on the second floor for a long period of time, so why would Xing Tian challenge him?”

“The match was decided a month ago. One month ago, Lin Ming killed Xue Man, and then Xing Tian challenged Lin Ming and Lin Ming accepted.”

“Xue Man was killed?” Muk Gu was stunned. Xue Man was a famous character on the second floor. As he was cultivating on the third floor at this time, he hadn’t heard this news.

That ruthless Goliath that could kill without blinking had perished under Lin Ming’s hands?

“Yes. Ah, also, in Lin Ming’s battle it is estimated that he was hiding some of his strength. Hehe, Lin Ming and Xing Tian’s decisive battle is tomorrow. If you want to see it then you can’t miss it, but the ticket price has already reached 800 Blood Demon Crystals. Not just that, but they are extremely difficult to buy. If you want to purchase a seat, then make sure you do it early.”

“I understand. Thank you for the information.” Muk Gu lightly breathed in. He took out a Blood Demon Crystal from his spatial ring and set it on the table, “Waiter, check.”

“Senior-apprentice Brother, shall we go have a look?”

“Of course.” Muk Gu said decisively. “This battle, for me and for you, will be of great benefit. Also… I reported Lin Ming’s situation to the sect. The sect has already started to notice Lin Ming. If we can be on good terms with him, then that will be a great help to our sect.”

In the Holy Demon Continent, there were a great number of fifth-grade sects. But, there were actually very few Emperor powerhouse Holy Lands. There was said to be numerous Emperor-level talents that could break through to the Divine Sea realm, but in truth, most often perished on their journey. Within the Holy Demon Continent, human Divine Sea powerhouses were an extreme rarity. Being able to be on good terms with one had obvious advantages.

…………..

Excitement over Lin Ming’s battle with Xing Tian spread more and more. The price for an admission ticket began to rise dramatically. First it was 500 Blood Demon Crystals, then it jumped up to 800, 900, and even broke through to 1000.

Even so, it was difficult to find a ticket.

There were many martial artists that were undergoing closed-door cultivation for several months or even half year that especially left their seclusion in order to watch this battle.

Although they weren’t tower challengers, a great number of rich and powerful individuals of the second floor were also very interested in this battle.

On the day of the match, at dawn, a great number of people had already left their residences. Bustling noise filled every corridor, and a flowing surge of people gathered at the martial arena. Looking down from the sky, there were over 10,000 people. It was a spectacular sight.

The martial arena was originally only able to accommodate 8000 people. But for this match, the staff specially added seats.

There were many people that came who weren’t even from the second floor.

Over four hours before the match was set to begin, the entire martial arena was already occupied.

“Damnit! We started here before dawn started and yet there are people that came earlier than us. All of the front row seats are taken.”

Skysplit Tower’s martial arena issued tickets, but these tickets did not assign seats. The quality of one’s view depended all on one’s own ability to find a good spot.

“Is there something wrong with these people? Did they start arriving last night?”

“Heh, that’s right, some of them came last night. Look at them, some of them are still practicing. They’ve probably been in meditation all night.”

“That’s so kickass. If I knew about this earlier then I would have practiced here and meditated also.”

“Well, what’s done is done. Sitting here is fine too. Those sitting in the front will be overwhelmed by the shockwaves of the match; they might even spit out blood or be seriously injured! The weaker ones shouldn’t sit in the front row.”

It wasn't known who said this, but a great number of martial artists looked at each other in alarm. This was right. When Lin Ming had fought Xue Man, several people had been injured. Now in his fight against Xing Tian, it would inevitably be much fiercer. It wasn't an exaggeration to say the weaker ones would cough up blood.

"Eh. Well, uh, let's sit here then."

"Mm. Keeping our lives safe is most important. In this damned place, being injured is far too dangerous."

As several martial artists were speaking, someone suddenly said, "Look… it's Xing Tian. Xing Tian has entered the stage."

Everyone glanced over. At the entrance of the martial arena, Xing Tian was casually walking in. His chest was bare with an animal pelt tossed over the shoulder. He strode with confidence; this was undoubtedly Xing Tian.

Xing Tian carried a black-edged heavy sword. His long red hair was wild and his blue skin illuminated his rock hard muscles. His body was wrapped in thick chains that the Giant Demon race liked. To the Giant Demons, these sort of chains were similar to the necklaces that humans like to wear.

As Xing Tian entered the arena stage, the audience burst out in heated cheers.

Especially the Giant Demon Race. Their voices were originally loud, but with thick demon essence poured into their shouts, their cries seemed to shake the entire arena.

There were also a number of Fey women wantonly screaming. To them, a powerful and vigorous man like Xing Tian was undoubtedly the most attractive sexual partner.

Xing Tian's popularity was much higher than Lin Ming's. This was because the majority of those present were Giant Demons and Goliaths – it was impossible for them to support a human. In addition, Xing Tian had accumulated power and renown over the years, thus Xing Tian had several times more supporters than Lin Ming.

“That fellow Xing Tian, he is increasingly unfathomable.” In a corner of the martial arena, Muk Gu was brilliantly staring at Xing Tian. Xing Tian’s aura was completely restrained without the least bit leaking out. But even so, he still gave off a fearful and gripping feeling. Seeing Xing Tian, Muk Gu felt a faint trembling in his heart.

“It won’t be easy for Xing Tian to defeat Lin Ming…” Muk Gu was truly worried. Lin Ming was not a reckless or arrogant person. If he accepted Xing Tian’s challenge then he naturally had some belief in himself. However, although Muk Gu told himself this, the moment he saw Xing Tian his confidence dropped to zero. When he was still on the second floor, Xing Tian was already a famous character, so he had some understanding of him.

Xing Tian’s attack power was extremely terrifying, his defensive capabilities were incredible, and his soul force was not weak. He even had a good comprehension of Concepts. In addition to all that, he was also fast. It could be said that he didn’t have a single weakness. From the very start he was a versatile martial artist. Now, his strength had increased over the past year, and it was difficult to estimate just how far ahead he was.

“I am completely not his match. If I were to face him, I probably wouldn’t be able to withstand three moves.”

Muk Gu sighed. Beside him, Muk Qing was also silent. Whether it was Xing Tian or Lin Ming, both of them were at a level that surpassed her understanding. All she could do was sit here and quietly watch the match.

“Lin Ming arrived!”

Soon after Xing Tian appeared, Lin Ming also showed up. He wore a simple blue robe. As he grasped the Purple Comet Spear in his hands, his expression was calm.

“Lin Ming, you can do it! Don’t give up!”

“Sir Lin, we believe in you.”

Compared to the roiling shouts from the crowd when Xing Tian appeared, Lin Ming's supporters were much quieter. Most of them were humans, along with a few Fey, in particular young Fey girls. Besides that, there were also some Ferals who had joined Lin Ming's support troop.

"Hehe, you really showed up today." Xing Tian faintly smiled as he looked at Lin Ming.

"Since I agreed, I naturally came." Lin Ming stood on the martial arena stage, the Purple Comet Spear pointed straight at Xing Tian.

The two of them stood 200 feet apart, directly opposite each other.

Chapter 559 – Concept of Annihilation

Chapter 559 – Concept of Annihilation

…

…

…

Xing Tian against Lin Ming.

In this moment where the two stood in confrontation with each other, the entire martial arena audience collectively held their breath. The audience of 10,000 people was without a trace of noise and a deafening silence fell over the stage. The atmosphere was incomparably solemn.

Everyone’s eyes were locked onto their bodies.

“Lin Ming! I know that you were hiding your strength in your battle with Xue Man. Let me see just how much strength you’ve hidden and whether or not you have the qualifications to have to make me fight earnestly!” Xing Tian stood there, his arms crossed behind his back and his eyes looking up. It seemed as if he were looking down on everyone in the world.

“Words are useless. Make your move!”

Lin Ming flourished his long spear and his aura erupted like a volcano. Above the arena, one could clearly hear the sounds of the two auras colliding, grating against each other.

“You seem to have confidence in yourself, but what a coincidence, so do I. Although we both believe we will win, only one of us will walk out of here alive today.” As Xing Tian spoke, he extracted a heavy sword from his back. The nine foot long heavy sword was taller than an average man, and the blade was wide. This blade was as large as a door. Such a greatsword didn't need sword wind. In fact, if it hit a person it would turn them to pulp.

Bang!

Black waves burst out from around Xing Tian. The billowing demon essence was like surging waves that crashed everywhere. All of the surrounding floor tiles were lifted up and thrown away be this demon essence.

But as the tiles were lifted, an incredible scene took place. Several tiles were caught up in the great surging demon essence. In front of the eyes of everyone, the tiles quickly disintegrated into piles of sand that vanished in the wind.

"Mm?" Lin Ming's pupils shrank. He could also turn bricks and tiles into ash, but the difference was that Xing Tian didn't even use a technique. His demon essence merely touched the stones and tiles before turning them to sand; this was truly surprising.

This was...

"The Concept of Annihilation! Xing Tian has actually touched upon the Concept of Annihilation!" In the audience, Muk Gu grimaced. The Concept of Annihilation was a Concept on the same level as the Concepts of Space and Time. It was also an elusive Concept; there were many Fey geniuses that weren't able to comprehend this, so how could Xing Tian?

"Xing Tian is truly peerless!"

"Fierce! He is worthy of being called the king of the second floor!"

In front of Muk Gu, many Giant Demon martial artist were excitedly speaking. However, Muk Gu only frowned.

Genius?

Muk Gu had some understanding of Xing Tian. In terms of physicality and his demon essence cultivations speed, Xing Tian was absolutely first class. But in terms of understanding Laws, Xing Tian was at best mediocre. Compared to the Fey, a large gap existed between them. Only a short time had passed, so how could he possibly have comprehended the Concept of Annihilation?

"Lin Ming, you will be just like these stones, turning into ash under my moves. Now die!" Xing Tian loudly shouted, and his entire body emitted rumbling crackling sounds. Listening to this made one feel fearful. The heavy sword in his hand turned into a strong wind. The howling wind swept up the entire martial stage. As his sword cut down, it was like a falling avalanche containing infinite strength!

In that instant, Lin Ming felt as if all the air around him was sucked away. He stood in place, completely locked down. His only option was to directly face this strike of Xing Tian!

True essence erupted from his entire body. His spear thrust out. Blood Drinking Seals fused into the Purple Comet Spear. This strike contained all of his strength, all of his will!

Slaughter!

The thick spear light struck against Xing Tian's sword. There was an explosion as if two great mountains had collided against each other. True essence and demon essence wantonly twisted together, tearing apart the floor tiles and instantly blowing them away. Even the profound gold flooring underneath was scarred by countless white slashes.

"Be careful!"

The martial artists closest to the martial stage revolved their protective true essence to the limit. They already expected that something like this would occur. It could be said that the weaker individuals did not dare to sit in the first row.

Cha cha cha!

The air currents in the air were like sabers as they cut apart everyone’s bodily true essence. They made screeching noises, and even the stone platform in front of the audience was cut apart like tofu.

“This is indeed a battle between the two strongest existences on the second floor. Even I can only barely resist the true essence shockwaves!”

“Everyone be careful! These two still haven’t put forth their true strength; the worst is yet to come! If you think this is difficult already, then step back lest you be hurt!”

A martial artist suddenly said, causing all of the surrounding youths to have anxious expressions. Indeed, a martial artist’s first moves were mostly for probing. And if probing was already this strong, then just how terrifying would their full strength be?

All of those in the audience were the most outstanding heroic elites of their time. But in comparison to Lin Ming and Xing Tian, they seemed like common martial artists. The disparity was just too great; the two of them had already exceeded the level at which anyone could understand.

‘These two freaks shouldn’t be on the second floor. If they stay here, then how can we stay here too?’ Many martial artists complained inside.

....

“Not bad! You actually received my strike.” As Xing Tian looked at Lin Ming, his pupils narrowed. In that one exchange a moment ago, although he hadn’t used the strength of his Concept, he had used the majority of his strength. But Lin Ming hadn’t seemed strained. Obviously he had strength remaining.

“Very good! You now have the qualifications for me to be serious. Although my strike just now didn’t contain a Concept, I will now let you have a good look at the Concept which I have comprehended! Let me have a look just where the limit of your strength lies, and how much of my strength you can force out!”

Facing Xing Tian's imposing aura, Lin Ming held his spear as if he didn't have a care in the world. "You didn't use a Concept, but neither did I. Then, let's see whose Concept is stronger!"

"Hehe, you truly are confident. Your Concept of Space and Time only allows your moves to be unpredictable and impossible to defend against. It is completely different from my own Concept of Annihilation. My Concept of Annihilation can directly disintegrate your attack so that you can't even resist!"

In terms of attack power, the Concept of Annihilation was definitely more terrifying. It was known as the Concept that destroyed all. This included the enemy's treasure, body, aura, true essence, and even their soul.

But on the other hand, the Concept of Space and Time allowed one's moves to be strange and peculiar, making it so that they were unavoidable. The increase of attack power in the early stages of this Concept's comprehension was obvious.

The Concept of Annihilation and the Concept of Space and Time both had their own strengths. It couldn't be said that one was weaker than the other. It would all depend on the depth of one's respective comprehension and their utilization.

Xing Tian's sword was crossed against his chest. A surging cloud of demon essence howled out, and all the crushed stones underneath his feet turned into flying ash.

"Xing Tian is going to use the Concept of Annihilation! It's said that this Concept can directly destroy an enemy's true essence. If one's true essence is destroyed, how can you block other's moves?"

"Against the destructive power of the Concept of Annihilation, Lin Ming's true essence must be far more formidable than Xing Tian's demon essence in order to come out even. But Xing Tian is already so strong, how can Lin Ming possibly be stronger than him?"

The Concept of Annihilation was able to disintegrate true essence. In a martial arts fight, if true essence was melted away then the other party would naturally suffer!

In other words, in an even battle, Lin Ming had push out 20 to 30% more true essence in order to come out even. The amount of strength he consumed must be far more than Xing Tian. If he wasn't able to reach this level, then he would be suppressed by Xing Tian or even defeated.

Muk Gu took a deep breath. Lin Ming was in a very bad situation!

Lin Ming was indeed strong, but Muk Gu feared that Lin Ming wouldn't be able to kill Lin Ming if he had to waste 20 to 30% extra strength. If he couldn't suppress Xing Tian's Concept of Annihilation, he would lose if this fight dragged out!

"I have no idea how he will deal with this..."

Muk Gu was feeling nervous for Lin Ming.

On the martial stage, Xing Tian held the heavy sword in his hands. The sword blade was wrapped in a hazy black light. This black layer of light was very thin, but after it appeared, it seemed to twist all of the space around it. Dust, air, and even the light that entered this hazy black layer seemed to disappear.

The Power of Annihilation!

Xing Tian shouted out loud, his sword cutting out. This sword stroke was not accompanied by a vast wave of demon essence, instead, there was only that strange hazy black light that enveloped Lin Ming.

"Strange!" Lin Ming's eyes widened. In that hazy black light, he felt a weird force that was able to obliterate everything.

"You have the power of annihilation, but my azure true essence can endlessly grow. Let me see whether your power of annihilation or my azure true essence is stronger!"

After fusing with the reverse scale blood, Lin Ming's true essence carried with it an endless attribute. In this form, it also had an azure color. If someone wanted to destroy Lin Ming's true essence, they would have to use several times the strength.

Roar!

Facing the overwhelming hazy black light, Lin Ming's bones began to issue out deep, guttural explosive sounds. It was like a flood dragon was awakening within Lin Ming's body, letting out an earth-shattering dragon roar.

In his first time facing the Concept of Annihilation, Lin Ming didn't underestimate his opponent. As he used the strength of a True Dragon, he also decisively opened 40% of the Heretical God Force.

A spear thrust out. Behind Lin Ming, a deep, azure-colored True Dragon phantom appeared. In that instant, the Purple Comet Spear itself seemed to turn into an Azure Dragon as it crunched down on the hazy black light.

Kacha!

The spear edge thrust into the haze black light. What was strange was that there were no intense explosions. Instead, the two different kinds of energies collided and true essence melted against each other. It was like fire and ice crashing into one another, both desperately hoping to devour the other.

Chi chi chi!

The hazy black light was constantly crushed into nothing, but Lin Ming's azure spear light was also constantly eroding. After crashing into each other several more times, that hazy black light was actually being violently destroyed by the azure spear light at a faster rate.

"What?" Xing Tian was beyond shocked, "How is this possible!?!?"

It wasn't just Xing Tian that was startled, but also the entire audience. The Concept of Annihilation contained a destructive strength that far surpassed the Concepts of the main elements of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, thunder, and wind. When the Concept of Annihilation appeared, a martial artist on the same level would simply be unable to deal with it!

When even one's true essence was destroyed, how could they continue fighting?

Unless they had an overwhelming superiority in strength.

But Lin Ming clearly didn't. His aura was not any stronger than Xing Tian's, but his true essence seemed to have an incomparably tough attribute.

It endlessly grew, it could not be destroyed!

"This boy!!" Xing Tian clenched his jaws, increasing his strength once again. But even then, he still couldn't suppress Lin Ming's true essence!

This azure true essence was essence from the power of a True Dragon. It originated from an Azure Dragon's reverse scale blood.

And within the Realm of the Gods, an Azure Dragon was considered an ultimate God Beast.

Even though it was only a single drop, it was still extremely terrifying.

Compared to a True Dragon, the Concept of Annihilation was one of the ultimate natural Concepts; it was incomparably powerful. But, the crux was: how much of it could Xing Tian have comprehended? Whether it was cultivation or age, both were far from sufficient. What he had comprehended was nothing but a drop in an ocean.

Chapter 560 – Blood Demon Descends

Chapter 560 – Blood Demon Descends

…

…

…

On the arena stage, the fierce battle was underway. True essence collided.

The power of annihilation had been completely restrained by the azure true essence.

Xing Tian's expression became extremely dire, "Boy, your true essence is quite special; it truly surprises me. But let me take a good look at how much longer you can last. In endurance, us Giant Demons are far more formidable than humans can ever be! Show me your limit!"

Xing Tian's eyes flashed with a savage light. The demon essence that revolved in his body grew increasingly intense.

Lin Ming sneered, "I've never feared anyone when it came to endurance or restorative ability. But… you seem to have forgotten something. You have already shown your Concept, but I still haven't used mine! My comprehension of the Concept of Space and Time is shallow right now so I cannot yet increase my attack power with it, but with my unpredictable style, can you escape it?"

As Lin Ming spoke to here, his eyes turned cold. His spear potential began to stir, and 70% of the Heretical God Force suddenly erupted. The space underneath his feet seemed to strangely distort, and with it, Lin Ming turned into a blue blur that vanished in the wind.

Chi chi chi!

The remaining hazy black lights struck where Lin Ming had vanished, turning the tiles into ash and even creating a massive hole in the profound gold flooring.

“What a smug ego. If you want to fight then fight, stop spouting so much nonsense!” Xing Tian breathlessly shouted. Now that the Concept of Annihilation he was so proud of had failed, he became angry out of shame.

A strong wind howled, and all of the surrounding wind was rapidly caught up in Lin Ming’s movements. With the Concept of Wind and the Concept of Space simultaneously fused into his steps, Lin Ming’s speed had reached the pinnacle.

Woosh!

Lin Ming instantly appeared before Xing Tian. There was no sign at all; it was as if he had materialized in front of him.

A spear thrust out. Blood Drinking Seals shot forth.

Blood Seal Twisting Murder!

“Humph!”

Xing Tian angrily shouted and the heavy sword in his hands cut straight down. The heavy sword that weighed tens of thousands of jins was actually like a straw in Xing Tian’s hands. His attack speed was not slowed at all by the heavy sword’s immense weight.

However, as the sword was halfway down, Xing Tian’s sneer froze on his face. Although Lin Ming’s spear was fast, Xing Tian still believed he would block it. But, Xing Tian’s confidence rapidly fell. For some unknown reason, when his sword was only halfway down, it seemed as if time itself had slowed around him. He could only watch on as Lin Ming’s spear thrust straight towards his throat!

“Damnit!”

Xing Tian's eyes were bloodshot. He shouted out and a hazy black light erupted from his entire body. The Concept of Annihilation surged out, barely breaking through the space-time chains that were shackling him. At this moment, Xing Tian no longer had time to use his sword to block Lin Ming's Purple Comet Spear. He retreated, but he was one step too slow. The Purple Comet Spear mercilessly stabbed into Xing Tian's chest.

His bodily protective demon essence shattered and blood shot into the wind!

"You!!!"

Xing Tian fled back over a hundred feet. Because he had retreated, he had managed to avoid the spear fatally piercing his throat. But, nearly the entire spearhead had sunk into his chest instead. The ensuing destructive true essence and infernal energy that plunged into his body too was only just forcefully suppressed by Xing Tian.

As Xing Tian looked at Lin Ming, his eyes were grim. A thick, hateful killing intent surged out from them.

Xing Tian had been injured!

The entire audience was in a shocked stupor.

First, that strange azure true essence had resisted Xing Tian's Concept of Annihilation and had even suppressed it. Then, that strike that contained the Concept of Space and Time had shot out, injuring Xing Tian.

Although Xing Tian's wound wasn't considered to be grievous, it had to be said that on Skysplit Tower's second floor, Xing Tian was known as an omnipotent existence. No one had ever been able to shake his lofty position. Half a year ago, he had fought another top master of the second floor in a life or death battle, and in the end he claimed victory by chopping off the other's head.

But today he had been injured by a human youth!

“Just how is this human cultivating? Looking at him, he’s at most in his twenties.”

“His strength is greater than Xue Man’s and his defensive strength is incomparably formidable. Is this really an ability that a human should have? Even a Giant Demon isn’t so fierce. Haven’t humanity’s body transformation techniques already been lost since ancient times? Not just that, but it was said that the humans’ body transformation cultivation methods were trash, thus they were eventually eliminated. Even studying it was useless.”

Humans were physically weak; they were not suited for physical body training. This was a fact that the entire Holy Demon Continent recognized, even including the humans.

“Not only is his body formidable, but his speed is abnormal and he’s also comprehended the Laws of Space and Time that many Fey geniuses couldn’t even understand. Yes, that’s right, he also fought with Blackrat a while ago. The Imps are known to excel in soul attacks, but facing Blackrat, he didn’t even blink an eye and instead completely ignored it. In terms of soul force he is also a freak. Does he even have a weakness?”

Without thinking of anything else but this list, the light in everyone’s eyes began to change as they looked towards Lin Ming.

A human physicality that was stronger than a Giant Demon’s. An affinity to Laws that surpassed the Fey. A soul force stronger than the Imps’.

Astonishing speed. A disturbingly thick true essence that contained a strange attribute that made it especially tough.

In the eyes of these people, Lin Ming was a complete monster.

A monster without a single weakness!

Facing such an enemy, how could anyone deal with him?

“Very good!” Xing Tian icily said, “How long has it been since someone has pushed me this far. I never thought I would have to use this move on the second floor, and that is because there is no one here qualified for me to use it. You should be honored that you have finally received the qualifications for me to do so!”

“You sure speak enough nonsense. Try to suppress me first before you blabber on.” Lin Ming laughed, sneering. “You said that you haven’t used your complete strength but you still haven’t gone to the third floor. And you really think you have courage or something?”

“Humph! What would you know? I naturally have my reasons for staying on the second floor for so long, how could a nobody like you ever understand? Now go and die in peace!”

Xing Tian shouted out and clenched his fists together. Every muscle on his body puffed out and his hair began to grow longer. The demon essence in his body became increasingly intense, forming a tide of energy that surged out from him.

His skin and eyes began to take on a blood-red light. The veins on his body bulged out like worms and some of them even ruptured!

Blood Demon Descends!

This was an ability similar to the Fey’s Fey King Battle Body. When a Giant Demon’s ancient bloodline reached a certain degree of purity, they were able to obtain the approval of the Ancient Giant Demons and use Blood Demon Descends, increasing their strength for a short period of time.

But, compared to the Fey King Battle Body, Blood Demon Descends was a much more cruel and savage cultivation method. One would have to sacrifice a portion of their blood essence, thus no one easily displayed this ability.

Lin Ming’s eyes narrowed as he looked at Xing Tian, “It looks like I won’t be able to hide my strength anymore.”

Lin Ming held onto the Purple Comet Spear. For the third floor where powerhouses were like clouds, and for that hidden enemy who was aiming at him, Lin Ming had been showing weakness by hiding his strength as much as possible. But now, facing Xing Tian, he could no longer hold back.

In a contest between masters, if one side misjudged the other and didn't use their complete strength, then it was likely they would be injured or even die.

His mind touched upon the Heretical God Seed. The Heretical God Force completely opened!

Bang!

The unleashed Heretical God Seed erupted like a massive volcano. After stepping onto Skysplit Tower's second floor, Lin Ming had finally liberated the complete Heretical God Force for the first time.

After Xing Tian's declaration of challenge, Lin Ming had cultivated for a month in his practice room. His biggest achievement from this was progress in the Heretical God Force.

Lin Ming had firmly reached the middle Xiantian realm, and with his complete Tempering Marrow, he could keep the Heretical God Force open for half an incense stick of time. Not only that, but after a fight ended, he would be able to save all of the compressed true essence that hadn't been released.

Which meant that as long as there was enough true essence, the Heretical God Force could continuously open and close. It was no longer like before, where all of the true essence would exhaust itself after one use, dissipating no matter the situation.

Lin Ming's imposing aura began to climb unendingly. His true essence was like a sharp spear that seemed to pierced through the world, unstoppable!

As the arena audience saw this scene, all of them paled. They began to use movement techniques to escape from the shockwave aftermath.

These martial artists had already pushed themselves to the limit in resisting the last exchange of moves. Much less now, where the power on stage had dramatically risen yet again! If they were caught in the aftermath of this attack they might even die!

“Too strong! Xing Tian can already be called an Emperor level talent, but Lin Ming is even fiercer than Xing Tian!”

“This is the highest level battle of masters that has occurred on Skysplit Tower’s second floor for the last decade. Perhaps for the next 10 years it might be difficult to encounter a match that surpasses this! I really have no idea just what these two cultivate.”

The martial artists in the audience began to discuss the situation. Some of them were inexplicably excited, and some of them had complex expressions. If they never left their sect, they never would have known just how high the heavens were and how vast the world was. They were all peerless juniors of their generations, but how could the gap between them be so great? This caused some of them to feel powerless and frustrated.

Xing Tian’s aura broke out to the limit. His eyes were blood-red. With a deafening roar, his sword cut forth!

In that moment, he was like a demonic god. His aura was as lofty as a mountain, unreachable!

This sword strike was like a massive divine mountain dropping down; it carried the terrifying power of the world.

Lin Ming’s pupils shrunk. In the face of such a strike, this would be hard fending off if he only relied on his killing path. As for the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’, he still hadn’t meditated upon a stronger technique from it.

His soul forced linked to the Heretical God Seed.

Atop the Purple Comet Spear, thunder and fire trembled, two energies beginning to twine together. With the support of the 10,000 year Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo and the 10,000 year Sacred Flame Parasol Tree, his strength reached the extreme.

Flames surged. Thunder howled.

Since entering Skysplit Tower, this was the first time that Lin Ming used Thunderfire Annihilation!

Fire and thunder twisted together, detonating into a flame that swallowed all, becoming a dazzlingly radiant light that people shielded their eyes from.

In the damaged arena, all of the floor tiles were completely lifted and thrown away. Even the chairs of the first several rows were shattered into pieces!

In this terrifying explosion that seemed to swallow everything, Lin Ming felt as if he were in his own dimension. His perception and his vision were incomparably clear; he instantly locked onto Xing Tian's position!

After bearing the brunt of Thunderfire Annihilation, Xing Tian's entire body was bathed in blood. His chest was a mess of pulp, but his two blood-red eyes were still bursting with a monstrous hatred and killing intent.

Even though Xing Tian's final move had collided with Thunderfire Annihilation and his bodily demon essence had blocked a great deal of the attack, he had still been seriously injured. Not just that, but his protective demon essence had also completely shattered.

"An opening!"

Lin Ming's footsteps moved, his figure instantly vanishing from where he stood. The Purple Comet Spear seemed to pass through space in an instant, appearing right in front of Xing Tian!

Under the cover of the explosive fires, and fused with the Concept of Space, the Purple Comet Spear's unpredictable attacks were already near-impossible to defend against. Moreover, Xing Tian had already been severely wounded, with his meridians broken in several areas!

The spear easily stabbed through his throat!

A bloody light shot out!

Chapter 561 – King Emblem

Chapter 561 – King Emblem

…

…

…

In the instant that the Purple Comet Spear pierced through Xing Tian’s throat, Blood Drinking Seals shot out. Xing Tian’s head was directly sliced off and a fountain of blood erupted dozens of feet into the air.

Splat!

Xing Tian’s head rolled to the floor. In the moment that the dazzling explosion of light ended, everyone saw the scene of the blood crazily spurting out.

Xing Tian had died…

As the audience saw this, they all felt as if they were in an unreal dream. Xing Tian, who had once dominated the second floor, had died like this!

And at the hands of a human youth!

In particular, the Giant Demons present found this hard to accept. To them, Xing Tian was a representation of their beliefs. The impact of his death on their psyches was too great.

“From now, the king of Skysplit Tower’s second floor has changed…”

“Damn! Where is this boy from!?”

When Lin Ming defeated Lan Xing, it could be said that he was an Emperor level talent. But, within Skysplit Tower, although there weren't too many Emperor level talents, one could always find them. An Emperor level talent was not equal to an Emperor level powerhouse. Within the entire Holy Demon Continent, there were numerous Emperor level talents, but those that could actually reach the true Emperor level were extremely rare and limited.

When a genius wanted to grow, they needed to experience the world and adventure, seeking their own lucky chances. They often had to put themselves in dangerous situations, and the chance of perishing was great. This all required that a great deal of destiny befall their bodies.

Lin Ming was originally only an Emperor level talent. Although this was startling, it wasn't worth the great powers fearing, or even paying attention too. But now, he had defeated Xing Tian. This actually caused some of the higher powers to feel restless.

In a corner of the arena, Muk Gu sighed. "Lin Ming is only at the middle Xiantian realm but he can already jump realms to defeat a top Giant Demon master. If he reaches the Revolving Core realm in the future, cross seven or eight stages of Life Destruction, temper his body even further and finally enter the Divine Sea realm, then at that time, I have no idea just who would be capable of standing near him..."

As Muk Gu spoke, Muk Qing silently stood beside him. With her face concealed behind her veil, it was unknown just what she was thinking.

Peng!

On the arena stage, Xing Tian's corpse burst apart. A massive power of vitality gushed out, finally condensing into a fist-sized crystal ball in the air.

"What an amazing vitality!"

Lin Ming was secretly surprised. This Xing Tian's power of vitality was at least two times more than Xue Man's! Not just that, but the key was that the quality was also extremely high. If the richness of the blood was lacking, it could be made up for via quantity. But if the qualitative nature of the vitality itself was lacking, it was useless to make up for.

If all of his Blood Drinking Seals were condensed from blood essence like this, then he could definitely double the strength of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’.

“Mm?”

After absorbing the blood essence, Lin Ming’s eyes narrowed. In front of him, the infernal energy that was left behind from Xing Tian didn’t disperse. Rather, it gathered together and formed a wrathful demon that clawed towards him.

Roar!

The demon condensed from infernal energy roared out as it rushed towards Lin Ming. If this were a normal challenger that had died, the winner would be able to directly absorb their infernal energy. But Xing Tian’s infernal energy was simply too thick; it had reached the point at which it could manifest into a physical body. Like this, it wished to devour Lin Ming.

Lin Ming coldly humphed. He flicked his finger and the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder shot out. Lightning flashed, and the infernal enemy demon wailed in pain, its face twisting miserably.

“Break!”

Lin Ming suddenly closed his palm, and an arc of lightning the thickness of an arm shout out. With a ripping sound, that demon phantom was torn apart.

The infernal energy dissipated, scattering in all directions. On Lin Ming’s arm, the Heavenly Demon Tattoo completely absorbed it all.

A third pair of wings began to stretch out on his arm at a visible speed with absolute clarity. Quickly, a six-winged Heavenly Demon formed.

A fourth pair of wings also began to slowly appear.

This fourth pair of wings was obviously much, much harder to form. Even after absorbing the massive amount of infernal energy left behind by Xing Tian's death, it was only enough to form the faintest of outlines.

Lin Ming closed his eyes and entered the ethereal state. With the Samsara martial intent as the base, he continuously wore down the wicked malice in the infernal energy so that his heart wouldn't be affected.

As for the last step, he took Xing Tian's spatial ring. Xing Tian had accumulated a massive amount of treasure and wealth during his stay in Skysplit Tower. Lin Ming was very much looking forwards to seeing what was inside the spatial ring.

"Congratulations to Young Hero Lin for becoming the new king of the second floor!" The referee announced as he stepped onto the arena stage. His eyes were filled with a touch of awe as he looked at Lin Ming.

"Thank you." Lin Ming casually replied.

"Young Hero Lin has ended Xing Tian's 82 win streak. You have obtained eight slaughter points. In addition, according to the rules of Skysplit Tower, Young Hero Lin's winning streak has now accumulated to 52."

Within Skysplit Tower, if a challenger defeated a martial artist with a much higher winning streak then they would be able to raise their own winning streak in accordance. The method for this was the winner's new winning streak would be the loser's winning streak minus 30.

For instance, Xing Tian's 82 winning streak minus 30 was 52.

If the challenger's winning streak was below this amount, then it would rise to that amount. If the challenger's winning streak was above that amount, then nothing changed.

"I understand. I should be able to go to the third floor now."

"Of course you can. You can go to the third floor whenever you wish, or, you can also stay on the second floor as king. If you go shopping in the city square, then as long as it's a store officially opened by Skysplit Tower, you can obtain a 10% discount. In addition, you also obtain a new Glory Emblem – the King Emblem. This emblem originally belonged to Xing Tian, but now that you've killed him it is yours by right. Since you have obtained the King Emblem, you also gain an additional 20 slaughter points."

The second floor did not have an emblem for a complete blowout. Rather, there was only the King Emblem. On the other hand, the King Emblem was much rarer and gave more rewards. Complete blowouts occurred every two weeks or so on the first floor, but the King Emblem only changed hands every one or two years. At the same time, earning a complete blowout was only rewarded with the Invincible Emblem along with 10 slaughter points, but the King Emblem rewarded 20.

"Mm?"

Lin Ming's eyes brightened. Now that he had the Invincible Emblem of the first floor and the King Emblem of the second floor, he had a three-star authority.

With a three-star authority, he could watch Emperor level battle array discs!

The eight stage Life Destruction human powerhouse from before did have a strength that could compare to an Emperor level master, but that was only the most initial of Emperor level masters. It had to be known that between Emperor level masters, there were massive disparities. The early Divine Sea realm and the late Divine Sea realm were on two entirely different playing fields.

"I really have no idea what it would take to rent an array disc with a late Divine Sea master. Although my current net wealth sounds high, if I freely spend it then who knows how long it'll be before I run out."

When Lin Ming killed Xue Man he obtained seven slaughter points, and when he killed Xing Tian he obtained eight. With an additional five from obtaining a 50 win streak as well as 20 from the King Emblem, Lin Ming now had a total of 40 slaughter points.

This number sounded quite terrifying, but if he used four or five slaughter points at a time, it actually wouldn't last too long.

"Does Young Hero Lin have any other requests?" The referee asked respectfully.

"Nope! Thank you." Lin Ming cupped his fists together before turning to leave.

"Then I wish congratulate Young Hero Lin and hope that you soon reach the throne of the High Lord! The referee said with a flattering tone. For these last several hundred years, there had never been a human High Lord in Polaris City.

The referee was a hybrid. He was part Giant Demon but also part human and Fey. Thus, he didn't care which race obtained a new High Lord throne.

Lin Ming smiled. Without another word, he stepped down from the martial stage.

"Brother Lin!"

As Lin Ming was walking through the audience, Muk Gu trotted over with Muk Qing in tow. "Brother Lin, I never thought that after such a short time since our last meeting, you would already become the king of the second floor."

"It's a useless title." Lin Ming shook his head. "On the third floor there should be numerous powerhouses that can easily sweep away everyone on the second floor."

"True. The third floor does have many skilled individuals, for instance, the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. Any one of those seven are capable of sweeping away the second floor, but as for someone who is as young as Brother Lin who can do the same, there isn't a single one! The martial artists on the third floor are much older than those on the second; they can't be considered too talented." Muk Gu said with heartfelt admiration. He too had stayed on the second floor for a long time, so he naturally knew the worth of the King Emblem, especially in the hands of someone as young as Lin Ming.

“Does Brother Lin plan on staying on the second floor for a while, or do you plan on going to the third floor?”

Muk Gu was well aware that the reason Lin Ming came was to gain experience. If he couldn’t find a suitable opponent on the second floor then he would probably have to go to the third.

“Brother Muk, could you tell me about the situation on the third floor? I don’t know much about the going-ons of Skysplit Tower.”

Muk Gu laughed in self-deprecation and said, “I’ve been on the third floor for over half a year but I’m still considered at the lowest level there. Still, my greatest harvest for this period was that I’ve gained some insight into the third floor. Brother Lin has asked the perfect person. Shall we go somewhere else and speak in further detail?”

With a chance to help Lin Ming in front of him, Muk Gu naturally wouldn’t miss out.

“Mm, I was also thinking that.” Lin Ming had always felt subconsciously that someone had been aiming for him. If he didn’t understand anything and recklessly rushed to the third floor, then he might run into danger.

Gain knowledge ahead of time. Understand yourself, understand the enemy. That was the way to victory.

………..

Noblesse Pavilion in Skysplit Tower was a restaurant that specifically catered to human challengers. At this moment in a room on the second level of Noblesse Pavilion, Lin Ming, Muk Gu, and Muk Qing had chosen several dishes and were currently talking over food.

“Brother Lin, Skysplit Tower is divided into five total floors, each being around 7000 to 8000 feet high. Every floor is connected to the others with transmission arrays.

“The first floor is normally called the outer city. As long as you hand over Blood Demon Crystals then you can enter. The second floor is called the inner city. If you wish to enter here, then you need to be strong enough or have a high cultivation. The third floor is similar to the second, except that the requirements for strength and cultivation are much higher. As for the fourth floor, that is the High Lords’ floor. The 12 ten-winged Heavenly Demon High Lords are all completely located on the fourth floor. As for the fifth floor, it is extremely mysterious. I have no idea what might be there, if there is anything at all.” Muk Gu said as he poured out a glass of wine for Lin Ming. He also made a proper gesture, completely performing every polite ritual correctly. It was a very breezy feeling.

“So in other words, to a challenger, the third floor is the highest?”

“Yes. The fourth floor is the residence and practice area of the High Lords.”

Lin Ming thought about this for a moment and said, “Brother Muk, do you know how strong the top martial artists of the third floor are?”

Muk Gu shook his head. “I’m not too sure about that. I still haven’t had much contact with individuals at that level. On the third floor, there are many people similar to Xing Tian; they haven’t fought in a long time, so I have no idea what their limits are.”

“Mm…” Lin Ming nodded. In Skysplit Tower, everyone was able to conceal their strength. He too hadn’t known what the limits of Xing Tian’s strength were. This was very normal.

Chapter 562 – Road of Emperor

Chapter 562 – Road of Emperor

…

…

…

The waitresses of Noblesse Pavilion were all beautiful and young girls. Currently, several of them were serving snacks and wine. As they filled the wine cups, they would respectfully kneel on the floor. Every position and movement they made was learned through rigorous training, and their smiling faces held just the right amount of bashful shyness. Within Skysplit Tower, as long as a martial artist had wealth, they could live like an emperor.

Towards these things, Muk Gu was already long accustomed. But Lin Ming wasn't too interested. He sipped a cup of tea and waited until the waitress left before slowly asking, "What would Xing Tian's strength be ranked at on the third floor?"

Muk Gu pondered this for a moment and said, "I can't say exactly, but I can roughly estimate that he would rank somewhere in the middle. At most, he'd rank in the upper middle reaches. You should already be aware that the martial artists on the third floor are much older than those on the second floor. Although Xing Tian's talent was good, he didn't cultivate for as much time as others. Those on the third floor have nearly all surpassed the age limit for staying on the second, and they have no other choice but to go up. The total amount of people on the third floor is also very low; there are just a mere several hundred individuals."

"Just several hundred people?" Lin Ming thought for a moment and said, "I recall that Skysplit Tower has a Glory Emblem called the Hundred Win Streak Emblem. If the third floor only has several hundred individuals, then obtaining this emblem must be far too difficult!"

It had to be known that Xing Tian only had an 82 win streak. It was extremely difficult for a challenger to accumulate a high winning streak. It wasn't that a martial artist was too weak, but rather that no one would want to fight them.

For instance, take someone as strong as Xing Tian. If someone knew that fighting him would clearly result in horrible defeat or even death, then who would dare to do so? Thus, Xing Tian hadn't had a match in over half a year.

Skysplit Tower's second floor had several thousand martial artists. Xing Tian had stayed there for several years, but all he had was an 82 win streak.

Then on the third floor that only had several hundred martial artists, it might take several years to gain a 20 win streak. How would someone ever win a Hundred Win Streak Glory Emblem?

As Muk Gu heard Lin Ming's question, his complexion changed. His voice was low and grim as he said, "About that… the third floor has a special rule. On the third floor, if you defeat your opponent and gain a winning streak, then you will gain slaughter points, just like on the second floor. But, what's different is that on the third floor, if you kill your opponent instead, you will instantly accumulate a 10 win streak."

"What?" Lin Ming's heart chilled. "This rule is completely encouraging martial artists to kill each other!"

Muk Gu let out a light breath and said, "That's right… Skysplit Tower encourages us to kill each other. Do not forget, if you were to accumulate a 10 win streak then you could obtain a slaughter point, but on the third floor, if you kill your opponent, not only would you obtain a 10 win streak, but you'd also obtain a corresponding number of slaughter points. Killing an opponent and not killing them… these are two completely different treatments! Therefore, on the third floor, martial artists will be beyond careful in challenging others. Normally, one won't do anything rashly, because participating in a fight will often mean a life or death battle. In addition, the number of martial artists there is low, so this means that the martial arena is empty most of the time."

"This seems…" Lin Ming frowned. It seemed that the high level characters in Skysplit Tower were not any sort of good-hearted individuals. It was as if none of them wished to see a genius grow, but rather they hoped that all the geniuses would instead kill each other within Skysplit Tower.

The several hundred martial artists that were on Skysplit Tower's third floor were all the most outstanding youthful elites of the entire Holy Demon Continent. In the future, the weakest among them would be a Revolving Core master, and the strongest would reach three or four stages of Life Destruction or a five or six star Demon King. It wouldn't be strange for them to one day reach the quasi Emperor level!

For such a massive crowd of monstrous geniuses, a single death was an enormous loss!

Lin Ming said, "None of those young heroic elites are stupid. Since the higher ups of Skysplit Tower obviously hope that they can kill each other, why don't they leave instead of letting matters continue like this? Could it really be that they want to continue to the end of their killing path?"

He understood if those on the first and second floor stayed. After all, they were nearly all cannon fodder. But none of those types of people existed on the third floor. Everyone on the third floor were peerless geniuses of their respective regions. For them to arrive at this point for their killing path, it meant their road had reached an extreme.

Muk Gu said, "Birds die for food, mortals perish for wealth, and martial artists fall from the sky for resources. There's no other way; a martial artist simply can't stop their greed from pushing them onwards. Simply put, the reason they go onstage, besides for gaining experience and testing themselves, is mainly for the slaughter points. They want to earn these points in order to use the resources here."

“Resources? What sort of valuable cultivation resources can there be on the third floor that cause so many martial artists to lose their minds with greed? The lowest of these geniuses come from peak fourth-grade sects. Do they really lack resources?” Lin Ming asked, puzzled.

“Hehe, of course they do not lack things like cultivation methods, pills, Blood Demon Crystals, or true essence stones. But, there are some things that one can only find in Skysplit Tower. For instance, that battle array disc that Brother Lin saw before is one kind, but also not one that’s too important.”

“Oh?” Lin Ming’s eyebrows shot up. The battle array disc had given him great benefits. What other rare resources did Skysplit Tower have?

Muk Gu continued, “The third floor has some very strange things. If you have enough authority you can even go up to the fourth floor where the High Lords cultivate. That floor is filled with wondrous mysteries. If you go there and are able to enjoy the resources there, then your benefits will be endless.

“On Skysplit Tower’s third floor, there have been many martial artists that never had very great talent. This is exactly the reason that they come to Skysplit Tower. If they can fight their way through the Ashura battlefield here, then along with top resources, they can evolve, breaking out of their cocoons and being reborn into butterflies. An ordinary talent can become a Saint level talent, and a Saint level talent can become an Emperor level talent! Therefore, even if they all know that the chances of them dying within Skysplit Tower are high, they cannot resist the temptation and continue to stay here.”

Lin Ming’s interest was piqued by Muk Gu’s words, “What are these strange things you talk about?”

Muk Gu said, “My knowledge of the specifics are limited. I’ve heard some rumors, but they’ve all been extremely bizarre. For instance, on the fourth floor where the High Lords cultivate, there is a mystical path called the Road of Emperor. It’s said that if someone were to reach the very end of this road, then they would become an Emperor level powerhouse.”

“What?” Lin Ming was left speechless. “Reaching the end of this road can allow one to become an Emperor level powerhouse? Is there really something so absurd in this world?”

“It should be true. Both sides of this road are supposedly carved with reliefs of past ancient Emperor level powerhouses. There are countless mysteries and puzzles locked within, and as for what they are, I’m not too sure. I am far from having the authority to enter the Road of Emperor.”

Muk Gu’s simple explanation caused Lin Ming’s heart to shake in shock. He was stunned for a moment, and then took out a plain-looking tome from his spatial ring. He had obtained this ancient-looking tome after killing Xue Man and examining his spatial ring. The contents of this tome were entirely rubbed images, and every single image was an Emperor level powerhouse of the Holy Demon Continent that had existed up to tens of thousands of years ago. There were even drawings of top Emperor level talents!

This included the Netherworld Great Emperor. Impressively, even the Demon Emperor was included among them.

Muk Gu’s eyes jumped as he saw this bound tome of skins.

Lin Ming didn’t speak. He opened the tome. The lifelike rubbings of Emperor level powerhouses from tens of thousands of years ago appeared in front of Muk Gu.

As Muk Gu browsed through the pages, he became increasingly startled. Muk Qing also leaned over to look out of curiosity.

“Where did you get this?”

“I found it in Xue Man’s spatial ring after I killed him. The portraits of these people should be rubbed from those carved reliefs you mentioned. If I’m not wrong, then it’s most likely the Road of Emperor.”

Muk Gu let out a long breath and closed the tome. He said, “You’re right! The reliefs within the Road of Emperor are said to be extremely lifelike and contain numerous different

Concepts. Brother Lin's tome has characters from tens of thousands of years ago; how could a normal person possibly draw them? These images even perfectly encapsulate the arrogance and imposing dignity that they have, eyes that look down at the world with disdain… the contents of this tome should definitely be rubbings of the Road of Emperor's reliefs!"

Lin Ming nodded. He had two questions simmering inside him. First, just who was it that had carved these reliefs on the Road of Emperor's walls? Since these reliefs contained all sorts of mysteries and Concepts and they were even used to decorate this Road of Emperor, it was definitely not something that a common person would be able to do. Some reliefs were even from 70,000 to 80,000 years ago. Up until now, during this extremely long span of time when even the Demon Emperor and other Supreme Elders perished in the Realm of the Gods, just who could have such a long life and still be carving reliefs to this day?

Secondly, just why would this tome be in Xue Man's hands? Xue Man couldn't be considered a king of the second floor. Arguably he shouldn't have the qualifications to peek into the Road of Emperor.

Lin Ming felt more and more that Skysplit Tower was filled with great mysteries. It definitely wasn't as simple as he thought it was.

It was said that the Blood Slaughter Steppes contained a mysterious force that was able to kill top powerhouses. Thus, Emperor level powerhouses and Life Destruction powerhouses did not dare to set foot within the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

Then, there were also the strange rules that governed the Blood Slaughter Steppes. The 12 Heavenly Demon Main Cities were the 12 sources of infernal energy. And within these cities, the source of that infernal energy was a fathomless abyss. These abysses extended up from tens of thousands or even hundreds of thousands of feet deep within the ground; it was unknown just how far they went.

All in all, this allowed Lin Ming to understand just how vast the mysteries of the Blood Slaughter Steppes were.

“Brother Lin, let me advise you that every martial artist usually stays on the second floor for as long as possible. This is because the pressure is just too great. I don’t need to mention the numerous masters that are there, but Skysplit Tower also has a rule that every martial artist on the third floor must compete in a match every two months. Otherwise, they have to leave Skysplit Tower and leave Polaris City. Once they leave Polaris City, their Heavenly Demon Tattoo will begin to fade over time and they will have to restart from scratch if they wish to reform it.”

Lin Ming nodded. “So if I go into closed-door seclusion for one year, I will have to compete in six matches?”

“Yes. Not just that, but every match is randomly assigned to you based upon your current level of strength; it is completely different from the second floor where you seek your own opponents. So, you have to be very careful in hiding your own strength. If you expose too many of your abilities, then the matches you will be given will be increasingly strong!”

“I understand. Speaking with Brother Muk has really helped a lot.”

“Brother Lin is too humble. We’re both human, so we should help each other when we can. These little things are the best that I can do. If Brother Lin goes to the third floor, then you can find me there.” As Muk Gu spoke he put down a note with his address. This was the location of his residence there.

Lin Ming glanced at it then put it away. “There are some minor matters that I must complete on the second floor. Afterwards, it shouldn’t be too long before I go to the third floor. I’ll have to trouble Brother Muk when I head up.”

“Brother Lin is too polite, feel free to look for me whenever!”

Chapter 563 – The Eight Inner Hidden Gates

Chapter 563 – The Eight Inner Hidden Gates

…

…

…

After Lin Ming bid Muk Gu farewell, he quickly soared over to the second floor’s city square.

Because of Lin Ming’s arrival, a pall of heavy silence immediately fell over the entire area. Many of the martial artists present now knew who Lin Ming was. As the king of the second floor, his arrival at the city square was like an emperor going out on a journey.

“Young Hero Lin!”

From far away, the fat Fey that Lin Ming was doing business with hurried over, his face covered with smiles. “Does Young Hero Lin have any orders?”

“Have you finished trading for the Blood Demon Crystals?” Lin Ming had left a great deal of treasures here for the fat Fey vendor to exchange for high-grade Blood Demon Crystals.

“I’ve exchanged less than a half. These past days I haven’t been selling any of my own wares; I’ve only been helping to take care of yours!” The fat Fey vendor was doing everything he could to establish better relations with Lin Ming.

He truly had tried his best these past days. All of the treasures that Lin Ming had left to him were scattered and very random. Although every object was valuable, it would be difficult to find a suitable buyer for every item in a short time.

“Mm. I won’t treat you poorly. As for the previous agreement we made, I’ll make sure that you receive the percentage promised.”

“Haha, Young Hero Lin is too polite. Being able to sell treasures for you is my honor.” The fat Fey vendor said as he pulled out a case of Blood Demon Crystals. The inside was packed with high-grade Blood Demon Crystals. “This is what I’ve gathered from the recent trades as well as the exchange of medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals. There should be a total of 400 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals. Please count them.”

Lin Ming casually swept over them; the number was correct. He took 20 out and handed them to the fat Fey vendor. “Here, this is the agreed 5%. It would be best if you could completely trade everything within the month.”

“That is…” The fat Fey looked at the 20 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals in front of him and quietly gulped. “Young Hero Lin, you may rest assured that I will do everything in my power to complete your task in the shortest time possible.”

The fat Fey slapped his chest in guarantee.

“Great. After this matter is complete, I will give you another reward.” Lin Ming received all of the Blood Demon Crystals and then walked away.

After he returned to his practice area, Lin Ming first sat in meditation to relax his state of mind. Then, he took out Xing Tian’s spatial ring. Xing Tian’s spatial ring was a top medium-grade earth-step treasure. As Lin Ming probed it with his sense, he could tell that its inner dimensional space was three to four times larger than Xue Man’s spatial ring. The space inside was also extremely stable; it would be able to function for another 3000 to 4000 years without collapsing.

“Great ring. Just this ring by itself is priceless.”

Lin Ming began to take everything out of the spatial ring. The first thing that caught his eye was a large box of high-grade Blood Demon Crystals. Roughly estimating, there was around 500 to 600 of them.

As for medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals, there were several dozen large cases that were packed to the brim. A conservative estimate was in the tens of thousands.

This was a great amount of wealth.

The Blood Demon Crystals were all separately placed into another spatial ring. This was followed by the pills, jade slips, treasures, and so on.

Because Lin Ming wanted to find some of Skysplit Tower's secrets from Xing Tian's spatial ring, he carefully and patiently checked every jade slip for clues. But unfortunately, from start to end, he didn't find anything of value concerning Skysplit Tower.

These jade slips recorded rare demonic realm cultivation methods, but they weren't too useful to Lin Ming.

Slightly disappointed, Lin Ming began to examine the pill bottles. With several dozen pill bottles, Lin Ming began to take the pills out one at a time. Most of them were high-level recovery medicines like the Divine Blood Pill – they weren't particularly special. But as Lin Ming was about to sweep aside the pill bottles, something caught his attention.

He took a pill bottle and gently rolled it in his hand. "This is… a spell?"

Lin Ming was surprised to find that this seemingly ordinary engraved bottle was in fact cleverly concealing a small spell.

Lin Ming had a deep understanding of spells. He studied the spell a bit, and his mouth curved up in a smile. "How interesting. I wonder what's inside."

Lin Ming slowly traced a finger down the bottle and carefully injected true essence within. After a while, a black hazy aura began to appear over the originally pure white bottle.

Kacha!

With a light sound, the bottle cracked in half. Immediately, a large metal box flew out of the bottle. For the half fist-sized bottle to contain such a large metal box, this was of course the function of that spell.

"You've placed this in your own spatial ring yet you've done everything you could to hide it. For you to be so cautious, what can it be?" Lin Ming's curiosity was aroused. Whatever this was must be extremely important to Xing Tian.

The metal box was a light blue-gray all over. As Lin Ming took it in his hands, he felt the cool texture of metal. Such a small box was actually no less than 100 jins.

He twisted the box's lock, opened the lid, and saw a fine swathe of yellow silk inside.

As he slowly unwrapped the yellow silk cloth, he finally saw what was inside.

It was a bead the size of a pigeon. The body was jet-black, and there were some faint patterns on the surface. It looked like black glass that was filled with impurities.

Lin Ming took the bead in his hand and traced the cold surface with his fingers. A cold feeling seemed to spread from the surface and into his meridians. It made one feel as if they were connected to the black bead.

"What is this?"

Lin Ming could feel that there was something extraordinary about this bead. It seemed to contain some pure and unfathomable power.

Looking at just how much importance Xing Tian placed on the bead, Lin Ming could guess how important it was.

"This must be a treasure. But… I don't know how to use it."

Lin Ming searched through the jade slips in Xing Tian's spatial ring and couldn't find anything related to this bead.

Since looking at this bead wouldn’t produce any more information, Lin Ming put it away.

Through his conversation with Muk Gu, Lin Ming came to understand that Skysplit Tower’s third floor was the final level for the tower challengers. Although he was confident in his ability, he didn’t dare to act too rashly.

In his battle with Xing Tian, Lin Ming used every skill in his repertoire besides the blood of the Ancient Phoenix. But Xing Tian’s strength could only be arranged in the middle ranks of Skysplit Tower’s third floor.

This meant that there were a considerable number of people on the third floor that Lin Ming was not a match for.

In this situation, Lin Ming couldn’t recklessly provoke the powerhouses of the third floor.

Right now Lin Ming was only 18 years old. He had a great amount of time to grow, so he wasn’t in too much of a hurry.

He was prepared to go into closed-door seclusion for a long period of time. It could be a few months, or it could even be a year.

Lin Ming had just broken through to the middle Xiantian realm. If he wanted to step into the late Xiantian realm, it would be difficult. Not just that, but even if he did reach the late Xiantian realm, his strength wouldn’t grow that much.

However, Lin Ming had another plan.

That was to practice the body transformation system!

After reaching 100% Tempering Marrow, Lin Ming didn’t have time to further progress in the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’. But now, he planned to calm his heart and practice the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ in an attempt to open the elusive Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

After Tempering Marrow was the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, and above the Eight Inner Hidden Gates was the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

Once the Realm of the Gods' body transformation system was cultivated to the extreme limit, one could reverse the universe and split apart creation.

Of course, the price one had to pay for cultivating the body transformation system was horridly terrifying. This was also the reason why many martial artists within the Realm of the Gods chose the essence gathering system.

As for the Holy Demon Continent, even the geniuses of ancient times saw the body transformation system as weak and useless. It needed a massive investment of materials and yet the return was so little. Over time, humanity's body transformation system was eliminated. These cultivation method legacies were also annihilated in the endless dust of history, disappearing without a trace.

Lin Ming took out 100 Blood Demon Crystals from his spatial ring at once. A Blood Demon Crystal's advantage over a true essence stone was in its ability to enhance one's blood vitality. It could help refine the body and nourish the soul.

The Giant Demon race's body transformation law formulas were dependent upon these Blood Demon Crystals.

On the same side, a Blood Demon Crystal had a similar effect to a human's body transformation technique.

"I will rely on these high-grade Blood Demon Crystals to cultivate the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians'. I won't leave closed-door cultivation until I have passed the bottleneck!"

Lin Ming set firm his resolve. After swallowing several fasting pills, he let the true essence flood out from his marrow, and then began to revolve it with the 'True Primal Chaos Formula'. Quickly, Lin Ming entered the ethereal martial intent state, losing control of his consciousness. The true essence within his body began to revolve in a completely autonomous manner; it could be called the most perfect route…

…………………

On the fourth floor of Skysplit Tower, within a magnificent and dimly lit hall, the sounds of heavy footsteps resounded as a black-cloaked 12 foot tall Giant Demon man walked towards the door.

"Xing Tian died!" A voice suddenly sounded out from the hall. However, one could not see the figure of the one who spoke; the words echoed out as if spoken by a phantom.

"I know!" The Giant Demon's footsteps slowed. He, like many other Giant Demons, had blue skin. But his appearance wasn't as blocky or rough as other Giant Demons'. Rather, he was very elegant and refined; he was an astoundingly handsome individual.

"Although we already noticed Lin Ming early on, we've underestimated him. I originally was thinking of allowing Xing Tian to handle him, but I never imagined that he would reverse the tables and kill Xing Tian instead. He is not some low level trash. Even if he is an Emperor level talent, he is also an upper level Emperor talent. If he is allowed to freely grow, he might one day become a Divine Sea powerhouse in the future, and not just that, but an extremely strong Divine Sea powerhouse." The voice sounded out once more. Within the main hall, a distortion appeared in the air. Infernal energy began to gather together, slowly condensing into the drifting shade of a Goliath.

The was another use of a battle array disc. Through two linked arrays, one could transmit a phantom image along with sounds in order to speak directly. If one wanted to use sound transmitting talismans to do the same, it would require a great deal of sound transmitting talismans to be used one after the other; it was unnecessarily troublesome.

"Him reaching the Divine Sea has nothing to do with my Blood Slaughter Steppes." The Giant Demon casually said. The Blood Slaughter Steppes were known as a restricted land for Divine Sea powerhouses. Let alone the Divine Sea, even a high level Life Destruction powerhouse would not dare to set foot in this land, otherwise they would be killed by the strange curse that existed here. Whether Lin Ming reached the Divine Sea realm had nothing to do with them.

“That’s true. But before he reaches the Divine Sea, he will become the 13th ten-winged Heavenly Demon. I don’t want someone to rise up and take a share of our power, especially when they are a human.” The voice slowly said after a deep silence.

At this moment, within the dark hall, another floating phantom shined in the air. This floating phantom was that of a Fey man. He had a beard, making his originally handsome face appear a bit pessimistic.

The Fey man faintly smiled and said, “This fellow called Lin Ming has gone into closed-door seclusion on the second floor, he’s quite the smart one.”

The Goliath High Lord thought for a moment and smiled. He said, “When he goes through closed-door seclusion, he will inevitably meet a bottleneck if he doesn’t experience true combat. It’s impossible for him to stay there for too long. After he leaves, I will find someone to deal with him!”

Chapter 564 – Nameless Divine Pill

Chapter 564 – Nameless Divine Pill

…

…

…

To the High Lords of Skysplit Tower, gaining another High Lord was not good news, but it wasn't something terrifying either.

What they most wanted was to take these outstanding young elites and have them under their command in order to further consolidate their power within Skysplit Tower.

The Giant Demon hesitated for a moment. Then, he took out a sound transmitting talisman from his spatial ring. With a flick of his hand, a flame ignited.

In the dark hall, it seemed especially bright.

……………

On the third floor of Skysplit Tower, within a completely enclosed metal chamber, there was a sturdy-looking black-clothed youth shadowboxing. Every punch he made was fast and made a sound like a thunderclap, endlessly repeating.

As the sturdy youth was practicing, a black-clothed woman suddenly broke into the chamber and said, "Boss, let us deal with Lin Ming."

"Mm?" The sturdy youth slowed down. "Lin Ming, the Lin Ming that killed Xing Tian?"

"Yes!"

The sturdy youth didn't speak. He continued punching again. Every punch he made against the metal wall loudly reverberated in the room. The specially constructed profound gold room was completely sunken in by the sturdy youth's punches.

"What do you think?" The black-clothed woman asked.

The sturdy youth stopped. He rubbed his hands and said, "Xing Tian underestimated his opponent. But, that's just the nature of things. Anybody who calls themselves the king of the second floor would underestimate their opponent if the one they fought was a child. I've already looked over a phantom copy of Lin Ming and Xing Tian's battle. I estimate that the strength that Lin Ming displayed at the time should already be nearing his limits. This strength is decent on the third floor. With Lin Ming's current age, that strength qualifies him as an unusually monstrous talent. But, compared to us high ranking Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, he's just nothing at all!"

The sturdy youth suddenly kicked out. With a loud popping noise, the entire profound gold wall completely warped, with even the bottom lifting up from the force. It was like a door was opening under it.

The black-clothed woman saw this scene and shook her head; she would have to find a metal alchemist to repair the wall again.

"Lin Ming is currently cultivating on the second floor. Once he comes to the third floor, according to the rules of Skysplit Tower, it's impossible for him to face a top powerhouse in his first few rounds. That is, he has a great deal of growing he can do before he actually reaches us Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. So, yes, good luck to you."

The sturdy youth rubbed his nose, his eyes full of fighting spirit. He laughed as he said aloud, "I only fear that he can't grow and it would just be boring."

…………..

In his practice room, Lin Ming naturally didn't know about all these events happening around him. With the support of the ethereal martial intent state, he had completely entered into an inspired state, without even a shred of consciousness left. The true essence in his body was moving entirely on its own instincts.

In this condition, Lin Ming's cultivation speed was extremely terrifying.

Practice went on without a sense of time. In a flash of an eye, three months of closed-door seclusion passed. During this entire period, he only went out one time, and that was to put up Xing Tian's items that he didn't need as well as bring back the massive amount of high-grade Blood Demon Crystals from the fat Fey vendor.

Even with the 5% consignment fee, Lin Ming had already brought back over 1000 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals from the fat Fey vendor.

The resources required to practice the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' were simply too great. Even if Lin Ming used a high-grade Blood Demon Crystal, it wasn't too long after he placed it in his hands that it would lose its luster and crack open, completely turning into a useless rock.

Lin Ming would often use several pieces of high-grade Blood Demon Crystals together. This caused his usage rate of high-grade Blood Demon Crystals to be even higher. In three months, Lin Ming used up 1200 some high-grade Blood Demon Crystals. This was equal to tens of thousands of medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals.

In this process, the fat Fey vendor could have been said to have made a great contribution. From the very start, a great number of high-grade Blood Demon Crystals were exchanged. But afterwards, as Lin Ming traded more and more, the amount of high-grade Blood Demon Crystals became less and less even as the price crept up; they simply became very difficult to exchange for. Without the fat Fey vendor, exchanging all these crystals would have been a massive headache for lin Ming.

In the three months of seclusion, Lin Ming had given the 100,000 plus medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals in Xing Tian's spatial ring to the fat Fey vendor. This was equal to over 1000 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals. Even Lin Ming found this a bit hard to handle.

But, what surprised Lin Ming was the fat Fey vendor's ability. As the high-grade Blood Demon Crystals on the second floor grew scarcer, he attempted to contact others on the third floor in order to exchange for high-grade Blood Demon Crystals.

There were a great deal of high-grade Blood Demon Crystals on the third floor. There, martial artists mostly used high-grade Blood Demon Crystals; medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals were almost only used for daily expenses.

This also caused high-grade Blood Demon Crystals on the third floor to be more expensive. The conversion price there was 125:1.

Lin Ming didn't care much about this. It was fine as long as he could trade for them.

So like this, another two months passed. Lin Ming had been in closed-door seclusion for a full five months.

During these five months, Lin Ming consumed high-grade Blood Demon Crystals while completely disregarding the cost. In addition, he also had the top-grade practice room with its rich infernal energy as well as the support of the ethereal martial intent. Lin Ming's practice speed could be described as astronomical.

In the body transformation aspect, Lin Ming's talent wasn't originally considered too bad. After he fused with a drop of blood from a True Dragon, his physique greatly improved. In addition to the repeated tempering that he underwent, his foundation was very solid.

On this day, as Lin Ming was meditating on his stone bed, he opened his eyes.

"Five months. With the ethereal martial intent, I cultivated for five months. This was all in order to lay down the foundation for opening the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, but even so, I'm still far off from the starting point. Moreover, my cultivation has reached a bottleneck.

Lin Ming's recent cultivation in the last month had become increasingly slow. Presumably, he wasn't too far from reaching a bottleneck.

From Tempering Marrow to the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, there was a very long path. One had to cultivate the first half of the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ to the state of Perfection. It was impossible to complete overnight.

And even if everything was ready, he still needed top quality materials and medicines in order to open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. The level of difficulty far surpassed that of Tempering Marrow.

To look for this sort of heavenly material in the Sky Spill Continent, one needed a massive lucky chance!

Thus, the road of body transformation that Lin Ming walked could be said to be filled with endless hurdles!

Lin Ming hesitated for a long time. Then, he whispered an incantation and a fist-sized golden orb shot out from his dantian. This golden orb spun in the air several times and a moment later it turned into a small golden stove. This was the Cosmic Melting Furnace.

“Open!”

Lin Ming turned his right hand and the lid flew off. A blue-colored pill flew out from the Cosmic Melting Furnace and into his hand.

Initially, when Abbot Whitebrow from Great Zen Temple had tried to forcefully open the Cosmic Melting Furnace with the Bright Buddha Palm Seal, there were red and blue lights that appeared. The red light was a glob of blood from the Ancient Giant Demons; it was already swallowed by the Magic Cube. As for the blue light, it was the Nameless Divine Pill now in Lin Ming’s hand.

This Nameless Divine Pill was the size of a longan, and its entire body was covered in a layer of chilling cold. As Lin Ming took it in his hand, he could clearly feel the cold air passing into his meridians, icy to the point where it felt like it could freeze his soul.

This ancient cold pressure seemed to contain the flowing time of tens of thousands of years. It was almost entirely similar to the Nirvana Dragon Root. Lin Ming was sure that this Nameless Divine Pill was refined with a Nirvana Dragon Root!

A Nirvana Dragon Root could itself help him complete 100% Tempering Marrow. Then, what effect would a pill refined with a Nirvana Dragon Root have?

Lin Ming carefully examined this pill all over. But, he didn't yet dare to swallow it. He could feel the highly compressed bone-chilling energy within, which gave him an apprehensive feeling.

Normally, a pill was much more overbearing than the materials used to make it. If one recklessly swallowed one, it was possible that their entire body would burst apart.

"Unfortunately, that old three-headed dog suffered a soul injury in the space storm and fell into a deep slumber. Otherwise, if he was here he would be able to give me some advice."

Lin Ming slightly frowned. Now that he encountered a bottleneck in his cultivation, he would have to go out and experience the third floor. But although Lin Ming was confident, he wasn't confident to the point where he looked down on the all heroic young elites. With his strength, if he rashly went to the third floor then he might experience some dangers there.

Lin Ming hesitated and then said to himself, "When I absorbed the Nirvana Dragon Root, I used the method of refining it with clear spring water. I infused the water with the medicinal efficacy and then immersed myself in the water, absorbing all of the essence into my body. That old dog Demonshine said that using this method was much better than swallowing the Nirvana Dragon Root. This Nameless Divine Pill was refined from a Nirvana Dragon Root, so it shouldn't be wrong to use the same method to take it."

The advantage of using water as the refinement method was that it could disperse the rich and potent medicine efficacy. This would cause the medicinal efficacy to be much more moderate and easier to absorb.

Since Lin Ming made his decision, he no longer hesitated. Looking at it differently, even if this method was incorrect and he ended up wasting a massive amount of the blue pill's medicinal efficacy, he wouldn't feel too bad.

His future path was still endlessly long, there would always be more opportunities awaiting him. At this moment, he had reached a bottleneck in his cultivation and was also beset with dangers all around. This was the best time to use this blue-colored pill. If he didn't use it now for fear of wasting it, then all he would be doing is wasting time instead.

To Lin Ming, time was the most precious of resources.

All other resources could be found again. Only time could not be recovered.

Lin Ming took out some solar origin spring water from his spatial ring. This solar origin spring water originated from the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm's general level smelting trial. The spring water itself contained a very rich and very pure heaven and earth origin energy without any hint of toxins or impurities. It was extremely precious.

When Lin Ming was in the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, he drank this sort of water daily. After he left, he carried off a great amount. After years of constantly consuming this water, all he had left over were two large barrels.

The alchemical device he would use was naturally the Cosmic Melting Furnace. Lin Ming opened the first layer of the Cosmic Melting Furnace. With a wave of his hand, a stream of solar origin spring water flew out from the barrel like a shining rainbow, falling into the Cosmic Melting Furnace.

Lin Ming flicked his finger, and the Nameless Divine Pill turned into a blue light that followed the stream of water into the Cosmic Melting Furnace.

Lin Ming stood at the edge of the Cosmic Melting Furnace, looking in from above. As the Nameless Divine Pill fell into the solar origin spring water, the water suddenly began to freeze over at a fast speed. In just several blinks, it formed into one large lump of ice.

Chapter 565 – Gate of Healing

Chapter 565 – Gate of Healing

…

…

…

"It's turned to ice?"

Lin Ming was stunned. This was strange… would he have to use the Fallen Star Flame to heat it now?

Using water as a refining medium for alchemical medicine was normal. For instance, one would use a flame to boil medicine. It was just that this Nameless Divine Pill clearly had a chilling yin attribute; would heating it with fire be appropriate?

Lin Ming hesitated. But at this time, the ice lump within the Cosmic Melting Furnace Began to melt. That Nameless Divine Pill seemed to spread slight blue permeations within the solar origin water. Wherever this light blue went, the iced up solar origin water would begin to rapidly melt.

However, after the ice melted, the cold energy didn't decrease. Rather, it became even more terrifying!

Lin Ming only needed to glance at the cold spring water within the Comic Melting Furnace to feel as if his entire body was freezing over.

"The melting ice should be because that faint blue trace is fusing into the water, making it even colder. If this continues…"

Lin Ming’s mind suddenly stirred. He moved his hand to take the Nameless Divine Pill, using his soul force to move it. But in the short time that his soul force came into contact with the pill, it felt as if his soul were freezing.

Looking at the Nameless Divine Pill, the size of it had already decreased. Lin Ming didn’t dare to allow the solar origin water to absorb the medicinal efficacy anymore. If it did, he wasn’t sure that he would be able to withstand it.

It had to be known that a normal pill was crafted using several types of main medicinal ingredients. The Nirvana Dragon Root was only a single material used in creating this pill, and there were other ingredients that Lin Ming wasn’t too sure of. Who knew how scary the medicinal efficacy of this Nameless Divine Pill could be.

Lin Ming flicked his finger, wrapping an arc of electricity around the Nameless Divine Pill, quickly enveloping it in a cocoon. As his fingers linked together, he also put out seals in order to prevent the Nameless Divine Pill’s medicinal efficacy from escaping. Then, he took out a jade box from his spatial ring and carefully placed the Nameless Divine Pill within.

Seeing the cold blue spring water, Lin Ming could clearly feel a deathly chilling yin cold emanating from it. All of the muscles on his body began to involuntarily tremble.

“I’m only close to it but my muscles are already trembling. If I jump in, won’t my body freeze solid?”

Lin Ming’s expression was solemn. He didn’t know what sort of Supreme Elder had refined this Nameless Divine Pill. What sort of other medicines did they combine with the Nirvana Dragon Root in order for this pill to be so ice cold?

With high level medicines, there were moderate medicines and overbearing medicines. The Nirvana Dragon Root was relatively temperate, but this Nameless Divine Pill was extraordinarily overbearing.

Lin Ming fiercely grit his teeth and jumped into the Cosmic Melting Furnace. The Cosmic Melting Furnace itself contained other dimensional spaces. Although the first layer looked very small from the outside, it was large enough to contain Lin Ming within.

After approaching this chilling blue water, Lin Ming felt all of the hairs crawl on his body.

He closed his eyes and adjusted himself to this best condition. Then, after circulating his protective true essence to the limit, he jumped into the cold waters.

With true essence protecting his body, Lin Ming felt a bone-biting cold that was manageable. However, having this protective true essence around him was the same as completely isolating himself from the medicine around him. If he truly wanted to absorb the medicinal efficacy, then he would have to remove his bodily true essence and allow the medicine to seep in through his pores.

Lin Ming took a deep breath. First, he removed the protective true essence around his right hand. Like this, Lin Ming's right hand and the chilling blue water came into contact. In that moment, Lin Ming felt as if thousands of needles were digging deep into his right hand, causing a web of ache to spread within him.

Si si si!

Lin Ming could only watch on as the skin on his right hand instantly turned a deep cold white and then began to tear open His blood didn't even have time to leak out before it was frozen. The cold energy savagely rushed through Lin Ming's pores, freezing and cracking even his meridians.

This hand of Lin Ming's was nearly frozen to death in an instant.

"This is pretty scary."

Lin Ming's forehead dripped with sweat, and his face began to twist a bit with pain. But, he still decisively unraveled the protective true essence on his left hand.

Si si si!

Without any suspense, his left hand also suffered the same fate.

Lin Ming silently watched, and then began to revolve the azure true essence in his body.

After his left and right hands were frozen, they began to lose their vitality. The endless azure true essence was used to make up for it.

These past years, Lin Ming had already accumulated an incomparably powerful blood vitality. With the addition of the reverse scale blood and the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, what Ling Ming was most confident in was not his powerful defensive ability, but rather the vast life force that existed within his body, his incomparable regenerative ability!

As long as he had enough true essence, Lin Ming's meridians and body could unendingly repair themselves.

"This Nameless Divine Pill should be refined for a Life Destruction or Divine Sea Supreme Elder. Not only is the medicinal efficacy oppressive, but with my strength I'll barely be able to absorb it. I can only allow the medicinal efficacy to destroy my body and then allow my vast life force and self-regenerative ability to save myself. I'll have to see whether my body is destroyed faster or whether I can regenerate faster."

Lin Ming sat cross-legged within the chilling blue waters. He only felt as if two barbed steel brushes were rubbing within his hands, and his frozen muscles nearly tearing apart.

This extreme pain was enough for one to wish for death. A normal martial artist would faint from this pain, never wishing to wake up, rather dying than suffering this endless agony.

Under this excruciating pain, Lin Ming forcefully entered into the ethereal martial intent state, firmly defending his consciousness. He was well aware that if he fainted, he would be in a very, very dangerous situation. It was similar to a mortal fainting in the snow. After waking, if they were lucky, then their hands and feet would be lightly frozen. If they were unlucky, then the cold would seep into their meridians, freezing their body before rupturing their meridians and icing all of their organs, eventually dying.

Lin Ming began to meditate the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ cultivation method within his heart. Lin Ming slowly dragged the energy from the Nameless Divine Pill into his body, gradually running it throughout his body.

Wherever this tyrannically chilling energy went, it brutally destroyed. This sort of pain was enough to collapse the spiritual sea of a weak-willed martial artist, having them suffer endlessly as they slowly faded away.

Even Lin Ming’s face distorted from the agony, sweat tumbling down his body.

After Tempering Marrow, a martial artist’s skeleton became incomparably tenacious. And this time, the strength that was locked within a martial artist’s body turned into their flesh. The function of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates was to rebuild the body.

A martial artist that cultivated the essence gathering system had true essence circulate through their meridians and dantian. It was a system separate from the mortal body, linking the body’s 360 acupoints with heaven and earth origin energy.

But, when body transformation reached the realm of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, it used heaven and earth origin energy to temper the human body.

This heaven and earth origin energy exactly entered the body through these eight channels. These eight channels were named the Gate of Healing, Gate of Life, Gate of Pain, Gate of Limit, Gate of View, Gate of Death, Gate of Wonder, and Gate of Opening.

The first door that Lin Ming wanted to open was the Gate of Healing.

This gate was located in the center of the two clavicles. The power of blood vitality would gather here before converging into the brain; it was the central junction point for one’s blood vitality.

After opening this door, not only would his power greatly rise, but his restorative ability and physical strength would greatly increase.

However, if he wanted to completely open it, that was a tremendously difficult task.

Lin Ming revolved true essence according to the 'True Primal Chaos Formula'. He gathered the Nameless Divine Pill's energy into the heart of his clavicles. The ice cold energy stabbed into here an inch at a time; it was like a steel needle was being freshly inserted.

A normal martial artist in this state would already be half fainted with pain, let alone having the willpower to consciously guide the energy to open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

Bit by bit, without a sense of time, Lin Ming became numb to the pain. But at this moment, he felt all of the blood within his marrow rise up, as if it wanted to condense into a bead of blood.

"Mm?"

Lin Ming suddenly awakened from his ethereal state. He wanted to carefully sense this force, but it disappeared as quickly as it came.

In regards to the Gate of Healing in his clavicles, he found that a light hazy blue mist had appeared near it. Besides that, there hadn't been any other changes.

Opening his eyes, Lin Ming looked at the solar origin spring water and sucked in a cold breath. The water had originally contained a light blue energy, but now it had been almost cleanly absorbed by him. All that was left over was some water that didn't have too much spiritual energy in it.

Already absorbed…

Lin Ming shook his head. He glanced over at the hourglass. Surprisingly, 32 hours had passed.

“Over a day. I used over a day to absorb a portion of the Nameless Divine Pill’s medicinal efficacy, but I’m still far from opening the Gate of Healing.”

“Now, I can be considered as just having crossed the threshold for the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.”

Lin Ming jumped out from the Cosmic Melting Furnace. As he glanced at his hands, he bitterly smiled. His two hands were already completely without feeling. If he were a mortal then his hands would have been considered useless. But to Lin Ming, this naturally wasn’t a problem. He just needed seven or eight days of training to recover.

Without control of his hands, Lin Ming examined his dantian. He was surprised to find that the true essence cyclone within his dantian had faintly grown; his middle Xiantian realm had consolidated even further.

“This Nameless Divine Pill is truly a wonderfully strange medicine. Not only did it help me open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, but it also helped me temper my essence gathering cultivation. This time, I clearly feel that my strength has grown!”

Lin Ming hadn’t expected to open the Gate of Healing from the start. From Tempering Marrow to the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, there was a massive leap. Everything was difficult at the start, how could it be so easily opened like that? It had to be mentioned that Lin Ming had spent a vast amount of time and effort in order to fully complete Tempering Marrow.

Lin Ming’s mind stirred. Suddenly, his imposing aura erupted. Heretical God Force – open!

Highly compressed true essence flushed out. Even the spells in the practice area shook.

“Divine Demon Thunder Soul, go!”

With a thought, the coiling dragon steel needle shot out from his body, directly shooting towards a wall.

With a massive explosion, the metal wall supported by an array formation began to fiercely shake, a huge dent appearing in it.

“Again!” Lin Ming commanded the coiling dragon steel needle to attack again.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

With this bombardment, the metal wall array formation fiercely trembled precariously. This top-grade practice area had already factored in that a martial artist would send out attacks, so the array formation laid down was extremely strong. But now because of Lin Ming, it was on the verge of bursting apart.

Lin Ming was silently counting the time in his heart. From the time he opened the Heretical God Force to the time he exhausted his compressed true essence, around an incense stick of time had passed.

“An incense stick of time… my Heretical God Force can actually persist for an incense stick of time!”

Lin Ming was overjoyed.

Chapter 566 – Into the Third Floor

Chapter 566 – Into the Third Floor

…

…

…

Lin Ming hadn’t opened the Gate of Healing, it was just that there was a faint hazy blue mist near it. This was the way it was. Every time Lin Ming attacked, he could clearly feel the heaven and earth origin energy pass through this mist and into his clavicles, converging into his meridians and dispersing through his body. It was like an invisible origin energy vortex had appeared near the Gate of Healing.

With a constant supply of origin energy, Lin Ming’s long-term combat efficiency had greatly increased. This was also the reason that the Heretical God Force could now last for an incense stick of time.

From the point that Lin Ming began to rise, the Heretical God Force had helped him countless times to reverse the flow of battle. However, the Heretical God Force had a fatal flaw, and that was that it couldn’t last for an extended period. After he used it, it would consume a great deal of his energy; this was the reason that Lin Ming didn’t dare to easily open the Heretical God Force in a fight, instead saving it as his final move.

When Lin Ming first entered Skysplit Tower, his Heretical God Force could only last for several dozen breaths of time. Not just that, but once he opened it he couldn’t close it.

After entering Skysplit Tower and practicing here for a long time, the Heretical God Force had taken another step further. Lin Ming could now momentarily open and close the

Heretical God Force. After touching upon the threshold for the Gate of Healing, the duration of the Heretical God Force had also lengthened to an incense stick of time.

It could be said that the practical usability of the Heretical God Force had been greatly enhanced.

After putting away the Cosmic Melting Furnace, with his whole body exhausted and aching, Lin Ming fell into a wonderful sleep. It had been a long time since he was able to relax in sleep. During his stay so far in this top-grade practice area, he had even spent his sleep time cultivating.

With this comfortable feeling, Lin Ming slept well, resting for an entire day and night. After waking up he took a bath and switched into a new set of clothes, and then made a detour to the city square in order to pick up any new Blood Demon Crystals that were traded in.

It was time to go to the third floor.

Without knowing, Lin Ming had already stayed on the second floor for over half a year of time. It had been nearly a year since he arrived at the Holy Demon Continent.

One year. How were Miss Mu and Xingxuan doing? Was Divine Phoenix Island able to defend itself? How were his parents? How was his little sister?

Lin Ming was filled with worries.

………………………

"This is the opening token for the transmission array to the third floor. Please take it." Nearby the second floor's transmission array, a guard responsible for handling challengers said to Lin Ming as he respectfully handed the token to him.

"Thank you."

Lin Ming received the token and placed it into the transmission array. A white light flashed around him. In the next instant, Lin Ming arrived at the third floor; this was also the final floor for Skysplit Tower's challengers.

Skysplit Tower was shaped like a cone. The further up it went, the smaller it was. The third floor was barely half the size of the second floor.

As Lin Ming stepped forth from the transmission array, a young Fey girl was already waiting there. "Young Hero Lin? My name is Linlin, I have been waiting here for you for a long time."

Starting from the second floor, every new arriving challenger would have a reception with a servant. This person could introduce them to the practice areas or show them to the martial arena location in order to avoid trouble.

"That's me!" Lin Ming cupped his fists together.

The young girl named Linlin was surprised and then quickly covered her mouth as she chuckled. Martial artists that came to the third floor were normally around 26 or 27 years of age. Not just that, but they were always extremely prideful and arrogant in their behavior, mostly disdaining to talk to such a low level character like her. It was surprising to meet such a well-mannered and polite young man like Lin Ming.

"Young Hero Lin, I can serve you for these next few days. Practice place, arena, city square, entertainment area; where would you like to go?"

"Practice place!" Lin Ming replied without hesitation.

After his conversation with Muk Gu, Lin Ming was interested in the practice areas on the third floor. He especially wanted to know what resources were here that would cause so many outstanding young elites to rush to the third floor like a pack of ducks.

"Mm. Please follow me."

The third floor was much lonelier than the second floor. Walking through the roads here, it was rare to see a martial artist. Most of them were in closed-door seclusion.

On Skysplit Tower's third floor, the pressure was great. The martial artists that made it here were not common within their generation. Every single person that practiced here was like a boat going against the current of the ocean. If they couldn't move forwards then they would fall behind, and once they did, they would inevitably fall into the abyss without any chance of redemption.

This great pressure spurred on every martial here. If they couldn't become an Emperor, then they would become a ghost.

…………..

The third floor's practice area and city square bordered each other. When Linlin brought Lin Ming close to the third floor's city square, he finally began to see more martial artists in his surroundings.

It was similar to the second floor; there were many martial artists that had set up a stall here.

Lin Ming glanced over. Most of the martial artists' cultivation were at the early Xiantian realm, and there were even some at the Houtian realm. Lin Ming was a bit surprised. "These people are…"

"Oh, they are employees of the challengers here. They are specifically responsible for setting up stalls and making sales. The challengers of the third floor just don't have time to idle around for business. The city square and practice area on the third floor prohibit fighting, so vendors here can do business without danger even if their cultivation is low."

Lin Ming nodded. Truly, the third floor was different from the second floor. Here, every second counted. One had to seize every chance possible. Hiring someone to work for them and handle their affairs was the most reasonable approach.

Lin Ming swept over several of the items on sale here and noticed that everything was much more expensive than on the second floor. But, Lin Ming was already used to seeing such rare and valuable treasures, so he wasn't too interested in them. As he was about to exit the city square, Lin Ming suddenly felt someone's attention lock onto him.

Lin Ming stopped his footsteps and turned around. Behind him, several dozen feet away, there was an Imp sitting at a square table. He was swinging a folding fan in his hand, slyly smiling.

Although his smiling expression appeared very amiable, Lin Ming actually had a feeling that he was being stared at by a viper.

'This person… is strong!'

Lin Ming took a deep breath, his expression solemn. This person had completely restrained their aura within their body, giving off an unfathomably deep feeling. Skysplit Tower's third floor was truly a den of crouching tigers and hidden dragons. Masters were simply everywhere here.

Feeling potential hostility in this person's smiling expression, Lin Ming decided that he didn't want to cause unnecessary complications. Just as he was about to turn and leave, a true essence sound transmission sounded in his ears.

"Stop right there!"

This order carried an imperious tone to it. Lin Ming frowned. As he turned again, he saw that the Imp had closed his folding fan. The Imp said, "Come, let's have a chat."

The Imp nodded at a stool across from him – he wanted Lin Ming to walk over and sit there.

"What?"

Lin Ming asked. Anybody who was commanded to walk over by someone they didn’t know wouldn’t be feeling too good about it.

But at this moment, as Linlin saw this Imp, her expression changed. She hurriedly bowed and respectfully said, “So it’s the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars’ Sir Kai Yang. This young girl greets Sir Kai Yang.”

Heavenly Demon Seven Stars?

Lin Ming had already heard this title before. It seemed that the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars were famous on the third floor.

So this Imp was apparently one of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. No wonder he had been so arrogant, that was because he had the strength to back it up.

Lin Ming was silent for a moment, but at this time, Linlin’s panicked true essence sound transmission reached his ears. “Young Hero Lin, don’t look at Sir Kai Yang’s friendly expression, in truth he is a cruel and bloodthirsty individual. He uses extremely wicked and sadistic means. Young Hero Lin, you should quickly go over. If you anger him, he will keep a grudge in his heart. It will be dangerous to you in the future…”

As Linlin saw Lin Ming not responding, she became a bit impatient. She feared that he would somehow offend Kai Yang. She had a very good impression of Lin Ming, so she didn’t want him to suffer a loss in the future because of this.

Sure enough, as Kai Yang saw Lin Ming’s indifferent look, he glowered. Then, as if he suddenly thought of something, Kai Yang’s amiable smile returned and he took initiative to stand up instead.

“If you don’t want to come over, it’s fine that I come over instead.”

Kai Yang slowly walked over to Lin Ming as he swung his fan.

Linlin was afraid. She had heard that Kai Yang was subject to wildly swinging moods. If he smiled, it was likely that he wanted to kill someone. She subconsciously stepped back.

Then again, this was the city square. Fighting was prohibited here. No matter how great Kai Yang's courage was, he would not randomly kill someone here. This thought calmed her down somewhat.

But she couldn't be blamed for shrinking back. On the third floor, it was normal for a challenger to kill a servant because they were displeased by something.

Lin Ming's mind went on alert though he remained calm and collected on the surface. He knew that when he arrived here, it was likely that he would meet someone who was aiming at him.

When Kai Yang approached, Lin Ming cupped his fists together and said, "Can I help you?"

This question that was neither humble nor arrogant caused the Imp to smile. When he smiled, the wrinkly folds on his face bunched up even further, causing him to look even more disgusting.

"Lin Ming?"

"I am Lin Ming!"

"Mm, I heard that you killed Xing Tian?"

Lin Ming raised his eyebrows. "Yes. Are you thinking of taking revenge for him?"

"Revenge? Hehe, I don't have that much time to waste. But… when you killed Xing Tian, you should have obtained his spatial ring?"

Lin Ming's mind went cold. This Imp had come here for this? He nodded. It was impossible to hide something like this.

“Haha…” The Imp chuckled twice. Then, he switched to a true essence sound transmission and said, “In Xing Tian’s spatial ring, if I’m not wrong, there should be a black, glass-like bead, around the size of a pigeon egg. It’s covered in impurities and is cool to the touch, right?”

Lin Ming remained silent. There really was this sort of bead within Xing Tian’s spatial ring. It had been cleverly hidden within a normal looking pill bottle by a spell. If he hadn’t carefully looked through Xing Tian’s ring, then he would have really missed it.

Although Lin Ming didn’t completely understand the function of this bead, he could tell from how Xing Tian had carefully treated it, in addition to a faint intuitive feeling he had, that this bead was something extraordinary.

Seeing Lin Ming’s silence, the Imp smiled. In truth he didn’t need Lin Ming to reply. He could approximately guess that this bead had fallen into Lin Ming’s hands.

“1000 Blood Demon Crystals! I’ll buy that from you!”

The Imp tossed out a price tag. These 1000 Blood Demon Crystals were naturally high-grade Blood Demon Crystals. It was equal to more than 100,000 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals.

“I’m sorry, but it’s not for sale.” Lin Ming flatly refused. He could earn Blood Demon Crystals again, but this bead was most likely something that couldn’t be bought. Naturally Lin Ming wasn’t do something so stupid as selling it.

“Mm?” Kai Yang frowned. He didn’t become angry but instead coldly said, “Then how much do you want? Name a price!”

Lin Ming said, “I just said that I will not sell this bead.”

Kai Yang glowered. “So you would rather do things the hard way, huh!?”

Chapter 567 – Concept of Thunder

Chapter 567 – Concept of Thunder

…

…

…

Although Skysplit Tower took strength as the basis for all, the fact was that it was a place firmly established in rules. In particular, areas that banned fighting. Even a High Lord would not rashly violate these rules, because they needed to maintain the reputation of Skysplit Tower.

Since the city square forbid fighting, nobody dared to start doing so here. Lin Ming wasn't much impressed with Kai Yang's threat.

"1500 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals! This is my final offer! You may be king on the second floor, but now that you've come to the third floor you are nothing at all! I have plenty of methods to make you suffer here!"

Lin Ming smiled, "How about this. I'll give you Blood Demon Crystals, and you tell me just what this black glass bead is, okay?"

"Good! Very good!" Kai Yang glared at Lin Ming and snapped his fan together with a 'pa'.

"You think that you can use it? How utterly naïve! Even Xing Tian was unable to use it, otherwise why do you think he would keep something like that in his spatial ring!"

Lin Ming subtly looked at Kai Yang. "I am not Xing Tian. I have to thank you, you've reminded me again just how valuable this black bead is."

"Hehehe..." Kai Yang maliciously smiled, "Since this is how it is, there is nothing left to say. I will make you regret your decision. One day, you will obediently deliver that bead into my hands!"

Kai Yang finished speaking and strode away.

After Kai Yang left, Linlin looked at Lin Ming with fear in her eyes, "Sir Lin... you..."

"It's fine. Bring me to the practice area." Lin Ming was expressionless. He decided to unravel the mystery behind this black bead as soon as possible.

As a human, it was very normal for others to attempt to push him around. In a place like this, as long others didn't try to bully or provoke him, he didn't want to cause trouble.

The young Fey girl hesitated for a moment before she told Lin Ming, "Sir Lin, Sir Kai Yang is someone under High Lord Heian..."

"Mm? High Lord Heian?"

"He is one of the 12 High Lords. His background is the Imp race. On the third floor, there are a great number of people who take refuge under certain High Lords. Working under them has a great number of advantages..." The young Fey girl spoke to here before she was silent. In fact, speaking about something like this would easily bring about a great calamity on her head if it were discovered. The only reason she told Lin Ming this was because of the very favorable impression she had of him.

Lin Ming heard the implication in these words. So this Kai Yang had a High Lord supporting him. No wonder he had mentioned that he had methods that would make life difficult for him...

"Thank you, now please bring me to the practice area. That's right, this is for you." Lin Ming took out a bag of medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals form his spatial ring. There were around 60 to 70 inside.

“This…” As Linlin saw these Blood Demon Crystals, she was dazed.

“Take it. It’s not much to me.” Lin Ming directly pressed the bag of Blood Demon Crystals into Linlin’s hand.

……………..

“This is the third floor’s practice area?” Lin Ming glanced at a black stone building in front of him. Relatively speaking, this building was very ordinary. It was several dozen feet high, but it wasn’t too large.

“Mm. This is the registration office. The practice areas of the third floor have different prices depending on their rank.”

Lin Ming nodded and pushed in the door, entering. Within building, there were two middle-aged men playing chess. What surprised Lin Ming however, was that one of these two men was a human.

Within the deacons of Skysplit Tower, it was rare to see pure humans.

“Come to choose a practice area?” The middle-aged man looked up from his chess game.

“Yes!”

“Do you want to practice cultivation methods? Or practice Concepts and Laws?”

Lin Ming was stunned, “There are practice areas that I can especially practice Concepts and Laws in?”

“Hehe, Skysplit Tower’s practice areas are of a far greater variety than you can imagine and far more precious. It’s just that your authority is too low and you have no right to know of anything else. Here, look at this jade slip.”

The middle-aged man threw a jade slip at Lin Ming.

As Lin Ming sank his consciousness within, he saw the information of the various practice places presented in front of him. The more he looked, the more he was startled. Putting aside those areas that he didn't have the qualifications to know of, just these were enough to shock him.

The cultivation method practice area was a room several thousand feet deep into the source of infernal energy. There, the infernal energy was rich to a degree that normal martial artists could not resist it.

Not just that, but there were several areas for practice in actual combat. Skysplit Tower had several killing arrays where one could face all sorts of energy form opponents.

But these two were not the rarest. The rarest were the Concept practice areas.

Within Skysplit Tower, there were several strange lands where one could hone their sense of Concepts by touching upon the source of that Concept. For instance, if one entered a practice place for the Concept of Fire, they could touch upon the source of fire there. It was an incomparably mystical experience!

'I really wonder who it was that built Skysplit Tower, that it can even hold so many wonderful and odd places. Just what is listed on this jade slip is extremely precious, much less all the other practice resources that I don't have the qualifications to know of. I can see why so many outstanding heroic youths would risk their lives to stay on Skysplit Tower's third floor. The resources here are simply too impressive.

'Every two months I have to participate in a match. In a match here, it's often that someone will die. Not just that, but there are no weak opponents here. Under the pressure of living between life and death, it is easiest for a martial artist to make breakthroughs in boundaries. Much less this place also has unique ways to cultivate!

'With all these factors added together, the geniuses that come to the third floor to gain experience can easily break through their limits. Here, an amazing talent can become a Saint level talent, and a Saint level talent can become an Emperor level talent!"

Lin Ming sighed. Skysplit Tower was truly heaven for outstanding elites. But at the same time, it was also a grave for those same outstanding elites. Those that could survive here could break through their cocoons and be reborn into butterflies. But those that fail to break through their limits would fall beyond redemption.

This was really one foot in heaven and one foot in hell!

As Lin Ming was lost in thought, the chess-playing middle-aged man put away the jade slip and lazily said, “Have you chosen?”

“I have.” Lin Ming looked the middle-aged man, finding it a bit strange. There were very few humans within Skysplit Tower; it was rare to find even one or two deacons like this. It stood to reason that this alone should give birth to some warm feelings, but this middle-aged man obviously appeared impatient. He was even very cold when telling him about the different practice areas.

“What have you chosen?” The middle-aged man took out a blank jade slip, preparing to register.

“I choose a Concept practice area. I want one with the Concept of Space, or the Concept of Time…”

As Lin Ming mentioned the Concept of Space and the Concept of Time, the middle-aged man glanced at Lin Ming with surprise. The Concepts of Space and Time were elusive and beyond difficult to reach. Normally, a human would not have the chance to come into contact with these Concepts. Did this boy actually comprehend the Concepts of Space and Time?

“Those don’t exist!”

The middle-aged man refused. The Concepts of Space and Time were not called elusive for nothing. It wasn’t easy to show the mysteries of space and time. Even Skysplit Tower didn’t have the resources to do this, otherwise, even though the Concepts of Space and Time wouldn’t have spread throughout the entire third floor, those extremely talented Fey elites would have already grasped these Concepts.

“What do you have?”

“We have Concepts for the five main elements of metal, wood, water, fire, and earth. We have the Concept of Wind, the Concept of Thunder, and we also have some derivative Concepts such as the Concept of Landscape, Concept of Ice Clouds, Concept of Mist… and so on!”

The Concept of Landscape, Concept of Ice Clouds, Concept of Mist, in the end, these Concepts were simply variations of the five main elemental Concepts. Although they could improve one’s strength, their potential for growth was limited.

Those Concepts that could truly reach the peak were the most basic Concepts that served as the foundation for all. This included the more advanced Concepts, such as the Concepts of Space and Time, Concept of Annihilation, Concept of Immortality…

But as for these more mystical Concepts, Skysplit Tower did not have them.

‘Is my authority not enough? Xing Tian’s Concept of Annihilation should have been learnt within Skysplit Tower…’ Lin Ming thought.

“Have you chosen?” The middle-aged man impatiently asked.

“I have. I choose… the Concept of Thunder!”

Lin Ming did not choose the Concept of Fire nor did he choose the Concept of Wind. Instead, he chose the Concept of Thunder!

Prior to this, when Lin Ming entered into the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, he had already gained many understandings into the Concept of Fire. There was no need to mention the Concept of Wind – Lin Ming had studied that from the very start.

It was only the Concept of Thunder that Lin Ming hadn’t touched upon yet.

In terms of comprehending the Concept of Thunder, Lin Ming could be said to have a major advantage. If he didn't go for this chance now, then that was simply wasting these great conditions.

"One slaughter point and 20 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals every 10 days. This is your token." The middle-aged man threw a token at Lin Ming, as well as a jade slip marking the location of the practice area.

Lin Ming swept through it. One slaughter point and 20 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals was truly a high cost. On the third floor, earning slaughter points was much more difficult than on the second. This was because the martial artists here were also stronger.

For a Concept practice area, he had to use up a slaughter point every 10 days. If a martial artist only fought in a match every two months, then it was impossible to earn enough constant slaughter points.

Lin Ming took the jade slip and left the registration office. After passing through a minor transmission array, Lin Ming arrived at his destination – the practice area for the Concept of Thunder.

……………………………

Lin Ming originally thought that the practice area for the Concept of Thunder would be similar to a hidden chamber. But as he entered, he was completely surprised; it was as if he had arrived at another world.

This was an incomparably vast space. In the sky, there were massive floating boulders as well as small ones. These boulders also had vegetation growing on them. From afar, it seemed a bit ashen and gloomy.

In the great sky, there were great curtains of light that extended past the horizon. These curtains were dozens of miles long or even hundreds of miles long. They were unpredictable, mysterious, and like curving blue rivers in the sky, immensely gorgeous.

As Lin Ming approached, he discovered that these blue rivers of light in the air were impressively condensed from thunder origin energy.

This thunder origin energy condensed into blue rivers of light. Rather than turning into thunder, it evolved into thousands of rivers of light that contained countless deep and profound meanings.

Lin Ming was dumbfounded. “Is this really Skysplit Tower?”

Lin Ming couldn’t help but ask this question. From the size of Skysplit Tower, it was absolutely impossible for such a great space to exist within it. Thus, he had either entered into an array, or he had been sent outside of Skysplit Tower.

Chapter 568 – Self-created Style

Chapter 568 – Self-created Style

…

…

…

Lin Ming was proficient in the Realm of the Gods' array formations. If this vast space was an illusory magic array, then although he might not be able to break it, he should still be able to discern whether it was real or not.

But now as he looked around, he couldn't see any sign that this was truly an illusory magic array.

"This is a real space! Maybe I left Skysplit Tower, or perhaps there is another possibility, and that is that this is a miniature world. It could have been sealed away by someone with vast supernatural powers and compressed within Skysplit Tower!"

Lin Ming gasped as he suddenly became aware of this possibility. When he passed through the transmission array he hadn't felt any dizziness at all. This was enough proof that the transmission array from a moment ago only went a short distance. So, it was likely that he was still in Skysplit Tower.

There was a miniature world sealed within Skysplit Tower!

Although his spatial ring could also be considered another sort of miniature world, that sort of world was extremely unstable. It could only last for a few hundred thousand years, and not just that, but it couldn't contain living beings either.

It was a completely different concept from this stable space in front of him.

For there to be such a stable space sealed within Skysplit Tower that also contained the principles of Laws and Concepts, what sort of immense force was this?

Lin Ming discovered that Skysplit Tower was filled with more and more mysteries, as if there were some earth-shaking secret behind it.

Of course, this was not something he could even touch at his level. Thus he could only sigh at the thought.

Now, comprehending the power of Laws was the most important.

As he slowly floated towards these blue rivers of light, he sank his sense within. Lin Ming could clearly feel the deep inherent fundamentals of thunder contained within.

The blue river of light was completely made of thunder origin energy, but there was not a single arc of electricity. It could be said that this was the most original source of thunder in its most primitive state.

A Concept was a rule. In this world, nothing could be separated from these rules. From the passing of years, the changes of stars, from when a seed grew to a tree, from a mortal's life and death, everything, every change, was inseparable from these governing rules.

A drop of water. A grain of sand.

Everything contained the power of Laws.

Something that seemed simple was not always simple. As long as one unraveled the basis of these simplicities, all complexities could be reduced…

Lin Ming sat cross-legged on the side of the river of blue lights, entering into meditation. His consciousness was completely integrated into the river and into the power of thunder. The Heretical God Seed began to tremble, and the countless threads of thunder origin energy began to flow into Lin Ming's body from his acupoints.

Slowly, Lin Ming's body was completely immersed in the river of blue light. He came into direct contact with the thunder origin energy, letting the vast energy inundate him.

Lin Ming completely opened wide his body, opening his meridians and acupoints. He even opened up the Gate of Healing that he had traced as far as possible, letting the thunder origin energy savagely flow through his limbs and bones. With the existence of the Heretical God Seed, the violent thunder origin energy did not hurt Lin Ming at all…

There was not a martial artist that would dare to do this. Not even a martial artist that had reached an eighth-grade or even ninth-grade thunder fusion compatibility could do this!

Thunder origin energy was infamous for its savage and brutal nature. If one wished to enter this river of blue light, they would have to protect their body with true essence, otherwise their fragile organs and meridians wouldn't be able to withstand the baptism of thunder energy.

As for releasing their protective true essence and coming into direct contact with the thunder origin energy, just who could do this in order to feel the mysteries within?

Only Lin Ming could totally throw himself into this sea of thunder origin energy and use this method to comprehend the Concept of Thunder.

Like this, Lin Ming floated in the river of blue lights, time passing without mind.

Not knowing morning or night, or how many days had passed, Lin Ming stayed like this for dozens of days, letting everything around him fall away. It was like he had become a wisp of thunder origin energy, soaring between the heavens and earth, fusing into the vast ocean of origin energy.

"This is…

"Yin… yang…"

Lin Ming silently spoke these words. Originally… thunder origin energy was divided into yin and yang, negative and positive.

Yin and yang both restrained and supported each other. When negative thunder origin energy collided with positive thunder origin energy, it would create a bolt of lightning!

The so-called electric current was nothing more than yin and yang thunder origin energy flowing along each other.

Lin Ming could feel the Heretical God Seed within his body vibrate. As he opened his eyes, his pupils flashed with the light of thunder, like a bolt of lightning in the pitch-dark sky.

"The power of yin and yang… that is the source of the power of thunder!"

Lin Ming took out the Purple Comet Spear. As the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo came out, the surrounding thunder origin began to stir, forming a faint purple vortex.

The 10,000 year Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo was originally a spiritual plant bred within an environment of thunder origin energy. Here, it was no different than a flood dragon in the sea. The entire shaft of the Purple Comet Spear began to issue out keening cries of excitement.

Lin Ming's heart bloomed with fighting spirit. Energy flooded his body. He needed to release it!

"Go!"

Lin Ming suddenly thrust his spear out. But at this time, the energy that wrapped around the Purple Comet Spear was no longer Blood Drinking Seals, but the radiant light of thunder!

The Concept of Thunder had perfectly fused into this spear strike!

"Slaughter!"

With all of his will and potential concentrated on the Purple Comet Spear, the Heretical God Seed within Lin Ming's body began to howl in glory. The Divine Demon Thunder Soul shot out, blending into the Purple Comet Spear!

At that moment, it was like Lin Ming had become the embodiment of thunder itself. Human and spear had gathered as one. The speed of this strike instantly reached a terrifying level.

The air whistled. All was pierced to nothingness!

Woosh!

In that moment, a purple electric light cut through the endless sky. A hundred miles away, a light flashed, and the sky seemed to be split asunder by this thunder. Lin Ming and the Purple Comet Spear had become the incarnation of lightning, stirring up all the thunder origin energy in the world. The power and speed of this strike was beyond amazing!

"This move..." Lin Ming suddenly stopped, his eyes shining with excitement. With the Heretical God Seed as the foundation, by utilizing all the true essence and power of thunder within his body, completely concentrating his will and potential, integrating the Divine Demon Thunder Soul within the spear point, and all the while galvanizing the thunder origin energy of the world... with this, his speed and energy had erupted to the limit!

This was his self-created move!

Only a martial arts grandmaster could create their own legacy! This was the first self-created style of Lin Ming's. Of course, this move that he created had reverted to the slaughter techniques of the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art', as well as using the abnormal Heretical God Force arcane ability as the support.

With Lin Ming's cultivation, the power of this self-created move shouldn't have been too great. But with the two abilities above as a basis, the power of this move was extremely terrifying! This was an ability created through a stroke of luck and inspiration.

In a sense, this ability could not be copied; it was a move that belonged to Lin Ming and Lin Ming alone. It was impossible for others to learn this move, unless they also had the Heretical God Seed and Divine Demon Thunder Soul.

“This is my first self-created ability. Although I referenced others’ styles, which martial arts grandmaster has not referred to other rare cultivation methods in order to create their own technique? This is a very good starting point!”

Once a martial artist created their own technique, no matter how powerful the moves of others’ were, they was still others’.

This sort of legacy was naturally created by the founder according to their individual situations. This ability would most suit that founder, and in their hand it would display the greatest might.

If others were to use it, the power would inevitably decrease. But, a self-created move was different. The person who created it could bring out 100% of its power.

“The spear contains an inherent Concept, causing the striking power to rise another level. This is nearly all because of the Heretical God Seed. This Heretical God Force is truly a top supernatural ability in the world. To think I was sitting on such a treasure and never knew how to use it before; that was such a waste!”

Lin Ming mocked himself. But in truth, Lin Ming couldn’t really be blamed. This Heretical God Force was a divine supernatural ability that existed outside of the existing cultivation system. Trying to perceive it through meditation without any help or reference was not easy. Initially, when that Supreme Elder from the Realm of the Gods had found the Heretical God Force within an ancient site, he didn’t have enough time to meditate on it, and in the end, he had perished in the siege of the Verdant Feather Holy Land.

“This is my first self-created ability. With the Purple Comet Spear as the medium and the Divine Demon Thunder as the vanguard, I can change my body into lightning, blending human and spear into one. This move, I will name Chasing Thunder!” After creating an ability, one had to create a name for it. Using Chasing Thunder was appropriate. The speed of this technique approached a bolt of lightning!

"Fusing the Concept of Thunder into my slaughter path, I have created my Chasing Thunder. But what about other spear moves?" Thinking this, Lin Ming's eyes shined brightly.

…………………

As Lin Ming was comprehending the Concept of Thunder, an Imp man was dining within a restaurant on the third floor. He played with the folding fan in his hands, an apathetic smile on his face. "The match declaration has been put down, do you know who your opponent is?"

This Imp was Kai Yang, one of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. The large Giant Demon fellow in front of Kai Yang was Hong Zhong. As Hong Zhong heard Kai Yang's question, his eyes brightened. "Does Sir Kai Yang know who my opponent is?"

The rules of Skysplit Tower stipulated that a martial artist of the third floor had to participate in a match every two months. One could find their own opponent, or they could allow Skysplit Tower to arrange an opponent for them depending on the arrangement of strength. The majority of martial artists in Skysplit Tower were busy with their own cultivation, so the matches were mostly arranged by Skysplit Tower. Because of this, a martial artist might not know who their opponent was until the day of the match.

This also prevented both sides from finding out about the other. If one knew who their match was against, they could prepare ahead of time. Of course, this was the best.

"Hehe, I naturally know." Kai Yang smiled. Kai Yang had pledged himself to High Lord Heian. In Skysplit Tower, that was the same as having access to the highest sources. Investigating the identity of an opponent was an easy matter.

Hong Zhong's opponent was exactly Lin Ming.

Well, it would be more precise to say that Kai Yang first investigated Lin Ming, and then found out that his match was this large Giant Demon fellow.

Kai Yang drank some wine and languidly said, “Not only do I know, but I’ve also brought a battle array disc of his fight as well as details on him.”

The large Giant Demon fellow was stunned and then burst out in happiness. But as he thought of something, his happiness turned to bitterness. He said, “Does Sir Kai Yang have a liking for something of mine? Why would you provide me with information? I am merely a poor man.”

“Haha!” Kai Yang laughed as he patted Hong Zhong’s shoulder. “No need to cry about being poor. For better or worse, you are still a top 50 ranked master of Skysplit Tower’s third floor. Not just that, but I also know you’re hiding your strength. The truth is that with your ability, you can easily be in the top 30!”

Skysplit Tower’s third floor had 300 to 400 hundred martial artists. A martial artist in the top 30 was absolutely in the upper echelons.

Chapter 569 – The First Match

Chapter 569 – The First Match

…

…

…

Within Skysplit Tower, there was naturally a set of rules that governed the arrangement of a match. The difference in strength and ranking couldn't be too great, otherwise it would plainly be sending people to their death; no one wanted this. Thus, when arranging a fight for a newcomer, it was naturally impossible to match them against someone at such a high rank like the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. Otherwise, it would be difficult to convince the public that this was a legitimate system.

On the third floor, Xing Tian originally had a ranking at around 150. He could be considered to be in the middle to upper rankings. Since Lin Ming defeated Xing Tian, his strength was ranked around 120 to 130.

But, Lin Ming had cultivated for eight months on the second floor before coming to the third floor, thus Skysplit Tower's management was absolutely happy to overestimate his strength. After the eight months of practice, they directly determined that his strength was in the top 50 rankings!

This did not matter at all. Skysplit Tower especially looked for someone to fight Lin Ming who was in the top 50 rankings and had hidden his strength. This was Hong Zhong!

For Lin Ming to have such a match arranged against him for his first match, the person who did this naturally didn't have good intentions.

As the Giant Demon fellow heard Kai Yang say that he was hiding his strength, his smile stiffened. He forced a laugh and said, “How can I be hiding my strength? Even if I’m hiding a move or two, it shouldn’t enter into Sir Kai Yang’s eyes. Then again, who here isn’t hiding something? I would have to say I’m the worst of the bunch.”

Kai Yang chuckled and then immediately became a bit more serious. He said, “Fine, I won’t play with you. Long story short, I don’t want you to pay anything. As long as you kill your opponent and give me his spatial ring then I will be satisfied!”

“What thing?” The large Giant Demon fellow’s eyes widened. If this was something that could make Kai Yang move to action, then it was absolutely something extraordinary.

If his opponent was weaker than him to begin with and he just had to exert a bit of strength to defeat him, then wouldn’t giving Kai Yang such a precious object mean that he was being taken as a fool?

Thus, Hong Zhong was naturally cautious. The Imps were famous for their deceitful tricks and sinister methods; he didn’t want to serve as someone’s tool.

“Haha, oh, Hong Zhong, Hong Zhong, you think that I’m going to trick you? I’ll make things clear with you, this person, according to common sense, should be weaker than you. But, he’s someone that often surpasses that common sense, so…” As Kai Yang spoke here, he trailed off, keeping Hong Zhong in anticipation.

“Who is it?” Hong Zhong asked.

“I might as well tell you. This person is Lin Ming!”

“Him? He is a newcomer to the third floor! His first match is against me?” Hong Zhong was surprised. He had also heard about Lin Ming. Apparently he was the human that had defeated Xing Tian. His strength should be ranked somewhere around 100th on the third floor. Of course, Lin Ming had practiced for over half a year, but the martial artists on the third floor hadn’t been sitting around doing nothing either. Who didn’t practice well under pressure? Lin Ming could have improved some, but it shouldn’t have been too much.

‘This Lin Ming has offended someone? His first match is me, doesn’t that mean he’s being sent to death? Well no matter, that just means that this father has benefited.’ Hong Zhong thought in his heart. Now, his mood was good. This could be called an easy victory. If he could end Lin Ming’s winning streak, then he could also earn another five or six slaughter points. This was a great deal for him.

Kai Yang correctly guessed Hong Zhong’s thoughts. He smirked and said, “Do you think you’ve won? On the second floor, Xue Man and Xing Tian also believed that. But… they’ve both died!”

Hong Zhong thought otherwise in his heart. Lin Ming truly hadn’t lost a single match on his way to the third floor, but who on the third floor wasn’t the same? A win streak didn’t mean anything.

Hong Zhong realized what was happening. Since he didn’t want to be taken advantage of, he braced himself and slowly said, “Sir Kai Yang, I am not Xing Tian.”

“It seems like… you don’t believe me. In Lin Ming’s spatial ring is an object called a soul bead. It’s not too useful for you because it’s mainly used to nourish one’s soul force. You should be aware that my Imp race is naturally talented in the soul force aspect. But as for you Giant Demons, you’re considered quite weak. How about this, I’ll give you 1500 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals. After you win, I’ll buy that soul bead from you. How about it?”

1500 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals?

Hong Zhong was shocked. Even to someone on the third floor, that was a great amount of wealth.

Before now, he had heard somewhere that Lin Ming was also skilled in the use of soul force, so it naturally made sense that he would have something like this soul bead. But, he couldn’t believe Kai Yang. Who knew whether or not this ‘soul bead’ had other uses? If this was a treasure that even a High Lord lusted over, then 1500 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals were nothing.

"Besides these 1500 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals, I can also lend you some demonic gold insects. If you can really easily defeat Lin Ming then you can put out a price for the soul bead and we'll discuss it later. On the other hand, if you find this battle incomparably difficult and you have to depend on the demonic gold insects to win, then... you will give me that soul bead for 1500 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals!"

Kai Yang's words could be considered sincere enough. Hong Zhong was also surprised. The rumored moody and violent Kai Yang was actually speaking to him with such a pleasant tone.

These demonic gold insects were raised by Kai Yang with great care and cost; they were one of his final master moves. Yet, he was willing to lend them to him. Although Hong Zhong didn't think that he would need to use these demonic gold insects to fight against Lin Ming, he could at least take this opportunity to find and understand the weaknesses of these demonic gold insects. It would be of great help in the future if he had to deal with Kai Yang.

Hong Zhong had his own ambitions. He wanted to become one of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. As for Kai Yang, he was considered one of the low ranked Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. If he could replace him, raise his rankings, and also form some relations with a High Lord, then he would be able to enjoy all the cultivation resources of the third floor.

After thinking it over and over, Hong Zhong couldn't find out where he would have a loss. So, he finally agreed. "Good! Since Brother Kai Yang is so willing, then I gladly accept!"

Kai Yang smiled. Hong Zhong really didn't know what that black glass bead's origin was. If he knew that the bead had belonged to Xing Tian, then his web of lies would come crumbling down. Xing Tian was also a Giant Demon, so how could he keep a bead that nourished his soul force by his side?

Kai Yang patted the spirit insect bag on his waist, and with a buzzing sound, a group of dark gold-colored insects flew out like smoke, surrounding the two.

These were the demonic gold insects.

The demonic gold insects had sharp teeth and looked fiercely vicious. They were the size of beans, and their bodies were covered all over with a dark golden carapace. This carapace was extremely hard and nearly invulnerable.

This sort of insect had eaten a variety of rare metals growing up. The cost to raise them was extremely high. Normally, a martial artist could lose everything they had and not afford to cultivate them. Only a top martial artist like Kai Yang was able to raise such a small bag of them. Even then, there were only a few hundred in total.

As Hong Zhong saw these demonic gold insects, his eyes brightened. If he could take such wonderfully strange insects for himself then it would be great. In a battle where two sides were equally matched, releasing these insects would surely have fantastic effects.

"These are a battle array discs of Lin Ming's fights, there is a complete set here. You had better take this match seriously, your opponent is not simple. Make sure that you don't overturn your boat in your confidence."

Kai Yang tossed out a spatial ring. Inside was a complete battle array disc set of all of Lin Ming's battles ever since he entered Skysplit Tower.

"Don't worry. I will definitely help Brother Kai Yang take this soul bead."

Hong Zhong laughed and took the spatial ring in his hand.

………………………………

Time passed quickly. Already, two months had passed since Lin Ming first entered the third floor. During this time period, Lin Ming had constantly been meditating and perceiving Laws. He was becoming increasingly proficient in the power of his Concepts.

Two months. According to Skysplit Tower's rules, every martial artist on the third floor had to participate in a match every two months if they wished to stay on the third floor.

One could also apply to delay this. There were many martial artists that would go into closed-door seclusion for a long period of time. After coming out, they would need to complete all the matches that they owed.

But, a normal martial artist wouldn't generally do this. For instance, if someone practiced for a year before coming out, then that meant they would need to fight six subsequent matches! To finish six matches in one day, that would take an enormous amount of energy.

On Skysplit Tower's first and second floors, fighting three or four matches in a row was not too great of a problem. But on the third floor, no one was weak. Fighting six matches in a row was simply suicide.

Within the martial arena, a black-clothed servant handed a jade slip to Lin Ming. "Young Hero Lin, this is your arranged match for today. It also has materials on your opponent."

"Hong Zhong?" Lin Ming found this a bit suspicious. The so-called 'material' was a truly pitiful amount. It only listed Hong Zhong's strength ranking in the third floor at around rank 50, and mentioned that his Heavenly Demon Tattoo was a late six-winged Heavenly Demon.

As for what cultivation method he used, what abilities he had, what his techniques were, or any information on battle array discs of his past fights, there was no mention at all.

However, Lin Ming didn't care about this much. After he defeated Xing Tian he had cultivated diligently for ten whole months. With the Concept of Thunder, his self-created move, as well as the most basic opening of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, he was confident in his own strength.

"Lin Wu wins! He has killed his opponent and thus obtained a 10 win streak and a slaughter point. For ending his opponent's 42 win winning streak, he obtains four slaughter points. This is five slaughter points altogether!" A black-clothed old man loudly announced on the martial arena stage.

Several staff went onstage to lift away Lin Wu's opponent. The arena stage that was stained with blood was a reminder of the cruel and tragic battle that had just occurred. As the victor, Lin Wu was covered in blood from head to toe. His energy consumption was great, and he was barely supporting himself with his last bit of energy. He quickly swallowed down some pills and started to adjust his breathing.

Because killing an opponent granted a 10 win winning streak and just defeating an opponent granted a single winning streak, the fights between the martial artists of the third floor were usually filled with blood and chaos. These battles were nearly always competitions of life and death.

Such a fight was an enormous pressure on a martial artist. Even a veteran martial artists who had experienced many similar battles found it hard to remain calm.

As Lin Wu left the stage, a new martial artist jumped onstage. Every month on this day was when the third floor's martial arena was at its liveliest. There would be several dozen competitions carried out today.

Lin Ming was just estimating the strength of the martial artists that just went onstage and comparing it to himself, when at this time, a loud and hoarse laugh sounded out from around him.

He turned around to see a Giant Demon fellow. This person's body had used some unknown ink and their body was painted with seals. This Giant Demon fellow was looking at Lin Ming as he menacingly laughed, revealing his sharp fangs.

Lin Ming frowned. He suddenly realized something and said, "Are you Hong Zhong?"

"Smart! You are my opponent today. We will be fighting in the next round."

"Oh? I'm glad I don't have to wait."

“Haha, you’re quite confident in yourself. I don’t know who you’ve offended for me to be your first match! Rest assured, I am not in the habit of torturing my opponents to death. I will give you a happy and simple death!”

Chapter 570 – The Wonderful Effect of Concepts

Chapter 570 – The Wonderful Effect of Concepts

…

…

…

To Hong Zhong, the current Lin Ming in front of him was nothing more than a pile of 1500 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals!

Not just that, but Kai Yang had made a pledge. Once Hong Zhong was able to successfully obtain Lin Ming's spatial ring, he would introduce Hong Zhong to become a direct vassal under High Lord Heian.

This condition by itself was able to greatly move Hong Zhong's ambitious heart. Once he climbed up into the High Lord's graces, then he could obtain a 20% discount, 30% discount, or even completely free use of practice resources!

To Hong Zhong, although this 'soul bead' probably had a great value, it was still an unknown object. How could it compare to visible benefits right in front of him?

Thus at this moment, he was impatient to fight Lin Ming.

'Have I offended this fellow?' Lin Ming turned his head. He didn't know what this Hong Zhong was being so antsy about.

Inadvertently, Lin Ming saw Kai Yang in the arena, faintly smiling at him.

'Kai Yang…'

A cold light flashed in Lin Ming's eyes. These past days, he basically hadn't left his practice area so Kai Yang didn't have a chance to do anything to him. But now that he had to enter the martial stage for a match, Kai Yang probably wouldn't let go of this chance to deal with him.

"Make your move. I'll follow along." Lin Ming didn't give a single care. Even if Kai Yang himself came, he wouldn't feel pressed at all.

The battle onstage was evenly matched. Lin Ming was calmly watching this fight, when at this moment, a true essence sound transmission resounded in Lin Ming's ear.

"Brother Lin!"

Hearing this familiar voice, Lin Ming turned to see that the one speaking to him was Muk Gu.

"Brother Muk!"

"Brother Lin, today is your first match. I just found out your match four hours ago so I've helped you gather some information." As Muk Gu spoke he handed Lin Ming a jade slip. "I was in a hurry so there's a limited amount of information. Hurry and look at it."

"Thank you." Lin Ming felt a bit of warmth in his heart. Although he was well aware that the reason Muk Gu became friends with him was because he was looking forward to Lin Ming's promising future, no matter what the reason was, it was still a very gratifying and thankful matter to have a friend on the third floor.

Lin Ming immersed his perception in the jade slip. Lin Ming didn't have the time to see much before the battle on stage was finally decided. It was a rare outcome. The strength of the two challengers was very close, so while both were mutually wounded, no one had died.

If this was the first floor then this match would probably lead to an outburst of boos and shouts. But on the third floor, the audience seemed to maintain a unanimous silence, an oppressive atmosphere filling the entire martial arena.

“This match is Ao Yue’s victory!” The referee looked over the two challengers and made a decision on who had won. He then glanced at the audience and said, “Next match, Hong Zhong against Lin Ming!”

As Lin Ming’s name was called out, a number of people in the stands paid closer attention to the stage. But, this was only paying some attention. On the second floor, Lin Ming was king, as lofty as the sun, but on the third floor he was a relatively common existence. In the eyes of these martial artists, Lin Ming was indeed a top genius, but he was just too tender.

“If I remember correctly, this should be Lin Ming’s first match. I didn’t think he would have to fight against someone like Hong Zhong.”

“Hong Zhong can be considered a hardened veteran of the third floor. His publicly listed strength is in the top 50, but no one knows how much strength he is hiding. It seems that Skysplit Tower’s judges believe that Lin Ming’s strength is also ranked in the top 50 on the third floor. I really have no idea what sort of measurements they are using for their evaluation. He’s just a babyish newcomer from the second floor and yet he’s been arranged an opponent in the top 50 rankings. This Lin Ming simply has bad luck.” A martial artist said, taking pleasure in Lin Ming’s misfortune. The martial artists of Skysplit Tower certainly didn’t want to see new talent grow. If they were unlucky, they might become these people’s stepping stones.

“Hehe, I think that Lin Ming has probably offended someone. But it’s too early to say that Lin Ming’s the one with bad luck. Let’s take a look at the results first.”

Lin Ming tapped his toes and lightly floated onstage. On the opposite side, Hong Zhong grasped an overlord spear. He had already been waiting onstage.

Spear to spear!

But, Lin Ming’s Purple Comet Spear was smaller than Hong Zhong’s massive python-like overlord spear.

“Begin!”

Without any hype-building talk, the referee immediately started the match.

“Hehe, boy, you can consider meeting me your bad luck, now I’ll take your life!” Hong Zhong began to step forwards. With every step, his aura rose, and loud, rumbling noises filled the air like the drumbeat of a heart.

Step by step, every step grew increasingly fearful. Even Lin Ming felt his own heart being faintly affected.

What an amazing potential-gathering step! Above the stage, Muk Gu’s heart chilled. The martial artists of Skysplit Tower’s third floor were not nobodies of their generation. Although this step seemed simple, it was in fact filled with layers upon layers of profound mysteries.

If it were him and not Lin Ming onstage, then in the face of Hong Zhong, his own imposing aura would be completely suppressed. If his momentum was already suppressed before the fight truly began, then how could he even fight?

Within the arena, many of the other martial artists present secretly praised Hong Zhong’s steps in their heart. Even the normally arrogant and aloof Kai Yang revealed a toothy smile.

However, Lin Ming only stood there onstage, seemingly not caring at all.

“This boy, just what is he doing?”

Hong Zhong frowned. Without a pause in his steps, his aura soon reached the limit!

The overlord spear in his hands had gathered its maximum potential, it was poised for action!

But at this moment, Hong Zhong suddenly felt as if his steps slowed down. He obviously should be going faster, but for some unknown reason, his movements couldn’t catch up to his mind.

His originally perfect rhythm, because of these slowed steps, had suddenly become disrupted.

Thus, the aura that he had been gathering with every step had been destroyed.

“Mm? What’s going on?”

Hong Zhong was greatly shocked. In that instant, he felt as if he had become incomparably slow. Although he hadn’t been harmed in any way, his spear potential had broken apart.

All of the surrounding martial artists were greatly shocked. As challengers of the third floor, those that were able to arrive here were geniuses of their generation; they naturally saw the mystery of what had happened just now.

“The Concept of Time!”

“Yes! That monstrous freak Lin Ming has actually comprehended the Laws of Space and Time!”A martial artist suddenly remembered. They, too, had seen information on Lin Ming.

“Humph! It’s only a superficial touch!” Beside the martial artist, an outstanding Fey elite glowered. In terms of Concepts, the Fey were naturally superior. But as a young Fey elite himself, he still hadn’t been able to comprehend the Concepts of Space and Time. Yet, this human had been able to do so. Of course he wasn’t happy about this at all.

However, the martial artist beside him hadn’t understood the meaning behind the Fey youth’s words. He continued to say, “It truly is just a tiny bit, but even this isn’t easy. Not just that, but this simple superficial application of the Concept of Time was able to ruin Hong Zhong’s rhythm. This method of use is simply clever to the extreme!”

The more excited this martial artist became, the uglier the Fey youth’s expression became.

“What a good boy, it seems I had underestimated you. But so what if you can break my spear potential? I do not need to rely on that to suppress you, I can do that with absolute strength alone!

“Take my spear!”

Hong Zhong gave a loud shot and the overlord spear in his hands suddenly dropped from above, a great pressure following it! Billowing demon essence filled the air like a massive dark cloud!

In that instant, Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a bright light. The Purple Comet Spear in his hands thrust forth like a bolt of lightning.

Concept of Thunder!

This spear had no killing move accompanying it. There was only a purple electric light blazing above the shaft of the spear. Under the Concept of Thunder, the power of this electric light was incomparable with the past.

Chi-la!

The Purple Comet Spear and overlord spear struck each other with their shafts. The overlord spear suddenly stopped; a violent and raging power of thunder had sunk into Hong Zhong’s body.

Hong Zhong paused. It felt as his entire body was being paralyzed by this thunder. However, Hong Zhong truly was a high ranking master of the third floor. As he saw the Purple Comet Spear thrusting towards his throat like a viper, he bit down on his tongue, forcefully sobering his body.

“Get out!”

A spear thrust towards Lin Ming’s front. Lin Ming took this chance to flip upside over. As he was in the air, his hands moved.

Primeval Spear Strike!

A spear thrust out. Blood Drinking Seals danced in the air. After coming to Skysplit Tower, not only had the number of Blood Drinking Seals greatly increased, but with the death of powerhouses like Xue Man and Xing Tian to condense the Blood Drinking Seals, their might had sharply risen too.

With this spear, Blood Drinking Seals shot out, twisting around like a spinning steel needle.

Hong Zhong's pupils shrank, inexplicably shocked.

Lin Ming's strength had far surpassed his wildest imaginations.

Bang!

Demon essence completely erupted. Massive waves of demon essence appeared around Hong Zhong. The runes on his body began to radiate a dazzling light. He had gone all out, releasing his most core cultivation method!

Lin Ming sneered.

Heretical God Force – open!

Ca!

A spear shot out. Hong Zhong blocked the Purple Comet Spear, but the spinning vortex of Blood Drinking Seals had cut apart the waves of demon essence, shooting straight towards him!

With the overlord spear extended out, Hong Zhong was completely unable to resist this attack with his spear!

"Break for me!"

Hong Zhong shouted. He punched out a fist. Flesh and blood against Blood Drinking Seals!

Kacha!

Dozens of Blood Drinking Seals were amazingly sent flying away with Hong Zhong's punch! As for Hong Zhong's fist, only the skin had been broken.

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light. What a solidly strong fist!

But as Lin Ming was shocked, Hong Zhong was moreso shocked. That punch seemed normal, but in truth it had consumed a great deal of strength. He had used highly compressed demon essence hidden in his body to resist that attack. That was his sect's top defensive cultivation method – Great Bell Shield! But in that punch a moment ago, that Great Bell Shield had nearly broken apart.

'This boy! If he lives he will absolutely be a disaster!' Hong Zhong licked the blood off his fist, his eyes flashing with thick killing intent. "I didn't think I would be forced to this step. Since that's the case, I'll have you take my full and complete attack! This is the first time I've used this attack in Skysplit Tower!"

Kai Yang had already said that Hong Zhong was hiding his strength. If he displayed his full strength, then Hong Zhong could at least rank in the thirties; he could even challenge the top 30!

Hong Zhong's entire body began to issue crackling noises. His face became increasingly forced. His forehead became more prominent, and his fangs seemed to lengthen. All of the blue veins on his body began to twist like worms.

Lin Ming's eyes flashed. He could clearly feel the intense oppressive feeling that was being transmitting by the erupting aura within Hong Zhong's body.

"Skysplit Tower's third floor is truly a den of crouching tigers and hidden dragons. A mere rank 40 to 50 Hong Zhong can actually have this strength. If it is the top 10, or one of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, just how formidable would they become in this situation?”

Lin Ming’s heart burned with fighting spirit.

He decided to completely free the power of the Heretical God Force!

Chapter 571 – Demonic Gold Insects

Chapter 571 – Demonic Gold Insects

…

…

…

Lin Ming’s Heretical God Force had touched upon the second layer. The Heretical God Seed’s ability to compress true essence had been enhanced, and the increase in strength and true essence had risen to another level.

Added to Lin Ming’s attempt to open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, his endurance and tenacity far exceeded what it used to be.

Now, with just the Heretical God Force, Lin Ming’s combat prowess was already extremely terrifying. As for his other abilities, Lin Ming didn’t use them. He still had a long road to walk on the third floor.

After compressed true essence erupted, Lin Ming grasped the Purple Comet Spear. The Divine Demon Thunder Soul completely fused into it, and a legion of Blood Drinking Seals drifted in the air. Billowing waves of true essence filled the air like an overwhelming tsunami!

In front of Lin Ming, Hong Zhong’s form suddenly appeared. He had spurred his demon essence to the limit!

Heavenly Shrine Suppression!

With his entire body wrapped in a cloak of black light, Hong Zhong was like the embodiment of a meteor as he came crashing down!

This strike contained the noble Concept of Earth!

The Giant Demon race's talent did not lie in their comprehension of Concepts. However, under such a top practice environment like Skysplit Tower's third floor, they could equally comprehend a Concept that belonged to them.

Outside of this Concept, Hong Zhong's terrifying physical strength was even more outstanding, as well as his incomparably thick demon essence!

With these three aspects as one, as soon as Hong Zhong used his strongest attack, the entire arena was covered with black clouds. It was like being pressed down by a massive mountain.

"What a magnificent move. The advantage of an overlord spear lies in its potential and ability to roll over all before it. This attack of Hong Zhong's exemplifies this truth."

"Hong Zhong was really hiding his strength well! From just this strike alone, his ranking could be in the top thirty. How will Lin Ming defend against this?"

The martial artists in the arena patiently waited. In a fight between top masters, victory and defeat were often decided in an instant. The clash before was merely a probing attack.

At the edge of the arena, Muk Gu was also feeling anxious. This strike of Hong Zhong's was truly earth-shattering. Would Lin Ming really be able to defend against it?

Facing this strike that contained the strength of the deep earth, Lin Ming revolved his true essence to the limit. Without any master ability, Lin Ming only relied upon the eminently great increase in strength given to him by the second layer of the Heretical God Force.

Slaughter!

His will and potential poured into this attack, Lin Ming was able to grasp the greatest strength of the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'.

A hundred Blood Drinking Seals completely fused into the Purple Comet Spear. Lin Ming also wanted to see just what degree of power the ‘Great Desolate Blood Halberd’ would reach after fusing the blood essence of so many masters of Skysplit Tower.

Kacha!

Hong Zhong’s overwhelming momentum and billowing demon essence met Lin Ming’s spear strike. Both attacks were in intense opposition, neither side backing down.

“Mm?”

Hong Zhong never thought that this strike, infused with all of his strength, would actually be blocked by Lin Ming!

“Break!”

Hong Zhong roared, and all of the demon essence within his body began to revolve past its bearing ability. He wanted to defeat Lin Ming’s spear in a single move, but at this moment, several dazzlingly bright crimson Blood Drinking Seals cut towards him like flying knives. The Blood Drinking Seals tore through the cloud of demon essence, piercing straight towards Hong Zhong’s chest! These Blood Drinking Seals were condensed from the sacrifice of Xue Man and Xing Tian; they were incomparably sharp!

“What!?”

Hong Zhong was horrified. At this critical moment, his eyes turned blood-red. He overdrew all of his demon essence in order to forcefully open the Great Bell Shield!

Chi-la!

The Blood Drinking Seal pierced through the top of Hong Zhong’s shield, directly cutting it open. In his haste, this quickly conjured shield of Hong Zhong’s was much more fragile than before!

Hong Zhong gave a miserable cough as he was sent flying away. On his chest, a two foot deep wound had been opened. His lungs had been cut, blood spurting everywhere!

The entire audience was in a stupor. Lin Ming had not only blocked Hong Zhong's strike, but he had also counter-attacked and wounded Hong Zhong!

This two foot deep wound was manageable to a Giant Demon; it wouldn't affect their combat ability too much.

But if his lungs were cut this time, then what about the next time? Would his heart be cut open next?

This fight, Hong Zhong was on the verge of defeat!

Lin Ming withdrew the Heretical God Force, saving away the remaining true essence. The Blood Drinking Seals that danced in the air also melted back into Lin Ming's body without a trace. To Lin Ming, the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' wasn't just a technique used to kill, but also a cultivation method used to enhance his cultivation. Within the Blood Slaughter Steppes, using the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' to increase his cultivation was naturally much faster than using the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'.

Hong Zhong crawled up from the ground. Because of his burning rage, the seals tattooed on his face turned bright red. As he glared at Lin Ming, the brilliant shine in his eyes was that of a wounded vicious beast on the edge of craziness.

"Well done! You've forced my hand to this point. I didn't want to use this move, but now, I'll make sure not even your skeleton is left over!"

"Oh? Didn't you just say a moment ago that that was your final hidden ability?" Lin Ming mocked.

A moment ago, when Hong Zhong was forced by Lin Ming to use the final hidden card he had, he had spat out some ruthless words. He wanted to kill Lin Ming with that strike, but now that he had used his ability, Lin Ming was unharmed whilst he himself was seriously wounded.

Now, whatever vicious words he said would just be a joke. It would be nothing more than the words of a coward putting up a front.

“I don’t think Hong Zhong has much hope to win.”

“His aura is much weaker than before; he’s consumed too much demon essence. Even if he had another final move to use, it would just be a joke.”

“I didn’t think Lin Ming would win this. His strength is enough to advance into the top 30. This newcomer is too scary!”

As the audience around the stage were talking, at this time, no one present believed Hong Zhong would win. But, just as they started discussing the fight, all of them suddenly stopped. They saw that Hong Zhong had fished out an insect pouch from his waist.

“Spirit insects? When did Hong Zhong raise something like that?”

Buzz!

As Hong Zhong opened the spirit insect bag, a group of dark golden insects flew out, looking like cloud of dark gold.

Every spirit insect was the size of a bean, and they looked incomparably vicious. Seeing these, all of the surrounding martial artists were shocked.

Demonic gold insects!

Weren’t these the spirit insects that the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars’ Kai Yang cultivated?

How did they end up in Hong Zhong’s hands?

The cost of raising these demonic gold insects was extremely high. Every time they was used, there would always be some loss. Losing dozens of them at a time was a normal occurrence. How could these be lent out to others?

Much less this was the third floor of Skysplit Tower, where everyone was always killing everyone else. Who would take their final last resort or hidden skill and let others study it. Wasn't that just a joke?

"Is Hong Zhong actually raising demonic gold insects?" A martial artists found this hard to believe. A demonic gold insect was a wonderful and strange spirit insect. How could someone raise them just because they wanted to?

"Something's wrong. I'm certain that those are Kai Yang's demonic gold insects!"

Another martial artist said. He had seen many of Kai Yang's matches where the Imp had let loose these demonic gold insects. His memory of these bugs was especially deep.

However, no matter what the situation was, something was true without a doubt.

Lin Ming was in danger!

"If that's true, the how did Kai Yang's demonic gold insects end up in Hong Zhong's hands?" In the audience, Muk Gu was worried. He glanced over at Kai Yang. Kai Yang was watching the match without the least bit of surprise on his face. If so, then that meant those demonic gold insects were really lent to Hong Zhong by Kai Yang!

"Their friendship shouldn't reach this degree, why would this be happening?"

Muk Gu couldn't understand why.

But at this time on the arena stage, the demonic gold insects had already enveloped an area of dozens of feet around Lin Ming. The demonic gold insects ate all sorts of rare and precious metals as they grew, fusing the essence of these metals into their own carapaces. From top to bottom, their entire body was a weapon. Especially with so many of them. If a cloud of these demonic gold insects rushed at someone, perhaps not even their skeleton would be left.

“Lin Ming! Go die!”

Hong Zhong chortled. The demonic gold insects buzzed as they rushed forwards, blocking every escape route!

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a chilling light. Blood Seal Twisting Murder!

Blood Drinking Seals shot out, forming a vortex in the air as sharp as a saber. With a clanging noise, a massive number of these demonic gold insects were sent flying back. However, although they were sent crashing dozens of feet away, some even breaking the ground in their fall, none of them were actually injured. In just several breaths of time, all of these demonic gold insects took to the air again!

There were too many of these winged insects; the Blood Drinking Seals simply weren’t able to strike all of them down. Dozens of these flying insects had come out unscathed. They gathered into a group, flying towards Lin Ming!

Concept of Space!

Lin Ming’s feet stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void, instantly vanishing from where he was. In a situation with nearly no gaps, he had escaped the encirclement of these insects.

The demonic gold insects struck the metal ground. In that instant, the metal floor that was supported by an array formation seemed to be melted away as if concentrated acid was poured atop it. A big hole appeared in the ground. If this sort of attack hit a person, there would absolutely be nothing left of them!

“Too fierce!”

Lin Ming couldn't help but acknowledge the strength of these insects. Not only were these demonic gold insects invulnerable to weapons, but their attack power was terrifying. This method of use could shake one's heart.

"Hehe, let's see where else you can hide!" Hong Zhong shouted, carried away with the success of forcing Lin Ming away.

Lin Ming looked at Hong Zhong, his eyes as sharp as swords!

"What? You want to attack my body instead? You are far too naïve!" Hong Zhong coldly snorted. The demonic gold insects formed a dark gold fog in front of him. If he commanded the demonic gold insects and left himself open to a fatal attack, then he would have been far too stupid.

"Defensive form!"

As Hong Zhong issued an order, the spirit insects in front of him began to change as their carapaces stretched out. The bean-sized spirit insects, after stretching out their carapaces, were now the size of pigeon eggs. With these insects stacked together, they formed a shield in front of Hong Zhong.

"Attack form!"

Hong Zhong issued out another order. Some of the demonic gold insects still buzzing in front of Lin Ming also changed. Their bodies changed, and suddenly a sharp drill horn appeared on them. Not just that, but this horn was also trembling, contained the power of a single Law.

The Law of Vibration…

Lin Ming wasn't a stranger to the power of vibration. His Flow like Silk was the perfect manifestation of the power of vibration.

Absolute defense and absolute attack. These demonic gold insects were originally spirit insects that could be used offensively and defensively. The surrounding martial artists were all shocked. This method of fighting simply had no weaknesses!

How could one break through this?

The surrounding audience widened their eyes in rapt attention lest they miss a single detail.

“These tiny spirit insects actually hold so many mysteries. Those high-speed vibrating horns can probably easily pierce through a martial artist’s protective true essence. If someone were to be drilled through by these insects, then the consequences would be fatal!”

Lin Ming grimaced. He had his own self-created move, the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, and the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. He hadn’t planned on using these three killer moves, but now he had no choice. Facing Hong Zhong and these demonic gold insets, Lin Ming could no longer hide these abilities.

The Purple Comet Spear in his hands lazy horizontally flat. Thunder sparkled on the shaft. The electric light seemed to be able to pierce through space itself!

Chapter 572 – Extreme Attack Speed

Chapter 572 – Extreme Attack Speed

…

…

…

The dark demonic gold insects howled forwards, their vibrating horns tearing the air. This imposing aura was shocking to all!

Lin Ming glanced over at Hong Zhong. His features were maliciously twisted, anticipation in his eyes as the demonic gold insects had formed a shield behind him.

Lin Ming sneered. The bodies of the demonic gold insects were certainly hard and unyielding, but the shield formed by them certainly wasn't the same!

Taking a step backwards, the thunder on the Purple Comet Spear suddenly converged upon itself. The three-colored lightning formed a spear of thunder, perfectly fusing together with the Purple Comet Spear. With the support of the Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, the potency of this attack had reached the limit.

Concept of Thunder – Chasing Thunder!

Lin Ming's figure instantly vanished. Spear and man became one, turning into a blazing bolt of lightning, arcing forwards!

The demonic gold insects' attack naturally failed!

In that moment, sound itself seemed to be swallowed up. Lin Ming had become a peerless master spear. He had become the spear, the spear had become him!

Cha!

Lin Ming turned into an electric light that stabbed into the shield of demonic gold insects!

The speed of this attack was simply too quick. Even many of the martial artists present couldn't see what had happened. All they saw was a dazzling flash of lightning and the sound of something shattering. Dozens of dark demonic gold insects were shot backwards.

Hong Zhong was beyond shocked. With a loud shout of surprise, his eyes widened. He grasped the overlord spear, bringing it forwards!

However… it was too late!

Puff!

With a light sound, all of the potential Hong Zhong had gathered was shattered. He stood there, motionless like statue, but Lin Ming had already instantly appeared hundreds of feet past him, as if he had teleported there.

Zizi!

Electric light still sparkled on Lin Ming's body. The dazzling radiance of the Purple Comet Spear was difficult to look directly at. Because the speed of the attack was too fast, a several hundred foot long fissure had appeared in the ground behind Lin Ming. As for Hong Zhong, his eyes had dulled over and his body was stiff. He still maintained his posture of wielding his spear, the overlord spear in his hands halfway up.

In front of him, a hole the size of a large egg had appeared in the shield of demonic gold insects. There, several demonic gold insects had vanished.

This hole, if one looked, extended straight through to Hong Zhong's throat.

In the center of Hong Zhong's throat was a similar hole. It passed completely through his head, exiting through the back! All of the flesh and skin around this area had been scorched black.

The bones of his throat had shattered, broken with a single strike!

Lin Ming hadn't pierced the demonic gold insects directly, instead aiming for where they attached to each other. Once he destroyed this connection, they naturally were shunted away by the attack.

Although the demonic gold insects had a hard body, the areas which they connected were not as strong.

The defensive ability of the demonic gold insects lay in their ability to separate a portion of themselves to form a shield around the martial artist, using this shield to defend against attacks. But, if an attack exceeded the response time of these demonic gold insects, then there simply wasn't anything they could do about it.

After piercing through the shield of demonic gold insects, Lin Ming's spear had stabbed through Hong Zhong's throat.

There was no chance for him to resist.

This was too fast!

Chasing Thunder fused the Concept of Thunder as well as the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'. This was an attack that Lin Ming poured his complete will and bodily potential into. In the entirety of Lin Ming's repertoire, this was the fastest attack!

In the power of Laws, the speed of thunder was even quicker than the wind!

Lin Ming hadn't wanted to reveal this card in his hand, but compared to burning the blood of the Ancient Phoenix or using the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, Chasing Thunder was the most suitable skill.

The surrounding martial artists didn't have time to react. In fact, most of them hadn't even seen what had happened. They only saw the flash of thunder, and Lin Ming seeming as if he teleported hundreds of feet away. As for Hong Zhong, a hole had suddenly appeared in his throat!

“Hong Zhong… he died?”

Hong Zhong had been winning just a moment ago, but in the blink of an eye, without time to take a single breath, the flow of battle had completely changed! It was faster than one could react!

When Lin Ming had defended against Hong Zhong’s Heavenly Shrine Suppression, people had already expected that Lin Ming would win. But no one thought he would win so quickly, with a surprising move that took less than a second!

“What an amazingly fast attack! Its speed approaches a terrifying boundary. If I fight Lin Ming in the future, I must be careful of this move!”

“In the moment of that attack, it seemed to tear through the void itself!”

A surprise attack could achieve the highest effect. If others were prepared, then it naturally wouldn’t be the same.

In the arena, Muk Gu let out a sigh of relief. He ruefully smiled and shook his head. His worry had been for nothing. “Perhaps… this isn’t Lin Ming’s limit.”

“Lin Ming is someone who knows what he is doing. When he was on the second floor, he hadn’t grasped this attack yet. But, after going into closed-door seclusion for eight months and then spending another two months on the third floor, he was able to. This was an entire 10 months. If Lin Ming hadn’t made enormous progress, then why would he leave?”

Hong Zhong’s corpse slumped down where it stood. But as for those demonic gold insects, they continued to buzz in the air. Without Hong Zhong’s conscious control, they floated without purpose.

Lin Ming's mind stirred. He reached out a hand and took off the spirit insect bag on Hong Zhong's waist.

"Come in!"

It was originally impossible for Lin Ming to control these demonic gold insects. But now, since they had lost all order and purpose, he could easily seize them all.

With a wave of his hand, dozens of demonic gold insects flew into the spirit insect bag!

"You are looking to die!"

In the arena, Kai Yang exploded with utter rage!

Woosh!

His figure flashed onto the arena stage. A sharp sword left its sheath, thrusting straight towards Lin Ming!

"Mm?"

Lin Ming's eyes shined with a cold light. He stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void, instantly disappearing.

Bang!

The metal ground fiercely trembled. Kai Yang had torn a hole in it. Lin Ming fluttered down several dozens of feet away. He drew the Purple Comet Spear, the spearpoint directed straight towards Kai Yang!

"Stop!"

A black-clothed referee coldly humphed, appearing in the center of the martial stage. "During a match, no one may interrupt! Otherwise you will be in violation of Skysplit Tower's rules!"

Kai Yang took a deep breath. Skysplit Tower had ironclad rules that could not be violated; even the High Lords were no exception. He suppressed the thick killing intent in his heart and coldly shouted, “Boy! Hand over that spirit insect bag!”

“Hilarious!” The corners of Lin Ming’s lips panned up in a sneer. “If I kill someone, then all of their possessions belong to me. Besides their city entrance token, everything is mine! These are the rules of Skysplit Tower; tell me exactly what I have done wrong? Why should I give you anything? You wanted to use someone to kill me, but now that they died, I have to give this back to you? Is there really something so good?”

“You!!” Kai Yang’s eyes flashed with a cold light. “Good! You are very good!”

With a wave of his sleeve, Kai Yang’s robe rolled up. With a faint buzzing sound, the remaining demonic gold insects in the air completely flew towards Kai Yang’s side. However, because the demonic gold insects in Lin Ming’s spirit insect bag were separated into a different space, they weren’t able to receive Kai Yang’s orders, so it was naturally impossible for them to return to him.

Lin Ming wasn’t able to prevent this. He didn’t have the ability to control the demonic gold insects.

Lin Ming looked at the referee, coldly saying, “Mister referee, according to the rules of Skysplit Tower, aren’t all of these things my spoils of battle?”

“This…”

The referee’s expression was difficult. He hesitated for a moment but remained silent.

“Lin Ming! You are far greedier than a snake! You even want these too? Dream on!” Kai Yang’s heart was filled with a burning anger.

Lin Ming coldly looked at Kai Yang, not speaking. At this time, exchanging words was useless and fighting was also forbidden. In that case, he might as well not speak. Everyone could see the truth. In the future, everything would be settled within the arena.

“Lin Ming, you’d better not step out of the fighting-forbidden zones even half a step. Otherwise, I will have you suffer to death!”

Kai Yang ruthlessly spat out. He was no longer willing to stay in the martial arena any longer. He quickly exited.

After Kai Yang left the martial arena, everyone was silent, not daring to make a noise. The atmosphere was chilling.

But, there were actually some people whispering.

“The one who lent the demonic gold insects to Hong Zhong was Kai Yang. Now that Hong Zhong is dead, it’s completely reasonable for Lin Ming to take them!”

“He wanted to lend a knife to someone to kill someone else, but after being defeated, he still wants his knife back. Is there such a truth in this world? Kai Yang is far too presumptuous!”

“What can be done about it? Lin Ming is only a newcomer, but Kai Yang is a subordinate of a High Lord. If he can endure then he has to. Not to mention that Lin Ming has also obtained several dozen demonic gold insects. But if he wants to raise them, it won’t be a simple matter.”

Lin Ming ignored the discussion in the audience. He removed Hong Zhong’s spatial ring as well as flicking his finger, sending the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder into Hong Zhong’s body to attract his blood essence, condensing it into a Blood Drinking Seal.

At this time, Hong Zhong’s infernal energy also broke into Lin Ming’s body. This was the infernal energy of a late six-winged Heavenly Demon. The density of this energy was extremely high. After it rushed into Lin Ming’s body, the Heavenly Demon Tattoo on his arm slowly became clearer and clearer. The first three pairs of wings were already condensed, but the fourth would be much more difficult.

After absorbing the massive amount of infernal energy from Hong Zhong, Lin Ming's fourth pair of wings was less than half condensed. This was the same as a middle six-winged Heavenly Demon. When the fourth pair of wings was complete, that would be an eight-winged Heavenly Demon.

After becoming an eight-winged Heavenly Demon, his speed at practicing demonic path cultivation methods would rise to yet another level.

Several staff came onstage and lifted Hong Zhong's corpse away.

The referee embarrassingly smiled at Lin Ming and said, "Congratulations on your victory. Hong Zhong originally had a 95 win winning streak. After killing him, you should obtain a 10 win winning streak. But, because the disparity of your win streak and Hong Zhong's is too great, your win streak is directly taken from his, minus 30. Now, your total win streak is 65.

"At the same time, you also obtain nine slaughter points from ending his winning streak, as well as another slaughter point for reaching a 60 win winning streak. This is a total of 10 slaughter points.

Lin Ming's win streak was originally at 52. After obtaining a 10 win winning streak from Hong Zhong, he reached 62.

Since his win streak was less than 65, it rose to that amount.

"After this match you can cultivate for two months. If you do not come out during your closed-door seclusion, then you will need to make up for the matches you've missed within one day. I respectfully congratulate Young Hero Lin and wish you a bright future." The referee said with a smile.

"I understand." Lin Ming lightly replied. He turned around and left, walking towards the practice area.

Skysplit Tower’s third floor had new martial artists entering every month, as well as martial artists disappearing every month. These people might have died, or they might have left.

Whether they left or not was a choice they could make at any time. But, there was actually a massive number of martial artists that were willing to risk their lives to stay within Skysplit Tower. This was for the pressure and cultivation resources that Skysplit Tower offered. This practice environment was one that was unique to Skysplit Tower.

This time, Lin Ming went to another practice area. This was for… the Concept of Fire.

Chapter 573 – The Road of a Martial Arts Master

Chapter 573 – The Road of a Martial Arts Master

…

…

…

The third floor of Skysplit Tower, practice area –

This time, the practice area that Lin Ming arrived at was… the Concept of Fire!

The practice area for the Concept of Fire also cost a slaughter point every 10 days. Currently, Lin Ming had a great deal of slaughter points, so he could stay here as he wished.

Entering in, there was a vast expanse of space. In front of Lin Ming, the land was full of dark red rocks that extended to the horizon.

Between these rocks, there were unknown plants growing. These plants, without exception, all exuded a very strong and pure fire origin energy. Not too far away, there was a turbid crimson stream surging through. From afar, it resembled lava, but as one closed in they would notice that it was actually comprised of fire origin energy. A scalding hot wind blew off it. This heat itself was much hotter than normal lava; it was enough to directly scorch one's skin to a crisp.

"This place is… a bit similar to the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm."

When Lin Ming had first entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, he had also perceived the Concept of Fire through meditation. Now, he would repeat that experience again.

This river of fire origin energy seemed simple, but in truth, every wave, every ebb, contained Laws of Fire.

Lin Ming sat on a burning rock floating on the river, entering into the ethereal martial intent state. He completely invested his concentration into comprehending the Concept of Fire.

Slowly, Lin Ming submerged deep into this river of fire origin energy.

A vast fire energy continuously flowed into Lin Ming's body from his acupoints. It made a random path through his meridians before discharging through his pores.

A faint trace of essence and comprehension stayed within Lin Ming's body. As Lin Ming entered into the river of fire origin energy, he lost all sense of time...

"Burning heat... this is actually the movement of fire origin energy. The faster this energy goes, the more it impacts, the higher the temperature is. If I can stimulate this same situation with true essence, then the power of fire will also increase..."

This was a part of the truth that Lin Ming had become aware of before. But now, sitting through meditation, his understanding of this truth became even deeper!

Lin Ming didn't know how long he sat in meditation for. The Purple Comet Spear seemed to come out of the spatial ring as if it had a mind of its own. Fire origin energy was stirred up the by the Sacred Flame Parasol Tree, brilliantly burning!

A spear shot out again and again. Fire origin energy rushed in all directions from Lin Ming's body, fusing into the Purple Comet Spear. With the support of the Sacred Flame Parasol Tree, the might grew to another level!

After touching upon the threshold for the Gate of Healing, Lin Ming's endurance had increased by a great amount; he nearly didn't feel fatigue. He didn't know how long he danced with his spear, but slowly, over time, understanding and comprehension seeped into his heart.

‘If I can combine the Concept of Fire with the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’, what would that be like? If I can fuse the Concept of Fire and the Concept of Thunder together, and then pour that into the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’, what would that be like too?’

As Lin Ming thought of this, his heart was stirred. He was impatient in wanting to test this out.

Combining any of the five element Concepts together was impossibly difficult. This was because normally speaking, a martial artist would only have a single sort of physique. Dual-attribute martial artists had nearly all vanished!

Even if they did have a dual-attribute body, it wasn’t easy if they wished to fuse Concepts together! But Lin Ming had the Heretical God Seed within him and his inborn fusion compatibility with thunder and fire reached a terrifying degree. Because of this, this impossibility could become a possibility!

If he solely fused the Concept of Fire into his spear, then he would be able to create a move on the same level as Chasing Thunder. But if he fused the power of thunder and fire together, then he naturally would be able to create an even stronger ability!

One just had to recall Thunderfire Annihilation to know this.

But, Thunderfire Annihilation was merely the most barbaric and primitive application of thunderfire. Every time Lin Ming used it, it would consume a massive amount of true essence. In fact, when Thunderfire Annihilation exploded, most of its energy was wasted. This energy turned into shock waves that shot out in all directions. But, the amount that actually struck the enemy was only a small portion of the total strength.

Using Thunderfire Annihilation just a single time would take at least 40 to 50% of Lin Ming’s true essence reserves. This was also the reason that Lin Ming did not dare to rashly use Thunderfire Annihilation. He could only wait until a battle reached its crescendo before using it as a final ending ability. Otherwise, if this attack failed, he would fall into an extremely dangerous and passive position.

But, if he could fuse the Concepts of Thunder and Fire into his spear, then none of that would be a problem.

This was a much higher level application of thunderfire. It was a much more clever and exquisite use than the primitive Thunderfire Annihilation.

If he was able to use this ability, he might even be able to get rid of Thunderfire Annihilation in the future.

Lin Ming looked at the Purple Comet Spear in his hands. This Purple Comet Spear was made from the union of Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo and Sacred Flame Parasol Tree, both of them being peak high-grade earth-step treasures. He had obtained this spear a long time ago, but because of the limits in his cultivation, he hadn't been able to use it to its greatest effect and allow it to shine. But now was the time. With this spear, he would be able to simultaneously increase the power of thunder and fire, fusing them together. It was as if the heavens themselves were helping him to fuse fire and thunder!

"The 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' is a style that was created by the Demon Emperor and it suits him the most. If I use it, then it will be greatly weakened from its true strength. Even so, I have comprehended many truths from the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'. I've understood the power of twisting, the power of traction, the Concept of Space, the Concept of Time, and in addition, because I cultivated the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art', my own cultivation has greatly increased!

"But others' techniques are still their own; they won't completely suit me. I will take the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' as my foundation and combine it with the Heretical God Force, creating a style that belongs to my own road of martial arts!"

When Lin Ming made this decision, he hadn't realized that he had already unconsciously stepped onto the path of being a true martial arts master.

In the Realm of the Gods, since ancient times, those martial artists that could truly approach the peak of martial arts had all carved their own path, creating their own martial arts road. For instance, the Supreme Elder that had first created ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’, had done so by watching the savage battle between a Golden-winged Roc and a True Dragon. Then, using 60 years of closed-door seclusion, he had finally created the elementary form of ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’.

However, since ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’ fell into Lin Ming’s hands, the speed of it was greatly reduced from its full potential. This was due to Lin Ming’s limited comprehension of Concepts as well as this movement technique not being entirely suitable for him.

Emulating others always meant one reached the end of that river. The martial artists of Sky Spill Continent had already defended their legacies and inheritances that their ancestors left behind, regarding them as the most precious and valuable treasures. But without evolution, these legacies would slowly decline, fading away and degenerating into something inferior.

This was also the reason that the legacies of Sky Spill Continent’s Holy Lands usually last 10,000 to 20,000 years.

But, within the Realm of the Gods, the true Holy Lands had inheritances that lasted a million years, or even several million years!

This was because they all had peerless talents of their generation. These were haughty, arrogant, lofty existences that could carve out their own path of martial arts, establishing an even more brilliant future through the foundation laid by their predecessors. Through this, the legacy of these Holy Lands could soar to yet another level!

However, one couldn’t blame the martial artists of Sky Spill Continent for being short-sighted. To establish one’s own martial arts was simply far, far too difficult. Even if one did, creating something on the level of the ‘Divine Acacia Power’ or some other inferior cultivation method, it still would never compare to the resources that the young heroic elites of the Realm of the Gods had, and their unique, advantageous environment.

Originally, with Lin Ming's cultivation and environment of growth, it was nonsense to say he could create his own set of martial arts. But Lin Ming had the Magic Cube, and the Magic Cube had an endless supply of soul fragment memories that contained countless cultivation methods, secret skills, and martial skills!

Using this as the basis and mastering these abilities through his own study, it wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that Lin Ming's conditions were far better than those of any genius from the Realm of the Gods.

If the former Lin Ming was compared to other outstanding young elites of his time, then his only advantage would be in the thickness of his true essence. In terms of strength, cultivation methods, or martial skills, he would be far surpassed by others. By the current Lin Ming was far ahead of any other young talent of his age. Not just that, but it was the difference between the heavens and earth.

The current Lin Ming hadn't thought that far. What he wanted to do now was to fuse the Concepts of Thunder and Fire into his spear, as well as fusing in the two top cultivation methods, the Heretical God Force and Great Desolate Halberd Art.

Such a fusion, even if he was only able to attempt it a bit, would provide endless benefits to the current Lin Ming!

Xiu! Xiu!

In the empty space, spear light burned with boundless flames, as dazzling as the noon sun. The spear shadows all wove together in the same place, forming a gorgeous net of light without a single gap!

In an instant, the flames disappeared. The energy on the spear suddenly changed into the power of thunder. Thick arcs of electricity crawled on the spear like purple snakes, wildly, crazily dancing!

Fire!

Thunder!

These two types of energies swapped back and forth again and again, faster and faster!

The fierce savagery of fire and the extreme speed of thunder. If both of these forces could be fused together, then one could obtain the ultimate striking force and speed; the destructive force of this attack could be imagined!

Lin Ming lost count of the days he practiced for and the numerous times he had exhausted his true essence, putting himself in danger.

Even so, Lin Ming didn't say anything further. He would only take out 100 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals and revolved the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art', wantonly absorbing the rich energy and blood vitality within. In less than an hour, his true essence would be supplemented, but a great deal of the energy within the Blood Demon Crystals would be wasted.

But Lin Ming didn't care. The reason he used so many Blood Demon Crystals in such a disposable manner was all in order to save a few more minutes returning to his peak state, maintaining that faint hint of enlightenment. This could be said to be the cost of practicing this way!

After all, Lin Ming had obtained a great deal of Blood Demon Crystals after killing Hong Zhong. But, these periods of insight were fleeting. If he missed it once, then who knew when the next time would be.

Like this, this crazy practice lasted for several months.

Lin Ming's spear strikes contained an inherent Concept of Thunder and Fire that became increasingly primed. The ground under his feet had already torn apart. The billowing river of fire origin energy had already doubled in width!

Woosh!

A brilliant light cut across the sky like a rising sun. Lin Ming's form disappeared, fully integrating into the spear, becoming a complete, organic whole. He was like a meteor impacting forwards!

In the blink of an eye, dozens of miles passed beneath him. Lin Ming crashed into a mountain peak.

Sii---!

Rock melted. A hole dozens of feet wide appeared in the mountain peak, completely passing through the mountain that was several miles thick. Through this massive hole, one could see crushed stones and dripping hot lava following all the way through.

By fusing the Concept of Fire into this spear strike and pouring all of his will and blood vitality into this strike, he was able to achieve effects on a similar level to Chasing Thunder. Lin Ming decided to name this move Chasing Sun.

What Lin Ming had used a moment ago was not just Chasing Sun, but a strike that also contained a hint of the Concept of Thunder. Although it hadn't fully fused together, it had begun to take shape!

If he continued to improve this, completely integrating the Concepts of Thunder and Fire together, then this would become Lin Ming's mightiest killing move, one that surpassed Thunderfire Annihilation. Not just that, but it wouldn't consume too much true essence, and even rarer, its speed was extremely fast. It was basically impossible to defend against!

Lin Ming put away the Purple Comet Spear. As he looked to his own dantian, he mumbled to himself, "I didn't notice, but my cultivation has already reached the peak of the middle Xiantian realm. I'm only missing a single step before I can enter the late Xiantian realm. In these last months of practice, my benefits have been too great."

Chapter 574 – Late Xiantian Realm

Chapter 574 – Late Xiantian Realm

…

…

…

On Skysplit Tower's fourth floor, in a luxuriously decorated hall, three robed men stood there. They were watching a battle array disc set in front of them. Above the array disc was repeating the entire fight of Lin Ming and Hong Zhong.

These three people were Skysplit Tower's High Lords.

In the last battle, Lin Ming had shown Chasing Thunder, using this skill to instantly kill Hong Zhong. Seeing this scene, even these worldly High Lords sucked in a cold breath.

"Hong Zhong also died. His strength can be ranked in Skysplit Tower's top 30. According to this, Lin Ming's strength must be ranked at least in the mid-twenties. However, I still feel that he is hiding a part of his strength. If this is true, then his strength must rank in the top 20. This young man is simply too terrifying. For him to have this cultivation and strength at this age, he is absolutely an upper ranking Emperor level talent."

Among the three 10-winged High Lords, High Lord Shengong was the one speaking. He was the one who had arranged Hong Zhong's battle against Lin Ming. He had thought that Hong Zhong would be enough to handle him, but he didn't imagine this would be the result instead.

"We've already made our effort. We can't stop him rising anymore. According to Skysplit Tower's own rules, it's impossible for us to arrange someone in the top 10 as his opponent. If so, then we can only wait until Lin Ming develops to the level of the Heavenly Demon Seven

Stars and then lay down our cards with him. He can either submit to us, or he can leave Skysplit Tower! He should be smart enough to know what choice to make."

Skysplit Tower did not stop martial artists if they wanted to leave. In fact, the High Lords very much wanted to see these unstoppable heroes leave. They wanted those young outstanding heroic elites to scurry away as soon as possible. If they stayed in Skysplit Tower, then the High Lords would have trouble sleeping in peace.

"Humph, why would a human pledge themselves to us? His heart and race are completely different from us! This Lin Ming can either leave Skysplit Tower or die!" The one speaking was an Imp High Lord. He was Kai Yang's boss – High Lord Heian.

"Heian, you better not have some dark thoughts. It's fine if you kill on the arena stage, but if you dare to assassinate him then you will be in violation of our bottom line. You must know that there are several old monsters that already became 12-winged Heavenly Demons in Skysplit Tower before leaving. After leaving, they even became Peerless Emperors. These people can ignore the strange curse of the Blood Slaughter Steppes and re-enter this land!

"Among them is the Eightfall War Emperor! He is a human! Initially when he crossed the eighth stage of Life Destruction and reached the Divine Sea, he was also someone who comprehended the Laws of Space and Time. Because of this, his combat strength far surpasses a Supreme Elder on his level; this is why he is titled the Eightfall War Emperor! If he decides to return to the Blood Slaughter Steppes, then let alone us, even Polar Skysplit Tower's Tower Master is nothing in front of him. In fact, even the Steppe Master of the 12 Skysplit Towers is most likely not his match!"

In the Blood Slaughter Steppes, because of a mysterious curse that permeated this land, a martial artists whose strength reached a top level Demon King, or perhaps one or two stages of Life Destruction, would not dare to step foot in the Blood Slaughter Steppes. This was because they feared dying to this curse.

There was no need to mention Demon Emperors or Divine Sea masters. If they came to the Blood Slaughter Steppes, then they would perish without a doubt.

But, there was a single exception. This was a martial artist that became a 12-winged Heavenly Demon within the Blood Slaughter Steppes. These individuals seemed to have obtained the recognition of the mystical strength hidden within the Blood Slaughter Steppes, and thus would have the qualifications to re-enter the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

These past years, Skysplit Tower had been working hard to stop talents from developing. Once a martial artist became an 8-winged Heavenly Demon, they would start paying attention to them. They could either choose to submit, or choose to leave. There was no third choice!

If they chose to submit, then there was a small hope they could become a 10-winged Heavenly Demon. For them, 10 wings were already the limit. To think of gaining 12 wings was nothing but the nonsensical talk of a moron.

Of course, Skysplit Tower also had its bottom line. Off of the stage, they would not secretly assassinate martial artists. They would also not arrange a fatal battle for martial artists.

This was because they feared offending the most ancient large sects and Holy Lands. To these great powers, the machinations of Skysplit Tower were no secret.

For these many years, there were few Holy Lands that would make things difficult for Skysplit Tower. They would send their young disciples to Skysplit Tower in order to gain experience, and once they became an 8-winged Heavenly Demon, or even a 10-winged Heavenly Demon, then these Holy Lands would summon their disciples to depart. This way, everyone knew their role and co-existed in relative harmony.

As for their disciples, if they died in the normal process of adventuring, then they could only be considered as too mediocre. These Holy Lands would not do something as boring or troublesome as taking revenge upon Skysplit Tower or their killers. After all, Skysplit Tower was a battlefield. Life and death here all depended on one’s own abilities. Since they came to the Blood Slaughter Steppes, then they naturally must be mentally prepared for their death.

As the Eightfall War Emperor was mentioned, High Lord Heian's complexion changed. He was just a mere 10-winged Heavenly Demon. In front of the illustrious Eightfall War Emperor, he was nothing more than an ant. "What are you trying to say, Shengong? Do you think that this boy is related to the Eightfall War Emperor?"

"I didn't say that, but… he and the Eightfall War Emperor are both upper Emperor level talents, and they both comprehended the Laws of Space and Time. This made me think they might be associated with each other. Not just that, but don't you think that the final move he used to kill Hong Zhong was extremely ingenious? It seemed like it was created just for Lin Ming. This sort of ability is impossible for Lin Ming to self-create. If so, then he must have an Emperor level powerhouse working behind the scenes for him. I simply cannot believe that there would be such a genius in this world."

High Lord Shengong languidly said. Normally, only a self-created style or tailored skill was able to display the strongest power. Shengong didn't think that Lin Ming was able to create his own techniques. This move was definitely tailored for him by someone else.

High Lord Heian quietened. At this time, High Lord Shengong said again, "When Lin Ming was on the second floor, I investigated and discovered that he rented the Eightfall War Emperor's battle array disc."

If Lin Ming was really a disciple of the Eightfall War Emperor, then it stood to reason that he didn't need to see the Eightfall War Emperor's battle array disc. There was one possibility, and that was that Lin Ming wanted to see his master's past glorious exploits. However, this still didn't explain anything.

"I understand." High Lord Heian was silent for a moment before he slowly said, "That being the case, then I shall let him grow. But, when he becomes an 8-winged Heavenly Demon, he must leave. Otherwise, I will use the rules of Skysplit Tower to kill him! This, too, wouldn't be difficult. This way, even if he's related to the Eightfall War Emperor, he still wouldn't be able to say anything!"

………

………

Practice passed without sense of time. In the practice area of the Concept of Fire, time passed a day at a time. Without knowing it, Lin Ming's nineteenth birthday had passed.

His cultivation was approaching the breaking point for the late Xiantian realm more and more. As for fusing the Concept of Fire and the Concept of Thunder, that also continued to constantly improve.

"I wonder how long I've stayed in the Concept of Fire's practice area for. My comprehension of the Concept of Fire is profound enough, but now, I feel that my comprehension of the Concept of Thunder is lacking, which is causing a problem with fusing these two Concepts… I should go back to the Concept of Thunder practice area and take a look. Perhaps I might be able to make a breakthrough there."

As Lin Ming thought this, he left the Concept of Fire practice area and arrived at the practice area registration office.

In the practice area registration office, the middle-aged man glanced at Lin Ming and leisurely said, "Lin Ming, you've already stayed at the Concept of Fire practice area for 95 days! Currently, you owe a match. If you continue to go to the practice area, then if you stay in for another 25 days or so, then you will accumulate another match you have to finish. At that time, you'll have to complete two matches in a row. Think about this carefully!"

"I understand. I choose to continue practicing!"

"Hehe, you've got guts, boy." The middle-aged man took out a token to enter the Concept of Thunder practice area and passed it to Lin Ming. "One slaughter point and 20 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals every 10 days. You still have 15 slaughter points. You can practice for another three months, but afterwards you must come out."

Lin Ming was secretly dumbfounded. When he was on the second floor he had obtained 40 slaughter points, and after killing Hong Zhong, he gained another 10 for a total of 50 slaughter points.

These 50 slaughter points, when he had cultivated on the third floor for half a year he had spent some of them. After reaching the third floor and practicing for over five months in the Concept practice areas, he had spent more and more.

Currently, he only had 15 left over.

He had earned a great deal of slaughter points but still felt stretched. If so, then the situation of others could be imagined. If others drifted along in Skysplit Tower's third floor and only fought matches with friends without killing each other, then there was simply no point in staying at Skysplit Tower.

This was because if one were defeated just once, then their winning streak would be ruined and they would also lose a great portion of their Heavenly Demon Tattoo. If this was so, then it would just be better to leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes and go adventuring outside. If one didn't have slaughter points within Skysplit Tower, then the resources available were useless. This was also a reason why Muk Gu was not willing to sacrifice any slaughter points.

Lin Ming took out 100 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals from his spatial ring and pushed them towards the middle-aged man. This was enough to schedule a practice area for 50 days. After killing others and taking their wealth, Lin Ming did not lack Blood Demon Crystals.

After an incense stick of time, Lin Ming arrived at the Concept of Thunder practice area yet again.

This was a purple dream-like space. Compared to the practice area for the Concept of Fire, the scenery here was much softer and more beautiful.

Countless large and small mountains floated in the air. Different sorts of spiritual plants bloomed through. Underneath the endless vault of the sky, the whimsical blue river of lights seemed incomparably dazzling.

However, behind this beauty was violent and brutal thunder origin energy. That peaceful river of blue lights was actually purely composed of thunder origin energy.

Lin Ming did not take out his spear nor did he attempt to fuse concepts. Instead, with his heart still and his arms opened wide, he hung in the air. His true essence as lead, he stirred the crazy thunder origin energy between the heavens and earth. This energy fell onto Lin Ming's body in torrents without any breaks.

Because he hadn't cut his hair for the last year and a half, Lin Ming's hair hung down to his waist, recklessly dancing in the air under this savage thunderstorm, taking on a bluish-purple color.

At this moment, Lin Ming put aside all distractions. In his heart, he realized the power of thunder; this was his attempt to finally fuse the Concepts of Thunder and Fire.

But now, within Lin Ming's dantian, the true essence cyclone there also constantly shrank. After a dreamless passage of days, he was finally making that last step past the middle Xiantian realm, striding into the late Xiantian realm.

In many cases, when one went into closed-door seclusion to break through to the next realm, they would often encounter bottlenecks. But unconsciously, through their meditations and all the experiences that they accumulated through time, and all the battles they fought, this would allow them to inadvertently break through their shackles and step into the next stage of their cultivation.

This was the reason why so many martial artists went out to adventure, fight, and seek their own lucky chances.

The true essence cyclone compressed. After reaching the late Xiantian realm, his fusion of the Concepts of Thunder and Fire had also reached the Large Success stage. During this time that Lin Ming went into closed-door seclusion, his strength had risen greatly.

Chapter 575 – Termination Emblem

Chapter 575 – Termination Emblem

…

…

…

One month later, it had been a total of half a year since Lin Ming entered the third floor of Skysplit Tower.

Within the open space of the Concept of Thunder practice area, a young man stood there. His upper chest was naked, and his long hair hung down to his waist. A faint imposing aura emanated from between his eyebrows, but as he opened his eyes, a burst of light flashed within them like a bolt of thunder.

Between his eyebrows was a faint fire mark. It seemed like a scar, but as one stared at it, it made one feel apprehensive, as if some mysterious force was gripping them.

As soon as the middle-aged man in charge of the registration office saw Lin Ming come in, his heart inexplicably jumped.

“My practice has ended. Please register it.” Lin Ming said.

“Oh… okay, good.” The middle-aged man responded as he quickly took out a jade slip. He verified the registration and then refunded Lin Ming’s deposit. As one of the deacons of Skysplit Tower, this middle-aged man’s cultivation was at the late Houtian realm. But, as he came into contact with Lin Ming, he strangely felt a great pressure envelop him.

“This is a return of 40 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals.”

Lin Ming glanced over and received them.

"Well… there's also another matter… about your recent match schedule." The middle-aged man took out another jade slip and carefully handed it to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming sunk his sense inside. Inside this jade slip was material on his opponents. One was arranged two months ago, and another was more recent.

Of the two people, one's strength was ranked 17, and another was ranked 12.

"Yan Hu, peak six-winged Heavenly Demon, 122 win winning streak."

"Ming Sun, peak six-winged Heavenly Demon, 133 win winning streak."

Lin Ming thought about these two. According to the rules of Skysplit Tower, he would have to accept these two matches continuously.

Both of them were martial artists that had managed to accumulate a win streak over 100. Of course, in Skysplit Tower, when one killed another person they gained at least a 10 win winning streak, otherwise it would be impossible to win 100 victories on the field.

The middle-aged man looked at Lin Ming and said in a low voice, "Lord Lin, if you can kill a martial artist with a 100 win winning streak, you will obtain the Termination Emblem."

Because of the change in Lin Ming's temperament and aura, this middle-aged man had unconsciously become respectful of Lin Ming. Compared to the first time he had seen Lin Ming, it was as if he were a completely different person.

"Oh? Is this how one earns the Termination Emblem?"

When Lin Ming was on the first floor, he had already heard about the Termination Emblem. Among the possible emblems one could obtain, it gave one of the higher rewards.

Lin Ming's heart stirred. At this time, he really did need slaughter points. "How many slaughter points will I receive for the Termination Emblem?"

“50 slaughter points. In addition, after obtaining the Termination Emblem you will receive a higher authority, allowing you to access more practice areas within Skysplit Tower.”

“Mm?” Lin Ming’s eyes brightened. “What other practice areas are there in Skysplit Tower?”

“This… when Lord Lin obtains the Termination Emblem then you will be made known. As for now, it’s inconvenient for me to tell you, so I’ll have to excuse myself.”

“Mm, I understand.” Lin Ming nodded. As for obtaining this Termination Emblem, he never doubted himself. “What time are my matches?”

“Tomorrow. They will both be in the same area. I wish Lord Lin good luck.”

………………

From the first floor to the third, every floor became increasingly lonely and deserted the further up one went.

On the first floor, the arena that could hold tens of thousands of people was nearly full every day. There were cheers, endless clamoring, shouts, cries, and people acting crazy everywhere.

As long as one paid a medium-grade Blood Demon Crystal then they would be able to enter the first floor. Many of these individuals were not challengers or even young elites. They had gathered there purely because they loved to see these killing games.

Thus, it could be said that the martial arena of the first floor was a never ending slaughter fest.

As for the second floor’s martial arena, it could only hold around 8000 people. The audience was nearly all challengers and they were much more restrained than those people on the first floor. Often they would peacefully watch the match – they wouldn't be crazily shouting.

As for the third floor, it was even lonelier. The martial arena could only hold a mere few thousand people. The audience every day amounted to several dozen individuals. In a single day there would often only be a few matches, so most of the time the martial arena of the third floor was unoccupied.

Today however, the martial arena of the third floor had a rare surprise breakout of just over 100 people. It had to be known that the third floor only had around 300 to 400 challengers. This meant that nearly a third of the martial artists of the third floor had arrived at the martial arena. There were many among them that had even ended their closed-door cultivation early in order to hurry here.

Normally, only someone as famous as the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars or an equally renowned figure would arouse such interest in a match.

But, the one who walked onstage today was only a single human, Lin Ming.

Although Lin Ming was a remarkably outstanding talent, he was still a newcomer; there weren't many people that cared much for him. But during his first match he had reversed everyone's expectations and killed Hong Zhong, someone who was ranked around 30th to 40th on the third floor. The talent he revealed had startled and frightened everyone present.

For a newcomer to achieve this degree of success was truly abnormal. Thus, Lin Ming had naturally come into everyone's attention. Especially today! He would continuously fight in two matches without a break!

But Lin Ming's two opponents, Yan Hu and Ming Sun, were not average challengers. They were both ranked in the top 20 of Skysplit Tower's third floor.

Today, there were even many top 10 masters of the third floor that had come. Without doubt, Lin Ming would inevitably become a powerful rival of theirs. They naturally had to be cautious and observe him.

Muk Gu was also among the group. The humans on the third floor did not surpass two digits in number. Muk Gu seemed very ordinary and plain as he mixed in the crowd.

As Muk Gu saw Lin Ming calmly appear on the edge of the arena stage, he didn't know why but he felt his mind jump. He felt that he understood Lin Ming less and less. Looking back to the first time that he met Lin Ming on the outer borders of the Blood Slaughter Steppes and had even threatened him somewhat, he felt that his actions were simply laughable.

But at that time, Lin Ming absolutely hadn't been as strong as he was right now. The speed of his progress was terrifying. Muk Gu could not help but marvel at this fact.

"First match, Lin Ming against Yan Hu!"

The referee loudly announced on the arena stage.

Yan Hu was a Goliath; he was even a head higher than Xue Man. To everyone, he was simply like a giant iron tower.

His weapon was a great sledgehammer. Its weight was almost 100,000 jins.

With a loud roar, Yan Hu leapt onto the arena stage. The entire floor shook from the impact!

Yan Hu did not have even the slightest bit of contempt for Lin Ming. Such a roar seemed like the rude behavior of a barbarian, but it was in fact a type of Goliath war roar martial skill. It was used to enhance one's own aura and combat strength.

"Yan Hu is completely serious. He has taken Lin Ming as a great enemy."

"This is normal. Lin Ming displayed a strength equal to that of a top 30 ranked challenger, but who knows how much strength he's still hiding. Perhaps Yan Hu will lose!" A challenger said, very sure of himself. Of the challengers on the third floor, none of them dared to look down on Lin Ming anymore. Lin Ming was probably in his early twenties and yet he already had this degree of strength. In a few more decades, he would be even more terrifying.

"Don't underestimate Yan Hu either. Yan Hu isn't too bad; his strength can probably be ranked 17th or 18th. Those martial artists that can enter the third floor of Skysplit Tower and reach the top 20 are not ordinary geniuses of their generation. Not just that, but Yan Hu excels most at understanding the esoteric strength of the earth. His strong points lay in his defensive ability. Lin Ming's final move is probably that Chasing Thunder. It's an attack with a speed and striking force that reach the limit. Here, it will be the sharpest lance against the hardest shield. It's still too early to judge just who will win. This will be a fierce match between two equal opponents!"

....

Lin Ming held his spear, the tip pointed towards where Yan Hu stood. Even though he merely stood there, the aura he gave off was like that of a peerless treasure spear. This spear could pierce through all, unstoppable and invincible!

As Lin Ming reached this degree, his imposing aura was no longer a field of pressure. Instead, it could manifest into essence. Lin Ming's aura was like that of a spear piercing through your chest, incomparably sharp!

As for Yan Hu's aura, it was like a heavy and solemn mountain. As their auras clashed, one could clearly hear the sound of Yan Hu's aura nearly being pierced through. An invisible pressure pushed down on Yan Hu's body. His face was grim and dignified; he had come into a fatal situation.

"I will admit that you are very strong, but these years, the number of powerhouses of the third floor that have died by my hands has reached the double digits! Let me show you my ultimate combat strength!"

As Yan Hu spoke here he exploded in a roar. All of the muscles on his body began to suddenly rise, his veins twisting like blue worms. Just like the Fey had their Fey King Battle

Body, the Goliaths could also draw strength from their bloodline and use this to their advantage, a unique form of fighting that only they had.

As Yan Hu entered into his battle form, his aura soared into the sky, directly pushing back Lin Ming's sharp and imposing aura.

"The Meaning of Earth – Absolute Defense!"

Earth-attribute demon essence gathered around Yan Hu, turning into thick waves of soil, constantly rolling and sliding, giving off an oppressive sense.

"Hehe, in terms of strength, I can only be ranked 17th or 18th on the third floor. But in terms of defensive power, I am confident I will not lose to anyone! While you spent your time closed up comprehending your Concepts, I did not idle around. I too spent an entire three months perceiving the Concept of Earth and spent a total of nine slaughter points! With this price, my comprehension of the Concept of Earth went up yet another step, and my defensive abilities have absolutely reached the stage of Large Success! With my speed and response time, I know that it's impossible for me to dodge that move of yours. But if I can't then I'll just block it, how hard could that be?"

Yan Hu already knew of Lin Ming's killer move – Chasing Thunder. With that advantage, he had planned from the very start to not attack. Instead, he would spend everything on his defense. In terms of defensive ability, the Concept of Earth was the absolute mightiest amongst the five elements.

"Mm? This so-called absolute defense seems to be..." In the arena, a top 10 rankings martial artist's eyes brightened. Yan Hu's defense was not merely an accumulation of earth origin energy, but rather it contained very calm and steady fluctuations; this was definitely the application of the Law of Earth. If he wasn't wrong, then these fluctuations had the ability to mollify attacks.

"It seems that Yan Hu has really been working hard on the Concept of Earth these past months to prepare! He is quite smart! He knows well enough that his speed cannot compare with Lin Ming's, so he isn't even thinking of dodging. Instead, with his several month-long practice, he plans to use his absolute defensive ability to meet Lin Ming in a head-on attack."

"Mm. Yan Hu's defensive ability can't be disregarded. I don't know whether or not Lin Ming's Chasing Thunder can break apart this defense, but if he can't then he'll be in a dangerous situation. It's true that Lin Ming's Chasing Thunder is powerful, but this sort of mighty killing move has to consume a great deal of strength. On the other hand, Han Yu's absolute defense doesn't use much at all. If Lin Ming continuously uses Chasing Thunder but can't break open this defense, then he will fall into a passive position because of his overconsumption of true essence. Finally, Yan Hu will be the one to counterattack!"

The martial artists in the arena were able to quickly guess just what Yan Hu's plan was. This tactic was indeed intelligent. Most people hadn't thought Yan Hu would win, but they also didn't think he would make such a significant breakthrough in his absolute defense. Now, it seemed as if it would be hard to judge just who would win this fight.

Chapter 576 – Crush

Chapter 576 – Crush

…

…

…

On the martial arena, facing these roiling brown waves of earth in the air, Lin Ming shook his hand, the Purple Comet Spear's point trembling. "You want to use your defense to block my attack? How interesting! You seem to have confidence in your defensive ability. Is it known as the absolute defense?"

"Humph! Why don't you test whether or not it is an absolute defense? Stop trying to play mind tricks and take my move – Beast Trapping Cage!"

Yan Hu pounded down the sledgehammer in his hands. A wave of earth-attribute true essence rose up in all directions, trapping Lin Ming within and limiting his ability to dodge.

"Say hi to my hammer!"

Yan Hu was like a massive bear as he jumped up. With both his hands gripped on his sledgehammer, he smashed down with all his might. Yan Hu did not excel at speed, thus he trapped Lin Ming into this Beast Trapping Cage in order to use his strongest strike. This move also contained the Concept of Earth. Combined with Yan Hu's terrifying strength and the massive weight of the hammer, even a mountain would be smashed apart by him!

"The Concept of Earth, that's so rarely seen!" Normally, the Goliaths and Giant Demons' demon essence did not have this attribute. But, Yan Hu was unexpectedly skilled in the Concept of Earth; this was indeed rare.

Lin Ming flourished the Purple Comet Spear and opened 60% of the Heretical God Force. Above the Purple Comet Spear, thick arcs of electricity violently turned like a dance of purple snakes.

Chasing Thunder!

Woosh!

Lin Ming's figure instantly vanished. After making significant progress in the Concept of Thunder, Lin Ming's Chasing Thunder was far different from the time that he had used it to kill Hong Zhong.

With a 'kacha', the Beast Trapping Cage instantly exploded from within. Lin Ming attack continued unabated. The spear was like a bolt of lightning as it pierced towards Yan Hu!

This speed was far too extreme. Yan Hu's sledgehammer was only midway in the air; to use his weapon to block Lin Ming's attack was naturally impossible.

Yan Hu's pupils shrank. Absolute Defense!

Browned waves of energy fiercely swept into the air, forming a thick barrier in front of Yan Hu.

Kacha!

Chasing Thunder's dazzling radiance pierced through the barrier. The sharp spear light passed through layers and layers of earth origin energy, weakening along the way until only a tiny wisp of it pricked Yan Hu's body.

With an explosive sound, the barrier of earth origin energy shattered in half. Yan Hu was like a massive rubber ball that was kicked backwards!

Bang!

Yan Hu fell onto the ground. His organs were injured, and the blood in his body tumbled, his face flushing red.

“it was just a tiny wisp of spear light yet it’s powerful to this extent?” Yan Hu jumped up from the ground, his heart shaken. After this wisp of spear light entered his body, it began to ruthlessly destroy his meridians and organs. Not just that, but it had an endlessly growing property to it. It was only with great difficulty that he was able to suppress it.

However, he had finally been able to block that strike!

Yan Hu breathed heavily. He reinforced the absolute defense around his body and looked at Lin Ming.

If he could defend against Chasing Thunder, then that meant he had the ability to win this battle.

If Lin Ming could not break his defense, he was in an invulnerable position!

“Yan Hu’s defense is truly fierce. Lin Ming’s strike was even more potent than when he fought against Hong Zhong. But, it was still blocked by Yan Hu. The earth-attribute demon essence fluctuations in that shield are ingeniously done. It used multiple layers in order to weaken Lin Ming’s attack.”

The audience all had extraordinary eyesight. They had seen the mystery behind what just happened.

“Mm. Yan Hu’s utilization of the Concept of Earth is excellent. In defense, it really does need the Concept of Earth. If it were any other Concept, then they would have been defeated by that strike.”

“I don’t know if Lin Ming can use Chasing Thunder multiple times or whether he has other master moves. A technique like Chasing Thunder seems like it is bound to cause a great burden on one’s body and true essence reserves. If Lin Ming uses that skill two or three times but still can’t break through Yan Hu’s defense, then he will be in danger.”

Above the martial stage, Yan Hu had already stood up. Waves upon waves of yellow earth covered him as he confronted Lin Ming from a distance.

"If you have any other moves, then use them. I know that you are still hiding some finishing moves in your hand, and I will follow every one of them! If you keep hiding them, then you won't have a chance to use any of them!" Yan Hu suddenly yelled at Lin Ming, saying that he could defend against any of Lin Ming's hidden killer moves. The truth was that he wasn't too sure, but as long as he could block all of these attacks, then victory was his! If he couldn't block them, then nothing but death awaited him!

"Other moves?" Lin Ming faintly smiled. "I don't need to. Dealing with you, just this move is enough!"

His mind touched upon the Heretical God Seed. Lin Ming's Heretical God Force opened to 80%!

Chasing Thunder!

Before Yan Hu had a chance to respond, Lin Ming became one with his spear, turning into a dazzling beam of light!

A purple flash of light pierced through space. It was like a god throwing down a purple spear!

Kacha!

This strike was even more violent than the one before it. The absolute defense of earth was shattered by this lightning, causing all of the origin energy fluctuations to collapse and be destroyed. Yan Hu gave a pitiful cry as he flew backwards. More spear lights rushed into his body, causing him to shake and spit out a mouthful of blood.

Whilst Yan Hu's body was still high in the air, Lin Ming had instantly appeared on the other end of the martial arena stage!

This sudden change caused everyone present to widen their eyes. However, they too didn’t have enough time to respond. Lin Ming spun his spear and swiveled around.

Heretical God Force – 100%!

Chasing Thunder!

With this third Chasing Thunder, Lin Ming turned into a bright ray of light again. Spear light spread through the entire martial arena!

Bang!

The absolute defense around Yan Hu broke apart like a disintegrating rock, completely ruptured! Blood rained in the air, and Yan Hu fell onto the ground with a loud plop like bag of rotten meat.

The third spear light had completely penetrated his body. All of Yan Hu’s organs were twisted and destroyed by the power of thunder – he died on the spot.

Coming to Skysplit Tower’s third floor, it was necessary for everyone to be mindful of their own death. People here constantly killed each other. Everyone had chosen the path of death.

Over.

Lin Ming stood in the center of the arena stage. He recovered all of the leftover compressed true essence back into the Heretical God Seed and completely restrained his aura. After the violent battle a moment ago, he was now calm. It didn’t seem as if he had consumed too much energy.

All of the martial artists that were discussing the match were stunned silent. They looked at Lin Ming, dumbfounded, without a single word to say.

He had used a total of three consecutive Chasing Thunders!

Every strike was stronger than the last! Especially the last two. They had chained together without end. The first pierce and then the second, all of that happened in less than the blink of an eye!

“How can it be like this… that’s so… unreasonable. This move reaches the extreme in speed, and yet he can use it whenever he wants. Does it not use true essence?”

A martial artist muttered. In his view, the stronger a move was, the faster a strike was, the more energy it should consume. Accelerating to the limit of speed should definitely place a great burden on one’s muscles and skeletons, as well as requiring a massive amount of true essence. But, Lin Ming seemed as if he could use this move as many times as he wanted too. After he used it, he still remained so calm, as if that fight hadn’t even happened.

“The force is so great yet the energy it requires is so little. He can actually use it continuously… this Chasing Thunder is too terrifying!”

“You’re wrong. It isn’t that this move doesn’t require much energy, but instead that Lin Ming’s bodily strength is high and is able to withstand such an extreme speed. At the same time, his endurance and total true essence quantity is alarming. All of these factors together are why he can use this attack like this. If it were you or me instead of him, then after using that move several times our body wouldn’t be able to withstand it!”

It wasn’t known who spoke this, but the atmosphere of the arena fell silent yet again.

Strength, speed, striking power, all of these were abnormal. Not just that, but his defensive power was also freakish. Combined with his endurance and ability to recover, this person simply didn’t have a weakness!

“His strength is close to, or perhaps it can even enter the top 10 ranks on the third floor. Yan Hu wasn’t even able to force out his full strength!”

On the third floor, after reaching the top 10, the strength of the challengers rose yet another level. Especially the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, their strength went even further. Each and every one of them was a top master that was looked up at and admired by others.

"If this continues then Lin Ming will easily become one of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars!" A martial artist said with envy.

On Skysplit Tower's third floor, a Heavenly Demon Seven Star was the symbol of not only strength, but also wealth.

When one reached the level of a Heavenly Demon Seven Star, they would no longer need to worry about having to fight in a match every two months. Not just that, but they received a fixed amount of slaughter points every month. If they subordinated themselves to a High Lord, not only would they be able to receive more slaughter points, but they could use practice areas at high discounts. Naturally, many martial artists were envious of these benefits, but the standards for being chosen were too high. In order to be chosen, one had to have either high strength or amazing talent. Otherwise, it was too difficult to find a High Lord's favor.

"Lin Ming, victorious! Congratulations Lord Lin, you have obtained the Termination Emblem!" The black-clothed referee said to Lin Ming in an increasingly respectful tone. "For ending his winning streak, you have obtained 12 slaughter points. From a 65 win streak, you have risen to 92, and the reward for that is another three slaughter points. The Termination Emblem's reward is 50 slaughter points, for a total of 65 slaughter points!"

Gaining 65 slaughter points through a single match could be called suddenly becoming wealthy overnight. Of course, this was mainly because of the Termination Emblem's contribution. The slaughter points for this emblem could only be rewarded a single time. Next time, there wouldn't be any.

"I understand." Lin Ming nodded, and then took off Yan Hu's spatial ring. He casually put out a hand and the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder flew into Yan Hu's corpse, taking a random route before bursting out in a fog of blood where a Blood Drinking Seal slowly condensed.

With Lin Ming's current level, he no longer needed to use the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'. To Lin Ming, the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' was now a cultivation method. Of course, he referenced the style of this cultivation method in order to achieve a greater mastery of different skills through it.

Lin Ming looked at the Blood Drinking Seal in front of him and pondered for a moment. "If I can use the fusion of the Concepts of Thunder and Fire as a basis and then combine it with the Blood Drinking Seals, and further fuse that into my spear, just what would that be like…"

This idea instantly crossed Lin Ming's mind. But in his current state, it was far too difficult to do this. Lin Ming was already barely able to fuse the Concepts of Thunder and Fire.

At this moment, a massive amount of infernal energy from Yan Hu's body rushed into Lin Ming. After passing through multiple baptisms of infernal energy, Lin Ming had already completely adapted, and no longer needed to revolve the Samsara martial intent to resist it. Instead, he could rely solely on his stubborn consciousness.

Hisssss…………

On Lin Ming's arm, the Heavenly Demon Tattoo seemed to come to life. The vicious-looking demon's expression became increasingly clear as the fourth pair of wings slowly formed. Lin Ming began to approach the level of an eight-winged Heavenly Demon more and more.

He was now a late six-winged Heavenly Demon, close to the peak. If this continued, then he would only need to complete two or three more matches before becoming an eight-winged Heavenly Demon.

And, eight-winged Heavenly Demons were all top 10 strengths on the third floor.

"Then, onto the second match! Lin Ming against Ming Sun!"

As the referee loudly announced this, everyone’s eyes shifted towards Ming Sun. Ming Sun was a Fey and also a peak six-winged Heavenly Demon. His winning streak was at 133. His strength was ranked twelfth on the entire third floor!

Suddenly, Ming Sun’s expression turned ugly.

Chapter 577 – 87 Slaughter Points

Chapter 577 – 87 Slaughter Points

…

…

…

Fighting Lin Ming was a declaration handed down by Skysplit Tower, there was no way to refuse.

Lin Ming had to face continuous matches, so Ming Sun was the second to go out. He thought that he had hit the jackpot and he would be able to easily defeat Lin Ming, but now it seemed as if he had run out of luck.

If Lin Ming only had that single Chasing Thunder, then Ming Sun was confident he could deal with it. But with Lin Ming's current combat state, it seemed that Chasing Thunder was only a minor ability of his, otherwise, he wouldn't have used it as soon as he came onstage. He could even do so three times without losing his breath.

Ming Sun had deep suspicions that when Lin Ming had fought Yan Hu, he hadn't even used half of his strength.

If that were so, then his chance of winning this fight was at most 10 to 20%!

"Lord Ming Sun, please enter the stage!" The referee called out as he saw Ming Sun morosely sitting in the stands without response.

The other martial artists in the stands were all looking at Ming Sun. Some were sympathetic, some were gloating, and there were even some that thought Ming Sun would defeat Lin Ming.

"I understand."

Ming Sun's voice was gloomy as he slowly trod onto the arena stage.

"If you're ready, then start." The referee said as he stepped off of the stage.

Lin Ming held the Purple Comet Spear, his entire body revolving with true essence. At this moment, Ming Sun's true essence sound transmission sounded out in his ears.

"Lin Ming! I do not want to fight you, I'll admit defeat!"

"Mm?" Lin Ming was surprised. This fellow surrendered before the battle began?

On Skysplit Tower's third floor, losing meant having your hard earned winning streak reset. Also, over half of the Heavenly Demon Tattoo would dissipate. If one wanted to recondense it, it would be extremely difficult. This was because martial artists' rankings were already determined ahead of time. If one had to continuously fight opponents on the same level, then continuously winning would be far too difficult!

Ming Sun continued his true essence sound transmission, saying, "I admit that my chances of defeating you aren't more than 10 to 20%. I don't want to die here, so, I admit defeat in this match. As long as you don't kill me, I will give you the following conditions for letting me go. I'll propose a gamble with you and bet 10 slaughter points. 10 slaughter points is all I have left."

In Skysplit Tower, making a bet was another method of obtaining slaughter points. As long as both parties agreed, then one could start a gambling match. On the second floor, when Lan Xing fought Huyan Luo, they had also made gambling bet for two slaughter points. Finally, Lan Xing was the victor.

"You mean you want to gift me 10 slaughter points?" Lin Ming was surprised. On the third floor, slaughter points were everything. Without slaughter points, it was impossible to make use of the vast resources available.

“Yes. If you kill me, then you can accumulate up to a 100 win streak, but if you don’t kill me, then you’ll have to wait until your next match to reach a 100 win streak. These 10 slaughter points are compensation for that. After I’m defeated this time, I no longer want to stay in Skysplit Tower. Wanting to make a fresh start and gather infernal energy and a winning streak is next to impossible. Since I’m leaving Skysplit Tower, these slaughter points are useless. I’ll give them to you.”

Ming Sun sighed as he spoke with self-deprecation. He had already given birth to this thought half a year ago. But he knew that if he left like this, he would never become a Fey Emperor in the future. Thus, he had stuck it out until today, when he could do so no longer.

Facing Lin Ming, his chance of winning was simply too small. Becoming a Fey Emperor was without a doubt an enticing dream, but it wasn’t worth it to trade his life for something like that.

Then, he would rather take this opportunity to leave Skysplit Tower. Although he ultimately failed to achieve anything, at least he was able to leave alive. Compared to all those that perished here and had their ashes sprinkled off the cliffs, this was a much happier and gratifying result.

“Sure.” Lin Ming was not a bloodthirsty individual, much less this condition was also very good for him. He readily agreed.

………….

From the start of the gambling match to the admission of defeat, Lin Ming and Ming Sun’s match was an unexpected surprise.

As Ming Sun left the stage, no one in the audience mocked him nor did anyone jeer.

There was only a hint of sadness and cynicism.

Ming Sun's talent was situated somewhere between the Saint level and Emperor level. This was all thanks to being lifted up by Skysplit Tower. Originally, Ming Sun had been nothing but an ordinary Saint level talent.

If he left, then that was equal to giving up his path to becoming an Emperor. In a way, perhaps this was also a relief.

However, not every martial artist could calmly leave in the same manner, especially those haughty and arrogant young elites of Skysplit Tower. The temptation of becoming an Emperor was far too great. From a King to an Emperor, one's lifespan would increase tenfold. Not to mention their own increase in power, but they could also establish their own Holy Land and set down a legacy that would last 10,000 years. Their name would last for hundreds of generations.

However, only out of the ashes of millions was a true Emperor born. No one knew just how many heroic youths had died in battle, their ashes scattered over the cliffs, their lives becoming the stones that paved the road for other martial artists.

Even if one was an Emperor level talent, this was also true.

To be like Ming Sun and be able to calmly leave Skysplit Tower, there weren't many able to do so.

This match thus ended in a surprising manner. At the end, Lin Ming obtained a total of 12 slaughter points from ending Ming Sun's winning streak as well as another 10 from the gambling match. This was a total of 22 as well as the 65 from before.

In a single fell swoop, Lin Ming had gained a total of 87 slaughter points. This was enough to use for a very, very long time.

Not only that, but after Ming Sun's defeat, a great portion of the infernal energy on his body merged into Lin Ming. This caused Lin Ming to instantly climb to the peak of a six-winged Heavenly Demon. He wasn't too far away from becoming an eight-winged Heavenly Demon.

"Lin Ming's rise is unstoppable. In the next match, he'll probably have to face the top 10 rankers of the third floor. That is simply another world altogether."

"Mm... the martial artists in the top 10 enjoy completely different resources. They are far stronger than the martial artists below them."

On the third floor, the higher a martial artist was ranked, the more resources they could enjoy and the higher authority they would have. There was simply too great a gap between every rank. When one reached the level of a Heavenly Demon Seven Star, then they could even go to more mysterious places such as the legendary Road of Emperor.

If one reached the end of the Road of Emperor, they would become an Emperor level powerhouse. A practice area like this was beyond anyone's imagination. The very thought of what could happen if one could practice for a year or so in the Road of Emperor was terrifying beyond belief.

"Young Hero Lin Ming! Please stay!"

As Lin Ming was about to exit the martial arena, he heard a deep bass voice sound in his ears.

As he turned around to look, he saw that the one who called out to him was a Giant Demon martial artist. He was a tad over 10 feet tall, and he carried a large greatsword on his back. Beside the Giant Demon was a little girl whose height just reached his midsection. She had delicate and tiny features, and her long ears and scales at the corners of her eyes showed she was a Fey.

The height difference between the two standing together was great, but it inexplicably gave off a very matching feeling.

"Do you have business with me?"

Lin Ming looked at the two. They seemed ordinary, no different from commoners, but the truth was that their aura was restrained deeply within them. This was a similar realm to returning to one's own origin, manifested to the pinnacle.

Trying to estimate their strength made one feel they were unfathomable.

"I am Da Gu. Perhaps you would like to go to a teahouse for a chat?" The Giant Demon said with a cheerful smile.

Lin Ming was startled.

So this person was Da Gu. Da Gu was one of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. Lin Ming had already heard his name as early as when he was still at Sun Flood City. He was known as an existence that could shake Skysplit Tower. Originally, Lin Ming thought that Da Gu was a bloodthirsty beast of his generation, but seeing this Da Gu in front of him, while he did have a faint murderous aura, this Da Gu carried no hostility towards him at all.

It had to be known that within Skysplit Tower, the Giant Demons had absolutely zero goodwill towards humans. From the very time that Gu Yue had tried to kill Lin Ming, this applied to Xing Tian and Hong Zhong afterwards.

This was also reasonable. Humanity and the Giant Demons had competed for resources on the Holy Demon Continent for far too long. The two races would often wage war and start extended campaigns against each other. Whether it was Giant Demons or humans, rivers of blood would flow. It was common for entire cities or even countries to be exterminated.

"I respectfully accept."

Lin Ming calmly agreed. Since this fellow was well-mannered and treating him with respect, there was no need to harshly refuse him.

Lin Ming's eyes fell onto the girl beside Da Gu. He said, "If I'm not wrong, then this Miss Xun Ji."

Within the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, Xun Ji was the only woman. She was the weakest, but also the youngest. She was no older than Lin Ming. In other words, within the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, she was the one with the best talent.

“That’s me! It’s nice to meet you. Perhaps we might even fight later, hahaha.”

Xun Ji’s laugh was like the tinkling of silver bells. She was very interested in Lin Ming. In her eyes, Lin Ming was the only individual within Skysplit Tower whose talent could stand on par with her.

Only when there was competition would there be progress.

…………………………

Bluestone Teahouse was a very famous teahouse on Skysplit Tower’s third floor. The interior of the teahouse was entirely decorated in blue stones. The chairs and tables were crafted from stone, and they were simple and elegant. There was humble feel to this store. When combined with a pot of tea and carefully tasted, one could sense the pleasant mood within.

Within the second floor of Bluestone Teahouse, three people were sitting around a luxurious table.

“May I ask why Brother Da Gu is looking for me?” Lin Ming calmly asked between sips after a young maid respectfully handed a cup of tea to him.

“I only want to make friends with Brother Lin.” Da Gu smiled. “I feel that Young Hero Lin’s temperament is to my liking, so I would like to give Young Hero Lin some advice.”

“Oh? Please speak Brother Da Gu.” Lin Ming’s interested was piqued. Towards Skysplit Tower, he really didn’t know much. Muk Gu’s strength was limited and his position in the third floor was only at the very edge, so he didn’t know much. To Skysplit Tower, Lin Ming had always been confused by its layers of mysteries.

“Brother Lin, what I would first like to talk about are the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. Their strength is probably much more formidable than Brother Lin is imagining. My combat prowess can at most rank third or fourth among the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. But, those two or three people, I must admit that I am far inferior to them. Especially the second ranked Yan Chi and the first ranked Feng Shen.

“Feng Shen? That’s quite the proud name.” Feng Shen also meant the divine seal. When Lin Ming first came to Skysplit Tower, he had spent the majority of his time in closed door cultivation. He didn’t know many of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars’ names. He only knew Da Gu, Xun Ji, and Maha.

“Feng Shen is a Fey. His perception as well as his talent in Laws could be called terrifying. As for the third floor of Skysplit Tower, there are some practice areas where – if one’s perception is good enough – they can cultivate to a horrifying boundary!”

“Oh? What sort of practice places?” Lin Ming asked.

In Skysplit Tower, there had already been rumors circulated around that were related to all sorts of practice areas on the fourth floor or even fifth floor. However, very few individuals actually knew what was there.

Chapter 578 – The Origin of the Black Glass Bead

Chapter 578 – The Origin of the Black Glass Bead

…

…

…

“About these practice areas, I don’t have much knowledge because for the majority of them, I simply don’t have the right to enter.” Da Gu said, somewhat helplessly.

“Even you don’t have the authority to enter? Is your strength lacking? Do only the third floor’s first and second rankers have a chance of entering?” Lin Ming said, surprised.

“It’s not that…” Da Gu shook his head, “To enter these places, you need to fulfill specific requirements… you need to be one of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars as well as pledging yourself to Skysplit Tower. Both of these are absolutes. I wasn’t willing to work for them, so I don’t have the qualifications to access these areas.

“Pledging myself to Skysplit Tower…” Lin Ming frowned. He already had a feeling that something like this was the case. On the second floor, Xing Tian and Xue Man seemed to be working for some high level figure in Skysplit Tower. Without any doubt, they were most likely the subordinates of some High Lord.

Otherwise, with Xing Tian’s trivial status as the king of the second floor, how would he have the ability to comprehend something as elusive as the Concept of Annihilation? And to also have a black glass bead that Kai Yang would be moved to action for.

If Lin Ming wasn’t wrong, then Xing Tian had been favored greatly by a High Lord, thus he had been granted this bead.

Da Gu continued, “Besides me and Xun Ji, all five other Heavenly Demon Stars have taken a soul oath to obey Skysplit Tower. This oath in fact only lasts 50 years. During these 50 years, they serve Skysplit Tower, but the reward for this is that they can use the resources of Skysplit Tower however they wish. They even gain the right to enter the Road of Emperor.”

“This temptation is simply too great. Even though proud and lofty geniuses are enticed to swear an oath of fealty. After all, it’s only 50 years, and moreover they don’t even need to complete the full 50. If a martial artist becomes a high level Demon King or reaches the second stage of Life Destruction, then they must leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes. Otherwise, it would be easy for them to be killed by the mystical curse.”

Lin Ming nodded. For these top talents, it wasn’t difficult to reach the second stage of Life Destruction by the time they were in their forties. If they entered Skysplit Tower in their twenties, then they would only need to serve for 20 some years.

Even so, it was impossible for Lin Ming to take a soul oath of obedience towards Skysplit Tower. He could not accept this, much less that he had already promised Mu Qianyu he would return within 10 years. No matter what, he desired to return to the South Horizon Region. The South Sea Demon Region was simply too powerful; he always worried in the back of his mind about whether or not Divine Phoenix Island would have some sort of accident.

Da Gu also said, “Yan Chi and Feng Shen already pledged their loyalty to Skysplit Tower a year ago. At that time, their strength wasn’t much better than mine, but after this year passed and they went into the Road of Emperor several times, that, combined with all of their experiences in other practice areas has now made their strength difficult to measure.”

“Xun Ji and I have no desire or intention of pledging ourselves to Skysplit Tower. Now, we’ve already used all the resources we can, and as for those we can’t, we’ll never be able to. Perhaps in another month or two, we will also leave. Skysplit Tower will not allow those that do not obey them to become ten-winged Heavenly demons. This is because after becoming a ten-winged Heavenly Demon, they would also become a High Lord, and thus they would also be able to divide the benefits that the High Lords receive. Not just that, but once one reaches 12 wings, not only could they receive the Heavenly Demon martial intent, but they will not be killed by the Blood Slaughter Steppes' mystical curse."

"The Blood Slaughter Steppes have existed for such a long time. Naturally, they've gained a great deal of interest due to all of the resources that exist here. The reason that this land can still exist through so many years without being encroached by countless superpowers is through the power of that strange curse that covers this land. Once an Emperor level powerhouse begins to emerge within the Blood Slaughter Steppes that is unaffected by this curse, the high level figures of Skysplit Tower will naturally not stand for it."

After Da Gu spoke, Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. So that was why!

The Blood Slaughter Steppes was truly a piece of fat meat. The 12 Skysplit Towers involved a large amount of circulating Blood Demon Crystals. In addition to all of these practice resources that even include those for the Concepts of the five elements and the Road of Emperor, what sect wouldn't be frothing over this?

Lin Ming said, "Thank you Brother Da Gu for the advice. I would also like to know, why is Brother Da Gu telling me these things?"

Da Gu faintly smiled. "I said, it's just fate. I feel like Brother Lin is the same type of person as me."

"Oh? How do you know?"

"Just my intuition. Also, I've been paying attention to you from the very start. I've investigated your experiences from the first floor to the third. I also know that when you were on the first floor, you saved a common Fey girl. I think that the reason you're here is the same as me, purely for gaining experience."

"Thank you Brother Da Gu. I also have something I would like to ask." Lin Ming hesitated for a moment before he asked.

"No need to be strangers. Please speak."

Lin Ming turned and lay down a small illusory magic array and a sound-insulating enchantment. Then, he took out the small black glass bead from his spatial ring. “Does Brother Da Gu recognize this object?”

Sometimes, through just a short conversion, one could gain a sense of trust towards others. Lin Ming’s visceral feeling was that everything Da Gu said should be 80 to 90% true. Not just that, but he seemed to be a very proud and aloof character. Such a person was much more trustworthy and reliable than others, not to mention that Lin Ming very much wanted to know just what this black glass bead was, so he could only ask Da Gu.

“This…” Da Gu was shocked. He looked at Lin Ming, a stunned expression on his face. “I didn’t expect you to have something like this. If I’m not wrong, this is a Demon God Bone that’s gathered from the Eternal Demon Abyss.”

“Eternal Demon Abyss, Demon God Bone…” Lin Ming mumbled as he paused in thought. He had also seen these two words in Xue Man’s jade slip. Xue Man held much fear and respect towards these two things. “This little bead is a Demon God Bone? What is that?”

As Da Gu spoke of the Eternal Demon Abyss, he spoke with emotion and fascination. “The Eternal Demon Abyss is, in fact, just underneath our feet. The 12 Skysplit Towers of the Blood Slaughter Steppes are called the source of all infernal energy. But, these 12 Skysplit Towers actually share the same single true source of infernal energy, and that place is called the Eternal Demon Abyss.”

Lin Ming was astonished at Da Gu’s words. The Eternal Demon Abyss was actually under their feet! And it was also the end source of infernal energy for all 12 Skysplit Towers?

“What sort of place is the Eternal Demon Abyss? Is the reason that the 12 Skysplit Towers release infernal energy because of the Eternal Demon Abyss underneath us?”

Da Gu nodded and said, “Most likely. The Eternal Demon Abyss is the burial place of all sorts of demonic and mystical spirits. Actually, no one knows just how long it has existed.

There are simply too many legends concerning the Eternal Demon Abyss. This is the Holy Demon Continent's true death trap.

"Within the Holy Demon Continent, there are many places known as death traps. But, the truth is that they are merely exaggerated rumors. As long as you are strong enough then you can enter these areas and have a high chance of returning alive. You can even obtain lucky chances during your exploration. But it is only the Eternal Demon Abyss and the Eternal Demon Abyss alone in which one will die after entering with no exceptions!"

Lin Ming's eyelids jumped up. He looked at the Demon God Bone in his hand and asked, "If everyone who enters the Eternal Demon Abyss dies, then who found this?"

"That is only a very ordinary Demon God Bone picked up at the edges of the Eternal Demon Abyss. As for the true Eternal Demon Abyss, even if one approaches from a great distance, it is truly a zone that forbids all life."

"For these past tens of thousands of years, there have been many peerless masters of their generation who have tried to approach or enter the Eternal Demon Abyss. However, not a single one of them returned alive. There was even a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon once who was titled the Six-fingered Sin Fey. This person became an Emperor level powerhouse and cultivated for thousands of years, wholeheartedly gaining achievements until his strength reached unfathomable levels. At that time, he could even be called the number one powerhouse of the entire Holy Demon Continent! But when he was 6000 years old, he experienced a brutal bottleneck in his cultivation. For a thousand years, he was unable to make a breakthrough, thus he entered the Eternal Demon Abyss to seek his own lucky chances. But even so, he still perished there!"

As Lin Ming heard this he sucked in a breath of cold air. Anyone who could enter the higher levels of Skysplit Tower and access the Eternal Demon Abyss were peerless figures of their generation. Of these, those that were twelve-winged Heavenly Demons were geniuses among geniuses!

This sort of proud and peerless master had also become an Emperor level powerhouse, their strength reaching the limit. Yet they still died in the Eternal Demon Abyss all the same!

Lin Ming calmed his mood and asked, “Just what is in the Eternal Demon Abyss?”

“I’m not too sure about the specifics. When these legends first began, the Blood Slaughter Steppes were only a place where infernal energy gushed out. The curse that killed Emperor level powerhouses hadn’t yet begun. Many demonic path martial artists came to this land to practice. Long ago, the Blood Slaughter Steppes were once known as the Holy Demon Continent’s cultivation Holy Land.

“But tens of thousands of years ago, there was a sixth-grade Holy Land that wished to conquer the entire Holy Demon Continent. At that time, this Holy Land’s Hallowed Lord wished to take the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes as his own. He assembled 12 Emperor level powerhouses in order to lay down a Heaven Locking Array and completely collect all of the 12 sources of infernal energy as his own, thus establishing a destiny for his Holy Land that would last 100,000 years! Finally, when this great array was halfway completed, it suddenly collapsed. From the Eternal Demon Abyss, a horrifying existence emerged. The 12 Emperor level powerhouses were instantly killed, including the Holy Land’s Hallowed Lord. There were no survivors!”

“What!?” Lin Ming was bewildered. This had already exceeded the limits of his understanding. A land like the Holy Demon Continent actually had an existence of this level? “What was this thing that instantly killed over a dozen Emperor level masters?”

Da Gu’s face was filled with reverence and awe as he sighed. He slowly said, “It was said that it was a massive claw that was covered in scales. It might have been the claw of a dragon, or perhaps the claw of some other ancient God Beast. In short, from that point on, the once almighty sixth-grade Holy Land disintegrated. There were many of their disciples that were cursed by that mystical strength, and died in various miserable ways. After that, the Blood Slaughter Steppes became a king restricted land. Only someone that has become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon in Skysplit Tower can enter as an Emperor level powerhouse, otherwise nothing awaits them but absolute death!”

The claw of a God Beast? Lin Ming was silent. A God Beast was an incomparably rare existence even within the Realm of the Gods. Just what was in the Eternal Demon Abyss?

Lin Ming suppressed this question in his heart and asked, “Brother Da Gu, what is a Demon God Bone?”

“Demon God Bone... I have heard some specifics about this. The Eternal Demon Abyss is a burial land of demonic spirits. There are too many unknown existences that reside within. After a powerhouse dies, their energy stays behind, lingering on for tens of thousands of years. When this is combined with the infernal energy of the Eternal Demon Abyss that is thick to the degree of substantializing, after several tens of thousands of years pass, this energy crystallizes into various sorts of divine relics. These crystallized relics are collectively called Demon God Bones.”

“So that’s what it is!” Lin Ming knew that animals and plants from billions of years could be buried deep underground, and after a long, countless period of time, they would harden into some black substance. If one dug these out, these substances could be burned to warm up food and other things. Otherwise, if plants or animals were exposed in the wild, they would slowly decay over time before finally disappearing. The difference was, the energy of the latter would dissipate, but the energy of the former would be sealed deep in the earth along with its heaven and earth origin energy, thus forming these black minerals over time.

Similarly, these peerless powerhouses that died also had bodies that contained a massive amount of energy and worldly origin energy. Their energies were billions and trillions of times over that of plants and animals. After these martial artists died, these energies were locked within the Eternal Demon Abyss. In this sort of special environment, after 100,000 years passed, or even several 100,000 years passed, this energy would condense into extraordinary objects.

This black glass bead was one of these extraordinary objects.

Chapter 579 – The King’s Cage

Chapter 579 – The King’s Cage

…

…

…

Da Gu said, “Brother Lin, this black glass bead is only a Demon God Bone found at the farthest edges of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Every 10 years, Skysplit Tower will convene its greatest manpower to explore the outside zone of the Eternal Demon Abyss. The resources they find are sometimes rewarded to the subordinates of the High Lords. Brother Lin’s Demon God Bone should have come about from such a way.

“What a pity, ah, within the Eternal Demon Abyss are things that we cannot begin to imagine. There are mystical monsters and ghosts beyond our reckoning, and treasures that Emperor level powerhouses would go crazy over. However, none of these things are what we can hope to obtain. When the Six-fingered Fey Emperor went to the Eternal Demon Abyss, it was to obtain these sorts of treasures. In the end, he didn’t return, instead becoming the nourishment within the Eternal Demon Abyss that bred the Demon God Bones.”

As Da Gu spoke here he sighed. The path of martial artists was a struggle against the high heavens. Thus, when a martial artist came across something that they could not hope to obtain no matter how strong they became, they would inevitably feel weak and frustrated.

Even the top powerhouse of the Holy Demon Continent had perished within the Eternal Demon Abyss. Just imagining that massive claw that blocked out the sun itself caused one’s heart to race.

The atmosphere fell into a temporary silence, no one speaking for a while. As for Xun Ji who was sitting beside Da Gu, she hadn't spoken from the very beginning. Instead, she only drank her tea, occasionally stirring her cup.

This silent atmosphere continued for half an hour. Then, Lin Ming stood up and cupped his fists, saying, "I must bid you all farewell. Brother Da Gu, thank you today for your advice, otherwise I would still be confused about Skysplit Tower's mysteries. However, I'm pressed for time right and should return to my practice area."

"Practice area... haha!" Da Gu smiled, "Brother Lin really seizes every second possible!"

Lin Ming said, "Time doesn't wait for anyone."

Martial artists had the most potential when they were young, and this was also the most important time in their cultivation. If they didn't seize every second possible then once they exhausted their potential in the future, it would be very difficult to advance any further.

On the other hand, if they could rush up to the Divine Sea realm in a single go then their lifespan would increase by at least 10,000 years. At this time, even if they were a thousand years old, that would still be considered young and they could also maintain their youthful appearance.

The sooner one entered the Divine Sea, the more potential they had remaining in their lives, and the greater their future advantages would be.

Moreover, Lin Ming had a ten year appointment with Mu Qianyu. This frequently caused him to feel a deep urgency.

"Practice area... Brother Lin should have the Termination Emblem. With this emblem, there are some new practice areas you might be able to access now."

"Oh? What practice areas?"

Da Gu faintly smiled, "The King's Cage!"

……………………

In a dark hidden chamber on the fourth floor, a six foot tall Imp wearing an embroidered robe was leaning back in a luxurious chair. In front of him was a man that had fallen to his knees in prostration.

"Sir High Lord, I've investigated. Lin Ming shouldn't be related to the Eightfall War Emperor in any way."

"Oh, this is determined to be true?" The Imp's expression changed a bit as he sat up.

This person was one Skysplit Tower's 12 High Lords – High Lord Heian.

"Yes. From the news we have coming from the Eightfall War Emperor's Holy Land, the Eightfall War Emperor has not accepted any disciples for the last 300 years, and he has been in secret closed-door seclusion for the last few hundred years. No one knows where he went."

"I see… humph, so that boy didn't have any background to begin with. To think I was worried in vain for a while." High Lord Heian muttered with disdain.

For someone as talented as Lin Ming, it was impossible for him to have emerged out of nowhere. Even if he was unrelated to the Eightfall War Emperor, he still must have some formidable background. Still, it wasn't anything to fear. Beside the Eightfall War Emperor, it was impossible for other Emperor level powerhouses to take a step into the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

"Black Shadow, go and have a chat with him. See if he is willing to take a soul oath and swear 50 years of fealty to us, otherwise, have him roll out of Skysplit Tower as soon as possible. If he doesn't choose, then, humph!"

High Lord Heian spoke to here and didn't speak again. That cold cough had already contained a very obvious killing intent.

…………………………………

Lin Ming finally chose to walk with Da Gu and Xun Ji. This was because Xun Ji was heading to a practice area, but this practice area wasn't the King's Cage.

As they arrived at a special practice area in the southwest corner of the third floor, they pushed opened the gate and entered. After stepping in, Lin Ming was stunned. This practice area was outrageously large. It was a square room at least a thousand feet wide and long, and the dome of the area was dozens of feet high. However, even though this place was very large, the furnishings inside were surprisingly simple. There was only a 20 foot square table in the center with a few strange-looking potted plants on it.

In front of the stone table, a lone silhouette greeted Lin Ming's group of three. This person carried a longsword across their shoulder and wore a loose pale blue robe. His long hair hung down to his waist, and his hands were crossed behind his back.

From seeing this proud and aloof figure, Lin Ming could see that their heights were similar. He didn't know why, but this person gave off a strange feeling, as if he were staring at an unreachable mountain peak.

"This person is…"

Lin Ming's eyebrows jumped. This was absolutely an extreme master!

"Brother Lin, he is Feng Shen." Da Gu lightly said in a true essence sound transmission.

"I see." Lin Ming's heart chilled. This sort of special practice area was basically only open to those martial artists on the third floor that were ranked in the top ten. It wasn't strange to meet a master of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars here.

'Feng Shen truly lives up to his reputation.'

Lin Ming thought to himself.

As if he felt something, Feng Shen turned around. He glanced over everyone, his eyes falling upon Lin Ming just a second longer, before he turned back, indifferent to it all.

His eyes did not contain any haughty arrogance, but they naturally revealed an imposing aura as if he were looking down on the world, disregarding everyone there.

This was the vision that only a peerless powerhouse would have.

Da Gu looked at Feng Shen and sighed. He said to Lin Ming in a true essence sound transmission, “I fear Feng Shen’s strength might be no less than a High Lord’s.”

“Mm? No weaker than a High Lord?” Lin Ming was startled.

Skysplit Tower’s High Lords were somewhat ambiguous to Lin Ming. As to what degree of strength they reached, Lin Ming had no idea.

Lin Ming couldn’t help but ask, “What is a High Lord’s cultivation?”

Da Gu shook his head, “In Skysplit Tower, cultivation doesn’t have much significance. If one judges someone’s strength merely by their cultivation, then they will have made a grave error. In fact, after having stayed in Skysplit Tower for so long, I’ve already forgotten the standard criteria for strength outside of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. This is because everyone here is an outstanding individual among their peers. They are all able to jump ranks to fight, so it is difficult to compare.

Lin Ming nodded. Indeed, the Blood Slaughter Steppes gathered all the heroic elites from all killings paths within the Holy Demon Continent. This was the highest concentration of extraordinary youths on the entire mainland. It was hard to imagine just how many were there. Just Emperor level talents were here in the double digits.

There were even more Saint level talents. Even someone as talented as Mu Qianyu, if she came to the third floor, would only be in the middle-lower ranks.

When martial skills, Concepts, and cultivation methods became the most important factors in determining strength, the influence of one's cultivation was greatly weakened.

For instance, even though Lin Ming had reached this degree of strength, his cultivation had only increased a small boundary within the Xiantian realm. His strength increase from this wasn't too much, but his total comprehensive combat prowess was already at the early Revolving Core realm.

No matter how thick one's true essence was, a small boundary increase in the Xiantian realm was far inferior to a small increase in the Revolving Core realm in terms of increases in strength.

The fusion of Concepts, the Eight Inner Hidden Gates… these were Lin Ming's killing moves.

Lin Ming and Da Gu were speaking to each other with true essence sound transmissions when a slightly hoarse and low voice sounded out from behind them. "Hehe, isn't that Da Gu and Xun Ji? I haven't seen you in two months Da Gu, but your cultivation… seems to be getting more and more trash!"

As Da Gu heard this voice, he suddenly frowned. He turned around to see that the one speaking was an Imp martial artist. This Imp was only six feet tall and his head was abnormally large. He had a strange walking stick in his hands and he also wore a black-colored bamboo hat. He smiled creepily as he stared at Da Gu.

"Yan Chi!"

In Skysplit Tower, Yan Chi was ranked second amongst the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. His strength was only below that of Feng Shen.

Xun Ji obviously detested Yan Chi. She humphed once and then ignored him.

Yan Chi thought little of this. His eyes swept past Da Gu and Xun Ji before landing on Lin Ming. “Lin Ming. I know you. Perhaps in a few months, we might fight each other. At that time, I wonder if you will have grown enough? Hehe, I’m looking forwards to it!”

Yan Chi licked his lips. Lin Ming’s strength already approached the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. Several months from now, if he could win another two matches, it wouldn’t be strange if he fought Yan Chi.

“Toot toot, don’t look at me like that, it’s easy for me to get excited!” Yan Chi quirkily smiled as he waggled his finger. Then, he walked over to the deacon in charge of this practice area.

“This damned fellow!”

Da Gu looked disgusted. He truly wasn’t Yan Chi’s match, he simply couldn’t do anything to him. A year ago, they were evenly matched in strength. But now because of the disparity in their practice areas, a wide gap had opened between them, especially the last few months. During this period, Yan Chi’s strength became immeasurably deep.

Lin Ming silently watched Yan Chi. Although he didn’t have that lofty superior feel and proud aura like Feng Shen did, his soul force seemed as deep as a vast ocean. In wasn’t just in soul force, but that tiny body also seemed to contained a terrifying power.

‘He uses soul cultivation as his primary method and supports this with a body transformation cultivation method… I wonder just how strong this Yan Chi’s soul attacks are?’

Lin Min secretly compared himself. Yan Chi’s mind was secretive. If they didn’t fight once, then he wouldn’t know how they measured next to each other.

“This is your token, please receive it.” The deacon managing this special practice area was a one-armed middle-aged man. His true essence was concentrated extremely thickly. As the one in charge of this special practice area, he must have a very high status on Skysplit Tower’s third floor, but he was still very humble towards Feng Shen. He didn’t have even the slightest sense of disrespect in his words or actions, and deferentially placed a token in Feng Shen's hand. With this token, he could enter the practice area.

"Lord Yan Chi, this is yours. Please accept it."

The second token was given to Yan Chi.

Afterwards, the deacon turned to Lin Ming and asked, "You, what sort of practice place would you like?"

Towards Lin Ming, he didn't have any fear. His voice was neither too arrogant or too humble.

Lin Ming said, "The King's Cage."

"Oh?" Yan Chi revealed an expression of great interest. "The King's Cage, eh? Hehe, now that I think of it, you should have gained the authority to enter the King's Cage. Interesting! I wonder what sort of trial qualification rank you'll be able to attain."

"Mm?" Lin Ming was startled. "Trial qualifications?"

The middle-aged deacon looked at Lin Ming and slowly explained, "The King's Cage has different ranking smelting trial qualifications. There are many factors involved. In short, talent, soul, strength, all of these factors and more are closely linked to the final result. It is a complete and comprehensive evaluation of all young heroic elites. The smelting trial qualifications are divided into four different grades. These are Common, Saint, Asura, and Titled Asura.

"The first three grades are also divided into low, medium, and high. Of these, a high Asura is amongst the most splendid of all heaven-step Asuras. As for a Titled Asura, that is an Asura with their own unique title. In the last 10,000 years, there have only been a total of three Titled Asuras. Those that can become a Titled Asura are surely the proudest sons of heaven in their generation. But even if all 12 Skysplit Towers are added together, these are still extremely rare existences.”

Chapter 580 – Qualification Trial

Chapter 580 – Qualification Trial

…

…

…

Only three people had become Titled Asuras in the last 10,000 years? Lin Ming's eyebrows twisted together. Skysplit Tower could not be compared to the South Horizon Region. The South Horizon Region was a small region about a million miles wide. As for Skysplit Tower, it was a place where nearly every young genius within the Holy Demon Continent that walked the killing path came to. These were the most outstanding youths among those that cultivated the demonic arts.

It had to be known that the Holy Demon Continent had a very complex racial situation. There were great wars nearly every year, and the number of talents surpassed the Sky Spill Continent by far. Not just that, but of the Giant Demon martial artists, 70 to 80% of them walked the killing road. The Blood Slaughter Steppes could be called the land where they all gathered.

Even so, Polaris Tower only had a total of three Titled Asuras in the last 10,000 years. Even if the other 11 Skysplit Towers were added together, this was just a bit over 30 individuals. Obviously, this was an extremely rare title.

Lin Ming asked, "There have only been three people in the last 10,000 years… have these three finally become Peerless Emperors?"

The middle-aged man was smugly silent. The martial artists that first entered the King's Cage smelting trial qualifications were almost always filled with excitement as they heard the legend of these Titled Asuras. This was a reasonable reaction after all.

These heroic youths were incomparably proud and arrogant of their abilities. Among them, there were even many that thought they themselves should be a Titled Asura.

However, in truth, after these people underwent their smelting trial qualifications, they often weren't graded as ordinary Asuras, instead only being given a Saint grade.

Lin Ming's reaction was within the deacon's expectations. The deacon normally wouldn't care and would be disinclined to respond if a normal person asked him, but he had heard rumors about Lin Ming's talent. In the future, it was possible that Lin Ming would become a great figure within Skysplit Tower. Thinking of this, he said, "No. Two of those people are missing, no one knows just where they went. Only one of them became a Peerless Emperor. Not just that, but that person isn't an ordinary Emperor level master. After being a Peerless Emperor, he could even instantly kill an Emperor level Supreme Elder at his same level."

"I see!" Lin Ming was not surprised. If there were only three individuals that were Titled Asuras in the last 10,000 years, then these individuals were naturally peak Emperor level talent existences. In fact, the definition of an Emperor level talent only meant that one had a small ray of hope for becoming a true Emperor level powerhouse. One could call themselves an Emperor level talent, but of these so-called Emperor level talents, the vast majority were not able to become a Peerless Emperor. Maybe they exhausted their potential, maybe they weren't able to persist, or perhaps their destiny was lacking and they perished, but even between Emperor level talents there were massive gaps, otherwise Emperor powerhouses would not be so exceedingly rare.

"Hehe, boy, you look like you want to become a Titled Asura?" Yan Chi's voice suddenly sounded in Lin Ming's ear.

Lin Ming turned around and calmly said, "It doesn't matter whether I want to become a Titled Asura or not. We'll find out after I try it."

“Haha!” Yan Chi guffawed, his expression mute. “Deacon Bai, open the smelting trial for him, I want to see just what grade of smelting trial qualifications this boy will earn!”

“Young Hero Lin, if you would like, please follow me.”

The middle-aged deacon said without much expression as he moved towards the back wall. This practice area was very broad. It had had width and length of 1000 feet, and the dome was dozens of feet high. On this wall there were nine thick stone pillars that stood next to each other. On the pillars were all sorts of carvings and reliefs. There were coiling dragons, demons, and a variety of vicious beasts, each with menacing poses, all of them vivid and lifelike.

The middle-aged deacon selected the third and fourth pillars and moved between them. He took out a token and then placed it on the wall. With a rumbling sound, this wall began to slowly rise up.

The wall was 10 feet thick, and not just that but it was constructed out of some unknown metal. With how high it was, this wall should weigh no less than several hundred thousand jins!

This was a terrifying wall weight. Just what of strength was able to lift it? As the wall rose, it rumbled like a thunderstorm, the sound echoing in one’s ears.

After the wall was completely raised up, it revealed a large stone chamber within. This stone chamber was around 200 feet wide, and it contained an indescribably rugged and potent energy. It was like a mystical door to another dimension, leading to an endless ancient and primal wilderness.

“This is the King’s Cage…” Lin Ming was shocked. He couldn’t imagine just what sort of person had created this place to begin with.

“Indeed.” Yan Chi looked at Lin Ming, a savoring expression on his face. Even the lonely and proud Feng Shen stopped in his steps and looked at Lin Ming. From beginning to end, he hadn't said a single word. To someone like Feng Shen, only a peerless heavenly genius that could stand as his rival was worthy of attracting his attention.

Lin Ming walked into the stone chamber. On the walls of this chamber were doors of light; it was unknown where they went.

Near these doors of light stood a 100 foot high stone tablet. This seemed like stone, but it also seemed like metal. As one stared at it, they could sense a faint Law as well as an origin of energy, causing them to tremble in their knees.

From top to bottom, the stone tablet was entirely covered with countless names. The very top three rows only had one name each.

The first row said: 'Sky Ghost Asura, Shentu Hongxi'.

The second row said: 'Netherworld Asura, Mo Kun'.

The third row said: 'Eightfall Asura, Hao Gan'.

These three rows of names were written in fanciful and bold cursive. This handwriting seemed to contain the Laws and will of the world. It was splendid and radiant.

The middle-aged deacon said, "This stone tablet is called the King Tablet. Every time a martial artist enters the King's Cage smelting trial and obtains a high-grade Saint level qualification ranking, their names will appear on the King Tablet."

"The name stays for 10,000 years!"

A 10,000 year period truly seemed enough to have a name appear eternal. Lin Ming's eyes continued downwards, and he saw that the names after the three rows of Titled Asura were much smaller.

Followed right after the three Titled Asura was one rank – heaven-step Asura!

Underneath this heaven-step Asura were several dozen names, each filled with a strange flavor. As he looked at the second row of names, Lin Ming was stunned. There was an impressive name there – Feng Shen!

Lin Ming couldn't help but turn around and glance at Feng Shen. Feng Shen was standing right behind him around 100 feet away. Both of his hands were hanging behind his back, and his eyes were placid. His expression was clear, and he didn't seem to give a single care about Lin Ming looking at him.

"So Feng Shen is a heaven-step Asura."

Lin Ming silently counted the number. There was a total of 36 heaven-step Asura. This was the total accumulation of 10,000 years, which meant that there was an average of one every 300 years. Feng Shen being one of them was already extremely rare.

Below that were earth-step Asuras. There was a total of 150 people listed here. Lin Ming also saw Yan Chi's name among them.

Then below that were human-step Asuras. There were even more people listed here.

Finally, below that was the high-grade Saint level. These names filled the rest of the entire stone tablet. Because there were so many of these names, they seemed unremarkable bunched up next to each other. But, in truth these individuals were the peerless geniuses of their eras.

"If everyone is ready, then please enter. The contents of the qualification smelting trial vary for every person. Each person will encounter different scenarios. I wish all of you good luck." Deacon Bai flatly said, pointing to a door of light beside him.

Behind Lin Ming, Yan Chi and Feng Shen looked at him.

"Brother Lin, please be careful. The qualification smelting trials are dangerous and possibly fatal. If you find yourself facing a situation where you can't win, then don't force yourself."

Da Gu reminded behind him.

"I'll remember." Lin Ming breathed deeply several times. He adjusted his mindset so it was near the 'ethereal' state, revolved his true essence, and stepped into the void of light.

Woosh!

A white light flashed and Lin Ming disappeared.

There was a sense of space twisting around him as Lin Ming's vision blurred. Then it gradually began to clear. He stood in an endless black space. Stars shined above his head, and gray rocks floated gently in the air.

Ca!

A blazing white light appeared without any indication and pierced straight towards Lin Ming's chest.

"Mm!?"

Lin Ming's eyes widened. He drew the Purple Comet Spear, and in an instant was ready to fend off the attack and counter it. But in this moment, Lin Ming felt space warp around him, and time seemed to slow. His footsteps should have been like the wind, but instead it seemed as if he had fallen into a bog, finding all of his movements restricted.

Space Time Law shackles!

"This is the Law of Space and Time! It is exactly the Concepts which I comprehended. That Deacon Bai said that the qualification smelting trial is different for every person, and every person will encounter different scenarios. Then, this qualification test of the Concept of Space and Time should be aimed specifically at me!"

As Lin Ming thought this, his heart burned with a radiant fighting spirit. "How interesting! Let me see what degree the difficulty of this qualification smelting trial is, where only three people have become a Titled Asura in the last 10,000 years!"

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Lin Ming's perception swept out in all directions, instantly extending to the surrounding space. His body twisted in a way that completely violated the laws of physics as he changed his trajectory and soared through a path out!

This instant acceleration made it appear as if he had teleported.

Woosh!

The beam of light stabbed through the black ground and disappeared without a trace.

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. What a strong attack! If someone lacked strength, then that beam of light would have pierced right through their body. No wonder Da Gu had reminded him that this qualification smelting trial could be fatal.

Lin Ming quickly swiveled around, and was surprised to see a black storm roiling towards him. This storm was the exact same as the black storms that Lin Ming had seen when he passed through the ancient transmission array.

Space storm!

As Lin Ming saw this, he was not startled, but instead happy!

The Concept of Space was elusive and enigmatic. He had been worried that there wouldn't be any place where he could perceive this, but he didn't expect that the King's Cage qualification smelting trial would have it!

"Come on!"

Not only did Lin Ming not dodge, but instead he picked up the Purple Comet Spear and rushed directly towards the space storm!

When Lin Ming first passed through the ancient transmission array, he hadn't even had a tiny bit of superficial knowledge or comprehension of the Laws of Space and Time. Although he had experienced a number of space storms, Lin Ming hadn’t gained much from them. But now, he had entered into the initial threshold in understand the Concepts of Space and Time. If he could experience this space storm once more, then he would be able to obtain comprehensions that were of a completely different nature from the previous time.

Xiu!

A spear entered the storm. Lin Ming felt a terrifying attracting force pulling on him, tearing at him, wanting to rip him to shreds.

Lin Ming had already experienced this feeling before. He calmly and steadily adjusted his mind and flow of true essence to adapt to this distortion of spacetime as soon as possible.

“Blood Seal Twisting Murder, the power of rotation!”

Beside Lin Ming, Blood Drinking Seals flew out like flying knives, rapidly rotating around each other. The principle of these spinning seals was similar to that of the space storm. Melding with this force, Lin Ming rapidly shot into the space storm!

True essence constantly condensed and dispersed. In this vortex, Lin Ming was like a fish swimming upstream, agile and calm.

“Very good!

“Again!”

Lin Ming’s figure moved. At this time, an even more terrifying space storm began to form in front of him. Around the edges of this space storm, even time seemed to twist…

Chapter 581 – Purple Comet, Penetrating Rainbow

Chapter 581 – Purple Comet, Penetrating Rainbow

…

…

…

The black space storm swept through the sky as if it were devouring all. This was the union of the Concept of Time and the Concept of Space. These complex Concepts made travel through this storm even more difficult.

Lin Ming's eyes shrank. Facing this great black space storm, he grew even more excited. But the difference from a moment ago was that this excitement had a tinge of solemnity.

The Concept of Time was fused into this space storm. While he needed to adapt to the power of space, he also needed to adjust the passage of time around him to fit the Law of Space here.

Diverting his mind in two directions was not easy.

Ca!

Lin Ming decided on a space-time node, his spear thrusting out.

With a spiraling potency, the spear light shot into the black storm. It formed into a twisting ripple, but just as this ripple appeared it immediately slowed down like a fish caught in mud.

“The time is wrong.”

Lin Ming drew back, escaping the turbulent space flow that passed near him. He adapted to the flow of time once again.

Cha cha cha!

Spear thrust after spear thrust formed beautiful spiral ripples, every one like an arrow entering into water. These strikes caused ripples in the space storm that propagated for dozens of feet. Because of the intense collision from the power of space, these ripples slowly faded away.

Lin Ming kept dodging the power of space, retreating a step at a time as the spear in his hand thrust out at an even faster rate. At this time, a light flashed in his eyes.

Heretical God Force – open!

100% of the Heretical God Force was released. The compressed true essence within Lin Ming’s body erupted. As he stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void, his speed shot up dramatically. All of his energy and will was poured into the Purple Comet Spear. Lin Ming became one with his spear, his entire being converting into a vibrant spiraling force that pierced into the space storm!

If he distanced himself from the attacks of the space storm then Lin Ming would only be able to perceive the most cursory of details. Only if he completely invested himself into this storm of space and time would he be able to experience its true depths and comprehend the most basic Concepts and Laws.

The power of space roared past Lin Ming. The power of space was known as the force that could annihilate all. When Lin Ming had passed through the ancient transmission array, many of the spatial rings he wore had been instantly shattered by the space storm. The medicines, treasures, bottles, everything inside these spatial rings had turned to dust in front of Lin Ming’s eyes before vanishing into the endless darkness.

Trying to resist such a terrifying power of space with just true essence was suicide. Only if one conformed to this power and used the Law of Space to protect themselves would they be able to live.

“Damn!”

Lin Ming was careless for a moment, missing a trace of the power of space. This small trace of strength rubbed against Lin Ming’s arm, and his bodily true essence was ripped apart like a thin piece of paper. The muscles on his arm burst open, revealing a wound deep enough to see bone. Blood showered out, instantly disappearing in the space storm.

“How frightening!”

Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. He quickly focused his thoughts and re-adapted himself to the power of twisting space.

Just a touch of the power of space could cause such terrifying destruction. Just who was the one that said the striking power of the Concept of Space was lacking?

When Lin Ming first faced Xing Tian, he had used the Concept of Space to confront his Concept of Annihilation. Compared to the Concept of Annihilation, Lin Ming felt that the striking power of the Concept of Space was lacking. The Concept of Space’s strengths lay in its ability to allow one’s skills to be elusive and variable, making them nearly impossible to detect or avoid.

However, now it seemed that the Concept of Space didn’t lack in striking power, but rather that Lin Ming’s comprehension of it was just far too low. What he understood was nothing but a drop in the sea.

“My road is still too long…”

Lin Ming released his senses and closed his eyes, even completely withdrawing all of the true essence that protected his body. Since bodily true essence was fundamentally unable to resist this space storm, he might as well take it all away so that he could concentrate his mental strength to an unprecedented level.

At that moment, Lin Ming's mind was completely emptied of all thoughts; even his spiritual sea was a great empty space. Immersed in this space storm, he was completely defensive. If he took a single wrong step then he would be crushed to death, beyond redemption!

A normal qualification trial challenger would handle a Concept test like this by mainly dodging to pass. Breaking in with any hesitation like this was simply an act of madness.

Of course, the benefits to this madness were obvious. Lin Ming's comprehension of the Space and Time Concepts was unceasingly improving!

"Space is not nothing, but is the sea where all life comes from. It in itself is the property of all matter.

"It is not that space holds all matter, but only after the existence of myriad things is their position measured. The great volume of space is similar to the existence of men and women to humanity. Only after the existence of humanity do men and women have meaning. Similarly, only after the appearance of matter does space have meaning..."

Lin Ming unknowingly swam in the ocean of space. He seemed to simply begin to comprehend the essence of space...

Without knowing how much time passed, Lin Ming's eyes opened. The space storm had passed, and Lin Ming was standing atop the dark black earth. As he looked at his hand, he saw that the torn muscles there had already regenerated halfway.

"Done already? What a pity!"

Lin Ming shook his head. If he could continue that state he was in a moment ago, then he could have realized even deeper truths.

“Mm? This is…” Not too far away, Lin Ming saw a billowing cloud of thunderfire.

“The Concepts of Thunder and Fire! Ah, this really is a comprehensive test!” Lin Ming’s eyes burned with a brilliant fighting spirit. Compared to the elusive power of space and time, the Concepts of Thunder and Fire were his specialty. He was already very familiar with thunderfire.

Hu! Hu! Hu!

From a distance where thunder and fire fused together as one, thunderfire billowed high, incomparably violent and savage.

Lin Ming’s lips curved up in a smile. “It’s only interesting if it’s fused. If it’s just the Concept of Thunder or the Concept of Fire then it would be too boring.”

When Lin Ming was trying to fuse the power of thunder and fire, he respectively went to the Concept of Thunder practice area as well as the Concept of Fire practice area.

Just these sole Concepts made Lin Ming feel as if something were lacking. But now, in the King’s Cage qualification test, both of these Concepts were united as one. This caused Lin Ming to rejoice with happiness.

This was really a great place.

Lin Ming looked forwards to coming to this qualification trial several more times.

………………………

“Hey, that boy has been in for just under an hour.” Outside of the smelting trial area, Yan Chi was speaking to Feng Shen.

But at this time, Feng Shen’s eyes were closed in meditation. He had entered into a strange cultivation state. If Lin Ming were here, he would see that this was shockingly a type of martial intent!

It was one similar to Lin Ming's own ethereal martial intent. It was a supportive martial intent that could greatly increase one's practice speed.

As Yan Chi saw Feng Shen not respond to his words, he could only give up. Facing Feng Shen, Yan Chi didn't have the least bit of arrogance.

Yan Chi remembered that when he went into the qualification smelting trial, he came out after an hour. Time didn't mean everything. But, in general, someone who couldn't surpass an hour inside could only be ranked as a medium-grade Saint level. This wasn't even enough to be recorded on the King Tablet.

Yan Chi didn't doubt that Lin Ming had the ability to appear on the King Tablet. The question was what level he would reach.

'If he can reach Feng Shen's level, then that would be incredible. That prideful fellow Feng Shen is already staying here late for the first time just so he can see Lin Ming's smelting trial results. It seems that he cares somewhat about Lin Ming...'

Thinking about this, Yan Chi felt a bit uncomfortable. If Lin Ming became a heaven-step Asura, then that meant that Lin Ming's future accomplishments would surpass his one day.

....

Within the space of the smelting trial, Lin Ming flew high in the air. Grasping the Purple Comet Spear, his long hair danced in the air. Beside him, thunder and flame roared as the origin energy of the world put him through a brutal and violent baptism.

Lin Ming thrust out his spear again and again. The Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo fused with 100,000 arcs of lightning, and the Sacred Flame Parasol Tree whipped up waves of brilliant flames. Under this attack, Lin Ming's comprehension of the fusion between the Concepts of Thunder and Fire grew more and more. He had already unconsciously reached the Large Success stage, and was making strides towards Perfection.

But at this moment, a white light flashed. In the air, six phantoms appeared. These fuzzy shades were armed with long spears made of energy, and they rushed towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming loudly shouted out. At this time, all of the wild heaven and earth origin energy compressed together within his body. If he didn't release this then he would explode!

"Come on!"

Lin Ming shook the Purple Comet Spear and then rushed straight towards these six phantoms!

A brilliant spear light cut through the endless sky.

Lin Ming cried out, and he became one with his spear. Under the grace of thunder and fire, Lin Ming's speed instantly reached the pinnacle. Space itself trembled underneath this potent spear light.

Chi-la!

Like a burning meteor, Lin Ming instantly passed through three of the six phantoms, killing them in a single strike! The other three phantoms were wounded by the aftershocks of thunderfire and severely injured!

This move was the end result of the fusion of Chasing Thunder and Chasing Sun. It was now also one of Lin Ming's strongest moves.

Lin Ming named it Penetrating Rainbow.

With this name, it described how after the first movement, the spear instantly penetrated the deep blue sky, the spear light seeming like an endless rainbow that hung in the heavens. Thus, the name of this move was Penetrating Rainbow.

Moreover, Lin Ming's first spear was called Penetrating Rainbow. This name also held a commemorative significance for him.

“Awesome!”

Ever since he comprehended Penetrating Rainbow, although Lin Ming had practiced this move a thousand times, he still hadn’t used it in combat. Now he finally had an enemy to fight. Although it was only a virtual enemy made of energy, Lin Ming still felt happy about this.

As for the remaining three phantoms, Lin Ming’s spear rushed past them.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Three lights flashed; they all died instantly!

To the current Lin Ming, these six phantoms were far too weak.

Then the world shifted, the heavens and earth changing around him. Thick clouds obscured the starry sky, and the endless black earth underneath his feet turned into a vast, fathomless ocean.

Thunder recklessly flashed in the sky. It was like the divine soldiers of god were casting their weapons down upon the world, ripping the heavens apart.

Bang!

The surface of the sea suddenly exploded. Dozens of water columns rose into the sky, thousands of feet high. Within these water columns were Purple Flood Dragons that roared as they rushed towards Lin Ming.

Before these Flood Dragons arrived, their terrifying aura and pressure pushed down on him like a great mountain. In this pressure, there was actually a purple light that instantly broke into Lin Ming’s spiritual sea.

“Mm? Soul attack!”

Lin Ming’s mind chilled. This was truly a great test!

The power of Concepts, one’s individual strength, even a test for soul force… this trial was truly all-encompassing, everyone was completely involved!

As the soul attack broke into Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, it was instantly melted away by the Samsara martial intent without being able to harm him at all.

Then, the Flood Dragons roared again as they rushed towards Lin Ming.

The ocean rolled up in gigantic waves, the sky exploding as if the apocalypse had arrived. Lin Ming instantly judged that it would be difficult dealing with these Flood Dragons. His mind touched upon the Heretical God Seed. Lin Ming unleashed the Heretical God Force!

Bang!

His long hair dancing, Lin Ming grasped the Purple Comet Spear, his fighting spirit sweeping through the world!

……………

“Two hours and a quarter…” Outside of the smelting trial, Da Gu was staring at an hourglass. This time was already comparable to how long Feng Shen had stayed within. But, the corresponding result could be good or bad. If Lin Ming rolled through unstoppable, then he could even become a Titled Asura. But if he was plodding along, then he might not even become an earth-step Asura.

At this moment, the door of light violently shook. Da Gu’s eyes jumped up. Did the smelting trial end?

Seeing the door of light shake, Yan Chi stood up. Even Feng Shen, who had been sitting in meditation, faintly opened his indifferent eyes…

Chapter 582 – Titled Asura

Chapter 582 – Titled Asura

…

…

…

Two hours and a quarter. That was the same time that Feng Shen lasted in his own smelting trial. Because martial artists had different levels of strength, their trials also had correspondingly different difficulties, thus the results would also be different. How much time passed was only a single factor of many.

Woosh!

A figure shot out from the door of light, stepping onto the ground. This was Lin Ming!

The clothes on Lin Ming's right hand were torn and dyed red with blood. But, it seemed fine overall. It should have been a minor wound, and in addition there wasn't a scar. It was just that his clothes were slightly messy and his breath was a bit unsteady. He had clearly over consumed his energy.

Yan Chi's eyes flashed. If he wasn't injured too heavily, then that meant his results were decent.

"This boy!" Yan Chi said with a tinge of envy.

As for Feng Shen, his eyes were still calm and detached as he looked at Lin Ming. Then, his eyes turned to the King Tablet.

At the very top of the stone tablet where the heaven-step Asuras were located, the entire stone tablet including the letters themselves were shrouded underneath an opaque golden light. One couldn't clearly see, but one could approximate the letters slowly forming within this golden light. This name was suspended high, on the top three feet of the King Tablet.

On the King Tablet, the name would form in the air before it fell onto the stone tablet. The letters were magnificent, containing all sorts of exquisite mysteries.

"Heaven-step Asura?"

Yan Chi gripped his fists together. Was the name forming on the stone tablet really a once in 300 years heaven-step Asura?

With Lin Ming's talent, he had already guessed there was a high probability of him being a heaven-step Asura. But, to see this happen in real life in front of him made Yan Chi feel deeply uncomfortable.

From the very beginning, Feng Shen, who hadn't had any expression at all, finally had a tinge of emotion on his face. His eyes turned to Lin Ming, giving him a deep look, before turning back to the golden characters forming in the air.

As Lin Ming's name was formed, everyone thought that these golden characters would now fall onto the King Tablet. As soon as 'Lin Ming' appeared, the golden light flashed again and more letters began to appear.

"What!?!?"

Yan Chi's eyes widened. There were more words!?!?

This is…

Three more words formed in the golden light. These words finally formed…

Evil God Asura.

He had been given the title of Evil God!

Ka!

This line of golden words fell onto the King Tablet. The King Tablet was several dozen feet high and over three feet thick but it still trembled as this name fell onto it, as if it couldn't bear the weight of this title!

As the golden light faded away, Lin Ming's name was deeply engraved right underneath the Eightfall Asura.

This was the fourth row – Evil God Asura, Lin Ming!

Yan Chi's floored expression froze on his face. Even the aloof and indifferent Feng Shen had lost his past calm.

Titled Asura!

Evil God!

The titles that Skysplit Tower bestowed upon certain individuals were not random. It was said that the qualifications smelting trial had a certain ability to predict the future. For instance, Hao Gan was given the title of Eightfall Asura, and after that he really crossed eight stages of Life Destruction before reaching the Divine Sea. Soon after, the world respectfully called him the Eightfall War Emperor!

Then if Lin Ming was given the title of Evil God, what would happen in the future? Would he become an Evil God?

What sort of concept was an Evil God? Just what level powerhouse would that be?

Would it be an existence on the same level as the Eightfall War Emperor?

Da Gu gasped, unable to hide his astonishment.

After being stunned for a moment, he finally recovered. With awe in his eyes, he muttered, “To think that in my life I was able to witness the birth of a Titled Asura. This is… unbelievable!”

Lin Ming glanced at the stone tablet. A Titled Asura was no more than what he expected; he wasn’t too proud of this accomplishment.

There were only three Titled Asuras in the last 10,000 years, but one couldn’t forget that there was more than one Skysplit Tower.

Of course, to the normal person, a Titled Asura was a legendary existence. But to Lin Ming, if he couldn’t obtain this rank, then that really would have been too laughable. At that point, he wouldn’t have had any qualifications to think of going to the Realm of the Gods or pursuing anything like the peak of all martial arts.

“Lin Ming!” Feng Shen called out, finally speaking at last. This was first time he spoke. His voice was calm, but carried a firm edge to it. “Titled Evil God! I will remember, I’m waiting for you!”

With that, Feng Shen no longer idled. He turned and left.

As Yan Chi saw Feng Shen leave, his complexion sunk. He didn’t think that Lin Ming was actually such an abnormal freak of nature. If it was possible, then he didn’t want to become enemies with Lin Ming. But the crux of this was, if he didn’t take Lin Ming as his enemy, would Lin Mink take him as an enemy?

Yan Chi finally snorted coldly and left the practice area. He already decided that he had to fight Lin Ming as soon as possible. If he dawdled around for a year or two, then he absolutely would not be Lin Ming’s match.

“Sir Lin, this is your qualifications token as well as an introductory jade slip to the King’s Cage for Titled Asuras. Please take it.” Deacon Bai respectfully presented a token and jade slip to Lin Ming. His manners were at the most impeccable and humble state they could be.

He never thought that for all the years he had managed this area, that he would be the one to bear witness to the birth of a Titled Asura.

“Thank you.” Lin Ming received the qualifications token. After briefly sweeping through the jade slip, he had a general sense as to what the King’s Cage was.

“Haha, Brother Lin, you truly amazed everyone with that dazzling accomplishment!”

After Yan Chi left, Da Gu began to laugh. He was very happy to see Yan Chi’s defeated expression; the two of them had never been on friendly terms to begin with.

“I never expected this…” Xun Ji covered her mouth, her eyes filled with incredulity as she looked at Lin Ming.

“It’s nothing more than destiny.” Lin Ming casually said. In truth, none of the martial artists in Skysplit Tower knew that he was only 19 years old. If they did, then these people would probably fall into a horror-filled panic.

“Brother Lin, after earning your trial qualifications, you can then enter the corresponding level of the King’s Cage. Would Brother Lin like to go and practice or have a drink for now?”

Lin Ming said, “Thank you Brother Da Gu for your kindness, but I would like to practice as soon as possible. After finishing the qualification smelting trial there are some understandings I’ve gained and I wanted to meditate on these faint insights.”

“Alright. Then, I’ll bid farewell first.” Da Gu cupped his fists together.

Lin Ming also cupped his fists together in return.

But at this time, a voice suddenly sounded out nearby. “Sir Lin, would you like to go for a drink? I would like to go, haha.”

“Mm?”

Lin Ming turned around to see an short Imp that barely reached six feet. He wore a loose embroidered robe and smiled as he walked forwards.

“What do you want?” Lin Ming asked.

As Da Gu saw this person he knit his eyebrows together. He said to Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission, “This person is High Lord Heian’s representative. I estimate that he’s here to make a deal with you. I won’t accompany you then. Brother Lin, weigh the advantages and disadvantages yourself before you come to a decision, and best of luck to you.”

Da Gu said as he left with Xun Ji. As Xun Ji left, she glared at this short Imp man, her eyes filled with obvious disgust and utter loathing.

The Imp man ignored this and said, “Sir Lin, I already have a table reserved at the Ming Teahouse. I wonder if Sir Lin would like to follow me there for a little chat? I have wonderful news to tell Sir Lin.”

“No need. Say what you want here.” Lin Ming indifferently said.

“Hoho…” The Imp man wasn’t embarrassed. He smiled and said, “It seems Sir Lin already knows why I’m here… then I’ll make this brief. Sir High Lord Heian appreciates you very much. If you want, then you may choose to pledge yourself to Sir High Lord and enter into his service for 50 years. During this period, you may use all the practice resources of Skysplit Tower as you wish. This is great news. Skysplit Tower’s practice resources cannot be compared to a Holy Land’s. Without any exaggeration, this is the best land for practice in the entire Holy Demon Continent. I wonder if Sir Lin…”

“Sorry, but I have no intention of doing that.” Lin Ming flatly refused, leaving no room for further discussion.

“Young Hero Lin, this is a fortune that others can’t have no matter how much they wish for it. You don’t know how many people are envious of this position, not to mention that you only need to pledge yourself to 50 years of service. In fact, you don't even need to stay that long. With Sir Lin's talent, at most you'll need to serve a dozen or so years. As long as…"

"Are you done speaking? I have to go practice." Lin Ming said dismissively.

There was no free lunch in this world. After signing a soul contract and becoming a dog of Skysplit Tower, although he would be able to use practice resources as he wished, he would need to block the growth of budding talents for Skysplit Tower. In other words, he would act as the hand of Skysplit Tower. For instance, this was also Xing Tian's role on the second floor.

The Imp's complexion was somewhat ugly. For better or worse, he was still a subordinate of the High Lord, yet he was actually treated this way by Lin Ming.

The Imp's smile tightened and he coldly said, "Lin Ming. A wise man knows when to retreat. If you continue to remain so stubbornly obstinate, then your only choice is to leave Skysplit Tower, lest you draw a disaster upon yourself!"

These last words were spoken through a true essence sound transmission.

Lin Ming wasn't stirred by this threat. He calmly said, "I have no interest in Skysplit Tower's control of benefits or its power struggles. At most I will stay in Skysplit Tower for another two years; I have no intention of taking your High Lords as an enemy. I only wish to peacefully practice. If some people are not relieved by this, then I can guarantee that I will give up on becoming a ten-winged Heavenly Demon and will stay at the peak of eight wings."

Lin Ming had already spoken out a great deal of concessions. Becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon and obtaining the Heavenly Demon martial intent was without a doubt tempting, but Lin Ming was well aware of just how terrifying Skysplit Tower could be. He did not intend to take the entire Skysplit Tower as an enemy just by himself. Stepping back this far was already a measure of his sincerity.

However, the Imp wasn't of the same opinion. To him, Lin Ming completely wanted to do things the hard way. The High Lords rarely thought so highly of someone, and yet this person was being so unappreciative of this. “You promise to stop at the peak of eight wings and not take the 12 High Lords as your enemy? That’s quite brave of you. Then should I represent the 12 High Lords and thank you for showing such gracious mercy? Humph!”

The Imp coldly coughed. He wanted to spit out several more ruthless words, but then he casually glimpsed the King Tablet. At the top of the stone tablet, the golden light hadn’t yet dimmed. It still continued to shine softly and silently with a warm gold light as before.

It was this wisp of golden light that caught the Imp’s attention.

That golden light actually shrouded a line of words. These words were…

‘Evil God Asura, Lin Ming’!

The Imp’s eyes instantly widened, and his mouth fell open. All of those rude words he wanted to spit out got stuck in his throat.

Titled Asura!

Heavens! Was he wrong!?

He naturally knew that this was the King Tablet. Those three names on the top had remained unchanged for thousands of years.

But today, another name had appeared. Lin Ming!

He had actually obtained this title!?

The Imp man was completely befuddled.

“Anything else you want to say?” Lin Ming’s voice was extremely cold and desolate.

“Kya!” The Imp was scared silly thus he reacted this way. He reflexively shook his head and said, “I… no… no, never mind.”

Chapter 583 – Give You One Day to Leave

Chapter 583 – Give You One Day to Leave

…

…

…

With his original arrogance dashed away, the Imp visibly withered. But one couldn't blame him for being so scared. A Titled Asura was simply too terrifying. For instance, take the Eightfall Asura Hao Gan. He finally achieved eight stages of Life Destruction and earned the great title of Eightfall War Emperor.

Among Emperors at his same level, no one was his match. Even old monsters born thousands of years ago greatly feared the Eightfall War Emperor and gave him his due respect.

If one wanted to win against the Eightfall War Emperor, they needed to achieve an absolute superiority through their cultivation. Otherwise, they would be ruthlessly oppressed by the Eightfall War Emperor.

Thinking that Lin Ming would become such a person in the future, the Imp felt his scalp tingle.

If he truly offended such a person, then even Skysplit Tower would not be able to protect him. Thus, he nodded and timidly said, "Sir Lin, this little servant will leave first."

The Imp left like he was fleeing. He didn't dare to mention the matter of pledging allegiance again to Lin Ming.

What a joke. Of Skysplit Tower's 12 High Lords, besides the Chief High Lord who was also the Tower Master, the other 11 High Lords weren't even heaven-step Asuras. There were also many of them who weren't even earth-step Asuras, so how could they expect a Titled Asura to subordinate himself to them?

There were many names on the King Tablet, but that was the total accumulation of 10,000 years. It was the converging of all the heroic young talents of the entire Holy Demon Continent. Let alone a heaven-step Asura, even an ordinary Asura was a peerless genius of their generation.

The Imp rushed to the transmission array as fast as he could, directly passing to the fourth floor where the High Lord was.

"Sir Heian, there is very bad news!"

The Imp was originally short. Coupled with his fat body, he looked like a round bouncing ball as he rushed up, stumbling and rolling through the corridor.

High Lord Heian frowned as he looked at the panicked Imp. He coldly shouted, "What are you so flustered about?!"

The plump Imp knelt on the ground, out of breath, "Sir, it's bad, Lin Ming has become a Titled Asura and earned the smelting trial qualifications!"

"I know already!" High Lord Heian coldly replied, his face glowering. In truth, he was among the first to learn that Lin Ming had become a Titled Asura. He had no need for this man to tell him that again.

When he first learned this news he was also alarmed, completely horrified. A Titled Asura… there was too much meaning behind that. This sort of character even surpassed the scope of Skysplit Tower. It involved the race war of the entire Holy Demon Continent!

As the Imp saw High Lord Heian remain silent, he didn't know what to make of things. He weakly proposed, "Sir… Lin Ming promised a moment ago that he wouldn't be enemies with us. Perhaps we can take a look at this and… change our strategies. We can remain on good terms with Lin Ming and not provoke him… if we do, then in the future…"

"Humph! Stupid!" High Lord Heian coldly shouted. The Imp was frightened. He instantly prostrated on the floor, no longer daring to say anything more.

"That Eightfall War Emperor is already the best example. If we raise a tiger then that is just drawing disaster back onto us! It will inevitably bite back! If we let another human become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon and they later become a Divine Sea Supreme Elder, then the foundation of the Blood Slaughter Steppes will be shaken!"

High Lord Heian no longer thought that Lin Ming might sign the soul contract to obey Skysplit Tower. A talent of this level was a dragon in a deep pool; their potential was limitless. How would they be willing to let others put shackles on them? Let alone him, even that heaven-step Asura Feng Shen refused to sign the soul contract. They were individuals whose pride reached the pinnacle. Would they ever be willing to be dogs for other people?

However, Feng Shen's background was extraordinary. The powerhouse behind him negotiated with the Tower Master and received a personal guarantee. Finally, Skysplit Tower was willing to compromise.

But Lin Ming was different. No one had managed to discover what major power lay behind Lin Ming, supporting him. But even if they did, that power could only be an enemy.

This was because Lin Ming was a human.

Just the Eightfall War Emperor caused Skysplit Tower to have restless nights, so how could they allow another human to rise to the position of a Supreme Elder and threaten the Blood Slaughter Steppes?

High Lord Heian was bleak as he stood up. He strode directly towards the meeting hall…

……………………

Lin Ming looked at the door of light in front of him. Behind this door of light was a minor dimension. This was the King's Cage for a Titled Asura! This Skysplit Tower simply had too many sealed dimensions within it. It was hard to imagine who was the one that initially created Skysplit Tower.

Behind Lin Ming were many martial artists standing around. They were onlookers.

Two hours ago, Lin Ming became a Titled Asura. This news already spread through the third floor like a blazing tornado. Nearly everyone had heard this unbelievable news.

Prior to this, a Titled Asura was like a fairy tale to them. They never imagined that such a thing would happen near them. This event gave off too fantastical a feeling, as if they were living a dream.

In just a few minutes, a massive number of martial artists had gathered at the special practice area entrance. They all wanted to take a gander at the stone tablet. But, there weren't actually many that had the authority to enter. Most of them could only join in on the fun by watching through the other side of the door.

After seeing the King Tablet, others couldn't help but sigh in praise. Some people even used a battle array disc to record a phantom image of the name so that others outside could see.

But more people even went to the entrance of the King's Cage, waiting for Lin Ming to enter.

At this moment, no one in the room was speaking. Most of them were just curiously looking at the door to the King's Cage, wanting to know what the difference was with a Titled Asura level King's Cage.

"Sir Lin, entering the King's Cage requires 20 slaughter points. In your life, you can only enter the King's Cage one time, and your skeletal age must be less than 30 years too. There is no time limit inside. Are you ready to enter?" Deacon Bai respectfully asked.

"I am!"

Regardless of what rank King's Cage one entered, it still cost 20 slaughter points.

By obtaining a high level smelting trial qualification, the benefits were naturally much greater.

If one only obtained normal Saint level qualifications, or even an ordinary qualification, then there wasn't much meaning in entering.

The qualification one obtained all depended on their own individual ability. A Titled Asura level King's Cage was a rare experience. It was said that after the Eightfall War Emperor entered the King's Cage, he was then able to comprehend the Laws of Space and Time. This set down the solid foundation for his future achievement of becoming an unstoppable powerhouse within his level!

However, everyone's fortunes within the King's Cage were different. Lin Ming wouldn't necessarily be the same as the Eightfall War Emperor. Whether he could come across the Concept of Space or something else was unknown.

"Sir Lin, please confirm that you have sufficient food and water. In addition, this is an escape talisman. Upon entering the King's Cage, it is possible that you will encounter an extremely dangerous or life-threatening situation. If you find that you cannot withstand it, then you can use this escape talisman to exit."

As Deacon Bai spoke, he gave Lin Ming a transmission talisman.

Although this was a talisman, it was actually carved from jade. It was similar to the escape symbol that Mu Fengxian had given to Lin Ming. The escape symbol could transmit one to a farther distance and also any space, whilst the escape talisman that Deacon Bai gave him could only transmit one to a fixed point within Skysplit Tower, not just that, but it was a very short distance.

“Thank you Deacon Bai.” Lin Ming had a good impression of this Deacon Bai. He didn’t think he would need to use this transmission symbol, but the longer he stayed in the King’s Cage, the greater his harvests would be.

Although he thought that, the truth was that it was impossible to stay in the King’s Cage forever. The longer one stayed in, the more difficult it became. At some point it would become unbearable and thus he would have to leave.

Generally, a heroic young elite from a top fourth-grade sect or a bottom fifth-grade sect would be able to stay in the King’s Cage for around 10 days of time.

On a higher step, those young outstanding youths that were listed as Asuras on the King Tablet could last 15 days to a month.

For instance, the number one ranked Heavenly Demon Seven Stars and also a heaven-step Asura, Feng Shen, was able to stay inside for 28 days.

As for the worse Yan Chi, who was listed as an earth-step Asura, he stayed within for 21 days.

According to legends, almost 3000 years ago, the person that stayed in the King’s Cage for the longest period of time was the Eightfall War Emperor. He stayed inside for an entire two months!

Beneath the Eightfall War Emperor was the Netherworld Asura Mo Kun, who stayed inside for 45 days.

There were great disparities even between Titled Asura.

As for the first Sky Ghost Asura Shentu Hongxi, because those were events from 8000 years ago, the records were unclear and there were several versions of myths. It was unknown how long the real Shentu Hongxi stayed within the King’s Cage.

After taking several deep breaths and adjusting his condition to its peak, Lin Ming's eyes burned with a brilliant fighting spirit. He was earnestly awaiting the challenge of the King's Cage!

As he was about to step forwards, at this moment, a voice called out for him.

"Stop right there!"

Mm?

Lin Ming turned around to see that the representative that High Lord Heian sent out had reappeared. And, in front of him was a Giant Demon wearing a black suit of armor with a cape thrown over his shoulder. His body was solid and tight as if it were sculpted of iron, his muscles nearly bursting from his armor. His eyes seemed to flash like lightning.

From this Giant Demon man's body, Lin Ming sensed a terrifying aura. This fellow was absolutely a master!

Lin Ming frowned, "What is it?"

Around Lin Ming, many other martial artists saw the caped man and their expressions changed.

"Maha!"

"Maha is the third ranked amongst the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars!"

Some people immediately recognized the caped Giant Demon's identity. On Skysplit Tower's third floor, Maha's strength far surpassed Da Gu's.

"This fellow is Maha?" As Lin Ming looked at the caped Giant Demon, he was slightly startled. He had already heard of Maha's name all the way back in Sun Flood City.

"You are Lin Ming!" Maha looked at Lin Ming, his pitch black eyes seemed as if they could see through Lin Ming.

“Why are you looking for me?”

“Hehe.” Maha’s laugh was like gravel. “There are some things that I wish to talk to you about. Come with me.”

“No need. If you need to say something, then say it here. I’m busy with my practice.” Lin Ming’s voice was calm, but it carried a faintly keen aura.

“Humph.” After being directly rejected by Lin Ming, Maha was a bit annoyed. “Your practice can wait!”

“The High Lord has spoken. He gives you one day to leave Skysplit Tower. You’ve already been at Skysplit Tower for over a year and a half. You’ve already gained a great harvest here. You’ve accumulated a great deal of infernal energy, made gains in practice, and also become extremely wealthy. People should know just how far they can reach, and be content with what they have lest they overreach.” Maha used a true essence sound transmission to speak. This sort of implicit threat went against Skysplit Tower’s rules. Naturally, he couldn’t speak publicly.

“You want me to leave? I’ve just obtained the qualifications to enter the Titled Asura King’s Cage, and you want me to leave? Is there anything more ridiculous in this world?” Lin Ming angrily laughed. If he left here, then he’d really be letting others bully him to the extreme.

Chapter 584 – Opening the Cage

Chapter 584 – Opening the Cage

…

…

…

"Ridiculous? Hahaha!" Maha laughed. "Letting you practice for so long in Skysplit Tower is already letting you take advantage of us. Now we are even letting you leave with your life intact, but you still have such much nonsense to babble on about. Do you still not understand anything? Here, strength is everything! You'd better be smart enough to know what to do, or else, if you want to do things the hard way… hehe…" Maha's words ended here with a sneer. The meaning behind this threat was very obvious. Of course, he didn't dare to speak this out publicly and instead used a true essence sound transmission.

"So you're saying that someone's going to come and deal with me? I wonder who you're going to send. The Heavenly Demon Seven Stars? A High Lord?" Lin Ming aggressively responded, simply unafraid of Maha.

If Lin Ming was really assassinated then that would truly be a troublesome matter. Lin Ming was simply too strong; killing him would make a giant mess of things. If a High Lord personally acted then that would be blatantly violating Skysplit Tower's rules. If that time came, then the rumor of 'all the strong people who go to Skysplit Tower will be killed' would spread like wildfire. If this happened, then who else would still dare come to Skysplit Tower?

Maha grimaced. "It seems that you're going to resist until the end. Fine, I will take one step back. If you leave Skysplit Tower then I'll give you a tael of low-grade Demon God Bone. This is my final offer."

"Demon God Bone?"

Lin Ming's mind stirred.

"Humph, you probably don't know how valuable something like that is. I can tell you without exaggeration that a Demon God Bone is enough to cause a Demon King level martial artist to go crazy! Using it to just temper the body is a waste. If one integrates it into their life source and nourishes the fires of their life, then it can even be of great help to someone trying to break through to be a Demon Emperor!"

The Demon God Bone was naturally promised by the High Lords. Maha hadn't wanted to give this to Lin Ming, but after seeing Lin Ming so stubborn and defiant, he could only reluctantly put out this condition.

"Integrate it into one's life source to nourish the fire of life. It can help a Demon King powerhouse break through the Demon Emperor bottleneck. It can be used to temper the body, but that is a waste… I see…"

Lin Ming learned a great deal from Maha's words. It was obvious that Maha didn't know Lin Ming had already obtained a Demon God Bone.

According to Lin Ming's knowledge from the own Demon God Bone he had, a tael worth of low-grade Demon God Bone was only the size of a cherry seed.

As for the one Lin Ming had, it was the size of a pigeon egg. This was the Demon God Bone that was granted to Xing Tian.

A mere Xing Tian with his status as the king of the second floor could obtain a Demon God Bone the size of a pigeon egg.

But his own Titled Asura level King's Cage qualifications which hadn't been seen in 3000 years could only qualify for a cherry seed-sized Demon God Bone. This was just too cheap!

"I'm sorry, but I am not interested!"

“You!!” Maha was now burning with anger. “Lin Ming, let me give you some advice. People shouldn’t be too greedy, because the greedy always die. In Skysplit Tower, haven’t you obtained Blood Demon Crystals, practice resources, pills, treasures, jade slips, and all sorts of other things? Now you are even allowed to leave in peace without spitting out everything you’ve taken!”

A cold light flashed in Lin Ming’s eyes. He no longer used a true essence sound transmission and said clearly and loudly, “Skysplit Tower is a land that anyone can enter. You said that I obtained a massive amount of Blood Demon Crystals, practice resources, pills, treasure, jade slips, and what else? Well, that is not wrong! However, this is not granted to me by Skysplit Tower, but it is what I have earned through my life and death battles! What does any of this have to do with you?

“This Skysplit Tower was not constructed by you Giant Demons, nor the Imps, nor the Fey! It has stood tall here for 100,000 years. Several tens of thousands of years ago, this land was once the common resource of all the martial artists of the Holy Demon Continent. But some people relied on their powerful strength and united all the different powers, making all of the budding talents their minions. They called themselves High Lords even as they amassed wealth and stole away control of Skysplit Tower’s great resources. They created all sorts of rules making it so that other martial artists have to slaughter each other to reach them, all in order to obtain the tiniest chances, and why is it that they are allowed to do that?”

Lin Ming’s questions were shouted out, stunning all of the martial artists around him.

Lin Ming’s words naturally made sense. It was just that these people had long accepted the High Lords’ rules. It wasn’t that they wanted to accept them, but that they had no choice but to.

These people present were not the High Lords’ subordinates nor had they signed soul contracts. As they heard Lin Ming say all this, their hearts were in uproar.

Maha’s complexion turned ugly. “Good! Very good! Since that’s the case then there’s nothing more to say! Don’t regret your words in the future!”

“When I decide something, I never regret it!”

“Remember your words!” Maha coldly snorted and stomped off.

According to the rules of Skysplit Tower, Lin Ming truly did have the authority to enter the King’s Cage. No one could stop him.

Skysplit Tower’s High Lords were truly afraid of this. The current Lin Ming wasn’t already impossible to control. If he entered the King’s Cage, then he would undoubtedly grow.

The growth of a new human Divine Sea Supreme Elder was not something that any of the other races wished to see.

After Maha left, the surrounding martial artists were still confused. The conversation that Lin Ming had with Maha was mostly carried out in true essence sound transmissions. Since just a portion of that conversation was heard, none of them were sure what happened.

Lin Ming, without saying anything, lifted his foot and entered the door of light leading to the King’s Cage.

In full view of everyone, Lin Ming’s figure disappeared. The door of light shook, ripples spreading out over the surface just like a fish leaping into a pool of water. Then, this quickly calmed down, vanishing without a trace.

Today was the Dustnet Month, Sunlight Day.

This date was recorded down by Deacon Bai. It would be used to calculate just how much time Lin Ming spent in the King’s Cage.

After Lin Ming disappeared, the surrounding martial artists naturally dispersed. Like this, the entire practice area was restored to its former calm…

……………………..

Lin Ming felt his body shake as if he had jumped into a pool of water. A sense of icy cold hit him, and then he saw that he had arrived in a vast white space.

Xiu!

A distorted black ray of light appeared, spinning around Lin Ming. These black lights began to appear one after another, becoming more and more intense until they ultimately formed a completely enclosed cage around Lin Ming, sealing him within.

"Mm?"

Lin Ming's mind went cold. This was the King's Cage.

At this moment, a voice passed into Lin Ming's mind. To be more exact, this wasn't a voice, but rather a form of direct communication that passed straight into the depths of his soul. Without words, without language, it allowed him to directly understand the meaning of it all.

"I'm supposed to break out of this cage. So this is what the King's Cage practice is like! Since it's like this, why do they say those people that stay in the King's Cage longer will experience more growth, and why would someone weak not even last 10 days before they are kicked out of this smelting trial space?"

Lin Ming had some doubts. Logically speaking, the less time it took to break out of the King's Cage, the stronger that person should be.

But the information he obtained was the opposite of that.

The weak could not stay in here long. But, the strong could stay as long as two months or more.

"There must be some trick to this place. I'll practice here and then figure it out as I go."

Lin Ming closed his eyes. A moment later, he took out the Purple Comet Spear. Above the spear shaft, azure true essence erupted.

"Break for me!"

Lin Ming gave a loud shout and stabbed out his spear at the cage's black barrier. There was just a slight 'kacha' sound as the black barrier suddenly trembled, but only a shallow mark was left. It was far from breaking apart.

"That's solid!"

Lin Ming's heart went cold. Besides opening the Heretical God Force or using the Concepts of Thunder and Fire, that strike had contained his full strength.

That strike should have been able to shatter an earth-step treasure armor. But when it hit the King's Cage, it only left behind a shallow mark.

"This should be normal too." Lin Ming wasn't surprised. If he could break through with just a single spear thrust, then there wasn't much meaning in this.

The Heretical God Force opened. Lin Ming also simultaneously used the Concept of Thunder.

Chasing Thunder!

Man and spear became one. Lin Ming turned into a purple light that smashed into the barrier.

Kacha!

With an explosion, thick arcs of electricity danced along the cage's walls like wriggling pythons. The King's Cage shook violently for a moment as several thin cracks appeared.

"It's broken?

"If it broke so easily… this King's Cage can't be that simple."

Chasing Thunder!

Boom!

The black barrier that already had cracks in it could no longer withstand Lin Ming's continued attacks. Like a pane of glass, it suddenly shattered into countless small pieces!

The King's Cage broke!

The black barrier loudly collapsed, all of it disintegrating into powder before vanishing into the void. Lin Ming once again returned to that vast white space.

This empty white space was endless; it gave off an extremely depressing sense.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

A series of sounds happened. Black arcs of light fell down on Lin Ming, wrapping around him and enveloping him once again. It quickly condensed into another black barrier, except this time it was much thicker.

Lin Ming instantly understood. That King's Cage from a moment ago had only been an appetizer.

The King's Cage smelting trial was divided into multiple levels!

The weak could only make it through a few layers, so they naturally stayed here for a shorter period of time. But a powerhouse could rush past many more, thus they stayed here a longer time.

"But… aren't there martial artists that don't break the cage and just spend months in here? Can't they stay here for a longer period of time using that method too?"

Lin Ming couldn't help but ask this question.

“It seems like the King’s Cage is more complex that I imagined it to be. It absolutely can’t be so simple!”

Thinking much more on this was pointless. He would slowly find out the further he got. What Lin Ming needed to do now was to break open this second prison cage.

Ho-!

The Heretical God Force opened once again!

………………

“He refused?”

On Skysplit Tower’s fourth floor, High Lord Shengong was looking at Maha as he calmly asked him a question.

“That ungrateful boy wants to do things the hard way.” Maha bitterly said. He had taken the matter of Lin Ming publicly refusing him to heart.

“Shengong, I already said that the boy wouldn’t be obedient. What can we do? We’ve even offered a Demon God Bone and yet he still refused! How can we possibly wait for that boy to become as strong as he wants before he leaves Skysplit Tower on his own volition? We might as well use this time when we are still stronger than him and carry out my plan!” In a corner of the hall, High Lord Heian was sitting in a chain, his fingers lightly rapping against his old wooden staff.

High Lord Shengong hesitated and slowly said, “I don’t believe the promises of a human. Heian, you want to lock Lin Ming in the King’s Cage until he dies, but how can we do that? We do not have the ability to alter Skysplit Tower’s special practice areas.”

“Rest assured, I have my methods.” High Lord Heian cunningly smiled, his dark eyes as deep as the abyss.

Chapter 585 – Heavenly Demon Force Field

Chapter 585 – Heavenly Demon Force Field

…

…

…

“Penetrating Rainbow!”

Lin Ming gave a loud shot, opening the Heretical God Force to the limit. On the Purple Comet Spear, the Concepts of Thunder and Fire began to unceasingly blend together. Man and spear became one, turning into a comet that smashed into the black barrier.

Bang!

The black barrier viciously trembled. Under the impact of this unrivaled force, the black barrier completely shattered.

Lin Ming ran out of the King’s Cage once more.

“Third!”

Lin Ming had continuously broken through three cages. To him, this wasn’t too difficult.

At this time, a fluid conscious thought entered into Lin Ming’s mind once again, passing a wordless message to him.

“Mm? After breaking through the first three cages, that completes the basic test for a Titled Asura and I can choose to leave after…”

Lin Ming saw that not too far away, a light appeared out of thin air. After a while, it actually formed into a transmission array. According to what he had just learned, he could leave the King's Cage as long as he stepped into the transmission array.

"Should I leave the King's Cage or continue practicing?

"Of course I'll continue!"

Lin Ming estimated that only four hours or so had passed since he entered. He certainly wouldn't leave so soon.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

Beams of light fell down like rain, but this time they were no longer black. Instead, they were seven-colored like a bright spring rainbow.

Lin Ming could feel that there was a very big difference between the light from now and before. But how, he actually couldn't say.

"Interesting!"

As the rainbow light formed into a new King's Cage around Lin Ming, his true essence constantly revolved within him. The Heretical God Force began to brilliantly burn...

At night, within the special practice area of Skysplit Tower, dozens of golden seals were floating in the air. A caped old Imp was standing there, drawing with a red painted brush as he constantly drew new seals in space. The seals connected to each other, as if they were isolating an entire space.

Behind this old Imp was High Lord Heian. He was expressionlessly watching the old Imp's actions, silent, until the black caped Imp finished drawing up the first section of seals. High Lord Heian then asked, "Master Suo Ge, how long will the great spatial lock array you're laying down need to be completed?"

"Around two days." The old Imp said.

Suo Ge was the greatest array master within the Blood Slaughter Steppes. He was simultaneously skilled in current array formations as well as having deeply studied ancient array formations.

When Suo Ge was young he had suffered a grievous injury, causing the demon crystal within him to break. Although he had been able to maintain his life through the liberal use of high quality pills, his injury was too heavy, causing permanent damage that couldn’t be restored. This caused his cultivation to be forever stranded within the Demon King realm.

Since it was hopeless for him to attempt further cultivating, Suo Ge used the remainder of his time to thoroughly research and analyze array formations.

Through coincidence, he found his own lucky chance, obtaining a small portion of a legacy concerning ancient arrays. After studying them through meditation, his understanding of ancient arrays reached a very high level.

“Mm, good. Then for these two days, I’ll temporarily close this area away from the public so you can feel at ease while you lay down the array. There must not be any mistakes.

“Of course.” Suo Ge said as he returned to drawing the array.

The dimension of the King’s Cage led to a transmission array in Skysplit Tower. After finishing with the smelting trial, a martial artist would need to pass through this transmission array in order to leave.

This was an array formation that belonged to Skysplit Tower itself. Suo Ge naturally didn’t have the ability to alter it.

But, what he could do was use a roundabout way and block the surrounding space around the transmission array, trapping Lin Ming within the King’s Cage.

“Master Suo Ge, how long can this great spatial lock array be maintained for?” High Lord Heian asked.

"Probably around four months."

"Four months is enough." High Lord Heian's lips curved up in a sinister smile. If Lin Ming was trapped in the King's Cage for four months, then he didn't believe he would be able to return alive.

Once the King's Cage surpassed the limit that a martial artist could bear, it would turn into a life-threatening situation. Otherwise, martial artists wouldn't be given escape talismans.

Even so, there had been many martial artists that had perished within the King's Cage.

For a Titled Asura to die within the King's Cage… that would certainly be entertaining news.

Although this would arouse the suspicions of many people, High Lord Heian couldn't manage so many matters.

High Lord Heian thought about it again and said, "Master Suo Ge, could you return sometime within four months and reinforce the array formation again."

"I can." Suo Ge said.

"Four months added with another four months, altogether eight months. Even if you are a True Dragon, you will still die trapped within the King's Cage!"

……………………

Time passed a day at a time. With Lin Ming being immersed in his practice, the notion of time had become blurred to him.

"Break!"

Lin Ming's spear thrust into the rainbow wall of light. The wall of light fiercely trembled, but after several breaths of shaking, it stopped without the slightest hint of damage on it.

That one strike just now had contained all of Lin Ming's strength, but it hadn't even been able to cause a dent. Still, Lin Ming wasn't impatient. He began to quietly prepare his next attack.

After such a long time in here, Lin Ming had finally discovered the rules of the King's Cage.

Breaking the King's Cage didn't depend on a single strike to reach the standard that could break the cage. Rather, it looked at the total accumulated strike damage to measure whether it achieved the standard.

It was like the cage itself had an invisible life value. Every attack against this barrier would consume a part of this value. When all of this value was depleted, then the cage would naturally break.

At the critical point right before the peak, even a random punch would shatter the cage.

In other words, as long as one had enough time, they could continuously break through these cages.

Currently, Lin Ming had already been stuck inside these rainbow colored walls of light for two or three days.

However, as time passed, he began to discover that something suspicious was happening. This rainbow colored cage began to be filled with an invisible energy field.

At the beginning, this faint energy field only disturbed Lin Ming's inner true essence a little. Afterwards, with time, the energy field began to grow increasingly strong, until it reached the point that it affected Lin Ming's entire body, forming a heavy pressure upon him.

From his flesh to his organs, meridians, dantian, everything was enveloped in this heavy pressure. His heartbeat became heavier, and the blood in his veins seemed to flow like molasses. Even his true essence circulation was no longer smoothly travelling through his meridians. Even a breath took more effort than normal.

After some time, even Lin Ming's soul came under its effect.

Lin Ming was startled. He felt that this invisible energy field had already penetrated deep into his spiritual sea where it began to intensely collide with the black vortex of the Samsara martial intent.

"What is this?"

Lin Ming had never experienced such a strange energy field like this.

At this moment, a voice appeared in Lin Ming's mind.

"This is the Heavenly Demon martial intent."

What?

Heavenly Demon martial intent!

Lin Ming was shocked. After one became a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, they could obtain the Heavenly Demon martial intent. Once this special martial intent activated, it could form a 'domain' around the possessor. This was the so-called 'force field'.

Every time someone stepped into this domain, they would come under the influence of this force field, only able to use 50 to 60% of their full strength.

The weaker one was, the greater the effects of the Heavenly Demon martial intent would be on them.

"I see. So that's how it is. The Heavenly Demon martial intent creates pressure on a person's body and soul. Thus, this would influence a martial artist's strength. If a martial artist was particularly weak, then they wouldn't be able to withstand entering this energy field, and would vomit blood or even die.

"If someone was enveloped by this energy field and had to constantly attack with all of their effort, then the load on their muscles, meridians, and organs could be imagined. No wonder some martial artists can only last for several days."

Lin Ming was suddenly enlightened. In this case, if a martial artist had to squeeze out all of their potential to the limit, their harvests would be great if they could withstand it. But, if they couldn't then it wasn't a surprise if they died.

After withstanding this pressure, Lin Ming attacked the rainbow colored cage again and again.

Because the flow of his true essence was hindered, every attack consumed much more energy than before.

With the constant increasing of the energy field's pressure, he felt his body becoming notably heavy, and from his head to his toes, every place felt uncomfortable.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

On the rainbow colored barrier, the light of thunder and fire coalescing together blazed brilliantly.

But in this non-stop attack, Lin Ming discovered that under this great pressure, the benefits he received were much greater than what he imagined they would be.

If a martial artist's meridians were a canal and the dantian was the source of water, then the muscles, skeletons, and organs were the farmland that needed to be irrigated.

After reaching the Xiantian realm, whether a martial artist was cultivating or attacking, the acupoints throughout their body would be constantly absorbing heaven and earth origin energy, gathering it into the dantian before releasing it into the meridians where it spread throughout the body.

This sort of passive method of transportation had a considerable limitation, and that was no matter what happened, it was difficult for the heaven and earth origin energy to penetrate deep into every part of the body.

Normally, whether it was combat or practice, even if the body's energy was consumed to the limit and one was incomparably exhausted, there would always be some acupoints and meridians that weren't used.

If the body didn't thoroughly experience this, then it would affect one's foundation, interfering with the growth of their strength.

But this Heavenly Demon martial intent energy field was different. This force field was a wondrous state. Not only was it formless and invisible, but it could easily penetrate into every tiny cell within the body; not even hair would be left out.

Heartbeat, blood flow, muscles, skeleton, marrow, meridians, every part of the body no matter how small had to overcome the suppression of this energy field. They would need to autonomously absorb true essence and also use that true essence.

This process was an exceedingly good experience.

In this energy field, even if one stood stock still, it would still be a form of practice, much less now when one had to make all sorts of high intensity attacks under extreme conditions.

The benefits to the body were massive.

Not only would the essence gathering system be tempered, but the body transformation system was the same.

As for someone like Lin Ming who had a dual cultivation of energy and body, this was simply a paradisiacal environment.

After realizing this, Lin Ming became thrilled. His attacks became increasingly swift and fierce.

As spear lights kept thrusting towards a single point, Lin Ming opened the Heretical God Force as he combusted the blood of the Ancient Phoenix!

With his entire body having to withstand this massive pressure as well as the crazy amount of true essence absorption, this sudden and intense change caused some of the blood vessels near the surface of his skin to directly burst open!

“No stopping here!”

Bang!

With a thunderous explosion, the entire rainbow colored cage shattered like glass!

Lin Ming gasped, dragging in deep breaths. Some of the muscles on his arms were torn open and dripping with blood.

He had consumed 70 to 80% of his true essence and his body was terribly tired. However, the advantages he obtained were great. He discovered that unconsciously, his late Xiantian realm cultivation was becoming more stabilized. He had begun to take steps towards the extreme Xiantian realm!

Chapter 586 – Chaos Prison

Chapter 586 – Chaos Prison

…

…

…

From the late Xiantian to extreme Xiantian, this increase in cultivation wouldn't cause Lin Ming's relative strength to rise by much.

But from extreme Xiantian to Revolving Core, that was a massive leap!

Within the Sky Spill Continent, a Xiantian martial artist could be haughty and arrogant within a small mortal country. But, a Revolving Core master could actually dominate their own area, creating their own sect.

After swallowing down some recovery pills, Lin Ming didn't even have time to heal before a new cage came shrouding down on him, closing him in once more.

But the Heavenly Demon force field hadn't weakened in the slightest. It still enveloped Lin Ming, making it difficult for him to even regenerate his wounds.

"Once this Heavenly Demon force field comes down, it won't weaken even if I break apart the cage. As long as I stay in the King's Cage, every day I do means I will have to withstand the pressure of the Heavenly Demon force field for another day!"

This covered every tiny unit in his body, and even his soul came under heavy pressure. This feeling left one gasping for breath. And what was most frightening was that the Heavenly Demon force field slowly strengthened over time.

This was why even a top talent like Feng Shen could only stay within the King's Cage for 28 days.

He was too exhausted.

If this was normal practice, then after someone exhausted all of their true essence they could just sit in meditation for several hours and then take a long sleep to recover all their physical strength.

But in the King's Cage, they had to resist the pressure of the Heavenly Demon force field even when they were sleeping, constantly consuming true essence.

If a martial artist with a poor recovery rate came and his rate of true essence consumption was higher than what he could recover in meditation, how could he persist in the King's Cage?

However, consumption of energy was not a problem to Lin Ming. In terms of endurance and resilience, he was superior to even those old first stage Life Destruction monsters! Of course, his strength was far weaker than theirs.

Time passed day by day. Lin Ming didn't know how much time passed, but no matter how prodigious his resilience was, after facing such heavy pressure constantly in this environment, he still felt his mind and body sliding into collapse.

Of his entire body, there was no point that wasn't distressed. Even his spiritual sea was bearing this tremendous pressure.

This caused Lin Ming to be especially startled. His soul defensive strength was in no way inferior to a Life Destruction powerhouse's, but if even he felt such a weight on his soul, then other people's situations could be inferred.

"This is truly worthy of a Titled Asura smelting trial. If the Eightfall War Emperor could last for two whole months here, then he was certainly a proud son of heaven amongst his generation..."

……………

Skysplit Tower, special practice area.

A light flashed and a white-robed youth left the practice area, silently looking at the King’s Cage. This young man was the first ranked master of Skysplit Tower’s third floor, Feng Shen.

At this time, the door of light leading to the King’s Cage was calmly flowing, like an ocean wave in a gentle breeze.

However, under this seemingly calm appearance, Feng Shen was well aware as to how great the pressure within the King’s Cage would rise to be.

Today was already the 40th day!!!

When Feng Shen entered the King’s Cage, he had only been able to stay within for 28 days.

The duration that one could persist inside had nothing to do with one’s individual cultivation. Rather, it looked at a martial artist's talent, tenacity, perseverance, will, cultivation, and other factors that affected it.

Thinking back to his experience in the King’s Cage, Feng Shen still had a lingering fear. As he nearly finished the 28th day, the pressure suddenly rose by another level. It was horrible to the point of tearing his meridians and crushing his soul.

As a last resort, Feng Shen had to use the escape talisman to leave.

“40 days… that already approaches the level of the Netherworld Asura. This is a talent that challenges the heavens themselves. Him and I were both born in the same era. I don’t know whether that is luck or misfortune…”

Feng Shen shook his head, turned his eyes and walked away.

Five days passed in a flash.

45 days!

This was a time equal to the Netherworld Asura. The news quickly spread through the third floor like wildfire.

This implication of this was that Lin Ming's talent already surpassed the Netherworld Asura's!

This was truly a legendary achievement. Towards Lin Ming, the martial artists of the third floor felt admiration, envy, jealousy, veneration, love, every single viewpoint could be found.

Lately, a great number of martial artists either wittingly or unwittingly passed by the special practice area every day, wanting to see if that was the time that Lin Ming would come out.

The number of days continued to increase.

46 days, 47 days, 48 days… 50 days!

As long as he could stay within for another 10 days, then that was the record of the Eightfall War Emperor!

If so, then that was truly a heaven-piercing achievement!

To this extent, the number of people jealous of Lin Ming actually grew smaller and smaller.

When Lin Ming's lofty star far surpassed them, their jealous hearts paled. This was because they were simply not on the same level, so there was no point in competing with him. Instead, these individuals would rather witness the birth of a miracle in front of them.

"Humph! What a group of idiots! Do they really think that Lin Ming has lasted until now?" In a luxurious restaurant in the vicinity of the practice area, Yan Chi was drinking wine, sneering at the crowd gathered outside the special practice area.

In front of him were Maha and Kai Yang.

These three people had pledged their allegiance to Skysplit Tower one year ago. Because they signed a soul contract, they were loyal to Skysplit Tower. Naturally, High Lord Heian had no need to hide the truth from them.

They were already aware that Lin Ming would never emerge from the King's Cage.

"50 days. Lin Ming most likely died inside. Although he was a truly prodigious character, he was still not on the same level as the Eightfall War Emperor. Even if he could compare with the Eightfall War Emperor, it wouldn't matter anyway. High Lord Heian has already decided to seal the King's Cage for eight months. Even if Lin Ming was the reincarnation of a demon god, there's nothing he could do about it." Maha sneered from the side while throwing some dried fruits into his mouth.

"Hehe, I really want to see these people's expressions after another three or four months; I will be ecstatic. They all think that Lin Ming can create some sort of miracle, but none of them will know that Lin Ming has already died. A Titled Asura level talent has actually died in Skysplit Tower, how ironic is that!" Kai Yang repulsively grinned as he stroked his wrinkled chin. In his heart, he was thinking it was unfortunate that there was a Demon God Bone in Lin Ming's spatial ring.

Kai Yang had also seen this Demon God Bone before. It was the size of pigeon's egg. For it to be left within the King's Cage without knowing whether or not it would ever come out was simply a great waste.

"Let's go. The High Lord has made an exception and opened up the Divine Image Hall for us. We will each have 10 days to meditate inside and learn as much as we can. Let's go back and prepare so that we're in our best condition for it. We can't miss this opportunity."

"Mm, let's go."

……………………

In the King's Cage, the Heavenly Demon force field's pressure rose another level. These past days, Lin Ming had discovered another rule, and that was that the Heavenly Demon force field's pressure would rise another level every 10 days!

During this grueling process, Lin Ming's body was constantly adapting towards this higher pressure. His body, meridians, all of these were being tempered and unceasingly strengthening.

As the Heavenly Demon force field grew stronger, so did Lin Ming.

"Mm... this is?"

When a new cage came falling down, Lin Ming was startled. This time, the cage was completely different from the usual barriers of light.

Fu---!

Everything in front of him turned pitch-black, chaotic. He couldn't see anything at all!

A thick darkness manifested into reality, fusing together with the Heavenly Demon force field. An overwhelming force enveloped everything, making Lin Ming feel as if he were suffocating!

This chaotic darkness contained a great resistance. Even moving was extremely difficult.

Lin Ming felt as if he had sunk deep into a quagmire. He couldn't see anything. Even when he released his perception, it was blocked by this chaotic darkness.

His perception could only extend a single inch outwards from his body!

To a martial artist, this was no different than blinding them.

Lin Ming's chest ached. He tried to breathe, but the amount of air he inhaled was pathetic.

Could the Eightfall War Emperor have been defeated at this pass?

Lin Ming carefully thought back. When he had first entered the King’s Cage, it had been around 10 days before he encountered the bitter taste of the Heavenly Demon force field.

This could also explain why the worst of all martial artists could only last 10 days in the King’s Cage before they were defeated. This was probably because they couldn’t withstand the beginning of the Heavenly Demon force field.

Then, Lin Ming began to count. The Heavenly Demon force field had strengthened around five times by now. If he wasn’t wrong, then 50 days had passed. In addition to the 10 days at the start, this was his 60th day. This was the same time that the Eightfall War Emperor had forced out!

What kind of amazing character was the Eightfall? He had crossed eight stages of Life Destruction while grasping the Concepts of Space and Time, then becoming a great Emperor that was peerless within his level. As a human, he overcame all odds and earned the title of 12-winged Heavenly Demon within Skysplit Tower!

But he had been defeated at this stage! This proved just how difficult this part of the trial was!

“Senior Eightfall was defeated here. Then, let me see just how far I can go!”

Lin Ming roared out and the Heretical God Seed erupted. His skeletons began to issue popping sounds as the faint cry of a dragon emerged from within his body.

The Purple Comet Spear lay horizontal. On the spear point, the power of thunder and fire wove together.

Penetrating Rainbow!

A spear thrust out. A radiant spear cut through the stick black chaos, a ripple shaped thrust penetrating dozens of feet far away!

However, this strike ended here. The spear light was eventually swallowed by the black chaos. The three foot wide hole and the spiral ripples that extended dozens of feet out slowly vanished.

Lin Ming's eyes flashed. He took an immediate step forward and crashed into that spiral shaped tunnel he had formed. In a single step, he jumped a hundred feet forwards. But then, he was suddenly engulfed once more by that black chaos!

The resistance suddenly increased. Every step Lin Ming took was beset with hardship!

Without a doubt, this sticky black chaos was the King's Cage of this round!

In the last cage, as long as one had enough striking power, they could break through it sooner or later. But now this current cage, no matter how fierce one's attack was, it would eventually fade away into this regenerating darkness that had manifested into existence.

He could only rely on his own two feet to leave!

Lin Ming took out several dozen high-grade Blood Demon Crystals from his spatial ring. In a single breath he sucked dry all of their heaven and earth origin energy as well as their blood vitality.

Eight Inner Hidden Gates – Gate of Healing, open!

Bang!

Between Lin Ming's clavicles, a white light began to shine!

Lin Ming had only touched upon the threshold of the Gate of Healing – he hadn't actually opened it yet. If he forcefully used the Gate of Healing's strength, then it would instantly place a great burden on his body.

After touching the Gate of Healing, a powerful resiliency and strength came gushing out.

Lin Ming aimed at the direction he started moving in and thrust out his spear!

The spear light pierced through the black chaos. Lin Ming moved forwards, one step at a time.

Lin Ming didn’t know how large this black chaos was, or whether this was the correct method to leave this chaos prison. But he had no choice.

All he could do was move forwards!

Chapter 587 – Perhaps, Him Alone In 10,000 Years

Chapter 587 – Perhaps, Him Alone In 10,000 Years

…

…

…

Two months, and Lin Ming still hadn't come out!

As the time passed 61 days, the news rapidly spread throughout Skysplit Tower. The time that Lin Ming had been in the King's Cage for had already surpassed the Eightfall War Emperor's record!

This was the creation of a new legend! The only one to do so in 10,000 years!

Soon, not only did the martial artists of the third level know, but even those of the second floor and first floor. Although these people didn't know what it meant to stay in the King's Cage for two months, what they did know was that Lin Ming was the first to do so in the last recorded 10,000 years. Even the mortals in Skysplit Tower were awed by this.

"The first in 10,000 years. I never thought this could happen, ever!"

In a simple teahouse, Muk Gu was sampling tea, listening to the surrounding martial artists speak. He had been on the second floor for the last several days visiting his sister, and now that he learned this, he felt it a bit incredible himself.

"Maybe after a few dozen more years, the Holy Demon Continent will have another Eightfall War Emperor!"

In front of Muk Gu, Muk Qing was eating cake. She thought for a moment and said, “It’s been a year and a half since I first saw him. I never thought that he’d turn out so fierce… Senior-apprentice Brother, do you think that we can win him over?”

“Win him over? With what? We are just an ordinary fifth-grade sect. We don’t even know what sort of background Lin Ming has. It’s impossible for a talent of this degree to just come out of nowhere. He might have some top powerhouse as his master.”

Muk Gu shook his head and continued to stir his tea. He took another sip and said, “A character like this, it’s impossible for us to draw him in; it’s already fortunate enough if we can remain on good terms with him. Although the first time we met was relatively bad, afterwards I think I eliminated any problems. I could consider us as having a bit of friendship.”

Within the Holy Demon Continent, humans had been in a miserable position or a long time. Muk Gu was glad to see a top human powerhouse be born in front of his eyes.

Of course, if he could remain on good terms with Lin Ming then that would also be a great benefit to his sect.

………………………

Time passed slowly. Soon, it had been 70 days!

On the third floor, the news had already passed on. Rumors were spreading crazily. Every day, there would be a massive amount of martial artists rushing towards the special practice area, wanting to see if Lin Ming would come out.

He had actually stayed in the King’s Cage for 10 days longer than the Eightfall War Emperor. Just what sort of monstrous talent was this?

“70 days…”

Feng Shen quietly watched the door of light leading to the King's Cage, his eyes flashing with a cold light. Before now, he never thought that Lin Ming would be able to reach this degree.

Feng Shen had once been immeasurably proud of his talent. But now, he had been far surpassed by Lin Ming.

"Hehe, Feng Shen, this is the first time seeing such an expression on your face." A voice suddenly sounded out.

Feng Shen turned to see Kai Yang.

Kai Yang rubbed his chin, smiling as he looked towards the door of light leading to the King's Cage, a look of indifference on his face. "Feng Shen, this isn't like you at all. Aren't you usually so high and mighty? Since when did you have such a startled appearance?"

Feng Shen frowned. With his prideful attitude, he usually never interacted with anyone – he simply disdained speaking to these people.

In Feng Shen's eyes, Kai Yang was nothing but a dog that worked for resources. Such a person could make a bit of progress, but their will and mind were not strong. It was impossible for someone like this to soar into the sky!

Without a word, Feng Shen turned and left.

Seeing Feng Shen's response, Kai Yang was a bit displeased. He coldly snorted and said, "Do you think Lin Ming is still practicing inside? Do you really believe he has the talent to surpass the Eightfall War Emperor? Hehe, maybe he's already died inside."

In the King's Cage, there was always the risk of death.

Before the creation of the escape talismans, there was an extremely high chance that a martial artist would perish within the King's cage. A great number of martial artists believed that they could withstand the pressure from the Heavenly Demon force field. In order to squeeze out all their potential and improve even more, they would break through a cage, getting more and more until finally, the pressure from the Heavenly Demon force field grew too much. At that time, as attacking became more and more difficult, they would finally be unable to break through the cage, resulting in their death within.

After the escape talismans were created, the death rate greatly decreased. But, there were still those who died inside.

It was like a mortal that didn't sleep for several days while doing high intensity work, this too could cause sudden death. For a martial artist, if they stayed under the massive pressure of the Heavenly Demon force field, their heart, dantian, and soul all came under an enormous burden. If this accumulated for a long enough time, then it was possible they could suddenly die!

The heart could stop beating, the spiritual sea could collapse, or even the dantian might explode… in this case, one would die before they had the chance use the escape talisman.

"Die inside?" Feng Shen chuckled, "How could a True Dragon level talent die inside the King's Cage!?"

"F*ck! What is so great about this Feng Shen! Just because his background is good and his talent is high, he doesn't keep us in his eyes. If he came from the same background as I did then I wouldn't need to be so humble in front of him! Shit, I'll wait and see whether or not you can still say Lin Ming will create a miracle once he's been inside for 100 days, 120 days! True Dragon level talent, f*ck that!"

Kai Yang muttered to himself, blatantly envious of Lin Ming.

'Hehe, I wonder what sort of expression you'll have once you know that Lin Ming died inside the King's Cage. A pinnacle Emperor level talent actually died in a practice area, hahahaha! Too ironic, too funny, too interesting!'

Thinking of this, Kai Yang viciously smiled, his heart feeling much better. He wanted time to pass faster so that when 100 days passed, he could see whether or not these martial artists were still clamoring for Lin Ming.

75 days…

80 days…

85 days…

………………………

Time passed a day at a time. When the 80th day arrived, some people already suspected that Lin Ming might have died within the King's Cage. But, this suspicious was not held by the vast majority. After all, he was a peak Emperor level talent. If he died in the King's Cage, then wouldn't that be the greatest joke of the world?

However, this rumor began to slowly spread. On the 85th day, more and more people believe that Lin Ming had died!

"What a joke, a Titled Asura whose name is carved into the King Tablet has actually died inside the King's Cage. Who would believe this if it got out!"

In a restaurant on the third floor, some people were discussing Lin Ming. These days, Lin Ming was the topic of every conversation. He was being talked about in every restaurant and teahouse nearby.

"Even if I don't want to believe, this is the reality. Maybe Lin Ming was too confident in himself and overestimated his bodily limits, finally doing something stupid."

"Lin Ming's most likely dead. Otherwise, 85 days is almost three months. That will almost be a month over the Eightfall War Emperor. Isn't that just too exaggerated? How could that be possible?"

“Haha! I’m dying from laughter here, it’s too funny, too funny!” A Giant Demon martial artist said as he struck the table. “These past days those human clowns on the third floor have been far too arrogant. They are so proud and happy about someone from their own race having such a great accomplishment, and look, the result is that Lin Ming actually died in the King’s Cage. I’ve never seen something so ridiculously stupid before!”

“His head is damaged. To think that he would die even with an escape talisman. You can’t even make this up, but he’s even a Titled Asura. I can’t stop laughing, this is the funniest joke of the last 1000 years!”

The Giant Demons were mortal enemies with humanity. When Lin Ming was at the height of his power, these Giant Demon martial artists naturally didn’t utter a word. But now that Lin Ming had died, all of the envy and hate they had piled up suddenly exploded out at once.

A human genius was also their competition. If he died, then they were all indescribably happy.

Muk Gu was also in this restaurant. As he heard this conversation, his complexion turned very, very ugly.

He mindlessly took another drink of his wine and then stood to leave.

“Hey, isn’t that the guy? What’s his name?” The Giant Demon martial artist who was speaking saw Muk Gu. On the third floor, Muk Gu’s strength was at the very bottom, so many people didn’t know what his name was.

“I think he’s called Muk Gu.” A nearby Imp reminded.

“Oh. Muk Gu. I remember now, haha. Muk Gu, come and drink some wine with us. Regale us with the glorious stories of Lin Ming, your human race’s top talent!”

The Giant Demon wantonly smiled. After being pressed down by these humans for the last several weeks, he was finally able to release all the stress.

Muk Gu suppressed the simmering anger in his heart and coldly said, “It’s only been 85 days, and you’re already so sure that Lin Ming can’t withstand it anymore? Just because you cannot understand his limits does not mean they exist!”

“I can’t understand his limits? Hahaha! Your words remind me of when I was a child. There was always this other kid that would be beaten up by me. Every time that I knocked his teeth out, he would always say that he would go home and get his father to come out and punch me! How hilarious!”

The Giant Demon martial artist slammed the table as he spoke, ruthlessly taunting Muk Gu.

Muk Gu’s complexion became increasingly ugly but there wasn’t any reason in retorting. In fact, even his own heart was wavering; did Lin Ming really die?

‘Lin Ming, Lin Ming, I’m asking you to hurry… an existence like you is already destined to reach the highest level of this continent in the future… how could you possibly die in the King’s Cage?’

Muk Gu sighed. Was humanity’s destiny really so lacking? Were they truly unable to give birth to a such a glorious and peerless powerhouse?

……………………

In the King’s Cage, the ground was snow-white and covered by boundless dark clouds.

These dark clouds were very thick and sticky, to the point that one could cut them with a saber. These dark clouds seemed as if they were made of the blackest ink.

The dark clouds quietly undulated. At this time, there was a muffled sound as a small piece of the dark clouds opened, a flash of golden light quickly passing through.

Then, silence. There was nothing again but inky dark clouds.

After another incense stick of time, another golden light flashed. This time, it stayed for a longer time before disappearing again.

The time, the time since the last disappearance was much longer, as if the golden light was condensing in strength. Around an hour later, there was a sound like a dragon crying as a beam of light as thick as a thigh burst through the dark clouds. It was like the sword of a god, directly piercing into the horizon!

In the moment that the dark clouds broke apart, a person's figure rushed out of the hole created by this beam of light.

This figure tumbled onto the floor like a thunderclap.

"I finally came out!"

Lin Ming lay sprawled on the ground without even the strength to move his fingers. He had been stuck in the chaos prison for nearly an entire month!

This was truly a horrifying and painful experience!

The chaos prison was incomparably thick. Even though Lin Ming used his full force to advance, his speed was still as slow as a crawling turtle.

He had no choice but to use attacks to break open the chaos cage, taking advantage of the moment that the chaos was ripped open to take a few steps forward.

Like this, his speed was quick, but he consumed true essence like he was pouring water away.

It had to be said that even if Lin Ming used his killer move Penetrating Rainbow, he was only able to open a channel a few dozen feet long.

But how big was this chaos cage?

Lin Ming simply didn’t know!

Chapter 588 – King’s Cage, 100 Days

Chapter 588 – King’s Cage, 100 Days

…

…

…

For an entire month, Lin Ming was trapped in complete darkness. Even breath had become incomparably difficult. All of his organs were under pressure, and every small step he took required a tremendous amount of energy. That sort of aching fatigue made one prefer the bliss of death.

After arriving at the extremes of exhaustion, it became even more unbearable than the pain. Once the pain reached the limit, one could numb themselves to it after a long time, but if one was exhausted, then it was impossible to rid oneself of that feeling.

Not just that, but Lin Ming also had to bear utter loneliness in the void of space. After all, humans were social creatures. Martial artists could withstand loneliness if they went into closed-door cultivation, but that was also in a relatively comfortable environment of their design, unlike this land that made one fall into madness. There was no sound, no light, endless walking, endless traveling , and a never ending fatigue that led to madness.

And what was most despairing of all was that one completely couldn’t see an end! They had no idea where to go! They didn’t even know if the method they were using to break out of the chaos prison was correct.

Even though Lin Ming’s will was firm like iron, he too was close to collapsing after over 20 days.

In the final several days, Lin Ming couldn't even tell if he was dead or alive; reality and illusion were no different to him. All of his movements were completely mechanical and instinctive as he took that last breath and finally broke out of the chaos prison!

During this period, Lin Ming didn't know how many times he had broken through the limits of his body. It had to be known that Lin Ming's endurance was comparable to a Life Destruction Supreme Elder. Even so, he had been pushed to this degree.

This chaos prison was simply not for a human to live in.

Fingers shivering, Lin Ming took a top recovery pill out of his spatial ring and swallowed it. He immediately went into meditation and adjusted his breathing.

At this time, the tremendous role of the Gate of Healing manifested. Even though he had only traced the Gate of Healing's threshold, the benefits were massive.

A whirlpool of origin energy formed between Lin Ming's clavicles, continuously supplementing him with origin energy, revitalizing his dried up meridians.

After recovering his physical strength, Lin Ming took several dozen high-grade Blood Demon Crystals out, sucking in all of their inherent origin energy and blood vitality in a single breath.

Thus, color finally returned to Lin Ming's face.

An hour later, Lin Ming was finally restored to his usual condition. As he looked at his dantian, Lin Ming was surprised. In just a month, he had already reached the peak of the late Xiantian realm!

He was just a bit away from extreme Xiantian!

He had only broken through to the late Xiantian realm a mere several months ago. There wasn't that great of a distance between late Xiantian and extreme Xiantian. But for him to cross such a distance in so little time, the effects of the chaos prison were simply terrifying!

Thinking about it, this was also normal. By constantly keeping his body at the very limit and suppressing his potential to the greatest degree, with the added function of the Heavenly Demon force field, every cell in his body was painstakingly tempered!

However, this sort of inhuman experience was unendurable for the average person. Even Lin Ming didn’t want to experience the pressure of the chaos prison again, at least not for the time being.

Standing up, Lin Ming suddenly discovered something. After adapting himself to the chaos prison and burdening the Heavenly Demon force field, although he still felt heavy, he wasn’t as uncomfortable as he was before.

Just from this alone, Lin Ming could see that his progress in the last month was great.

It could be said that there was no way that Lin Ming’s current foundation could be any more solid.

There was no need to mention the essence gathering system. The true essence cyclone in his dantian had condensed to the point of turning into essence, and even his marrow seemed to be rejuvenated. His body transformation system was extremely solid.

“I wonder who created this King’s Cage. That person was absolutely a great character It seemed that on Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent, there must have been something great that happened so many tens of thousands of years ago. Many peerless talents and heroes were born. But for some reason, in this era, everything including the history from 100,000 years ago have already been lost… ”

Lin Ming was feeling happy for his progress just now, when suddenly, a massive pressure came smashing down on him. His blood tumbled and he almost spat out a mouthful of blood!

This is…!

Lin Ming fell to his knees, supporting himself with the Purple Comet Spear. This sudden great pressure caused his meridians to rupture in multiple locations!

"It's too strong…"

Lin Ming almost couldn't help but curse out. The King's Cage didn't even give you a chance to breathe!

The person who designed this had probably expected that a martial artist who broke through the King's Cage would make great progress in their strength. Thus, when the Heavenly Demon force field appeared, the pressure would ramp up to another level yet again!

Ka ka ka!

Around Lin Ming, the power of space seemed to warp. Then, in front of Lin Ming's eyes, space began collapsing around him!

This rupturing of space created vast amounts of space fragments, blocking him in every direction!

And in this confined space, there were ominous space cracks everywhere. There were some that Lin Ming could see, and some that he couldn't see, his perception not even noticing them.

They were like the jaws of a giant beast, waiting for their prey to arrive.

"This is also a cage!"

Lin Ming sucked in a deep, cold breath!

He was finally experiencing the true horror of the King's Cage!

It had been just over three months. If he continued, then what else would he encounter here?

The Senior Supreme Elder who designed this cage was what kind of genius? Not only was he terrifyingly powerful, but his creativity and imagination was unrestrained, wild with ambition!

"The twelfth cage, dimensional fragments. Would you like to try passing it?"

The strange voiceless consciousness appeared in Lin Ming's spiritual sea again. As it appeared, a shimmering transmission array also appeared in the cage.

"After the chaos prison are dimensional fragments. I wonder what's next..."

Lin Ming did not hesitate in his decision.

With his decision, the transmission array disappeared.

Soon after, in the enclosed space, the space fragments began to twist. The space cracks began to move up and down like spiritual snakes, causing Lin Ming to be alarmed!

Without a doubt, the dimensional fragments could easily take his life!

If he was cut in half by a sliver of these space cracks, it would be too late to activate any kind of escape talisman!

With these space fragments as the boundary of this cage, and for the cage to also have space cracks that constantly morphed and move, just what kind of test was this? Just thinking of this cage made one aghast!

....

At this time, outside of the King's Cage, 95 days had passed!

95 days.

Even Muk Gu began to feel a rising sense of despair in his heart.

Although he didn't wish to believe it, all logical reasoning told him that Lin Ming had most likely perished inside the King's cage.

The longer one stayed in the King's Cage, the more difficult it would become. The Eightfall War Emperor had only lasted in there for 60 days, but Lin Ming had already been inside for 95 days.

Was this even possible?

In the special practice area, Feng Shen was looking at the door of light leading to the King's Cage deeply. He let out a protracted sigh.

"Unimaginable."

Feng Shen shook his head and then turned to leave.

He only felt sorrow and regret that Lin Ming had fallen here. Although he admitted that his talent was inferior to Lin Ming's, Feng Shen actually felt no envy towards Lin Ming. He knew that some top talents might consider it a misfortune to be born in the same era as someone like Lin Ming, but Feng Shen never thought so.

To him, this was actually a goal for him to pursue, a dream that he could drink from to enhance his own cultivation.

If one never saw a higher peak, then they would never know how high the mountains were. This would inevitably affect their vision and also the degree of their accomplishments.

But now, Lin Ming had died here, and the goal along with him. In Skysplit Tower, Feng Shen had the unbearable feeling of standing alone at the top.

Chapter 589 – Crisis

Chapter 589 – Crisis

…

…

…

In the dimensional fragment cage, Lin Ming closed his eyes, moving with Golden Roc Shattering the Void. Under the tremendous pressure, his steps didn’t have any of the usual fleeting vibrancy, instead, it was like they were made of lead.

In this cage of space, his eyes were useless. The space cracks simply couldn’t be seen by the naked eye.

Even his perception was limited.

What Lin Ming could depend on was his understanding towards the Law of Space, and his mastery over the power of space only.

Whenever a space crack quietly approached, Lin Ming could feel the fluctuations emitting from space. The fluctuations were like ripples in the water, appearing out of nowhere.

Every time, Lin Ming would move in advance in order to dodge the space cracks that could cut him open.

With Lin Ming’s strength, even if he had completed Tempering Marrow and his body was comparable to a treasure, or no matter how thick his protective true essence was, in front of these space cracks, it was nothing more than brittle paper.

Woosh!

A purple gold spear light flashed through like a meteor, smashing into the barriers of the space cage!

Kacha!

Spear light erupted. The space barrier trembled just a bit before returning to normal, as if nothing had happened.

These past days, Lin Ming had been constantly attacking the space barrier. Although he hadn't been able to shake it, Lin Ming, through this nonstop barrage of attacks, was unconsciously deepening his comprehension into the power of space.

But at this moment, Lin Ming's body trembled. On his shoulder, blood erupted into a crimson rain. The blood was quickly twisted into a red mist by an invisible power before vanishing into an invisible whirlpool.

Lin Ming was shocked; he immediately drew back.

His right shoulder had been completely torn open!

"That was too close!"

Lin Ming's forehead dripped with a cold sweat. A moment ago, as he was distracted with his attacks, a small space crack the size of a slip of paper had quietly crept towards him. Such a small space crack created extremely small ripples in the void. With Lin Ming's attention being diverted, his perception wasn't as sensitive, so he hadn't been able to sense it.

Such a small space crack, yet such a terrifying destructive power!

"Luckily, it was just my shoulder!"

A chill crept up Lin Ming's back. When he had entered the ancient ruins of the Demon God Imperial Palace, the space cracks there hadn't been so horrifying.

At that time, when a second stage Life Destruction Supreme Elder or those stronger flew into the broken world, they didn't fear those space cracks at all.

Lin Ming felt that although his current strength wasn't comparable to those old Life Destruction fellows, it shouldn't have been that far away. But yet, a small space crack the size of a tiny slip of paper had completely torn his shoulder apart!

This showed that in this different world, the power of space cracks was completely different.

In the Demon God Imperial Palace, the broken world that held it was already approaching collapse. The power of space there was too weak.

On the other hand, the world of the King's Cage was very stable. The more stable a space was, the stronger the power of space was. After space disintegrated and formed space cracks, the dimensional fragments were correspondingly more terrifying!

Who else dared to say that the Concept of Space's striking power was weak?

If one could truly and completely grasp the Concept of Space, touching upon the source of all space, then with a casual strike, they could tear apart space itself. Who could defend against an attack like this?

If he could soar into the Realm of the Gods, twist the space there and use that incomparably stable space as his weapon, then how powerful would such an ability be?

Although this possibility was fascinating, Lin Ming didn't have any more time for distractions. He noticed that in the space around him, he found that there were more and more tiny space fragments and space cracks appearing!

The space cracks that had once been 10 feet long had become 3-4 feet long and now, they were only the size of a slip of paper.

If such a space crack pierced his arm or leg, then with Lin Ming's exceedingly abnormal regenerative ability, he would still be able to live on. But, if it pierced his heart, then Lin Ming suspected that even the Heretical God Seed or the Magic Cube wouldn't be able to save him.

"There are more and more fragments; these should be because my attacks shattered them."

The stable space had been torn apart by that strange force field. Now, with Lin Ming's attacks added on, more and more tiny space fragments started to appear.

"The Heavenly Demon force field's pressure has increased again!"

This time, the Heavenly Demon force field strengthened yet again. This was undoubtedly one stroke of bad luck after another!

Not only did his body slow down, but his perception was dulled. Lin Ming found it difficult to detect those tiny space fluctuations.

This was like a martial artist being under a rain of arrows and having their vision suddenly blur.

"This is bad!"

Cold sweat rolled down Lin Ming's back; he had completely lost control of the situation!

Once his time in the King's Cage surpassed 100 days, Lin Ming was beginning to finally find it hard to persist!

The dimension fragment cage couldn't be broken and the tiny space fragments were nearly impossible to detect or defend against.

Under this massive pressure, he was even finding it hard to maintain his speed for a long time.

Lin Ming gripped the escape talisman in his hand, hesitating.

In his life, he would only be able to enter the King's Cage once. During his three months here, he had harvested a great deal. If he left like this, then it would be a bit dismaying.

But in this situation, if he wasn't careful then he might possibly die inside here. A Titled Asura, perishing in the King's Cage. Wouldn't that be just too big of a joke?

However, when four or five space fragments continuously disappeared from Lin Ming's perception, his complexion finally changed.

He crumpled the escape talisman.

Lin Ming was resolutely determined to leave the King's Cage.

Ho--!

A transmission array suddenly appeared underneath Lin Ming's feet. With a flash of light, Lin Ming was covered in the golden light of the escape talisman, his figure blurring.

"Mm?"

Lin Ming's expression changed. He could clearly feel that he had passed through the space channel and arrived in Skysplit Tower, but the surrounding space had been blocked off!

The transmission channel had been sealed. He had no way to leave!

"What's going on?"

Peng!

In Lin Ming's hand, the escape talisman suddenly exploded into dust. The light vanished, and Lin Ming found himself in the space cage once more.

If the space in Skysplit Tower was blocked, then that was the same as eliminating the exit.

Could it be…?

Lin Ming's mind raced. He wasn't an idiot. If someone could do this, then there was only one possibility; it was a high level figure of Skysplit Tower!

"A space blocking array formation. Skysplit Tower also seems to have some capable individuals. This sort of array formation is considered complex, even among ancient array formations!" Lin Ming had inherited the memories of a Realm of the Gods' array master, so he had a great deal of understanding into this sort of array formation. But, to lay it out so that it would forcibly block a transmission array wasn't an easy task.

"You want me to die in here?" Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light, killing intent blazing in them.

Fuu! Fuu! Fuuu!

Within the space cage, the space fragments flew around. Lin Ming could even hear some of the space fragments colliding with each other, and the sound of space breaking filled the air.

These sounds were clear, but they were actually the sounds of death!

"What should I do!?"

The normally calm Lin Ming was now panicking.

Although he had a good deal of understanding into this sort of space blocking array formation, wanting to break it open was another matter altogether. It would not be easy.

Not mention that Lin Ming couldn't break it, but even if he believed he could, there was one condition required. This was that he needed a transmission array leading to the center of that blocked space!

To Lin Ming, this was obviously impossible!

Chapter 590 – Betting It All

Chapter 590 – Betting It All

…

…

…

The transmission array would only appear once this space cage was broken and it would only appear for a short period of time. If Lin Ming wanted to break open the space locking array during that brief period of time, then that was simply unrealistic!

Thinking of this, Lin Ming felt his back go cold.

The tiny space fragments were hidden around him, appearing and disappearing; he simply couldn't evade them all. If this continued then he would die without a doubt!

Chi!

With a light din, Lin Ming felt a cool touch upon his ear. A space fragment had scraped his ear as it flew by!

Caught up in a space vortex, blood shot out from his ear!

He had been completely unaware of this small fragment. Fortunately, it had brushed past his ear with only a bit of the power of space spreading out. If it had shot into his eyes then the consequences would be have been disastrous!

"What can I do?"

Lin Ming's mind went into overdrive as he went on full alert.

As he noticed several more tiny space fragments disappear from the field of his perception, a flash of inspiration went off in Lin Ming's mind – the Cosmic Melting Furnace!

That was it! The Cosmic Melting Furnace had its own world within. He could enter it!

The top treasure of the Demon God Imperial Palace was invaluable; it was at least a heaven-step treasure.

Lin Ming could only open the first layer of the Cosmic Melting Furnace. But… that was enough!

Lin Ming summoned the Cosmic Melting Furnace with the quickest speed possible. He opened the lid and directly rushed in!

Now, this furnace was all he could depend on.

Kacha!

With a snapping sound, the Cosmic Melting Furnace gently quivered. A space fragment struck the side of the Cosmic Melting Furnace, breaking into smaller pieces!

But the Cosmic Melting Furnace only vibrated, not a single mark left on it.

This could be called an artifact treasure. It was naturally not something that a space fragment could break.

Lin Ming let out a cold breath of relief. He was now hidden within the first layer of the Cosmic Melting Furnace. With the lid closed, this was a completely enclosed and separate space. Originally, Lin Ming had also absorbed the Nirvana Dragon Root here.

"Although I can't use this Cosmic Melting Furnace to attack, it can actually be used to defend in this way."

Until now, Lin Ming truly hadn't used the Cosmic Melting Furnace. He didn't think that it would have uses like this.

"The Heavenly Demon force field's pressure has also weakened a bit..."

Although Lin Ming was currently within the Cosmic Melting Furnace, he could still clearly feel the pressure from the Heavenly Demon force field, though a majority of it had been isolated.

This pressure was truly pervasive!

Thinking of it, the 12 Skysplit Towers, Blood Slaughter Steppes, and Eternal Demon Abyss were a much more terrible relic of the past than the Demon God Imperial Palace. Otherwise, 12 Emperor level powerhouses wouldn't have instantly died here. The Six-fingered Sin Fey, who had obtained the title of twelve-winged Heavenly Demon and became the greatest powerhouse of the Holy Demon Continent, had come here on his own volition after experiencing a bottleneck in his 6000 years of cultivation. He had come to the Eternal Demon Abyss to seek his own lucky chances, but had also died inside like everyone else, without even his corpse left.

On the other hand, the Demon God Imperial Palace was much calmer. If a Life Destruction powerhouse went in, then they had a 90% chance of leaving alive.

After all, in the past when the Demon Emperor had founded the Demon God Imperial Palace, he still hadn't soared up into the Realm of the Gods. No matter how powerful he was, he wouldn't be more formidable than the mystical force that existed in the Eternal Demon Abyss.

From Da Gu's description, a massive earth-shattering claw had risen up and instantly killed 12 Emperor level powerhouses, one of them who was a legendary Hallowed Lord. Just thinking about this was horrifying!

Feeling the space fragments strike the Cosmic Melting Furnace, Lin Ming's eyebrows wrinkled together.

Although he could hide in the Cosmic Melting Furnace for now, he couldn't do so forever.

If he couldn't break apart the dimensional fragment cage, then he couldn't return. Not just that, but the force field pressure in the Cosmic Melting furnace would also be constantly rising. If he retreated into this furnace and wasted his time here, then that was the same as drinking poison to slake his thirst!

When the pressure became stronger, it would be even more difficult to break through the space cage.

What could he do?

Lin Ming was silent for a moment, and then he clenched his teeth. He pulled out a black glass bead from his spatial ring.

This was the Demon God Bone!

According to Da Gu, these were the remnants of Emperor level powerhouses. When an Emperor level Supreme Elder died within the Eternal Demon Abyss, the energy within their body would condense into this essence!

Like pine sap that became amber after being buried in the ground for hundreds of thousands of years, the rich energies in the Eternal Demon Abyss condensed into substantive energy. After an immeasurably long period of time, this energy would naturally crystallize.

This sort of crystal, if he melted it into his life source and used it to nourish the fires of his life, let alone raising his strength, it was even enough for a Demon King powerhouse to break through to become a Demon Emperor. This was a heavenly treasure that a Demon King level martial artist would go crazy over!

Of course, he could also use it to temper his body, but this was an extremely wasteful method. Even a Giant Demon martial artist wouldn't use it in such an extravagant way.

Tempering the body…

Lin Ming muttered to himself. He had some understandings about the usage of the Demon God Bone from Da Gu, as well as gaining some insights from Maha. This was to integrate the energy of the Demon God Bone into his own life source.

To a human martial artist, this so-called life source was the dantian.

To a Giant Demon martial artist, the life source was their demon crystal.

Lin Ming cultivated humanity's essence gathering system. Logically, if he absorbed the Demon God Bone then he should absorb it into his dantian.

But Lin Ming didn't want to do this. He was preparing to use the Demon God Bone to temper his body. This was also called the most wasteful method.

He wanted to take the incomparably rich energy within the Demon God Bone and fuse it into the Gate of Healing, using this to break through the final boundary of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates!

This was the fastest way Lin Ming could think of to make a breakthrough in his strength.

"With my current strength, it shouldn't be a problem to swallow the Demon God Bone."

Lin Ming also had some understandings towards the Demon God Bone. Since the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars could use them, he shouldn't have a problem either.

Of course, swallowing the Demon God Bone was not a problem, but whether he could borrow its power to open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, he was completely unsure. From Tempering Marrow to the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, that was equal to a large increase in realms. There was a gap in the middle of these two that was nearly insurmountable.

From all the brutal requirements Lin Ming needed to complete Tempering Marrow in the past, one could see just how difficult it would be to open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

Although he had just barely traced upon the threshold, it was at most equal to being a half-step into the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. It was the same as being a half-step Xiantian or half-step Revolving Core. Even though it was just that minor bit, the difference from truly being at the Xiantian realm or Revolving Core realm was huge.

Success or defeat, all would be bet on this!

With teeth clenched, Lin Ming poured his true essence into the Demon God Bone. As true essence flowed into it, the Demon God Bone gradually softened. It turned into a squishy oblong sphere and then completely turned into liquid.

This black liquid was like ink, but also carried a glassy sheen.

Lin Ming flicked his finger and divided the black liquid in half. Half was swallowed by him, and the other half was placed in the center of his clavicles where the Gate of Healing resided.

When the liquid black Demon God Bone first entered, it was icy cold. But as it entered into his belly, it turned into a blazing fire.

The liquid black Demon God Bone that Lin Ming had placed between his clavicles also felt as if it had caught one fire. With a ‘chi chi’ sound, this black mercurial liquid quickly seeped into his body.

It quickly permeated through his pores and deep into his clavicles where the Gate of Healing was.

The Demon God Bone was originally a supremely tyrannical medicine. With Xing Tian’s strength, he simply wasn’t able to use it.

Lin Ming’s strength naturally far surpassed Xing Tian’s at this moment. By reason, it shouldn’t be a problem for him to use it.

However, what actually happened was beyond Lin Ming’s expectations. He was still under the Heavenly Demon force field, and every cell in his body was resisting this force field. It was impossible for his condition to be at its peak.

While resisting the Heavenly Demon force field, the maddening power of the Demon God Bone manically flowed into his body!

These two forces came from the same source. When the Demon God Bone's energy merged into Lin Ming's body, it actually fused together with the force field into one whole. Instantly, Lin Ming felt as if his throat was smoking and there was a demonic fire combusting within his body!

Lin Ming's cells were originally under a heavy pressure. Now, with the sudden increase in force, some of Lin Ming's cells directly burst open!

Puff!

Lin Ming coughed up a mouthful of blood. This was blood that was coming from his body bursting apart at the seams!

"Damnit!"

To use the Demon God Bone to open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates was originally a sudden inspiration idea that Lin Ming had. But what would really happen after he swallowed the Demon God Bone was simply unpredictable.

He never thought that the Demon God Bone would actually work so well together with the Heavenly Demon force field. Both of these stemmed from the Eternal Demon Abyss; there simply wasn't any problem in them fusing together, creating a force that wildly rampaged through Lin Ming's body.

This was the same as Lin Ming's body having to withstand double the energy pressure.

Too hot!

This was Lin Ming's greatest thought. It was like his body had caught on fire. His meridians, dantian, organs, everything surged with an agonizing heat.

It felt like magma was flowing through his body. Lin Ming wanted to use the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’ to forcefully suppress this feeling and absorb this manic energy, but he had already consumed over 50% of his true essence and now he was powerless to do any of this.

Puff!

A fog of blood burst out from Lin Ming’s arm. After his blood left the protection of his true essence, it was instantly scorched to ash. Lin Ming’s insides had become a stove.

The energy grew hotter and hotter like a growing inferno. On the other hand, Lin Ming was quickly consuming true essence. Soon, everything would go completely out of control. When this happened, it was possible that Lin Ming’s body would be completely burnt down by this berserk energy!

Chi chi chi…

That was the sound of the periphery of his meridians being burnt.

“Too hot… too thirsty…”

Clutching his throat, he felt like his clavicles had been incinerated. And this heat had already spread to his throat.

With great effort, he fumbled around his spatial ring hoping to take out some water. But when he reached in, he actually touched something cold.

This is…

Lin Ming took out this object, and was startled to see it was a jade box. Around this jade box there was a faint chill in the air, and a layer of frost was condensing around it.

Opening the jade box, there was a cocoon of electricity. And in this cocoon was the Nameless Divine Pill refined from the Nirvana Dragon Root!

When Lin Ming had first attempted to open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, he had melted a small part of this Nameless Divine Pill's efficacy and swallowed it. He took what was left over and sealed it away in this jade box.

The smaller Nameless Divine Pill was covered with a blue layer of ice cold frost. Even placed in the jade box one could feel an implicit terrifying ice cold energy. This ancient air that emitted from it seemed to have experienced tens of thousands of years, making one feel suffocated.

Lin Ming could clearly recall that when he had placed this pill into the solar origin spring water, the spring water had directly turned into a lump of ice.

An absolute cold. The piercing cold in that water seemed as if it could freeze his soul.

When he approached it before, his muscles had begun to shiver, and when he touched it, his body was frozen and almost shattered!

Extreme cold! Extreme heat!

Two polar extremes!

Lin Ming suddenly grit his teeth, raised the Nameless Divine Pill and prepared to swallow it!

Chapter 591 – Break Through the Eight Inner Hidden Gates

Chapter 591 – Break Through the Eight Inner Hidden Gates

…

…

…

The Nameless Divine Pill used a Nirvana Dragon Root as a main ingredient, and by combining all sorts of other rare and precious materials, it became a medicine even more brutally tyrannical than the Demon God Bone!

When Lin Min absorbed the Nameless Divine Pill, he had done so by melting its medicinal efficacy into a barrel of solar origin water, and even then he had only dared to absorb less than half of it.

Even so, Lin Ming's hands had been frozen old, the pain piercing as his skin and muscles cracked open.

But now, Lin Ming had chosen to directly swallow the pill. His current strength was much greater than in the past, but the problem was that his condition was much worse!

Swallowing the Nameless Divine Pill at this time was an act of suicide!

But Lin Ming didn't have any other method. His true essence would sooner or later deplete, and when that happened, all of his meridians and muscles would inevitably be burnt to cinders by the Demon God Bone's crazy energy!

To use the extreme yin cold of the Nameless Divine Pill to counter the scorching hot energy of the Demon God Bone, at this critical moment, Lin Ming had chosen this crazy strategy!

He was betting his life on this last desperate gamble!

Lin Ming revolved his true essence to the limit. With a fierce clench of his teeth, he swallowed the Nameless Divine Pill!

In that instant, Lin Ming didn’t feel as if he had swallowed a pill, but a 10,000 year old chunk of absolute zero ice!

From his mouth to his stomach, a cold energy spread out!

His throat instantly lost all feeling, and the cells in his body begin to freeze and crack apart. His blood started to ice over as cold energy invaded his meridians and blood vessels, recklessly spreading throughout!

Soon, this cold energy ran into the boiling hot energy of the Demon God Bone!

The spreading cold energy met the blazing hot flames; a fierce collision began!

Originally, just the Demon God Bone’s sole strength was not a match for the Nameless Divine Pill.

However, the Demon God Bone and the Heavenly Demon force field stemmed from the same source. Both of these fused together, creating a force equal to that of the Nameless Divine Pill.

On the other hand, the Nameless Divine Pill’s energy and the Heavenly Demon force field were incompatible with each other. As both of these forces met, they recklessly struck at each other, each wanting to annihilate the other!

Lin Ming’s body had become a battlefield!

Although because the interweaving hot and cold energy made it so that Lin Ming's meridians weren't charred or frozen anymore, the collision of the two intense types of energies released an immense amount of force that directly tore apart Lin Ming's meridians and blood vessels instead!

Lin Ming fell to his knees. His insides felt like they were twisted together inside of him. This sort of feeling was a pain worse than death.

Unconsciously, Lin Ming's nose, eyes, and ears all began to ooze blood.

As blood streamed down his nose, it froze into crimson ice. But as blood bled from his ears, it had scorch marks upon it.

If this sort of violent destructive damage occurred to a normal martial artist, they would have died long ago.

But in these past years, Lin Ming's body had condensed many types of incomparably powerful blood vitalities and life energies. Reverse scale blood, blood of the Ancient Phoenix, numerous kinds of heavenly materials, and in addition to this there was also the azure true essence that endlessly grew, continuously invigorating him. All of these factors had made it so that Lin Ming's resilience and recovery ability far surpassed even an Emperor level powerhouse!

It was impossible for him to control any of these two different energies. He could only bite his teeth and revolve the last dregs of his true essence with the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians', forcing this battlefield towards the Gate of Healing!

As the red and blue energies mixed together, it was like a hysterical flood dragon, madly crashing into the Gate of Healing!

Peng!

Between Lin Ming's clavicles, a burst of blood sprayed out. The muscles and skin were completely torn open; even the bones underneath were broken!

Lin Ming felt his vision turn black for a moment and his body weaken. He didn't even have the strength to kneel and instead toppled onto the floor.

Fresh blood flowed out from the wound along Lin Ming's clavicles. Along the fractured bones, one could even see a faint golden marrow.

Energy surged. Along the Gate of Healing, an earth-shattering change was occurring. However, Lin Ming no longer had any true essence to control these two violent energies. Now, he could only let them freely rampage through his body.

Quickly, a pool of blood formed around him, and Lin Ming felt his head become leaden and his vision blur as he gradually lost consciousness.

…………………………

After an unknown length of time, Lin Ming finally woke up. His eyes popped open, a gentle shimmer reflected in them.

There was not a part in his body that didn't hurt. Especially the area between his two clavicles; it both hurt and itched. His true essence had been finally depleted. He didn't even have the strength to crawl on his belly or move his fingers.

Lin Ming strained to gather a bit of his perception. As he examined his body, he was surprised to find that the energies of the Demon God Bone and Nameless Divine Pill had already disappeared from within his body. Between his clavicles, where the Gate of Healing was located, the broken bones were already mending.

The Gate of Healing…

Opened!!!

As Lin Ming realized this, he paused for a while, an unreal feeling passing over him.

Opening the Gate of Healing had been far more difficult than completing 100% of Tempering Marrow.

Lin Ming had used the Nirvana Dragon Root to complete Tempering Marrow. But, when trying to open the Gate of Healing, he had only touched upon the threshold of it even though he had absorbed part of the Nameless Divine Pill that was refined from the Nirvana Dragon Root.

Lin Ming using the Demon God Bone to temper his body and open the Gate of Healing had only been an attempt.

He never imagined that once the power of the Demon God Bone and Heavenly Demon force field combined together, it would clash with the Nameless Divine Pill.

The struggle of ice and fire; this tyrannical energy had finally gathered towards Lin Ming's Gate of Healing, and in an intense confrontation, the outbreak of energies had managed to break through the shackles of the Gate of Healing in a single go!

This also meant that Lin Ming had finally entered the Eight Inner Hidden Gates body transformation realm!

Although his injuries hadn't fully healed yet, Lin Ming could already see heaven and earth origin energy flooding towards his clavicles. It was like a leak had opened within the Gate of Healing, causing a massive whirlpool of true essence!

Not just that, but the Gate of Healing could also independently filter heaven and earth origin energy, making it even purer.

Once the Gate of Healing was opened, a martial artist's body would gain the ability to constantly and autonomously absorb heaven and earth origin energy. The advantages towards cultivation were obvious!

During a battle, it was possible to restore true essence at an extremely quick pace. This was equivalent to Lin Ming constantly eating medicines. Not just that, but the energy that the Gate of Healing provided was incomparably pure; it wouldn't have toxins like pills would.

Lin Ming could clearly feel the heaven and earth origin energy converging onto his body, revitalizing his dried up meridians. His bodily strength was also being restored at an astonishing pace.

From the point of not being able to move a finger, only a mere incense stick of time passed before Lin Ming could feel his strength returning.

The smaller wounds on his body regenerated at a visible speed. Even the torn muscles and broken bones began to itch, signs that they were growing back.

After a quarter hour, his true essence had already been restored to a reasonable degree. The small injuries on his body had completely vanished, and the severe wound next to the Gate of Healing had recovered by half.

One hour later, the severe wound next to the Gate of Healing was almost fully repaired and as good as new. Lin Ming's true essence was also regenerated to its peak condition!

In the past when Lin Ming had such heavy injuries, even when he sat in meditation and also took recovery pills he wouldn't have healed so fast.

A vast and pure true essence poured into his dantian. Lin Ming felt his dantian suddenly shake as if something inside were fiercely contracting. When he examined his body, he was surprised to find that he had reached the extreme Xiantian realm!

Extreme Xiantian was only a step away from Revolving Core.

Many martial artists were stuck at this step for their entire lives, but to Lin Ming, this was no problem at all.

His foundation was already as solid and stable as it could be. Crossing this last step would be smooth without a gruelingly fatal bottleneck.

In this way, Lin Ming became even closer to the Revolving Core realm. His rising cultivation speed had ever exceeded his own expectations.

Going from the late Xiantian realm to the extreme Xiantian realm didn’t have too much of an effect on Lin Ming’s strength. But, it was different from extreme Xiantian to Revolving Core! The true essence in Lin Ming’s dantian was already incomparably thick. Once he formed his own revolving core, his strength would shoot into the sky!

It had to be known that as of now, Lin Ming was only 19 years old. He had great hopes of reaching the Revolving Core realm before he was 21!

When Mu Qianyu was 22 years old, her great talent had let her enter the Xiantian realm. Up until the point that Lin Ming had been forced to leave, she still hadn’t managed to step into the Revolving Core realm.

Lin Ming’s cultivation speed could simply be called terrifyingly monstrous!

The sooner one broke through to the Revolving Core realm, the more potential they would have in their future. 21 years old, 22 years old – even for mortals that only lived for dozens of years, this was still the best time of their lives!

Lin Ming took a deep breath and gripped his fists in excitement. This disaster had actually been a blessing in disguise. As for how far his strength had increased, even he didn’t know.

If he didn’t fight then he wouldn’t know!

“Right now, I should be able to break through this dimensional fragment cage!”

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a bright light and he suddenly jumped out from the Cosmic Melting Furnace. He felt his entire body brimming with strength.

All those people that had tried to kill him… there would be no mercy for them!

Outside of the Cosmic Melting Furnace, the Heavenly Demon force field pressure naturally increased – there was even more than before. But as it enveloped Lin Ming, it actually felt much lighter than before!

The Heavenly Demon force field was no longer an obstacle he couldn't withstand. Now that the force field's suppression on his soul force was reduced, Lin Ming's perception was sharper. He could clearly feel and capture the locations of all the tiny space fragments.

In his field of perception, it was like he was surrounded by a field of shimmering stars.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and stepped forwards. His steps, after integrating the Concept of Space that he was increasingly skilled at, seemed as if he were drifting erratically about, like ghosts and demons.

Even though it was obviously impossible to pass through the narrow gap between two space cracks, Lin Ming still stepped forwards. At this time, there seemed to be a strange distortion in space before he suddenly slipped through.

A spear thrust forth!

The Heretical God Force completely opened, the blood of the Ancient Phoenix burned, and a vast true essence erupted like an unforgiving volcano!

Bang!

The space barrier violently shook. Because the Heavenly Demon force field's suppression effect on Lin Ming had reduced, his striking power had naturally risen by a great degree!

"After making a breakthrough in my strength, my strike without fused Concepts is already no worse than my past strikes with fused Concepts. If I add in Concepts now, just what would that be like?"

Lin Ming's eyes burned with a fighting spirit. The power of thunder and fire merged into the Purple Comet Spear. Thick arcs of electricity violently sparkled, waves of brilliant flames combusting!

Lin Ming poured his complete will and potential into the Purple Comet Spear. True essence erupted from his body!

Penetrating Rainbow!

A spear shot forth. It tore through the void, even ripping apart any space fragments that approached it!

This spear strike smashed into the dimensional fragment barrier.

Bang!

With a loud explosion, the space cage rattled, countless fragments flying out. Atop the space barrier, visible cracks appeared. These fissures appeared for a moment before instantly disappearing, as if they were never there to begin with.

However, even though these fissures only appeared for a brief period of time, it heralded the fact that it was only a matter of time until Lin Ming broke through this dimensional fragment barrier!

Chapter 592 – Breaking Through the Last Cage

Chapter 592 – Breaking Through the Last Cage

…

…

…

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Spear after spear, Lin Ming's relentless onslaught of attacks didn't falter.

At the beginning, the space barrier would tremble, cracks would appear and then instantly disappear. Then, these cracks appeared for several breaths of time, and finally, before the old cracks disappeared, new cracks were already forming.

The cracks were becoming increasingly dense!

During such a barrage, Lin Ming's understandings towards the Concept of Space were becoming increasingly profound!

When the cracks in the space barrier reached a tipping point, there was finally a ringing explosion as the barrier shattered apart like a pane of glass. Under Lin Ming's attacks, the space cage had finally collapsed!

As the space barrier collapsed, a massive amount of chaotic space power surged out. The broken space fragments didn't disappear; instead they were swept up into the turbulent flow of space, forming a huge storm containing massive space fragments.

When Lin Ming encountered space storms in the past, they had simply been formations purely made from the power of space. Although it was violent and fierce, if one was strong enough and also had a deep understanding of the Concept of Space, they could live within the space storm.

But now, with the space fragments twisted into the space storm, its destructive power could be imagined!

And not just that, but Lin Ming also felt that there was a faint distortion in time within this space storm. If he wasn't able to adapt to the power of time and took a single wrong step, this he wouldn't even have a skeleton remaining!

Facing such a space storm, Lin Ming's expression turned solemn. But, his eyes actually shined with excitement!

If Lin Ming hadn't opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates then he wouldn't have dared to brave this space storm. That would be the same as suicide.

But now that he had unlocked entry into the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and also broken through to the extreme Xiantian realm, his mind blazed with fighting spirit! Breaking through that space cage just now hadn't felt good enough!

After controlling the changing time, Lin Ming opened the Heretical God Force without hesitation. He grasped the Purple Comet Spear and rushed into the space storm.

This was a space stormed that contained the Law of Time – it was obviously a new cage. If he couldn't break through it, then there was no possibility of leaving the King's Cage.

After entering the space storm, Lin Ming felt a terrifying tearing force, as if his entire body was about to be ripped apart. This space storm was the most violent one that he had met up until now!

Woosh! Woosh!

Two space fragments shot out. Lin Ming's footsteps moved and his body seemed to twist in an incredible manner, passing through a narrow half-foot wide gap between the two space fragments.

Kacha!

The two space fragments smashed into each other, exploding and creating even more smaller fragments!

As Lin Ming saw this his mind went cold. In this space storm, the space fragments would continuously crash into each other. Like this, the fragments would become smaller and smaller as their numbers increased!

When that happened, no matter how great Lin Ming's understanding of the Concept of Space was or whether he could capture each space fragment in his senses, he wouldn't have the ability to completely dodge all of them.

He had to leave this cage as soon as possible, before he ran out of time!

Lin Ming didn't dare to delay a moment further. His feet stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void as he rushed into the very depths of this space storm.

Although this space storm was crazy and brutal, it wasn't like a barrier that would block Lin Ming from moving forward. Lin Ming could use his comprehension of the Concept of Space to slither his way through this terrifying storm which contained space fragments that could pierce through the hardest defenses.

To him, this space storm was a great impediment, but Lin Ming was still fast. In just an incense stick of time he had ran several miles.

"Mm? It's like…"

Lin Ming's heart suddenly chilled. He felt that something was wrong, but he just couldn't place his finger on it.

He put down these doubts that clouded his heart and continued to move forwards. After another incense stick of time, that sense of unease only grew

He found out that he… had been moving in circles!

The space storm all around him was the same. The only way that Lin Ming could judge he was running in circles was purely through his intuition.

From the start until now, he hadn't even taken a half-step out of here!

Was this spatial warping?

If space was linear, then a distortion could force it into a closed circle. Although he thought that he would always travel in a straight line, the truth was the he was always revolving around a circle, finally returning to the beginning.

But now, Lin Ming had a very high understanding into the Concept of Space. He could feel that although the power of space surrounding him was violent, there actually wasn't any sign of distortion.

This… just what was going on?

Could this be…

Lin Ming was suddenly surprised. Could this be time…?

When he entered the space storm, he had felt that something was wrong with the flow of time. After adjusting to it a bit he thought that he had adapted himself to the twisting time within the space storm. But could it have really been so easy?

This cage was ahead of the dimensional fragment cage. Without a doubt, it should be much more difficult to break. Could the Concept of Time here really be so simple?

As Lin Ming thought about it, he could feel a chill crawl up his back. Time was even stranger than space.

This sort of strange and unknown phenomenon had always caused people to feel fear; even Lin Ming was no exception.

For years, Lin Ming's understandings towards the Concept of Space had been constantly deepening. But, the Concept of Time had always lagged behind this.

"So it turns out that this cage is not a space storm but rather a time cage. The space storm is merely an illusion. The real killer is the time trap inside!

"What is going on? Why do I feel that I've already adapted to the time, but yet something so strange is happening? It's as if…"

Lin Ming's mind moved. He continued to move forwards in this vortex of space, but every time he did so he would return back to where he started.

Return to where he started…

A light went off in Lin Ming's mind. He turned around and looked at all the space fragments floating around him. These space fragments were constantly smashing into each other and breaking, but even after such a long time, these space fragments were still at the same size; none of these space fragments had broken!

Was this…

Time was returning to the start?

It wasn't a distortion of space, but rather that time was returning to a zero point?

"How weird! My thoughts haven't come under the influence of this rewinding time, but it's just that my position is returning back to the start…"

Lin Ming felt like his thoughts were in a mess. Without a doubt, he was in a cage, a cage where space and time mixed together. Lin Ming's understanding of the Concept of Space was enough, but it was his understandings towards the Concept of Time that was lacking.

He no longer moved, completely calming and focusing his mind to perceive the intangible time cage around him.

Time was much more abstract compared to time . One could sense space, but time was completely insubstantial. Regardless of his eyes or his perception, it was impossible to sense.

As Lin Ming was calming his heart and feeling the flow around him, he was also dodging the space fragments.

Like this, a day passed…

At the start, Lin Ming had to use movement techniques to avoid the space fragments.

But afterwards, he was almost completely fused into the space itself.

A space fragment shot towards him like a knife. Lin Ming's body was like a wisp of flame in the wind, easily avoiding this space fragment as if he wasn't consciously dodging, but instead using the power of space to push these fragments away.

Lin Ming had already fully fused with the power of space.

Chaotic images constantly flashed through Lin Ming's mind.

Time was only the change of all things, an illusion of thoughts and consciousness. When the flow of time changed, that was only changing the conscious perception of the change in all things.

'It wasn't that I was in a different dimension of time constantly returning to the start, but rather my own mind falling into a maze of time, making me unable to realize what direction I was going in.

'I thought that I was going forwards, but the truth was that all my efforts were only an illusion. So no matter how I ran… I was only running in the same place!'

Time could flow backwards, it could be confusing, but it could not alter the heart of a martial artist.

'Ward my heart of martial arts to break this maze of time!'

In that moment, Lin Ming seemed to touch upon the source of time itself. Although it was only for the briefest of moments, it had still been there. Lin Ming opened his eyes, no more confusion clouding them. He still hadn't moved, and the space storm was twisting around him still, the flow of time in disorder.

Time was originally a conscious illusion of all things towards change. In order to break this maze of time, Lin Ming didn't need to move a single step. What he needed to do was to remove the illusion and demons in his heart.

Revolving the Samsara martial intent, Lin Ming's spiritual sea become bright and clear. At that moment, as he stood in the chaotic maze of time, he saw the correct path out.

Without any hesitation, Lin Ming stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void and quickly advanced forwards!

In the space storm as the space fragments danced in the air, Lin Ming rapidly and smoothly passed over them. He was as flexible as a fish, as if all of these fatal dangers in his path were only there to contrast his vibrant grace and splendor!

Lin Ming's footsteps grew faster and faster, and his mind became more and more clear. After a time, he saw the world brighten with light as the space storm opened up before him. In the next moment, he was suddenly in a pure and tranquil white world.

This time, the space around him was normal.

As the cage of time and space collapsed, the space fragments flew back into the space cracks, patching them up in perfect order.

Like that, all of the space cracks and space fragments vanished, everything returning to serenity.

Lin Ming helplessly watched this scene unfold, horrified to the extreme.

The power of space could actually be used to such a ridiculous level and in such an ingenious way? What sort of understanding towards the Concept of Space did one have to achieve in order to reach this level? It was hard to imagine.

At this time, a voice entered into Lin Ming's mind. "I congratulate you for breaking through the final cage, the cage of space and time. Thus, you have succeeded in breaking past the 13 cages. There is only one path remaining… the Road of Emperor!"

Lin Ming was surprised to hear this. Was the Road of Emperor a part of the King's Cage?

Woosh!

A door of light appeared out of thin air, shimmering like mercury. "This is the conclusion to the King's Cage. The time of your trial was 108 days. You do not yet have the ability to pass the Road of Emperor. Now, I grant you your reward for successfully passing the King's Cage…"

"Reward?"

Lin Ming was shocked. There was also a reward?

As Lin Ming was lost in thought, he suddenly felt the surrounding Heavenly Demon force field collapse around him, flushing into his body like a tide!

This sort of feeling was like his body was about to suddenly burst. Lin Ming stuffily coughed, nearly spitting out a mouthful of blood!

Chapter 593 - Asura of the Heavenly Demon Martial Intent

Chapter 593 - Asura of the Heavenly Demon Martial Intent

…

…

…

Peng!

The Purple Comet Spear struck the ground. Lin Ming was only barely propping himself up with the spear shaft. His entire body groaned and it felt like he was about to burst apart at the seams.

His meridians were nearly to the point of exploding. With the entire Heavenly demon force field entering into his body, the pressure could be imagined!

Luckily, he was strong enough. If an ordinary martial artist were to suddenly bear such a great pressure, their entire body would splatter!

But then again, could an ordinary martial artist break through 13 space cages and arrive at this stage?

Once the Heavenly Demon martial intent from the entire area completely entered Lin Ming's body, it then took his body as the epicenter and radiated outwards!

The pressure in space suddenly reduced.

“Mm… this is…” Lin Ming checked his body and only found that his true essence was swelling forth like a surging tide, much more formidable than it was before!

These past days, Lin Ming had constantly been under the heavy pressure of the Heavenly Demon martial intent. Although he gradually adapted to it, it was true that his soul, true essence, and body were all being greatly suppressed. He had to expend an abundance of energy in order to resist the pressure.

Now that the pressure suddenly vanished, he felt his entire body filled with strength, his body as light as a feather and his true essence vast and flooding forth like it would pour out of him.

“My strength has been suppressed for so many days now. It’s only now after it’s been freed that I realize I’ve grown formidable to this degree!”

Lin Ming clenched his fists in happiness. What he wanted the most now was to find a well-matched opponent and have a magnificent match, using every ounce of his strength!

This feeling was amazing! But… there was also… the Heavenly Demon force field!

Lin Ming could feel that the Heavenly Demon force field that had been within this space had engraved itself into his soul. Although the range and power of this force field was much weaker than it had been in the King’s Cage, the foundation of it was laid down and the Heavenly Demon force field’s seed had been planted. As long as he grew stronger, the Heavenly Demon force field would grow with him too.

“This is the Heavenly Demon martial intent?” Lin Ming asked.

“This is the first form of the Heavenly Demon martial intent – Asura. Now it has been given to you!”

“Asura?” Lin Ming paused, confounded. According to this meaning, the Asura martial intent was just a single form of many?

“The Heavenly Demon martial intent is not just a single martial intent, but the fusion of three secondary martial intents. Just obtaining one of these martial intents will show limited effects. If you can obtain all three martial intents and fuse them together, then you will be able to recreate the Heavenly Demon martial intent. With this martial intent alone, you can instantly kill the so-called Emperor powerhouses of your world.”

“What!?” Lin Ming was stunned. With just a martial intent alone, he would be able to instantly kill an Emperor level powerhouse?

From the sound of this voice, it was filled with nothing but disdain to the Emperor powerhouses of the Holy Demon Continent and Sky Spill Continent.

Truly, there was some alarming and terrifying force hidden under the Polar Skysplit Towers. A mere claw wiped out 12 Emperor powerhouses. That was definitely the qualifications to look down at the world with contempt!

Even so, Lin Ming found it hard to accept using just a martial intent to slay Emperor level powerhouses.

This was just too strong.

“If I fuse three kinds of martial intents now, can I kill an Emperor level powerhouse?” Lin Ming thought this was a fantasy. If this Heavenly Demon martial intent was so powerful, then weren’t the ethereal martial intent and Samsara martial intent he perceived before nothing but jokes?

“You… it’s impossible for you to fuse the complete Heavenly Demon martial intent.” The voice flatly denied Lin Ming. “Your strength is far from enough! Not mentioning fusing three kinds of martial intents, but it’s impossible for you to even collect them all!”

After Lin Ming heard this, he couldn’t help but ask, “After the King’s Cage, I can obtain the first form of the Heavenly Demon martial intent – Asura. If I condense a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo, what form of the Heavenly Demon martial intent will I receive then?”

The voice said, “If you can condense a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo, then you will be able to receive the second form of the Heavenly Demon martial intent – Death God!”

Death God!?

As Lin Ming heard this, his heart chilled. Forming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo truly required unending slaughter. Although the number of people he needed to kill wasn’t too many, none of these people were the average commoner, but the most outstanding young heroic youths of their time!

Among these, there were some people that would step foot into the Life Destruction realm if they didn’t die. Perhaps they even had hopes of becoming a Peerless Emperor!

It could be said that in order to complete the twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo, the road he walked over involved stepping over the corpses of 100 potential Life Destruction powerhouses, or even Emperor level powerhouses!

Currently, Lin Ming was only a peak six-winged Heavenly Demon. Any of those geniuses that had died by his hands could be a peerless young leader of a fifth grade sect!

“Besides the Death God martial intent, what is the third martial intent? How can I obtain it?”

“The third martial intent is… the Prime Emperor! Through the Road of Emperor, you can obtain the third form of the Heavenly Demon martial intent. Then, whether or not you can fuse the three martial intents together will all depend on your own perception and lucky chances!”

“Road of Emperor!”

Lin Ming sucked in a cold breath. He had heard that those who could pass through the entire Road of Emperor would already be equivalent to Emperor level powerhouses.

If an Emperor level powerhouse fused Asura, Death God, and Prime Emperor, all three forms of martial intents into one, then couldn't they kill another Emperor powerhouse on the same level with just a thought? Would it be that easy?

Even jumping ranks to kill others wouldn't be difficult!

It seemed that what this voice described wasn't exaggerated, but rather a conservative estimate!

"Are you a temple spirit?"

Lin Ming suddenly asked.

When he entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, he had also met a temple spirit there. The temple spirit had originated from the so-called 'spirit race'. All things had spiritual powers, whether it was the mountains, plants, earth, rivers or streams.

The mysterious temple spirit of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was a 'spirit' bred from a rock that had passed through countless years. Its lifespan was like a rock too, and could sleep for long periods of time. These spirits were often used to guard trial sites and other appropriate places.

The voice was silent for a moment before saying, "Yes, I am from the Stone Spirit race."

So it was true... Lin Ming was dumbfounded. If so, then this fellow could have lived for hundreds of thousands of years, or even millions of years.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment and then tentatively asked, "Senior Temple Spirit, I was wondering whether or not you could tell me what happened in the Eternal Demon Abyss tens of thousands of years ago? Currently, what else is inside of the Eternal Demon Abyss? Who created the 12 Skysplit Towers, how were they created, and for what purpose?"

"I apologize, I am unable to tell you." The temple spirit refused to say.

Lin Ming secretly thought this a pity. But, he also expected an answer like this. The Eternal Demon Abyss most likely involved some massive secret related to the ancient times. It was truly rude for him to ask such questions.

“I’m sorry Senior, I was rude. This experience, I would like to thank Senior Temple Spirit for watching over me.”

“You do not need to thank me, I was only doing what I needed to do. Leave now, I wish to sleep.” The temple spirit said before directly disappearing. Now there was only Lin Ming left in the empty space of the King’s Cage.

Lin Ming turned his head to see a transmission light door. Without a doubt, the space at the other end of this door of light was blocked.

“Space blocking array?”

Lin Ming’s lips curved up in a devilish smile. He didn’t ask the temple spirit to help him in breaking apart this space blocking array because he had confidence he could do it himself.

As long as he had a transmission array leading to the area of the space blocking array, breaking it was not hard at all!

……………………

Skysplit Tower, third floor, special practice area –

In the great hall of the special practice area, there was a massive array laid out. This array formation had been prepared two days ago and it formed a shining hazy light barrier. It isolated all investigation from the outside, so it was near impossible to find out just what was in there.

Every day there would be martial artists that passed in and out of the special practice area. They would naturally see this curtain of light and be curious of what was happening within.

"I heard that there is a problem with the King's Cage. The 12 High Lords have requested for someone to come repair it. A while ago I saw this weird little old Imp enter into the light barrier and stay there for several days. I think that old Imp might be an array master."

Outside of the light barrier, four martial artists were gathered together. Among them, a Giant Demon martial artist was casually speaking.

"Repair the King's Cage? How is that possible?!" Another martial artist curled his lips in disgust. "These are ancient relics of the past. Let alone repair them, it's impossible for us to even destroy them. People like us were already lucky enough that we can obtain some fortune and lucky chances from the King's Cage. Study it? Repair it? What a joke!"

"But that old man is definitely an array master, not just that but he is also a famous one. His abilities are not minor at all. If he isn't here to repair the array formation, then why would he stay around the King's Cage for so long? What is he messing with in there?"

"Who cares what he's messing with. What I want to know is when the King's Cage will open again. Ever since Lin Ming went in, the King's Cage hasn't let anyone else enter. It's been nearly four months now and Lin Ming has been dead for such a long time, yet the King's Cage is still out of use. Just how long will it be sealed for!?"

"I agree. Our high-quality practice resources were sad to begin with, and most of them were given to the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars that pledged loyalty to the High Lords. Now that another one has been sealed off, it means we have one less practice resource!"

"Hehe, I think there are idiots who still believe Lin Ming is alive. That Lin Ming was just too arrogant and conceited. What an idiot. With his cultivation and strength he had the ability to enter the top 10 ranks of the third floor, but now he actually died in the King's Cage! How pathetic!"

Too much time had passed. Slowly, the martial artists of the third floor had tired of talking about Lin Ming. After 85 days or so, most everyone thought Lin Ming had died, but there were still some stragglers holding out on some faint hopes that he was still alive.

At that time, those that thought Lin Ming had died naturally tossed out all sorts of insults and taunts. As for those that thought Lin Ming hadn't died yet, they were mostly human. Their heated arguments continued, and soon… it had been 100 days!

At this time, even those that were convinced that Lin Ming could create a miracle were forced to shut up.

The proud and giddy Giant Demons and Imps naturally had to humiliate the humans. All sorts of nasty words were spat out. These days, the faces of the humans here were just swollen; every day was filled with bullying.

There were many human martial artists that were thinking of leaving Skysplit Tower. For instance, Muk Gu, he was already packing up his bags.

This wasn't because their faces were beaten, but because the third floor of Skysplit Tower already exceeded the limits of most of the humans' potential. They could barely linger on here in pitiful shape. If they continued to stay here, then there was a high chance they would die too.

As the topic of being able to bash the humans' faces was raised, these four Giant Demon and Imp martial arts began to laugh. This sort of funny event naturally generated a burst of excited discussion. As the four of them were talking, the barrier of light behind them gently quivered for a brief moment.

"Mm? What's going on?" A Giant Demon martial artist turned around to look at the light barrier. The light barrier trembled from time to time, the movements becoming increasingly intense as if something were happening to it.

"Is… is the King's Cage finally opening again?"

An Imp said, his heart happy.

Chapter 594 – Return With A Blood Sacrifice To This Spear

Chapter 594 – Return With A Blood Sacrifice To This Spear

…

…

…

The light barrier array formation within the special practice area was only there to deceive the eyes and ears of others. These days, an old Imp man was actually within the light barrier.

He was array master that High Lord Heian had personally invited over – Suo Ge.

Suo Ge was familiar with ancient array formations. This great space locking array was naturally of his own making.

The great space locking array formation could only last for four months. But just in case, in order to prepare for all possibilities, High Lord Heian had invited Suo Ge to come and reinforce the array formation before it expired.

For the first arrangement and then the following reinforcement, High Lord Heian had given Suo Ge 6000 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals!

This was six large chests brimming with crystals; it was absolutely a great wealth!

Thinking of this, Suo Ge grew excited. An array master was a profitable career, but at the same time it was also a career where one feverishly burnt through money. All of those precious array discs, array flags, materials, ancient array formations jade slips, which one of them wasn't sold only at astronomical prices?

Because Suo Ge was wounded during his youth, his cultivation wasn't too high. This was also the reason that it wasn't easy for him to earn Blood Demon Crystals.

With this wealth, he had enough to keep himself well supplied and happy for a long period of time. As Suo Ge thought of this, he chuckled, his wrinkled face scrunching together like a scrunched up pile of black pigskins.

His actions became more and more lively. Array symbols flew from Suo Ge's hands like golden leaves, floating into the air.

"High Lord Heian is really taking this Lin Ming boy seriously. He isn't relaxed that my array formation already lasts four months, but even wants it to last for eight months."

Although High Lord Heian hadn't clearly stated the reason why he wanted this great space blocking array here, Suo Ge was not an idiot nor was he deaf. He naturally heard the martial artists of the third floor talking about Lin Ming, and he was able to instantly understand the situation. The reason that High Lord Heian had asked him to come and set up this array was in order to seal Lin Ming within the King's Cage.

This was a truly incredible and serious act. A High Lord had personally handed down this order and had also used such a roundabout method to accomplish it. Obviously, this Lin Ming was not ordinary at all!

As soon as this caught Suo Ge's attention, he learned that Lin Ming was actually a Titled Asura!

This was only the fourth Titled Asura in 10,000 years! This was truly an existence from legends!

"Boy, don't blame me. My array formations are based upon the ancient principles. For you to die under them and also have High Lord Heian care so much about you that he is willing to part with 6000 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals, this should be enough to have you die in peace. All I can do is make the coffin you're in a bit more refined."

Suo Ge licked his lips. In his life, he had been able to use his array formations to kill a Titled Asura, a person who in the future would become a top human Emperor, a proud son of heaven amongst his generation. Just thinking of this filled Suo Ge with a sense of accomplishment. Perhaps, he might be recorded down in the history of the Imps and array masters.

Because of injuries he hadn't been able to break through to higher martial arts realms. But, if he could still leave behind such an infamous reputation to go along with his Dao of array formations, then that was enough for him to be proud of.

Filled with satisfaction, he began to draw up the next golden array symbol. As he was about to complete this array symbol, the array formation suddenly trembled. This was followed by the sudden inexplicable collapse of an array symbol!

Peng!

"Mm?"

Suo Ge was surprised. If this array symbol shattered here then there would be problems. This meant that there would be a giant hole in this part of the array formation.

"What happened?"

Suo Ge twisted his eyebrows together. Was it possible that there was some problem with the King's Cage?

If some violent space turbulence broke out from the King's Cage, then it wouldn't be surprising if it affected this space blocking array.

Suo Ge shook his head. He raised his head, about to draw up another array symbol to replace the broken one, but just as he was about to finish, sudden ringing sounds filled the air.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

Three array symbols continuously disintegrated.

Suo Ge stood there, dumbfounded. It seemed that this violent space turbulence was not minor!

He was about to redraw the broken array symbols, when suddenly…

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

The sound was like raindrops hitting a bucket. The array symbols in the formation began to burst one after another. Soon, this entire section of array symbols would completely collapse.

“Unlucky!”

Suo Ge cursed.

He had spent most of the day drawing up this group of array symbols.

Should he redraw it?

This required more materials as well as a massive amount of energy.

As he was growing angry about this matter, he heard a loud series of explosions. Nearby, a second section of array symbols was also breaking apart!

Then, as the sound of explosions still lingered in the air, in just a few breaths of time, Suo Ge’s entire great array completely broke apart. The power of space here that was sealed soon returned to normal. The entire space blocking array had failed!

Suo Ge paused.

The large array had failed?

What the hell…

Was this really caused by chaotic space flows?

Suo Ge didn’t know why, but an ice cold feeling filled him. From the soles of his feet to his thighs to his waist and straight into his spirit, he felt a terrifying and unexplainable chill!

It had been just shy of four months. Even if the large array failed, that Lin Ming… should still have died!

Suo Ge was frightened. He hesitated for a moment about whether he should immediately report this matter to High Lord Heian, when a sudden portal of blazing blue light shimmered into being within the empty void!

Transmission gate!

In that moment, beads of sweat dripped down Suo Ge’s forehead!

Could it be…

“Calm down, calm down, he might not be able to deal with me!”

As Suo Ge thought this, he turned around to run away. He wanted to run out of the special practice area and inform High Lord Heian of this crazy change of events.

But at this moment, he felt like his own speed had slowed down by an infinite amount. He was obviously running forwards with full-throttled desperation, but he couldn’t even manage to move a tiny step forwards!

This strange feeling horrified Suo Ge!

“This is…!”

Suo Ge felt his knees weaken. He felt like a mortal standing in front of a tiger cage, and now, that cage had been opened!

“Bastard!”

Suo Ge’s eyes turned red. He turned around and suddenly waved his arms. An array disc came shooting out from him, heading straight towards the shining door of light!

However, before the array disc could even close in, there was an echoing ‘kacha!’ as the array disc was shattered apart, turning into powder!

Right after, a radiant spear light shot out from the door of light, thrusting straight towards Suo Ge.

“Ahh!”

Suo Ge roared and extracted a keen sword from his spatial ring, wanting to cut that spear light in half.

But… he was too slow.

He had fallen into a whirlpool of time. It was impossible for him to break free.

In that instant, Suo Ge fell into despair. He had just lifted the sword in his hand when the spear light reached him, shooting straight between his eyebrows.

“Ahhhhhhhhhh!”

In front of Suo Ge’s horrified eyes, the spear light easily pierced through his bodily true essence. It shot through between his eyebrows, smashing apart his spiritual sea and crushing his brain before exiting right through the other side, carrying with it a rain of blood and brain fluids as it directly impacted the light barrier array formation!

Chi-la!

The light barrier was almost torn in half!

Suo Ge's eyes had glazed over, becoming completely empty. In the last moments of his life he had seen a young man, wearing ripped up blue robes with long hair hanging down to his waist, stepping out of the transmission gate.

His eyes were as sharp as the thunder of the highest heavens!

His aura was as chilling as the nine silent layers of the endless abyss!

Seeing this youth, Suo Ge's soul froze, like he was a mortal lying naked in a snowstorm, feeling nothing but a bone-freezing cold!

This was also Suo Ge's last thought…

…………..

…………..

"Haha, the King's Cage has finally opened! It should be time for this father to go. Heh, just look and see how awesome this invincible father's might is! I will stay inside for 20 to 30 days in a single breath!" Outside of the light barrier array formation, the four Giant Demon and Imp martial artists were happily talking about past events of Lin Ming and the King's Cage, making fun of the humans of Skysplit Tower as if they were nothing but worthless clowns.

They didn't know what was happening in this array formation. This light barrier array formation was purposely arranged to isolate the senses of others so that they couldn't see or hear what was happening inside. Naturally, a High Lord of Skysplit Tower wouldn't want it known that he was deliberately killing the outstanding heroic youths.

Now, as these four Giant Demon and Imp martial artists saw a large chunk of the light barrier ripped apart, they thought that the King's Cage was finally being opened for use again.

"It's finally over! F*ck, we've waited such a long time!"

"What bad luck. The King's Cage can only be entered once in a lifetime. The average person can only go in for several days, and even that abnormal freak Feng Shen only lasted 28 days before he was forced out. But that idiot Lin Ming actually died as soon as he went it. I don't care if he died, but it actually delayed us for so long, f*ck, I've never seen someone so dumb before! It's truly a work of art how stupid he was."

An Imp martial artist cursed out loud.

Another martial artist smiled and laughed, "Haha, he was really stupid to the extreme. But hey, at least he also gave us a lot of fun..."

As he spoke here, his next words caught in his throat.

He looked, numb, at the torn light barrier in front of him.

First, his face twisted like he had seen a ghost.

Then, surprise, disbelief, confusion, fear, all of these emotions flashed plain on his face. He stared blankly on as a young man with shredded blue robes and waist-long hair stepped out from the torn light barrier array formation, taking one calm step at a time.

The ruined light barrier was pushed aside by him as easily as if it were a spider's web.

The Imp martial artist's expression instantly twisted!

"Lin Ming!!"

In an instant, all four martial artists stood dumbfounded, scared stiff on the spot as if they were all statues!

"This... how is this possible!?!?"

Almost four months. 108 days.

And Lin Ming… was still alive!!!!

Heavens! The Eightfall War Emperor had stayed in the King's Cage for 60 days, and that was already the record for the last several thousand years! How could anyone actually stay inside for more than 100 days!?

As Lin Ming glanced at these four martial artists, he casually put out a hand. Atop his palm, Blood Drinking Seals wildly danced in the air!

Tides of killing intent recklessly gushed out!

"You… what do you want to do!?" The Imp martial artist who spoke was unnerved.

"Don't be afraid! This is a fighting restricted area! He wouldn't dare to do anything to us here!" The Giant Demon who seemed to be the leader of the group said. According to the rules of Skysplit Tower, fighting was prohibited within the special practice area. Violation of this rule would lead to the enforcement team coming to kill you!

Lin Ming didn't speak. As he neared one step at a time, his Asura martial intent unconsciously spread out!

Heavenly Demon martial intent, Asura form. Its most powerful aspect lay in the pressure of its force field.

The four martial artists felt as if a mountain range had come crashing down on them. All of the true essence in their bodies was suddenly stifled!

"You… what are you doing!? If you do anything to us then the High Lords will sentence you to death!" The Giant Demon martial artist's words were brave, but he was actually close to fainting in his heart.

"High Lord?" Lin Ming's lips curved up. In this smile, there was a somewhat fierce and wicked flavor to it.

“Are you... are you defying the High Lords, you...” The martial artist spoke to here when a sudden zooming sound filled the air. A bloody light flashed, Blood Drinking Seals shooting out!

“Uhkk!”

The Giant Demon’s stunned cry stopped in his throat. He felt dizzy, and then saw the ground getting nearer and nearer even as his body went further away. His head was like a rubber ball as it rolled onto the ground!

Chapter 595 – Sacrifice To My Saber

Chapter 595 – Sacrifice To My Saber

…

…

…

A fountain of blood erupted 20 feet into the air. The Giant Demon's eyes were as large as brass bells. He stared at Lin Ming, his eyes and mouth twisted, his last expression pained and unable to die in peace.

"Lin Ming!"

All the other martial artists were scared silly. Lin Ming had killed someone, and in an area that prohibited fighting!

"Everyone split up and run! Wait for the enforcement team to come!"

A martial artist suddenly shouted. After all, he was someone who had experienced countless slaughters on the edge of life and death. Although he was afraid, he could still stay calm.

An Imp martial artist ran away quickly as he pulled out a sound transmitting talisman, readying to send a sound transmission to the High Lord responsible for the enforcement team.

However, as he was preparing to light his sound transmitting talisman, he suddenly felt his speed slow down, everyone lagging around him. No matter how fast he ran he couldn't run quickly. This sort of feeling made him go crazy.

As he pinched the sound transmitting talisman with one hand, he didn't even have time to use it before he felt something ice cold behind him. He watched helplessly as something shot out from his chest, right over the position of his heart, causing a spray of blood to follow behind it. This terrifying speed formed a sharp contrast to the slow movements he was mired in.

His body softly plopped to the floor… a pool of blood quickly formed around him…

The three escaping martial artists were instantly killed by Lin Ming. Even from the time that he had killed the Giant Demon martial artist, killing these four had only taken several breaths.

"Lin Ming… you killed me… you will die too!" The Imp martial artist hadn't died yet, still on his last breath. His heart was completely broken, and blood welled up from his body.

He clenched his teeth as he spat out this final threat, but he didn't find any trace of panic on Lin Ming's face, only finding a cruel sneer and ridicule there.

Peng!

A foot crushed his throat and the Imp martial artist stopped breathing!

Of these five people that had died, four of them were challengers, and all of them were strong seniors. After they died, the infernal energy on their bodies began to dissipate, forming fierce Heavenly Demon phantoms that rushed towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming coldly humphed. The Heavenly Demon force field erupted!

Four Heavenly Demon phantoms were directly crushed to smithereens by the force field, turning into pure infernal energy that flowed into Lin Ming's body.

Lin Ming was a peak six-winged Heavenly Demon. Since these four challengers were all characters that could enter this special practice area, the amount of infernal energy they had was no less than Lin Ming's.

Four forces fused into one and instantly rushed into Lin Ming's spiritual sea! It rushed forwards with a menacing aura, vowing to swallow Lin Ming's mind!

Lin Ming coldly snorted. The Samsara martial intent revolved, twisting this tempestuous energy into shreds!

The infernal energy finally scattered completely and began to slowly be absorbed by Lin Ming. The Heavenly Demon Tattoo on his arm rapidly formed a fourth pair of wings. The blurred outline of the wings became increasingly distinct. Finally, it reached the early eight wings before ceasing to grow.

An early eight wings was almost at the standard of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars.

Taking a long breath, Lin Ming shook his head, his heart brimming with an irrepressible killing intent that was impossible to satiate.

Although Lin Ming had the Samsara martial intent and was able to defend his heart and mindset, after all these long years of killing and death battles, it had formed an incorrigible bloodlust that was hard to alleviate.

Not just that, but he had also been stuck within the King's Cage for an entire 108 days, constantly having to withstand the massive pressure of the Heavenly Demon force field. His spiritual and mental concentration had been highly tensed the entire time, and all of this was thanks to the plotting of the 12 High Lords!

If he didn't just happen to have the Nameless Divine Pill and the Demon God Bone, both with energies that were polar opposites of each other, and having the lucky coincidence that they would battle each other and open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, then Lin Ming would have likely died in the King's Cage.

This grudge, hostility, and killing intent had all been suppressed for a long time.

Now it had instantly erupted, affecting Lin Ming's mindset for a brief period.

Lin Ming took the spatial rings from the four dead martial artists, and also used their blood essence to form new Blood Drinking Seals. Then he tossed a ball of fire at them, burning their corpses to ashes.

Stepping out of this room, Lin Ming opened the heavy stone doors and came into the great hall of the special practice area.

The hall was very broad, shaped like a square that was 1000 feet wide and long. The one-armed Deacon Bai was busily attending to a few people.

In that brief battle just now, because it had been too short and there hadn't been any loud earth-shattering sounds, these factors coupled with the spells that covered the stone door made it so that the martial artists outside hadn't noticed anything.

As the stone door rumbled open, Deacon Bai looked in surprise towards the direction of the stone gate. He saw a single young man with tattered blue robes, waist-long hair, and an expressionless face stepping out.

Then, Deacon Bai turned completely stunned.

With him, the few other martial artists in the room also fell into a stupefied daze.

Lin... Lin Ming!

After fusing with the Heavenly Demon martial intent, Lin Ming's body was constantly releasing a pressuring aura, whether he was doing it intentionally or not. This made it so that when someone looked at him they felt their hearts gripped and found it difficult to breathe.

At this point, this pressure had unknowingly enveloped the entire hall. The few people in there suddenly fell silent.

Lin Ming hadn't died yet?

He had stayed in the King's Cage for almost four whole months!

He was still alive!?!?!?

…………………………

News of Lin Ming’s return spread through the entire Skysplit Tower like a twister. Everyone, whether they were human, Giant Demon, Fey, or any other race were all completely shocked.

This was beyond all results in history, beyond all results that would be in the future!

This was completely unprecedented from ancient times until now!

The Eightfall War Emperor had only been able to stay in the King’s Cage for two months.

The Netherworld Asura, a month and a half!

Of these two people, the Netherworld Asura went missing afterwards and his achievements became unknown. But, the Eightfall War Emperor had become an Emperor level Supreme Elder, even as he had the qualifications to look down on all other Emperor level powerhouses at his level!

It had to be known that each and every person that reached the boundary of an Emperor was a peerless heroic youth of their era, each of them undefeatable Emperor level talents. Not just that, but there were even great disparities among those at Emperor level, wanting to jump ranks to fight was difficult, far too difficult!

Even in this case, the Eightfall War Emperor could instantly kill an Emperor on the same level as him!

And compared to someone that was a small realm or two small realms above him, he could still fight on equal footing with them!

Such capability made one tremble with fear!

Without exaggeration, in the distant future, the Eightfall War Emperor had hope of becoming the Holy Demon Continent's number one powerhouse!

And now, the time that Lin Ming had stayed within the King's Cage was actually double that of the Eightfall War Emperor!

In particular, the King's Cage was more difficult the further one went. This meant that Lin Ming's talent was far higher than two times the Eightfall War Emperor's!

This had already surpassed the scope of imaginations for these martial artists…

"I can't believe this…"

Muk Gu, who was already planning on leaving Skysplit Tower, began to mutter to himself. He thought that he had fallen into a dream. One month ago, he had still hoped every day that Lin Ming would come out, but he had always been disappointed every day.

But now, Lin Ming had finally come out. This had left him bewildered.

That Lin Ming had actually stayed within the King's Cage for 108 days in a single go.

Was he even human?

……………………………………

Skysplit Tower, fourth floor, Road of Emperor!

Ka ka ka!

A stone door opened and a black-robed Imp stepped forwards from the Road of Emperor. His entire body was shrouded in a layer of black fog, his eyes were bright, and his face had a restrained ferocity and look of rapture to it.

"Yan Chi, how was it, did you make a breakthrough?"

Yan Chi laughed, “Yes! I’ve already discerned the profound and esoteric principles of the Road of Emperor! I can’t wait to fight Feng Shen now, I want to see whether or not he’s still my match! Hahaha!”

Yan Chi cackled with confidence, his wild laughter filling the entire room like thunderclaps!

Several months ago he had obtained approval to enter the Road of Emperor. Although it was said that the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars who had pledged their allegiance to Skysplit Tower would be able to enjoy massive amounts of practice resources, as for the true core Road of Emperor, one couldn’t enter it as they wished. They needed to complete tasks for the High Lords in order to be rewarded with small amounts of time to enter.

Even Feng Shen, who had a deep background, couldn’t obtain the qualifications to enter the Road of Emperor.

Entering the Road of Emperor was not minor in helping a martial artist grow stronger. The 12 High Lords feared that their servants’ strength would be too great and they would then be unable to control them, thus they placed all sorts of limits on entry.

But this time, because of the events with Lin Ming, Skysplit Tower’s High Lords believed that it was necessary to enhance the strength of their subordinates, in order to cultivate a powerful enough Heavenly Demon Seven Star that could solve their problems.

Maha, who was standing near Yan Chi, smiled and said, “Hehe, it’s rare for us to enter the Road of Emperor. It’s true that you made a breakthrough, but my harvest might not be any worse than yours.”

“Oh really? No need to hurry. Wait for me to defeat Feng Shen and then I’ll spar with you again. This time, I have 60 to 70% assurance that I can defeat Feng Shen!”

“Haha, since you say that then this little brother is also extremely looking forwards to it.” The Heavenly Demon Seven Stars’ Kai Yang laughed as he spoke.

Yan Chi and Maha were originally two of the top ranked three within the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. But, Kai Yang was one of the weaker ones. Although he too had gained enormous harvests within the Road of Emperor, he didn't show off his abilities, instead wisely choosing to flatter the two.

However, this didn't mean that he wasn't confident in himself. What he was doing was patiently waiting until that one moment when he could amaze the world with a glorious moment so that he could obtain more respect from the High Lords as well as more resources.

'Hehe, perhaps I am weaker than you two are now, but not by much. If I can obtain another Demon God Bone, then I'm confident I can surpass you! When that time comes, then this father will also be ranked in Skysplit Tower's top three!'

Kai Yang was happily creating his own plans. But at this moment, a sound transmitting talisman lit up in the great hall, a beautiful flame flashing for a brief moment.

This sound transmitting talisman was for the three of them at the same time. As they heard this voice, all of them froze in place.

"What!? Lin Ming is still alive!?"

The three of them had all entered the King's Cage before, and the one in there the longest was Yan Chi with 20 some days. They naturally knew what it meant to stay in the King's Cage for nearly four months!

"How is that possible…" Kai Yang mumbled to himself. This was completely unbelievable. Was the King's Cage that Lin Ming entered different from the one they had entered? Was the difficulty much lower?

He couldn't help but think this. The Eightfall War Emperor had stayed in for only two months! Lin Ming, no matter how much of a monstrous genius he was, it was simply impossible for him to persist inside for four whole months!

Perhaps… after two months in the King's Cage, the difficulty would begin to level out? Otherwise, Kai Yang found it hard to imagine to just what difficulty the King's Cage would be at after four months.

The only one who could explain this was Lin Ming. Nobody in history had ever stayed longer inside longer than two months.

Maha thought for a moment and then suddenly laughed, his laughs growing louder and more manic. "No matter what he experienced in the King's Cage, what I learned within the Road of Emperor was far better! This is great! Since I've made a breakthrough in my strength, I've been looking for a good match to see just what boundary my strength has risen to. This Lin Ming has just about the right qualifications to do so. I will take him as a sacrifice to my saber!"

Chapter 596 – To Use Fingers As a Spear

Chapter 596 – To Use Fingers As a Spear

…

…

…

After Maha's words, Kai Yang also recovered from his shock. Although Lin Ming's talent was high, it wasn't enough for him to dread.

For a martial artist's improvement, the King's Cage fell far short of the Road of Emperor.

Lin Ming had undoubtedly grown stronger within the King's Cage. But, they hadn't been lazing around either; they had entered the Road of Emperor during these past months!

They were completely different levels of practice areas. How could their gains be any worse than Lin Ming's!

'Good! Then before my fight with Feng Shen, I will fight Lin Ming as a warmup, hehe!' Yan Chi licked his lips, his eyes shining with voracity. He too was thinking of fighting with Lin Ming.

Yan Chi had absolute belief in the increase of his strength. Much less, they had originally been stronger than Lin Ming to begin with. Whether it was him or Maha, both of them were ranked in the top three of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars.

When Lin Ming had easily killed Hong Zhong, then killed Yan Hu, and proceeded to force Ming Sun to admit defeat, the evaluation of Lin Ming's strength had steadily risen into the top 10 of the third floor.

This evaluation had also included, to a degree, Lin Ming's hidden strengths.

Easily killing Hong Zhong and Yan Hu was something that even Kai Yang could achieve without revealing his true strength.

Within Skysplit Tower, the difference in strength between the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars and other martial artists was enormous.

Conscious of these things, Kai Yang's mind also moved. Now that Lin Ming returned, he would be at the height of his fame and power. If he could defeat Lin Ming at this time then he would be able to greatly enhance his own reputation. He could obtain more attention and respect from the 12 High Lords, and even obtain more resources!

Speaking of which, Lin Ming had been in the King's Cage for four months. That meant that he owed two matches!

Kai Yang grew increasingly excited. Lin Ming had just come out of the King's Cage and broke every record for the last 10,000 years. He would absolutely be brimming with confidence at this moment. But, Lin Ming wouldn't know that he had entered the Road of Emperor and his own strength had risen so dramatically. If he could fight Lin Ming and mercilessly beat him up, stepping on this once in 10,000 year top talent so that he would never be able to stand up again, then this would make his thoughts incomparably happy and smooth.

....

Skysplit Tower's third floor, Dark Day Restaurant.

Lin Ming sat in an airy, open hall. He had ordered a dish of high-grade vicious beast meat, steamed fish, and a pot of millennium-aged wine.

A piece of meat, a cup of wine, he was eating it all at a brisk pace.

During his 108 days within the King's Cage, Lin Ming had eaten nothing but dried meats and fasting pills. Although it was able to fill his stomach, it was bland, the same as chewing wax.

Outside of this Dark Day Restaurant, the streets were already packed full with people. A great deal of people hadn't believed that Lin Ming had come out alive and wanted to see him with their own eyes.

As they saw Lin Ming calmly sitting in the restaurant, he had already changed into a new set of light blue clothes. He unexpectedly looked somewhat like a refined and elegant scholar.

However, there was a strange energy field emitting from his entire body, reminding everyone here just how fearful this youth in front of them was.

"This aura is..." A top 50 ranked martial artist of the third floor looked at Lin Ming, his eyelids jumping. Lin Ming had obviously restrained all the true essence in his body, but he was still sending out a vast aura. Whether intentional or not, it was still shocking! As Lin Ming sat there, he was like a peerless divine spear, impossibly sharp!

"Where is this aura coming from?"

A martial artist's aura sounded as if it were an illusion, but it did in fact exist. In truth, this so-called aura was an energy field.

Heaven and earth origin energy itself was a kind of energy. When it was gathered together it would naturally produce an energy field.

When a normal martial artist fought, their entire body would erupt with true essence and their aura would do the same. But Lin Ming had obviously curbed his true essence, yet his aura was actually powerful to this degree.

Just what was this?

All the martial artists on the third floor had outstanding eyesight. They also discovered this phenomenon occurring on Lin Ming's body, causing them to be startled.

"Lin Ming, he must have grown much stronger these past four months!"

"He is truly worthy of being called someone with talent greater than the Eightfall War Emperor..."

"How terrifying! I'm afraid that even the lower ranked Heavenly Demon Seven Stars might not be his match anymore!"

The surrounding martial artists were all talking. Those that had formerly flaunted Lin Ming's death and cracked jokes about him had all shut up.

Originally, they had all firmly promised everyone that Lin Ming had most assuredly died after 80 days. But now, 108 days after entering, Lin Ming had calmly and safely come out. This was a slap in the face to all of these martial artists.

At this moment, a Giant Demon martial artist grimaced as he said, "Lin Ming is truly fierce, but it's too much to say that he can defeat one of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. The Heavenly Demon Seven Stars' strength is much higher than that of all other martial artists on the third floor, and I heard that Yan Chi and them also entered the Road of Emperor. After they came out, their strength would inevitably have risen by a large degree! I think that not even Feng Shen could be Yan Chi's match!

When one reached the very end of the Road of Emperor, they would become an Emperor level powerhouse.

This was not an exaggeration.

Of course, there hadn't been anyone that had actually reached the end. Even so, the King's Cage was far from comparable with the Road of Emperor.

As Yan Chi's name was brought up, the martial artists present were somewhat scared. Yan Chi's infamy was too heavy now; he was only inferior to Feng Shen. Also, Yan Chi had pledged his utter loyalty to Skysplit Tower, so he definitely obtained more resources than Feng Shen.

At this moment, there was suddenly the brusque sound of rushing footsteps. A group of armored martial artists rushed towards the front of the restaurant, pushing away the crowd. These martial artists all had the same unified armor set, and they all had a small tower embroidered over their right chest.

"The enforcement team?"

Seeing the enforcement team suddenly appear, the martial artists were confused as to what was going on.

The members of Skysplit Tower's enforcement team weren't any great talents when compared to the challengers of the third floor, but even though their talent was ordinary, all of them were on the older side. Thus, their members' true strength was equal to the upper levels of the third floor.

Lin Ming quietly continued drinking, not even bothering to toss them a glance.

"You are Lin Ming!"

The captain of the enforcement team stared at Lin Ming, a cold light flashing in his eyes. "At the entrance to the King's Cage at the special practice area, after you left, Wan Shu, Lin Feng, and two other martial artists went missing. In addition to this, Master Suo Ge was found with a hole pierced between his eyebrows. Were these five people killed by you?"

Lin Ming put down his cup of wine and stood up. He impassively said, "That's right."

He didn't plan to hide this matter to begin with, nor could he have.

"Good! You openly fought in a prohibited zone, and you openly killed in a prohibited zone. It seems you have no idea of death or danger! Brothers, take him and cripple his martial arts! Ready him for judgment by the High Lords!"

The captain of the enforcement team shouted out and soon several martial artists began to move forwards!

Lin Ming used his fingers as a spear and swept them out.

In the next moment, a brilliant spear light flooded the entire hall.

Peng!

The wooden doors and windows of the restaurant flew away and every piece of furniture in front of Lin Ming exploded into pieces. Terrifying waves of air pressure forced every martial artist present to take a step back. As for the enforcement team martial artists who were swept up by that spear light, they gave stuffy coughs and vomited out mouthfuls of blood, their bodies sent flying backwards.

Suddenly, the entire area fell silent.

Lin Ming was crazy! He actually dared to attack the enforcement team!?!?

Chapter 597 – No Backing Down

Chapter 597 – No Backing Down

…

…

…

Skysplit Tower's enforcement team represented the 12 High Lords! Who would have the courage to so brazenly attack them?!

To attack the enforcement team meant opposing the 12 High Lords. In Skysplit Tower, the 12 High Lords were the emperors, they controlled life and death in their hands!

Now, Lin Ming had just blatantly slapped the High Lords' faces.

Moreover, although the enforcement team members' talents weren't too high, their ages were. They were not weak. Otherwise, why would they have the ability to enforce the law on the third floor?

But just now, five or six of them had been casually struck by Lin Ming and sent flying back!

"To use fingers as his spear and sweep away the entire enforcement team!"

"What a terrifying spear light. Although it wasn't even aimed at me, I still felt my heart shake!"

The surrounding martial artists were not weaklings. But they faintly imagined what would happen if they were to take that one strike a moment ago, and every conclusion they came to made them depressed. The majority of them had to admit that they simply didn't have the strength to resist in the face of that attack. Even if some of them thought they could resist it, they feared that they would probably suffer minor injuries.

This was just Lin Ming's casual attack; he hadn't even used his spear!

"Lin Ming! You... you... do you have a death wish?!" The enforcement team captain burned with anger, but he was actually quaking in his heart, crying about why this was happening. He had taken his team here but they had been instantly swept away with a single strike. Now he could only watch, he didn't dare to do anything to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming hadn't been ruthless in that strike just now. Otherwise, these people wouldn't have been severely wounded and vomited blood, but rather directly perished where they stood!

If Lin Ming dared to kill people in a prohibited area, then he would dare to kill the enforcement team!

The enforcement team captain had ridden the tiger and now there was no more backing down. He simply didn't know what to do. With so many pairs of eyes looking at him, under their gaze he had been smacking around. If he walked away then he would be shamed so much that even his grandmother wouldn't recognize him. How could he still continue to enforce the law on the third floor?

He couldn't run but he couldn't stay either. As the enforcement team captain was agonizing over what to do, the sound of noisy footsteps suddenly stirred.

Turning around, he saw a troop of over a dozen warriors rush over. They all wore the same battle armor, and their individual strength and cultivation were far beyond the enforcement team of the third floor!

"The fourth floor guards."

The martial artists were stunned. The guards for the fourth floor were the same as the personal guard for the High Lords! Their status was also much higher than the enforcement team's.

A High Lord had come?

In Skysplit Tower, it had been too many years since a High Lord had been aroused!

"Make way! Everyone make way!"

The captain of the fourth floor guards snapped at everyone before him. Although his attitude was crude and barbaric, nobody dared to say half a word back to him. All of they gave way, lest they were slow and blocked his path.

In the center of these fourth floor guards, a black-robed Imp slowly stepped out. He had a cruel smile on his face as he coldly looked at Lin Ming.

This was High Lord Heian!

High Lord!!!

All of the martial artists present felt their pupils shrink. In fact, there weren't too many martial artists that had seen High Lords up close, but they could feel a faint imposing aura emitting from him, and could correctly guess that this Imp man in front of them was one of the 12 High Lords.

One of the 12 High Lords, the highest existences within Skysplit Tower!

"Lin Ming, this is the first time that we've met!" As High Lord Heian spoke, his eyes filled with a sparkling killing intent.

At this time, Lin Ming had sat back down in the restaurant, slowly eating his meal again. He looked up at High Lord Heian and laid down his chopsticks, standing up once more.

Facing High Lord Heian, his actions were sincere.

“You are Heian?”

All of the martial artists felt their hearts tighten. Lin Ming had directly called a High Lord by his name!

What arrogance! What pride!

High Lord Heian’s eyes narrowed as he looking at Lin Ming, his vision as sharp as his knife. It seemed as if he were trying to completely understand him, penetrating through his entire being.

This boy was truly formidable!

“Addressing me by my name, disrespecting me, killing in the prohibited zone, even attacking the enforcement team. You… your unbridled actions are far too audacious!”

“Me? Audacious?” Lin Ming smiled. “Heian, wasn’t it you who hired that old Imp to lay down a great space locking array around the King’s Cage? You wanted to lock me in the King’s Cage and kill me in there? Hehe… if I hadn’t made a miraculous breakthrough inside, then I fear I would already be dead in the King’s Cage!”

His words were relentless. Combined with the Asura force field that seemed to burst out from his body, this caused his words to loudly ring in everyone’s ears, causing them to tremble.

“What?”

Lin Ming’s words shocked everyone present!

It wasn’t a secret that Suo Ge had been busily working inside the King’s Cage these past days.

Skysplit Tower’s practice areas could be considered relics from the ancient times; it was impossible for Suo Ge to repair any of the array formations because he simply lacked this ability. If so, then what was he doing for so many days inside of the special practice area?

Also, after Lin Ming emerged from the King's Cage after 108 days, although it was truly shocking, everyone was filled with their own suspicions. Just what had Lin Ming experience inside the King's Cage? Why had he stayed inside for so long?

Thirdly, if Skysplit Tower recognized Lin Ming as dead, then why wasn't the King's Cage opened again?

All of these doubts were actually laid bare by Lin Ming and all of the martial artists present realized what had happened. None of them were fools. They connected all the possibilities and were able to instantly judge that what Lin Ming said was most likely true!

The 12 High Lords wanted Lin Ming to die in peril within the King's Cage. But, by whatever means, Lin Ming had emerged from the King's Cage!

With the great space locking array laid down by Suo Ge, in addition to the inhumane environment inside the King's Cage that only grew worse every day, Lin Ming actually stayed within for 108 days and broke out himself!

Was he even human?

Now that this plot was revealed by Lin Ming, High Lord Heian's complexion turned ugly. His plan to kill Lin Ming had been perfect. But he never imagined that even in this situation, Lin Ming would still be able to come out alive!

"Lin Ming, the reason that I asked Suo Ge to come is because I wanted him to set down a new transmission array for an improved escape talisman. This is so that martial artists that enter the King's Cage can have greater chances of escaping alive! Who do you think you are, that you think you are so worthy that I would personally concoct schemes to deal with you?" High Lord Heian spoke with contempt.

However, no matter how disdainful High Lord Heian's expression was, there was basically no martial artist present that believed his excuse. They weren't silly children that would be fooled so easily. But although everyone understood how things were, no one dared to reveal anything otherwise.

“Hahaha! Is that so?” Lin Ming sneered, the derision in his eyes and voice obvious.

High Lord Heian subconsciously clenched his fists. This matter was becoming increasingly troublesome.

If he personally dealt with Lin Ming today, then he would undoubtedly be able to capture or kill Lin Ming.

But he himself would be seen as in the wrong, and would have been shown to be vagrantly breaking all decorum and rules. When that happened, he would be known as the High Lord of Polar Skysplit Tower that schemed and used every means possible to strangle rising talents!

Polar Skysplit Tower’s reputation could not withstand such damage!

‘This damn boy!’ Heian cursed in his mind. But, he couldn’t back down at this moment. Killing Lin Ming now was no good, but letting Lin Ming leave like this was even worse.

He had no idea what to do!

At this moment, there were more noisy footsteps approaching. High Lord Heian turned and saw that not too far away, Yan Chi, Maha, and Kai Yang were all soaring over here.

As Heian saw these three people he was instantly overjoyed. With these three, he thought of a safe solution to all his problems!

Chapter 598 – Three Continuous Matches

Chapter 598 – Three Continuous Matches

…

…

…

"Yan Chi, Maha, Kai Yang!"

As these three people appeared, the martial artists present were all shocked. Three of the Heavenly demon Seven Stars had simultaneously arrived!

Compared to Lin Ming, none of these three auras were in any way inferior. As these three auras faintly overlapped with each other's, it even overshadowed Lin Ming's!

"Sir High Lord!"

Yan Chi slightly bowed. Whether it was because of the soul contract or resources, the always proud Yan Chi was respectful towards the 12 High Lords.

High Lord Heian nodded with satisfaction. He was happy as he noticed that Yan Chi, Maha, and Kai Yan's strengths had increased by a great deal. Fortunately, he had let the three of them into the Road of Emperor a few months ago. Now he had soldiers at the time he needed them the most.

"Good, you have not disappointed me." High Lord Heian slowly said as he turned back to look at Lin Ming. "Lin Ming, I remember than you were in the King's cage for 108 days. With some of the time from before, you should owe two or three matches now?"

Lin Ming heard High Lord Heian speak and the corners of his lips curved up, “What are you trying to say?”

“You have doubted me, offended me, and falsely accused me. If I kill you now, then others will inevitably spread rumors about if, treating me in a completely unfair manner! Since this is the case then I have a chance for you. You’ve just come out of the King’s Cage so your strength should have risen. So, you will now finish all the matches that you owe!”

As High Lord Heian spoke, the martial artists present began to understand. What High Lord Heian wanted was for Lin Ming to enter the arena stage and fight the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars!

Not just that, but in accordance to the rules of Skysplit tower, if one owed matches because they were in practice then they would have to fight in continuous matches! There would be no rest time between them!

When Lin Ming had continuously fought Yan Hu and Ming Sun, this was also a similar situation. Lin Ming had killed Yan Hu with absolute superiority, forcing Ming Sun to peacefully raise the white flag so there wasn’t even a real second match.

But this time was different. His matches would be against the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars! Who would still dare to continuously fight them!?!?

“Time? Opponents?”

Lin Ming calmly said without a hint of fear.

High Lord Heian was surprised for a moment. This kid was far too confident!

Even facing continuous matches with the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars he didn’t care at all, even letting High Lord Heian arrange the matches for him. To what degree did his confidence extend to!?

The surrounding martial artists were all secretly shocked. As they looked at Lin Ming leisurely standing, this definitely wasn’t an act!

High Lord Heian glowered. He coldly said, “Since you are so bold then I won’t disappoint you. 10 days from now at the martial arena, you will fight Yan Chi, Maha, and Kai Yang!”

Three continuous matches?

All of the martial artists present were confused. They knew that High Lord Heian wished for Lin Ming to die, but didn’t think that he would directly put out three continuous matches. Arguably, Lin Ming only owed two now. The third would still have to wait for some time.

They turned towards Lin Ming, seeing if he would refuse.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. “Three continuous matches? Sure!”

Lin Ming easily agreed, startling all the martial artists.

To continuously fight three Heavenly Demon Stars, especially Yan Chi and Maha who were ranked in the top three, was simply madness! Utter madness!

“Lin Ming is too reckless. It’s true that he’s strong, but according to some reliable sources, Yan Chi, Maha, and Kai Yang have all entered the Road of Emperor, gaining experience inside for the last few months. What they gained in there is most likely no less than what Lin Ming gained in the King’s Cage! And what is even worse is that if Lin Ming battled just Kai Yang alone I’m still afraid he would be in a perilous situation, and now he wants to fight three of them continuously!”

“For sure. Lin Ming just doesn’t understand how strong these three are. Agreeing to this is just too rash.”

Continuous matches was an enormous test of a martial artist's true essence and physical strength; one could only win if they had an overwhelming advantage. Otherwise, the longer these battles dragged on the more exhausted they would be, and the more tired their spirit and mind would be, causing their true essence usage to accelerate, and finally, they would be defeated.

Even Feng Shen didn't dare to boast he could do this. There were even some that suspected that after Yan Chi entered the Road of Emperor, his strength might be no worse than Feng Shen's!

"Hehe, this boy is too stupid!" Yan Chi sneered.

"Humph! He doesn't want to walk the road to heaven but would rather storm through the gates of hell! If you want to die then I'll give you a hand!" Maha said with ice cold killing intent. How could he allow their Heavenly Demon Seven Stars to be looked down on so much by a human? This fellow even thought that he could continuously fight three of them!

"Haha, allow this little brother to take the first match. Otherwise, the little brother fears that he won't have the chance to do anything." Kai Yang said, grinning. His strength had grown by leaps and bounds within the Road of Emperor, and he had finally absorbed a piece of Demon God Bone. His strength was incomparable to how he used to be. He certainly didn't want to miss this chance to show off his newfound strength.

The only way for him to get the High Lords to pay more attention to him was this match.

Not only did he need to win, he needed to do so in glorious style!

Now, even fools could see that High Lord Heian wanted Lin Ming to die.

Perhaps if one of them killing Lin Ming, they would even be able to obtain a bit of Demon God Bone as a reward!

"Good. Kai Yang, you will go first. Then Maha will take the second match." High Lord Heian said. From the weakest to the strongest was the best way to arrange a squad.

"Haha, maybe Maha won't even need to do anything." Kai Yang cunningly smiled.

Kai Yang was extremely confident in himself.

Lin Ming's lips curled up. Towards these three continuous matches, he didn't feel much. It was true that he knew nothing about Yan Chi, Maha, or Kai Yang's strength, but all he knew was that he was absolutely confident he could defeat them.

After opening the Gate of Healing, Lin Ming's regenerative abilities had reached a terrifying degree. Three continuous matches? He wouldn't even care if they all came together!

"Let's go."

With the gauntlet thrown down, High Lord Heian turned and left. His retinue of guards also drew back like a tide.

As Kai Yang turned to leave, he said to Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission, "Boy, wash your neck and wait for death. When I kill you, I'll likely be granted a Demon God Bone! To me, you are nothing but a Demon Gone Bone!"

Lin Ming didn't bother to speak again. He sat back down at his table, picked up his chopsticks, and began to eat a piece of meat.

Eating meat, drinking wine, all of this done calmly!

As if nothing had happened just now.

Seeing Lin Ming eating a meal so languidly, all of the martial artists present were taken aback. He had to continuously battle Yan Chi, Maha, and Kai Yang in 10 days.

How could he be so calm?

This calm was not an act. This was a death match. Who could be so calm before so many death matches? If he couldn't even live, then what was the point of putting out a front?

It could only be said that Lin Ming was truly calm. In a situation where he didn't even understand Chi Yan, Maha, or Kai Yang's strength, how could he be so calm?

Just how confident was Lin Ming in his own strength!?!?

……………………

News of Lin Ming's continuous three battles with Yan Chi, Maha, and Kai Yang soon spread out like a tidal wave. It wasn't just the third floor, but all the martial artists on the second floor quickly learned this!

This was truly explosive news!

This would be Lin Ming's first battle since returning from the King's Cage! With the reputation of the number one talent since ancient times on the line, the impact of this match could be imagined!

Even if Lin Ming battled an ordinary top 10 challenger on the third floor, it would still arouse a great amount of interest.

But now, Lin Ming's matches were completely comprised of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. Not just that but… it was three continuous matches!

Yan Chi, Maha, Kai Yang! Especially the first two. Their reputation sounded out like a thunderclap in everyone's ears!

When Lin Ming first arrived at Sun Flood City, he had already heard of Yan Chi and Maha's names. In Skysplit Tower, there were even many mortals that knew of them.

And from reliable sources, it was learned that they had stepped into the Road of Emperor months ago. Their current strength was incomparable to how it was in the past!

It was rumored that Yan Chi was now in no way inferior to Feng Shen. Even Maha had the qualifications to fight with Feng Shen on even footing.

At that same time, Lin Ming would be fighting three people. This was simply crazy!

Even if Lin Ming wasn’t crazy, all the other martial artists on the third floor were going crazy.

Every martial artist that had gone into closed-door seclusion had left their practice area, and every martial artist that had gone out for adventuring was also running back as fast as they could to watch this unparalleled battle!

The prices for admission tickets had already risen to astronomical levels.

……………………

Skysplit Tower, martial artist service center.

Wearing blue clothes, a beautiful and delicate-looking young girl was blankly staring out a window, deep in a trance as she was lost in her thoughts.

This girl was only 15 or 16 years old. Her face still had a faint hint of blossoming youth. Although her hair and face were cleaned up neatly and her clothes were also ordered, it couldn’t conceal her tired and pale complexion, a constantly ill appearance that aroused the pity of those who saw her.

This girl was the maid servant that had helped Lin Ming during his stay at the martial artist service center – Wan’er.

The proprietress of the martial artist service center had originally allowed to Wan’er to be Lin Ming’s concubine. But for the entire two weeks of time, Lin Ming hadn’t even touched Wan’er once. Afterwards, when Lin Ming had gone to the second floor, a black-caped Imp martial artist had used her life as a threat in order to force Lin Ming into a match.

At that time, Wan’er had known nothing about this. After Lin Ming defeated that black-caped Imp martial artist, Xu Yan had informed her of this matter. Her feelings had become incomparably complicated after learning of this.

She never imagined that a challenger of Skysplit Tower would take such dangerous risks for a mere mortal.

When it was learned that Lin Ming had perished in the King’s Cage, if there was anyone that truly felt sadness from the heart for Lin Ming, then it wasn’t Muk Gu, nor was it Da Gu or Xun Ji.

No, the only one who felt such deep heartbreak was Wan’er.

Wan’er knew her limits. She was well aware that her path and Lin Ming’s would never cross again. She knew it was impossible for her to ever serve him again, nor did she have the qualifications to stand vigil for him. Even seeing him just once more was a wild and unattainable hope.

What she could only do was to worry about him from the bottom of her heart and pray for him.

After it was said that Lin Ming had died, Wan’er found it hard to eat or drink, making her entire body thin and frail.

However, no matter what, she still believed that he would come out.

Now, Lin Ming had finally emerged from the King’s Cage, and not even one day later, news was spreading that he would fight Yan Chi, Maha, and Kai Yang in a continuous death match.

Wan’er didn’t understand anything about martial artists nor anything about the levels of their strength. Because she was worried, she asked Xu Yan.

Although Xu Yan told her that Lin Ming could win, his answer had been very reluctant. Occasionally he would sigh and shake his head. This proved that… in truth, he didn’t think Lin Ming’s chances were good.

“Wan’er.” A voice suddenly called out.

Wan’er looked around, and saw that the one speaking was Xu Yan. This year, Xu Yan had also entered the second floor. But he would often come back for a visit.

“Big Brother Xu Yan, is there any news about Big Brother Lin Ming’s fight?” Wan’er’s face filled with hope.

“Mm… the match will be tomorrow. But, even if I sell everything I have, I still wouldn’t be able to afford a ticket. Also… I don’t have the authority to enter the third floor.” Xu Yan shook his head. There wasn’t anything he could do besides wait for the final result.

“Oh…” Wan’er lightly replied.

Xu Yan sighed. He wanted to say some comforting words, but he eventually didn’t say anything.

Continuously fighting Yan Chi, Maha, and Kai Yang…

How could Lin Ming ever hope to win?

Chapter 599 – Fighting Kai Yang

Chapter 599 – Fighting Kai Yang

…

…

…

On the day of the decisive battle, near the martial arena in a refined restaurant.

At this time, there were only several minutes of time left before the start of the battle.

“Lin Ming, High Lord Heian has made it clear that he wants you to die. Why would you still accept three continuous matches? This sort of fight isn’t even fair. Not even Feng Shen would dare to be so brash!”

Opposite Lin Ming, Muk Gu was sitting down. He was looking at a large hourglass at the side of the room while shaking his head.

This hourglass had 100 scale measurements on it. Every division was a quarter hour. One day was just about 100 of these measurements. As the sand flowed down the hourglass, it was closing in on the halfway mark. This was also when the match would begin.

Lin Ming was slowly drinking a cup of wine as he said, “The reason I agreed to this fight is because I wanted to grow my Heavenly Demon Tattoo.”

Lin Ming was now an early eight-winged Heavenly Demon. If he wanted to form a ten-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo, then he naturally had to fight with the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. High Lord Heian’s arrangements were what he had been earnestly wishing for.

“You’re also thinking of forming your Heavenly Demon Tattoo right now?” Muk Gu was speechless. Lin Ming didn’t seem worried about this match at all, instead, he had been thinking about how to condense the Heavenly Demon Tattoo.

Regarding this, all he could say was…

“It’s time.”

Lin Ming downed the last of his wine, slowly stood up, and then steadily stepped away.

Muk Gu shook his head and followed along.

………………

At this time, the outside of the martial arena was already packed and full of bustling noise. The martial arena of the third floor was normally a lonely and desolate place, but now there was a massive snaking line that had formed at the entrance. There were even a number of martial artists from the second floor that had come, but of course, these people had special relations and access, thus they were able to temporarily enter the third floor.

Certainly, they also had to pay no small price.

The martial arena on the third floor wasn’t too large to begin with, and today the entire arena was packed to overflowing. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that today’s fight was the grandest and most exciting one that had been held on the third floor for the last 100 years!

“Look over there! Feng Shen! Even Feng Shen came!”

Some martial artists were keen of sight. They saw a white-clothed Fey youth carrying a longsword walk in, his eyes indifferent. He glanced over at Kai Yang and then stepped towards the special guest area. This white-clothed youth was the infamous Feng Shen of the third floor.

When Lin Ming had battled Yan Hu and Ming Sun, Feng Shen hadn’t appeared. This was because Lin Ming’s level had been far from reaching his at the time.

He didn’t think that in just a mere few months, Lin Ming would already grow to his own level!

This sort of terrifying rate of development was horrifying!

“High Lord! High Lord Heian!”

“Heavens! Even a High Lord has come!”

After Feng Shen, the next luminary to arrive was actually… High Lord Heian.

High Lords rarely made appearances. To personally come to the martial arena to look at a martial artist’s match, well… this hadn’t happened in years.

Thus, from this point alone, it could be seen just how grandiose this fight was!

On one side, there was the Blood Slaughter Steppes’ number one talent of the last 10,000 years, who had also practiced for 108 days in the King’s Cage, breaking every previous record!

On the other side, there were three masters altogether, each of them outstanding Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. They had also trained in the Road of Emperor for months and their strengths had soared up to unimaginable heights. Yan Chi and Maha both had the qualifications to struggle for the title of the third floor’s number one master!

Such a powerful lineup of masters!

Three against one!

No matter how one saw it, the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars were more powerful. It was true that Lin Ming must have made some great breakthrough in the King’s Cage, but no matter how great a breakthrough he had, just how much better could he be compared to the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars?

After all, they had entered the Road of Emperor.

“I think that Lin Ming can defeat Kai Yang. But against Maha, it’s far too difficult. He will likely lose there!”

“It’s not likely to lose but impossible to win. Kai Yan wasn’t weak to begin with. After entering the Road of Emperor, no matter how heaven-defying Lin Ming’s talent is, defeating Kai Yang will likely exhaust all of his strength. How could he continue to fight Maha after that? This Maha might not be any worse than Feng Shen!”

The audience was loudly discussing this match.

Kai Yang was standing on one side of the arena stage. As an Imp martial artist, his soul force was formidable and his perception was very sensitive. He heard all of these people’s discussions.

“Humph, they think that Lin Ming will defeat me but lose to Maha? Do they really think I’m some sort of cannon fodder or something?” Kai Yang sneered. These idiots were all clueless. They talked about the masters of the third floor as if they understood anything, when they themselves were losers!

‘This father was closed up in the Road of Emperor for an entire month. The suffering that I’ve endured in there is not what anyone could imagine! You think I’ll lose to Lin Ming? Hehe, just you all wait and see!’

As Kai Yang remembered his experience within the Road of Emperor, he felt a lingering fear in his heart. But such an experience, after he had suffered through it all and bore the pain, his harvest had been great. After his leap in strength he had been holding it all in so that he could wait for the one moment when he needed to soar.

And at this moment, Lin Ming suddenly appeared.

He wore blue clothes, and gripped his Purple Comet Spear as he walked up onstage. His steps were steady and he had a calm air around him.

“Lin Ming! You’ve finally shown up!”

Kai Yang’s lips curved up in a cruel and ferocious smile. The moment to prove himself had come!

‘With my most powerful ability, I will defeat you with overwhelming strength. I will have everyone’s eyes pop out of their heads in amazement! I will have them all realize that their own judgments were stupid and wrong!’

Ca!

Kai Yang drew out his treasure saber. This saber was pure black without even the faintest sheen. As one looked at it, it made their souls feel mired in mud.

“The black saber – Soul Extinguisher!”

As martial artists saw this saber, their hearts went cold. It was heard that Kai Yang’s Soul Extinguisher Saber came from the ruins of an ancient battlefield, the treasure saber of an ancient death god. Underneath this saber, countless martial artists had perished, their demented spirits trapped and sealed within.

Once one was cut by this saber, their souls could be directly sliced in half!

In addition to that, Kai Yang was originally an Imp, part of the race that was incomparably familiar with soul attacks. With both of these factors together, their combined might was incredible!

As everyone saw this Soul Extinguisher Saber as well as the deep and foreboding aura that rolled off of Kai Yang’s body, all the martial artists that predicted that Kai Yang would lose to Lin Ming suddenly shut their mouths.

Kai Yang’s strength was absolutely at an abnormally freakish level! It was just that his fame had been overshadowed by Maha and Yan Chi so others had subconsciously ignored him.

Lin Ming grasped the Purple Comet Spear and calmly stood in front of Kai Yang. His aura was restrained within himself, hidden. He was like a matchless treasure spear standing proud. Kai Yan's aura that reached him was naturally split apart, having no impact at all on Lin Ming.

The two stood in sharp opposition!

The audience held their breath.

Feng Shen had crossed his arms across his chest, his eyes fixed on Lin Ming.

High Lord Heian was jeering, waiting for Lin Ming to die.

There was not a single movement from the audience. It was like a sense of stillness had fallen over the entire arena, the air condensing into a heavy essence that fell over them, incomparably heavy.

Everyone's eyes were focused on Lin Ming and Kai Yang.

"Lin Ming, you seem to believe in yourself a bit. But, in Skysplit Tower, those that are too confident usually end up dead. You do not understand the depths of my strength yet you have agreed to challenge me. How stupid of you! Now die!"

Kai Yang shouted as he took a step forwards. The Soul Extinguisher Saber formed a massive billowing storm of demon essence. A saber slashed down at Lin Ming!

Demonic Cloud Storm!

The demonic clouds turned into a violent and cruel black wind, covering the air as it swept towards Lin Ming, making it so that people couldn't see directly ahead. The surrounding martial artists all felt like a chilling wind had seeped into their bones, their hearts inexplicably turning cold!

Lin Ming ignored it all as if none of this affected him and casually thrust out his spear!

Bang!

The black soul storm was torn apart by Lin Ming's spear, the storm disappearing into nothingness. But as Lin Ming stood there, not a single hair on his body was affected. Only the lower hems of his robe had been lifted a bit.

"If you don't come with everything you have, you won't have the chance anymore."

"Humph! How arrogant!"

Kai Yang grit his teeth. He revolved his bodily true essence to the limit, and then, at his side, a long arc of black light formed. This arc of light lingered on as if it were black thunder.

"Mm? Kai Yang has never used this move before!" Kai Yang had already been on the third floor for several years. All of the martial artists there thought they had a good grasp of Kai Yang's cultivation methods, but this move had never been displayed.

"It seems to be an attack move that combines a soul and material attack, fusing them together. When this is used with the might of the Soul Extinguisher, this might be most of Kai Yang's hidden strength!"

"Soul attack huh? ...I heard that Lin Ming's defensive abilities against soul attacks are incredible!"

When Lin Ming was fighting in Skysplit Tower, he had battled a number of Imp martial artists all the way from the first floor to the third floor. But even so, he had never been injured once by their soul attacks, not even showing the least bit of hardship. The martial artists present were already clear about all the available information on Lin Ming.

If a soul attack was used on Lin Ming, its effects would be greatly reduced.

But Kai Yang still used a soul attack against Lin Ming. Was he really that confident in his soul attacks?

At this time, a cover of light shrouded Kai Yang. Outside of this cover of light were wild arcs of black thunder that completely surrounded him.

Kai Yang stood there, his lips curved up in a cunning and savage smile. No one knew that this move was one he comprehended from the Road of Emperor. It seemed like an ordinary soul attack, but the truth was that it contained a faint Emperor Will.

This was also the greatest card hidden in his hand.

“Let’s go. I will use my strongest attack to defeat you. From this point on, I will show the world just how strong I am! Now, soar to the skies!” Kai Yang cried out. The fierce expression on his face quickly turned crazy.

Soul Extinguisher!

Kai Yang suddenly took a step forwards, his body fusing together with the Soul Extinguisher Saber as it became a black ray of light.

As soon as Lin Ming saw this, his eyebrows shot up. This is...

Stroking his Purple Comet Spear, Lin Ming finally turned serious. But, it was just a bit serious. True essence erupted from within him, 30% of the Heretical God Force was released!

A spear thrust forth. A three foot wide spear light pierced through the skies, smashing into Kai Yang’s saber light like a meteor.

Absolute power crashed. Around the golden spear light, countless arcs of thunder spun!

Bang!

The saber light broke in half. Lin Ming’s spear light struck Kai Yang.

Puff!

Kai Yang spat out a mouthful of blood and hit the floor, cracking the tiles underneath him as well.

But at the same time, a wisp of strange will drilled into Lin Ming's body like a viper, directly rushing towards his spiritual sea!

This was not an ordinary soul attack, but a strange force that Lin Ming had never encountered before. This strange force wanted to tear Lin Ming's spiritual sea apart!

The audience didn't have time to respond to this sudden change. Kai Yang used his saber to prop himself up. Although his face was wet with blood, a hideously crazed expression split his face.

"Hahahaha! You are finished! Now that my Emperor Will has struck you, you will absolutely die!"

Chapter 600 – Instant Death

Chapter 600 – Instant Death

…

…

…

Lin Ming stood motionless on the arena stage, the Purple Comet Spear still grasped in his hand as if he were some stone sculpture.

But in front of Lin Ming, with his entire face covered with blood, Kai Yang was laughing, “Haha! How is it? Does my Emperor Will taste good!?”

This scene caused the audience to be stunned. Kai Yang had spent a great deal of time gathering potential for his attack, but after his strike collided with Lin Ming’s, he was the one that had been sent flying back. They thought that Kai Yang was done for, but never expected such a strange turn of events. It looked as if someone had cast a dark spell over Lin Ming. Without a doubt, this was the mystery that had been added to Kai Yang’s strike just now.

“Emperor Will… what is that? It sounds dangerous!”

“Lin Ming… he… it looks like he can’t move!”

“That Emperor Will is definitely some sort of soul attack. Kai Yang is truly worthy of being called one of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. As a genius of the Imp race who is skilled in soul attacks, even though Lin Ming’s soul defense abilities are strong, they actually couldn’t fend off this move from Kai Yang! It’s too terrifying!”

Lin Ming was like a statue, and his bodily protective true essence was also disappearing. As long as Kai Yang cut him with his Soul Extinguisher Saber, then Lin Ming's head would fall!

Did the fight end just like this?

Kai Yang's eyes flashed with a fierce excitement. The time to prove himself had arrived! The number one talent of the last 10,000 years had actually died under his hand. From this point on, he had taken Lin Ming's destiny as his own!

He had borne so much pain and suffering with the Road of Emperor all in order to obtain this Emperor Will. This Emperor Will came from a true Emperor level powerhouse. It wasn't something that an ordinary martial artist could withstand. Even just a single wisp would have a massive impact on one's spiritual sea!

"It's a pity that you can't hear what I'm saying. Who cares how strong you are? You will still die by my hands!" Kai Yang roared. He took a step forwards and then began rushing towards Lin Ming!

As the surrounding martial artists saw this, none of them blinked. Muk Gu's hands were sweaty, Feng Shen was silent, and High Lord Heian's lips had curved up in a devilish grin. As a High Lord, he certainly knew how terrifying the Emperor Will was. He didn't think that Kai Yang would have been able to capture a wisp of Emperor Will to use for himself. For this fellow, there was no better cultivation method!

"Die! With the blood of the number one talent for the last 10,000 years, I will lay down my road to becoming a Demon Emperor!"

Kai Yang flashed a manic smile. He flourished his saber, cutting straight towards Lin Ming's throat!

But at this time, an indifferent voice sounded out in Kai Yang's ear…

“What a pity… I almost realized what this will was. If you could have waited just a moment more…”

This was just a gentle and light voice, but Kai Yang’s soul instantly froze over, a biting cold penetrating into his farthest depths.

“What?” Kai Yang asked, dazed.

The next second!

Blinding purple thunder filled everyone’s vision. An incomparably keen spear light spread through the entire martial arena, so sharp that people couldn’t open their eyes, as if their own souls were pierced by this spear light!

Bang!!

A thick ray of spear light thrust straight through Kai Yang’s chest. Blood and flesh flew out in all directions. Kai Yang’s eyes widened as he spat out a mouthful of blood, his body thrown backwards like a rag doll.

Puff!

Kai Yang smashed into the floor like a dead dog, breaking all the tiles beneath him as he landed. The area on his chest where the heart was had a shockingly large hole pierced through it. His heart was smashed apart, and blood erupted from it like a crimson fountain!

“…What?”

This change had occurred so suddenly that none of the martial artists present could react in time!

Just the moment before, they had all thought that Lin Ming would die under Kai Yang’s hand. But in a split-second, the tides had turned!

The frozen Lin Ming had suddenly thrust out his spear, piercing Kai Yang’s heart!

A simple spear strike had killed him! Although there was a factor of surprise, this was enough to prove just how great the difference was between Lin Ming and Kai Yang's strength!

"He ignored Kai Yang's attack and killed him instead…"

Muk Gu mumbled to himself. Lin Ming's strength had far exceeded his wildest imaginations.

Even Feng Shen had somewhat lost his former calm. He let out a long breath and slowly shook his head. It was unknown just what thoughts were racing through his heart.

Dozens of feet away, even though Kai Yang's heart had been crushed, he still hadn't died yet. He grabbed at the floor underneath his body, his black nails digging into the floor, covered with blood.

"Why… why, could… why like this…"

Kai Yang's face was twisted. His two beady eyes were filled with disbelief.

He was unwilling! He had patiently endured soul-shattering pain within the Road of Emperor for an entire month. It had simply been inhumane torture. But finally, he had obtained a wisp of Emperor Will that he could use for himself.

He thought that this had laid the path for him to become a Demon Emperor in the future. He thought that, with this, he would be able to soar into the skies and enter into everlasting glory! But in just this first battle, he would die like this!

The Emperor Will had clearly stabbed into Lin Ming's body, so how did this happen?

"You…"

Kai Yang propped himself up to glare at Lin Ming. As he spoke, more blood dribbled out of his mouth. The blood left pumping from his heart slowly stopped, the rest draining off. He had wanted to say something, but before he could say his last words, his eyes had glazed over.

Pa!

Kai Yang fell to the ground, dead and alone with his regrets.

For a time, silence fell over all the martial artists in the arena. Lin Ming's victory was within expectations, but with the battle having reached this degree and so many twists and turns and reversals, they didn't have time to respond.

However, what no one doubted was that Lin Ming's strength far surpassed Kai Yang's.

At the special guest area, High Lord Heian's face had darkened. The Emperor Will was actually useless against Lin Ming?

Maha was also looking solemn. It was his turn to face Lin Ming. Although he didn't place Kai Yang in his eyes, for him to defeat Kai Yang without revealing the majority of his hidden strength was not necessarily possible!

"This boy!" Maha traced the hilt of his treasure saber, his eyes filling with a brilliant killing intent!

Huuu---!

On the arena stage, the infernal energy leaking from Kai Yang's body formed into a Heavenly Demon avatar that plunged at Lin Ming. Kai Yang's Heavenly Demon Tattoo had been at the late eight-winged Heavenly Demon stage!

Lin Ming pointed out his fingers, and with his fingers as a spear, a bright spear light flashed out. The infernal avatar was crushed by this spear light, turning into pure infernal energy that poured into Lin Ming's body. On his arm, the fourth pair of wings was slowly forming…

Peak of a middle eight-winged Heavenly Demon!

After Lin Ming absorbed half of Kai Yang's infernal energy, he was getting close and closer to becoming a ten-winged Heavenly Demon!

Lin Ming took a deep breath, slowly pushing down restlessness in his heart. A moment ago, when he was struck by the Emperor Will, he had truly come under a great impact!

Even though he had the Samsara martial intent, his mind had nearly fallen into illusions.

Thus, Lin Ming had let the Heavenly Demon martial intent erupted within his body. The Heavenly Demon martial intent could not only suppress the body, but it could also suppress soul force. With the Heavenly Demon martial intent combined with the Samsara martial intent, the two martial intents ganged up on the Emperor Will, forcibly suppressing it!

Lin Ming had originally wanted to take this opportunity to gain some insights on this Emperor Will, but just as he had a small look, Kai Yang was already attacking. So, Lin Ming had no choice but to interrupt himself and open 50% of the Heretical God Force, instantly killing Kai Yang!

Lin Ming took Kai Yang's spatial ring and then shot the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder at him, sucking up his blood essence.

Now, the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art's' techniques weren't Lin Ming's strongest killing moves anymore. But that didn't mean that Lin Ming had given up on cultivating the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'. This was because this cultivation method primarily used the path of slaughter in its attacks, so it gave him a great deal of inspirations.

Chasing Thunder, Chasing Sun, Penetrating Rainbow, these three moves were all born from the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'.

Unconsciously, Lin Ming had stepped onto the path of fusing martial arts together, reaching the boundary of a martial arts grandmaster that created their own martial arts legacy.

Using his right hand to hold the Purple Comet Spear, he pointed it towards the floor and drew a crescent moon.

Then, he looked towards where Yan Chi and Maha were sitting, and calmly asked, “So, who’s next?”

Chapter 601 – Saber Light Domain

Chapter 601 – Saber Light Domain

…

…

…

For a time, every martial artist's eyes turned onto Maha!

Maha coldly snorted, “It’s like you believe you’re invincible!”

He moved. Crossing hundreds of feet with a single step, Maha arrived directly atop the arena stage.

“You killed Kai Yang, now you think you’ve already won against me?” Maha’s mouth twisted. He couldn’t help but acknowledge Lin Ming’s soul defense abilities. He had actually even resisted the Emperor Will!

However, none of this mattered to him. Maha was a Giant Demon martial artist. His main form of combat had always been and would always be related to violent and close-combat fighting. Soul attacks were primarily the domain of the Imps.

He extracted the long saber from his back. Maha’s saber blade was seven feet long, and in addition to the hilt, this weapon was as long as an adult male. The saber ridge was three feet thick, and the weapon itself weighed no less than several tens of thousands of jins. Giant Demon martial artists generally loved using heavy weaponry like this.

“Words are useless, let’s fight!”

Lin Ming snapped the Purple Comet Spear in his hand. On the spearpoint, electricity sparkled.

Maha gripped his saber with both hands. Clouds of demon essence began to gather around him. With a cut of his saber, saber energy swept out, and wherever it went, tiles would turn into ash before vanishing to nothing!

Concept of Annihilation!

Compared to Xing Tian, Maha’s Concept of Annihilation was several times stronger. With just the saber wind, tiles were destroyed, and even large areas were carved out of the hardened metal ground of the stage that was supported with array formations!

The saber wind blew through the arena. Luckily, all of the surrounding martial artists were masters in their own right. They quickly summoned their bodily demon essence protection to resist this saber wind attack. But as soon as this demon essence touched Maha’s saber energy, it would rapidly melt away!

“Terrifying!”

“Even the aftermath shockwaves are like this. A direct hit must be horrifying!”

Lin Ming also felt the pressure of the Concept of Annihilation. He wasn’t a stranger to the Concept of Annihilation. Without a doubt, Skysplit Tower had areas where one could perceive the Concept of Annihilation. Xing Tian and Maha must have comprehended their Concept of Annihilation at this area.

Heretical God Force – open!

Blood Seal Twisting Murder!

A spear thrust out and Blood Drinking Seals twisted in circles as they flew, smashing against the Concept of Annihilation in a furious confrontation as it released screeching, bone-aching sounds.

Kacha!

The saber light and spear light simultaneously exploded. Lin Ming gently floated upwards from the force.

Easily breaking apart the Concept of Annihilation, Lin Ming didn’t even break a sweat. His expression was calm and his breath was even. Although everyone had expected that Maha’s saber strike wouldn’t be able to do much to Lin Ming, it was still startling to see him block it so smoothly.

The Concept of Annihilation was not an ordinary Concept, but one of the highest order.

“No need to test the waters. Come at me with everything you have!”

Lin Ming lightly landed, his spear pointed straight at Maha.

“Insolence!” Maha’s eyes flashed with a cold light. “Since that’s what you want, let me help you!”

Maha held his saber against his chest as his demon essence erupted to the limit. In this light, all of the muscles on his body bulged, his veins sticking up like blue worms. A black light enveloped Maha and then instantly expanded to 100 feet. Wherever this light covered, countless saber lights shimmered. Every saber light contained the Concept of Annihilation.

“This is the Saber Light Domain!”

“Maha’s signature move!”

The Saber Light Domain was a style that emerged from the Holy Demon Continent’s western regions. This was a move that used an extremely thick true essence to create countless saber energies. Normally, when a martial artist sent out saber energies, they would need to use them to attack. Regardless of what situation it was, the saber energies needed to be set free, where they would then transform into destructive power.

But the Saber Light Domain that Maha used just now was actually able to gather these saber energies and ensure that they didn't disperse, instead endlessly enveloping their body. This was a technique that was both offensive and defensive. If a martial artist were to step into this Saber Light Domain, then they would be directly cut into pieces!

The most powerful point of the Saber Light Domain was that every time Maha used a saber strike, that strike would then fuse into the Saber Light Domain. This meant that the Saber Light Domain would continue to grow stronger!

Seeing Maha go all out with his maximum strength, all of the martial artists present rubbed their eyes.

This was the true battle!

A great number of Giant Demon martial artists began cheering for Maha. This Maha who could use the Saber Light Domain was simply a massive living meat grinder; just who would be able to defend against this?

Not just that, but in comparison to the Saber Light Domain's amazing attack power, its defensive power was even more terrifying. Within the countless and endless Saber Light Domain, any attack that entered would be completely minced to pieces!

"Ho-!"

Maha slashed out with his saber. Near him, countless saber lights were affected by the force of this saber strike. As his saber cut out, saber energies crazily flew out!

This Saber Light Domain had fused in the Concept of Annihilation. The Saber Light Domain's essence was that it could cut anything within it to pieces. Now with the Concept of Annihilation added on, its destructive power could be imagined!

Lin Ming's expression was finally sincere. All of those that held the famous title of Heavenly Demon Seven Star had true ability. Even the weaker Kai Yang was no exception. If he hadn’t run out of luck and bumped into someone with such an abnormal soul defense, then things would have been different.

But now, the Maha in front of him was even more powerful than Kai Yang!

Lin Ming opened the Heretical God Force to 90%. Lin Ming held the Purple Comet Spear, the sharp point flashing with sparkling thunder and thick arcs of electricity waving around it like dancing pythons.

Chasing Thunder!

Pouring all of his will and potential into the Purple Comet Spear, this was a killing strike created from the fusion of the Concept of Thunder and the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’!

Lin Ming became one with his spear, turning into a bolt of lightning that howled forth, impacting straight into the Saber Light Domain!

Frontal collision!

It wasn’t just the people watching the battle, but even Maha was greatly shocked. The Saber Light Domain could crush and cut everything! When the average person faced this ability, they would retreat and use long distance attacks, slowly consuming the strength of the Saber Light Domain bit by bit.

How could anyone think of directly rushing in!

Chi-la!

Radiant thunder light filled the entire arena. Even the impregnable Saber Light Domain was directly pierced through by this impossibly keen spear light!

Then, the countless saber lights within the domain twined together with the spear light, sending out a series of crackling sounds. Saber light was constantly being broken by the power of thunder! But, the power of thunder was also weakening at the same time!

In this split-second, before the audience even had time to respond, Lin Ming had turned into a bolt of lightning and arrived right in front of Maha!

“Humph! Anyone that rushes in has a death wish!”

Maha roared. Both hands gripped his saber as he slashed down at Lin Ming!

“Mountain Shattering Strike!”

Maha’s Mountain Shattering Strike truly had the ability to split apart a mountain peak. Now, this saber energy transformed into a several dozen foot wide saber light that cut towards Lin Ming!

Such a magnificent and overpowering saber strike caused everyone to be inexplicably frightened.

Kacha!

Countless saber lights broke apart. The bolt of purple lightning that Lin Ming had turned into passed straight through Maha’s Saber Light Domain, breaking straight through the other side!

At the same time, Maha’s saber heavily struck the arena.

Before the tiles came into contact with the blade, all of them were already shattered into fine dust by the saber energy before disappearing without a trace.

The saber light smashed into the metal ground, cutting out a massive 300 foot long fissure in the arena. The entire arena had actually been split in half by Maha’s single saber strike!

The audience felt their blood freezing in their veins. This saber strike was too terrifying!

In the arena, a 100 foot wide and 300 foot long region had been destroyed. The floor tiles there had completely disappeared under the impact of the Concept of Annihilation, and in places further away, they had even turned into sand. Even the hard metal ground that was supported by array formations was cut open, leaving behind shockingly deep cracks.

Everyone's eyes almost turned onto Lin Ming's body at the same time. After Lin Ming penetrated the Saber Light Domain, he only calmly turned around, not a single hair on his head harmed.

As for Maha, his complexion was pale and a trace of blood slowly dripped down his shoulder.

"Maha was injured!"

"Heavens! Even though I was so far from that terrifying saber light I still thought I had been cut apart. But... the one that was injured was actually Maha!"

"That just now should be Lin Ming's ultimate attack. If this continues then he really might be able to win two continuous battles and then challenge Yan Chi! Lin Ming is truly worthy of being called the number one talent of the last 10,000 years!"

"It's not wrong that Lin Ming is strong, but what I don't understand is why although Lin Ming's spear light is extraordinarily fast, it doesn't seem all too terrifying. But on the other hand, Maha's saber light contains the Concept of Annihilation. You just have to look at the sad state of the arena to see how scary it is. How could it be this result if this two collide?"

The audience wasn't able to understand what had happened. The Concept of Annihilation was known as one of the highest level Concepts, and this reputation was not unearned. Maha had elevated his Concept of Annihilation to this degree, yet when he faced Lin Ming, it was like his Concept of Annihilation was useless.

As Maha looked at Lin Ming, his complexion was ugly. The audience couldn't understand, but he did. In truth, his saber strike just now hadn't even touched Lin Ming!

When his saber cut down, he suddenly had a very strange and weird feeling surrounding him. Then, Lin Ming, in a completely impossible situation, actually managed to escape the path of this saber energy. Lin Ming had only been scratched by some of the aftershocks, but these saber energy aftershocks had been far from being able to break through his protective true essence.

His Mountain Shattering Strike had struck nothing!

“Lin Ming, if you really have the ability then come and break my Saber Light Domain!” Maha tore apart a piece of his clothes that had been ripped by his own spear light, his eyes flashing dangerously at Lin Ming.

“Break your Saber Light Domain?” Lin Ming faintly smiled. Maha’s demon essence was condensed to an incomparably thick state, and the Saber Light Domain could grow endlessly as it contained a terrifying power. Wanting to break it wouldn’t be easy.

Lin Ming’s cultivation was far inferior to Maha’s. Also, Maha was defending while Lin Ming was attacking. The saber light in Maha’s domain didn’t scatter. After Lin Ming’s spear light pierced in, it would be constantly attacked. In this situation it would be an extreme advantage. In this case, if he wanted to crush this saber light with absolute strength then he would most likely need to use the power of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

Lin Ming didn’t want to do this. The Eight Inner Hidden Gates was his greatest trump card.

After that exchange of moves, Maha seemed to dread that strange movement of Lin Ming that had dodged his saber attack and proceeded to throw out more saber lights around him, surrounding him even more. This way, his defense would reach the pinnacle.

The Saber Light Domain had always been a marvelous defensive ability. Now that its defensive strength had reached the limit, it was like being protected in an unbreakable golden bell.

Maha had already made his decision. At worst, he would drag this into a battle of attrition. He had full confidence in the amount of demon essence he had as well as his ability to regenerate it.

Lin Ming had already seen through Maha's plans. Battle of attrition? He wasn't afraid of this, but he didn't want to. Skysplit Tower's third floor was full of enemies everywhere. Lin Ming was inclined to maintain his peak condition as long as possible.

He didn't want to open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates nor did he want to start a battle of attrition. His feet began moving, and Lin Ming slowly walked towards Maha, approaching the Saber Light Domain step by step.

What was Lin Ming trying to do?

The audience had no idea.

There wasn't too much protective true essence condensed on Lin Ming's body. But he was headed towards the Saber Light Domain as if he were going to walk directly into it…

Chapter 602 – Another Killing

Chapter 602 – Another Killing

…

…

…

Use his flesh and blood body to step into the Saber Light Domain?

What a joke!

Such terrifying saber light was also coupled together with the Concept of Annihilation; everything would be crushed upon entry. Generally speaking, a martial artist's bodily true essence protection was the same as scrap paper when faced with these saber lights. Even though Lin Ming's true essence was thick, there was a limit to what it could do. It was impossible for him to depend on his bodily true essence alone to block this storm-like attack.

"What he is doing?"

"He's taking another step forwards… he wants to enter the Saber Light Domain!"

In the special guest section, Feng Shen's eyes were glued onto Lin Ming. He himself had fought with Maha once. When he faced Maha's Saber Light Domain, he didn't have any better method than to delay the battle and slowly whittle the domain away through a battle of attrition.

Now, Maha's strength had obviously risen by another level and his Saber Light Domain became correspondingly more terrifying. To walk into the Saber Light Domain with just their body, even a High Lord would die like this!

Maha also wasn’t sure just what Lin Ming was trying to do. He glared at Lin Ming, his true essence revolving to the limit as he said, “If you’re trying some trick, then you’re looking to die!”

Ca!!

With a step forwards, Maha’s saber lights began to stir up strong gusts of wind that covered Lin Ming. “I don’t believe that you can block these hundreds and thousands of saber lights!”

In the second that the saber lights were about to pierce Lin Ming’s body, Lin Ming lightly caressed his Purple Comet Spear and took a sudden step forwards. The Purple Comet Spear thrust out!

Although this one spear seemed ordinary, an impossible scene suddenly occurred. Lin Ming carried his spear and seemed to pass through space itself, instantly arriving in front of Maha. He had completely ignored the saber lights as if they hadn’t even existed!

“What!?!?”

Maha was tremendously shocked!

When Lin Ming had been in the King’s Cage, the space storms that he had faced were many times more terrifying and deadly than this Saber Light Domain! By using the power of space within the Saber Light Domain, he had instantly crossed the void

Chasing Sun!

Lin opened up 100% of the Heretical God Force, thrusting his spear forwards!

A brilliantly shining flame combusted in the void like a miniature sun had been birthed within the arena. Between Lin Ming’s eyebrows, the flame mark there began to issue a radiant light.

By burning the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, the power of Lin Ming's Chasing Sun had risen to the limit!

"Ahhhhh!"

Maha didn't have time to think about how Lin Ming had passed his spear lights and appeared in front of him. He howled and summoned all the strength within his body, his saber cutting down at Lin Ming.

However… as this saber came cutting down, he suddenly felt everything around him slow down. Those saber lights that were dancing in the air slowed, and even Lin Ming's spear seemed slow.

But this spear, although it was slow, it was actually impossible for him to block or dodge. This was because the speed of his saber had become even slower!

"No!!"

Maha raved like a madman. Demon essence erupted like a volcano within his body, and blood vessels on his arm began to burst open. But, no matter how much of his bodily potential he released, he was unable to break through these shackles of time! He could only stare helplessly as Lin Ming's Purple Comet Spear ran right through his throat.

Blood gushed out!

Woosh!

In the next moment, Lin Ming had already left the Saber Light Domain. Behind him, Maha was blankly standing there, his eyes glazed over and fresh blood spraying out from him.

After Killing Kai Yang, Lin Ming had now killed Maha!

Bang!

The thick seven foot long saber fell into the metal floor foundation, breaking it even further. Maha's tall and burly body lost all support, and he plopped onto the floor.

The entire audience was in utter shock.

It could be said that Lin Ming had been able to kill Kai Yang because his specialty was suppressed by Lin Ming. But when he killed Maha, it had been a true battle under fair circumstances!

Maha was originally ranked third within the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. Not just that, but after entering the Road of Emperor, his strength had increased astronomically. How could he possibly have died in such a miserable manner?

Lin Ming had only entered the King's Cage, and yet the gains he had made within the King's Cage had far surpassed Maha's gains from the Road of Emperor. Just what sort of abnormally monstrous talent was this!

Also, many martial artists present didn't understand. Just how had Maha died?

What had happened just now?

Maha's Saber Light Domain was a technique that was both offensive and defensive. Its defensive capabilities were especially strong. With the ability to grow endlessly, it could simply be called a perfect defense. But Lin Ming had walked into that Saber Light Domain with just his flesh and blood body, and had somehow instantly passed through space, completely treating the Saber Light Domain as if it were nothing but air.

Then, that spear thrust seemed very ordinary and its speed seemed slow, but for some reason, Maha didn't even have enough time to withdraw his saber and was then killed by Lin Ming!

If this were a normal fight, then people might have even thought that Maha had faked it and lost on purpose. But this was a life and death battle, there was naturally no way he had allowed that to happen.

“Those were the Concepts of Space and Time just now…” In the audience, a martial artist had recognized Lin Ming’s technique.

“That is too terrifying. After reaching the pinnacle in comprehending the Concepts of Space and Time, can Lin Ming actually teleport?”

“It isn’t teleportation. It was only stepping forwards using the Law of Space. We don’t understand this Law, thus it looks like teleportation to us.”

A Fey martial artist explained. As a Fey, he had a somewhat limited understanding of the Concepts of Space in Time. In the ancient legends, it was said that those existences that had reached the utter limits of the Concept of Space, once they touched upon the origin of Space Laws, could actually teleport across vast distances. But, that sort of boundary only existed in the ancient texts. These days, it was unachievable. Not even the Eightfall War Emperor had the ability to do so.

“Aiya! The difference in talent is too great! Each of them had entered into practice areas, but Maha had entered the Road of Emperor and Lin Ming had only entered the King’s Cage. If Lin Ming enters the Road of Emperor in the future, just how strong would he be then?”

Thinking of this, the martial artists present couldn’t help but shudder. Killing Kai Yang and then executing Maha, Lin Ming had simply swept away his opposition with absolute force without allowing any of them to resist. Kai Yang’s Emperor Will and Maha’s Saber Light Domain were completely useless against Lin Ming.

At this moment, a martial artist with a deep voice said, “Don’t be an idiot, it’s impossible for Lin Ming to have the chance of entering the Road of Emperor. How could the 12 High Lords ever allow that to happen? Isn’t that just taking a rock and smashing it against their own feet? The only way would be for Lin Ming to wholeheartedly pledge his loyalty to Skysplit Tower.

None of the martial artists present were fools. They could all see that High Lord Heian had wanted to place Lin Ming in a deathtrap.

“This damn boy, letting him live will only mean disaster for the Blood Slaughter Steppes; it might even mean catastrophe for the Giant Demon and Imp races within the Holy Demon Continent!” In the seat of honor, High Lord Heian traced his ring, his eyes flashing with killing intent.

Lin Ming and the Eightfall War Emperor were too alike. In the King’s Cage, everyone’s experience was different. Whether it was difficult or the type of cage, it was completely different for each person.

But, Lin Ming and the Eightfall War Emperor had both comprehended the Concepts of Space and Time within the King’s Cage. This sort of chance coincidence caused High Lord Heian to feel fear in his heart.

The Eightfall War Emperor’s accomplishments in the Concepts of Space and Time were exceedingly high and he had also reached the eighth stage of Life Destruction. Because of these factors, no Emperor powerhouse within his same level could even think of offending him.

Now, Lin Ming was also the same. Moreover, what was most horrifying was that the time he stayed within the King’s Cage was almost twice that of the Eightfall War Emperor!

If this was allowed to continue, then dozens of years later, as long as Lin Ming didn’t die, he would become an Emperor level powerhouse.

And several hundred years from now, Lin Ming would become nearly unrivaled throughout all the lands.

And several thousand years from now, Lin Ming would have a high chance of becoming the number one powerhouse of the entire Holy Demon Continent!

When that time came, the interests of the Giant Demon and Imp races would inevitably be severely damaged.

On the arena stage, Lin Ming was calm as he took Maha's spatial ring. At the same time, Maha's infernal energy also rushed into Lin Ming's body.

As someone that been ranked in the top three of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, the richness of Maha's infernal energy could be imagined. As half of that infernal energy rushed into Lin Ming's body, Lin Ming's Heavenly Demon Tattoo instantly promoted to the peak of eight wings!

From a ten-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo, the difference wasn't all that far.

To reach 10 wings was possible, but to go from 10 wings to 12 wings was an extremely long and arduous process. When arriving at that level, the greatest problem would be finding a match. In order to further form the tattoo, one would have to fight with High Lords. But what High Lord would dare to fight?

Not just that, but a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon was a great taboo within the Blood Slaughter Steppes. This was because once this character became an Emperor level powerhouse they wouldn't be affected by that mystical curse within the Blood Slaughter Steppes that killed all entering powerhouses. A twelve-winged Heavenly Demon could return to the Blood Slaughter Steppes as they wished. This was simply a massive factor of instability!

As Lin Ming saw Maha's spatial ring, he took that too.

After killing Kai Yang and Maha, Lin Ming had in fact obtained a Hundred Winning Streak Emblem and earned nearly a 100 slaughter points. But after reaching this level, emblems, slaughter points – none of these mattered much anymore.

Next… this third match was also the last match.

Lin Ming against Yan Chi!

Everyone's eyes turned onto Yan Chi. Yan Chi appeared surprisingly calm, without even the slightest trace of fair.

When Yan Chi had entered the King's Cage, he obtained the title of earth-step Asura.

Of course, when compared with Lin Ming he was completely overshadowed. But when placed within any fifth-grade sect within the Holy Demon Continent, this was actually a first class result!

Without a doubt, Yan Chi was also an Emperor level talent. As long as he could maintain this pace of progress, then it was very likely he would become an Emperor level powerhouse in the future.

His footsteps light, Yan Chi slowly floated onto the arena stage like a fading autumn leaf. Without a sound he extracted his weapon from his spatial ring. This was a black high-grade earth-step treasure sword.

With sword in hand, Yan Chi's aura suddenly changed. It had immediately become sharp, violent, and swift!

It was true that Imp martial artists were skilled in soul attacks, but if anyone were to presume that they were only skilled in soul attacks, they would be making a fatal mistake.

Yan Chi was an excellent example of this.

He was proficient in soul attacks and also in physical attacks.

"Truly worthy of Yan Chi. Facing Lin Ming, he doesn't have the least bit of panic!"

"This is the bearing of a true master!"

"Don't underestimate Yan Chi. Lin Ming is strong, but Yan Chi's strength is also unfathomable. No one knows just how much Yan Chi's strength has risen within the Road of Emperor. Moreover, Lin Ming has already fought in two matches. Although it looked like he easily won them, in truth his consumption of energy probably isn't minor."

Martial artists had limited reserves of true essence. When martial artists fought, they would normally start with probing moves before using their true ultimate techniques. It wasn't strange for a powerful martial skill to use 10% of one's true essence. As for a final killing move, it was normal for those to use up 20 to 30% of one's true essence.

Thus, even if one easily ended their fights, they would still usually consume 10 to 20% of their true essence. If they fought in two straight matches then they would only have 70 to 80% of their original true essence from when they had been in their peak form. When fighting continuous matches, unless there was an overwhelming difference in strength, it would be difficult to continue.

Chapter 603 – Battle Spirit

Chapter 603 – Battle Spirit

…

…

…

Facing Yan Chi on the arena stage, Lin Ming suddenly had a strange feeling rise within him. His opponent was just casually standing there, but he seemed to be sending out some strange and invisible atmosphere. This atmosphere was different from the energy field aura of a martial artist. The aura that a martial artist could send out was able to directly pressure opponents. If a large disparity in strength existed, then it wasn't unusual for this aura to make others vomit blood or even kill them.

But this atmosphere surrounding Yan Chi was much more elusive. It obviously had no power behind it, but it still made one's heart palpitate.

"Soul attacks seem to be useless against you…" Yan Chi devilishly smiled as he gently stroked his sword, "It's just… strength that comes from the will isn't limited to something so simple as soul attacks! Meet my sword!"

As Yan Chi spoke, his body suddenly moved. His small body became extremely light and agile, leaving only a series of blurs behind him as he flittered around. It was simply impossible for others to determine which one was real.

Cha cha cha cha cha cha!

As Yan Chi rapidly moved, his sword began to leave behind phantom afterimages on the arena stage. When one's speed reached the extreme, it wasn't strange for sword light to leave behind afterimages, but what was strange was that after Yan Chi's sword phantoms appeared, they didn't disappear. Instead, they remained, turning into complete swords of light.

More and more light swords began to appear, dancing everywhere in the air and weaving a net of light that came falling down on Lin Ming. Using sword light to create a net of light was something that many martial artists could do, but, Yan Chi's sword light was different from that of ordinary martial artists. Atop these sword lights burned a faint and pale gray flame. These flames didn't burn, but rather gave off a very cold feeling, a frosty chill that came from the depths of the soul.

"What a fierce and sharp move. These light swords feel like they've already pierced my heart; just looking at them makes me feel gripped with dread. How is this possible?"

No matter how powerful a sword move was, it didn't matter if it didn't hit. But currently, the sword move used by Yan Chi gave off the illusion of being pierced through.

"The entire arena stage is covered by these light swords, every single angle had been covered. If I were to face this move, I would be instantly defeated!"

As the martial artists in the audience began to heatedly discuss this, within the special guest section, Feng Shen was silently watching. His eyes shined brilliantly as he closely observed the pale gray flames on Yan Chi's light swords.

Yan Chi… had already arrived at this step?

"10,000 Arrows Piercing the Heart!"

Woosh!

Every single light sword formed a great sphere in the air around Lin Ming and then shot straight towards him!

As the pale gray flames burned, it was like they were incinerating the soul.

In that moment, facing these countless light swords, Lin Ming's mind was as still as a placid lake.

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

After Lin Ming's Concept of Space had improved by a large margin, his Golden Roc Shattering the Void movement technique reached Large Success of the second layer. Now, with but a single step, it seemed as if he could escape into the void. With the power of space twisting underneath Lin Ming's feet, he moved at almost impossible angles and dodged the strikes from the light swords.

Bang bang bang!

The sword light fell onto the metal ground foundation like a rainstorm. Hundreds and thousands of sword lights detonated at once in a spectacular display, completely blowing up the metal floor that was supported by array formations.

But at this time, there was basically no one that cared about the visual effects from the explosion of these sword lights. Their vision was completely concentrated on Lin Ming and Yan Chi!

In the instant that Lin Ming evaded all the swords of light, Yan Chi appeared in front of him!

This feeling, it was like Yan Chi had already been standing here ahead of time, waiting to strike Lin Ming!

"He calculated the direction that Lin Ming would dodge in?"

"Yan Chi hasn't been moping around when Lin Ming fought Maha and Kai Yang, he's always been thinking about tactics! He's certainly afraid of Lin Ming's weird Concept of Space."

"Lin Ming's steps are as fleeting and incomprehensible as gods and ghosts. Yan Chi's already prepared for this. It's hard to say who will be the winner of this battle!"

Yan Chi had indeed been standing there early. He had calculated every step and attack in order to arrive at this point, all so that he could take initiative in this strike.

Shattered Soul Sword!

Yan Chi roared out and a gray flame burst atop his black sword. These gray flames burned at least ten times stronger than before!

"Die!"

A sword slashed down and demon essence erupted. This strike seemed as if it could cut apart a mountain.

'So this was your plan… what a pity, your striking force is lacking. In the face of absolute strength, any calculation you make is useless.'

Lin Ming thought little of this. Between his eyebrows, the blood of the Ancient Phoenix combusted. Atop the Purple Comet Spear, thunder and fire began to weave together!

Penetrating Rainbow!

His entire will and potential was poured into this spear strike, fusing together the Concepts of Fire and Thunder. This was the killing move that Lin Ming had created in order to replace Thunderfire Annihilation!

This was the first time that he had used this move in public.

Bang!

The spear light woven with thunder and fire collided with the gray flame. A terrifying pressure wave erupted, completely raising the arena stage. A foot long bump of metal flooring traveled out from the epicenter of the collision like an ocean tide, destroying everything as it flooded out.

This part of the arena had been completely destroyed!

The surrounding martial artists, within such a terrifying explosion, were all repeatedly forced back.

“How terrifying, the level of this attack, if we were caught up in just the aftermath then I fear we would have been severely wounded!”

“After Yan Chi entered the Road of Emperor, it’s true that his strength has grown by a large degree. That sword strike just now felt as if it would cut my heart in half. But what’s even more terrifying is that Lin Ming has only entered the King’s Cage, but the increase in his strength has actually surpassed Yan Chi!”

“A talent like this is beyond our imaginations.”

Yan Chi flew backwards, thrusting his sword into the ground and creating a series of sparks as he slowed himself! Even though he slowed down, he had been sent hundreds of feet back. He fell to his knees, his blood tumbling within him.

As for Lin Ming, he only took a few steps backwards before coming to a stop.

“He blocked it?”

Lin Ming was surprised. The might of Penetrating Rainbow far surpassed Chasing Sun. A moment ago, he had used Penetrating Rainbow in a close range collision but he still hadn’t been able to seriously injure Yan Chi. When their attacks clashed against each other, Lin Ming had clearly felt a very peculiar and keen atmosphere cut apart his Concept of Thunderfire, making it so that the power of his attack had lowered by a great deal.

What was that sharp and fierce atmosphere?

As Lin Ming was surprised, Yan Chi had gone crazy with panic!

Yan Chi had absolutely never expected that his deliberately arranged killing move that also combined his full strength would be so easily fended off by Lin Ming!

How was this possible!?

Yan Chi felt a chill pass through his heart.

In the special guest area, Feng Shen's expression was solemn. "It's true... that gray flame is a battle spirit. I didn't think that Yan Chi would already have a battle spirit. Although it isn't his, he still has it. In this point alone he has already surpassed me...

As Yan Chi had said, the power that came from one's will wasn't just soul attacks. The will had strength that could take other, more unique forms.

When the strength of one's will reached a certain extent, it could turn into a genuine physical attack.

This was the formation of a battle spirit.

The reason that something like an Emperor Will was left behind in the Road of Emperor was that those great Emperors that had once been there had formed their own battle spirits before their deaths. After not scattering for tens of thousands of years, these battle spirits would condense within the Road of Emperor, and could be captured and refined by future generations, thus becoming an Emperor Will.

A battle spirit was the true face of the Emperor Will!

Battle spirits and martial intents, both of these were the two great auxiliary Concepts of martial artists. It was just that a battle spirit had much higher requirements that a martial intent.

Feng Shen had to admit that in comprehension of the soul and will, Imps had a natural advantage.

This was the reason that Maha hadn't been able to comprehend the Emperor Will, and instead, it had been comprehended by Kai Yang. It was only that Kai Yang's talent and strength were limited, so he could only use the Emperor Will as a weapon for soul attacks, which was completely useless against someone like Lin Ming.

However, Yan Chi could fuse the Emperor Will into his own attacks, restoring it to its true form as a battle spirit. Kai Yang's battle spirit wasn't his own. It was only the battle spirit of some great Emperor that he had captured, and a faint trace of a wisp at that. But even so, this tiny little bit had an unfathomably supernatural power!

A battle spirit could be attached to anything, turning it into an incomparably sharp and keen weapon.

For instance, if a battle spirit was attached to a wilted leaf, then that originally fragile leaf would even be able to cut apart treasures. The stronger the battle spirit was, the stronger the leaf would be. In the Realm of the Gods, it wasn't difficult for a Supreme Elder's battle spirit to allow a wilted leaf to cut apart a high-grade heaven-step treasure!

If a battle spirit was attached to air, then this air would turn into a fatal wind blade that could invisibly kill people.

A battle spirit could even be attached to a martial artist's aura that they released. Once this aura fused with a battle spirit, then its power would rise exponentially. A martial artist wouldn't even need to do anything. With just this intangible battle spirit hanging in the void, they could instantly kill their opponents!

These examples proved just how strong a battle spirit was. But, in order to use a wilted leaf or air to kill others, that was only achievable with a massive gap in cultivation.

In a situation where the difference in cultivation wasn't too great, then the use of a battle spirit lay mostly in its ability to attach to treasures and moves.

Yan Chi’s sword was originally a high-grade earth-step treasure. But, after fusing with a battle spirit, its power could be imagined. In addition, he had even used his ace move Shattered Soul Sword. With these three factors combined, it was simply overwhelming!

However, such a sword strike was actually blocked by Lin Ming, even then Lin Ming had only been shaken a bit and forced back a few steps. As for Yan Chi, he had flown back hundreds of feet and had suffered minor wounds!

The difference could be seen with just a glance!

It was hard to imagine just what extent Lin Ming’s strength had grown to!

This was the first time that Feng Shen had ever felt a twinge of fear against someone that was born in his generation. To be able to live in the same era as Lin Ming… this could be called a kind of sorrow.

As all of the martial artists were talking excitedly, most of their discussion revolved around the fact that a great portion of the arena had been destroyed, with even the profound gold foundation that was supported by array formations also damaged, and the aftershocks of the attacks forming waves in the ground. The power of these attacks could be imagined.

In fact, they had far underestimated the level in that exchange of moves just now, because they didn’t know about battle spirits.

A battle spirit was something that only Emperor level powerhouses, or at least someone at a high stage of Life Destruction, would be able to touch upon. It was a boundary that was far too distant for normal martial artists.

Being able to comprehend a battle spirit varied from person to person. Those martial artists with extraordinary talent in the aspects of soul and will might be able to comprehend a battle spirit at the fourth stage of Life Destruction.

On the other hand, there were many individuals that couldn’t comprehend a battle spirit even after becoming a Peerless Emperor. For instance, races like the Giant Demons, Ferals, and Goliaths. Even as Emperor level powerhouses, because their natural talent in the aspects of soul and will was lacking, there were plenty of these types of people that hadn't yet comprehended their own battle spirit.

Yan Chi's so called battle spirit was only refined from a faint wisp of Emperor Will left behind by an Emperor level powerhouse; it was not something that he comprehended by himself. It could not grow, could not improve, but even so, as something that belonged to Emperor level powerhouses, its power was without doubt when used at the Life Destruction realm or lower.

However, such a carefully calculated attack had been completely unable to affect Lin Ming. This caused Yan Chi's heart to tremble.

"He even blocked the battle spirit!"

At this moment, Lin Ming grasped the Purple Comet Spear and pointed it towards Yan Chi.

Yan Chi's complexion suddenly became extremely ugly.

Chapter 604 – Why Don’t You Come Down and Play With Me?

Chapter 604 – Why Don’t You Come Down and Play With Me?

…

…

…

At this moment, Lin Ming grasped the Purple Comet Spear and pointed it towards Yan Chi.

Yan Chi’s complexion suddenly became extremely ugly.

He had carefully arranged his tactics and also used his battle spirit; this was the strongest strike that he could use. But even so, it had still failed. If they continued to fight, then the result was almost already decided!

“Lin Ming! Stop here! Don’t force me!” Yan Chi grasped his black sword as he grit out the words between clenched teeth.

“Force you?” Lin Ming smiled, “Are you joking with me? When the three you thought to continuously fight me and wear me down, you think that I was forcing you? At that time, you should have thought of this moment. This is a life or death battle. If I was the one losing, do you really think that you would have stopped here? Now that I’m winning, you’re telling me not to force you? Is there anything so ridiculous in this world?”

Lin Ming sneered. With a flick of the Purple Comet Spear, arcs of electricity and fire began to twine together at the spearpoint.

“Don’t think that I’m really afraid of you. If I detonate this battle spirit that I obtained from the Road of Emperor, I will make it so that both of us die!” Yan Chi’s eyes flashed with madness. Now that Yan Chi was pushed this far, he had abandoned his cowardice. He would absolutely do what he said he would.

“Battle spirit? Oh?” Lin Ming thought for a moment, “So that thing was called a battle spirit? I seem to have some impression of it...”

The soul fragments that Lin Ming had inherited from the Magic Cube were incomplete, but he had some vague recollections about battle spirits. Battle spirits and martial intents were both called two facets of a martial artist’s Concept of Martial Arts.

However, martial intents were usually supportive skills, there were very few of them that could actually be transformed into something with actual striking power. But, a battle spirit was just the opposite. Most of time they were directly used to increase one’s attack power. They could be attached to anything, and could enhance a martial artist’s attack to the limit.

“I’ll say it again. If I detonate this battle spirit, then I will undoubtedly suffer greatly, I might even die, but you won’t be any better off. I will drag you all the way down with me!” As Yan Chi spoke, his black sword began to burn with a gray flame. The flame became more and more vibrant; just looking at it made the soul feel drowned in ice!

Yan Chi had bet everything on this single gamble. In his desperation, he had called up every single ounce of battle spirit in his body!

Lin Ming simply didn’t care. He raised his long spear and pointed it towards Yan Chi’s throat. The cold and sharp purple spearpoint hissed as arcs of electricity pierced the air.

“Let’s stop here! I will tell you everything I have comprehended about battle spirits.” Yan Chi used a true essence sound transmission to speak. Although it was humiliating, when it concerned his life, he could only endure it.

“Oh?” Lin Ming smiled, “Tell me what you’ve understood about battle spirits, and add three pigeon egg-sized Demon God Bones. If you do then I’ll spare your pathetic life.”

“Three pigeon egg-sized Demon God Bones!?” Yan Chi fumed. “You think that Demon God Bones are some cabbage you can pick up at the local market? After so many years at Skysplit Tower, the most I’ve gotten are two longan sized Demon God Bones, and I’ve already used them! Where can I possibly give you three even larger ones!”

“Well then, since that’s the case, go die!”

Lin Ming coldly shouted and thrust out his spear. The Concepts of Thunder and Fire twined together…

Penetrating Rainbow!

“You bastard! Since you want to die so badly, let us perish together!” Yan Chi’s eyes flashed maniacally, his face twisting like a lunatic’s, “Combust, Emperor battle spirit!!”

Hoo-!

Atop of Yan Chi’s black sword, dark gray flames spewed forth like an erupting volcano. Blue veins twisted on his face, and all the blood vessels on his arms began to stick out.

With a maddening shout, Yan Chi grasped his sword in both hands and cut down at Lin Ming!

Gray flames exploded in the air. As the explosion raged on, one could hear the wailing sounds of tortured ghosts. These sounds were obviously illusions, but for some reason they echoed directly in one’s ears, sneaking through their brains and causing their spiritual seas to tremble.

Facing this overwhelming battle spirit fire that covered the skies, Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. The Heretical God Force’s compressed true essence erupted to the limit and the blood of the Ancient Phoenix burned within him!

The space under his feet began to strangely twist. Lin Ming became one with his spear, and the power of thunder and fire twisted together faster and faster until it became a tornado, the spiraling force repelling all of the battle spirit power nearby.

Bang bang bang!

Like a flying beam of light, Lin Ming grasped the Purple Comet Spear and cut through the void, tearing apart the battle spirit flames. However, this was still an Emperor battle spirit. Even if it was only a trace, as it bloomed with its final light, its final dregs of power still created a terrifying impact. In the intense collision of energy, the battle spirit fire was a like a knife that cut through Lin Ming's bodily protective true essence and stabbed into his flesh.

However, after Lin Ming had completed 100% Tempering Marrow and even opened the first door of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, his bodily defensive power was incomparably tough. Despite the power of the battle spirit stabbing into his body, it was only a minor flesh wound.

Ca!

Lin Ming passed through the screen of flame and shot towards Yan Chi!

"What!?!?"

Yan Chi was immensely shocked. At this point he had already used over 70% of his true essence. Clenching his teeth, Yan Chi bet his last ounce of strength on a single attack and thrust his sword towards Lin Ming's throat. This was an attack that had absolutely no defense behind it. Yan Chi knew that he was dead. Since things were like this, then he would bring Lin Ming with him!

"How naïve…"

Two indifferent words echoed in Yan Chi's ears. This was also the last voice that he heard. In the next moment, Yan Chi's head exploded like an impacted watermelon. Lin Ming's spear ran through Yan Chi's head like a blazing meteor. The powerful impact along with the explosive force of the twisted thunder and fire caused Yan Chi's head to be directly smashed into pieces, his brains and blood instantly evaporating!

As bits of skull and flesh still flew in the air, Lin Ming had already landed on the other side, hundreds of feet away. Behind him, Yan Chi's sword was only half-raised, and it would never go any higher ever again.

This was the difference of absolute speed.

"It's over."

Lin Ming put away the Purple Comet Spear. In this battle, in a situation where he hadn't opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, his victory hadn't come easily. His clothes had been torn apart, and his body was covered with cuts from the battle spirit's power, dozens of areas on his body were bleeding. After all, Yan Chi's battle spirit still came from an Emperor level powerhouse. When it erupted in that final burst with all its might, the strength it displayed was extremely terrifying. In the end, it had even cut open Lin Ming's protective bodily true essence.

In truth, these several dozen bloody cuts on his body couldn't even be considered injuries to him, they just made him look a bit distressed. Perhaps there were some haughty and proud martial artists that cared about their image and would always want to win in a beautiful and spectacular manner, but to Lin Ming that was nothing at all.

Bang!

Yan Chi's headless corpse fell to the ground.

This was how he had died.

This third match was also the last. With Yan Chi dead, it was Lin Ming's complete victory!

The audience had fallen silent. In three continuous revolving matches that were designed to wear him down, Lin Ming had battled to the last one. Judging from his appearance, he may have been wounded, but he still had strength left!

These three had all been part of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, and not just that, but they had all entered the Road of Emperor, causing their strength to be greatly increased. Originally, no one thought that Lin Ming would win. Everyone simply thought he was too brash and reckless, but, the true final result had defied all expectations. All three great masters had been completely killed off by Lin Ming!

At the start of the fight, who could imagine that Lin Ming, who had only just finished the King's Cage, would have his strength rise by such a ridiculous degree!

"This is freaking me out. I think that Lin Ming still has at least 50 to 60% of his strength left. I can't imagine just how much true essence he has within him."

"Three continuous matches, and all three opponents were from the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. There were even top characters like Yan Chi and Maha, but even so, Lin Ming killed all of them while just receiving some minor wounds."

These minor flesh wounds, not to mention Lin Ming, but they weren't anything at all to every other martial artist on the third floor. They would be fully healed in just a few hours.

"Truly worthy of being a Titled Asura. Truly worthy of being known as the number one talent of the Holy Demon Continent's last 10,000 years. His cultivation is only at the extreme Xiantian realm, but he already has such potential. After he becomes a Peerless Emperor, that will truly be terrifying!"

"Hey, what do you… how many stages of Life Destruction do you think Lin Ming will be able to cross?" A martial artist asked out loud.

Humans were weak, but that was only before they became Peerless Emperors. Humans were talented in their perception, and their compatibility with Laws was only second to the

Fey’s. The main limiter of their strength was their body. These weak and frail bodies caused humans to be limited in both striking power and defensive power.

But the heavens were fair. Before becoming Peerless Emperors, humans had to experience Life Destruction. Life Destruction was the door of death for humanity. The mortality rate of every single crossing was extremely high. This was also the reason that there was a far smaller number of human Emperor powerhouses than every other race.

However, correspondingly, when one successfully crossed Life Destruction, their body would be remolded. The strength of human powerhouses would rapidly rise. If one could cross eight stages of Life Destruction, their strength would far surpass every other race!

Lin Ming’s current strength was already high to the point of being ridiculously freakish. If he crossed eight stages of Life Destruction in the future, just how formidable would he become?

Thinking of this, the martial artists present didn’t dare to imagine any further…

……………………

In the special guest section, Feng Shen was listening to the martial artists around him who were talking and expressing their opinions.

He shook his head. These people didn’t understand just how terrifying that battle was.

That was the detonation of an Emperor battle spirit. Even so, it was still fended off by Lin Ming!

An Emperor battle spirit, even if it was just the faintest of wisps, still contained an extremely terrifying explosive power!

Unfortunately, Yan Chi couldn’t control this strength. All he could do was let this battle spirit explode as it wished, spreading the energy in all directions. This caused most of the energy to be wasted, and only a small portion had fallen on Lin Ming.

And when Lin Ming had become one with his spear, he had also used the spiraling power of his spear to deflect the power of the battle spirit, finally receiving only minor wounds at the end.

Feng Shen had extraordinarily good vision. He had seen profound and mysterious principles that Lin Ming had used to avert the power of the battle spirit. This caused him to admire Lin Ming even more. Lin Ming not only had terrifying strength but also a cool mind. In a tense situation he had still chosen to use the most appropriate tactic at the key moment!

‘I… I am not his match.’

Feng Shen was ashamed of his own inadequacy. He was confident that he could have defeated Yan Chi, but to defeat Lin Ming at his peak condition… this was impossible.

Let alone his peak condition, even if Feng Shen went onstage now and challenged Lin Ming, who had already consumed a great deal of his strength, he had to admit that the chances of him defeating Lin Ming were no more than 50-50.

On the arena stage, Lin Ming calmly took Yan Chi’s spatial ring and his black treasure sword. At this time, the infernal energy within Yan Chi’s body flowed into Lin Ming. The fourth pair of wings on his Heavenly Demon Tattoo widened once again. Now he had reached the very peak of an eight-winged Heavenly Demon, and was only a single step away from being a ten-winged Heavenly Demon.

However, crossing this last step wouldn’t be easy. The only way would be to kill someone at the level of a Heavenly Demon Seven Star or higher, otherwise there was no way for this Heavenly Demon Tattoo to grow any more.

“How unfortunate.” Lin Ming shook his head. He was just a little bit off!

“Humph!”

In the seat of honor, High Lord Heian coldly snorted. Everything that Feng Shen had thought of, he too had thought the same. He stood up with a dour expression, not interested in staying another half minute, and then turned around to leave.

But at this moment, Lin Ming looked up. He smiled, smirking as he said, “Heian, running away so soon? Why don’t you come down and play with me?”

What?

High Lord Heian was startled, instantly stiffening on the spot. All of the other martial artists present were beyond shocked. Everyone had incredulous expressions as they looked at Lin Ming.

Just now… what… what did he say?

Chapter 605 – Force Field in Full Bloom

Chapter 605 – Force Field in Full Bloom

…

…

…

Come down and play?

Lin Ming wanted to challenge a High Lord!?!?

And he did so with such a casual tone. Clearly, he didn’t even place High Lord Heian in his eyes.

This was far too brazen!

The 12 High Lords.

Although their talents were inferior to Feng Shen’s, and even inferior to Yan Chi’s, their ages were high. Of the High Lords, the weakest of them had strength that surpassed every challenger.

It was widely rumored that Feng Shen was comparable to the weakest High Lord, but, this was only a comparison. In a true life or death struggle, Feng Shen would most likely lose.

Moreover, Heian wasn’t even the weakest High Lord. He had been a High Lord for many years now. His strength could be ranked in the middle-upper reaches of the 12 High Lords!

But as for Lin Ming, while it was true that he was strong, he had just fought through three matches and consumed a great deal of his true essence. Wasn’t challenging High Lord Heian at this time just looking to die?

"Lin Ming has already fought in continuous battles and now he even wants to fight High Lord Heian… is he insane!?"

"Three matches. Although his wounds aren't serious, he's used up at least 40 to 50% of his true essence. Does he want to die or something?"

"Do you think Lin Ming is an idiot? For the last year Lin Ming has fought so many times, but when have you ever seen him lose?" Some people said with dissatisfaction.

"It's true that he hasn't lost, but it's not as exaggerated as you imagine. Feng Shen hasn't lost either. Those that have lost on the third floor, most of them have already died! You think that just because Lin Ming hasn't lost in a few battles he can prevail over High Lord Heian?"

After this reversed question, the martial artist who just spoke proceeded to shut his mouth. In Skysplit Tower, the status of the High Lords was deeply rooted within everyone's subconscious. They had stood at the pinnacle of Skysplit Tower for so many years, controlling the massive amount of resources in their hands, and especially practice places. There was the Road of Emperor, and even… many Demon God Bones!

In this situation where they possessed all these resources, and also with the passing of time, their strength could be imagined!

The 12 High Lords hadn't fought in many years. Challenging them? No one had ever dared to do so!

High Lord Heian looked at Lin Ming for several breaths of time. He didn't think that Lin Ming would actually dare to challenge him, and had been worried about finding an excuse to kill Lin Ming somehow, but now, this fellow had actually delivered himself right up to his door.

This boy had hidden a part of his strength in these past battles, but High Lord Heian's mouth only curved up in a sly smile. He simply didn't care about this. As a High Lord, he was able to freely use any resource within Skysplit Tower, including even the Road of Emperor. In addition to his superior age and cultivation, there was no way he could possibly lose!

“You want to challenge me?”

“I do. After killing Yan Chi, my Heavenly Demon Tattoo hasn’t been able to break through to 10 wings.”

His Heavenly Demon Tattoo hadn’t broken through to 10 wings?

His meaning was that he wanted to use High Lord Heian to help further his own Heavenly Demon Tattoo?

The surrounding martial artists were all shocked.

What gall!

“Heavenly Demon Tattoo? Hahahahaha!” High Lord Heian wantonly laughed. “Then that being the case, allow me to fulfill your wish!

With a casual step forwards he arrived on the arena stage. No one had been able to discern High Lord Heian’s movements.

Lin Ming gripped the Purple Comet Spear, pointing it straight towards High Lord Heian. His expression was calm. When he fought with Yan Chi and Maha, he had been always been conserving his strength, and that was for this one battle in front of him.

In this battle, he would use everything he had!

Reasonably speaking, it was far too rash to challenge High Lord Heian at this moment because Lin Ming didn’t even understand his complete strength. But, Lin Ming wasn’t able to suppress the fighting spirit that bubbled up in his heart. He wanted to fight in a hearty and fulfilling battle, using his own peak condition to truly determine just how much his strength had increased after entering the King’s Cage.

At this moment, the atmosphere of the martial arena was incomparably solemn. The entire audience was holding their breath, carefully watching these two people onstage lest they miss a single movement.

In his seat, Feng Shen had subconsciously gripped his sword. Challenging a High Lord… he also had this idea, but that was only aimed towards the two new High Lords that hadn't even been in their positions for three years. As for challenging High Lord Heian, he wasn't that crazy.

On the arena stage, High Lord Heian crossed his arms behind his back. Without a weapon, he casually glanced at Lin Ming and said, "I want to see whether or not you can even force me to draw my sword!"

As he spoke, an intangible aura emanated from him, like billowing ocean waves, wildly raging!

"This aura…"

"How terrifying! This imposing aura isn't even aimed at us, but I feel like I'm caught in the midst of an ocean storm, it's even hard to breathe!"

"If I were just covered in the aura I wouldn't even have the courage to resist. How would I even continue fighting?"

High Lord Heian hadn't even moved, but his aura was already so formidable. Facing this grandiose aura directly, could Lin Ming even withstand the tremendous pressure?

"Force you to draw your sword?"

Lin Ming faintly smiled. It was like he didn't even feel this tyrannical aura that enveloped him. As he gripped the Purple Comet Spear, he slanted it towards the ground and slowly drew a crescent moon on the floor…

Heavenly Demon martial intent, Asura force field – open!

Bang!

The Heavenly Demon force field that was restrained within Lin Ming's body suddenly erupted! Lin Ming had already adapted to the pressure of the Heavenly Demon force field within the King's Cage. Facing High Lord Heian's aura, it was simply nothing!

The Heavenly Demon force field spread like heavy mercury, completely tearing apart High Lord Heian's aura. With unstoppable force, it completely engulfed High Lord Heian's aura and covered the entire martial arena. It wasn't just High Lord Heian, but even the martial artists in the closest rows of seats were covered by this force field.

Puff!

The weakest of these martial artists immediately spat out a mouthful of blood, his face turning as white as paper!

"Quickly retreat!"

"What's going on!?!?"

"I felt like my heart stopped."

Within the Heavenly Demon force field, whether it was the soul, mind, true essence, or body, everything had to bear an immensely terrifying pressure. It wasn't surprising for weaker martial artists to be directly killed by the suppression of the Heavenly Demon force field!

All of the martial artists near Lin Ming turned white and quickly ran far away. Even martial artists that were ranked 50 and above couldn't stay nearby. Although they weren't injured by this pressure, they too would suffer greatly if they stayed here much longer!

"This is the Heavenly Demon force field..."

Feng Shen looked towards Lin Ming, a complex emotion in his eyes. Having entered the King's Cage, he certainly wouldn't forget what the Heavenly Demon force field felt like.

It was because of the increasing strength of this Heavenly Demon force field that Feng Shen finally couldn't withstand the pressure and had to leave the King's Cage.

"I never imagined that after Lin Ming entered the King's Cage he would even comprehend the Heavenly Demon force field…" Feng Shen slowly shook his head. "When others go into the King's Cage, they struggle to resist the pressure of the Heavenly Demon force field, using every trick they know. But when Lin Ming entered the King's Cage, he actually comprehended the Heavenly Demon force field for his own use… what kind of monstrous talent this is?!"

When Feng Shen had entered the King's Cage, he had only lasted 28 days. But, Lin Ming had stayed within for a full 108 days.

In addition to constantly breaking through his limits and increasing his strength, Feng Shen hadn't had any other harvests. In comparison, Lin Ming had not only furthered his comprehensions of the Concepts of Space and Time, but he had even comprehended the Heavenly Demon force field.

This was already on a completely different level.

In the future, if Lin Ming entered the Road of Emperor, what heights would his strength ascend to?

Thinking of this, Feng Shen thought that it was too unfortunate. It was impossible for Lin Ming to enter the Road of Emperor because the 12 High Lords would never permit it to occur.

After this battle, if Lin Ming didn't die by some stroke of luck, then he would most likely be forced to leave Skysplit Tower.

There was no longer any place here for him.

On the arena stage, High Lord Heian grimaced as he was bathed in the Heavenly Demon force field. The surrounding martial artists were only slightly affected by the fading edges this force field, but he had to bear the full and complete pressure of the Heavenly Demon force field!

In this environment, he even felt the circulation of his demon essence being stymied within his body.

“After entering the King’s Cage you even managed to comprehend the Heavenly Demon force field… I will acknowledge that you have the qualifications to force my sword.”

High Lord Heian gently caressed his spatial ring and withdrew a dark crimson longsword. The blade of this sword was only two inches wide and less than three feet long. The ridges of the sword weren’t straight, instead having a straight twist that made it seem like a floating red serpent.

“This sword is…”

As Lin Ming saw this dark crimson sword, his pupils shrank. The quality of this sword was absolutely higher than the Purple Comet Spear in his hands!

The Purple Comet Spear was forged from a piece of 10,000 Year Sacred Flame Parasol Tree, 10,000 year Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo, as well as all sorts of rare and precious materials. It was personally crafted by Ancestor Chi and refined with the support of an ancient array formation.

Even so, this spear couldn’t compare to the sword in terms of quality. Could that sword be… a heaven-step treasure?

The only heaven-step and above treasure that Lin Ming had ever seen was the Cosmic Melting Furnace. Of course, the Cosmic Melting Furnace might even surpass the heaven-step rank. At the bare minimum it was a high-grade heaven-step treasure.

Lin Ming had never seen a true low-grade heaven-step treasure before, so he was unable to judge the rank of this dark crimson longsword in front of him.

With an unfathomably deep cultivation, the free use of any practice area, massive amounts of Demon God Bones and resources, and even this suspected heaven-step dark crimson snake sword…

High Lord Heian's strength could be imagined!

In the audience, even Muk Gu, who had always believed in Lin Ming's strength, felt weak at heart. Facing such a formidable High Lord Heian, just how could Lin Ming ever win?

"Dying under my Crimson Ruby Snake, you should be satisfied."

High Lord Heian pointed his sword straight at Lin Ming. He moved, and although no one was able to perceive what actions he took, there was only a light 'chi' sound as if space was torn apart and High Lord Heian's sword suddenly appeared in front of Lin Ming!

What a ghostly sword! There was no surging demon essence nor was there a brilliant sword light. There was only a simple and basic sword strike, but even Feng Shen didn't have absolute confidence he could block this sword!

Lin Ming's eyes widened. His feet stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void, and his form disappeared like a fading wisp of blue smoke.

After fusing his increasingly skilled Concept of Space into his movement technique, his movements were already as illusionary as ghosts and gods, ambiguous and fleeting!

A sword stabbed into Lin Ming's afterimage. High Lord Heian sneered, and with a twist of the snake sword in his hand, a Concept erupted from within it.

Concept of Annihilation!

In that instant, the air itself was destroyed.

Stabbing his sword out again, High Lord Heian's speed erupted to the extreme. Lin Ming's form had just appeared when High Lord Heian's sword already pierced towards his chest!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. As he thrust out his spear he also used Golden Roc Shattering the Void once more!

Hoo-!

In a split-second, Lin Ming appeared hundreds of feet away. But, on his right arm, the blue fabric of his sleeves had silently turned into powder before fading into nothingness.

In that flash, High Lord Heian had only used two sword strikes without any ravishing collisions of true essence. However, all the martial artists present felt like they had lost their breath.

That exchange of moves just now was only testing the waters. It was hard to imagine just how fierce the battle would be when the true fight began!

Chapter 606 – Contract Beast – Isolation Dragon

Chapter 606 – Contract Beast – Isolation Dragon

…

…

…

Lin Ming had completely evaded High Lord Heian's two sword strikes. However, the sleeve of his right arm had been turned to dust; this was caused by the Concept of Annihilation.

"Your speed's not bad. I wonder how long you can hide for!" High Lord Heian gripped his sword with one hand and used the other to draw a circle in space. Then, a black light shot out of this circle and twined itself around High Lord Heian. After several breaths of time, this black light condensed into a black python.

This python was the thickness of an arm and its entire body was covered in a red pattern. What was strange was that this pattern was constantly changing, the colors and shapes converging and parting, causing them to appear dazzling. The python's forehead had a demonic brand that looked similar to the Heavenly Demon Tattoo. And in the center of this brand was unexpectedly a single horn. This horn was shaped like a spiral and glittered with a cold light.

"Contract beast?"

There were some martial artists that would raise a contract beast in order to increase their own strength. For instance, Mu Qianyu's Little Flame and Yan Mo, who had been left in the Southern Wilderness by the Sorcerer, were both two kinds of contract beasts.

It wasn't easy to raise a contract beast. First, one had to find a contract beast that could grow to a high level; this was already extremely difficult. Then, in order to have it grow, one needed to invest a massive amount of energy and resources in doing so. Otherwise, if the contract beast was not able to keep up with its master, then it was basically useless.

"What is that contract beast, I've never seen it in the ancient texts…"

"I've never seen it either…"

The martial artists present were nearly all from large sects, and they were all knowledgeable individuals with excellent eyesight. However, not one of them recognized just what this python was that wrapped itself around High Lord Heian. Not even Feng Shen could recognize it.

To someone at High Lord Heian's level who sat on the vast pile resources that was Skysplit Tower, any contract beast he had naturally wouldn't be ordinary. Normally it would be some legendary top contract beast that would be more or less described in ancient texts. Even if it wasn't completely accurate it would still have some details.

But, no one had ever seen High Lord Heian's contract beast before. High Lord Heian hadn't personally fought for a great number of years, so there weren't many people that knew what his methods or techniques were.

As Lin Ming looked at that black python, he also didn't know what sort of beast it was. But, he could clearly feel that the python was emitting billowing waves of infernal energy. Surprisingly, it was somewhat similar to a Demon God Bone.

Heavenly Demon Tattoo, Demon God Bone… could it be…

Lin Ming's heart jumped and he inexplicably thought of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Could this be a creature that originated from the Eternal Demon Abyss?

The Eternal Demon Abyss was isolated from the world. There was a terrifying and rich infernal energy within so it wouldn't be surprising if some sort of top monster or demon was born within it. High Lord Heian had ruled Polar Skysplit Tower for so many years and Skysplit Tower sent organized teams to explore the Eternal Demon Abyss every ten years, so it was normal if there had been some catastrophic alien beast found.

An ancient vicious beast born within the Eternal Demon Abyss. Just what sort of amazing abilities would it have?

Lin Ming couldn't help but keep up his vigilance, secretly guarding against this.

High Lord Heian smiled and suddenly thrust his hand forwards. The black python flew off of High Lord Heian's arm and in the next moment, an incredible scene took place that left the audience bewildered. The python issued a harsh screeching noise and then its body began to melt like heated ice. It started to fuse into the void before completely disappearing.

"Mm? This is..."

Lin Ming suddenly felt that the power of space around him had been blocked. Even with his understandings towards the Laws of Space, he actually wasn't able to call upon the power of space!

Not just that, but even his Heavenly Demon force field was suppressed to a certain extent. This was from the pressure that came from the black python that disappeared. It had somehow counterbalanced his Heavenly Demon force field...

"Sealed space?"

Lin Ming was alarmed. Vicious beasts had limited wisdom; it was nearly impossible for them to pierce Concepts through meditation, especially for one as puzzling as the Concept of Space. Thus, there was only one possibility, and that was that this black python had been born with a certain understanding of the Law of Space. This was a sort of vicious beast that Lin Ming had never heard of before!

“After guarding Skysplit Tower for so many years, the 12 High Lords have truly unfathomable resources!” In his special guest seat, Feng Shen was startled. Although the 12 Skysplit Towers were not a sect, they in truth could be regarded as a special Holy Land. Not just that, but the Skysplit Towers’ resources were much more terrifying than any other Holy Land’s!

This was a completely unfair fight. In Lin Ming and High Lord Heian’s battle, Lin Ming had the disadvantage in age, cultivation, weapons, and even contract beasts.

“Lin Ming is in danger. If the space around here is sealed then he can only fight in melee combat.” There were a number of Fey martial artists in the audience that detected the strange fluctuations in space.

If Lin Ming couldn’t use the power of space then he was the same as a bird with a crippled wing. How could he continue to fight?

On the arena stage, High Lord Heian’s wrinkled black face was twisted in a creepy grin. “The space around us has been sealed away by my contract beast, the Isolation Dragon. I want to see, without your Concept of Space, without your strange movements, just how you’ll dodge this sword of mine!”

As High Lord Heian spoke, his figure suddenly vanished. The crimson snake sword drew a rift in the air, its sword wind traceless.

As the sword howled towards Lin Ming, the demon essence hiding within finally bloomed. An incomparable amount of condensed demon essence fluttered out, formed a red aurora.

Facing this sword, Lin Ming’s expression was calm. Since he couldn’t dodge, he wouldn’t bother to!

Within Lin Ming's mind, he recalled the scene of the Eightfall War Emperor fighting the Giant Demon quasi Emperor, and just how earth-shaking that sword strike had been!

With a deep breath, the Gate of Healing between Lin Ming's clavicles began to form a whirlpool of heaven and earth origin energy. Ever since he returned from the King's Cage, this was the first time that Lin Ming had used the power of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates!

Bang!

An incomparably vast heaven and earth origin energy poured into his meridians. In that instant, Lin Ming's aura erupted to the limit and even the space sealed by the black python trembled as if it were about to break apart at any moment.

With a thrust of his spear, a boundless wave of true essence circled up. In that moment, it was like time itself had come to a standstill. The spear light and sword light collided, and with the sound of breaking glass, without any flashy explosions, High Lord Heian's sword light was constantly being twisted apart even as Lin Ming's spear light was constantly being melted.

"Concept of Thunderfire, explode!"

In the instant that the spear light faded away, Lin Ming gave a loud shout and the Concept of Thunderfire burst out from within the Purple Comet Spear. A terrifying true essence explosion blasted out. Sound was swallowed, and the entire arena was covered in a blinding light. In such an explosion, the profound gold floor was completely lifted away. Sheets of profound gold dozens of feet wide either melted away or broke into pieces.

A potent energy scattered in all directions. Lin Ming couldn't hold down his body and was jolted a few hundred feet back.

But High Lord Heian wasn't much better off. He had been almost completely covered by the explosion of the Concept of Thunderfire. His bodily demon essence had shattered, and the power of thunderfire had rushed into his body, violently rampaging through!

He had to summon all of his demon essence to suppress the power of thunderfire within his body. A faint trace of blood flowed out from his shoulder and chest.

What?

After the blinding light faded and the audience saw the scene on the arena stage, all of them were shocked speechless.

In the exchange of moves, almost half the profound gold arena had disappeared. And standing on top of the arena stage, High Lord Heian… had been injured!

The lofty High Lord, one of the strongest powerhouses of Skysplit Tower, had actually been wounded by Lin Ming!

All of the martial artists present didn’t know how to express the utter shock and horror in their hearts. They had thought that Lin Ming’s strength lay in the Concept of Space that allowed him to move around in an unpredictable manner, and his skill and moves in battle. But in terms of close-range combat, they didn’t think he was much better than Maha or Yan Chi.

When Lin Ming defeated Kai Yang, he had relied upon his powerful soul defense. To defeat Maha, he had used a surprise attack with the Concept of Space. And although he had defeated Yan Chi in a melee confrontation, Lin Ming had also been injured.

In this situation, no one thought that Lin Ming’s body would contain such a terrifying strength. At the moment that the Eight Inner Gates opened, the aura within Lin Ming’s body had erupted until it seemed like an unreachable mountain peak, a point that no human could see.

High Lord Heian’s grimaced. He never thought that Lin Ming would actually be able to take his all-out strike.

“This is not possible. How could I not have noticed his hidden strength before? Just where did all this true essence that’s flooding his body come from?”

As High Lord Heian held the Crimson Ruby Snake Sword in his hand, his eyebrows twisted together. He could instantly discern an essence gathering martial artist's cultivation with a glance. As for the thickness of their true essence, he wasn't able to see it, but he could feel out an approximation. But facing Lin Ming, this fellow's true essence seemed to come out of nowhere, surprising everyone.

And at that moment, Lin Ming suddenly moved, crossing hundreds of feet in a single step. With the Concept of Thunderfire fused into the Purple Comet Spear, Lin Ming aimed at the void and thrust his spear!

This spear was not shot towards High Lord Heian but instead towards the audience!

The several dozen martial artists that would bear the brunt of this attack were incomparably shocked. This freakish monster Lin Ming, they couldn't even defend against half a strike of his. If they were hit by the aftershocks then they would be severely wounded and anyone struck by the spear would instantly die!

"He's gone mad!"

"Be careful!"

Those several dozen martial artists galvanized their true essence to the limit, using their strongest movement techniques to scatter away. But compared to Lin Ming, their speed was far too slow.

"I'm a goner!"

A martial artist paled, despair filling his heart. But, as Lin Ming's spear light was only 200 feet away from him, a sudden change occurred!

That spear light seemed to smash into something, instantly exploding!

In that brilliant flash of blinding light, an ear-piercing scream suddenly sounded out. This sound was not something that could be issued by a creature!

"No!"

On the arena stage, High Lord Heian's expression changed.

In that moment, his Isolation Dragon contract beast had been stabbed through seven inches by Lin Ming's spear!

How was this possible!?

His Isolation Dragon had fused into a gap in space, vanishing into complete invisibility. How could it have been stabbed by Lin Ming!?

"Die!"

High Lord Heian's sword pierced towards Lin Ming, the crimson snake sword swallowing all light.

But Lin Ming seemed unaware of all this. His voice was chilling as he spat out a few words, "Power of thunderfire, explode!"

Bang!

In the void, blood rained down. The contract beast's miserable scream sounded out through the entire martial arena. The black python had been forcibly ejected from the space gap. Its body was dripping with blood and it had almost been split in half!

Chapter 607 – A Beautiful Spear

Chapter 607 – A Beautiful Spear

…

…

…

As the half-dead black python flew out, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a brilliant killing intent. He flicked his fingers and over a hundred Blood Drinking Seals shot towards the grievously wounded black python like a locust swarm, intending to completely destroy it!

The martial arena audience was completely shocked. Those several dozen martial artists that thought they would die under Lin Ming's spear had turned silly with fear. In that instant, before they had enough time to realize what had just happened, High Lord Heian had arrived.

Seeing his contract beast damaged to such a pitiful state, High Lord Heian's eyes turned blood-red.

"Die!"

A sword broke through space, carrying with it all of High Lord Heian's true essence as it thrust towards Lin Ming!

This sword speed had reached the limit. At this time, because Lin Ming had attacked the Isolation Dragon, his back was open to High Lord Heian!

High Lord Heian's sword had already reached Lin Ming's back. The sword energy tore apart Lin Ming's bodily defensive true essence!

Lin Ming's lips curved up in a grin. With the power of space unsealed, true essence moved under his feet.

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Ca!

High Lord Heian's sword passed through Lin Ming's back. However, Lin Ming's figure disappeared, vanishing like a fading plume of smoke. That had been nothing but an afterimage!

Meanwhile, a few hundred feet away in the air, the Isolation Dragon had been shredded to bits by the Blood Drinking Seals, its entire body dripping with blood. This time, the Isolation Dragon didn't even have the strength to scream. It was already at death's door!

Seeing this black python pouring blood in midair, the surrounding martial artists were shocked speechless. Although none of them comprehended the Concept of Space, they could still see what had happened with their eyes.

Lin Ming's spear just now had stabbed into a space gap where the Isolation Dragon was hiding, thus shattering the lock of sealed space.

"Too strong! In such a fierce battle, Lin Ming can even branch out his perception to find the black python's hiding place!"

"Perception? Don't be stupid. The black python had sealed itself into a space gap. That is a completely different level of space that is cut off from all perception. How could one possibly sense it?"

"Then how did he find the black python?"

"How the hell would I know? If I knew the way to do it then I would also comprehend the Concept of Space." The martial artist who just spoke curled his lips in disdain, not bothering to say anything else.

The space gap was truly able to isolate all perception. Even Lin Ming was no exception. However, Lin Ming had sensed the fluctuations in the power of space and found a point where it seemed out of tune with everywhere else. If the power of space was compared to waves, then the position where the black python hid had produced small ripples. These ripples had exposed the black python's position.

Lin Ming was highly sensitive to the power of space. Once he captured the exact location, he had infused his spear with the Concept of Space. With his spear piercing the void, it then pushed the black python out of its space gap.

If Lin Ming hadn't entered the King's Cage, then his comprehension of the Concept of Space would never have reached this degree.

Xiu!

High Lord Heian put out his hand, turning the dying black python into a stream of black light that submerged into his body.

As he inspected the black python's condition, High Lord Heian's face sank.

The black python was ruined. Flesh wounds weren't anything, and damage to meridians and organs could be cured. But, the core of the black python had been crushed. This basically meant that the black python no longer held any value. Once the core was shattered, it would never be able to grow again.

Lin Ming's guess was correct. This black python was truly an ancient beast brought out from the Eternal Demon Abyss by High Lord Heian, containing an inborn ability to use the Law of Space. However, it had grown for less than ten years and its strength was limited. This was the first time that High Lord Heian had actually brought it out for battle, but he never imagined that Lin Ming would be able to attack the Isolation Dragon in its hiding spot, ruining it for forever.

The Isolation Dragon was an extremely rare contract vicious beast. Its combat strength wasn't too great, but its supportive abilities were wonderful. High Lord Heian had carefully raised it for ten years and had invested a massive amount of resources into it, but as soon as it appeared it had been ruined. High Lord Heian felt his heart dripping blood. His eyes burned with a blazing killing intent!

"Lin Ming! I will kill you!"

"Word are useless. If you have any other moves then bring them out, I'm waiting right here." Facing High Lord Heian's killing intent, Lin Ming simply wasn't affected at all.

In fact, he hadn't even completely used the power of the Gate of Healing. Since this was the first time using the Eight Inner Hidden Gates in actual combat, his body was still adapting to it.

And most importantly, Lin Ming now realized that even if he erupted his complete power, he still wouldn't be able to kill High Lord Heian. At most, he would be able to just barely beat him. But, if he wanted to kill him, then he would need to create an opportunity to do so.

…….

Woosh!

High Lord Heian's figure instantly vanished, appearing right beside Lin Ming. "Don't think that only you are fast! I too am confident in my speed! I will end this fight soon. Since you want to compare speed, then come at me!"

Ca!

High Lord Heian's sword pierced forth.

Lin Ming's figure was like a puff of smoke as he vanished once more. Spear light wove into a net that fell over High Lord Heian!

"You want to fight a battle of attrition? Then let's see who consumes all their energy first!" High Lord Heian grinned like a madman. He thrust out the Crimson Ruby Snake Sword in his hand, tearing apart the spear light.

Demon essence and true essence fiercely collided. The ruined arena stage underneath their feet had already ceased to exist.

Bang bang bang!

The two engaged in a battle of speed. Whether it was attack moves, dodging, or even head on melee confrontations, everything they did raised great waves of surging true essence, forcing all of the martial artists in the stands to retreat once more!

“This is amazing! He’s fighting equally with High Lord Heian!”

“If this battle continues… I fear that Lin Ming won’t be able to last much longer. His cultivation is too low, and he has already consumed a great deal of true essence before this.”

In the view of these people, the degree to which Lin Ming’s true essence had thickened had far surpassed all other martial artists at his level. But, it was still a bit lacking compared to High Lord Heian. The reason that Lin Ming could fight evenly with High Lord Heian was all due to his comprehension of Concepts, his sharp and amazing moves, and the strange cultivation methods he used.

If this battle was drawn out until the end, then Lin Ming must lose!

In nearly every aspect of one’s combat prowess, Lin Ming was in no way inferior to High Lord Heian. It was just that his cultivation and total amount of true essence was lower. Even so, Lin Ming’s strength was hard to measure with common sense.

“If Lin Ming had another year, or even half a year, he would probably be able to defeat High Lord Heian!” A martial artist sighed with emotion. Lin Ming’s rise was unstoppable.

On the arena stage, High Lord Heian and Lin Ming had already fought for an entire half incense stick of time, exchanging almost a hundred moves!

“Demonic Windstorm!”

High Lord Heian calculated where Lin Ming would land. He thrust out his sword and demon essence rolled up into a billowing red cloud.

“Blood Seal Twisting Murder!”

The moves that Lin Ming used to strike back came from the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’. If this style was combined with the Blood Drinking Seals, then that would save the greatest amount of true essence. The Concept of Thunderfire simply used too much energy.

Lin Ming’s total amount of true essence was truly inferior to High Lord Heian’s. But, by depending on the Gate of Healing, his endurance far surpassed High Lord Heian’s!

But lasting to the final moment was not what Lin Ming wanted. What he wanted was to… make a killing strike!

By conserving the greatest amount of true essence that he could, that combined with the terrifying regenerative abilities of the Gate of Healing allowed him to maintain his peak condition.

Boom!

Spear and sword intersected, true essence exploding. Lin Ming’s body flew backwards, blood dribbling down the sides of his mouth. But High Lord Heian wasn’t any better off. After Lin Ming’s spear light broke through his sword light, a leftover wisp had pierced his chest, breaking past his bodily protective true essence and causing an arrow of blood to shoot out.

The battle of these two had already reached a catastrophic degree.

Lin Ming had been wounded several times, both heavily and lightly. But Lin Ming didn’t care about injuries, what he desired was making sure that High Lord Heian was also injured in the process.

At this time, some people gradually felt that something was wrong. Although Lin Ming's total amount of true essence was obviously lower than High Lord Heian's, for some unknown reason, he was always able to maintain his extreme speed and the power behind his moves!

In comparison, High Lord Heian had weakened somewhat.

"Heavens! There have already been over 200 moves. Although these are small moves, how can he withstand such consumption of energy!? Is he a puppet or something?"

"Don't forget that before this he also fought in three continuous battles, successively defeating Kai Yang, Maha, and Yan Chi, yet now he can still fight High Lord Heian to this degree!"

"High Lord Heian's breath is already weakening! What is going on? Is Lin Ming really a Xiantian realm martial artist!?"

The martial artists in the audience discovered this rapidly changing situation and found it incomprehensible.

High Lord Heian also discovered this. He no longer attacked Lin Ming. After another sword strike, he retreated several hundred feet back and stood there.

"You..." High Lord Heian's expression was dismal. He had already consumed almost half his demon essence, but Lin Ming hadn't used as much. In fact, his bodily true essence was still extremely thick like it was before!

How could it be like this? What sort of freak was this boy? Was his true essence regenerative ability really that strong?

'I can't drag this on anymore. I have to finish this fight as soon as possible. Otherwise, if this continues then I will lose!'

Losing to a mere 20-some year old human boy. High Lord Heian never imagined this day would ever come.

“Lin Ming. I never thought that you could force me to this step. I don’t know what sort of strong cultivation method you’ve practiced to have this degree of endurance, but I will not give you any more chances to consume my strength!”

As High Lord Heian finished speaking he gave a loud shout. He bit down on his tongue and spat out blood essence onto the blade of his sword. The curved crimson snake sword became an even more beautiful red. Soon after, High Lord Heian’s face flashed with an abnormal blush. In order to use this strongest strike of his, he had obviously overdrawn his strength.

“Bloodstained Blue Skies!”

A sword thrust forth, the void trembled! The entire arena seemed to be dyed red with blood, everyone’s vision filling with a dazzling scarlet light. This was an extremely oppressive feeling. It was like they had fallen into a bloody pond in the pits of hell, and now they faced a strike from a death god!

Just looking at this sword made one hallucinate that their heart had been chopped in half.

‘Final strike? What a pity!’

Lin Ming drearily sighed in his mind. He had wanted to slowly consume High Lord Heian’s strength to its lowest point while maintaining his own strength at around 90%. Then, at that final moment, he could flare out with all the power of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and kill High Lord Heian in a single stroke.

But presently, High Lord Heian no longer gave him that chance. It was time to advance to the final battle!

“Heavenly Demon force field – completely open!”

A stormy energy field surged out from Lin Ming's body. Although Lin Ming had used the Heavenly Demon force field at the very start of the battle, that was when he hadn't yet opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, only using regular true essence to drive it, otherwise it would have consumed too much true essence. But now that Lin Ming was in his peak condition, he erupted with the strongest possible Heavenly Demon force field!

A vast pressure gushed out in all directions. With a snapping sound, the ground underneath Lin Ming's feet began to completely crack open from this pressure. The broken fragments of profound gold flooring flew up into the air, and a massive crack spread out like a growing spider web!

As far as a 1000 feet away, the audience instantly felt a pressure that was several times more terrifying than before. Those with weaker cultivations vomited blood, and even those with higher cultivations paled!

How was this possible?

The fight had reached this degree, but Lin Ming was still able to erupt with such an aura?

This people completely didn't understand the Heavenly Demon force field. They only thought that this was the imposing aura that came from Lin Ming.

"Thunder and fire, fuse for me… Penetrating Rainbow!"

The power of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates was revolved to the limit. Between his eyebrows, the blood of the Ancient Phoenix combusted. Lin Ming's strength instantly doubled!

The Thunder Soul and Flame Essence within him began to violently tremble. The power of thunder and fire burst out like a volcanic eruption!

Above the Purple Comet Spear, thunder and fire struggled together. Thick arcs of lightning recklessly danced on the spear, mixing with the surging inferno of flames, burning down the void.

Lin Ming took a step forwards, his spear pointed straight towards High Lord Heian. Spear and man became one, and the horrifying sound of thunderfire reverberated in the air. Lin Ming became a flaming meteor wrapped with thunder as he shot forth!

“What!?!?”

High Lord Heian was impossibly shocked. He had never, ever imagined that Lin Ming could produce such a terrifying combat strength at such a moment. As that aura suddenly burst out and enveloped him, his demon essence that had been like a raging river had suddenly reduced by 20%!

‘This boy! He’s always been hiding this! He wanted to save this for the final strike, he doesn’t want to just defeat me, he wants to kill me!’

As High Lord Heian suddenly realized this, his eyes flashed with the light of lunacy!

This was the final move! If this failed then he would die. Everything was bet on this last desperate attack!

High Lord Heian revolved his demon essence to the limit and spat out more blood essence. The Crimson Ruby Snake Sword in his hand combusted with a flaming light, the sword sending out excited cries.

As the sword light and spear light struck each other, it was like a meteor smashing into another meteor!

“This isn’t good!”

After seeing this collision, the martial artists that had already retreated to 1000 feet didn’t say anything further, only launching their movement techniques to escape as far as possible!

Bang!

In that instant, a glaring flash burst out, forcing everyone in the entire martial arena to blink as if they were blinded. True essence violently swept up into swirling storms, melting every chair in the first several rows and sending chairs flying away like molten arrows. Luckily, several of the stronger martial artists suddenly took action, using their treasures and skills to send these metal chairs flying back. However, the impact of these chairs still caused their arms to shake with numbness.

What a terrifying strength!

The flash only lasted for a single breath of time before disappearing. The entire arena stage was completely razed to the ground, and not even a single piece of profound gold flooring was left behind.

Lin Ming and High Lord Heian staggered opposite of each other.

Lin Ming knelt on the ground, using the Purple Comet Spear to support himself. His entire body was dyed crimson with blood, and on his right shoulder was a ghastly wound. His right shoulder had nearly been split apart and his clavicle was broken.

But behind Lin Ming, High Lord Heian was blankly standing there. The left half of his body had… completely disappeared!

Left lung, heart, left arm… in that desperate collision with Lin Ming, all of it had been disintegrated to ashes by the crazy and violent power of thunder and fire.

All of the present martial artists were beyond shocked. They stood there, disbelief in their eyes as they looked at High Lord Heian on the remains of the arena stage. The left half of his body had completely vanished, and one could see that the organs of his right half had been charred black.

High Lord Heian… died?

With unfathomable strength, that overweeningly arrogant High Lord of Skysplit Tower who seemed all-powerful had actually died…

Died under the hands of Lin Ming, a mere human boy…

Chapter 608 – Becoming A High Lord

Chapter 608 – Becoming A High Lord

The chapter title is a spoiler, hover over it to read it now or see it at the bottom.

…

…

…

On the ruined martial arena stage, Lin Ming's entire body was stained crimson with blood. His clavicle was broken, and he was supporting himself with the Purple Comet Spear. He looked like a god of death that had crawled up from an Asura battlefield.

At this time, just looking at Lin Ming made one feel as if their heart was being squeezed tight. No one dared to look Lin Ming in the eyes.

To allow himself to suffer a grievous injury in exchange for High Lord Heian's life, Lin Ming's decisive and ruthless actions had frightened all of the martial artists present, sending chills up their spines.

They had originally thought this would be an even match, and even if victory and defeat were decided, killing the opponent wasn't possible. Normally, one side would admit defeat and the other side would settle for their hard earned victory.

No one ever dreamed that High Lord Heian would be killed underneath Lin Ming's spear.

Within Skysplit Tower, the High Lords were synonymous with kings. They were haughty, inviolable, and their will was absolute.

Such a strong High Lord Heian had actually died by Lin Ming's hands. The impact that this had on everyone was earthshaking.

"Lin Ming had always been hiding his ability. If he erupted with his complete strength from the start then he might have forced High Lord Heian into defeat, but he patiently waited, waited, and waited more, all until that final moment when he was able to kill High Lord Heian with a single spear. From the very beginning, he had been planning on killing High Lord Heian. This is too scary!"

"We can understand this tactic, but who could actually carry it out? Even if we are as strong as Lin Ming, we don't have his endurance! Lin Ming had only been a tad stronger than High Lord Heian at the start, but as time passed, High Lord Heian's condition slowly changed and his combat strength began to decline. But Lin Ming was actually able to maintain 80 to 90% of his full strength until that final moment when he exploded with everything he had! This is simply inhuman. Before this he had even fought in three fierce battles!

From the beginning, no one thought that Lin Ming would be able to win the revolving battle against Kai Yang, Maha, and Yan Chi, but, what had happened was that Lin Ming had easily killed all three of them. And the madman didn't even finish there. In a single go, he continued onwards and killed High Lord Heian!

"He came up with this tactic from the start. In order to kill High Lord Heian, he didn't even hesitate to seriously wound himself. Formidable strength, terrifying talent, inhuman stamina, a calm, decisive, and ruthless mind and tactics, he killed without hesitation all in order to rid himself of future problems. Such a terrifying person and yet he's only 20 some years old. Who knows what his achievements will be in the future!"

To the audience, Lin Ming becoming a Peerless Emperor was as good as settled. But, the question was whether or not Lin Ming could maintain this momentum, how many stages of Life Destruction he would pass, and whether or not he would become the number one powerhouse of the Holy Demon Continent!

Being able to look down on all rivals in his youth didn't mean that he would be able to dominate the continent in the future. After all, the chances that a genius would fall in the future were difficult to speculate.

"To kill High Lord Heian, Lin Ming's actions were too flashy this time. Although this was a battle in the martial arena, and killing the opponent is in line with Skysplit Tower's rules, the other High Lords won't give up here. This is a challenge to their authority!"

"Not necessarily. The 12 High Lords have never been on the best of terms with each other. One less High Lord Heian means that the other 11 High Lords will be able to divide more resources for themselves and obtain even more wealth and authority." As the martial artists were discussing, they suddenly saw a black mass of infernal energy fly up from High Lord Heian's corpse. This mass of infernal energy turned into a grim demon in the air. This demon had five pairs of wings; it was a ten-winged Heavenly Demon!

In this instant, the martial artists present finally realized that they had forgotten something. Lin Ming was already a peak eight-winged Heavenly Demon. If he killed High Lord Heian then...

Woosh!

The ten-winged Heavenly Demon rushed towards Lin Ming. At this time, Lin Ming was seriously injured, and he didn't even have 30% of his strength left. Even so, he wouldn't be defeated by something like a mass of infernal energy!

The Heavenly Demon force field opened, a tide of pressure swept out!

Peng!

The ten-winged Heavenly Demon fiercely trembled and half of its body dispersed. Lin Ming's right shoulder was nearly split apart so he used his left hand to lift the spear. With a thrust, thunder burst out!

Chi-la!

The ten-winged Heavenly Demon's body was pierced through by Lin Ming's spear. It turned into pure infernal energy that merged into Lin Ming's body.

With it, the eight-winged Heavenly Demon on Lin Ming's arm began to slowly grow a fifth pair of wings, becoming increasingly clear. This pair was larger than the first four, and the feathers looked as sharp as swords.

Ten-winged Heavenly Demon! This was a High Lord!

"Lin Ming became a High Lord?"

The martial artists present didn't know how to respond, this was truly difficult reality to accept! In Polar Skysplit Tower, it had been ages since a human High Lord had appeared. Moreover, Lin Ming was younger than everyone present.

Just six months ago, Lin Ming had been a newcomer to Skysplit Tower's third floor.

"High Lord… holy…"

"What will the other 11 High Lords do?"

According to the usual practices of Skysplit Tower, before a martial artist became a High Lord they would either be won over, suppressed, threatened, bribed, or even forced to leave. None of these were unusual or surprising situations. Once one became a ten-winged Heavenly Demon, they were a High Lord. This was the rule of Skysplit Tower.

In fact, in a sense, of those geniuses that were suppressed or forced away, most of them were far too weak.

For instance, Da Gu. As the fourth ranked amongst Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, if he hadn't heeded the warning of Skysplit Tower's High Lords and continued to his next match, then it was possible that they would have arranged for Yan Chi to be his opponent. When that time came, the results could be imagined.

However, towards this monstrous genius Lin Ming whose strength already surpassed High Lord Heian, the High Lords of Skysplit Tower were no longer capable of threatening him. Even that revolving battle of Kai Yang, Maha, and Yan Chi was easily won by Lin Ming. Who else could do anything to him?

In order to kill Lin Ming, that was only possible if four or five High Lords acted together, causing a heaven-shaking and earth-shattering battle!

At that time when the entirety of Skysplit Tower knew of this, it would become impossible to explain why they killed another High Lord without any reason.

Now, it could be said that Polar Skysplit Tower didn't have any way to manage Lin Ming.

"Is this real… there is going to be another High Lord? A human High Lord?"

All of the martial artists present thought they were in a dream. In the last several thousands of years, Lin Ming would be the fastest High Lord born within the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes, as well as the youngest High Lord.

Moreover, he was a human!

Lin Ming swallowed a healing pill. Underneath the dual function of the pill and his own formidable resilience, the wound on his arm was already regenerating. He could even feel the muscles rapidly growing underneath, causing an itching feeling to spread there. The healing of his clavicle would be slower, but it wouldn't take any longer than a few hours.

Lin Ming put out his hand and High Lord Heian's spatial ring dropped into his palm. This black and plain spatial ring was heavy and a size larger than a normal spatial ring.

This was impressively a high-grade earth-step spatial ring!

A spatial ring was rarer than other treasures of the same level. The value of this high-grade earth-step spatial ring was probably no less than Lin Ming's own Purple Comet Spear!

‘A High Lord of Skysplit Tower, who knows how much wealth he’s gathered over the years!’ Lin Ming sighed in his heart. High Lord Heian’s cultivation was only equal to a human Revolving Core powerhouse; in terms of combat strength, he was far inferior to a Life Destruction powerhouse. Even in this case, he still had a suspected heaven-step treasure black sword and a high-grade earth-step spatial ring.

It had to be known that Mu Fengxian was only a single stage Life Destruction master as well as the Highest Elder of Divine Phoenix Island. Still, the weapon she used was only a normal high-grade earth-step treasure.

‘If this ring is so valuable, then what would be in it?’ Lin Ming was filled with anticipation.

As for the suspected heaven-step Crimson Ruby Snake Sword, Lin Ming naturally couldn’t forget it, he also received it. If he didn’t count the Cosmic Melting Furnace, then this was the highest quality treasure that Lin Ming had seen up until now. Although he couldn’t use it himself, he could still exchange it for massive amounts of resources.

Seeing Lin Ming take all of High Lord Heian’s wealth, the martial artists’ eyes turned red with envy. This was the total wealth that a Blood Slaughter Steppes High Lord had accumulated for over ten years. Its total value would absolutely surpass that of an ordinary fifth-grade sect Sovereign!

Such a great amount of wealth would be of enormous help to walking down one’s future road of martial arts. Even someone like Feng Shen couldn’t ignore it.

After Lin Ming received everything, he didn’t leave the martial arena but instead sat there and meditated. He was currently in a very poor state and his combat strength had drastically dropped. If someone on the same level as High Lord Heian came now, then they would be able to kill him without a doubt.

Although this possibility was very low, Lin Ming didn't want to be taken by surprise. Restoring his strength to 70 to 80% in the martial arena and then returning to his practice area was the safest bet.

As long as he could restore his strength, then who could do anything to Lin Ming? Not to mention that he also had the ephemeral Golden Roc Shattering the Void. If he truly tried to run away with his full ability, then not even four or five High Lord Heians would be able to stop him.

Even if their speed could keep up with Lin Ming, their endurance would be inferior to his. Lin Ming could maintain his peak speed the entire time. As for others, even if they popped pills constantly while flying, their speed would become slower and slower.

In this case, Lin Ming no longer had any fear of Polar Skysplit Tower!

Seeing that Lin Ming didn't intend to leave yet, the other martial artists invariably also decided not to go, sitting in their seats and discussing what just happened.

And at this time, on Skysplit Tower's first floor and second floor, there were many martial artists gathered in pubs, restaurants, teahouses, and other places discussing Lin Ming's three continuous fights with Yan Chi, Maha, and Kai Yang. The second floor martial artists didn't feel as great a pressure as those martial artists on the third floor did. They were free to choose the time of their match, and if they didn't want to compete they could just ignore it. They had a relatively great amount of time to chat and relax.

Lin Ming's revolving fight with Yan Chi, Maha, and Kai Yang had already spread through the entire Skysplit Tower 10 days ago like a raging storm. Everyone was a martial artist, so who didn't want to see such a peak battle? But those that could truly go to the third floor and watch the match were the extraordinary individuals or absurdly wealthy of the second floor.

As for the weaker rung of martial artists, let alone having the qualifications, but even if they did have the qualifications to go up they still wouldn't be able to afford a ticket.

In a restaurant on the second floor, a mixed race old storyteller was carrying a walking stick in one hand as he made rapid hand gestures in the air with the other.

He was making up completely fantastical fabrications of Lin Ming's three man revolving fight with Yan Chi, Maha, and Kai Yang.

The martial artists of the first and second floor that didn't have the qualifications to enter the third floor and watch this battle could only use their imaginations to fill it in. The storytelling old man had found business in this opportunity, and was casting Lin Ming's three man revolving battle with great gusto.

For a mortal, if they could receive a single Blood Demon Crystal as a reward, this would be enough for them to live in Skysplit Tower for an entire year.

"Pah!" The old man pounded his walking stick against the ground. "...In that very moment, Kai Yang cut down with his saber, using his ultimate technique. But at this time, Lin Ming stood his ground, unmoving. He flourished his long spear, thrusting it out, and at that moment the heavens shook and the earth shattered, gods cried and ghosts wept... Kai Yang spat out a mouthful of blood and Lin Ming chased him down..."

"Hold on! F*ck you, what the f*ck are you making up all this shit for!" An Imp martial artist pounded the table. The storytelling old man had said that Kai Yang had been beaten up by Lin Ming. As both he and Kai Yang were Imps, he naturally didn't want to listen to this nonsense.

Chapter 609 – High Lord Heian's Inheritance

Chapter 609 – High Lord Heian's Inheritance

…

…

…

The storytelling old man was scared. He quickly apologized, "I'm sorry, I'm sorry, this lowly one has only heard everyone say this so that's why I…"

"You're just a mortal, so what the hell do you understand." The Imp martial artist angrily said.

"Consider it over." The Imp martial artist's companion waved his hand. "Kai Yang probably isn't Lin Ming's match. Lin Ming entered the King's Cage for 108 days. After he came out, he probably had the strength to rank near the front of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars."

"It's already been several quarter hours since the match started. I think that the results have already come out. Lin Ming should be able to defeat Kai Yang, but I wonder how his fight with Maha went?"

"F*ck, I wish I could watch the match. This sucks!"

As the martial artists in the restaurant talked amongst themselves, the storytelling old man didn't know if he should continue.

And at this time, the martial artists suddenly heard a loud noise outside of the restaurant, growing louder and more excited with every passing moment.

"What's going on?"

The several martial artists were suspicious and were preparing to go out to take a look, when suddenly a martial artist ran in, almost crashing into the group.

The several martial artists were about to lose their temper until they discovered that this person was their companion.

"Big news! Big news!" The martial artist yelled as soon as he passed the door.

"What's going on? Why are you so freaked out?"

"Skysplit Tower's High Lords have changed. Lin Ming has replaced High Lord Heian as a new one of the 12 High Lords, given the title of High Lord Evil God!" The martial artist frantically said.

"What did you just say?" The martial artists were stunned. Their first reactions were disbelief, "Lin Ming replaced High Lord Heian? How is that possible? Then what about High Lord Heian?"

"High Lord Heian seems… seems to be dead… dead…"

As the martial artist spoke with ambiguity, everyone present was shocked, completely petrified.

High Lord Heian… died?

…………………………

Within Skysplit Tower, the news of Lin Ming killing High Lord Heian was spreading at a terrifying speed!

Nearly every martial artist on the third floor was in the martial arena at the moment, so they of course knew the moment that Lin Ming killed High Lord Heian. Of course, the martial artists of the first floor and second floor were much slower in finding out the news.

But this didn't take over an hour.

A High Lord was killed! This was the greatest event that had happened in Skysplit Tower for the last few hundreds of years!

When people heard this news, many of them were filled with disbelief, because these were basically rumors. But as the news began to spread through the entire Skysplit Tower, and with the high-level figures of Skysplit Tower not standing up to clarify these rumors, they had no choice but to believe.

Ten days ago, the news of Lin Ming's three man revolving fight with Yan Chi, Maha, and Kai Yang had spread through the entirety of Skysplit Tower. But now, compared to today's news, that was simply child's play!

Initially, people had thought that Lin Ming would likely die in this three man revolving fight, but they never imagined the result would be like it was. It was simply unbelievable. Lin Ming killed Yan Chi and the rest, and then continued to kill High Lord Heian in a single go, becoming one of the current High Lords!

A High Lord was a legendary existence. On the second floor, there basically weren't any martial artists that had seen a High Lord before. And for the mortals of Skysplit Tower, a High Lord was no different from a god, a being that they couldn't even look up to.

……

At this time, Skysplit Tower's third floor, practice area.

Lin Ming was sitting cross-legged on a stone bed.

He didn't know about the discussions happening outside nor did he care. In fact, even the title of High Lord Evil God was given to him by the martial artists of the third floor, spreading out from that point afterwards. This was naturally a title that originated from Lin Ming's title given to him by the King Tablet, Evil God Asura.

Lin Ming sat in meditation for a while, restoring his condition to its peak state. Then, he took out the four spatial rings he had obtained, one at a time. These spatial rings were respectively obtained from Kai Yang, Maha, Yan Chi, and High Lord Heian.

Of these four spatial rings, three were medium-grade earth-step and one was a high-grade earth-step.

Lin Ming picked up Kai Yang's spatial ring first. Kai Yang was the weakest of the bunch, so he was naturally the poorest too.

After taking out everything within the spatial ring, Lin Ming quickly swept through it all. There wasn't anything too valuable inside. There were pills, jade slips, various treasure, and also over 9000 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals. The value of these wasn't too small, but Lin Ming didn't even bother to glance at them.

Lin Ming quickly sorted everything out and put everything he didn't need in one spatial ring and the Blood Demon Crystals in another. There wasn't anything in Kai Yang's spatial ring that had interested him, but this was also within his expectations.

Then, Lin Ming picked up Maha's spatial ring.

The contents were similar to Kai Yang's spatial ring, except even more abundant. There were around 15,000 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals, which was always a great and useful wealth.

There were even some acceptably adequate pills. Lin Ming took them out and reserved them for future use.

Then, Lin Ming picked up Yan Chi's spatial ring.

After taking out the contents, there were actually just around 20,000 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals as well as all sorts of pills. Even the treasures were the highest of high quality.

After sweeping through everything, Lin Ming picked out a jade slip from the chaotic mess. After sweeping his mind through it, he was surprised.

This was Yan Chi's records about his experience with battle spirits.

Battle spirit…

Lin Ming pondered for a moment. When one reached a higher level in the road of martial arts, a battle spirit would become an essential part of a martial artist's strength.

A battle spirit could grow along with a martial artist's own growth, slowly strengthening. Thus, the earlier one comprehended a battle spirit, the more room for growth there would be.

However, if a martial artist had bad luck, poor perception, or their martial arts cultivation had already reached an exceedingly high realm, they would slowly be unable to comprehend a battle spirit.

A battle spirit was in itself an elusive and enigmatic existence, a mysterious and obscure boundary. Sometimes the more one wanted to comprehend a battle spirit, the less successful they would be. Sometimes the less one thought about it, the higher their chances of comprehending it would be. It was an indescribable factor.

The memories that Lin Ming inherited were incomplete and there was very little concerning battle spirits. With Yan Chi's recorded experiences, even though it was probably riddled with errors and rough spots, at least it could be used as a reference point. In the end, it was better than nothing.

Putting this jade slip aside, Lin Ming waved his hand and put everything else inside a spatial ring.

These three spatial rings had contributed over 40,000 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals to Lin Ming. This was enough for Lin Ming to squander them as quickly as he could for dozens of years.

Finally, it was time for the main event. This was High Lord Heian's spatial ring.

Lin Ming picked up the spatial ring and sank his mind inside. in the next moment, everything inside was taken out.

For a time, the entire practice area was filled with massive piles of various jade slips, pills, treasures, and several dozens of large boxes.

A rich infernal energy and blood vitality coiled around these boxes – they were obviously Blood Demon Crystals.

Every large box had 5000 Blood Demon Crystals. With several dozen of these large boxes, there were around 200,000 to 300,000 high-grade Blood Demon Crystals. Compared to the total combined wealth of Kai Yang, Maha, and Yan Chi, it was at least seven or eight times more.

It wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that the wealth of a High Lord from Skysplit Tower was equal to an entire sect.

"Mm… this is…"

Lin Ming felt that within these dozens of boxes, one of them had an especially rich infernal energy. Lin Ming put out his hand and this box fell into his palm.

This box was a third of the size of the other ones. It was crafted from jade and was engraved with a sealing array formation. This array formation was used to prevent the leakage of energy.

"There's a sealing array formation but the energy coming from it is still so potent. What could be inside?"

Lin Ming unraveled the box's array formation and opened the lid. Instantly, an energy so thick that it condensed into substance began to escape.

Within the box, just the bottom was covered with a layer of light grape-sized red crystal. Every crystal was bright, translucent, and extremely shiny.

"These are… top grade Blood Demon Crystals?"

Above high-grade Blood Demon Crystals was top-grade Blood Demon Crystals. This sort of Blood Demon Crystal would only originate from the highest quality of Blood Demon Crystal mines. But in these mines, there was only a very, very small amount of top-quality Blood Demon Crystals that would be produced, thus they were incomparably precious.

This sort of thing was too wasteful if used to practice. Even a High Lord of Skysplit Tower wasn't willing to be so extravagant and luxurious.

A top-grade Blood Demon Crystal was mainly used to make breakthroughs in bottlenecks. For instance, if Lin Ming cultivated to the extreme Xiantian realm and wanted to make a breakthrough to Revolving Core, then he could use a top-grade Blood Demon Crystal to greatly shorten the time needed to make a breakthrough.

"This is the good stuff."

Lin Ming roughly counted them. Within this box, there were only several dozen top-grade Blood Demon Crystals. These weren't something that could be bought with money alone. Even Yan Chi, Maha, or Kai Yang didn't have a single top-grade Blood Demon Crystal in their spatial rings, but High Lord Heian actually had several dozen of them at once. From this alone, one could see just how wealthy the High Lords of Skysplit Tower were.

"High Lord Heian collected so many top-grade Blood Demon Crystals… he was probably preparing to make his breakthrough to a four-star Demon King."

To martial artists from the demon races, such as the Giant Demons or Imps, the step from a three-star Demon King to four-star Demon King was similar to a human martial artist's leap from Revolving Core to Life Destruction. It was not a small hurdle.

After a Skysplit Tower High Lord broke through to a four-star Demon King, they would then leave Skysplit Tower. Otherwise, if they stayed within the Blood Slaughter Steppes for too long, then there was a chance they would be killed by the mystical power within the Eternal Demon Abyss.

As Lin Ming was putting away these several dozen top-grade Blood Demon Crystals, his mind suddenly stirred. “There seems to be something here…”

Taking out all of the top-grade Blood Demon Crystals, Lin Ming found that there was actually a hidden space at the bottom of the jade box. He pulled open the cover to reveal a small space just several inches wide.

Within this space were two glass beads, one black and one white.

As Lin Ming saw these two colored glass beads, he sucked in a deep breath. These were… Demon God Bones!

Two Demon God Bones! And both of them were much larger than the one that Xing Tian had!

Lin Ming was secretly flabbergasted.

It was impossible to measure the value of a Demon God Bone with Blood Demon Crystals.

Every 10 years, the Eternal Demon Abyss would have a period where it became relatively quiet and tranquil. During this time, Skysplit Tower’s High Lords would send out teams of people to scour the boundary edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss, sometimes even going themselves.

Demon God Bones were formed when the rich energy within the Eternal Demon Abyss became thick to the point that it was a liquid and then condensed over a period of tens of thousands of years or even a hundred thousand years; it was far incomparable with Blood Demon Crystals. It was of tremendous help to the cultivation of martial artists from any race. Demon God Bones could even help a Demon King or Life Destruction powerhouse attack the bottleneck to becoming an Emperor level powerhouse. Just from this alone, one could see that its effects were similar to the Nirvana Dragon Root, and in fact, the value of a Demon God Bone was comparable to a Nirvana Dragon Root.

Although the Nirvana Dragon Root was rare, it was still only a medical plant found in the Demon Emperor's medicine garden. The Demon Emperor had initially only been a very strong Emperor level powerhouse. But, the Demon God Bone originated from the Eternal Demon Abyss, and that mystical and strange presence within the Eternal Demon Abyss was far from what the Demon Emperor could compare with when he was still in the Sky Spill Continent.

Chapter 610 – You Either Leave Or Fight

Chapter 610 – You Either Leave Or Fight

…

…

…

When Lin Ming first swallowed a Demon God Bone, the Demon God Bone had fused together with the Heavenly Demon force field. This had been countered with the Nameless Divine Pill that had been refined from a Nirvana Dragon Root. With the energies together, it was a complete coincidence that their combined powers were able to completely open the Gate of Healing.

From this alone, one could see that a single Demon God Bone was somewhat inferior to the Nameless Divine Pill refined from a Nirvana Dragon Root.

However, it had to be said that regardless of whether it was Xing Tian or High Lord Heian's Demon God Bones, they had all come from the surrounding area of the Eternal Demon Abyss and were also the most common and ordinary level of Demon God Bones.

But within the Eternal Demon Abyss, there were actually higher grade Demon God Bones. There were completely legendary objects; it was almost impossible for anyone to get their hands on them.

Lin Ming browsed through the jade slips that High Lord Heian had left behind. Besides some top cultivation methods, there was a single jade slip that caught his attention.

The contents within were actually a record of the Eternal Demon Abyss!

"Eternal Demon Abyss…"

Lin Ming muttered. Mysterious lands always attracted eager people that desired to explore, especially a place like the Eternal Demon Abyss which contained seemingly infinite resources as well as countless dangerous and fatal traps. There were even some Emperor powerhouses that, when their time was about to come to an end, would choose enter the Eternal Demon Abyss. They not only wanted to find their own lucky chance but also longed to decipher that mystical land. They wanted to see with their own eyes just what was within the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Sinking his mind into the jade slip, the first thing that appeared within Lin Ming's mind was a map. This was a map of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

On this map, the 12 Skysplit Towers were marked with red dots, and underneath these 12 Skysplit Towers was the tens of thousands of miles wide Eternal Demon Abyss.

This part of the Eternal Demon Abyss map was completely blank.

But several thousand miles around the Eternal Demon Abyss periphery, there were detailed signs, careful descriptions of dangerous zones, locations, spots, all meticulously portrayed and annotated.

In addition, there was even a mark on the map that indicated where it was easy to find Demon God Bones.

If one wanted to explore the Eternal Demon Abyss, the value of this map as a reference point was unimaginable.

Below all of this was all sorts of varied lore about the Eternal Demon Abyss. Its contents were similar to what Lin Ming already knew. For tens of thousands of years, every single character that entered the Eternal Demon Abyss, regardless of whether they were peerless geniuses or Emperor powerhouses, everyone would die there with no exception.

Let alone the inside of the Eternal Demon Abyss, even a thousand miles around the edges was a restricted death zone. Anyone that entered would die!

All martial artists that wanted to explore the Eternal Demon Abyss, including even High Lords, had to be at least 1000 miles from the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss, or sometimes even 2000 miles away.

The closer one approached to the Eternal Demon Abyss, the higher grade of Demon God Bones there would be, but, the dangers would also be correspondingly greater and the chances of dying there that much higher!

"According to the records within this jade slip, in just this last millennium, over 170 High Lords have died within the Eternal Demon Abyss. Every time the Eternal Demon Abyss opens there would be one or two High Lords that die!"

Lin Ming was shocked as he saw the data within High Lord Heian's jade slip. Every time that the Eternal Demon Abyss opened, High Lords would personally go, and the reason for this was those high grade Demon God Bones.

For a character on the level of a normal Heavenly Demon Seven Star, their strength was far worse compared to a High Lord. They could only stay in the extreme periphery. Finding one or two ordinary Demon God Bones was already considered very good for them.

To find anything of a higher grade was simply impossible.

With 12 Skysplit Towers, that would mean there were around 150 High Lords. Every time the Eternal Demon Abyss opened, one or two would die. That would also mean that the fatality rate of these High Lords was around 1%; this wasn't a too exaggerated fatality rate.

On the road of martial arts, if one was too afraid to take risks then they might as well not practice martial arts and peacefully pass away from old age while enjoying themselves.

"Eternal Demon Abyss… if there's a chance, I want to go too." Lin Ming was very much interested in exploring this land where so many risks and chances coexisted together. Of course, he absolutely didn't dare to enter into the 1000 mile death zone surrounding the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss. He didn't think that his life was much sturdier than those of ancient Emperor level powerhouses.

As Lin Ming continued to read through the jade slip it also described how the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted. It seemed that every several dozens of years, the Eternal Demon Abyss would also erupt once like a volcano, spitting out a massive amount of infernal energy as well as some hidden caches of Demon God Bones from within the Eternal Demon Abyss.

For the last several tens of thousands of years, people had searched the extreme outer edges of the Eternal Demon Abyss for these scattered Demon God Bones, all of them having come from the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

After every one of these special eruptions, the martial artists that entered the Eternal Demon Abyss would have much greater harvests. Of course, the risks would be higher too.

Because after the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted, that restless and vibrant energy and some strange life forms would form various danger spots, areas where one's bones wouldn't even be left over.

And in these cases of eruptions, the map would have massive changes to it. The old map would no longer be useful and one could only form a new map. This also meant that it was easier for people to randomly stumble into these danger zones.

It could be said that in the last 1000 years, of the over 170 High Lords that had died, over half of these deaths were because of the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

As Lin Ming finished reading through the jade slip, at this moment, a bright light flashed in his room, a sound then floating into Lin Ming's mind. "I am High Lord Bloodfire. Young Hero Lin, please follow the servants to the fourth floor."

"Fourth floor?"

Lin Ming's mind stirred. The fourth floor was the exclusive residency of Skysplit Tower's High Lords.

All remaining 11 High Lords were situated there!

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then left his practice area.

Just outside of Lin Ming's practice area, a pair of beautiful Fey maids were already waiting. These two beautiful girls were the same height and both their stature and appearance could not be any more perfect. Their cultivation was also at the Houtian realm.

In Sky Fortune Kingdom, if there was ever a girl that could be so young and have a Houtian realm cultivation while having such a perfect appearance, then they would be the most proud amongst all proud women. However, within Skysplit Tower, they were actually nothing more than maids.

"Sir High Lord, we are here to lead you to the fourth floor and fulfill any desire you have." A young Fey girl said in a soft lilting voice.

"Lead the way." Lin Ming's voice was calm and indifferent.

The third and fourth floors of Skysplit Tower were also connected by a transmission array. In this white hazy transmission array, one needed a token to enter.

As Lin Ming reached this transmission array he stopped and began to patiently study it. As he thought, it was undoubtedly an ancient transmission array. It stemmed from the same foundation as the Realm of the Gods' transmission arrays.

Seeing this familiar transmission array, Lin Ming was much more relieved. This way, at least he wouldn't be trapped on the fourth floor. His fleeting Golden Roc Shattering the Void movement technique combined with this ancient transmission array meant that he was confident that even if several High Lords sieged him together, he would still be able to safely withdraw.

With a step inside, a light flashed. In the next moment, Lin Ming and the two Fey maids arrived at Skysplit Tower's fourth floor.

The legendary Road of Emperor was also here.

As he was led through a dimly lit corridor, the maids finally brought Lin Ming before a towering and sumptuous grand temple. The gate of this temple was over 100 feet tall and there were all sorts of ancient and mysterious runes carved into it. It was unknown just what material it was formed from.

As Lin Ming arrived at this great temple, the gates opened, making grinding noises as if the structure couldn't resist its own vast weight.

Past the gate, there were 10 people in black robes, all of them uniformly wearing black cloaks. Some were tall, some were short, and all of them were sitting at a long black table.

With the ten people gathered together, the aura they emitted could be called terrifying.

And this aura was completed aimed towards Lin Ming alone!

Lin Ming's mind went cold. The Heavenly Demon martial intent immediately erupted, offsetting the pressure from this combined aura. His body only shook for a split second but he hadn't taken a single step back.

Without a doubt, these 10 black-robed individuals were all High Lords of Skysplit Tower. Facing Lin Ming, they were only subconsciously emitting their aura in order to frighten him.

"Only 10 of them. Isn't there another High Lord?"

Lin Ming was puzzled. He swept over these 10 individuals. Of these 10, there was a pretty significant gap in strength between all of them. There were even some people that were unfathomably deep. Lin Ming had to admit that he wasn't their match at this moment.

"Heroes truly come from the young!" A black-robed man sitting in the first seat laughed, his voice deep and loud. "High Lord Evil God, is that your title?"

Lin Ming calmly said, "Titles are meaningless to me. Feel free to call me what you will." The black-robed man speaking was without a doubt the strongest powerhouse amongst the

10 High Lords here. Lin Ming had to confess that he didn’t have the slightest chance of defeating him.

“Good! I like your straightforward attitude. I don’t want to play games with you. I’ll ask you now, are you willing to leave Skysplit Tower?”

Lin Ming frowned, “You are a ten-winged Heavenly Demon and I am ten-winged Heavenly Demon, why do you want me to leave Skysplit Tower? Is it only because I am a human? Do you think that this Skysplit Tower only belongs to you Goliaths and Giant Demons?”

“Hehe, it’s not only because you’re a human.” The black-robed man in the first seat stood up, his deep and dark eyes like stars in the night. “I allow you to leave because those have been the rules of Skysplit Tower for the last 10,000 years! Skysplit Tower does not allow the existence of twelve-winged Heavenly Demons. But you… if you are freely allowed to grow as you wish, then in another year or two we might not even be your match anymore. When that day comes, who can prevent you from obtaining 12 wings? This is a lesson that was learnt from the Eightfall War Emperor; once is already more than enough. We do not wish for any volatile factors to appear which threaten the status of Skysplit Tower.”

Lin Ming sneered, not speaking. In the end, it seemed that the current rules of Skysplit Tower had already taken the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes as their own property.

Indeed, with the ability to amass such a massive amount of resources and wealth, as well as numerous high level practice areas, who would not be moved by these?

If the Blood Slaughter Steppes didn’t contain a mystical force that killed all high level martial artists that stepped into here, then this land would have already been aimed at by the many Emperor level powerhouses and Holy Lands of the Holy Demon Continent. At that time, an unrivalled great war would erupt over the Blood Slaughter Steppes, and the Blood Slaughter Steppes would eventually by carved up by the victors.

And such a war would probably erupt every thousand years, causing the land to be redistributed again.

Now, because of all these strange and secretive rules of the Blood Slaughter Steppes forming a pattern, in a sense, the current Blood Slaughter Steppes had become a special sort of sect. As for these High Lords, they were the same as the sect Elders.

"I can leave. I had no intention of becoming a High Lord to begin with, nor do I want to stay in the Blood Slaughter Steppes for a long time. I only want to stay in the Blood Slaughter Steppes for another three months and then enter the Road of Emperor. After I come out, I will immediately leave!" Lin Ming already made deep concessions. With his current strength, coming into direct confrontation with the Blood Slaughter Steppes was not wise or rational. It had to be known that the Blood Slaughter Steppes didn't have just the Polar Skysplit Tower, but also 11 other Skysplit Towers. There were simply masters all around.

"Hehe." The black-robed man smiled, "I'm sorry, but it's impossible for me to agree to your request. You can either choose to leave now, or you can choose to fight with me!"

Chapter 611 – Skysplit Tower's Tower Master

Chapter 611 – Skysplit Tower's Tower Master

…

…

…

Either choose to leave now or chose to fight with the 10 High Lords?

Lin Ming's pupils shrank, his right hand subconsciously tracing his spatial ring.

Under the watchful eyes of everyone on the third floor, none of these people dared to do anything to Lin Ming. But on the fourth floor, if a fight broke out, the martial artists on the third floor wouldn't necessarily know.

"Don't be so nervous. When I say fight, I mean a match on the martial arena stage. Unless I'm forced far enough I won't resort to doing something so silly like breaking the established rules."

The black-robed person slowly said. The implicit meaning behind his words was that if Lin Ming insisted on staying in Skysplit Tower and insisted on entering the Road of Emperor, then he wouldn't hesitate to break the rules of Skysplit Tower and ruin its reputation to kill Lin Ming.

Martial arena battle…

Lin Ming fell into a silence. He wasn't so brazenly confident to the degree that he felt he was invincible within Polar Skysplit Tower. Not to mention a potential continuous revolving fight, he didn't even feel fully confident he could defeat this black-robed man in front of him.

The black-robed man's eyes studied Lin Ming, his starry eyes seeming as if they could completely understand him. "Lin Ming, if I'm not wrong, that energy field that you're emitting from your body is a kind of martial intent related to the Heavenly Demon force field!"

Lin Ming's mind went cold. This old fox had extraordinary eyesight, he had actually seen through everything with a glance.

The black-robed man didn't know that one could obtain the Asura force field after completing the entire King's Cage, but he had seen the Death God force field before, which was one held by all twelve-winged Heavenly Demons. Both of them had similarities so he had naturally noticed it.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment before frankly admitting it, "Yes!"

The black-robed man smirked, "Although I haven't obtained the Heavenly Demon martial intent myself, I do still have some understandings about it. I don't know how you managed to obtain this sort of force field, but what I do know is that you only gained it after you entered Skysplit Tower. This martial intent has similarities with the Heavenly Demon martial intent. The more martial intents a martial artist receives, the more powerful they become, especially if they can fuse them together… your martial intent and the Heavenly Demon martial intent are similar. I do not believe that you don't desire to obtain the Heavenly Demon martial intent and then fuse them as one!"

"But to obtain the Heavenly Demon martial intent, you have to first become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. This is the absolute taboo, thus, do not be so delusional to think you will enter the Road of Emperor!"

The black-robed man's antagonizing words relentlessly barraged Lin Ming, leaving him no wiggle room.

Now was the time to deal with Lin Ming. If Lin Ming entered the Road of Emperor, the black-robed man didn't have the slightest belief that he would be able to defeat Lin Ming.

When that time came, nobody in Polar Skysplit Tower would be Lin Ming's match and no one would be able to stop him from becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon!

"Lin Ming, you killing Heian was through a mutually agreed life or death battle. Since it is in line with Skysplit Tower's rules, I won't pursue the matter any further, but… if you do not leave Skysplit Tower today, I won't be polite anymore!"

As the black-robed man spoke, he took a single step forwards. His aura suddenly erupted into a blood-red flame around him, making it appear as if he had caught on fire.

This black-robed man was High Lord Bloodfire, and his title had come from the cultivation method that he practiced as well as the bloody flames that surrounded him.

When Lin Ming had killed Xue Man on the second floor, he had seen an image of High Lord Bloodfire in a jade slip of his. Even though Xue Man was an extremely cruel and proud person, when he mentioned High Lord Bloodfire he did so with the utmost respect. This was a respect that came from the bones, and even from fear!

Now it looked like High Lord Bloodfire was one of the stronger High Lords; no wonder Xue Man had feared him so.

The entire hall's atmosphere was grim, everyone tensed for action.

Lin Ming lightly traced his spatial ring as he revolved his true essence. If he couldn't enter the Road of Emperor or even become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, then the Heavenly Demon martial intent would be lacking two forms. How could he even think of fusing them anymore?

"If you are willing to leave Skysplit Tower then I can also compensate you."

High Lord Bloodfire took a step back. Towards a character like Lin Ming, he felt an extremely deep dread. If he couldn't kill Lin Ming and instead provoked him, then it was possible that he would have offended the Holy Demon Continent's future top powerhouse. In that case, High Lord Bloodfire wouldn't ever be able to sleep in peace.

Lin Ming frowned. Naturally, he wasn't willing to accept these conditions.

At this moment, a brilliant flame lit up in the hall. In the darkness it was especially radiant.

This was a sound transmitting talisman.

As High Lord Bloodfire received this sound transmitting talisman he was immediately startled. He began to look Lin Ming up and down with some puzzlement in his eyes.

"Lin Ming, the Chief High Lord has agreed to allow you to enter the Road of Emperor, but you will need to fulfill a condition."

"Chief High Lord?" Lin Ming was surprised. Who was the Chief High Lord? Was he Polar Skysplit Tower's Chief High Lord? Or the 12 Skysplit Towers' Chief High Lord?

High Lord Bloodfire said, "The Chief High Lord is my Polar Skysplit Tower's Tower Master. He is also one of the 12 High Lords. Several hours ago he was already returning to Polar Skysplit Tower. He should arrive in another incense stick of time or so."

So that's how it was. Lin Ming had already noticed that there were only 10 High Lords here. Counting the already deceased High Lord Heian, there was still another High Lord missing. So, the one that wasn't here was actually Skysplit Tower's Tower Master.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming turned vigilant. If High Lord Bloodfire was already so strong, then what degree of strength would the Polar Skysplit Tower's Tower Master be at?

In front of such a person...

Lin Ming's mind chilled. He asked, "What condition does he want me to agree to?"

"I'm not sure. You'll need to speak face-to-face with the Chief High Lord." High Lord Bloodfire said, expressionless.

Lin Ming's eyebrows twisted together tightly. High Lord Bloodfire only sat in his seat, not speaking a single word.

A deep silence fell over the hall.

In another half incense stick of time, a sound transmitting talisman lit up the hall again.

High Lord Bloodfire rose from his seat and said, "Come with me. Sir Chief High Lord wishes to see you now."

Chief High Lord...

Lin Ming remained silent. An uneasy feeling filled his heart. This nervousness, this anxiety, it all stemmed from his lack of strength.

Before now, when he talked to Da Gu about Skysplit Tower and the Eternal Demon Abyss, Da Gu hadn't known that Polar Skypslit Tower had a Tower Master.

Da Gu had once said that Feng Shen was able to compare to a weaker High Lord. These words had made Lin Ming subconsciously think that the strength of the 12 High Lords wasn't out of his reach.

When he rushed out of the King's Cage and also broke through to the Eight Inner Hidden Gates in the meantime, Lin Ming had great confidence in his own strength. This was the only reason he had willingly agreed to a revolving battle with Yan Chi, Kai Yang, and Maha, even following that with killing High Lord Heian.

Within Polar Skysplit Tower, strength was everything. When Lin Ming had killed High Lord Heian, that had created a great deterrent for anyone plotting against him. In this case, Lin Ming believed that although he couldn't defeat some of the High Lords, he would still be able to escape, freely coming and going.

However, he never imagined that the disparity in strength between Skysplit Tower's 12 High Lords was so great. The weak were around Feng Shen, and the strong were strong to a ridiculous degree.

High Lord Heian's cultivation was equal to the human middle Revolving Core realm, and his strength approached the start of Life Destruction. But, the Chief High Lord of the 12 High Lords probably had a cultivation approaching Life Destruction, and his strength was likely far above a first stage Life Destruction master.

In the face of such a person, it was impossible for Lin Ming to be at ease.

"What? You don't want to enter the Road of Emperor?" High Lord Bloodfire's lips curved up in an interested smirk, "Sir Chief High Lord was originally cultivating at the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple but, for you, he especially hurried back to Polar Skysplit Tower, and yet you don't dare to see him?"

High Lord Bloodfire was trying to stir up Lin Ming.

Towards these childish tactics of trying to rankle him, Lin Ming didn't care. It was just that the current situation was…

Lin Ming turned his head to see that the surrounding nine other High Lords had also risen from their seats. Although they seemed to just be casually standing there, if Lin Ming really tried to run out now, then these nine High Lords would be able to instantly cut off Lin Ming!

With the elusive and fleeting Concept of Space, Lin Ming had some confidence that he would be able to escape this hall. But the problem was there was still an unfathomably powerful Tower Master somewhere!

Lin Ming took a deep breath, all sorts of possible scenarios racing through his mind.

'He promises that I can enter the Road of Emperor as long as I agree to a condition. What sort of condition is that?' Lin Ming wasn't naïve enough to think that Polar Skysplit Tower's

Tower Master recognized his abilities and wanted him to enter the Road of Emperor. Then, this condition was very intriguing. Could it be to sign a soul contract?

If he didn't agree, what would happen then?

The best case was that Lin Ming would be forced to leave Skysplit Tower and the worst case was that he would immediately be attacked.

In this situation, Lin Ming felt that his chances of escaping through four floors was very slim.

Crap!

Lin Ming couldn't help but admit that he had underestimated the strength of the 12 High Lords.

The reason he had made such an erroneous judgment was because of his conversation with Da Gu as well as the fact that the Eightfall War Emperor became a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon

Without a doubt, the Eightfall War Emperor of the past was weaker than Lin Ming and his talent was also inferior. By all reasoning, if the Eightfall War Emperor could become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon then it shouldn't be too difficult for Lin Ming to. But, the sudden developments had gone beyond his imagination.

Just how had the Eightfall War Emperor become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon?

Lin Ming couldn't imagine how. In this case, with resistance at every step, the plotting of the High Lords once becoming an eight-winged Heavenly Demon, and even the Tower Master who was above the High Lords, just who could grow to a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon in this situation?

"Lin Ming, what's going on? You don't want to go?" High Lord Bloodfire said in a joking manner, "Do you want the Tower Master to come looking for you instead?"

Lin Min stroked his spatial ring, connecting his sense to the Purple Comet Spear inside. He wasn't in the habit of putting his fate in the hands of others.

Today, he wouldn't enter the Road of Emperor, nor would he become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon.

Then he could only wait until the day he reached the Revolving Core realm and then return to the Blood Slaughter Steppes. He didn't believe that at that time anyone could still stop him!

"Hehe, little boy, you're quite the wary one eh?" Another High Lord said. The Giant Demon who spoke was High Lord Shengong. He had been Xing Tian's boss.

Lin Ming looked at High Lord Shengong, a cold light flashing in his eyes.

But at this moment, a hoarse voice suddenly sounded out in Lin Ming's mind, "Go with him. Go and see that Skysplit Tower Tower Master."

"Mm?"

Lin Ming was shocked. Demonshine!

"The damage to your soul has recovered?"

Lin Ming asked, pleasantly surprised. Demonshine had been deeply sleeping within his spiritual sea. The two of them didn't need to use a true essence sound transmission and could directly communicate with each other.

In the blink of an eye, Lin Ming had been in the Holy Demon Continent for nearly two years now. Demonshine had been sleeping this entire time, so he had nearly forgotten about him.

“I’ve recovered, hehehe…” Demonshine malevolently chuckled, a wicked flavor in his voice. “Now that I mention it, this Skysplit Tower’s rich infernal energy is really suitable for healing this Saint’s wounds. There’s also that Heavenly Demon Tattoo, now that’s the good stuff. It was really beneficial to this Saint’s soul. Boy, you absolutely have to become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. Escaping now doesn’t suit the awesome style of this Saint!”

Chapter 612 – The Only Way Out Of This Desperate Situation

Chapter 612 – The Only Way Out Of This Desperate Situation

…

…

…

“The Heavenly Demon Tattoo is helpful to you?” Lin Ming asked, puzzled.

“Hehehe, this Saint is originally a demonic cultivator and the Heavenly Demon Tattoo can condense infernal energy. The more demon wings there are the more infernal energy there is and the better the effects are. Of course it’s a great help to this Saint. This Saint already woke up a year ago, but because the infernal energy here is so rich, this Saint chose to return to a sleeping state in order to slowly recover my strength. This Saint also has a general understanding of what has happened for the past year. A twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo is absolutely something that you cannot miss out on. This Saint is depending on it to help recover strength! If you run now, then the Heavenly Demon Tattoo will slowly dissipate and all that effort for the last year or two will be completely wasted!”

The two of them were directly communicating using their souls. Although there was a very complex conversation happening between them, all of this happened in just a brief moment. Lin Ming eagerly asked, “What level has your soul force been restored to?”

Demonshine smugly smiled and said, “This Saint’s soul force has been restored to about the standard I was at when I was sucked into the space of the Magic Cube.”

“The same standard as when you were sucked into the Magic Cube’s space?” Lin Ming was startled. This old dog was probably also some character when he still traveled the Realm of the Gods. Although Lin Ming thought of him as just a dog, since Demonshine was able to follow the Demon Emperor, he probably had some skill.

According to the old dog’s own boasting, he used to be a three-headed Demonic Divine Hound with the title of Hallowed Lord Demonshine, even successfully building up an invincible diamond divine body to the Large Success stage. But afterwards, his divine body was destroyed and his soul was sucked into the Divine Crystal Magic Cube. Of his trinity of consciousness, now there was only a single one left over. Three heads had then become one.

Originally Demonshine had been nothing but an incomplete soul, and after being sealed within the Magic Cube for countless years and constantly worn down over time, the weakness of his soul force could be imagined.

But now Demonshine had said that his soul force was restored to the point just before the Magic Cube had destroyed him. Although his soul was still incomplete, it should still be quite terrifying.

“Can you handle Polaris Tower’s Tower Master?” Lin Ming fervently asked. If this was so, then this could really be called seeing a ray of hope after being pushed to a dead end.

Demonshine shook his head, “Nope, not possible.”

“Then you want me to walk to my own death?” Lin Ming was left speechless. This damn old dog kept giving him the impression that he was a lazy boaster that couldn’t be counted on when it mattered. “In the past weren’t you called a Hollowed Lord within the Realm of the Gods? And yet you can’t even deal with some small fry from the mortal world?”

“Humph! This Saint only has an incomplete soul left over without even a mortal body. Where am I supposed to have attacking power from? When this Saint was at his most glorious time, with just a little sneeze from this Saint, the spittle would be able to fill that so-called Tower Master chock full of holes!”

Hearing the old dog's bluster, Lin Ming almost collapsed on the spot. This fellow still had the mood to speak like this. "Then what should we do now?"

"Hehehe… this Saint may not have a body and may not have any attack power, but I still have a soul. I can still help you out with my soul, for instance… when you sign the soul contract…"

As the old dog spoke to here he evilly giggled twice and said, "After this Saint's soul force was mostly restored, my soul perception is now much more sensitive than yours. You may not know, but of the 10 High Lords present, two of them have slave seals planted in their bodies. They are under the control of someone else!"

"What?" Lin Ming was immensely shocked.

A slave seal and soul contract were two completely different things.

A soul contract was when both parties would write up their requirements on a special array parchment. Afterwards, both parties would willingly leave behind a drop of blood essence and make an oath on their souls.

This sort of contract normally wouldn't have requirements that were too excessive. If they were, then no one would sign it. After a martial artist signed this soul contract they could still act according to their own will and move freely about.

Not just that, but a soul contract usually had a time limit placed on it. For instance, Yan Chi and Maha both signed soul contracts for 50 years. After the 50 year deadline passed, the contract would automatically be terminated.

But a slave seal was different!

A slave seal was a special technique of the demonic path. It was a method used by stronger martial artists that had deep cultivations in order to control weaker martial artists. Once a slave seal was planted in their bodies, it would stay there until their master decided to take it back or the master died. Otherwise, the martial artist would be enslaved by this slave seal until the time of their death.

Not only did the enslaved martial artist have no independence but they didn't even freedom of thought. Normally, they wouldn't act any different from a normal person, but once the slave seal was activated, the enslaved person would have to completely obey their master's orders. Even if their master ordered them to die, they would do so with unblinking eyes!

"Who was enslaved?" Lin Ming's heart chilled. Of the 12 High Lords of Skysplit Tower, two of them actually had a slave seal planted within them!

Not just that, but it seemed that the other High Lords didn't even know that their companions had been bound with a slave seal.

Who had the ability to quietly plant a slave seal within a High Lord? Could it Polar Skysplit Tower's Tower Master?

What did he want to do?

To Lin Ming's amazement and dismay, he discovered that the inner workings of Skysplit Tower were much more complex than he had imagined!

"The ones that are enslaved, one of them is High Lord Bloodfire, and the other is that old Imp that was floating in the air."

High Lord Bloodfire had a slave seal planted in him?

Lin Ming's mind went cold. High Lord Bloodfire was the strongest powerhouse of these 10 High Lords.

As for the old Imp, he was actually middle-aged. It was just that Imp martial artists always had wrinkled faces so they appeared older than they were. This Imp wore a domed hat and he was in a sitting position as he floated in the air, no more than five feet tall.

This old Imp looked unsightly, but Lin Ming could actually feel an immeasurably deep strength coming from his body, and his soul force was like a deep ocean, vast and mysterious.

This Imp was also a top master. Even if he was weaker than High Lord Bloodfire, it wouldn't be by much!

In other words, the strongest of the 10 High Lords had slave seals planted within them!

As for the other High Lords, the reason that they weren't controlled was most likely because of the limited slave seals one could use.

If this was really done by Polar Skysplit Tower's Tower Master, then for the past many years, in order to solidify his own status and obtain the maximum amount of benefits, he had planted slave seals in these High Lords. Perhaps he had done so when these High Lords were still challengers.

The Tower Master naturally didn't dare to move against someone like Feng Shen with such a formidable background, but for those like Yan Chi and Maha, they might have already been controlled!

In the future, he could use these people to explore the Eternal Demon Abyss. Everything that they found from there would all belong to the Tower Master!

He could both consolidate his authority as well as obtain massive benefits. This was truly killing two birds with one stone!

"Lin Ming, if I'm guessing right, then this Tower Master wants to see you in order to control you. He obviously sees the value in your potential, and taking you for himself would be a great boon to his own power. As for you, once you're controlled then you can forget about ever getting out. The only way would be if your cultivation is higher than his by several realms. But once he finds out that your cultivation is approaching his, he'll just command you to have your cultivation never exceed his own. Your strength will stagnate from then on, all the way until he dies and you are freed. And even then, before he dies of old age, he might try to hide his secret by killing you and you wouldn’t even be able to resist!”

Demonshine’s words made Lin Ming’s scalp tingle with dread. This sort of ending was absolutely more horrible than death.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming’s heart surged with a rich killing intent. If all of these conjectures were right, then he would have to kill this Tower Master in order to rid himself of all potential future threats!

“Demonshine, can you eliminate the slave seal without being discovered by the Tower Master?”

“Hohoho! Who do you think this Saint is!” Demonshine proudly humphed. “This Saint is the ancestor of the demonic path! All of these demonic methods and cultivation techniques of the Holy Demon Continent are just leftover playthings from when the Demon Emperor was still here. All of these legacies keep growing worse with every generation. It’s true that that Saint doesn’t have any attack power right now, but I have more than enough ability to play around with some soul methods. How could I possibly be found out by a little junior? In the past when this Saint was still all-powerful and shaking the foundations of the Realm of the Gods, that junior's grandfather from a hundred generations back hadn’t even been born yet!”

Black lines formed on Lin Ming’s forehead. He was speechless. No matter how he played it, this old dog just didn’t seem too reliable. But at this point, Lin Ming could only believe him. In this desperate situation, he had to keep trying no matter what!

“Boy, what’s with that look? With this Saint here, I guarantee you that I can lead that Tower Master to run circles. At that time, you can secretly rebel. Just act as if you’ve fallen for his trap and play dumb and no one will suspect you.

“Slowly, that silly fellow will relax his guard around you and even allow you to enter the Road of Emperor! As long as you can wait it out for a year or so, make some great successes in the Road of Emperor and have your cultivation break through to the Revolving Core realm, then you can easily kill that fellow and become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon! At that point, the Death God martial intent will be yours!

“As long as you have a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo then the mystical force of the Blood Slaughter Steppes will not kill you and you can return to Skysplit Tower whenever you want! Wait until the time that your cultivation is high enough, re-enter the Road of Emperor, reach the end in a single go and finally obtain the Prime Emperor martial intent!

“Then, with the complete three major martial intents of Asura, Death God, and Prime Emperor, if you can fuse them, it will become your greatest killing move! Holy shit! How great would that be! Even this Saint would be jealous of you then!”

Demonshine’s depiction had turned the impossible into the possible. At present, Lin Ming was too weak. In a situation where he was surrounded by enemies on all sides, this was the only way to simultaneously obtain all three different martial intents!

Originally, even Lin Ming had believed that it was nearly impossible to obtain the three different forms of martial intents. Now, he could finally see a path opening before him. “Demonshine, if this plan works out, then I swear to you that I will help you reform your mortal body in the future!”

“Hehe, boy, I’m glad to see you still have a conscience. To be honest, this Saint also sees that you have a bit of potential in your future. If I train you well enough then you might be able to reach the lowest standards that this Saint was at back in the day, so of course, I will do my best to raise you. Certainly, in the future, if you really have the ability to help me recover to how I was when my soul was sealed, then that will be enough.”

Lin Ming laughed, no longer caring about Demonshine’s boasts. Different situations called for different measures. Perhaps this might actually be a great lucky chance for him instead!

....

"Lin Ming, are you going to go or not? Where did all your bluster just now go to? The Tower Master came back to see you, and yet you don't dare to see him?" High Lord Bloodfire's taunting voice sounded out in Lin Ming's ear, interrupting the soul exchange that he was having with Demon Shine. This entire exchange just now had only lasted a mere 10 breaths of time.

Lin Ming deeply looked at High Lord Bloodfire, his eyes now containing a trace of pity and compassion. This High Lord Bloodfire seemed like a normal person, but in truth he was nothing more than a puppet. As long as he was in the presence of the Tower Master, he would be absolutely servile.

Towards this type of person, Lin Ming naturally wouldn't argue back, or even hold grudges.

"Let's go, lead the way!"

"Mm?" High Lord Bloodfire looked at Lin Ming with surprise, a tiny, undetectable smile appearing on his lips. This boy was truly stupid to the extreme. But even so, being able to become a servant of Sir Chief High Lord was also a form of honor.

Chapter 613 – Demonshine, Go!

Chapter 613 – Demonshine, Go!

…

…

…

Travelling along the dark corridor, all the way into the deepest depths of the fourth floor, High Lord Bloodfire finally arrived in front of a shadowy temple. As he opened the door, there was only a gentle creaking sound as it swung open.

The darkness within that temple hall was like the endless maw of a ravenous beast.

“If you please, High Lord Evil God.” High Lord Bloodfire said with a twisted smile.

Behind him, several other High Lords followed, faintly cutting off Lin Ming’s escape paths.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment before Demonshine’s voice sounded out in his mind, “Go in, they don’t matter.”

As Lin Ming stepped inside, his field of vision completely darkened.

Creak…

The door leading in slammed shut. Lin Ming felt as if he had fallen into a completely separate dimension. There was no sound, no light, nothing at all.

“Don’t worry. Everything you’re seeing is an illusion, including this great hall and even the door into here. In fact, when you entered through the door you actually passed into an illusory magic array arranged by that old fellow. Look, that old fellow is standing right in front of you at this moment. He wants to take advantage of the moment when you're startled and plant a slave seal in you!”

“Illusory magic array?”

Lin Ming’s mind stirred. He was very familiar with array formations and he also had the Samsara martial intent to defend his mind. It wasn’t impossible for him to destroy this array and break out of here.

“Calm down, don’t break this array otherwise that old fellow will think that the illusory magic array isn’t enough to deal with you. It will be troublesome if he tries to hold you down himself. Just fidget a little like you’re struggling here, and then we’ll put together a good play for him.”

“Mm...”

Lin Ming nodded, immediately calming down. But at this moment, there was a screaming noise as a trident-holding ten-winged Heavenly Demon appeared out of thin air and rushed towards him!

Lin Ming eye’s filled with a hint of believable panic. He thrust out his spear, Chasing Thunder!

The power of thunder was particularly potent in dealing with ghosts and illusions. With a scratching sound, the ten-winged Heavenly Demon turned into a wisp of black smoke that quickly faded away.

“In the chaos of fear and confusion you can still defend your mind. Indeed worthy of being a Titled Asura.” Outside of this illusory magic array, around 100 feet away from Lin Ming, a black-cloaked man was quietly muttering to himself. His eyes were as deep as the stars in the night sky, and from his appearance, he wasn’t from any specific race. Instead, he seemed like a hybrid of a Giant Demon and Goliath.

Of the Bloods Slaughter Steppes' 12 Skysplit Towers, he was the Tower Master of Polaris Tower – High Lord Limitless Demon.

"Unfortunately, your cultivation is too low to break through this 10,000 Devouring Ghost Array Formation. When these 10,000 ghosts overcome your mind, you are mine!"

Within the illusory magic array, more and more ghostly ten-winged Heavenly Demons were appearing at an increasingly fast apace. Not only were there ten-winged Heavenly Demons but there were even some massive twelve-winged Heavenly Demons mixed in. It was becoming difficult for Lin Ming to deal with.

Puff!

With a light sound, Lin Ming finally wasn't able to avoid the attack of a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. A wisp of soul force pierced into Lin Ming's spiritual sea like a needle!

Lin Ming grimaced. He revolved the Samsara martial intent and twisted this wisp of soul force into pieces. But then, the other Heavenly Demon ghosts followed this up with a barrage of attacks.

"Hahaha! So what if you're the number one talent of the last 10,000 years, you'll still become my faithful dog! I'm really looking forward to your growth. During the trip to the Eternal Demon Abyss, you will be my best tool!

"Soul slave seal, go!" The middle-aged man squeezed his fingers and formed a pitch black seal. With a flick, it shot straight towards Lin Ming!

This seal was mixed into the attacks of a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon; it was impossible for Lin Ming to find.

"Mm? You've broken my soul seal? Good! Very good! I like you more and more! Such a fierce tiger is truly worth taming."

“Soul slave seal, three as one, go!” The middle-aged man flicked his fingers and three black seals flew towards Lin Ming. Taking advantage of a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon’s attacks, they rushed into Lin Ming’s body!

The three seals mixed together as one. During this, Lin Ming intentionally weakened the defense of his Samsara martial intent.

Ka ka ka!

Two of the three black slave seals were twisted apart, leaving only one that soared towards Lin Ming’s spiritual sea.

“Demonshine, it’s your turn!”

“Hehe, alright.”

These past years, a bond of trust had formed between Lin Ming and Demonshine. The first reason for this was because their common interests aligned, and the second reason was because of the frightening deterrence of the main soul within the Magic Cube. Because of this, Demonshine had long since discarded any thoughts of swallowing Lin Ming’s spiritual sea.

As the seal flew into the skies above Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, Demonshine turned into a three-headed demonic divine hound that rushed out from the spiritual sea. Only in this soul world was Demonshine able to maintain his most mighty and valiant appearance.

Demonshine roared and separated a mass of pure soul energy from his own body. This soul energy rapidly turned in a ball of light in the air.

Puff!

The black slave seal sank into this ball of light, instantly turning it pitch black!

“This Saint has separated a piece of soul energy to create a miniature replica of your spiritual sea. Once this slave seal is planted into this replica spiritual sea, it won’t be able to affect you in any way. As long as you don't try to rashly disturb this slave seal, that old fellow will never know what happened. As for those orders that he sends to you through this slave seal, I will reiterate them to you and you can act along."

"Understood."

To use a portion of his soul force to create a fake spiritual sea in order to deceive the Tower Master, Lin Ming couldn't help but admire Demonshine's methods. Although this old dog boasted a bit too much of his past exploits, when he was in the Realm of the Gods he was still someone that had qualified to participate in the encirclement of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. Although his current soul body was injured, dealing with someone from the mortal world whose strength was in the earliest stage of Life Destruction was too easy for him.

The illusory magic array slowly faded. Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a bit of a confused color.

"Haha, congratulations to Sir Chief High Lord for obtaining another general." High Lord Bloodfire said from outside the illusory magic array.

"Mm. Bloodfire, you've done well this time. Three years later, the Eternal Demon Abyss should reopen again. When that time comes, I will allow you and Lin Ming to accompany me to the 1000 mile perimeter of the Eternal Demon Abyss."

"Yes, Chief High Lord. Is it time to allow Lin Ming to enter the Road of Emperor now?" Bloodfire thoughtfully asked.

Lin Ming's mind stirred at these words. Road of Emperor!

Although he was faking being controlled, Lin Ming still didn't like this situation. He simply didn't like being forced to follow the whims and mercy of others.

Right now, what he was thinking of was to enter the Road of Emperor as soon as possible and obtain the highest level of strength that he could. He could then end these matters within the Blood Slaughter Steppes and return to Sky Spill Continent.

The situation of the Sky Spill Continent caused Lin Ming to worry endlessly.

In a flash, almost two years had passed. How were Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan doing? Was Divine Phoenix Island able to persist until now?

When Lin Ming first left the Sky Spill Continent, his cultivation had only been at the early Xiantian realm and his strength was comparable to a normal peak early Revolving Core powerhouse. As for killing Lei Jingtian, a large reason for that was because of the suppression of the Demon God Imperial Palace's laws – it couldn't really be considered his true ability.

Now, Lin Ming's cultivation had reached the extreme Xiantian and he had also made breakthroughs in other areas. His strength was on the verge of being at the Life Destruction realm. As long as he could break through to Revolving Core, Lin Ming had confidence he could defeat a first stage Life Destruction powerhouse, or even kill them.

Only by reaching Revolving Core could Lin Ming return to the Sky Spill Continent. Otherwise, it would be meaningless to return.

And the Road of Emperor was the fastest shortcut to making a breakthrough in his strength. Although Lin Ming wasn't sure if he could reach the Revolving Core realm within, his strength would surely be increased by a great deal. Even if he couldn't break through to Revolving Core, there was the high chance he would finally become strong enough to fight with a first stage Life Destruction master.

"Road of Emperor…"

Polar Skysplit Tower's Tower Master hesitated for a moment. He glanced at Lin Ming and said, "Do you want to enter the Road of Emperor?"

Lin Ming expressionlessly replied, “I naturally desire to enter the Road of Emperor, but I shall follow the commands of Chief High Lord.”

The Tower Master shook his head and said, “Wait another two or three years for the Road of Emperor. It’s still too early as of now.”

Two or three years!

Lin Ming was dismayed. In two or three years, he estimated that he would be able to quickly break through to Revolving Core during this period. But, the Tower Master would likely closer monitor his cultivation; he wouldn’t allow him to make a breakthrough so easily. If he couldn’t enter the Road of Emperor then there was also no meaning in staying at Skysplit Tower!

“This old fox is too damn cautious!” Within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, Demonshine was vulgarly cussing.

“Did he discover something unusual?”

“Humph, if the fake spiritual sea that this Saint created could be so easily unraveled by this sort of junior, then this Saint might as well die right now! What he fears is the speed of your growth. He is afraid that if you grow too fast and your strength surpasses him too far, then at that time he won’t be able to control you.”

Lin Min took a deep breath. Whilst being in Polar Skysplit Tower for the last one or two years, it was truly filled with layer upon layer of obstructions!

He really couldn’t imagine how the Eightfall War Emperor had once become a twelve-winged Heavenly demon!

Demonshine seemed to know what Lin Ming was thinking and said, “According to this Saint’s speculation, when the Eightfall War Emperor was here, there still wasn’t a unified management organized, nor was there anyone that tried to stop the birth of a twelve-winged

Heavenly Demon. Or else, let alone the Eightfall War Emperor becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, he would be lucky if he was able to leave Skysplit Tower alive."

These past years, the Blood Slaughter Steppes had been doing everything in their power to avoid the birth of a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. For Lin Ming, a single person, to resist the 12 Skysplit Towers, the hurdles he faced could be imagined.

"Lin Ming, starting from today, go practice on the third floor. Remember, without my order you cannot break through to the Revolving Core realm!" High Lord Limitless Demon icily issued an order before turning to leave.

Lin Ming responded with silence, frowning as he left. Entering the Road of Emperor was far more difficult than he had imagined.

"Lin Ming, don't be so restless. Although you can't enter the Road of Emperor now, at least you can still stay in Polar Skysplit Tower and practice. As long as your strength slowly rises then all problems will be easily solved. As for this Polaris Tower Tower Master, it's impossible for him to always be checking up on your cultivation.

"If I'm right, then he can't stay in Polar Skysplit Tower for too long. He will likely need to go to the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple that was mentioned and be supervised there. Otherwise, even this Tower Master might have the chance of becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. This is something that the supreme ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes will absolutely not allow."

As soon as Demonshine spoke, Lin Ming's mind moved. Indeed, this Polaris Tower Tower Master was already a peak ten-winged Heavenly Demon. If he wanted to, it wouldn't be too difficult for him to become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. This sort of event would naturally not be allowed to happen.

The rules of the Blood Slaughter Steppes were truly strict. There were even layers of rules aimed at limiting the Tower Masters.

“Demonshine, even if Polaris Tower’s Tower Master doesn’t notice my cultivation, I can’t wait that long. If I follow this path to break through to Revolving Core then it might take another one or two years. That is simply far too late. I made a promise that I would return in 10 years, but now I can’t imagine what the situation in the South Horizon Region would be like in 10 years. I want to return to the South Horizon Region within three years. Now, for time… there is only a year left!”

Chapter 614 – The Eternal Demon Abyss Erupts

Chapter 614 – The Eternal Demon Abyss Erupts

…

…

…

"Sir Evil God, these Blood Demon Crystals are for you." An impeccably beautiful Fey girl was kneeling in front of Lin Ming, offering up a tray with her hands. A jade box rested on the tray, and within the jade box was the small amount of top-grade Blood Demon Crystals that a High Lord would receive every two months.

Two months had passed in the blink of an eye since Lin Ming became a High Lord.

After he faked having the slave seal planted in his body, his days at Skysplit Tower had become peaceful; there were no more High Lords plotting against him again. Lin Ming had become a true and recognized High Lord of Skysplit Tower. Now, wherever he moved in the fourth floor, every servant would have to bow or kneel to him as he passed.

"I understand. You may leave now," Lin Ming calmly said, leaving behind the jade box.

"Yes." The young Fey girl bowed as she excused herself. Within Skysplit Tower, every High Lord had ten such exceedingly beautiful, top quality Fey girls under their command, rigorously serving them. If the High Lords wanted, they could freely use these girls in any manner they wished.

"Your cultivation has consolidated a great deal these last two months, hehe." Demonshine jauntily laughed from within Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

“Indeed. Although I can’t enter the Road of Emperor, it’s quite good to be able to enjoy the other resources of Skysplit Tower’s fourth floor.”

Lin Ming had used these past two months to completely solidify his cultivation. Within the King’s Cage, he had broken through his limits multiple times, but his cultivation wasn’t steady due to this, and he needed stability in order to slowly consolidate it.

Lin Ming declared, “At most I’ll wait for another half year. If there isn’t a chance for me, then I will look for my own chance to enter the Road of Emperor!”

“Lin Ming, if you enter the Road of Emperor then High Lord Limitless Demon will know that something happened to the slave seal in your spiritual sea.”

“It doesn’t matter whether he knows or not,” Lin Ming casually said. “I’ve already investigated the matter clearly the last two years. The Road of Emperor and King’s Cage are similar in that they are both self-contained worlds. As long as I can enter the Road of Emperor, it doesn’t matter what High Lord Limitless Demon discovers. If he wants to deal with me then his only choice is to wait for me to come out. But at that time I may possibly be his match!”

“You’re right, but at that time, High Lord Limitless Demon might look for someone to help deal with you. Or he might set up a killing array to wait for you outside. You shouldn’t take such a drastic approach until you’re forced to.”

As Demonshine finished speaking, the ground suddenly and violently shook. Within Lin Ming’s practice area, the stone bed, furniture, everything began to tremble. Lin Ming was dumbfounded, just what was going on!?!?

Skysplit Tower was a relic left behind by some mysterious force from the ancient times. It contained its own array formations and was extremely firm. When Lin Ming killed High Lord Heian, the profound gold arena stage had been destroyed, but there wasn’t even the tiniest bit of damage to the actual third floor infrastructure. Thus, one can see just how solid and stable Skysplit Tower really was.

Such a sturdy Skysplit Tower could actually shake?

The shaking continued, and it was even becoming more and more violent. Lin Ming was amazed. Just what was going on?

Lin Ming left the practice area and discovered that the corridors, halls, roads, distant temples and buildings—everything was shaking. The entire Skysplit Tower was swaying!

Just what was this?

It wasn't just Lin Ming but also Skysplit Tower's servants who were panicking. Skysplit Tower seemed ready to collapse at any moment due to these vibrations. It was at a height of tens of thousands of feet!

Lin Ming wasn't sure what was happening when he just happened to see High Lord Bloodfire pass by. "Brother Bloodfire, what is going on?"

High Lord Bloodfire actually had a joyous expression plastered on his face at this time. "Brother Lin, I never thought that our lucky chance would arrive so soon. The shaking of Skysplit Tower should be because… the Eternal Demon Abyss has erupted!"

"The Eternal Demon Abyss erupted?"

Lin Ming paused. In a jade slip that had been left behind after High Lord Heian's death, it had recorded such eruptions of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Every several decades or even centuries, the Eternal Demon Abyss would have a large-scale eruption just like a volcano.

Then, a massive amount of infernal energy would gush out. Simultaneously, some Demon God Bones would be thrust out of the Eternal Demon Abyss with this massive amount of infernal energy.

For millennia upon millennia, the reason that people could find Demon God Bones at the very outer edges of the Eternal Demon Abyss was all thanks to these natural eruptions.

After every eruption, those martial artists that braved the Eternal Demon Abyss would have great harvests, but correspondingly, would suffer higher risks as well. After the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted, the violent surges of energy would overflow and form various danger hotspots and death zones, causing people to die when they wandered into these places.

Lin Ming also remembered that in that jade slip, it stated that in the last millennium, 170 High Lords had fallen victim to the Eternal Demon Abyss. Of these High Lords, half of them perished because they explored the Eternal Demon Abyss right after these eruptions.

“Brother Lin, the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss can last for several months or even a year. During this time period, anyone who enters will die. But after the eruption ends, the Eternal Demon Abyss will enter a stable period. When that happens, we can enter the Eternal Demon Abyss together and seek lucky chances for Sir Chief High Lord as well as ourselves. For these following days, you should prepare for this!” High Lord Bloodfire excitedly said.

“Seek lucky chances for the Chief High Lord?” Lin Ming looked at High Lord Bloodfire with pity in his eyes. To risk his own life to look for lucky chances for others, and also to do it with such joy in his eyes, in a manner that he couldn’t wait to go, was truly the horrifying nature of the slave seal. With the slave seal planted within you, it would be better to die!

At this moment, two sound transmitting talismans appeared in front of High Lord Bloodflame as well as Lin Ming. The contents of the messages were similar; it was about the matter of the Eternal Demon Abyss eruption, as well as telling the two to prepare for this, increasing their strength as much as possible in order to enter the Eternal Demon Abyss.

But at the end of this sound transmission, there was some news that overjoyed Lin Ming. This was because Lin Ming was allowed to enter the Road of Emperor to increase his strength, so that he could better prepare for this journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss.

“Road of Emperor!”

Lin Ming took a deep breath.

His wait was finally over!

Life was full of twists and turns. Because of the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss, he finally had the chance to gain entry to the Road of Emperor!

As long as he could enter the Road of Emperor, even if he couldn't break through to the Revolving Core realm, Lin Ming believed he wouldn't need to fear High Lord Limitless Demon anymore!

"Haha, Brother Lin, congratulations! As long as you are loyal to Sir Chief High Lord, he will not treat you unjustly. Do you want to prepare a bit or would you like me to bring you there now?" High Lord Bloodfire had also received similar news.

"No need, let's go now," Lin Ming calmly said as he tamped down the rising elation in his heart. He had food and drinking water in his spatial ring so he didn't need to make special preparations.

"Good! Let's go then!"

High Lord Bloodfire led the way. The Road of Emperor was located in the center of the third floor. After journeying down several roads and corridors, they finally came to a temple. This temple was built entirely out of obsidian, and when stepping into it, it seemed as if it was a completely separate dimension.

Within this temple, there were all sorts of ferocious and savage looking demon statues. Without exception, all of these statues were twelve-winged Heavenly Demons.

And a massive blood red altar was surrounded by these statues. This altar constantly emanated a rich infernal energy, as if it were completely carved from Blood Demon Crystals.

"The entrance to the Road of Emperor is above that altar. Step onto the altar and sprinkle your blood onto it, after which you will be able to enter the Road of Emperor. Brother Lin, I wish you good luck."

Chapter 615 – Entering the Road of Emperor

Chapter 615 – Entering the Road of Emperor

…

…

…

Lin Ming stepped onto the crimson altar. As he felt the thick bloody infernal energy emanating from the altar, he was secretly surprised.

This altar was carved from a massive chunk of pure Blood Demon Crystal. Not just that, but it was high-grade Blood Demon Crystal. Within a Blood Demon Crystal mine, they were usually found in small blocks and chunks; it was particularly rare to find such a massive hunk of Blood Demon Crystal like this one.

Lin Ming stood at the center of the altar and cut his own palm. He believed that High Lord Bloodfire wouldn't have set any traps here for him. After all, High Lord Bloodfire still believed that he had a slave seal planted within him and was completely subservient to the Tower Master's orders.

Blood flowed onto the altar and was instantly absorbed into the deep crimson stone. After several breaths of time, beneath Lin Ming's feet, a massive deep red totem lit up. This was also in the pattern of a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon.

In the next moment, a radiant red light shot up into the sky, directly swallowing Lin Ming within.

Infernal energy, an evil, dangerous, and brutal energy directly smashed into Lin Ming's spiritual sea, followed by a massive pressure on his soul. If it wasn't for the fact that he had passed the King's Cage and had already become accustomed to the Heavenly Demon force field, then this pressure would have caused him to nearly faint. In fact, many martial artists – including Yan Chi and Maha – would immediately faint upon first entering the Road of Emperor, only waking up after a long time.

The Heavenly Demon martial intent was released, and Lin Ming used the Asura force field to resist the pressure of the Road of Emperor. In the next instant, he had arrived in another space.

The place Lin Ming appeared at was still a deep red altar. This altar was the exact same as the one at the entrance to the Road of Emperor. As he looked beneath, he saw that under the altar was impressively the dark abyss. A rich infernal energy wafted up from this abyss. Lin Ming had a deepening suspicion that this abyss under the altar was the source of infernal energy. If he fell all the way down, then he would fall into the Eternal Demon Abyss!

Above this abyss was a ten foot wide wooden plank road. This road wasn't supported by anything. Instead, it was firmly suspended in midair. Along this wooden plank path, every 100 feet or so, there would be a group of lights. Underneath these lights were statues carved from obsidian. These statues didn't have any support either – they were also held up and suspended in the air through some mystical power.

As Lin Ming looked at these quietly burning ghostly blue flames, he could feel a very rich soul force coming from them. It was like these weren't flames but rather the blaze coming from a burning soul.

What a strange place!

Lin Ming was startled. He tried to fly, but as he expected, flying was restricted in this area. But that was probably for the best. If he really tried to fly and fell down into this abyss then he would most likely die.

The Road of Emperor was the same as the King's Cage: both were mere practice areas. But since ancient times, for those martial artists whose luck was poor, or those who misjudged their own strength, there would always be people that perished in here.

Without a doubt, this ten foot wide plank road was the Road of Emperor. Lin Ming didn't hastily step onto the Road of Emperor. Instead, he sat down in meditation, adjusting his mental and physical state to their peak condition, and then stepped onto the plank road.

As soon as he entered the Road of Emperor, Lin Ming immediately felt a pressure cover him. This pressure was completely different from that of the Heavenly Demon force field's pressure. This pressure came from soul and will, and Lin Ming was no stranger to this pressure either.

This pressure was the Emperor Will.

When Lin Ming fought with Yan Chi and Maha, he had once felt a part of the Emperor Will. When an Emperor level powerhouse died, the will they left behind would not fade away even after thousands of years. This was the so-called battle spirit.

A battle spirit was the condensed will that a martial artist could form after they reached a certain boundary. This will could be attached to any object, and could be used in a multitude of ways, such as killing people.

For instance, if one attached a battle spirit to the air, they could directly crush a massive boulder into powder.

If they attached a battle spirit to a skill or treasure, they could double their attack power, or even increase it by several times over!

"Emperor battle spirit… I wonder when I will be able to comprehend my own battle spirit." Lin Ming was filled with expectations. When a martial artist reached the Emperor level they would normally have their own battle spirit. Of course, there were even some lucky individuals who didn't need to be at the Emperor level. If they had a great enough destiny fall unto their body, they could often comprehend a battle spirit at the higher stages of Life Destruction.

This was only the situation within the Sky Spill Continent. If it were the Realm of the Gods, then it was probably even more abnormal. It wouldn't be strange for those at the Revolving Core to be able to comprehend a battle spirit.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming asked, "Demonshine, when would a top talent of the Realm of the Gods usually comprehend their own battle spirit?"

Demonshine, who had been staying within Lin Ming's spiritual sea the entire time, hadn't replied. In fact, it was like Demonshine hadn't even heard his question. This caused Lin Ming to be a bit surprised. As soon as they entered the Road of Emperor, Demonshine had been incomparably quiet, not even making the smallest noise.

"Demonshine?" Lin Ming asked, worried.

"Lin Ming, this Road of Emperor… I feel like I've been here before…" After being silent for a long time, Demonshine quietly and eerily spoke.

"Mm?" Lin Ming was slightly startled.

"Well, it's more accurate to say that my big brother came here." Demonshine sounded a bit sad. This sort of mood rarely ever happened to the proud and talkative dog.

"Your big brother?"

"My original body is that of a Three-headed Demonic Divine Hound, and my soul is also a trinity of three souls in one. My big brother was born first, and then as his strength grew, my second brother was born, and finally, me. When we sieged the Verdant Feather Holy Lands in the past, Big Brother and Second Brother tried to protect me, and because of that they were twisted to nothingness in the soul storm. Within my body are some of the remnant soul fragments of my big brother and second brother."

As Demonshine finished speaking he let out a long sigh. In just the snap of the fingers, tens of thousands of years had passed. Recalling the past now really made one feel a bitterly painful nostalgia.

As Lin Ming heard Demonshine speak, he suddenly froze, a light seeming to go off in his mind. Yes! He had forgotten something!

When Lin Ming was still on the second floor, he had killed Xue Man and obtained a nameless ancient tome from his spatial ring. This tome had vivid, lifelike images of people rubbed into all the pages; one could even faintly feel the aura and dignity of these characters as they were when they were alive. Near these images were written notes that listed out these character's lives. As Lin Ming had read through them, he realized that every single one of these characters were all either Emperor level powerhouses or peak Emperor level talents of the last tens of thousands of years of the Holy Demon Continent!

This included the Netherworld Great Emperor, and even the Demon Emperor was impressively included in there.

Lin Ming immediately dug out the tome and quickly found the page that the Demon Emperor was listed on.

Within the tome, the Demon Emperor was holding onto the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, his ink-black hair recklessly flying in the wind. One could even vividly feel the terrifying aura and majesty of the Demon Emperor.

Beside the Demon Emperor's picture was a note.

"Demon Emperor. His birth was ominous and his death was ominous. Cause of death is unclear."

"This is..." Demonshine was stunned. He exclaimed, "This rubbing is exactly the same as the Demon Emperor himself."

"Yes, it is exactly the same. Not just that, but the Demon Emperor died in the Realm of the Gods and he was an existence from tens of thousands of years ago. So, who carved the image of the Demon Emperor and how did they know that he died?"

Lin Ming's mind was filled with doubts.

Demonshine said, “Lin Ming, look at the base of those lights.”

As Demonshine spoke, Lin Ming looked up and was suddenly astonished. In front of him, not too far away, was a carved relief of a Fey martial artist at the base of the lights. This Fey martial artist was handsome and held a longsword in his hands. He was a jade-like beauty with a heroic appearance.

Lin Ming suddenly remembered that this Fey martial artist was one of those whose images were rubbed within the tome!

Lin Ming opened the tome and found that the carved relief of this martial artist was the exact same as the rubbing!

“Lian Ku. Born in the Holy Demon Calendar year of 26,720, died in the Holy Demon Calendar year of 26,750. This person was a peerless talent of elegance and grace. He reached the Fey King realm at 24 years of age, and within his realm there was no worthy opponent for him. His path to becoming a Fey Emperor was inevitable, but what a pity, his destiny was lacking. As he was seeking his own lucky chance in a danger zone, he perished there, ending his life at 30 years of age.”

A Fey King was equal to the human Revolving Core. For someone to become a Fey King at the age of 24 was similar to reaching Revolving Core at an age of 24. This was a speed that would be around five or six years faster than Mu Qianyu. In fact, it wasn’t even that different from Lin Ming!

A peerless hero of his generation, his path to becoming an Emperor was a matter of time. However, he perished in the middle of his path.

“Lin Ming, I remember some things. In my big brother and second brother’s memories, these lights that you see each represent an Emperor level powerhouse. Even if they aren’t Emperor level powerhouses they are still peerless talents of their generation that should easily have become Emperor level characters. But these people all have two things in common. The first is that they are dead, and the second is… when they were young, they once stepped into the Road of Emperor!”

These lights each represented an Emperor level powerhouse that had once entered the Road of Emperor?

Lin Ming’s mind chilled. As he looked at these quietly burning ghostly blue flames, he couldn’t feel any heat from them. Rather, he felt a bone-biting chill, as if these flames were burning souls.

Of course, this was only a feeling. If they really were souls then they would have burnt out long ago.

Demonshine said, “The will lights of the Road of Emperor are not crafted by human hands, but naturally formed. Otherwise, across a span of tens of thousands of years, no one would have the ability to carve out a lifelike impression of all these peerless characters, perfectly keeping even their aura and majesty.”

“If I’m not wrong, then every peerless genius of their era who has entered the Road of Emperor will be remembered by the Road of Emperor. After they die, lights would form here as a symbol to them.

As Lin Ming heard Demonshine speak, he felt an inexplicable chill fill his heart.

The Road of Emperor… just what was it?

The force underneath the Eternal Demon Abyss that was behind the mystical curse… what was that too?

After every martial artist died, flames would light up as a symbol to them. Then, what was it that the Road of Emperor used to remember them?

A part of their will? Spiritual energy? Or maybe a soul mark?

Even a peerless existence like the Demon Emperor, a great character even within the Realm of the Gods, still couldn't rid himself from the Road of Emperor's memory. After he perished in the Realm of the Gods, the Road of Emperor also formed a group of lights that corresponded to him.

Like mortals that could not escape the cycle of samsara, those peerless geniuses that stepped into the Road of Emperor similarly couldn't rid themselves of their destiny. No matter how unrivaled they were in their lives, they still returned here, ashes to ashes, dust to dust.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and clenched his fists. Regardless of what was at the end of the Road of Emperor, regardless of what was at the deepest depths of the Eternal Demon Abyss, he would not hesitate to continue forwards.

The world was large, far beyond what he could ever imagine. Even the Demon Emperor, standing before the true peak of martial artists, was probably just a minor, unworthy person.

In the past, in order to compete for the Magic Cube, he had died. This Magic Cube that had extinguished the lives of 10,000 powerhouses from the Realm of the Gods, just where had it come from also?

All of these powerful and mysterious existences did not cause Lin Ming to be crestfallen or even feel low. Instead, there was nothing in him but a limitless fighting spirit. He had already set firm his determination to step onto the highest peak of martial arts, and have a good look at what the scenery from that peak would be like.

Chapter 616 – Battle of Wills

Chapter 616 – Battle of Wills

…

…

…

Lin Ming followed the Road of Emperor, going forwards one step at a time. Every 100 feet or so, there would be quiet, eerie blue flames that appeared, burning in the air like spectral illusions.

"Gu Yu… 9000 years, he was a peerless heroic youth of the Giant Demon race. A Titled Asura of Fascination Skysplit Tower, he died at 30 years of age." Every time Lin Ming saw new will lights appear, the name of the martial artist who corresponded to that light would materialize in his mind.

Fascination Skysplit Tower was one of the 12 Skysplit Towers. Thus, it could be seen that this Road of Emperor wasn't solely just the heroic young elites of Polar Skysplit Tower, but of the 11 other Skysplit Towers also. It was even possible that the Road of Emperor found in the other 11 Skysplit Towers all shared the same path.

The Emperor Will filled every inch of the Road of Emperor. Not just that, but as Lin Ming moved forwards, it became increasingly strong.

Ho---

After Lin Ming passed by Gu Yu's will light, the light extinguished itself. All the way down, every time Lin Ming passed a light, that light would naturally fade away. So far, he had passed by ten lights, and ten lights had been extinguished.

“Xiao Yu. Three thousand years ago she was a proud heavenly daughter of the Fey. A Titled Asura of Heavenly Cloud Skysplit Tower. At 36 years of age, she perished, her cultivation at the 5-star Fey King realm…” As Lin Ming saw the eleventh will light, some information about Xiao Yu appeared in his mind.

As he passed this light, it also faded away.

Lin Ming found that all of the martial artists he saw so far hadn’t lived to the age of 40. Every single one had died when their cultivation was at most a 5-star or 6-star Fey King.

When Lin Ming had read through the nameless tome, Peerless Emperors had occupied the vast majority of the pages. Were the will lights of the Emperor level powerhouses further back?

Thinking this, Lin Ming continued, slowly and cautiously. He could feel the pressure of the Emperor Will becoming steadily stronger.

“Lin Ming, careful!”

“Mm?”

As Lin Ming passed by another will light, he suddenly heard Demonshine’s voice call out.

Right after, a bright ray of light emitted from a will light and stabbed into Lin Ming!

Bang!

A massive pressure arrived within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea. He grimaced, taking a step back as he immediately revolved the Samsara martial intent to block this pressure.

However at this moment, it seemed as if his body had been separated from his soul.

Fighting spirit filled his heart.

This fighting spirit was not Lin Ming’s, but rather came from that light.

A bloody battlefield. Endless plains of slaughter and death. An armored martial artist fought with every ounce of his being. Within Lin Ming, he could clearly feel the infernal energy of the endless killing grounds.

“This is…”

The feeling suddenly disappeared here. With the sound of a gust of wind passing overhead, the light was extinguished!

It was over?

Lin Ming looked at that light. He had a faint impression of the man that was carved into that relief. His name was Zhang Jun. He was a quasi Emperor powerhouse. In his life, he was a peerless talent of his generation. He died before his time, just a single step away from becoming a true Emperor level powerhouse.

That just now was…

“Lin Ming, what you felt just now was the battle spirit of that this martial artist left behind. All of these lights beside the Road of Emperor contain the will of those powerhouses that died.”

As Lin Ming walked, he had already passed over a dozen lights already. The inherent strength of their will was very small, but just now Zhang Jun’s light had actually contained a vast will that smashed into his spiritual sea. Although he had been able to bear it, he had been forced to take a step back.

“Lin Ming, I remember now. The first half of the Road of Emperor is a test to bear the Emperor Will. Those lights that you first encountered up until now were all from weaker martial artists that hadn’t even formed a complete Emperor Will, thus you were able to easily pass through. But from now on, every step you take will be much harder than the last.

"The Road of Emperor is paved with the immense will of countless Emperor level powerhouses. How deep you can go will all depend on whether or not you can resist their will!"

"I understand." Lin Ming glanced behind him. It was clear now that after he successfully withstood the will of a martial artist, their will light would naturally extinguish.

The next one…

Lin Ming looked at the light ahead of him and was surprised to see that this light burned several times more vibrantly than the ones before. The flames were already twice as high. To be more precise, after this light, the later lights would continue to become more and more exuberant. This also symbolized that the inherent Emperor Will of these lights was also becoming stronger!

Now, Lin Ming was prepared. He took a deep breath, adjusting his mind to an ethereal state as he simultaneously revolved the Samsara martial intent, and then stepped deeper into the Road of Emperor.

The moment that he passed the next will light, Lin Ming felt another great pressure enveloping him, even more formidable than the one before.

"Kill!"

"Kill!"

Lin Ming instantly felt his soul and body separate, his mind arriving in a completely separate dimension. At this moment, a 10 foot tall demon was cutting down at him with a massive axe.

What a superficial move!

Lin Ming coldly snorted. Although this enemy's attack seemed to be deadly, the truth was that it was full of holes. The speed of it was slow to the point that it simply didn't enter his eyes.

He took a step back and flourished the Purple Comet Spear. He wanted to use Chasing Thunder to deal with this demon, when at this time, Lin Ming was shocked.

Let alone using Chasing Thunder, but even taking out his spear felt incomparably slow. This feeling was the same as if Lin Ming had returned to the Body Transformation stage. After being used to the limits of his own speed and strength, he found it hard to adapt to suddenly losing all of this.

"What's going on!?"

Seeing the large axe cut down at him, Lin Ming's pupils contracted. Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Lin Ming retreated backwards, but his speed was several dozen times lower than its peak state!

Too slow!

Chi!

Lin Ming could only helplessly watch as that massive blood-red axe cut into his body, right through the middle!

A severe pain seemed to come out from his soul. At this moment, the feeling of death was so real!

Ever since Lin Ming started practicing martial arts, he had faced life or death situations several times, stepping near death's door during many of these. But, it was only close to death, it had never been like today where he watched as he was cut directly in half!

Fresh blood sprayed out. Lin Ming's face twisted in pain and a feeling of death spread through his spiritual sea.

Samsara martial intent!

Kacha!

Lin Ming forcefully twisted apart the symbol of that deathly energy.

'Everything is only an illusion! I have been practicing martial arts for almost eight years now, and my heart of martial arts has been tempered every step of the way. I will not allow some phantom mirage to kill me!'

Lin Ming's mind flashed with this thought. In that moment, he felt a vivid force swell up within his body, making him feel several times stronger than before!

His body that was cut in half slapped back together, instantly regenerating. Lin Ming grabbed the Purple Comet Spear and thrust out!

"Chasing Thunder!"

Little arcs of electricity sizzled around the Purple Comet Spear. These arcs of electricity were too weak – he was fundamentally unable to use Chasing Thunder.

"My strength has been reduced by 99%!"

Lin Ming had never felt this powerless before. Although his strength had suddenly risen just now, he was still only capable of such a weak strike.

But what surprised Lin Ming was that the great demon in front of him seemed to have consumed every bit of its strength in that last attack. It weakly stood there as Lin Ming's spear pierced into its body. With a pitiful scream, it melted into a pool of blood and pus.

The illusion disappeared and Lin Ming returned to the Road of Emperor. He was still standing on that lonely plank road, and the will light beside him had now extinguished.

He passed.

Lin Ming felt a cold sweat drip down his back. The illusion he just felt was far too real. There was really a moment where he thought he had died.

Being cut in half had left a deep pain in his soul, as if his soul was being torn in half. Lin Ming was certain that even being physically cut in half like that wouldn't be so painful.

"Was that just a battle of wills?" Lin Ming asked.

"Yes. It was a battle of wills. You felt your strength weakened by 99% because your will hasn't yet manifested, let alone condensing into a battle spirit. Thus, in that world of will, you are in fact a weakling!"

"I really am weak!" Lin Ming nodded. That demon he had faced just now was already weak to the point of being a complete mess. His moves were slow and ridiculous, everything that demon did was just for looks. But as for Lin Ming, facing this demon fellow that he would normally be able to kill without even lifting his finger, he had actually been cut in half. If that wasn't weak then what was?

Demonshine slyly smiled, shaking his head as he said, "I said that you are weak, but that in is only in comparison to a true Emperor Will. In fact, your weak level is already abnormal. You should know that 99% of martial artists first facing an attack of wills would not even be able to make a counterattack; they wouldn't even be able to move. They could only stare helplessly as their enemy's attack splits apart their body. And I'm talking about a top genius, there isn't even mentioning an ordinary martial artist. An ordinary martial artist wouldn't even have the qualifications to undergo this sort of smelting trial. Their spiritual sea would be instantly crushed to nothing by the Emperor Will!"

"Oh?" Lin Ming was a bit surprised. Indeed, his willpower had always been his most impressive aspect. If Lin Ming's abilities could be arranged in order, then his willpower would absolutely be first, followed by his perception and then his natural talent.

“Hey hey, boy, this Saint rarely compliments others so how come your reaction is so cold? You are at the extreme Xiantian realm, but other martial artists are at Revolving Core realm, Demon King realm, Fey King realm, and if their perception is poor, then even a Life Destruction martial artist may be beneath you.”

“There is no limit in this world, there is always a higher mountain and a higher heaven.” Lin Ming shook his head. He had experienced a great deal in his journey to the peak of martial arts so far. He was well aware that he was just a frog in a well, but the greatest difference that separated him from those other frogs was that he was aware of just how great the outside world was.

“In that battle just now, I feel like my willpower was tempered, becoming stronger.”

When Lin Ming had broken through the illusion, he felt an influx of strength into his will. Although he had already left the illusion, that strength still remained there, permanently becoming a part of him.

“Of course. This is the terrifying advantage of the Road of Emperor: it is able to temper your will. If you can withstand it then you can even form your own battle spirit!” Demonshine excitedly said, “At that time, you will no longer feel weak within your world of will, in fact, it is possible that you will be even more powerful than in reality!”

Chapter 617 – One Light One World

Chapter 617 – One Light One World

…

…

…

"I will be more powerful in the will world than in reality?" Lin Ming asked, slightly startled. "Then what happens if I kill others in the will world? Will they die in the real world? Or would they be affected in some other way?"

Demonshine said, "If you can completely destroy someone else's will within the world of will then they will also die in the real world!"

Lin Ming felt a chill crawl up his back as he heard this, "But I should have died just now. That bloody axe already cut me in half, but I'm not dead yet."

Demonshine chuckled, "Hehe, this Saint said that you will only die if your will is destroyed in the will world. This Saint didn't say that you would die if your body was cut in half in the will word. Destroying someone's will isn't as simple as it seems."

"I see…" Lin Ming nodded. He had fallen into the mindset that being cut in half would kill him. But, the truth was that the world of will had a completely different set of laws that governed it. Perhaps, within the will world, being cut in half was the same as a minor wound.

Demonshine continued, "Within the will world, being split in half, beheaded, or even crushed won't kill you. This is why there are many martial artists that when they reach a high level, such as your so-called Emperor level powerhouse, if they have confidence in their own willpower, will have matches in the world of will. In there, it's not as easy to be injured.

But of course, in a real life or death battle, they would combine the power of their will world and their actual combat strength into one whole and fight in the real world. This is also how they can use their highest degree of strength.

Every time Demonshine mentioned the Emperor level powerhouses and Emperor level talents of the Sky Spill Continent, he would usually add in something derisive before it, such as ‘so-called’. Obviously, to him, these powerhouses were nothing more than low grade minions. If they went to the higher level Realm of the Gods, they simply wouldn’t even enter Demonshine’s eyes.

“Combat in the world of will only looks at how strong or weak your willpower is – your actual combat strength is irrelevant! Within the will world, you are god. You can create and be anything you want. For instance, as long as your will is strong enough, you can create a heaven-step treasure, a saint-step treasure, a powerful summoned beast, contract beast, or if your willpower is at the very limit, you can even summon a God Beast. As long as your willpower is strong enough, you can completely sweep away all opponents even if they are several times stronger than you in reality.”

Create a saint treasure? Create a contract beast? Or even a God Beast? Lin Ming was shocked. “I can even create a God Beast? Would it really have the power of a God Beast though?”

“Within the world of will, the God Beast that you create will truly have the power of a God Beast. But, that is only limited to the will world. As this Saint has said, within that world, you are god!”

“The will is an important symbol of whether or not a high level martial artist is weak or strong. The sooner you comprehend a battle spirit, the greater its advantages will be towards your future. This is because a battle spirit, regardless of your perception, lucky chances, heart of martial arts, and other factors such as that, will often naturally grown along with your cultivation. Lin Ming, this Road of Emperor is your chance. Even if your strength doesn’t grow here, you still have to start forming the foundation for your battle spirit. When you reach a high boundary, your willpower, which is in essence your battle spirit, will be a great portion of your strength. Not just that, but at that level, it will even be an integral part of your combat style. People at that level will also respect a martial artist that has a formidable will more.”

“Mm, I’ve got it.” Lin Ming nodded. The same ability would often have different values for different people. For instance, within the Sky Fortune Kingdom, even if a landlord and merchant had the same amount of wealth, a landlord’s status would be higher than the merchant’s. This was because land farming was considered a more legitimate business, while being a merchant was much more low class, even if they earned the same amount of money. In fact, after many merchants earned a fortune, they would often purchase large swathes of property and became local landlords, even if the profits from these properties were far lower.

“Lin Ming, continue on. If you can use this Road of Emperor to thoroughly temper your will, then it will have a profound influence on your future growth. Don’t miss out on this chance!”

“I will!”

Lin Ming was overjoyed that he met Demonshine from the Magic Cube’s space. With his guidance it was much easier to see the path before him.

Otherwise, if he came to the Road of Emperor and used increasing his strength as the only goal, he would have missed this rare chance.

Continuing along the Road of Emperor, the will lights that appeared were from quasi Emperors, they burnt even more vividly than before.

As Lin Ming stepped forwards, a light flashed, and he once again appeared in the world of will.

“Hahahaha!”

Laughter echoed in Lin Ming's ear like a thunderclap. This was a voice that came from this world of will. The more powerful the willpower was, the more heaven-shaking and earth-shattering the voices would be.

Kacha!

Between heaven and earth, a massive thunderbolt crashed into the ground. A Goliath martial artist with a full head of red hair grasped a halberd and rushed towards Lin Ming.

"Concept of Thunder?"

Lin Ming was surprised to discover that even in the world of will, there were still manifestations of Laws.

With the Concept of Thunder combined with this strange halberd skill, this quasi Emperor level powerhouse's attack was certainly strong, it was just that its speed was slow.

It was obvious that the will that this quasi Emperor powerhouse left behind was very slow. Perhaps it was because it had been worn down through the long passage of time, or perhaps it was because the amount of will left behind in the light wasn't much to begin with, otherwise, the momentum of this quasi Emperor powerhouse's attack would be much more than this.

Lin Ming directly faced this Goliath powerhouse's halberd. He did not dodge, only thrusting his spear out. This was because he knew that with his current speed, dodging was impossible.

Puff! Puff!

Two bursts of blood shot out like a rain shower. In the world of will, having his body pierced through was a horrific pain as if his soul was being shredded to pieces.

Lin Ming originally wasn't a match for this quasi-Emperor's will. However, the strength of this quasi-Emperor's will wasn't able to sustain itself; every time a bit of this strength was consumed, it would be gone. But as for Lin Ming, his will actually grew without end.

This was his greatest advantage.

After a harrowing and violent battle, Lin Ming successfully destroyed the Goliath quasi Emperor powerhouse.

Ho–

The corresponding will light was extinguished, and Lin Ming was ejected from the world of will.

"I can actually comprehend a great number of things from these seniors' martial arts skills!"

Aside from tempering his will, when that quasi Emperor attacked just now, the moves that contained the Concept of Thunder gave Lin Ming some inspirations.

Because the will that this quasi Emperor had left behind was already very weak, the attacks were slow and the striking power was also low. This way, the mysteries within those attacks were much more clearly seen and easier to understand.

"If I'm not wrong, then most of the young heroic elites that enter the Road of Emperor probably use the majority of their energy to study their opponents' moves and Concepts.

"Even Yan Chi and Maha, as Imps who are proficient in soul force, probably also tried to comprehend these Concepts and moves. It's just that at the same time they were probably trying to figure out how to capture some of this Emperor Will for their own use. But, no matter how much Emperor Will they captured, in the end it wasn't theirs, so it had no capacity for growth."

The moves and Concepts of quasi Emperor and Emperor level powerhouses were no doubt valuable. But compared to tempering the will and forming a battle spirit, they were far less important. It was simply incomparable.

However, one couldn't blame Yan Chi and Maha for being short-sighted. Their own willpower was limited, so the chances of them ever forming their own battle spirit was far too distant a goal. Normally in the Holy Demon Continent, a martial artist would form their own battle spirit around the time they became a Peerless Emperor. As for Yan Chi and Maha, the two of them only had a cultivation of a one and two star Demon King.

In addition, Yan Chi and Maha were only from relatively normal sect backgrounds. These sects had never produced an Emperor level powerhouse, so the knowledge and legacies they had of battle spirits was literally nothing at all. Yan Chi and Maha simply didn't know the method to form a battle spirit, nor did they understand their importance.

Lin Ming carefully recalled the attacks of that Supreme Elder from just now, and after perceiving some insights, he decisively moved on to the next battle spirit light.

Compared to the last flame, this one was far too bright. It was extremely radiant and dazzling, like a smaller, darker, sun.

Lin Ming's mind moved. His eyes locked onto the relief below the lights, and he saw that indeed, this will was left behind by a true Emperor level powerhouse that had died!

"Gu Xiao, Giant Demon. She walked the world 6000 years ago. She became a Demon Emperor at 109 years of age, and perished at 130 years of age. When she died, her cultivation was a one-star Demon Emperor." Information about Gu Xiao appeared in Lin Ming's mind.

Without a doubt, if this Gu Xiao could become a Demon Emperor then she was an Emperor level talent. However, after becoming a Demon Emperor, she was only the most ordinary of Demon Emperors. All those able to become Demon Emperors were Emperor level talents. Wanting to stand out in this crowd of monstrous geniuses was extremely difficult!

Gu Xiao had become a Demon Emperor at 109 years of age – this achievement wasn't early. In fact, her talent was much worse than Xiao Yu and Gu Yu's from before. Those two had earned the glory of becoming Titled Asuras. If they hadn't died at such a young age, they definitely would have become existences capable of jumping ranks to fight even after becoming Emperor level powerhouses.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and adjusted himself to his peak state. What he was about to face was a true Emperor level powerhouse. Even if this person was the most ordinary of Emperor level powerhouses, they were still an existence he couldn't even compare to. He naturally had to be extremely sincere in this battle.

Stepping into the range of Gu Xiao's will lights, Lin Ming only felt as if he had crossed a space barrier, arriving at a completely different dimension.

One light, one world. The will of a true Emperor level powerhouse was enough to manifest their own world.

When Lin Ming's will entered this world, he felt like a mortal that had been dropped naked into a field of winter snow. This kind of chilling cold was enough to freeze his marrow.

A thick killing intent suddenly filled the air. With a rustling sound, a massive python suddenly appeared out of thin air and killed its way towards Lin Ming.

"A transformation?"

Lin Ming recalled that Demonshine said that within the world of will, a martial artist was god. They could turn their will into different forms in order to kill their enemies.

This massive python in front of him was most likely the transformed shape of the Emperor Will.

This python was over 100 feet long and its body was as thick as Lin Ming's waist. It opened its massive jaws and bit towards Lin Ming. Its speed was much quicker than the last several martial artists'!

With Lin Ming's speed, it was impossible for him to dodge this bite. He fiercely grit his teeth and thrust the Purple Comet Spear into the python's open mouth!

Bringing with it the Concept of Thunder, the Purple Comet Spear was like a bolt of lightning that shot into the python's upper jaw. Blood sprayed out, but that python also bit down on Lin Ming.

Bang!

The earth was cracked apart as the python's giant head crashed into it, and Lin Ming was swallowed into the python's stomach.

"Lin Ming, you are not a match for this Emperor Will. Immediately withdraw!" Demonshine's voice sounded out in Lin Ming's mind.

Chapter 618 – A Shining Will

Chapter 618 – A Shining Will

…

…

…

The python's stomach was like a separate world. Locked within, Lin Ming was tossed around like a leaf in a storm.

Bang!

His consciousness crushed, Lin Ming gave a stiff cough, instantly feeling like he lost sense of his own existence. His brain was muddled, and his senses were in confusion, as if he had been cut off from all contact with the outside world.

"Lin Ming, hurry up and withdraw from the world of will! If you suffer such heavy damage in the Road of Emperor's will world, you won't die but it will damage your will!" Demonshine shouted out. But in this situation, his voice no longer reached Lin Ming's ears.

Chaos ran rampant!

After an indefinite amount of time passed, a weak whirlpool formed within this chaos. After this whirlpool appeared, it began to slowly and gradually expand, spinning faster and faster. In the center of this whirlpool was an azure light; this light was the essence of Lin Ming's endless will.

After this azure light appeared, it shot out like a vorpal sword, cutting through space. With a ripping sound, the void itself seemed to tear apart. The azure light pierced through all, directly shooting through the python's back!

‘Reform the body.’

Within Lin Ming’s mind, his will pulsed with an intense belief. As long as his willpower was strong enough, he was god here. He could control all!

In the void, countless rays of azure light rapidly spun together, rapidly coalescing into Lin Ming’s body, restoring all of his senses.

Seeing Lin Ming reappear, Demonshine’s puppy eyes turned perfectly round. He never expected that Lin Ming would be able to break out of the python's body and extricate himself from danger. This was a vicious beast that was formed by an Emperor level powerhouse!

“Sssaa!”

The python let out a loud roar as it rushed forwards once more.

“Purple Comet!”

Lin Ming thrust out his hand and the Purple Comet Spear instantly materialized in his palm! Blazing on spear shaft, thunder and flame howled!

“Penetrating Rainbow!”

Spear and man became one. Lin Ming shot straight towards the python!

After his will went through another transformation just now, Lin Ming’s striking power had surged greatly. On the other hand, the python itself was severely wounded.

Peng!

Lin Ming flew forwards with the spear, directly piercing through the python’s jaws. The python let out a miserable cry as a fountain of blood gushed out from its head. Its body began to violently twist and contort, slowly losing the power to struggle before turning into a stream of light that floated away.

In the next moment, Lin Ming withdrew from the world of will.

In front of him, the lights that symbolized Gu Xiao's will still burned as radiantly as before without a hint of even extinguishing. This meant that Lin Ming hadn't been able to withstand Gu Xiao's will.

Lin Ming had merely destroyed a python that Gu Xiao's will had created. Lin Ming had, in actuality, failed to kill the main body. Currently, it was far too difficult for him to deal with the will left behind by an Emperor level powerhouse.

This was the will of an Emperor level powerhouse… Lin Ming took a deep breath. His back was already soaked with sweat. The recent battle had exhausted a great deal of his energy.

"Boy, you really are a monstrous genius!" Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, Demonshine was praising him. "Today, you've made amazing progress with your willpower. If it continues to grow like this then you really might be able to form your own battle spirit before you reach Revolving Core! Aside from all other aspects of talent, in will alone, you are the most magnificent junior I have ever seen!"

Forming a battle spirit before Revolving Core…

Lin Ming's eyes blazed with a fiery light. He was increasingly knowledgeable of just what a battle spirit was. For him, if he wanted to use the Road of Emperor to break through to the Revolving Core realm, then it would be easy. But if he could condense his own battle spirit now, then it would be of unlimited benefit to his future growth.

"It seemed that Gu Xiao hadn't even formed a battle spirit yet?"

"Yes. Gu Xiao is only the lowliest of ordinary Demon Emperors. A true Emperor level powerhouse that has a battle spirit will leave behind an even more terrifying will. If the current you faces an Emperor Will that possesses a battle spirit, then you will instantly be smashed to smithereens. If you can temper your will to the point that you can withstand that sort of impact, then you might be able to form the seed of a battle spirit within your will."

…………………

Within the tens of thousands of miles that comprised the Blood Slaughter Steppes, other than the 12 main cities, there was also a blood red temple. Blood Slaughter Divine Temple was its name.

Within this temple lived the master of the Blood Slaughter Steppes, and also the only Emperor level powerhouse of the Blood Slaughter Steppes… Luo Sha.

Titled High Lord Divine Demon, Luo Sha was also the only twelve-winged Heavenly Demon of the 12 Skysplit Towers.

The giant blood red doors opened and Luo Sha strode out of the great temple, his red cloak dragging on the ground as his footsteps echoed in the emptiness.

High Lord Divine Demon was 15 feet tall, the height of two adult men. He was considered a giant even amongst the already tall Giant Demons and Goliaths.

“Father.”

As High Lord Divine Demon left the temple, a middle-aged man, already kneeling on one knee, waited for him outside. This middle-aged man wore a dark blue robe and his eyes were as profound as the stars in the jet black sky. If Lin Ming could see this person then he would have recognized him. This person was the Tower Master of Polaris Tower, High Lord Limitless Demon.

Nearly no one knew that the Tower Master of Polaris Tower was Luo Sha’s son.

“Father, I have already followed your instructions and enslaved Lin Ming.”

“Mm,” High Lord Divine Demon nodded. “Lin Ming, even with a slave seal planted within him, will surely blossom in glory in the future. He will be a big boost to our forces.”

“Father, I have already sent Lin Ming to the Road of Emperor. When he reappears several months from now, his strength will surely have risen by another step.”

"Road of Emperor..." Luo Sha faintly smiled. "The Eternal Demon Abyss has erupted. Every Skysplit Tower has sent many people to enter the Road of Emperor and gain experience. These people think that they can increase their strength, enter the Eternal Demon Abyss, and take a share of the treasures. Exquisite Tower's Lan Xin, Heavenly Cloud Tower's Duanmu Qun, Five Color Tower's Zhuan Yu – all of them are future successors to their Holy Lands, characters who can be called Saintesses and Saint Sons."

"These people have all entered the Road of Emperor. Duanmu Qun is even entering for the second time. I wonder just how far in they will manage to go."

As High Lord Divine Demon spoke to here, Polaris Tower's Tower Master frowned. The people who his father mentioned just now were not only monstrous talents, but also had extremely terrifying backgrounds. They came from Holy Lands with four or five Emperor level powerhouses, some of which were two-star Fey Emperors or even three-star Fey Emperors!

Even the Blood Slaughter Steppes was terrified of these superpowers. They had no choice but to open a part of their resources to the descendants of those elite Holy Lands. This included the Road of Emperor and even the Eternal Demon Abyss. All of it was a compromise.

"The eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss is rare opportunity. You will also enter!" High Lord Divine Demon ordered.

"Yes, Father."

After the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss, the chances of dying within rose to over 30%. Polaris Tower's Tower Master had sufficient strength, and coupled with his years of understanding of the environment of the Eternal Demon Abyss, his chances of dying inside were much lower.

Chapter 619 – Lin Ming’s Choice

Chapter 619 – Lin Ming’s Choice

…

…

…

Road of Emperor, world of will –

Blood rained from the skies. Lin Ming’s spear pierced through a tiger type vicious beast, but his body was also slashed by that tiger’s claw, the entire right half of his body completely breaking apart as crushed bits of meat flew everywhere.

This sort of battle could be called utterly tragic. Luckily, this battle was held within the world of will. If this were the real world, then even Lin Ming would need several months to recover from such a heavy wound.

Ho –

Lin Ming was drawn out of the will world, thick drips of cold sweat dripping down his face and back. Half the reason was because he had consumed a great deal of energy, and the other half was because of the excruciating pain he had suffered.

In a fight within the world of will, the feelings of being ripped and torn apart were still there. As soon as the soul was broken apart, a bone-aching pain would follow. Even though Lin Ming’s will was extremely firm, it was still difficult to bear this pain for days on end.

“Mm?”

As Lin Ming left the world of will, he was shocked as he saw the Road of Emperor in front of him.

The original single planked Road of Emperor that led towards an infinite jet-black darkness had actually divided in two!

In front of Lin Ming, there were two Road of Emperors!

The first Road of Emperor was the same as before with lights that hovered at both sides. But on the other Road of Emperor, it was instead surrounded by stone tablets!

“What is this? A test? An illusion?”

“It is neither a test nor an illusion. For you, it is a chance, a choice that you can make.” Demonshine said from within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, “You have already been defeated in front of Gu Xiao’s will lights many times now. Gu Xiao is an Emperor level powerhouse who hadn’t yet been able to create her own battle spirit; she can be considered amongst the worst of Emperor level powerhouses. Behind her will lights are Emperor level powerhouses that have condensed their own battle spirit, including even two-star and three-star Demon Emperors. Not only have they formed their own battle spirit, but the Laws they have perceived have reached a very high limit, the peak that these so-called Emperor level powerhouses can reach. You have already been stranded here for 10 days. The Road of Emperor probably recognizes that it’s impossible for you to go any further, thus it has created another path for you. This is a choice that you may choose so that you won’t leave without having accomplished anything.”

Demonshine had once followed the Demon Emperor into the Road of Emperor. The current situation was only his guess, but it should be more or less right.

“In other words… I can reduce the difficulty?”

Lin Ming was inexplicably filled with a disheartened feeling. Up until this point, he had encountered powerful martial artists everywhere and there hadn’t yet been any martial artists whose talents had exceeded his own. But now, as he was crossing the Road of Emperor, he was actually pushed back to this degree.

Only 10 days here and he was given the chance of reducing the difficulty.

He was obviously disappointed.

"Hehe, boy, you shouldn't be so sad. After passing through the entire Road of Emperor, you can become an Emperor level powerhouse. What sort of cultivation do you have? And you still want to cross the Road of Emperor? Dream on! If that actually happened then wouldn't the Chief High Lord Limitless Demon or South Sea Demon Region Sovereign just be crushed under your feet? Boy, although your willpower is formidable, your cultivation is far too low. Compared to the will of an Emperor level powerhouse, the difference is simply far too great. Still, this Saint is pleasantly surprised that you were able to kill the python, scorpion, and tiger that Gu Xiao created!"

At that time when Gu Xiao had formed a python, Demonshine had urged Lin Ming to quickly leave the world of will. He believed that Lin Ming would be defeated without question, but he never imagined that he would actually win. Relative to Lin Ming's cultivation, this was absolutely only possible because he was a freakishly monstrous genius.

"The difference is indeed too great." Lin Ming shook his head. For more than 10 days he had been fighting Gu Xiao's remnant will.

However, he had never seen the true form of Gu Xiao's will. Everyone time he fought with Gu Xiao's will, Gu Xiao would first send out three vicious beasts to deal with him; these were a python, scorpion, and tiger. After these three fights, Lin Ming had basically consumed every ounce of his willpower.

"Lin Ming, there are many top-grade Blood Demon Crystals in your spatial ring and even two Demon God Bones right? Your foundation is very solid. If you use these top-grade Blood Demon Crystals and Demon God Bones, then with the tempering of the Road of Emperor, it will be very easy for you to break through to Revolving Core in a short period of time. When that happens, you can start forming your battle spirit and it will be much easier than it is now. At least, you should be able to defeat the will of an ordinary Emperor level powerhouse.”

Cultivation had an effect on willpower. The deep one’s will was, the easier it was to form a battle spirit. Lin Ming’s will was tenacious and resilient, but his cultivation wasn’t deep and his background was insufficient. Willpower was easy to exhaust, but forming a battle spirit was another story altogether.

Lin Ming shook his head and said, “If I fully concentrate on breaking through to Revolving Core, then it will still take a great deal of time if I want my foundation to remain solid. Moreover… the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss will end in half a year to a year – I don’t have the time to wait. After I leave the Road of Emperor, I don’t know what will happen between me and High Lord Limitless Demon. I have to seize this chance and try to form my own battle spirit as early as possible. My advantages in the future will also be greater too.

Lin Ming wanted to form his own battle spirit while he was still at the extreme Xiantian realm. Compared to condensing his battle spirit at Revolving Core or Life Destruction, there would be more room for growth.

“Well, there are many people who understand that but very few people who can actually follow through. Who doesn’t want to form their own battle spirit as soon as possible? You make it sound as if it’s as easy as folding paper. The will is not the same as the physical body. Once the will is injured, it is very difficult to heal. If you can’t withstand this suffering, then not only will you not be able to form your own battle spirit but you’ll only end up causing permanent damage to your will instead.”

Demonshine shook his little doggy head, not too approving of Lin Ming’s choice. “The Road of Emperor has given you another choice. This second path is instead surrounded by Emperor tablets. It is especially aimed at increasing your cultivation and strength. If you choose this road and walk down it, then with your talent it shouldn’t be too difficult to break through to Revolving Core. Your strength and moves will all be greatly enhanced. As for the first road, that only aims at tempering your will. If you walk down that road then your strength won't rise by too much. If you are successful, then the advantages to you will naturally be incalculable. But, if you are defeated then not only will there be no benefit to you, but you will damage your will instead. Think carefully before you make your choice."

As Demonshine spoke, Lin Ming understood.

Two roads. One road aimed at the world of will and the other road aimed at realistic strength. To martial artists at lower realms, having a greater strength in the real world was much more valuable – this was true even for Lin Ming.

Maha, Kai Yang, and others like them, after being defeated in a trial of will, most likely diverged onto this other path in order to increase their cultivation and strength.

Lin Ming could envision that if he stepped onto this second path, his strength would sharply rise. However, if he stayed on the first path, while he wouldn't see short-term benefits, it would have unlimited benefits for his future growth.

If Lin Ming missed this chance then it would become very difficult to form his battle spirit.

He could forget about attempting to do so during the Xiantian realm. If he couldn't even form his battle spirit during Revolving Core, then he could only wait until he reached Life Destruction.

Within the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent, forming a battle spirit during the Life Destruction realm was a first class achievement to be proud of. But, if this achievement were placed within the Realm of the Gods, then it wasn't much at all.

Lin Ming's sights were set very far. If his starting points kept falling behind those geniuses of the Realm of the Gods so much, then how could he ever manage to compete with them if he ever truly soared into the Realm of the Gods in the future?

“Can’t I choose both roads at once?” Lin Ming didn’t have much hope for this but he still asked.

“Nice try, friend. You can, if you complete the Road of Emperor. By that time, all of the mysteries of the Road of Emperor will be opened to you. You can experience the fires of will, the Emperor stone tablets, and maybe even things that I don’t know about. But… after passing through the Road of Emperor, you will become a Peerless Emperor. If you want to completely finish the Road of Emperor now, then it is absolutely, absolutely, absolutely… impossible. Honestly make your choice, because once you do, the other path will vanish. Choose as you will.” Demonshine said absolutely three times in a row, enunciating these words clearly to completely dispel all of Lin Ming’s unrealistic fantasies.

Lin Ming took a deep breath, hesitated for a moment, and then firmly said, “I choose the road of will!”

Demonshine seemed to already expect that Lin Ming would make this choice. He shook his head and lazily said, “Well, good luck to you. This Saint is going to take a nap now.”

After Demonshine’s soul was injured he had to spend 90% of the day resting in sleep.

Lin Ming didn’t bother with Demonshine anymore. He sat down and began to adjust his breathing. He took out a top-grade Blood Demon Crystal from his spatial ring and began to slowly absorb the Blood Demon Crystal’s energy.

Lin Ming didn’t know this, but as he was facing his choice in the Road of Emperor, within the Exquisite Tower’s Road of Emperor, a beautiful and slender young Fey girl was similarly making her choice.

This young Fey girl had long blue hair and her eyes were also blue. Her face was lovely, without even the slightest flaw. It was just that on the cheeks underneath her eyes, there were several small blue scales. But these scales did not ruin her beauty. Rather, they lent her an air of mystery and wonder.

She was the number one talent of the Exquisite Tower, Lan Xin. She came from a Fey sect, the Blue Silver Holy Land. She broke through to a one-star Fey King at 25 years of age and was equal to a human early Revolving Core master. In fact, she was even a bit better.

Although her cultivation was higher than Lin Ming's, in terms of willpower, she was far inferior. When she faced a quasi-Emperor's will world, she couldn't pass. She had already been stranded in front of this quasi-Emperor's will light for 12 days now.

In the Road of Emperor, there was a general time given to each challenger. This was 12 days.

If she couldn't break through the road of will during this period, then that only meant her talent or cultivation was lacking. In short, if she couldn't pass through the complete Road of Emperor then it was impossible for her to become an Emperor level powerhouse here.

These were one of the mysteries that Lan Xing didn't know of. She was only curiously looking towards the stone tablets that surrounded the second Road of Emperor. As she glanced at them, she was immediately attracted to these stone tablets.

"This is..."

The stone tablets had all sorts of strange figures and diagrams engraved upon them. But, as she saw these images, she felt as if her soul was falling within, unable to release itself.

"What a strange stone tablet!"

Lan Xing hesitated for a moment and then stepped onto this second Road of Emperor. In the moment that she did, the first Road of Emperor disappeared. It was like the series of lights that she had first passed through, slowly fading away.

Lan Xing was dazed. She was faintly aware that she had unknowingly made a choice of some kind. Since she chose this Road of Emperor with the stone tablets, that meant she had given up the road with the will lights.

Having lost the road with the will lights, Lan Xin thought it was a bit regretful. But, if she were given the chance to make her choice again, she would still choose this one. After having stayed on the road of will for several days, her strength hadn't increased by much, but the soul-tearing pain she had experienced during that time still made chills crawl up her spine.

Chapter 620 – Prime Emperor Force Field

Chapter 620 – Prime Emperor Force Field

…

…

…

Lan Xin was a woman, but her will and beliefs were very firm, otherwise she never could have arrived at this point. However, when facing that soul-tearing pain in the road of wills, she really found it hard to bear, and she had to do so every day without end, from morning until night!

Even when withstanding such tortuous pain, the increase in her strength was actually limited. Lan Xin found this hard to accept.

As Lan Xin stepped onto the second Road of Emperor, she regretted a bit that she wouldn't be able to sharpen her will any further. But this regret also disappeared soon, because she had been completely attracted to the first Emperor stone tablet.

Now this was truly worthy of the Road of Emperor's great fame! The road of will that she had passed through until now hadn't been much better than the King's Cage.

After Lan Xin made her choice, at Heavenly Cloud Tower, Duanmu Qun was also making his.

Duanmu Qun's background was even more terrifying than Lan Xin's.

Lan Xin also originated from a Holy Land, but even Holy Lands were divided into ranks. According to the longstanding traditions of the Holy Demon Continent, once an Emperor level powerhouse was born to a fifth-grade sect, then that sect became a Holy Land.

Those Holy Lands with only a single one-star Emperor level powerhouse were naturally the weakest; in fact, some could even be considered mere high level fifth-grade sects.

As for those Holy Lands that had two Emperor level powerhouses, or even five or six, some of which were even two-star, three-star, or had formed their own battle spirit or had reached high attainments in certain Laws, those were the pinnacle existence of Holy Lands. This sort of Holy Land could be considered a peak fifth-grade sect.

Higher than that was a sixth-grade sect. That would be a Holy Land on the same level as the Demon God Imperial Palace.

Duanmu Qun happened to come from a super Holy Land that was almost a sixth-grade sect.

He was different from Lan Xin. Before entering the Road of Emperor, Duanmu Qun already had a decent understanding of it.

The moment when he was given the choice the take a second Road of Emperor, Duanmu Qun knew that he had failed.

He ruefully shook his head and said, “It looks like I was too confident. I, a mere one-star Fey King actually wants to condense his own battle spirit. My goal was simply too arrogantly high. This is only the second quasi Emperor will light but I am unable to continue any further. Behind this I would even have to bear the will of true Emperor level powerhouses! The difficulty of that could be imagined! Even if I grit my teeth and continued on, it would still be useless.”

Duanmu Qun was a peerless genius of his era when it came to willpower. Not just that, but he had a terrifying background and a talent that surpassed even Lan Xin. In addition to his exceedingly high perception and top cultivation methods, Duanmu Qun could be said to truly be a favored son of heaven.

These past twenty some years, every outstanding heroic youth after heroic youth was defeated in front of Duanmu Qun. Even deacons that were several dozen years older than him were not his match. Gradually, inevitably, this invincible, infallible mindset had engraved itself into Duanmu Qun's bones.

This was the self-confidence and pride that belonged to a top genius.

He had fantasized that when he entered the Road of Emperor, he would be able to complete it in a single go and form his own battle spirit!

However, reality had slapped him down. This first quasi Emperor will was also the weakest quasi Emperor will. Duanmu Qun had spent a tremendous amount of time and energy in order to defeat it, but against this second quasi Emperor, he was completely helpless. The disparity between them was simply too great.

Shaking his head, Duanmu Qun self-deprecatingly said, "The Highest Elder was a four-star Fey King when he first touched upon the threshold of a battle spirit, and was finally able to form his own when he was a five-star Fey King. I will sincerely take the second road with the Emperor stone tablets. If I continue down the road of will, then not only will my strength not rise but I might even be injured."

Duanmu Qun was reluctant to leave the road of will. But, he finally tamped down the feeling in his heart and stepped onto the road with the Emperor stone tablets.

Although he understood in his heart that the advantages he obtained would be greater if he traveled down the road of will, that advantage, no matter how great it was, simply couldn't be used at present. It was not as beneficial as receiving an immediate increase in his strength.

Calming his heart, Duanmu Qun began to perceive the first Emperor stone tablet.

………………………

One month later, Polaris Tower's Road of Emperor –

Lin Ming had already defeated the vicious beasts that Gu Xiao's will summoned. Now, he was directly fighting the main body of Gu Xiao's will.

Bang!

Within the world of will, Lin Ming's will was scattered once again. This soul-tearing pain almost caused him to faint on the spot.

"Reform!"

Lin Ming shouted out loud and his dispersing body began to gather back together. Within the world of will, all power depended on the strength of one's will! Within Lin Ming's mind, he recalled the time when he was still at the Body Transformation stage and had encountered the ownerless soul fragments within the world of the Magic Cube. He recalled the time when he fought against Demonshine, and he recalled the time he had experienced 100 samsaras within the Sorcerer Pagoda.

"My will is indomitable. My soul is endless, indestructible. Even when I faced the soul fragments of the Supreme Elders of the Realm of the Gods, I still wasn't swallowed by them. Even when I faced 100 samsaras, I wasn't lost in my illusions. Although you are an Emperor level powerhouse, and in terms of strength I admit I am still far weaker than you, but in the aspect of will, how can I willingly lose to you!"

Lin Ming gave a loud shot, grasped his spear and shot towards Gu Xiao!

Bang!

A golden light flashed. Half of Lin Ming's body was pierced by this light, but in the last moment before his will was about to collapse, he suddenly threw out the Purple Comet Spear in his hands.

Blazing with thunder and fire, the Purple Comet Spear drew a dazzling arc through the air as it pierced into Gu Xiao's body!

Blood rained.

In the next moment, Lin Ming had returned to the real world. “This is the first time I’ve wounded him!”

Lin Ming dripped with a cold sweat from the pain. As he wiped the sweat from his face, he collapsed to the ground in exhaustion.

Taking out a top-grade Blood Demon Crystal from his spatial ring, Lin Ming sat in meditation and began to restore his energy. These past days, he had been undergoing intense tempering of his will in countless battles. After the passing of a long time, unconsciously, the strength of his willpower had greatly increased.

Within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, Demonshine awoke from his deep slumber. As he stretched out his feet he said, “Boy. You. Are. Crazy. If you continue like this then it will be easy for your will to be damaged. Your face is white to the point where it doesn’t even have a hint of blood to it; this is proof that you overdrew your willpower.”

How could Lin Ming not know the truth behind Demonshine’s words? When he was still in the Body Transformation stage, he was clearly aware that if he practiced too much it would leave hidden wounds in his body. But at that time, in order to break through to the Pulse Condensation period, he had no choice but to tread onwards regardless of the consequences.

Now, the same was true.

The only advantage that Lin Ming had from the past was that he had sufficient resources. It wasn’t like the past where he couldn’t even afford medicine.

Lin Ming had killed many geniuses of Skysplit Tower these past two years, and in doing so obtained a great number of pills that were used to nourish the soul. Those Imp race geniuses were mostly masters of soul attacks, and soul attacks were also the types of attacks with the greatest risks. If one wasn’t careful then it was possible to be wounded from backlash, thus they naturally had to prepare a large amount of soul recovery pills.

Especially after he had killed Yan Chi and Kai Yang. Those two had both been Heavenly Demon Seven Stars of Skysplit Tower. Yan Chi had also been the second ranked master and extremely wealthy.

Lin Ming was glad that he killed Yan Chi; otherwise, he wouldn't have dared to continue fighting today.

Taking out one of Yan Chi's soul recovery pills from his spatial ring, Lin Ming quickly swallowed it. This pill was called a Nine Revolution Mind Pill. Yan Chi was the sort that valued wealth almost more than his life. He couldn't even bear to swallow a whole pill at a time, but rather swallowed them half at a time. He would never do something as wasteful as Lin Ming.

Once the pill reached Lin Ming's stomach, he felt an incomparably pure energy slowly nourishing his mind and soul. Lin Ming also felt his partially broken will slowly recovering.

The Imps were the race with the most talent in the aspect of souls. Naturally, the soul recovery pills they used were much superior to those of humans.

………..

Another two days passed. Lin Ming still hadn't been able to defeat Gu Xiao, but this time he had actually succeeded in leaving two wounds on Gu Xiao.

Then three, then four!

Five days later, Lin Ming was able to fight several violent rounds with Gu Xiao. Using the method of damaging himself to damage his enemy, he managed to cut off Gu Xiao's arm.

Seven days later, Lin Min finally managed to stab Gu Xiao with three spears in a valiant effort. Then, with spear and man as one, he used Penetrating Rainbow and stabbed through Gu Xiao's will.

After defeating Gu Xiao, Lin Ming's broken body had already reformed several times and his willpower was on the edge of collapse.

In the last moment that Gu Xiao's will was smashed apart, Gu Xiao's remnant will turned into a pure energy that slowly flowed into Lin Ming's own will. At that moment, Lin Ming felt as if his mind had opened and his entire body was brimming with warmth. It was like he had returned to the womb of his mother – he felt incomparably comfortable and at peace.

"This is…"

Lin Ming was surprised. His damaged will and soul force, under this cozy warmth, were quickly recovering.

In several dozen breaths of time, that warmth disappeared and Lin Ming felt that his own state of mind had strengthened a great deal, his willpower rising once more. If he faced Gu Xiao now, he believed that he could fully destroy Gu Xiao's will while retaining at least 30% of his soul force.

"If I destroy the will of an Emperor level powerhouse then I can obtain the power of its will. The longer I last, the more power of will I will accumulate. I might even be able to form my own battle spirit."

Lin Ming muttered to himself. In that moment he had withdrawn from the world of will.

"Boy, you actually won!" Demonshine was immensely shocked. This was the first Emperor level will that Lin Ming had defeated, using an entire month of time to do so.

Everything was difficult at the beginning. As it went on, it would naturally become easier. If this continued, then it was highly likely Lin Ming would be able to form his battle spirit!

"What a freak…" Demonshine mumbled. He couldn't help but use this word to describe Lin Ming. How was Lin Ming a martial artist from a little sect in the mortal world? He seemed more like a talent that was carefully raised up by a large sect within the Realm of the Gods.

“Demonshine, you said that if I can destroy the will of an Emperor level powerhouse that has a battle spirit, I can form my own battle spirit?”

Demonshine coolly shrugged and said, “This Saint was just casually speaking. If your perception is high and your destiny is excellent then you might be able to comprehend one early. Otherwise, it's useless even if you can destroy the will of an Emperor level powerhouse that has a battle spirit. In any case, this Saint is going back to sleep. Don’t bother waking me up, alright.”

Demonshine wiggled around and slowly sunk back into Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, leaving Lin Ming there to helplessly shake his head.

Following this, Lin Ming spent every day fighting and killing in the world of will.

When he destroyed the will of the second Emperor level powerhouse, this Emperor level powerhouse hadn’t formed a battle spirit either and his cultivation was only at a one-star Demon Emperor. Lin Ming accepted a serious injury in order to defeat it.

Next, this was followed by the third and the fourth.

The opponents grew continuously stronger. However, every time that Lin Ming destroyed the wisp of these Emperor Wills, some of their energy would flow into his body, nourishing his will and mind.

Time passed by. Soon, Lin Ming had been frigidly fighting for three months.

On this day, when he stepped into the will world of an Emperor level powerhouse, he was actually shocked.

This feeling… was it… a martial intent?

Within this world of will, Lin Ming clearly felt the terrifying suppression of a force field, causing the strength of his will to sharply fall.

A martial intent that aimed at the world of will… could it be… the Prime Emperor force field of the Heavenly Demon martial intent?

Chapter 621 – Blooming In Splendor Through Competition

Chapter 621 – Blooming In Splendor Through Competition

…

…

…

According to the temple spirit, the Heavenly Demon martial intent was divided into three different forms. They were respectively the Asura force field obtained from the King's Cage, the Death God force field obtained from becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, and lastly the Prime Emperor force field from completing the Road of Emperor.

Lin Ming didn't know what the Death God force field was like, but he had personally experienced the Asura force field. The Asura force field was absolute multi-level suppression. Whether it was physical strength, the undulations of organs, the circulation of true essence in the meridians, perception, all of this and more was completely suppressed to the point that it was several tenths less than at peak condition. The weaker one was, the harder this suppression would fall. To extremely weak martial artists, their heart might even stop if they entered this force field and their spiritual sea would collapse. This was also the reason that geniuses would die within the King's Cage.

Although the Asura force field was terrifying, it was only for the real world. After entering the world of will, the Asura force field was no longer effective.

Now, within the world of will, Lin Ming also felt the absolute suppression of a Heavenly Demon force field.

Lin Ming immediately thought that this might be one of the Heavenly Demon martial intent's three great force fields, the Prime Emperor force field!

It was the same as the King's Cage. After completing the entire trial, one could obtain the Prime Emperor force field. But, before that, Lin Ming would have to withstand the suppression of this force field!

If he wasn't wrong, then the power of this suppression would only grow stronger!

Thinking that he would have to face an Emperor level powerhouse that had a battle spirit while under the suppression of this force field, Lin Ming immediately felt his own weakness. The disparity was simply too great. No wonder it was said that anyone that passed the Road of Emperor could become a Peerless Emperor.

Within the world of will, Lin Ming's will once again took a human form, with all of the organs of a human, as well as meridians and a dantian.

The will body within the world of will was the same as Lin Ming's body in the real world.

Now, under the suppression of the Prime Emperor force field, the organs of Lin Ming's will body, the meridians, the dantian – all of this came under a massive pressure, causing his strength to weaken by 50%.

When Lin Ming had fought in the world of will, even when he exhausted all of his willpower and approached the point of collapse, there were always points on his will body that he hadn't tempered.

But now that he was placed under this pervasive pressure, Lin Ming could merely stand still and he would still feel every inch of his soul resisting the Prime Emperor force field, thoroughly exercising him.

'The Asura force field aims at the real world and the Prime Emperor force field aims at the will world. Both of these force fields are like twins that complement each other. Truly, this Heavenly Demon martial intent is wonderfully unique.'

Lin Ming praised in his heart. But at this time he couldn't spare another thought, because right in front of him, his next enemy had already appeared. This was the will body of an Emperor level powerhouse!

Although his opponent hadn't yet condensed a battle spirit, they still once had a cultivation of a three-star Demon Emperor. If it wasn't for the suppression of the Prime Emperor force field, then Lin Ming might have had a low chance of winning. But now, the chance of success approached zero.

No miracle happened. Within three moves, there was an explosive sound as Lin Ming's will body was smashed apart. In the next moment, he withdrew from the world of will, his entire body covered in a cold sweat.

It was too painful!

In these three months, Lin Ming had consumed 60 to 70% of Yan Chi and Kai Yan's soul recovery medicines. If it wasn't for the fact that he would obtain pure soul energy to nourish his will after extinguishing an Emperor Will, then Lin Ming would have already collapsed.

"These medicines, I should use them sparingly..."

Lin Ming swallowed down half of a soul restoring pill and also pulled out a top-grade Blood Demon Crystal, immediately going into meditation. Not only did he not feel fear facing the Prime Emperor force field, but he was instead filled with a brilliant fighting spirit. The Prime Emperor force field was able to temper the will body; it was the best whetting stone to help form his battle spirit.

....

Time quietly passed. In the blink of an eye, four months passed since Lin Ming entered the Road of Emperor.

Outside of the Blood Slaughter Steppes, the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss continued unabated. The scope and magnitude of the vibrations had weakened by a great deal now. Now, there would usually only be a large-scale vibration at the Skysplit Towers every two or three days. If this continued, then it was estimated that the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss would completely finish in another three months.

Afterward, there would be a stable period of two or three months. One could enter the massive Eternal Demon Abyss and explore the most infamous death zone of the Holy Demon Continent.

From High Lords to the peak talents among the challengers, everyone was preparing for this journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss.

“I heard that the High Lords of all the Skysplit Towers are planning to explore the area 1200 miles from the edge.” Within the Heavenly Cloud Tower, several top ranked martial artists of the third floor were discussing the journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss.

The thousand miles around the immediate edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss was an absolute death zone. Even a bird would find it impossible to cross. There was no point in desiring or wishing for this region. Anyone who entered would die – not even High Lords were exceptions.

But a distance of 1000 to 1200 miles was a red danger zone. This chances of dying here were relatively high, but the harvests were correspondingly rich.

“1200 miles? Amazing, those people are too bold. These people are really dreaming big, they would even risk their lives like this.”

“Even the direct descendants of Holy Lands like Zhuan Yu, Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and famous High Lords like Polaris Tower’s High Lord Bloodfire, White Stone Tower’s High Lord Three Eyes – all of them are planning to enter this area. There’s nothing more to say about it. Without risk, it's only possible to live a mediocre life.”

The road of a martial artist was paved with layers of obstacles and dangers. Even a top Emperor level talent was no exception. If they turned timid in their adventures and hesitated to grasp every lucky chance they could, then the halo of their Emperor level talent would slowly fade away until they ended up only being able to become a high stage Life Destruction master, never being able to take that final step.

“Yes, ah, there’s also that Polaris Tower’s Lin Ming. That fellow is simply a monstrous freak. He’s a Titled Asura! For the last 10,000 years there have only been 30 to 40 Titled Asuras even with all 12 Skysplit Towers combined. I wonder whether or not he will enter that 1200 mile region.

“He should be entering it. I heard that he already entered the Road of Emperor. When he comes out, I have no idea just how strong he’ll be. I wonder how he compares to Heavenly Cloud Tower’s Duanmu Qun?”

“Lin Ming entered the Road of Emperor and Duanmu Qun also entered the Road of Emperor. So have Exquisite Tower’s Lan Xin, Five Color Tower’s Zhuan Yu, Great Ax Tower’s Hei Shi, and also other famous talents, all of them have entered the Road of Emperor. Each and every one of them are monstrous geniuses. I have no idea who will have the greatest improvements after coming out!”

As the two martial artists were talking, a sound transmitting talisman lit in front of them, appearing especially bright in the dark hall.

“Oh? Great Ax Tower’s Hei Shi just came out! His cultivation has risen from a one-star Demon King to a two-star Demon King! That is just his cultivation too, I wonder how much his moves and Concepts have improved by. This Road of Emperor is even better for improving one’s moves and Concepts!”

The martial artist who spoke was obviously filled with envy.

The Skysplit Towers gathered all the peak killing path talents of the entire Holy Demon Continent. It could be said that there were more geniuses there than dogs in the world. Cultivation was not the only factor in one’s combat prowess, but it was an important factor. A two-star Demon King was a bit abnormal. Much less, Hei Shi’s Concepts and moves had most likely improved too. It was hard to imagine just how terrifyingly high his combat strength had risen to.

“Before Hei Shi entered Skysplit Tower he was already a bit better than the weakest High Lord. After coming out, he can probably fight on par with an upper middle ranked High Lord.

Normally, a High Lord’s talent was far less than that of a peak challenger talent. It was because the peak talents nearly all originated from Holy Lands, so they never desired or planned on staying in Skysplit Tower and becoming High Lords. Only those with ordinary backgrounds that were also willing to submit themselves to the Blood Slaughter Steppes’ supreme rulers could become a High Lord.

Thus, as long as these Holy Land descendants stayed for long enough, their strength would sooner or later surpass the High Lords’.

“This is too incredible. The last 10 years of the Blood Slaughter Steppes challengers have talents that far surpass the past generations’. Even Polaris Tower’s Feng Shen is said to have entered the Road of Emperor. The sect behind him should have paid no small price for this.

The martial artists of the Blood Slaughter Steppes were all looking forwards to a few months from now when all these peak talents would begin exiting one at a time. That would truly be a blooming moment for all of these geniuses. As for the Eternal Demon Abyss, that would be the true test for all of these individuals. At that time, who was a True Dragon, who was a fake, all of these would be made brutally clear.

Four months passed, and then in the blink of an eye, the fifth month passed too. Feng Shen exited! And then Lan Xin also exited!

These peerless proud sons and daughters of heavens, each of them had scarily prodigious backgrounds. Feng Shen’s background ranked slightly worse amongst them, but he was still from a Holy Land.

Facing this group of characters, the high level personnel of the Blood Slaughter Steppes naturally didn't dare to do anything to them. Now when they returned to Skysplit Tower, their strength would surpass a great number of High Lords. It would become increasingly difficult for the Blood Slaughter Steppes to control them.

However, these various Holy Lands weren't unreasonable. After this journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss, they would all have their respective descendants leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

At this time, when these Holy Land descendants left, those challengers who had talent a level lower than them and had also pledged their allegiance to Skysplit Tower would become new High Lords, replacing all those that died within the Enteral Demon Abyss.

In this way, this generation of challengers would be considered finished. Then, the Blood Slaughter Steppes would welcome a new generation of young heroic elites, starting the cycle anew once again.

Five months later, on the 160th day, besides Duanmu Qun and Lin Ming, every other challenger had made their exit.

Their cultivation had significantly improved. And in comparison to their relative cultivation, their comprehensive combat strength rose even more!

All of these martial artists burned with a brilliant fighting spirit. They all impatiently desired to go to the Eternal Demon Abyss to prove themselves.

Normally, all of these top geniuses had great pride and belief in themselves. After entering the Road of Emperor, they all believed they had perceived the greatest profound and mystical principles from within, and that their increased strength was also the greatest. They earnestly wanted to compete with other young heroic elites and see just who had obtained the greatest benefits from the Road of Emperor.

This could be considered the proof of talent.

For those martial artists that wished to, they really did compete with each other. Their combat strength had truly risen, and this was mainly reflected in their moves, comprehension of Concepts, and cultivation. Without doubt, when these individuals were given the choice to take two different paths within the Road of Emperor, all of them had stepped onto the path of Emperor stone tablets instead of the path of will lights.

Even Duanmu Qun was the same.

Within Heavenly Cloud Tower's Road of Emperor, Duanmu Qun gasped, his face pale and his body shaking with weakness. He took out a pill from his spatial ring and swallowed it. After meditating for some time, some color was finally restored to his complexion.

"My Road of Emperor… has also reached the limit." Duanmu Qun let out a long breath, shaking his head. He realized that this was the furthest he would be able to go.

Chapter 622 – Forming a Battle Spirit

Chapter 622 – Forming a Battle Spirit

…

…

…

"This is the 21st stone tablet. I've stayed here for a full month and 10 days and only just managed to break past it…"

Recalling the experience of these last 40 days, Duanmu Qun felt a lingering fear. These stone tablets were not as simple as they seemed. Once anyone touched upon them with their perception, they would have to withstand the terrifying impact force from the stone tablets. Let alone comprehending the mysteries within these stone tablets, touching their perception on these stone tablets could grievously injure them!

Walking all the way down, of the 20 stone tablets he had passed through earlier, the pressure would increase with every one. The first 10 stone tablets weren't anything, he had easily passed those. For the 10 after that, the difficult had risen by a great margin, but Duanmu Qun had still been able to just barely cope with that.

After the 20th, the 21st stone tablet was the true terror. Duanmu Qun had spent a total of 40 days on this single stone tablet alone.

Persisting until he had broken this last stone tablet, it was already the limit that Duanmu Qun could withstand.

As he looked at all the Emperor stone tablets that lay in front of him, Duanmu Qun could only sigh in frustration. The disparity was just too great!

Just the 21st stone tablet had caused him to exhaust every last ounce of his potential. The difficulty of those stone tablets ahead could be imagined.

Actually, Duanmu Qun didn't even know how many stone tablets were in front of him.

The Road of Emperor. After completing this road, one would become a Peerless Emperor.

This was certainly not a lie!

Moreover, those Emperor level powerhouses that were born from the Road of Emperor were surely not the ordinary kind, but those existences that peered down from the very pinnacle of strength!

"There's no limit in this world; no matter how strong you are, there is always someone higher. I thought that my talent far surpassed every other heroic young elite of the Blood Slaughter Steppes, but I never that I would be pressured by a mere Lin Ming. If I was compared to those talents from ancient times, I would be even more pathetic!" Duanmu Qun shook his head in self-deprecation. This Road of Emperor was most likely constructed for those young talents of ancient times to gain experience. What he had seen was only the tip of the iceberg, and yet he had reached his limits. Just how strong could those young heroic elites of ancient times have been?

"I should leave now. After being in the Road of Emperor for 160 days, the increase of my strength has been immense. I wonder how I did compared to Lin Ming?"

Besides Lin Ming, Duanmu Qun was recognized as the number one talent of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. His background was that of the quasi sixth-grade sect, the Divine Wood Holy Land. He himself was a Fey, and his understandings of Laws had reached an extremely high degree. His perception was incomparably monstrous, and with his young age, he had already thoroughly studied his Divine Wood Holy Land's core cultivation methods.

The Fey had a naturally superior compatibility with Laws than humans, and in addition to being personally directed and taught by the three-star Fey Emperor, the Highest Elder of the Divine Wood Holy Land, Duanmu Qun's attainments in the Concepts of Space and Time were very high. In terms of the Concepts of Water and Wood, he was also satisfactory. In the comprehension of Concepts, he was confident that he wouldn’t lose to anyone.

Duanmu Qun thought that even if his overall talents were inferior to Lin Ming’s, that didn’t mean he was weaker. After all, he was a bit older.

Moreover, ignoring other aspects of talent, just in terms of the comprehension of Laws, Duanmu Qun felt he was above Lin Ming.

And in this Road of Emperor, it specifically tested one’s perception and comprehension of Laws. The stronger one was in these aspects, the more truths and mysteries they would be able to grasp from these Emperor stone tablets.

Towards the 21st stone tablet, even with Duanmu Qun’s understanding of Laws and Concepts, he had already exhausted everything he had. He very much wanted to know just how far Lin Ming had gone.

“Lin Ming, I wonder which stone tablet you’ve managed to reach? If you haven’t reached 20, then I will truly be disappointed… after leaving Skysplit Tower, I will be looking forwards to a match with you!” Duanmu Qun thought aloud, his eyes flashing with a vivid fighting spirit.

The average person would have thought that it was sad to be born in the same era as a monstrous genius, but Duanmu Qun didn’t think so. If he sat alone on the highest peak with nothing but his own desolate solitude, then that would only be an immeasurably chilly position, and he would be doing nothing more than wasting his own potential. On the other hand, if he had a rival, then both of them could try to surpass the other and they could both make great strides of progress beside each other.

This was the self-confidence that belonged to a true top talent.

After being in the Road of Emperor for 161 days, Duanmu Qun finally left!

Duanmu Qun's exit caused a great stir within Heavenly Cloud Tower. Even the nearby Skysplit Towers were made aware of this news.

A rumor was passed on that after Duanmu Qun left the Road of Emperor, his every action would cause the power of space around him to be restlessly aroused.

This was an extremely high boundary that would only occur when one's understandings of Laws reached a terrifying level. Like an order being followed once given, this was a similar truth. Duanmu Qun was far away from reaching this sort of boundary, but it was still enough to scare everyone.

The current Duanmu Qun gave off an unfathomably deep feeling.

At this point, of all the geniuses that had entered the Road of Emperor, the only one that hadn't yet come out was Lin Ming. This made everyone especially want to know just what sorts of improvements Lin Ming had made within the Road of Emperor.

……………………

In the world of will, a dazzling flame flashed past. Lin Ming had become one with his spear, and he was like a meteor as he passed through the will body of an Emperor level powerhouse.

Bang!

The will body shattered into pieces, becoming countless streams of light that slowly flowed into Lin Ming;'s body. A feeling like a spring breeze spread to every corner of Lin Ming's body.

"I've been in the Road of Emperor for five months and finally managed to adapt to the suppression of the Prime Emperor martial intent!"

Lin Ming withdrew from the world of will and swallowed a soul recovery pill.

At this time, all of the top-grade soul recovery pills had been eaten by him. Now whenever he withdrew from the world of will he could only take medium-grade and high-grade soul recovery pills to revitalize his soul. Luckily, every time that he destroyed the will body of an Emperor level powerhouse, a wisp of their will would remain and flow into him, a pure power of soul that was able to repair the damage done to his will body. Otherwise, there would probably have been hidden wounds left behind in Lin Ming's spiritual sea already.

Looking at the endless will lights that extended to the far distance in front of him, Lin Ming took out a top-grade Blood Demon Crystal and began to meditate again.

For five months, he had spent this entire time fighting.

He had to regularly suffer the soul-tearing pain of having his will body ruined. This sort of excruciating pain was even more insufferable than physical bodily pain, much less that he had endured it for five months so far.

"These past days, I still haven't been able to form my own battle spirit, but because I've been using so many top-grade Blood Demon Crystals, my cultivation has risen to a half-step Revolving Core."

Because Lin Ming's foundation was completely solid, he almost wouldn't have a bottleneck from the Xiantian realm to Revolving Core realm. Moreover, top-grade Blood Demon Crystals were originally excellent for making breakthroughs through bottlenecks, so his cultivation had constantly been rising throughout this time.

As for his battle spirit, he still hadn't formed one, but Lin Ming could feel a dim and hazy mist gathering above his spiritual sea. This was pure willpower. Every time his willpower increased through battle, this mist would become richer and thicker.

After another 40 some days passed, Lin Ming had already been in the Road of Emperor for an entire 200 days.

During these 200 days, the pressure of the Prime Emperor force field constantly grew heavier, but the growth of Lin Ming's willpower was even quicker. This allowed him to adapt to the massive pressure within the world of will.

The mist within his spiritual sea became increasingly thick, to the point that it nearly turned into droplets.

Cha!

A beaming bolt of lightning cut through the world of will, completely crushing an Emperor Will and turning it into the pure power of soul.

"Finally, I've defeated the will body of a three-star Emperor level powerhouse..."

Lin Ming fell to his knees, using the Purple Comet Spear to prop himself up. From his head to his toes, there wasn't a single place that wasn't a mess. His left shoulder was nearly completely ruined, his chest was stained red, blood gushing out of it, and his organs were in chaos.

If this was the real world, in this situation he would have long ago lost any and all combat strength.

Lin Ming had been fighting this three-star Emperor level powerhouse's will body for a full 10 days, and today, he had finally defeated it.

A pure energy flowed into Lin Ming's body, quickly repairing his broken body. This sort of restoration brought along a wonderful feeling with it. The pure power of soul was like a quiet drizzle of rain falling down on him, making him feel happy and comfortable.

Lin Ming immersed himself in this comfortable and wonderful feeling for an unknown time. Suddenly, there was a pain between his eyebrows, as if all the strength of his body was rushing to that single point, able to erupt at any moment!

"Mm... this is..."

Lin Ming's eyes flashed open. He was surprised to find that the thick mist that hovered over his spiritual sea had suddenly contracted in upon itself!

"Could this be…" Lin Ming suddenly thought of a possibility, a faint sense of incredulity filling his heart.

"Hahaha! Boy, congratulations! You've succeeded!" Demonshine's jazzy voice sounded out in Lin Ming's mind.

"Battle spirit? Is this really a battle spirit?" Lin Ming was ecstatic with happiness. He stared with wide eye as amazing changes began happening to the thick fog within his spiritual sea. Among these changes, a faint pain of will spread through Lin Ming's mind. However, this sort of pain only made him feel inexplicably excited.

Nothing was impossible to those that were willing to try hard enough. Lin Ming had spent almost an entire seven months, suffering massive pain to his soul to constantly temper his will and mold his battle spirit. And today, he was finally successful!

To do this, he had sacrificed his cultivation speed and didn't hesitate to give up perceiving the Emperor stone tablets. Now, at this moment when his battle spirit formed before his eyes, Lin Ming felt that all of this sacrifice and pain was well worth it!

Part of the reason why Lin Ming could form his own battle spirit was his effort, but the majority of it was all because of his incomparably firm will and mindset.

Lin Ming's heart of martial arts was originally extremely tough and impervious. In addition to repeatedly swallowing soul fragments from the Magic Cube and also cultivating the 'Overbearing Soul Tactic', not only had his willpower strengthened, but after obtaining the Samsara martial intent, this had caused a qualitative increase in Lin Ming's willpower.

In terms of the force of his will, there was no martial artist at Lin Ming's realm that could compare with him. Similarly, soul attacks were nothing more than a joke in front of him.

If it wasn't for Lin Ming originally having such talent of will, then tempering his will would have been useless to begin with. In fact, constantly overdrawing the power of his will would have done nothing but damage his mind.

"This is... a battle spirit?"

As Lin Ming looked at the skies over his spiritual sea, he could see that the mist there seemed much more pale, and in the center of that swirling mist seemed to be a vague, tiny azure spear; it seemed unreal, obscure, and illusory.

This spear was as thin as a chopstick and only half a foot long. The spearhead was the size of a knuckle, and the entire shaft was azure, shining with a cold light.

"This is my battle spirit?"

This was the first time that Lin Ming had seen a battle spirit. The memories he had absorbed were very vague concerning battle spirits. As for what they looked like, he didn't know.

Demonshine chuckled, "Hehe, that's right. Every battle spirit has a different shape. Some people have battle spirits that are shaped like weapons they often use, for instance, spears, sabers, and swords. There are also some people who have battle spirits that are like the elements they specialize in, such as flames, ice crystals, thunder bolts, and others. There are even some specialized battle spirits, ones that look like beasts, plants, furnaces, and so on. Take good care of your battle spirit and raise it well! Your battle spirit is just like a baby right now, but even so, it is still extremely terrifying!

"You are truly an abnormal freak! You formed your own battle spirit and you haven't even reached the Revolving Core realm yet. I have no idea just how terrifying you will be when this battle spirit grows up!"

Chapter 623 – Exit

Chapter 623 – Exit

…

…

…

Within the black darkness, a cold light flashed. A low-grade earth-step treasure sword was tossed into the air where it was slowly spinning around.

But at this moment, the treasure sword spinning in the air began to tremble. The air around it spun into a sharp vortex, causing even the space to tremble. With a shrill grinding noise, the earth-step treasure sword actually exploded in the air, turning into countless shards of metal!

After being twisted apart in this vortex, the metal fragments began to follow the flow of wind, causing the vortex to shine with a keen light. With a faint howling, space itself seemed to be torn apart. If a martial artist were to be placed with this sharp vortex they would have longed been ground into a meat patty.

“This is the striking power of a battle spirit.”

Within the world of will, a battle spirit was the most terrifying weapon. But in the real world, a battle spirit actually couldn’t be used to directly attack; it had to be attached to some material object. A moment ago, Lin Ming had attached the battle spirit to the air, causing a sharp vortex that had twisted the earth-step treasure to pieces.

Attaching a battle spirit to the air wasn’t considered a strong use of it. The strongest use of a battle spirit was when it was attached to a treasure and used in techniques. Lin Ming hoped to find a rival to battle so that he could see just how far his battle spirit could go.

“I wonder how much my strength has increased by...” Lin Ming thought out loud as he stopped spurring his battle spirit, causing the metal fragments to immediately fall to the floor.

“Hehe, after comprehending your own battle spirit, your defensive ability, true essence thickness, and speed, none of those have increased by too much. But, your striking power has absolutely risen by an astronomical degree. Even though your battle spirit is only in its elementary form, it is still terrifying. When it grows in the future, you won’t even need to move. Just send out your battle spirit and it will be able to kill others without them even seeing!

“Afterwards, when your battle spirit reaches the Large Success stage, you can even have it attach to your armor to enhance your defense. In short, as you grow stronger, this battle spirit will become an increasingly important aspect of your strength. This is also the reason that when martial artists are at the same cultivation boundary, the martial artist that is stronger in their world of will is much more respected and feared. This is because their capacity for growth is greater. Now, you’ve comprehended your own battle spirit before you’ve even reached Revolving Core. The room for your growth is... limitless.” Demonshine sighed, truly envious of Lin Ming’s lucky chance.

“I wonder if I’m a match for High Lord Limitless Demon now...” Lin Ming had been on the Road of Emperor for more than half a year now. His cultivation and techniques hadn’t increased by much, but his striking power had leapt up because of the formation of his battle spirit. Now, if he faced High Lord Limitless Demon, he still wasn’t too sure of his chances.

However, even if he could deal with High Lord Limitless Demon as he was now, Lin Ming wouldn’t have gone against him at this moment. He still wanted to borrow High Lord Limitless Demon’s name in order to enter the Eternal Demon Abyss. It was far too early to kill High Lord Limitless Demon.

“It shouldn’t be too long until the Eternal Demon Abyss opens; I don’t have enough time to make a breakthrough to the Revolving Core realm. With the time I have left, it’s much better for me to use it to sharpen my battle spirit!”

Lin Ming continued towards the next will light If he wasn't able to test the power of this battle spirit in the real world, then he could test it out in the world of will.

After entering into the world of will once again, Lin Ming felt something completely different.

He felt that his body and surroundings had become remarkably real, with almost no difference from the real world. His perception had become incomparably acute, and strength filled his body. His speed, his thick true essence, his comprehension of Laws, everything had come back!

In front of him was the will body of an Emperor level powerhouse. This figure was completely wrapped in a layer of black fog, impossible to clearly see.

"Kill!"

A thought flashed through Lin Ming's mind. Lin Ming hadn't even moved, but an incomparably sharp spear actually appeared in front of him, piercing towards the figure's heart!

Blood sprayed out and the will body slowly faded away, turning into a pure energy that flowed into Lin Ming's body, vitalizing his will.

"This is visualization?"

Lin Ming remembered that feeling just now. As Lin Ming had said, in the world of will, he was god. He could create any weapon, vicious beast, or if he was strong enough, he could even form a God Beast!

And these forms he visualized, these weapons and vicious beasts, they could become the most dangerous and deadly of tools.

"The difference in the world of will between those that have a battle spirit and those that don't is simply too great. Before I formed my battle spirit, I would have to suffer several grievous wounds and risk myself in order to destroy an Emperor level powerhouse's will body. But now, after I formed my battle spirit, I can actually instantly kill them."

In truth, what Lin Ming had destroyed was not the true will of an Emperor, but rather a similar Emperor Will formed from energy that the Road of Emperor created based on its memories of these ancient Emperors.

These energy forms had their own attack power, but they were naturally inferior to the true will of an Emperor level powerhouse. Otherwise, even if Lin Ming had comprehended a battle spirit it would still have been impossibly difficult for him to win.

Next, Lin Ming continued sweeping his way through. With a battle spirit, these Emperor Wills that didn't have a battle spirit were completely outmatched.

In such battles, the elementary form of Lin Ming's battle spirit within his spiritual sea constantly solidified, continuously growing.

Feeling his battle spirit growing stronger, Lin Ming eagerly awaited fighting in the real world; he wanted to see just how much his strength had increased by.

On this day, as Lin Ming stepped into a new world of will, he suddenly felt a terrifying pressure fall on him, causing all the blood in his body to come to a standstill even as it swelled up in his chest.

Looking up, Lin Ming could see a blurry face in the skies, looking illusory and cloudy.

"Junior, you are not my match. Stop here, and return."

A voice echoed out from the endless horizon, reverberating in Lin Ming's ear like a thunderclap.

Lin Ming was shocked as he heard this voice. Before now, he had already destroyed the will bodies of dozens of Emperor level powerhouses, but none of them had ever spoken. Because of this, Lin Ming had subconsciously come to believe that these will bodies were nothing more than dead objects or simulations conjured up by the Road of Emperor. Otherwise, if top talents destroyed so many Emperor Wills when they came in, then these Emperor Wills should have already been used up.

In this world of will, could there really be a true wisp of remnant soul from an Emperor level powerhouse?

This thought just formed in Lin Ming's mind when an overwhelming pressure came crashing down on him from above, causing his body to shatter into pieces. In the next moment, Lin Ming had withdrawn from the world of will, his body streaming with a cold sweat.

The disparity was too great!

From the last will world to this one, the difficulty had soared up by countless times!

"This is an Emperor level powerhouse that had formed his own battle spirit, he might even have left a wisp of his consciousness inside the will light. I am absolutely not his match."

The difference just now was like the difference between the mud and clouds; it was so great that Lin Ming couldn't even summon the thought of resistance before he was destroyed.

Had he reached his limit?

Lin Ming looked at the will lights that stretched far off into the distance and shook his head. He still had such a long way that he hadn't yet traveled but he had already reached his limit. He wasn't even close!

"Boy! Are you still not happy enough!?" Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, Demonshine jumped out and grouchily said, "The road of will lights far surpasses the stone tablets in terms of difficulty, but now you've even crossed through a good half of it! What more do you want? You're just a half-step Revolving Core boy, if you so easily crossed the Road of Emperor then what good would it be?"

The Road of Emperor not only included the road of will lights but also other sections. But currently, Lin Ming had chosen the road of will lights. If he entered the Road of Emperor next time, then this would be where he would continue from.

Before he finished walking this road, it was impossible for him to step onto the Road of Emperor stone tablets. Thus, there was no more point in staying here.

"This is the end so far!"

Lin Ming took a deep breath. It was about time for him to exit.

In the blink of an eye, Lin Ming had stayed within the Road of Emperor for seven months now. Unconsciously, his birthday had passed yet again. After leaving the Road of Emperor, Lin Ming was now 20 years old.

This time, the eruptions of the Eternal Demon Abyss had died down. In another two months, the energies would stabilize and the 12 Skysplit Towers would open the entrance to the Eternal Demon Abyss. At this time, all of the outstanding young elites and High Lords would be able to enter the Eternal Demon Abyss to seek their own lucky chances.

When Lin Ming exited, it naturally aroused a great amount of interest.

To them, Lin Ming would be a powerful competitor.

The Eternal Demon Abyss was a land of death. Since ancient times, countless heroic young elites and extraordinary High Lords would perish here. Some would die from the danger zones of the Enteral Demon Abyss, and some would die at the hands of other martial artists. In fact, this second reason was one of the major reasons for death in the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, there were lucky chances abound, but there were also no rules. Killing someone and stealing their wealth was common, especially in the new era after an eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss when there were even more lucky chances and treasures to be found. Before entering, many martial artists were already cleaning their murder weapons.

To martial artists that walked the killing path, such an environment was sure to be a frigid and bloody battle.

However, those martial artists that qualified to enter the Eternal Demon Abyss were either peerless geniuses or High Lords, all of them hardened veterans. Despite how powerful one was, facing such a great group of tigers, one had to be careful, otherwise it was possible to end up being the one killed instead.

So, investigating the information of other people that would enter was also one of the necessary preparations for entering the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Lan Xin, Duanmu Qun, Blackstone, and other top talents were naturally the focus of these investigations. As for High Lord Bloodfire, High Lord Three Eyes, and those like them, they had been High Lords for a long time so there was no need to mention them.

But as for Lin Ming, as a rising star that had killed High Lord Heian, he too was the focus of attention.

“Before Lin Ming entered the Road of Emperor he had strength equal to an upper middle High Lord of Polaris Tower. After leaving the Road of Emperor, he probably has strength equal to Polaris Tower’s top three High Lords!”

Within Heavenly Cloud Tower, the dozen or so High Lords had their minions researching their competitors’ strength in order to prepare themselves for the Eternal Demon Abyss. Naturally, they mentioned Lin Ming.

Another High Lord said, “Of the 12 Skysplit Towers, Polaris Tower’s High Lords are only in the lower middle ranks. But, our Heavenly Cloud Tower’s High Lords are overall ranked number one. Lin Ming is strong, but if he were placed in our Heavenly Cloud Tower group then he wouldn't be so exaggerated. Lin Ming is a powerful competitor of ours, but we don't need to especially fear him."

"I wonder how that Duanmu Qun and Lan Xin would compare with him. Especially that Duanmu Qun. I heard that his strength wasn't necessarily any worse than Lin Ming's to begin with. After entering the Road of Emperor, his cultivation rose, not to mention his comprehension of Laws. His harvest in there was certainly great."

As these martial artists were speaking, a sound transmitting talisman suddenly lit in the main hall. As the leader of these High Lords heard the news, a strange look suddenly crossed his face.

Chapter 624 – Entering the Eternal Demon Abyss

Chapter 624 – Entering the Eternal Demon Abyss

…

…

…

"What happened?" The others asked as they noticed the strange expression on the High Lord's face, puzzled by what it meant.

"Lin Ming exited the Road of Emperor."

"He finally came out? That fellow went in for seven whole months…" The Road of Emperor was different from the King's Cage. If one wasn't strong, then it was impossible to stay within the King's Cage for a long time. But, the Road of Emperor was different. If one wanted to, they could procrastinate inside for a long time, thus, the time stayed within didn't correspond to one's strength.

"But… what I find strange is that Lin Ming didn't break through to the Revolving Core realm." The leader of the High Lord frowned, a bit skeptical.

"What? Seven months and he still hasn't broken through to Revolving Core?" All of the martial artists were surprised upon hearing this. Immediately, joy flooded their expressions. To them, Lin Ming not breaking through to Revolving Core was wonderful news.

To a top talent, Revolving Core wasn't a great bottleneck; it was just a matter of time before breaking through, let alone after entering the Road of Emperor where it was easy to increase one's strength.

Lin Ming had been in the Road of Emperor for seven months. After such a long time, they had thought that Lin Ming would have broken through to Revolving Core. None of them imagined that he would still be stranded at a half-step Revolving Core.

Every great boundary of the essence gathering system was divided into four smaller boundaries – these were early, middle, late, and extreme. From extreme Xiantian to half-step Revolving Core wasn't even a small boundary. Half-step Revolving Core, in truth, was just the peak of extreme Xiantian.

After Lin Ming entered the Road of Emperor, his cultivation only rose by half a small boundary. Compared to Lan Xin, Duanmu Qun, and the other geniuses, he had been completely overshadowed!

"How could this be?" A martial artist said with an inconceivable look. He was already accustomed to the fact that Lin Ming would create miracles. Now that Lin Ming had such a poor performance, it really did feel weird.

"Hehe, this isn't too strange. He either met a bottleneck of some kind, or else his perception was poor and he couldn't understand the Emperor stone tablets!"

An Imp martial artist chuckled. He was Heavenly Cloud Tower's High Lord Black Ash. Amongst the 16 High Lords of Heavenly Cloud Tower, High Lord Black Ash only ranked ninth. He hadn't been too confident that he would be able to deal with Lin Ming once he reached the Revolving Core realm. After all, a martial artist going from Xiantian to Revolving Core was a tremendous leap. But now that he heard that Lin Ming hadn't broken through to Revolving Core, he was immediately filled with confidence again.

"Don't be careless. Lin Ming's perception is absolutely not bad, otherwise it would have been impossible for him to comprehend the Concepts of Space and Time. Who knows just what that fellow was messing around with in the Road of Emperor." The head High Lord said, doubtful.

“Brother Cloud Demon, you are far too cautious. Your strength can be ranked in Heavenly Cloud Tower’s top five; why would you care so much about a junior? It’s true that Lin Ming is talented, but he’s far too young. Half-step Revolving Core… humph. During this adventure into the Eternal Demon Abyss, he had better not run into us, because if he does… hehe…”

High Lord Black Ash maliciously smiled, not bothering to hide his killing intent. Lin Ming’s name could be said to resound like thunder within Polaris Tower, but in Heavenly Cloud Tower, his reputation was far less astonishing. Whenever stories were passed on, there were bound to be exaggerations. The overall strength of Polaris Tower’s 12 High Lords was also much worse than that of Heavenly Cloud Tower’s.

High Lord Cloud Demon hesitated for a moment, not speaking anymore. Whether or not Lin Ming had obtained any other benefits within the Road of Emperor, the truth was that he still hadn’t broken through to Revolving Core.

“Good, we’ll stop talking about Lin Ming for now. We will move on to another powerhouse that needs our attention more – High Lord Three Eyes!”

Mentioning High Lord Three Eyes, even the arrogant High Lord Black Ash’s smile faded away. High Lord Three Eyes had been famous for a very long time, he wasn’t someone that a junior like Lin Ming could compare to.

……………..

Polaris Tower, Tower Master’s Grand Hall –

In a dimly lit hall, the black-cloaked Polaris Tower Master was sitting back in an obsidian chair, frowning as he looked at Lin Ming in front of him.

Beside Lin Ming were several other High Lords of Polaris Tower, they were all members that would be entering the Eternal Demon Abyss this time. Before Lin Ming had left the Road of Emperor, there were countless rumors circulating about Polaris Tower concerning just how much Lin Ming’s strength would have grown. Some people believed that Lin Ming, after exiting the Road of Emperor, would have a comprehensive combat strength equal to Polaris Tower's top three High Lords, that he might even be able to equally battle with High Lord Bloodfire.

However, the truth was that after returning to Skysplit Tower, Lin Ming's cultivation had only risen by half a small boundary; this was unexpected for everyone.

This was far too poor a result. Even if his comprehension of Laws had risen some, there was no reason for his cultivation to have increased so little.

If this had happened to someone else, then this could be barely acceptable. But, Lin Ming was a Titled Asura, a pinnacle level talent. After staying in the King's Cage, his strength had risen to a horrifying degree. Then, after entering the Road of Emperor which was even more terrifying than the King's Cage, how could his strength not have risen even more?

"Lin Ming, what did you experience in the Road of Emperor that delayed you for so long? How come I feel that your strength hasn't risen by much?"

The Tower Master asked after a period of silence. This time, in allowing Lin Ming to enter the Road of Emperor, he had also freed Lin Ming from the order of not breaking through to the next realm. All of this was in order to prepare Lin Ming to break through to the Revolving Core realm. If Lin Ming broke through to the Revolving Core realm then the slave seal he planted would become unstable, but for this journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss, the Tower Master was willing to risk this danger. But, he hadn't expected that Lin Ming would laze around in the Road of Emperor for seven months and only be at a half-step Revolving Core.

Lin Ming bowed and expressionlessly said "Most of the time I spent in the Road of Emperor was for perceiving the Emperor stone tablets. I also made some further comprehension in Laws, but besides that, I didn't have any special experiences."

"Mm…"

The Tower Master didn't suspect that Lin Ming would be lying. He had planted his slave seal in Lin Ming's spiritual sea and could still clearly feel it. With the slave seal in place, it was impossible for Lin Ming to lie to him.

'Seven months perceiving the Emperor stone tablets and yet you've only obtained such little improvement. Even when Kai Yang entered the Road of Emperor, his results were far more than this. Lin Ming's perception should be far superior to his, otherwise how could he possibly have comprehended the Concepts of Space and Time? Did I damage Lin Ming's perception when I planted the slave seal in him?'

Arguably, a slave seal shouldn't injure a martial artist's soul. Someone with a slave seal planted within them, besides being absolutely obedient to Polaris Tower's Tower Master, shouldn't have any other differences. However, the mind and soul were two of the most difficult existences to decipher. Perhaps this slave seal really had damaged his perception somehow.

"You may leave now." The Tower Master waved his hand.

"Yes." Lin Ming faintly answered before excusing himself.

"Sir Chief High Lord, when Feng Shen entered the Road of Emperor, his cultivation rose from an early one-star Fey King to a two-star Fey King and his total combat strength also rose by a great deal. When I saw him one month ago, I could clearly feel the faint power of Laws emanating from him. I estimate that Feng Shen already has strength equal to our Polaris Tower's top five ranked High Lords." After Lin Ming left, another High Lord in the hall reported on Feng Shen's results from the Road of Emperor.

Feng Shen was a Holy Land descendant after all, he was completely incomparable with Yan Chi and Maha. Before entering the Road of Emperor, Feng Shen only had strength comparable to the lowest ranked High Lords, but now, he had strength equal to the fourth or fifth ranked High Lord. This was a terrifying rate of progress.

The High Lord continued to say, “If we change Feng Shen’s cultivation to that of a human’s, then it would be the same as rising from the early Revolving Core to the peak of the middle Revolving Core. In five months, Feng Shen’s cultivation has risen by one and a half small boundaries in the Revolving Core realm. But, Lin Ming used seven months to rise by just half a small boundary in the Xiantian realm. The difference between these two is far too great!”

“It truly is difficult to understand…”

Another High Lord followed. His meaning was that Lin Ming’s performance had really hit rock bottom. It was difficult to imagine that this situation would happen to a Titled Asura.

“There are some geniuses that suddenly exhaust all their potential, it isn’t too surprising.” In a corner of the hall, High Lord Shengong spoke. He didn’t have any great grudge with Lin Ming, but because of the matter concerning Xing Tian and High Lord Heian, if Lin Ming ran into bad luck then High Lord Shengong would definitely be among those cheering.

In the seat of the Chief High Lord, the Tower Master was silent throughout. Seven months for just a small half boundary… and in the Xiantian realm too. To an Emperor level talent, this was something they could accomplish even without entering the Road of Emperor.

Some could say that Lin Ming was lying somehow or had even intentionally failed, but there was no reason for him to do so. First because he had a slave seal planted within him, and second because it was impossible.

‘If his perception was really affected by my slave seal… then this Lin Ming’s value has truly dropped. If I can’t raise him then there’s no point wasting one of my limited slave seals on him. I might as well give up on him. This time, I’ll let him enter the 1200 mile danger zone and have him seek some lucky chances for me. This can be considered a good enough use for trash.

‘If he can find something then that would be for the best. If he can’t find anything then he has no right to continue any further. He can fend for himself from then on.’

As the Tower Master was thinking this, he stood up and dourly said, “There is still two months until the Eternal Demon Abyss opens. Everyone, prepare as much as you can. This is everything for today!”

………………

As the time of the Eternal Demon Abyss opening approached, Lin Ming spent most of his time sitting on the stone bed of his practice area, meditating and tempering his will at the same time.

It was impossible to use two months to break through to the Revolving Core realm. Since this was how it was, he might as well temper his battle spirit so that he could grow as soon as possible, allowing his striking power to reach the limit.

The martial artists of the 12 Skysplit Towers were also preparing in their respective ways. The weakest of those entering the Eternal Demon Abyss had to be at least at the level of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, otherwise, going in was only a suicide wish. With this massive group of powerhouses gathered together, the fierce battles that would occur could be imagined.

Like this, time quietly passed, and the day that the Eternal Demon Abyss would open finally arrived.

On this day, Lin Ming, as well as all the other martial artists that were entering the Eternal Demon Abyss, gathered on the fourth floor. Besides the 12 High Lords, there was only one of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars who would enter the Eternal Demon Abyss – Feng Shen.

Da Gu and Xun Ji had eventually chosen not to participate in this excursion. Yan Chi, Maha, and Kai Yang had died. As for the other Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, they had left Skysplit Tower, leaving Feng Shen as the only one remaining.

Thus, for Polaris Tower, there would be a total of 13 individuals entering the Eternal Demon Abyss.

The Polaris Tower Master brought everyone to a transmission array on the fourth floor. With a flash of light, everyone arrived at another space.

The Polaris Tower Master glanced over everyone and slowly said, “This is the fifth floor of Skysplit Tower. The entrance to the Eternal Demon Abyss is here.”

Fifth floor…

Lin Ming gasped. He already knew that Polar Skysplit Tower had five floors, but as for what was on the fifth floor, that had always been an enigma to him.

So, it turned out that this was the entrance to the Eternal Demon Abyss…

Chapter 625 – A Gathering of Elites

Chapter 625 – A Gathering of Elites

…

…

…

The Polaris Tower Master led everyone forwards. The fifth floor was not as high as the first four floors, it was only several hundred feet high. As the group walked forwards, it was very quiet. However, there seemed to be a suffocating sense of oppression in the air, forcing the martial artists present to summon energy to resist this pressure.

Lin Ming was very familiar with this pressure.

This pressure was the Heavenly Demon force field.

It wasn't even just the Asura force field or Prime Emperor force field, but rather a fusion of two kinds.

Sha sha sha sha…

The lonely and desolate space echoed with the footsteps of the crowd. When they came to the end of a dark corridor, Lin Ming could see that on both sides of the following path were lamps. These lamps had a number of similarities to the lamps that held the will lights in the Road of Emperor. But, these lights had long since gone out, with nothing more than a thick layer of dust covering them.

After another half hour of walking, the Polaris Tower Master finally stopped. In front of him was a large gate with two doors. This gate was 100 feet high, and the ancient doors were carved with a number of mystical and cryptic patterns. All of the patterns revolving around the center of the gate were carvings of twelve-winged Heavenly Demons. The Heavenly Demon carving stared out with its vacant and godless eyes, its 12 wings recklessly spread out, filling the space around it with a feeling of oppression and mystery.

“We’re here. This is the entrance.”

The Polaris Tower Master gently grabbed the door handles and said, “Flying is prohibited within Skysplit Tower, and the Eternal Demon Abyss is no different. It is located 100,000 feet deep below us. If flying is impossible, then there simply isn’t any way to go down. But… there are some places that are exceptions, such as… here!”

As the Polaris Tower Master spoke he suddenly pushed the doors open. As the doors opened, Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air as he saw the scene inside. Behind these doors was a vast and endless night sky, with bright stars shining everywhere. It was impossible to tell whether these dazzling stars were real or an illusory array formation.

“Go in. This is the only channel to fly into the Eternal Demon Abyss. The 12 Skysplit Towers’ channels are all connected together. Flying to the bottom of this will lead to the true entrance of the Eternal Demon Abyss.”

After the Polaris Tower Master spoke he took the lead and flew into the vast starry sky, his figure instantly disappearing. Soon, he was followed by High Lord Chi Yan and High Lord Shengong…

Lin Ming was the fifth to jump in. After entering this endless starry space, he suddenly felt a terrifyingly rich infernal energy rush at him.

As he went down, the temperature became increasingly low and the infernal energy became increasingly thick.

Lin Ming didn’t use true essence to fly, but completely allowed the force of gravity to pull him down. His speed quickly rose to hundreds of feet per second, and as air whistled in his ears, the infernal energy was becoming thick to the point where it almost condensed into essence.

The Eternal Demon Abyss was over 100,000 deep underground. In addition, Polar Skysplit Tower was originally 60,000 to 70,000 feet above the ground. This meant that the drop down was nearly 200,000 feet, or more than 100 miles.

This was a breathtaking number. After falling down for a long time, Lin Ming felt the several High Lords in front of him begin to slow down. He followed them, using the Concept of Wind to decelerate his speed.

At this depth, the cold air seemed to pierce into the marrow. With every breath, icy crystals would immediately form. If a mortal were to be placed in this environment, they would directly freeze to death.

The further down it was, the colder it became.

At this time, the Polaris Tower Master stopped in midair and started to move in a different direction. Everyone turned to follow him.

Lin Ming casually flew on. The entire space around him was utter darkness without the slightest sound, nothing but an utterly deathly silence.

Raising his head and looking at the skies, he could see stars hanging high in the air. For there to be a vast starry sky underground was truly unbelievable, and yet it was impossible to tell whether this was real or an illusion.

The Polaris Tower master wasn't fast. In just around an hour, they finally fell onto an open space. In this open area, there was a large number of people gathered, all of them either consciously or unconsciously releasing a heartstopping aura. Without a doubt, they were all top masters of Skysplit Tower, either High Lords or Heavenly Demon Seven Stars.

The majority of those present were High Lords with a small number of Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. Of those Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, all of them were top ranked challengers of their Skysplit Towers.

If this were a usual journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss, there wouldn't be so many masters gathered together. But, this time just happened to coincide with an eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss, so the situation had completely changed. Even the Tower Masters of the various Skysplit Towers wouldn't miss out on this chance.

High risk also meant high returns.

"Lin Ming, in front of us are those from Heavenly Cloud Tower and Blue Silver Tower. Both of those Skysplit Towers are stronger than ours. Our Polaris Tower's total strength could only rank eighth or ninth out of the 12 Skysplit Towers. As for that Heavenly Cloud Tower, they are ranked number one. Blue Silver Tower can also be ranked in the top five."

As Lin Ming just touched the ground, he heard High Lord Bloodfire's true essence sound transmission in his ear. After High Lord Bloodfire was controlled by the Polaris Tower Master, he was completely loyal and devoted to him. As for Lin Ming, who was faking being controlled, High Lord Bloodfire regarded him as a 'companion' with complete trust.

"I see. Are there any among them who are stronger than Brother Bloodfire?" Lin Ming casually asked. During this trip into the Eternal Demon Abyss, everyone was a possible enemy. It was necessary to know as much about his potential opponents as possible.

"Of course there are. Those two fellows from Heavenly Cloud Tower, Cloud Demon and Hidden Cloud, are both stronger than me. But there might even be several more than are similar to me. In addition, Heavenly Cloud Tower's Duanmu Qun is not a High Lord but his strength is actually more terrifying than most High Lords'. Duanmu Qun's background is that of a super Holy Land. Before he first entered the Road of Emperor, his strength surpassed Feng Shen by a large margin. Now that has he reentered the Road of Emperor yet again, I fear that his strength might be no less than mine!"

Lin Ming was no stranger to Duanmu Qun's name. With High Lord Bloodfire's description, Lin Ming couldn't help but size up Duanmu Qun. This fellow was slender with an otherworldly handsome appearance. Just by standing there, he seemed to give off a heavenly bright and breezy energy like the fresh spring wind. His face was like jade, his temperament, appearance, strength, everything he had was truly irreproachable.

As Lin Ming looked at him, Duanmu Qun also seemed to sense something. Duanmu turned towards Lin Ming and faintly smiled.

Lin Ming respectfully nodded in return.

In the casual exchange between Duanmu Qun and Lin Ming, many people finally noticed Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was a human. In this crowd of Giant Demons, Fey, Goliaths, and Imps, a human martial artist was very eye-catching. In addition to his age and cultivation, his status was easily known.

To be able to stay in the King's Cage for a full 108 days. This point alone made Lin Ming well known throughout the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes.

"He's Lin Ming?"

"Yes, that should be right."

"He hasn't broken through to the Revolving Core realm. How strange..."

To a pinnacle Emperor level talent, from Xiantian to Revolving Core, even without going into the Road of Emperor, it would only take one or two years to make this breakthrough. Lin Ming had been in the Road of Emperor for seven months, but he had only risen by half a small boundary. None of this made sense to anyone.

"Hehe, let's test him out." An Imp martial artist began to move towards Lin Ming as he spoke. He was Heavenly Cloud Tower's High Lord Black Ash. As he moved, he was preparing to use his aura to suppress Lin Ming in order to force out a bit of his true ability and see the depth of his strength.

“Don’t stir up trouble!” High Lord Cloud Demon blocked Black Ash, frowning, “Black Ash, what are you doing? Once you enter the Eternal Demon Abyss, everyone will be your enemy. If you randomly offend someone before even entering, at that time you might find yourself surrounded by enemies from all sides and have them kick you when you’re down. Even if Lin Ming didn’t make a breakthrough in the Road of Emperor, he still isn’t someone that can be easily bullied by you!”

High Lord Cloud Demon occupied an impressive status within Heavenly Cloud Tower, Black Ash had no choice but to give up his antics. But, Black Ash still disapproved of this. Heavenly Cloud Tower’s overall strength was number one amongst all 12 Skysplit Towers. He always felt that Cloud Demon was far too careful.

As time passed, martial artists from several other Skysplit Towers began to arrive. They were Five Color Tower, White Stone Tower, Great Ax Tower, and in addition to Blue Silver Tower, Heavenly Cloud Tower, and Polaris Tower, this was six Skysplit Towers. These six Skysplit Towers were located closer to each other, so they had assembled at the southern tip of the Eternal Demon Abyss. The other six Skysplit Towers had gone to the northern tip of the Eternal Demon Abyss. These 12 Skysplit Towers formed a circle, and the Eternal Demon Abyss was in the center of this.

After everyone from the six Skysplit Towers completely arrived, a black-robed old man stood up and said, “Everyone, I will now announce the rules for entering the Eternal Demon Abyss.”

The sudden appearance of this old man caught Lin Ming’s attention. This old man’s cultivation was a three-star Demon King, which was equal to a human late Revolving Core powerhouse, and perhaps even just a bit better.

Within the Blood Slaughter Steppes, there was nearly no one with a Life Destruction cultivation. This was because once one stepped into the Life Destruction realm, or a cultivation similar to that, they might fall under the mystical curse that stemmed from the depths of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. The higher stage of Life Destruction one was, the higher their chances of being cursed.

"I am the supervisory deacon from Blood Slaughter Divine Temple. I am responsible this time for opening the Eternal Demon Abyss. Although mostly everyone here is familiar with the rules, I shall repeat them again.

"A thousand miles from the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss is an absolute null life zone. Everyone who enters past here will die. In addition, from 1000 miles from the edge to 10,000 miles outwards are the surroundings of the Eternal Demon Abyss. There are lucky chances everywhere here, but also fatal dangers abound. What you find will all depend on your own lucky chances. The deeper you go, the greater your lucky chances will be. In principle, after entering the Eternal Demon Abyss, killing is forbidden. But there will always be those unscrupulous and dangerous individuals. If anyone were to encounter this situation, then killing in self-defense is also reasonable…"

As the old man spoke to here, Lin Ming was left speechless. Any defense was reasonable? This was nice to hear, but in fact, the truth was that killing within would happen without restraint from anywhere and anyone. If a martial artist died within the Eternal Demon Abyss, it would be impossible to determine just how they died.

"However… there is a point you should remember. If you kill others within the Eternal Demon Abyss, you can still obtain their infernal energy to nourish your Heavenly Demon Tattoo. According to the rules of Skysplit Tower, a middle ten-winged Heavenly Demon is the limit. If you surpass this limit, then this old man will have no choice but to use certain methods to disperse some of the infernal energy from your body. These methods will not cause any lasting damage to you, but I ask that you be mindful of this.

As the old man spoke, Lin Ming suddenly became aware.

So that's how it was…

He had always wondered why so many High Lords had Heavenly Demon Tattoos at the middle ten-winged stage. Before this, he had thought it was strange. Normally, after a martial artist became a High Lord, they wouldn't further participate in the life and death battles of the Blood Slaughter Steppes, so just where would their infernal energy come from?

From the early ten-wings to middle ten-wings, one needed quite a bit of infernal energy. This was the same as killing two or three High Lords. If someone only killed eight-winged Heavenly Demons then the infernal energy acquired wouldn't help the tattoo grow by much.

That said, it wasn't like an eight-winged Heavenly Demon was a random amateur that could be chopped up either.

Chapter 626 – The Door In Space

Chapter 626 – The Door In Space

…

…

…

'These High Lords' middle ten-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoos were originally condensed within the Eternal Demon Abyss… but I remember that the Polaris Tower Master already has a peak ten-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo. How come that old man hasn't dispersed his infernal energy yet?'

Lin Ming could faintly feel that the Polaris Tower Master's identity wasn't so simple.

As Lin Ming was thinking about the Polaris Tower Master, the Polaris Tower Master's voice suddenly sounded in his mind, "This time entering the Eternal Demon Abyss, you will go into the 1200 mile periphery to seek lucky chances for me. Understood?"

'Go into the 1200 mile area to seek lucky chances for you?'

This was a land where the chances of dying were extremely high. After entering, he would also have to risk his life and desperately battle with others, and this fellow wanted Lin Ming to struggle for him? Lin Ming sneered. He began to agree, "I understand, but… in the range of 1200 miles there are many dangers abound. I wonder whether Tower Master has a jade slip map or something similar so that I don't enter a danger zone by mistake."

Hearing Lin Ming ask this, the Polaris Tower Master hesitated. The 12 Skysplit Towers had many maps about the Eternal Demon Abyss, but the truth was that the vast majority of these maps had problems and omissions. After all, every time the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted, there would be great changes concerning the locations and kind of danger zones that there were.

However, the Polaris Tower Master had a relatively accurate map. This map was created through many years and the sacrifice of countless lives who had explored the area; it was extremely valuable.

The reason that the Polaris Tower Master could obtain this map was all because his father was the ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes as well as the only twelve-winged Heavenly Demon.

There were only a few copies of this map. He hadn't intended on giving it to Lin Ming because he feared that Lin Ming would die within the Eternal Demon Abyss and the map would be revealed to others.

If those Holy Land descendants were to obtain this map then it would be much easier for them to find and obtain resources from the Eternal Demon Abyss in the future. This was certainly a scenario that the Polaris Tower Master didn't wish to see.

After a brief hesitation, the Polaris Tower Master said, "Lin Ming, I truly have one copy of such a map, but, you cannot ever reveal this map. If you meet a fatal danger within the Eternal Demon Abyss and are close to death, you must first destroy this map. Am I clear?"

"I am clear." Lin Ming expressionlessly said. This Polaris Tower Master relied on the slave seal he thought he had planted within Lin Ming and didn't even try to dress up his words. He directly told him to destroy the map before he died.

The Polaris Tower Master touched his hand atop Lin Ming's palm and with a gentle wipe, inserting a jade slip into Lin Ming's spatial ring.

With a quick sweep with his sense, Lin Ming determined that this truly was a map of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

“If you are prepared, then I shall open the array formation. Everyone is limited to six months within the Eternal Demon Abyss. If you do not emerge after six months, then you will have to stay in the Eternal Demon Abyss until the next time the array formation opens. But… since ancient times, if a martial artist did not come out before six months, they would completely vanish with no one ever knowing where they went. In this half year, everyone please keep this in mind.

As the old man finished speaking, he took out three black glass beads from his spatial ring and began to arrange them on the floor.

Lin Ming discovered that not too far from the open area he was standing in, there were small grooves in the floor that these black glass beads were inserted into, perfectly matching them. Lin Ming was very familiar with these black glass beads – they were Demon God Bones.

After the three Demon God Bones were inserted into the floor, the earth suddenly began to shake. Not too far away, the space in front of everyone began to distort. A moment later, space itself seemed to melt away as a spatial door suddenly opened within the void. Behind this spatial gate was a gray space. This strange world was filled with an endless mist.

In the next instant, Lin Ming felt like an esoteric gate opened wide in front of him. A boundless, ancient, and pure death energy surged out from this space, extremely shocking and oppressive to the heart.

“So it’s this place… I, I’ve come here before.” Demonshine’s voice sounded out in Lin Ming’s mind.

“Oh? You’ve come here before?” Lin Ming was startled but immediately calmed down. The Demon Emperor had been through the Road of Emperor, so it wasn’t strange if he had gone to the Eternal Demon Abyss too. “Do you remember any dangerous zones inside?”

“I remember a little, but not too much. It was my big brother who followed master here. According to my big brother’s memories, master stayed here for 20 some years…”

“Twenty some years?” Lin Ming was stunned. “Wasn’t it said that those that don’t come out in half a year never emerge again? How could the Demon Emperor actually stay here for 20 some years?”

Demonshine chortled and then shook his doggy head, saying, “In the past, Master was a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. He had already broken through the Emperor boundary several hundred years before. After experiencing a deep and painful bottleneck, he only then returned to the Eternal Demon Abyss, exploring this land for 20 some years. Naturally, he’s not someone you juniors can compare with. The so-called 1000 mile absolute death danger zone around the Eternal Demon Abyss is only applicable to you juniors.”

“He broke through the Emperor boundary before returning to the Eternal Demon Abyss…” Lin Ming suddenly became aware. Normally speaking, after the change to the Blood Slaughter Steppes, there were very few Emperor level powerhouses that came to the Eternal Demon Abyss. This was because only twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Emperor level powerhouses could step into the Blood Slaughter Steppes without dying to the strange curse that permeated the land.

Thus, in the vast majority of situations, those martial artists that entered the Eternal Demon Abyss were extraordinary young elites. As for the Six-fingered Sin Fey, Demon Emperor, and other such Supreme Elders, they became twelve-winged Heavenly Demons in the Skysplit Towers before returning to the Eternal Demon Abyss as Emperor level powerhouses. With their strength, as long as they didn’t directly enter the Eternal Demon Abyss, they could still explore along the edges of the Eternal Demon Abyss with relative ease.

After the spatial gate fully opened, the old man responsible for opening the Eternal Demon Abyss said, “Now we shall begin dividing the teams. Every Skysplit Tower will send one or two people to form a 10 man squad. A supervisory deacon from the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple will lead that group 1500 miles from the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Afterward, the supervisory deacon will return on the route he came from. At that point, whether you wish to return or continue forwards will all be up to you. First, it will be my squad. Who will go with me?”

As the old man spoke, Lin Ming was startled for a moment. Using a squad as a forward unit?

If every Skysplit Tower sent out one or two people, then they would be able to mutually supervise each other. Then, at least at the very beginning, the killings wouldn't start. And with a supervisory deacon at the start, that also stopped some martial artists from trying to secretly become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon.

The six Skysplit Towers each sent out one or two people, quickly forming a squad of 10. With a word from the old man, everyone set off.

They walked through the illusory spatial gate, their forms vanishing into the endless gray fog.

"Lin Ming, you and Bloodfire will go with that Imp supervisory deacon. He is the most experienced here and can guarantee your safety the most to the 1500 mile range. Afterward, you will begin to move alone." The Polaris Tower Master's true essence sound transmission sounded in Lin Ming's ear.

"Understood." Lin Ming responded, glancing at the short old Imp among the supervisory deacons. The Imp looked old to begin with. Lin Ming didn't know how old this fellow was, but he could see that the dark black skin on his face was all scrunched up together; he looked like an old mortal man who had experienced great hardships and suffering in his life.

Quickly, the old Imp walked out in front of everyone and said, "I am Sada, Who would like to go with me?"

From Polaris Tower, Lin Ming and High Lord Bloodfire both stepped out. Obviously, High Lord Bloodfire had also received the Polaris Tower Master's orders.

"There are still seven spots. Who would like to come from the other Skysplit Towers?"

"Hehe, count me in." From the Heavenly Cloud Tower, High Lord Black Ash stepped forwards, grinning as he looked at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming remembered this fellow. When he arrived, this fellow was eagerly looking at him, not even masking the killing intent in his eyes. Against this sort of self-important loser, Lin Ming was disinclined to even look at him.

“There are still six spots.” Sada called out again.

“Me.” With the crisp voice of a woman, Lan Xin from the Blue Silver Holy Land stepped out.

As Lan Xin stepped out, several young Fey men from White Stone Tower and Five Color Tower were instantly excited. They scrambled forwards to join the team, and Sada’s squad was instantly full. In fact, there was even one more.

Lin Ming was left speechless. At this time, there were still some people that had the state of mind to chase after girls? This was just too ridiculous!

But as he thought more carefully about it, Lan Xin originated from a Holy Land, and an upper ranked Holy Land at that. Her background even surpassed that of Feng Shen. To other Fey martial artists, if they could ever obtain Lan Xin’s heart and marry her, then who cared about love? Resources were much more important!

Moreover, all these martial artists that pursued Lan Xin were originally Emperor level talents. Besides their relatively normal backgrounds, they were matched with Lan Xin in other aspects; they all held out on some hope. Although they were far from comparable with Duanmu Qun, Duanmu Qun was an even more outstanding character than Lan Xin, thus it was impossible for him to marry and join his wife’s sect, the Blue Silver Holy Lands. Only Lan Xin could marry and join him, but, this was the same as the Blue Silver Holy Lands letting a future Emperor Level Powerhouse slip out of their grasp. Naturally, the Blue Silver Holy Lands would not allow this to happen.

On the other hand, if Lan Xin chose one of her pursuers, then it was likely that the Blue Silver Holy Land would gain another Emperor level powerhouse in the future.

Between the two choices, the better one was clear at a glance.

The young outstanding Fey of Skysplit Tower had all calculated this point, thus they all tried to woo Lan Xin so that they would have to struggle for a few hundred years less.

Lin Ming quickly realized the reason behind all this. In fact, this scene could be described as quite reasonable.

“There’s one too many!” Sada said, frowning.

“Hey, this brother, could you help me out here and...” The slowest Fey martial artist to scramble out gave Lin Ming a friendly smile, hoping that Lin Ming could drop out and give him his spot.

Lin Ming thought this was funny. He had never met this fellow, so on what basis would he give up his spot to him?

“You talk too much!” Sada grew a bit angry. He pointed at the Fey youth and said, “According to order, you will step out!”

The words were like a cold bucket of water directly poured over the flames of the Fey youth’s hope, extinguishing them. The Fey youth felt wronged, but he didn’t speak out.

Lin Ming could see that four or five of these Fey youth were Heavenly Demon Seven Stars and not High Lords. Some of them might even have pledged themselves to the High Lords and become their dogs. After all, their talent was decent and they were young; all of them were generally below 30 years of age.

‘In terms of strength and experience, these people are far inferior to the High Lords. If I’m in the same squad as these fellows, it’s actually much better than being in a squad with High Lords...’ Lin Ming thought as he traced his chin. Actually, it seemed that he needed to thank Lan Xin.

“Let’s go!”

Sada brought everyone and stepped into the spatial gate. Lin Ming followed, and his form quickly disappeared into the hazy dark fog.

Chapter 627 – Evil Being

Chapter 627 – Evil Being

…

…

…

10,000 miles around the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss, the infernal energy was so thick that it was nearly concentrated into droplets. In this, Lin Ming could feel the energy within his body being pulled at by this thick infernal energy, as if it were faintly gushing out of him.

‘What an amazingly rich infernal energy. This fog is infernal energy that has condensed and formed into essence. If I could practice demonic realm cultivation methods here…’ Lin Ming shook his head as he thought of this. When a martial artist cultivated they would often have to enter into meditative states. In this state, a martial artist’s defensive ability would be very low. Doing that within the Eternal Demon Abyss that was filled with all sorts of dangers was simply asking to die.

“Hehe, boy, what do you think? The atmosphere here is great!” An annoying voice suddenly called out to Lin Ming. Each syllable was like a needle that jabbed into the ear, causing anyone listening to feel very uncomfortable.

Lin Ming turned around to see that the one speaking was High Lord Black Ash.

He frowned, not answering.

High Lord Black Ash didn’t mind. He continued to say, “Boy, I guess that when we’re 1,500 miles from the edge, you will continue to go forwards. At that time, how about we go together? We can take care of each other, haha!”

"Sorry, but I'm not interested. Also… it would do you good to stop trying to probe me by attaching your perception to your words." Lin Ming's voice was cold.

High Lord Black Ash stiffened. This boy was too sensitive! His method of probing others was extremely secretive; the normal person would only a hear a grating voice upon their ears, but Lin Ming had actually instantly seen through his tricks.

Sada moved forwards unhurriedly. He closed his eyes and felt the wind, saying, "From here on out, we are 8,500 miles away from the Eternal Demon Abyss's 1,500 mile radius zone. Our travel time by foot will be around 20 days to a month. During this month, you must follow my orders. If we encounter some evil being, you absolutely cannot take the initiative to do anything, you absolutely cannot! Otherwise, this may possibly lead to serious consequences!"

"Evil being? What evil being, hm?" A Fey youth asked, interested. As someone that qualified to come to the Eternal Demon Abyss, there was naturally no need to mention his strength and talent; he had full and complete confidence in himself. He was wondering whether or not he should be the one to step forwards and save the day if they encountered some danger. Even though he might not be able to be the hero that saved the maiden, he could at least leave a good impression on Lan Xin. To women, even if they were powerhouses, deep down they always wished to be protected.

This time, during this journey to the Eternal Demon Abyss, the most important target for him was to capture Lan Xin's attentions and heart. Compared to marrying Lan Xin and joining her Blue Silver Holy Land, any lucky chance he found here would simply be garbage.

Sada slowly explained, "Around the Eternal Demon Abyss there are many strange and evil beings that breed within the thick infernal energy. These existences are bizarre and enigmatic. No one knows where they originate from, and in normal times, naturally we need not fear them. But, there are some evil beings that were projected out during the Eternal Demon Abyss's eruption. If we run into this sort of thing, we must run far, far away! Fighting them is simply suicide!"

“Evil beings that were shot out by the Eternal Demon Abyss?” Lin Ming’s heart chilled. The Eternal Demon Abyss was without a doubt immeasurably terrifying. A massive claw had come out from that strange hole and killed 12 Emperor level powerhouses instantly. From that sort of place, even if it were just a dog or cat, that simply wasn’t something anyone here could deal with.

Although the several Fey youths were proud and arrogant, they weren’t stupid. As they heard Sada mention the evil beings of the Eternal Demon Abyss, they kept silence. They were well aware of just useful their skills were here.

“Good. If there aren’t any more questions then we’ll set off. Also, there’s one more point. Try to avoid fighting as much as possible, but if you’re really forced into a situation, then suppress your strength as far as possible. Only use 30% of your power to fight, do not use 40%, and do not create any surging waves of true essence or demon essence or start stirring up the massive amount of infernal energy within the Eternal Demon Abyss. Understood?” Sada’s expression and tone were harsh. Seeing the Fey youth from before look a bit unhappy, he said, “This isn’t playtime for children. Hey, you, can you hear me?”

“I heard you.” The Fey youth revealed an impatient and impetuous expression, perfunctorily nodding, “I am not a child.”

Sada glared at the Fey youth and said, “Let’s go!”

As one, the group began their journey. The next 8500 miles around were relatively safe. There basically wasn’t any situation where a martial artist would kill others. With someone guiding them, the dangers they encountered were even fewer. Of course, the lucky chances they found in this way were also limited, and with so many people together, it wouldn’t be much after being divided so many times, and Skysplit Tower also took a great portion of that.

As time passed, the group continued marching forwards. The surrounding environment could be described as gloomy, filled with a vast, endlessly hazy fog. Fortunately, they could use the stars in the sky as their guide so they didn’t lose direction.

The ground was covered with bumpy red rocks. Occasionally, one could see broken stone tablets scattered about. The writing and seals on these stone tablets had long since blurred after so many tens or hundreds of thousands of years.

These boring days of travel happened without complaint for one or two days, but after a dozen days or so, many people began to feel impatient.

During these days, they hadn't even seen a hair of these so-called 'evil beings', much less a lucky chance.

Sometimes, it was far too boring. Some of them were even looking forwards to one of these 'evil beings' appearing so that it could alleviate their boredom.

"I say that we can go fast. Here, there's nothing else but fog and rocks. We only walk several hundred miles per day, the heavens only know how long it will take us to cross 8500 miles. If I could fly, it would only take several hours! What sort of evil are you even thinking about? We've walked for so long and haven't even seen anything at all!"

To cross hundreds of miles in a day was something that even well-trained mortal soldiers were unable to accomplish. But in front of these outstanding heroic youths, this sort of speed was a pace as slow as a snail's crawl.

Sada suddenly stopped, his head spinning around towards the Fey youth like a tiger, his ice cold eyes causing the Fey youth to pause.

"The dangers of Eternal Demon Abyss are not as simple as you think they are. You should already be glad that you can arrive there safely without danger, so shut your damn trap. Once we arrive within 1500 miles of the Eternal Demon Abyss, my role is over. You can do whatever you like then. Even if you jump into the Eternal Demon Abyss itself, it is something I don't care about."

The Fey youth also began to grow angry, "How interesting! Why do we need you to guide us? Why do you so-called supervisory deacons need to go with us? Isn't it to monitor us? Are you afraid that we'll find some lucky chance, or are you afraid that we'll kill each other and become twelve-winged Heavenly Demons?"

The Fey youth's tone was aggressive, "With you leading the way, who knows whether or not you're quietly pocketing everything along the way! If we really run into danger, you might be the first to run while leaving us behind! We are looking for lucky chances here, not running about as your bodyguards, acting as cannon fodder when you need it!"

Sada's expression sunk to the floor, "If you aren't willing to go with me then f*ck off!"

"Humph! Who is afraid of you? Let's go! Come on everyone!"

The Fey youth shouted out to several martial artists. However, no one responded to him. Following this Sada was truly the same as giving up on lucky chances, but the goal of most people here was to reach the 1500 mile radius zone. In this outer 8500 mile radius, there basically weren't any lucky chances, so giving up on them was fine too.

Lin Ming was indifferent to all this. As they travelled these past days, he had always been practicing his breathing.

Although he hadn't been able to calm his heart and mind because of the brisk pace they were making, the infernal energy here was surpassingly rich; it was the ideal condition for practicing the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'. This total practice speed wasn't much slower than practicing in closed-door meditation.

In order to guarantee that he would have the most solid foundation, Lin Ming estimated that he would have to practice for half a year to break through to Revolving Core. If he meditated on those stone tablets in the Road of Emperor, it might have taken just a few months. But, unfortunately, the path Lin Ming had chosen was to continue down the road of will lights, thus he had to continue down that path, giving up on the Emperor stone tablets.

Seeing no one respond to his shouts, the Fey youth's complexion immediately became ugly. He didn't care much about face, and was really ready to walk away at any time. In truth, he didn’t fear venturing off by himself. But, once he did, he wouldn’t have any further chances with Lan Xin.

The Fey youth had hopped on the tiger and couldn’t back down now. As he glanced at Lan Xin, he saw that she was controlling her breathing, simply not even caring about him at all.

The mindsets of these outstanding young talents were mostly that of arrogance and easy to anger. With his stubbornness even in this awkward situation, the youth was about to spit out several vicious words before leaving, when at this time, a change occurred.

Not too far away, there was a wailing cry. This sound was absolutely not that of a human. It was like some vicious beast was screeching out while having glass shards crammed in its throat, it was grating to the extreme.

“What is that!?”

Everyone immediately tensed up, taking out their weapons.

Sada extracted a crescent sickle, his entire body on full alert. He quickly said in a low voice, “Without my order, do not act rashly.”

“Ahhh!!”

With another miserable scream, a gray shadow jumped up from not too far away, rushing towards the group like an arrow!

The Fey youth who had been blabbering on would be the one to bear the brunt of this attack!

“Don’t be nervous! This is only…!”

Sada’s hadn’t even finished his words when that angry Fey youth gave a sudden shout and stabbed out with his sword!

“Go die!”

A deep blue sword light pierced through the vast skies. The gray shadow was directly penetrated with this sword light. Space trembled, strong winds howled. The rich infernal energy all around them was cut in half, swept away!

This sword was a strike for the Fey youth to vent his anger. This Fey youth had been able to come to the Eternal Demon Abyss and was also a top ranking character amongst the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. He had reached Large Success in his comprehension of the Concept of Wind, and had even touched upon the Concept of Space.

A strike with all his power behind it could be imagined.

Sada's eyes instantly turned red, "Do you want to kill us? I told you not to use your full strength and create true essence waves and also not to stir the infernal energy here! You..."

"F*ck off!" The Fey youth violently interrupted Sada. "I do not serve you, so why the hell would I care about what you want! Also, you fellows as well! You've been bullied by the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple to the point that you're willing to submit yourself to all these garbage conditions! I've never been so angered by such a useless bunch before!"

Although the Fey youth wanted to marry Lan Xin and enter her Blue Silver Holy Land, doing so was easier said than done. That being the case, he might as well leave in a cool and awesome manner, making it so that his thoughts were smooth.

Even with all his grievances expressed, even the group of people that wouldn't follow him weren't saying anything. He felt nothing but incomparably free and comfortable. But at this time, everyone's expressions around him began to change.

Lan Xin pointed at the Fey youth's legs, her complexion paling as she said, "You... your leg..."

Chapter 628 – Bloody Lands

Chapter 628 – Bloody Lands

…

…

…

"My leg? What's wrong with my leg?" The Fey youth suddenly asked, jerking his head down. As he saw what had happened, a ringing panic settled in his mind.

At some point, without him knowing, on both his legs his flesh had started to rot into pus and blood, leaving behind only bloody foot bones to support him on the ground.

The pus and blood silently passed down. When it was absorbed by the dark gray ground, the ground became an incomparably crimson red!

"AhhhhhhHH!"

The Fey youth let out a frightened cry, his body falling backwards and directly onto the ground. But, as soon as his hands touched the ground, even those parts started to rot. His flesh turned gooey, soon changing into liquid pus and blood!

His hand and wrist bones were quickly revealed, dripping with thick vicious blood.

"No… no…!"

The Fey youth was completely horrified. He waved his hands and feet in front of him as if there were something terrible there. However, his flesh was turning completely rotten. With every inch he crawled back, he left massive amounts of broken meat hanging on the rocks under him. His thighs, butt, everything began to turn into thick bloody goo, a hideous stench emitting from it.

“Save me! Save me!” The Fey youth finally remembered Sada. He put out a pleading hand towards Sada, but Sada actually took two steps back. His face was full of alarm as he shouted, “No one approach him!”

In truth, Sada didn’t need to give out this warning. Nobody dared to approach. In fact, everyone was spreading out from the Fey youth.

Kacha!

The Fey youth’s legs cracked open, the bones crumbling apart like slag. Every other bone became similarly brittle; with just a slight bump, they would break apart. It was like thousands of years of bodily decay had been compressed into several breaths of time.

The Fey youth’s eyes began to sink back their sockets, his hair growing long and pure white. In just two breaths of time, his hair had withered into dry hay, his face becoming as wretched as the bark of an old tree. He stretched out his left arm in one final attempt, as if he were trying to grasp something. As a low and despairing moan emanated from his throat, in the end, everything he did was useless.

Then, as his arm shattered to pieces, the Fey youth’s entire body turned into a gooey puddle of blood in front of everyone’s horrified eyes, with even his organs turning into rotten bloody syrup. Then, the bloody goo was absorbed into the dark gray ground, the bones left turning into ash.

Another moment later, all that was left of the Fey youth was a small pile of red ashes. Besides that, it was as if he had never existed…

Those present were completely shocked. Even Lin Ming, who had an incomparably firm will and mindset, felt a chill spread out from his back, directly shooting towards the heavens.

These martial artists had all walked the killing path. Never mind seeing the dying, but everyone here had killed at least hundreds of people, if not more. But, seeing someone die in this manner before their eyes was truly appalling!

Even Sada, a veteran of the Eternal Demon Abyss, gulped a mouthful of saliva, beads of sweat dripping down his forehead. In the incomparably strange and bizarre Eternal Demon Abyss, there were a plethora of various ways to die. But, this was the first time that he had seen a way like this!

Nobody spoke. Everyone maintained full vigilance, keeping a careful eye on their surroundings.

Lin Ming traced his spatial ring, his breath caught in his throat. He had originally thought that the danger of the Eternal Demon Abyss came from the evil beings that lived here, and fighting with these evil beings would cause martial artists to perish. But he never thought that death could arrive in this manner. He had helplessly watched as a martial artist rapidly decayed in front of him without even his bones left, but he still hadn’t had any idea where this evil being was or what it had done!

The scariest thing in this world was the unknown. Martial artists did not fear ghosts or gods. The so-called ghosts were merely those that practiced ghostly cultivation methods, and those so-called gods were nothing more than exceedingly powerful martial artists. But right now, everyone felt as if they had returned to being a mortal, a mortal that was wading through the dark, frightened by the supernatural creatures of the night.

They had only gone 5,000 miles or so towards the Eternal Demon Abyss, so how could something so bizarre happen here?

“Sir Sada, what is this?” High Lord Bloodfire asked with a true essence sound transmission. Of everyone here, he was the only one who had entered the Eternal Demon Abyss before. Ten years ago, he had been one of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars with a strength similar to Yan Chi. At that time, the Eternal Demon Abyss hadn’t erupted, and he hadn’t gone as deep into the Eternal Demon Abyss as others. Still, he had never seen such a scene like this.

“I’m ashamed to say it, but this is the first time that I’ve encountered something like this. That gray shadow just now, from my experience, should have only been a demonic ash fly that was condensed from infernal energy, with a cultivation of only a few hundred years, just a minor creature. But I never imagined something like this would happen. I think that the true essence storm just now must have aroused some ancient evil being from its deep slumber…”

Sada didn’t dare to speak out loud, instead using a true essence sound transmission to inform everyone.

A deeply sleeping evil being? Could this be an evil being that was shot out by the Eternal Demon Abyss’ eruption?

Thinking of this, everyone felt their backs go cold. No matter how confident they were, no one was confident enough to believe they could contend with an evil being that originated from deep within the Eternal Demon abyss. Especially this sort of invisible evil being. The death was inexplicable, shocking, alarming – there was no one who could even summon the courage to resist it!

“Demonshine, what’s going on here?”

Lin Ming could only ask Demonshine. Demonshine had followed the Demon Emperor to enter the Eternal Demon Abyss and stayed there for 20 some years. The Demon Emperor had even gone within the 1000 mile death zone radius around the Eternal Demon Abyss. He could only hope that Demonshine might have some inkling as to just what was happening.

Demonshine tried hard to recall the sealed memories within him. After a quarter hour of silence, he said, “It was my big brother who accompanied master to enter the Eternal Demon Abyss. I haven’t inherited too many of my big brother’s memories, so for this kind of situation, I can only make an approximate guess. I think that there was possibly some ancient powerhouse buried here who practiced blood demon cultivation techniques, or, there might possibly be some sort of extremely dangerous vicious beast that was sealed below. Regardless of what it is, when they were still alive, I fear that they were an existence that not even the Emperor level powerhouses of this Holy Demon Continent could deal with… but, after they died and had been buried for tens or hundreds of thousands of years they turned into a Demon God Bone, and not a normal one at that!"

Lin Ming had already heard Da Gu say that there were different ranks of Demon God Bones. The Demon God Bones that the High Lords of Skysplit Tower had were only the most ordinary and inferior kind.

Demonshine continued speaking, "If Demon God Bones are divided into human, earth, and heaven steps, then that Demon God Bone you have now is only a human-step one. Within Skysplit Tower, a human-step Demon God Bone is already extremely rare; I think that even the Polaris Tower Master doesn't have an earth-step Demon God Bone. As for the even higher ranking heaven-step Demon God Bone, I estimate that not even the ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes has seen one. This sort of object probably has an inborn intelligence. Even if a martial artist has a lucky chance, unless they have a great destiny befall their bodies, it is impossible to obtain it. I have no idea just what sort of Demon God Bone was bred within this ancient powerhouse's tomb underneath us, but you had best forget about it. This is a dangerous and ominous place. The faster we leave, the better!"

Lin Ming didn't need Demonshine's warning to know that he shouldn't bite off more than he could chew and try to dig out the buried bones of this ancient Supreme Elder or extreme vicious beast. Otherwise, he really would think that he had already lived too long.

Everyone stood motionless for a full hour, on absolute guard. The fog gradually enveloped them and the light dimmed, but… nothing happened.

Was it over?

Everyone’s bodies were wet with sweat. They had a faint gladdening feeling that they were survivors of a catastrophe. But before leaving this unhallowed grounds, no one dared to relax even a bit.

“Let’s retreat first… everyone, do not make any noise!”

No one needed Sada to tell them not to speak, everyone was even trying to suppress their breathing as much as possible.

“I feel that… it’s becoming more and more dark…” The one who spoke was High Lord Black Ash, using a true essence sound transmission to speak. As he spoke, everyone discovered that the thick fog around them was becoming increasingly concentrated, dense to the point that one could take out a sword and cut through it. The darkness was also becoming increasingly suffocating. By all reasoning, the Eternal Demon Abyss was underground and there was no day or night here. The only light they had was from the vibrant and shining stars from up above, so there shouldn’t be a time as dark as this…

Sada sensed something. Looking up, he discovered that the starry skies had already disappeared into the vast, endless fog.

“Shit, without the stars to set our direction, we will become lost if we walk.”

“Should we fly up to get a better sense of direction?”

“Have you forgotten that flying is banned within the Eternal Demon Abyss? Even if flying wasn’t suppressed, I wouldn’t dare to fly. Flying up is only looking for death!”

“Then what do we do? Where should we go?”

Everyone was feeling weak at heart. Now that they were covered in this fog, they couldn’t walk away, nor could they stay.

But at this time, the air filled with a faint fragrance. Then, a dreamlike singing began to waft out…

The singing of a woman!

To suddenly hear the singing of a woman in this sort of place… everyone’s hairs began to stand on end.

This song seemed to come from the distant horizon, bringing with it an inescapable bitterness and utter anguish. As one listened to it, it felt as if their souls were trapped within, a strong sense of lingering and grief remaining in their hearts, telling them not to leave, not to go.

“Lonely…

“Lonely…

“Come down and stay with me…”

.....

“Do not listen to that singing! Seal up your ears with demon essence!” Sada’s expression suddenly changed, no longer having time to send out more true essence sound transmissions. With a shout, demon essence erupted from his body, forming an enchantment of energy around him, isolating himself from all sound.

The sudden eruption of energy shoved away some of the thick fog. Then, Lin Ming saw an appallingly creepy scene. A young Fey youth was standing there, his shoulders dangling down and empty green eyes glazed over, as if he had fallen under a spell. He started to use his hands to claw his body, and quickly, his body was covered with blood from self-inflicted wounds.

The more he clawed at himself the more brutal and violent he became. The Fey thrust his hands into his body, digging out his blood vessels, organs, completely pulling out everything. He even dug out his own eyes, his entire body flowing with blood.

Lin Ming instantly determined that this youth's spiritual sea had fallen into the enemy's hands; he had become a useless zombie that was being manipulated.

"Lin Ming, front left, break out there!" Demonshine's voice hurriedly sounded out, "I know what we've met. The front left, as long as you have enough strength you can break out of this cage, otherwise you too will suffer the same fate if you stay!"

Hearing Demonshine's sudden voice, Lin Ming no longer hesitated. He grabbed the Purple Comet Spear and true essence erupted from his body to the limit.

The Heretical God Force opened completely and the power of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates was also pushed to the extreme.

"Penetrating Rainbow!"

Spear and man became one. Lin Ming's body was like a meteor as he shot through space and slammed into the front left fog. With a cracking sound, as if something were breaking and tearing apart, the thick black fog there was completely ripped asunder. In an instant, Lin Ming had crossed 10,000 feet and then continued to run straight forwards.

"Run away together!" Sada saw Lin Ming move and shouted out.

Chapter 629 – Transformed Demon Bone

Chapter 629 – Transformed Demon Bone

…

…

…

His whole body bursting with true essence, Lin Ming grasped the Purple Comet Spear as thunder flashed on its point. Running at full speed, he was like a war god, unstoppable, overwhelming!

“Now, the right side, 300 feet, strike with everything you have, break through!”

Demonshine’s voice resounded in Lin Ming’s mind once more. Without any hesitation, Lin Ming pooled true essence into the Purple Comet Spear and used Penetrating Rainbow once more!

With another cracking sound, it was like some invisible barrier shattered underneath Lin Ming’s spear. In the next instant, he had already run outside of the thick black fog. Everything suddenly slowed down, returning to normal.

The fog was a much lighter gray, and he could even see the stars faintly up above.

He made it out!

Lin Ming let out a long breath, not relaxing his guard. In a single breath he rushed more than 10 miles away before stopped.

“What was that just now?” Lin Ming asked Demonshine.

Demonshine hesitated, not too sure, and said, “It should be… a Demon Blood Bone.”

“What is that?”

As Lin Ming asked this, several other people made it out of the hole that Lin Ming had crushed through the dense barrier of fog. After the sudden events just now, they had dropped from 10 to eight people. Every one of them had frightened expressions, their faces wan.

Too horrifying!

These martial artists that walked the killing path were not afraid of fatal danger zones, otherwise they never would have come to Skysplit Tower to begin with.

But that strange feeling just now, that pitiful way of dying, left a lingering feeling within them that made their scalps tingle with fear.

“This little brother is called Lin Ming, right...” The squad leader Sada looked at Lin Ming with some surprise. He hadn’t seen that black fog array formation before and had no idea how to break through it. It was possible that all of them could have been wiped out within. But suddenly Lin Ming had rushed forwards and even made his way out.

“Yes.” Lin Ming nodded.

“Little Brother Lin, did you see through that danger zone just now and discover how to break through?” Sada noticed that when Lin Ming was rushing out he had actually changed directions once. Was this done unconsciously, or did he notice something?

After Sada asked this question, Lan Xin also looked at Lin Ming curiously. As for the others, they had a bit of doubt and confusion on their faces.

Lin Ming firmly shook his head and said, “I only thought that it was better to die fighting than to wait for death. I just randomly rushed in a direction, but I didn’t think I would actually be able to rush out like that.

As Lin Ming spoke, Sada revealed an understanding expression. The truth was that he didn’t believe Lin Ming had the ability to see through that black fog to begin with. After all, this was the first time that Lin Ming had entered the Eternal Demon Abyss.

As for the several other Fey youths, they felt depressed after hearing this. If they had known this earlier then they would have rushed out randomly too. How come they hadn’t thought of this!

Rush out in a single go and lead everyone out. A hero rescuing a maiden, perhaps they might have been able to capture Lan Xin’s heart. But, this great limelight and glory had actually been snatched away by a human boy.

A Fey martial artist sourly mumbled, “In this Eternal Demon Abyss, randomly rushing or randomly using moves can easily take a life. The reason that we fell into that dangerous spot just now was all because some other fellow decided to randomly attack…”

Lin Ming naturally heard the envy in this other youth’s voice. Towards this sort of unreasonable and nonsensical jealousy, Lin Ming didn’t even want to bother acknowledging it. He and Lan Xin weren’t even of the same race.

Sada coughed, interrupting the Fey youth’s words and said, “No matter what, this time our luck is all thanks to Little Brother Lin. But later, remember not to be so impulsive. Before anyone acts, make sure you suppress your strength as much as possible and don’t make any great movements, lest we disturb any evil being that is sleeping deep underground.

“Alright. We’ll take a short break and then set out again.” Sada looked at the stars, determining his position once again. Although they had deviated from their original route, it wasn’t by too much.

Lin Ming didn’t bother paying attention to the others. He sunk his consciousness into his spiritual sea and continued to ask Demonshine, “Demonshine, what is a Blood Demon Bone?”

Demonshine answered, “A Demon God Bone is the energy left behind by a Supreme Elder after they die. After being sealed underground for tens or hundreds of thousands of years, this energy then condenses into a crystal form, usually in the shape of a glass bead. Normally, a Demon God Bone is only pure energy, the will has already dispersed. But, there are sometimes exceptions. For instance, there might be an ancient Supreme Elder, and because their will is too strong or they practiced some strange cultivation method, their will can pass through all these years without dispersing, only slowly weakening instead. Finally, this will will fuse together into the Demon God Bone, forming a special Demon God Bone called a Blood Demon Bone. This sort of Demon God Bone has its own consciousness, and will take the initiative to absorb the blood essence of martial artists to revitalize its damaged soul. If it obtains enough blood essence, it can even cultivate to become a demon!”

As Demonshine spoke, Lin Ming sucked in a cold breath of air. This was truly a great world, all sorts of strange things were possible. For a Demon God Bone to fuse with an Emperor Will, be born with a consciousness, and then later even cultivate to become a demon. This sort of thinking was unimaginable.

However… to use blood essence to revitalize a damaged soul…

Lin Ming suddenly paused. The Magic Cube was also the same!

Even Demonshine had originally wanted to absorb the blood essence of the Ancient Giant Demons. Unfortunately, he had lost it to the Magic Cube.

This increasingly confirmed Lin Ming’s guess that within the Magic Cube, there was some incomparably powerful injured soul that was waiting for blood essence to repair itself.

“Demonshine, is this Blood Demon Bone a so-called heaven-step Demon God Bone?”

“I’m not too sure. It shouldn’t be heaven-step, but rather a high-grade earth-step. If you can obtain it, not only will it help you to break through to Revolving Core sooner, but you can even use it to help raise your battle spirit. A Blood Demon Bone is absolutely a great treasure to temper a battle spirit!” Demonshine said, his voice full of temptation.

“It doesn’t matter how good it is, it’s impossible for me to obtain it. I almost lost my life just now…” Lin Ming shook his head, a bit regretful. He knew just how far he could push himself.

“Hehe, well, logically speaking, this Blood Demon Bone is not what someone with your cultivation can mess with. But… you have a battle spirit, and that is the greatest weapon you can rely on!”

“Oh?” Lin Ming’s mind stirred.

“The greatest difference between a Blood Demon Bone and an ordinary Demon God Bone is that that Blood Demon Bone contains an Emperor Will. After gaining its own consciousness, it will go out to hunt and kill martial artists of its own initiative, absorbing their blood essence. In a way, it is similar to a spider that is waiting for martial artists to rush into its web! But, the way that a Blood Demon Bone attacks is through a will attack. The two Fey idiots just now were defeated in the world of will by that Blood Demon Bone, that’s why they weren’t able to summon any resistance at all in the real world.

“But you are different. You have a battle spirit. You are not like them at all!”

Lin Ming pondered this for a moment. In the Road of Emperor, he still vividly remembered the massive gap that existed between him and an Emperor battle spirit.

He couldn’t help but ask, “My battle spirit is still only in its elementary form. But that ancient powerhouse that left behind the Blood Demon Bone probably reached Large Success of his battle spirit. I fear that I am far from being its match.”

Demonshine shook his doggy head and revealed a smirking satisfied expression that he knew far more than Lin Ming, “The ancient powerhouse certainly reached Large Success in forming its battle spirit, otherwise it would have been impossible for it to leave behind a Blood Demon Bone. But, that ancient Supreme Elder died far too long ago. It must have been at least tens if not hundreds of thousands of years. Through the span of time, even that powerful will would slowly weaken. This Blood Demon Bone contains that will, but that will already has no relation to the ancient great Emperor that died. It is only a blood demon, dependent on swallowing others' blood essence in order to strengthen its consciousness and cultivate to become a true demon. Its true strength isn't any greater than yours, otherwise do you think you would have really been able to break out just now?"

Demonshine's words caused Lin Ming's heart to move even more. If he could really obtain this Blood Demon Bone for himself then the advantages were obvious. After breaking through to Revolving Core, he would then have the strength to return to the South Horizon Region!

The South Horizon Region was the place that Lin Ming always worried about. He wished that he could return immediately.

"How can I find it?" Lin Ming asked.

"Hehehe, just follow this Saint's instructions and you'll be fine, but… this Saint has a condition, and that is… after obtaining the Blood Demon Bone, I get half!"

"Alright!" Lin Ming thought for the briefest of moments before agreeing.

The Blood Demon Bone was originally a treasure that was closely related to the will – it could even temper a battle spirit. Presumably, it would be very helpful to Demonshine in repairing his damaged soul.

Without Demonshine, Lin Ming simply wouldn't have dared to capture this Blood Demon Bone, much less that he and Demonshine also shared a mutually beneficial relationship, with each helping the other obtain what they needed. He had also been helped by Demonshine many other times, so giving half of this Blood Demon Bone to him was reasonable.

"Alright, I will now tell you the main points for capturing the Blood Demon Bone…"

The method for catching the Blood Demon Bone was much simpler than what Lin Ming thought it would be like. After approximately understanding the process, he stood up and then began walking back to the area of the dense black fog.

“Lin Ming, where are you going?” Seeing Lin Ming walking back to that danger zone, Sada felt a creep crawl over his scalp. Lin Ming actually wanted to return there?

Lin Ming shook his head and casually lied, “When I struck out just then, the power was too great and I ran too fast, dropping a spatial ring there. There are some important things inside, so I have to go back to look for it.

Dropped a spatial ring?

Wasn’t that just too careless right now!

Normally, a martial artist would always leave a touch of perception on their spatial ring so they would know as soon as it fell. But in a panicked, frantic situation such as what just happened now, it was possible to drop it in a moment of inattentiveness.

“However precious those things are in your spatial ring, they are not as precious as your life!” A clear voice called out. The one speaking was Lan Xing. In her opinion, if Lin Ming went back then he might not be as lucky as he was escaping. It was possible he could die.

High Lord Black Ash stared at Lin Ming as if he were an absolutely klutzy idiot. Several other Fey youths were also looking at Lin Ming with gloating expressions. Most of them thought that if Lin Ming went back now, his chances of living through that danger again would be exceedingly slim.

“Brother Lin, what is in your spatial ring? If it’s resources, then Sir Chief High Lord can recompense you.” High Lord Bloodfire said, even as he subsequently used a true essence sound transmission, “Our main mission this time is to enter the 1200 mile region to seek lucky chances for Sir Chief High Lord. This is our most important objective. If it’s just some personal wealth, then it’s better to forget it.”

Hearing High Lord Bloodfire's true essence sound transmission, Lin Ming truly felt sad for him. This Bloodfire so desperately wanted to go adventuring into danger zones just so he could seek lucky chances for others.

“Brother Bloodfire, that ring is truly useful to me. There are some weapons, pills, and array flags that greatly relate to my combat strength.” Lin Ming lied again.

“Alright. Then you go. Come back as soon as you can.” High Lord Bloodfire had no choice but to give up.

“Lin Ming, we will only wait one hour for you. If you can't return before then, then we will set off regardless.” Seeing that Lin Ming was so adamant on going back, this was all Sada could say.

Lin Ming nodded. “Okay.”

Chapter 630 – Capturing the Demon Bone

Chapter 630 – Capturing the Demon Bone

…

…

…

With every step he took, the fog around Lin Ming became increasingly thick. At first, it was only like a thin layer of gauze, but slowly, it was concentrated to the point of almost turning into essence.

A suppressive atmosphere spread out along with a vivid infernal energy.

Lin Ming restrained his aura as much as possible, while keeping his mind on high alert within his spiritual sea as he waited for the Demon Bone's surprise attack.

In the end, the transformed Demon Bone was only a high ranking Demon God Bone that had a wisp of Emperor Will within it. The only attack method it could use was also only a will attack.

"Lin Ming, first pretend that you're not its enemy while I find the location of its main body. We will have to dig it out in a single go. We will only have one chance. If we fail, this demon spirit will be prepared and it will be impossible to fool it again."

Lin Ming nodded. According to Demonshine, this transformed Demon Bone was usually a few thousand feet deep underground; it would only come close to the surface when it was hunting. This was also the only chance to capture it, otherwise, in this Eternal Demon Abyss where one's divine sense was suppressed and with this transformed Demon Bone that was so good at hiding, it would simply be impossible to find it again.

After walking a dozen or so miles, Lin Ming's speed was sometimes fast and sometimes slow. Finally, he heard that sweet melodic singing again.

"Lonely… I'm so lonely… come down and stay with me…"

It was like the song of an ancient woman as she waited for her husband's return. Lin Ming's steps paused, his eyes flashing for a brief moment in the dim light.

It came!

Lin Ming's mind went cold. Hearing the song this time, he was much calmer than he was last time. It was very easy to distinguish the soul attack that lay within this sweet song.

The true function of the song was to charm a martial artist's heart and drag their consciousness into the world of will.

If a martial artist had never come into contact with the world of will, they wouldn't have a clue what was happening to them. They would simply stumble in muddle-headed; the results from that could be imagined.

In the world of will, Lin Ming stood in a vast green wilderness. Here, he didn't feel any killing intent at all. Rather, he just felt a trace of a new budding spring.

This sort of scenery was…

From the dark, deathly gray surroundings to suddenly arrive at such a beautiful spring prairie, the visual impact was startling.

At this moment, in front of him, a female appeared. She wore a long, fiery red skirt, and her figure was slender and exquisite, her appearance similar to someone Lin Ming had met before.

"Stay with me! Follow me!"

A gentle whisper rang in Lin Ming's ear, striking him like a bolt of lightning. This woman… was Mu Qianyu!

The Mu Qianyu was extremely lifelike, with even her frown and smile, everything was the same as in Lin Ming's memories.

In that instant, Lin Ming truly did have the briefest flash where his soul fell into illusion. But, he quickly recovered his mind.

"This transformed Demon Bone can actually have me see the Qianyu in my memories. It can call back my memories to have my mind fall into illusion… this is truly a great method!"

Lin Ming always felt that his will was as firm as iron. But even so, he had almost lost his mind. If it were someone else instead, they simply wouldn't have the strength to resist. No wonder those two Fey youths had died so easily. Once their will was defeated, their bodies simply became this Demon Bone's food.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin… we finally meet again…" Mu Qianyu beautifully smiled, her laughter like the spring rain. Her appearance, manner, movements, everything was consistent with the true Mu Qianyu.

Although Lin Ming clearly knew this was an illusion, he still felt his mind tremble. It had been almost two and a half years. This entire time, he had worried about Divine Phoenix Island, worried about his parents, and worried about Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu.

At this time, Demonshine's voice suddenly sounded out, "Lin Ming, I've found it. Wait three more breaths of time and then attack with everything you've got! With your battle spirit, you have no need to fear it at all!"

Three breaths of time…

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up, silently counting in his heart as he lightly traced his spatial ring, his mind linking to his Purple Comet Spear.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, what are you doing? Why do I feel as if I sense killing intent from your body, you… you want to…” This ‘Mu Qianyu’ covered her mouth with her hands, her eyes filling with a hidden bitterness and sadness.

Two breaths of time…

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, could it be you want to harm me…” ‘Mu Qianyu’ stretched out a hand as if she wanted to touch Lin Ming.

One breath of time…

Lin Ming took a step back, avoiding Mu Qianyu’s hand.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you…” ‘Mu Qianyu’s' eyes were pitiful.

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a deep killing intent. His voice was low as he said, “You did what you should never have done. You turned into someone important to me in order to deal with me; how can I ever let you live!”

The Purple Comet Spear was drawn. Within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, the azure battle spirit howled, merging into the Purple Comet Spear. With a thrust, thunderfire howled!

“Mu Qianyu’s beautiful face changed. Her incomparably exquisite expression instantly became horrid and hideous. Her hands became claws that were matted with fur, and a hoarse keening cry came out of her throat, filling the air with a sad and mournful song even as she grabbed at Lin Ming.

“Humph!”

Lin Ming coldly coughed. In the world of will, the battle spirit was king!

Kacha!

The demon claw was directly pierced through by Lin Ming's spear. The Purple Comet Spear didn't lose any momentum and immediately thrust through the demon's chest. That demon's hideous face immediately revealed intense panic!

"Lin Ming, now is the time, don't let it escape!"

Lin Ming thrust out his hand, loudly shouting, "Seal!"

Thunder and fire formed a cage in thin air, sealing the demon within. Here, in the world of will, Lin Ming could use any method he wished to defeat his enemy, as long as his will was stronger.

As for the Blood Demon Bone in front of him, all it had was a wisp of Emperor Will; it was far from forming a battle spirit. Naturally, it wasn't Lin Ming's match.

"One mile straight ahead of you, 300 feet underground, that is where it is!"

Demonshine took advantage of the time when the Blood Demon Bone was distracted with Lin Ming in the world of will to accurately pinpoint the exact location of its main body.

"I've got it!"

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a bright light. As the Blood Demon Bone's soul was still sealed within the world of will, his own will had withdrawn to reality. He pulled out the Purple Comet Spear – Penetrating Rainbow!

Lin Ming didn't even need the blink of an eye to cross one mile. There was only a flaming rainbow of light that pierced through the void as the ground suddenly exploded. Tens of thousands of jins of earth were turned over. One with his spear, Lin Ming was like a nail that thrust into the sharp rock, instantly reaching the position that Demonshine had said!

There, an enchantment of energy spread out for several dozens of feet. And within that enchantment, there was a crimson glass bead a bit smaller than a pigeon's egg, hiding at the very center.

Kacha!

How could the frail enchantment possibly defend against Lin Ming’s Purple Comet Spear? In the instant that Lin Ming had arrived, his attack had already broken it apart!

The transformed Demon Bone panicked. It galvanized the energy around its body as if it wished to escape into the dirt, but how could Lin Ming allow it to do as it wished!

“Concept of Space, seal!”

The space around the transformed Demon Bone instantly collapsed, forming a cage from the power of space around the transformed Demon Bone, imprisoning it within. With Lin Ming’s comprehension of the Concept of Space, wanting to create a stable long-term cage was impossible. At most, he could create one that lasted for several breaths of time. But, this was enough!

As the Demon Bone was trapped, Lin Ming immediately twisted his fingers, creating hundreds of seals that shot forwards. These golden seals all fell upon the Demon Bone. This was the sealing technique used for Thunder Souls and Flame Essences. Using it to deal with this Demon Bone was also suitable!

“Ohhh!”

The transformed Demon Bone issued a miserable scream. To see a little glass bead make such a sound felt extremely strange.

Lin Ming simply didn’t care at all. His fingers became faster and faster as more seals fell upon the Demon Bone. As the seals were finished, Lin Ming flicked his finger and thin strands of thunder surrounded the Demon Bone, quickly forming a cocoon of lightning around it. Lin Ming still wasn’t assured. He also placed a wisp of the power of space around the cocoon, then took out a jade box and placed the cocoon in the jade box.

With so many layers of protection, the Demon Bone wouldn’t be able to escape even if it had wings!

Demonshine chuckled and said, “That was well done. Boy, you really are ruthless in your actions. I thought that you might not have more than a 30% chance of capturing the Blood Demon Bone, but I never imagined you would be so clean and decisive. The Blood Demon Bone was really caught by you and it didn’t even have a chance to respond!”

Lin Ming faintly smiled, “That’s also thanks to you finding it so soon.”

Lin Ming could feel that Demonshine’s soul force had rapidly recovered to a great extent. After he broke through to the Xiantian realm, he had faintly felt that Demonshine’s soul force had been inferior to his own. But, after all these years, Demonshine’s soul force had already surpassed his own by a great deal. To find some clever Demon Bone hiding in a spot one mile away and 300 feet deep, Lin Ming didn’t believe he had this ability.

This was the skill of a Supreme Elder from the Realm of the Gods. In the end, even a skinny camel was still bigger than a horse. As time passed and Demonshine’s soul force restored even more, the disparity between them would only grow.

Lin Ming had just covered the jade box when Demonshine said, “Boy, hold up.”

“Mm?”

“Let this Saint go in and enjoy himself first, hehehe!” Demonshine rubbed his doggy paws together, his long tongue sticking out to lick his lips. His expression was no different from a sexual predator running into a bath full of beauties.

Seeing Demonshine act like this, Lin Ming couldn’t help but laugh.

“Boy, what are you laughing your ass off about? Rest assured, this Saint will make sure to keep your half for you. I will not cheat you even a little bit.”

Lin Ming drily coughed, “I don’t want to eat your leftovers.”

After successfully obtaining the Blood Demon Bone, Lin Ming’s mood was very good. He could break through to the Revolving Core realm and even raise his battle spirit. But, this place wasn’t good for going into closed-door seclusion to make his breakthrough. He had to find a relatively safe place to do that.

Demonshine unhappily said, “What do you mean this Saint’s leftovers? This Saint will first subdue this tiny bone’s spirit and then divide half for me and half for you. After this Saint processes his treasure, it will be much easier for you to swallow. It won’t be like that time where it was so rough you even had to swallow the Nameless Divine Pill and suffer so much distress!”

Lin Ming smiled, “That’s fine then, ah… we just had a fierce battle, it’s not good to stay here too long. Let’s leave first.”

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, fierce fighting could easily awaken evil beings that were slumbering deep underground. If something jumped out that Lin Ming couldn’t deal with, then there really would be no escape to heaven or hell for him.

Chapter 631 – Departing Alone

Chapter 631 – Departing Alone

…

…

…

“Demonshine, since we’ve captured the Blood Demon Bone, I plan on heading off by myself now so that group of fellows thinks that I’ve died. I have to look for a place as soon as possible and make a breakthrough to Revolving Core!”

The reason that Lin Ming kept delaying breaking through to Revolving Core was because he didn’t have a chance to. When he was walking the Road of Emperor, Lin Ming had chosen to travel the road of will lights; that was completely unhelpful to Lin Ming’s cultivation. If he practiced by himself, it would take up to a year if he wanted to make a breakthrough with the most solid foundation possible.

Lin Ming could not waste this much time.

All along, Lin Ming had greatly desired to break through to Revolving Core. Currently, rising through the small boundaries of the Xiantian realm, relative to Lin Ming’s currently terrifying combat strength, wouldn’t have too great of an impact. But, Revolving Core was different, that was a true leap in strength. That was because only after breaking through to Revolving Core would he officially enter the ranks of the masters and gain the qualifications to return to the Sky Spill Continent.

As for the battle spirit he formed before, that only increased his striking power. Facing the Polaris Tower Master, Lin Ming didn’t believe he could defeat him as he was now.

In order to truly increase his strength, he had to break through to Revolving Core!

“Boy, you are impatient aren’t you? Don’t forget that we’re still in the Eternal Demon Abyss. Where can we possibly find a safe place for you to make a breakthrough?”

Lin Ming said, “I have the map that the Polaris Tower Master gave me. I’ve already looked over the map before. There truly are places where one can go into closed-door seclusion. Although they aren’t absolutely safe, they are still relatively safe. When that happens, and with you protecting me, I’ll just need to squeeze out half a month at most to make a breakthrough to Revolving Core!”

“Boy, I think you are nuts. This father only has a soul body left over, how can I possibly protect you?” Demonshine grouchily said.

“If you go and possess a body then you’ll have some combat strength!”

“F*ck!” Demonshine cursed without any sense of the grace of the master he was, “Do you think it is so easy to seize a body? A soul can only seize bodies a limited number of times! Moreover, once they do, if the soul and body are incompatible with each other, then a fierce battle can even occur! Even still, just adapting to the body will take a long time. Even if you offered up your body to this saint, this saint would still have to consider a number of factors. And now you want this father to seize the bodies of all these trash!!? You should be slapped for even thinking of this!”

When a different soul and body fused together, there would often be an intense and violent battle. The fusion itself was not a short term process. If the method was too violent, then this would often damage the body instead. This was also the reason why so many mortals, after having their bodies possessed by a fox spirit, would slowly wither away, finally having all their essence energy sucked dry.

Lin Ming didn’t speak. He really didn’t know that there would be so many conditions for seizing a body.

At this time, Demonshine said, “Here’s my suggestion. You continue to follow that group of people and go forwards with them. Although it’s not too convenient, they can still be a shield for you when an evil being attacks. The evil beings will usually target the weakest first. For instance, that Blood Demon Bone attacked the two fellows with the weakest will first. If it wasn't for the way they died giving me some clues as to what that evil being was, it would have been impossible for you to catch the Blood Demon Bone."

If there weren't other people present as a shield, then the Blood Demon Bone would have attacked Lin Ming instead. Even if Lin Ming won the battle of wills against the Blood Demon Bone, he still wouldn't have been able to catch it. He would only have alarmed it and caused it to run away instead.

Demonshine's words weren't without reason. However, Lin Ming hesitated for a moment and then shook his head. "I've already decided. As for needing a shield or something like that, I can find that whenever. Later, I can join another group, but it doesn't have to be with those same people.

"I need to break through to Revolving Core. I need strength. Breaking through to Revolving Core in a place like this is dangerous, but with my strength as it is now, isn't walking 1200 miles near the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss, especially when it just erupted, not also dangerous? Just now, the reason that I could deal with the Blood Demon Bone was completely because the Blood Demon Bone could only use will attacks, so it just happened to be suppressed by me. What if I encountered something that was good at physical attacks? Would I really be a match for these kinds of evil beings? What if I met a turbulent flux of energy from the Eternal Demon Abyss? If everything is a risk, then I would rather choose to break through to the Revolving Core realm! Because after I do, I will have enough strength to seek my own lucky chances. But, without breaking through to the Revolving Core realm, I fear my current journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss will only result in piddling mediocrity!"

Lin Ming's mind had been decided. To someone like Lin Ming, with such a firm heart of martial arts, it was usually difficult for him to change the choices he made. Such a person would often be stubborn and not even consider just how far they could push themselves. But sometimes, as the matter continued, because they had a great destiny befall them or perhaps because they were absolutely confident in their own strength, in the end, they could use their actions to prove to the world that their choice had been right all along!

Demonshine saw that Lin Ming wasn't going to change his mind and shook his head. He said, "Well then, that's fine too. But, if you insist on breaking through in these damned lands, this Saint still won't seize a body to protect you, that is absolutely impossible! This group of so-called 'Emperor level talents' is nothing more than trash in this saint's eyes! It's not like I'm trying to be picky here!"

Demonshine had always been arrogant. Naturally, the geniuses of the mortal world didn't enter into his vision. These so-called geniuses were only Emperor level talents if placed in the Sky Spill Continent or Holy Demon Continent. But in the Realm of the Gods, the Emperor level talents they mentioned were on completely different levels.

Lin Ming said, "I understand. At that time, if there really is danger, it's enough for you to give me a warning."

………

………

"Time's up!"

10 miles away, Sada was watching the last grain of sand fall through the hourglass in his hands. He gazed deeply towards the direction that Lin Ming had gone in. All he saw was a thick fog, without even a hint of Lin Ming's shadow.

Lin Ming… he died here?

"That idiot, I told him not to go back, haha, I've never seen such stupidity before!" High Lord Black Ash guffawed.

In that sort of environment, without even knowing where the enemy was, two martial artists had died a miserable and shockingly tragic death. Those two were Emperor level talents! Within the 12 Skysplit Towers, they were top ranked Heavenly Demon Seven Stars. Even if they were weaker than a High Lord, it wasn't by that much!

But even such extraordinary people could summon no resistance against their deaths. They hadn't even seen the shadow of the enemy!

In this sort of situation, High Lord Black Ash only had one explanation. That was… the disparity between them had been too great!

That evil being had been so much stronger than them that it could play with them in the center of its palm. And finally, Lin Ming was forced to go back for some stupid spatial ring, possibly even walking into a trap. Wasn't that just seeking his own death?

It wasn't just High Lord Black Ash that had these thoughts, but many others as well. A Fey youth said 'lamentingly', "I warned him not to go back, but… yeah, this Lin Ming was far too confident. Just because he randomly broke through the fog the first time, he believed he could do the same the second time, and now look what happened!"

As the Fey youth spoke, his blue eyes couldn't help but glance over at Lan Xin, as if he wanted to find a trace of disdain or ridicule for Lin Ming on her face.

This was the exclusive mindset of male animals. This Fey youth knew that a Fey Holy Land would never accept a human marrying into their sect, but Lin Ming had still stolen their thunder so he was jealous of him all the same. At the time, all of them were scared, none of them daring to move lest they alert the evil being. But, Lin Ming had actually dared to rush out, leading them to escape in a single go. This had greatly contrasted against the Fey youth's timidity at the time.

And now, Lin Ming had done something stupid, and it was far worse than what they had done. This caused a lofty sense of superiority to rise in their hearts. That Fey youth's expression seemed to say, 'Look, that Lin Ming was such an idiot! He luckily bumped his way into an exit once, but that loser thought he could do it again. The result was… death. We weren’t timid, we weren’t scared, we were just being careful! In this Eternal Demon Abyss, it’s not wrong to be so cautious.’

Randomly stumbling his way through, he had hit the jackpot the first time. But, the second time was absolute death!

After this Fey youth spoke, two other Fey youths echoed his sentiment, “Indeed. Ah, we should be more careful from now on. That Lan Yuan, the first fellow to die was also a bit simple-minded. How could he not have taken Sir Sada’s advice? He actually ended up attracting an evil being to us. Fortunately, we’re no longer with that Lin Ming fellow. If he continued to go with us, then who knows when he would do something hotheaded and put us all in danger, hahaha!”

Several Fey youths were gloating as they talked, weaving a story that Lin Ming was their unlucky star. If their squad really did keep such a simple-minded and hot-headed fellow with them, then it would easily place the entire group in danger.

Lan Xin didn’t seem to hear their discussion. She had always been looking far off into the distant hazy fog. She suddenly said, “A quarter hour before, there was an intense collision of energy. Did you notice…”

The intense collision of energy that Lan Xin mentioned was obviously when Lin Ming had used Penetrating Rainbow to dig out the transformed Blood Demon Bone. Lin Ming had gone all-out with this attack, and the energy fluctuations were easily seen even 10 miles away. Naturally, these martial artists had also seen it.

“Yes, I did. I guess that attack was Lin Ming’s final struggle before death. After that attack, it completely disappeared. It proves that after that strike, the outcome was decided. But since Lin Ming hasn’t returned yet, who won and who lost can be imagined!” A Fey youth rationally analyzed the situation.

Although Sada felt that something was off, he couldn’t help but acknowledge this too. The Fey youth’s analysis made a great deal of sense. It was likely that Lin Ming had died.

“This damn Lin Ming!” High Lord Bloodfire frowned. He didn’t hold out on any further hope. Of everyone here, he most understood Lin Ming’s strength. Although Lin Ming hadn’t been able to break through to Revolving Core, he absolutely had the strength to rank amongst the top five High Lords of Polaris Tower. If Lin Ming could enter the 1200 mile radius zone of the Eternal Demon Abyss, then he truly could have been a great help to him. When that time came, they would have been a powerful combination, able to seek a great lucky chance for Sir Chief High Lord. What a pity, that plan had now come to nothing, leaving him with nothing but the desolate sense of being alone.

“Sir Sada, let’s go!” A Fey youth said. The one hour agreement had ended, and even an extra incense stick of time after that. It was becoming increasingly clear that Lin Ming had died.

Sada sighed, “It’s true that we can’t wait here forever. If Lin Ming didn’t die he should have returned long ago. Let’s continue then.”

Sada didn’t think of the possibility that Lin Ming would not only be alive, but also intentionally leaving their group. Alone, without a guide, without a squad, his chances of living in the Eternal Demon Abyss would certainly be slim to none.

Chapter 632 – Swallowing the Blood Demon Bone

Chapter 632 – Swallowing the Blood Demon Bone

…

…

…

As Sada and his squad were still wandering around, Lin Ming had already rushed several dozen miles away.

“Lin Ming, you better count your blessings. This saint knows a great number of things about the Eternal Demon Abyss, but the number of things that this saint doesn’t know is even greater. It’s true that this saint’s soul force is heaven-shockingly powerful, but my combat strength is actually limited. If an enemy comes and invades your spiritual sea with their spirit, then this saint can chomp them to bits without mercy. But, if it is a true physical attack, then it will all depend on you.”

“I’ve got it.” Lin Ming originally hadn’t expected to rely on Demonshine too much. Lin Ming glanced at the map. In truth, the jade slip that the Polaris Tower Master had given him couldn’t be totally considered a map. Rather, it was a collection and summary of experiences.

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, a map that listed danger zones was meaningless. This was because every time the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted, there would be large-scale changes in the surrounding terrain, and the evil monsters and dark spirits would often move around to resettle themselves.

As a result, any marked danger zones and safety zones of the Eternal Demon Abyss were useless even as reference points.

Only an old horse like Sada, who had entered the Eternal Demon Abyss several times or even over a dozen times, could use his own experience and judgment to determine the risks of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

The map in Lin Ming's hand didn't list out any danger zones or safety zones, but rather, it described a variety of possible danger zones and safety zones. If one ran into a scene similar to what was described in the map, then they could use this information as a reference to judge whether it was dangerous or not.

"The fog is thick in front, and the infernal energy is faintly surging around. According to the jade slip this should be a place where some demon or monster is buried. The ghostly energy soars to the heavens, causing the surrounding infernal energy to become turbulent. Because most of this ghostly energy is dispersed, the chances of a Demon God Bone forming there is low. Rather, all sorts of evil beings will gather at this point. This sort of area has no lucky chance, rather, there are only dangers all around. It is absolutely best to avoid this area!"

Lin Ming promptly made a judgment according to the jade slip and bypassed this danger zone.

As he walked along, he couldn't help but marvel at just how useful this jade slip was. No wonder the Polaris Tower Master had been so careful, and even wanted him to destroy this jade slip if he fell into a fatal situation. If a Holy Land descendant were to get their hands on this jade slip and make use of this map, then the value of it could be imagined.

"Lin Ming, be careful, in front!"

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, the energy field would suppress perception and the thick fog would cover one's line of sight. A normal martial artist would be able to sense a range of several hundred feet, and Lin Ming, even though his soul force was so potent, he could only cast out his senses to merely a thousand feet. This was even shorter than a mortal's line of sight. Demonshine's soul force, on the other hand, was much more formidable than his, so his senses could spread out for several thousand feet. It wasn't strange for him to discover something abnormal first.

"Three altogether, they should be bloodfire beasts..."

If they could cultivate for 7000 to 8000 years, then they could even gain strength equal to a Life Destruction martial artist. But, these three bloodfire beasts in front of him were only equal to middle Revolving Core martial artists.

"Lin Ming, suppress you strength as much as possible when you kill them. The bloody infernal energy here is thick; there might be other evil beings lurking about. If they are alerted, then the consequences will be dire..."

"Understood." Lin Ming flicked his fingers and dozens of Blood Drinking Seals danced in the air, gently trembling.

After several breaths of time, three humanoid vicious beasts rushed towards him, their bodies blazing with fire and blood. The brilliant flames on their body caused one to feel as if their soul was burning.

"Die!"

Lin Ming waved his hand and the Blood Drinking Seals shot out. In order to ensure a fatal blow, Lin Ming had fused a wisp of battle spirit into these Blood Drinking Seals.

A battle spirit could be attached to anything, strengthening its power. Even a withered leaf, after having a battle spirit attached to it, could instantly become an incomparably sharp killing tool, much less the already keen Blood Drinking Seals.

With a 'cha cha cha' sound, the crystal cores in the bloodfire beasts were instantly split in half by the battle spirit infused Blood Drinking Seals. The bloodfire beasts miserably screamed, their bodies fading away into nothing.

In an instant, three middle Revolving Core enemies were all slain. Lin Ming had taken step by step to arrive where he was now. His strength had undergone earth-shaking changes since he first came to the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

Lin Ming picked up the broken crystal cores. Although these crystal cores were far inferior to Demon God Bones in value, they were still better than top-grade Blood Demon Crystals. He naturally couldn’t waste them.

Unconsciously, several days had passed. Lin Ming had already walked around a thousand miles. His pace wasn’t fast because he was always carefully analyzing the turbulent flows of infernal energy as well as the terrain, judging the safest route possible. Sada had also done this, hence why he had been so slow in guiding them.

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, it was better to be safe than sorry.

“We’ve walked over a thousand miles and we’ve encountered seven to eight danger zones but no safe zones!” Lin Ming said with a bit of frustration. In the Eternal Demon Abyss, the dangerous areas were naturally much more frequent than the safe areas.

“Hehe, this road is one you chose. To break through to Revolving Core in this perilous hellhole of the Eternal Demon Abyss, only you could think of something so silly!” Demonshine curled his lips and lazily wiggled his butt. He continued, “This Saint is going to take a nap. The infernal energy of the Eternal Demon Abyss has too many benefits for repairing this saint’s damaged soul. When I’m sleeping, don’t bother me if there’s no trouble, and definitely don’t bother me if there is!” Demonshine said playfully.

“I’m sorry, but it seems that you’ll have to delay your sleeping plans… that infernal energy pattern in front, if I’m not wrong, should be called a twisted python. It is one of the relatively safe zones listed in the jade slip.”

“Oh?”

Demonshine looked up. In front of him, the infernal energy formed a gray and hazy wind, stirring up the fog into little vortexes. In fact, the infernal energy here seemed to be even thicker than normal.

"Did you make a mistake? I feel that the infernal energy here is very thick. Are you sure this isn't dangerous?"

Demonshine had a deep understanding of the evil beings and spirits of the Eternal Demon Abyss. As for the patterns of infernal energy and terrain, he honestly hadn't studied this. With the Demon Emperor's strength, how could he have bothered with this? What the Demon Emperor had studied was how to catch the evil beings and spirits that wandered this land. Being able to determine what evil creature he was chasing would give him the greatest lucky chances.

Lin Ming said, "According to the jade slip, this twisted python geography continues for over a thousand miles. This is because two different flows of infernal energy intersect here and then revolve around each other, forming a ghostly energy current like a giant twisted python. Here, the infernal energy is thick in the surroundings, and the deeper you go, the thicker the infernal energy will be. But, at the very center point of this twisted python terrain, there should be a hundred mile wide area where the infernal energy is extremely thin. In the central 10 miles, the infernal energy might even be lower than that of Skysplit Tower. That is the so-called safe zone. Of course, relatively speaking..."

Demonshine scratched his doggy chin and said, "This twisting python terrain continues for a thousand miles. If you want to reach the center, that will be 500 miles. This 500 mile walk won't be easy..."

Lin Ming faintly smiled, "That's why I'll have to rely on you. It's best if you discover dangers ahead of time and then inform me so I can avoid them."

"Relying on me? Do you think I'm some sort of slave or something? After this saint woke up, I've been worked so hard by you! How about this, after you break through to Revolving

Core, if you obtain anything good in the Eternal Demon Abyss, I'll take half of it. If so, then this saint will, of course, have to reluctantly agree to such a difficult task."

"You don't even know what there is to find yet you already want half. You really are a greedy lion opening its mouth." Lin Ming said, speechless. "You contributed to obtaining the Blood Demon Bone so I gave you half of it. For whatever comes next, if you put in the effort, then I'll give you half. But, if you don't need to do anything, then we'll split it 80 to 20. Consider that your reward for helping me break through to Revolving Core."

"Me 80 you 20?" Demonshine asked, pretending to be confused.

"Playing this sort of joke isn't very fun." Lin Ming's smile had disappeared. At this moment, he didn't have free time to bargain with Demonshine.

"You're too mean and stingy! We'll divide it four to six!"

"two to eight!"

"three to seven!"

"Two to eight!"

"Okay, okay… two to eight, it is two to eight." Demonshine could only helplessly give up. Lin Ming was the type who absolutely kept his promises. Bargaining with him might end up backfiring.

Lin Ming faintly smiled and then displayed his movement technique as he soared into the thick gray fog.

As they rushed in, the infernal energy became increasingly rich. Demonshine also played his due role. His sense of perception was far wider than the majority of evil beings' within this twisting python terrain area.

Avoiding these evil beings didn't mean that Lin Ming was afraid of them. Rather, he feared that fighting them would lead to stronger evil beings coming forth.

Occasionally, there would be times when he couldn't avoid some evil beings. At this time, Lin Ming would use his battle spirit infused Blood Drinking Seals, instantly killing them without slowing down.

Like this, Lin Ming arrived in the 100 mile center zone of twisting python energy current without danger. Here, the thickness of infernal energy truly had dropped by a great deal.

Then, Lin Ming no longer suppressed his speed. He immediately launched Golden Roc Shattering the Void and in just several steps, arrived at the 10 mile center zone of the twisting python energy current.

"It's here! The jade slip wasn't wrong."

The infernal energy current of the center ten miles was less dense than even that of Skysplit Tower. In this sort of infernal energy barren land, evil beings normally wouldn't come here.

"This place is truly a remote and desolate god-forsaken land." Demonshine glanced around, probing the surroundings. He didn't like this place; the infernal energy here was too low.

"This is it. I will close up here for half a month and break through to Revolving Core. Then, I will enter the 1200 mile forbidden zone around the Eternal Demon Abyss by myself!"

"Boy, you are completely bonkers, sufficiently crazy! If you close up and break through to Revolving Core here you will definitely stir up the flow of energy. Even a safe zone will become unsafe. I hope you don't become eaten by some monster spirit or something." Demonshine lazily said. Still, he stretched out his perception as far as possible, doing the best he could to guard Lin Ming.

Lin Ming faintly smiled and then took out the Blood Demon Bone from his spatial ring, slowly unraveling the spells around it. These past days, Demonshine had used some unknown method to take away his half. The Blood Demon Bone had shrunk, and the originally savage and manic energy had weakened.

This was much more convenient for Lin Ming to absorb. If this was his usual closed-door seclusion where he had a measure of absolute safety, then some manic energy wasn't too dangerous. But here, absorbing a simpler form was much safe.

Lin Ming grasped the Blood Demon Bone and slowly poured his true essence within. A moment later, the Blood Demon Bone actually turned a ball of dark red fluid. Without hesitation, he lifted it up and swallowed it!

A crazy and dangerous energy immediately filled Lin Ming's body!

The Blood Demon Bone first impacted Lin Ming's will. He felt his mind shake, and then he arrived in a completely blood red world of will!

Chapter 633 – Impacting the Bottleneck

Chapter 633 – Impacting the Bottleneck

…

…

…

“This is an ancient Supreme Elder’s battle spirit!”

The instant that Lin Ming entered the blood red world of will, he could feel a faint coercive pressure. Although this pressure wasn’t too obvious, it still brought with it a vast and wild energy that caused the mind to shake with fear!

It was very obvious that, because such a long span of time had passed, the ancient Great Emperor’s battle spirit had already weakened to the point of being pathetic. Otherwise, how could Lin Ming have possibly captured it?

Thinking of this, Lin Ming sighed, a bit gloomily. No wonder how powerful one was before death, no matter how heaven-shaking or earth-shattering, after death, they were nothing but ashes that returned to the earth. The body rotted, their energy concentrating into a Demon God Bone. As for the battle spirit, although it was in a sense endlessly enduring, after tens of thousands of years or even hundreds of thousands of years, it would slowly weaken, in the end becoming simply ‘nothing’.

Lin Ming wondered. If one could reach the highest boundaries of martial arts, could they break through the cycle of Samsara and live in perpetuity?

Lin Ming knew that, regardless of the Supreme Elder that had developed ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’, or the Saintess that was sleeping deep within the Magic Cube, neither of them had been able to fully step onto the peak of martial arts. He wondered, did the Evil God that created the Heretical God Force ever reach such a boundary?

Lin Ming had steeled his heart and soul to climb to the peak of martial arts. A big portion of the reason for this was because he wanted to take a peek at the pinnacle of martial arts and see just what it was like.

A red energy gathered in front of Lin Ming, forming an incomparably fierce demon.

Demonshine's voice sounded out in Lin Ming's mind, "This is the evil spirit that absorbed the ancient Emperor Will and evolved to this state. Although it was born from the womb of the ancient Great Emperor, the truth is that it has no relationship to them. Extinguish it, and use it to temper your battle spirit!"

Not only could the Blood Demon Bone help a martial artist break through a bottleneck, but it can even be used to temper the will. This was a rare treasure. If it wasn't for this point, then Demonshine wouldn't have been tempted by it to begin with.

After the red evil spirit formed, it rushed towards Lin Ming. Lin Ming's mind stirred, and the Purple Comet Spear appeared. Thunderfire sparkled on the spear point, and with a sizzling sound, that blood red evil spirit was stabbed by a spear light. In the world of will, the battle spirit was king. The complete Blood Demon Bone wasn't even Lin Ming's match, much less this incomplete form in front of him.

A faint trace of red light escaped. Without hesitation, Lin Ming absorbed all of these energies into his will body. He saw these faint traces of red will intrude into his spiritual sea, clawing towards his soul.

With it, a violent and tyrannical consciousness flooded Lin Ming's consciousness.

"Incorporate this energy, erase its soul mark, and turn it into the purest soul energy to absorb." Demonshine reminded Lin Ming. The truth was that Lin Ming didn't need a reminder, he already knew what to do. With his battle spirit gradually forming, his consciousness was as stable as a mountain. Swallowing this will would only be a matter of time.

With his consciousness linked to his spiritual sea, in the skies above Lin Ming's spiritual sea, the faint traces of red energy were spinning around the tiny spear that was his battle spirit, constantly being absorbed into it.

Time passed second by second. From its illusory, translucent appearance, the little spear became increasingly solid. Its entire body seemed to take on a metallic color as if it were being formed from ancient bronze.

A day later, this spear completely formed, with only some missing parts at the end of the spear shaft.

Lin Ming was aware of the changes in his battle spirit. Using his mind to connect to his battle spirit, the little spear fiercely trembled, as if it didn't want to be suppressed, wanting to rush out of Lin Ming's spiritual sea instead.

"Good young man!" Demonshine couldn't help but praise out loud, "Your cultivation hasn't reached Revolving Core and yet your battle spirit has passed its elementary form and is rapidly taking shape! You are truly a monstrous genius! To form a complete battle spirit before Revolving Core, this can't be done with just talent or any sort of heavenly treasures, none of that is sufficient. What you would need is an incomparably formidable will!"

In terms of willpower, there was no need to mention Lin Ming's heart of martial arts. In addition, he had repeatedly swallowed the soul fragments of the Magic Cube and even had the Samsara martial intent helping him. In this aspect, the martial artists of the Holy Demon Continent were all left in the dust by him. In fact, even the geniuses of the Realm of the Gods would find it hard to compare.

Lin Ming remained silent, not saying a word. He clenched his teeth, completing the final tempering of the battle spirit. At the end of the spear shaft where it was incomplete, the wisps of energy were constantly solidifying it.

After two hours, the battle spirit had taken complete shape. In that instant, a faint dragon roar seemed to sound out as a vibrant and vigorous energy dissipated from the dark yellow battle spirit, filling the skies above his spiritual. Even the sleeping Demonshine was startled within Lin Ming's spiritual sea!

"It really formed! A dark yellow level battle spirit!"

"Oh? Dark yellow level?" This was the first time that Lin Ming had heard the different classification rankings of a battle spirit. From the sound of it, a battle spirit had to be raised up, with great potential for growth.

Demonshine said, "The ranks of a battle spirit from low to high are dark yellow, silver white, gold, bright blue… because of these different colors, they are separately called a bronze battle spirit, silver battle spirit, gold battle spirit, and blue soul battle spirit. Currently, your battle spirit is a newly formed bronze battle spirit! Generally speaking, an Emperor of the mortal world would have a bronze battle spirit! But your cultivation is merely at the Xiantian realm and you already have a bronze battle spirit. Your future potential will be boundless! It looks like this saint made a good choice in choosing you, hahahaha!"

Demonshine happily laughed. Lin Ming was also in a good mood. After absorbing the will body of the Blood Demon Bone, there was still the main event. That was… breaking through to Revolving Core!

With its will erased, all that was left over of the Blood Demon Bone was the purest form of energy!

This energy had been sealed within Lin Ming's body with the power of thunder.

After removing the seal of thunder, the Blood Demon Bone's energy flooded into him, like a dam that had suddenly burst!

A vast, torrential wave of energy surged into Lin Ming's meridians, flushing in every direction. Even though Lin Ming's meridians were tough, it was still difficult to accept such a baptism; some meridians even began to break. But, with Lin Ming’s formidable regenerative ability, this minor damage wasn’t considered anything at all.

“Gather the energy in your dantian; condense the cyclone to a core!”

Demonshine’s voice sounded out in Lin Ming’s mind. In truth, Lin Ming didn’t need Demonshine’s words; he already knew what to do. Out of the cultivation methods he had studied, the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ was well suited for moving infernal energy.

By forcefully revolving the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’, Lin Ming directed all the energy within his body to rush towards his dantian.

Energy came from all directions like a massive ocean tide. Wherever it went, even if the meridians were blocked, it would wash everything away. All of this energy finally poured into the dantian with overwhelming force, smashing together!

Bang!

For a time, it was like Lin Ming’s dantian had exploded. The originally spinning true essence cyclone was completely broken!

Lin Ming stuffily coughed and spat out a mouthful of blood. Using such a wild and brutal energy to break through to Revolving Core was not something that most martial artists could withstand. If the meridians weren’t toughened and the foundation wasn’t extremely solid, then if a martial artist rashly did this it was very likely their dantian would explode, causing them to perish in a miserable fashion!

As for Lin Ming, by virtue of his solid foundation, he could stiffly compression this turbulent energy into his dantian. Under such a potent storm of true essence, the massive pressure caused the true essence there to condense into tiny grains!

The tiny grains grew more and more, becoming increasingly crowded. They were like tiny Blood Demon Crystals that floated within Lin Ming’s dantian.

A new true essence cyclone slowly formed. The difference from the last true essence cyclone was that this one contained a great number of solidified true essence grains!

If Lin Ming could gather all of these true essence grains together, slowly forming them into a revolving core, then he could officially break through to the Revolving Core realm!

This process could not be hurried. If this was a normal breakthrough, then even an Emperor level talent might need to close up for half a year to condense their core. Using the energy of the Blood Demon Bone, the time Lin Ming needed was greatly shortened. Still, it might take around 10 days to half a month.

Not bothering to wipe the blood from the corners of his mouth, Lin Ming manipulated the remaining energy to continuously gather in his dantian. As the pressure in his dantian grew, more and more true essence condensed, forming solid grains. These tiny solid grains slowly began to be sucked into the spinning true essence vortex.

And in the center of this cyclone, a tiny rice sized crystal core appeared. After this crystal core emerged, tiny grains of true essence constantly fell onto the crystal core, slowly becoming a part of it.

In this way, the crystal core slowly snowballed to a larger size...

Time passed a day at a time.

In the blink of an eye, 10 days had passed. From the time Lin Ming had first entered the Eternal Demon Abyss, a month had passed.

According to the speed of a normal squad, this was the time they would have traveled 8500 miles deep into the Eternal Demon Abyss.

On this day, there were indeed five squads of people gathered at the 8500 mile meeting point.

These five squads originally had some 50 people, but now, there were only 39 remaining. 11 martial artists had perished so far. The probability of dying had far exceeded the former trips into the Eternal Demon Abyss.

"This is it. We are only responsible for bringing you here. As for the remainder, that is all up to you!" A guide said.

After speaking, the guides all sat down and began to meditate, recovering their energy. After all, this entire time they had been constantly exploring, analyzing the situation, and calculating scenarios, all of this together was a major burden on the mind, causing them to consume a great deal of mental energy. And the return trip would also be another month long journey. Naturally, they had to readjust to their peak condition before headed back.

As the guides sat down to rest, the other martial artists began milling about.

"Lan Xin, how was your harvest?" Among the group, Duanmu Qun had travelled so long and was still able to maintain his breezy and handsome appearance. As he saw Lan Xin, he moved over to her. Both of them were of the same race, and, as descendants of Holy Lands, they naturally knew each other.

"Very average." Lan Xin shook her head. Along the way, Sada's squad had only found three Demon God Bones. These three Demon God Bones were the size of a wild chicken's egg. As far as Demon God Bones went, they were quite large. However, compared to their large squad, the harvest was quite small, much less that according to the rules of Skysplit Tower, half of all findings had to be given to the guide.

"It's already good that you could arrive here safely. Your squad..." Duanmu Qun glanced over Lan Xin's squad. Out of 10 people, there were only seven left. They were missing two Fey youths as well as Lin Ming.

"Mm? Lin Ming? How come he's not here?" Duanmu Qun asked, surprised. He didn't believe that Lin Ming would fall on this 8500 mile journey. He only thought that he had some matter to attend to so he left off by himself.

“Lin Ming…” Lan Xin shook her head. “Lin Ming is missing. He might be alive, but the chances of him having perished are higher.”

As Lan Xin spoke, Duanmu Qun was completely stunned. “Missing? Perished?”

Chapter 634 – Forming the Revolving Core

Chapter 634 – Forming the Revolving Core

…

…

…

Normally, the ones that die in a squad were the weaklings. Duanmu Qun didn't think that Lin Ming would fall here. Even if he heard this news from Lan Xin's own mouth, he found it hard to believe.

"Hehe, it's not that the chances of him dying were high, but his death was basically determined." Not too far away from Lan Xin, a Fey youth smirked.

If this was just after a disaster and everyone had scattered, then it could be said that Lin Ming had gone missing. But, the situation was different. They had arranged to meet after an hour but Lin Ming still hadn't returned. If he hadn't died then just what could it be?

"What really happened?" Duanmu Qun asked.

The Fey youth vividly recounted the process of Lin Ming's death, highlighting repeatedly that he had loudly discouraged him from returning, but Lin Ming had only insisted on being foolish. Finally, he had chosen the wrong method to tackle his problem and ended up never returning.

After the Fey youth spoke, Duanmu Qun frowned. A lost spatial ring? This reason seemed a bit far-fetched, but still passable. If Lin Ming had really fallen here because of this reason, then that was too great of a pity. To not be able to find a rival in his life… it was like Duanmu Qun had lost a goal in life.

Standing alone on a peak, if one didn't see a higher peak, then it would be easy for their vision to be limited, resulting in them wasting their potential.

As they were speaking, another squad arrived. This squad only had eight people remaining. In this group were two heaven-step Asura Emperor level talents. One was Feng Shen, and the other was the Great Ax Tower's Blackstone.

As soon as Feng Shen arrived his eyes locked onto Sada's squad. He clearly remembered that Lin Ming was in this squad. He was curious as to just what lucky chances Lin Ming had obtained.

However, as he didn't find Lin Ming, a bit of confusion clouded his eyes.

"There's no need to look, Lin Ming's gone missing!"

Duanmu Qun's voice sounded out near Feng Shen's ear.

The peak Emperor level talents of the Skysplit Towers were often Fey. Feng Shen also came from a Holy Land and was old acquaintances with Duanmu Qun.

"He's missing?" Feng Shen asked, startled.

"Mm… the chances of him dying are very high…" Duanmu Qun shook his head, thinking it was too great a pity.

"Lin Ming died?" Blackstone arrived with Feng Shen, and after hearing this news, was initially surprised. But he immediately smiled with disdain. Seeing was far better than believing. These top Emperor level talents were never convinced by word of mouth unless they could see with their own eyes. Blackstone had long heard rumors about Lin Ming's talent and genius, but he had naturally played these all down in his heart.

Blackstone originally didn't believe Lin Ming was so great. Now that he died in the 8500 mile journey here, he had an expected and satisfied expression on his face.

He laughed and said, “I heard that Lin Ming was the greatest number one talent of the Holy Demon Continent for the least 10,000 years. But, it seems this fame was a bit cheap. To die here, heh, how mediocre!”

Feng Shen frowned as he heard this. He scowled as he said, “The facts are still unknown. According to common sense, Lin Ming should have died. However, there are always incredible and unbelievable miracles occurring around Lin Ming!”

“Hehe, Feng Shen, I think you’ve been unnerved by Lin Ming in your heart and already have thoughts taken root in your mind that you are inferior to Lin Ming! Once you have such thoughts, you will never surpass that person in your life!” Blackstone looked at Feng Shen with derision. When a talent loses their proud and lofty nature, their potential for growth greatly suffers.

Feng Shen didn’t speak anymore. His natural disposition was disinclined to argue with others to begin with. All he thought that was when Lin Ming entered the King’s Cage for 108 days, everyone had thought he had died, but, he had emerged at the last moment, not only alive, but with strength that had soared shockingly, instantly proceeding to kill High Lord Heian.

This was the same as that time… could Lin Ming have really died?

Seeing Feng Shen’s silence, Duanmu Qun walked over and patted Feng Shen’s shoulder in consolation, saying, “Although Blackstone’s words are crude, he does still have a point. The thought of being inferior to Lin Ming had truly taken root in your heart!”

Feng Shen shook his head and calmly said, “If I am inferior then I am inferior, it’s as simple as that. I never thought of surpassing Lin Ming. As long as I can keep up with his footsteps, then that is enough for me to be a leading hero of the future world.”

With nothing else to say, he went to sit on a boulder and meditate. Out of all the young geniuses present, he was the only one who had come from the same Skysplit Tower as Lin Ming.

He was the only one who had seen Lin Ming's terrifying talent with his own eyes, his jaw-dropping speed of growth and his heaven defying strength!

When Feng Shen had seen all of this with his own eyes, he had only been able to sigh with envy and admiration!

News of Lin Ming's disappearance quickly spread around. After all, these people hadn't come from the same Skysplit Tower as Lin Ming so they were naturally suspicious about his rumors to begin with. After hearing that Lin Ming most likely died here, they also began to believe that this was as expected. Surely, Lin Ming was overrated.

Regardless of whether Lin Ming had truly been strong, his luck was simply too bad, or, perhaps the rumors were also exaggerated. In short, a genius that died was no longer a genius.

An Emperor sat on a throne of a million bones. No matter how brilliant or majestic Lin Ming had been before his death, after dying, he had simply become one of the countless bleached bones paving the road for others to become Emperors!

The topic of Lin Ming's disappearance or death aroused several hours of discussion. Then, it began to die down. There were too many geniuses that died. With the passing of time, such people were destined to be forgotten in the sands of time.

The people waited like this for three days. Slowly, they discovered that something was wrong. At the time they first set out, besides some lone Chief High Lords, there were a total of nine squads. But now, they were one squad short! There were only eight squads left, and in these three days, there had been no sign of them.

It had to be known that the guides had special methods to communicate with each other. But now these communication methods were like stones dropped into the ocean, without the slightest response.

Had they been annihilated!?

Realizing this, everyone felt chills creep up their backs.

An entire squad of 10 people, including even an experienced guide and powerful High Lords, was actually completely annihilated. Just what sort of terrifying situation had they come across?

Was it the legendary evil spirit from the Eternal Demon Abyss?

Thinking of this, every martial artist felt a surging cold in the air. If their squad had encountered the same things, then their fate might not have been much better!

At this point, Sada quietly stood up and said, “It’s time, we will not wait here any longer. We will return. You can consider returning with one of us eight guides back along the old route we took. But, all the resources that are found on the return trip will not be shared with you. Or, you may now enter the 1500 radius of the Eternal Demon Abyss’ edge. There, the dangers are doubled or even tripled. Even we do not dare to rashly enter, so carefully consider your choice!

After Sada finished, he glanced over the crowd. A great number of martial artists had hesitation in their eyes. After learning that an entire squad had been annihilated, this news left a lingering fear within their minds. If they entered deep within the 1500 mile radius periphery of the Eternal Demon Abyss, their team might break up. Then, not only would they need to resist the threats of those evil spirits, but they also had to defend against their own companions murdering them for their wealth. The risks could be imagined!

Thinking of this, those talents that had originally been full of confidence and wanted to rush into the 1200 mile radius of the Eternal Demon Abyss began to show signs of retreat.

They looked at each other with dread. In the face of such great lucky chances as well as such significant dangers, everyone hesitated…

……………

As all the martial artists were gathered at the meeting point 1500 miles from the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming was in the middle-late stages of breaking through to Revolving Core!

All of the energy within Lin Ming's meridians had been poured into his dantian. True essence was constantly forming into tiny grains, slowly spinning into a true essence cyclone there. The more it spun, the closer they approached the center, finally settling at the center of the cyclone and condensing into a spinning crystal core.

This was… the Revolving Core.

The reason that the Revolving Core was called 'revolving' core, was because the core was always spinning.

When a martial artist was at the Houtian realm, their dantian had just opened and their true essence was in chaos. With no regulations at all, the efficiency of this true essence was naturally low. When a martial artist reached the Xiantian realm, the true essence would form a stable true essence cyclone in their dantian, increasing the efficiency by another level. However, the total amount of true essence wouldn't increase by too much. Finally, when a martial artist arrived at the Revolving Core realm, the true essence cyclone in their dantian would condense into a revolving true essence crystal core, with their total amounts of true essence increasing by a large margin!

The spinning true essence turning into a crystal core was just like some celestial bodies of the universe turning into a rotating form.

This was the so-called similarities of the Great Dao. The human body became a miniature universe.

As another day passed, the Revolving Core in Lin Ming's dantian was now the size of a pigeon's egg.

Demonshine watched from the side. These days, this sleep-loving old dog had been finding it hard to stay awake as it was always carefully guarding the surroundings. As a result, it witnessed the entire process of Lin Ming attacking the Revolving Core realm.

A pigeon's egg sized Revolving Core was a tad larger than a normal martial artists Revolving Core. Demonshine wasn't surprised by this. In general, the more true essence a martial artist had, the larger their Revolving Core would be.

If the Revolving Core that Lin Ming formed wasn't much larger than other martial artists, then Demonshine would have thought that something was wrong.

Another day later, Lin Ming's Revolving Core grew yet again, this time turning into a more normal looking sphere. Now, it was around the size of a walnut. This Revolving Core was about 25% larger than a normal martial artist's Revolving Core.

Demonshine rubbed his chins with his paws, nodding in praise.

Another day passed. The Revolving Core grew once more to the size of a wild hen's egg. Now, Demonshine was finding it hard to remain calm. This size had exceeded his expectations!

But this wasn't Lin Ming's limit. After another day, the Revolving Core became the size of a chicken's egg. Demonshine began to gulp. This was already twice the size of a normal martial artist's Revolving Core!

"This boy, just what degree will he grow to?" Demonshine sucked in his long doggy tongue, his eyes staring unblinkingly at the true essence crystal core condensing in Lin Ming's Dantian.

Then, the fifth day followed. The Revolving Core did not increase in size. But after that, Demonshine's astonishment did not stop, rather, it increased.

The Revolving Core in Lin Ming's dantian hadn't changed in size, but the inherent true essence began to grow more concentrated. As more true essence grains fused with the Revolving Core, the energy within became increasingly rich!

On the sixth day, the Revolving Core shrunk, going back to the size of a wild hen's egg. But, not only did the total amount of true essence not decrease, but it instead increased by another level!

At this point, Demonshine was already a bit numb.

This boy was simply a monstrous freak, an abnormally monstrous freak!

On the seventh day, the Revolving Core shrunk once again, returning to the size of a walnut. This Revolving Core wasn't much larger than an ordinary martial artist's, but the total true essence quantity within was many times greater than that of an ordinary martial artist's!

Chapter 635 – The Revolving Core Changes

Chapter 635 – The Revolving Core Changes

…

…

…

On the eighth day of forming the core, Lin Ming's Revolving Core was the exact same size as an ordinary martial artist's, except that the energy within was several times greater.

Compared to an ordinary martial artist's Revolving Core, the Revolving Core within Lin Ming's dantian was a much darker hue, and also spun several times faster.

Normally, the faster a Revolving Core spun, the more volatile and active the energy was within, meaning that when it erupted all at once, it would be much more terrifying.

With such a solid energy and fast spinning speed united, Lin Ming's potential strength could be imagined!

"This boy is a damn farm animal, just what fodder was he fed growing up…" Demonshine mumbled to himself. Lin Ming's talent was something even he was jealous of. Only by insulting Lin Ming a bit could Demonshine feel a bit better about himself.

At this time, the Revolving Core in Lin Ming's dantian reached the finale of its condensation process. The Revolving Core no longer changed in size, instead beginning to take its final form. The surrounding energy within the dantian completely gathered onto the Revolving Core, continuously streaming onto this crystalline core.

The Revolving Core became increasingly round. When it was around 99% formed, the energy within the dantian began to suddenly accelerate!

At this time, the true essence crystal core became the incarnation of a voracious monster, completely and recklessly swallowing all of the true essence in Lin Ming's dantian, leaving it empty of energy. This caused every single bit of true essence in Lin Ming's body to converge into his dantian like an ocean falling into a sinkhole.

Lin Ming's dantian became a powerful bottomless pit of suction. It set off a massive whirlpool of true essence, sweeping in all of Lin Ming's energies.

In a mere few breaths of time,all the energy in Lin Ming's meridians was sucked dry!

Then, this suction force spread through Lin Ming's body. Heaven and earth origin energy was also sucked in by this powerful force, continuously gathering into Lin Ming's dantian!

At the moment a martial artist completed their Revolving Core, it would result in a qualitative change. It would become solid, round, and filled with a deep gravitational force!

It was just like when a star of the universe collapsed into a white dwarf star or neutron star. Once it collapsed, the mass would stay the same and the size would decrease but the gravity would experience a massive leap upwards!

When the cyclone within a martial artist condensed into a Revolving Core it was also a similar process of collapsing. The instant that a Revolving Core formed, because of the intense suction, it would completely condense all energies into the dantian. Within the void of the dantian, the newly condensed crystal core would cause a massive whirlpool, sucking in all the surrounding energy and leading the total true essence amount to have a massive leap.

This sort of leap would bring doubled or even quadrupled strength. Not just that, but after the Revolving Core formed, this sort of true essence crystal core would continuously maintain this attractive force. This was the reason that a Revolving Core martial artist far surpassed a Xiantian martial artist in condensing energy towards their dantian. Whether it was cultivation speed, endurance, regenerative ability, everything would rise.

With these several reasons added together, this was the reason that a martial artist would experience a massive leap in strength from Xiantian to Revolving Core!

Thus, this was why even a Saint level talent like Mu Qianyu, when at half-step Revolving Core, still found it only barely possible to fight a true Revolving Core martial artist.

The attractive pull of Lin Ming's true essence crystal core was far more terrifying than that of an ordinary martial artist. The true essence whirlpool increasingly intensified without any signs of stopping. It formed a massive cloud of purple heaven and earth origin energy above Lin Ming's head. At the center of these vast clouds, a funnel-shaped tornado extended downwards, enveloping Lin Ming at the very end and steadily streaming into his dantian.

Seeing such a situation, Demonshine couldn't even sit still anymore.

Oh heavens, this momentum was so great, it would be visible from several hundreds of miles out!!!

If Lin Ming had closed up within a place of absolute safety then no matter how great the momentum, none of it mattered. Even if he had primed heavenly tribulation to come down on his head, it would still have been fine! But, this place was different. This was the Eternal Demon Abyss, where every step was filled with killing intent and fatal dangers!

Seeing this abnormal situation last for another quarter of an hour without ending, Demonshine's forehead began to become wet with a nervous sweat.

"Oh good friend Lin Ming, how come you haven't finished yet? Just when the f*ck is this going to end!?"

At this time, Demonshine was on the same sinking boat as Lin Ming. Without Lin Ming, his damaged soul wouldn't even a chance to possess or do anything at all!

Demonshine had been counting on Lin Ming ascending into great achievements in the future and being able to profit from this. If Lin Ming died here, then all his efforts would be wasted!

Anxiously, with great fear, another incense stick of time passed. Finally, Demonshine's complexion changed.

As he expected, the worst turn of events had occurred.

Just a few thousand feet away, seven or eight evil spirits had gathered together, avariciously eyeing the direction Lin Ming was at.

…………

At this time, several hundred miles away, under a cliff, two Giant Demon martial artists and a Goliath martial artist were grouped together. The Goliath martial artist was standing guard while the two Giant Demon martial artists were sitting down in meditation. The injuries on their bodies weren't too serious, but these injuries would have still been fatal for a common mortal. Just two hours ago, these two Giant Demon martial artist had swallowed pills and were in the process of recovering from their wounds.

"What f*cking bad luck, I can't believe we followed an idiot guide here, and to think that the f*cker actually dared to call himself a living map of the Eternal Demon Abyss! F*ck!" After a quarter hour, the Giant Demon martial artists had finally healed their wounds and began to cuss out loud.

These three people were part of the missing ninth squad of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. Their entire squad hadn't been fully annihilated, but rather, only the three of them had survived. The other seven, including the guide, had been completely wiped out!

"I was almost killed by that idiot! Luckily, our strength is outstanding and our luck is good, otherwise we would've already become that evil being's supper!"

Remembering the experience from just several days ago, the three of them felt a lingering fear cloud their minds. That had simply been a nightmare. They didn't know where the enemy was and all they could do was watch helplessly as their companions slowly burst into puddles of rotten meat, their blood and organs pooling on the ground.

In all fairness, the guide truly could be considered experienced and his strength was also good. But in the face of such a situation, he had made the wrong judgment. He had everyone stand back to back in a circle and stand guard, causing more and more people to die. Finally, several people couldn't stand it anymore and separately escaped. As for the guide, he had paid for this wrong judgment with his life.

In the end, only the three of them had managed to run away.

These three were all High Lords and also the strongest three of their squad. In terms of individual strength, they could rank amongst the top five High Lords of Polaris Tower. As for the Goliath martial artist, he could even rank in the top three.

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, every single step was filled with death and there were danger zones and deathtraps everywhere. Sometimes, a squad would experience a complete disaster and only the strongest would be able to survive.

“Brothers, what should we do now? The three of us came to the Eternal Demon Abyss, but we haven't even had any lucky chances, instead, we've almost lost our lives. Should we return like this?” the Goliath High Lord asked. The two Giant Demon High Lords remained silent. Up until now, they had only found two ordinary Demon God Bones. Once divided, it wasn't much at all. They truly were loath to return like this. But right now, they didn't even have a guide. The three of them were like headless flies within the Eternal Demon Abyss, running around randomly was far too dangerous!

The Goliath High Lord saw the other two not speaking, and after some thought, said, “The lucky chances within the Eternal Demon Abyss are hard to find, but once they are found they might possibly be the greatest lucky chance we will ever experience. There are many different grades of Demon God Bones. The two we have are the lowest grade. If we can find an earth-step Demon God Bone or even the legendary heaven-step Demon God Bone, then our future days as Peerless Emperors will be just around the corner!"

Within Skysplit Tower, High Lords were indeed powerful, but, in terms of talent, they were actually inferior to the peak existences within the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, much less Holy Land descendants like Feng Shen, Duanmu Qun, and Lan Xin.

Without true talent, how could they reach this level? After staying in Skysplit Tower for many years, once a High Lord reached a cultivation similar to Life Destruction, they would naturally need to leave Skysplit Tower. Thus, every few dozen years, there would be a new group of High Lords at the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

But among so many High Lords, it was exceedingly rare for any of them to become Peerless Emperors. This was because they lacked talent and potential.

Without a great lucky chance, these three had almost no hopes of becoming a Peerless Emperor.

A Life Destruction powerhouse and an Emperor level powerhouse were on completely different levels. Whether it was strength or lifespan, they were simply incomparable. The temptation of becoming a Peerless Emperor was far too great!

The two Giant Demon High Lords were also unwilling. One of them was about to speak when he was suddenly startled. Blankly gazing off into the distant sky, he could see faint purple clouds in the heavens. Even the surrounding fog had been pushed away by these purple clouds so that they were much more clear and vivid.

"Look over there? What is that?"

"Mm?" As the other two turned to look, they were also shocked speechless!

This sort of change likely meant that there was a massive lucky chance that had appeared!

Of course, this also meant that there might be a terrifying existence there, a grave and fatal danger.

Or it could even be both. Dangers following a lucky chance… that was the most likely conclusion!

“What should we do? Should we go have a look?” One of the Giant Demon Lord proposed after a moment of hesitation. He looked towards the Goliath High Lord, the strongest of their three man group.

The Goliath High Lord grit his teeth. Without a doubt, this was a gamble. But, on the road of martial arts, how could there be no dangers?

There were many people that looked belittled martial artists who had relied on lucky chances to become Supreme Elders, saying that it was only their luck that was good. But, in truth, this was simply pure envy. There were far too many lucky chances in this future, but they were nearly always accompanied with a corresponding danger. The crux was whether or not one was willing to grasp this chance, and whether or not they had the strength to take it!

If one was always timid, hesitating and waffling over every single lucky chance, that was no different than resigning oneself to a life of mediocrity! They might not even be able to reach a high stage of Life Destruction, much less become a Peerless Emperor!

“We’ll go. The three of us will go together and restrain our auras as much as possible. We will take a look at the situation, and if there’s no hope for us to deal with it, then the three of us will immediately flee. If there is even a glimmer of hope, then we’ll bet everything on this to pave our own road of Emperor!”

“Good, I’m also of the same idea!” The High Lords quickly reached a consensus. With such a lucky chance in front of them, if they didn’t even take a look then they would regret it for the rest of their lives.

These three High Lords suppressed their auras as much as possible. With a lucky chance in front of them, they wouldn't be demure. But, they still had to be cautious as they advanced forwards at high speed!

They quickly rushed through the twisting python terrain. The swirling currents of infernal energy were broken through by them.

Within this twisting python terrain, there were a number of low-level evil spirits. To these three High Lords, as long as they weren't evil spirits that had rushed out from the depths of the Eternal Demon Abyss after breeding for tens of thousands or even hundreds of thousands of years, then they could deal with one or two.

Like this, they slowly approached the area where Lin Ming was closed up, breaking through to Revolving Core.

But at this time, Demonshine was actually battling with several evil spirits. This battle had already been going on for a long time…

Chapter 636 – Battle Spirit Protection

Chapter 636 – Battle Spirit Protection

…

…

…

The condensing of Lin Ming's Revolving Core had galvanized a mighty phenomenon. The surrounding true essence was stirred into a massive vortex of heaven and earth origin energy, forming massive purple clouds of energy several dozen miles wide. For such a sight to appear within the Eternal Demon Abyss, the results could be imagined.

Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, Demonshine could only helplessly watch as more and more evil spirits gathered, crying and groaning over the situation. Now, he finally understood what it was like to be surrounded by wolves.

But, there was still a silver lining to this horrible situation. These evil spirits were all of the low-level variety. They weren't those freakish existences that were shot out from deep within the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Demonshine didn't have a physical form and his real world striking strength was weak. He could only release his soul force to form an energy field, using this to deter these evil spirits.

Demonshine's energy field was truly powerful. It brought with it a vast and ancient atmosphere that could only come from someone from the Realm of the Gods. However, the temptation of Lin Ming's bubbling blood vitality was too great. These evil spirits incomparably desired this blood essence. Under the direction of their most primal nature, these evil spirits slowly approached Demonshine.

Demonshine could scare off three or five, but not a group. After these evil spirits gathered together, they launched an attack on Lin Ming!

And at this time, Lin Ming had both his eyes closed, his senses completely cut off from the outside world. He had entered into a deep meditative state; it was unknown just how long this would continue for.

"Ohh!"

The first evil spirit plunged towards Lin Ming. With one at the lead, another evil spirit rushed in. Demonshine concentrated and a brilliant light flashed out from his eyes…

Mind control!

An evil spirit suddenly shook, and its savage crimson eyes suddenly became dazed and empty. In midair, it suddenly twisted around and shot toward the second evil spirit. Without time to respond, the second evil spirit was smashed into the ground, injured.

Soon, these two evil spirits began to engage in a brutal melee on the ground. A moment later, the evil spirit that was controlled by Demonshine ripped the other one to shreds.

"Just using mind control once already consumes so much of my soul force; I absolutely can't last too long. Lin Ming, oh good brother Lin Ming, please wake up now!"

Demonshine was nervous. This was truly a dragon being played around with by shrimp. To think that there would be a day where he, a noble and awesome Hollowed Lord from the Realm of the Gods, would actually be bullied around by such a group of piddling low-level evil spirits!

After destroying an evil spirit, three or four immediately replaced it. Seeing this, Demonshine felt bitterness swell in his heart.

"OhhhHH!"

Two more evil spirits rushed forth. These two evil spirits were stronger than the last two. Demonshine grit his teeth and consumed 20% of his willpower to control these two evil spirits.

"Ahhhhhhhh!"

More and more evil spirits threw themselves forwards. Taking control of three evil spirits, Demonshine waged a vicious war with them. However, it was difficult to face so many with so few and Demonshine's current ability was limited. Two evil spirits dodged around Demonshine and ran towards Lin Ming, biting onto his bodily true essence protection.

Before Lin Ming had entered into meditation, he had arranged an energy defense within his body. As an evil spirit rushed at him, an arc of purple thunder erupted from his body. This thunder was composed of the Disenchanting Dream Light and the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder. The Disenchanting Dream Light could overturn the soul and mind, and the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder was especially useful in subduing ghosts and demons.

These evil spirits gave miserable shouts and were bounced off!

However, there were far too many evil spirits. As one was sent flying away, another one took its place.

As Lin Ming's body sparkled with the light of thunder, some evil spirits were burnt into gray smoke by the power of thunder. But, this pain only aroused the bloodthirsty and vicious nature of these evil spirits. All of the evil spirits crazily rushed towards Lin Ming. Demonshine's capacity to block them all was limited!

The energy of the protective layer of thunder was rapidly consumed. A moment later, it could not avert any more evil spirits.

A massive number of evil spirits hung off Lin Ming's body. It was like a pack of wolves that had bitten and clawed onto a giant beast.

Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, Demonshine was panicking.

“F*ck! Boy, consider that I must have owed you in some past life! Remember this!”

It wasn’t that Demonshine couldn’t fight with his full force, it was just that this soul was damaged. Once he did something, his soul would be injured. Back when Lin Ming was travelling through the ancient transmission array and was suffering through the space storms, there had been a time where he had completely exhausted all of his energy. It was only with Demonshine’s help that Lin Ming had been able to barely pass that crisis.

However, the price of this was that Demonshine had fallen into a deep slumber for nearly two whole years.

Now, Demonshine had finally woken up after much hardship. If it wasn’t for the nourishment of the infernal energy as well as the Blood Demon Bone, Demonshine absolutely wouldn’t be willing to expend his full strength to help, injuring his soul even further. But, he had no choice now. Once Lin Ming died, he would have to follow him into death!

From Demonshine’s body, a small portion of his divine soul began to burn. Massive rays of light suddenly shout out from all over Lin Ming’s spiritual sea! These golden lights were like sharp swords, instantly piercing through over a dozen evil spirits and burning them into smoke!

This was Demonshine’s materialized divine soul attack.

This sort of divine soul attack was a double edged soul. To use the soul to struggle, damaging oneself to kill the enemy. Especially in a situation where the defense in soul force wasn’t that great, the damage incurred would be higher. This was why the Imps who excelled at soul attacks always brought soul recovery medicines with them.

Demonshine’s soul was originally incomplete to begin with. After using such a soul attack, the damage to his own soul could be imagined.

After killing over a dozen evil spirits at once, the damage to Demonshine’s soul was not minor. Fortunately, he had recovered a great deal of his strength these past two years, otherwise using an attack that consumed so much soul force would have caused him to fall unconscious again.

And as Demonshine was groaning in his heart, not sure of what to do, he suddenly noticed that not too far away, there were two Giant Demons and a Goliath martial artists staring at Lin Ming, an eerie expression on their faces.

In that instant, Demonshine's heart fell to subzero temperatures!

Of these three people, Demonshine had some knowledge of two of them. They were High Lords from the other Skysplit Towers!

One wave hadn't ended and another one came! Demonshine wasn't naïve enough to believe that these people had come to lend a helping hand!

In fact, these three High Lords might be thinking that this was their lucky chance!

"Isn't that Lin Ming?" After the Goliath High Lord carefully led the other two to the center of the twisting python terrain, he didn't find any lucky chance. Instead, he found that someone was making a breakthrough here!

"That really is Lin Ming. He's breaking through to Revolving Core? Is he crazy?"

"This stupid idiot. He actually tried to make a breakthrough here and brought a group of low-level evil spirits to surround him! This is just looking to die!" A Giant Demon High Lord sneered. In his opinion, this was no different than suicide!

"Maybe Lin Ming came across some lucky chance and couldn't suppress his true essence, leaving him with no choice but to make a breakthrough here. I remember before that his cultivation was still a great distance from Revolving Core; he should still have had half a year at least before having any chance of making a breakthrough. If he didn't come across some lucky chance then this would be completely impossible!" The Goliath High Lord's eyes flashed with naked desire. A lucky chance that could allow a martial artist to make a breakthrough… this was exactly his greatest wish!

“He doesn’t have anyone with him, he’s alone. Something must be strange. And not just that, but the momentum from his breakthrough is so abnormally great. If an average person were to break through to Revolving Core, there definitely wouldn’t be such a scene.”

“There’s definitely something wrong!”

The three High Lords instantly agreed that Lin Ming must have come across some great lucky chance within the Eternal Demon Abyss, thus the reason for such a massive momentum when breaking through. As for Lin Ming’s squad, they had probably died or scattered away, thus this lucky chance had fallen completely into Lin Ming’s hands alone.

This sort of thing, just whose eyes wouldn’t turn red with greed?

These three people looked at each other, each seeing a thick killing intent in the other.

If they killed Lin Ming, there was an extremely high probability they would be able to obtain his lucky chance!

Let alone that Lin Ming was in his most critical moment in his breakthrough to Revolving Core, but even if Lin Ming had made a breakthrough his strength wouldn’t be stable for a short period after that. Also, these three people were all masters among the High Lords. They had complete confidence in their own individual strength. As for Lin Ming’s strength, they only had heard limited rumors about it.

“Kill him! No mercy!” The Goliath High Lord said.

Now Lin Ming was surrounded by evil spirits; it would have been better for them to wait until their battle was done so they could swoop in afterwards. But, Lin Ming’s breakthrough had reached the crescendo. Who knew when Lin Ming would make a breakthrough to Revolving Core? It was best to take action earlier lest there be even more problems later!

These three people all revolved their demon essence and rushed out together. One of the Giant Demon martial artists took out a long saber and slashed down at Lin Ming’s chest!

Kacha!

The saber directly killed four or five evil spirits and completely broke through Lin Ming's protective true essence!

The evil spirits grew enraged by these actions and rushed at the three High Lords!

"Out of my way!"

The Goliath High Lord gave a loud shout and swept out the massive staff in his hands, directly sweeping out all these low-level evil spirits. Three of the evil spirits bore the brunt of the attack and were directly twisted into pieces by the energy storm, vanishing into blue smoke!

"I'll send you along the way!"

The last Giant Demon loudly laughed. Grasping a hammer, he slammed it down towards Lin Ming's chest!

Seeing this massive hammer come down, Demonshine's pupils shrank. This time, he had consumed too much of his soul force; he was unable to mount a defense against these three High Lord's attacks.

Lin Ming's bodily true essence protection was broken, how could his mortal body defend against these attacks…

Would he die like this?

As this thought flashed through Demonshine's mind, all he heard was a muffled thump as Lin Ming was smashed by the hammer and sent flying backwards!

The true essence funnel twisted. Lin Ming's body fell hundreds of feet away, his fate unknown.

“Haha! What kind of so-called ten thousand year number one talent is this! What a load of crap! He still dies at this father’s hand!” A Giant Demon martial artist who had attacked laughed impudently. After being hit by his hammer, anyone’s ribs who would all be broken apart, their organs smashed to bits!

To kill a Titled Asura, the Giant Demon High Lord only felt that his thoughts were incomparably smooth as he was filled with a great sense of accomplishment.

However, after a few more loud laughs, his laughter began to die down. He looked at the sight in front of him with disbelief. Even the two other High Lords were shocked.

A few hundred feet away, Lin Ming’s breath was steady. He simply didn’t seem like someone who had been heavily wounded.

………………

Sweeping out with his divine sense, he saw that the clothes and flexible armor on Lin Ming’s chest had been completely smashed apart. As for his body, there was only some broken skin and flesh; the ribs were completely fine and intact!

“This… how is this possible?”

The Giant Demon martial artist’s eyes widened as he gripped his hammer. To be hit by his hammer, even a block of profound gold would be smashed flat. But, Lin Ming had only been slightly injured?

Was this a human body? It was even more resilient than profound gold?

At this time, within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, even Demonshine was incomparably amazed. He had also been wallowing in dashed hopes. If it was just one person, then he could seize their body. With his soul force, stealing the body of a High Lord was in fact easy.

But, the problem was that there were three people. If he stole one of their bodies and was killed by the other two, then his divine soul would shatter. Thus, seizing a body was the same as suicide to Demonshine.

In his despair, he never imagined that Lin Ming would actually be able to withstand this attack.

This wasn't just the bodily defensive power that came from Tempering Marrow; that Giant Demon High Lord's striking power was not a joke.

This was… could it be… battle spirit protection?

A light of realization went off in Demonshine's mind and he was instantly stunned.

Chapter 637 – Power of the Revolving Core Realm

Chapter 637 – Power of the Revolving Core Realm

…

…

…

A battle spirit was the manifestation of a martial artist's will. A battle spirit was invisible and without form, but it could actually be attached to anything, turning it into an incomparably sharp killing weapon. A withered leaf, with a battle spirit attached, could even cut apart a treasure. This meant that when one's battle spirit was attached to a withered leaf, the degree of its hardness had surpassed that of a treasure.

Using the same logic, if a battle spirit could be attached to a treasure armor, then it would make that treasure armor even more solid.

But, speaking was easier than doing. After a martial artist just formed their elementary battle spirit, it was still impossible for them to freely manipulate it.

A battle spirit could easily be used for attack. This was because a battle spirit only needed to be concentrated onto certain points.

But using a battle spirit for defense was much more difficult. This was because one had to spread the battle spirit evenly over a surface.

In the moment that Lin Ming was just attacked, his battle spirit vanished from his spiritual sea, evenly spreading out over his body and merging with his skin. This caused Lin Ming's skin to instantly become as tough as a high-grade earth-step armor. With the addition of Tempering Marrow, which made his ribs a nearly impassable fortress, both of these factors combined were able to abruptly block the Giant Demon High Lord's hammer!

As Demonshine realized all this, he paused. Did the battle spirit in Lin Ming's body spontaneously protect him? Or had it been under his control?

If it was under his control, did that mean that Lin Ming had awoken?

As Demonshine was rapidly thinking, the three High Lords that had sneak attacked Lin Ming all had gloomy expressions. To use the flesh and blood body to resist the attack a treasure weapon… how was this possible?

"Is there some kind of special energy on his body?" The hammer-wielding martial artist muttered. He didn't believe that someone could use just their body to resist his attack.

"What nonsense. Watch this!"

The other Giant Demon High Lord shouted out and stepped forwards.

"Mountain Shattering Strike!"

In order to ensure a killing blow, the Giant Demon High Lord used a martial skill. If he didn't take advantage of this time to kill Lin Ming, then once Lin Ming completed his Revolving Core, matters would become troublesome.

With an explosive banging sound, the ground underneath Lin Ming was chopped apart and the earth ruptured. But, in this turbulent flow of demon essence, Lin Ming's body was sent flying up again, all of his clothing torn and as he dripped with blood all over!

"He didn't die?"

The saber-wielding Giant Demon High Lord was bewildered. He had used a martial skill just now but had only managed to wound Lin Ming.

Just what in the world was this?

Lastly, as the Goliath High Lord saw this, his eyes flashed with a sharp light. His body began to emit explosive ‘ka ka ka’ sounds.

Sky Piercing Devil Arts!

This was a secret arcane skill of the Goliath race used to detonate all of the power within their body. Although this move damaged his body, with it, the Goliath High Lord could put his everything into this attack!

After the second attack had failed to kill Lin Ming, a dark and foreboding premonition filled his heart. He thought that if Lin Ming awakened now, the results would be extremely bad for all of them!

Lin Ming’s current condition was far too weird!

Demon essence was drawn from all over his body and began to flow into the Goliath High Lord’s staff. He would take this staff and directly smash it into Lin Ming’s skull!

The skull was a vital point of the human body. The Goliath High Lord didn’t believe that Lin Ming could have such a strange and mystical protection on both his chest and head. He would smash apart Lin Ming’s head like a sweet watermelon!

Wind howled. The staff contained a massive energy, twisting the space around it. With a shout, the staff came crashing down!

But in this instant, all the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy went wild. The demonic clouds of infernal energy in the sky madly funneled towards Lin Ming’s dantian. Energy flowed out like a vast and surging stormy sea, rocking the earth.

At this moment, Lin Ming’s eyes suddenly shot open, his vision like bolts of lightning shooting out!

As the Goliath High Lord saw Lin Ming’s eyes open, he was incomparably shocked. At this time, it was impossible for him to stop. With an earth-shaking bellow, all of the demon essence was revolved to the point where his meridians were about to break apart, all in order to display the highest power of this staff strike. He estimated that since Lin Ming just woke up, he wouldn't have the time to dodge this attack.

The staff whistled as it came crashing down. By the time Lin Ming's eyes had fully opened, the staff was a mere two feet from his forehead.

Bang!

A golden light erupted and energy surged up in massive waves. The Goliath High Lord only felt his hands shake as the arch of his palm cracked. The staff in his hand seemed to suddenly be stuck in stone, unable to move a single inch.

Looking down, he saw that the end of his staff had been firmly grasped by Lin Ming. And, underneath Lin Ming, a massive web of cracks extended out in the earth, reaching out to over a thousand feet, deep fissures in the ground.

This web of cracks was obviously created from a great impact force. But, Lin Ming had withstood this crushing shock without his arm even bending.

“This… this…!”

The Goliath High Lord looked at the end of his staff that was held in Lin Ming's right hand, his lips shaking. His strike that had contained his complete strength was actually received by the unarmed Lin Ming?

This staff strike was enough to shatter apart a great mountain!

“Lin Ming… you… ” The Goliath martial artist's voice shook. The power of the Lin Ming in front of him had exceeded his scope of understanding.

At this time, a thick killing intent spread out from Lin Ming's body. Naturally, the Asura force field had also expanded. With the Goliath High Lord's strength, facing this force field, even he felt as if resistance was impossible!

Run!

The Goliath High Lord didn't know what sort of lucky chance Lin Ming had come across, but, without a doubt, the truth was that he had no ability to resist the Lin Ming presently in front of him!

Without a single word more, he turned around and fled. He didn't bother trying to take back the treasure staff. He knew with absolute clarity that it was impossible for him to take back this staff from Lin Ming's hand!

The other two High Lords were not stupid. Seeing the Goliath High Lord run, they also turned around to escape. Not just that, but they both chose different directions.

Lin Ming sneered. He reached out his hand to grasp the void.

Cage of Space and Time!

The three High Lords felt as if they had suddenly slowed down, the space around them becoming incomparably thick. It was like they had fallen into a thick bog; there was simply no way to escape.

Lin Ming's cage of space and time was far inferior to that within the King's Cage. It couldn't truly lock in someone; it could only slow down their movements. But, this was enough!

Lin Ming's feet moved and his body exploded forwards. He didn't take out the Purple Comet Spear, only using the staff in his hand. Using this staff as a spear, he thrust it towards the Goliath High Lord!

"Ahhhh!"

The Goliath High Lord howled like a crazed mad man. He took out another staff from his spatial ring and pounded it towards Lin Ming.

This was a strike that was completely offensive without the least bit of defense. The Goliath High Lord was well aware that he was not Lin Ming's match. Before he died, he would either grievously wound Lin Ming or force him to defend.

However, his plan was destined to fail.

In the moment that the Goliath High Lord attacked, he felt the time around him suddenly slow to a ridiculous rate. As his staff was only half way out, Lin Ming's staff had already stabbed to his chest.

With the battle spirit fused with the staff, there was only a light piercing sound like a chopstick poking into paper. That staff, without any impediment, pierced through the Goliath High Lord's protective demon essence, continuing to pass straight through his body as if he were made of tofu.

The Goliath High Lord only felt a cold feeling in his chest and an emptiness in his soul. As he looked in front of him, Lin Ming had already disappeared. Turning his head down, all he saw was an arm-thick hole gouging directly through him!

Because the speed was too quick, blood hadn't begun to gush out yet…

To instantly kill the Goliath High Lord, this was simply nothing to the current Lin Ming!

Lin Ming suddenly changed directions. The space under his feet seemed to shrink, and with just a few steps, he had caught up to one of the Giant Demon High Lords.

The Giant Demon High Lord was already horrified, panic etched all over his face As he saw Lin Ming suddenly appear before him, his complexion completely paled. He simply couldn't organize a decent counterattack. In truth, it would have been futile regardless. His attack speed was simply pathetic.

With a flash of black light, Lin Ming's staff had already pierced through the Giant Demon martial artist's throat. Because the speed was too quick, the Giant Demon martial artist's neck had been severed at the same time, his head falling off!

As Lin Ming withdrew his staff, the head flew into the air!

Next, as the last High Lord saw his companion miserably die without even being able to put up an iota of resistance, despair filled his heart. When Lin Ming rushed towards him, he died without any surprise.

As the staff was thrust into that martial artist's back, in that instant, his spine and organs were all twisted to pulp!

From the time that Lin Ming had intercepted the staff, it had only taken him three breaths of time to kill three High Lords!

To Lin Ming, as he was now, a martial artist on the level of a High Lord simply had no ability to resist him. It was as easy as chopping a chicken!

Initially, when Lin Ming had been in the Road of Emperor, he hadn't made a breakthrough in his cultivation. But, he had comprehended a battle spirit. Because of this, in truth, his strength had actually surpassed that of a High Lord. It was just that he was still inferior to the Tower Master.

Now that Lin Ming had broken through to Revolving Core, his strength had enhanced several times over. Now, killing a High Lord level martial artist only needed a brief moment.

After he killed three High Lords, Lin Ming felt the thick killing intent in his body begin to gradually fade away.

At this moment, a thick infernal energy dispersed outwards above the corpses of the three High Lords, forming into a ten-winged Heavenly Demon that clawed at him.

To the current Lin Ming, these kinds of Heavenly Demons formed from infernal energy were just a joke.

With a flick of three fingers, he attached a wisp of battle spirit to the air, instantly defeating the three Heavenly Demons.

After the Heavenly Demons exploded, they turned into pure infernal energy, quickly gathering into Lin Ming's body and helping to form his Heavenly Demon Tattoo.

The fifth pair of wings became increasingly clear. Lin Ming had originally been an early ten-winged Heavenly demon, but now after killing three High Lords, two of which were early ten-winged Heavenly Demons and one a middle ten-winged Heavenly Demon, his own Heavenly Demon Tattoo had grown, stepping into the middle ten-winged Heavenly Demon stage.

As Lin Ming saw his Heavenly Demon Tattoo grow once more, his eyes sparkled. "I'm getting closer and closer to a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, If it's possible, I should try to condense my twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo here in the Eternal Demon Abyss. This will be my best chance to do so!"

The Heavenly Demon martial intent consisted of three different force fields – Asura, Death God, and Prime Emperor. As for the Prime Emperor force field, Lin Ming didn't think much of that. With his current strength, it was basically impossible for him to fully cross the Road of Emperor.

As for the Asura force field, Lin Ming had already obtained it.

Now, the only force field he could comprehend was the Death God force field. After forming a full twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo, it would be his!

Quietly, he picked up the three High Lords' spatial rings. As he was about to probe them, he heard Demonshine's voice in his head.

"Lin Ming, you are simply a vicious beast in human form. You've left me speechless!"

Chapter 638 – Three Thousand Boundless Worlds

Chapter 638 – Three Thousand Boundless Worlds

…

…

…

Suddenly hearing Demonshine's praising words, Lin Ming was curious, "What sort of degree do the geniuses of the Realm of the Gods reach?"

"Realm of the Gods…" Demonshine was slightly startled. He immediately sighed and slowly said, "The Realm of the Gods is a terrifying place; it was far too vast and boundless. Even when I followed Master, we only moved within a very minuscule range of the Realm of the Gods. In the Realm of the Gods, there are countless masters and countless naturally talented geniuses! Those are truly terrifying existences which people simply cannot compare to!"

This was the first time that Lin Ming had seen the boastful and loud Demonshine look so crestfallen and powerless. He couldn't help but ask, "Just how big is the Realm of the Gods?"

Demonshine said, "I cannot say how large the Realm of the Gods is, but, I will talk of the planes below the Realm of the Gods first. That is a plane like the one the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent exist on. If I'm not wrong, these continents existed on the same planet, but are simply very far from each other, separated by a great ocean."

"The lower mortal world that the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent exist on is called one of the three thousand boundless worlds, a domain below the Realm of the Gods.

When I say three thousand, this is not what is usually thought of by three thousand, but three different thousands multiplied together. How many do you think that is?”

Lin Ming’s eyebrows shot up. A thousand times a thousand times a thousand was 1,000,000,000!

1,000,000,000 lower mortal worlds, that was simply difficult to imagine!

With so many lower planes and so many living creatures, just how many masters would there be?

Demonshine continued, “Some of those abnormalities from the Realm of the Gods are already removed from the scope of humanity. There are some humans and other races that are half God Beasts or even more. The talent of their bloodlines is immeasurable!

A half God Beast bloodline…

Lin Ming took a deep breath. Initially, when he had inherited just a drop of blood from the Ancient Phoenix and True Dragon, these two drops of blood not only strengthened his body, but also changed his true essence properties and increased his talent.

If this was the effect of just one or two drops of a God Beast’s bloodline, then what would it be like if he were half God Beast?

It was unimaginable!

Lin Ming recalled that when he entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, he had learned it was a trial ground left behind by the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Could this so-called Ancient Phoenix Clan be one of those God Beast races like Demonshine mentioned?

Thinking of this, Lin Ming marveled at how wondrous it was. When he first entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, he had only been able to complete the general level smelting trial; he basically lacked the qualifications to complete the king level trial. As for Mu Qianyu, Mu Bingyun, Mu Fengxian, all of them current or past Saintesses of Divine Phoenix Island, they had only been able to complete the soldier level smelting trial!

To be a soldier in an army, that was the same as being cannon fodder.

Realm of the Gods…

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath, unconsciously gripping his fists. That broad and endless world was the Holy Land of all martial arts!

So many masters, so many geniuses, this caused Lin Ming's heart to burn with a brilliant fighting spirit!

He didn't fear masters nor did he fear geniuses. If a person did not seek opponents or find a higher peak, they would limit their own potential. Only by entering into a land with countless masters would Lin Ming ever have a chance of reaching the peak of all martial arts.

"Demonshine, let's go!" After a brief silence, Lin Ming finally spoke. The road was beneath his own feet. Whether or not he would be able to rise in glory within the Realm of the Gods, all of that depended on the current foundation he would build.

"Let's speed up!"

Lin Ming already had the contents of the jade slip's map memorized. As his figure faded, his feet stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void and he rushed straight towards the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Currently, low-level spirits were no longer a threat to Lin Ming. But, as for those existences from the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming still had to be cautious of them. The strength of those old monsters was difficult to imagine.

…………….

Three days later, Lin Ming arrived at the 1500 mile radius zone from the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Without stopping, he zoomed past.

On the fourth day, Lin Ming arrived at the 1200 mile radius zone from the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss. This was approaching the fatal 1000 mile life forbidden zone around the Eternal Demon Abyss. Here, the dangers would rise exponentially. Of course, the lucky chances that could be found here were enough to make one go mad with greed.

"Demonshine, let's look for people!"

The Eternal Demon Abyss was over 10,000 miles wide and had a circumference of over 30,000 miles. But, the truth was that the area most frequently explored by the 12 Skysplit Towers was a small portion of the southern and northern tip. During every exploration, the northern six towers would explore the northern region and the southern six towers would explore the southern region, thus, the area actually wasn't too large.

It wouldn't be difficult for Lin Ming to find others in this core region.

Forming a team had its benefits. The greatest was that, once they encountered a dangerous situation, there would be people that could act as a shield. Like this, Lin Ming would be able to observe the sneak attacks of the evil spirits and formulate a counterattack.

Generally, an evil spirit would first sneak attack the weakest.

A weak martial artist understood this reason, but they didn't have any other choice. If they didn't team up with a powerhouse then the chances of them dying were much higher. In fact, their life might be in danger if they encountered enough low-level spirits.

As Lin Ming walked, Demonshine let loose all of his perception to sense the surroundings, looking for martial artists. At the same time, Lin Ming followed the map notes in his memories and examined the surrounding terrain to stay as far away from danger zones as possible, even as he looked for lucky chances.

…………

At this time, a thousand miles away from Lin Ming, a squad of martial artists was being led by several senior High Lords, exploring the land.

In this area, for a radius of several dozen miles, the sand and rocks were a light blood red color. Around this area were two mountain ranges. Looking from afar, these two mountain ranges looked like the horns of a beast, surrounding the land around them.

This terrain could be called strange to the extreme.

“Sandlight, are you sure there’s an earth-step Demon God Bone buried here?” A High Lord from White Stone Tower asked after searching for a long time. The one he was talking to was an Imp martial artist that came from Five Color Tower, High Lord Sandlight.

Normally, a High Lord would only stay in his position for a few dozen years. Afterward, because they made a breakthrough to something equivalent to the Life Destruction realm, they would then leave Skysplit Tower. High Lord Sandlight had already been at the Blood Slaughter Steppes for 40 years now and had come to the Eternal Demon Abyss three times; this would be his fourth. He could be said to be very experienced, at least, not much less than any of the guides.

High Lord Sandlight investigated the terrain again and said, “Yes, I should be right. I believe that there is a high-grade Blood Demon Bone buried somewhere around here. If you look at the two surrounding mountain ranges, they form a natural cage of infernal energy, causing a massive amount of infernal energy to be sealed in here. This sort of place is easiest for a Demon God Bone to form, in addition, the ground beneath us is a blood-red, which is also a sign of a Demon God Bone. The Demon God Bone here is absolutely at the earth-step rank or even near the heaven-step rank!”

Listening to High Lord Sandlight say this, the martial artists were excited. A heaven-step Demon God Bone was simply a legendary treasure. But, they didn’t expect to find that. They would be satisfied as long as they could find an earth-step Demon God Bone here.

As everyone was putting effort into searching, no one saw a strange and greedy light flash in High Lord Sandlight’s eyes as he turned around.

Chapter 639 – Living Sacrifice

Chapter 639 – Living Sacrifice

…

…

…

The seven-man squad had already been searching through this blood-red land for an hour. High Lord Sandlight seemed to be very patient, but some of the newcomers were intolerably impatient. With such a great lucky chance in front of them, they were all excited.

“Mm? What’s that?”

A Giant Demon martial artist saw that not too far away there was a bump of dirt in the ground, as if there was a grave mound there. Normally, this sort of mound wasn’t anything strange, but the Giant Demon martial artist could feel a rich and sleepless energy moving about there.

This energy caused the Giant Demon martial artist to pause. What was under that mound? Could it be the earth-step Demon God Bone that High Lord Sandlight mentioned?

After thinking of this, the Giant Demon martial artist’s heart began to race within his chest. Looking all around, he determined that no one was paying attention to him and he began to slowly tiptoe over to the mound.

This blood-red island was several dozen miles wide. The squad had split up to each seek their own lucky chances. If one of them found the treasure alone, then they certainly wouldn’t share it.

The Giant Demon martial artist also had this idea. He raised his guard as he slowly approached the mound. As he closed in, he could feel the energy becoming increasingly rich.

“There really is something buried here.”

He thought for a moment about how to dig out this mound. Using his hands would be a bit improper, so he brought out a halberd from his spatial ring; using this halberd to dig would be much safer. But at the moment he extracted the halberd, his body suddenly shook. His eyes burst open and all the flesh of his body was instantly charred black, his body turning to ash in the next moment. All of his blood vitality had turned into a deep red wisp of light that shot into the mound!

A gentle breeze blew past and the ashes of the Giant Demon martial artist scattered into the wind. From beginning to end, the Giant Demon martial artist hadn’t even said a word.

The squad continued to search. Another hour later, some people began to discover that something was strange.

A few people had vanished into thin air!

“Stop, stop everything!” A martial artist cried out. He didn’t dare to shout loudly but used a true essence sound transmission instead. “I feel that… there are a lot less people!”

After the martial artists of the squad heard this, they gathered together. As they met up, they sucked in a breath of cold air. Three of them had disappeared and they hadn’t even noticed!

“Where did they go?”

The martial artists present fell a bone freezing cold in the air. They didn’t believe that these three had quietly left the squad. The greatest probably was that all three of them had been killed!

The three of them were all strong High Lords, but they had been killed so quietly. There hadn't even been a sound! This was far too horrifying!

"We must leave immediately!"

A High Lord from the Great Ax Tower said, his face paling. Although a lucky chance was tempting, they still hadn't found anything for such a long time and three people had already died, quietly and without their notice. If this continued, then just how many more of them would die?

Moreover, they hadn't even been able to see this enemy. Those that died must have instantly died. The difference in strength was too great!

Even with a lucky chance in front of them, continuing to struggle for it when they didn't even have the strength to obtain it was just the actions of a fool.

"Let's get out of here."

A Heavenly Demon Seven Star from White Stone Tower concurred.

"You want to retreat? We're about to find it soon, so why would we retreat? If we leave now, then all of our efforts would be wasted." High Lord Sandlight shook his head as he spoke.

"I agree. There are already some clues appearing. As people that entered the Eternal Demon Abyss, we should already be prepared to die. How can there not be dangers on the road of martial arts?"

A High Lord echoed. His name was High Lord Sky Eye. Like High Lord Sandlight, he too came from Five Color Tower.

After hearing that High Lord Sandlight and High Lord Sky Eye wanted to stay, the two previously speaking martial artists glared at them as if they were crazy.

“If you want to stay so badly then I won’t stop you. Let’s go!” The High Lord from Great Ax Tower said, raising his foot to leave.

High Lord Sandlight shook his head, “How unfortunate. If you stayed, then we might have been able to find it in another hour. Now, it seems that…”

As High Lord Sandlight spoke to here, his eyes suddenly flashed with a thick killing intent. Demon essence erupted from his body!

“Die!”

He drew out a saber from his spatial ring and slashed down at the leaving High Lord’s back!

A sharp saber light cut through space; wind howled!

This High Lord from Great Ax Tower was not some common martial artist. Although he was slightly worse than High Lord Sandlight, it wasn’t by much. Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, he had kept absolute vigilance of his surroundings, not even relaxing if his so-called squad was guarding him. Towards those cruel individuals that walked the killing road, having someone aim at their back was a completely normal matter!

The Great Ax Tower High Lord’s eyes flashed with an angry light. He suddenly swiveled around, and a sword jumped into his hand as if it were alive, cutting out!

Bang!

Demon essence violently collided. The Great Ax Tower High Lord gave a stuffy cough and drew back. After all, he had to quickly counterattack and his strength was also weaker. With this sword strike, he had suffered a loss. But, it was only a loss – he hadn’t been injured.

As he retreated several dozen few, the Great Ax Tower High Lord’s eyes were blood red as he said, “Sandlight, do you want to die!?”

“Hehe…” High Lord Sandlight sneered. Then, he actually put away his saber, as if he didn’t want to continue fighting.

“You…” The Great Ax Tower wasn’t willing to forgive this insult. With anger rising in his heart, he was about to take a step forwards and attack again, when at this moment, he quietly groaned and his body shook. Under everyone’s eyes, his entire body disintegrated into nothing, all of the blood in his body evaporating into a mist even as the rest of him turned into flying ash. All of his blood vitality was turned into a wisp of red light that flowed into a mound on the ground.

This sudden change stunned the youth from the White Stone Tower. A chill crept up his back. However, he didn’t have time to figure out how the Great Ax Tower High Lord had instantly died. All he was thinking was that he was in grave danger. Whether it was the two High Lords from Five Color Tower or this danger zone, everything here was a deathtrap waiting to kill him!

Without saying anything further, the youth from White Stone Tower turned around and fled!

“Where do you think you’re going?”

Beside the youth, the other martial artist from Five Color Tower, High Lord Sky Eye, was already attacking!

A spear thrust forth, straight towards the youth’s back!

At the same time, High Lord Sandlight also attacked. His saber cut off the White Stone Tower youth’s escape routes!

In terms of strength, this youth from White Stone Tower was only a Heavenly Demon Seven; he simply wasn’t a match for any High Lord, much less a pincer attack!

Only able to face one, the White Stone Tower youth blocked High Lord Sky Eye's attack, but the burst of demon essence from High Lord Sandlight swept over him, causing him to vomit blood, severely wounded.

"Hehe, be relieved that you will be honored as my living sacrifice!"

High Lord Sandlight cut down with his saber, combining his attack with High Lord Sky Eye. In an instant, the White Stone Tower youth's bodily true essence protection shattered and an arm was bloodily chopped off.

The White Stone Tower youth miserably shrieked. High Lord Sandlight chuckled, stepped towards the White Stone Tower youth and slammed his palm forwards.

Bang!

The youth was easily struck by High Lord Sandlight, sent flying into that mound.

Then, without even a moan, all of the youth's blood dried up, turning into a stream of light that submerged into the mound.

"Shit… just missing a bit more!"

High Lord Sandlight shook his head regretfully, but High Lord Sky Eye only laughed and said, "It doesn't matter. Although we're missing some blood essence… some other prey just delivered themselves to our door. Hahaha, this fool, instead of walking the path to heaven he chose to break into hell!"

High Lord Sky Eye turned his head towards a direction in the void and perniciously said, "This friend, you've already been watching for so long, come out so we can see you!"

Without any response from the empty void, High Lord Sky Eye sneered and said, "Don't think I'm just bluffing. I am called High Lord Sky Eye because my eyes can see through the nothingness like the eyes of heaven! In front of me, any illusion of camouflage you try is useless! Be a good boy and come out to die, or I'll attack you all the same!"

As High Lord Sky Eye spoke, he lifted his spear and pointed it towards a direction in the void.

At this moment, space warped, as if it were being torn apart. A blue-clothed youth stepped out. His hands were empty, his eyes were calm, and he looked as if he were taking a brisk walk in the spring.

This youth was Lin Ming.

In the moment that space twisted, High Lord Sky Eye's complexion changed. It was true that his eyes were special and he could sense fluctuations of life in his surroundings. To say that he had the eyes of heaven was an exaggeration. He could find Lin Ming's hidden position, but he didn't know just how Lin Ming had hidden.

Originally, he had thought that Lin Ming was using some strange stealth symbol or miniature array, but he never guessed that Lin Ming would hide in the distortions of space.

To use space to hide, the method of highest skill was to rip apart space and hide in the space crack, isolating all energy and atmosphere away. But, within the Sky Spill Continent, this was a nearly legendary skill. Even the Eightfall War Emperor might not have the ability to do this.

The method that Lin Ming used was to warp the space around him, making the light curve around his body, smoothly passing over him thus hiding himself. This was an extremely skillful stealth technique. It also required a very high comprehension into the Concept of Space.

High Lord Sky Eye immediately realized that he might have run into a troublesome fellow.

But, when Lin Ming stepped out of the distorted space and High Lord Sky Eye saw just who he was, his complexion completely changed. "You are... Lin Ming!?"

High Lord Sandlight was also greatly shocked, "Lin Ming, you are still alive!?"

When the squads had all gathered at the meeting area 1500 miles from the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss, news had already spread that Lin Ming had gone missing. No one knew just where he went, but, according to the analysis of the events, the greatest probability was that he had perished!

High Lord Sandlight would never have imagined that he would encounter Lin Ming here!

He had gone missing for a full half month and then, by himself, had crossed thousands of miles towards the Eternal Demon Abyss and had finally reached the very edge of the fatal forbidden death zone. How had he done this? What had he experienced during this time?

As High Lord Sandlight was thinking about all this, he was suddenly bewildered, “You… you broke through to the Revolving Core realm!”

High Lord Sandlight had just noticed Lin Ming’s cultivation. He was at the early Revolving Core realm!

Before entering the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming had only been at a half-step Revolving Core. According to all common sense, he would need at least another half year to make a breakthrough. But, Lin Ming had actually only used a single month to make his breakthrough, and in the Eternal Demon Abyss of all places!

Combined with the news that Lin Ming had gone missing, there was only one possibility. That was… Lin Ming had stumbled across a lucky chance, and it was also a massive lucky chance!

Chapter 640 – 10,000 Year Corpse Grass

Chapter 640 – 10,000 Year Corpse Grass

…

…

…

“Damn, why is this fellow so lucky!” High Lord Sandlight was writhing with envy.

He wasn’t sure what this lucky chance was – whether it was completely used up, or whether there was still some remaining. It was impossible to find any of this out unless he killed Lin Ming.

Thinking of this, High Lord Sandlight’s heart surged with a thick killing intent. If he killed Lin Ming, not only would he be able to seize his lucky chance but he would also complete all the live sacrifices he needed. This was killing two birds with one stone!

However… High Lord Sandlight suppressed his murderous thoughts.

Although he had heard rumors of Lin Ming’s strength, how strong he was had yet to be confirmed. But, Lin Ming had still managed to come here all alone by himself, so that meant he inevitably must be capable in some manner. Not just that, but he also broke through to Revolving Core…

As High Lord Sandlight glanced over at High Lord Sky Eye, he saw that Sky Eye was wincing with fear. The two of them were among the top ranked High Lords of Five Color Tower, so there was no need to mention their strength. They were also two against one, so their advantage was even greater.

Even so, High Lord Sandlight and High Lord Sky Eye didn't have absolute faith they could kill Lin Ming. If Lin Ming managed to escape after, then he would surely take revenge against them in the future.

They did not believe that their talent surpassed Lin Ming's.

Although High Lord Sandlight's killing intent had only been there for a fleeting second, it was still detected by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming faintly smiled and said, "Is that how it is? You want to kill me to complete your little ceremony?"

High Lord Sandlight stiffened. He then laughed, smiling as he said, "Brother Lin, don't make such a joke. River water does not mix with well water, how about we each mind our own business and take our separate roads?"

"Take our separate roads?" Lin Ming's lips curved in a caustic smile, "If I was weak, then I fear I would already have been killed by you for a sacrifice!"

Hearing Lin Ming's obviously antagonistic words, High Lord Sandlight frowned and said, "It's true that we don't want to fight you, but that doesn't mean we fear you! You can't defeat us and we can't stop you from leaving! If you want to fight then we'll join you, as long as you aren't scared of attracting evil spirits here. Otherwise, if you don't want to fight, then I kindly ask you to immediately leave!"

"Leave?" Lin Ming coldly smiled. "If I'm not wrong, then that mound behind you is the grave of a 10,000 Year Corpse Grass, and you want to take it away!

As soon as High Lord Sandlight heard the name of corpse grass, his complexion suddenly changed. He had journeyed into the Eternal Demon Abyss four times in a row now, and he naturally had a great deal of experiences and understanding as to what heavenly treasures there were here. But this was obviously Lin Ming's first time here, how could he know so much?

“10,000 Year Corpse Grass is similar to the caterpillar fungus that mortals breed. It is a seed that parasitizes the skeleton of an Emperor level powerhouse, using that skeleton as its nourishment. When it grows, it will have to constantly devour the blood vitality of other martial artists. The reason that you killed all those people was in order to feed this 10,000 Year Corpse Grass until it was full. Then, it would be easier to capture. Am I right?”

Lin Ming’s understandings of the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass naturally came from the jade slip that the Polaris Tower Master gave him. With every word he spoke, High Lord Sandlight’s complexion became uglier and uglier. At the end, he looked extremely miserable and haggard. High Lord Sandlight’s body flashed with a thick killing intent as he said, “Lin Ming, are you saying that you want to divide the spoils?”

“Divide…?” Lin Ming shook his head. “If I must venture a guess, this 10,000 Year Corpse Grass still isn’t full yet. I’m a bit scared of this corpse grass too, but… if I feed both of you to it, then that should be enough!”

“You want to die!?” High Lord Sandlight and High Lord Sky Eye flew into a volcanic rage. The two of them no longer spoke any nonsense; they attacked Lin Ming from both sides!

Lin Ming’s expression was calm. His right hand traced his spatial ring and the Purple Comet Spear came howling out!

Concept of Thunder!

Chi-la!

The vision of the High Lords were all obscured by the blinding light of thunder. Lin Ming thrust his spear out, arcs of purple lightning wrapping around it like thick pythons.

“What!?”

High Lord Sky Eye paled as he saw the arcs of lightning atop Lin Ming’s spear! All of the demon essence he sent out had been instantly swallowed up by that blinding light without a trace remaining!

In that split second, High Lord Sky Eye wasn't even able to think about what had just happened. Atop Lin Ming's spear, the purple thunder that contained the power of a battle spirit burst forth!

A battle spirit could be attached to anything, strengthening its power greatly; this included even a Thunder Soul!

A battle spirit infused coiling dragon steel needle howled forth, flying straight towards the space between High Lord Sandlight's eyes!

"Ahh!"

In that moment, High Lord Sandlight's pupils shrank. With a panicked cry, he cut down on the coiling dragon steel needle!

With a deafening sound, the coiling dragon steel needle broke under High Lord Sandlight's attack. However, a wisp of battle spirit-infused lightning snuck into High Lord Sandlight's body, instantly paralyzing all of the demon essence within him.

In an exchange between masters, the briefest moment of paralysis was enough to determine life and death!

Puff!

High Lord Sandlight felt a cold feeling in his chest as an icy long spear stabbed at him, ripping apart his true essence and thrusting straight through his body!

As the long spear entered his body, true essence erupted. High Lord Sandlight's body shook and blood shot into the wind!

"Don't –"

High Lord Sandlight's words were abruptly cut off mid-sentence. The violent and tyrannical true essence that Lin Ming poured into High Lord Sandlight's body rushed out from his orifices and head, directly smashing his organs and brain apart!

As High Lord Sky Eye saw this, he was terrified. An inexplicable chill rose up his back, as if his spirit was escaping into the heavens.

He never thought that this would happen. Two against one, in just two breaths of time, High Lord Sandlight had been instantly killed.

Without any further words, High Lord Sky Eye turned around and fled!

Lin Ming sneered. He stepped forwards, and the space between his feet seemed to shrink. In a single step, Lin Ming crossed several hundred feet and appeared right in front of High Lord Sky Eye.

“Lin Ming, don’t force me! Ahhhh!”

High Lord Sky Eye loudly shouted, his entire body turning a deep dark red, as if all of his blood was seeping out from him. Obviously, he wanted to use a secret technique of his race, but as this was only halfway completed, Lin Ming’s spear had already pierced towards him.

In that instant, time around High Lord Sky Eye seemed to slow down.

Puff!

A spear easily stabbed through High Lord Sky Eye’s chest. With a twist, High Lord Sky Eye instantly died!

After taking High Lord Sky Eye and High Lord Sandlight’s spatial rings, the phantoms of infernal energy were scattered by Lin Ming into pure infernal energy and absorbed by him.

On his arm, the Heavenly Demon Tattoo solidified even more. The wings became increasingly full, and the feathers became more and more detailed and clear…

Lin Ming glanced down. His Heavenly Demon Tattoo had finally reached the late ten-winged stage!

From when he entered the Eternal Demon Abyss until now, Lin Ming had killed a total of six High Lords. Even so, their infernal energy had only allowed his Heavenly Demon Tattoo to grow to the late ten-winged stage. If he wanted to reach the peak of 10 wings, as well as go from 10 wings to twelve, then every step would be increasingly difficult! The hardship of becoming a twelve-winged High Lord could be imagined.

Picking up High Lord Sky Eye and High Lord Sandlight's corpses, he tossed them over to the mound. As the two corpses flew close to the mound, they seemed to evaporate, their bodies rapidly aging, their bones melting, and all of their blood vitality turning into two thin red wisps that sank into the ground without a trace.

After swallowing these two wisps of red light, the mound trembled a few times and then slowly subsided. Even the surrounding energy field weakened.

Lin Ming stood aside, quietly watching the changes of the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass.

Ten thousand years. To a wild and ancient type of grass like this, in truth, that only meant it was at a young, growing stage.

A young corpse grass like this was already terrifying. Although its striking power was weak, it actually had a very special ability. This was that it could compress the energy left behind by the dead Emperor level powerhouse into a predator force field, using this force field to kill its prey.

This sort of force field was absolutely terrifying; it had at least 10% of the dead Emperor level powerhouse's strength. If a High Lord level martial artist were to step inside, they would be instantly killed!

However, the use of this predator force field had severe limits. It took a thousand years for the corpse grass to concentrate enough energy to form this force field, and this force field could only be used several times before being exhausted of its energies. Afterwards, once the corpse grass had finished eating, it would fall into a state of deep sleep.

This was the so-called blood sacrifice that High Lord Sandlight had mentioned. He had wanted to use other martial artists to rapidly exhaust the corpse grass' force field of its energy, forcing it into a deep sleep where he would then be able to capture it.

Lin Ming also had this plan.

At this time, the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass had already eaten its fill and was beginning to fall into a deep sleep. Now, it would begin to further its growth as well as gather energy for its next predator force field.

Of course, this was something that would only happen a thousand years from now.

“What do you plan on doing with this corpse grass?” Demonshine asked.

“I'll raise it.”

Lin Ming casually responded.

Besides all this, the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass had another function, and that was to raise it, feeding it blood essence and Blood Demon Crystals. This corpse grass would gather this energy and purify it, condensing into a powerful energy field in its surroundings. If one were to practice in this energy field, the energy they could absorb would be much more pure and rich. Naturally, the effects of practice were superior to using Blood Demon Crystals.

Lin Ming patiently waited until the force field around the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass dissipated until only 10% of its energy was left. Then, he linked his hands together and began shooting off several dozen true essence seals towards the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass, creating an array that isolated it from the surrounding energy.

Then, Lin Ming took out his Purple Comet Spear, preparing to break apart the mound.

At this time, the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass suddenly rose in alert.

“Ohh!”

A piercing scream came out from the mound, spreading to the ears. This cry was like the sad and mournful groans of ghosts. It was hard to imagine that this was a sound made by a plant.

Lin Ming thought little of this. His spear thrust towards that mound of earth!

After using up the force field energy that it had accumulated for a thousand years, the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass was no longer terrifying. Even High Lord Sandlight and High Lord Sky Eye had dared to capture it, much less someone like Lin Ming.

Within the mound, there was a blood red plant. Amidst this plant's roots was a distorted face, and under this face was a fist-sized ball that looked as if it were made of meat. This ball rapidly beat as if it were a heart!

For a plant to grow into this sort of appearance, it was truly ghastly.

After its nest was torn apart by Lin Ming, the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass let out increasingly discordant cries. Its entire body shaking as if it wanted to dig deep into the earth, but, how could Lin Ming let it go so easily? With just a few seals of his hand, he completely blocked off the surrounding space!

With a jab of his spear, the 10,000 Year Old Corpse Grass was plucked out by Lin Ming!

Chapter 641 – The Eternal Demon Abyss Erupts Again

Chapter 641 – The Eternal Demon Abyss Erupts Again

…

…

…

After being pricked by Lin Ming's spear, the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass fiercely struggled, sending out ear-piercing screams as it shook.

As Lin Ming saw the true appearance of this 10,000 Year Corpse Grass, his eyebrows twisted together. This little thing was truly unsightly, in fact, it was extremely ugly.

Demonshine chortled, "Hehe, this thing is a heavenly treasure to a corpse sect. A corpse sect martial artist would definitely pay an exorbitantly high price to buy this 10,000 Year Corpse Grass!"

Corpse sect… Lin Ming was aware that there were some martial artists that would collect the bodies of powerhouses and use them to refine weapons, create puppets, or even seize their bodies. For instance, the Seven Profound Valley's Mugu Buyu could have been classified as a type of corpse sect martial artist.

Lin Ming wrapped this 10,000 Year Corpse Grass in layers of seals before stashing it away into a jade box.

"Lin Ming, where do we go now?" Demonshine asked. The two of them had already reached the 1200 mile radius zone of the Eternal Demon Abyss. If they went much closer, they would approach the 1000 mile radius forbidden death zone.

This 1000 mile radius forbidden death zone was an area where even birds couldn't cross. Entry into it meant absolute death!

As for those places near this 1000 mile radius forbidden zone, those were also extremely dangerous.

Lin Ming asked, "Did the Demon Emperor enter the 1000 mile radius forbidden zone in the past?"

"Of course." Demonshine scoffed as if this were something that simply didn't need to be asked. "The 1000 mile radius forbidden death zone is only a relative name given to it. If your cultivation is high enough, then although you might not be able to freely come and go as you please, you don't need to fear it too much. In the past, when the Demon Emperor stayed here for twenty some years, most of that time was in the 1000 mile radius forbidden death zone!"

"I see."

Lin Ming wasn't crazy enough to think he had the qualifications to enter such a place. His plan was to come to the edge of this 1000 mile radius forbidden zone; it would be his best opportunity for finding lucky chances. But, if he couldn't find anything, he had still broken through to the Revolving Core realm. Now he had the ability to return to the South Horizon Region.

Towards someone like Xuan Wuji, Lin Ming definitely wasn't his match. But, when it came to those first stage Life Destruction Elders of the South Horizon Region, Lin Ming believed that he could kill them.

…………………………

In a flash, several days passed. Lin Ming had been wandering around the 1100 to 1000 mile radius of the Eternal Demon Abyss. His days here were actually quite peaceful.

Until this moment, when Demonshine's voice suddenly sounded out in his mind, "Lin Ming, in the front to the right, 10 miles away, there are people there!"

“Oh?” Lin Ming was startled, “How many?”

“I’m not sure, they are too far away right now. I only felt a fluctuation of energy, but this fluctuation should be from a martial artist, not an evil spirit.”

Lin Ming pondered for a moment, “Ok, let’s go look for them!”

There were many advantages to being together with other martial artists. Lin Ming quickly displayed his movement technique and rushed towards the direction that Demonshine had indicated.

However, just as he took a single step he felt the ground beneath him start to suddenly shake. Far away, he could see the ground splitting apart, a plume of black energy gushing out of the earth and shooting towards the skies!

“Mm?”

Lin Ming was shocked. What was happening?

“Something’s wrong!” Demonshine’s voice changed. “The infernal energy has begun to frantically move, and those several people I discovered are now running towards here!”

As Demonshine finished speaking, Lin Ming could see several moving figures within the endless fog. They were all running towards the Eternal Demon Abyss as if their lives depended on it!

Just as this thought flashed through Lin Ming’s mind, his complexion immediately changed. He could see that behind these people were massive black clouds, chasing them down like a massive tsunami!

And these black clouds contained a terrifying energy!

“Damn!”

Lin Ming cursed in his mind. He swiveled on the balls of his feet and ran away.

He could no longer afford the time to think about what this was. The jade slip left behind by the Polaris Tower Master had never mentioned something like this.

Lin Ming was fast, but the people behind him weren't slow either. Because of that slight delay, they had already rushed up to just several hundred feet from Lin Ming.

In the instant that Lin Ming turned around, he could clearly make one of the people.

It was Duanmu Qun!

There was no longer time to ask what was going on. Lin Ming's feet stepped upon Golden Rock Shattering the Void and he shot forwards at the limits of his speed.

The massive tsunami of dark clouds was like an ancient great beast, swallowing everything that it passed by. As the black clouds surged forth, they rose nearly 1000 feet high into the sky. The energy inherent within them caused anyone to lack any courage to face it.

But, wanting to dodge these demonic clouds of infernal energy by flying was impossible; this was because flying was impossible within the Eternal Demon Abyss. In terms of speed, the demonic clouds were even several times faster than a normal martial artist! As everyone ran with all their might, they could still see that the black tsunami behind them was closing in!

"Ahh!"

A vague scream broke out. Lin Ming didn't need to look back to know that a martial artist had been swallowed up by those dark clouds. His fate could be imagined!

As the infernal energy around him twisted into stormy currents, Lin Ming used the Concept of Space, shrinking the space beneath his feet and displaying the limit of his speed. He was faster than everyone else behind him, but he still wasn't as fast as that tsunami of demonic clouds!

But at this moment, a sharp light flashed in his eyes. In front of him, at the very edge of the thick fog, he could make out a black mountain peak!

Looking at the height of that mountain, it had to be several thousand feet high.

Lin Ming was overjoyed. Without words, he immediately launched Golden Roc Shattering the Void and rushed straight to the top of that mountain peak!

Although seeing a mountain didn’t mean it was close, because of the fog that obscured his vision, when Lin Ming saw the mountain peak it was already not too far away.

With his extreme speed, he reached the base of the mountain in just several dozen breaths of time!

Using his max speed, Lin Ming rushed to the peak in a single go. As he turned around, he could see at the bottom the mountain there were several other martial artists who had set foot on the black mountain and were racing to the top.

Now, the tsunami of demonic black clouds was near. As it surged forwards, even the ground beneath him trembled. Looking at how terrifying this cloud was, Lin Ming feared that even this mountain would break under its impact.

“Just what was that?” Lin Ming asked, frightened.

“Hehe, you’re quite lucky. Those black clouds are an eruption from the Eternal Demon Abyss. Normally, after the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted, it will enter into a stable period and not erupt for decades or centuries. But, I don’t know what happened this time, so I said that you’re lucky…” Demonshine’s facetious voice sounded out in Lin Ming’s mind. When the Demon Emperor had stayed in the Eternal Demon Abyss, he had also faced these eruptions.

“This is an eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss?” Lin Ming was shocked. The Eternal Demon Abyss only erupted every several decades or even centuries. When it did erupt, it would spit out a massive amount of infernal energy as well as Demon God Bones and the terrifying evil beings from the depths of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

After the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss, the energy here would all be in chaos, with layers upon layers of danger zones appearing everywhere. This was the time when the chance of dying in the Eternal Demon Abyss was the highest, but, this also meant that this was the time for the luckiest chances. Thus, when the Eternal Demon Abyss had just had an eruption was also the time when the highest amount of martial artists would enter.

At this moment, Lin Ming couldn't bother with these details. All he heard was a loud banging noise as the massive tsunami of black clouds smashed into the mountain, creating turbulent flows of energy thousands of feet high. The black mountain peak trembled. It seemed as if it couldn't withstand this massive impact force and could collapse at any moment!

A great chunk of the mountain was directly ripped away by the tsunami of demonic clouds. A martial artist that hadn't climbed fast enough cried out miserably as he was directly sucked up by the black clouds, disappearing without a trace.

But at the front of the group, Duanmu Qun and the rest had already rushed to the peak, luckily avoiding the impact of the black clouds.

Lin Ming looked down. Not too far away, he could see that the always refined and calm Duanmu Qun was panting, his forehead dripping with sweat and his face flushed red. In that horrifying encounter just now, he had obviously consumed a great deal of energy.

Behind Duanmu Qun, there were also two Fey Heavenly Demon Seven Star martial artists as well as three Giant Demon martial artists.

Those two Fey martial artists were Feng Shen and Lan Xin.

As for the Giant Demon martial artists, Lin Ming only knew one of them; Great Ax Tower's Blackstone.

Blackstone was also a descendant of a Holy Land. As someone that came from a Giant Demon Holy Land, his talent was no less than Feng Shen's.

"Lin Ming!?"

When Duanmu Qun first saw Lin Ming, he was incomparably shocked. Before this, he had heard from Lan Xin's own mouth about Lin Ming's fate. He thought that Lin Ming had already perished here, but he never would have imagined he would see him right now, in these circumstances.

As the others noticed Lin Ming, Feng Shen also saw him. He was a bit stunned, but then soon felt relieved. He hadn't believed that someone like Lin Ming would die here, and his faith now seemed rewarded.

The one who was the most surprised was Lan Xin. She had personally experienced that demon bone danger zone and knew how terrifying it was. She had seen him walk back to that danger zone and not return after an hour. Although she said that Lin Ming was missing, her heart had already determined that Lin Ming had died there. But, she never expected that she would see Lin Ming in front of her right now.

Did he break out of that danger zone by himself and travel the thousands of miles across the Eternal Demon Abyss until finally reaching the central region?

How had he done this?

It wasn't just Lan Xin that thought this unbelievable, but also others. Travelling by oneself was much, much more dangerous than forming a team, and Lin Ming didn't even have a guide!

But at this moment, Feng Shen's heart stirred. Stunned, he looked at Lin Ming and said, "You broke through to Revolving Core?"

Lin Ming faintly smiled at Feng Shen, “Brother Feng Shen, I’m glad to meet you here. I just happened to stumble across a relatively safe place in the Eternal Demon Abyss and made a lucky breakthrough.”

Lin Ming’s casual few words left everyone flabbergasted.

There are safe zones in the Eternal Demon Abyss? Breaking through to Revolving Core here? Aren’t you just wanting to die?

Moreover, Lin Ming’s cultivation had only just reached the half-step Revolving Core realm previously. According to a reasonable rate of progression, it should have taken him at least half a year. How had he managed to achieve this so quickly?

Did he find some lucky chance within the Eternal Demon Abyss?

This was the only explanation!

“Brother Lin has really good luck, hm!” Blackstone sourly said. Lin Ming’s breakthrough in this journey to the Eternal Demon Abyss had surpassed the totality of his harvests so far.

Good luck?

Lan Xin wasn’t sure, but in the instant she discovered that Lin Ming had made a breakthrough, she already knew deep within herself just where Lin Ming had found his lucky chance.

Initially, back when they were in that danger zone, Lin Ming had casually made an excuse to go back because he had lost a spatial ring. But, the truth was that he had discovered some lucky chance there, thus he went back to look for it!

But… there was a powerful and fearful evil being lurking within that danger zone, so strong that it only needed a second to kill a High Lord level powerhouse! In that sort of situation, how could Lin Ming have discovered a lucky chance and how could he have taken that lucky chance from the keeping of that evil being?

How had any of this been done?

Lan Xing subconsciously covered her mouth.

Currently, she only felt that this Lin Ming in front of her was a growing enigma.

Chapter 642 – Straying Into the Forbidden Zone

Chapter 642 – Straying Into the Forbidden Zone

…

…

…

“Lan Xin, what’s wrong?”

Duanmu Qun noticed Lan Xin’s change in expression and asked her with a true essence sound transmission. Lan Xin responded with her guess, and Duanmu Qun was dazed for a moment, his eyelids jumping.

Indeed, finding a lost spatial ring was a weak excuse to return to a danger zone. Duanmu Qun hadn’t thought too much of it, but now that he carefully remembered these details, there were a number of questionable points.

First, Lin Ming was meticulous and cautious as well as strong. Could such a character really lose their spatial ring and not know about it? Second, according to Lan Xin, Lin Ming had led the squad to rush out of the deathtrap and had even changed directions midway. Was that really just a coincidence?

Lin Ming wasn’t a fool. Since he had the confidence to go back, he had the confidence to deal with the evil being in that danger zone. Then, it wasn’t surprising for him to seek treasures in a danger zone either!

At the thought of this, Duanmu Qun felt daunted. His group had also encountered several danger zones, and he had even witnessed one of his teammates die a tragic death. He was fully aware just how terrifying the Eternal Demon Abyss was! Here, there were lucky chances everywhere, but that didn’t mean one could obtain them just by sheer luck. One needed to be strong enough or at least have the ability to take it, otherwise, all they would do is lose their life.

Lin Ming, what was his secret? Not only did he break through the countless dangers of the Eternal Demon Abyss but he even closed up here and broke through to Revolving Core!

His strengths were truly hidden!

Duanmu Qun felt more and more awed by Lin Ming. To him, Lin Ming only felt unfathomable. But on the side, Blackstone was unaware of all these factors. He said, “If I had Brother Lin’s luck, then I might have been able to become a four-star Demon King…”

A so-called four-star Demon King was the same as the human Life Destruction realm. Blackstone wasn’t 30 years old yet. If he could really become a four-star Demon King now, then even the Eightfall War Emperor’s talent would be inferior to his.

Towards such an obviously daggered compliment filled with jealousy, Lin Ming only faintly smiled, not explaining anything.

“Hehe, luck is also a kind of talent.” A martial artist said. He was a Goliath High Lord from Great Ax Tower.

As he was in the middle of speaking, the mountain suddenly shook. At the foot of the mountain, a massive shelf suddenly collapsed, washed away by the immense black currents at the base. A crack spread up at a shocking rate, splitting the peak of the mountain in half. The black torrents of energy surged and burst through the crack and shot into the sky!

The Goliath martial artist that was just speaking was actually flushed away by this mighty flood of energy!

“Ahh!”

Screams filled the air. The current of energy was like a highly corrosive acid. Half of the Goliath martial artist’s body had melted away, leaving nothing but bones!

This scene took place in front of everyone, leaving them all shocked. They all hurriedly retreated backwards.

The Goliath martial artist only had half a face left; the other side was a bloody mess. As his face distorted in pain, he reached out his hand, begging for the others to help him. But who would help him at this time? As they all witnessed the pitiful Goliath martial artist, everyone took several more steps back, their complexions paling.

Kacha!

The Goliath martial artist's foot bones broke. His body collapsed to the ground as if he were made of mud, instantly dead.

As Lin Ming saw this, his palms became wet with sweat and his heart chilled. A moment ago, he had been secretly on guard about the shaking energy underneath the Goliath martial artist's feet, but he didn't think the consequences would be so serious!

Bang!

The black mountain peak shook again. Everyone was greatly startled, all of them blanching and preparing to retreat at any time!

Who knew when this mountain peak would crack again and another terrifying current of energy would erupt.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Great tracts of the mountain burst apart, collapsing into the ground, falling into the raging black current and completely disappearing.

Seeing all of this, the martial artists felt a chill creep up their backs. No one moved. If this black mountain collapsed, then no one here could even think about living anymore.

The group continued to completely concentrate on the raging current of energy below. Fortunately, the mountain stopped collapsing. After half an incense stick of time, the turbulent waves of energy beneath the mountain began to die down.

Everything at the foot of the mountain was already washed away, leaving it all in broken chaos. Fortunately, besides that eruption just now, there wasn't a similar eruption.

Everyone felt as if they had just survived the apocalypse. However, before everyone could catch their breath, a High Lord suddenly grimaced and said with anguish, "We've probably entered the 1000 mile forbidden zone!"

"What!? The 1000 mile forbidden zone?"

"No way!"

These few words caused all of the martial artists present to feel a deep and unsettling fear. They had all escaped in a hurry from that dark tsunami of energy, so how could any of them have worried about what direction they were going? Every other direction had been blocked by that mighty flood, so this was the only direction they could run in.

Fleeing and fleeing, they had actually fled into the 1000 mile forbidden zone!?!?

Lin Ming frowned. Looking ahead, the black flood of energy had passed and the fog had been washed away. All that was left behind was a broken land, as if they had reached the end of the world.

"Demonshine, didn't you just say that the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted just now? If the Eternal Demon Abyss erupts, shouldn't the energy flow come from the center and disperse outwards? How could the energy flow from outside to inside, trapping us in the center of the Eternal Demon Abyss?"

Demonshine shook his head, "That just now was only a small-scale eruption; it came from one of the Eternal Demon Abyss' surrounding cracks, refluxing back to the center. If the main center of the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted, then that would be a serious problem. The

Eternal Demon Abyss is 10,000 miles wide. If the energy burst out from there, then I fear the explosion would be 100,000 feet high or more, directly breaking through the heavens and blotting out the skies. In that sort of outrageous current, even my master would have to retreat lest he accidentally fall in and die, much less someone like you. If you were truly caught up in something that great, do you still think even a little bit of you would be left?"

As Demonshine spoke, Lin Ming suddenly became aware. Indeed, if the 10,000 mile wide Eternal Demon Abyss erupted with a massive amount of energy, then that large-scale outpouring of energy would be truly terrifying!"

"What do we do now?" All the martial artists present, even if they were Holy Land descendants, had a tinge of fear in their eyes. The Eternal Demon Abyss was not some general forbidden zone. There had been countless geniuses and powerhouses that had fallen in the 1000 mile forbidden zone. None of these people had been any worse than them!

"I don't even know what I should be afraid of. I heard that there had once been two Titled Asuras that had entered the 1000 mile forbidden zone, and neither of them returned, both of them died here!"

As the martial artist spoke, he subconsciously glanced over at Lin Ming. Lin Ming was also a Titled Asura, but, in this sort of situation, any sort of Asura was useless. Let alone an outstanding young elite, hadn't there even been a great number of Emperor level powerhouses that had died here?

"Everyone calm down! No one panic!" A Fey High Lord from White Stone Tower said. Although there was a great number of talents within the Fey race, there weren't many that were willing to stay as High Lords. The reason was rooted in the innate characteristics of their race. The Fey were naturally arrogant, lofty, and had a deep sense of pride. Many of them simply weren't willing to serve others.

"This is just the very edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss' 1000 mile forbidden zone; we haven't yet fully entered deep into the Eternal Demon Abyss. For these last tens of thousands of years, all those Emperor level powerhouses that entered the Eternal Demon Abyss have died at the center. We are only at the very edge. If our luck is good, we can still leave!"

The Fey High Lord's words were obviously to placate the martial artists. But at this time, many of them were willing to be consoled in such manner. Another martial artist echoed this sentiment and said, "What the High Lord isn't wrong. Let's descend the mountain now and begin to walk back. As long as we put in the effort, we can do anything, and that means we can also leave here!"

Everyone had a herd mentality at this time. Now that there were people willing to take the lead, everyone was relieved. Just as everyone was about to leave, Lin Ming said, "Wait a minute!"

"Mm? Is there something wrong?" Duanmu Qun looked over at Lin Ming. Right now, he placed Lin Ming's opinion in very high regard; he even suspected that Lin Ming had been to the Eternal Demon Abyss before.

"How can we wait right now? We are in the most dangerous area of the Eternal Demon Abyss! The longer we delay, the more danger we'll be in!" A High Lord said, exasperated.

Lin Ming said, "The black torrent just passed. There is still a great amount of this black energy in the ground. These energies can easily take your life. If you accidently fall into a swamp or hole, then you won't have any feet left.

There were places in the Eternal Demon Abyss where the soil was soft. If this black energy flowed inside, it would mix with the soil and form a muddy swamp. If anyone were to fall in this, the consequences could be imagined.

Lin Ming's reasoning was rational and succinct. The High Lord's lips twitched, but he didn't oppose this.

Everyone decided to wait for several hours. During this time, everyone sat in meditation, trying their best to restore themselves to their peak condition.

All of them were readying to travel the road of hell.

Lin Ming also entered into the ethereal martial intent as he mediated, constantly consolidating his cultivation.

After several hours passed, there weren't any additional dangers. Around the black mountain peak, the residual black energy began to dissipate into a black mist, fading into a fog as it turned from black to gray. As everyone saw this, they finally realized just where the pervasive fog of the Eternal Demon Abyss came from. This fog was actually formed from the violent energy flows that erupted from the Eternal Demon Abyss!

"We can go now."

Duanmu proposed as he glanced over at Lin Ming.

"Mm, we can."

Lin Ming stood up. This was the Eternal Demon Abyss' 1000 mile forbidden zone. He never thought that he would stumble his way into here.

As the group of people descended the mountain, they judged their position from the stars and began to cautiously make their way outwards to the edge. According to the estimation of a High Lord who had been to the Eternal Demon Abyss, they were no more than a hundred miles into the 1000 mile forbidden zone. There was still 900 miles until they reached the true center of the Eternal Demon Abyss, so the chances of them making it out of here were still very high.

As Lin Ming walked, he raised his vigilance to the limit. If this area was called a 1000 mile absolute death forbidden zone, then there were naturally reasons why it was so terrifying. If he wanted to safely leave this land, he feared that it wouldn't be so easy.

"Demonshine, you followed the Demon Emperor and stayed here for 20 some years. Do you know what dangers there are here and why so many geniuses died here?"

Demonshine shook his head, “The Demon Emperor’s strength back then far surpassed your current self. The things that weren’t dangerous to him are fatal traps for you. For instance, that small scale eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss. The Demon Emperor also encountered that twice before. To him, there wasn’t even the slightest bit of danger, but for you a lot, there were actually two of you that died. If you want me to analyze dangers, then how would I analyze them? Ask me again if you bump into something!”

Chapter 643 – Are We Out?

Chapter 643 – Are We Out?

…

…

…

After this eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss, the group together with Lin Ming had a total of 10 people.

Of these, there were four Heavenly Demon Seven Stars: Feng Shen, Lan Xin, Duanmu Qun, and Blackstone. All of them were Holy Land descendants. The other six were all High Lords, including Lin Ming.

The 10 individuals here were all top masters, and there was even Duanmu Qun, whose strength approached that of a Tower Master.

The group was on alert the entire time as they walked to the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss, their speed very slow; it was even slower than when they first entered the Eternal Demon Abyss. The 10 of them all sent out their perception to the limit in order to avoid any evil spirit ambushing them.

However, as they walked, nothing happened.

50 miles, 80 miles, 100 miles, 120 miles…

These martial artists were fairly aware of just how far they walked. As they crossed 100 miles, by all reasoning they should have already left the 1000 mile forbidden zone, or at least approached the edge.

As the martial artists realized this, they all became incomparably excited. Had they really made it out?

The closer they approached the edge of the forbidden zone, the more vigilant everyone became. The 1000 mile radius forbidden zone was known as the road of no return. One entered, there was no coming out. Not even birds were an exception. This rumor had been passed down through the countless years, so who knew what sort of danger they would encounter once they finally reached that critical threshold!

Like this, the group walked another 20 to 30 miles with jitters. In total, they had probably walked 150 miles, but nothing had happened yet!

Had they really made it out!?!?

All of them martial artists felt as if they were in a dream. They had entered the 1000 mile forbidden zone and not encountered any danger at all. As a group, they had calmly entered and then calmly left…

“This 1000 mile forbidden zone isn’t as terrifying as the legends say it is. Didn’t we just safely go in and out?” Blackstone said with a sigh of relief. There was a bit of disappointment in his tone. This so-called 1000 mile forbidden zone had truly been exaggerated.

“Perhaps there were originally many people that died in the 1000 mile forbidden zone, thus there were rumors made about it where no one ever returned. The truth is that there is just a great deal of danger here, but our luck is good and we didn’t meet any and just walked out like that.” A High Lord agreed.

“Haha, for me to have entered the 1000 mile forbidden zone in my life and not die, I truly haven’t lived my life in vain… but, what a pity, we didn’t find any lucky chances. If we could dig up one or two earth-step Demon God Bones in the 1000 mile forbidden zone then we would be rich!” A High Lord from Heavenly Cloud Tower said with some regret. Just now they had all been carefully watching out for evil spirits, so who was of the mind to search for Demon God Bones? Now that he thought about it, this was truly unfortunate. These frightening rumors proved just how powerful baseless gossip could be, even causing so much trouble now.

“Hehe, if you want to go and search then you’re fine to go back, no one’s blocking you. If you go back, you might be able to find an earth-step Demon God Bone.” Another High Lord said jokingly.

As the previously-speaking Heavenly Cloud Tower High Lord heard this, he suddenly had a troubled look on his face. That intensely terrifying experience just now had left a lingering fear in the back of his mind. He nervously laughed and said, “Haha, I just managed to carefully make it out, so I don’t think I would have the luck to do that again. Besides, if I’m alone, it’s much too dangerous.

These casual words aroused a thought in another High Lord’s mind. “This 1000 mile forbidden zone isn’t as dangerous as we thought. Everyone was being too cautious so we didn’t investigate to see if there were any treasures about. If we return now, then with the strength of us 10, even if we meet some danger we still might be able to deal with it. You all should know that no one has entered this 1000 mile forbidden zone for the last several thousand years. All of them were scared witless by the rumors, so all of the treasures inside have gone untouched. The potential wealth inside is hard to imagine!”

As this High Lord spoke, some of the martial artists felt their hearts rise with greed. This was true. Ever since the terrifying rumors about this 1000 mile forbidden zone spread out, no one had gone inside for thousands of years. The surrounding grounds were already explored every 10 years so there wasn’t that much outside. But, inside the 1000 mile forbidden zone, there was definitely an abundance of heavenly treasures!

Moreover, the 1000 mile forbidden zone was so close to the Eternal Demon Abyss that there were probably many earth-step Demon God Bones here. There was even a chance that there might be a legendary heaven-step Demon God Bone!

And a heaven-step Demon God Bone was a treasure that not even the ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes had. If they could find just one heaven-step Demon God Bone, then they would never have to worry about resources for the rest of their life. The talent of these martial artists wasn't poor to begin with, and with a heaven-step Demon God Bone, they would inevitably be able to break through to the Emperor level!

Everyone glanced at each other. In the end, their eyes fell onto two people. One was Duanmu Qun, and the other was the Heavenly Cloud Tower's High Lord Cloud Demon.

The two of them were recognized by the rest as being the strongest amongst the group.

There was no need to talk about Duanmu Qun. He came from a super Holy Land, and after entering the Road of Emperor, his strength neared that of a Tower Master.

As for High Lord Cloud Demon, he was ranked amongst the top of Heavenly Cloud Tower's 16 High Lords. It had to be known that the High Lords of Heavenly Cloud Tower were originally known as being the strongest of the 12 Skysplit Towers. High Lord Cloud Demon's ranking was thus actually very valuable. His strength was likely no worse than the weakest Tower Master.

Duanmu Qun hesitated for a moment, undecided. If a martial artist didn't fight for every lucky chance in front of them, they would be resigned to a lifetime of mediocrity. But, this 1000 mile forbidden zone truly wasn't some normal danger zone. For these last thousands of years, countless rumors had originated from here and numerous peerless talents had perished. They had surprisingly walked out without much danger just now. Was that really just luck?

Once they returned and encountered a powerful evil spirit, they might all be annihilated!

Duanmu Qun couldn't help but glance over at High Lord Cloud Demon. High Lord Cloud Demon also didn't know what to do at this time. After another moment of pondering, he suggested a compromise, "Let's return 50 miles. This distance is probably at the threshold limit for the 1000 mile forbidden zone, we can stay in that area for a few hours. If we search there, our lucky chances will be much better than those we find at the surrounding edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Aside from all that, if we encounter a powerful evil spirit then we are immediately returning!"

High Lord Cloud Demon's suggestion was neither too reckless nor conservative. Everyone begin to respond.

"Great idea! Brother Cloud Demon's advice is far too good."

"Haha, Brother Cloud Demon is smart, great job!"

High Lord Cloud Demon's suggestion truly was good. At this time, a single wrong step could cause all of them to die here, but this one idea could be called the best route.

All of the martial artists present looked excited, as if they were about to immediately find a heaven-step Demon God Bone themselves.

"Sooner is better than later, let's go now!" The High Lord who first suggested this said with some impatience.

Duanmu Qun nodded, agreeing to follow the crowd back. But then, his heart suddenly stirred. As he looked over to Lin Ming to see what he thought about this, he saw that Lin Ming was actually standing there with a very solemn expression, his arms crossed against his chest and his head lowered as if he were deep in thought.

Everyone had already taken several steps, but Lin Ming was still meditating there, apparently without any intention of moving.

"Brother Lin, would you like to come with us?"

Duanmu Qun invited. He very much hoped that Lin Ming would go with them. There were simply far too many secrets on Lin Ming's body. Duanmu Qun believed that if Lin Ming came with them to the 1000 mile forbidden zone, he would be a great help. Perhaps he would turn the tables on a danger at a crucial moment or even save all of them.

Lin Ming seemed as if he didn't hear at all, still standing there deep in thought.

“Brother Lin, shall we go together?” Duanmu Qun asked again.

“Lin Ming, hurry up and go otherwise you’ll be left behind!” High Lord Cloud Demon frowned as he said. Duanmu Qun had asked twice and Lin Ming didn’t even respond. This was very impolite of him.

“Haha, Brother Lin seems like he doesn’t want to go. Let him stay here, let’s go.” Blackstone’s eyes turned as he quickly interjected. As he spoke, he took two steps in fear that Lin Ming would change his mind and catch up.

Blackstone’s thoughts were very simple. Lin Ming hadn’t even gone into the depths of the Eternal Demon Abyss, yet he could casually walk along the outer edges and find a lucky chance that allowed him to break through to Revolving Core. This sort of good luck was way too heaven-defying. He felt that his own luck was far inferior to Lin Ming’s, and he didn’t want to divide any of the spoils with him.

If the 10 of them divided a lucky chance, there wouldn’t be much left to each of them to begin with. When that happened, this Lin Ming might squirrel away half of the treasure, leaving almost nothing for the rest of them to divide.

It wasn’t just Blackstone who had this idea, but many other High Lords were thinking this. A High Lord said with a true essence sound transmission to his teammates, “Let’s go, this Lin boy is probably too timid.”

“That’s right. If he doesn’t come then there’s one less share to divide out. Humph, the road to becoming a Peerless Emperor is filled with risks, what martial artists wouldn’t dare to take them? Even if he is a peak Emperor level talent, he still needs to put forth as much effort as he can, otherwise he’ll just waste all of his talent and end up an average nobody.”

In these words, several martial artists also began moving. High Lord Cloud Demon also didn’t wait for Lin Ming’s decision. Only Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and Feng Shen were looking at Lin Ming, waiting for his reply.

Of the three of them. Feng Shen most understood just how terrifying Lin Ming's strength was. As for Duanmu Qun and Lan Xin, they both knew of Lin Ming's ability. The reason that he could seek lucky chances within the Eternal Demon Abyss was not because of luck, but because he had some strange secrets about it.

If Lin Ming came, they would definitely have to apportion part of their lucky chances, but this was far better than just throwing their lives away.

"Brother Lin, what are you thinking about?" After his first two questions weren't answered, Duanmu Qun wasn't angered in the least. In fact, his tone softened and his expression became gentle as he once more asked Lin Ming a question.

The other High Lords were already impatient from waiting. This time, after remaining silent for several breaths of time, Lin Ming finally opened his mouth and said, "I was thinking that… there's something wrong about where we are…"

"Something's wrong? What's wrong?" Duanmu Qun's chest tightened. If someone else had said this, he might have said they were far too fearful and suspicious of everything. But if Lin Ming said this, he didn't dare to be negligent.

"I can't say… If I could think of it, I wouldn't have to think so hard." Lin Ming shook his head. As he walked all this way, he always felt something strange at the back of his mind. When he asked Demonshine, even he wasn't sure.

"Then you can stay here and slowly think about it, we'll go first." A High Lord chuckled. Although his words were fairly polite, the ridicule in them was obvious. To be so suspicious and scared even after coming out of the 1000 mile forbidden zone, this could only be mental illness or acting.

'You stay here and think about it, ah, I'm more afraid that you'll catch up.' Many martial artists thought at the same time.

Chapter 644 – Quietly Approaching the Great Maw

Chapter 644 – Quietly Approaching the Great Maw

…

…

…

"Duanmu, let's go!" High Lord Cloud Demon glanced at Lin Ming with an unbelievable expression. Why was this fellow making such baseless claims to stir things up? They had already left the 1000 mile forbidden zone anyway.

Duanmu Qun still looked at Lin Ming, "Brother Lin, just what is going on?"

Lin Ming looked up from his thoughts, gazing at the dark distant crimson lands. After a long silence, he began to slowly say, "I feel that… we haven't left the 1000 mile forbidden zone."

"What!?"

Lin Ming's words shocked everyone present!

"What kind of joke are you trying to play? Are you saying that all of us somehow became lost?"

"How is that possible? We were clearly walking in the correct direction based on the stars."

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, the stars were forever linked with the sky, static and unchanging. Thus, there was simply never a situation where one became lost. And, they had already walked 150 miles, so they should have walked 30 to 40 miles out of the 1000 mile forbidden zone.

“This fellow is an idiot, just ignore him. Come, let’s go.” A High Lord said. He had tried to be respectful by using a true essence sound transmission to speak to everyone before, but now he didn’t bother to. If everyone heard then they heard.

As Lan Xin heard Lin Ming, she was also a bit skeptical. Even if she thought Lin Ming’s claims weren’t true, there was still some basis in what he was saying and it wasn’t as if he were trying to be ostentatious. She asked, “Lin Ming, what do you think we should do then? Should we continue walking to the edge, returning to the Eternal Demon Abyss to look for lucky chances, or change directions?”

Lin Ming shook his head. He didn’t even really understand what was going on, so how could he even suggest to others what to do?

After listening to Lan Xin speak, another High Lord said, “Lan Xin, why are you asking him what to do? If he says to go in a different direction do you really expect us to listen to him and willingly enter into some deathtrap?”

In these dangerous times, no one was willing to place their lives in the hands of others. This was simply human nature.

Duanmu Qun was also in a dilemma. On one hand, he really did believe Lin Ming, but on the other hand, he couldn’t just stay here forever because of Lin Ming’s suspicious, not to mention that Lin Ming couldn’t even give a suggestion as to what to do right now.

As for Feng Shen, without another word, he sat down next to Lin Ming.

“Feng Shen, what are you doing?” A martial artist asked Feng Shen, unsure as to what he was doing.

"Waiting."

Feng Shen's simple response left everyone befuddled. What was he going to do? Wait here for Lin Ming to come up with some plan?

"Feng Shen, have you also turned into an idiot?" Blackstone was speechless. In his view, Feng Shen was a very solitary and opinionated person. But just because Lin Ming said that he had some vague suspicious, this Feng Shen fellow was actually going to sit down here and wait for him to think of something.

Wasn't this just a joke?

As the people were speaking, Lin Ming actually wasn't paying attention to them, he was communicating to Demonshine in his spiritual sea.

"Demonshine… do you know what's happening here?"

Lin Ming asked. All this way, he hadn't felt anything at the start, but, slowly, he felt something was wrong, as if something was always aiming at him.

But even though he investigated his surroundings, he didn't find anything strange. Even when Demonshine released his perception, he still didn't find anything.

"You can't stay. But, waiting is useless. If you stay here then you'll inevitably be separated from everyone. When that happens and you stumble into some terrifying evil spirit then you won't even have a shield."

"What you're saying is to follow them back into the 1000 mile forbidden zone?" Lin Ming frowned. To return without fully understanding what was going on, that seemed a bit too reckless and dangerous.

Demonshine said, "You staying here isn't a plan… in fact… we don't even know where we're going. We followed the stars and walked 150 miles but we still haven't left the 1000 mile forbidden zone; there is definitely something suspicious happening here. How about this, you follow them and place a mark down every 500 feet. Perhaps you might be able to discover something then.”

“Place down a mark… alright.” Lin Ming thought for a moment and agreed. He could only take this one step at a time and slowly discover just what was happening.

Initially, it had been Demonshine’s big brother that had followed the Demon Emperor to stay here for 20 some years in the Eternal Demon Abyss. Although Demonshine had inherited some of his big brother’s memories, it was in a very limited capacity – he wasn’t omnipotent or omniscient.

“Brother Duanmu, I’ll go with you.” Lin Ming suddenly said.

“Oh?” Duanmu Qun was startled, revealing a bit of a puzzled expression. He didn’t know just what Lin Ming had found or why he had changed his mind, but in any case, having Lin Ming accompany them was always a welcome idea.

“How come? Didn’t you just say that there was something wrong?” A High Lord jeered. This Lin Ming said he wouldn’t come but actually wanted to follow on their trail, his methods were quite disdainful.

Lin Ming didn’t bother with him. There was nothing to say right now. Being able to leave here was his most important objective. All he could do was continue walking and see whether these people’s judgments were correct. Of course… this was simply impossible.

“This fellow!” Seeing Lin Ming come, High Lord Cloud Demon couldn’t refuse him. He could only bring the group and go back.

Lan Xin looked at Lin Ming with confusion, her lips moving. But, she didn’t say anything in the end.

As for Feng Shen, he silently stood up and followed behind Lin Ming. He maintained absolute belief in Lin Ming’s words right now. If Lin Ming decided to go now, then he definitely had his reasons, it was just that the others didn't know or couldn't understand them.

As the group walked back, everyone remained cautious. Every 500 feet, Lin Ming would place down a symbol mark. The other martial artists naturally noticed this, but to them, this sort of petty action just seemed like a parlor trick.

After walking the return trip for 20 to 30 miles, there wasn't a single danger. Like this, some of the people began to relax.

It seemed… the 1000 mile forbidden zone wasn't as scary as it was made out to be.

"I wonder what we'll be able to find this time."

"Haha, if we can find a high level earth-step Demon God Bone, then I will be satisfied!"

After not meeting any evil spirits during this long trek, several martial artists couldn't help but begin to jovially speak to each other. They were even thinking that they would be able to dig out a heaven-step Demon God Bone sometime soon.

"Don't be distracted, maintain your vigilance!" Duanmu Qun frowned, admonishing everyone.

"Got it, got it." A martial artist laughed. Obviously, he didn't really care. But just as he finished speaking, the smile froze on his face…

He stared blankly into the horizon. There, far away, seemed to be an illusionary black flame rising into the sky, connecting the heavens and earth, scorching the stars!

"That… what is that?" The martial artist gaped.

With his words, everyone noticed the great flame shooting in the sky. Because of that flame, the entire world became filled with black fog, as if the heavens themselves were covered by a great black curtain!

This scene alarmed everyone present. Several martial artists quickly moved forwards and the fog seemed to disperse in front of them. Now, they all saw the complete picture of that horrific fire…

That massive fire seemed to burn 100,000 feet into the sky. Because of the flame, the air around it distorted from the heat. The flame was completely different from a normal flame. It was transparent and blurry, as if it wasn’t real at all. With the ethereal black fog covering it, it seemed hazy and unclear.

Underneath this black flame, at the bottom of the earth, there was a vast void, as black as night, darker than ink!

This void gave off a feeling as if the earth and space itself were split apart by a divine being, revealing an entrance to a dark and horrifying world.

A boundless potent and vigorous energy escaped from this void. As everyone was enveloped in this energy, they felt a suffocating grief, making it hard for them to take a single breath!

Hazy, faintly, there seemed to be a desolate and sorrowful dirge playing near their ears…

“Heavens! That is… that is…!” High Lord Cloud Demon lifted his trembling hand and pointed a finger at the horizon, his voice shaking as he spoke. That endless black void at the ends of the earth, that was clearly… the Eternal Demon Abyss!

This was the true Eternal Demon Abyss!

Back in the annals of history, the number one powerhouse of the Holy Demon Continent entered the Eternal Demon Abyss without returning!

“Impossible, this is impossible!” High Lord Cloud Demon’s face was wan as he shook his head. He was unable to accept this reality.

“We should still be around a thousand miles from the Eternal Demon Abyss… how could we possibly see it!?”

High Lord Cloud Demon’s few words shocked all the martial artists present silly.

“Eternal Demon Abyss!?!?”

“What!? Are you f*cking joking with me!?”

Every single martial artist paled. Even Duanmu Qun was horrified and alarmed.

That was the Eternal Demon Abyss? Heavens!!!

The surrounding 1000 miles around the Eternal Demon Abyss was known as the absolute death forbidden zone. If they could see the Eternal Demon Abyss, then didn’t that mean they were near it?

As everyone thought this, they felt their minds tremble, a bone-biting chill crawling up their backs. Before this, they had entered around 100 miles into the forbidden zone and then they had returned around 150 miles. By all rights, they should have already exited the 1000 mile forbidden zone with a few dozen miles to spare.

Then, they had returned 20 to 30 miles. This should only be the very edge of the 1000 mile forbidden zone!

But now with the Eternal Demon Abyss before them, it seemed they were only a few hundred miles away… how was this possible!?

At this time, Duanmu Qun’s mind echoed with Lin Ming’s words…

‘I feel that… we haven’t left the 1000 mile forbidden zone.’

In essence, they had never left the forbidden zone – they had always walked towards the Eternal Demon Abyss! Whether they went forwards or backwards, they had always been walking towards the Eternal Demon Abyss!!

It wasn't just Duanmu Qun who realized this, but also the other martial artists.

Blackstone looked at Lin Ming, his lips trembling. The other High Lords also looked at Lin Ming, their hearts quaking. They had always been moving straight towards the Eternal Demon Abyss!

The Eternal Demon Abyss was like the maw of a giant beast, a trap that was just waiting for them to step in!

Even the past number one powerhouse of the Holy Demon Continent had perished within the Eternal Demon Abyss. Once they entered, their fates could be imagined!

Thinking of this, High Lord Cloud Demon's expression became incomparably ugly. He turned to look at Lin Ming, his voice trembling as he asked, "Young Hero Lin, just what is happening here?"

Lin Ming let out a heavy breath. The situation was developing in the worst way. He spread his hands out, "I have no idea..."

Chapter 645 – Closed Energy Field

Chapter 645 – Closed Energy Field

…

…

…

Back when they thought they had left the 1000 mile forbidden zone, Lin Ming had said that something seemed wrong. But as to what it was, he hadn’t known.

At that time, many of the martial artists had scoffed at him, derisively snorting at his thoughts. But now, no one dared to view Lin Ming’s words with contempt anymore.

Those several martial artists that had suggested turning back and looking for lucky chances were already going green with regret. The great terror of the Eternal Demon Abyss had been widely known for thousands of years now. Everyone that entered must die, and not even birds could cross, how could any of this have been wrong?

There had been Titled Asuras and Tower Masters that didn’t believe this rumors and tried to enter the 1000 mile forbidden zone to find their own lucky chances, but they had all died in here, regardless of who they were!

They had thought these rumors might have been exaggerations, but now, it seemed as if they were all true!

Facing such a terrifying Eternal Demon Abyss, they had actually made such a ridiculous and foolhardy decision to return and try to dig up some earth-step Demon God Bones… they must have been too tired of living!

“Young Hero Lin, we were confused, please, you must think of a way…”

The High Lord that suggested to return sounded as if he were crying. He looked helplessly at Lin Ming. Lin Ming had now become his final straw out of here. Although the hope he placed on Lin Ming was tremulous at best, it was still a faint hope.

Blackstone's voice also shook, his voice bitter as he said, "Brother Lin, you are merciful and generous, please ignore when we were confused and mistaken. Before, you said that we hadn't yet left the 1000 mile forbidden zone? Is there still hope of leaving here?"

As a descendant of a Holy Land, Blackstone was incomparably arrogant. But now he was so humbly apologizing; this was just a sign of how messed up his state of mind was and how at a loss he was to all the events surrounding him.

Lin Ming glanced over at Blackstone. Naturally, he didn't have time to care about such a trivial matter. The most important task at the moment was to figure out how to leave the Eternal Demon Abyss. If he could leave, then he would rather he had been wrong. But unfortunately, matters had taken a turn for the worse.

He shook his head and said, "I don't have any way right now."

Hearing Lin Ming say this, all of the martial artists present felt their hearts sink with despair. That's right, Lin Ming was not an immortal. Although he felt that something was wrong, that didn't mean that he was able to lead them out of this hell. It was true that he was a Titled Asura, but since ancient times, there had even been Titled Asuras that had died in this 1000 mile forbidden zone. In terms of strength, Lin Ming might even be weaker than Duanmu Qun and High Lord Cloud Demon.

"What do we do? What can we do?" The martial artists began to wallow in misery.

At this time, Lan Xin suddenly asked, "Young Hero Lin, aren't we lost? Are the stars in the sky some form of illusion, deliberately misleading us towards the center of the Eternal Demon Abyss?"

Lin Ming shook his head, "No… the guidance of the stars is correct. The problem lies underneath our feet. If I had to guess, then I would say that for every 100 miles we walk away from the Eternal Demon Abyss, we approach the Eternal Demon Abyss by 100 miles. If we were to walk towards the Eternal Demon Abyss for 100 miles, then we would be closer by 200 miles!”

“Before, we walked 150 miles towards the Eternal Demon Abyss and walked away from the Eternal Demon Abyss by 150 miles. This is a total of 450 miles towards the Eternal Demon Abyss. Disregarding that minor distance now, we should be somewhere around 550 miles far from the Eternal Demon Abyss.”

As Lin Ming spoke, everyone felt chills crawl up their spine.

550 miles!

But now, looking at the position of the Eternal Demon Abyss, it didn’t seem that far at all. If they just walked a few hundred more miles anywhere, they would eventually fall into the Eternal Demon Abyss! There would be nothing left of them!

Even the breezy and lofty Duanmu Qun paled at this moment. “Brother Lin, do we have any chance of leaving here?”

Lin Ming’s expression was grim. He bowed his head and thought for a moment. Shaking his head, he said, “I don’t know. We might be able to leave, or we might be trapped here forever too.”

Lin Ming’s words were truly demoralizing. But as everyone listened in, it was like they heard the dulcet tones of heaven.

Because Lin Ming had said the words, “We might be able to leave.”

At this time, no matter how minor their hope was, something was better than nothing. To them, Lin Ming had become their final straw.

“Young Hero Lin, let’s not leave yet. We’ll move out once we figure out where we’re going.”

A martial artist hurriedly said.

The other martial artists began to respond, “Yes, ah, no one bother Young Hero Lin as he figures out a solution!”

“Keep guard; don’t let any evil spirits here affect Young Hero Lin!”

At this time, all of these martial artists tried to be as heroic and valiant as possible, attempting to raise their own value in Lin Ming’s eyes. They were all scared that he might abandon them because they had slighted him just a while ago.

The truth was that they had overthought this. Lin Ming had decided to cross this river together on the same boat. With them, there would be less danger. At least, if a formidable evil spirit popped out from somewhere, they could act as a shield. If he went alone, then his chances of escaping from here were much slimmer.

Lin Ming lowered his head again, thinking some more. After a while, he slowly said again, “Even if we are standing still, we are still slowly approaching the Eternal Demon Abyss.”

“What!?” Everyone’s complexions changed. Walking away was the same as walking towards the Eternal Demon Abyss, and there wasn’t even any need to mention walking towards it, but… even standing still, they were slowly approaching the great void? How could they still have any chance of surviving?

They fell into despair. The only thing that still gave them peace of mind at this moment was the calm expression on Lin Ming’s face. “Don’t panic. Let’s return to our original route first.”

“Huh? We can still return back where we came from?”

The martial artists were overjoyed to hear this.

Lin Ming said, “At most we’ll be able to return a little. I put some marks down on the way.”

Mark?

Right! Marks!

Every 500 feet they walked, Lin Ming would drop a symbol mark on the ground. At the time, many of the martial artists had derided Lin Ming, thinking that he was just trying to trick them and appear mysterious. But now, it seemed as if he was extremely far-sighted and had expected all of this to happen.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming's image in their minds became increasingly unfathomable. Everyone was excited, growing more and more confident in him.

Lin Ming brought the group to head backwards, following the fluctuation of energy left behind by his mark. Strangely, instead of walking in a straight line, they had to walk in a massive arc. Finally, they reached the seal that he had placed 500 feet back.

However, as Lin Ming saw this mark, he was both happy and worried at the same time. What he was happy about was that he could return to where he was by following these marks. What worried him was that this mark was clearly just placed here an incense stick of time ago, and logically, it should be able to maintain itself here for several months before dissipating, and yet, currently, this mark was fading, half of the energy already gone!

What was this?

Lin Ming frowned. As he went to look for the next mark he left, the group also had to walk in a great curving arc. There were even stretches that they thought they had walked past already. But this time, no one dared to speak any nonsense. Wherever Lin Ming walked, they followed.

After a while of effort, Lin Ming found the second to last mark he left. Sure enough, the energy from this mark had almost been completely consumed!

Feeling for the energy fluctuations of the third, he found that it had completely vanished!

Lin Ming's forehead began to drip with a cold sweat; the situation was worse than he thought!

He had no idea just what had erased the energy within the marks. Like this, he wouldn't have any idea how to leave this place!

"How is it?"

Duanmu Qun noticed that Lin Ming was beginning to drip sweat, and an uneasy sense of foreboding began to rise in his heart.

Lin Ming lightly sighed. He shook his head and said, "There's some problem with the marks I left. In this 1000 mile forbidden zone, there is something unknown that has completely erased them."

"What?"

All of the martial artists felt their hearts sink, a deep sense of despair filling their minds. If these marks failed, did that mean they would be trapped here forever?

The Eternal Demon Abyss only remained open for half a year. After half a year, all the channels to this place would be shut down, only reopening ten years later.

However, of those martial artists that hadn't made it out in six months, there had never been a single one that had reappeared after 10 years. There were no exceptions!

If they were trapped here, that was the same as a death sentence!

Lin Ming remained silent, but he was actually constantly communicating with Demonshine in his mind.

"Demonshine, what is happening to erase the marks I left? Could it be evil spirits?"

Demonshine said, "It's not evil spirits… although I haven't figure out just how to leave this area, I can generally guess just what's going on in this 1000 mile forbidden zone."

“Oh?”

“This 1000 mile forbidden zone is known as a land of no return. The reason for this is probably because there is some powerful energy within the Eternal Demon Abyss that has manifested into a specialized force field that affects the surroundings. And, the radius of this force field just happens to be 1000 miles. Once someone enters, it is very difficult for them to leave. The marks you laid down were also erased by this force field’s energy.”

“Mm…” Lin Ming thought for a moment, “As we walked around, I did feel some strange differences in the power of space around here. The space around the Eternal Demon Abyss must be closed in by this force field, but, the closed space has too great a surface area… I didn’t notice it and walked straight in. With my current understanding of the Concept of Space, I wasn’t able to immediately discover it…”

“Space is enclosed by the force field…” After Lin Ming spoke, Demonshine suddenly seemed to remember something. “I remember when I was still roaming the Realm of the Gods, I heard stories about certain stars in distant spaces that would explode, causing all of their weight to collapse together and form a very special type of miniature star. Around this star is a very strong force field that could twist apart space and force a completely encapsulated space. I fear that even a Supreme Elder of the Realm of the Gods that has glanced at the peak of martial arts might find themselves trapped forever in this closed space once they entered.”

“Oh?” Lin Ming’s mind stirred. This was the first time he had heard about such a star before. “Even such a Supreme Elder wouldn’t be able to leave?”

That elusive peak of martial arts was Lin Ming’s life goal. If even an unrivaled powerhouse who had glanced at that peak was powerless before this type of star, then its horrifying power could be imagined.

Demonshine said, “Of course, these are just stories I heard… however, you can rest assured that the force field of the Eternal Demon Abyss is trivial compared to these types of stars. Otherwise, when the Demon Emperor came here, he never would have been able to leave."

Lin Ming stayed silent. Although his understandings of the Concept of Space could be considered acceptable, facing such a massive energy field here that could warp a vast volume of space into a closed zone, even he felt this extremely difficult to solve. And now, he wasn't even able to use his marks.

At this moment, he could only take things one step at a time.

Lin Ming stood up and said to the martial artists around him, "Follow me."

To these martial artists, Lin Ming's words were infallible commands. How could anyone dare to ignore him? They tried their hardest to keep up with him lest they fall behind.

Chapter 646 – The Yellow Springs River

Chapter 646 – The Yellow Springs River

…

…

…

If Lin Ming wanted to research and understand the situation about the enclosed space force field, he would have to walk around and slowly find out what the governing rules were.

But, there was a prerequisite. This was that he needed to be able to leave marks along the way!

When Lin Ming had placed down marks before this, they had only lasted for two incense sticks of time before being cleanly erased. That definitely wouldn't work. After thinking for a while, Lin Ming thought of placing a trace of his battle spirit in the marks.

A martial artist's battle spirit was a substantialized manifestation of their will. For martial artists that had strong wills, their will might last tens or even hundreds of thousands of years in perpetuity. When Lin Ming had encountered the will lights in the Road of Emperor, this was the reason they had existed until then. Even within the Eternal Demon Abyss, there might be heavenly treasures or demon bones that contained an Emperor will lasting for tens or hundreds of thousands of years.

"The first array symbol…" Lin Ming walked over to a flat area of ground and flicked his finger, shooting out a golden array symbol and condensing it into a small mark. As the mark formed, Lin Ming left a faint trace of azure energy within; this was a wisp of battle spirit.

After leaving down the mark with the battle spirit, Lin Ming didn't leave. Instead, he say down near the array symbol and waited to see just how fast the energy would pass from it.

The other martial artists were unclear as to what was happening. Thus, a martial artist couldn't help but ask, "Young Hero Lin, what are you doing?"

"You worthless idiot! What use is there in you asking? You wouldn't even understand Young Hero Lin's explanation." Blackstone suddenly said. The truth was that he also wanted to know what Lin Ming was doing, but he feared that he would disturb Lin Ming's thought process at this time.

Lin Ming kept total silence and quietly watched the energy leave the array symbol.

Time slowly passed, soon, it had been a quarter of an hour. The closed force field had wearing away the energy within the array symbol, but as for that azure wisp that Lin Ming had left within, it dissipated very slowly.

Lin Ming's azure will originally had an endlessly growing quality to it. Added to the fact that his will was firm to begin with, it held together well. After a quarter of an hour passed, the energy hadn't even been reduced by 5%.

Calculating the total time, that mark with a wisp of battle spirit should be able to support itself for around six hours.

Six hours was more than enough time.

"Boy, you're quite smart! You strengthened that mark with your battle spirit, nice!" Demonshine's voice echoed in Lin Ming's mind.

"Alright, let's continue!"

Lin Ming stood up and the other martial artists began preparing to set out. At this time, Lin Ming was in the lead.

As the group advanced forwards, he would leave behind a mark every 500 feet. The path he took was very strange. Sometimes he would go forwards, sometimes he would go to the side, and sometimes he would even go backwards.

However, no matter where he walked, he never seemed to be able to leave the Eternal Demon Abyss. In front of everyone, the Eternal Demon Abyss became increasingly close, and that monstrous flame became more and more clear. It was as if they could already feel the terrible heat waves rolling off of it.

The pitch black Eternal Demon Abyss crossed through the end of the world, endless, limitless, like the maw of an ancient beast, swallowing all!

“Young… Young Hero Lin, is there really no problem?”

A martial artist couldn’t help but ask. He actually wasn’t feeling reassured at all. As he followed Lin Ming, he noticed that they were actually closing in on the Eternal Demon Abyss!

“If you have the ability then you can lead the way.” Duanmu Qun coldly said, causing the martial artist to shut up.

After walking for another several dozen miles, the Eternal Demon Abyss seemed as if it wasn’t even 200 miles away. The group could already clearly see the horrifying fog rising up from the endless gaping maw. What rose was not flames, but a flow of surging black energy. This energy was like a silent fountain, directly impacting hundreds of thousands of feet into the sky.

Lin Ming was silent for a moment, then he said, “Let’s return to our old route.”

He hadn’t been able to discover just what the strange Space Laws were yet, but he was far too close to the Eternal Demon Abyss for comfort. He didn’t dare to continue forwards anymore.

Returning to the original route wasn't easy either. On the way here, they only needed to walk one mile forwards to go two miles towards the Eternal Demon Abyss. But, in returning, they actually had to curve left and right, taking all sorts of crazy paths just to go back a single mile.

Fortunately, Lin Ming's battle spirit didn't fail him. As they returned several miles back, there were still remnants of his battle spirit – they didn't completely vanish.

As they reached the last several battle spirit marks, the will energy of the battle spirit had nearly depleted itself. This caused Lin Ming to sigh in emotion. Even with his own understandings of the power of space, in addition to Demonshine, and even his battle spirit, all three of these factors together weren't enough to allow him to figure out just how to leave the 1000 mile forbidden zone. If he could not even find a single clue, then the difficulty that other martial artists would have could be imagined. Not to mention a Titled Asura or Tower Master, but even a high level Life Destruction powerhouse that didn't have a good grasp of the Concept of Space might perish here!

"We're back!"

"We really came back! Young Hero Lin truly knows the way!"

The martial artists could see the Eternal Demon Abyss blur as they walked backwards. Finally, in a single go, Lin Ming proved his skills and led them to return all the way to the 550 mile zone from the Eternal Demon Abyss where they had started.

But at this time, everyone's hearts suddenly chilled. They didn't know when, but the air had filled with an enchanting aroma.

If this was a nice spring day in the forests, then this fragrance would have been refreshing. But, here in the darkness of the Eternal Demon Abyss, this fragrance caused everyone's hairs to stand on end!

As everyone abruptly looked up, they saw that the sky was raining down flower petals.

These beautiful and vivid flower petals were like angels flying in the heavens. They were completely out of place in this dreary, dark gray world.

As Lin Ming saw this, he felt a chill crawl up his back. “Demonshine, what is this?”

The jade slip that the Polaris Tower Master had given Lin Ming had very few records about what was inside the 1000 mile forbidden zone. Lin Ming had no idea just what was occurring around him.

Demonshine’s complexion suddenly changed, “This is bad! Those are brain-devouring tapirs, hurry up and run away!”

A sharp light flashed in Lin Ming’s eye. He didn’t bother asking what a brain-devouring tapir was, instead instantly launching his movement technique and drawing backwards, “Retreat! Don’t be touched by those petals!”

As Lin Ming spoke, a flower petal silently fell onto the head of a martial artist. The martial artist’s body shook, and with a cracking noise, blood shot out from his head!

Those weren’t flower petals! Those were thumb-sized blood-red fleshly insects! They had sharp teeth like steel thorns. With a single bite, they directly pierced through the skull!

Woosh!

The red fleshy insect drilled into the martial artist’s head like a bolt of lightning!

“Ahhhhh!!!!”

The martial artist clutched his head as he fell to his knees. Blood poured out from his head and eyes. The agonizing pain caused him to smash his head constantly into the ground. Every time he did so, thick liquid blood would gush out of the hole in his skull!

Everyone could even clearly hear the sounds of his brain being chewed upon in his skull.

Seeing this ghoulish scene, the other martial artists didn't hesitate at all. They instantly launched their movement techniques and rushed out with Lin Ming!

At this time, the martial artists discovered that the fragrance they smelled just now had the effect of debilitating their true essence flow. With their true essence circulation hindered, their movements naturally became slower.

"Ahh!"

Another martial artist gave a miserable cry as a brain-devouring tapir started eating away at him.

The miserable cries that filled the air caused the martial artists to panic with fear. They fiercely bit down on their tongues, using the pain to wake themselves up and desperately flee this area!

Lin Ming no longer had time to lay down marks. In a single breath, he brought everyone out several dozen miles. But, at this time, he suddenly stopped in his steps. Right in front of him was a great river. This river was a dirty yellow-brown color and was over 1000 feet wide.

This wide and smoky river seemed as if it originated from the nothingness of ancient times, flowing towards unknown lands.

In the waters of the river, one could see bones floating. Of these bones, the majority of them weren't human, but rather different races. Some had wings, some had long horns, and others had even more peculiar features.

Just by looking at this river, one could feel an inexplicable sense of bereavement and anguish fill their hearts, causing all of them to be comparably desolate.

"Yellow… the Yellow Springs River!"

At that moment, Lin Ming's heart stopped in his chest. All of his hairs rose, and without any further words, he immediately swiveled around and ran away!

There was no need for Demonshine to tell him what the Yellow Springs River was. When he inherited the memories of the Demon Emperor's soul fragment, it had contained a memory of this Yellow Springs River.

It was probably because the Yellow Springs River was too terrifying, thus it left a deep impression on the Demon Emperor, which was then inherited by Lin Ming.

When the Demon Emperor had come to the bank of the Yellow Springs River, he had almost died, becoming more of the countless bones of the river!

Duanmu Qun, Blackstone, High Lord Cloud Demon and the rest were all following behind Lin Ming. As they saw Lin Ming's sudden frightened expression and hasty retreat, they followed him without a word.

However, because they were slower, the last two martial artists that caught up didn't notice Lin Ming's expression suddenly change. In that instant, a trace of confusion and hesitation filled their faces.

And after this slight confusion, they seemed to lose their souls. Their eyes glazed over, their limbs stiffened, and their steps became heavy.

Like zombies, they took several dazed steps forwards and then changed direction, walking towards the Yellow Springs River…

At this time, Lin Ming had already brought the remaining people several dozen miles away. As for those two martial artists that had started shambling towards the Yellow Springs Rover, they had walked into the river, going deeper and deeper within. The river water flowed over their legs, waist, belly, chest, and finally their heads.

A faint trace of blood leaked out from their bodies, mixing with the river for a moment before immediately being swallowed up. The river remained that same dirty yellow color without the least bit of red.

Under the surface of the water, the two martial artists' bodies had already completely disappeared. There was nothing left of them but bones, as if their bodies had rotted away for endless eons.

After the two martial artists sank into the river, there wasn't even a stir from where they were. Several breaths later, two skeletons floated upwards, adding onto the endless bones of the river and gradually drifting away...

As everyone saw this, they shivered in fear, a cold sweat streaming down their backs. Of these martial artists, which one of them wasn't a brave and peerless heroic youth of their generation? Otherwise, there was no way they would have dared to enter Skysplit Tower. Although they didn't fear death, that didn't mean they couldn't withstand such a creepy way of dying. This truly cracked the courage of even the most daring heroes!

"Brother Lin, just what is that river?" Even Duanmu Qun's voice was shaking at this moment.

"That was the Yellow Springs River..." Lin Ming sighed. The situation was deteriorating more and more. Now, he didn't even have full faith he could find out how to leave this 1000 mile forbidden zone...

The Yellow Springs River?

The martial artists present were petrified. This river that was depicted in the ancient legends of the Holy Demon Continent... it actually existed?

Chapter 647 – Ancient Beast

Chapter 647 – Ancient Beast

Chapter title is a spoiler, hover over it to read it now or see it at the bottom

…

…

…

"Yellow Springs River… that is… from the legendary hell from the fables of a bygone era… the skeletons within the river are countless, without end…" Duanmu Qun's voice trailed off as he turned to look at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was silent throughout. Whether this was a random name given by the Demon Emperor, or whether this was truly the legendary Yellow Springs River of the Holy Demon Continent, what was important was that because they frantically ran away just now, they had approached the Eternal Demon Abyss by over 100 miles!

This meant that they were just over 400 miles away from the Eternal Demon Abyss. They could already clearly see the black energy that gushed out of the ground, spanning the heavens and earth, setting the stars ablaze!

As Lin Ming became increasingly gloomy, and the others also realized this point. In truth, they had run at most around 20 to 30 miles just now, but they had gone another 100 miles towards the Eternal Demon Abyss. This proved that the closer they were to the Eternal Demon Abyss, the faster they would get sucked into that gaping void!

This was seriously bad news!

Duanmu Qun let out a heavy sigh. At this time, he felt that his chances of making it out of the 1000 mile forbidden zone with his life intact were becoming increasingly low.

"We only have six people left..." Lan Xin suddenly said.

Of the group of 10, the only ones left over were Lin Ming, Feng Shen, Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, High Lord Cloud Demon, and Blackstone.

These six were the strongest of the group. As for the other four, because their strength was lacking, they had already died!

When everyone encountered the same danger, it was usually the weakest who would die.

As Blackstone discovered there were only six people remaining, he felt his heart rapidly beat in his chest, his face paling.

Because, of the six people left, he was the weakest!

There was no need to mention Duanmu Qun or High Lord Cloud Demon, he couldn't even think of catching up to them.

Lin Ming's strength was unknown, but he shouldn't be much worse than Duanmu Qun.

As for Lan Xin and Feng Shen, they were also above him.

This meant that if someone were to die, it would most likely be him!

"Young... Young Hero Lin..."

Blackstone's forehead began to furiously drip with sweat, but he didn't know what to say. In the past, when he had formed teams, he had taken others to be his shield because they were weaker than him.

But today, the tables had turned – he was the weakest.

This was an immeasurably bitter and ironic situation.

High Lord Cloud Demon knew what Blackstone was thinking and patted his shoulder in consolation. As he saw the four others die just now, he also felt as if he had stepped into death's door.

For those two dangers just now, if it wasn't for Lin Ming promptly alerting them in time, they probably would have all died.

"Young Hero Lin, you must choose a lucky road, ah, we're all counting on you here..." Blackstone's voice was a bit hoarse as he spoke, "If I make it through this alive, I'll leave all my infernal energy and even give everything in my spatial ring to you, I don't want any of this... hey, if I had known things would be like this earlier then I never would have entered the Eternal Demon Abyss. Now even if there was an earth-step Demon God Bone given to me, I still wouldn't want it..."

Blackstone morosely said. Now, any regrets he had were useless. In truth, Blackstone was different from the High Lords of the Skysplit Towers. He was a Holy Land descendant and a high Emperor level talent. Even if he didn't risk his life to search for lucky chances he still would have a very high chance of breaking through the Emperor level bottleneck in the future and becoming a one-star Demon Emperor.

Of course, unless he had some further great lucky chance, he would be stranded there for the rest of his life, forever unable to break through to a two-star Demon Emperor. He would only be the most ordinary of Emperor level powerhouses.

The reason that Blackstone had come to the Eternal Demon Abyss was this. He came to seek his own lucky chances because he didn't want to resign himself to fate and desired to reach a higher boundary.

But now, he regretted coming to this hellhole. After entering the 1000 mile forbidden zone, his hopes of leaving this place were quickly fading.

He would most likely die here.

Even if Lin Ming could really solve this land and figure out how to leave, that didn't mean he could bring everyone out with him. If there were people Lin Ming had to leave behind, then Blackstone would probably be one of them.

Thinking of this, Blackstone could only let out deep sighs. Becoming the most ordinary of Emperor level powerhouses was still better than death. An ordinary Emperor level powerhouse could live for 5000 to 6000 years. If he broke through to a two-star Demon Emperor, his lifespan would increase by another 2000 to 3000 years. The difference between the two wasn't astronomically great.

High Lord Cloud Demon also had the same feeling. They had entered the 1000 mile forbidden zone by mistake and had encountered repeated life and death experiences. There were just too many existences here that he was unable to stand against. He could envisage that in the future, no matter how assiduous or hardworking he was in his cultivation, the difference between him and these hellish demonic spirits was far too great. All he could do was sigh at his own fate.

As everyone was thinking, suddenly, there was a great and terrifying sound like billowing heavenly thunder that resounded through the entire world! No one could tell just where this sound came from. All they felt was thunder in their ears, their eardrums almost exploding!

Everyone hastily sealed their ears with true essence lest they start bleeding out from their heads.

That horrifying sound intensified, smashing against the world like a natural disaster. The earth shook for 10,000 miles around them, causing them to tremble with fear, their hearts inexplicably filling with fear.

Lin Ming's complexion changed.

What was that sound!?!

Thunder?

No, there was no way that a thunderclap could have so much power behind it. It was like the sound of the world itself quaking in dread!

And at this moment, a scene occurred, searing itself into the six people's eyes so that they would never forget for the rest of their lives.

In the Eternal Demon Abyss, several hundred miles in front of them, the black energy flow suddenly became turbulent, quickly diverging. With it, a massive head, several hundred miles long, quietly appeared!

Ferocious dark red scales, taller than a mountain, a massive horn, it looked like a dragon, but different from the True Dragon depicted in legends.

Seeing this great ancient beast appear, every martial artist, including Lin Ming, was completely shocked!

In that instant, they couldn't even breathe. If just the head was several hundred miles long then the body must be thousands or even tens of thousands of miles long!

Heavens!!!

What in the world was that!?!?

The great ancient beast simply didn't pay attention to the six people standing several hundred miles away. To it, these six people simply weren't qualified for it to care about. Its dark gold pupils were vast and uncaring, regarding every creature under the heavens as mere ants!

As the group inadvertently glanced at these dark gold pupils, it was like they had been physically struck. Blackstone, the weakest amongst them, suddenly shook, a tyrannical energy rushing through his body, causing him to vomit out a mouthful of blood!

Even Feng Shen and Lan Xin were forced back a step, their faces whiter than death.

Those dark gold pupils were several thousand feet high. It was like the infinite void of the universe was hidden behind them, making everyone's minds quake with fear.

Duanmu Qun and High Lord Cloud Demon quickly looked away, no longer daring to gaze upon this being. But Lin Ming was actually staring at this great ancient beast, his eyes blazing with brilliance even as the blood vessels there bulged like they were about to burst.

"Lin Ming! If you continue looking your eyes will explode!" Demonshine's shout resounded in Lin Ming's mind.

However, Lin Ming kept his gaze firmly fixed on this great ancient beast until his eyes began to bleed!

Huu…

The blazing black flow of energy was pushed back once again. The head of the great ancient beast rose up 100,000 feet. Then, a pair of wings began to unfurl. As these wings spread out, all of the clouds in the skies were washed away, the black flow of energy was twisted apart, the rocks from all around were turned up in a great storm and even mountains were swept away!

As High Lord Cloud Demon saw this, he was greatly shocked, "Watch out!"

With a great roar, the terrifying storm instantly swept through the 400 miles towards the group, directly impacting into them!

Bang!

The ground was split apart. The six people were swept into the strong winds, no different than straw!

High Lord Cloud Demon was aghast. If they were blown away by these strong winds, while they might not be seriously wounded, they couldn't afford to lose Lin Ming!

In this hellhole, once they were separated, the chances of finding anyone else again were close to zero! If they didn't have Lin Ming with them then they could forget ever leaving here!

"Come to me!"

Woosh woosh woosh!

Five chains of energy shot out from High Lord Cloud Demon's body, twining around the other five like spirit snakes. The six of them were tossed several thousand feet in the sky before coming crashing down again!

Bang bang bang!

Earth and rock collapsed. Blackstone had a mouth full of dirt.

"Holy f*ck, what was that thing!!?"

Blackstone spat out a mouthful of dirt and wiped off the blood from his lips. As he turned around to gaze at the Eternal Demon Abyss, the great ancient beast had disappeared into the hazy black fog. It had turned around, its great head submerged into the Eternal demon Abyss, leaving nothing behind but a great tail in the sky like a pillar that held up the heavens.

Just glancing at this great ancient beast had severely wounded Blackstone and caused him to vomit blood. It had to be said that they were more than 400 miles apart. Just what sort of terrifying existence was this!

"Don't speak nonsense!" Hearing Blackstone's curse, High Lord Cloud Demon's complexion changed. "Blackstone, if you want to be an idiot and die then go ahead, but don't drag us in. if you dare to offend this glorious divine being then we will all die here!"

High Lord Cloud Demon's voice was stern but Blackstone only curled his lips, feeling that High Lord Cloud Demon was over exaggerating things. He said, "There's no need to be careful, I'm just talking. The creature is several hundred miles away so I doubt it can hear us. Then again, even if it could, that doesn't mean it understands our language."

"You idiot!" High Lord Cloud Demon's face sank. "Blackstone, I hope you remember the legend of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Several tens of thousands of years ago, during a period of unprecedented glory and prosperity, there was once a sixth-grade sect that had almost united the entire Holy Demon Continent. They gathered 12 Emperor level powerhouses and wanted to cage all of the infernal energy within the Eternal Demon Abyss in a great array formation so that they could use it all for themselves, guaranteeing that their Holy Land would have a great destiny of 100,000 years. And the end result for this hubris was that those 12 Emperor level powerhouses were all instantly killed by a giant claw that stretched out from the Eternal Demon Abyss, killing even the Hallowed Lord of that Holy Land without even ashes remaining! Afterwards, that sixth-grade Holy Land completely disintegrated, and every single one if their disciples died tragic deaths under the power of a mystical curse. Tell me, do you want to follow in their footsteps!?"

As High Lord Cloud Demon spoke, Blackstone paled. Indeed, even if that great ancient beast just now wasn't that same fellow from tens of thousands of years ago that destroyed a sixth-grade Holy Land with just a great claw, it wasn't any less of an existence.

With such divine beings, it was best to remain respectful to them. Otherwise, if they were cursed, there was naught remaining for them but death!

Blackstone gulped several times. Scared witless, he kneeled down and prayed in his heart several times, begging for this divine being to pardon his sins.

As Blackstone and High Lord Cloud Demon were talking, Lin Ming had been deep in thought, his eyes still bleeding.

"Lin Ming, you're crazy! You're lucky that big fellow sent everyone flying into the air or else your eyes really would have exploded!" Demonshine admonished Lin Ming from within his mind.

Lin Ming let out a long breath. He silently gazed at the Eternal Demon Abyss for a long time. Then, he slowly and calmly said, “I think I’ve discovered the way to leave the 1000 mile forbidden zone…”

Chapter 648 – Corpse Devil

Chapter 648 – Corpse Devil

…

…

…

"You've figured out a way to leave the Eternal Demon Abyss?" Demonshine asked, startled.

"Just a general feel… I don't know if it's possible yet…" Lin Ming quietly said. He was continuously playing out scenarios in his mind.

Demonshine was shocked. He was very familiar with Lin Ming's personality now. If Lin Ming said he could, then he must have around a 70 to 80% assurance that his plan would work.

The 1000 mile forbidden zone was known as a land of no return that not even birds could cross. Even a high stage Life Destruction or weak Emperor level powerhouse might die here.

But, Lin Ming was able to discover the method to leave this land…

When they had captured the demon bone together, that had mostly been relying on Demonshine's help. But after they entered the 1000 mile forbidden zone, the truth was that Demonshine hadn't played too great a role. Most of it had been due to Lin Ming's own hard work and effort!

'This boy…'

Demonshine sighed with emotion. Perhaps it wouldn’t be too long before a broken remnant soul like him would no longer be able to help Lin Ming.

After a quarter of an hour, Lin Ming had finished deducing the scenarios in his mind. He stood up and said to the group, “Follow me.”

With Lin Ming’s words, everyone quickly stood up. Although they had placed all their hopes on Lin Ming, they still didn’t have much confidence they would be able to make it out of here.

This entire time, they had always been going deeper and deeper into the Eternal Demon Abyss. The closer they got to the center, the faster they were sucked in. It was like there was some invisible gravitational force that was constantly sucking them in.

Demonshine had said that the Eternal Demon Abyss was like a black hole. The closer one was, the greater the attractive force was and the more distorted space became. Wanting to come back out was extremely difficult.

But, Lin Ming had found that he had been caught in a trap of his own misunderstanding. He had thought that to come out of this twisted space maze, he would have to look for an exit.

However, this space maze was extremely complex with countless twist and turns. There were even some crisscrossing paths that were 100 to 200 miles away from the Eternal Demon Abyss. If he had to pass through these then he would have to approach to 100 miles away from the Eternal Demon Abyss, which was undoubtedly very dangerous.

Moreover, there were innumerable danger zones in this 1000 mile forbidden zone. If they encountered some danger and were forced to run away, then all their efforts would have been for naught.

In this sort of situation, Lin Ming felt as if he had walked into a dead end. But then, that great ancient beast had suddenly appeared, giving Lin Ming a groundbreaking inspiration.

When that great ancient beast had let out a deep roar into the skies, the powerful shockwave had surged outwards and destroyed the surrounding space maze!

Then, when the great ancient beast had unfolded its vast wings, the following terrifying storm that swept out had again shattered the space maze, directly blowing them out 1000 feet. This 1000 foot distance was towards the outside of the Eternal Demon Abyss!

In other words, they were blown 1000 feet away from the Eternal Demon Abyss.

As this happened, it was like a light lit up in Lin Ming's mind. The distorted space here could change the walking direction of the weak, but it could not change that violent and tyrannical shockwave and energy storm from the great ancient beast. The reason for this was because they were far too strong!

If he could be like the great ancient beast and destroy the surrounding space maze, then leaving this place would be much simpler.

Shattering the space here was a madman's idea. If it were several months ago, Lin Ming wouldn't have believed he could accomplish this. But now that he had broken through to Revolving Core and his battle spirit had also reached the bronze stage, his striking power was incomparable to how it used to be.

A battle spirit had a colossal effect on striking power. In just this aspect alone, Lin Ming had already surpassed a second stage Life Destruction powerhouse.

Initially, Xuan Wuji and others had cut open a space channel in a broken world. Now, he too should have this ability. Well, at least he should be able to change the curved space at a weak point of this space maze.

Now, the reason that Lin Ming was walking was to look for this weak point in space.

Blackstone closely followed behind Lin Ming. Uneasily, he asked, "Young Hero Lin, how come you didn't place down an array symbol mark this time?"

Without a mark, how would they return? Blackstone simply didn't have any sense of security here at all.

Duanmu Qun and the others didn't understand either. But what they knew was that Lin Ming had his reasons for doing this. They didn't understand the strange and mysterious principles of this 1000 mile forbidden zone, so there was no reason to ask.

"There's no need to."

Lin Ming responded simply without explaining. In fact, leaving battle spirit marks meant that he would have to lose some willpower. One mark was not much, but hundreds of them added together would exhaust him. Right now, Lin Ming had to ensure that his striking power and battle spirit would be at their strongest state.

Blackstone noticed Lin Ming's silence and tactfully didn't ask any further. All he could do was follow Lin Ming, his heart anxious the entire time.

After walking for a quarter of an hour, Lin Ming finally found the first weak point in space.

As long as he could destroy this distorted space in front of him, he would be able to leave this level of the space maze and go into the next. It would save him a great amount of time and effort.

Lin Ming closed his eyes.

The Heretical God Force opened.

He revolved the true essence within his body to the limit.

Penetrating Rainbow!

With the battle spirit fused to his Purple Comet Spear, Lin Ming thrust out!

The sudden attack took the other five by surprise. They thought that an enemy had arrived and all began to take out their weapons, preparing themselves for the final showdown. However, as they waited, they discovered that nothing happened. Lin Ming had simply stabbed at empty air just then.

‘Is that fellow too nervous and attacked empty space?’ Blackstone maliciously thought. Before this, he didn’t have any confidence that he would be able to defeat Lin Ming. But, seeing him mess up in public, he couldn’t help but start thinking to himself, ‘So even you’ll have times you’re embarrassed.’

“Let’s go!”

Lin Ming said succinctly and lifted his feet to walk. His thoughts had been correct. With the bronze battle spirit fused into his attack and added to the fact that his cultivation had reached Revolving Core, he really was able to change the distortion in space here!

As everyone saw Lin Ming calmly walk forwards, the rest followed him with no questions.

Following this, a set pattern began to appear. Every now and then, Lin Ming would suddenly attack the empty air.

Everyone was confused; just what was this?

To be honest, attacking empty air looked sort of silly.

If this were another martial artist, they would have assumed that they had a mental sickness. But Lin Ming was different. If Lin Ming did it, then no matter how absurd or ridiculous it looked, there must been some unexplainable mystical function behind it. This could be called the weighty stature of a master.

Attack after attack, everyone was startled at first, but after that they became accustomed to it. No one asked why Lin Ming did what he did – they knew that asking was useless anyways.

Blackstone was disquieted. Were Lin Ming's silly-looking attacks really effective?

Casually, Blackstone turned back to look at the Eternal Demon Abyss. As he saw it, he was immediately startled.

"Everyone, look!"

The rest of the group turned around to see that the far off Eternal Demon Abyss seemed blurrier now. That billowing flow of energy had sunk back into the thick fog, looking ethereal and dreamlike.

From being clear to faint, this proved that they were walking further from the Eternal Demon Abyss! Moreover, they had gone at least several dozen or a hundred miles!

Realizing this, everyone grew excited.

They didn't know how Lin Ming had done this, but now no one dared to disturb his thoughts.

As for Lin Ming, every time that he attacked space, the strike of the Purple Comet Spear would completely sink into the invisible surface of space and be camouflaged by it, so that no one could see just how much energy was behind each of these attacks. Everyone assumed that they were just ordinary attacks, but the truth was that every single strike used 80 to 90% of Lin Ming's strength.

For these short interval and high intensity attacks, even though Lin Ming had the support from the Gate of Healing, he still found it hard to continue.

He had no choice but to take out some pills and restore his strength.

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming had to constantly make sure he was at this peak state. Otherwise, if a catastrophic danger were to happen, no one would come to his rescue.

“Young Hero Lin, what is so mysterious about your attack? Can we help out?” As Blackstone saw that Lin Ming had already rested for half an hour, he couldn’t help but ask this question. He was too worried right now. Every second longer that they were in this 1000 mile forbidden zone meant that there was that much more danger.

Lin Ming didn’t even have time to respond before High Lord Cloud Demon coldly coughed and shouted, “Blackstone, sit down!”

Blackstone dejectedly returned to his spot.

“You not bothering Brother Lin is already the greatest help!” Duanmu Qun said. He had also been carefully observing Lin Ming’s attacks. Those seemingly random attacks actually came in at very particular angles and speeds; wanting to replace Lin Ming’s attack with their own was easier said than done.

Three quarters of an hour later, Lin Ming was completely restored. At this moment when Lin Ming’s eyes flashed open, he was immediately shocked. He could see a dim green shadow behind Lan Xin. As he took a closer look, a creepy feeling instantly shot up his back. “Lan Xin, behind you!”

“What!?”

Lan Xin was greatly shocked. She suddenly turned around, a cold sweat already dripping down her back. Behind her, a long green-haired corpse woman was silently floating in the air, her crimson lips open as she continuously sucked wisps of essence energy from Lan Xin’s body into her mouth!

“Ahh!”

Lan Xin cried out in alarm, her beautiful face turning pale!

“It’s sucking in your life force!” Lin Ming said, shocked. This kind of green corpse was called a corpse devil. After a martial artist’s corpse was possessed by an evil spirit, it absorbed the infernal energy from the world and slowly became this sort of ghostly monster.

"Die!"

Duanmu Qun's face flashed with a merciless light. He took out his long sword and stabbed at the corpse devil. Once a corpse devil absorbed one's essence energy, it would greatly shorten their life. It was unknown just how much of Lan Xin's essence energy had been swallowed, but if they didn't kill this green-haired corpse devil then that essence energy would never return.

Facing Duanmu Qun's violent sword strike, the corpse devil didn't even try to dodge. It let that sharp sword cut down on its body.

Deng!

The sound of metal striking metal rang out. Duanmu Qun's sword cut open the ragged clothes of the corpse devil, but it didn't even manage to scratch the skin.

What!?

Duanmu Qun's complexion paled. Although that attack just now was rushed and he wasn't able to use his full strength, it was at least 60 to 70% of his peak power. Yet he wasn't even to scratch the skin of this monster! If this was so, then even if he attacked with all of his strength he might only be able to give it a minor wound!

The other martial artists also grimaced. Duanmu Qun's strength ranked amongst the top in their group. If he couldn't even injure the corpse devil then there was no need to mention the others.

Run!

This was the idea that simultaneously appeared in the minds of several people. However, just as they thought this, it was like they were suddenly thrown into an icehouse. In front of them, around 70 to 80 feet away, were three more corpse devils. They had gathered in a formation and had them surrounded!

Chapter 649 – Two Spears Till Death

Chapter 649 – Two Spears Till Death

…

…

…

The three new corpse devils that appeared were tall and fierce-looking. From their appearances, they had been Giant Demons and Goliaths before they died. With the female corpse devil, that was a total of four corpse devils. Just any one of them was stronger than Duanmu Qun; how could they even fight this!?

Blackstone felt his heart sink into chilling despair. Lan Xing and Feng Shen also paled.

"Let's all rush out in one direction!"

High Lord Cloud Demon took the initiative to launch an attack. He took out a lance from his spatial ring and thrust straight towards a Goliath corpse devil!

He poured all of his demon essence into this strike – there was no holding back!

Ghostly Dragon Emperor Strike!

A lance thrust forth, causing massive waves of black true essence to rise up. All of the surroundings rocks were crushed by the lance's energy, falling down like a hailstorm!

The corpse devil that this attack was aimed at cunningly smiled. It stretched out a glowing green claw, directly blocking the lance!

A claw of flesh was actually able to resist High Lord Cloud Demon’s heaven-step treasure! With a ‘kacha’ sound, High Lord Cloud Demon’s spear was firmly grasped by the corpse devil!

High Lord Cloud Demon was whiter than paper. For this strike, he had used a secret Goliath technique that wounded himself to increase his power. In addition, with his full strength and also his low-grade heaven-step treasure lance, this was enough to crack apart a large hill. But this corpse devil had actually blocked it with a claw.

What sort of strange power was this? What sort of terrifying body strength was this!?

But at this moment, Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and Feng Shen all rushed forwards. Their three heaven-step long swords all cut down together!

“Attack the eyes!”

Duanmu Qun fully realized just how terrifying the defensive power of these corpse devils was. A sword cut apart both the eyes of the corpse devil. A savage and brutal rain of sword light came falling down, directly covering the corpse devil in a hail of incomparably keen energy!

Peng peng!

The corpse devil’s rotten eyes burst apart. However, to a corpse devil, the truth was that their eyes had already lost their use long ago. They perceived the world through smells and sensing life force. Besides angering, these attacks hadn’t done anything at all.

“Houuu!”

A corpse devil roared. Everyone around felt their ears ache with numbness, their eardrums almost rupturing. Next, a Goliath corpse devil swept out his claw and caught all three heaven-step swords in his grasp.

These three swords were originally soft swords. After being grasped by the Goliath corpse devil, there was a screeching sound as all three swords began to twist and bend under the massive pressure!

Meanwhile, that green-haired devil corpse also shot forwards, striking out a claw at Lan Xin and Feng Shen!

At this time, Lan Xin and Feng Shen had their swords grabbed by the Goliath corpse devil; it was impossible to pull them back out. They could only escape if they abandoned their swords. But, facing these corpse devils without their weapons, their fates could be imagined!

They had never thought that even with a combination of four attacks, they wouldn't even able to tear open an exit in this encirclement!

These corpse devils were far too terrifying!

"Careful! Their claws are poisonous!"

Duanmu Qun shouted out. As his words were half out, he was suddenly surprised. He found that Lin Ming, who hadn't yet attacked, had actually appeared behind the green-haired corpse devil. Lin Ming held the Purple Comet Spear in his hands, his face expressionless. Atop the spearpoint, a cold light sparked!

Death!

A brilliant light flashed in Lin Ming's eyes.

The Heretical God Force was opened to the limit, compressed true essence erupted in surging waves, the power of thunder and fire wove together…

Penetrating Rainbow!

A spear shot out. This strike contained the will of a bronze level battle spirit. Combined with the terrifying energy, even the void around the spear trembled!

The female corpse cackled, not bothering to dodge, allowing this spear to stab at her. At that same time, she swiveled around, reaching her claw out at Lin Ming's neck!

"Lin Ming, be careful!"

Lan Xin and Feng Shen's expressions immediately changed. This female corpse devil had ridiculous defensive powers. She was able to ignore any and all attacks, countering in a terrifying manner. Once those glowing green claws broke through one's protective true essence, even if it was only a minor wound, the corpse poison would be enough to cause an agonizingly painful death!

If a martial artist were to collide with this female corpse devil, they would absolutely suffer a great loss!

However, facing the attack of this green-haired corpse devil, Lin Ming simply didn't care. His spear thrust out like before!

Seeing that claw nearing Lin Ming's neck, Lan Xin and Feng Shen became incomparably pale. But, that green-haired corpse devil was laughing like a macabre maniac!

"Gegegege!"

But at this moment, an unbelievable scene occurred.

The claw of the female corpse devil seemed to suddenly slow down, and the Purple Comet Spear in Lin Ming's hands suddenly accelerated!

The power of thunder and fire twisted together; the bronze battle spirit erupted! With a 'chi' sound, the Purple Comet Spear pierced through the green-haired corpse devil's throat!

With a twist of the spear, the female corpse devil had half her neck torn off!

But at this time, when the green-haired corpse devil's claw was only half a foot from Lin Ming, he suddenly drew backwards. As he pulled back his long spear, a wisp of purple lightning shined on the tip!

A thrust, a retreat, completely clean!

The sudden turn of events stunned Lan Xin. Even Feng Shen, who kept Lin Ming in the highest esteem, still had his mouth hanging wide open. He nearly forgot that his own sword was grasped in the hand of the Goliath corpse devil.

They had attacked the green-haired corpse devil so they personally knew just how terrifying its defensive power was. It was like refined gold, immune to all attacks!

But now, Lin Ming had actually penetrated it with a spear… just what had happened!?

“Lin Ming…” Lan Xin gulped, not sure what to say.

“What’re you acting so shocked about!? Attack!”

Duanmu Qun’s few words brought everyone back to reality. As the Goliath corpse devil was distracted, he took advantage of this and kicked it in the face, pulling his sword back out.

“Kill!”

Duanmu Qun had amazingly fast hand and eye reflexes. He sliced at the green-haired female devil corpse's neck, hoping to cut off the other half of its neck.

Feng Shen, Lan Xin, and High Lord Cloud Demon all seemed to awaken from some hazy dream. Immediately, they all used their ultimate killing strikes to attack the wounded green-haired corpse devil!

With the sound of scraping metal, Duanmu Qun’s sword energies ruthlessly rushed onto the green-haired corpse devil, but, he actually wasn’t able to break past her defenses. This caused him to panic, horrified.

Just what had Lin Ming done with his strike just then that he was able to penetrate her?

At this time, Lin Ming had already taken out his spear and drawn back several dozen feet. As he was about to launch another attack, he felt his Purple Comet Spear shake.

That strike just now had placed a tremendous burden on the Purple Comet Spear. If it wasn't for the battle spirit attached to it, then he feared it wouldn't have been able to pierce through her.

It had to be known Feng Shen, Lan Xin, Duanmu Qun, and High Lord Cloud Demon were all Holy Land descendants or Skysplit Tower High Lords; all of them were unbelievably rich and influential people. The weapons they used were all low-grade heaven-step treasures, around the same quality as that of Xuan Wuji's. As for Lin Ming, the Purple Comet Spear in his hand was only a peak high-grade earth-step treasure. In such a high intensity fight, piercing through the hard corpse devil's neck had been very difficult.

"These corpse devils' bodies are too hard. If I didn't have my battle spirit then even I wouldn't be able to do anything!"

Lin Ming frowned. These corpse devils' bodies, after being tempered with infernal energy over tens of thousands of years, had already reached a degree of hardness at the same level as a low-grade heaven-step treasure. Duanmu Qun's attacks hadn't been able to break through the corpse devil's defense because the difficulty of that was the same as destroying an entire heaven-step treasure.

"Ahh!"

At this time, a miserable scream sounded out. Lin Ming took a closer look and knit his eyebrows together. The one who was injured was Blackstone. Just now, as everyone was collectively attacking the corpse devils, this fellow had hidden in the back. But now the other two corpse devils had attacked him.

Blackstone was also a Holy Land descendant, he was not some common genius of his generation. As the two corpse devils attacked him from both sides, he abruptly twisted his body, thinking he had escaped the attack, but the strike had actually managed to scratch his left arm.

The corpse devil's green claws could break apart even the hardest defenses. The claw directly tore apart Blackstone's protective demon essence and scraped the flesh!

Even though this was a minor wound, Blackstone's expression suddenly changed. He helplessly watched on as the flesh of his left arm began to corrode away at a speed visible to the naked eye. The tendrils of pain that spread out caused his face to twist in agony, drops of cold sweat dripping down his body!

"Cut it off!"

Duanmu Qun's pupils shrank. At that time, he couldn't bother to ask why Blackstone didn't join in the attack just now. His figure flashed and he immediately appeared in front of Blackstone, his sword already falling down!

"No!!!"

Blackstone whimpered and writhed, wanting to stop this strike. But Duanmu Qun's sword was too fast. With a flash of sword light, a bloody light shined in response. A bloody left arm flew out in the air, completely corroded by corpse poison in midair and becoming nothing but white bones.

What a ghastly corpse poison!

As Lin Ming saw this, he felt his scalp tingle with horror!

"Ahhhhhh!"

Blackstone cried out in anger, pain, and misery. To a martial artist, the value of an arm was obvious!

In this world, there were many top miracle medicines that were able to regrow limbs. But, these medicines could only speed up the growth of a new arm that had never been tempered.

This new limb would be weak, with low defense. If one wished to train it to the strength of the other arm then that was impossible.

In other words, Blackstone's left arm would forever be his weakness!

As Duanmu Qun saw this, he could only shake his head. All of this had been brought on by Blackstone himself.

Blackstone was the weakest amongst everyone present. He never thought of joining in with Duanmu Qun and the others in their hopeless battle to begin with. From the very start he had planned on them rushing in and then running away in the chaos. But he didn't think that Lin Ming would appear and reverse the battle situation with a single spear strike. Instead, it was him that had been attacked from the back by the pincer attacks of two corpse devils.

"Attack together, we'll finish one off first! Divert their attention and allow Lin Ming to be the main attack!" Duanmu Qun rapidly judged the situation on the battlefield. After these few exchanges of moves, he discovered that although these corpse devils had amazing defense, terrifying striking power, and were also fast, they still had one fatal weakness. That was that their intelligence was low and their responses were slow!

Otherwise, these four corpse devils would have coordinated their attacks, and the ones injured wouldn't be just Blackstone.

Feng Shen, Lan Xin and High Lord Cloud Demon spoke no further. They flourished the swords and spears in their hands, creating a weave of sharp light that covered the green-haired corpse devil.

But, that green-haired corpse devil had already plunged into a state of rabid craziness. It ignored Feng Shen, Lan Xin, and the rest, desperately rushing towards Lin Ming, a manic and savage light in its eyes as it vowed to rip Lin Ming to shreds!

Lin Ming eyes flashed with a grim light. The battle spirit in his spiritual sea fused onto the Purple Comet Spear. At the same time, he completely opened the Heretical God Force and burned the blood of the Ancient Phoenix.

With a burst of spear light, Lin Ming stepped forwards, the Purple Comet Spear in his hands howling like an azure dragon!

Chi!

The Purple Comet Spear easily thrust through the green-haired corpse devil's neck once more. With a twist of the spear, the spear swept towards the direction opposite last time. With a sound of screeching metal, the other half of the green-haired corpse devil's neck was cut off!

The entire female corpse devil's neck was severed, its head flying high into the sky. Its listless body took a few more steps forwards before plopping onto the ground!

As Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, Feng Shen, and High Lord Cloud Demon saw this, they were all shocked speechless. From start to end, none of them managed to play any significant role; in fact, none of them had even been able to injure the green-haired female corpse demon, and their attempts at distraction had failed.

By himself, Lin Ming had killed off that green-haired corpse devil in two strikes!

This striking power, just how freakishly abnormal was it!?!?

Chapter 650 – Great Lucky Chance

Chapter 650 – Great Lucky Chance

…

…

…

Lin Ming took a deep breath and held the Purple Comet Spear steady, the spearpoint still trembling.

To use the Purple Comet Spear to pierce through the green-haired female corpse devil was the same as using a peak earth-step treasure to ruin a heaven-step treasure; this was entirely due to the added striking power from his battle spirit!

Lin Ming's battle spirit was currently at the bronze level. In the future when it grew, it would become even more terrifying. The battle spirit was well known as the mightiest attack, this reputation was not unearned.

As the other three corpse devils saw this, they let out increasingly savage roars and ignored everyone else, all of them simultaneously rushing towards Lin Ming!

Facing the concurrent attacks of three corpse devils, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a keen light. He flicked his fingers, and a battle spirit-infused Divine Demon Steel Needle howled forth!

The power of thunder was a force that most constrained ghosts and evil spirits. With the added support of the battle spirit, the might of this thunder grew to yet another level!

Chi-la!

The Divine Demon Steel Needle sank into the body of a corpse devil, causing thick arcs of electricity to shoot out. The corpse devil trembled and then fell to the floor. Although it wasn't severely injured, this still allowed Lin Ming to face two instead of three.

With his feet stepping atop Golden Roc Shattering the Void, Lin Ming suddenly accelerated. Take the first strike and take control of the battle!

His figure seemed to teleport in front of a corpse devil. True essence erupted from his body, revolving to the limit as the spear in his hand came smashing down!

At this moment, Lin Ming had no intention of hiding even the least bit of his strength. Facing three corpse devils at once, he had to maintain the utmost caution and guard. Although his protective true essence and bodily defensive power were strong, he still couldn't allow his skin to be scratched even the littlest bit. Once his skin was broken, that terrifying corpse poison would drill into his body. Lin Ming didn't believe he would be able to resist that at all!

Peng!

The Purple Comet Spear came slashing down like a whip. With the spear shaft's flexibility reinforced by the battle spirit, he directly smashed apart a corpse devil's chest. The corpse devil was like a ragdoll as it was pounded backwards hundreds of feet by Lin Ming's spear!

At the same time, the other corpse devil's claw was reaching towards Lin Ming. But, as that corpse devil's claws approached, its speed suddenly drastically slowed, as if it were mired in mud!

In a situation where Lin Ming had just struck with his spear, he still managed to pull out his spear and strike at the other corpse devil!

In other words, in an instant, Lin Ming had made two spear strikes!

Bang!

With an explosive sound, the second corpse devil was smashed backwards, sent flying away by Lin Ming's spear!

With three corpse devils rushing towards Lin Ming at once, one had its body paralyzed by electricity, and the other two were smashed away by Lin Ming's spear one at a time. As the other five people saw this they were all shocked. Was this even human?

If this striking power was used upon a person's body, it would shatter their body and break everything within them into pieces; who could still block this?

"Die!"

Lin Ming turned his spear and pointed towards that corpse devil that was paralyzed by the power of thunder. The power of the Heretical God Force and Eight Inner Hidden Gates erupted together. Lin Ming's true essence seemed to rage around him like a roiling inferno, his long hair recklessly waving in the air.

Penetrating Rainbow!

A spear light shot through the void. Fire and thunder intertwine and energy violently exploded. The distorted space maze was split asunder even as Lin Ming's spear pierced through that corpse devil's chest!

Bang!

It was like a meteor had struck the ground. The terrifying blast of energy cracked earth, sending chunks of dirt flying into the skies with abandon. Fog and crushed stone rolled up in a wave hundreds of feet high as it surged outwards. As the other five people saw the terrifying impact of these shockwaves, all of them began summoning their true essence to resist it!

Fog and dirt began falling back to the ground. Where the corpse devil had been, there was now a massive gaping hole in the earth hundreds of feet deep. The corpse devil was completely buried within this earth, its fate unknown.

"How fearful!" Seeing this sight, High Lord Cloud Demon paled. This was far too terrifying of an attack. Just the shockwaves had this much strength behind them!

He thought that after Lin Ming broke through to Revolving Core, he'd have a comprehensive combat strength around that of Duanmu Qun. But now, it seemed that if their strength was placed in front of Lin Ming, any one of them would just be a joke.

What the hell? How could this boy's striking power be so ridiculously powerful?

High Lord Cloud Demon and Duanmu Qun glanced at each other, seeing the deep horror and amazement in the other's eyes; this had already surpassed the scope of their understanding.

Lin Ming gently landed several hundred feet away. As he held the Purple Comet Spear in his hands, his expression was tranquil. The battle spirit truly hadn't disappointed him. Even though the corpse devil's body was as tough as refined gold, Lin Ming's spear had still torn it apart. Even if that corpse devil was still alive somewhere in that pit, it wouldn't be too great of a threat.

As the other two corpse devils saw this, an instinctual fear was born in their hearts. They hesitated, not sure if they should continue fighting. But at this moment, Lin Ming's feet stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void once more, and his figure faded, seeming as if he were teleporting through the air!

A spear thrust forth, like an azure rainbow shooting through the heavens!

Peng!

The corpse devil fundamentally wasn't able to even react before Lin Ming stabbed into it, sending it flying back and causing its chest to collapse. As the other corpse devil saw this, it growled out and turned around to escape!

The surrounding five people all gulped. These corpse devils had low intelligence and lived mainly based on their instincts. Still, after this brief fight the last remaining one had begun to flee. From this, Lin Ming's terrifying strength could be imagined!

"Lin Ming, chase it!" Demonshine's voice sounded out in Lin Ming's mind.

"Mm?" Lin Ming was startled. At this time, chasing that corpse devil was a completely unwise move. In this chaotic space, once he entered into a difference section of the space maze, all of that effort he put into passing through those several dozen miles outwards would be wasted.

"Chase it! That fellow must have some good stuff!" Demonshine urged. Although the corpse devil had a slow reaction time, it wasn't slow by any means. In a short period of time, it had already rushed very far away. If it ran out of sight, it would be basically impossible to catch up in this distorted space energy field.

Lin Ming fiercely grit his teeth, grasped the Purple Comet Spear, and gave chase!

As the other five people saw this they were bewildered. What was Lin Ming doing? Was he actually thinking of chasing that corpse devil?

Damn it!

Ack! At this time, the top priority was obviously to escape from this 1000 mile forbidden zone! What was the point of chasing down this corpse devil and killing it!?

In this 1000 mile forbidden zone, one had to constantly analyze the surroundings while being surrounded by dangers on all sounds. Wasn't chasing this corpse devil the same as committing suicide?

As the other people complained in their hearts, they had no other choice. At this time, Lin Ming was their haven. If he followed, then the others would have to follow without hesitation. Following Lin Ming was the only hope they had to make it out of this dreadful land alive. Without Lin Ming they were over with!

Feng Shen was the first to run forwards. He had absolute belief in Lin Ming. Regardless of what Lin Ming did, he had to have his reasons. There was no need to suspect Lin Ming's methods, because if anyone did, that meant they were wrong!

Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and the rest followed right after. Blackstone frowned, "What is Lin Ming doing? He's just deliberately stirring up trouble!"

Duanmu Qun glared at Blackstone with disgust, not bothering to reason with him. He only coldly said, "If you don't know then don't ask. If you have the ability to make it out of here yourself then go ahead and leave!"

"You..." Blackstone's words died in this throat. He was left speechless. He certainly had to follow Lin Ming, he simply had no other choice. Moreover, what happened just now was his own fault so he didn't dare say anything more.

The corpse devil madly ran away. Its speed was about the same as Blackstone, Feng Shen, and the rest's. With Lin Ming's speed, he just had to shrink the space underneath his feet to catch up, but he purposefully reduced his speed so he could maintain a distance of several hundred feet.

The corpse devil's mad rush wasn't in a straight path. Rather, it frequently took corners, curved around, and took sudden lefts and rights. Lin Ming steadfastly followed. No matter where it went, he would follow, with Duanmu Qun and the rest not even daring to go half a step off astray. Everyone was well aware of just how strange this 1000 mile forbidden zone was. Once someone became lost here, then this would also become their burial ground!

The corpse devil brought Lin Ming along for a half hour chase. At this time, a black mountain suddenly appeared in front of them. There seemed to be a strange spatial distortion around this mountain that meant one didn't see it until they were just 1000 feet away!

As the corpse devil saw this mountain appear, its speed became faster. It roared and quickly vanished into the mountain.

“Chase it!” Demonshine shouted.

Without hesitation, Lin Ming also rushed in.

Once he stepped into this mountain, Lin Ming felt as if he had entered a completely separate dimension. The corpse devil disappeared, and the endless dreary gray lands that surrounded them also disappeared, replaced by a pitch black space.

“Take the right path and go straight. I left a special mark on that corpse devil earlier, there’s no way that it can escape my palm! And, here is probably… hehe, Lin Ming, we hit the jackpot!”

Jackpot?

Lin Ming’s mind stirred. He didn’t ask the details but said, “Let’s wait for the others.”

As his voice fell, Feng Shen, Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and the rest also rushed into this dark space.

“Follow me!” Lin Ming simply said. Without further ado, he launched his movement technique and rapidly ran to the right with the five others following him.

With Demonshine’s instructions, Lin Ming ran in seven or eight circles in the dark. Then, after he stepped through a strangely twisted space barrier, light appeared before him.

At this time, he discovered that he had entered into a cave. Within this cave, there were several sarcophaguses. As for that corpse devil, it crawled into a corner of the cave, sending out intimidating roars towards Lin Ming!

Lin Ming calmly took out his Purple Comet Spear and pointed it towards the corpse devil. Against a single corpse devil, there simply weren’t any problems.

“Lin Ming, this corpse devil is already frightened by you. Although it’s trying to intimidate you, the truth is that this is all an act. If you make a channel for it then it will immediately escape.”

“Oh?”

Lin Min moved to the side. In this 1000 mile forbidden zone, he didn’t want to fight in any unnecessary battles. It was best if he could retain his maximum strength so that he would have a great chance of living through the next disaster that happened here, not to mention that killing this corpse devil gave him absolutely no advantages at all.

After Lin Ming moved to the side, Feng Shen and the rest also understood as soon as they caught up and hurried to the side. Lin Ming may not fear this corpse devil, but they were different. In this narrow cave, if Lin Ming wasn’t here, then it was possible they would become this corpse devil’s supper.

Seeing Lin Ming allow it an opening to leave, the corpse devil roared several more times, its rotten eyes shining as it glared at Lin Ming. It cautiously scooted towards this path, and when it felt it was safe enough, suddenly rushed across the cave. Then, as if it had disappeared in space, it simply vanished.

After the corpse devil disappeared, Lin Ming asked, “Demonshine, just what kind of place is this?”

“Haha, Lin Ming! You young boy, we are rich now! I thought that these corpse devils were stronger than they should be. These corpse devils aren’t those higher level monsters that come from the depths of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Rather, they are formed within the 1000 mile forbidden zone after High Lords or others die here and then have their corpse possessed by evil spirits. A corpse devil could use infernal energy to temper their corpse and make it unbelievably durable, but not to this degree. Those four corpse devils just now should not have had a defensive power equal to a heaven-step treasure. If those things just relied on the infernal energy in the Eternal Demon Abyss to temper themselves, they wouldn’t be able to accomplish this even in 100,000 years! So, I suspect that they must have some special treasure to temper themselves through body transformation. And, my guess was correct! It is all right here!”

Chapter 651 – Heaven-step Demon God Bone

Chapter 651 – [Heaven-step Demon God Bone]

Chapter title is a spoiler, hover over it to read it now or see it at the bottom

…

…

…

“Special body transformation treasures? What sort of resources would that be?” Lin Ming’s interest was piqued and he couldn’t help but ask. As someone who was a dual body and law cultivator, he was certainly interested.

“Hehe, just open up those sarcophaguses and take a look inside.” Demonshine excitedly said as he licked his doggy tongue. This old dog was easily roused by things like valuable resources.

There was a total of four sarcophaguses. These sarcophaguses seemed carved from obsidian and there were also strange and simple patterns carved onto them; they appeared to have passed through an immeasurably long time.

Lin Ming stood in front of the sarcophaguses. After not finding any array formations, he asked Demonshine, “Is this something from tens of thousands of years ago?”

“Hey, it might be more than several tens of thousands of years. These sarcophaguses should have been used to bury some important people and this cave was most likely their grave. But, it was just far too long ago, and now that so much time passed, who knows what this place was originally like. In short, this tomb was later captured by those four corpse devils and these sarcophaguses also became their lair.”

“Oh? Those four corpse devils weren’t formed by the bodies left behind here?”

“Ha! How is that possible? Even if it were a top level martial artist like the Eightfall War Emperor, their corpse wouldn’t last for so many tens of thousands of years. Their bones should have decayed or, most likely, condensed into Demon God Bones now. Perhaps the reason that those four corpse devils were attracted to this tomb and decided to settle here was because they were attracted by the energy of those Demon God Bones. Lin Ming, go and open the sarcophaguses.”

“Alright!” Lin Ming agreed. He put away the Purple Comet Spear and bent over, carefully pushing open the first sarcophagus.

With a rumbling sound, an incomparably thick infernal energy spilled out from the sarcophagus. Feng Shen, Duanmu Qun, and Lan Xin’s eyes lit up. Behind them, Blackstone and High Lord Cloud Demon were also startled, their eyes revealing disbelief and excitement.

At this time, everyone realized that this was a massive treasure trove!

Everyone craned over to see that the sarcophagus was filled with fist-sized black glass balls, over ten in total. They were all high quality Demon God Bones!

Demon God Bones… so many!!!!

Blackstone gulped, nearly drooling as his eyes flashing with greed and desire.

High Lord Cloud Demon licked his lips. It had to be known that an ordinary pigeon egg-sized Demon God Bone was already considered very precious. One as large as a chicken’s egg was even rarer. There were very few that were as large as a fist, not to mention that looking at the quality of the energy from these Demon God Bones, they were likely all earth-step Demon God Bones!

More than 10 fist-sized earth-step Demon God Bones, their value could be imagined!

All of the Demon God Bones that High Lord Cloud Demon had ever possessed in his life, even when added together, couldn't compare to even half of a single one of these Demon God Bones!

It was said that the Eternal Demon Abyss was chock full of lucky chances. This was a truly well-deserved reputation! Moreover, this was within the 1000 mile forbidden zone!

"Boy, this is a pretty good sign. Just this first sarcophagus and there are more than 10 low-grade earth-step Demon God Bones. I guess there should be around 30 jins total. But the better stuff is still awaiting us!"

"Mm."

Lin Ming nodded and continued to open the second sarcophagus.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The second sarcophagus was much heavier than the first one. After opening it, a blazing golden light flooded out, illuminating the entire stone cave.

Lin Ming peered into the sarcophagus. Within it, he was surprised to find something that looked like a palm-sized golden plate. He felt that it must be the fruit of some plant; the fragrance was overwhelming.

"This is..."

Lin Ming was stunned. This fruit contained an incomparably extraordinary energy. Just smelling the scent it emitted made him feel relaxed and breezy, as if every cell of his body was being energized.

Behind Lin Ming, everyone else's eyes had gone perfectly round. Even a fool could see that this golden disc was much more precious than the previous earth-step Demon God Bones.

"Hey! Wow, this is incredible! That's a profound gold divine fruit! It is a top quality heavenly treasure that is useful for tempering the body! This is even this Saint's first time seeing such a thing! Boy, your luck is ridiculous. This profound gold divine fruit is a very mystical type of plant. It’s similar to the mushroom from the mortal world. Those mushrooms can grow on dead wood, but this profound gold divine fruit specifically grows on a Demon God Bone. In other words, it is the mushroom formed from a Demon God Bone. It needs 10,000 years to germinate, 10,000 years to flower, and 10,000 years to produce a fruit. Once the fruit is born, all of the essence within the plant is condensed into that single fruit, becoming the profound gold divine fruit. After picking it, it won’t spoil for even 10,000 years afterwards!”

“It’s a mushroom that grows from a Demon God Bone?” Lin Ming was shocked. This world was truly vast, all sorts of strange things were possible. As it was said, dead wood could not be carved, but the essence of dead wood could be used to breed ginseng, black tiger palm mushrooms, spiritual bamboo, and all sorts of other precious materials and herbs. If there was a lucky set of coincidences, then dead wood could even breed 1000 year old lingzhi, an amazing medicinal material.

Then… what if that dead wood was replaced with a Demon God Bone?

Compared to dead wood, the essence of a Demon God Bone was trillions upon trillions of times superior in both quality and quantity. If this was used to breed a heavenly treasure, the value of this treasure could be imagined!

Demonshine said, “This profound gold divine fruit cannot be bred from just an ordinary Demon God Bone. It would require at least a high-grade earth-step Demon God Bone, and only with divine providence would the profound gold divine fruit tree be born. The tree would only be a foot high and would need to absorb all of the Demon God Bone’s essence in order to germinate. Then, it would have to absorb other Demon God Bones as nutrition, growing for another 30,000 years before its fruit would be born. You can imagine just how difficult this is! Compared to this profound gold divine fruit, even the Nirvana Dragon Root can’t be considered much…”

Hearing Demonshine give such a high evaluation, Lin Ming took a deep breath. But then, he thought of something. He asked, a bit puzzled, “If this profound gold divine fruit is so precious, then how come those four corpse devils didn’t swallow it yet?”

“They probably wished to, but as they say, extremes give birth to extremes. This profound gold divine fruit is bred within a very thick yin aura of the infernal energy and death energy here, and the Demon God Bone is also an extreme yin treasure, however… the profound gold divine fruit is actually an extreme yang and extreme light attributed body transformation treasure. With the cultivation of these four corpse devils, they would probably explode from within if they tried to eat this fruit. If they wanted to eat it, they would still need several tens of thousands of years of further cultivation before they could think of attempting it. Still, just by defending the profound gold divine fruit and absorbing the essence energy that it releases, their harvests would still be tremendous! If I’m correct, then the root of this profound gold divine fruit has already been eaten by those four corpse devils, otherwise, how could they have bodies with durability comparable to a heaven-step treasure?”

“I see! So that’s how it is…” Lin Ming suddenly realized. After the profound gold divine fruit was born, the energy within the roots would naturally be much weaker. If the corpse devils ate the root instead, that was still at the level where they could withstand it.

“What a pity!”

Lin Ming regretfully shook his head. For such a miraculous body transformation medicine like this, even the root was a priceless treasure. Yet, it was eaten up by those four corpse devils.

His thoughts flashed and he asked, “If I had those corpse devils’ bodies, could I refine the medicine efficacy of the profound gold divine fruit’s root from them?”

Lin Ming was only thoughtlessly asking but Demonshine had a scandalized expression after hearing it, “Boy, you’re quite the funny one. The medicinal efficacy has already fused into those corpse devils’ bodies, so even if you refine them there won’t be much left over. Not just that, but it would take a high level alchemist to do so. Do you really think that all those piddling losers of the Holy Demon Continent and Sky Spill Continent have the ability to do this?!"

"Mm..." Lin Ming nodded, bit embarrassed. He was only casually asking anyway, if it didn't work then that was fine too. He let out a deep breath and then moved towards the third sarcophagus.

As the other five people saw this they couldn't help but gulp. Today, all the sights they had seen were just too impactful on them.

Even if it were a Holy Land descendant like Feng Shen and Lan Xin, the total amount of resources they had used from birth until now only added up to a single Demon God Bone from the first sarcophagus!

The third sarcophagus' cover rumbled opened and a thick burst of infernal energy burst out, no less than that of the second sarcophagus. As for Duanmu Qun and the rest who were standing behind Lin Ming, even though they could feel this extremely potent energy, they were too numbed to be fazed by any of this. Even if some monster jumped out, they still wouldn't be surprised.

However, after the third sarcophagus fully opened, all of their eyes still went as wide as full moons. In the massive third sarcophagus, there was only a pigeon egg-sized green glass bead. Although it was small, the energy inherent within it was more than all of the Demon God Bones of the first sarcophagus added up together!

At this time, Duanmu Qun and the rest, who had never seen this object before, could already deduce what it was.

This was... a heaven-step Demon God Bone!

This was a legendary treasure! According to rumors, not even a generation ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes had ever obtained a heaven-step Demon God Bone!

“Boy, I have to say your luck is just too good! This is a low-grade heaven-step Demon God Bone!”

“Of this low-grade heaven-step Demon God Bone and the profound gold divine fruit, which one is more valuable?” Lin Ming asked.

“The profound gold divine fruit. As long as you are strong enough, you will be able to find a low-grade heaven-step Demon God Bone here if you put in the time and effort. In fact, you can even find many of them But as for a profound gold divine fruit, that is a treasure born from the stars aligning just right. Without a great lucky chance you would never be able to find something like this.”

Lin Ming nodded. Although the profound gold divine fruit was more precious, to the martial artists of the Holy Demon Continent, they would probably value the heaven-step Demon God Bone more. The legends said that a heaven-step Demon Cloud Bone was an absolute stepping stone to entering the Emperor boundary, and the truth was probably not far off. Especially to someone like High Lord Cloud Demon whose future talent hovered at the precipice of becoming an Emperor level powerhouse. If he could obtain a heaven-step Demon God Bone, the chances of him becoming an Emperor level powerhouse would rise astronomically.

As Lin Ming thought this, he glanced over at High Lord Cloud Demon. And, indeed, he saw naked greed and thirst clouding his eyes!

With his lucky chance to becoming an Emperor level powerhouse right in front of him, how could he not be tempted! If he missed out on this then he would probably never become an Emperor level powerhouse!

Lin Ming didn’t bother with High Lord Cloud Demon, he continued moving onto the fourth sarcophagus!

“I wonder just what is in this fourth sarcophagus…” Lin Ming thought out loud.

“Haha, maybe there’s a medium-grade heaven-step Demon God Bone inside!” Demonshine happily teased. He was in very high spirits right now. Although these were mostly body transformation and essence gathering system treasures that he couldn’t use, it would still allow Lin Ming to increase his own strength. If Lin Ming became stronger, then his chances of helping Demonshine restore his divine soul were that much higher.

Lin Ming bent over and pushed hard against the cover of the fourth sarcophagus, opening it.

With a rumbling sound the fourth sarcophagus opened. However, as he looked inside, he was completely stunned.

Chapter 651 – Heaven-step Demon God Bone

Chapter 652 – Goddess

Chapter 652 – Goddess

…

…

…

It wasn't just Lin Ming who was completely stunned – even the five others behind him were petrified.

Before this, they had seen the previous sarcophaguses that had low-grade earth-step Demon God Bones, a priceless treasure that was the profound gold divine fruit, and then the heaven-step Demon God Bone that not even the rulers of the Blood Slaughter Steppes had ever obtained.

It was fair to say that no matter what was in the fourth sarcophagus, they would already be numbed to it. But they absolutely never thought that it would be what it was.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and completely shoved open the sarcophagus' lid. Looking inside, he was left speechless for a long time.

Lin Ming had imagined what could be in the fourth sarcophagus. If it were a trove of medium-grade or high-grade heaven-step Demon God Bones, or even if it were empty, he wouldn't be too surprised.

But he never imagined that in this fourth sarcophagus, there would actually be a woman lying down!

A peerless woman!

Her black hair fell down like a waterfall of night, her crystal clear skin seemed to be crystallized from the purest essence of the stars and moon, and her unrivalled features seemed carved from the finest jade.

She didn't even seem like a woman that could be born within the world, rather, she was like an ultimate sense of aesthetics formed from the energy of heaven and earth.

The woman lay down in the sarcophagus as if she had fallen asleep. One even suspected that her long and tender eyelashes would tremble, and then she would open them, revealing brilliant eyes like liquid moonlight!

'Just what is this… heavens, could she be a young woman from tens of thousands ago? Or perhaps a Supreme Elder of ancient times?'

Lin Ming found all of this incredible. The young woman in front of him seemed to be in her twenties at the most, not much older than he was. Moreover, beside this young woman, she had also been buried with her weapon and it was even a spear!

However, this spear had broken off and all that was left over was less than half, and even this small portion seemed immeasurably damaged. Once a treasure was damaged, it would be hard for it to resist the erosion that accompanied the passing of time. After tens or even hundreds of thousands of years, this half of a spear already appeared far too rusted.

It could be imagined that she once used this spear on the great battlefield, and, after a fierce battle, her weapon was damaged and even her life slowly faded away…

It turned out that she used the spear…

Lin Ming found this astonishing. In his experience so far, young women tended to use weapons like soft swords; it was rare to see one using such a mighty long spear!

Subconsciously, he wanted to touch that spear that had rusted to the point where it seemed as if it could break apart at any moment. But at this time, Demonshine's frantic voice sounded out in his mind, "Don't move!"

Lin Ming drew back his hands like lightning, taking deep breaths. Yes, his actions just now had been crude and reckless. In this incomparably mysterious Eternal Demon Abyss, any reckless action could invite a disaster upon everyone here.

Demonshine hesitated for a moment before saying, "This girl is clearly dead, but her body seems to be overflowing with life force. In my knowledge, this is really… I, I have no idea…"

Demonshine shook his head. When he followed the Demon Emperor within the Realm of the Gods, he could still have been considered quite a character there. But the Realm of the Gods was far too vast. Compared to those true hidden powerhouses within the Realm of the Gods, the Demon Emperor wasn't even worthy of being an ant. It had to be known that when the Demon Emperor joined the siege of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands so many years ago, there had been 10,000 characters that were all at the same rank – if not higher – than the Demon Emperor.

The Demon Emperor was in no way a pinnacle existence within the Realm of the Gods. As his familiar, Demonshine's knowledge was even more limited.

"This corpse has probably laid here for at least several tens of thousands of years. For all this time, she hasn't decayed at all. Instead, her body is full of exuberant vitality and she seems to have fallen asleep. This phenomenon has already gone beyond my scope of understanding…" Demonshine shook his head. It was very rare to see the usually boastful and proud Demonshine sigh in such a depressed manner.

Lin Ming looked at this young woman's corpse. Although he didn't know why she lay here for so many tens of thousands of years, what Lin Ming was absolutely certain of was that this woman was a terrifying character before her death. She had been at least at the same level as the Saintess of the Verdant Feather Holy Land, if not higher!

Perhaps after one's strength reached a certain boundary, their body could still exist like an immortal idol for hundreds of thousands of years after death. Who knew?

"Brother Lin, just… just what is this?" Duanmu Qun stared at the young woman in the sarcophagus. He had to admit that this woman was the most perfect being that he had ever lain his eyes on. Even knowing that she had died, her unrivalled beauty still stirred his heart.

The Fey were born with a natural desire to pursue beauty and beautiful things. As Lan Xin stepped forwards, she also sighed as she saw this young woman. How could such a perfect woman die like this?

"I have no idea. She should have been one of the original masters of this tomb. Her corpse hasn't decayed for 100,000 years… the boundary that she has reached has surpassed any of our imaginations."

Lin Ming looked deeply at the woman one last time and then decisively closed the sarcophagus.

"Mm? What do you plan on…" Duanmu Qun said, a bit startled.

"Forget it. Let her rest in peace." Lin Ming shook his head.

"You plan on giving up this woman's corpse?" Demonshine asked, a bit surprised. Not mentioning just what use this woman's corpse would have in the future, just any object on her body would be a colossal fortune, yet Lin Ming hadn't even searched her, instead directly giving up on the body. This required a very strong will. The reason that Demonshine had prevented Lin Ming from touching that broken spear was because he wanted him to study it first without rashly acting out. He hadn't intended for Lin Ming to completely abandon this sarcophagus.

Lin Ming said, "Since Senior died she has soundly slept here. Opening her sarcophagus is already disturbing her peace. If I were to search her body for treasure then that would make me no different from a grave robber desecrating the graves of the dead and blaspheming their lives. I don't want to draw the grievances and punishments of heaven upon me. Moreover, she was likely a remarkable and powerful ancient king. In her life she had limitless glory, and if in her death her grave were to be desecrated, then that would be far too sad.

“Also, the Eternal Demon Abyss is an extremely strange place and there is a powerful force here. If I do something so wicked that offends the heavens, then I might suffer the curse. Those four corpse devils stayed in this ancient tomb for so long, at least thousands of years, and yet none of them dared to even touch this sarcophagus. There must be something that made them fear this grave and stop, allowing her to sleep peacefully here.....”

As Lin Ming spoke, he arranged several array symbols around the sarcophagus and sealed it away.

Demonshine nodded. Indeed, those corpse devils loved to eat things that were full of life force. Yet that young woman in the sarcophagus and had lain there, her clothes neatly ordered and her hair smooth and undisturbed. Obviously, after she was buried, there had never been anyone or anything that had dared to move her. There must be many reasons for this. Or perhaps, those corpse devils were scared by the aura of someone that had once been a peerless powerhouse...

When the array symbols fell onto the sarcophagus, they completely sealed it away. As Blackstone saw this, he opened his mouth but ended up not saying anything. He was reluctant to give up on whatever treasures might be in that coffin, but he didn’t have the qualifications right now to openly refute Lin Ming’s decisions.

“Alright!”

After Lin Ming completely sealed the sarcophagus, he turned towards the other martial artists and casually said, “So about the distribution of treasure...”

As these words were spoken, Blackstone and High Lord Cloud Demon’s hearts rose into their throats. The distribution of this lucky chance!

That was the most important matter!

Of these three sarcophagus, casually taking out something from any of them would be a priceless treasure. Especially that golden disc-shaped fruit and that heaven-step Demon God Bone. Those were treasures that even the ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes would go crazy over!

“In total, there is one heaven-step Demon God Bone, a golden fruit, and 16 low-grade earth-step Demon God Bones. I want the heaven-step Demon God Bone, the golden fruit, and half of the low-grade earth-step Demon God Bones. You may divide the rest amongst yourselves.”

Lin Ming’s casual words seemed to rip Blackstone’s heart out. F*ck! This fellow was far too sadistic!

In other words, that meant there were only eight low-grade earth-step Demon God Bones to divide among five of them. As for him, he was the weakest of the group. It would already be excellent if he could be apportioned even one!

Entering the 1000 mile forbidden zone, experienced countless life or death dangers, and yet all he got for this was just a single earth-step Demon God Bone? Blackstone couldn’t accept this!

High Lord Cloud Demon also grimaced. With his strength, he could be given two earth-step Demon God Bones. But, a low-grade earth-step Demon God Bone was mainly used for four-star Demon Kings to break into the quasi Emperor realm. If he truly wished to break through that Emperor level bottleneck, then the use of a low-grade earth-step Demon God Bone was limited. Even one or two low-grade earth-step Demon God Bones wouldn’t guarantee that he could break through to the Emperor realm.

High Lord Cloud Demon grit his teeth. He stared at the heaven-step Demon God Bone in the third sarcophagus, his eyes flashing with pure avarice and unwillingness.

This Demon God Bone was just too important to him! With this lucky chance in front of him, if he missed out on it then he would never have any hope for his future!

“Lin Ming… your portion is a bit too much…” High Lord Cloud Demon was dissatisfied, but he tried to ease his tone down as respectfully as he could. At this time, he didn’t dare to cause trouble with Lin Ming.

He felt that Lin Ming had suggested this distribution because he was willing to bargain a little. If High Lord Cloud Demon didn’t fight for it, then it would settle like this. But if he did try to struggle a bit, then there might be some hope for him.

This heaven-step Demon God Bone could only be found through serendipity. At this time, now that he saw one, how could he give up so easily?

“Yes, ahem, Lin Ming, you are just too callous right now. You can eat the meat, but you should at least leave the soup for us. I’m not suggesting that the six of us equally divide the treasure. As long as I can have 10% of the treasure then I will be content. I entered into this 1000 mile forbidden zone, risked my life, lost my arm, paid such a great price, I should at least have a little bit of harvest.”

Blackstone echoed. Him mentioning 10% was only a high point he set so he could bargain with it. In truth, he only expected around 5% of the treasure. Now that he had lost an arm, he would no longer enjoy the status and treatment that he previously received in his Holy Land. In addition to his strength sharply dropping, his chances of breaking through to the Emperor level became even more dubious. If he could grasp this lucky chance in front of him, then his chances of breaking through to the Emperor level in the future would be much higher.

Feng Shen, Duanmu Qun and Lan Xin didn’t have much of an expression. Although it was true that they too desired the heaven-step Demon God Bone and that golden fruit, they were well aware that without Lin Ming, they wouldn’t even have their lives, much less treasure to divide. In truth, if Lin Ming wanted to take the entirety of the treasure for himself, there wasn’t any way they could object to that either.

Moreover, for them, if there weren't any surprises, they would be able to fully step foot into the Emperor level in the future. Because of this, their desire for the heaven-step Demon God Bone was not as intense as Blackstone and High Lord Cloud Demon's.

After listening to Blackstone's words, Lin Ming's lips curved in a caustic smile. Towards this sort of greedy clown, he simply didn't want to bother with him. If Blackstone had quietly accepted matters as they were then Lin Ming wouldn't mind bequeathing something onto him. But, now that he had to chirp up with his stupid suggestions, Lin Ming directly changed his mind.

Lin Ming coldly said, "Blackstone, I seem to remember that you once said that if I could take you out of here safely, you would give me everything within your spatial ring and you wouldn't keep anything at all. I think I remembered that correctly, right?"

With this light rebuttal, Blackstone was left speechless.

Chapter 653 – Murder

Chapter 653 – Murder

…

…

…

When Blackstone had been wallowing in despair, he had indeed said that if he could make it out of this land alive, he would give all of his wealth to Lin Ming. But at that time, Blackstone had been desperate to survive, so it wasn't strange that he would make such a promise in that situation.

Now he saw just how powerful Lin Ming really was. Not only had Lin Ming managed to find the method to leave this 1000 mile forbidden zone but his strength was indomitable. By himself, he had defeated the four corpse devils, making it seem that their chances of leaving here were much higher.

Under the constantly hanging threat of death, when a person was doing everything they could to survive, as long as they were tossed a rope they would be willing to give up all their wealth. But when that threat was gone, their heart would change and their greed would return. This was the debased nature of man. Moreover, with such a lucky chance in front of him, something so precious that could only be found through a stroke of fate, how could Blackstone not be moved?

After being rebutted by Lin Ming's words, Blackstone's bleak expression became even uglier. "Lin Ming… it's true that I said those words, it's just that… we entered the 1000 mile forbidden zone together and I risked my life this entire time. Although I wasn't the one to kill the enemies, I still managed to serve as a shield for you. At least, consider that I lost my arm…"

Blackstone hadn't even finished speaking when he was interrupted by Lin Ming. "You risked your life for me? Was I the one that pushed you into the 1000 mile forbidden zone? Was I the one who forced you to 'bring up the rear' and have your arm cut off?"

This series of rhetorical questions left Blackstone dumbfounded. Initially, the reason he had lost an arm was because he was too scared to rush towards the corpse devil.

At this time High Lord Cloud Demon butted in, "Young Hero Lin… I know that without you, none of us would be alive right now, let alone have a chance to obtain resources. It's just that… someone as majestic as you will inevitably become a Peerless Emperor in the future and have countless more resources. In fact, aren't all these resources not too effective for you? I don't think you'd be able to use everything. If this fist sized earth-step Demon God Bone would have a base value of one, then that heaven-step Demon God Bone would probably have a value of 40 to 50. I don't know what the golden fruit is, but it shouldn't be any worse than the heaven-step Demon God Bone, making it also worth 40 to 50. In addition with the 16 earth-step Demon God Bones, that is around a total of 100. You only gave the five of us eight earth-step Demon God Bones, so that is only 8% divided amongst the rest of us…"

"The truth is that I don't need that much. As long as I can have 1/3… no, ½ of the heaven-step Demon God Bone then that will be enough for me to break through the Emperor level bottleneck. I can make an oath right here that as long as I become an Emperor level powerhouse, I will remember this kindness for my entire life. When that time comes, if Young Hero Lin has any needs, I will work like a horse for you!"

High Lord Cloud Demon solemnly vowed, making swearing gestures with his hands.

Lin Ming was simply unmoved by this nonsense. His face was expressionless as he said, "It's true that I have a great number of lucky chances, and I could even say that this heaven-step Demon God Bone isn't too tempting to me. But, I have friends and family who also need to use them. The decisions I make, I will not change. Me willing to save you isn't because you are special or anything. Me leading you to leave this 1000 mile forbidden zone is already me being benevolent to you. As for lucky chances, why should I divide any of them with you?"

The reason that he helped rescue everyone was mainly because of Feng Shen and partly because of Lan Xin. Lin Ming regarded Feng Shen as a friend, and Lan Xin had also been a teammate of his, both of them having risked their lives in a squad. When Lin Ming had gone back to capture the demon bone, Lan Xin had sincerely advised him not to go for his own safety, showing true consideration for Lin Ming's welfare.

Although this was only a very light and simple friendship, Lin Ming placed a great deal of importance and emphasis in these relationships he had, no matter how faint they were. Before, the reason he had been willing to stop and wait for these people and even dividing them less than 10% of these resources, was all because he appreciated Feng Shen and Lan Xin and was willing to give them some face.

As for Blackstone and High Lord Cloud Demon, he was already being merciful by not instantly killing them. And they still wanted to take part of his lucky chance? Dream on!

In fact, if it wasn't for the fact that Lin Ming was planning on returning to the South Horizon Region right after this tour of the Eternal Demon Abyss, he would have already killed Blackstone and High Lord Cloud Demon right here and right now. Whether it was the profound gold divine fruit or the heaven-step Demon God Bone, both of these treasures were enough to make him a target of powerful forces once the news spread out.

"Young Hero Lin…" High Lord Cloud Demon wanted to say something, but as he saw Lin Ming's icy cold eyes glaring at him, he could only shut up and remain silent. He felt that once Lin Ming made a decision, he would not easily change it. He simply didn't have the power to bargain at all. He could only choose to accept this or have nothing at all.

As the weaker man, there was nothing he could do. He didn't doubt that if Lin Ming wanted to, he could kill all five of them.

High Lord Cloud Demon finally relinquished his desire towards the heaven-step Demon God Bone, and was planning on getting two earth-step Demon God Bones for himself before going back. At least something was better than nothing.

But, at this moment, a voice suddenly resounded in his mind.

“Don’t you want to obtain a heaven-step Demon God Bone? Don’t you want to break through the Emperor level bottleneck?”

Who?

The sudden voice startled High Lord Cloud Demon. This voice appeared in his mind, and after hearing it, it didn’t sound like it came from any of the other five people here.

Could this be…

High Lord Cloud Demon’s eyes turned over to the fourth sarcophagus, his face paling. It couldn’t be her!

As this idea grew in his heart, a chill rose from the soles of his feet and traveled up his spine, shooting straight into the skies. He did want a heaven-step Demon God Bone, but he absolutely didn’t want to come into contact with this kind of ghostly being.

At this time, High Lord Cloud Demon also noticed Blackstone’s situation. Before, Blackstone had a very ugly complexion, but now he looked confused, his pupils losing focus as if he were in a trance.

“He also heard the voice?” High Lord Cloud Demon was shocked. Also, it appeared that Blackstone had already fallen into this trap!

At this moment, High Lord Cloud Demon suddenly discovered that it wasn’t just Blackstone that heard this voice, but also Feng Shen, Lan Xin, and Duanmu Qun. All of their complexions had changed. Among them, Duanmu Qun and Feng Shen still appeared lucid, but a trace of turmoil had appeared in Lan Xin’s eyes!

‘This is bad!’ High Lord Cloud Demon’s heart surged with a strong sense of unease. At this time, he remembered Lin Ming and quickly turned to look at him, but then, his field of vision suddenly turned into an endless white field. In the dim light, he could see a peerless powerhouse wearing armor, holding a divine weapon as he looked upon the world with contempt!

And this powerhouse's appearance was exactly the same as High Lord Cloud Demon's!

This was his appearance several hundred years from now after he became a Peerless Emperor!

"Peerless Emperor? My Peerless Emperor!?" This thought reverberated in High Lord Cloud Demon's mind. Then, he lost himself in illusion, forgetting what was happening now.

Many martial artists had a mental weakness. Once they suffered a soul attack or tried to make a breakthrough, this weakness would become their heart demon, struggling to swallow their spiritual sea.

High Lord Cloud Demon's heart demon was his obsessive desire to become an Emperor level powerhouse!

At this time, besides Lin Ming, the only one able to maintain their sanity was Duanmu Qun. But, his forehead was seeping with sweat and he had an extremely grim expression.

Feng Shen was second to Duanmu Qun. Although his strength was weaker, his heart was firm and he was able to maintain his consciousness. As for Lan Xin, High Lord Cloud Demon, and Blackstone, all three of them were completely entranced.

"Who is this?" Lin Ming's mind went cold. He grasped the Purple Comet Spear and maintained full alert. He own will was as firm as iron and he also had the battle spirit and Samsara martial intent; he was able to completely ignore this sort of soul attack.

He didn't even blink to destroy that illusion in his soul.

There weren't any signs of evil spirits around… could it be…

Lin Ming suddenly turned to look at the fourth sarcophagus!

Was it her!?

If it truly was her, then the consequences would be calamitous!

She had been an unbelievable existence. Even if she had died 100,000 years ago, her residual will was not something that Lin Ming could contend with.

But at this moment, Demonshine's voice sounded in his mind, "Lin Ming, do not panic. It is not that woman, no, it is the heaven-step Demon God Bone! I was negligent! A heaven-step Demon God Bone must have a mind of its own. How could it willingly be caught and eaten up by others?"

Demonshine's voice suddenly woke up Lin Ming! Demonshine had once said that a heaven-step Demon God Bone must have a consciousness and would be much more difficult to capture. In fact, even a top earth-step Demon God Bone would be intelligent. For instance when Lin Ming had caught the Blood Demon Bone from before, that demon bone was intelligent, and could tempt martial artists close to absorb their blood vitality.

So this was it!

Lin Ming let out a deep breath. If it was just the heaven-step Demon God Bone, then there wasn't a reason to dread it at all.

He took a step forwards, wanting to seal up the heaven-step Demon God Bone that was causing all this trouble. But at this moment, Blackstone let out a bellowing roar as he rushed towards Lin Ming!

The heavy sword in his hand swept out straight towards Lin Ming's neck!

Blackstone had been thoroughly controlled.

It was apparent that the heaven-step Demon God Bone feared Lin Ming so it had controlled Blackstone and made him attack.

Seeing this scene, Lin Ming coldly snorted, "Since it's like this, don't blame me!"

Towards someone like Blackstone, Lin Ming wouldn’t stay his hand for fear of harming him, or do something so stupid as withstanding Blackstone’s attacks while trying to suppress the heaven-step Demon God Bone.

If he was controlled because his mind was weak, who was to blame?

Grasping the Purple Comet Spear, the Heretical God Force opened. Lin Ming’s spear swept out!

Bang!

The heavy sword was struck away. Blackstone’s arm shook and his palm ruptured

In terms of striking power, he was no different from a baby in front of Lin Ming.

However, after the heavy sword was sent flying away, Blackstone still rushed towards Lin Ming, wanting to strangle him. His eyes were already a deep blood red.

Seeing this, Lin Ming sneered. His attack just now had contained his battle spirit. A battle spirit was invisible and intangible. It could crush all, including the divine soul, negative emotions, life force, heart demons, and everything else that was insubstantial.

Lin Ming had wanted to help Blackstone by destroying the heart demon that had invaded his spiritual sea, but his spear strike simply had no effect, Blackstone was still desperately trying to kill him at all cost. So, it seemed Blackstone really did hate him from the depths of his soul. This heart demon had galvanized the hatred in his heart and made him desperate to kill Lin Ming.

“You are hopeless!”

Lin Ming was expressionless as he thrust out the Purple Comet Spear!

This spear strike was infused with his battle spirit as well as the full power of the Heretical God Force.

Puff!

With the added sharpness from the battle spirit, Blackstone's protective demon essence and neck were both torn apart by Lin Ming's spear like paper, blood shooting out!

Chapter 654 – Peak of Ten Wings

Chapter 654 – Peak of Ten Wings

…

…

…

After Lin Ming killed Blackstone with a spear, Duanmu Qun's complexion changed. Out of everyone here besides Lin Ming, he was the most clear minded!

Even though Blackstone was a Holy Land descendant, Lin Ming had killed him with absolutely no qualms. His actions were ruthless and decisive!

Seeing that Lan Xin was also controlled, Duanmu Qun fell into a panic. What should he do? She might also be killed by Lin Ming!

Taking back the long spear, a stream of blood shot out and Blackstone's body shook and he took several steps back. His eyes were still blood red, his hands covering this neck as he stared at Lin Ming with utter hatred burning in his gaze.

"What a mess."

Lin Ming coldly looked at Blackstone. This type of person was nothing but a vicious black-hearted wolf. He had been showing kindness and good intentions in saving him from this hellhole, and not only was he not grateful but he actually held a grudge because he wasn't given more resources, wanting to kill Lin Ming in the future just for this. This type of person, even if he hadn't been controlled, Lin Ming would still have killed him. He didn't want to waste any effort in saving a potential enemy. This was the profound lesson that Ouyang Boyan had taught him. Even if he didn't have any family or friends or anyone else in the Holy Demon Continent, he still wouldn't let such a snake lay hidden here.

"Die!"

Kacha!

Lin Ming's palm cut across Blackstone's neck, directly severing his throat!

Blackstone was like mud as he softly slumped to the floor…

Like this, a great Holy Land descendent had died here drowning in his hatred.

"Next is…" Lin Ming turned to the heaven-step Demon God Bone. As he withstood its will attack, he stepped closer and closer to the Demon God Bone. The Demon God Bone trembled panicked and began to tremble, issuing out whining howling sounds. It started to desperately activate its inherent Emperor Will to attack Lin Ming, but there simply wasn't any effect at all.

Like this, it had no choice but to give up, using its will attacks on the others present.

As a result, Lan Xin and High Lord Cloud Demon lost the last sliver of sanity in their eyes. They rushed towards Lin Ming, coming in from both sides!

"Tsk!" Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a thick killing intent.

"Brother Lin! Please, show mercy!" As Duanmu Qun saw this, he was dismayed. But, because of the will attack from the heaven-step Demon God Bone, he was rooted in place. Even just this shout almost caused him to lose his mind because he had diverted a bit of his attention!

Towards Duanmu Qun's pleas, Lin Ming simply turned a deaf ear. He flicked the Purple Comet Spear in his hand, and in the next moment, a brilliant spear light shot through the sky!

Around Lin Ming, the flow of time seemed to instantly slow down. As Lan Xin and High Lord Cloud Demon rushed towards Lin Ming, he immediately thrust out twice!

One spear towards High Lord Cloud Demon's heart and the other between Lan Xin's eyes!

Seeing this, Duanmu Qun's pupils contracted, overcome with a hysterical horror!

"No..."

Puff!

A bloody light shot out!

For those controlled by the heaven-step Demon God Bone, although the energy within their body would momentarily increase, because they lost their rationality and thinking, they were completely unable to break through Lin Ming's strange Concept of Space and Time attack.

Lin Min's attack could penetrate the most durable of defenses; how could High Lord Cloud Demon defend against it?

A spear easily thrust through High Lord Cloud Demon's heart. With a twist, a tyrannical true essence erupted, directly crushing High Lord Cloud Demon's heart!

At the same time, another spear light flashed, piercing between Lan Xin's eyes!

Seeing that cold spearpoint and the keen energy it released, Duanmu Qun felt his heart sinking into despair!

As for Lan Xin, her expression was still vacant even as she kept stumbling towards this attack!

The Purple Comet Spear was like a bolt of lightning as it thrust between Lan Xin's eyebrows before quickly returning, blood blooming!

Lan Xin's body stiffened. She immediately slumped to the floor as if she had lost every bone in her body.

"Lan Xin!"

Duanmu Qun's heart stopped beating for a second as his world fell apart around him!

Because of the interests and entanglement of their sects, him and Lan Xin couldn't develop a budding relationship as a man and a woman. But, after knowing each other for so many years, their friendship was still very deep.

"She's fine." Lin Ming calmly said as he looked at Lan Xin. "I've cut away her heart demon. The wound between her eyebrows isn't even a quarter of an inch deep, she'll be fine."

In that attack just now, Lin Ming had used his battle spirit to invade Lan Xin's spiritual sea and destroy the heart demon residing there.

Although a battle spirit was powerful, it wasn't omnipotent. If Lan Xin really did hold hatred for Lin Ming in her heart, then that heart demon within her would have been be strong. She would have been just like Blackstone, rushing to kill Lin Ming even if she was wounded.

If that had happened, then Lin Ming wouldn't have been soft-hearted. No matter how beautiful Lan Xin was, he would have used a heavy hand to destroy the flower!

'Cut apart her heart demon? Could Lin Ming have...'

Duanmu Qun paused. As someone who came from a super Holy Land that neared a sixth-grade sect, his experiences and knowledge far surpassed the ordinary man's. Towards the understanding of battle spirits and will, his knowledge wasn't much worse than Lin Ming's!

Only the battle spirit, known as that power that could cut through all, could enter into a martial artist's spiritual sea and cut apart their heart demon!

Lin Ming, he... he comprehended his own battle spirit?

How... this... how was this possible?

Duanmu Qun was simply unable to believe this!

Initially, when he stepped into the Road of Emperor, he also had the intention of tempering his will and forming his own battle spirit. Finally, he tarried at road of will lights for over 10 days before he spent a great deal of effort and energy and finally passed the first quasi Emperor will light. When he reached the second quasi Emperor will light, he wasn't able to bear it anymore. If he was having so much trouble with a quasi Emperor will light, there was no need to mention what a true Emperor level will light would do to him.

Within his generation, Duanmu Qun had an extraordinary will. In addition to his terrifying background, his amazing talent, his uncanny perception, and his top cultivation method, he could be called a favored son of the heavens. He had also felt that he towered above others. But, when he tried to condense his own battle spirit he suffered a brutal blow; the disparity was just too great.

When he entered the Road of Emperor, he had been a one-star Demon King, equal to a human middle to late Revolving master. Even so, he had still failed! As a last resort, Duanmu Qun had chosen the road of stone tablets.

As for Lin Ming, his cultivation at that time had been an entire realm lower – he was only at the extreme Xiantian realm. With just his extreme Xiantian cultivation he had been able to form his own battle spirit?

Unprecedented since ancient times was putting it lightly!

Thinking about it, when Lin Ming entered the Road of Emperor, he had stayed within for over half a year. After coming out, his cultivation had only increased by half a small boundary. This was truly incomprehensible. At the time, Duanmu Qun had also felt that something was wrong. Knowing what he knew now, Lin Ming had most likely chosen to stay on the road of will lights and had gone as far as being able to form his own battle spirit!

The road of will lights was only useful in tempering the will, it was extremely limited in raising one's cultivation. This would explain why Lin Ming's cultivation had only increased by such a small amount.

Heavens!

What kind of talent was this!? Compared to this, something like some silly Titled Asura was just garbage!

For the first time, Duanmu Qun felt fear and awe towards Lin Ming. He no longer took Lin Ming as a rival, but rather as a future earth-shaking and heaven-conquering legend!

Perhaps… even being the number one master of the Holy Demon Continent wouldn't be enough to satisfy Lin Ming. In the future, it was very likely that he would break through the martial void and step into the Realm of the Gods, even becoming an overlord of a territory there!

As Duanmu Qun's thoughts were racing, Feng Shen began to lose himself.

Before Feng Shen completely lose his self-control, Lin Ming took a step forwards and raised his spear, stabbing it between Feng Shen's eyes!

Ca!

Feng Shen trembled and a bit of blood splashed out from between his eyes. He didn't slump down to the floor like Lan Xin did, but instead directly woke up. "What happened to me?"

"I'll tell you later." Lin Ming turned to Duanmu Qun.

Duanmu Qun was suddenly frightened. His will was being invaded, and he had no strength to resist Lin Ming at the moment.

He saw that Lin Ming's attacks were able to cut apart heart demons, but High Lord Cloud Demon had not received this treatment. Lin Ming's spear had directly pierced through his heart. This was a simple and pure killing move. Lin Ming had intended to kill High Lord Cloud Demon from the very start!

Perhaps it was because Lin Ming saw the hatred hiding within High Lord Cloud Demon, or perhaps it was because he was disgusted by High Lord Cloud Demon's greedy character, but, in short, he had decisively killed High Lord Cloud Demon without an ounce of mercy.

Realizing this, Duanmu Qun gulped. With some difficult, he said, "I… I'm alright…"

"…Okay…"

Lin Ming nodded and then turned around towards the Demon God Bone. Duanmu Qun was still sweating from a cold fear because, just now, he had discovered something else. After Blackstone and High Lord Cloud Demon were killed by Lin Ming, the infernal energy had left their bodies, and half of it surged towards Lin Ming before being swallowed up by his Heavenly Demon Tattoo.

At this time, Duanmu Qun had seen that the ten-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo on Lin Ming's arm had actually reached the peak of the late ten-wings stage.

High Lord Cloud Demon had come from the strongest Skysplit Tower within the Blood Slaughter Steppes, Heavenly Cloud Tower. Even there, he had been one of the top ranked High Lords. The infernal energy within him was much richer, and after this energy was absorbed by Lin Ming, he immediately broke through the late ten-wing stage bottleneck and entered into the early peak of ten-wings!

He was just a single step away from becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon!

"Lin Ming's Heavenly Demon Tattoo is actually… at the peak of 10 wings?"

After Duanmu Qun realized this, his heart chilled. If this continued, then it was possible Lin Ming could become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon!

He wanted to become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon?

As a Holy Land descendant, Duanmu Qun was well aware of what a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon was to the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

It was a completely taboo existence!

Even the son of the Blood Slaughter Steppes' ruler was not allowed to become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon without permission!

Moreover, in order to become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, one had to find and kill a massive amount of powerful High Lords. Even if one was allowed to become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, it wasn't something that an ordinary person could ever accomplish.

Lin Ming had unexpectedly and silently become a peak ten-winged Heavenly Demon. Along the way, how many high Lords had he killed?

That ridiculous Blackstone and High Lord Cloud Demon had thought something so dumb as trying to discuss dividing lucky chances with Lin Ming. They probably thought that Lin Ming was just a little amateur boy, but he was actually a tiger wearing a sheep's skin. They had both brought about their own deaths!

In any case, no matter what, he could not be enemies with Lin Ming.

This was the only thought in Duanmu Qun's mind at the time. He didn't know how old Lin Ming was, but at most he was 22 or 23. To be so young and have such a cultivation, strength, and to even form his own battle spirit in the Xiantian realm... with his firm and decisive character, his ruthless actions, Lin Ming nearly had no weaknesses!

Once offended, such a person would return hundreds or even a thousand years later. At that time, even destroying a super Holy Land might be as simple as turning a hand..

It was exactly because he had all these thoughts at once that Duanmu Qun's back was cold with sweat.

As he was lost in his thoughts, Lin Ming had already arrived in front of the heaven-step Demon God Bone.

This was another Demon God Bone that held the residual Emperor Will of an ancient powerhouse. The sort of will attack that this God Demon Bone was capable of was exactly what Lin Ming was least afraid of. Its attack, towards him who had fully formed his bronze battle spirit and had also broken through to Revolving Core, could at most scratch his boot.

As the Demon God Bone saw Lin Ming closing in, it began to issue out ear-piercing cries, as if it were an actual living creature.

Lin Ming simply didn’t care. He thrust out one hand.

“Seal!”

Chapter 655 – Black Hole Revolving Core

Chapter 655 – Black Hole Revolving Core

…

…

…

Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, the bronze battle spirit that lived there howled. With the array symbols that he formed infused with his battle spirit, they immediately enveloped the Demon God Bone.

A battle spirit could be attached to any attack or weapon. Of course, this included even the energy of an array symbol!

After fusing with a wisp of battle spirit, the golden array symbols became much sharper.

Seeing this rain of golden light fall over it, the Demon God Bone screamed in horror. This sharp sound really made one's scalp tingle with dread.

The Demon God Bone used every last bit of its strength to launch a will attack against Lin Ming, but all of its actions were useless.

Not too far away, Duanmu Qun was alarmed. Among everyone present, besides Lin Ming, he understood the most about will and battle spirits. He was also clear as to what attack method this Demon God bone used.

Ever since Lin Ming began sealing away the Demon God Bone, all of the pressure on Duanmu Qun's body suddenly vanished. The Demon God Bone had given up its attacks on everyone else and was using its complete strength to resist Lin Ming. Even so, Lin Ming didn't even blink; it was like he didn't even notice it.

Was his willpower that strong?

After an incense stick of time, the screeching howls of the heaven-step Demon God Bone began to weaken before completely vanishing. Duanmu Qun took several steps forwards and found that the heaven-step Demon God Bone within the sarcophagus was already wrapped up in a thick cocoon.

The cocoon was formed by layers upon layers of array symbols as well as a purple power of thunder. The power of thunder had an absolute advantage against evil ghosts and spirits, using it to suppress this Demon God Bone was undoubtedly the best method.

“Alright, we’re finished here.”

Lin Ming placed the heaven-step Demon God Bone in his spatial ring as well as the profound gold divine fruit and half of the earth-step Demon God Bones. As for the remaining eight earth-step Demon God Bones, those were naturally left over for Duanmu Qun and the rest.

“This is… we actually don’t need to be given any of the treasure. During this adventure into the 1000 mile forbidden zone, everything has been thanks to Brother Lin. Making it out of here alive is the only lucky chance that we’ll need.”

Duanmu Qun ruefully smiled as he looked at the eight Demon God Bones left over in the sarcophagus.

In truth, even if it were just the most ordinary, longan sized low-grade human-step Demon God Bone, it still wouldn’t be some cabbage if placed in a Holy Land. From the time he was born until now, the total amount of resources that Duanmu Qun had used up couldn’t amount to a single one of these fist sized earth-step Demon God Bones.

It was impossible to say that Duanmu Qun wasn’t interested in these earth-step Demon God Bones, but because of the fear he felt from Lin Ming’s ruthless and decisive character, he decided that these Demon God Bones simply weren’t worth it.

On the contrary, if he could form good relations with Lin Ming, then the advantages he could obtain in the future might be worth even more.

Lin Ming said, “Eight earth-step Demon God Bones are enough for me. The rest is for you, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin. This is fair.”

At the very start when he was dividing up the resources, he had already calculated what he needed. Him, Mu Qianyu, and Qin Xingxuan would each take two earth-step Demon God Bones for a total of six. And, if Lin Ming’s little sister Lin Xiaoge also had the aptitude to practice martial arts, then that would be another two for a grand total of eight.

“This is… or, how about this. The three of us will take one each and Brother Lin can take the other five. A single earth-step Demon God Bone is already plenty for us.” Duanmu Qun refused once more as he glanced over at Feng Shen. Feng Shen didn’t have any expression at all, apparently he agreed with this decision.

Lin Ming didn’t decline. He immediately took five more of the Demon God Bones. In truth, thinking about it more, besides Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, and his little sister, there was also Mu Bingyun, Mu Yuhuang, and Mu Fengxian – he needed to give them appropriate consideration too. Because of the kindness they had once shown him in the past, he should give them one or two each. With that, another three to five was just right.

As Duanmu Qun saw Lin Ming take five of the remaining Demon God Bones, he relaxed. This could be described as a great result for everyone here.

“Brother Lin, shall we go now?”

“No need to hurry.” Lin Ming thought about the time and shook his head. The Eternal Demon Abyss would be open for half a year, it had only been around two months since they had entered.

In these two months, Lin Ming had made repeated breakthroughs in his strength and also fought in a great number of battles. Although the energy within him was potent, it was restless and unsteady. This was the result of accumulating so much strength in such a short period of time.

Lin Ming expected that they would inevitably encounter some new danger in the next several months. A dull knife wouldn't be able to cut wood. It was best to take advantage of their current situation and use this safe zone to stabilize his strength.

"Let's recover here for a month and return to our peak condition before leaving again."

Lin Ming's words were no different from a command; no one dared to question him. Duanmu Qun immediately nodded and said, "That's also good."

The truth was that in these past days, Duanmu Qun had been in a constant state of high stress and tension, he really did need to rest and recuperate. Him, Feng Shen, and the just awoken and still groggy Lan Xin, went to a corner of the tomb and sat down, beginning to meditate there.

As for Lin Ming, he went to another corner.

Lin Ming took out a few top-grade Blood Demon Crystals and quickly entered into the ethereal martial intent state…

With Demonshine guarding him, Lin Ming didn't worry that there was anything that would sneak up on him. After breaking through to the Revolving Core realm, his ethereal martial intent state was much more smooth. With just a reminder from Demonshine, he would be able to immediately wake up.

Like this, time passed slowly. Lin Ming's cultivation didn't increase, but his foundation slowly stabilized.

Lin Ming hadn't used an earth-step Demon God Bone. This sort of heavenly treasure was equivalent to a tyrannical and oppressive medicine. Currently, the energy within his body was already restless and disorderly. If he swallowed an earth-step Demon God Bone like this, then it would only make his foundation unstable, affecting his future cultivation growth.

Consolidating one's foundation was an extremely laborious and burdensome process. Currently, within Lin Ming's dantian, besides the spinning crystal core there, there was also a great number of scattered true essence crystals floating about. They slowly revolved in the gaseous energy around the crystal core.

All of these were signs of disordered energy.

What Lin Ming had to do was completely absorb these crystalline true essence shards into the surface of his Revolving Core; this was the so-called process of consolidating his foundation.

This was a very long and time-consuming process. Moreover, it didn't even increase the total amount of true essence there was.

Other martial artists would also try to solidify their foundation like this. They would often go into closed-door seclusion for a year or longer to accomplish this.

However, no matter how much time they spent, they would reach a point where their foundation could no longer be consolidated. This was their limit.

When those scattered true essence crystals gathered onto the Revolving Core, they would also break off some of the other true essence crystals on the Revolving Core's surface because of the agitation of energy. Because of this, this energy would return to the dantian where it would become new crystallized shards of true essence.

When these two reached a balance, that was when a martial artist reached the limit of their consolidation. No matter how much longer they spent, it wouldn't be useful.

So, a normal Revolving Core martial artist would spend a year or so on the wearisome work of consolidating their foundation. Afterwards, once they reached their limit and established a balance in their Revolving Core, they would no longer be diligent in steadying their foundation.

This balance could be reached at any time; it all depended on how solid the martial artist's foundation was before they entered Revolving Core.

For example, take Lin Ming. Before he broke through to Revolving Core, his foundation was solid to the extreme. From the very start, the Revolving Core he formed had been several times larger than an ordinary martial artist's.

Afterwards, his Revolving Core had collapsed and became the same size as an ordinary martial artist's Revolving Core, except that its color was darker and it spun several times faster, meaning that the energy within it was several times greater than usual.

Such a Revolving Core already had a much greater attractive force, so it would absorb true essence crystals much more easily.

Because of this, Lin Ming's process of consolidating his foundation was much easier than an ordinary martial artist's. With just a thought, the true essence crystals freely floating in his dantian fell onto his Revolving Core like a gently drizzling rain. With just a few days of work, half of the true essence crystals had been sucked up into his Revolving Core.

However, following that, the speed was much slower. There were less free floating true essence crystals so consolidating his foundation was that much harder.

"Lin Ming, when your Revolving Core foundation reaches the extreme, that is when every true essence crystal and all the remaining energies have concentrated into your Revolving Core without a single bit escaping, forming the perfect crystal core orb. Such a Revolving Core is extremely rare. In the Realm of the Gods, they call this a 'Black Hole Revolving Core', because at that time, your Revolving Core is similar to a black hole. The true essence crystals can only enter and the attractive force is that much greater. This is your goal. Reach Black Hole Revolving Core before breaking through to the middle Revolving Core realm, because if your foundation ever becomes unstable, you will have to pay several times the effort in the future and you still might not be able to recover from it."

"I understand." Lin Ming nodded and continued consolidating his foundation.

Lin Ming had already made up his mind. Black Hole Revolving Core was the realm he needed to reach. Until the day he reached this realm, he would not make a breakthrough in his cultivation.

....

Time passed unknowingly. One month later, Lin Ming's eyes suddenly flashed open from his meditation. In that instant, it was like two bright arcs of lightning lit up the room. An invisible aura was sent out, making Lan Xin, Duanmu Qun, and Feng Shen feel like something cold crawled up their backs. In that moment they could feel the true essence within their bodies restlessly moving, spontaneously resisting this pressure.

As Lan Xin looked at Lin Ming, she was a bit shocked, "Lin Ming... you..."

Ho--!

The aura suddenly vanished and the bright electric light in Lin Ming's eyes also disappeared, as if everything just now was an illusion.

Lin Ming stood up. Compared to a month ago, the energy around him was calmer and his aura was more collected, without a trace leaking out. The total amount of true essence in his body hadn't increased, but his strength had actually risen once again. Originally he had just entered the Revolving Core realm, but now he could be considered as having stably entered early Revolving Core.

Duanmu Qun looked over to Lin Ming. He felt as if an Azure Dragon was hidden within Lin Ming's being. Once his energy erupted, the clouds and seas would tremble, shaking the heavens and earth.

Such a Lin Ming was awe-inspiring!

Thinking of this, Duanmu Qun's eyes subconsciously fell onto the Heavenly Demon Tattoo on Lin Ming's arm. A peak ten-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo was just a step shy from achieving 12 wings. Duanmu Qun didn't believe that Lin Ming would give up on reaching this goal.

If this were true, then Lin Ming would inevitably become the enemy of the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes!

From the peak of 10 wings to 12 wings, he would have to kill at least three or four high ranking High Lords like High Lord Cloud Demon.

Just who would he kill?

Thinking of this, Duanmu Qun's eyebrows shot up. Although Lin Ming appeared to be a pleasant and polite youth, the truth was that when it came to killing, there was nearly no one as decisive as he was.

"Let's leave the forbidden zone!"

Lin Ming said. In his current state, it wouldn't take long to make it out of this 1000 mile forbidden zone.

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming had come to understand some things. This was that it was time to return to the South Horizon Region. From the time he left the Demon God Imperial Palace, in just a flash, it had already been two and a half years since he stepped foot within the South Horizon Region. For this entire time, the worry within Lin Ming's mind had increased with every passing day.

Chapter 656 – Opening the Goddess' Sarcophagus Once More

Chapter 656 – Opening the Goddess' Sarcophagus Once More

…

…

…

Lin Ming led Duanmu Qun and the others to leave the tomb, arriving back at the pitch-black space where they couldn't even see their own fingers in front of them. There were very minor distortions in the power of space here. If it wasn't for Lin Ming leading the way, it would have been very difficult for Duanmu Qun and the others to leave.

As Lin Ming was about to step out of the mountain, he suddenly felt his body shake. In that moment, he seemed to hear an incomparably beautiful woman's voice, like the sounds of heaven, illusive and filled with a weeping grief.

The voice seemed to form some strange ancient syllables. Even Lin Ming, who was familiar with the language from the Realm of the Gods as well as the Ancient Giant Demons', still couldn't completely understand the meaning behind it.

He slowed his steps and glanced over at Duanmu Qun and the others. He wanted to see whether or not they heard this voice, but their expressions were calm; obviously they hadn't heard anything at all.

"Is something wrong, Brother Lin?" Duanmu Qun asked, not sure why Lin Ming stopped.

"No." Lin Ming shook his head. Since no one heard this voice then it was useless if he mentioned it. It would be better if he didn't speak about it at all.

“Oh.” Duanmu Qun saw that Lin Ming didn’t want to speak further and intelligently didn’t press the issue.

Lin Ming slowed his pace, listening to the woman’s voice as he walked. If he was correct, then this voice was left behind by that goddess within the sarcophagus. Lin Ming had investigated her body but hadn’t found any signs of life. Obviously, she had been dead for a very, very long time. Then, these sounds must have either come from an array formation that she had left behind, or perhaps it was from the battle spirit of her remaining will. Her strength was likely to have been no less than that of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands’ Saintess, a top character even within the Realm of the Gods. It wouldn’t be strange if she could leave behind a battle spirit that still existed after tens of thousands of years.

As Lin Ming walked, he listened to this voice this entire time. Although he wasn’t able to completely understand it, he still carefully memorized these words in his heart. The more he listened, the more unnerved he became. He, Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin had all entered the tomb together, but he was the only one able to hear this voice. Just what was this voice trying to tell him?

“Let’s go back!”

Lin Ming suddenly said as he stopped.

“Ah” Lan Xin and Duanmu Qun were shocked. They didn’t think that Lin Ming would have a thought like this even after they left the mountain.

Duanmu Qun’s intuition was that this sudden decision had something to do with his sudden pause a moment ago. But, he tactfully didn’t ask further.

Lin Ming brought the group to return, passing through that pitch black space until they returned in front of that peerless woman’s sarcophagus.

Lin Ming stood in front of the sarcophagus for a long time. Then, he deeply bowed in respect and said, “Senior, I apologize for disturbing your rest.”

With this, he undid all the countless seals he had left behind and shoved open the sarcophagus' cover.

With a rumbling sound, the sarcophagus completely opened.

As a result, that utterly perfect woman appeared in front of everyone once more.

"Lin Ming, what do you plan on doing?" Lan Xin couldn't help but ask. In her heart, she thought that Lin Ming shouldn't be robbing a grave… right?

Duanmu Qun flashed an eye at Lan Xin, and she attentively didn't say anymore.

Lin Ming was completely silent, only staring at the beautiful woman as she lay there. She was calm, like she had simply fallen asleep.

Lin Ming recalled the voice of the woman from a while ago, and after a long time, he had a faint guess, "Senior, I have a reason, and it isn't because junior is being disrespectful. If I offend you, then please forgive me."

With that, Lin Ming bent over and put his hand on the woman's body, trying to find something.

Of course he wasn't just randomly groping around, he had a clear purpose in mind.

Before he touched her, he had used his perception to investigate the goddess' body. He discovered that there were two areas where the fluctuation of energy was obviously different. One was at the woman's waist and the other was at her neck.

These were the two areas that Lin Ming was searching. At the woman's waist, he first fished out a jade pendant.

This jade pendant was a deep azure color and incomparably cold to the touch. There was an ancient mystical design carved into the center, looking like some sort of bird-shaped totem.

Whatever this was, it was unlikely to be some sort of magical treasure. Although it exuded a very pure energy, it obviously didn't have any striking power. It seemed to be more like a keepsake of some sort.

"Senior... were you wronged?"

Lin Ming's guess was that after dying, her will hadn't yet dissipated after these tens of thousands of years. Now, she was trying to express to him some message. Was she wronged? Did she have some grudge? Or perhaps this was an absolutely irreconcilable hatred?

After such a long time had passed, would her enemies, or those that had wronged her, still be in this world?

Lin Ming's mind was full of questions.

He hesitated for a moment and said, "Senior, whether you have a grievance or grudge, this junior will take this item. When junior soars into the Realm of the Gods in the future, perhaps I might have a slim chance of helping senior solve this mystery and completing this cycle of hatred."

Although Lin Ming didn't know who this goddess was or what she had done, he had still obtained a number of lucky chances from her tomb. In essence, this could be considered a kindness that she had bestowed upon him. In this situation, if he could help her to the full extent of his power and maybe fulfill her last wish, then that would be completing the cycle of karma between them.

However, there had always been something that Lin Ming didn't understand. Whether it was the woman in this tomb, or those abnormal existences within the Eternal Demon Abyss, like the massive ancient beast that was thousands of miles long, these were all beings that should belong within the Realm of the Gods.

Just why would they be here at the Holy Demon Continent?

According to Demonshine, the Holy Demon Continent and Sky Spill Continent shared the same planet together. As for the three thousand boundless worlds, that was three thousands multiplied with each other, for a total of one billion!

A billion worlds! And the Holy Demon Continent and Sky Spill Continent combined was just a single one. In fact, this planet could be called insignificant, a negligible drop in the endless ocean!

How could a powerhouse from the Realm of the Gods be entombed in the abyss of the Holy Demon Continent?

Actually, just what was the Eternal Demon Abyss? How was it created? How many tens of thousands of years had it been here for? Where did those evil spirits and unimaginably powerful existences originate from? And, what were the 12 Skysplit Towers? Who had constructed them? Why would there be the Road of Emperor?

Lin Ming's mind was filled with all these unanswerable questions.

The 12 Skysplit Towers had already existed for countless years, surviving through the endless wind and rain of time. With so many complex ancient arrays, the existence that was able to construct the 12 Skysplit Towers was absolutely on the same level as the woman in this tomb!

Such a character, even if placed with the Realm of the Gods. Would still be the master of the highest level of Holy Land! Just why would they come to the Holy Demon Continent?

Lin Ming really couldn't figure any of this out. He shook his head and began to trace the woman's neck. Before, he had discovered that the energy here was also different. As he touched upon something cold, Lin Ming was just about to pull it out, when at this moment he suddenly pulled back his hand as if he had been bitten by a viper!

"This… how is this possible!?" Lin Ming's complexion paled.

As Duanmu Qun and the others saw Lin Ming's fierce reaction, they also went on high alert. "Brother Lin, is something wrong?"

Lin Ming's face was filled with surprise and uncertainty. Hesitantly, he reached out his hand again and traced the woman's neck once more. This time, his hand specifically moved closer to the woman's left chest. Touching upon there, he could feel soft and smooth skin. Lin Ming was able to confirm that what he felt was not an illusion.

This woman… had a heartbeat!

Before, he had investigated her and clearly didn't feel the slightest fluctuations of life. So, how could there be a heartbeat?

If there was a heartbeat, how come he didn't detect it?

Lin Ming found this impossible to imagine. He wavered for a long time, and then silently said, "Senior, I apologize for offending you…"

Lin Ming let out a wisp of his perception and investigated the woman's left chest. In fact, the perception of a martial artist was ubiquitous. Naturally, penetrating through clothes was a simple action. But to use his perception to pass through this goddess' clothing was truly a boorish and disrespectful gesture. But in order to confirm some things, Lin Ming didn't have a better method. He could only make sure that his mind was as clear as a mirror and that he absolutely had no thoughts of desecrating or blaspheming her in any way, shape, or form.

Passing his perception into the goddess's left chest, Lin Ming felt his mind tremble. Then, he instantly disappeared from the real world and came to a completely different world of will!

This was a vast starry sky!

"A will world comparable to the endless starry skies?" Lin Ming panicked.

At this moment, he heard a series of cracking sounds, as if crystal glasses were being broken. Looking up, he could see space cracking apart, quickly blowing up in front of him at an ever-growing pace!

Then, a vast, infinite ocean of energy and life force gushed out!

Bang!

Lin Ming was sent flying away. In front of such terrifying energy, he was no different from a leaf in a storm, unable to resist at all!

If this energy had even a tiniest bit killing intent towards Lin Ming, then he would be directly smushed into a bloody fog!

“What a powerful energy, just what is this!?”

Lin Ming finally stabilized himself with great effort and wiped off the blood that leaked out from the corners of his mouth. He looked up to see that in the endless starry skies, in that area where space had broken apart, there was actually a great vibrant red heart, powerfully beating!

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

With every heartbeat, the void trembled. With every beat, Lin Ming could feel all of the blood vitality of his body being pulled away, all of the blood vessels within him wanting to explode and rush out of him!

“This… this is…!” Lin Ming’s eyes went perfectly wide as he stared on at the beating heart in the starry skies. This bright and vivid deep red heart seemed as if it were carved from pure blood crystal. After passing through several tens of thousands of years, the life force within had never dimmed by a single touch!

A bright crimson divine light emitted from this heart, accompanied by a vast, inexhaustible energy of life. This heart could likely beat on in perpetuity for another 100,000 years!

This was the heart of a true Emperor! Moreover, an Emperor of the Realm of the Gods! The master of this heart must have been a top powerhouse, looking down on every other existence!

Was this the heart of the goddess?

This thought instantly cut through Lin Ming's mind before he rejected it…

It was not.

On the goddess' body, Lin Ming had felt a serene aura, uncaring of all world problems, as profound as the limitless sea. In her presence, everyone's hearts would be filled with awe, no one daring to blaspheme her.

And from this heart… from this heart, Lin Ming could feel an overwhelmingly domineering aura, an existence unmatched by all that lived within this universe!

This master of this heart, when living, must have shaken the foundations of the Realm of the Gods, an unrivalled Emperor that looked down with disdain at all of creation!

These were two completely different atmospheres. This proved that this heart did not belong to this goddess… yet, what confused Lin Ming was that when he had touched the goddess' chest, he had clearly felt a heartbeat…

If he wasn't wrong, then this heart existed within the goddess. Thus, Lin Ming was able to feel it beat within her. But, because the goddess had died, he couldn't sense any fluctuations of life from her!

A goddess that had died had the heart of a Great Emperor sealed within her that had been beating for tens of thousands of years!

The final analysis of these facts left Lin Ming inexplicably horrified!

What sort of Great Emperor was this!? He had pulled out his heart and yet it still beat for all these tens of thousands of years!?!?

Such a Great Emperor… who had killed him, and who had sealed his heart within this goddess’ body?

Chapter 657 – Leaving the Forbidden Zone

Chapter 657 – Leaving the Forbidden Zone

…

…

…

Ho -- !

Lin Ming retreated from the world of will, a cold sweat already streaming down his back. He had been completely suppressed by the aura of that heart. Fortunately, that heart did not care one bit about him, otherwise he would have already been crushed into nothing.

"Brother Lin… are you okay?" Duanmu Qun noticed Lin Ming's strange behavior and asked him, "Is something wrong?"

Although Duanmu Qun had only known Lin Ming for a short time, he had still been able to get a relatively good grasp on what sort of character he had. Lin Ming wasn't the type to play evil tricks or do something dirty; he must have discovered something just now.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment before recounting what just happened to Duanmu Qun with a true essence sound transmission. With another person, there would be another viewpoint on matters and another opinion; perhaps they would be able to understand some more things.

"You said that there is the heart of a great Emperor sealed within this goddess that has been beating for the last several tens of thousands of years!?"

After hearing this, Duanmu Qun was inexplicably shocked! He too wanted to feel the heartbeat of this goddess, but after a moment of hesitation, he didn't dare to put out his hand. According to Lin Ming's account of events, he had been sucked into that world of will. Luckily, Lin Ming's battle spirit had already formed. Even so, he had been suppressed to the point of sweating all over. If Duanmu Qun himself were to be drawn into that world of will, then he feared he would be ground into a pile of meat.

Lin Ming said, "The Great Emperor that I mentioned now isn't a Great Emperor of the Holy Demon Continent, but one from the Realm of the Gods. Compared to such an existence, even the Eightfall War Emperor is nothing more than a little baby. I really have no idea… just who killed this person, and why would their heart appear within the Eternal Demon Abyss?"

Lin Ming couldn't imagine just how strong a true Great Emperor from the Realm of the Gods would be. Not to mention other aspects, but in terms of lifespan, if a Great Emperor of the mortal world didn't make a miraculous breakthrough, they could live at most for 10,000 years. But, a Great Emperor of the Realm of the Gods, even after death, their heart would still be able to beat on for tens of thousands of years. These were two completely different levels!

Duanmu Qun came from a super Holy Land, so he certainly knew the rumors about the Realm of the Gods. After a moment of thought he suddenly said, "Are you sure that this Great Emperor was killed?"

"Mm?" Lin Ming paused, "His heart is here, so can he still be alive?"

"I can't say!" Duanmu Qun shook his head, "In the ancient books of my Holy Land, I've also read some records about the Supreme Elders within the Realm of the Gods. I've read that there are some martial artists who have reached an extremely high boundary and can regrow their limbs even after they are cut off. And above that, there are those that can be reborn from a single drop of blood. Even if they lost their entire body, as long as there is still a single piece left over, they could slowly regenerate into a complete body. To a Great Emperor of the Realm of the Gods, perhaps even losing a heart doesn't mean they would die!"

As Duanmu Qun spoke, Lin Ming did recall some memories about this. There were some powerhouses within the Realm of the Gods, who, after reaching a very high level, could reform themselves even after being cut apart.

As for being reborn through a single drop of blood, Duanmu Qun's words weren't too far off from the truth. By relying on just a little piece of their body, one really could be reborn with a complete form. However, the cost of that was that the new body would only have that tiny sliver of the original body. Basically, this meant that their entire life's martial arts would be wasted!

For a top martial artist to lose that much of their body, it meant they would lose that much of their energy.

"You're right, this Great Emperor might not have died." Lin Ming nodded. Before, he had fallen into a different way of thinking.

Duanmu Qun also said, "This goddess died several tens of thousands of years ago and yet her body hasn't decayed. She still lies here, sleeping in beauty. This completely defies common sense. No matter how powerful this goddess was before death, after she died, her energies should have faded away a bit after such a long time. At least, her skin should have lost some of its gorgeous luster. But, since that isn't the case, I think there might be a different possibility… and that is that this Great Emperor from the Realm of the Gods gouged out his own heart to place within her body, in order to preserve the life force of her body for 100,000 years!"

Duanmu Qun even seemed amazed by his own words. As Lin Ming listened to him, he was shocked. Although this reasoning sounded strange, it might have been true!

A divine Emperor had gouged out his own heart in order to preserve the vitality of this goddess!

To a martial artist, their heart, dantian, and spiritual sea were there three most important points, and these were also the areas that contained the most energy. If one cut out their own heart, they would lose at least 10% of their strength. If that Great Emperor felt this was worth it, then undoubtedly this goddess was extremely important to him!

If this were the case then this Realm of the Gods Great Emperor should have entombed her in a crystal sarcophagus to ensure she was well protected; why would he abandon her within the Eternal Demon Abyss?

Such a simple tomb… it was hard to imagine that there would be such a powerful being from the Realm of the Gods buried here!

There were too many things that Lin Ming was confused about, so he simply didn't think about it. He leaned forwards and continued to search around the goddess' neck. Before, when he felt the goddess's heartbeat, he had drawn back his hand so he failed to take the keepsake out.

Gingerly reaching into her dress, Lin Ming pulled out a necklace.

This necklace was very strange, it was absolutely not something that a woman would normally use. The necklace itself was as thick as a little finger. Rather than a necklace, it seemed more like a chain. On the end of this necklace was a palm-sized metal plate, a full inch thick. In the center of this metal plate was a hole that seemed as if it had held some gem, but now that gem was lost.

"What a strange keepsake."

Lin Ming shook his head. He put the jade pendant and necklace in his spatial ring. As for the riddle of the Eternal Demon Abyss, he would have to wait until his was stronger before he could begin to unravel it.

And for now, Lin Ming was far from reaching this realm. In the future, when he was strong enough, he would personally enter the Eternal Demon Abyss to see just what was inside.

Peering deep into the woman's sarcophagus, he branded her image in his mind and then slowly pushed the cover back over.

Lifting his hand, he formed some array symbols and sealed away the sarcophagus. Lin Ming only casually sealed it. With that heart from a divine Emperor protecting her, there were no evil spirits that would ever be able to do anything to the goddess. Luckily, he didn't have any malicious or dark intentions from the start, otherwise when he was sucked into that world of will, just the slightest bit of killing intent from that divine Emperor's heart would have killed him countless times over!

The reason that those corpse devils didn't dare to touch the sarcophagus of this goddess was most likely because they feared the heart of that divine Emperor.

"Senior, junior must bid you farewell."

Lin Ming cupped his fists together. As he left the tomb, he had a faint feeling that in the future, his fate would one day cross with this woman again, and perhaps even the divine Emperor who had left that heart…

"Let's go! We're getting out of here!"

Lin Ming suppressed all the questions in his heart and brought Duanmu Qun and the rest to leave the tomb…

………………………………

Eternal Demon Abyss, 1100 mile zone.

The land was completely silent. Under a sky that had remained gray for tens of thousands of years, a dark fog rolled through. In this crimson land, one could occasionally see several broken stone tablets on the earth, engraved with ancient and mysterious symbols.

On this day, there were several blood crows circling up above, creepily screeching. These blood crows lived by eating corpses. It was said that they had a very special ability to sense and smell the energy of a dying person. Thus, when there were people dying, they would always be gathered at that spot in advance.

"You bunch of beasts also came to join in on the fun, eh!"

From the fog, a Giant Demon martial artist suddenly leapt out. As he saw this group of blood crows flying in the air, he began to simmer with a burning rage. "You want to wait for this father to die? Then this father will kill you first! Go die!"

Spear light flashed and several blood crows were pierced through. The others gave several screeches before flying away. In truth, these blood crows had no striking power. Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, they were the weakest and most ordinary of species. They lived on by burying their eggs deep underground to avoid the eruptions of the Eternal Demon Abyss and would breed once every 10 years.

"Third Brother, this can't go on. We've already been trapped here for an entire month! Damn this unholy place!" The one who spoke was an Imp martial artist. As he saw the Giant Demon martial artist attack a blood crow, he could only shake his head and sigh.

The Giant Demon martial artist put away his spear and cursed, "F*ck it all, this year's Eternal Demon Abyss is too strange. In the past, it was never so dangerous after an eruption. I fear that over half of those that came to the Eternal Demon Abyss have already died!"

"No kidding! Che, I thought that I would be able to obtain some lucky chances here, but if I can't even get out, then any lucky chance is useless." The last one to speak up was a young Fey girl. She was the only woman in the group of three.

Their squad originally has six people. Now, there were only three left over and they were also stuck in this danger zone with no way to leave, often having to face the attacks of evil spirits.

As the three were speaking, they heard a mournful scream, the fog around them suddenly stirring up like a pot of boiling porridge.

“This is bad!”

The three of them paled and immediately drew out their weapons. At this time, with the fog in front of them blown away, they could see that five 10 foot tall humanoid monsters had appeared in front of them.

These five monsters were incomparably disgusting, absolutely nauseating to look at. Their faces were covered with pus-filled sores and the top of their heads looked like crowns of oozing meat. Their fangs looked like steel needles, and as they walked upright, their claws looked like sharp and cruel blades.

“Just when will these damned monsters stop chasing us!?”

An Imp martial artist felt his heart sink into despair. The reason they had mistakenly entered into this space maze was because they had been chased down by this group of demonic beasts. Afterwards, they had been stuck here in this danger zone for an entire month without any way to leave. Now, he never thought that this group of disgusting monsters would use some unknown method to find them, and had actually chased them all the way here.

As they saw these large monsters in front of them, the martial artists realized that none of them would be leaving here alive.

“F*ck! If I’m going to die trapped here, then I would rather die fighting with these monsters! If you want to kill this father then this father won’t let you off either!”

A Giant Demon martial artist gave a loud shout and thrust his spear forwards, a sharp spear light slicing through the void. This Giant Demon martial artist certainly wasn’t an average martial artist, otherwise there was no way he would have lived until this point.

However, he returned even faster than he went. That repulsive humanoid monster only slapped out its hand and sent the Giant Demon martial artist flying. Three bloody wounds appeared in the Giant Demon martial artist’s chest, blood gushing out!

The difference was too great!

In their first encounter, they hadn't been able to resist either. These humanoid monsters were not only ridiculously strong, but nearly invulnerable to weapons. None in their group had been able to fight back, thus the reason they fled into the wild and stumbled into a danger zone by mistake.

As the Imp and Fey martial artists saw this, their eyes filled with anguish. At this moment, all of them would die!

The five large monsters gave two loud roars and stretched out their cruel claws to grasp at the three martial artists. The imp martial artist's eyes flashed with a decisive color, and he was prepared to fight 'til his death with these monsters. But, at this moment, twin beams of radiant light appeared out of thin air, piercing through the eyes of two monsters as if they were made of paper. Those two monsters weren't even able to cry out before their bodies shook and they tumbled to the ground, blood bubbling out of them.

The Imp martial artist was completely stunned.

Chapter 658 – Killing the Monsters

Chapter 658 – Killing the Monsters

…

…

…

Those humanoid monsters, which they had thought were invincible… two of them had instantly died!?

It wasn’t just the Imp martial artist that was astonished, but the Giant Demon martial artist and young Fey girl were also shocked. Before this, all of them tried attacking these humanoid monsters, but no matter what martial skill they used, even with their full strength, none of them had been able to break past these creatures’ fur!

They were on completely different levels!

But just now, two beams of light had pierced through two of the humanoid monsters, instantly killing them without the least bit of resistance.

Just who had done this?

Watching the two shaking monster corpses on the ground, the three martial artists were overjoyed to be alive. Subconsciously they took several steps backwards. A gaping red hole had appeared in these two monster’s head, and their blood and brains were spilling out, flowing along the ground.

As the three remaining monsters saw their companions die, all of them flew into a rage. They roared, twisting around to see just who had dared to ambush them.

But at this time, within the fog the figures of several people began to slowly come into view.

As the three monsters saw these people's figures, they rushed towards them!

Chi! Chi! Chi!

Three more beams of light shot out, piercing through the fog and directly passing through those three monsters' foreheads!

The three monsters' bodies shook. After their heads were pierced by this light they all fell to the floor. But the center one, because of inertia, stumbled towards the figures of the several people.

And then, a scene that the three martial artists would never forget suddenly occurred. A flaming azure light shot up into the sky, passing straight through that large monster and splitting in half!

Blood fell like rain!

Peng! Peng!

The corpse fell apart as its body was cut vertically in half. As for that figure that was revealed between the halves, they were protected by a flow of energy and not a single drop of blood stained them.

As the three martial artists saw this, all of them began to celebrate surviving this catastrophe. At the same time, they all began to feel uneasy – they could see that the several figures approaching were humans and Fey.

This trip into the Eternal Demon Abyss was reaching its end. Their first worry was that they didn't have a guide, and their second worry was that any martial artist that managed to survive up until this point would often have a considerable amount of resources with them.

Thus... the killing between squads had become increasingly frequent. The act of killing someone and stealing their wealth had occurred multiple times!

Currently, those four approaching martial artists could chop up the three of them as if they were melons. As long as any of them harbored any evil intentions, all three of them would die here.

“I truly thank the Tower Masters for the grace of saving our lives...” The Imp martial artist who led the three of them quickly rushed forwards to thank their saviors. In his view, only a Tower Master had such strength. He could only hope that these Tower Masters didn’t take a fancy towards weaklings like them, otherwise they were done for.

After giving his thanks, the Imp martial artist looked up. But now, he froze once more. As the four martial artists stepped out of the fog, he could finally clearly make out who they were.

They were actually Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, Feng Shen, and... Lin Ming!?!?

When they first entered the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming had been the focus of everyone, so of course he could recognize him. But afterwards, he heard that Lin Ming had died somewhere. How could he suddenly show up in this 1100 mile zone of the Eternal Demon Abyss?

The three martial artists’ minds were in chaos. Then the Imp martial artist suddenly realized something. Based on their positions, those several rays of light must have come from Lin Ming!

How was this possible!?!?

The Imp martial artist had to admit that he was only an average ranked High Lord from the Skysplit Towers. He hadn’t been able to break through the defense of those monsters, but now they had actually been instantly killed by Lin Ming. Did this mean that Lin Ming had strength close to that of a Tower Master?

Thinking of this, the Imp martial artist was flabbergasted. Just what was going on?

“So it’s Little Sister Blue Lotus and High Lord Sandstone…” Duanmu Qun smiled as he spoke. He was acquainted with the young Fey girl in the center of the three. As for that Imp High Lord, he only knew of his name.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Duanmu, thank you for saving us…” The young Fey girl called Blue Lotus said in a soft voice. She wasn’t blushing because of shyness, but because the rapid series of events and her near death had made her blood flow quicken.

“Haha, it’s not me who rescued you, I just don’t have this ability. If you must thank someone, then thank Brother Lin here.” Duanmu Qun laughed. From when they had strayed into the 1000 mile forbidden zone, and in addition to the month they had practiced in the tomb, it had been a full month and a half. With Lin Ming’s leadership, they had finally made it out alive. After having survived such a disastrous event, Duanmu Qun was in an excellent mood.

As the Imp High Lord Sandstone saw that Duanmu Qun wasn’t planning on killing them, and that he also knew Blue Lotus, he was ecstatic. It seemed that they had managed to escape a calamity!

“I am Five Color Tower’s High Lord Sandstone. I thank Young Hero Lin for saving us.”

There was no time now to wonder why Lin Ming was so strong. The Imp High Lord cupped his fists together and bowed once more. Unconsciously, he had started to speak with a respectful tone.

“It’s no problem. I just have a question to ask you…” Lin Ming said, impassively.

“Young Hero Lin, please ask. I will try to answer to the best of my knowledge.”

“Mm. I want to know, how many months have you been in the Eternal Demon Abyss for?”

As Lin Ming asked this question, High Lord Sandstone was confused.

Duanmu Qun and the others also looked at each other, puzzled. Did this still need to be asked? The three of them had been with Lin Ming, and in total, three and a half months should have passed since they entered the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Although High Lord Sandstone was perplexed, he respectfully replied, "Reporting to Young Hero Lin, it's been just shy of five months since I entered the Eternal Demon Abyss..."

"Five months..." Lin Ming thought for a moment, no surprise on his face. But Duanmu Qun and the others were completely shocked. How could it be five months? It had obviously been three and a half!

They looked towards Lin Ming and immediately understood as they saw that he had an expression as if he had expected this. Perhaps within the 1000 mile forbidden zone, there was something odd about the flow of time.

The truth was that time and space often existed as one existence. If a powerful force field could twist space, then it would likely change the flow of time. It wasn't strange for both time and space to always be affected simultaneously. Thus, Lin Ming had guessed that the time they spent within the 1000 mile forbidden zone was different from outside of it. Now, from High Lord Sandstone's answer, it seemed that the time within was slower.

"Mm, we're alright." Lin Ming waved his hand, thinking of something else.

Back when he was in the King's Cage, he had also entered a cage of space and time, understanding the essence of time there. Time was simply the illusion of change between all living beings. As long as he could remove the heart demon that existed within this illusion, he could guarantee that his mind wouldn't be chaotic and he wouldn't lose himself in the distortion of time.

But now, it seemed as if this wasn't necessarily true!

Even if he held onto his heart and mind, he could still be caught up in a whirlpool of time and space without being aware of it.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming could only sigh.

Time was simply far more illusory and baffling than space. Now, he realized just how much he didn't understand about time, and just how little of its source he had touched upon. His past understanding of time had its place and use, but now put amongst a wider use of the Law, it was no longer feasible.

"Let's go, we're leaving here." Lin Ming no longer thought about the chaotic time within the Eternal Demon Abyss's 1000 mile forbidden zone. This was a level that he was far from being able to understand.

"Where are we going?" Duanmu Qun asked.

"We're leaving the Eternal Demon Abyss!" Lin Ming decisively said.

The Eternal Demon Abyss would only be open for six months. Now that five months had passed, it was around the time they should leave.

As the Imp martial artist heard Lin Ming's words, his eyes widened, "Young Hero Lin, could, could you take us with you?"

The Imp martial artists idea was very simple. Now, there were only three of them left, and it was doubtful they would be able to find any more lucky chances in the last remaining month. They could already count their blessings that the three of them were able to make it out of here safely. Naturally, if they followed Lin Ming, it would be much less dangerous for them.

"Sure!"

Lin Ming answered without hesitation, nodding. Forming a team was a mutually beneficial relationship to begin with.

Thus, the group of them stepped onto the road to return.

Coming here, there was a guide to lead the way. But leaving here, all of that depended on one's own ability. In this nearly half year adventure, the surviving martial artists had accumulated a great deal of experience within the Eternal Demon Abyss. Now, with Lin Ming leading the way, they encountered several minor dangers but all of these were easily resolved. Besides the young Fey girl called Blue Lotus receiving a minor wound, no one else was harmed.

15 days later, the group reached the northern entrance of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

At this time, there were already many people gathered at the entrance. Although there was still half a month until the channel into the Eternal Demon Abyss closed, there were always some matters where arriving earlier was better than coming later. If one were to try arriving just on time and then stumble into some accident or danger and ended up trapped within the Eternal Demon Abyss, dying like that would truly be an injustice.

Seeing Lin Ming, Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin all appear together, this immediately aroused a great uproar!

These four were all characters with unbelievable origins. Without accident, all of them would become Peerless Emperors in the future!

"Lin Ming, that boy! He hasn't died!?"

Rumors of Lin Ming's death had long since spread to everyone's ears. Everyone knew that Lin Ming had returned to a danger zone and disappeared afterwards, most likely having died for his stupidity. But now that they saw Lin Ming safe and sound, and also in the company of Duanmu Qun and the others, all of them were shocked speechless.

"How come Lin Ming is with Duanmu Qun?"

"Didn't they say that he fell into some danger zone? Was he rescued? Did Duanmu Qun rescue him?"

"Maybe… or they might have run into each other later…"

The martial artists all began to speak. Lin Ming was a focus of attention, but Duanmu Qun was too. Although it was acknowledged that Duanmu Qun's talent was slightly inferior to Lin Ming's, in terms of strength, everyone assumed he was actually the stronger of the two. With both of them appearing together, this naturally attracted everyone's attention.

Lin Ming simply didn't care to bother with anyone, ignoring them all. He went and sat down next to a boulder, entering into meditation to adjust his condition.

As for Duanmu Qun and the rest, they also followed Lin Ming. There were many people present that Duanmu Qun knew of. According to Duanmu Qun's character in the past, he was always happy to speak with heroic elites of the world, so he definitely would have gone over to speak to them. But now, he was actually disinclined to do so. After entering the 1000 mile forbidden zone and experiencing so many horrible and wonderful things, Duanmu Qun felt as if his vision of the world had suddenly grown. Now, all of these people could no longer enter into his eyes.

"How interesting!" Not too far away, a black-clothed youth smirked. He was Five Color Tower's Zhuan Yu, who was also a Holy Land descendant. His reputation was only a bit below Duanmu Qun's, and much higher than Lan Xin's.

During this journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss, Zhuan Yu was extremely fortuitous and had obtained a very great lucky chance, causing his strength to rapidly soar!

Because of this, Zhuan Yu's already confident and arrogant nature had become extremely overinflated. He now believed that he had the capital to be equal rivals with Duanmu Qun!

With a slight hesitation, he walked over to Duanmu Qun.

Chapter 659 – The Return of the Polaris Tower Master

Chapter 659 – The Return of the Polaris Tower Master

…

…

…

At the entrance to the Eternal Demon Abyss, the frigid wind was quietly rustling through. As Duanmu Qun was meditating, he saw a black-clothed Goliath youth walking towards him.

“Zhuan Yu?” Duanmu Qun’s eyebrows twisted together.

Duanmu Qun was a Fey and Zhuan Yu was a Goliath. The two of them had already been competitors, and their relationship was antagonistic.

“Duanmu Qun!” Zhuan Yu’s eyes narrowed.

“I’m glad to see that you and Lin Ming both made it through this journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss alive. Wonderful. Truly, I am glad; otherwise I would have been lonely all my life.”

Zhuan Yu’s words purposefully left out Feng Shen and Lan Xin. He didn’t even glance in their direction. Obviously, he felt that those two didn’t have the qualifications to compare to him.

Feng Shen didn’t really care at all about this, but Lan Xin grew angry. This damned Zhuan Yu was not much stronger than she was yet he actually dared to look down on her with such disdain; how could she possibly endure this insult.

“Zhuan Yu, who the hell do you think you are?” Lan Xin said, sharply.

Lan Xin’s fighting words immediately attracted everyone’s eyes. Whether it was Lan Xin, Zhuan Yu, Duanmu Qun, or Lin Ming, they were all outstanding heroic youths that stood at the pinnacle of the 12 Skysplit Towers. If these people were arguing, then naturally there was much fun to see.

Seeing so many people turn towards them consciously or unconsciously, Zhuan Yu smiled. His tone was flippant as he asked, “Little girl Lan, I wonder what sort of lucky chance you managed to obtain within the Eternal Demon Abyss?”

As Lan Xin heard Zhuan Yu speak to her with such disrespect, she became angry. But, as she heard Zhuan Yu mention lucky chances, she actually became somewhat breathless. During this trip to the Eternal Demon Abyss, her harvest was only a few pieces of Demon God Bones, the most precious of those being the earth-step Demon God Bone that she had obtained in the 1000 mile forbidden zone. Although her harvest could be considered good, if this Zhuan Yu dared to be so arrogant like this, then it was likely he found a much greater lucky chance than she did. If she really were to compare, then she would mostly lose.

Not just that, but as she sensed his aura, Lan Xin felt something strange from Zhuan Yu’s body. There was a mysterious fluctuation of energy that startled her!

‘This is…’ Lan Xin’s heart jumped. Zhuan Yu hadn’t made a breakthrough, but the impression he left on others was even scarier.

Lan Xin’s intuition told her that Zhuan Yu really must have obtained some extraordinary lucky chance here, causing his strength to soar to a new level. Currently, it was true that she couldn’t compare to Zhuan Yu!

At this time, Duanmu Qun’s eyes flashed with a trace of blue light. Taking a wide view of the strange energy within Zhuan Yu’s body, he thought for a moment before slowly saying, “I see… so you’ve managed to obtain a contract beast! No wonder you’re making such a ruckus here.”

Although Duanmu Qun appeared calm, he was actually somewhat startled. The contract beast within Zhuan Yu's body was likely a top breed even within the entire Holy Demon Continent! This sort of contract beast could only be found through a stroke of fate. Once found and carefully raised, this sort of being could greatly increase a martial artist's strength.

And listening to Zhuan Yu's meaning, he feared that this contract beast was still young, and yet it was already capable of greatly increasing his strength!

"Good sight! Yes! This is a contract beast! It is also my greatest harvest during this trip into the Eternal Demon Abyss. I have finally obtained a powerful contract beast. Duanmu Qun, I challenge you. After this journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss, once we've both left the Blood Slaughter Steppes… I want a final showdown to see just who is the best!"

Zhuan Yu was incomparably confident in himself. When he first obtained the contract beast, he was already awed by how strong it was. Once it grew into its adult form in the future, its combat strength could be imagined!

Zhuan Yu now firmly believed he had the capital to stand on equal ground with Duanmu Qun, whether it was today or in the future. Even if they started fighting now, he expected that he had at least a 60% chance of victory!

"I'll follow you to the end!"

Duanmu Qun didn't decline. Having matches between talents was very normal. Duanmu Qun feared no one. In fact, in his 20 some years of life, countless outstanding heroic youths had been defeated under his blade.

"Good courage! Great!" Zhuan Yu laughed. Then, he turned to Lin Ming, "You there, Lin Ming, I will wait one year for you. With your talent, you should have the qualifications to fight me then! I hope those stories of you weren't exaggerated, otherwise I would truly be disappointed!"

The news that Lin Ming had become a Titled Asura had long spread throughout the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes. Zhuan Yu believed that in one year, Lin Ming would make considerable progress. But, at the same time, his contract beast would also become that much more terrifying.

He was really looking forward to this battle!

As Zhuan Yu spoke to him, Lin Ming simply sat there in meditation as if he hadn't heard Zhuan Yu at all. As for Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and even the stoic Feng Shen, all three of them were briefly startled before a comical expression lit their faces.

Zhuan Yu wanted to wait a year before he fought Lin Ming?

Lan Xin wanted to laugh but she managed to hold it back. She wasn't interested in alerting Zhuan Yu to anything. In fact, she wanted him to eat his own shit. But what a pity, from Lin Ming's attitude, it seemed that he simply didn't care about fighting someone like Zhuan Yu; this caused Lan Xin to be a bit disappointed.

Seeing Lin Ming completely unaffected by his challenge, Zhuan Yu grew a bit angry. If he was publicly looked down by a human, how could he ever raise his head in the future? "Lin Ming, I just spoke to you, didn't you hear me?"

As Zhuan Yu spoke again, Lin Ming really did open his eyes.

Zhuan Yu coldly snorted, wanting to spit out a few spicy insults. But, at this moment, he discovered that Lin Ming wasn't looking at him, but rather at a far off distance place.

Zhuan Yu became completely incensed, He was about to storm off in a fit of rage, when at this time, he felt his mind grow cold. He could feel at this moment that a powerful energy was quickly approaching. He suddenly turned and saw that several hundred feet away, there was a black-clothed middle-aged man slowly walking out of the fog.

This middle-aged man was extremely tall and his body was wrapped in a thick black cloak. His eyes were as deep and profound as the night stars, and from his appearance, he seemed to be a hybrid of a Giant Demon and Goliath.

This person was… the Polaris Tower Master!

It wasn't just the Polaris Tower Master that had arrived, but behind him was also a Goliath martial artist carrying a great ax. This Goliath martial artist was actually a Tower Master too… the Great Ax Tower Master!

With the sudden appearance of two Tower Masters, all the martial artists present immediately turned silent!

Even Zhuan Yu, who had just obtained a massive lucky chance in the Eternal Demon Abyss and also received a massive boost to his ego, found his heart growing cold, no longer daring to be as brash as he was. In front of a super powerhouse like these Tower Masters, he simply didn't have the ability to resist.

Behind the Polaris Tower Master and the Great Ax Tower Master, there were also four or five other martial artists. Among them was White Stone Tower's High Lord Three Eyes, a well-known figure who was no weaker than High Lord Cloud Demon.

In addition, there were also several other martial artists that Lin Ming recognized. One of them was Heavenly Cloud Tower's High Lord Black Ash, a fellow that had been part of Lin Ming's squad when they first entered into the Eternal Demon Abyss. When Lin Ming entered the Eternal Demon Abyss, this High Lord Black Ash was already testing him, unable to hide the killing intent in his eyes; he even attempted to probe Lin Ming's strength. Finally, High Lord Cloud Demon had to stop at the time, and afterwards, he joined the same squad as Lin Ming. He didn't have any good intentions in doing so, but during the trip he didn't have a chance to do anything either.

Another person that Lin Ming recognized what the top ranked High Lord Bloodfire of Polaris Tower. He was the same as Lin Ming, someone who had a slave seal from the Polaris

Tower Master planted within them, except that he truly was being controlled. Lin Ming thought that during this trip into the Eternal Demon Abyss, High Lord Bloodfire would be used as mere cannon fodder, but he didn't expect that this fellow would actually manage to survive.

After High Lord Black Ash and High Lord Bloodfire saw Lin Ming, they were shocked. Especially High Lord Black Ash – he had seen with his own eyes Lin Ming returning to that damned danger zone. He thought that Lin Ming would undoubtedly die there, but this boy was still alive?

Not just that but… he broke through to Revolving Core!?

What was going on here?

High Lord Black Ash was jealous to the point of hate. Without a doubt, Lin Ming had obtained a great lucky chance within the Eternal Demon Abyss!

'F*ck! How come this boy kept having such good luck!'

High Lord Black Ash's jealousy had turned to bitterness. His eyes moved and he said to the Polaris Tower Master, "Congratulations Sir Polaris, your Polaris Tower now has another powerful High Lord. This Lin Ming definitely obtained some great lucky chance within the Eternal Demon Abyss and broke through to Revolving Core, this is a matter for celebration."

High Lord Black Ash obviously spoke these words loudly because he hated Lin Ming. In particular, he spoke towards the Polaris Tower Master because he wanted to deliberately arouse the other man's desire to rob.

Lin Ming obviously knew what High Lord Black Ash was trying to do. As he looked towards him, his eyes flashed with a trace of naked killing intent.

The Polaris Tower Master faintly smiled, his guess was also similar to High Lord Black Ash's. But, what sort of lucky chance had Lin Ming obtained? He beckoned Lin Ming and said, "Lin Ming, come forwards."

Lin Ming sneered in his heart, his hand tracing his spatial ring as he walked towards the Polaris Tower Master.

"Lin Ming, you've done well. I'm pleased that you've safely returned. Now, what sort of lucky chances did you obtain this time?"

As the Polaris Tower Master spoke, he had a kind and happy smile on his face, as if he really were a general that was grateful their soldier returned alive. As for those last few words, they were said with a true essence sound transmission.

"Some Demon God Bones, and a fruit." Lin Ming answered with a smile. His words were very simple, but there was a subtle flavor of ridicule hiding behind them.

"Oh? A fruit?" The Polaris Tower Master was stunned and then immediately interested. Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, nearly all plants had become extinct. If there was a fruit, then it must have been something extraordinary. "Good, very good. Then, show me this fruit!"

As Lin Ming listened to the Polaris Tower Master's words, he remained completely unmoved. Instead, the sarcasm on his face only became increasingly obvious. It was at this time that the Polaris Tower Master realized that something was wrong.

The Polaris Tower Master grimaced, "Lin Ming, you actually dare to defy my orders?"

"Your orders?" Lin Ming's lips curved up in a sneer, "Why would I listen to your orders?"

These words were no longer said with a true essence sound transmission; all of the martial artists present could hear them. Suddenly, everyone was stunned!

What was happening? Why did Lin Ming say such things to the Polaris Tower Master?

"What did you say?" The Polaris Tower Master's complexion changed. He suddenly linked his mind to the slave seal within Lin Ming's spiritual sea and discovered that it was still there, perfectly intact. So just what was going on here?

Something was wrong!

If the slave seal was intact, how could Lin Ming escape his control?

Could it be that Lin Ming knew some way to isolate the slave seal? Could it be that from the very beginning, Lin Ming had never been controlled, and all of this was an act?

Thinking of this, the Polaris Tower Master’s expression became increasingly ugly!

“Tsk, are you inspecting the slave seal? Rest assured, it is still in my spiritual sea!” Again, Lin Ming’s words weren’t spoken with a true essence sound transmission. As he clearly enunciated each word, everyone was shocked!

Slave seal!?!?

Chapter 660 – Invincible Aura

Chapter 660 – Invincible Aura

…

…

…

Slave Seal!?

The martial artists present weren’t idiots, they knew just what a slave seal was. They replayed the words that Lin Ming had just spoken, “Are you inspecting the slave seal? Rest assured, it is still in my spiritual sea!”

With everything linked together, the martial artists present had a faint guess as to what Lin Ming meant. That was, the Polaris Tower Master had planted a slave seal within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, but he wasn’t able to control Lin Ming?

Just what was going on?

The Polaris Tower Master’s eyes flashed with a blazing killing intent. He stared at Lin Ming like a wild beast, “What garbage nonsense are you spouting off about?”

“Haha! Whether I am talking nonsense or not, it is clearest in your heart. Don’t you find it strange that your slave seal isn’t working on me?”

Lin Ming’s words were aggressive, making the Polaris Tower Master feel as if his heart was dripping blood!

A Tower Master was controlling the talented High Lords of Skysplit Tower with slave seals! If these sorts of rumors spread out, then the ensuing chaos could be imagined!

Feng Shen, Duanmu Qun, and Lan Xin all had changed expressions. They absolutely believed everything that Lin Ming said. Now, they were all glad that they weren't subjected to such treatment. To have a slave seal planted within them… it was a fate worse than death!

But what method had Lin Ming used to cause the Polaris Tower Master's slave seal to fail?

"Lin Ming, if you dare to slander me one more time, I will kill you!"

The Polaris Tower Master was worked into an extreme rage. He absolutely didn't expect that Lin Ming had some method to circumvent his slave seal and lead him around in circles!

This boy was so young and yet he had such shrewd methods, he absolutely could not be allowed to live!

"Hahahahaha!" Lin Ming wantonly laughed, not even caring for the Polaris Tower Master's threat. "Me, slander you? You planted a slave seal in my spiritual sea and just now used a true essence sound transmission to order me to give you everything I obtained within the Eternal Demon Abyss. How about it, are you not going to admit this?

"That's right… there's also High Lord Bloodfire who has been controlled by you. Now, he's nothing more than a useless zombie. Have someone investigate his situation and you'll immediately understand. Which High Lord would like to investigate him?"

As Lin Ming spoke, he looked towards High Lord Bloodfire. High Lord Bloodfire's complexion immediately changed and he shouted, "Lin Ming, what nonsense are you speaking!?"

High Lord Bloodfire was completely controlled by the Polaris Tower Master; it was simply the Polaris Tower Master speaking through him.

"Bloodfire, you are truly a tragedy!" Lin Ming shook his head, no longer bothering with Bloodfire.

High Lord Bloodfire was also controlled?

Facing this super bomb that Lin Ming threw out again, all of those that were doubtful from the start now had their suspicions confirmed!

It was impossible for Lin Ming to speak so irresponsibly like this. A simple probe of High Lord Bloodfire would immediately reveal his secret.

And now, it was impossible for the Polaris Tower master to unravel the slave seal in High Lord Bloodfire's spiritual sea. Once it was undone, High Lord Bloodfire would immediately obtain his freedom. After being a zombie-like servant for so many years, he would immediately turn on his ex-master!

No matter what, the charges against the Polaris Tower Master were now all proven!

For Polaris Tower to use slave seals to control the talents there, once this news spread out, it would inevitably lead to anger from several of the major Holy Lands. They would join forces to exert pressure on the Blood Slaughter Steppes, forcing them to punish the Polaris Tower Master!

After all, all of them had descendants who had gone to the Blood Slaughter Steppes to gain experience. How could they remain calm with such a Tower Master controlling a Skysplit Tower. Not to mention, the Polaris Tower Master was also the son of the Blood Slaughter Steppes' ruler. Once he inherited his father's position in the future, the consequences would be disastrous!

This time Lin Ming had truly pierced through the sky!

All of the martial artists realized just how major the consequences of this would be, all of their complexions changed.

"This Lin Ming doesn't care for his life, he actually dares to confront the Polaris Tower Master like this."

"Even if this is true, the Polaris Tower Master is bound to kill Lin Ming out of anger!"

“Lin Ming is insane! Now he has even offended the ruler of the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes!”

At this time, Zhuan Yu was standing near Lin Ming. Seeing the Polaris Tower Master reveal a pure killing intent, he subconsciously gulped and retreated several steps back. Although he was arrogant, it was impossible for him to be as arrogant as Lin Ming and openly expose the fact that the Polaris Tower Master planted slave seals in others. This was the same as suicide! Lin Ming must have encountered some hopeless situation within the Eternal Demon Abyss that made him go crazy! As Zhuan Yu thought this, he retreated at an even faster pace.

Not too far away, High Lord Black Ash also stepped back, eagerly awaiting the show. In his opinion, Lin Ming had bitten off more than he could chew. Since he dared to challenge the authority of the Polaris Tower Master, he would die here without a grave!

The Polaris Tower Master began moving forwards, one step at a time, as the field of energy around him became increasingly strong, forcing all the other martial artists to retreat. “To dare slander a Tower Master, to dare slander the reputation of my Blood Slaughter Steppes, Lin Ming, you have committed a crime worthy of death!”

“Oh? Crime worthy of death? Hahaha!” Lin Ming laughed as he extracted the Purple Comet Spear, “In the Blood Slaughter Steppes, strength is king! Any crime here will not be adjudicated by you!”

“Good! Very good! After so many years of me not taking action, it seems that everyone has already forgotten my strength, and also the absolute disparity between a Tower Master and a High Lord! Now, I will give you one last chance to fall to your knees and admit your mistakes. I will cut off your arms and let you live, or I will rip you apart!”

As the Polaris Tower Master spoke, his aura suddenly erupted like a great volcano!

All of the surrounding martial artists were swept up by this strength. The weaker ones were forced to step back, their faces paling.

It had to be known that all of these martial artists were either High Lords or top Heavenly Demon Seven Stars! If they were forced back and shaken by just the Polaris Tower Master's aura, then his true strength could be imagined!

As for Lin Ming, he bore the brunt of this aura and directly withstood it. However, his expression was still as calm as before, as if this awesome aura from the Polaris Tower Master was nothing more than a gentle spring breeze!

"This boy!"

The Polaris Tower Master's eyes flashed with a severe light. He had wanted to erupt his complete aura and force Lin Ming to kneel before him, but he never imagined that Lin Ming would withstand it so easily!

"You want to use your aura to force me to my knees, creating the false pretense that I was admitting fault and then kill me afterwards? How unfortunate, but your aura is just too pitifully weak!"

Lin Ming sneered and took a sudden step forward.

The Heavenly Demon martial intent's Asura force field erupted!

Bang!

Since breaking through to Revolving Core, this was the first time that Lin Ming had completely released his Asura force field. A terrifying surge of energy seemed to break through the void, shattering the earth underneath Lin Ming's feet and causing a web of cracks to snake outwards!

The Polaris Tower Master's aura was directly crushed to nothing by this force field! If the Polaris Tower Master's aura was like a flood of water, then Lin Ming's Asura force field was like a mighty flood of steel, washing away all with overwhelming force, crushing the Polaris Tower Master's aura and directly suppressing him!

The Polaris Tower Master's body shook and the ground underneath him cracked part!

As his body visibly trembled, he was nearly forced a step back.

"What!?"

Seeing this scene, all of the martial artists present were stunned. Lin Ming had actually turned the tables and almost forced the Polaris Tower Master to retreat?

How could Lin Ming have such an amazingly strong aura?

Although one's aura didn't represent their full strength, it could represent a great deal of it.

As the Asura force field became increasingly strong, all of the surrounding martial artists felt a massive pressure envelop them. From their body to their organs to their bones to their soul, from head to toe, this pressure came crashing down upon them!

Because of this pressure, all of them felt as if they couldn't breathe, their heartbeats heavy.

What was going on? The martial artists present were alarmed, forced to retreat even further.

200 feet away, Zhuan Yu didn't think he would need to retreat again. But, facing Lin Ming's terrifying aura, he felt his blood slowing down in his body. His blood slowing down was manageable, but the crux of this was that he could see from the aura of the two that this fight that was about to break out would be earth-shattering. He was afraid that he wouldn't be able to resist it!

Thus, Zhuan Yu had no choice but to draw back even further. At this time, his complexion had become extremely ugly. He found it difficult to imagine that the one who sent out this terrifying aura was that Lin Ming!

“Hey, Zhuan Yu! How does it feel? I remember that you said you would give Lin Ming a year before challenging him, right?”

An amused woman’s voice suddenly sounded in his ears. Turning around, he could see that the one speaking was Lan Xin.

She had already retreated 300 feet away and was now looking at Zhuan Yu with her lips forming a bright smile, a sly and elated expression on her face.

Zhuan Yu immediately turned the color of a liver. He now knew why Lin Ming hadn’t even bothered acknowledging his challenge in the beginning. This was because the gap in their strength was just far too great, so he hadn’t even cared for him!

Realizing this, Zhuan Yu felt his heart beat with panic, especially after seeing Lan Xin’s taunting smile.

He wanted to spit out some ruthless curses about her entire family, but he didn’t have the courage to do so…

Without a doubt, as time passed, the difference between him and Lin Ming would only grow. A contract beast would be nothing against someone like Lin Ming!

As Lan Xin saw Zhuan Yu’s face like a bitter gourd and his bewildered expression, her heart was incomparably free.

‘Little boy, if you want to be so rampant in front of this aunt just because you got a little pet, then you deserve what you get!’

……………

“Good! Good young fellow! You truly have hidden so many secrets!” The Polaris Tower Master’s eyes flashed with a cold light. He never imagined that Lin Ming’s aura would actually surpass his own!

He could tell that this aura that Lin Ming emitted was actually a force field, but, he didn't have a force field of his own. To try to compare with just his own aura, this had caused him to suffer a major loss.

'What sort of force field is this? Even with my cultivation, being covered by this force field has caused my strength to weaken by a great deal. Just where did Lin Ming obtain this force field from?'

The killing intent in the Polaris Tower Master's heart became increasingly thick. He could no longer compete with just his aura; it was time to fight!

'This boy absolutely cannot be allowed to live, otherwise he will become the greatest threat the Blood Slaughter Steppes has ever seen! One Eightfall War Emperor is already more than enough. If another one were to appear, then the consequences would be inconceivable!'

The Polaris Tower Master's mind flashed with this thought. Then, demon essence erupted from his entire body. With a shout, he rushed forwards like a savage tiger, his fist smashing out at Lin Ming!

A fist?

Lin Ming's eyes narrowed. He knew that the Polaris Tower Master's favored weapon was the great sword.

Without moving, Lin Ming faced the Polaris Tower Master.

With a thought, the Heretical God Force completely opened, and 90% of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates' strength was brought forth.

Lin Ming's fist came pounding out!

Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!

'Fist to fist? What an utter idiot!'

The Polaris Tower Master grinned maliciously. Although the weapon he habitually used was the great sword, he also excelled at fisticuffs.

‘Little punk, since you want to die so badly, watch my fist break apart your arm first!’

Thinking of this, the Polaris Tower Master’s strength rose even more!

Bang!

In the instant that the two fists collided, a terrifying airwave broke out. Space trembled, the earth cracked, and several martial artists felt as if they lost hearing in their ears.

Peng peng peng!

The sound of heavy footsteps rang out. After this one exchange of moves, the Polaris Tower Master was actually forced back again and again. With each step he took back, the earth underneath his feet would explode, rupturing apart. Only after taking 10 steps back did he manage to steady himself, a look of horror dawning on his face.

How could his fist be so hard!?!?

Chapter 661 – Glory of the Battle Spirit

Chapter 661 – Glory of the Battle Spirit

…

…

…

The Polaris Tower Master was forced back?

In that collision between Lin Ming and the Polaris Tower Master, it was the Polaris Tower Master who was actually forced back!

All of the martial artists present were stunned. It was true that Lin Ming's aura was no weaker than the Polaris Tower Master's, but aura didn't represent a martial artist's complete strength, and there was also something strange and tricky about Lin Ming's aura. Moreover, the Polaris Tower Master's accumulated fame and strength were too great; it was hard for anyone to imagine that a heroic youth could be stronger than him.

But now, in a single exchange of blows, Lin Ming had only been a little shaken, but the Polaris Tower Master was actually forced back 10 whole steps. Although the Polaris Tower Master wasn't injured, his blood still tumbled and he had eaten no small loss.

At this point, the Polaris Tower Master's complexion was extremely ugly. He thought that Lin Ming was only using some sort of special force field to suppress his aura, but his strength wasn't too special.

He didn't use his sword for his first attack because with his status as a Tower Master, having to go all out to deal with a junior was a bit shameful. Even if he won in the end, people would still criticize him.

In fact, although the Polaris Tower Master's weapon of choice was a great sword, his fist skills were still extremely powerful. The reason he fought with his fist was because he wanted to use Lin Ming to demonstrate his power and authority. But he never thought that if he didn't use his sword, Lin Ming also wouldn't use his spear and would fight with fists instead!

Fist against fist, the Polaris Tower Master was confident that he could break Lin Ming's arm. But, after their fists collided, the Polaris Tower Master discovered that what he hit clearly wasn't a fist but an iron hammer instead! Not only was Lin Ming's fist terrifyingly adamantine, but there was also a strange power of vibration within it, nearly causing his own arm to be broken.

This boy, was he really human?

Although he guessed that Lin Ming must have practiced some sort of body transformation technique, it was impossible for the human body to be tempered to this degree. This was a durability that was comparable to a treasure! Not even the Giant Demons or Goliaths, races well known for their formidable bodies, would be able to hold a candle to him!

Just where had this abnormally monstrous freak come from!?

The Polaris Tower Master was enraged. He suddenly pulled out a heavy sword from his spatial ring and pointed it straight at Lin Ming!

Huuu –

A blazing black flame ignited atop the Polaris Tower Master's great sword, the aura overwhelming!

"Medium-grade heaven-step treasure!?"

All of the surrounding martial artists cried out in alarm. For heaven-step treasures, there were enormous differences between every rank. Within Skysplit Tower, because the High Lords overflowed with far too much wealth, it was common to see them with heaven-step treasures. But, these were mostly the lowest of heaven-step treasures. As for medium-grade heaven-step treasures, only very few people had seen them before.

“No, that’s not a medium-grade heaven-step treasure but a peak low-grade heaven-step treasure; it’s only a step away from becoming a medium-grade heaven-step treasure.”

Everyone looked at Lin Ming. Lin Ming thought for a moment, and then took out the Purple Comet Spear from his spatial ring.

The Purple Comet Spear was originally crafted from top materials. But, those were considered top materials only relative to a fourth-grade sect like Divine Phoenix Island. Moreover, the one who forged the Purple Comet Spear was Ancestor Chi Yan who was only a middle Revolving Core powerhouse.

Thus, the Purple Comet Spear within Lin Ming’s hand was only a peak high-grade earth-step treasure.

“Lin Ming’s spear is only a high-grade earth-step treasure?”

As everyone saw Lin Ming’s spear, they were surprised before shaking their heads in disappointment.

In fact, as an early Revolving Core powerhouse, it was already excellent that he had a high-grade earth-step treasure weapon. But, placed within the Blood Slaughter Steppes where resources were immeasurably plentiful, and also placed within this group of High Lords and Holy Land descendants, this high-grade earth-step treasure appeared rather shabby instead.

When compared to the Polaris Tower Master’s great sword, it especially paled. There was a difference of a large boundary between the two. With a mere high-grade earth-step treasure to resist a medium-grade heaven-step treasure, how could he even defend against it?

“The difference is too great! Even if Lin Ming is strong, he will suffer too much because of the difference in their treasures. There is no way he’ll be able to fight!”

The use of a treasure did not lie mainly in its ability to increase a martial artist’s combat strength, but rather the degree of its own hardness!

If an inferior treasure were to hit a top ranked treasure, it was possible for the lesser one to break in half!

Even Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and Feng Shen were feeling nervous for Lin Ming.

“Haha! Lin Ming, you want to use that trash spear to face my Heaven Opening Sword, you are really asking to die!” The Polaris Tower Master wickedly grinned as he looked at the Purple Comet Spear in Lin Ming’s hand, his voice filled with contempt and ridicule.

At the start, the Polaris Tower master had wanted to win in a beautiful and awesome manner so that he could establish his authority in front of everyone. But now, after that brief period of fighting, he had changed his mind. Lin Ming’s power had already exceeded his every expectation. As long as he could win then he would be satisfied!

“Who lives and who dies, we will know after this battle!” After speaking, Lin Ming’s aura began to rise. Underneath his feet, the land began to rupture from his increasingly sharp aura.

“Humph! Your end is imminent and yet you remain such a flippant piece of garbage. Lin Ming, you dared to slander me, you dared to slander the Blood Slaughter Steppes, and for this, I shall take your dog life now!”

The Polaris Tower Master gave a loud shot and stepped forwards, the land breaking beneath his feet!

His body turned into a stream of light that shot towards Lin Ming, the great sword in his hand cutting down like the peak of a mountain!

This sword was actually aimed towards Lin Ming's Purple Comet Spear! He wanted to cut apart Lin Ming's Purple Comet Spear. As long as he succeeded, it was the same as chopping off a tiger's fangs. Lin Ming's combat strength would drop to the floor!

As the surrounding martial artists saw this, they all thought in their heart that the Polaris Tower Master's methods weren't honorable. But, in a struggle of life and death, the winner was king and the loser was the villain. As for what method was used, none of that was important.

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light. The Heretical God Force opened to the extreme, the Eight Inner Hidden Gates erupted, and the complete battle spirit was fused into the Purple Comet Spear.

A battle spirit was invisible and intangible, but it could be attached to any treasure, turning it into an incomparably sharp killing weapon. A trivial withered leaf with a battle spirit attached to it could cut apart a treasure!

Lin Ming poured his battle spirit into the Purple Comet Spear, and thus, the originally insufficient quality Purple Comet Spear began to shine with a shimmering greenish yellow light; this was the glory of a bronze battle spirit!

Clang!

The Polaris Tower Master's heavy sword smashed into the Purple Comet Spear, pressing down on it like a great mountain. The earth underneath Lin Ming's feet exploded and the Purple Comet Spear fiercely bent, but this strike was actually abruptly kept off by Lin Ming!

"What!?"

The Polaris Tower Master was shocked. He never thought that his all-out strike, combined with a peak low-grade heaven-step Heaven Opening Sword would actually not be able to break apart a high-grade earth-step treasure spear!

The Polaris Tower Master was naturally a greatly experienced genius of his generation. An idea suddenly rose in his heart… could this greenish gray light be… a battle spirit?

Impossible! This was impossible!

Not only was the Polaris Tower Master shocked, but all the surrounding martial artists were dumbfounded as they saw that the Purple Comet Spear didn't break. However, in that split-second, no one had time to think about what just happened.

There was only a whistling sound, and then because of the heavy pressure, the curved Purple Comet Spear suddenly snapped back like a whip, shooting straight towards the cheek of the Polaris Tower Master.

The Polaris Tower Master could no longer afford to think about just what that greenish gray light was on the spear. He pulled back his Heaven Opening Sword and quickly drew away. But even so, the power of thunder still snuck into his body like the strike of a viper

Chi chi chi!

The Polaris Tower Master felt half of his body instantly paralyzed. That power of thunder also had Lin Ming's battle spirit attached to it!

Just that tiny wisp of battle spirit caused the originally insufficiently ranked Thunder Soul to become incomparably dangerous!

The Polaris Tower Master wretchedly coughed. But at this moment, Lin Ming had already taken a step forwards. His feet stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the void and all space seemed to lose meaning underneath his steps. It was as if Lin Ming had directly teleported in front of the Polaris Tower Master, the spear in his hand already thrusting down!

"Ahhh!"

The Polaris Tower Master fiercely bit down on his tongue, forcefully awakening himself with pain. He raised the Heaven Opening Sword in his hand and slashed towards Lin Ming.

He was trying to use a purely offensive strike to force Lin Ming to retreat.

But in this moment, the flow of time seemed to slow down around the Polaris Tower Master. His sword seemed stuck in a bog even as Lin Ming's spear shot out like a blazing meteor, its speed reaching the extreme!

Concept of Time!?

The Polaris Tower Master's eyes turned bloodshot. Under the threat of death, he erupted with 120% of his potential, emitting a terrifying energy and using it to directly burst out of the time cage. At the moment that Lin Ming's spear thrust down, he moved completely contrary to the laws of physics, forcing that spear that would have struck his heart to stab into his left shoulder instead!

With the infusion of battle spirit, Lin Ming's spear cut through the Polaris Tower Master's protective demon essence like it was tofu, stabbing his shoulder and penetrating straight through!

Blood shot out; Lin Ming's spear had broken the Polaris Tower Master's clavicle!

"Ah!"

The Polaris Tower Master's eyes flashed with the light of insanity. He used his muscles to firmly clamp down on the Purple Comet Spear and then slashed his sword towards Lin Ming's neck! He wanted to use this opportunity with the Purple Comet Spear stuck in his body to cut off Lin Ming's head!

Lin Ming only coldly sneered. True essence erupted from the Purple Comet Spear. Each wisp of true essence had a touch of battle spirit fused with it, shooting out like a pack of steel needles. The Polaris Tower Master's meridians and muscles in his left shoulder had become a twisted mess!

As a result, the strength of the muscles imprisoning his spear no longer existed.

Lin Ming's figure dodged backwards, easily escaping the Polaris Tower Master's sword and leaving a massive gaping wound in the Polaris Tower Master's left shoulder!

Blood flowed like a river, the meat there ground into a blur.

This was the terror of a battle spirit. Its name as the strongest attack wasn't just from its unmatched sharpness, but also its terrifying destructive power!

The Polaris Tower Master fell down, staggering backwards several steps as he used his great sword to support himself, only then being able to come to a standstill.

As the martial artists present saw this, all of them were shocked speechless. They had thought that Lin Ming's strength might be above that of the Polaris Tower Master, but the quality of his treasure weapon was simply too inferior. Overall, he was at a disadvantage. They never imagined that after several exchanges of moves, the Polaris Tower Master would be the one who was severely wounded!

Lin Ming had simply used an overwhelming strength to completely suppress the Polaris Tower Master without giving him the chance to resist.

At this time, Zhuan Yu's lips were shivering. He realized now that the difference between him and Lin Ming was a great boundary, like a Xiantian martial artist compared to a Revolving Core martial artist, or a Revolving Core martial artist compared to a Life Destruction master.

How ridiculous that he had challenged Lin Ming to a battle a year from now; he really didn't know what it meant to die!

"Great Ax, help me!"

The Polaris Tower Master clutched his shoulder and pleaded to the Great Ax Tower Master for help.

The Great Ax Tower Master gulped, his heart bitter. He certainly knew the true identity of the Polaris Tower Master. If he watched on helplessly as the Polaris Tower Master died in front of him, then the ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes would never forgive him.

Chapter 662 – Sentence You To Death

Chapter 662 – Sentence You To Death

…

…

…

At this time, the Great Ax Tower Master had fallen into a dilemma. Even if he joined together with the Polaris Tower Master to deal with Lin Ming, that didn't mean they would necessarily be able to win. But, if he didn't save him from death, then the ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes would shift the blame for his child's death onto him. At that time, him being killed wouldn't be strange.

As the Great Ax Tower Master hesitated, how could Lin Ming give the Polaris Tower Master a chance to catch his breath? Lin Ming stepped forwards and once again seemed to teleport in front of the Polaris Tower Master, his spear thrusting towards his heart!

Bang!

The Polaris Tower Master drew back, injured once more. Before, he didn't understand Lin Ming's Concept of Time, but now he was finally prepared for it, so the loss he suffered was less. But, he was still injured. If this continued, he would be defeated sooner or later.

"Lin Ming, I am the son of the Blood Slaughter Steppes' ruler! If you kill me now then that's the same as dying with me!"

The Polaris Tower Master frantically shouted like a madman. After being beaten up so miserably by Lin Ming, he had no choice but to reveal his identity!

"What? The son of the Blood Slaughter Steppes' ruler?"

Most of the martial artists present didn't know the identity of the Polaris Tower Master. Hearing him suddenly say this left everyone shocked. The ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes was the only twelve-winged Heavenly Demon in the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes. It was said that his cultivation had already broken through to the Emperor level!

The Polaris Tower Master was actually the son of the Blood Slaughter Steppes' ruler?

This news was inexplicably shocking to everyone. But, Lin Ming didn't seem to care about this. Who cared if he was the son of the Steppes Master? He would still die the same!

Spear after spear stabbed towards the Polaris Tower Master's fatal points. Lin Ming was determined to kill the Polaris Tower Master!

"Ahh!" Facing Lin Ming's storm of attacks, the Polaris Tower Master had no choice but to use his clan's secret technique!

"Lin Ming, you're the one who forced me! I will bet a hundred years of my cultivation to die with you!"

The Polaris Tower Master bit down on the tip of his tongue and spat out a mouthful of brilliant blood. On top of the Heaven Opening Sword, a blazing red flame ignited!

Heaven Shattering Strike!

A sword cut out. The blood vessels on the Polaris Tower Master's arms ruptured, the void trembled, and the earth began to tear open, creating ten foot wide fissures everywhere!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. Above the Purple Comet Spear, thunder and fire wove together.

Penetrating Rainbow!

Bang!

In a fierce collision, all of the energy within a few hundred feet of the two was blown away into a raging vacuum.

The Polaris Tower Master was sent flying backwards and Lin Ming was also swept backwards by the aftermath of the attack. As he was forced back, a strange energy snuck into his right arm like a serpent!

The Purple Comet Spear was still a treasure that was an entire boundary of quality lower than the Heaven Opening Sword. Since Lin Ming had to separate a portion of his battle spirit to protect the Purple Comet Spear, he wasn't able to display its greatest striking power.

Chi!

The clothes on Lin Ming's arm suddenly burst apart. His body flew backwards, the blood within him tumbling.

As for the Polaris Tower Master, he was in an even more miserable state. He crashed into the earth, collapsing the ground beneath him and causing dust and smoke to fly up everywhere.

Feeling the Purple Comet Spear tremble in his hands, Lin Ming frowned. With such an intense impact, it was truly somewhat difficult for the Purple Comet Spear to withstand it.

And just at this time, Lin Ming could only hear a sword wind rushing at his side. He turned around and saw that 100 feet away, High Lord Bloodfire had grasped a thick broadsword and was rushing towards him.

Seeing this, Lin Ming shook his head. High Lord Bloodfire was controlled by the Polaris Tower Master's slave seal, he was beyond all medicine or hope. The only chance he had was if the Polaris Tower Master died. However, High Lord Bloodfire was his most loyal servant, so how could he allow something like that to happen?

Lin Ming's spear potential revolved, true essence erupted!

The battle spirit fused into the Purple Comet Spear. Brilliant flames twisted on the spear shaft as thick arcs of purple electricity sizzled atop it, blinding all of the martial artists present!

“Chasing Thunder!”

Lin Ming had poured his battle spirit into this spear as well as fusing the Concept of Space and Time within it. Lin Ming believed that even if High Lord Bloodfire didn’t die, he would still be grievously wounded.

However, he didn’t expect that High Lord Bloodfire would continue rushing directly towards Lin Ming’s Purple Comet Spear with no intention of dodging!

Puff!

The Purple Comet Spear easily penetrated through High Lord Bloodfire.

But at this time, a demented light flashed on High Lord Bloodfire’s face. He actually rushed towards Lin Ming even as the long spear passed through his body, stretching out his arms to claw towards Lin Ming!

Both of High Lord Bloodfire’s arms held onto Lin Ming’s shoulders, his eyes a bright blood red, “Die with me!” High Lord Bloodfire erupted with all of his strength; he wanted to hold down Lin Ming so that the Polaris Tower Master could strike through both of them!

“You are truly hopeless!”

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a killing intent. Raising his arms, the strength within his body rocketed into the sky! With a ‘peng peng peng’ sound, a bloody fog erupted from High Lord Bloodfire’s body.

“Well done, Bloodfire!”

The Polaris Tower Master gave a loud shout and slashed out with his sword. From his posture, it was apparent he wanted to cut apart Lin Ming along with High Lord Bloodfire!

“What a wretched slave.”

With Lin Ming held down by High Lord Bloodfire, he wasn't able to move for a short period of time. Seeing the Polaris Tower Master's sword cut down at him, Lin Ming's expression didn't change at all. His feet stepped atop Golden Roc Shattering the Void and the space around him suddenly distorted.

When he was in the King's Cage, Lin Ming had been able to break through the space cage using the Concept of Space, much less something like High Lord Bloodfire's hands.

Space distorted, and High Lord Bloodfire suddenly found himself grasping onto nothing at all. But at this time, the Polaris Tower Master's sword was already cutting downwards!

Puff!

A sword cut through him from head to toe. High Lord Bloodfire was directly split in half!

Blood showered down like a heavy rain!

As for Lin Ming, he came floating down 200 feet away, not even a single hair on his head harmed.

All of the martial artists were shocked. They had only seen the light around Lin Ming twist a bit, and then he had used some unknown method to break out of High Lord Bloodfire's hold, instantly flickering 200 feet away!

"What a magnificent display of the Concept of Space!"

Duanmu Qun sighed with emotion. He also had many understandings into the Concept of Space, but it was impossible for him to achieve Lin Ming's degree.

"Damn!"

After mistakenly killing his own slave, the Polaris Tower Master was in an extremely poor mood. He began to become increasingly aware that he might really die here today!

But at this moment, from High Lord Bloodfire's corpse, a pure infernal energy began to leak out. Half of this infernal energy dissipated, and the other half split in half again, one part flying to Lin Ming and the other part flying to the Polaris Tower Master.

High Lord Bloodfire had died under the hands of both Lin Ming and the Polaris Tower Master, thus the infernal energy had gone to the both of them. Lin Ming had attacked first, so he absorbed more infernal energy.

The two blobs of infernal energy separately flew to the two. With a loud roar, the phantom of a ten-winged Heavenly Demon appeared behind them, directly swallowing the infernal energy.

Seeing this, all of the martial artists present were shocked. The phantom of the ten-winged Heavenly Demon that appeared behind Lin Ming was in no way smaller than the Polaris Tower Master's!

The tens wings were completely clear, and the sixth pair of wings was also in the process of forming…

This was actually… the peak of ten wings!

Heavens!

When did Lin Ming's Heavenly Demon Tattoo achieve the peak of 10 wings?

All of the martial artists present were shaken to their core as an inexplicable chill crawled up their spines. A twelve-winged Heavenly Demon was the ultimate taboo existence of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. Lin Ming was already at the peak of ten wings. Could he be planning on becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon? Did he want to take the entirety of the Blood Slaughter Steppes as his enemy?

How audacious! How bold!

Zhuan Yu and High Lord Black Ash had gone completely pale. They finally knew just how crazy Lin Ming was. Compared to this madman, they were simply little children monkeying around.

Even Great Ax's expression changed. If Lin Ming killed the Polaris Tower Master, would that be enough for him to become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon? If that happened, then the ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes would inevitably vent all of his rage onto him!

At this moment, there was a sound of distant wind and rustling clothes. Everyone turned around to look, seeing a black-robed old man walk in with the wind.

This old man was the host of this trip into the Eternal Demon Abyss!

"Elder Xiao, save me!" As the Polaris Tower Master saw this black-robed Elder appear, his face lit up with joy. In his darkest moment, he had found a final straw to grasp, fervently calling out for help.

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up… this old man!

He remembered that this old fellow was a supervisory envoy of Blood Slaughter Divine Temple. He was solely responsible for the opening of the Eternal Demon Abyss. He had once said that if anyone's Heavenly Demon Tattoo had gone beyond the middle ten-winged Heavenly Demon stage, then he would personally disperse some of their infernal energy.

Another enemy had appeared!

Lin Ming gently stroked his spear, his expression calm even as his eyes shined with a blazing killing intent.

"Lin Ming!" As the black-robed Elder caught up, he arrived just in time to see the ten-winged Heavenly Demon phantom disappear back into Lin Ming's body.

"You've secretly condensed your Heavenly Demon Tattoo to the peak of 10 wings; how many High Lords have you killed during this trip to the Eternal Demon Abyss? Now you have even attacked your superior and committed the crime of killing a High Lord! Could it be that you want to plunder the infernal energy of the Polaris Tower Master and become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, becoming mortal enemies with the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes!?

"You've simultaneously committed the crimes of fomenting rebellion, murdering a High Lord, and reckless killing! With these three crimes side by side, I hereby sentence you to death!"

As the black-robed Elder spoke, he extracted a lance from his spatial ring and pointed it straight at Lin Ming.

"Sentence me to death? Hahaha..." Lin Ming chuckled, "If you want to kill me, then why spout so much crap. What the Polaris Tower Master has done to me, everyone here is well aware! Good! Since you want to play so badly then you're welcome to join in on the fun! My Heavenly Demon Tattoo just reached the peak of 10 wings. Even if I kill the Polaris Tower Master, it won't be enough for me to reach 12 wings. But, with your pathetic old bones added to the mix, it might just be enough!"

"What a brave young fellow! You've already reached the end of the line yet you remain so blithely arrogant! Great Ax!" The black-robed old man suddenly called out to the Great Ax Tower Master.

The Great Ax Tower Master looked extremely distressed. He had originally been waiting for the Polaris Tower Master to be killed by Lin Ming, and then he had been planning to flee the Blood Slaughter Steppes to avoid the wrath of the Steppes Master.

But he never thought that at this critical moment, Elder Xiao would suddenly arrive. Now it was impossible for him to hide any further.

But then again, if the three of them joined forces, killing Lin Ming might not be too difficult. On the other hand, if he didn't help and Lin Ming killed the other two and still couldn’t condense his twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo, then Lin Ming might even turn his spear onto him.

Thinking of this, Great Ax stepped forwards and stood beside the black-robed old man, extracting a double-headed ax from his spatial ring.

Three great masters simultaneously faced Lin Ming.

The martial artists present felt their throats twitch. Two Tower Masters and a supervisor of the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple. Any one of them was a remarkable and mind-blowing character within the Blood Slaughter Steppes. Now, all three of them had joined forced to deal with a mere junior.

“Three against one?” Lin Ming looked at the black-robed Elder and his lips curved up in a taunting smile. “I thought you were quite powerful and would be able to handle me alone. But it appears that you’re actually… mediocre.”

“Humph, you don’t have to try stirring me up. From ancient times the winner has always been the hero and the loser becomes the villain. There is no shame in using your complete strength. Now, Lin Ming, prepare to die!” The black-robed Elder remained unmoved. Within the Eternal Demon Abyss it was impossible for them to reach the outside world. They could only depend on the manpower available here to kill Lin Ming. By attacking together, their chances of killing him were that much higher.

Chapter 663 – Heaven-step White Spear

Chapter 663 – Heaven-step White Spear

The chapter title is a spoiler, hover over it to read it now or see it at the bottom

…

…

…

"This damn old fox!"

Lin Ming knit his eyebrows together. With his current strength, having to simultaneously deal with Elder Xiao, the Great Ax Tower Master, and the severely wounded Polaris Tower Master would be somewhat difficult.

The strength of these two new challengers might be no less than that of the Polaris Tower Master!

When Lin Ming had faced the Polaris Tower Master, he had continuously attacked him several times in a row. Although he had managed to beat him into the ground, he still hadn't been able to kill him. Now, with three of them together and mutually supporting each other, wanting to kill any one of them would be much more difficult.

Moreover, this Elder Xiao seemed to be very cautious. If Lin Ming wanted to defeat him, he would have to expend himself.

"Great Ax! We'll attack him from both sides!"

Elder Xiao said with a true essence sound transmission. Great Ax didn't want to be sucked into this mess, but now there was no turning back for him.

Together, they both rushed towards Lin Ming in a pincer position!

Holding a double-headed ax, the Great Ax Tower Master's attack seemed truly epic. As for Elder Xiao, with the lance in his hands, his strike appeared incomparably sharp. The weapons in both of their hands were equally heaven-step treasures!

But, the Purple Comet Spear within Lin Ming's hands was only an earth-step treasure. Facing the violent impact about to occur, it would be far too difficult to use his high-grade earth-step Purple Comet Spear to block both attacks!

A great portion of his battle spirit needed to be branched out in order to stabilize the Purple Comet Spear, so the part he could use for attacking was naturally lessened. This caused Lin Ming to not dare to recklessly face these two in a melee clash, otherwise he would inevitably be injured!

At this critical moment, Lin Ming's pupils shrank. His feet stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void as space twisted beneath him. In the next moment he had actually dashed through the gap between Elder Xiao and the Great Ax Tower Master's attacks, directly rushing towards the Polaris Tower Master!

To wound 10 enemies was far inferior to killing off one!

Lin Ming's first focus of attack was the Polaris Tower Master!

"Lin Ming, do you want to die!?" The Polaris Tower Master was furious. But at this time, he truly had overspent himself. He began to rapidly combust his blood essence as he cut down at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming completely ignored this attack, his spear still thrusting towards the Polaris Tower Master's heart. Even if he had to receive a small wound in exchange, he would still desire to kill this man.

As Lin Ming was about to kill the Polaris Tower with his spear, he suddenly heard a loud whistling of wind behind him. Elder Xiao was chasing after him with his lance in front!

Lin Ming instantly determined that if he killed the Polaris Tower Master, he was bound to be stuck for a moment. At that time, he would definitely be struck hard by Elder Xiao.

This damn old man!

Lin Ming wildly grit his teeth and slammed his feet into the ground, his body suddenly jumping up from the recoil as he abruptly recovered his spear potential while dodging the Polaris Tower Master's sword!

Hu-!

After taking back his spear potential, Lin Ming could feel the blood within his body tumbling madly about, his face flushing red.

To a martial artist, having to forcefully withdraw an attack they sent out was similar to a wildly dashing horse suddenly stopping. The energy backlash would impact the blood vitality within their body and might even cause damage to their meridians.

Even though Lin Ming's meridians and body were astoundingly formidable, this impact of energy made him feel queasy.

"Boy, your end is here!"

Elder Xiao thrust out his lance once again, the lance point chasing after Lin Ming's vital points! Even if Lin Ming could dodge using Golden Roc Shattering the Void, Elder Xiao had still made an immediate judgment to strike at him again!

Although this old fellow wasn't any stronger than the Polaris Tower Master, his combat experience was far richer!

"Haha, Lin Ming, you will die here today!"

The Polaris Tower Master's eyes shined as if victory was already within his reach. With his sword cutting down at Lin Ming, and in addition to the Great Ax Tower Master joining in on the assault, the attacks of these three individuals were unblockable with Lin Ming's trivial earth-step Purple Comet Spear! He simply didn't have the qualifications to meet all three attacks at once!

Blocking one attack was possible, but the other two attacks would also fall on him. At that time, three heaven-step treasures would cut down on a single earth-step treasure. If that happened, he feared that no matter how heaven-defying a battle spirit was, it still wouldn't be able to withstand this!

The Purple Comet Spear would break!

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

The power of space underneath Lin Ming's feet twisted again. By virtue of his understanding of the Concept of Space, Lin Ming once again dodged the combined attacks of the three. But, even though he had successfully dodged the attacks, the currents of demon essence still scraped by him. Although he wasn't injured, this scraping still tore apart the cloth of his lower robe.

This sounded alarm bells in Lin Ming's mind. With the Concept of Space fused into it, Golden Roc Shattering the Void was indeed an incomparably wonderful movement technique. But, to dodge the attacks of three people in a limited space was still extremely difficult.

Lin Ming could decide not to fight and escape deep into the Eternal Demon Abyss instead. If this happened, then there wasn't anyone here that could stop him. But the Eternal Demon Abyss would be sealed off in another half month and the only exit was here. There was another exit on the other side of the Eternal Demon Abyss, but that was over 10,000 miles away. Although it was only 10,000 miles away, the truth was that it was impossible to cross through the center of the Eternal Demon Abyss; the true distance to the other side was 20,000 to 30,000 miles. There were also a massive number of unknown dangers that existed between here and there. Wanting to cross this distance in a mere half month was simply impossible.

“Lin Ming, your Concept of Space is indeed exquisite, but...” Elder Xiao suddenly sneered, thrusting his lance through the void!

Lin Ming didn’t know what Elder Xiao was trying to do, but after he understood, he sucked in a breath of cold air.

Every time Elder Xiao thrust out with his lance, a black energy would fuse into space.

Elder Xiao only had a minor understanding into the Concept of Space. To have him shrink the space between his feet and keep up with Lin Ming’s strange movement techniques was naturally impossible. But, he was actually able to fuse a portion of his striking energy into space, making it so that the power of space here became increasingly chaotic.

In this situation, although Lin Ming was still able to use the power of space to display his elusive and fleeting movement technique, it would become much more difficult. And having to dodge the combined attacks of the three also became that much harder. If Lin Ming’s speed were to slow down and he were to make even the tiniest mistake, he would be injured!

If he was injured at this time, then his fate could be imagined!

“This damned old man!”

Lin Ming’s eyes blazed with a brilliant killing intent. The elderly were truly tricky. Although this Elder Xiao wasn’t any stronger than the Polaris Tower master, ever since he joined this fight, Lin Ming had been constantly suppressed from multiple angles.

The power of space became increasingly chaotic. And, because the Purple Comet Spear’s quality was limited, Lin Ming couldn’t engage in a melee with these three. If this continued on, then he would reach a point where he wouldn’t be able to withstand this any longer and then he would have to escape into the Eternal Demon Abyss!

With Demonshine beside him, Lin Ming was confident he would be able to stay within the Eternal Demon Abyss for 10 years until the next time it opened. But, even if he could survive down here for 10 years, he was still far too worried about the events happening in the Sky Spill Continent. 10 years from now, who knew what would change?

Perhaps the South Sea War would have already ended!

He had to leave now! But to leave, he had to defeat these three!

Lin Ming frowned. He had been caught in a dead end!

…………………

As Lin Ming was fiercely battling against three others, he didn't know that in a distant corner of the battlefield, two martial artists were secretly talking to each other with a true essence sound transmission.

"High Lord Whitedemon, a fist-sized earth-step Demon God Bone is already enough to exchange for several heaven-step treasures. I will trade you two. Although that heaven-step spear in your hands is good, it absolutely isn't worthy of an earth-step Demon God Bone.

The one speaking was Duanmu Qun. He had long noticed that Lin Ming was being suppressed because of the quality of his weapon. Now, he wanted to give Lin Ming a new one.

Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and Feng Shen all used swords; they didn't have a heaven-step treasure spear in their spatial rings. Thus, Duanmu Qun thought of purchasing one from another High Lord!

To trade two fist-sized earth-step Demon God Bones for a low-grade heaven-step treasure spear was the same as having a massive amount of money drop down from the heavens. By all reasoning, no one would ever reject this offer.

However, High Lord Whitedemon seemed a bit pained with embarrassment, "Brother Duanmu, I know what you're trying to say, but even if Lin Ming received my spear he still might not be able to win. If he loses, then those two great Tower Masters and supervisor will be furious at me. How would I still continue living?”

Duanmu Qun was very understanding of High Lord Whitedemon’s thoughts. He said, “I will deliver the spear, the risk to you is not too large. In addition, as long as you leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes, I guarantee you will receive sanctuary under my Divine Wood Holy Land! High Lord Whitedemon, without taking risk, you will never break through to the Emperor level. Where has there ever been such a good deal in this world? Okay, how about this. Three earth-step Demon God Bones, all of them the size of a fist. That is our final offer, because of the three of us, that is the totality of the resources we obtained in the Eternal Demon Abyss!”

The reason that Duanmu Qun had offered two Demon God Bones at the start was so that he could have some bargaining room with High Lord Whitedemon. It was to try to take advantage of others' urgent needs, no matter how tempting the conditions were from the start. So, rather than first putting out the best offer, it was better to slowly toss in the chips until they couldn’t be refused.

And sure enough, High Lord Whitedemon was shaken. Three earth-step Demon God Bones could greatly shorten the time it took from him to break through from a four-star Demon King to a quasi Emperor. If he could continue like that, then he really would one day reach the Emperor level!

Truly, there were no riches in this world without danger. If a massive meat pie fell down from the sky and he didn’t eat it because he feared it was poisonous, then that was the same as him giving up on ever becoming a true Emperor.

Gritting his teeth, High Lord Whitedemon calmly handed over a spatial ring to Duanmu Qun. “The spear is inside. I’ve already erased my soul mark. Do with it as you will!”

“Great!” Duanmu Qun didn’t waste time and directly passed a spatial ring containing the three earth-step Demon God Bones to High Lord Whitedemon.

At the same time, his figure flashed and he appeared at the edge of the battlefield, extracting a white spear from the spatial ring!

This was also partly the reason why High Lord Whitedemon was originally unwilling to hand over this spear. This spear was far too blatantly garish and easily recognizable.

“Brother Lin, take this spear!”

Woosh!

Duanmu Qun threw out the spear!

At this time, Lin Ming was facing the dual attacks of the Great Ax Tower Master and Elder Xiao – he was indeed facing a crisis. The power of space around him was becoming increasingly chaotic, and it was becoming much more difficult to use the Concept of Space effectively.

But at this moment, as Lin Ming saw a long spear shooting towards him, his eyes lit up!

“Not good!”

As Lin Ming saw this white long spear, the Great Ax Tower Master, Elder Xiao, and the Polaris Tower Master also saw this spear. The Great Ax Tower Master and Elder Xiao were attacking so they were unable to intercept this spear. Only the Polaris Master was able to rush towards this white spear.

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Lin Ming erupted with true essence. The Heretical God Force revolved to its limits, forcefully distorting the chaotic power of space. Once again, he shrunk the space under his feet and avoided the attacks of the Great Ax Tower Master and Elder Xiao, seeming as if he teleported in front of the white long spear!

Chapter 664 – The Tide Turns

Chapter 664 – The Tide Turns

…

…

…

"Lin Ming, go and die!" As the Polaris Tower Master saw Lin Ming rushing towards that heaven-step white spear, he knew that it was impossible to catch up to him with his speed. So, wielding his great sword, he slashed out at Lin Ming, wanting to force him back instead!

However, Lin Ming completely ignored the Polaris Tower Master's attack. His eyes flashed with a thick killing intent as he grabbed onto the spear shaft with a heavy clapping sound.

At this time, the Polaris Tower Master's attack was less than 10 feet away from Lin Ming!

"The one who will die is you."

The energy within Lin Ming's body erupted like a colossal volcano. Holding onto that white spear, he suddenly turned around and thrust it out!

Penetrating Rainbow!

Bang!

A keen spear light tore apart the Polaris Tower Master's sword light as if it were made of paper. At this time, Lin Ming no longer needed to use the power of his battle spirit to reinforce his spear. The strength of his battle spirit was completely freed from its shackles!

Along the shaft of the spear, the power of thunder and fire twisted together. With the complete increased strength from a bronze level battle spirit, the prestige of Lin Ming's spear had reached the pinnacle! Before, Lin Ming could only block the Polaris Tower Master's attacks, but now, he completely overwhelmed and swept away those same attacks!

A rainbow of light howled out, the void trembled!

"Ahh!"

The Polaris Tower Master gave out a pitiful cry as his body was swept up by that spear light. He was sent flying back like broken sack, spewing out a mouthful of blood in midair!

"Young Master!"

Elder Xiao was enraged. He didn't attack Lin Ming, but instead his figure disappeared as he rushed towards the Polaris Tower Master to catch him!

Rapidly stuffing a life-saving pill into the Polaris Tower Master's mouth, Elder Xiao suddenly looked up, his eyes like those of a rabid wolf.

"Lin Ming!" Elder Xiao heatedly glared at Lin Ming before his eyes shifted to Duanmu Qun, "And you too, Duanmu Qun! You are asking to die!"

Duanmu Qun's expression was calm. He coldly said, "Me? Asking to die? Haha! The Polaris Tower Master has been planting slave seals into top talents and controlling them as his own slaves. After so many years, who knows just how many outstanding young elites have died because of him. This matter is something the Holy Land Alliance will absolutely investigate! When that time comes, who dies, who lives, none of that is certain! It might be true that the Polaris Tower Master is the son of the Blood Slaughter Steppes' ruler, but as far as I know, the ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes probably has over a dozen children! For just a single son, will he be willing to oppose the Holy Land Alliance?"

The Steppes Master was an Emperor level powerhouse who had lived for over 5000 years. After so many years, it wasn't strange for him to have several dozen children. Even if the Polaris Tower Master was the most outstanding and talented of all his children, he still wasn't worth such a massive sacrifice.

“Duanmu Qun, do you think I won’t kill you just because you have the Divine Wood Holy Land behind you?”

Elder Xiao’s eyes flashed with a fanatical killing intent. At this time, a crazed idea began to take form in his mind. That was to kill every outsider and silence all witnesses!

As for the others, he would force them into a soul contract so that this secret was kept forever. Outwardly, he would claim that the Eternal Demon Abyss had erupted again, causing all the outstanding heroic youths here to die.

Without a shadow of a doubt, this would cause an enormous pressure to fall onto the Blood Slaughter Steppes. But, if he were to allow these people to leave, then the consequences of that would be extremely bad. Moreover, he and the Polaris Tower Master might become chess pieces that the Steppes Master would give up!

Thinking of this, Elder Xiao’s heart burned with an even fiercer killing intent!

“What? Do you want to fight?” Duanmu Qun was extremely intelligent. He could vaguely guess what Elder Xiao was thinking and drew out his sword without hesitation.

He was well aware that he was not a match for this old man, but he also believed that Lin Ming wouldn’t just sit there and watch him die.

As Duanmu Qun glanced over at Lin Ming, he saw Lin Ming’s lips really did move, passing on a true essence sound transmission to him, “Thank you Brother Duanmu! I, Lin Ming, will carve this kindness in my heart. I will never forget this for the rest of my life!”

Lin Ming was a person who believed in the commitments he made. If he made a promise or a pledge, he would inevitably accomplish it.

He was aware that Duanmu Qun’s actions were all in order to repay him for saving his life earlier. For such a peerless and proud son of heaven like Duanmu Qun, what someone like him would find most reluctant was owing favors to others. Only when he returned the kindness would his thoughts be able to flow smoothly.

Of course, Duanmu Qun also did this because he wished to form a better relationship with Lin Ming. To befriend a top master in the prime of their youth and also temper that friendship through the fires of life and death, this sort of friendship would be extremely strong and reliable in the future.

Going out, making friends and comrades, knowing masters, all of this would be of great help in the future. Even for someone like Lin Ming who tended towards being a loner, he still liked to make friends. For instance, gaining access to materials, news, and so forth, all of this would be much easier in the future with a friend to help him.

But, what Duanmu Qun didn’t expect was that at this time, Elder Xiao’s face would flash with a ferocious light as he loudly shouted out, “Every High Lord of the Blood Slaughter Steppes, obey my orders! Kill Duanmu Qun! If you can kill Duanmu Qun, you will receive five jins of low-grade earth-step Demon God Bones and three jins of medium-grade earth-step Demon God Bones!”

As Duanmu Qun heard Elder Xiao issue out this comment, his complexion changed. This old man was so insane that he wanted to openly kill him here!?

Did he not fear offending his Divine Wood Holy Land at all!?

Woosh! Woosh!

Behind him, Lan Xin and Feng Shen moved to cover his sides, both of them extracting their long swords. Their attitude and meaning were clear.

As friends, they would live together or die together!

At this time, they also guessed what Elder Xiao was doing. If he was willing to kill Duanmu Qun to silence all the witnesses here, then how could they be let off?

It was true that the Holy Land Alliance was powerful, but they were only able to indirectly exert pressure onto the Blood Slaughter Steppes; it was impossible for them to directly attack the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

That strange and mystical power within the Blood Slaughter Steppes could kill any powerhouse that was at Life Destruction or above. The higher one's cultivation, the higher the chances of dying from that curse. Even an Emperor level powerhouse might die if they stepped into the Blood Slaughter Steppes!

Within the entire Holy Demon Continent, there were only a handful of Emperor level powerhouses that had the qualifications to safely reenter the Blood Slaughter Steppes. Of these people, besides the Eightfall War Emperor, most of them had gone into seclusion in who knew what heaven-forsaken lands and were nearly impossible to find.

Hearing such generous rewards, the High Lords present immediately felt their hearts stir with temptation. It had to be known that of these High Lords, the majority of them didn't have the ability to enter into the Emperor level in the future. But, if they had that much Demon God Bone, that wouldn't necessarily be true.

Some of them were already tracing their spatial rings!

Duanmu Qun smiled, his face immeasurably cold and decisive, "Truly humans die for wealth and birds die for food. So what if you obtain so many Demon God Bones? Is it worth it if you aren't alive to enjoy it? If you kill us, do you not fear the combined retaliation of our three Holy Lands, all of them willing to hunt you down? That is, unless you plan on never leaving the Blood Slaughter Steppes in the future!"

As the High Lords present heard Duanmu Qun's words, many of them began to waver with hesitation. All of them would have to leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes after they reached a boundary equivalent to the Life Destruction realm. If they had to simultaneously face the combined forces of three Holy Lands chasing them down, then there really wasn't any way they could survive that.

As Elder Xiao saw these High Lords waffle around, he laughed and said, "Duanmu Qun, you really are skilled at fooling the hearts of others. Do you think you are that important? Outside of here, we will say that you died because the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted! Even if your Divine Wood Holy Land tries to pressure my Blood Slaughter Steppes, all we will have to do is pay some compensation for their losses! You said that the Steppes Ruler has many sons, but your Divine Wood Holy Land has even more talents. You are the most outstanding junior of the last 100 years, but that is only 100 years! To the Divine Wood Holy Land that has existed for 10,000 years, what do you think 100 years is to them? There have been many 100 year peerless talents that have died the same within the Blood Slaughter Steppes! As long as there is enough interest in both parties, any conflict can be resolved! Do you really think that for a mere you, your Divine Wood Holy Land would actually completely break off from the Blood Slaughter Steppes? Do not forget, this land is the best trial by fire for raising the new generation of geniuses!"

Not only was Elder Xiao rich in combat experience, but he was an eloquent individual who was skilled at speaking. With just a few superficial moves, the winds were behind him and all the High Lords believed he was right.

And right he was. The Blood Slaughter Steppes had to fear and give face to the Divine Wood Holy Land, but the Divine Wood Holy Land also had to do the same in return. Otherwise, they would never be able to send their outstanding heroic youths there again.

For these two forces, as long as the issue wasn't too great, it could be resolved in secret with appropriate compensation. If they both fought, then it would simply be a lose-lose situation.

Finally, over 20 High Lords began to move. High Lord Black Ash was also amongst these 20 some High Lords. He malevolently smiled as he said, "Sorry, Brother Duanmu. Even if I don't kill you, others will. Why give advantages to others when I can take them myself? Please understand… hehehe…"

Seeing the situation deteriorate in front of him, it wasn't just Duanmu Qun who was grimacing. Even Zhuan Yu, who wasn't involved in any of this, began to nervously sweat. He too was a Holy Land descendant. Although he wasn't a Fey, it was still possible they would kill him in order to eliminate another potential witnesses!

“What do we do?” Lan Xin was a bit panicked. Although she was a Holy Land descendant, she had never been in this sort of situation before. Facing this sort of crucial moment, she was at a bit of a loss.

There were only three of them. Against the many High Lords in front of them, there was simply no path to survival!

“Kill!”

High Lord Black Ash shouted out. He was about to rush at Lan Xin, when at this moment, Lin Ming suddenly moved!

He raised the white spear in his hands and stabbed it towards the Polaris Tower Master!

At this time, the Polaris Tower Master had basically lost all of his combat strength, hanging onto life simply because of the pills that were sustaining him. Now, it was impossible for him to block Lin Ming’s attack!

Elder Xiao’s eyes glinted with a cold light, “You dare!?”

He placed his lance horizontally, protecting the Polaris Tower Master. But at this moment, Lin Ming sneered. His feet stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void and his figure instantly vanished!

In the next instant, he appeared several hundred feet away. The location he had appeared at was actually within those 20 some High Lords, right behind High Lord Black Ash!

Without a further word, Lin Ming thrust out his spear!

In terms of his elusive ability to appear anywhere like a fading ghost, no one could rival Lin Ming!

Puff!

“Ugh...”

High Lord Black Ash only felt his chest go cold. Looking down, he froze as he saw a white, bloodstained spear stretching out from his chest…

The spear lifted up. High Lord Black Ash's originally diminutive body was lifted up on the shaft. As he was stuck on the spear, he looked no different from a frog on a skewer.

"I…" High Lord Black Ash's face flashed with a thick and pure unwilling despair. He grabbed the spear shaft, wanting to turn around. However, as an Imp martial artist, his neck was too short so he couldn't turn much.

"Go die!"

The power of a battle spirit erupted. High Lord Black Ash suddenly shook as all his organs were twisted into goo!

Lin Ming withdrew his white spear, the front wet with blood. His entire body blazed with an overwhelming killing intent!

At this time, he stood within the many High Lords. All of the High Lords felt a chill crawl up their backs as their courage began fading away!

A wisp of pure infernal energy left High Lord Black Ash's body and was sucked up into Lin Ming's. As Elder Xiao saw this, he immediately paled.

This was disastrous! He realized that Lin Ming wanted to use these ordinary High Lords as his blood sacrifice, becoming a true twelve-winged Heavenly Demon!

Chapter 665 – Achieving 12 Wings

Chapter 665 – Achieving 12 Wings

…

…

…

After becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, a person would obtain Heavenly Demon martial intent and become the ultimate taboo existence within the Blood Slaughter Steppes. The Blood Slaughter Steppes' true fear was not the Holy Land Alliance, but an Emperor level powerhouse like the Eightfall War Emperor who had also managed to obtain a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo.

There didn't need to be many of such individuals. As long as three or four such existences simultaneously attacked the Blood Slaughter Steppes, the Steppes Master would suffer defeat!

"All High Lords heed my order! Everyone attack Lin Ming together! Although he is strong, he cannot stand a barrage of your martial skills!"

Elder Xiao crazily shouted. It was true that Lin Ming was strong, but this had mainly manifested in his striking power. In just the aspect of striking power, Lin Ming even surpassed an ordinary second stage Life Destruction powerhouse. Any defense would be pierced and pulverized!

But in terms of defensive power, no matter how fierce Lin Ming was, it was impossible for him to stand there and take attacks from a High Lord powerhouse, much less a barrage of them!

All of the surrounding High Lords began to move, taking out their weapons and attacking Lin Ming.

But, how could they possibly compare to Lin Ming in speed?

Cha cha cha!

The heaven-step treasure spear was like a pure white dragon swimming through the vast sea. Wherever it went, blood would follow!

Lin Ming indeed couldn't block a volley of attacks from the High Lords. Even if just five or six martial artists attacked him at the same time, he probably wouldn't be able to block that either. But, by depending on Golden Roc Shattering the Void, his movement skill that allowed him to weave through the battlefield like ghosts and gods, how could anyone think of successfully hitting him?

As he flitted between the 20 some High Lords, Lin Ming's attacks were like vorpal death sentences!

The white spear was fused with billowing flames and arcs of electricity. Each and every attack had the power of a bronze level battle spirit poured into it!

"Ahhh!"

Seeing Lin Ming rush towards him, a High Lord swung his heavy sword at Lin Ming, wanting to fend off this attack. But Lin Ming completely ignored his attack and continued thrusting his spear.

In that instant, Lin Ming's spear passed through the High Lord's sword light and then struck the heavy sword with a metallic ring. Then, an inconceivable scene occurred that made everyone tremble. The great sword, which was also a heaven-step treasure, actually had its thick blade pierced through by Lin Ming's spear!

The long spear penetrated through the heavy sword and stabbed into the High Lord's throat, taking his life with a single spear strike!

Such a sharp spear light caused all of the martial artists present to pale, sweat dripping down their backs. Everyone knew that the white spear was a low-grade heaven-step treasure. But, in Lin Ming's hand, this spear had reached a degree of sharpness that no one could block!

Facing this sort of demon, just who would dare to fight him?

The dozen some remaining High Lords were pale as they turned around to run. However, Lin Ming did not intend to let a single one of them escape. The space underneath his feet suddenly shrank as he seemed to teleport directly behind a High Lord's back, his spear thrusting into his body!

"Don't kill me! I surrender! I'll leave–"

The High Lord frantically shouted. However, his voice died in his throat. The white spear penetrated through his back and straight out of his front, a bloody light shooting out!

Leave?

No one was leaving.

Lin Ming's lips curved in a devilish grin. At the moment that they decided to kill Duanmu Qun, everyone had already forfeited their lives in this gamble!

Seeing that they couldn't kill the one in front of them, but then seeing that they themselves would die and even wanting to retreat; just where in the world would you find such a good deal?

"Damnit!"

Seeing six or seven ordinary High Lords cut down by Lin Ming as if they were vegetables, Elder Xiao's eyes turned red, "This old man will kill you!"

Pouring true essence into his lance, Elder Xiao struck out at Lin Ming.

“Humph! You really think that I’m afraid to fight you?”

Lin Ming’s eyes sparked with a cold light. He grasped his spear, thrusting it up. He would welcome anyone anytime!

Before, he hadn’t dared to directly fight because Elder Xiao and the Great Ax Tower Master were attacking him together, and the treasure in Lin Ming’s hand was lacking. But now, seeing Elder Xiao rushed towards him alone, this was what Lin Ming had wished for. A spear thrust out, fires burning to the heavens!

A vast Concept of Fire burnt Elder Xiao’s cloud of demon essence to cinders. Spear and lance collided!

Bang!

Elder Xiao’s body shook. After receiving such a heavy blow, he was blown backwards like a broken kite, blood leaking out from his mouth.

After Lin Ming had switched to a heaven-step treasure spear, he had been able to completely free the power of his battle spirit. Now, his striking power was not something that Elder Xiao could hope to compare with. For this old man to think of meeting him in a head-on attack with, he had simply been seeking death!

“Great Ax! What the hell are you doing? Do you think he will let you go!?”

Elder Xiao crazily shouted, his voice full thick with anger and killing intent.

Great Ax grit his teeth and stepped forwards. At this time he had truly stepped onto the road of no return. His only path of redemption was to kill Lin Ming!

Elder Xiao forcefully revolved his demon essence and suppressed in internal injuries, swallowing down the blood that was filling his mouth.

One on the left, one on the right, both of them attacked Lin Ming!

Facing these two simultaneous attacks, although Lin Ming was confident in himself, he didn't lower his guard. Suffering even a minor injury here would be disastrous.

However, he had never intended to meet both of their attacks.

Seeing billowing clouds of demonic energy roiling towards him, Lin Ming's lips curved in a cruel smile.

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Hoo-!

Lin Ming's figure instantly vanished again. In the next moment, he had already moved several hundred feet away, appearing right in front of the Polaris Tower Master!

At the same time that Great Ax and Elder Xiao attacked him, he had decide to kill the Polaris Tower Master!

"Ahh!"

The Polaris Tower Master's eyes widened as he saw Lin Ming suddenly flicker in front of him, scared so badly that his soul nearly left his body. In his life, he had killed countless lives, and now this was the first time that he had truly faced death.

The fear of dying gripped his mind. His eyes widened, his heartbeat stopping!

He didn't want to die! He was the son of the Steppes Master! He enjoyed countless resources, countless beauties, limitless fame! In the future, he would become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon and inevitably step into the Emperor level realm!

He would live for six or seven thousand years, with endless wealth and an exalted status. He would have peerless authority, wielding the fates of a trillion lives in his hands with absolute power! He would have a harem with countless proud and heavenly women of every race…

And now, all of this, all of his dreams, would disappear with this single spear strike!

“Lin Ming, don’t–!!!”

“Young Master!!” Several hundred feet away, Elder Xiao also shouted out. However, no one was able to stop Lin Ming.

Without a hint of hesitation, his spear came plummeting down, directly passing through the Polaris Tower Master’s throat like a bolt of lightning!

Puff!

Blood sputtered out. The Polaris Tower Master opened his mouth as if he were trying to say something, but his vocal cords had already been torn to pieces so he was unable to utter a single word.

Lin Ming was inscrutable as he pulled his hand back and received his spear. As he drew back the spear, blood gushed out, spraying into the air. In this final strike that killed the Polaris Tower Master, he hadn’t even infused his spear with his battle spirit, ending his life no differently than he would butcher a chicken of pig.

A powerful and ambition genius of his era, who had planted slave seals in the spiritual seas of several generations of proud sons of heavens, who had become the Polaris Tower Master that had controlled Polaris Tower for dozens of years, had died today, killed no differently than the lowest of beasts!

“Young Master!”

Elder Xiao’s eyes were blood red. His heart raged with an inferno of hatred, a thick burning intent sizzling in his mind. In the end, all he could do was look on helplessly as the Polaris Tower Master died right in front of him!

This wasn't because of any mistake Elder Xiao had made. In that situation just now, he could no longer stop Lin Ming. If he didn't attack Lin Ming, then that was no different from freely allowing him to becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. Yet, if he wanted to attack Lin Ming, he would need to join forces with Great Ax. And now, the result of this was… he had given Lin Ming the chance to directly slaughter the Polaris Tower Master.

His movement speed was inferior and his striking power was inferior. From the point that Lin Ming obtained the white spear, the initiative had gone to Lin Ming's hand, remaining there forever!

As the Polaris Tower master died, an incomparably rich infernal energy leaked out from him. This mass of infernal energy was several times purer and richer than any other mass of infernal energy that Lin Ming had ever seen!

At this moment, the bass growl of a demon filled the air. The fierce Heavenly Demon phantom that hid within Lin Ming's arm tattoo appeared, rushing towards the mass of infernal energy and swallowing it all!

With the additional six or seven High Lords that Lin Ming had killed just before, all of this infernal energy combined together, completely absorbed by the Heavenly Demon phantom!

Roar!!

The Heavenly Demon phantom stretched out its sharp claws and unfolded its towering wings. It faced the heavens and gave off a loud cry. Its five pairs of wings were already extremely clear, and now, under the effects of that rich infernal energy, the final sixth pair was also slowly expanding!

A twelve-winged Heavenly Demon!

After Lin Ming killed the Polaris Tower Master, he finally became a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon!

With the influx of infernal energy, the Heavenly Demon phantom began to rapidly grow, finally reaching a monumental 40 to 50 feet. It was like an Asura that crawled out from the endless abyss. Thunder and fire raged underneath its feet, and its entire body was wrapped with thick, bulging muscles. As it released its 12 wings, they nearly covered the skies!

All of the surrounding martial artists were dumbfounded.

This was the first time they had witnessed the birth of a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon!

“Mad… he’s a madman…” Zhuan Yu’s lips trembled. At this moment, he didn’t even have the courage to face Lin Ming, let alone fight him.

As for Elder Xiao, a trace of fear flashed in his eyes. He had a deep foreboding feeling that if he couldn’t kill Lin Ming today, then one day, Lin Ming would become the gravedigger for all 12 Skysplit Towers!

He was absolutely a terrifying threat! In fact, he was far more horrible and dreadful than even the Eightfall War Emperor! He had the personal reasons and also the ability to personally bury the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes under his feet, drowning the land in a sea of blood!

“Hurry and take advantage of this time while he’s concentrating the Heavenly Demon phantom to kill him!”

Elder Xiao leapt forwards. The Great Ax Tower Master also hesitated for a moment before throwing himself forwards too. At this time, there was no way he could retreat unless he turned and ran into the Eternal Demon Abyss. But, this was the only nearby exit from the Eternal Demon Abyss and it would soon close. Running away would be no different from suicide!

One on the left, one on the right, Elder Xiao and the Great Ax Tower Master attacked together!

At this time, the Heavenly Demon phantom released a deafening, earth-shaking roar. A terrifying force field fell over everyone like the end of times!

In that instant, Elder Xiao and the Great Ax Tower Master felt a deep fear in their hearts. This was a killing intent directed at their very souls, causing everyone to tremble where they stood!

This was…

The Death God force field of the Heavenly Demon martial intent!

Under the cover of this infernal energy that was so thick it manifested into essence, Elder Xiao and the Great Ax Tower Master's striking power had instantly and unexpectedly weakened by 30%. At the same time, the Heavenly Demon phantom behind Lin Ming suddenly shrunk, instantly minimizing from 40-50 feet to half a foot, turning into a complete twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo that landed on Lin Ming's arm.

After condensing the complete Heavenly Demon Tattoo, Lin Ming felt his body filled with an explosive power. Facing the attacks of Elder Xiao and the Great Ax Tower Master, Lin Ming poured all of this destructive energy into his spear, thrusting it out!

Penetrating Rainbow!

Bang!

A terrifying blast wave combusted, appearing like a massive red and purple lotus blooming in the world. All of the space in the area began to twist together. After being struck by such a terrifying strike, Elder Xiao and the Great Ax Tower Master were flung away like leaves in a storm. The previously injured Elder Xiao spat out another mouthful of blood. As for the Great Ax Tower Master, although he didn't vomit blood, the palm of his hand directly cracked apart!

With a ‘ka ka ka’ sound, a massive crack had appeared in the double-headed ax in his hand!

Chapter 666 – Spear Through the Black Robed Man

Chapter 666 – Spear Through the Black Robed Man

…

…

…

The Mountain Shattering Ax… cracked?

The Great Ax Tower Master stared at the ax in his hands, his eyes wide like full moons.

His double-headed ax could only be considered in the lower-middle reaches of low-grade heaven-step treasure. Although it wasn’t some amazingly high rank weapon, the key lay in its weight!

Between grades of a similar rank, an ax was much more expensive than a sword, because over ten times the material was required!

Accordingly, an ax was extremely durable because of its thickness. But now, this low-grade heaven-step ax had actually been cracked apart by Lin Ming’s spear!

To just what extent did Lin Ming’s striking power reach!?

It wasn’t just the Great Ax Tower Master who was horrified, but all of the surrounding martial artists were frightened. In just this single exchange of moves, Lin Ming had single-handedly held off two great masters and even forced them back!

Lin Ming had not only injured Elder Xiao once more, but he also damaged the Great Ax Tower Master's weapon!

As for Lin Ming, he had done all of this with just a low-grade heaven-step spear. How could such an originally ordinary spear be able to display such power within Lin Ming's hands?

"I see… so that's what it was…" Elder Xiao glared at Lin Ming, grinning as he revealed his bloodstained teeth. "So young… just an early Revolving Core boy, and yet you've comprehended your own battle spirit! And looking at its grade, it's probably already at Large Success of the bronze level!"

As Elder Xiao spoke, the Great Ax Tower Master felt his heart go cold.

Battle spirit!?

As a Giant Demon martial artist, a battle spirit was too far out of reach for the Great Ax Tower Master. Because Giant Demons were naturally born lacking in will and perception, there were many Giant Demon martial artists that never managed to comprehend their battle spirit even after becoming an Emperor level powerhouse.

But, the Great Ax Tower Master still had some minor understandings into a battle spirit. It was said that when a martial artist's will reached the pinnacle of its potential, it could condense into a very specialized Concept. This 'battle spirit' could then be attached to any object, killing enemies, cutting away all life and existence into nothingness!

What cultivation did Lin Ming have? And he had managed to comprehend a battle spirit?

The Great Ax Tower Master began to truly fear Lin Ming from his heart. He started to regret his reckless actions in provoking this dark star. Now, he had already completely offended Lin Ming. Once he became enemies with such a person, the horrible bleakness of his future could be imagined!

200 feet away, Lin Ming held his spear as he stood there. The truth was that the strike he used just now had drawn support from the flash of absolute power that had appeared after completely condensing a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo. Under normal circumstances, although Lin Ming would still be able to receive the dual strikes of Elder Xiao and the Great Ax Tower master, he wouldn't have had the ability to wound both of them.

'I've finally formed my complete twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo.'

Lin Ming took a deep break. Then, the Death God force field spread out, superimposing onto the Asura force field!

However, this was just an ordinary superimposition, not a fusion of the two. Superimposing the two force fields could be considered as adding one and one to get two, but fusing two force fields together would produce a qualitative change instead. At that time, the intensity and power of the force fields would experience a massive leap upwards.

With Lin Ming's current boundary, he was still far away from being able to fuse these two force fields.

However, this was how things were. Even superimposing the Death God force field and the Asura force field created an extremely terrifying suppressive force!

After being enveloped by this force field, the Great Ax Tower Master and Elder Xiao had extremely ugly expressions. The other ordinary High Lords were in an even worse state, all of them frantically retreating because they weren't able to resist this pressure. At this time, they were all constantly lamenting that even though they tried to escape, there was nowhere they could run. They were nothing more than fish on the chopping block, having to stand there under this utterly excruciating suppression.

As the true essence within Lin Ming's body began to revolve, the power of the two different force fields began to rise without end.

The Asura force field completely suppressed a person from their bodies to their souls, a heavy pressure that was immensely difficult to withstand.

As for the Death God force field, that stimulated the deepest and most primal fear within the soul itself, affecting the control that the soul had over the body. In fact, to a weaker martial artist, the Death God force field could directly strip the soul from the body, killing them without any resistance!

The dual force fields suppressed all. The weaker a martial artist was, the greater influence the force fields had over them. Even if it were Elder Xiao or the Great Ax Tower master, their combat strength was reduced to less than 70% of its original state!

"This damn boy!" Elder Xiao grit his teeth. He desperately tried to stimulate the demon essence within himself, but it was all in vain.

"Die!" As Lin Ming's true essence revolved to the extreme, he took a sudden step forwards. His figure disappeared like ghosts and gods, immediately flash stepping in front of Elder Xiao, his spear thrusting straight into the old man's stomach!

In this situation, facing Lin Ming's incomparably sharp spear strike, just how could Elder Xiao withstand it?

Bang!

After a brief confrontation, Elder Xiao retreated backwards. Lin Ming moved forward in hot pursuit!

"What are you all looking at!? Attack him together! Do you think any of you can live here? If you don't kill him now then he will kill you all after this!!!" Elder Xiao crazily shouted at the ordinary High Lords who were watching on, helplessly.

However, at this time, these ordinary High Lords only glanced at each other with fear and dread, none of them daring to move a single step to help Elder Xiao.

What a joke. Under the dual suppression of these force fields, even moving a single step was a challenging endeavor. Moreover, their strength was inferior to Elder Xiao's so the suppression they were under was even more intense.

Bang bang bang!

In an instant, four or five moves were exchanged. Lin Ming's spear light swept over Elder Xiao's chest, breaking his ribs, ruining his organs!

Lin Ming's combat strength was far too strong. Even a Tower Master level martial artist could only briefly support themselves under Lin Ming's barrage of attacks. As for those ordinary High Lords, they were nothing but little lambs waiting to be instantly slaughtered.

If none of them resisted, they might have a slim hope of living. But if they dared to confront him, then they would instantly die here!

Spear after spear after spear, Lin Ming forced Elder Xiao back again and again.

If this continued, then Elder Xiao would not be able to support himself for even a few more moves. And at this time, the Great Ax Tower Master was only idly standing by, watching on passively!

The Great Ax Tower Master was panting with nervousness. He felt that even if he attacked Lin Ming, the chances of defeating him were close to zero!

"Lin Ming! I surrender!"

The Great Ax Tower master suddenly dropped his weapon as he shouted out towards Lin Ming.

"Surrender?" Lin Ming's lips curved in a funny smile.

Surrendering at this time, was there still any significance to it?

"Lin Ming, if you let me live, I will give you everything within my spatial ring. Also, I can even cover for you so you can leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes!"

The Great Ax Tower Master had tossed out a few tempting offers.

Lin Ming had already formed a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo. Now, there was no more meaning to killing the Great Ax Tower Master. And if Lin Ming really did kill all the High Lords here, then he would inevitably come under suspicion once he tried to leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

Once he provoked the Steppes Master to chase him, he was finished.

No matter how strong Lin Ming was right now, it was impossible for him to escape from the Steppes Master. The Steppes Master was a true Emperor level powerhouse!

“Great Ax! You dare to betray the Steppes Master!?” Elder Xiao’s eyes widened, turning blood red. At this time, the betrayal of Great Ax was an absolute death sentence.

The Great Ax Tower master sneered as he said, “Betray the Steppes Master? I’m nothing more than a chess piece for him to play around with. I depended on my own effort, giving my everything and fighting through countless life and death battles to become a Tower Master. I have taken care of Great Ax Tower for you lot for so many years, turning over a massive amount of resources! Now I no longer owe you anything! Do you want me to even die for you!?”

“Good! Very good!” Elder Xiao’s face flashed with a ferocious light, “When the Steppes Master finds out about this then you are finished! You will die!”

“Humph! The one to die first will be you!”

Lin Ming stepped in front of Elder Xiao and thrust towards his chest.

Lin Ming’s every spear strike was aimed towards vital points.

“Ahh!”

Elder Xiao cried out miserably. He avoided a fatal strike, but Lin Ming’s spear still stabbed into his shoulder. Blood splashed out. With a twist of the spear, it directly tore off the old man’s arm.

“I won’t let you get away with this even as a ghost!”

Elder Xiao issued a keening howl as he ignored the grievous wound of his severed arm, and with his remaining hand holding his lance, he thrust it towards Lin Ming’s stomach.

However, how could Lin Ming allow him to hit? Lin Ming’s figure flashed and he directly appeared behind Elder Xiao’s back, his spear piercing through his back and heart!

Puff!

The white spear passed through his body, the spearpoint dyed a deep red.

Elder Xiao vomited a mouthful of blood. At this time, his organs were already completely ruined.

“Lin Ming, I’ll wait for you in hell!”

Elder Xiao humorlessly grinned as he spoke these words. All of the vessels in his body instantly bulged up and then blasted apart. Elder Xiao had annihilated his own meridians and reversed the flow of blood essence in his body, using the last dregs of his life to form a blood seal in front of him.

“1000 Year Curse of Limitless Demons! Seal!”

As Elder Xiao spoke these last words, a grisly smile still hung on his face. But, his eyes had already lost all of their light.

“Mm? What is this?”

In that instant, Lin Ming felt a strange energy flow along the white spear and enter his body, expanding throughout all of his limbs!

1000 Year Curse of Limitless Demons?

Lin Ming faintly guessed that the words Elder Xiao spoke before his death had something to do with the strange energy within him!

“Lin Ming! Before that old man died, he used his life to place a curse on you!” Demonshine’s voice sounded out in Lin Ming’s mind.

“So I was right… hmm, what does this curse do?” Lin Ming frowned. He didn’t think that the old man would have such an ability.

“It’s not too harmful. This curse is only a mark. Once you’re placed under this curse, others can use it to determine your location. If you don’t dispel this curse, then you’ll be as obvious as a firefly at night!”

“Oh? So in other words, that old man placed this curse on me to help the Steppes Master chase me down and kill me?”

“That sounds about right.”

“Can you dispel this?” Lin Ming grimaced. With this sort of mark on him, things would be dire. In order to leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes, he would have to cross through hundreds of thousands of miles. With such a long distance in front of him, he didn’t believe that he could escape the Steppes Master if he was being chased down.

Now he could only depend on Demonshine. Demonshine seemed to have a very deep understanding of these sorts of energy marks; originally, he was the one who had resolved the matter of the Polaris Tower Master's slave seal.

“Hehe, undoing this is a bit difficult, but just isolating it is quite simple. But, I have a condition… I want to have first picks of the Great Ax Tower Master, Polaris Tower Master, and that old man’s spatial rings!”

Demonshine licked his doggy tongue as he spoke. In fact, this request wasn’t excessive at all – it was quite reasonable in fact. Within the 1000 mile forbidden zone, Demonshine had put in a great deal of effort and was also very helpful the entire time, using up a good deal of his strength. However, after they opened up the ancient tomb, there wasn't anything in there that was useful to Demonshine, so Demonshine had been feeling very depressed ever since.

"Sure!"

Lin Ming readily agreed. From those three's spatial rings, there wasn't anything that he particularly wanted.

At this time, Elder Xiao had thoroughly died, so Lin Ming reached over and conveniently took his spatial ring. At the same time, pure infernal energy flowed out from the corpse and into Lin Ming.

However, Lin Ming could clearly feel that this infernal energy no longer had any nourishing effect on him.

Chapter 667 – Planting the Slave Seal

Chapter 667 – Planting the Slave Seal

…

…

…

Elder Xiao had died!

Watching the old man still hanging on Lin Ming's spear, the martial artists present all subconsciously, gulped, their throats twitching.

The Lin Ming in front of them right now was a fierce tiger, and they were nothing but little lambs that had no ability to resist!

Lin Ming expressionlessly drew out his spear, and then swiped the front, flicking off the blood.

Then, he turned around to glare at the Great Ax Tower Master.

The Great Ax Tower Master's heart thumped, his face pale and queasy-looking.

"Young… Young Hero Lin, if you let me live, I promise you I can help you leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes from Great Ax Tower. Great Ax Tower is only a mere 2000 miles from the edge of the Blood Slaughter Steppes and it is also a full 10,000 miles away from the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple where the Steppes Master resides. If you come to my Great Ax Tower, that is the best place for you to leave these lands from. Moreover, when you leave, there will be people that can help you, and I can even be your shield. Leaving will be much easier. Otherwise, you might arouse some suspicion…"

As the Great Ax Tower Master spoke, he was carefully paying attention to every minute change in expression on Lin Ming's face. He was afraid that Lin Ming wouldn't agree with him and took off his spatial ring in advance. Even his heaven-step double-headed ax was placed into the spatial ring so that he could give it to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming considered his options for a moment, not speaking. He turned and glanced towards Duanmu Qun, and saw that Duanmu Qun gave him a slight agreeing nod. The Great Ax Tower Master wasn't lying. The Eternal Demon Abyss' northern entrance was connected to six different Skysplit towers. If they left from Great Ax Tower, the position was much more friendly and was a shorter distance to leave from than from Polaris Tower.

Lin Ming's silence caused the dire atmosphere to becoming even more dismal. At this point, the Great Ax Tower Master didn't even dare to breathe too heavily. As someone who had lived above countless others, this was the first time he had experienced such treatment. It was like he was no different from a criminal of the mortal world about to be executed on the stands.

"Hehe, boy, do you really distrust this fellow?" At this time, Demonshine's voice sounded out in Lin Ming's mind.

"Yes."

Lin Ming was indeed wary of the Great Ax Tower Master. After becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, he naturally wouldn't stay in the Blood Slaughter Steppes any longer.

While they were in the Eternal Demon Abyss, they were completely isolated from the outside world. But, once they left here, all of these High Lords present might inform the Steppes Master as to what had transpired here. If the Steppes Master found out, then he might not be able to leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes safely.

But, if he killed all of them and only four or five people stepped out of the Eternal Demon Abyss, then that was just too brazen. It would naturally attract the suspicions of others.

"Hey, it's easy! How about we just plant several slave seals in them! This sort of thing is just some low level skill of the demonic path. Even that Polaris Tower Master could do it, so did you think this Saint couldn't?"

"Oh?"

Lin Ming's eyes brightened. If he could plant this sort of slave seal then it would be fantastic.

"But yes… there is a limit to how many slave seals I can use to control others. That Polaris Tower Master was likely able to control three or four people, and in my weakened state, I can still do more, but no more than 10. It's up to you to choose who."

"10 is enough."

Lin Ming only needed to use 10 High Lords to control others so that they weren't able to secretly inform others of what was happening. This should give him enough time to leave.

He looked at the Great Ax Tower Master, his voice icy as he said, "Great Ax, if you desire to live, you have one choice. That is to let go of your spiritual sea and willingly allow me to plant a slave seal within you!"

"Slave seal!?"

The Great Ax Tower Master's complexion changed as he heard these words.

A martial artist that had a slave seal planted within them couldn't even hold onto their former personality. It could be called a fate worse than death!

Although the Great Ax Tower master didn't want to die, he didn't want to continue living on as a useless zombie either. "That's impossible! If you must plant a slave seal within me, I'd rather die fighting!"

“Don’t worry so much.” The Great Ax Tower Master’s response was within Lin Ming’s expectations. “I will only place the slave seal within you for three months, which is enough time for me to leave. I’ll be frank with you. I do not trust you one bit at all.

“Three months from now, I will naturally release my slave seal and you will be freed. If you believe me then let go of your spiritual sea. If you do not believe me, then my only choice is to kill you right here and right now.”

As Lin Ming spoke, the Great Ax Tower Master hesitated for a moment. Three months wasn’t anything to him, but he feared that three months from now, Lin Ming would decide not to honor his promise and release the slave seal. Then he really would remain as a mindless puppet with no personality for the rest of his life.

“Can I take an oath to my heart of martial arts?”

The Great Ax Tower Master said after fumbling for words.

“Take an oath?” Lin Ming frowned, his voice turning colder, “I think that you’ve come to misunderstand something. I am not negotiating with you, but am informing you of the decision I have made. It is up to you whether you wish to accept or refuse, because you lack any power to bargain with me!”

Lin Ming’s character had always tended towards being strong and forthright. The promises he made he would complete sooner or later; he disliked when others doubted him.

The Great Ax Tower Master heard the killing intent in Lin Ming’s voice and his heart jumped. He was wavering at this moment when Lan Xin curled her lips and contemptuously said, “Who the hell do you think you are? Lin Ming will undoubtedly become the number one powerhouse of the entire Holy Demon Continent in the future. I wonder then just how many people would kill you all in order to serve as Lin Ming’s little brother here? Do you think he needs to go through so many tricks just in order to have you work under him? You are not worthy!”

Lan Xin’s few words cut towards the Great Ax Tower Master’s temper.

The Great Ax Tower Master wryly smiled. This was true. Someone like Lin Ming would inevitably stand at the peak of the entire Holy Demon Continent in the future. Perhaps, step into the stage that was the Realm of the Gods. At that time, a single call of his would have hundreds and thousands of enthusiastic men jumping to his side, each and every one of them willing to be his slave. If he could follow Lin Ming, then that might actually be a great lucky chance that brought him advantages for his entire life.

Thinking of this, the Great Ax Tower Master no longer hesitated. He simply handed over his spatial ring and relinquished control of his spiritual sea.

“Young Hero Lin, please begin.”

Lin Ming took the spatial ring, passing through it with his perception. Then, he calmly formed a black seal. This black seal had a wisp of Demonshine’s soul force, and with the addition of Lin Ming’s energy supporting it, controlling a martial artist at the level of the Great Ax Tower Master was child’s play.

After the slave seal entered his spiritual sea, the Great Ax Tower Master shook for a moment. His eyes became dull for a moment, and then right afterwards they were refreshed with complete clarity.

He faced Lin Ming, bowed towards him with a hand over his chest, and then respectfully stood behind Lin Ming.

A martial artist with a slave seal planted within them didn’t usually show any difference. It was only when they were faced with their master did they manifest their absolute obedience and loyalty.

“And you lot too!”

Lin Ming turned to stare at the other High Lords. “I will choose nine of you and also plant a slave seal. The period for this is also three months. You can choose to accept, or you can choose to die!”

Lin Ming's voice was decisive and detached. None of the martial artists present dared to protest. If even the Great Ax Tower Master was willing to accept, then none of them had anything to say.

Lin Ming chose the nine martial artists with the highest cultivation and planted slave seals in them. None of them resisted.

Then, he received the spatial rings of Elder Xiao, the Polaris Tower Master, as well as the six or seven ordinary High Lords he had killed.

He sunk his consciousness within them, probing a bit; there really were some good things in here.

Those martial artists that were able to survive through this trip in the Eternal Demon Abyss were mostly upper level High Lords. In addition to the harvests they had made during this trip into the Eternal Demon Abyss, their wealth could be imagined.

After investigating, he found that there were eight heaven-step treasure as well as 30 jins of human-step Demon God Bones and 12 egg-sized earth-step Demon God Bones. These earth-step Demon God Bones were all obtained from the three Tower Master level powerhouses.

Worth mentioning among them was an earth-step Demon God Bone with a crimson sheen that emitted a faint blood energy. Lin Ming thought for a moment; this should be a medium-grade earth-step Demon God Bone, and one that was approaching a high-grade one at that.

"F*cking shit! These broke little bastards! Even those Tower Masters were useless!" Demonshine was uttering profanities within Lin Ming's spiritual sea. "There is a single Blood Form Bone and everything else is garbage! Garbage!"

The so-called Blood Form Bone was that medium-grade earth-step Demon God Bone. It was a Demon God Bone with the concentrated blood essence of an Emperor level powerhouse within it; it would certainly be useful for Demonshine to recover his soul.

As for everything else, with Demonshine's judgment, it was difficult to enter his eyes.

"You don't want it?"

"I want it! Of course I do, who wouldn't… a grasshopper's meat is still meat. This Saint will kindly take this Blood Form Bone. It should just barely be able to restore this Saint's soul a little bit. As for the rest, you can do with it what you want."

Lin Ming faintly smiled. He modestly took some useful resources into a spatial ring, including the five jins of human-step Demon God Bones. These would be for his friends and family that needed them. As for the 11 earth-step Demon God Bones that were left over as well as the eight heaven-step treasures, he handed them all to Feng Shen, Duanmu Qun, and Lan Xin.

"Brother Duanmu, I thank you for your help just now. I, Lin Ming, will remember this kindness."

Lin Ming's tone was understated. Although his voice was calm, Duanmu Qun knew that once someone like Lin Ming made a pledge, they would forever etch it in their hearts.

In other words, Lin Ming had now truly recognized him as a friend.

Duanmu Qun shook his head, "Brother Lin is too humble, please don't see us as strangers. What we did just now were only some minor efforts. Within the 1000 mile forbidden zone, Brother Lin had already rescued us several times. Without Brother Lin, we would already be dead within the forbidden zone, much less having a chance to obtain anything like resources.

Lin Ming faintly smiled, "In the face of adversity, that is when true feelings are exposed. In my life, I have made very few friends, but today, I've suddenly gained so many!"

At that time, saying that true feelings would be exposed in the face of adversity was no exaggeration. When Lin Ming was facing the simultaneous attack of three people and hadn't yet become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, he had been at a great disadvantage. At that time, Duanmu Qun and the rest had abandoned their own resources, taking a risk that Elder Xiao would kill them all in order to obtain a new spear for Lin Ming. None of this was an easy decision to make.

As Lin Ming traveled along his road of martial artists, all the way until this point, he had seen countless grudges and enmities exposed. He had seen intrigue, danger, hatred, all the worse facets of human nature. But, as for those people that were grateful and remembered the kindnesses that were given to them, he had actually seen very few.

Duanmu Qun originally hadn't wanted to receive this spatial ring, but after Lin Ming's repeated insistence, he finally chose not to decline.

"Brother Lin, where do you plan on going after leaving the Eternal Demon Abyss? If you have nowhere to go, then how about adventuring with us?"

Duanmu Qun really wanted to know just where Lin Ming had come from. It was impossible for such a talent to not have some tremendous background. While winning Lin Ming over to the Divine Wood Holy Land was impossible, having him come to his sect as an honored guest and enhancing their relationship also wasn't bad.

Lin Ming shook his head, "After I leave the Eternal Demon Abyss, I will return to my home."

"Oh? Where is that?" Duanmu Qun casually asked. After he asked, he felt that he had been a bit indiscreet.

However, he never thought that Lin Ming had no intention of hiding anything to begin with. Lin Ming directly replied with a true essence sound transmission, "It is another continent. It is a land that exists outside of the Holy Demon Continent..."

Chapter 668 – Returning to the South Horizon Region

Chapter 668 – Returning to the South Horizon Region

…

…

…

"…What?" Duanmu Qun paused. As someone who originated from a super Holy Land that was nearing a sixth-grade sect, he was considered very well informed. But he had never heard of anyone that had come from beyond the Holy Demon Continent before.

Thinking about it more carefully, there were indeed some extremely ancient texts within his Holy Land that spoke of the Realm of the Gods and also a world outside of the Holy Demon Continent. However, the texts were too old, they were faded and unclear. As for what these places were, what races lived there, and what it was like, Duanmu Qun had absolutely no idea.

"You come from outside the Holy Demon Continent?" Lan Xin's eyes shined, immediately interested.

She had faintly heard that the world didn't consist of just the Holy Demon Continent – there were lands far broader and more glorious. Lan Xin had thought these lands were too far away and it would forever be impossible for someone like her to go there. So, hearing that Lin Ming had come from such a land, how could she not be excited?

"Where is this place?"

“It is a world called the Sky Spill Continent. I come from the South Horizon Region over there.” Lin Ming didn’t hide anything. First, he had come to trust these people as his friends, and second, he was the only one who knew the position of ancient transmission array. Without Lin Ming’s knowledge of where it was and how it worked, no one would be able to access it.

“Sky Spill Continent?” Lan Xin’s charming eyes began overflowing with light. She really wanted to ask Lin Ming to bring her for a look, but she didn’t manage to bring it up.

For a Holy Land descendant to leave their Holy Land, the original reason for this was to go on adventures and gain experience. Walking 10,000 miles would always be superior to reading 10,000 books. If she could broaden her horizons and accumulate more knowledge and experience, this would be of great advantage to her cultivation and future growth.

“Brother Lin, how do you go to your world?” Duanmu Qun was completely interested in the Sky Spill Continent. In the hearts of these outstanding heroic youths, no one wanted to rule a tiny little corner off by themselves. If they didn’t experience the vastness that the world had to offer, they would forever be frogs in a well.

“Through a transmission array.” As Lin Ming saw that his friends were very interested in going to the Sky Spill Continent, he continued to say, “The atmosphere of martial artists within the Sky Spill Continent is inferior to the Holy Demon Continent by far. The martial artists there are much weaker on average, and their talent is somewhat worse. Also… there are only humans, no other races.”

Lin Ming gave a basic introduction to the Sky Spill Continent’s current situation.

The Holy Demon Continent’s races had very complex relations with each other. Every year there would be war and chaos that enveloped the land. Under the pressure of constant fighting and slaughter, it was naturally much easier for a martial artist to grow.

In addition, the Holy Demon Continent's Fey, Giant Demons, and Imps all had natural talents greater than the humans', thus they also had a higher proportion of outstanding heroic youths and also more Emperor level powerhouses.

Relatively speaking, the Sky Spill Continent was much more mundane. There was usually peace in most lands, wars were rare, and there was only the human race.

Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin all glanced at each other. After they confirmed their own thoughts, they asked, "Brother Lin, if it's possible, could we accompany you to the Sky Spill Continent?"

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then happily agreed, "Of course! I'm the only one who knows the method to activate the transmission array, and after I go to the Sky Spill Continent there will be many other matters that I will have to deal with. At the least I'll have to stay for three to five years. During this period of time, I'm afraid that you won't be able to leave."

"Three to five years? No problem!" Duanmu Qun said with no hesitation.

To adventure through another world that was no less vast than the Holy Demon Continent, how could three to five years ever be enough to finish exploring it?

"Great! Ah, yes, that's right, because this is an ultra-long distance transmission array, during the time through it, you'll experience space storms. There is a bit of danger involved, but you can grasp this chance to better comprehend the Concepts of Space and Time. This might be helpful to you."

"Concepts of Space and Time?" Duanmu Qun's eyes brightened. The Concepts of Space and Time were the most illusory and puzzling Concepts that existed. Even among the Fey, who had a natural affinity towards Laws and Concepts, there were far too many that couldn't comprehend it, not even being able to trace the threshold. Even Duanmu Qun, who had the support of a super Holy Land behind him, was only able to catch a tiny glimpse of it.

If he could enter into this chaotic space flow and personally experience this space storm, then there was no need to talk about the advantages he would gain.

This increasingly firmed Duanmu Qun and the others' determination to go to the Sky Spill Continent.

At this time, there was still a dozen or so days until the entrance of the Eternal Demon Abyss opened again. At this time, there wasn't anything left to do. Lin Ming sat on a rock in meditation, slowly consolidating his foundation as he strode towards his goal – the Black Hole Revolving Core.

As for Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and Feng Shen, they all went to their own respective corners and practiced, not saying a single word during this time.

On the 12th day, a ray of light appeared in the dreary sky. Looking up, everyone could see a powerful space channel opening in the air; today was the day that the channel to the Eternal Demon Abyss finally opened.

The 12 channels of the Eternal Demon Abyss went directly to the top level of their Skysplit Towers. When the Skysplit Towers were first discovered, these channels had already existed here.

"Alright, let's leave!"

Lin Ming stood up. Gently tapping his toes, he floated into the sky.

Flying was prohibited within the Eternal Demon Abyss, but these 12 channels were the exception to this rule. Thus, the martial artists present could use these channels to leave the Eternal Demon Abyss.

The Eternal Demon Abyss was over 100,000 feet deep into the earth. Lin Ming, Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen and Lan Xin all followed the Great Ax Tower Master as he flew up. After an incense stick of time, they finally reached the Great Ax Tower.

There were already four or five servants waiting to receive them. All of these people were martial artists of Great Ax Tower.

As everyone saw High Lord Great Ax and Lin Ming appear with everyone else, they looked a bit doubtful. Only the Great Ax Tower Master was left over… did that mean that even Blackstone had died?

Also, behind High Lord Great Ax was Lin Ming, Duanmu Qun, and some others. What was going on? These people weren't from Great Ax Tower, so why they had come through Great Ax Tower's transfer channel?

These martial artists began to whisper to themselves in their hearts, but none of them dared to speak outwardly. At this time, the Great Ax Tower Master waved his hand and said, "Leave!"

"Yes!"

Within Skysplit Tower, the Tower Master had an inviolable authority. Once High Lord Great Ax gave this command, all of the martial artists naturally were quiet as they respectfully drew back.

"Master, please come with me."

The Great Ax Tower Master bowed and began to lead the way. The channel to enter the Eternal Demon Abyss was also on the fifth floor of the Great Ax Tower. The Great Ax Tower Master brought Lin Ming through a complicated pathway before they reached the first floor of the Skysplit Tower. Then, Lin Ming, Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen and Lan Xin all changed their appearances, mixed into the crowd and followed the massive chains down Great Ax Tower.

"Brother Lin, where should we go?" Duanmu Qun asked.

"We're going to Bewitching Cloud Prairie." Lin Ming said with a bit of nostalgia. Without him realizing it, two and a half years had already passed from when he first landed at

Bewitching Cloud Prairie. This land could be considered the absolute bottom world of the Holy Demon Continent. The martial artists that were born within Bewitching Cloud Prairie were like the common mortal martial artists of the Skysplit Continent. They had no resources, no inheritances or legacies, and their strength was extremely limited.

There was still a very long distance from the Blood Slaughter Steppes to Bewitching Cloud Prairie. Lin Ming planned to go to Red Sun City and buy some mounts before going to Bewitching Cloud Prairie.

Duanmu Qun said, “I’ve heard of Bewitching Cloud Prairie. There is quite a distance from here to there. We can take a relay station to get there faster.”

“Oh? Relay station?” Lin Ming’s eyebrows shot up.

Lin Ming faintly smiled and didn’t speak. By his side, Lan Xin puffed up with pride as she explained, “Brother Lin, the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes, including the west and south regions of the Holy Demon Continent, are entirely covered with the relay stations of the Fey Holy Land Alliance. These relay stations connect a very stable transmission array network. I and Brother Duanmu have tokens that allow us to freely use these relay stations. Or, we can use mounts too.”

“Oh?”

Lin Ming’s eyes shined. To establish so many relay stations that the network nearly covered half the Holy Demon Continent, this Fey Holy Land Alliance truly had some ability.

If they were able to pass through these relay stations then that would save a massive amount of time and also be safer. They wouldn’t need to worry about the Steppes Master chasing them down.

“Alright, let’s go through the relay stations.”

…………

With the assistance of these relay stations, a mere six days later, Lin Ming rode a blue-scaled Flood Dragon into the skies of Bewitching Cloud Prairie. Soaring atop those endless blue clouds, he could see the vast Bewitching Cloud Prairie below him. The vibrant green grasslands stretched to the ends of the earth, and near the winding rivers there were herders of various races tending to their sheep and cattle. Occasionally there would be tents gathered together like white clouds against the ground; these were the tribes.

The tribes of Bewitching Cloud Prairie lived a nomadic lifestyle. As for the wealth of these tribes, they were supported by those barren Blood Demon Crystal mines that littered the land.

As Lin Ming gazed upon the Bewitching Cloud Prairie, he remembered the brief and simple time he lived here and also that cute little Qing He who had called him big brother.

Now, Qing He had likely grown into a lady. Perhaps, in a few years, she would be married.

The life a mortal, relative to a martial artist, was simply too short.

Although Lin Ming remembered which tribe Qing He lived in, he didn’t go to disturb her. Instead, he brought Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and Feng Shen to the great snow-capped mountains where the ancient transmission array was located.

These snow-capped mountains were extremely remote, they were almost at the southernmost tip of the Holy Demon Continent.

The ancient transmission array was located in a deep valley within this mountain range. Here, the temperature was very low. All the water had turned to ice, and only a few rays of light penetrated to the valley floor.

The last time Lin Ming had come out from this transmission array, he hadn’t felt anything in particular. But now that he came back to search for it, he found that the space around the canyon entrance was twisted. If one wasn’t skilled in the Concept of Space then there simply wouldn’t be any way they could discover this canyon.

In addition to the fact that this area was located in such a remote place, no wonder this ancient transmission array had been preserved intact here for tens of thousands of years.

“It’s here.”

Lin Ming pointed at the entrance to an open valley nestled within the mountains. The inside of that valley was pitch black, but to Duanmu Qun and the others, this wasn’t even a problem.

The ancient transmission array was a 100 by 100 foot square. Arranged above the ground, it seemed simply like a number of mystical lines connected together in a complex manner – it wasn’t too remarkable.

As for the symbol password, only Lin Ming, who had inherited the memories of the Demon Emperor, was able to open it.

“You guys, stand in the center of the transmission array and then I’ll begin to activate it.”

“Okay.”

Duanmu Qun and the others quickly stepped over to the center of the transmission array. This was the first time that they had seen such a large transmission array themselves. Thinking that they would soon enter the unknown lands of the Sky Spill Continent, they were all filled with eager anticipation.

In order to become a martial artist that stood at the peak, it was impossible to just lord over a tiny kingdom in a corner of the world. In a sense, this would be the first time that they truly faced the outside world.

As Lin Ming spoke, he took out some medium-grade and high-grade true essence stones and arranged them in order around the transmission array. Then, he began to activate the array symbols in order. Right after, a hazy white light began to drift up from the entire transmission array…

Being enveloped in this dim white light, Lin Ming's mind was filled with a wistful emotion.

"Sky Spill Continent, South Horizon Region… I'm finally coming back…"

Chapter 669A – News of Divine Phoenix Island

Chapter 669 – News of Divine Phoenix Island

…

…

…

The Scarlet Dawn Strait was located tens of thousands of miles southeast of Divine Phoenix Island. In between two great islands that were close to each other was a great current that flowed through them. Because the water deep underneath was ripe with precious minerals, there was a very rich stock of fish within the Scarlet Dawn Strait. There were even many low level monsters and vicious beasts that gathered here to look for food.

Thus, this land had become a paradise for common mortals and martial artists. Those people that lived on these islands could simply go to the sea once to obtain a rich harvest of food, enjoying a quiet and comfortable life of peaceful days.

During a tranquil afternoon at the Scarlet Dawn Strait, a light mist permeated the sea. The Scarlet Dawn Strait was often foggy. When the sun set, the fading light would reflect onto this mist, making it seem like red clouds floating atop the water. From afar, it was like the entire strait was covered by a sea of fire. Thus, this was how the Scarlet Dawn Strait had acquired its name.

As mist rose into the air like ethereal smoke, several strange and plump species of fish leapt up from the water, sucking in deep gulps of the fresh air. As these fish leapt back into the water, everyone seemed harmonious and auspicious.

However, in the next moment this calm peace was broken apart by sharp and keening screams. The mist atop the sea was suddenly torn apart and a group of martial artists riding

Heavenly Wind Eagles ran out in complete panic. There were only six Heavenly Wind Eagles, and two or three people were riding each one. Not just that, but these martial artists were all wounded and seemed on the verge of collapse. Their faces were full of worry and nervousness as if they were being hunted down by someone.

“No good… we can’t continue fleeing… we’ve already used the secret skill to spur on the Heavenly Wind Eagles, now they’ve reached their limit. If we fly for another 180 miles then I fear these Heavenly Wind Eagles will vomit their life blood and die. When that happens, all of us will die with them!”

A yellow-clothed martial artist said. He seemed roughly around 30 to 40 years old and had a cultivation at a half-step Xiantian.

As the other martial artists listened to him, all of them revealed vacant expressions of loss and despair. Indeed, if they kept running like this then they would die sooner or later. A Heavenly Wind Eagle was only a low level mount, and there were also multiple people on each one. It was a miracle that they had persisted until now.

“Senior Zhou, what should we do?” A young girl nervously cried out. She was still young, she didn’t want to die yet!

The yellow-clothed martial artist called Senior Zhou remained silent. These martial artists were all from a small sect within the South Sea, and there were even some that were martial artists from the common folk. Of them, he was the only one who came from a third-grade sect and he was even an outer court Elder there. His cultivation was the highest in this group, thus he had the most authority and prestige.

But in this situation, he really was at his wit’s end with no other path he could take.

“There is no way for us to escape death! If those beasts behind us catch up then we’ll be eaten!” A young man in his twenties cried out, his voice trembling. He wasn’t able to reconcile all that was happening to him. In the South Horizon Region, there was a belief that if someone died, their soul would enter into the cycle of Samsara. But, if their corpse was eaten then their soul would be sealed away, forever unable to reincarnate.

Elder Zhao shook his head. He said, “I don’t have a good plan. In this Scarlet Dawn Strait, there is a great island to the north and south of us. The south island is densely covered by forests. If we hide in this forest then we might have a slim chance to live!”

“This is the only way?”

“In any case, continuing like this is the same as dying… we might as well gamble our lives on this!”

Everyone began to shout out. In truth, everyone was well aware that even if they ran into the forest, the chances of them living were extremely slim. The beasts behind them had incomparably keen senses of smell; it would be easy for these beasts to find them.

However, just as they made this decision and were about to fly to the south island, a piercing scream suddenly sounded out from deep within the mist!

The mist was completely stirred up. A vicious bird with the great wings of a bat and an incomparably ugly and bald head zoomed out!

Seeing this, all of the martial artists present turned ashen!

“A ghost condor!”

“This is bad!”

When it rains it pours. Just before this, the group of martial artists had been chased by a group of deep sea vicious beasts, forcing them to rush towards the Scarlet Dawn Strait in distress. But they didn’t expect that there would be a ghost condor stationed here!

This sort of strange and ugly bird had a strength comparable to a late Xiantian realm martial artist. It was a beast none of them were capable of handling!

With this condor in front of them and a group of deep sea vicious beasts behind them, they would undoubtedly die here!

“Scatter and run!”

Elder Zhou shouted out. At this time, this was the only way for any of them to live!

Escaping separately all depended on luck. Dying would be normal and living would require a great stroke of luck!

It could be said that this was their final chance for farewells. In this group of martial artists, many of them knew each other. But now no one had time to bother with these sentiments. They pulled on their Heavenly Wind Eagles and the martial artists on them each randomly selected a direction to escape in!

But, just as they flew several hundred feet away, that strange bird suddenly opened its beak and an extremely terrifying roar came billowing out!

In that instant, a roiling demon essence erupted that caused even the seawater to divide itself in half. As the several Heavenly Wind Eagles heard this roar, all of them seemed to be struck by some mysterious force, some of them running away in sheer fear and some of them simply not moving.

There was even a Heavenly Wind Eagle that lost its ability to fly. It gave a pitiful shriek as it plummeted towards the waters below!

“Little Sister!”

As a man in his thirties saw the two young girls on the Heavenly Wind Eagle fall towards the water, his heart twisted with dismay.

The current South Sea was not the same as before! There were countless more vicious beasts within the waters! If a martial artist didn’t reach the Xiantian realm, they wouldn’t yet have the ability to fly. They could only rely on swimming to get out of the water. But, with a group of vicious sea beasts chasing them, leaving these waters alive was clearly impossible!

The man threw out his sleeve and a whip rapidly shot out from within his robe, wrapping around the waist of the two girls, thus allowing them to avoid the fate of falling into the sea.

However, even if they didn't fall into the sea, there still wasn't any chance for them to live.

At this time, that ghost condor didn't seem as if it was ready to enjoy its meal. Rather, it exposed a cruel and barbaric smile as if the martial artists in front of it were lambs waiting to be slaughtered. As a Xiantian rank vicious beast, this ghost condor already had a low level of intelligence; it knew how to play with its prey for its own entertainment.

This damned beast!

All of the martial artists were furious. But at this time, they really were lambs waiting to be slaughtered. Besides wallowing in their own helpless despair, there was nothing they could do.

"Ooh Ooh Ooh Ooh!"

With another strange and creepy roar, seven or eight black fish rushed out from the mist. These strange fish were all 10 feet long and looked like ordinary sharks. The only difference was that they had a great pair of translucent wings instead of fins, so they were able to fly in the air.

Seeing these disturbing fish appear, Elder Zhou ruefully smiled. From the start, they had been chased here by these seven or eight strange fish. These strange fish with wings all had strength equal to a peak Houtian master; any one of them wasn't much weaker than he was. With seven or eight of these strange fish working together, he simply wasn't able to resist their power, so his only choice was to escape.

But even when he ran all the way here, these strange fish hadn't even done anything before he already encountered a ghost condor. Truly, there was no road to the sky nor a door to the earth; they were trapped in a hopeless situation!

Knowing that he would die here, Elder Zhou seemed to disperse all the fear that had filled his heart. Instead, a heroic spirit seemed to surge within him. Flourishing the long sword in his hands, he loudly shouted, "Everyone, since we can't live, let's fight these damned beasts instead!"

When humans were faced with an utterly desperate situation, it was easy for them to be affected by the emotions of others. As Elder Zhou shouted this out, all of the martial artists present felt their hearts give birth to a noble and stirring emotion.

"Let's rush in together! Killing one is enough, killing two will all be worth it!"

A young man shouted out at the top of his lungs. Since the Heavenly Wind Eagle beneath him didn't listen to his orders, he simply gave up on it. He grasped his broadsword and stood atop the back of the Heavenly Wind Eagle, proceeding to plunge towards the school of strange fish like a fierce and ravenous tiger!

His broadsword slashed out!

At the same time, the strange fish also rushed towards the young man. They opened their jaws wide to chomp down on him!

With this young man's peak Pulse Condensation strength, trying to kill any one of these strange fish was simply hopeless. But, just as everyone thought that he would die in the stomach of these strange fish, an unbelievable matter occurred.

As the young man's broadsword cut down, the body of the strange fish beneath him suddenly shook. In the next instant, it was split in half from head to tail!

A massive rain of blood spilled out. With two hollow sounds, two strange fish had been sliced in half, their corpses falling into the sea.

What!?!?

Not only were the other martial artists shocked, but even the young man was incomparably stunned.

The young man knew just how strong he was. He had known from the very start that he was rushing into his death, but he never imagined that his broadsword would actually split this strange fish in half!

The other strange fish were also astonished by this young man's strike. They all went crazy at once and zealously rushed towards the young man. However, that scene from just a moment ago reappeared! These strange fish were cut apart by some unknown force without a single bit of resistance!

Blood gushed out, dying the entire sea red.

The young man wasn't an idiot. He instantly understood that some mighty expert had helped him in secret. He looked around, then as he looked up, he saw that 1000 feet high in the sky, several figures had jumped down from a blue mount and were slowly flying towards them.

It wasn't just the young man who saw these people, but the other martial artists did too.

Who were these people? They didn't use a weapon, yet they could actually slice apart a peak Houtian vicious beast from 1000 feet away?

Even if they did something, it was still 1000 feet far away. Just how had they done this!?

Mmm? These people...

Elder Zhou looked at the four martial artists that appeared. Among them, a blue-clothed youth looked the same as them. As for the other three, they seemed completely different from the average human. Their ears were longer and pointier and their eyes were longer and angled higher, with several tiny scales embellishing the ends. Their eye and hair colors were also completely different from normal hues.

Just who were they?

As they were all dumbfounded, that ghost condor behind them let out a great roar and rushed towards these people!

At this time, they were completely shocked. Yet, at the same time, they finally saw what these people had done. Rather, it was only the blue-clothed youth that had done something, and it couldn't even really be called that. The blue-clothed youth only glanced at the ghost condor, his eyes flashing with a piercing light as if thunder existed within them.

Then, the ghost condor's body shook as if it had been struck. In full view of everyone, its body was torn into several pieces, all of its organs and bones torn into a jumble of ruined meat!

This attack method was in truth a simple use of a battle spirit. By attaching a battle spirit to the air, it could easily be used to tear apart that ghost condor's body.

All of the martial artists present certainly had no idea what a battle spirit was. All of them were bewildered, shocked, awed.

Heavens! Just what sort of cultivation method was this!? With just a glance, a late Xiantian level monster had been chopped to pieces!!!

How had he done this!?!?

The more than a dozen martial artists were horrified to the extreme. At this time, the blue-clothed youth suddenly asked, "I have some questions to ask you. Who are you? Why are you being chased down by those monsters? What has happened in the South Sea these past years? Have you heard about a sect near the South Sea called Divine Phoenix Island? How is that sect now?"

Chapter 669B – The State of Divine Phoenix Island

Chapter 669B – The State of Divine Phoenix Island

…

…

…

The blue-clothed youth was naturally Lin Ming. Two days, Lin Ming, Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin and Feng Shen had crossed through the ancient transmission array, crossing the many billions of miles all the way to the Skysplit Continent.

The several of them had experienced the space storms together. Compared to Lin Ming's strength two and a half years ago, everyone's strength was naturally much higher. While they passed through these space storms, it could be considered distressing but not overly dangerous.

Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen and Lan Xin had originally all had a slight understanding of the Concept of Space and Time. In addition, as Fey they naturally had a much higher affinity and inborn perception towards Concepts and Laws. After the three people experienced these space and time storms, they benefitted a great deal.

After passing through the day-long travel time of the transmission array, they finally arrived at the broken world where the ancient transmission array was located.

Here was still the same as before, with space cracks everywhere and a great expanse of water flooding the world.

A massive amount of seawater was constantly swallowed up into the dark cracks of this world, it was unknown just where it went…

According to Lin Ming's estimation, this broken world could still support itself for several hundred more years. Afterwards, this world would collapse, and this ancient transmission array would also be destroyed.

After coming out from the ancient transmission array, Lin Ming was anxious to go. After he sealed up the transmission array, he then led Duanmu Qun and the others to fly straight towards Divine Phoenix Island.

However, he soon discovered that the relay station that he remembered had been destroyed!

Originally, within the South Sea Region, Divine Phoenix Island and the South Horizon Region Alliance had established a near-complete network of transmission arrays. This was beneficial for transporting supplies and moving information. However, all of those transmission arrays had been destroyed by human hands.

Obviously… these lands had already fallen. When the Wartime Alliance of the South Horizon Region was retreating, they must have destroyed these transmission arrays before they left.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming's heart sank.

When he had still been at the Holy Demon Continent, he had been ardently hoping to return to Divine Phoenix Island. But now that he had truly come back, he started to feel apprehensive and fearful. He feared that when he reached Divine Phoenix Island, there would be nothing left there but ruins!

As they flew, they were silent the entire time. Lin Ming began to discover that within the South Sea Region, there was a massive number of beasts and monsters that normally weren't seen. Among these creatures it wasn't strange for there to be some at the Houtian realm or even the Xiantian realm.

It had to be known that the South Horizon Region wasn't comparable to the Blood Slaughter Steppes. The Blood Slaughter Steppes was a gathering place for the outstanding heroic youths of the entire Holy Demon Continent. There, Xiantian realm martial artists were no different than cannon fodder. But in the South Sea Region, it was already considered very good for an island to have a second-grade sect on it. There were even many smaller islands that weren't any stronger than the Sky Fortune Kingdom.

To them, facing such a crowd of beasts meant total annihilation!

And indeed, the situation that Lin Ming saw was extremely bad. These islands that were originally inhabited by a great number of people had been turned into wreckage, the entire land desolate and uninhabited.

The more Lin Ming saw, the more distressed he became. He wanted to stop and ask some people questions, but it wasn't until he travelled 100,000 miles that he saw the first group of martial artists he had seen yet. This group was being led by that man named Elder Zhao, and they were being chased down by a pack of monstrous beasts. Lin Ming attached his battle spirit to the air and easily massacred those monsters.

The main reason that Lin Ming rescued these people was to inquire about Divine Phoenix Island's situation.

Seeing Lin Ming fly towards them, Elder Zhao and the group of martial artists became able to make out the looks and age of Lin Ming, Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin.

Seeing Lin Ming's group, they were immediately shocked. None of the four of them seemed past their twenties. At most, they looked to be 27 or 28 years old. But their strength was actually so formidable to a point that it was horrifying. To kill a late Xiantian level monster with just a look – not even a Revolving Core powerhouse would have such ability!

Thinking of this, Elder Zhao's expression paled. Were these youths floating before him actually some super old monstrous beings that had reached a point in their cultivations where they returned to their youths?

With Elder Zhao's limited comprehension, he couldn't imagine that someone could reach the Revolving Core realm in their twenties, or even a higher boundary beyond that. He could only chalk it up to Lin Ming and his group being ancient monstrous experts.

It was said that the South Sea Demon Region had a witch who was named Xuan Yuqie. She was over 1000 years old but had a million different flavors and temperaments she could adopt, even seeming like a young married lady in her early twenties. These people currently in front of him might be in this same situation.

Thinking like this, the panic in Elder Zhao's heart began to subside. He tried to appear as respectful as possible as he said, "Reporting to Senior, this junior is surnamed Zhao. I was an outer court Elder of Little Swallow Island. The martial artists behind me are some junior martial artists from my sect as well as some other martial artists that we encountered on the road who faced the same difficulties that we did. We gathered together in order to leave the South Sea."

Senior?

Hearing this word, Lin Ming had a strange look. As for Lan Xin and Feng Shen, they couldn't help but laugh out loud.

Lan Xin giggled, "I'm not any older than you are so how can I be your senior? How interesting!"

Hearing Lan Xin's words, Elder Zhao's mind shook. Did this young lady Lan Xin mean to imply that her age matched with her appearance!?

Elder Zhao gulped, feeling his mind go numb. Where just did these four youths come from? They were so young yet they already had such strength. It was like they were angels from another world!

"You said that you are an outer court Elder of Little Swallow Island, so did you have to flee the South Sea? Was your sect destroyed? What grade sect are you from?"

There were far too many islands scattered throughout the vast South Sea. There were different sizes and influences of powers that occupied the various islands. These powers didn't belong to the South Horizon Region nor were they under the jurisdiction of Divine Phoenix Island. For this Little Swallow Island sect to suddenly pop out of nowhere, it was normal for Lin Ming not to have heard of it before.

As Lin Ming asked about Little Swallow Island, a trace of sadness appeared on Elder Zhao's face. He said, "Reporting to Great Sir, Little Swallow Island was originally a second-grade sect. In recent years, it just barely managed to rise to a third-grade sect. In the sect, there weren't even over 10 Xiantian Elders. In the great beast tide of the South Sea half a year ago, most of them perished in the onslaught, and as for the rest, they disappeared without a trace..."

Elder Zhao had finally changed Lin Ming's title from senior to great sir. An existence like Lin Ming had already far surpassed his scope of understanding. Since they weren't even within the same world, knowing the identity of the other was useless.

Perhaps he was some descendant from a Holy Land... as Elder Zhao thought this, he was also wondering... could a Holy Land descendant really be powerful to such an extent?

"South Sea great beast tide? What happened?" Lin Ming's mind stirred. He wasn't unfamiliar with beast tides – he had also experienced one when he was at the Sky Fortune Kingdom. That great beast tide had been spurred on by the South Sea Demon Region and had swept through the entire Divine Phoenix Province!

At that time, there were countless people that died. If Lin Ming hadn't made it back on time to Green Mulberry City, then all of the city's citizens would have ended up buried in the bellies of those vicious beasts, his Lin Family included.

Seeing that Lin Ming was completely unaware of this beast tide, Elder Zhao wasn't surprised. He said, "Reporting to Great Sir, the deep sea beast tide occurred just half a year ago. There are countless islands in the South Sea Demon Region, and the depth of the sea here doesn't go deeper than 100,000 feet. This is called the inland sea. But outside of the

South Sea Demon Region and its main domain, the depth of the sea reaches a degree that cannot be imagined. As for how deep this sea actually is, even a Divine Sea Supreme Elder would find it difficult to measure. There are a great variety of powerful deep sea vicious beasts in this area and their numbers alone are immeasurably terrifying. Normally, it wouldn't be easy for them to enter the shallower areas of the sea, but half a year ago, an old devil of the South Sea Demon Region used some unknown method to gather hundreds of thousands of these deep sea vicious beasts to attack the center of the South Sea Wartime Alliance. Combined with the demonic Giant Leviathan, they finally broke through the defenses of the Wartime Alliance in a single fell swoop. From that point on, the Wartime Alliance survived in name only. As for Divine Phoenix Island and the Dire Space Sect which comprised the main forces of the Wartime Alliance, they have already perished in the aftermath..."

Hearing this surname Zhao say such words in a dispirited manner, Lin Ming felt a humming in his mind as if he had been struck by lightning!

Divine Phoenix Island perished!?

Elder Zhao didn't notice the change in Lin Ming's expression. He continued to say, "After the Wartime Alliance was dissolved, us smaller sects were in an even more miserable state. The entire South Sea Domain was seized by the South Sea Demon Region. In addition, for this past half year, the deep sea vicious beasts haven't yet retreated. A number of the powerful vicious beasts divided into several groups and brought giant floods of monsters to sweep over islands where people gathered, killing most of the mortals there. It could be said that this is an apocalypse for the entire South Sea! Now, nearly all the mortal commoners of the South Sea have died. Fortunately, the martial artists were a bit better off. As soon as they obtained the news, they joined together in large units and fled to the mainland. But, there are also some others such as us, who because of various reasons were stranded within the South Sea Domain. For us to cross several hundred miles is truly harder than ascending to heaven..."

Elder Zhao had deliberately spoken these words because he was hoping that Lin Ming would help him return to the mainland. However, just as he was done speaking in a selfish manner, he noticed that Lin Ming's complexion had already become extremely gloomy, terrible to behold. Between his eyes, there seemed to be a raging flame burning there!

As soon as Elder Zhao saw this, his heart jumped and he immediately stopped talking.

"You said that Divine Phoenix Island has perished?" Lin Ming's eyes blazed as he looked at Elder Zhao, his vision suffocating him.

"Yes… yes, Divine Phoenix Island has… it has already… become an island of death." Elder Zhao gulped, stammering out these words. Facing Lin Ming, he felt as if he would die any moment.

"And the people on the island?"

"About this… I… I'm not too sure. I… am just an outer court Elder of Little Swallow Island. I truly have no idea where the main remaining forces of the Wartime Alliance have run too…"

As Elder Zhao spoke, his back was soaked with sweat. Facing Lin Ming, the pressure was simply too great!

"Brother Lin, don't be so worried!"

At this moment, Duanmu Qun suddenly spoke out. His voice was like a gentle spring breeze, immediately lifting off some of the pressure from Elder Zhao. Elder Zhao began to keel over, gasping for breath in big, deep gulps. Just saying those words now seemed to have overdrawn all his strength.

This was because Lin Ming simultaneously had two different force field type martial intents. Even if his aura were to accidently leak out because of his strong emotions, it was still able to bring down a great pressure upon low level martial artists.

“Brother Lin, we need to further think and deliberate on this matter. Worrying too much right now is useless. Listening to this man’s words, the people of the Wartime Alliance might not have perished.”

Duanmu Qun had guessed what sort of relationship Lin Ming had with this Divine Phoenix Island. After thinking about it, he found it very strange. He had assumed that a heaven-defying monstrous genius like Lin Ming would have come from some super Holy Land, but as he listened to the exchange of words, it seemed as if this Divine Phoenix Island was just a middle level sect.

Could Lin Ming have originated from Divine Phoenix Island? That should be impossible, right?

“I understand…” Lin Ming closed his eyes. As he opened them once more, that gloom and worry had already been suppressed and hidden away, replaced with a calm and pure killing intent.

“Let’s go!”

Chapter 670 – Young Girl Incense Burner

Chapter 670 – Young Girl Incense Burner

…

…

…

"Several great sirs… can… could you wait a bit?" Seeing that Lin Ming and his group were about to leave, Elder Zhao nervously blurted out some words.

"Is there something else?"

Lin Ming frowned. At this time, he simply wasn't in the mood to be delayed here.

"Nevermind… it, it's alright." As soon as Lin Ming's vision fell back onto Elder Zhao, Elder Zhao's breath paused in his chest. He didn't even dare to speak the words that he had planned to say. He had wanted to ask Lin Ming if he could bring their group of injured martial artists out of here. But thinking about their speed and how they were no different to snails in comparison, he didn't have the courage to ask.

Lin Ming didn't pay attention to Elder Zhao, he turned around and soared away.

But, Lan Xin guessed what Elder Zhao was thinking about. She faintly smiled as she took out a little boat from her spatial ring, "This is for you. It should be enough for you to safely leave the range of this South Sea."

"This is…" Elder Zhao's mind jumped as he saw that little boat. Before he could guess what it was, Lan Xin had already casually tossed it over to him. As it soared in the wind, after several breaths of time, that small boat turned into a large spirit boat several dozens of feet long!

Feeling the energy emitted from that spirit boat, Elder Zhao was stunned.

A spirit boat was a type of treasure and also had differential grades. The spirit boat currently in front of him, if he wasn't wrong, was a high-grade earth-step treasure!

High-grade earth-step treasure!?

It had to be known that within the Sky Spill Continent, it was already considered extravagant for a Xiantian realm martial artist from a third-grade sect to have a low-grade earth-step treasure. As for a medium-grade earth-step treasure, that was something that only a martial artist at the level of a Highest Elder would be able to have.

As for a high-grade earth-step treasure, that was something only important figures of a fourth-grade sect would have. For instance, Lin Ming's Purple Comet Spear was enough to startle everyone at Revered Master Tianguang's banquet dinner.

And this was a high-grade earth-step spirit boat. Would anyone ever just casually give it away?

Elder Zhao was dumbfounded. The value of this spirit boat alone was several times that of his third-grade sect's total wealth!

"Fairy… fairy maiden, you…" Elder Zhao felt his mouth go dry, as if he were living in a dream.

Lan Xin chuckled, "Take this spirit boat and go. As long as you don't encounter a top Revolving Core vicious beast along the way, there won't be any danger for you and your group. You should be able to ride this all the way to the mainland. We have some matters to deal with, so we'll be heading off first."

Lan Xin said as she launched herself towards the direction Lin Ming went in.

The martial artists that were left behind were in a stupefied daze. In particular, the several young men. As they saw Lan Xin's rapidly fading figure, their vision began to blur.

These people had appeared like gods from heaven, suddenly saving them from fatal danger. Especially that blue-clothed lady. Not only was she amazingly strong but she was also kind at heart and her looks were near perfection. She was like a fairy maiden descended from the skies, making everyone below her feel the weight of their own inferiority.

……

“Brother Lin, that South Sea Demon Region you mentioned just now, what rank of power is it? Are we unable to deal with them?” After they travelled several dozen miles, Duanmu Qun suddenly asked Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission.

Lin Ming shook his head.

“The South Sea Demon Region is a fifth-grade sect and it also has a third grade Life Destruction master protecting it, as well as a number of second stage and first stage Life Destruction Elders. Our strength is still lacking.”

Lin Ming’s current greatest advantage was his striking power. It was beyond that of an ordinary second stage Life Destruction powerhouse. But, in terms of complete integrated combat strength, he was still worse. With Lin Ming’s current strength, he would be able to kill a first stage Life Destruction powerhouse. As for Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin, their strength was still weaker than a first stage Life Destruction master. If they wanted to attack the South Sea Demon Region any time soon, then this simply wasn’t a realistic goal.

“Mm, no need to hurry, we can think about it further. Brother Lin, how do you plan on finding those missing people from Divine Phoenix Island?”

As Duanmu Qun asked this, even Lin Ming was a bit stumped. If Divine Phoenix Island had fled then they would have deliberately concealed where they went. It would be difficult for them to find out. The Sky Spill Continent was so large; if he wanted to find Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan within the entire Sky Spill Continent, then that was tantamount to finding a needle in a haystack.

“We’ll go to Divine Phoenix Island first and then make plans after that.” Lin Ming shook his head, sighing. He could only hope that Mu Qianyu had left some sort of hint or note for him on Divine Phoenix Island.

Back when he first left, he had personally made a pledge that he would return within 10 years. If Mu Qianyu fled Divine Phoenix island, it was impossible that she would have forgotten this. She must have left something there for him. But… what was it? And where would it be?

They traveled the way in silence. Lin Ming and his group traveled day and night. Since they had no transmission arrays, they could only travel via spirit boats and flight.

After several days of time, they finally arrived at Divine Phoenix Island.

From far away, that Divine Phoenix Island that had once been like a clear and beautiful sanctuary of nature was now shrouded in a thick black cloud.

On Divine Phoenix Island, the exquisite pavilions had almost all been destroyed, the great towering trees burnt down. Even the mountain ranges were sundered apart with the earth cracked and ruptured. All of this was evidence revealing the fierce and violent battle that had occurred here.

When Lin Ming was 10 miles away from Divine Phoenix Island, he slowed down, coming to a stop in the air. As he saw this horrific scene before him, his eyes flashed with a dispirited light.

When the war within the South Sea first broke out, Mu Fengxian had thought that the alliance of countless sects together would be able to contend with the South Sea Demon Region. But, only after adventuring through the Demon God Imperial Palace did everyone realize that after thousands of years of slowly recovering their strength, the South Sea Demon Region’s strength might have far surpassed anyone’s expectations.

But, because Xuan Wuji's goal had always been the Demon God Imperial Palace from the start, he had put on an act during his war in the South Sea, pretending that the entire affair was evenly matched with a possibility of either side winning.

After they had obtained the necessary blood sacrifices to open the Demon God Imperial Palace, Xuan Wuji no longer needed to conceal his strength and quickly leveled the Wartime Alliance!

It was true that Divine Phoenix Island had allies in this war, but so did the South sea Demon Region. Whether it was the Black Flood Dragon Clan or those other strange races within the deep sea, any one of them was stronger than the seven sects of the Five Element Region.

Moreover, during the trip into the Demon God Imperial Palace, he had lost a Nirvana Dragon Root because of Lin Ming, but the one to obtain the Giant Leviathan Saint Beast was still Xuan Wuji!

They were originally strong to begin with. Now with the help of the Giant Leviathan, the disparity between Divine Phoenix Island and the South Sea Demon Region was far too great! It wasn't strange for such a disastrous result to occur.

However… understanding it within his mind was one thing, and seeing it with his own eyes was another. Even if Lin Ming's will was strong, he was also sad and pensive. He was worried about Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan's safety.

Qin Xingxuan could be said to be much luckier. With her disguised status as a maid of Divine Phoenix Island, it shouldn't have been hard for her to escape since no one was looking specifically for her.

But Mu Qianyu was different. As a Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island, she would definitely be aimed at. Had she been able to escape from this catastrophe?

As Lin Ming remained silent, Duanmu Qun and the others wisely didn't speak up. They had correctly guessed that those missing people of Divine Phoenix Island must be very important to Lin Ming, because this was the first time they had ever seen him reveal such an expression.

At this moment, there was suddenly a high-pitched roar. From far away, one could see several black spots against the sun. These were actually a squad of demon region martial artists. They were riding seven or eight large bats as they flew towards Divine Phoenix Island.

Each of these martial artists held a lance in their hands. On the back of a few bats there were several young women tied up. From their appearances, they were obviously young girl martial artists from the surrounding South Sea area, captured in order to be used as incense burners for the cultivation purposes of others.

There were two common paths in the demonic realm of martial arts. One was the slaughter path and the other was the sexual path. In the Blood Slaughter Steppes, those demonic realm martial artists had nearly all taken the slaughter path as their foundation. But in the South Sea Demon Region, they were primarily on the sexual path. In the past, because the Netherworld Great Emperor needed a young woman with a special physique in order to further his practice of the devil arts, he had finally abducted an Emperor level powerhouse's daughter. This event had caused a massive reactionary war that finally ended with the Netherworld Great Emperor's death!

As for the South Sea Demon Region, a great reason that they decided to conquer the South Horizon Region was in order to obtain these richer incense burner resources.

As Lan Xin saw these martial artists blatantly capturing young women for obscene purposes, her face was covered with utter hate and loathing. She naturally hated those that captured women like this.

"Lin Ming, are those Giant Demons?"

Duanmu Qun asked with some surprise. He could feel some weird demonic realm energy from their bodies. But, what was strange was that these people cultivated true essence; it was very chaotic.

Lin Ming shook his head, “Those people are humans. Sky Spill Continent only has the human race within it. But, these people share some of the Ancient Giant Demon race’s bloodline. Although it is very thin, it is still an outstanding bloodline.

The martial artists of the South Sea Demon Region were mostly descendants of the Giant Demon clansman that the Netherworld Great Emperor had brought over, thus they also shared a blood relationship with the Giant Demon race. As for their cultivation method, although it was similar that of the Giant Demons, it was adapted for human use.

“What should we do now?” Duanmu Qun asked.

“Kill them all!”

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a cold light. Underneath these dreary skies, his eyes were like bolts of lightning.

After comprehending the Death God force field, Lin Ming would inadvertently release a terrifying aura when he was feeling strong negative emotions. Even Duanmu Qun was secretly scared by this.

“Kill them? Aren’t you afraid you’ll alert the enemy?” Duanmu Qun asked. He thought that Lin Ming only wanted to vent his anger. But in his opinion, this Divine Phoenix Island had obviously become a base for the South Sea Demon Region. If they didn’t know how many people were in this base or how strong they were, it wouldn’t be wise for the four of them to act recklessly. Moreover, even if they killed this low level garbage it wouldn’t mean much.

However, before Duanmu Qun could speak further, Lin Ming had already rushed out. As Feng Shen saw Lin Ming shoot forwards, he wordlessly followed him. For Feng Shen, who had full faith in Lin Ming, he knew that even if Lin Ming was affected by his turbulent emotions he still wouldn't do anything without a reason. Thus, he followed right after him.

Seeing this scene, Duanmu Qun ruefully smiled. He was too lazy to follow. After sweeping over this group of demon region martial artists, he saw that the highest cultivation amongst them was only at the Xiantian realm. They were probably just scouts sent by the South Sea Demon Region. Even if Duanmu Qun went over, Lin Ming would probably have obliterated every single one of them before he was close enough.

“Haha! After searching all the islands around here there truly was some ‘good food’ that we missed. These four young women are all third-grade and fourth-grade martial arts talents. What is rare is that there are also two virgins among them. One shall be given to Sir Protector and the other shall be taken by me. If I take her virgin energy then my Netherworld Devil Arts will rise yet another level! Hahahaha!”

As the captain of these demon region martial artists wantonly laughed, the several other underlings were also in a great mood. “Boss, you take the meat but make sure you leave us some soup! Give those two young married ones to us brothers to enjoy!”

“Of course!” The captain of these martial artists said in high spirits.

As the women heard these remarks they began to imagine just how pitiful and bleak their future lives would soon be. One by one, fear and despair began to cover their faces.

Chapter 671 – You Are Lin Ming?

Chapter 671 – You Are Lin Ming?

…

…

…

These young women that had been captured for use as incense burners were all from nearby small sects. From the small countries they originated from, a fourth-grade martial arts talent could already be called a proud daughter of heaven.

However, after the eruption of the beast tide and their nations were destroyed, these young girls had no choice but to hide in underground secret passages in order to escape the disaster.

But hiding underground wasn’t a long-term plan. Eventually they would have to come out to look for help or look for food. The result of this was that they were captured by the South Sea Demon Region martial artists for their obscene purposes.

The demonic realm sexual path was also divided into two different sorts. One was complementary Yin and Yang, where both man and woman would mutually benefit. The man would profit the woman, and the woman would profit the man. The other was where one person savagely and barbarically pillaged the other, sucking up their vitality. The South Sea Demon Region used this second type. They were of no mind to train them, but would rather suck up their life force and strength, rapidly accelerating their aging.

“Haha, little beauties, after we go back, this big brother will love you well!” The leader of the squad lasciviously smiled as he greedily rubbed one of the girl’s bodies. But at this moment, his eyes widened. Just several miles away, there were the shadows of several people flying towards them. From their clothing, it was obvious that these people weren't from the South Sea Demon Region, but were most likely human martial artists.

The squad captain was greatly startled, "There are actually people that dare come to a branch of the South Sea Demon Region to die? Their brains must have gone sour!"

"There are actually some idiots sending themselves to our door. Sir Protector, it might not be bad if we kill them and say they were spies. We'll also earn some merit for that."

Just as this thought flashed through his mind, he suddenly discovered that the speed at which these people were moving had far surpassed his imagination. The figures of two people actually instantly crossed several miles until they were just a few hundred feet away.

"Uh…?"

The squad captain froze. He could feel the power of space around him suddenly tighten, collapsing upon him and completely locking him inside!

What was going on!?!?

The squad captain inexplicably filled with horror. At this time, the blue-clothed young man had already flown right in front of him, his eyes glittering with a fierce light like a living god of death!

Just by looking in those deep eyes, the squad captain felt as if his soul was being sucked out even as he lost all control of his body!

"Demonshine, search his soul!"

Lin Ming indifferently said. A soul searching technique was an ability from the demonic realm. One needed to have a very deep understanding of the soul as well as a very powerful soul force.

Lin Ming had never studied this technique before so he could only ask Demonshine to do it for him.

A savage energy rushed into the squad captain's spiritual sea. The squad captain felt his spiritual sea being torn apart as all of the information within was sucked dry by Demonshine!

"Big Brother! Ugh..." The surrounding martial artists called out. But, just before they were able to react, in the next moment they felt their entire world go black as all of them passed out.

In that instant, Lin Ming's soul force had pierced through all of their spiritual seas!

This time to kill these people he had used a soul attack, something he hadn't used in a long time. A soul attack and will attack were two completely different things.

A soul, relative to the human body, was one of the most fundamental parts of a human's life.

But one's will was a battle spirit, an energy field. In essence, it was a special type of energy that could be classified as something similar to true essence or demon essence.

There were many objects, such as the Demon God Bone, that had a wisp of residual battle spirit attached to it. But, a Demon God Bone didn't actually have a soul.

"Demonshine, continue searching their souls for any and all useful information. Do not let anything go, especially news about Divine Phoenix Island!"

Lin Ming's gloomy expression was terrible to behold. The reason he attacked this squad was not to vent his anger and hate, but rather to obtain information.

"Okay!"

With Demonshine's soul force, searching the souls of these low level martial artists was easy.

After several breaths of time he had obtained all the information he needed. With their spiritual seas already completely crushed, these martial artists were nothing more than living corpses. He let them fall into the sea to feed any vicious beasts down there.

Demonshine shook his head, “Lin Ming, I didn’t find any information on Mu Qianyu or the others. These martial artists are only part of a single scout squad – they have a very low status within the South Sea Demon Region. Basically, they didn’t participate in the war half a year ago.”

Lin Ming slightly frowned, “Do these martial artists know whether or not there is a South Sea Demon Region master stationed at Divine Phoenix Island to watch over this place?”

“They do know this. On Divine Phoenix Island there is a South Sea Demon Region Elder named Hong Qi who is guarding this area. His cultivation is at the first stage of Life Destruction!”

“Hong Qi? First stage of Life Destruction?” Lin Ming sneered.

When Lin Ming was at the Eternal Demon Abyss, he had killed Elder Xiao as well as the Polaris Tower Master. Both of them had been three-star Demon Kings, a cultivation between the human late Revolving Core realm to Life Destruction realm.

Within the Blood Slaughter Steppes, besides the Steppes Master, all other martial artists had to leave before they reached Life Destruction, otherwise they would be killed by the mystical curse that enveloped the land. Even if one was a Tower Master or supervisory Elder, they still wouldn’t be an exception. That is, unless they became a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon.

However, although the Great Ax Tower master and the Polaris Tower Master both had a cultivation inferior to the Life Destruction realm, because of their own cultivation methods, individual talent, and high rank treasures, they had a total comprehensive combat strength that actually far surpassed a normal first stage Life Destruction powerhouse.

Since Lin Ming could easily kill the Polaris Tower Master, killing a first stage Life Destruction Elder would also be easy.

“Lin Ming, what do you plan on doing?” Demonshine asked.

“Naturally to call out that Hong Qi fellow and then use the soul searching technique on him. Since these small fry don’t know where Miss Mu is, that Hong Qi should know!”

“Hehe, good suggestion, I like it!” Demonshine cackled, evilly licking his lips.

....

The main island of Divine Phoenix Island was 10,000 miles long and wide, with six islands surrounding it. In the past glory days of Divine Phoenix Island, the entire island was constantly immersed in mist. From afar, this seemed like an illusory wonderland. Divine Phoenix Mountain especially, with its many magnificent jade palaces and temples, seemed like a fabled paradise where immortals lived.

However, these days, the entire Divine Phoenix Island was covered in a bleak atmosphere with dark clouds covering the sky. On the main island there were countless patrol parties of demon region martial artists milling about. Occasionally one could see a steady stream of resources being transported towards various buildings, and even young girls being hauled around for use as incense burners.

Within the entire South Sea, Divine Phoenix Island could be called a bountiful land that was second to none. There was a high-grade true essence mine here as well as spirit mountains full of heavenly and miraculous medicinal plants. On these mountains, it was easy to breed rare and precious raw materials for medicines.

All of this had now become the South Sea Demon Region’s resources.

“Subordinate greets Sir Elder!” On the medicinal spirit mountain there was a black-robed man slowly walking around. As six black-robed people saw him, they immediately bent to their knees in salute.

“Mm…” The black-robed man nodded. Within the South Sea Demon Region, Life Destruction powerhouses were normally Elders and Revolving Core martial artists were Protectors.

This black-robed old man was the only Elder that the South Sea Demon Region had stationed here to command Divine Phoenix Island. The South Sea Demon Region planned on founding a branch here at Divine Phoenix Island, and this black-robed old man would become this branch’s future leader.

“Open the medicine garden.” The black-robed old man expressionlessly said. After occupying Divine Phoenix Island, the black-robed old man had no interest in the true essence stone mine here. Rather, he was only interested in Divine Phoenix Island’s medicine garden. For some unknown reason, the land here was extremely rich in spiritual energy; it was a very good location for medicinal plants to grow.

The black-robed old man had transplanted a stalk of his most precious Heart Demon Flower in this medicine garden. Since then, this black-robed old man had been coming to the medicine garden every day to observe the growth of this Demon Heart Flower.

This Demon Heart Flower was an incomparably greedy species of plant. Every day it had to devour a great deal of spiritual energy. As for the other spiritual plants around the Demon Heart Flower, their essence energy was sucked away and they began to slowly wither.

“Good!”

As the black-robed old man saw the plump leaves and fist-sized flower bud of the Demon Heart Flower, he nodded with satisfaction

Those demon region martial artists that were responsible for taking care of the Demon Heart Flower were also filled with anticipation, waiting to see if there were any rewards. But, at this time, in the direction of the entrance, there was actually a loud deafening sound like a thunderclap!

Bang!

A true essence shockwave recklessly shook the air; even the ground began to intensely tremble!

“Mm? What’s going on?” The black-robed old man frowned. Who was so ignorant that they dared to come to the South Sea Demon Region’s branch to cause trouble!

In these past years, and especially the past six months, the South Sea Demon Region had united several deep sea tribes and clans of the South Sea, forming a massive super alliance. After they crushed the Wartime Alliance, the entire South Horizon Region, as well as several nearby territories, no longer had the ability to outright oppose the South Sea Demon Region.

Although the black-robed old man was surprised, he didn’t immediately rush over. If this other party dared to come crashing into his gate, they must have some ability or backing. Unless they were idiots that is.

If it were really some old monstrous elder coming to take revenge, then he would have to act according to the situation.

He sent out a sound transmission talisman to inquire about the situation. When he found out that the other party only consisted of four people and their cultivations were only at the Revolving Core realm, the black-robed old man was stunned.

Just where had this bunch of idiots come from?

Coldly snorting, the black-robed old man turned into a beam of black right as he rushed towards the medicine garden’s entrance!

Several dozen miles only took a brief moment to cross. As the black-robed old man and his many subordinates arrived at the entrance, they saw that the massive black gate had already been blown apart. The plaque that said ‘South Sea Demon Region – Divine Phoenix Branch’ had been thrown to the ground and shattered into pieces. Surrounding this broken sign were five or six South Sea Demon Region martial artists that were also slumped to the ground. Their entire bodies were covered in blood and not a single one of them was alive.

As the black-robed old man saw this, his heart filled with a raging anger, “Who dares to be so bold to do this! Come here and die!”

After roaring out, the black-robed old man’s eyes focused. Just 1000 feet away, there were four figures that were flying over to him.

“It’s these people? Humph!” The black-robed Elder swept his eyes over these four people’s cultivation. As he realized they were all at the Revolving Core realm, his heart rate stabilized. Just as he was about to kill these four and show them the absolute difference in their strength, he noticed a blue-clothed youth in this group and was immediately stunned.

This blue-clothed youth looked to be a bit over 20 years old. He held onto a long white spear, and his two straight eyebrows slanted up towards his temples. His handsome looks were outstanding, and his eyes seemed to be as sharp as lightning. From his head to his toes, he exuded an incomparably keen aura that made one’s heart shrink with fear.

This youth was…

As the black-robed Elder saw this blue-clothed youth, he was instantly petrified. His eyes went as wide as full moons as they filled with disbelief.

In the past, he too had gone to the Demon God Imperial Palace, and he had an incomparably deep impression of this face. Although his appearance and temperament had changed quite a bit, he still was able to recognize this youth at a glance.

“You are… Lin Ming!? You’re still alive!?”

Chapter 672 – Soul Search

Chapter 672 – Soul Search

…

…

…

After being called out by his name, Lin Ming was startled. As he fixed his eyes on that Life Destruction Elder, he suddenly had a memory of him. This Elder had been part of the South Sea Demon Region party that had entered the Demon God Imperial Palace. Luckily for him, he was also one of the few South Sea Demon Region Elders that had managed to survive.

At the Demon God Imperial Palace, Lin Ming had created a false illusion of his own death before he left. Although Xuan Wuji, Abbot Whitebrow and those other old fellows were all monsters that had lived for over a thousand years, all of them had been fooled by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's age and strength were his best cover. No matter how suspicious or cautious Xuan Wuji and the others were, none of them suspected that someone as weak as Lin Ming had bamboozled them. Finally, they decided that there must have been some powerful expert that had come to steal the Nirvana Dragon Root and had perfectly calculated events to outmaneuver them.

But now, Lin Ming was actually alive!

Not only was he alive, but he had also broken through to Revolving Core!

It had to be known that Lin Ming was only 20 years old!

A 20 year old Revolving Core master… this was too shocking!

All sorts of questions began to rise within that Life Destruction Elder's heart like a stormy sea. Just how had Lin Ming left the Demon God Imperial Palace? He had gone missing along with the Nirvana Dragon Root and the Cosmic Melting Furnace; did these two treasure end falling in his hands? In these two and a half years, where had he gone? How could he possibly have broken through to Revolving Core in such a short period of time?

Even through all these puzzles, the black-robed old man was absolutely sure of one thing.

There was absolutely some great secret to Lin Ming!

"Lin Ming, so it seems that the Nirvana Dragon Root and Cosmic Melting Furnace really did end up in your hands. Heh, to think that we've spent so much time and effort travelling far and wide looking for you, only to find you here so easily... hand over the Nirvana Dragon Root and Cosmic Melting Furnace now and this old man may well allow you to live!"

As the black-robed old man spoke, his hand had already begun to silently trace his spatial ring.

As the other martial artists heard Lin Ming's name, their eyes also lit up with recognition. During the war in the South Sea and when Lin Ming had killed Lei Mubai, there had already been a price placed on his head by the South Sea Demon Region. After the trip into the Demon God Imperial Palace, the South Sea Demon Region has also launched a wide-scale search of the entire South Sea in order to find Lin Ming. But in the end, all of their efforts had been in vain.

The martial artists present had all seen Lin Ming's portrait before. It was only because a period of time had passed and there had been some slight changes to Lin Ming's looks and temperament that they didn't immediately realize it was him.

"Surround him!"

This group of martial artists had cultivations at Revolving Core and Xiantian. Every single one of them was well aware of just how strong Lin Ming was. They knew that they weren't his match, so they surrounded him in order to prevent him from escaping.

Lin Ming coldly and indifferently glanced at these people, thoughts of killing flashing through his mind. The first thing he thought of was… to kill everyone here!

After returning to the South Horizon Region, his strength was still inferior to Xuan Wuji's. It would be unwise to expose his own identity so early in order to stop Xuan Wuji from chasing him down.

However, as soon as he thought of this he also changed his mind. If news of his identity was spread out, then perhaps it might reach Mu Qianyu's ears. In this way, he might be able to inform Mu Qianyu that he had returned.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming hesitated, unsure of what to do.

"Carnage Demon Great Array!" The black-robed old man knew just how terrifying Lin Ming was. Reasonably speaking, no matter how strong Lin Ming was, it was impossible for an early Revolving Core boy to defeat a Life Destruction master. But, if he dared to come here so brazenly, then he must have some sort of backup.

A lion would surely kill a rabbit. Using his complete all-out strength and having his men lay down this Carnage Demon Great Array was the right way to go about things.

Cha cha cha!

Over a dozen black flags flew out in the air. All of the black-clothed men grabbed a black flag and began to rapidly move around Lin Ming, stepping in a weird and distorted pace. With every step they took, they would leave behind a faint black mark.

Duanmu Qun and the others were naturally also covered in this array formation. But, towards an array formation of this degree, none of them were worried. Within the Eternal Demon Abyss' 1000 mile forbidden zone, any danger zone was far more terrifying than this array could ever be.

Lin Ming allowed these people to arrange the array formation as they wished, only casually standing in the center of the array formation as he was lost in his thoughts.

He pondered, should he kill all these people? Or allow some to live so they could spread the news of his return?

After the Carnage Demon Great Array was laid down, the black-robed old man let out a breath of content. Revealing a cunning smile, he took out a thick saber from his spatial ring and cut down!

Carnage Demon Cut!

With the support of the Carnage Demon Great Array, he would be able to raise his strength by over 10%. As for Lin Ming, his strength would drop precipitously within this array formation. In addition to the absolute disparity of their cultivations, he didn't believe he would lose here!

As long as he could kill Lin Ming, even if he didn't obtain the Cosmic Melting Furnace of Nirvana Dragon Root he would still be able to learn just what great secrets Lin Ming held and just why Lin Ming had been able to go from the early Xiantian realm to the early Revolving Core realm in just a mere two and a half years.

When that time came, he was prepared to leave the South Sea Demon Region, escaping with all of his wealth. He had no intention of bowing down while handing such a great lucky chance to Xuan Wuji. With all of this in his grasp, perhaps he might even be able to reach the Divine Sea. When that time came, in this great world there would be nowhere he couldn't go!

"Lin Ming, I'll take your life!"

As the black-robed old man shouted out loud, a billowing black energy began to surge from his body. Behind him, an Ancient Giant Demon phantom appeared, holding onto a great halberd. This Giant Demon stood over 10 feet tall, menacing the world as it emanated a terrifying aura!

The black-robed old man didn't underestimate Lin Ming in the least; at the very start he had already used his ultimate finishing ability. And in addition to the increased power from the Carnage Demon Great Array, the power of this strike made all of the demon region martial artists around him pale with awe and horror.

The black-robed old man's attack had finally roused Lin Ming from his thoughts. Lin Ming looked up at this black-robed old man.

Yes, first he would kill this old fellow and search his soul to see if there was any news about Mu Qianyu. If there was, then he would kill everyone else here. If there wasn't then he would consider letting news of his return leak out.

Thinking this, Lin Ming gave a low shout. The true essence within his body began to revolve. Infusing his battle spirit into the white spear, he thrust it out!

Facing the alarming and terrifying attack of this black-robed old man, Lin Ming's spear actually seemed rather plain and simple.

The black-robed old man grinned demonically. His saber cut straight towards Lin Ming's neck; this was a sure-kill strike!

Chi-la!

With the sound of space tearing, the black-robed old man's billowing clouds of demonic energy were like great black curtains as they were torn apart by Lin Ming's spear wind!

The black-robed old man was shocked.

The hell was this strength?

Damn!

The black-robed old man's face twisted. He revolved the energy in his body to the limit, completely pouring everything he had into the saber edge. This strength of this Carnage Demon Cut lay in the blade itself.

Clang!

The thick saber collided with the white spear and the piercing sound of screeching metal filled the air. The black-robed old man felt his palm shake and his muscles tear, blood shooting from his arm. Then, the unbelievable occurred. That old man's saber was actually broken apart by Lin Ming's spear!

The sharp spear point thrust towards the black-robed old man's throat like a viper!

"What!?"

The black-robed old man was greatly shocked. In this split second, without any time to think, he quickly retreated. However, just as he avoided the spearpoint, a roiling gust of air rushed over the black-robed old man, directly piercing towards his throat.

This wave of air had the true essence stream of a battle spirit attached to it!

Puff!

The black-robed old man's bodily true essence protection was penetrated. The flow of true essence continued unabated. It directly cut through half of that black-robed old man's throat, blood bursting out!

"Ahh!"

The black-robed old man was frightened to the point that all of his previous bravado and courage was smashed apart; he simply had no idea what had attacked him.

And his weapon, a top earth-step thick saber, how could it possibly have been broken in half by Lin Ming's spear?

Just what was going on?

The black-robed Elder only felt a cold sweat creep down his back. The sudden developments in this battle had completely surpassed his scope of understanding. Without further delay, the black-robed Elder turned around and ran away!

"You're staying here!"

Lin Ming stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void and the space underneath his feet shrank. He flash stepped behind the black-robed man, his spear thrusting out!

The black-robed Elder was terrified. Quickly turning around, he threw out two flying swords. These flying swords were high-grade earth step treasure. Normally he wouldn't be using them, but in this situation, he thrown them out like hidden weapons.

Clang! Clang!

With two metal rings, Lin Ming waved his spear and directly knocked away the two flying swords.

As the flying swords spun upside down, Lin Ming stretched out a single hand and poured his battle spirit into the sword blades. The two swords suddenly straightened out in mid-air and shot right back towards the black-robed Elder!

"Ahh!"

The black-robed Elder was dismayed, losing all of his composure. He twisted his body, trying to dodge both these flying swords, but one of them still managed to pierce through his thigh!

The black-robed Elder miserably shrieked, his speed immediately slowing down. At this point, his face was as white as funeral ash. "Young Hero Lin, please spare my life! As long as you let me live, I will tell you all the plans of the South Sea Demon Region and tell you everything you want to know about Divine Phoenix Island!"

"No thanks."

Lin Ming's spear fell down. With his battle spirit infused into the spear, the spear instantly broke through the black-robed Elder's bodily true essence and stabbed into his heart!

With a twist of true essence, all of the black-robed Elder's guts turned into a puddle of goo.

"Demonshine, search his soul!"

When a martial artist had just died, their spiritual sea wouldn't have dispersed yet. This brief period of time was more than enough to use a soul searching technique. The information obtained from a soul searching technique was naturally much more reliable than the black-robed Elder spilling it out.

"Okay!"

Demonshine playfully smiled and a black beam of light shot out from between Lin Ming's eyebrows, directly piercing into that black-robed Elder's spiritual sea.

Lin Ming didn't sit around either. He flicked out his fingers and a small snake of crimson lightning shot into the black-robed Elder's body.

This red lightning was the Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder.

The Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder made a pass around the black-robed Elder, bringing out a thick fog of blood!

Lin Ming put out his hand and this blood fog began to concentrate, turning into a fist-sized ball of blood. This was the black-robed Elder's complete blood essence!

This was the first time that Lin Ming had truly killed a Life Destruction powerhouse. In the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming had consecutively killed the Polaris Tower Master and the supervisory Elder, both of whom had strength equal to a Life Destruction master. However, that was still only having strength equal to one; their true cultivation was actually below the Life Destruction realm, otherwise it would have been impossible for them to stay in the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

After Revolving Core, Lin Ming guessed that the blood essence of a Life Destruction powerhouse should be enough to open the Magic Cube once again!

However, now was not the time to open the Magic Cube. Lin Ming flicked his fingers and began to form silk threads made of thunder, wrapping the blood essence in layers of this. Soon, all of the blood essence was cocooned in this energy. Then Lin Ming formed a dozen runes and thoroughly sealed the blood essence.

Like this, this glob of blood essence should be able to maintain its vibrant vitality for another month. He could use it anytime during this period to open the Magic Cube.

At this moment, Demonshine's divine sense withdrew from the black-robed Elder's spiritual sea. “Hey boy, I have some good news and bad news. Which do you want to hear first?”

Chapter 673 – Mu Qianyu's Message

Chapter 673 – Mu Qianyu's Message

…

…

…

"Hey boy, I have some good news and bad news. Which do you want to hear first?"

"Demonshine, I'm not in the mood to joke with you right now. What's the news?" Lin Ming frowned. At this time he really didn't have thoughts of playing around.

"Aiyaya, you're really boring. For better or worse, this Saint had to consume quite a bit of soul force for this information." Demonshine muttered with a sulking expression. But as he saw that Lin Ming looked very serious, he no longer joked around and directly said, "The good news is that Mu Qianyu should be safe. Whilst the South Sea Demon Region was focused on finding the key figures of Divine Phoenix Island like Mu Qianyu, Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian, they still weren't able to catch them…"

As Lin Ming heard this, he let out a long sigh of relief, as if something heavy was lifted off of his back, "Where have they gone?"

"That I do not know." Demonshine spread his doggy paws out, "If that black-robed old man knew where Mu Qianyu and them had scampered off to, then they probably would have gone to capture them tomorrow."

Seeing Lin Ming remain silent, Demonshine said, "I don't know where they went, but they should have joined in with some other powers that formed the Anti Demon Alliance. But, their days shouldn't be much better off. They're likely hiding somewhere with appearance changing techniques too."

“Anti Demon Alliance…” Lin Ming thought for a moment. In an organization like that, it should be somewhat safer.

“And the bad news?” Lin Ming glared at Demonshine, his heart still not completely relieved. If Demonshine’s so-called ‘good news’ was that Mu Qianyu had escaped, but the ‘bad news’ was that Qin Xingxuan had been captured, then he really wouldn’t be able to resist his impulse to strangle this damn old dog to death.

Demonshine said, “The bad news is that Xuan Wuji has gone into closed-door seclusion lately. Chances are he should be able to come back out in a few months or even half a year. When that happens, he should have broken through to the fourth stage of Life Destruction.”

When a human martial artist went through Life Destruction, they had to break apart the Revolving Core in their body and then reform it. This process absolutely could not be disturbed nor could they interrupt their seclusion.

“I see…” Lin Ming let out a long sigh of relief. He didn’t care too much about Xuan Wuji making a breakthrough or how powerful his enemies were. What he did fear was whether or not his family and friends were in danger.

“Xuan Wuji has probably plundered countless resources these past two years, otherwise that old thing would never attack the fourth stage of Life Destruction unless he had absolute assurance in his success.” Lin Ming reflected.

Xuan Wuji had great ambitions. He had set his determination to break through to the Divine Sea and have his South Sea Demon Region become a Holy Land. The reason that the South Sea Demon Region had lit the flames of war was all in order to compete for cultivation resources and pave the road for Xuan Wuji to become a Divine Sea master.

“Lin Ming, what will your next step be?” Duanmu Qun walked over beside Lin Ming and asked him.

“First we will cleanse Divine Phoenix Island!” Lin Ming said with a murderous tone. Towards the martial artists of the South Sea Demon Region, he didn’t even have a hint of compassion or favorable impression. In his mind, those that followed the path of perversion were far more evil and dangerous than those that followed the path of slaughtering.

“Haha, good idea!” Duanmu Qun flourished his long sword. Under the Life Destruction realm, he could be considered invincible. Now that the Life Destruction Elder was gone, sweeping away everyone else on this island would be an easy task.

“Brother Feng Shen, you take the south, I’ll take the north, and Lan Xin can go west. Brother Lin, the rest can be left to you. How about it?”

Feng Shen nodded. He took out his long sword and immediately flew towards the south part of the island.

Lin Ming grasped his white spear and flew straight towards the Vermillion Bird Temple. Originally, the Vermillion Bird Temple was the central shrine of the Vermillion Bird Faction. He wanted to search over there to see if there were any clues left behind by Mu Yuhuang or Mu Qianyu.

The remaining demon region martial artists on Divine Phoenix Island were already in a complete mess. They simply couldn’t withstand the impact of these four people and gave way at the first encounter. Everyone began scattering in all directions, fleeing off to hide by themselves.

Feng Shen, Lan Xin, and Duanmu Qun were all extraordinarily beautiful individuals, but when it came to killing others, they could slaughter without blinking. After all, they had experienced the frigid battlefield that was called Skysplit Tower.

Feng Shen’s sword was like the wind. Every sword would stab between an enemy’s eyebrows, taking their life with a single blow. As for Lan Xin, she preferred to slice the throats of others. As she continued to kill she kept finding dying women that were captured for obscene purposes. This caused her to hate those demonic path martial artists even more, killing them all without an ounce of mercy.

At this time, Lin Ming had already rushed into the Vermillion Bird Temple.

The once glorious and majestic Vermillion Bird Temple was now desolate and gloomy. The great protective array here was long since broken and many of the tiles and walls were torn apart. The beautiful carvings and reliefs on the walls and columns were now ruined and decayed.

Because Duanmu Qun and the others were busy killing off the remnant forces and the black-robed Elder had already died, the Vermillion Bird Temple was now deserted.

Lin Ming searched everyone. Besides finding a few pale and sickly girls in ragged clothes, he didn't find any other clues.

With a sigh, Lin Ming took out some clothes from his spatial ring and tossed them to these young girls. Then, he fell into contemplation. If Mu Qianyu had really wanted to leave him a message, just where should she keep it and in what form?

When he had been with Mu Qianyu, she had never shown him any sort of special code or cipher. If this sort of information wasn't hidden well and was discovered by the South Sea Demon Region, then the consequences would be dire.

But, if she were to hide a message, how could she guarantee that others wouldn't be able to find it?

On such a vast Divine Phoenix Island, just where would Mu Qianyu leave a clue?

Lin Ming released all of his perception to cover the entire Vermillion Bird Temple, hoping that he would find even the slightest hint.

As he searched over and over again, Lin Ming found many of the old tools and objects that Mu Qianyu had used when she lived here. Vaguely, he could see that red-clothed woman who lived here every day, who loved playing instruments and practicing martial arts.

Unfortunately, with the passing of time, all things came to an end. Those beautiful and endless days could no longer be sought here.

Lin Ming remembered that Mu Fengxian once said that whenever an Emperor powerhouse was born, they needed a massive amount of destiny and lucky chances falling upon their shoulders. But, the sect that the future Emperor powerhouse started out from wouldn't necessarily be able to benefit from the birth of an Emperor level powerhouse.

This was because the growth of a true Emperor powerhouse would cause the attraction and provocation of many powerful enemies. If a sect lacked strength and destiny and was unable to carry such a genius, then that genius would be the reason that the sect perished. Since ancient times, this sort of matter was very common.

"I hope that Miss Mu, Qin Xingxuan, and the others are safe..." Lin Ming could only pray like this. After finding no clues, he left the Vermillion Bird Temple in a sad and dispirited manner.

Carefully thinking about it some more, even if Mu Qianyu had intended to leave some clues, she might have been helpless to begin with. Mu Fengxian and the others might not have been immediately able to decide where to go. After all, this was a top fourth-grade sect with tens of thousands of people. Moving to a new home that was hidden and had adequate resources... wasn't that easier said than done?

As Lin Ming left the Vermillion Bird Temple he was somewhat dazed.

Looking out towards the distant horizon, he could vaguely see the faint white fog of the world. The bright sunlight fell onto the sea, illuminating it like a golden flame. Atop this golden flame were many sea birds flying over. It seemed to be a very peaceful and serene scene.

The Vermillion Bird Temple was located at the highest point of Divine Phoenix Mountain. One could see the entire view of the South Sea as well as survey all of Divine Phoenix Island.

When Lin Ming was overlooking the view from Divine Phoenix Island, he actually saw a place that was covered with an extremely thick heaven and earth origin energy. His soul was stunned. This was... the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm!

The Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm originated from the Ancient Phoenix Clan. As for what rank power the Ancient Phoenix Clan was, Lin Ming found it hard to say. Four years ago, Lin Ming was still a Pulse Condensation period martial artist. With his talent, he was permitted to enter the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, and there he managed to enter the general level smelting trial. But, he had been far away from reaching the king level smelting trial.

Thus it could be seen from this alone that the Ancient Phoenix Clan must have been a terrifying power. Although they might not have been able to compare to the Eternal Demon Abyss, they were absolutely above the Demon God Imperial Palace!

The Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was also surrounded by an ancient array formation that only Divine Phoenix Island could open. Even if the South Sea Demon Region captured Divine Phoenix Island, they still wouldn’t have the ability to open the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

In other words, the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was an absolutely safe place.

Was it possible that Mu Qianyu had left him some sort of message within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm?

As Lin Ming thought of this, he no longer hesitated and flew directly towards the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. The several dozen miles passed in a fleeting instant.

The Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was located in the depths of the Divine Phoenix Island mountain range. It was surrounded by a formation of mountains and valleys that kept the energy of the land within. The heaven and earth origin energy here was very rich, especially fire and water origin energy. It was thick to the point of nearly becoming a faint mist.

There was a protective array formation outside of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. In order to enter, one first had to pass through this array formation.

This was an ancient array formation; it wasn’t something that the South Sea Demon Region had the ability to break open.

Lin Ming was originally familiar and proficient with ancient array formations. He had also entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, completing the final general level smelting trial and had been recognized by the Divine Phoenix Mystic realm. Even if he didn't learn the method of how to open this array formation from Mu Yuhuang, figuring out how to do it wouldn't be too hard for him either.

After an hour of time, Lin Ming found out the approximate method to open it. Revolving the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' within his body, he reached out his hand and formed flaming golden runes.

The void trembled. With a buzzing sound, the space several dozen feet in front of Lin Ming began to distort, as if it were calmly rippling water. But, these ripples didn't last too long, and soon faded away.

Lin Ming wasn't discouraged. He attempted time and time again to fuse the Concept of Space into these flame array symbols. Finally, after another quarter of an hour, he opened the barrier.

A barrier of light appeared in thin air. Within the barrier, there was a single gap. From within, he could feel the intense energy of fire and ice colliding with each other, the sound of muffled thunder filling the air.

Lin Ming calmed himself and stepped through the protective array formation to enter the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

Light flashed. Lin Ming arrived at the mountain valley where the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was. But in the instant when he entered, Lin Ming saw that near the entrance to the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, there were elegant and beautiful letters carved on a 10,000 year old parasol tree.

'Thundercrash Mountain, nameless cave, ten years' time, the appointed meeting!'

At the moment he saw these words, Lin Ming's heart shook like an earthquake passed through him. Just 10 words and written in such a simple manner, yet they contained the strong will and determination of Mu Qianyu. She didn't write what would happen if they couldn't make their appointment, nor did she write that they would die.

Ten words. The writing was graceful and succinct, as if it had fused within it an incomparably firm belief that allowed no room for doubt. No matter what happened during this time period, no matter what difficulties she faced, what trials and tribulations she would encounter…

Ten years' time, the appointed meeting!

It was as if Lin Ming could see the scene that happened here six months ago. When Mu Qianyu had rushed into the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm and engraved this message, her hands were fast but firm. In her eyes was a faint trace of hope and faith, a touch of deep love and also sadness…

As for the nameless cave of Thundercrash Mountain… that was the place Mu Qianyu and Lin Ming had stayed when they first met. In that cave, the two of them had spent three days and three nights filled with immeasurable warmth…

Chapter 674 – The Fifth Opening of the Magic Cube

Chapter 674 – The Fifth Opening of the Magic Cube

…

…

…

When he had first gone to Thundercrash Mountain, by pure chance, Lin Ming had encountered Mu Qianyu as she was battling the Thunder Flood Dragon. After, when Mu Qianyu had been wounded and was in trouble, Lin Ming had helped her recover within the nameless cave. With his past humble and low status, this was the first time he had ever come into contact with such a proud daughter of heaven. Three days later, Mu Qianyu had left without a word, leaving behind only a message. Finally, Mu Qinghong had visited the Seven Profound Valleys and had taken notice of Lin Ming during the Total Faction Martial Meeting. Then, in the sect training program, Lin Ming had been chosen as the only heaven-step talent…

All of this seemed as if it had happened just yesterday.

During Lin Ming's early period of growth, Mu Qianyu and Divine Phoenix Island had helped Lin Ming many times.

Thundercrash Mountain, nameless cave, tens years time, the appointed meeting…

Lin Ming traced his hand over these letters and quietly clenched his fists. Ten years was the promise that he had originally made, but now, he had come back over seven years early.

Since he had come back, he would no longer allow the situation in the South Sea to continue as it was.

He absolutely would not allow Mu Qianyu and the martial artists of Divine Phoenix Island to drift around like displaced refugees!

“I don’t need to use these ten years. Within three months, I will find you!” Lin Ming secretly made this oath to himself as he gazed at the words on that 10,000 year parasol tree. Then, he sat down next to it.

“Lin Ming, what are you doing?” Demonshine asked.

“Opening the Magic Cube.”

“Are you kidding? You’re going to open it here?”

“Opening the Magic Cube takes less than an hour and with the protective array formation of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, this area can be considered safe!” As Lin Ming spoke, he took out the blood essence of the black-robed old man from his spatial ring.

When Lin Ming had first obtained the Magic Cube, he had gone into the space within the Magic Cube when he was sleeping. This was the first time he had opened the Magic Cube.

Afterwards, Lin Ming obtained the flexible armor that the Crown Prince had gifted to him. The flexible armor was marked with the blood essence of a Houtian master. This blood essence was then absorbed by the Magic Cube; this was the second time that the Magic Cube opened.

The third time was when Lin Ming had killed Ouyang Boyan. With Ouyang Boyan’s blood essence, he opened the Magic Cube once again.

The fourth time, Lin Ming had used the suppressive laws of the Demon God Imperial Palace and killed a Revolving Core master, using that master’s blood essence to open the magic cube yet again.

Now would be the fifth time!

From Houtian to Xiantian to Revolving Core and now Life Destruction!

Lin Ming began to unravel the spells on the cocoon until there was just the red glob of blood left. Lin Ming didn't have the Magic Cube absorb this yet. Rather, he first entered into the ethereal martial intent and adjusted his mindset until he was as calm as a still lake.

Then, Lin Ming took off his clothes, revealing a strange mark on his left chest. This mark was the mysterious ancient symbol rune of the Magic Cube.

With a deep breath, he slowly pressed the black-robed old man's blood essence into his chest.

Right after, Lin Ming felt a burst of burning heat in his chest; this was the blood essence being absorbed by the Magic Cube.

After being silent for several years, the Magic Cube once again welcomed the fresh blood essence of a powerhouse!

Chi chi chi!

As the blood essence was absorbed, it was just like a deadly poison that was scattered on the ground. It seemed to constantly corrode away, producing a slight trace of smoke.

Lin Ming felt within himself, perceiving the energy fluctuations of the Magic Cube within his chest. He could feel that after the Magic Cube had absorbed the blood essence, it seemed to beat in rhythm with his heart.

After 10 breaths of time passed, Lin Ming felt his spiritual sea shake. In the next moment, all of his consciousness was completely sucked into the Magic Cube. With a dizzying feeling, Lin Ming's mind had arrived once again in that pitch black space within the Magic Cube.

Lin Ming was familiar with this place. In the vast and boundlessly dark sky, countless soul fragments glittered like infinite stars.

These soul fragments floated around in a haze of thick mist. In the center of all these soul fragments, there was a large sphere of light that was one foot in diameter, slowly glowing with a gentle light. Lin Ming suspected that this sphere of light was the previous master of the Magic Cube, that Saintess of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands.

After arriving in the Magic Cube space once again, Lin Ming's mentality was extremely stable. Now he had a battle spirit and his willpower was much more formidable than it was before. He would be able to handle most of these soul fragments, unless that fragment was to contain the remnant consciousness and will of the Supreme Elder it once belonged to. If that were true, then swallowing a soul fragment like that might be a bit dangerous.

Linking his mind to the many soul fragments, because of Lin Ming's stronger soul force, he was now able to clearly sense the energy that emanated from these soul fragments. Some had a gentle, soft energy, some were tyrannical, and some emitted an evil, bloodsoaked energy.

The smaller fragments were directly ignored by Lin Ming. He only looked at those that were at least two inches wide. Then, he began to sense them according to the energy they emitted, looking for a soul fragment that might have a cultivation method or other skill that was useful.

But there were simply too many soul fragments in the space of the Magic Cube. Even after searching through so many, it was difficult for Lin Ming to know just which one would be the most valuable to him.

At this time, Demonshine's voice sounded out in Lin Ming's mind, "Lin Ming, this Saint will help you choose. I can guarantee it will be enormously useful for you."

"Oh?" Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. Although Demonshine did like to brag often, he had to acknowledge that this old dog really did have some ability.

"Useful for me? I can't think of a soul fragment that would be too useful for me right now."

Lin Ming had no lack of cultivation methods. Moreover, he had already begun to step onto the road of fusing his own martial arts method. He was hoping to look for some cultivation method within the Magic Cube that could provide a foundation for further martial arts fusion skills in the future.

“Hehe, you’ll know why once I tell you. That pale golden palm-sized soul fragment is the one. Let me warn you first, it’s quite possible that there is a remnant soul within that soul fragment…”

A Supreme Elder’s remnant soul… Lin Ming hesitated for a moment. It was hard to guess just what boundary these Realm of the Gods powerhouses had reached before their death. Even if it was just a remnant soul, he still had to treat it with caution.

Carefully stretching out his hand, an energy latched onto that pale gold soul fragment and dragged it over to Lin Ming. Lin Ming completely concentrated his mind onto this soul fragment. During the first several times that Lin Ming had opened the Magic Cube, he had avoided these Supreme Elder soul fragments as if they were poisonous snakes. He would never have tried to absorb it on his own initiative like he was now.

Discreetly feeling the strength of this pale gold soul fragment, Lin Ming felt confident he would be able to withstand it.

“Demonshine, just what’s in here that is so useful to me?”

“Hehe, if you absorb that memory fragment you’ll naturally know. This soul fragment, if I’m not wrong, should be an old acquaintance that the Demon Emperor once knew; I only recognized it because there is a bit of remnant soul left over in the fragment. If you absorb it, you’ll have a great harvest.” Demonshine bragged.

Lin Ming didn’t ask anything further. Demonshine had no reason to lie to him, and even if he did, it wouldn’t matter. He had confidence that he would be able to deal with the remnant soul within this soul fragment. Even if the cultivation methods within were useless, it could still serve as a reference point so that Lin Ming could study the various types of top martial arts and gain insights from them.

Putting out a hand, he gently touched the soul fragment. The soul fragment immediately turned into a white light that shot into Lin Ming's body and disappearing, vanishing without a trace.

A soul fragment had a natural instinct to swallow all. Under the guidance of its instincts, it would begin to attack Lin Ming's spiritual sea in order to capture it.

When the soul fragment broke into Lin Ming's spiritual sea, the spear-shaped battle spirit that floated in the skies immediately began to issue out a keening howl, directly impacting towards that soul fragment.

Kacha!

With a violent collision, the soul fragment was struck by the spear-shaped battle spirit and sent flying away, its light dimming by several degrees.

Meanwhile, the black vortex of the Samsara martial intent appeared within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, surging forwards as it enveloped that soul fragment.

Lin Ming closed his eyes and sat down, immediately entering into the ethereal martial intent. Like this, the Samsara martial intent and battle spirit began a fierce battle with the soul fragment within his spiritual sea!

A battle spirit was known as an existence that could cut away all to nothing. Of course, this included even the soul. With every strike, the soul fragment would fiercely tremble, causing the remnant soul within that fragment to gradually fade away.

After an hour of time, the war of souls finally ended. Although Lin Ming hadn't been in any great danger, he was still left exhausted, his entire body wet with sweat and his complexion pale.

After eliminating that remnant soul, the remaining memory fragment sank into Lin Ming's spiritual sea. In that moment, all sorts of chaotic and complex images and information began to pour into Lin Ming's mind. These memories numbered many times more than before! Lin Ming gave a stuffy cough, feeling as if his head would explode at any moment.

Pictures began to flash through Lin Ming's mind.

War, battlefields, death, cultivation method, rare books, sect.

All sorts of scenes replayed in his mind. But, many of these were also of raging flames, mystical symbols, as well as medicinal pills that shined with a golden light.

This person had been… an alchemist?

Lin Ming was suddenly startled.

After further exploring these memories, Lin Ming found that this person had not only been an accomplished alchemist but also an inscription master!

Inscription techniques were the first skill that Lin Ming had obtained from the very first soul fragment he absorbed from the Magic Cube. This skill was very powerful within the Realm of the Gods, but unfortunately, the soul fragment that Lin Ming had swallowed then was only the size of a grain of rice, and it was also very faded.

This was a choice he was helpless in making. Originally, Lin Ming had only been at the very first stage of body transformation. Just absorbing that rice grain-sized soul fragment had nearly cost him his life.

This also led to the inscription techniques Lin Ming had being incomplete, most of them the most basic of their kind.

Inscription techniques were divided into object inscription, medicinal inscription, body inscription, and soul inscription, four different types in total. Although Lin Ming had learned body inscription, that was only useful to him during the body transformation realm. After reaching Revolving Core or Life Destruction, the increased strength from these body inscription symbols would be negligible.

In addition, the reason that Lin Ming had neglected to keep up with his inscription technique was because practicing simply consumed too much time. As Lin Ming's strength constantly grew, because he had neglected to practice his inscription technique, it now wasn't able to keep up with his growth.

With Lin Ming's current skill in medicinal inscription, he could at most enhance medicines like the Heaven Opening Pill or Shattered Demon Heart Crystal. If he wanted to place an inscription on something like the Nirvana Dragon Root or Demon God Bone, then that simply wasn't possible because he wasn't capable of placing an inscription on them that was of adequate rank.

In order to practice inscription techniques to a higher boundary, one needed to invest a massive amount of time and effort into it. But before this, the inscription techniques that Lin Ming had obtained were greatly incomplete. If he tried to reach a higher boundary, he would find himself besieged with difficulties.

Now that he had obtained this soul fragment, he had unintentionally filled in this gap.

"Demonshine, you want me to pick up inscription techniques again, and not only that but to become an inscription master and then use that as a basis to further become an alchemist?"

"Hehe, inscription techniques are mostly for you to create medicinal inscriptions. I want you to become an alchemist in order to further your cultivation of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. The further your boundary goes, the more the rarity and value of the medicine you'll need for your practice will horrify you. You obtained the Nirvana Dragon Root and the Nameless Divine Pill, but don't think you'll always be so lucky. If you don't study alchemy, are you really hoping for others to just come up and offer all the help you'll ever need? Your Cosmic Melting Furnace is already the best tool for alchemy to begin with!"

Chapter 675 – Xuan Yuqie Makes Her Move

Chapter 675 – Xuan Yuqie Makes Her Move

…

…

…

The Cosmic Melting Furnace was a fire-attribute attack weapon and also an extremely good furnace. It was the greatest treasure that the Demon Emperor had left behind before ascending to the Realm of the Gods.

"What rank treasure is the Cosmic Melting Furnace?" Lin Ming had long thought of this but he hadn't yet asked Demonshine. Lin Ming hadn't even seen a medium-grade heaven-step treasure yet, so he simply didn't know what rank treasure the Cosmic Melting Furnace was.

Demonshine said, "The Cosmic Melting Furnace cannot really be classified under normal treasures, but rather it is a quasi-Saint artifact. Above high-grade heaven-step treasures are Saint artifacts. The Cosmic Melting Furnace doesn't yet qualify to rank as a Saint artifact, so it can only be considered a quasi-Saint artifact. If you use it for alchemy, then it will multiply your chances of success by several times. Moreover, it can even increase the grade and power of your Flame Essence."

Saint artifact?

This wasn't the first time that Lin Ming had heard this before. So it turned out that the Cosmic Melting Furnace was a quasi-Saint artifact… unfortunately, he wasn't yet able to induce the Cosmic Melting Furnace to strike his enemies. In his current state, it could at most be considered a defensive weapon.

“Boy, the black-robed old man you killed a while ago also had something good… a Demon Heart Flower. It was planted in the medicine garden of Divine Phoenix Island. Let’s go back in a bit and dig it out. Along with the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass and profound gold divine fruit you obtained in the Eternal Demon Abyss, both of those are top quality alchemy materials. With these alchemy materials as well as the memories that you’ve inherited, you will slowly but surely become a top grandmaster of alchemy, forming a solid foundation for your future goal of breaking through to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!”

Demonshine had suggested that Lin Ming become an alchemist. Although this was quite sudden, after some more thought, this truly was the only way for Lin Ming to complete his body transformation cultivation path in the future.

The body transformation legacy, even if placed within the entire Realm of the Gods, was considered an extremely luxurious and excessive cultivation path. Compared to the essence gathering system, it was countless times more expensive.

For Lin Ming to just complete 100% of Tempering Marrow, he had required an entire Nirvana Dragon Root. As for opening the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, he had used the Nameless Divine Pill and a Demon God Bone. Even then it was only under a lucky coincidence that he had made his breakthrough with the support of the suppression of the Heavenly Demon force field.

Next, there were still seven gates of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates!

Everything was difficult at the beginning. The first few gates after the Gate of Healing couldn’t be considered too difficult to open. But afterwards, once he arrived at the fifth, sixth, seventh, or even eighth gate, the difficulty would rise at an astronomical scale.

If he wished to break through these thresholds, then it was impossible unless he had top heavenly materials.

As for normal heavenly treasures, swallowing them directly was of course inferior to refining them into pills, especially if they had a medicinal inscription placed on them.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming fell into a deep reflection. Whether it was alchemical techniques or inscription techniques, both of them were extremely complex and diverse. If he wanted to practice both of these skills to the limit of their boundaries, then he would need to consume a great deal of time even if he inherited the memories of that Supreme Being.

Time meant the potential of life. If he wasted time, then that was the same as wasting his potential...

Demonshine saw Lin Ming hesitate and chuckled, “Young boy, your way of thinking is wrong. Whether it is practicing alchemy or inscription, both of these skills can greatly increase your soul force. After reaching the Xiantian realm, a martial artist’s soul force will becoming increasingly important. You’ve practiced martial arts all the way until now and yet haven’t realized just how great the benefits of having a strong soul force are? If it wasn’t for your powerful soul force and Samsara martial intent to support you, how could you possibly have formed your battle spirit in the Xiantian realm? A battle spirit and will may be completely different from soul force, but the former actually relies on the latter. Haven’t you noticed that your battle spirit is kept hidden in your spiritual sea?

“All I just mentioned are just indirect benefits. But there are also direct benefits. These benefits will appear once you become an Emperor level powerhouse. No matter how powerful your body is, if it doesn’t have an equally powerful soul to support it then the result you’ll be able to achieve will be extremely limited! Just cultivating your dantian means you will sooner or later encounter a bottleneck. This is also the reason why all the powerhouses of the Realm of the Gods choose different auxiliary skills. These aren’t just used to assist their cultivation, but also to help temper their soul force!”

After Demonshine said this, Lin Ming was startled. After thinking about it some more, this really was true.

Ever since he had obtained the Magic Cube, Lin Ming had entered into it a total of five times and absorbed the soul fragments of four different Realm of the Gods powerhouses. The third and fourth time, he had absorbed the soul fragments of the Demon Emperor. But, in the other three times, after he absorbed these memories, he realized that these three powerhouses each shared a common characteristic, and that was that all three of them practiced an auxiliary skill.

The first one was an inscription master, the second was an array master, and the last was both an inscriptionist and an alchemist.

As for the Demon Emperor, he himself was a Giant Demon so he didn't excel in the aspect of the soul. This was likely the reason that he didn't choose an auxiliary skill to begin with.

As Demonshine had said, studying these auxiliary skills would never be a waste of time.

Laboring over these things would not be a mistake. Now that Lin Ming had inherited the soul fragments of these Realm of the Gods powerhouses, he was able to practice these auxiliary skills with half the effort and twice the result. To not use such a lucky chance would really be idiotic.

As Lin Ming thought this, he also set firm his determination. After this conflict in the South Sea ended, he would put aside some special time in order to thoroughly practice inscription techniques and alchemy techniques, paving the road for his future success of opening the next seven gates of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

After sealing up the related rich memories of inscription techniques and alchemy techniques in his mind, Lin Ming began to study the other memories of this Supreme Elder.

Within this soul fragment, there really was too much information. Besides inscription techniques and alchemy techniques, there was also a massive amount of cultivation methods.

Within these cultivation methods, there was one related to Realm of the Gods alchemists – the 'Fire God Law'.

After examining the 'Fire God Law', Lin Ming ultimately concluded that the complete 'Fire God Law' was much more powerful than the first eight layers of the 'Vermillion Bird

Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. But, if it were to be compared with the complete 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle', then it would naturally be far inferior.

These two sets of cultivation methods were both of the fire attribute. It seemed redundant to practice both, but Lin Ming was actually very happy to see this situation. In the future, this would give him a great number of inspirations. Once he thoroughly comprehended both, he would be able to combine them together, fusing these two cultivation methods into an even stronger technique.

This Realm of the Gods alchemist had achieved an understanding of the Concept of Fire that could be called the pinnacle. Lin Ming could only helplessly exclaim at this. Something like a Concept could only be understood and not explained. Even if Lin Ming had directly inherited these memories, it was still impossible for his understanding of the Concept of Fire to suddenly shoot to a high degree all of a sudden. But still, this would allow Lin Ming to find his way in the future much more easily.

…………………

As Lin Ming entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm's great protective array and started to absorb the soul fragment, news of his return to the South Horizon Region had already begun to quietly spread…

There were far too man demon region martial artists staying at Divine Phoenix Island. No matter how many were killed, some would always manage to avoid slaughter and escape. Naturally, these people would pass along news about Lin Ming's return. But all of this was also tacitly allowed by Lin Ming. He did this all for one reason: he wanted to use this method to tell Mu Qianyu that he, Lin Ming, had returned!

The first to obtain this news was the South Sea Demon Region headquarters!

At this time, Xuan Wuji had gone into life or death closed-door seclusion to break through to the fourth stage of Life Destruction.

After a human martial artist reached Life Destruction, every breakthrough they made was a trial of life or death. They either succeeded or they perished, there was no other option.

At this time, Xuan Wuji's entire body and Revolving Core were being reorganized. He absolutely could not be disturbed, so no matter how important the message was, he still wouldn't be informed.

The one in charge of the South Sea Demon Region at this time was Xuan Yuqie.

During the South Sea war, Xuan Yuqie had appeared in the public eye much more often than Xuan Wuji. After so many battles, Xuan Wuji no longer needed to appear; it was enough for Xuan Yuqie to act as leader.

In these two and a half years, Xuan Yuqie's enchanting sex appeal and beautiful appearance had become equally famous. There were many powerhouses of the South Sea that both coveted her and feared her to their bones.

At this time, within the Grand Demon Palace of the South Sea Demon Region, Xuan Yuqie was wearing a luxurious black dress. Her black stone-inlaid collar was spread very low, revealing her plentiful figure and a great portion of her plump milk-white breasts, and the deep crevice that ran between them. Her dress was split nearly to her waist, revealing her now white and perfectly-shaped thighs and accentuating the outline of her bottom. All of this was enough to drown a man in infinite dreams and desire.

On Xuan Yuqie's body, it was impossible to find the scars and traces of time. She simply seemed like a sexy and beautiful young woman in her late twenties.

However, facing such a Xuan Yuqie, the Elders of the South Sea Demon Region did not show even the slightest bit of disrespect. All of them were politely sitting down, and as their eyes occasionally passed over Xuan Yuqie, there was nothing in them but deference.

In these past few years, Xuan Yuqie had relied on her strength alone to accumulate power and influence. Even though the South Sea Demon Region had complex inner workings with multiple factions, not a single person dared to offend her.

“About Lin Ming, you’ve all heard it.” Xuan Yuqie calmly said.

Xuan Yuqie’s terse statement caused all the Elders to start discussing amongst themselves. Before now, they had all obtained this news through their various channels. For Xuan Yuqie to convene the Council of Elders at this time, they had all faintly guessed that it was to discuss Lin Ming.

A first stage Life Destruction Elder stood up and said, “This old man thought that something was wrong. There were just too many questions and mysteries surrounding that boy’s death. Now, it really seems that there is absolutely some secret on his body! The Nirvana Dragon Root and Cosmic Melting Furnace most likely fell into that boy’s hands!”

The Life Destruction Elder’s voice was thick with jealousy and hate. As he thought about how so many resources fell onto such a lucky hairless baby boy, all he felt was uncomfortable.

Xuan Yuqie coughed with disdain. She had no interest in the opinions of a myopic fool like this who spoke in hindsight. If he really thought there was something wrong in the past, then why hadn’t he done anything about it?

Xuan Yuqie said, “According to our information, Lin Ming was able to kill Elder Hong Qi. I estimate that his strength has reached the peak of the first stage of Life Destruction. This completely overturns our previous understanding of Lin Ming. Without a doubt, there is some significant secret on his body. Perhaps it may be even more valuable than the Nirvana Dragon Root and Cosmic Melting Furnace. Now that Elder Xuan Wuji has gone into seclusion to attack the fourth stage of Life Destruction, he cannot be disturbed to manage affairs. I have already decided to send out the Giant Leviathan Saint Beast and I will take personal command of this mission. I will go to Divine Phoenix Island and capture Lin Ming alive. Fellow Elders, who is willing to go with me?”

Xuan Yuqie’s words shocked all the Elders present. Send out the Giant Leviathan, take personal command, and even invite other Elders to come?

Wasn’t this just overdoing it a bit!?

Chapter 676 – Revolving Core Mu Bingyun

Chapter 676 – Revolving Core Mu Bingyun

…

…

…

"Sovereign Xuan, to deal with just a mere Lin Ming, not only will you yourself go, but you must also send out the Giant Leviathan? Isn't that just making a big deal out of nothing?"

An Elder couldn't help but suggest.

The Giant Leviathan was the super weapon of the South Sea Demon Region.

Within the Sky Spill Continent, there was a wide range and variety of Saint Beasts and there was no uniform classification; it was all a fuzzy and jumbled mess. A Flood Dragon, a Vermillion Bird – these creatures could be called Saint Beasts, but all of these Saint Beasts had differing degrees of bloodline purity and richness.

These were divisions formed by limited vision. To the martial artists of the Sky Fortune Kingdom and even the Seven Profound Valleys, to them a Vermillion Bird was an unattainable sacred existence. Thus, being labeled a Saint Beast was undeniable.

However, within the Realm of the Gods, the Vermillion Bird of Divine Phoenix Island was barely passable to be called a Saint Beast at all. As for the God Beasts of the Realm of the Gods, those were existences that could destroy worlds at whim.

The title of a Saint Beast was a bit ambiguous; it wasn't a completely appropriate term to describe the Giant Leviathan. The Giant Leviathan was in many ways even more powerful than a high stage Life Destruction powerhouse.

Especially when it was used for frontal combat or for capturing a sect, the power it could display was simply terrifying. During these times, it would be like a massive juggernaut battleship, unstoppable and overwhelming.

During these months while Xuan Wuji had gone into closed-door seclusion to bet his life against reaching the fourth stage of Life Destruction, the Giant Leviathan was naturally managed by Xuan Yuqie.

Xuan Yuqie glanced at the Elder who spoke and said, “Even a lion would use its full force to capture a rabbit, much less this boy Lin Ming is not as simple as he seems! During the trip into the Demon God Imperial Palace, I was also present and yet I still have no idea how he managed to steal the Nirvana Dragon Root. Moreover, Lin Ming’s strength is no longer the same as it was in the past. It’s unimaginable that in just a short two and a half years, his strength has risen to such a horrifying degree!”

The demon region Elder thought otherwise, “Sovereign Xuan, this old man thinks that those rumors of Lin Ming’s strength are simply rumors – they might not necessarily be true. Those scattered minions, in order to avoid responsibility, would naturally exaggerate Lin Ming’s strength and the events that happened…”

“Elder Sun!” Xuan Yuqie’s slender eyebrows rose and she coldly said, “If you underestimate the enemy then the one to suffer will be you! Lin Ming is not easy to handle!”

After she finished speaking she turned to everyone else and continued to say, “I have already issued an order that all information related to Lin Ming will now be restricted; nobody may spread out anything at all. Right now, I can control the Giant Leviathan by myself, but if I want to chase Lin Ming, that will be a bit difficult. I ask for two Elders to come and support me. Who is willing to join me?”

As Xuan Yuqie spoke, her eyes swept over each Elder one at a time. In such an important matter like capturing Lin Ming, failure was not allowed.

There could only be success.

“Alright. Count me as one.”

A black-robed Elder stood up. He was someone from the Xuan Clan. His name was Xuan Zhongshan and his cultivation was at the first stage of Life Destruction. If he didn’t worry that he would fail crossing into the second stage of Life Destruction then he would have become a second stage Life Destruction master long ago.

“I will go too.” An Elder said…

…………..

At this time in the distant Five Element Region, there was a great mountain peak that was several hundred thousand feet high. Atop this mountain was a forest of maple trees that seemed like a sea of fire. The name of this mountain was Sunfire Mountain. Looking from afar, this mountain seemed like a picturesque land filled with poetry and wonders. But, very few knew that one of the seven sects of the Five Element Region, the Sunfire Sect, was actually located here.

Although the maple tree forest atop Sunfire Mountain seemed ordinary, it actually contained an exquisite array formation. If one didn’t understand the method of entry and wandered in, then it would be easy for them to be trapped inside.

At a great temple at the summit of Sunfire Mountain, the Sunfire Sect Sovereign sat on a grand throne, wearing a long red robe. In front of him was a young and beautiful girl. She was the chief disciple of the Sunfire Sect, the Sunfire Princess.

And standing in front of those two was a blue-clothed old woman. This old woman was elderly, but her temperament was extraordinary. From the fading outlines of her face, one could imagine that she was a remarkable peerless beauty as a youth. She was the Valley Master of one of the Five Element Region’s seven great sects, Storm Valley’s Zhan Youyun.

Beside this old woman was a handsome youth in his mid-twenties. He was the chief disciple of Storm Valley, Zhan Yunjian.

Four years ago, Zhan Yunjian and the Sunfire Princess had both participated in Revered Master Tianguang's birthday banquet, shining in the spotlight there. It was only afterwards, because of Lei Mubai and Lin Ming's appearance, that both of their halos were overshadowed.

At this moment, the sound of footsteps echoed in the great temple as a blue-clothed woman slowly walked in. This woman only looked to be just over twenty years old, but her cultivation was astonishingly at the Revolving Core realm. Not just that, but her appearance was alluring and her figure outstanding. From top to bottom she emitted a chilling energy, as if no one could ever dare to sully her.

If Lin Ming were here, he would immediately recognize her. She was the Divine Phoenix Island Blue Luan Faction's Saintess and also Mu Qianyu's little sister, Mu Bingyun!

"Fairy Maiden Bingyun, it's been awhile since we last saw each other." Sage Sunfire and Storm Valley's old woman rose up in greeting as they saw Mu Bingyun arrive.

It had to be known that although Mu Bingyun was a junior, her cultivation had broken through to the Revolving Core realm and her total comprehensive combat strength was equal to that of an ordinary middle Revolving Core master. In terms of strength, she wasn't that much worse than Sage Sunfire and Storm Valley's Zhou Youyun. Like this, even though they were Elders, they still had to give several points of respect to Mu Bingyun.

"Sage Sunfire, Valley Master Zhan." Mu Bingyun nodded and then walked straight to her seat.

After everyone greeted each other and sat down, Zhan Youyun glanced at the Sunfire Sect Sovereign and Mu Bingyun, smiling as she said, "Brother Sunfire, Fairy Maiden Bingyun, one of the scouting parties we arranged within the South Sea sent back some very unusual news yesterday."

"Oh? Unusual news?" Sage Sunfire revealed a faintly interested look, "Since the South Sea Demon Region united all those different deep sea races of the South Sea into an alliance, I have yet to hear any extraordinary news. All I've heard is constant defeat on the South Sea battlefield. If this continues, then I fear that our Five Element Region's seven great sects will also be swallowed up! What is this unusual news? I'm very much interested in hearing about it."

The Five Element Region and the South Horizon Region were over a million miles apart. If the South Sea Demon Region became a Holy Land, it naturally wouldn't encroach onto the Five Element Region's territory. But in this South Sea war, the South Sea Demon Region had gathered many allies together, and now the cake that was the South Horizon Region was naturally not enough to divvy up for everyone.

Now the flames of war had already burnt their way to the edge of the Five Element Region; it was only a matter of time until the entire Five Element Region was occupied. The seven sects of the Five Element Region were already weaker than Divine Phoenix Island. Facing the allied armies of the South Sea, they were nothing but lambs waiting to be slaughtered.

Hearing Sage Sunfire mention his concerns, the old woman sighed. The South Sea Demon Region's appetite was just too great. They apparently wanted to gobble up the two great territories that lay at the edge of the South Sea, the Five Element Region and the South Horizon Region.

With their strength, it truly was difficult to resist the South Sea Demon Region. Their only chance was if the Great Zen Region were to help. But even after dispatching several messengers, they were still unable to persuade the Great Zen Temple to intervene in the South Sea war. Compared to the Five Element Region and South Horizon Region that were located at the edge, the Great Zen Region was located inland. Thus, they had no reason to help.

"Valley Master Zhou, we can worry over these matters later. First, please speak of the strange news you've obtained."

“Mm, this news is that the Divine Phoenix Island Branch of the south Sea Demon Region has been captured. Their means were thorough and even the guardian Elder Hong Qi was killed.” As Zhan Youyun spoke, her eyes swept over Mu Bingyun.

“Oh? Seriously?” Sage Sunfire was bewildered.

As for Mu Bingyun, her eyebrows shot up. Divine Phoenix Island falling to the hands of her enemies had been a pain that forever lived on in her heart. After Divine Phoenix Island was occupied by the scum of the South Sea Demon Region, they had captured and tormented the girls of the island. All of this had made Mu Bingyun’s heart bleed with pain and anguish.

Now that she heard that the Divine Phoenix Island Branch of the South Sea Demon Region had been completely expunged, even someone as indifferent as her showed a completely changed expression.

“Who did this?” A light flashed in Mu Bingyun’s eyes.

It had to be known that Divine Phoenix Island Branch’s managing Elder was Hong Qi, a genuine first stage Life Destruction master. As for Sage Sunfire and Zhan Youyun, both of them were at the late Revolving Core realm. The difference in strength was just too great. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that just the Divine Phoenix Island Branch of the South Sea Demon Region was enough to completely sweep away the Sunfire Sect and Storm Valley!

This was not a small force. Yet, no matter how strong they were, they had actually been annihilated? Who had such great ability to do so?

Sage Sunfire thought for a moment, then asked, a bit puzzled, “Since the Wartime Alliance was destroyed, who else could organize such a force?”

Zhan Youyun shook her head, “I’m not too clear about this. The information blockade of the South Sea Demon Region is simply too watertight. Because they have demonic path abilities like the soul searching technique, trying to place a spy in their ranks is far too difficult. There simply isn’t any information about what happened. Ever since the Divine Phoenix Island Branch was attacked, the South Sea Demon Region has blocked all information from leaving. All we know is that there were only four martial artists that attacked the Divine Phoenix Island Branch, and all of them were around 20 to 30 years old.

“20 to 30 years old? Impossible!” Sage Sunfire couldn’t believe this. Even 29 or 30 was just too young. At such an age, they were already a peak Saint level talent if they could reach the Revolving Core realm. For example, Mu Bingyun. She had reached Revolving Core at 30 years of age.

As for Elder Hong Qi, his cultivation was not at the Revolving Core realm but at Life Destruction!

Generally, if a genius was able to reach Life Destruction before they were 50 years old then there was a slim glimmer of hope that they could become a Peerless Emperor. But, if what Zhan Youyun said was true and those young people weren’t even 30 years old, yet they could kill a Life Destruction Elder, that just seemed too exaggerated!

Mu Bingyun only remained silent. For the South Sea Demon Region’s Divine Phoenix Island Branch to be completely eradicated… this news was just too shocking for her!

And as Zhan Youyun had said, for these martial artists that killed Hong Qi to not even be 30 years old, this had already gone beyond her understanding.

Zhan Youyun spread out her hands and said, “In truth, I also don’t believe the information the scouting party sent over that these young people weren’t over 30 years old.

In fact, the original information on Lin Ming had reported that he was a young man just over 20 years old. But, the scouts that Zhan Youyun sent out simply found this information too outrageous, and instead reported the age as between 20 and 30. Once this news reached Zhan Youyun’s ears, and she heard that the young people were between 20 and 30 years old, she naturally assumed they were 28 or 29 years old.

However, even so, this was completely unbelievable.

Chapter 677 – Fighting the Giant Leviathan

Chapter 677 – Fighting the Giant Leviathan

…

…

…

“Could this just be a smokescreen released by the South Sea Demon Region?” Behind Sage Sunfire, the Sunfire Princess suddenly spoke up. Normally, in such a small meeting, juniors would rarely speak up in front of their elders.

Zhan Youyun shook her head, “There’s no reason for the South Sea Demon Region to play tricks like this. Do they think that Divine Phoenix Island would return to the South Sea just because they heard this news? This matter is most likely true. Although I have no idea what sort of power did this, if they could completely destroy the Divine Phoenix Island Branch then they are more than capable of destroying any sect within our Five Element Region. Moreover… according to some reliable sources of mine, the Demon Region’s Western Faction Sovereign, Xuan Yuqie, will be personally moving out. She will be presiding over the Giant Leviathan to go towards Divine Phoenix Island.”

“Giant Leviathan?”

Sage Sunfire heard Zhou Youyun’s words, he was unnerved, “The Giant Leviathan is an overwhelming war weapon; its ability to break through any defense or siege is almost unstoppable, but… the other party is not a fool. If Xuan Yuqie is personally taking action then those mysterious strangers must have already evacuated Divine Phoenix Island.

When the Demon Region broke through the defenses of Divine Phoenix Island, they sent out the Giant Leviathan in order to do so. Since ancient times, there had been a multitude of opinions and thoughts on just how large the Giant Leviathan actually was. Some said it was a thousand miles and some said it was thousands of miles. But, the Giant Leviathan that the South Sea Demon Region commanded was about 90 miles long. As it floated in the sky, it was like a massive airborne island that blocked out the heavens themselves!

Such a terrifying divine war beast had an immeasurable weight. With just a swing of its tail it was able to create massive tsunamis. When it opened its great maw, it could suck in all the heaven and earth origin energy in a radius of hundreds of miles.

When the South Sea Demon Region had faced the great island protective array of Divine Phoenix Island, they had relied upon the Giant Leviathan to shatter this protection with just a single strike!

Such a terrifying vicious war beast was truly fearful.

Zhan Youyun echoed these sentiments, “These strangers must have already fled Divine Phoenix Island. Fighting with guerilla warfare is the wisest method; directly confronting the Giant Leviathan and Xuan Yuqie would be foolish. Well, no matter what happens, the sudden appearance of this mysterious new faction is good news for all of us.

As everyone was guessing the identity of this mysterious force, a flame suddenly sparked in the meeting hall and a message was transmitted into Zhan Youyun’s ears. This was a message from the scouting party that she had sent out.

After Zhan Youyun heard the sound transmission her eyes suddenly jumped open and her face was filled with disbelief.

“Hmm? What is it?”

Sage Sunfire couldn’t help but ask. Mu Bingyun also glanced at Zhan Youyun, waiting for her response.

Zhan Youyun was silent for a while before she mumbled with an incredulous tone, “That mysterious force hasn’t left yet. They’ve instead stayed on Divine Phoenix Island; it seems they wish to fight to the death with Xuan Yuqie.”

“What!?”

It wasn’t just Sage Sunfire who was astonished, but even Mu Bingyun was greatly shocked.

Fight to the death?

Did these mysterious strangers really have a way of coping with Xuan Yuqie and the Giant Leviathan Saint Beast?

………

South Sea, Divine Phoenix Island –

Lin Ming stood within the square of the Vermillion Bird Palace, at the summit of Divine Phoenix Mountain, silently staring off into the dim and distant skies.

Under Lin Ming’s feet, the former square was now in shambles. The tripod for incense was broken, the handles having fallen off, and the blue stone ground was cracked all over; it was a scene of ruins.

Beside Lin Ming stood Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin.

At this time, the clouds on the horizon were surging. Duanmu Qun squinted his eyes as he looked into the far distance. After a quarter of an hour, within those dark billowing clouds, a vague and massive shadow began to appear, as if a floating island were slowly approaching them.

“Brother Lin, that is the Giant Leviathan you’ve mentioned!”

"Mm?" Lin Ming looked at the Giant Leviathan, his expression calm. Back in the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming had seen an ultimate great beast whose body was several thousand or even tens of thousands of miles long. Its horn alone was greater than this mountain he stood on, and a beat of its wings was enough to shake the world! Even though he had been several hundred miles away, just looking into that creature's dark golden pupils caused the upper Emperor level talent Blackstone to vomit out a mouthful of blood and be seriously injured!

Compared to such a great beast, this Giant Leviathan in front of him was nothing at all.

"Brother Lin, although this fellow is much smaller than that suspected God Beast we saw in the 1000 mile forbidden zone, this simply isn't something we are able to deal with. I doubt my sword would even be able to injure one of its hairs." Duanmu Qun narrowed his eyes. In just a few breaths of time he had determined just how fearful this large beast was.

Not to mention the terrifying energy contained within the Giant Leviathan, just its size was far too great!

No matter how sharp Lin Ming's attacks were, it was impossible for him to injure it. This was just like an ant trying to bite an elephant to death.

"In a frontal confrontation, you are indeed correct – nothing I do will be able to harm it. Of course, that's not what will happen. In this battle, I alone am enough. You all do not need to help me."

As Lin Ming spoke, he slowly walked forwards.

Duanmu Qun glanced at Lan Xin and Feng Shen. As he saw that they seemed a bit confused, he smiled and said, "Brother Lin, please be careful. I really do think that there isn't much we can do to help you here."

After spending such a long time together, Lan Xin had joined Feng Shen in having absolute faith and blind trust in Lin Ming's strength. Even though it seemed obviously impossible to deal with this Giant Leviathan in front of them, she didn't doubt that Lin Ming had some unknown method to deal with it.

"Brother Lin, be careful." Feng Shen tersely said as he stepped back.

Lin Ming took out the white spear from his spatial ring. He walked forwards and then began to slowly fly towards the Giant Leviathan. Facing such a titanic beast, his eyes were as tranquil as an immortal lake, without a hint of panic in his eyes.

At this time, in between the Giant Leviathan's eyes was a field of energy with a sealed miniature dimension within it. Here, three black-robed South Sea Demon Region Elders were standing, along with a black-armored Xuan Yuqie.

The Xuan Yuqie of the battlefield carried a black sword that was even longer than herself. Her black armor was tightly wrapped around her and it served as the perfect foil to her sexy body, as if she were a war goddess descended from the heavens.

Xuan Yuqie silently stared at Lin Ming as he approached them.

An Elder laughed as he said, "This Lin Ming really isn't so simple. Not only is he not escaping but he's actually coming here of his own volition. There are very few people that have the courage to walk to their deaths like this, haha!"

"Don't underestimate him. In this world, there are no fools." Xuan Yuqie's eyebrows twisted together. Although she said this, the truth was that she had layers upon layers of doubts and worries in her heart.

This sudden development in events had completely surpassed her expectations. She had thought that Lin Ming would give up Divine Phoenix Island and escape; that would have been the strategy that nearly anyone would have chosen.

The reason that Xuan Yuqie brought the Giant Leviathan was because she had taken this into account. She had planned on combining her perception with the Giant Leviathan's spiritual sea, using the beast in order to increase her already far-reaching perception to unprecedented levels. Then, she would be able to chase after Lin Ming.

However, Lin Ming didn't even run away. By all reasoning, Lin Ming should have some sort of backup, a great master that would help him. But now, it seemed as if Lin Ming was all alone by himself.

His cultivation was only at the peak of the early Revolving Core realm. Relative to his age, this cultivation could be considered unprecedented since ancient times. Perhaps he was invincible in his level, but in the face of the Giant Leviathan and the combined forces of several great Elders, this was a futile resistance.

This made Xuan Yuqie feel puzzled, confused about just what Lin Ming was doing. Out of all the Elders present, she was the only one who had gone into the Demon God Imperial Palace. Lin Ming's acting within the Demon God Imperial Palace was impeccable. He had been a polite and courteous youth was seemed as harmless as a little bunny. However, this non-threatening youth had tricked all those old geezers present. Xuan Yuqie found this the hardest to accept. From then until now, she still hadn't figured out just what method Lin Ming had used to play them.

Just how could the proud Xuan Yuqie admit that she had been conned?

"Cute little boy, no matter what tricks you have up your sleeve, I will catch you alive this time, pry open your little head and see just what secrets you have!"

Xuan Yuqie bit her shining teeth and began to silently revolve the 'Netherworld Devil Arts', priming the true essence and soul force within herself to the limit.

Seeing Xuan Yuqie act as if she was heading into her final battle, an Elder laughed and said, "Sovereign Xuan, you are being far too careful. How could we possibly lose?"

"We have four people together and the Giant Leviathan's perception has already locked onto him. He can't escape even if he has wings!" Another Elder concurred with contempt in his voice.

Xuan Yuqie didn’t respond. The third Elder said, “The Giant Leviathan’s full strength strike can destroy an entire island. If its attack hits a person then there won’t even be ashes left of them. There are far too many secrets on this boy’s body. Let’s use the tentacles to catch him!”

The Giant Leviathan had two different methods of attack. The first method was an energy attack. The Giant Leviathan’s head and body were covered with a wide variety of spheres. The Giant Leviathan could open its massive maw and absorb heaven and earth origin energy, compressing this into energy beams that could be used to attack. This was the main mode of attack of the Giant Leviathan.

The second method of attack was for the Giant Leviathan itself to attack. Around the edges of the Giant Leviathan’s maw was a massive quantity of tentacles that surrounded it like a great comb. These tentacles could be used to surround or kill an enemy. This could be considered a supportive attack method. But, even though it was supportive, if faced with a single martial artist, it was actually much more deadly. Although the Giant Leviathan had an incomparable striking power in its great energy beam, the direction of the attack could not be changed. Thus, for it to build up the energy, fire the beam, and for the beam to land, this would take several breaths of time. It was very easy to dodge during this period. If one wanted to use the Giant Leviathan’s energy beam to kill a top master, then that would be quite difficult.

“Let’s go!”

Although her enemy was only a single person and he was also just a baby boy with an early Revolving Core cultivation, Xuan Yuqie was taking this battle with complete sincerity, not underestimating Lin Ming at all. She fused her consciousness into the soul mark of the Giant Leviathan, controlling the beast to attack Lin Ming.

Woosh woosh woosh!

Several thousand Giant Leviathan tentacles lashed out towards Lin Ming like a hail of black whips, making the air tremble. These Giant Leviathan tentacles all contained a terrifying energy. If a mountain were to be struck by them, it would simply collapse!

“Come on!” Lin Ming looked at those tentacles that seemed to form a giant net in the sky. He faintly smiled. Then, the space underneath his feet twisted –

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

This movement technique depended on the support of both the Concept of Wind and the Concept of Space. As Lin Ming’s understandings into the Concept of Space became increasingly sophisticated, his Golden Roc Shattering the Void movement technique also became more and more profound.

Cha cha cha!

In the dense rain of Giant Leviathan tentacles, Lin Ming was like a slippery little fish that swam upstream, rushing straight towards the Giant Leviathan!

Chapter 678 – Lin Ming's Counterattack

Chapter 678 – Lin Ming's Counterattack

…

…

…

Every single Giant Leviathan tentacle contained an extremely terrifying energy. As Lin Ming brushed past the tentacles at high speed he could feel his entire body tremble. If he were to be lashed by one then he would absolutely suffer severe injuries!

Although Lin Ming's movement technique was ghostly and superb, there were just far too many tentacles. Every time they shot past they would cause disorder in the surrounding power of space. If it were a normal martial artist, even one at the Life Destruction realm, they would find it hard withstand this.

"This boy's got quite the ability." A South Sea Demon Region Elder said.

"Hehe, no matter how capable he is, he won't be able to last forever. He will slowly consume his energy, but the energy stored within the Giant Leviathan is unimaginable. Sooner or later we'll catch him."

To the Elders of the South Sea Demon Region, with the Giant Leviathan's incomparably massive body, Lin Ming simply didn't have the ability to wound it. Now, they were in an invincible position; they didn't even fear if Lin Ming decided to run away. Xuan Yuqie had already fused her mind with the Giant Leviathan and was using its spiritual sea to lock onto Lin Ming. The range of this perception was several hundred miles wide.

Now Lin Ming was nothing more than a turtle in a jar.

As the several great Elders were joking around, Xuan Yuqie was actually silent. She still didn't understand why Lin Ming dared to stay at Divine Phoenix Island, daring to face the four of them and even the Giant Leviathan.

No matter how she looked at it, it was impossible for him to win!

"Hehe, the boy is surrounded; we'll have him captured soon."

"I wonder what secrets are on him… I'm really looking forward to it."

The Elders didn't have much hope that the Nirvana Dragon Root was with Lin Ming. After all, it had been a very long time and chances were that the Nirvana Dragon Root was mostly used up. They were thinking that there were some other secrets on Lin Ming's body that could quickly enhance their strength, as well as the Cosmic Melting Furnace.

Because the South Sea Demon Region had placed a very high valuation on whatever secrets these were, the four great clans had each sent out an Elder, forming this powerful lineup of masters.

At this time, Lin Ming had truly fallen into a trap underneath the Giant Leviathan. Several thousand tentacles formed a net around him, blocking all directions of escape.

"Lin Ming, at the stomach of the Giant Leviathan, 10 miles ahead, this is a blind spot in its attacks. You can break out from there!" Demonshine's voice suddenly sounded out in Lin Ming's mind.

"Got it." Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a sharp light. By relying on Golden Roc Shattering the Void, he was able to forcefully create a path through the chaotic power of space, his body violating the rules of physics as he moved hundreds of feet at a time, passing through tentacles that had less than half a foot of space between them!

"What!?"

Even the South Sea Demon Region Elders within the miniature dimension were shocked. Lin Ming had been caught in the web of tentacles, but now he had actually managed to pass through them!

“Such a narrow gap, how could he possibly make it through? Is that boy a fish or something?”

This Elder of the South Sea Demon Region was incomparable to the Fey. He simply didn’t have any understandings into the Concept of Space, so he was unable to understand the mystical elusiveness of Lin Ming’s steps.

After several flashes, Lin Ming had already arrived at the so-called ‘blind spot’ that Demonshine mentioned.

This blind spot didn’t mean there were no attacks here, but rather that there were less. But this was more than enough for Lin Ming.

He rose again and again, higher and higher, crossing several miles as he drew closer to the Giant Leviathan’s abdomen!

“1000 feet to the left, that is the entrance to the dimension within the Giant Leviathan!” Demonshine’s voice sounded out once again. There were many miniature dimensions within the Giant Leviathan, all of them growing as the Giant Leviathan grew. These miniature dimensions were able to hold foreign life in them, and in the future, when the Giant Leviathan died, these dimensions would also collapse.

Because of this special characteristic, the Giant Leviathan was often used as a very high level transportation vehicle, particularly useful for long distance trips.

Every dimension within the Giant Leviathan had a special method for entry, it was impossible for a stranger to enter. Of course, this wasn’t a problem for Lin Ming. Demonshine could be considered as a half-master of the Giant Leviathan – he naturally knew the methods to enter every dimension.

"F*ck, this silly big fellow is actually making this father work so hard! When I followed the Demon Emperor it was still a stupid fellow. Now, even though it's plenty strong enough, it's still being controlled so easily by others. It can't even recognize its big brother! Humph, this big fellow better wait and see how I'll fix it up." Demonshine's scolding voice echoed in Lin Ming's mind.

Lin Ming's figure flashed. With Demonshine's knowledge of the method of entry as well as Lin Ming's understanding of the Concept of Space, he instantly entered into the dimension within the Giant Leviathan!

This was a light red space. Everyone, the walls seemed to appear juicy and cushy and the ground underneath Lin Ming's feet was soft.

"We're in." Lin Ming let out a sigh of relief.

"This stupid big fellow really makes others worry." Demonshine cockily said as he shook his doggy head.

"What do we do now?" Lin Ming swallowed down some pills and began to meditate. In truth, he hadn't used much energy. But, since he was going to face Xuan Yuqie shortly, he wanted to make sure he was in peak condition.

Demonshine said, "Xuan Wuji should have acted according to the Demon Emperor's letter and left a soul mark within the Giant Leviathan's spiritual sea. What we have to do is erase this soul mark. This isn't difficult to do. First, sink your perception into the Giant Leviathan's meridians' channels, and then I will guide you into its spiritual sea."

"Okay." Lin Ming nodded and then began to sink his consciousness into the Giant Leviathan's body.

When he had been at the Demon God Imperial Palace, he had once thought about capturing the Giant Leviathan. But at that time, his strength was simply too lacking, so that was a naturally impossible task.

Now Lin Ming's cultivation had reached the peak of the early Revolving Core realm and he had also comprehended his own battle spirit. With this, subduing the Giant Leviathan would be as easy as turning his hand.

…………

"What's wrong?"

At this time, in the dimension between the Giant Leviathan's eyebrows, Xuan Yuqie had suddenly lost sight of Lin Ming. This caused her to be greatly shocked.

"I obviously used the Giant Leviathan's soul force to increase my perception range. As long as he isn't more than 1000 miles away, he shouldn't be able to escape my grasp. How could I have possibly lost sight of him!?"

An intense foreboding feeling began to surge within Xuan Yuqie's heart. She had always felt that something was wrong, but even so she still couldn't figure out why Lin Ming was daring to face four Elders of the South Sea Demon Region together as well as the Giant Leviathan Saint Beast.

Now that Lin Ming had suddenly disappeared from her mind, she felt a trace of fear appear in her heart.

The other three Elders looked at each other in panic. One asked, puzzled, "Maybe he died to the Giant Leviathan's tentacles?"

"How would that even be possible!?" Xuan Yuqie breathlessly shouted as her delicate eyebrows jumped up.

Of the three Elders she brought here today, none of them had entered the Demon God Imperial Palace with Lin Ming.

In the end, rumors were rumors, seeing was believing. Before, none of these Elders had seen Lin Ming, and none of them understood why Xuan Yuqie stressed how strong Lin Ming was. These three Elders disapproved of this notion, thinking otherwise. In their opinion, Lin Ming was just a little baby boy.

Xuan Yuqie now felt that bringing this damn group of fellows was no help at all.

“Something’s strange. Hmm, even if he hid in the gaps of the Giant Leviathan’s scales, we should still be able to detect him. How could he just disappear like that? The only possibility is he entered into another space…”

The speaker may have been casually speaking, but the listener was keen on all thoughts. As an Elder muttered out a random comment, this caused Xuan Yuqie’s beautiful face to completely pale. Had Lin Ming entered into one of the dimensions within the Giant Leviathan’s body!?!?

The barrier of space was able to cut off all perception. If Lin Ming truly had entered into one of these miniature dimensions, then her perception would no longer be able to track Lin Ming.

How could this be possible!? Only Xuan Wuji and herself knew the method to enter the Giant Leviathan’s dimensions. Even the South Sea Demon Region Elders didn’t know the method!

Xuan Yuqie felt her heart race in panic, nervousness clouding her mind. At this time, she suddenly felt a shock in her spiritual as a web of agonizing pain began spreading out from deep in her mind!

At this moment, the soul mark of the Giant Leviathan that her mind was connected to was being attacked!

Someone was trying to rend apart this soul connection!!!

Xuan Yuqie was inexplicably horrified. Just how had he done this!?

“Sovereign Xuan, what is it?” As the three Elders beside Xuan Yuqie saw her sudden and violent reaction, they understood that an accident had occurred.

Xuan Yuqie’s complexion became increasingly ugly. She had already established a soul connection with the Giant Leviathan. She was on the defensive side. But as for Lin Ming, he wanted to tear apart this soul connection and establish his own. He was on the offensive side.

Being on the defensive, she had an absolute superiority. Not just that, but her cultivation and strength were far higher than Lin Ming’s. As long as she was able to discover his sneak attack and prepare against it, every logical outcome would have easily been her defeating Lin Ming’s soul consciousness.

However, the reality was that Lin Ming’s soul force was incomparably sharp. He kept forcing her own consciousness back, constantly eroding her soul connection with the Giant Leviathan!

“How is this possible?” Xuan Yuqie’s milk-white breasts violently fell up and down. Because she was consuming too much soul force, her face was already flushed red. “How could this boy’s soul force be strong to such a degree!?”

In fact, it wasn’t just Lin Ming’s soul force that was powerful. More importantly, he had Demonshine’s assistance as well as a battle spirit, a force that was able to cut all into nihility. Naturally, he held the advantage against Xuan Yuqie.

“All of you, pour your soul force into me!” Xuan Yuqie shouted out. The other three Elders began to realize that the situation was indeed dire. Without hesitation, all of them began to deluge Xuan Yuqie with their soul force. Now, these three great Elders combined forces with Xuan Yuqie, the four of them directly resisting Lin Ming together!

“Hehe, the little babies want to go all out. It looks like this Saint is going to have to mess around a bit.” Demonshine said with a hint of haughty roguishness. In his eyes, Xuan Yuqie and other 1000 year old monsters like her were indeed nothing more than little babies.

Lin Ming's soul force was powerful, but against four enemies together, he indeed fell far short of being able to handle them all. Now with Demonshine pouring his own soul force into Lin Ming, Lin Ming's own soul energy rose to a completely different level!

Demonshine had been awake for a few years now, and with the heavenly materials he had obtained from Lin Ming that were able to nourish his soul, he had restored quite a bit of his strength.

Bang!

The two soul energies collided. With Lin Ming and Demonshine working together, they directly shattered the soul energy that Xuan Yuqie had released!

The Giant Leviathan's spiritual sea suddenly trembled. The soul mark that Xuan Wuji left behind was finally loosened. The Giant Leviathan let out a great roar, causing massive choppy waves within this sea below!

At Divine Phoenix Island, Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin all saw this happen. All of them were dumbfounded; just what had Lin Ming done to this giant beast?

Chapter 679 – Severely Wounding Xuan Yuqie

Chapter 679 – Severely Wounding Xuan Yuqie

…

…

…

Against this giant beast that was nearly a hundred miles long, just what had Lin Ming done in order to wound it? Duanmu Qun found this hard to believe. When Lin Ming had used that exquisite movement technique to escape the all-encompassing attack of the Giant Leviathan, he had only been able to sigh in admiration. Then, and even now, he still didn't fully understand what Lin Ming had done.

The Giant Leviathan was still roaring in the air, its sonic voice making the sea tremble as if hundreds of thousands of thunderclaps were exploding together!

Bang!

The Giant Leviathan's tail suddenly pounded the sea surface, directly raising a massive wave ten miles high!

The turbulent waves actually rushed into the sky and washed away the clouds. They callously drove towards Divine Phoenix Island, submerging a massive expanse of the palace ruins!

Seeing this scene, even the normally indifferent Feng Shen was secretly flabbergasted. This was the terror of a super Saint Beast. Just that great body was already an unstoppable weapon!

“This really is a super war machine. Perhaps it isn’t too extraordinary in a one on one battle, but if it were used to seize the headquarters of a sect, any sect below the fifth-grade would be directly rolled over!”

Duanmu Qun said with sincere emotion. If there wasn’t a number of third stage Life Destruction and above powerhouses banding together, then it really would be impossible to stop the energy impact of this Giant Leviathan!

At this time, within the Giant Leviathan the battle between Lin Ming, Xuan Yuqie, and the rest had reached its superheating phase.

Xuan Yuqie and the three great Elders were flushed red, their foreheads dripping with sweat.

This was a direct confrontation of soul force with the Giant Leviathan’s spiritual sea as the battlefield. Even so, Xuan Yuqie and her group were the ones losing.

Now Xuan Yuqie had already retreated to the final destination of the soul mark. She sent out her soul force, shaping it into a phantom that wore black war armor, an almost exact replica of herself.

And then in front of her, holding a white spear, Lin Ming also began to slowly appear.

Seeing Lin Ming, Xuan Yuqie gnashed her white teeth together, “Lin Ming! You’ve got guts! Do you really want to become mortal enemies with my South Sea Demon Region!?”

Lin Ming thought this was quite funny, he nearly laughed out loud. “Listening to Sovereign Xuan’s words, if I were to give up now, then would I no longer be the sworn enemy of the South Sea Demon Region?”

“You…!” Xuan Yuqie’s voluptuous chest furiously rose up and down, “What a good Lin Ming! Since you want to die so badly, then I will fulfill your wish. Just you wait until Elder Xuan comes out of seclusion. Once he reaches the fourth stage of Life Destruction and emerges, then I’d like to see just how you’ll avoid him!”

"Fourth stage of Life Destruction… I hope he doesn't fail in his cultivation." Lin Ming indifferently smiled and then pointed his long spear straight at Xuan Yuqie, thrusting directly at her!

This was a weapon formed from his soul force. A battle spirit could also increase the power of soul force. With the battle spirit's strength in addition to Demonshine's support, the might of this spear strike caused Xuan Yuqie's beautiful face to pale with dread!

She instantly judged that it was impossible for her to block this spear. But, right behind her was the soul mark that Xuan Wuji had left behind. If she didn't fight and ran away instead, then this soul mark would be destroyed by Lin Ming!

Xuan Wuji was the true ruler of the South Sea Demon Region and the Giant Leviathan was one of his greatest tools to challenge the world. If she were to lose the Giant Leviathan here, she couldn't imagine just how she would survive Xuan Wuji's anger!

In this brief flash of hesitation, Xuan Yuqie tried to dodge, but it was already too late!

Lin Ming's soul spear had already pierced towards Xuan Yuqie.

"Haa!"

Xuan Yuqie gave a loud shout and completely exhausted all of her soul force, slashing down her sword onto Lin Ming's spear!

However, the difference was too great. Demonshine's soul force was already much stronger than Lin Ming's. Now with both gathered as one, this was not a force that Xuan Yuqie and her three great Elders were able to contend with.

In the exchange of moves, there was only a snapping sound as Xuan Yuqie's sword snapped apart. Without slowing down at all, Lin Ming's long spear pierced through Xuan Yuqie's chest!

Blood bloomed like a crimson lotus. Xuan Yuqie's face instantly paled and she spat out a mouthful of blood.

"Ahhhh! You little devil, I will remember you!"

Xuan Yuqie's voice was thick with hatred as she spat out these words. Atop Lin Ming's long spear, her body began to be destroyed, slowly fading away.

After Xuan Yuqie vanished, the soul mark that Xuan Wuji left behind was right in front of him. Now there were no longer any barriers stopping him.

Lin Ming fixed his eyes on this black flame-like mark. It was the size of a palm, and around this black mark, soul force had formed into chains of runic ropes, spreading out like an octopus as it imprisoned the Giant Leviathan's spiritual sea.

"Lin Ming, destroy this and then make a brand with your own soul mark. With that, the Giant Leviathan will be yours! This silly big fellow doesn't have much potential for growth, and of course compared to this saint it is like mud to the heavens. Still, the advantage is that it's already grown up; you don't need to bother with raising it. This beast should be enough for you while you're still at the Sky Spill Continent. Once you enter the Realm of the Gods, you will be able to swap it out for a new contract beast."

"Mm, understood." Lin Ming faintly smiled as he heard Demonshine's boastful words. With his long spear in hand, he approached Xuan Wuji's soul mark.

.....

At this time, within a dimension of the Giant Leviathan, Xuan Yuqie gave a miserable cough before she slumped to the ground. There was not even a hint of blood left in her face and her lips were extremely pale, sweat streaming down her entire body.

If one's soul force was damaged, then the body wouldn't be harmed. But, injury to one's soul force was even more troublesome. Without a top heavenly soul nourishing treasure, it was simply an impossible wound to heal.

“Sovereign Xuan, are you alright?”

The other three Elders were alarmed. They had consumed a massive amount of their soul force. As for the damage to their spiritual seas, they were only a bit better off than Xuan Yuqie.

At this moment, they finally began to realize just how serious the situation was!

Lin Ming had used some unknown means to reverse all odds and defeat the four of them combined!

They believed they had paid the price for underestimating their enemy. But the truth was that even if they didn’t overestimate Lin Ming, nothing would have changed the result of this battle.

“Sovereign Xuan, what should we do now?” An Elder asked as he grit his teeth.

“Escape, we’re running away right now!” Xuan Yuqie dragged herself off the floor and swallowed a red pill.

This was not a soul recovery pill, but rather a blood poison pill that stimulated one’s potential to the limit. It was similar to the Scarlet Blood Pill Lin Ming had taken before to combust his blood essence. It had enormous side effects on the body!

Xuan Yuqie’s soul was already injured. If she were to swallow this blood poison pill too, then the miserable state she would end up in after this could be imagined. It would exacerbate her wounds and damage her life source; it was highly likely that even her cultivation would be damaged.

As the three great Elders saw Xuan Yuqie swallow down this blood poison pill, all of them were greatly shocked. “Sovereign Xuan, what are you doing? If we lost then we just have to escape. You don’t need to use a blood poison pill in order to do so. That said, if we were to run away, what would we do with the Giant Leviathan?”

“Giant Leviathan?” Xuan Yuqie mirthlessly laughed. These three Elders didn’t know what happened and kept thinking about the damned Giant Leviathan. “The Giant Leviathan is no longer ours. If we run away too late, then we won’t be able to escape anymore!”

As Xuan Yuqie spoke, the medicinal efficacy of the blood poison pill had restored the majority of her strength. Because she had to stimulate her blood essence, her face was flushed with an abnormally red color.

Without hesitation, she opened the channel out of this dimension with a secret skill. Her buxom figure flashed, and she shot towards the distant horizon at full speed!

Her only regret facing Lin Ming just now was that she had hesitated. If she had firmly decided to escape then she wouldn’t have had her soul injured and she also wouldn’t have to bear the side effects of the blood poison pill.

As the three Elders saw Xuan Yuqie escape, all of them of glanced at each other in chagrin. The Giant Leviathan no longer belonged to them? What did that mean?

“We must keep up!” An Elder said as he rushed out of the dimension. Now was no longer the time for thinking about what had happened. No matter what, the situation was absolutely worse than any of them had imagined!

“Elder Zhou…” The two other Elders called out. But, as they saw his figure fading away into a black dot, both of them bitterly sighed and began to chase after him.

The two of them had a cultivation at the first stage of Life Destruction. Although they completely released their energy to rapidly escape, they didn’t use the blood poison pill that had so many side effects.

If the Giant Leviathan didn’t belong to them… was it being controlled by Lin Ming?

That was… impossible…

The two Elders thought this. When Xuan Wuji had taken control of the Giant Leviathan, he had to spend a massive amount of effort. Not only did he arrange a massive array, but he also used a secret skill to innervate his soul as well as having a great number of masters supporting him together. Only under these conditions was he then able to successfully place a soul mark brand on the Giant Leviathan.

That had been on the Giant Leviathan's spiritual sea that hadn't yet had a master. If the Giant Leviathan had a master, then this would be much more difficult!

No matter how powerful Lin Ming was, it was impossible for him to so effortlessly and quietly seize control of the Giant Leviathan. At most he would destroy the soul mark that Xuan Wuji had left behind with some sort of secret skill.

Without the soul mark, the Giant Leviathan would fall into a deep slumber. Fortunately, within the Sky Spill Continent, only Xuan Wuji had obtained the Demon Emperor's letter that detailed the method to control it. If the Giant Leviathan could be recovered, then they wouldn't suffer too much of Xuan Wuji's anger for losing the beast.

"I really have no idea just what means Lin Ming used to isolate or destroy Elder Xuan's soul mark!" An Elder said with disbelief.

"Mm, we've underestimated Lin Ming!"

Another Elder echoed. He couldn't understand why Lin Ming had suddenly become strong to such a degree. Just what secrets did he hold on his body?

A young man in his early twenties had been able beat four Great Elders into the ground? Was this possible?

As the two Elders were lost in their thoughts, they suddenly heard a savage roar echoed out from behind them. A terrifying shockwave washed over their body, stunning them, making their veer off from their original flight path. Below them a massive wave crested up, nearly engulfing the two of them!

“What is going on!?”

The two great Elders were shocked. As they looked back, they suddenly felt as if their souls had fled their bodies!

The Giant Levaithan that should have lost all ability to act was actually flying towards them at high speed. As for those several thousand tentacles near its mouth, all of them were dancing in the air like the hands of a demon, rushing to surround them both!

These terrifying tentacles could shatter space and split apart the ocean. They contained a vast energy that made it difficult for one to summon any courage, scattering all thoughts of resistance!

“What is going on!? Without the soul mark the Giant Leviathan should have fallen into a deep sleep!” An Elder paled as he saw these tentacles drawing closer to him.

“Even if it didn’t sleep, it still shouldn’t be aiming at us!”

Another Elder broke out into a cold sweat. By all logic, compared to this Giant Leviathan, they were nothing but ants to an elephant. An elephant shouldn’t start attacking ants!

As the two people were dazed, the thousands of tentacles finally caught up to them, weaving a terrifying net around them and sealing off every path of escape. The two of them realized that they were now in the exact same situation that Lin Ming was in just a quarter hour ago.

But the difference was that Lin Ming had a way to deal with this. As for these two South Sea Demon Region Elders, they were beginning to drown in despair!

Chapter 680 – Subdue

Chapter 680 – Subdue

…

…

…

"Let's attack together!"

An Elder loudly shouted as he faced the Giant Leviathan's tentacles, extracting a ruler from his spatial ring at the same time.

The other Elder took out a heavy sword. The two of them began revolving their true essence to the limit, using their ultimate abilities!

Two storms of black true essence erupted. Under the minute control of the two Elders, the two attacks fused as one, heavily smashing into the net of tentacles.

Bang!

Flames exploded. Several shining tentacles that bore the brunt of the attack dimmed down, rapidly shrinking back. However, more and more tentacles rushed forth to take their place, leaving no room for the two Elders to run as before.

"This is bad!"

Seeing the tentacles that were filled with energy rush towards them, the two great Elders' eyes turned blood red. With their insignificant first stage Life Destruction strength, resisting this net made of the Giant Leviathan's tentacles was impossible.

"I'll use up my life!"

The two Elders thought of this idea at the same time. However, something happened that shocked them. As the great tentacles rushed towards them, they actually began to slow down, wrapping around them without even the slightest intent of piercing through their bodies.

Ka ka ka!

The two Elders felt as if their bodies were being constricted by several large pythons. Their organs ached with an agonizing pain, and their bones almost broke.

“This damn beast!”

The two great Elders dripped with sweat from the pain. They had lost any and all strength to resist.

At the same time as their hearts filled with grief and despair, they also realized something. This Giant Leviathan must have been controlled by someone, otherwise it would have killed them and not surrounded them like this.

As for the one who could control the Giant Leviathan, they could only think of one person.

That was… Lin Ming!

The two Elders could scarcely believe this. When Xuan Wuji had laid down his control onto the Giant Leviathan, he had made a massive array formation, used a secret skill to stimulate his soul potential, and had even gathered countless masters to support him. Even then, he had just barely managed to succeed.

But Lin Ming, with just his strength alone, how was he able to simultaneously fend off and counter the attack of four Elders, forcefully wipe off the soul mark that Xuan Wuji had left behind, and then even plant his own soul mark in such a short time?

Thinking of this, the two Elders began to have a deep sense of fear swell from within them. They no longer regarded Lin Ming as a 20 year old youth. To them he was now a monstrous genius, a terrifying and mysterious existence beyond their comprehension.

Woosh!

The two Elders felt their bodies tighten. The Giant Leviathan's tentacles rapidly returned as the beast opened its great maw and swallowed both Elders. The two Elders saw pitch black for a brief moment, and in the next instant they had arrived in a light red dimension.

.....

10 miles away, as Feng Shen, Duanmu Qun, and Lan Xin saw this, they were all shocked speechless.

After Lin Ming had drilled his way into the Giant Leviathan's body, he had used some unknown method to cause the Giant Leviathan to roar out in pain for an entire quarter of an hour. Then, something surprising happened. All of the South Sea Demon Region Elders began to escape separately. The two in front were fortunately able to escape safely, but the two behind them were far too slow. They had been caught by the Giant Leviathan!

What was going on?

“It's like… this Giant Leviathan has been subdued by Lin Ming?” Feng Shen couldn't believe his own words as they came out of his mouth, but this was the only plausible explanation.

Duanmu Qun also praised, “Incredible. Although this Giant Leviathan is not too great in one-on-one combat, it can display a massive destructive force in a large-scale battlefield. This is a great war beast that even a Holy Land would be jealous of. I have no idea what Lin Ming did; his every action is a riddle to us.”

Duanmu Qun sighed. At this time he no longer thought about competing with Lin Ming. As long as he could remain on good terms with Lin Ming, then that would allow the future of his Divine Wood Holy Land to see a broader and higher road.

At this time, in the Giant Leviathan's inner dimension Lin Ming wore black clothes as he stood tall, his hands crossed behind his back. He was calmly staring at the two Elders. Although his gaze was peaceful, there was also a faint edge to it that caused one's heartbeat to skip a beat.

"Lin Ming..."

An Elder gulped. When a bounty was placed on Lin Ming throughout the entire South Sea, he had seen Lin Ming's portrait. This youth in front of him seemed similar, but there was a very great difference in his temperament. The Lin Ming in the portraits was a handsome and delicate youth, but the Lin Ming in front of them was like a king that commanded life and death!

"You... just who are you?"

An Elder couldn't help but ask. He couldn't imagine that this terrifying existence in front of him was just a 20 year old youth.

When this Elder was young, he too had been a Saint level talent. When he was 20 years old, he had been a late Houtian martial artist. Because of his superb talent, he was just able to fight the worst of Xiantian level masters. This was already a very stunning achievement. But compared to Lin Ming, even describing this difference as cloud and mud wasn't enough to do it justice.

"I am who I am. As for my Lin Ming's name, I think that you already know!" Lin Ming indifferently flourished his white spear and pointed it towards the two Elders. "I will now give you a choice. Surrender to me and allow me to freely plant a slave seal in you for 50 years. After 50 years, I shall free you! Otherwise, your only other choice is death!"

Lin Ming had originally wanted to kill these two Elders, but after deliberating upon it some more, a first stage Life Destruction master did have a very good combat strength. It had to be known that Mu Fengxian herself was also a first stage Life Destruction master.

Waging war against a sect was not a matter of a single person, much less when Lin Ming's own individual strength wasn't actually that strong.

Facing the powerful Xuan Wuji, Lin Ming had to grab as many advantages as he could. Xuan Wuji would soon exit his seclusion. At that time, even if Lin Ming was weaker than Xuan Wuji, he still had to have the qualifications to content with him.

"Humph, I would rather die than have a slave seal planted in me!" An Elder spat out between clenched teeth. To a proud martial artist, a slave seal was simply the highest form of insult. Once a slave seal was planted he would be nothing but a mindless slave; he would never be able to have his own thoughts.

"Then let me help you!" Lin Ming said without hesitation. He lifted his spear, about to kill them, when at this moment the other Elder shouted out, "Wait!"

Lin Ming's hand stopped. He asked, "What else do you have to say?"

The other Elder's mind raced. He grit his teeth and said, "You said that this slave seal will only be for 50 years, why should I believe you?"

After a slave seal was planted, the slave would have to obey every single order from their master, unable to even commit suicide. If Lin Ming didn't release this slave seal 50 years from now, then that was truly a life worse than death.

Lin Ming sneered, "I can control at most 10 people with my slave seals. Thus, you two simply do not have the qualifications to be my servants for 50 years. Does this explanation satisfy you?"

Lin Ming's words could be described as excessively arrogant and unrestrained. After the Elder heard this, he was greatly uncomfortable in his heart. But even so, he still couldn't help but acknowledge that Lin Ming had the capital to speak his words. 50 years later, Lin Ming would have already become a Peerless Emperor, possibly even standing at the pinnacle of all Emperor level powerhouses. How could he possibly waste two slots of his slave seals to raise up two first stage Life Destruction slaves?

The Elder bit out, “Alright, I agree!”

“Elder Sun, you…” The Elder that said he would rather die than submit saw this other Elder compromise and began to panic. “You would rather throw away your dignity and ruin your heart of martial arts just so you can live on in such dishonor? Do you know that after being controlled, Lin Ming will make us kill our own descendants!”

“Elder Zhou, you’re still thinking about that at a time like this?” Elder Sun gloomily lifted his eyes, listlessly looking at the other old man. “Us demonic path martial artists have always cared about ourselves first and foremost, taking ourselves as the center of all decisions. So who cares if we’re forced to betray and kill those from the South Sea Demon Region? As for my heart of martial arts, who cares? Our cultivations have reached reached the limit that we can attain. In our lives, there is no hope for us to ever reach the second stage of Life Destruction, so why would I care if my heart of martial arts is ruined? If you want to die then I won’t stop you, but I don’t want to die, I haven’t lived my life yet. In the first half of my life I desperately struggled for all lucky chances like a madman, closing up to practice, and now after great difficulty I can finally enjoy the fruits of my labors. I also want to enjoy my next several hundred years of life. I do not want to die here!”

Some martial artists, such as Lin Ming, practiced martial artists to reach the pinnacle of martial arts.

Some martial artists who practiced martial artists did so in order to gain more power, have a higher status, and enjoy all the beauties and mortal sins of the world.

Elder Sun was one of these latter martial artists. He was too nostalgic and reluctant to part with his life, he simply hadn’t enjoyed it enough. If a Life Destruction powerhouse didn’t participate in the wars of a sect and didn’t try to find lucky chances to break through to higher realms, then they could casually go to any smaller land and enjoy life like a living god.

Hearing Elder Sun say this, Elder Zhou also hesitated.

If one could live, who would want to die?

……………

1,000,000 miles away, Profound Province –

The southernmost side of the Sky Spill Continent had a total of ten domains and nine provinces. Among these, a 'province' was slightly smaller than a domain. For instance, the surrounding territory of Divine Phoenix Island was considered the Divine Phoenix Province.

The Divine Phoenix Province was subordinate to another greater domain, but there were also some provinces that were independent. For instance, the Profound Province was like this.

The Profound Province was located in between the Five Element Region and the Judge Mountain Province. It was one million miles away from the South Horizon Region.

The number one sect of Profound Province was the Yin Yang Profound Palace, a newly promoted fifth-grade sect.

Yin Yang Profound Palace's cultivation methods focused particularly on double cultivating as a complementary ability. Here, double cultivation benefited both man and woman. It was different from the violent sucking of energy style that the South Sea Demon Region practiced. Thus, the Yin Yang Profound Palace could be barely considered an orthodox sect.

Because of the special characteristics of this cultivation method, many disciples of the Yin Yang Profound Palace were married couples that cultivated together.

Even the Palace Masters of Yin Yang Profound Palace were a couple. The man was named Xing Ji and the woman was named Xing Can; they were renowned as the double Yin and Yang stars.

The Xing couple's cultivations were both at the extreme second stage Life Destruction. Because of their Yin Yang cultivation method, they were especially well suited to combining their attacks. If the two of them joined forces, they were actually just able to deal with a third stage Life Destruction powerhouse.

The Xing couple had one son. His name was Xing Yang and he was an Emperor level talent.

As long as an Emperor level talent didn't die, they would have a slim chance of becoming a true Emperor level powerhouse.

The Xing couple had placed very high expectations on Xing Yang. They hoped that he could become an Emperor level powerhouse in the future and lead their Yin Yang Profound Palace to become a true Holy Land.

At this time, within an elegant courtyard at the eastern section of Yin Yang Profound Palace...

A great millennium old tree stretched out its lush leaves and branches, covering the entire courtyard. Underneath this great tree, there was a simple stone table, and on this stone table was a tea set. Sitting around this stone table were three people.

The one in charge at this table was an elderly woman wearing a robe. Her silver hair was nobly coiffed upwards, bound with an exquisite phoenix hairpin.

This person was the Highest Elder of Divine Phoenix Island, Mu Fengxian!

Chapter 681 – Mu Qianyu's Worries

Chapter 681 – Mu Qianyu's Worries

…

…

…

After two and a half years, not only did Mu Fengxian's cultivation not rise, but it tended to fall instead. Her appearance was even older, and her eyes were no longer as bright as they were in the past.

This was a sign that one's life was reaching its later days. But, the truth was that with Mu Fengxian's mere 700 to 800 years of life, even if she didn't break through to the second stage of Life Destruction, she should still be able to live for several hundred more years. The reason that she was in such a situation was because she had truly overdrawn her mind and body in the South Sea war, repeatedly taking action, all of this at the cost of wounding her own life source.

On Mu Fengxian's left hand side was the red-dressed Mu Yuhuang. Mu Yuhuang's cultivation had gone even further, and now she had stepped foot into the Life Destruction realm.

When Lin Ming had first completed his 100% Tempering Marrow, he hadn't used up the entire Nirvana Dragon Root; it still had 20% of its essence energy remaining. He had given this greatly weakened Nirvana Dragon Root to Mu Qianyu, and Mu Qianyu had in turn given it to Mu Fengxian. Mu Fengxian didn't use it for herself, but instead gave it to Mu Yuhuang.

Mu Fengxian was well aware that she had reached the limits of her potential. Even if she swallowed the Nirvana Dragon Root, the insufficient essence energy within would be unable to help her cross through the second stage of Life Destruction realm. At most it would be able to bolster her life vitality, extending her life by another hundred or two years. But, this no longer held any meaning for Mu Fengxian. She would rather leave this Nirvana Dragon Root to Mu Yuhuang so that could one day take the heavy burden of carrying on the future of Divine Phoenix Island.

Mu Yuhuang already had the ability to cross Life Destruction. It was just that she wasn't the Saintess of Divine Phoenix Island, thus her talent was limited.

According to Mu Yuhuang's talent, she should at most be able to reach the peak of the late Revolving Core realm. That was her limit. Mu Yuhuang had cultivated for so many years but she still lacked that final push to make her cultivation method reach perfection. Thus, without good odds of crossing Life Destruction, she had delayed this for 100 years.

After she swallowed the weakened Nirvana Dragon Root, she was then able to cross through the first stage of Life Destruction with its help.

On Mu Yuhuang's other side was a young and beautiful woman. She wore robes of red silk and her form was full and round. Her legs were slender, her facial features were exquisite, and her clear white teeth were accentuated with crimson lips that gleamed with a crystal luster. This woman not only had an appearance that could bring nations to its knees but she also had a temperament as if she were otherworldly, a presence that no one could defile. Just by casually sitting there, she naturally revealed a quiet and languid serenity.

This woman was Divine Phoenix Island's Vermillion Bird Faction Saintess, Mu Qianyu. At this time, Mu Qianyu's eyes were sparkling with worry.

After Divine Phoenix Island's defenses were broken, Mu Yuhuang and the rest had used the ancient transmission array within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm and had crossed several hundred thousand miles, escaping through day and night until they finally reached the Profound Province.

Although the most important personnel of Divine Phoenix Island were safe, the disciples that had died in battle and the palaces that were left in ruin had constantly been a pain in Mu Fengxian, Mu Yuhuang, and everyone else's hearts. Divine Phoenix Island, a once glorious land with 3000 years of inheritance, had actually been destroyed. With this, even if they died they wouldn't have the face to see the ancestors of Divine Phoenix Island.

Moreover, living their days under others wasn't much better.

There were nearly a thousand survivors of Divine Phoenix Island. If they wished to find a spiritual mountain or island that was rich with origin energy, that was easier said than done. Moreover, the South Sea Demon Region was well aware of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm's existence. Because of this, they wanted to capture Mu Fengxian and the rest of them alive to search their souls for the method to open it. How could they allow Mu Fengxian and the others to rebuild their sect somewhere else?

Thus, with no other choice and in desperation, Divine Phoenix Island had to seek asylum.

Out of the several nearby domains, there were only two different powers that had some friendship with Divine Phoenix Island and could also contend with the South Sea Demon Region to an extent. One was Yin Yang Profound Palace and the other was Great Zen Temple.

After the trip into the Demon God Imperial Palace, Great Zen Temple no longer intervened in the South Sea Demon Region's war. Even though the Five Element Region and Divine Phoenix Island had sent out several messengers asking for help, they had been ignored every time. It was as if Great Zen Temple was also facing their own troubles and simply had no time to bother with Divine Phoenix Island.

Not just that, but Divine Phoenix Island's cultivation methods ran completely counter to those of Great Zen Temple. Great Zen Temple also had no interest in the resources that Divine Phoenix Island could offer. Thus, Divine Phoenix Island could only choose Yin Yang Profound Palace.

Yin Yang Profound Palace certainly wouldn't protect Divine Phoenix Island for free. Sooner or later, this matter would be discovered by the South Sea Demon Region, and that was the same as offending them. Although Yin Yang Profound Palace didn't fear the South Sea Demon Region, they wouldn't provoke them for the sake of a mere Divine Phoenix Island.

In order for them to take in Divine Phoenix Island, there had to be sufficient terms. Since this was such a prime time to take advantage of Divine Phoenix Island while they had nowhere to go, Yin Yang Profound Palace naturally wouldn't miss such a great opportunity to swallow up all the benefits they could.

At the start, Yin Yang Profound Palace's Xing couple had wanted Divine Phoenix Island to merge with their sect, becoming a faction.

Regarding this, Mu Fengxian naturally disagreed.

After facing the unyielding Mu Fengxian, the Xing couple drew back a step, instead taking in a massive amount of resources from Divine Phoenix Island, even including two Vermillion Birds.

These two Vermillion Birds were Mu Yuhuang's contracted Vermillion Bird, Fireshine, as well as Mu Qianyu's contracted Vermillion Bird, Little Flame.

After having their life's Vermillion Bird snatched from them, Mu Yuhuang and Mu Qianyu's mood could be imagined. It really felt painful to the point that their hearts bled. Within Divine Phoenix Island, a life's Vermillion Bird was not only a contract beast, but a friend and lifetime companion.

In fact, Yin Yang Profound Palace's cultivation methods were truly similar to those of Divine Phoenix Island. In Yin Yang Profound Palace, Yin was water and Yang was fire. And in Divine Phoenix Island, the Blue Luan was ice and the Vermillion Bird was fire. Both of these cultivation methods were extremely similar, thus they were interested in not just the Vermillion Birds but also their blood essence.

In this way, the Xing couple made an oath on their heart demons and they would allow Divine Phoenix Island to recover within Yin Yang Profound Palace for 100 years. In these 100 years, Yin Yang Profound Palace would protect Divine Phoenix Island, and 100 years later, they would also assist Divine Phoenix Island in re-establishing their sect.

After living under others for less than half a year, Mu Fengxian and Mu Yuhuang quickly discovered something was amiss. Because most of the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island were women, the disciples of Yin Yang Profound Palace actually had the idea to double cultivate with them. They wanted to marry the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island and practice together as husband and wife.

If this were just a single isolated incident, then Mu Fengxian and Mu Yuhuang wouldn't intervene. But, this phenomenon kept repeating itself, making them unable to remain calm. This was a way of subtly and quietly assimilating Divine Phoenix Island. If this continued for several dozen more years, then the majority of Divine Phoenix Island's disciples would have married with the disciples of Yin Yang Profound Palace. After their disciples became the women of others, would it still be possible for Divine Phoenix Island to leave Yin Yang Profound Palace and re-establish their sect?

Although they knew that seeking asylum within Yin Yang Profound Palace was the same as walking into a tiger's den, Mu Fengxian and the others had no choice. If they didn't have Yin Yang Profound Palace, they wouldn't have any chance of survival. Sooner or later, the South Sea Demon Region would find them and kill them!

As three women were sitting around the stone table, their faces were filled with worry.

Mu Yuhuang rose up to fill a cup of tea. After she passed it to Mu Fengxian, she began to slowly say, "Bingyun has sent some news. It came from Storm Valley, and is quite good..."

"Oh? What news?" After Mu Fengxian heard Mu Yuhuang's words, her aged eyelids slightly trembled. In these past few years, good news was truly strange.

Mu Yuhuang said, “According to information obtained by Storm Valley, a few days ago, the South Sea Demon Region’s Divine Phoenix Island Branch was eradicated. And the leader of the force that did this was less than 30 years old.”

“30 years old?” Mu Fengxian was startled. “Hm, heroes really do come from the young. I wonder what sort of power this is, why would they move against the South Sea Demon Region?”

“Storm Valley hasn’t been able to find out the status of this mysterious party either. They only know that there are just a few of them, maybe four of them, and all of them are extraordinarily strong heroic youths. Afterwards, Xuan Yuqie personally took action and even sent out the Giant Leviathan…”

“Giant Leviathan?” Mu Fengxian frowned. Regardless of what goal this mysterious party had, an enemy of her enemy was her friend – she naturally worried for them. “To think they would actually use the Giant Leviathan. It seems that Xuan Yuqie is really taking this situation seriously. Are they personal mortal enemies of the South Sea Demon Region?”

As Mu Fengxian thought this was strange, Mu Qianyu actually seemed to remember something. She slowly became lost in her thoughts.

An extraordinary heroic youth, less than 30 years old…

When Lin Ming left, he had said he would return in 10 years’ time. At that time, Lin Ming should also be nearing 30 years of age. When he returned, just how strong would he be? He should also be able to rely on just his own strength to strangle a branch of the South Sea Demon Region.

By that time, Lin Ming could support the skies for her, sheltering her from rain and wind…

Thinking of this, a trace of longing shined in her eyes. In the end, she was still human. After facing so many changes in these past years, even she was tired.

And this 10 year meeting was truly too far away.

Mu Qianyu had left behind a message within the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm's array formation. Although her wishes were firm, living in this precarious and dangerous South Sea for 10 years… it was quite hard.

'10 years later, Thundercrash Mountain, nameless cave, can we really meet again?'

Worry appeared on Mu Qianyu's face. She was worried about Lin Ming. Lin Ming had gone through that ancient array formation all by himself. Where had he gone? What dangers had he encountered? Would he be able to safely return in 10 years?

The road of martial artists was filled with fatal dangers. Those outstanding heroic youths looked glamorous and glorious, but in truth, every day was a furious struggle against the heavens. One wrong step and anyone could fall beyond redemption!

Although Mu Qianyu believed in Lin Ming, she was still incomparably worried about him.

As Mu Fengxian saw Mu Qianyu's expression, she knew what this young woman was thinking in her heart. She sighed, but ended up not saying any comforting words. Instead, she asked Mu Yuhuang, "Since Xuan Yuqie has personally taken command of the Giant Leviathan, has this mysterious force been made to retreat?"

Mu Yuhuang shook her head, "They have not. They chose to fight!"

"Fight!?" Mu Fengxian was shocked. Even if Xuan Wuji wasn't there, just having Xuan Yuqie control the Giant Leviathan was terrifying. If this mysterious force dared to fight, then that proved that their strength far exceeded their imaginations!

"You said that there were four of these heroic youths?"

"This… perhaps they might have some mighty expert secretly helping them…" Mu Yuhuang shook her head. She couldn't believe that four youths that were younger than 30 years of age had the ability to face Xuan Yuqie and the Giant Leviathan.

“This news was sent a few days ago. By now, they might have already fought the Giant Leviathan; I have no idea who won and who lost. If they could defeat the South Sea Demon Region, even if they didn’t injure the Giant Leviathan they could bring down the arrogance of the South Sea Demon Region by several points. At least, they wouldn’t be like us, unable to raise even the slightest bit of resistance.”

Chapter 682 – Counterattacking the South Sea Demon Region

Chapter 682 – Counterattacking the South Sea Demon Region

…

…

…

The Giant Leviathan's strength lay in its massive size. Because of its size, normal attacks weren't even able to scratch it. The total energy contained within its attacks was also extremely terrifying; even a sect's great protective array wouldn't be able to resist it.

Mu Yuhuang never thought that anyone could kill the Giant Leviathan. Unless, this person was a fifth or sixth stage Life Destruction master, or even an Emperor level powerhouse.

But in the entire Sky Spill Continent, there were only several widely known Emperor powerhouses. With those that remained hidden all around the world, the total number amounted to around 100. But, most of these people were centered in the central regions of the mainland, so it was impossible for them to have some conflict with the South Sea Demon Region.

Mu Fengxian said, "It seems that there is some strong expert behind these outstanding heroic youths. If they are a fourth stage or even fifth stage Life Destruction master, then there would be a turning point in the South Sea war! Even if nothing happens to the Giant Leviathan, it's good enough for that Xuan Yuqie to take a loss."

Mu Fengxian didn't believe that there was an under 30 year old youth out there capable of dealing with Xuan Yuqie; there had to be some powerful expert assisting them from behind.

Mu Yuhuang said, "Talking about this further is useless. Let us wait for this battle to end before we make further plans. Now, it's better if we consider the future reconstruction of Divine Phoenix Island. Yin Yang Profound Palace has the heart of a wolf. Without a doubt, they want to subvert our Divine Phoenix Island. I fear that they even covet the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' and the 'Blue Luan Abstract Phantom Code'!"

As Mu Yuhuang spoke of Yin Yang Profound Palace, her voice became somewhat chilly. The truth was that when she decided to seek refuge within Yin Yang Profound Palace, she had already expected that the situation would turn out like this. However, at the time, she really had no other choice.

If things continued at this pace, then it would be impossible for Divine Phoenix Island to separate itself from Yin Yang Profound Palace in 100 years.

Mu Yuhuang certainly wouldn't idly sit by and wait for this to occur. She had a secret card in her hand, the greatest X factor that she had placed her every bet on. That was... Lin Ming!

Mu Yuhuang had pinned her every hope on Lin Ming. Lin Ming was a dragon in a pool. 10 years from now, as long as he was able to safely return, then he should have strength near the Life Destruction realm or even above that. A few more years after that, if his strength could reach the third stage of Life Destruction, then he could be the pillar that shouldered the heavens for Divine Phoenix Island!

At that time, it would no longer be difficult for Divine Phoenix Island to reconstruct itself. It was exactly because of this reason that Mu Yuhuang had dared to seek asylum within Yin Yang Profound Palace.

At the same time that Yin Yang Profound Palace was secretly trying to swallow up Divine Phoenix Island, Divine Phoenix Island was also using Yin Yang Profound Palace.

“Everything will depend on Lin Ming. If he can return safely after those 10 years and have the strength to challenge the Life Destruction realm, then we can be considered as having reached the calm after the storm. Otherwise…”

As Mu Yuhuang spoke to here, Mu Qianyu felt her heart ache.

‘Otherwise’. This word was truly terrifying.

She silently prayed in her heart for Lin Ming’s safety and that nothing tragic would befall him. 10 years from now, even if Lin Ming had exhausted all of his potential and wasn’t able to live up to Mu Yuhuang’s expectations, everything would be fine as long as he was safe…

Mu Yuhuang, Mu Fengxian, and Mu Qianyu all had various concerns and doubts weighing down on their minds. After a day of restlessness, a stunning piece of news suddenly arrived to them in the evening.

Xuan Yuqie had gathered three great Elders, using the Giant Leviathan to attack that mysterious party led by the enigmatic youth. But in the end, they had actually been the ones to be defeated!

Moreover, the most shocking news was that control of the Giant Leviathan had been stolen away. In a stunning reverse, the great beast had instead attacked the four great Elders of the South Sea Demon Region, killing two Elders from the Sun Clan and Zhou Clan!

As Mu Yuhuang obtained this news, she stood there stunned for a long period of time before she was able to shake herself out of her daze. Although she already expected that this mysterious force had some backing since they dared to face Xuan Yuqie and the Giant Leviathan, she never imagined that they would also have a method to erase the soul mark left behind by Xuan Wuji and take control of the Giant Leviathan!

It had to be known that the Giant Leviathan was controlled by Xuan Yuqie and three other great Elders. If the four of them noticed this happening, they absolutely would have launched a counterattack.

However, that mysterious force had not only forcefully broke through their counterattack, but also successfully captured the Giant Leviathan!

What sort of terrifying ability was this? What level of master could this be?

Fourth stage Life Destruction? Perhaps even fifth stage Life Destruction?

Mu Yuhuang was extremely shocked. This mysterious youth that was less than 30 years old, as well as that mysterious power behind him, both began to become increasingly wrapped in an aura of secrecy.

She thought about this for a long time, and then mumbled, “I really have no idea where this force came from and why they would attack the South Sea Demon Region…”

“Perhaps it might be the mortal enemies of the South Sea Demon Region, or even Silent Demon Emperor City…” Mu Yuhuang slowly said, her old eyes shining. “No matter what sort of situation this is, it is a favorable turn of events for us. However, don’t be too optimistic. Even if the South Sea Demon Region has lost the Giant Leviathan, they still have Xuan Wuji. That Xuan Wuji is strangely terrifying! During the trip into the Demon God Imperial Palace, Lin Ming ruined his calculated plans. But afterwards, he was still able to obtain the Giant Leviathan. After leaving the Demon God Imperial Palace, he found reinforcements from those clans of the deep sea, and then launched a total attack on the entire South Sea. Now, he has collected enough resources to break through to the fourth stage of Life Destruction. Once he leaves his seclusion, that is when the true battle will begin…”

………………

As Mu Yuhuang obtained news that this mysterious force had completely routed Xuan Yuqie, this news also spread through the entire South Sea. Mu Bingyun had returned three days earlier to Yin Yang Profound Palace. As for the seven great sects of the Five Element Region, they had now gathered together and were deliberating on how to jointly deal with the South Sea Demon Region and other relevant matters.

Although the current South Sea Demon Region had united the various deep sea clans and still held a position of absolute superiority, this good news at least allowed everyone to see a glimmer of hope. It wasn't like before where the others simply didn't have the courage to even think of resisting.

It had to be known that the Giant Leviathan wasn't too extraordinary in one on one combat. But, when facing an entire sect, its massive energy beam was able to destroy even a sect's great protective array. Even Divine Phoenix Island, with its 3000 year legacy, was no exception to this.

Then, if even they fell, who else dared to fight with the South Sea Demon Region directly?

In the joint meeting hall of the Five Element Region's seven great sects, the Sunfire Princess Huo Ruyan was fanatically saying, "This mysterious youth is just too cute. I have no idea what Holy Land this genius came out from for adventuring, but if I see him then I really, really have to thank him."

As Zhan Yunjian saw Huo Ruyan's crazed expression, he laughed and said, "Ruyan, please don't tell me that you've fallen in love with him. Then again, your age is a good match; you're also in your mid 20s!"

Hearing Zhan Yunjian's teasing words, Huo Ruyan blushed as she said, "Really, such a filthy mouth can't speak any good words. I haven't even seen him. Then again, he is most likely a Holy Land descendant, so how would he even look at me..."

As Huo Ruyan spoke to here, there was a tinge of exasperation in her voice. She was only at the Xiantian realm, but this mysterious youth was already at the Revolving Core realm. Not just that, but an exceptional Revolving Core master who was said to have strength comparable to a Life Destruction master's combat strength. How could anyone not be bothered hearing this?

But, there was nothing she could do about it. This was the difference of background and talent. She only came from a tiny fourth-grade sect, so how could she compare with a Holy Land?

"Haha, I was just messing around with you. But it really seems that you have this intent, hmm? You know, us martial artists don't care too much about appearance. If this fellow's character isn't too bad, then I'll ask him for you!"

Zhan Yunjian teased. This meeting was basically all juniors participating. As Zhan Yunjian joked with Huo Ruyan, this immediately elicited laughs from everyone, making Huo Ruyan's face even redder. Ever since the South Sea Demon Region destroyed the South Sea Wartime Alliance and the flames of war had burned all the way to the Five Element Region, it was rare for everyone to laugh as they did now.

"Alright, let's not tease little sister Ruyan anymore. If this mysterious force really is from a Holy Land, then the South Sea Demon Region really will be in trouble. We should have someone speak with that mysterious youth to see what plans he has." Arctic Ice Palace's Bai Aoxuan said. These sect talents had gradually grown up. Although most of their cultivations were at the middle Xiantian realm, because of their amazing talent they had a combat strength equal to a half-step Revolving Core master. In addition, with their growing mentality and maturity, they were now able to take on some responsibilities.

"Yes, yes, that's right! We should approach him. I really have no idea how the South Sea Demon Region managed to offend such a great power, but no matter what, this is a great help to us!" Thundercrest Sect's Zhou Lie echoed. "Brother Zhan, your Storm Valley has scouts near Divine Phoenix Island. Let's leave the matter of contacting this mysterious youth to Brother Zhan. The earlier the better, it's best not delay this matter further."

"Mm, Brother Zhou is right. I'll hurry and send the orders now. If this mysterious party can directly help us then that would be wonderful!" As Zhan Yunjian spoke he immediately took out a long distance sound transmitting talisman. This sound transmitting talisman would pass through several relay stations; it would be able to reach the scouts that Storm Valley had stationed in the South Sea in less than an hour.

Storm Valley had four scouts in the South Sea, all of them with an extreme Xiantian cultivation. They were proficient in wind attribute concealment techniques and also had supportive secret skills that used the Concept of Wind to hear distance voices. They were very well suited for being scouts.

The four scouts immediately set out and carefully headed towards Divine Phoenix Island. However, just as they reached the border of Divine Phoenix Island and were preparing to make contact with that mysterious force, they happened to see that massive floating Giant Leviathan suddenly shoot into the sky!

The 90 mile long Giant Leviathan rushed into the skies, causing monstrous waves and turbulent gales in the entire area, and making all the heaven and earth origin energy in the surrounding several hundred miles restlessly move. Being close to this tremendous pressure made one feel as if they were nothing more than a leaf in a storm.

“Mm? They’re flying away!”

“This direction is… the south!?”

Two scouts helplessly gazed on as they watched the Giant Leviathan fly towards the south. The Giant Leviathan was extremely large, and thus its acceleration was very slow. But, given enough time to reach its maximum speed, its speed would be no worse than that of a Life Destruction powerhouse!

When such a massive Giant Leviathan flew in the sky at high speed, it would cause a terrifying wind pressure that would sound out like a moving thunderstorm, forcefully ripping apart the sea beneath and forming a massive canyon in the water. After this ‘canyon’ was formed, it would fall back down like two great waterfalls, creating a massive splash of water that sprayed several miles into the sky.

“What are they doing?” As a scout saw the Giant Leviathan’s speed increase, he couldn’t help but ask this question out loud.

“South… south of Divine Phoenix Island is the South Sea Demon Region! They shouldn’t be… are they… are they attacking the South Sea Demon Region!? Heavens!”

Another scout sucked in a breath of cold air. In these past few years, the South Sea Demon Region had acquired too great a reputation. Now, they were the same as an Asura hell in everyone’s eyes. That mysterious force actually wanted to rush into the lair of the South Sea Demon Region? Did they not care about their lives?

“No, think about it some more… Xuan Wuji is in seclusion and Xuan Yuqie has been severely wounded. Now even the Giant Leviathan has been wrested away by that mysterious youth. This would be… the best time to attack the South Sea Demon Region!” As a scout suddenly realized this, everyone began to look at each other in shock.

This was too crazy!

Chapter 683 – 10,000 Mile Raid

Chapter 683 – 10,000 Mile Raid

…

…

…

Above the South sea, the massive Giant Leviathan shot forth at a terrifying pace. Even the clouds and sea were blown away by the sonic speed of the Giant Leviathan.

The four scouts from Storm Valley looked on with fear and trepidation in their eyes, their hearts gripped and their blood bubbling with excitement.

This was a counterattack on the South Sea Demon Region!

Ever since war broke out in the South Sea, this was the first time that anyone from Divine Phoenix Island or the Five Element Region saw someone fighting back against the South Sea Demon Region!

“Hurry up and transmit the news!” A scout said in hysterical elation.

“Mm, let’s pass the news!”

The four of them all pulled out sound transmitting talismans at once and sent out a message. After passing through several secret relay points of the South Horizon Region, the news took less than an hour to reach the Five Element Region. And at this time, important figures from the Five Element Region were gathered at the seven sect meeting hall.

After Zhan Yunjian heard the message from the sound transmitting talisman, he was utterly shocked.

After the fire flickered and disappeared, Zhan Yunjian didn't speak for a long period of time. Huo Ruyan couldn't help but say, "Zhan Yunjian, what message did you receive?! You're giving me a heart attack here!"

Zhan Yunjian took a deep breath and said, "This is incredible news. Even I couldn't believe it when I received it – it was just too crazy to take in."

"Zhan Yunjian, at this time are you still going to keep us guessing?" Huo Ruyan angrily beeped out, her entire body huffing and puffing with anger.

"I'm not trying to keep you guessing, I just find this hard to accept; I needed some time to digest this news." Zhan Yunjian slowly stood up, glanced at everyone present, and then solemnly said, "The message from the sound transmitting talisman just now is… that mysterious youth has already controlled the Giant Leviathan to plunge directly into the South Sea Demon Region. They want to wage war against the South Sea Demon Region…"

"What!?"

With these words, everyone was struck dumb with amazement!

"Isn't that just too reckless!?" Deep Earth Sect's Shi Yun couldn't help but say.

"Yeah! To penetrate alone into enemy territory, that is the ultimate taboo of any military plan! Moreover, there are countless masters within the South Sea Demon Region; it could be said to be a fatal danger zone. That mysterious youth may be fierce, but this is just far too dangerous!" Zhou Lie echoed. However, even as he finished, he seemed to have missed something…

After thinking about it further, the current South Sea Demon Region's situation was… Xuan Wuji was still in seclusion and Xuan Yuqie was severely wounded. The Giant Leviathan was also captured, and now they were greatly weakened because of this… this was the most opportune time to make a counterattack!

None of the heroic youths present were slow of mind. As they all realized this, all of them couldn't help but look at each other with blank shock on their faces.

For a time, a deep silence fell over the entire meeting hall.

Ever since the South Sea Demon Region had spread out news that Xuan Wuji had gone into seclusion to break through to the fourth stage of Life Destruction, the entire South Horizon Region had been devastated. They all had a premonition that once Xuan Wuji made his breakthrough and left his seclusion, that was the day when the South Sea Demon Region would bring a great apocalypse upon all of them.

Their days after knowing the time of their death were no better!

For this half year, regardless of whether it was the Five Element Region's seven great sects, Divine Phoenix Island, Dire Space Sect, or Supreme Mystery Temple, all of them were thinking of ways of how they could survive this upcoming catastrophe. But, none of them had ever thought of counterattacking the South Sea Demon Region.

This idea was far too crazy!

If that mysterious youth could actually cause great losses to the South Sea Demon Region, then he would become a living legend!

This was a less than 30 year old youth that was able to reverse the entire war of the South Sea with just his own strength! Looking through the last 10,000 year history of the Sky Spill Continent, just who was able to forge such a mythic legend!?

"Crazy, too crazy..."

Shi Yun mumbled to himself. Just who was this strange youth? Someone that was able to have some achievements was definitely not unknown!

Perhaps in the future, this person might even stand at the highest peak of the Sky Spill Continent, showing disdain for all rivals!

“No kidding, this sort of existence has already surpassed our understanding. To counterattack the South Sea Demon Region… what a powerful and bold great lord!” A direct disciple from Golden Bell Mountain said with a sigh.

“Mm… although we know that the South Sea Demon Region is in its weakest state right now, analyzing this is one thing, and deciding to counterattack the South Sea Demon Region after living under the pall of their shadow is another! If it was me, there was no way I would have the courage to do this simply because I would never think of it.” Bai Aoxuan sighed. Compared to this mysterious youth, whether it was strength, courage, or foresight, she was far too inferior. These past years, because of the absolute superiority shown by the South Sea Demon Region, all of them had already subconsciously formed a line of thinking that none of them were able to resist the South Sea Demon Region.

One couldn’t blame the Five Element Region and the South Horizon Region. Even when all of their sects were combined together, they didn’t even have enough Life Destruction Elders to count on more than a single hand. As for the South Sea Demon Region, they had once been a Holy Land after all. After recovering over thousands of years, their strength had now exceeded everyone’s expectations.

At this time, Huo Ruyan’s cheeks were red. Her dark black eyes had widened and it was unknown what she was thinking. She muttered, “What Holy Land has this mysterious youth come from? Because of him, the entire South Sea war is now in upheaval…”

“Little Sister Huo, you really didn’t fall in love with him, right?” As Bai Aoxuan saw Huo Ruyan’s appearance, she was slightly surprised for a moment before she laughed.

“I’m fine, stop making fun of me!” Huo Ruyan said, a bit embarrassed. “We should consider whether or not we should send out some masters to assist this mysterious youth.”

Since ancient times, beautiful women had always loved heroes. This was especially true in the world of martial artists. To contend with the entire South Sea Demon Region with just his strength, reversing the disastrous war and saving them from the descending dangers, this sort of extraordinarily brave and strong hero was easily able to touch the heart of a girl.

Let alone Huo Ruyan, even Bai Aoxuan couldn’t help but feel her heart tremble. But, they were well aware that the difference in their status was far too great.

“It would be too late for us to send out masters. The distance from the Five Element Region to the South Sea Demon Region is too great. Then again, even if we could send people, their strength simply wouldn’t be of help.” Zhan Yunjian said as he sighed, a bit frustrated. The seven great sects of the Five Element Region were only ordinary fourth-grade sects. Most of them didn’t even have Life Destruction powerhouses, so how could they possibly help?

“It’s fine. We shouldn’t worry over him. We only need to wait for the results. This mysterious youth’s ability has far surpassed our imaginations, he should be from one of the Divine Kingdoms from the central mainland. I have no idea why he decided to fight the South Sea Demon Region, but this time we’ve really hit the jackpot.” Zhan Yunjian said.

The South Horizon Region was located at the very south of the Sky Spill Continent. The sea here bordered the mainland; it was a relatively remote area. Here, ordinary fifth-grade sects like Great Zen Temple and the South Sea Demon Region were considered supreme powers.

But in the central region of the mainland, there were four Divine Kingdoms. These Divine Kingdoms each occupied an area that was five or six times larger than the Great Zen Region. As for the several Holy Lands of the Sky Spill Continent, most of them were located there. And when it came to fifth-grade sects, there were even more of those within the borders of these four Divine Kingdoms.

This was why Zhan Yunjian believed that this mysterious youth originated from these four Divine Kingdoms. If he was one of those legendary Crown Princes of a Divine Kingdom, then he would just barely be able to accept this…

………….

At this time, one million miles away, at the South Sea –

Lin Ming was within a miniature dimension of the Giant Leviathan. In front of him, there were two black-clothed old man respectfully standing there. These two were the South Sea Demon Region Elders that had submitted to Lin Ming – Elder Sun and Elder Zhou.

For convenience, Lin Ming called them Demon One and Demon Two.

“Demon One, how many Life Destruction masters are there altogether in the South Sea Demon Region?” Lin Ming asked.

“Reporting to Master, in these past 3000 years, the South Sea Demon Region has been recuperating and accumulating its strength, developing its forces. Especially several hundred years ago, Xuan Wuji discovered an ancient ruin within the South Sea and obtained the ‘Ancient Devil Tome’ as well as many resources. With this, the South Sea Demon Region was able to develop many masters.”

Lin Ming slightly nodded. He also knew of that ancient ruin that the Demon Emperor had left behind. Xuan Wuji had obtained the ‘Ancient Devil Tome’ as well as the Demon Emperor’s letter from there. From the Demon Emperor’s letter, he had obtained the location of the Demon God Imperial Palace as well as the method to open it.

Xuan Wuji had prepared for that trip into the Demon God Imperial Palace for many, many years. He didn’t even hesitate to launch a war in the South Sea for this very reason. As long as he was able to obtain the Nirvana Dragon Root and the Giant Leviathan, then he really would have a chance to break through to the Divine Sea realm given enough time, becoming the ultimate ruler of the Sky Spill Continent's southernmost tip.

All of his schemes were perfect. But, there had been a single unknown factor – the appearance of Lin Ming.

Xuan Wuji had never imagined that a mere youth that hadn’t even broken through to the Xiantian realm would ruin his plans of so many years, flushing it all down the drain!

Demon One said, “In these last several hundreds of years, because of those resources and relics found from the ancient ruins, the South Sea Demon Region has been able to cultivate eight Life Destruction masters. In addition to the original number, that is a total of 16. Afterwards, because they kept dying off, not counting us, there are only seven left. Of these seven, two are at the second stage of Life Destruction and Xuan Wuji is nearing the fourth stage of Life Destruction. The other four remaining are all at the first stage of Life Destruction.

“Mm… I see.” Lin Ming nodded. This strength wasn’t enough to make him feel any fear at all.

“What about the South Sea Demon Region’s allies? How strong are those clans from the deep sea?”

“Reporting to Master, this servant is not too clear about this. The deep sea clans are very mysterious; normally only Xuan Wuji has contact with them. This time, they only sent out a single Elder to help us start a deep sea beast tide.” After having a slave seal planted within him, Demon One could be described as unwaveringly loyal with absolute devotion.

“Mm, I got it.” Lin Ming responded.

Then, as he passed his perception outside of this dimension, he saw that the Giant Leviathan was nearing the center of the South Sea Demon Region.

The South Sea Demon Region was located on three islands deep within the South Sea. This was a point where the shallow waters met with the deeper water. The heaven and earth origin energy here was very thick.

As the Giant Leviathan arrived, its massive form caused monstrous waves to rise through the entire sea, forming surging tsunamis that rolled towards these islands.

In the Netherworld Demon Mountain’s main temple, Xuan Yuqie was sitting within a hidden chamber. In front of her were a number of precious soul recovery medicines. After she had fled in panic and distress, her soul had been injured and she also swallowed down a blood poison pill. Her origin energy had been extremely damaged. Without closing up for several months, there was no way she would be able to restore herself.

She had already gone into seclusion to heal herself, when she suddenly heard a great rumbling sound outside. At this time, all of the heaven and earth origin energy around the Netherworld Demon Mountain began to be stirred up in intense agitation.

“Mm? What’s going on?”

Xuan Yuqie was shocked. A faint foreboding feeling began to grow in her heart. She was about to step outside to take a look, when at this time, a black-clothed martial artist crashed into her hidden chamber, his face pale as he panted from exhaustion.

“Sov… Sovereign Xuan, something disastrous has happened. Lin Ming has brought the Giant Leviathan to our sect’s entrance. The Giant Leviathan is now storing energy, preparing to break through the great protective array!”

Chapter 684 – What Is There To Discuss?

Chapter 684 – What Is There To Discuss?

…

…

…

Xuan Yuqie's complexion immediately changed. She paled, "What did you just say!?"

"I… I said that Lin Ming is now controlling the Giant Leviathan and he has already flown it to the entrance of the sect. Now he is storing energy, possibly to attack us!"

The black-clothed martial artist slowly and carefully repeated himself.

Xuan Yuqie suddenly felt dizzy, almost falling down where she stood. Her soul was already injured, and now after hearing this news, she almost lost her last breath.

She never imagined that Lin Ming would actually take the Giant Leviathan and step into their South Sea Demon Region!

It had to be known that after Xuan Yuqie and the other Elder fled back in distress, neither of them had publicly released the news that the Giant Leviathan of their sect had been stolen away.

This was because this was far too great a loss of face. Once this news spread out, she would never be able to recover from the effect this would have on her esteem as Sovereign. After all, she had gone out with three great Elders, and finally ended up with the Giant Leviathan being taken away. This really couldn't be justified.

Also, this was to maintain the stability and morale of their troops. Now that Xuan Wuji was still in closed-door seclusion, it was unknown just how many more months he would need before he exited. Although this South Sea Demon Region seemed very powerful at this moment, in truth there were many unnerving factors. If the subordinates were to suddenly find out that the Giant Leviathan was stolen away and two great Elders had died, this would surely lead to serious repercussions.

At this moment, the martial artists of the South Sea Demon Region were also in the dark. Thus, they had no idea that Lin Ming was the one who brought the Giant Leviathan knocking on their door!

Could there be a worse situation than this?

Also, as Xuan Yuqie's mind raced with different scenarios, she still couldn't think of anyone present in the South Sea Demon Region that could stop the bombardment of the Giant Leviathan.

How could Xuan Yuqie not panic at this time!?

She could no longer care about her injuries. She swept up all the bottles of soul recovery pills in the hidden chamber into her spatial ring, and then breathlessly rushed outside.

……………

"Hey… look at that, the Giant Leviathan came back. It seems that it used up too much energy because Sovereign Xuan brought it out too many times. Does it need to rest in the deep sea for a few months?"

Somewhere in the South Sea Demon Region, a middle Revolving Core Protector began talking as he saw that massive shadow of the Giant Leviathan's head loom over him.

"I have no idea. There might be a change in the situation. Perhaps the Great Elder has left his seclusion ahead of schedule."

Another Protector thought that Xuan Wuji might be leaving seclusion early, “Let’s go and take a look.”

“Mm, alright.”

The two Protectors soared upwards.

At this moment, a black-clothed man and woman rushed into the skies at high speed. The woman was Xuan Yuqie, and the man was an Elder with a silver mask covering his face. He was the other present second stage Life Destruction master of the South Sea Demon Region, and also the Sovereign of the Demon Region Eastern Faction. Of the Demon Region’s four great clans, he was the head of the Zhou Clan.

“Everyone! Hurry up and escape far away!” Xuan Yuqie shouted out loud. At this time, her mind and heart were already a mess. With her status as the Demon Region Western Faction Sovereign, she had gathered three other great Elders of the different clans and with four people in total had chased after Lin Ming, with even the Giant Leviathan supporting them. Such a powerful lineup of Elders actually lost to Lin Ming. Not only that, but the Giant Leviathan was taken away from them, and now it was being used by others to break through their entrance. Just where did she have face to see anyone anymore?

But now was not the time to consider these matters. Several tens of thousands of feet high in the air, the Giant Leviathan was storing energy. Soon, it would launch a devastating blow against the South Sea Demon Region!

No one was more aware than Xuan Yuqie of just how terrifying the Giant Leviathan’s strength was. Its process of gathering strength was very slow, but once it was able to finish, even the great protective array formation of the South Sea Demon Region wouldn’t be able to withstand a few attacks!

That was a natural inborn war monster!

“What? We need to escape far away?” Xuan Yuqie’s voice spread through the entire sect. These demonic path martial artists weren’t idiots, they soon realized that something was wrong. As they looked up into the skies, they could see that the heaven and earth origin energy within a range of several hundred miles was being stirred up by the Giant Leviathan, forming a cataclysmic vortex of origin energy as it swallowed it all!

Could this be…

The South Sea Demon Region martial artists all paled at once. At this time, the shout from the Demon Region Easter Faction Sovereign confirmed their suspicions…

“Young Hero, do not start! Let us discuss this first!”

What?

All of the demon region martial artists were stunned, and then slowly began to react. The Giant Leviathan had been taken away, and now it was actually being used to attack their South Sea Demon Region!

Everyone turned to look at Xuan Yuqie. Just several days ago, Xuan Yuqie had taken the Giant Leviathan on a punitive expedition, bringing with her a powerful lineup of Elders towards Divine Phoenix Island. Later, she and another Elder had returned, and then she had declared to everyone that the Giant Leviathan had gone to rest in the deep sea in order to recover its energy. As for the two other Elders, they had gone to accompany and take care of the Giant Leviathan.

Now it appeared that there had been an accident. Several days ago, Xuan Yuqie must have suffered a crushing defeat; she even lost control of the Giant Leviathan!

Just who had such a great ability to do this?

The Demon Region martial artists all had increasingly confused expressions appear on their faces. Within the entire South Sea Demon Region, besides Xuan Wuji, she was the number one master. Just who was this other party?

Feeling the puzzled eyes of thousands of people on her, their stares filled with confusion and disbelief, Xuan Yuqie ground her shining white teeth together and clenched her fists. In her entire life, she had never received such humiliation!

This damned Lin Ming!

Xuan Yuqie's hate caused her to gnash her teeth together. If Lin Ming was in front of her, she would undoubtedly try to tear him apart with her teeth. But Lin Ming was currently within the Giant Leviathan. With the protection of the Giant Leviathan, there wasn't anything she was able to do to him!

Beside Xuan Yuqie, the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign could see the energy stored within the Giant Leviathan becoming increasingly potent and violent. His face turned as white as paper. For him to stop the attack of the Giant Leviathan was simply unrealistic. If the sect's great protective array were to be ripped apart then the consequences would be unimaginable!

"Young Hero, don't be rash! Let us discuss this..."

The Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign was also feeling anxious enough that he felt sick in his stomach. He was hoping to reach a settlement with Lin Ming in exchange for resources. At least, he should first try to stabilize this situation with Lin Ming first.

However, just as he spoke, there was suddenly a massive explosion in the skies!

It was like 10,000 thunderbolts gathering together, making the entire world lose color. All of the heaven and earth origin energy with a range of several hundred miles was completely gathered up by the Giant Leviathan, forming a massive golden beam as thick as a giant tree. It was like an unrivaled vorpal sword, cutting directly down onto the South Sea Demon Region's great protective array!

"Damn!"

"Hurry and dodge!"

“Help me!”

All of the South Sea Demon Region martial artists were aware of how terrifying the Giant Leviathan was. Before this, Divine Phoenix Island, the Wartime Alliance, and afterwards also the Dire Space Sect and Supreme Mystery Temple, none of them had an array formation that was capable of dealing with the Giant Leviathan’s barrage of attacks!

The entire South Sea Demon Region was thrust into absolute chaos!

Bang bang bang!

A sound filled the world as if the earth itself was breaking apart. In the skies, a thick red barrier suddenly appeared, stiffly resisting the Giant Leviathan’s great golden sword!

A massive and violent explosion set off great surging tsunamis. At the Demon Temples, the island began to collapse all around them. Large tracts of land sunk into the sea, immediately causing all the islands to shrink a size!

Great waves of rock and water thousands of feet high smashed into the great protective array, generating explosive sounds of thunder. It was like the apocalypse was occurring at this moment!

Underneath that brutal golden beam of light, the red barrier fiercely twisted. With a deafening crackling sound, as if space itself was breaking apart, a shocking crack appeared in the barrier.

The great protective array was beginning to collapse!

“How can this be!?!?”

Xuan Yuqie’s beautiful face immediately changed. Although she had guessed that the South Sea Demon Region’s great protective array formation was basically unable to stop the barrage of the Giant Leviathan, it should be able to withstand two attacks at least. After all, the South Sea Demon Region's great protective array formation was several times more powerful than Divine Phoenix Island's!

But now, with just a single attack it had begun to collapse!

This great protective array had not weakened. Then, there was only one other possibility. That was… underneath Lin Ming's control, the Giant Leviathan had become that much stronger!

As Xuan Yuqie realized this, her lips began to tremble. How? How could it be like this!?

Even if it were Xuan Wuji personally controlling the Giant Leviathan, he still wouldn't be able to achieve such devastating power!

Who was Lin Ming? Was he really only a mere 20 year old youth?

Why had he been able to erase Xuan Wuji's soul mark? Why, in just a short two and a half years, was he able to jump from the Xiantian realm to the Revolving Core realm? Why was he able to stimulate the potential of the Great Leviathan to such a degree?

In this moment, a deep sense of fear and helplessness emerged within Xuan Yuqie's heart. When she had first obtained the news that Lin Ming had returned, she had been secretly pleased with this sudden discovery. She had thought that she would finally be able to capture Lin Ming and torture all of the secrets out of his body. But now that she thought back on this, she realized just how laughable an idea this was.

Lin Ming was simply a vicious demon from hell. She didn't even try to evade him, but rather took the initiative to walk straight up to his doorstep.

"Sovereign Xuan, what is going on here? You must give me an explanation about how you lost the Giant Leviathan!" The Demon Region Easter Faction Sovereign breathlessly shouted at Xuan Yuqie. The Giant Leviathan was originally a beast that belonged to the Xuan Clan, so when they lost it, he had nothing he could say about it. But now the Giant Leviathan had actually ended up in Lin Ming's hands instead, and it was returning to the South Sea Demon Region as a fatal catastrophe. Naturally, she had to pay the price for this.

Xuan Yuqie gritted her teeth and coldly said. "I will naturally be responsible for all of the consequences from this!"

"Responsible? Humph, just how will you be responsible?" The Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign's voice was cold. Because he was wearing a silver mask it was impossible to see his expression.

"Then what do you want? At this time do you want to fight with me?"

As Xuan Yuqie spoke, she unconsciously released her aura. Her strength was above this masked Elder, so she simply didn't fear him at all.

At this time, the South Sea Demon Region's great protective array could no longer withstand this immense barrage. With a final cracking sound, the barrier completely disintegrated!

The massive space barrier turned into fragments in the skies. The leftover energy of the golden light beam fell onto the Netherworld Demon Mountain, crashing through the mountainside. The majestic palaces that were several hundreds of feet tall suddenly toppled to the ground, instantly turning into ruins!

"Hurry and run!"

It was unknown who shouted this out, but all of the Demon Region martial artists began to react at once. Everyone began fleeing in all directions!

What a joke. If even the great protective array shattered, just how could they resist the Giant Leviathan's attacks?

"Don't go off alone! Everyone listen to my command!" Xuan Yuqie shouted out in midair. However, these martial artists didn't even bother listening to her. Instead, they ran away at an even faster pace! The Demon Region martial artists always took themselves as the center of their every action. At this time, who could bother caring for others?

“Damnit!”

Xuan Yuqie cried out in consternation. If she was able to organize everyone, then even if it was impossible to defeat the Giant Leviathan, everyone would still be able to retreat in a systematic order, thus preserving the greatest amount of strength for the entire South Sea Demon Region. But now, with everything and everyone in chaos, it would be easy to be chased down and killed!

And sure enough, Xuan Yuqie saw the Giant Leviathan rush forwards, already caught up to the rear of the escaping martial artists. Several thousand tentacles wantonly flew through the air, like countless massive snakes!

The massacre had begun!

Chapter 685 – Today My Only Goal Is To Kill

Chapter 685 – Today My Only Goal Is To Kill

…

…

…

As Xuan Yuqie saw this, her beautiful face paled. However, it was beyond her power to change anything.

The Giant Leviathan's one on one combat efficiency couldn't be considered too great. Its speed, both in attacks and movement, couldn't be considered too fast. Its attack methods were also too uniform and predictable. As long as one was prepared, then a high level powerhouse simply didn't need to fear the Giant Leviathan.

But, for killing martial artists below the Life Destruction realm, it was far too powerful. Especially in a massive group war!

To a second or third stage Life Destruction powerhouse, killing one or two late Revolving Core realm martial artists was no different than chopping vegetables. But, for them to kill a few hundred Revolving Core martial artists was impossible. Their opponents could simply flee in separate directions, and if they concentrated all of their efforts into a massive barrage of attacks, it was also possible to wound a Life Destruction master.

But for the Giant Leviathan, killing one or two late Revolving Core martial artists – or even killing several hundred late Revolving Core martial artists – was not difficult at all.

A Revolving Core martial artist couldn't be considered too rare within the South Sea Demon Region, but they also weren't some random cabbage. They were considered the backbone of the South Sea Demon Region.

As Xuan Yuqie saw Lin Ming drive the Giant Leviathan into the great fleeing groups of South Sea Demon Region martial artists, how could she not be anxious!

However, there was nothing she could do to the Giant Levithan – it was simply too large! Its naturally tough skin was several hundred feet thick. Even if it lay there motionlessly and allowed Xuan Yuqie to hit it as she wished, she would still need an entire hour of effort to even scratch it!

This was the advantage of size. If the Giant Leviathan was scaled down to just 100 feet it still might be able to defeat a first stage Life Destruction Elder. But it was actually 90 miles long!

Woosh woosh woosh!

With the sound of air being sliced apart, several thousand tentacles lashed out like whips, enveloping all of the Demon Region martial artists that were escaping this calamity!

“Ahh!”

With a shrill scream, the first martial artist had his back pierced through with a tentacle. All of his organs were completely smashed apart as he instantly died on the spot!

That martial artist was only at the early Revolving Core. In front of the Giant Leviathan, he simply didn’t have the ability to resist.

This martial artist was only the beginning. Follow this, countless screams of anguish and pain filled the air. Tentacles repeatedly pierced through the fleeing martial artists’ bodies en masse, their blood filling the skies with crimson rain!

Even Life Destruction Elders like Xuan Yuqie were not ignored. Instead, they became the focus of Lin Ming’s attention.

Bang!!

Several dozen tentacles rushed towards Xuan Yuqie before being sent flying away by her sword. At this time, her hair was a mess and her face was pale, “Lin Ming! I know you can hear me! Stop this immediately! Otherwise, I will have you regret everything!”

Xuan Yuqie angrily shouted. But after Lin Ming heard this, he actually smirked, smiling as if he had heard the funniest joke of all.

“Regret? On what basis will you have me regret anything? On what basis do I have to negotiate anything? When you used the Giant Leviathan to exterminate the Wartime Alliance and crush Divine Phoenix Island, did you give them a chance to negotiate?

“Don’t bother trying to delay for time so that your disciples and subordinates can escape; I am not so naïve. Today my goal here is clear, and that is to kill! If I see one then I will kill one, if I see two then I will kill two! All men and all women here today will die and not even dogs or chickens will be left alive! I want you to taste just what it feels like to have everything you’ve known be annihilated by the Giant Leviathan! I will show you what retribution is, I will show you what an eye for an eye truly means! With the blood of your South Sea Demon Region’s martial artists, I will soothe the souls of all the heroes that perished in the South Sea war!”

As Lin Ming spoke, killing intent erupted from his entire body. Within his spiritual sea, the spear-shaped battle spirit began to shake. His soul force divided into several thousand strands as it completely sunk into the Giant Leviathan’s tentacles.

He launched a maddening all-out attack on the South Sea Demon Region martial artists!

Now he no longer aimed at the Life Destruction Elders and Xuan Yuqie. Dealing with a Life Destruction Elder would require hundreds or thousands of the tentacles, and even if he tried wholeheartedly, he still might not be able to kill Xuan Yuqie and that masked man. If those two second stage Life Destruction masters flew away at full speed, they might not be any slower than the Giant Leviathan.

Then, it was better and far more effective to kill the ordinary martial artists of the South Sea Demon Region.

Mobilizing his soul force to the limit and with his battle spirit and also Demonshine's support, this became a completely one-sided massacre. The South Sea Demon Region martial artists simply had no ability to resist. Some frightened Revolving Core martial artists tried to fight back against the tentacles, but none of their attacks were even able to make a dent in the tentacles' skin.

With Revolving Core martial artists like this, there was no need to even mention the Xiantian and Houtian martial artists. A single strike from a tentacle was enough to kill a Xiantian realm martial artist. As for Houtian realm martial artists, as long as they were even touched by the aftershocks of energy they would simply perish where they stood!

After giving up his attacks on the Life Destruction Elders, Lin Ming's killing efficiency multiplied!

In just a short 10 breaths of time, several hundred South Sea Demon Region martial artists died, their corpses turning into bits of ground meat and blood that covered the skies.

Those that died were all the core of the South Sea Demon Region and Lin Ming's killing speed was far too terrifying. Xuan Yuqie felt her heart chill. She had personally controlled the Giant Leviathan so she naturally knew just how difficult it was to manipulate the Giant Leviathan's tentacles. To use several thousand tentacles at once, every one required its own separate conscious control.

When Xuan Yuqie had controlled the Giant Leviathan's tentacles to try to just kill Lin Ming by himself, that was already very difficult. But now, Lin Ming was able to control thousands of tentacles to simultaneously chase after thousands of people!

The difficulty of this was several times higher than what she had ever done!

And now, in Lin Ming's hand, this horrifying scene played out in front of her. These several thousand tentacles seemed to have their own eyes, searching for targets on their own initiative. This accurate attack was enough to make one's scalp tingle with dread!

What sort of terrifying control was this?

"Just how can Lin Ming achieve this?" Xuan Yuqie's mind raced. Lin Ming's soul force was strong to the point of surpassing her understanding. She couldn't help but admit that in Lin Ming's hands, the strength that the Giant Leviathan was able to display was several times what she was capable of. This made her feel both incomparably depressed and incomparably spooked.

She had a faint feeling that ever since the war in the South Sea started, the greatest error that the South Sea Demon Region had ever made was not by the hands of others, but only by Lin Ming!

At this time, within the dimension of the Giant Leviathan, it wasn't as difficult as Xuan Yuqie imagined for Lin Ming to reach this degree of control. It was true that to simultaneously control thousands of tentacles together required a massive amount of soul force. But, Lin Ming's soul force was already extremely formidable to begin with. With Demonshine supporting him and also having a much more efficient way to control the Giant Leviathan, these three factors combined together allowed him to easily do this.

No matter how the Demon Region martial artists in the sky cried or wailed, Lin Ming didn't hesitate once in his actions. He simply didn't need to worry about killing all of these martial artists. When these Demon Region martial artists had chosen their path, they were already destined to do evil in the world. Moreover, for them to be able to cultivate to such a degree, who knew how many women's Primordial Yin essence energy they had snatched away.

In the Seven Profound Valleys, a mere Acacia Faction had already ruined the lives of so many women, much less the South Sea Demon Region.

But, these little fish and shrimp underlings weren't the goal that Lin Ming most wanted to deal with. What Lin Ming wanted to affect was Xuan Wuji, who was in closed-door seclusion as he tried to reach the fourth stage of Life Destruction.

In the process of a human martial artist crossing the fourth stage of Life Destruction, they had to destroy their entire body and reform their Revolving Core after shattering it into fragments. In the first three stages of Life Destruction, one only had to destroy and reform the body. But, in the fourth stage of Life Destruction, one had to destroy and reform both the body and Revolving Core. This was an extremely dangerous process; the risks entailed were much higher than in the first three stages of Life Destruction. If there was even the slightest accident and any part of the process of reforming the body or Revolving Core failed, they would fail to cross Life Destruction, instantly perishing!

During this closed-door seclusion to cross the fourth stage of Life Destruction, Xuan Wuji was at his weakest period. As long as he could find Xuan Wuji during this time, then he could seriously wound him or even kill him.

Lin Ming was well aware that he wasn't able to stand against Xuan Wuji when he was at his pinnacle. Once he successfully crossed the fourth stage of Life Destruction, then without a doubt he would organize a final total assault. Whether it was him or Divine Phoenix Island, everyone would be in danger.

Lin Ming certainly wouldn't sit back and let this happen. He had to take advantage of Xuan Wuji's weak period and strike the first blow. But, Xuan Wuji was exceptionally sly and cunning. Elder Sun and Elder Zhou simply didn't know where he was in closed-door seclusion, thus Lin Ming didn't even know where to begin looking for him.

If he couldn't find Xuan Wuji, then he would deal with his disciples and followers instead. Even if he couldn't force that old geezer out of seclusion, he would still be able to severely damage the South Sea Demon Region so they wouldn't be able to organize a large scale attack any time soon.

Woosh woosh woosh!

Several thousand tentacles were like pythons and they shot towards everyone. In just a short half incense stick of time, these tentacles had swallowed the lives of nearly a thousand Demon Region martial artists!

And this number would still rise! The Giant Leviathan's reputation as a top beast of war was not for nothing!

As the masked Elder saw this happen, his eyes grew so red from anger that they nearly popped out of his head. However, he simply couldn't stop Lin Ming.

"Lin Ming, you remember this old man!"

With a shout, the masked Elder left behind a threat and then flew away. He didn't do anything nor could he.

Lin Ming didn't even care about him. As a second stage Life Destruction master, even if Lin Ming tried his best to keep him here, it would be nearly impossible to stop him.

At this time, Lin Ming's speed of killing had slowed down. Most of the fleeing martial artists had escaped the hunting range of the Giant Leviathan and had reached relatively safe areas.

Because these South Sea Demon Region martial artists had scattered away, no matter how powerful Lin Ming was, it was impossible to keep them here.

Finding the direction with the highest concentration of martial artists, Lin Ming chased them for another hundred miles. After he killed another hundred martial artists, the battle began to wind down.

In this battle, the South Sea Demon Region martial artists had left more than 1000 corpses behind. This could be called an extremely desolate and tragic battle.

The most that died were the Houtian martial artists. They were the slowest and also had the weakest defenses. Just by being caught up in the true essence energy fluctuations they were ground to death.

A good number of Revolving Core martial artists had died because Lin Ming had focused his attention on them. In fact, it wasn't much harder for the Giant Leviathan to kill Revolving Core martial artists than Xiantian martial artists. Thus, Lin Ming certainly decided to kill the more powerful ones.

In the air, the Life Destruction Elders of the South Sea Demon Region had already escaped. After Xuan Yuqie left behind some vicious curses, she also fled. They were all aware that none of them could defeat Lin Ming, thus, staying here just because they were emotionally affected by all this destruction was simply idiotic.

This caused Lin Ming to feel some regret. Originally, he had wanted to play a bit with the masked Elder or Xuan Yuqie; he wanted to see how good the Giant Leviathan was at killing second stage Life Destruction powerhouses.

The entire South Sea Demon Region was nearly emptied of people. But, Xuan Wuji hadn't shown up from start to finish.

Lin Ming didn't know whether that old fellow could see this scene. But if he could, what expression would he have? Would he be so apoplectically angry, frothing with so much hate that he failed to cross Life Destruction?

As Lin Ming maliciously thought this, he began to use the Giant Leviathan to pick through all the corpses on the islands.

To more accurately say it, he was collecting their spatial rings.

The current Lin Ming no longer desired the wealth of these low level martial artists. But, although a single martial artist wasn't worth too much, 1000 of them was different.

There were also the buildings throughout the South Sea Demon Region. Lin Ming didn't plan on letting them go – he'd loot them too.

Chapter 686 – Pillage

Chapter 686 – Pillage

…

…

…

The Giant Leviathan's giant tentacles were like a group of locusts. Wherever they traveled, they caused ruination as they recklessly looted everything. All of the valuable things that could be taken away were carried off, and as for those that couldn't, they were destroyed with beams of energy.

In just a single incense stick of time, buildings throughout the entire South Sea Demon Region were put into an absolute mess with a massive number of palaces and temples destroyed, flames rising from all directions.

Beside Lin Ming, Lan Xin looked on, a bit dumbfounded. Killing, burning, robbing, this was no different than the actions of a bandit.

In truth, to Lin Ming, being cavalier or being a bandit, he really didn't care about either one. His actions and conduct were all dependent on being able to smoothly flow through his mind and not betraying his heart.

As for his methods, it was all the same to him. The grudge from the looting of Divine Phoenix Island naturally had to be returned, and in the most striking and graphic manner possible.

"Doesn't seem like there's anything valuable." As Lin Ming was using the Giant Leviathan to devastate everything around him, he was also rapidly inspecting all the treasure he picked up. There wasn't anything of too much value. This was also within his expectations. After all, those sorts of things were usually carried by the Life Destruction Elders, or placed in some secret hidden location so they were hard to find.

In the buildings of the South Sea Demon Region, besides some great array formations for training, there wasn't much else. Since these great array formations couldn't be taken away, Lin Ming simply destroyed them all. He didn't plan on leaving any resources to the enemy so that they would be able to recover in the future.

"Lin Ming, go to the medicine garden. There's definitely something good there." Demonshine suddenly said.

"Okay!"

As Demonshine mentioned this, Lin Ming remembered that fresh medicinal plants couldn't be placed in a spatial ring; they had to be planted in a medicine garden with rich origin energy.

Spreading out his perception and with the support of the Giant Leviathan, Lin Ming was able to quickly scan every nook and cranny of the South Sea Demon Region. He soon discovered where the medicine garden was located.

There was a defensive array formation here. But for Lin Ming, ripping it open was easy.

Several dozen tentacles pulled up. In less than a quarter of an hour of time, the array formation was torn apart. This was because Lin Ming cared about the plants within the medicine garden, thus his actions were much gentler. Otherwise, he would have broken through the array formation even quicker.

After the array formation was sundered, an incomparably pure origin energy dispersed into the air. As Lin Ming looked within, he soon found that the herbs in the medicine garden were much richer and more valuable than those of Divine Phoenix Island!

In addition, there were several herbs that were far more valuable that the Demon Heart Flower.

Because Lin Ming had inherited the memories of the Realm of the Gods' alchemist, he had a very keen understanding of the multitude of medicinal herbs. Within the Realm of the Gods was where the richest and rarest herbs were found. Everything within the Sky Spill Continent could be found within the Realm of the Gods, but not everything in the Realm of the Gods could be found in the Sky Spill Continent.

Lin Ming soon classified all of these herbs, dividing them by their different pharmacological properties. He plucked out some and organized them, and as for those medicinal herbs that were more difficult to transport, he directly ripped them up and sealed them in a jade box.

There were even some that could be transplanted. He picked them up with their soul and moved them into the Giant Leviathan's dimension.

Generally speaking, these herbs were all inferior to the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass that Lin Ming had found in the Eternal Demon Abyss. But, high level alchemy didn't always use high grade materials for medicines; sometimes low grade materials were required to direct, catalyze or support the medicine. Moreover, training as an alchemist wasn't done in one day – the start was the most difficult. At the beginning, Lin Ming would have to practice in order to lay down his foundation as an alchemist. At this time, using these medicines to practice his technique would be useful.

If the Elders of the South Sea Demon Region knew that Lin Ming was brutally and violently looting everything they had built as well as gathering all of the medicinal herbs they had planted with care, classifying them as 'low level medicinal herbs for practice' so that he could train his technique, then they would probably be vomiting blood in a mad rage.

In the South Horizon Region, all of these things were considered rare heavenly materials; even a Life Destruction Elder would covet them.

However, Lin Ming, who had seen the Nirvana Dragon Root and profound gold divine fruit, simply didn't care much for these things.

All the medicinal herbs, spatial rings, and other resources were completely taken away. Before leaving, Lin Ming also didn't forget to have the Giant Leviathan shoot out a massive beam of golden light to level the South Sea Demon Region's true essence stone mine.

Although it was impossible to destroy the true essence stone mine like this, it was still enough to bother them. They wouldn't be able to mine anything for at least an entire month.

With all of this completed, Lin Ming controlled the Giant Leviathan and slowly flew away from the South Sea Demon Region.

……………………

The South Sea Demon Region had lost over a thousand martial artists in a single day. As for Xuan Yuqie and the many other Elders, they fled deep into the South Sea. The news of the South Sea Demon Region being pillaged soon spread throughout the entire South Horizon Region.

At first, people couldn't believe this incredible news. But later, the information became increasingly intense and known. The South Sea Demon Region didn't come out with any intention of clarifying this issue, and not just that, but they also had their outer encirclement troops retreat, making a few threats before retreating back deep into the South Sea.

Suddenly, all of the aggression and activities of the South Sea Demon Region within the South Horizon Region came to a complete halt.

The entire time, this was just too difficult to believe!

If in the past the South Sea Demon Region was known as being so extraordinarily powerful that no one was able to bring up a thought of resistance, then that South Sea Demon Region had now become a joke. Someone killed their way into their sect, breaking apart their great protective array, razing all their buildings to the ground, recklessly looting all of their resources and scorching everything else. The martial artists of the sect didn't even have pots to use. This was something that would normally occur only at the annihilation of a sect.

If the South Sea Demon Region didn’t have Xuan Wuji still supporting them from his closed-door seclusion, then their entire sect might have really been stamped out of existence!

It was simply unimaginable that all of this was done by a single youth!

Within Yin Yang Profound Palace, The Xing couple inevitably heard this news.

“Husband, what do you think?”

Within a magnificent temple, a woman in a white robe said as she closed an ancient book, placing it on a table.

She looked to be around 40 years old, but one couldn’t find any weariness of time on her face. Her features were beautiful and her body was mature and full, containing all sorts of subtle flavors.

This woman was one of the Twin Stars of the Yin Yang Profound Palace, Xing Can. She was the wife of Xing Ji. Together, the two of them held the position of the Yin Yang Profound Palace’s Palace Masters.

Within Yin Yang Profound Palace, many positions were held by couples. This was because of the unique features of their cultivation methods. Often, a couple would train and fight together. Only this way, by combining their powers, would they be able to display their mightiest combat strength. Thus, whether it was training, missions, or adventuring, both husband and wife would often go together.

Xing Ji said, “This youth must be a peak Emperor level talent from one of the four Divine Kingdoms. Perhaps he might even be a Divine Kingdom’s Crown Prince. I estimate that he is 30 years old. I heard his cultivation is at the Revolving Core realm, so I assume he must be mid or late Revolving Core. For him to have such a cultivation at this age, this is truly horrifying! This is a cultivation that only a peak Emperor level talent can have.”

“As for his combat strength, there is no need to speak of it further. He can kill a first stage Life Destruction powerhouse! Not defeat, but kill! For someone at the Revolving Core to jump ranks and fight a Life Destruction master is far more difficult than someone at the Xiantian realm fighting someone at the Revolving Core realm. This person is without a doubt from a Holy Land and he also must have top resources and supreme masters supporting him from behind. His talent in itself is amazing, and he might possibly be one of the most extraordinary geniuses that the entire Sky Spill Continent has seen in the last thousand years.”

“Husband, why do you think this sort of character would come to our South Horizon Region?”

After Xing Can obtained this news, this was her greatest doubt. The mainland of the Sky Spill Continent was shaped like a cake with its center dug out; it was in the shape of a ring. The center was an inland sea, and this sea was surrounded by four Divine Kingdoms.

Because most of the landmarks were focused in this central region, this area had a much higher concentration of spiritual mountains and forests.

The more spiritual lands there were, the thicker and purer the heaven and earth origin energy was, and the more heavenly materials and true essence stone mines there were. Most of the Holy Lands were also located in this area.

By all reasoning, a favored son of heaven of the Divine Kingdoms would not come to the South Horizon Region. This area was simply too remote. The only exception was the inexplicable appearance and rise of Silent Demon Emperor City three thousand years ago. Somehow, the Netherworld Great Emperor had appeared with strength equal to a Divine Kingdom Holy Land’s Holy Lord. This was the only time that the South Horizon Region ever entered into the vision of the four Divine Kingdoms. For the rest of the time, the South Horizon Region was nothing at all to the four Divine Kingdoms; it was the difference between a great city and a small mountain village.

This was also the reason that the South Sea Demon Region wanted to gradually make their way back towards the mainland – the resources at the sea were always somewhat barren.

“Is he here for adventure and experience? Or has he taken a liking to something from the South Sea Demon Region and wants to steal it?” Xing Can said after deeply thinking about it.

“How could he want to steal anything? I doubt there is anything within the entire South Horizon Region that would enter into the eyes of such a son of heaven. My guess is that there is some old hatred or revenge involved. 3000 years ago, the Netherworld Great Emperor needed the young girls with special physiques in order to further cultivate his devil arts. But after looking and looking, he finally ended up laying his eyes on the youngest daughter of one of the four Divine Kingdom’s Holy Lords. He actually planned on secretly kidnapping her; what a crazy idea that was. Finally, this matter was exposed and the Netherworld Great Emperor was killed by the combined forces of several Holy Lords.

“From then on, the South Sea Demon Region was not welcomed by the Divine Kingdoms. It was just that the other party had withdrawn to the South Sea and kept a low profile, and the rank of their sect wasn’t high either so the Divine Kingdoms simply didn’t bother to deal with them. Now that they wish to re-enter the Sky Spill Continent and invade the South Horizon Region once more, there must be some individuals in the Divine Kingdoms that aren’t too happy about this. Perhaps a Crown Prince from one of the Divine Kingdoms has chosen this period to go out and gain some experience. He could annihilate the South Sea Demon Region at the same time while he journeyed around. It appears that this mysterious youth truly is a young dragon! He is far too horrifying!”

“Mm, Husband, what you said is reasonable, it should be mostly true. What should we do now?”

“We don’t do anything. The affairs of the Divine Kingdoms are not something we can meddle with. It’s better for us to seize this opportunity to contact this Divine Kingdom Crown Prince. If we can be on good terms with him, then we will have infinite profit in the future.” Xing Ji said.

“Although you say that, for a low level fifth-grade sect like us to know such a character is far too difficult!” Xing Can shook her head. How could she not want to form a good relationship with a Divine Kingdom?

“Everything depends on your own effort, there is always a chance. If we don’t try, then we’ll never know what could have happened. Speaking of this, Divine Phoenix Island, Dire Space Sect, Supreme Mystery Temple, and the seven sects of the Five Element Region really ran into a stroke of good fortune. With a Divine Kingdom helping them, they might not even need to worry about the South Sea war anymore.

As Xing Ji mentioned Divine Phoenix Island, Xing Can’s eyes brightened. “Husband, that’s right, how has the research into extracting the Vermillion Birds’ blood essence and integrating it into our bodies been going?”

The reason that Yin Yang Profound Palace was willing to take in Divine Phoenix Island was in large part because of the two Vermillion Birds. They wanted to use the blood essence of these Vermillion Birds to enhance their own cultivation methods. If the Vermillion Birds worked out, then they would continue to test with the Blue Luan.

As Xing Can mentioned this, Xing Ji’s face darkened. “That old hag Mu Fengxian, she would rather die than reveal the secret skill to transplant the Vermillion Bird blood essence.”

Chapter 687 – Paying Respects to the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince

Chapter 687 – Paying Respects to the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince

…

…

…

It had to be known that once a martial artist lost their blood essence, it was extremely difficult to restore it. Thus, any secret skill related to the restoration or supplementation of blood essence was extremely precious.

As for Divine Phoenix Island's method of transplanting a Vermillion Bird's blood essence, that was obtained from the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, thus only high level figures from Divine Phoenix Island knew it.

In fact, the founding ancestor of Divine Phoenix Island was only a mortal; she had no relation with the Ancient Phoenix Clan. She accidently stumbled into the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, and there she obtained various cultivation methods and secret skills, and used these treasures to form Divine Phoenix Island.

So theoretically speaking, a martial artist from any other sect could have Vermillion Bird blood essence transplanted into them, and this would increase their talent in fire-attribute cultivation methods.

Thus, Yin Yang Profound Palace had always coveted this secret technique. When Divine Phoenix Island was in its glory days, Yin Yang Profound Palace wasn't willing to pay such a steep price and attack Divine Phoenix Island to obtain this secret technique, but now that Divine Phoenix Island was in trouble, they began to move towards this objective.

Yin Yang Profound Palace focused on water and fire cultivation methods, it was extremely similar to the ice and fire cultivation methods that Divine Phoenix Island practiced. In particular, the fire-attribute cultivation method was especially similar. Thus, they first planned to obtain the two Vermillion Birds first and take out a part of their blood essence to see whether or not they could use it to increase the fusion compatibility of their Yin Yang Profound Palace's cultivation methods.

This was the most fundamental reason that they were willing to bear the pressure of the South Sea Demon Region and take in Divine Phoenix Island.

Xing Can said, "Husband, we must hurry. If the South Sea Demon Region is subdued by this Divine Kingdom then we won't have any more bargaining chips in our hand. When that happens, Divine Phoenix Island might not be willing to submit to us."

"Humph, that might not be true! After this war, Divine Phoenix Island's strength has plummeted. Mu Fengxian has already injured her life source, and even though she is still at the first stage of Life Destruction, the truth is that her strength is now only comparable to the late Revolving Core. As for Mu Yuhuang, she just recently passed into the first stage of Life Destruction and her cultivation is unstable. With most of their Revolving Core Elders already fallen, Divine Phoenix Island can now only be compared to an upper middle fourth-grade sect. They aren't much better than the seven sects of the Five Element Region. They simply do not have the ability to compete with us. Now that they've come to my Yin Yang Profound Palace, they can forget any thoughts of leaving!"

As Xing Ji spoke he sneered, subconsciously gripping his palms together as if he wanted to completely control Divine Phoenix Island in his hand.

As Xing Can saw Xing Ji's confident appearance, she said, "Husband, with you presiding over the situation I can rest assured that Divine Phoenix Island's secret skills will be handled. As for establishing a good relationship with that Divine Kingdom Crown Prince, I shall handle that…”

As Xing Can spoke, the sound of footsteps suddenly rang out in the temple along with a clear voice, “Great Father, Great Mother, what are you talking about?”

The one speaking was a tall and heroic-looking youth. He was handsome and his eyebrows shot up like swords. He was Xing Ji and Xing Can’s most talented son… Xing Yang.

After Xing Yang was identified as having the potential to become an Emperor level powerhouse, the Xing couple had placed all of their high expectations on him. They were counting on him to help Yin Yang Profound Palace rise to a Holy Land in the future.

“Yang’er, you’ve come at just the right time. Have you heard about the pillaging of the South Sea Demon Region?”

“Your child has certainly heard about such a grand matter. To think that all of this came from the hands of a mysterious youth is truly unbelievable!”

“Mm, that’s right. Your father and I suspect that he is a Divine Kingdom’s Crown Prince. If you can be on good terms with him, that would be very advantageous for you and us. Yang’er, I plan on taking you to meet him. Your talent is truly extraordinary, but it may still be too difficult to compare with him, so just make sure that you don’t show any arrogance or foolishness in front of him. Your age should be close to his. As long as you can manage to become friends with him, your struggle to become a Peerless Emperor in 100 years will be much easier!”

As Xing Can spoke, Xing Yang’s eyes began to shine. Although he was an Emperor level talent, it wasn’t true that any Emperor level talent could become a Peerless Emperor. One needed to constantly push their potential to the limits, finding resources even in the face of absolute danger. When one could combine lucky chances, destiny, effort, and all other factors together, then it was possible to become a true Emperor powerhouse.

If he exhausted his potential or encountered an accident, he might fail.

But if he knew that Divine Kingdom Crown Prince, it would be different!

Over these years, Xing Yang had already been considered and raised as the future successor of his sect. As he diligently trained his cultivation, he was also well versed in human nature and befriending others.

He believed that as long as he had a chance, he would certainly be able to win the favor of that Divine Kingdom Crown Prince.

At that time, if he had the chance to go to a Divine Kingdom Holy Land and adventure for a bit, then the benefits could be imagined!

Thinking of this, an excited light shined in Xing Yan's eyes. He said, "What Great Mother says is true. In this world, there is always a higher mountain and a higher heaven. Your child has always understood this truth. I shall go with Great Mother, and if I have a chance to befriend that Crown Prince, then I certainly will not miss it."

"Mm, good, truly worthy of being my son!" Xing Ji laughed. This South Sea war was definitely a great opportunity for their Yin Yang Profound Palace. Not only would they soon be able to obtain the secret skills of Divine Phoenix Island, but they could even befriend a Divine Kingdom Crown Prince.

If they could succeed in both of these goals, Yin Yang Profound Palace would rise yet another step!

As Yin Yang Profound Palace was drawing up their grand plans, Divine Phoenix Island was also considering the future of their sect.

Mu Fengxian and Mu Yuhuang were both characters that had lived for several hundred years, so how could they not have seen through Yin Yang Profound Palace's tricks? It was just that before, under duress, they had no choice but to strike a bargain with Yin Yang Profound Palace and crawl into the snake's den, counting on the eventual day when Lin Ming would return.

There were still seven more years from the 10 years' time that Lin Ming had promised. But before that, there had already been a favorable chance in the South Sea war. Now Divine Phoenix Island had to consider their next step.

At this time, in a courtyard of Divine Phoenix Island's temporary residence, there was a long and wide table, where seven or eight key figures of Divine Phoenix Island were seated.

"Sect Master, Master Ancestor." A blue-clothed woman politely bowed as she sat down. She was Mu Bingyun, having just returned from the Five Element Region.

"Bingyun, about those rumors of the South Sea Demon Region, how exaggerated are they?"

The high level figures of Divine Phoenix Island were all hidden within Yin Yang Profound Palace, and it was hard for them to know what was happening in the outside world. A great deal of their information was sent to them by Mu Bingyun.

Before, when that mysterious youth had completely annihilated the South Sea Demon Region's Divine Phoenix Island Branch with just his own strength, that already seemed quite exaggerated.

Afterwards, Xuan Yuqie had led three other great Elders along with the Giant Leviathan to personally go out on a hunting mission. However, they had suffered a disastrous defeat. Not only had they lost the Giant Leviathan, but two Elders also died. Finally, the entire South Sea Demon Region was looted and pillaged by the mysterious youth.

This was truly incomprehensible.

This was the same as the mysterious youth sweeping out the entire South Sea Demon Region with just his strength alone, completely routing Xuan Yuqie and the other Life Destruction Elders there as if they were nothing more than dead dogs. With the massive number of martial artists that were slain throughout all of the South Sea Demon Region, they were fortunate that Xuan Wuji was still alive, otherwise the entire sect might have already collapsed because of this.

This was simply a fairytale-like legend – it was unimaginable. As for that mysterious youth, his identity became increasingly obscure even as his fame rose to unprecedented levels. It could be said that now, in the entire Five Element Region, South Horizon Region, Profound Province, or other lands nearby, there was no high ranking sect that didn't know of this youth. Perhaps even the Great Zen Region had learned of this too.

"Reporting to Sect Master, my words are not exaggerated at all."

"Mm..." Mu Yuhuang nodded. With the appearance of this mysterious youth, the landscape of the entire South Sea war had rapidly changed. This was also a favorable turning point in their Divine Phoenix Island's fate.

"Now we only do not know when Xuan Wuji will leave seclusion. Xuan Wuji is the South Sea Demon Region's very soul. Although the South Sea Demon Region has suffered great losses this time, they will never perish as long as Xuan Wuji is still living. The South Sea Demon Region still holds absolute dominance with him, and we still have no choice but to stay in Yin Yang Profound Palace and be pressed down by others."

As Yin Yang Profound Palace was mentioned, a trace of grief and pain flashed through Mu Qianyu's eyes. At the time, under the pressure for her sect to survive, Divine Phoenix Island had no option but to yield to certain conditions. Her Saint Beast, Little Flame, was now in the hands of Yin Yang Profound Palace. Now that they had taken Little Flame, it certainly wasn't to raise it but rather to steal its Vermillion Bird blood essence.

As Mu Qianyu thought of this, it felt as if a heated knife was twisting in her heart. Although Little Flame was a contract beast, to Mu Qianyu, Little Flame was no different from her sister. To sacrifice Little Flame to secure Divine Phoenix Island's continued future would always be one of Mu Qianyu's inner demons.

As Mu Yuhuang saw Mu Qianyu's expression, she sighed and said, "Yu'er, don't worry. Yin Yang Profound Palace's Palace Masters made an oath on their heart of martial arts that they wouldn't harm Little Flame's life. It... it's just... they are taking some of Little Flame's blood essence..."

As Mu Yuhuang spoke to here, she also felt sad. Her contract beast Fireshine was taken away too. Whether it was to a martial artist or Vermillion Bird, blood essence was extremely precious; it wasn't possible to lose too much. If one did lose too much, not only would one's cultivation drop but it would also shorten their life.

"Us seeking asylum in Yin Yang Profound Palace was pure wishful thinking to begin with; we always had to pay some price. We can only hope that this mysterious youth will cause the South Sea Demon Region to suffer great losses and give us some respite. We must persist until Lin Ming returns. But in the meantime, we'll have to patiently endure these coming years. We simply have no other choice."

"Mm, I understand." Mu Qianyu reluctantly smiled, motioning that she was feeling better.

Mu Yuhuang sighed and no longer said anything.

As the high level figures of Divine Phoenix Island were gathered together to discuss their sect's future, at the great temple of Yin Yang Profound palace, a high-grade earth-step spirit boat had quietly been launched. After passing through several transmission arrays, it shot straight towards the South Sea. The people on board this boat were the mother and son, Xing Can and Xing Yan.

They planned to go to towards Divine Phoenix Island to pay a visit to this 'Divine Kingdom Crown Prince'.

However, someone was already much closer. As Yin Yang Profound Palace set out, the scouting party of Storm Valley had already landed on Divine Phoenix Island and was planning to greet Lin Ming.

"Storm Valley's Free Wind Temple Protector requests an audience with the great expert!"

Seeing there was no response, the scout repeated himself. Although his voice was vigorous, his heart was beating like a wild drum. This other force was an existence able to kill off a first stage Life Destruction master and there was also no telling how great of a status he had. This scout was only a Protector of a small fourth-grade sect. In the eyes of people like this, he was no different from an ant. Was his abrupt arrival and greeting causing displeasure?

If this person had an eccentric personality, then they might ignore them or even play around with them.

After several breaths of time passed, a young man's voice suddenly echoed out from all directions.

“Storm Valley? Is it the Five Element Region's seven sects' Storm Valley?"

Chapter 688 – Towards the Yin Yang Profound Palace

Chapter 688 – Towards the Yin Yang Profound Palace

…

…

…

Mm?

The four scouts from Storm Valley were shocked. This mysterious youth actually knew of their Storm Valley?

This other character was likely some Divine Kingdom Crown Prince or a Holy Land's Holy Son. As for them, they were from a tiny fourth-grade sect that didn't even have a Life Destruction Elder. In front of a Holy Land, they were just a little ant.

In addition, the Five Element Region was far, far off from the central region of the Sky Spill Continent. By all reasoning, they would barely even know of them. But, they never imagined that this mysterious youth would speak of their Storm Valley.

Could it be that the Five Element Region's seven sects were somewhat famous?

Thinking of this, the four scouts' hearts filled with bravado. "Reporting to Great Expert, us four are indeed from the Five Element Region's Storm Valley."

There was silence for a moment, and then, "Enter!"

"Yes, Sir!"

The four scouts were overjoyed as they began to respectfully walk through the entrance.

As the four of them passed through rows of ruining buildings, they finally made it to a great temple. Upon entering this temple, they could feel a powerful energy emanating from within.

As they entered the temple, they could see a black-clothed youth appear in front of them, his arms crossed behind his back.

This black-clothed youth seemed like a straight and sharp spear. He emitted an extraordinary aura, and all of the heaven and earth origin energy within the temple seemed to be stirred up by him in a completely spontaneous manner. As for the black-robed youth, he simply didn't seem to notice or care.

This degree of cultivation was truly shocking.

The black-clothed youth turned around, his eyes sweeping across the Storm Valley symbols on the four scouts' clothes. Then, he slowly said, "Storm Valley... if I remember correctly, you have a chief disciple named Zhan Yunjian?"

Hearing Lin Ming mention Zhan Yunjian's name, the four scouts were surprised. It was already unbelievable to them that he knew of their Storm Valley, but he even knew of Zhan Yunjian. How was this possible?

"Great Expert knows my sect's Little Valley Master?"

"Just a brief meeting." Lin Ming casually said.

"Great Expert truly has an extraordinary memory." The four Protectors didn't recognize Lin Ming. They only assumed that Lin Ming had a near-photographic memory, able to recall any small fish and shrimp-like characters that he met. To them, it wasn't strange that a top talent would be able to do this.

However, when did the Little Valley Master ever have a chance to see this great expert?

As the four Protectors were thinking about this, Lin Ming said, “Do you four know where the survivors of Divine Phoenix Island have gone?”

“Divine Phoenix Island?”

The four Protectors were surprised. Why would this great expert care about Divine Phoenix Island’s survivors?

They didn’t dare to ask such a question. They bowed and said, “Reporting to Great Expert, this little servant does not know where Divine Phoenix Island has gone now. But, my sect’s Valley Master and Little Valley Master should know.”

Lin Ming didn’t have much hope in the beginning, but after hearing the four Protectors say this, a sharp light shined in his eyes.

“Ask for me!” These few words were said with a tone that brooked no doubt. It was simply impossible to defy this youth’s will.

The four Protectors didn’t ask why Lin Ming wanted this information. They respectfully said, “Yes Sir, this little servant will take at most one hour of time.”

Divine Phoenix Island was extremely far away from the Five Element Region. Information had to cross through the transmission arrays of several relay stations. A round trip for a message would take at least one hour.

After Zhan Yunjian received the news from this sound transmission of the four scouts, he was also shocked. He didn’t ask why this mysterious youth wanted this information either.

He naturally didn’t dare to be negligent towards this mysterious youth’s question. Not to mention what sort of mighty background this person might have, it was simply impossible for such a character to covet anything from Divine Phoenix Island. Even if he was harboring some evil intent, Zhan Yunjian would still honestly tell him of Divine Phoenix Island’s situation. What a joke. This person had nearly completely annihilated the South Sea Demon

Region, much less their tiny Storm Valley. Zhan Yunjian feared that even a little sneeze from the Giant Leviathan would leave their entire sect in ruins.

"Yin Yang Profound Palace?"

Lin Ming's eyebrows rose. He had just obtained information that Divine Phoenix Island had gone to Yin Yang Profound Palace.

Lin Ming had only heard about this sect in passing before. As for its peculiarities or even where it was, he didn't know any of this at all. He casually traced his spatial ring and tossed two treasures towards the four scouts.

"Lead me there."

The two treasures shined with a cold light. As the four scouts caught them in their hands, they found that they were a sword and a spear.

As soon as the four scouts discovered the rank of these two treasures, they were immediately left dumbfounded.

High-grade earth-step treasures!

Generally speaking, within the South Horizon Region, Five Element Region, and surrounding area, only a large sect's Sovereign or Life Destruction Elder would have the qualifications to wield a high-grade earth-step treasure. Even someone as illustrious as Nanyun Wang only used a peak high-grade earth-step treasure.

As for a heaven-step treasure, within the entire South Horizon Region only Xuan Wuji was known to have one.

For two high-grade earth-step treasures to be so casually awarded to them for just a little bit of information and to lead the way, this was something that would only happen in a dream.

It had to be known that these four scouts’ cultivations were at the extreme Xiantian. A single one of these treasures was several times their entire net worths combined.

“Yes… yes… this little servant will report to Storm Valley.” The four scouts stuttered. This youth was truly worthy of being a great figure from the four Divine Kingdoms. Just a casual reward was with high-grade earth-step treasures.

On the trip to Ying Yang Profound Palace from the South Sea, one had to pass through multiple transmission arrays. This was only possible if one applied for passes from the involved sects. This was also the reason that Lin Ming brought the four scouts as guides. He was impatient to return; he wanted to see Mu Qianyu even if it was a quarter of an hour earlier.

As for those two high-grade earth-step treasures that Lin Ming tossed out, he was already extraordinarily rich to begin with. And now that he had also looted the South Sea Demon Region, those two treasures were simply a drop in the ocean. Let alone high-grade earth-step treasures, even low-grade heaven-step treasures didn’t concern Lin Ming that much.

In response to Lin Ming’s request, Storm Valley immediately wrote an order so that he could use all transmission arrays as he pleased.

Lin Ming took out a spirit boat. As the four Storm Valley scouts began boarding the boat, they discovered Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin.

Before this, they had felt several powerful energies besides Lin Ming in the temple. Now, this was the first time that they had seen just who these energies belonged too.

Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin were all the favored of heaven, each being a high Emperor level talent. As the four scouts from Storm Valley saw them, they all sucked in a deep breath.

Without a doubt, these were all proud sons of heaven and arrogant daughters of Divine Kingdoms.

‘The four Divine Kingdoms truly live up to their reputation.’

The four scouts thought to themselves. All of these four outstanding youths were dragons and phoenixes; when had such a scene ever appeared in the South Horizon Region?

Duanmu Qun and Lan Xin smiled at the four scouts. Like this, the spirit boat embarked on its journey.

The speed of a peak high-grade earth-step spirit boat was close to a first stage Life Destruction powerhouse.

Behind them, Divine Phoenix Island rapidly shrank. Soon, all they saw was the vast and endless sea.

Looking at the passing scenery around him, Lin Ming’s heart filled with emotion.

After two and a half years, he was finally returning home.

....

As Lin Ming was leaving Divine Phoenix Island, above the ruins of the South Sea Demon Region, Xuan Yuqie and the remaining Elders were floating high above. As for the other martial artists, they were slowly trickling back in.

Xuan Yuqie was known as the woman with a thousand flavors, but now, all she showed was a gloomy anger, her face twisted to the point that it seemed she would leak water.

As she looked over the palaces that were destroyed, the great training arrays that had collapsed, her milk-white breasts heaved with anger and her entire body trembled.

When Lin Ming invaded them, he shattered their great protective array, recklessly killed off their disciples, and then even pillaged all of the buildings, looting everything he could and using the Giant Leviathan to raze the rest to the ground.

This included even the Netherworld medicine garden that the South Sea Demon Region had spent countless resources and over a thousand years of effort to establish. Because everyone had been panicking and in a hurry, they hadn't had the time to move all the precious medicines away. The result was that they had all been taken or destroyed by Lin Ming!

If she could endure this, what could she not endure?

"Lin Ming!" Xuan Yuqie clenched her teeth, her fists clenched until her knuckles turned white. "You have gone too far! I will remember this hatred! If I don't take revenge, then I shall never rest!"

Beside Xuan Yuqie, the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign was emitting a thick killing intent from his entire body. Because he was wearing a mask, no one could see his expression.

"Sovereign Xuan! All of this is thanks to you!" The Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign coldly humphed. His descendants had also perished in this catastrophe. If it wasn't for Xuan Yuqie losing the Giant Leviathan, how could this have happened?

Xuan Yuqie angrily glared at the masked Elder, her eyes nearly spitting fire. "Zhou Yantian, I have already said it. I will bear all responsibility for this. Once Elder Xuan leaves his seclusion, I will take the appropriate punishment! But now is not the time to fight!"

"Humph!" Zhou Yantian coldly snorted and said no more.

"Take a count of everyone!" Xuan Yuqie breathlessly said to a Life Destruction Elder.

"Everyone's already been counted for. The number of disciples that died in the Giant Leviathan's raid is about 1200 to 1300. In addition, 800 to 900 disciples ran away and still haven't returned..."

The Life Destruction Elder ruefully smiled. The South Sea Demon Region had simply been invaded too suddenly. Most of the disciples didn't even know what was happening. All they thought was that the South Sea Demon Region had managed to provoke some immeasurable power, and now that power came to exterminate them all, and they had managed to escape this calamity with a stroke of luck. If they returned to the South Sea Demon Region then they might have to suffer a similar fate once again. That time, their luck might not be so great. Since it was so, it was better to just leave.

In any case, for most of them, as long as they didn't try to further their cultivation, then with their strength they could live extravagantly for a lifetime.

Even the worst martial artists with a Houtian realm or Pulse Condensation period cultivation, if they went to a small mortal country they would still be able to receive a luxurious reception. After all, relative to mortals, they were considered top geniuses.

"I know!"

Xuan Yuqie took a deep breath. The result wasn't beyond her anticipation. Lin Ming was just too fateful! Because of that raid, the backbone of the South Sea Demon Region had weakened by 30 to 40%. Moreover, nearly all of their sect's resources were destroyed.

Reconstructing the buildings and mines wouldn't be too difficult. But, the medicine garden, training arrays, testing arrays, any of those would consume a massive amount of time and resources to rebuild.

She knew that in truth, Xuan Wuji had been paying attention to the situation in the South Sea Demon Region the entire time. She had no idea if he had been affected in his seclusion. If he really was affected even just a little bit, the losses would be difficult to measure.

Chapter 689 – Meeting Once Again

Chapter 689 – Meeting Once Again

…

…

…

Deep within the South Sea, 70 thousand feet underwater in an underground trench, the water pressure reached a terrifying level. Even a Revolving Core master would find it difficult to protect themselves with their true essence this far down. If their bodily true essence were to be broken then their mortal body would suddenly be exposed to the entirety of this horrible pressure. Their eardrums would shatter, their organs would rupture, their heart would stop beating, and finally they would die a miserable death.

In the deepest parts of this trench, there was an artificial space opened up by an array formation. A thick shield of energy isolated all of the seawater outside. A dim light emanated from here, seeming particularly bright in the deep darkness.

Within this space, a man was sitting naked on a bed made of polar jade, in deep meditation.

His left and right arms had been turned into ground meat and even his bones were shattered into a fine powder. But, what was strange was that there wasn't any blood leaking out.

If one looked carefully, one could see that this ground meat was actually constantly growing. From its mashed face, it slowly reorganized itself…

This was Xuan Wuji, who was currently crossing the fourth stage of Life Destruction.

He had now been in closed-door seclusion for over four months. His legs and waist were already completed, and now he was in the process of reforming his arms. As for the riskiest part of breaking his core, he still hadn't yet started that.

Although Xuan Wuji was in closed-door seclusion, he was still well aware of every matter occurring in the South Sea Demon Region!

At the time when Lin Ming had ridden the Giant Leviathan and shattered apart the South Sea Demon Region's great protective array, recklessly killed the Demon Region disciples and even pillaging and razing all of the South Sea Demon Region's resources, all of this had fallen into Xuan Wuji's eyes.

Even though Xuan Wuji was deep in meditation, he was still angry to the point of nearly vomiting blood!

The anger had nearly led to a mental breakdown, causing the fires of anger to reverse the energy in his body and have him fail in breaking through the fourth stage of Life Destruction. At the time, he was fortunate that he was in the relatively simple process of reforming his arms. Xuan Wuji had crossed through Life Destruction three times before and thus he was very familiar with restructuring his flesh. Only by suppressing this sudden anger had he been able to safely continue through Life Destruction. If Lin Ming had crashed into the South Sea Demon Region during the more dangerous reconstruction of his core, then he might have fallen into depravity because of this.

Xuan Wuji certainly wouldn't let the situation in the South Sea Demon Region affect his fourth stage of Life Destruction. After that event, he simply shut off all his perception, completely focusing on passing through this process. Now, his two arms were already 30% complete. In 10 more days he would finish, and then he would begin the most difficult process of remolding his core.

"Lin Ming, I will tear you to pieces, suck out your marrow, and refine your soul!"

....

Over one million miles away, Yin Yang Profound Palace –

A spirit boat slowly descended. Atop this spirit boat was the mother and child, Xing Can and Xing Yang. They had originally wanted to go and meet the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince, but soon after they embarked they had received the news that this Divine Kingdom Crown Prince had already left Divine Phoenix Island.

And looking at their direction they had flown towards the Five Element Region. Divine Phoenix Island and the Profound Province were separated with the Five Element Region in between them. In order to reach the Profound Province, one first had to cross through the Five Element Region.

After having the initiative taken by someone else, Xing Can and her son were both feeling depressed.

Xing Yang Said, “Great Mother, if the Five Element Region’s Storm Valley first contacted the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince, what sort of flowery sweet words did they use? Why would the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince leave Divine Phoenix Island now? Is he planning on going to Storm Valley?”

“Humph, such a small sect like Storm Valley is even inferior to Divine Phoenix Island; how could they possibly have anything that can attract his attention? The Divine Kingdom Crown Prince must have come to the South Horizon Region to accomplish some special goal. If we can learn what this goal is and help him complete it, then perhaps we might be able to win his favor.”

In Xing Can’s opinion, there was naturally no need to question the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince’s strength. But, if there was some information he needed or if he was looking for something in particular, then it was best to ask a sect that had been established for thousands of years in the south of Sky Spill Continent.

If they could be this sect, then that would be perfect.

“We’ll put that matter of the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince on hold for now. First, we must tighten our grip on Divine Phoenix Island.”

As Divine Phoenix Island was brought up, Xing Yang’s eyes flashed with an avaricious light. He had long desired Divine Phoenix Island’s secret technique of transplanting Vermillion Bird blood essence.

In addition, there was also Mu Qianyu’s pure Vermillion Bird bloodline in her body. Rumors said that if a man took the crown of her virginity, then they would be able to inherit a part of her Primordial Yin Energy, transforming it and obtaining an extremely pure Vermillion Bird bloodline.

Xing Yang naturally cultivated in fire. If the Vermillion Bird bloodline could increase his talent then how could he not be tempted?

In addition, Xing Yang always had thoughts to move onto Mu Bingyun. Mu Bingyun had the Blue Luan bloodline with her. This was useless to Xing Yang, but Yin Yang Profound Palace’s secret skills focused on Yin and Yang complementing each other. If Mu Bingyun was willing to double cultivate with him, then he wouldn’t mind marrying Mu Bingyun and taking her as his wife.

First he would have relations with Mu Qianyu, and after taking her Vermillion Bird bloodline he would then double cultivate ice and fire with Mu Bingyun, using her Yin physique to have his Yin Yang Profound Law reach large success. This would be the best outcome possible.

However, as he thought about it, Mu Yuhuang would never allow either of these two situations to occur. The Mu sisters would be the future leaders of Divine Phoenix Island. How could they possibly be married into Yin Yang Profound Palace and become their little princesses?

Originally, Divine Phoenix Island and Yin Yang Profound Palace had signed a 100 year agreement. Xing Yang had been willing to allow the situation develop at a slow simmer, having his plans come to fruition a bit at a time. But now, because of the appearance of the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince, the war in the South Sea had changed far too much. Once the South Sea Demon Region was defeated, they would no longer have any chips to threaten Divine Phoenix Island with. This made him feel a sense of impending crisis.

There was such a beautiful dish in front of him, and yet he could only see it and not eat it. How could Xing Yang be willing to accept this?

…………….

At night, the fall wind was chilling and desolate. All around the Yin Yang Profound Mountains, lights glittered. And south of the Yin Yang Profound Mountains was a low mountain range called the Little Swallow Mountains.

This was the spiritual land that Yin Yang Profound Island had rented to Divine Phoenix Island.

A sect didn't necessarily need palaces, practice arrays, and in a short time, even the support of a true essence stone mine or medicine garden.

But no matter what, there was one thing that they couldn't be without.

That was… a spiritual land.

This so-called spiritual land was an area where heaven and earth origin energy gathered. There were many Houtian martial artists that would rather indenture themselves into a large sect than to go to a mortal country as a general or ruler. This was all because of a spiritual land!

Without a spiritual land it was immensely difficult to practice. This was why nearly all high level martial artists were gathered in great sects or martial families, and why it was difficult to find a single Xiantian martial artist in a mortal country.

A spiritual land had certain features within it that were able to naturally gather heaven and earth origin energy. At the Seven Profound Valleys, the heaven and earth origin energy was several times greater than at Sky Fortune Kingdom. And even then, the heaven and earth origin energy within Divine Phoenix Island was several times higher than the at Seven Profound Valleys.

Thus, the higher grade a sect was, the higher grade spiritual land they would live on.

Within the entire Sky Spill Continent, not to mention the high level spiritual lands, but even the low level ones had nearly all been taken by others. Divine Phoenix Island was willing to seek refuge with Yin Yang Profound Palace not only to seek refuge with them but also to have a spiritual land for their disciples to practice in.

Without a spiritual land, a sect would lose the fundamental basis of its existence and it would be impossible to attract other martial artists.

Although this temporary residence's heaven and earth origin energy was far inferior to Divine Phoenix Island's, it was still comparable to the worst of fourth-grade sects.

And, what was most unusual was that because Yin Yang Profound Palace cultivated Yin and Yang, the origin energy here was also rich in fire and water; this fit very well with Divine Phoenix Island's cultivation methods.

It was already midnight and the dark night sky was like a thick black velvet curtain that extended across the world. Little stars decorated the vault of heaven like sparkling gems. In the dim mountains and the gently blowing breeze, one could occasionally hear the rustling sound of the tides and the pleasant sound of insects chirping at night.

The gentle moonlight illuminated a cliff in the back mountains of Little Swallow Mountains. Because it was cold here, the ground was dusted with a layer of silver frost. A red-dressed woman was sitting on a rock, meditating. From the back, one could see her long black hair fall down like a waterfall as it scattered on her clothing. Looking from afar, one could sense a stunning yet sorrowful beauty.

This woman was Mu Qianyu.

Although she was meditating, the heaven and earth origin energy around her was in chaos, not even forming a vortex of energy This sort of practice condition was a mistake that normally new and amateur martial artists would commit. Mu Qianyu had already stepped into Revolving Core. By all reasoning, this should have never happened.

Mu Qianyu shook her head and lightly sighed. She stopped her meditation and helplessly mumbled, “My mind is a mess and my true essence is in disorder.”

These days, she was always worried about Little Flame. The guilt she felt caused a knot in her heart that she couldn’t undo. Her dark and mournful thoughts thus caused damage to her heart of martial arts, making it so that her true essence circulation had trouble flowing smoothly. This was a condition completely unsuited to cultivating.

“Sect Master placed all her hopes on Lin Ming. There is still seven and a half years until the 10 year meeting… Lin Ming… where are you and how are you doing?”

What the world would be like in that 10 years’ meeting’s time, Mu Qianyu found this impossible to imagine. At that promised meeting, would Lin Ming be able to safely return? Would he be able to shoulder the burden of reviving the sect? None of this could be predicted.

In order to revive the sect, he must have strength equal to a Life Destruction master. At that time, Lin Ming would be 27 or 28 years old. To have the strength of a Life Destruction master at that stage, that would mean that his talent surpassed even those peak Divine Kingdom geniuses.

Mu Qianyu always felt that it was unfair for Divine Phoenix Island to place all of their hopes, dreams, and burdens all on Lin Ming’s shoulders. Many of her fellow disciples hoped that Lin Ming would return and make them proud once more. But, what if Lin Ming couldn’t achieve this? What sort of tremendous pressure would he have to withstand then?

Mu Qianyu shook her head and no longer thought of these things. She returned to her meditation. She had to become more powerful. All she could do was reach a cultivation high enough that she was able to contend with a Life Destruction master. Then she would be able to help Lin Ming shoulder the weight of his burdens.

Power… Mu Qianyu bit her lips. Everything that had occurred made her intensely wish that she had more power!

If she had absolute power, she never would have needed to watch helplessly on as Lin Ming was forced to flee. She would never have had to watch Divine Phoenix Island be destroyed. She would never have had to watch Little Flame be taken away by Yin Yang Profound Palace.

If she was strong, then why would she have to live under the cold indifferent eyes of other and why would she have to suffer the insult of having her Divine Phoenix Island's secret techniques be desired by others?

As the night wind whistled and Mu Qianyu had returned to meditation, a fire suddenly sparked in front of her. This was a sound transmitting talisman.

After hearing the message, Mu Qianyu was suddenly shocked. She turned to stone on the spot!

How… was this…

She blankly looked towards the back mountains, her fingers stiff as her breath caught in her chest. It was like she had forgotten how to breathe. After several breaths of time, she heard the sound of rustling clothes as a black-clothed figure appeared in front of her, gradually coming closer.

Mu Qianyu subconsciously covered her mouth. Although her mentality had always been strong and stable, at this time, she was unable to stop her vision from blurring as tears began to form in her eyes.

That sound transmitting talisman just now was sent by Mu Yuhuang. It was a short message.

“Lin Ming has returned. He is going towards the back mountains to look for you.”

Chapter 690 – Kiss

Chapter 690 – Kiss

…

…

…

Ever since Lin Ming left and Divine Phoenix Island had encountered disaster after disaster, Mu Qianyu had imagined countless times in her mind just what her reunion with Lin Ming would be like.

In her most ideal dreams, it was nothing more than Lin Ming returning back stronger. He would return to her, help her hold up the skies, shelter her from wind and rain, and do his best to turn the tide.

However, this was nothing but her wishes.

When Lin Ming left, he had only been at the Xiantian realm. As for Xuan Wuji, he would soon reach the fourth stage of Life Destruction. If just a short 10 years, even if Lin Ming's talent far surpassed everyone else within the Sky Spill Continent, a genius that had never been seen since ancient times, it would still be impossible to reach such a formidable degree.

10 years was simply too short a time for the growth of a top master. Moreover, there was the possibility that Lin Ming's potential would be exhausted. After all, there were many variables in the growth of a genius. Just because they were rising stars in their youth didn't mean they would absolutely become top masters in the future.

What Mu Qianyu cared about was not what degree of strength Lin Ming could obtain, but whether or not he would be able to return safe and sound. With Lin Ming's personality, she knew that he wasn't someone that would resign himself to mediocrity.

On this journey that he traveled alone, he would undoubtedly enter into all sorts of mystic realms and danger zones. The risks and perils he would encounter could be imagined.

Mu Qianyu feared that if Lin Ming left, she would never hear from him again.

In that case, she would really perish from her suffocating sadness.

She was looking forward to meeting after this 10 year promise, but at the same time she was also scared. She was scared that 10 years from now, she would go to Thundercrash Mountain to wait for something that was only a dream!

She never imagined that in just a short two and a half years of time, Lin Ming would actually appear in front of her, well and safe. Compared to when he left, his appearance hadn't changed much. It was just that the temperament and aura revealed between his brows was different from before. He had lived through many great changes, and the air around him seemed much sharper and fiercer than before.

Although his temperament was different, he still gave off an incomparably familiar feeling that absolutely proved it was him beyond a shadow of any doubt.

Mu Qianyu's soul trembled.

This time, she no longer cared about what he had experienced or how strong he had become. A single thought echoed out again and again in her mind…

He returned! He had safely returned!

Mu Qianyu covered her mouth. She didn't know why, but at the moment she saw Lin Ming, all the grievances and pained she had suffered for this past two and a half years, all of that pressure she had to bear, all of it seemed to be washed away from her heart.

As she saw Lin Ming, her heart and mind filled with an overwhelming joy, so great that she couldn't help but burst into tears.

Was this a dream?

Lin Ming stopped a few dozen feet in front of Mu Qianyu, neither of them speaking.

When Lin Ming first saw Mu Qianyu, it was like their souls connected, blending together, allowing him to experience everything she was feeling.

He could feel her helplessness and her fragileness. He could feel that the walls she had set up to support herself had come tumbling down, all of her emotions pouring out from her.

Lin Ming felt fortunate. He was glad that he had come back early. Otherwise, if seven and a half years of time passed again, he couldn't imagine just what would have happened.

He subconsciously opened his arms, wanting to hold her. But, he actually stopped halfway, stiffening a bit.

His love towards Mu Qianyu was intermingled with respect, a sense that came from Mu Qianyu's otherworldly temperament that seemed to defy being defiled or blasphemed by anyone.

This was also the reason that Lin Ming referred to Mu Qianyu as Miss Mu and Senior-apprentice Sister.

However, Lin Ming hadn't thought that just as he opened his arms, he would see a flash of red in front of him, and suddenly a warm and fragrant body came rushing into his embrace.

Smooth arms were like snakes that wrapped around Lin Ming's back and neck. Mu Qianyu seemed to exhaust all of her strength as she hugged Lin Ming without reservation, as if she wanted to meld her body into his.

Lin Ming could even feel a slight ache from his back from the force of those two arms.

"Hold me..."

Mu Qianyu whispered into Lin Ming's ear, as if she was afraid he would disappear once she let go.

Lin Ming hugged Mu Qianyu. As he ran his hands down her back, he could feel her smooth and tender body through the silk fabric of her clothes. As they held onto each other with no space between them, he could feel the touch of a beautiful woman's breasts against his own chest.

The light fragrance of a woman filled his senses. He could hear Mu Qianyu's heartbeat and feel her breath.

This sort of wonderful feeling held an incomparably charming and tender warmth. Ever since those three sweet days at Thundercrash Mountain, Lin Ming hadn't had such intimate contact with Mu Qianyu.

In this moment, in the entire world it was as if only the two of them existed. In the silence of the mountains, as the stars brightly shimmered in the night sky, their two lonely hearts seemed to support each other.

Mu Qianyu quietly fell into Lin Ming's arms. From when she was born until now, she had never felt as fragile or happy as she did today. She wanted to hug Lin Ming and place everything she had with him.

In this brief instant, all she felt was him. Any sort of rain or wind or disaster, nothing mattered anymore.

The two of them hugged for an entire quarter of an hour. When Mu Qianyu's tears finally stopped flowing, she said in a quiet voice, "I've missed you…"

These simple words, without an embellishment, actually contained all of her true feelings for these last two and a half years.

"I know." Lin Ming gently said. As he looked down, he could see Mu Qianyu looking up at him. A crystal clear tear still shined at the corner of her eyes, sparkling like radiant silver underneath the moonlight, like bright pearls blooming in the deep sea.

In this cold moonlight, with this beautiful woman looking at him, everything seemed hazy as if it were a perfect dream.

Lin Ming felt his heart throb.

He cradled Mu Qianyu's face in his hands, he paused for several breaths of time.

Then, he kissed her.

Mu Qianyu's body trembled. The world faded away. Her arms instantly tightened around his body and her entire body seemed to soften into his. She closed her eyes as her long lashes gently trembled, lost in this deep abyss of this kiss.

This was Lin Ming's first kiss, and it was also Mu Qianyu's first kiss.

He greedily nibbled on her cherry-red lips, sucking on the tip of her wet tongue until Mu Qianyu's entire being shivered. Only then did the two of them reluctantly break away from each other.

"Everything will be fine now." Lin Ming whispered in Mu Qianyu's ear. These words were not empty words of comfort. This was a vow. A vow he made from the confidence in his own strength.

As long as he was here, everything would be fine!

However, Mu Qianyu could no longer tell the difference between these words now. She gave a soft cry of pleasure as her face flushed red with blood. Her cheeks seemed like a ripe peach right now, wet enough that they would drip water with just a little pinch.

She softly poured herself into Lin Ming's chest, allowing her entire body to weigh down on Lin Ming's shoulder. Her breath caught in her chest and she exhaled. Ever since Mu Qianyu was young, she had rarely come into contact with men at Divine Phoenix Island. Thus, she was unfamiliar with the relations between men and women. Within Thundercrash Mountain, although it was an ambiguous time, that was only a chance meeting that Mu Qianyu had with Lin Ming; it was impossible for her heart to be affected. That sort of ambiguous encounter had allowed left her shy and embarrassed, charmed by Lin Ming. It wasn't like now, where her heart throbbed and she was unable to stop her actions.

"Senior-apprentice Sister, how are Xingxuan and my parents?" Lin Ming suddenly asked. Besides Mu Qianyu, his greatest worries were Qin Xingxuan and his parents.

Mu Qianyu said, "When Divine Phoenix Island was destroyed, the sect was in a very precarious situation. Honorable Sect Master asked the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island whether or not they were willing to go to Ying Yang Profound Palace. Many of the lower level disciples left because of this... and as for Xingxuan... she originally wanted to come with us, but I was worried that she might have an accident if she stayed with us. I arranged for her to secretly go to a mortal country in the Five Element Region where your parents are also staying.

For a martial artist's cultivation, they needed spiritual lands, resources, practice arrays, and so forth. Normally, a martial artist wouldn't go to a mortal country. But, Mu Qianyu believed that what Qin Xingxuan needed the most was not cultivation, but to go on living in peace and safety. If Qin Xingxuan went to a mortal country, then with her Houtian realm strength, that was enough to guarantee her and Lin Ming's parents' safety. As for the South Sea Demon Region, it was impossible for them to chase down a single unknown Houtian realm martial artist over a million miles away.

"I see..." Hearing that Qin Xingxuan and his parents were safe, Lin Ming let out a sigh of relief. As long as they were safe and alive then it was great. As for everything else that was lost, it could be taken back.

At this time, Mu Qianyu finally discovered Lin Ming's cultivation. Her eyes widened as she said with disbelief, "Lin Ming... you... you've broken through to Revolving Core?"

"Yes. Just several days ago I made a lucky breakthrough."

"This..."

Mu Qianyu covered her mouth, shocked speechless. Two and a half years ago, Lin Ming was at the early Xiantian realm. After leaving for such a short time, he actually managed to break through to Revolving Core!

And looking at Lin Ming's dantian, the energy was collected, the origin energy was dense, and a faint vortex could be vaguely seen. This was not an ordinary Revolving Core!

Although Mu Qianyu was also at the Revolving Core realm, this was far too different compared to Lin Ming!

"How could… this be so fast…"

With Mu Qianyu's talent, she broke through to the Xiantian realm when she was 22 years old and then to Revolving Core when she was 30. This had taken a full eight years. But, Lin Ming had only used two and a half years, and he wasn't even 21 years old yet!

When Mu Qianyu was Lin Ming's age, she was only at the peak Houtian realm!

This was simply the difference between the heavens and earth.

This was no longer something that could be described as just an Emperor level talent.

"Lin Ming… how strong are you now?" Mu Qianyu asked with wide eyes. When Lin Ming had left, he was at the early Xiantian realm and Mu Qianyu was at the extreme Xiantian realm. The difference between their strength hadn't been too great.

Now Lin Ming had jumped an entire boundary. By all reasoning he should have strength at least equal to a late Revolving Core master. Or perhaps he could even compare with the weakest of Life Destruction powerhouses.

Lin Ming naturally didn't need to hide anything from Mu Qianyu. "I'm not too sure what the limits of my strength are. It's only a rough estimate, but I can kill a first stage Life Destruction master. As for Xuan Yuqie and other second stage Life Destruction powerhouses, I'm probably not their match yet."

“You can kill a first stage Life Destruction powerhouse?” Mu Qianyu’s heart jumped. Lin Ming’s strength was far more terrifying than what she had imagined.

In truth, Life Destruction was equal to the extreme Revolving Core. It was a very special stage within the Revolving Core realm. For Life Destruction martial artists, their true essence was also located in their dantian’s Revolving Core. It was only because they experienced a remolding and transformation of their bodies and dantian that a Life Destruction martial artist’s strength far surpassed that of a Revolving Core martial artist.

If Lin Ming could kill a first stage Life Destruction martial artist, what would happen once he reached Life Destruction?

As Mu Qianyu thought of this, she was suddenly startled. She seemed to think of something. If Lin Ming could kill a first stage Life Destruction martial artist…

She looked towards Lin Ming, an expression of disbelief on her face as she asked, “Lin Ming… 10 days ago, the one who pillaged and razed the South Sea Demon Region… that couldn’t have been you right…”

Chapter 691 – A Night Of Tender Warmth

Chapter 691 – A Night Of Tender Warmth

…

…

…

In the rumors that Mu Qianyu had heard, the so-called Divine Kingdom Crown Prince had the strength to kill a first stage Life Destruction martial artist.

By himself, he stirred up the South Sea Demon Region, upheaving their world. He killed over a thousand disciples of the South Sea Demon Region and forced Xuan Yuqie into a miserable state where she couldn't even fight back.

And now she asked Lin Ming because their two strengths seemed similar. Such a coincidence would certainly have Mu Qianyu associate them.

Hearing Mu Qianyu's question, Lin Ming was a bit surprised. He never tried to deliberately hide his identity; he assumed that the people of Divine Phoenix Island would have already known about him. But now it seemed that the South Sea Demon Region had set up a blockade of all news, afraid that Great Zen Temple, Black Flood Dragon, or some other fifth-grade sect would try and partake in the share of Lin Ming.

Thinking about this, Lin Ming only sneered. The South Sea Demon Region had thought he was a lamb to be butchered, but they never imagined they would already be ruined before they could taste the meat.

Lin Ming said to Mu Qianyu, "Senior-apprentice Sister, I returned to the South Horizon Region one month ago yet I couldn't find you. I learned that Divine Phoenix Island had been destroyed, and in sadness, I went to Divine Phoenix Island to search for clues. There, I discovered that the South Sea Demon Region had set up a branch. At the time, I didn't know where you went, so I killed the branch Elder there to search his soul. The result was that I didn't even obtain any news of you and instead brought Xuan Yuqie and the Giant Leviathan to come knocking on my door. As for the matters after that, I'm sure that you're well aware."

Lin Ming's words seemed understated, but Mu Qianyu was already completely bewildered.

The death god of Divine Phoenix Island that had killed three Life Destruction Elders, stolen away the Giant Leviathan and even killed his way into the South Sea Demon Region…

All of these unbelievable events had come from Lin Ming's hands!?

Venturing a guess was one matter, but hearing Lin Ming confirm her suspicions was a completely different matter.

"Lin Ming… you…"

Mu Qianyu didn't know what to say.

Before this, Mu Yuhuang and everyone else was hoping that Lin Ming would be able to return in ten years and hold up the heavens for their Divine Phoenix Island. To Mu Qianyu, this already seemed like a very exaggerated possibility. After all, 10 years from now, Lin Ming would be around 27 or 28 years old; it would still be difficult for someone so young to face a fifth-grade sect by himself.

But, she never imagined that in just a short two and a half years, Lin Ming would not only return, but completely flip over the entire South Sea Demon Region!

Just what had Lin Ming experienced in these two and a half years? His talent was far more terrifying than when he left through the transmission array!

At that time, if a Divine Kingdom Crown Prince or some other favored son of heaven could compare with Lin Ming, then to the current Lin Ming, such a Crown Prince or Holy Son wouldn't even be able to touch the hem of his pants!

It had to be known that the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince was reported to by nearly 30 years old. For a 30 year old youth to be able to change the entire South Sea war with just his own strength was already extremely shocking.

And Lin Ming was only 20 years old!

That was an entire 10 years young! This was a difference of 10 years in talent and this was even when compared to a Divine Kingdom Crown Prince!

Mu Qianyu didn't know what to say to Lin Ming. After being stunned for a long time she mumbled, "Lin Ming, what have you been through these past two and a half years?"

Thinking of his experience through these past two and a half years, Lin Ming was also filled with emotion. For this entire time, nearly every day was filled with thoughts of death and battle.

"It's a long story. Let's go somewhere else and I'll slowly tell you." Lin Ming didn't plan on hiding anything from Mu Qianyu. He wanted to tell Mu Qianyu about everything he had experienced in the Holy Demon Continent.

No matter how tough and stable Lin Ming's will was, if he fought on the edge of danger for too long, he would still accumulate too much tension in his nerves and mind. What he wanted was some time to relax, and to be able to confide in someone who understood him that he had absolute trust in.

"Mm, let's go to my cabin. It's just underneath the mountain cliffs." As Mu Qianyu spoke to here, her beautiful face flashed with a red blush like the glow of a setting sun.

Little Swallow Mountain didn't have any buildings on it to begin with. The cabins were temporary residences set up for the Divine Phoenix Island disciples. Besides the courtyard for meetings and other official business, there were no other large scale constructions. Mu Qianyu didn't want to bring Lin Ming to the meeting hall. Thus, the best place was naturally her own cabin.

To invite Lin Ming to her own bedroom in the dead of night was truly a bit… suspect. But, thinking about the relationship between them, this wasn't anything strange. A martial artist who always acted according to their own heart and objectives simply didn't care about the gossip from others.

Thinking like this, Mu Qianyu also calmed down, becoming much more confident in herself. Without waiting for Lin Ming's reply she immediately jumped down the cliff.

The wind blowing down the mountain caused Mu Qianyu's silk clothes to flap in the wind. Lin Ming was startled for a moment before he followed her, a strange sense of happiness surging in his heart.

If Mu Qianyu hadn't felt that he belonged to her, she would never have made such an invitation.

The cliff was only a few hundred feet high; they arrived at the bottom of the cliff in an instant.

In the night of Little Swallow Mountain, the skies were black like ink and the stars dazzled against the vast vault of heaven. At the bottom of the cliff, the mountain winds washed over the grassy land like undulating waves. The sounds of insects were everywhere and the air was clear and fresh.

Walking on such a mountain, one's mood would be especially tranquil.

Stepping through the soft grass, Mu Qianyu and Lin Ming soon came to a group of cabins. This area was one of the places with the richest heaven and earth origin energy on the entirety of Little Swallow Mountain. Not only was Mu Qianyu's cabin here, but also Mu Bingyun, Mu Yuhuang, and Mu Fengxian's.

A martial artist’s perception was very sensitive. As Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu walked near with no intention of hiding themselves, everyone naturally sensed the two. However, they all had a mature and tacit understanding of the situation and thus no one came out to greet them.

Quietly looking at this group of cabins, Mu Qianyu suddenly felt extremely embarrassed. Originally she didn’t think this was a big deal, but now that she was in this situation, Mu Qianyu began to have a guilty conscience as if she were doing something naughty.

“Mm… there isn’t an extra cabin, so you’ll have to stay here with me tonight.” Mu Qianyu awkwardly said as she opened the cabin door.

Naturally, Lin Ming would never say something ridiculous at this moment like that Duanmu Qun and the others were staying in the spirit boat, and there was actually plenty of room there. Wouldn’t that just be spoiling the fun too much?

After he calmed his mood, he stepped foot in Mu Qianyu’s room.

The layout of Mu Qianyu’s cabin was very simple. The wood furniture was newly carved and it hadn’t even been baked through with fire. It retained a great deal of its moisture, filling the entire cabin with a light scent of bark.

The cabin was comprised of one bedroom and one living room. There was a simple bookshelf in the living room, and on this bookshelf were several types of jade slips and dozens of ancient-looking books.

In her bedroom was a large wooden bed. On the bedside was a small set of drawers, and on this set of drawers was a small jade bottle with a Vermillion Bird Flower blooming within.

In truth, all of a martial artist’s belongings could be placed into their spatial rings. Anything that was placed out in this room was there for decoration.

"Is… is it too simple?" Mu Qianyu hesitantly asked. This was the first time that a man had ever entered her room. Even when they both stayed at Divine Phoenix Island, Lin Ming had never entered her room before.

This nervous feeling was a bit strange.

"It's great." Lin Ming lightly said, feeling the awkward atmosphere.

"Tell me about what you've been through these past two and a half years. I want to hear it." Mu Qianyu pulled Lin Ming's hand and they sat on her bed together. She lifted her chin, her bright eyes staring at Lin Ming just like a young girl that was eager to listen to bedtime stories.

"Okay."

Thus, Lin Ming began his story from when he left the Demon God Imperial Palace. He recounted from the point he took the transmission array to the Holy Demon Continent. He recounted to her everything he knew about the races, customs, and influences of the Holy Demon Continent. He spoke of when he was severely wounded in the Bewitching Cloud Prairie and forced into slavery because he lost his strength. Then, he traveled to the Blood Slaughter Steppes and climbed up Polar Skysplit Tower. From there, he fought Xing Tian in a fatal battle on the second floor, stepping onto the third floor and then entering the King's Cage where he faced the plotting of High Lord Heian.

Afterwards, he continuously defeated three great masters of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, and then killed High Lord Heian with his own hands. With his fame having sharply risen, through so many twists and turns, he then had to suffer the Polaris Tower Master planting a slave seal within him.

By tricking the Polaris Tower Master, he had managed to enter the Road of Emperor and comprehend his own battle spirit. Finally, he ventured into the Eternal Demon Abyss, capturing the demon bone and then being forced to stray into the 1000 mile forbidden zone. There, he picked up a profound gold divine fruit, discovered the corpse of a 100,000 year old goddess, and then, having broken through to Revolving Core, he then killed the Polaris Tower Master…

Besides matters related to Demonshine and the Magic Cube, Lin Ming didn't conceal anything else. He truthfully told her everything.

Although Mu Qianyu knew that Lin Ming would experience many trials and tribulations through these two and a half years, she never imagined that he would wade through so many life and death dangers. Even with Lin Ming sitting safe and sound right beside her, as Mu Qianyu listened to him explain all of the perilous situations and dead ends he had run into, she felt her heart tightly clench in her chest. But as she listened to how he saved the day, turning danger into safety and reversing the situation, she also felt happy for him, a joy that came from the depths of her heart.

After Lin Ming finished speaking, because Mu Qianyu's emotions had risen up and down several times, her face was blushing red. She gradually fell into Lin Ming's arms.

The two of them supported each other as they kissed. Each of them felt the warm temperature of the other, gently stroke and caressing each other's skin.

Whether it was Lin Ming who had experienced constant death and fighting for the last two and a half years, being worried most of the time, or whether it was Mu Qianyu, who had suffered through the great pressure of her position and watching everything around her fall apart to the wind and rain of life, both of them needed comfort, both of them needed warmth.

With a warm and fragrant body pressed into his chest, Lin Ming's entire senses were filled with a delicate scent. Lin Ming felt as if he had embraced the entire world. This intoxicating feeling that set off butterflies in his stomach made his mind throb, even as a surge of lust and desire ignited in his heart, quietly simmering…

After so many years of martial arts practice, Lin Ming was no longer that newbie who had entered the Seven Profound Martial House, nearly losing his mind in the pass of passion on that sea jade platform.

Instead, he was a master who was capable of controlling his own emotions.

His thoughts stirred, and a light flashed in his eyes. He wanted to use his battle spirit to cut this rising desire. But then, he thought about it some more.

The fires of his desire were in truth the development of his own consciousness, a natural progression of his growth as a man. Why would he want to cut it?

From when he first encountered her at Thundercrash Mountain to when she welcomed him to Divine Phoenix Island, Mu Qianyu had truly cared for Lin Ming every step of the way.

When he entered the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, it had seemed that Lin Ming was a star that fell from the heavens, and Mu Qianyu had fallen into sadness and despair for him.

In the Demon God Imperial Palace, Lin Ming had to face being hunted by Lei Jingtian. He had given her the Escape Symbol and the two of them had made a life and death vow. Finally, before he left through the ancient transmission array, they had promised each other a meeting ten years from now.

Every condition had been successful.

Then he would naturally allow this pass of passion to take its course.

Lin Ming slightly suppressed the desire in his heart and softly said, “Yu’er, how have you been for these past two and a half years?”

As Mu Qianyu heard Lin Ming refer to her as Yu’er, her heart throbbed. She didn’t know, but this small change in her name was in truth a decision from Lin Ming...

As she thought of these two and a half years, Mu Qianyu felt a bit sad. She hesitated for a moment and then truthfully spilled out her story. Now that Lin Ming had grown up, there was no need to hide anything from him anymore.

From the time that she and Lin Ming separated, she spoke of Xuan Wuji recklessly searching the entire South Sea for him. Then, she replayed the demise of the Wartime Alliance, the destruction of Divine Phoenix Island, then being forced to take refuge in Yin Yang Profound Palace, and then having to have their two Vermillion Birds taken away as well as having to suffer all sorts of harsh conditions.

Hearing this, Lin Ming frowned. “Little Flame and Fireshine were taken by Yin Yang Profound Palace?”

Chapter 692 – Negotiations

Chapter 692 – Negotiations

…

…

…

During that time in Thundercrash Mountain when Mu Qianyu and Little Flame had encountered trouble, Lin Ming had looked after Little Flame, even cooking up some deer meat for him to eat. In the relatively long life of a Vermillion Bird, Little Flame was only a child and still somewhat naïve and innocent. Although Lin Ming had only known Little Flame for a brief period of time, he still had a very good impression of this silly and foolish Vermillion Bird.

Little Flame was Mu Qianyu's life Vermillion Bird. Both beast and person had extremely deep feelings towards each other. And now, Little Flame was actually taken by Yin Yang Profound Palace?

"What are they planning to do with the Vermillion Birds?" Lin Ming said, a bit incensed. Listening to Mu Qianyu's words, Yin Yang Profound Palace were obviously taking advantage of Divine Phoenix Island while they were suffering, demanding such an outrageous price. Not only did they want two Vermillion Birds, but they also desired the secret techniques of Divine Phoenix Island and even had thoughts of subtly annexing Divine Phoenix Island.

Listening as Lin Ming spoke, a trace of sadness flashed across Mu Qianyu's eyes. She said, "They want the Vermillion Birds in order to extract their blood essence and transplant it into the bodies of the male disciples of Yin Yang Profound Palace. After the Vermillion Birds, they will want the Blue Luan in order to transplant its blood essence into their female disciples. These days, we nearly have to negotiate what price we have to pay to Yin Yang

Profound Palace. Because we have no other choice, we are forced to continually give in. Yet, even when we give an inch, they want to take a yard…”

Before Divine Phoenix Island took refuge in Yin Yang Profound Palace, they hadn’t yet held bargaining talks concerning the resources and secret skills involved. These sort of negotiations were of significant interest to both sects, and they would often be conducted in a marathon-like manner. Even having talks for an entire year wouldn’t be strange.

In these past months, Yin Yang Profound Palace had already negotiated with Divine Phoenix Island over 20 times, repeatedly scrutinizing the details. Generally speaking, Divine Phoenix Island had to suffer increasing losses. Because they were weaker, they had no choice but to suffer these insults at the negotiations.

Lin Ming scowled. So this was it…

Yin Yang Profound Palace now had two Vermillion Birds. The blood essence of a Vermillion Bird was extremely precious. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that one or two drops of this blood essence, combined with some talent and secret skills, would be able to train a Divine Phoenix Island disciple into a Revolving Core powerhouse!

It was because of this Vermillion Bird blood essence that Lin Ming had been able to pull Qin Xingxuan back from the precipice of death.

Blood essence was incomparably precious, whether it was for a martial artist or Saint Beast.

Divine Phoenix Island’s Vermillion Bird blood essence was only withdrawn when a Vermillion Bird was nearing the end of its natural lifespan. Even then, this was only 20 to 30 drops of blood essence.

For a Vermillion Bird with vibrant blood vitality, Divine Phoenix Island wouldn’t risk damaging its life in order to extract its blood essence. After all, blood essence was extremely difficult to recover. Extracting one drop meant that there was one drop less.

Especially Little Flame. Little Flame was so young; just how could it bear having its blood essence taken out?

The smaller a Vermillion Bird, the more frail it was. If one extracted its life essence, then not only would its lifespan shorten but it would also greatly affect its strength.

Perhaps the Vermillion Bird might even directly die.

Looking at Mu Qianyu's reddened eyes, Lin Ming suddenly became incensed with pure anger. "Yu'er, you said that they were trying to subtly annex Divine Phoenix Island. Just what is happening?"

Mu Qianyu sighed. She said, "Yin Yang Profound Palace's cultivation method is focused on Yin and Yang, having both elements complement each other. As such, they specialize in water and fire origin energy, which is similar to Divine Phoenix Island's ice and fire cultivation method. In these past months, there were some disciples of Yin Yang Profound Palace who perhaps used the temptation of benefits, coercion, intimidation, or maybe even drugs... but... of my Divine Phoenix Island disciples...they had sex with them. Both parties walked past the line of no return, and so they became married..."

Mu Qianyu had a very bad taste in her mouth when she spoke of this. In truth, only around half of Divine Phoenix Island's disciples were deceived in some way. The other half were completely voluntary. Or at least they did so with a half-hearted resistance.

Divine Phoenix Island was still a fourth-grade sect. In truth, now they didn't have many training resources, practice arrays, or medicine gardens...even the spiritual land underneath their feet, Little Swallow Island, was only equal to a third-grade sect's spiritual land.

In such harsh conditions, just how could they attract new disciples?

Not to mention that Divine Phoenix Island was also facing an all-encompassing crisis from the South Sea Demon Region; even their very existence was in a precarious state. The majority of disciples from Divine Phoenix Island were mostly women. Even though they were martial artists, they were still naturally soft-hearted; they needed to feel protected by others. Drifting around in a displaced manner like destitute vagabonds in a situation where death loomed close to them made it very easy for them to be touched by the sweet talk and the honeyed words of men. From the first touches of love to going to bed, they finally became confused about what they wanted and ended up married.

Thus, for these past months, many female disciples of Divine Phoenix Island repeatedly lost their virginity. Some of them were even pregnant.

Once they married they would naturally stay in Yin Yang Profound Palace with their husbands. One reason was because Yin Yang Profound Palace was much stronger; another was because whether it was their practice arrays, resources, or spiritual land, everything was a higher grade, even better than when Divine Phoenix Island was at its peak.

If this continued, then Divine Phoenix Island would soon be hollowed out. And, the most exasperating problem was that the male disciples of Yin Yang Profound palace chose the most extraordinary and beautiful women to pursue. They wouldn't consider those girls who were less fortunate, or perhaps might even sleep with them and then abandon them afterwards.

"Yu'er, you said that they used drugs?" Lin Ming's voice became extremely cold.

"There were two who used drugs. We investigated this and requested that those two scumbags be punished. But I have no idea what Yin Yang Profound Palace did to them afterwards. As for those two girls who suffered, they didn't pursue any further and instead accepted their fate…."

As Mu Qianyu spoke to here, she let out a deep sigh. She remembered that the one responsible for dealing with this matter had been Xing Yang and then her heart filled with utter hatred. She said with loathing, "Yin Yang Profound Palace's Little Palace Master Xing Yang has intentions to seduce my little sister. He wants to marry her. Moreover, the Palace Masters have already officially brought this matter up with Honorable Sect Master. Although they were refused, the future days are long. It's still possible that there might be some accident that happens."

Mu Qianyu was very worried for her little sister. This was why she considered for a moment before informing Lin Ming of this matter. She didn't mention that Xing Yang also coveted her, but just the matter with her sister was enough to make Lin Ming livid with rage.

The first one to have relations with Divine Phoenix Island's Mu sisters would be able to inherit a touch of their Saint Beast bloodline. For Xing Yang, this was an unbelievably good plan!

Lin Ming said "Tomorrow morning, I will go to the peak of Yin Yang Profound Palace with you. I want to personally see just what sort of person that Little Palace Master of Yin Yang Profound Palace is like!"

Lin Ming's voice was filled with a domineering tone that seemed as if it could change the destiny of others. This came from the absolute belief in his own strength. Lin Ming might not be Xuan Wuji's match, but against this Yin Yang Profound Palace, he didn't fear them at all!

This unquestionable aura warmed Mu Qianyu's heart.

Although she didn't care about how strong Lin Ming was, what girl didn't hope that the one she loved would have extraordinary strength, being able to shelter her from the world's pains and problems?

The two of them didn't speak anymore. They paused, holding each other and enjoying this gentle moment as the night passed without words.

....

In the early morning, Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu rose from bed early. Outside, the bright sun was rising and the grass was heavy with new dew, the air fresh as if it had just been washed.

Lin Ming pushed open the door and walked out. Not too far away he could see two men and one woman standing. The three of them had amazing temperaments. One blue-clothed girl was looking at Lin Ming, a slight grin tracing her lips as humor twinkled in her eyes.

This young girl was Lan Xin. She clucked her tongue as she smiled and said, “Brother Lin, were you happy last night?”

Listening to the obvious question in these words, a strange blush colored his face. He didn’t want joke around with Lan Xin at this moment so he simply ignored this question.

Lan Xin stuck out her tongue, still devilishly grinning as before.

“Brother Lin, is this the sect you grew up in? Divine Phoenix Island?”

Beside Lan Xin, Duanmu Qun asked this question. Before the sun rose, he had already investigated Divine Phoenix Island and was able to approximate their situation. He had already expected that Divine Phoenix Island wasn’t some great sect, otherwise they wouldn’t have been destroyed by the South Sea Demon Region. But as he saw their current state, he really couldn’t help but think they were in extremely squalid circumstances.

There was just more than 1000 people in the entire sect, a mere 10 Revolving Core masters, and just two first-stage Life Destruction masters. Out of these two, one of them had already damaged her life source; she didn’t have much combat efficiency left.

This temporary land was only a third-grade spiritual land. Within the Holy Demon Continent, this would only be a small, off-the-road sect. It didn’t even have a medicine garden. It was truly quite hard to look at it.

Just how could this sort of sect raise such a monstrous genius like Lin Ming?

Whether it was Duanmu Qun or Feng Shen, neither of them could understand this.

“Mm....” Lin Ming nodded. This was his sect. Lin Ming didn’t have much attachment to the Seven Profound Valleys. But of Divine Phoenix Island, he actually thought of them as his second family.

“Brother Lin, if Divine Phoenix Island needs any resources, we can help look.”

In Duanmu Qun’s eyes, a fourth-grade sect like Divine Phoenix Island was limited in its ability to help Lin Ming find resources. Yet, it would be too rude to invite Lin Ming to join his Divine Wood Holy Land, thus he could only offer to help Lin Ming look for resources.

Lin Ming faintly smiled and said, “Thank you Brother Duanmu for your kind intentions. If I return to the Holy Demon Continent in the future, then perhaps I really must take you up on your offer.”

Lin Ming planned to travel down the path of alchemy in order to pave the way for opening the Eight Inner Hidden Gates as well as the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. When that time came, he would inevitably need to purchase certain rare resources.

If he had a network of connections and was able to borrow the strength of a Holy Land to find resources, then Lin Ming’s road would become much easier.

“Brother Lin is too humble.” Duanmu Qun smiled in return.

At this moment, Mu Yuhuang, Mu Fengxian, and Mu Bingyun came walking by from not too far away. Because Lin Ming had been anxious to see Mu Qianyu yesterday, he had only hastily greeted Mu Yuhuang and the others; they didn’t even have time to exchange proper greetings.

Today, Mu Yuhuang wanted to talk to Lin Ming some more, but as she saw Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin, she was startled. These three didn’t seem like humans...what race were they? Where had they come from?

Mu Yuhuang hesitated for a moment before she sent Lin Ming a true essence sound transmission, “Lin Ming, are these three your friends?”

Lin Ming nodded.

Without a doubt, these three all had great backgrounds and stories behind them. Mu Yuhuang didn't inquire further. What she wanted to do was ask Lin Ming what sort of adventures he had gone on these past two and a half years, and just how he was able to break through to Revolving Core so soon.

But at this moment, a spirit boat came whistling over their hands, falling into the meeting hall not too far away.

As Mu Yuhuang saw the twin water and fire symbol on the spirit boat, she suddenly grimaced. This was Yin Yang Profound Palace's spirit boat. Naturally, they must have come to Little Swallow Mountain to negotiate matters.

She said to Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission, "Lin Ming, you wait here. We absolutely must keep quiet about your safe return and not let anyone know. Otherwise, others might do something to you."

Chapter 693 – Conflict

Chapter 693 – Conflict

…

…

…

In the eyes of Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian, Lin Ming was Divine Phoenix Island's ultimate secret weapon. Yesterday, Lin Ming had been in a hurry so they didn't even really greet each other, much less have an in-depth conversation. Thus, they believed that the South Sea Demon Region hadn't yet learned of Lin Ming's return.

It had to be known that Lin Ming had once messed up all of Xuan Wuji's plans in the Demon God Imperial Palace, even snatching away the Nirvana Dragon Root from beneath his fingers. If Xuan Wuji knew that Lin Ming had returned then the consequences could be imagined.

It was imperative that they train Lin Ming until he grew to the point at which he could stand alone. Until then, it was impossible to reveal him too early.

Lin Ming didn't reply. The spirit boat had fallen down from the official business courtyard.

"Lin Ming, go back in!" Mu Fengxian told Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission. She was afraid that the martial artists of Yin Yang Profound Palace would recognize Lin Ming. Although it was a very minor possibility, she had to prepare for all contingencies.

As soon as she finished speaking, her feet, of their own accord, moved her towards the meeting courtyard with Mu Yuhuang. Mu Bingyun glanced at Lin Ming before closely following behind them.

For a time, the only ones left were Lin Ming, Mu Qianyu, Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin.

Lin Ming's eyes narrowed as he glared at Yin Yang Profound Palace's spirit boat. As his gaze fell on the spirit boats twin water and fire symbols, he paused for a moment and then said, "Yu'er, that spirit boat carries the negotiators from Yin Yang Profound Palace?"

"Mm." Mu Qianyu nodded. "Lin Ming, I suddenly remembered something. When we went to the Demon God Imperial Palace, it wasn't just Xuan Wuji that was there, but also Nanyun Wang and Great Zen Temple's Abbot Whitebrow. The three of them all had third stage Life Destruction cultivation. Because of you, they lost a Nirvana Dragon Root. If news of your survival spreads, then it would be bad for you if you caught their attention. Perhaps it might be wise to follow Honorable Sect Master's advice and conserve your strength for the time being. It wouldn't be too late for you to grow stronger before clearing all these old debts."

"It doesn't matter." Lin Ming shook his head. "After such a long time, Nanyun Wang and Abbot Whitebrow should have already guessed that I've used up the entire Nirvana Dragon Root by now. Although my strength has its limits, with the Giant Leviathan, I have the strength to deter a sect that even has a transcendent third stage Life Destruction powerhouse. Unless Nanyun Wang and Abbot Whitebrow are consumed by their obsessions then there's no way they will try to do something to me."

Lin Ming's plan was very simple. Since he had returned, he had no intention of acting in a low-key manner. Otherwise, it would be the same as showing weakness to others. This was a world of martial artists—only when the strong were feared by their enemies. Every fool knew that the four Divine Kingdoms controlled an unbelievably massive amount of resources, but who would dare to steal it? On the other hand, if someone weak were to have a massive amount of resources, then others would covet it, try to steal it, and even kill to do so.

……………………

At this time in the meeting hall's courtyard, three old men and a youth stepped out from a spirit boat. The yellow-clothed young man was around 30 years old, and he was tall with an arrow-straight posture. He was Yin Yang Profound Palace's Little Palace Master, Xing Yang. As for the three old men behind him, they were the Elders of Yin Yang Profound Palace.

“Fairy Maiden Mu, it's been a while. I hope you've been well.”

Xing Yang lightly smiled at Mu Fengxian. Because someone had snatched away his chance to meet the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince first, he was in a poor mood. Thus, he decided to switch his aim towards Divine Phoenix Island. He was hoping to obtain Mu Bingyun and Mu Qianyu's Primordial Yin Energy. Although this was less beneficial than befriending the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince, it would still help pave his road to becoming an Emperor-level powerhouse in the future. Additionally, if he could really subdue these two women and marry them as their husband, then enjoying their love-making and warm nights in bed would also be great.

Thinking this, Xing Yang grinned from ear to ear.

“Thanks to the blessing of your Yin Yang Profound Palace, this old woman still hasn't died yet.” Mu Fengxian's response was a bit dreary. In negotiations within the world of martial artists, one never made concessions to the other party because of something as silly as courtesy. Indeed, if it weren't because of all this then Mu Fengxian would never have bothered speaking to such a slimy snake like Xing Yang.

“Hehe, Fairy Maiden Mu, then let's cut with the nonsense and continue with our previous conversation—the secret transplant method of the Vermillion Bird blood essence!” As Xing Yang spoke, he walked straight over to the meeting table and gestured. “I've come with enough sincerity this time in the hope that Fairy Maiden Mu will know when to kindly give way!”

Xing Yang's voice was filled with warning. Divine Phoenix Island had hurriedly taken asylum within Yin Yang Profound Palace, not even having time to discuss all the major details. With such important interests of both sects at stake, naturally negotiations would carry on for a long time.

Mu Fengxian sneered inside. She was well aware of just what disgusting plans this Xing Yang was making. She knew that the reason he continuously set up obstacles was not only for the secret skills of Divine Phoenix Island, but also because he desired the Mu sister's bodies.

How could Mu Fengxian possibly let him continue this wishful thinking?

If it were a few days ago, then under the absolute threat of the South Sea Demon Region where Mu Fengxian was in a much weaker position, she would have no choice but to endure this rude oppression from Yin Yang Profound Palace. But now, with this unknown factor of the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince and the South Sea Demon Region having suffered loss one after another, Mu Fengxian didn't intend to keel over so easily.

When she was about to go to the negotiating table to argue with Xing Yang, she suddenly turned around to look at the courtyard entrance.

She saw five people standing there. They were Lin Ming, Mu Qianyu, Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and Feng Shen.

Damn! Just what were they doing here?

Mu Fengxian's heart skipped a beat. Lin Ming's return was Divine Phoenix Island's greatest, absolute secret! Once this news was leaked then the consequences would be unthinkable!

It wasn't just Mu Fengxian, but Mu Yuhuang was also looking ill.

Mu Yuhuang tried to suppress her panic. Although Xing Yang might not have seen Lin Ming's portrait, his age contrasted with his cultivation too spectacularly to not be noticed.

She yelled, “Yu’er, what are you here for?”

Mu Yuhuang was thinking to bring up Mu Qianyu to distract Xing Yang’s attention and allow Lin Ming an opportunity to leave. But currently, Mu Qianyu seemed to be at a loss for words.

Xing Yang glared at Lin Ming. He coldly said, “Who are you?”

Xing Yang truly didn’t know Lin Ming. He was sure that he didn’t see Lin Ming when Divine Phoenix Island first came to Yin Yang Profound Palace. If he did, then he definitely would have remembered him. Lin Ming seemed to be only 20 some-odd years old but his cultivation was at the early Revolving Core. Not just that, but the true essence around his body was exceptionally thick. He was obviously not some ordinary early Revolving Core powerhouse.

Of course, he may look to be in his early twenties but his age might actually be closer to 30. After all, a martial artist aged at a very slow pace. There wasn’t that great a difference between 30 years and 20 years of age. Because he wasn’t able to determine Lin Ming’s age, he had no grounds to ascertain the degree of Lin Ming’s talent. But he had to be at least at the pinnacle of Saint level talents.

The reason that Lin Ming caught Xing Yang’s attention was not just because of Lin Ming’s talent, but rather because of a much more important reason.

That was…because Mu Qianyu was holding Lin Ming’s hand!

Xing Yang felt his heart sink as a dense light of jealousy entered his eyes. He clearly knew Mu Qianyu’s origins. She only had a younger sister, and had no older or younger brother.

Then this meant that Lin Ming could only be her lover.

Mu Qianyu’s and Mu Bingyun’s feelings and sentiment were no small matter. This was because the first time they had sex with someone else, they would pass a part of their

Primordial Yin energy to that man. This would also dilute the Saint Beast bloodline within the Saintess to a certain degree.

But looking at Mu Fengxian and Mu Yuhuang, they obviously didn't oppose Mu Qianyu being together with this man. That meant they had already agreed to their union.

Just who was he!?!?

Looking at how attached Mu Qianyu seemed to be with that man, he feared that she would have no qualms giving her virginity to the man! This caused Xing Yang's heart to surge with a thick killing intent!

Although Lin Ming's talent was good, Xing Yang didn't fear him. Xing Yang was already 35 years old and he had just reached the late Revolving Core period. After that was Life Destruction. If he could reach Life Destruction before he was 45 years old, then his chances of becoming a Peerless Emperor would be that much higher.

Although Lin Ming was younger, his cultivation was two whole small boundaries fewer.

Once one reached Revolving Core, the difference between every small boundary was not minor. Xing Yang didn't worry about Lin Ming's combat strength, only what sort of background he had. This sort of genius would never originate from some mediocre background.

As Xing Yang noticed the two handsome men and the pretty woman behind Lin Ming, he paused. They were obviously not human, but at the same time he couldn't recognize what race they were.

Furthermore, what was strange was that Xing Yang was completely unable to tell what their cultivation was.

This was because the Fey cultivation system was different to that of humanity.

“You dare to trespass within my Yin Yang Profound Palace!? Just who are you?” Xing Yang wanted to find out about Lin Ming’s origin. If he came from a fifth-grade sect then he wouldn’t do anything to him. But if this man came from a small sect, then he would quietly kill him.

Lin Ming sneered and said, “I am a disciple of Divine Phoenix Island, surnamed Lin. Little Swallow Mountain has already been designated as the residence for my Divine Phoenix Island. Why would it be strange for me to be here?”

Hearing Lin Ming not avoid referring to himself as someone surnamed Lin, Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian became worried. That explosive last name along with Lin Ming’s talent…Xing Yang would find out sooner or later.

Mu Yuhuang repeatedly sent true essence sound transmissions but couldn’t obtain a response from him. Mu Bingyun also frowned as she looked at Lin Ming, not sure what he was planning on doing.

Mm? This boy was actually a Divine Phoenix Island disciple?

Xing Yang narrowed his eyes as he sized up Lin Ming. He didn’t understand Divine Phoenix Island’s history too much, so he temporarily didn’t associate this Lin character with “that” Lin Ming. He only found it strange that Divine Phoenix Island still had this sort of talent remaining. Still, since he was a Divine Phoenix Island disciple, there simply wasn’t anything to worry about.

He began to think about finding an excuse to punish Lin Ming, and then quietly slipping him some medicine to ruin his abilities to function as a man in bed, thus removing his chances of taking Mu Qianyu’s virginity.

But then, at this moment, Lin Ming opened his mouth wide to spout out some fantastical and stunning words….

Lin Ming said, “You there, the one called Xing Yang, I came here today to tell you…negotiations are over. Immediately return the Vermillion Birds. Yin Yang Profound

Palace will also divide half of their territory as a temporary residence for Divine Phoenix Island. This includes practice arrays, medicine garden supplies, true essence stone, and all other resources. Half of everyone's daily share will be given to Divine Phoenix Island as an offering."

When Lin Ming finished speaking, Xing Yang's jaw fell wide open. He nearly couldn't believe his own ears. What had this boy said just now?

It wasn't just Xing Yang; Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian were also shocked silly. Even the normally indifferent Mu Bingyun was staring at Lin Ming with a puzzled expression. Lin Ming definitely didn't seem as if he were joking around. Thus, she turned to look at Mu Qianyu.

Mu Qianyu was also surprised. She never thought that Lin Ming would suddenly demand such excessive conditions. This was the same as slicing off the flesh from Yin Yang Profound Palace!

Duanmu Qin, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin all seemed to not care too much. As descendants from a Holy Land, they naturally didn't have any interest in the resources of a minor fifth-grade sect.

How valuable could it possibly be? Any one of the earth-step Demon God Bones that Lin Ming had obtained in the 1000-mile forbidden zone was enough for a fifth-grade sect to recklessly spend wealth for ten years.

After several breaths of time, Xing Yang suddenly laughed. "I thought you were some sort of genius but I never imagined you were such an idiot. You must have thought these negotiations were too boring so you wanted to tease me into laughing! Hahahaha! You not only succeeded, but you also did a great job!"

Xing Yang's expression then turned icy. "Elder Jiang, Elder Sun, seize that boy for me!"

Behind Xing Yang there were three black-clothed Elders. Two of them were late Revolving Core and the last was at the first stage of Life Destruction. They had come up to provide suppressive support.

Yin Yang Profound Palace couldn't be considered a fifth-grade sect with too prestigious a background; they weren't able to have each of their Elders at Life Destruction. Because they lacked masters, most of their Elders were actually at the mid or late Revolving Core.

Xing Yang simply couldn't bother to deal with Lin Ming himself. Elder Jiang and Elder Sun behind him both had cultivation at the late Revolving Core, more than enough to deal with the likes of Lin Ming.

Lin Ming casually swept his eyes over the two Elders and chuckled. He already knew that speaking with this Xing Yang was the same as exchanging nonsense.

Today he had come to ruin him.

Two Elders approached Li Ming from the left and right. Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian's complexions changed. They were well aware that Lin Ming wasn't an idiot, but what could he do in this situation? Even if he was extraordinarily strong, what would happen even if he was able to jump ranks and defeat these two Revolving Core Elders? Could he take the entire Yin Yang Profound Palace as his enemy?

At this time, Lan Xin clucked her tongue as she slightly tittered, her laugh sweet like silver bells. Her tone was laced with sarcasm as she bluntly said, "Is this still a fifth-grade sect? A fifth-grade sect's Elders should accordingly be Life Destruction masters. But you use late Revolving Core Elders as an in-between and still think that you can be acknowledged as a fifth-grade sect! How ridiculous!"

As Lan Xin said this, Elder Sun and Elder Jiang both became furious. This was not only cruelly mocking Yin Yang Profound Palace but also mocking them, exposing all of their shortcomings that no one dared to voice out loud. What Lan Xin had said was truly toxic.

Although Yin Yang Profound Palace was known as a fifth-grade sect, they really did have many places where they didn't meet the definition of a fifth-grade sect.

"Little girl, since you want to die so badly then this old man will show you just how high the heavens are and how the low earth is!" Elder Jiang couldn't see what Lan Xin's cultivation or race was. He assumed that she was some sect talent, and was also the naïve sort that had never left their sect before. The type that assumed just because their talent was a little high they could act like an idiot.

"Haha, you're going to make me die of laughter! I'm standing right here. If you can approach within three feet of me then I'll count you as having won!" Lan Xin winked at Duanmu Qun. She had never been a polite, good little girl to begin with. With such a fun opportunity in front of her, she certainly wouldn't want to miss it.

Duanmu Qun was speechless. He thought that Lan Xin would take action, but he never expected that this little lady would circle everything back to him.

Indeed, with Lan Xin's strength she would be able to defeat Elder Jiang. But it wouldn't be easy; she might even be wounded. If so, it would be difficult for her to maintain her lofty attitude.

"You are far too arrogant! Old Sun, you deal with that boy and I'll capture that little girl!" Elder Jian said in a furious rage.

"Okay!"

The two Elders rushed out to the left and right.

Facing this situation, Lin Ming didn't even take out his spear. He flicked his index finger and attached his battle spirit to the air, shooting it out.

In the next moment, Elder Jiang only saw an azure light flash in front of him. With the sound of a muffled crashing sound, Elder Sun, who had rushed out with him, had suddenly disappeared!

Elder Jiang turned his head and saw that a massive, human-shaped hole had formed in the wall behind him. As for Elder Sun, he was toppled over on top of the courtyard fence, vomiting blood as his limbs hung lifelessly down like a dead dog…

Chapter 694 – Absolute Disparity

Chapter 694 – Absolute Disparity

…

…

…

Elder Jiang had only rushed out halfway when he suddenly stopped in his tracks. He had run out with Elder Sun, but Elder Sun had suddenly disappeared in the blink of an eye. The next moment, he was hanged up on the outer courtyard fence like a piece of cured meat.

The great human-shaped hole was still rustling with falling dust. As for Elder Sun, his entire body had gone soft; it was unknown whether or not he had fainted.

The entire meeting venue fell in absolute silence. Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian were stunned. Although they had guessed that Lin Ming's strength had sharply risen after breaking through to Revolving Core and that it should be easy for him to jump ranks when fighting, they didn't think that Lin Ming could send a late Revolving Core martial artist flying with just a flick of his finger.

Even Mu Qianyu, who had heard about Lin Ming's strength from the person in question, was bewildered, her beautiful eyes wide and bright. Hearing Lin Ming's words was one thing, but seeing it happen in front of her was another.

"Elder Sun!'

Xing Yang was frightened. He had never even dreamed that such a scene would occur. He quickly used his soul force to investigate what the dangling Elder Sun's situation was like.

His bodily true essence had shattered apart, and all the bones near the right side of his chest had been broken to pieces!

It was obvious that Elder Sun had been struck by a massive blow to his right chest. But… Just how had Lin Ming made this attack?

Xing Yang could only feel a chill crawl down his spine. All he had managed to see was a flash of azure light past his eyes. Lin Ming hadn't even taken out his weapon. All he had done was to send that Elder Sun flying was to flick a single finger!

Elder Sun's cultivation was at the late Revolving Core realm. Although it was impossible for him to reach Life Destruction in his life, he wasn't much weaker than the late Revolving Core Xing Yang. And, Xing Yang didn't dare to say he could easily defeat Elder Sun, much less send him flying with a flick, like Lin Ming had done.

Recalling the power of that finger just now, Xing Yang was frightened. He hadn't even been the target, but he still felt as if a massive will pressure was pressing down between his eyes, into his spiritual sea. Even his soul trembled from that terrifying feeling.

Xing Yang looked at Lin Ming, feeling faint of heart, "Second Uncle, just what was that?"

Xing Yang's Second Uncle was the present first stage Life Destruction Elder. He was Xing Yang's god uncle, Xing Zizan. He had come to the negotiations to help shore up Xing Yang's prestige, but he had never imagined such a matter would occur.

He hesitated for a moment before saying, "This should be a type of spear wind formed from some kind of extraordinary technique…"

In truth, what Lin Ming had just used was his battle spirit. However, the battle spirit was something that only Emperor level powerhouses and peak Emperor level talents could ever touch upon. Normally, only Holy Lands with a profound history had some sort of inheritance regarding battle spirits.

Yin Yang Profound Palace was a newly promoted fifth-grade sect. Their history was shallow. From the very beginning, Xing Zizan had never even heard of a battle spirit before.

Xing Zizan continued to analyze the situation, “There are some special cultivation methods such as Divine Sword Sect’s ‘Blue Yang Sword Law’ where one could forge and form several sword energies within their body to constantly improve it. In a critical moment, they wouldn’t even need to use their swords, and could instead shoot out these sword energies to kill others. Moreover, the strike power behind them is immense. It could even be stronger than that person’s all-out attack. Perhaps this boy’s attack was done using a similar cultivation method!”

Listening to Xing Zizan’s reasonable ‘analysis’, Xing Yang relaxed. What Lin Ming had done just now did seem like a similar cultivation method, and indeed, he had heard of this before. Although it was extremely powerful, it also had several flaws. First, one could store a limited number of these sword energies. They cost a great deal of time and effort to improve, and once they were used they would simply disappear.

If Lin Ming had used a spear energy that he had cultivated for a long period of time to injure Elder Sun like this, then Xing Yang could also accept that.

If he gathered all of his potential and energy to strike, then he could also achieve a similar result.

Xing Zizan and Xing Yang used true essence sound transmissions to speak with each other. That Elder Jiang who followed Elder Sun hadn’t heard any of this. Facing such a violent Lin Ming, he was dumbfounded.

Elder Jiang couldn’t rush forwards, but he couldn’t retreat either.

The words that he had previously spoken were too prideful and arrogant. If he allowed his face to be ruined here, then how could he ever hold his head up high in front of the juniors of Yin Yang Profound Palace?

At this time, Lan Xing chortled and said, “Are you coming or not? What happened to all your bluster just now?”

Lan Xin felt that Lin Ming sending that Elder Sun flying back with just a flick of a finger was very normal. She made sure to not forget to mock this frightened Elder Jiang.

After having his weakness poked by others, Elder Jiang became extremely angry.

He glared at Lan Xin, calculating the situation in his heart. Dealing with that finger-flicking boy was definitely not good, but dealing with this ridiculous yellow-clothed girl shouldn’t be a problem. As long as he could mess with her a bit, then he would be able to restore some of his lost face.

Thinking of this, Elder Jiang coldly snorted and said, “Little girl, you’ve gone too far. Do you really think that you are unrivalled in this world? This old man will teach you to know your place!”

Lan Xing laughed and said, “I never said that I would deal with you. I said that if you could approach within three feet then you’ll win. Right, Duanmu Qun?”

Hearing Lan Xin kick the ball towards him, Duanmu Qun helplessly shook his head. But now that things had reached this point, he certainly wouldn’t sit around and watch Lan Xin needlessly suffer.

Elder Jiang looked at Duanmu Qun and his heart started beating rapidly. He wasn’t able to see through this fellow’s cultivation, but his intuition told him that he was surely an astonishing character!

Did these three people use some kind of secret skill to hide their cultivation? Just how strong were they really?

Elder Jiang hesitated to do anything. But at this moment, Xing Yang’s true essence sound transmission echoed in his mind. “Elder Jiang, you don’t have to be afraid. That boy just now used some secret ability similar to the ‘Blue Yang Sword Law’ to defeat Elder Sun. His strength isn’t as amazing as you think it is.”

“Blue Yang Sword Law?”

Hearing Xing Yang’s true essence sound transmission, Elder Jiang was startled. Divine Sword Sect was near their Profound Province, so he naturally knew of the ‘Blue Yang Sword Law’.

So it was like this…

Elder Jiang sullenly glanced at Lin Ming, feeling relieved. It must have been a similar secret skill. Otherwise, with Lin Ming’s early Revolving Core cultivation, just how was it possible for him to send Elder Sun flying away with the flick of a finger?

Thinking like this, Elder Jiang felt some fear, but he wasn’t too terrified now. Of course, even if Lin Ming used some kind of trick, Elder Jiang knew that he still could in no way be Lin Ming’s match. After all, the strength of that spear energy was a reflection of the user’s strength.

He decided to target Duanmu Qun and Lan Xin instead.

“Getting within three feet of you? Good! Very good! Are the juniors of this era always so arrogant? I’ll see just what you can do as I approach you!”

Elder Jiang seemed brimming with confidence, but the truth was that he was in a critical situation. After learning from Elder Sun’s example, he certainly didn’t dare to relax his guard. He revolved all the true essence within his body and extracted the thick saber from his back. Then, he rushed towards Lan Xin and Duanmu Qun.

As he shot forward, he paid particular attention to what Lin Ming was doing. Seeing that Lin Ming’s hands were crossed over his chest with no intention of helping, Elder Jiang breathed a sigh of relief.

“It’s only approaching them; it shouldn’t be too difficult.”

As Elder Jiang thought this, he stimulated all of his bodily protective true essence. He didn’t believe that this strange white-clothed youth was also a freak like that finger-flick fellow just now.

This sort of targeting juniors, and especially bullying the weak while avoiding the strong, was extremely despicable. Even Xing Yang found this hard to look at.

Duanmu Qun was calm as he brought his hands forward from behind him. As Elder Jiang was thirty feet away, a sharp light suddenly flashed in his eyes. The next moment, he formed a sword with his fingers and a fierce sword energy savagely shot out, creating sword lights so brilliant that they were hard to look at.

Rushing forward, Elder Jiang only felt a turbulent energy come at him, as if it would be able to split him in half. His expression suddenly changed. On instinct, he slashed out with his saber!

This saber strike was Yin Yang Profound Palace’s Mountain Breaking technique. Saber light filled the skies like snow as it was used!

However, as the saber light and sword energy collided, a strange distortion suddenly appeared in space. The saber lights were pulled into the strange twisting space, bending, until finally, with a loud cracking sound, the bent saber lights were completely sliced apart by the sword energies, shredded to pieces!

The next moment, sword energy smashed into Elder Jiang’s chest. Elder Jiang gave a stuffy cough as his bodily true essence broke apart. He flew backwards, his entire chest wet and dripping with blood.

Following this scene was a deafening silence.

Lin Ming was also slightly surprised. Duanmu Qun was in truth a two-star Fey King. That was equal to a middle Revolving Core martial artist. His cultivation wasn't much worse than Elder Jiang's, thus he was easily able to defeat him.

Lin Ming wasn't surprised that Duanmu Qun easily won. No, what he found interesting was the Concept of Space that was imbued into Duanmu Qun's attack. Their respective Concepts of Space had taken entirely different paths, but both were incomparably exquisite styles. Originally, Duanmu Qun already had some understanding of the Concept of Space, but after gaining experience via passing through the ancient transmission array, his progress in that aspect had increased by leaps and bounds.

Lin Ming couldn't help but admire Duanmu Qun's talent.

Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian also looked at Duanmu Qun with amazement. Duanmu Qun seemed to be in his twenties, but he actually had the strength of a peak Revolving Core master, no worse than Lin Ming!

Just this Duanmu Qun was already like this, and looking at Feng Shen and Lan Xin, neither of them seemed like common geniuses either. Were they all Lin Ming's friends? Mu Fengxian and the others hadn't been able to discover Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin's cultivation level, so they hadn't paid too much attention to them. But, thinking about it now, did these three people come from the four Divine Kingdoms?

It wasn't just Mu Yuhuang that thought this, but Xing Yang and Xing Zizan as well.

Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, Lan Xin, and Lin Ming, altogether four youngsters… Were they all Emperor level talents?

This year, had Emperor level talents become common to this degree? Were they growing around like cabbages or something?

Xing Yang's expression was dismal, as if he had taken a great blow. He originally had pride in his own talent that barely qualified him as an Emperor level talent, but now facing Lin Ming and Duanmu Qun, all of his pride had been shattered.

Whether it was Lin Ming or Duanmu Qin, neither was weaker than him. Both were actually stronger than him!

Ca!

Xing Yang extracted a thick crimson saber that looked as if it was on fire. In Yin Yang Profound Palace, it was custom for men to use sabers and for women to use swords.

“I admit that you are strong. Very well, I will fight you with everything I have!”

Xing Yang pointed his treasure saber straight at Duanmu Qun. His treasure saber was a peak high-grade earth-step weapon, forged from refined fire gold. It was just a single step away from being a heaven-step treasure. And, most importantly, it had an additional function of boosting fire-attribute cultivation methods. It was the best weapon for him to use.

Xing Yang had chosen Duanmu Qun as his opponent after a long period of careful consideration. Before, Lin Ming had only used his spear energy to attack, so the true depth of his strength was still unknown. He didn’t dare to risk fighting him at this time. If he lost, then any face still he had would be swept away.

If he was facing Duanmu Qun, Xing Yang still had some confidence in himself.

Chapter 695 – All Daggers Drawn

Chapter 695 – All Daggers Drawn

…

…

…

Hu - !

In Xing Yang's hand, the high-grade earth-step saber flared with a faint crimson flame, as if the entire blade had been heated up to a scorching degree.

This saber could increase Xing Yang's fire-attribute cultivation method by 10-20%. Having paid a hemorrhaging price to forge this weapon, now that it was in his hands, Xing Yang could feel the burning flames emanating from it suddenly emboldening him.

"My saber is called Scarlet Flame, and my name is Xing Yang!"

Xing Yang pointed his saber straight towards Duanmu Qun, issuing this official challenge.

Naturally, Duanmu Qun didn't fear this sort of challenge. A young outstanding elite like Xing Yang would count as just one of the mob on Skysplit Tower's third floor.

He drew his sword to meet Xing Yang. However, at the same time, sudden rambling footsteps sounded outside the courtyard. About seven or eight Yin Yang Profound Palace martial artists suddenly crashed into the courtyard. Many of them had a cultivation at the early or middle Revolving Core realm, while the one leading them was a late Revolving Core powerhouse.

Within Yin Yang Profound Palace, those below the late Revolving Core realm were Protectors, and those at the late Revolving Core realm or above were considered Elders.

These seven or eight martial artist were Xing Yang's own guard retinue. They were skilled in martial abilities and array coordination. They had come together with Xing Yang to join in on the negotiations, and had originally been waiting on the spirit boat. But when they saw the walls of the hall being smashed apart, they all rushed in to protect Xing Yang.

Ca! Ca! Ca!

Several people immediately drew their weapons. A barrier of sabers and swords suddenly surrounded Lin Ming and the others.

For a while, the atmosphere was tense, weapons drawn and killing intent overflowing, ready to explode at any moment.

Seeing this volatile atmosphere, Mu Yuhuang's breath caught in her chest. Lin Ming's strength that had been able to defeat Elder Sun with just a flick of his finger truly did exceed her expectations. But, how could Lin Ming alone face the entire Yin Yang Profound Palace?

The situation had seriously devolved once Xing Yang's guards had arrived. Once they started fighting, the consequences would be calamitous.

Even more so if it ended with casualties. There was no chance of a pleasant outcome.

As the saying went, the strong dragon would not bother with the little snakes. In the current state of things, not only was Yin Yang Profound Palace their literal landlord, but they also far exceeded Divine Phoenix Island in strength. The difference was far too great. If Yin Yang Profound Palace claimed that their own disciples had been beaten to take advantage of things, then Divine Phoenix Island would truly suffer in negotiations. It was likely that Yin Yang Profound Palace would demand a sky high price.

Being thrust into this situation, Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian were both nervous; it had already spiraled out of their control. If this continued…

Mu Fengxian sent Lin Ming a true essence sound transmission, “Yin Yang Profound Palace has two Palace Masters, both at the second stage of Life Destruction. The two of them use a complementary Yin Yang cultivation method. If they join forces they can vastly increase their strength, achieving a stage comparable with a third stage Life Destruction master, to a certain degree. Not just that, but we need Yin Yang Profound Palace’s protection. If we fight with these people, not only would it be difficult to win, but even if we did, the ones who lost in the end would still be us.”

Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian’s worrying was understandable. Even Mu Bingyun was unable to stay indifferent in this situation. She did not blame Lin Ming for his recklessness. Instead, in a show of support, she took a half step back, keeping a forceful posture. At the same time, her left hand traced the spatial ring on her right hand, ready to draw out the Blue Luan sword at any moment.

Lin Ming didn’t say anything. But, Lan Xin was already itching to stir up some chaos. She rowdily shouted, “You want a group fight? Let’s do this!”

Ca!

Lan Xin flourished her sword.

Feng Shen and Duanmu Qun wordlessly drew theirs. As Holy Land descendants, they had never held this Yin Yang Profound Palace in their hearts, not to mention that Lin Ming was also here.

Three shining and dazzling swords faced the seven or eight surrounding weapons.

The atmosphere was ripe with tension, about to explode into a battle at any time. This was precisely Lin Ming’s intention. He quietly took out a long spear from his spatial ring. Actually, with Lin Ming’s strength, he didn’t even need to take out his spear. But then he considered that Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun were also here. Once a fight started, the two of them might easily be captured by that first stage Life Destruction master. In order to prevent such a situation from occurring, Lin Ming decided to no longer hold back at all.

Watching Lin Ming pull out his spear, Xing Yang smiled fiercely. He didn't fear a fight here. After all, this was their Yin Yang Profound Palace's home ground. Once they fought, the ones to have the last laugh would definitely be them. They weren't in a weaker position either. There was Xing Zizan, as well as the eight Revolving Core guards who could lay down an array formation to greatly increase their strength.

As long as he persisted, support from Yin Yang Profound Palace would continuously pour in. Then, if the situation spiraled out of control even further, his father and mother would also arrive. At that time, even if Lin Ming was some superhuman with multiple limbs and heads he would still be captured!

Thinking of this, Xing Yang soon calmed down. Before, he had panicked a bit because Lin Ming and Duanmu Qun's strength had completely exceeded his expectations, catching him off guard.

Xing Yang sneered and said, "Truly, you have no idea what death or danger means. Since you dare to act so brashly in my Yin Yang Profound Palace, it no longer matters how great your background is! You dare to sneak into my Yin Yang Profound Palace's meeting hall, disrupt negotiations, provoke my Yin Yang Profound palace?! Then even if I punish you, waste you, or kill you, all of it is within reasoning. Your sect can no longer say anything!"

"Everyone obey my commands! Capture these thieves for..."

Xing Yang was about to say 'capture these thieves for my punishment', but as he spoke, his voice actually trailed off until he turned silent.

He blankly stared at Lin Ming's long spear, a faint foreboding feeling in his heart, as if something was off. Then, as if he had suddenly realized something, he instantly looked at Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and Feng Shen's swords. As he saw the chilling light and incomparably sharp energy they gave off, he sucked in a breath of cold air, his heart trembling.

Heavens!

Four!

Four heaven-step treasures!!!

He looked at the Scarlet Flame Saber in his hands, on which he had spent a massive amount of money. This was a peak earth-step treasure. Within the entire southern tip of the Sky Spill Continent, this was already an extremely kick-ass weapon. But compared to Lin Ming and the other three, his weapon was nothing more than garbage.

Even though a peak earth-step treasure was just a single step away from being a heaven-step treasure, the truth was that the disparity was gargantuan. It was like comparing late Revolving Core to Life Destruction, or a high stage Life Destruction to the Divine Sea.

Looking at his guards' weapons, they were nothing but high-grade earth-step weapons; there were even some medium-grade earth-step weapons! Even the weapon in Xing Zizan's hands was only a slightly better high-grade earth-step treasure.

This is… Just what was going on here?

Since when did heaven-step treasures litter the streets as if they were cabbages?

Within the entire Profound Province, there was not a single heaven-step treasure. Only the top ranked abbot of Great Zen Temple, who had already returned to seclusion, and the South Sea Demon Region's Highest Elder Xuan Wuji had a heaven-step treasure each.

Could these people…

Xing Yang's eyebrows shot up. Within the entire Sky Spill Continent, only the four Divine Kingdoms in the central region had that many heaven-step treasures.

These people, could they have come from the four Divine Kingdoms?

Thinking of this, Xing Yang's heart shrank in fear. To fight with the descendants of the four Divine Kingdoms, that was just running headlong into death!

The Divine Kingdoms cared not for reasoning; they did not care about what was right or what was wrong.

That was because strength was the final and ultimate truth!

In front of a Holy Land, Yin Yang Profound Palace was nothing but bottom dwelling scum.

“No, no, ah, something’s wrong, the four Divine Kingdoms shouldn’t have such a strange race with long ears and scales. Also, didn’t that spear-carrying boy say he was from Divine Phoenix Island? Why would he have a heaven-step treasure? Did they manage to obtain these weapons through some kind of colossal lucky chance?”

Chapter 696 – Broken Blade

Chapter 696 – Broken Blade

…

…

…

Xing Yang’s face was filled with a gloomy uncertainty. As for Mu Yuhuang, she was panicking. She had no idea just how this situation would end.

“Prepare a sound transmission talisman, report what is happening!”

As the guard captain spoke, several Revolving Core Protectors quickly reacted, their fingers tracing their spatial rings. After all, this was the territory of Yin Yang Profound Palace. As long as they called for more manpower, they would be the ones with the advantage.

Seeing a Revolving Core Protector light up a sound transmitting talisman in front of her, Lan Xin sneered. She instantly flash-stepped in front of that martial artist, her sword slashing at the wrist!

Having stayed in Skysplit Tower for several years, although Lan Xin looked like a beautiful sun-dappled girl, in truth she was a decisive person with no soft corners. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for her to survive in Skysplit Tower.

“Evil little girl, you dare!?” The guard captain’s eyes flashed with anger. He slashed with his saber at Lan Xin’s neck.

“Humph!”

Lan Xin showed no weakness. Her sword slashed upward, intersecting with the saber. True essence collided, and the guard captain's saber light was ripped to shreds by Lin Ming, followed by Lan Xin's sword light slicing towards his vital points.

The guard captain's complexion paled. He never imagined that this twenty-or-so-year-old girl could make him suffer a loss with a single sword strike.

Just who were these people?

"Line up in formation!"

The guard captain shouted, shocked. Although the eight of them were only mid and late Revolving Core martial artists, once they fell into formation and combined that with several array flags and array discs, together they could actually resist a first stage Life Destruction powerhouse for quite a bit of time.

Woosh!

Several keen saber lights fused together. As the eight guards combined their power, their aura suddenly shot up drastically.

Lan Xin came into contact with this saber light and gave a stuffy cough, her beautiful face paling. Luckily, Duanmu Qun was quick of eye and hand. He slashed downward with his sword, fending off the fused sword energy that rushed towards Lan Xin.

"Very well, since you want to play so much, then this old man will accompany you!" Xing Zizan stepped forwards. With it, his aura suddenly erupted. Mu Qianyu, Mu Bingyun, and everyone else felt a great pressure pushing down on them. Xing Zizan was a first stage Life Destruction master as well as the Yin Yang Profound Palace's Vice Palace Master and the strongest powerhouse present.

With Xing Zizan's status, participating in the battles of these juniors and Revolving Core martial artists was somewhat embarrassing. But, seeing that Xing Yang had already lost control of the situation, he had no choice but to step in.

"Second Uncle, they might be related to a Holy Land somehow," Xing Yang quickly reminded.

For Duanmu Qun and those others to be so young and to also have a heaven-step treasure on them, they must have either come across a massive chance, or they must have come from a Holy Land.

"I know," Xing Zizan coldly replied. Now it was no longer the time to consider the other party's origin. Even if they did come from a Holy Land, he still had to establish his dominance.

Everybody was already at odds, swords drawn. If they could capture the other party, then they would have the advantage. But, if they could offend them and still defeat them, then that would be an even better result. In the world of martial artists, strength was everything. One's background was never as good as the person. At the very least, he had to suppress them in strength.

Xing Zizan specifically targeted Lin Ming. "So young and yet already so greedy. You dare to propose such a ridiculous request to us? This old man just wants to see whether or not you're capable of backing up your preposterous words!"

Lin Ming glanced at Xing Zizan and sneered, "Greedy? Are you talking about your own Yin Yang Profound Palace? You rented a third-grade spiritual land to Divine Phoenix Island. Even you lot feel it doesn't match their worth and on top of that you didn't even give them any training resources. With this alone, you wanted to exchange for Divine Phoenix Island's fundamental Vermillion Bird bloodline and all sorts of secret skills? You even hid your goals and plotted to annex Divine Phoenix Island! And now, you want to say that I'm the greedy one here? Should we also bow down as we hand over all of Divine Phoenix Island to you? The South Sea Demon Region is already publically trying to destroy us, and yet you try to secretly absorb us. In my eyes, there's no difference between you all!"

"Hahaha, what a well-spoken young man! Your Divine Phoenix Island came to my Yin Yang Profound Palace to rent a spiritual land and also seek refuge, so what problems are there in the conditions we presented? But you, you are unbelievably greedy. As soon as you opened that mouth of yours you demanded half of Yin Yang Profound Palace's resources. How laughable!"

Lin Ming scoffed as he derided Xing Zizan, "I really admire how thick-skinned you are. Is deceiving the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island also part of the conditions you set for Divine Phoenix Island?"

After being questioned like that, Xing Zizan could no longer keep calm. He glowered, "What an impossible pompous and arrogant junior! You keep spitting out such rude insults. Then, this old man will teach you a lesson as your elder!"

"Humph! With me here, it's not your place to teach my disciples anything!" said Mu Yuhuang, stepping in front of Lin Ming. Xing Zizan's cultivation was an entire great boundary higher than Lin Ming. At this time, Mu Yuhuang could no longer bother to be conflicted about her dealings with Yin Yang Profound Palace. Since Xing Zizan wanted to act, then she naturally had to follow him as the only one in Divine Phoenix Island who had the combat strength of a Life Destruction powerhouse. As for Mu Fengxian, although she also had a Life Destruction cultivation, her life source was too greatly damaged and now her strength had fallen to that of an ordinary late Revolving Core martial artist.

In this situation, she had to stand up in order to support those on her side.

Lin Ming only needed to look at Mu Yuhuang and Xing Zizan's contrasting auras to instantly perceive that Mu Yuhuang was simply not Xing Zizan's match. Mu Yuhuang had just broken through into Life Destruction one year before, and she hadn't yet consolidated her strength. Her foundation was still shaky. But looking at Xing Zizan, he had already been stranded at the Life Destruction level for 100 years. Now, his strength was a large cut above Mu Yuhuang.

Seeing that Mu Yuhuang was willing to stand up for him even if it meant disgracing herself, Lin Ming felt grateful for her actions. Although Divine Phoenix Island had become increasingly pitiful these last years, losing a massive amount of disciples while their resources rapidly disappeared, and dropping from a peak fourth-grade sect to a medium fourth-grade sect, one thing that never changed was Mu Yuhuang's character, proud and loyal to a fault. Even if Divine Phoenix Island was suppressed by Yin Yang Profound Palace from all sides, she would never show weakness in front of others.

Lin Ming calmly walked beside Mu Yuhuang and stood side by side with her. With a true essence sound transmission, he told her, "Sect Master, I have confidence in myself."

"Mm?"

Mu Yuhuang was startled. At that moment, Xing Zizan glared at Mu Yuhuang with contempt and said, "Mu Yuhuang, you really care too much about saving face. You simply relied on medicine to reach Life Destruction; your talent isn't even at the Saint level. Since you want to die so badly, then allow me to help you!"

"I am your opponent." Lin Ming waved his spear, gripped the shaft with one hand and pointed the shimmering white tip at Xing Zizan's eyes, his aura dominant and forceful.

Pointing at someone with the spear point was already a great provocation. Xing Zizan immediately became furious. "You really don't know what it means to die! You are arrogant and you have talent, but arrogant talents often die young! This old man will help you! Since you're a junior, then this old man won't bully the young. If you can force me to use my saber then it'll count as your win!"

In Xing Zizan's eyes, he didn't care too much about Lin Ming using that spear energy to wound Elder Sun. Even if that were his normal strength, Xing Zizan was still confident he could deal with him. Moreover, although Xing Zizan's weapon was a saber, the truth was that he could use his palm as a saber and his strength still wouldn't weaken by too much.

What he didn't notice was that when he said these words, a strange look came over Duanmu Qun's face. Lan Xin also faintly smiled, waiting to see the good play about to take place.

“Pooh! Old fool, you are far too shameless. At your age, you’re already over thirty times older than Lin Ming! Let me accompany you!” Mu Yuhuang was afraid that Lin Ming would suffer a loss. She immediately extracted her long sword, ready to fight Xing Zizan.

At this time, Mu Qianyu’s voice suddenly sounded out in Mu Yuhuang’s ear, “Sect Master, Lin Ming is very strong. As long as it’s just forcing him to use a weapon, he should be able to do that.”

Hearing Mu Qianyu’s words, Mu Yuhuang was startled. Indeed… Knowing Lin Ming, she could tell that he never acted recklessly. Even though he liked taking on challenges a bit too much, he would only do so if he had confidence in himself.

Perhaps he really could force Xing Zizan to use his weapon. If so, then even if Lin Ming couldn’t defeat Xing Zizan, it would still be possible with her help. With two against one, it would be more than enough to defeat him.

Thinking this, Mu Yuhuang gave one final look at Lin Ming before stepping back.

“Humph, since you don’t care about your life, then this old man will be rude!” Xing Zizan lifted his hands. Even without a saber, his palm saber was still incomparably sharp. As he closed his fingers together, the space around them seemed to tremble!

This degree of combat strength… Lin Ming simply didn’t place it in his eyes. He felt no threat at all from someone like Xing Zizan, or anyone else there. Within the entire Yin Yang Profound Palace, the only ones that could possibly endanger Lin Ming would be the Xing couple, the two Palace Masters.

Lifting the white spear in his hands, thunder began to flicker atop the shaft. After infusing his spear with his battle spirit and the power of thunder, Lin Ming suddenly thrust out.

Chasing Thunder!

In that instant, the entire courtyard lit up with the radiant light of thunder. A sharp and savage aura recklessly surged forward. Everyone felt as if they had gone blind, their souls completely exposed, as if they were nothing more than common mortals standing in an endless plain of cold snow.

Woosh!

Lin Ming's spear shot through space, instantly arriving in front of Xing Zizan!

How!?!?

Xing Zizan was scared witless. He was about to thrust out his palms when something felt wrong. And sure enough, when his saber energy touched Lin Ming's spear light, it shattered like a pane of glass!

Xing Zizan paled. He no longer cared about status and quickly drew a saber from his spatial ring. He fiercely bit down on his tongue, spraying out a mouthful of blood onto the saber and then slashed out!

The violent saber energy was like a storm as it rushed outward.

Kacha!

Sword and spear collided; Xing Zizan's saber was straight out cut in half!

What!?

Xing Zizan couldn't even believe this was real. He had completely forgot his rank and pulled out his weapon, hoping to keep this strike away. But just as he had struck out with his saber, even using blood essence to enhance the blade, his saber had actually been cut in half!?!?

In that split-second, Xing Zizan hadn't even had time to realize what had happened.

After the white spear shattered the saber, its momentum didn't slow at all. Without any ability to respond, Xing Zizan gave a miserable shout as he felt the cool touch of the spear light as it pierced through his chest, blood spraying out from behind!

An energy fused with battle spirit savagely poured into Xing Zizan's meridians. It tore his lungs into a mess and even crushed several of his ribs.

A crazy shockwave flushed out in all directions, completely blowing away all the walls of the meeting hall and sending every standing structure collapsing to the floor, pulverized into gravel. As for the courtyard, everything had been razed and even the roof had been blown away.

Xing Zizan spat out a mouthful of blood. On the right side of his chest, a massive bloody hole appeared, bright-red blood gushing out from it. His vision turned black, and he nearly fainted where he stood.

Chapter 697 – Hall of Flowing Blood

Chapter 697 – Hall of Flowing Blood

…

…

…

How…how could this be?

Xing Zizan covered his right chest, the blood thickly flowing through the cracks of his fingers. As he looked at his blood-soaked hands, his eyes filled with panic and disbelief.

Xing Zizan had instantly been defeated!

Behind Xing Zizan, Xing Yang was shocked speechless. He couldn't bother to figure out how Lin Ming had done this. He just knew that chills were crawling down his back. With Lin Ming's strength, killing him would only take an instant.

And before now, Lin Ming had already revealed a thick killing intent against him.

This was also natural. If Xing Yang was in Lin Ming's position and someone had thoughts to take his woman, then he too would kill or castrate his enemy.

Moreover, Lin Ming, Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin all had heaven-step weapons and likely originated from a Holy Land. In front of a Holy Land descendant, he was the same as a beggar in front of a rich young lord. For these types of people, killing commoners over things like jealousy or disputes was nothing unusual!

It could said that even if Lin Ming killed him, with the absolute suppressive strength from a Holy Land, there was nothing his parents would be able to do.

Thinking of this, Xing Yang was extremely horrified. That impact of energy just now was so amazingly intense that it should have been sensed from the main peak. But could he persist until his parents arrived?

If he died because of something like jealousy, then he really would die in an unjustified manner.

‘Capture Mu Qianyu first!’

This thought suddenly flashed through Xing Yang’s mind. He was close to Mu Qianyu, and after Lin Ming used that Chasing Thunder spear skill to severely wound Xing Zizan just now, he was now several hundred feet away.

Xing Yang grit his teeth, a fierce light suddenly bursting out from his eyes. Mu Qianyu’s cultivation was only at the early Revolving Core realm and Xing Yang was at the late Revolving Core realm. In terms of talent, Xing Yang was above Mu Qianyu, and in terms of strength, he far exceeded her.

Quietly, with the slightest movement, he took a step backwards. He sent a true essence sound transmission to the eight Revolving Core Protectors, then he suddenly launched forwards!

Mu Qianyu was Lin Ming’s lover. Naturally, he would especially care for her safety. As long as he could capture Mu Qianyu then he wouldn’t need to fear being randomly harmed or killed, and he would be able to last until his parents came.

Xing Yang was not weak. He was an Emperor-level talent with a late Revolving Core cultivation. He could be said to be a powerhouse that had reached the limits of power beneath the Life Destruction realm!

Xing Yang’s sudden attack surpassed everyone’s expectations. Lin Ming, Mu Yuhuang, and everyone else were very far from Mu Qianyu now. Since Xing Yang was the first to move, he naturally held an advantage in speed.

"Yu'er, be careful!"

Mu Fengxian cried out in alarm. At this time, Mu Fengxian was the closest to Mu Bingyun. Because her life source had been damaged, she had stood far back from the battlefield with Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun. Now that she saw Xing Yang suddenly rush towards Mu Qianyu she had no other choice but to block him!

In terms of strength, Mu Fengxian was no longer Xing Yang's match. But if she could delay him for even just a single breath of time that was enough for Lin Ming to catch up!

However, just as Mu Fengxian made her move, Xing Yang's eight Revolving Core Protector guards also made theirs!

Just now they had received Xing Yang's true essence sound transmission and were already prepared. The eight of them had trained together for a very long time and had incomparably tacit understandings with each other. As soon as one moved, all of them moved in unison.

These eight guards all had a cultivation at the mid or late Revolving Core. If they were able to set down a formation on the battlefield, then they could use this to delay even a first-stage Life Destruction master for at least ten breaths of time.

Eight saber lights fused into one, cutting towards Mu Fengxian. Right now, Mu Fengxian was only equal to an ordinary late Revolving Core martial artist. There was no way she would be able to withstand this attack!

As Mu Yuhuang saw this she became full of anxiety. "Honorable Master!"

Mu Yuhuang was still 70-80 feet away from Mu Fengxian. As a first-stage Life Destruction master, she could quickly cross this distance in a brief moment. However, no matter how fast Mu Yuhuang's steps were, it was still impossible for her to respond in time to that saber light!

As Mu Yuhuang's feet began to move, the eight Revolving Core Protector's saber lights had shot in front of Mu Fengxian. At the same time, Xing Yang had also appeared in front of Mu Qianyu, his hands reaching out for her soft, jade-white neck!

Mu Qianyu had experienced battles both great and small; she did not panic in the least. She revolved all of her true essence to the limit and flew out towards Lin Ming. But the difference in strength was too great and Xing Yang also had the advantage of surprise. In that instant, Xing Yang was only a foot away from Mu Qianyu.

Xing Yang's eyes flashed with brutal light. In order to ensure the absolute success of grabbing her, this hold contained enough strength such that it was certain injure her.

"You want to die!?" Lin Ming's eyes widened as an unparalleled, pure killing intent flashed in them. His feet pushed off and then unbelievable scene occurred. He was hundreds of feet away, but distance seemed to lose all meaning beneath Lin Ming's movements. He flash stepped right to Xing Yang's side, the spear in his hand already slamming down into Xing Yang's wrist.

The heaven-step treasure struck Xing Yang's flesh and blood body.

Puff!

With a light sound, Xing Yang's wrist was crushed broken!

"Ahhhhh!"

With severe pain streaking throughout his body, Xing Yang grasped his wrist with a miserable scream as he tumbled away. Lin Ming didn't even bother caring about him. Because behind him, not too far away, Mu Fengxian's sword was about to collide with the saber light of those eight Revolving Core Protectors.

As for Lin Ming, not only was he far away from Mu Fengxian but he had just used his momentum now to stop Xing Yang. In this case, no matter how skilled Lin Ming was in the Concept of Space, he still wouldn't have enough time to make it.

If Mu Fengxian bore the brunt of this attack, at most she would be injured; it wouldn't endanger her life. But Mu Fengxian was already old and had damaged her life source. Even a minor wound now was not a trivial matter.

Lin Ming fiercely clenched his teeth and condensed his true essence. With the support of his battle spirit, the Asura force field erupted!

A force field was a special existence. In a vacuum without resistance, it traveled at the speed of light. To this force field, a 70-80 foot distance held no significance!

Bang!

Under the fires of Lin Ming's anger, the force field's energy spread out like an unstoppable tsunami.

Within the Asura force field, all power was suppressed. This included organs, muscles, bones, true essence, and even the soul!

The eight Revolving Core protectors were swallowed up by the surging waves of this Asura force field. Immediately, all of them felt as if they had smashed into an invisible brick wall.

Lin Ming's strength was in-between the first and second stage of Life Destruction. Now, with the increased power of his battle spirit, his Asura force field was comparable to the original force field within the King's Cage. If a weak martial artist were trapped within this force field they would simply perish on the spot!

Although the eight Revolving Core Protectors had formed a battle array, this battle array's function was only to combine their saber light attacks together. As for this overwhelming force field that came instantly crashing down on them, they had no defense against it at all!

"Ahh!"

Several middle Revolving Core martial artists couldn't withstand such an immense pressure suddenly weighing down on them. They fell over, gurgling blood!

This was just like an ordinary person suddenly appearing on one of the Sky Spill Continent's stars where gravity was dozens or even hundreds of times stronger. Their organs, skeleton, dantian, spiritual sea, everything that comprised them would instantly come under a massive wave of pressure several dozen times greater than normal!

Peng!

A mid Revolving Core martial artist's Revolving Core suddenly shattered, all of the true essence in his body suddenly vanishing. At his side, another mid Revolving Core martial artist's heart stopped beating because of the heavy pressure. All of the blood vessels in his body burst apart and blood gushed out of his head!

Soon after, for all those Revolving Core martial artists, whether it was their dantian, heart, or spiritual sea, underneath the immense pressure of the Asura force field, everything began collapsing, instantly killing them all. Even the guard captain was bleeding from his ears. His face was paler than death and his body was limp as he almost fell to the ground.

After being devoured into that Asura force field, the battle formation of those eight Revolving Core Protectors naturally broke. As for that attack that was aimed towards Mu Fengxian, it no longer held any real threat and was easily countered by her.

"You..."

That late Revolving Core guard captain kneeled on the ground, barely supporting himself with his saber. He bit his lips as he looked at Lin Ming, his eyes full of fear and horror.

An uncaring expression remained in Lin Ming's face. A blood-red light flashed in his eyes.

The Death God force field erupted!

The Death God force field superimposed onto the Asura force field. Although this was simply stacking them together, it was still enough to multiply their strength.

The guard captain only felt as if he had fallen into a blood pond from hell, drowning in its bloody waters, the manifested killing intent so thick and pure that it was swallowing him alive.

This so-called killing intent was in truth the will and desire of a martial artist to utterly extinguish the life of an enemy.

When martial artists desired to kill someone, they would first produce this will within their hearts, thus sending out a thick killing intent. When this killing intent coalesced into material essence, one could directly cut off the life of another without even moving a step!

The Asura force field could be said to be a crushing suppression of a martial artist's body, true essence, dantian, energy, and spiritual sea.

As for the Death God force field, that was the will to snuff out a martial artist's source of life. If one's will wasn't firm or their cultivation was insufficient, then once enveloped by this Death God force field, they would immediately be killed where they stood.

As the guard captain was simultaneously covered by the Death God force field and Asura force field, he vomited a mouthful of blood and his eyes turned white. He crumpled onto the ground, his fate unknown.

As Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian saw this, both of them were shocked speechless.

Just how was this possible?

How had Lin Ming done this? Mu Bingyun also looked at Lin Ming, her indifferent eyes now filling with awe, horror, and complete disbelief.

When Lin Ming had sent a late Revolving Core Elder flying back with just a flick of his finger, that was still a movement, and he might have possibly even used his spear energy to wound him. Although it was truly the ability of a monstrous genius, it was still understandable.

But just now, Lin Ming had only turned around with death in his eyes, and that entire group of guards had suddenly and inexplicably died!

That was a battle array that could withstand a first-stage Life Destruction powerhouse for a period of time!

This had completely surpassed their understanding.

“Lin Ming, you...” After seeing this terrifying strength, Mu Fengxian looked at Lin Ming as if she didn’t recognize him anymore. This young man had surpassed all reckoning. In just two and a half years, Lin Ming had actually protected her, whereas she should be protecting him as he was her junior!

Not too far away, Duanmu Qun sucked in a deep breath, secretly admiring Lin Ming. Lin Ming’s Heavenly Demon force field had already gained a standard of proficiency at which he could freely use it and control it to a minute degree. In that moment when the force field had erupted like a devastating tsunami, it had instantly killed several Revolving Core Protectors. But as for himself, who had been standing just a few dozen feet away, all he felt was a light breeze without even a hint of suppression.

Lin Ming’s absolute control of his force field was bewildering!

Without a doubt, this was all because of Lin Ming’s powerful soul force and also because of his battle spirit.

Because he had formed his own battle spirit, Lin Ming’s will was exceedingly powerful. The will was in itself a kind of force field, and the battle spirit was a manifestation of that energy. Thus, a battle spirit could easily be fused into the Heavenly Demon force field, drastically increasing its strength.

At this time, the broken-handed Xing Yang was still rolling on the ground, crying in pain. Lin Ming sneered, angled his long spear, and slowly walked towards Xing Yang....

Chapter 698 – Threaten

Chapter 698 – Threaten

…

…

…

The heaven-step white spear, along with the battle spirit fused into it—just what sort of terrifying smashing strength did it have? From Xing Ying's elbow and downwards, his entire arm had been ruined. All of his bones there had been crushed to smithereens and his arm looked like a pile of gooey mud; even the tiles had been shattered by the force.

Xing Yang held onto his wrist as he howled in excruciating pain. If he had top-quality medicines, then it would still be possible to rejoin his hand. But he would have to slowly readjust in order to restore it to its original level. This would require require a large amount of time and would greatly hinder his growth.

"You! You will pay for this!" Xing Yang spat out between clenched teeth as he saw Lin Ming walk towards him. But in truth his heart was quaking with immense fear. He was afraid that Lin Ming would kill him or castrate him on a sudden impulse. It wouldn't be strange for a powerful young lord of a Holy Land to do so.

Seeing Lin Ming near, the aura that Lin Ming exuded gave a deep sense of suppression at Xing Yang.

Xing Yang tried to be angry, but his voice still trembled as he said, "What are you going to do!? The disciples of Divine Phoenix Island are currently within Yin Yang Profound Palace! If you kill me then none of them will leave here alive!"

When Lin Ming heard Xing Yang's threat, he merely sneered and raised his spear. Ever since he had experienced the Blood Slaughter Steppes for over two years, Lin Ming was inevitably affected by the killing aura there, even though his mind was firm. This resulted in a more bloodthirsty and vicious him than previous.

Just now, Xing Yang had attacked Mu Qianyu, and those eight other Revolving Core Protectors had jointly attacked Mu Fengxian. In this critical situation, all of the anger and murderous feelings that Lin Ming had been suppressing had suddenly erupted. He hated beyond measure those who attacked people important to him. For this, he was willing to completely unleash his strength and annihilate all of this enemies. This was also the reason that he had suddenly turned hostile against Yin Yang Profound Palace.

"Lin Ming, don't be so rash." Mu Qianyu's figure flashed and she appeared in front of Lin Ming. She said to him with a true essence sound transmission, "If you kill some Protectors of Yin Yang Profound Palace, that won't yet place you in an irreconcilable position. But if you kill Xing Yang, then this will become an absolute blood feud with Yin Yang Profound Palace. For better or worse, Yin Yang Profound Palace is a fifth-grade sect. No matter how strong you are, it's impossible for you to protect everyone at once. Once Xuan Wuji leaves his seclusion, it will be dangerous if we don't have some reliable foothold. You are not yet Xuan Wuji's match!"

"Also, if news of you leaving leaks and Nanyun Wang or Great Zen Temple finds out, and you also have a deep enmity with Yin Yang Profound Palace, you will probably be backstabbed by your enemies...." Mu Qianyu nervously spoke.

Although Nanyun Wang wouldn't engage in some life or death battle with Lin Ming just because of some resentment from the past, it would still inevitably lay down in a knot in his heart. If Lin Ming provoked Yin Yang Profound Palace now, that was the same as simultaneously offending the four great influences of the South Sea Demon Region, Great Zen Temple, Nanyun Wang, and Yin Yang Profound Palace. That was the same as Lin Ming becoming enemies with all of the powerful forces near the South Horizon Region! How would he still continue living!

Even Duanmu Qun joined in with some advice. “Brother Lin, this Xing Yang is the child of Yin Yang Profound Palace’s Palace Master? If you kill him then Divine Phoenix Island and Yin Yang Profound Palace will become as irreconcilable as water and fire. We and you might be safe, but there are many Divine Phoenix Island disciples who are at the Houtian realm and Xiantian realm. They will not be in a safe position.”

After Lin Ming listened to Duanmu Qun’s words, he appeared neutral. Suddenly, from a static position, he shot out, his fist crashing into Xing Yang’s chest. Lin Ming’s vibrating true essence poured into Xing Yang’s meridians, causing Xing Yang to vomit a mouthful of blood and his eyeballs to bulge.

“You…you…”

Xing Yang pointed a trembling finger at Lin Ming, his mouth flapping like a dying fish even as fear filled his widened eyes.

Lin Ming rubbed his spatial ring and took out a pill. With a flick of his finger, it directly shot into Xing Yang’s mouth.

Xing Yang wasn’t even able to respond before he swallowed this pill.

His expression changed, his hue turning pallid as he asked in a panic, “What did you make me eat!?”

Lin Ming didn’t bother responding. This medicine that he just force fed Xing Yang was an energy scattering pill he had taken from the corpse of an Imp High Lord. The Imps were experts at soul techniques as well as all sorts of alchemical skills and medicines. Their alchemy system was immensely different from those of humans’. Finding or creating a cure for this poison would be difficult.

This sort of energy scattering pill was used to make the user’s body completely weak and useless. The level wasn’t too high. If Xing Yang ate this pill in his peak form, it wouldn’t have too great an effect. But, if Lin Ming repeatedly “cared” for Xing Yang, making it so that he remained seriously injured, the effects of this pill would be obvious.

“Lin Ming, what are you planning on doing!” Mu Yuhuang was worried to death. As soon as Lin Ming met Xing Yang, a fierce melee had suddenly broken out and then turned into a group battle. She didn’t even have time to dwell on what was happening before a great disaster had occurred. Now it would be difficult for this to end in any good way.

“Honorable Sect Master, it is too late for me to elaborate in detail. Please have all the disciples pack up their belongings and stand by for further orders. The Life Destruction Elders of Yin Yang Profound Palace will soon catch up.”

“Pack their belongings? You want to hold Xing Yang hostage to leave Yin Yang Profound Palace?” Mu Yuhuang’s thin eyebrows shot up. This really was an absurd idea.

Currently, Divine Phoenix Island basically didn’t have anywhere to go. Nearly all of the available spiritual lands were occupied by other sects. The higher level a spiritual land, the higher grade of people stationed there. Without a spiritual land, Divine Phoenix Island would lose the faith and will of the people. Then it would only be a matter of time before everything fell apart.

At this time, she felt several powerful energies quickly approaching. Mu Yuhuang’s expression changed. She was worried that Lin Ming would stay here. Still, she first lit a sound transmitting talisman to spread Lin Ming’s orders to everyone.

As for Xing Yang, who was lying on the ground, as he sensed the energies of those Yin Yang Profound Palace powerhouses close in, he was overjoyed. The high level characters had finally arrived!

And judging from the fluctuations of these energies, one of them was his mother.

He was saved. He was finally saved!

Xing Yang cried out. As long as his mother arrived he could be saved. Although his arm was cut off, it could still be joined back together. Thus, as he withstood the pain and mental anguish, he firmly decided to pay back Lin Ming ten times his due.

Thinking of this, Xing Yang looked at Lin Ming, his eyes suffusing with a manic hatred. “Boy! You are done for! If you kneel down and beg for mercy, then cut off your hands and legs, I will leave you your cheap life!”

Xing Yang’s mind had long fallen into madness and fury. He only wanted to waste Lin Ming now. And the reason he said he would leave Lin Ming his cheap life was to keep him alive after he was crippled with his limbs cut off. And then, in front of Lin Ming, he would wantonly ravage Mu Qianyu and also Mu Bingyun. What revenge was more cruel and depraved then completely crippling a person and then raping their wife in front of them?

‘Just you wait! I will make you experience such suffering that you will bite off your own tongue to commit suicide!’

All sorts of cruel and insidious thoughts crossed through Xing Yang’s mind.

Lin Ming could also feel this. He coldly glanced at Xing Yang, his eyes filling with killing intent.

Originally, he hadn’t planned on beating Xing Yang into this condition. However, because Xing Yang had tried to grab Mu Qianyu to make her a hostage, Lin Ming had become incensed. As a result, he had cut off Xing Yang’s arm, making Xing Yang’s hatred towards him even deeper.

Once hatred reached this degree, it would be extremely difficult to resolve. Lin Ming was also disinclined to fix it. The most simple, direct, and ideal solution would be to eliminate him as soon as he found a chance. But this was not the time.

Bang!

The other side of the courtyard exploded. Xing Can appeared there, leading a group of four old men behind her. The high-speed flight here had stirred up a massive cloud of dust and dirt in the air.

Because all the structures here had nearly been destroyed in the previous fight, Xing Can was able to see Xing Yang's sorry state.

Seeing her own son's hand cut off and the eight Protectors dead on the floor, her face became as cold as the arctic frost with killing intent surging outwards from her.

Before she had even spoken, Xing Yang was already trying to crawl towards her, struggling on the floor as he writhed towards her, "Mother! Mother, save me!"

Shha!

A cold spear edge suddenly touched Xing Yang's neck, drawing a fine line of blood. Xing Yang stiffened, no longer daring to crawl any further.

Like this, Lin Ming indifferently held his spear down, resting it against Xing Yang's cold and pale neck.

"What do you want?" Xing Can's eyes blazed as she looking at Lin Ming, the frostiness in her eyes seeming as if it came from the ninth level of the abyss. Although she was furious, she still noticed many details. The spear in Lin Ming's hand was actually a heaven-step treasure; it was even better than her own weapon.

In addition, Xing Zizan had been at the first stage of Life Destruction for a hundred years already. Yet, he had a hole through his chest and was lying prone on the ground, grievously wounded. By all reasoning, the strongest person in Divine Phoenix Island right now was Mu Yuhuang. But, even Mu Yuhuang would absolutely not have the strength to do this. And, looking at the wound on Xing Zizan's chest, it seemed to be from a spear. Had that been done by that boy?

Looking at him, he seemed just over 20 years old and his cultivation was at the early Revolving Core realm. It shouldn't have been possible, but no matter the case, this boy was undoubtedly a top-level genius. One that surpassed even Xing Yang.

Xing Can's feelings mixed anger and killing intent. If Xing Yang didn't have a spear pointed at his neck, then she would have already tried to kill Lin Ming. If she allowed such an extraordinary young elite like Lin Ming freely grow, then in just a few dozen years he would definitely become a terrifying enemy.

"Don't move. Otherwise, I may tense up and my hands might tremble," Lin Ming calmly said as he kept his spear pointed at Xing Yang. In terms of strength, Xing Can had been in the second stage of Life Destruction for over a hundred years. He was likely not her match. But the key issue here was Mu Qianyu, Mu Bingyun, and everyone else. In front of Xing Can, they wouldn't have any ability to resist her.

"I hate others threatening me the most. Release him now and I will leave you your life!" Xing Can drew out the sword from her spatial ring, pointing it straight at Lin Ming. Suddenly, her aura erupted like a billowing tide. If normal Revolving Core martial artists faced this aura they would be hard pressed to move and wouldn't even be able to steady themselves, let alone keep their spear pressed against Xing Yang's neck as a threat.

However, against this pressure, Lin Ming only felt as if a cool spring breeze had skimmed past his cheek, simply not even feeling it at all. He merely said in a chilling tone, "Move again, and prepare to gather your son's corpse."

As Lin Ming spoke he released an invisible killing intent; this was the Death God force field. Although he wasn't activating it with his full strength, it was still enough for Xing Can to feel as if she had fallen into a bloody pond of hell, leaving her feeling afraid. Even the two first-stage Life Destruction Elders and two late Revolving Core Elders felt scared. They looking at each other, traces of fear in their eyes.

Was this really the aura of an early Revolving Core martial artist? And just why wasn't he even remotely affected by Xing Can's pressure just now?

"Who are you? Where did you come from?" Xing Can asked with a grimace. She felt as if this situation was becoming complicated. This fellow obviously wanted to stall for time. As for what he was waiting for, she had no idea.

“I am Lin Ming, from Divine Phoenix Island,” Lin Ming calmly replied. He had never planned on hiding his status to begin with, nor could he have.

Chapter 699 – Traveling Far and Wide, Only To Find It So Easily

Chapter 699 – Traveling Far and Wide, Only To Find It So Easily

…

…

…

“Lin Ming…you are Lin Ming!?” Xing Can was stunned as she heard Lin Ming give his name. Then she suddenly recalled everything at once. Two and a half years ago, the South Sea Demon Region had desperately searched for a youth called Lin Ming who had shaken the foundations of the South Sea, even posting a massively astronomical reward for him. The reason for this was that Lin Ming had entered into the Demon God Imperial Palace with a gaggle of Life Destruction old monsters, and then had bizarrely gone missing. The two immeasurably precious treasures of the Demon God Imperial Palace had also disappeared along with him.

The South Sea Demon Region believed it was highly likely that Lin Ming had taken these treasures.

But Divine Phoenix Island had announced that Lin Ming had died. Nanyun Wang and Great Zen Temple seemed to think this too, and didn’t desire to waste time searching for Lin Ming. Only Xuan Wuji had been willing to use an immense amount of manpower and over half a year of time to do so. Finally, after the search was other, nothing had come from it and it had been acknowledged that Lin Ming had truly died.

Now, as Xing Can heard this youth suddenly call himself Lin Ming, she thought up a slight possibility. Lin Ming had likely tricked Xuan Wuji and all those others in the Demon God

Imperial Palace those two and a half years ago. Then he had somehow escaped and found an isolated hiding spot where he had gone into closed-door seclusion for over two years, his strength rapidly rising.

Thinking of this, Xing Can sucked in a breath of cold air. It was said that Lin Ming had been a peak Houtian martial artist. In front of those old Life Destruction monsters, he was nothing more than a little newborn baby. Yet how had managed to capture two precious treasures and also safely escape the Demon God Imperial Palace?

In this mere two and a half years of time, how did he reach Revolving Core from the peak of Houtian?

All sorts of thoughts and scenarios flashed through Xing Can's mind. Currently, this Lin Ming in front of her was an incomparably mysterious existence. He was absolutely not some simple youth!

But on the other hand, now that she knew Lin Ming's identity that meant that he also didn't have any relations with a Holy Land. Thus, she had no need to fear his origin.

"Lin Min…I see. Xuan Wuji wants to tear you to shreds, and yet you dare to appear before me! You truly love striding to your death! I will warn you one last time. Immediately release my son, otherwise, I won't even let you have a complete corpse left over, and all of the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island will also be buried along with you! Your lover, your family, everyone you ever knew or loved will be sent to the South Sea Demon Region! I'm sure that Xuan Wuji will be very, very happy to see them.

Xing Can's lips curved into a cruel and sinister smile. The unknown enemy was the most fearful. But now she knew Lin Ming's background. Although Lin Ming's talent was extraordinary and he did indeed have some ability, a commoner was still a commoner. Without a powerful background, just what waves could a merely 20-something youth make when facing the millennium-long legacy of a fifth-grade sect?

Underneath Lin Ming's spear, Xing Yang felt exceptionally wronged as he heard Lin Ming's identity. If he had known that he was just a little, young disciple of a fourth-grade sect, then he never would have feared him to begin with.

If it were a Holy Son of a Holy Land who had beaten him into this state, then he would have been able to acknowledge that. After all, against a Holy Son, he was inferior in background, talent, resources, and tutelage. The Holy Son's status would also have been much loftier and nobler. If so, then he could accept it.

But as for Lin Ming…he was only a commoner of humble origin. To think that some little boy from Divine Phoenix Island had made him into such a mess…Xing Yang felt a fire raging in his soul.

"Lin Ming! So it was you all along! So you just wanted to show your anger? I have to say that you are an absolute idiot! Because of you, Divine Phoenix Island will no longer obtain the refuge of Yin Yang Profound Palace! On the contrary, Yin Yang Profound Palace will join forces with the South Sea Demon Region to completely annihilate Divine Phoenix Island! Your master, your little lover, all of them will die a miserable death because of you! Hahahahaha!"

Xing Yang wantonly laughed, his face twisted gruesomely. Only by verbally attacking Lin Ming like this would he be able to soothe his state of mind.

"You think that with the little strength you have you can fight on behalf of Divine Phoenix Island and obtain more benefits from us? How ridiculous! Because of your stupid approach, Divine Phoenix Island will pay the ultimate price!"

Lin Ming remained expressionless as Xing Yang spat out these words. But Mu Yuhuang's and Mu Fengxian's complexions became much uglier. What Xing Yang said was true. If Lin Ming could only form a stalemate like this by holding Xing Yang hostage, then that was basically a meaningless action. Sooner or later, Lin Ming would have to admit defeat. Then Yin Yang Profound Palace would certainly chase him down and kill him. Moreover, he had now given Yin Yang Profound Palace a righteous and valid reason to deal with Divine

Phoenix Island. Before this, Yin Yang Profound Palace could have been considered an orthodox sect. In order to peacefully coexist with the other sects around it, it didn't dare to forcefully plunder all of Divine Phoenix Island's resources. But now, even ravaging them would be justified!

If Lin Ming didn't compromise, then he could only continue to take Xing Yang hostage and lead all the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island in leaving Yin Yang Profound Palace. For such a massive group of people, it was simply a dream to think that they could hide from Xing Ji and Xing Can, whose combined power could compare with a third-stage Life Destruction martial artist. Moreover, if they left, then Divine Phoenix Island wouldn't have any place they could settle. Their only choice then would be to dissolve the sect, everyone going their own away. They would either be forced to return home or join some other sect to continue their path of martial arts.

If so, then Divine Phoenix Island would be no more.

Relative to the anxious and worrying Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian, Lin Ming was actually very calm. He didn't even bother to return Xing Yang, instead keep his posture and remaining still, not revealing what he was planning at all.

For Xing Yang, Lin Ming's silence was nothing but a sign of his fear and signal of defeat. His laugh became increasingly loud and carefree. At this time, it was as if Lin Ming wasn't the one pointing the spear at his neck, but he instead was the one with the spear to Lin Ming's neck.

"Are you feeling guilty now? Are you planning on taking me hostage and leaving? Does your Divine Phoenix Island have a place to go? Even if it does, can you handle the South Sea Demon Region hunting you down? Hahahaha!" Xing Yang taunted, giving vent to all of his pent-up hate and anger. The more miserable Lin Ming became, the more smooth his thoughts would be.

Xing Can also stepped forward and coldly warned, "Immediately release my son and I might only cripple all your martial arts and let you keep your whole corpse. I might even let your Divine Phoenix Island continue staying in Yin Yang Profound Palace. Otherwise, there won't be a chicken or dog left in Divine Phoenix Island once I'm finished!'

Xing Can's voice was relentless. No one doubted she had the courage to follow up her words.

In terms of the battlefield, Yin Yang Profound Palace obviously held the upper hand. It was impossible for Lin Ming to continue this stalemate.

Xing Yang depravedly smiled at Mu Qianyu as he heard his mother issue out this threat. He could see that Mu Qianyu was still a virgin. This was far too perfect. With Lin Ming rousing up so much trouble, it was the same as gifting both Mu sisters to him together. As for the secret techniques of Divine Phoenix Island, they would be successively obtained now.

Mu Qianyu frowned as she felt Xing Yang's eyes on her, her face filled with absolute loathing and disgust.

But, when Xing Yang saw Mu Qianyu's expression, he was even happier.

'Mu Qianyu, I really feel sad for you. You actually ended up liking someone like Lin Ming, a stronger but stupid idiot. If you are willing to serve me with your sister in the future, then perhaps I might allow Divine Phoenix Island some shelter here.'

As Xing Yang thought this, the scene of both women serving him in bed appeared in his mind. Not only would he receive the service of the two talented twin sisters, but he would even be able to make love to them. Xing Yang was thoroughly anticipating this, not least that he would also receive the bloodline inheritance from the two Mu sisters.

If he weren't afraid of angering Lin Ming and having Lin Ming kill him and drag him down just before Lin Ming's own death, then Xing Yang would have already described this dream-like scene to Lin Ming.

But as Xing Yang was weaving this beautiful dream in his mind, his eyes suddenly shrank. On the distant horizon, he could see a vague shadow rapidly approaching. It started off the size of a palm, but in the blink of an eye, it was the size of a house.

"Mm? What is that?"

It wasn't just Xing Yang that noticed the shadow on the horizon, but everyone else did too. It was obviously very far away from everyone, but its body already seemed as big as a palace. Because of its terrifying size and its fast flying speed, all of the surrounding clouds were wiped away.

Xing Can and the others were all stunned. This seemed like a massive, deep sea monster, but they could clearly make out fishlike fins, massive wings, and even the mouth of a whale.

"What is that thing?"

Xing Can and the others weren't sure, but Mu Yuhuang's and Mu Fengxian's expressions had already greatly changed.

In their entire lives, they would never forget this creature. Its attack had ripped open Divine Phoenix Island's great protective array, destroying the 3000-year-old inheritance of Divine Phoenix Island in a single stroke.

"Giant Leviathan!!!"

Mu Yuhuang shouted out in fright as she reflexively unsheathed her sword, her expression grim. She had already been conditioned to associate this great beast with the attacks of the South Sea Demon Region. But, as she thought about it some more, the Giant Leviathan had already been conquered by that 30-year-old Divine Kingdom Crown Prince, so why was it coming here at this time? Was this an enemy or a friend?

"Giant Leviathan?" Xing Can's eyebrows shot up. "So this is the Giant Leviathan! It truly lives up to its name!"

In these past few years, the Giant Leviathan had made too great a name for itself in the South Sea battlefield.

In terms of one-on-one combat, the beast was lacking. The Giant Leviathan's uniform speed and attacks made it so that it couldn't prevent a second-stage Life Destruction master from escaping.

But, in terms of its ability to destroy a sect, the Giant Leviathan could be called an invincible war beast. Even if it were the fifth-grade South Sea Demon Region, they also didn't have any strength to resist, equally being destroyed by this Giant Leviathan.

"The Divine Kingdom Crown Prince should be riding the Giant Leviathan. Why would he come to my Yin Yang Profound Palace?" Xing Can was alarmed. Within the Profound Province, the only fifth-grade sect here was the Yin Yang Profound Palace. The Divine Kingdom Crown Prince was definitely looking for them.

'Could it be that the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince needs us to help with some matter?'

As Xing Can thought of this, Xing Can couldn't help but look forwards to this. The Divine Kingdom Crown Prince was indeed strong, but if he wanted to search for something within the Profound Province or handle some other matters, then it would certainly be easier to use some of the local powers.

Several days ago, they hadn't been able to make contact with the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince to form a relationship with him. But now, the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince had actually walked right up to their door!

If they could establish good relations with this Divine King Crown Prince, the benefits to their Yin Yang Profound Palace were obvious.

'To think we've searched so far and wide for nothing, and yet it's so easily found here!'

As Xing Can thought this, she was prepared to immediately solve the problem that was Lin Ming. If the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince saw what was happening here, then she feared his first impression of them would be greatly damaged. If even the Little Palace Master was captured, how could the Divine Prince still trust their sect?

“First, several Elders should seal up Little Swallow Mountain with an array. Do not let the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince see what is happening here!”

Xing Can sent a true essence sound transmission to the four Elders behind her. Currently, solving this problem in a short time was clearly impossible. She could only cover it up first.

Chapter 700 – Divine Kingdom Crown Prince

Chapter 700 – Divine Kingdom Crown Prince

…

…

…

"Yes, Palace Master!" The four Great Elders quickly laid down a simple array formation. This array formation could easily be broken by the likes of the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince, but he shouldn't do something so impolite to begin with.

The four Elders linked their fingers and waggled them together, forming a series of array symbols that shot forth and formed a massive barrier of light that enveloped the entire Little Swallow Mountain.

Lin Ming was a bit confused when he saw this; what were they doing?

Xing Can had spoken to the four Elders with a true essence sound transmission. As such, Lin Ming had absolutely no idea why they were setting up tricks like this.

"We're good!"

The four Elders smiled confidently as they replied with a true essence sound transmission. They had great trust in the speed and the quality of the array formation they had laid.

"Mm, very good. Palace Master Xing Ji had some business to attend to, so he was away. However, I've already sent out the news about what's happened here right now so he should be returning soon. This must all be handled to ensure the safety of the Little Palace Master. Also, nothing must go wrong with this meeting with the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince."

Xing Can quickly told the four Elders with a true essence sound transmission. But then, her complexion suddenly changed. The Giant Leviathan was directly rushing towards Little Swallow Mountain and not the main peak of Yin Yang Profound Palace.

Little Swallow Mountain was only a hundred miles away from the main peak of Yin Yang Profound Mountain. By the time that Xing Can had discovered where the Giant Leviathan was heading, with its speed, it had already paused over the skies of Little Swallow Mountain.

With a body that was several dozens of miles long, the Giant Leviathan gave off a terrifying energy. This was truly a great sense of oppression.

“Damn!” Xin Can panicked. The Divine Kingdom Crown Prince was acting completely contrary to common sense. Little Swallow Mountain was so chaotic right now… how should she clean up this mess?

At this moment, Xing Can saw two black-clothed men jump down from the Giant Leviathan. Both of them had a cultivation at the first stage of Life Destruction.

“Those are the servants of the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince! To have first stage Life Destruction martial artists as servants, that is truly worthy of a Divine Kingdom Crown Prince!”

This was what everyone was thinking. It had to be known that within Yin Yang Profound Palace, there were only 10 Life Destruction powerhouses in total. Because there were so few, a majority of the Yin Yang Profound Palace’s Elders were substituted by late Revolving Core martial artists. This was also the reason that the Yin Yang Profound Palace had been mocked by Lan Xin.

Xing Can was about to fly up to meet them, but she suddenly stiffened. She could feel that these two black-clothed old men’s auras were mixed with a deep and heavy killing intent!

“Mm?”

Xing Can was shocked. Could this Divine Kingdom Crown Prince have evil intentions in mind?

If so, then they were in trouble. But, that shouldn't be right. The Yin Yang Profound Palace had been careful about its appearance for the last thousand years. Even if they had offended one of the four Divine Kingdoms somehow, it still shouldn't be to the level where they would become so violent and murderous.

As Xing Can was surprised, unsure of what was happening, she suddenly glimpsed the mark of a demon on the two Elder's chest. These black demon heads were surrounded by a flame-like pattern.

This… were these South Sea Demon Region Elders?

How was this possible?

As Xing Can was startled, she saw that Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian's complexions had completely changed. They both drew out their swords, and their violent reactions confirmed Xing Can's guess. These two were without a doubt South Sea Demon Region Elders!

"Be careful!"

Mu Yuhuang shouted as she pushed Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun behind her.

Could the South Sea Demon Region be attacking? They had just suffered a serious defeat so why would they recklessly attack Yin Yang Profound Palace? Did Xuan Wuji finally leave his seclusion?

Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian tightly grasped their swords, their faces pallid. Mu Bingyun was also on full alert.

The two South Sea Demon Region Elders were extremely fast. They were middle-upper first stage Life Destruction powerhouses that had been stranded there for 100 years now.

They dove down like hawks, falling straight behind Lin Ming, not even glancing at Mu Yuhuang's sword.

"Demon One and Demon Two greet master!"

The two South Sea Demon Region Elders, one left and one right, bowed to Lin Ming, then extracted their weapons and faced Xing Can.

Hearing them call Lin Ming master, everyone besides Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and Feng Shen were dumbfounded. Even Xing Yang's chin nearly fell down.

Mu Qianyu understood how strong Lin Ming was, but she didn't know why these two South Sea Demon Region Elders would call him master.

These were first stage Life Destruction powerhouses! Within the entire Yin Yang Profound Palace, there were only 10 Life Destruction martial artists. Even the South Sea Demon Region didn't have that many.

Why would they take Lin Ming as their master? What was going on here?

Xing Can's eyes widened, her eyelids jumping straight up. The sword in her hand faintly trembled. She was not an idiot. After connecting the dots, she suddenly realized a possibility!

"You… you are the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince!?"

These words shocked everyone present. Mu Yuhuang and Mu Fengxian were dazed for a moment before they snapped out of it. Before now, the sudden changes in events had confused them all. They were only worried about how to manage the situation. But now that they thought about it, besides Lin Ming's age, he really did have many similarities with the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince!

Mu Fengxian and Mu Yuhuang glanced at each other, disbelief scrawled on their faces. They knew that Lin Ming was a dragon in a pool, but they never thought that the truth would be so exaggerated. They had simply underestimated him far too much. Lin Ming had only left for two and a half years, but when he returned his cultivation had reached a Revolving Core realm cultivation. With just his strength, he stole away the Giant Leviathan, razed the South Sea Demon Region, and was now resisting the Yin Yang Profound Palace with the Giant Leviathan!

Mu Bingyun gave Lin Ming a deep look and then glanced at her sister before putting away her sword, not sure what to do.

“I am a Divine Kingdom Crown Prince?” Lin Ming asked, slightly puzzled. But soon enough, he was able to deduce just why everyone had assumed this. He didn’t show much expression, instead, he sent out some simple orders to the slave seals of the two South Sea Demon Region Elders. With these two Elders, in addition to himself, he wouldn’t fear Xing Can even if they fought. Moreover, he also had Xing Yang as his hostage.

Lin Ming had originally come to Yin Yang Profound Palace to reunite with Mu Qianyu and the others. He never knew that Yin Yang Profound Palace had been trying to subtly swallow up Divine Phoenix Island and had also forced them into this situation. The Giant Leviathan was massive so he naturally couldn’t bring it with him everywhere. When Lin Ming had visited Yin Yang Profound Palace, he had done so with a friendly mindset. Thus, he didn’t bring the Giant Leviathan here to intimidate Yin Yang Profound Palace, only letting it rest in the deep sea.

It was only after he met Mu Qianyu and learned about Divine Phoenix Island’s situation did he issue out an order that night, having the Giant Leviathan arrive at the Yin Yang Profound Palace. This was why he had stalled for time and had taken Xing Yang hostage to do so.

Xing Can grit her teeth, completely unsure of what to do. The sudden changes in events had completely surpassed her every expectation. She thought that everything was in her grasp and that Lin Ming would never be able to escape her reaches, but now that had suddenly changed and her Yin Yang Profound Palace was at an absolute disadvantage.

Thinking about this, Xing Can felt her heart twist with bitter regret. If she had known about all this earlier, she wouldn't have dared to try annexing Divine Phoenix Island. Although the Giant Leviathan wasn't extraordinary in single combat, it had a near invincible defense. Under the Divine Sea realm, it was extremely difficult to cause major damage to it. But, as long as this beast attacked, it would be able to completely destroy Yin Yang Profound Palace's great protective array.

At this time, underneath Lin Ming's spear, Xing Yang felt his heart fading away like a dying fire. He had never thought that the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince that he had been doing everything to form a friendly relationship with, was actually Lin Ming.

'Heavens, were you playing with me?'

"You… what do you want?" Xing Can asked in a low voice. Under the immense pressure of the Giant Leviathan, she had no choice but to capitulate.

Lin Ming said, "First, return the Vermillion Birds. Second, all Yin Yang Profound Palace disciples that violated the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island will be turned over for punishment. Third, hand over one-third of the fire-attribute medicines and spirit earth from your medicine garden to help the Vermillion Birds restore their blood essence."

Lin Ming unhurriedly spoke his request.

"You want one-third of our medicine garden? You think this is a dream or something?" Xing Can's eyes flashed with a cold light, a caustic expression on her face. From Lin Ming's three requests, the most she could agree with was the first. For the second, at most, they would punish their disciples in place of Divine Phoenix Island. But, the third was absolutely impossible!

"My conditions will not change. If you don't agree, then I will take them myself." Lin Ming said in a low voice.

"Hahaha!" Xing Can smiled in furious anger. "Who do you think you are? Do you really think you are a Divine Kingdom Crown Prince? Very well! It's true that I'm afraid of the

Giant Leviathan, but don't think that you're invincible just because you have that beast! The Giant Leviathan can deal with our Yin Yang Profound Palace, but it cannot harm me or my husband. Also, do not forget that behind you are 1000 more Divine Phoenix Island disciples. If you use the Giant Leviathan to attack my Yin Yang Profound Palace, then I will join forces with the South Sea Demon Region to annihilate Divine Phoenix Island! I want to see just where in this wide world will you be able to take shelter!"

Xing Can's aura exploded as she spoke. She was a Palace Master and also had a strong character. She never liked succumbing to the threats of others, especially threats as excessive and ridiculous as Lin Ming's.

She estimated that Lin Ming's weakness was the 1000 disciples of Divine Phoenix Island. If these people left Yin Yang Profound Palace, there was simply nowhere for them to go. Moreover, it would be extremely easy to attack them. It was impossible for Lin Ming to guard them day in and day out.

Lin Ming sneered, "I gave you a chance. Since you did not cherish it, then don't blame me!"

As Lin Ming spoke, the Giant Leviathan suddenly opened its massive maw, issuing forth a long and rumbling roar like a thunderstorm spreading over the entire horizon. From the Giant Leviathan's mouth, countless tentacles fell down like limitless pythons snaking down from the sky.

Xing Can paled, "What are you doing!?"

She subconsciously thought that Lin Ming was about to fight. Although her words were tough, the truth was that she was afraid. If she truly did fight with Lin Ming until the bitter end, then that meant both sides would perish. If she completely destroyed Divine Phoenix Island here, then her Yin Yang Profound Palace would also be buried along with them.

Once Lin Ming turned crazy, she had no idea how this would end.

Woosh woosh woosh!

Over a thousand tentacles soared down into the back mountains of Little Swallow Mountain. This was where the disciples of the Divine Phoenix Island lived!

“Sect Master, please tell the others not to panic.”

“Ah?” Mu Yuhuang was startled. She faintly guessed just what Lin Ming was planning to do. Before this mess started, Lin Ming had her tell all the disciples to pack up their belongings, obviously to leave Yin Yang Profound Palace.

Could it be…

Mu Yuhuang didn’t question him any further; she immediately lit a sound transmitting talisman.

Quickly, under the direction of Lin Ming’s soul force, each of those tentacles would wrap around a Divine Phoenix Island disciple and pull them into its mouth.

There were more than 10 dimensions within the Giant Leviathan, each one of these containing a space. Some of these dimensions were extremely large. Combined together, it was more than enough to accommodate a thousand Divine Phoenix Island disciples.

And, most importantly, the Giant Leviathan was a great beast that could swallow heaven and earth origin energy. A single gulp could suck in all the heaven and earth origin energy in the surrounding 100 miles. It could be said that the space within the Giant Leviathan was a natural spiritual land. Moreover, the grade was extremely high. It was more than enough for the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island to cultivate with!

Chapter 701 – Come, Let’s Go And Pick Them Up

Chapter 701 – Come, Let’s Go And Pick Them Up

…

…

…

After this fall out with Yin Yang Profound Palace, Lin Ming no longer planned to stay here. Entering the Giant Leviathan’s body was the safest. Moreover, it could ascend into the heavens or descend into the seas, unassailable wherever it went.

“You… ” Xing Can felt weak in her heart. She could faintly guess what Lin Ming was doing. Once Lin Ming was freed from his constraints, what else could she use to fight him with?

In front of the Giant Leviathan, their Yin Yang Profound Palace was nothing more than an egg.

Taking the treasure sword in her hand, Xing Can quietly took a step forwards.

“I said not to move!” Lin Ming’s eyebrows shot up and his right hand sank a little bit. The spear point immediately pierced into Xing Yang’s neck, resting against his bones as more blood poured out!

“Mother, save me!”

At this time, Xing Yang was miserable and his suffering was beyond compare. His confidence had been completely ruined by Lin Ming. From the very start, he had been suppressed by Lin Ming. Finally, he had lost in strength and deterrent ability and all other aspects. Now, he was nothing more than a chicken in Lin Ming's hands. As long as Lin Ming wanted to, then his life would instantly end.

Xing Can's eyes widened as she glared at Lin Ming with hatred. Yet, there was nothing she could do. She could only watch helplessly as Lin Ming calmly took away all the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island, not even leaving behind any of their possessions. Even Mu Qianyu's cabin was brought along, surrounded with energy before being leisurely sucked up.

Moving everything together, including residences, was the most thorough and stable form of migration.

"Yu'er, Sect Master, please head up too." Lin Ming held his spear, speaking without turning back to glance at Mu Yuhuang.

As Mu Yuhuang looked at Lin Ming's back, her eyes jumped up. This situation, which she had thought was impossible to recover from, actually had such a bizarre change. Lin Ming obviously had a path to escape this place, otherwise, he wouldn't have dared to face Yin Yang Profound Palace.

Several tentacles shot down and floated atop the ground, the ends flattened. Mu Yuhuang, Mu Bingyun, Duanmu Qun, and the rest all calmly stepped onto these tentacles before the tentacles rapidly drew back upwards.

After everyone safely left, Lin Ming kicked up Xing Yang and held him up by his robe with his spear, his toes hanging off the ground. Then, he flew towards the Giant Leviathan.

When Xing Can saw this she was furious. "Lin Ming, what are you doing!? I let you leave already so why haven't you released my son!?"

"You let me leave? How ridiculous." Lin Ming sneered, "I already said before that I gave you the chance to choose. But, since you did not cherish that chance, now, I must apologize, because I have changed my mind."

As Lin Ming spoke, his right hand suddenly arrived at Xing Yang’s back, smashing into him!

Peng!

Vibrating true essence galloped into Xing Yang’s body, recklessly destroying him from within. Xing Yang vomited a mouthful of blood before flying backwards.

This strike of Lin Ming’s was a simplified version of the Pulse Cutting Palm; it wasn’t as ruthless or as cruel as the full version. This would at most ruin Xing Yang’s road of martial arts. Not to mention, Xing Yang’s heart of martial arts was already ruined by Lin Ming. From this point on, his thoughts would never be able to flow freely and this would hinder the true essence circulation in his meridians and dantian. This knot would be like a stone, continuously hindering Xing Yang’s cultivation.

This was the so-called ‘heart sickness’ or ‘heart demon’.

It could be said that Xing Yang’s road of martial arts was basically wasted. In the future, even breaking through to the first stage of Life Destruction would be questionable, let alone becoming a Peerless Emperor.

This was the effect that Lin Ming desired.

“Yang’er!”

Xing Can’s heart blazed with fury. However, in front of the Giant Leviathan, she had no choice but to tolerate this insult. She flew up into the air to catch Xing Yang.

In the end, Lin Ming didn’t kill Xing Yang nor did he completely waste away his martial arts. The threat he used to compel Xing Can and Yin Yang Profound Palace was the Giant Leviathan. As long as the Giant Leviathan attacked, then it could raze the entire Yin Yang Profound Palace to the ground in just an incense stick of time.

But, Lin Ming couldn't guarantee that Xing Can wouldn't turn into the violent incarnation of a crazy mother after Xing Yang died. If a woman went crazy, then anything was possible. At that time, if she really decided to abandon Yin Yang Profound Palace and chase him down to kill him, then things would become rather difficult.

The Giant Leviathan was relatively poor in single combat after all. Although its attacks were powerful, it wasn't flexible enough; it simply couldn't strike a high leveled Life Destruction powerhouse.

Moreover, Xing Can was actually very strong. If she joined forces with her husband, the two of them together could contend with a third stage Life Destruction powerhouse.

Thus, Lin Ming didn't use the complete Pulse Cutting Palm and also allowed Xing Yang to keep his life. As for partly ruining Xing Yang's meridians, there would always be hope that he could be healed. This would be enough to distract them. As long as he didn't touch Xing Can's bottom line, then Xing Can wouldn't succumb to madness and join the South Sea Demon Region to attack them.

Lin Ming had already flown towards the stomach of the Giant Leviathan. Under his deliberate control, Mu Qianyu and Mu Yuhuang hadn't entered the Giant Leviathan's dimension yet.

"Yu'er, Sect Master, can you feel Little Flame and Fireshine's energy?"

These were the names of the Vermillion Birds that were taken away.

As Mu Qianyu and Mu Yuhuang's life's Vermillion Birds, they naturally had a connection to each other.

"Yes…yes, I can!" Mu Qianyu quickly replied.

"Come, let's go and pick them up."

Lin Ming calmly said. His words carried an indescribable confidence and an absolutely domineering aura. This was not to steal or to take, but to pick up. This was the confidence brought about by absolute power.

Hearing Lin Ming say this, Mu Qianyu nearly cried a storm of tears. Ever since Little Flame was taken away, she had berated herself constantly, falling into an abyss of guilt. These past months, she had thought of reuniting with her life's Vermillion Bird even in her dreams. But, she didn't have the ability to do so. She hadn't even dared to raise this thought for fear that she would place Mu Fengxian in an awkward position.

For the interests of the sect, she had to sacrifice her kind and innocent Little Flame. This was like a knife that had twisted itself into Mu Qianyu's heart, making it hard to even sleep at night.

But this pain, this guilt, all of these tangled feelings together, with just a simple 'come, let's go and pick them up' from Lin Ming, all of it had faded away.

Thinking that she would finally be able to see Little Flame again, Mu Qianyu couldn't stop her tears from falling.

"Thank you, thank you so much, Lin Ming, thank you." Mu Qianyu tightly hugged Lin Ming, repeating herself over and over again. As she clung to his shoulders, she felt an inexplicable sense of peace.

Even Mu Yuhuang's eyes were wet. There was no need to mention her beloved Fireshine who had accompanied her for hundreds of years. The greatest pressure she felt came from the loss of the Divine Phoenix Island. Divine Phoenix Island, with its 3000 years of history and inheritance had suddenly been destroyed in her generation. No matter what the reason was, no matter how powerful her enemies had been, this didn't change the fact that the sect had fallen when she was in charge. If she died, she would not have the face to greet the ancestors of Divine Phoenix Island. This entire time, Mu Yuhuang had withstood the pressure of this great burden. But now, because of Lin Ming, all of this pressure began to dissipate like mere smoke.

She was glad that she had received Lin Ming as her disciple. Placing her full support behind Lin Ming was the wisest and greatest decision she had made in her entire life.

"Let's go. Between us, there is no need to give thanks." Lin Ming bent down and whispered into Mu Qianyu's ears. Then, he held her hand and flew towards the Giant Leviathan's fins.

Standing on one of the Giant Leviathan's wide fins, Lin Ming held onto the white spear with one hand and grasped Mu Qianyu's hand with the other. He ordered the Giant Leviathan to fly towards the main peak of Yin Yang Profound Palace.

As the incoming winds blew against Lin Ming, it sent his long hair flying in the air, recklessly waving around. His black clothes flapped around. His figure was straight as he proudly held his long spear. Standing atop a massive sea beast dozens of miles long, he surveyed the world underneath him. An inexplicably heroic spirit emanated from him as if he was saying that at this moment, he was the king of all heaven and earth!

At this time, Mu Qianyu was quietly standing behind Lin Ming. As she saw her beloved Lin Ming's handsome face and valiant profile, her heart brimmed with a surge of emotions. She had never felt this satisfied before. She now knew what this feeling was – absolute bliss.

Little Swallow Mountain was 100 miles away from Yin Yang Profound Palace's main peak. To the Giant Leviathan, this only took a brief moment to cross. At this time, Xing Can was still stationed at Little Swallow Mountain as she helped her son heal his wounds.

After having his arm cut off, the sooner it was re-attached, the less negative side effects there would be. But, Lin Ming's spear had contained the power of a battle spirit. Xing Yang's right hand had been smashed into a mess, and the bones of his hand were nearly completely broken into pieces.

Thus, re-attaching his hand and fixing it was filled with difficulties. In addition, Lin Ming had struck Xing Yang with a simplified version of the Pulse Cutting Palm. This tore Xing Yang's meridians to pieces, making it so that healing him was that much more difficult.

After Xing Can caught Xing Yang, her every thought was placed on her son's body, she only wanted to help him heal up faster. It was only a good while later before she suddenly discovered that Lin Ming had ridden the Giant Leviathan and was flying it towards Yin Yang Profound Palace.

Xing Can froze for a moment. Then, she suddenly understood Lin Ming's intentions. Shocked, she quickly lit a sound transmitting talisman.

At this time, in front of Lin Ming, there were seven to eight black-clothed Elders. Their cultivation were all at the mid and late Revolving Core. They were directly blocking Lin Ming's path. This was their sect, so how could they allow such a massive monster to approach it so closely?

They did not recognize the Giant Leviathan, but they were absolutely aware that there was nothing they could do to stop such a horrifying fellow. Even though it pained their hearts and made them clench their teeth, they at least had to ask what this other party was approaching for.

Behind them, a giant barrier of light rose dozens of miles wide. This was their Yin Yang Profound Palace's great protective array.

"This fellow martial arts cultivator, why do you come to my Yin Yang Profound Palace?"

The leader of the black-clothed Elders politely asked. This was only because he was absolutely terrified of the Giant Leviathan. If it were a common nobody, there was no way he would have been so polite.

Just as he spoke, a flame suddenly shined in front of the black-clothed Elder. It was a short message from Xing Can.

"Hurry and open the array!'

To have her home front destroyed and robbed by others, and now actually having to freely open her doors too, the mortification and vexation Xing Can felt could be imagined.

Lin Ming didn't hear the contents of this sound transmitting talisman nor could he bother with these people. He faintly ordered the Giant Leviathan.

"Blow it up."

Huu -!

With Lin Ming's order, all of the heaven and earth origin energy in the surrounding 100 miles was sucked towards the Giant Leviathan, like seawater rushing into a massive whirlpool. Because of Yin Yang Profound Palace's spirit vein, the heaven and earth origin energy here was incomparably rich. As soon as the Giant Leviathan started sucking up energy, the energy of the land seemed like it was instantly reduced, wilting away.

The leading black-clothed Elder's complexion completely changed. "Wait…wait a second! The Palace Master has already given the order! We will immediately open the array!"

The black-clothed Elder was able to faintly guess just what this colossal beast was. If it was true, then it could mow down even 100 Yin Yang Profound Palaces! This sort of creature absolutely made one's scalp tingle with fear.

Chapter 702 – Xing Ji Arrives

Chapter 702 – Xing Ji Arrives

…

…

…

The youth that stood atop the Giant Leviathan didn't have too high a cultivation but when the black-clothed Elder looked at the monster that was beneath his feet, he couldn't conjure the least bit of resistance.

Moreover, based on the circumstances, the black-clothed Elder highly suspected that this youth in front of him was the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince that had been making such an uproar for nearly the entire last month.

Or at least a subordinate of the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince.

"Isn't that Mu Qianyu and Mu Yuhuang?"

The black-clothed Elder saw the two red dressed women beside Lin Ming and gulped. He could feel a strange nagging sensation at the back of his mind. How could Divine Phoenix Island possibly be together with the Divine Kingdom Crown Prince? And looking from their appearance, they were obviously close to each other.

Upon seeing the massive amount of energy condensing within the Giant Leviathan's body, the black-clothed Elder quickly said, "Great expert, mercy!"

Then he quickly turned to the two middle Revolving Core Protectors at his side and roared out, “What are you two doing? Hurry up!”

To the Giant Leviathan, the Yin Yang Profound Palace’s great protective array was no different from paper. If they opened the array too late, then the entire thing would be completed broken by the Giant Leviathan. That would require an unthinkable amount of resources to restore.

The two middle Revolving Core Protectors froze for a moment before quickly flying out, shooting forwards like arrows.

In a short time, the entire array formation began to tremble. The barrier shield around the Yin Yang Profound palace slowly faded away. Standing atop the Giant Leviathan, Lin Ming calmly entered within.

The black-clothed Elder’s face was bitter as he saw this. He didn’t know what they had done or when Yin Yang Profound Palace had managed to offend such an evil star.

“Lin Ming, I can feel Little Flame’s energy from the southeast section of Yin Yang Profound Palace.” Mu Qianyu said from behind Lin Ming.

“Okay.”

Lin Ming ordered the Giant Leviathan to turn. The several dozens of miles long Giant Leviathan was nearly able to cover the entire Yin Yang Profound Palace.

Seeing this massive monster block out the heavens, all the martial artists within Yin Yang Profound Palace stopped what they were doing and looked towards the skies with bewildered expressions. They were shocked speechless. Just what the hell was this thing?

The South Sea Demon Region was over a million miles away from Yin Yang Profound Palace. Although the Giant Leviathan had become infamous even this far out, the martial artists of Yin Yang Profound Palace had never seen it before, thus they couldn’t recognize it.

They all came out of their residences and training areas, flabbergasted as they stared at the massive titan floating in the sky with absolute dismay.

The Giant Leviathan's terrifying aspect laid in its great size. It's thick and oily skin was more than thousands of feet thick. Let alone how tough this skin was, even ordinary rock that thick would have been difficult to break open. Thus, the Giant Leviathan's defense was nearly impenetrable by any martial artist below the Divine Sea realm.

As for its striking power, there was no need to elaborate on it. The massive figure didn't even need to use its energy attack. As long as it was allowed to free fall, it would be able to flatten the entire Yin Yang Profound Palace.

"It's that building over there!"

Mu Qianyu rapidly spoke as she pointed at a red tower 30 miles away. She could feel Little Flame's energy coming from over there.

....

In that a great hall within that red tower, Little Flame and Fireshine were cowering, their neck and feet locked by red chains. During these past months, the two Vermillion Birds had constantly suffered from having blood drawn out from them, and now they were weakly crawling on the ground, their large red eyes bleak and filled with utter sadness.

The Vermillion Birds were intelligent creatures; they clearly knew what destiny awaited them.

Beside the Vermillion Birds, two old red-robed alchemists had squat down near the Vermillion Birds feet. They used a small silver dagger to cut open the leg of the Vermillion Bird, allowing the thick red blood to flow out, capturing the blood in small jade bottles. What they took was blood, not blood essence. A Vermillion Bird had a limited amount of blood essence; naturally, they couldn't randomly take it. But, even if it was blood, taking it every single day still slowly consumed the Vermillion Bird's vitality and essence energy.

However, the two Vermillion Birds seemed to understand that resistance was meaningless. They let the two red-robed old men draw their blood, lying there motionlessly as if they had already died.

In order for the alchemists to use the blood for research, they needed to have Vermillion Bird blood that was brimming with blood vitality. Thus, Yin Yang Profound Palace had force fed the Vermillion Birds blood poison pills to stimulate their bloodline potential. This sort of blood poison pill would certainly reduce the fires of the Vermillion Bird's lives, shortening their life spans even further.

Of course, these alchemists never took these effects into consideration.

The red-robed alchemists chuckled as fresh blood streamed into the jade bottles.. Just when they were about to put away the bottles, the half-dead Little Flame suddenly shook its head as if it were shocked by something. The two Vermillion Birds raised their heads, their bright and innocent eyes filled with a glimmer of hesitant hope and excitement.

"What are they doing?"

The red-robed alchemist frowned, not understanding the situation. Little Flame suddenly beat its wings as it tried to stand up. As it flapped its wings about, it directly caused the jade bottle of blood in the alchemist's hands to fall down.

"F*ck!"

The red-robed alchemist was furious. He took out a thick whip from his waist and struck Little Flame with it. With a loud snapping sound, Little Flame's body fiercely trembled. After several months of torture, the Vermillion Bird was weakened to the point where it could not withstand such a cruel beating.

A blood wound appeared and several red feathers were whipped off. But, Little Flame bit its beak together, not making a single sound. Its eyes were full of wondrous hope as it looked outside of the hall. It could feel Mu Qianyu's energy approaching. This caused Little Flame's breathing to quicken, its big red eyes glowing with tears.

At that moment, a voice echoed in its mind.

“Don’t move! Little Flame, I’ll save you!”

Pa!

Another whip slashed against Little Flame’s body, opening its skin even more. “Get on the floor! Didn’t you hear me!?”

The red-robed alchemist angrily said. In order to draw out Little Flame’s blood, he needed the bird to lie on the ground.

However, Little Flame only trembled but it still struggled to stand with all its energy. It raised its head, waiting to greet its master.

Little Flame didn’t want to see Mu Qianyu in a distressed state where it seemed half-dead.

“You stupid bird! Are you dumb or something!” The red-robed alchemist’s whip came striking down again. Vermillion Birds could understand his words. But, even under this constant pain and intimidation, Little Flame simply didn’t listen to him.

“Lin Ming, please, faster, Little Flame is under attack...” Mu Qianyu covered her mouth, tears running down her eyes. She and Little Flame were connected to each other; she could feel everything that was happening to it.

“Understood.”

Lin Ming’s voice was ice-cold as his eyes filled with rage. 30 miles was only one thirds of the length of the Giant Leviathan.

“Crack open that tower!”

Lin Ming ruthlessly ordered.

Woosh woosh woosh!

Five thick tentacles shot out towards the red tower. As they approached, a barrier of light appeared around the tower. This was the tower's defensive array formation.

Seeing this light, Lin Ming wasn't surprised. He ordered, "Rip it open!"

Bang!

Underneath the forceful impact of five tentacles, the defensive array was torn apart and the tower shook.

Just as the alchemist was about to strike out with his whip again, he paused. Mm? What happened? He looked up with a dazed expression, and then a horrifying scene occurred.

The red tower's roof suddenly split apart. It wasn't just the roof, but the walls, floor, load-bearing beams, everything was being torn apart. Several large black tentacles crashed inside as the entire tower was torn in half.

"What is that!?"

The two red-robed alchemists paled. Their cultivations were at the early Revolving Core and extreme Xiantian. Underneath these massive tentacles, they were no different from little rats in front of a giant snake. They had no ability to resist.

"Run!"

The two red-robed alchemists reacted fairly fast. But, just as they turned to run away, tentacles already ripped through the floor and smashed into them.

"Ahh!"

"Ahh!"

With two miserable cries, the two red-robed alchemist's chest were directly crushed flat, all of their organs turning to goo.

Against these two people, Lin Ming didn't show the slightest bit of mercy. Since he had already killed eight people here, he didn't mind killing another two.

"Little Flame!"

As soon as the tentacles ripped open the roof, Mu Qianyu was able to see Little Flame's injured appearance. Little Flame's entire body was covered with scars and blood, and the fires of its life were only one third of what they were at its peak. Mu Qianyu felt weak, like someone had twisted a knife in her heart.

Without waiting for the tentacles to wrap around Little Flame, Mu Qianyu rushed towards it. She clung to Little Flame's neck, her tears soaking its faded feathers.

"Squawk squawk..."

Little Flame cried out in a soft voice. Its large red eyes were wet and its body shook as it gently covered Mu Qianyu with its wing. This was how Little Flame expressed its love and joy at seeing Mu Qianyu at least, all of the pent up emotions that had suddenly come swelling up.

Lin Ming and Mu Yuhuang also fell down at this time. As Mu Yuhuang saw Fireshine's appearance, her eyes reddened with tears. However, she was much more composed and restrained than Mu Qianyu was. She walked forwards and gently touched Fireshine's head.

"Let's go up. I will settle Little Flame's debt with Yin Yang Profound Palace."

As Lin Ming spoke, several tentacles formed a lotus-like throne in front of them. By stepping onto this, they could quickly enter the dimension within the Giant Leviathan.

"Yu'er, Sect Master, please enter into the Giant Leviathan's dimension first. I have a matter I must finish first."

"Mm? What do you plan on doing?" Mu Yuhuang asked.

“Collect interest from Yin Yang Profound Palace.” Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a cold light as he spoke. This caused Mu Yuhuang’s eyes to jump up. She wanted to give a few words of advice and tell him not to go too far. But after thinking about it some more, she didn’t say anything. For these past years, Lin Ming had always handled affairs accordingly and with absolute confidence. Even if it seemed impossible, he still managed to accomplish it somehow.

Thus, there was no need to say anything more. She only told him to be careful of Yin Yang Profound Palace’s Palace Masters and then stepped into the Giant Leviathan’s dimension with Mu Qianyu and the two Vermillion Birds.

Lin Ming stood on the Giant Leviathan’s fin and ordered it to fly towards Yin Yang Profound Palace’s medicine garden.

“Hehe, little boy, you want to rob Yin Yang Profound Palace’s medicine garden? I like this! Huhuhahaha!” Demonshine’s maliciously playful voice sounded out in Lin Ming’s mind.

“Mm…” Lin Ming nodded. In fact, had an idea. Since the heaven and earth origin energy was so rich within the Giant Leviathan, then why didn’t he simply build up his own medicine garden within the Giant Leviathan? He could raise some spirit plants and spirit grass to pave his way to becoming an alchemist later.

As Lin Ming thought of this idea, his eyes suddenly widened. He discovered that several dozen miles away, a streak of light was racing across the horizon at an extremely high speed. Although this light was very far away, Lin Ming could determine that this incoming master was a second stage Life Destruction powerhouse.

Yin Yang Profound palace only had two second stage Life Destruction powerhouses: Xing Ji and Xing Can.

Xing Can was still at Little Swallow Mountain. Thus, this streak of light that was approaching from the opposite direction could only by the other Palace Master of Yin Yang Profound Palace, and also Xing Yang's father… Xing Ji.

Chapter 703 – Xing Ji, Who Nearly Vomited Blood

Chapter 703 – Xing Ji, Who Nearly Vomited Blood

…

…

…

Before this, Xing Ji had left for some errands, and had not returned until now. At the time that Xing Ji returned to Yin Yang Profound Palace, Lin Ming had already directed the Giant Leviathan above the skies of Yin Yang Profound Palace's medicine garden.

Yin Yang Profound Palace's medicine garden had its own guardians. As these guardians saw the Giant Leviathan in the skies, its vast body which caused dark clouds to twist in the heavens, all of them gulped, before bracing themselves as they flew up.

"Just who do you think you are you that you dare break into my Profound Palace's private grounds!" A late Revolving Core Elder gathered up the courage to say. Just now he had witnessed the two alchemists in the tower instantly ripped in half by the Giant Leviathan's tentacles, dying a cruel and horrible death. If it weren't for Palace master Xing Ji catching up right behind them, then he would have probably turned around and fled.

"Out of my way!" Lin Ming commanded. With the support of the Giant Leviathan, his voice was like a tsunami that spread out in all directions, echoing between the heavens and earth. The several Revolving Core Elders were shaken up by this voice and nearly spat out mouthful of blood.

This was the disparity of absolute strength. Knowing that they were just eggs waiting to be smashed against a stone, the several Elders could only drawback with pale faces.

Lin Ming controlled the Giant Leviathan and sent out hundreds of tentacles that fluttered about like mystical snakes.

His plan was to directly scoop out the medicine garden.

Although the origin energy within the Giant Leviathan's dimension was rich, it was actually short on soil for medicinal plants to grow in.

There were very stringent requirements for soil suited for medicinal plants. It had to be innervated over hundreds or thousands of years with rich origin energy before becoming spiritual earth that was able to grow medicinal plants. Thus, Lin Ming decided the best choice for soil at the moment was Yin Yang Profound Palace's own medicine garden.

After digging up Yin Yang Profound Palace's spiritual earth, in addition to the South Sea Demon Region's spiritual earth, he could use this to form a medicinal garden within the Giant Leviathan. This way, being able to shift it around would also be very convenient.

Moreover, as more and more medicinal herbs, they would be able to naturally emit heaven and earth origin energy. This would cause the spiritual earth of the medicine garden to grow much more rich and potent.

"Hoho, boy, that Xing Ji is looking at you. Look at his eyes, you can see he's angry! Haha! How funny!" Demonshine cackled as he tried to stir things up. At this moment, Xing Ji was only seven to eight miles far from Lin Ming.

"Doesn't matter. I'll shatter the medicine garden's protection first."

Lin Ming completely ignored Xing Ji and commanded the Giant Leviathan to attack.

Instantly, dozens of tentacles lashed out like massive whips.

Bang!

With an explosive sound, tentacles smashed into the medicine garden's protective array. Like an egg being struck by a hammer, the protective array instantly burst apart.

More and more tentacles appeared until there were over 200 in total. They completely circled the medicine garden, digging 100 feet into the ground. Then, they began to pull it up from the center. Lin Ming planned to use the tentacles to completely dig up the earth and drag away the whole medicine garden.

"Lin Ming! If you dare to take away my Profound Palace's medicine garden today, then I swear I will kill off your Divine Phoenix Island today! You will regret everything you've done here!" Xing Ji roared, his eyes red with rage. After receiving Xing Can's sound transmitting talisman, he already understood everything that happened.

Until now, Lin Ming had only killed several Revolving Core Protectors of the Yin Yang Profound Palace. This was still a loss he could bear. But now, as the Palace Master of Yin Yang Profound Palace, if he had to look helplessly on as Lin Ming stole away their entire medicine garden this his lungs would probably blow up with rage.

This wasn't just about losing the medicine garden, but more so a matter of allowing someone to freely beat up his face. If this matter spread out in the future, that Yin Yang Profound Palace, a dignified fifth-grade sect, allowed a 20 some year old boy to completely take away their medicine garden, then they would become the laughingstock in the entire martial arts world. They would be the greatest joke underneath the heavens!

How could he tolerate this!?

"Kill off my Divine Phoenix Island?" Lin Ming indifferently looked at Palace Master Xing Ji from within the Giant Leviathan's dimension. "In my life, my principles have never changed. If someone gives me one foot of respect then shall give them 10 feet of respect. If someone punches me, then I will stab them with three sabers. Whoever dares to harm my friends and family, then I shall annihilate nine generations of their entire family! Xing Ji! You can do whatever it is you want, but I can promise you that if you dare, I will henceforth wipe off the entire Yin Yang Profound palace along with your family from this world!"

As Li Ming spoke, his voice was as chilling as the nine nether abyss. No one suspected whether or not Lin Ming would follow up on his words. Not only that, but he had the ability to do so.

Xing JI's voice caught in his throat and his momentum suddenly reduced by half. He truly didn't dare to recklessly bet everything against Lin Ming unless he was absolutely sure he could kill Lin Ming here. Otherwise, Lin Ming's future potential was limitless. Completely exterminating Yin Yang Profound Palace wouldn't be difficult at all. In fact, he already had that ability right now.

"Lin Ming, you have gone too far!"

"Gone too far? Humph! Xing Ji, you know in your heart just how you've treated Divine Phoenix Island these past few months. Even so, I've only wounded Xing Yang but haven't killed him. I gave a chance for your wife to negotiate, but she decided to give up this chance. So don't blame me for taking away your medicine garden, because this is only interest!"

Taking away the medicine garden was only interest!?

Hearing Lin Ming's abusive and brazen words, Xing Ji nearly convulsed in anger. This medicine garden had been built over thousands of years with the accumulated resources of the Yin Yang Profound Palace. It was especially rich in fire and water attribute heavenly treasures. Yet Lin Ming actually called this 'only interest'!?

If he weren't forced to the end of the line then he really would want to tear Lin Ming to pieces with his bare hands. But now, with the Giant Leviathan right in front of him, he had no choice but to endure this insult. He humbly said, "Lin Ming, I apologize for all the wrongs that have been done to Divine Phoenix Island. Give this old man some face and stop things here."

Towards someone like Xing Ji, who was famous and also honored everywhere, admitting defeat could be said to be a very big concession. But, Lin Ming frankly didn't care about this.

“Give you face? Stupid! Who cares about your face! How much is your face worth? When my Divine Phoenix Island was in a weaker position and was being bullied and suppressed from all directions, when did you give my master any face? Now that you lot have been suppressed by my strength, I have to care about your face and your Yin Yang Profound Palace’s face? Do you think I’m that cheap? Your face is that valuable, and yet my master’s face isn’t even worth some broken grass?”

Lin Ming relentlessly refuted all of Xing Ji’s thoughts, making him incensed with anger.

In Xing Ji’s opinion, he had already dropped his dignity as a fifth-grade sect Sovereign and had apologized. To him, this was a massive concession. And yet, Lin Ming had simply mocked him.

Lin Ming also no longer bothered exchanging such nonsensical words. He ordered the Giant Leviathan’s tentacles that were stabbed into the medicine garden to directly suck up the everything, including the spiritual earth.

The ground cracked and soil was constantly sucked into the tentacles. As Xing Ji saw this, his heart exploded with raging anger! “Lin Ming, you can forget about it!” Seeing that the medicine garden was being sucked into the Giant Leviathan, Xing Ji felt as if it were his ancestor’s graves were being dug up.

“Lin Ming, this old man will remember this humiliation!” Xing Ji revolved his true essence and flames combusted all around him. He was thinking of smashing apart the entire Profound Palace medicine garden with a strike from his palm. Since he couldn’t keep this medicine garden here, then he wouldn’t let Lin Ming take it either. Otherwise, it would be impossible for him to swallow this insult. In the future, once this event spread out, then Yin Yang Profound Palace would become a joke of the entire martial arts world!

“I would rather destroy this medicine garden than let you shame me!”

Xing Ji furiously shouted. To be forced to ruin his own medicine garden; was there anything more tragic than this?

However, Xing Ji soon discovered that, in fact… there was.

As Lin Ming saw Xing Ji gather his potential, he had long guessed what this Palace Master was trying to do. He coldly coughed and said, “Xing Ji, if you dare to destroy your own medicine garden, then I will destroy your Yin Yang Profound Palace! Go ahead and try!”

“You… ”

At this time, Xing Ji nearly vomited blood in anger. His lungs hurt, his liver hurt, his intestines, gallbladder, his entire body hurt. “Lin Ming, I hope you f*cking die!”

At this time he had already gathered his potential, ready to attack. But with just a few words from Lin Ming he was forced to suppress his true essence, blood rushing to his head. If he weren’t angry to the extreme, then as a dignified fifth-grade sect Sovereign, he would never have said such rude and uncouth words.

Xing Ji was so angry he felt his blood tumbling in his body.

Lin Ming had already controlled the tentacles and had safely stored the medicine garden into the Giant Leviathan’s dimension.

Watching his medicine garden disappear just like that, Xing Ji felt his vision go black. He could already envision how several months from now, how the various powers of the Southern Sky Spill Continent would discuss Yin Yang Profound Palace.

As a noble Yin Yang Profound Palace Palace Master and a master who had lived for over 1000 years, he had actually been played around by a little hairless boy called Lin Ming. Just how shameful of a matter was this?

“Lin Ming, if you have the guts then come out and fight me in the open!” The incomparably angry Xing Ji had no choice but to resort to goading Lin Ming to come out. Also, this was the only method he had to give vent to his frustration, reminding himself that there was at least some aspect which he was superior to Lin Ming.

How could this crude and low level taunt actually affect Lin Ming?

"Xing Ji, you're an old dog that has lived for over 1000 years. As for me, my age can't even be considered spare change to yours. Yet you actually dare to challenge me? Well, I can promise you a match, but you'll have to wait till one year from now. Though, after a year, would you still have the courage to challenge me?"

One year!

Xing Ji grit his teeth with hate. He was well aware that Lin Ming's strength, as it was now was able to kill a first stage Life Destruction powerhouse. In fact, Lin Ming might not be much worse than he was right now. With Lin Ming's terrifying speed of growth, let alone one year, Xing Ji might not even be his match in half a year.

Even his challenge against Lin Ming had been reversed against him. Xing Ji's final bit of dignity was crushed, his face slapped into the ground.

His resentment curled in his stomach as if it wanted to burst out in a mouthful of blood. Suddenly, he noticed another light streaking towards Yin Yang Profound Palace at high speeds. This person was also at the extreme second stage of Life Destruction. Since this person came from Little Swallow Mountain, it was without a doubt Xing Ji's wife, Xing Can.

She naturally knew that her husband had returned and rushed over after helping Xing Yang. If the couple combined their strength, they would be able to display their greatest combat strength. She certainly wanted to come and help her husband.

Xing Can's arrival slightly relieved Xing Ji's extremely angry mood. With his wife coming to help him, he felt somewhat reinvigorated.

He angrily stared at the Giant Leviathan. His flaming eyes seemed as if they could see right through the Giant Leviathan and stared straight at Lin Ming. Raging with a burning hate, Xing Ji wished he could rip apart the Giant Leviathan's body and devour Lin Ming!

At this time, a sudden idea emerged in Xing Ji's mind. Was it really true that no power underneath the Divine Sea could seriously wound the Giant Leviathan?

In fact, this rumor had been spread out my Xuan Wuji to begin with. As the one who was controlling the Giant Leviathan at the time, it wasn't strange for him to boast in an exaggerated manner.

As for how truly powerful the Giant Leviathan's defensive power was, no one really knew. This was because the Giant Leviathan had never battled against a third stage Life Destruction master, thus no one was able to confirm Xuan Wuji's words!

Chapter 704 – The Terrifying Defense of the Giant Leviathan

Chapter 704 – The Terrifying Defense of the Giant Leviathan

…

…

…

Lin Ming had taken advantage of the time when Xuan Wuji was in closed door seclusion and used the Giant Leviathan to sweep across the South Sea Demon Region. Besides Xuan Wuji, the next strongest martial artist in the area was Xuan Yuqie, who had already been grievously wounded. The powerful and almighty South Sea Demon Region was, in truth, just an empty shell.

Sweeping across the South Sea Demon Region seemed like some kind of astonishing event, but if one thought about it carefully, it was not much at all.

Not knowing whether Xuan Wuji's words were true or false, fearing the Giant Leviathan to this degree and allowing Lin Ming to take away their Yin Yang Profound Palace's medicine garden… If Xuan Wuji's words proved to be lies, then they would truly be laughed at to death.

"Maybe once the Giant Leviathan is attacked by a high-level Life Destruction martial artist, that would be enough to rip apart its flesh and make it die from massive blood loss?"

Xing Ji's mind raced as he spoke to his wife with a true essence sound transmission.

If both husband and wife combined their forces, they would be capable of contending with a third stage Life Destruction powerhouse. In addition, with the ultimate move they had created in the past years, the power of their strike would be immense. However, the weakness was that it took a long time to prepare and that there was also a possibility it could miss. However, this wasn't a problem with the Giant Leviathan. Even if they closed their eyes and aimed randomly, they would still be able to strike the beast. And if attacking the back, forehead or other places with strong defenses was impossible, then what about the eyes or the mouth?

All of these thoughts crossed through Palace Master Xing Ji's mind. The eyes weren't easy to strike and they also had the protection of the eyelids. But the mouth... Because the Giant Leviathan used its tentacles to attack, its mouth was constantly open. Attacking its throat through the mouth was definitely the best method of all!

As Xing Ji thought of this, a fire lit in his heart. If today he hadn't been bullied to the extreme by Lin Ming, then he would never have thought of taking such a great risk.

"Husband, let's attack together with everything we have. Yang'er has been wounded everywhere; it will take at least one or two years of hard work and effort to recover. If I don't attack, then I will never be able to deal with this!" As Xing Can spoke, true essence revolved within her body. A current of icy blue water suddenly emerged out of thin air, wrapping around her. She wished that she could rip Lin Ming apart.

Seeing Xing Can preparing to attack, Xing Ji clenched his teeth and ignited his body with raging flames.

"Haha, Lin Ming, those two baby mice seem to be very unhappy with you, hm?" Demonshine happily gloated. "That's right, such a... noble... fifth-grade sect was actually slapped and beaten around. Of course they want to retaliate, they'd never be able to take this lying down!"

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up as he glanced over at Xing Can and Xing Ji combining their forces. The couple truly deserved their reputation. If he had to face this strike by himself, then there would really be no way for him to defend against it. "Combined water and fire. If they attack together, then the strike power behind their technique might double..."

Lin Ming didn’t stop the two from attacking. In fact, he wanted to know just to what degree could the Giant Leviathan’s defenses withstand.

“Who the hell cares if it’s doubled or tripled? No matter how sharp a needle is, there’s no way you can stab a whale to death. Let them do whatever they want,” Demonshine smirked with disdain.

Outside the dimension, Xing Ji and Xing Can had already begun preparing their attack for several breaths' time.

Finally, they began.

Just as Lin Ming had expected, once the two polar opposite energies mixed together, the power they produced was several times that of the usual. Red energy and blue energy fused together, turning into a brilliant meteor that soared towards the Giant Leviathan’s mouth.

“They want to attack the Giant Leviathan’s throat through its mouth.” Lin Ming’s eyebrows shot up. He was thinking of ordering the tentacles to stop this attack, when Demonshine’s loud giggles suddenly resounded in his mind.

“Two top-grade idiots! The Giant Leviathan is also called the ‘Great Swallowing Beast’. Simply by swallowing once, it can suck up all of the sea water in the area. If it opens its mouth, it can even suck in an entire city! This isn’t just casual boasting. It's because its mouth is simply a portal of space and time. It can transfer anything it swallows to another dimension. They want to attack the Giant Leviathan’s mouth? Hehe, even an early Divine Sea powerhouse would find such an attack useless!”

Hearing Demonshine’s words, Lin Ming also stopped worrying. He let the attack continue freely.

Puff!

With a whistling sound, Xing Ji and Xing Can's brilliant comet of energy shot into the Giant Leviathan's pitch-black maw. Although there was a terrifying energy within it, compared to the Giant Leviathan's massive mouth, it could only be described as tiny.

The energy comet rushed into the Giant Leviathan's throat without being stopped. Xing Can and Xing Ji's eyes brightened. They had done it!

They were originally afraid that the tentacles would stop their attack, but they never imagined that the tentacles would respond so slowly, allowing their attack to succeed.

The couple was immediately overjoyed. Although the surface of this giant beast had a strong defense, its insides ought to still be weak. Since their attack went inside without a problem, they waited to see what sort of destruction their mighty attack had caused to the Giant Leviathan.

However...

One breath...

Three breaths...

Ten breaths...

After ten breaths' time passed, the Giant Leviathan didn't even have the slightest reaction. Xing Ji's happy expression froze on his face. The couple's attack was like rain falling into the sea; it had disappeared without a trace.

"This..."

Xing Ji swallowed a mouthful of bitterness. He had considered the possibility that their combined attack would be unable to severely wound the Giant Leviathan, but they never expected the disparity to be so great. Was the Giant Leviathan's throat some sort of an invulnerable fortress?

The couple looked at each other, each seeing the deep powerlessness and fear reflected in the other's eyes.

"How about it? Are you two using this method to express how unhappy you are?" Lin Ming's voice sounded out from within the Giant Leviathan, echoing in all directions, as loud and clear as a thunderclap.

Xing Ji and Xing Can's words caught in their throats. They didn't dare to say anything in return.

"A man must always repay his debts. Since you attacked me once, then I will also attack you once!" Lin Ming didn't plan on completely annihilating Yin Yang Profound Palace. It was simply impossible to cleanly destroy such a large fifth-grade sect. He didn't want any drifting dregs to bother him later. Moreover, to begin with, they didn't have any deep hatred between them. At least, not enough for Lin Ming to completely demolish their sect and kill off all of their families.

Huu -!

As Lin Ming's voice fell, all of the surrounding energy rose up like a surging tide towards the Giant Leviathan, rapidly concentrating at its forehead.

"Husband, be careful!" Xing Can said as she bit down on her teeth. Today, the couple had to admit that they had really stepped in sh*t.

"I'm alright."

Xing Ji didn't fear the Giant Leviathan's energy attack. Not only did it take an extremely long time to prepare, but it was also inflexible. Dodging it would be easy.

However, he quickly discovered that he had been mistaken all along!

After Lin Ming gathered up a massive amount of energy, the direction he aimed at was the great temple of the Yin Yang Profound Palace. This was the core of the Yin Yang Profound

Palace! Never mind the various resources and wealth held there, it was a landmark of their Yin Yang Profound Palace! Once it was destroyed it would shake the minds of their people, giving everyone yet another reason to laugh at their Yin Yang Profound Palace.

To have a 20-year-old junior remove their entire medicine garden right in front of the two Palace Masters, as well as destroy their Yin Yang Great Temple… Just how could Yin Yang Profound Palace show their faces in front of others in the future?

“This attack is only 70% of the Giant Leviathan’s strength. If you try your hardest and give it your all, then perhaps you might be able to block it.” As soon as Lin Ming spoke, his mind stirred and the space around the Giant Leviathan’s forehead began to distort. Countless dots of shining lights started gathering into a circle. The terrifying energy fluctuations made one tremble with terror.

“Lin Ming, you remember me!”

Xing Ji’s eyes turned blood-red. He would have been able to easily dodge this attack, but now he had been forced to withstand it. Today was absolutely the most bitter day of his life.

Bang!

Energy erupted from the Giant Leviathan, turning into a 100-foot beam of blazing crimson light. It was as if a red flood dragon was shooting towards the Yin Yang Great Temple.

Xing Ji and Xing Can’s expressions completely changed. Both of them attacked together, red and blue beams of energy firing into the blazing crimson beam.

True essence collided, setting off a terrifying storm and a violent shockwave. Xing Ji and Xing Can felt as if their chests were being forcefully pressed down, then they were tossed out like leaves in a storm.

The two weren’t seriously injured. However, they had been caught up in that massive storm of true essence, unable to keep their balance. True essence chaotically collided in their chests, making the two of them nearly cough up blood.

The density of the energy within the Giant Leviathan's attack wasn't high, but the overall amount of energy was truly scary.

In the and, they had failed to completely block the Giant Leviathan's attack. The remaining one-third of the energy attack smashed into the Yin Yang Great Hall, sending its dome flying straight off.

Seeing the Yin Yang Great Temple crack apart in front of them, they could only watch helplessly as they recalled the absolute difference in strength between them and the Giant Leviathan. It was as if Xing Ji's teeth had been knocked out, and he could only swallow them; there was no way he could voice his hatred and grievance. As long as Lin Ming had the Giant Leviathan, there was simply no way they could provoke him. And, in another year or so, once Lin Ming grew further, they wouldn't even be able to deal with him anymore. Thinking about this, Xing Ji simply cut off all thoughts of ever opposing Lin Ming again.

Within the great and broad dimensions of the Giant Leviathan, the heaven and earth origin energy was incomparably rich. Lin Ming stood here, watching as several dozen tentacles passed into this dimension, slowly laying down the medicine garden into a long stretch of land.

With the help of the memories from the Realm of the Gods alchemist, Lin Ming was able to quickly recognize around 99% of these medicinal herbs. There were quite a few treasures here. Even if Lin Ming had very high standards, he was still very satisfied with several of the fire-attribute medicinal herbs.

"Yin Yang Profound Palace's accumulated treasure for these past few thousand years is quite good; it's not much worse off than the South Sea Demon Region's medicine garden."

Lin Ming took out the Demon Heart Flower and the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass from his spatial ring and planted it into this new medicine garden. After several more years, this medicine garden would form a self-sufficient cycling system of origin energy. Once the medicine garden stabilized further, he could even plant the seeds from the profound gold divine fruit, as well as any future heavenly materials he found. All of these could be planted in this medicine garden. It would form a positive feedback loop that would allow the quality of this medicine garden to increasingly rise.

This would form a solid foundation for when Lin Ming decided to embark on the path of being an alchemist in the future.

Lin Ming randomly plucked some fire-attribute medicinal herbs that had matured, and then quietly stepped through a space barrier. In the next moment, he stepped into another dimension, where the Divine Phoenix Island disciples were gathered.

Within the Giant Leviathan's body, the dimensions were self-contained spaces. The largest of these dimensions was around 10 miles in diameter. In addition to the other dimension, this was more than enough to house the more than 1000 disciples of Divine Phoenix Island without them being crowded.

"Brother Lin!"

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin!"

Seeing Lin Ming suddenly appear, the over 1000 Divine Phoenix Island disciples all looked excited and overjoyed. Before this, Mu Fengxian and Mu Bingyun had already informed them of what had happened.

After hearing that Lin Ming was the legendary Divine Kingdom Crown Prince and that by his strength alone he had completely decimated the South Sea Demon Region, the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island felt as if they were living in a dream. In particular, those disciples who had previously come into contact with Lin Ming thought that this was a bizarre and wonderful fantasy!

These past months, they had become accustomed to living like displaced refugees on the edge of death. But now, everything had changed. They could faintly feel that the time to counterattack against the South Sea Demon Region had finally arrived!

Chapter 705 – Returning Home

Chapter 705 – Returning Home

…

…

…

Lin Ming quickly glanced over at everyone. Although a large majority of the Divine Phoenix Island's disciples had died in battle, those who had survived were mostly the best of the elites. With these forces, it wouldn't take too many years for Divine Phoenix Island to restore itself to its former glory. With Lin Ming supporting them, it wouldn't be too difficult for them to even become a fifth-grade sect.

"Lin Ming? Divine Kingdom Crown Prince, hm? Hahaha!" a raucous laugh sounded out. Lin Ming turned around to see that the one crazily laughing was Zhang Zhen, the first friend Lin Ming had made after entering Divine Phoenix Island.

"Zhang Zhen!" Seeing so many familiar faces, Lin Ming's heart was filled with a nostalgic emotion. He walked forward and patted Zhang Zhen's shoulder.

"There's also Senior-apprentice Brother Dingshan, Senior-apprentice Sister Xiaoqing, Senior Master Qingyi… "

Lin Ming called out a few names. Mu Dingshan and Mu Xiaoqing were the chief disciples of the generation following Mu Qianyu. They had attended Revered Master Tianguang's birthday festival with Lin Ming and their performance had been quite adequate. As for Mu Qingyi, she was the Blue Luan Faction Elder who had often looked after Lin Ming and helped him in the Demon God Imperial Palace.

To meet with familiar people after a period of separation was peculiar. Even though it had only been two to three years, after having been separated by a great catastrophe, it was as if they had been worlds apart, leaving him with a sense of infinite sadness and wistfulness.

Lin Ming spoke with these old friends and seniors, catching up on various matters. Then, he walked over to Mu Qianyu and the others’ side, passing her a bunch of fire-attribute medicinal herbs.

“Yu’er, this is for Little Flame and Fireshine. It should be enough to help them recover some of the essence energy they've lost.”

“Mm.”

Mu Qianyu took the herbs, her eyes wet. Little Flame was a very smart and intelligent creature; it was well aware of cause and effect, and just what had happened and why. Still, Little Flame had never blamed Mu Qianyu a single bit. This had made her feel even guiltier.

Lin Ming laid down a sound-isolating enchantment and then took out a square jade box from his spatial ring. He opened it, revealing the crystal-clear black-colored beads inside it. There were some as large as fists, and some as small as pigeon eggs.

Seeing this jade box filled with black beads, Mu Yuhuang, Mu Fengxian, and the others' hearts skipped a beat. They could feel an incomparably pure, tyrannical power emanating from these beads. Compared to it, any sort of top-grade true essence stone was nothing but absolute garbage!

In fact, they could even feel faint fluctuations of life from these black beads. It was as if these black beads each contained the remnant soul of a peerless powerhouse.

“Lin Ming… What are these?” Mu Yuhuang found it difficult to stay calm. The value of these treasures had completely surpassed her scope of understanding.

“Sect Master, these are Demon God Bones. After a powerhouse dies, if the leftover energy field doesn’t disperse, it will condense into an energy crystal after tens or hundreds of thousands of years. The Demon God Bone can be used to increase one's cultivation. The ones with slightly weaker energy fluctuations are human-step Demon God Bones. They can be used for mid and late Revolving Core powerhouses to increase their cultivation. As for the ones with stronger energy fluctuations, those are earth-step Demon God Bones. They can be used for a Life Destruction powerhouse to step into the Divine Sea.

As Lin Ming spoke these words, Mu Yuhuang and the others were frightened silly. A heavenly treasure that could be used for a Life Destruction powerhouse to attack the Divine Sea bottleneck… This was truly priceless.

One could tell just from looking at the costs that the various great powers had expended to compete for the Nirvana Dragon Root.

But from the fluctuations of energy from this box of Demon God Bones that Lin Ming had opened, their value was probably above that of two complete Nirvana Dragon Roots!

This was obvious. After all, the Nirvana Dragon Root was a medicinal herb bred within the ruins of a sixth-grade sect. As for the Demon God Bones, these had taken existence in the 1000-mile forbidden zone of the mystical and strange Eternal Demon Abyss. Compared to the Eternal Demon Abyss, the ancient ruins of the Demon God Imperial Palace were simply insignificant.

Mu Yuhuang had no doubt that if any of the powers within the entire southern Sky Spill Continent were to know of these Demon God Bones, then that would start a massive and bloody war of terrifying proportions. Perhaps, even Holy Lands would partake in this struggle!

Lin Ming, are you giving these to us? What about you?" Mu Yuhuang didn't ask where Lin Ming had gotten these Demon God Bones. She only felt that perhaps they were being wasted on them.

Lin Ming smiled faintly, "Sect Master, in truth, I have even better ones."

Demon God Bones couldn't be used without restriction or end. Otherwise, it would inevitably lead to instability in one's foundation. If Lin Ming had to use one, he would naturally use the best. As for the ordinary human-step and earth-step Demon God Bones, these could best be used by Mu Qianyu and the others.

"You have even better ones!?"

After Mu Yuhuang, Mu Fengxian, and the others heard these words, they were simply speechless. They had no idea what to say to express their feelings right then.

The items within this jade box were already the most precious heavenly treasures that they had seen in their lives. But, listening to Lin Ming's words, it seemed they weren't of any use to him...

Just what sort of lucky chance had Lin Ming encountered?

Without a doubt, the greater a lucky chance was, the greater the corresponding dangers. In order to obtain these treasures, just what sort of wild and crazy situations had Lin Ming gone through?

Mu Yuhuang and the others were simply unable to imagine this. The vast ocean allowed fish to swim and the endless skies allowed birds to fly. Whatever future boundary Lin Ming could reach... That was already beyond any guesses they could make.

Lin Ming passed around the Demon God Bones. Mu Qianyu, Mu Bingyun, and Mu Yuhuang received Demon God Bones appropriate to their cultivation and potential. As for Mu Fengxian, because of her old age, she would mainly use these for supplementing the fires of her life and extending her lifespan. Thus, she had received a human-step Demon God Bone.

"Thank you." After Mu Bingyun received a Demon God Bone, she looked deeply at Lin Ming. She had never imagined that she would also receive one. "Lin Ming, thank you for saving Little Blue and thank you for everything you've done for Divine Phoenix Island," Mu Bingyun said through a true essence sound transmission.

Little Blue was Mu Bingyun’s life’s Blue Luan. If it hadn't been for Lin Ming's arrival, then Little Blue would have ended up in the same situation as Little Flame, captured by Yin Yang Profound Palace.

For this, she was especially grateful to Lin Ming.

....

Three days later, in a normal and modest mortal country of the Five Element Region, in a small and remote town...

On this day, a pair of strange visitors had come to this small town. A handsome youngster wearing blue robes stepped in, accompanied by a beautiful red-dressed woman. To the common people of this mortal town, these two people looked as if they had jumped out of a fairy tale book.

This young man and the young woman were Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu.

“It’s here,” Mu Qianyu said in a gentle tone.

“Mm... ”

Lin Ming looked at an ordinary small restaurant in front of him. The red lacquered pillars, the latticed wooden windows, the tilted roof, all of it revealed a familiar flavor. Looking up, he saw a black sign hung at the top. A few words were written on it – Lin Family Restaurant.

At this moment, Lin Ming felt his mind shake. He was inexplicably held in place, his mind flying back to five years ago when he still lived in Green Mulberry City.

He had passed his childhood years in such a restaurant in Green Mulberry City.

Blue stones, simmering tea, the tapping of an abacus, friendly guests, nodding waiters, aged wine...

Lin Ming didn’t say anything in the end. He quietly walked into the restaurant, whereupon he saw a little girl with braided hair bouncing at the entrance. She wore a comfortable and well-crafted red jacket, and there was a stick of sugar-coated candy in her hands. Her eyes were wide as she curiously looked at Lin Ming.

Perhaps because she had grown up in this small restaurant and was used to guests, this little girl was not shy. She bit down on her sugared candy while she stared with blinking eyes at Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu. Although she didn’t know who Lin Ming was, Mu Qianyu seemed to be a tad familiar to her, although she couldn’t recall just where she had seen her.

At this time, perhaps because of a deep throbbing connection in the depths of his bloodline, Lin Ming recognized this three-to-four-year-old little girl. This child was his sister, that little pigeon – Lin Xiaoge.

Then, Lin Ming saw a beautiful woman in her early twenties gently holding onto the hands of a middle-aged woman as they slowly came down from the second floor. Behind them was a middle-aged man wearing a hat. In his hand he held a shiny new abacus and a book, as if he was preparing to assess the day’s sales.

In that instant, Lin Ming eyes became wet with emotion.

Father… mother… and Qin Xingxuan…

For some reason, a strong melancholic pain surged in his heart.

Those who walked the path of martial arts were doomed to loneliness. No one would be able to keep up with his footsteps.

Parents, family, friends, lovers… The stronger he became, the greater the distance between them…

Lin Ming felt an inexplicable pain resonating in his heart. He knelt down, his knees hitting the floor.

“Father, mother… Your child has returned… ”

………………

After Lin Ming returned home, The Lin Family Restaurant closed down. These days, Lin Ming lived in a room his parents had especially prepared for him, enjoying rare days of quiet tranquility.

Lin Ming’s parents and Lin Ming himself were excellent chefs. Even Qin Xingxuan had learned a great deal about cooking after following Lin Ming’s parents the past few days. Only Mu Qianyu didn’t know anything. This caused her a great deal of embarrassment. She only understood few of the common mortal customs. Considering her special relationship with Lin Ming, if she didn’t help prepare food and only allowed Lin Ming and his parents to do it, then that was extremely rude.

After quickly learning some cooking techniques from Lin Ming, given Mu Qianyu’s intelligence, she was quickly able to prepare delicious meals.

During the first one or two days, because Lin Ming’s parents were from a normal mortal background, they were somewhat cautious of Mu Qianyu. After they slowly familiarized themselves with each other, they naturally relaxed and the relations between everyone grew much more harmonious, relaxed, and happy.

In the days when Lin Ming wasn’t there, his parents had already recognized Qin Xingxuan as their daughter-in-law. To Lin Ming’s parents, Qin Xingxuan was already his wife.

At that time, within Qin Xingxuan’s room, Lin Ming took out a jade box.

“Xingxuan, this is for you.”

Qin Xingxuan’s cultivation was at the Houtian realm. After absorbing 10 drops of Vermillion Bird blood essence, her bloodline talent even surpassed that of Mu Dingshan and Mu Xiaoqing. In addition, she had practiced the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ and the ‘True Primal Chaos Formula’ the past few years, and her foundations were remarkably solid. Although her talent was not yet at the Saint level, she had already swiftly surpassed geniuses like the Sunfire Princess and Zhan Yunjian.

Within the jade box, there were all sorts of heavenly treasures ranging from low to high level, even Demon God Bones. As long as Qin Xingxuan used them step-by-step, she would be able to breakthrough to Xiantian by 22-23 years of age and then to Revolving Core by 30 years of age. She would basically Mu Qianyu's level.

However, looking at all these valuable and precious heavenly treasures, Qin Xingxuan didn’t smile or seem happy at all. Instead, she only lowered her head. Lin Ming was unsure about what she was thinking.

Chapter 706 – Reaching Black Hole Revolving Core

Chapter 706 – Reaching Black Hole Revolving Core

…

…

…

“Xingxuan, what is it?”

“Ah, nothing’s wrong… ” Qin Xingxuan quickly shook her head. But, this action of hers looked as if she wanted to hide something.

Lin Ming’s mind stirred. He wanted to say something but eventually didn’t.

Qin Xingxuan carefully took the jade box and placed it in her spatial ring. With these treasures, in addition to her current talent, it wouldn’t be any problem at all for her to reach Life Destruction in the future.

Lin Ming said, “Xingxuan, it’s getting late; I’ll return to my room first.”

“Mm, alright.” Qin Xingxuan nodded and then escorted Lin Ming out.

A night passed without words. The next morning, Lin Ming took his parents and little sister along with Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu to return to the Giant Leviathan’s dimension. The 90-mile-long Giant Leviathan flew high in the sky, soaring towards the South Sea Demon Region.

Lin Ming’s plan was to go to the South Sea Demon Region and dig up their medicine garden. The last time he went there he had simply plundered away all the medicinal herbs, but he hadn’t taken away the spiritual earth. Lin Ming intended to go back and finish the job.

After the South Sea Demon Region had suffered such a catastrophe, they had already learned from their mistakes. They now had a formation of spread-out scouts, and when Lin Ming reached the 5000 mile border of the South Sea Demon Region, the scouts discovered him and relayed the news.

When Xuan Yuqie received this true essence sound transmission, her face turned green with hate. She had never thought that after a mere half a month Lin Ming would ride the Giant Leviathan back and attack the South Sea Demon Region again!

If this could be tolerated, what else couldn't be?

Bang!

The chair Xuan Yuqie was sitting on burst into pieces from her anger. She was so mad that she could feel her stomach twisting into queasy knots. But this time, besides escaping, there was nothing else she could do.

Grinding her shiny teeth together, Xuan Yuqie calmly issued an order. “All South Sea Demon Region martial artists heed my orders. Cease all training and immediately leave the three Demon Region islands. Gather at the Abyssal Islands 1600 miles away!”

“Ah?” The Elder in charge of relaying orders was stunned. He was about to ask what had happened when Xuan Yuqie angrily shouted, “What are you doing, hurry up!”

The Elder quickly relayed the orders, frightened.

After the only person left was Xuan Yuqie, she felt nauseous from the anger raging in her heart. “Lin Ming, you have gone too far! You and I are irreconcilable enemies!”

……………

By the time Lin Ming arrived in the South Sea Demon Region, all of the martial artists had already left. This somewhat surprised Lin Ming. He slowly ordered the Giant Leviathan to fly towards the South Sea Demon Region’s medicine garden and discovered that there weren’t many medicinal herbs left. It seemed that almost everything had already been carried off by the South Sea Demon Region martial artists in their hasty retreat.

Lin Ming faintly smiled, not caring much. He hadn’t come for those trashy herbs to begin with. What he had come for was the spiritual earth.

The South Sea Demon Region’s medicine garden was already larger than the one in Yin Yang Profound palace; it was a full two square miles. Lin Ming sent out 400 to 500 tentacles, digging out the entire garden by the roots, and then took away as much as the Giant Leviathan could.

1600 miles away on a deserted island, Xuan Yuqie was watching all of this take place through the phantom shadows of an array disc. Her lungs nearly exploded with rage on the spot. Before she left, she'd had everyone pack up all their belongings and everything else valuable. It was only the medicine garden’s spiritual earth that she hadn’t thought to bring away, as it was impossible to do so to begin with. Now, Lin Ming was even looting that!

He was simply a locust!

Wherever he went, everything was destroyed!

Her full milky white breasts fiercely heaved up and down. Xuan Yuqie roared, “Lin Ming, I hope you f*cking die!”

………………

Lin Ming commanded the Giant Leviathan to head tens of thousands of miles deep into the South Sea. There, the great beast began to slowly submerge downward. The Giant

Leviathan was a Saint Beast of the vast sea to begin with; it could dive hundreds of thousands of feet deep.

At such depth, the water pressure was terrifying. Even a first stage Life Destruction powerhouse would be greatly weakened if they had to fight in such an environment.

However, the Giant Leviathan was able to regulate the pressure within and outside of its body, freely moving in the deep sea.

At this time, Lin Ming was sitting in the dimension between the Giant Leviathan's eyes, his eyes shut. In front of him were two high-grade earth-step Demon God Bones.

"Boy, are you planning to make a breakthrough in your boundary?" Demonshine's voice asked in Lin Ming's mind.

Lin Ming had broken into Revolving Core when he had first entered the Eternal Demon Abyss. Now, over half a year had already passed. Lin Ming had gone to train for one month in the ancient tomb of the goddess inside the 1000 mile forbidden zone. He had reached the great success of the early Revolving Core realm. Afterward, he had formed his 12-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo, and his cultivation had reached the peak of early Revolving Core. Now, with the support of these high-grade earth-step Demon God Bones, it wouldn't be any problem for him to breakthrough to the middle Revolving Core realm, thus why Demonshine had asked this question.

However, Lin Ming actually shook his head and said, "No, I plan on forming a Black Hole Revolving Core first, then I will consider making a breakthrough. Every day I don't form a Black Hole Revolving Core will be another day when I don't make a breakthrough."

The so-called Black Hole Revolving Core was when one's foundation reached the pinnacle. All of the true essence pellets and other energies within the dantian would completely condense onto the crystal core, without leaving anything aside. This would create perfect Revolving Core. This sort of Revolving Core was like a black hole; it was only an entry, and the attraction force was also much greater.

For a martial artist who reached Black Hole Revolving Core, not only was the overall true essence in their dantian far greater than normal, but the speed at which they absorbed heaven and earth origin energy was that much faster than other martial artists. There was simply no comparison between the two.

“Heh! Well said! If your foundation is not solid then you will easily encounter bottlenecks in your future cultivation. The most important thing to you is not to make a break through, but to build up your foundation! I estimate that Xuan Wuji still has several months before he can leave his seclusion. That should be enough for you to reach Black Hole Revolving Core,”Demonshine said, appreciatively.

These past years, although Demonshine had been unable to help too much in the material world, he had still been able to guide and direct Lin Ming so that he would take fewer detours on his martial arts path.

Lin Ming sat down cross-legged and took out a high-grade earth-step Demon God Bone. Then, he began to absorb the incomparably pure energy contained within it.

With the support of this energy, the scattered true essence crystals that freely floated in the gaseous energy around the Revolving Core began to slowly condense, falling onto the surface of the Revolving Core.

This was an extremely arduous and time-consuming process, because the true essence crystal pellets were like stars in the sky. Not only that, but once these crystal pellets fell onto the Revolving Core’s surface they, could also fall off again, forcing Lin Ming to redo the process.

In order to overcome these difficulties, he had to continuously reinforce the compression process.

And in order to do all this, it required a massive amount of time and energy. If he didn’t have these high-grade earth-step Demon God Bones supporting him, then Lin Ming might have needed one or two years to become successful.

Thus, no matter how much of a monstrous talent one was, it was impossible to continue without the support of resources. Like that, one would only waste their potential before completely vanishing.

Training was a boring and lonesome process. Day after day passed. Because Lin Ming entered the ethereal martial intent state, he was able to rid himself of outside distractions, and fully focus his thoughts on consolidating his foundation. Because he had taken some fasting pills before this, Lin Ming didn't even need to eat or drink. In fact, he didn't even need to move.

Ten days…

One month…

Two months…

Lin Ming seemed to have turned into a statue. If it weren't for the fact that there was no dust in the Giant Leviathan's dimension, he would have already become covered with a thick layer of it.

Finally, after two and a half months, the last several true essence crystals, underneath the energy compression of the Demon God Bone, had cleanly settled onto the Revolving Core.

In that instant, there was a sudden change!

The Revolving Core that was uniformly spinning suddenly seemed as if it couldn't withstand its own attractive force. It emitting crackling 'ka ka ka' sounds. Lin Ming's Revolving Core had begun to break!

However, these were not mere cracks, but rather the entire crystal core collapsing!

In the moment when the Revolving Core began to collapse, Lin Ming gave a stuffy cough and his body shook. He felt as if his heart had been grasped by a demonic claw, and it was being squeezed to a pulp!

Because he had lost control of all the energy within his body. It furiously and violently raced through his meridians as if it wanted to break out of his body. His hands, feet, muscles, everything seemed as if it would explode. In that instant, Lin Ming even thought he would die there.

“Lin Ming, don’t worry! This is because your Revolving Core broke apart and temporarily lost its function. Once it reforms, you will be able to control your energy again.” Demonshine’s voice sounded out in Lin Ming’s mind. After a martial artist reached the Houtian realm, true essence would fully fuse into their body. But, the area where true essence gathered and condensed, the dantian, would become a martial artist’s greatest weakness. Once the dantian broke apart then a martial artist would immediately die.

Lin Ming was now almost in this situation.

Soon, Lin Ming couldn’t even breath. His heart stopped beating and all the blood froze in him. Lin Ming was distressed to the extreme. However, he couldn’t even make a painful expression, because he had lost control of the muscles in his face.

This state continued for a full 10 breaths' time. When his perception began to fade away, the shattered Revolving Core in his body suddenly burst out with a blazing black light. From its original walnut size, it shrunk to the size of a quail egg. The speed it was spinning at increased by several times, and it had turned from a dark gray to an absolute matte black.

After the new Revolving Core formed, the lost control flushed back into Lin Ming like a surging tide. The true essence within his meridians started circulating again and his blood flow returned to normal. His entire body trembled and he fell to the floor, panting and breathing in great gulps of air. That feeling was just like dying.

“Boy, you’ve really done it this time! When the Demon Emperor was still on this planet, even he hadn’t reached this level!” Demonshine’s tone was somewhat sour. He couldn’t help but be a bit jealous of Lin Ming’s talent and ridiculously solid foundation. In the future, Lin Ming’s achievements would truly be limitless.

Lin Ming sat on the ground for a while as he caught his breath. As he examined his dantian, he found the new Revolving Core there. It was pitch black, without the slightest sheen to it, as if it were a portal that led to another time and space.

A Revolving Core was similar to a star. If the total mass was the same and the radius was smaller, then the gravitational force would be comparatively stronger.

Right now, Lin Ming's Revolving Core was able to attract surrounding heaven and earth origin energy several times faster than before. Lin Ming could faintly feel the origin energy within the Giant Leviathan constantly gathering around him. Even if Lin Ming didn't take the initiative to absorb it, this energy would still be swallowed up by the Black Hole Revolving Core, quietly settling on the surface and becoming a part of his cultivation.

This is the self-cultivation of the Black Hole Revolving Core?" Lin Ming was shocked. When a martial artist formed a Black Hole Revolving Core, because of its greater ability to attract energy, it could automatically train itself. Even in this aspect alone, it absolutely left all other ordinary Revolving Core martial artists in the dust!

Chapter 707 – Xuan Wuji Leaves Seclusion

Chapter 707 – Xuan Wuji Leaves Seclusion

…

…

…

Lin Ming took a deep breath, overjoyed. Not only was the Black Hole Revolving Core able to autonomously cultivate, but it could also absorb heaven and earth origin energy at a pace far surpassing an ordinary Revolving Core martial artist. This alone would increase his endurance and recovery to another level. In addition, a Black Hole Revolving Core martial artist had a true essence several times thicker than normal. In front of a Black Hole Revolving Core martial artist, an ordinary person would not even have the chance to resist.

After reaching Black Hole Revolving Core, Lin Ming still wasn't satisfied. He took out two more Demon God Bones and prepared himself to break through to the middle Revolving Core stage.

Currently, Lin Ming had been stranded at the early Revolving Core realm for nearly an entire year. His foundation was already stable enough; he just needed to seclude himself again and attack the middle Revolving Core in order to succeed towards the next step.

But while Lin Ming was in closed-door seclusion, 300 miles north of the South Sea Demon Region, a sudden loud noise exploded from the depths of the sea, causing all the surrounding waters to tremble. A faint rumbling sound lingered in the air like an endless thunderclap!

Peng!

The seawater exploded and a blue geyser directly impacted into the heavens. In this terrifying spout of water, a black-robed, middle-aged man floated inside, his eyes seeming to sizzle with jet-black flames.

This person was Xuan Wuji.

Even though he had risked his life to make a breakthrough with great difficulty to the fourth stage of Life Destruction, Xuan Wuji's breakthrough wasn't perfect. After shattering his Revolving Core, there were many defects that existed after reforming it. These energy flaws would possibly be his mortal weakness when breaking through to the fifth stage of Life Destruction in the future!

And a considerable part of this was all thanks to Lin Ming. Because Lin Ming had recklessly rampaged through the South Sea Demon Region, it had affected his calm heart.

Crossing Life Destruction had always been extremely risky. Just the tiniest change in one's heart and mindset could create catastrophic consequences.

Fortunately,, Xuan Wuji had been prepared. If Lin Ming had angered him in a critical moment then he might have even died. Still, just these energy flaws in his Revolving Core would probably take a hundred years just to stabilize.

How could he not be furious about this?

Combined with the fact that Lin Ming had razed and pillaged the South Sea Demon Region, Xuan Wuji wished he could rip apart Lin Ming with his bare hands!

Xuan Wuji raised his hand and immediately sent out a sound transmitting talisman.

A moment later, Xuan Yuqie's reply returning.

She was both happy and afraid that Xuan Wuji had come out of seclusion.

She was happy that the South Sea Demon Region finally had its supporting pillar revealed. She feared, though, that Xuan Wuji would not be happy with her performance these days.

She had lost the Giant Leviathan and allowed Lin Ming to completely bully the sect to near oblivion. She feared that Xuan Wuji would blame her for all this.

Xuan Yuqie completely listed out what Lin Ming had done these past several months without missing a single matter.

After Xuan Wuji listened to this, he viciously grinned. “You transferred all that garbage from Divine Phoenix Island into the Giant Leviathan and then hid deep in the South Sea? Do you think that just because you are hiding in the Giant Leviathan, you have absolute safety? Do you think that I can’t find you in the deep sea?”

Xuan Wuji suddenly gripped his fists, his knuckles crackling. “Lin Ming, I will have you pay for everything you’ve done!”

Woosh!

A black ray of light cut through the skies. Xuan Wuji flew at full speed not towards the South Sea Demon Region, but towards the deep sea waters!

After flying for a moment, he then shot into the sea. What Xuan Wuji was looking for were…the various clans of the deep sea!

When the South Sea war started, Xuan Wuji had obtained a great deal of help from the deep sea clans. In truth, he didn’t even need them to deal with Divine Phoenix Island in order to conquer the South Sea. But he became allies with them in order to deal with those other powers of the southern Sky Spill Continent, such as Great Zen Temple. However, he never imagined that he would actually have to borrow their power to face Lin Ming.

……………

Another half month passed. Lin Ming had remained in seclusion for over four months now, and his 21st birthday had quietly passed.

Half of the second high-grade, earth-step Demon God Bone was already absorbed by Lin Ming. The energy within his dantian constantly concentrated into his Revolving Core, and he became increasingly close to breaking through to the middle Revolving Core realm

But at this moment, Lin Ming suddenly felt the stone bed underneath him shake, the entire dimension trembling.

“Mm? What’s going on?”

Lin Ming was startled. Demonshine’s voice instantly resounded in his mind.

“Xuan Wuji is outside. Looks like he’s brought a great number of helpers; it’s quite lively outside.”

Lin Ming frowned. This Xuan Wuji couldn’t have come earlier or later, but had chosen instead to come at this exact time.

If he gave up his breakthrough here, he would have wasted all his efforts of this past month.

Bang!

The Giant Leviathan shook. Lin Ming’s expression changed. How could Xuan Wuji’s attack be this strong!?

Demonshine said, “Xuan Wuji figured out some defensive weaknesses of the Giant Leviathan from the Demon Emperor’s letter. He’s not as stupid as the Xing couple, trying to attack the Giant Leviathan’s mouth. Now, Xuan Wuji is attacking an area a mile down from the Giant Leviathan’s mouth where there are a pair of gray spots. These are the Giant Leviathan’s auditory and perception organs, and are also used in maintaining balance; they are very sensitive. You can classify them as the Giant Leviathan’s ‘ears’. Once this area is attacked then the Giant Leviathan will shake.”

As Demonshine spoke, his thoughts stirred and a screen appeared in front of Lin Ming. On this screen were seven humanoid forms. The one in the lead was Xuan Wuji. He wore a dark gray robe, and he had a strangely shaped black horn in his hands. This horn seemed as if it were crafted from some deep sea beast.

Near Xuan Wuji, Lin Ming could also make out the Black Flood Dragon Clan Patriarch he had seen at the Demon God Imperial Palace, as well as Xuan Yuqie, and the silver-masked Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign.

These four weren't surprising. But what drew Lin Ming's attention were three other monkey-like creatures that stood near Xuan Wuji. They were as tall as Giant Demons and their entire body was covered with golden fur. They had deep blue eyes that emitted a faint light.

Was surprised Lin Ming was that, within these three monkey creatures, one of them had a cultivation at the third stage of Life Destruction, and the other two were at the second stage of Life Destruction.

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. If he weren't wrong, then these monkey-like creatures were Turquoise-Eyed Apes, one of the various deep sea clans!

The endless sea around the Sky Spill Continent was vast and limitless. The races of the deep sea surpassed the Sky Spill Continent in both variety and quantity. They also had their Emperor-level powerhouses, perhaps in even greater numbers than the Sky Spill Continent.

However, the deep sea clans were not adapted to living on land. Thus, they were able to safely coexist in peace. It was unknown just why they chose to join forces with Xuan Wuji at this time.

'So he has various deep sea clans helping him; no wonder Xuan Wuji can find me in the incomparably vast sea. With the countless marine life in the deep sea clans helping to search, it would be easy to find a creature that is several dozen miles long.'

This thought flashed through Lin Ming's mind when the Giant Leviathan shook again! Although the Giant Leviathan had amazing defensive power, it still wasn't able to withstand a barrage of attacks from so many people attacking its weaknesses. At the ears of the Giant Leviathan, rivers of blood streamed out, already dying the entire sea around it a vivid red.

"Demonshine, won't the Giant Leviathan retaliate unless it's being controlled by someone?"

Demonshine said, "Of course. This big fellow is a bit slow but it won't just sit here and allow itself to be attacked. But did you see that black horn in Xuan Wuji's hand? That device can be used to control the Giant Leviathan's movements. When Xuan Wuji had captured the Giant Leviathan in the Demon God Imperial Palace, he had also relied on this black horn to do so. As long as it is blown, the Giant Leviathan will remain motionless.

As Demonshine spoke, Lin Ming recalled the black horn in Xuan Wuji's hands. So, it seemed that the horn was used to command the Giant Leviathan...

"Lin Ming, I have a way to leave a soul mark in the Giant Leviathan's spiritual sea and control it for a brief period. But this will consume a massive amount of soul force. Not just that but...the Giant Leviathan is only good at destroying sects and engaging in large-scale battles. It does not excel at fighting high-stage Life Destruction powerhouses, especially in small numbers. If I control it in battle, then there still isn't anything I can do against Xuan Wuji.

"I know." Lin Ming's mind raced. When he had used the Giant Leviathan to face the Xing couple, he had an ultimate advantage because he was able to use the entire Yin Yang Profound Palace as a hostage. But, the Giant Leviathan wasn't able to deal with Xing couple by itself. It was only when Lin Ming threatened to raze the entire Yin Yang Profound Palace and massacre all of their disciples that the couple restrained from doing anything.

However, Xuan Wuji's South Sea Demon Region had already been ruined by Lin Ming; he no longer feared such a deed.

Even if Xuan Wuji constantly attacked the Giant Leviathan, there wasn't anything that Lin Ming could do. The Giant Leviathan's attacks were too inflexible and singular in their means. Not just that, but they also took a long time to set up. It simply wouldn't be able to strike Xuan Wuji.

"We'll fight and retreat towards the deep sea at the same time. If we can go deep enough then Xuan Wuji's combat strength will be greatly affected by the pressure there." Lin Mind could only tolerate this threat. While the Giant Leviathan had its strengths, it also had its weaknesses.

"I fear it won't be as easy as you think it is. The deep sea clans are experts at fighting deep sea battles. They might have shared some secret skills with Xuan Wuji and Xuan Yuqie to withstand the deep sea pressure. Today, since we're going to suffer regardless, we may as well counterattack first."

As Demonshine spoke, he drew out of Lin Ming's spiritual sea, turning into a little pug. In the next moment he drilled through a space barrier and vanished without trace.

After another half an incense stick of time, the Giant Leviathan finally began moving. Over a 1000 tentacles shot out, counterattacking Xuan Wuji and the others. However, these were all second-stage Life Destruction powerhouses or stronger; how could they possibly fear these tentacles? They simply drew back farther. As for Xuan Wuji and that third-stage Life Destruction Turquoise-Eyed Ape, they were able to avoid the attack of the tentacles while constantly sending out beams of energy, not stopping their attacks on the Giant Leviathan's weak points.

Although a steel needle couldn't kill a whale, attacking a whale's eyes and ears over and over again would cause no small amount of damage. Not to mention, Xuan Wuji's attacks were at a much higher level than a steel needle; they could at least be classified as a dagger. The force of his techniques were several times more powerful than the Xing couple's combined attack.

"These damn brats!"

Demonshine angrily huffed out. He controlled the Giant Leviathan and retreated deep into the South Sea.

Xuan Wuji and the others closely followed like annoying flies.

At this time, within the Giant Leviathan's dimension, Mu Qianyu and the others also realized what was happening outside. They discovered that Xuan Wuji had come out of seclusion and was chasing them down to kill them. The disciples of Divine Phoenix Island became somewhat nervous.

Especially when the Giant Leviathan trembled every once in a while. This caused their hearts to jump into their throats, a uneasy feeling pooling in their stomachs.

Could the Giant Leviathan really withstand the fourth-stage Life Destruction Xuan Wuji?

Chapter 708 – Breaking Through To Middle Revolving Core

Chapter 708 – Breaking Through To Middle Revolving Core

…

…

…

A barrel-thick beam of black light tore through the seawater, turning into a devilish black spear that thrust straight towards the Giant Leviathan's auditory organs. This was one of Xuan Wuji's fatal finishing blows. Once this move had left his hands, all of the surrounding seawater instantly heated up to the temperature of magma. However, under the immense deep-sea pressure it didn't actually vaporize, but instead roiled and churned around. The black spear surged with a massive spiral of utterly hot water as it smashed toward the Giant Leviathan's ears.

Demonshine's heart tightened. Perhaps the Giant Leviathan really wouldn't be able to withstand such an attack. The Giant Leviathan's auditory organs were similar to a normal person's eardrums. No matter how powerful its defenses were, these eardrums were still a great weakness.

With a stir of his thoughts, Demonshine no longer sent the Giant Leviathan to attack. Instead, he made it gather most of its tentacles to cover and protect its ears.

Bang!

The black spear smashed into the thick meat wall formed by hundreds of tentacles. Most of the outer tentacles were cut straight off, blood pouring into the waters.

However, Xuan Wuji's attack had also been offset. He would no longer be able to harm the Giant Leviathan's weak point a second time.

Several torn off tentacles wasn't much to the Giant Leviathan. Once Demonshine discovered how effective this move was, he simply completely gave up on counterattacking and manipulated all the tentacles to cover up the Giant Leviathan's ears as he plunged straight into the deep sea.

The Giant Leviathan had a streamlined and smooth body; it could maintain an extremely high speed in the sea.

"This brat!" Xuan Wuji's expression became dark and gloomy. He had never thought that even with the interference of the Giant Leviathan Horn, Lin Ming would still be able to so calmly command the Giant Leviathan so that his attacks became much less effective.

By using that one attack Xuan Wuji had consumed a great deal of energy. He swallowed a pill and coldly ordered, "Follow it!"

The group of seven chased after the Giant Leviathan all the way down. Along the way, all seven of them constantly attacked the Giant Leviathan. Xuan Wuji had a very profound grasp of the Giant Leviathan's weaknesses. Although they wouldn't be able to do a massive amount of damage at once, they could still create numerous small wounds all over its body.

The Giant Leviathan dripped with blood. Wherever it went it would leave behind a river of blood, dying the entire sea red.

Beside Xuan Wuji, the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch stretched out its tongue to taste the bloody waters. He chuckled and said, "Elder Xuan, it won't be long. Several days at most until the Giant Leviathan drops dead from exhaustion. Remember that we agreed that the Giant Leviathan's heart and spine will be left to my Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan. Elder Xuan, make sure you don't forget!"

Xuan Wuji coldly coughed and said, "This old man will naturally keep his promises!"

As soon as he spoke, he lifted his hand again and sent out a black beam of light, attacking an old wound on the Giant Leviathan's body and making it expand even more.

"These damn brats!" Demonshine spat out. He wished that he could tear apart that damn Xuan Wuji and his little buddies. It was true that the Giant Leviathan was known as being invincible under the Divine Sea, but that didn't mean this big fellow could just sit down and allow anyone to attack it, especially since Xuan Wuji's attacks were all specifically aimed at the Giant Leviathan's weak points. With a group of these brats attacking the Giant Leviathan, it had already lost a great deal of blood. There weren't any visible effects yet, but if this continued for another one to two days, then it would certainly have an effect on the Giant Leviathan. If this continued, then death by blood loss was possible.

Bang!

The Giant Leviathan's dimension shook again. Xuan Wuji and the others had combined forces to attack the balance maintaining the Giant Leviathan's ventral fins!

The Giant Leviathan's ventral fins were only 200-300 feet thick and not too wide. If Xuan Wuji and the others attacked together, then it truly was possible to slowly cut off a ventral fin!

Seeing that the ventral fin was injured, Demonshine's heart burned with a blazing fury. However, he couldn't think of any solutions to this. This was just like an elephant being chased by a horde of blood-sucking mosquitoes; it was impossible to effectively counterattack.

This went on for another 10-12 hours. The Giant Leviathan was losing more and more blood, and the right rear ventral fin was already half cut off; it was greatly affecting the Giant Leviathan's speed in the water.

But at this moment, a gigantic canyon appeared in front of the Giant Leviathan.

It was a deep sea trench.

The deep sea trenches of the South Sea could reach 500,000 to 600,000 feet, or even 700,000 to 800,000 feet deep. This was several hundred miles. At this depth, the water pressure would reach an unimaginably terrifying degree. Even if it were the Giant Leviathan or the various deep sea clans, they couldn't stay submerged forever.

As for Xuan Wuji, he was a land-dwelling human. Even with the support of the deep sea clan's secret skills, there was still a limit to how deep he could go; it was somewhat less than that of the Giant Leviathan and the various deep-sea clans.

Now, let's see who could dive deeper!

Demonshine grit his teeth and commanded the Giant Leviathan to plunge directly downwards. Even if he couldn't throw off Xuan Wuji, the area of this deep sea trench was narrow enough; it wouldn't be easy to avoid the Giant Leviathan's tentacles here.

The depth rapidly increased!

220,000 feet!

230,000 feet!

250,000 feet!

....

The Giant Leviathan constantly swallowed the high-pressure sea water, filling its blood and muscles and balancing out the enormous pressure of the deep sea. As for the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island, because they were in a separate dimension, they weren't affected by this pressure at all.

After reaching a depth of 260,000 feet, Xuan Yuqie and the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign were the first ones who were unable to withstand going any further. The thick protective shields of energy they formed around their bodies had begun to emit crackling noises. Obviously, they had reached their limits. Even with the deep sea clan's Water Repelling Pearl, they couldn't go any further downward.

"You two return first,"Xuan Wuji tersely ordered.

"Yes." Xuan Yuqie and the Eastern Faction Sovereign immediately stopped. If they went any further than that, the barrier they had made to protect themselves could instantly shatter. At that point, they would be crumpled to death by the extraordinary sea pressure, without a chance to react. As Life Destruction masters, if they were to die here because of sea pressure it would truly be laughable.

This went on...

290,000 feet...

300,000 feet...

Right now, they were already 200 miles deep underwater. The Black Flood Dragon Clan Patriarch and the two second stage Life Destruction Turquoise-Eyed Apes couldn't bear the pressure and turned to go back.

330,000 feet...

At this time, Demonshine could feel the Giant Leviathan's entire body shaking. Even as a great beast of the deep sea, there was a limit to its ability of pressure self-adjustments.

"These damn brats are really insistent." Demonshine looked at the scene outside of the Giant Leviathan and began cursing wildly. Indeed, to him, who had lived for tens of thousands of years already, characters like Xuan Wuji were simply little bumbling babies.

350,000 feet...

At this depth, there were already several million jin of pressure on every square foot. Xuan Wuji grimaced, finally stopping. Even with the secret techniques of the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan, he was also approaching his limit.

Right now, 90% of his energy was already being used to resist the immense pressure of the deep sea; he simply couldn't attack. Even the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch wasn't much better off. If they fought here, then they would consume a massive amount of energy. If they even used just a few moves, it would nearly deplete their energy reserves. At that time, even returning to the surface alive would pose a problem.

"They can count their lucky stars. Let's return to the 100,000 feet sea-depth first." Xuan Wuji left behind a monitoring soul mark on the Giant Leviathan's body before turning around and swimming back up.

The Turquoise-Eyed Ape Patriarch had long had the intention of returning. He immediately stopped diving and swam back up.

Seeing those two annoying and disgusting brats leave, Demonshine finally sighed in relief. 350,000 feet was near the limit of what the Giant Leviathan could withstand. Although the Giant Leviathan's body was incomparably tough, it also had a much greater surface area. Thus, it naturally had to withstand a much greater amount of pressure.

At this depth, the Giant Leviathan had to rapidly consume energy. Even though it absorbed heaven and earth origin energy at an extraordinary rate, it still only managed to barely maintain itself.

"We've been trapped in this trench by those dirty bastards!"

Demonshine was exceedingly morose, having noticed Xuan Wuji's perception lock on the Giant Leviathan's body. As soon as the Giant Leviathan moved or decided to surface, then Xuan Wuji would organize another attack. Moreover, as time passed, Xuan Wuji might even find more helpers to come.

After the previous battle, the Giant Leviathan was covered with hundreds of small and large wounds. The damage to the right ventral fin was the most serious. It had been attacked by Xuan Wuji's focused barrage of attacks for several hours, and it had nearly been ripped off. It would take at least a month to recover. But, under the pressure of this deep sea trench, it was simply impossible for the Giant Leviathan to conjure up the excess energy to regenerate the wound.

This was a horrible situation!

At that moment, Demonshine suddenly felt a series of vibrations in another dimension. The origin energy there stirred, rapidly running out.

Demonshine was startled. He immediately shot through a space barrier and appeared in the dimension where Lin Ming was. In this dimension, the heaven and earth origin energy had formed a massive vortex of energy which was funneling into Lin Ming.

"Good young boy, you've finally broken through to the middle Revolving Core realm!"

Demonshine had thought that Lin Ming would need another week or so; he had never imagined that Lin Ming would make the breakthrough today.

Controlling the Giant Leviathan, Demonshine sent all the heaven and earth origin energy from the other dimensions into this one, so that Lin Ming could absorb it. After half an incense stick of time passed, Lin Ming had sucked all of the heaven and earth origin energy into his dantian.

The Revolving Core in Lin Ming's dantian more than doubled, and then a scene similar to when he had broken through to Black Hole Revolving Core occurred.

Within his dantian, the crystal Revolving Core first shattered, then began to collapse. After several breaths' time, it condensed into a much smaller form, and its spinning speed became much faster than before. The crystal core seemed to form a perfect ball, darker than ink. The true essence contained within was several times the previous amount.

This was the middle Revolving Core realm!

Because he had formed a Black Hole Revolving Core, Lin Ming's entire true essence was incomparable to that of a normal Revolving Core martial artist.

On the road of martial arts, the Revolving Core was a particularly special boundary. It was divided into two great stages, both of them considered separate from each other, yet linked. The first was the ordinary Revolving Core realm, and the second was the Life Destruction realm.

Normally, when a Revolving Core martial artist reached late Revolving Core, the next step after that would be to pass the stages of Life Destruction. This was the same for the extreme Revolving Core. A Life Destruction martial artist still had the Revolving Core in their dantian.

In other words, Lin Ming was merely two boundaries away from reaching Life Destruction.

"Lin Ming, Xuan Wuji's perception has already locked onto the Giant Leviathan. He is keeping guard at a depth of 100,000 feet in the sea. As long as the Giant Leviathan moves, he will be able to sense it. He wants to lock us in here until we give up or die. What do you want to do now?" After being forced into such a miserable situation, Demonshine was crestfallen. In these depths, the Giant Leviathan wouldn't be able to support itself for too long. Three to five months was manageable, but after a year or two passed, the Giant Leviathan would die of exhaustion. As for Lin Ming, although he had broken through to the middle Revolving Core, it was still impossible for him to currently contend with the fourth stage Life Destruction master, Xuan Wuji.

Lin Ming thought for a moment, then his eyes flashed with a chilling light. "Go up for a bit. Since they want to stay here, then they have to pay the price."

Chapter 709 – Opening the Eight Inner Hidden Gates Again

Chapter 709 – Opening the Eight Inner Hidden Gates Again

…

…

…

Demonshine controlled the Giant Leviathan and rose from 350,000 feet to 30,000 feet. At this depth, the water pressure was still terrifying.

Xuan Wuji was standing guard at the seabed 100,000 feet deep. If the Giant Leviathan rose again then they would most likely meet Xuan Wuji's attacks.

"Lin Ming, what do you plan on doing?" Demonshine asked. Although Lin Ming's strength had suddenly shot up, he was still far from being able to compare to Xuan Wuji. Facing Xuan Wuji head on was no different from walking into the jaws of death.

Lin Ming said, "They can guard here as much as they want. I'll go to their headquarters and see just how long they can stay. If they don't go back, then they can watch as their entire lair is destroyed and everyone killed."

Lin Ming had already formed his Black Hole Revolving Core and broken through to the middle Revolving Core realm. His strength had risen to yet another level. He estimated that with his current abilities, he should just barely be able to defeat a second-stage Life Destruction martial artist. But as for his true combat strength, he would need to fight with a second-stage Life Destruction martial artist to find out. Just from this, ruining their headquarters yet again wouldn't be too difficult.

"Massacre their headquarters?" Demonshine's eyes brightened. "Hahaha, I like! Boy, your tastes suit this Saint perfectly! Don't worry. With this Saint managing this Giant Leviathan, it shouldn't be difficult to stay here for half a year. Let go of your limits and destroy everything around you! I can't wait to see just what expression those damn brats will have! Hahahaha!"

The more Lin Ming thought about it, the happier he was with this idea. This would place those bastards in a dilemma. If they continued to stay here and guard this area, then Lin Ming would ruin their entire headquarters. But, if they left, then he could calmly order the Giant Leviathan to return to sea level and restore itself to its best condition. This was truly a good move.

Lin Ming said, "Don't worry. I'm going to temper my body first."

As he spoke, he took out a gold fruit from his spatial ring. This was the profound gold divine fruit!

The profound gold divine fruit was similar to a mushroom of the mortal world. But, while a mushroom grew atop old wood, this profound gold divine fruit had grown atop a Demon God Bone.

It was known that a millennium-old Lingzhi that grew from old wood was considered a wondrous medicine. Then, having absorbed the essence of the Demon God Bone, the value of the profound gold divine fruit could be imagined.

When Lin Ming had gone into the 1000-mile forbidden zone within the Eternal Demon Abyss, he had encountered four corpse devils. The corpse devils had bodies as durable as a heaven-step treasure. This had made it so Duanmu Qun's and the others' attacks couldn't even scratch them.

If it weren't for Lin Ming's battle spirit, which he was able to pour into the Purple Comet Spear and substantially increase his striking power, then even he wouldn't have been able to do anything to those four corpse devils.

When Lin Ming had chased a corpse devil back to its den, he had gone into that tomb and discovered the secrets within.

The reason they had such a terrifying defense was all because of this profound gold divine fruit.

The profound gold divine fruit was an extreme Yang and extreme light-attribute body transformation treasure. With those four corpse devil's cultivations, they naturally couldn't swallow it. But they absorbed the root of the profound gold divine fruit. When the profound gold divine fruit grew, it would absorb the essence within the root of the Demon God Bone. Thus, the energy within the root was naturally much weaker. The four corpse devils were just about able to absorb this with their cultivation.

"Lin Ming, you want to swallow this?" Demonshine was startled. The profound gold divine fruit could be classified as a Lingzhi grown using a Demon God Bone as nourishment. The inherent energy within was extraordinary. Demonshine wasn't absolutely sure that Lin Ming would be able to withstand its effects. Not just that, but a profound gold divine fruit was a top-grade material of materials. If it was directly eaten then the effects would be quite lacking in comparison.

"Lin Ming, don't you intend on becoming a top alchemist in the future and refining this profound gold divine fruit? If you do, then the effects will be several times better."

Lin Ming shook his head, saying, "If I become a top alchemist, I fear it will take several years to do so. At that time I'll already have new lucky chances. It's not worth it to save this profound gold divine fruit and waste my own potential. For me, there is no heavenly treasure that is as valuable as time."

"Hehe, well said, boy. You really don't need to care about something like a mere profound gold divine fruit. This is a top-grade body transformation medicine. After eating it, it will greatly enhance your body's defensive powers. Perhaps you might even become as durable as a top earth-step treasure or a heave-step treasure!"

A human’s body couldn’t be compared to a corpse devil’s. Even having the durability of a top earth-step treasure was freakish.

At this time, Lin Ming was not just tempering his body and increasing his defensive power, but he was also trying to take advantage of this opportunity to open the second of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates—the Gate of Limit.

At this time, a long time had already passed since Lin Ming opened the Gate of Healing. His body transformation foundation had become very solid since then. With a quality body transformation medicine like this profound gold divine fruit, then it shouldn’t be too difficult to breakthrough to the Gate of Limit.

“Black Hole Revolving Core, middle Revolving Core Realm, and the Gate of Limit opened too. Just what degree will my combat strength reach?”

Lin Ming clenched his fists together, a thick fighting spirit rising inside him. He was thoroughly anticipating fighting a second-stage Life Destruction powerhouse. In fact, he even wanted to go out right now and test out his abilities.

Taking the profound gold divine fruit in hand, Lin Ming could clearly feel the terrifying energy contained within. There was no need to mention eating it, just smelling its rich fragrance made him feel refreshed, as if all the cells in his body were being revitalized.

Lin Ming no longer hesitated. He swallowed the profound gold divine fruit down his throat. As soon as it entered his mouth, it turned into a surge of heat that melted into his body.

After several quiet breaths of time, the energy began to boil up like hot water, recklessly entering into Lin Ming’s blood vessels, running rampant everywhere!

Lin Ming’s blood vessels and body had already been tempered many times; it was as tough as a treasure. Even so, with such a terrifying influx of energy rushing into his body, it was still a bit difficult to withstand.

This sort of situation was well within Lin Ming's expectations. All this time, Lin Ming had undergone similar scenarios many times. He bore the deep pain and calmly revolved the "True Primal Chaos Formula," manipulating the energy of the profound gold divine fruit such that it smashed into the Gate of Limit at his spine.

The spine was also called the dragon bone. It was central axis and main pillar of the human body. It supported all other bones, including the head, chest, abdomen, and all limbs. Everything depended on their connection to the spine. When a person used any strength, this first had to pass through the spine.

The spine was like a bow. The more taut a bow, the tougher it was. The more flexible a spine was, the stronger a person was. However, the truth was that a martial artist's spine often became one of their weaknesses.

This was because the spinal nerves were also located within the spine. The body of nerves was extremely complex and fragile. If these nerves were struck and cut off, then a martial artist would in essence become a cripple unless they had cultivated to an ever-living boundary. Otherwise, even with top heavenly treasures it would still be difficult to restore the contorted spinal nerves.

These characteristics of the spine made it so it was difficult to train it. A martial artist could train their muscles, organs, and bones, but it was difficult to train the nerves and marrow.

Lin Ming had completed to perfection Marrow Tempering and had also completed an initial tempering of his spinal cord. This was enough to fight those at Revolving Core and below, but when facing those at the Life Destruction realm and higher, it was still lacking.

Within the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, the Gate of Limit was used to train the supplementation of marrow.

The Gate of Limit gathered energy to enhance the defensive strength of the spine. Then, taking the spine as the center, it would guide a martial artist's entire body, allowing their strength to multiply severalfold. Besides strength, a martial artist's explosive force, bearing capacity, balance, and defensive power would all significantly increase.

Pa pa pa!

Lin Ming's back cracked and crackled. An invisible stream of origin energy rapidly twisted around Lin Ming's body, forming small storms. During this fierce collision of energy, Lin Ming's clothing was not able to withstand the impact and quietly disintegrated into dust, revealing his solid and fit back, like that of a graceful leopard.

At this time, the skin and muscles of Lin Ming's back had become a strange, translucent, jade-like color. Lin Ming's entire spine was highlighted through this. The vertebra and the blood vessels were clearly visible and every single nerve could be made out. Starting at the bottom, from the base of the spine, a bright surge of crimson light crawled up. This bloody light gathered together, forming a bean-sized pearl of blood.

This was where the Gate of Limit was located!

Lin Ming was now heavily sweating. His breath was labored, and many of his meridians and blood vessels had burst apart, unable to withstand the tyrannical pressure and energy that ran recklessly through him. But he was completely unaware of this. He grit his teeth, gathering all the energy in his body and thrusting it towards where the energy of the profound gold divine fruit was, ramming both energies into the Gate of Limit.

Failure occurred again and again. Sweat streamed down Lin Ming like rain.

Two hours...

Four hours...

Slowly, Lin Ming's sweat began to mix with rivulets of blood. If it weren't for the strong regenerative powers of the Gate of Healing, then there would have simply been no way he could have supported himself for such a long time.

Even so, his face became incomparably pallid and his lips were deep purple. Because of the severe pain and twitching in his hands, the stone bed beneath his hands had been crushed to bits.

Even Demonshine was alarmed by this terrifying scene. Lin Ming was someone who cultivated with body and energy. At only a young 21 years of age, he had swallowed a profound gold divine fruit, constantly pushing the limits of his body. This resulted in him frequently having to bear enormous pain in the name of progress.

Another two hours passed. Lin Ming's lips were torn from his biting and both his eyes were bloodshot.

"Break for me!"

Bang!

In that instant, all of the energy and blood vitality within Lin Ming's body rushed into that spot at the base of his spine. Then, it was like something exploded there. Following that, blood shot out from that spinal area, blasting out hundreds of feet away like a crimson arrow.

After this blood shot out from him, Lin Ming collapsed. He fell onto the broken stone bed, covered with sweat, without even an ounce of strength left.

On his back, that strange jade-like sheen slowly disappeared and his skin became solid again, his muscles going back into hiding. After breaking through the Gate of Limit, he had used up too much strength.

"Lin Ming, I have to say I'm quite jealous of you and yet, strangely, I want you to succeed. You've reached the middle Revolving Core at only 21 years of age and you've also opened the second of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. Even the Demon Emperor of the past is far inferior to you!"

Lin Ming didn’t even have the strength to answer. He was only able to crawl up and sit straight. His arms trembled as he took out a pill from his spatial ring and swallowed it, meditating afterwards.

Meanwhile, the Revolving Core in Lin Ming’s dantian crazily sucked in heaven and earth origin energy, helping to restore Lin Ming’s physical strength.

Two hours later, Lin Ming opened his eyes. Those dark eyes seemed to contain all the thunder of heaven and earth, making those who saw them tremble with fear.

“Let’s go.” Lin Ming stood up. His vision was like a keen sword as it shined with an icy killing intent.

Chapter 710 – The Death God Comes At Night

Chapter 710 – The Death God Comes At Night

…

…

…

300,000 feet down, there was such poor visibility that it wasn't even possible to see one's own hands. Lin Ming quietly left the Giant Leviathan, sneaking into the vast and endless sea. A massive wave of pressure enveloped Lin Ming. But, with his abnormal defensive ability comparable to a treasure, bearing such water pressure wasn't too difficult at all.

Xuan Wuji had left a soul mark on the Giant Leviathan, but it was only to track its movements. As long as Lin Ming was careful, it wouldn't be too difficult to evade Xuan Wuji's perception.

Lin Ming swam 100 miles down the trench before turning upwards. As he restrained his energy, he quickly rushed towards the surface.

After reaching the surface in a single go, Lin Ming flew close to sea level, straight towards the South Sea Demon Region!

After being raided twice by Lin Ming and the Giant Leviathan, the South Sea Demon Region was entirely under total martial law. There was a massive scout line in the 5000-mile radius from the South Sea Demon Region. Once the Giant Leviathan's approach was discovered, this news would quickly be reported to the main island. Thus, it was no longer possible for Lin Ming to control the Giant Leviathan and create another massacre in the South Sea Demon Region.

As he flew along, Lin Ming discovered energies from three different layers of scouts. However, with their extreme Xiantian cultivation, it was simply impossible for them to detect Lin Ming.

Lin Ming easily bypassed these scouts. In just two days of time, he arrived at the South Sea Demon Region sect.

Night had fallen. During this dark night, a chilling wind blew across the lands.

It was an excellent time for assassinations.

Several months had already passed since the last time that Lin Ming had come to the South Sea Demon Region and razed the place to the ground. Many of the ruined buildings had already been rebuilt. It was only missing the medicine garden, great protective array, training arrays, and other such structures that would require between three to five months to rebuild. In order to rebuild these structures, one needed to invest a massive amount of manpower and all sorts of resources.

As Lin Ming saw the South Sea Demon Region that had mostly been rebuilt, his lips curved into a cruel smile.

Once Xuan Wuji was the only Elder remaining in the South Sea Demon Region, just what sort of expression would he have?

Completely bundling himself up, Lin Ming was like a bat in the night. He quietly snuck into the buildings of the South Sea Demon Region.

The night wind breezed past him. Lin Ming could taste the flavor of these Demon Islands mixing with the sea air; this sort of flavor tasted faintly like blood.

The dim moon was completely hidden behind the clouds, making the sky seem even darker. Lin Ming walked on a dark path, hearing the rustling sounds of insects wherever he passed.

After stealthily walking for a half an incense stick of time, Lin Ming came upon movements. He could hear the low and deep moans of a woman, her tender sighs rapidly rising. Lin Ming's mind stirred and he stopped where he was.

The South Sea Demon Region was a sect of obscenity; it was different from the killing path that the Demon Emperor had taken. The Demon Region disciples needed to have sex every day with various women, using them to increase their cultivation. Some of the women who lived at the South Sea Demon Region were forced, and some were completely willing to be used as cultivation tools. They were no different than those girls who tried to enter the Acacia Faction. After all, it was still joining a great sect. If they could curry some favor with a male disciple and obtain some resources, that would save them many years of hard work and effort.

Lin Ming placed his back to the window and extended his perception into the room. On baby pink sheets, he could see a round and buxom, veiled woman sitting atop a man, wantonly twisting around. As for that man, he was reaching out his disgusting hands and stroking her body.

The man's cultivation was at the Xiantian realm, but the woman was only at the early Pulse Condensation realm. Most female martial artists didn't have much martial talent; they only wished to breakthrough to the Pulse Condensation realm so that they could enjoy several dozen more years of youth. They never had much ambition to walk the road of martial arts to begin with.

Lin Ming stretched out his finger, and a wisp of dark green light appeared in the origin energy flow above his finger. Seeing this origin energy flow, Lin Ming was startled. His battle spirit had grown these past months!

For a martial artist, the earlier they formed their battle spirit, the greater its potential for growth in the future would be. As a martial artist trained and made breakthroughs, their battle spirit would slowly grow with them. Every breakthrough meant that the battle spirit would also grow. When Lin Ming first broke through to Revolving Core with the support of the Blood Demon Bone, he had fully formed his bronze-level battle spirit. Now, having broken through to the middle Revolving Core realm once more, Lin Ming's battle spirit had already passed from the bronze-level elementary stage to that of small success.

Every level of battle spirit was divided into four stages: elementary, small success, large success, and perfection.

Still, in the Sky Spill Continent, even an Emperor-level powerhouse would only reach a bronze-level battle spirit.

"My battle spirit is near small success of the bronze level. If I can reach Life Destruction in the future, would be I be able to reach perfection? If I reach higher stages of Life Destruction, would I be able to form a silver-level battle spirit? I wonder just how powerful a silver battle spirit is?"

Lin Ming's mind was filled with expectations. But now wasn't the time to think of these things. He flicked his finger, and the battle spirit fused into the air, shooting towards the two figures.

Swoosh! Swish!

Two wisps of air with battle spirits attached to them quickly shot out, instantly piercing through the man's and the woman's neck.

In that moment, the battle spirit plunged into their minds, making them immediately faint.

Lin Ming's figure flashed and he appeared right at their bedside.

On the bed, with fat buttocks and breasts splayed out in the open, the scene was infinitely revealing. Lin Ming pushed the woman off the male Demon Region disciple's body, and then placed a hand on his head.

Soul searching technique!

This was a secret skill of the demonic realm. Demonshine had used it before, and Lin Ming also studied it for convenience. With the intensity of Lin Ming's soul force and mind, mastering his ability wasn't difficult at all.

Because the difference in their soul force was far too great, Lin Ming was able to scour the Demon Region disciple's mind without injuring his spiritual sea, finding out whatever information he wished for.

"There are a total of seven Life Destruction Elders in total on the South Sea Demon Region's three islands…six at the first stage of Life Destruction and one at the second stage…."

Lin Ming tossed away the Xiantian realm disciple. After locking onto the location of several Elders, he quietly made his way over.

After forming a Black Hole Revolving Core, breaking through to the middle Revolving Core realm, and then opening another of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, Lin Ming's strength had far surpassed the past him from a few months ago. Killing a first-stage Life Destruction Elder would simply be a joke now.

As for the man and woman who were having sex, Lin Ming simply left them where they were, unconscious. He rearranged them so that it seemed like they had fallen asleep from exhaustion. Lin Ming didn't really care about such minor trash as them. He had a very singular and explicit goal now: to kill every Elder here.

In the South Sea war, every Elder of the South Sea Demon Region was bathed in the blood of countless Wartime Alliance disciples. To the Wartime Alliance, a first-stage Life Destruction Elder was nearly the strongest war strength possible. It was nearly impossible to find a force to contend with them.

As he snuck his way along, Lin Ming relied on his own keen perception and powerful soul force to avoid another sentry post. He finally approached the great palace of the first Elder.

Carefully probing the situation, Lin Ming saw a gray-robed man. This old man was studying a jade slip with one hand while playing with two glass balls in the other. In front of him was a porcelain cup filled with a crimson, blood-like liquid.

“The first one...”

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He had noticed this Elder had attacked the South Sea Demon Region the first time around. This Elder’s cultivation was only at the early first stage of Life Destruction. With Lin Ming’s newfound abilities, killing him would only take a heartbeat.

Lin Ming quietly rubbed his spatial ring and withdrew the heaven-step spear.

At this time, the Elder stirred in his room. His eyebrows twisted together. Although he didn’t discover Lin Ming, he could feel a thick killing intent aimed at him.

Who!?

The first-stage Life Destruction Elder reflexively moved to draw out his lance from his spatial ring. But at this time, the great wooden doors to his room suddenly shattered into fine powder as a highly concentrated spear light thrust straight towards him, aimed right between his eyebrows.

Before the spear light had arrived, the gray-robed Elder already felt an incomparable pain between his eyebrows, as if he had already been pierced.

In that instant, the gray-robed Elder’s hairs all stood on end. He could clearly feel the specter of death looming over him!

“Haa!”

The gray-robed Elder issued a deep shout and a lance jumped from his spatial ring into his hands as if it had a mind of its own. He no longer had time to dodge. He decided to thrust his lance at Lin Ming, forcing him away by threat of mutual annihilation, but at this instant, the gray-robed Elder felt the space around him twist. In the next instant, that singular white spear seemed to teleport right in front of him.

A spear pierced right through his skull, and the power of a battle spirit erupted, instantly shredding that gray-robed Elder's brain to pieces, blood and pulp shooting out!

The Elder had instantaneously died!

Lin Ming hadn't chosen a weak point like the heart or throat, but instead the brain. This was to immediately kill his opponent without allowing him to even cry out.

"Done."

Lin Ming took away the gray-robed Elder's spatial ring and corpse. Afterwards, he quietly left the room. His first assassination here had gone smoothly.

However, just as Lin Ming was about to find the second Life Destruction Elder, a loud and deafening alarm horn sounded over the entire Demon Island. Then, torches lit up from all over, converging from all directions of the Demon Island, composing a massive line of flares.

Every Revolving Core Protector and Life Destruction Elder flew into the air, spreading their perception to search the entire area.

Lin Ming was startled. "I've been discovered!"

He felt he had done everything cleanly and quietly; he actually had no idea how he was found out.

"The South Sea Demon Region is truly worthy as a fifth-grade sect with thousands of years of inheritance; they have methods to guard against assassins!" Lin Ming muttered to himself. He guessed that there was probably a lifesoul jade slip or some other similar mark on the first-stage Life Destruction Elder. As soon as he died, this contingency was activated and he was found out.

The flying Life Destruction Elders and Revolving Core Protectors quickly locked onto Lin Ming's position. They soon surrounded him.

Since he was already discovered, Lin Ming no longer hid himself. He gripped his white spear and soared up into the air.

He wondered, did all of these martial artists surrounding him realize that their fate was to be chased down and slaughtered by him?

There were a total of six Life Destruction Elders. The one leading them wore a silver mask. He was the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign!

This Elder instantly recognized Lin Ming. He clenched his teeth in hatred. "Little brat, so it was you again!"

Lin Ming glanced at the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign. Just ten days ago, he had followed Xuan Wuji to chase down the Giant Leviathan. Although his attacks weren't too strong, he had attacked the Giant Leviathan's already opened wounds, causing no small amount of damage.

After the Giant Leviathan had submerged deep inside the sea trench, the masked Elder could no longer help due to the massive water pressure. Thus, he returned to the South Sea Demon Region.

Lin Ming sneered. "That is also what I want to say. So it's you again, eh? I was just about to look for you to settle some old debts, but I never thought you'd deliver yourself right to my doorstep!"

Chapter 711 – Sweeping Through The South Sea Demon Region

Chapter 711 – Sweeping Through The South Sea Demon Region

…

…

…

Hearing Lin Ming's arrogant words, the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign flew into a furious rage. "You want to settle old debts? Hehe, brat, you think you're talking in a dream or something? Your Giant Leviathan is already stuck within the deep sea trench! Without the Giant Leviathan, I wonder just how much longer your flagrant attitude will remain. Hahaha, really, you could have walked the road to heaven but you chose to burst through to the gates of hell instead! Today you are not leaving!"

The Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign's voice was full of confidence and bluster. However, just as he spoke, he found the strength behind his words trailing away. He discovered that the place where Lin Ming had come from was exactly where Third Elder Sun lived. Because the warning had sounded out so suddenly, the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign was in a hurry to catch up and didn't have enough time to investigate just who had died. Now that he carefully scanned over everyone, he found that, of the seven Elders, only Third Elder Sun was missing.

Was he the one that was killed?

Was that even possible?

The Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign's heart jumped into his throat. Third Elder Sun being so quietly killed meant that Lin Ming had strength at least equal to the peak of the second stage of Life Destruction!

Either that or there was some great expert behind Lin Ming, hiding away in secret, who had such a strength. Thinking of this, the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign felt weak at heart. It wasn't just him; the other five Elders also thought of this. Lin Ming was not an idiot. Unless he had absolute belief in himself, why would he come to the South Sea Demon Region?

"Line up in formation!" The Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign spat out an order.

If martial artists formed a killing array together, then they could enhance the ability of their combined attacks, greatly increasing their total combat strength. In Yin Yang Profound Palace, those eight mid and late Revolving Core martial artists were able to form an array formation that allowed them to contend with a first-stage Life Destruction powerhouse for at least 10 breaths of time.

Those were only mid and late Revolving Core powerhouses. And now, in front of Lin Ming, were six Life Destruction realm martial artists.

"Dream on!"

Lin Ming's eyes shone with a thick killing intent. How could he possibly allow these people to just do as they wish and form a killing array around him? Did they think he was an idiot?

He stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void and flash stepped in front of a first-stage Life Destruction Elder, his white spear thrusting forth!

"Huh?"

The first-stage Life Destruction Elder was horrified. How could Lin Ming be so fast? He had simply appeared in front of him like the ghosts and gods. There didn't even seem to be a path of movement; he had just materialized right there in front of him!!

The Life Destruction Elder couldn't bother thinking about such things. He raised his sword to defend, but in that moment, he felt as if Lin Ming's speed had suddenly slowed down. As his spear thrust forward, it actually wasn't much faster than the attack from a normal body transformation martial artist.

However, even though Lin Ming's spear was slow, the Elder's own movements were even slower. He had no time to defend against Lin Ming's attacks!

"Nooooo!!"

That Life Destruction Elder's eyes widened. He could only watch on helplessly as Lin Ming's spear pierced through his throat, an ice-cold feeling spread through his neck. The Life Destruction Elder gazed with eyes like a dying fish's, his face full of unwillingness. He could not believe that he had died under the hands of a mere 21-year-old youth, against a single spear jab that he had no power to resist.

In full view of everyone, a Life Destruction Elder was instantly killed. All of the other Life Destruction Elders and Revolving Core Protectors were utterly stunned.

What kind of strength was this!?

How could he possibly be this strong!?!?

Moreover, the way Lin Ming had moved was far too strange. It was like he had simply teleported over. Although that spear strike didn't seem too fast, that Elder's speed had become even slower, as if mired in tar. That Elder had only been able to stare blankly at Lin Ming's spear as it killed him,not even able to lift his sword.

These martial artists were not stupid enough to think that the Life Destruction Elder had deliberately slowed his movements because he had been bewitched or was playing around.

Something strange was happening here, as if a demonic force was present. Lin Ming was wholly emitting a strange energy.

Everyone was shocked, unable to respond. But, Lin Ming was not fazed at all. He swung his spear, shaking off the body of that second Life Destruction Elder's corpse. Then, with a single forward step, he instantly arrived in front of the third Life Destruction Elder, his spear raised in a thrust.

In that instant, that Life Destruction Elder felt a chill crawl up his back. It was like he wasn't facing a 21-year-old youth, but instead the very incarnation of a Death God!

"Run!"

The disparity was just too great. The Life Destruction Elder didn't even have the least bit of courage to resist, instead immediately turning to run away.

The other Elders also swiveled around and dashed away like their lives depended on it. The South Sea Demon Region martial artists were inherently self-centered to begin with. It was impossible for them to trade their own life for the fate of their sect. After encountering such a strange and mystical youth who seemed like the God of Death come to slay them, they all chose to run.

The four first-stage Life Destruction Elders instantly scattered. As for the 20-some-odd Revolving Core realm Protectors, they all turned and ran after seeing this scene occur before them. Only the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign was left over; this was because he had some degree of confidence in his strength. He was suspicious about Lin Ming's strength, thus he hesitated for a moment.

But in the moment of hesitation, Lin Ming had already caught up to that first-stage Life Destruction Elder he had targeted. The spear in his hand thrust out, piercing through the Elder's back leaving no chance for resistance.

As the Demon Region Easter Faction Sovereign saw this, he finally became scared, losing any and all spunk he had previously. He quickly took out a small jade-green sword from his spatial ring. As this small sword appeared, it actually stretched out into the air, forming into a massive pair of twin wings that attached themselves onto the Demon Region Easter Faction Sovereign's body. With these jade-green wings supporting him, the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign turned without further ado and flew away!

Even those 30 Revolving Core Protectors scattered in separate directions, none of them even close anyone else, in the fear that by gathering too much they would create a path that the death god could follow.

After the Revolving Core Protectors left, those extreme Xiantian martial artists realized the situation had deteriorated, and they to turned to run away.

As for the other guards, they had all gathered here with determination and wrath in their eyes, but now they were completely dumbfounded. They never thought that after all the Elders had gathered together and encircled the assassin, that assassin would actually beat them into the ground, killing them and making them all run away!

By this point, none of them were stupid enough to approach Lin Ming; that was just the same as running to their deaths. What a joke. If even the Eastern Faction Sovereign ran away, then even all of them together wouldn't be enough for this death god to lift a pinky. They didn't dare escape either. With their Xiantian realm cultivation, just this midnight killer's spear light itself was able to slaughter them all as they fled!

At this moment, a strange scene occurred. The four guard squadrons of the South Sea Demon Region stood 1000 feet away from Lin Ming, bewildered, unsure of what they should do as they all glanced at each other.

Floating in air, Lin Ming indifferently looked at all the martial artists that were flying away, trying to escape. His perception instantly covered them like a surging tide, including even the Elders and the 30 Revolving Core Protectors!

There were simply too many of them. If they all escaped in separate directions, then according to common sense, even a fourth- or fifth-stage Life Destruction powerhouse would find it nearly impossible to kill them all. After all, a martial artist's perception was limited. If they flew far enough and dove into the sea, finding some deserted island to hide at, then it would be difficult to chase them.

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with an icy killing intent. His battle spirit fused with his Asura force field, instantly surging outwards!

A force field was a special intangible existence; it was able to expand at near the speed of light. In an instant, it overtook every martial artist. With the support of the battle spirit, the Asura force field enveloped the entire area.

In the 1000-mile forbidden zone of the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming had been trapped in a maze of space and time, unable to find his way out. As he tried to figure out what had happened, he had left array symbol marks that had been eventually erased by a strange and mystical power. It was only after leaving behind a special mark mixed in with his battle spirit that Lin Ming had been able to slowly figure out just what was happening in that space-time maze, slowly leading his group out of the 1000-mile forbidden zone.

The battle spirit had a special characteristic of being everlasting and endlessly enduring. After a Supreme Elder died in the Eternal Demon Abyss, and with the passing of tens or hundreds of thousands of years, their bodies would have long rotted away, the energy within them condensing into Demon God Bones. But their battle spirit still wasn't destroyed. Rather, it was able to preserve itself, and sometimes even turn into a very elementary consciousness.

Thus, making a mark with a battle spirit was the best method!

Within the Asura force field, every Elder and Protector of the South Sea Demon Region instantly had a wisp of battle spirit attached to their bodies!

A battle spirit was an extremely high-level power. Normally only a Divine Sea powerhouse would be able to trace it. Even the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign had absolutely no idea what this energy was. All of them only felt that the instant they were covered by the terrifying pressure of the Asura force field their speed dropped, breathing became hard, and even their heartbeats seemed suppressed. In fear, they pushed their strengths past their limits to flee, only relaxing when they escaped the range of the force field.

None of them knew that at that moment, Lin Ming had already marked each and every one of them with his battle spirit. But, even if they realized this, it would still be useless. They simply had no knowledge of what a battle spirit was, and also had no way to erase it!

"I've locked onto them all!"

Ln Ming's eyes radiated a devastating light. The furthest martial artist fleeing right now was a yellow-robed first-stage Life Destruction Elder. He was the first one to run and he was also quite fast. He had already made it around ten miles away. The second farthest was the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign. He had a strange pair of jade-green wings assisting him; his speed was the quickest of everyone running. It was just that his start had been a bit later, and now he had only made it eight or nine miles away. As for those Revolving Core martial artists, they were only a few miles away.

Lin Ming decided to give up on the second-stage Life Destruction Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign for now. His first target was that yellow-robed Elder ten miles away.

If he wanted to kill that Eastern Faction Sovereign, it might take more than a few moves. If he also had some sort of master move that was able to save his life, then that would extend the battle by some time. Afterwards, having to chase after the other martial artists would be much harder, even if he had a battle spirit mark on them.

After choosing his target, Lin Ming sneered. His feet stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void, and the space beneath him suddenly shrank. His flying was similar to teleportation. From the distance, it appeared as if Lin Ming's figure suddenly disappeared into space, abruptly appearing several miles away. Such a method of flying was so fast that it made one's scalp tingle with fear.

The more Lin Ming came to understand the Concept of Space, the closer he came to reaching the third layer of “Golden Roc Shattering the Void.” Unfortunately, it was just that Lin Ming’s Concept of Wind was still lacking throughout, much less refined than his other Concepts. This caused his movement technique to appear strange, missing a hint of flexibility and nimbleness. Otherwise, he would be able to fly even faster!

As for that yellow-robed Elder in the lead, he seemed to know a special fleeing movement technique. His entire body was wrapped in a thick black fog. As he flew away, the fog formed a tail behind him like a streaking comet, making him seem like a very large, black snake. This movement technique obviously didn’t come from the South Sea Demon Region. It was likely some ability obtained from some ancient ruins somewhere.

“Damn it all. It’s like I’ve seen a ghost or something. To think that a 20-year-old boy could be so strong. Luckily, this old man’s evasion ability is quite good, otherwise I probably would have died here today!”

Chapter 712 – Thorough Slaughter

Chapter 712 – Thorough Slaughter

…

…

…

"And there's that damned Xuan Wuji. To think he goes to chase the Giant Leviathan on his own and leaves behind this scourge in the South Sea Demon Region! Xuan Wuji, as long as you do not kill that boy, it's impossible for me to return to the South Sea Demon Region. If I run into him again then chances are that my life will fall under his hands. Luckily, I found this 'Evil Soulfire Step' in the possession of a late Revolving Core martial artist I've killed. With this, on top of my own speed, I should be able to easily escape this catastrophe."

The yellow-robed Elder simply never expected Lin Ming to chase him in order to kill him. After all, out of all the Elders there, he was one of the weakest; Lin Ming shouldn't be attracted to him. And, in terms of speed, he was one of the best here. If one or two Elders were to die, then it likely wouldn't be his turn.

"That Lin brat can't be possessed by a ghost or something. He shouldn't do something as unreasonable as chasing me. I hope that he chooses to bother with the Eastern Faction Sovereign. With that old man stalling for time, I'll be much safer."

As the yellow-robed Elder was thinking about the possible scenarios, he suddenly heard the rustling of wind behind him and a faint rumbling sound approaching him.

"Huh? What?"

As the yellow-robed Elder turned around, he was frightened almost to the point where his spirit left his body. Behind him, just six or seven miles away, there was a black-clothed youngster chasing after him with a bloodstained white spear, his hair flying recklessly as thunder and fire covered his body. With every step he took, he seemed to teleport two-three miles ahead.

At this speed, Lin Ming would overtake him in less than ten breaths' time!

"What kind of movements are these!?!?" The yellow-robed Elder turned whiter than death. He punched himself in the chest, forcing out the power of his blood essence as he escaped at a speed surpassing his limits.

However, this 'Evil Soulfire Step' was, in the end, far from being able to compare with the exquisite 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void'. Moreover, he was also weaker than Lin Ming. Now, in just a few breaths' time, Lin Ming was already chasing right behind him. He could feel that Lin Ming's fearful killing intent had already locked onto him.

The yellow-robed Elder was scared breathless. In his entire life, he had experienced many dangerous life-or-death situations, and had stumbled through many danger zones. But, he had never felt the specter of death approach him as much as it did today!

It hadn't even been a hundred years since he had successfully crossed into Life Destruction. He still had a lavish and sumptuous life to enjoy! He refused to die here today!

"Wait... Wait, wait, wait! Young Hero Lin, do not kill me! I... I can give you any information you need, as well as all of my wealth!" the yellow-robed Elder desperately cried out.

However, Lin Ming didn't seem to care at all, as if he hadn't even heard these words. He simply grasped his white spear and thrust out!

"Ahhh! This old man will fight you to the death!" Seeing Lin Ming's ruthlessness, the yellow-robed Elder took up a crescent halberd in hand and struck at Lin Ming.

However, at this moment, he suddenly felt an enormous pressure smashing into him, like an endless tide. His breathing became heavy, his heart nearly stopping, and the blood in his veins and the true essence in his meridians stagnated, nearly reversing course. At the same time, a killing intent so pure and thick struck him, that it almost suffocated him to death. He felt as if he had plunged into one of hell's blood ponds. Under this chilling killing intent, the fires of his life were like a candle in the wind, about to go out at any time.

This was the Asura force field and Death God force field released by Lin Ming.

"No…!" the yellow-robed Elder miserably sobbed.

However, he was still unable to change his fate; Lin Ming's spear pierced his throat!

Blood sprayed, and the yellow-robed Elder died. Out of the seven Life Destruction Elders still within the South Sea Demon Region, there were now only four left!

Lin Ming waved his left hand, taking the yellow-robed Elder's corpse and spatial ring. Then, without pause, he turned around and chased towards the second Life Destruction Elder!

With Lin Ming's 'Golden Rock Shattering the Void' approaching the third layer, his speed could no longer be compared with that of a normal martial artist.

Out of the remaining Life Destruction Elders, this second one was the slowest of all. The reason Lin Ming decided to chase him was just because he was the farthest away from everyone else.

After half an incense stick of time, Lin Ming was only ten miles away from this Life Destruction Elder. Lin Ming was already able to sense him with his perception. He was a middle-aged man with sharp ears and round cheeks. He was flying away with extreme caution, revolving his protective true essence to the limit, at the same time being tense and wary of his surroundings.

After leaving the South Sea Demon Region's three islands, this Elder had stumbled into a small isolated jungle. There, he fully restrained his energy and hid in a pile of lush green bushes.

At that time, the moon was hidden behind the clouds, and the night gales were howling. This sharp-eared Elder seemed to be proficient in camouflage techniques. Lowering himself into the bushes, he seemed to melt into the surrounding environment, becoming one with the earth. Even if one knew he was there and used their perception to look for him, it would still be difficult to find any trace of him.

“I should be safe here.”

The sharp-eared Elder’s face darkened, becoming gloomy. He didn’t know just where this Lin Ming had come from. How could he have suddenly become so strong? A twenty-or-so-year-old youngster was actually chasing someone like him, who was nearly a thousand years old, into the jungle. If this news ever spread out then it would truly be laughable.

“That Lin Ming brat never locked onto me from the start. Even if he finishes off his first target and then comes chasing after me, it will still be useless. With my camouflage technique, even Xuan Wuji might not be able to find me.” The sharp-eared Elder had faith in his own abilities. If a few Life Destruction Elders were to die because Lin Ming chased them down, he definitely wouldn’t be one of them.

“I won’t be able to return to the South Sea Demon Region for quite some time. I’ll stay and hide here for a while before reassessing the situation.”

As the sharp-eared Elder thought this, his face suddenly froze in place. At the same time, his heart sank into the depths of despair!

He watched helplessly as a black-clothed youth carrying a white spear fell into an open area just thirty feet in front of him. This black-clothed youngster turned in his direction and cruelly smiled at him, as if he could see through all lies and illusions!

Seeing this young man’s smile, the sharp-eared Elder felt a chill crawl up his spine, his spirit fading into the heavens!

‘How did he discover me!?’

The sharp-eared Elder couldn't believe this. Now that things had come to this point, any of his camouflage techniques had no meaning whatsoever.

His forehead was dripping with sweat, but he forced his heart to stay calm as he began to think about escaping possibilities. But at this point, Lin Ming laughed and said, "This Elder's camouflage technique is quite skilled; much better than my own in the past. But, in such a hot and humid place with so many insects everywhere, you must be suffering too much. Let me help you a bit!"

With these words, Lin Ming suddenly turned towards the bushes and thrust his spear!

The sharp-eared Elder shrieked like a cat that had its tail stepped on. He was ready to rush out, but at that moment, something strange occurred. All of the branches and leaves and plants around him seemed to twist like countless pythons, wrapping around him. The normally fragile plants seemed to become as tough as metal, forcefully holding him down.

If the Elder revolved his true essence to the limit, he could work his way out in less than two breaths' time. However, in front of Lin Ming, that was more than enough time to die a hundred times!

The sharp-eared Elder was frightened to the point that his soul fled his body. He raised his sword, ready to cut through the branches, but it was already too late. A cool feeling bloomed in his chest and an icy-white spear pierced through his heart!

His life fading away at a fast pace, the sharp-eared Elder lifted his eyes, staring at Lin Ming with unwillingness.

"Just... what happened..."

This was the last thought to pass through the sharp-eared Elder's mind.

He died without understanding how Lin Ming had discovered him, or how the surrounding bushes had managed to trap him.

Once the sharp-eared Elder died, the surrounding branches and leaves delivered his corpse into Lin Ming's hands. This was the simple application of battle spirit. The battle spirit could be attached to the foliage, moving it and forming a cage. This had been the fastest way to kill that sharp-eared Elder.

Lin Ming indifferently took the sharp-eared Elder's corpse and spatial ring. Then, he flew away again, chasing after the last first stage Life Destruction Elder.

At this time, Lin Ming had chased for a full quarter of an hour. Along the road, he slightly deviated off course to kill off any Revolving Core martial artist that passed within a hundred miles of him. Lin Ming didn't even bother taking in the spatial rings of martial artists of only this level. Even more, he simply burnt their corpses to ashes with a fireball after killing them.

As he advanced, another quarter of an hour passed. Lin Ming finally sensed that sixth Life Destruction Elder.

This Elder and the sharp-eared Elder had chosen completely different escape paths. This one had run in a straight line for several dozen miles before temporarily stopping to make sure he did not have a tracing mark on him. Then, he changed directions, flying several dozen miles, and then changed directions again and again, in a zigzag line.

For a common martial artist, chasing after him would have been impossible. But to Lin Ming, this Elder's zigzagging path only made it much easier to chase him.

This black-clothed Life Destruction Elder kept his head down as he flew away. He had originally worn a red-robe, but in order to disguise himself, he had switched into black night-clothes. Even though he had already escaped several hundred miles away, he didn't once relax his guard. He kept running away at full speed.

Just as he was thinking of how to inform Xuan Wuji of this matter, he suddenly heard the wind twisting behind him.

The black-clothed Elder's heart turned cold.

‘Who!?’

He didn’t think that Lin Ming was chasing him; he had already thrown him off long ago. But, as he looked back, he could see Lin Ming flying there, his hand gripping a bloodstained white spear as his two eyes flashed with the power of thunder!

“No…no… This isn’t possible!”

The black-clothed Elder’s mouth fell open. In that instant he felt his entire body turn leaden, his limbs ice-cold. Was this Lin Ming really human!?

As this thought crossed the black-clothed Elder’s mind, Lin Ming’s spear had already pierced towards him.

The black-clothed Elder’s cultivation was much deeper than that of the last two. He was actually able to block one of Lin Ming’s strikes. But, that was his limit.

Lin Ming’s second spear easily thrust through the black-clothed Elder’s dantian. With a twist, his Revolving Core shattered to pieces.

The black-clothed Elder died!

After putting away this corpse, Lin Ming began to chase after the remaining Revolving Core martial artists. To Lin Ming, these were only small fries.

Most of them had only escaped several hundred miles away. Then, they had diverged, some continuing to escape, some finding an island to hide, and some even plunging into the waters.

Lin Ming first killed the martial artists who kept on running. Killing these Revolving Core martial artists was much simpler. As long as he could come within several miles of them, he could simply flick his finger and kill them with a battle-spirit-infused wind current.

Lin Ming had no qualms about killing these South Sea Demon Region martial artists. In his view, killing one of them meant that there was one less future disaster in the world.

Life after life perished under Lin Ming’s hands!

Chapter 713 – To Those Who Remain In the South Sea Demon Region, Death!

Chapter 713 – To Those Who Remain In the South Sea Demon Region, Death!

…

…

…

Revolving Core martial artists were much easier to kill than Life Destruction martial artists. Not only were they slower, but their ability to resist was next to nothing. As long as Lin Ming was able to find one, he would instantly kill them.

Xiu!

Lin Ming flicked his finger at the sea surface and a massive spout of water shot up. Then, a moment later, a bright red ripple spread out and a corpse slowly surfaced.

Lin Ming shot out a fireball, instantly turning this corpse to ash.

That had been the last of the escaping Revolving Core Protectors. He had hid underneath the surface of the water. But, to Lin Ming, he was no different than an ostrich that buried its head in sand.

Up to now, over 20 Revolving Core Protectors and six first-stage Life Destruction Elders had been completely wiped out!

The only person remaining was…the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign!

Lin Ming tracked the location of the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign, and then his lips curved up in a sly smile. That old fox had actually returned to the South Sea Demon Region's three Demon Islands.

He had run away, but then he returned to the South Sea Demon Region.

It was said that the most dangerous places were often the safest. If he hid in some secret location within his sect, it truly would be difficult to find him.

After a quarter of an hour, Lin Ming returned to the Demon Region's three islands. At this time, the Demon Region islands were nearly emptied of people. The South Sea Demon Region shouldn't have been reduced to this ghostlike state just because of the invasion of a single person, but after seeing the several Life Destruction Elders run away, the other disciples naturally wouldn't stay.

Lin Ming silently arrived at a seemingly common and inconspicuously small building. Then, he swept out his spear, the spear light surging hundreds of feet away.

Bang!

A muffled explosion occurred; the entire building collapsed!

Earth cracked and stone crumbled. A black beam of light dropped down from the heavens; the basement of the building was pierced through by Lin Ming's spear.

A shockwave of true essence detonated in the air, bursting outwards. Within the chaos, a silver-masked man ran out in a panic, surprised to see Lin Ming standing right outside. He had been hiding in a secret chamber with an array formation that was able to isolate away all perception and probing. He didn't believe that Lin Ming had any way to track him. That was, unless he had some sort of tracing mark on his body.

But, before this, he had already examined his entire body, not discovering any sort of energy mark. So what was happening?

“Brat, don’t think that I am really afraid of you!” The Eastern Faction Sovereign grasped a ten-foot long war halberd, his eagle-like eyebrows slanted up in fury.

Lin Ming remained silent. Without a word, the Heretical God Force opened and his battle spirit poured into his spear. He thrust straight at the Eastern Faction Sovereign’s throat.

Seeing this unstoppable spear stabbing towards him, the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign roared out, his entire body revolving to the limit with true essence, “Heavenly Demon Suppression!”

In that instant, on top of the Eastern Faction Sovereign’s halberd, a great black Giant Demon phantom rushed out, snarling as it clawed towards Lin Ming.

However, just as the Giant Demon phantom appeared, an invisible force field crashed down with overwhelming force. The Giant Demon phantom broke apart in this force field, like a shard of ice dropped in boiling water, instantly reducing to less than half its size!

The Eastern Faction Sovereign was startled. He fiercely bit down on his tongue and spat out a spray of blood essence on his halberd edge. The light of that halberd immediately became much more dazzling and radiant.

Lin Ming’s simple spear clashed with the Giant Demon phantom. With a sizzling sound, the Giant Demon phantom was easily pierced through with the battle spirit infused spear light. It paused for the slightest instant before piercing towards the Eastern Faction Sovereign’s throat again.

“Demon Shadow Division!”

The Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign’s eyes flashed with a cold light. His body turned into three phantoms as he dodged Lin Ming’s spear.

“Hmm?” Lin Ming was startled. His spear strike right now didn’t seem particularly special, but in truth it had contained the Concept of Space as well as his battle spirit. In the midst of this fearsome strike, he had even locked the space around the Demon Region

Eastern Faction Sovereign, making it incomparably difficult to defend against. Still, he never expected that the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign would still manage to avoid it.

It seemed that a second-stage Life Destruction Elder was indeed quite special.

After his body split into three, the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign didn't pause at all. He turned in three different directions and ran away!

This sort of secret escape technique would have confused a normal martial artist. But to Lin Ming, it was simply a frivolous action. The Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign already had Lin Ming's battle spirit mark on him. With just a thought he had already locked onto the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign's true body.

Lin Ming took a step forwards – Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Lin Ming instantly appeared a mile ahead. As he took another step forwards, he flashed stepped right in front of the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign.

Chasing Thunder!

The white spear sparkled with lightning. Lin Ming's spear had reached the pinnacle of speed. The keen electric light hadn't even reached the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign but it already made him tingle.

“Lin Ming, I have no grudge nor enmity with you! The one responsible for annihilating your Divine Phoenix Island is the Xuan Clan's Xuan Wuji! That had nothing to do with me! So why must you chase me down and not let me go!”

In the face of a speed and striking power that far surpassed his own, the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign was exceptionally anxious. But at this time, he could only brace himself and face this calamity.

Clang!

The sound of striking metal sounded. The Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign's halberd was actually cut in half by Lin Ming's spear!

Lin Ming's spear was already a much higher grade to begin with. With the addition of the increased power from the battle spirit, cutting apart the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign's treasure halberd was easy.

"Ahhh!"

The Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign gave a crazed shout. He threw the halberd pieces at Lin Ming, hoping to force him away.

Lin Ming didn't even bother glancing at these halberd pieces. He stabbed out his spear!

Puff!

The long spear pierced through the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign's jaw, angling into his throat and cutting through his neck even as his spinal cord was completely crushed to bits with a simple twist. The Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign stared with wide eyes, disbelief on his face as he looked at Lin Ming's chest. When he threw those halberd pieces just now, they had pierced through Lin Ming's chest. Although his attack had been done in haste and there wasn't much true essence within it, it was still 30-40% of his strength. Still, even though it struck Lin Ming, it hadn't even broken through the skin.

'Was this boy even human….'

This was the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign's last thought. In the next moment, Lin Ming swept his spear out, directly beheading the second-stage Life Destruction Elder.

Lin Ming rubbed his right chest; he was quite satisfied with his current defensive capabilities.

That sudden attack just now from the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign was equal to the all-out attack of a peak first-stage Life Destruction powerhouse. In the face of such an attack, he hadn't even needed to defend himself with true essence; he was able to block it with just his mortal body. Besides some slight pain there wasn't even the slightest injury.

These were the effects of the profound gold divine fruit.

Not only had he absorbed the profound gold divine fruit, but he had even opened the second of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. This had caused his mortal body to be comparable to that of a top earth-step treasure.

Lin Ming calmly put away the Demon Region Eastern Faction Sovereign's body and spatial ring. Then, holding his long spear, he continuously twirled it in the air. Spear light shot out, shredded massive sections of rock in a far off mountain cliff as large letters began appearing on it.

"To those who remain in the South Sea Demon Region, death!"

These words contained Lin Ming's Death God force field. If a martial artist with a low cultivation saw these words, their life would instantly be extinguished. Even a Xiantian or Revolving Core martial artist would be affected by the pure killing intent; it would be impossible for them to continue looking at these words.

After leaving behind these words, Lin Ming released his perception that had casually swept through the islands of the South Sea Demon Region. Nearly all the Revolving Core martial artists had fled. The only ones left over were the small fry minions that he had no interest in.

Displaying his movement technique, Lin Ming left the Demon Region's three islands.

…………………

Six hours later, deep in the South Sea…

100,000 feet underwater a middle-aged martial artist was quietly suspended. His breath and heart rate were slowed to an extremely low rate. This middle-aged martial artist wore black clothes and his two straight eyebrows slanted ferociously high. Underneath these two eyebrows was a pair of deep eyes, their intense stare penetrating through the sea as if they could see past all illusions and lies.

This black-clothed martial artist was Xuan Wuji.

He had already been floating here for several days. His perception was locked onto the Giant Leviathan in the deep sea trench. As long as the Giant Leviathan surfaced to 250,000 or above, he would then reinitiate his attack.

Although he couldn't kill the Giant Leviathan, if the attacks on it accumulated, one day, sooner or later, it would die from exhaustion and blood loss.

"Xuan Wuji, we've already waited here so many days. How much longer will we keep guard here?" The one who asked was a golden-furred ape. He was the Patriarch of the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan.

Xuan Wuji didn't even glance back at the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Patriarch. He said without any hint of emotion, "As long as half a year and as short as a few months. Sooner or later, the Giant Leviathan will fall by my hands."

"Good, then this King will accompany you here for half a year!" The Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch's eyes flashed with a sharp light. The Giant Leviathan was a kind of Saint Beast recorded in the ancient texts of the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan. If they could take its heart and spine marrow, refining it into a pill with their clan's secret techniques, then they could use these pills to directly enhance the physique of their Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan's martial artists.

The Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch had great faith that, if he could obtain these treasures, then there would be high hopes for him reaching the Divine Sea.

When that time came, he could rule over a large region of the deep South Sea. He could even take a portion of the resources from the entire southern Sky Spill Continent.

As Xuan Wuji and the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch were speaking, a current of water twisted into a spinning orb in front of them, followed by a radiant blue flash of light. This was the light of an underwater sound transmitting talisman.

The voices of the South Sea Demon Region's scouts entered Xuan Wuji's ears. After hearing the message, Xuan Wuji's body shook. In the next moment, his eyes grew so heated they seemed to spill over with flames.

The South Sea Demon Region had been crushed. Seven Life Destruction Elders, including the second-stage Life Destruction Easter Faction Sovereign, as well as 20-some-odd Revolving Core Protectors, most of them at the mid and late Revolving Core realm, had died! Over 30 individuals had been completely wiped out!

And before Lin Ming fled, he even left behind a few words within the South Sea Demon Region—"To those who remain in the South Sea Demon Region, death!"

Because of these words, coupled with the fact that Lin Ming had raised a bloody storm of death within the South Sea Demon Region, many of their martial artists had already fled!

A Demon Region martial artist cared only for themselves. No one would take their life as a joke or gamble. If they were targeted by a death god, who would still dare to stay in the Demon Region's three islands?

"Lin Ming!"

Xuan Wuji roared. All of the water around him suddenly stirred, creating a violent vortex.

Because of a single person, because of Lin Ming, nearly every South Sea Demon Region Life Destruction Elder had died. The only ones left over were Xuan Yuqie and Xuan Wuji!

A fifth-grade sect took Life Destruction martial artists as Elders and Revolving Core martial artists as Protectors. Now that there were only two Life Destruction martial artists left over in the South Sea Demon Region, there weren't enough for them to be considered a fifth-grade sect anymore. Solely through Lin Ming's strength, he had chopped the fifth-grade South Sea Demon Region into a fourth-grade sect!

Chapter 714 – Name of the Death God

Chapter 714 – Name of the Death God

…

…

…

That very night, news of the assault on the South Sea Demon Region spread out like a tide.

Upon learning this, within the Five Element Region, Zhan Yunjian, the Sunfire Princess, and everyone else was happy and excited.

“Lin Ming just gives too many pleasant surprises. I thought that after Xuan Wuji left seclusion, Lin Ming might be suppressed for some time. Perhaps even that Xuan Wuji would have managed to take back the Giant Leviathan. But I never imagined that Lin Ming would kill his way through the entire the South Sea Demon Region by himself, and turn that fifth-grade South Sea Demon Region into a fourth-grade sect.” the Sunfire Princess giddily said.

Zhan Yunjian took a deep breath and shook his head, saying, “It’s not just falling to a fourth-grade sect. If Xuan Wuji doesn’t return to the South Sea Demon Region, then the entire South Sea Demon Region could disintegrate because of Lin Ming. When Lin Ming returned, he wasn’t yet strong enough to match a second stage Life Destruction master. But now, after just several months, he was actually able to reach this point through his strength alone. How ridiculously unbelievable….”

Several months ago, Lin Ming had broken into the South Sea Demon Region the second time. He had trotted in on the Giant Leviathan and had dug up the entire medicine garden, including the spiritual earth! In front of Lin Ming, the fifth-grade sect was like a lamb in front of a butcher, only able to lie there to be slaughtered.

The first time that Lin Ming had broken into the South Sea Demon Region, he had also relied on the strength of the Giant Leviathan, managing to kill a massive amount of low-level disciples. Both the first and second time he had gone to the South Sea Demon Region, the disaster had been the cause of the Giant Leviathan's strength.

But now, this third time, he had actually relied on his own combat strength, killing only high ranking martial artists!

Out of the seven great Life Destruction Elders, none had been spared. And over twenty Revolving Core Protectors had been buried along with them, most of them at the mid and late Revolving Core realm.

Also, it had been reported that after Lin Ming had killed his way in, all of these people had scattered, running into different directions. No one was an idiot, they would naturally wish to escape. Still… Even so, none of them had been able to escape the fate of annihilation!

For all of them to scatter and yet be completely killed…

Was this a demon?

This ability to kill others far exceeded the understanding of ordinary people. It was so great that the martial artists of the South Sea Demon Region were left fleeing away in abject despair and fear.

Then, before Lin Ming left, he had also jotted down a message, 'To those who remain in the South Sea Demon Region, death!'

These words seemed to contain the Concept of Slaughter. A weak martial artist would be severely wounded just glancing at these words.

Now, there was not a single Life Destruction Elder remaining in the South Sea Demon Regions. And those words still stayed in the South Sea Demon Region sect; no one had dared to erase them.

Following this, the martial artists of the South Sea Demon Region began escaping in droves.

The reason why a martial artist joined a sect was for its training resources and its spiritual land. Now, nearly all of the training resources of the South Sea Demon Region had been destroyed by Lin Ming, and the rest had been looted. If they couldn't even keep their lives, then what was the point of staying in such a sect?

People were easily affected by general opinion. Once one martial artist decided to escape, of course, many others decided to join him. After all, in this vast and endless world, there were more sects than only the South Sea Demon Region.

But there were some martial artists that still knew that Xuan Wuji and Xuan Yuqie were still alive, and stayed to show their loyalty. Even so, they did so with trepidation and fear. None of them dared to return to the Demon Region's three islands. They only hid on the surrounding islands, lest Lin Ming came back to look for them.

These people's so-called 'loyalty' was actually that, seeing a massive number of people leave the South Sea Demon Region, they hoped to gain some benefits by staying behind. But, this was far from true loyalty. If Xuan Wuji or Xuan Yuqie didn't return to manage the chaos, then these people would leave sooner or later.

This was why Zhan Yunjian said that the South Sea Demon Region might be ruined by Lin Ming alone!

As for Xuan Wuji, if he returned, then there was naturally no way for him to continue chasing the Giant Leviathan.

"It's really like a dream. Ah, just four years ago we attended Revered Master Tianguang's birthday banquet with Lin Ming. Although there was still a difference between us and Lin Ming's levels back then, it wasn't as exaggerated as it is now. I really wonder just what Lin Ming experienced these past years…" said Artic Ice Palace's Bai Aoxuan as she shook her head. She was no longer able to fathom what boundary had Lin Ming reached now.

………………

Several days later, Lin Ming had been given the title of Death God. This news spread throughout the entire South Sea. Even in the Great Zen Region over a million miles away, there were still people who were aware of how Lin Ming had ravaged the South Sea Demon Region three times.

Flower Coil Restaurant was a restaurant with over a thousand years of history. It was located in the heart of Zen City.

Zen City was subordinate to the number one sect in the Great Zen Region, Great Zen Temple. Its City Lord was a Life Destruction powerhouse, and throughout the entire city, it was easy to spot Xiantian martial artists and even Revolving Core martial artists. Zen City was a land of martial artists.

Although Flower Coil Restaurant seemed ordinary, it was actually constructed from metal used to forge earth-step treasures. Since Flower Coil Restaurant had been built, it had withstood the tests of time, passing through wind and rain and calamities, but still emerging bright and new as if it were freshly constructed.

At this time, in a luxurious room on the second floor, there was a young man wearing an extravagant Kirin robe with a purple-gold crown nestled atop his head. He had a young girl on each of his sides. One seemed like a maid, and the other seemed to be a cute little nun.

On the opposite side of this purple-gold-crowned young man, there was an astoundingly beautiful and elegant young man. This youngster was dressed as a scholar, and held a folding fan in hand. When one looked carefully, one could see there was something particular about this young man; he didn't even have an Adam's apple, and his fingers were extraordinarily slim. This young man was actually a young girl dressed up as a boy.

This strangely dressed young girl was quickly swinging her fan. She tittered and said, "Brother Yifeng, during this time's outing for adventuring, I heard that there was something fun happenings in the South Sea. I wanted to go and join in on the fun, but now it seems as if it's been stirred up by this Lin Ming and it's not as chaotic as it was before. Ahh, so boring. But, this Lin Ming fellow is called a monstrous genius; perhaps he might not be any worse than Brother Yifeng. Brother Yifeng, what do you think?"

This young girl dressed as a boy and the man opposite of her called Li Yifeng both originated from the four Divine Kingdoms. Li Yifeng was one of the sons of one of the four Divine Kingdom's Emperors.

They had come out to journey and gain experience, and had especially chosen the South Sea Demon Region. But never would they have imagined that just as they reached the Great Zen Region, they would learn news that the situation within the South Sea had changed so suddenly. As for main lead who had caused all these changes within the South Sea, it was Lin Ming. Thus, they had set their sights on him.

Li Yifeng didn't speak. The young maid however, didn't seem to be convinced. She said, "Humph, these South Sea country bumpkins have never seen the wide world. A fairly decent young elite came from their ranks and now they're bragging so much. If they came to the four Divine Kingdoms, then their chins would probably fall off in awe!"

As the young maid spoke, she had a very smug and satisfied expression. If those small-time people came and saw what happened in the four Divine Kingdoms, it was the same as a country bumpkin coming to a major metropolis.

Besides this young maid, the other cute little nun also nodded vigorously. Although she didn't speak, her eyes and face were clearly full of confidence in Li Yifeng.

Li Yifeng smiled and lazily stretched out. As he bit on a toothpick he said, "It doesn't matter. Struggling all day and all night is so silly, ah. To live a great life, have fun, eat and drink to the heart's content, make love under the stars, that's the stuff. What use is there in struggling every day to be number one? Try too much and your head will explode!"

This Li Yifeng, with his purple gold crown and Kirin robe, seemed noble and handsome, but his personality was actually the opposite. He picked up a jug of wine and took a gulp before exclaiming, “This Flower Coil Restaurant’s millennium-old Falling Autumn Leaf Wine is actually quite good. I’ll have to make sure to bring along two extra jugs with me. But what a pity… without some young girls singing and dancing, this Zen City is just too old-fashioned and boring for me. No fun, totally no fun,” Li Yifeng said as he shook his head.

Hearing Li Yifeng’s completely unreliable words, the young girl disguised as a boy suddenly had a frosty expression. With disgust, she said, “Li Yifeng, for this time’s outing I will make sure to record every word you say and everything you do. I will report this all to your Sir Shangchen!”

Li Yifeng nonchalantly said, “Meh, go ahead and report all you want. I’ve already violated around 800 rules or so anyways. I’ll have you know, lice do not fear being bitten. Go and add a few more faults on my list.”

Li Yifeng had a very ‘go ahead and bite me’ expression. It was truly aggravating for one’s nerves.

“You…” The young girl clenched her shining teeth. As for the young maid near Li Yifeng, she covered her mouth and laughed.

The young girl fiercely said, “Li Yifeng, if you go too far then Sir Shangchen will bring you back.”

“Heh, that depends on whether he can catch me or not. Do you know how hard it is to find a chance to come out and play? How could I go back to being surrounded by that group of old men? F*ck, ever since I was born, those old men have been bothering me all day long, touching me left and right. Shit, if I have to go back then I’ll really be driven insane!” Li Yifeng said as he leisurely drank his wine.

Then, he seemed to think of something. A devilish smiled crossed his face, as if he were thinking of something naughty. “This Lin Ming is quite interested. Our next stop will be the South Horizon Region. I’ll go and visit him first before deciding on what to do next.”

……………

At this time, deep within the South Sea, Xuan Wuji was suspended in the pitch-black waters. Xuan Yuqie didn't even dare to speak or look ahead. Her hand on her chest, her head bowed, she waited for Xuan Wuji's orders.

Xuan Wuji indifferently said, "Yuqie, go back first and stabilize the will of the people."

As Xuan Yuqie heard Xuan Wuji's order, her heart tightened.

Go back?

If she went back, that didn't necessarily mean she would be able to stabilize the situation there. The key was her own strength. Facing Lin Ming, she might not even be able to persist for five moves. Once she encountered Lin Ming, death was inevitable.

Wasn't this just sending her to die?

Xuan Yuqie's lips twitched. She wanted to say something, but a cold light flashed in Xuan Wuji's eyes. "What? Is there a problem?"

"No..." Xuan Yuqie exhaled, feeling her heart turn cold. To Xuan Wuji, every person was just a pawn in his great game.

This was her sorrow, the sorrow of the weak. She bit her teeth and asked with despondence, "Should I lead the disciples somewhere else?"

"Manage the matter yourself. You only need to support them for five months," Xuan Wuji said, expressionless. Since the South Sea Demon Region had already turned into this state, stabilizing the hearts of the Revolving Core and Xiantian martial artists was worse than focusing his efforts here to kill the Giant Leviathan. As soon as the Giant Leviathan died, he could grab hold of Mu Qianyu and force Lin Ming to face him.

He had to take advantage of Lin Ming while he still hadn't grown up, and kill him. If he couldn't, and left him alive, then there would be no end to his future troubles.

“Haha, what wise words from Elder Xuan, right!” Beside Xuan Wuji, the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch laughed as he said, “A real man must make choices. All those disciples that fled are unreliable and worthless trash. Although this disaster is a setback to the South Sea Demon Region, it’s also a good deed. Through this trial, those who left are all disloyal garbage, but those who remained are the extraordinary heroes. If you can take these heroes as your future foundation, then with Elder Xuan’s support, rebuilding the South Sea Demon Region wouldn’t be difficult at all! This King fully supports Elder Xuan’s decisions.”

The Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch’s goal was the Giant Leviathan’s heart and spine. He definitely wanted to stay here with Xuan Wuji to make sure they killed the Giant Leviathan.

When Xuan Yuqie heard the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch’s ‘comforting’ words, all she could hear was the gloating tone behind it. She grit her teeth in hate, wanting to run a sword through the damned old ape.

But right now, she could only endure the insult. She coldly replied, “I do not need your judgment on how my South Sea Demon Region will pass this disaster!”

“Heh, Sovereign Xuan is truly like a thorn-filled rose, what a spicy attitude…” The Blue-Eyed Ape ignored Xuan Yuqie’s words, instead choosing to lasciviously harass her. As he was about to speak further, water twisted in front of him and a blue light shined.

A message sounded into the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch’s ear, the old ape’s smiling expression suddenly freezing as he listened.

After several breaths’ time, the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch’s monkey face turned blue, and then a deeper blue, and then green. Both of his eyes looked as if they were about to spout fire.

A message had just come from his clan. His Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan’s Royal Palace had just been attacked by Lin Ming eight hours ago. They had lost four Life Destruction Princes and 20 Revolving Core Generals! In addition to that, hundreds of Xiantian and Houtian realm martial artists had died from the shockwaves of the fight!

Before Lin Ming had left, he had also left behind some words in the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan's Royal Palace Square.

'Stay in the deep sea. Ten lives a day!'

Only these words, and not even the Revolving Core martial artists were able to approach.

"That bastard!" The Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch's intestines twitched which rage. Lin Ming was threatening him! For every day he didn't return Lin Ming would kill ten people!

The Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch had never imagined that Lin Ming would attack their Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan. Their clan headquarters were located 80,000 feet in the deep sea. At this depth, a human martial artist's combat efficiency, speed, and striking power would all be greatly weakened. But, the Turquoise-Eyed Apes wouldn't be affected at all.

Lin Ming didn't have anyone to share a water repelling technique with him, so just how had he been able to kill four Life Destruction Princes?

Within the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan's Royal Palace, there were now only four Life Destruction Princes in their entire clan. If they were killed, then the entire clan might perish! Even if Xuan Wuji went there, he would only be able to kill one or two at most; it was impossible to kill everyone!

Just what method had Lin Ming used, to efficiently kill those that he wanted dead, not even giving them the chance to escape?

"Patriarch, what is it?" beside the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch, a second stage Life Destruction clansman nervously asked. The Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch had obviously just received some terribly bad news. In truth, the moment he asked the question he already had an inkling as to what had occurred. But, he didn't know just how bad the extent of damage was.

The Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch simply didn't speak. His mood was extremely poor. Originally, when Lin Ming had launched a massive massacre within the South Sea Demon Region, he had relished their suffering. But in the flash of an eye, this dark star had been turned onto his own clan and people.

As Xuan Yuqie saw this, the corners of her lips curved into a happy smile. She was extraordinarily perceptive; it was easy to guess just what news the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch had received.

She faintly smiled at the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch, and asked with a 'concerned' expression, "What's the matter? Could something have happened with your clan?"

Chapter 715 – King Level Smelting Trial

Chapter 715 – King Level Smelting Trial

…

…

…

Facing Xuan Yuqie's mocking taunts, the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch grew angry with shame. He had made a joke of the South Sea Demon Region at the start, but now it was Xuan Yuqie's turn to ridicule him.

The Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch coldly snorted and told the others behind him, "We are immediately returning!"

The Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan was no stronger than the South Sea Demon Region. However, the South Sea Demon Region was a sect. If their disciples died, they could always recruit more. As for the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan, they had limited numbers. For every clansman that died, it was impossible for to come up with more numbers at a fast speed. If Lin Ming was killing the outstanding elites of the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan, then the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch couldn't just sit idly and do nothing.

He had to return. Otherwise, if Lin Ming came back and used his strange tracking ability, then he could kill dozens of Revolving Core martial artists at the very least. This was not a loss that their clan could afford.

"Patriarch, are you planning to withdraw?"

Xuan Wuji frowned. If the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan withdrew from here, that meant he would lose a powerful ally. With him alone, it would be extremely difficult to deter the Giant Leviathan in any way.

Hearing Xuan Wuji's question, the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch's face stiffened. "Elder Xuan, my apologies, but this King must return."

"Oh? You have to go back?" Xuan Yuqie sneered. "Ape King, wasn't it you who said that a real man had to make choices? All of those fleeing clansmen are definitely worthless rejects. Since that's the case, the disaster of your Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan is also a great fortune! Those who leave are disloyal, but those who remain are the extraordinary elites. At that time, you can use the remaining members to rebuild your foundation; reforming your clan shouldn't be difficult at all. Our South Sea Demon Region will also support you with everything we have! What do you think about this?"

One of the world's most humiliating matters was having your words tossed back in your face. Xuan Yuqie had deliberated copied the tone of the Ape King, leaving him speechless.

"Humph! You were speaking so much bullshit in such a rude manner, and now that you're the one in trouble, you decided to leave. How laughable!" Xuan Yuqie mercilessly mocked. Seeing the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch suddenly deflate, Xuan Yuqie was very happy.

As for Xuan Wuji, he simply glowered, a cold light flashing in his eyes. He stayed silent. Lin Ming was much more troublesome than he had anticipated.

The Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch also didn't speak any further. He simply cupped his hands and left. Now, the only ones left were Xuan Yuqie and Xuan Wuji.

Xuan Yuqie lightly exhaled. She carefully looked at Xuan Wuji, whispering, "Elder Xuan, should we..."

She hoped with every fiber of her body that Xuan Wuji would decide to return to the South Sea Demon Region and further consider matters. However, Xuan Wuji's response left her disappointed.

"You return first. If anything else pops up then use a water sound transmitting talisman to inform me."

Xuan Yuqie’s heart sank. She knew that saying anything else now would be useless. She could only reply in a quiet voice, “Yes, I understand…”

To Xuan Wuji, his future breakthrough to the Divine Sea boundary was much more important than the fate of the entire South Sea Demon Region. He had absolute certainty that there was a great secret regarding Lin Ming’s body. Otherwise, it would be impossible for him to make such frightening progress.

Xuan Wuji had already looked up Lin Ming and studied his background. Before fifteen years of age, Lin Ming had been nothing but the most average of youngsters. But, after he had reached fifteen years of age, he had suddenly soared into the heavens. In a mere six short years, he had gone from the first level of body transformation to being able to kill a second stage Life Destruction powerhouse. Within the entire Sky Spill Continent, this was an absolutely unprecedented event!

To deal with such a person, Xuan Wuji could only attempt it before he grew anymore than this.

In Xuan Wuji’s eyes, Lin Ming was a resolute individual who killed with decisiveness. He had one weakness, and that was that he cared too much for the safety of his friends and family. This could be seen from when Lin Ming had gone to rescue Qin Xingxuan.

Xuan Wuji had already taken this point into consideration, and that was why he clung so tightly to the Giant Leviathan. Those within were equal to his lifeblood. He believed that as long as he could capture Mu Qianyu and the others, then he could force Lin Ming to appear.

“Lin Ming, no matter what secret you have, I will find it!” Xuan Wuji clenched his fists, his mouth curving up in a brutal smile.

……….

At that time, 200,000 miles away, at Divine Phoenix Island…

After the South Sea Demon Region had looted Divine Phoenix Island, the entire land had become a dump.

When Lin Ming returned to the Sky Spill Continent, he had rushed into Divine Phoenix Island, killing the Elder stationed there even as all the little minions fled away. Now, the entire Divine Phoenix Island was a lonely and desolate land.

Nowadays, Divine Phoenix had become a gathering place for wild birds and beasts. They nested in the ruined buildings and the land was blighted with barren shrubs and the remnants of destruction. As the sea breeze blew over, the weeds swayed in the air, as if they were testifying to the once great magnificence of Divine Phoenix Island.

Lin Ming took step by step through the abandoned land. In front of him was a dilapidated building. There, on the roof, a group of crows and seabirds fluttered about. Because Divine Phoenix Island was a spiritual land, the vegetation, birds, and beasts all grew and bred at an extremely fast pace.

Passing through these broken buildings, Lin Ming came to an empty valley. He carefully extended his perception, exploring his entire surroundings. This valley was the most precious treasure of the entire Divine Phoenix Island… the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm!

This mystic realm had been left behind by the Ancient Phoenix Clan, and it was also the very source of Divine Phoenix Island’s spiritual vein. As for how long ago the Ancient Phoenix Clan had existed, how glorious they had been, what sort of magnificent history they’d had, or how powerful a martial arts civilization they’d had, all of this had long been lost to time. But, what Lin Ming was absolutely sure of was that the Ancient Phoenix Clan was in no way inferior to those from the Realm of the Gods. It was even possible that they had come here from the Realm of the Gods.

“I wonder why the Ancient Phoenix Clan came to Sky Spill Continent. Did they ever come into contact with that mysterious existence within the Eternal Demon Abyss?” Lin Ming muttered to himself.

He felt that that 100,000 years ago, the area in Sky Spill Continent's history which was completely blank, there must have been some heaven-shaking secrets involved.

Lin Ming shook his head, no longer thinking about this. Soon, he arrived at the array formation of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

In the end, Xuan Wuji had not left the deep sea area. This decision hadn't surprised Lin Ming. Xuan Wuji was an ambitious and cruel individual of the demonic path. Everything he had done or would ever do was in order to pursue greater strength. Even the South Sea Demon Region was one of Xuan Wuji's many chess pieces to reach higher peaks of power.

If the South Sea Demon Region would still be in its most prosperous state, then Xuan Wuji might care a little bit about it. But now, the current South Sea Demon Region was only a peak fourth-grade sect without Xuan Wuji. To him, it was simply nothing.

If Xuan Wuji didn't leave, then Lin Ming could only defeat him with his own strength.

But now, he had just broken through to the middle Revolving Core realm and had also opened the second of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. It would be extremely difficult to greatly increase his strength in a short period of time in order to deal with Xuan Wuji.

In this sort of situation, Lin Ming had thought of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

In a person's life, they could only enter the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm twice. The last time Lin Ming had entered, he had been thrust into the general level smelting trial, finally fully completing it.

But this time, Lin Ming's goal was clear. That was… the king level smelting trial!

Chapter 716 - Warriors of the Ancient Phoenix Clan

Chapter 716 - Warriors of the Ancient Phoenix Clan

...

...

...

After opening up the surrounding protective array formation of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, Lin Ming walked into the valley where the mystic realm was locked in. Here were also the words that Mu Qianyu had left behind....

“Thundercrash Mountain, nameless cave, ten years’ time, the appointed meeting!”

Even though he had already reunited with Mu Qianyu, seeing these words still filled him with emotion.

After clearing up his feelings, Lin Ming followed the rules of the spell that he had learned from Mu Yuhuang, and then began to open up the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm a bit at a time.

The last time he had entered into the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, it had taken the collaborative efforts of Mu Yuhuang and Mu Tianguang. Now, Lin Ming was able to do so by himself.

Forming different array formation symbols with both hands, energy vibrated, accompanied by the distant sound of wind and thunder. The surrounding heaven and earth origin energy began to crazily surge, forming a twisting, black vortex in the air. This vortex constantly spun, finally turning into a black hole, wide enough for him to step into.

After stabilizing the entrance, Lin Ming stepped inside….

In an instant, Lin Ming's surroundings went pitch black before splashing with color again. Lin Ming had finally returned to the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. In front of Lin Ming was endless red desert, interspersed with rocks. The ground was barren, and in between the rocks, flowing rivers of lava churned. The rivers glowed red from heat, and as the lava slowly flowed, massive bubbles burbled up from deep underground, making muffled sounds as they released the smell of suffocating sulfur.

But behind Lin Ming, there was an endless field of ice that extended to the horizons. Blizzards howled, and massive towers of ice spiked the ground, shimmering with a chilling radiance.

Lin Ming was familiar with the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. The last time he had come to the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, these lands of fire and ice were considered a great trial. But to the current Lin Ming, these trials of fire and ice were nothing at all.

Time was of the essence. Lin Ming launched into his movement technique and rushed into the vast land of lava. This crimson land was filled with all sorts of lucky chances. But these lucky chances were not important to Lin Ming.

Flying with Golden Roc Shattering the Void, the scenery around him rapidly changed. Soon, Lin Ming arrived at the Ancient Phoenix Great Temple.

The Ancient Phoenix Great Temple was constructed from dark red rock. It reached into the sky, and all around the great temple were various sorts of sculptures and totems. After the entrance opened, Lin Ming followed the familiar path in, coming to a grand jade platform. He placed the key in and then dripped his blood on it.

In the next moment, Lin Ming was enveloped in a warm light. Then, in a few breaths of time, he was transported to a completely closed chamber.

This chamber was filled with all sorts of murals and totems. The last time he had come here, Lin Ming had fought against a fuzzy red people, engaging in a fierce gauntlet of battle before finally meeting the Temple Spirit that guarded the Ancient Phoenix Great Temple.

But this time, as Lin Ming stepped in, the Temple Spirit immediately appeared.

Energy coalesced into the image of a face, like a translucent ghost. The ghost said, "Trial Challenger! I am the 'Temple Spirit,' and I protect this realm. We have met before...."

The Temple Spirit was part of the Stone Spirit Race and also the guardian of the Ancient Phoenix Great Hall. It had a lifespan as long as the rocks themselves.

"Sir Temple Spirit, I apologize for disturbing you from your slumber. The reason that I come to the Ancient Phoenix Great Temple is to participate in the king level smelting trial. Also, I only have six months of time. If it's impossible to pass this trial in six months of time, then I would rather choose not to enter," Lin Ming calmly said as he looked at the Temple Spirit. Half a year was already a very tight timeline. His current strength was incomparable to when he completed the final general level smelting trial, but correspondingly, the king level smelting trial was also much harder. It would be at least several times more difficult than the general level trial.

It was hard to say whether or not he could complete it in half a year.

"King level smelting trial?" The Temple Spirit thought for a moment. "Trial Challenger, after you placed a drop of blood onto the jade platform, the result of your bloodline test was only at the peak of the general level..."

Lin Ming frowned. Before, after having passed through the final general level smelting trial, he had obtained a drop of Ancient Phoenix blood as a reward. However, one drop was simply too low. Whether it was the blood of the Ancient Phoenix or the blood of the True Dragon, both of them were extremely useful when Lin Ming's comprehensive combat strength was still weak. But now, after becoming that much stronger and reaching a level at which he could contend with a Life Destruction powerhouse, these different bloodlines were only able to offer him limited strength.

The reason was because the quantity was simply too low.

According to Demonshine's words, there were certain God Beast Clans within the Realm of the Gods where half their blood came from a God Beast. For a genius to be birthed in such a family, their degree of talent was unimaginable.

"Sir Temple Spirit, I remember that the last time I entered the Ancient Phoenix Great Temple, besides the bloodline test, I also fought red figures in a chamber, finally earning the right to enter the general level smelting trial through my results there. How come that isn't possible this time?"

Lin Ming was very self-aware of the power of his own bloodline. Even after obtaining the rewards from the general level smelting trial, they still weren't able to compare with those that could enter the king level smelting trial. Thus, the only thing he could rely on was his own comprehensive talent in all other aspects .

Within the world of martial arts, this so-called comprehensive talent wasn't one's martial talent, but rather one's integrated combat strength in comparison to their age. This was the standard method of evaluation of a genius.

In this aspect, Lin Ming had complete confidence in himself.

"That is the qualification test for the general level smelting trial. The qualification test for the king level smelting trial is much stricter...." The Temple Spirit said without the slightest hint of emotion.

"Much stricter? That also exists?" Lin Ming noted the subtext to the Temple Spirit's words. He guessed that the Ancient Phoenix Clan also had extraordinary talents, however, they lacked bloodline purity and richness. If they couldn't participate in the king level smelting trial just because of a deficiency in their bloodline then that would just be too unfair.

“Yes, but it is a life or death smelting trial; the mortality rate is extremely high. Failure means…death!”

Life or death smelting trial?

Lin Ming’s eyes widened. He never thought that the screening requirements would be so harsh for the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s Royal Family. Then again, after thinking of it some more, the animal kingdom was also the same. The Royal Family enjoyed far more privileges and resources, thus the test they faced would also be that much stricter. Once they failed, that would mean death.

This was all to ensure that the Royal Family remained absolutely formidable. Otherwise, they would just be the same as all the other clansmen. What right did they have to be part of the Royal Family?

With a light breath, Lin Ming unwaveringly said, “I can!”

The Temple Spirit glanced at Lin Ming. “Your bloodline concentration is far different compared to the true Royal Family. The difficulty of the smelting trial is also very high. Are you sure?”

“I am!” Lin Ming gripped his fists together. Even if it weren’t because of Mu Qianyu, Lin Ming would still have returned to the Ancient Phoenix Great Temple to attempt the king level smelting trial. The life of a martial artist was filled with difficult choices. If he had the chance to choose, he would always choose to blaze forward.

“Good, then it shall be as you wish!” The Temple Spirit’s figure gradually rose up as it finished speaking. It ascended 100 feet into the air, looking down at Lin Ming. “Trial Challenger, in this battle you must now face the heroic souls of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. They had once participated in the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s king level smelting trial; these are the most outstanding soldiers of the Royal Family. Now, through the recorded memories of the Ancient Phoenix Great Temple, they will be restored to their original form. If you defeat them, then you will obtain the qualifications to enter the true king level smelting trial. However, defeat…means death!”

As the Temple Spirit’s voice faded, Lin Ming saw that 100 feet in front of him a haze red phantom began to emerge from thin air.

Lin Ming’s mind went numb. Past soldiers of the Royal Family? He never imagined that he would actually fight with them in this manner.

Slowly extracting the long spear from his spatial ring, Lin Ming’s heart blazed with a brilliant fighting spirit.

He wondered, 'Tens of thousands of years ago, or even hundreds of thousands of years ago, at a time when the history of the Sky Spill Continent is completely unknown, just what level did those martial artists reach? What sort of cultivation methods did they train in?'

He could discover them in this battle!

The red phantom slowly solidified, eventually turning into a tall man holding into a dark red spear. His eyebrows were straight, and he had a handsome appearance. His chin tapered to a point, giving him a somewhat beautiful flavor. At the same time, the man’s presence was imposing, dominating, as if he were a model carved from jade.

“First opponent of the smelting trial qualification test. Ancient Phoenix Clan, Nuyan Family, Fourth Cousin of the Sixth Crown Prince, General of the Firecloud Battalion, Nuyan Yu!” Above the Ancient Phoenix Great Temple, a flat voice resounded, informing Lin Ming who his opponent had once been.

Nuyan Family? Firecloud Battalion General?

Listening to this, the Ancient Phoenix Clan seemed to be comprised of many families and factions, and the Nuyan Family was just one of these.

What sort of combat strength did the Firecloud Battalion reach? What cultivation were their soldiers?

Lin Ming lifted his spear, his heart inexplicably filled with yearning and desire for the Ancient Phoenix Clan from hundreds of thousands of years ago, wondering just what that army looked like. When he saw the murals and images within the Ancient Phoenix Great Temple, the normal soldiers had ridden Vermillion Birds and Blue Luans. Not just that, but those Saint Beasts had been far more formidable than those from Divine Phoenix Island!

In such a war, how great and magnificent a scene it would have been!

After Nuyan Yu fully formed into reality, he held his long spear, pointing it straight at Lin Ming. The soldiers of the Ancient Phoenix Clan often had to ride Vermillion Birds and other Saint Beasts into battle, thus a majority of them used long polearms. For instance, the spear, halberd, and lance were all extremely common. This was completely different from the current Divine Phoenix Island that primarily used swords.

“Revolving Core cultivation?” Lin Ming discovered that Nuyan Yu’s cultivation was only at the Revolving Core realm. But, as to what boundary this Revolving Core realm actually reached, he found it difficult to guess. This was likely due to the differences in physique and training from those martial artists of the Sky Spill Continent.

“There is no one in the Sky Spill Continent who can give off such pressure with just a Revolving Core cultivation. I wonder just how old this Nuyan Yu was before he left behind this recorded phantom. If he was just in his twenties, then that would truly be terrifying!” Lin Ming’s expression turned solemn, his eyes filling with fighting spirit. Ever since he had broken through to the Revolving Core, this was the first time he had stood opposite another heroic young elite who was comparable to him.

Swish!

Without a word, Nuyan Yu thrust his spear at Lin Ming!

All of the fire origin energy of the world was stirred up by this spear, forming a phantom Ancient Phoenix that flapped its wings, shooting towards Lin Ming!

The phantom hadn't arrived, but a sweltering heat wave had already reached him!

"Come on!"

Lin Ming's eyes erupted with a fierce fighting spirit. Against such an enemy, he didn't have any thoughts of holding back. From the very start he had opened the Heretical God Force, as well activating the Death God force field and Asura force field!

Chasing Sun!

A spear thrust out. This spear contained the Concept of Fire.

This was a collision of Concepts. Lin Ming wanted to see just how far off his own Concept of Fire was compared to those young elites of the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

Bang!

Nuyan Yu's Ancient Phoenix phantom was pierced through by Lin Ming's spear, but Lin Ming's spear light was also melted away by those feverish flames.

Both strikes disappeared into thin air, evenly matched!

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. He knew that just in terms of Concepts he had already lost. The only reason he had been able to block that strike just now was because his battle spirit had been infused into his attack.

Chapter 717 – Qualify

Chapter 717 – Qualify

…

…

…

In the skies above the battlefield, the Temple Spirit indifferently gazed on at everything happening beneath him. After all, the Temple Spirit was an existence that lacked all normal human sentiment. It was not surprised nor did it exclaim aloud. It only felt it unusual that Lin Ming, whose cultivation was at the middle Revolving Core realm, was able to form a bronze-level elementary stage battle spirit, infinitely close to reaching small success.

'Perhaps he really might have the qualifications to enter the true king level smelting trial…'

As the Temple Spirit thought this, it blankly stared on.

Whether Lin Ming earned the qualifications or died, the Temple Spirit would never show regret or joy. It simply held the attitude of a spectator, bearing witness to all.

Bang!

On the battlefield, Nuyan Yu and Lin Ming fiercely collided. Nuyan Yu was tossed back hundreds of feet, his body shaking as if the energy that formed him was about to dissipate at any second.

"I see. That attack just now really consumed a great deal of energy." Lin Ming discovered that the phantom reproduction of Nuyan Yu had an extremely limited amount of energy.

Every bit less was energy that the phantom would never recover. In just a few intense collisions, half of Nuyan Yu's figure already vanished.

Lin Ming twirled his long spear, stepping atop Golden Roc Shattering the Void as he instantly appeared in front of Nuyan Yu.

A spear shot out, containing the Concept of Thunderfire.

Penetrating Rainbow!

Kacha!

The energy-formed spear in Nuyan Yu's hand was directly cut in half, and a chunk of his arm was ripped off by Lin Ming's attack, turning into sparkling starlight that vanished.

After losing a part of his arm, Nuyan Yu was no longer able to withstand Lin Ming. Lin Ming's spear thrust through his throat, and Nuyan Yu vanished in a blaze of radiant light.

"I won."

Lin Ming took several deep gulps, catching his breath as he stirred the Black Hole Revolving Core in his dantian to absorb the rich heaven and earth origin energy around him.

That Nuyan Yu just now had left a deep impression on Lin Ming. If it weren't for the fact that the phantom copy had a limited amount of energy, if the fight had continued, Lin Ming would have had to pay a heavy price even if he won.

"The extraordinary heroic elites of the Ancient Phoenix Clan are truly formidable, especially in their understanding of Concepts. In that aspect alone, I am far inferior to them." Lin Ming shook his head. His perception wasn't bad, but as his cultivation and strength constantly improved, he began to find that his perception was becoming a weakness of his.

After Nuyan Yu's phantom dissipated, a new phantom quickly coalesced in front of Lin Ming.

The phantom held a long war lance. Flaming red hair ran down his shoulders and a sharp light shined in his eyes. With a single glance, he could see that hundreds of thousands of years ago, this man was once a dragon amongst humans.

“The second opponent of the smelting trial qualification test. Ancient Phoenix Clan, Nuyan Family, Second Son of the Sixth Prince, Vanguard General Nuyan Huo!”

This Nuyan Huo appeared to be around 20-30 years of age. As for exactly how old he was, it was difficult to estimate. In the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s king level smelting trial qualifier, matches were arranged according to the trial challenger’s age. The older the challenger, the stronger the opponents they had to face.

Nuyan Huo lifted his left hand, and with a sizzling spark, flames combusted, coalescing into a fire shield. On Nuyan Huo’s body, flames lingered on his skin. After several breaths of time, these little flames turned into countless small scales that covered him, forming a complete set of armor. With this, Nuyan Huo’s entire body was protected.

These scales burned a deep red. As they covered his body, they seemed like completely separate entities. On top of the scales were even mystical runes. These were naturally formed textures after the fires solidified into material from.

“Flame shield, flame armor?”

Lin Ming’s pupil’s shrank. This was a technique that was recorded within the “Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicles.”

Within the “Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle,” there were recorded methods on how to form such objects as chains out of fire. Lin Ming had also casually learnt these skills, but because of the limits in the cultivation method and the strength and durability of the flame formed, chains were inadequate. As Lin Ming broke through to the Houtian realm and Xiantian realm, he slowly stopped using these minor techniques.

But now, as Lin Ming saw the flame scales and flame shield on Nuyan Huo's body, he could clearly feel the energy there that was compressed to an extremely terrifying degree. It was absolutely startling!

Was this a high level application of the Concept of Fire?

Lin Ming took a deep breath. In these past few years, he had invested the majority of his time and energy into understanding and polishing the Concept of Space. As for the Concept of Fire and the Concept of Thunder, he had temporarily put those on hold.

Lin Ming was well aware that as a martial artist reached a higher boundary the more important it became to utilize things such as battle spirits, Laws, and their corresponding Concepts, abilities that one comprehended from touching upon the source of principles. Only the worst of all martial artists would depend on just their cultivation to fight.

The more Concepts one comprehended, the more combat strength and flexibility one would have. Although it was possible to bite off more than one could chew, when one reached the Divine Sea boundary and above, it was possible to have thousands upon thousands of years of life. This was more than enough time to understand these things. Thus, it was always a good idea to lay down an early foundation.

Woosh!

Nuyan Huo's lance thrust out and all of the surrounding fire origin energy was thrown in turmoil, completely overwhelming as it came enveloping down on Lin Ming. Against such a lance attack, Lin Ming didn't counterattack first. Instead, he touched his mind upon the Heretical God Force, relying on his powerful soul force and perception to analyze the mysteries behind Nuyan Huo's attack.

Chasing Sun!

When Lin Ming was covered in fire, he finally made his counterattack.

Peng!

Flames showered. Lin Ming flew out of the explosion, his hair charred and clothes smoking. In that quick exchange of moves, even though Lin Ming's spear strike contained his battle spirit, it still wasn't enough to make up for the disparity.

Fortunately, Lin Ming wasn't injured thanks to his astounding defensive ability. Even so, some of the power of fire crept into his meridians, recklessly dashing about before the suppressive force of the Heretical God Seed came crashing down upon it. But the power of this flame wisp was much hardier and stubborn than Lin Ming had imagined. Even with the Heretical God Force tamping it down, it was still extremely violent and wild. It would take a short period of time before it was fully suppressed.

This was the first time that the Heretical God Seed had encountered such a situation. Lin Ming certainly didn't think that the Heretical God Force arcane skill was insufficient in grade, but rather that his own realm was lacking. Compared to Nuyan Huo, his comprehension in Concepts was far too poor.

"Trying to steal a glance at the Concept of Fire in the midst of a fight?" In the sky over the battlefield, the Temple Spirit indifferently watched everything happening below it. "The king level smelting trial qualifier is extremely difficult. It is already a life or death battle, so you had better be careful. Don't lose your life just for a chance of comprehending something beyond you."

In the Temple Spirit's opinion, if Lin Ming concentrated too much on comprehending certain things in this battle, then he wouldn't be able to fight with his full strength, thus having a situation just now where he had lost. In a battle between masters, any sort of hesitation like this was dangerous.

"I appreciate the advice." Lin Ming never intended to change his plans to begin. If he wanted to gain insights into this Concept during battle, it would naturally consume a great deal more energy; he might even be injured. However, he had faith in his own endurance and defensive ability. If the situation took a turn for the worse, it wouldn't be too late to fully commit to the battle.

Bang bang bang!

With every exchange of moves, Lin Ming constantly gained insight from Nuyan Huo's Concept of Fire. Within his body, the Heretical God Seed began to absorb more and more power of fire. Under the confines of the Heretical God Force, this power of fire formed a crimson sphere that revolved near the Heretical God Seed together with the Heretical God Flame essence. However, it was impossible for the Heretical God Flame Essence to absorb this power simply because the difference in level was too high.

Although Nuyan Huo seemed as if he held the complete advantage, there was still a limited amount of energy within his body. After ten moves, his voice began to fade away.

After five more moves, Lin Ming's spear cut off Nuyan Huo's arm.

A section of flame armor and the flame shield fell into Lin Ming's hands. Gently feeling the shield with his fingers, Lin Ming sensed the traces of energy contained within. In this shield, it seemed as if the fire origin energy had a mind of its own. It was a structure of energy formed with countless tiny runes. Regardless of what direction an attack came from, this structure would be able disperse the impact of the strike, ultimately absorbing the remnants of that attack with the flame energy.

"This Flame Law is truly amazing!"

Nuyan Huo's attack came once again. Lin Ming was no longer able to divide his attention in battle to study the subtle structures within this shield. With a counterattack of his spear, Nuyan Huo's phantom was killed, his body scattering into energy. The flame shield in Lin Ming's hand also vanished in a burst of fire, making him feel extremely regretful.

After Nuyan Huo, new matches appeared, all from the Nuyan Family. Lin Ming began to suspect that only the Ancient Phoenix Clan members from the Sky Spill Continent were surnamed Nuyan. Perhaps the Ancient Phoenix Clan of the Sky Spill Continent was only a tiny branch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan from the Realm of the Gods.

The battles became increasingly intense. Lin Ming was already unable to discreetly study the Concept of Fire in battle, otherwise he wouldn't be able to continue.

After being swept up in the aftermath of his opponent's flames, Lin Ming thrust out his spear at this fifth opponent, killing him. But then, two crimson phantom images appeared in front of him.

Nuyan Family Left Guard General, Nuyan Dalei.

Nuyan Family Right Guard General, Nuyan Xun.

One against two!

Lin Ming's expression became solemn. Although his opponents had limited energy, having to face continuous fights in an ever-changing battle was still very hard on the trial challenger's energy consumption. If it weren't for the Gate of Healing supporting Lin Ming, he absolutely couldn't have made it to this stage.

"The Ancient Phoenix Clan's king level smelting trial is truly strict in its requirements. This is also only the Ancient Phoenix Clan's Nuyan Family. I wonder what would happen if it were different races or clans?" Lin Ming was well aware that there was no limit in this universe; there was always a higher peak. This was common sense. With his current talent, he far exceeded anyone in the ancient or current times of the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent. But, in Demonshine's words, there were three thousand boundless worlds, meaning that there were at least another billion worlds out there, all like the Sky Spill Continent. Just being able to dominate a world like that didn't mean much at all.

Lin Ming no longer bothered to gain insights into the Concept of Fire; he completely concentrated on this battle as he preserved his energy. Lin Ming's strongest strength lay in his endurance. Even if he had to fight multiple enemies, it would still be difficult to wear him down. In addition, he also had an astounding physical defense capability. And with the support of the Heretical God Seed, Lin Ming held a completely disparate advantage when it came to defending against fire energy.

Like this, Lin Ming continued fighting.

Sixth match…

Seventh match…

Eighth match…

When the tenth match came, Lin Ming’s opponent was a minor prince of the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

This prince was several times stronger than his previous opponents. The prince wielded a golden halberd, and his control of fire was dizzying in its wonder.

From the very start Lin Ming had fallen into the inferior position. After continuous collisions, he forcefully relied on the Heretical God Seed to control and defend against the flames. After ten moves, the prince’s energy gradually weakened, and then he was killed by Lin Ming.

After defeating his tenth opponent, Lin Ming supported himself on the ground with his spear, his entire face dripping wet with sweat. His clothes were nearly burnt off, and his body was covered with minor burns and spear wounds. At this moment, he had already used up over half of his true essence.

The Temple Spirit came floating down from the air. It calmly said, “Trial Challenger, congratulations on obtaining the qualifications to enter the king level smelting trial. Now, follow me….”

Chapter 718 – A Shocking Trial Ground

Chapter 718 – A Shocking Trial Ground

…

…

…

"I've finally passed." Lin Ming let out a breath of relief. That test had not been easy at all. When Lin Ming had passed the general level smelting trial, he had been young, thus the enemies he faced were correspondingly weaker. Even so, it had cost Lin Ming a massive amount of time to pass it, and if he hadn't brought enough Vermillion Bird blood essence with him, then it might have been nearly impossible to pass the smelting trial in any reasonable period of time.

But now, Lin Ming's age and cultivation had risen. Facing the king level smelting trial qualifier, it hadn't been as difficult to pass. This proved that the rate Lin Ming grew had exceeded the Ancient Phoenix Great Temple's expectations of someone from the royal line.

"Sir Temple Spirit, I have a question I would like to ask you. Those several successors and princes I fought, just how old were they?"

This was the question that Lin Ming most wanted to ask. He desired to know how his talent compared to those geniuses of the Ancient Phoenix Clan and just what degree the disparity between them was.

The Temple Spirit said, "Trial Challenger, your skeletal age is at 21 years. The difficult of your corresponding test should also be at the 21st rank. However, because your bloodline density is lacking, the true difficulty of your test was somewhat higher. Your matches were all 24 or 25 years old. They were all outstanding heroic elites of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's

Royal Family. However, when their phantoms faced you, their energy and cultivation were also under heavy suppression; they were in no way at their peak condition. Thus, it is impossible to assess your talent in comparison to theirs.

"I understand."

Lin Ming wasn't too surprised by this. In the Ancient Phoenix Clan, their resources and talents were far from what the Sky Spill Continent could compare with. For instance, the Nirvana Dragon Root was a rare and precious heavenly treasure that all Life Destruction masters of the Sky Spill Continent would go stark mad for. However, thinking about it some more, that Nirvana Dragon Root was in truth some unwanted medicinal herb kept in the Demon God Imperial Palace's medicine garden by the Demon Emperor before he ascended into the Realm of the Gods. Although it's value had surged because of the tens of thousands of years that had passed, when it was truly contrasted to the great sects within the Realm of the Gods with incomparably vast legacies, it wasn't even worth mentioning.

There might be some half God Beast bloodline genius out there, using medicines and pills daily with a value that far surpassed the Nirvana Dragon Root. What they trained in were high-level Realm of the God's cultivation methods that were in no way inferior to Lin Ming's, and they would even have the guidance of old beings from the Realm of the Gods whose cultivation far surpassed that of the Divine Sea's. Lin Ming didn't find it strange that there would be many such individuals whose own comprehensive talent even exceeded his own.

Destiny was also a part of one's talent. For a martial artist to be born in a great sect of the Realm of the Gods, or perhaps even a Holy Land, that too was a part of their destiny.

But for Lin Ming, although he originated from the lowliest of mortal backgrounds in one of the three thousand boundless worlds, simply one of a trillion trillion ants scurrying about, he still didn't believe that his destiny was any less than that of an outstanding young elite from a Realm of the Gods Holy Land.

This was because…he had the Magic Cube.

Although the current Lin Ming hadn't been able to perceive the secrets of the Magic Cube, he had a faint feeling that the Magic Cube might be one of the greatest treasures within the entire universe. As he grew stronger in the future, he would be able to unlock more and more of the Magic Cube's powers, bringing him that much closer to the peak of all martial arts.

"Trial Challenger, we are here..." As the Temple Spirit spoke, the space around Lin Ming began to suddenly twist. A slight dizzying vertigo overcame him, and in the next moment he was sent up to a broad platform.

This platform was shaped like a massive circle, at least 10 miles in diameter. On its surface, there were a variety of mysterious, ancient runes engraved within; these were clearly array symbols.

However, what surprised Lin Ming was that he hadn't seen a good number of these array symbols before. Lin Ming believed that he was skilled in understanding ancient array formations, but facing the patterns and marks on this platform, nearly everything here was completely unknown, making him feel a bit helpless.

Was this an array formation laid down by the Ancient Phoenix Clan?

"Sir Temple Spirit, are these the grounds for the king level smelting trial?" Lin Ming looked at the entire round platform. This platform emitted a simple, vast energy; it was startling. In addition to these mysterious, ancient runes, Lin Ming wouldn't be surprised if it was something similar to the Seven Profound Valleys' Ten Thousand Killing Array.

Of course, this Ancient Phoenix Great Temple's array formation was like the difference between heaven and earth compared to that of the Seven Profound Valleys.

However, the Temple Spirit shook its head and said, "This is not the site of the king level smelting trial. Rather, it is the transmission altar that leads to the king level smelting trial...."

The Temple Spirit's words were unhurried without any hint of emotion behind them. But as Lin Ming heard them, he was completely shocked!

What!?

This was only a transmission array!?

A ten-mile-wide transmission array covered in countless mystic runes!

Heavens! Where would such a transmission array lead to!?

In the broken world of the Demon God Imperial Palace, Lin Ming had seen a massive, ancient transmission array that was hundreds of feet high with 108 grooves for true essence stones. With all sorts of array symbols covering it, it had been a large-scale array formation.

That was the greatest transmission array Lin Ming had seen to date. But now, compared to this transmission array around him. It was absolutely overshadowed like an ant to an elephant.

This array formation was ten miles wide! Spreading out his perception, Lin Ming discovered dozens of fist-sized grooves around him. As for the transmission altar itself, that was a thousand feet high!

The entire altar seemed carved from burning red jade. Lin Ming had never seen this jade-like material but he could feel the vibrant energy rolling off from it.

This sort of transmission array…

Lin Ming glanced at the Temple Spirit. If the Demon God Imperial Palace's transmission array could send someone billions of miles away, then this transmission array could send someone trillions or even tens or hundreds of trillions of miles afar!

"Sir Temple Spirit, just where does this transmission array go to? If I can't complete the smelting trial in half a year, I would rather not enter," Lin Ming uneasily asked. If he went so far away, returning probably wouldn't be easy.

“Trial Challenger, I cannot guarantee when you will complete the smelting trial. The king level smelting trial is considered one of the core cultivation resources of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, and is divided into several stages. You can only continue to the later stages if you complete the first stage of the smelting trial. Once you finish the first stage of the smelting trial, you may also return. But, as for how long it will take you, I cannot tell.”

“What’s the fastest time that a martial artist of the Ancient Phoenix Clan completed the trial?” Lin Ming quickly asked.

“The fastest was…72 days!”

As the Temple Spirit spoke this number, even though its nature was that of indifference, there was still a trace of respect and reverence in its tone. 72 days was a terrifying number.

“72 days…I understand.” Since there were people that could complete the trial in 72 days, then Lin Ming was confident that even if he couldn’t match that number, three months also wouldn’t be a problem.

The Temple Spirit shook its head and said, “Trial Challenger, 72 days for completion of the trial is not an Ancient Phoenix Clan Prince from my Nuyan Family. That individual had a perfect Phoenix Clan bloodline. That is, half of his bloodline came from humanity and the other half came from a Phoenix. His perception, talent, none of that can be measured with common sense. Perhaps you might not even have the qualifications to pass the very first stage of the smelting trial in 72 days.”

Perfect Phoenix Clan bloodline?

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. From the very first time he had stepped onto the road of martial arts, taking each step by step until he reached where he presently was, he was now finally able to approach those peak talents from the Realm of the Gods.

Now, he would finally traverse the same path that the heroic young elites of the Realm of the Gods once tread, climbing towards the true peak of martial arts!

Everything had to restart from zero. The road was now underneath his feet!

Lin Ming's entire body burned with a brilliant fighting spirit. If he didn't come into contact with the Realm of the Gods, then he would never see where the peak of all martial arts lay!

"I don't need to finish in 72 days. As long as I can pass within half a year—that's more than enough! Beam me up!"

"Good! It shall be as you wish."

As the Temple Spirit finished speaking, from above the skies of the massive altar, hundreds of fist-sized crystals slowly fell down, fitting themselves into the grooves of the altar.

Lin Ming had never seen these red energy stones before. But from the energy fluctuations, he could sense that these crystals were incomparable to true essence stones or Blood Demon Crystals.

This was also within reason. In order to mobilize such a terrifyingly large transmission array, how could ordinary energy stones possibly be enough?

These red crystals were absolutely priceless. If just the consumption to transmit a young elite was so high, then the training resources they received could be imagined.

No wonder the Ancient Phoenix Clan held such strict requirements to qualify for the king level smelting trial. In order to train a single member of the Royal Family, this required a massive amount of resources. Even with Lin Ming's talent, he still hadn't obtained the qualifications easily.

Bang!

The red crystals erupted with energy. The entire transmission altar suddenly shook as all of the array symbols upon it lit up in dazzling succession!

A beam of fiery-red light shot out from the altar, straight into the skies. As Lin Ming stood on the transmission array, he felt an endless and terrifying pressure fall over him with overwhelming force, suppressing him to a nearly unbearable degree.

Heavenly Demon force field—open!

Lin Ming simultaneously released the Death God and Asura force fields. With their support, Lin Ming was just barely able to withstand this immense pressure.

This secretly shocked Lin Ming. “This transmission is truly extraordinary. If a normal Xiantian martial artist were to stand here, they would explode from the pressure!’

Bang!

The transmission array suddenly trembled. More and more red energy surged forth, covering the entire altar.

In the next moment, Lin Ming felt his body suddenly accelerate in a dizzying motion as the world spun around him. This acceleration was so sudden and fast that Lin Ming felt as though he would barf out his organs. Rays of red light wrapped around Lin Ming, the void shattered, and he was tossed into this incomparably chaotic space flow!

Having experienced this scene previously, Lin Ming’s eyes lit up. This was also an opportune time for him to further hone his Concepts of Space and Time!

The chaotic space flow that Lin Ming faced this time were even more violent and terrifying than before. But Lin Ming’s strength had greatly increased from the past, and his understanding of the Concept of Space had reached a very deep degree. Even if he couldn’t directly withstand the violent space flows, he still had ways to avoid it, ensuring that he would be safe.

After soaring through this space flow for an unknown period of time, even someone with Lin Ming’s endurance consumed 70-80% of his true essence. Finally, he felt his body shake as he was kicked out from the space channel!

Then, Lin Ming was able to clearly gaze at the scene before him. This was the true king level smelting trial!

Lin Ming was thoroughly shocked. Prior to this, he had imagined many times just what the king level smelting trial would be like. Perhaps it was similar to the Ten Thousand Killing Array, or the King's Cage, or maybe even the Road of Emperor, but he never thought it would be like this.....

This was actually a city! A city filled with people!

Chapter 719 – Timeworn Phoenix City

Chapter 719 – Timeworn Phoenix City

…

…

…

Right in front of Lin Ming was an incomparably vast and deep valley. Lin Ming stood right on the top of a cliff hundreds of thousands of feet high. The cliff walls were smooth like polished mirrors. If one didn't have the ability to fly, then perhaps even a Revolving Core martial artist would be unable to climb this.

Looking down from the top of the cliff, he saw an endless mist of hazy clouds, extending off into the distant horizon for thousands of miles. But, within this fog, he could make out several mountains that were hundreds of thousands of feet high, towering into the heavens as if they were pillars supporting the vault of the world.

A magnificent, crimson castle city was nestled within these mountains. Its walls were several hundred feet high, grand and majestic, and above the city massive flaming birds shuttled back and forth. On top of these flaming birds rode riders wearing scarlet sets of armor with lances in their hands.

Besides these fiery birds, there was a massive spirit boat being ferried forwards by ten Golden Crows, their bodies wreathed in flames. Each of these Golden Crows were much larger than the Vermillion Birds of Divine Phoenix Island, their twin wings each extended 200 feet out and their backs wide enough to fit 10 people standing side by side.

At this time, this massive spirit boat headed forwards into that giant, crimson castle city. As Lin Ming stood 100 miles outside, he could clearly hear the resounding cry of phoenixes, a melodious and valiant song that echoed endlessly between the heavens and earth.

“What a great divine city!”

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. Although he already knew that outside of the Sky Spill Continent there was the three thousand boundless worlds as well as the even greater and more illusory, unattainable Realm of the Gods, knowing was one matter; seeing with his own eyes was another altogether.

This scene was simply staggeringly breathtaking; it was only inferior to the phantom of the God Beast he had seen in the Eternal Demon Abyss.

As Lin Ming turned around, he saw that the Temple Spirit was following behind him, its form rippling like a water mark. “Trial Challenger, this is Timeworn Phoenix City. It is my Nuyan Family’s king level smelting trial site. You may enter.”

“Timeworn Phoenix City….Nuyan Family…”

Lin Ming’s eyebrows arched upwards. He asked the Temple Spirit, “Sir Temple Spirit, the Nuyan Family is only part of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. So would that mean that the other trial challengers of other clans and families are also converged within Timeworn Phoenix City?”

The Temple Spirit replied, “Yes.”

So it was true…. Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath of cold air. If he wasn’t wrong, then the Sky Spill Continent’s Ancient Phoenix Clan only comprised the Nuyan Family branch. But, within the Realm of the Gods, there was the much greater true Ancient Phoenix Clan. There was even a possibility that the Ancient Phoenix Clan was a Holy Land-rank influence within the Realm of the Gods!

"Come, I shall lead you into the city," the Temple Spirit said. Then, a blurry light wrapped around Lin Ming and they flew together towards that colossal city.

After half an incense stick of time, Lin Ming arrived at the great castle city. As he reached the city gates, he saw that they were 1000 feet high, and at the very top there were three massive golden words emblazoned on a huge signboard: Timeworn Phoenix City!

These three words emanated an unbelievably inexhaustible and vigorous aura; just looking at it made his mind blur. Even though Lin Ming was confident in the firmness of his own willpower and mind, he still didn't dare stare for too long.

"This sign..."

The Temple Spirit said, "The above words on that signboard were personally written by the Third Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan; within it is contained the root Laws of all fire-attribute energies. Normally, if a martial artist looks at it they will feel dazed. Even those who have formed a battle spirit are no exception."

"I see...." Lin Ming was startled. It wasn't said which family clan this Ancient Phoenix Clan Third Patriarch came from. It was possible that he was the Third Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan from the Realm of the Gods. It was hard to imagine just what boundary such a person would have reached.

"Come, let us enter," the Temple Spirit said before slowly floating forward.

The great road leading to Timeworn Phoenix City was over a mile wide. Along the way, there were a number of martial artists sporadically scattered about, all of them wearing red. In his black clothes, Lin Ming stuck out like a sore thumb.

As Lin Ming sensed the cultivation of those young heroic elites he saw along the way, he was secretly surprised. Nearly all of them were at Revolving Core or even at Life Destruction. There were several who were at the Xiantian realm, but they were obviously under 20 years of age. They didn't break through to the Xiantian realm any later than Lin Ming.

As Lin Ming arrived at the entrance to Timeworn Phoenix City, a soldier dressed in fiery armor stopped him. “Identify yourselves! Name and origin!”

At this time, the Temple Spirit fluttered down beside Lin Ming. It said without feeling, “Ancient Phoenix Clan, Nuyan Family Protector from Sky Spill Continent. The trial challenger’s name is Nuyan Ming.”

Nuyan Ming?

Lin Ming was startled before relaxing. He was a disciple of Divine Phoenix Island and he had also obtained the inheritance of a single blood drop of the Ancient Phoenix from the Ancient Phoenix Great Temple. He could at least be considered an honorary Nuyan Family member.

“Nuyan Family?” The city gate guardsman showed a thoughtful expression. He took out a jade slip, glanced at it, and then said with some surprise and consternation, “The Nuyan Family has not sent any fellow clansmen to the Royal Family smelting trial for 150,000 years!”

“Yes!” the Temple Spirit replied. Then, a simple token emerged out of thin air in front of it. The front of the token had the design of a phoenix in nirvana, and the back of the token and a single word written in the Realm of the God’s language—Nuyan.

The city gate guardsman looked at Lin Ming strangely. He then took the token and nodded, “You truly are of the Nuyan Family line. You may enter.”

Lin Ming stepped into Timeworn Phoenix City with the Temple Spirit. As Lin Ming formally entered the city, he felt a great vague pressure come pressing down on him. This caused all of the true essence within his body to immediately weaken by at least 20%.

Looking up in the sky, he could see countless red clouds surging in the heavens, constantly forming a variety of mystical patterns that seemed as if they contained the endless profound principles of the universe.

“The fire origin energy here is…too rich, too pure!” Lin Ming gasped. He felt that what he breathed in was not air but the purest and most primal of fire origin energies!

This fire origin energy perhaps shouldn’t be described with the word “rich.” Rather, it was power that was closest to the Law of Fire!

“If I train here, it can’t even be described as twice the result with half the effort….” Lin Ming sighed with emotion. The great sects and Holy Lands of the Realm of the Gods were truly flush with resources, but as to what degree it was, it was hard to consider with just his imagination. Now, seeing it with his own eyes, he could only sigh for the disparity that existed between the mortal world and the Realm of the Gods!

In Timeworn Phoenix City, even if one didn’t train, one would always be undergoing a baptism of fire energy, making the energy within their dantian even purer! If one supplemented this with cultivation, the ease of perceiving the Law of Fire could be imagined.

Especially for the people here; they all had a formidable bloodline power. Their own compatibilities with the Law of Fire were extremely high to begin with!

“Follow me, I shall bring you to the Timeworn Phoenix City Protector. He will guide you to the first stage of the Royal Family smelting trial.”

Lin Ming followed the Temple Spirit to the Temple of Protectors. Along the way, they passed by many red-clothed young men and women. If any one of these people were placed in the Sky Spill Continent, then they would be existences that Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin wouldn’t be able to compare with by far.

“These people all come from the Realm of the Gods?” Lin Ming asked.

“No….” The Temple Spirit shook its head. “Most of these people come from similar mortal worlds like the Sky Spill Continent. Only a small portion of them come from the Realm of the Gods.

"The Realm of the Gods is an incomparably broad land. But there are even more people within it. When someone decides to practice martial arts, their lifespan will become longer, and the number of descendants they leave behind will swell in number. After a long time, even the near unlimited resources of the Realm of the Gods would find it hard to support such a great number of people. At times, there will be some branch families of certain sects and clans that will pass through space cracks, entering into the lower mortal realm where they settle down. The Ancient Phoenix Clan within the Sky Spill Continent was in this situation."

As the Temple Spirit spoke, Lin Ming was suddenly enlightened. So that's how it was!

Humanity's ability to multiple was truly terrifying. If a martial artist lived for 10,000 years, they could have dozens or even hundreds of children. These children would have their own children, and then the rate of population would increase exponentially. Quickly, a sect's spiritual land would not be able to bear this. At that point, it would be a wise choice for a branch of that sect to settle down in the world of mortals.

"So, the Sky Spill Continent Ancient Phoenix Clan's Nuyan Family was also the same?" Lin Ming had never understood why various ancient ruins from the Realm of the Gods had appeared within the Sky Spill Continent. For instance, the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, Road of Emperor, Eternal Demon Abyss, or even the various array formations of the Demon God Imperial palace, all of them came from the Realm of the Gods.

"Yes! Once upon a time, the Sky Spill Continent also had a brilliant and storied past. Although it was not comparable to the Realm of the Gods, it still had its moments of magnificence…." As the Temple Spirit spoke to here, it seemed reluctant to keep talking. Lin Ming also didn't want to push the subject. He had a faint feeling that 100,000 years ago, a time at which the history of the Sky Spill Continent had been wiped out, it also had something to do with the fall from brilliance that the Temple Spirit had implied in its words.

Lin Ming had long thought something was strange. Although ancient texts could last thousands of years at most, the large sects should have methods to preserve their history.

For instance, specially crafted jade slips. It shouldn't have been possible for everything that happened 100,000 years ago to suddenly vanish.

'I wonder what the matter with the Eternal Demon Abyss is. There are obviously life forms from the Realm of the Gods that reside there. Above the Eternal Demon Abyss there are also the Road of Emperor, King's Cage, and the 12 Skysplit Towers; all of that should have been built by those existences within the Eternal Demon Abyss. But why did they do that and why had they retreated to the Eternal Demon Abyss and never left? Is this related to the fall from glory that happened 100,000 years ago?'

Lin Ming remembered that tens of thousands of years ago, there was a massive, beastly claw that emerged from the Eternal Demon Abyss, instantly killing 12 Emperor-level powerhouses. He also remembered that ancient great beast he had seen in the 1000-mile forbidden zone; its body had spanned for thousands of miles. And there was even that goddess in her tomb sleeping, unblemished and undisturbed for all those years. Without a doubt, these were not mysteries that should exist in the Sky Spill Continent or Holy Demon Continent.

What kind of secret was there in the Eternal Demon Abyss? Lin Ming felt that he had just glimpsed the very tip of the iceberg. Well, at least he now knew generally how the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm and Eternal Demon Abyss had come about.

"We're here. This is the Hall of Protectors. Trial Challenger, I shall wait for you here until you have completed the first stage of the trial or are eliminated. Perhaps you might even die…." The Temple Spirit finally stopped at a red-domed building that was hundreds of feet high. On the very top of the dome, there was a massive statue of a phoenix, its wings spread out in flight as if it were living creature trapped there in time.

"You may enter."

"Thank you, Sir Temple Spirit." Lin Ming took a deep breath and walked into the flame-hued Hall of Protectors. In the deserted corridors, his footsteps echoed loudly.

Chapter 720 – Ancient Phoenix Totem

Chapter 720 – Ancient Phoenix Totem

…

…

…

Within the Temple of Protectors, Li Ming saw several red-clothed martial artists milling around in the main hall. The majority of them were humans, but there were also some Fey and other races. They all had different surnames and origins, yet, they all shared a single common ground, and that was that they all had the bloodline of the Ancient Phoenix.

“Are you new?” As Lin Ming stepped in, a red-clothed martial artist walked up to greet him, speaking with the common language of the Realm of the Gods, “Where are you from?”

“Sky Spill Continent, Nuyan Family’s Nuyan Ming.” Lin Ming replied.

“Sky Spill Continent? So you’re also from the world of mortals. Me too! Hahaha, let me introduce myself, I am from the Yellowright Family, Yellowright Min.” The diminutive red-clothed martial artist smiled with a sense of warmth and camaraderie when he heard Lin Ming was also from a mortal world.

Lin Ming discovered that on Yellowright Min’s chest, there was a badge there with the word ‘Yellowright’ written on it, surrounded by burning flames.

Within the hall, everyone else had badges on their chest too, labeling and displaying their respective families and clans. But, near the center of the hall, there was a group of six young martial artists that seemed slightly different from the others.

They clustered into an isolated group, completely ignoring the other martial artists around them.

“Heh, those six fellows are from the Realm of the Gods.” Yellowright Min noticed where Lin Ming’s eyes were and he curled his lips in disgust. He said with a true essence sound transmission, “Those Realm of the Gods fellows all have an ingrained sense of superiority so they stay in their little clique and don’t bother conversing with the rest of us. They think that their status compared to ours is the same as nobles compared to commoners!”

Yellowright Min’s voice held an obvious hint of irony as if he viewed these six people with a great deal of disdain.

“Realm of the Gods?” Lin Ming’s eyes widened.

“Coming from the Realm of the Gods doesn’t mean all that much.” Yellowright Min shook his head. “This Timeworn Phoenix City is also located in the lower realms. In the Realm of the Gods, there are special Royal Family smelting trial sites. If they were truly the top talents of the Phoenix Clan, then there’s no way they would have come here!”

“Oh?” Lin Ming was startled, “So you’re saying that this Timeworn Phoenix City is not the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s best trial area? I heard that Timeworn Phoenix City’s signboard was personally written by the Third Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan?”

“Well, yes, that’s right, but that’s because the Third Patriarch also came from the lower realms and he completed his Royal Family smelting trial at Timeworn Phoenix City. The most outstanding heroic youths of our lower worlds of mortals aren’t necessarily much worse than those from the Realm of the Gods. Come, let me introduce you to the others.”

As Yellowright Min spoke, he led Lin Ming around to meet some of the other martial artists from the mortal world. “This is Man Ka, he’s from the Kobe Star, and this is Wu Yuan, he’s from the Sky Cicada Continent… ”

The few people that Yellowright Min introduced generally nodded coolly at Lin Ming. All of these individuals were the most favored children of heaven in their own worlds; it wasn’t strange for them to be prideful. Rather, it was Yellowright Min whose jovial nature was different from everyone else.

Lin Ming didn't mind. He secretly noted down everyone's age and cultivation. Nearly everyone here was under 25 years old, and they all had a cultivation around the Life Destruction realm. From each of them, Lin Ming could feel the same powerful energy and aura; anyone that could arrive here was not an ordinary elite of their generation!

At this time, a slightly aged voice echoed out in the temple, "Everyone, head to the Ancient Phoenix Totem training ground!"

"Ancient Phoenix Totem training ground?" Lin Ming was surprised. He glanced over at Yellowright Min."

"Hehe, It's finally time. You're quite lucky. Everyone else here hadn waited all day to enter the Ancient Phoenix Totem grounds and to choose their own training area to comprehend the Laws. You've made it just on time! This Ancient Phoenix Totem is Timeworn Phoenix City's treasure!"

As Yellowright Min mentioned the Ancient Phoenix Totem, his two eyes began to brightly shine. "These totems were left behind by some unrivaled powerhouses of the Phoenix Clan. Some of these totems were shaped in the primal chaos of the forming universe. These stone totems are called treasures that can touch upon the very source of the Great Dao. If you can thoroughly comprehend them, you can become someone within the entire Realm of the Gods with one of the deepest understanding of Laws!"

One could become an individual with the one of the deepest comprehensions of Laws within the Realm of the Gods just by meditating on these totems? Lin Ming was a bit surprised. That seemed too exaggerated to him. "What exactly are those primal forming chaos stone totems?"

Listening to Lin Ming's query, Yellowright Min revealed a look of deep longing. In a respectful tone, he slowly said, "In the legends, before the universe was conceived, all there was in existence was chaos; the three thousand boundless worlds and the Realm of the Gods hadn't yet formed. This is the so-called primal forming chaos. These stone totems are carved from the traces of source energy and principles during the time when the primal chaos was taking form. In Timeworn Phoenix City, there are three of these primal forming chaos stone totems! Each one contains a trace of the root of all Laws!"

Hearing Yellowright Min's explanation, Lin Ming was notably shocked. If this was true, then Yellowright Min's views from before weren't exaggerated at all.

"Would a primal chaos carved stone forged in the beginning of the universe really be left behind in the lower world of mortals? Wouldn't the major forces of the Realm of the Gods be envious? In Lin Ming's view, these sorts of stone totems should only appear in the core training areas of a Realm of the Gods' Holy Land.

Yellowright Min said, "These stone totems, although they are extremely precious, aren't up to the specialized standards of the Realm of the Gods. The primal chaos of the forming universe was endlessly broad with a limitless, and there was an unending amount of source energy; countless of these sorts of stone totems were shaped at that time. The three stone totems of Timeworn Phoenix City are only a square foot in size. As for those stone totems in the Realm of the Gods' Holy Lands, they are far, far larger, and the inherent mystical principles contained within are even more profound."

"I see…" Lin Ming said with an understanding nod, "Thank you Brother Yellowright."

"Hahaha, we martial artists of the lower realms must mutually support each other!"

As Yellowright Min and Lin Ming conversed, they finally made their way to the transmission array where the Ancient Phoenix Totem was.

This was the center of the entire Timeworn Phoenix City. Because of the limited resources and the massive amount of outstanding heroic elites, every round of meditation was only allowed to last for three days. The reason that Yellowright Min and the others had been waiting here was to be next in line.

Within the Ancient Phoenix Totem training grounds, a red-robed old man was already waiting there. As he saw all the young elites arrive, he said, “This is your first time coming to the Ancient Phoenix Totem training ground. Here, there are a total of 35 Ancient Phoenix totem stones. All of you have two hours to choose which totem stone you would like. In order to prevent conflict of choice, all of you will be judged on your attainments in Laws and Concepts, and the ones with the highest comprehension will have the first choice.”

“After you choose, everyone can enter their training area to meditate for three days. Three days later, no matter what you have perceived or what result you have, you must leave. Now, let me give you some choice advice. The primal forming chaos stone totems are excellent, but if you wish to perceive them it is simply impossible with your qualifications. Do not aim too high. Now, we shall start comparing comprehension of Concepts to decide the priority of choosing!”

Chapter 721 – Test of Laws

Chapter 721 – Test of Laws

…

…

…

When the red-robed man spoke about comparing comprehension of Concepts, all of the young elites' eyes present began to shine with a brilliant light. All of them were outstanding individuals of their generation and they all had absolute self-confidence in their understanding of Laws.

When such extraordinary youths gathered together, it was natural for them to wish to outdo each other, all of them hoping to have a chance to show off their superior abilities.

And this comparison of Concepts was exactly the best opportunity to do so.

“Haha, a competition of comparing our Concept of Fire? I have complete confidence in this!” Yellowright Min excitedly rubbed his palms together, as if he couldn't wait to start.

All of the young elites present seemed eager to start. The red-robed old man didn't bother with any more small talk; he drew out a red picture scroll from his spatial ring.

This picture scroll seemed to reveal an atmosphere that made one feel the vicissitudes of life. It was tied together with a simple red thread.

“That's the Ancient Phoenix Testament!”

“It truly is the Ancient Phoenix Testament! I've only ever heard about it in my clan's ancient texts, but today, I've finally seen the real thing!” A heroic elite's eyes shone. This

Ancient Phoenix Testament was left behind by a Patriarch from the Realm of the Gods' Phoenix Clan just before he underwent Nirvana. He had written several dozen of these pieces, but there shouldn't be more than two within Timeworn Phoenix City. Besides the totem stones, these were the next-most precious treasures!

Hwaa!

The red-robed old man unfurled the crimson picture scroll and a burning hot energy suddenly emanated outward. On the picture scroll, there was the image of a phoenix hidden within, twisting about as if it would escape the confines of the scroll at any moment.

"Who's first?"

"Me!"

"Me!"

"Me, me!"

Several young elites impatiently raised their hands, waving them about.

"You!" The red-robed old man casually pointed at Yellowright Min. Yellowright Min's face immediately filled with excitement. A chance to perceive the Ancient Phoenix Testament was very rare.

"Stand before the Ancient Phoenix Testament and comprehend the power of the Laws within. I shall judge your individual comprehension, compatibility degree, as well as your attainments in the Concept of Fire. The final outcome shall be decided by me. Now, start."

"Yes, sir!" Yellowright Min stepped forwards, his eyes rapidly widening as he stared steadily at the crimson picture scroll. After several breaths of time, it seemed as if he had fallen into a peculiar trance. Reflected in the pupils of his eyes, all sorts of enigmatic flaming lines began forming, smoldering with all kinds of profound principles.

Yellowright Min stood in front of the Ancient Phoenix Testament for 20-some breaths of time. Then, beside Yellowright Min, several weak orbs of light appeared. These tiny spots seemed very common, but Lin Ming could sense that they were made of the purest fire origin energy, an energy that approached the source of Fire Laws!

After ten more breaths of time, these pale orbs of light slowly converged into Yellowright Min's body before vanishing out of sight.

Yellowright Min shook, suddenly waking up from his stupor. Those brilliant reflections of fire in his eyes faded away, and he dripped with sweat as he gasped for breath in heaving gulps, his eyes filled with excitement.

"Too mysterious! Really too mysterious! If I could read this Ancient Phoenix Testament then I would definitely be able to understand the origin of all Fire Laws!

Yellowright Min's face was filled with happiness and longing. There wasn't just one Ancient Phoenix Testament. As long as his talent was high enough then he would have the chance to enter the Realm of the Gods' Phoenix Clan, and there he could perceive the other Ancient Phoenix Testaments. When that time came, his comprehension of the Concept of Fire would reach an astoundingly high degree.

"Five breaths of Law fusion. The tiny amount of fire-attribute source energy you absorbed is barely passable. Your result is second-level, C-grade," the red-robed Elder said without any expression.

Hearing the red-robed Elders evaluation, Yellowright Ming's burning heart suddenly cooled down with disappointment.

The tiny amount of fire-attribute source energy he had absorbed was just passable...

This evaluation really stung Yellowright Min's ego; he had been very proud of his strengths in the comprehension of the Concept of Fire. In fact, he had even surpassed the potential of an Emperor-level powerhouse and none of his peers had ever been able to catch up to him. Yet his evaluation here today had been classified as "just passable."

“Five breaths of Law fusion can only be considered subpar.” Among the other young elites, a young man with scales between his eyebrows muttered, obviously looking down at Yellowright Min’s results with disdain.

Yellowright Min’s face flushed. He was about to snap back when another man interrupted him, “Stop fighting. Here, results are all that matter. I’ll give it a go!”

The martial artist who had spoken was also from the lower realm of mortals. His name was Man Ka and he originated from the Kobe Star. Earlier, Yellowright Min had introduced him to Lin Ming.

Man Ka and Yellowright Min might have come from two different worlds, but as martial artists who came from the lower realms, they naturally banded together when faced with a common opponent.

Man Ka stood before the Ancient Phoenix Testament and opened his eyes as wide as he could. For four breaths of time, he seemed to enter into some strange trance. Then, after another 30 breaths of time, a very weak fire energy formed around him. It slowly converged into his body. Man Ka shook, then awakening from his stupor.

The red-robed man said, “Four breaths of meditation. With the small amount of fire source energy you absorbed, your comprehension of Laws is barely above average. Your result is second-level, B-grade.”

Another second-level evaluation…. Ma Ka frowned, obviously not satisfied with his result.

In the group from the Realm of the Gods, the man with red scales between his eyebrows faintly smiled. He said to a grinning, red-clothed young man beside him, “Huo Ping, why don’t you go up and try?”

“Haha, I didn’t want to go on stage and embarrass myself, but if Brother Long asks me to, then I should humbly accept this opportunity.”

The red-clothed young man sounded modest, but his face was fully confident. His wide smile wasn't able to hide the obvious disdain he felt for the others. As he casually stood in front of the Ancient Phoenix Testament, only three breaths of time passed before traces of fire lines and flaming clouds reflected in his pupils. Then, after another 30 breaths of time, all around the red-clothed youth, dozens of rice-sized orbs of luminescent red light appeared, flying into the red-clothed youth as if they were a swarm of birds.

The red-clothed youth awoke from his meditation and said a bit breathlessly, "That felt great!"

"Three breaths of meditation, the little power of the fire source energy you absorbed can be considered just satisfactory. You, have you looked upon the Ancient Phoenix Testaments before?" The red-robed old man calmly asked. His eyes were extremely sharp; he easily saw that this wasn't the red-clothed youth's first time reading the Ancient Phoenix Testament.

"Yes, Sir. I saw it once, just two years ago," the red-clothed youth confidently said. He originated from the Ancient Phoenix Clan within the Realm of the Gods; it wasn't strange for him to have had a chance to have viewed the Ancient Phoenix Testaments at some point.

The red-robed old man said, "If this was your first time witnessing the Ancient Phoenix Testament, then I would have just barely graded you at the third-level, C-grade. But now, you can only be considered at the second-level, A-grade!"

Hearing the red-robed old man's evaluation, all of young heroic elites from the lower realms, in particular Yellowright Min and Man Ka, had extremely ugly complexions. Just a casual youth from the Realm of the Gods had embarrassed them both.

The young heroic elites of the lower realms weren't convinced by this. They all came up one after another, and the result was that the majority of them were at the second-level, C-grade, with a small number of them making it through to the second-level, B-grade.

Such results were truly shocking. All of these young heroic elites present had been peerless youths of their own generations. Now, for them to have such a result, all of them experienced acute mental anguish!

“Brother Nuyan, your comprehension of the Concept of Fire should also be good! How about you go up and give it a try?” Yellowright Min try to encourage Lin Ming to step forward. He was counting on Lin Ming to obtain some magnificent result.

Lin Ming was also left a bit speechless. In the comprehension of Concepts and Laws, he had considered himself quite proficient. But that was only compared to the martial artists of the Sky Spill Continent. If he had to compare himself to these geniuses from the Ancient Phoenix Clan, especially in the Concept of Fire that they all specialized in, then he was completely unsure of himself.

He suspected that if he went up, the most he would obtain was a third-level C-grade result. Third-level B-grade didn’t seem likely for him.

‘Looks like I won’t win the chance to choose first.’ Lin Ming shook his head. He didn’t mind much. To each their own. What he received would be what he received, whether or not it was too extravagant.

“I’ll also try. I haven’t seen the Ancient Phoenix Testaments for a long time already; I wonder just what sort of result I’ll have.” After over 90% of the martial artists had finished, the youth with red scales between his eyebrows finally moved. He walked before the Ancient Phoenix Testament, casually standing there.

“Ugh, just seeing that man’s face disgusts me!” Yellowright Min said as he saw the youth’s confident expression. But he also understood that since that youth was able to become one of the leaders amongst that group of six from the Realm of the Gods, he naturally had areas where he excelled.

As the youth stood before the Ancient Phoenix Testament, his gaze suddenly focused. As he faced the Ancient Phoenix Testament, it was like he was facing a mortal enemy in a battle where life and death were on the line.

Hu!

Within the temple, a burst of wind suddenly appeared out of thin air. The scales between the young man's eyebrows suddenly shined with a brilliant red line. Then, images of fire began to reflect within his pupils.

"Two breaths of time?" The red-robed old man that managed this test finally began to show some emotion. Any young elite who could start fusing the power of Laws with just two breaths of time would be considered quite good, even within the Realm of the Gods' central Ancient Phoenix Clan.

The young man stood in front of the Ancient Phoenix Testament for a bit less than half an incense stick of time. Then, small bean-sized orbs of red light began to form, lighting up the temple as they wandered about like fireflies dancing in the night sky.

When Yellowright Min saw this, even he had to admit that the difference between him and this red-scaled man was too great. The source energy this man had managed to condense was several times or even dozens of times what he had accomplished!

After several breaths of time, these tiny lights rapidly flew into the red-scaled man's body. Then the man's body began to shimmer with a faint blood-red light. A moment later, he let out a light breath, but not exhausted on the ground, heaving in great breaths like Yellowright Min had been. Instead, he seemed refreshed, in a much more comfortable mood.

Seeing this, Yellowright Min could no longer remain angry. Compared to this red-scaled youth, his own performance that he had been so excited about was probably no different from a country bumpkin messing around. It was no wonder that he had been looked down on by others.

The disparity in origin was simply too difficult to make up!

The martial artists from the lower realms were left with bad tastes in their mouths. This red-scaled youth had obviously looked at the Ancient Phoenix Testaments multiple times before this. As for them, this was their first time gazing upon it. There was simply no way to compare; this was the disparity of resources.

“Two breaths of Law fusion, the moderate amount of flame source energy you absorbed is indeed satisfactory. Your result is first-level, B-grade.” The red-robed old man stroked his beard, smiling as he spoke.

First-level, B-grade?

All present couldn’t help but be convinced from this. Besides this red-scaled man, none of the other martial artists had achieved a first-level result. Without incident, this should be the best result.

“Now, for those who haven’t been tested yet, come up.” The red-robed old man glanced over the remaining martial artists who hadn’t yet come up for the test, among whom Lin Ming was included.

Chapter 722 – Perceiving the Source of Fire

Chapter 722 – Perceiving the Source of Fire

…

…

…

Because the red-scaled youth's performance was too dazzling, there was an awkward silence for a time afterwards. No one wanted to try right after.

"I'll give it a go too!" With a clear sound, a woman dressed in red stepped in front of the Ancient Phoenix Testament. She was also from the group of geniuses from the Realm of the Gods. She wasn't too beautiful, but she had a very dainty appearance. She serenely looked at the red-robed old man and said, "Realm of the God's Huo Clan, Huo Yu!"

"Okay. You may begin." The red-robed old man showed the Ancient Phoenix Testament to the woman dressed in red.

A sharp light shone in her eyes, and then an incomparably burning hot, crimson true essence suddenly erupted. In the next moment, flaming lines appeared in her pupils, a trace representation of the source of all fire principles.

Two breaths of time! She also took two breaths of time!

The successive Realm of the Gods martial artists had only taken two breaths of time to fuse with the fire-attribute Laws. None of the lower realm martial artists were exasperated by this though; the disparity between them was too obvious.

The woman dressed in red took several dozen breaths of time, and then, rice-sized grains of red light appeared before sinking into her body.

“Two breaths of time in meditation, a small amount of fire source energy absorbed. Your result is the first-level, C-grade!” The red-robed old man said with a satisfied expression. For two new trial challengers to have a first-level comprehension was already a very good result.

After two first-level results suddenly popped out from the Realm of the Gods group, the lower realm martial artists could only look at each other in blank dismay. For a long time, no one went on up. Going up now would only emphasize the great disparity between them. The pressure was just too great. If one couldn’t achieve an eye-catching result, then one couldn’t even hold their heads up anymore.

Those martial artists from the Realm of the Gods had already all gone up. They happily looked over at the martial artists from the lower realms; the pressure on those martial artists who still hadn’t gone to determine their talent was suddenly enormous

After several awkward breaths of time passed, Lin Ming moved towards the Ancient Phoenix Testament.

“Brother Nuyan, it’s not too good if you go up now; the pressure is too great....” Yellowright Min kindly reminded him. He didn’t know how well Lin Ming comprehended the Laws of Fire, but he likely wouldn’t be able to compare with those two monstrous geniuses from the Realm of the Gods.

“It doesn’t matter.” Lin Ming didn’t care if others made fun of him. His Concept of Fire wasn’t too impressive. Let alone his Concept of Fire, even his Concept of Space wasn’t comparable to the others. His advantage lay in his dual cultivation of law and body, and his foundation that was solid to the extreme.

As Lin Ming stepped forwards, everyone immediately looked at him.

“A boy from those lower realm dregs is coming up. Haha, if he has the courage to come up then he should have some skill. If he does well, he might reach the second-level, B-grade.”

“Maybe even second-level, A-grade. Although those lower realm martial artists are mostly trash, there are occasionally one or two that are passable. If he can reach the second-level, A-grade then that’s about the same as you.” A Realm of the Gods martial artist teased Huo Ping. Huo Ping had been the first martial artist from the Realm of the Gods to go up. His evaluation had been at the second-level, A-grade.”

“Humph, second-level, A-grade isn’t that hard to achieve either,” Huo Ping dismissively said. He didn’t like that others were comparing him to Lin Ming, a mere boy from the world of mortals.

Lin Ming ignored these conversations. Instead, he stood in front of the Ancient Phoenix Testament and reported his name. “Sky Spill Continent’s Nuyan Family, Nuyan Ming.”

“Mm, begin,” the red-robed old man said without expression as he showed the Ancient Phoenix Testament to Li Ming.

As Lin Ming looked straight at the images and words of the Ancient Phoenix Testament, he didn’t feel anything at the start. But, after looking at it more carefully, he only felt that it contained infinite mysteries. Those strange lines and letters that looked like dancing dragons and phoenixes seemed as if they contained the very source of the Great Dao, from when the universe began forming! The truths and principles contained within were far too profound; for a time, Lin Ming fell into a trance.

This sort of feeling was like his mind had been suddenly stuffed with a massive amount of information. It made his head ache and his consciousness blur.

Lin Ming bit down on his tongue and the battle spirit in his spiritual sea trembled. It was only then that Lin Ming was able to calm his mind.

One breath of time...two breaths of time...three breaths of time....

At the fourth breath of time, no images of the Fire Laws reflected yet in Lin Ming’s eyes. This caused Yellowright Ming to be nervous for Lin Ming. If he couldn’t show fusion with the Fire Laws at four breaths of time, then at most he would obtain a second-level, C-rank result. If he had this result at the very start, then it wouldn’t have been too shameful. But to have this result now, after those two Realm of the Gods geniuses had shown off, then others would simply laugh at him.

The Realm of the Gods' disciples grinned as they saw this, talking amongst themselves. Huo Ping had a smug expression as he said, "How mediocre. Although I didn't reach the first-level, a second-level, A-grade is still a degree of glory that these lower realm martial artists will never hope to achieve."

Lin Ming still remained immersed in perceiving the Laws of Fire.

Five breaths of time…

Six breaths of time…

…Six breaths of time?

Yellowright Min was shocked. Six breaths of time was certainly "breaking a record," but it was the record for being the worst. Out of everyone whom had gone up so far, no one had surpassed five breaths of time.

"Six breaths of time! What? Six breaths of time most likely means he doesn't have the qualifications to reach the second-level; he'll be at the third-level. How could such a person have crossed the king level trial qualifications?"

As a Realm of the Gods martial artist commented, even the red-robed man who was managing the test slightly frowned. He too suspected whether or not Lin Ming had the qualifications to past the king level smelting trial.

Was it possible that his bloodline was light but his combat strength was extraordinary?

Seven breaths….eight breaths…

No trace of flame principles yet appeared in Lin Ming's pupils.

All of the martial artists had strange expressions on their faces. Where did this fellow come from? This performance was just too disappointing! Did he come here to waste everyone's time?

Finally, at the tenth breath of time, small flickering lines finally reflected in Lin Ming's eyes. People thought that Lin Ming had finally fused with the Flame Laws, but what followed afterwards left everyone speechless.

That little trace of flame source principles hadn't even spread out when they had already hidden themselves again, vanishing without a trace.

"This..."

Even Yellowright Min couldn't continue watching such an embarrassing sight. To use to breaths of time to finally achieve fusion with the Fire Laws and still fail at the end! What a joke!

11 breaths of time...

12 breaths of time...

The tiny traces of fire source principles appeared again. But, just like the last time, these traces didn't even grow before they disappeared again, restoring Lin Ming's pupils to darkness.

"Good heavens! He failed again! This fellow's comprehension of the Concept of Fire is simply at a trivial level!" a Realm of the Gods martial artist impatiently exclaimed.

"Sir Protector, he's obviously wasting our time here. I have no idea how he got in, but his understandings into the Concept of Fire might as well be the same as a 13- or 14-year-old child," another Realm of the Gods martial artist said.

"If he continues being unable to fuse with the Fire Laws, do we just continue watching? The Ancient Phoenix Testaments are handwritten scriptures left behind by our Ancient

Phoenix Clan's Patriarchs before they died and ascended to Nirvana. Thus, their numbers are limited. Even a genius might not have a chance to perceive them. And yet currently it is currently being squandered on this fellow here. This is truly a waste!" a martial artist said in a gratingly harsh voice.

The red-robed old man's face became gloomy and he said in a low voice, "This old man is the director of the test here. Whether or not anyone has the qualifications to participate in the smelting trial, do you think that is something you can comment on? When a trial challenger is meditating on the source of Fire Laws, no one can fight, no one can cause a disturbance! Otherwise, any and all offenders shall be expelled from Timeworn Phoenix City!"

As the red-robed old man spoke, he released an invisible aura. As the pressure pushed down on that Realm of the Gods martial artist, his face paled and he suddenly dared not speak further.

The truth was that, even if they fiercely argued with each other, Lin Ming wouldn't have heard them anyways. At this time, he was deep in meditation. He had sealed off his five senses and wasn't even aware of the passing of time. With the support of the ethereal martial intent, he was completely focused on comprehending the source of Fire Laws.

Lin Ming's understanding of the Concept of Fire could truly only be considered at a very basic level; within the Ancient Phoenix Clan, it was equivalent to that of a 13- or 14-year-old child. He had to use a full ten breaths of time in order to touch upon these principles, producing a trace of it in his pupils.

However, just as these tiny traces formed, they had actually vanished. To Lin Ming's surprise, he discovered that these trace principles were actually being absorbed by the Heretical God Seed!

After these traces were absorbed, they sealed themselves on the surface of the Heretical God Seed, forming a small circle of totems.

Lin Ming had never imagined that this would occur. He continued to perceive the source Fire Laws from the Ancient Phoenix Testament. After several more breaths of time, he once more became faintly aware, producing yet another tiny trace of fire principles within his eyes. However, after another brief moment, these traces were again absorbed by the Heretical God Seed.

This repeated itself several times. More and more runes were engraved on the Heretical God Seed, becoming increasingly clear.

Lin Ming carefully observed these engraved flame seals on the Heretical God Seed and found that they were similar to those of the Ancient Phoenix Testament. However, there were some slight differences. The ones within him were even more mysterious and incomprehensible.

Lin Ming was shocked. He continued to perceive them—he faintly felt that within these capricious mysterious, the most enigmatic power of source Laws sealed there was slowly beginning to open their doors to him. A vast and vibrant breadth of the Great Dao seemed to blow out, the mysteries of the universe's essential Laws wrapped within its grasp!

20 breaths of time…

30 breaths of time…

As Lin Ming was in meditation, he felt that all the mysteries of the Ancient Phoenix Testament were being engraved onto the Heretical God Seed!

In half an incense stick of time, Lin Ming still didn't move. Now it wasn't just the Realm of the Gods martial artists who were becoming impatient, even the martial artists from the lower realms were also growing antsy. They had come to Timeworn Phoenix City in order to perceive the root of Flame Laws, not see someone meditate on the most elementary level of the Concept of Fire.

However, because of the red-robed old man, no one dared to speak. Yellowright Min looked at Lin Ming, his mouth crooked; just what was Lin Ming doing?

If he couldn't even fuse with the power of Laws within half an incense stick of time, then this was a once-in-a-lifetime performance that really defied the heavens. Just how had he managed to mingle himself into Timeworn Phoenix City?

While Yellowright Min was lost in thought, at this moment, Lin Ming's body suddenly shook. Within his eyes, complex lines of fire began reflecting within his pupils. These lines were constantly evolving and changing, as if they contained the endless riddles of the universe.

The less knowledgeable young martial artists didn't seem to think anything was strange, but as the red-robed test director saw this, his eyes lit up and he held his breath. "This is...."

The red-robed old man muttered to himself. But at this time, around Lin Ming, a crazy amount of flame source energy began rapidly condensing. A group of fist-sized red orbs of light grew at a noticeable pace, illuminating the dark hall with a luminous glow.

"What are these lights?" The martial artists present were all stunned.

"Could...could this be the power of fire source energy? Is this a joke..." Huo Ping was bewildered. The red-scaled youth from the Realm of the Gods had only been able to form a bean-sized amount of this energy, but Lin Ming had formed those the size of a fist! The energy contained within was dozens or even hundreds of times richer!

Chapter 723 – In Stark Opposition

Chapter 723 – In Stark Opposition

…

…

…

Although it was hard to believe, all of the martial artists present were masters of Fire Laws. How could they not recognize the power of fire source energy?

Those round balls of red light contained a staggering amount of pure fire source energy. Not just that, but they were still continuing to grow.

The red-scaled man from the Realm of the Gods sucked in a deep breath. Compared to these energy orbs that Lin Ming had conjured, his own had been like fireflies in a bright night's moonlight; they were simply incomparable.

“Where did this fellow come from? How could he have such a terrifying source energy compatibility?”

In studying the Ancient Phoenix Testament, the process was divided into two parts. The first was a martial artist’s perception and the degree they were able to perceive the Laws. The higher one’s perception was and the higher their attainments in fire-attribute Laws, then the speed of their fusion with these Laws would also be higher.

The second part was a martial artist’s compatibility with fire source energy. The easier it was for a martial artist to fuse with this source energy, then the more source energy they would absorb after meditating on the Ancient Phoenix Testament.

Lin Ming's current situation was that he had taken nearly half an incense stick of time to fuse with the Laws; this proved that his comprehension of the Concept of Fire was only at the most basic, elementary level. However, what was surprising was that after he fused with the Laws, the source energy he absorbed was over a 100 times that of the red-scaled man!

This gap left all of the Realm of the Gods martial artists dumbfounded, all of them unable to utter a word. No one had heard of such a strange and wonderful situation like this happening in the history of the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

At this moment, the last flame totem pattern finally etched itself onto the surface of the Heretical God Seed. Then, the entire pattern flashed with a bright light and all of the surrounding fist-sized source energies began flocking towards Lin Ming's body like a pack of phoenixes!

For a time, Lin Ming's entire body burned, emitting dazzling rays of golden light that stung the eyes of everyone present. They could hear the very source of the Great Dao crying out from within Lin Ming's body, sending out that vast and infinite aura, as if a phoenix itself was undergoing rebirth through Nirvana within his body!

As the red-robed old man saw this, he sucked in a deep breath. He looked at Lin Ming, all sorts of thoughts flashing by his eyes.

All of the other martial artists in the hall weren't sure just what to say, or even what had happened.

As Huo Ping saw all those incomparably precious red lights completely absorbed by Lin Ming, his heart heated with frustration. To take half a incense stick of time was the result of a 14 or 15 year old child in their clan. But his ability to absorb fire source energy had actually thrown off everyone here by countless miles.

For a martial artist, it was possible to use time to slowly make up for their degree of perceiving Laws through meditation. But a martial artist's compatibility to fire source energy was something they were born with; it wasn't easy to increase. The higher compatibility that a martial artist had, the easier it was for them to move the massive amount of fire origin energy present in the world. Their endurance, restorative ability, and striking force was a level above those martial artists with a lower compatibility.

For a time, Huo Ping's heart surged with jealousy and a deep abiding sense of helplessness. He gritted his teeth and said to the red-scaled youth, "Brother Long, this king level smelting trial is our first battle. If we already lose to others here, we won't even be able to apply to return to the Realm of the Gods for the second stage of the trial. If we continue to be pressured by this boy, then even if our result was originally good then it still becomes garbage."

For many cases, results were relative, not absolute. In their world, the only result that matter was becoming number one, because only the person at the apex would be noticed by others. For the person that obtained second place, even if their results were better than the one in first place, they would still be overshadowed. This was why some people thought that it was a sorrow to be born in the same generation as a peerless hero.

The red-scaled youth named Brother Long said, "We can't compare to him in compatibility, but on the other hand, his comprehension of the Concept of Fire is far inferior to ours. Both of us have our own respective strengths. As for who will win in the end, no one knows. I guess that this fellow's perception shouldn't be that great."

As Huo Ping listened to the red-scaled man speak, his eyes lit up. Ah, that was right! Because of that one blow from Lin Ming just now he had nearly forgotten how much more superior he was to begin with. Lin Ming's affinity with fire source energy was indeed extraordinary, but if his perception and comprehension of the Concept of Fire was horrible, then he would never be able to perceive higher level of abilities and skills, and all that compatibility would be wasted.

Thinking of this, the crestfallen Huo Ping gathered up all of his collapsed confidence again.

"Brother Long is right. His perception shouldn't be any good, otherwise his comprehension of the Concept of Fire wouldn't be poor to that degree. Moreover, in the king level smelting trial, one must meditate and perceive the 36 Ancient Phoenix totem stones; perception is too important for this. We have the advantage in this aspect. This fellow is likely a simple-minded boy with a great body and nothing else; he certainly shouldn't be able to perceive any sort of pattern. Someone with such a monstrous talent for compatibility with fire source energy having such poor perception is truly a waste!" Huo Ping said, incensed. If only that fellow could hand over that monstrous compatibility to him then life would be great.

"Our talents have already been tested. We should be choosing our Ancient Phoenix totem stones soon. Huo Ping, with my understanding of you, it would be a good decision if you chose the Profound Gold Flame Totem left behind by the Twelfth Patriarch." The red-scaled youth began to remind the young elites from the Realm of the Gods with true essence sound transmissions. The red-scaled youth had a very good understanding of the totem stones in Timeworn Phoenix City.

"Alright Brother Long, I'll listen to you," Huo Ping happily said. Everyone would only have two hours to choose which Ancient Phoenix Totem they wanted. Choosing the best totem stone for oneself in a limited timespan wasn't easy; it was much better with guidance from someone.

"You are called Nuyan Ming, correct?" The red-robed man had a faint smile hanging on his face as he looked at Lin Ming.

"Yes, Sir." Lin Ming cupped his fists together, replying in a respectful yet pleasant manner.

"Your compatibility with source energy is good. But. It's just a pity that your comprehension of Fire Laws are lacking. This is the first time that I've seen a situation like this so it's not possible for me to give you an accurate evaluation. For now, I'll temporarily judge you as first-level, A-grade." As the red-robed old man slowly drawled out his words, the red-scaled youth slightly frowned.

A first-level, A-grade evaluation meant that Lin Ming would have the first choice. Of the 36 Ancient Phoenix Totem Stones of Timeworn Phoenix City, there were several choices that were obviously better than the others. If Lin Ming chose the same one as him then he would have no choice but to give it to Lin Ming.

"Thank you, Sir." Lin Ming could feel the goodwill from the red-robed old man's words. He had disregarded his elementary comprehension of Laws and had even evaluated him at the first-level, A-grade, giving him first choice.

"Nuyan Ming, your situation is certainly rare in my Ancient Phoenix Clan. I shall give you some advice. Perception and comprehension of Laws are often more important than your compatibility with source energy. You must not be complacent just because of some advantages you have. Within the Realm of the Gods, where the main clan is, there are those who have a perfect Phoenix Clan bloodline, and there are many monstrous youths that have a compatibility and perception that far outstrip you! Since your perception is poor you must practice and perceive the Laws through meditation every day; do not waste your compatibility with source energy! As the saying goes, a lack of talent can be made up with hard work and effort. Make sure that you try your hardest."

As the red-robed old man slowly spoke, all of the other martial artists in the hall grew jealous. The red-robed old man had clearly taken a liking towards this Lin Ming otherwise he would never have given such useful advice. The advantages were obvious in obtaining the recognition of a senior from Timeworn Phoenix City.

"Yes, Sir, this junior understands." Lin Ming deeply bowed to show his thanks.

The red-robed old man nodded with satisfaction. "I should also mention that if you can catch up in the aspect of comprehension of Laws, after you reach the Divine Sea realm, then I can recommend you to go to the Realm of the Gods to complete the second stage of your trial. Of course, the basis of this is that you can obtain the number one spot in the first stage of this trial."

As the red-robed old man's voice fell, everyone was shocked silly!

As long as he could obtain the number one spot in the first stage of this smelting trial, then he could go to the Realm of the Gods to attempt the second stage!

The king level smelting trial grounds of the Realm of the Gods was where many outstanding young elites of the Ancient Phoenix Clan wished to go, but many didn't have the qualifications to do so! As for the Ancient Phoenix Clan martial artists of the lower realms, obtaining these qualifications was simply wishful thinking!

Now, Lin Ming actually had this chance! How could they not be jealous!

Many martial artists couldn't help but glance at the red-scaled youth from the Realm of the Gods. In order for Lin Ming to obtain the top spot, he would have to surpass that youth!

Lin Ming's compatibility was indeed high, but that red-scaled youth's perception was abnormal. This was a battle of compatibility versus perception. They stood in stark opposition to each other!

The red-scaled youth looked intensely at Lin Ming. He had thought that he would easily stroll through the smelting trial of Timeworn Phoenix City, but he didn't imagine that events would rapidly devolve to this degree. The red-robed old man's words were obviously spoken to stir up some conflict. When astounding talents went all out to defeat the other, they would be able to bring out their maximum potential through competition, breaking through their own limits.

This battle was one he must win. Not only was this a matter of honor and face, but it was also because he presented the true Phoenix Clan from the Realm of the Gods.

The red-scaled youth's expression didn't change. He sent a true essence sound transmission to Huo Ping: "I must win first place in this smelting trial. This is not related to glory. If I lose, then I shall be relegated to a much more minor position in the family. You must help me as much as you can."

The red-scaled youth also came from the Huo Clan within the Realm of the Gods. His name was Huo Wenlong. The great families of the Realm of the Gods placed great importance on tradition and glory; all of them had a natural sense of superiority deeply ingrained within their bones. To them, a heroic young elite from a Family Clan within the Realm of the Gods had no choice but to become number one.

If Huo Wenlong was used as a stepping stone by Lin Ming this time, then he would lose all sense of glory and pride. Moreover, Huo Wenlong had originally lost the qualifications to attend the king level smelting trial in the Realm of the Gods to begin with, and because of that his heart had been turbulent. He had steeled himself to make a big show here to show his Family Clan just how talented he was in order to try returning to the Realm of the Gods for the next stage of the smelting trial. But, if he lost here, then that dream would vanish.

“Of course. Brother Long, Seventh Sister and I will help you as much as we can.” Huo Ping immediately displayed his utter loyalty. He couldn’t really be regarded as any decent talent within the Realm of the Gods’ Huo Clan. If nothing happened, then he would be assigned by the clan to go out to the middle of nowhere and manage a branch business of arranging training resources. If he could be on good terms with Huo Wenlong, then this would be very helpful to him in the future.

“Well done. The test has ended here. You can all go to choose your own Ancient Phoenix Totem Stone Now. You all have two hours to choose. Two hours from now, all of you must show which choice you’ve made to me.” The red-robed old man spoke before turning around, and leading everyone deeper into the temple.

Chapter 724 – Burning Heaven Totem Stone

Chapter 724 – Burning Heaven Totem Stone

…

…

…

There was a great deal of skill involved in choosing an Ancient Phoenix Totem. If one didn’t roughly understand the various 36 Ancient Phoenix Totem Stones, then choosing one within two hours wouldn’t be easy, especially for those whose choices were of a lower priority.

The 36 Ancient Phoenix Totem Stones were either precious artifacts left behind by peerless powerhouses of the Ancient Phoenix Clan or they had been forged in the primal creation chaos of the universe. Either way, they were incomparably precious treasures. Still, if one had to compare them, each one had their own advantages and disadvantages.

Even though some had been created by the peerless powerhouses of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, there were ones made by Patriarchs and ones made by Elders; of course, there were differences between them. Moreover, even if they had been created by the same peerless powerhouses, the Ancient Phoenix Totem Stones each of them left behind had still been divided into ordinary works and superior works; there was no defined standard.

The red-robed old man led the group to walk down for a quarter hour. Suddenly, in front of them, a great open corridor appeared. This corridor was 300 feet wide, and wide enough to fit 10 carriages side by side, still leaving some space.

On both sides of this corridor there were red metal doors. These metal doors were 200 feet high and 100 feet wide, engraved with a variety of images. There were immortal Phoenixes, three-legged Golden Crows, rising suns, and crimson-colored eyes.

The red-robed old man said, “The area where we now are is called the Four Corridors of Twisting Flame. As the name suggests, there is a total of four levels. From the inside to outside, the mysteries and Laws contained within the totem stones become much simpler.

“At the very center is the Chaos Corridor. The Chaos Corridor has three chambers, each with a totem stone within. These totem stones were formed at the very beginning of the universe, when all that existed was pure chaos. Thus, these totem stones have a trace of the chaos source energy left over from the creation of the universe; one could consider these objects to be touching upon the very root of the Great Dao. If you can completely understand them then you may become one of people with the deepest comprehension of the Laws, within the entire Realm of the Gods! However… this old man shall be honest with all of you. With your current realm, going into those three chambers won’t have much of an effect on you. Even if your perception is high, you can give up on obtaining any benefits there; your current boundary is simply far too lacking. Let alone you, even those trial challengers from the second stage would have trouble perceiving the mysteries within them.

“Outside the Chaos Corridor is the Sky Corridor. The Sky Corridor has three chambers, each one containing an Ancient Phoenix Totem Stone. These three totem stones have all been left behind by previous Patriarchs of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Moreover, they are among their greatest works. In Timeworn Phoenix City, their value is only inferior to the Chaos Totem Stones.

“Afterwards, outside the Sky Corridor is the Earth Corridor. It has a total of ten chambers, and the totem stones there have also been left behind by precious Patriarchs, the only difference being that they are inferior to the previously mentioned top works.

“And the outermost corridor is called the Mortal Corridor. There is a total of 20 chambers there. The totem stones there have all been created by previous Elders of the Ancient

Phoenix Clan. Moreover, the best of these works are not much worse than those left behind by the previous Patriarchs.”

As the red-robed Elder introduced the stone totems to the martial artists, their faces were filled with regret intertwined with longing. Many of them looked at Lin Ming and Huo Wenlong, their eyes filled with envy.

The two of them would undoubtedly choose two of the three chambers in the Sky Corridor. As for the rest, the stronger ones would go to the Earth Corridor, and the remaining ones would have to go to the Mortal Corridor.

In the Mortal Corridor were the works left behind by the countless Elders of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. In the Realm of the Gods, there was a single Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan at one time. Moreover, because their lives were extremely long, all of the previous Patriarchs added together were probably only a few hundred. However, Elders were different. In every new generation of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, there were possibly dozens or even hundreds of Elders. Even if the totem stones they crafted here were their greatest works, those still wouldn’t be able to compare with a Patriarch’s.

As the red-robed Elder saw the mixed emotions of the young elites there, he coldly said, “Those who walk the road of martial arts should aim high, but they shouldn’t bite off more than they can chew! Every Great Elder of my Ancient Phoenix Clan is a heaven-shaking existence within the Realm of the Gods. Every totem stone they leave behind, even though it may be inferior to that of a Patriarch’s, is more than enough for you to meditate upon. If you can thoroughly enlighten yourself with them, then you will reach a comprehension of Laws equal to a previous Elder! Isn’t that enough for you!?” the red-robed Elder asked in a chilly voice.

However, all of the martial artists present were thinking otherwise. They only had three days to meditate on these totem stones; just how much could they comprehend in that period of time?

If the Ancient Phoenix Totem Stones would be compared to gold ore while they were the gold diggers, then the amount of gold they could mine in three days would obviously be larger if it were from a bountiful gold mine rather than a barren one.

“Nuyan Ming, you choose first!” The red-robed Elder pointed at Lin Ming. “You must decide within two hours’ time.”

“Yes, Sir!” Lin Ming replied. Without further ado, he skipped past the Mortal and Earth Corridors, directly entering the Sky Corridor.

Seeing this, all the martial artists there were filled with envy. Although Huo Wenlong appeared calm, the truth was that he was feeling particularly nervous.

The Heaven Corridor had three totem stones, and these totem stones were also divided into those better ones and worse ones. Among them, there was one called the Burning Heaven Totem Stone. It had been left behind by the Ninth Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. His nickname was Burning Heaven, and he had been one of the top 10 powerhouses throughout all of the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s history. To take on such a nickname, his power could easily be imagined. And what was even rarer was that the Laws inherent to that totem stone were extremely suitable for Huo Wenlong. He had long desired to choose this totem stone, but if Lin Ming chosen it first, then Huo Wenlong would suffer a great loss.

Under everyone’s gazes Lin Ming stepped into the Sky Corridor. The halls of Sky Corridor were 200 feet wide, three metal doors lined up on a wall. The first door had the image of a Phoenix Nirvana engraved onto it, along with two words – Crimson Divine. The second metal door had the engraved image of a Phoenix resting on a Parasol Tree, as well as two words – Sacred Flame, and the third door had the engraved image of a Phoenix flying through burning skies along with two words – Burning Heaven.

Lin Ming was startled just by the images carved upon these metal doors. These engravings, each had come from the hands of a peerless powerhouse. Otherwise, they wouldn’t emit the energy of such formidable Laws.

Lin Ming decided to start with the Crimson Divine Totem Stone. He pushed open the metal door, entering the chamber. Behind the door was a square space, 200 feet in width and in length. There was nothing except for a 30-foot-high altar in the very center of the chamber. On top of this altar was a carved stone totem the size of a square foot. There were many complex engravings on this plain gray stone. Looking upon it for the first time, Lin Ming could feel a faint force field covering it, similar to the Asura force field. This force field and the totem stone both contained traces of lines and images combined in a perfect manner; it was immeasurably mystical.

"This Senior Crimson Divine was definitely a powerhouse with a force field. He fused his Fire Laws with his force field and carved them into this totem stone. If I can thoroughly comprehend it then it will be of great help to me, especially since I have a force field. And more than one at that."

Lin Ming looked at this totem stone for two incense sticks' worth of time before reluctantly leaving the Crimson Divine chamber. He only had two hours; he couldn't stay in this chamber for too long.

The second chamber was the Sacred Flame Totem Stone. It was equally mystical, but it lacked the force field aspect. For this alone it was less suitable for Lin Ming than the Crimson Divine Totem Stone in the first room. After just an incense stick's worth of time he left this chamber to enter the third one. This was the chamber with the Burning Heaven Totem Stone.

This chamber was also 200 square feet, and the altar in the center was similar. However, the totem stone on this altar was a deep red, and on it there seemed to be hundreds upon hundreds of small flames intertwining with each other. It looked quite ordinary at first, but after staring at it for a while, Lin Ming could see that these small flames were moving. Each and every one of these flames contained a different Concept. As the several hundred flames gathered together, they became burning skies that could seemingly scorch away the endless worlds!

“What a powerful aura…” Lin Ming’s eyebrows shot up. He could feel that the aura contained within this totem stone faintly surpassed the last two.

“Perhaps this totem stone is the most valuable.” Lin Ming pondered for a moment, thinking about whether he wanted to choose the Crimson Divine Totem Stone or the Burning Heaven Totem Stone.

At this time, within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, Demonshine’s drawling voice sounded out, “Lin Ming, I don’t understand the Fire Laws within this totem stone, but this Saint knows the name of Burning Heaven. He is a peak character even in the Realm of the Gods, someone who far surpassed the Demon Emperor! As for those other two people, this Saint has never heard of them.”

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment. “That sounds right, but… choosing a totem stone doesn’t depend on just how strong the person who engraved it was, but whether the contents of that totem stone suit the individual…”

Lin Ming meditated on this totem stone for half an hour. Then, at that moment, he suddenly felt a faint throbbing feeling in the Heretical God Seed; it seemed as if the engravings on the Heretical God Seed seemed to grow.

“Mm?” Lin Ming was surprised. It was clear that the Heretical God Seed had an even higher fusion compatibility with this Burning Heaven Totem Stone!

The Heretical God Force was a cultivation method created by an ancient Evil God. A Supreme Elder from the Realm of the Gods had stumbled upon a massive lucky chance within the ancient ruins of this Evil God, thus obtaining the cultivation method manual. Afterwards, he had died before having enough time to thoroughly perceive it. From that point on, only Lin Ming was aware of the Heretical God Force.

As for who that Evil God was, Li Ming had no idea. But what he was sure about was that the Evil God was absolutely far more formidable than this Burning Heaven Senior. It was likely that the Evil God was an existence that stood at the highest peak of martial artists, a ‘True God’.

With such a person, the cultivation methods left behind likely approached the very source of all Laws to a near infinite degree. Since the Heaven Burning Stone Totem was able to affect the Heretical God Seed, that proved that the Heaven Burning Stone Totem approached the root of the Great Dao much more than the other two totem stones.

Compared to Lin Ming’s own judgment, he was by far more convinced due to the Heretical God Seed. Not to mention, perceiving and understanding the process of how the Fire Laws and force field combined within the Crimson Divine Totem Stone was a very long process. It was by no means something done in a single step. He would have to meditate upon it for at least ten years, or perhaps even dozens of years to see any effect.

“I’ll choose that one then!”

Lin Ming made a preliminary decision. He estimated the time and found that he still had a bit more than an hour’s worth of time.

If it had taken him nearly an hour to look through three totem stones, then the others would have a much harder time, especially those martial artists who had to choose a totem stone from the Mortal Corridor. To find a suitable match among 20 totem stones, within two hours, would not be easy.

If their luck was bad, then it was likely they would regret the choice they made.

“I still have an hour, there’s no need to hurry. Since there’s no need to go to the Earth Corridor, I should go to the Chaos Corridor to have a look at what these totem stones forged in the primal forming chaos are like. I wonder if there’s anything special about the traces of source energy left within…”

As Lin Ming thought this, he headed towards the Chaos Corridor.

Chapter 725 – Chaos Stone

Chapter 725 – Chaos Stone

…

…

…

The Chaos Corridor was at the very center of all four corridors. It was also the narrowest and the smallest of the four corridors and was only 150 feet wide.

This corridor had three chambers. The doors of this chamber weren't made from red metal but rather rocks with an extremely ancient appearance.

These rocks didn't have any engravings on them but they emitted a primal breath that secretly startled Lin Ming.

"These should be ancient rocks formed at the very beginning of the universe. I wonder just how many countless years they've existed for."

Lin Ming muttered to himself as he opened the stone door. A 100 square foot room presented itself in front of Lin Ming. This entire chamber was covered with a light layer of black fog. As one looked deeper, one could see that this fog was actually somewhat similar to the black fog in the Eternal Demon Abyss; it was also formed from an incomparably rich accumulation of energy. However, this Chaos Chamber's black fog seemed to lack any sort of elemental attribute energy. Instead, it could be considered as 'void'.

In the center of the faint fog, there was an altar. This altar was made of black stone, and a foot long square stone was embedded right in its center. The traces of lines on this stone didn't seem as delicate and exquisite as Lin Ming had imagined. Instead, it looked to be very rough. The textures were varied; some were deep, some were shallow, and there were even some areas that were broken off.

As Lin Ming continued to look on but he didn’t see anything special about this stone. It was apparent that the traces of source energy left within had already surpassed the scope of Lin Ming’s understanding.

Legends said that during the forming of the universe, there was nothing but chaos origin energy. The trace lines on the chaos stone reflected the evolutionary process of the universe’s source energy as it gradually transformed itself. This sort of chaos energy was also referred to as grandmist energy. Primeval entropy was chaos in itself.

Afterwards, this grandmist energy evolved, only then becoming the elemental energies of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, and all others. Thus, grandmist energy was considered the source of all energy.

As for martial artists, in the end, what they cultivated was energy. Whether it was body transformation, true essence, or demon essence, all of them were just different manifestations of energy.

But in perceiving various Laws and Concepts through meditation, that was understanding the root rules for utilizing these different energies. Higher level combat skills such as force fields, will attacks, and even soul attacks, were all different forms and applications of energy. If one could thoroughly understand the evolutionary rules of grandmist energy, then they could become aware of the very source of the Great Dao, thus becoming an existence within the Realm of the Gods with one of the deepest comprehension of Laws and Concepts.

“Lin Ming, this thing isn’t something that the average person can understand. Not to mention that this Saint is just a wisp of a soul, but even if this Saint’s complete soul was here, or even if this Saint’s complete body was here, I would still find this thing incomprehensible.”

Demonshine rarely admitted his own weaknesses. In truth, as a demon familiar, his perception was never that great to begin with.

However, Lin Ming didn't seem to hear Demonshine's words. He sat there in mediation, gazing upon the traces left behind on this chaos stone from the forming universe. For a long time, he sat there without uttering a single word.

"How is it?" Demonshine asked before immediately shutting up. He didn't know if Lin Ming had managed to comprehend anything.

Within Lin Ming's boundary, wanting to comprehend the source Laws from this chaos stone were near zero. However, miracles did happen.

Lin Ming meditated for an entire incense stick worth of time. Finally, he closed his eyes and slowly said, "I am familiar with these lines. It feels like I've seen them somewhere before."

"Mm? That's impossible…"

"I really have seen it, it's just that I can't remember…" Lin Ming's first thoughts were of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, he had encountered a variety of chaotic scenarios and had seen many things. But, as he thought about it, nothing reminded him of this.

Just where had he seen this before?

"Lin Ming, then how will you choose? Will you choose this chaos stone or the Burning Heaven Totem Stone?" Demonshine asked.

"I will choose the Burning Heaven Totem Stone." Lin Ming decided to give up on the chaos stone. The Laws and principles contained within the chaos stone were simply far too mystical for the current him. Even if there was a familiar feeling of déjà vu from the chaos stone, it wasn't enough for him to grasp any chance of successfully perceiving it. If that was the case, then it was better for him to go with the Burning Heaven Totem Stone. With the support of the Heretical God Seed, perceiving the Burning Heaven Totem Stone should be much more beneficial.”

Thinking like this, Lin Ming left the hall of corridors.

“You’ve chosen?” The red-robed Elder asked, “You still have half an hour. If you haven’t decided yet then you may continue looking.”

“Reporting to Senior, this junior has already chosen…” Lin Ming bowed. These words caused Huo Wenlong’s heart to tighten. The young red dressed woman next to him, Huo Yu, was also tense.

Besides Lin Ming, these two people had the best results from the test. Huo Welong’s comprehension of Laws was evaluated at the first-level B-grade, and Huo Yu was evaluated as a first-level C-grade.

Huo Wenlong was aiming for the Burning Heaven Totem Stone. Of the three totem stones in the Sky Corridor, it was the most valuable one. As for Huo Yu, she decided to choose the Crimson Divine Totem Stone. Its preciousness was only inferior to that of the Burning Heaven Totem Stone. Not just that, but the force field fused within it was very important for her. Huo Yu also had a kind of force field so this Crimson Divine Totem Stone would be very suitable for her. As long as Lin Ming didn’t choose the Crimson Totem Stone then Huo Wenlong definitely wouldn’t choose it either. This was because even if Huo Wenlong’s talent was higher, he didn’t have force field.

“Mm, what’s your choice?” The red-robed Elder asked.

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He slowly and clearly said, “The Burning Heaven Totem Stone!”

As Lin Ming spoke, Huo Yu let out a sigh of relief. As for Huo Wenlong, his body stiffened and his complexion became extremely ugly.

The Burning Heaven Totem Stone! That choice just happened to collide with Huo Wenlong's!

Damn!

Huo Wenlong grit his teeth. In truth, he had already been expecting this. The Burning Heaven Totem Stone was the most valuable of the three totem stones in the Sky Corridor. Lin Ming had the highest chances of choosing that one.

However, expectations were different from reality. With the facts laid right in front of him, he felt a bit depressed. To not be able to choose the Burning Heaven Totem Stone now would greatly impact him.

"Mm." The red-robed Elder nodded. Lin Ming had made a good choice. The Burning Heaven Totem Stone was the most valuable of the three totem stones in the Sky Corridor, and even when compared to the top totem stones within the Ancient Phoenix Clan smelting trial sites in the Realm of the Gods, it wasn't too far off.

The red-robed Elder recorded Lin Ming's choice onto a jade slip and said, "Onto the next person. Huo Wenlong, it's your turn to choose."

"I understand." Huo Wenlong began walking forwards. Although he seemed calm on the surface, his heart was pained as if his own mother had died.

After a little less than an hour of time, Huo Wenlong came out and said, "I choose the Sacred Flame Totem Stone."

The Sacred Flame Totem Stone was slightly worse than the Crimson Divine Totem Stone. However, since Huo Wenlong didn't possess a force field ability, the Crimson Divine Totem Stone wasn't well suited for him, thus he could only make this choice.

Huo Yu let out a light sigh of relief. She quickly power walked towards the Sky Corridor as if she were afraid that someone to steal away her Crimson Divine Totem Stone.

After an incense stick of time, Huo Yu came out. “Sir, I choose the Crimson Divine Totem Stone.”

After Huo Yu, Huo Ping and the rest all chose their own totem stones from the Earth Corridor. As for the martial artists of the lower mortal realms, most of them had to choose from the Mortal Corridor.

This was a troublesome decision for them. To choose an appropriate totem stone from over 20 choices, was not a simple matter at all. Many people didn’t have the chance to carefully consider their choice, thus there were some that chose inappropriate ones.

“Alright. Everyone may go close up in training now. You have three days of time. Three days from now, no matter how much you have perceived you must stop. Afterwards, I will naturally assess your results. Those who pass will obtain another chance to enlighten themselves. As for everyone else, they have failed the trial!

In the king level smelting trial, defeat didn’t mean you would die. Rather, you would simply be eliminated from the first stage, completely losing any chance of advancing to the second stage of the king level smelting trial.

After the smelting trial began, Lin Ming, Huo Wenlong, and Huo Yu all went towards the Sky Corridor. After a moment of silence, Huo Wenlong walked into the Sacred Flame training chamber without another word, while Lin Ming entered the Burning Heaven training chamber.

These three days would be the key to success or failure.

Lin Ming had already seen the lines on the Burning Heaven Totem Stone. They were like hundreds of tiny flames, none of them the same, but all of them contained deep and profound mysteries.

Lin Ming looked carefully and discovered that when any two random flames combined together, there would be a change. If three flames joined together, there would be another change. Four... five... six, the more flames that gathered, the more changes there were and every flame also had a different change. If several hundred flames gathered together then the possibilities were endless.

“Patriarch Burning Heaven is truly worthy of a being called one of the 10 greatest powerhouses of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. I only have three days to look at this totem stone, but thoroughly perceiving it in this time period is simply impossible. I shouldn’t bite off more than I can chew. I’ll choose the smallest flame line and try to comprehend the simple changes there first.”

As Lin Ming thought this, he entered into the ethereal martial intent, completely immersing himself into gaining insights.

In this state of fascination, the small flame seemed to turn into a fiery spear. As the spear swayed to the beat of the flames, the chilling spear point seemed to launch wave after wave of offensive attacks.

Unconsciously, the subtle totem engravings on Lin Ming’s Heretical God Seed began to change, becoming increasingly clear and profound.

After entering into the ethereal martial intent, Lin Ming wasn’t able to sense the passage of time. When the totem engravings on the Heretical God Seed seemed to enter into a new stage, the metal door to Lin Ming’s training chamber suddenly burst open.

A stern voice sounded out, “Time is up. Everyone must exit now.

Hu -!

Lin Ming had been awakened from his meditative state, and the incomplete enlightenment had also been interrupted.

“Three days already?”

Lin Ming was surprised. He felt as if even one hour hadn’t passed.

What a pity! It would have been perfect if he had a few more days. As Lin Ming was thinking, he found that totem engravings on the Heretical God Seed had turned into a circle with a faint flow of light spinning around it. It was clearly an improvement over the previous totem image.

"With these three days along with having gazed upon the Ancient Phoenix Testament, my comprehension of fire-attribute Laws has been considerably enhanced. I wonder just what degree my Concept of Fire has reached now..."

Lin Ming very much wished to find someone skilled in the Concept of Fire to compete with. At this moment, a voice sounded out once more.

"Everyone, meet outside the hall of corridors!"

As Lin Ming recalled what was happening as he walked towards the main hall. Outside, he could see that many people were gathering, expressions of confusion on their faces as if they had awoken from a drunken stupor. They all had their eyebrows knitted together, apparently trying to estimate the harvests they had made.

The red-robed Elder from before was already waiting here. He said, "You all have ten days to go back and digest your harvests so far. Afterwards, you will gather back here. I will continue with the test. Those who do not pass will be eliminated!"

Chapter 726 – God Transforming Mirror

Chapter 726 – God Transforming Mirror

…

…

…

With the help of a guide, Lin Ming arrived at the assigned dwelling.

“Sir Nuyan, this is your basic equipment.” The guide passed Lin Ming a spatial ring.

As Lin Ming sunk his consciousness within, he saw a simple 10-foot-long wooden case, a set of red clothes, and red boots.

This wooden case was…

Lin Ming’s eyes brightened. He had been using a spear for so many years that he didn’t even need to open the box to tell that there was a spear within this case!

It was purely intuition.

Lin Ming enthusiastically opened the case and a long fiery-red spear appeared under Lin Ming’s eyes. The spear edge was a foot long and it shone brightly, with a chilling cold. The spear shaft was made from an unknown metal; it was exceedingly tough, yet flexible at the same time.

All sorts of runes and lines were engraved on the barrel of the spear. These patterns undoubtedly contained the power of Fire Laws.

This was… a medium-grade heaven-step treasure?

Or was this a high-grade heaven-step treasure?

Lin Ming's eyes shone. He had been using a heaven-step white spear acquired from a High Lord of Skysplit Tower; he didn't even know what its name was. Beside its toughness, there was no benefit to wielding that white spear. It wasn't like the Purple Comet Spear, able to increase the power of his thunderfire abilities. It was extremely inconvenient for him.

But now, this red spear in front of him was obviously useful for enhancing the power of fire. Moreover, it was a treasure ranked even higher!

"What rank is this treasure?" Lin Ming asked.

Up until now he only had a few rare encounters with anything above low-grade heaven-step treasures, so he didn't have much of an understanding toward this.

The guide said, "Sir, this is a medium-grade heaven-step treasure. But in mere terms of toughness, it's on equal standing with a high-grade heaven-step treasure. It is a standard service weapon that my Timeworn Phoenix City issues to new talents. If you don't use the spear, then you may apply for a replacement weapon."

Within the Ancient Phoenix Clan, because there were many people who rode Vermillion Birds in battle, long pole-type weapons were the most commonly used. This was different from the inheritance of Divine Phoenix Island. When Lin Ming was going through the qualification test for the king-level smelting trial, many of the phantom matches was facing were also using spears.

"This spear is actually only a standard service weapon..."

Lin Ming was speechless. This was a spear that every trial challenger who was participating in the king-level smelting trial would receive. It seemed that within the Realm of the Gods, heaven-step treasures were only considered common garbage.

This was also reasonable. Within the Sky Spill Continent, even a Life Destruction martial artist like Xuan Wuji was able to acquire a heaven-step treasure, much less a Divine Sea master. There was no need to even mention the Realm of the Gods. Here, powerhouses were most likely using Saint artifacts, or even higher quality weapons.

Lin Ming took the red spear in his hand and casually shook it. The spear shaft trembled with a terrifying contained strength.

“What a great spear! In terms of resources, martial artists from the lower realms are just like little babies from the slums; they are simply unable to compare with martial artists from the Realm of the Gods.”

Besides the long spear, the standard issued clothes were also top quality goods. Once worn, they felt as airy as silk. Having been woven from divine fire silk, they were actually immune to fire and water and were also extremely resistant. Even with a normal treasure one would find it difficult to slice through them. In Timeworn Phoenix City, it was light and practical - perfect for talents to use in training.

“Sir, if you please. Your room is right ahead.” The guide bowed.

Lin Ming looked up. In front of him was a door leading to a separate miniature dimension.

In Timeworn Phoenix City, every young elite’s residence was their own dimension. The advantage of this was that once the door was closed, the room would then become an absolute isolated space, so that the martial artist inside would not be interrupted during their training time.

After settling into this dimension, Lin Ming saw a bookshelf filled with all sorts of jade slips, both large and small. He casually picked one up and swept his perception through it. These were actually fire-attribute law cultivation methods, advisory letters, and ancient texts. These jade slips were mostly high-grade cultivation method manuals collected by powerhouses of the Ancient Phoenix Clan from various regions. They were given to trial challengers, mainly for them to use as a reference in their own training.

Lin Ming looked through a few jade slips. Then, he sat down and immersed himself in perceiving insights into the Laws and Concepts he had gained earlier.

The totem symbol atop Heretical God Seed was as small as a grain of rice. However, Lin Ming could actually make out every single line and change in texture on its surface. These traces were all enlarged tens of thousands of times within Lin Ming's vision, each and every simple mysterious pattern appearing defined in his eyes.

Meditating on the totem engraving on the Heretical God Seed was much more beneficial and much easier than meditating on the Burning Heaven Totem Stone.

Lin Ming could already faintly feel that the affinity the Heretical God Seed held towards the Concept of Fire had exceeded that of the Concept of Thunder.

Amongst the various major Concepts, ones like the Concepts of Space and Time, the Concept of Eternity, the Concept of Annihilation, and other such Concepts were much more abstract and elusive, and were somewhat more formidable than others. However, the truth was that once one thoroughly comprehended the source of a Concept, and reached the pinnacle of comprehension with it, then even with one like the Concept of Fire one could still achieve heaven-shaking results and become a king of their generation.

Hu - !

Lin Ming stretched out his palm and a fiery flame-spear appeared in his hand, its energy quickly solidifying. In the next moment, the flame spear completely condensed into a solid spear. The spear point and shaft both gleamed with a metallic luster, just as if they had been cast from red metal.

"After inscribing the flame totem, the Heretical God Seed within me has also evolved." Lin Ming felt his heart shining with a brilliant fighting spirit. He wanted to test his strength in battle and see just how much progress his Concept of Fire had made.

At that moment, a strict voice suddenly rang out in the dimension. "Ten days have passed. Everyone gather at the Southern City Temple. The test will now begin!"

"The test is finally starting." Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a sharp light. The king-level smelting trial tests were extremely severe. The first test would eliminate 30-40% of the martial artists. In the future, tests would only become more and more difficult. Ultimately, only a tiny number of people would make it through the trials.

Lin Ming walked towards the Southern City Temple. Here, the red-robed Elder responsible for directing the test was already waiting.

“Come with me.”

After everyone had gathered, the red-robed Elder led everyone to a separate chamber. Here, there was a massive crystal mirror. The mirror was over 100 feet high and was hundreds of feet wide. It spread across an entire wall.

“This is the God Transforming Mirror. It is an illusory magic array used for tests. You only need to stand in front of the God Transforming Mirror and touch it in order to start the test. Within the God Transforming Mirror there are nine different shifting realms. With your current strength, lasting in the first shifting phase for a quarter of an hour will qualify as passing, and lasting for half an hour will be considered outstanding. Those who fail will need to take the transmission array and leave the smelting trial site,” the red-robed Elder indifferently said.

Hearing this, the heroic young elites became somewhat nervous. If they had a poor performance then there was the fear of being eliminated. If they had a good performance then they could only hope to make progress for even better results. For instance, Huo Wenlong, Huo Yu and the others all carried a great pressure on their backs. Their goal was not only to pass the smelting trial, but also to compete with Lin Ming and overshadow him.

“We shall start from the trial challengers of the Mortal Corridor. I will call your name to step forward and start the test. Sheng Gonglu, Chi Hu....”

The red-robed Elder continuously called out the names of four people. As these four people stood in front of the God Transforming Mirror, all of them were lurching with unease.

They followed the red-robed Elder's instructors and reached out their hands to touch the God Transforming Mirror. In the next moment, all of them fell into a strange trance-like state, as if they were completely isolated from the outside world....

Chapter 727 – The Red Woman

Chapter 727 – The Red Woman

…

…

…

There were nine shifting realms within the God Transforming Mirror. But, none of the martial artists present knew just what this meant.

The martial artists from the lower realms looked at the four trial challengers standing in front of the God Transforming Mirror, a disturbed and anxious expression crossing their faces. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that this test was related to lives.

If they passed, they could continue through the smelting trial and even have a chance at approaching the Realm of the Gods.

If they failed then they would be eliminated. In the future, they would be stuck at the Divine Sea realm, only kings of the lower realms.

After reaching Timeworn Phoenix City and experiencing the limitless possibilities of the Realm of the Gods, none of them were willing to give up this chance. This was similar to a mortal country bumpkin visiting the royal capital and then not wishing to return to the countryside. After experience all that the capital had to offer, they would rather work hard there instead of returning home to become rich farmers.

Time passed a minute, a second at a time. After an incense stick of time passed, two of the four trial challengers standing in front of the God Transforming Mirror suddenly shook, drawing back with pale expressions.

The red-robed Elder indifferently waved his hand, “The two of you…fail!”

They had failed!

The two young martial artists were stricken. In their own worlds, they were peak Emperor level talents that stood above all others. But now, after arriving at the smelting trial of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, the so-called ‘Emperor level talents’ of the lower realms were now nothing more than a joke. Dropping from the top to the bottom, this left a horrible taste in their mouths!

After another incense stick of time passed, the other two trial challengers also gave a pained cough as their connection with the God Transforming Mirror was cut off. At this time, there was still a bit of time before it reached the required quarter hour.

“The two of you also fail!” The red-robed Elder mercilessly said.

“This test is too difficult!” All of the present martial artists, especially those that came from the Mortal Corridor, were becoming increasingly nervous.

At this time, the red-robed Elder coldly snorted and said, “Crossing the test of the God Transforming Mirror is not difficult. If you failed, then that only proves that you have a tenuous grasp of Concepts and Laws and that your cultivation is also far too lacking. There is no one else to blame but yourselves!”

“The God Transforming Mirror smelting trial has nine different shifting Concepts. If you can persist through the first one for just a quarter of an hour then you have passed. Half an hour is an outstanding result. Every year, over 60% of the trial challengers can pass the first test but less than 10% can achieve an outstanding result. As for those that can last three hours or even pass through the first Concept, that might not even appear once in 50 years.”

“Pass through the first Concept?” The four trial challengers who had just failed felt their hearts jump. The four of them had personally experienced just how terrifying the Concepts of the first level were, and yet someone who was in their twenties could still pass through it in a single go? Was that even humanly possible?

“Now then... Yellowright Min, Feng Xiaotian...” The red-robed Elder began to list out the names of four more people.

“Good luck in there.” Lin Ming cheered Yellowright Min on. He had a good impression of this fellow.

“Mm!” Yellowright Min pumped his fists, his inner tension palpable.

The four eliminated martial artists had come from the Mortal Corridor. As martial artists that could only enter the Mortal Corridor, their strengths weren’t too great to begin with, so the chances of them being eliminated here were also correspondingly high.

....

At this time, within the very center of Timeworn Phoenix City, there was a grand tower that stood nine levels high. At the highest balcony of the tower, there was a woman dressed in red, looking down over the entire Timeworn Phoenix City.

After some time, the red dressed woman turned around. In front of her, the great doors had opened and a tall man in a cloak strode in. On his shoulders there was a great flaming bird that looked like a red parrot; it was obviously this old man’s contract beast.

“Great Elder, you seem to have plenty of free time, to come and visit me here.” The red dressed woman tranquilly spoke as she faintly smiled.

“Haha, I was just finishing some minor errands. It just so happens that the new little children have come into the city and are participating in their first test. Do you have any interest in going to take a look?” The tall old man laughed, his voice vibrant and rich with life.

The red dressed woman smiled and shook her head, “There’s far too a low a chance that any of those children will grow up into someone useful. There’s no reason to go fuss over them. If there’s an exception, then the Council of Elders will naturally send over a battle array disc.”

Every few years, Timeworn Phoenix City would select a batch of extraordinary youths from the countless worlds. In all fairness, because the Ancient Phoenix Clan of the lower realms had passed through tens of thousands or even hundreds of thousands of years of dilution, their bloodline purity was far inferior to the Ancient Phoenix Clan within the Realm of the Gods. Thus, the chances of a true genius arising from that pack of youths were very small.

It was certainly easy for those young elites to reach the Divine Sea, but going any further than that would not be easy. As for entering the Realm of the Gods Ancient Phoenix Clan and joining another family clan there, the chances were simply far too low.

“Hehe, you’re not wrong, but there is an exception this time. There’s a little boy called Nuyan Ming whose fire compatibility is even higher than yours used to be!”

“Oh? Really!?” The red dressed woman’s eyebrows shot up. “Is he from the lower realms?”

According to the traditions of the Realm of the Gods Ancient Phoenix Clan, if a genius from the Realm of the Gods had such a high compatibility with fire then they would have already been sent to the smelting trial site in the Realm of the Gods. It was impossible for them to be sent to Timeworn Phoenix City which was situation in the lower realms.

“Of course it’s real. He is indeed from the lower realms. It is extremely rare for a martial artist from the lower realms to have such a high compatibility. But... unfortunately, his comprehension of the Laws is too poor. When he gazed upon the Ancient Phoenix Testament it took him a full half incense stick of time before he was able to fuse with the Laws.” The tall old man said as he shook his head in regret. A martial artist's perception represented their ability to comprehend the Laws; it was often more important than one’s degree of compatibility.

“Half an incense stick of time?” The red dressed woman was bewildered. That result was just too poor. Even the most basic child from the Realm of the Gods Phoenix Clan would have such a result.

“That’s too bad.” The red dressed woman lamented. One’s compatibility with fire and ability to comprehend Fire Laws had little to do with each other. Compatibility looked at one’s physique, but comprehension of Laws looked at a martial artist's soul force and perception. If their compatibility was high but their perception was low, it was still a waste. The further one walked down the road of martial arts, the more emphasis there was on the soul, will, battle spirit, perception, and other such factors.

“That’s right, but we should look at this little fellow first. If his perception is too poor and there’s no value in training him then that’s fine too. But, if he’s worthy of some help, then we can wait until he reaches the Divine Sea and then recommend him to join the main clan within the Realm of the Gods.”

“Mm, let’s go.” The red dressed woman said. As she spoke, the space in front of her easily split apart, revealing a black hole in the void, and the two of them stepped inside…

……………

In the testing hall, before the God Transforming Mirror, Yellowright Min gave a stuffy cough as he stepped back, his face white.

Without bothering with this minor injury, he spun around to look at an hourglass in the corner of the room. There, the sand within the hourglass indicated that a quarter of an hour had passed!

“Yellowright Min, pass!”

The red-robed Elder blankly exclaimed.

Yellowright Min was overjoyed. He punched the air as he laughed, “Haha, I just managed to pass, what great luck!”

“Great luck? That might not be true.” As Yellowright Min was celebrating, a rude and sobering voice suddenly sounded out. The one who spoke was Huo Ping, one of the martial artists from the Realm of the Gods’ Huo Clan. “There is more than one test in Timeworn

Phoenix City. Just because you passed this time doesn't mean you won't be eliminated in the next one."

Huo Ping poured cold water all over Yellowright Min's parade. Yellowright Min's face sunk, his expression becoming gloomy and his originally cheery demeanor suddenly reduced by half.

What Huo Ping said was true. But still, to a lower realm martial artist like Yellowright Min, every single step they took was always good. If he could obtain some insights then that was a major harvest for him. It would have an inestimable impact as he continued to walk his path of martial arts.

"Humph, if you had any skill then you wouldn't have come to Timeworn Phoenix City. How was it like being kicked out from the Realm of the Gods?" Yellowright Min venomously lashed back. As Huo Ping heard this, his expression immediately turned ugly.

After Yellowright Min, the other martial artists from the Mortal Corridor completed their own tests own after another. The final elimination rate for them was around 80%.

Next up were those from the Earth Corridor. The heroic youths from the Earth Corridor were much stronger. Besides one, everyone else passed.

Especially those outstanding youths from the Realm of the Gods; their results were even better.

When Huo Ping drew back from the God Transforming Mirror, all blood drained from his face, the red-robed Elder announced his result, "A total of over half an hour. An outstanding result!"

This was the first outstanding result. As Huo Ping stepped back from the God Transforming Mirror, he glanced over at the hourglass and then looked over at Yellowright Min, his face filled with satisfaction. Even though he wasn't considered too good within the Realm of the Gods, he could still look down on the lower realm martial artists in Timeworn Phoenix City.

As for Yellowright Min, his ability was inferior so there was nothing he could say.

After Huo Ping, two other martial artists from the Realm of the Gods also obtained an outstanding result. As for the Sky Corridor's Huo Yu, she lasted for nearly forty minutes, breaking the current record.

At this time, only two people still hadn't been tested. They were Lin Ming and Huo Wenlong.

Everyone's eyes focused on them.

Huo Wenlong looked at Li Ming and smiled, "Brother Nuyan, how about we go together?"

"Alright."

Lin Ming calmly nodded. He wasn't sure what sort of test lay within the God Transforming Mirror. In terms of just the comprehension of Law, he didn't have full assurance that he could defeat Huo Wenlong. Although the Heretical God Seed was powerful, the time that Lin Ming had been comprehending the Fire Laws was simply too short.

Lin Ming stepped in front of the God Transforming Mirror. Stretching out a hand, he touched the surface of the mirror. Then, he immediately entered into a strange trance....

Everyone's vision remained on Lin Ming and Huo Wenlong. No one knew that in the space outside of this hall, there were also two pairs of invisible eyes paying attention to Lin Ming and Huo Wenlong. These two pairs of eyes belonged to the tall old man and the red dressed woman that had been talking atop the Nine Layer Tower in the center of the city. Both of them were high level figures within Timeworn Phoenix City.

"Nuyan Ming, that's him?" The red dressed woman's voice echoed in the void.

"Mm... that's him..." The old man nodded.

“What a faint Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Moreover, it seems that it was transplanted during the Houtian realm. If I’m not wrong, hasn’t the Nuyan Family perished? Where did this Nuyan Ming come from?”

Although the Ancient Phoenix Clan had countless branches, the red dressed woman had still completely memorized each and every one of them. The Nuyan Family had been exterminated 100,000 years ago.

“I’ve already asked the Nuyan Family Protector about him. After the Nuyan Family was exterminated, the ruins of their family were accidently obtained by a mortal sect within the Sky Spill Continent. Afterwards, it was used to establish a sect called Divine Phoenix Island. This sect has taken the Vermillion Bird and Blue Luan as their totem. As for Nuyan Ming, he was a disciple of Divine Phoenix Island. Because of his outstanding talent, he was able to participate and ultimately complete the general level smelting trial. After the Temple Spirit saw that he had made excellent results throughout, he was gifted a single blood drop of the Ancient Phoenix.”

Chapter 728 – The First Concept – Sea of Burning Fire

Chapter 728 – The First Concept – Sea of Burning Fire

…

…

…

"I see… so that's how it is. Then it seems this Nuyan Ming can also be considered an outer member of my Ancient Phoenix Clan."

The red dressed woman's shadowy voice resonated through the void. The Realm of the Gods Ancient Phoenix Clan was an incomparably massive sect. Within the three thousand boundless worlds, there were also countless branches and sub-branches.

A sect like Divine Phoenix Island, which took the phoenix and its closely related Saint Beasts as its totem, could just barely be counted as one of the followers and believers of the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

Some of these countless sects in the lower realms were fifth-grade sects or Holy Lands. Occasionally, there were top talents among these sects that had the qualifications to be chosen by the true Ancient Phoenix Clan, transplanting a part of their bloodline and becoming an outer member of the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

Up until this point, the Ancient Phoenix Clan had developed to the point where there were millions of small and large sects that comprised it. With the three great family clans within the Realm of the Gods added on, it was hard to estimate just how many members the Ancient

Phoenix Clan had. The clan included humans, Giant Demons, Ferals, Fey, and many other races.

In this era, familial bloodlines no longer mattered. There was only a single requirement for being a member of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, and that was whether or not they had the Ancient Phoenix bloodline within their bodies.

Thus, Lin Ming's origins had no effect on whether he was considered part of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Of course, as a martial artist from the lower realms, if Lin Ming entered the Realm of the Gods in the future, then against those at the same level of strength, he would have fewer resources than those from the three great family clans.

……….

After entering the God Transforming Mirror, Lin Ming felt as if he had fallen through a layer of water. There was a brief scalding hot feeling, and in the next moment, he had entered into a vast red space.

This was a world of burning flames, nothing but endless infernos in a sea of fire. Scarlet plumes rose thousands of feet high, impacting the heavens. The entire sky was filled with red clouds. It was as if the once blue sky had been roasted red by the flames.

Hot!

It was too hot!

This was Lin Ming's first and foremost reaction. Every breath he took felt as if he was sucking flames into his lungs. If a common mortal were to appear here, he would have been charred to death long ago.

At this time, red clouds roiled in the skies. These strange movements reflected in Lin Ming's pupils, just like the traces of fire energy from the Ancient Phoenix Testament. This scene caused Lin Ming's eyes to shine brightly. So this was the God Transforming Mirror!

The God Transforming Mirror, the Ancient Phoenix Totem Stones, and the Ancient Phoenix Testament were similar in essence. The Ancient Phoenix Testament and the Burning Heaven Totem Stone were both objects that recorded the operating rules of Flame Laws and the energy within them, allowing a martial artist to enlighten themselves through meditation. But, the God Transforming Mirror expanded on these energy operating rules through the use of an illusory magic array. A martial artist could place themselves within and directly experiences the changes within the fire energy himself.

If the three days before were Lin Ming meditating on the Burning Heaven Stone, then this could be considered as having entered the Burning Heaven Totem Stone. He was now directly withstanding a baptism within a violent storm of energy.

If he could withstand it, live through it, then that proved that his perception was good, enough to pass.

Ho -!

A wave of heat passed through him. Lin Ming's clothes, which were supposed to be nearly invulnerable to water and fire, actually started to burn a little. This proved that the temperature was extremely high.

The Ancient Phoenix Clan had a total nine Fire Concepts. Correspondingly, the God Transforming Mirror also had nine realms. And, the first shifting Concept was… Burning Heat!

Burning heat was the very fundamental foundation. If one could withstand this Concept, then they could finally be considered as truly have stepped through the door of the true Concept of Fire.

The temperature rose higher and higher. Lin Ming had no choice but to revolve his bodily true essence protection to the limit as well as simultaneously activating the Asura force field to surround his entire body. The Asura force field was a force field domain that could suppress all types of energy. Naturally, it was also able to suppress these burning hot flames.

However, as Lin Ming suppressed this heat, he only felt the surrounding burning heat around him suddenly soar by a massive degree!

Hu hu hu!

Lin Ming's true essence was rapidly consumed and even then the surrounding temperatures continued to shoot up. If this continued for much longer then he wouldn't be able to hold on.

"I'm stupid. The as a test of my understandings towards the Concept of Fire, not whether or not I have the power to withstand it. Ignoring the fire and just resisting against it is obviously not an option. I must act according to my understanding of the Burning Heaven Totem Stone and adapt to this sea of fire."

As Lin Ming thought this, he took a deep breath and resolutely withdrew the protection of his bodily true essence and the Asura force field. For a time, the oppressive waves of heat pushed up against Lin Ming like a waterfall!

Ho!

Lin Ming's fire resistant clothes melting away! He could even hear the sound of his own skin baking to a tender crisp.

Soon after, Lin Ming was left completely naked. With a cracking sound, his spatial ring was also charred black by the purging fires.

Of course, this was only a world of illusion. Lin Ming's true body was standing perfectly still and unharmed outside of the God Transforming Mirror.

The vast and endless power of fire poured through Lin Ming's acupoints, crazily raging through his meridians and flushing towards his bones, organs, and limbs. If his comprehension of the Concept of Fire was too poor, then this fire would have charred all his organs to ashes already.

In such a terrifying rush of heat, Lin Ming's mind was as still as ice. His mind touched upon the Heretical God Seed and the tiny flame totem on it suddenly began to shine with a dazzling light. With a clear sound, the massive power of fire within Lin Ming's body began to be sucked into the Heretical God Seed, causing the lines of energy on the Heretical God Seen to start spinning around.

These lines of energy only had a total surface area the size of a grain of rice. But, the structures were extremely complex and exquisite. It was like a bottomless pit was born within it, constantly and wantonly devouring the power of fire, ensuring that none of Lin Ming's organs would be injured.

In this state, Lin Ming felt the energy within his body blow up like a balloon!

……….

Outside of the God Transforming Mirror, half an hour had quietly passed.

All of the martial artists outside were focused on Lin Ming and Huo Wenlong. Half an hour was already an 'outstanding' grade result. Nobody thought that Lin Ming and Huo Wenlong would have failed at this point. With their strength, lasting less than half an hour would have been strange instead.

The truly difficult part lay ahead. In the first Concept world, the temperature would continue to rise. But, a martial artists ability to absorb and control fire energy was limited. Once they couldn't last any further, they would be incinerated by the sea of flames.

Before, Huo Yu had only managed to last forty minutes. As for someone that could last three quarter hours, that was something that rarely happened even in 50 years.

50 years seemed like a long time, but Timeworn Phoenix City had over a million worlds to choose from, and that wasn't even including the Realm of the Gods. The pure volume of talents that passed through here in 50 years of time was horrifying.

"I wonder if Lin Ming will last until the end, or if it will be Huo Wenlong." The surrounding martial artists began murmuring.

"Of course it will be Huo Wenlong. Lin Ming has a high compatibility with fire, but this test looks at one's comprehension of Laws." A Realm of the Gods martial artist said.

"That's not necessarily true. The higher your fire compatibility is, the great temperatures your body can withstand, and the more power of fire you can withstand too. The one to last until the end might be Lin Ming!" A lower realms martial artist retorted. As a fellow martial artist from the lower realms, he naturally sided with Lin Ming.

This was Huo Wenlong and Lin Ming's first battle; it would relate to their future achievements!

In the void, the red dressed woman and the old man had anticipated this sort of competition. When a martial artist stepped foot on the road of martial arts and walked towards the peak, they would inevitably have to march over the bodies of all the losers that fell beneath them.

At this time, within the world of the God Transforming Mirror, Huo Wenlong was fluttering like a wisp of silk in a blazing red storm. The power of Burning Heat rushed towards him. Half of this energy was rerouted by an invisible power while the other half entered him.

Using this method of diverting the energy, it meant that Huo Wenlong would only need to withstand half of the fire energy.

Huu… huu… hu…

As heat wave after heat wave got partial deflected by Huo Wenlong, he continued to remain calm throughout without the slightest sense of strain.

He was confident he would win this battle. This was because when he was in the Realm of the Gods, he had already experienced the God Transforming Mirror. This method of diverting the power of fire was also a very high level legacy of his clan; it wasn't something the average person could learn. Not even Huo Yu could do it, much less someone like Lin Ming

Although this method of extending the time he stayed in here might seem a bit suspicious, the world only cared about heroes that won; results were far more important than the means. Then again, this method of diverting, from another viewpoint, only proved how thoroughly Huo Wenlong understood the Laws of Fire.

“Lin Ming, I've already won. I will establish my superiority to you here and now. As long as you don't catch up to me too much, I will take first place in this smelting trial!”

Meanwhile, on another side of the God Transforming Mirror, the fire energy within Lin Ming's body had risen to a terrifying degree. Because the power of fire was gathering towards Lin Ming and the Heretical God Seed was accumulating all of it within itself, the temperature within Lin Ming's body was even higher than the temperature outside.

Lin Ming kept his eyes closed this entire time. His perception was always focused on the red clouds that surged above him, as he constantly attempted to understand the Laws that governed the revolution of energy in this world.

This world took the most basic revolution of fire as its fundamental Law. As Lin Ming was withstanding the baptism of fire, he was beginning to understand just how to break through the Concept of the God Transforming Mirror's first level!

As long as he could gather enough energy within his body, he could use his own bloodline as a guide and fuse the Laws and Concepts of Fire and then detonate all of that energy within himself. This energy would scatter away, in turn burning down the sea of fire instead. This would allow him to break through the first Concept, passing the first trial of the God Transforming Mirror.

But to a normal martial artist, they weren't able to gather enough of the fire energy within this burning heat world before their body could no longer withstand it. Even if their

Ancient Phoenix bloodline was much purer and denser than Lin Ming, or their understanding of Concepts and Laws were greater than Lin Ming's, they still wouldn't be able to burn away this world.

But to Lin Ming, this was not a problem, because he had the Heretical God Seed within him. The power of fire that he could withstand far outstripped the average martial artist.

Lin Ming's body was completely filled with the power of fire. The Heretical God Seed was just like a miniature sun as it emitted blinding rays of golden light. On the surface of the Heretical God Seed, the engravings of flame became even brighter!

The energy had already reached 95% capacity!

Then, 96%, 97%, 98%, 99%, climbing without end!

Lin Ming gritted his teeth. The Heretical God Seed was like a storm within him; it could blow apart at any time!

Outside of the God Transforming Mirror, Lin Ming's body began trembling. Blue veins stuck out from his body like wriggling worms and great beads of sweat dripped down his forehead.

"Lin Ming, it seems he… might not be able to last much longer?" Some martial artists noticed the changes in Lin Ming's appearance. Compared to Lin Ming, Huo Wenlong seemed much more at ease. His breath was even and there wasn't the slightest bit of sweat on his forehead.

Looking at the hourglass, there was still some sand left until three quarters.

"It's only been around two and a half quarters of time yet Lin Ming seems as if he had reached his limit. If this continues he won't be able to last for three quarters of time." Some martial artists began talking amongst themselves. But, in the great hall, the red-robed Elder's eyes actually shrank. He looked at Lin Ming, a curious light in his eyes….

Chapter 729 – Breaking Through the First World

Chapter 729 – Breaking Through the First World

…

…

…

Time passed slowly. As Lin Ming stood before the Celestial Shifting Mirror, his fists were tightly clenched together, and the blood vessels on his arms were pumped up as if they could burst apart at any second.

All of his clothes were already soaking wet with sweat. It seemed as if he wouldn't be able to hold out for much longer. But besides Lin Ming, Huo Wenlong only had a few beads of sweat dropping down his face. It was apparent that he could continue for a while longer.

"Nuyan Ming has reached his limit." A martial artist from the Earth Corridor said.

"If there isn't an accident then Huo Wenlong should be able to last for three quarter hours of time, enough to meet the rare 50 year standard of Timeworn Phoenix City. But Nuyan Ming should only be able to last for several more breaths of time at most. Although he's lacking just a bit, nearly reaching that time is also quite good especially since Nuyan Ming is a martial artist from the lower realms.

Several martial artists began discussing amongst themselves. In this first round of the trial, Huo Wenlong had the upper hand. But, the first stage of the king level smelting trial wasn't something completed in a short period of time; it was unknown just who the final winner would be.

Huo Ping snickered as he saw Lin Ming approaching his limits more and more. He said, "This Nuyan Ming shouldn't push it if he can't hold on. When the other martial artists couldn't stand it any further, the most that happened to them was that their faces whitened a bit; none of them looked like this fellow does right now. What's he doing? If he can't persist then he can't persist. What's the point of putting up a futile struggle?"

"Humph, to be able to persist even when he's reached his limits just means that Nuyan Ming has a firm will! If you tried you would have simply failed!" Yellowright Min bluntly retorted. Huo Ping sneered in disdain, no longer speaking, obviously not wanting to bother with this nonsense.

After 10 breaths of time, Lin Ming's entire body flushed red. On the area where his palm touched the Celestial Shifting Mirror, a faint flame slowly rose up.

Everyone present noticed this slight change. But, regardless if they were a martial artist of the Earth Corridor or Sky Corridor, none of them was clear on what was happening.

In the void, the tall old man's eyes widened with interest. "This little boy, with just his trivial middle Revolving Core cultivation, wants to use his body to direct the fire and move the fire-attribute energy within the first world, ultimately burning it away. How daring of him!"

The red dress woman faintly smiled. She said in a soft whisper, "His affinity towards fire is amazingly high so it's easier for him to move the power of fire in that world. There's a chance he'll succeed, but it is indeed asking for too much."

"Let's continue watching. No matter what, that bold decisiveness is to this old man's liking. He's not like that Huo Wenlong kid who's just trying to play some tricks and delay for time." The old man shot a look at Huo Wenlong, obviously viewing him with disdain.

"Haha, it's also quite good for Huo Wenlong to reach this level, and its not as if what he did is against the rules. Now we can only look to know whether or not Nuyan Ming will be able to succeed.

At this time, within the world of the Celestial Shifting Mirror, the accumulated energy within Lin Ming's body had reached its limit. The Heretical God Seed was completely full. The totem engravings on the seed began to emit a brilliant golden light!

Not only that, but even Lin Ming's dantian was filled with a massive amount of fire energy. These energies were all absorbed by the Black Hole Revolving Core within his dantian, forming a whirlpool of fire that covered everything in a hazy red fog.

His dantian began to burn!

When a martial artist entered the Xiantian realm, the dantian became the source and the very origin of all their energy. However, it also became their greatest weakness.

The flame that existed within the dantian was core fire. If one wasn't a fire-attribute martial artist then it was simply impossible to start this sort of core fire. This sort of fire, if sent out from the source of a martial artist's energy, would contain the most formidable power!

Use his bloodline as the guide, ignite the core fire, fuse it with the power of fire within the Heretical God Seed and then scorch away the heavens and the earth!

Bang!

With a deafening sound, all of the highly compressed fire energy within the Heretical God Seed completely broke out. In that moment, it was like the flame totem on the Heretical God Seed had become the eyes of a phoenix, the dazzling golden rays of light piercing through the limitless void!

Lin Ming's entire body began to burn. The flames around him coalesced into a titanic phoenix that let out a keening wail as it flew out. The ferocity of that flame shook the heavens and shattered the earth!

The sea of fire boiled with excitement. Countless amounts of fire energy was sucked into this phoenix, surging tides of crimson energy that blew into the sky, forming a massive red whirlpool that seemed to swallow the heavens!

Lin Ming was a Revolving Core martial artist. No matter how strong he was, it was impossible for him to burn down a world with his power alone. He could only use his body to control the power of fire, quickening the power of the world and using the pre-existing fire energy to destroy all of creation.

This was the utilization of the Fire Laws, as well as the only way to break through the first realm of the Celestial Shifting Mirror!

Ka ka ka!

A crack appeared in the void!

At this moment, Lin Ming's entire body was wreathed in flames. Both of his eyes smoldered with fires of the Burning Heaven. An intense pain snapped out from his dantian, and he felt as if all of his meridians and even his soul was being seared black by this fire. This sort of pain directly linked to his spiritual sea, it was potent enough that it seemed capable of sweeping away his consciousness!

Lin Ming felt his spiritual sea shudder. Within his spiritual sea, black flames rolled upwards. But at that moment, a spear shaped battle spirit howled forth, slashing down onto this python of black fire, directly turning it away.

"I used my own bloodline as the guide and spurred the power of fire within this world to burn everything asunder. The pain in this Celestial Shifting Mirror was illusory to begin with; it simply cannot harm me."

In that instant, between Lin Ming's eyebrows, the flame shaped mark left behind by the blood of the Ancient Phoenix emitted light as if it were a rising sun and a golden phoenix howled out. This phoenix was smaller than the phoenix that rushed into the world earlier, but it was even more incandescent, brilliant and pure!

This was the result of Lin Ming fusing the Laws of his life's bloodline along with the power of fire from the Heretical God Seed!

The golden phoenix melted into the phoenix formed from the fire of the world, turning everything into a burnished golden red!

Bang bang bang!

The void continued to collapse, and large pieces of space deconstructed before him. A space storm swept out. This chaotic power of space actually fused with the flames. It was like a 'wind' that turned up the intensity of the fires, making it even fiercer.

In that moment, Lin Ming's eyes lit up. If a space storm fused into flames, it could actually be like the wind, making the intensity of the fire even more ebullient?

After realizing this, Lin Ming's heart was overturned by monstrous waves. He was too clear just what this discovery meant. This was the same as fusing together different Laws!

Fire and thunder had similar origins, but even so, Lin Ming had spent a considerable amount of time and effort to understand the Concept of Thunderfire.

The Concept of Space was amongst the most elusive and mystical Concepts. Moreover, it wasn't generally associated with the Concept of Fire. To fuse these two Concepts together was much, much harder!

Yet here, Lin Ming had seen with his own eyes the fusion of a space storm and fire. This was also the fusion of Concepts!

"So it's like this!' Lin Ming's steadily looked on. Although the world within the Celestial Shifting Mirror was nothing more than an illusion, the energy traces contained within still originated from the Chaos Stone. These traces were engraved by the principles of the universe, recording the rules to mobilize the most essential energy.

In other words, all of the phenomena occurring in the dreamland of the Celestial Shifting Mirror embodied the source Laws of the universe. How much you could comprehend all depended on your own ability!

Bang bang bang!

70% of the first world's space broke apart, the fire escaping into the void. Lin Ming wholeheartedly watched all of these changes occur. Even as blood flowed out from the corners of his eyes, this blood was instantly scorched away by the fire around him. Yet, Lin Ming didn't seem to feel any of this.

"So this the Fire Concept of Burning Heat! This is a chance of fusing the power of fire and the power of space! I get it! I understand it now!"

Lin Ming took a deep breath, and roared out, "First world, break for me!"

With a resonant shout, the golden red phoenix behind him issued a clarion cry. As for the edges of the space, the world began deconstructing!

The sea of fire collapsed and space turned into a great vortex, swallowing all!

For a time, outside of the Celestial Shifting Mirror, Lin Ming's body trembled. The flame mark between his eyebrows emitted a dazzling golden light even as blood leaked out from his eyes.

"This isn't good! Nuyan Ming has overdrawn himself!

A martial artist from the Earth Corridor shouted out in surprise. The Celestial Shifting Mirror was an illusory magic array that shouldn't have any dangers; it wasn't like a killing array. Generally speaking, if a martial artist died within the Celestial Shifting Mirror, there still wouldn't be any problems with their true body. It would only be that their consciousness that would be frightened a bit.

However, there were always exceptions. When a martial artist invested too much of his mind and surpassed their limits, it was possible that their spiritual sea could be damaged and they could fall to their obsessions.

Some lower realm martial artists wanted to forcefully pull Lin Ming back from the Celestial Shifting Mirror, but they were actually stopped by the red-robed Elder's shout, "No one move!"

As soon as this voice fell, Lin Ming's body shook and he was ejected out from the Celestial Shifting Mirror.

Lin Ming took a step back. His face was white as he spat out a mouthful of blood. He looked as if he had exhausted nearly everything he had.

"Brother Nuyan, are you alright!?" Yellowright Min shot forwards to help support Lin Ming. The other martial artists from the lower realms also took a half-step forwards to ask about his injuries.

"Brother Nuyan, have a mind calming pill." A martial artist handed out a bottle of pills. If one persisted within the Celestial Shifting Mirror for too long, it was easy to wound one's spiritual sea. Eating a mind calming pill would be helpful to restoring the spiritual sea.

"Brother Nuyan has done well. Although you just barely missed three quarter hours, your result is enough to be proud of."

Lin Ming pushed away the bottle of mind calming pills and took a deep breath. He suppressed the restless blood tumbling within his body, and without even sparing a glance at Huo Wenlong, said to the red-robed Elder, "In this test, junior has gained some insights. I would like to immediately go close up in seclusion and meditate on them."

"Good. Then go." The red-robed Elder smiled and nodded, a satisfied expression on his face.

Lin Ming bid his farewell and instantly launched his movement technique to fly back to his own dimension as soon as possible. All of the martial artists left behind were bewildered.

Huo Ping curled his lips in disdain. He sneered, “What kind of insights? He’s probably afraid of being embarrassed, so he found an excuse to leave. He only had half an incense stick of time until he would have reached three quarter hours. Huo Wenlong will inevitably reach that time. If Nuyan Ming stayed behind he would have just lost face.”

Hearing these words, Yellowright Min was incensed. He coldly snorted, saying, “Huo Ping, what kind of garbage are you spouting. You only lasted in there for two quarter hours! You are also far short of reaching Brother Nuyan’s heights!”

“It’s true that I can’t match up to him, but I am not his match to begin with.” Huo Ping glanced at Huo Wenlong. However, just as he did this, he noticed something strange. At the area where Lin Ming had stood, where his right hand had touched the surface of the Celestial Shifting Mirror, there was actually a small web of cracks that clearly spread out. These cracks were repairing themselves at a very slow pace.

“The Celestial Shifting Mirror… how could it have cracked?”

Chapter 730 – A Strike To Shatter the World

Chapter 730 – A Strike To Shatter the World

…

…

…

After Huo Ping spoke out, the other martial artists present also noticed the crack on the surface of the Celestial Shifting Mirror.

Wasn't the God Transforming Mirror engraved with the principles from the forming of the universe? How could it have cracked?

All of the martial artists present were curious about this exact same question.

But at this time, as Huo Yu looked at the God Transforming Mirror, she felt a growing horror in her heart. As someone that could be considered decently talented within the Huo Clan, she had a good understanding of the God Transforming Mirror.

The God Transforming Mirror was indeed a divine object that was engraved with the source energy Laws. But, the core of the Celestial Mirror, as well as the crystal wall that comprised its surface, were not true divine treasure from the formation of the universe. Rather, they were created by an array formation master. When the world of the God Transforming Mirror was broken, then the mirror itself would also break!

The one who created this mirror had already considered this situation from the start. With the liquid flame crystal inside the main body of the God Transforming Mirror, even if there were cracks produced on it, it could slowly melt and reform itself with a self-repairing function.

"Nuyan Ming… passed the test of the first Concept? This is…" Huo Yu sucked in a deep breath, her eyes flashing with astonishment. The God Transforming Mirror had a total of nine worlds within it. These nine worlds all corresponded with nine different kinds of Concepts. These nine different Concepts nearly encompassed all the complete mysteries of the Fire Laws.

Of these nine Concepts, each one was more difficult than the last. If one could pass the sixth or the seventh Concept, then they could become a Holy Lord within the Realm of the Gods. If one could rush past the ninth Concept, then that would mean they had fully comprehended the source Laws of Fire, having a strength as if they were a god of fire incarnate!

This was the origin of the God Transforming Mirror's name. Cross through nine levels of Concepts, break through the mortal coil, and transform into a god!

And now Lin Ming had already broken through the first Concept?

Huo Yu found this completely unbelievable. If Lin Ming was a favored son of heaven from some great clan in the Realm of the Gods, then she wouldn't have found this surprising. However, Lin Ming was an obvious newcomer to the Concept of Fire that had just arrived recently. His comprehension of the Fire Laws was inferior to even that of a child from the Realm of Gods. He had used half an incense stick of time with the Ancient Phoenix Testament in order to fuse with its Laws. The disparity was simply too great.

The only aspect worth noticing was his compatibility with the power of fire. But depending on just this alone, it was impossible for him to have burnt away the world of the first level!

Huo Yu was shocked, but as for Huo Ping and the others, they hadn't ever experienced this God Transforming Mirror before, so they had no idea what a crack on the surface meant. Although they thought that it was extraordinary for a crack to appear on the surface of the God Transforming Mirror, the crack had already healed itself to an unnoticeable degree in just half an incense stick of time. Thus, they didn't believe that this matter was too important.

But at this time, Huo Wenlong's body shook. With a pallid face, he stepped back from the God Transforming Mirror.

He had finally reached his limits, unable to withstand the Concept of the first world.

Huo Wenlong didn't look to the hourglass first. Instead, his first action was to turn to his side and he saw that the area where Lin Ming once stood was now empty. Obviously, he had been defeated first.

He won!

Huo Wenlong's lips curved up in a smile. Then, he turned to look at the hourglass. The three quarters mark had already been filled, and a bit of sand was now drifting down. He had made the three quarters mark!

As Huo Wenlong saw this, he was ecstatic. That meant he was a genius seen only once every 50 years!

To last within the mirror world for three quarter hours of time, that was a result rarely seen even in 50 years. Although Huo Wenlong had used some tricks in order to obtain this honor, he still hadn't violated any rules. What he relied on was his comprehension of the Fire Laws. The results had been quite effective.

With such a title, it was highly likely that he would be chosen to enter the Realm of the Gods for the second stage of the smelting trial!

"Haha, Brother Long, three quarter hours! You are the first one in this test to break through three quarter hours of time within! This is a rarely seen result even within 50 years in Timeworn Phoenix City!' Huo Ping hurriedly ran up and congratulated Huo Wenlong. Naturally, he couldn't miss such an opportunity to flatter him.

“That’s right, ah, Brother Long, we’ve tried so hard to just reach two quarter hours. We thought this was already quite good, but compared to Brother Long, our results are just too shameful! None of us can even compare!’

“That’s right, you’ve really broadened my horizons!’

Several other martial artists from the Realm of the Gods also complimented in unison. Although this sort of flattery was obviously opportunistic, Huo Wenlong was in an excellent mood and being praised like this made his thoughts flow incomparably smoothly.

Although he couldn’t conceal the smile on his face, he ‘humbly’ said, “My luck is just good. Once this smelting trial has ended, I ask everyone to come to the Ancient Phoenix Restaurant and share some glasses of wine with me.”

There was only a single restaurant in Timeworn Phoenix. The ingredients inside were all fire-attribute spiritual goods. The wine itself was millennia aged fire-attribute wine brewed from heavenly treasures. Just eating a meal there was greatly beneficial to one’s cultivation. Of course, the price itself was so high that it left one speechless.

“Ancient Phoenix Restaurant, haha, since Brother Long is so kindly treating us, then we won’t be disrespectful!” A martial artist from the Realm of the Gods happily said. Nobody would miss an opportunity to flatter Huo Wenlong and eat such sumptuous feast of fire-attribute spirit foods.

The group from the Realm of the Gods was jumping in joy. But at this time, the red-robed Elder extracted a scroll from his spatial ring and rolled it open with a thunderous sound. Without expression, he said, “I will now announce the results!”

Hearing the red-robed Elder speak, the current martial artists felt their hearts grip with fear. The first stage of the king level smelting trial was assessed from the totality of scores combined together. After each test, the examiner would give every candidate a score. This score was related to these martial artists future role and status in their clans. It was of utmost importance!

Huo Wenlong faintly smiled, confident in himself. He wasn't worried about his results. Since he could last for three quarter hours and obtained the title as being a genius rarely seen in 50 years, it was only natural that his results would be correspondingly outstanding.

"A perfect score is ten points. The score is judged by me. All those that fail have zero!"

The red-robed Elder indifferently said. With a large stroke of a pen, he directly wiped off all the names of the martial artists that had failed from the scroll. This red-robed Elder normally had an icy expression most of the time, and he rarely gave any advice or direction to these candidates. As an official in charge of the tests, he tried to remain as fair and unbiased as possible. It was only when Lin Ming burnt down the first world that a rare and tiny smile crossed his face.

"Yellowright Min, barely passing, 1 point!"

1 point… Yellowright Min was flabbergasted. If a perfect score was 10 points, then 1 point was simply too shameful. Well, at least he had passed.

"Teng Qing, barely passing, 1.2 points. Yun Lan, barely passing, 1.3 points…" As the red-robed Elder read out each name, the martial artists who were called out all had ugly complexions as they heard their scores. A perfect score was 10 points, but there were only a few that surpassed 2 points. The highest so far had obtained 2.3 points. This was too great a blow on their mentality.

Then, the red-robed Elder read out the name of Huo Ping. Huo Ping came from the Realm of the Gods and he had also gone to the Earth Corridor. Moreover, he had lasted for two quarter hours. His result should be extraordinary.

After the red-robed Elder raid Huo Ping's name, Huo Ping tensed, his heart lifting up. He leaned forwards to listen more carefully…

"Huo Ping, 3.2 points!"

Huo Ping suddenly wilted. For better or worse, he still had an outstanding result. What sort of standards were they setting here?

Out of a total of 10 points, he had only obtained 3.2 points. How could they actually say that his result was outstanding…

"Huo Yu, 4.3 points!"

Besides Lin Ming and Huo Wenlong, Huo Yu was the only other trial challenger who had gone to the Sky Corridor. She obviously found it hard to accept this score of 4.3 points.

"This old man Jun is really too harsh, every single grade he's given out is exactly by the book, not even half a point more." In the void, the tall old man shook his head. These little kids would have to return to the Realm of the Gods and report their results. Out of ten points, they only managed to obtain 3-4 points… this would be quite hard to admit. Some examiners would stretch out the rules in compassion, and invariably increase the number of points by one or two so that the score seemed more attractive. But, this stodgy examiner obviously doesn't care about that at all."

"Haha, that's also good. These young children should know just how great the disparity is between them and others. Destroying all that vaunted arrogance in their hearts will only do them good." The red dressed woman smiled. The world was too vast, and there were far too many outstanding heroic youths. A single genius wasn't worth anything at all. If they were blinded by their own halos then that would only end up harming themselves.

"Huo Wenlong…" Old man Jun spoke his name, the martial artists present pricked up their ears. Just how many points did Huo Wenlong obtain?

"6.1 points!"

As these words were spoken, all of the martial artists present were dumbfounded. Huo Wenlong also frowned. This score was just too low!

He was known as a 50 year talent of Timeworn Phoenix City. He has lasted inside that world for three quarter hours, and yet he only obtained 6.1 points. Then, who deserved to be graded more than 6 points?

Huo Ping couldn't help but send a true essence sound transmission to his companions, "Which brain-dead idiot came up with these scoring criterias? Are 7, 8, 9 points just there for show?"

His sound transmission also included Huo Wenlong. Although these words seemed disrespectful, in truth it matched Huo Wenlong's current feelings. This was also Huo Ping's goal.

Huo Wenlong was irate. He would have to report this score back to his clan. If it was too poor, then he would be laughed at even if he obtained first place. It would mean all he did was compete with a bunch of garbage to obtain first place.

However, what came out of his mouth was, "Huo Ping, don't be disrespectful to the seniors that came up with the rules. There is always a reason for it. Just because we can't obtain a higher score, doesn't mean others can't either."

As Huo Wenlong spoke to here, old man Jun then slowly said, "Nuyan Ming..."

"8.9 points!'

As the voice fell, Huo Wenlong froze where he stood. Just as he said 'Just because we can't obtain a higher score, doesn't mean others can't either', that old man Jun had actually given a higher score. Moreover, the one who had obtained this score was... Nuyan Ming!

8.9 points? How was that possible!?

"Did I just hear it wrong!? How could Nuyan Ming obtain 8.9 points?" A Realm of the Gods martial artist cried out. This was a great injustice!

“Instructor, there must have been a mistake! Huo Wenlong only obtained 6.1 points! Nuyan Ming’s results were even worse than Huo Wenlong’s.”

“Yeah! What’s going on here!?”

It wasn’t just the Realm of the Gods martial artists, but even those from the lower realms were confused. They looked at old man Jun with puzzled eyes.

Old man Jun waved the sleeves of his robe and coldly said, “Humph! You gaggle of ignorant juniors. There is no limit in this universe, there is always someone better! How could anyone of you nobodies question this old man’s evaluation! Nuyan Ming managed to defeat the world, breaking it apart. But you lot barely managed to linger around underneath the Fire Laws. The difference is greater than the heavens and earth! In fact, the scores I’ve given you all are far more than what you deserve! Now go close up and start training! Immediately!”

With that, old man Jun rolled up the scroll and turned around to leave in a single motion, leaving behind a group of baffled martial artists. Defeat the world?

What the actual f*ck!?

Chapter 731 – Fusing Concepts, Creating a Move

Chapter 731 – Fusing Concepts, Creating a Move

…

…

…

Defeat the world? The ordinary martial artists present didn't understand what old man Jun's words of defeating the world meant. However, Huo Wenlong had a decent status in the Realm of the Gods as an outstanding youth. He naturally knew what it meant to defeat the world of the God Transforming Mirror.

This was the same as Lin Ming rushing past the first level Concept of the God Transforming Mirror in a single go, directly passing into the second level Concept!

The nine Concepts of the God Transforming Mirror corresponded to the nine mysteries behind the Laws of Fire. The further one went, the closer they approached the source Laws of all fire!

Comprehend seven to eight Concepts and become a Holy Lord. Thoroughly comprehend the nine levels of Concepts and reincarnate as the God of Fire!

Of the God Transforming Mirror's Concepts, even breaking through the first level was extremely difficult. Especially for those young heroic elites who hadn't reached the Life Destruction realm yet. In the entire Timeworn Phoenix City, this might not happen for even 100 years!

Huo Wenlong looked over at the God Transforming Mirror and then at the spot that Lin Ming had just been standing. And indeed, he saw that there were several cracks visible in the

God Transforming Mirror. Although most of these had already restored themselves, the faint white marks proved that they had existed.

Break the world and thus break the God Transforming Mirror. This boy, just how had he done this!?

Huo Wenlong found this hard to accept. This wasn't something that could be done with just a higher level of compatibility. This proved that Lin Ming's Laws of Fire had improved tremendously after meditating on them.

Only a few days had passed… could it be that his perception wasn't poor, but rather that he hadn't come into contact with the Fire Laws before, thus his comprehension of them was only at the most basic level?

As Huo Wenlong realized this, he felt a cold chill creep up his back. If this were true, then any wish he had of chasing after Lin Ming was just a joke.

As Huo Wenlong was imagining these scenarios, Huo Yu had already flown back to her training area. She had been far too stimulated by this. As a young elite from the Realm of the Gods, Huo Yu was arrogant in her own right. Although her affinity with fire was lower than Lin Ming's, she still believed that at the start, her comprehension of Fire Laws exceeded Lin Ming. But now, that might not be true anymore. This placed a great pressure on her mind.

"Brother Long… what's the matter?" A Realm of the Gods martial artist asked weakly. The had faintly guessed that something was wrong. It most likely had something to do with that crack that Lin Ming had left behind. They weren't idiots. Knowing that that old man Jun had given Lin Ming a high score, they were able to think it over and approximate the situation.

"Humph!"

Huo Wenlong coughed, and without a single word further, flew towards his own training area. Since things were like this, that lofty dinner at the Ancient Phoenix Restaurant was also naturally canceled.

To defeat the world and rush past the first Concept of the God Transforming World. This result truly made Huo Wenlong feel as if he was being suppressed from all angles.

“That kid’s pretty good.” In the void, the tall old man nodded with satisfaction. “I thought it would be a bit too difficult for him to break through the world, but to think he actually succeeded… his willpower is strong! Otherwise, with just his meager understanding of the Laws of Fire, it would have been impossible to control the power of that world.”

“Mm, this time could be considered an accidental harvest. Nuyan Ming comes from my Timeworn Phoenix City, we can be considered as having a bit of fate together. I will deliver to him the complete ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ as well as the first three layers of the ‘Ancient Phoenix Law’. As for how he develops in the future, that will all depend on him.”

As the red dressed woman spoke, she casually formed a seal and passed on a message.

Towards a genius like Lin Ming, the red dressed woman would only casually direct him without supporting him too much. First, she had no obligation to do so. Secondly, this world was simply too vast. There were as many talents as there were grains of sand in an infinite desert. To last three quarter hours in the first test could be called a 50 year talent of Timeworn phoenix City, but to break through the first world could be called a 100 year talent.

However, this was only the Ancient Phoenix Clan. In the countless other great sects, they all had their own extraordinary youths. And in the Realm of the Gods, there were even more than that.

There were countless heroic young elites, but in the Realm of the Gods, within the 3000 great worlds and more, there were only 3000 some World Kings and tens of thousands of Holy Lords. These World Kings and Holy Lords were accumulated over a period of tens of thousands of years, hundreds of thousands of years, or even millions of years. Let alone a 100 year talent of Timeworn Phoenix City, even a 10,000 year talent would have a near zero chance of becoming a World King.

There were many talents that started out extremely dazzling, like rising stars. But later, they perished, or perhaps they were lost in the masses of people.

The old man said, “This brat should have his own destiny to be able to reach this step. Let’s not disturb him and let his fate freely take its course so he can develop his own destiny to the limit!”

The world was endless. It was a common phenomenon for talents to all have their own destinies. Otherwise, among the countless beings that existed, how could anyone reach the front of the pack?

“Alright. I’m looking forwards to see how he grows. I hope that he has a faint chance of at least becoming an outer court Elder level character.”

As the two people finished speaking, their figures vanished from the void, no one knowing that they ever came.

……………

At this time, in his chamber, Lin Ming had completely entered into a meditative state. His mind was flooded with the images of the world collapsing amidst that monstrous storm of fire. He recalled that massive red phoenix formed from the power of the world that fused together with the golden phoenix that came from combusting his own bloodline, tearing apart space itself!

Then, that space storm has combined with the fire storm. The Concept of Space and the Concept of Fire had, in that moment, perfectly fused together. This was the convergence of the source power of the universe, containing the most fundamental source energy and principles. It was only under a great lucky chance that Lin Ming was able to see this.

The concept of Space and the Concept of Fire were two Concepts that Lin Ming had learned early on in his road of martial arts. Especially Lin Ming’s comprehension of the Concept of Space. That surpassed even the Concept of Fire.

His mind constantly deduced the changes in energy. Lin Ming entered into the ethereal martial intent state, entering a completely enlightened condition.

Although the ethereal martial intent had no sort of combat efficiency, its benefits were extremely obvious towards Lin Ming's cultivation speed. Especially in this sort of situation. With this martial intent, Lin Ming was able to completely concentrate and reproduce the scene when the world collapsed.

The power of fire and space wove together in Lin Ming's mind. Then, Lin Ming suddenly thrust out his hand. All around his body, fire origin energy concentrated into a shining red light that sparkled around him.

The Heretical God Seed within him howled and the flame totem emitted a dazzling golden red light. Fire origin energy also began to revolve according to the totem, forming a vortex of red energy.

"Power of space, fuse!"

Lin Ming's eyes widened. Space around his palm began to warp. The power of space escaped his hand and gathered into the fire. The red vortex became increasingly intense, and the color gradually turned black, forming a black storm.

Chi chi chi!

The energy vortex howled. The energy contained within was compressed to an unbelievable degree, surging as if it would explode at any moment. The surrounding space became unstable, and a small crack suddenly appeared in the thin air before instantly fading away.

This was-!

Lin Ming's eyes lit up, his heart filled with joy.

This was the tearing of space!

He had finally reached the boundary of tearing space!

With Lin Ming's original strength and comprehension of the Concept of Space, he had only been able to distort space. As for tearing space apart, that was another level altogether!

Originally, the three great masters of Xuan Wuji, Nanyun Wang, and Abbot Whitebrow, along with several dozen Life Destruction powerhouses, had barely managed to make a connection through a space barrier in a world on the edge of collapse.

But to make a tear in stable space? That was another difficulty altogether!

The stability of Timeworn Phoenix City's dimension even exceeded the world of Sky Sky Spill Continent. If Lin Ming could create a small tear in the space here, then once he returned to the Sky Spill Continent, he could form an ever larger crack. If a weaker martial artist were to bump into this space crack, their body would be ripped apart.

Ka ka ka!

Lin Ming's control of this energy became increasingly unstable. With Lin Ming's understanding of the Laws and Concepts, he immediately lost control of this energy vortex; it was ready to implode at any time!

At this time, Lin Ming's eyes shined with a sharp light. A long red spear jumped into his arms, and the power of fire and the turbulent vortex of space energy poured into it. The entire spear turned a deep, dark red, the color of surging magma from deep underground!

The power of space and fire had finally fused together!

"Bury the Heavens!"

Lin Ming thrust out his spear. On the shaft, black and red fused energy intensely twisted together. In this moment, the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' flashed in his mind. He remembered the power of the spear skills from the slaughter path!

Bang!

A spear thrust out. The power of space and fire erupted; a black demonic flame scorched the void!

Chi chi chi!

Around the point of the spear, space was burnt by the power of fire. Little tiny dots of space fragments shot out, vibrantly revolving around the spear like Blood Drinking Seals.

To use space fragments to replace Blood Drinking Seals!

Blood Seal Twisting Murder!

A spear shot forwards like a meteor several hundred feet forwards. Countless cracks were cut open in space, like an invisible beast maw that was ready to bite!

Lin Ming looked back and immediately sucked in a breath of cold air. This move was definitely his strongest attack so far! With a single thrust, the black flames burned through the void. In addition to the attack of the space crack, the striking power against others could be imagined!

Lin Ming's talent in using the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' wasn't too great. After all, it wasn't a style that he had created. Lin Ming's talents lay in his martial intent, soul force, and battle spirit. In the slaughter path, he wasn't too talented, thus the power he could pull out from the Blood Drinking Seals he formed was limited. Especially as Lin Ming's strength rapidly rose, the Blood Drinking Seals could no longer keep up with him.

But now, by replacing the Blood Drinking Seals with space fragments, Lin Ming was now able to use his superiority in the Concept of Space. Simultaneously he could fuse the power of fire into his attack. This was an attack that could manifest the absolute pinnacle of Lin Ming's strength.

This was why a self-created move was best suited for oneself. As for the foundation for Lin Ming's self-created moves, that was the massive amount of shattered memories from the Magic Cube. There were simply far too many styles that he understood.

With this, he began stepping onto the road of becoming a martial arts grand master. From Thunderfire Annihilation at the start to Chasing Thunder, Chasing Sun, Penetrating Rainbow, and now to Bury the Heavens, Lin Ming's self-created moves had become increasingly mighty.

Lin Ming examined his own body. That strike just now had consumed the majority of the fire energy within the Heretical God Seed, and the golden flame totem had also dimmed much more.

"What a great Bury the Heavens. It can break apart the void, it is truly deserving of its name. This is my strongest move. Once I perfect it and fuse my battle spirit with it, my chances of coping with Xuan Wuji will greatly increase!" As Lin Ming thought of this, his eyes flashed with a shining fighting spirit.

Chapter 732 – Nine Layers of the Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle

Chapter 732 – Nine Layers of the Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle

…

…

…

This time, Lin Ming had already closed up for a total of five days. As he was readying to leave his seclusion, he heard a cold metallic voice echo out in the void, “Nuyan Ming, please release the spell on the gate.”

“Mm?”

Lin Ming was startled. He opened the door and saw that there were two red dressed maids standing outside of his dimension. One of these maids carried a jade tray, and on top of this tray was an exquisite box wrapped in red silk.

These two young maids both had a cultivation at the early Xiantian realm. Looking at their age, they were no more than 20 years old.

“Sir Nuyan, these are the jade slips that my mistress bids me to deliver to you. Please accept them.” As the young maid spoke, she lifted the cover on the wooden box, revealing three jade slips, two of them blood red and one of them emerald green.

These jade slips were far larger than those used in the Sky Spill Continent.

“Oh?” Lin Ming was overjoyed. He took one up and swept through it with his perception, his mind jumping with happiness. This was the complete set of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ cultivation method, a total of nine layers!

The ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ was the most core cultivation method of the Divine Phoenix Island. When Lin Ming had completed the general level smelting trial, he had obtained the first eight layers. Finally, he now had completed the entire set. The nine layers of the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ was considered an excellent cultivation method even within the Realm of the Gods.

Lin Ming received the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. Then, he looked at another jade slip. This was impressively the ‘Ancient Phoenix Code’, and the first three layers of that arcane skill too.

“The ‘Ancient Phoenix Code’?” Lin Ming’s eyebrows shot up. Without a doubt, the ‘Ancient Phoenix Code’ was a more advanced, higher level arcane ability than the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’. When Lin Ming was first taught the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’, Mu Qianyu had said that it, along with the ‘Blue Luan Abstract Phantom Code’, were two cultivation method manuals of the Ancient Phoenix Forbidden Manual. If one could completely cultivate the complete Ancient Phoenix Forbidden Manual of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, then one could be reborn in a nirvana of flames, becoming endless and indestructible. Of course, this was only the thoughts of Divine Phoenix Island. As to whether or not this was actually true, Lin Ming had no idea.

Now, it seemed that this Ancient Phoenix Forbidden Manual was likely this ‘Ancient Phoenix Code’.

The third jade slip was smaller than the first two. This jade slip wasn’t a fiery red like the other two, but a deep green color. It was just like a jade pendant that a woman would usually wear.

As soon as Lin Ming picked it up, he sucked in a breath of air. This third jade slip actually contained teachings and experiences of Fire Laws that some great senior had left behind.

Roughly glancing at it, Lin Ming was already able to estimate just how valuable these experiences were. Although it wasn't as mystical and profound as the Chaos Stones, its advantage was that it was much more detailed and understanding it would be far easier. This sort of jade slip was absolutely priceless. This was because only a great master who had reached the large success of the Concept of Fire could possibly record it; it was impossible to duplicate.

This was just like someone trying to engrave the detailed seal that another person else had left behind. Even if they had it in front of them, they still wouldn't be able to reproduce it in absolute detail.

Thus, because of these requirements, other similar jade slips with experiences of Concepts were extremely rare.

"Sir Nuyan, the first two jade slips are gifted to you. The third jade slip can only be borrowed by you for a total of 20 days. Do not think that this is too little. My mistress has recorded down a total of 12 jade slips detailing her experiences in the Laws of Fire. This jade slip only contains the experiences of the most fundamental Fire Laws. Within the entire Timeworn Phoenix City, there are countless people who wish to have the chance to perceive this jade slip through meditation." The second maid lightly said.

"Thank you two fairy maidens, I am very grateful for this. May I inquire as to who your mistress is…?" Lin Ming wasn't surprised that he was only given 20 days to meditate on this jade slip. How could such a rare jade slip possibly be wantonly given to him, let alone this was also one detailing her experiences in the Concept of Fire. Even the 'Ancient Phoenix Code' and 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' in his hands were incomparably precious. This was because a Supreme Elder needed to practice this cultivation method to the corresponding layer in order to record them in these jade slips.

Someday, if Lin Ming were to become a Holy Lord or World King within the Realm of the Gods, any casual thing that he created would also become a precious treasure to the world.

Hearing Lin Ming's cautious and polite question, the two maids tittered. They said, "Our mistress is known as Fairy Feng. She is the Supervisory Envoy of Timeworn Phoenix City."

"Supervisory Envoy?"

Lin Ming silently remembered this in his heart. Normally speaking, a Supervisory Envoy was someone sent down from headquarters to manage matters. This Fairy Feng was most likely sent down from the Realm of the Gods to supervise Timeworn Phoenix City. Her status was possibly higher than the City Lord. At the bare minimum, she should be on par with him.

"Well then Sir Nuyan, we won't disturb your seclusion any further. We will excuse ourselves first." As the two maids were about to leave, Lin Ming's mind suddenly stirred. He quickly asked out loud, "I have a quick question. Can I lend this 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle' and 'the Ancient Phoenix Code' to my fellow clansmen to cultivate?"

Lin Ming thought of giving these two cultivation methods to Divine Phoenix Island in the future. In a sense, those of Divine Phoenix Island could already be considered his clansmen.

"There is no problem with the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. However, you will need to apply for the 'Ancient Phoenix Code'. That will be decided by the lords of Timeworn Phoenix City."

After the two young maids spoke to here, they quickly bowed and excused themselves, leaving behind Lin Ming alone with the three jade slips in his little dimension.

With a deep breath, Lin Ming closed the spell on the door to his dimension. He took out the third jade slip detailing the Laws and Concepts of Fire and read the small preface.

'This jade slips contains details of the first two Fire Concepts of the Ancient Phoenix Clan – the Concept of Burning Heat and the Concept of Annihilation. Do not believe in the words of others as much as you believe in yourself. The Concepts of Fire vary from individual to individual. The path that others walk down, might not suit you best. Only when you blaze your own trail can you aspire to reach the peak of martial arts!'

This was what Fairy Feng had personally written.

Lin Ming agreed with this small preface. If something wasn't his to begin with, then it would be difficult to use. For instance, the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' and 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void' could not reach their maximum potential in Lin Ming's hands. Likewise, only Lin Ming could display the greatest power behind 'Bury the Heavens'. This was because one needed to comprehend the Laws of Space and Fire, and also have the Heretical God Seed as support.

Lin Ming quickly read on, rapidly absorbing the insights into the Laws that Fairy Feng had left behind. He eagerly read everything, remembering the mysterious patterns and images within and enlightening himself of the inherent mysteries of the source Laws and their changes.

The first fire-attribute Concept – Burning Heat. This was the very basis of all fires, the foundation of all Fire Laws.

The second fire-attribute Concept – Annihilation. This was the energy of fire, the embodiment of fire's striking power.

What would the third Fire Concept be, all the way up to the ninth?

Time unknowingly passed. As Lin Ming experimented with his moves, the totem engraving on the Heretical God Seed began to subtly change. He couldn't help but add more and more details to Bury the Heavens, making his move even more perfect.

When Lin Ming had used the elementary form of Bury the Heavens to tear apart the first world, he had completely exhausted all of this strength and was then thrust out from the God Transforming Mirror. This time, after improving Bury the Heavens, he should have enough strength left over to look at the second world of the God Transforming Mirror. This was also the world of the second Concept – Annihilation.

"I wonder what the fire annihilation Laws are like. If I can look at the Law of Annihilation, I should be able to gain a much deeper and profound understanding of the Concept of Annihilation as written in the jade slip left behind in Senior Fairy Feng…"

………..

As Lin Ming was in closed-door seclusion meditating over the jade slip of Fire Laws that Fairy Feng had left him, Huo Wenlong and the others weren't dawdling about either. Every trial challenger that passed through the God Transforming Mirror was granted additional time to continue perceiving the Laws of Fire. Because Huo Wenlong's result was outstanding, he had obtained five extra days. Huo Yu was only slightly inferior to Huo Wenlong and was granted four days.

As for Huo Ping and the other Realm of the Gods martial artists, they were all given the same time as the rest; three days.

These five days were extremely precious to Huo Wenlong. After being galvanized by Lin Ming, Huo Wenlong completely invested himself into meditating on the Concepts and Laws. His perception was not bad to begin with either. In these five days, Huo Wenlong's understanding towards the first Concept, the Law of Burning Heat, had reached a completely new level.

After having a much great assurance in himself, Huo Wenlong then went for a new test at the God Transforming Mirror. For this test, Huo Yu, Huo Ping, and the others were also participating.

Finally, Huo Yu managed to persist for three more incense sticks of time. As for Huo Ping, he managed to persist within for an extra half incense stick more of time.

As for Huo Wenlong, he lasted for another incense stick of time, reaching a total of four incense sticks of time.

Four incense sticks of time. Although he hadn't been able to defeat the first world, Huo Wenlong had found the key point to breaking past the first world.

Moreover, what delighted Huo Wenlong the most was that after breaking through four incense sticks of time, he had obtained an additional two day's time of meditation. Although this wasn't considered too long, every second was precious to Huo Wenlong. With this chance, he could again meditate on any problems that he had encountered during this new test round within the God Transforming Mirror.

"Seven days, no, five days, at most I need five more days to break through the first world! Nuyan Ming's method of breaking through the first world should be different from mine. What he used should be absolute strength, but I use the impeccable Laws in order to do so. Although I'm slower than him by several days, in terms of the method of breaking through the first world, I should be even more skilled. The disparity between us shouldn't be that great."

Huo Wenlong repeated this to himself. He had never given up his thoughts of surpassing Lin Ming. If he ever lost that sense of pride, that natural dignity of his, then he would have lost everything.

Moreover, in the common opinion of the Realm of the Gods, Concepts and Laws were much more respected than absolute strength. This was because absolute strength became increasingly hard to enhance the further one went. But as for Concepts and Laws, the further one went, the closer one would approach the root of all energy in the universe, and their power would also exponentially grow.

"I will definitely emerge victorious. Affinity to fire is inborn; it is decided at a martial artist's birth, depending on their physique and bloodline. It was extremely difficult to change. But, Concepts and Laws all depend on perceiving them under the heavens. The further I go, the greater my advantage will be. Although there is a gap that exists between us now, that doesn't mean that this gap will remain in the future. If I give up now, then that is the same as admitting defeat!'

As Huo Wenlong thought this, he turned to walk back to his dimension to digest what he learned and to use the last two days as a chance to perceive more. But as he was leaving the hall, he saw Lin Ming walking in.

“That boy is also here to participate in the second test of the God Transforming Mirror?”

Huo Wenlong’s vision narrowed and his feet stopped as if they had rooted themselves to the floor. As he turned around, he saw that Lin Ming was indeed standing before the God Transforming Mirror. His arrival had also attracted the attention of Huo Ping and Huo Yu.

Lin Ming had closed up in a single go for so many days, and now he had finally emerged!

As old man Jun, who was responsible for administering the test, saw Lin Ming, he knowingly smiled. He took out a recording jade slip and said, “Begin.”

Chapter 733 – Second World of the God Transforming Mirror

Chapter 733 – Second World of the God Transforming Mirror

…

…

…

Lin Ming slowly stretched out his hand and touched the God Transforming Mirror.

Everyone honed onto Lin Ming's every action and movement. Huo Yu and Huo Ping were silent, and even Huo Wenlong felt his heart hanging as he clenched his fists. As he saw Lin Ming fall into a trance, Huo Wenlong's eyes filled with a burning fighting spirit.

"Nuyan Ming, let me see just how much progress you've made!"

These 20 some years of his life could have been considered smooth sailing so far. Now, Lin Ming was the greatest setback he had ever encountered.

Huu -!

Lin Ming arrived once again in the first world of Burning Heat. The sea of fire still billowed beneath his feet and the skies were still full of surging red clouds. As he looked up, he could see the red clouds shifting around according to the Laws and Concepts of Fire. As they reflected in Lin Ming's pitch black pupils, faint golden lines appeared, just like the totem seal engraved on the Heretical God Seed.

Lin Ming took a deep breath, stretched his body, and sank downwards, bathing in the sea of elemental fire. He didn't feel the least bit of burning heat. Instead, he was like a fish swimming in the ocean, comfortable and satisfied.

A massive amount of fire energy gathered into Lin Ming's acupoints, flowing through his limbs and meridians before converging onto the Heretical God Seed. The crimson colored Heretical God Seed became even more dazzlingly beautiful.

Energy constantly gathered. The totem engraved onto the Heretical God Seed began to shine out with a brilliant golden light!

A vortex of energy formed within Lin Ming. As Lin Ming's dantian burned, the Black Hole Revolving Core in his body lit up with a scorching red flame!

40%... 50%... 60%...

As the fire energy within the Heretical God Seed reached 60%, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a sharp light as if two bolts of lightning were contained within them.

60% capacity was enough!

Ca!

The red spear seemed to jump out from the spatial ring and into Lin Ming's hands. It was as if it had a mind of its own. Lin Ming's entire body burst into a conflagration of shining flames. The Ancient Phoenix mark between his eyebrows seemed to come alive as a massive red phoenix soared out from Lin Ming directly flying into the horizon.

Bury the Heavens!

Lin Ming loudly shouted, his spear suddenly thrusting forwards.

In that moment, the surrounding power of fire seethed with lawless turmoil and the vast sea of fire beneath him was split asunder by his spear. A vortex of flame swirled back and a golden bloodline phoenix rushed out from between Lin Ming's eyebrows, fusing into one being with that red phoenix flying in the air.

At this time, Lin Ming had already become one with his spear. He was like a flaming meteor, racing across the skies and instantly flying out hundreds of miles away.

Ka ka ka!

Where the spear light traveled, space, red clouds, the sea of fire, everything was split in half by Lin Ming's spear!

Space collapsed. The turbulent space flow swept up together with the fire energy, turning into an endless black storm that blotted out the entire world.

Countless spinning space fragments shot out, completely breaking the void wherever they went. ...

...

Pa!

Outside of the God Transforming Mirror, with a light snapping sound, a web of cracks began to spread out from where Lin Ming's palm touched the mirror. It was like a small snake unfurling itself, instantly spreading half a foot!

Old man Jun's eyes instantly lit up. In 20 breaths of time, in just a mere 20 breaths of time, this young boy had broken through the first world! And looking at the extent of the cracks, the destruction of the first world was even more thorough than the last time!

This speed of progress was amazing!

"Nuyan Ming..." 100 feet away, Huo Wenlong gripped his fists together so tightly that they began to crackle. "He took just 20 breaths of time to break through the first world, but I could only last within for incense sticks of time before I couldn't withstand it anymore. Is the disparity between us really that great?"

If Huo Wenlong was once proud of how long he could stay within the first world, but now, staying in the first world for a long time was only his shame!

“He’s depending on brute strength to break through the world while I am relying on unraveling the laws in the crimson clouds of the first world in order to break through. Still, the difference shouldn’t be so great!” Huo Wenlong clenched his teeth as he saw that Lin Ming was about to attempt the second world of the God Transforming Mirror. All geniuses had prideful hearts. To see a rival blossom in glory in front of them, that would obviously leave a bitter taste in their mouths.

“Brother Long, are you leaving?” As Huo Ping saw the Huo Wenlong was turning to leave, he caught up with him, “Where is Brother Long going?”

“Training! I’m going to close up!” A fire had been lit in Huo Wenlong’s heart. “Rather than looking at other people’s results, it’s better to diligently train.”

Huo Wenlong strode out, leaving a gulping Huo Ping by himself. Huo Ping decided to stay and observe Lin Ming so he could report the situation back to Huo Wenlong.

Huo Wenlong should at least understand his opponent.

As old man Jun saw Huo Wenlong’s reaction, he remained expressionless. He only lit a sound transmitting talisman to inform Fairy Feng and the Timeworn Phoenix City Lord that Lin Ming had taken only 20 breaths of time to break past the first world.

At Nine Layer Tower, in the center of Timeworn Phoenix City, a tall red clothed man was sitting by an octagonal table, drinking tea. As he obtained this news, he placed his teacup down, his eyebrows pricking up as he said, “20 breaths of time to break past the first world? Not bad!”

This tall red clothed old man was the City Lord of Timeworn Phoenix City.

“20 breaths of time in the first world – he should be able to experience the second world.” Fairy Feng said from across the red clothed old man.

“Hehe, the second world is where the true terror begins. How long do you think Nuyan Ming can last? I don’t think he’ll even pass five breaths of time in there.” The red clothed old man said as he leaned over to sip some tea, eyeing Fairy Feng.

“I can’t say…” Fairy Feng shook her head. “I’ll have to see. Perhaps he might last longer than you guessed.”

At this time, within the hall of the God Transforming Mirror, Lin Ming had already stepped into the second world.

The second Concept of Fire Laws – Annihilation!

Fire was the power of annihilation. It could burn down forests, burn down houses, and burn down lives. Even rock and steel and other inflammable objects would melt and vaporize as long as the temperature of the fire was high enough.

When fire reached the limit of its temperature, it could break down everything into ions, twisting space itself!

Within the five elements, in terms of the power of annihilation, fire and thunder were the mightiest.

“This is the second world…”

Lin Ming discovered that he was standing on a bed of hot red molten rock. He was surrounded by great rivers of lava. Large chunks of dark red rocks floated in these rivers even as they seethed with heat, forming isolated islands or even more dangerous areas.

Plop! Plop!

Every bubble of air that popped up from the lava emitted a thick stench of sulfur. These gases were astoundingly hot; a martial artist with insufficient cultivation would have their lungs burnt away.

As Lin Ming swept out his perception he became aware that this was no ordinary lava. This lava was at least 10 times hotter than lava from the mortal world.

Bang, bang, bang!

Lin Ming suddenly heard deafening sounds from above, like great thunderclaps. As he looked up, he could see that thousands of crimson shining lights lit up the sky. These lights were just like vorpal swords, shooting towards Lin Ming at incredible speeds.

“Those are meteors!”

Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. He had seen a similar scene before in the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. The power of these meteors, the density, and their speed was countless times higher than those meteors in the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

This was truly a world of the annihilating power of fire!

The size of the meteors were too massive. It could be said that the entire world was filled with howling meteors. To avoid them was impossible; he could only choose a relatively sparse location.

Bang!

The first meteor landed, smashing into the rivers of lava and raising waves of molten rock tens of thousands of feet high. The earth shattered and terrifying shock waves swept up, overwhelming the world and blotting out the sky. Lin Ming’s complexion changed; there was nowhere to hide!

There were meteors that were dozens of feet, hundreds of feet, and even thousands of feet wide! Their power was just too horrible!

This was like the strike from a Supreme Elder from the Realm of the Gods. Although it might not directly strike Lin Ming, he still couldn’t withstand it if it landed near him. The power of these meteors was enough to destroy a great city large enough to house millions of people. Even if Lin Ming was a thousand feet away, he feared he would find it impossible to escape being injured.

For a moment, Lin Ming felt as if his chest had been struck. He desperately revolved all of his true essence to protect himself but he was still sent flying back like a piece of straw. His organs were messed up and he vomited a mouthful of blood. If it weren't for him having already opened the second of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and also having eaten the profound gold divine fruit to temper his body, then this strike would have instantly flattened Lin Ming into a pulp.

Puff!

Lin Ming landed in the lava. In the area where the meteor landed, the surrounding rock islands in a radius of several miles had been blown away, leaving nothing else but a sea of lava.

With an extreme burning heat enveloping him, Lin Ming's body instantly ignited. The temperature here was far more terrifying than the first world.

Chaotic and tyrannical fire energy wantonly broke into Lin Ming's meridians. If it weren't for the suppression from the Heretical God Seed, Lin Ming would have been severely wounded from this alone.

Lin Ming grit his teeth, summoning his true essence and flew out from the lava.

But before he could even catch his breath, another meteor had already smashed into the earth!

Without further ado, Lin Ming plunged back into the sea of lava.

Bang!

Even though he was deep in the lava, Lin Ming still couldn't block the incoming shockwave. He was tossed into the sky with the lava, vomiting great mouthfuls of blood that instantly charred to ashes in the air.

In the chaos, Lin Ming looked up into the sky. In the heavens, he could see a thick red fog that covered the world. Within this fog, there were massive chunks of crushed stone that burned brilliantly red like stars. These red stones spun around in the thick red fog, controlled by the mysterious rules of this world. As they moved, some scattered and some dispersed, forming meteors that then fell towards the earth.

This was the origin of meteors?

Lin Ming only saw this for several breaths of time before another group of meteors came falling down. A series of deafening explosions left Lin Ming's mind in a daze. The last meteor had nearly been half a mile wide, crashing down to the earth only 300 feet behind Lin Ming. At this time, Lin Ming could no longer bear the explosive power of the meteors. His body was torn apart by the shockwaves, and in the next moment, he was thrust out from the God Transforming Mirror.

Lin Ming's face was pallid as he drew back. He was still able to recall the image of the sky in the second world. Without a doubt, it was impossible to use absolute strength to destroy the second world. This second world contained the Laws of Annihilation. Even though those meteors were so powerful, they still hadn't been able to destroy the world, much less something like Lin Ming's attacks.

"The disparity is too great. The second world is of a completely different rank from the first world. With my strength, how could I possibly break through it?

Lin Ming was completely unable to think of a method.

Chapter 734 – Heaven-Step Fire Essence

Chapter 734 – Heaven-Step Fire Essence

…

…

…

"Seven breaths of time, that's also quite good. That's two more breaths of time than what I estimated!" Within the Nine Layer Tower in the center of Timeworn Phoenix City, the City Lord smiled as he spoke.

"I never thought that 100,000 years after the Nuyan Family was destroyed, they could actually rely on the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm they left behind to find such a promising little boy like this Nuyan Ming. There must have been a great lucky chance that lead to his current results." Fairy Feng tranquilly responded. It was far too normal for geniuses to come across lucky chances. Of those lower realm martial artists that were able to walk through the streets of Timeworn Phoenix City, 99% of them had come across some great lucky chance. As for the Realm of the Gods martial artists, although they might not have encountered some lucky chance, the truth was that being born in the Realm of the Gods itself was already a kind of lucky chance.

As for those Supreme Elders in the Realm of the Gods, it wasn't strange for them to encounter many lucky chances. Instead, it would be stranger if they hadn't.

The Timeworn Phoenix City Lord said, "Who cares about his lucky chances? What I like is this boy's will. Haven't you discovered that his will far surpasses the ordinary person? Of will, talent, and perception, the further down the road of martial arts you go, the more important will and perception become. I'm feeling good about this boy. Perhaps in the distance future, he might have a small chance of becoming an Elder level character with the Realm of the Gods Ancient Phoenix Clan.”

“I will give him some more resources to support him and then see just how he grows! If we interfere with him too much, it might actually negatively affect his destiny instead…”

…………..

As Lin Ming drew back from the God Transforming Mirror, old man Jun said with a satisfied expression, “You lasted in the world of annihilation for seven breaths of time. You have obtained the qualifications to perceive the Ancient Phoenix Totem Stone for four days. In addition, since you defeated the first world the first time, that is another seven days of meditation. That is a total of 11 days that you may use.

As old man Jun spoke, Huo Ping was scared silly.

11 days!

He only earned the qualifications to perceive through meditation for three days. Huo Yu had earned four days, and Huo Wenlong had earned five days. The three of them together only then more or less matched Lin Ming’s time.

Moreover, when that old man Jun said that Lin Ming still had seven days from breaking through the first world, that meant that he hadn’t even used his allotted time from before…

He hadn’t even used his time and yet he had already made such progress? After he used his time, then wouldn’t he be even more of a freak!?

Huo Ping gulped. He took out a sound transmitting talisman and passed on the news before leaving.

Just as Huo Wenlong was about to enter his dimension, a flame flashed in front of him and he heard Huo Ping’s message. His eyelids twitched and then he pinched the sound transmitting talisman to pieces.

Gritting his teeth, Huo Wenlong stepped into his own dimension and immediately began training.

…………

At this time, Lin Ming had already gone towards the Sky Corridor. He was prepared to meditate on the Burning Heaven Totem Stone. 11 days' time was enough for his understanding of the Ancient Phoenix Totem Stone to go up to yet another level.

Just as he was about to open the spell binding the door to the Burning Heaven Totem Stone's room, a true essence sound transmission suddenly sounded out in his ear, "Nuyan Ming, come to the central tower of Timeworn Phoenix City."

Lin Ming was startled. He had been at Timeworn Phoenix City long enough to know that the central tower was the City Lord Mansion of Timeworn Phoenix City.

Was this Senior Fairy Feng?

Lin Ming pondered over this for a moment before walking towards the central tower. In just an incense stick of time, he arrived at his destination.

The central tower had nine floors, and every floor was 111 feet high, so the total height was 999 feet. The Ancient Phoenix Clan worshiped the number nine.

After 9 was 10. After 99 was 100. After 999 was 1000. Nine naturally returned to one, symbolizing Samsara.

From nine to one, this was representative of a phoenix being reborn through nirvana.

When Lin Ming reached the central tower, there was already a guide waiting for him at the bottom. The guide brought Lin Ming directly to the top of the ninth floor.

Lin Minh opened a wooden door made from 10,000 year parasol tree wood. As Lin Ming entered the hall, he saw a woman in a red dress sitting on a phoenix throne. Next to her was an old man with red hair.

The red dressed woman looked between 30-40 years old, but her entire body emitted a noble and grandiose aura. As for the red haired old man, although he seemed shabby, his eyes actually shined with a dazzlingly sharp light.

Lin Ming was completely unable to see through the cultivation of these two.

"Junior Nuyan Ming greets the Seniors."

Lin Ming respectfully bowed. He had already guessed the identity of these two. The red dressed woman was the Supervisory Elder, Fairy Feng, and the old man was the City Lord of Timeworn Phoenix City.

"Nuyan Ming, you should have already guessed my status. I am the Supervisory Envoy of Timeworn Phoenix City, Fairy Feng, and by my side is the City Lord of Timeworn Phoenix City, Guru Blueflame. My Timeworn Phoenix City is one of the three king level smelting trial sites that the Ancient Phoenix Clan within the Realm of the Gods set up in the lower realms. Besides us, there is also the Sacred Flame Phoenix City and Fuxi Phoenix City. As someone who comes to my Timeworn Phoenix City, you can be considered a disciple of my Timeworn Phoenix City. The two of us have a touch of fate with you. We have watched your test within the God Transforming Mirror and your results were excellent. However, you must remember that the universe is limitless; there are always higher peaks and those above you! You must not slack off! As a martial artist from the lower realms, you are far from reaching the standard of the Realm of the Gods. The vast world of the Realm of the Gods far surpasses anything you could imagine!"

"Yes, this disciple will remember this." Lin Ming bowed. In truth, he didn't need Fairy Feng to remind him of this; he was well aware of just how horrifying the Realm of the Gods truly was.

Three thousand boundless words, a total of one billion worlds, was constantly sending outstanding elites to the Realm of the Gods. As for the Sky Spill Continent, the world was ruined in some catastrophe 100,000 years ago, causing it to fall from the once lofty heights it enjoyed. Thus, the other worlds probably sent up even more geniuses than anyone could imagine.

If one outstanding elite flew up every 100 years, then out of a billion worlds, in just 100,000 years, a trillion geniuses would ascend!

Moreover, these individuals were all geniuses amongst geniuses, unrivaled powerhouses of their era that stood at the very pinnacle of their worlds!

And besides these people, those from the Realm of the Gods were even more terrifying! Those people were the descendants of Supreme Elders from the Realm of the Gods; their starting points were far greater than the martial artists from the lower realms.

This Timeworn Phoenix City he not came into contact with couldn't even be considered the tip of the iceberg of the Realm of the Gods.

"Very good. As a disciple of my Timeworn Phoenix City, it is my responsibility to give you guidance. That being the case, I shall now give you two lucky chances." As Fairy Feng spoke she flicked her finger and two red lights flew into Lin Ming's hand.

This was a jade slip and a jade box.

Lin Ming glanced through the jade slip. This was also a detailed record of experiences regarding the Fire Laws, but its level of exquisiteness and profoundness far surpassed the jade slip that Fairy Feng had bestowed upon him earlier. It seemed that these two jade slips came from the same origin; there were many places that they confirmed and filled in the blanks of the other. If he could meditate on both of these together, then he would have twice the results with half the effort.

Fairy Feng said, "This is a jade slip left behind by an Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan before he underwent nirvana. He was also my first mentor. Now, I allow you to temporarily use this for reference. However, you must return this jade slip to me before you leave Timeworn Phoenix City."

As Lin Ming listened to this he was stunned. This was a relic left behind by Fair Feng's first mentor? Then, the degree that Fairy Feng valued this jade slip could be imagined.

Lin Ming deeply bowed, marking this kindness in his heart.

Although Fairy Feng said that directing him was her responsibility, to him, this was a massive lucky chance.

"It is better to walk than to read. This records in this jade slip are only for you to reference. Only when you begin to comprehend your own style will you gain the ability to reach higher boundaries of martial arts. But, there is also another lucky chance. Open it up and take a look."

"Yes."

Lin Ming reverentially put away the jade slip and opened the jade box.

As the jade box opened, a rich fire energy escaped. An explosive burst of animus filled the air, as if it wanted to tear Lin Ming apart.

In that moment, the Heretical God Seed began to faintly tremble; it seemed to be extremely excited. Lin Ming was floored. Could this be…

Flame Essence!?

Lin Ming looked down. Within the jade box, there was a cocoon that glowed like a fire burned in the center, lighting up the outside with a crimson brilliance.

This was really a Flame Essence! Not just that, but it was an extremely high ranking one!

Fairy Feng said, "This is a medium-grade heaven-step Flame Essence called the Burning Star Flame. It will be greatly beneficial to you for perceiving the Concept of Annihilation."

Burning Star Flame…

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. To burn down a star; that was pretty boastful.

Fairy Feng noticed what Lin Ming was thinking and faintly smiled. She said, "The name of this Flame Essence only represents how it was formed, not its level. Although the Flame Essence in your hand is named the Burning Star Flame, the truth is, that its level is too low to burn down a star. Above a Flame Essence is the even stronger Flame Elemental. To the present you, absorbing this medium-grade heaven-step Flame Essence is also very reluctant. This is already considering that your compatibility with fire is extremely high; you are far from the level of being able to come into contact with a Flame Elemental.

As Lin Ming heard Fairy Feng speak, he was suddenly enlightened. The Fallen Star Flame that he had already absorbed was a Flame Essence that was produced during the landing of a meteor. The rank of Flame Essence that a small meteor could form was naturally low. But, if it was formed when two stars that collided, then it was hard to imagine just what rank of Flame Essence would be boring.

Although there were very harsh conditions for the formation of a Flame Essence, the universe was so vast that the total number of Flame Essences was extremely terrifying. Moreover, once a Flame Essence was born, it was extremely difficult to destroy. After accumulating for several hundred millions of years or even billions of years, the number of Flame Essences would reach impressive figures.

Fairy Feng said, "The Annihilation World within the God Transforming Mirror is not something the Burning Heat World can compare with. Above Burning Heat is Annihilation. You can give up any idea of breaking through the Annihilation World with absolute strength alone. You must thoroughly comprehend the Fire Laws in order to do so.

"Absorbing the Burning Star Flame will be helpful to you perceiving the Laws of Annihilation. But remember, a Flame Essence is like a weapon; it is only an external factor. Your will, your understanding of Laws, those are your greatest strengths. If you can persist within the Annihilation World for 20 breaths of time, then come back and look for me. I will then give you some more guidance!"

“Yes, Senior.” Lin Ming deeply bowed again before excusing himself.

He didn’t go to the Sky Corridor to meditate on the Ancient Phoenix Totem Stone again. Instead, he returned to his own dimension, sealed the door and began his closed door seclusion.

Lin Ming took out the sealed jade box from his spatial ring.

A medium-grade heaven-step Flame Essence!’

Towards Fairy Feng, this was nothing at all. But, if this were placed in the Sky Spill Continent, it was enough to drive every fire-attribute Life Destruction martial artists crazy. Even fire-attribute Divine Sea Supreme Elders would be red-eyed with jealousy.

“Above a Flame Essence is actually a Flame Elemental…” Lin Ming took a deep breath. This was also within his expectations. Just like how a Saint artifact was above the rankings of treasures, the nine grades of Flame Essences only matched those of the lower realms. Within the Realm of the Gods there were naturally more powerful and terrifying existences.

“I wonder how much my strength will increase after I absorb this Burning Star Flame?” Lin Ming took a deep breath, his eyes shining with excitement.

Chapter 735 – Peak of the Middle Revolving Core Realm

Chapter 735 – Peak of the Middle Revolving Core Realm

…

…

…

Lin Ming sat down and began to undo the seal on the Burning Star Flame.

There were a total of nine seals. Even when Lin Ming had only undone three seals, the entire jade box directly melted into a puddle and extraordinary heat waves flooded the air. Luckily, Lin Ming was in his own dimension; if he was in a house, then he feared the entire structure would have been set ablaze.

As the seventh and eighth seal were undone, the Flame Essence blazed with a blinding light. He could feel a scorching pain in the retinas of his eyes.

Finally, Lin Ming undid the ninth seal. Purple red flames instantly soared upwards for several moments, gathering into a mass of burning purple flames that howled in the air, as if it were a ferocious monster.

There was a deep rumbling sound as if a meteor were crashing into orbit from tens of thousands of miles in the air, whistling as it tore through the atmosphere, dragging a raging tale of flames behind it.

"So this is the Burning Star Flame."

Lin Ming looked at the brilliant mass of flames that twisted in front of him. In the center of this cluster of flames, there were a number of purple stripes with deeper hues that revolved in the center.

Lin Ming's mind stirred and he touched his perception on these purple strips. He discovered that these purple strips was fire energy so highly concentrated that it had become liquid.

This was a phenomenon that would only occur with a heaven-step Flame Essence. And beyond that, once flames reached the level of a Fire Elemental, the fire energy would solidify into a crystal core of fire energy as if it were a true seed.

After absorbing this Flame Essence, a trace of the Flame Essence's energy would remain in his body, becoming energy that nourished his Revolving Core, helping it to grow even more.

Of course, this was only if one's comprehension of Laws was high enough and if one's Revolving Core foundation was solid enough. Otherwise, it would easily lead to instability.

Normally speaking, a martial artist could only have one Flame Essence within them. In order to absorb a new Flame Essence, they would have to discard the old one. To discard a Flame Essence that they had raised and fused with for more than a year, that would naturally cause one to lose a certain portion of their strength. But Lin Ming had no such problems.

With the Heretical God Seed, he could continue to freely absorb Flame Essences.

With a deep breath, Lin Ming directly pressed that mass of purple flames towards his heart. As it touched his body, the purple flames sent out a deafening roar that echoed through the world, the volume ten times louder than before. It was like an ancient great beast existed within the flames, roaring as it faced Lin Ming, unwilling to be swallowed up just like this.

Lin Ming coldly snorted and began twisting his fingers together. True essence erupted and layers upon layers of nearly endless true essence locked onto that group of purple flames with the Laws of Fire supporting it.

Roarr!

The Burning Star Flame seemed to have a consciousness of its own. It began to crazily struggle against Lin Ming's shackles. In the instant that it touched Lin Ming, the Heretical God Seed began violently trembling, releasing faint cries like an awakening dragon. The Burning Star Flame appeared as if it had encountered its absolute nemesis and suddenly appeared much more despondent.

Hu hu hu -!

The Heretical God Seed formed a massive vortex that ruthlessly sucked up all the fire energy from the Burning Star Flame. Even so, a massive amount of fire energy escaped outwards, filling Lin Ming's limbs and body with a magma like heat.

Sweat rapidly dripped down from Lin Ming's forehead. This brutally sadistic energy was to a degree he could completely withstand.

In the end, Fairy Feng had underestimated Lin Ming's ability to control fire energy, and this was because she didn't know about the existence of the Heretical God Seed. She had also misjudged the speed at which Lin Ming comprehended Fire Laws with the help of the Heretical God Seed.

Even if it were a higher level Flame Essence than the Burning Star Flame, Lin Ming also had a certain confidence that he could successfully absorb it.

Of course, the main reason that Fairy Feng gifted the Burning Star Flame to Lin Ming was to help him in understanding the Concept of Annihilation. The rank of the Burning Star Flame was not that important to begin with. A Flame Essence was only an external force; it could be replaced at any time in the future.

But, Laws and Concepts were different, they were something that truly belonged to oneself. From this alone, this Burning Star Flame suited Lin Ming far more.

Without knowing how much time had passed, a faint red light began emitting from Lin Ming, covering him in layers like a cocoon and completely enveloping him.

As the Heretical God Seed absorbed the power of fire, the Black Hole crystal core in Lin Ming's dantian was also recklessly swallowing the power of fire. Although Lin Ming had just broken through to the middle Revolving Core realm not too long ago, his foundations were unbelievably solid. After being repeatedly baptized by the energy of Timeworn Phoenix City and beginning to comprehend the source Laws, his cultivation speed had reached an astonishing rate. He was rapidly approaching the late Revolving Core realm.

2 hours… 4 hours… 6 hours…

After half a day passed, the energy within Lin Ming's body began to churn violently. The absorption of the Burning Star Flame had reached the final stage. The fire energy within his meridians and dantian had been compressed into essence. If a normal Revolving Core martial artist wanted to absorb a heaven-step Flame Essence, that would simply be suicide. So much energy in their bodies would cause them to burst open, dying in a bloody and horrible manner.

After an hour passed, Lin Ming's eyes suddenly shot open, his eyes like sharp swords that pierced through the void.

"Gather!"

Boom!

A tide of red energy erupted outwards from Lin Ming, causing the space around him to vigorously shake. Lin Ming's body turned clear red as if he were formed from a blood agate.

At this point, he had completely absorbed the Burning Star Flame.

Lin Ming let out a light breath; his entire back was soaked in sweat. Just absorbing the Burning Star Flame would have left him exhausted. But as he absorbed the Burning Star Flame, he had also borrowed its energy to nourish his dantian. The difficulty of doing both these things together was much greater.

In terms of his dantian, the Revolving Core crystal nucleus had become a size larger and it also spun around at a higher speed. Although he hadn't been able to break through to the late Revolving Core realm, the difference wasn't too great. Lin Ming's cultivation now rested at the peak of the middle Revolving Core realm.

On the other hand, near his heart, the Burning Star Flame had been completely absorbed by the Heretical God Seed, turning into a crystal core that shone like a star. It revolved around the Heretical God Seed. The lower level Flame Essence that he had absorbed before, the Earthcore Crimson Flame and the Fallen Star Flame, had all been completely absorbed by the Burning Star Flame, turning into smaller star-like crystal cores that spun around the Burning Star Flame.

It was as if the Heretical God Seed were the sun, the Burning Star Flame was a planet, and the Earthcore Crimson Flame and Fallen Star Flame were moons. These sort of revolution matched the movements of the heavens, faintly interlinking with the Laws of the heavens.

"Peak of the middle Revolving Core along with a medium-grade heaven-step Flame Essence added in. With the Flame Essence as a reference for the Law of Annihilation, I should return to the Sky Corridor to meditate on the Burning Heaven Totem Stone there. 11 days later, when I return to attack the second world of the God Transforming Mirror again, I wonder just how far I would be able to go?

Lin Ming gripped his fists together and headed towards the Sky Corridor.

…………

“My apologies Sir Nuyan Ming, the Sky Corridor’s Burning Heaven Totem Stone training chamber is currently occupied. There should still be half a day until it is open again. As Lin Ming arrived at the Sky Corridor he was stopped by a guard.

“It’s no problem. I’ll wait.”

“Mm… according to the records, Sir Nuyan Ming, you have… 11 days of meditation time?” The guard was surprised for a moment. A double digit figure of 11 days was quite exaggerated. “Sir Nuyan, may I inquire as to how many days you would like to register for?”

“All of it!”

Li Ming said without hesitation.

“All of it? Are you sure?” The guard was startled. A martial artist normally cherished every chance, every second they had to meditate on the Ancient Phoenix Totem Stones. They would meditate on them for 3-4 days at a time and then leave to absorb what they learned, only then returning again to meditate on the Ancient Phoenix Totem Stones some more. The guard never imagined that Li Ming would use 11 days in a single breath. To undergo high intensity enlightenment for 11 days was difficult; it would easily lead to wasted time.

“Yes, I would like to use all my time!” Lin Ming said, without a trace of doubt in his voice.

“Alright.” The guard recorded down the time.

Lin Ming sat in meditation outside of the Sky Corridor. After a period of time, someone finally walked out from the Burning Heaven Totem Stone chamber, looking a bit reluctant. This other martial artist was at the Life Destruction realm.

Lin Ming expressionlessly walked into the chamber, beginning his 11 days of enlightenment.

On the totem stone, those hundreds of small flames that combined into infinite mysteries were still as enigmatic as before.

Underneath Lin Ming's gaze, these flames seemed to dance, their ghostly movements swaying along to the Heavenly Dao Laws that he witnessed in the World of Annihilation.

All the images reflected in Lin Ming's pupils before being engraved onto the golden totem on the Heretical God Seed, permanently recording themselves there. But near the Heretical God Seed, from the crystal core formed by the Burning Star Flame and also from the golden totem, a faint red light began to shine...

Time slowly passed. Lin Ming was like a sculpture as he sat unmovingly in front of the Ancient Phoenix Totem Stone.

Three days, five days, seven days, nine days...

"Oh? That little fellow Nuyan Ming used up his entire 11 day enlightenment period all at once?" In the center tower of Timeworn Phoenix City, Guru Blueflame had just obtained this news. Although he had taken a slight fancy towards Lin Ming's potential, that didn't mean he would always be concerned about him.

Yes, it's been nine days already. I was just informed of this matter. Using up 11 days at once isn't too wise. Separating the days and using the spare time in between to figure out the problems would have a much better effect." On the other side of Guru Blueflame, Fairy Feng pressed her slender eyebrows together.

"That's the normal case, but this Nuyan Ming kid isn't stupid. He definitely knows what is best for himself and he certainly has his own ideas about what he is doing." Guru Blueflame indifferently said as he took a sip of tea.

Fairy Feng slightly nodded. "That's true, but I only fear he is too confident in himself. Eleven days all grouped together! Even if his perception his high, he would simply exhaust his mind, leading to fatigue. Three days ago, Huo Wenlong also defeated the first world, and he did so by thoroughly comprehending the Laws of power there, finally reversing the revolution of Laws so that the fire energy caused the world to collapse from the foundation onwards. This method of breaking past the first world is even more sophisticated than what Nuyan Ming did…”

“Hahaha!’ Guru Blueflame placed his cup of tea down, laughing. “From your words, it seems as if you’re worried that someone will surpass Nuyan Ming. Huo Wenlong is also a disciple of my Timeworn Phoenix City. It’s good for both of them if there’s a bit of friendly competition. Then again, it’s far too early for Huo Wenlong to think of defeating Lin Ming; he can only last for three breaths of time in the second world…”

“Mm… I wonder what sort of results Nuyan Ming will show this time.” As Fairy Feng thought this, she was actually anticipating his progress.

Then, two more days passed.

“The time has come, please exit!”

A voice like a thunderclap sounded out in Lin Ming’s ears, startling him from his meditative state. Slowly, his eyes opened. In that moment, the inverted images of the evolution of celestial bodies appeared in his eyes. Countless stars falling from the heavens, burning, combusting, exploding with the power of fire, directly impacting into the endless blue skies!

“11 days, I wonder with my current understanding towards the Concept of Annihilation, just how long can I last within the God Transforming Mirror?”

Lin Ming took a deep breath and stood up. He had made many comprehensions within the God Transforming Mirror that he wished to verify for himself.

Chapter 736 – Leaving Seclusion

Chapter 736 – Leaving Seclusion

…

…

…

“Oh? Nuyan Ming has left seclusion?”

In Timeworn Phoenix City, the other martial artists had already heard this news. There were even some martial artists that had returned to Timeworn Phoenix City a second time for the smelting trial that were piqued by Lin Ming’s situation.

“I wonder if Nuyan Ming will go directly to the God Transforming Mirror…” A martial artist said, his voice tinged with envy and worship.

“He should go close up for another period of time. There are many martial artists that will have numerous new comprehensions after enlightening themselves with the totem stones. They need to thoroughly digest everything they’ve learned so that their grasp of it is greater.”

“How long will Nuyan Ming last this time? Can he break through the second world?”

“Break through the second world? Don’t be silly, how simple do you think the second world is. The God Transforming Mirror has a total of nine different worlds. If you can break through the sixth and seventh, then your power is equivalent to a Holy Lord. If you break through the ninth then you are the incarnation of a fire god. If you want to break through the second world, you would need strength at least equal to a Divine Sea powerhouse from the mortal worlds. Nuyan Ming is talented, but his cultivation is only at the Revolving Core realm; how can he possibly break through the second world already? If he can last for a few breaths more of time then that’s believable, but anything beyond that would be too freakish.”

“Power to contend with a Divine Sea powerhouse from the mortal worlds?” The martial artists present were startled as they heard this. Although the mortal worlds were nothing compared to the Realm of the Gods, a Divine Sea powerhouse was still a top level existence within those lower realms and they were still at a level that these young martial artists couldn’t match yet.

As everyone was discussing Lin Ming, they actually received the news that he had gone straight to the God Transforming Mirror!

He didn’t go back into seclusion but instead rushed directly there!

“This Nuyan Ming fellow is too confident in himself!

“I wonder what he managed to comprehend these past 11 days. I really envy him!”

Besides masters like Lin Ming and Huo Wenlong, most martial artists here didn’t have the chance to close up for such a long period of time. In fact, they had very few chances to enlighten themselves with the totem stones. When they could no longer perceive the Laws through meditation, they could only come out from their dimensions and watch the revolution of energy Laws of Timeworn Phoenix City, obtaining some minor understandings from experience.

………

At the entrance to the God Transforming Mirror’s hall, old man Jun smiled as he looked at Lin Ming and said, “You came straight here instead of closing up for some more?”

Lin Ming replied, “These past days, this disciple has a few things that he wishes to try. I can’t wait any longer.”

In these past 11 days, Lin Ming had achieved an extremely high degree of understanding towards the Concept of Burning Heat and had even seen through the next level to the Concept of Annihilation. With so many new comprehensions, he wanted to determine whether these were true or not and could only do so by testing them in the world of the God Transforming Mirror.

Although Lin Ming was well aware that his progress would be even better if he closed up some more, to Lin Ming, this sort of progress wasn't important. What was important was enhancing his understandings of Laws and Concepts.

"The God Transforming Mirror is in use. It will be ready in less than an hour."

In Timeworn Phoenix City, there was only a single God Transforming Mirror and all the martial artists needed to use the God Transforming Mirror in their smelting trial. Although the time for each use was very short, one would often encounter a situation in which the God Transforming Mirror was being occupied by others.

After calmly waiting for an hour, old man Jun lit up a sound transmitting talisman to Fairy Feng, informing her that Lin Ming had come to the God Transforming Mirror.

This was the first smelting trial test after Lin Ming came out of seclusion. Thus, he naturally attracted the attention of a massive number of martial artists.

However, Huo Wenlong and Huo Yu hadn't come. After all, looking at someone else bathe in glory wasn't too comfortable for them, not to mention that Huo Wenlong was also in seclusion perceiving the Laws too.

With a hand touching the God Transforming Mirror, Lin Ming instantly entered into a trance.

"First world, break!"

In the God Transforming Mirror, Lin Ming grasped his red long spear and immediately used Bury the Heavens. By consuming just 40% of his strength the first world directly collapsed around him!

In just six breaths of time, he had broken through the first world!

Old man Jun's eyes brightened. This was a result that defied the will of the heavens!

At the location where Lin Ming's palm touched the God Transforming Mirror, a small crack appeared. This crack was even larger than the last one; it was nearly a full foot long.

Six breaths to break through the first world, creating a crack in the mirror a foot long...

The martial artists who witnessed this were dumbfounded. Lin Ming's progress was simply too quick. None of them could think of catching up to him so they simply didn't bother comparing with him.

"The second world!"

Lin Ming stood at the bank of roiling rivers of lava. As he looked to the sky, the vast expanse of the heavens was covered in a chain of red stars. Giant meteors were born from this chain of stars, howling as they came crashing down!

This world held the Annihilation Concept of Fire. The power of space in this world was nearly indestructible. With Lin Ming's strength, he couldn't even shake it, much less tear it apart. If he wanted to destroy this world then he could only rely on the Law of Annihilation to reverse the chain of stars, breaking the balance between those glowing red lights and cause the world's power of annihilation to implode in on itself, eventually collapsing.

But Lin Ming's understanding towards the Concept of Fire hadn't reached such heights yet, his understandings of the Laws weren't even close. Not just that, but his strength was insufficient to reverse the chain of stars to begin with, so breaking the second world was simply a dream.

The reason he came to this second world was to substantiate the comprehensions he had made.

Woosh!

The first meteor came howling down, dragging a long tail of flames behind it. Lin Ming had no intention of dodging it. This rain of meteors was simply too dense. No matter where he tried to hide, he would still be caught up in the shockwaves of the explosions.

Lin Ming flourished his long spear, the image of the falling meteor reflecting in his ink black eyes.

Bang!

The meteor crashed into the ground. The earth was torn apart and massive amounts of lava sprayed into the air, raising giant waves thousands of feet high!

As the shockwaves recklessly burst out, the images of the dancing flames of the Burning Heaven Totem Stone appeared in Lin Ming's mind. Burning Heaven Totem Stone, annihilation of the heavens, the most exquisite Law contained within it was the Concept of Annihilation!

"Break for me!!"

Lin Ming gave a loud shout. The long spear in his hands was like a red flood dragon as it pierced forth. An azure spear light followed behind it, directly impacting into violent waves of lava!

A flash like a birthing sun shined out. In that instant, the waves of flames were split apart by Lin Ming!

In terms of strength, these meteors that were hundreds of feet wide and had power comparable to that of a Supreme Elder from the Realm of the Gods. Even the shockwaves were not something that Lin Ming could withstand.

However, what happened was that Lin Ming had torn apart these shock waves, opening a haven of safety for himself within the raging energy.

This was the cleverness of Laws. If Lin Ming could thoroughly realize the Annihilation Laws of the second world then he could rise from weakness here and find a path to live.

After breaking apart the first waves of turbulent lava, Lin Ming's face flushed red with blood. Without even time to catch his breath, there was another deafening explosion as the second meteor impacted the ground!

Lin Ming summoned his true essence, raising his spear.

Chasing Sun!

With a spear thrust, he flew ten miles across the skies. The surging seas of lava were once again pierced through by Lin Ming.

Then, the third meteor!

This meteor was far larger than the last two meteors; it was nearly half a mile wide. When it crashed into the ground the entire earth shook and countless shattered stones and even the core of the world itself seemed as if it would be destroyed. Lava shot up, reaching into the heavens. As Lin Ming faced these turbulent waves of flames, he released the Heretical God Force to its limit. The Heretical God Seed howled as compressed true essence poured out!

Bury the Heavens!

A spear thrust out. Lin Ming reversed the power of space, and with his understanding of the Concept of Fire, this nearly 1000 foot wall of lava was torn apart by him!

In these three penetrating attacks, Lin Ming had consumed a great deal of energy. But, his ability to restore himself was similarly astounding. Lin Ming thrust forth his spear the fourth time – Penetrating Rainbow!

Bang bang bang!

Meteors continued to howl as they came roaring down. The earth was torn apart, hundreds of massive pits appearing in the ground. All of the rock islands had long been crushed to bits. Lava rained down on everything, covering the world!

Strike after strike came piercing out. Lin Ming was like a flood dragon swimming in a sea of lava. Chasing Sun, Chasing Thunder, Penetrating Rainbow, Bury the Heavens, all of these moves were used repeatedly again and again!

And this entire scene fell into Fairy Feng and Guru Blueflame's eyes.

"This boy, he's using the meteor shower in the God Transforming Mirror's second world as a place to gain experience." Guru Blueflame smiled, his tone filled with appreciation.

Out of Lin Ming's various moves, the truth was that Chasing Sun was the most suitable for breaking through the Concept of Fire. Chasing Sun was itself a move purely based off the Concept of Fire and its strength was decent too.

As for Bury the Heavens and Penetrating Rainbow, while these moves were stronger, the use of energy was also that much greater. In an extended battle, Lin Ming should have used Chasing Sun in order to minimize the amount of energy used and make the greatest progress.

But Lin Ming didn't do this. From Chasing Sun to Bury the Heavens, he used different moves every time. He even used Chasing Thunder which didn't have a matching Concept during the weaker shockwaves.

This was because only when one used different moves in different situations would one have a more profound comprehension of the Annihilation Laws. He did this all in order to verify the truths he had comprehended in the Sky Corridor.

Doing this would certainly cause a far greater consumption of energy and affect his final results to a certain degree. If Lin Ming was a vain person who only desired fame, then he wouldn't have done as such.

Guru Blueflame and Fairy Feng were both characters that had lived for over 10,000 years. With their vision, they naturally saw what Lin Ming was attempting. Thus, this was why Guru Blueflame appreciated Lin Ming's decision.

"20 breaths of time. Nuyan Ming's endurance is far better than what I imagined." Fairy Feng generously praised.

"Mm… his endurance comes from his body transformation achievements. A dual cultivation of body and essence.. there aren't many heroic young elites in the Realm of the Gods that would attempt this. To reach this step at such a tender age, he must have experienced a great deal of pain but also a great deal of lucky chances. I think that he shouldn't be able to last much longer. Perhaps up to 30 breaths of time."

As Guru Blueflame and Fairy Feng spoke, several more breaths of time passed. Lin Ming had already consumed 60% of his true essence. His forehead was dripping with large beads of sweat and the Ancient Phoenix flame mark between his eyebrows was dark red like blood.

Bang!

Another meteor half a mile wide smashed into the ground. Lin Ming's body was tossed up like a leaf. As he drew back he thrust out his spear several times, demolishing the shockwaves of flames. However, the aftershocks still rushed into his meridians, minorly wounding him.

25 breaths of time, 26 breaths of time, 27 breaths of time… 30 breaths of time!

The meteor shower became increasingly dense. Lin Ming's pupils were filled with the phantom of flames. The red long spear in his hand was scorched deep red, and even though Lin Ming was proficient in the Laws of Fire, there were still multiple burn wounds on his body.

31 breaths of time, 32 breaths of time…

Lin Ming’s inner true essence rapidly depleted!

When one had 100% of their physical strength remaining, it was possible to easily defeat an opponent. However, when one only had 20-30% of their strength remaining, even if they gave it their all they still might not be able to wound their opponent, and they would even consume more strength at a faster rate.

At 33 breaths of time, a massive meteor nearly a mile wide came crashing down. For a time, it was like the sea of lava completely flipped upside down. The sky turned completely red and the lava nearly reached the chain of stars hanging in the heavens.

Lin Ming could no longer withstand this. His vision went black and he instantly passed out.

Final result – 33 breaths of time!

Chapter 737 – The Final Test

Chapter 737 – The Final Test

…

…

…

A result of 33 breaths of time was astonishing, but to the martial artists who hadn't yet experienced the second world, it wasn't as horrifying as they thought. This was because they could only contrast this with Huo Wenlong's result of three breaths of time.

33 breaths of time to 3 breaths of time, that was a difference of eleven times.

"Nuyan Ming, come to the Nine Layer Tower in the center of Timeworn Phoenix Tower." As Lin Ming withdrew from the God Transforming Mirror, Fairy Feng's true essence sound transmission sounded in his mind.

"Yes, Senior."

Lin Ming nodded. Before this, Fairy Feng had bade him to see her again once he could surpass 20 breaths of time in the second world.

…

…

Fairy Feng was wearing a red dress as before. Every movement she made gave off a noble, lofty temperament. Her appearance was that of a 30- or 40-year-old young married woman, beautiful, curvaceous, and in the prime of her life. But the truth was that she was an existence that had been alive for over 10,000 years.

Fairy Feng raised her hand and several red lights shot into Lin Ming's palm. When Lin Ming looked down, he saw that they were three array discs and a jade slip.

"Take a look."

Lin Ming nodded and input some true essence into one of the array discs. A phantom scene suddenly popped up, playing in the air. Meteors came crashing towards the earth, dragging long tails of flame behind them. And in the sea of lava, a young, red-clothed man stood there, a long spear in his hand as he faced the might of the world alone.

Bang!

A meteor smashed into the ground. Waves of roiling lava shot up into the sky, but that red-clothed youth calmly broke through the waves, his clothes not even disturbed in the least, an easygoing look on his face.

This person was…

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. In this scene, this red-clothed youth's comprehension of the Laws far surpassed him.

Lin Ming continued to watch. The more he saw, the more charmed he became. It was only after an incense stick of time passed that the images were interrupted.

"Senior, the person in this scene is…"

"This is from tens of thousands of years ago, the scene of my Honorable Master in the second world of the God Transforming Mirror. Now, this array disc will be lent to you. I hope that you will be able to obtain some insights from it. But remember. What others have comprehended may not necessarily be suitable for you. You must form your own comprehensions from this array disc."

As Lin Ming heard this he felt overjoyed. He would be able to obtain a great deal of inspirations from this array disc. He gave a deep bow and reverentially said, “Thank you for your guidance, Senior.”

“Mm…there are also two other array discs. Take a look at them.”

Lin Ming activated the second array disc.

Another series of phantom images appeared. This was still the second world of the God Transforming Mirror. But the character in this scene was a red-dressed woman; she looked somewhat similar to Fairy Feng. Upon closer inspection, this was actually a scene of a younger Fairy Feng in the God Transforming Mirror’s second world.

Lin Ming took a deep breath, feeling grateful to Fairy Feng from the bottom of his heart.

Fairy Feng said, “This is a recording of my experience in the God Transforming Mirror’s second world. Compared to my Honorable Master, I am much more foolish and slower than him. Still, this should be of some help to you. These two array discs will be lent to you for month. Afterwards, return them to me. As for the third array disc and also that jade slip, they are gifted to you. Go ahead and take a look at them.”

Lin Ming activated the third array disc. He thought that this would be the phantom images of another senior in the God Transforming Mirror, but he never thought that it would actually be the scene of himself within the second world.

Lin Ming was happy and surprised. If he could watch his own moves from the vantage point of a spectator, then it would be easier to find any problems, not to mention that he also had Fairy Feng and her Honorable Master’s array discs as a reference comparison.

As for that last jade slip, Lin Ming swept his perception through it. There were only several hundred words written inside in Fairy Feng’s writing. The notes pointed out some deficiencies in his moves. Fairy Feng must have casually written them down after watching him in the second world just a while ago.

What sort of unbelievable cultivation boundary was Fairy Feng at? Even if she casually gave him some pointers, this was still enough to give him a great deal of inspiration.

"Nuyan Ming, I wrote down ways to correct some of your problems in that jade slip. But I hope that you do not look at this jade slip at the start. Instead, look at the three array discs to improve yourself first. Enlightening yourself and understanding your own style will give you the most profound advantage. As for the words I have written, lay them down for now. I hope that by the time you have finished meditating on the array discs and looked at the jade slip, you will have discovered that you have already corrected the problems listed within.

"Well. This is the limit of guidance I shall give to you for now. Go back and close up. By the time you have been at Timeworn Phoenix City for 100 days, there will be a messenger from the Realm of the Gods coming down to inspect the situation of your smelting trial. When that time comes, I hope that you will be able to show excellent results. Someone from the Realm of the Gods will take a look at your assessment three times. At 100 days, 200 days, and 300 days. The first assessment at 100 days is the most difficult. If you can show amazing results, then that will also be your final assessment and you may obtain the rewards for completing the first stage of the king level smelting trial as well as returning to your Sky Spill Continent. At that time, your fate with me shall be considered finished. In the future, if you enter into the Realm of the God Ancient Phoenix Clan, then perhaps we shall also have a chance to meet again."

"Now leave!"

"Yes, Senior. Senior, this junior shall forever engrave this kindness into my heart." Lin Ming was very grateful to Fairy Feng and Guru Blueflame for their guidance. For them, these were only minor matters not even worth mentioning. Perhaps every time they meet a good seedling in a round of the smelting trial they would also do these things. But for Lin Ming, this help would allow him to lay a much more solid foundation in a shorter time, allowing him to achieve more magnificent results in the future.

Lin Ming bade Fairy Feng farewell. Then, he returned to his own dimension and sealed it with a spell, adamantly putting out a notice that he would refuse all visitors as he started his closed-door seclusion.

Three phantom image array discs, the several jade slips that Fairy Feng had given him containing experiences of Laws and Concepts, as well as what he had learned from meditating on the Ancient Phoenix Totem Stone.

All of this required time to fully absorb.

For a month and a half, Lin Ming completely isolated himself, no longer going out.

During this time, Lin Ming's progress was slower than when he had meditated on the Ancient Phoenix Totem Stone. However, this was ultimately the process of consolidating his foundation.

As Lin Ming meditated on the Fire Laws, a faint trace of this source energy was kept in his dantian, constantly nourishing the Revolving Core there.

After 50 days passed, Lin Ming still hadn't taken a single step out of his dimension. During this time, Huo Wenlong had already managed to persist for 20 breaths of time in the second world, Huo Yu for 10, and Huo Ping had also just managed to break through the first world. Up to now, five martial artists had managed to break through the first world. Besides Lin Ming, every single other person was a martial artist from the Realm of the Gods.

On the 55th day of Lin Ming's seclusion, a red spirit boat appeared in the skies above Timeworn Phoenix City. This spirit boat was half a mile long, and images of phoenixes undergoing nirvana in a sea of fire were engraved onto the hull. The spirit boat was pulled by nine golden crows, releasing phoenix-like cries as they flew, emanating a grandiose aura.

The spirit boat stopped above the Nine Layer Tower at the center of Timeworn Phoenix City. A man wearing red armor and carrying a golden war lance stepped out.

“Haha, old buddy, you’ve come to personally manage the assessment this time?” From within Nine Layer Tower, Guru Blueflame flew out to greet the spirit boat. He was apparently old friends with this red-armored warrior.

The red-armored warrior loudly laughed. He said, “Blueflame, Long time no see! You’re looking so much better already!”

“Bah, what are you talking about? This old man is always looking great!” As Guru Blueflame spoke, he actually sighed with emotion. “Ever since I was injured in the war with those other clans, I’ve been slowly recuperating in Timeworn Phoenix City, giving some casual pointers to these juniors. I’ve only returned to the Realm of the Gods three times in the last 3000 years. I’m afraid I haven’t seen you for an entire 2000 years!”

“Close enough, time passes too fast!” The red-armored warrior sighed, a hint of sadness tinting his voice. He was over a twelve thousand years old. In the blink of an eye, 2000 years had passed; it was natural to feel surging emotions. “Have your old wounds recovered yet?”

“They’re no longer a problem. Although this old man can’t rebirth myself in a nirvana of flames, recovering from some old injuries isn’t a problem.” Guru Blueflame stroked his beard, laughing as he said, “That’s right, you’re here this time to manage the 100 day assessment?”

“That’s right. I just had a sudden inspiration to see if there were any good seedlings about. After they mature in the future, perhaps they might join my army!” The red-armored warrior was an army general from the Ancient Phoenix Clan in the Realm of the Gods. If there were any outstanding young elites here who wanted to join the army, they would naturally come under his command.

“Speaking of good seedlings, there really are a few here. Huo Yu and Huo Wenlong are both from the Huo Clan. Huo Yu can now last for 10 breaths of time in the second world and Huo Wenlong can last for 20!”

“20 breaths of time?” The red-armored warrior didn’t seem surprised. He nodded and said, “That’s nothing impressive, but it’s not too bad either.”

The red-armored warrior’s frigid and imperious tone was well within Guru Blueflame’s expectations. He laughed, saying, “Old buddy! Ahh, your judgment is too high! This is the lower realms, not the Realm of the Gods. But still...”

As Guru Blueflame spoke here, he deliberately drew out his words, tempting the red-armored warrior and stirring his interest. It was only then that he said, “Speaking of someone more outstanding than Huo Wenlong, there really is someone like that. Nuyan Ming is from the lower realms but now he is able to persist in the God Transforming Mirror’s second world for 33 breaths of time.

“33 breaths of time?” The red-armored warriors eyebrows pricked up, but there still wasn’t any surprised expression on his face. “That’s decent, but not too surprising. I can only say that perhaps there might be some hope in this assessment.”

“Hehe.” Guru Blueflame revealed an expression that he had already anticipated this reaction. With a great deal of satisfaction he said, “What I mentioned was his last result. But recently he has closed up in seclusion. After he exits, you can take a long, hard look at just how good his performance is. Perhaps after he enters the Realm of the Gods, he won’t bother to join your army as cannon fodder!”

As the red-armored warrior listened to Guru Blueflame talk, he glared back and said, “What are you saying? My army is comprised of elites of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. How could they possibly be cannon fodder? In fact, this time, when I went to Sacred Flame Phoenix City, I did indeed find a good seedling willing to join my command in the future!”

“Sacred Flame Phoenix City?” Guru Blueflame curled his lips in disdain. “Are you talking about that little loser city in the middle of nowhere? Heh, all they produce is a few big kittens every year. How could they possible compare to my Timeworn Phoenix City? I can hold my hands behind my back and still defeat them!”

Sacred Flame Phoenix City and Timeworn Phoenix City were the same; both of them king level smelting trial sites in the lower realms. Naturally, these two king level smelting trial sites were ruthless in fighting each other for the top position, none willing to admit they were inferior to the other. Generally speaking, Timeworn Phoenix City had the most minor advantage, but it wasn’t as exaggerated as Guru Blueflame mentioned.

The red-armored warrior thought this was quite funny. He said, “Leather can’t be broken by blowing through it. That youth truly is excellent. He managed to last in the second world for 45 breaths of time. In addition, he also made good progress in the 100 day assessment.”

Chapter 738 – Blood of the Ancient Phoenix

Chapter 738 – Blood of the Ancient Phoenix

…

…

…

“45 breaths of time?” As Guru Blueflame heard the number ‘45’ he felt his heart thump for a moment. What horrible luck! 45 breaths of time was already defying the heavens. How could Sacred Flame Phoenix City have been such lucky bastards and picked up such a talented person this time around?

In the lower realms, there were three king level trial sites of the Ancient Phoenix Clan – Fuxi Phoenix City, Timeworn Phoenix City, and Sacred Flame Phoenix City. It was already very rare for a talent like Huo Wenlong to be produced. But to last for 45 breaths of time before the 100 day assessment, that was even rarer.

After 30 breaths of time, the meteors that came falling from the sky would vastly increase in terms of force. When Lin Ming had reached 33 breaths of time, he had perished there because he had encountered a giant meteor nearly a mile wide.

If a meteor’s diameter increased from half a mile to a mile, the weight would be nearly eight times that of the original! Thus, the explosive impact force would also increase by nearly eight times.

Thus after 30 breaths of time, the difficulty would increase at an exponential rate.

As for how long Lin Ming could last in that situation, Guru Blueflame lacked assurance in his heart.

“How about it, eh? Not bad, right? After this young man that can last for 45 breaths of time reaches the Divine Sea and ascends into the Realm of the Gods, he will join under my command as a soldier.” A faint smile hung on the red armored warrior’s lips as he waited for Guru Blueflame to wither away.

“45 breaths of time isn’t even worth a fart. Nuyan Ming can easily accomplish that.” Since he had already started bragging, Guru Blueflame naturally had to hunker down and continue until the end.

“Heh, this old fellow would rather die than lose face.” The red armored warrior secretly mused to himself. The corners of his lips curved up in a smile. “How many breaths of time do you think Nuyan Ming can last for then?”

“At least...” As Guru Blueflame spoke to here, he made some grabbing motions with his hands, at least 50 breaths of time!”

Guru Blueflame didn’t dare to exaggerate too much. In his opinion, 50 breaths of time was still very possible.”

“Hehe, since you’ve said so then if it is any less you must bring out your 30,000 year vermillion fruit wine so that us brothers can drink a cup together.” The red armored warrior said as he licked his lips. He was after all, a lover of wine, and Guru Blueflame’s 30,000 year vermillion fruit wine had been brewed and kept in a cellar for over 30,000 years. It could be said to be a top-grade wine.

“F*ck you! You want to rob me while my house is on fire? I’ve kept that wine for over a thousand years without bearing to drink any of it!” Guru Blueflame shouted. The two of them had a very good relationship together, thus they would play such jokes on each other.

At this time, a clear and delicate voice rang out, “General Smoke, how about I make a bet with you? If I win, then you will reward Nuyan Ming some of the Ancient Phoenix bloodline according to regulations. How about it?”

The red armored warrior looked up at saw the red dressed Fairy Feng standing not too far away, a pleasant smile on her face as she looked in his direction.

The red armored warrior quickly stood up and cupped his fists together in greeting, “Since Fairy Feng has spoken, then if Nuyan Ming does indeed show outstanding results, according to clan rules I can indeed apply for a corresponding Ancient Phoenix bloodline reward…”

“Then I thank you very much.” Fairy Feng faintly smiled. These recent years, the Realm of the Gods Ancient Phoenix Clan had become increasingly strict regarding control and distribution of its Ancient Phoenix bloodline resources. Without the red armored warrior’s application, it was truly hard to obtain some.

In any case, Lin Ming was a heroic young elite from her Timeworn Phoenix City. In the future, if Lin Ming even had a faint chance of becoming an Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, then that was a matter worth celebrating for Timeworn Phoenix City.

“General Smoke, since that’s the case, I shall then start the smelting trial.” Fairy Feng stood up, leading the red armored warrior over to the hall of the God Transforming Mirror.

……………

“Nuyan Ming, the 100 day assessment from the Realm of the Gods has begun!”

Inside his dimension, Lin Ming heard a true essence sound transmission echo in his ears. Lin Ming had closed up in seclusion for over 50 days, meditating over the various Laws, array discs, and jade slips. He had already passed the time limit for the items that Fairy Feng had lent to him, but she didn’t seem to have any intention of taking them back, instead she let Lin Ming meditate on them until today when the 100 day assessment of the Realm of the Gods had begun.

Lin Ming awoke from his enlightened state. As his eyes opened, they seemed to flash with a faint light of the Laws.

“How long have I been in meditation?”

“You’ve immersed yourself in the ethereal martial intent for 55 days already. Altogether, it has been a total of 100 days since you’ve come to Timeworn Phoenix City!” Within Lin Ming, Demonshine’s soul slowly answered him.

“55 days… got it.” Lin Ming stood up. The 100 day assessment could be said to be taken at the 100 day mark, but the truth was that it could be done ahead of time. Some martial artists in the king level smelting trial would apply to take the 100 day assessment at only 70 to 80 days in, finishing it and completing this stage of the king level smelting trial.

The earlier the assessment was, the more difficult it became. To complete the smelting trial at 70 days was much more dazzling than doing so at 100 days.

Afterwards, at the 200 day assessment, the difficult would again drop down a scale. As for the 300 day assessment, that wasn’t even worth mentioning.

By the time Lin Ming arrived in the hall of the God Transforming Mirror, old man Jun, Fairy Feng, Guru Blueflame, and even Huo Wenlong, Huo Yu, and the others had all gathered there.

Lin Ming noticed that there was a red armored martial artist standing in front of the God Transforming Mirror, smiling at him. Without a doubt, this person was the messenger from the Realm of the Gods.

After Lin Ming came, more and more people began to stream in. These were all the most outstanding disciples currently in Timeworn Phoenix City. As for the others who hadn’t been able to break through the first world yet, they didn’t even have the qualifications to take this 100 day assessment.

“Everyone, I shall first make introductions…” As everyone finally arrived, old man Jun stood up, “This is Guru Blueflame, the City Lord of Timeworn Phoenix City! This is Fairy Feng, the Supervisory Envoy of Timeworn Phoenix City! And this is General Smoke, a messenger from the Realm of the Gods, as well as the official who will be conducting this 100 day assessment!”

Old man Jun introduced everyone one at a time. Lin Ming had already seen Guru Blueflame and Fairy Feng so he wasn’t too surprised but the other disciples were bewildered. Whether it was the Timeworn Phoenix City City Lord or the Supervisory Envoy, both of them were extremely top level characters.

To see such legendary characters, this naturally gave birth to a sense of excitement in their hearts.

The red armored warrior known as General Smoke faintly smiled and said, “Everyone here are the most outstanding young heroes of this year’s smelting trial. My management of the assessment is extremely strict. To be honest with all of you, your chances of passing this assessment are close to zero. But, the truth is that this is unimportant. This assessment is mainly to decide your current smelting trial situation, and my score will also be added to your final results. In the future, if you decide to serve in my Ancient Phoenix Clan then this score will become a reference of your strength.”

As the red armored warrior spoke, the several martial artists from the Realm of the Gods became nervous. If this score was included in their final result then that means it would also be noticed by their various family clans. This would greatly affect their future development, for better or for worse.

“First of all, all of you shall undergo a test in the God Transforming Mirror. Only those that can last for 15 breaths of time in the second world have the qualifications to continue with the assessment.

As the red armored warrior said these words, Huo Ping, and the other martial artists’ hearts instantly dropped to their stomachs. They also knew what was happening here. Besides Huo Wenlong and Nuyan Ming, everyone else had basically been called over to increase numbers and embarrass themselves.

One only had the qualifications to start the assessment if they could last for at least 15 breaths of time in the second world? Huo Ping had just broken through the first world 10 days ago. It would already be a miracle if he could last 3 to 4 breaths of time in the second world.

The other disciples from the Realm of the Gods with results similar to Huo Ping also had bitter expressions. After all, this assessment simply didn't have anything to do with them at the moment.

"The test begins." As old man Jun announced this, old man Jun then stepped forwards and called out the names of Huo Ping and two other disciples from the Realm of the Gods. The three of them had only been called here to draw up the numbers. One of these three had only just broken through the first world yesterday.

These three people stepped forwards to carry out the test. However, no miracle occurred. None of them were able to last past 5 breaths of time and all of them were eliminated.

Old man Jun was not surprised at any of these results. Although he knew perfectly well that all of them would fail, this was also a very good smelting trial chance for them. This test would broaden their horizons, preventing any pearls of regret from surfacing in the future.

"Now then… Nuyan Ming, Huo Wenlong, Huo Yu, come up."

Within the entire Timeworn Phoenix City, there were only six martial artists that had broken through the first world of the God Transforming Mirror. Two smelting trial tests, that was just enough for three trial challengers each.

Whether it was Huo Wenlong or Huo Yu, both of them were uptight and apprehensive. This assessment would affect their future status and their trajectory in their clan.

Lin Ming was the calmest. He didn't care too much about the result. After going into seclusion, he had gained a great deal of comprehensions and wanted to confirm them in the God Transforming Mirror.

Just as Lin Ming arrived in front of the God Transforming Mirror, a true essence sound transmission suddenly sounded out in Lin Ming's ear. "Young boy, I am Guru Blueflame. I know that the last time you went in the God Transforming Mirror you were testing out your moves so your result wasn't as high as it could have been. Now, this old man will be frank with you. You are currently the leading star in my Timeworn Phoenix City. I want you to honestly and ask you to completely display your full strength and use your abilities to their greatest effect, lasting as long as you can. I want this fellow from the Realm of the Gods to see just how fierce my Timeworn Phoenix City is. If you can't last for 50 breaths of time then this old man will come stir up trouble with you!"

Lin Ming had wanted to confirm some truths about his moves, but after hearing Guru Blueflame's true essence sound transmission he was surprised. He didn't even have have time to respond before Guru Blueflame continued to say, "It doesn't matter if you test your moves here; there will be time in the future assessment for you to experiment. Moreover, Fairy Feng has already applied for some blood of the Ancient Phoenix for you. Whether or not you can obtain any, all of this will depend on your own ability!'

What!? Blood of the Ancient Phoenix!

Lin Ming was shocked. "Is this blood of the Ancient Phoenix to be transplanted into this junior?"

"Of course! What else do you think it is for? Of course, this is only if you have a good performance!"

Hearing Guru Blueflame's confirmation, Lin Ming glanced at Fairy Feng and saw that she was giving him an encouraging smile. Lin Ming's mind immediately filled with a brilliant fighting spirit. Although he had the support of the Heretical God Seed, his bloodline was constantly becoming an increasingly great weak point. If he could obtain more blood of the Ancient Phoenix, then his ability to perceive the Fire Laws would be astronomically better!

It seemed that in this test he would have to put forth his true and greatest strength. As for confirming truths of Laws he had learned, that could all be placed on the backburner.

“Test, begin!’

As the red armored warrior spoke, Lin Ming, Huo Wenlong, and Huo Yu all placed their hands on the surface of the God Transforming Mirror.

“First world, break!”

Lin Ming was in a trance for merely three breaths of time before the smooth surface of the God Transforming Mirror cracked underneath his palm like a growing spider web. The first world had already been easily broken by him!

General Smoke’s eyes shined, “He used absolute strength to break through the first world, and moreover he only needed three breaths of time. This boy is quite interesting!”

“Hehe, just you wait and see!’ Guru Blueflame said with a content smile. “If this boy lasts less than 50 breaths of time then I’ll take out my vermillion fruit wine. But if he does, then don’t think of keeping any of your own wine collection!”

Chapter 739 – 50 Breaths

Chapter 739 – 50 Breaths

…

…

…

General Smoke was a connoisseur of wine. Naturally, he also had his own vintage collection. Guru Blueflame had also been longing for a taste test of this collection for a very long time. As soon as Lin Ming broke through the first world in three breaths of time, Guru Blueflame was immediately energized, thinking that he could gain some benefits from General Smoke.

“Alright, I do have a 10,000 year fog flower wine that I’ve been keeping around; it’s also a top class wine. If what you said is true, then I’ll take out this wine to celebrate such a rare joyous occasion in your Timeworn Phoenix City that you’ve managed to produce a passable heroic young elite.”

“What kind of joyous occasion are you talking about? Humph, your filthy mouth can never speak anything good. My Timeworn Phoenix City has always produced excellent talents!”

“Hahaa, Old Blueflame, don’t be in such a hurry to argue. It’s true that Nuyan Ming broke through the first world in three breaths, but that was just relying on absolute strength, not the power of Laws. A Revolving Core martial artist’s absolute strength won’t go over so well in the second world!”

“We’ll see about that!”

The God Transforming Mirror was an illusory magic array that used the mysteries of the Chaos Stones as its basis. If one was skilled in the source of Fire Laws, then they could use their divine sense to search the God Transforming Mirror and watch the scene of the trial challenger within.

At this time, in the second world of the God Transforming Mirror, Lin Ming was facing a pack of meteors that came howling down towards him.

Penetrating Rainbow, Bury the Heavens, Chasing Sun, Chasing Thunder; of these four moves, the best ones to break through the Concept of Annihilation was Chasing Sun. As for Bury the Heavens and Penetrating Rainbow, they were indeed powerful, but the consumption was far too great. As for Chasing Thunder, that move involved a completely different type of Concept.

According to Guru Blueflame's thoughts, Lin Ming would use Chasing Sun until the very end. However, Guru Blueflame never imagined that as the first meteor landed and caused a massive waves of turbulent lava to rise up and plunge towards Lin Ming, Lin Ming would only casually thrust out his spear, not even using any special move but still breaking through the shockwaves of fire, safely making it through.

“This young fellow has made a great deal of progress these past 55 days!'

Guru Blueflame's eyes lit up, joy filling his heart. He was looking forwards to seeing just what sort of result Lin Ming would be able to obtain.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Meteors fell down one after another, each of them half a mile wide. The explosive shockwaves were no threat to Lin Ming at all. With a simple spear thrust, he easily ablated the waves of fire. After 10 breaths of time passed, Lin Ming was still filled to the brim with energy.

“Haha, how about that! Even under the oppression of the Annihilation Laws, he’s not even breaking a sweat! This boy still has many ultimate moves that he hasn’t even used yet!” Guru Blueflame proudly said.

General Smoke faintly smiled, “Don’t be so happy yet. The first 20 breaths of difficult aren’t too hard. Later, the shower of meteors will become increasingly dense and the size will also grow larger. After 30 breaths of time, the meteors will each be a mile wide. After 40 breaths of time, the meteors will be two miles wide. At that time, the difficulty will truly grow, and the real show will begin.”

In an instant, 15 breaths of time passed. At this time, another half mile wide meteor came crashing down. The rock island that Lin Ming had stood on had been completely sundered by the meteors, melting into the vast sea of lava. As he faced shockwaves that had become several times more powerful, Lin Ming held up his spear, his body like a leaf in a storm as he was sent flying back by the shockwaves. As he retreated, he casually stabbed his spear out, every spear strike glowing with a deep azure light. Every strike easily pierced through the chaotic flow of fire energy. After drawing back several thousand feet Lin Ming was completely unharmed. Using a minimal amount of energy, he had completely resolved the shockwaves of the explosion.

“He broke through? Even a half mile wide meteor couldn’t force out this Nuyan Ming’s martial skills.”

As General Smoke saw this, his expression finally changed. In every half mile meteor, the turbulent energy shockwaves afterwards weren’t easy to deal with. The fact that Lin Ming could use such a minor amount of true essence to break through them was incredible.”

“That azure light, it’s as if it’s a… battle spirit!”

General Smoke’s eyes widened. When this battle spirit attached to the long spear, it caused the striking power to be even greater and even more focused, allowing Lin Ming to break through the energy shockwaves with the least amount of energy used. He couldn’t help but praise this level of strength.

In fact, not only was General Smoke shocked, but Guru Blueflame and Fairy Feng were also surprised, “This boy has already comprehended a battle spirit, moreover it’s already reached the small success stage of the bronze level!’

This was the first time that Lin Ming had used his battle spirit in the Annihilation World of the God Transforming Mirror. Until this point, Guru Blueflame and Fairy Feng had no idea that Lin Ming had a battle spirit.

Fairy Feng said, “In the last smelting trial test, Nuyan Ming want to verify his power of the Laws, thus he didn’t use his battle spirit. If he did use it at that time, then he would have lasted even longer!”

A battle spirit had no connection to the Concept of Fire. Lin Ming only wanted to understand the Laws he had comprehended in the God Transforming Mirror. Although using a battle spirit would have gotten him a better result, a better and more glorious result was not important to him at all.

Of course, this time was different. For that all important blood of the Ancient Phoenix, Lin Ming decided to go all-out!

For those heroic young elites in the Realm of the Gods, comprehending a battle spirit in the middle Revolving Core realm wouldn’t be considered a monstrous genius at all. But, to have a small success bronze level battle spirit at this stage, that was actually terrifying!

This proved that Lin Ming had already formed his own battle spirit for a long time now, perhaps even when he was only at the Xiantian realm!

Only by forming his own battle spirit at the Xiantian realm would it have grown along with his cultivation, finally reaching this current level!

Fairy Feng sucked in a deep breath. She didn’t expect that Lin Ming’s will was so astounding!

“This is ridiculous! If Nuyan Ming really comprehended a battle spirit during the Xiantian realm, then that means that his heart of martial arts and will is extraordinary!’

To a martial artist, one’s will was no less important than understandings of Concepts and Laws. Thus, a martial artist with a strong will was extremely respected.

General Smoke was quietly recording the entire test in an array disc, “This boy, if he can really last 50 breaths of time, then in light of him comprehending a battle spirit at the Xiantian realm, that alone is enough for him to receive a great deal of focus from the clan!”

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Meteors continued smashing into the earth. Azure light wrapped around Lin Ming’s long spear. No matter how monstrous those waves of fire were, Lin Ming still didn’t need to use his martial skills.

With just a tiny bit of true essence, coupled with his battle spirit and his profound understanding of the Laws and Concepts of Fire, this was more than enough to deal with the current situation!

By not using martial skills, he would save the most energy. This would allow Li Ming to retain enough strength to face the bigger meteors ahead.

At 30 breaths of time, a mile wide meteor came roaring down, dragging a tail of fire behind it. As soon as it smashed into the earth, the explosive shock wave seemed to sweep up the entire sky. Lin Ming’s vision widened. Without hesitation, he flourished the long spear in his hands.

Chasing Sun!

The highly compressed true essence in the Heretical God Seed erupted outwards. Lin Ming became one with his spear, shooting through the skies like a divine arrow. In a single thrust, he moved dozens of miles forwards, directly piercing through the walls of flames!

This was the first time he had used his full strength. In addtion, because he had used Chasing Sun, his consumption of energy was still small.

It had taken a full 30 breaths of time before Lin Ming was compelled to use a martial skill. When Lin Ming turned serious, his comprehensive combat strength startled even Fairy Feng.

“Old friend Blueflame, it looks like you are right. Now, it seems that I will most likely lose my fog flower wine. Not only is this brat’s comprehension of Laws pretty good, but what is even rarer is that his will is extremely firm! If he doesn’t lose himself to his own arrogance then he will surely rise in the future!” General Smoke praised without hesitation. Losing some of his precious wine was only a joke between friends. He was also happy to see a rising talent among the juniors.

“Mm, this boy is too my liking. When he ascends to the Realm of the Gods, he can also be considered a follower of my Timeworn Phoenix City. Haha, I’m really looking forwards to his growth!”

As Guru Blueflame and General Smoke talked, Huo Wenlong and Huo Yu withdrew from the God Transforming Mirror.

Huo Yu had just managed to last 15 breaths of time. As for Huo Wenlong, he lasted up to 28 breaths of time.

After retreating from the God Transforming Mirror, Huo Wenlong’s first reaction was to glance over at Lin Ming. He saw Lin Ming standing still before the God Transforming Mirror, stable and calm, as if he were a great mountain that had existed there since eternity.

As he looked over at Guru Blueflame, Fairy Feng, General Smoke, and old man Jun, he discovered that none of them had even bothered to glance at him. All of them were completely focused on Lin Ming. Even Huo Ping and the others were intensely concentrated on Lin Ming. Huo Wenlong suspected that there wasn’t even anyone that recorded his result.

How could he possibly feel any better with this?

"Nuyan Ming… you closed up for 55 days in a single go and today you return to the God Transforming Mirror. This time, I want to see just how long you can last and whether or not our disparity has changed!"

Huo Wenlong grit his teeth. This time, he didn't leave midway. Rather, he sat down where he was, waiting for Lin Ming to complete his test.

…………

Woosh!

Within the God Transforming Mirror, another giant meteor crashed into the ground. Without batting an eye, Lin Ming used Chasing Sun once again!

Strike after strike, a crimson ray of light flashed forwards for several dozen miles, cutting a path through the clear blue skies!

At this time, Lin Ming had only used Chasing Sun a total of five times. As he simultaneously poured his battle spirit into Penetrating Rainbow, the power of his attacks rose precipitously!

36 breaths!

37 breaths!

38 breaths!

40 breaths!

After crossing the 40 breaths of time threshold, the shower of meteors became even denser. This time, almost every meteor that hurtled down was over a mile wide!

Lin Ming revolved the Heretical God Force to the limit. Bright red flames wrapped around his entire body as a blazing azure true essence erupted from him. At this time, he could no longer keep his calm. With absolute power, while simultaneously using the power of Laws, he forcefully broke through the explosive shockwaves of the meteor's fall!

At 49 breaths of time, a mile and a half wide meteor came howling down!

Compared to a mile wide meteor, this meteor's detonative energy was three times greater.

Bang!

The earth was torn asunder and the entire world burned in an inferno of blazing red. In this terrifying storm of energy, he grasped his spear, the power of fire and the power of space revolving and twining together on the tip.

Bury the Heavens!

This was Lin Ming's strongest move. But even though it was his strongest move, he was still completely unable to compare with the horrifying explosive shockwaves of the meteor. Lin Ming gave a loud shot and the flame totem on the Heretical God Seed began to shine with a golden light, just like the resplendent eyes of an Ancient Phoenix!

By relying on his understanding of the Fire Laws, Lin Ming strenuously broke through the shockwaves of flame, his face flushing red with blood.

After breaking past the explosions of this meteor, 50 breaths of time had passed!

"He really passed 50 breaths of time! This Nuyan Ming still has energy left!' General Smoke let out a long breath. 45 breaths of time and 50 breaths of time seemed to only be separated by 5 breaths, but the truth was that the difference was enormous. In the God Transforming Mirror, every 10 breaths was a new level. The difficult would increase at an exponential rate!

“Can he possibly pass 60 breaths of time?” General Smoke muttered to himself. But at this time, in the skies, several even greater meteors were being born. Among these meteors, there were even some that were wider than two miles that were being slowly formed.

Chapter 740 – Reverse the Chain of Stars

Chapter 740 – Reverse the Chain of Stars

…

…

…

A two mile wide meteor didn't sound that much larger than a half mile wide meter, but the truth was that it weighed 64 times greater.

64 times more weight also meant 64 times the striking intensity. Using the Revolving Core realm and the Life Destruction realm as examples, a small boundary meant that there was only a total true essence quantity difference of several times.

In other words, if this two mile wide meteor and half mile wide meteor were compared to a martial artist's attacks, then the former would be one or two great realms higher!

Facing a half mile wide meteor, Lin Ming didn't even need to use a martial skill to easily break through the shockwaves.

And then facing a mile and a half wide meteor, Lin Ming needed to use his strongest move, Burying the Heavens.

And now, facing a two mile wide meteor, even Bury the Heavens was only barely able to withstand the explosive shockwaves!

Once he was injured, then even if he could resist the next attack, the continual barrage of two mile wide meteors would inevitably defeat him.

Seeing this, whether it was General Smoke, Guru Blueflame, or Fairy Feng, all of them opened their eyes wide, waiting to see just how Lin Ming would withstand this attack.

“Nuyan Ming’s luck is too poor… normally, two mile meteors would only appear in the second half of the 50 breaths…” Fairy Feng muttered to herself.

“I thought that 60 breaths of time were a bit too forced, but still, this Nuyan Ming is already impressive enough. This strike will truly surpass the abilities of a middle Revolving Core martial artist to resist. Once Nuyan Ming is injured, he won’t be able to last much longer. His limit should be 55 breaths of time. 55 breaths of time is already an incredible result!” General Smoke said with appreciation.

Guru Blueflame stroked his beard, a bit of regret in his eyes. 55 breaths was indeed an excellent result, but 60 breaths of time would have been even more shocking. If Lin Ming’s luck was just a bit better then he might even be able to pass 60 breaths of time!

“Haha, Blueflame, aren’t you satisfied yet? Your Timeworn Phoenix City has hit the jackpot this time, and my fog flower wine is already waiting.”

Boom! Boom! Boom!

In the skies, countless shards of stones formed a chain of stars that revolved according to the mysterious rules of the world, constantly gathering rocks together, binding them and giving birth to new meteors. Here, two mile meteors formed, wrapped in a hazy fog of fire. As long as they fully formed, they would be driven by the annihilation energy, rapidly crashing down at extreme speeds!

But at this moment, Lin Ming suddenly raised his head and looked towards the heavens. Within the pupils of his two eyes, the mystical power of the stars and the Laws of revolution in the world were reflected. Within Lin Ming’s body, the Heretical God Seed howled and the compressed fire true essence began gushing out like a rising tsunami.

Lin Ming’s two feet tread the sea of raging lava. Holding the red long spear in his hands, his body shot up like a rising star!

The high pitched keen of a phoenix's cry resounded in the world. Between Lin Ming's eyebrows, the mark of the Ancient Phoenix began to shine with a blinding golden light. A massive red phoenix shot out from Lin Ming's body, directly impacting into the horizon.

Bury the Heavens!

Lin Ming thrust out his spear. Space collapsed and countless space shards flew out, spinning along with the power of fire and intertwining with it, forming a black storm vortex of flames.

This vortex was like a black dragon that shot into the skies, breaking apart all that fiery fog!

As General Smoke saw this, his eyes brightened. What was this boy trying to do? Could it be…

Bang!

The black vortex finally struck the chain of stars. Compared to the vast chain of stars that was like an endless ocean, the attack was just like a tiny trickle of water, simply nothing to mention. However, unbelievably, while this attack appeared trivial, due to the force of some mysterious Law, a path was cut through the revolving region of the chain of stars, interrupting it!

Next, a stupefying scene occurred. In the fog of fire where the meteors were being born, the Laws suddenly reversed. Not only did the crushed stones stop gathering together, but instead countless stones flew off from the surface of the meteor, causing it to constantly reduce in size!

When the meteor finally separated from that fog of fire and howled down, its size was already reduced by a mile and a half in size!

Eventually, it turned from a massive meteor to a slightly larger one. The explosive aftermath was completely broken through by Lin Ming's Bury the Heavens!

“This is… reversing the chain of stars!!?”

General Smoke, Guru Blueflame, and Fairy Feng were all shocked. To reverse the chain of stars… this proved that Lin Ming had already touched upon the method to break past the second world. He still had a long way to go from actually doing so, but he had still managed to touch upon it! And this was with a cultivation at only the middle Revolving Core realm!

“Nuyan Ming has already begun to touch upon the nature of the Annihilation Laws. Although it’s just a bit, everything is difficult at the beginning. His future achievements in the Concept of Fire will not be low at all.” General Smoke had seen countless heroic young elites grow up. By just looking at Lin Ming, he could judge his future trajectory to a certain extent.

“Indeed. But what I find strange is if Nuyan Ming could reach this step so quickly, why would his comprehension of Fire Laws at the beginning be so different when he first arrived?” Fairy Feng asked, puzzled. When Lin Ming had just arrived, his comprehension of Fire Laws really left one speechless. He had only been equal to a 13 to 14 year old child.

“It’s not as if he’s being lazy. Haven’t you discovered that this boy Nuyan Ming, besides Fire Laws, also has pretty good accomplishments in Space Laws and Thunder Laws. Not just that, but he follows a dual body and essence cultivation process and has also formed his own battle spirit. How old is he? And yet he has already perceived so many things! Even if he didn’t eat or sleep, it would still be nearly impossible to perceive all of this!”

Hearing General Smoke speak, Guru Blueflame became irritated, “Humph, this boy is a muddle. He could be considered part of my Ancient Phoenix Clan, but instead of fully focusing on perceiving Fire Laws he actually spent so much time on other things! How absurd!”

Fairy Feng smiled, “Comprehending a single Law isn’t enough. Comprehending multiple Laws and being able to fuse them together, that will allow his power to increase by several folds. For instance, when Nuyan Ming broke through the meteor’s shockwaves just now, he had fused Space Laws and Fire Laws together…”

As these Supreme Elders discussed, several more breaths of time passed. At this time, nearly 60 breaths of time had passed.

The reason that Lin Ming was able to comprehend the Fire Laws so rapidly was mainly because of the Heretical God Seed. On the surface of the Heretical God Seed, within that golden flame totem, the principles of Fire Laws had been engraved there. By relying on this, Lin Ming's speed at perceiving the Fire Laws was astronomical.

Bang bang bang!

Meteors exploded one after another. Lin Ming was always paying attention to the changes in the chain of stars within the heavens. Once the meteors began to approach two miles in width, he would then interrupt the path of the chain of stars with Bury the Heavens, breaking them ahead of time!

However, by repeatedly using Bury the Heavens, in addition with the massive gravity of this world, Lin Ming was rapidly spending his true essence. Even with the support of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, he had already consumed 50-60% of his true essence!

65 breaths of time!

66 breaths of time!

The critical 70 breaths of time mark became increasingly close. Outside of the God Transforming Mirror, Lin Ming's true body flushed red with blood. His entire body was slick with sweat and his hand that touched the God Transforming Mirror was trembling.

On the side, Huo Wenlong, Huo Yu, Huo Ping, and the others all looked fearful and alarmed. Especially Huo Wenlong; he was well aware of just how difficult the God Transforming Mirror's second world was.

Every 10 breaths of time, the meteors would grow in size, their weight growing that much more. Moreover, the second world would also cause the meteors to fall even faster by making the gravitational force greater. Huo Wenlong found it hard to imagine how difficult it was to last in that world for 66 breaths of time!

In the God Transforming Mirror, several more breaths of time passed.

70 breaths of time!

Because Lin Ming's true essence was lacking, he was finally unable to break past the shockwave of flames. The turbulent energy flooded over him, giving him his first injury!

"This boy… he's been injured…" General Smoke actually felt a sense of relief. If this had continued then he would have no idea just how long Lin Ming would have been able to persist. If Lin Ming was a heroic young elite from a Holy Land in the Realm of the Gods, then that was reasonable. But Lin Ming was only a martial artist from the lower realms… that was truly incredible.

"It should end soon. Once he's injured, defeat will come swiftly. He should be able to last for another four to five breaths of time. That should be around 75 breaths of time as a final result. That's also acceptable…" General Smoke thought. Generally, once a martial artist was injured they would consume even more true essence. Coupled with the increasing number and weight of the stars, under this barrage he would be defeated in several more breaths of time.

Within the God Transforming Mirror, Lin Ming fiercely bit down on his tongue, forcefully revolving the Heretical God Force and suppressing the rampaging fire energy in his meridians. As he spat out a mouthful of blood he stabbed his spear out once again!

At 72 breaths of time, Lin Ming was injured yet again. This injury was even more serious. His chest was struck by the violent energy flows, causing blood to gush out. However, Lin Ming had completed 100% of Tempering Marrow and had used the profound gold divine fruit to temper his body. His body was as formidable as a treasure. Even though his chest muscles were scorched black and ruined, he still forcefully lived through this attack with none of his internal organs injured.

74 breaths of time. The raging energy flows were too strong. Lin Ming's ribs were cracked by the shockwaves and his organs were slightly injured.

76 breaths of time…

77 breaths of time…

At 78 breaths of time, Lin Ming had nearly used up all of his true essence. But at this time, a two and a half mile meteor began forming in the chain of stars. Lin Ming no longer had the strength to reverse the chain of stars. He could only look on helplessly as this meteor came crashing down, its speed accelerating at a ridiculous rate due to the force of the Laws, bringing a flaming tail behind it!

79 breaths, 80 breaths, the meteor blazed and an incandescent light lit up the entire sky.

81 breaths of time.

A horrifying explosion tore apart the earth. Lin Ming no longer had even the least bit of ability to resist. His body was shredded to pieces in the shockwaves.

The smelting trial test had ended here!

When Lin Ming drew back from the God Transforming Mirror with a pale face, General Smoke still hadn't composed himself.

81 breaths of time!

This was too incredible!

Lin Ming had lasted several more breaths of time than General Smoke had expected. From 70 to 80 breaths of time, the difficulty increased by yet another level!

"This boy, not only has he made excellent progress in his battle spirit and understanding of Laws, but his endurance and defensive ability are freakishly abnormal! If an ordinary martial artist was injured at 70 breaths of time, they would at most be able to last until 75 to

76 breaths of time. Yet this boy actually desperately dragged himself to 80 breaths of time. What a freak!”

As General Smoke thought that Lin Ming was about to be defeated after being injured, Lin Ming had actually grit his teeth and stumbled forwards, defying all expectations and lasting for another 11 breaths of time.

General Smoke had no idea just what expression he should be making.

Chapter 741 – Trading for the Phoenix Blood

Chapter 741 – Trading for the Phoenix Blood

…

…

…

[One mace = 3 to 4 grams]

When Guru Blueflame saw that Lin Ming managed to reach 81 breaths of time, his entire face lit up with happiness. Lin Ming was a young elite that came from his Timeworn Phoenix City and could also be considered a disciple of his. In the future, if Lin Ming really became an Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, then that would be the most glorious moment of his life.

Of course, the probability was extremely low, even if Lin Ming was talented enough to be called a 500 year talent of the three great Phoenix Cities of the lower realms.

An Elder level character usually only appeared in the Ancient Phoenix Clan once in a millennium. Moreover, there was an over 90% chance that they would originate from the Realm of the Gods.

If Lin Ming wanted to become an Elder, he would need to have an astonishing destiny and an immeasurable number of lucky chances.

Only three Elder level characters had originated from the three great Phoenix Cities of the lower realms in the last two to three hundred thousand years. Moreover, they were outer court Elders; none of them had been inner court Elders.

Currently, the last outer court Elder was born 50,000 years ago. This was an extremely distant matter to Guru Blueflame since he was only just over 10,000 years old.

“When this boy ascends into the Realm of the Gods in the future, I definitely must have him join my army.” General Smoke thought out loud, subconsciously gripping his palm.

“Haha, then that depends whether or not you can snatch him away. Even if Nuyan Ming can’t become an Elder there’s still a high chance of him becoming a Hall Master. Perhaps he might even be chosen by Vermillion Bird Hall.

With Lin Ming’s talent, it would be extremely easy for him to find a good position in the Ancient Phoenix Clan in the future, whether that was in the army or the ruling system.

“Just wait and see. He will definitely join under my command. This is a young fellow who appreciates battle the most! Since I’ve lost this time, tonight I’ll open up my fog flower wine and we’ll drink until we drop!”

“Haha, you’re making me drool here!” When Guru Blueflame heard that there was wine to drink even his eyes began to smile.

But at this time, Fairy Feng suddenly said in a soft voice, “General Smoke, do you remember about the Ancient Phoenix blood that we discussed previously?”

“Of course I remember! Nuyan Ming can last up to 81 breaths of time! On just this point alone, I no longer need him to complete the 100 day assessment; I can consider him as passed. I will apply for the Ancient Phoenix blood for him. I will also ask for Nuyan Ming’s opinion. Perhaps he might want other types of resources besides the Ancient Phoenix blood.

In the Realm of the Gods Ancient Phoenix Clan, the outstanding youths there could request for resources depending on their results in the smelting trial. Ancient Phoenix blood, pills, Fire Elementals, rare cultivation methods, all sorts of precious things could be obtained.

Lin Ming was indeed talented, but the Ancient Phoenix Clan in the Realm of the Gods was far too large. There were new generations of outstanding young elites every 10 years, thus there were never enough resources to pass around. Not to mention that besides these young elites there were also powerhouses that were hundreds or even thousands of years that also needed resources.

Since resources were so precious and in limited quantities, there naturally had to be a fair system to distribute them.

The Ancient Phoenix Clan had different valuations for difference resources. With Lin Ming's results, he could exchange for more of a less valuable type or less of a more valuable type. This was the fairest system.

"Nuyan Ming." General Smoke withdrew his consciousness from the God Transforming Mirror and looked at the exhausted Lin Ming. He grinned and said, "With your ability to persist in the second world for 81 breaths of time, you can be considered to have already passed my 100 day assessment. Now, I will give you 9 points as a total score. With this result, you can exchange for various cultivation resources of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. This includes Ancient Phoenix blood, Fire Elementals, pills, rare cultivation methods, jade slips with Concept enlightenments, and so forth. What would you like to exchange for?"

As General Smoke spoke, all of the other martial artists turned green with envy. Any one of these resources were priceless treasures!

Huo Wenlong sighed. He thought that he could diligently train and slowly catch up to Lin Ming, but now it seemed that the disparity between them was only growing more with every passing day!

General Smoke said that the resources were all approved by the Realm of the Gods Ancient Phoenix Clan. As someone who came from the Realm of the Gods himself, not being able to obtain the treasures of his own clan but instead having them taken by Lin Ming left a bitter taste in his mouth.

"I want… the blood of the Ancient Phoenix!"

Lin Ming replied without hesitation. He had plenty of cultivation methods, pills could be found elsewhere, and while a Fire Elemental was precious, he wouldn't exchange it using such a valuable opportunity. He only desired the blood of the Ancient Phoenix. By transplanting it into his body, he could permanently increase his fusion compatibility with the Concept of Fire. This naturally took priority over all else.

Lin Ming's reply was well within General Smoke's expectations. General Smoke faintly smiled and said, "Don't be so hasty to choose. Because most young elites desire to exchange for the Ancient Phoenix blood, this caused its price to be the highest. As a result, if you completely exchange your points for the Ancient Phoenix blood, at most you'll have around over a mace worth. While you can choose the Ancient Phoenix blood, there are also other resources available. For instance, Concept jade slips. If you meditate on these, it will greatly improve your understandings towards the Fire Laws. What do you think?"

As General Smoke spoke, Lin Ming hesitated. A mace was probably 60-70 drops. 10 maces was 1 tael. 16 taels was one jin. A martial artist probably had around 10 jins of blood in their bodies. This was equivalent to Lin Ming exchanging for 1/1000 of the blood in his body.

As for that single drop of Ancient Phoenix blood from the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, that was simply nothing to speak of.

If he wanted to trade for the so-called perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, that was still too far away. Perhaps it was as General Smoke said; exchanging part of his points for the Concept of Fire jade slips would also be good.

While Lin Ming was thinking, Fairy Feng's true essence sound transmission sounded out in his ears.

"Nuyan Ming, completely exchange all of your points for the Blood of the Ancient Phoenix. As for the Concept jade slips, the higher quality ones are too expensive and the lower quality ones aren't necessarily any better than the ones I lent you. They will simply be useless to you."

"Mm?"

Lin Ming glanced at Fairy Feng. Fairy Feng nodded in return and also said, “The phoenix bloodline concentration in your body is too low. Do not miss this chance to enhance your bloodline richness! As for the other clansmen, their bloodline concentration is much higher, thus exchanging for other suitable things may be better choices for them.

“Thank you Senior for your guidance.”

Lin Ming held an extremely high level of trust towards Fairy Feng. He immediately said to General Smoke, “I want to exchange everything for the blood of the Ancient Phoenix.”

“Okay!” General Smoke no longer delayed. He directly took out a quarter foot square crystal block from his spatial ring. In the very center of this crystal block was a sealed mass of red liquid. This red liquid was only the size of a fingertip, it seemed like a bright red ruby that was trapped inside. Obviously, this was the blood of the Ancient Phoenix.

General Smoke said, “According to normal reasoning, I would need to apply to headquarters to distribute this blood of the Ancient Phoenix. However, with your situation, it should be more than guaranteed that your application is successful. Thus, I won’t bother with all the red-tape and will directly give you this blood of the Ancient Phoenix instead. I hope that you can thoroughly comprehend the source Fire Laws in the future and become one of the Elders of my Ancient Phoenix Clan!”

As General Smoke said this, he tossed the blood of the Ancient Phoenix into Lin Ming’s hands. “This is around a mace of blood. I can also help you apply for 10 more drops. I’ll give it to you in a few more days.”

“Thank you, General Smoke.” Lin Ming held the clear crystal block in his hands. As he looked at the shining Ancient Phoenix blood within, his eyes lit up with eager excitement.

Chapter 742 – Late Revolving Core

Chapter 742 – Late Revolving Core

…

…

…

The Ancient Phoenix bloodline was the fundamental basis for the existence of the Realm of the Gods Ancient Phoenix Clan. It was self-evident just how important it was to the Ancient Phoenix Clan. These past days, Lin Ming had gained a general understanding of the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

Leaving aside the three thousand boundless worlds within the lower realms and the branches of the Ancient Phoenix Clan that existed there, just within the Ancient Phoenix Clan within the Realm of the Gods, the clansmen there could be tallied in the hundreds of billions!

In addition to those from the lower realms, the number was incalculable.

Martial artists in the Realm of the Gods lived extremely long lives, often for tens of thousands of years. During this time period, they could have numerous children. If this continued, the number of individuals would grow at an exponential rate, and it was easy for the population to surpass hundreds of billions. In the Realm of the Gods, the Ancient Phoenix Clan had multiplied for countless generations already.

With so many extraordinary youths born, the difficulty of standing out could be imagined.

While Lin Min sat on a stone bed in his own training dimension, he asked Demonshine, “How is the situation in the South Sea?”

When Lin Ming had left, he had also brought along a wisp of Demonshine's soul; this was so that he could always be aware of what was happening in the South Sea. Timeworn Phoenix City and the Sky Spill Continent were in difference spaces after all. To use a sound transmission was simply impossible. He could only depend on Demonshine to use his own soul to transmit messages.

Demonshine said, "The Giant Leviathan should be able to stay in the deep sea trench for half a year, and only 100 days has passed so we're still okay. Xuan Wuji does launch an exploratory attack every now and then. I'm guessing that he should be growing nervous by now."

"I see..." Lin Ming's expression became a bit gloomy. If Xuan Wuji was attacking, then the Giant Leviathan might only be able to hold out for just five months instead of six. Time was running out.

"Then... I will meditate on the Concepts and Laws a bit more and then absorb the blood of the Ancient Phoenix." As Lin Ming spoke he took out the crystal block with the Ancient Phoenix Blood and placed it in the palm of his hands.

He could already be considered as having finished the first stage of the king level smelting trial; he could return whenever he wished. But, perceiving the Laws was naturally much faster in Timeworn Phoenix City. More importantly, Lin Ming had no clear idea how his strength was when compared with Xuan Wuji. If he increased his strength to the maximum limit he could before returning, then he would have the greatest assurance when facing Xuan Wuji.

As the blood of the Ancient Phoenix lay in his palms, Lin Ming could feel an ancient and mystical energy emitting from the clear crystal block.

The crystal was only an inch thick. Sealed within, the blood of the Ancient Phoenix seemed thick and heavy, in the shape of a perfect sphere.

Lin Ming struck the crystal block. The crystal suddenly shook and countless cracks spread throughout it like a spider web.

With a turn of his hand, all of that Ancient Phoenix blood flew into Lin Ming's palm.

The Ancient Phoenix blood was viscous like mercury as it formed a flat spherical shape in Lin Ming's hand.

As Lin Ming looked at this mass of Ancient phoenix Blood, he suddenly recalled the description in the 'Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians' where it described a boundary where one's marrow was like golden soup and blood like heavy mercury. The so-called blood like mercury was where the blood wouldn't scatter if it fell, easily gathering just like this blood of the Ancient Phoenix.

Without a doubt, a God Beast from the Realm of the Gods was a high level existence that dual cultivated body and essence. They had powerful bodies and a vast, immeasurable amount of energy was contained within them. Not just that, but they were naturally more suited towards the Laws of the universe than humans, or rather that they were part of the Laws to begin with.

So, how could a God Beast not be formidable?

Lin Ming formed a small blade of true essence on his finger tip and then calmly cut a slit in the skin between his eyebrows. As blood flowed out, he took the Ancient Phoenix blood and pressed in between his eyebrows.

A deep burning feel filled him as if there was a fire blazing between his eyebrows and acid was running through his flesh. However, to Lin Ming who had already become accustomed to all sorts of pain, this was nothing at all.

With his powerful regenerative abilities, the wound between Lin Ming's forehead quickly healed over, sealing the Ancient Phoenix blood into Lin Ming's body.

The Ancient Phoenix blood had an extremely strong vitality. As soon as it entered Lin Ming, it began to crazily swallow Lin Ming's bloodline. If one wasn't strong enough, then not only would they not be able to absorb the Ancient Phoenix blood, but the blood would instead cause a backlash, killing the martial artist. That martial artist's blood would then become the nourishment of the Ancient Phoenix blood instead.

Lin Ming silently revolved his true essence, circulating the energy in his meridians according to the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'. An invisible strength enveloped the Ancient Phoenix Blood, pushing it deep into his blood vessels.

At this time, where Lin Ming's heart was, the Magic Cube was silent throughout. It appeared to have no intention of fighting Lin Ming for this Ancient Phoenix blood. Lin Ming let out a sigh of relief. If the Magic Cube really wanted to snatch away the Ancient Phoenix blood, there simply wouldn't be any left for Lin Ming.

Lin Ming closed his eyes and entered the ethereal martial intent state. Intangible fluctuations of will emanated outwards from the battle spirit in his spiritual sea. All of the fire origin energy in the surrounding space continuously converged into Lin Ming's meridians, circulating according to the 'Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle'.

But at this time, within Lin Ming's dantian, the Black Hole Revolving Core there began to slowly spin, forming a vortex of energy, constantly swallowing the violent energy from the Ancient Phoenix blood.

With Lin Ming's current level of strength, it wasn't too dangerous to absorb the blood of the Ancient Phoenix. It would only be a matter of time.

One day, two days, three days...

After seven days passed, the Ancient Phoenix mark between Lin Ming's eyebrows grew increasingly bright, as if a red star was blazing there. As for Lin Ming himself, he seemed to have entered into a peculiar trance-like state.

Normally, absorbing the Ancient Phoenix blood wouldn't take so long. Lin Ming sat in meditation for seven days because he wanted to perceive the Laws contained within the Ancient Phoenix blood as he absorbed it.

Last time, Lin Ming had been able to last within the second world of the God Transforming Mirror for 81 breaths of time. Now, he had many new understandings towards the Concept of Annihilation. At this time, taking advantage of the time when he was absorbing the Ancient Phoenix blood, he decided to carefully validate his new comprehensions of the Laws one at a time.

Unknowingly, the flame totem engraved on the surface of the Heretical God Seed became increasingly perfect and profound. As for Lin Ming, his understandings towards the Concept of Fire rapidly progressed.

On the ninth day, Lin Ming could feel the Revolving Core within his dantian nearing the edge of transformation, on the border of breaking through to the late Revolving Core realm!

Lin Ming was overjoyed. After absorbing this blood of the Ancient Phoenix and in addition to his new understandings of the Laws, he was finally about to break through from the peak of the middle Revolving Core realm to the late Revolving Core realm!

Before entering the Divine Phoenix Mystic realm, Lin Ming's cultivation had been at the middle Revolving Core stage. Now, after a mere 100 some days of time, he was about to break through to the late Revolving Core realm.

Closing his eyes, Lin Ming gathered all the energy from his meridians to his dantian, focusing on making this breakthrough.

The true essence vortex on the Black Hole Revolving Core became increasingly large, sucking in true essence increasingly fast. The entire surface of the crystal core was now a deep blood red.

2 hours…

4 hours…

Lin Ming had stirred up a fierce origin energy storm in his dimension.

This sort of dimension had an extremely rich heaven and earth origin energy. But, the space of the dimension was limited. It was unable to withstand the crazy absorption from Lin Ming, and soon half the energy was cleanly sucked away by him.

However, the architect of the dimension had already considered many similar situations. After the concentration of true essence dropped precipitously, the array formation that formed the dimension would draw in origin energy from Timeworn Phoenix City, restoring the origin energy within.

Thus, from his dimension, Lin Ming began to absorb all the nearby energy.

In the Nine Layer Tower at the center of Timeworn Phoenix City, Fairy Feng had just obtained this news. These past days, she had sent out someone to take notice of Lin Ming's situation and report it back to her.

"Nuyan Ming has started to swallow the surrounding energy from his dimension. It seems that the little boy made a breakthrough." Fairy Feng stood up and walked towards a balcony, looking out towards Lin Ming's dimension.

"Haha, he should have made a breakthrough even earlier! He has already perceived so much from the jade slips and totem stones, and in addition to the Ancient Phoenix blood he absorbed, his breakthrough speed is already too slow!" Guru Blueflame laughed out from not too far away.

As Guru Blueflame said, the blood of the Ancient Phoenix was simply a priceless treasure for a fire-attribute martial artist. It's value greatly surpassed the Nirvana Dragon Root to the point that it could be considered to be on another level altogether.

Lin Ming was only at the Revolving Core realm. For him to absorb so much Ancient Phoenix blood, the advantages could be imagined.

Fairy Feng said, “This is because Nuyan Ming’s foundation is solid. Thus, the amount of total true essence he needs to break through is much higher. Sometimes, having slower breakthroughs isn’t a disadvantage.”

“Mm. I’m looking forwards to how he’ll be when he breaks through to the Divine Sea realm. I wonder to what degree his strength will reach.”

……………………

In his dimension, Lin Ming had already been stranded at the critical breakthrough point for 10 hours. The Revolving Core crystal nucleus in his dantian had grown to the size of a fist and it rapidly spun like a top. A red layer of mist covered the surface of the Revolving Core.

Then, at this moment, the Revolving Core began to collapse from the inside out!

The entire Revolving Core rapidly reduced in size, emitting blazing rays of fiery light. Heaven and earth energy crazily gathered together, constantly condensing. In a single go, Lin Ming had broken through to the late Revolving Core realm!

He had finally succeeded!

Lin Ming’s eyes slammed open. He gasped for breath in deep heaving gulps, his entire body dripping with sweat.

The late Revolving Core realm was the last boundary before Life Destruction. As for extreme Revolving Core, that was just another term for Life Destruction.

In essence, the Life Destruction realm was part of the Revolving Core realm. This was because, in both realms, the Revolving Core in the dantian was still the focus of the martial artist’s energy.

But even so, from late Revolving Core to Life Destruction, the disparity in strength was equal to an entire great boundary.

Stepping into the Revolving Core realm meant that one could be considered a master of the South Horizon Region. However, considering the entirety of the Sky Spill Continent, this strength was simply irrelevant.

But by stepping into Life Destruction one would finally enter the ranks of masters within the Sky Spill Continent.

Life Destruction masters were valued even in Holy lands. If one could reach the first stage of Life Destruction then they could at least be an outer court Elder of a Holy Land.

Lin Ming had now reached the late Revolving Core realm; he was only a single step from entering Life Destruction. However, Lin Ming was only 21 years old!

"My cultivation has reached the late Revolving Core realm. In addition to my new comprehensions of Fire Laws, I wonder to what degree I can contend with Xuan Wuji when I return?"

Before Lin Ming entered the king level smelting trial he was still weaker than a third stage Life Destruction master. As for Xuan Wuji, he was at the fourth stage of Life Destruction. Moreover, he had dominated the entire South Sea for so many years so it was likely he had some hidden cards in his hands. This upcoming fight with Xuan Wuji was still filled with unknowns.

However, Lin Ming was confident that even if the situation was worse than what he expected, he could at least protect the Giant Leviathan and guide it to safety.

"Demonshine, I will still have five days I can meditate on the totem stones. Once I've used that up, we will immediately return to the Sky Spill Continent!'

After Lin Ming lasted in the second world for 81 breaths of time, he had obtained another 5 days to perceive the totem stones as a reward. If he didn't use them all up then that would be a waste.

Chapter 743 – Return to the Sky Spill Continent

Chapter 743 – Return to the Sky Spill Continent

…

…

…

Lin Ming had recently closed up to enlighten himself on the Annihilation Laws of the Concept of Fire. In addition, after having broken through to the late Revolving Core realm and absorbing the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, there were a great number of doubts that had accumulated in his mind. With these final five days of meditating on the Ancient Phoenix Totem Stone, Lin Ming wanted to slowly resolve these doubts, verifying the truths and comprehensions within the flame engravings on the Ancient Phoenix Totem Stone. However, the end result was that not only was he unable to solve his questions, but during the process of meditation he also gained newer and more complex doubts.

Lin Ming could feel that as his comprehension of the Concept of Flame deepened, his doubts grew more and more.

This is a normal phenomenon. If Lin Ming one day managed to clear away all of his doubts then that would be equal to understanding the source of Fire Laws.

And, it was even possible that someone who completely understood the source of Fire Laws would still have some doubts.

Lin Ming didn’t bother asking Fairy Feng about the questions he had. After all, she had said that he would have the most profound understanding if he realized these things himself, not to mention that everyone comprehended the Laws differently. Everyone had their own system by which they comprehended Laws. Trying to solve his own problems with others people's answers was not the best way to go about things.

The more solid his foundation was, the more perfect the system of Laws that he understood would become.

At this moment, Lin Ming had stayed at the Timeworn Phoenix City for 120 days.

It was almost time to leave. But before leaving, Lin Ming applied to enter the God Transforming Mirror one final time.

The second world of the God Transforming Mirror was known to be unbreakable by martial artists weaker than a Divine Sea martial artist from the lower realms. This was mainly because martial artists weaker than the Divine Sea simply didn't have the raw strength required to cause a large-scale reversal of the chain of stars. Even if they were fully aware of the Laws, it was still useless.

With Lin Ming's strength, he could only change a small portion of the revolution amongst the chain of stars. He was still a far from being able to break past the second world.

It was impossible for Lin Ming to break past the second world. The reason he came to the God Transforming Mirror again was mainly to confirm some new ideas he had.

....

Timeworn Phoenix City, Nine Layer Tower –

General Smoke still hadn't left. Thousands of years ago, when the Ancient Phoenix Clan fought with an alien race in a massive war, General Smoke and Guru Blueflame had both served together in the army. There, they had forged a lifelong friendship on the precipice of death. It was only afterwards that Guru Blueflame was severely wounded, thus he came to Timeworn Phoenix City to recover. Like this, thousands of years had passed.

General Smoke and Guru Blueflame were merrily drinking together. As for Fairy Feng, she was leisurely drinking some tea. At this moment, a fire lit in front of the three.

"That boy Nuyan Ming, he broke through 90 breaths of time in the God Transforming Mirror of the second world!" After Guru Blueflame heard the sound transmission, his eyes lit up. From 81 breaths to 90 breaths of time, that was another increase in difficulty!

"His progress is truly marvelous!" General Smoke praised as he swished around his wine glass.

"Hehe, I actually think his progress is quite slow this time. He absorbed the blood of the Ancient Phoenix and also broke through to the late Revolving Core realm. I assume that these days he also gained new insights into the Fire Laws. To only increase his record by nine breaths of time, that's just a little too few…" Guru Blueflame licked his lips after he took a gulp of wine, shaking his head. His expression seemed as if he wished for Lin Ming to break past the second world and directly enter the third world, it was if would only be happy if he could scare this old fellow from the Realm of the Gods to death.

"It's not too surprising…" Fairy Feng faintly said as she fiddled with her teacup. "Glory from his results is simply unimportant to Nuyan Ming. This time, he shouldn't have been trying to breakthrough with his complete strength, but rather confirming some ideas in the God Transforming Mirror's second world. If he used his complete range of skills to their full effect, then he should at least be able to break through 100 breaths of time."

After Fairy Feng spoke, Guru Blueflame suddenly remembered this. During the second time that Lin Ming went to the second world, he had attempted every single one of his moves at different times, even testing out the skill that involved the Concept of Thunder. Doing such was an extremely taxing process.

To test out his new comprehensions and even last for 90 breaths of time, that was enough to be called abnormal!

"The little fellow is about to leave Timeworn Phoenix City. I hope that when he returns to his Sky Spill Continent, he will be able to allow his destiny to reach its peak. We've already done all we can do; everything else will depend on himself."

Nearly every genius had their own destiny and a number of lucky chances in their lives. Guru Blueflame thought that Lin Ming's destiny still belonged in the Sky Spill Continent. If he returned, it was possible for him to inherit that destiny as well as finish his cycle of karma there. After he reached the Divine Sea in the future, he would definitely be able to ascend into the Realm of the Gods without any lingering emotions dragging him back.

"Mm, since we've noticed his grown there, perhaps one day there will be a chance where his strength will surpass even us..." As Fairy Feng spoke, she faintly smiled. This was already an extremely high evaluation from her. Fairy Feng, General Smoke, and General Blueflame were all characters in the Ancient Phoenix Clan that were only inferior to Elders.

Those that surpassed them in rank were all Elders or above.

Within the Ancient Phoenix Clan in the Realm of the Gods, there were 72 Elders. These Elders were called Palace Masters because in the Realm of the Gods, the Ancient Phoenix Clan had 72 Palaces. Many of these palaces were located in secretive mystic realms, their internal structure incomparably mystical, containing all sorts of profound and enigmatic principles. There were also some palaces located in nearly inaccessible lands in the Realm of the Gods, lands where only true powerhouses could go.

These 72 Palace Masters were all characters that had lived for tens of thousands of years or even hundreds of thousands of years. There were even some Palace Masters that had lived longer than the current Phoenix Clan Patriarch.

To become a Palace Master of the 72 Palaces?

That was unimaginably difficult!

Moreover, a rare genius often couldn't even become a Palace Master. This was because there were simply too many talents in the universe. New extraordinary young elites appeared every few years, and there was even more geniuses concentrated in the Realm of the Gods. Even if they were dazzling and gloriously in the smelting trial, that was still useless. After all, it was unknown just what the future would hold. Just because their current destiny was astonishing didn't mean that their future destiny would be just as spectacular. It was possible that the talents of today could exhaust all of their future potentials.

For instance, there were Palace Masters that hadn't obtained first place during the time they participated in the king level smelting trial. But, they were able to slowly overtake those that had been more talented than them, finally becoming a Palace Master. As for the young talents that had once been stronger, they had simply faded from view or even perished.

As to how Lin Ming's future would be, no one could even estimate.

As the three were drinking and musing to themselves, Lin Ming had already packed up all his belongings and arrived at the transmission array of Timeworn Phoenix City. These last 120 days had been far too valuable to Lin Ming. He had seen a new world, greatly expanding his horizons.

As Lin Ming left, he also brought along the Concept jade slips that Fairy Feng had left for him. These jade slips were originally only supposed to be lent to Lin Ming for a month or two, but now they were lent to Lin Ming until he could breakthrough to the Divine Sea.

"Let's go, were heading home!"

Lin Ming gripped his fists, decisively stepping onto the transmission array.

....

In the endless South Sea, the great waves were rough and choppy.

No one in the Sky Spill Continent knew just how large the South Sea was nor where it ended. Legends said that there was once a mighty Supreme Elder that had flown towards the south of the South Sea for several years but still didn't couldn't find where it ended. Instead, he met more and more troubles and encountered increasingly formidable deep sea vicious beasts that even he dreaded dealing with. This had forced him to retrace his steps.

At this time, in this incomparably vast sea, at a range of hundreds of feet deep, there were four martial artists gathered together. The leader of this group was the number one character of the South Sea Demon Region – Xuan Wuji.

In front of Xuan Wuji, there was a strange octopus-like creature. It had several dozen long limbs but also two human-like arms. For the races of the deep sea, this wasn't too strange of an appearance at all.

Beside the weird octopus' side was the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan's Patriarch. Although he had suffered greatly because of Lin Ming and many of his fellow clansmen had been killed, he still couldn't resist the temptation and returned. He wasn't willing to give up on the Giant Leviathan's marrow.

As for the Black Flood Dragon Clan, they didn't appear again. The Patriarch of the Black Flood Dragon Clan was only at the second stage of Life Destruction. His strength was far too low to begin with. There was never any chance of Xuan Wuji dividing any resources with him and instead, he faced the threat of having his entire clan being exterminated. If he came again and they didn't manage to kill Lin Ming, then that was a looming catastrophe over his hands. With this sort of thankless matter, he naturally withdrew early.

There was also another deep sea race present, represented by a feminine looking man. He was tall with narrow eyes, pale skin, and a cruel, evil smile that constantly hung on his face.

This person also came from the demonic path. His name was Bai Guanyun and his nickname was the Immortal Demon.

Bai Guanyun followed the path of obscenity and could be considered a counterpart of Xuan Wuji. His ancestors had once been part of the Silent Demon Emperor City. When the Silent Demon Emperor City was annihilated, Bai Guanyun's clan left and headed towards the southwest mainland. There, they established their own sect that was also a demonic path sect.

Originally, Bai Guanyun's sect couldn't compare to the South Sea Demon Region. But now, with the South Sea Demon Region being razed and looted several times by Lin Ming, they were alive in name only. With this, Bai Guanyun's sect naturally surpassed the South Sea Demon Region.

"Elder Xuan, don't you think this is a bit too much? You've actually been forced into this state by a little hairless Revolving Core boy who's only 20 some years old. And somehow even 80 to 90% of your sect was destroyed?"

Bai Guanyun's words brimmed with a mocking tone. Xuan Wuji obviously heard it, but after reaching his boundary, he had devoted his entire being to reaching the Divine Sea and becoming a Peerless Emperor. As for the taunting ridicules of others, he naturally paid no heed to them.

The reason that he had asked Bai Guanyun to come was to lay down a Mystic Thousand Sea Sealing Array. In order to do so, he needed at least four third stage Life Destruction or higher powerhouses.

The strange octopus was one, the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Patriarch was another, and along with Xuan Wuji that was three in total. He was still missing one, thus he went to look for Bai Guanyun.

First, he could be considered old acquaintances with Bai Guanyun. Also, Bai Guanyun's cultivation was only at the third stage of Life Destruction; it would be relatively easy for Xuan Wuji to control him.

Otherwise, if he were to ask a top master to come and kill Lin Ming and find out whatever secrets were on his body, then those secrets might be stolen away instead. At that time, he would have sacrificed so much just to have all his effort become a gift for someone else.

“Bai Guanyun, you’ve lived over 1000 years so you should fully understand the truth that even a lion must use its full force to capture a rabbit. Moreover, Lin Ming is a formidable enemy. If you underestimate him then you will be the one to suffer a loss!”

“Haha, well anyways, sine you’ve already paid me for my services then I will gladly work for you, you can ask me to do whatever you wish!” Bai Guanyun was full of smiles. He didn’t really care much about Xuan Wuji’s words. In fact, seeing the South Sea Demon Region being reduced to such a state, he was filled with a gloating happiness.

“Bai Guanyun, you go to the south. Brother Sea Ape, you go to the north. I will go to the east. As for the rest, I’ll have to rely on Brother Thousand Arm.

The Brother Thousand Arm that Xuan Wuji mentioned was the strange octopus man. The Mystic Thousand Sea Sealing Array would have to rely mainly on the assistance of this strange octopus to set down. Once the Mystic Thousand Sea Sealing Array was laid down, then it would form an inescapable net. The dreamland within ir would be infinite and endless, capable of directly sealing away the Giant Leviathan’s perception.

Chapter 744 - The Bloodstained Deep Sea

Chapter 744 - The Bloodstained Deep Sea

…

…

…

A great mystic fairyland enchantment was originally difficult to break. Moreover, the Giant Leviathan's intelligence was low to begin with; it simply wasn't able to differentiate between fantasy and reality.

If the array had a boundary, then the Giant Leviathan could directly break through it. But, this Mystic Thousand Sea Sealing Array had no boundaries. If the Giant Leviathan attacked, its strike would simply fade outwards, causing no damage to the array itself.

On a side of the deep sea trench, the strange octopus was laying down the array formation with Bai Guanyun.

The deep sea trench was very long. The entire array formation had to cover a radius of 10 miles. While the octopus creature crawled onto the walls of the ocean trench its body wriggled as it drew deep sea origin energy through its arms and into its body.

"Brother Fish, that Lin Ming boy has many secrets on his body, right?" Bai Guanyun asked in a seemingly casual manner. In his opinion, there was no way that Xuan Wuji would be willing to pay any price to just kill this Lin Ming for revenge.

The strange octopus looked at Bai Guanyun, its entire body bulging and pulsating like the waves of the sea. "I do not know…"

Its voice was forced and hard to understand as if it had to use some arcane ability to stiffly change its normal language into something understandable.

Bai Guanyun pondered for a moment. He didn't know what sort of secrets Lin Ming had on him, but he very much wanted a portion of the spoils. However, he simply didn't have the ability to contend against Xuan Wuji. His only chance was if he found several more allies or if he found some opportune turning point.

"I heard this Lin Ming is less than 25 years old... to be at the middle Revolving Core at such a young age, there definitely must be some sort of extraordinary secret on his body."

Bai Guanyun didn't play around with the strange octopus. He directly told him his thoughts, hoping to arouse its interest. "If we can capture Lin Ming ahead of time and use a soul searching technique on him, then perhaps we might be able to glean something. Of course, the premise of this all relies on whether or not Brother Fish can fix the array formation so that we can hide this from Xuan Wuji. As for the matter of capturing Lin Ming, you can leave that to me. I can guarantee you that there won't be any problems."

Bai Guanyun's tone was very casual. He was a man of ambition. Although he knew that there was a risk of enraging Xuan Wuji, he still couldn't resist the desires of his heart. As for dealing with Lin Ming, this didn't seem like a problem to him to begin with.

To change the array formation to hide all this from Xuan Wuji and then capturing Lin Ming?

The octopuses mind stirred. It's hand movements slowed a bit, and its body oscillated. It was unknown just what this strange creature was thinking about.

Without a doubt, Lin Ming was definitely a delicious delicacy. But, to move against Lin Ming was the same as stealing food from the jaws of a tiger. They would have to risk arousing Xuan Wuji's wrath.

There was still several days until this array formation would be finished. If it could use this time to plan its moves...

While the strange octopus was thinking, it suddenly became aware of a very unusual feeling. As a deep sea life form, it was extremely sensitive to any changes in the water. At this moment, it could feel a faint murderous intent rushing through the sea.

“Mm? Dodge!”

The strange octopus frantically screamed out. Its body suddenly accelerated to the side. Bai Guanyun was shocked, immediately following it. As for the spot they had just been floating at, the current of water there had twisted into the point of a blade, crazily spinning and slicing its way through!

“What is this!?”

The strange octopus was shocked. That strange spinning water blade didn’t contain any energy, but with just the driving force of will itself, it seemed as if it could cut everything to pieces!

“Who is it!?” The strange octopus and Bai Guanyun spun around, both of them looking in the same direction. There, they could see a blue-clothed youth that wielded a red long spear. In the deep darkness of the sea, he was like a god of death that slowly approached them. His entire body seemed to meld into the surrounding seawater, making that red spear in his hands seem particularly dazzling.

Since it was hundreds of thousands of feet deep under the sea, there was no sunlight. One could only count on their own perception to sense things. But, that red spear seemed as if it was emitting its own crimson light like a flame burning in the darkness.

“You are…” Bai Guanyun’s pupils contracted. This youth’s face wasn’t unfamiliar to him. Before coming here, he had already investigated the situation in the South Horizon Region. He knew that this boy was Lin Ming!

“You are Lin Ming? Haha, truly I can search far and wide, only to find you so easily here! Since you’ve come visit me, then you might as well stay behind!”

Bai Guanyun's words seemed rampant to the extreme but he remained highly alert in his heart. He revolved the energy in his body to the limit. According to his intelligence, Lin Ming's strength was inferior to that of a third stage Life Destruction master, so why would he take the initiative to attack them? There were the two of them and even Xuan Wuji was nearby. Did he have a death wish?

At this time, Lin Ming gave off an aura similar to a vicious deep sea beast from the depths of the divine sea. It was like he was completely enveloped in killing intent, making anyone who looked at him feel repressed, unable to revolt.

Bai Guanyun immediately extracted a peak high-grade earth-step treasure sword from his spatial ring. At this time, he finally noticed that Lin Ming's cultivation was actually at the late Revolving Core realm!

Late Revolving Core realm! That was inconsistent with the information he received…

Bai Guanyun didn't even have time to ponder the meaning of this. In the blink of an eye, Lin Ming's spear had already thrust straight towards him!

Brilliant flames roiled, heating up the seawater until it bubbled. The spear shot thousands of feet forwards in an instant as if it were a blazing meteor in the deep night sky.

"Humph!" Bai Guanyun coldly coughed. Although he was somewhat ambivalent towards Lin Ming, this didn't mean that he feared him. "Merely at the late Revolving Core realm and you suddenly think you're undefeatable in the world? This old man will let you know just how strong a third stage Life Destruction master is! Heaven Shattering Sword!'

Facing this unfathomable Lin Ming, Bai Guanyun didn't dare to hold his hand. With a loud cry, he used 100% of his strength to launch a counterattack. This Heaven Shattering Sword strike was one of his great master moves!

Meanwhile, the strange octopus waved its tentacles, ready to go all out. But in this moment, a bright crimson light suddenly shined out from between Lin Ming's eyebrows. The spear in his hand suddenly soared in speed!

Concept of Fire Annihilation – Chasing Sun!

The might of this spear was like a falling meteor from the God Transforming Mirror's second world. With a loud explosive sound, the sword in Bai Guanyun's hands broke apart!

What!?

When Bai Guanyun saw his own sword shatter like a pane of glass, he was immediately horrified. At this critical moment, he drew back in a panic. However, Lin Ming's long spear homed in towards him. As the Law of Annihilation bloomed in front of Bai Guanyuan, all of the sea water around him began to instantly deconstruct. With a miserable scream, the right half of Bai Guanyun's body was covered in blood!

Not dead yet?

Lin Ming's eyebrows pricked up. With absolute silence, his spear swept out!

Bai Guanyun was so scared that he felt as if his soul had fled from his body. "Brother Fish, save me!"

At this time of crisis, the strange octopus had also discovered just how terrifying Lin Ming was. Although it didn't know just what had happened in these past four months, without a doubt, Lin Ming's strength had risen dramatically. At this time, it was impossible for the strange octopus to contend with him!

As for saving Bai Guanyun, that was simply just a joke. Instead, it hoped that Bai Guanyun could delay Lin Ming for some time so that it could safely escape. Since things had devolved to this point, it no longer had any intention of laying down any sort of sealing array formation. If it couldn't kill Lin Ming, then the consequences would be dire indeed.

The strange octopus flung out several tentacles, quickly fleeing into the deep sea.

Bai Guanyun cursed in his heart. At the doors of death, he fiercely bit down on his tongue and spat out a mouthful of blood essence, forcefully revolving true essence in his body, causing his body to suddenly shoot up 10 feet. This caused Lin Ming's spear strike to miss its target and sliced through his leg instead of cutting him in half.

Puff!

His leg bones ruptured and blood oozed into the water. Bai Guanyun screamed as his heart filled with a manic despair.

Lin Ming no longer cared about chasing after Bai Guanyun anymore. He swiveled around and the Asura force field and the Death God force field erupted together. At the same time, he flicked his finger and a mass of purple flames shot out from his hand.

As these flames appeared, the surrounding sea water instantly vaporized. A massive spherical hole was burned through the center of the deep sea.

This fire was the Burning Star Flame.

Pouring his battle spirit into the flames, Lin Ming sprung out his five fingers and the Burning Star Flame shot out like a hail of arrows!

"Ohh!"

The strange octopus that had fled not too far away suddenly screamed. Because it was suddenly covered by these dual force fields, its speed instantly plummeted. It felt as if a sun was suddenly born in the sea, and the high water content of its body quickly withered away in the face of this purple sunlight!

The strange octopus was from a deep sea race and was a water-attribute life form. Fire was its natural nemesis.

Roarr!

The strange octopus let out a strange cry. It spat out a black ball from its body, shooting it straight towards the Burning Star Flame.

Monster's core?

Lin Ming's eyes brightened. If he wasn't wrong, then this was the strange octopus's monster core. The deep sea races were less like humans and more like highly intelligent monsters and beasts. A monster core was something that only a high level monster could cultivate. It was similar to a human's Revolving Core crystal nucleus. Additionally, the most important thing was that it would only use this monster core to fight its enemies when it encountered a highly dangerous situation.

The monster core was extremely fast as it collided with the Burning Star Flame. With a loud bang, a terrifying detonation occurred in the deep sea. The explosive shockwaves surged out in all directions, pushing Bai Guanyun away. As for the strange octopus, because its monster core was damaged, it let out a miserably cough and flew backwards as it emitted a huge jet of inky black fluid.

Lin Ming grasped his red long spear and stepped forwards. After becoming accustomed to the explosive shockwaves from the meteors of the God Transforming Mirror's second world, these shockwaves were now no different from a cool spring breeze to Lin Ming. It simply wasn't even worth mentioning.

He easily broke past the shockwaves. As his feet stepped forwards, he displayed Golden Roc Shattering the Void, instantly appearing in front of the strange octopus!

At that moment, the strange octopus's face distorted with horror. Its monster core hadn't yet returned to its body but Lin Ming had already arrived in front of it. The severity of the situation could be imagined!

"Die."

Lin Ming expressionlessly thrust out his spear. The spear held the Concept of Burning Heat within it. The crimson spear edge burned red like it just came from the center of a blazing sun. As it shot forwards, a massive amount of water evaporated around it. The octopus screamed out as Lin Ming's spear pierced right into its soft head.

“Ahhhh!”

The strange octopus emitted a completely inhuman scream. It’s originally milky white face became covered wish rosy colors, as if paints were being mixed on its skin.

Chi chi chi!

The strange octopus’s body rapidly withered away as all the water in its body evaporated. As for that spinning black monster core that was returning, Lin Ming snatched it in his hands.

The monster core of a third-stage Life Destruction monster could be considered a great fortune. If a martial artist directly swallowed it up, it would be useful for one’s cultivation. In addition, it could also be used to refine pills. Since Lin Ming had decided to step onto the path of becoming an alchemist, he naturally wouldn’t miss out on rare water-attribute materials like this.

Chapter 745 – Fighting Xuan Wuji

Chapter 745 – Fighting Xuan Wuji

…

…

…

From the time Lin Ming had appeared to when the strange octopus died, it seemed like a long while, but the truth was that only five to six breaths of time had passed.

Bai Guanyun stared on helplessly as Lin Ming used this tiny bit of time to slaughter the strange octopus whose strength was similar to his as if it were a chicken or dog. In his heart, there was nothing but an inexplicably rising fear.

Both of his legs had been cut off; it was impossible to escape.

How could things turn out like this?

Bai Guanyun felt as if he had gone crazy. Four months ago, Lin Ming only had the strength to barely kill a second stage Life Destruction master. How could his strength progress so quickly!

Normally, for a martial artist to advance a single stage of Life Destruction every few dozen years was already an incredible speed. But Lin Ming had only taken four months to enhance his strength by at least a boundary. This caused Bai Guanyun to fall into a hopeless despair.

But at this time, a billowing whirlpool suddenly appeared in the deep sea. A formidable aura surged forth like an endless tide. Bai Guanyun was suddenly overjoyed. He turned his head to see that not too far away, Xuan Wuji had grasped a jet black lance and was rushing his way over.

"Brother Xuan, save me!"

Bai Guanyun loudly called out for help. But as his voice left him, a burning hot spear appeared like a ghost right in front of his throat.

Ca!

With a faint sound, blood spurted out. Bai Guanyun stared at Lin Ming with wide eyes, unwillingness and disbelief coloring his face. However, as his perception had already faded away, he was no longer able to see anything in the water before him. The only thing that filled his vision was darkness.

Peng!

Bai Guanyun's true essence protection shattered and sea water came pouring in, crushing Bai Guanyun's body to nothingness. This was a depth of hundreds of thousands of feet; the pressure was extremely terrifying. Bai Guanyun was not from the deep sea races. Once his human body lost its true essence protection, his eyeballs instantly burst apart, his eardrums perforated, and sea water fluxed into his body, squishing his organs, meridians, muscles, bones, and everything to mush.

Lin Ming calmly took back his spear. With a wave of his hand, he retrieved Bai Guanyun's spatial ring.

"Lin Ming!"

A voice touched with the tiredness from the endless trials of life echoed outwards. As Lin Ming turned around, he could see that just a thousand feet away in the jet black sea water, Xuan Wuji was floating, pointing a lance straight at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming indifferently waved his spear, meeting Xuan Wuji in return.

On one side was a cold, dark light, and on the other side was a blazing red dawn!

After so many years, Lin Ming had finally gained the capital to stand in front of Xuan Wuji and fight with him!

That young, ordinary youth that had just entered the Seven Profound Martial House now had the ability to declare war on the number one master within the entire South Sea!

As Xuan Wuji looked at Lin Ming, various feelings and emotions filled his heart.

"It should have been nearly five years since my great grandson Xuan Ji was killed by you... no, in less than five years, you've risen up from the peak of Pulse Condensation to the late Revolving Core realm. I have investigated your past. When you were 15 years old you were only ordinary, not special at all. Now at just 21 years of age, a bit more than six years' time, you've grown from a mere common mortal to a top master that can instantly kill a third stage Life Destruction powerhouse. Within the Sky Spill Continent, your speed of cultivation is unprecedented from ancient times until now. I am truly curious; just what secret do you have with you?"

As Xuan Wuji spoke, Lin Ming didn't respond. However, the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch that was following behind Xuan Wuji actually blanched. In less than five years he had gone from the peak of Pulse Condensation to the late Revolving Core realm!?

The Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch only knew that Lin Ming's talent was monstrous. But, he had never been too sure as to what Lin Ming's history was. But now, listening to Xuan Wuji speak, this was the first time that he discovered that Lin Ming was an absolutely heaven-defying monstrous freak of nature!

In five years, to go from the peak of Pulse Condensation to the late Revolving Core, with such a terrifying cultivation speed, only a fool would believe that Lin Ming didn't have some heaven-shattering lucky chance with him!

No wonder Xuan Wuji had been willing to pay any price to capture Lin Ming.

"This is... truly unbelievable, ah..." Xuan Wuji deeply sighed, his eyes flashing with a strange, otherworldly look. "At Revered Master Tianguang's birthday banquet, you fought with Xuan Ji. Although Xuan Ji was only at the Houtian realm, his talent was still extraordinary and he had cultivated the Ancient Devil Arts. With his complete strength he was even able to match a Xiantian master. However, he was still defeated by you, a mere boy with a trivial Pulse Condensation cultivation!

"At that time, your talent was astonishing, but there were talents like you all over the four Divine Kingdoms, and there were even many young elites that surpassed you. At that time, I was startled by you, but I did not fear you. The reason I wanted to kill you was only because I wanted to avenge Xuan Ji's death, not because I thought that you had any amazing secret on your body. I never imagined that in such a short time, you will develop to the point where you could threaten me!"

"Afterwards… you entered the Demon God Imperial Palace, and with your little Houtian realm cultivation, you played with us old fellows in the palm of your hand. You stole away the Nirvana Dragon Root and the Cosmic Melting Furnace! The meticulous plans that I laid down for over ten years was actually made into a gift for a little child! How laughable is that! Even now, I still don't understand. Just how were you so skilled in ancient array formations? How did you obtain all those treasures and then make a grand escape to freedom? You snatched away the Nirvana Dragon Root and Cosmic Melting Furnace and then left for two whole years. Now you've returned, and you've returned as a complete monster. The reason I was so anxious to flush you out of hiding was because I truly feared you from the very bottom of my heart. I feared you so much that I even imagined days when I would take a nap, and the second I woke up you would have obtained the strength to kill me and would have already come rushing to my door!"

Xuan Wuji said in a single breath. After knowing of Lin Ming's existence for such a long time, there had been too many questions pressing down on his mind. The pressure on his heart had increased every day.

"Secret?" Lin Ming faintly smiled. "Xuan Wuji, don't you know about the existence of the Realm of the Gods? You fear how fast I grow but that is only because you are nothing more than a frog in a well. In the three thousand boundless worlds, there are countless extraordinary young elites just like me. One day, perhaps you will find that everything you've chased after in your life is nothing in the eyes of others, nothing but leftover garbage for them to step over."

“Hahaha!” Xuan Wuji laughed, “What you said is true. There are no limits in this universe; there is always a higher peak, a stronger man. I am truly nothing but a little frog in a well, but I am unwilling to remain so. I am unwilling to chase after things that are nothing but trash in the eyes of others. Thus, I want to leave this world. And you, Lin Ming, you will be my springboard to do so. Perhaps your secret is only garbage to the powerhouses in the Realm of the Gods, but in my eyes, it is the most precious treasure. It is my only hope to break past my limits! Let’s do this! Lin Ming, show me just where the limits of your strength lie!”

As Xuan Wuji spoke, he flourished the lance in his hands and thrust it straight at Lin Ming.

“Take my lance - Sunder the Profound Heavens!”

Bang!

Xuan Wuji’s true essence exploded out, forming a massive amount of pressure in the sea. The seawater around Lin Ming suddenly became as hard as iron as it began to envelop him.

Although this pressure wasn’t able to harm Lin Ming, it was still able to form a cage around him, sealing the directions where he could escape.

But, the truth was that Lin Ming had no intention of dodging to begin with. A frontal melee was what he desired above all!

True essence revolved in his body as the Heretical God Force was released to its limit. Lin Ming held the red spear, pouring his battle spirit into the spear point. For a time, the entire spear radiated a glorious flaming red light!

Chasing Sun!

The seawater was evaporated by the burning hot energy. Lin Ming's spear stuck Xuan Wuji's lance point!

Bang bang bang!

Two amazing energies collided. The sea water crazily spun around, mixing up from the forces. As the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch saw the situation devolving, he had already long retreated.

"Mm… this is!?!"

In the instant that Xuan Wuji exchanged moves with Lin Ming, he felt an incomparably sharp strength rush into his lance. It was like his heaven-step lance was unable to resist this force, issuing out a keening tremble!

This caused Xuan Wuji to be extremely alarmed!

"Burst!"

Xuan Wuji loudly shouted, detonated the true essence on the lance point. He was driven far back from the energy backlash. As he looked down at the black spear in his hands, he could see that it was still shaking. If this continued, then he couldn't guarantee that his lance wouldn't break!

This was a heaven-step treasure! If it were a high-grade earth-step treasure, it would have absolutely broken apart just now!

Xuan Wuji's vision focused on the red spear in Lin Ming's hands. That spear seemed to be a heaven-step treasure, but there was something strange covering it. Xuan Wuji was completely unable to determine just what rank of treasure it was.

However, even if it were a medium-grade heaven-strep treasure, it was would still be impossible to create such a terrifying pressure on his heaven-step lance. As Xuan Wuji recalled that incomparably keen strength just now, his heart suddenly trembled.

Could that strength be…

A battle spirit?

The South Sea Demon Region had once been a Holy Land. It’s Holy Ruler, the Netherworld Great Emperor, had been a top ranked character within the Sky Spill Continent three thousand years ago. In the ancient texts of their sect, there were certain records of battle spirits.

Xuan Wuji didn’t recognize this battle spirit at the start because this power was far too distant a realm for him. So, he simply never thought of it!

“This brat Lin Ming has actually formed his own battle spirit at the late Revolving Core realm? No, that’s wrong. According to the description in the ancient texts, this sort of battle spirit is not at a low grade. Lin Ming probably formed his battle spirit at an even earlier boundary! He is still young and yet he comprehended his own battle spirit! Moreover, that spear strike just now didn’t contain just a battle spirit. There was also an incomparably mystical Concept of Fire. The profound mystery of this Concept is something that perhaps even Yin Yang Profound Palace Master Xing Ji’s own Concept of Fire could not hold a candle to!

Yin Yang Profound palace was a sect that focused on the water and fire cultivation methods, using Yin and Yang elements to complement each other. Xing Ji trained in the fire-attribute and his cultivation was at the second stage of Life Destruction. Xuan Wuji had also once experienced Xing Ji’s Concept of Fire. But compared to Lin Ming’s own Concept of Fire, it was nothing more than trash.

“A battle spirit comparable to that of a Divine Sea Supreme Elder and a Concept of Fire that surpasses Xing Ji’s own understanding…” As Xuan Wuji held onto the black lance in his hands, rough and violent waves beginning to churning in his heart.

He had always thought that the reason Lin Ming became such a monstrous genius was because his luck was good and he stumbled onto a massive lucky chance. If Xuan Wuji could obtain this lucky chance, then his achievements would be even greater.

But now, whether it was the Concept of Fire or a battle spirit, neither of those can be attained with just a lucky chance. Battle spirit depended on one's will and the Concept of Fire looked at one's perception. Could Lin Ming truly be an unprecedented rare talent?

Xuan Wuji's complexion sank as he turned grim. He lifted his spear and wiped his right hand on the lance point. Fresh scarlet blood poured onto the lance point and shaft. Then, an incredible scene occurred. In that moment, the black lance seemed to become a bloodthirsty vicious beast, completely absorbing Xuan Wuji's blood and turning from black to a bright red.

"Lin Ming, I didn't think that with just a single exchange you've already pushed me to the point of making a blood sacrifice to my lance. Today, this battle will decide our life and deaths!"

Chapter 746 – The Disparity Between Them

Chapter 746 – The Disparity Between Them

…

…

…

Xuan Wuji cultivated the Ancient Devil Arts. He could directly sacrifice his own blood essence to his lance to further temper it, obtaining an even greater attack power. However, a martial artist had a limited quantity of blood. He would undoubtedly lose part of his blood vitality because of this move.

Xuan Wuji had no choice. He had to make a blood sacrifice to his lance in this battle with Lin Ming. The main reason was not to increase his striking power, but instead to reinforce his lance. If he hadn't done so, then his lance would have been cut off by Lin Ming's spear in just several collisions.

This sort of disadvantage didn't originate from the difference in ranks of their treasures but from the existence of a battle spirit.

In a battle between heaven-step treasures, when there was only a small difference in rank, there wouldn't be an obvious inferiority if Xuan Wuji's lance struck Lin Ming's spear. But, Lin Ming's spear had a battle spirit poured into it. This caused the sharpness and hardness of his spear to rise by an unbelievably large degree. In the past, when Lin Ming had poured his battle spirit into his high-grade earth-step Purple Comet Spear, he had been able to pierced through the body of a corpse devil which had been tempered by the profound gold divine fruit so that its body stood on par with a heaven-step treasure.

In addition to that, he had received a medium-grade heaven-step spear from the Timeworn Phoenix City that could stand on par with a high-grade heaven-step treasure in terms of hardness. If a battle spirit were to be attached to such a weapon, the degree of sharpness could be imagined.

Xuan Wuji did not have a battle spirit, thus he did not have the qualifications to directly confront Lin Ming.

Thus, Xuan Wuji could either use a massive amount of true essence to protect his lance or make a blood sacrifice to his lance, injuring himself to attack his enemy.

Blood smeared the corners of Xuan Wuji's mouth. He pointed his lance straight at Lin Ming and said, "In that lance strike just now, I was forced to withdraw my attack midway. Now, I will use everything I have!"

Now that Xuan Wuji and Lin Ming's battle had reached this boiling point, there was no longer any path of retreat! Xuan Wuji had to fight, and this was because he was a man whose heart was filled with ambition. If it was possible, he wanted to not only reach the Divine Sea but also ascend into the Realm of the Gods, seeing and adventuring through a much broader world!

Now, with this lucky chance standing right in front of him, if he didn't fight now, then he was destined to die in another thousand years, his body reduced to ashes by the endless expanse of time!

"Blood Waves Drowning the Skies!"

Xuan Wuji grasped his lance. Because of the wisp of blood essence he sacrificed to his spear, his originally white face was now flushed red, making him look like a demonic blood monster and the spear in his hands like the scarlet tongue of a devil. Xuan Wuji waved his lance, and a roiling red energy cut towards Lin Ming.

Facing this attack from Xuan Wuji, Lin Ming held his spear flat in his hands, revolving his true essence to the limit. His spear potential and battle spirit constantly rose. In the heavy water pressure hundreds of thousands of feet under the sea, every single move had to be made through the dense water, causing one to use up even more energy and stamina!

Law of Annihilation, Chain of Stars!

As Lin Ming held the red spear shaft, he swept it downwards!

This spear strike was a move that Lin Ming had comprehended after reversing the chain of stars in the God Transforming Mirror's second world. It had no name, but rather contained a trace of the Concept of Annihilation.

As his spear cut out, it tore apart the deep sea, fiercely colliding with Xuan Wuji's lance strike.

Bang!

The entire sea trembled and monstrous surging currents rolled up into a vortex. Thousands of feet away from the battle, a massive amount of sediment was stirred up into gray storms. Several deep sea vicious beasts that were hiding in the sand were frightened, fleeing in a panic.

Clang clang clang clang clang clang!

In this storm of sand and water, Lin Ming and Xuan Wuji engaged in a brutal melee!

The two heaven-step treasure weapons fiercely collided, causing the sea current to violently surge. In the high pressure of the deep seas, the water still wouldn't vaporize even when heated to a temperature comparable to molten magma. Every single strike from Lin Ming contained the power of his battle spirit and every single lance strike from Xuan Wuji contained his blood essence!

Demon God force field of the Heavenly Demon martial intent!

As Lin Ming fought, the killing intent on his body became increasingly thick and pure, starting to overwhelm Xuan Wuji with a terrifying oppressive force. The Death God force field was formed from the will of a martial artist's killing intent. If a martial artist didn't have a firm will and they were covered by the Death God force field, then it was possible that the fires of their life would be directly snuffed out.

Even a powerful master would be affected by the Death God force field, unable to utilize their full strength.

"Mm? This brat!" Xuan Wuji was shocked. Lin Ming actually had this type of domain ability!? Just what had this boy experienced in his life that he had so many abilities that others could only wish for?

"Endless Ghosts Scream, break for me!"

Xuan Wuji turned his lance. On the lance point, a wisp of eerie dark purple flame appeared. For a moment, it was as if countless spirits were crying out in unison, it was as if this wisp of dark purple fire was condensed from the infinite spirits of tortured souls!

Xuan Wuji's lance had killed countless martial artists. It was similar to the Great Desolate Blood Halberd; it used the blood essence and souls of martial artists as nourishment to strengthen itself!

The tortured spirits were constantly melted away by the Death God force field. But the dark purple flame on Xuan Wuji's lance became increasingly vivid!

"Demon God Flash!"

The muscles on Xuan Wuji's face fiercely twisted as he struck out at Lin Ming's head. But, Lin Ming actually didn't dodge or evade this strike. Instead, he thrust out his own spear, straight towards Xuan Wuji's chest.

Law of Annihilation!

Xuan Wuji was startled. Lin Ming completely disregarded a fatal attack to his head and still attacked him. It was like he didn't care for his own life!

With a turn of his lance, the energy that Xuan Wuji poured into it suddenly exploded. With a loud bang, true essence violently surged out. Lin Ming's purely offensive attack had caused both him and Xuan Wuji to be injured.

Lin Ming was sent flying a thousand feet away by the true essence explosion, but Xuan Wuji was no better off. Although he had blocked Lin Ming's spear, the battle spirit infused spear light still continued unabated, piercing through his layers of protective true essence and into his chest. Around 10% of the strike's strength roared into his meridians, recklessly destroying everything there!

Xuan Wuji paled and suppressed this true essence with a great deal of effort. Blood dripped down the corners of his lips.

He was injured!

Xuan Wuji grimaced. Although this was only a minor would, Lin Ming hadn't even defended and yet he himself had been injured. But no matter how it had happened, the truth was that he had been injured at the hands of a junior only a fraction of his age!

A fourth stage Life Destruction martial artist had been wounded by a mere 20 some year old Revolving Core boy. If the world learned of this, they would say he was nothing more than a joke!

"Boy, since you couldn't dodge my strike you wanted to engage in a suicidal trade instead! Dream on!" Xuan Wuji sneered. Sometimes, when a martial artist was weaker the others and didn't have the confidence to defend against another's moves, they might instead decide to trade injury for injury, forcing the other to withdraw.

But, Xuan Wuji was deeply experienced in combat. He could freely receive and change his strength, always able to change his attack. He simply wouldn't fall for such tricks. A moment ago, he had temporarily changed the direction of his attack, blocking the majority of the attack. Since Lin Ming hadn't changed his attack, his injuries should be much worse.

However, Xuan Wuji's taunting smile only lasted for several breaths of time, before it froze on his face. He looked at Lin Ming with wide eyes. At Lin Ming's chest, the clothing had been ripped apart by the true essence explosion. However, there was only a shallow bloody wound on his chest that was regenerating at a speed visible to the naked eye.

"How is this possible?"

Xuan Wuji was bewildered. His lance light had obviously struck Lin Ming. Even if it was weakened by Lin Ming's bodily true essence protection it should still be able to grievously wound him. How could it only cause such a minor wound?

Xuan Wuji didn't even have time to think about what had just happened; Lin Ming's spear was already shooting towards him once again!

This spear strike contained all of Lin Ming's true essence. It caused all the heaven and earth origin energy in a scope of 10 miles to spin around. In that moment, space twisted and the sea boiled!

As this spear thrust out, the high pressure sea water was split apart, forming a vacuum tunnel. Within Lin Ming's body, the Heretical God Seed howled as the Burning Star Flame surged outwards.

Bury the Heavens!

In this strike, the power of space fused with the Concept of Fire. Using the tempestuous space flows like a wind, it helped to increase the power of fire!

Xuan Wuji's expression became ferocious. He stabbed out his lance again and again!

"Emperor Arriving In the World!"

Ka ka ka!

Xuan Wuji's lance issued out a keening cry as if it couldn't support itself much longer. But Lin Ming's spear shot forwards with unstoppable force, arriving right in front of Xuan Wuji.

Around the edge of the spear, space tore apart and countless space fragments flew out like steel needles, cutting through the deep sea!

“This move is!?”

Xuan Wuji’s pupils shrank. His lance had reached the limit yet again!

Turning the lance, Xuan Wuji bit down on his tongue, forcefully spitting out more blood essence onto the lance edge!

Peng!

A massive amount of sea water vaporized, turning the entire seabed into a world of hazy fog. Xuan Wuji had drawn back more than 200 feet, his face flushed red with blood as he gasped for breath in deep, heaving gulps.

Hundreds of thousands of feet under the deep sea, every ability used here would consume over twice the energy it took on the surface. In this fierce battle, Xuan Wuji had already consumed a great deal of his true essence.

Because Lin Ming was still over an entire boundary lower than Xuan Wuji, he had been forced back 1000 feet. But, compared to Xuan Wuji, his complexion still hadn’t changed. There was not a single drop of sweat on his body; he still had plenty of strength left!

Even after using Chasing Sun, Penetrating Rainbow, the Laws of Annihilation, Bury the Heavens, and engaging in a brutal melee for a short period of time, he still had plenty of energy. It had to be known that in the later parts of the God Transforming Mirror’s second world, when the meteors there reached a mile and a half wide in diameter, Lin Ming would have to use Bury the Heavens to defend against them. As for the two mile wide meteors, Lin Ming would have to reverse the chain of stars.

Even in this case, if Lin Ming was completely earnest in his battle, he could last for over a 100 breaths of time!

This had caused Realm of the Gods powerhouses like Fairy Feng to praise him and for young elites like Huo Wenlong to fall into crippling despair from his success!

The reason that Lin Ming had such a great endurance was because he had opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. With the tempering of the Ancient Phoenix bloodline, his blood vitality now greatly exceeded even an extraordinary individual's!

In these aspects, Xuan Wuji simply couldn't compare to Lin Ming.

Not only did Lin Ming dominate in endurance, but he dominated in terms of defensive ability too. With 100% Tempering Marrow along with the tempering from the profound gold divine fruit, Lin Ming's body was similar to a high-grade earth-step treasure. He could easily engage Xuan Wuji in a battle of attrition.

Thus, even if Lin Ming's striking power was below Xuan Wuji's, if they continued fighting, then Xuan Wuji would no longer be able to support himself after another half incense stick of time!

Raising his spear, Lin Ming attacked again.

Bury the Heavens!

This was the same move as the last. True essence erupted from the red spear and space fragments cut out like shredding knives. Sea water was twisted into a giant whirlpool as the entire seabed vaporized.

As Xuan Wuji saw Lin Ming's attack only increase in aura and potential, his eyes finally flashed with a trace of fear.

How was this possible? Was this boy's body a puppet or something!?

Chapter 747 – The 100,000 Mile Chase

Chapter 747 – The 100,000 Mile Chase

…

…

…

Bang!

With another violent explosion, Xuan Wuji was only able to barely defend against Lin Ming's Bury the Heavens. Under the shockwaves, he was sent flying back thousands of feet. In the shifting tide of the battle, Xuan Wuji's minimal advantage against Lin Ming had already disappeared.

As for Lin Ming, after he was forced back several hundred feet, he shook his long spear and stabbed towards Xuan Wuji again.

Penetrating Rainbow!

A blazing spear light pierced through the deep sea. At this time, Xuan Wuji was still exhausted. He hadn't even managed to conjure up any new strength before Lin Ming's strike came hurtling towards him once again.

Bang!

Xuan Wuji coughed stuffily as he was sent flying away. The tumbling blood in his body was barely suppressed by his true essence.

The difference in their remaining strength was only growing!

Chasing Sun!

Bury the Heavens!

Law of Annihilation, Chain of Stars!

Lin Ming used move after move, completely overwhelming Xuan Wuji!

How was this possible!?!?

Xuan Wuji felt the blood surging up in his body as wounds accumulated all over him. As he faced Lin Ming's non-stop barrage of increasingly powerful attacks, fear finally began to bloom in his heart, causing him to draw back. He was truly ambitious, but in this situation where his chances of success were becoming increasingly slim, he wasn't stupid enough bring himself to death's door.

Escape?

This thought flashed through Xuan Wuji's mind. He indeed had some cards left in his hands, but facing this inexhaustible puppet-like Lin Ming, Xuan Wuji already felt a tinge of fear. He feared that even if he used every final card in his hands he still couldn't kill him. If that happened, then he wouldn't even have the chance to escape anymore.

With twist of his hand, Xuan Wuji took out an ash gray pill from his spatial ring. This pill was refined from 10,000 year old milk stalactite. After swallowing it, it could rapidly restore 30% of one's true essence. It could be said to be a miracle medicine capable of reversing any battle.

There was still a vast distance from here to the Sky Spill Continent. Xuan Wuji only had less than 40% of his true essence left. If he didn't supplement it, then it would be impossible for him to return.

With a flick of his finger, Xuan Wuji grudgingly swallowed down the pill, immediately turning around to escape!

"You want to run away?"

Lin Ming's eye flashed with a thick killing intent. If he didn't remove the weed by the roots then there would always be a viper aiming at him from the dark. After suffering a lesson from Ouyang Boyan, Lin Ming would not allow this kind of matter to repeat itself again.

True essence erupted and a battle spirit infused Asura force field spread out at the speed of light. The force field instantly overtook Xuan Wuji, leaving behind an undetectable battle spirit mark on his body.

Lin Ming had used this battle spirit mark once in the Eternal Demon Abyss to search for an exit from the 1000 mile forbidden zone and also once in the South Sea Demon region to chase down the numerous escaping masters there. If one didn't have a battle spirit like Lin Ming, then it was impossible to detect it, much less remove it.

After leaving behind this battle spirit mark, Lin Ming would be able to find Xuan Wuji even if he fled to the ends of the earth.

"Demonshine, have the Giant Leviathan float back up to the surface to recuperate its wounds. I will chase down Xuan Wuji!"

"Okay!" Demonshine chuckled, "Hunting down and killing others is what this Saint likes the most!"

Lin Ming received his red spear and stepped with Golden Roc Shattering the Void, instantly chasing after Xuan Wuji.

In the deep sea, it moving forwards was very slow. In addition, every step forwards required several times more energy it took than to fly. Xuan Wuji didn't have much of his original energy remaining to begin with, thus he naturally needed to run out of the sea first.

Bang!

Sea water exploded, forming a massive spray of water hundreds of feet high. Xuan Wuji shot up into the heavens, flying straight towards the north. As he flew, he took out a enchantment bead from his spatial ring and tossed it behind him.

Xuan Wuji had used this kind of enchantment bead once before in the Demon God Imperial Palace to block Abbot Whitebrow and the others from chasing after him. If it hadn't been for Lin Ming tinkering with the transmission array and changing it, then Xuan Wuji would have had enough time to escape.

Bang!

The bead burst apart at the sea level, forming a blue hued enchantment barrier that sealed up the water surface like a glass wall. As soon Lin Ming ran out his speed dropped as he was caught by this enchantment.

"Break!'

Lin Ming thrust out his spear. With his battle spirit infused into it, he struck the enchantment barrier. This blue barrier that had originally been able to withstand both Nanyun Wang's attacks and Abbot Whitebrow's Bright Buddha Palm Seal now had countless cracks appear through it.

"Break again!"

Lin Ming thrust his spear out a second time. This time, the enchanted barrier completely collapsed. He stepped on the void, turning towards Xuan Wuji and chasing after him.

"This brat!"

Xuan Wuji's mind went cold. Although he knew Lin Ming's striking power was formidable, he didn't that that his enchantment bead would only be able to stop Lin Ming for a single breath of time.

“3000 miles to the north is a transmission array of my South Sea Demon Region. As long as I can pass through it first and destroy it from the other side, I can expel Lin Ming from the space channel. With that, I should be safe.”

“Mystic Thunder Wings!”

Xuan Wuji formed a series of seals with his hands. Then, clothes on his back tore apart, revealing a pair of purple wings that stretched out. This was a flight-type treasure that was refined with plumes from several different Saint Beasts. It could improve Xuan Wuji’s speed to a certain degree.

“This boy is too difficult to deal with. Fortunately, this flight treasure that I refined can finally show its use. With it, it shouldn’t be a problem to increase my speed by 20-30%.

Xuan Wuji unfurled his two wings, shooting forwards like an arrow. Wherever he went, a terrifying sonic boom formed, rumbling through the air like a moving thunderstorm. Even the sea surface was split apart from the wind pressure!

In a single go, Xuan Wuji was able to fly out several hundred miles. As he swept his perception behind him, a chill crept up his spine. Lin Ming was still chasing him! Not just that, but he was closing the distance between them!

“How could this be!?”

Xuan Wuji was greatly shocked. Even though he was flying at full speed and had the support of a flight treasure boosting him, he was still slower than Lin Ming!

He discovered that with every single step Lin Ming took he would cross several miles. Space twisted underneath his feet as if it shrunk. With just a several steps the gap closed by several dozen miles!

What kind of movement was this!?

Xuan Wuji grit his teeth, revolving his true essence to the limit. To a character like him, a 3000 mile distance didn't take long to traverse all. But now that he was being chased down by Lin Ming, this distance actually became a trial of life or death!

The distance between them increasingly shortened. If this continued for another half incense stick of time, then Lin Ming would catch up to him. Once he was embroiled in another battle with Lin Ming, running away again would be far harder.

Xuan Wuji cursed aloud and clenching his teeth, cutting a line across his wrist with his fingernail. This was the third time that he would be using his blood essence. Two drops of blood essence shot out, one to each wing. The Mystic Thunder Wings turned a blood red and his speed rose up once again!

After using his blood essence three times, even though he only used a few drops every time, it would still accumulate. Even Xuan Wuji wouldn't able to continue like this. In this battle, his life source had already been damaged. If he wanted to restore it, it would take at least several dozen years of time and a massive amount of heavenly treasures.

"This damned boy!"

Xuan Wuji was breathless with anger. The chances of him obtaining the secret on Lin Ming's body was becoming increasingly slim, not to mention that the South Sea Demon Region was already 90% destroyed by Lin Ming. His losses had been far too great!

"I will no longer care about the South Sea Demon Region. After I leave the South Horizon Region, I will go straight to the four Divine Kingdoms!"

Xuan Wuji and Lin Ming flew after one another, causing massive explosions on the sea's surface from the high speed sonic booms that they created. After making a blood essence sacrifice to his wings, Xuan Wuji had finally been able to create some additional distance from Lin Ming. Now, the transmission array was directly in front of him!

This was a transmission array established on a desolate island. There were originally South Sea Demon Region disciples protecting it, but now that the South Sea Demon Region was in a state of near dissolution, these disciples had long fled to lands unknown.

Xuan Wuji fell to the ground like a cannon strike. As he hit the floor, a massive crater formed from the impact, shaking the island and causing rock formations all over to collapse.

“The transmission array is still here!’

Xuan Wuji was overjoyed. He ran into the transmission array, and with a flick of his fingers, true essence stones flew into the four corners of the transmission array.

The array formation was activated!

After seeing the blazing comet that was Lin Ming closing in from a distance, Xuan Wuji’s eyes flashed with hatred. “One day, this old man will have you pay the price for today!”

In the next moment, Xuan Wuji’s hideous expression completely disappeared in the transmission array.

“Mm? He ran through a transmission array?”

Lin Ming fell down to the island and swept his perception around. He instantly understood the principles behind this transmission array. This was the most ordinary of transmission arrays; it would at most send someone 100-200,000 miles away.

“Xuan Wuji will definitely destroy the exit of this transmission array when I’m inside, forcing me out of the space channel.”

For a small transmission array like this, if there was a problem in the transmission process, it would be life-threatening for a martial artist with a weaker cultivation. But, for someone like Lin Ming, this was not a problem. At most he would pop out halfway through.

Lin Ming jumped onto the transmission array and launched the array formation. Space twist, and in the next moment, Lin Ming entered the space channel.

A transmission channel of several tens of thousands of miles could last from a dozen to several dozen breaths of time. As soon as ten breaths of time passed, the space channel suddenly shook and the power of space began to chaotically distort. Massive cracks began appearing in the space channel. It was obvious that the exit was being destroyed by Xuan Wuji!

Hu hu hu!

From the cracks in the space channel, a massive overflow of turbulent space began to flood inside, forming a black storm that swept towards Lin Ming. If a martial artist with insufficient cultivation were swept up by this storm, they would be shredded apart and die. Even for a martial artist that was strong enough, they would still be thrust out of the space channel, terminating the transmission process.

Facing this sort of situation, Lin Ming didn't panic at all. He flicked all 10 of his fingers, forming a number of true essence air flows that shot out. After the menacing space storm was struck by the true essence air, it actually began to rapidly fade away, and soon subsided after several breaths of time.

Compared to the super long-distance array formation that Lin Ming had experienced before, violent space turbulence of this degree was nothing at all. With Lin Ming's comprehension towards the Concept of Space, he could actually break apart the turbulent power of space and forcefully complete the transmission.

"Set for me!"

Lin Ming thrust out his spear, stabbing it into the space barrier around him. The space channel that was about to break apart was actually forcefully stabilized by Lin Ming.

"The exit coordinates are around 70-80,000 miles from here!"

With the exit destroyed, the transmission coordinates would blur. Lin Ming wasn't a god. Although he could rely on his understanding of Space Laws to forcefully complete the transmission, he still lacked the exact coordinates of the exit point.

However, with the battle spirit mark that Lin Ming had left on Xuan Wuji, he could use that to approximate the location of it.

“There is still around 30,000 miles.”

Lin Ming confirmed the position once again.

“20,000 miles… 10,000 miles… it’s nearby!”

Shatter!

Lin Ming stabbed his spear into the space channel barriers. In the next moment, space collapsed and Lin Ming was flushed out from the space channel.

Chapter 748 – Chase Through the South Horizon Region

Chapter 748 – Chase Through the South Horizon Region

…

…

…

Because the exit to the transmission array was destroyed, Lin Ming had forcefully stabilized the space channel, eventually stalling him for a period of time. After he emerged, Xuan Wuji had already vanished.

"Is this a series of transmission arrays?"

Lin Ming could feel that the battle spirit mark he left on Xuan Wuji was already fleeing at a ridiculous speed. There was only one possibility and that was that Xuan Wuji had entered another transmission array.

Casting a net with his perception, Lin Ming quickly found the transmission array. This island was obviously a transmission array transit station that the South Sea Demon Region had established. The entire island was protected by an illusionary array formation, making it well hidden. There was also some towers on this island, that should have been where the disciples who protected the island lived, but now the towers had long been emptied.

Besides there towers were several large and small transmission arrays, each of them 100 to 200 feet in diameter. Lin Ming estimated that they should have a range of 100 to 200,000 miles.

Among these transmission arrays, one of them had been destroyed. It was clear that this was the one Xuan Wuji had just emerged from.

Additionally, besides this ruined transmission array, there were 3 to 4 similar transmission arrays. One of them was still shining with light, releasing fluctuations of energy that indicated that it had just been activated.

Without a doubt, Xuan Wuji had gone through this transmission array. While Xuan Wuji could destroy the exit of a transmission array, he couldn't destroy the entrance, otherwise, even he couldn't pass through.

After Lin Min understood the principles behind these transmission arrays, he stepped into another transmission array, launching it once more!

....

At this time, several hundred thousand miles away from the South Sea Demon Region, in the valley of a remote mountain range, there were 7 to 8 martial artists sitting in a circle near a group transmission arrays.

"Senior-apprentice Brother, I heard that the 70 to 80% of the South Sea Demon Region was destroyed. What should we do now? Should we continue waiting?"

Among these martial artists, a 20 some year old youth asked the red-clothed martial artist that led them.

These people were disciples of a third-grade sect in the South Horizon Region. They were situated here specifically to guard the transmission arrays.

The South Horizon Region was an incomparably broad land with many transmission array transit points. Because of the sky high cost of construction, several sects would often group together to build the transmission arrays. Then, since they collected fees for their use, they naturally had to send disciples to protect them.

However, several years ago the South Sea Demon Region had invaded the South Horizon Region. The three great fourth-grade sects of the South Horizon Region were Divine Phoenix Island, Dire Space Sect, and Supreme Mystery Temple. These sects had been slowly annihilated, one at a time. Since these third-grade sects had lost their supporters, they naturally became subordinate sects of the South Sea Demon Region.

As for the transmission array network in the South Horizon Region, these were naturally taken by the South Sea Demon Region.

It often required multiple people to guard a transmission array transit point. Because there were so many of these transit points, it was impossible for the South Sea Demon Region to send guards to every single one. Normally, they would send a single South Sea Demon Region disciple to the transmit point and the rest of the staff was filled in by disciples from smaller sects.

All of these people, without exception, had a spell placed on them by the South Sea Demon Region. If they ever tried to rebel, their fates could be imagined.

But now, they heard the news that the South Sea Demon Region was razed several times by Lin Ming and was on the verge of being completely extinguished. The Demon Region disciples didn't dare to stay in the South Sea and had flocked back to their homelands in the South Horizon Region and other places. Since things had reached this point, they had no idea what to do.

"Don't talk so carelessly. Although the South Sea Demon Region has suffered some setbacks, a centipede that's been cut in half can still live on. Even its remains are something that we can't contend with. Moreover, in the South Horizon Region, the South Sea Demon Region's influence hasn't been affected too greatly. There are still Elders here keeping command. If our conversation were to be known by them, then we would undoubtedly die."

"Yah, unfortunately, Great Hero Lin has only rampaged around the South Sea area. If he could come to the South Horizon Region then the South Sea Demon Region branch here would probably instantly dissolve. Perhaps when that happens, our spells will be undone and we can obtain our freedom…" in the circle of martial artists, a yellow-clothed girl whispered in a quiet voice.

"Shh, don't say that! We still have a Demon Envoy from the South Sea Demon Region at our island. If he heard our words, then consequences would be dire. Moreover, I heard that around four months ago, Lin Ming was trapped along with the Giant Leviathan in a deep sea trench 300,000 feet under the sea by Xuan Wuji. It's hard to estimate how long Lin Ming can hold out. Once Lin Ming is defeated, Xuan Wuji will rejoin the South Sea Demon Region and become its rallying point. It won't be difficult for him to reform the South Sea Demon Region as most of their disciples are still alive…" The red-clothed martial artist sighed as he mulled over the situation in the South Sea.

In these past months, Lin Ming had virtually become a figure of indomitable faith of the entire South Horizon Region. With just his strength alone, he had captured the Giant Leviathan and then killed his way into the South Sea Demon Region, razing it to the ground multiple times and killing thousands of South Sea Demon Region disciples, which even included the majority of the Elders stationed there.

Such a series of victories were simply a heaven gifted miracle!

What was even more miraculous was that Lin Ming was only 20 or so years old with a Revolving Core cultivation. He took advantage of the period when Xuan Wuji was in closed-door seclusion to repeatedly ruin the South Sea Demon Region.

However, Xuan Wuji had now left his seclusion and had even broken through to the fourth stage of Life Destruction. In the face of such a mighty Xuan Wuji, could Lin Ming still withstand it?

Hearing the red-clothed martial artist's words, the yellow-clothed girl gripped her fists. "Nothing will happen to Great Hero Lin! That's right, I heard before that Great Hero Lin also came from the Seven Profound Valleys. Doesn't that mean he is from the same sect as Brother Jiang?"

The yellow-clothed girl suddenly remembered the rumors so she asked the red-clothed martial artist this question.

"That's right..." The red-clothed martial artist named Brother Jiang suddenly seemed sad as he heard this question. Lin Ming had truly originated from his Seven Profound Valleys. Moreover, he had even become the champion of the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction Martial Meeting. No one had ever imagined that in the near future, Lin Ming would become a top master of the South Horizon Region only inferior to Xuan Wuji!

As he remembered the past, it was like everything had been a dream.

The yellow-clothed girl's eyes shined brightly as she heard the red-clothed martial artist's words. "Brother Jiang, can you tell me about Great Hero Lin's adventures in the Seven Profound Valleys?"

The red-clothed martial artist shook his head. He ruefully smiled and said, "I am only an outer court disciple of the Seven Profound Valleys. At the Total Faction Martial Meeting, I was only able to sit in the audience and watch the fight onstage from a distance. Although Lin Ming and I are from the same sect, the truth is that our paths have never intersected..."

As the red-clothed martial artist spoke to here, his complexion suddenly changed. He quickly whispered, "Don't say anything, the Demon Envoy is here!"

As his voice fell, a black-clothed South Sea Demon Region martial artist at the early Xiantian realm appeared in front of them like a ghost.

His sharp and cruel eyes swept over the group. He coldly said, "Gathering together to spread rumors, hm? I advise you lot to smarten up. Lin Ming has already been sealed by the Great Elder 300,000 feet deep in a sea trench. Soon, the Great Elder will solve the problem that is Lin Ming. Once the Great Elder reaches the Divine Sea realm, the South Sea Demon Region will rise to become a Holy Land. We will rule over the entire south region of the Sky Spill Continent and establish our own Divine Kingdom in the future. For you lot to become early subjects of our Divine Kingdom, all of you should feel honored!"

“Yes, Sir Envoy!” The red-clothed martial artist ignored the black-clothed martial artists bragging and secretly relaxed, replying in a respectful tone.

The black-clothed martial artist nodded with satisfaction. Just as he was about to speak some more, the transmission array near them suddenly flashed with a blazing light.

“Mm? Some people have arrived?”

The black-clothed martial artist’s heart stirred. For the first several months after the South Sea Demon Region was razed by Lin Ming, there were often disciples of the South Sea Demon Region come from the South Sea, all of the returning to the South Horizon Region branch to seek safety. They feared that if they remain in the South Sea they would be chased and killed by Lin Ming. But these days, ever since Lin Ming was sealed 300,000 feet deep in a sea trench, the transmission array hadn’t been used much.

At this time, the shining light emitting from the transmission array suddenly brightened to an unbearable degree. A black ray of light shot into the horizon, causing the very earth to tremble.

The black-clothed martial artist’s complexion immediately changed. “Who is brave that they dare to forcefully accelerate the transmission array just to save some time! This will overload the transmission array and could possibly cause permanent damage! Once there is an accident, the losses will be immeasurable! Just which dastardly fellow dares to mess around like this!”

The black-clothed martial artist seethed with anger. He traced his spatial ring, extracting a long spear as he prepared to capture this arrogant fellow on the spot.

However, as the rays of light faded away, there was suddenly a pallid black-clothed middle-aged man standing in the array formation.

“You overly arrogant bastard, you can...” The black-clothed martial artist words were suddenly caught in his throat. For a time, his face entire face twisted into something like a strange array formation.

“G-G-G-G-Great Elder!”

The black-clothed martial artist stuttered. As a disciple of the South Sea Demon Region, he naturally knew of Xuan Wuji. Although he had never met him personally, he had still seen portraits.

Moreover, the aura and unfathomable cultivation of the black-clothed man in front of him proved beyond a doubt that this was Xuan Wuji!

“How would this… isn’t Elder Xuan trapping Lin Ming in the deep sea? Why would he come to the South Horizon Region branch? Could he have killed Lin Ming already?”

The black-clothed martial artist’s mind raced even as he stood there stock still as if he had been petrified. But, behind the black-clothed martial artist, those several third-grade sect disciples were dumbfounded when they heard the black-clothed martial artist refer to this newcomer as ‘Great Elder’.

Because of problems in the background and the legacy of the South Sea Demon Region, there were several great clans. Each of these great clans had their own Sovereign.

But, there was only a single Great Elder. And that was the number one master of the South Sea- Xuan Wuji!

Was this black-clothed martial artist Xuan Wuji? Could such a legendary character actually appear right in front of them?

It had to be known that they normally couldn’t even see a Revolving Core martial artist, much less this Xuan Wuji was a fourth-grade Life Destruction powerhouse. To them, he could be called a god.

“Even if I just look at him I can feel my very soul shivering; it’s like I have no choice but to bow my head down before him. He is truly worthy of being called the top master of the South Sea!” The red-clothed martial artist thought with rising horror. Just by standing in front of Xuan Wuji he could feel a deep pressure pushing down on him. “Why… Xuan Wuji… it seems as if he’s injured!?”

Whether it was the several third-grade sect disciples or the black-clothed martial artist, all of them noticed the wounds covering Xuan Wuji. All of his clothes had been torn and he was covered with blood. Without a doubt, Xuan Wuji had just emerged from a fierce battle just now!

Just who was it? Who had the ability to contend with Xuan Wuji to this degree?

After Xuan Wuji appeared, he first swallowed down a pill. Without further ado, he turned around and slammed out his palm!

Bang!

The transmission array shattered!

The black-clothed martial artist could only watch helplessly as this happened. He was dumbstruck; just what was going on?

“Great… Great Elder, you…” The black-clothed martial artist trembled as he spoke.

“Get out of my way!”

Xuan Wuji roared out. The black-clothed martial artist shook and he collapsed just from the sound waves! With a wave of his voluminous sleeves, Xuan Wuji shot into the skies!

The eruption of energy caused winds to surge out in all directions and the seven to eight third-grade sect martial artists were blown away. Those with weaker cultivations felt their blood tumble in their bodies as they suffered minor wounds.

Chapter 749 – The Death of Xuan Wuji

Chapter 749 – The Death of Xuan Wuji

…

…

…

"Can… can someone tell me… just what the f*ck is going on!?"

The black-clothed martial crawled up from the ground, his mouth full of blood. Xuan Wuji's loud shout just now had shocked his organs, damaging them. Luckily, Xuan Wuji hadn't used too much true essence, otherwise, the black-clothed martial artist would have been grounded to a pulp.

The black-clothed martial artist couldn't understand what was happening. What had happened to Xuan Wuji that he became so anxious? Why had he destroyed the transmission array? Was he being chased down by someone?

It wasn't just the black-clothed martial artist that thought this; all of the other martial artists present had this thought too.

Xuan Wuji's entire body had been covered with wounds. Not just that, but he had forcefully revolved the energy of the transmission array to speed it up and had destroyed the transmission array in a panicked haste before soaring away. All of this made it seem as if he was truly being chased down by someone, but how could that even be possible!?

In the entire South Sea, just who had the strength to chase down Xuan Wuji?

As everyone just thought of this, the already destroyed transmission array actually began to shine again!

“This… this is…!”

The black-clothed martial artist stared with wide eyes. How could someone possibly come out of this transmission array!? It was impossible! This transmission array had already be ruined so how could it possibly be used? If someone was still inside when it was destroyed they might lose themselves in the chaotic space turbulence, ripped to shreds by the vast space storm!

Bang bang bang!

The sound of thunder rumbled in the air. The winds and cloud stirred as the world seemed to lose its color. In a radius of 10 miles, all of the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy began to rush towards the center, forming a terrifying tornado. A blazing red beam of light shot into the sky, piercing through heavens. The earth trembled, countless cracks appearing like a spider’s web.

“Is this really a transmission!?”

The black-clothed martial artist eyes’ went so wide that they nearly popped out of his head. As for the several other third-grade sect martial artist, all of them were completely dumbfounded. This brilliant and beautiful red light reached a crescendo and a scene that they would never forget in their lives occurred right before them.

A hundred feet away, the void seemed to fiercely twist together. Then, with a loud thunderclap, half of a red spear appeared in thin air as if it had just torn through the very fabric of space!

With this spear, a tear appeared in the world. From this space crack, a blue-clothed youth calmly stepped out. His entire body was wreathed in ghostly flames and sizzling purple electricity. With a red spear in hand, he was like a god of war incarnate!

He was…

The black-clothed martial artist was completely shocked. Even though the transmission array had been destroyed he had still forcefully completed the transmission. With absolute power, he held up the space channel by himself, forcefully tearing through space with his spear and stepping out like a gust of wind.

Was he even human!?

Although the black-clothed martial artist was only at the Xiantian realm, he could still be considered to be greatly experienced. He had never heard of someone casually tearing apart space and opening a space channel to cross the endless void.

Was this youth a Divine Sea powerhouse?

Not… he was too young, at most he seemed… just over 20!

At a mere 20 some years old, to rip apart space, could he be a Crown Prince from the four Divine Kingdoms?

Even a Divine Kingdom Crown Prince should not have such strength!

The black-clothed martial artist head had become a muddled mess. As for the red-clothed martial artist, his heart was tumbling with great quakes. Although this youth in front of him had slightly changed in appearance and temperament, he could still see familiar shades in that face. He appeared to be… Lin Ming!?

As the blue-clothed youth appeared he quickly glanced around at the crowd, seeming a bit surprised. But, he soon regained his utter calm and no longer bothered with these juniors. Stepping on Golden Roc Shattering the Void, he shrunk the space beneath him, flying towards the far horizon at an alarming speed as he chased behind Xuan Wuji.

The black-clothed martial artist was only able to look helplessly on. Just how many miles had Lin Ming crossed in a single step? It looked no different than if he were teleporting forwards, completely bamboozling anyone that witnessed it. Just what sort of godly movements were that?

That was definitely teleportation!

“Who… who was that?” The yellow-clothed girl’s lips shivered. Although that youth didn’t look much older than she was, how could he have such strength?

He was like a god that descended to earth.

“He is Lin Ming!’

The red-clothed martial artist suddenly shouted out, his voice exuberant and filled with respect.

“Lin Ming!?”

The black-clothed martial artist cried out.

From the direction that he flew, he was clearly chasing after Xuan Wuji. Had Xuan Wuji been reduced to this state because he was being chased after by Lin Ming?

It wasn’t just the black-clothed martial artist that realized this but everyone else did too.

Rumors said that Lin Ming had been trapped by Xuan Wuji 300,000 miles under the sea in a trench for over four months. How did the situation suddenly reversed, and Xuan Wuji ended up being the one chased by Lin Ming instead?

The yellow-clothed girl covered her mouth with her hands. Although she had heard stories about Lin Ming’s majesty, seeing was believing. After she witnessed Lin Ming today, she realized that the Lin Ming in her mind was far inferior to the true Lin Ming!

“Quickly report this to the sect; do not allow the Demon Envoy to discover this. Do this as quickly as possible!’ The red-clothed youth shook his head as if he had awoken from a dream and quickly sent out a true essence sound transmission to everyone.

The other martial artists were stunned. If Lin Ming could chase down Xuan Wuji, didn't that mean that there wasn't a single existence in the entire south Sea Demon Region that could contend with Lin Ming? Didn't this mean that he would win the South Sea war?

Victory!?

The several third-grade sect martial artists were dazed and out of their minds. This was an incomparable distance concept. After the events of the Demon God Imperial Palace, the Wartime Alliance had suffered defeat after defeat before finally being destroyed. To them, victory had already become a forgotten word…

As the several third-grade sect martial artists were thinking to report this news to their sect, the South Sea Demon Region's black-clothed martial artist also felt the same. He had to pass this news to the South Sea Demon Region's branch in the South Horizon Region as soon as possible.

Like this, before even an incense stick of time passed, several sound transmitting talismans flared up, the news of this monumental event spreading like a tide.

…………..

"Lin Ming! You!" As Xuan Wuji saw Lin Ming chasing after him once again, his expression greatly changed. "How is this possible!? I've already destroyed the transmission array so how can he chase me here!?"

Xuan Wuji could not imagine what Lin Ming had done. This had already surpassed his scope of understanding.

Lin Ming remained completely silent. As he held onto his red spear, he pursued after Xuan Wuji!

With every second he closed in more and more!

The power of the blood essence that Xuan Wuji had poured into the Mystic Thunder Wings was already slowly exhausting. In this shifting chase, Lin Ming's speed increasingly surpassed Xuan Wuji's.

10 miles!

5 miles!

3 miles!

He was already in the range of attack!

"Lin Ming, don't force me!" Xuan Wuji roared out.

But at this moment, Lin Ming had already attacked!

With a thrust of his spear, space itself twisted. Blazing heat from the Burning Star Flame erupted. As Lin Ming poured his battle spirit into his spear, it became like a blue rainbow, shooting across the endless sky!

Bury the Heavens!

Bang!

Xuan Wuji forcefully blocked this attack but his body shook and a trail of blood dripped down from the sides of his mouth. At this time he had already consumed 50 to 60% of his remaining true essence; he was now fundamentally incapable of fighting Lin Ming anymore.

"Lin Ming, I have a great number of the Demon Emperor's secrets in my hands! If you kill me you will never obtain them!"

"The Demon Emperor's secrets?" Lin Ming faintly smiled. "Xuan Wuji, I already said before that everything you've pursued your entire life might be trash in the eyes of others. Although the Demon Emperor's relics might be worthwhile to me, it is still a run-of-the-mill treasure. As for killing you, that temptation is greater than any treasure by far! Now die!!!"

Law of Annihilation, Chain of Stars!

Lin Ming's spear cut straight down, tearing apart space. All of the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy began to restlessly move. Origin energy condensed into tiny fragments, spinning like a chain of stars. With Xuan Wuji at the center, all these fragments shot towards him!

If Xuan Wuji couldn't dodge these, then his fate was to be pierced by 10,000 arrows!

"Power of my blood essence, explode!'

Xuan Wuji fiercely bit down on his tongue, spitting out even more blood essence. Now, the only thing he had left to rely on was the power of his blood essence. However, just as he spat this blood essence halfway, his face suddenly twisted!

After using his blood essence repeatedly, Xuan Wuji had already damaged the fires of his life. In a situation where his life force was incredibly weak, in addition to the long distance pursuit he had experienced, Xuan Wuji had finally suffered a backlash. He spat out a mouthful of blood, his heart source injured.

"No-!!!"

After his move was stopped midway, Xuan Wuji no longer had any strength to resist. With his body at the center, countless concentrated fragments of heaven and earth origin energy exploded. Xuan Wuji miserable screamed as his entire body was soaked in blood. He flew backwards like a deflated bag.

In that attack just now, Xuan Wuji's organs had been damaged in many places and his meridians had been torn to pieces!

Lin Ming's eyes filled with a thick killing intent. At this time, he had also used up 40 to 50% of the energy in his body. If Xuan Wuji still had extra strength left over it would have been much more difficult to chase him down and kill him.

Bury the Heavens!

A spear cut out, seeming to split the sky in half. Lin Ming revolved his energy to the limit, stabbing out at the space between Xuan Wuji's eyebrows!

On the verge of death, Xuan Wuji forcefully twisted his body. He managed to save his vital point, but his right arm and shoulder were slashed off by Lin Ming's spear. As his bloody arm spun away, it was suddenly torn to tiny bits by the sharp space fragments before being crushed into nothingness!

Although he had escaped this fatal blow, Xuan Wuji was now a lamp with no more oil. His death was inevitable.

Lin Ming spun around, stepping on Golden Roc Shattering the Void. He instantly appeared behind Xuan Wuji, his spear thrusting straight into his back.

"Die!"

Blood shot out. The red spear ripped apart Xuan Wuji's protective true essence and stabbed right into his mortal body!

Puff!

Xuan Wuji felt an icy coldness at the center of his being. As he looked down, he could see a bloody red spear emerging from his chest.

As Xuan Wuji looked at the bloodstained spear, his eyes turned perfectly round. In that moment, all sounds faded away. With unwillingness filling his very body, he gripped onto that ice-cold spear edge. His face was the color of death and his lips trembled.

This spear had not only pierced through Xuan Wuji's body but also his hopes and ambitions.

Lin Ming turned the spear, and battle spirit infused true essence shot into Xuan Wuji's body like mini flying knives.

In the next moment, Xuan Wuji's body burst apart into a mass of ruined meat.

Flesh and blood rained onto the forest ground beneath him. Like this, a fierce and ambition individual of his era had perished in these nameless mountain wilds.

It was finally over!

Lin Ming let out a long breath. In five years, Xuan Wuji had gone from an extreme master that he couldn't even look to, to a miserable man that had become a ghost under the edge of his spear.

As for that insufferably arrogant and all-powerful South Sea Demon Region that had once threatened Divine Phoenix Island, they were now nothing more than dust left behind in the passing of history.

Today marked the end of the war against the South Sea Demon Region. As for those remaining forces, they simply weren't worth mentioning at all.

"Xuan Wuji..."

Lin Ming silently remembered this name. Perhaps a hundred years from now this name might be remembered as only an unimportant figure. But to Lin Ming, the owner of this name was a formidable enemy that had engraved an unforgettable impression on his heart.

In order to defeat this enemy, Li Ming had suffered countless hardships.

As he thought about everything he had experienced these past years, Lin Ming's mind filled with a nostalgic sadness, as if all the vicissitudes of life weighed down on him.

After he received his long spear, he then discovered that he was actually at the border of the Sky Fortune Kingdom in the Seven Profound Territory.

This proud and ambitious Xuan Wuji had actually died in the Sky Fortune Kingdom. This sort of coincidence seemed ironic, as if it were a part of the cycle of Samsara itself.

“There is no longer anyone in the Sky Fortune Kingdom that I am concerned about. In the dimensions of the Giant Leviathan, my parents, Yu’er, and Xingxuan should be worrying about me…”

As Lin Ming thought this out loud, he flew back to the South Sea.

Chapter 750 – Returning to the Dimension

Chapter 750 – Returning to the Dimension

…

…

…

News of Lin Ming hunting down Xuan Wuji rapidly spread throughout the entire South Horizon Region and Five Element Region as if it had wings. To the sects in these two regions, any unusual news was good news. After living in the terrifying shadow of the South Sea Demon Region for so many years, all of them wanted to see a glimmer of hope.

Before, Lin Ming had captured the Giant Leviathan, wounded Xuan Yuqie, and razed the South Sea Demon Region. All of this had been breathtaking, uplifting news, but this time…

Lin Ming, alone with his spear, had torn through the void with his strength and chased down Xuan Wuji for several hundred thousand miles. This news was simply too melodramatic; one couldn't help but suspect whether it was true.

And this news hadn't come from a large sect like Storm Valley or the Sunfire Sect. Rather, it originated from a very small transmission array transit point.

Four months ago, Lin Ming had been trapped in a deep sea trench 300,000 miles under the surface by Xuan Wuji, on the verge of being captured and killed at any moment. In such a short period of time, how could Lin Ming reverse the situation and be the one to hunt down Xuan Wuji instead?

Was this even possible?

Could this be a smoke screen that the South Sea Demon Region released, and the truth was that Lin Ming had already been killed by Xuan Wuji? Did Xuan Wuji release this fake intelligence in order to lure the other sects to jointly attack the South Sea Demon branch in the South Horizon Region, and then catch all of them together at once?

“Father, what do you think?” In Storm Valley, Zhan Yunjian asked his father this question.

In front of Zhan Yunjian was a blue-clothed middle-aged man. This middle-aged man pondered for a moment before saying, “This matter is too strange. It might be a trap that the South Sea Demon Region has laid down, don’t you think?”

Zhan Yunjian shook his head, saying, “It’s because it’s so bizarre that I think it’s true. If this news is really fake, then I can only say that Xuan Wuji’s mental state has regressed. Why would he harm his own prestige and fabricate such lies? Even if this news came out, would it have much effect as a trap?”

The blue-clothed middle-aged man nodded and said, “No matter what happened we’ll just have to wait and see. Paper can’t wrap fire; the truth will come to light sooner or later. Of course, I certainly hope that this news is true…”

Xuan Wuji had died in a desolate mountain range on the border of the Sky Fortune Kingdom. In the vast South Horizon Region, this was a tiny, miniscule piece of land not worth mentioning, so nobody even bothered to look there.

Then, Lin Ming had returned to the South Sea. Under the command of Demonshine, the Giant Leviathan also emerged from the deep sea.

The Giant Leviathan that was several dozen miles long, that had easily rolled over Yin Yang Profound Palace with its seemingly unstoppable power, now had countless scars all over its lengthy body.

Several hundred of the Giant Leviathan’s tentacles had been torn off and its ears were shattered. The most serious wound was a pectoral fin with a mile-wide wound, nearly causing the entire fin to be ripped off.

To have such terrifying wounds and still manage to submerge 300,000 feet deep in a sea trench for over four months’ time, only the Giant Leviathan with its amazing life force could have withstood that.

“These wounds will probably need at least half a year to recover.”

Lin Ming thought out loud. To such a massive being like the Giant Leviathan, it was simply impossible and also useless to feed it pills. He could only allow it to eat and rest in the deep sea, naturally restoring itself.

Fortunately, the South Sea was incomparably broad and there were innumerable deep sea vicious beasts; there were more than enough to satiate the Giant Leviathan’s terrifying appetite.

If it could continuously hunt some high level deep sea beasts then this would greatly increase the speed at which the Giant Leviathan regenerated. Lin Ming really needed the Giant Leviathan now. With the Giant Leviathan, his loved ones had the best sanctuary possible and he had one less worry to concern himself with.

……………

At this time, within the dimension of the Giant Leviathan were several red-dressed beauties surrounding a red pug. This red pug was only a foot long and its tail was short and thick, like the end of a finger. It had short curly red hair and its small pair of doggy eyes were jet black and shaped like round beads.

This red-haired pug was Demonshine. Besides Lin Ming, no one had known that Demonshine existed. However, Demonshine had never been someone who could endure loneliness for too long. With Lin Ming having departed to the king level smelting trial for an unknown number of months, Demonshine’s main soul had remained in the Giant

Leviathan’s dimension. In its boredom, the pug would often take a stroll around the grounds and soon familiarized himself with Lin Ming’s friends and family.

“Little Red, didn’t you say that Brother Lin would return soon? How come I haven’t seen him yet?”

In front of the pug, there was an 18 or 19 year old girl asking Demonshine in a somewhat concerned tone. She wore a bright yellow dress and her appearance was delicate and beautiful. This young woman was Qin Xingxuan.

“Little Red your mom!!”

Demonshine cursed back in an extremely depressed manner. Because he was so small and his body was covered in red fur, this damned little maid had suddenly started calling him Little Red after a while. This eminently ‘inappropriate’ name had quickly caught on and everyone began referring to him as such.

In response, the pug had made several ‘serious’ declarations that he should be called ‘Holy Lord Demonshine’, and also began hyping up and boasting about his ‘glorious past deeds’ when he was an all-powerful being in the past. However, everyone simply ignored him.

Demonshine’s nickname of ‘Little Red’ had caused tremendous damage to his own dignified image. However, the young women he yelled at couldn’t match up his current image with his past deeds. Instead, they thought that his angry appearance when he flew into a range and his short red fur was standing on end was actually very funny, so more and more people began calling him ‘Little Red’.

“Little Red, please don’t lay around, all of us are growing nervous. When will Brother Lin come back? Where did he go off to? What has he been doing for these past four months?”

“I already repeated myself 10 thousand times, you must not call me Little Red, you must call me Holy Lord Demonshine!” Demonshine puffed out his chest, “When this Saint roamed through the endless void, your grandfather’s grandfather’s grandfather’s grandfather still hadn’t been born!

“Forget it. Consider this done. This Saint is too lazy to bother lowering myself to the same level as you lesser mortals. That young boy Lin Ming should be returning very soon. As for these past four months, he’s gone somewhere… hehe, but even if I try to tell you it’s far too difficult for you lot to comprehend.”

“But if he comes back now… isn’t Xuan Wuji still outside?”

“Hahaha!” Demonshine barked out three loud laughs, a sense of superiority immediately rising in his voice. “Xuan Wuji isn’t even worth a fart. When this Saint was at his most peak and glorious state, small unimportant characters like Xuan Wuji were nothing but ants. This Saint wouldn’t even need to look at him to pinch him to death with my claw. As for that brat Lin Ming, although the difference from his current state to the past me is like the heavens and earth, he should still be able to deal with that old man Xuan Wuji.”

“Demonshine, is what you said true?” Mu Qianyu suddenly stood up, her haunting phoenix eyes staring at Demonshine. Although Demonshine tended to boast, Mu Qianyu could feel that this pug was unusual indeed. Demonshine truly did have a powerful soul force and was able to control the Giant Leviathan. It was possible that what he said was true.

If Lin Ming really could defeat Xuan Wuji… no, Lin Ming didn’t need to defeat him. As long as Lin Ming could contend with him then they could rebuild Divine Phoenix Island and the South Sea war would also end!

“Of course! When has this Saint ever lied to anyone? If everything goes as expected, then that boy should return in another quarter hour or less.”

“Quarter hour… Little Red, are you telling the truth?” Qin Xingxuan’s eyes lit up. She had just spoken when the entire dimension trembled and she felt her heart suddenly soar.

Someone had come.

Was it Lin Ming?

“Hey, he’s faster than I thought!” Demonshine rubbed his doggy chin as he spoke.

At this time, a blue-clothed youth with jet-black hair appeared in the dimension, his face full of smiles.

“Lin Ming!”

“Brother Lin!”

Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu were filled with endless surprise and joy. Xuan Wuji had been avidly eyeing the Giant Leviathan from the outside and they suffered a harrowing pressure the entire time. As for Lin Ming, they didn’t even know where he was. When they asked Demonshine, he had only said that Lin Ming was training outside. They had nearly worried themselves to death.

Now that they saw Lin Ming, they were so happy that they began crying. If it were only Qin Xingxuan or Mu Qianyu alone then they would have already rushed into Lin Ming’s embrace. However, now that both of them were here together, they were too embarrassed to do so.

“How are my parents?” Lin Ming asked.

“Uncle and Aunty are both doing very well. As for that little pigeon Xiaoge, she is also doing great!” Qin Xingxuan responded. For this past half year, Lin Fu and Lin Mu had no idea what was happening outside. Rather, they were living a carefree and happy life within. When Lin Ming had returned, he had also brought back a massive amount of miracle medicines that could strengthen and increase the life of mortals. Now, after taking these medicines Lin Fu and Lin Mu, who had worked hard jobs their entire lives, both looked several years younger, as if they were in the prime of their life. And as for Lin Ming’s little sister Lin Xiaoge, although she was only a three or four year old child now, she had already started to cleanse and temper her body with all sorts of precious liquids. In the future, she certainly wouldn’t be lacking in talent for martial arts.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, what about Xuan Wuji?” Mu Qianyu asked. As she saw that Lin Ming was ultimately safe, she finally felt relieved in her heart. She also wanted to confirm whether or not Lin Ming now had the ability to fight with Xuan Wuji on even grounds. The destruction of Divine Phoenix Island had always been a constant pain in her heart. For every day that she couldn't rebuild her home and sect she would never have peace of mind.

"Xuan Wuji… has already been slain by me."

With just these few words, Mu Qianyu was stunned and even Qin Xingxuan was dumbfounded. Although Demonshine had said Lin Ming would just barely be able to defeat Xuan Wuji, they never imagined that Lin Ming would actually be able to kill him.

That man Xuan Wuji, who had started the South Sea war, who had exterminated Divine Phoenix Island, the Dire Space Sect, and Supreme Mystery Temple, and was worthy of being called the top master of the South Sea, had actually died?

"Brother Lin, is that really true?"

"Mm, he died at the border of Sky Fortune Kingdom. I've brought his weapon and spatial ring with me." As Lin Ming spoke he took out a bronze ring from a pocket in his robes.

Mu Qianyu took the ring and swept through it with her perception, immediately freezing. Inside the ring was Xuan Wuji's weapon, his Elder Command Seal, and even the jade slip containing the 'Ancient Devil Arts'. Without a doubt, this was Xuan Wuji's spatial ring!

As Mu Qianyu held this ring in a daze, her eyes began blurring.

Xuan Wuji had died!

They had won the South Sea war!

Tears falling down her cheeks, Mu Qianyu couldn't help but hug Lin Ming as she sobbed. Her voice was completely choked with emotion as she said, "Thank you… thank you, Lin Ming…"

“Between us, there is no need for any thanks…” Lin Ming gently wiped away Mu Qianyu’s tears. After 10 breath of time, Mu Qianyu finally recovered herself and happily said, “I must go and tell Master. They feared that you wouldn’t return so they went into closed door seclusion to prepare for the final battle. They wouldn’t expect that we can begin rebuilding Divine Phoenix Island in just a few more days!”

Although Divine Phoenix Island had been destroyed, the elites of the sect still lived and the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm which served as the foundation of the sect was still in perfect condition. With Lin Ming’s current fame and power, rebuilding Divine Phoenix Island would be easy.

And at this time, a well-dressed middle-aged couple in their thirties came walking over. They were Lin Ming’s parents.

“Father, Mother…” Lin Ming said with great happiness.

Seeing that his parents looked much younger and healthier, and that Xingxuan and Yu’er were also safe, Lin Ming’s heart was filled with satisfaction and vindication. He didn’t regret in the least that he had ever chosen to step down the road of martial arts.

“Ming’er, you’ve finally come out of seclusion!” As Lin Mu saw Lin Ming, a cheerful and pleased expression crossed her face. She had no idea what events had occurred these past months. She only thought that Lin Ming had gone into closed door seclusion in one of the dimensions. Now that she saw her son finally coming out, she was naturally in a good mood.

But her smile didn’t last much longer. As she saw Lin Ming standing side-by-side with Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu, she actually began to be worried. Lin Ming’s marriage had always been one of her life’s greatest concerns.

Lin Ming was now 21 years old. It was past time for him to marry.

Chapter 751 – Collapse of the South Sea Demon Region

Chapter 751 – Collapse of the South Sea Demon Region

…

…

…

Since Xuan Wuji died, half a month had peacefully passed.

In this half month, many matters had occurred.

The news of Lin Ming chasing down Xuan Wuji over a space of several hundred thousand miles became increasingly intense. At first, not many people believed this. However, with the passage of time, all signs began to point to this news most likely being true. In particular, after 10 days, the Giant Leviathan once again appeared over the skies of Divine Phoenix Island. And in Divine Phoenix Island, the original disciples of that land had begun to reconstruct their sect on a massively grand scale!

After seeing Divine Phoenix Island build new grand temples and plazas and all sorts of complexes, the South Sea Demon Region actually didn't interfere. Instead, they retreated from the South Horizon Region and hid away.

And then, just three days later, another matter occurred that caused all the great sects to be completely bewildered.

That was… the South Sea Demon Region branch in the South Horizon Region had been disbanded!

The Demon Region disciples all went their separate ways. Some joined small sects, some concealed their identities, some went to mortal kingdoms, and some went off on into the distant lands. Overnight, the last stronghold of the South Sea Demon Region had quietly disintegrated.

Now, the South Sea Demon Region that had survived in name only had completely crumbled away!

The South Sea Demon Region that had a legacy of over 4000 years had disappeared like this?

The sects of the South Horizon Region and Five Element Region couldn't believe this. The South Sea Demon Region had once been a Holy Land level sect. From the time when the Silent Demon Emperor City had been destroyed 3000 years ago until now, that mysterious and powerful South Sea Demon Region that had dominated the South Sea had now vanished. It was like everything they knew had been an illusion.

It was no different from waking up from a dream.

After several days, masters of the Five Element Region finally reached Divine Phoenix Island. There, they obtained news that left them shellshocked.

"Xuan Wuji is dead; Lin Ming killed him."

In front of important figures from the Five Element Region, Mu Bingyun recited this to them in a very calm tone.

"What did you just say!?"

The Sunfire Sect Sovereign stood up on the spot, his entire mind in utter chaos. For a long time he didn't respond to Mu Bingyun's shocking words.

"Xuan Wuji has died, therefore the South Sea war has ended." Mu Bingyun repeated without expression. Although her voice was calm and light, the truth was that her heart was not composed at all. She too was incomparably flabbergasted. Even though she knew that Lin Ming had a heaven-defying talent, she still didn't dare to believe that it was real.

"Lin Ming... killed Xuan Wuji? Heavens! He is only 21 years old!"

The rumors that had reached deafening proportions said that Lin Ming had chased down Xuan Wuji over a distance of several hundred thousand miles. Many people couldn't believe this to begin with, and now Mu Bingyun had spoken even more outrageous news: Xuan Wuji had actually been killed by Lin Ming!

Since this was confirmed by Mu Bingyun, and in addition to everything that had occurred recently, this was most likely true!

A 21 year old Revolving Core youth had killed a fourth stage Life Destruction master! Then how monstrous would he be once he reached Life Destruction? Or the Divine Sea!?

The many people present couldn't help but wonder this terrifying question.

Looking through the entire Sky Spill Continent's history, and setting aside that blank period from 100,000 thousand years ago and before, a time had never been recorded when a late Revolving Core youth had killed a fourth-stage Life Destruction martial artist!

When Emperor Shakya had comprehended seven kinds of martial intents and fused them all together underneath a Bodhi Tree, his martial path had broken through the void, and he ascended into the heavens. Since then, he had been known as the Sky Spill Continent's number one genius. But even when Emperor Shakya was at Lin Ming's age, he absolutely couldn't achieve such a degree of strength.

"Xuan Wuji was the top master of the South Sea. Since Lin Ming killed Xuan Wuji, he is now the top master of the South Sea instead!"

"The Great Zen Temple's presiding abbot and the South Sea's Nanyun Wang were weaker than Xuan Wuji. Now, Lin Ming's status is even higher than theirs! Even if you consider the formidable powers backing them, Lin Ming can still be treated equal to a holy abbot from the Great Zen Temple!”

The entire Great Zen Temple had a total of three great abbots. The Great Zen Temple had a very deep and formidable strength, and they had dominated the entire Great Zen Region for thousands of years now. They were a fifth-grade sect truly worthy of that reputation. Whether it was power or their inheritance, they were stronger than the South Sea Demon Region in all aspects.

No matter which abbot it was from the Great Zen Temple, they were an existence that the Sovereigns of the Five Element Region’s seven sects all had to respectfully bow to. But now, Lin Ming’s status had actually far surpassed the three great abbots’!

At this time, let alone calling Lin Ming a ‘boy’, they didn’t even have the qualifications or gall to address Lin Ming by his full name.

“To be on the same footing with an abbot from the Great Zen Temple… being the top master of the South Sea probably doesn’t mean much to Lin Ming. In the future, he will definitely become the number one powerhouse of the entire Sky Spill Continent!”

As several Elders were discussing this, at a corner of the meeting table, Zhan Yunjian opened his mouth several times, wanting to speak, but was unable to force out any words due to the rumbling emotions in his heart. He wasn’t able to calm himself down. Spoken words could no longer describe the gap between him and Lin Ming.

“Is there anything else? If there is no other matter to discuss then I shall not accompany you. Since Divine Phoenix Island is being rebuilt right now, I have many matters to attend to.”

Mu Bingyun’s words seemed to awaken everyone from their dazed state. In truth, everyone wanted to meet Lin Ming and pay their respects, in particular the Sunfire Princess, Zhan Yunjian, Bai Aoxuan, and several other young disciples that had known of Lin Ming from long ago. However, no one dared to open their mouth and ask such a brazen question that could be considered as pestering.

Like this, the envoys from the Five Element Region left the South Horizon Region. As they left, news of Lin Ming killing Xuan Wuji spread like a tide!

The remaining forces of the Dire Space Sect, Supreme Mystery Temple, and all the third-grade and second-grade sects of the South Horizon Region were discussing this shocking news with vivid excitement.

Especially the disciples of the Seven Profound Valleys; they had been stirred into a frenzy. As long as Lin Ming didn't perish in the future, he would eventually reach the Divine Sea realm and become a true Emperor level powerhouse! He would be considered a legendary existence within the Sky Spill Continent of which there was only just more than a hundred!

Moreover, Lin Ming would not be some ordinary Emperor level powerhouse. In the future, they could brag to their descendants that their grandfather had once been in the same sect as an Emperor level powerhouse.

Lin Ming had suddenly become the idol, goal, and dream of countless young disciples everywhere, and the object of admiration and love of innumerable young girls. Nearly all of them had been converted to Linmaniacs. Lin Ming had become the top master of the South Sea, but these young disciples couldn't even reach the Xiantian realm. Even though they knew perfectly well that they could never reach the same heights as Lin Ming, all of them struggled their hardest to reduce the gap between them as much as possible, lest they regret it in the future.

……………

Ten days later, in the jungles of the Southern Wilderness, within a small tribe just shy of 100,000 people…

"It's wonderful, wonderful! There are truly living gods!"

A middle-aged man wearing the strange clothes of the Southern Wilderness was holding a crying baby as he knelt on the floor and began kowtowing. And, in front of this middle-aged man was a young black-clothed sorceress wearing a black veil. She had wide and charming eyes, curved like a crescent moon. Although her face was blocked by black gauze, one could still make out slender eyebrows that tapered out; she was obviously a peerless beauty.

The sorceress was clearing up some medical tools. As she faintly glanced at the middle-aged man kowtowing before her, she expressionlessly said, "I will give you some medicine. Mix it with lukewarm water and divide it into seven portions and serve it for seven days."

With that, the sorceress waved her hands. With a sudden cool breeze, the middle-aged man was gently blown out of her tent.

"Gods, it is the gods!" The middle-aged man cried out in happiness, "The Sorcerer has appeared! He has sent a young witch to save us!"

The middle-aged man hugged the baby tightly in his arms, walking back towards his home even as he knelt down every few steps to kowtow towards the sorceress' tent.

But in the tent, the sorceress remained silent, displaying no emotion at all.

And at this moment, an old voice suddenly sounded from outside the tent. "Do you plan on continuing like this? Is there any meaning in saving the lives of a few mortals?"

The sorceress calmly lifted her veil, revealing a beautiful face. She was the South Sea Demon Region's Western Faction Sovereign, Xuan Yuqie.

Xuan Yuqie gently shook her head, "There is no meaning."

"Then why are you still wasting your time here?"

Xuan Yuqie shook her head once again, "From the moment I was born, all that I was, everything I did, all of that was for the Xuan Clan and the South Sea Demon Region. Now that the South Sea Demon Region is exterminated, the Xuan Clan has also dissolved. What meaning was there in anything I ever did?”

As Xuan Yuqie retorted, the old man was dumbfounded. Indeed, there had been no meaning at all.

Xuan Yuqie faintly sighed, saying, “Now that Xuan Wuji has died, from the original 18 Elders of the South Sea Demon Region, all that is left over is you and me. As for those sects that we destroyed, all of them wish for us to die. Perhaps in less than 10 days, the remnants of the Dire Space Sect and Supreme Mystery Temple will gather their remaining forces to chase down the last of the South Sea Demon Region disciples. That includes you, and that includes me.

“In a thousand years of life, spring and fall have all become a dream. In this vast and endless universe, is there any significance to anything we do? Since the world will not accommodate me, then I shall walk alone, seeking only harmony and peace in my heart, creating my own pure lands of bliss.”

As Xuan Yuqie spoke to here, she stood up and let her veil fall back down. In this South Sea catastrophe, the South Sea Demon Region had been destroyed but she had lived. Now, her entire mentality towards life had changed.

“You want to find peace in your heart, creating your own pure lands? Do you think the mortals you save in the second half of your life are enough to atone for the countless sins you committed in the first half? Forget it; everyone has their own choices to make. Anything I say will no longer matter. I plan on searching for some remote mountain and closing up in cultivation. Although I know it is impossible for me to reach the Divine Sea, I still hope that I can cross several more stages of Life Destruction. If I die during my attempts then I can only say that my fate has reached its end. When I was young I already resolved in my heart that I would explore the road of martial arts until I reached its end. If I die in the throes of crossing Life Destruction then that is still a worthy death for my final act!”

“Xuan Yuqie, after we bid our farewells today, our fated paths will likely never cross again. I wish you good luck!” As the old man spoke he floated away, leaving a desolate tent flapping in the wind.

Xuan Yuqie didn’t turn around. She only quietly said, “Farewell and goodbye. I wish you good luck.”

………………

Time marched on. In the blink of an eye, another two months passed. The main buildings of Divine Phoenix Island had been rebuilt already and many of the great training arrays were also in the process of repair. A massive number of disciples had returned to live on the island.

But at this time, Lin Ming was faced with a problem that he had no choice but to face.

That was… marriage.

For an entire two months, Lin Mu had constantly badgered and spoken about this issue. Although she wasn’t too clear just what Lin Ming’s boundary and attainments were, she did understand one thing, and that was that Lin Ming was destined to soar into higher realms, leaving everyone else further and further behind.

It would be increasingly rare for her to see Lin Ming. And when Lin Ming left, it might not even be strange for him to disappear for 10 years at a time. In this case, how could Lin Mu not desire a grandchild?

This was a reasonable argument. In fact, because Lin Ming had stepped onto the road of martial arts and doomed himself to constant loneliness, he felt extremely guilty towards his parents. Now facing the justified request of his mother, he naturally couldn’t reject her.

Moreover, over the years, it wasn’t like Lin Ming was a blockhead with no emotions or urges. He too had very sincere feelings of genuine affection. He also hoped for this.

Chapter 752 – Lin Ming's Wedding, the Divine Kingdom Prince

Chapter 752 – Lin Ming's Wedding, the Divine Kingdom Prince

…

…

…

South Horizon Region, Scarlet Peak City –

Scarlet Peak City was a relatively large city in the South Horizon Region. This was because it was where the headquarters of a top third-grade sect were located.

Just a few years ago, because of the invasion of the South Sea Demon Region, Scarlet Peak City had gone into decline with many of the martial artists relocating elsewhere. However, with the death of Xuan Wuji, Scarlet Peak City was once again booming with the hustle and bustle of vibrant crowds.

At this time, in a high class restaurant in Scarlet Peak City, there were several martial artists sitting together and talking. "I heard that the Young Emperor of Divine Phoenix Island will have his great marriage in another month! The entire Divine Phoenix Island is now lively with countless guests from all around. Many important characters of the South Horizon Region and Five Element Region will be attending. Even the Sovereign of an ordinary third-grade sect doesn't have the qualifications to go into the main hall, they can only enter the side halls!"

"Whew, to think even a third-grade sect Sovereign can only go to a side hall." A martial artist commented with some emotion as he drank. All of them came from the third-grade

Scarlet Peak Sect. It was rare for them to even see a Sovereign level character. To them, that was already a very high existence.

“Who did you say was getting married just now?” As the several martial artists spoke, a lazy voice suddenly drawled out.

The several people followed the voice and saw that in a corner of the restaurant, there was a young man wearing a yellow Kirin robe, a purple gold crown on his head. The young man was fiddling with a wine glass, and beside him were three beautiful woman accompanying him, one of them a young nun.

As the group saw this, the reaction of a common man would have been to become jealous and upset, cursing at this man in his heart that he would be such a lucky pig.

And these martial artists were no exception. The leading Scarlet Peak Sect disciple couldn’t tolerate this any further and shouted out, “Divine Phoenix Island’s Young Emperor Lin Ming’s wedding! It will happen in just a month!”

After Lin Ming killed Xuan Wuji he had become the shining star of the South Horizon Region. No one dared to call Lin Ming by his full name any longer.

From the start, they had referred to Lin Ming as the Holy Son of Divine Phoenix Island, Great Hero Lin, and so forth. Later, the name of Young Emperor Lin Ming had randomly caught on and this name had spread out.

In their opinion, Lin Ming would inevitably become a Peerless Emperor in the future. Referring to him as Young Emperor now was also an appropriate matter.

“I see, so it really is him.” The Kirin-robed youth was the Divine Kingdom Prince, Li Yifeng. When he had arrived at the Great Zen Region, he had also heard of Lin Ming’s name. Now, accompanied by his bevy of beauties, he leisurely made his way to the South Horizon Region where he learned of Lin Ming’s great wedding.

“Young Emperor? This Lin Ming actually dares to refer to himself as Young Emperor?” A young maid dressed up as a beautiful noble girl didn’t take this very well. “Not even my young master dares to take this sort of name. Yet this Lin Ming only comes from a small fourth-grade sect and he dares to call himself Young Emperor? That is far too arrogant!”

“Arrogant?” The Scarlet Peak Sect disciple stared with wide eyes, as if he had heard wrong. What sort of small fourth-grade sect? It was like these people looked down on all fourth-grade sects in general. “Humph, what would you know? Young Emperor is not a title that Lin Ming calls himself, but is what all the martial artists of the South Horizon Region have recognized him as. Young Emperor Lin is so young and yet he managed to defeat Xuan Wuji. His talent far surpasses anyone from the present or from ancient times. It is inevitable that he will become a Peerless Emperor, so what is so wrong with calling him Young Emperor now?”

The young maid curled her lips, apparently not convinced, “Who cares about who you South Horizon Region martial artists have recognized? Over 90% of the Emperor level powerhouses are concentrated in the four Divine Kingdoms in the center of the mainland. Your South Horizon Region is only a very ordinary region in the Sky Spill Continent. In these past several thousand years has an Emperor level powerhouse ever been born from here?”

The young maid’s question left the Scarlet Peak Sect disciples speechless. It was indeed true that there hadn’t been an Emperor level powerhouse born from the South Horizon Region in a very long time. In fact, even the Netherworld Great Emperor from 3000 years ago was not someone from the South Horizon Region but had come from somewhere else instead. This was not because the South Horizon Region was inadequate, but because it was hard to find a single Emperor level powerhouse in the majority of the Sky Spill Continent’s ordinary regions. Even the Great Zen Region was in a similar state.

There were many Emperor level talents but very few Emperor level powerhouses. This was because an extraordinary young elite only had to come across a lucky chance and, coupled with their own astonishing talent, this was enough for them to join the ranks of Emperor level talents. But after that, there was still an extremely long road to cover before becoming a Peerless Emperor. It was possible that one wouldn't cross any more great lucky chances on this road, and these talents would easily exhaust their potential, finally stopping in Life Destruction.

Furthermore, many geniuses perished along the way. To cross the stages of Life Destruction was to risk your life every time. For a human to reach the Divine Sea, they would have to overcome countless difficulties and make innumerable gambles with their lives.

This was still the South Horizon Region after all. After hearing the young maid's words, many martial artists refused to listen further. They all stood up together and said, "You dare to bully my South Horizon Region?"

For a time, the young maid had become the target of everyone.

As Li Yifeng saw this, he laughed out loud and said, "Everyone, please do not take offense. This young maid is just a silly girl and was speaking some nonsense just now. Please don't be too agitated, hm?"

As Li Yifeng spoke in a conciliatory tone, the standing martial artists didn't want to cause a stir because of a little girl and they immediately sat back down.

The young maid had a very morose expression. She said with a true essence sound transmission, "Young Master, why do you apologize to these stupid fellows. You can beat them all up with just a finger!"

One of Li Yifeng's eyebrow curved up, "What meaning is there in bullying these common mortals? Speaking of this Lin Ming's big wedding, it should be rather interesting. Let's go and have some fun."

....

One month later, Divine Phoenix Island –

After Xuan Wuji died, Divine Phoenix Island finished rebuilding in just three months. And then, Lin Ming's wedding soon followed. Nearly all the Life Destruction level powerhouses from the southern point of the Sky Spill Continent had received invitations to Divine Phoenix Island.

This great wedding was singlehandedly managed by Mu Yuhuang. The marriage of a Divine Phoenix Island Saintess was a major event to begin with. And added with the fact that Lin Ming was the top master of the South Sea, it had become even more extravagant.

To be the top master of the South Sea at such a young age, his future prospects were endless.

Such a grand event naturally needed to be handled well and with the utmost care.

For several days, the skies above the entire Divine Phoenix Island were covered by multi-hued rays of light like a kaleidoscope of colors. Everywhere one looked, there were shimmering clouds of iridescent light. Occasionally, a flaming Vermilion Bird or frost Blue Luan would fly back and forth between the clouds, as if this island were a true immortal paradise!

On the main island, all sorts of immortal grasses and trees bloomed at the same time under the driving force of an array formation. For a time, the entire Divine Phoenix Island was filled with the vibrantly aromatic and sensual sense of the wild, fragrant scents floating in all directions. Among the scintillating clouds, grandiose palaces and temples of jade thrust into the heavens as if it were a scene from a dream.

With Lin Ming's fame in the South Sea, nearly every Life Destruction level martial artist invited came. Below Life Destruction, countless Revolving Core martial artists had already arrived early at Divine Phoenix Island. As for the third-grade sects and above, even if their Sovereign didn't come, there would at least be a Vice Sovereign present.

And below that, there were even many unremarkable Xiantian martial artists that arrived; there were even some martial artists that weren't in a sect. These people didn't have an invitation, but had come anyway to experience such a grand celebration in the South Horizon Region that could only be seen once every several thousand years.

And several thousand years wasn't an exaggeration. With Lin Ming's current limelight, only the Netherworld Great Emperor of 3000 years past could compete with him in fame. In this situation, in just three short days, nearly 10,000 martial artists had arrived at Divine Phoenix Island and more were coming every minute.

For those martial artist that weren't invited, Divine Phoenix Island didn't turn anyone away. In order to hold a massive celebration for Lin Ming, Mu Yuhuang had several reception halls built in the surrounding miles around where the ceremony would take place. For this great wedding ceremony, Divine Phoenix Island had spared absolutely no effort.

"Dire Space Sect Elder, Lian Chihue!"

"Storm Valley Vice Valley Master, Zhan Yuntian!"

"Sunfire Sect direct disciple, Huo Ruyan!"

"Nanyun Wang!"

The master of ceremonies announced the names of arriving guests in order. As Nanyun Wang's name was announced, Lin Ming's mind stirred. He looked around to see a middle-aged man in a nine-clawed dragon robe and wearing a purple gold jade belt. He walked forwards, laughing, with a beauty on each of his arms.

When Nanyun Wang was entering the Demon God Imperial Palace, he also had a similar appearance where he was surrounded by beautiful women. Nanyun Wang was a martial artist who followed the demonic path to begin with. It was rumored he had a harem of 3000 beauties, all of them as pretty and exquisite as flowers with a high martial talent. If any one of these women were placed in a small country then they would definitely be a proud daughter of heaven in their lands.

"Nanyun Wang!"

Lin Ming cupped his fists together in greeting.

"Haha, Lin Ming, if I didn't see you with my own eyes then I still wouldn't be able to believe that it's been less than three years since we ventured into the Demon God Imperial Palace. Originally, I thought you were just a common junior, but in the blink of an eye you've turned around and actually became the top master of the South Sea! That is truly incredible!"

Now that things had come to this, Nanyun Wang naturally wouldn't bother with the matter where he was played around with by Lin Ming in the Demon God Imperial Palace. In just three years, Lin Ming's cultivation had risen by two large boundaries. This sort of matter could be said to be unprecedented ever since ancient times.

As all of these high level characters arrived, all of them also brought along wedding gifts. There were all sorts of top-grade true essence stones, heavenly materials, treasures, and many other valuables.

Mu Yuhuang met every guest one at a time. Seeing Divine Phoenix Island enjoying such a flourishing state, her heart was filled with emotion.

"Great Zen Temple's third abbot, Grandmaster Konghe!"

After Nanyun Wang, another esteemed guest arrived. Great Zen Temple had a total of three abbots; Abbot Whitebrow was only one of them. For Lin Ming's grand wedding, Abbot Whitebrow didn't come but Abbot Konghe did. He was similarly at the third stage of Life Destruction.

"Grandmaster Konghe."

Towards this sort of venerable monk, Lin Ming politely bowed. Thinking about his trip into the Demon God Imperial Palace, he still had to thank Abbot Whitebrow for protecting Divine Phoenix Island. Otherwise, it would have been impossible to depend on Mu Fengxian alone to contend with the South Sea Demon Region.

“Benefactor Lin is so young yet has reached the late Revolving Core realm. Moreover, your strength is above even a fourth stage Life Destruction master’s. In the future, your accomplishments will be immeasurable.” Grandmaster Konghe held his hands together and recited some Buddhist blessings.

“Grandmaster’s praise is too kind. Please come this way, I’ve had a set of vegetarian dishes especially prepared for Grandmaster and other eminent monks.”

“Supreme Mystery Temple Temple Master, Guru Guang Shang!”

“Golden Bell Mountain Sovereign, Golden Sword Sage!”

“Divine Kingdom Prince… uh… Li Yifeng!”

At the wedding banquet, the master of ceremonies announced visiting guests based on the identity they wrote down. At this time, there shouldn’t be someone bored enough to pretend to be someone else. When the master of ceremonies read the title of Divine Kingdom Prince, he almost stumbled over his words thinking that he had read it wrong. Was this Divine Kingdom Prince real or fake?

Everyone’s eyes turned as the master of ceremonies introduced this character. They only saw that at the entrance of the main hall, there was a young man in a purple robe walking in, playing with a folding fan as a young maid and a young nun followed on both sides of him.

Divine Kingdom Prince? Of the four Divine Kingdoms?

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes. This Li Yifeng’s cultivation should be at the late Revolving Core realm – the same as him. From his appearance, he should be around 30 years old, just a bit older than Duanmu Qun.

The four great Divine Kingdoms had Crown Princes and Princes. The rank of Prince was somewhat lower than Crown Prince, but they were still dragons amongst humans. If one didn’t have talent then it was simply impossible for them to enjoy the title of Prince.

Chapter 753 – The Mysterious Girl

Chapter 753 – The Mysterious Girl

…

…

…

"He is a Divine Kingdom Prince?"

The eyes of nearly all martial artists present locked onto Li Yifeng. The four Divine Kingdoms were the highest level of existing powers within the Sky Spill Continent. Compared to the four Divine Kingdoms, other regions were like small mountain villages.

For instance, take the Great Zen Region. Within the Great Zen Region, a high level Life Destruction martial artist would be the top master. But in the four Divine Kingdoms, a Divine Sea Supreme Elder was a top master; high level Life Destruction martial artists were relatively common.

Compared to the other regions, the four Divine Kingdoms were an entire boundary stronger.

Originally, when rumors spread that a Crown Prince from the Divine Kingdoms had come to the South Horizon Region, Yin Yang Profound Palace's Xing Can had immediately gone out to visit him with her son. From this, one could see the difference in status.

Thus, even though this Li Yifeng was not a Divine Kingdom Crown Prince and only a Prince, that was already amazing enough.

Lin Ming couldn't determine Li Yifeng's exact strength but he could approximate it. His cultivation was at the peak of the Late Revolving Core period and he was already making great progress towards Life Destruction. His cultivation was around half a minor boundary higher than Lin Ming's and his foundation was also extremely solid; he should have the power to contend with a Life Destruction Master. As for what the limit of his strength was, Lin Ming couldn't say.

For such a character to call himself a Divine Kingdom Prince, Lin Ming didn't suspect this at all.

Of course, after experiencing the Realm of the Gods' Ancient Phoenix Clan, Lin Ming didn't feel anything particularly special about this Divine Kingdom Prince at all. As Li Yifeng approached, he cupped his fists together in greetings and said, "I didn't think that there would be a Prince from one of the four Divine Kingdoms attending my wedding. It is truly a great honor."

"Haha, I just happened to be playing around in the South Horizon Region and I heard that Brother Lin here already became the top master of the South Sea at such a young age, so I became a bit curious. In my life, I love to make friends with the heroes of the world the most. I came without invitation, so if there's any way in which I was disrespectful I humbly request Brother Lin to forgive me."

"Brother Li is too polite. Since a Divine Kingdom Prince comes to visit, please make yourself welcome in my home."

Lin Ming and Li Yifeng paid compliments to each other. But at Li Yifeng's side, the young maid actually pouted, quietly probing Lin Ming's Revolving Core in his dantian.

Rashly investigating others' dantian was an extremely rude form of behavior. Lin Ming's composure didn't change; he only shielded himself from her perception as he continued to greet his guests.

But because that young girl couldn't find out much, she still didn't give up and decided to investigate Lin Ming's meridians. Finally, Lin Ming turned a tad unhappy. He silently released the Asura force field so that it only bloomed within him without leaking outside in the least. Thus, no one could sense a difference in Lin Ming's aura.

And at this time, the young maid who was probing Lin Ming's body suddenly shook. Her face turned white as she took several steps back, the blood tumbling in her body.

"Qing'er, you've been up to nonsense again and now you've suffered a loss. I already said that Lin Ming was able to kill Xuan Wuji at such a young age and become the top master of the South Sea, so he must be accomplished. How could you possibly be his match? If I'm not wrong, what he did just now was use a kind of force field. This is an extremely rare ability which even I don't have."

Li Yifeng was secretly surprised. This move that Lin Ming so casually exposed was actually such a unique ability.

The young maid called Qing'er curled her lips, not too convinced. "What's so special about a force field? Although Young Master doesn't have a force field, you've already reached an extraordinarily high understanding in Wind Laws. That is more powerful than any force field. Even his highness the Crown Prince is inferior to you in the aspect of Laws!

"Then again, he is only the top master of the South Sea. If Young Master participated in the South Horizon Region then you too could have obtained that title. As for killing Xuan Wuji, I've already investigated that matter. There was simply no one who saw that fight. Who knew if Lin Ming killed Xuan Wuji himself or whether or not he had someone come help him, or perhaps he might have used some dastardly trap on Xuan Wuji. Also, who knows whether Xuan Wuji is as powerful as the rumors say? I'm just not convinced that this martial artist from such a tiny South Horizon Region actually dares to call himself Young Emperor. Even Young Master doesn't dare to call himself that. In fact, Young Master should have a match with this Lin Ming to show him just how fierce our four Divine Kingdoms actually are!"

Li Yifeng's eyes widened and he testily said, "Dumb little girl, stop pulling nonsense out of your ass. It should be right that Xuan Wuji was a fourth stage Life Destruction powerhouse.

And even if he was the weakest of fourth stage Life Destruction martial artists, that still isn't a character I can deal with. I don't know whether Lin Ming killed Xuan Wuji by himself or not, but what I do know is that Lin Ming is absolutely strong. If I fight him and win, others will not commend me for doing so. And if I lose – a result which seems far more likely to happen – then I'll have disgraced myself. Remember, today we came to eat for free. We're here to make friends, not to fight!"

Lin Ming's confrontation with Qing'er was very subtle, but what kind of characters were the martial artists present? There were naturally many people that noticed what happened.

In a corner of the main hall, Lan Xin was drinking a cup of scented tea. She laughed and said, "It seems that Divine Kingdom Prince's maid isn't too convinced by Lin Ming!"

Sitting near Lan Xin, Duanmu Qun said, "That probably isn't a maid. She's so young but she's already at the Revolving Core realm. Also, her foundation isn't too shabby either. She's probably the royal concubine of that Divine Kingdom Prince and is only dressed up to look like a maid.

"What do you think of that Divine Kingdom Prince?" Lan Xin thoughtlessly asked.

"He seems like a cynical playboy, but in fact his will is strong, his foundation is solid, and his strength is extraordinary. If our cultivations were the same then I could fight with him, but since his cultivation is higher than mine, there isn't any way for me to do so."

Cultivation was one of the most important factors of strength. Duanmu Qun could jump ranks to fight, but that was only compared to other more ordinary geniuses. If he compared himself to someone with his own level of talent, then half a small boundary of difference in cultivation was a nearly insurmountable gap.

After Divine Kingdom Prince Li Yifeng appeared, more and more great figures made their appearance. But compared to Li Yifeng, all of them had been eclipsed by him.

As the grand ceremony was about to begin, a row of unusual guests caught Lin Ming's attention; they were actually people from the deep sea Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan.

Several months ago, in order for the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan to obtain the Giant Leviathan's marrow, they had joined forces with Xuan Wuji to chase down the beast, finally forcing it 300,000 miles under the sea into a trench.

Afterwards, Lin Ming escaped in the darkness and made a visit to the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan, killing many people in a massive slaughter. But, the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch still couldn't give up on the Giant Leviathan's marrow and also decided to help Xuan Wuji in laying down the great illusionary array formation.

Lin Ming had returned at this point. Because he had chased Xuan Wuji over hundreds of thousands of miles, Lin Ming simply didn't bother caring about the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch. Like this, he had escaped this fatal catastrophe.

"What are you here for?" Lin Ming's voice was grim, his expression cold.

"Lin… Young Emperor Lin, I came this time to respectfully congratulate Young Emperor Lin on your wonderful marriage and also to bring a congratulatory wedding gift. If there was any place in which I caused offense before, I ask Young Emperor Lin to be merciful and broad-minded." The one who headed this group was exactly the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch of before. He truly feared Lin Ming from the depths of his soul now. After all, the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan still had to survive in the South Sea. Since they had offended Lin Ming, they would likely be doomed to extinction in the future.

Although he feared that Lin Ming would deal with him here, he had no choice but to come and personally apologize. He hoped that in front of so many honored guests and on such a joyous occasion, Lin Ming wouldn't start a scene.

"Wedding gift?" One of Lin Ming's eyebrows curved up as he maintained his icy attitude.

"Mm… yes, it's this."

The Turquoise-Eyed Ape Patriarch clenched his teeth, seeming to make a gesture of great determination as he swiped his spatial ring and brought out a crimson jade box. As this jade box appeared, an incomparably rich fire origin energy suddenly emanated outwards.

Lin Ming was surprised, but Mu Yuhuang's eyes began to shine with a happy light. This was a spirit vein source! And a fire-attribute one at that!

A spirit vein was the fundamental basis for the existence of a sect.

Only when a sect had their own spirit vein could they ensure that there would be a rich heaven and earth origin energy in their territory and then attract martial artists to join their sect. When Divine Phoenix Island was destroyed, Mu Yuhuang had led the remaining disciples to live under the yoke of Yin Yang Profound Palace, and a great reason for this was because of Yin Yang Profound Palace's spirit veins.

Generally speaking, the higher grade a sect was, the higher grade their spirit veins would be.

Divine Phoenix Island was only a fourth-grade sect and the grade of its spirit veins had been just enough for them. But with Lin Ming becoming increasingly strong, Divine Phoenix Island would inevitably rise in strength too.

At that time, a low grade spirit vein would become a hindrance in the development of the sect.

To solve this problem, they could either relocate the sect or find a spirit vein that could be transplanted, that is, to find the so-called spirit vein source.

There weren't many spirit veins in the Sky Spill Continent to begin with, and there were even fewer spirit veins that could be transplanted. This sort of treasure could not be purchased with money. Moreover, to find one with a matching attribute was far more difficult!

Mu Yuhuang had been worrying about this matter but she never expected that the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch would send out a gift of a spirit vein source, and one that wasn't of a low-grade either!

This was truly a generous gift!

“Hehehe! Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch is far too kind. This old woman must be disrespectful, it is truly a shame, ah!” Mu Yuhuang smiled so brightly that even her dimples showed. Although she spoke politely, she had no qualms at all about receiving this gift. With a quick swipe of her right hand, the jade box of the spirit vein source was placed into her spatial ring.

She naturally knew the reason that the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan was willing to pay such a hemorrhaging price. In the end, it all came down to Lin Ming being far too strong.

Seeing Mu Yuhuang take in this spirit vein source, the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch felt his heart ache as if it were dripping blood. This sort of treasure was also incomparably precious to their Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan.

The Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan focused on water-attribute cultivation methods, thus fire-attribute spirit veins were useless to them to begin with. However, a fire-attribute spirit vein source could be exchanged for a similar water-attribute one. It was only because spirit vein sources were so rare that they hadn’t exchanged it in such a long time. Now, he had to politely bow and humble himself while giving this spirit vein source to Divine Phoenix Island. How could he possibly be happy with this?

But there was no other choice. Compared to a spirit vein source, the survival of their clan was far more important.

Since the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan was willing to offer such a generous gift, Lin Ming didn’t bother to pursue past matters on such a joyous occasion. In truth, this spirit vein source really was too important to Divine Phoenix Island; it was something that could only been found through a stroke of fate.

At this time, the auspicious moment had arrived. The wedding was about to begin.

And at this time, with another announcement from the master of ceremonies, several strangely-clothed middle-aged people appeared in the main hall. These three all had a thick demonic energy around them; they were clearly demonic path martial artists.

Lin Ming didn’t recognize any of these three. But, at the side of demonic path martial artist in front, there was a young girl who looked like his concubine. As Lin Ming looked at her, he felt his heart go cold, his eyes unable to leave her.

How could it… be?

Chapter 754 – Jade of the Goddess

Chapter 754 – Jade of the Goddess

…

…

…

The young woman that the demonic path martial artist brought along only seemed to be just under 20. She had a slender and beautiful figure and a pair of still eyes with a strange dark gray light in her pupils. Her face was pleasant to look at and there was a mysterious tattoo mark on her cheek.

The young woman's appearance and the strange mark on her face were not the reason that Lin Ming had lost his sense of decorum. Rather, there was an azure-colored jade pendant hanging over her chest. Engraved at the center of this jade pendant was a mystical design, as if it were a bird-like totem.

This jade pendant exuded an extremely pure energy; one could see at first glance that it wasn't an ordinary object. However, it wasn't an offensive-type treasure either. In fact, it was difficult to judge just what sort of function this jade pendant had.

"This jade pendant…"

Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. When he had been in the 1000 mile forbidden zone in the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming had rushed his way into the lair of a bunch of corpse devils. It turned out that the lair was actually the ancient grave of a goddess that had slept there untouched and unblemished for 100,000 years or even longer. Originally, Lin Ming hadn't wanted to recklessly disturb the remains of such a figure, but as he covered the sarcophagus and was leaving, he heard the faint call of a woman's voice summoning him back.

Lin Ming had turned around and opened the sarcophagus again. Then, he had discovered a jade pendant and a necklace. As he was exploring the goddess' body, to his amazement he discovered that the goddess still had a heartbeat. From there, Lin Ming had sensed the heart of a Great Emperor from within her that had been beating for all these tens of thousands of years!

Lin Ming had touched the jade pendant of the goddess. It was nearly exactly the same as the jade pendant that this gray-pupil woman was wearing in front of him, whether it was the design or the energy that it emitted.

If it wasn't for the fact that Lin Ming had just now confirmed that the goddess' jade pendant from the grave was still in his spatial ring, he would have thought they were the exact same.

Lin Ming's improper actions had fallen into the eyes of that demonic path martial artist. That martial artist frowned, obviously unhappy. His possessive nature was very strong and he naturally didn't want others to be staring at his concubine like this.

"Young Hero Lin, could it be that you've met my concubine in the past before!?"

The demonic path martial artist's unhappy inquiry broke through Lin Ming's thoughts. Lin Ming thought little of it and looked up at these three unexpected guests.

Of these three demonic path martial artists, all of them had Life Destruction cultivations. Two of them were at the third stage of Life Destruction and one of them was at the second stage of Life Destruction. What Lin Ming was surprised by was that martial artist in the lead was the one with a second stage Life Destruction cultivation. He also seemed to be the youngest, looking just over 30 years of age. As for the two third stage Life Destruction martial artists, they seemed to be following the orders of that second stage Life Destruction man.

These weren't people who came from near the South Horizon Region. Otherwise, it was impossible for such masters to remain unknown; Lin Ming would have already heard about them.

Lin Ming frowned a bit as he thought about what the goal of these three individuals could be. But at this moment, Li Yifeng's true essence sound transmission resounded in his ears, "Brother Lin's friends truly come from far and wide! If I'm not wrong then these three come from the number one bandit group of the northwestern barren desert. Although they are bandits, the truth is that they are also a super sect with an inheritance of over 7000 years!

"Their sect had an Emperor level powerhouse appear just 2000 years ago. Now, that strange Emperor level monster should be living in seclusion somewhere in the great desert. Even my father has to give several points of respect to him. As for this second stage Life Destruction demonic path martial artist, he should be one of the Little Masters of the Northwest Great Desert, Wang Yichan. Although he is at the second stage of Life Destruction, his true combat strength far surpasses his cultivation boundary. When he was young he was the most famous talent of the Northwest Great Desert. He was able to fight Revolving Core powerhouses at the Xiantian realm and fight Life Destruction masters at the Revolving Core realm. I never thought that he would be interested in Brother Lin and wish to become friends! Hahaha!"

"Become friends?" Lin Ming was speechless. He certainly wasn't naïve enough to think that this person had come out of nowhere to meet him. As a martial artist of the righteous path he was, in a way, enemies with demonic path martial artists, so relations would always be ambivalent.

Lin Ming cupped his hands together and said, "Today is my wedding celebration. What are you gentlemen here for?"

Wang Yichan laughed twice and cupped his hands back in respect. "I am the Young Master of the Northwest Great Desert Demon region. I heard that the South Sea Demon Region's Great Elder Xuan Wuji died under Young Hero's hands. May I confirm whether or not this matter is true?"

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then nodded, “Yes.”

“So it was so…” Wang Yichan shook his head and slowly said, “Young Hero Lin may have killed Xuan Wuji, but you may not know that Xuan Wuji had a number of cooperative deals with my Northwest Great Desert. Now that Xuan Wuji has died, these deals have naturally become invalid. More importantly, Xuan Wuji still owes my Northwest Great Desert a number of benefits that haven’t been returned.”

“Deals?” Lin Ming’s eyebrows shot up. Most of Xuan Wuji’s so-called deals had to do with helping him break through to the next boundary. “Are you saying that Xuan Wuji broke through to the fourth stage of Life Destruction with your help?”

“Young Hero Lin is fleet of thought!” Wang Yichan said without reservation, “Xuan Wuji indeed managed to barely cross the fourth stage of Life Destruction with my Northwest Great Desert’s help. But, the promises that he made haven’t been fulfilled, and this has caused massive losses to my Northwest Great Desert.”

“I see.”

No wonder Xuan Wuji was still able to forcefully break through the fourth stage of Life Destruction even though he didn’t obtain a complete Nirvana Dragon Root; it was all because he had the Northwest Great Desert secretly assisting him. The Northwest Great Desert must have paid a great price for this and Xuan Wuji must have also promised to repay a number of benefits. However, now all of that had become water leaking through a bamboo basket.

The Northwest Great Desert had helped Xuan Wuji to destroy Divine Phoenix Island in a way, and also to break through to the fourth stage of Life Destruction. If it wasn’t for this, then the Giant Leviathan wouldn’t have been sealed in the deep sea trench for four months. Lin Ming held his arms against his chest and looked at Wang Yichan with indifference. In the end, what they had done was more or less unrelated and their domains were different to begin with, so there wasn’t anything to pursue here.

“Mister Wang shouldn’t have come to my grand wedding just to say these sorts of things, then, what are you here for? Stop going in circles and say what you want.” Lin Ming asked, straight to the point.

“Haha, since Young Hero Lin is being so frank then so shall I! Xuan Wuji broke through to the fourth stage of Life Destruction, causing a number of problems and dangers for Young Hero Lin. Conversely, Young Hero Lin also killed Xuan Wuji, making us suffer a number of losses. Our areas of influence and goals are different to begin with so this matter should end here. But before that, my Northwest Great Desert provided Xuan Wuji a number of items. He still hasn’t paid for these items yet, but that’s how things are. Still, these items belong to my Northwest Great Desert. Now that Xuan Wuji has died, I’m sure that his spatial ring must have also fallen into Young Hero Lin’s possession!”

“And?”

“I hope that Young Hero Lin will return these two items. First, there is a white jade key, and secondly, there is a Life Destruction Pill!”

“Hahaha!” Lin Ming laughed out loud. Lin Ming had indeed seen these two objects in Xuan Wuji’s spatial ring. As for that white jade key, that should be a kind of item used to open the entrance to a mystic realm. But, that Life Destruction Pill was of great help to a martial artist to cross the stages of Life Destruction; it was an incomparably precious medicine.

Wang Yichan frowned, “Young Hero Lin, what is it? Do you have some doubts?”

“Doubts? What a joke!” Lin Ming’s smile suddenly disappeared. “These items are indeed in my hands, but you actually open your mouth and call them your Northwest Great Desert’s treasure? Who would actually believe that? Moreover, they could be said to be called tools that you provided to Xuan Wuji to destroy Divine Phoenix Island. According to you words, you lent a saber to Xuan Wuji so he could murder others, and I should allow him to kill me. But if I killed Xuan Wuji instead, then I have to return that weapon to you still? Is there any logic in the world as ridiculous as this!?”

Lin Ming was originally someone with a strong character to begin with. As he loudly spoke these words, the guests in the main hall also began to shout back.

“What Young Emperor Lin said is right; the Northwest Great Desert has gone too far!”

“Even though that’s true, the Northwest Great Desert is too powerful. Even one of their Young Masters is at the second stage of Life Destruction, and not an ordinary one at that too. His two guards are also at the third stage of Life Destruction. It is far too difficult for Divine Phoenix Island to think of contending with such a super power!”

The Northwest Great Desert had an Emperor level powerhouse so it could be called a Holy Land level force. However, Divine Phoenix Island was a mere fourth-grade sect. There simply wasn’t any comparison between them.

In the end, the Northwest Great Desert was using their greater status to bully others. If Divine Phoenix Island was a force on the same level as the four Divine Kingdoms, then they wouldn’t have dared to come here so rashly.

Wang Yichan grimaced. Still, he didn’t lose his composure. He calmly said, “Young Hero Lin, I can make some concessions to you. That white jade key is one of the keys necessary to open a mystic realm left behind by a sixth-grade sect that was ruled by a Supreme Elder of the demonic path. All seven of these keys are needed to open the mystic realm. You can rely on this key to join us in entering the mystic realm and even obtain a treasure from within.”

In Wang Yichan’s eyes, this was already a very attractive condition. To explore a mystic realm left behind by an ancient demonic path Supreme Elder, this was a chance that could even move an Emperor level powerhouse. Life Destruction masters would absolutely go crazy for it!

Lin Ming was only at the late Revolving Core realm. If he went and casually shared in some of the treasure then he could revel in it.

However, he never imagined that Lin Ming would flat-out refuse, “I’m sorry, but I’m not interested!”

Who cared about the Holy Lord of a sixth-grade sect? At most it would be a mystic realm on par with the Demon God Imperial Palace. After Lin Ming had gone to Timeworn Phoenix City and experienced the Chaos Stones, Ancient Phoenix Totems, God Transforming Mirror, and other such great lucky chances, these types of mystic realms no longer held much interest to him. Moreover, entering a dangerous and unknown mystic realm with a bunch of demonic path martial artists was simply a recipe for disaster. It was highly likely that he could even be killed inside. Lin Ming wasn't arrogant enough to think that he was unrivalled to anyone in the Life Destruction realm. There were far too many Life Destruction powerhouses in the world that vastly outstripped Xuan Wuji in strength.

Wang Yichan's face finally sank to the ground. Their Northwest Great Desert was a Holy Land level force and he had even humbled himself to come to a fourth-grade sect to negotiate. This was already showing due reference and face to everyone involved. Yet, this fellow Lin Ming actually reached for a yard after taking an inch.

"Lin Ming, we've come here with enough sincerity, so what do you want?"

Lin Ming thought for a moment, his eyes faintly sweeping past the concubine standing next to Wang Yichan. Then, he said, "If you want this jade key, you must exchange it for that woman as well as a spirit vein source of the fourth grade or above!"

Lin Ming's few words left the entire audience dumbfounded. Even Mu Yuhuang was rattled. There was nothing wrong with Lin Ming asking for a spirit vein source, but he also wanted that woman?

Mu Yuhuang looked at that girl. The girl didn't even seem 20 years old. With her Houtian realm cultivation at that age, her talent could be considered adequate but nothing spectacular. It also needed to be mention that Lin Ming wasn't someone who was controlled by his primal urges of lust, but even if it were a demon path vandal that walked the road of obscenity and lasciviously drooled over women, they still wouldn't trade a priceless key to open a mystic realm for a woman!

Everyone thought that Wang Yichan would agree to this matter and then haggle over the matter of the spirit vein source, but they didn’t imagine that Wang Yichan would scowl and say, “Lin Ming, you would rather do things the hard way than the easy way!?”

Chapter 755 – Swords Drawn

Chapter 755 – Swords Drawn

…

…

…

Wang Yichan’s words were a clear threat; the atmosphere immediately became tense.

Although a fourth grade spirit vein source was precious, it was still absolutely obtainable to a power on the level of the Northwest Great Desert.

Before this, the Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan Patriarch had taken out a fire-attribute spirit vein source at the quasi fifth grade, thus he felt pained in his heart to do so.

Now with Lin Ming wanted to exchange a mystic realm key for a fourth grade spirit source vein, that wasn’t too expensive or demanding at all.

But, the crux of this entire matter was – that jade pendant woman!

“Interesting, very interest! He doesn’t love treasures but loves beauties, hahaha!” Li Yifeng said with zest as he drank some wine in a corner of the hall.

“Does Young Master think that everyone is as depraved as you are? There must be some problem with that woman if they are fighting over her!” Li Yifeng’s maid grumpily said.

“But…” The young maid suddenly smiled, a bit happy that there was a ruckus occurring, “No matter what the situation is, it’s quite lively right now. If they fight then that Wang Yichan boy won’t be easy to deal with. He is a talent himself and he’s also crossed the second stage of Life Destruction; it’s hard to estimate just how high his true combat strength is. I think it's most likely for Lin Ming to lose here. Since he claims to be a Young Emperor then this should be fun. I wonder just how this whole debacle will end."

"You naughty girl, your heart is no good at all. But, this Wang Yichan is indeed fierce; it won't be easy to deal with him." Li Yifeng licked his lips. Whether it was Lin Ming or Wang Yichan, both of them would be future overlords of their own domains. Although Divine Phoenix Island was the weaker party right now, Wang Yichan wouldn't do something so brash as offending a potential future powerhouse.

Lin Ming didn't expect that Wang Yichan would have such a violent reaction. As he looked at the young woman standing next to him, he discovered she simply stood there like a block of wood, her gray pupils not even having the slightest change in them. From just looking at her, one felt a deep sense of pity and regret for her existence.

This woman… she shouldn't have been willing to be Wang Yichan's concubine. Rather, she had been forced. She was completely indifferent to Lin Ming asking for her, as if her heart had died out long ago.

What sort of secret was on her? How was it related to the goddess in the Eternal Demon Abyss?

For a time, all sorts of thoughts flashed through Lin Ming's mind. The reason that he had wanted this mysterious woman to begin with was because he wanted to ask her about her life experiences as well as her family. Secondly, he wanted to conceal the secret of the jade pendant. If he directly requested the jade pendant from Wang Yichan then it would easily arouse suspicions. If Wang Yichan thought that there was some special secret with the jade pendant then he would definitely refuse.

But now, it looked as if this young woman had an extraordinary significance to Wang Yichan.

Lin Ming caused all sorts of suspicions to rise in his heart; there was definitely something special about her.

“I can provide you a top fourth grade spirit vein source, but as for my concubine, I advise you not to think about that any more. I hate others encroaching on my women the most!”

Lin Ming replied with a true essence sound transmission, “Sir, if I’m not wrong then this woman is still a virgin. Although she is your concubine, you have no intention of marrying her, am I right? As long as I can borrow this woman then that will be enough. As for the fourth grade spirit vein source, the quasi fifth grade spirit vein source from the deep sea Turquoise-Eyed Ape Clan will be enough. I need to borrow this woman for three years, and three years from now I will return her to you untouched. When that time comes, you can again receive her into your room!”

The reason that Lin Ming said these words was first to probe if Wang Yichan was only interested in the jade pendant young woman’s beauty. Secondly, he asked for a three year deadline because three years from now, Lin Ming’s strength would definitely have risen to another level. At that time, he would have the strength to negotiate better terms. After all, the Northwest Great Desert was a Holy Land level force; Lin Ming didn’t wish to become enemies with them.

“Lin Ming, stop repeatedly testing my bottom line, otherwise I will turn your grand wedding into a funeral!” As Wang Yichan spoke he released a thick killing intent. This also confirmed Lin Ming’s guess. Wang Yichan definitely didn’t keep this woman around him for her beauty. In fact, it was unknown whether or not she was even his concubine.

“Turn my wedding into a funeral?” Lin Ming coldly smiled, “It’s true that you are from a Holy Land, but so what? If we really fight then I will have the Giant Leviathan lead everyone from Divine Phoenix Island deep into the South Sea. I don’t believe that in such a vast South Sea I won’t be able to evade you. And then, dozens of years from now, I will instead kill my way into your Northwest Great Desert. At that time, it’s hard to say just how the situation will turn out!”

“Kill your way into my Northwest Great Desert a few dozen years from now? Hahaha!” Wang Yichan recklessly laughed, “Others call you Young Emperor, but do you really believe you are capable of entering the Divine Sea dozens of years from now? How ridiculous! I don’t need the future, just here and with my strength alone I can already dye Divine Phoenix Island in blood!"

As Wan Yichan spoke to here, a red light appeared in his eyes and a faint black fog seemed to emanate from him as if he were ready to erupt at any moment.

Although there were many esteemed guests here, the strongest among there were Nanyun Wang and Abbot Konghe of the Great Zen Temple. Both of them were third stage Life Destruction masters. However, they were still guests here and as heads of their own forces, they wouldn't meddle in affairs of the Northwest Great Desert and Divine Phoenix island.

As for everyone else, they were nothing to speak of.

Seeing the tense atmosphere that was ready to blow up at any second, the guests present turned somewhat white. This other party was not easy to handle. Wang Yichan's foundation was extremely solid; it was hard to say where the limits of his strength were!

Both of them were geniuses, but Lin Ming was only at the late Revolving Core compared to the second stage of Life Destruction. That was a large boundary and a small boundary's difference added together.

Jumping ranks to fight wasn't terrifying, what was terrifying was for a favored son of heaven to jump ranks to fight amongst his peers. Even a difference of half a small boundary was extremely difficult to overcome.

No matter how one looked at it, Divine Phoenix Island looked a bit powerless here. It would be an injustice if they were swept up in the mess and ended up perishing.

"Young Master, why are still talking nonsense with this brat. Just capture him and take what you need away. If he remains a thickheaded idiot who still wants to chew off more than he can chew, just kill him!" Behind Wang Yichan, a third stage Life Destruction Elder drew out his weapon.

Ha!

A sharp origin energy immediately cut several nearby wedding tables in half, causing a number of exquisite jade tableware pieces to fall onto the ground, broken.

As Lin Ming saw this he scowled. This was his grand wedding banquet after all. With all these esteemed guests gathered here at his home, it should be a festive and auspicious event. But, for this person to draw out his weapon like this was truly slapping his face in public.

At this time, two women appeared in the main hall – they were Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan. According to normal wedding customs, Mu Qianyu should be waiting in the nuptial chambers while Lin Ming greeted and entertained the guests outside. But now that matters had devolved to this level, she had no choice but to appear.

"Master, what's happening?" As Mu Qianyu saw the scene unfolding in the main hall her complexion paled a bit. Mu Yuhuang quickly placed Mu Qianyu behind her, her expression solemn. "Yu'er, tell Demonshine to ready the Giant Leviathan, the situation is very bad right now!"

Wang Yichan simply didn't care about what Mu Yuhuang was doing. He coldly smiled and with a flick of his finger, a palm-sized jade dish flew up, falling atop his fingertips where it rapidly spun around.

Lin Ming was startled as he saw this. As for Li Yifeng, his complexion completely changed. This was… a battle spirit!

"That brat Wang Yichan has comprehended his own battle spirit!?"

Generally, only Divine Sea powerhouses were able to form their own battle spirit. But, there were occasionally extraordinarily talented martial artists that were able to comprehend their own battle spirits in the Life Destruction realm. The growth of a battle spirit followed that of a martial artist's cultivation. Thus, the earlier a martial artist comprehended a battle spirit, the more potential for growth there was in the future.

‘To comprehend a battle spirit at the second stage of Life Destruction, there are many Divine Kingdom Princes and Crown Princes that aren’t able to achieve this. It seems this Wang Yichan has an amazing talent in the aspect of martial arts will!’

Li Yifeng sighed in his heart. In this regard, he had no choice but to be ashamed at his own inferiority!

A talent often had particular areas in which they excelled. For instance, Li Yifeng excelled in the Concept and Laws of Wind. His comprehension of the Concept of Wind had already caught up to that of a Divine Sea Supreme Elder.

But, while this Wang Yichan was clearly extraordinary in the aspect of will, it was possible that he was relatively weak in the comprehension of Laws. There were very few geniuses that were strong in all aspects.

It wasn’t just Li Yifeng, but the worldly and experienced Great Zen Temple’s Abbot Konghe also recognized this battle spirit. He bowed his head and began to recite Buddhist sutras. It appeared that this situation seemed more and more likely to end poorly.

“Lin Ming, I will give you a final chance to hand over that jade key. You have already aroused my anger, now I will no longer pay you any compensation.”

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes and looked at the spinning jade plate above Wang Yichan’s fingertip. This person obviously thought far too highly of himself. Otherwise, he would have poured his battle spirit into his own treasure weapon instead of a jade plate.

As he glanced over at the grey-pupiled young woman standing beside Wang Yichan, he noticed a sad light in her eyes as if she were mourning for her fate. Lin Ming was inexplicably touched; just what sort of story was behind this woman?

“It seems you insist on dying! Then, let me help you along!”

Wang Yichan coldly coughed, suddenly throwing out his palm. The battle spirit-infused jade dish was like a death-dealing wheel as it cut straight towards Lin Ming’s neck. In that moment, the degree of hardness of that small jade dish had reached that of a heaven-step treasure!

“Be careful!”

Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan cried out in the same time, their hearts in chaos. At this time, they couldn’t imagine just what they would do if Lin Ming was harmed.

Lin Ming’s vision condensed and he flicked the fingers on his hand. A battle spirit wrapped around the air, howling forth like an arrow!

A battle spirit was immeasurably fast. In a flash, the battle spirit of the air and the battle spirit of the small jade dish violently collided.

With a ‘peng!’ sound, the small jade dish split in half. As for that battle spirit infused air current, it continued to cut towards the point between Wang Yichan’s eyebrows without slowing.

“What!?”

Wang Yichan was greatly shocked. Waving his right hand he immediately brought up a black long sword!

With a loud ringing sound of metal crashing, the battle spirit smashed into the blade of the black sword. The long sword trembled!

That Li Yifeng who had been drinking some good wine and watching the play unfold was dumbfounded on the spot. His mouth opened wide, wine pouring down the corners of his mouth as he looked on in shock, seeming like an old man suffering from senility.

A battle spirit was powerful but it also depended on what kind of object it was attached too. Attaching it to a treasure obviously provided the strongest striking power. In his arrogance, Wang Yichan had underestimated his opponent and only used a jade dish. But, Lin Ming was even more arrogant and had only used the air!

Air was even lighter and frailer than that small jade dish. But, in Lin Ming's hand, air had actually broken through that small jade dish!

Chapter 756 – Duel of Battle Spirits

Chapter 756 – Duel of Battle Spirits

…

…

…

The wisp of air pierced through the small jade dish and still had ample force left over to shoot towards Wang Yichan. Wang Yichan took his sword out to block it, but the strike still caused his low-grade heaven-step treasure sword to tremble. From this alone, the difference in the two battle spirits could be imagined!

“This Lin Ming, if I’m guessing correctly then I fear that battle spirit has nearly reached large success of the bronze level!” Li Yifeng sucked in a breath of cold air. Even the young maid standing beside him had widened eyes. As someone who also came from the four Divine Kingdoms, she naturally understood what it meant to have a bronze level battle spirit at large success.

Every level of a battle spirit was divided into four ranks: elementary, small success, large success, and perfection. It wasn’t wrong that Wang Yichan was talented, but he had still just formed his battle spirit several years ago and its rank had slowly reached the elementary rank. As for Lin Ming, his battle spirit was already at the peak of small success; there were even many Divine Sea powerhouses that hadn’t been able to achieve this degree yet!

A difference of a little more than a boundary wasn’t much at all, however, Wang Yichan’s cultivation was at the second stage of Life Destruction and Lin Ming was only at the late Revolving Core. If Lin Ming were to step into the second stage of Life Destruction then it was possible for his battle spirit to reach bronze level perfection, and perhaps he could even obtain a silver battle spirit before he reached the Divine Sea!

A silver battle spirit was a legendary existence. Thus, the gap between the two could be seen from just this.

‘With a mere late Revolving Core cultivation his battle spirit has already reached the peak of small success. Then, when did Lin Ming form his battle spirit? The early Revolving Core realm?

‘…Or even extreme Xiantian?’

As Li Yifeng thought this, he felt a chill crawl up his spine. Even that young maid who didn’t think too much of Lin Ming was also shocked speechless. In terms of will, Lin Ming’s talent in that category had exceeded her understanding.

Perhaps… he really did kill Xuan Wuji by himself.

As this thought echoed in the young maid’s heart, she closed her dropped jaw.

If Li Yifeng could think of this then Wang Yichan was even clearer on what was happening. As for Great Zen Temple’s Abbot Konghe, although he didn’t understand the different ranks of battle spirits, he was still able to determine that Lin Ming’s battle spirit was far more formidable than Wang Yichan’s.

In that moment, Abbot Konghe felt that the world of juniors had reached a level that was nearly impossible to catch up to. Maybe in a few decades, or even less, these juniors would reach heights that he couldn’t even comprehend.

“Lin Ming, I never thought that you would also have a battle spirit.” Wang Yichan’s lips twitched. His battle spirit was his ultimate killer move. He had intended to use it to shock and awe the entire audience, but he never imagined that Lin Ming would turn it around to shame him instead.

His heart sank as he thought to himself, ‘My battle spirit has a demonic path attribute to it. I was too careless just now and didn’t use the special attribute. If I go all out, then a difference of a small boundary shouldn’t matter too much.’

Wang Yichan couldn't stand that he had been defeated in what he excelled at the most. This was a major blow to his self confidence.

"Slaughter path attribute, battle spirit assault!"

A black light suddenly erupted in Wang Yichan's eyes, turning into a substantiated sword of will that thrust straight at Lin Ming!

Wang Yichan had comprehended a battle spirit when he was crossing through Life Destruction. Moreover, what he comprehended was a rare specialized battle spirit. This battle spirit had a slaughter path attribute; it was able to display the strongest destructive power in battle, even able to directly extinguish the life force of an opponent!

A duel of battle spirits?

Lin Ming's mind stirred. Before this, he had heard Demonshine say that martial artists with battle spirits could battle in the world of will through their battle spirits.

Wang Yichan was the first martial artist Lin Ming met who had a battle spirit. Before this, although he had never truly fought with a martial artist in the world of will, he had done something similar during his stay at the Road of Emperor. There, when Lin Ming faced the road of will lights, in order to pass every light he would have to enter the will world and engage the residual will of the past Emperors in battle.

Lin Ming was not a stranger to battles within the world of will. In fact, it was quite familiar to him.

Lin Ming's thoughts focused and the battle spirit floating in his spiritual sea transformed into a long spear that roared forth!

An azure ray of pure will shot forth from between Lin Ming's eyebrows, meeting Wang Yichang's sword of black will.

Peng!

As both battle spirits collided, Lin Ming and Wang Yichan both arrived at the world of will.

Without further ado, Wang Yichan flicked his finger and a massive black python appeared out of thin air, rushing towards Lin Ming. This was a python formed from Wang Yichan's thoughts. In a battle within the world of will, victory didn't depend on cultivation methods of martial skills; even cultivation didn't have that great of an influence. Rather, it purely depended on whose will was stronger.

Compared to the road of will lights Lin Ming had once faced, Wang Yichan's battle spirit was far inferior. An azure long spear shot forth like a meteor, drilling right through the black python.

A great deal of black blood rained to the ground. Wang Yichan devilishly grinned and then loudly shouted, "Slaughter energy, swallow all!"

At that moment, the thick black fog burst out from the python's body, swallowing up that azure long spear.

With a 'chi chi chi' sound, the black mist melded into the spear shaft as if it were trying to assimilate with it.

Wang Yichan laughed, "Lin Ming, my battle spirit has a slaughter path attribute! I can extinguish your life and swallow your will!"

Battle spirits could also have different attributes?

Lin Ming's mind stirred. He hadn't heard Demonshine mention this point before.

Lin Ming wasn't unfamiliar with slaughter path attribute abilities. When he completed his twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo he had obtained the slaughter path attribute Death God force field. But, this was a battle in the world of will. He couldn't use the Death God force field here unless he reproduced it using his own will. In the end, a battle in the world of will depended entirely on whose will was stronger.

But he didn't need the Death God force field to begin with. If a battle spirit could have an attribute then Lin Ming's azure will also had an attribute. That was – endlessness!

"Break!"

Lin Ming gave a deep shout and an azure light suddenly radiated outwards. With a resounding dragon roar, an Azure Dragon impacted the heavens, thrusting its claws out and directly ripping apart the black python's body to pieces.

Lin Ming had obtained only a single drop of reverse scale blood, but the truth was that its quality was far higher than the blood of the Ancient Phoenix.

The blood of the Ancient Phoenix was only ordinary phoenix blood. In the legends, a Phoenix God Beast preyed upon Giant Leviathans. Its size was no less than that of a Golden-Winged Roc, and when it spread out its two wings it was able to hide the endless blue skies. It was difficult to say just how much blood such a creature had!

As for that drop of reverse scale blood Lin Ming had obtained in the Sorcerer Pagoda, that came from an Azure True Dragon's reverse scale. For dragons that had a reverse scale, to touch it meant death. The blood from the reverse scale was only inferior to blood essence. Naturally, the quality was much higher than a phoenix's ordinary blood.

Bang bang bang!

The black fog was completely scattered by the azure energy. After exterminating the black python, the azure dragon rushed forth with unstoppable force, firing right into Wang Yichan.

"Damnit!"

Wang Yichan angrily cried out as he produced a long sword, cutting it towards that azure dragon.

Peng!

The long sword broke apart and Wang Yichan's body was torn in half by the azure dragon's claws. With a miserable scream he was thrust out of the world of will, his eyes opening even as his body dripped with a cold sweat and his face became pallid.

In the world of will where the battle had only lasted for three breaths of time, Wang Yichan had been defeated!

Lin Ming opened his eyes looking calm as usual. As his cultivation constantly rose, his battle spirit became increasingly close to breaking through to large success of the bronze level. Within the Sky Spill Continent, a Divine Sea powerhouse with a large success bronze level battle spirit could be considered extraordinary.

"Lin Ming!"

Wang Yichan's mouth twitched as he gasped for breath in great gulps of air. In this fight of battle spirits, his main body hadn't been damaged but his will had been injured. It would be several days before he was restored to his peak condition.

He was unwilling to accept that defeat just now and wanted to fight Lin Ming again in the real world. However, after having lost just now, fighting again would not leave any good impressions on those present and even winning would mean he lost face. Moreover, Wang Yichan had been frightened in that exchange just now; he wasn't too confident that he could defeat Lin Ming, even in the real world.

"Wang Yichan, if I'm not wrong then that so-called concubine of yours was captured from somewhere and then had a spell placed on her. Although I won't call myself some sort of honorable gentleman, I wouldn't do anything recklessly shameful. If you two truly loved each other then I would have no objections, but now, taking her from your hands is well within reason!"

Lin Ming's words were much more reasonable, and now that he had won that battle against Wang Yichan just now, all of the initiative had fallen into his hands.

“Lin Ming, do you truly wish to become enemies with my Northwest Great Desert? Have you clearly thought about just what the consequences will be like!?” Wang Yichan said out loud before continuing with a true essence sound transmission, “I will trade a fifth grade spirit vein source four that white jade key!”

Wang Yichan had no choice but to lay down the threat of sect extermination. But at this moment, Li Yifeng laughed and stood up, “Brother Wang, you’ve already lost what there is to lose, can’t you afford what you lost?”

Wang Yichan followed the direction of the voice. As he saw Li Yifeng casually standing at the corner of the main hall, his heart jumped. This was definitely another extraordinary young elite! This person must come from some great power. “You are…”

“I am Li Yifeng!”

“Li Yifeng! Prince of the Seven Star Divine Kingdom! To think that such a solemn and dignified Divine Kingdom Prince would actually come to Lin Ming’s wedding celebrations. Could it be that your Seven Star Divine Kingdom is trying to recruit Lin Ming?”

Wang Yichan felt his heart go cold as he saw Li Yifeng. This Li Yifeng’s comprehension of the Law of Wind had reached an extremely high level and his foundation was incomparably solid too. He had at least twice the amount of total true essence that a normal Revolving Core martial artist would have, and the power of the stars was sealed in his right hand, greatly strengthening him.

Of course, Wang Yichan wouldn’t care about these things at all. After all, Li Yifeng’s cultivation wasn’t that high. But what Li Yifeng represented actually caused Wang Yichan to feel a pang of fear.

Li Yifeng represented one of the four Divine Kingdoms, the Seven Star Divine Kingdom!

Compared to the four Divine Kingdoms, the Northwest Great Desert was far lacking in all aspects.

The Seven Star Divine Kingdom wanted to win Lin Ming over to their side?

Wang Yichan couldn't help but think this. If this were so, then what grounds did his Northwest Great Desert have to threaten Divine Phoenix Island?

"The jade key and the Life Destruction Pill!"

Wang Yichan spat out these words in a livid rage. He did care about the Life Destruction Pill, but what was most important here was that mystic realm key. In truth, this key contained some of Xuan Wuji's works inside, otherwise it would never have been placed with him to begin with. If every key wasn't collected then they would be unable to open the mystic realm left behind by that demonic path Holy Lord.

Lin Ming waved his hand and two jade boxes flew towards Wang Yichan. After Wang Yichan received them he swept his perception through them quickly and then coldly humphed, "We're leaving!"

Wang Yichan brought his two underlings and left in great strides, leaving behind that woman with gray pupils to stand quietly in the main hall. Slowly, everyone's visions turned towards her.

Chapter 757 – Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, Feng Shen

Chapter 757 – Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, Feng Shen

…

…

…

"What is your name?"

Lin Ming asked as he looked at the young woman with the jade pendant.

The young woman's dark gray pupils flashed with indifference; she didn't bother answering Lin Ming's question.

The guests present were secretly whispering amongst themselves. Just what was so special about this young woman that Lin Ming would trade a mystic realm key for her? And it seemed as if Wang Yichan was extremely reluctant to do so, as if he had suffered a great loss in the process.

"Xingxuan, please take her away and have someone unravel the spell on her. Let her have some rest and don't let anyone disturb her." Lin Ming thought that this young woman had some emotion problems at the moment. It was best to let her relax for some time before he asked her about her life and what the secret to that jade pendant was.

The young woman was taken away, leaving all the guests disappointed. They were all curious individuals and also wanted to see just what was so special about this young woman.

"I sincerely apologize for frightening everyone just now. Everyone, we shall exchange for some new tables and dishes and continue the celebrations once more!" Lin Ming cupped his fists across his chest and apologized to all the guests.

To have such a ruckus at a wedding banquet would normally cause a loss of face. However, Lin Ming’s actions had been sharp and decisive. Not only did he not lose any face, but it instead caused his prestige to rise even more. It seemed that being top master of the South Sea was no longer an adequate title to describe Lin Ming.

“Lin Ming’s battle spirit is only a small step from reaching large success of the bronze level. Moreover, it seems his battle spirit also has a strange attribute to it, otherwise it would have been impossible for him to defeat Wang Yichan with such ease.”

Li Yifeng said as he waved his fan. He was becoming more and more interested in Lin Ming. “This is a true talent. If we can win him over to our Seven Star Divine Kingdom then that will be a great boost to us.”

“Young Master wants to win him over to enter our Divine Kingdom?” The young maid near Li Yifeng asked with surprise.

“Hehe, he has his own sect so directly pulling him into our Divine Kingdom won’t be easy. Such an extraordinary youth won’t necessarily be willing to enter our Divine Kingdom. But, even if we can’t win him over, being on good terms with him is also good!”

To the melody of an orchestra, the entire banquet continued on in a festive mood. After some time, a youth jumped onto the central stage platform and loudly exclaimed, “I am the Dire Space Sect’s Mo Shaoyun. I would like to show off my meager skills for the entertainment of all!”

“Haha, to dance around by yourself is too boring. I am Supreme Mystery Temple’s Sun Tai, how about I dance with you?” Another youth also jumped onstage. Although he called this ‘dancing’, the truth was that it was a contest.

Of course, in order to ensure that it remained in step with the festivities they would use as many fancy and beautiful moves as possible.

In the traditions of the Sky Spill Continent, whenever a large-scale celebration occurred where heroes and young elites from all over gathered together, it would be the time when the young disciples of the great sects had their chance to show off their skills.

During Revered Master Tianguang's birthday banquet there had also been a great number of heroic young elites that had gone onstage to show off their skills. At that time, Lin Ming had broken apart Lei Jingtian's plot, cut down Lei Mubai, and from that point on his name had begun to resound in the South Horizon Region.

Of course, the current Lin Ming had gone from an invisible young disciple of a sect to the top master of the South Sea. He naturally wouldn't play around with these fellow juniors.

As Li Yifeng's maid, Qing'er, saw this, her eyes lit up. A battle of juniors from the South Horizon Region normally wouldn't enter her eyes to begin with. Compared to the four Divine Kingdoms, the South Horizon Region's heroic young elites were not much at all. Lin Ming was simply a completely different beast.

"Heehee, I want to try too." Qing'er jumped onstage, her early Revolving Core cultivation stunning all the young elites present. Li Yifeng wryly smiled. Normally, martial artists that participated in such banquets would be around 17 or 18 years old. Qing'er's age had actually surpassed this measure.

"Would anyone like to come up?" Qing'er issued a challenge out loud. The disciples of the South Horizon Region and Five Element Region immediately began complaining of this bitter situation in their hearts. Facing this girl, anyone young who came up would just embarrass themselves, but anyone older couldn't step up. For a time there was an awkward silence.

"I'll play with you."

At this time, a voice sounded out and Lan Xin stepped onstage.

Lan Xin and Qing'er were around the same age. Both of them were beautiful and exquisite young girls; they naturally attracted everyone's attention.

“Who is this blue-clothed girl with the pointy ears?”

“She’s likely Young Emperor Lin’s friend. She’s so young and yet she wants to fight with a Divine Kingdom disciple?” The guests talked amongst themselves. To them, Lan Xin was an unknown.

“Her opponent is a Revolving Core martial artist. Can this blue-clothed girl really win?”

As a martial artist of the Fey race, Lan Xin’s cultivation was at the peak of a one star Fey King; her cultivation was only a step away from reaching the boundary of a two star Fey King. Because of the different cultivation systems, none of the guests present were able to see through Lan Xin’s cultivation.

“Who are you?” Qing’er didn’t think that anyone would actually come up and challenger her, especially one that was at her age. If she hadn’t seen just how terrifying Lin Ming was with her own eyes, she would never have placed anyone here in her eyes to begin with.

“Fey race, Blue Silver Forest, Lan Xin!” Lan Xin announced the name of her Blue Silver Holy Land without any intention of hiding it. There were just far too many strange races in the Sky Spill Continent. In the South Sea alone there were already innumerable deep sea tribes. To have someone from the Fey race appear was only a novelty, nothing more.

“What is the Blue Silver Forest? I’ve never heard of it before!”

“Maybe it’s some island from deep within the South Sea, or maybe some forest at the bottom of the sea. This is the first time I’ve heard about this Fey race too.”

The martial artists present discussed amongst themselves. Naturally, none of them had ever heard the name of the Blue Silver Holy Land before.

Li Yifeng was playing with his fan but in truth he had already noticed Lan Xin, Duanmu Qun, and Feng Shen. These three were obviously not common talents of their generation. As for how strong they were, he had no idea. “I wonder where these strange races came from; their cultivation paths are extremely peculiar. They don’t seem much older than Qing’er, but even knowing her cultivation they still dare to challenge her. It seems they are also top talents!"

Although Qing'er was Li Yifeng's maid in appearance, the truth was that she was also a talented genius girl from the Seven Star Divine Kingdom. Her talent was worse than a Divine Kingdom Prince's, but not by much.

Lin Ming smiled as he saw Lan Xin and Qing'er step up onstage, posturing themselves as they prepared to show off their skills. A one-star Fey King was slightly better than a human early Revolving Core. Lan Xin was a peak one-star Fey King and could advance into a two-star Fey King at any given time. This was nearly equal to a human middle Revolving Core powerhouse.

Lan Xin had the advantage of cultivation to start with and her talent was only inferior to Duanmu Qun's. This was truly bullying others.

As the many guests were expressing how they thought this battle would unfold, Lan Xin and Qing'er had already started battling each other.

Most of the people present didn't think Lan Xin had a chance of winning, but the result actually left them all stunned. In just three moves, Lan Xin had already broken apart Qing'er's hairpin.

Qing'er was originally an arrogant and overly proud girl. How could she stand taking such a blow, especially when her opponent didn't look any older than her? She couldn't allow this to stand!

Not being convinced in her heart, Qing'er completely went all in. However, her defeat came even quicker. Lan Xin's cultivation completely suppressed Qing'er from all directions. In just two simple moves, Qing'er's long sword was sent flying away by Lan Xin. The victor and the loser were already evident.

The outcome of the battle had surprised everyone, causing the atmosphere of the celebrations to immediately heat up. Everyone's discussions revolved around Lan Xin. No one thought that there would be so many heroes gathered at Lin Ming's wedding banquet.

Qing'er returned to her own seat in a depressed state. She had gone up onstage to show off, but in a surprising turn of events she had been kicked into the mud instead.

"I told you not to underestimate others." Li Yifeng laughed as he patted Qing'er on the shoulder. He had already guessed that if Lan Xin dared to go onstage then she must have confidence in her own strength. But, he didn't think that this Lan Xin girl would be able to defeat Qing'er so easily.

"Are you still talking? I've already lost any face I had left! I have no idea what that girl ate growing up, she simply isn't human at all!" Qing'er mumbled in a low voice. She felt that she had completely shamed herself just now.

"That young girl indeed has a suspicious origin." Li Yifeng said as he bit his fan, his eyes shining. These friends of Lin Ming had truly surprised him. He had simply belittled the heroes of this world too often. That Lan Xin girl alone was already at the level of a Divine Kingdom Prince. As for those other two, they certainly weren't common either.

Besides Lin Ming, Li Yifeng also began noticing Lan Xin, Duanmu Qin, and Feng Shen.

"Haha, how about it? Does Brother Duanmu wish to go to the four Divine Kingdoms to have a look?" Lin Ming said to Duanmu Qun with a true essence sound transmission as he saw Lan Xin win with relaxed ease. This match was probably encouraged by Duanmu Qun. He wished for Lan Xin to spread out the reputation of the three of them in order to pave the way for their eventual entry into the four Divine Kingdoms.

The four Divine Kingdoms was where the outstanding young elites of the Sky Spill Continent gathered. If Duanmu Qun and the others went to the four Divine Kingdoms, they would naturally meet these people and duel with them in order to make progress. But, in order to know these people they first had to expose part of their strength.

“Mm, I was indeed thinking that. Walking 10,000 miles is better than reading 10,000 books. The three of us came to the Sky Spill Continent to adventure and gain experience so that we wouldn’t remain frogs in a well. If the four Divine Kingdoms are where the Holy Lands of the Sky Spill Continent are located, then we naturally must go there.”

“Haha, I was also planning to make a journey to the four Divine Kingdoms, but… I have to wait some time before then.”

Lin Ming had already made plans for the future. First, he wanted to study alchemical techniques and inscription techniques. The reason to learn auxiliary skill was to enhance one’s soul. And the further one went in the road of martial arts, the more important the soul became. The soul was needed to move true essence, and even a battle spirit was carried within the spiritual sea. If one’s soul was weak and fragile then it would be much easier to encounter bottlenecks in the future.

This was also the reason why so many Supreme Elders from the Realm of the Gods learned their own auxiliary skills. Much less, Lin Ming also cultivated the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, so he would need a massive amount of medicines to complete his body transformation. Completely relying on lucky chances to supply him with the medicines and treasures he needed was clearly unrealistic.

But in order to study alchemy techniques to a high degree he would need a massive amount of materials, all the way from low grade materials to heavenly treasures. This was a very high demand. It would be difficult to find all of the things he needed in a small place like the South Horizon Region.

“I’ve already guessed that Brother Lin is planning to go to the four Divine Kingdoms, but we plan on setting off by ourselves first. Perhaps the three of us might even separate in the four Divine Kingdoms.” Duanmu Qun said with a faint smile.

The gap between their strength and Lin Ming’s strength was already quite high, and this disparity was destined to increase, meaning that it was nearly impossible for them to continue journeying together. For instance, a mystic realm that Lin Ming could enter didn’t mean that they could necessarily follow, and Lin Ming might not be interested in a mystic realm that they could enter.

“Mm, good, then this wedding celebration will also be my farewell gift to Brother Duanmu!”

……….

Lin Ming’s wedding ceremony would last for an entire seven days. Of these seven days, Lin Ming only needed to appear on the first day to personally entertain his guests. For the remaining period, all of that would be singlehandedly managed by Mu Yuhuang.

At night, Lin Ming finally arrived at his marriage nuptial chambers. And at this time, Mu Qianyu was sitting on a large bed, having waited there for a long time. Beside her, Qin Xingxuan was gazing in a bronze mirror, carefully helping her dress up.

Chapter 758 – The Wedding Night

Chapter 758 – The Wedding Night

…

…

…

“Little Sister Xingxuan, is my hairpin crooked?” Mu Qianyu asked Qin Xingxuan as she traced her hair.

“No, it’s beautiful.” Qin Xingxuan covered her mouth and chuckled. A wedding night was the most beautiful time of a woman’s life. Mu Qianyu naturally hoped that the most beautiful moment would also unfold tonight.

At this time, Qin Xingxuan heard the sounds of footsteps approaching. As she turned around she saw that Lin Ming had entered the room.

The laughing Qin Xingxuan suddenly stood up like a frightened rabbit, at a loss of what to do.

Mu Qianyu tightly gripped onto Qin Xingxuan’s hand and pulled her to sit back down. In truth, Mu Qianyu was also feeling extremely nervous at this time.

Whether it was Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, or Lin Ming, they were all neophytes of love. Although Lin Ming’s strength was abnormal and his talent was monstrous, facing things like feelings or how to coax a girl into happiness, he was absolutely ignorant towards all of this.

Martial artists weren’t like common mortals. They did fall in love, but their emotions didn’t manifest in yearning and dreaming of others every few days.

Towards Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan, Lin Ming had never spoken words like ‘I love you’ or ‘I like you’. He had never even made promises or asked questions such as ‘marry me’ or ‘be my wife’.

This was because mortals were not good at controlling their emotions. Once they were touched by emotions, all of their thoughts would go into chaos and they could fall to great depths of sadness or rise to great heights of happiness.

As for martial cultivators, they threw themselves into their training and constantly hardened their will. In terms of feelings, even if they were profound or unforgettable, they wouldn’t affect them to the point of them making overly flourishing mortal gestures.

But this didn’t mean that a martial cultivator’s feelings weren’t deep.

In fact, it was just the opposite. The feelings of a martial artist who had tempered their will were even more everlasting. These were feelings and sentiments that could be eroded within a vast river for a thousand years or even ten thousand years and still remain unswerving and unchanged.

As Mu Qianyu was waiting in the nuptial chambers for Lin Ming, a single thought continued to reverberate in her heart. Her thoughts returned to the Demon God Imperial Palace when Lin Ming had thrust the Escape Symbol into her palm and said to her, ‘Wait for me there’.

And six days later he had made true on his promise. Then he had said to her, ‘Come with me… to kill.”

These words didn’t contain even a hint of the romance between men and women, but every word had sunk into her bones, bringing with it a firm, confident warmth that knew not death or fear.

What echoed in Mu Qianyu’s heart was far more profound and solemn than those casually spoken sweet words and honeyed phrases spoken at temporary heights of passion that could be false or true. To her, Lin Ming's words were a pledge that far surpassed any vow of eternal love!

If Lin Ming really hadn't returned then, Mu Qianyu had already determined to leave that broken world and dedicate her life to training until she became powerful enough to kill every person that had harmed Lin Ming one at a time. Then, she would re-enter that broken world and live out the rest of her life accompanying Lin Ming.

Such feelings did not need to be dressed up with flashy words.

And for Qin Xingxuan it was even more so. When Lin Ming had come to Blood Demon Island to rescue her, his figure as he stood atop that Vermillion Bird and the blood flowing from his spear light had already branded itself onto her heart, becoming an eternal part of her soul that she would never forget.

Joy, happiness, no regrets, if she could encompass all of these things within her feelings then what else was there to not be satisfied with?

To Lin Ming, when Mu Qianyu had crossed the destruction of Divine Phoenix Island and left behind her message at the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, this had left an unforgettable image on him.

That was the oath that Mu Qianyu had made on the edge of death.

As for Qin Xingxuan, she was the companion who had accompanied him ever since his adventure began in the Sky Fortune Kingdom.

She was like Lin Ming's young neighborhood girl love. When he was in Sky Fortune City, Qin Xingxuan and her master, Mister Muyi, had helped him a great deal. Lin Min and Qin Xingxuan had each seen the other's parents, and when Qin Xingxuan had lived with the Lin Family she had constantly accompanied Lin Mu. His parents already regarded Qin Xingxuan as their future daughter-in-law.

This sort of light and comfortable warmth was also a certain type of moving emotion. When Lin Ming was endlessly training himself and on the edge of collapse, he could use these warm and happy feelings to find peace of mind even in a realm of infinite slaughter.

……………

"Lin Ming, you still owe Xingxuan a wedding ceremony." Mu Qianyu suddenly said. During this wedding ceremony the announcement had only included that Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu were to be married; it hadn't included Qin Xingxuan.

Lin Ming silently nodded. He gazed at Qin Xingxuan for a long moment before his eyes turned back to Mu Qianyu, "Yu'er, are you sure that you don't want to come to the Realm of the Gods with me?"

Because of the existence of that Ancient Phoenix Clan's transmission array, it wasn't necessary to break through to the Divine Sea to ascend to the Realm of the Gods. As long as Mu Qianyu desired it, she could also go to the Realm of the Gods together with Lin Ming.

Mu Qianyu shook her head.

If it wasn't for the fact that Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan both existed in his heart, Lin Ming would have already held a wedding ceremony much earlier. But, facing both Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan together, Lin Ming was helpless as to who to hold the wedding ceremony with first.

Finally, Mu Qianyu had put forth that she wouldn't follow Lin Ming into the Realm of the Gods in the future.

Mu Qianyu's parents had died soon after she was born. To her, Mu Yuhuang was no different from her true mother. Divine Phoenix Island held too great a significance to Mu Qianyu.

All of these things were difficult to give up. If she insisted on following Lin Ming then she would be willing to abandon everything she ever knew for him. However, Lin Ming also had

Qin Xingxuan to accompany him upwards, and secondly, she didn't believe that she would be of any help to Lin Ming within the Realm of the Gods.

If that were the case, then it was better to stay in the Sky Spill Continent and raise their children, having Divine Phoenix Island become much more prosperous and magnificent, and have the Lin Family flourish like never before.

A family might not be a burden to a martial artist, but it was a sort of worry. After countless years passed, when their parents, wives, children, and children's children had all died, leaving them alone in the world, this type of desolate and lonely road of martial arts could easily lead to heart demons.

Moreover, a deep and true love to a martial artist was a nearly spiritual dependence. It wasn't like the pleasure of the flesh, something that they could easily let go.

Lin Ming didn't try persuading her anymore. Although returning to the lower realms from the Realm of the Gods was troublesome, it wasn't completely impossible. He could still meet with Mu Qianyu, and with his help it would be easy for her to reach the Divine Sea in the future. Then, she would have 10,000 years of life, several tens of thousands years of life, or an even longer time than that. Such a long period of time was enough for him to reach the peak of martial artists. As for what would happen once he reached that point, who knew?

At this time, Qin Xingxuan slowly stood up and quietly withdrew, closing the door behind her. Since this was Mu Qianyu's wedding, she naturally had to let it take its most perfect course.

As Qin Xingxuan imagined herself taking care of Lin Ming in the future, her face flushed red. Although, two women waiting on a single man together was impossible for her...wasn't it? Before ascending to the Realm of the Gods, Qin Xingxuan didn't want to have more intimate contact with Lin Ming.

After the door closed, the atmosphere became ambiguous for a moment.

Large red decorations, red bedding, a large bed, a red curtain of silk; all of this left Mu Qianyu's beautiful face a deep red. She didn't dare to look up at Lin Ming, instead keeping her head down.

Lin Ming also felt a bit awkward. Before this, his contact with Mu Qianyu had been limited to kisses and hugs. Now facing such a passionate situation, a faint thrum of desire and anticipation beat in his heart.

The two sat on the bed, talking to each other for a long time. From their meeting at Thundercrash Mountain to the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction Martial Meeting. From Revered Master Tianguang's birthday banquet to the adventure into the Demon God Imperial Palace, all the way to their reunion at Yin Yang Profound Palace and now finally arriving here at their own wedding.

During this conversation, Lin Ming had unconsciously held onto Mu Qianyu's hands and began to kiss her dewy lips.

The two took this time to roll on the bed. Then, Lin Ming gently untied Mu Qianyu's clothing, revealing her otherworldly body. Her body was completely exposed under the swaying candlelight of the night, a hazy layer of light seeming to caress her.

Mu Qianyu's cheeks turned bright red. She raised her pair of jade-like hands to cover her chest, her heart racing like a frantic drum.

Lin Ming held onto Mu Qianyu, kissing and stroking her warm and soft breasts. At this time, a fire began to blaze in Lin Ming's heart and he slowly separated her flawless legs.

Mu Qianyu's eyes were misty and her long eyelashes trembled as her entire being was immersed in a beautiful spring. It was like she couldn't distinguish between fantasy and illusion until a sharp pain suddenly awakened her from the evanescent dream. As she looked into the face of her most beloved man, she didn't know why, but two teardrops streamed down her face.

She was not bewitched by this love between women and men, but at this moment an everlasting mark had branded itself in her heart. She completely melted into Lin Ming's body.

Happiness…

Satisfaction…

Euphoria…

Exhilaration…

Longing…

All of this mixed in with a slight, pleasantly aching pain, leaving her breathless with joy, unable to think or speak clearly…

……………

……………

……………

……………

……………

On the next morning, the sun had just risen and a light morning mist enveloped the entirety of Divine Phoenix Island, leaving a thin layer of dew over the land.

Lin Ming woke up from his deep and fragrant sleep. As he saw Mu Qianyu snuggled up in his chest, his heart was filled with satisfaction.

Mu Qianyu was a light sleeper. By the time Lin Ming woke up, she had already been awake for a long time. It was just that she was drowning in her shy feelings and didn't want to open her eyes.

As Lin Ming looked at her, a childlike playfulness suddenly came over him. He began reaching for Mu Qianyu's sensitive parts and tickling her. How could Mu Qianyu stand this? She instantly grabbed his hand and jokingly admonished him, "Stop it you naughty boy!"

Lin Ming devilishly smiled. After that night of love, he could already be considered as having been captivated by these feelings.

"Mm, that's right, about that young woman you traded for the white jade key, what sort of special secret is on her? Why would you fight with Wang Yichan for her?"

Mu Qianyu quickly changed the topic as she saw that Lin Ming wanted to play more dirty tricks on her.

As this serious matter was brought up, Lin Ming became more solemn. "I'm not sure why Wang Yichan would fight me for her, but the reason I exchanged the key for her was..."

Lin Ming didn't have any intention of hiding anything from Mu Qianyu. He completely told her of his experiences in the Eternal Demon Abyss. After hearing of this bizarre occurrence, Mu Qianyu was horrified. There was also this sort of matter?

"That's the reason I thought that young girl might be related to the goddess in the eternal Demon Abyss. Let's quickly go and visit her so we can ask her about her life and what the origin of that jade pendant is."

"Alright, then I'll go together with you." Mu Qianyu was about to stand up and put on her clothes, but as she noticed that Lin Ming's eyes were locked onto her body, she blushed a deep red and shyly said, "You put on your clothes and leave first."

Chapter 759 – The Young Girl’s Mystery, the Forsaken God Clan

Chapter 759 – The Young Girl’s Mystery, the Forsaken God Clan

…

…

…

The Eternal Demon Abyss held an infinite charm to the martial artists of the Holy Demon Continent. There were many Emperor powerhouses that would venture into the Eternal Demon Abyss when they lost all hope of making a breakthrough, in a desire to stumble upon a lucky chance within. And, the result was that none of them ever returned. Not even the number one powerhouse of the Holy Demon Continent was an exception.

Even so, many powerhouses held a lifelong desire to adventure into the Eternal Demon Abyss and explore the mysteries inside; this was because that land was far too mystical. There were powerful existences within the Eternal Demon Abyss that would shock anyone!

Lin Ming also had an endless interest in the Eternal Demon Abyss. Before, Lin Ming had also been filled with curiosity towards the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm and the Ancient Phoenix Clan. However, the mysteries of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm had already been revealed.

Because there were far too many people within the Realm of the Gods, there were often branches of sects and families that would move into the lower realms. The branches of the Realm of the Gods’ Phoenix Clan were also no exception; this was the origin of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm.

But as for the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming felt that the land was simply covered by inscrutable mysteries.

He thought back to that massive God Beast in the 1000 mile forbidden zone whose body spanned thousands of miles, and he also thought back to the heart of that Great Emperor which had beat eternally for 100,000 years in the flawless corpse of the goddess that had existed in lifelike slumber for 100,000 years. If these things were truly left over by a side branch from the Realm of the Gods, then that was truly unbelievable.

Lin Ming suspected that perhaps the owner of that beating heart still existed in the Realm of the Gods, and might even be an existence who stood at the peak of martial arts. He might even be an existence that the Demon Emperor or the Sorcerer of the Southern Wilderness' Divine Kingdom could not hope to ever compare with.

Why would such a character appear in the Sky Spill Continent?

Why was his heart sealed within the goddess' body?

Was he dead? Or was he alive?

If that goddess was that Great Emperor's most important person, then why would he leave her alone in that lonely grave in the 1000 mile forbidden zone?

Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu made their way to that mysterious young girl's room. As they pushed the door open they saw that the young girl was dressed in fresh white clothes, her back facing them as she gazed out the window, her hair falling down her shoulders like a cascading waterfall.

Beside the young girl, the bed was still neat and ordered as if she hadn't slept at all, instead having sat at the windowsill all night long.

As Mu Qianyu looked at this young girl's back, she felt an inexplicable pain fill her heart, "Miss, what's your name?"

The young girl turned to look at the two of them, her dark gray pupils flashing with a cold indifference. She didn't speak, instead completely ignoring Mu Qianyu's question.

"She seems to have sealed away her heart and trust in anyone. I have no idea just what she has experienced in her life." Mu Qianyu said to Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. If this were the case, then wanting to find out the truth of her life was impossible at this time.

Lin Ming traced his spatial ring and an azure jade pendant appeared in his hand.

"Miss, do you recognize this?"

As the young girl saw the jade pendant held high in Lin Ming's hand, a change finally occurred in her expression. She subconsciously traced her own chest, feeling that familiar warmth.

The jade pendant was still here… were there two jade pendants?

"You…" The young girl finally spoke. This was the first time that Lin Ming had heard her speak since he first saw her. Her voice was pleasant but had a very peculiar accent that followed it. "Where did your jade pendant come from?"

Lin Ming faintly smiled and put the jade pendant away, "Before I answer your question I need you to answer one of mine first. I would like to know about your life."

The young girl hesitated for a moment, a flash of confusion passing through her dark gray pupils. Then, she whispered, "I… I am from the Forsaken God Clan…"

"Forsaken God Clan?" Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up, "Tell me more."

"We are a cursed clan. We have no surname, no origin. The ancestors of my clan angered the gods and thus the were punished for their sins. Their sins have passed onto their descendants and now onto me. This tattoo seal on my face is the symbol of my cursed bloodline."

"Curse? What curse?" Lin Ming had already noticed the strange tattoo seal on the young girl's face. He had thought it was unusual but he never imagined that it was actually the manifestation of a curse.

"In my clan, right after birth, every span of time we are cursed to suffer an unendurable pain, a pain that torments us to our very marrow. This pain originates from the tattoo seal on our face. As we grow older, this excruciating outbreak will happen less and less, but the time for which it happens will become increasingly long, continuing until we die from pain or commit suicide.

"Only by practicing martial artists would we gain the strength and will of mind to endure and suppress this pain. However, what is sad is that no matter how talented the children of my clan are, they are unable to break free from the chains of their destiny. No matter how high their cultivation reaches, they will one day die to this blood curse."

The young girl's words were completely out of Lin Ming's expectations. He originally thought that a clan related to the goddess of the Eternal Demon Abyss might be a great clan with a glorious and wonderful history. But, hearing the truth from this young girl's mouth, she actually came from the Forsaken God Clan, every generation of her bloodline cursed to eternal torment!

Were they the descendants of the goddess? If so, then how could such a heaven-shaking and powerful goddess' descendant have been reduced to such a pitiful state?

"Do you know who the ancestors of your clan are? Do they have names? What was their history like and how did they offend these so-called gods?"

The young girl shook her head. The past had been far too long ago and the truth of history had been buried in the endless river of time. It was simply impossible to discover the truth of ancient times. "The ancestors have only left us two binding words to guide us..."

“What are they?”

“Continue on!”

As Lin Ming heard these two simple words, he felt his mind shake. Such simple words passed down by these ancestors and yet they seemed to contain a compulsion, an unwillingness to submit. Continue on, continue on, continue on!

Lin Ming looked at this young girl once again, his heart filled with a new trace of awe and respect. This was a truly mysterious clan!

If they truly were the descendants of the goddess, then they had lived under the power of this bloodline curse for over 100,000 years!

Even if the history of their clan had been lost, or even if the glorious past of their clan was buried in the dust, that unyielding struggle with their destiny had engraved itself into their bones, becoming a continuing stubbornness that had followed that bloodline curse, forever running together, side by side!

Lin Min took a deep breath and said, “I also have another question. Why would Wang Yichan desire you?”

After Lin Ming asked this question, the young girl didn’t reply. Instead, she looked at Lin Ming, her eyes solemn.

Lin Ming knowingly replied, “Alright, then I will answer your question first. My jade pendant came from an ancient tomb…” Lin Ming didn’t describe the Eternal Demon Abyss too much. He only spoke of a forbidden zone and how he had chased a corpse devil to an ancient grave site. He completely revealed to this mysterious young girl of how he saw the goddess and heard her summoning call, and even about the existence of that Great Emperor’s heart.

As the young girl heard this she was completely dazed.

She was unable to speak. All she felt was an inexplicable pain swell up in her chest, making it so that she nearly couldn't breathe. She didn't know why, but she felt a deep emotional pain.

Could that goddess in the coffin be the ancestor of her clan?

Just what sort of history had her clan borne? Why did she feel a deep grief from her very bloodline as she heard this story?

Lin Ming silently stood to the side, waiting for the young girl to finish her sentimental recollection and also waiting for her reply.

After a quarter hour, the young girl finally said, "The reason Wang Yichan wants me is because of my bloodline seal…"

Bloodline seal?

Lin Ming's mind stirred. He knew this phrase before from the memories of the Realm of the Gods' Supreme Elders.

The so-called bloodline seal was a special bloodline ability passed down within clans. It was a sort of ability that was only inherited by direct descendants.

In a sense, the affinity with Fire Laws that the Ancient Phoenix Clan had could also be considered a type of bloodline seal. However, it just wasn't special enough.

There were some families and clans that had extremely special bloodlines. For instance, Nether Eyes that could see through all ghosts and illusions, or specialized body transformation techniques that allowed one to willfully utilize every muscle in their body.

The young girl said, "My clan's bloodline seal is an extremely special ability that only manifests in a very small minority of our descendants. And I am one of them. What I can use is a special force field called the Support Sphere."

"Support Sphere?" Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. A domain ability?

“Some descendants of my clan can form a force field in an area, increasing the combat strength of martial artists within. This increases a martial artist’s regenerative ability, speed, defense, attack power, and can even enhance their will, soul force, and perception. As for my Support Sphere, I can use it to increase a martial artist’s speed, attack strength, and will.”

“I see!” Lin Ming was suddenly enlightened. This sort of ability was truly special. This young girl was able to enhance a martial artist’s will, and the essence of a battle spirit was based on a martial artist’s will. The stronger one’s will, the stronger one’s battle spirit. As for that Wang Yichan, he was originally someone who excelled in the aspect of will, so it was natural that he desired this young girl.

The young girl continued, “Wang Yichan captured me and tried to place spells in my spiritual sea. He tried slave seals and all sorts of other tricks. However, because of the special nature of my bloodline seal, everything he tried failed.

“He wanted me to quickly train until I reached a Revolving Core or Life Destruction cultivation and then I could become a great boost to him in battle. However, I was unwilling to become the pawn of others. In these last two years I refused to train at all. My cultivation did not increase even the smallest bit, and instead regressed. Then, Wang Yichan tried to ease the relations between us. He would have me at his side every day and care for me, protecting me, and declaring to all that I was his concubine in order to change my thoughts of him.”

So that’s what happened…

Lin Ming finally understood why this young girl had such a stalwart disposition. He guessed that Wang Yichan was also at his limit. If she were a support to him that he had already raised up, then he probably wouldn’t have given her up no matter what.

“What’s your name?”

The girl hesitated for a moment and then said, “Jue.”

A single name, meaning beautiful jade but with a decisive joining. It was mellow, soft, and yet staunch – fully in line with this young girl's character.

"How old are you?"

"Nineteen."

"Nineteen…" Lin Ming was shocked. At nineteen years of age, she hadn't practiced for two whole years and yet was still at the late Houtian realm. If she did cultivate then she would have already broken through to the Xiantian realm by now. This young girl's talent was far better than what he had imagined it to be. If she had truly been willing to cooperate with Wang Yichan, then the power they could release together in the future would have been immeasurable.

Unfortunately, Lin Ming still hadn't managed to obtain any information from this young girl about the goddess that slept in her tomb.

To him, that goddess remained an eternal riddle.

Chapter 760 – Wood Spirit Jade

Chapter 760 – Wood Spirit Jade

…

…

…

“Xingxuan, Yu’er.”

In Mu Qianyu’s bridal chamber, Lin Ming had called in Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu. As the two young women sat shoulder to shoulder on the bed, their figures complimenting the red silk sheets was far too beautiful to behold.

Several months had passed since Lin Ming killed Xuan Wuji. Lin Ming had momentarily suspended his cultivating, spending a good period of his time meditating on the alchemy techniques left behind by the Realm of the Gods alchemist, as well as spending time with his parents and family. After his marriage with Mu Qianyu, Lin Ming’s thoughts had become bedeviled by the relations between men and women, and he had shared in these sensual pleasures with her every night.

“This is for you.” Lin Ming took out two square crystals from his spatial ring. Every crystal block had two drops of red liquid sealed within. These red drops looked thick and viscous, as if they were crimson pearls.

“What is that?” As Mu Qianyu saw these four drops of red liquid she felt her heart jump. She could clearly feel that there was something extraordinary about these red drops of liquid.

“This is the blood of the Ancient Phoenix.” Lin Ming said.

Hearing these words, Qin Xingxuan was already surprised to the point of being spellbound. As for Mu Qianyu, her eyes were completely wide, a look of astonishment and disbelief coloring her face.

"Blood of the Ancient Phoenix? As in the Phoenix God Beast!?"

"Yes."

When he was still at Timeworn Phoenix City, he had obtained a total of 110 drops of Ancient Phoenix blood. Of these, the first 100 were given to Lin Ming first and then directly absorbed by him.

The next 10 drops were only delivered to Lin Ming several days later. However, he didn't use them because the effects wouldn't be obvious for him anymore.

Thus, it was better for him to give Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan two drops each so that this could greatly improve their physiques.

As for the remaining six drops, he intended to save those for emergencies. For instance, when Qin Xingxuan had exhausted her blood essence at Blood Demon Island, if it wasn't for Lin Ming coincidently having Vermillion Bird blood essence with him, then Qin Xingxuan would have already perished.

"Lin Ming, where did you get this blood of the Ancient Phoenix?" Mu Qianyu asked, short of breath. She had only read of this blood of the Ancient Phoenix in the ancient texts of Divine Phoenix Island. Still, she had always thought that these were legends. She never imagined that this sort of treasure actually existed in the Sky Spill Continent!

"At the king level smelting trial."

"You participated in the king level smelting trial?" Mu Qianyu's large eyes widened even further. When Lin Ming had told her about the smelting trial rules of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, the king level smelting trial had been the highest level possible. And yet Lin Ming had actually completed it!

“Yes, this Ancient Phoenix blood is the reward of the smelting trial.”

“Then you should absorb it!” Qin Xingxuan suddenly said. Mu Qianyu also nodded. The effects of the blood would show their true potential under Lin Ming.

“I’ve already absorbed far too much; a few more drops won’t have much effect.” Lin Ming pointed at the flame mark between his eyebrows, “Don’t you feel it?”

Since Lin Ming first absorbed the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, a faint pressure had always emitted from his body, especially on those martial artists with the Vermillion Bird bloodline. However, Lin Ming normally suppressed this pressure and since his strength was already so formidable to begin with, everyone that was around him often enough became accustomed to it. Thus, Mu Qianyu hadn’t asked any questions.

As Mu Qianyu heard Lin Ming’s words, she wasn’t sure just what expression she should have. That blood of the Ancient Phoenix that was only depicted in the ancient texts of Divine Phoenix Island… Lin Ming had actually said that a few more drops wouldn’t have any effects!?

As Lin Ming saw Mu Qianyu’s thoughts written all over her face, he laughed and said, “Yu’er, in the Realm of the Gods a Phoenix might have a body that spans thousands of miles long. Who knows just how large it is. If all of its blood were taken out then it might be enough to drown a city. What I have here is only four drops, and it is also the most ordinary Phoenix blood; it’s not as if it’s blood essence or something like that. It’s not as exaggerated as you think.”

Hearing Lin Ming speak, Mu Qianyu didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry. “This might not be much to you but it’s a great lucky chance for me. My talent is at the peak of the Saint level and these two drops of Ancient Phoenix blood will be enough for me to enter the Emperor level.

“Don’t speak of this Ancient Phoenix blood. In Divine Phoenix Island, even Vermillion Bird blood essence is enough to make others go crazy. They couldn’t even imagine the blood of the Ancient Phoenix! With these two drops of Ancient Phoenix blood, that is enough for an ordinary talent to become a Saint level talent.”

In terms of talent, it was easier to raise the more mundane one was. For an ordinary talent to become a Saint level talent, all they would need was a single great lucky chance. For instance, two drops of Ancient Phoenix blood.

As for a Saint level talent rising to an Emperor level talent, that would require the accumulation of several lucky chances. In addition, a martial artist would also need to have extraordinary natural talent to begin with.

And above an Emperor level talent, if one wanted to rise to the ranks of Huo Wenlong and Huo Yu, that was even more difficult. At that time, something that might be a great lucky chance to a Saint level talent might only be standard treasure for someone like Huo Wenlong.

For instance, this Ancient Phoenix blood. To a talent like Huo Wenlong, this basically wasn’t a great lucky chance because Huo Wenlong already had an extremely rich Ancient Phoenix bloodline to begin with. Thus, this was something that was basic for him and that he should naturally have. Conversely, it would be a disadvantage if he didn’t.

So even if Lin Ming absorbed another 100 drops of Ancient Phoenix blood, this would only allow him to become a bit stronger. It wouldn’t increase his talent to another level.

Lin Ming’s comprehension of Fire Laws should have been something a genius of his talent level could accomplish. Otherwise, they were lacking to begin with.

“Yu’er, Xingxuan, I’ve already made an appointment with Li Yifeng to go to the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. I leave one month from now. During this journey, I might be gone for several years.”

Of the four Divine Kingdoms, the strongest was the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. They were also famed for their alchemy techniques. Since Lin Ming wished to study alchemy, it was naturally the best choice for him to go to the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom.

Alchemy was an extremely complex skill. In order to refine pills within a furnace it required more than just a variety of spiritual herbs and treasures. There were special materials needed to direct the mixture and also to form the medicinal base.

If he wanted to create high level pills, there was one material he absolutely couldn't do without. That was – wood spirit jade.

Wood spirit jade and Demon God Bones were similar items.

Demon God Bones were formed when the leftover energy field of powerhouses or Saint Beasts was sealed underground, slowly condensing over a period of tens of thousands of years.

As for wood spirit jade, those originated from spiritual woods and herbs that remained unpicked by others and eventually died a natural death. Then, their rich energy and fruits would be buried in the ground for tens or even hundreds of thousands of years before finally condensing into a wood spirit jade.

The former was an animal and the latter was a plant.

Both were formed through similar principles, but there was actually a big difference between the two.

Since Lin Ming wished to study alchemy he needed a massive amount of wood spirit jade. However, this sort of material was extremely difficult to find in the South Horizon Region. Although there was a great amount of wood spirit jade in the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, it was collected by others as a rare resource. With Lin Ming's current finances, buying a small amount to use was no problem. But, if he wished to use a great amount, especially high quality wood spirit jade multiple times, then this was something that even Lin Ming's wealth couldn't support. Not to mention that he didn't have the wealth to support continued use, but the main problem was that wood spirit jade was a material that couldn't necessarily be bought.

Lin Ming had taken inventory of all his belongings. Up until now, the strongest powerhouse he killed was the fourth stage Life Destruction Xuan Wuji. As for the rest of his wealth, the next two with the most resources had been the two helpers of Xuan Wuji that had helped him lay down the great array formation in the deep sea as well as the South Sea Demon Region's Elders. All of these people added together had a wealth equal to that of Xuan Wuji.

In other words, Lin Ming was currently quite wealthy amongst high level Life Destruction powerhouses. However, he was far from being able to compare with a Divine Sea powerhouse.

Of course, this was assuming that Lin Ming didn't sell the heaven-step Demon God Bone or the blood of the Ancient Phoenix. These two treasures were naturally not something that Lin Ming would casually use.

If Lin Ming wanted to go to the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom to find wood spirit jade, it would be impossible for him to purchase it with his wealth. And he couldn't purchase it to begin with since there was no place to do so.

So, Lin Ming could only rely on the rich knowledge inherited from that Realm of the Gods alchemist to seek wood spirit jade and excavate it on his own.

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that every alchemist could also be called a skilled geologist and explorer. In order to look for wood spirit jade, and especially high quality wood spirit jade, one would often have to search hundreds or even thousands of feet underground. A martial artist's perception had problems penetrating underground to begin with, much less the fact that the regions where wood spirit jade existed often had special geological features that interfered with perception.

With these factors combined, an alchemist could only rely on their experience and knowledge to search for wood spirit jade.

For the remaining month, Lin Ming closed up to thoroughly research alchemy techniques. Although the memories of that Realm of the Gods alchemist had been completely etched into his mind, integrating and mastering this information was still a very long and arduous process.

During his research of alchemy techniques, when his mind was fatigued, Lin Ming would take out a Demon God Bone and continue training. After some time, Lin Ming had already gone from the early Revolving Core realm to stabilizing himself firmly in the center.

However, he still had a very long road until he reached the Life Destruction realm.

From Revolving Core to Life Destruction could be considered a large boundary. To a human martial artist, this was the process of their body being transformed and reborn into something new.

Before Life Destruction, that was a mortal body.

After Life Destruction, that was a spirit body.

This sort of transformative process was completely different from the body transformation process of washing the marrow and tempering the body.

Once body transformation was brought to the point of 100% Tempering Marrow with the Eight Inner Hidden Gates opened and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace afterwards, then a martial artist would have a body comparable to a Saint artifact, indestructible and invincible. They could raise their hand to sink the stars and shatter the moon and their roar could kill weaker martial artists.

A spirit body was different. Even though it was a spirit body, the defensive power was still frail and without the protection of true essence it would easily be pierced through by weapons.

The role of the spirit body was to converge the origin energy of the heavens and earth. A Revolving Core realm martial artist could only store true essence in their dantian and meridians. It was also impossible for them to directly absorb heaven and earth origin energy with their bodies. Rather, they had to rely on their many acupoints.

But after Life Destruction, that mortal body would reform from scratch, expelling all impurities and activating every cell so that they could actively absorb heaven and earth origin energy.

Thus, a martial artist with a spirit body completely didn't need acupoints and could use their bodies to absorb heaven and earth origin energy. This meant that a Life Destruction martial artist would have a total true essence quantity several times that of a Revolving Core martial artist. Even their resilience and endurance would greatly increase.

This was also the reason why a Life Destruction martial artist's strength leapt upwards.

If Lin Ming could reach Life Destruction, then not only would he have a spirit body, but he would also be tempered with the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and have a bodily durability equal to that of a treasure. To have both of these benefits was the advantage of dual cultivating in body and essence.

Without noticing, until up until the day that Lin Ming and Li Yifeng's agreed appointment was, Lin Ming still didn't have an understanding of the four Divine Kingdoms. In fact, he didn't even know all of the four Divine Kingdoms' names. To have a guide was wonderful. Not to mention anything else, but there was a trip of millions upon millions of miles to go from Divine Phoenix Island to the four Divine Kingdoms, and there were hundreds of large and small transmission arrays that had to be passed through. Without Li Yifeng's help, passing through these transmission arrays wouldn't be easy.

Chapter 761 – Towards the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom

Chapter 761 – Towards the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom

…

…

…

In the early morning, the sun had not yet risen and Divine Phoenix Island was enveloped in a thin morning mist. Lin Ming bid his farewell to his parents, Qin Xingxuan, and Mu Qianyu, then he brought Demonshine along with him as he followed Li Yifeng and his entourage out towards the four Divine Kingdoms.

In Li Yifeng's group of four, there was Qing'er and the quiet young nun that Lin Ming had seen before, as well as an unusually pretty young boy who wore all white.

This beautiful youth was like Li Yifeng and both of them favored folding fans. However, with just a glance at this youth's pale face, delicate hands, and lack of an adam's apple, it was obvious that this was a woman dressed up as a man.

"You're already acquainted with Qing'er, Brother Lin. As for this young nun, her Buddhist name is Jingchan, and this young sir here is Sir Murong." Li Yifeng introduced Lin Ming to his companions. He grinned as he heavily accentuated the words 'Sir Murong', causing that 'beautiful young man' to squint her eyes.

Lin Ming thought this was funny. In truth, once a martial artist reached a certain boundary it was extremely easy to distinguish between men and women, much less even mortal commoners could tell that this 'Sir Murong' was a girl. Unless one had extremely skillful appearance changing techniques it was near impossible to fool others. Since this ‘Sir Murong’ knew all this perfectly well but still dressed as a man, the only explanation was that she liked this sort of dressing up.

It wasn’t strange for extraordinary young elites to have unusual hobbies like this.

Lin Ming didn’t bother ruining her fun. He cupped his hands across his chest and said, “Young Master Jingyuan, Sir Murong, well met.”

Seeing Lin Ming being so respectful, Sir Murong actually had a rare favorable impression of Lin Ming and cupped her hands in return. As for Jingyuan, she gathered her hands together and spoke some Buddhist sutras.

“Brother Lin, during this journey to the four Divine Kingdoms we will have to travel several million miles. First we’ll go north to the Great Zen Region and then enter the River Region and from there we can go to the Profound Canary Province… although most of this journey will be made through transmission arrays, we’ll still have to spend a month or two in my spirit boat. During this time, Brother Lin may feel free to do as you wish. You can enjoy the scenery or you can close up in training.”

Li Yifeng’s spirit boat was 10 times larger than a normal spirit boat and the interior was lavishly decorated. The tables and chairs were all made of spirit wood and the floors and beds were all covered with rare and precious beast skins. Every room gave off an atmosphere of opulence and grace. It was apparent that Li Yifeng had spent a great deal of time and effort on this spirit boat.

“Brother Li, is your Seven Star Divine Kingdom a great distance away from the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom?”

These past days, Lin Ming had also asked about the basic situation of the four Divine Kingdoms. The four Divine Kingdoms were divided into the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom, Asura Divine Kingdom, and Seven Star Divine Kingdom.

These four great Divine Kingdoms held over a dozen well known and famous Emperor powerhouses. In addition to all those other Emperor level powerhouses that remained hidden in the world, every Divine Kingdom had nearly 10 Emperor level powerhouses, or perhaps even more.

Of the four Divine Kingdoms, the strongest was the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. The Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom was famed for its alchemy techniques and the entire country was rich in wood spirit jade and all sorts of heavenly materials that were useful for alchemy. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that nearly every martial artist within the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom was familiar with alchemy. Even if they weren't an alchemist they would still have some superficial knowledge of alchemy.

Second to the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom was the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom; they were famous for their refining techniques and their lands held all sort of deposits of precious metals and minerals. Within the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom, nine out of 10 martial artists were refining masters. Nearly every inherited heaven-step treasure of the Sky Spill Continent that didn't originate from ancient times came from the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom.

Coming in third was the Asura Divine Kingdom. They were a relatively isolated and independent Divine Kingdom. Although they were far weaker than the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom and the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom, this was mainly due to the fact that there weren't any special resources located within their borders. The Asura Divine Kingdom was a land of mostly demonic path martial artists and the social customs within were considered quite barbaric. In fact, publicly killing someone on the streets couldn't be considered uncommon or exciting.

And last of all was the Seven Star Divine Kingdom. They too didn't have any special resources, causing the development of their Divine Kingdom to be greatly limited. The Seven Star Divine Kingdom was well known for their array formations, but no matter how strong array formations were, they were still auxiliary skills. In terms of enhancing a martial artist's cultivation, they were naturally inferior to the mass production capabilities of alchemical techniques.

“Brother Lin wishes to go to the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom?” Li Yifeng wasn’t too surprised to hear of Lin Ming’s request. The Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom was known as a land with abundant treasures and lucky chances around every corner. Every year, a massive number of martial artists would sojourn to the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom in hopes that they would stumble upon some divine heavenly treasure that would allow them to ascend into glory with a single leap. However, the areas that were fraught with lucky chances were all under strict control; Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom wouldn’t easily allow outsiders to obtain them.

Even so, a great number martial artists still came to experience the varied martial Holy Lands of the Sky Spill Continent.

“That’s the plan. I want to go to the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom to look for some wood spirit jade.” Lin Ming honestly said. There wasn’t anything to hide and if he spoke with Li Yifeng, perhaps this Prince might even know some channels he could access.

“Wood spirit jade?” After Li Yifeng heard this his eyes brightened, “So Brother Lin was also a lover of jade, hm!”

Li Yifeng said. Then, he swiped his spatial ring and took out a foot long wooden square box. As he opened this box, a very light but pure wood origin energy suddenly emerged. As Lin Ming peered within, he could see four pieces of rough-looking irregularly-shaped green stone. They seemed to be uncarved jade stones; without a doubt, these were wood spirit jades.

In addition, beside these four rough pieces of wood spirit jade was also an exquisitely carved jade horse. The material used to create this was also wood spirit jade.

“A jade horse carved from wood spirit jade?”

Lin Ming was startled. Within the memories of the Realm of the Gods’ Supreme Elders, there were many recollections of wood spirit jade carvings, accessories, utensils, and so forth. Lin Ming had only glanced over these things. After all, these sorts of artistic treasures didn’t have much use in one’s martial arts cultivation. What he cared about had only been alchemical techniques from the Realm of the Gods.

He never thought that the wood spirit jade carvings within the Realm of the Gods would also exist in the Sky Spill Continent.

“Haha, this jade horse of mine is quite good, right? I spent a sky high price to win this at an auction. This is an ancient treasure carved by an expert from 10,000 years ago!”

Li Yifeng puffed up, full of pride and wanting to show off to Lin Ming. He obviously held an inordinate amount of love for this jade carving.

But at this moment, a discordant voice suddenly stuck its foot in, “Li Yifeng, I can’t believe you used a great amount of the Divine Kingdom’s spirit essence stones to secretly buy a wood spirit jade horse! I will report this matter to Sir Shangchen!”

Lin Ming looked up, seeing that the one snappily speaking was that ‘Sir Murong’. He couldn’t help but chuckle in his heart. A spirit essence stone was a type of spirit stone even better than true essence stones for cultivation. A low-grade spirit essence stone’s value was about approximate to a top quality true essence stone.

Li Yifeng’s smile froze on his face, “You fake Murong tomboy! If you mess with me I’ll bring you down with me!”

“Humph, the spirit essence stones that Sir Shangchen gave you were for you to cultivate, not for you to buy toys!” Murong argued back.

“Who said that wood spirit jade can’t be used for training? A wood spirit jade carving is certainly expensive as an accessory, but it also has the effect of enhancing the soul. The further one’s cultivation is the more important the role of the soul is! Someone like you simply couldn’t understand this!”

What Li Yifeng said was quite true; wood spirit jade was indeed a good material for enhancing the soul.

Besides being used in alchemy, wood spirit jade could also be absorbed by a martial artist for training. However, because wood spirit jade was based in wood origin energy, only a wood-attribute martial artist could use it. Otherwise, using wood spirit jade for training would simply be a waste.

Even if one didn't understand alchemy, a martial artist that wasn't lucky enough to be of the wood attribute could also carry around the wood spirit jade by their side. Gradually, the rich wood origin energy of the wood spirit jade would permeate into the martial artist and nourish their soul.

However, wood spirit jade in its most basic form was rough and craggy; there were many people that didn't feel too well carrying something so ugly and unbeautiful by their side all the time. Thus, the skill of carving wood spirit jade slowly spread, and the art of carving this material became increasingly refined and elegant. Now, there were even some martial artists that carried around wood spirit jade carvings to accessorize, not even purchasing them with the intention of helping to nourish their soul.

"Stop with your loquacious sophistry. If you wanted to help nourish your soul then carrying around a piece of uncut wood spirit jade would be just the same, you don't need to carry around such an expensive jade horse. I will make sure to report this matter to your superiors." Murong said with a haughty indifference, a serious light on her face.

"Peh, whatever, I'm too lazy to bother with you..." Li Yifeng had a look that he didn't want to waste his time arguing. Then, he suddenly swiveled around towards Lin Ming, his eyes lighting up, "Haha, Brother Lin, if you like wood spirit jade then let me take you to some famous city squares that specialize in wood spirit jade later so you can open your eyes!"

Li Yifeng obviously held a great understanding of the wood spirit jade market, and immediately began speaking to Lin Ming of several vast wood spirit jade city squares, detailing the advantages and disadvantages of each one. Then, after making great flourishing motions about everything, he finally circled back to his own beloved jade horse.

"Look at this jade horse. The exquisite carving details stem from the hands of a carving grandmaster called Xuan Can. As for the jade, it comes from 250,000 year old ancient river wood spirit jade!"

The older wood spirit jade was, the higher quality it would be and the more expensive it would be. Wood spirit jade had a special characteristic; it was able to independently absorb wood origin energy from the heaven and earth origin energy of the world and use this energy to vitalize itself. Thus, although wood spirit jade would slowly lose some of its origin energy over time, this rate was drastically slowed due to its ability to supplement itself. In addition, as more time went on, the wood origin energy within the wood spirit jade would become increasingly pure in quality.

Lin Ming didn't care who this Xuan Can was, nor did he have any interest in ancient river wood spirit jade. But, what he could confirm was that this carved jade horse in Li Yifeng's hands was at most 120,000 to 130,000 years old.

It seemed that Li Yifeng had been suckered by someone.

The truth was that being tricked like this was also normal. It was very difficult to judge the age of wood spirit jade, and even experienced alchemists would make mistakes. The general population probably wouldn't even be able to distinguish between true and fake wood spirit jade. There were experts out there that could use wood-attribute spirit essence stones and some wood spirit jade powder to create fake wood spirit jade that was nearly impossible to distinguish from the real thing.

"Brother Li, could I have those raw wood spirit jade ores?" Lin Ming had no intention of revealing to Li Yifeng that he had been scammed. After all, it was fine as long as he was happy about his purchase, and Li Yifeng might not believe him to begin with.

The reason Lin Ming asked for these raw stones was because he wanted to try his hand at alchemy. He had already studied alchemy techniques for a very long time, and besides trying low level recipes that didn't require wood spirit jade, Lin Ming hadn't yet tried to refine a high level pill.

“Brother Lin wants this raw ore? No problem!” Li Yifeng readily nodded. He liked wood spirit jade, but that was only wood spirit jade carvings. As for that ore, in Li Yifeng’s eyes it was no different to spirit essence stones.

Chapter 762 – White Dragon Jade Row

Chapter 762 – White Dragon Jade Row

…

…

…

"Thanks. What is the price on this ore? I'll give you the equivalent market price amount." Although Lin Ming had planned on searching for wood spirit jade, the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom was still an extremely vast region. Moreover, many wood spirit jade-rich locales had been locked up by the authority of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. If he wanted to search for his own wood spirit jade then he would need a massive amount of time. If so, then it was best for him to buy as much as he could with his current wealth.

"Brother Lin couldn't be planning on studying alchemical techniques, right?" Li Yifeng saw that Lin Ming wasn't a wood-attribute martial artist, then the more likely reason he would want wood spirit jade like this would be to practice alchemy techniques. Normally, once a martial artist reached a certain boundary, it was common for them to study several auxiliary skills in order to help temper their soul. For instance, Li Yifeng himself studied array formations.

"That is my intention."

Li Yifeng whistled, "Whew, Brother Lin, you just started studying alchemy techniques and you already want to use wood spirit jade?"

Lin Ming laughed out loud, not explaining further.

He understood what Li Yifeng was trying to say. After all, he was only 21 years old so he couldn't possibly have studied alchemy techniques for too long. And, something like alchemy required the accumulation of experience and repeated failures. A newcomer to alchemy would have a very low chance of success, and wanting to practice creating high level medicines was simply a pipedream. And with wood spirit jade being so rare and valuable, using it to train up one's skill was simply far too luxurious.

How could Li Yifeng have known that Lin Ming had interested the complete memories of a Realm of the Gods alchemist? These memories included alchemy skills, experiences, and all sorts of recipes. Lin Ming had already thoroughly integrated most of this knowledge together, and now his success rate for creating low level medicines was already very high.

But in that Realm of the Gods Supreme Elder's memories, there were far too few recipes that didn't require wood spirit jade.

"Brother Lin, if you wish to try, then I can gift you a piece." There were pieces of wood spirit jade ore. Although they weren't low in value, Li Yifeng was still able to give out a piece of two.

"We'll go with the market price." Lin Ming didn't want to owe favors to anyone.

The two of them pushed back and forth for a bit, and finally, Li Yifeng listed the price for the four pieces of wood spirit jade. As Lin Ming heard this, he was actually shocked. Altogether, these four pieces of wood spirit jade were 600 spirit essence stones.

A low-grade spirit essence stone's value was equivalent to a top grade true essence stone's, which was the same as over a million low-grade true essence stones.

600 spirit essence stones were worth more than 600,000,000 low-grade true essence stones. When Lin Ming had dug up the buried treasure of the third-grade Moon Seizing Sect, besides some pills and 12 Shattered Heart Demon Crystals, there were also around 7000 to 8000 medium-grade true essence stones. If those were all traded in, that wasn't even enough for one million true essence stones.

The entire buried treasure deposit of a third-grade sect wouldn't even be enough to buy a small lump of wood spirit jade. Lin Ming also estimated that Li Yifeng was quoting him a price on the lower end. To a character like Li Yifeng, not to mention a low-grade spirit essence stone, but perhaps even a medium-grade spirit essence stone didn't mean much to him.

Like this, 600 top grade true essence stones disappeared. Not accounting for the treasures that Lin Ming hadn't exchanged for spirit essence stones yet, Xuan Wuji's wealth had shrunk by 10%.

If things continued at this pace, then Lin Ming would be broke in no time.

'Do I really have to sell that heaven-step Demon God Bone?'

As Lin Ming thought about this, he walked into his own room and began to start his first alchemical recipe using wood spirit jade.

The memories of that Realm of the Gods alchemist had been extremely complete without many holes. His skill, technique, and experience in alchemy had been incomparably profound and complex, far more complex than the inscription techniques Lin Ming had learnt before. If it wasn't for the fact that Lin Ming's cultivation had rapidly risen since then, wanting to study these alchemy techniques would have been nothing but a dream within a dream.

It required a massive amount of resources to raise an alchemist. The reason that nearly all of the alchemists in the entire Sky Spill Continent were concentrated in the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom was that they had adequate resources.

In other words, they were filthy, disgustingly, sickeningly rich.

And putting aside the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdoms, the other three Divine Kingdoms probably couldn't produce a top class alchemist. This was because the consumption of resources was too high; the gains weren't equal to the losses. Also, their alchemy technique inheritance was far too lacking.

But for Lin Ming the alchemy techniques he studied were on an unbelievably higher level than what any alchemist grandmaster of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom could ever hope to reach.

If it were said that the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom needed to use 100 jin of wood spirit jade to train an alchemist grandmaster, then for Lin Ming to study alchemy by himself might require several thousand jin of wood spirit jade.

This estimate already included the fact that Lin Ming had inherited the foundation of Realm of the Gods' alchemical techniques as well as an immeasurable amount of experience.

What he wished to refine was miracle medicines capable of opening the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. The lowest level materials for these types of medicines would be ingredients like the profound gold divine fruit and other such heavenly materials. As for the requirements of wood spirit jade, not only did he need quantity but he also needed quality. In the memories of the Realm of the Gods Supreme Elder, top medicines frequently required top quality wood spirit jade that was aged for several million years, or even tens of millions of years.

This had already surpassed the understanding of any alchemist within the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom.

....

A month later, Lin Ming and the group made their way through countless large and small transmission arrays, finally arriving at the central region of the Sky Spill Continent. As Lin Ming looked down from his spirit boat, he saw that right beneath him was actually a vast and desolate desert.

“Are we close to the four Divine Kingdoms?” Lin Ming asked, a bit stunned. In his imagination, the four Divine Kingdoms were incomparably lively lands with grand Holy Lands everywhere. But currently, they had been flying through a seemingly endless desert for days now. And before this desert there had been nothing but more deserts upon deserts.

“Haha, we are indeed, we’re almost at the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom.” Li Yifeng had already guessed what Lin Ming was thinking. He continued, “Don’t look down on this desert below us. This area is called the Thatch Region. West of here is the Northwest Great Desert, which is also Wang Yichan’s domain. The Thatch Region is a place where good and bad exist, with bandits and desert pirates everywhere. The reason for this is because there is wood spirit jade produced here, and this area also isn’t under the jurisdiction of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom.”

“I see!” Lin Ming was suddenly enlightened. Hundreds of thousands of years ago, or perhaps even millions of years ago, this desert beneath them had once been a great and lush forest with incomparably rich origin energy and all sorts of heavenly materials growing within. However, because of various geological changes, the spirit veins had withered away and the forest had eventually turned into a desert. The spirit trees and spirit plants had also been buried underground over the passage of time, slowly becoming a land filled with buried wood spirit jade.

Li Yifeng sighed as he reminisced over the past, “For this desert, there have been countless wars fought with rivers of endless blood flowing over the land. Ultimately, no one was able to take sole control of this land and thus it became a free land where all the major powers entrenched themselves. There are also a great number of wood spirit jade transaction sites here with all sorts of wood spirit jade carvings and accessories. These items change hands all the time; that is, this place is a sinkhole for a massive amount of spirit essence stones!”

Wood spirit carvings and accessories had to have a history of several thousand years as well as stemming from the hands of a famous craftsman in order to earn the recognition of being called an ancient jade treasure by someone like Li Yifeng.

The Realm of the Gods alchemist had several memories related to these things. In fact, that alchemist had actually been a wood spirit jade carving grandmaster. Carving wood spirit jade was also a method for alchemists to exercise their focus and precision, helping them in a small way to temper and perfect their own soul.

That Realm of the Gods alchemist had also collected a massive amount of ancient carvings and accessories. Of course, these treasures had a history of at least 60,000 to 70,000 years, with some being hundreds of thousands or even millions of years old. It was far from anything that the Sky Spill Continent could compare with.

“Brother Lin, I’ll take you to a place today. This is a good place, with far too many good things inside! I will take you to open your eyes!” As Li Yifeng spoke of that place his eyes began to fill with excitement.

“Okay.” What Lin Ming needed the most now was wood spirit jade. He certainly wouldn’t refuse going to such a place.

“That’s right, don’t tell that Murong about this, it will just be us two brothers going. That Murong is really about to pester me to death.” Li Yifeng’s words held a very familiar tone to them. Martial artists would generally refer to each other as ‘brothers’ as a sign of politeness, but this Li Yifeng seemed to treat Lin Ming as if they were really brothers.

A day later, Li Yifeng’s spirit boat stopped at a small city in the desert. After no resting well for an entire month, he decided to have a good night’s rest here and also search for a chance to throw off that annoying Murong. Li Yifeng brought Lin Ming and Qing’er to make seven or eight circles around the entire city before finally coming upon a humble and common-looking stone building.

From the outside, this stone building didn’t have a single sign. There were only four words written above the building door – White Dragon Jade Row.

After entering the stone house, Lin Ming finally realized that there was something peculiar going on here. The interior space was much larger than he had imagined, and the furnishings were a bit… crude. Everything seemed to be formed from the rough rocks of the desert. The stone tables and stone chairs seemed to be hewn apart by a saber without even being polished down.

At the side of the room was a stone table with some tea set aside for guests. And on the other side of the room were rows upon rows of wooden shelves. Every shelf had a variety of jade carvings and accessories placed upon it, ranging from as high as a foot to as small as a ring. The collection of items was dazzling and diverse.

In front of these shelves was a middle-aged man wearing a leather hat. The man had a sturdy build and there was a thick scar on his face. It was unknown just what sort of beast skin his clothes were made from, but his collar was opened wide and his sleeves were far shorter than his arms. His clothes had heavy-looking metal buttons on them, each of them as large as a baby's fist.

This sort of clothing had a very rugged and barbaric flavor to it; it matched very well to the desert around them.

As the scarred man saw Li Yifeng approach, he immediately smiled in welcome, "Sir Li! No wonder I heard that lucky magpie call from the gates earlier; it seems that I have honored guests visiting today." The scarred man looked rough and cumbersome but his mouth was thick with honey – it was obvious he was skilled at kissing ass. Then he took on a tone of business and asked, "Is Sir Li here to buy something today? We have just unearthed a pair of ancient bracelets, would Sir Li like to take a look at them?"

Hearing the scarred man's attentive introduction, Li Yifeng's eyes brightened. His interest had really been stirred up. "Good, let's take a look."

Just as Li Yifeng's voice fell, another group of people walked in from outside. The man in the lead wore a yellow embroidered dragon robe and he had a pair of green balls in his hands that he was constantly rubbing together.

These balls were actually made from wood spirit jade.

"Isn't that the great Sir Li? Hahaha, I never thought that I would stumble into you here at the White Dragon Jade Row. This is truly serendipity. Are Sir Li's hands itchy and wanting to buy some little souvenirs from here?” The yellow dragon-robed man faintly smiled. From the tone of his voice he obviously came from some great and influential power.

Li Yifeng frowned as he saw this man arrive. It was obvious that he and this man were not on friendly terms.

Chapter 763 – How To Make Money

Chapter 763 – How To Make Money

…

…

…

This yellow dragon-robed man was Zhou Kun, the second son of Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom's Iron Wood High Prince. At one point, he had been a powerful candidate to be the successor to the Iron Wood High Prince.

Within the Divine Kingdoms, the successor of the High Princes were decided in a different method from in the mortal countries. In those mortal counties, they took the eldest son of the wife as the successor. However, in the four Divine Kingdoms, the title of successor belonged to whoever had the greatest degree of talent.

A few years ago, Zhou Kun had a very strong limelight on him. But after struggling to become the successor, he finally lost to his younger fourth brother. Since then, he had been keep a very low key presence and had rarely been seen in public.

In terms of status, Zhou Kun was naturally far inferior to Li Yifeng. Although the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom's national strength was far higher than the Seven Star Divine Kingdom's, Zhou Kun was only a failed son who couldn't even become the successor to the High Prince. As for Li Yifeng, he was a true Prince of the Seven Star Divine Kingdom, so he was by far higher ranked than Zhou Kun.

Although his status was not comparable to Li Yifeng's, Zhou Kun had no intention showing Li Yifeng due respect. When both of them were in their youth they had entered into a mystic realm together. Because they stumbled upon the same lucky chance at the same time, they had engaged in a brutal battle with each other. From that point on, that enmity had continued all the way to now.

Zhou Kun also loved collecting wood spirit jade carvings. Since he often came to White Dragon Jade Row to purchase items, it was normal for him to bump into Li Yifeng here.

“Hehe Brother Li, how come I don’t see your future imperial consort, ‘Sir’ Murong? I heard that ‘Sir’ Murong has been keeping a tight rein on you. After coming to this White Dragon Jade Row, aren’t you afraid that ‘Sir’ Murong will complain about you? I wonder if Brother Li will be punished to sit on the naughty chair and face the wall to reflect on your faults?”

As Lin Ming listened to Zhou Kun’s words, it was obvious that he knew that the crossdressing Miss Murong was actually Li Yifeng’s future wife. But as for Zhou Kun, he lingered on the word ‘Sir’ every time, obviously mocking Li Yifeng’s future wife’s strange choice of clothing.

Just as Zhou Kun finished speaking to Li Yifeng, Qing’er finally became angry, “Zhou Kun, have you taken the wrong medicine today? I heard that ever since you lost the position of successor you’ve devolved into a rabid dog that’s been biting whoever he sees. It’s none of your business what my family’s Big Sister Murong does or where she goes!”

Qing’er was an unruly smart mouth to begin with. While she acted like a proper girl in front of Li Yifeng, she was still not willing to eat a loss from others and the words that came tumbling out of her mouth after spoke could be especially poisonous.

Zhou Kun originally wanted to say more but his mouth was directly plugged up by Qing’er’s words. What she said had truly stuck at all his sore points, pointing out all his flaws. In his entire life, being defeated in the battle to become successor was his life’s greatest setback and frustration.

Zhou Kun’s complexion sank and he coldly humphed, no longer saying anything further. It wasn’t that he was afraid of Qing’er but he was only disinclined to argue with a mere maid. If they truly began to verbally spar then Qing'er's reputation wouldn't matter but his own would suffer.

At this time, the scarred man stepped in between them as a mediator. "Fellow sirs and misses, everyone here are high level characters of the four Divine Kingdoms. Let's all take a step back and enjoy the brighter future together!"

The scarred man laughed. He was also taking particular notice to this quarrel. If two guests fought with each other then it would be helpful to him for raising prices. But, if this tussle went too far off the ledge and no one gave each other face, then he definitely wouldn't benefit here.

"That's right Knifescar, I heard that you just said there was some good stuff a while ago. Hurry up and let me have a look!" Zhou Kun impatiently said as he waved his hand. Qing'er's words right now had made him feel very uncomfortable.

"Great! Fellow sirs and ladies, please enjoy and take a look around first!" The big fellow Knifescar respectfully said to Li Yifeng and Zhou Kun. However, he didn't bother paying attention to Lin Ming or Zhou Kun's entourage. It was obvious that he regarded Lin Ming as one of Li Yifeng's followers.

"Everyone feel free to look. Every item has a number beneath it and a corresponding price in this jade slip." The big fellow Knifescar said as he waved a jade slip in his hands. In Jade Row, the private price was not made public. If a curious visitor came in to just take a look then the manager wouldn't even bother telling them the price or would make up a sky high price to drive them away. It was only when a true customer came in that the manager here would write out the true price from the jade slip and give it to the customer.

"Brother Lin, let's just take a look around. Most of the things here are fake, so if you're thinking of buying something it's best that you don't, lest you suffer a loss."

"Fake?" Lin Ming asked, stunned.

"Yes. These are the unspoken rules of the Jade Row. In the Jade Row, there are seven fake items to every three real items. And sometimes there are even nine fake items to every one real item. If you were to go outside and take a look in the stalls instead then perhaps every item there might be fake. If you really want to ensure that what you buy is real then you can only go to a great auction house. But, the price at a great auction house would be much more expensive than here!"

So that's how it was... Lin Ming was speechless. He never thought that even though the Sky Spill Continent and the Realm of the Gods were two completely different levels of existence, there was an astonishing number of similarities. In the Realm of the Gods, most of the wood spirit jade carvings were fakes. If one wanted to buy a true wood spirit jade carving then they could go to an auction house, but the price would simply be too high. Thus, many people were willing to go to shops to gamble their luck to make purchases, willing to accept the repeated losses.

The rules of the Jade Row were that all purchases were willing; if someone bought a fake item they could only blame themselves.

Li Yifeng sighed and shook his head, "These old things are sold at astronomical prices and the profits are corresponding highly. But, the fact is that these imitation goods aren't cheap either. If I can't look past them to see if they are real or fake, then all I can do is blame my own sight. Several years ago I bought a wood spirit jade folding screen. I thought it was the work of a grandmaster call Xuan Jiong from 20,000 years ago, but the reality was that I tricked myself. Because of this I was forced to face a wall in confinement for an entire year, so that Zhou Kun is only using this matter to insult me."

As Li Yifeng spoke, he also used his perception to carefully examine the wood spirit jade carvings. One of the special features of wood spirit jade was that it was able to shield against perception. Even a Divine Sea Supreme Elder could give up any idea of piercing through wood spirit jade by even a half inch with their perception.

Li Yifeng released his perception. He was only able to casually touch the surface of the wood spirit jade and feel through the its texture, luster, and quality of the years. In addition, he also scrutinized the engraving style and painting style of the wood spirit jade. Every grandmaster had their own unique style that they applied to their works. But, there were also no lack of imitation masters, so identifying the truth was easier said than done.

Li Yifeng had played around with wood spirit jade carvings for several years so he had a great deal of experience in these matters. As he examined these works he also explained to Lin Ming on the side, “After a wood spirit jade has been carved, it will absorb wood-attribute origin energy every year and slowly form a fine hair-like texture on the surface. This texture is extremely difficult to sense… and there are even some supremely skilled experts that can reproduce this texture – these people are usually wood-attribute martial artists. They can use the wood-attribute energy within their own bodies and leave behind a similar fine hair-like structure on the wood spirit jade, to the point where even a master can’t distinguish between that and the real deal. For instance, this dragon carving… I’ve come to see it several times already and yet I just can’t make up my mind about it…”

As Li Yifeng said this, he bitterly placed the dragon carving back on the shelf. As Lin Ming saw Li Yifeng’s appearance, he couldn’t help but ask, “How many spirit essence stones is this dragon carving?”

“3300!” Li Yifeng let out in a single long breath. Even though if Li Yifeng could burden such a price, he still felt pained in the flesh to do so.

“So expensive!” Lin Ming gulped. After Xuan Wuji died he had left behind around 6000 top grade true essence stones. In addition to all the other treasures combined, if they were completely reduced into top grade true essence stones that would still only be around 20,000-30,000. If he were to use all that wealth to buy this carved dragon, then he would go broke once he bought seven or eight of them!

This was the entire wealth of a fifth-grade sect’s ruler.

Compared to the four Divine Kingdoms, the South Horizon Region truly was some remote backcountry.

As Lin Ming thought of this, an idea suddenly popped up in his mind. He asked Li Yifeng, “How about at an auction house? If this dragon carving were to be auctioned off, how much would it sell for?”

“A bit more than this.” Li Yifeng extended five long fingers.

“5000?”

“Yup! You could auction it for around 1700 more than this price, and after deducting the different auction house fees you’ll still have around a thousand remaining. Of course, all of this depends on whether you can determine what you choose is real or not!”

So this was how it was! This was an excellent method of gaining spirit essence stones!

Lin Ming’s eyes brightened. He had originally neglected that Realm of the Gods alchemist’s carving skills and identification abilities. But now, it seemed that they had had an extremely important function. It could certainly help to solve his lack of spirit essence stones.

If he could buy at a low price and sell at a high price, then he wouldn’t need to spend time personally looking for wood spirit jade.

Lin Ming immediately transferred out the memories of that Realm of the Gods alchemist and began to meditate on them, thoroughly contrasting it with what he knew.

The memories of the soul fragment were not like lines of text in a book.

No matter how much textual knowledge he had, if he didn’t practice it then it was wasted.

But, the memories of the soul fragment contained a massive amount of personal, hard-earned experience. That was the Realm of the Gods alchemist’s total accumulated training for a period of over 10,000 years. There were countless experiences identifying countless items and collections. As long as Lin Ming could fully integrate all of this knowledge into himself, then his identification ability would rise to ridiculous heights.

Even if he could only achieve a 40 to 50% standard for a Realm of the Gods alchemist, that was still enough to deal with any problems in the Sky Spill Continent. After all, the most ancient wood spirit jade carvings wouldn't be older than 70,000 to 80,000 years old. This was because after the ancient catastrophe of the Sky Spill Continent, the rise of the martial arts world here only began 70,000 to 80,000 years ago.

Li Yifeng looked through three or four collections, taking an hour each time to examine them.

After looking for such a long time, Li Yifeng still didn't buy anything. Still, manager Knifescar wasn't nervous. To a martial artist, several hours could be just the time spent on some light meditation; it couldn't be considered much at all.

Beside Li Yifeng, Lin Ming had actually closed his eyes and seemed as if he had entered meditation. In truth, he was rapidly fusing in those Realm of the Gods alchemist's memories concerning wood spirit jade carvings. He definitely didn't want to give up this chance of easily getting rich. In order to practice alchemy techniques, he not only needed wood spirit jade but also a massive amount of precious and rare materials. Relying on what he plundered from the South Sea Demon Region and Yin Yang Profound Palace was far from enough.

"I say Brother Knifescar, hurry up and show me the new stuff. All of these things on the shelves are either new imitations or old dubious items that no one has bought for several years. If you have anything new that just arrived then bring it out so we can take a good look and open our eyes."

Most of the things here were purchased by the Knifescar fellow from the bandits in this region. Since he bought them at a low price they were naturally sold at a low price too. All of the good items only took several days to sell to others, so what was left over was what others could only call ambiguous goods.

Thus, Li Yifeng asked the Knifescar fellow to take out the new goods.

“Hehe, I do have some things. What I have here is a pair of newly excavated ancient jade bracelets. These are the burial goods of ancient Emperors!” The Knifescar fellow was going to take these things out anyway, but had he wanted to wear down Li Yifeng’s patience by having him look over the old items first. Then, his interest in the new items would greatly increase. This was also a form of marketing.

As Zhou Kun heard the Knifescar fellow say this, his interest was also piqued. He laughed as he walked over and said, “What is there? Take it out so I can open my eyes too.”

Chapter 764 – Ancient Jade Bracelet

Chapter 764 – Ancient Jade Bracelet

…

…

…

As Li Yifeng saw Zhou Kun stick to him like melted candy, he thought little of it. Shopping here all depended on one's own ability to begin with. Daring to buy or not, daring to match the price or not, everything would depend on one's eyes and courage.

When Li Yifeng first became obsessed with wood spirit jade carvings, he had bought fakes and he had bought counterfeits.

In the world of wood spirit jade carvings, fakes and counterfeits were two different things.

A fake was something new disguised as something old, made with wood spirit jade.

As for counterfeits, those were not made from wood spirit jade, but rather wood-attribute spirit essence stones. A wood-attribute martial artist at the Revolving Core realm or even the Life Destruction realm would use their inner energy to transform the spirit essence stone and then integrate a small amount of wood spirit jade powder within.

Counterfeit wood spirit jade formed by an expert was difficult to distinguish from the real deal. Let alone a novice who was just getting started, even masters who had been in the business for years would easily be tricked if they were inattentive for just a second.

In the traditions of Jade Row, new fakes disguised as old treasures was part of the business. However, selling counterfeit goods as the real thing was a matter of ruining their reputation and they would have to pay the customer 10 times the price in compensation.

This was because what they sold wouldn't be jade. If they sold counterfeit goods then they couldn't be called Jade Row.

Li Yifeng had paid a great amount of money in order to touch upon the gate of identifying wood spirit jade. From the start when all he made was losses, to the present where it was small losses, to the future where he would make small profits, and then beyond that to great profits, that was what he planned.

Of course, Li Yifeng played this game not for money but because he was purely interested in it. It was no different from a mortal that loved gold and gems. Within the four Divine Kingdoms, there were far too many martial artists that loved wood spirit jade. In particular, female martial artists. If they had a set of real wood spirit jade jewelry then not only could it help nourish their soul, but they could also illuminate their own beauty and charms. Wood spirit jade was a high class luxury good desired by all noble daughters of every Divine Kingdom.

"You must all be thirsty after looking for such a long time. First, let's drink some tea." The Knifescar fellow clapped his hands together. Suddenly two slender and beautiful young girls came sashaying out, their bodies covered in only a thin layer of fine gauze as they carried a set of teapots, cups, and tea stoves. The two young girls placed down the tea set and then threw blatant flirtatious glanced at Li Yifeng and Zhou Kun. From underneath that faint light veil that covered their bodies, one could clearly make out two dark red spots on their chests.

Zhou Kun laughed out loud and groped the chests of the two young girls. As for Li Yifeng, underneath Qing'er's contemptuous gaze, he managed to stay well-mannered and polite.

"Sluts!"

Qing'er spat out in irritation as the two young girls stepped back. The two young girls were martial artists to begin with and their hearing was very keen. Although they heard Qing'er's words, they didn't mind it at all. Instead, they giggled and looked back at Qing'er, a great sense of sly provocation clouding their faces.

This was the style and vigor of the desert. The men were rugged and the girls were openly sexual. Even the diet was greatly different. For instance, this pot of tea. Although it was called tea, the truth was that it seemed more like soup. There was butter and shredded vicious beast meat added in, as well as a number of seasonings.

Lin Ming took a single sip and nearly gagged; the smell of meat was unbearable. The once delicate fragrance of the tea was completely overpowered and mixed in with the meat, making it impossible to taste. Lin Ming couldn't bear to take a second sip. Truly, this was quite difficult.

Li Yifeng glanced straight at him and laughed. He was obviously aware of this tea's taste and hadn't made a single move towards it.

As for Zhou Kun, he drank the tea with great gusto. Lin Ming was speechless; this fellow really had peculiar tastes.

"Well, let's start then." As the Knifescar fellow saw Zhou Kun drink his cup of tea, he clapped once more. The two beautiful serving girls returned, causing Qing'er to adopt a ferocious expression.

The two young girls each held a tray in their hands that was covered with red silk.

The first tray was unveiled, revealing a green smoking pipe. There were martial artists that liked to smoke, although what they smoked wasn't ordinary tobacco, but rather a variety of shredded spiritual plants with the characteristics of tobacco. There were some high quality mixes that cost one or two spirit essence stones for each use.

To smoke such shredded spiritual tobacco naturally required a good smoking pipe. A wood spirit jade smoking pipe was originally filled with wood-attribute energy itself. It could fuse with the special tobacco, making it even more fragrant, and even providing an effect of nourishing the soul.

“This is a wood spirit jade smoking pipe made 5000 years ago. The craftsmanship is superb, and the price is 1300 spirit essence stones. I won’t speak further about it. Guests, please take a look for yourselves.”

The Knifescar fellow held the wood spirit jade smoking pipe up.

Lin Ming looked at it. The first thing he investigated was not the year that smoking pipe was carved in, but rather the material it was made from.

From the texture of the wood spirit jade to the fluctuations of wood-attribute energy, he slowly discerned all of this and more.

‘13,000-14,000 ninth-grade wood spirit jade; the quality isn’t too bad either.’

Wood spirit jade had different measurements for its value. One of these was age. The longer that wood spirit jade existed, the more valuable it became. Wood spirit jade also had a grade; a high grade was even more important than the age of the wood spirit jade.

For example, wood spirit jade formed by a buried Demon Heart Flower would be several grades lower than wood spirit jade formed from a 10,000 Year Nirvana Dragon Root. But, the wood spirit jade formed from a 10,000 Year Nirvana Dragon Root would be several grades lower than a wood spirit jade formed from a profound gold divine fruit.

The grade of the spiritual plant that was the origin of the wood spirit jade was the most important factor in its quality.

After looking at the wood spirit jade’s quality, Lin Ming began to judge the year the smoking pipe was carved in. The luster was a bit dim, and there were some faint sparks of color like bits of fluorite were mixed in. This was a special gloss formed from trace metal impurities on the surface of the wood spirit jade over several thousand years of time.

Based on this alone, as well as pure energy of the wood spirit jade, Lin Ming determined that this smoking pipe should be around 4000-5000 years old.

It seemed as if this Knifescar fellow wasn't lying after all.

After a quarter hour, Li Yifeng and Zhou Kun both stopped their appraisal.

"I want that smoking pipe." Zhou Kun said.

Li Yifeng hesitated for a moment, not speaking. If he spoke then the price would increase.

Although he was 70-80% sure that this smoking pipe was real, if he put it up at an auction house, the most he could receive was around 1700-1800 spirit essence stones. After deducting the auction fees, he would have less than 1500 left over. For a mere 300 spirit essence stones he would also have to take a significant risk. There really wasn't much worth in doing this, especially since he didn't smoke so he had no interest in the smoking pipe itself.

The Knifescar fellow looked at Li Yifeng with hope in his eyes. As he saw that Li Yifeng had no intention of bidding, he was unavoidably disappointed. Still, he had bought this smoking pipe for 800 spirit essence stones. Making over a 60% profit in a single exchange was quite good.

In White Dragon Jade Row, all transactions were completed on the spot. Zhou Kun immediately put out 1300 spirit essence stones and bought the smoking pipe.

"Hehe, the first item was just an appetizer. This second item is the real deal! I guarantee that both of you will love it!" The Knifescar fellow said with relish. Then, he pulled the silk cover off of the other young girl's tray, revealing a pair of bright crimson blood jade bracelets.

"This is..." Li Yifeng's eyes lit up. "Blood spirit jade?"

Zhou Kun was also delighted. Blood spirit jade was an extremely rare form of wood spirit jade.

Oftentimes, a top heavenly material would have a vicious beast or Saint Beast protecting it. These beasts would be drawn in by the rich origin energy released by the spiritual plant, and would remain by its side, protecting it until it matured and ripened to the point where it could eat it up.

But sometimes there were accidents. For instance, if the spiritual plant's origin energy was too strong, then after the vicious beast that protected it swallowed it down they wouldn't be able to withstand the surge of origin energy. Their meridians would tear and their organs would cook until they finally exploded in a bloody death.

Afterwards, this vicious beast would be buried underground together with the spiritual plant. Generally speaking, this sort of vicious beast was normally at a very high level. The energy and blood essence of the vicious beast would slowly and subtly seep into the wood spirit jade, forming the rare blood spirit jade.

This sort of peculiar wood spirit jade was 10 times or even 20 times more valuable than regular wood spirit jade.

If this pair of jade bracelets was really made of blood spirit jade and also had a history of several thousand years behind it, the price would be inestimable.

Li Yifeng and Zhou Kun each took a bracelet and rapidly identified its characteristics. Both of them were completely absorbed in their task. For a wood spirit jade collector, the rarer an item was, the easier their interest would be aroused.

Even Qing'er, who didn't care much more wood spirit jade to begin with, was filled with interest towards these two blood spirit jade bracelets.

Lin Ming silently watched from the side, allowing his perception to touch over the bracelets for a long time. There was a beautiful ruddy color, it was filled with energy, and the quality of the jade itself was extremely high. From all aspects it seemed to be real blood spirit jade. However, Lin Ming actually felt a faint death energy coming from the jade.

Death energy?

Although blood spirit jade was formed from dead things, after tens of thousands of years that death energy should have faded away by now. Unless...

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then said to Li Yifeng, “Let me have a look.”

Normally speaking, in order to fully appraise something, one had to use all their senses. They had to look, feel, touch, ask, listen, and smell.

Looking was to use the eyes, feeling was to use one’s perception, touching was to touch with one’s hands, asking was to determine whether or not what the owner said was true, listening was to hear the sounds it made, and smelling was to smell the faint scent it emitted.

True wood spirit jade had an extremely, extremely faint wooden smell. A grandmaster could even use this sort of fragrance to approximate the age.

It was impossible for Lin Ming to identify whether or not this jade bracelet was real or fake with just looking and feeling it.

Li Yifeng carefully passed the blood spirit jade bracelet to Lin Ming. In truth, having one’s valuable reverie time interrupted by someone wasn’t pleasant at all. However, Li Yifeng didn’t comment on this. Since it was Lin Ming it was alright, even if he knew that Lin Ming didn’t know anything about wood spirit jade carvings and just wanted to join in on the fun.

Lin Ming touched the blood spirit jade bracelet and smelled it. He already made an approximate judgment. The jade bracelet wasn’t smooth. There was an extremely delicate sandy texture to it; all of this was in line with true blood spirit jade. However, when he smelled it, he had sensed an incomparably faint fragrance of blood. This nearly imperceptible smell was concealed by the maker using an ingenious method. If one wasn’t prepared in advance then it would have been impossible to discern it.

This was not blood spirit jade but corpse jade. The so-called corpse jade was when wood spirit jade was used as a funeral object and sealed into the mouth or stomach of a freshly-buried martial artist. After over 10,000 years of time, the blood of the martial artist would permeate into the wood spirit jade, forming corpse jade.

There were only minor differences between corpse jade and blood spirit jade. Moreover, once it was processed and transformed by the collaborative efforts of a martial artist skilled in corpse techniques and a wood-attribute martial artist, the final product was nearly indistinguishable from real blood spirit jade.

This sort of method was extremely rare. Because corpse jade itself was already rare, many appraisal grandmasters that weren’t prepared would also be tricked by this.

After another two hours of appraisal, Li Yifeng laid down the jade bracelet. His eyes flashed with excitement. He was 90% positive that this blood spirit jade was the real deal. Beside him, Zhou Kun had also finished his own appraisal, his eyes flashing with an avaricious gleam. Although his expression was somewhat vague, his movements seemed as if he only reluctantly put down the jade bracelet. It seemed as if he were especially tempted by the jade bracelet.

Chapter 765 – Bid

Chapter 765 – Bid

…

…

…

"How about it? Do you two young sirs have any interest? This is something unearthed from the grave of an ancient Emperor; it has a history of at least 10,000 years!" The Knifescar fellow happily said as he saw that the two young men were intrigued.

This jade was indeed a treasure unearthed from an ancient grave, but it was unknown whether or not it came from the tomb of an ancient great Emperor.

At that time, even the Knifescar fellow wasn't sure about the identity of these two jade bracelets when he received them from the man who dug up the grave. Finally, he had to ask the Great Elder of White Jade Dragon Row to appraise the items for him, finally determining that it was a 10,000 year old corpse jade and ended up purchasing it for 2000 spirit essence stones.

Corpse jade was also a valuable type of jade. Although it wasn't rare or precious like blood spirit jade, it was still more expensive than normal wood spirit jade carvings.

With such a rare and clever method used to disguise it, the Knifescar fellow had 120% confidence that everyone would believe his words.

"How many spirit essence stones?" Zhou Kun asked.

"12,000!"

The price that the Knifescar fellow suddenly broke out with was a profit of five times the cost. If this pair of jade bracelets was really crafted from blood spirit jade, then it could absolutely sell at an auction house for 25,000-30,000 spirit essence stones. The price that the Knifescar fellow listed was already extremely low.

But this was still 12,000 spirit essence stones. Even if it were Li Yifeng or Zhou Kun, they both still had to deliberate and then deliberate some more. This was not a small amount.

The two eventually switched jade bracelets, examining them once more. This continued appraisal lasted for another two hours. No matter how he looked at it, these ancient jade bracelets were the real deal.

The fine hairs left on the jade bracelet were absolutely formed over 10,000 years. Although this texture could be faked, it was actually impossible to do so in such a perfect manner that seemed to be in complete conformity. Moreover, the texture and wood spirit jade had formed a faint blossoming fog and a gradual gradient of color that was impossible to fake no matter how ingenious one's methods were.

The two remained silent. The Knifescar fellow wasn't anxious. He waited there, smiling, his eyes flashing with a cryptic light.

From the start until now, he had never said this was blood spirit jade. In truth, this didn't matter. The unspoken rules of Jade Row stipulated that there were real and fake items here; everything was voluntarily bought. If someone was tricked then they could only blame their vision for being poor. No one could come back and complain unless Jade Row had truly sold counterfeit jade.

Li Yifeng and Zhou Kun may have had high ranking identities, but they also complied with these unspoken rules. Moreover, if White Jade Dragon Row could open they must have many supply channels and also considerable forces supporting them from behind the scenes.

Just because the Knifescar fellow bowed and sucked up to every guest didn't mean that he was afraid of them.

"12,000. I'll take it." After remaining silent for half an hour, Li Yifeng firmly spoke as he licked his slightly dry lips.

He had fully confirmed that this was a treasure from 10,000 years. However, what he didn't know was that this wasn't blood spirit jade, but corpse jade.

Although corpse jade was very rare, this sort of thing had a very grim and ominous reputation. There wasn't a noble lady out there that was willing to wear something that had been sealed in a corpse for 10,000 years. If this pair of corpse jade bracelets was to be auctioned off in an auction house, they would sell for 5000 spirit essence stones at the most.

After someone started with a price it was easier for others to pile on. Zhou Kun stretched out his hand and said, "I'll add 500; 12,500!"

The two bidding against each other was certainly the scene that the Knifescar fellow wanted to see the most. He smiled and said, "Sir Li, Sir Zhou has offered 12,500… would you…"

"13,000!" Li Yifeng raised the price by another 500.

As Qing'er heard this, she gripped her chest in fear, "Young Master…"

"It's fine, I have 90% belief in myself."

There were always risks involved in purchasing these jade carvings. Even appraisal grandmasters had moments where they would make monumental mistakes, sinking everything they had ever worked for. However, if one didn't want to take risks then they could simply go to the auction house. Not only would it be more expensive, but they would never become an appraisal master of ancient jade carvings. They could also become lovers and collectors of ancient jade carvings, amateurs that knew nothing about ancient jade.

Only by fighting out and struggling in these places where fakes were mixed in with the real items could one become a true master of their field.

“13,500!” Zhou Kun refused to be outdone. But, even for him, putting out such a massive amount of spirit essence stones strained his finances to the limit.

“14,000!” Li Yifeng shouted at nearly the same time. But at this time, Lin Ming’s true essence sound transmission sounded in his ears. After he heard it, Li Yifeng’s expression suddenly changed.

Lin Ming said, “I felt a very faint death energy coming from the jade. I wonder if Brother Li also felt the same thing?”

“Death energy?” Li Yifeng’s heart jumped. As he investigated the jade bracelet a bit more, he frowned again. Although Lin Ming had mentioned this point, Li Yifeng simply didn’t have much understanding into an unorthodox treasure like corpse jade. For now he hadn’t managed to associate them. Or rather, it should be said that as someone who had never seen a corpse jade himself, he could never think of this possibility to begin with.

“14,500!” Zhou Kun shouted out a higher price, blue veins on his forehead bulging out. If this price went up any more then he wouldn’t be able to bear it. Although his total wealth amounted to 50,000-60,000 spirit essence stones, the vast majority of that was fixed in his possessions and properties; he didn’t have that many spirit essence stones on him.

“Sir Zhou has made a bid of 14,500... I wonder if Sir Li...” The Knifescar fellow respectfully said even as his heart blossomed with joy. If he managed to sell this pair of bracelets then his profit would be enormous. After he deducted the portion for the forces behind White Dragon Jade Row, it would be enough for profits to last them a year or two.

Li Yifeng wasn’t sure whether or not he should shout out a higher price. At this time, Lin Ming’s true essence sound transmission sounded out more. Lin Ming thought that his one reminder to Li Yifeng was enough for him to understand, but it seemed as if he had overestimated his jade-loving new friend too much. “Brother Li, I have a bad feeling about this pair of jade bracelets. Please be cautious if you wish to purchase them.”

Feeling?

Li Yifeng was startled. He didn't believe in some illusive thing like people having a magic sense. If it were an average person speaking to him then he would have disregarded them as speaking nonsense.

However, Lin Ming was not an average person. Since Li Yifeng had known Lin Ming, he had felt as if Li Ming was covered in a hazy fog that he couldn't pierce through; he had simply never been able to understand him at all.

After hesitating for a long time, Li Yifeng finally suppressed the desire in his heart to make another bid. 15,000 spirit essence stones really was too high, and Lin Ming's continual two warnings had made him doubt his own judgment.

If these things really weren't what he thought they were, this his losses would be far too great.

"Sir Li, you..." The Knifescar fellow looked at Li Yifeng with hope in his eyes. Zhou Kun also glanced over at Li Yifeng nervously. If Li Yifeng increased the price again, then he wouldn't be able to bear it.

Li Yifeng hesitated for a bit long and then finally let out a long sigh. He shook his head and said, "I give up!"

To a collector of ancient jade carvings, giving up on a piece of jade that they had taken a liking towards also required a great deal of determination and courage. Li Yifeng may have grit his teeth and given up on the bidding, but a trace of dismay and sadness inevitably remained in his heart.

The Knifescar fellow was slightly disappointed. If Li Yifeng had continued to raise the price then his own profits would have been that much higher.

Zhou Kun let out a long breath of relief, his palms wet with sweat. That was a close call! If the bid were any higher then he really wouldn't be able to bring out that many spirit essence stones.

“Then… congratulations to Sir Zhou for obtaining this pair of jade bracelets!” The Knifescar fellow brightly smiled. He took up the jade bracelets from the beautiful young girl’s jade plate and then placed them into a special wood box before handing everything over to Zhou Kun. Zhou Kun also silently paid out 14,500 spirit essence stones.

Li Yifeng watched the two complete their transaction and envy bloomed in his heart. He couldn’t help but think that it would have been better if he had just stuck it out.

Once Zhou Kun successfully obtained the pair of jade bracelets, he laughed and then smiled as he looked towards Li Yifeng, “Many thanks to great Sir Li for declining in such a humble manner. Sir Li should have many spirit essence stones. Perhaps you’re worried that you would be reported by ‘Sir’ Murong to your family? If you really spent 15,000 spirit essence stones, then I fear you might have to face the wall in confinement for 150 years, hahaha!”

Before the transaction was completed, Zhou Kun didn’t dare to antagonize Li Yifeng too much. After all, Li Yifeng’s family background was greater than his. If Li Yifeng really went red with rage then he would end up being the one to suffer.

But none of that mattered now. Since he had already obtained what he desired, Li Yifeng could go crazy all he wanted.

Li Yifeng had been feeling a bit sad to begin with because he couldn’t buy the item that he fancied, but now after being mocked again by Zhou Kun, he was furious. Still, he considered himself quite calm as he derisively said, “Zhou Kun, don’t be so happy with yourself. You don’t even know if what you have is real or fake. Be careful that you won’t be able to even afford your pants tomorrow.”

“Haha, I think Brother Li knows well enough if what I bought was real or fake! In our field of interest there are certainly risks, but if you don’t dare to go all out even if you have a 90% assurance in yourself then you might as well go home and play with your kids!” Zhou Kun laughed, mocking Li Yifeng once again. Zhou Kun had played in the field of jade carvings for so many years that he could appraise them with 80-90% certainty. Otherwise, he never would have put out such an enormous sum of money.

At this moment, the Knifescar fellow said, “Sir Li, Sir Zhou, let us all cool down here. Everyone that comes to my White Dragon Jade Row is an honored guest. Sir Li, although you might not have managed to buy up that pair of jade bracelets, my store still has many other treasures. If Sir Li has a liking for any of them then buying them is still the same.”

The Knifescar fellow had managed this store for enough years to know the ways of the heart. Although it seemed he was mediating this little quarrel, the truth was that he was taking advantage of a time when Li Yifeng was drowning in rage to sell him more goods. A customer was more likely to buy things if they were impulsive and emotional.

At this moment, Zhou Kun said, “Brother Li is so rich. Still, it seems he’s managed too tightly by that manly woman of his. He might not necessarily be able to buy anything here.”

The Knifescar fellow wanted to praise Zhou Kun’s mocking words. In fact, he wanted to hug Zhou Kun to death. Not only did he give him a nearly 13,000 spirit essence stone profit, but now he was also agitating Li Yifeng to buy other things.

Qing’er coldly said, “Humph, our family’s Big Sister Murong reins in our Young Master because our Young Master has a promising future! You think he’s like you, someone who failed to become a successor? Who even gives a shit about you now? You’re nothing but a lump of cow poop plastered on the wall!”

Qing’er’s words were not common poison. She normally didn’t curse, but as soon as she did she would stab at all their sore points.

After Zhou Kun heard he, his face turned blue.

Li Yifeng laughed out loud. He was an open-minded fellow to begin with. Although that matter just now had left him a bit depressed, he wouldn’t let it hang in his mind.

He grabbed Qing'er's waist with a hand and said, "Okay, I'll choose some good things today to bring back lest I return empty-handed! Brother Lin! Would you also like to take a gamble at this game of chance?"

Li Yifeng was only thoughtlessly speaking to Lin Ming. He didn't expect Lin Ming to faintly smile and nod.

"Alright. I'll choose some things. I'm feeling quite lucky today."

Chapter 766 – Swindled

Chapter 766 – Swindled

…

…

…

“Brother Lin,in White Dragon Jade Row, most of the items on these shelves are fake. Normally speaking, 80-90% of the good stuff has already been taken away, and the rest is either fake or ambiguous things. Brother Lin, if you really want to buy to something then just pick a few small pieces so that you’re happy. Don’t try to go for anything too expensive.”

As Li Yifeng saw that Lin Ming really was intending to buy some things, he couldn’t help but remind him of the dangers here. If he were an appraisal grandmaster then he could help Lin Ming out, but as someone who was at the most basic level, he didn’t have much confidence that he could identity these ambiguous goods.

“Brother Li, rest assured that I have a fair idea of what I’m doing. Also, shopping should be a happy occasion.”

“Haha! Well said! Happiness is priceless! Although this sort of jade carving hobby is more looking than buying, that still doesn’t mean we should just drag our feet around and eye things all day!” Li Yifeng said, then directing Lin Ming towards that wood spirit jade dragon carving that he had asked about before. It was 3300 spirit essence stones.

Li Yifeng had come before and looked at this dragon carving several times already. Yet, while he truly did like it, he just couldn’t make up his mind about it so he never dared to buy. But, he decided to take advantage of today and directly pick it up.

As Lin Ming saw Li Yifeng pick up the dragon carving he felt a bit helpless for his friend. He had seen this dragon carving and someone had explained that it was a work from a grandmaster that lived a thousand years ago.

Lin Ming couldn't judge if this really was the work of that grandmaster, but what Lin Ming could judge was the year this was crafted. It was an imitation treasure created no more than 100 years ago.

He cautioned. "Brother Li, I have a feeling about this dragon carving..."

"A bad feeling?"

"A bit."

"It's fine. Your brother me has already wanted to buy this dragon carving for some time now. But, I just haven't been able to do it. It's as you said: buying things should be for our own happiness. If I return empty-handed today then it will be difficult for my thoughts to remain smooth. So if I buy this carved dragon and it ends up being some sort of fake, I'll still recognize it as okay."

Since Li Yifeng had said this in such a happy manner, Lin Ming naturally didn't say anything further.

Lin Ming glanced at the Knifescar fellow and saw that his grin was as wide as a smiling Buddha's. He had done enough business today that gold was spilling out of him; of course he would be happy.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. He walked towards the shelves and started choosing a jade carving.

He currently still had 6000 top grade true essence stones from Xuan Wuji. In addition to the wealth from the other Life Destruction powerhouses he killed, he had around 14,000-15,000 top grade true essence stones. Lin Ming planned to use the majority of these to purchase jade carvings.

If this was the case, he naturally wanted to buy the expensive goods.

“Seventh grade wood spirit jade, 300,000 years, this is quite the good material.” Lin Ming looked at a two foot high Buddha in front of him. This kind of wood spirit jade was considered to be quite good. According to his estimates, the price of this definitely wouldn’t be low.

As the Knifescar fellow saw Lin Ming looking at the jade Buddha, he smiled in greeting. He thought that Lin Ming was only Li Yifeng’s follower, but it seemed that he was Li Yifeng’s friend instead. Naturally he would treat him nicer now.

However, as he noticed Lin Ming’s stance as he examined the jade carvings, it was obvious that he was even newer than a newbie. Normally, an appraisal expert would take several quarter hours looking at a jade carving, even touching and smelling it.

But, Lin Ming would look at a jade carving for an incense stick of time at most. Sometimes he would reach out and touch them, but most of the time he would just glance over them. What could he possibly see?

Thus, the Knifescar fellow had recognized Lin Ming as a novice.

This sort of know-nothing normally would normally never buy anything unless they were an absolute fool. Otherwise they would waste several thousand spirit essence stones without even knowing if the wood spirit jade carving they bought was real or fake.

Thus, the Knifescar fellow didn’t take Lin Ming as a customer. He only smiled at Lin Ming to give face to Li Yifeng. “That jade Buddha has lot number 45; the price is 5000 spirit essence stones....”

The Knifescar fellow shook the jade slip containing the prices in his hand and directly quoted the price to Lin Ming. He wanted Lin Ming to quit while he was ahead so that he wouldn’t waste anyone’s time here. Normally, when an amateur heard such a high price they would simply give up. After all, they didn’t understand anything and had only come to join in on the fun anyway.

So even if this wood spirit jade Buddha in front of Lin Ming was the real deal that could sell for at least 8000-9000 spirit essence stones at an auction house, the Knifescar fellow wasn't nervous at all. He would bet his toes that Lin Ming wouldn't be interested I this item.

Let alone Lin Ming, even those martial artists that bragged they were appraisal experts still hadn't bought it in these past two years. That jade Buddha seemed so ambiguous; just who would dare to buy it?

The price was so high to begin with, and it lacked a trace of pale cold light that a real ancient jade Buddha statue would have. It was inevitable that anyone would hesitate after looking at it for a period of time. But in truth, it wasn't everything real object that had this sort faint blue light.

With all these reasons combined, the Knifescar fellow never imagined that Lin Ming would look so taken in by this wood spirit jade Buddha. Lin Ming repeatedly traced his hands over it and said, "It looks quite good. My mother likes to worship Buddha. I'll buy this for her; she should enjoy it."

The Knifescar fellow thought that he had heard wrong. Did this boy have a fever? Just because his mother liked to worship Buddha, he would actually gift her a treasure worth 5000 spirit essence stone? The hell? Was this for real?

It wasn't just the Knifescar fellow that was shocked, but even Li Yifeng was frightened. "Brother Lin, don't joke around. This jade Buddha is so sketchy; are you sure you want to buy it?"

A 5000 spirit essence stone jade Buddha was a very high priced item within the inventory of White Dragon Jade Row. If Li Yifeng were to buy it he would have to consider this over and over and over again for fear that he made a mistake. But, Lin Ming hadn't even take an incense stick of time before he decided to buy this jade Buddha. This sort of behavior could only be described as....completely idiotic.

What Jade Row loved the most was too see rich fools. They would casually buy whatever they wanted, whether it was real or fake. But, according to Li Yifeng's understanding of Lin Ming, Lin Ming was an extremely talented individual that would never do something stupid. He also wasn't too rich either, so just what was going on here?

"Hehe, congratulations Brother Knifescar, you just ran into a wealthy kid! You're rich now!" Zhou Kun grinned from behind Lin Ming. His words seemed to be in a jovial tone but he was obviously mocking Lin Ming's stupidity.

However, as the Knifescar fellow heard Zhou Kun congratulate him, he actually felt bitter in his heart. This jade Buddha was not excavated by others but instead came from the inventory of the White Dragon Jade Row Headquarters. It was one of the better treasures in his store. If he really had to sell it for 5000 spirit essence stones then he would lose money on that transaction.

"This little brother, do you happen to know the rules of our Jade Row? There are both real and fake items here, and everything you buy depends on your own vision and willingness to do so. Once you make a mistake and regret your purchase, there are no returns." The Knifescar fellow hoped that Lin Ming didn't understand the rules and would give up after hearing this. But, he didn't think that Lin Ming would instead slightly nodded, indicating that he was well aware of all of this.

"Great! Then I'll wrap it up for you!" The Knifescar fellow tried to appear as elated as possible like had had just made a killer profit and Li Ming would instead feel uncertain at heart. But, Lin Ming simply nodded without hesitation, making the Knifescar fellow feel as if his heart was being ripped out.

This boy shouldn't be playing a pig to eat a tiger, right!?

Li Yifeng couldn't help but be a bit afraid for Lin Ming. "Brother Lin, are you sure about this? This is a 5000 spirit essence stone item!"

"I know, that's why I want it. Shopping should be for our own happiness. Wrap it up."

Li Yifeng opened and closed his mouth several times before ruefully smiling and saying, “Ok. In any case, if it’s Brother Lin then even if you spend all your spirit essence stones you’ll be able to quickly gain them back again.”

The Knifescar fellow endured the bitter pain in his heart as he wrapped up the jade Buddha. He kept his smiling face as happy as possible. However, just as he finished wrapping it and was securing the package, he nearly fell on his face as he saw that Lin Ming had picked up a viridian incense burner and was tossing it about.

This incense burner was also one of the real items here. It’s value was less than the jade Buddha, but it could still be sold for 7000-8000 spirit essence stones at the auction house!

This was also something that was brought down from Headquarters to stock the store. This boy, he couldn’t be wanting to purchase this incense burner, right? Then his White Dragon Jade Row would really suffer a loss! In the jade slip, this incense burner was only marked at 4500 spirit essence stones. If he sold it then he would have to make up the difference to Headquarters!

In order for Jade Row attract guests, the marked prices were all relatively low. As for the true treasures of the shop, if they were swept up by someone then it would be difficult for his Jade Row to continue operating.

“This boy just bought a 5000 spirit essence stone item...he shouldn’t buy anything again....” The Knifescar fellow held out on this hope. However, Lin Ming’s next sentence crushed that Knifescar fell’s hopes to bits.

Lin Ming looked at the jade slip with the prices and said to the Knifescar fellow, “Wrap this up for me too.”

The Knifescar fellow only felt everything go dark around him for a moment, almost fainting. His heart trembled and he maintained the brightest smile that he could as he said, “You want this? This viridian incense burner is carved from ancient 8000 year old river jade; the craftsmanship is excellent and it clearly stems from the hand of a famous expert. If you sold it in an auction house it could go for as high as 8000 spirit essence stones! Brother Lin truly has good judgment; let me wrap this up for you!”

Although the Knifescar fellow seemed euphoric, his pace while wrapping up the item was astoundingly slow. He was hoping that Lin Ming would change his mind during this period of time. However, Lin Ming had already started looking at a third item.

On the sidelines, Zhou Kun laughed as he said, “What a mess, I’ve never seen such a mess before! That jade Buddha has been on the shelves for three years already and no one dared to buy it; this boy is too amazing!” Zhou Kun vigorously patted the Knifescar fellow’s shoulders. “Brother Knifescar, you really made a killing today! You should treat us out!”

“Treat, of course I will treat you!” The Knifescar fellow said. Even though his intestines painfully twisted together he still maintained a vibrant expression as if he had made a massive profit.

“Brother Lin, if you really plan on buying some things to play around with then it doesn’t need to be here. I can take you out to look at some stalls. The price is cheaper and there fundamentally shouldn’t be too much of a difference.” Li Yifeng suggested.

The things in the stalls outside were purely to swindle others; it wasn’t even 99% fake, but 100% fake. They were all counterfeit fake goods crafted from wood-attribute spirit essence stones.

However, sometimes there would be 1-2 vendors who would put out a precious treasure without being able to recognize its value. Li Yifeng had also visited countless stalls in the past, and the chances of this occurring was the same as being struck by thunder.

“Brother Li, I know what I’m doing.” Lin Ming said with a true essence sound transmission. He held a new fancy looking item I his hands, but as he glanced over at the Knifescar fellow that Knifescar fellow’s face had gone completely hideous.

F*ck! He had been swindled!

Chapter 767 – White Dragon Jade Card

Chapter 767 – White Dragon Jade Card

…

…

…

This new item in Lin Ming's hand was also a true treasure that could sell for 7000-8000 spirit essence stones in an auction house. This was something that the Knifescar fellow had received 20 years before in a small town of the Thatch Region. Although it didn't cost much, he still wasn't willing to sell it to Lin Ming for a higher price.

The White Dragon Jade Row was known to have seven fakes for every three real treasure items. But the truth was that it couldn't even match up to eight fakes for every two real treasures. Now, Lin Ming had continuously picked three real treasures in a row. Moreover, they were some of the top ranked items of the White Dragon Jade Row. Just how could there be such a coincidence in this world?

"Sir Lin, I could have never imagined… You're so young and yet you're an appraisal prodigy! The play that I put on in front of everyone must be laughable to an expert like you!" The Knifescar fellow said with a true essence sound transmission, still maintaining a smiling face.

Lin Ming faintly smiled in return and looked up at the Knifescar fellow. "Brother Knifescar, what are you trying to say? Are you saying there are any problems with the jade carvings I'm purchasing?"

Lin Ming already knew the answer to his question. He had been planning to buy both fakes and real items together, but Lin Ming's finances were limited. If he bought some fake items, then he wouldn't be able to afford the most expensive real ones. Plus, buying small fake items along with the most expensive real ones was merely him acting like an idiot, burying his head in the sand as he tried to fool this Knifescar fellow.

Thus, Lin Ming didn't bother to conceal his intentions at all. This was a one-time transaction, after all, and he didn't plan on returning to the White Dragon Jade Row in the future. If he ever came back, he feared that he would actually be asked to leave before he even went through the door. Since he was here today, he might as well take advantage of the fact that two great customers, Li Yifeng and Zhou Kun, were both here. Now, the Knifescar fellow couldn't refuse to sell to him, nor could he ask Lin Ming to leave.

"Sir Lin, let's not waste our time with these games. If you really did think there was a problem with any of these items then would you really spend over 10,000 spirit essence stones on a gamble? Today I will admit that my punishment is deserved, but that item in your hand is the last item that I can sell to you. My White Dragon Jade Row has its own rules and I can only blame my bad luck for being unable to realize that a Supreme Elder has visited my shop today. I also hope that you will consider my reputation here, and won't push me to the edge. After all, my White Dragon Jade Row is open for business in this Thatch Region where both good and bad people are mixed up. We won't allow anyone to bully us here."

Since the Knifescar fellow said that much, Lin Ming no longer put on an act. "I apologize. Things are a little tight for me at the moment. Once I leave White Dragon Jade Row, I will be sure to withdraw. But, Brother Knifescar, you've also gained over 10,000 spirit essence stones. The value of these items I take away should only be around 18,000 spirit essence stones. Brother Knifescar should still have a hefty surplus profit.

Lin Ming's few words set off a storm in the Knifescar fellow's mind. This meant that Lin Ming had realized that the blood spirit jade from before was a fake. Thinking about it, it must have been Lin Ming who stopped Li Yifeng from increasing the price.

The Knifescar man had studied those bracelets for three whole days and still could not be sure about their authenticity. Finally, he had to got to a Great Elder from the Headquarters to appraise the item. But Lin Ming had only looked at it and touched it for a bit before realizing that it was fake. This meant that his vision was at least three points higher than any of the Elders in the Headquarters!

And thinking about it even more, when Lin Ming had chosen those three items several moments before, he had picked up the three most valuable ones from the pile of ambiguous treasures. This had made the Knifescar fellow extremely shocked.

Just who was this young man?

If he could walk together with Li Yifeng, and from the way that Li Yifeng treated him as an equal peer, it could be assumed that this young man surnamed Lin was not ordinary in the least. Still, he had never heard of him before. It was as if he had simply appeared out of thin air.

“I must say I admire Sir Lin’s eyesight. May I inquire into Sir Lin’s given name, and whether or not Sir Lin would like to join my White Dragon Jade Row Headquarters as a guest appraisal master?” If the Knifescar fellow had hated Lin Ming to the bones because he had swept up his three most expensive treasures, then all of that hatred had now disappeared. In the world of ancient jade carvings, appraisal grandmasters were existences respected by all. It was an extremely rare and valuable opportunity to bring a collection to a grandmaster and obtain his advice, and Lin Ming was already skilled enough to have reached this level.

“I’m sorry, but I must cultivate and I don’t have much time,” Lin Ming said, openly declining this offer and not even giving his name.

This made the Knifescar fellow feel extremely regretful; he had wanted to become friends with Lin Ming after all, or at least to develop good relations. But thinking about it, Lin Ming was bound to have some kind of extraordinary background, and would not necessarily wish to enter their White Dragon Jade Row.

“Since Sir Lin says so, then I won’t ask anymore. This is our Jade Row’s sound transmission card. If Sir Lin is interested at any time, then please come to my White Dragon

Jade Row to have a look.” All of the Knifescar fellow’s words had been spoken with true essence sound transmission, except for these last words. He took out a viridian jade card with a lifelike Azure Dragon embossed onto the back. This was the White Dragon Jade Row’s engraving.

Lin Ming was startled as soon as he received this jade card. This card was actually made of wood spirit jade. Although it did not require much material and although it was an extremely low grade of wood spirit jade, it was still remarkable. This sort of jade card could not be randomly awarded, otherwise even the White Dragon Jade Row would be unable to bear the costs.

As the Knifescar fellow passed the jade card, Zhou Kun was watching all of it. This immediately sent him into a fit of laughter, “That’s the White Dragon Jade Card! I’ve come to the White Dragon Jade Row for several years before receiving one! Congratulations to Brother Knifescar for finding another golden goose! This is giving such face to Brother Lin here!”

In Zhou Kun’s opinion, Lin Ming was too great of an idiot. The first time here he had already delivered up over 10,000 spirit essence stones to the White Dragon Jade Row! This must have been the reason why the Knifescar fellow issued Lin Ming a White Dragon Jade Card, all in order to tie up this great golden goose.

Golden goose?

The Knifescar fellow did not know what expression to make. In fact, the actual golden goose was the laughing fool. Comparing Lin Ming to Zhou Kun… The Knifescar fellow did not know whether to laugh or cry.

The Knifescar fellow glanced at Zhou Kun and thought to himself, “Many thanks to a fool like you for buying that pair of so-called blood spirit jade bracelets to fill up my losses for today, otherwise I really would be in trouble.”

“Should I call you a tycoon, Sir Lin? Since you’ve already bought three ‘treasures’, do you not plan on buying any more?” Zhou Kun asked Lin Ming with zest. Today there were two wonderful events that had happened. First, he had obtained a precious treasure for a low price, and secondly he had watched as others were being tricked into buying expensive fakes.

Lin Ming faintly smiled and shook his head, saying, “I’ve already bought three items; I won’t be able to afford any more.”

“Haha, if you need spirit essence stones then you can also ask Brother Li. Brother Li is also a rich man!”

“Brother Lin, ignore him. Let’s go.” Li Yifeng patted Lin Ming’s shoulder in comfort. He didn’t know that Lin Ming had intentionally bought three expensive jade carvings in a row. With his understanding of Lin Ming, the man had no idea what wood spirit jade carvings were to begin with, otherwise he would never have asked those questions back on the spirit boat.

“Hehe.” As Zhou Kun saw Li Yifeng leave the White Dragon Jade Row with Lin Ming, he looked a bit regretful. “Brother Knifescar, I’ll come back next week, haha, but I will head out first for now.”

“Take care!” The Knifescar fellow said, all smiles.

……………

“Brother Lin, why did you buy those three jade carvings? The price of those three added together is over 10,000 spirit essence stones! It isn’t much cheaper than that pair of blood spirit jade bracelets!” Li Yifeng immediately asked Lin Ming as soon as they left. In his opinion, Lin Ming would not do something like that without reason. But he still could not figure out just what Lin Ming’s intentions were.

There was no way for Lin Ming to explain his reasoning in a simple manner, so he just casually said, “I just had a special feeling about those three jade carvings, so I bought them.”

“Alright.” Li Yifeng shook his head, a bit stymied. “Since you like it, it’s fine. Would you like to have your three items appraised? There is a sixth stage Life Destruction master in this city. He was also my first appraisal teacher that taught me how to identify wood spirit jade carvings; he is a highly respected and infamous individual. If he examines something he definitely won’t make a mistake. Although most of the goods in White Dragon Jade Row are fake, some of them are real after all. There might be something good among those items you bought.

“Oh? A sixth stage Life Destruction master?” Lin Ming was surprised. In the Sky Spill Continent, there were some martial artists who had been able to become Peerless emperors after reaching the fourth stage of Life Destruction. However, these were very rare occurrences. This mostly happened when someone stumbled into a massive bout of luck that allowed them to become Emperor powerhouses. Even then, they would be the weakest of the rank.

The most common Emperor powerhouses had reached stages five or six of Life Destruction before becoming Emperors. There were very few who had reached stage seven of Life Destruction and nearly none who reached stage eight of Life Destruction. As for ninth stage of Life Destruction, those were legendary existences detailed in ancient texts from the Realm of the Gods.

Now in this random desert city that Li Yifeng had stopped by there was actually a sixth stage Life Destruction Supreme Elder. It was natural that Lin Ming would be stunned. Such a person would logically enter the Divine Sea realm in just one more step.

Of course, this so-called ‘one more step’ was as difficult as ascending to the heavens.

As Li Yifeng and Lin Ming were talking, they suddenly a hearty laugh from in front of them. As Lin Ming followed the voice, he saw that not too far away, in a teahouse there were seven or eight men sitting around a stone table. The stone table had many pots filled with that putrid shredded-meat tea. And one of those men was Zhou Kun.

Zhou Kun swung his folding fan, a self-satisfied smirk covering his face. He had an open box in front of him and in that wooden box was that pair of blood spirit jade bracelets that he had previously bought.

“Brother Zhou’s expertise is amazing! Blood spirit jade has all but disappeared from the Thatch Region for the last several years, but now Brother Zhou’s purchase has really broadened our minds!” a middle-aged man wearing animal skins made compliments from across the table.

Zhou Kun laughed, his heart overjoyed. Still, he modestly said, “It’s just a preliminary judgment of mine. Although I’m 90% sure of my decision, there is still some risk involved. “

Just as Zhou Kun’s voice fell, a Revolving Core realm white-clothed old man smiled and said, “Brother Zhou is too prudent. Brother Zhou has extremely keen perception towards ancient jade carvings. You’ve only entered this trade for several years and yet your eyesight is no worse than this old man’s!”

The white-clothed old man laughed and picked up the pair of jade bracelets. He repeatedly studied them under the sunlight, occasionally taking out a small treasure mirror to examine it closer. Finally, he laid the bracelets back down and sighed in admiration.

“Old White, how is it, are they real?” a young man eagerly asked.

“They shouldn’t be fake,” the white-clothed old man breathed out. Seeing that this old man had come to the same conclusion as he had, Zhou Kun’s smile turned even brighter.

“How many spirit essence stones do you think they’re worth?” another young man couldn’t wait to ask.

“How rude!” The white-clothed old man admonished the youngsters, “Blood spirit jade, is extremely rare. Even new jades are hard to find, not to mention something as old as this! Every year the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom only produces an exceedingly small amount, and nearly all of that is supplied to the Royal Family. You can hardly find this anywhere else, so don’t just open your mouth and ask how many spirit essence stones it’s worth!”

Chapter 768 – Guru Blueway, Destiny Decree

Chapter 768 – Guru Blueway, Destiny Decree

…

…

…

The young men that were reprimanded by the white-clothed old man didn’t seem perturbed at all. One of them laughed and said, “Old White, consider me as having spoken a hasty remark, but such a rare wood spirit jade carving must have a price to it. We are also newcomers to this area so our experience is limited. Just tell us how many spirit essence stones you think this is worth so we can open our eyes.”

As the white-clothed old man heard the young man’s words, his expression became like a dead log. But, Zhou Kun actually bluntly said, “This pair of blood spirit jade bracelets can be sold on the auction house for 25,000 to 30,000 spirit essence stones. If you manage to bump into someone wealthy that loves blood spirit jade then it might go for even higher.”

As Zhou Kun reported this price, all of the young men present sucked in a deep breath of air. 30,000 spirit essence stones! Those present only had a net worth of several thousand spirit essence stones. This was an amount several times their complete wealth!

When they played with jade carvings they only messed around with small items. As for the expensive ones, those were only for looking. Who could play around like Zhou Kun?

At this moment, Zhou Kun saw Li Yifeng nearby.

“Haha, Brother Li is also here! I saw that Brother Li bought an ancient dragon carving from the White Dragon Jade Row. I just happen to have Mister White here. Mister White has a great deal of experience; he’s already looked at my blood spirit jade bracelets.”

Zhou Kun casually spoke these words for two reasons. First to show off that this white-clothed old man had affirmed that these blood spirit jade bracelets were real, and secondly because he didn't have much faith in the ancient jade dragon carving that Li Yifeng had bought. He wanted to have Mister White appraise it to embarrass Li Yifeng. After all, that ancient jade dragon had been one of the ambiguous items and had been at the White Dragon Jade Row for far too long. If it were really something good then someone would have bought it up a long time ago.

Li Yifeng knit his eyebrows together. As he saw that Zhou Kun was showing off his blood spirit jade bracelets to the circle of men and also simultaneously hearing that he had obtained Mister White's confirmation, it would be wrong to say that he didn't feel a twinge of regret in his heart. This Mister White had been in the jade carving trade for several dozen years now. Although he wasn't a top class appraisal grandmaster, he could still be considered an expert in his profession. He had even been banned from entering the White Dragon Jade Row; he was no longer a character that they could entertain.

After hearing that this type of person had confirmed the veracity of the blood spirit jade bracelets, he only shook his head. After all, he too had been biased towards thinking that they were the real deal to begin with. "Brother Lin, let's get out of here. I plan on going to the grandmaster to appraise this ancient jade dragon carving; perhaps it might be real, hahaha!"

Lin Ming didn't speak. In the ancient jade carving trade, it was easy to be influenced by thoughts and give birth to past regrets if one didn't make the purchase, one made the purchase, or made them think that they had been fooling themselves all along.

"Mm, alright." Lin Ming didn't mind. He had already identified the items that he bought as being quite good, and now he just lacked spirit essence stones.

Opening the third gate of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates didn't require a specific kind of miraculous body transformation medicine. As long as he had some body transformation miracle medicine of a certain rank, no matter what type it was, it was completely applicable to him. Lin Ming had searched through the Realm of the Gods alchemist's memories several times and had locked onto several types of medicines that he could refine. As long as he had enough time and materials then he was confident he could successfully concoct them. And the bountiful lands of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom were much better than Lin Ming had imagined. He would be able to find many materials he needed here. Of course, that was providing he had enough spirit essence stones.

Lin Ming and Li Yifeng headed towards the mansion of this small city's appraisal grandmaster.

As Zhou Kun saw the two people walking away, he immediately realized where they were going. He faintly smiled as he darkly thought, 'Li Yifeng must be going to Guru Blueway to have that ancient jade dragon carving of his appraised. He didn't dare to let Mister White appraise it because he feared that his jade dragon carving might be a fake, and it would be a loss of face if that was revealed in front of everyone, hahaha. I'll go see Grandmaster Blueway and take a look at just how precious your ancient jade dragon carving is.'

....

The so-called appraiser residency that Li Yifeng had mentioned was in truth a very ordinary-looking house. The courtyard walls were built from rough stones and the whole place looked a bit shabby and worn out from the outside. It was impossible to imagine that a sixth grade Life Destruction powerhouse lived here.

"Brother Lin, this appraisal grandmaster has lived here for the last 100 years; his name is Guru Blueway. He's one of the top 300 ranked characters on the Destiny Decree!"

"Destiny Decree?" Lin Ming asked, a bit stunned.

"Mm, the Destiny Decree is a ranking list for strength within the Sky Spill Continent. Only Life Destruction powerhouses are listed on it and it is jointly issued out by several great intelligence organizations. Aside from the Destiny Decree, there is also an Emperor Decree which only has Divine Sea powerhouses. However, the Emperor Decree rarely changes.

Those Divine Sea Supreme Elders are always wandering around with unknown whereabouts so it's difficult to collect any information on them.

"Ranking the Life Destruction powerhouses isn't easy either; it's only a rough estimate used for reference."

There were over 100 Emperor level powerhouses in the Sky Spill Continent, but definitely no more than 200. As for the number of Life Destruction powerhouses, that was far too difficult to calculate. Wanting to arrange the top ranked of these individuals in a list was extremely difficult.

Li Yifeng chuckled and said, "It naturally isn't easy, but this Destiny Decree is actually quite accurate. It's not much of a difference if you're three or four ranks away from someone, but being 30-40 ranks basically isn't wrong. The only exceptions are if you come across a massive lucky chance or recently experienced a breakthrough without anything knowing. The Destiny Decree is changed every three years, and is an important factor for the great forces to decide who to win over. As for the four Divine Kingdoms, they often use this ranking list as a way to contrast the quantity and quality of their young elites.

"How young are those martial artists on the list?" Lin Ming emphasized the word 'young'.

"Relatively young. For a Life Destruction powerhouse, even 50 years old is considered young. To be ranked on the list at 50 years of age isn't easy at all! Most of the martial artists on the ranking list are at least at the fifth or sixth stage of Life Destruction; there are even some abnormal seventh stage Life Destruction monsters. Moreover, these martial artists are all astounding individuals in their generation. If your foundation is poor, you might not make it on even if your cultivation is high!"

As Li Yifeng spoke to here, they finally arrived. He reached out his hand to knock on Guru Blueway's gate.

With a soft creaking sound, the gate automatically opened.

In the courtyard, the ground was covered with fallen leaves. Underneath the gently falling leaves was a stone table with a checkerboard engraved atop of it. A blue-clothed old man was sitting at the stone table with a pot of boiling tea nearby. He had two black and white board pieces in his hands and his entire body was tense with concentration as he seemed completely focused on his game. From time to time he would lay down alternating black and white pieces; it turned out he was playing chess with himself.

“Oh, it’s the Li Family’s little baby boy again. Did you come to ask me to be your grunt again?”

The blue-clothed old man laughed. With a wave of his sleeves a pair of thin and elegant teacups suddenly appeared on the table, filled with a light amber tea. From the refreshing fragrance emanating from the tea, this tea was not the… popular… shredded meat tea of the Thatch Region, but a very high quality and exceptional tea.

“Hehe, Uncle Blueway, I came this time to specifically bring you some good things.” Li Yifeng was apparently extremely familiar with this blue-clothed old man. He good-naturedly grinned as he laughed.

As Li Yifeng spoke he took out the ancient dragon carving jade carving from his spatial ring. The blue-clothed old man glanced at the ancient jade dragon carving but didn’t speak; he had already guessed that Li Yifeng had gone shopping at White Dragon Jade Row and had come to ask him for an appraisal.

Li Yifeng was just about to walk forwards but he suddenly stopped in his steps. He swiveled around and saw Zhou Kun arriving along with the others from the street corner.

“Zhou Kun! That brat!” Li Yifeng frowned. Zhou Kun had bought the blood spirit jade bracelets, but Li Yifeng had only bought the ancient dragon jade carving which he didn’t even know was real or fake. Even if it were real he would still lose face, and there was no need to mention what it would be like if it were fake. That damned brat had come just to embarrass him.

“Grandmaster Blueway, I brought some good things for you to look at today.” Zhou Kun was all smiles as he approached. He was apparently also familiar with Guru Blueway.

“Yo! Sir Li, what a coincidence meeting you here.” Zhou Kun pretended that he accidently bumped into Li Yifeng here. His eyes immediately locked onto Li Yifeng’s ancient jade dragon carving. “Isn’t that the White Dragon Jade Row’s ancient jade dragon carving that is priced at 3300 spirit essence stones? Did you come to ask Grandmaster Blueway to appraise that for you?”

Since Zhou Kun had brought the shame game to this level, even the normally tranquil and carefree Li Yifeng had an extremely ugly look plastered on his face. But in front of Grandmaster Blueway, he could only endure this insult.

As Guru Blueway saw Li Yifeng and Zhou Kun in a tiff with each other, he only faintly smiled as he slowly sipped his tea, not saying anything. It was far too common for youths to engage in such disputes. And not to mention youths, but in the ancient jade carving trade, even those old experts would flush with anger with rage as they argued over the authenticity of their treasures.

Zhou Kun snickered and made an inviting gesture with his hands, “Sir Li, since you arrived first?”

At this time, Li Yifeng was holding onto the box containing his ancient jade dragon carving. He could only place it on Guru Blueway’s stone table and say, “Uncle Blueway, this is an ancient jade dragon carving I bought at the White Dragon jade Row. In truth, I don’t dare to confirm that this is a real item. It’s just that I’ve looked at it several times and I had an unbearable itch to buy it. I would like to ask Uncle Blueway to apprise this for me.”

Li Yifeng respectfully opened the box with the ancient jade dragon carving and presented it to Guru Blueway.

Guru Blueway looked at the jade carving and released a wisp of his perception to gently circle around it. He gently traced the ancient jade dragon carving’s scales. After a quarter hour, Guru Blueway finally stopped and said, “This ancient jade dragon carving comes from the hands of a famous expert. But, it’s a bit young; it’s only from a few hundred years ago. There have been some clever methods used to modify the appearance and give off this beautiful look, otherwise there is no way that the fine hairs on the surface would be so stiff. Generally speaking, this is a pretty good item – it is genuine true essence jade. It is ninth grade true essence jade, and roughly estimating, it should be worth around 800 spirit essence stones.”

As Li Yifeng heard Guru Blueway’s appraisal he looked a bit pained. He originally bought this item without caring if it was real or fake, and it would have been fine if he had it secretly appraised, but now in front of so many people, this was simply a great loss of face. In this circle, buying imitation goods at such a high price was really a laughable matter.

“Brother Li, oh, it really is such a pity. This ancient jade dragon carving really does have a beautiful appearance. If it were me I also might be a bit impulsive and buy it.” Zhou Kun smiled as he gloated at Li Yifeng’s misfortune. But, the surrounding people didn’t say anything, only watching the good play unfold before them.

Zhou Kun’s eyes shined as he took this moment to take out a wood box from his spatial ring. “Grandmaster Blueway, this is a pair of 10,000 year old blood spirit jade bracelets that I just bought. Could you take a look at them?”

“What? Blood spirit jade?” Guru Blueway’s eyebrows shot up. His interest had obviously been stirred up.

Chapter 769 – Guru Blueway's Appraisal

Chapter 769 – Guru Blueway's Appraisal

…

…

…

There was an exceedingly small amount of blood spirit jade in the entire Thatch Region; its conditions for formation were simply too harsh. It needed an ancient guardian beast to swallow the spiritual plant it was protecting, and then die before it was digested and be buried underground for 100,000 thousand years to condense.

Even new jade of this variety was extremely rare; ancient blood spirit jade was nearly extinct.

If it wasn't for the fact that blood spirit jade's greatest value lay in its ornamental value and its effects of nourishing the soul weren't much better than the average wood spirit jade, then this pair of blood spirit jade bracelets could sell for a sky high price of 100,000 spirit essence stones.

Though Guru Blueway was an appraisal grandmaster, even he hadn't touched real blood spirit jade many times in his life. Now that he heard Zhou Kun actually had such a treasure, how could he not be excited?

He even had the thoughts of buying this pair of jade bracelets afterwards.

"You really have a pair of blood spirit jade bracelets?" Guru Blueway looked at Zhou Kun, his eyes shining.

"I found them at White Dragon jade Row. They are said to come from a 10,000 year gravesite that was just unearthed recently. Junior has looked roughly looked at them and they should be a 10,000 year old treasure without a doubt."

"Hurry and let me see!" Guru Blueway impatiently said. To someone at his boundary, he was only inferior to Peerless Emperor powerhouses and quasi Emperors. There were very few things that could arouse his interest to this point.

Seeing Guru Blueway so anxious, Zhou Kun was filled with a great sense of satisfaction. For someone in the ancient jade carving trade, there were few matters as great as having a highly respected expert be so be eager.

Zhou Kun unhurried opened the box, revealing the pair of blood spirit jade bracelets.

As the blood spirit jade bracelets appeared, Guru Blueway's eyes locked onto them and no longer moved. He had worked with wood spirit jade carvings with so many years and had handled countless varieties of carving. At this point, his accumulated experience was extremely rich. As long as he looked at something he could judge with a general feeling whether this was an old or new item.

And now, looking at the blood spirit jade bracelets in front of him, he could feel the simple rustic breath emanating from it. Without a doubt, this was a treasure from 10,000 years ago!

As Guru Blueway realized this, he became even more excited. He took out a special treasure for the purposes of appraisals; this was also made from wood spirit jade.

Generally speaking, someone at the level of Guru Blueway no longer needed external aid to help in making appraisals. For him to take out such an appraisal treasure proved just how valuable he considered this pair of jade bracelets to be.

"What a beautiful jade pattern, it truly is a treasure from 10,000 years ago!" Guru Blueway praised out loud. Zhou Kun's smiling face became even wider as he heard Guru Blueway say this. This had more or less confirmed that this pair of blood spirit jade bracelets was the real thing!

Although the others present were smiling along, they were actually extremely jealous. This was an item that could be sold for 30,000 spirit essence stones. Spirit essence stones were only one benefit. The other benefit was that because Zhou Kun bought this pair of blood spirit jade bracelets, his reputation in the jade carving circles would become much more glorious. If this was a treasure that even Guru Blueway would be excited over, the value could be imagined.

Zhou Kun couldn't help but shoot a glance over at Li Yifeng, revealing a smile that said he had already won. Li Yifeng seemed fairly calm and carefree, but his innermost feelings were beginning to roil with regret. This was a treasure that he had been just a single step away from attaining. After all, in terms of net worth, there was no way for Zhou Kun to compare with him. As long as he wanted to buy it he could have absolutely won the bidding struggle against Zhou Kun.

Unfortunately, he had hesitated at that time…

Li Yifeng didn't blame Lin Ming, nor had he ever thought of blaming Lin Ming. After all, Lin Ming was only a novice that was thoughtlessly giving his opinions. In the end, Li Yifeng only blamed himself for his lack of sight and hesitancy in judgment, thus letting Zhou Kun win the advantage. If his eyes had been as bright and illuminative as a torch and he had been able to immediately determine the authenticity of the item himself, then Lin Ming's words naturally wouldn't have had any impact on him.

Time passed slowly. Then, Guru Blueway's unbelievably anxious face began to slowly calm down even as his eyebrows wrinkled together.

As all these changes fell in Zhou Kun's eyes, his heart skipped a beat. What was the matter? Was there a problem?

Li Yifeng's heard stirred. Was there a problem with the jade bracelets? An imperfection? A crack? Perhaps they were… a fake?

Even Li Yifeng couldn’t believe it if it were a fake. It was impossible to fake such a beautiful jade pattern. Moreover, Guru Blueway had already affirmed from the start that this object was from 10,000 years ago.

After half an hour passed, Guru Blueway deeply sighed and lifted his head. At that moment, Zhou Kun felt his heart wither into nothing. With his current wealth, it could be said that he had staked everything he had on these expensive blood spirit jade bracelets. Now he could be considered as dead broke. If there was any problems with these jade bracelets then all his work in the past would be wasted; he would never recover from the initial capital he plunked down for them.

“Grandmaster Blueway, how about it?” Zhou Kun nervously asked, his heart caught in his throat.

Guru Blueway slowly swept over everyone. He actually didn’t immediately answer, which made Zhou Kun nervous to the point of wanting to vomit blood. As for everyone else, they were also unbelievably tense. On one hand they hoped to see the ancient blood spirit jade that was nearly impossible to find, but on the other hand they didn’t want to see Zhou Kun make such a great deal; their feelings could be called contradictory.

“This thing… truly is from 10,000 years ago.” Guru Blueway finally said after a long silence. However, these words by themselves weren’t enough to calm the panic in Zhou Kun’s heart. If Guru Blueway said this early then that obviously meant there was some problem.

Of course, there was undoubtedly a problem with these jade bracelets, otherwise Guru Blueway would have never made such an expression. Now Zhou Kun only hoped that Guru Blueway would only say that there were minor defects that wouldn’t greatly affect the value so he wouldn’t lose too much money.

“Unfortunately…” Guru Blueway shook his head, making Zhou Kun’s heart chill to icy temperatures.

“These bracelets are not fake, and they are extremely valuable and ancient jade bracelets. However, they are not blood spirit jade, thus the value is greatly reduced.”

Guru Blueway’s words were like a bath of cold water poured on everyone. Zhou Kun felt his surroundings go dark and he nearly fainted.

“It isn’t blood spirit jade? How could that be possible!?”

Zhou Kun had already repeatedly confirmed his appraisal again and again. He had worried that this was new blood spirit jade instead of ancient blood spirit jade. However, learning that this was another type of jade masquerading as blood spirit jade was like being struck by a bolt of lightning on a clear summer day!

Zhou Kun could not be compared with Li Yifeng. Li Yifeng was a Prince and he had an excellent future awaiting him. But, Zhou Kun was a failed High Prince successor and the resources he was assigned were extremely limited. The spirit essence stones he had used to buy the blood spirit jade just now were the entirety of his savings. Once his lost it, it would be immensely difficult to recover from such damage. It would even cause him to lack training resources in the future.

Guru Blueway said, “Sir Zhou, these jade bracelets are made from corpse jade. Corpse jade is wood spirit jade that is buried in the mouth of a tomb owner, or perhaps sealed in their stomach. After tens of thousands of years, the blood of the martial artist permeates into the jade. This sort of jade is very similar to blood spirit jade and is also exceedingly rare. Corpse jade originally had only minor differences with blood spirit jade, and once a martial artist skilled in corpse techniques and a wood-attribute martial artist join forces, they can skillfully transform this corpse jade into something that is nearly impossible to distinguish from real blood spirit jade. Let alone you, it’s even hard for old me to clearly identify it unless I’m paying attention. This is also the first time that I’ve seen corpse jade disguised as blood spirit jade.”

Guru Blueway’s words could be regarded as sentencing this pair of ‘blood spirit jade bracelets’ to death.

Li Yifeng felt a chill crawl up his spine. Good heavens! He had almost been the one to fall into this deathtrap!

Such a marvelous and clever method of fraud! Even if his sight was ten times better, he feared that he still wouldn't be able to see through it!

15,000 spirit essence stones was an amount that would strain even Li Yifeng's resources. Moreover, those old men in his family had originally been opposed to him playing around in the ancient jade carving trade to begin with. Although these sorts of items were capable of nourishing the soul, being addicted to such games would also ruin his will and mind. If they knew that Li Yifeng had lost 15,000 spirit essence stones because of this, the consequences could be imagined!

"That was a close call, how dangerous! If I really got screwed here and that insane Murong girl actually reported me to the higher ups, I fear even my legs would be taken away!"

As Li Yifeng was gasping in fear, his mind suddenly stirred and he looked to Lin Ming at his side. Lin Ming had a calm expression as if he wasn't affected at all by these blood spirit jade bracelets being fakes. It was reasonable to say that this matter was greatly related to Lin Ming. If Guru Blueway had determined that these jade bracelets were fakes, then Lin Ming should have breathed out a sigh of relief. Since he was so calm, that could only be because he had known these jade bracelets were fakes all along!

Things began to make more sense. If a normal person didn't know anything about jade carvings, they certainly wouldn't stick their nose into such an important trade. After all, that was a transaction involving 15,000 spirit essence stones. Luckily, his suggestion had been right, otherwise it would be difficult for him to absolve himself of guilt.

Since Lin Ming dared to speak out then he must have had a certain assurance in himself. As Li Yifeng remembered the warning Lin Ming had given him about the ancient jade dragon carving, he realized that these two matters together absolutely couldn't be a coincidence!

That Knifescar fellow who gave Lin Ming the White Dragon Jade Card must have done so not because he thought Lin Ming was some brain-addled money machine, but because he admired Lin Ming's keen eyesight.

As Li Yifeng thought of this, he asked, “Brother Lin, you already knew those jade bracelets were fakes?”

“I just had a strange feeling. Those bracelets didn't feel too good to me.” Lin Ming faintly smiled, giving a short explanation. His words were vague to begin with but in fact he didn't need to explain anyway; Li Yifeng would think as he wished to.

Li Yifeng didn't press the matter further. Whether it was some mystical sixth sense or whether it was something else that Lin Ming didn't wish to speak about, everyone had their own secrets. The power of the stars sealed in Li Yifeng's right hand was also a secret of his.

“Brother Lin, your brother me has received your gratitude this time. You mentioned earlier that you wanted to buy wood spirit jade. If you have any need for help, I will assist you as best as I can.”

“Mm, okay.” Lin Ming didn't turn down the offer. In the future if he wanted to practice alchemy he would need a massive amount of materials and wood spirit jade. Collecting all of that would be slow by himself. Li Yifeng's help would save a great deal of trouble.

At this time, Zhou Kun had been shocked into a daze. Playing in the wood spirit jade carving trade was an enormous risk to begin with, he couldn't go looking for trouble with the White Dragon Jade Row. The White Dragon Jade Row relied on selling fakes to make a living, otherwise they would never have sold real goods at such lower prices. If one wished to buy goods at such low prices, they naturally needed to mentally prepare themselves to be tricked. These were the rules of the Jade Row and also the unspoken rules of the jade carving trade. If he went to look for trouble then not only would he not be compensated, but others would laugh at him instead as someone playing games beyond their means.

Chapter 770 – Opening the Universe Melting Furnace

Chapter 770 – Opening the Universe Melting Furnace

…

…

…

As Li Yifeng saw Zhou Kun's depressed appearance, he didn't relish it at all. Instead, all he felt was pity.

But near Li Yifeng, Qing'er muttered in soft voice, "If you can't afford the game then don't play, this idiot has really left me speechless."

Guru Blueway shook his head and said, "Sir Zhou, you shouldn't play in the ancient jade carving trade. Although wood spirit jade has the effect of nourishing the soul, the high price far outstrips its use. Generally speaking, it simply isn't the proper way to go about things. Although this pair of bracelets is simply an imitation, corpse jade is still quite valuable. It should be able to sell for 4000 to 5000 spirit essence stones at an auction house. It would be wiser if Sir Zhou were to sell them off and use the money to practice in serenity."

4000 to 5000 spirit essence stones… that was a full 10,000 less essence stones than what Zhou Kun had bid for these jade bracelets. Zhou Kun was truly unwilling to sell these corpse jade bracelets and withdraw from the ancient jade carving trade.

The greater the hope, the greater the disappointment. The loss of the blood spirit jade bracelets had been a tremendous attack on Zhou Kun's psyche.

Li Yifeng shrugged and said to Lin Ming, “Brother Lin, those three items you bought should be real. Do you plan on selling them to buy more wood spirit jade?”

Lin Ming nodded, “Yes, I need a great deal of wood spirit jade.”

“Then we should have Grandmaster Blueway apprise them! With a grandmaster’s appraisal they will be far easier to sell at a higher price.” Li Yifeng rubbed his hands in excitement. He certainly didn’t want to miss a chance to open his eyes like this.

However, Lin Ming actually shook his head and said, “No, I want to directly place them in the auction house and have the appraisal masters look at them. I don’t wish to arouse any unnecessary interest.”

Lin Ming had already been banned from White Dragon Jade Row; from now on, he could forget about stepping into any other White Dragon Jade Row branch store. He didn’t want to make a name for himself and ruin his method of acquiring money. In the ancient jade carving business, news travelled far too fast.

Li Yifeng felt a bit regretful in his heart. But, since this was what Lin Ming decided, he naturally had no complaints, “Brother Lin, if you trust me then I can help you handle those three items and completely change them into spirit essence stones for you.”

“Thank you Brother Li.” Lin Ming couldn’t ask for a better solution. He was pressed for time and didn’t have much energy left over to deal with these trivial matters.

…..

Li Yifeng was extremely efficient. In a mere 10 days, all three items had been completely changed into spirit essence stones. After removing the cut that the auction house took, there was a total of 22,000 spirit essence stones. And at this time, Lin Ming had already arrived at the largest city in the Thatch Region – Jade City.

The buildings in Jade City were all built from large chunks of rocks, and these rocks hadn't been carved or polished much either. There was a very distinctive barbaric and wild taste to the city.

Behind Jade City was a 10,000 foot high perilous mountain peak named the Jade Mountain. Lin Ming's current dwelling was located here. Cut out of this perilous mountain were several hundred cave mansions. Every cave mansion could be used to close up in training and the origin energy here was also very rich. One could rent a vacancy as long as they had enough spirit essence stones.

Lin Ming rented a medium-sized cave mansion for three years.

Lin Ming didn't care about the origin energy in the cave mansion. What he cared about was the security here. According to Li Yifeng, there was a Divine Sea Supreme Elder personally guarding Jade City; no one dared to come here to cause trouble. If he closed up here he could do so in peace.

At this time, Lin Ming was sitting down on a stone bed in his cave mansion and had a small, three foot high furnace in front of him. Carved on the surface of the pill furnace was a circle of heaven that contained all the myriad creatures of the universe. At the very center of this design was a red Golden Crow image.

This furnace was the Cosmic Melting Furnace. The Cosmic Melting Furnace used to be the top divine furnace of the Sky Spill Continent several tens of thousands of years ago. Even an Emperor powerhouse could be refined within it.

Currently, Lin Ming had laid down eight blazing flame columns. Every flaming column had a statue of a carved horned dragon within it, and these eight horned dragons were all aimed at the Cosmic Melting Furnace.

Lin Ming, with the help of Demonshine, had reformed the Eight Dragon Jade Dawn Array that the Demon Emperor had once arranged around the Cosmic Melting Furnace. On this day, he planned on completely opening the Cosmic Melting Furnace.

In the past, Lin Ming had only been able to open the first level of space of the Cosmic Melting Furnace. But according to Demonshine, the Cosmic Melting Furnace had a total of three different levels. Since Lin Ming now planned on officially using the Cosmic Melting Furnace, it was necessary for him to open all three spaces.

Lin Ming lifted his hand and formed a seal. Waves of burnished dawn light began to spout out from the mouths of the horned dragons, covering the pill furnace and causing a burning hot flame to instantly burn.

"Open!"

Lin Ming shouted loudly. On the surface of the Cosmic Melting Furnace, brilliant rays of golden light suddenly began emitting from the Golden Crow image. For a time, it was like a sun had risen within the room, blinding all eyes.

The Cosmic Melting Furnace fiercely shook, and a high-pitched dragon roar seemed to issue out from the furnace. The sound waves flushed into the sound-insulating enchantment of the room, causing the entire place to shake as if it could collapse at any moment.

Then, a fist-sized fruit and a golden red root flew out from the Cosmic Melting Furnace and were immediately grabbed by Lin Ming.

He had finally opened the second level of the Cosmic Melting Furnace!

With Lin Ming's current strength, opening the second level of the Cosmic Melting Furnace wasn't difficult at all. What would be difficult was opening the third level. The Eight Dragon Jade Dawn Array had been prepared especially for that purpose.

"A Five Color Fruit and Void Temper Root! Hehe, boy, you've made it rich again!" Demonshine's voice sounded out in Lin Ming's mind. There were treasures in every level of the Cosmic Melting Furnace. When he had opened the first level of space, Giant Demon blood and a Nameless Divine Pill refined with a Nirvana Dragon Root had popped out.

The blood of the Giant Demon had been absorbed by the Magic Cube. As for that Nameless Divine Pill, Lin Ming had swallowed it when he had been trapped in the King's Cage and was struggling to find a way out. The Nameless Divine Pill had fused together with the Asura force field, and together with the collision from a Demon God Bone, it had allowed him to completely break through the first gate of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

Now, the Five Color Fruit and Void Temper Root that Demonshine spoke of were the treasures from the Cosmic Melting Furnace's second level of space.

As for what the treasures in the Cosmic Melting Furnace had been, even Demonshine hadn't been sure. Lin Ming could only search through the soul fragment of the Demon Emperor to find incomplete clues.

"I remember from the Realm of the Gods alchemist's memories that Five Color Fruit and Void Temper Root are both high level heavenly materials used for alchemy. With these two things as the main source of medicine, in addition to some supporting herbs and wood spirit jade, I should be able to create a miracle medicine capable of opening the third of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates."

Lin Ming couldn't bother thinking about these matters at this time. He revolved his true essence to the limit and then pointed at the Eight Dragon Jade Dawn Array. The flames suddenly fanned into a blazing conflagration.

The Cosmic Melting Furnace violently trembled within the Eight Dragon Jade Dawn Array. It was as if there was some ancient vicious beast trapped with the furnace that was ready to rush out at any given moment.

Lin Ming released the Heretical God Force as he simultaneously activated the strength of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. Between Lin Ming's eyebrows, the phoenix flame mark there began to blaze out with a golden light as sharp as a sword.

Bang!

With an explosion, the Eight Dragon Jade Dawn Array's eight flame columns all collapsed at once. The Cosmic Melting Furnace's lid shot up like a meteor, straight into the air.

Kacha!

The lid heavily smashed into the Jade Mountain cave mansion, causing a large portion of the array formation-reinforced rock to shear off!

Lin Ming's face flushed red with blood. He looked at the two items suspended in the air. Neither of these items looked like miracle medicines. One was a completely jet black demon armor, and the other was a mass of thick, viscous blood.

Chapter 771 – Heavencraft Trading Company

Chapter 771 – Heavencraft Trading Company

…

…

…

When Demonshine saw the mass of blood, his shifty little eyes immediately brightened. “I want that blood!”

Lin Ming swept his mind over the blood. The blood was similar to the blood from the first level of the Cosmic Melting Furnace; both of them exuded an ancient energy. Thus, the should be blood of the Ancient Giant Demons. In terms of quality, it was far from being comparable to Ancient Phoenix Blood, but it was still extremely precious.

“Alright.”

Lin Ming wasn’t stingy. To Demonshine, who only had his soul form left, the power of this blood essence was the only way for him to recover. During the past years, Demonshine had helped him a great deal, and had even saved his life several times.

Demonshine hurriedly leapt out from Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, turned into a small red curly-haired dog, and plunged towards the mass of Ancient Giant Demon blood. He immediately swallowed it whole.

With a contented sigh, Demonshine’s dog-like face revealed an extremely satisfied expression.

After swallowing the blood, Demonshine’s entire body flushed red. Afterwards, his originally vague and distorted body became much more solid.

This continued for half an incense sticks worth of time. After it stopped, Demonshine used his paws to pat his belly, and burped loudly. “Awesome, so awesome! 10 more jin of this stuff would be great!”

Lin Ming faintly smiled, shaking his head. It was already quite good to have two taels of this blood, but this damned dog actually wanted 10 jin.

He pointed at the black demon armor floating in the air and asked, “Demonshine, can you tell me what this demon armor is?”

Lin Ming’s inherited memories from the Demon Emperor were mostly incomplete; he had no memories about this demon armor.

Demonshine licked his lips and replied, “That’s the demon armor that Master personally forged when he was still on the Sky Spill Continent. Tens of thousands of years ago, there was an epoch were countless rivals and heroes rose up in unison, with new legends being created daily. Master’s strength was unparalleled in that world, however, there were still opponents that could threaten him. For instance…the deep sea races!”

Lin Ming nodded in understanding. On this world, the boundless sea’s size was far greater than the land mass. There were an immeasurable amount of things that lived inside of the deep sea, including many diverse and interesting races. There were even races from the ancient desolate era, who had bloodline legacies far surpassing that of humanity.

In this situation, the number of deep sea race powerhouses that existed far surpassed that of humanity. If it weren’t for the fact that the deep sea races were more suited for living deep underwater, and couldn’t survive long on land, then they probably would’ve probably engaged in a never-ending war with humanity.

Demonshine continued, “Master fought with his deep sea race opponents for a long time, before eventually even this demon armor was pierced through, with Master barely managing to defeat his enemy in the face of countless dangers. Because the demon armor had been pierced, Master decided to keep the demon armor inside of the Cosmic Melting

Furnace and repair it. However, the time required to repair the demon armor was extremely long. By the time that Master left this world, the demon armor still hadn't been fully repaired. However, tens of thousands of years have passed now, and this demon armor has finally repaired itself inside of the Cosmic Melting Furnace. Not only has it been fixed, its grade is now even higher than it was in the past. That Giant Demon blood I just absorbed should've been left behind by master in order to help repair the demon armor; it's simply that the demon armor didn't use all of it up."

"So that's how it is..."

Lin Ming reached out his hand and grasped hold of the demon armor. Then, he discovered that there was a circular gap missing in the left chest region of the demon armor.

Such a uniform gap was clearly not caused by a weapon piercing through it. This area should've been where the heartguard mirror was placed.

"The heartguard mirror is missing?"

"Looks like it." Demonshine shook his head, a bit regretful. "If it were the complete demon armor, then it's value would be no less than the Cosmic Melting Furnace. After all, there aren't many defensive treasures on its level out there."

Lin Ming bluntly put on the armor. For a time, he felt a demonic energy wrap around his body, fusing with his bodily protective true essence, causing it to be even firmer and more tenacious than it was before.

"Oh? It had this sort of effect?"

"Of course. Good armor isn't just tough, it also has a top class ability to reduce injuries. If one's armor isn't able to weaken an enemy's attacks, then it's useless no matter how solid it is!"

Many martial artists' attacks had penetrative properties. Simply defending against the physical strike of their weapons wasn't enough; one also needed to defend against the hidden energy behind it.

"What do you plan on doing with the Five Color Fruit and the Void Tempered Root?" Demonshine asked.

"The Five Color Fruit and Void Tempered Root are both high level heavenly materials. I plan to use them for the base of a pill I'll make soon. I'll also add a 200,000 year wood spirit jade, dragonspine grass, and finally skyflower stones to act as the catalyst, to concoct a Fivefade Void Pill. That should be enough for me to open the third of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates."

"Hehe, if you reach the large success realm of your alchemy technique, then not only will it enhance your soul, but your body's transformation progress rise will at an astronomical rate. Who wouldn't be jealous of this? However, the Fivefade Void Pill is a pretty high ranking recipe; do you have the confidence to successfully refine it?"

"Not at the moment, but I can slowly practice until I can. I'm not in too much of a hurry. Practicing alchemy is also a way to temper the soul."

Lin Ming's inherited memories from the Realm of the Gods alchemist were relatively complete, including even the precious experiences and skills that he'd studied. However, just this alone wasn't enough. While Lin Ming's knowledge was sufficient, he still lacked coordination between his body, soul, energy, and mind.

This was akin to a zither master that had never played a zither song before. Even if they knew the music by heart, and knew perfectly well how to play the music, they still wouldn't be able to perfectly interpret the song on their first try. This was simply because their fingers wouldn't be able to keep up with their mind.

What Lin Ming had to do right now was constantly practice, so that his body could memorize the use of alchemical skills. Every time he touched the energy, his control of the flame… all of it had to become a conditioned reflex. He had to be able to put on a perfect performance without thinking. This was the only way for him to achieve the highest chance of successfully refining a pill.

“Where do you plan on finding dragonspine grass or skyflower stones?” Demonshine asked.

“I’ll look for Li Yifeng.” Lin Ming had already thought of this.

Li Yifeng was a Prince of the Seven Star Divine Kingdom who usually loved to make new friends; he should know all sorts of people. In addition, he had connections to many of the four Divine Kingdom’s domestic intelligence networks, so asking him for information would be both the fastest and most efficient way.

And Li Yifeng did not disappoint him. Just ten days later, he returned with news.

Ho-!

The flames of a sound transmitting talisman flashed in front of Lin Ming, causing him to immediately stop working on the pill he was currently refining. The only thing inside of the pill furnace was a pile of black ash.

He ruefully smiled. The Cosmic Melting Furnace’s heat was just too intense. Trying to practice with low level medicinal herbs that couldn’t stand up to these sort of burning hot temperatures was truly a great challenge.

During the past few days, he’d spent a third of the spirit essence stones he’d gained from the White Dragon Jade Row, all to buy wood spirit jade.

The medicinal herbs he’d been using for practice came from the medicine gardens of the South Sea Demon Region, and the Yin Yang Profound Palace. At this point, he’d used up 20% of the medicinal herbs, but the amount of successfully refined products were a pitifully low number. Usually, all he did was create pile after pile of black ash.

“If the Xing couple from the Yin Yang Profound Palace learned that their carefully grown medicinal herbs were all being used by me, just for practicing alchemy, I wonder just what sort of faces they’d make.” Lin Ming shook his head, laughing at himself. He’d been rapidly burning through his money these past days. Although he called these medicinal herbs low leveled, the truth was, they were enough to make a martial artist go crazy with greed if they were placed in a third-grade sect.

“Lin Ming, what does the sound transmitting talisman say?” Demonshine asked.

“It’s from Li Yifeng. He told me the whereabouts of skyflower stones. Apparently, they can be bought at the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s Heavencraft Trading Company. As for dragonspine grass, he still hasn’t found any information.”

“Alright. Then, what do you plan on doing now?”

“We’re going to the Heavencraft Trading Company first!”

.....

The Heavencraft Trading Company was located in Witch Creek City, which was within the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. It had a 6,000 year old history, an inheritance that surpassed most fourth and fifth-grade sects, and was able to stand on the same level as some Holy Lands.

The Heavencraft Trading Company was one of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s three great trading companies, and had a very deep background.

For the Heavencraft Trading Company to have developed to this level, and in the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom at that, inevitably meant that they were inextricably linked with the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s royal family.

When Lin Ming entered Witch Creek City, where the Heavencraft Trading Company Headquarters were located, he didn’t even need to ask around to see the location of the Headquarters building. This was simply because it the building stood out so much.

High in the sky there was a garret that rose hundreds of feet into in the air, and was over a thousand feet wide. It was actually floating there, suspended in midair. Around the garret were traces of faint purple smoke that shone underneath the bright sunlight; it was obvious that all of this was due to an array formation.

Keeping such a massive garret suspended in the air likely took a massive amount of spirit essence stones every year. From this alone, one could see just how deep the Heavencraft Trading Company's wealth was.

Lin Ming quietly waved his sleeves and flew upwards. But when he did, he discovered that there were invisible fluctuations that covered the sky. These fluctuations formed a kind of resistance, hindering Lin Ming's movements as he approached the Heavencraft Trading Company. Lin Ming was slightly miffed. If he could feel this resistance, than others certainly could as well. How did this place even do business? Did they meet with their customers outside?

The higher Lin Ming flew, the more obvious the resistance became. By the time that Lin Ming had finally reached the entrance to the Heavencraft Trading Company, he'd come to an understanding that there were stipulations to enter this trading company. A martial artist with an extreme Xiantian cultivation, or perhaps someone that had just entered the early Revolving Core, or possibly even an early Revolving Core martial artist with an unstable foundation; none of these people would be able to enter the Heavencraft Trading Company.

And, even if they could, they'd have to exhaust all of their strength to do so, thus shaming themselves. There was no way that they'd have any face to enter the trading company afterwards. What kind of store was this, where one had to fight just to enter? If just entering once was like this, it was doubtful that many people would return.

This meant that the Heavencraft Trading Company slammed their doors in front of all martial artists below the Revolving Core realm. This should also be the reason why their trading company's headquarters was suspended in midair.

To stay suspended in the sky already gave off a lofty and grandiose feeling. Coupled with the fact that they denied to serve all martial artists below the Revolving Core realm… this was enough to establish just how high quality a business the Heavencraft Trading Company was.

As Lin Ming walked up the steps of the Heavencraft Trading Company, he saw a large black sign hung proudly above the 50 feet tall gates. There had been two highly-stylized words written on it with a large, thick brush—'Heavencraft Pavilion'.

These two words held faint traces of Concepts and Laws imbued within them. And on both sides of the high gates, there were also more accompanying words.

These words were simple:

'Only treasures sold, no common things.'

'Only powerhouses accepted, no entry for the mediocre. '

"How audacious!" Lin Ming was speechless. This Heavencraft Trading Company was really crazy. Did this mean that every single person who couldn't enter the Heavencraft Pavilion was a mediocre person?

As he walked towards the Heavencraft Pavilion, the gatekeepers had already opened the doors, gesturing invitingly towards Lin Ming.

In the spacious lobby, there weren't many visitors; it seemed somewhat deserted and lonely. This was also within his expectations. After all, the Heavencraft Trading Company didn't rely on the volume of its transactions to succeed.

"This Young Hero, may I ask what requests you have?" Every visitor to the Heavencraft Trading Company would be approached by a beautiful young maid, who would then give them one-on-one service. The young girl responsible for assisting Lin Ming seemed to be around 18 or 19 years old. Her slender figure was very tall; she was only a bit shorter than Lin Ming.

“I would like to purchase skyflower stones.” Lin Ming directly stated.

Chapter 772 – Skyflower Stones

Chapter 772 – Skyflower Stones

…

…

…

“Skyflower stones?” The young maid asked, stunned. These were extremely rare objects. Heavencraft Pavilion had just managed to obtain several skyflower stones recently. Because they were high level alchemy materials, they were very popular in the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, and their price was also correspondingly sky high.

She never thought that Lin Ming, who seemed so young, who immediately ask for skyflower stones.

The young maid hesitated for a moment, suspecting that Lin Ming was simply messing around and just wanted to see the beautiful skyflower stones. Then, he would just make an excuse and decide not to buy them.

Although she had her doubts she still reported this information over. A moment later, a black-clothed old woman walked down from upstairs.

The black-clothed old woman narrowed her eyes as she sized up Lin Ming. With her experience she could naturally see that Lin Ming’s foundation was exceedingly stable. In addition to his age and cultivation, he should definitely be some extraordinary junior of his generation.

This sort of person truly might be able to afford skyflower stones.

“This little brother, please come along with me.”

The old woman turned around and walked upstairs with Lin Ming following close behind her. As Lin Ming stepped onto the staircase, he discovered that between the floors of Heavencraft Pavilion, there were actually invisible layers of resistance similar to when he was flying up. Except, the resistance from this level to the next was twice as much. Perhaps even a normal early Revolving Core martial artist wouldn't be able to walk up.

When he turned around to look at the young maid behind him, he saw that she had a shining token on her waist. It was clear that this token let this Houtian level maid freely traverse the Heavencraft Pavilion.

There were even less people on the Heavencraft Pavilion's second floor. After Lin Ming sat down, two maids set a plate of snacks down in front of him. Not too far away from Lin Ming, there was a red-clothed old man sitting down at another table. This red-clothed old man had a second stage Life Destruction cultivation.

The old man was holding a teacup in one hand while slowly fiddling with a cover in the other. He glanced up at Lin Ming, all smiles.

Lin Ming nodded politely in return. This red-clothed old man should also be a guest of the Heavencraft Pavilion.

At this time, from a side hall of the second floor, a purple-veiled slender woman walked out. "Two guests, you've waited for a long time."

Her melodious voice that was like tinkling bells immediately attracted both Lin Ming and the old man's attention.

The woman looked to be just over 20 years old, and although she had veil over her face, one could clearly make out that the woman underneath was a simple yet exquisite beauty. Her stature was elegant, and her skin glittered like a translucent crystal. She was a stunning specimen of femininity that was easy for others to be lost in.

The woman opened her mouth and said, "I've heard that both honored guests are here to purchase skyflower stones. The truth is, these skyflower stones only arrived at the

Heavencraft Pavilion's Headquarters five days ago, yet 20-30 people have already come to see them. However, no one has been able to purchase them. This is mainly because...."

As the purple-clothed woman spoke up to here, she smiled and continued, "This is mainly because these skyflower stones don't belong to our Heavencraft Pavilion, but instead have been placed here on commission by another esteemed guest. This guest wishes to use the skyflower stones to trade for some equally rare materials. If you two honored guests are unable to bring out an item that can satisfy that guest, then no amount of spirit essence stones will be enough."

"Oh, so it's like that. I was wondering why such valuable alchemical materials had remained within the Heavencraft Pavilion for so long. May I inquire as to which martial cultivator it was? Perhaps this old man might know him!" The red-clothed old man asked as he stroked his beard, smiling. He obviously had the intention of trading for the skyflower stones by directly establishing his relationship with the owner.

The purple-clothed spoke with no intentions of hiding the truth, "It's Grandmaster Zhuan Bixian."

"Zhuan Bixian!" The red-clothed old man revealed a look of shock, "So it's Grandmaster Zhuan Bixian, who's ranked in the Destiny Decree's top 150! Then, this is truly out of this old man's league."

The red-clothed old man shook his head over and over again.

From the Houtian realm to the Life Destruction realm, the difference was only equal to a single boundary within the Life Destruction realm. This was also the reason that there was such a huge disparity in strength between martial artists of different stages in the Life Destruction realm. The red-clothed old man was at the second stage of Life Destruction; that was an entire four boundaries away from the sixth stage Life Destruction Zhuan Bixian. Not just that, but every boundary within the Life Destruction stage carried with it an enormous risk of death.

This caused the red-clothed old man's status difference with Zhuan Bixian to be even greater than a Xiantian realm martial artist and Revolving Core martial artist in the South Horizon Region. Especially since this Zhuan Bixian was a master listed on the Destiny Decree.

As the red-clothed old man spoke, a handsome 17 to 18 year old youth stepped down from the stairs. He faintly looked over Lin Ming and the red-clothed old man, then said, "I am Grandmaster Zhuan's disciple. Grandmaster's time is precious, so if you have any precious treasures that you'd like to trade with, please bring them out for me too look at."

This handsome youth was young, but his tone of voice was quite arrogant. His words carried a hint of superiority and impatience. In truth, this was also understandable. During the past days, dozens of guests had come to the Heavencraft Pavilion to personally request the skyflower stones. Every time this happened, this youth would have to come downstairs to meet them. He'd run down here over and over again, yet no one had been able to bring out anything that could attract his attention. How could anyone else not be impatient at this point?

The red-clothed man laughed, thinking little of it. He sent a true essence sound transmission towards the handsome youth. If he dared to come here to buy skyflower stones, then he naturally had to have some valuable possessions to trade with, and was currently listing them out to the youth.

After the handsome youth finished listening to the red-clothed old man, his face changed and he icily said, "I apologize, but my Master already has many of these things, and has no interest in obtaining any more of them. In fact, his are even more precious."

The red-clothed old man's smile froze on his face. The handsome youths haughty and indifferent tone obviously brooked no room for negotiation.

Lin Ming watched all of this happen while thinking about it. He'd expected this. After all, a Revolving Core martial artist wouldn't have any interest in the possessions of a Xiantian martial artist.

"And you?"

The handsome youth glanced over at Lin Ming. When he saw that Lin Ming only had a Revolving Core level of cultivation, he didn't hold out much hope that Lin Ming would have anything interesting.

Lin Ming was silent for a moment. He'd been thinking about what items he could bring out that would interest Zhuan Bixian. In fact, he did have a great number of incomparably valuable treasures that could interest him. For instance, the heaven-step Demon God's Bone, the Concept of Fire jade slips from Timeworn Phoenix City, the remaining six drops of Ancient Phoenix Blood, the Void Tempered Root, the Five Color Fruit, and so on.

However, it was naturally impossible for Lin Ming to take these items out. And even if he did, it wasn't something that just some skyflower stones could possibly trade for.

After deducting these items, Lin Ming's leftover possessions weren't very valuable.

Seeing that Lin Ming hadn't spoken, the handsome youth appeared a bit annoyed. "Do you have anything or not? If you don't, then please don't waste my time; I'm very busy."

As Zhuan Bixian's direct disciple, the handsome youth had a bit of a sense of superiority. Lin Ming didn't seem much older than him, and no matter what angle he looked at it from, it was impossible that someone so young could be a true customer of the skyflower stones. This sort of top alchemical material could normally only be purchased by an older, more powerful alchemist.

Lin Ming faintly smiled, finally remembering something. He replied, "I do have something, but I fear that you won't be able to recognize it, and thus won't be able to complete the transaction."

The handsome youth deeply frowned. He glumly said, "I might be young, but I've followed Master ever since I was a child. I've had to remember a massive number of materials every day. I've read countless ancient books detailing heavenly materials from the four Divine Kingdoms. Underneath the heavens and earth, I dare to say that there's nothing

I won't be able to recognize. If I can't recognize something, then that item would be something that even a Divine Sea Supreme Elder wouldn't want to have, and you naturally wouldn't either. If you have anything then take it out. I fear that whatever you think might be precious and rare, as you're saying, will just be an ordinary good in my eyes!"

The handsome youth had a good deal of experience and insight, otherwise Zhuan Bixian would never have sent him here to supervise the transaction.

"Alright." Lin Ming nodded, and calmly took out a jade box from his spatial ring. When he opened the jade box, one could see a red plant with a meat-like consistency. On top of its roots was a distorted face; it looked like a ghost that was being tortured.

Underneath the face was a fist-sized crown of meat that was pulsating like a rapidly beating heart. The entire plant looked like a mouse that had just been born; it's flesh was a light yellowish-pink, and there were also some light hairs decorating it. It was an atrocious thing that was quite difficult to look at.

Zi zi zi!

When the handsome youth saw this plant he paused, completely stunned. Was this a plant or an animal? How could something grow into such a disgusting, nauseating appearance? And what was this even called? It was simply to bizarre to the extreme.

"This item, would Grandmaster Zhuan need it? I'd like to ask you to appraise it for me."

Lin Ming pushed the jade box forwards the handsome youth. This plant was the 10,000 Year Old Corpse Grass that Lin Ming had found in the Eternal Demon Abyss.

10,000 Year Old Corpse Grass was similar to caterpillar fungus from the mortal world. It was a parasitic plant that would attach itself to the corpse of an Emperor level powerhouse, and would then use the skeleton as nourishment. As it grew, it would have to constantly devour the vitality of martial artists in order to mature.

When Lin Ming had adventured into the Eternal Demon Abyss, he'd seen Highlord Sandlight and Higbnhlord Sky Eye trick and kill their companions, turning them into flesh and blood sacrifices for the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass. They did so in order to feed the plant until it was satiated, and to let it then enter a deep hibernative state where it would be easier to capture.

Finally, Highlord Sandlight and Highlord Sky Eye had tried to kill Lin Ming, and were in turn turned into nourishment for the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass. Thus, the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass had fallen into Lin Ming's hands.

This was something that could only grow in the strange environment of the Eternal Demon Abyss. It was the same as extinct within the entire Sky Spill Continent.

Mainly looking at its wonderfully ugly appearance, coupled with the screeching and harsh sounds it emitted, this created an absolutely shocking effect that left the handsome youth speechless.

In fact, not only was the handsome youth dumbfounded, even the purple-veiled woman and the black-clothed old woman were bewildered. They were both high level figures within the Heavencraft Pavilion. They were both well read, and had experiencd with a great number of treasures before.

Still, they'd never seen something like this.

Lin Ming asked, "What does Young Hero think of this?"

The handsome youth didn't reply for the longest time. He didn't even know what this thing was called, much less how valuable it was, so how could he possibly reply to Lin Ming.However, what he could determine from this thing, was that he sure was an animal or plant, it had an extraordinary powerful blood vitality! If it were used to refine a medicinal supplement towards one's life force, it would certainly have miraculous effects.

In the face of Lin Ming's question, the handsome youth was left embarrassed. He had just spoken so proudly of his skills and with such gusto too, and yet in the blink of an eye he encountered something he couldn't identify. The loss of his face here had been immense.

The handsome youth grit his teeth and said, "I'll look for my Master."

Chapter 773 – Malice

Chapter 773 – Malice

…

…

…

After the handsome youth spoke these words he swiveled on the balls of his feet and left the Heavencraft Pavilion Headquarters. In truth, if he'd been looking for Zhuan Bixian, then all he would've needed to do was send a sound transmitting talisman. However, the reason that the handsome youth had left was simply because he didn't have the face to stay any longer.

After the handsome youth had left, the face of red-clothed old man, who'd also wanted to buy skyflower stones, flashed with a strange expression. He looked at the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass and then at Lin Ming, unknown thoughts going through his mind.

As for the old woman of from the Heavencraft Pavilion, she couldn't help but send Lin Ming a true essence sound transmission, "The item that this young hero has taken out is truly quite strange. This old woman has never heard nor seen something like it before. I wonder… if Young Hero has any other strange or peculiar treasures that you don't need, my Heavencraft Pavilion would be more than willing to sell them on commission for you."

Lin Ming replied, "If there's a chance, then I'd like to cooperate. Recently, I've been needing to purchase a great number of things."

The different materials that an alchemist needed were extremely scattered and varied in a cumbersome manner to gather. There were some valuable and precious treasures that simply couldn’t be bought. At this time, it was necessary to form good relations with a trading company.

After just a quarter hour, a white-clothed middle aged man was welcomed in by the purple-clothed young girl. As he stepped into the Heavencraft Pavilion’s second floor, his great build and piercingly bright eyes swept through the hall before locking onto Lin Ming.

“Is this the young hero who wishes to trade for my skyflower stones?”

This middle-aged martial artist was undoubtedly Zhuan Bixian. When a martial artist reached the Life Destruction realm it became difficult to judge just how old they were from their appearance. For instance, Xuan Yuqie had been over a thousand years old but she appeared to be a graceful and beautiful young women in her thirties, at the very height of her sexuality.

Lin Ming couldn’t decide just how old Zhuan Bixian was, but he could feel a raging fire of life coming from his body. It was obvious that this Zhuan Bixian still had a long life left in front of him and even a faint hope of stepping into the Divine Sea and becoming a Peerless Emperor.

“Senior Zhuan.” Lin Ming stood up and bowed in respect.

“Mm.” Zhuan Bixian nodded and then glanced at the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass that Lin Ming had set down. After a quarter hour of time staring at it, he finally revealed a thoughtful expression and said, “Little Brother, what is your name?”

“I am surnamed Lin, named Lanjian, Lin Lanjian.” Lin Ming thoughtlessly borrowed a name. He had already decided to step onto the road of an alchemist. In the future he would have to make a number of transactions that involved large amounts of spirit essence stones; it would be better if he kept his true name hidden. Moreover, in the four Divine Kingdoms, it was likely he would come into conflict with certain people or parties. His family and friends were still at Divine Phoenix Island and he didn’t want others to go seeking them for nefarious means.

This was the first time that Zhuan Bixian had seen 10,000 Year Corpse Grass. After a period of time, he speculated that it was Yin Corpse Grass. Although it had a different name from Lin Ming's 10,000 Year Corpse Grass, the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent were so far apart that it was normal for materials to have different names.

From a list of descriptions that Zhuan Bixian checked through, this Yin Corpse Grass was truly the exact same plant as 10,000 Year Corpse Grass.

Lin Ming didn't think that Zhuan Bixian's experiences would be so broad that he was able to recognize even this 10,000 Year Corpse Grass. He sincerely said, "Grandmaster Zhuan's knowledge is endless, it leaves me in true admiration."

"Haha, When I was still at the Asura Divine Kingdom I accidently came across a record of this plant in the ancient texts of that kingdom. This is something that no longer exists in the Sky Spill Continent. Perhaps it could be found in certain desolate deep sea islands."

Zhuan Bixian's words surprised Lin Ming. If this didn't exist on the Sky Spill Continent, then how would the ancient texts of the Asura Divine Kingdom have records of Yin Corpse Grass?

It was said that the Asura Divine Kingdom was a land of demonic path martial cultivators. Was it possible that the Asura Divine Kingdom had some sort of relationship with the Demon Emperor or Netherworld Great Emperor who had come from the Holy Demon Continent?

All of these thoughts raced through Lin Ming's mind. But he didn't think too much of it. He asked Zhuan Bixian, "Grandmaster Zhuan, do you have any interest in this Yin Corpse Grass?"

Zhuan Bixian said, "Although Young Hero Lin's Yin Corpse Grass still isn't fully matured, it is still a top ingredient for refining blood type miracle medicines. It is indeed truly useful to me. Though I must say that in all fairness, this Yin Corpse Grass is more precious than all three of my skyflower stones combined. I won't take advantage of a little junior. If you have anything else you might need, then speak it."

Lin Ming was overjoyed as he heard this. He feared that Zhuan Bixian might not show any interest in the 10,000 Year Corpse Grass. "Senior Zhuan, I also happen to need several dragonspine grasses. I wonder if Senior Zhuan has any news about that?"

As Lin Ming finished speaking, Zhuan Bixian laughed out loud, "Dragonspine grass is even more valuable than skyflower stones; perhaps even more valuable than the Yin Corpse Grass you brought out. If I had any news of dragonspine grass I would certainly rush over myself. Dragonspine grass isn't something that is publically sold; I too want to buy it."

Lin Ming was dazed, and then a bit disappointed. The materials he needed were just too rare. To begin with, they were already difficult to look for, and even if someone were to find it, they would likely use it themselves.

"How about this. I'll give you another 5000 spirit essence stones. How about it?" Zhuan Bixian asked.

"Mm, thank you very much Senior Zhuan." Lin Ming readily agreed. Although 10,000 Year Corpse Grass was indeed rare and precious, it simply didn't have any use to him. Zhuan Bixian's offer was very fair.

The two finished the transaction on the spot. Lin Ming obtained the three crystalline skyflower stones. This sort of stone appeared like absolute white jade, except that there were some small flowery textures on the surface, thus it had gained this name.

Zhuan Bixian paid Heavencraft Pavilion their part of the commission and bid his farewells in a satisfied mood.

Lin Ming also bid Heavencraft Pavilion goodbye. After obtaining a jade card with Heavencraft Pavilion's sound transmission mark he left without speaking to anyone.

Lin Ming flew out at full speed, opening his divine sense to the limit. After he left Witch Creek City he changed direction several times before finally arriving in a jungle.

At this time, a voice suddenly sounded out from behind Lin Ming. "Young Hero Lin, I didn't think I would run into you here. Do you plan on heading to the Hail Province? What a coincidence, this old man just happens to be going that way too. Maybe we can travel together?"

Lin Ming turned around to see that the person speaking was that red-clothed old man he had bumped into at Heavencraft Pavilion who also wanted to purchase skyflower tones. At this time, the old man had a friendly smile on his face as if he were surprised to meet Lin Ming here by chance.

"Coincidence? I think not." Lin Ming faintly smiled at the red-clothed old man. "After I left Witch Creek City I changed directions several times but you still chased after me all this time. What? Is there something you want from me?"

The red-clothed old man's smile stiffened and he barked out a laugh, "Young Hero Lin is too funny. How could this old man possibly follow you? This truly is a meeting of chance. However, I must say that Young Hero Lin bought up three skyflower stones at once; perhaps you could consider selling one to me? I can offer you 3000 spirit essence stones to buy one of your skyflower stones. How about it?"

"3000 spirit essence stones?" Lin Ming smiled, "If you offered me 30,000 spirit essence stones then I might have considered giving you one."

"Really…" The red-clothed old man grimaced, "This old man is sincerely trying to make a deal with you and yet you ask for such a ridiculous price. Being too greedy in life may get you in trouble!"

The red-clothed old man said, an obvious threat in his words.

Lin Ming slowly traced his spatial ring. He sneered, “Why do you still waver over these scruples? Are you not attacking me because you’re scared someone is protecting me from behind?”

“Hehe, brat, there’s no need to lie to me. I don’t know which great power you originate from, but what I do know is that if there truly was someone protecting you in secret then you wouldn’t have run out of the city and changed your direction several times in fear that someone might be following you. Those three skyflower stones are far too useful for this old man. If you’re smart then be a good little boy and…”

The red-clothed man suddenly attacked midway in his speech. Although he was a second stage Life Destruction martial artist, he still attacked a late Revolving Core junior with a sneak attack. The red-clothed old man didn’t have a sect or great family backing him. The reason that he could reach this point had all been because of his discretion, cunning, and ruthless decisiveness.

He took out a slender soft sword from his spatial ring. The red sword was like the strike of a viper as it stabbed towards Lin Ming’s throat.

The red-clothed old man’s sword was extremely fast. With his own incomparably thick true essence fused into it, it was like a beam of light!

Lin Ming’s lips curved up in a murderous grin. He traced his spatial ring and in the next moment a spear light flashed out like a bolt of lightning. In the next moment, there was an explosive sound as if space itself was being torn apart. The red-clothed old man’s sword light was crushed to nothing by the spear light, and the spear light continued unabated as it cut towards the red-clothed old man’s waist like a deathly guillotine.

“What!?”

The red-clothed old man was beyond shocked. He shouted out in panic and was about to take something about from his spatial ring, but at that moment, he felt his movements suddenly become extremely slow. All he could do was look on helplessly as Lin Ming's spear swept towards his waist.

Peng!

His protective true essence was ripped apart like paper. The red-clothed old man gave a miserable scream as his spine was directly snapped in half and all his organs came flying out. His body was torn in half by Lin Ming's spear.

The red-clothed old man's eyes were wide as he watched all the blood leave his body. He died with nothing but unsatisfied regret to keep him company.

Lin Ming grabbed the red-clothed old man's spatial ring and inventoried the contents. There were 8000-9000 spirit essence stones as well as some wood spirit jade and various pills and medicines and even a furnace.

It was obvious that this old man had been an alchemist.

The four Divine Kingdoms were rich in resources and the martial artists here normally came from well off families. This red-clothed old man was only at the second stage of Life Destruction but he was actually able to catch up to 60-70% of Xuan Wuji's wealth. Of course, this was because he was an alchemist.

Lin Ming put away all these things and then turned towards the empty space in the jungle. He raised his spear and indifferently said, "You've been watching for so long, how about you come out so I can meet you?"

When Lin Ming left Witch Creek City he had felt some people following him. It wasn't one person but two people.

Lin Ming had thought that the two people had been together, but now it seems that wasn't the case.

There was no response from the jungle. Lin Ming sneered and then pointed his spear somewhere in the void. “You think I’m lying to you? I’ll say it once more, come out! Otherwise I’ll stab you!”

“Wait! Young Hero Lin, stay your hand!” An old voice sounded out. Then, space distorted and a black-clothed old woman rushed out in a panic. She was the old woman Lin Ming had seen at Heavencraft Pavilion.

“Oh? Is this how your Heavencraft Pavilion does business?” A thick killing intent flashed in Lin Ming’s eyes.

“Young Hero Lin, please don’t misunderstand me, the situation isn’t what you think it is. My Heavencraft Trading Company is one of the three great trading companies of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. How could I think of destroying our reputation for a mere three skyflower stones?” The old woman rapidly explained. Her words were also fairly reasonable. The Heavencraft Trading Company had existed for 6000 years. If they really did send out assassins to kill and rob their wealthy guests then it would have been impossible for them to last until now.

“Then what do you want from me?” Lin Ming indifferently asked.

Chapter 774 – Xiaoxiao

Chapter 774 – Xiaoxiao

…

…

…

The old woman from Heavencraft Pavilion had a cultivation at the second stage of Life Destruction. Moreover, her foundation was ordinary and she wasn't that much stronger than that red-clothed old man who had died just now. With Lin Ming's strength he could instantly kill her.

This made the old woman not even dare to take a deep breath as she faced Lin Ming. Her palms became wet with sweat. She never thought that this mere late Revolving Core cultivation youth was actually such an evil star. Just where had he come from?

"What are you here for? Don't tell me that you came to save me?" Lin Ming sneered as he asked again.

The black-clothed old woman bitterly smiled as she heard this, "Although Young Hero Lin might think it a bit absurd, the truth is that… I really did come to rescue Young Hero Lin. That red-clothed old man that Young Hero Lin killed just now, I happen to know a bit about him. He does not come from a sect and has an exceedingly poor reputation. When he was young he joined forces with someone and killed a good number of people to steal their possessions and were considered evil and fierce. Young Hero Lin's cultivation is only at the Revolving Core realm and you revealed a great deal of wealth at my Heavencraft Trading Company and took away the skyflower stones that he wanted. At that time, I saw that old man's devilish expression and guessed he might chase Young Hero Lin down, so I quietly followed him here."

“And?” Lin Ming expressionlessly said. The black-clothed old woman said her behavior was absurd so she should have an absurd reason to go along with it. Lin Ming didn’t believe that the Heavencraft Trading Company had such kind intentions that they would send escorts to follow every guest that came shopping at their trading company.

“I do not dare to lie to Sir Lin. I only thought that since Young Hero Lin isn’t poor and was able to put out such a wonderful treasure that you must be a genius from some powerful force coming out to adventure. Perhaps you might not even come from the four Divine Kingdoms, so I suddenly had the thought of becoming friends. I wished to help Young Hero Lin at a critical moment so that Young Hero Lin would owe the Heavencraft Trading Company a favor and might even help my Heavencraft Trading Company with some minor business. But, I never thought that Young Hero Lin would be so skilled that you would be able to instantly kill that second stage Life Destruction master as well as see through my hiding skill with such ease. This old woman’s actions must truly be laughable to you.”

The black-clothed old woman ruefully smiled as she spoke to here. She had no choice but to completely reveal her motives. In fact, this reasoning seemed very credible.

“Help the Heavencraft Trading Company with some business? So, the Heavencraft Trading Company has fallen into some trouble and you wish to ask the power behind me for help? You think that since there’s such an illness you can go to any doctor to cure it?”

“Yes…” The black-clothed old woman deeply sighed. “Young Hero Lin, although my Heavencraft Trading Company doesn’t have much fighting strength, we have a very deep inheritance and very rich channels. If Young Hero Lin could help us out then I have complete confidence I can find the dragonspine grass that Young Hero Lin needs.”

As soon as the black-clothed old woman spoke such tempting words, Lin Ming’s heart stirred, “How do you plan on looking for it?”

“My Heavencraft Trading Company might not have dragonspine grass but we do have materials that are even more rare and precious than dragonspine grass. We can easily exchange them with some alchemist.”

Lin Ming nodded, “Since that’s the case… that’s fine. If you encounter any troubles then tell me in advance. But, if there is any life-threatening danger involved, I will give up halfway if needed.”

The black-clothed old woman was surprised. She originally wanted to borrow the powerful force behind Lin Ming, but now it seems that Lin Ming himself would take action.

The black-clothed old woman couldn’t accurately estimate Lin Ming’s combat strength. If he could instantly kill a second stage Life Destruction martial artist then he should have strength at least equal to the third stage of Life Destruction. He might even be stronger than that. As for how much stronger, she had no idea.

If she had his help, then perhaps they could ride out this chaotic storm.

“Young Hero Lin, can you follow me back? It isn’t convenient to speak here.”

Lin Ming nodded and followed the black-clothed old woman back to Witch Creek City.

As they re-entered Heavencraft Pavilion, Lin Ming directly ascended to the highest floor.

This was an elegantly decorated loft. In the room, there was only the black-clothed woman and the purple-veiled woman that Lin Ming had seen before. This purple-veiled woman personally rose up and poured a cup of tea for Lin Ming. “This is the famous snowflower tea from the Nine Peaked Snowy Mountains of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. It has the effect of refreshing the mind and nourishing the soul. Sir Lin, please have a taste.”

The purple-veiled woman respectfully said. She had already heard the black-clothed old woman describe Lin Ming’s strength. She didn’t think that with Lin Ming’s young age and his late Revolving Core cultivation, he would actually have such extraordinary combat strength that he was able to instantly kill a second stage Life Destruction master. Thus, she had become increasingly respectful towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming lifted the teacup and swept his perception through it. The tea contained a very rich and pure wood origin energy; it was clearly a treasure amongst teas.

"Teatime can wait for later. If you two have any matters then please speak frankly."

The purple-clothed woman bit her lips and said with a trace of bitterness and pain, "Sir Lin, I am the daughter of the Heavencraft Trading Company's Company Head. My name is Heavencraft Xiaoxiao, but you may refer to me as simply Xiaoxiao. Two months ago my father was in an accident and he perished because of that. Since then, I have had to personally take temporary charge of the trading company. Luckily, I have had Grandma White's assistance and thus I've been able to deal with all the issues occurring. However, one month ago, two of my uncles decided to cause trouble because of the issue of succession to be Company Head. Currently, a portion of my family's Council of Elders have been bribed by my two uncles. They intend to deprive me of my position of Company Head…"

As the purple-clothed woman spoke to here, she seemed to remember the pitiful death of her father. Her beautiful face turned mournful, a deep sadness emanating from her that made one feel pity for her.

Lin Ming was silent for a moment. "Miss Xiaoxiao, are you saying that you wish for me to support you to become the Family Head? Your Heavencraft Trading Company is one of the three great trading companies of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, right? With a 6000 year inheritance, shouldn't you have some masters on the Destiny Decree? I think you look down on me too much!"

Heavencraft Xiaoxiao shook her head. "There are a total of 360 individuals on the Destiny Decree. A bit more than half of them are part of the four Divine Kingdoms. Divided down, there are a few dozen in each Divine Kingdom. All of these characters are existences that can move the sun and the skies in their Divine Kingdoms. How could they possibly listen to such a minor struggle in our small trading company?

"In the four Divine Kingdoms, all of the great trading companies merely seem glamorous and powerful on the outside. In the end, us trading companies are merely businesses – we are not sects. Although we have countless resources and wealth, if a powerful force really wants to move on us then we're nothing more than fat pigs."

Heavencraft Xiaoxiao sighed as she spoke to here. In the face of absolute strength, a trading company was simply too weak and fragile. In order for the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdoms to have absolute control within their lands, they kept strict control over the martial forces of the three great trading companies. Especially in the last several hundred years there had been all sorts of limits and rules placed on them. Now, the Heavencraft Trading Company could only rely on martial artists raised in the family. But in terms of inheritance, how could a trading company possible compare with a true sect? Although they could cultivate some forces, it was simply far too limited.

Lin Ming didn't immediately agree. Instead he asked, "Although there is a very small number of Destiny Decree masters, can't you still pay a price high enough to tempt them to action?"

"Yes, but in accordance to family rules, the majority of resources can only be used by direction of the Company Head as well as the Council of Elders. There are currently people in the Council of Elders that support me, and also those who support my two uncles, and they are unable to come to a unanimous decision. Thus, no one can move the family's treasures. It isn't just me, but my two uncles are in the same situation. The dragonspine grass that Young Hero Lin wishes for can be prepared by me in seven days. If Young Hero Lin is willing to help me out in this matter, then I can also find other resources besides dragonspine grass as thanks."

"I understand. But, I will say this in advance. If there is anything that threatens my life then I won't rush into death for you. At that time, our agreement will also come to an end."

"That's naturally expected. If my two uncles can find a match that even Sir Lin cannot compete with then I can only blame myself for having an unlucky life." Xiaoxiao hurried responded with a happy heart as she saw Lin Ming agree.

………

After Lin Ming came to an agreement with Xiaoxiao, he entered into a chamber of Heavencraft Pavilion to train. As for the spirit essence stones that Lin Ming used for training, Xiaoxiao was not cheap at all. The training chamber was filled with top grade true essence stones and spirit essence stones, filling the chamber with an incomparably rich heaven and earth origin energy.

From the time that Lin Ming had broken through to the late Revolving Core realm and cut down Xuan Wuji until now, several months had already passed. Although Lin Ming had spent a great deal of energy studying alchemy techniques, he didn't lag behind in his cultivation either. His cultivation had gone from the very beginning of the late Revolving Core to having steadily stabilized himself in the late Revolving Core realm. With the help of the jade slips that Fairy Feng had left for him, his understanding of the Concept of Fire was also steadily increasing. Now, if he could re-enter the God Transforming Mirror then he believed he could easily last in the second world for at least 120 breaths.

Ca!

With a thrust of his spear, the condensed power of fire pierced through a specially crafted metal plate target. The target split up into pieces before being churned to fragments underneath raging fire true essence.

"My Concept of Fire Annihilation has risen yet another step. My self-created Bury the Heavens and Chain of Stars have also increased in power by 20-30%. If I could fight Xuan Wuji now, then I should be able to kill him in frontal combat instead of having to wear him down with superior endurance, recovery ability, and defensive power. However, it's a pity that my Concept of Fire can progress astronomically with the inheritance of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, but my Concept of Thunder is actually advancing so slowly and with such difficulty too."

Lin Ming lightly sighed. Inheritances and resources were simply too important for the growth of a genius. Even a clever woman couldn't cook a meal without rice; it was impossible to get anywhere without proper supplies. Even with the Heretical God Force giving him an immense advantage in comprehending the Concept of Thunder, there still wasn't anything he could do.

Fortunately, comprehending a Concept was different from comprehending a battle spirit. This was because the earlier one formed their own battle spirit, the more potential it would have in the future. If one formed their battle spirit too late then the losses would be immeasurable, because the grade of a battle spirit would slowly rise with the growth of a martial artist's cultivation and will.

But Concepts and laws were different. Even if one comprehended them at a very late period, they could still catch up later once they reached large success in their future cultivation.

And just as Lin Ming was planning to meditate on the Concept of Fire Annihilation again, a flame suddenly lit in front of him. This was the light of a sound transmitting talisman.

As Lin Ming heard the message within, he slightly frowned. It seemed as if trouble had finally come to his door. It wasn't pleasant to be disturbed during training, but since he had accepted benefits from others he naturally had to help them in their matters. If Lin Ming didn't have the Heavencraft Trading Company look for dragonspine grass for him, then he wouldn't necessarily be able to find it – at least not in a reasonable period of time.

Lin Ming opened the chamber doors and put on a white training outfit. He began moving towards the front hall of Heavencraft Pavilion. By the time he arrived, the hall was already filled with people.

Four old men were imperiously sitting in front. Behind them were seven or eight youths. At this moment, Xiaoxiao was arguing with the four old men.

Chapter 775 – Saber Light

Chapter 775 – Saber Light

…

…

…

“Uncle Yan, Uncle Luoyan, you two have followed my father for over 50 years! Just how did my father treat you in the past? Uncle Yan, you’re not even a clansman of my Heavencraft Family to begin with! When you were faced with misfortune in Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, my father was the one to take you in and shelter you. He placed his trusted in you, and you managed to successfully pass into the Life Destruction realm through my family, and become a secondary Elder. I’ve always treated you as an uncle, and yet you still treat me this way?”

“And you too Uncle Luoyan. Your eldest son was just an ordinary talent, and had both his soul and meridians grievously damaged in a fight. If it weren’t for the medicines that my father provided, which managed to drag him back from death’s door, then how could he even have survived, much less reach the Revolving Core realm? My father’s corpse hasn’t even grown cold, and the mourning period hasn’t even ended. Yet you have still allied with my other uncle and are trying to force me to resign my position as the sole successor. Can you still even face my father in the afterlife?”

Xiaoxiao’s eyes were full of anger. Her beautiful body fiercely heaved, obviously because her mood was so tremulous with rage.

In front of her, that middle-aged man called Uncle Luoyan only shook his head, a mixture of guilt and helplessness intertwined on his face. Beside him, Uncle Yan was looking on at Xiaoxiao as usual.

He chuckled and said, “Humph, little Heavencraft girl, do you really think that your father did all those things for me out of kindness and generosity? He sheltered me only because I possessed a rare treasure. After the treasure was taken by him, it was obvious that he would have to treat me well! Moreover, he felt that I had value and tried to work me to death for the trading company. If I wasn’t useful to him, do you think he would be so nice? Don’t make me laugh!”

“We are just taking what we have earned with our hard work. In fact, we should have more! You said that Brother Yun’s eldest son was forcefully brought to the Revolving Core realm after he was saved, and indeed this is true. However, what about you? It’s not like your talent is surprising or startling. You’re still at the Xiantian realm at 21 years of age, and yet you have used the most resources!”

As Xiaoxiao heard these words she mirthlessly smiled, “Betrayal is the only truth. Human nature is that of greed to begin with; no one can ever be content. My father’s vision was incorrect, and he allowed a wolf into his house. No one else can be blamed for this!”

As Xiaoxiao spoke, another middle-aged man dryly coughed and stood up from his chair. “Xiaoxiao, I have watched you grow up and you truly do have talent in business. However, you are just far too young. The Heavencraft Trading Company needs a powerful and experienced leader at the helm. You are far from being capable enough at this time and age.”

“In the past two months after your father’s accident, the family’s income has already fallen by 30%. You should remember that our Heavencraft Trading Company takes in a great deal of money, but our annual tax to the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom is even greater. With so many other great expenses involved, our foundation will be shaken if we can’t raise the family income. I am also being forced by the Council of Elders to quickly resolve this issue.”

As a middle-aged man, he had an appearance that made it seem as if he were sacrificing everything for the family. Xiaoxiao’s entire body trembled with anger, “Being forced? Great Uncle, only you would have the nerve to say that!”

“Hahaha!” At this moment, a bright eyed and handsome man laughed out loud, “Young cousin, you have misunderstood our intentions. We just want to help lighten the burden on your shoulders, and this is all in the best interest for the future of the trading company. Young cousin, how about you move out of Heavencraft Pavilion first and return to the main family residence?”

Heavencraft Pavilion was just a place where the business of Heavencraft Trading Company was conducted. As for the family’s residence, it wasn’t here but at a sprawling mansion located at the outskirts of Witch Creek City.

Because Xiaoxiao was being suppressed by her two uncles, she worried that she would be placed under house arrest if she returned home. It had been a long time since she had left Heavencraft Pavilion. Now, her room and board were all here.

“Heavencraft Yan, you hypocritically fake gentleman!”

Heavencraft Xiaoxiao looked at this so-called older cousin with hatred and loathing. If there was this playboy around, then once she returned home not only would she loser her position as Company Head but even her chastity might be taken!

“Aiyaya, Xiaoxiao, you are too willful. Since this is the case, I’ll have no choice but to ask others to escort you back.” As the handsome man’s voice fell, three old Life Destruction masters stepped forward, encircling Xiaoxiao.

Beside Xiaoxiao, the black-clothed old woman suddenly tensed up, “Are you trying to rebel!?”

“Grandma White, I advise you to understand your limits and to not make this hard for everyone involved. Everyone here is a part of Heavencraft Pavilion, and with three to one odds, you simply have no chance of winning. If you’re accidently injured....”

One of the old men coldly smiled. His hand already had already touched his spatial ring, and was about to attack. However, at this moment, his heart felt as if it had fallen into an icy lake. He could feel that a thick killing intent had suddenly locked in on him!

As he looked up, he was surprised to see that 100 feet away, there was a youth in white training robes casually standing there with his arms behind his back. From just standing there, it seemed as if he held everyone present in the palm of his hands.

“Who are you? How did you come in?” The old man stared at Lin Ming like a cornered wolf. It was obvious that he hadn’t come here with good intentions in mind.

Lin Ming completely disregarded these people. To these ungrateful maggots who had no compassion or virtue, those who would take advantage of the death of the Company Head to bully his children and covet his property, he simply didn’t have the least bit of favorable impression towards them.

He faintly glanced at Xiaoxiao and asked with a true essence sound transmission, “It’s just these people?”

“There is still another Great Uncle of mine who hasn’t come today.” As Xiaoxiao saw Lin Ming appear, a sudden hope ignited in her heart.

“Two peak second stage Life Destruction and one first stage Life Destruction.” Lin Ming thought that these cultivations were quite ordinary. He seemed the entire Heavencraft Family’s strength was equal to the South Sea Demon Region, which was also an ordinary fifth-grade sect.

The four Divine Kingdoms were a quasi sixth-grade sect, so it was reasonable that their subordinate forces would also be ordinary fifth-grade sects.

“Young boy, this old man is speaking to you. Are you deaf!?”

As the old man saw Lin Ming ignore his question, his face suddenly became gloomy and twisted into an ugly grimace.

Xiaoxiao’s older cousin, Heavencraft Yan, sneered as he said, “There isn’t anything to ask. This idiot is just a helper that Xiaoxiao has drawn in. I must say little cousin, your judgment is far too horrible. To look for a boy who hasn't even reached Life Destruction, haha…he isn't even enough for a single bite!"

Heavencraft Yan turned to Lin Ming, a mocking grin on his face, "I really feel bad for you. You think you're a hero coming to save a damsel in distress? Hahaha, you'll just have to regret the choices you made today, you toad trying to eat swan meat. Today, I will cut off your hands, your feet, and your manhood. I want you to beg for – "

Heavencraft Yan didn't even finish his sentence when his vision suddenly blurred. He felt as if an ice cold bucket of water had been poured all over him, causing his entire body to tingle with numbness, and was no longer able to move even a single inch.

Heavencraft Yan was shocked. Before he could respond, all he saw was Lin Ming's chilling face appearing before him.

A palm came slamming down.

Pulse Cutting Palm!

Peng!

Heavencraft Yan only felt his dantian shake as a brutal and tyrannical energy broke into his meridians, recklessly destroying everything it came into contact with. He vomited a great mouthful of blood as he flew backwards, smashing into a wall.

All the martial artists present were stunned. They never thought that Lin Ming would suddenly attack, and with horrifying movements as fast and fading as ghosts and demons!

"Brat, you actually did something so cruel! I will kill you!" Heavencraft Yan's father saw that Lin Ming's palm attack had obviously wounded Heavencraft Yan's meridians and dantian. His heart surging with anger, he took a furious step forward and drew out a treasure saber from his spatial ring before cutting down at Lin Ming's head. This saber contained the full force of his might, and if a normal Revolving Core martial artist were to face it, their head would burst apart!

"Brother Feng, be careful!" The old man surnamed Yan hurriedly warned as he saw Heavencraft Yan's father become blind with rage. Even though Heavencraft Yan's talent wasn't too outstanding, and although he had only reached the late Revolving Core realm at 40 years of age with the help of a staggering amount of resources, his cultivation was still on par with Lin Ming's. Even so, Lin Ming had managed to grievously wound him with a single palm strike. Even if part of this outcome was due to it being a sneak attack, this still proved that Lin Ming's strength far exceeded martial artists at the same level.

Before old man Yan's voice even fell upon the ears of the others, there was a loud metallic ringing sound. Lin Ming had actually grabbed Heavencraft Feng's saber with a single bare hand, his other hand forming a solid fist that pounded towards Heavencraft Feng's chest.

Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!

Kacha!

With a muffled thumping sound, all of Heavencraft Feng's ribs were cleanly broken apart. His entire chest sunk down and he flew backwards, crashing into the wall and deeply embedding himself there.

As for Lin Ming, he still held onto the treasure saber in his hand. He poured a wisp of his battle spirit into it and casually threw it back out with the saber point whistling straight towards Heavencraft Feng's heart.

Xiaoxiao was frightened as she saw Lin Ming's actions. Although she hated these people to her bone, she didn't want to kill them since they were her family, after all.

In fact, despite living for so long and breaking through to the Xiantian realm, but she had never engaged in a true life or death struggle, let alone killed someone.

"No!"

In the moment that Xiaoxiao shouted out, the saber point was less than three feet from Heavencraft Feng's heart!

Heavencraft Feng was alarmed to the point where he felt as if his soul had fled his body. It was already too late to dodge, and he could only crazily galvanize his protective true essence in the vain hopes of blocking this saber.

At that moment, he could even feel the cold light of the saber point touch the point between his eyebrows.

Lin Ming frowned as he heard Xiaoxiao's shout. With a slight shift in his thoughts, he moved his battle spirit, changing the trajectory of the saber.

Puff!

The saber point strayed three inches to the side of its original target. From the original target of Heavencraft Feng's heart, it instead stabbed into his right lung. Heavencraft Feng's protective true essence had been torn apart as if it were nothing more than wet paper.

Blood spurted out. Heavencraft Feng had been nailed to the wall with his own saber, the hilt still trembling.

Lin Ming turned towards Xiaoxiao.

Xiaoxiao was spooked. She had never seen Lin Ming fight before; she had only heard Grandma White's description of him. Even so, she never thought that Lin Ming would be so powerful, and that his actions would be so decisive. As soon as he took action, he had nearly killed Heavencraft Feng.

"Sir Lin, please do not kill them. If the Council of Elders find out that I hired an outsider to help kill people of my Heavencraft Family, then that will cause dangerous rumors to appear. My other Great Uncle will use this as an excuse to have the Council of Elders punish me with an expulsion or sanctions.

Although Xiaoxiao may be naturally kind-hearted, she wasn't just a wishy-washy vase that simply stood there. She was well aware that if people started dying, then all conflicts would rapidly escalate. Even if she became the Company Head by killing her way to the top, it would become difficult to govern the family in the future. After all, Lin Ming couldn’t stay with her forever. Once Lin Ming left, various conflicts would erupt, and she would die if she couldn’t keep a tight grip on her position.

Chapter 776 – Sweep Through All

Chapter 776 – Sweep Through All

…

…

…

The sudden change in events stunned all the martial artists present. Heavencraft Feng was embedded in the wall, vomiting out great mouthfuls of blood.

Heavencraft Feng had cultivated to the first stage of Life Destruction; and yet, he had still nearly died a miserable death in just a single exchange with Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's cultivation was merely at the late Revolving Core realm!

"Just where is this boy from?"

Old man Yan and the other second stage Life Destruction old man felt as if they had been backed into to the edge of a cliff. Those several young martial artists also looked like they had seen a ghost appear in front of them. Lin Ming appeared to be only 20 some years old; in fact, he might even be younger than them.

They were also juniors like him, so how could the disparity in their strength be so great?

"If he defeated a first stage Life Destruction martial artist that easily, then his strength must be at least the peak of the second stage of Life Destruction, or maybe even at the third stage of Life Destruction."

If Lin Ming's strength was only at the second stage of Life Destruction, then if they gave it their all, Ling Ming would still be an opponent that they could fight against. However, if he had the strength of a third stage Life Destruction martial artist, then it didn't matter, even if there were several more of them.

Lin Ming unconsciously exuded a formless killing intent from his body, which was known as the Death God force field.. As old man Yan and the other second stage Life Destruction Elder were enveloped in this killing intent, both of them felt extremely suppressed.

This made them that much more afraid to do anything.

Once they started a fight, then there would be no end to it. If they angered Lin Ming and provoked their own deaths, then that would truly be a miserable way to die.

Old man and the other middle-aged man looked at each other, both seeing the hesitation in the other's eyes.

Old man Yan hesitated for a moment and then stepped forwards. He said to Lin Ming, "Brat, this old man will fight with you. Victory and defeat will be decided in three moves!

Old man Yan's cultivation was at the second stage of Life Destruction. He couldn't see just what the limits of Lin Ming's strength were; he could only probe them through a fight. He would challenge him in advance to avoid shaming the both of them, and having the matter devolve further. At the very least, there shouldn't be a life-threatening situation. Old man Yan also put out a limit of three moves because he was also lacking in self confidence. He thought that even if he wasn't Lin Ming's match, if he used everything he had in these three moves, then he should still be able to defend himself.

Old man Yan didn't wait for Lin Ming's reply. He drew out a soft sword from his spatial ring and cut at Lin Ming's throat.

"Lotus Heart Sword!"

Old man Yan thrust his sword out, an extremely pure and rich wood-attribute energy constantly emitting from it. Without a doubt, this old man Yan was a wood-attribute martial artist. He also had understanding towards the Concept of Wood that was just taking shape.

The sword light wove into a blue lotus in front of Lin Ming, several dozen blue lotus flower petals spinning around, cutting towards him.

Everyone stared with wide eyes, waiting to see just what the limits of Lin Ming's strength were. If his strength was similar to old man Yan's then they wouldn't need to care too much. They would only need another master or two to come in order to suppress Lin Ming. But, if Lin Ming's strength far surpassed old man Yan's, then there wasn't anything they could do.

"Too weak."

Lin Ming shook his head. After arriving at this level of cultivation, looking at the entire Sky Spill Continent, there was no longer a young genius anywhere that could stand on par with him. As for those masters of the older generation, none of them were able to make him take them seriously unless their cultivations were at least at the peak of the fourth stage of Life Destruction.

He gently traced his spatial ring and a long red spear leap into his hands. Without using any martial skill or even opening the Heretical God Force, all Lin Ming did was pour a wisp of his battle spirit into his long spear.

With that, a red light flashed out as a harsh grating sound surged forth.

Kacha!

The blue lotus that old man Yan formed was pierced through by Lin Ming's spear. The lotus completely cracked and the sharp lotus petals turned into scattered wood-attribute energy that faded away.

"This is bad!"

Old man Yan was horrified. He didn't think that after stepping up, his result would be the exact same as Heavencraft Feng's. He thought that against this enemy, he should still be able to protect himself within three moves. But now he hadn't even been able to block a single one!

“Young Hero, show mercy…!”

Old man Yan shouted out these words, but all he received was a cold sneer from Lin Ming. To ask for forgiveness at this time, this old man truly didn’t care for face. Lin Ming was well aware that this old man Yan was probing him. If old man Yan fought Lin Ming to an even standstill, then the other people would have swarmed him, suppressing him through superior numbers. Now, however, this old man Yan had been absolutely defeated by him and all he thought about was begging for forgiveness.

Shameless.

Lin Ming had also heard Xiaoxiao’s argument with this old man Yan. He knew that this old man was nothing but an ungrateful bastard. So, not only did he not forgive him, but his disgust and anger only increased by several points.

Lin Ming didn’t take old man Yan’s life, however. Instead, he deliberately manipulated his true essence to ravage the old man’s meridians, directly tearing all his meridians to pieces!

Old man Yan gave a miserable scream as he flew back dozens of feet, finally crashing into a table and vase, smashing them into bits.

Old man Yan had countless wounds on his body, and nearly all of his meridians and bones were broken. He didn’t even have the strength to move his limbs.

This sort of injury would be impossible to treat without top quality miracle medicines. And, even he did, his wounds would never recover to the same state they were before. Old man Yan wasn’t young anymore and the fires of his life were already simmering low. Even if he used the best medicines available his strength would still drop one or two realms.

“You….” Old man didn’t know just how miserable his current condition was. All he felt was anger and despair in his heart, and that him speaking this word was a result of the mental attack coming from such a heavy wound. Then, he spat out a mouthful of blood and fainted.

As the other martial artists of Heavencraft Trading Company saw this, all of them began to feel fear. Even a second stage Life Destruction martial artist was not Lin Ming's match!

Beside Lin Ming, Xiaoxiao was secretly pleased and overjoyed. While she didn't wish to kill other members of the Heavencraft Family, she also couldn't bear to see such a wolf that betrayed her father. She wished that all of those traitors martial arts would be wasted. Lin Ming's actions had vented out some of the anger in her heart.

At this time, the other middle-aged man had an extremely ugly expression. It was just a match of three moves and yet Lin Ming had been so heavy handed in his actions. At this time, he wouldn't do something so stupid as stir up any trouble with Lin Ming. As the weaker man, all he could do was endure this.

He depressed the angst in his heart and forcefully smiled, "Young Hero's strength is astounding. May I ask where you come from?"

The middle-aged man asked this because he wanted to investigate Lin Ming's status.

However, Lin Ming was disinclined to bother him to begin with. He certainly wouldn't reveal his origin in the South Horizon Region, and there was definitely no need to say anything at all. It would be easy to see through any sort of fabricated identity.

Seeing Lin Ming failing to respond, the middle-aged man didn't grow angry. Instead, he started speaking to Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission.

As Heavencraft Xiaoxiao saw this event unfold, she felt her heart unconsciously tighten, and used a hand to tightly grab onto Lin Ming's arm. She didn't need to hear the conversation to guess just what was happening. Her great uncle must be asking why Lin Ming would bother helping her, and once the topic of dragonspine grass was to be brought about, her two great uncles might even be able beat her in obtaining the grass for Lin Ming.. They would be able to entice him with benefits that she couldn't match.

After all, Lin Ming was only someone that she had coincidently met. It was possible he might be tempted by their offer. Once she lost Lin Ming's backing, she would completely lose all status in the family.

"Not interested."

Lin Ming suddenly said. The middle-aged man's expression stiffened. As for Heavencraft Xiaoxiao, she let out a long breath of relief as the part of the tension left her body.

That was a close call.

The middle-aged man didn't seem willing to accept this answer. He continued to speak, offering Lin Ming many other advantages. However, Lin Ming rejected him all the same.

"Young Hero, since that is the case, then I won't stay here wasting your time. Let's go." The various youths around him picked up the injured and left.

Go?

You think you can just come when you want to, and leave when you want to?

Lin Ming glanced at Heavencraft Xiaoxiao, who revealed a hesitant look in return. However, she still let them leave. Although Lin Ming could completely exterminate each and every one of them here, she simply couldn't handle the consequences. If she captured all of them, then she would still face pressure from her family, most likely leading her to free them under this pressure. That would be an embarrassing move that would make her lose face and supporters.

She was only in her early twenties, and had truly become an adult just several years ago. With her current foundation in the family, just how many people would be willing to support her?"

"Young Hero Lin, thank you." Xiaoxiao said with heartfelt admiration after everyone left. "Young Hero Lin, after this matter is settled, not only will I find dragonspine grass for you, I will also pay you 20,000 spirit essence stones in thanks. Additionally, if you have any other materials you need in the future, then please feel free to ask. I will try as hard as I can to find and sell them to you at the lowest price possible.” Xiaoxiao increased her previous reward. She was afraid that Lin Ming would be won over by her great uncles.

As Lin Ming decided to step onto the road to being an alchemist, he naturally wouldn’t reject such great conditions from Xiaoxiao. Instead, he was concerned about whether or not Xiaoxiao would be able to obtain the position of Family Head if this farce continued.

Lin Ming said, “You only had me drive them out and they didn’t suffer any great loss. If this trend continues then you simply won’t be destined to become the Family Head.”

Xiaoxiao certainly knew this too. She said, “Young Hero Lin, my foundation is too shallow in the family, so it’s impossible for me to obtain trust among my family members. However, just awhile ago, I received news that my father’s good friend is headed here. He should be able to catch up to the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom in a dozen days or so. Once he arrives, I should be able to cement my status in the family. Then, once I can shore up the Heavencraft Trading Companies income, I’ll definitely be able to win the support of the Council of Elders.”

“Well, do what you want.”

Lin Ming didn’t have an opinion. Towards these power struggles in the family, there was no convincingly valuable advice that he could give.

……….

“Yan’er! Yan’er!”

Beside Xiaoxiao’s older cousin, Heavencraft Yan, was an extremely distressed middle-aged woman bawling at his bedside. There were several highly skilled medical martial artists that had just assessed Heavencraft Yan’s situation. His injuries were even heavier than old man Yan’s were, and not only were all his meridians torn apart, but even his dantian had completely collapsed. Moreover, these wounds may have even harmed the ability for him to leave behind any future descendants.

To Heavencraft Feng and his wife, this was an immense attack.

“That brat is too ruthless!’ Heavencraft Feng shouted in anger, “Let’s go ask that Sir to help. As long as he does help, he should be able to easily annihilate that brat!”

Heavencraft Feng’s injuries were the lightest of the three injured men. In the end, Lin Ming had showed mercy with the saber, only stabbing through Heavencraft Feng’s right lung. To a Life Destruction martial artist, as long as the heart, meridians, dantian, and spiritual sea weren’t damaged, then all other injuries could be quickly healed.

There was a middle-aged man sitting In front of Heavencraft Feng. The middle-aged man sneered and said, “Look for that Sir? Why not look for his highness the Crown Prince? Although the Crown Prince wishes to subordinate our Heavencraft Trading Company under his control, that is still our good fortune.”

“Compared to the Crown Prince’s plans, however, our Heavencraft Trading Company is only a minor chess piece. Since he handed this matter to us, this is the best chance to prove our ability and worth to him. If we can’t complete this task and have to go ask that Sir to help, then just what use are we?”

Chapter 777 – Bronze Battle Spirit Large Success

Chapter 777 – Bronze Battle Spirit Large Success

…

…

…

The Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's Crown Prince, Yang Yun, was the brightest star of the entire Divine Kingdom and the bastard son birthed by a lowly concubine in the Nine Furnace Divine Emperor's imperial harem. From the moment he was born, he was ignored by everyone. However, when he was 12 years old, he actually revealed an astonishing talent for martial arts.

He stepped into the Life Destruction realm at only 30 years of age. Now, ten more years had passed and it was unknown just what his cultivation was. His strength was said to be unfathomable.

In the four Divine Kingdoms, pedigree and background were secondary to strength. Thus, Yang Yun, though not too closely connected to the Royal Family, was actually able to stand out and become the Crown Prince by virtue of his own power. He held the military power and trade of the country in his palms, and his power and influence was horrifying. Even the three great Imperial Scholars were unable to disobey Yang Yun's wishes.

In these past years, Yang Yun had frequently created massive stirs in the country – he was obviously ambitious and had high aspirations. Yan Yun continually strengthened his control over all – not only did he want to completely grasp the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's combat strength in his hands, he wanted the economy as well.

Heavencraft Trading Company was also one of Yang Yun's goals. However, even though Yang Yun had immeasurable power and influence, he still had no choice but to consider the public's opinion. He naturally couldn't recklessly plunder the privately owned property of his people. Thus, he supported Heavencraft Xiaoxiao's two great uncles, Heavencraft Xiao and Heavencraft Yun, and had them go ahead and take control of the Company Head position first.

They didn't know just what Yang Yun's final goal was, but what they did know was that following Yang Yun would lead to infinite glory. It was far better than following that little girl Heavencraft Xiaoxiao who was still wet behind the years, as there was simply no future in supporting her.

Heavencraft Xiao and Heavencraft Yun understood that to Yang Yun, the entire Heavencraft Trading Company was nothing but a tiny piece of meat, and wasn't worth paying too much attention to. They had to accomplish a few tasks first in order to earn Yang Yun's attention. If they couldn't even deal with a hairless late Revolving Core boy, then they might even be discarded by Yang Yun.

If Yang Yun really wanted to control the Heavencraft Trading Company, he didn't necessarily need to go through the two of them.

"Big brother, what do you plan on doing?" In a private chamber, Heavencraft Yun asked Heavencraft Xiao.

Heavencraft Xiao hesitated for a moment before his eyes flashed with a cold light. "I intend on asking the Corpsemancer for help. The Corpsemancer and I have had some dealings in the past, and if I can tempt him with some things that interest him, then he should be willing to help."

"The Corpsemancer ranked 330 in the Destiny Decree!?" Heavencraft Yun's head chilled, his complexion not looking too well. Although Heavencraft Xiao and Corpsemancer knew each other, he would prefer not to seek the help of such a strange fellow.

The Corpsemancer was a demonic path martial artist from the Asura Divine Kingdom. He had an extremely cruel disposition, and was known for being a dangerous devil that could kill without batting an eye.

Demonic path martial artists either walked the slaughter path or the sexual path. As for this Corpsemancer, he specifically trained in the ghosts and corpse puppets of the slaughter path. This is where his nickname had come from.

If it was just these few puppets, then it still wouldn't be enough for Heavencraft Yun to feel so creeped out. It was known that Corpsemancer could kill anyone at any time. Whether they were friend or foe, everyone had to watch their backs behind him.

Moreover, he often used bodies, and even live people in his corpse puppet experiments.

Babies, children, young girls, pregnant women, the elderly, these were all the Corpsemancer's favorite subjects. He especially liked to flay the skin off beautiful virgins and use them to complete his puppets. After being experimented on, those subjects of his would experience a fate worse than death.

Towards such an abnormally strange freak, Heavencraft Yun didn't want to cross paths with him at all.

"If I had some other plan, then I wouldn't look for him at all. However, if I want to deal with that boy, it is much more reliable if I find some master ranked on the Destiny Decree." Heavencraft Xiao said.

There were only 360 individuals listed on the Destiny Decree, and although this sounded like a great number of people, it first had to be known that there were only 100 or so Divine Sea powerhouses in the entire Sky Spill Continent.

In contrast, there were far more Life Destruction powerhouses than Divine Sea powerhouses. A conservative estimate would be in the range of the several tens of thousands.

To choose 360 individuals from so many Life Destruction powerhouses, one had to have a reputation worthy of being at the very top. If one could be ranked on such a list then, they must be an unrivalled peer of their era, a master of masters.

In the four Divine Kingdoms, each Divine Kingdom only had several dozen Destiny Decree masters to themselves. The majority of them were in closed door cultivation in order to attempt breaking through to the Divine Sea realm. The Heavencraft Trading Company was only a fifth-grade power, and if they couldn't pay a high enough price, then there was no way they could every think about moving a Destiny Decree master to action.

Corpsemancer was ranked 330 on the Destiny Decree. However, for all those lower than rank 200, every 10 ranks were considered a separate level. So, it was more accurate to say that Corpsemancer's ranking was around 330-340. Although it sounded not that impressive, it was still a terrifying number.

Ho – !

A flame burned.

....

In a remote mountain cave deep in the border of the Asura Divine Kingdom, a skinny, skeletal old man was playing with large, gooey brain matter.

Beside him, a naked young girl was nailed to a wooden rack with most of her skin stripped off as her eyeballs dangled outside of their sockets. She weakly groaned. Under the support of the Corpsemancer's medicine, she continuously hung onto life, unable to die.

At her side was a child. The child was soaked in an unknown liquid and his entire body was covered with green hair. His small hands had already become a pair of disgusting claws.

"They want to use a ghost spirit crystal as the price for dealing with a late Revolving Core boy? A little brat with such astonishing strength? Hehe, there is also Heavencraft Trading Company's little mistress? How interesting! Kekeke, if this little devil is as Heavencraft Xiao said, and has such a powerful combat strength at just the late Revolving Core realm, then he is actually excellent puppet material. As for that young, beautiful woman, she is also a good experimental subject. A new puppet wrapped in the skin of a beautiful woman is simply the best! Jejeje!” Corpsemancer darkly smiled. He took out a crow puppet from his spatial ring, jumped on it, and flew straight towards the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom.

The four Divine Kingdoms each covered an incomparably vast territory, and in the middle of them all was the Sea of Miracles. The Sea of Miracles was known for being impossible to traverse, and was known as the absolute life forbidden zone of the four Divine Kingdoms and had to be circled around. Thus, from the Asura Divine Kingdom to the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, it still took over a dozen days, even with the help of transmission arrays.

…

At this time, Lin Ming was living a very calm and peaceful life. Every day he would train and practice alchemy.

With the support of the Heavencraft Trading Company, Lin Ming was able to easily purchase massive amounts of alchemy materials and wood jade at extremely low prices. All of this was constantly consumed in the Cosmic Melting Furnace, with at least 90% of it becoming nothing more than burnt ash.

Lin Ming’s alchemy technique wasn’t poor at all. It was just that, every time he mastered a new level of alchemy technique, he would instantly proceed to challenge one with an even higher one. Thus, the results of Lin Ming’s alchemy ended in failure, failure, and more failure.

Unconsciously, Lin Ming’s spiritual sea was subtly influenced by his alchemy training. Waves began to appear in his originally calm spiritual sea, and underneath the crest of these waves shone a gloriously pale azure color.

The great waves smashed together, causing water to splash everywhere, and slowly infiltrating the spear shaped battle spirit in the skies of the spiritual sea.

This battle spirit was only as thick as a chopstick, was and less than a foot long. It seemed to be made from a dark greenish blue metal, as if it were forged from raw bronze. This was the symbol of a bronze level battle spirit.

It was only because Lin Ming's battle spirit had the attribute of endlessness that it continuously emanated a brilliant azure light.

At a certain moment, the battle spirit suddenly rumbled, issuing a clarion cry. Lin Ming's spiritual sea furiously roiled, forming rocky waves that shot into the sky, swirling and creating a vortex around the little spear.

In such a twisting vortex, the little spear violently shook, making sounds of excitement.

It slowly began to grow longer, thicker, and the brilliant azure light became increasingly dazzling. Its form became more solid, more primal.

Large success bronze level battle spirit!

Lin Ming suddenly opened both of his eyes. When a martial artist's battle spirit was first born, it would constantly grow with that martial artist's growth in cultivation.

Lin Ming had repeatedly made breakthroughs in his cultivation and will, and along with a few heavenly materials that were able to nourish battle spirits, it had been enough for his battle spirit to reach the peak of small success, where he had been stranded for a very long time.

Now, borrowing the practice of alchemy as his turning point, he had finally broken through the next threshold!

Practicing alchemy could temper the soul. Although a battle spirit belonged to one's martial arts will, it was inextricably twined with the soul. After all, will only existed because of the soul, and was why the battle spirit floated above the skies of the spiritual sea.

The soul was like a sea and a battle spirit was like a fish – a small sea could not raise a big fish.

This was the use of one's soul force. Although it couldn't immediately influence a martial artist's strength, it could actually decide a martial artist's current and future achievements to a large degree.

It was also because of this reason that Demonshine recommended Lin Ming focus on alchemy. At the same time, the closely related inscription technique also couldn't be ignored.

"Large success bronze level battle spirit. I've already surpassed most Divine Sea powerhouses in this aspect, causing my striking force to increase yet again. In addition to my increasing understanding into the Concept of Fire and the Concept of Space, I wonder just how powerful my strongest attack would be. How much stronger has it become?"

"Bury the Heavens, Chain of Stars, Chasing Sun, Chasing Thunder, Penetrating Rainbow, Thunderfire Annihilation. Those are my six self-created moves, of which some are just too singular in their use, and difficult to use too often. It would be good if I could create some newer ones."

Lin Ming thought out loud. However, what he didn't know was that, if the other extraordinary young elites of the Sky Spill Continent heard his verbal thoughts, they would probably have vomited blood in envy and frustration. After all, they were still studying the legacies left behind by their ancestors. There were many elites that could create a half a skill, but these abilities were often far too limited in their power, and weren't practical for fighting at all. Thus, they had no choice but to continue using the legacies left behind by their ancestors.

The moves that Lin Ming had self-created actually contained an extremely terrifying strength behind them, however, and could also be used as a final killing blow.

Of course, this was all related to the top quality cultivation methods and lucky chances that he had experienced so far in his life. If Lin Ming wanted to create more moves he would need to experience more lucky chances. These weren't something he could simply imagine up out of thin air.

…….

"What? Not only do you want two ghost spirit crystals, but you also want to take away Heavencraft Xiaoxiao?" Heavencraft Yun was furious as he heard Corpsemancer's conditions. Two ghost spirit crystals was reasonable enough, and he intended to give Corpsemancer some bargaining room. Taking away Heavencraft Xiaoxiao, however…

Everyone knew that the young girls taken away by Corpsemancer all died horrifying and miserable deaths.

Although Heavencraft Yun was not a good man, he still didn't want to push his niece into the very depths of the eighteen layers of hell, as it would be hard for him to find peace of mind. In the future, this would even form a heart demon that would destroy his heart of martial arts.

"What? You don't agree?" Corpsemancer's dark, ghostly green eyes stared into Heavencraft Yun. At that time, Heavencraft Yun felt his breath catch in his throat and a chill crawl up his spine, as if he had just been thrust into an icy lake. He didn't doubt that Corpsemancer would immediately kill him in the next second if he didn't comply.

"Third Brother, don't speak." Heavencraft Xiao moved Heavencraft Yun behind him.

"But!"

"Don't speak. There is no longer any path left for us to return!"

Chapter 778 – First Battle of the Destiny Decree

Chapter 778 – First Battle of the Destiny Decree

…

…

…

Although Heavencraft Xiao couldn't bear to thrust Xiaoxiao into the fiery pit of doom, he was well aware of just what it meant to stand in the Crown Prince's good grace.

The Crown Prince was very ambitious. It was even possible that he would become the most powerful Divine Emperor in the history of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. If he could follow the Crown Prince then he would be able to step onto a larger stage and achieve a greater ideal.

"I'm sorry Xiaoxiao, but a great man must be ruthless. For my descendants, for the future glory of the Heavencraft Trading Company, I can only make you the small sacrifice to achieve the greater good."

When Corpsemancer saw Heavencraft Xiao nod in agreement, he strangely cackled and said, "A wise man can recognize the situation!"

As he said these words he jumped onto his crow puppet and flew away in a cloud of dust.

Heavencraft Yun was left behind. His face was pallid and his lips trembled. In the end, he merely sighed, not saying anything at all.

………

“Little Jade, bring me a basin of water so I can wash my face.” Heavencraft Xiaoxiao ordered a maid.

“Yes, young lady.” A young girl in an aquamarine dress ran to fetch a basin of water and a white towel.

“Little Jade, my eyelids have been jumping all day. I fear that something bad will occur today.”

“Young lady, everything is fine. Don’t you have Sir Lin?” Little Jade chuckled, giving Xiaoxiao a humorous side eye. Xiaoxiao was at the age where she understood matters of love and also knew of the relations between men and women. She was at a similar age with Lin Ming who was strong, talented, handsome, and brave. It would be easy for any girl to fall for him and imagine a life with him.

However, Xiaoxiao simply didn’t have the energy or time to consider these things. All she felt was that she was tired. Very, very tired…

“Little Jade… go and deliver more spirit essence stones to Sir Lin. Also, make sure that Sir Lin’s three meals are all prepared with the best spirit food materials. Don’t –”

As Xiaoxiao spoke to here she suddenly heard a massive explosive sound originating from the front hall as if a thunderbolt had struck the earth. Her complexion immediately changed as she shot up.

“Young lady! Bad news! There’s a battle happening outside!”

A maid ran over in panic. Xiaoxiao rushed into the front hall and her apricot eyes suddenly shot wide open. In the front hall, a servant was stabbed through the throat with a bone lance. He lay face up on the ground, his eyes staring wide like a dead fish; he hadn’t died in peace.

Beside the dead servant was a skinny, skeletal old man who wore a cruel and sadistic expression. His face was full of pins as if he had been stitched from pieces of human skin. His dark ghostly green eyes were like a rabid wolf, and his entire body emitted a hostile, terrifying energy. Just by approaching him one would feel the fire of one's life rapidly fading away, as if they would extinguish at any given moment.

"Who are you!?"

Xiaoxiao felt a chill crawl down her spine. Her cultivation was only at the Xiantian realm and she wasn't able to see through this skeletal man's cultivation in the slightest. But she had a premonition that this man was a terrifying existence; he was absolutely not some unknown nobody.

"Jejeje, this old man's nickname is Corpsemancer. And you are that little girl Heavencraft Xiaoxiao… not bad, not bad." Corpsemancer stretched out a scarlet tongue while his ghostly green eyes were observing Xiaoxiao. Then, he said words that made Xiaoxiao's heart nearly freeze in her chest, "Using your skin to make a corpse puppet, that will certainly be beautiful indeed."

"Corpsemancer!" Xiaoxiao's face whitened to the point where there wasn't even a touch of red left. Corpsemancer was a character on the Destiny Decree. He was a notorious and infamous individual who had murdered countless innocents. Moreover, his methods of killing were inhumane and grotesque. She didn't doubt that Corpsemancer would do exactly as he said. If she fell into his hands then that would be a fate a hundred times worse than death. He was simply the devil incarnate.

Sky Spill Continent's Destiny Decree had a total of 360 individuals ranked upon it. Among there, as long as one was at the sixth stage of Life Destruction then they would be ranked no matter how poor their foundation was. Even if their foundation was bad and they didn't have too many years remaining they would still rank in the top 200.

As for those at the fifth stage of Life Destruction, most of them were arranged below the top 200.

It was extremely difficult for a fourth stage Life Destruction martial artist to be ranked. The exceptions were if there was something special about their cultivation method or if their talent was unbelievable.

And for Corpsemancer, his cultivation method was exceedingly special. What he cultivated were the corpse puppet techniques and Yin Corpse Laws of the demonic path; he was an incomparably abnormal existence that gave everyone headaches.

Xiaoxiao was the successor of the Heavencraft Trading Company so she naturally knew every single master on the Destiny Decree as well as a great deal of information about them. This was because those individuals were possible customers of the Heavencraft Trading Company.

As she recalled the information of Corpsemancer, she felt as if she had fallen into icy despair. She never imagined that her two uncles would invite a Destiny Decree martial artist.

“There is also someone called Lin Lanjian. Boy, be a good little child and come out to quietly become my experiment subject.” Corpsemancer poured true essence into his voice. His words penetrated through every inch of the Heavencraft Pavilion.

“Corpsemancer, are you looking for me?” Without knowing when, Lin Ming had appeared in a corner of the hall as if he had been standing there all this time. Only Corpsemancer realized that Lin Ming had used some incomparably exquisite movement ability to instantly arrive.

“Hehe, good movement technique, there’s a little bit of meaning to you. You’re so young and yet so strong. You’ll become absolutely great puppet material. This old man really does appreciate you. Thus, I´ll give you a chance to commit suicide so I can take your body. Otherwise, if you fall into my hands, then you won’t even have a chance to beg for death.”

When Corpsemancer chased down martial artists, many of them chose to commit suicide when they lost all hope of escaping any further. Otherwise, if they fell into his hands then they would have to linger at the border of life for several months, staring helplessly as their own skin, eyes, hands, feet, and everything else was slowly cut and stripped off.

This sort of pain and despair could be imagined.

Lin Ming quietly took out his red long spear. Although this guy in front of him was arrogant, that was because he had the qualifications to be arrogant. He was far more powerful than Xuan Wuji!

Lin Ming had no choice but to go all out in this battle. Moreover, he didn't have complete confidence he could win. This was because he simply didn't know the true depths of Corpsemancer's strength.

As Corpsemancer saw Lin Ming pull out his spear, his grotesque smile widened. "It seems you want to refuse my generous charity? Very well, let me see just how tough your life is."

He then unfolded both his hands. Atop of them were a pair of ghost claws that shined with a cold brilliance. A dim green light flashed intermittently on the edge of the ghost claws; this was corpse poison.

"Sir Lin." Xiaoxiao bit her lips and said to Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission, "Sir Lin, I sincerely thank you for everything you have done for me so far. Before, we have already agreed that if you were to run into someone that you couldn't deal with, then the arrangement between us could be terminated at any time. Corpsemancer is ranked somewhere around 330-340 on the Destiny Decree. I am so sorry for having dragged Sir Lin into this mess. If there is a chance, Sir Lin, please escape."

With every word she said, her face paled ever further. If it were possible she certainly hoped that Lin Ming would stay. However, if Lin Ming couldn't deal with Corpsemancer then there was no meaning in him staying here to die.

As she imagined her fate once she was captured by Corpsemancer, she was terror-stricken.

Lin Ming glanced at Xiaoxiao for a brief moment and responded, “To show mercy to your enemies is to be cruel to yourself. If you don’t take advantage of the time when you have absolute superiority to eliminate your enemies then you will inevitably incur the bitter consequences of your own weakness. Remember this and take care!”

After saying this, Lin Ming grasped his red long spear and rushed out of the Heavencraft Pavilion.

Peng!

The great doors that stood several dozen feet high were instantly broken apart by Lin Ming’s spear. He then soared out without glancing back.

Xiaoxiao felt as if she had lost her soul at this moment.

To show mercy to your enemies was to be cruel to yourself…

This was the most simple truth that everyone understood. But to truly implement this required great courage and determination.

She closed her trembled eyes. She knew exactly what Lin Ming was referring to. In a situation where she had absolute advantage, she had allowed Heavencraft Yun to freely leave as he willed.

She didn’t dare to kill Heavencraft Yun because she feared she couldn’t withstand the pressure from the family. She was afraid that Heavencraft Xiao would use this opportunity to punish her, possibly even expel her from the family.

But now, Heavencraft Xiao had taken the advantage to strike the first blow. The only one to suffer would be herself.

“Sir Lin should be escaping… can he escape…?”

As she looked at the broken door and the shattered wood that swayed in the wind, all she felt was incomparable sadness and grief.

Now that Lin Ming had left, she was nothing but a fish on a chopping block; she had no strength to resist.

“Young lady, Corpsemancer is chasing Lin Lanjian. We should take this chance to escape as fast as we can.” The black-clothed old woman nervously said. She then reached out her hand to grab Xiaoxiao.

Xiaoxiao mournfully laughed. She whispered as if she had just lost her very soul, “It’s useless, everything is useless. Corpsemancer has left a mark on my body. I can no longer escape his palm…”

“That Lin Lanjian, he actually runs when we need him the most! Damnit!” The black-clothed old woman angrily said.

“Grandma White, there is no one in this world that should be born to die for us…” Xiaoxiao shook her head. But as her voice fell she suddenly heard a loud thunderous explosion from outside that caused the entire Heavencraft Pavilion to tremble.

Hmm?

Xiaoxiao ran several steps out of the broken door. From here, she could see that several miles away, Lin Ming and Corpsemancer were flying high in the sky, their clothes flapping wildly in the wind.

Beneath them, the bustling and lively Witch Creek City sprawled out to the endless horizon.

The air still reverberated with intense true essence shockwaves. It was obvious that a great battle was brewing.

“Lin Lanjian intends to battle Corpsemancer? The reason he ran out of Heavencraft Pavilion was because he feared their battle affecting the others inside?”

For some time, Xiaoxiao was lost in thought. And beside her, Grandma White was also stunned. Although she had complained about Lin Ming just now, those were only words said under a veil of angry and helpless desperation. She was well aware that what Lin Ming had done was completely reasonable. After all, their agreement had been that their contract would become invalid once Lin Ming met a powerhouse that he couldn't contend with.

And even if there was no such agreement, Lin Ming escaping was also completely understandable.

If it had been her in Lin Ming's position, she would also escape at this time. Only a complete fool would die for a stranger.

However, she never imagined that Lin Ming would actually decide to fight Corpsemancer.

At this time within Witch Creek City, whether it was martial artists or common mortals, every single person had raised their heads to see the scene unfolding up in the sky.

Witch Creek City was a medium to large scale city of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. In this city there were naturally a vast number of considerably experienced masters. They were all able to instantly distinguish that these two people up in the air were top class powerhouses.

In particular that skinny skeletal fellow who was wrapped in white cloth; he was definitely a master amongst masters!

Who were they? They dared to fight in Witch Creek City?

The powerhouses of Witch Creek City were bewildered.

Of course, most of these martial artists were below Revolving Core; they couldn't see through Lin Ming and Corpsemancer's cultivation.

"Those two actually dare to fight in the skies of Witch Creek City! This is far too brazen!"

“That’s right! Fighting is prohibited within Witch Creek City. This is the general rule of every large city. If these two people dare to blatantly ignore the rules in front of everyone then their punishment will be death!”

Chapter 779 – The Great Battle of Witch Creek City

Chapter 779 – The Great Battle of Witch Creek City

…

…

…

Large cities naturally had the law and order of large cities, otherwise, they simply couldn’t be called a city. There would be no difference between them and the barbaric wilds filled with bandits and strife.

In Witch Creek City, all who took part in public fighting would suffer severe punishment. Anyone who ignored warnings would even be executed.

“The city guards are on their way. Then there will truly be a good show to watch, haha!”

And as everyone expected, they city guards quickly caught up. The captain of them was a man named Rong Lin. Before everyone arrived he shouted out, “Just who the hell do you two think you are!? You dare to fight so openly in my Witch Creek City! How insolent!”

As the captain of the city guards, he was generally a solemn and dignified character. Usually, just a single shout from him was enough to frighten others and solve any problem.

But this time, after he shouted out his warning, he was actually ignored. He stared with eyes wide open, as his vision tightly locked onto that skinny skeleton old man that was flying in the air. Then, his complexion completely paled.

“C-Corpsemancer!?”

He was petrified the spot.

"Captain, those two fellows are far too arrogant, they actually dare to fight in the skies of my Witch Creek City! They are courting death!" Beside Rong Lin, another city guard that had relied on family connections to join suddenly spoke up. He was a young martial artist that served as Rong Lin's deputy.

"Captain, why don't you tell them to lay down their weapons so we can quickly capture them?" The young martial artist looked at Rong Lin in puzzlement.

However, Rong Lin remained completely silent while his complexion was becoming increasingly ugly.

Well, if the captain wasn't going to do it then he would do it for him. The young martial artist felt that shouting out loud and grabbing everyone's attention would be a very glorious act.

"To those listening above! We are –"

The young man only just started shouting when Rong Lin jumped like a cat and quickly covered the young man's mouth.

"Do you want to die!?"

Rong Lin's entire forehead was covered with nervous sweat. In every Divine Kingdom, there were only several dozen Destiny Decree characters and most of them were in long term seclusion. They simply lived like hermits for the majority of their life.

If they were a central ruling figure of a mortal nation, then Rong Lin could only be considered a middle class city guard official. The disparity in status could be imagined.

And most fearful of all was that Corpsemancer was an infamous fellow known for his capricious cruelty. Anyone that fell into his hands would suffer a fate worse than death!

He would rather face a top 200 ranked Destiny Decree character than have to cross paths with Corpsemancer. This was because Corpsemancer could randomly kill someone without even batting an eye!

"Captain?" The young man asked somewhat unhappy.

"Everyone obey my command! Evacuate the crowd and isolate the scene! Without my orders, no one can speak a single word of nonsense and absolutely no one can interfere! All offenders will be brutally punished!"

As Rong Lin spoke to here he suddenly saw that the skeletal man floating in the air shot a glance at him. The skeletal man smiled, revealing a blood red tongue and bone white teeth.

It was just a single look but Rong Lin was filled with fear and terror. It was like an icy bone lance had been thrust into his heart.

Rong Lin trembled with dread. He waved his hand and said, "Everyone, retreat ten miles out!'

"What?"

"F*ck! I told you to retreat, so retreat! That fellow above us is a Destiny Decree master!" Rong Lin originally didn't want to reveal the status of Corpsemancer, but as he saw that the young martial artist wasn't convinced, and even had an eager look to butt his way in, he had no choice but to announce a bit of Corpsemancer's information.

"De-de-de-Destiny Decree!?" The young martial artist was not an idiot. In fact, upon hearing the name of the famous Destiny Decree, everyone was shaken to their cores. They were all well aware just what that implied.

"Is there a mistake? If that skeletal old man is a Destiny Decree master, then what about his opponent? He's obviously just a 20 some year old youth, and his cultivation... his cultivation is... at the late Revolving Core realm!?"

“Yes, he is only at the late Revolving Core realm and his opponent is Corpsemancer. That young man is insane!” Rong Lin’s eyes blazed as he looked at Lin Ming. As captain of the city guard he naturally had an understanding toward all the top level characters of the four Divine Kingdoms. However, he couldn’t recall the slightest bit of information about Lin Ming.

It wasn’t just the city guard, but all observing martial artists discovered that the difference in cultivation of the two flying in the air was simply too great.

“Is this a life or death battle, or a senior advising a junior?”

“He’s definitely directing him. Don’t make too much of a fuss, that old man might be that youth’s master. He will certainly suppress his strength to a degree.”

Woosh! Woosh!

Two shadows flew to a distant point 10 miles away from the battlefield. These two people were Grandma White and Xiaoxiao.

“Lin Lanjian Isn’t someone from my Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom nor is he someone from the other three Divine Kingdoms. It’s probable that he hasn’t heard the fame of the Destiny Decree yet, thus he rashly acted. Young miss, this is our only chance. If we continue watching the battle from here then it’s the same as waiting to die.” Grandma White anxiously said.

If Lin Ming really were a junior of the four Divine Kingdoms then it would be impossible that someone with a talent as monstrous and unprecedented as his could remain obscure. Thus, she only thought that Lin Ming came from some faraway region and didn’t know just how fierce the ranked masters of the Destiny Decree were.

Let alone Lin Ming, even that senior that knew Xiaoxiao’s father couldn’t be ranked on the Destiny Decree.

“Grandma White, there is a mark planted on my body; escape is no longer possible. I have already accepted my fate. I would rather stay here and watch Young Hero Lin’s battle. Perhaps, there is even a small glimmer of hope that Young Hero Lin can create an opening for us. At that time we’ll attack together, and even if we can’t win, we can still die an honorable death!”

“Alright…” Grandma White shook her head, no longer attempting to convince Xiaoxiao.

At this time, more and more martial artists began filling the skies. All of them felt that something was off about this situation. How come that the usually blustering and swaggering city guards didn’t take this chance to bring these law breakers down?

Meanwhile, up in the skies, Lin Ming and Corpsemancer had already faced each other for over 20 breaths of time.

Lin Ming was the first to make a move.

Bang!

Before his long spear even shot out, double force fields were already erupting outward.

The Asura force field combined with the Death God force field as the dual force fields were released together!

A tide of power rushed out in all directions, setting of a horrifying storm of energy.

The Death God force field, annihilating all life vitality.

The Asura force field, universal suppression of a martial artist’s strength and soul!

The air trembled. Most of those martial artists floating in the air and watching the scene weren’t masters. They hadn’t yet been able to figure out just how Lin Ming’s strength contrasted with Corpsemancer, but now as Lin Ming’s force field enveloped the entire battlefield, all of them became nothing more than leaves in a storm, scattering or collapsing in all directions! The slightly weaker martial artists, even if they were an entire mile away from Lin Ming, still vomited out a mouthful of blood as they were severely injured!

“What is that!?”

All of the martial artists were dumbfounded. Was this the power released by that youth?

“What kind of killing intent is this?” Xiaoxiao forcefully gulped. Lin Ming had never used this power when he fought the Elders of the Heavencraft Family. It was clear now that he didn’t think it was needed at the time.

“This is a force field ability, moreover he has dual force fields!” Grandma White recognized just what sort of skill Lin Ming had used. Force field abilities were exceedingly rare; even a supremely talented junior of the four Divine Kingdoms wouldn’t necessarily have one. It was a highly revered and respected ability.

This was not because a force field was freakishly strong, but because a force field could coexist alongside martial skills. It could invisibly increase a martial artist’s strength or have a number of other effects without affecting the martial artist’s fighting ability at all.

“Hehe, boy, I like you more and more. Once I turn you into a puppet I can keep your force fields. This is far too perfect! Force fields are the ability that puppet masters love the most!” Corpsemancer sinisterly smiled and his ghostly eyes were gleaming.

A powerful puppet master could restore most of the special abilities a martial artist had before death. In fact, a puppet’s power could even be raised through the passage of time with the application of a number of arcane skills.

“You really love dreaming.”

Lin Ming barked out a short laugh and flourished his spear. He poured his battle spirit into it and thrust out. The inherent power of thunderfire broke through the shackles of space, and with a keening cry, a turbulent wave of energy began to rise up from all around.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Space nearly collapsed. Lin Ming’s spear instantly passed a 1000 feet forward, thrusting straight between Corpsemancer’s eyebrows.

Corpsemancer creepily laughed as his withered claws suddenly grasped forward. A black ghost claw appeared out of thin air and shot out towards Lin Ming.

As the claw shot forward a cold wind swirled up around it, as if countless grieving ghosts formed the black ghost claw that issued mournful wails.

Kacha!

The spear and sharp claw collided together. The ghost claw disintegrated, but Lin Ming’s spear light also melted away like white snow under the scorching sun.

True essence shockwaves rolled up in massive waves. All of the surrounding martial artists quickly retreated as their complexions immediately changed.

It had become crystal clear to everyone here that these to evil stars were simply ancient vicious beasts in human form. If they were caught up in the ensuing storm of energy then there wouldn’t be anything left of them, not even their ashes!

As for Xiaoxiao and Grandma White, they weren’t affected because they were very far away to begin with. But they could still feel that horrifying energy that rampaged about, even from such a distance.

“This should only be a testing move. I have no idea how much strength Lin Lanjian used, but if that is the majority of his strength then there isn’t even a slim chance that he’ll win. Corpsemancer hasn’t even brought out his puppets yet.”

Grandma White’s face was filled with worry. When Lin Ming had unleashed his dual force fields, a faint hope lit up in her heart. She had been slightly optimistic that Lin Ming might be able to create a miracle or even last a period of time against Corpsemancer. In such a massive fight, there would definitely be other masters arriving if it lasted long enough. At that time, there might be a chance for a favorable turn of events.

“How interesting! So interesting!”

Corpsemancer’s skin stitched face became more and more excited. He swiped his special ring and a massive demon puppet rushed out. There were two great wings on its back and its entire body was wreathed in thick, dark blue muscles that were as solid as rock.

Giant Demon?

Lin Ming’s mind went cold. This was actually a Giant Demon puppet! Just where had Corpsemancer managed to obtain the corpse of a Giant Demon?

“That is the puppet technique and also a Giant Demon puppet! That man must be...”

Some of the surrounding martial artists recognized the Giant Demon puppet. Although they didn’t recognize Corpsemancer, they did manage to recognize that puppet. In truth, top masters that wielded puppets were nearly extinct.

Thinking of all of them, there was only a single person that was this famous for their puppet technique.

And then combining that with this sinister and ominous old man’s cultivation, the truth of his identity finally revealed itself.

“The Destiny Decree ranked 330, Corpsemancer!”

“Corpsemancer? Is that really him!?”

“Heavens! No wonder the city guards don’t dare to do anything! That old man is actually Corpsemancer... Then just who is that youth? Did that young man come out of nowhere?”

At this time, no one said anymore that the fight unfolding in the air was a senior directing a junior. Corpsemancer was absolutely not the type to do so, and Lin Ming's cultivation method was completely different from his.

This was a true life or death battle!

For a late Revolving Core powerhouse to challenge the Destiny Decree ranked 330, Corpsemancer, in a life or death battle…

This was madness!

Chapter 780 – Stepping Onto the Highest Stage

Chapter 780 – Stepping Onto the Highest Stage

…

…

…

"This is a Giant Demon puppet that I carefully crafted myself. I call it… the Gargoyle. Let me take a good look at just how many of my puppets you can force me to use!"

Giant Demon puppet? So it seemed that the Sky Spill Continent also had a Giant Demon race. Just where had this Giant Demon corpse come from?

The Sky Spill Continent and the Holy Demon Continent were both isolated from each other. The last time that they had contact with each other was likely when the Netherworld Great Emperor traveled to the Sky Spill Continent through the Demon Emperor's transmission array and then later on founded the Silent Demon Emperor City.

If it was said that there were Giant Demon skeletons from thousands of years ago then Lin Ming wouldn't be surprised. But, puppet techniques required the use of fresh corpses in order to function properly. This meant that one of the four Divine Kingdoms had members of the Giant Demon race within them.

"Where is your Giant Demon corpse from?" Lin Ming directly asked.

"Hehe, of course it comes from the Asura Divine Kingdom. Is that so strange? This old man has no interest in bantering with the likes of you. Now die!"

Corpsemancer gave a loud shout and the Giant Demon puppet extracted a 15 foot axe before cutting it down towards Lin Ming.

As this axe cut out, roiling black clouds followed behind it. This was obviously the demon essence that the Giant Demon race used. Although it was similar to true essence, they had essential differences between them.

An astounding puppet master could reproduce all the abilities that the deceased had before their death. Demon essence was no exception.

‘The Asura Divine Kingdom actually has the Giant Demon race; that is beyond my expectations.’ Lin Ming shook his long spear, filling it with the Concept of Fire as he smashed it against the Giant Demon’s axe.

But at this time, there was a crackling sound as a two foot section of the axe broke off. A thick chain pulled out from the shaft, causing the entire weapon to turn into something like a bola.

With special devices and traps everywhere, it was nearly impossible to guard against. This was one of the special characteristics of puppets.

Ka ka ka!

Lin Ming’s red long spear was caught in the chain. At the same time, the axehead was pulled by the chain, smashing straight towards Lin Ming’s head.

At such a close distance, for such a change to happen in the axe was truly a sinister combat technique. Moreover, since Lin Ming’s spear was twisted into that chain he was unable to dodge it. Unless he abandoned his spear and retreated, his only option would be to directly block that axe.

But to a martial artist, their weapon was their life. To abandon their weapon in battle was equal to disillusioning their own heart of martial arts.

“Sir Lin!”

Xiaoxiao couldn’t help but cry out in alarm as she watched the battle from a distance.

All of the surrounding martial artists also watched with wide eyes, waiting to see just how this junior would fight against such a top genius.

But at this moment, Lin Ming appeared nothing but serene. He shook he long spear in his hands.

The large success bronze battle spirit erupted!

Kacha!

With a shattering sound, that chain as thick as an arm was directly broken apart by Lin Ming!

Soon after, Lin Ming's spear thrust forwards, piercing through that half foot thick axe with an unstoppable and sharp spear light that stabbed towards Corpsemancer's head.

"Mm?"

Corpsemancer was bewildered. This was… a battle spirit!?

With his sight and experience he naturally recognized that this was a battle spirit. Lin Ming only had a mere late Revolving Core cultivation and yet his battle spirit was so keen; how could he not be shocked?

Bang!

Lin Ming's spear stabbed into a white bone shield. At that moment, in front of Corpsemancer, another puppet appeared. This puppet looked like a giant turtle. What Lin Ming had pierced through was its shell.

As the spear punctured the shell, although the shell didn't break, cracks still appeared, spreading out like a spider web.

All of the martial artists present could clearly see what happened. A spear had broken apart the axe and simultaneously broke through the first level of armor of another puppet. This striking power was freakishly abnormal!

"So you comprehended a large success battle spirit. It seems I truly underestimated you, no wonder you would dare to fight me." Corpsemancer's ghostly green eyes flashed with a blazing light. He licked his lips and coldly said, "I have now decided to sincerely kill you."

Lin Ming's talent far surpassed Corpsemancer's estimations. To have such an enemy, and for him to be so young, Corpsemancer naturally couldn't allow him to live. Otherwise, his future troubles would be endless.

"Complete body!"

With a loud shout, Corpsemancer's skinny skeletal body began emitting loud crackling sounds. The white cloth that bound his body like a mummy ripped apart and a pair of blood-red wings unfurled. After the wings stretched out they were more than 10 feet long; they appeared like the wings of a giant bat.

At the same time, scales began to appear all over Corpsemancer's face. His arms lengthened and his claws became even larger, a chillingly cold light shining from them.

After the initial probing strike, Corpsemancer was now ready to go all-out.

Lin Ming was solemn. After reaching this boundary, no other junior was his opponent. If he wanted to fight he could only challenge those old monsters that had been stranded in the Life Destruction realm for hundreds of years. In front of these existences, Lin Ming was still far too young.

There were several small boundaries within the Life Destruction realm. From the first stage to the seventh stage of Life Destruction, the difference was approximate to the difference between the Houtian realm and the Revolving Core realm.

For the late Revolving Core Lin Ming to challenge a Destiny Decree master, that meant that he had now transcended the struggles of juniors and transitioned into fighting powerhouses of the older generation. At this moment, Lin Ming had truly stepped onto the highest stage of the Sky Spill Continent.

Corpsemancer extracted a massive scythe from his spatial ring. The scythe blade glowed with a cold light and its entire body was deep black. It looked like the scythe of the grim reaper.

As the scythe appeared, a limitless amount of resentment and malice filled the air, as if countless ghosts were weeping and screaming around the scythe.

“What is this sound? It pains the ears!”

“It’s drilling into my brain. The scythe is calling to me!”

All of the surrounding martial artists only felt as if countless demonic spirits were screaming into their ears. This sound seemed to have enormous penetrative power. Even if they covered their ears the sound still passed through, drilling directly into their spiritual sea.

As the martial artists with weaker cultivations heard this sound they felt as if their heads were about to crack open and all of the blood drained out from their faces.

“Hurry up and retreat!”

Some martial artists shook their hands as if they had awakened from a nightmare and began calling out warnings. However, many people were unable to withdraw under the effects of this sonic attack. They lost consciousness and fell down from the skies.

“This is the Evil Hate Scythe that Corpsemancer forged from countless suffering souls and lives. Every strike contains a near-endless amount of grudge and resentment; it can destroy a martial artist’s will!”

"If just hearing the sound of it is so terrifying, then what will happen if it cuts down on you!?"

Lin Ming bore the attack. As he was enveloped in the energy field of resentment from the Evil Hate Scythe, his face remained expressionless.

He could clearly hear this resentment colliding with his own dual force fields. 'This Corpsemancer, it seems he really transformed his own body into a puppet.'

A high level puppet master's greatest strength lay in their own bodies. This was because their bodies made the best puppets. Once their skeletons and meridians were modified beyond all recognition, their defensive power would far surpass a general martial artist's.

To be invulnerable themselves and also be able to coordinate three or four puppets together, a powerful martial artist would have an extreme headache if they bumped into a formidable puppet master.

As Corpsemancer brought out his complete body, his two eyes had already transformed from a ghostly green to a deep blood red. He grabbed the long scythe in both hands and unfolded his wings. Then, he silently slid forwards like ghosts and demons; his speed was shocking!

All of the observing martial artists tarried. All they saw was a flash as Corpsemancer appeared in front of Lin Ming, his black scythe rapidly cutting down! This sort of speed was in no way inferior to Lin Ming's Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Too fast!

Lin Ming was already horrified. This wasn't teleportation, but it was a speed that made it seem as if there were no difference!

"Nether Strike!"

The black scythe seemed to emerge from space. It cut through space, carrying with it endless resentment and howls from mourning ghosts as it slashed towards Lin Ming. This attack hadn't even arrived and yet its aura was so terrifying!

Lin Ming waved his spear. Facing this all-out Corpsemancer, Lin Ming naturally didn't dare to hold back.

Law of Annihilation, Chain of Stars!

A spear ran up to meet the enemy. The Concept of Fire and the Concept of Space were poured into the spear, causing all of the heaven and earth origin energy in a 10 mile radius to restlessly move. The fire energy and the power of space fused together, condensed into tiny little fragments that rapidly spun around like a chain of stars, shrouding down towards Corpsemancer.

Ca!

The tiny fragments of fire and space struck with the resentment of the black scythe, creating a harsh keening noise to split the air.

Lin Ming's spear crossed with the black scythe. A terrifying wave of true essence exploded, causing the atmosphere to vibrate. They were nearly evenly matched!

During the battle, Corpsemancer revealed a diabolical grin. Not only did he have his own attack but he also had puppets!

As Corpsemancer struck out with the Nether Strike attack, the Giant Demon puppet and the great turtle puppet also attacked. The Giant Demon puppet turned the axe shaft in his hands, turning it into a makeshift long spear as he thrust out at Lin Ming's back. At the same time, the great turtle puppet opened its vast maw and spat out a beam of black energy.

These two attacks joined together. Their combined power just was slightly less than Corpsemancer's own Nether Strike.

This was an attack from the front and back!

“Sir Lin, be careful!” Xiaixiao shouted out. Her life was now linked together with Lin Ming’s – how could she not be tense? If Lin Ming was defeated, she would suffer a fate worse than death.

At this critical moment, Lin Ming took a sudden step forwards. Space twisted underneath his feet. Although it looked as if he had only taken a casual step forwards, he had actually crossed a mile, causing both of the puppets’ attacks to miss.

Lin Ming stood in the skies. A mile away from Corpsemancer, he pointed his spear point right at him.

“I’m also confident in my speed. Although my long distance speed may not reach the degree of your twin black wings.”

Bang!

Dozens of miles away, the black beam of energy released by the great turtle puppet smashed into a mountainside, causing an entire rock shelf to collapse.

Watching Lin Ming and Corpsemancer fighting in the air, everyone present felt as if they had lost their breath.

This was the showdown of Destiny Decree masters. Although the Sky Spill Continent had over 100 Divine Sea powerhouses, all of these existences were secretive individuals that almost never appeared. Most of them had hidden themselves in seclusion for countless years.

Without the Divine Sea, the Destiny Decree was king!

The Destiny Decree was equivalent to the highest stage of the Sky Spill Continent!

“Space Laws? What a pleasant surprise.” Corpsemancer sinisterly laughed. As Lin Ming had said, that extreme speed of Corpsemancer’s came from the pair of wings on his back. In terms of long distance travel, he was faster than Lin Ming. But, in short distances, he was actually slower than Lin Ming. Lin Ming’s Golden Roc Shattering the Void was able to twist space, with a single step, approaching teleportation. This was the strength of Laws. As for those black wings behind Corpsemancer, they were merely heaven-step flight treasures.

“You are indeed an unrivalled talent. Only killing someone like you can bring me sweet pleasure! Jejejeje!”

Chapter 781 – The Demon Emperor's Armor

Chapter 781 – The Demon Emperor's Armor

…

…

…

When Corpsemancer had finished speaking, he traced his spatial ring, and another puppet came flying out. It was a humanoid puppet that was wearing a set of armor made entirely of bone. Its body burned with dark green corpse fire; simply looking at the flickering flames caused one to feel a chill in their soul.

"That's likely the bat puppet recorded on the Destiny Decree."

"Those ghostly green flames… you shouldn't be wrong. That's a puppet refined from the corpse of another Destiny Decree master!"

Martial artists had a formidable level of soul force, and thus had near-photographic memory. Nearly everyone present had memorized all of the information on the 360 masters of the Destiny Decree. Most of the famous abilities used by these masters were recorded on the Destiny Decree.

And the puppet that Corpsemancer had brought out was his strongest puppet yet—the bat.

The bat puppet was refined from a Destiny Decree master that Corpsemancer had killed in order to be listed on the Destiny Decree himself. At the time, Corpsemancer's strongest puppet had been cut down by that master, and completely destroyed. Thus, after Corpsemancer had killed the Destiny Decree master, he used his corpse as the foundation for an even stronger, more powerful puppet. And that was the bat puppet in front of them. By relying on this puppet, he'd managed to become the 330th ranked character of the Destiny Decree.

Not only was he using the bat puppet, but he simultaneously used the Evil Hate Scythe. This proved that Corpsemancer had been forced to bring out all of his combat strength!

Corpsemancer had become infamous for over 300 years ago; he was now over 500 years old. As for Lin Ming, he was only in his early twenties. They were people from completely different eras.

"Being able to force Corpsemancer to this step, regardless of whether he wins or loses, just that is enough to be proud of." Rong Lin thought out loud. He didn't know who this youth flying in the air was, but without a doubt, if he managed to live through this, he'd become an extraordinary figure that shook the entire Sky Spill Continent.

Huuu-!

High up in the sky, strong heavenly winds were surging. The bat puppet then extended its pair of black wings. In only a moment, it arrived in front of Lin Ming. It stretched out its claws, which shimmered with ghostly blue flames, and grasped at Lin Ming's neck.

Lin Ming gripped his spear, his posture becoming as immovable and steadfast as an ancient mountain. The power of thunder and fire poured into the red spear at the same time. The spear issued an excited keening cry as it fiercely shook.

Penetrating Rainbow!

The power of thunder and fire fused together. A brilliant beam of blazing light cut through the vast blue skies like a sharp sword, and was as bright as a blazing sun as it tore through the void. Lin Ming's spear solidly crashed into the bat puppet's claws.

Clang!

A metallic ringing echoed out in the air. The bat puppet's defensive power was as strong as if it were a heaven-step treasure. A generic martial artist could forget about ever breaking through its defenses. However, Lin Ming's attack wasn't normal; it contained a large success bronze level battle spirit!

Kacha!

The bat puppet's claws were abruptly torn off from Lin Ming's strike!

"Accept your fate boy!" Corpsemancer shimmered into existence like a ghost directly behind Lin Ming. His eyes gleamed with manic light as he raised his black scythe then cut towards Lin Ming's open back.

Endless resentment poured outwards, as if ten thousand grieving ghosts were crying in unison. This resentment condensed into substantialized energy and shot into Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

Under the dual support of the Samsara martial intent and his battle spirit, Lin Ming's spiritual sea was simply an unassailable iron wall. As the power of resentment entered his spiritual sea, it was immediately burnt to ash and smoke.

Burning Star Flame!

The Heretical God Seed trembled. The highly compressed Burning Star Flame then erupted from the Heretical God Seed.

This was the power of a heaven-step Flame Essence!

Which a sizzling 'chi chi chi', all of the spirits attached to Corpsemancer's scythe were burnt to nothingness.

Law of Annihilation, Chain of Stars!

Lin Ming thrust his spear outwards. All of the heaven and earth origin energy in a radius of ten miles was stirred up by him, then concentrated into countless fragments of light that sparkled like the endless number of stars in the sky, before it all fell downwards. From far away, it looked like a sparkling galaxy had crashed into the earth!

Such an apocalyptic scene left everyone shocked.

Bang!

With an explosion, Lin Ming, Corpsemancer, and the bat puppet were all thrown backwards.

A trace of blood flowed out the edge of Lin Ming's mouth. However, Corpsemancer's shoulder had been pierced through by the spear light!

When the martial artists of Witch Creek City saw this fight from far away, all of them were shocked speechless. Corpsemancer's body had gone through the transformative process of puppet techniques. In exchange for a body that couldn't be called human nor ghost, he'd received a body with durability equal to a treasure. Yet he'd still been wounded by Lin Ming!

This was an incalculably strong strike.

Bang bang bang!

An incomparably brutal melee ensued as Lin Ming collided with Corpsemancer again and again. Their movements were so fast that any martial artist below the Life Destruction realm was entirely unable to even make out their movements. Lin Ming's body was tough from the start, and he excelled at frontal combat. However, Corpsemancer and his bat puppet were the same.

They were in sharp opposition!

"Bury the Heavens!"

Lin Ming revolved the energy of his Eight Inner Hidden Gates to the limit. He thrust his spear out, and several massive cracks appeared in space. The power of space surged out from these cracks, twisting into a savage spacial storm.

The Burning Star Flame ignited atop the red spear, becoming even more vivid and fierce as it fused with the spacial storm.

This was the fusion of fire and space!

This spear contained Lin Ming's complete understanding of both the Concepts of Space and of Fire. At the same time, he also poured his large success bronze battle spirit within it.

On the other side, Corpsemancer stepped forward, and fused with his bat puppet. Then, with the sound of a wailing ghost, the bat puppet's body suddenly rapidly inflated, with a number of bones stabbing out from within its body!

Ribs, leg bones, arm bones… all sorts of long bones had been turned into white bony lances. At the same time, ghostly green flames burned atop every bony lance!

In the briefest of moments, the bat puppet had become extremely hideous.

"Take my strongest attack! 18,000 Deaths!"

In the blink of an eye, all of those bony lances, as well as the black scythe, shot towards Lin Ming.

18,000 was not some random number, there really were that many attacks. The attacks overwhelmed covered the sky, blotting out the sun, and blocking all avenues of escape.

From afar, it looked like both Lin Ming and Corpsemancer had been trapped in a sea of bones!

Xiaoxiao's heart tightened.

"Chi!"

"Chi!"

"Chi!"

"Chi!"

Mournful wails reverberated through both the clouds and earth—as if the entire world was crying together. Lin Ming revolved the Heretical God Force to the limit, his eyes blazing like two twin infernos. The Flame Essence atop his spear seemed ready to explode at any given moment.

"Break!"

With 'Bury the Heavens', several thousand bone lances were crushed to pieces. However, over 10,000 remained, which shot towards Lin Ming the same as before!

Lin Ming waved his spear as if it were a dancing red flood dragon. Shattered bone lances were everywhere, and bone dust endlessly rained down from the skies.

A strong heavenly wind wildly surged through the skies. Lin Ming's black hair flapped in the wind. He tirelessly waved his spear, as if he didn't know what exhaustion was—he was like a demon god incarnate!

"Bury the Heavens!"

Lin Ming ignored everything, and consecutively used Bury the Heavens twice. A dazzling black light was suddenly ejected from the sea of bones, directly sent flying into the horizon. Soon afterwards, countless brilliantly dazzling golden lights shot out from every all over the sea of bones. A sun seemed to rise within the sea of bones, emitting golden light as sharp as a sword that could cut through everything. The countless bones in the sky began to disintegrate like collapsing sand sculptures.

An immeasurable amount of bone dust flew everywhere. It covered the skies, becoming a white fog that filled the heavens and earth.

"Go die!"

Lin Ming forcefully cut a path through the sea of bones, thrusting his spear at Corpsemancer.

At this time, Corpsemancer had already separated from the bat puppet, and they were floating several dozen feet away from each other. Corpsemancer's blood red eyes had turned vacant. At some unknown point, the black Evil Hate Scythe had returned to his hands. Black corpse flames ignited into a blazing inferno atop the scythe's edge.

"Nether Strike, Locking Yin and Yang!"

With a slight movement of his lips, Corpsemancer spoke these words. Then, all of the resentment within the black scythe suddenly fused into a single mass, which locked the surrounding space!

Lin Ming's spear had already been thrust out. However, Corpsemancer had no intention of dodging this strike. Instead, he used the Evil Hate Scythe to cut towards Lin Ming's waist!

Lin Ming only felt the power of resentment wrap around his body; he found himself unable to dodge!

If he were to bring out the Burning Star Flame, then he could reduce the power of resentment to nothing in just a few breaths of time. But by then, Corpsemancer's attack would have already struck him.

Their attacks were completely designed such that they would perish together!

Lin Ming had absolute confidence in his own defensive ability, but Corpsemancer did too!

Whose defensive power was superior?

This thought flashed through Lin Ming's mind, but he instantly rejected it. In this situation, with his strongest attack that also had his large success battle spirit poured into it, no matter how strong the Corpsemancer's strength was, it would still pierce through his skill!

Lin Ming didn't believe that Corpsemancer didn't value his own life above all else.

"Bury the Heavens!"

Facing this inescapable blow, he simply didn't think of avoiding it. Instead, he poured all of his true essence into the red spear, issuing out his final, most brilliant strike!

The power of fire and the power of space had perfectly fused together. The might of this spear was earthshaking!

However, Lin Ming didn't stab towards Corpsemancer. Instead, he threw his spear towards the bat puppet.

"Go!"

The red spear flew out from his hands, crossing the skies like a blazing rainbow!

With a light piercing sound, the bat puppet's head was pierced by the spear light. It's skull was cracked apart, and brain fluid shot out!

At the same time, Corpsemancer's scythe cut into Lin Ming's waist. Lin Ming's bodily protective true essence was instantly melted away, and corpse fire burnt through Lin Ming's clothes. The scythe seemed as if it would split him apart. However at that moment, the scythe's blade was actually blocked by something.

As Lin Ming's robes burned away, it revealed a jet black armor. This was the Demon Emperor's armor that Lin Ming had taken out from the Cosmic Melting Furnace!

The Demon Emperor's armor could weaken the majority of an attack, but it wasn't an absolute defense. Some of the leftover Yin energy rampaged through Lin Ming's body, recklessly tearing through his meridians.

Lin Ming’s complexion paled, and he spat out a mouthful of blood.

Corpsemancer’s final attack had severely wounded him.

If it weren’t for the Demon Emperor’s armor, Lin Ming might have died here. It was hard to say whether or not his body’s physical defense could withstand Corpsemancer’s strike.

“It’s over?”

“What happened?”

Everyone looked on, dumbfounded, at Corpsemancer’s scythe that was embedded in Lin Ming’s waist. As for Lin Ming’s spear, it was stuck through the bat puppet’s head.

Corpsemancer stood stock still in front of Lin Ming, completely uninjured.

“Did the bat puppet block that youth’s final attack for its master?”

“No wait, why do I feel that the youth intentionally attacked the bat puppet?”

“Not unless that youth is an idiot. In a fight against a puppet master, you definitely have to attack the main body. Only an idiot would attack the puppet!”

The final exchange of moves had happened too fast. Almost no one had been able to clearly see what happened.

Chapter 782 – Killing Corpsemancer

Chapter 782 – Killing Corpsemancer

…

…

…

“Could that youth have been hacked to death by Corpsemancer?”

“What an idiot. He actually attacked Corpsemancer’s puppet at the last moment. Was his brain fried or something?” A Xiantian martial artist asked out loud with a mocking smirk.

“Shut up!” An old man near him coldly humphed, “Do you think that everyone is as stupid as you are? That youth is one of Sky Spill Continent’s favored sons of heaven! It’s impossible that he wouldn’t know how to battle a puppet master!”

The Xiantian martial artist looked a bit ugly as he was reprimanded. Still, he began mumbling to himself, obviously not convinced.

“Something’s wrong. Corpsemancer wasn’t injured but why is he standing still there? Could that youth have attacked Corpsemancer somehow and we didn’t notice?”

“Just who won? What’s happening here?”

Ten miles away, Xiaoxiao gripped her chest as her heart tightened in pain. Lin Ming and Corpsemancer were both immobile; this made her incomparably nervous.

To her, Lin Ming’s victory or defeat was the difference between heaven and hell.

“Grandma.”

"Don't worry, that Lin Lanjian is alright. But that Corpsemancer… Lin Lanjian obviously could have attacked Corpsemancer at the last moment, but he chose to attack the bat puppet instead. I really don't understand what is going on here…"

As the black-clothed old woman spoke halfway, a scene that left all martial artists confounded occurred. That Corpsemancer who was in front of Lin Ming suddenly fell from the sky, smashing into the ground!

Everyone was shocked. Just what was going on!?

Lin Ming's face was pallid as he reached out a hand and released a wisp of his battle spirit. The red long spear shot out and returned to Lin Ming's hand.

Then, everyone found that above Lin Ming's spearpoint, there was actually some fat meaty thing stuck atop it. And that thing was still convulsing and wriggling around.

This was actually a human brain!

As Lin Ming saw this white and glistening human brain, he let out a long breath.

It was over.

A puppet master could transform any part of their body, but there was one place that they couldn't change. That was – their spiritual sea!

The spiritual sea depended on the brain to exist. Corpsemancer's body had already been altered beyond all recognition. Now, his only true existence was his brain.

Zi zi zi!

The brain mass on Lin Ming's spearpoint was actually fiercely struggling. Moreover, it was sending out grating screams, vacillating up and down as if it were a giant fat white worm.

Lin Ming could feel words flowing into his spiritual sea. “Don’t kill me! I will give you puppet techniques; I can tell you all the secrets of the Asura Divine Kingdom! With your talent and my knowledge, you can grasp the entire Sky Spill Continent in your hands and rule the world! It’s impossible for you to find out what I know, even if I don’t tell you of my own volition. Don’t think of using the soul searching technique on me; I can self-destruct my spiritual sea!”

“I don’t need you to self-destruct. In fact, I’ll help annihilate you!” Lin Ming sneered, having no intention of bantering with this thing. He had absolutely no desire to learn anything like this strange puppet technique that turned one into something that didn’t seem like a human or ghost.

“No… no!!!”

Puff!

Vibrating true essence sprang forth from Lin Ming’s fingertips and ran up the red spear like a viper!

“Nooooo!”

Corpsemancer sent out a final pitiful scream. With a popping sound, the brain burst apart into a thick white liquid like rice porridge.

Corpsemancer had died.

As Grandma White, Rong Lin, and other Life Destruction masters saw this, they suddenly realized what had happened. Before that final strike occurred, Corpsemancer had shifted his brain into the skull of the bat puppet. Then, he had controlled his main body to perish together with Lin Ming.

This was a completely ruthless and insidious move. Once Lin Ming fell for it, he would still be severely wounded even if he didn’t die. He absolutely wouldn’t be able to fight against the bat puppet Corpsemancer.

But Lin Ming had clearly realized what sort of change had occurred in those fleeting last moments. He had thus given up his attack on Corpsemancer's main body and switched his target to the bat puppet!

If these were peaceful times and one carefully investigated with their perception, then it wouldn't be difficult to find out just where Corpsemancer's brain had gone. But during that fierce battle just now, in that critical moment, Lin Ming had been able to discover this point! Now that was truly horrifying!

Slowly, all of the martial artists began to understand what had happened. Even those that were confused had the series of events explained to them.

For a time, a pall of silence fell over the entire city. Just who was this youth who had managed to exterminate Corpsemancer?

Some people noticed that Lin Ming was wearing a jet-black armor on his body. There was just a circular gap on the chest area, as if it were missing its heartguard mirror.

It was because of this armor that Lin Ming hadn't been cut in half by the Evil Hate Scythe.

What sort of armor was this that it could block Corpsemancer's final strike?

Hu –

Lin Ming took out a new set of clothes from his spatial ring and tossed it on, immediately covering the Demon Emperor's armor. When Lin Ming had first worn the Demon Emperor's armor he placed some minor camouflage on it because he didn't want to attract others' attention. But, that powerful attack of Corpsemancer just now had completely ruined his careful concealment.

For a short period of time, this armor should attract some people's attention. But Lin Ming didn't worry too much. Tens of thousands of years had already passed; it was impossible for others to recognize the Demon Emperor's armor.

Lin Ming received the broken bat puppet and the other puppets and then dropped down from the skies.

As he landed on the ground, all of the surrounding martial artists quickly scattered away from him in shock. Facing such an evil star, no one dared to remain near him, much less approach him. Even the city guard couldn’t dream of controlling him. If anyone died here because of him then they could only blame their bad luck.

Lin Ming ignored the surrounding martial artists and gathered up Corpsemancer’s corpse and spatial ring. Then, he sent a sound transmitting talisman to Xiaoxiao and flew towards her. At this time he needed to recuperate from his wounds. In that battle just now he had used every ability he had. Not only did he consume a massive amount of energy but he was also seriously wounded.

“He won… Sir Lin actually won…”

As Xiaoxiao saw Lin Ming fly towards her, her lips faintly shivered. Even she didn’t dare to believe that this was real and not a dream.

A Destiny Decree master had actually been killed by Lin Ming! And Lin Ming was only at the late Revolving Core realm.

Xiaoxiao never imagined that the young man she met several days ago could actually kill a Destiny Decree master!

Every character ranked on the Destiny Decree was an earthshaking, all-powerful existence. Even if Heavencraft Pavilion called upon their complete resources they would still find it hard to move such a character to action.

“He really won. Young miss, your father’s spirit must be protecting us to have us encounter such an amazing person!” Beside Xiaoxiao, Grandma White began to cry. In these past days, Xiaoxiao had faced an infinite amount of pressure, but so had Grandma White. She had looked after Xiaoxiao as she grew up, and after receiving the grace of her father, she completely regarded Xiaoxiao as her own granddaughter.

When Lin Ming flew in front of Xiaoxiao, her entire face was wet with tears. For a time she was overwhelmed and unable to speak a single word.

"Lin… Sir Lin, I sincerely thank you…"

"I must heal first."

Lin Ming had no intention of speaking too much and flew directly to Heavencraft Pavilion. The current environment was not safe and he needed to ensure that he was at his peak condition. Otherwise, if he encountered a more powerful enemy he wouldn't even be able to escape.

As the martial artists of Witch Creek City saw Lin Ming fly towards Heavencraft Pavilion with Xiaoxiao and Grandma White in tow, all of them were flabbergasted.

"So it's someone invited by Heavencraft Pavilion."

"Just who is he? It's impossible for him to be in his twenties. He should be several hundred years old but just looks young."

A young martial artist muttered out loud. He was a genius of Witch Creek City's younger generation, but compared to Lin Ming he was nothing at all. He simply couldn't accept that they were of similar age.

"Don't be stupid, he isn't even at the Life Destruction realm. Only when a martial artist reaches the Life Destruction realm can they burn some of their cultivation to renew their youth. And this is only appearances – it doesn't lengthen their lifespan. Normally only female martial artists that value their appearance too much would do such things. Men normally wouldn't. After all, rejuvenating your appearance requires you to burn not a small amount of your cultivation."

"This is incredible news. He's so young and yet he killed a Destiny Decree master. The Destiny Decree will change again. Perhaps the four great intelligence networks will release a revised Destiny Decree soon."

Witch Creek City couldn't be considered a small city of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, thus they naturally had branches of the intelligence networks here as well as eyes from the various major forces.

The news that Lin Ming had killed Corpsemancer quickly passed through every major intelligence network. And Lin Ming's name was also inquired – Lin Lanjian.

……….

At this time, in the front hall of Heavencraft Pavilion the purple-clothed Xiaoxiao knelt down in front of Lin Ming and was deeply bowing with reverential respect. "Sir Lin, I will never forget this gratitude as long as I live!"

Grandma White also bowed. This was no longer just helping Xiaoxiao ascend to the position of Company Head, but had involved saving Xiaoxiao's very life. As she deeply bowed before Lin Ming, her heart hated Xiaoxiao's two great uncles to the extreme. She cursed them for their ruthlessness. They had actually gone to look for someone like Corpsemancer – that was the same as kicking Xiaoxiao into the depths hell.

Since they no longer cared for face, she wouldn't keep any more scruples with her. As long as Lin Ming was here, she simply didn't fear a battle to the death.

"Miss Heavencraft, there is no need to bow to me." Lin Ming waved his hand. "We are just helping each other out according to the previous agreement. Miss Heavencraft must not forget my dragonspine grass either."

"I will definitely help Sir Lin find it as soon as possible. This is my Heavencraft Pavilion's Snow Ice Divine Pill. It has miraculous healing effects and also has the use of nourishing the meridians and dantian. Sir Lin, please accept it."

Xiaoxiao extended a pill box with both hands, respectfully presenting it to Lin Ming.

This was a miracle cure controlled by Heavencraft Pavilion. With Xiaoxiao's current authority, she didn't have the authorization to give it away without the approval of the Council of Elders.

But now that the situation had devolved to this level and she had nearly been killed by her two great uncles, Xiaoxiao could no longer care about whatever Council of Elders.

Having Lin Ming restore himself to his peak combat strength was the most important matter at hand.

Lin Ming glanced at the white divine pill within the pill box. Indeed, it contained an incomparably rich heaven and earth origin energy. Even Lin Ming, who had seen a great number of miracle medicines in his time, also felt his heart stir.

He didn't decline. He directly received the box and then entered his training chambers to restore himself.

The battle with Corpsemancer had been strenuous and exacting on Lin Ming. However, he had gained a number of insights during it and needed to seize this chance to digest them.

As everyone expected, in just a mere three days after Lin Ming and Corpsemancer's battle, a new Destiny Decree was issued forth.

Every three years, the four great intelligence networks would collect all new information on every Life Destruction powerhouse's cultivation, progress, and recent battles. They would then use all this information to speculate on their current approximate strength. This was when a new Destiny Decree would be released. Generally, there would be far-reaching changes every time.

Between the two issues of the Destiny Decree, if there was a fight between Destiny Decree powerhouses or a Destiny Decree powerhouse was killed, leading to a clear change in ranks, then a new revised edition of the Destiny Decree would be released.

And this time, the revision of the Destiny Decree was because of Lin Ming.

Chapter 783 – First Appearance On The Destiny Decree

Chapter 783 – First Appearance On The Destiny Decree

…

…

…

There were a total of 360 Life Destruction powerhouses ranked on the Destiny Decree. Those that could make the list on the Density Decree all had a certain degree of hope that they would one day reach the Divine Sea. Thus, most of those on the Destiny Decree were devoted cultivators and spent the majority of their life closed up in seclusion, rarely seen in public.

Many major forces hoped to win over a few Destiny Decree masters to act as foreign patrons that could assist them. However, besides a few top national level forces, even the countless organizations as wealthy as the Heavencraft Trading Company could not ever hope to win over one.

Each Divine Kingdom only had a few dozen Destiny Decree powerhouses at their disposal. Moreover, for someone at their boundary, their main pursuit in life had become breaking through to the Divine Sea realm. Besides training and seeking out lucky breaks, they simply didn't care for dueling others. As for the struggles of wealth and power in the world, those were even more boring and worthless in their eyes.

The only reason some Destiny Decree powerhouses were even willing to join top national influences was because of the vast amounts of resources that these organizations could provide.

Because of how influential the Destiny Decree was, every major player in the world paid close attention to this list. Through this list, they could understand an approximate situation of the powerhouses in the Four Divine Kingdoms, and at least understand the strength they showed to the public.

The entire Destiny Decree was written in paper and then bound into a book. Every Life Destruction powerhouse occupied their own page, and thus every single issue of the Destiny Decree had 360 pages; no more, no less.

Within these 360 pages, some characters that were currently attracting attention would be written in the Decree using red ink.

At this time, the one who was written down in red ink was Lin Ming.

The 320th page had a name that was written down with large, blood red characters.

Lin Lanjian.

The back of that page introduced a variety of information, including Lin Ming's fighting style; his moves, weapons, and current accomplishments.

"Lin Lanjian: Weapon – Spear. Killed the ranked 330th ranked Destiny Decree master, Corpsemancer. Cultivation at the late Revolving Core realm. An eternally rare talent."

The Destiny Decree was generous with its praise. This ranking list had already existed for several thousand years, and there had been far too many geniuses recorded in its pages. Many of them had even gone on to become Peerless Emperors. However, to enter the Destiny Decree at just the Revolving Core realm, Lin Ming was actually the first person to accomplish this in all these millennia.

Just this point alone was enough to stir up a storm.

A massive number of Witch Creek City's martial artists rushed over to Heavencraft Trading Company for a visit. For a time, the entire Heavencraft Trading Company was packed to the brim with business.

Many of them wished to inquire about the news, and to also meet Lin Ming. There were also some representatives from major forces that wished to win over Lin Ming. If even this was impossible, then testing the waters didn't do any harm.

In turn, this caused the recently struggling Heavencraft Trading Company to be booming with business. This was truly a serendipitous accident. At this time, Xiaoxiao no longer needed to accept the ruling of the family, and had more or less won the struggle for the position of Family Head in advance.

At this time within the Heavencraft Family, Xiaoxiao's two great uncles were looking at the scarlet letters emblazoned on the Destiny Decree. It was as if the letters had been written in fresh, glistening red blood.

Corpsemancer had died!

Furthermore, he had been killed by Lin Ming!

"How could this be..." Heavencraft Xiao muttered to himself, unable to believe that this was true.

"Big Brother, what do we do?" The sudden change in the current situation had rendered Heavencraft Yun listless. He would have absolutely never imagined that the random, young boy that Xiaoxiao drew in from somewhere had actually managed to kill the Destiny Decree ranked Corpsemancer.

"What can we do!?" Heavencraft Xiao harshly exhaled in a panic. However, he was also at a loss at the time. Paper could not wrap up fire; the truth would eventually come out. They couldn't depend on finding asylum in their family by arguing they had nothing to do with Corpsemancer.

They were in the wrong to begin with to involve that Corpsemancer. If Xiaoxiao had been killed then everything would have been fine. However, now that Corpsemancer had died, this would cause all the anger to be directed at them. Since Xiaoxiao also now had Lin Ming's support, she was in an invincible position. It would be impossible to find another Destiny Decree master that could contend with Lin Ming in a short period of time.

As for the Crown Prince, Heavencraft Xiao had no expectations that he would help. The Heavencraft Trading Company was only a potential boost to the Crown Prince, and now that things had come to this, the result was already foreseeable. There was no way that the Nine Furnace Crown Prince would be willing to link himself with some dastardly villain like Corpsemancer.

"We can only take advantage of this time while Lin Lanjian is recuperating from his injuries to immediately leave through the secret transmission array to look for that sir. The changes within the Heavencraft Trading Company have already gone beyond our control; there is nowhere else we can go." Heavencraft Xiao painfully sighed. He no longer had any other choice.

Once they made this decision, the two of them fled from the Heavencraft Family under the cover of night. In a family like the Heavencraft Family, they naturally had a special transmission array specifically used for escaping. If they left through this transmission array they wouldn't need to be afraid that Lin Ming would chase them down and kill them.

They no longer entertained the hopes of becoming the Heavencraft Family Head.

....

At this time, at the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's Phoenix City, a young man wearing a five-clawed dragon royal robe was flipping through the new issue of the Destiny Decree, a thoughtful expression on his face.

"Crown Prince!" A man wearing a green mask appeared in the great hall, respectfully bowing to the young man.

This young man was the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's Crown Prince. He was in his forties, but appeared as if he were in his twenties. This wasn't because he consumed a part of his cultivation to restore his youthful appearance, but because he had stepped into Life Destruction at a mere 30 years of age. After his physical body had been transformed and reborn, his appearance maintained the look of himself in his twenties, something that wouldn't change for thousands of years to come.

Even men were pretty willing to maintain their youthful looks for as long as possible. However, if they were stranded in the Revolving Core realm until their thirties and forties, there would still be a few traces of their age left on their faces, giving off the feel that they were middle-aged in appearance.

If one wanted to keep the vivid vibrancy of youth, one would have to step into the Life Destruction realm at around 30 years of age. However, this sort of person would be a monstrous genius of their era. Without accident, they would inevitably step into the Divine Sea, and would even grow to become an astounding character amongst all Divine Sea powerhouses.

"Fleeting Dragon, what's the matter?" The Nine Furnace Crown Prince quietly said as he closed the Destiny Decree.

"Reporting to Your Highness, the two chess pieces that your subordinate has arranged in the Heavencraft Family have arrived at the Royal Palace overnight. They wish to seek an audience with the Crown Prince. Does Your Highness wish to grant them a meeting?"

To the green masked man, Heavencraft Xiao and Heavencraft Yun were both unimportant characters that didn't have the qualifications to seek an audience with the Crown Prince. It was only the fact that Lin Lanjian had killed Corpsemancer that would pique the Crown Prince's interest, and then submit this report.

Indeed, the Nine Furnace Crown Prince nodded and said, "Let them see me. In addition, Fleeting Dragon, I had you investigate the three great trading companies, the two great banks, and the Hundred Treasure Auction House. How have you done so far?"

"Reporting to Your Highness, the Nine Furnace Guard is currently secretly investigating these groups. There aren't any major omissions with the two great banks and the Hundred Treasure Auction House, but the three great trading companies all have a few existing problems."

"Oh? What about the Heavencraft Trading Company?" The Nine Furnace Crown Prince nodded with satisfaction, a smile touching his face.

"We've already obtained precise evidence on the Heavencraft Trading Company. The Heavencraft Trading Company's previous head and the one before him had all made transactions in violation of the Divine Kingdom's laws. There were even some secret transactions done with the Asura Divine Kingdom that we can use to charge them with colluding with an enemy power!"

The green masked man indifferently said. He was the chief commander of the Nine Furnace Guard.

The so-called Nine Furnace Guard was a military faction under the direct control of the Divine Kingdom. They governed the nation's prisons and held great power in all other aspects.

Their power and influence were terrifying, and they even had five Destiny Decree masters in their ranks. This green masked man was one of them, and also the strongest amongst them. His code name was Fleeting Dragon.

All of the members of the Nine Furnace Guard wore embroidered robes and green masks. These masks were not for decoration, and were actually tools carved from wood spirit jade. Wood spirit jade had the special characteristic of isolating all external perception. Even a Divine Sea powerhouse could not pierce his perception even half of an inch into the wood spirit jade. Thus, as long as they wore these masks, then no one would ever be able to see the true expression of the Nine Furnace Guard martial artists.

The entire Nine Furnace Guard had a total of 9000 individuals, and their combat strength was just as fearful. They were under the direct jurisdiction of the Nine Furnace Crown Prince and could be considered as his right hand.

“Excellent. Organize all the evidence as soon as possible and bring it to me.” The Nine Furnace Crown Prince said with a smile. Although this was a secret investigation, the truth was that the investigation had already been carried out for an entire two years thus far.

As Fleeting Dragon heard this, he was secretly startled. He didn’t know just what the Crown Prince was plotting, but the three great trading companies, the two great banks, and the Hundred Treasure Auction House summed up to be a total of six major commercial organizations. They grasped nearly 10% of the entire Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s economy.

Was the Crown Prince really preparing to swallow them all up?

It had to be known that, for a trading company to develop to such a massive scale, it was impossible for them to wipe their asses clean of all the dirty deeds they committed. As long as one had the mind and resources to search, they absolutely could find some problems. In fact, this was a matter that everyone was aware of.

Even so, all of the previous Divine Emperors of the four Divine Kingdoms tacitly consented to the existence of the economic oligarchy, because they could help manage the country and create wealth for all. Moreover, over one-third of their profits were collected into the Divine Kingdom’s treasury.

If one wished to annex these economic organizations then it would be possible with the absolute suppressive strength of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s state power. If one didn’t care for public opinion, then this was a simple matter. But, this had already been tested by another Divine Kingdom once, and the truth had proved differently. After the great economic organizations were also taken under national country, it was easy for corruption to grow in management. This then led to a decline in efficiency and profit, eventually leading these organizations to close down in several years. This was simply not a wise move.

The state machine was mostly able to grasp spirit essence stone mines, wood spirit jade sites, and other similarly simple resource-based industries. It was difficult to become involved in anything else.

If a normal Prince were to have these sort of thoughts then Fleeting Dragon would have thought that he had delusions of grandeur and had become completely incompetent.

But now, the one making this decision was the Nine Furnace Crown Prince. Fleeting Dragon was well aware of just how great the Nine Furnace Crown prince's hidden strength was; he certainly wasn't an idiot that would make such an addled decision. Then, just what was he planning on doing? Was he really preparing to annex these six great economic organizations? That would definitely cause some level of turmoil in the Divine Kingdom.

Fleeting Dragon imagined all these things but he didn't question his orders. As the chief commander of the Nine Furnace Guard, his only duty was to obey orders.

………….

Three days later, Heavencraft Trading Company –

"Mm? An invitation to the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's Divine Palace?"

At the Heavencraft Trading Company, Lin Ming had received a jade slip made from wood spirit jade. It was marked with an invitation to the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's Royal Palace. Additionally, the one who sent this invitation was surprisingly the Nine Furnace Crown Prince!"

"The Nine Furnace Crown Prince wishes for me to come to the Divine Palace as a guest and also bring Heavencraft Xiaoxiao?" Lin Ming frowned as he repeated the message on the jade slip.

Chapter 784 – The Crown Prince’s Invitation

Chapter 784 – The Crown Prince’s Invitation

…

…

…

In the past few days, Lin Ming had come to understand what sort of person the Nine Furnace Crown Prince was.

His name was Yang Yun, and his martial talent was extraordinary. It seemed as if he had come across an immense fortuitous encounter when he was young, and had now broken through to Life Destruction at a mere 30 years of age.

Yang Yun was a character that wielded alarming power throughout the entire Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. He wasn’t on a level that the likes of Li Yifeng could even compare to.

Although Li Yifeng was a Prince, there was a vast difference in their respective influence. Putting aside the disparity between the Seven Star Divine Kingdom’s strength and the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s strength, just Yang Yun and Li Yifeng’s respective status in their Divine Kingdoms alone was incomparable.

Li Yifeng could at best be considered a playboy, and had a natural disposition towards laziness and fun. His finances were all controlled, and he had even been punished with confinement before.

As for the Nine Furnace Crown Prince, he had at least five subordinates that were all Destiny Decree masters, and he himself was also ranked on the Destiny Decree. It was just that his ranking had been omitted from the Decree, and there hadn’t been any information dispatched about him for many years. The depths of his strength were a complete mystery to all.

Compared to Yang Yun, Li Yifeng was just a little baby that hadn't grown up.

It was impossible for Lin Ming to be at ease when facing such a character. Yang Yun was nearly twice his age, and even the power of his subordinates wasn't something Lin Ming could ever hope to contend with.

For the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, Yang Yun represented the peak of strength outside of the Divine Sea powerhouses.

Despite the fact that Yang Yun had no enmity or grudge with Lin Ming, and that he shouldn't even have a reason to harm Lin Ming to begin with, Lin Ming didn't want to enter a place like the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. That could truly be described as a dragon's lake or a tiger's cave; a truly dangerous zone!

Most of the Destiny Decree masters of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom were subordinates of the Divine Kingdom. After all, the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom was not just a nation, but a quasi sixth-grade super Holy Land!

The Divine Kingdom's three great Imperial Scholars, twelve Great Officials, and five Nine Furnace Guard Captains were all Destiny Decree ranked characters, and were also ranked extremely high on the Decree.

In addition to that, the Divine Kingdom had Emperor Uncles and High Princes that had lived for several thousand years and had gone into seclusion. These people were even more terrifying!

They had most likely entered into the Divine Sea. In a sense, the current Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom could compare with the Demon God Imperial Palace to a small degree. The Demon God Imperial Palace had once been a great sect that ruled the world, the most terrifying power in the entire Sky Spill Continent!

In front of these people, Lin Ming simply didn't have any strength to resist. Once he entered the Divine Palace, he would be at their disposal.

Directly refusing Yang Yun wasn't a good idea either, however, as it might anger him. This way, Lin Ming could only sidestep this invitation by saying he still hadn't recovered from his wounds after his fight with Corpsemancer, and needed more time to recuperate.

This was a tactful method of rejection.

After Lin Ming passed out the message, he continued to train and practice alchemy.

Just yesterday, Xiaoxiao had delivered the dragonspine grass that she had promised, and two tufts of them at that.

She had also delivered a considerable amount of spirit essence stone and wood spirit jade to him.

This wasn't all Xiaoxiao's doing, but also the gifts that the Heavencraft Trading Company saved up to win over Lin Ming.

Within the entire Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, including the three great trading companies, two great banks, and Hundred Treasure Auction House, the only business giant that had a Destiny Decree Master serving them was the Hundred Treasure Auction House.

This guest had also only lent his name, and wouldn't act unless there was a great event occurring.

While this Destiny Decree master was ranked somewhere similar to Lin Ming, he was already over 1500 years old. He was far from comparing to Lin Ming's potential.

If the Heavencraft Trading Company could be on good terms with Lin Ming, then the future returns would be inestimable.

Who knew what the future held? Perhaps Lin Ming might even break through to the Divine Sea realm. The Divine Sea realm! A Supreme Elder that could awe even an entire Divine Kingdom!

The top 100 ranked masters of the Destiny Decree were already characters that people couldn't even look up to. Then, what sort of existence would a Divine Sea Supreme Elder be?

Even the Elders of the Heavencraft Trading Company were unable to imagine this.

If they could be on good terms, or even merely know of a Divine Sea Supreme Elder, that would make their family's status skyrocket. The Heavencraft Trading Company was a great power that didn't lack wealth; what they lacked was strength to take matters into their own hands. Underneath the absolute suppression of the Divine Kingdom, they were no different from defenseless pigs that were being raised up. They could be taken out of their pens and slaughtered at any time.

Now, because Xiaoxiao was on good terms with Lin Ming, her status in the family had advanced by leaps and bounds. With her two great uncles escaping from the family under the cover of night using the transmission array, there was no longer anyone that was able to threaten her position as Family head. The Council of Elders had already passed a resolution, and after another two months, an auspicious day would be chosen. Heavencraft Xiaoxiao would then complete the grand ceremony of family succession.

Recently, Lin Ming's alchemical skills had also been constantly increasing. If he wished to refine the Fivefade Void Pill to open the third of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, though, he was still far from being able to do so.

Lin Ming looked at the Cosmic Melting Furnace alchemy materials that were floating in front of him. There was the Five Color Fruit, Void Tempered Root, dragonspine grass, skyflower stones, as well as three jins of 200,000 year old wood spirit jade.

“This wood spirit jade quality is a bit too poor. If I had million year wood spirit jade, then my chances at successwould be much higher. Unfortunately, wood spirit jade that old is just too rare; even the Heavencraft Trading Company would have difficulty finding it.”

As Lin Ming was murmuring to himself, he suddenly felt a cold air rise up inside his chamber.

Killing intent?

Lin Ming’s mind went cold. His training chamber had protective array formations surrounding it. If one didn’t destroy the array formations, and only had their killing intent seep in, then that proved that this person’s killing intent was unimaginably condensed.

Lin Ming quickly put away the Cosmic Melting Furnace and opened the protective array formation, exiting the training chamber. As he stepped outside, he saw that just 200 feet away from him stood a passive, green masked man, whose ice cold mask gave off a heartlessly indifferent feeling.

“A wood spirit jade carved mask?”

Lin Ming’s mind stirred. With his understanding of wood spirit jade he immediately understood the use of this mask.

Wood spirit jade was able to isolate away all external perception. Because of this, a mask made of wood spirit jade was the most effective and simple method to hide one’s own appearance. Even if a Divine Sea Supreme Elder stood here, they still wouldn’t be able to identify who this person was. As for normal appearance changing techniques, they could only fool with people similar cultivations. Anyone with sharp enough eyes of high enough cultivation would instantly see through that type of disguise.

“I could borrow this method later.” If Lin Ming hadn’t seen this man in front of him, then he would never have thought wood spirit jade would also have this sort of function.

“You are….” As Lin Ming looked at this green masked man’s cultivation, he didn’t know just what sort of arcane ability this man practiced. Since his dantian had also been hidden in a deep fog; it was impossible to see through his cultivation.

But, just from the aura that emitted from his body, Lin Ming could feel his own heart reacting by beating faster. Without a doubt, this person was a master among masters.

He had come to Heavencraft Pavilion, but hadn’t disturbed the guards. That killing intent he released just now also didn’t have any malice behind it; this man had simply used this method to inform Lin Ming of his arrival.

Thus, Lin Ming was able to approximately guess just what sort of status this man had.

“I am the Nine Furnace Guard’s Chief Commander. You may refer to me as Fleeting Dragon.”

The Nine Furnace Guard Chief Commander was under the direct control of the Crown Prince. Lin Ming wasn’t surprised at all.

“When his Highness the Crown Prince invited Sir Lin for an audience, Sir Lin hadn’t yet recovered. Now, a month has passed and his Highness the Crown Prince has specifically sent me here to inquire into Sir Lin’s state and also send a miraculous healing pill. If Sir Lin’s wound is cured, then please follow me back for a visit to the Nine Furnace Divine Palace. If Sir Lin still isn’t feeling too well then I shall wait at Heavencraft Pavilion until Sir Lin’s wounds are healed.

As the Nine Furnace Guard Chief Command said these words, Lin Ming no longer had any reasonable argument he could use to refuse. He could only reluctantly agree.

He didn’t wish to involve himself in the high level battles of the four Divine Kingdoms. However, just seeing the Crown Prince might not be too bad either. For instance, the million year wood spirit jade he needed may be very difficult for the Heavencraft Trading Company to find; however, the Nine Furnace Divine Palace should definitely have it or find it.

………

The Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom was divided into nine provinces. The Nine Furnace Divine Palace was located at the largest and busiest province – the Central Province.

The area of just the Central Province was larger than ten South Horizon Regions combined.

Around the Central Province, the other eight provinces surrounded it. As for the back of the Central Province, that area extended to the edge of the Sea of Miracles.

The Sea of Miracles was the greatest life forbidden zone of the entire Sky Spill Continent. The four Divine Kingdoms surrounded the Sea of Miracles in a giant circle. And, far behind these four Divine Kingdoms was the South Sea, Fog Sea, North Sea, and Crimson Sea. At the very center of everything was the Sea of Miracles. This made the Sky Spill Continent to look like the shape of an irregular donut.

The Sea of Miracles was also known as the Sea of No Return, and also the Ocean of Endless Storms. It was rumored that the entire sea was pitch black and covered with infinite lightning storms. To enter was to walk into certain death. Even a Divine Sea Supreme Elder was no exception.

As for the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's Divine Palace, that was only 10,000 miles from the shores of the Sea of Miracles.

As Lin Ming arrived at the foot of the Nine Furnace Divine Palace, he looked up to see a 100,000 foot high snow-capped mountain rage. The Nine Furnace Divine Palace was actually established above these mountains.

This wasn't strange at all, as most sects were built above mountains or spiritual islands. This was because these types of places often had extremely high quality spirit veins.

The Nine Furnace Divine Palace was also the same.

Just by arriving at the base of the mountains, Lin Ming could feel a rich heaven and origin energy rushing over him like a never ending tide, submerging him within. With every breath he took, he could feel all traces of this energy seep into his own dantian, subtly raising his cultivation.

If just standing at the base of these mountains had such an effect, then the origin energy density at the summit could be imagined.

This was also the reason that so many Destiny Decree masters were willing to join the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. If they could close up and train in the Nine Furnace Divine Palace, then that would be far better than any other place they could go to.

“These are sixth grade spirit veins, or maybe even higher…”

Lin Ming had never seen a higher spirit vein before, and was thus unable to estimate the level of this land’s spirit veins.

Beside Lin Ming, even the normally silent Fleeting Dragon revealed a trace of pride in his eyes as he saw the Nine Furnace Divine Palace.

He said, “This mountain is named the Nine Furnace Divine Mountain and the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s name originates from this mountain. The founding ancestor of the Nine Furnace Sect established his sect on the Nine Furnace Divine Mountain. A it grew from there, it finally becoming the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. The Nine Furnace Divine Mountain came first, and the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom followed after.

“Sir Lin, Miss Heavencraft, please follow me up the mountain!”

When the Crown Prince invited Lin Ming, he had also conveniently invited Xiaoxiao. This caused Xiaoxiao to be terrified. Just what sort of legendary existence was the Nine Furnace Crown prince? She had no idea why someone like the Crown Prince would invite her. Was it just to accompany Lin Lanjian here?

Chapter 785 – Let Me See Your Armor

Chapter 785 – Let Me See Your Armor

…

…

…

The Nine Furnace Divine Mountain reached 100,000 feet high. The summit was covered in pure white snow all year round. Within the endless expanse of snow and the deep blue glaciers, countless towers of jade soared high up into the skies. Every tower was supported by array formations. Ancient snow fell outside, but within the tower, under the effect of these formations, rare flowers from all seasons blossomed in all their splendor, full of life and vitality. It was truly a sight to behold.

While one side was covered in endless snow and ice, the other side was filled with lush green spiritual plants. Such a sharp and clear contrast was like a heavenly paradise on earth.

At the summit of the Nine Furnace Divine Mountain there was a beautiful lake that displayed all four seasons. This lake was named the Nine Flower Lake. This entire lake was covered in a dense fog, and at its center was a pavilion carved from jade.

Within this pavilion was a young man that was lightly playing a zither. The zither's melody that thrummed in the air was pleasant to the ears. In the Nine Flower Lake, snow lotuses bloomed all around. As this jade-like handsome young man played his zither, he appeared even purer and loftier than a woman, as if he were an immortal that had descended down from the heavens.

As the young man saw Lin Ming and Xiaoxiao arrive, he faintly smiled, "Brother Lin, welcome to the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom as my honored guest."

The young man's voice had a strangely pleasant lilt to it; it made one feel very comfortable listening to him.

"Is he the Nine Furnace Crown Prince?"

The Divine Kingdom Crown Prince in front of him was completely different from what he had imagined.

"Lin Lanjian greets his Highness the Crown Prince."

Lin Ming simply cupped his hands across his chest. As someone who wasn't from the Divine Kingdom, there was no need for him to be overly courteous.

"Brother Lin is too polite." Yang Yun similarly cupped his hands across his chest. This was a ritual exchange from those of the same generation; there was no hint of the status of the Nine Furnace Crown Prince behind it. "Fleeting Dragon, guide Brother Lin to the reception hall. I shall head there soon after."

"Yes," Fleeting Dragon respectfully said. Lin Ming could feel from this respect that the Nine Furnace Crown Prince was an extraordinary character. Otherwise it would be impossible to sincerely convince a master like Fleeting Dragon.

The Nine Furnace Crown Prince's dantian was also covered in a thick fog; it was impossible to see his cultivation.

"I heard that Yang Yun crossed into Life Destruction at just 30 years of age. Ten years have passed now. I wonder what stage of Life Destruction he has reached now..."

Lin Ming didn't doubt that Yang Yun could even jump ranks to fight. If so, then his strength was terrifying.

After arriving at the reception hall, Yang Yun arrived in just half an incense stick of time. At this time, he had changed his clothes and was now wearing a purple gold robe as well as a purple gold crown. The robe he wore was embroidered with the image of a five-clawed golden dragon. Whether consciously or unconsciously, he emitted a noble air around him that made others want to fall to their knees and worship him.

This sort of aura that made one wish to bow before him was called the legendary Breath of the King. This so-called Breath of the King was similar to a force field, the only difference being that it was far weaker in intensity. To a martial artist on the level of Lin Ming, this sort of aura had absolutely no use. But Xiaoxiao was different. She felt a great pressure just from standing in front of Yang Yun.

That previously jade-like handsome, ethereal Yang Yun had now overlapped with the current Yang Yun that released the Breath of the King. It was impossible to distinguish just which one was the real Yang Yun.

Yang Yun realized that Xiaoxiao's complexion had paled. He gently smiled at her and then purposefully restrained his energy. Xiaoxiao immediately felt the pressure on her lighten and her face flushed red again.

"I apologize Miss Heavencraft. Cuicui, please brew a pot of jade tea for Miss Heavencraft."

The last few words were spoken to a palace maid. Xiaoxiao gratefully smiled, flattered that someone like Yang Yun would care about such an unimportant person as her. As for the jade tea, as the Young Mistress of the Heavencraft Trading Company, Xiaoxiao was well aware of just what that was. That was an extremely precious Yin-attribute tea. It was said that if a mortal woman drank a cup of it she would become one year younger, and if she drank an entire pot she would become ten years younger.

This was no exaggeration. Only after stepping on the path of cultivation would one's life potential develop. Hence, as a mortal, it was relatively easier to extend their life..

But for a martial artist, especially Life Destruction martial artists, because they had trained themselves to the limit, they had to completely unearth all of their life's potential. Thus, wanting to extend their life was far too difficult.

The maid named Cuicui respectfully served tea to everyone. Her appearance was exquisite and with her young age she still had a Xiantian realm cultivation. For such a heavenly gifted girl to be a palace maid, this was obviously proof of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's legacy.

She poured the jade tea in Xiaoxiao tea cup and also served ice lotus tea to Lin Ming and the Nine Furnace Crown Prince. This sort of tea was even more precious than jade tea. It was produced from the dried petals of the ice lotuses that grew around the Nine Flower Lake. As for the ice lotuses of the Nine Flower Lake, they could be called heavenly treasures.

The Nine Furnace Crown Prince smiled and said, "Brother Lin is truly an astounding person. You are just over 20 years of age and yet you've managed to step into the pages of the Destiny Decree with just a late Revolving Core cultivation. When I was Brother Lin's age, the difference was simply far too great!"

The Nine Furnace Crown Prince ruefully smiled. Lin Ming didn't respond, only waiting for the Nine Furnace Crown Prince to state his intention for inviting him over here.

However, the Nine Furnace Crown Prince had no intention of doing so. Instead, he and Lin Ming talked about the customs and policies of the four Divine Kingdoms, as well as relating to him the various large sects and influences, and all sorts of other strange information.

Yang Yun was an eloquent individual and extremely well spoken. His manner of speaking was charming and light, make him very comfortable and disarming to talk too. Even Xiaoxiao couldn't help but have a favorable impression of him.

Finally, after an hour of conversation had passed, Lin Ming asked, "May I ask why Your Highness has requested my presence here?"

"Haha, Brother Lin need not worry, I merely like to befriend the heroes of this world. Also, Brother Lin, there's no need to be so polite. Please, call me Yang Yun."

Yang Yun's words were well said and Lin Ming didn't speak further. The truth was that he knew that the so-called 'befriending heroes of this world' and winning over the will of people all meant that he was recruiting others for his own purposes. Yang Yun's cleverness lay in the fact that he didn't directly mention this matter. Instead, he first wanted to be friends with Lin Ming. Friends first, leader after. Otherwise, it would be too easy to be turned at the start.

Even though Lin Ming had guessed Yang Yun's true intentions, he still didn't refuse him.

"Brother Yang's skill in fine arts and military expertise is renowned throughout the world. In the future, you'll likely become an unrivalled Divine Emperor. For Brother Yang to value me so highly is truly flattering."

"Haha, Brother Lin is too modest. I wonder which force Brother Lin originated from? With Brother Lin's talent I fear you'll become the top powerhouse of the Sky Spill Continent in the future. When that time comes, I might need to rely on Brother Lin."

The two young men complimented each other. Lin Ming smiled, not responding to Yang Yun's inquiry of his background. In response, Yang Yun tactfully didn't ask again. "Brother Lin, I happened to have invited some astounding young elites from the Sky Spill Continent here today for a banquet at the Nine Flower Lake. Would Brother Lin like to join me to the lake and share in some wine whilst meeting the heroes of this world?"

To be considered an astounding young elite by Yang Yun, they must have the most extraordinary prides of heaven within the entire Sky Spill Continent. Not only would their strength and talent be extraordinary, but they should also be greatly influential. For instance, the successor of a great sect or perhaps an extremely powerful Divine Kingdom Prince.

Lin Ming hadn't replied yet when a maid came in to report on some news. "Your Highness, the White Clan Princess has arrived."

"Oh? Then I shall immediately go to receive her. Brother Lin, how about going with me?"

“Mm, alright.” Lin Ming nodded.

Yang Yun had indeed invited heroic young elites that stood at the very peak of the Sky Spill Continent. These people all ranged from their twenties to their fifties.

For the Xiantian realm, someone 50 years old would be considered middle-aged. But if one could step into the Life Destruction realm in their thirties, then they would appear in their twenties even if they were 50 years of age. In addition, Life Destruction powerhouses lived for thousands of years. Thus, a 50 year old Life Destruction powerhouse could also be considered someone of the younger generation.

The White Clan Princess, the Great Smelting Kingdom Prince, and the Seven Star High Prince Successor, each of them were eminent characters.

For instance, that White Clan Princess. The so-called White Clan was a family clan that lived at the borders of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom in a hidden world. This Family Clan had a very special bloodline; they had a bloodline seal. A bloodline seal was a special ability inherited through the bloodline of that family clan. This sort of ability could only be inherited by direct descendants.

Two thousand years ago, a Divine Sea Supreme Elder was born in the White Clan, thus they became worthy of being a true Holy Land level power. And now, their current Family Head also had a high chance of breaking through to the Divine Sea. At that time, their White Clan would have two Supreme Elders backing them. Although that was far from being able to match with the four Divine Kingdoms, it was still a focal super power. The White Clan Princess was the future successor to the Family Head. Thus, her prominent status could be imagined.

There was not much to say of the Great Smelting Kingdom Prince. He had already earned a similar reputation to the Nine Furnace Crown Prince a long time ago. Within the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom, the title of Crown Prince was an empty position. Currently, there were several powerful competitors vying for this seat, and this Great Smelting Prince was one of them. He was currently 45 years old and also ranked on the Destiny Decree. Although the combined power of his subordinates was weaker than Yang Yun, he was still extremely terrifying.

As for the Seven Prince High Prince Successor, his status was a bit poorer. However, his grandfather was ranked in the top two Divine Sea powerhouses of the entire Seven Star Divine Kingdom. That grandfather's status was absolutely terrifying. If other Divine Sea Supreme Elders ran into him, even they had to greet him as if they were a junior.

This group of people consisted of some of the most illustrious characters of the Sky Spill Continent, princes amongst princes.

Because Xiaoxiao accompanied Lin Ming, she also followed him to this banquet. As she faced this crowd of young people that stood at the very peak of the Sky Spill Continent, even she, who she felt was worldly and had seen the 'great world', felt breathless.

Compared to these people in front of her, everyone she had ever come into contact with was nothing at all.

As the host, Yang Yun introduced everyone one at a time.

As every person was introduced, Xiaoxiao would be increasingly shocked every time. But as for Lin Ming, he remembered their appearance and background as well as silently estimating their strength. In the four Divine Kingdoms, it was inevitable that he would encounter these individuals in the future.

As Lin Ming was introduced, Yang Yun only used a few simple words to describe him, "The only Revolving Core talent to enter the Destiny Decree in a thousand years – Lin Lanjian."

"Mm? He is Lin Lanjian!?" The Great Smelting Prince looked at Lin Ming, a bit astonished. He had also been wondering who Lin Ming was and why he was standing here. Now that the Great Smelting Prince knew that he was Lin Lanjian, even with his high and prominent status, he still held a deep respect in his heart when facing this sort of top talent that couldn't be judged by common sense.

“You are Lin Lanjian?” In the pavilion, a black-clothed youth stood up. He was an Asura Divine Kingdom Prince.

“I am.” Lin Ming cupped his hands across his chest. He was a bit puzzled as he felt this black-clothed youth’s blazing eyes locked onto him. Just what problem did this fellow have with him? Was it related to Corpsemancer?

Or was this fellow one of those battle crazies that challenged every powerhouse they saw and now wanted to fight him?

However, Lin Ming never imagined that this black-clothed youth would suddenly step forward and point at Lin Ming’s clothes. “Lin Lanjian, I want to take a look at the armor you’re wearing. How about it?”

“Mm?” Lin Ming frowned. Randomly asking to view another’s treasure was extremely rude.

He didn’t expect the following explanation either. “Lin Lanjian, I suspect that your armor is the sacred relic of my clan, the Demon Emperor’s armor!”

Chapter 786 – Domineering

Chapter 786 – Domineering

…

…

…

"What?"

The Asura Prince's few words shocked all of the martial artists present. These sorts of words were equal to accusing Lin Ming of stealing away their Asura Clan's Demon Emperor Armor.

All of the heroic young elites present had heard more or less of Lin Ming's armor. When Lin Ming and Corpsemancer fought, at the moment that both of them attacked each other in a suicidal manner, Lin Ming had relied on this black armor to block Corpsemancer's final strike.

Otherwise, this eternal top talent might have perished that day.

According to this Asura Prince, that Demon Emperor Armor originally belonged to the Asura Divine Kingdom.

Everyone's eyes turned to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's eyes became ice cold. The Demon Emperor Armor was a treasure he had personally taken out from the Cosmic Melting Furnace, yet this black-clothed youth in front of him was actually claiming that it was a sacred relic lost by his Asura Divine Kingdom and wanted to take it back. How could Lin Ming not be angered by such an overbearingly false charge?

“You say that my armor belongs to your Asura Divine Kingdom? What evidence do you have?” Lin Ming slowly stood up, a faint chill in his voice.

In fact, Lin Ming already thought that there was some connection between the Asura Divine Kingdom and the Holy Demon Continent. The Asura Divine Kingdom cultivated the demonic path, and Corpsemancer also had a Giant Demon Puppet that had come from the Asura Divine Kingdom. From this alone it could be seen that the Asura Divine Kingdom must have members of the Giant Demon race that came from the Holy Demon Continent.

The black-clothed youth jeered at Lin Ming with disdain, “Evidence? Humph! Do you think that as a noble Asura Divine Kingdom Prince, I would actually lay a false charge against you? Even the common mortals know that the first great Demon Emperor is my Asura Divine Kingdom’s faith and first generation Sovereign King. As for that black armor you’re wearing, it was forged by the Demon Emperor himself!

“That’s it? That’s your evidence?” Lin Ming’s lips curved up in a mocking smile, “The Demon Emperor is your Asura Divine Kingdom’s first Sovereign King?”

From his memories, Lin Ming knew that the sect the Demon Emperor had established in the Sky Spill Continent was the South Sea’s Demon God Imperial Palace. But the Demon God Imperial Palace was destroyed after and the Demon Emperor ascended into the Realm of the Gods. He had simply never established any sort of Asura Divine Kingdom.

And the most vital point was that the Demon Emperor existed 70,000-80,000 years ago. How could he possibly be the Asura Divine Kingdom’s first Sovereign King?

As the Asura Prince saw Lin Ming’s taunting smile, he grew angry, “Who do you think you are? Do you dare to ridicule my Asura Divine Kingdom!?”

As he spoke, the Asura Prince released a thick killing intent. The temperature throughout the entire pavilion lowered until a cold wind blew throughout.

Lin Ming remained unmoved. There were indeed several people that alarmed him here, especially that Nine Furnace Crown Prince, Yang Yun. It could be said that he was unfathomable.

But the Asura Prince wasn’t included in that group. This Asura Prince was only around 30 years old; he was simply nothing at all. “How many years of history does your Asura Divine Kingdom have? Do you know how long ago it was that the Demon Emperor existed?”

Hearing Lin Ming’s question, the Asura Prince’s face flashed with pride and disdain. Although he was staring at Lin Ming, he didn’t even see him at all as if he were nothing but air. “The Demon Emperor is a character that lived 70,000 years ago. My Asura Divine Kingdom was officially founded only 12,000 years ago, but before that my Asura Divine Kingdom was actually a hidden sect for 70,000 years! We are the most ancient sect within the entire Sky Spill Continent, bar none!”

As the Asura Prince uttered these words, Yang Yun appeared very calm without a trace of an expression at all. But the Great Smelting Prince frowned, obviously not willing to acknowledge this.

“Although there hasn’t been any phantom recordings of your battle with Corpsemancer, but my Asura Divine Kingdom was able to use a special technique to investigate the memories of the spectators. Your Demon Emperor Armor has special characteristics that are explicitly described in the ancient texts of my Asura Divine Kingdom; the appearance and nature are fully consistent with the descriptions! By just this point alone I wouldn’t have full confidence the armor you’re wearing is the Demon Emperor Armor; after all, it might be a replica. But the most important evidence I have is that your Demon Emperor Armor is missing its heartguard mirror, and that heartguard mirror is in the possession of my Asura Divine Kingdom!”

As the Asura Prince spoke, he took out a black metal disc from his spatial ring; this was the Demon God Emperor’s heartguard mirror.

“Everyone, this is a replica of my Asura Divine Kingdom’s Demon Emperor Armor’s heartguard mirror. Lin Lanjian, do you dare to show that armor you’re wearing and let us all have a look as to whether you’re missing a heartguard mirror? I can tell you that the shape of the gap in the Demon Emperor Armor exactly matches this replica heartguard mirror!”

The Asura Prince’s words were aggressively spoken. All of the heroic young elites present looked at Lin Ming. Several of them had heard of an approximate description of Lin Ming’s demon armor; it seemed it was indeed missing a heartguard mirror.

If this were true, then the Asura Prince’s words weren’t groundless.

In the face of the Asura Prince’s accusations, Lin Ming wasn’t panicked or in disbelief as everyone thought he would be. Instead, his expression was that of cold decisiveness, as if everything the Asura Prince had said about the heartguard mirror didn’t matter at all.

“Didn’t you hear me!?” The Asura Prince took a fierce step forward and took out a chillingly cold long spear from his spatial ring.

Yang Yun stood up at this time, “Situ Chuan, everyone here today are guests that I have personally invited. This Nine Flowers Banquet is a gathering of astounding young elites from all over the world. Are you planning on causing an upheaval at my Nine Flowers Banquet?”

Yang Yun’s words didn’t carry any momentum with them, but they still gave of an inexplicably fearful feeling. Even the Asura Prince felt somewhat afraid.

At this time, another black-clothed martial artist stood up and said, “Your Highness Crown Prince, we have no intention of causing any conflict at this banquet. It’s just that my Asura Divine Kingdom’s Demon Emperor Armor truly was lost 12,000 years ago. My Asura Divine Kingdom opened the Demon Emperor Mystic Realm left behind by the Demon Emperor in order to take out the rare treasures he kept there. However, because of spies that were mixed into our sect, some dastardly thieves managed to sneak their way in and make out with part of our inheritances and treasures. I suspect that this Demon Emperor Armor is one of them! It is an extremely important holy relic of my Divine Kingdom; we must recover it by any means possible.”

The martial artist who spoke was also from the Asura Divine Kingdom, a High Prince Successor. Although he was no longer cut off from the inheritances of direct descendants, he still cared a great deal about the Demon Emperor Armor. According to the ancient records the complete Demon Emperor Armor could not only defend against attacks but also increase a martial artist’s strength and true essence, playing a ghostly and unpredictable effect in battle.

Besides, Lin Ming might even have cultivation methods or other inheritances of the Demon Emperor. If he could recover this then he would have an opportunity to train them.

The black-clothed martial artist spoke to Yang Yun and then turned to Lin Ming, “Lin Lanjian, we won’t investigate how you came about that Demon Emperor Armor as long as you return it to us. In fact, not only will we not dig into your past but we will also grant you a few gifts in gratitude. We believe that Young Hero Lin truly must not have known that the Demon Emperor Armor originated as a main inheritance of my Asura Divine Kingdom.”

The Asura Divine Kingdom’s High Successor already felt that he was gracious enough. If Lin Ming knew his limits then he should back down now. But in the next moment, Lin Ming’s response nearly caused his lungs to explode in range.

Lin Ming traced his spatial ring and sneered, “I’ve never seen someone so shameless that never cared about face before. You’re saying that just because that heartguard mirror matches with my Demon Emperor Armor that it belongs to your Asura Divine Kingdom? How ridiculous. Why don’t you say that your Asura Divine Kingdom’s heartguard mirror belongs to me originally?”

“Lin Lanjian, do you want to die!?” The black-clothed martial artist pounded the table. He had never seen such a crazy person that dared to insult their Asura Divine Kingdom like so.

The Asura Prince Situ Chuan had an extremely ugly complexion. He pointed his spear point straight at Lin Ming and said with a voice full of killing intent, "Brother Yang, you saw what happened. It isn't me not giving you face but this Lin Lanjian doesn't care about decorum at all. We already decided not to investigate how Lin Lanjian's seniors stole their way into my Asura Divine Kingdom's Demon Emperor Mystic realm, but this man actually dares to be so shameless as to say that all those stolen treasures belong to him! Brother Yang, even if you must stop me today I will still wet the earth with blood!"

At this point, within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, Demonshine was already angrily growling. No matter how anyone considered it, only Demonshine could be considered the most worthy descendant of the Demon Emperor.

"This group of smelly brats are truly shameless; they actually dare to pose as the Demon Emperor's descendants! This Saint is about to laugh to death! They must have somehow found their way into Master's mystic realm 12,000 years ago. Then, they plundered the mystic realm and obtained the heartguard mirror as well as some rare cultivation method manuals. As for all that talk about spies and thieves, those should have been competitors that entered the mystic realm with them. It's just that this so-called Asura Divine Kingdom must have obtained the majority of the goods while everyone else only obtained a little bit."

"Then those damned fellows must have posed as Master's descendants and then claimed that all of Master's inheritances belonged to them. They are simply brain addled idiots! Lin Ming! Kill him! Paint the walls with his blood!"

Considering what he himself knew, together with his incomplete memories of the Demon Emperor, Lin Ming also agreed with Demonshine. The Asura Divine Kingdom that claimed to be the so-called descendants of the Demon Emperor must have found one of the Demon Emperor's mystic realms from somewhere, one that hadn't been the Demon God Imperial Palace either. As for that Demon Emperor Armor being stolen from the mystic realm, that was simply nonsense.

Lin Ming said, "The mystic realms left behind by the ancient ancestors are all ownerless to begin with. They're left for the fated ones to obtain the treasures within. Your Asura Divine

Kingdom only managed to obtain one of the multiple mystic realms that the Demon Emperor left behind, and yet you actually dare to claim without any justification at all that the Demon Emperor is the first Sovereign King of your Asura Divine Kingdom and say that everything related to the Demon Emperor from all the mystic realms of the world actually belong completely to you. How openly and brazenly shameless of you!"

"Lin Lanjian! You dare to insult my Asura Divine Kingdom again and again! If I don't kill you today, I'll never rest!" The Asura Prince revealed a thick killing intent. His expression as he looked at Lin Ming was as if he were staring at a person who had already died.

Lin Ming was well aware that further words were useless. He extracted the red spear from his spatial ring and coldly said, "If you want to fight then let's fight, don't waste my time!"

"Good! You truly are crazy! Lin Lanjian, since you want to die so bad then let me help you along! Brother Yang! You have already heard that Lin Lanjian does not oppose this battle! As such, it can't be described as ruining your Nine Flowers Banquet!" As Situ Chuan spoke, his lips curved up in a vicious smile. He had already decided to kill Lin Ming here and take away the Demon Emperor Armor. This would be a great accomplishment for him!

If he used a soul searching technique he might even be able to find traces of the Demon Emperor's other inheritances from Lin Ming. This might even include the more precious latter layers of the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'! Situ Chuan didn't believe for a second that Lin Ming could have such accomplishments today without benefitting from top cultivation methods. As long as he could steal away these techniques and study them himself, then his strength would be greater and the Asura Divine Kingdom would be that much stronger.

Chapter 787 – A Stipulation of Ten Moves

Chapter 787 – A Stipulation of Ten Moves

…

…

…

Battle was inevitable.

Yang Yun stood at the center of the Nine Flower Lake's jade pavilion, his clothes fluttering in the wind as he said with a calm expression, "Must you really fight?"

"Humph, Lin Lanjian has humiliated the legacy of my Divine Kingdom. I must kill him!" Situ Chuan said, his voice brooking no doubt.

"Since that's the case, let's make a stipulation of 10 moves. Victory or defeat will be decided in 10 moves; there will be no more fighting after that!"

Yang Yun had settled on 10 moves because he was in fact trying to prevent any deaths occurring from this battle. If these two truly did engage in a fierce struggle, dying wouldn't be unusual.

Having lives taken at his Nine Flowers Banquet would inevitably bring criticism to Yang Yun. Moreover, his original intention had been to befriend Lin Ming, so he couldn't allow Situ Chuan to kill him. But on the other hand, it wouldn't be good if Lin Ming killed Situ Chuan either. Situ Chuan was a Prince of the Asura Divine Kingdom. If he died under Lin Ming's hands then Lin Ming would be chased down and hunted by the Asura Divine Kingdom. If Yang Yun were to try shielding Lin Ming at that time, then that would be the same as publicly slapping the entire Asura Divine Kingdom in the face.

Although there was always infighting and espionage occurring between the four Divine Kingdoms, nothing too great had ever broken out. Everyone knew just how terrifying the consequences would be of two Divine Kingdoms engaging in war.

“Humph, 10 moves are more than enough to kill you! Don’t think that you are invincible just because you managed to hang onto the very end of the Destiny Decree. If it wasn’t for the fact that the Princes of the four Divine Kingdoms weren’t allowed to be listed without permission, I too would be on the Destiny Decree!”

For the inheritance of the Divine Emperor’s throne, unless one was an absolute successor like Yang Yun, there would always be struggles that caused tides of blood to bloom throughout the kingdom. At that time, a Prince’s strength was an extremely sensitive topic. Thus, the four great intelligence networks wouldn’t easily arrange a Prince on the Destiny Decree. Yang Yun was also the same. Of course there were also some Princes that were willing to allow themselves to be ranked on the Destiny Decree in order to shore up support for their side. For instance, the Great Smelting Prince was listed on the Destiny Decree.

Although Situ Chuan was full of confidence, the truth was that he kept 120% vigilance and was ready to display his complete strength. He was well aware just how troublesome Lin Ming could be. Corpsemancer was not an idiot. If he died underneath Lin Ming’s hands then Lin Ming naturally had his strengths.

Then Asura Divine Kingdom’s High Prince Successor Situ Feng said, “Ten moves. If Lin Lanjian loses in that time then he must hand over the Demon Emperor Armor.”

Situ Feng was also the descendent of a Divine Sea Supreme Elder and he too was extraordinarily strong, otherwise it would have been impossible for him to participate in this Nine Flowers Banquet. However, Situ Feng, Situ Chuan, Yang Yun, and everyone else here were all the same; their dantian was covered in layers of thick fog so it was impossible to see just how high their cultivation was. This sort of technique to hide one’s cultivation was extremely common in the four Divine Kingdoms.

Situ Feng’s eyes shined as he glared at Lin Ming, full of provocation.

Lin Ming was silent for a moment and then he said in a deep bass voice, “If I lose then I will deliver to you the Demon Emperor Armor. But what if I win? Will you hand me the Demon Emperor Amor’s heartguard mirror?”

“Dream on!” Situ Chuan angrily shouted, “The Demon Emperor Armor is originally the holy relic of my Asura Divine Kingdom. Your ancestors stole the Demon Emperor Armor from us 12,000 years ago, and now you actually desire the heartguard mirror too. You truly have no idea of death or danger!”

“Hehe!” Lin Ming contemplatively smiled, “The one who has no idea of death or danger is you. You keep on spouting on and on about how the Demon Emperor is your ancestor, but yet you have no evidence at all. Are you afraid of betting the heartguard mirror because you know you’ve already lost?”

“You!” Situ Chuan was about to rush forwards before Situ Feng held him down.

“Surname Lin, let alone that it is useless, I will also tell you that it is impossible for us to give you the heartguard mirror. We have no authority to do so and it isn’t in our possession to begin with. If we lose then we will give you 100,000 spirit essence stones!”

Even though Situ Feng promised 100,000 spirit essence stones in a single breath, Lin Ming didn’t even bat an eyelash. “100,000 spirit essence stones as a bet for the Demon Emperor Armor? Your plans are quite exquisite!”

100,000 spirit essence stones was not a small number, but it was naturally far from being able to compare to the Demon Emperor Armor. According to Demonshine, the complete Demon Emperor Armor was no less valuable than the Cosmic Melting Furnace, a quasi-Saint artifact.

Also, a defensive quasi-Saint artifact was extremely rare. In terms of value it would not lose out to a true offensive Saint artifact.

A Saint artifact was extremely valuable even in the Realm of the Gods. It wasn’t something that could be purchased with a mere 100,000 spirit essence stones.

“If you lose then take out 10 jin of million year wood spirit jade and also one jin of wood spirit jade quintessence!”

Situ Feng’s eyes turned red. There was simply no price for million year wood spirit jade. There wasn’t much of that even in the treasuries of the four Divine Kingdoms combined. As for wood spirit jade quintessence, that was even rarer. That required at least five million year wood spirit jade!

After wood spirit jade passed through an immeasurable long time, its most basic components would slowly seep out into the surrounding rock and the impurities within the rock would also permeate the wood spirit jade. It was impossible for ordinary wood spirit jade to exist for several million years, it would simply become a fossil.

In order for wood spirit jade to retain its purity throughout five million years, it would need to be formed from a top heavenly material. For instance, materials such as a 70,000-80,000 year Nirvana Dragon Roots, nine nether grass, profound gold divine fruit, and so on.

These sorts of spiritual plants were few and far between to begin with. Wood spirit jade of this sort was nearly extinct. Once it was formed, it would swallow the natural life essence of the sun and moon, gaining intelligence after a long period of time, and sometimes even gaining its own life.

The value of wood spirit jade quintessence was impossible to measure with spirit essence stones!

“What kind of crazy act are you trying to pull!” Situ Chuan roared.

“Compared to 10 jin of million year wood spirit jade and another jin of wood spirit jade quintessence, the Demon Emperor Armor is still more valuable!” Lin Ming coldly said.

Situ Chuan laughed like a craving madman, “I think that you’ve misunderstood the situation. You simply do not have the qualifications to discuss conditions with us. If my Asura Divine Kingdom wishes to crush you then we can crush you just like an ant!”

"Oh? Then there's nothing to discuss. Come see me again when you have the guts to make a bet." Lin Ming began to put his spear away.

If Situ Chuan and Situ Feng didn't dare to make a bet then they wouldn't be able to take back the Demon Emperor Armor.

How could the usually proud and arrogant Situ Chuan swallow such an insult?

"I'm afraid you won't be alive anymore! Ten jin of million year wood spirit jade and another jin of wood spirit jade quintessence. I'll take your life in 10 moves!"

Situ Chuan had already impatiently jumped out. He pointed his long spear at Lin Ming and said, " I will use your blood as a sacrifice to the Demon Emperor Armor!"

Woosh!

With a loud rustling sound, hundreds of crimson seals began spinning around the edge of Situ Chuan's spear. These were all Blood Drinking Seals!

"'Great Desolate Halberd Art'?"

Lin Ming was slightly startled and then immediately relieved. When he first went into the Demon God Imperial Palace he hadn't been able to locate the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'. The 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' he knew was the complete cultivation method extracted from the Demon Emperor's soul fragment. Now it seemed as if the jade slip containing the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' was kept at another ancient ruins site, and this site had been obtained by the Asura Divine Kingdom.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

With a loud whistling sound, several hundred crimson seals rapidly revolved around the long spear. Lin Ming was familiar with all of these moves. In the past, he had once tried stepping onto the slaughter path. However, he eventually proved that the road others trod didn't necessarily suit him. Only by walking his own path would he be able to move towards the peak of all martial arts.

Lin Ming finally took the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' as well as several other different techniques, using them as a foundation. After comprehending the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' and fusing in the Concept of Space, the Concept of Thunder, as well as the Concept of Fire, he was able to create moves such as Chasing Sun, Chasing Thunder, Penetrating Rainbow, and Bury the Heavens. To Lin Ming, the power of these abilities was far mightier than the pure 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'.

'Let me experience your 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'!'

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a brilliant fighting spirit. He wanted to just how powerful the Demon Emperor's famed battle technique would be in the hands of a purely demonic path martial artist!

He wanted to see how this compared to his own self-created techniques!

Woosh!

With a loud cry, Situ Chuan's spear shot forwards. His first attack was Blood Seal Twisting Murder! The crimson Blood Drinking Seals rapidly revolved, issuing out harsh grating sounds as if space itself was being torn to shreds.

In these 10 moves, Situ Chuan would go all out with everything he had. He would naturally try to kill Lin Ming in these 10 moves.

Lin Ming didn't plan on staying his hand. He also didn't underestimate Situ Chan. With a thrust of his spear, the dual Concepts of Thunder and Fire fused together, intensely colliding with Blood Seal Twisting Murder.

Ca!

Blood Seals smashed onto Lin Ming's red spear, wanting to bounce the spear away. This was Blood Seal Twisting Murder's special effect – twisting away the weapon and directly piercing the chest.

Lin Ming had already expected this. He poured his battle spirit into the shaft of his spear; the Concept of Thunderfire erupted.

Bang!

A sound filled the air like a bolt of heavenly thunder crashing into the earth. A terrifying air wave washed out in all directions. Even though the Nine Flower Lake Pavilion was protected by a hidden array formation, this array formation still creaked and trembled like a small boat in choppy seas.

Great waves rose within the once calm Nine Flower Lake. If the ice lotuses floating on the lake didn't have the protection of array formations then they would have probably been ravaged into flying ash by the fierce detonation of energy.

Yang Yun looked the same throughout, but Lin Ming actually knew just how valuable these ice lotuses were. They were all comparable to heavenly materials. Once the array formation was broken, the losses would be immense.

With a tap of his toes, Lin Ming jumped off the jade platform and flew towards the snowy mountains.

At this time, Situ Chuan had long since been stirred up into a frenzied rage, his eyes bright red like a rabid madman. He could hardly care for these Nine Flower Lake ice lotuses that were simply used to make tea.

He thought that Lin Ming had run away because he couldn't withstand his Blood Seal Twisting Murder. With a sneer, Situ Chuan clearly shouted, "You gutless small fry! Where are you running to!? Primeval Spear Strike!"

With a thrust of his spear, Blood Drinking Seals spun around, creating a twisting red storm. This sort of storm seemed to twist space, forming a powerful suction force like a black hole that swallowed all.

Moves of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ contained the Concept of Space. When Lin Ming first started to comprehend the offensive use of the Concept of Space, that had all begun from this ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’!

Situ Chuan was overjoyed as he saw Lin Ming’s speed suddenly reduce. All martial artists that were caught in his Primeval Spear Strike were like flies in a spider web; it was impossible to escape.

With a clear cry, Situ Chuan’s killing intent locked onto Lin Ming. The Concept of Space fused into his spear as he thrust it towards the point between Lin Ming’s eyebrows!

This spear seemed slow but it passed through space in the blink of an eye, suddenly appearing like ghosts and gods in front of Lin Ming!

Such an ephemeral and mystical style had allowed Situ Chuan to slaughter countless masters. This was the move he was most proud of!

However, as Lin Ming faced this spear that suddenly appeared in front of him, his expression didn’t even change a tiny bit.

“This is your Concept of Space? Your skill is far too lacking!”

Ho -!

Lin Ming also thrust out a spear. This spear strike seemed even slower than Situ Chuan’s!

However, what was unbelievably strange was that for some unknown reason, Lin Ming’s spear light reached Situ Chuan’s chest first!

What!?!?

Situ Chuan was incomparably shocked, losing all his composure. That spear light had suddenly bloomed in front of his eyes, nearly blinding him!

Peng!

Situ Chan flew backwards, all of his protective true essence shattered. Blood swelled up within his body but was forcefully suppressed by him. As he looked down, he saw that a large hole had appeared in the heaven-step treasure armor he wore, copious amounts of blood flowing from it.

Chapter 788 – Slaughter Path Showdown

Chapter 788 – Slaughter Path Showdown

…

…

…

"It's only been two moves and yet Situ Chuan was injured?" The Seven Star Divine Kingdom's High Prince Successor said with an astonished expression.

Although every Prince's strength was kept a confidential secret, the four Divine Kingdoms' competition with each other was simply too fierce. Situ Chuan was one of the several important Princes of the Asura Divine Kingdom, so it was inevitable that he would be under tight observation from all available intelligence networks. Although it wasn't known what degree his exact strength reached, people were still able to roughly estimate.

After all, Situ Chuan was one of the Princes who would compete for the highest throne of the Asura Divine Kingdom in the future – his natural talent was undeniable. At 30 years of age, he should now be able to rank on the Destiny Decree. Although it was unknown just who would be stronger between him and Lin Ming, the difference in their abilities shouldn't be so great!

It wasn't just the Seven Star High Prince Successor who thought this, but even the Great Smelting Kingdom Prince felt this was just too incredible.

At this time, Yang Yun was calmly drinking some tea when he said," It isn't that the disparity in their strength is great, but the disparity in their understanding of the Concept of Space is too great. Just now, that move was only a comparison of whose Concept of Space was more accomplished. Situ Chuan thought that he would be able to win the advantage by fusing the Concept of Space into his attack, but he never thought that his opponent's attainments in the Concept of Space were even higher. He underestimated his opponent and suffered a blow because of it. His injury is due to the fact that he wasn't mentally prepared in advance."

At this time, Situ Chuan felt extremely shamed and bereaved. The Concept of Space was their Asura Divine Kingdom's most famous Concept. It was recorded within the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art', and was something that only the Situ Royal Family descendants were able to study.

The Concept of Space was known as one of the most difficult and powerful Concepts and also known as the King of Concepts. The entire Situ Family Clan inevitably held pride in themselves because their entire Family Clan could utilize the Concept of Space. Especially Situ Chuan. His talent was extraordinary and he had an extremely high comprehension of the Concept of Space. Even the Divine Emperor appreciated his abilities.

But now, all of that arrogant pride had been ruthlessly destroyed by Lin Ming!

'This boy actually understands the Concept of Space and his method of attack seems similar to my own Asura Divine Kingdom's inheritance. Even the might of the attack is greater! He absolutely has a more complete version of the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'!'

Situ Chan didn't think that Lin Ming's talent in the Concept of Space surpassed his own. He only thought that Lin Ming must have a complete inheritance of the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'! All of these things should belong in the grasp of their Asura Divine Kingdom!

'Only my Asura Divine Kingdom's Situ Family is deserving of this inheritance. There is no one else worthy!'

Situ Chuan cried out within his heart. If he could train in this complete 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' then his strength would inevitably rise. Perhaps when facing Yang Yun, he might not even be overwhelmed by that man's blinding halo!

“Brother Situ, consider this match finished!” Yang Yun’s voice suddenly sounded out. Although Situ Chuan had been injured because of a brief lapse in his guard, an injury was an injury. This was only supposed to be a friendly spar, not a life or death struggle. Losing in even half a move was considered a loss.

“I refuse to accept this!”Situ Chuan shouted out loud, keeping his spear pointed at Lin Ming. Everything on the line was related to the honor of his Asura Divine Kingdom, so how could he just admit defeat like this? Otherwise, if news of today’s happenings spread out, everyone would know that the rampant and lofty Situ Chuan had lost to someone far younger than him in just two moves. Not just that, but that hairless little boy’s cultivation was more than an entire realm lower than his. He would suffer nothing but ridicule!

“The stipulation of 10 moves hasn’t ended yet. Just because I was surprised for a moment just now doesn’t mean that I lost!”

Since Situ Chuan insisted on finishing the 10 moves to the end, Yang Yun also didn’t say any more. He only silently looked at Lin Ming. He hadn’t thought that Lin Ming’s comprehension of the Concept of Space would reach such a degree, as if he himself were an omnipotent being. This sort of talent was something he had never heard of before; it simply surpassed his own understanding.

Situ Chuan held his spear flat and his aura exploded from his body. He no longer planned to use the Concept of Space. Since his understanding of Concepts was inferior, he would only be embarrassing himself if he continued to forcefully utilize it. Using it to attack the enemy would be the epitome of stupidity.

But the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ still contained another great supporting pillar besides the Concept of Space. That was comprehension of the slaughter path!

Situ Chuan didn’t believe that Lin Ming would also surpass him in the understanding of the slaughter path.

Bang!

Under the incitement of the Blood Drinking Seals, Situ Chuan's killing intent erupted, overwhelming and covering the entire sky. Several hundred Blood Drinking Seals flew high in the air like stars in flight, covering the entire area as they glowed an increasingly blood red.

The skies above the entire Nine Flower Lake surged with energy. Black energy rolled everywhere, emitting a suffocating atmosphere.

By abandoning the Concept of Space, he would decide this with only the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art's' slaughter path!

In the jade pavilion atop the Nine Flower Lake, several heroic young elites felt indescribably uncomfortable after being enveloped by this killing intent.

Although those that Yang Yun had invited this time were all the chosen prides of heaven within the Sky Spill Continent, that didn't mean that they were too strong. If they were too young and their cultivation was only at the Revolving Core realm, their strength would still be limited no matter how great their talent. It was impossible for them to withstand Situ Chuan's killing intent.

"Such a solid killing intent and such keen Blood Drinking Seals... Situ Chuan must have killed countless martial artists these past years!" The Great Smelting Prince sighed. One couldn't effectively accumulate killing intent by killing weaker martial artists. Only by killing martial artists at the same level, or even other similar prides of heaven, only then by watching a strong opponent fall before them would this image engrave itself into one's heart, becoming an unwavering belief of victory that was able to sweep away all. This sort of belief could be sent out like an energy field, and once combined with the will to kill an opponent this would then turn into killing intent.

"The Situ Family Clan is indeed a savage and brutal family clan. All of their Princes, successors and other family members will be thrown into dangerous situations at just 15-16 years of age. They are forced to tear down vicious beasts and Giant Demons, and every Royal Family member that fails this test has nothing but death awaiting them."

"Yes, within the Asura Divine Kingdom there is a medium-sized dimension that has the Giant Demon race living in it, reared up like pigs in a pen, only becoming the smelting trial field of their Royal Family. For Situ Chuan to understand the slaughter path to such a degree, that means he must have cut down hundreds or thousands of Giant Demons at his level."

All of the young heroic elites began discussing amongst themselves. The methods that the four Divine Kingdoms used to train the next generation were no great secret. However, the Asura Divine Kingdom's methods were the harshest, cruelest, and most lacking in mercy of all. For those Royal Family members that had no talent, their fate was even more miserable than that of the common people.

"I will take the advantage with this move!"

Situ Chan fiercely looked at Lin Ming. Although he had been wounded just then because he had underestimated his opponent, no matter the reason a loss was still a loss. He had thrown down his face in order to continue fighting, and if he wasn't able to suppress Lin Ming and was instead suppressed by Lin Ming, then he would be laughed at by others. This was not a loss he could afford; loss meant complete loss of any face he had left.

"I will take back the Situ Family Clan's glory. And all of the Demon Emperor's inheritances should also return to my Situ Family Clan!"

Situ Chuan's heart burned with a raging fire. His anger, his will, his body, everything was fused into this next attack.

"Great Desolate Halberd Art – slaughter path!"

By overdrawing his strength and true essence, Situ Chuan poured his complete being into this attack. A black spear light shot out, tearing through the void as it rolled up into the massive clouds of roiling black energy and fused with the hundreds of Blood Drinking Seals that Situ Chuan had released.

With a thrust of this spear, the mountains and rivers seemed to tremble, creating a dazzlingly blinding attack!

“You want a slaughter path showdown?” Lin Ming’s lips curved up in a smile. “Although I have to admit I truly do not have much talent in the slaughter path, I still have been able to achieve a bit through hard work.”

Out of everything that Lin Ming had ever studied, his accomplishments in the Concept of Wind and the slaughter path had never been to his satisfaction. The former had caused Lin Ming’s ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’ to be hampered at times, and the latter made it so that he wasn’t able to display the full strength of the Blood Drinking Seals in the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’.

In particular, as Lin Ming’s strength rapidly grew, the Blood Drinking Seals could no longer keep up with his current strength.

However, Lin Ming’s slaughter path wasn’t just the Blood Drinking Seals.

True essence gathered in his dantian.

The Death God force field and the Asura force field simultaneously erupted!

Bang!

The force field energy rushed out like a tide of molten iron. As soon as Situ Chuan’s black energy collided with the Asura force field, it was actually ripped to shreds, half of it immediately dispersing to nothing!

“What!?”

As Lin Ming’s Death God force field completely opened to the limit, even Yang Yun was startled. Compared to the scattered killing intent that Situ Chuan had released, Lin Ming’s killing intent had condensed into a true force field.

Moreover, it wasn’t just one kind of force field but two kinds!

“A force field formed from killing intent. This Lin Lanjian must have grown up by treading over the corpses of martial artists all at his level or higher!” The White Clan Princess sucked in a breath of cold air. A force field was an extremely rare ability and Lin Ming even had two different kinds.

As for those twenty some year old geniuses with a mere Revolving Core cultivation, all of them paled as they were swallowed up by this killing intent, nearly falling down where they stood.

Bury the Heavens!

True essence howled. The Concept of Fire and the Concept of Space fused together. The Eight Inner Hidden Gates opened to the limit and the large success bronze battle spirit was poured into his spear.

What Lin Ming used was impressively Bury the Heavens, a self-created move modeled with the strongest aspects of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ as the foundation.

A red spear tore through the void, all of the power of space swirling up into a space storm. The Burning Star Flame was galvanized by the wild space claws, evolving into a demonic black flame!

Chi chi chi!

The demonic flame burned apart space, causing massive amounts of space fragments to scatter about. These space fragments served as a substitute for Blood Drinking Seals as they spun around at a maddening speed!

“Ahhhh!”

As Situ Chuan saw Lin Ming’s fierce attack come at him, he barked out a wild shout. His face flushed an unusual blood red. What he used was an arcane skill. To a demonic path martial artist, this sort of arcane skill that burned one’s bloodline to forcefully enhance one’s strength was extremely common. Of course, after using it, one had to pay the price. If the side effects were light, then his meridians would be damaged. If the side effects were serious, then it would heavily damage his life source.

At this time, Situ Chuan no longer had any other path to take. He had to win in this move!

Bang!

Two spears violently collided together. A wild true essence shockwave surged out, uncontrollably smashing into the Nine Flower Lake's jade pavilion until it seemed to be on the verge of collapse. Several Revolving Core young elites whitened, and those early Revolving Core martial artists were all forced out of their seats and several steps back, nearly vomiting blood.

This continued until Yang Yun, the Great Smelting Prince, and the White Clan Princess all acted together, blocking the turbulent energy flows.

Underneath everyone's eyes, a surprising scene occurred. The space fragments that swirled around Lin Ming's spear struck Situ Chuan's Blood Drinking Seals, crushing them until they were less than half the original size. Then, after breaking through Situ Chuan's spear light, Lin Ming's spear potential didn't yet disappear. It brought along with it a blazing fire and terrifying Concept of Space as it struck Situ Chuan's bodily protective true essence.

Situ Chuan's bodily true essence immediately disintegrated and he flew backwards.

The result of the battle had exceeded everyone's earlier expectations. Situ Chuan had been completely suppressed and abused by Lin Ming. But how could this be? When Lin Ming first faced Corpsemancer he had become victorious only after a hard-fought battle. But now, facing Situ Chuan, he won with considerable ease.

Did this mean that Situ Chuan was far inferior to Corpsemancer?

Chapter 789 – 8000 Mile Black Swamp

Chapter 789 – 8000 Mile Black Swamp

…

…

…

Situ Chuan crashed into the Nine Flower Lake, causing ice cold water to splashed into the clear skies.

A single spear strike had sent Situ Chuan rocketing into the lake, but Lin Ming was still flying high in the air as if he hadn't used much energy at all.

"How terrifying!"

As everyone looked at Lin Ming fluttering high in the air, those several Revolving Core martial artists that had nearly coughed up blood turned even more pallid. A moment ago, they had felt an irresistibly powerful strength in the aftermath of that collision just now. In truth, they were all inferior to Situ Chuan. Although Situ Chuan was older than they were, his cultivation had still reached the peak of the second stage of Life Destruction.

But that Lin Lanjian, his age was unknown. Perhaps he might not even be over 26 years of age. His cultivation was only at the late Revolving Core realm and yet his strength was enough to completely suppress Situ Chuan.

This caused them all to feel greatly frustrated and helpless. This simply didn't seem like a talent that a human should possess.

It wasn't just the Revolving Core martial artists that were startled, but the several other Princes in the audience were also shocked. Lin Ming would inevitably become one of the highest peak powerhouses of the Sky Spill Continent. Such a person would be able to wield near-unlimited influence throughout the entire continent in the future. And the most important factor was that he didn't belong to any of the four Divine Kingdoms or their subordinates. His future possibilities were endless!

Bang!

The surface of the water erupted as Situ Chuan shot upwards. At this moment, his face was white and his hair was a ruined mess. His entire body was dripping with water and he was embarrassed beyond being embarrassed.

Lin Ming indifferently looked at Situ Chuan. Situ Chuan's defensive ability to withstand attacks was too strong. Even though he had been heavily struck twice, his injuries actually weren't heavy at all.

However, this was also within reason. The 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' had become famous as an offensive battle technique of the Demon Emperor. But, it originally wasn't used only as an offensive ability, but also a defensive one. The Blood Drinking Seals could be used to attack as well as defend.

Situ Chuan had fused Blood Drinking Seals into his protective true essence, causing his protective true essence to surpass common sense!

'That Situ Chuan is definitely a true master. Although he might be a little weaker than Corpsemancer, it wasn't by too much. And if he had used that arcane ability to stimulate his bloodline just now then he would even be able to surpass Corpsemancer. Too bad for him, the one he ran into today is me.'

Meeting Lin Ming was Situ Chuan's own bad luck. As the saying went, know yourself, know the enemy, and be undefeatable. Lin Ming had already practiced Situ Chuan's 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' for many years now, and the version he studied was far more complete.

For instance, all of those moves Situ Chuan used just now like Blood Seal Twisting Murder, Primeval Spear Strike, the slaughter path, Lin Ming knew all of those techniques like the back of his hand. There might be no one more clear about the characteristics of Blood Drinking Seals than he was.

Before they fought, all of Situ Chuan's techniques had already been thoroughly understood by Lin Ming. How could he still fight?

And what was lamentable was that Situ Chuan's two great pillars – the Concept of Space and the slaughter path – were all completely defeated by Lin Ming, making it so that he couldn't display the true strength of the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'.

Then, Situ Chuan's only advantage over Lin Ming was that his cultivation was a realm and a half higher than his. But even so, with the support of his battle spirit, Eight Inner Hidden Gates, comprehension of Concepts, and many other factors, all of this made it so that Situ Chuan was tyrannically oppressed from start to finish.

Originally, Situ Chuan's terrifying defensive power was the reason that he could rank on the Destiny Decree. However, defense couldn't be compared to offense. Offense could be used to suppress others, but being better in only defense meant that one would be smacked around a lot longer. And as the battle had continued, Situ Chuan had seemed incomparably distressed as it looked as if he were being slapped around without any strength or resistance.

In his current state, Situ Chuan's face violently distorted with anger. He couldn't accept this defeat. He would rather lose a hundred years of his life than admit defeat to Lin Ming.

"Brother Situ, you've lost." Yang Yun rose up and said.

Situ Chuan's lips twitched, blue veins popping out on his forehead. Again and again he had lost miserably. Situ Chuan could no longer say that he would finish the rest of the 10 moves with Lin Ming. And, even though he didn't wish to admit it, continuing this battle would be futile – he would simply be beaten down again.

“Don’t fight, the two of us are not his opponent. Continuing to fight is just shaming yourself.” A true essence sound transmission sounded out in Situ Chuan’s ears. This message had come from Situ Feng.

“This boy obviously understands all of your abilities, he should also have inherited the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’. However, we know nothing about him. All we can see is that there is the shadow of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ in his techniques. We must report this matter to his Highness the Divine Emperor and allow him to decide what shall be done!”

Situ Chuan’s grim face seemed indecisive. Then, he grit his teeth and slowly fell down from the air.

“Ten jin of million year wood spirit jade and one jin of wood spirit jade quintessence.” Lin Ming said.

As Situ Chuan and Situ Feng heard these words, their lips spasmed. Even with their own great net worths, producing these sorts of treasures would still be extremely difficult.

“I haven’t brought those things with me. I can compensate you with spirit essence stones and other things.” Situ Chuan said with a dark and gloomy expression.

Lin Ming chuckled, “Million year wood spirit jade and wood spirit jade quintessence are priceless treasures that cannot be bought; their value cannot be estimated with mere spirit essence stones. With so many heroic young elites here, there are countless treasures on them. With your status as an Asura Divine Kingdom Prince, borrowing them shouldn’t be too difficult.”

“You!”

Situ Chuan’s intestines painfully twisted together as he heard Lin Ming’s words. Situ Feng was afraid he would open his large mouth and say something irreproachably stupid so he stepped forwards and said, “Since we were willing to make a bet, we’re are also prepared to lose. Your Highness the Crown Prince, please allow us to borrow your wood spirit jade!”

There was only one Divine Kingdom Crown Prince present – Yang Yun. The Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom had the richest wood spirit jade resources, so he was the only one here capable of easily bringing out ten jin of wood spirit jade and a jin of wood spirit jade quintessence.

Yang Yun smiled as he stood up and said, “Everyone here are grand characters of the Sky Spill Continent. For us to all gather here at my Nine Flowers Banquets is also a stroke of destiny. We must not harm our friendships. Since Brother Lin desires wood spirit jade, I indeed have some that I may lend to Brother Situ.”

As Yang Yun spoke, he took out a jade box from his spatial ring. The crystal clear and dazzling jade box was only three inches long. After opening it, a brilliant flaming light suddenly bloomed outwards. Yang Yun took out a wood spirit jade the size of a quail egg from the jade box. Everyone was startled at the sight of this wood spirit jade – the color was an unexpected deep gold.

“That is wood spirit jade quintessence!”

Even though the martial artists present were extraordinarily wealthy individuals, this was also the first time they had seen the rare wood spirit jade quintessence.

Yang Yun said, “Wood spirit jade quintessence is countless times more valuable than common wood spirit jade. Don’t look at how small this wood spirit jade quintessence in my hands is; the truth is that there is already one jin and three taels here. As for the million year wood spirit jade, I haven’t brought that with me today. After some time I shall go to the kingdom’s treasury and select some suitable material for Brother Lin.”

Lin Ming said, “Your Highness Crown Prince is too polite. The extra three taels of this wood spirit jade quintessence are far more than enough to make up for ten jin of million year wood spirit jade.”

Lin Ming had inherited the memories of that Realm of the Gods alchemist so he had an approximate understanding of the value of wood spirit jade.

“Haha, alright then.” Yang Yun didn’t argue. A blue light surrounded the jade box and the box then slowly flew towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming received the jade box and placed it within his spatial ring, “Thank you, Your Highness the Crown Prince.”

Lin Ming’s words were sincerely spoken from the heart. Ever since coming to the Nine Furnace Divine Palace, Lin Ming had a very favorable impression of Yang Yun.

“Haha, the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom is truly extravagant. That wood spirit jade quintessence is mined from the 8000 Mile Black Swamp of the Sea of Miracles!” The Great Smelting Prince said with a smile.

“The Sea of Miracles’ 8000 Mile Black Swamp?” Lin Ming asked as he heard the Great Smelting Prince’s words. In his mind, a strange association was forming.

“Mm? Brother Lin hasn’t heard of the Black Swamp before?” The Great Smelting Prince shot Lin Ming a strange look but continued to explain, “The Sea of Miracles is known as being the Sea of No Return and the Ocean of Endless Storms. It is the most terrifying life forbidden zone in the entire Sky Spill Continent!”

As the Great Smelting Prince spoke to here, the Seven Star Divine Kingdom High Successor also smiled, shaking his head as he added, “Brother Ouye, your description of the Sea of Miracles as a life forbidden zone is far too pale. There are many areas in the Sky Spill Continent known as life forbidden zones, but the truth is that there are only one or two big cats within. Most of them can be handled by a mere Revolving Core powerhouse.”

As the Seven Star High Successor spoke to here, the other martial artists smiled. Indeed, to martial artists of different boundaries of strength, the definition of a life forbidden zone was also different.

“Old Third Li, you don’t need to interrupt me.” The Great Smelting Prince said with a teasing laugh. It was obvious from his casual tone that he had a good personal friendship with the Seven Star High Successor.

“The Sea of Miracles is a true life forbidden zone, and also the most dangerous land in the entire Sky Spill Continent, bar none. After entering deep into the Sea of Miracles, it is said that the entire sea is a lifeless, pitch black, and the skies are forever covered in layers upon layers of lightning storms. It isn’t an exaggeration to say that entering the Sea of Miracles is an absolute death sentence, without exception. Even Divine Sea Supreme Elders are the same. Up until now, there has never been a record of anyone ever having managed to cross the Sea of Miracles. Even the four Divine Kingdoms’ Divine Emperors all worship and revere the Sea of Miracles.”

“And surrounding the entire Sea of Miracles is the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, which can also be considered as the shores of the Sea of Miracles. Because the land topography is similar to a beach and shallow tidelands, the entire surrounding of the Sea of Miracles appears to look like a black swamp. Even though this black swamp is lower risk than the Sea of Miracles, it still isn’t a place that a Divine Sea powerhouse can freely enter and leave. There are even Divine Sea powerhouses that can perish within if their luck is poor enough. For instance, even if I were to enter into the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, it wouldn’t matter how many magical treasures and defensive items I brought with me; I would never return.”

The Great Smelting Price had a self-deprecating smile as he spoke to here, but Lin Ming’s heart was actually racing with emotions. This Sea of Miracles sounded exactly like the Eternal Demon Abyss!

The Eternal Demon Abyss was also known as the land of no return. When the number one top powerhouse of the Holy Demon Continent had reached a bitter bottleneck in his cultivation, he had entered the Eternal Demon Abyss to search for a lucky chance. But, the result was that he had died there, never to return!

And around the Eternal Demon Abyss was the 1000 mile forbidden zone. Although the risks were far, far lower than in the true Eternal Demon Abyss, it still wasn’t a place that an Emperor level martial artist could freely enter.

Whether it was the High Lords of the 12 Skysplit Towers or the Tower Masters themselves, none of them had even returned alive after entering the 1000 mile forbidden zone. As for Lin Ming, he had only managed to escape the 1000 mile forbidden zone by relying on the memories of the Demon Emperor as well as his own unique abilities.

And listening to this Great Smelting Prince's words, the 8000 Mile Black Swamp was extremely similar to the 1000 mile forbidden zone of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

The Skill Spill Continent had the Sea of Miracles and the Holy Demon Continent had the Eternal Demon Abyss. Could this really have been a mere coincidence?

As Lin Ming was thinking this, the Great Smelting Prince's next words raised even greater waves in Lin Ming's mind.

He said, "Every 10 years, there will be a black tsunami that comes from the Sea of Miracles. Normally, the tsunami will reach out to a distance of 8000-9000 miles, completely covering the 8000 Mile Black Swamp."

"This black tsunami is wholly terrifying. If one is caught within, then that is certain death. But although this black tsunami is terrifying, there are still great advantages to be had. That is that the wood spirit jade floating in the Sea of Miracles will rush out into the Black Swamp where it can be mined by others. Thus, even though the four Divine Kingdoms were founded over 10,000 years ago, the amount of wood spirit jade resources have never fallen off, always managing to continuously replenish themselves."

Chapter 790 – Heavencraft Xiaoxiao's Request

Chapter 790 – Heavencraft Xiaoxiao's Request

…

…

…

Lin Ming took a deep breath, unable to calm his heart. The Sea of Miracles and the Eternal Demon Abyss were both absolute life forbidden zones, both of them able to bury even Divine Sea Supreme Elders.

Although the surrounding area was relatively safer, it still wasn't a place where anyone below the Divine Sea realm could hope to live through.

In addition, the Sea of Miracles and the Eternal Demon Abyss both had eruptions. The Sea of Miracles had its black tsunamis and the Eternal Demon Abyss had its great black waves. After erupting, both of them would carry materials from their center. The Sea of Miracles would bring out wood spirit jade and the Eternal Demon Abyss would bring out Demon God Bones.

Wood spirit jade was the condensed essence of ancient spiritual plants.

Demon God Bones were the condensed essence of powerful ancient martial artists and vicious beasts.

How similar they were!

The Sea of Miracles was simply the Sky Spill Continent's Eternal Demon Abyss. It would be impossible to describe their similarities as being just coincidental. They must be linked somehow!

Thinking of the apocalyptic catastrophe that happened in the Sky Spill Continent 100,000 years ago, the immortal goddess deeply slumbering within the Eternal Demon Abyss, as well as the eternally beating 100,000 year heart of the ancient Great Emperor, Lin Ming had absolute belief that all of these was because of some incredible unknown secret.

"Brother Lin?" The Great Smelting Prince couldn't help but ask Lin Ming as he saw him deep in thought.

"It's nothing, I was just shocked by the mysteries of this Sea of Miracles. I wonder, is there anything else special about this Sea of Miracles?"

"Yes, I hear that there exists a Temple of Marvels that floats above the skies in the Sea of Miracles. It is illusory and elusive like a dreaming mirage. It's only that this temple is deep within the Sea of Miracles and guarded by some wild and ancient sea beasts. These sea beasts can emit a pressure that can stop even the heart of a Divine Sea Supreme Elder. These are existences that are beyond our imagination." The Great Smelting Prince sighed as he spoke to here. Although he was considered fairly strong within the four Divine Kingdoms now, he was simply not worth mentioning when compared to those ancient and mystical existences in the Sea of Miracles.

Let alone him, even his father, the Divine Emperor, wouldn't be able to return if he went to the Sea of Miracles. The great vastness of this world surpassed all of their imaginations.

'The Sea of Miracles has this sea beast and the Eternal Demon Abyss has the ancient great beast; this is truly surprisingly consistent.' Lin Ming was already fully convinced that there was some sort of inevitable relation between the Sea of Miracles and the Eternal Demon Abyss. They might be two entrances into a world.

But what was strange was that in the vast and endless universe, why would such miraculous mysteries appear on the incomparably ordinary world of the Sky Spill Continent? That ancient vicious beast that seemed like a God beast was not a being that even general Realm of the Gods powerhouse characters like the Demon Emperor could compare with.

“Has anyone entered the Temple of Marvels before?” Lin Ming asked.

“Hilarious.” The Big Dipper High Successor smiled as he shook his head. “That temple is a legend to begin with; moreover, it exists deep in the Sea of Miracles. No one who has ever stepped foot into the Sea of Miracles has returned, so how could anyone have entered it?”

As the Temple of Miracles was brought up, the Nine Flower Banquet became even more lively. Many martial artists began speaking of certain fables of the Sea of Miracles, making Lin Ming feel even more complicated and confused.

…

After the banquet reached its end, Lin Ming was invited by Yang Yun to the Crown Prince Palace. At this time, Yang Yun was wearing a five-clawed golden dragon robe, and floating in front of him was a jade array disc. On top of the array disc was a projected map of the entire Sky Spill Continent.

The four Divine Kingdoms, the Sea of Miracles, and even ancient family clans and hidden worlds were all shown on the map, looking incomparably broad and wondrous.

Yang Yun looked at this map and suddenly said, “Brother Lin, I heard that you are collecting top grade wood spirit jade?”

“Yes.”

Yang Yun didn’t ask why Lin Ming was gathering wood spirit jade. He looked thoughtful for a moment and then said, “Why don’t you consider joining a side force? You can borrow their power to rapidly collect wood spirit jade and they would even be able to protect you, so why not do it? For instance, about today’s matter… Asura Divine Kingdom’s Situ Chuan and Situ Feng bullied you because you didn’t have any great power supporting you from behind. That is the only reason that they dared to attack you. Moreover… perhaps Brother Lin has already been included on the Asura Divine Kingdom’s hit list. If you somehow end up falling into the hands of the Asura Divine Kingdom’s top powerhouses in the future, then the consequences would be disastrous!”

Yang Yun's intentions were obvious. He wished to win Lin Ming over to the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom.

Lin Ming had already guessed Yang Yun's goal before the Nine Flower Banquet started.

If he joined the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, then collecting wood spirit jade would naturally not be a problem anymore. As long as he was able to prove of sufficient value, then the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom wouldn't begrudge him any amount of wood spirit jade. And with the shelter of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, he also wouldn't need to fear the Asura Divine Kingdom anymore.

However, there were simply too many secrets on Lin Ming's body. If he joined the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom then he would be surrounded by Divine Sea powerhouses everywhere. It would be far too easy for those Supreme Elders to monitor him without him knowing at all.

Not to mention everything else, but if just his Cosmic Melting Furnace that he used for alchemy was revealed to those old monsters, then his fate could be imagined.

Lin Ming wasn't used to letting others control his fate, nor would he join a Holy Land level influence.

"I thank Your Highness the Crown Prince for your reminder. But, I am used to freely wandering about and don't wish to temporarily join any side influence."

"Oh? Well, that is indeed regrettable." Yang Yun shook his head as if he were feeling rather sorry for everything. "If Brother Lin has a change of mind, then my Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's doors are open for you at any time."

"Thank you Crown Prince Your Highness for your kindness. In the future, if possible, I will certainly thank you for your hospitality." Lin Ming cupped his fists together. He had already succeeded in obtaining the wood spirit jade quintessence. Now, in addition to the Five Color Fruit, Void Temper Root, skyflower stones, and dragonspine grass, he already had

80-90% confidence that he could successfully refine the Fivefade Void Pill. It was nearly time to leave the trouble-laden Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom.

Lin Ming had already made his plans. First he would refine the Fivefade Void Pill and then open the third of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. Then, he would look for some remote hidden area to safely make a breakthrough to Life Destruction.

When he had enough strength, he would make sure Divine Phoenix Island was safe and sound and then he would begin the final preparations to ascend into the Realm of the Gods.

After Lin Ming bid his farewells to Yang Yun, he first returned to his own room. As he passed through the door, he saw that Xiaoxiao was sitting on the bed, a bit stunned, as if she had lost her soul.

There were still tears hanging from the corners of her eyes; it was obvious she had just been crying.

“Miss Heavencraft?” Lin Ming asked with some surprised. He didn’t know what matter Xiaoxiao had experienced, but this was his room. Her room should be next door, and since it was already nighttime, what was she doing in his room?

“Sir Lin…”

As Xiaoxiao saw Lin Ming, she nipped her lips and began to speak before she hesitated. She looked extremely pitiful.

“What’s the matter? It’s fine to say it.”

Xiaoxiao took several deep breaths to calm herself down. But, tears still glistened in her eyes. She said, “I saw the Nine Furnace Guard’s Fleeting Dragon… he, he showed me some things.”

Xiaoxiao’s lips quivered as she spoke, as if whatever it was had been terrifying.

“What is it?”

"It's evidence about my father, my grandfather, and even more ancient Family Heads from more distant times… that is the dark history of my Heavencraft Family Clan…"

Xiaoxiao seemed to use up every last ounce of her strength to speak. She grabbed the table to support herself, revealing a smooth jade white arm even as her full and milky breasts fiercely heaved up and down.

"This evidence is real?"

"It… it should be." Xiaoxiao had helped and managed the trading company for so many years that she could certainly distinguish if it were true or real. It was only because the evidence was real that she was at a complete loss of what to do.

She didn't know what the Nine Furnace Guard wished to do, but such detailed evidence absolutely couldn't be collected in a short one or two days. That meant that the Nine Furnace guard had already been investigating her Heavencraft Family Clan for a long time!

Could it be that Yang Yun wanted to control her Heavencraft Family Clan?

With an absolute disparity in masters and strength, as well as enough reasons to act, Xiaoxiao had no doubt that as long as Yang Yun wished to, he could easily annex their Heavencraft Trading Company!

To Xiaoxiao, it was like she had been struck by a bolt of lightning out of nowhere!

"You say that Yang Yun wants to swallow up your Heavencraft Trading Company, but do you think that the Heavencraft Trading Company is worth him doing so?" Lin Ming asked in reply.

"I have no idea… the Nine Furnace Guard only showed me the evidence, they didn't actually say what they planned to do with it…" Xiaoxiao shook her head. Although she was still extremely afraid, she had a faint guess about some possibilities. It wasn't worth it for Yang Yun to spend so much time and effort on just the small Heavencraft Trading Company. But, if the Nine Furnace Guard investigated not just the Heavencraft Trading Company but other organizations too, then there was likely to be great turbulence in the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's future. For such a small fish as her trading company, it was likely they would be washed away in the chaos.

"You told me this because you want me to help you?" Lin Ming directly asked. Xiaoxiao wouldn't tell him all this just because she wanted to talk.

"I…" Xiaoxiao's eyes flashed with shimmering tears. She bit her lips until they turned white and said, "I would like to request Mister Lin stay in the Heavencraft Trading Company for some time again. I beg you!"

Xiaoxiao bowed as she spoke. Lin Ming froze for a moment, startled, before understanding Xiaoxiao's intentions.

Lin Ming had helped Xiaoxiao obtain the position of Family Head and Xiaoxiao had repaid him with the dragonspine grass. Their former agreement should now have come to an end. Lin Ming could leave the Heavencraft Family Clan at any time.

Xiaoxiao wished for Lin Ming to stay in order to be the warding charm of their Heavencraft Family Clan.

Behind the Nine Furnace Guard lay Yang Yun. And Xiaoxiao had seen with her own eyes just how much Yang Yun valued and favored Lin Ming. If Lin Ming stayed in the Heavencraft Family Clan then it was likely that Yang Yun would give Lin Ming face and leave the Heavencraft Family Clan a path out of this chaos. After all, the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom had six great commercial organizations, and the Heavencraft Trading Company was ranked near the end of these six. All the trading companies were far from being able to compare to the two great banks and the Hundred Treasure Auction House.

After Lin Ming understood all of this, he shook his head and said, "I'm sorry, but I can't promise you that."

Staying at the Heavencraft Trading Company was impossible. Lin Ming had already been locked on to by the Asura Divine Kingdom. If he continued to stay at the Heavencraft

Trading Company, that would only be possible if he joined the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom and found shelter under them. Otherwise, he would just be seeking his own death.

Hearing Lin Ming's instant rejection, Xiaoxiao paled. She already knew it was a tough, nearly impossible request, but she never thought that Lin Ming would refuse her so simply and decisively without any wriggle room at all.

She fell to her knees like a broken puppet. After several breaths of time, she bit her lips and seemed to fill with determination, as if she had come to a momentous decision. She reached out her slender and trembling fingers to grip the collar of her clothes. "Sir Lin, I beg you to save me, save the Heavencraft Trading Company. If you can help me I am willing to do anything for you. I… I…"

Tears fell down Xiaoxiao's face, her body quaking as she began to unravel the buckles of her clothes, revealing a pure, powder white neck.

Chapter 791 – Refining the Fivefade Void Pill

Chapter 791 – Refining the Fivefade Void Pill

…

…

…

Xiaoxiao’s collar was originally very high. As she peeled it off, the deep purple cloth cast a faint silhouette on her pure white skin. Under the swaying and dim candlelight, her luscious body flowed like smooth wood spirit jade; it seemed exceptionally soft and beautiful.

After untying the first buckle, Xiaoxiao seemed to have found her courage. She then continued with the second and the third buckle as she bit her tender lips and said, “Sir Lin, I know that you have the eye and appreciation of the Crown prince. I… I’m merely the head of a small trading company; I haven’t even held a succession ceremony yet. There’s nothing I can bring out that would be able to move you again save for my pure virgin body. Still, even though I know that I am not enough, I have nothing else to offer you…”

Xiaoxiao closed her eyes, her long eyelashes trembling in the light. Two drops of crystal clear tears silently fell from the corners of her eyes.

Lin Ming never thought that such a sudden change would occur. He couldn’t help but sigh in his heart.

These were the cruel and callous rules of the world.

In the face of absolute power there was no mercy or sympathy. In order to survive, one had to pay a high enough price. Even the exquisite and beautiful Heavencraft Xiaoxiao, a beautiful woman that could cause the downfall of nations and had near endless resources, even she could do nothing but bow her head before a stronger power. Otherwise, she could only wait for her own destruction.

This was the sorrow of the weak.

This was their never ending plight.

Lin Ming shook his head and said, “Miss Heavencraft, you don’t have to do this and cause yourself to suffer.”

“I’m completely willing. Compared to the foundation of my family clan, what worth is my body? Much less, Sir Lin is also a chosen talent gifted by the heavens. As for me, I’m but a nobody. My only fear is that Sir Lin despises my average appearance.”

As she spoke, she quietly pulled down her veil, revealing an appearance as soft and as glorious as the bright moon. Her purple overcoat also fell, sliding down her fragrant shoulders and ravishing breasts.

She felt a cold wind brush by her body, whereafter her originally pale face blushed a bright red. In fact, she wouldn’t have pushed Lin Ming away if he ever desired her. If it weren’t for him, she would’ve already been abducted by Corpsemancer, living a life where she couldn’t even die if she wished to.

“Miss Heavencraft, I won’t stay at the Heavencraft Trading Company. You don’t need to ask me anymore.”

A simple and succinct refusal. Xiaoxiao froze where she was.

Lin Ming stood up and let out a long sigh. If he stayed at the Heavencraft Trading Company, he was doomed to seek asylum underneath the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. Otherwise, he would never cross over the perils of the Asura Divine Kingdom.

Moreover, if Yang Yun really cleaned up and annexed the trading companies and the other great financial organizations of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, only leaving behind the

Heavencraft Trading Company, then this was the same as Lin Ming owing Yang Yun a great favor. One and then two, Lin Ming would slowly become entangled in the affairs of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. At that time, it would be equal to having joined them.

There might be over a dozen Emperor level powerhouses in the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, and Lin Ming had on him the Cosmic Melting Furnace and the Burning Star Flame. These were treasures that Divine Sea alchemists would go mad with jealousy over. The only choice would be for him to not use these treasures ever; otherwise, once he was discovered by those old fellows with incomparably sensitive perceptions, his fate might even be worse than falling into the hands of the Asura Divine Kingdom.

As he looked at the pitiful and beautiful Xiaoxiao, he had a suspicion floating in his mind. ‘When Yang Yun invited me, he also invited Xiaoxiao. Had he already planned for all of this to happen?’

Although these sorts of methods left Lin Ming very unhappy, the truth was that the Nine Furnace Guard had only shown the evidence to Xiaoxiao. No one had forced her to look to Lin Ming for help, as if nothing that had happened so far involved Yang Yun. Even Lin Ming couldn’t be sure whether or not he was involved.

Besides, no one forced him to promise Xiaoxiao anything. The choice between a beauty and to leave was his to make.

“Why…?” Xiaoxiao fell to the ground in exhaustion, her voice shaking.

By joining the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, Lin Ming would have resources, the trust and appreciation of the Crown Prince, the asylum of the Divine Kingdom, and so much more! This was a massive opportunity that others couldn’t even dream of!

Lin Ming didn’t intend to reveal his thoughts that he felt somehow Yang Yun had plotted this. Regardless of this, because of the many secrets on his body, he didn’t intend to involve himself in the upcoming whirlpool.

As he saw Xiaoxiao's miserable appearance, he eventually couldn't bear it any longer. He sighed and said, "Miss Heavencraft, while I can't agree to your request, I can leave a letter here for you. As for His Highness the Crown Prince, I can't say whether or not he'll value my words."

Lin Ming was self-aware of his own status and strength. Although he could be said to have endless potential, his strength was still far from reaching the peak of the Sky Spill Continent. If he could rank at the top of the Destiny Decree, then he could perhaps request a favor. But, for now, it wouldn't be easy to do so. As for leaving a so-called letter behind… Its main content would be to thank Yang Yun for his gracious hospitality while also vaguely mentioning Xiaoxiao.

If Yang Yun agreed, this would be considered as Lin Ming owing Yang Yun a favor.

"Thank you, thank you so much Sir Lin…" Xiaoxiao bowed again. She was already more than satisfied with this result.

She waited for Lin Ming, her fingers pressed against the purple belly band around her waist, still not moving to put her clothes back on.

Lin Ming looked at the nervous Xiaoxiao who was overwhelmed with anxiety. Then, he smirked and said, "Miss Heavencraft, please, put some clothes on. While you are indeed beautiful, I already have a wife, and two at that."

Lin Ming couldn't help but acknowledge that he was attracted to Xiaoxiao's body. Even though his will was firm, he inevitably felt the fires of lust stir up within him. But not only did he have Mu Qianyu, but more importantly he also had Qin Xingxuan who he hadn't even had a marriage ceremony with or brought to the nuptial chamber. If he were to have sexual relations with another girl before completing his marriage with Qin Xingxuan, then this would be no different from betraying her.

Xiaoxiao blushed red and hurriedly dressed herself. She felt something in her heart but she couldn't quite place her finger on what it was. Although she had made her decision during a time when she was nervous and not totally willing, she had still firmed her determination. For everything to suddenly end like this, she couldn't help but feel an inexplicable sense of failure.

After waiting for Xiaoxiao to dress, Lin Ming picked up a pen and some paper, and began writing a letter to Yang Yun. This could also be considered his parting farewell.

…………

Three days later at nighttime, within the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, at a mountain range that lay close to the Sea of Miracles, a green masked youth landed on the ground like a ghost. This youth that wore a wood spirit jade mask was Lin Ming.

A wood spirit jade mask could block even the perception of a Divine Sea Supreme Elder. It could be called the power most formidable and yet most simple method to hide one's identity.

The reason he dared to walk within the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom was all dependent on this wood spirit jade mask.

Moreover, these were the lands of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. Even if the Asura Divine Kingdom intended to hunt him down, they wouldn't blatantly and flagrantly do so here.

Still, he remained as careful and safe as he could. After leaving the Crown Prince Palace, he walked through several different transmission arrays and also changed routes several times before arriving at this nearly inaccessible and remote mountain range.

The heaven and earth origin energy here was barren to the point of nearly not existing. Without any resources here, martial artists wouldn't search this place either.

Bang!

With a thrust of his spear, its sharp sword pierced through the mountain side like a knife cutting through tofu, immediately opening up a 200 foot deep cave. Lin Ming smoothed out the cave, reorganizing the lay out a bit, and then lay down several cloaking array formations and alarm array formations around the entrance. Only then did he fully enter.

These array formations all had wood spirit jade powder added to them. They were excellent at isolating energy.

He cut several more chambers in this cave and arranged the Eight Dragon Jade Dawn Array in the largest chamber. With Demonshine's help and in addition to his memories of the array formation, although he couldn't reproduce the complete power of the Eight Dragon Jade Dawn Array in the Demon God Imperial palace, he could still simulate 30-40% of it.

Then, Lin Ming waved his hand and a reddish-golden small bronze furnace flew out of him, spinning in the air. It soared into the air, spinning and growing until it became several dozen feet high with a golden light shining out from within. Brilliant flames burned all over the surface. This was the Cosmic Melting Furnace.

For the sake of security, this hiding place he chose had extremely poor heaven and earth origin energy. He had no choice but to fill all corners of the room with great numbers of spirit essence stones and fire-attribute top quality true essence stones. For a time, the entire chamber was thick with fire-attribute origin energy. The Eight Dragon Jade Dawn Array released red clouds and the Cosmic Melting Furnace glowed an even brighter crimson color.

Alchemy was an extremely tedious and complicated process. On top of that, he had only studied alchemy for less than a year. Even though he had inherited the complete experiences and knowledge of the Realm of the Gods alchemist and had even used over half of all the precious medicinal materials he had obtained from the Yin Yang Profound Palace and the South Sea Demon Region's medicine gardens, he still wasn't skilled enough to have absolute confidence he could successfully refine or even control a top grade pill such as the Fivefade Void Pill.

He estimated that he would need to practice alchemy for another one or two years if he wanted to increase his chances of successfully refining the Fivefade Void Pill to 70-80%. However, he couldn't afford to wait for such a long time. His only chance was to use the wood spirit jade quintessence and forcibly increase his chance of success.

Although this method was extremely wasteful, time was the most precious commodity to him.

He didn't immediately start refining the Fivefade Void Pill. First, he refined some ordinary pills. This was to familiarize himself with the techniques again and also to preheat the Cosmic Melting Furnace. This would provide the best conditions for refining.

This Cosmic Melting Furnace was also one of the main reasons Lin Ming dared to refine the Fivefade Void Pill. As a quasi-Saint artifact, the Cosmic Melting Furnace could increase the chances of successfully refining the pill by 20-30%.

After concocting three pills in the furnace, Lin Ming took out all the materials required to refine the Fivefade Void Pill from his spatial ring. He then activated the Eight Dragon Jade Dawn Array, and with a flick of his hand, a wisp of the Burning Star Flame flew into the Cosmic Melting Furnace.

The Burning Star Flame was a reward he acquired from Timeworn Phoenix City. It was considered a good Flame Essence even within the Realm of the Gods and its effects for alchemy were naturally astounding. It wasn't something that the alchemists of the Sky Spill Continent and their earth-step Flame Essences could compare with.

Of course, while a higher grade Flame Essence was more useful and effective for alchemy, the premise of all this was that one could control it. Otherwise, if the energy fluctuations of the Flame Essence were too strong, then it would be easy to burn the alchemy materials down to ash.

But this was not a problem to Lin Ming. With the Heretical God Seed as well as his extremely high comprehension of the Concept of Fire, he could control the Burning Star Flame with absolute precision.

It was with all these various reasons combined that Lin Ming dared to refine the Fivefade Void Pill.

With another slap of his hand, the skyflower stones were the first material to fly into the Cosmic Melting Furnace. Lin Ming then added the Concept of Burning Heat and a touch of the Concept of Annihilation to the Burning Star Flame. At that point, with the assistance of the Eight Dragon Jade Dawn Array, it only took several more breaths of time before the hard and inflammable skyflower stones began to burn and melt.

This was a speed that a general alchemist couldn’t hope to keep up with.

Next was the dragonspine grass. Dragonspine grass was different from the fire resistant skyflower stones. If the heat was even a trace too much then it would be burnt down to nothing.

Lin Ming controlled the Flame Essence and urged it to weaken. The golden totem engraved on the Heretical God Seed began to blaze with a brilliant light. Underneath the steady flame, the dragonspine grass turned into green droplets.

Underneath Lin Ming’s control, the two different liquids merged together, becoming a crystal clear whole.

Chapter 792 – The Gate of Wonder

Chapter 792 – The Gate of Wonder

…

…

…

The direction reagent had already been prepared. Lin Ming then took out the wood spirit jade quintessence. This quail egg-sized jade quintessence was actually several times heavier than gold. At such a small size it was already one jin and three taels.

Lin Ming flicked his fingers and the wood spirit jade quintessence flew into the Cosmic Melting Furnace.

Wood spirit jade was extremely resistant to high temperatures. The older wood spirit jade was, the more difficult it was to refine. And wood spirit jade quintessence could even cause a Divine Sea powerhouse to exhaust themselves.

Lin Ming opened the Heretical God Force as well as the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

Bang!

Within the Cosmic Melting Furnace, the Burning Star Flame suddenly erupted. With a heaven-step Flame Essence as the source, the wood spirit jade quintessence began to slowly heat up.

“Concept of Burning Heat, Law of Annihilation!”

True essence rapidly revolved within Lin Ming. The totem mark on the Heretical God Seed began to shine with the radiant light of the Laws.

The Eight Dragon Jade Dawn Array fiercely shook. Fire-attribute origin energy twisted into a vortex within the chamber, and the top quality fire-attribute true essence stones began to rapidly lose their shine before they cracked underneath the intense flow of energy and turned into ash.

In such a terrifying convection of heat, the wood spirit jade quintessence began to soften after a quarter hour. Quietly, it began to melt.

A drop of shimmering golden liquid wood spirit jade dropped into the directing reagents. Lin Ming's entire forehead was beaded with sweat as his mental concentration reached the peak.

Another jin of 500,000 year wood spirit jade was tossed into the Cosmic Melting Furnace. This time, the wood spirit jade quickly melted, forming a thick viscous green wood spirit jade liquid that wrapped all the medicinal materials within.

Liquid wood spirit jade made for an ideal medium buffer for alchemy. The inherent rich and pure wood-attribute origin energy within could nourish the medicinal materials and it could also prevent the flames from overheating and burning the medicine. Thus, this would be able to greatly enhance the chances of success in concocting a pill.

The directing reagents had already taken form. And with the wood spirit jade liquid as a buffer, Lin Ming then tossed the Void Temper Root and the Five Color Fruit into the Cosmic Melting Furnace, prepared to let them melt within the temperature-consistent wood spirit jade liquid.

Chi!

With a light sound, the Void Temper Root and the Five Color Fruit fiercely shook. Lin Ming's heart tightly gripped. Even though his soul force had vacillated just the tiniest bit, just that had caused the Five Color Fruit and the Void Temper Root to nearly be destroyed. Luckily, the excess energy was absorbed by the wood spirit jade quintessence fluid, otherwise Lin Ming would have failed here.

Using one jin and three taels of wood spirit jade quintessence to refine a Fivefade Void Pill was an extravagant waste, but it was truly worth it at this moment.

Three quarters of an hour passed. Lin Ming's clothes were completely soaked in sweat.

When an alchemist was concocting pills, they required an extremely high degree of spiritual concentration, constantly sensing and controlling the raw materials in the furnace. In this situation, there would be an exorbitant consumption of soul force. If one didn't have a powerful soul force then they could forget about ever becoming an alchemist.

Lin Ming's soul force and willpower far exceeded all other martial artists' at his level. But even so, refining such a high level pill was still difficult.

Two hours…

Four hours…

Six hours…

Blue veins on Lin Ming's forehead bulged upwards like worms. Because he had overdrawn his soul force to a high degree, his entire face was stark white and his lips were beginning to turn blue.

Still, as long as he could persist, overdrawing his soul force like this would be greatly beneficial to the future growth of his soul force.

Every time he completely exhausted his soul force and had to dig out further potential from the depths of his body, this would allow his soul force to reach higher realms. This was also one of the reasons that Demonshine wanted Lin Ming to study alchemy.

After a full eight hours passed, every alchemy material was tossed into the pill furnace, thoroughly fusing together. But at this time, Lin Ming's eyes were bloodshot; he had overdrafted his soul force to the limit.

This was the last step of forming the pill and also the easiest phase to fail at. Although Lin Ming had the wood spirit jade quintessence to form a buffer as well as the Cosmic Melting Furnace, Burning Star Flame, Eight Dragon Jade Dawn Array, and other such favorable conditions to help him, Lin Ming's time spent practicing alchemy was still far too short. Also, his alchemy practice had been focused on specifically training for refining the Fivefade Void Pill so his alchemy foundation was far too weak. It was actually uncertain whether or not he would be successful.

If he failed here then he wouldn't have the materials for a second attempt.

After another hour passed, the Cosmic Melting Furnace began to slowly spin around as it emitted clarion cries from its center. A fragrant medicine smell began to fill the air.

Lin Ming's spiritual concentration had reached unprecedented heights. He continuously formed seals with his hand, using the Heretical God Seed to steady the Burning Star Flame's temperature as much as possible. With his perception he was able to see that the medicinal liquid within the pill furnace had begun to contract in on itself and the wood spirit jade essence was completely gathering together in forming the Fivefade Void Pill.

Lin Ming suppressed the aching headaches that followed overdrawing his soul force. He used a hand and withdrew a light green jade box from his spatial ring. This jade box was only three or four inches wide and it was actually carved from wood spirit jade.

This jade box had an extremely rich wood-attribute origin energy. It could ensure that a pill's medicinal efficacy wouldn't fade for a very long time; even retaining its perfect form for several years wasn't a problem. This was the best storage vessel for a pill. Of course, it was always extremely expensive so it was specifically used for high level pills.

Peng!

The Cosmic Melting Furnace's lid popped up without a sign. With a faint humming sound, a fist-sized ball of light shout out from within. At the center of this light was a thumb-sized pill that shined with five different splendorous colors. It glowed like a radiant sun with and emitted intense waves of energy.

After the pill appeared it didn't stop rising. It quickly flew up as if it wanted to break out of the stone walls and escape.

Lin Ming had already expected this and had arranged an array formation around the Cosmic Array Formation. A high level pill had its own spiritual sense. After the furnace was opened, it would attempt to flee. If he really allowed this pill that he had used all of his effort to refine to suddenly escape then that would be the greatest joke of all.

Bang!

The Fivefade Void Pill smashed into the array formation's walls, causing it to shake. However, it didn't manage to break through the array.

After the first attempt failed, the Fivefade Void Pill shined even brighter as if it were readying itself to make a second impact. But how could Lin Ming allow it to do as it wished? He quickly stepped on Golden Roc Shattering the Void and grabbed the Fivefade Void Pill in his hand. Then, he formed several dozen seals with his other hand and sealed the pill into the wood spirit jade box.

After finishing this, Lin Ming fell straight down from the air as if he had lost all of his strength.

With shivering fingers, Lin Ming took out a soul recovery pill from his spatial ring. He only felt as if his eyelids had been replaced by lead and his surroundings seemed to go blurry. Then, he fell asleep as everything turned to darkness.

....

After an unknown period of time, Lin Ming's fingers began to move slightly. He opened both of his eyes and saw only the pitch black of the cave. There were some left over wood-attribute true essence stones scattered on the floor, emitting a glowing green light. In the dark, it seemed exceptionally beautiful.

“How long have I been asleep?”

“Seven days!” Demonshine’s voice sounded out in Lin Ming’s mind.

Seven days…

Lin Ming sat up, his head throbbing. As he examined his spiritual sea, he saw that his soul force really had grown a bit. And the azure spear-shaped battle spirit that floated in the skies above his spiritual sea seemed to glow even brighter, as if it had become more formidable.

When Lin Ming had first become an inscription master and completed his first medicinal inscription symbol, he had rested for several days after. The reason had also been that he had overdrawn his soul force. Once the inscription had been completed, his mind had relaxed and he directly fell into a deep slumber.

Now, even though his soul force had risen, he had encountered the same situation because the rank of pills he concocted was even higher. Lin Ming couldn’t help but sigh with emotion.

He had obtained the Magic Cube when he was just 15 years old. Now nearly seven years had passed. In these seven years, his strength had gone through heaven-shaking upheavals. As he recalled the trials and tribulations he encountered on his road of martial artists, he couldn’t help but reminisce.

Lin Ming stashed away the Cosmic Melting Furnace and sat on the roughly carved stone bed. Then, he entered the ethereal martial intent state and began to meditate.

As he cycled the true essence in his body, he found that the Revolving Core crystal nucleus in his dantian had grown even more. He was getting that much closer to the peak of the late Revolving Core.

After breaking through to the late Revolving Core, Lin Ming's cultivation hadn't rapidly risen at all. In half a year he still hadn't managed to break through to the peak of the late Revolving Core. This was because after having had his cultivation shoot up with astronomical speed, he now required time to solidify his foundation, accumulating strength so he could prepare to pass through Life Destruction.

Although the Life Destruction realm was within the Revolving Core realm, it was still considered an entire large boundary over. Breaking through this bottleneck wouldn't be easy at all.

He used two hours to restore his mental state and physical condition to their peak.

Then, Lin Ming pulled out the recently refined Fivefade Void Pill.

"Lin Ming, do you plan on opening the third of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates now?"

"Yes. I must increase my strength as soon as possible. The earlier I absorb this pill, the more beneficial it will be to my cultivation and ability to resist my enemies."

He opened the wood spirit jade box and unraveled the seals. The thumb-sized five colored pill tumbled into his hands. This pill looked small but it was actually extremely heavy; it weighed nearly two jin. This was because it had partially formed from the melted essence of the wood spirit jade quintessence.

Lin Ming opened his mouth and swallowed the pill. He immediately felt a burst of coolness from his throat and reaching down to his stomach, gradually becoming a faint burning sensation.

Compared to the blue Nameless Divine Pill that he had taken in the past, the Fivefade Void Pill's side effects were much more mild and temperate. But, the time it would take to process it was also much longer. Lin Ming put away the jade box and closed his eyes, entering into the ethereal martial intent as he began to revolve the 'True Primal Chaos Formula'.

For the past seven years, because of his diligent training, Lin Ming's understanding of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula' had steadily increased. Now he had full confidence that he could record at least half of the 'True Primal Chaos Formula's' heart mantra into a jade slip so that others could train with it.

Within the Realm of the Gods, there weren't many types of body transformation law formulas. This was because there were far fewer people that trained in the body transformation system as opposed to the essence gathering system.

The 'True Primal Chaos Formula' was a superior top level body transformation law formula, and one of its greatest advantages was that it wasn't difficult to practice at all.

At this time, Lin Ming could already clearly see faint traces of multi-hued energy flowing and mixing into his meridians and penetrating into his limbs and bones, fusing into his body. This was his final preparation for breaking through to the third of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

The third gate was called the Gate of Wonder.

After one reached the second stage of body transformation, every time one of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates was opened, one would obtain a greater strength. At the same time, every gate corresponded to obtaining a special ability.

For instance, the first gate, the Gate of Healing, was located at the point between the clavicles. After opening this gate, besides a martial artist's overall strength rising, it would also greatly enhance their endurance and recovery ability.

For the second gate, the Gate of Limit, that was located at the spine: the area called the dragon bone. Opening this gate would increase one's balance and explosive force.

As for the third gate, the Gate of Wonder, that was located at the two knees. Opening this gate would increase a martial artist’s strength, and the special ability it granted was to greatly increase a martial artist’s speed.

Chapter 793 – Sky High Reward

Chapter 793 – Sky High Reward

…

…

…

Three days later, a loud explosion rang out as the stone bed Lin Ming sat on completely collapsed underneath him. All of the top grade true essence stones in the chamber disintegrated, turning into fine powder.

Lin Ming stood up from the heap of rubble and casually dusted his hands and feet. His limbs emitted a crackling 'ka ka ka' noise and sounded as if tofu was currently being fried.

He had finally opened the Gate of Wonder!

The Gate of Wonder had the effect of an overall increase in speed and instant acceleration. This differed from the Gate of Healing, which managed endurance and restorative ability, and the Gate of Limit, which handled balance, coordinated strength, and explosive force.

This newly opened gate would be able to increase one's combat effectiveness far more directly than the first two gates.

Speed was one of the most important factors of a martial artist's comprehensive combat strength. It was far more straightforward than endurance, recovery ability, or explosive force!

Speed was undoubtedly important in evading and chasing. It would also greatly increase a martial artist's attack strength.

As the old saying went, speed was insurmountable. A martial artist's own speed could superimpose on the speed of their own attacks. If their attacks were fast enough, then even a tiny stone rock could easily pierce through the body. If Lin Ming poured his battle spirit into his attacks as the foundation, then the resulting power would be even more terrifying.

Lin Ming left the cave, sealing the entrance on his way out. He then jumped into the sky.

Bang!

The rocks underneath his feet shattered into bits and pieces as he ascended up into the air like a rocket. In an instant, he became an azure beam of light that shot across the endless sky, traversing several miles in the blink of an eye.

Strong heavenly winds bombarded him, sending his hair erratically dancing in the wind. As he felt himself reaching such extreme speeds, Lin Ming was elated beyond measure; the extreme velocity of the Gate of Wonder completely surpassing his imagination. If he was already this fast by only relying on his true essence and the Gate of Wonder, then how fast would he be if he also used his movement technique?

As the thought crossed his mind, Lin Ming stepped upon 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void'. His steps became blurry as the space shrank beneath his feet. In a single step, he crossed five or six miles, as the grand mountains that rose thousands of feet into the air were easily crossed over by Lin Ming.

When the Gate of Wonder was combined with 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void', Lin Ming's speed limit was several times faster than it was before. This speed was so fast even difficult for him to control.

"If I attack in this state…"

Lin Ming's mind stirred. The red spear appeared in his hands as both the Concepts of Thunder and Fire wove together while he poured his large success bronze battle spirit into his attack.

Penetrating Rainbow!

Woosh!

A brilliant spear light flashed across the skies like a ray of sunlight. Lin Ming had completely fused himself into this light, becoming one with his spear. He then disappeared like a meteor crossing the horizon.

When he reappeared, Lin Ming had already travelled a dozen miles in the void. He came across a massive canyon and thrust his spear into the 10,000 foot high cliffs.

Bang!

Lin Ming pierced the cliffside like tofu, penetrating all the way until he poked out from the other side!

Lin Ming’s spear move was founded on the limits of his speed, along with the dual Concepts of Thunder and Fire, and the keenness of his battle spirit. With such a combination, even the cliff side that had been strengthened by a baptism of being near the Sea of Miracles had been pierced through by Lin Ming’s spear.

Rustle…

After Lin Ming soared out from the hole several feet wide that he had left in the middle of the mountain cliff, a great puff of stone powder plumed from within. Underneath the Concept of Fire’s Law of Annihilation, the crushed stones turned into dust, blowing and dancing into the wind. For a while, the entire cliff canyon was covered in a faint hazy dust cloud.

“My strength has increased yet again after opening the third of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. If I were to encounter Corpsemancer now, I should be able to defeat him far more easily than in the past!”

As Lin Ming thought this, he flew away from the barren and desolate land that he was currently at and towards the city.

He needed to enter the city to purchase a few heavenly materials in order to continuous practicing and perfecting his alchemy technique. Lin Ming also had to begin making the final preparations to impact the Life Destruction realm.

However, as he thought of purchasing heavenly materials, Lin Ming suddenly thought of a very depressing and dispiriting matter. That was....he didn't have any spirit essence stones.

Lin Ming had many treasures on him, such as the Cosmic Melting Furnace, his Demon Emperor Armor, the heaven-step Demon God Bone, and the Concept jade slip that Fairy Feng had left to him. However, it was impossible for him to exchange any of those things for spirit essence stones. None of his other remaining possessions were too valuable either.

When Lin Ming killed Xuan Wuji and the Polar Skysplit Tower master, he had managed to accumulate a good deal of wealth. Relative to his current level, however, all of that wealth was close to nothing at all. Besides, he had already spent most of it anyways.

Now, besides a few heaven-strep treasures left on him, all of his other belongings combined wouldn't even surpass 5000 spirit essence stones.

That was roughly equal to the net worth of an ordinary second stage Life Destruction powerhouse from the four Divine Kingdoms.

All of the spirit essence stones that he once had were completely used up while practicing alchemy without a single return.

Lin Ming considered relying on his alchemy technique to make money, but then decided that it would simply waste too much time. The only reason that he had managed to concoct the Fivefade Void Pill in less than half a year was because he had practiced without caution or care of burning through any of his materials. Only by freely spending all sorts of precious and materials in his practice had he been able to forcefully raise his skill at alchemy.

This sort of practice method would only burn money; it was impossible for him to ever make money.

…………………

Skyflower Province, Blue Cloud City –

Skyflower Province was the smallest of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s nine provinces. However, its prosperity and success was second to only the Central Province. All of the major forces had gathered here within the Skyflower Province’s capital, Blue Cloud City, which was also the headquarters of the Hundred Treasures Auction House. In every square, there were countless treasure pavilions and medicinal pill shops. This city could even be called as being paved with gold.

The majority of the young martial artists strolling down the streets were all outstanding individuals. There were many of them that had reached the Xiantian realm at 20 some years of age and the Revolving Core realm by 30 some years of age.

If this were the South Horizon Region, these individuals could all be called the direct disciples of a large sect.

At the very center of Blue Cloud City was a crowded and bustling restaurant with people flowing in and out. Because this restaurant was close to a large auction house, most of the customers here were martial artists.

Lin Ming wore his wood spirit jade mask and casually sat in a corner of the restaurant as he ordered a few small dishes of various vicious beast meats and spirit vegetables. He lifted the corner of his wood spirit mask and ate at a moderate pace.

At this time, a conversation that several martial artists were having suddenly caught his attention.

“Have you heard of that uproarious news that came out about Lin Lanjian a few days ago?” A 30-40 year old man with a cherry red face said as he took big gulps of wine.

“Who doesn’t know him? With his late Revolving Core cultivation, he was able to kill Corpsemancer and rank on the Destiny Decree. He was named an eternally rare talent!” A big fellow’s words immediately attracted a laugh from all the martial artists around him. He looked back at the drinking man and said, “Are you a foreigner here?”

“Hehe, that’s not what I’m talking about. I’m talking about the most recent news to come out.” The drinking man cleared his throat, gathering everyone’s attention to him. Then, with an air of self-importance he said, “Lin Lanjian’s cultivation method was confirmed to have been stolen from the Asura Divine Kingdom. Additionally, the armor he wore is a sacred treasure of the Asura Divine Kingdom. They had thought that it was lost a long time ago, but it had actually fallen into Lin Lanjian’s hands!”

“What!? Lin Lanjian stole his cultivation method from the Asura Divine Kingdom? Are you sure of this?” The surrounding martial artists were shocked. This was a major event. Whether it was a sect or a Divine Kingdom, their most important treasures were their inheritances. Once these inheritances were leaked to the outside world, then this would cause their very foundation to shake!

This was a matter that any Holy Land or Divine Kingdom would absolutely never tolerate. Thus, to any person that stole their cultivation, there was only a single judgment for them.

That was – death!

“This is absolutely true. It’s said that Lin Lanjian or his master killed some important person from the Asura Divine Kingdom and stole away their spatial ring. This spatial ring contained the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ jade slip!”

“So it’s like that!”

All the surrounding martial artists seemed to believe this, even if just a little. Since the Asura Divine Kingdom said that Lin Lanjian’s cultivation method was stolen from them, then there must be some similarities between Lin Lanjian’s cultivation method and their own. It was impossible for them to make up stories about this sort of matter. Otherwise, if

Lin Lanjian’s cultivation method was completely different from the Asura Divine Kingdom’s ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’, then these rumors would collapse in on themselves after being proven false.

The ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ was a secret inheritance of the Asura Divine Kingdom. No matter how powerful Lin Lanjian or his master was, it would be impossible for them to break into the vaults of the Asura Divine Kingdom and steal away their inheritance. Thus, the only other explanation was that they killed a direct descendent of the Asura Divine Kingdom and then obtained a jade slip of the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’.

Although many martial artists also wanted to do this, this was simply a disgraceful and shameful matter once exposed. Now, all of the present martial artists felt that there was something questionable about Lin Lanjian’s morals. It was likely that he was a corrupt and underhanded individual.

In fact, the majority of martial artists believed this. At least, most of those in this restaurant believed this.

“What’s the deal with that armor that Lin Lanjian wears?” Another martial artist continued to ask.

“That is the Demon Emperor Armor. The Asura Divine Kingdom already has the Demon Emperor Armor’s heartguard mirror, which happens to completely match with Lin Lanjian’s armor! The armor has already been lost for countless years by now, and to think that it actually appeared with Lin Lanjian! There’s definitely some problem with this Lin Lanjian!”

All of the martial artist’s discussion fell into Lin Ming’s ears. He calmly listened the entire time as he slowly ate his food. The Asura Divine Kingdom’s actions were far more shameless than he had imagined they would be. They had released such rumors in order to galvanize more people into looking for him. Another reason for such rumors was to make up some self-righteous reason to take away his belongings.

The general public was much more likely to believe a Divine Kingdom with a ‘long and glorious inheritance’ than they were to believe a lone and unknown martial artist like Lin Ming. After all, the idea that the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ and the ‘Demon Emperor Armor’ belonged to the Asura Divine Kingdom had already deeply rooted itself into the hearts of the people.

“It looks like the Asura Divine Kingdom has already set their eyes on me. They should have posted some bounty on my head.”

Lin Ming sarcastically smiled as he downed a glass of wine.

The words of the surrounding martial artists indeed confirmed Lin Ming’s suspicious.

“The Asura Divine Kingdom would never tolerate for something like this to continue. That Lin Lanjian is really in for it this time.”

“Of course. The warrant for his arrest had already been sent out; it should be posted any time now. It is said that the Asura Divine Kingdom will reward 100,000 spirit essence stones for anyone that can give them clues to Lin Lanjian’s whereabouts. If one can capture Lin Lanjian alive, then they will give them a sky high reward of 300,000 spirit essence stones, top quality pills, and even a peak medium-grade heaven-step treasure!”

The big fellow’s words sent the hearts of all the martial artists present rapidly fluttering. While it was naturally impossible for them to even think about capturing Lin Lanjian alive, there was a small possibility of providing a clue.

100,000 spirit essence stones! This was an unimaginable amount. It had to be known that a slightly less influential Prince, whose cultivation had yet to reach Life Destruction, would only have a total wealth of 40,000-50,000 spirit essence stones.

If they could obtain this amount of wealth, then they could buy up any amount of pills to boost their cultivation. If they lucked out and managed to break through to the second or third stage of Life Destruction, then they could even enjoy at least two thousand years of life.

Chapter 794 – Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division

Chapter 794 – Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division

…

…

…

The temptation of the posted reward was simply too great. Many people wished that they could dig 30 feet underneath themselves to look for Lin Ming, and some dreamed of the luxurious life they could live after obtaining so many spirit essence stones.

At this point, a burst of laughter was emitted in the restaurant hall. The crowd turned see that in a corner of the hall there was a martial artist wearing a black bamboo hat who was pouring himself a drink. There was a four foot long sword placed on his table.

The martial artist didn't look too old, but the fierce spirit he emitted was menacing.

He looked at the big fellow who was spreading the news and said, "Friend, did you say that there was a 300,000 spirit essence stone reward for capturing Lin Lanjian alive, as well as a top-grade pill and a peak medium-grade heaven step treasure? Then, let me ask you, just what sort of top quality pill and what sort of peak medium-grade heaven-step treasure are they?"

The black bamboo hat martial artist's words left everyone astonished. According to his meaning, it was as if he really planned on capturing Lin Lanjian alive. All of the other martial artists here hoped at most to be able to find some clues on Lan Lanjian that would lead to his capture; no one dared to possibly think of capturing him alive. After all, Lin Lanjian was a Destiny Decree master – he could use just his finger to stab them to death.

“It is the God Transforming Pill!”

The big fellow seemed to know a lot of inside information. Lin Ming even suspected that he was one of the Asura Divine Kingdom’s intelligence agents that was specifically responsible for disseminating this news.

“God Transforming Pill?”

As the pill was named, most of the martial artists present had a confused expression, obviously never having heard of it before. However, some of the more knowledgeable martial artists’ eyes widened, an expression of terrible shock flitting through their faces.

“A God Transforming Pill can help a high stage Life Destruction powerhouse attack the Divine Sea. Of course, one can also use it during the lower stages of Life Destruction to solidify their true essence and strengthen themselves to create a better foundation for breaking through to the Divine Sea in the future. But that second method is definitely more wasteful.”

“This is a pill that a top 50 ranked master of the Destiny Decree would go mad with jealousy over. Because swallowing one will greatly increase one’s chances of reaching the Divine Sea, it is thus named the God Transforming Pill!

The big fellow explained with boisterous and flourishing gestures.

This explanation caused all the present martial artists to suck in a deep breath of cold air. This item might not be any less valuable than 300,000 spirit essence stones. In fact, its worth was probably even higher!

Lin Ming drank some wine and pulled his jade spirit mask back down to block his wide taunting sneer. The Asura Divine Kingdom truly had laid down the requisite capital. Even he wanted to report himself.

However, this was also reasonable. Whether it was the deep level inheritance of the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' or the Demon Emperor Armor, both of them were legacy treasures that could drive the royal family insane.

"God Transforming Pill… if I can obtain that, it can help rapidly increase my strength after I reach Life Destruction."

"So it was the God Transforming Pill… good, good, good!" The bamboo hat martial artist bellowed out three 'goods' in a row, as if the God Transforming Pill had been specifically prepared for him. This caused all the other martial artists to feel extremely unhappy. This sort of pill was something that they could never ever dream of reaching, and yet this fellow seemed as if it were easily obtainable for him.

"What are you so happy about? It's as if you think the pill is already yours. You are just far too arrogant. Even if you found Lin Lanjian, do you even think you could capture him alive?"

A martial artist bluntly said. After all, Destiny Decree martial artists weren't some random cabbage off the streets. There were only 360 of them within the entire Sky Spill Continent. In addition, because of others that weren't listed for various reasons, there were about 500 individuals of that approximate level in total.

All of these people were scattered over the incomparably broad continent. However, most of them were concentrated in the four Divine Kingdoms, their various homelands, and headquarters of super sects. He didn't believe that he would randomly bump into a Destiny Decree master in this restaurant.

That would make a Destiny Decree master far too cheap.

"Lin Lanjian managed to rank on the Destiny Decree at an extraordinarily young age. After several more months pass his cultivation might grow again."

"Defeating a master is difficult, killing a master is even harder, and as for capturing one alive, that is another level of trouble altogether. If you want to capture Lin Lanjian alive then you need to be ranked at least 270-280 on the Destiny Decree. That is equal to being a sixth stage Life Destruction master. Do you think you have that strength?”

As someone spoke up first, several other martial artist also chorused in agreement. Many of them weren’t feeling so swell about this bamboo hat martial artist to begin with. Did he really think he was so awesome?

As the bamboo hat martial artist faced all of the surrounding martial artists’ suspicions and doubts, he only sneered in response, not bothering to respond to them and instead only lazily scratching his chin.

At this time, the big fellow’s eyes turned and he asked, “May I ask what your honored name is?”

“Misty Stream Sect, Yan Junxuan!” The bamboo hat martial artist turned his head so that people could finally see his face. He was a very handsome individual, his looks marred only by a scar that flowed down the corner of an eye.

To a high level martial artist, repairing a scar was nothing at all. If a martial artist still had a scar on their face then it was likely intentionally left behind. This scar likely reminded this man of a shameful defeat he had suffered in the past. This proved that the number of times he had been defeated before was also very small. Perhaps it might have only been one or two times, otherwise his face and body would have already been covered with scars.

This sort of person was undoubtedly an astounding young elite.

“I see, so it is the Misty Stream Sect’s Yan Junxuan. It’s an honor, an honor!” The big fellow cupped his fists together and quickly bowed. Yan Junxuan was over 30 years old and his strength was far from being able to rank on the Destiny Decree. However, he represented the Misty Stream Sect, and the Misty Stream Sect had two Destiny Decree masters guarding the sect that ranked 300 and above. For a sect to have one or two Destiny Decree masters, that was already the highest sect underneath the rank of Holy Land.

Of course, this sort of person may be ranked on the Destiny Decree but their rank wouldn't be too high. All of the high ranking Destiny Decree masters belonged to various Holy Lands or the four Divine Kingdoms.

Although the two Destiny Decree masters of the Misty Stream Sect weren't ranked too high, they were actually proficient in trap arrays. Once one was caught within, they wouldn't be able to make their way out for several months. If they combined forces then there was a very high chance of capturing Lin Lanjian alive.

As the big fellow thought of this he said, "Brother Yan, at the border frontier of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom where the Jagged Slope Mountain is, there is a branch division of my Asura Divine Kingdom. If Brother Yan and your masters are interested then you may come to visit. My Asura Divine Kingdom also has three Sir Demon Envoys personally commanding the area and we can put out enough sincerity so that you can help us search for that dastardly Lin Lanjian and recover the inheritance of the Asura Divine Kingdom!"

As the big fellow spoke to here, his identity had already become apparent. He was obviously an intelligence agent sent out by the Asura Divine Kingdom to search for Lin Ming. After all, this was still the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's domain; he would have to be a bit discreet in his actions here. Also, it was impossible for the Asura Divine Kingdom to send their own martial artists to carry out such a search in the lands of another Divine Kingdom. They could only draw support from the local strength in the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom.

"Oh? Three Sir Demon Envoys!" Although Yan Junxuan was arrogant, he was still startled upon hearing the title of Demon Envoy. For someone to be given the title of Demon Envoy basically meant that they were a top 100 ranked master of the Destiny Decree!

The further one went up the Destiny Decree, the greater the disparity in strength was between the martial artists there. In particular, there were several great milestones at rank 300, 200, 100, 50, 30 and 10 – all of those were massive jumps in strength.

A top 100 ranked master was on a completely different level from a top 300 ranked master.

“Hehe, if there are any clues found about Lin Lanjian and the Sir Demon Envoys personally take action, then that is already the same as capturing him.” The big fellow said with a hint of pride.

“Indeed.” Yan Junxuan nodded in acknowledgement, “They could even instantly kill him too.”

“Very well Brother Yan, the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division’s location is at the east end of the Jagged Slope Mountains, 30 miles southwest from Sloping Lake. I hope that Brother Yan and your masters will be able to visit sometime.” The big fellow didn’t conceal the existence of the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division as there was no need to; the existence of this branch division was not a secret. Jagged Slope Mountain was not part of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s territory in any case, and the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division also had three Demon Envoys personally on garrison duty – absolute safety was ensured.

“Great!” Yan Junxuan readily agreed.

In a corner of the hall, Lin Ming quietly left a high-grade true essence stone on the table before slipping out of the restaurant.

No one imagined that the young man who just left was the bounty target of 300,000 spirit essence stones, a peak medium-grade heaven-step treasure, and a God Transforming Pill.

‘Jagged Slope Mountain, Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division, three Demon Envoys… how interesting… that big fellow said that the Asura Divine Kingdom had put out enough ‘sincerity’, I wonder just what that is?’

The so-called ‘sincerity’ was most likely the posted reward. To directly put the reward out would have the greatest visual impact. If one just solely made a promised reward then one couldn’t help but worry that the other party wouldn’t honor their bounty reward at the time.

“Hm, this Jagged Slope Mountain Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division, I too want to go and join in on the fun.”

As Lin Ming thought of this, his feet moved and he quickly flew away from Blue Cloud City.

Jagged Slope Mountain was located at the border frontier of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. It stretched for 4000-5000 feet and the highest point shot up 40,000-50,000 feet into the sky, directly stabbing into the skies.

Here, because there were plenty of rich spirit veins, there were several small martial arts family clans that occupied their own little territories. Of course, the spirit veins they occupied were of a far lower rank than the one lorded over by the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division.

Lin Ming fell down in a beam of light. He stood on a 30,000 feet snowy mountain peak and surveyed the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch that lay a few hundred miles away. “A superior fifth-grade spirit vein, how luxurious!”

For a mere branch division to occupy a superior fifth-grade spirit vein, the legacy of the Divine Kingdom was something that a sect like the South Sea Demon Region could never compete with. It had been said that the Silent Demon Emperor City had also possessed a top ranked spirit vein. However, when the Silent Demon Emperor City was destroyed, several Divine Sea Supreme Elders had used their mighty supernatural powers to shift it away.

“The central lands of the Sky Spill Continent were rich with resources to begin with. And when combined with plundering the surrounding lands for tens of thousands of years, the outer areas of the Sky Spill Continent seem like completely different lands.

“Perhaps the reason the central lands of the Sky Spill Continent are so rich in resources is because of the Sea of Miracles?” Lin Ming suddenly thought of this. This was a true possibility. Otherwise, why would all four Divine Kingdoms revolve around the Sea of Miracles?

“I wonder just what sort of secrets the Sea of Miracles and the Eternal Demon Abyss hold within them.”

As Lin Ming stood on the snowy peak, he saw several black spots rapidly approaching from a distance. These black spots quickly became larger, revealing themselves to be spirit boats that were hundreds of feet long. These spirit boats were being pulled by several flying vicious beasts, all of them headed towards the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division.

And behind these spirit boats, there were also several multi-colored ray of lights cutting through the horizon. These were Revolving Core and Life Destruction masters that were flying forwards.

“It looks like the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division invited many people over.”

Lin Ming leapt down from the snowy mountain peak and stepped on Golden Roc Shattering the Void, leisurely strolling in the air towards the Asura Divine Kingdom.

“I wonder just what sort of sincerity the Asura Divine Kingdom has put forth. My finances have been pretty tight recently. If I could seize this opportunity to grab everything here then that would be perfect.”

As Lin Ming thought of this, he sped up.

Chapter 795 – 300,000 Spirit Essence Stones

Chapter 795 – 300,000 Spirit Essence Stones

…

…

…

The Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division was located on the back of a 30,000 foot high snowy mountain range. The branch division started halfway up the mountainside and built upwards toward the mountain peak. Here, there was plentiful heaven and earth origin energy. With the support of the array formations, various luscious spirit trees and spirit plants grew in maddening luxury, with countless marvelous spirit flowers and spirit grass. And in the higher areas there were snowy peaks capped with white ice that hadn't melted for tens of thousands of years. With these two divergent scenes placed together, it was indeed beautiful to behold.

The Asura Divine Kingdom's architectural style was borrowed from the ancient times. Many buildings here were formed from pure black obsidian, giving off a very heavy feeling.

Lin Ming landed down early and walked right towards the outside of the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division's entrance.

"Halt! Identify yourself!"

Two tall guards blocked Lin Ming's path.

"I am a martial artist of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. I heard that the Divine Kingdom's branch division is offering a generous bounty to any martial artist that can capture the evil man who stole their Divine Kingdom's inheritance. I've come to gain a more specific understanding of the situation."

The two guards looked Lin Ming up and down. Although his late Revolving Core cultivation wasn't too high, it was still pretty decent when compared relative to his young age. They estimated he came from some formidable influence.

If the Asura Divine Kingdom wished to capture Lin Ming within the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom they would have to depend on the local powers of that area. For martial artists like Lin Ming who seemed as if they came from local forces, they could be considered as a guest of the Divine Kingdom's branch division.

"Pull your mask down!" A guard said.

Lin Ming didn't hesitate, immediately pulling off his wood spirit jade mask and revealing an exceedingly ordinary face. This was the appearance Lin Ming had taken after using an appearance changing technique.

Back when Lin Ming was in the Seven Profound Martial House, the Deputy House Master Bi Luo had been a master of appearance changing techniques. Not only he could alter his appearance but also copy a person's voice, temperament, and even their aura. When Lin Ming had strayed into the Southern Wilderness, that was all because Bi Luo had changed into Qin Ziya's appearance without Lin Ming even noticing.

Afterwards, when large scale beast tides erupted throughout the entire Divine Phoenix Province, Lin Ming had rushed to Green Mulberry City to assist them. Bi Luo had been lying in wait there to assassinate Lin Ming, but the end result was that he had been killed by Lin Ming instead with the dreamland enchantment. Bi Luo's special appearance changing technique had also fallen into Lin Ming's hands.

It wasn't known just which ancient ruins this appearance changing technique had originated from, but the rank was quite decent. Although it couldn't be considered too profound an appearance changing technique to the current Lin Ming, it was still more than enough to fool two guards with lower cultivation.

"You may enter."

The guards didn't doubt him. If they really did examine him then it would be easy to discover that there was something off with his appearance. The Asura Divine Kingdom definitely had methods to do this. However, the key was that they never imagined Lin Ming would willingly enter into their Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division.

To him, this was the lair of the tiger. There were three top 100 ranked Destiny Decree masters personally guarding this area as well as several other Destiny Decree masters in attendance. These Destiny Decree masters had come from the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom, and even the Seven Star Divine Kingdom, all of them various heroic elites that had come to capture Lin Ming alive.

Coming here to cause trouble was simply a death wish. Moreover, this area had the support of the Asura Divine Kingdom. Anyone coming here first had to overcome the tremendous hurdle of the Asura Divine Kingdom's name.

After Lin Ming passed through the entrance, he placed his wood spirit jade mask back on again. There were many masters present in this branch division; he didn't believe that his crude appearance changing technique would be able to fool all of them.

As he walked forwards, Lin Ming's steps were extremely slow. He looked around and observed the array formations laid down in the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division. All of these were defensive array formations mostly designed to resist against oncoming enemies. Lin Ming continued observing all the way until he saw the main temple grounds and he finally saw a great large-scale sealing array formation that could cut off everyone inside from the outside.

Once this array formation was activated, it would require some effort to bypass it.

"This sealing formation uses many techniques from the Realm of the Gods. It's extremely clever and the main foundation of this array formation originates from those left behind by the Demon Emperor, such as the array formations used to seal the Eight Dragon Jade Dawn Array and the Demon Emperor's medicine garden… the Asura Divine Kingdom really has inherited a part of the Demon Emperor's legacy."

Lin Ming mumbled to himself. If this array formation had come from a different school of techniques, then it would require a great deal of effort to break through. But since it came from a similar school of techniques, and especially since Lin Ming had a much clearer understanding of the Demon Emperor's array formation techniques, it didn't take him too long to completely see through this array formation. He had full confidence that he would be able to leave once it was activated.

"There shouldn't be a problem with my escape path."

As Lin Ming thought like this, he stepped into the sealing array. Then, from far off, he gradually began to hear the sounds of fighting.

After walking for about an incense stick of time, Lin Ming finally arrived at a great hall. This great hall was entirely black and was shaped like a pagoda. In front of this great hall was an open square and many martial artists were already gathered here.

Most of these martial artists had a cultivation at the Revolving Core realm and above. There were also some Xiantian realm juniors, youths that had likely accompanied their elders to visit here.

These martial artists were all divided into several obvious camps. Every camp had a high stage Life Destruction martial artist leading them. They were clearly from other fifth-grade sects similar to the Misty Stream Sect.

Within the borders of the four Divine Kingdoms, there were numerous fifth-grade sects. They were all led by the four Divine Kingdoms, with a relationship similar to how the Seven Profound Valleys and Divine Phoenix Island were related.

At this time, in the front of the square, two late Revolving Core young martial artists were engaged in a fierce confrontation. Beams of energy smashed into the defensive array, constantly causing brilliant rays of light to shine out. Relative to their age, it was already quite good to be this strong.

The sounds of fighting that Lin Ming had heard before came from here.

‘Why are they fighting?’ Lin Ming was slightly puzzled. He was just about to ask when he noticed that on a high lifted platform not too from the battlefield, there was actually a box of unknown metal there. This box was open and completely filled with stacks of spirit essence stones.

These were impressively – superior spirit essence stones!

Spirit essence stones were only divided into three ranks – ordinary, superior, and top grade.

Top grade spirit essence stones were the very source of spirit essence stone mines; they had nearly completely vanished from the world. It was considered excellent to produce even a single top grade spirit essence stone from an entire spirit essence stone mine. This was a treasure that even Divine Sea Supreme Elders would struggle over.

As for a superior spirit essence stone, each one had a value equal to 300 ordinary spirit essence stones. Superior spirit essence stones had an extremely rich origin energy inherent within them; these types of spirit essence stones had a magnificent effect when used for making breakthroughs in cultivation.

When Lin Ming decided to break through to Life Destruction, it would be safer if he could obtain some superior spirit essence stones. During the breakthrough it would help him absorb heaven and earth origin energy faster and also stabilize his cultivation.

‘There are about 1000 superior spirit essence stones in that box. That is probably the 300,000 spirit essence stone reward that the Asura Divine Kingdom promised!’

300,000 spirit essence stones, and those were proportioned into superior spirit essence stones. If he could obtain that then it would be a massive wealth!

Lin Ming was already thinking about how to rob this wealth when he found that in the main hall, not too far away from the high platform, there was a black-clothed middle-aged man meditating with his eyes closed. When he looked more carefully he could see that this man was floating an inch off of the ground – he was actually suspended in the air.

‘Sixth stage Life Destruction!’

The black-clothed middle-aged man didn’t hide his cultivation, he was clearly at the sixth stage of Life Destruction. Combined with his not too old age, he even had a slim chance of reaching the Divine Sea realm!

Without a doubt, this person was one of the Asura Divine Kingdom’s three Demon Envoys, a character ranked in the top 100 masters of the Destiny Decree!

And floating beside this black-clothed middle-aged man was a half square foot wood spirit jade box. This jade box was surrounded by layers upon layers of seals and a wild Giant Demon image was carved into the grain of the box. Although Lin Ming couldn’t see what was inside, he could already guess what it contained.

That box must contain the God Transforming Pill!

300,000 spirit essence stones and a God Transforming Pill!

Unfortunately, that God Transforming Pill was far too close to the black-clothed middle-aged man. It was extremely unlikely that Lin Ming could hope to steal away that box from such a close range.

‘This Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division also has two more Demon Envoys, but they aren’t in the vicinity. To send out a Demon Envoy to greet these guests is already giving more than enough face.’

As Lin Ming thought this, he turned towards a 20 some year old youth and casually asked, “Why are those two fighting onstage?”

The youth was originally excitedly watching the battle occurring in front of him and didn’t feel too good being disturbed by Lin Ming. He was about to ignore Lin Ming when he saw that Lin Ming’s cultivation was at the late Revolving Core realm. Then, he patiently explained, “They are struggling to rank on a talent list. If the Asura Divine Kingdom wishes to use these fifth-grade sects’ intelligence networks and connections to search for Lin Ming, they naturally have to provide some benefits. Besides posting a bounty reward, they have also promised to cooperate with us in order to cultivate some talents."

The youth pointed towards the high platform. Lin Ming saw that on the high platform, besides the 300,000 ordinary spirit essence stones' worth of superior essence stones, there was also a list. On the list was written the words – superior talent, medium talent, ordinary talent.

There was space left below every rank. It was apparently ready to be filled with names.

As Lin Ming saw these he immediately understood what was happening. Divine Phoenix Island had also once held a similar plan throughout the Divine Phoenix Province – the larger sect would help the smaller sects raise their talent. This wasn't too expensive for the larger sect and the smaller sects actually obtained a great advantage for their future talents. At this time, the young heroic elites were now competing against each other for the title of superior talent.

"What an interesting competition." Lin Ming's lips curved up in a grin. He had come for two reasons today.

The first was to steal, and the second was to mess this place up.

As for provoking the anger of the Asura Divine Kingdom, that was simply a joke. Lin Ming had already been tagged on their kill list anyway. If it wasn't for the fact that so many other heroic young elites were present at the Nine Flowers Banquet, Lin Ming wouldn't have minded killing Situ Chuan and Situ Feng there at all.

At this time, the match onstage had already ended. A short-haired youth holding a saber had won. He laughed out loud and said, "I, Tu Yifeng, will take the title of superior talent!"

As he spoke he leapt onto the high platform and raised a brush, ready to write his own name onto the talent announcement list.

But at this time, a loud jeer spread in the air. “Tu Yifeng, if you want to be ranked first then ask my sword first!”

This rampant voice seemed familiar. Lin Ming glanced around and saw that the bamboo hat youth from the restaurant, Yan Junxuan, was actually here. The one who spoke just now had been him.

It was just that Yan Junxuan had already put his bamboo hat away. The scar still showed at the corner of his eyes, accentuating his arrogant expression.

By Yan Junxuan’s side was a old man with long eyebrows. He was wearing gray clothes and his cultivation was at the fifth stage of Life Destruction. It was obvious that he was the Honorable Master that Yan Junxuan spoke of in the restaurant.

‘This old man’s fire of life is weak; I guess he’s already around 2000 years old. To only be at the fifth stage of Life Destruction at 2000 years of age, he can only be arranged at the end of the Destiny Decree. It’s impossible for him to ever make another breakthrough in his road of martial arts. Since their Misty Stream Sect is involving themselves in this matter then they might be thinking of giving that God Transforming Pill to Yan Junxuan. Heh, no wonder that Yan Junxuan was so arrogant in the restaurant, as if the God Transforming Pill had been specifically prepared for him.’

Chapter 796 – Lin Lanjian

Chapter 796 – Lin Lanjian

…

…

…

Lin Ming silently observed the strength of the current Destiny Decree masters. The conclusion he drew was that besides the three Demon Envoys, the other Destiny Decree martial artists here were extremely ordinary.

“The God Transforming Pill and the 300,000 spirit essence stones are placed apart from each other. The most I’ll be able to grab is just one of them. The God Transforming Pill is too close to the Demon Envoy; I’ll only be able to snatch the spirit essence stones…”

As Lin Ming looked at the box of spirit essence stones on the high platform he discovered that there was actually a small protective array formation surrounding it. There was something like a transparent layer of glass covering the spirit essence stones.

However, this array formation had only been casually laid down. With Lin Ming’s current strength and degree of understanding into array formations, breaking through it wouldn’t be difficult at all.

Bluntly said, this array formation was simply placed there for grandstanding. The Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division would never even dream that someone would openly and blatantly steal from them at their gathering site.

The only one capable of doing so was a top ranked Destiny Decree master, otherwise stealing from here would simply be the same as a death sentence. But, which ranked Destiny Decree master would dare to provoke the wrath of the Asura Divine Kingdom?

Lin Ming didn’t care about any of that. He and the Asura Divine Kingdom had already reached the point of never giving up until the other party had died.

Even if Lin Ming was willing to hand over the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ and the Demon Emperor Armor, the Asura Divine Kingdom would still chase him down so that he couldn’t reveal any secrets to anyone else. They would even use a soul searching technique to confirm whether his cultivation method was true or fake.

Moreover, the main point was that it was impossible for Lin Ming to give away the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’. The Asura Divine Kingdom assumed Lin Ming had obtained some jade slip inheritance, but the truth was that Lin Ming had obtained the memories of the Demon Emperor. If he wanted to engrave the cultivation method manual onto a jade slip then first he would need to completely and thoroughly understand the cultivation method in order to do so.

Otherwise, Lin Ming would have already recorded the ‘Heretical God Force’ for Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu to train with.

At this point, a loud explosion erupted from the front of the square. Yan Junxuan had sent his opponent flying backwards, vomiting great mouthfuls of blood.

An old man flew out from the crowd, catching that severely wounded young elite and then glowering at Yan Junxuan.

Yan Junxuan appeared unaware of all of this. He only said, “This is a comparison of skill; serious injuries are oftentimes inevitable.”

“Humph!” The old man coldly snorted and fed several pills to the severely wounded disciple. Since his disciple was weaker than others, there was nothing else to say.

“This Yan Junxuan really lives up to his fame. He should be the top talent of my Skyflower Province’s younger generation!”

"Humph, that is only the number one talent of the Skyflower Province. There is still an immeasurable difference between them and the talents of the Central Province, let alone a monstrous genius like Lin Lanjian." In the square, a martial artist couldn't bear to see Yan Junxuan act so domineering and haughty, so he began to mock him.

"That's right, Lin Lanjian is around the same age as Yan Junxuan and yet he's already ranked on the Destiny Decree!"

A disciple from another sect shouted from under the stage.

"Lin Lanjian? Hehe..." Yan Junxuan sneered. "Lin Lanjian is only a stepping stone on my road of martial artists. Who cares about how talented he is? Once he is captured by my Misty Stream Sect, he is simply a God Transforming Pill to improve my strength. As for the Destiny Decree, once I have obtained the God Transforming Pill then I will inevitably rank on the list in another two years!"

"What a load of crap. You think your Misty Stream Sect can even catch Lin Lanjian?"

"Humph! Since my Misty Stream Sect dares to say so then we naturally have secret techniques to locate missing persons! Even though I wouldn't say it is 90% assured, it is still 60-70% assured! History only remembers winners. When I succeed, I will be recorded in the annals of history. As for Lin Lanjian, he will be nothing but a brief fading comet, quickly forgotten by everyone!"

Yan Junxuan's words were filled with complete confidence. Combined with his aura that proved he had the qualifications to speak, none of the other juniors dared to step forwards to confront him. As for the seniors here, they naturally couldn't lower their status by jabbing themselves into the struggles of juniors. Quickly, the entire gathering site had been pressured by Yan Junxuan alone.

"Is there anyone else who disagrees!?"

Yan Junxuan shouted out loud. For a time, there was no response.

Yan Junxuan was very satisfied with his results. He strode towards the talent announcement on the high platform, preparing to write his name down. But at this moment, he suddenly heard the sound of fluttering clothes from behind him. A blue-clothed man wearing a mask of wood spirit jade had flown onto the stage set up in the square.

This person was Lin Ming.

Yan Junxuan frowned and placed down the brush in his hands. “There really is someone unafraid of death here.”

His eyes paused on Lin Ming’s wood spirit jade mask for a moment. He quickly remembered that Lin Ming was the martial artist that had been quietly sitting in the corner of the restaurant.

It wasn’t rare to see a martial artist wear a wood spirit jade mask, but there were differences in every mask. Lin Ming’s mask had a touch of black above the eyes. This allowed Yan Junxuan to recognize him.

Yan Junxuan lightly humphed, not even placing Lin Ming in his eyes. In his opinion, Lin Ming was just a martial artist that had stumbled onto the news of the reward. This fellow was simply a blind cat hoping to catch a mouse. He thought he could come to the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division and hope to randomly find clues about Lin Ming somehow. Then, when he saw this talent training plan, his blood had heated up for a moment. This sort of person was only looking to get beaten up.

“Who are you? Name yourself!”

“Mushuang Family Clan, Mushuang Jian.” Lin Ming randomly made up a background and name. In such an incomparably vast Sky Spill Continent, there were far too many family clans and even many family clans hidden away in their own mystic realms and territories. It was impossible to know of every family clan.

Yan Junxuan sized up Lin Ming. Although this person’s facial features were blocked, from what he could see and from the tenor of his voice, this person should be relatively young.

“What is the Mushuang Family Clan? I’ve never heard of it!”

“There are many family clans you’ve never heard of.” Lin Ming calmly replied. He wasn’t much interested in this fight that was no different from slapping little children around. To the current him, he was on a completely different level from the young juniors of his generation.

“Hahahaha! How interesting! Very interesting! A boy from a little known family clan actually dares to be so arrogant in front of me. Then, let me teach you a lesson. Meet my sword!”

Woosh!

With a shrill keening sound, Yan Junxuan’s sword pierced towards Lin Ming’s face. Lin Ming took a step back. In front of the Asura Divine Kingdom powerhouses he naturally couldn’t use moves such as Penetrating Rainbow or Bury the Heavens. Otherwise, they would be able to see that his moves shared origins with the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’.

Besides those moves, Lin Ming also had the ‘Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle’ as well as the body transformation cultivation method, the ‘Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians’. Although the striking power was weaker, it was more than enough to deal with a little baby like Yan Junxuan. In fact, Lin Ming didn’t even need to use any special style to defeat him with ease.

Stepping to the side, Lin Ming lowered his center of gravity and then moved forwards.

Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!

True essence concentrated into filaments of thread. Lin Ming punched out, energy cascading outwards!

Peng!

With a loud explosion, Yan Junxuan's sword energy was scattered into nothingness by Lin Ming's fist. Lin Ming's fist potential didn't diminish at all, smashing straight towards Yan Junxuan.

"What!?"

Yan Junxuan was greatly shocked. He cut down with his sword again, hoping to split apart Lin Ming's fist force. In fact, Yan Junxuan's sword speed was quite spectacular. In front of an incoming enemy he was able to immediately cut out with a second attack.

However, in the face of an absolute disparity in strength, small advantages like this were negligible.

Vibrating true essence erupted. For a time, it was like Yan Junxuan was a leaf caught in a storm of energy, unable to resist at all.

Puff!

Spitting out a mouthful of blood, Yan Junxuan was sent flying backwards by Ln Ming's punch. True essence rampaged through his body, injuring all of the organs in his body and destroying his meridians!

Lin Ming continued to attack. He took a sudden step forwards and punched out again. He had held back on his first punch so that he wouldn't harm Yan Junxuan's life, but this second punch was to demonstrate just how ruthless and cruel he could be. This was to have those little children milling around him open their eyes so that no one dared to challenge him anymore.

"Stop!"

Yan Junxuan's master shouted. But, he didn't have time to prevent Lin Ming's attack. The second punch solidly smashed into Yan Junxuan's back, and with a loud cracking noise, all of Yan Junxuan's bones were fractured. He vomited a massive mouthful of blood and then fainted on the spot.

After this strike, even if Yan Junxuan's master used all sorts of top heavenly treasures to save him, it would still take him at least half a year to recover. Moreover, there would still be damage left behind!

This silly fellow had desired to capture him alive to trade him for a God Transforming Pill in order to make a breakthrough. Lin Ming wouldn't pity someone like this. If it wasn't for the fact that killing him would have set off a storm of chaos here, Lin Ming wouldn't have minded sending him off to an early start on the road to hell.

"You!!!"

As Yan Junxuan's master saw his own disciple beaten to a pulp in front of his eyes, he was furious. If this wasn't the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division then he would have already ripped Lin Ming to shreds.

"Haha, Sovereign Yan, don't be so angry. This is a comparison of skill – serious injuries are oftentimes inevitable!" An Elder from another sect sarcastically remarked. When Yan Junxuan had severely wounded his last opponent, Sovereign Yan had spoken these exact words. And the person that Yan Junxuan had severely wounded was his disciple.

To be able to speak such words and release the frustration in his heart, his thoughts had become incomparably smooth.

"Good! Good! Very good!" The Misty Stream Sect Sovereign said with an extremely cold voice. In his heart, he had already sentenced this Mushuang Jian and his Mushuang Family Clan to death. As long as this family clan was no more than a basic fifth-grade sect then he would have them pay the most painful price.

"Would anyone else like to come onstage?"

Lin Ming indifferently said as he stood on top of the stage. The wood spirit jade mask covered up any expression he made. Those two strange black marks that angled down above his eyes began to look like black snakes that exuded thick killing intent, causing everyone who looked to shudder.

No one dared to respond. This youth was simply sadistic and his strength was so high that it was a complete mess. If anyone stepped on stage… well, Yan Junxuan had already become their example!

Lin Ming had expected this situation to occur. He began moving towards the high platform, openly stepping towards the 300,000 spirit essence stones. This was the entire reason that Lin Ming had bothered ruining Yan Junxuan. It was because he needed to approach this area first.

He picked up the thickest and roughest brush available. At the same time, Lin Ming's eyes nonchalantly swept over the array formation that covered the 300,000 spirit essence stones. In that instant, the countless complex symbols that comprised the array formation reflected in his pupils as he rapidly deconstructed them.

All of the martial artists present were completely focused on Lin Ming's body.

The Asura Divine Kingdom's Demon Envoy slightly frowned. He felt something was wrong but he just couldn't place his finger on what it was.

Lin Ming dipped the two foot long brush fully into the ink. Then, his brush movements flowed like the wind.

In the blink of an eye, three words filled with a thick murderous intent suddenly appeared like a flash of lightning on the surface of the talent announcement list.

Lin Lanjian!

As the word 'jian' was finally completed with a long vertical stroke, because of the daring spirit and powerful strength contained within, the brush seemed to become like a true sword, directly splitting the talent announcement list in half!

simply placed there for grandstanding. The Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division would never even dream that someone would openly and blatantly steal from them at their gathering site.

Chapter 797 – Robbery

Chapter 797 – Robbery

…

…

…

The entire square was left in silence. Yan Junxuan was still lying bleeding on the ground as several Misty Stream Sect Elders were glaring at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's brush speed was too fast. As soon as the words appeared they seemed to tear through the talent announcement list paper, carrying a sharp spear intent with them.

Every martial artist present was shocked.

"Lin… Lin Lanjian!!!!"

Some martial artists were befuddled for a moment. But in that instant, a light flashed in Lin Ming's hand and a red long spear rushed out like a crimson flood dragon, directly striking the weak point of the spirit essence stone box's barrier shield!

Penetrating Rainbow!

Energy roared. With an explosive crackling sound, the entire barrier shattered to pieces!

This explosion finally caused everyone's minds to be shaken out of their daze. This wood spirit jade-masked youth was actually Lin Lanjian! And the red spear he used as well as the spear move absolutely proved this point.

He was planning to raise a ruckus at the gathering site?

The Demon Envoy who was personally garrisoning this square was furious. The chair he sat on broke apart as he stood up and fired himself towards Lin Ming.

The other Asura Divine Kingdom martial artists rapidly blocked the area, wanting to capture Lin Ming. Although they were far from being Lin Ming's match, they could still manage to delay him a bit.

In this heavy encirclement of danger, a mere finger snap of time was enough to take one's life!

Facing the trained and coordinated response of the Asura Divine Kingdom's martial artists, Lin Ming simply seemed unaware of it all. He grabbed the box of spirit essence stones and stuffed it into his spatial ring.

"You dare!?!?"

The Demon Envoy's eyes turned bright red. He finally understood that the reason Lin Ming came here today was to rob them!

The Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division had a total of three Demon Envoys guarding the land as well as Elders and masters from various famous sects of the four Divine Kingdoms. Yet, underneath all of these personages' eyes, Lin Lanjian actually dared to openly rob the reward they had posted!?!?

The Demon Envoy simply thought that Lin Lanjian had lost his mind. This was a suicidal action!

"If you want to die so badly then let me help you!"

The Asura Demon Envoy took out a 10 foot long overlord spear from his spatial ring. He gripped the spear with both hands and smashed it down towards Lin Ming!

This Demon Envoy's strength was ranked 83 on the Destiny Decree. Against Lin Ming, who was only ranked near the end of the Destiny Decree, he could definitely instantly kill him!

The Demon Envoy's spear strike came tumbling down as if an entire mountain range was collapsing. A terrifying flux of energy tore through space. If Lin Ming was struck by this spear attack then he would definitely be split in half.

A Revolving Core realm martial artist who was split apart at the waist could still maintain their life as long as they were treated in time. The Asura Demon Envoy planned to capture Lin Ming alive and torture out all of the details from him that concerned the Demon Emperor's inheritances.

Lin Ming stared blankly on as the Demon Envoy's spear came smashing down on him. This spear's power and might far exceeded Lin Ming's own Bury the Heavens and its speed had reached an incredible degree.

This was the strength of a top 100 ranked Destiny Decree master.

Lin Ming's lips curved up in a grin. Energy erupted from his knees; the Gate of Wonder opened!

Breaking through the limits of the body and instantly reached the limit of speed, Lin Ming's feet twisted as space distorted underneath him. With a single step, Lin Ming had vanished like a puff of smoke.

Although Lin Ming couldn't directly face the Demon Envoy, after he had opened the Gate of Wonder, he could rely on his speed alone to show disdain for the Destiny Decree!

Bang!

The Asura Demon Envoy's spear crashed into the high platform, causing the entire structure to loudly crumble into nothing. The earth broke apart and all of the surrounding martial artists were sent flying away by the shockwave. Those with weaker cultivations spat out great mouthfuls of blood.

And at this time, Lin Ming had already reappeared 1000 feet away.

The Asura Demon Envoy's spear had missed.

He couldn't believe it. His spear had missed!?

Not only had his spear speed reached the limit but it also contained the Concept of Space. It could be used to twist and lock down the surrounding space. Yet, his attack had actually been dodged by a mere late Revolving Core martial artist!?

This was not a speed that a Revolving Core martial artist could have!

This ghostly scene caused the Asura Demon Envoy's heart to seethe with rage. He shouted out, "Stop him! Open the sealing array!"

At the moment the Asura Demon Envoy shouted out, three Asura Divine Kingdom martial artists shot towards Lin Ming. Two of them were impressively Life Destruction martial artists.

"Die!"

Lin Ming coldly spat out that single word. And, without even using a spear move, three arrows of battle spirit-infused true essence air shot out from Lin Ming's mouth, directly colliding with the three Asura Divine Kingdom martial artist's heads!

Peng! Peng! Peng!

With three loud bursting sounds, the three Asura Divine Kingdom martial artists' heads blew apart like watermelon, their brain fluids showering into the air.

"What!?"

All of the heroic young elites present held their breath, unable to even think properly. They only felt their minds tremble. Of those three Asura Divine Kingdom martial artists, two of them were first stage Life Destruction martial artists that were absolutely not inferior to any of them. Yet, in front of Lin Lanjian, they had been nothing but ants. They had been shot to death by nothing but true essence air arrows!

In other words, if Lin Lanjian wanted to kill them, he would only need to breathe in their general direction. And the reason that he didn't kill Yan Junxuan with a single breath just now was all in order to hide his strength.

This disparity couldn't even be described by clouds and mud. This was the first time that any of them had encountered a talent that was terrifying to the extent of making them tremble with dismay. This was a strength that left everyone weeping in despair!

"You bastard!"

The Demon Envoy angrily shouted and thrust his spear towards Lin Ming. He revolved his true essence to the limit, completely opening all of his energy. With every step he took, mountains quaked and rivers surged!

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

Massive five foot deep footprints appeared all over the entire square. All of these footprints were several feet wide and they sent countless shards of rock scattering into the air. All of the martial artists in the square were blown away like pieces of straw in a tornado, thrown out in all directions.

The Demon Envoy had only used his movement technique, but the dark energy hidden in the shockwaves was already enough to severely wound the weaker martial artists.

Lin Ming heard the sound of air splitting from behind him. He didn't need to look back to know that the Asura Demon Envoy was chasing after him. He thought little of it, instead completely opening the Gate of Wonder. In addition, with the ethereal and exquisite 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void', his speed rapidly climbed to the extreme.

Woosh!

Lin Ming became a ray of light that cut through the vast horizon, crossing over a dozen miles in an instant. All of the martial artists still at the square were left dumbfounded.

Was this really speed that a human could possess?

Rumble rumble!

The sealing array formation that covered the entire Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division began to activate. But to Lin Ming, this large-scale array formation had started far too slowly.

Moreover, he had already found a great weak point in this massive array. Since this array also originated from the Demon Emperor's inheritance, Lin Ming had been able to easily unravel it.

"Penetrating Rainbow!"

With a thrust, Lin Ming's spear stabbed into the weak point of the just now activated array. With a loud tearing sound, a section of the array dozens of feet wide suddenly burst open in front of him, allowing him to run out with ease.

"You lunatic!"

A loud shout came from somewhere else in the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division, rumbling outwards like a passing thundercloud.

The two other Demon Envoys also joined the chase!

In broad daylight, under the watchful eyes of everyone, as well as with three Asura Divine Kingdom Demon Envoys personally guarding the branch division, Lin Ming had actually made his way in and stolen away 300,000 spirit essence stones. This was too disgraceful!

Once news of this spread out, their Asura Divine Kingdom would lose face!

“We must overtake him!”

“We have to obtain the Demon Emperor’s inheritance!”

“After searching his soul, turn him into a corpse doll and hang him atop the gates of our Divine Kingdom’s cities! Let them see the glory and might of our Asura Divine Kingdom!”

“No one is allowed to dishonor the glory of our Divine Kingdom!”

The three Demon Envoys all wore black clothes. Their hearts raged with an inferno of hate and anger. Even if they caught Lin Ming today, this would still become a stain on their lives that they would never be able to erase!

One person fleeing with three people chasing. They cut through the skies like falling stars, flying into the far off horizon!

Within the square, the martial artists there were bewildered. Although Lin Lanjian’s name and reputation rang out like thunder in their ears, seeing was believing. They never imagined that Lin Lanjian would appear in the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division and openly challenge the very dignity of the Asura Divine Kingdom!

A man and his spear, Lan Lanjian by himself had demolished the Asura Divine Kingdom’s gathering of heroes, stolen away 300,000 spirit essence stones, instantly killed three Asura Divine Kingdom masters, and then… left without injury!

Just what kind of boldness was this!!!

In the face of an entire Divine Kingdom hunting after him, Lin Lanjian hadn’t hidden his identity and secluded himself in some remote mountain range. Instead, he had caused a ruckus in the Asura Divine Kingdom’s Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division!

“This Lin Lanjian is too terrifying!”

“He looks just over 20 years old and yet he can contend with a Demon Envoy…”

"And when he fled, was that even human speed…?"

"Even the mountain sealing array formation wasn't able to stop him. He cannot be judged by common sense!"

"What a monster!"

All of the martial artists in the square were talking amongst themselves. Many of the heroic young elites had pale and weak complexions. Compared with Lin Lanjian, the difference was simply too great!

"What do we do? Should we still involve ourselves in this?" Some martial artists already had the idea of withdrawing. Lin Lanjian was far too ruthless for them. He had even dared break his way into the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division that was guarded by three Demon Envoys.

"Don't be afraid, that Lin Lanjian is only fast; his strength should still only rank at around 300 on the Destiny Decree. That, at least, shouldn't be wrong. Otherwise he wouldn't have run, but would have fought with the Demon Envoy!"

"If we join forces then we have no need to fear him. We also have many Destiny Decree masters here, and many of them are even above Corpsemancer. Moreover, we have the support of the Asura Divine Kingdom. After Lin Lanjian messed with the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division, the bounty on him will definitely rise again!"

"The Asura Divine Kingdom had their face swept to the ground and even had 300,000 spirit essence stones stolen away. They will never let this go."

"Although you say that, I don't think that Lin Lanjian will be able to successfully run away. Those are three Demon Envoys chasing him! Lin Lanjian's speed is extraordinary but his strength and cultivation are far too low. Even if he relies on some sort of arcane skill or treasure to momentarily match the three Demon Envoys in speed, he won't be able to keep it up forever. There is no way his endurance and thickness of his true essence will be able to last much longer. As for those three Demon Envoys, all three of them are sixth stage Life Destruction masters!”

“Not wrong. Perhaps that Lin Lanjian will perish here at Jagged Slope Mountain today. Although his cultivation and strength are amazing, he is still far too young. He will pay the price for his impulsiveness!”

As the numerous martial artists with the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division were speaking, Lin Ming’s chase by the three Demon Envoys had already continued for several hundred miles!

With the speed from the Gate of Wonder combined with ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’, Lin Ming produced a sonic boom as he flew in the air. He also used the black bat wings that Corpsemancer had left behind. Before this, Lin Ming had roughly managed to alter them for his own use. After all, this was still a heaven-step flight treasure. It could definitely increase Lin Ming’s speed.

With all three of these factors combined together, Lin Ming was a level faster than the three Demon Envoys. But, he controlled his speed so that the three Demon Envoys were following behind him.

Behind Lin Ming, just 10 miles away, the three Demon Envoys’ faces had darkened to the point of dripping water.

Chapter 798 – Unbelievable Speed

Chapter 798 – Unbelievable Speed

…

…

…

“This brat, how is this even possible!?”

The three Demon Envoys were running out of breath. They thought that Lin Ming used some kind of arcane ability that stimulated his bodily potential in order reach such extreme speeds. Those arcane abilities usually caused a few detrimental side effects, and were also impossible to maintain forever. However, Lin Ming didn’t seem like he had used up any strength at all, even after flying for such a long time. In fact, he seemed to have a great deal of energy left over. It also seemed that the more he flew, the faster he became! This was just too strange!

1000 miles….

2000 miles….

3000 miles…

4000 miles…

Once they reached 5000 miles, Lin Ming still hadn’t slowed down, even after passing over the entire Jagged Slope Mountain Range.

“Damn it! What should we do?”

The third Asura Demon Envoy asked. He was a middle-aged man, ranked 93rd on the Destiny Decree. He currently had a pained expression as he took a shard of stalactite essence from his spatial ring, bitterly swallowing it down.

“We’ve already flown for around 5000 miles, and yet he can still last this long!?” Another Demon Envoy took a jade bottle out from his spatial ring and swallowed a snow white pill.

“We’ve already consumed our true essence to the limit. His cultivation is inferior to ours, so it’s impossible for him to continue flying for much longer.”

The one who spoke was the leading second Demon Envoy, his words filled with self-confidence. He was ranked 83rd on the Destiny Decree.

However, what happened was….

6000 miles….

7000 miles…

It seemed as if Lin Ming wanted to fly out to a 10,000 mile distance. Not only that, but the more he flew, the faster he became! The first Demon Envoy had blue veins bulging out from his forehead.

This was simply impossible!

They had already flown an additional 2000 miles! This could already be considered as having flown far away, even with their standards….

The second Demon Envoy’s complexion turned extremely ugly. Just what sort of secrets did this Lin Lanjian have on him? Why was he able to flee so quickly, and for such a long time?

Another 1000 miles flew by as everyone approached the 8000 mile mark. Lin Ming stlil maintained a relatively relaxed state throughout.

A flying martial artist was the same as a running mortal. If they ran at their top speeds, then they would only be able to last for about 100-200 meters before falling the ground in complete exhaustion.

However, if they maintained 70-80% of their maximum speed, then they could maintain this for several miles.

Lin Ming was in the same situation. He was maintaining a flight speed of around 70-80% of his limit. After crossing 8000 miles, his consumption wasn't too great. Furthermore, because he had already opened the Gate of Healing, his endurance and recovery ability had since far surpassed a normal martial artist. Thus, there was always an enormous amount of true essence in his dantian.

However, the three Demon Envoys behind him were in a much more miserable state. For the past 8000 miles, they had to fly as fast as they could, and the further they flew the more they fell behind. The third Demon Envoy had already consumed his third shard of stalactite essence.

"Don't continue chasing." The second Demon Envoy suddenly stopped. At the start of the chase, they had only been 10 miles far from Lin Lanjian. Now, they were over 100 miles away!

They had also taken several medicines to supplement their true essence. No matter how good the medicine was, repeatedly consuming these medicines would eventually cause impurities to appear in their true essence. If that happened, they would be unable to display their peak combat strength. To be in that sort of situation within the borders of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom was undoubtedly dangerous.

"This Lin Lanjian must have some sort of top supportive flight treasure or some kind of special arcane flight ability. He might even have both." The second Demon Envoy said with a gloomy tone.

For a late Revolving Core youth to surpass a sixth stage Life Destruction master in speed and endurance, this was simply too unbelievable!

“Damnit! Just how many amazing treasures are there on his body!?” The first Demon Envoy panted out. He had used up so much strength and effort, and had chased so far, just to end up empty-handed. Under their watch, they had only been able to watch helplessly as that Lin Lanjian stole away 300,000 spirit essence stones. This was simply too great a shame, and he could already see the news of this event spreading all through the martial cultivation world by tomorrow. The four Divine Kingdoms and all the powerful family clans in their hidden realms would regard them as absolute laughing stocks.

“I will capture that brat and skin him alive!”

The third Demon Envoy heatedly said. As he thought of the 300,000 spirit essence stones, he felt as if he would die from his intestines twisting in place.

There had been many rare, superior spirit essence stones worth 300,000 spirit essence stones in total. Even he couldn’t afford to use them during his training. He would only cautiously use a few dozen of those superior spirit essence stones if he was either breaking through a bottleneck in cultivation or attempting to cross over to another stage of Life Destruction..

To shamefully lose 300,000 spirit essence stones just like that, the three of them would definitely take the blame for this. They would definitely be punished by the Asura Divine Kingdom!

“Let’s meditate for some time and then return. There was no harvest from today, but I’ve managed to record a trace of Lin Lanjian’s energy. Even if he were to wear a wood spirit jade mask next time, I would still be able to identify him!” The second Demon Envoy said with a morose expression, before searching for a secluded area to meditate and recover.

They had already flown 8000 miles outwards. This area was desolate and deserted, without any transmission arrays nearby. If they wished to return, then they would have to slowly fly back. As the three Demon Envoys remembered this fact, they became even more depressed, and their expressions became that much uglier.

"They've finally stopped chasing me."

300 miles away from the three Demon Envoys, Lin Ming's stood suspended in the air, his lips turned upwards in a cunning smile. Although those three Demon Envoys had consumed a great deal of their energy, he wouldn't be so stupid as to bite off more than he could chew, and challenge the three of them. Those three were still sixth stage Life Destruction powerhouses, after all, and the fires of their lives were still blazing vibrantly. These were characters that had hopes of reaching the Divine Sea. When they were youths, they were definitely Emperor level talents, and outstanding ones at that. Even if only one remained, Lin Ming still wouldn't dare return to provoke them. At this time, he just fundamentally wasn't a match for them.

……

Jagged Slope Mountain, Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division –

"That Lin Lanjian was way too impetuous. I wonder just what's happened to him. Unfortunately, this entire Jagged Slope Mountain has been sealed off, so there's no way for us to catch up to him."

"No kidding. It's too unfortunate, we missed a great battle!"

"Hehe, sealing off this mountain is common, as Lin Lanjian is just that important. There are too many treasures on his body; he is simply a treasure himself. Before he is caught, no news of this can be leaked out to others. Otherwise someone might catch up to him ahead of time, and the Asura Divine Kingdom would lose everything instead."

The Elders of the various great sects were talking about whether or not Lin Lanjian would finally meet a dead end. At this time, however, three black-clothed men walked into the square. One of them was an old man who was in charge of the Asura Divine Kingdom's Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division.

The Asura Divine Kingdom had several dozen branch divisions set up all over the Sky Spill Continent. The leader of a branch division was called the Hall Master. Because there were too many Hall Masters scattered throughout the continent, their status wasn't considered too high.

However, the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division was an exception. Because the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division was in charge of matters within the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, their branch division was one of the largest. This branch division's Hall Master was just strong enough to rank on the Destiny Decree. Of course, he was far from being able to compare with the Demon Envoys.

"Hall Master Situ!"

Several old men cupped their fists together in respect. They naturally recognized Hall Master Situ, due to frequently interacting with the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division.

Hall Master Situ cupped his fists in return and said, "Everyone, please remain patient. My Divine Kingdom's Sir Demon Envoys are already pursuing Lin Ming. They should be able to capture him without incident.

As he spoke, he was also glad that the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division had three Demon Envoys garrisoning this place. Otherwise, there was no way that he could contend with Lin Lanjian. He simply couldn't keep up with that strange, ghostly speed of his.

"As long as we can catch Lin Lanjian, then the matter of 300,000 spirit essence stones being stolen away in front of everyone, and the loss of face from that will be wiped clean. This could also be considered a great merit for me, as this gathering of heroes could be my rise to glory."

As Hall Master Situ thought of this, his mood became much more pleasant.

Chapter 799 – Sudden Retaliation

Chapter 799 – Sudden Retaliation

…

…

…

“The entire Jagged Slope Mountain has been closed off and completely sealed away by the array formation here. Thus, I ask of everyone to please patiently wait for a period of time… do not try to leave. Once the three Sir Demon Envoys return, everyone will be able to freely depart.”

As Hall Master Situ spoke, he quietly lifted up the array formation that protected the God Transforming Pill. Then, he put the God Transforming Pill and the medium-grade heaven-step treasure that was on display back into his spatial ring. As he looked around at all the martial artists and saw that none of them seemed bothered by the situation, he nodded with satisfaction.

In an emergency, blocking off the area was the standard procedure. Since this area had the protection of the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division and the might of the Asura Divine Kingdom behind it, no one dared to utter a complaint.

“The sudden events have certainly caused everyone to be shocked and lose time. After Lin Lanjian has been captured, the Asura Divine Kingdom will be sure to compensate everyone here,” Hall Master Situ promised everyone. If they could catch Lin Lanjian then that would be a massive stroke of fortune for the Asura Divine Kingdom. Naturally, no one would care about some minor compensation such as continuing to carry out the cooperative talent training plan.

“Haha, Hall Master Situ is too kind. We shall defer to your recommendation. If there is any assistance you need from us in the future, the Asura Divine Kingdom merely needs to say it and we’ll try our best!”

All of the famed Elders of the various sects flattered Hall Master Situ. Then, time ticked on. Like this, four hours soon passed by…

….

“Nearly four hours have passed, how come they haven’t returned yet?” Hall Master Situ’s eyebrows shot up. He felt a bit nervous in his heart.

“No matter how much of a genius Lin Lanjian is, he is only a top 300 Destiny Decree martial artist. With the strength of the three Demon Envoys they should be able to capture him. Unless he made some preparations beforehand, such as laying down protective arrays or setting up transmission arrays to escape in time…”

“Impossible. If Lin Lanjian laid down a temporary transmission array, then it shouldn’t be too far. Otherwise, it’d be meaningless. In that case, he’d have either already left through it and escaped or he would’ve been captured by now. It’s impossible for things to drag on for this long.”

“Hall Master Situ, it’s been four hours and Lin Lanjian still hasn’t been captured? When will the great mountain sealing array be lifted up?” A sect Elder asked. Four hours were indeed a long time.

Although Hall Master Situ was cursing in his heart, his face actually revealed a smile full of confidence. “Haha, my Asura Divine Kingdom’s three Demon Envoys are all top 100 Destiny Decree masters. When the three of them act together, there definitely won’t be a problem! The great mountain sealing array will soon be undone. I ask of everyone to please show patience a little while longer.

Once the great mountain sealing array was activated, all flow of information would be isolated, even that of the Asura Divine Kingdom. Moreover, even if they could, Hall Master

Situ still wouldn’t rashly bother them. Who knew whether or not they were involved in a brutal fight at this very moment?

“What Hall Master Situ said is right. Elder Sun shouldn’t worry so much. Come, sit down and have a cup with us.”

This gathering of heroes had brought the Elders and outstanding young elites of various great sects together. There was naturally excellent food and wine prepared for all of them. All of it had already been placed on the tables in the square, it was just that no one had had the time to enjoy it yet.

“That’s right, everyone, drink to your heart’s content!” Hall Master Situ laughed out while a radiant and confident smile emblazoned on his face. “Lin Lanjian has stolen the holy relics of my Asura Divine Kingdom and also the inheritances of my people. If we can truly recover our lost legacies today, then I must thank all the Elders here for their help. I respectfully raise a cup to everyone present!”

As he raised his cup of wine and was about to drink it all at once, great ripples suddenly began to run through the great mountain sealing array barrier.

The array got opened?

Hall Master Situ was overjoyed. If there were people on the outside, then it should mean that the three Demon Envoys had returned.

“Hahaha, everyone, the three Sir Demon Envoys have already returned. I shall go and meet with them first before coming back here!”

His face was filled with smiles. The audience all shouted their congratulations but there were also some people that appeared disappointed. If the three Demon Envoys hadn’t caught Lin Lanjian, then that would’ve been better. The bounty reward would have dramatically soared at that time, and if they then joined forces and managed to catch Lin Lanjian, they would have gained even more.

Hall Master Situ just took several steps out when the entire great mountain sealing array shook once again. The scale of energy had obviously risen to another level but there still wasn't a response. Another loud explosion followed, nearly causing the cup of wine in his hand to fall to the ground.

What was going on?

Hall Master Situ was startled. All of the martial artists present were also stunned. Were the three Demon Envoys attacking the great mountain sealing array?

All of the martial artists felt that this was a bit suspicious. They simultaneously released their perception together to look through the curtains that blocked off the grand temple grounds. Like this, they finally saw the scene occurring outside of the great mountain sealing array.

A white-clothed youth wearing a wood spirit jade mask was holding onto a red long spear, launching a barrage of attacks on the great mountain sealing array!

One spear thrust after the other smashed into the array barrier! Every spear strike caused the ground to shake! Every spear strike caused the entire Jagged Mountain Slope to tremble!

This shocking scene sharply contrasted to the seemingly calm young man that was attacking the array barrier. The twin marks on his wood spirit jade mask seemed quiet and eerie. An air of seeming indifference rolled off him that contained nearly endless murderous intent!

“L-Lin Lanjian!”

“H-how is this possible!? The three Demon Envoys!?”

“He can't have killed the three Demon Envoys, right!?”

“That's impossible! Do you even know how strong the three Demon Envoys are? They even have a chance of reaching the Divine Sea realm! Lin Lanjian is indeed a genius, but those three Demon Envoys were also Emperor level talents when they were young! Now they're sixth stage Life Destruction masters while Lin Lanjian is only a mere late Revolving Core boy. Even though his talent defies the will of the heavens, he still shouldn't be the Demon Envoys' match!"

All of the martial artist's present paled. At this time, Lin Ming thrust out with his by now well-known Penetrating Rainbow attack. The spear light cut through the void, smashing into the great mountain sealing array and causing a crack to appear on the translucent surface of the barrier!

This great mountain sealing array stemmed from the inheritance of the Demon Emperor. The array formation that once sealed up the Nirvana Dragon Root within the Demon Emperor's medicine garden shared the basic foundation with this current great mountain sealing array. With Lin Ming's current understanding of array formations, he had already completely understood how to break open this array.

If he had the array opening token, he would be able to easily open it. But now that he didn't have the token, he chose to attack the weak point of the array formation instead. With his striking power combined with his battle spirit, he could break open a man-sized gap in the barrier in a mere 10 breaths of time.

As the martial artists saw Lin Ming attack the array formation and the cracks extending even further on the barrier, all of their complexions changed. What kind of striking power was this!? This was a great mountain sealing array! Even though it was only the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division, it was still able to withstand the attacks of several hundred martial artists combined together!

How could Lin Ming cause cracks to appear in but a few strikes!?

"No one panic! The only reason he can destroy the great array formation is because he is proficient in array formation structures! His true striking power definitely isn't as strong as it seems! Even if a top 10 Destiny Decree master came here, they still wouldn't be able to tear open the array formation in a short period of time."

The sealing arrays passed down from the Demon Emperor's inheritance were naturally powerful. This was an inheritance that the Asura Divine Kingdom was extremely proud of. But now, it had become counterproductive instead. Without a doubt, Lin Ming's understanding of the Demon Emperor's array formations far surpassed their own.

"This brat definitely has a great number of the Demon Emperor's personal letters!" This thought instantly crossed Hall Master Situ's mind when there was suddenly a loud cracking sound. The section of the great mountain sealing array in front of Lin Ming suddenly cracked again, finally giving away as a three foot wide opening appeared before him.

"It's broken!!!! The array has broken!!"

All of the martial artists present were terrified as some of them had already thoughts of retreating. Although Lin Ming was only a Destiny Decree master in the top 300, the strength and abilities he had displayed today caused them all to feel a dreadful dismay.

Lin Ming slowly flew over the square. The reason he had suddenly returned to retaliate was first to teach a profound and lifelong lesson to all of these martial artists that wanted to capture him alive in exchange for a bounty. And the most important point was that he had come to steal the God Transforming Pill.

That pill would be greatly beneficial to him when he decided to cross Life Destruction.

This had been the very simple plan of luring the tiger out of its cave. The reason that the three Demon Envoys had fallen for this was because their hearts were filled with a raging anger, causing their minds to go completely blank. All the Demon Envoys thought about was killing Lin Ming to erase the shame they experienced. But they had far underestimated his flight ability. They never imagined that he could maintain such an 'extreme speed' through 8000 miles and still have ample strength left to make his way back and attack the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division.

Thus, this situation had developed into such a strange scene. The Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division, that had three Demon Envoys guarding it, actually had to face the looting of Lin Ming twice!

After he opened the gate of Wonder, he had gained an absolute advantage in speed. Compared to the Gate of Healing's endurance and recovery ability, and the Gate of Limit's balance and explosive force, this was far more valuable. As long as he could make use of it, he would be able to accomplish all sorts of unpredictable effects!

His eyes swept over the area where the God Transforming Pill had been. The array formation had already been lifted and the God Transforming Pill had been taken away.

This was to be expected. It was impossible to continue placing the God Transforming Pill in full view of everyone.

But what Lin Ming could be certain of was that the God Transforming Pill was on the body of some Asura Divine Kingdom martial artist currently present. When he stole away the 300,000 spirit essence stones after which the three Demon Envoys had chased him in hot pursuit, it was impossible for those three Demon Envoys to undo the array formation and stow away the God Transforming Pill in such a short amount of time.

Thus, the God Transforming Pill had to have been left behind in this square. The highest probability was that it was taken away by the person in charge of the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division.

As his eyes swept over everyone, they eventually settled on a black-clothed old man. Besides those three high-ranked Destiny Decree sect Elders Lin Ming had already seen, this black-clothed old man was the most glaring and obnoxious looking one. Moreover, his cultivation had also reached the fifth stage of Life Destruction. There was an over 90% chance that he was the person heading the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division.

This black-clothed old man was Hall Master Situ. Hall Master Situ extracted a spear from his spatial ring, his expression incomparably solemn and grim. He didn't know how Lin

Ming had tricked the three Demon Envoys, but what he knew was that the three Demon Envoys had failed!

This was the most important test in his life as well as the greatest chance he would ever encounter!

If he could capture Lin Ming alive, then that would be an unbelievably great merit. He would obtain the generous reward of the Asura Divine Kingdom! As he thought of this, his entire body tensed as even his eyes lit up with a bloodthirsty and excited light.

“All heroes present, to anyone that can help me capture this thief today, not only will I reward you 500,000 spirit essence stones and the God Transforming Pill, I’ll also reward a single Life Bestowing Heaven Pill!”

At this critical moment Hall Master Situ could no longer care about anything. In order to seize Lin Ming he had to do everything within his power, even if that meant promising such a heavy reward that he had no authority to hand it out.

The Life Bestowing Heaven Pill!!!

Hall Master Situ’s words caused the Elders of all the large sects present to be surprised for a moment. Then, their eyes immediately bloomed with a blazingly eager light!

Chapter 800 – Blood Washed Jagged Slope Mountain

Chapter 800 – Blood Washed Jagged Slope Mountain

…

…

…

For most of the famous sect Elders present, their fires of life were already subsiding; it was nearly impossible for them to take another step forward in their cultivation within their lives. In this case, the God Transforming Pill that could increase their chances of successfully reaching the divine Sea realm wasn't too tempting.

The reason many of them had come to take a chance of obtaining the God Transforming Pill was in consideration of their disciples. Even if they swallowed the God Transforming Pill themselves, there basically wasn't any chance for them to pass from the fifth to the sixth stage of Life Destruction.

This Life Bestowing Heaven Pill, on the other hand, was different. Not only did it merely attract the attention of the Elders present but it was a divine pill that they would go crazy over!

The higher boundary a martial artist reached, the more of their life potential they would have dug out, the more vibrant the fires of their life became, and the more difficult it was to extend their life. To a martial artist, an inferior 100 year medicine could lengthen their lives by dozens of years and even have the effect of resurrecting the dead. To a Xiantian realm martial artist, high quality 1000 year medicines had similar effects. But to a Life Destruction master, medicines that could extend their lives could be called legendary treasures. If one didn’t have the foundation of a Divine Kingdom, it was simply impossible to even think about obtaining one!

And this Life Bestowing Heaven Pill was one of those marvelous pills. Not only could it lengthen one’s life but it could also make the fires of their live much more ebullient, turning back their clock and making them younger by up to 500 years!

This was a life changing, heaven defying divine pill that even the four Divine Kingdoms only had a small number of. To these Elders, becoming 500 years younger meant there was a chance they could further enhance their cultivation. If this was combined with the God Transforming Pill, there might even be a chance of breaking through to the sixth stage of Life Destruction!

After reaching the sixth stage of Life Destruction, if they experienced another massive lucky chance then there might even be the faintest thread of hope to reach the Divine Sea! Although they would only be the weakest of Divine Sea masters, that was still the Divine Sea! They would be reborn! Their dantian would experience great changes and they would have at least 5000 years of life to spend as they wished! To them, this was the same as living like an immortal every day!

“Let’s attack together. He only entered the top 300 of the Destiny Decree half a month ago and his cultivation is only at the late Revolving Core realm. It’s impossible for him to have made another breakthrough in his cultivation or for his strength to have greatly increased in such a short period of time. We have four Destiny Decree masters here. As long as we join forces we can definitely capture him alive!”

Hall Master Situ shouted out. As he spoke, Lin Ming’s eyes suddenly locked on his body. The ice cold mask and the black lines that snaked down the mask seemed to exude a near infinite killing intent, making him feel as if he had fallen into a deep, icy lake.

However, he remembered the three Destiny Decree masters behind him. With him, that was a total of four great masters. They held an enormous advantage over Lin Ming. He was suddenly filled with courage and bravado again.

“Let’s attack together! Feng Yan, Ju Sun, go to the main temple and activate the protective array formation!”

Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division’s main temple naturally had its own great defensive array. Even if Lin Ming was proficient in the Demon Emperor’s array formations, he wouldn’t be able to completely disregard it. Once the array formation started, it would be able to contain Lin Ming to a large extent.

The martial artists in the square immediately began running toward the great hall. As for the three famous sect Elders and the other Life Destruction martial artists, they all scattered away, spreading around and occupying favorable positions. They were ready to use all sorts of sneak attack methods on Lin Ming. Although they didn’t dare to directly face him, they could take advantage of the moment when he was fighting the four great masters to sneak in some attacks.

After all, Hall Master Situ’s reward was simply too tempting!

“Do not be afraid! We have an absolute advantage with our strength! Lin Lanjian must have consumed a great deal of his true essence in escaping; he can’t have much left!” Hall Master Situ’s voice echoed in everyone’s ears.

“All disciples of the Misty Stream Sect, follow my command! Prepare the Misty Stream Formation!” The Misty Stream Sect Sovereign was one of the three famous sect Elders. The Life Bestowing Heaven Pill was far too great an enticement to him; he had to obtain it at any cost! Moreover, he still had to take revenge for when his disciple, Yan Junxuan, had been heavily wounded.

The Misty Stream Formation needed 12 elite disciples to stand in formation. By relying on their mutual cooperation, the martial artists would be able to fuse their attacks together, combining the weak to defeat the strong. At this time, all of the people the Misty Stream Sect had brought over were outstanding disciples and all of them were familiar with the Misty Stream Formation. Once this formation was formed, then even though it might not be able to harm Lin Ming, it could still serve in a diversionary role.

All of these disciples were well-trained elites. Even though the situation was chaotic and tense, they still looked for their spot in an orderly fashion. The Misty Stream Sect Sovereign actually stood in front of these disciples, blocking off Lin Ming. Once Lin Ming started to attack, the Misty Stream Sect Sovereign would fend him off, ensuring that the Misty Stream Formation would successfully be formed.

At this moment, Lin Ming's lips curved up in a fierce sneer. Although he didn't place this battle formation in his eyes, that didn't mean he would allow them to simply do as they pleased.

"Do you really think you can block me?"

Heavenly Demon martial intent, open to the limit!

Bang!

A terrifying force field energy rushed out like a tide. He revolved the Heretical God Force to the limit, simultaneously releasing the strength of the third level of the Eight inner Hidden Gates as he poured his large success bronze battle spirit into the energy of the force field.

Asura force field, omnidirectional suppression of the body and soul!

Death God force field, cutting down life and extinguishing all vitality!

The Misty Stream disciples that were laying down the Misty Stream Formation were suddenly enveloped by the dual force fields. Because the disciples with the weaker cultivations couldn't withstand the pressure of the Asura force field, their heads exploded like watermelons as red blood and white brain fluid splashed all over the ground!

As for the others, their bodies suddenly shook, their eyes blew apart, their blood vessels burst, their meridians tore to pieces, and their dantian completely collapsed on themselves!

Peng! Peng! Peng!

With several muffled thumping sounds, several martial artists slumped to the ground. Many headless corpses still stood on their feet, their bodies twitching in response.

This sudden scene caused the many martial artists present to be stunned in fear. How had their comrades died just now?

They hadn't even seen Lin Lanjian do anything!!!

It was as if he just glanced at them and they all died on the spot!

"Lin Lanjian! You dare to kill my Misty Stream Sect disciples!? I will take your life!"

The Misty Stream Sect's Old Man Yan's eyes turned blood red. He drew out a long sword from his spatial ring, revolving all of the energy within his body as he pointed it straight toward Lin Ming.

Lin Ming scoffed. "What a joke! You want to kill me but I can't kill you? Do you think I should stretch my neck out and let you chop it off as you please?"

Old Man Yan had no intention of bantering with Lin Ming. He calmly stroked the edge of his sword, causing the blade to become translucent like jade. Energy trembled and a divine light shot into the blue skies.

"Skysplit Sword!'

Old Man Yan slashed his sword down at Lin Ming. The Misty Stream Sect was a strong fifth-grade sect so their inheritances were naturally good. This Skysplit Sword was the ultimate move of the Misty Stream Sword Art. One had to cultivate the inherited heart mantra to the highest level in order to use it.

According to the ancient texts of the Misty Stream Sect, when the Skysplit Sword's might reached its pinnacle, a single sword strike could split apart the endless blue sky!

Zheng!

The sword light turned. It looked like a jade dragon descending down the mountains, emitting a harsh, whistling sound that passed through the clouds and could split apart stone.

Facing the sword of a Destiny Decree master, Lin Ming didn't have much of an expression at all. He shook the long spear in his hand and the Concept of Fire wove together with the Laws of Space.

Law of Annihilation, Chain of Stars!

Peng!

Space shattered like glass. The flame energy fused with the power of space, condensing into tiny fragments that spun in the air like miniature stars. Then, they turned toward Old Man Yan and shrouded over his sword light.

Ca!

Harsh sounds of colliding energy filled the air. The star fragments tore into the sword light and terrifying true essence shockwaves exploded outward, causing a massive storm to set off in the surrounding area.

Under the impact of such a terrifying flow of energy, Old Man Yan was struck in the chest. He was sent flying backward, the blood tumbling in his body as he nearly vomited some!

"Sovereign!"

As the young elites of the Misty Stream Sect saw Old Man Yan sent flying back in such a miserable state, all of them were inexplicably horrified. The Skysplit Sword their Sovereign used was the ultimate finishing move of their Misty Stream Sect! How could this have happened!?

Meanwhile, Lin Ming didn't give Old Man Yan any chance to recover. He turned the red spear in his hands and the Chain of Stars came out again!

This time, Lin Ming was the one taking the initiative to attack. The power of space condensed into countless space fragments that shot outward. Old Man Yan blocked some but many of the other martial artists were also caught within the range of the attack.

“Be careful!”

“Withdraw!”

Several Elders cried out in alarm while they simultaneously released true essence shields around them. However, the most they could protect was themselves; it was impossible for them to help anyone else.

The space fragments were just too fast. They sprayed forward like a hail of knives, recklessly firing toward the martial artists.

A part of the space fragments violently crashed into several Elder’s true essence shields, erupting into brilliant and deadly sparks of energy. But most of the space fragments had flowed toward the groups of ordinary martial artists. Most of them had a cultivation at the Revolving Core realm and some were even at the Xiantian realm. It was impossible for them to resist such an attack!

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

Fresh scarlet red blood bloomed in the air. Miserable screams sounded out from all over. Several Revolving Core martial artists had their heads directly pierced through by these space fragments. Then, the savage and violent power of space broke out, causing their heads to burst apart and their brain fluids to mix with the rain of blood.

“Quickly, retreat!”

All of the surviving young martial artists from every sect and family clan instantly lost any shred of courage they had left. Their minds cracked in fear as they all fled away. They had originally come here thinking about obtaining the God Transforming Pill and all sorts of other lucky chances, but right now, the Lin Ming in front of them was no different from the devil himself!

No amount of wealth or lucky chances were as valuable as their lives!

However, they didn't flee too far when they discovered a despairing truth that took away all their hopes. The entire great temple had been blocked off by the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division's great array formation!

They couldn't leave!!!

"Open it! Please, hurry up and open it!!"

Many of the young martial artists began screaming at the top of their lungs and there were even some martial artists that began launching attacks against the array formation. But let alone them, even Lin Ming who was skilled in the Demon Emperor's array formation still required 10 breaths of time to break through it.

"Stop panicking! Open the grand temple's killing array!" Hall Master Situ yelled out as he saw the situation spiraling out of control.

Several Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division Protectors were already standing above the array formation runes. At this time, Lin Ming didn't even bother glancing at them. He only flicked his fingers and three true essence air arrows fused with his battle spirit shot out.

These true essence air arrows were silent and invisible. With his large success bronze battle spirit attached to it and with the support of his Concepts, these air arrows were equivalent to the all-out attack of a three to four stage Life Destruction powerhouse using a heaven-step treasure!

With two 'peng peng' sounds, two of the true essence air arrows passed through the dantian of the Asura Divine Kingdom Revolving Core martial artists that had been standing on the array runes. The energy of the battle spirit burst out from within their dantian, causing their Revolving Core crystal nucleus to shatter apart.

Both people instantly died on the spot.

As for the last and strongest first stage Life Destruction martial artist, he loudly roared, retreating as he took out a high-grade earth-step treasure sword and cut down at the true essence air arrow. However, with a ‘kacha’ sound, that high-grade earth-step treasure was broken apart by the true essence air arrow. The air arrow didn’t slow down at all, piercing through the martial artist’s protective true essence before piercing through his head, causing a rain of blood to scatter out.

In an instant, that Life Destruction martial artist’s spiritual sea had been completely destroyed by the true essence air arrow.

Chapter 801 – Unstoppable

Chapter 801 – Unstoppable

…

…

…

Three martial artists died yet again. The true essence energy arrows killed their targets even past a hundred steps. Every non-high level Life Destruction martial artist here could only allow themselves to be freely slaughtered!

Such a disparity made a chill crawl down all the martial artists' backs. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that as long as Lan Lanjian had the thought to kill them, their blood would splash across down the mountain slopes in the next moment!

This sort of irresistible despair made them all wish to immediately flee these slaughter grounds.

The entire square was dyed blood red with corpses scattered all over the grounds. In just several breaths of time, over 20 people had already died here.

"You bastard!" The Snowcap Sect's Highest Elder was outraged. He could only stare helplessly on as Lin Ming used the Chain of Stars to kill seven or eight of his Snowcap Sect disciples. Every single disciple that was qualified to come to this gathering of heroes was an astounding young elite of their generation. But, before they could even grow, Lin Ming had already chopped them down as if he were cutting vegetables!

"Since you dare to kill my Snowcap Sect's disciples, then I, Lian Shiyu, will never allow you to leave here alive!"

"Hahaha!" Lin Ming sneered, "To think another idiot would speak such pathetic words at this point. If your Snowcap Sect disciples didn't target me, why would I kill them!"

"Lin Lanjian, your actions are far too vicious! The reason I brought these juniors here today was only to allow them to widen their eyes and see the world. None of them threatened or attacked you and yet you killed them, even though they were all innocent!"

"Innocent? How ridiculous! If they really obtained clues about me then would they not have reported it to the Asura Divine Kingdom? If they were on the Destiny Decree then wouldn't they try to capture me for the bounty reward? Since they stand here today, they have already been tempted by the Asura Divine Kingdom's rewards and all of them should have long since braced themselves for death at any time!"

"Good! Good! Good! This old man will sacrifice you to my sword today!" Lian Shiyu loudly shouted and then grasped a four foot long thick saber as he slashed down at Lin Ming.

"I'll join with Brother Lian!"

The three famous Elders attacked together. At this time, they naturally couldn't bother about something like fairness. Killing Lin Ming and saving their own lives was most important right now!

Facing the all out attacks of three Life Destruction masters, Lin Ming opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates once again. Although his strength has dramatically risen it was still impossible for him to block all of their attacks by himself. He waved his spear and his steps suddenly became distorted. The power of the Gate of Wonder erupted!

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Woosh!

Lin Ming's figure disappeared like ghosts and gods. The three Elders' combined attack struck the empty spot where he once stood.

Bang!

Energy surged outwards, smashing into the great hall's protective barrier and causing the entire translucent shield to vibrate. Golden light shot into the sky, but Lin Ming was actually able to rely on his strange and ephemeral movements to easily dodge the shockwaves of the explosion.

Then, he suddenly appeared like a ghost behind Hall Master Situ's back!

In that moment, Hall Master Situ felt goosebumps crawl up his arms. He didn't even look back as he threw himself forwards. But it was already too late!

Lin Ming held his spear's end with both hands and swept it out in a killing circle!

The light of the red spear formed a crescent moon, incomparably radiant!

Chi-la!

Hall Master Situ's protective true essence was torn apart by the long spear. A long scar of blood crossed across his spine and brutal thunderfire energy wrecked its way into Hall Master Situ's body, recklessly savaging his meridians and causing him to vomit a mouthful of blood.

A Destiny Decree master had been severely wounded by Lin Ming's spear!

“Ahhhh!” Hall master Situ crazily roared. He suppressed the unbearable pain in his meridians and rushed forwards several steps, wishing to enter the protective circle of the other Elders.

But how could Lin Ming give him a chance for reprieve? He suddenly moved forwards, stepping on Golden Roc Shattering the Void again, chasing right behind Hall Master Situ. Thunder and fire howled in the air. Lin Ming's spear came smashing down, straight towards Hall Master Situ's neck!

Lin Ming's speed was too fast. Hall Master Situ simply didn't have time to respond. This was the combat ability that came with an absolute advantage in speed!

Hall Master Situ nearly went mad with horror as he thought he would perish here. But, Old Man Yan suddenly appeared at Lin Ming's side as he released a thunderous strike.

Skysplit Sword!

A sword cut out horizontally, seeming as if space had been divided in half. If Lin Ming continued to attack then he would be struck by this Skysplit Sword! Old Man Yan had attacked Lin Ming in order to protect Hall Master Situ. At this moment, all of them were in the same boat. Once Hall Mater Situ died, their situation could only become worse.

But facing this sword strike, Lin Ming didn't even acknowledge it. He had relied on his ghostly speed in order to create this opening. If he couldn't cause heavy damage to Hall Master Situ in this single attempt then the next sneak attack would be far more difficult. As long as the four Destiny Decree masters protected each other, it was possible for them to jointly ruin all of his attacks.

Thus, Lin Ming could not give up on this attack midway.

Lin Ming forcefully resisted Old Man Yan's Skysplit Sword and chased after Hall Master Situ with this fatal spear strike. There was not a single ounce of hesitation in his eyes as he continued to stab out!

"What!?"

Old Man Yan could only stare blankly as Lin Ming continued after Hall Master Situ, actually ignoring his sword strike!

"Is this boy crazy? Or does he scorn my attack?" As Old Man Yan thought this, anger burned in his heart. A fierce expression crossed his face and the Skysplit Sword in his hands became even stronger. "Since you want to die then let me help you!"

Puff!

Lin Ming's spear thrust into Hall Master Situ's back. The azure light of the battle spirit rocketed into the deep blue skies like an immortal sword!

Hall Master Situ was easily pierced through by the spear. Blood gushed out from his chest and he issued out a hoarse scream filled with pain and horror.

And at the same time, Old Man Yan's sword also cut down on Lin Ming's back!

Bang!

Waves of energy struck him. Lin Ming gave a deafening roar as energy erupted within his entire body and he revolved his protective true essence to the limit. Old Man Yan was a Destiny Decree master after all; his sword easily ripped through Lin Ming's protective true essence and continued cutting into Lin Ming's body.

Kacha!

The four foot long sword was blocked by the Demon Emperor Armor. After over half of the raging energy was dispersed by the armor's protection, the rest surged into Lin Ming's meridians.

Lin Ming's body had already been tempered by the profound gold divine fruit and the Eight Inner Hidden Gates – he was as tough as a treasure. He forcefully withstood the aftermath of Old Man Yan's Skysplit Sword!

Blood tumbled in his body. Lin Ming grit his teeth, abruptly suppressing the chaos in his body. Then, he swiveled his wood spirit jade masked-face towards Old Man Yan.

In that instant, Lin Ming's eyes had become as cold as the nine nether hells. The two black marks on his mask seemed to fill with endless killing intent!

As Old Man Yan was locked on to by Lin Ming's eyes, he instantly paled to a hue whiter than paper. It was like he was looking into the eyes of the dead, without a single trace of human emotion within them. He suddenly felt as if he had returned to his days of mortality and was thrust into the field of endless ice with polar gusts buffeting him. In this icy cold, his soul nearly froze!

"Your attack is far too weak!"

The voice of a devil suddenly echoed in Old Man Yan's ears. His mind went momentarily dizzy as the world seemed to flip upside down. He heard a sharp breaking sound within him; a crack had appeared within his sword heart!

His sword heart wasn't weak or fragile at all. But, after suffering such a blow and facing this Lin Lanjian that seemed to be the god of death incarnate, his confidence had completely collapsed!

"Be careful!"

Lian Shiyu's shout sounded out in his ears. A feeling of imminent crisis rose in Old Man Yan's heart. Without explanation, he recklessly cut his sword outwards.

With only a loud explosion, Old Man Yan felt his ears go deaf and his eyes go blind. He felt a strong impact force strike him, as if his chest had been smashed by a mountain!

Peng!

The four foot long heaven-step sword broke in half. Old Man Yan's chest was swept through by the sword light and his protective true essence shattered. His arms shook as his sword light was torn apart; many of his ribs shattered. Old Man Yan coughed up a mouthful of blood as he was sent flying backwards like a broken ragdoll!

In a frontal collision, the spear had the advantage to begin with. Moreover, Lin Ming's explosive force and physical strength far surpassed Old Man Yan's. If it were just this, then it still wouldn't be enough to break Old Man Yan's heaven-step treasure sword. But, Old Man Yan's sword heart had been shaken and this caused him to not be able to display even half of his complete strength.

“Sovereign Yan!”

Lian Shiyu ran up to catch Old Man Yan. Old Man Yan had still been able to block Lin Ming’s last spear strike and he had only been swept up in the spear light, thus he had only suffered a severe wound instead of being fatally injured. But, Hall Master Situ was in a much more miserable state. Lin Ming’s spear had penetrated through his body. Although the spear had avoided the fatal point of his heart it had still broken most of the meridians in his body and most of his organs had also been destroyed by the hidden energy.

At this moment, Hall Master Situ had completely lost all combat efficiency!

In a single face off and just with the exchange of several moves, out of four Destiny Decree powerhouses, one had been severely wounded and another stood on the precipice of death!

How could the disparity be so great!?!?

As heroic young elites saw this, they completely lost any courage they had remaining. They already heard that Lin Lanjian was powerful, but even though they acknowledged this fact, none of them had actually understood this. And seeing Lin Ming today, only now did they realize that this fellow was an absolute devil!

He was already stood on a completely different level from these young elites. Even the famous Elders of the various sects had no ability to resist him!

These young elites only cursed themselves for being attracted by the potential rewards and deciding to come to the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division to participate in this damned gathering of heroes. If they hadn’t been tempted then they wouldn’t have entered into this Asura hell and they wouldn’t have had to face this death god!

The four great masters also felt their hearts quake. If they had protected each other from the very beginning then they would have been able to resist. But now two of them had been made useless; how could they continue fighting in this situation?

Hall Master Situ continued to cough up mouthfuls of blood. As he looked at Lin Ming, his pupils were somewhat vacant. From the beginning to end, he hadn't even been able to use a single move!

And the reason for all of this was Lin Ming's terrifying speed.

He had used his absolute advantage in speed to launch a sneak attack behind Hall master Situ, and then relied on his abnormally powerful defensive power to resist Old Man Yan's all-out attack. With that, he had vacillated Old Man Yan's sword heart and his spear had then been able to severely wound him.

It may have seemed as if Lin Ming had easily won, but the truth was that all of this depended on his ruthless decisiveness and ability to fully display his absolute advantage in battle to the greatest extent. Otherwise, if he had truly fought all four of the Destiny Decree masters together in frontal combat, then even opening the third of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates wouldn't allow Lin Ming to win.

"Situ, open the array otherwise we will all die here!" Lian Shiyu said to Hall Master Situ with a true essence sound transmission. His voice was filled with hysterical panic. At this time, he didn't dare to arouse Lin Ming's attention.

Hall Master Situ struggled to support himself. He still couldn't understand, just where had the three Demo Envoys gone? What had they done after flying outwards for four hours? Why had Lin Lanjian returned alone?

What Hall Master Situ didn't know was that the three Demon Envoys were still flying back from 4000 miles away. They had decided to ride a spirit boat in order to restore their true essence.

The speed of the spirit boat certainly couldn't compare to their full flight speed.

"Demon Two, Lian Lanjian's energy had already gone completely missing. Do you think he might have returned before us and decided to launch a sneak attack of the Jagged Slope

Mountain Branch Division?” The third Demon Envoy worriedly asked. He felt a foreboding premonition about everything that had happened.

“Demon Three, you worry too much. Although Lin Lanjian threw us off he still consumed a massive amount of his true essence; where would he still have the strength left over to attack Jagged Slope Mountain? And even then, there are still countless masters at Jagged Slope Mountain. Even if Lin Lanjian was in his peak condition he still wouldn’t necessarily be able to win.”

Chapter 802 – Killing Situ

Chapter 802 – Killing Situ

…

…

…

In the square of Jagged Slope Mountain's great hall, broken limbs and flesh was everywhere. The smell of blood overwhelmed the senses!

Lin Ming grasped his long spear and began to take step after step towards the four Destiny Decree masters. These four masters were all gathered together, and they were also well aware that with Lin Ming's extreme speed that was like ghosts and gods, they would encounter a surprise attack as long as they separated even a bit. And with their strength it was simply too difficult to escape.

"Lin Lanjian! You dare to massacre my Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division!? My Asura Divine Kingdom will never rest until you are dead! My Asura Divine Kingdom has three great Imperial Scholars, six Demon Envoys, and Emperor level powerhouses in the double digits. As long as any one of them move a finger, you will die without a grave!"

Hall Master Situ's heart swelled with endless fear and despair. At this time he could only try to psychologically attack Lin Ming and hope that his heart would waver.

"Massacre your Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division?" Lin Ming sneered, "If your Asura Divine Kingdom thinks of me as a fish on the chopping block then I can't counterattack? How laughable! Ever since the Asura Divine Kingdom eyed the inheritance of the Demon Emperor on me, the Asura Divine Kingdom has decided to never rest until they have caught me! Since that’s the case I will naturally have you pay the deepest price for your sins!

“Take good care of the Demon Emperor’s heartguard mirror for me; one day I will go and take it myself. As for the three great Imperial Scholars, six Demon Envoys, and all of those Emperor powerhouses, once I am strong enough I will kill them all one at a time!”

Lin Ming vehemently spoke, his heated gaze had already locked onto the four people in front of him. Lian Shiyu and some other old man surnamed Sun that was ranked on the Destiny Decree had sweat streaming down their backs as they faced this perilous threat.

Lin Ming’s superimposed dual force field created far too strong a pressure. That ice cold wood spirit mask and those traces of black above the eyes made it seem as if they were staring into the face of the devil, suffocating them and making them gasp for breath.

“Let’s fight!”

Lian Shiyu finally couldn’t withstand the pressure and took the initiative in the attack.

Old Man Sun braced himself and followed behind. At this time they were all on the same sinking ship. If Lian Shiyu attacked by himself then he would certainly be defeated. It would be the end of the line for him after that.

Neither of them dared to hold back just a tiny bit. Both of them immediately struck out with their ultimate moves.

Mountain Slicing Saber!

Red Flame Burning Heaven!

Lian Shiyu grasped his four foot long thick saber and cut down, the raging energy like landslides and tsunamis.

Old Man Sun spat out blood essence that then combusted into a fierce inferno of flames. Then, these flames covered his entire body. With a wave of his sword, flames tarnished the skies. His entire body had become like a scorching hot sun. The ground underneath his feet had already melted into flowing lava.

No matter what, they were still Destiny Decree masters! Even under the suppression of Lin Ming's dual force fields they could still erupt with a terrifying combat strength!

Lin Ming didn't step back. When he had faced the joint attack of three people, he admitted that he wouldn't have been able to resist that. But now that there were only two, he actually wanted to give it a try.

Lin Ming revolved the Heretical God Force's energy to the limit as well as opening the third level of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. Lin Ming thrust his spear forwards. The Burning Star Flame howled, and the entire spear became a brilliant, radiant red, as if a phoenix was spreading its wings out from within the spear shaft!

Bury the Heavens!

Ka ka ka!

Space collapsed. The power of space rushed out from the space crack like a surging tide, forming a tyrannical and violent space storm. The wind caused the flames to burn with increased intensity. Then, the space storm fused into the Burning Star Flame, causing its blazing heat to reach the peak!

The incandescent light was blinding. It completely overshadowed Old Man Sun's fire attack!

All three waves of energy frantically smashed into each other. At that time, sound itself seemed to be swallowed up. The conflagration of flames washed away all the clouds in the sky, engulfing the entire mountain peak!

The fiery aftermath surged in all directions. Endless screams and agonized cries filled the heavens as many of the young disciples from the various sects and the Asura Divine

Kingdom Branch Division were directly charred to ash! This energy simply wasn't on a level that they could hope to resist!

Lian Shiyu and Old Man Sun were both sent flying away by the uncontrollable wild energy. Lian Shiyu was better off; the blood tumbled in his body and blood leaked out from the corners of his mouth.

But Old Man Sun had been struck by the Heretical God Seed's fire counterattack. The meridians in his sword-wielding right hand had been roasted away with only 30% remaining!

Even if a high stage Life Destruction martial artist's flesh and blood had been transformed several times by energy, damage to their meridians still wasn't an injury that they could recover from in a short period of time.

Old Man Sun flipped the sword into his left hand and focused his eyes through the layers of flaming fog. He saw Lin Ming had only withdrawn several dozen feet back, with seemingly no injuries on him.

One against two, this young man hadn't sustained any injuries? Or perhaps he had suffered some internal damage from the pressure?

Old Man Sun's heart trembled. If Lin Ming had been injured just a tiny bit, even if this was a minor wound that didn't affect his combat effectiveness, that was still enough for him to regain some of his confidence.

Lin Ming's attack had simply been too strong! If he could gain the advantage even in a one against two situation, then if any of them were to face Lin Ming alone, three moves was more than enough to severely wound them, and killing them in five moves was not a problem at all!

How could this be possible? A month ago he had only been slightly stronger than Corpsemancer. After such a short period of time, his cultivation was still at the late

Revolving Core and didn't seem as if it had risen by much. So how could he have become this much stronger?

Old Man Sun's palms became wet with sweat.

Lin Ming grasped his long spear and pointed it towards the ground. A moment ago he had faced the attacks of two enemies, and although he had occupied the upper hand in the end, the truth was that some of the violent energy had sunk into his body. It was just that Lin Ming's physical bodily defensive power far surpassed even a Divine Sea Supreme Elder's, and in addition to the Heretical God Seed guarding his body and his incomparably tough meridians, he had been able to forcibly suppress that energy so that it appeared as if he wasn't harmed at all.

At this time, a rumbling sound resounded in the square. The great mountain sealing array began to shake and the translucent barrier became increasingly pale and light; it would completely vanish any time now.

Hall Master Situ took advantage of Lin Ming being occupied in battle and began to open the great mountain sealing array. Opening the array from within was simple as long as he had the requisite array opening token and cut off the supply of energy.

"Run!"

Less than half of the young martial artists had survived. As they saw the great mountain sealing array about to open, all of them frantically launched their movement techniques to escape. At this time, all of them hated that they couldn't grow more legs to get out of this hell faster.

"Quickly request reinforcements!"

"Inform the three Demon Envoys!"

"They are definitely nearby!"

Many of the martial artists were thinking these thoughts. The great mountain sealing array had isolated all flow of information, including even sound transmitting talismans. But now that it had been lifted, they could send out messages and seek rescue!

The Asura Divine Kingdom martial artists were especially hurried in sending messages to the three Demon Envoys. They already hoped that the three Demon Envoys would return soon. They figured that they were close to Jagged Slope Mountain but had no idea why they hadn't hurried back yet.

As long as the three Demon Envoys returned, there was no way for Lin Lanjian to be so rampant here!

As for the martial artists from the other three large sects here, they all began informing their sect headquarters about what happened today. Some sects had more than one Destiny Decree master. For instance, the Misty Stream Sect had an even stronger Highest Elder that was guarding their sect.

For a time, the light of sound transmitting talismans gleamed all over the land. As Lin Ming looked at these ignited flames, his eyes revealed an icy killing intent. He turned the spear in his hands and energy erupted outwards!

Law of Annihilation, Chain of Stars!

The power of space condensed into fragments, mixing with the howling power of annihilating flames. These star-like fragments fired towards all the martial artists that were sending out sound transmitting talismans!

The star fragments had wisps of a battle spirit attached to them: their sharpness was in no way inferior to heaven-step treasure's.

With a whistling sound, countless flowers of blood appeared in the square. Some star fragments penetrated through three or four martial artists without stopping at all!

Lin Ming had completely turned into a god of death, recklessly harvesting the lives of everyone around him!

Miserable screams filled the air. The young martial artists became even more delirious in their desire to escape.

“Take advantage of this time and escape separately!”

As Lin Ming was dealing with the other martial artists, Lian Shiyu rapidly sent a true essence sound transmission to the other three Destiny Decree masters.

At the same time, he activated the flight treasure on his body and flew away! Old Man Sun’s response was only half a breath slower. He quickly fled in the opposite direction!

They could only take advantage of the moment when Lin Ming was distracted to escape. If they didn’t run away now than they would never have another chance.

Lian Shiyu and Old Man Sun had only been slightly injured – their speed was nearly unaffected. In the blink of an eye they had already fled a thousand feet away. But Old Man Yan and Hall Master Situ were in a much more pathetic situation.

Especially Hall Master Situ. His chest had a big hole with blood leaking out of it, extending from both the front and the back. And most of his meridians and organs had been destroyed by Lin Ming’s true essence. Now, his escape speed was probably evens lower than that of the fleeing young disciples!

As he saw Lian Shiyu and Old Man Sun rapidly soar away, he cursed them even as gloom filled his heart. He could only try his best to escape too.

Lin Ming’s energy had already locked onto those four Destiny Decree masters. When they moved, Lin Ming also moved. Towards these enemies that wanted to take advantage of him, Lin Ming had no intention of letting any of them leave here alive, not to mention that they were also carrying a great deal of wealth on them.

The Gate of Wonder opened. His speed rapidly rose to the limit as his feet stepped upon the void.

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

In just the blink of an eye, Lin Ming already overtook the limping Hall Master Situ.

Hall Master Situ was overcome with anguish. Out of the four, he was the weakest one and he had also been severely wounded, sent to the very edge of death. His combat strength wasn't even 10% of his peak condition. If Lin Ming caught up to him then he would undoubtedly die.

"Ahhh!"

Hall Master Situ crazily shouted out and turned to meet the enemy.

Bang!

A turbulent flow of energy broke through Hall Master Situ's body, sending him flying into the air. He could only watch on helplessly as Lin Ming's long spear turned into an azure beam of light that pierced through his throat. At the same time, he felt his right hand go cold as it was cut off by Lin Ming, taken away along with his spatial ring.

Peng!

Hall Master Situ bounced on the floor like a rubber ball and tumbled over several hundred feet before sprawling out on the floor. His eyes stared up into the sky, perfectly round and filled with an unwilling hopelessness. He had died with nothing but injustices filling his mind.

And Lin Ming didn't even glance back at him. He only removed Hall Master Situ's spatial ring and then tossed away the hand. With another blink, he had shot forwards several miles!

The reason he had dealt with Hall Master Situ first was because Lin Ming guessed that the God Transforming Pill was on his body and wanted to prevent him from hiding or ruining the pill in his desperation. Then, Lin Ming decided to chase after the fastest one, who was that surnamed Lian old man.

Lian Shiyu had an excellent flight treasure on him. He had told everyone to flee with a true essence sound transmission in order to create an opportunity to escape. He expected that Lin Ming would kill the slower ones first, giving him a chance to catch his breath and make it out of here.

Lian Shiyu completely poured all of his true essence into the flight treasure. In his entire life, he had never flown so quickly before!

Chapter 803 – Killing the Elders

Chapter 803 – Killing the Elders

…

…

…

Lian Shiyu certainly wouldn't think that he was faster than Lin Ming. But relatively speaking, chasing him would be the most strenuous and tasking choice. If he were Lin Ming then he would prioritize killing those other three old men, otherwise he would waste too much time and give those three the chance to escape.

As long as Lin Ming decided not to chase him then after some more time passed, the three Demon Envoys would definitely arrive. Then he would be safe.

This was his only chance of survival.

As Lian Shiyu thought this, he pushed himself to the limit to escape. But at this time, he suddenly heard the whistling of true essence blasting out from behind him.

A thick and overwhelming killing intent shrouded down on him.

"Noo!"

Lian Shiyu's heart filled with despair. He never thought that the speed he was so proud of would be overtaken in a mere five breaths of time by Lin Ming!

In front of Lin Ming, his so-called speed was just a joke!

Lin Ming had chased after him, the fastest of the four. Without a doubt, Lin Ming had decided to wipe out all four of them!

Filled with despair, on the verge of death, when one's life became a flickering candle, that was the time when a person could often erupt with their life's greatest potential.

When Lin Ming's killing intent covered him, Lian Shiyu suddenly turned around. He spat out blood essence on his saber, turning the entire blade a deep blood red. Fierce bursts of wind howled through the air as true essence roared out. Lian Shiyu shouted like a madman, crazily cutting his saber down at Lin Ming.

Slaughter Soul Saber!

To use his own blood essence to stir the Slaughter Soul Saber, the saber became not only a material attack but one that could extinguish a person's divine soul.

This was a cultivation method of harming oneself to harm the enemy. Even if he managed to cut down the enemy, he would still severely damage his own divine soul, unable to recover for a long time. And the reason that Lian Shiyu used this attack now was because he had been forced to his limits. He had discovered that Lin Ming's defensive power was simply too freakish.

With his protective true essence, Demon Emperor Armor, and Lin Ming's own terrifying physical bodily defense, all general material attacks against him were simply rendered useless. Even Old Man Yan's Skysplit Saber had only lightly injured Lin Ming.

Since material attacks didn't work then Lian Shiyu could only use the Slaughter Soul Saber.

This saber was only offensive without a single ounce of defense. Lian Shiyu was aware that if he fought with Lin Ming, he would sooner or later be defeated. He could only use this suicidal method to show Lin Ming he was a bone that would hurt to chew, forcing Lin Ming to give up on him and chase the other three.

As Lin Ming faced this menacing saber attack his mind stirred. A divine soul attack?

He could feel the strength behind this saber. It was impossible to dodge – he could only block it.

But once he blocked it, his speed would definitely slow for a period of time. And Lian Shiyu would use the repelling force to open up the distance between them.

Then, chasing him would take several more breaths of time.

At this moment he was pressed for time. If he wanted to settle these battles quickly then he couldn't back down. If he delayed for too long then it would be much more difficult once others caught up to him. After all, this was still the land of his enemies. Once reinforcements rushed in then the situation would become increasingly troublesome.

With his long spear in hand, Lin Ming directly faced Lian Shiyu's Slaughter Soul Saber. On the spear shaft, the Concept of Fire and the Space Laws wove together. He poured his battle spirit into it.

Bury the Heavens!

A spear stabbed towards the defenseless Lian Shiyu, completely disregarding his attack.

"What!?"

Lian Shiyu was shocked. He never imagined Lin Ming would completely ignore the threat of his suicidal attack and continue launching an attack towards him as before!

When martial artists fought, they particularly feared fighting ruthless individuals that didn't care a whit for their lives. Especially when that ruthless individual was himself a powerful freak of nature!

It was already too late to take back his own attack. Lian Shiyu gave a loud shout and gathered all of his energy onto the saber point. His eyes shined with a maddeningly red light. "Let's die together!"

He had complete confidence in his Slaughter Soul Saber's divine soul attack. 500 years ago when Lian Shiyu was at the third stage of Life Destruction, he had relied on this attack to cut down a fourth stage Life Destruction master.

The spear and Slaughter Soul Saber crossed each other. Lin Ming's spear stabbed towards Lian Shiyu's chest, and the Slaughter Soul Saber cut towards Lin Ming's waist, as if it would cut him in half!

Peng!

Peng!

Both of their bodily protective true essence simultaneously exploded into pieces. Lian Shiyu's body was easily pierced through by Lin Ming, blood raining to the ground.

Although Lian Shiyu had managed to avoid having his vital heart point pierced at the final moment, true essence still surged into his body, violently destroying his insides and meridians. His wounds were no lighter than Hall Master Situ's!

Lin Ming felt a burst of pain at his waist and a great energy transmitted into him. His body shook and he nearly spat out blood. At the same time, the violent flux of energy broke into his spiritual sea, turning into a blood red saber that wanted to cut Lin Ming's spiritual sea in two!

Lian Shiyu was a Destiny Decree master. He damaged his own soul and combusted his blood essence as the price in order to send out this incomparably terrifying divine soul attack. Moreover, Lin Ming had taken the strike without dodging or blocking at all. The entire divine soul attack had struck him!

Lin Ming's eyes exploded with a sharp light.

The Samsara martial intent revolved!

A massive black vortex began spinning atop his spiritual sea. It joined together with the azure battle spirit there and shot towards the blood red saber.

Ka ka ka ka!

The black vortex and the blood red saber collided. Wild energies unceasingly melted against each other.

"This brat really decided to take my Slaughter Soul Saber!?"

As Lian Shiyu saw Lin Ming stiffen for a moment, his distorted face curved up in a vicious smile. Even though he was severely wounded, he believed that Lin Ming's current situation was even worse than his. He knew just how powerful his Slaughter Soul Saber was. Even if Lin Ming were to withstand the Slaughter Soul Saber's physical attack, he wouldn't be able to fend off the divine soul attack.

When masters exchanged moves, the moment of dazed absent-mindedness that occurred when the soul was damaged could often result in fatal consequences!

While he was frozen, take his life!

Lian Shiyu suppressed the excruciating pain in his chest and ignored the damage to his meridians to forcefully revolved his true essence. He prepared a second saber attack that would cut off Lin Ming's neck!

Even if Lin Ming was wearing the Demon Emperor Armor, his neck wouldn't be protected. With Lin Ming's mind having fallen to illusion, his protective true essence would also reach the very depths of frailty. As long as this saber hit, it would definitely be able to decapitate Lin Ming.

"I've won!!!"

Saber light rose up. Lian Shiyu lifted the saber above him with both hands and was prepared to cut it down, when at this moment a cold light suddenly shot out from Lin Ming's eyes, like a bolt of lightning crossing through the dark night sky!

W-what!?

When Lian Shiyu was locked on to by this light, he felt as if the flow of time around him instantly slowed down. He lost all strength to move his body.

An azure light flared out. The spear in Lin Ming's hands shot forth like a viper, thrusting straight into Lian Shiyu's chest.

Puff!

Protective true essence tore like wet paper. The heart ruptured and blood shot into the wind.

Lin Ming's spear had mangled Lian Shiyu's heart to shreds!

At this time, Lian Shiyu's saber hung in the air, incapable of cutting down.

Lian Shiyu vomited a mouthful of blood. His pained chest only felt empty now. Lin Ming's spear had erupted from his back, creating a massive hole through him. When this overlapped with the previous wound, Lian Shiyu's vision began to slowly blur.

Lian Shiyu couldn't believe that after his Slaughter Soul Saber solidly struck his enemy's body, it actually hadn't been able to cause any substantial damage.

"Just how… could… this be…" Lian Shiyu blankly looked at Lin Ming. Gradually, his pupils began to dim.

"Sorry, but I am similarly confident in my soul defensive ability…"

These were the last words that Lian Shiyu ever heard. In the next moment his head shot into the air, and his ruined body crashed into the ground like a dead dog.

Lian Shiyu had perished!

Lin Ming took Lian Shiyu's spatial ring and without any pause at all he stepped onto Golden Roc Shattering the Void, chasing straight after Old Man Sun.

At this time, Old Man Sun had already flown almost a hundred miles away. He was ecstatic that the one Lin Ming had chosen to chase was not him. As long as he hadn't been chosen, he had confidence he would be able to safely escape. Now, after flying for such a long distance, his mind was much more calm and stable then it was before.

'I'll fly out a few dozen more miles and the change direction. I'll fall down and hide in the mountains, restraining all of my energy. There's no way he should be able to find me then.'

This thought had just crossed Old Man Sun's mind, when at this time, he heard the sound of intense air currents whistling behind him. This sound became increasingly close and increasingly loud.

"What!?"

Old Man Sun swiveled around to see Lin Ming, soaked in blood from head to toe, grasping that red long spear and shooting towards him at over twice his own speed!

"How can he be so quick! Did he already kill Hall Master Situ and Lian Shiyu!?"

Old Man Sun was frightened to the point where he felt his soul fly out from him. Only several dozen breaths of time had passed! The four Destiny Decree masters that had been at the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division were also divided into the strong and weak. The strongest had been Lian Shiyu, followed by Old Man Yan. Hall Master Situ and himself had been the weakest of the bunch!

Old Man Sun was well aware that if Lin Ming could kill Lian Shiyu in such a short period of time, then killing him would be as easy as tearing apart a piece of paper.

Lin Ming's terrifying extreme speed caused Old Man Sun to completely abandon all thoughts of escaping. Now, with the meridians of his right hand burnt away he could only use his left hand. With only 60-70% of his combat strength left, the chances of defeating Lin Ming were less than zero.

"Lin Lanjian, don't kill me. I can give you 70% of all the wealth I've accumulated in my sect!"

"Just die."

Lin Ming didn't bother with this Old Man Sun's nonsense. He swept the spear in his hand straight towards Old Man Sun's throat.

Old Man Sun released a miserable scream and desperately cut out his sword at Lin Ming. However, he only had his left hand holding this sword; how could he possibly contend with Lin Ming's spear?

Bang!

With an explosion, Old Man Sun was sent flying backwards in a rain of blood. Lin Ming chased close behind.

Penetrating Rainbow!

Chi-la!

Old Man Sun dropped his sword. His entire left arm was covered in blood!

With a twist of his spear, Lin Ming's spear cut through Old Man Sun's protective true essence and pierced straight towards his dantian!

True essence erupted. His battle spirit sundered Old Man Sun's Revolving Core crystal nucleus. Lin Ming grabbed Old Man Sun's spatial ring and then continued on his way to kill the last Destiny Decree master.

Lin Ming had already left battle spirit marks on everyone. Normally, a martial artist would only comprehend their own battle spirit at the Divine Sea realm. Although these four old men were all Destiny Decree ranked masters, their potential wasn’t too great and none of them had managed to form their own battle spirit. Thus, it was impossible to undo the battle spirit mark.

In just several dozen breaths of time Lin Ming returned to the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division. At this time, the entire area was in chaos and all the low level martial artists had already fled away as fast and far as they could have.

Bang!

Lin Ming swept his spear across the front of the great hall. The walls collapsed, revealing a pale-faced and empty-eyed Old Man Yan. Lin Ming was about to kill him with his spear, when a sudden alarming premonition flashed through his mind. His body shot backwards in a conditioned reflex.

Puff!

A wisp of spear light thrust into the ground where Lin Ming had been standing. The rock shattered like glass and an immeasurably deep hole was formed in the ground.

“Who!?”

Lin Ming waved his long spear, his entire mind on full alert.

Chapter 804 – Asura Divine Kingdom Emperor Uncle

Chapter 804 – Asura Divine Kingdom Emperor Uncle

…

…

…

3500 miles out from the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division, a black heaven-step spirit boat was rapidly flying through the air. Sitting within the boat were three middle-aged men sitting in meditation.

They were the Asura Divine Kingdom's three Demon Envoys.

Just a while ago, the three of them had chased Lin Ming at full speed for over 8000 miles, causing themselves to consume a massive amount of energy. Now, after an hour had passed, the three had already fully recovered.

At this time, the third Demon Envoy suddenly opened his eyes, a sharp light flashing through his eyes. "I've already recovered more or less, and the rest of you are the same. We're less than 4000 miles away, so I suggest that we put the spirit boat away and fly back at full speed in order to avoid any trouble."

"Mm….Demon Three is right. It's better to be safe than sorry. Come, let's go." The second Demon Envoy stood up, an adamant light in his cold eyes. Small bolts of lightning seemed to cut through his dark pupils. The fully recovered second Demon Envoy was an extremely terrifying existence.

This was the strength of a top 100 ranked Destiny Decree master.

"Our failure during this mission is our lives' greatest shame! We haven't just shamed ourselves, but we have also shamed the glory of the Asura Divine Kingdom as well! When we return, we will definitely be punished, and all of this is owed to that damned Lin Lanjian!" As the second Demon Envoy bitterly spoke of this, he clenched his fists so hard that his knuckles began to crackle. He wished he could skin Lin Ming alive, and make him suffer beyond death!

"Demon Two is right, but....although we didn't have any harvest, at least we still managed to use the Asura Divine Kingdom's secret technique to capture Lin Lanjian's energy signature. The next time we run into him, we'll definitely recognize him! Moreover, we've also learned that Lin Lanjian's trump card is that freakish speed of his. In terms of speed, he's at least equal to a top 70 ranked Destiny Decree master!"

"Humph! This Lin Lanjian must relied on some sort of flight treasure or movement technique inheritance in order to be so arrogant. Sooner or later, he will fall into our hands. No matter how fast he is, as long as we've captured his energy signature, then we can lay an array formation in advance and wait for him to step into our net."

"Right! When we go back this time, we'll plead mercy to the Divine Emperor and redeem ourselves with our future merits. We will rid ourselves of this disgrace!"

The three Demon Envoys spoke in a calm, angry tone. The more they talked, the icier their voices became, as more killing intent rolled off their bodies. At this moment, in the dim light within the boat, 3-4 flames suddenly lit up in front of them, rapidly exploding like a group of fireworks. These were the lights of sound transmitting talismans.

The three Demon Envoys minds stirred and closed their eyes to respectfully receive the messages. They thought that news of Lin Ming stealing 300,000 spirit essence stones might have reached the Asura Divine Kingdom headquarters, and that the Divine Emperor had decided to express his displeasure. However, the Divine Emperor's sound transmitting talisman should be a purple gold light, not yellow. Moreover, it was unreasonable to pass three or four sound transmitting talisman at once, and the Demon Emperor's voice wouldn't sound so messy or frantic.

What was the message?

As the three Demon Envoys listened on,, their originally calm faces that had just a hint of anger suddenly became incomparably gloomy. After the second Demon Envoy heard the message of the sound transmitting talisman, both of his eyes turned blood red. He clenched his fists together, and the blood vessels in his arms popped out like worms!

The contents of the sound transmitting talisman were: “Lin Lanjian has killed his way into the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division, washing the entire land in blood! Hall Master Situ has died in battle; the God Transforming Pill was stolen; over half of our disciples have died; and the three great Elders have also perished! The three large sects that arrived have all suffered countless casualties!”

“Ahhh!”

The second Demon Envoy crumpled the sound transmitting talisman’s flame in his hands and looked upwards, releasing a tremendous roar!

Bang!

All of the tables and chairs within the spirit boat shattered apart, as if they were glass struck by a hammer!

“Killing his way into the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division, slaying Hall Master Situ and the three great Elders, how could this be possible!?!?” Demon Three was so angry that his eyes nearly popped out of his head. It was impossible for this news to be fake.

“Lin Lanjian, I swear that I will never rest until I personally end you!” Demon Two felt as if his own heart was twisting apart. Lin Lanjian had led him out in a circle like a dog. After that, Lin Lanjian had turned back around and washed the entire Jagged Slope Mountain Branch with blood, while also looting the God Transforming Pill.

Thus, the bounty reward that they were going to present to anyone that could capture Lin Lanjian had actually fallen into his hands! What sort of ironic joke was that!?”

Moreover, just a quarter hour ago, he had even haughtily claimed to Demon Three that Lin Lanjian would not have the strength remaining to return to Jagged Slope Mountain and launch a sneak attack. Even if he had enough energy remaining, that still wouldn't be enough.

Now it seemed as if he had been made a fool of. This was his life's greatest, most dishonorable shame!

If he never cleared away this shame by killing Lin Lanjian, then this disgrace would forever remain in his heart as a heart demon. He was a top master that had a chance of reaching the Divine Sea realm in the future. However, if he attempted to break through to the Divine Sea, then this heart demon would cause his thoughts to go into chaos, possibly making him face defeat in the attempt!

Peng!

Demon Two shot out of the spirit boat, and launching himself forwards as he desperately flew towards the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division!

....

At this time in the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Divisions great hall, Lin Ming stood atop a pile of broken bricks and tiles. In front of him, Old Man Yan was standing there with listless eyes, as if he had lost his soul.

Blood pooled underneath his body and he had suffered serious losses to his life force.

As Lin Ming looked at Old Man Yan, whose spiritual sea seemed to be shattered, and then at the unfathomable deep hole caused by a sneak attack. He firmly believed that this was not an attack sent out by Old Man Yan.

“Come out!”

Lin Ming pointed his spear towards somewhere in the void.

Suddenly, an insidious, old voice sounded out from all directions. This voice was hoarse and hideous, as if it were the eclectic sound of a mix of the wails of many haunted souls.

“You are Lin Lanjian! Good! Very good!’

In front of Old Man Yan, a faint black light suddenly gathered together, accompanied by a rising black fog. This fog condensed, revealing a black-robed old man floating in the air. His face was wizened like bark, and nearly all of his hair had fallen off his head. From top to bottom, this person exuded a thick deathly energy, as if he had just climbed out of a coffin.

Despite the fact that this old man resembled a flickering candle flame in the wind without many years of life remaining, Lin Ming was actually supremely shocked. This old man’s body seemed close to the point of decay, but his eyes were as profound as the endlessly starry night. Just looking into them made it feel as if they could suck you in.

This was a top master!

Disregarding his time at the king level smelting trial in Timeworn Phoenix City, this old man absolutely the greatest powerhouse that Lin Ming had yet to lay his eyes on!

This was….

A Divine Sea powerhouse!?!?

Lin Ming felt the hairs rise all over his body. He was about to turn around and flee as quickly as he could, but just as he moved his feet he suddenly sensed that something was wrong.

Although this old man’s body seemed solid, after exploring it with his perception, he actually discovered that it was as intangible as a spirit. Moreover, it was continuously exuding the majesty of a battle spirit.

This wasn’t the black-robed old man’s true body, but rather a wisp of his battle spirit.

It was highly likely that this black-robed old man left some sort of special item at the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division. This item probably had a wisp of his battle spirit attached onto it, allowing him to instantly create a projection of his will here.

The old man looked at a Lin Ming and his lips cracked up in a smile, revealing yellow and cruel looking teeth.

While Lin Ming was outwardly disgusted and repulsed, at the sight of this old man that barely had any hair left, his mind stayed vigilant. This person was likely one of the old monsters of the Asura Divine Kingdom. This meant that today's matter of him washing the entire Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division with blood had already been made known to the high level individuals of the Asura Divine Kingdom.

This was also reasonable. Although Lin Ming had used the Chain of Stars to cut down most of the martial artists attempting to send out messages, some of them had still managed to evade his grasp, and continued transmitting the news.

"Who are you?" Lin Ming flourished his long spear, pointing it right toward the eyes of this dying old man's phantom. After realizing that this old man was nothing more than a wisp of a battle spirit, he calmed down.

Of those that had come today to the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division, the large sects like the Misty Stream Sect, Snowcap Sect, and the others were all fifth-grade sects. While the sects' top martial artists might have been Destiny Decree masters, it was still impossible for them to have a Divine Sea master. Thus, this old man facing him could only come from the Asura Divine Kingdom.

Normally, a Divine Sea powerhouse would have over 5000 years of life. A late Divine Sea powerhouse might even live up to 10,000 years. Since this old man already had such a revolting appearance, could he have already lived for 5000-6000 years?

"Jejeje, this old man is Situ Bonan, the Emperor Uncle of the Asura Divine Kingdom! Lin Lanjian, you have truly surprised me! Although I have no idea what method you used to lure away those three imbecilic Demon Envoys to then wash this Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division with blood, your destiny ends here! You were far too arrogant! A tree that leaves the forest will be destroyed by the wind! If you had escaped earlier, then you would never have fallen into my hands!"

Situ Bonan, the Asura Divine Kingdom Emperor Uncle!

Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. The Asura Divine Kingdom's current Divine Emperor was already a Divine Sea Supreme Elder. Therefore, if this Situ Bonan was truly the Emperor Uncle, then he was from an older generation than the Asura Divine Emperor! He was undoubtedly a true Divine Sea master!

No wonder he was old enough to appear like this!

Generally, once a martial artist reached the middle of their life, the fires of their life would begin to slowly weaken, and their body would also start deteriorating. On the verge of death, their strength might not even be half of what it was during their peak state. Even so, Lin Ming didn't dare to show the slightest bit of contempt for this Situ Bonan. This was because for a Supreme Elder that was nearing the end of their life like this, because they had repeatedly failed to make further breakthroughs in their cultivation, their personalities would often become much more strange, cruel, erratic, and unpredictable!

"Lian Lanjian, I have no idea where you obtained the inheritance of the Demon Emperor. It also seems as if your own inheritance comes from a different vein than my Asura Divine Kingdoms....however, my Asura Divine Kingdom are the only descendants of the Demon Emperor, and all of the Demon Emperor's legacies belong to us! No matter which corner of the Sky Spill Continent it was dug out from, all of it belongs to my Asura Divine Kingdom!"

"If you had originally been willing to hand over the Demon Emperor's Inheritance and the Demon Emperor's Armor, and had been willing to choose either: allowing us to wipe away your memories of the Demon Emperor's inheritance, or joining our Asura Divine Kingdom after having a soul spell placed within you, then I wouldn't have minded giving you a few benefits. Now, however, I will erase your very existence!"

“Wipe away my memory or plant a soul spell?” Lin Ming angrily laughed out loud. Even a soul force master would damage a martial artist’s soul if they tried to wipe away a portion of their memories. “Situ Bonan, I once heard others say that the lowliest humans are invincible. Today, I have learnt that from head to toe, you are nothing but pathetic!”

After being mocked by Lin Ming, Situ Bonan’s lips curved up in a fierce smile. “I don’t remember just how long it’s been since someone dared to talk me like that. How funny, for a mere small Revolving Core martial artist like you to speak up. Even if you are an eternally rare talent, you are nothing but a firefly in front of the brilliant moon that is my Divine Kingdom! You aren’t even worth mentioning at all! For me to kill you, that is no different than slaughtering a rabid dog!” As Situ Bonan spoke his body suddenly distorted, turning into a black smoke that sunk into Old Man Yan’s body.

Chapter 805 – The Glory of a Large Success Battle Spirit

Chapter 805 – The Glory of a Large Success Battle Spirit

…

…

…

Old Man Yan’s eyes were lifeless. As he faced the black smoke that was Situ Bonan, his expression remained as dull and blank as before.

The black smoke was like an evil ghostly spirit that plunged into Old Man Yan’s body, completely submerging into him.

Old Man Yan’s body twitched several times and then was still again, as if he were completely unaware of the black smoke.

After several more breaths of time, his eyeballs turned in his head and a strange smile appeared on his face as he suddenly soared into the sky. On his chest, there was still a massive hole there. His ribs had shattered and one could see his organs within.

An aura that belonged to Situ Bonan began to emanate from Old Man Yan’s body. His body had already become completely controlled by Situ Bonan’s battle spirit.

In fact, even before Lin Ming had returned to the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division, Old Man Yan’s spiritual sea had already been split apart and destroyed by Situ Bonan’s will. He had completely lost his mind, becoming no different from a zombie.

"To use a battle spirit to control a body in battle… so a battle spirit can also be used like this…"

A battle spirit was the condensed will of a martial artist. It could control all objects and could even be attached to a virtual energy field, increasing its strength. If so, then controlling a person's body shouldn't be impossible either.

After Situ Bonan completely controlled Old Man Yan's body, he flicked his fingers and a needle-looking treasure appeared in his palm, spinning around.

As this needle spun around it rapidly became larger. In an instant it turned into a jade green long spear!

As Lin Ming saw this long spear his eyebrows shot up. This was a peak medium-grade heaven-step treasure!

Old Man Yan used a sword so the spear obviously weren't his. It was likely that this peak medium-grade heaven-step spear was the treasure that Situ Bonan had attached his battle spirit to. After Situ Bonan received news that the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division was being massacred by Lin Ming, he had temporarily projected his will through this jade green long spear.

When this jade green long spear appeared in Situ Bonan's hands, his aura suddenly shifted. He became more demonic, more vile. Several Blood Drinking Seals shot out from the long spear, rapidly revolving around it.

There were a total of three Blood Drinking Seals!

These Blood Drinking Seals were all around half a foot wide and were a dark blood red. It seemed as if they had been soaked in blood and tempered in flesh, incomparably sharp!

Situ Bonan only had a wisp of his battle spirit arrive here so it was impossible for him to bring Blood Drinking Seals with him. Then, without a doubt, these Blood Drinking Seals had already been attached to the jade green long spear ahead of time.

"Lin Lanjian, let me show you today the power that only a Divine Sea powerhouse can possess! With your current level it's impossible for you to even injure a hair of mine!"

As Situ Bonan spoke, he lifted the spear with both hands and smashed it down at Lin Ming. Turbulent black energy rolled up into a storm. The three Blood Drinking Seals roared as they spun around, directly cutting towards Lin Ming's head.

The three Blood Drinking Seals that Situ Bonan had formed were powerful, but a mere three was far from enough. Lin Ming's spiritual concentration reached the extreme. He poured the Concepts of Thunder and Fire into the spear, aiming at Situ Bonan's already broken chest as he fiercely thrust forwards.

Penetrating Rainbow!

Bang!

The Blood Drink Seals collapsed and were sent flying away. Even with the buffer of the elastic spear, Lin Ming still felt the arc of his palm shake as if he had struck a mountain.

"Break!"

Lin Ming roared out and the power of thunderfire on his spear violently detonated. The Burning Star Flame flung into the sky, forming hundreds of flaming birds that plunged towards Situ Bonan.

Situ Bonan wasn't able to dodge in time. With a sizzling sound, half of his body was scorched black.

However, within the flames, Situ Bonan still had a crazy and diabolical smile on his face. He ignored his injures and continued to thrust the spear towards Lin Ming.

Primeval Spear Strike!

This spear only had a tiny amount of true essence attached to it, but the power of it was actually able to twist apart space. The jade green long spear seemed to vanish, suddenly flickering as it appeared in front of Lin Ming. The spear aimed at Lin Ming's dantian and shot out!

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Lin Ming's figure instantly vanished. However, Situ Bonan's understanding into the Concept of Space was extremely profound and a small dark wisp of energy still overtook Lin Ming, drilling into his body like a viper and recklessly destroying everything in its path.

Lin Ming drew back hundreds of feet, his complexion pale.

Looking from afar, Lin Ming saw that Situ Bonan's entire body had been scorched by the Burning Star Flame; even his limbs were charred black. His injuries appeared much worse than Lin Ming's, but a joking smile still hung on his face. It was obvious he didn't feel these injuries in the least.

If his opponent was a normal martial artist then Lin Ming's first strike would have severely wounded his opponent, making it impossible for them to gather potential for a second attack and wound Lin Ming.

"You stupid idiot, I have already said that someone of your level could never harm even a hair of mine!" Situ Bonan cackled darkly.

Lin Ming's eyes flashed. He didn't even seem the slightest bit panicked. Instead, he smiled. Yes, it seemed what he thought was true.

In truth, from the very start of his attack, he had only been wanting to verify some matters. He wanted to know just how a battle spirit could control a body, and now he had already figured out everything he wanted to.

By relying on only a battle spirit projection, the combat efficiency Situ Bonan could use was extremely limited. This was because he could not use his own true essence; he could only borrow the true essence within Old Man Yan's dantian.

In other words, Situ Bonan was combining the experience and techniques of a Divine Sea powerhouse with the body and energy of a fifth stage Life Destruction martial artist. Because his will didn't match the body there was problems in transferring energy around, inevitably leading to a loss in his combat strength.

Thus, using a battle spirit to control a body was simply a weak and makeshift technique. It was only for when the main body momentarily couldn't appear. Against a martial artist of the same level, using it for true combat was useless.

Situ Bonan frowned as he saw Lin Ming's smiling and assured face. "Brat, you're about to die so what are you smiling about?"

"Old dog Situ, I am smiling because of your ignorance."

"What?"

"Your so-called strength that only a Divine Sea powerhouse possesses is nothing but a battle spirit. A battle spirit is the condensation of one's ephemeral will – it is not something that can be destroyed by physical attacks. What I attacked just now was only Old Man Yan's corpse. Even if Old Man Yan's body was dismembered into pieces, you still wouldn't be injured. At that time you would only abandon his body and go find someone else to possess…"

"Humph! I guess you're not too stupid."

"I have no need for the likes of you to judge whether or not I am stupid. But, I have already deeply experienced just how stupid you are. Your battle spirit projection is simply too weak. By attaching it to that man's body you are restrained from all angles; you simply can't do anything against me!"

"Who cares if I can't harm you? You can't injure me either. As long as I follow you then the Asura Divine Kingdom masters will catch up in a quarter of an hour and you will be captured. When that time comes I will pull out your soul and torture you until you beg for death! Jejeje!” Situ Bonan recklessly smiled as if he was already anticipating the scene of Lin Ming’s capture and suffering.

Lin Ming chuckled, “That’s why I said you were ignorant. Old dog Situ… don’t you know that I’ve already long since comprehended my own battle spirit?”

“What!?”

Situ Bonan was startled. At this time, there was a loud explosion as a sound like a thunderclap roared in Situ Bonan’s ears. In the next moment, the scenery around him suddenly shifted and he had arrived within an endless desert.

World of will!?!?

Situ Bonan’s eyes widened. To drag him into the world of will, this proved that Lin Ming had already formed his battle spirit!

A late Revolving Core realm martial artist could detach his own elementary battle spirit?

This damnable brat!

Situ Bonan was greatly shocked. In a sense, a battle spirit was a power that only a Divine Sea powerhouse could possess. As for Life Destruction powerhouses, even if they were top ranked Destiny Decree masters, there was only the tiniest minority that could ever hope to form their own. As for comprehending a battle spirit as the Revolving Core realm, that could be said to have never occurred before. At least, he had never heard of this occurring in the last 1000 years!

“Very good! Lin Lanjian, you continue to surprise me at every turn!”

After Situ Bonan’s astonishment receded, a cunning smile still hung on his face as before. He didn’t panic because Lin Ming had formed his own battle spirit. Since he had been identified as an eternally rare talent by the various intelligence networks, then comprehending a battle spirit at the Revolving Core realm wasn’t too unexpected.

But how had he formed his own battle spirit? Situ Bonan was already 6000 years old. Since he reached 3000 years of age, he hadn't been able to raise his cultivation by a single small realm. Instead, the fires of his life began diminishing and his cultivation also gradually dissipated.

In this sort of situation, Situ Bonan had invested all of his energy and will into raising his battle spirit. After the repeated tempering of over 3000 years, although his body was on the verge of collapse and could even be said to be decaying, his soul and will were still incomparably formidable!

Situ Bonan had asserted that with Lin Ming's current level, it would be impossible for Lin Ming to injure him at all. And this didn't change even with the knowledge of Lin Ming's battle spirit, because even if Lin Ming possessed his own battle spirit, it was still far from a realm reaching his own!

"Brat, since you've comprehended a battle spirit, this will be perfect. I will use my powerful will to annihilate you, and show you the tip of a Divine Sea powerhouse's terrifying strength. I will let you know that an absolute disparity in cultivation cannot be made up for by some mere talent!"

Ho- !

Situ Bonan gave a loud shout and his battle spirit rushed out from the ruined corpse of Old Man Yan. His battle spirit shot into the sky, turning into a Giant Demon in the air. This Giant Demon was over 10 feet tall with thick, sinewy muscles wrapping its body. The Giant Demon grasped a jet black halberd that shimmered with a cold light.

This Giant Demon was conjured by Situ Bonan; it was the incarnation of his battle spirit's true body.

"Take my halberd!"

Explosive sounds emitted from Situ Bonan's body. He grasped the jet black halberd and smashed it down at Lin Ming.

Facing this strike, Lin Ming remained completely calm. As the halberd closed in on his head, suddenly a sharp light flashed in his eyes. The large success bronze battle spirit in his spiritual sea howled forth!

Kacha!

The void shattered. That originally chopstick-thin azure battle spirit in his spiritual sea flashed and instantly grew hundreds of millions of times larger. It turned into a titanic long spear hundreds of miles long, the spearpoint piercing through the great blue sky!

Lin Ming wielded this gargantuan long spear. It came crashing down like a toppling pillar of heaven!

“What!?”

Situ Bonan looked at the long spear that was hundreds of feet thick, and then he looked at the black halberd in his hands that was only two inches thick. An awkward and silly expression appeared on his face as his features twisted into a complex puzzle.

This majestic metallic color… this was…

Large success bronze battle spirit!?!?

Chapter 806 – Grind

Chapter 806 – Grind

…

…

…

Most martial artists that formed their own battle spirit did so once they reached the Divine Sea realm. And, these Divine Sea powerhouses had all been Emperor level talents when they were young; most of them had even been peak Emperor level talents.

After all, the vast majority of Emperor level talents failed to reach the Divine Sea in the end for various reasons. As for those existences that could sustain their talent and luck until the end, they were truly extraordinary individuals!

And of the chosen within these chosen prides of heaven, only a tiny minority would ever comprehend their own battle spirit at the Life Destruction realm. There were even some individuals that would only be able to slowly touch upon the threshold of a battle spirit after reaching the Divine Sea. They would rely on the long life granted by the Divine Sea realm and then slowly cultivate their battle spirit.

Situ Bonan was originally a battle spirit genius. As soon as his battle spirit had taken shape, he had continuously tempered it for 3000 years. From the elementary state to small success, he finally began to reluctantly trace the threshold of large success. As for reaching bronze perfection, he didn't even dare to think of that. That sort of battle spirit simply belonged in the domain of legends.

But now, at such a young age, Lin Ming had already steadily achieved a large success battle spirit. His cultivation was only at the mere late Revolving Core realm!

If Lin Ming managed to cross Life Destruction in the future and then step into the Divine Sea… Situ Bonan didn't dare to imagine just how terrifying that battle spirit would become!

"This is impossible!"

Situ Bonan couldn't believe this. He even suspected that Lin Ming's body might have been possessed by some strange old monstrous fellow.

Seeing this mountain-like long spear crash down at him, Situ Bonan crazily shouted and stabbed out with his halberd.

Roar!

Roar!

Awoo!

With a deafening clamor, four giant vicious beasts poured out from the point of Situ Bonan's halberd. Two of them were huge black pythons that were as thick as a water barrel, their bodies hundreds of feet long. One was a three-headed hell dog with its entire body covered in blood red fur and with claws and teeth as sharp as swords, and the last one was a massive red scorpion, its long red tail like a crimson lance.

The four phantom vicious beasts plunged towards Lin Ming's together.

Lin Mind completely disregarded them; his spear came smashing down as before.

Peng!

The four vicious beasts completely exploded! The long spear only slowed down for the briefest of moments before continuing to pound down at Situ Bonan's head.

The gap between the force of their wills was simply far too great. Situ Bonan's battle spirit boundary was near large success of the bronze level – this was only a tiny bit lower than Lin Ming's. However, the Situ Bonan here was only a wisp of his battle spirit, a phantom projection that he had sent out. Compared to Lin Ming's main battle spirit here, the two were simply incomparable.

Peng!

Situ Bonan's Giant Demon-form battle spirit was directly smashed into a pulp by Lin Ming's spear. Its body broke into countless pieces as it pounded deep into the ground.

In the world of battle spirits, the one with the stronger will was king.

"You…"

Situ Bonan's twisted voice came out from the mash of flesh and blood.

"Old dog Situ, didn't you want to take out my soul and torture me? Now it seems that I am the one killing you. Although this wisp of battle spirit is only the projection of your will, if I kill it then it will cause serious damage to your battle spirit!"

Bang!

Lin Ming's spear came pounding down again. Situ Bonan's wrecked body of will became even more miserable.

"Lin Lanjian! I will remember the shame of today!" Situ Bonan hysterically shouted as his will body attempted to reform again.

"Why would I care if you remember?" Lin Ming jeered. He wielded the spear with one hand and smashed it down again. "Old dog Situ, don't you understand the current situation? And you've still made such a laughable threat against me? The Asura Divine Kingdom's enmity against me can worsen no more than this; they will never rest until I am dead. Why would you think I care about further offending the Asura Divine Kingdom? One day in the future I will make sure to cut you to pieces and feed you to the dogs!"

Situ Bonan's voice became deformed by the agonizing pain he was experiencing. He coldly cursed, "Lin Lanjian, if you dare to destroy my will projection then I will personally execute you in the future! I will take your soul, refine your marrow! I will find your clansmen, your wife, your children! I will use the men to create Blood Drinking Seals and ravage the women for my path of obscenity!"

Peng!

Situ Bonan's body of will split up once more.

Lin Ming's complexion darkened.

"Good! Very good! Then I shall wait for you!"

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

Lin Ming repeatedly smashed the spear down with ruthless abandon. Situ Bonan's threat had touched upon his reverse scale; the point that could never be touched.

Situ Bonan's flesh and blood scattered everywhere. His body was twisted as if it had been stuffed in a meat grinder. This was simply not a match but a brutal grinding.

After being smashed several dozen times, Situ Bonan attempted to reform every time. But every time he attempted to do so, his body became more ephemeral and unreal than the last try.

"Old dog Situ, you really are tenacious." Lin Ming faintly smiled.

Situ Bonan was already angry to the point that he was about to burn up. He simply didn't bother talking with Lin Ming. In front of Lin Ming's large success bronze battle spirit, his wisp battle spirit will projection had nowhere to escape.

The desert in the world of will had a massive hole smashed in it. And in the sands above, pieces of meat was scattered everywhere, wriggling about like little meat insects.

"Burning Star Flame!"

Lin Ming followed his memories of the Burning Star Flame and recreated its monstrous flames in this world of will. Pillars of fire dropped down from the heavens and raging infernos completely swallowed up Situ Bonan!

The pieces of crushed meat were all burned to ashes. In the whistling flames, one could even make out Situ Bonan's final curse, "I will find you someday! I will find your family, your wife, your children! I will use the men for Blood Drinking Seals and savage the women for my path of obscenity!"

Peng!

The flames exploded. Situ Bonan had completely turned into ash, fading into the wind.

Lin Ming withdrew from the world of will. Situ Bonan's final death curse echoed in his ears. With the hatred and poison in his voice, Lin Ming didn't doubt that Situ Bonan would abandon everything he had to fulfill that curse if he could.

"There are no devils in this world. It is only because humanity itself has resentment, hate, fear, greed and evil thoughts – only then do people create illusions in their minds, viewing others as monsters and demons. But what a pity that there are too few people that can make their way out of this cage and see everything for what it truly is..."

"Demonshine, inform Yu'er and the others and have them leave the South Sea, finding some other safe destination. Make sure that they keep their whereabouts strictly confidential!" Lin Ming's eyebrows twitched. Although he used a fake name and also wore a wood spirit jade mask and there were countless lives and lands within the Sky Spill Continent, he would not underestimate the Asura Divine Kingdom's intelligence network. If there was ever a day that someone dug out his background then the consequences would be unimaginable!

Moreover, there was also Li Yifeng. That man clearly knew of his origin and had likely guessed that he was the one known as Lin Lanjian.

“No problem.” Demonshine replied. When Demonshine left the South Horizon Region with Lin Ming, he had split off a wisp of his soul to stay in the Giant Leviathan. That wisp was responsible for controlling the Giant Leviathan as well as conveying messages from him.

The four Divine Kingdoms were truly too far from the South Horizon Region. He had no sound transmitting talisman capable of passing through the millions of miles.

“We shouldn’t stay here any longer, let’s go!”

Lin Ming didn’t go to search for the wealth of the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch. He had already been delayed here for too long. The wealth of the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division was likely protected by array formations that would take time to break through. Moreover, the Jagged Slope Branch Division wasn’t too high ranking of an area; the wealth here was limited. It simply wasn’t worth the risk.

His soul force swept through the spatial ring that Hall Master Situ left behind and he clearly saw the God Transforming Pill within. Then, Lin Ming no longer delayed. He grabbed the medium-grade heaven-step long spear that Situ Bonan had left behind and also grabbed Old Man Yan’s spatial ring before launching away with Golden Roc Shattering the Void, escaping at full speed. After flying 600-700 miles away, he discovered that there were some disciples of the Asura Divine Kingdom rushing in his direction as they flew straight to Jagged Slope Mountain.

Lin Ming’s mind turned cold. He quickly dropped down and twisted the space around him, completely disappearing from sight.

With Lin Ming’s current understanding into the Concept of Space, he hadn’t reached the level of being able to rip apart space and hide in the space crack. Still, he could twist space and allowed the chaotic power of space to hide all of his energy, and even make light curve around him as to create a visual blind spot where martial artists couldn’t see him.

“Eh? That’s weird. It felt as if someone was just here, but now it’s gone.”

A middle-aged scholarly-looking martial artist appeared near the area where Lin Ming disappeared. He was surprisingly at the second stage of Life Destruction.

He had brought a squad of martial artists, all of them at the Revolving Core. If just this squad was placed in the South Horizon Region then they would already be able to form a peak fourth-grade sect. But in the four Divine Kingdoms, they were only a minor mission squad.

“Hall Master Zhan, could you have been mistaken?” Several surrounding martial artist asked. Because of the great massacre at Jagged Slope Mountain, this squad had been temporarily transferred over. They had still been rushing over to the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division to receive further orders.

“Mm, maybe…” Hall Master Zhan frowned. Although he wasn’t too strong, he was especially talented in perception, thus he had been named Hall Master of the investigative department. Normally, even Life Destruction powerhouses several stages higher than him couldn’t hide in front of him.

He investigated the area around himself once more. After not finding anything out of place, he fell into thought for a moment.

At this time, Lin Ming was hiding only 30 feet away from Hall Master Zhan. He curbed all of his energy and even stopped his breath and heartbeat. He traced his spatial ring, ready to attack at any given moment. With his strength, once he desired it he could instantly kill this squad in front of him. But, he was in a very dangerous area right now. It was possible that there was a Supreme Elder form the Asura Divine Kingdom on their way here. If they discovered him, it would be disastrous.

Hall Master Zhan still didn’t issue the order to leave. It seemed as if he was ready to investigate this area even further. But at this moment, a beam of light cut through the horizon. One could vaguely make out that it was a spirit boat. And, on top of the spirit boat was the engraving of the Asura Divine Kingdom’s Giant Demon symbol.

“It’s the Great Demon Envoy! The Great Demon Envoy has arrived!” Several Revolving Core disciples excitedly said. They had originally been frightened of the potential dangers here, but now that they saw the Great Demon Envoy arrive, all of them were immediately overjoyed.

The Asura Divine Kingdom had a total of six Demon Envoys, of which the first was also the strongest. Compared to the other five Demon Envoys he was on another level altogether. Rumors had said that the first Great Demon Envoy could block the combined attacks of the other five.

“Let’s hurry up and make our report.”

“Alright.”

As Hall Master Zhan didn’t find anything strange, he gathered his squad and left.

After half an incense stick of time, space suddenly fluctuated like ripples in water. Once Lin Ming confirmed that everyone had left, it was only then that he appeared from the distorted space…

Chapter 807 – New Destiny Decree, Title: Death God

Chapter 807 – New Destiny Decree, Title: Death God

…

…

…

“Great Demon Envoy…”

Lin Ming recalled the terrifying atmosphere that he had just experienced. It was like he was facing a mountain that couldn’t be scaled. That person was absolutely a top master!

“It looks like the Destiny Decree is much more terrifying than I imagined it to be.” Lin Ming’s solemnly said. As he completely restrained his aura and energy, he quickly ran low to the ground and entered the vast forests of Jagged Slope Mountain.

Flying was too dangerous right now. He prepared to conceal his energy and ran forwards into the forest. This way, he would be able to minimize the risk of being discovered.

Without knowing just how strong his opponent was, rashly rushing into their base wasn’t the wisest decision. In fact, as Lin Ming thought about it, he thought that maybe he had been a bit too crazy in his actions. Luckily for him, only the second, third, and fourth Demon Envoys had been guarding the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division.

If it had been the Great Demon Envoy, then Lin Ming suspected then that even the speed from the Gate of Wonder wouldn’t be enough to flee from him.

“I underestimated the power of the sixth stage Life Destruction masters. It’s impossible for me to reign over the other Life Destruction powerhouses with my speed, even with the Gate of Wonder. It’s a pity that my comprehension of the Concept of Wind is too shallow, since if my ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’ were to advance another level, then combined with the Gate of Wonder, it might be able to allow my speed to reach the peak of Life Destruction.

When Lin Ming first discovered that the Heretical God Seed could absorb thunder and fire, he had experimented with the other elements to see if they would respond in the same way. However, there hadn’t been any response to those elements from the Heretical God Seed.

Lin Ming arrived at a deeply secluded mountain valley an hour later. He found a river several feet wide and plunged into it as he completely withheld his energy, allowing himself to drift down the water. This sort of escape method was very safe, as the river would wash away any and all traces of his energy. He wouldn’t even need to use true essence to travel, lowering the possibility of being discovered to the absolute minimum.

As Lin Ming floated down the icy river waters, he remembered all of the sixth stage Life Destruction masters he had encountered ever since coming to the four Divine Kingdoms. The first one was the ancient wood spirit jade carving appraisal grandmaster that Li Yifeng had introduced him to – Guru Blueway.

However, Guru Blueway had less than a hundred years of life remaining, and his current strength was less than half of what it used to be at its peak. Moreover, he had invested all the energy of his later years into appraising wood spirit jade carvings. He had cut off his heart of battle and started to cultivate a peaceful mind and soul, and was thus not too terrifying. Because of this, Lin Ming had never realized the horrifying strength of a sixth stage Life Destruction powerhouse at their peak.

As he thought about it, a sixth stage Life Destruction powerhouse had a slim hope of breaking into the Divine Sea realm. While they were young, they were undoubtedly Emperor level talents, and certainly outstanding ones amongst at that. Once these sorts of individuals reached the sixth stage of Life Destruction, it was hard to imagine just how powerful they would be!

"I wonder what degree of strength a top 10 ranked Destiny Decree powerhouse would reach. What about a top 3 ranked master?"

As Lin Ming thought this, he felt that his future road was still unbelievably long. Today, by massacring the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division, he had publicly slapped the Asura Divine Kingdom in front of all the major powers of the central Sky Spill Continent. The Asura Divine Kingdom would never let him go now.

Lin Ming had also destroyed Situ Bonan's battle spirit projection, completely enraging that 5000-6000 year old monster. If a top ranked Destiny Decree martial artist was already so terrifying, then Lin Ming couldn't imagine just how strong Situ Bonan actually was in reality.

It could be imagined that after this fiasco, the Asura Divine Kingdom would not hesitate to put forth any price to search for him.

The Asura Divine Kingdom had a glorious and long inheritance. Not only were they powerful and influential, they had more masters than clouds in the skies. If they had over 10 Divine Sea Supreme Elders like Situ Bonan, then they were an existence nearing the level of a sixth grade sect.

Such a superpower was far from what Lin Ming could ever hope to contend with.

His biggest priority right now was to increase his cultivation as soon as possible. Otherwise, he could only be at the mercy of others.

If he couldn't increase his cultivation, then it didn't matter how talented he was, or any other advantages he had to make up for the cultivation gap between him and the others. That wasn't the orthodox method of doing things anyways.

Demonshine knew what Lin Ming was thinking. He thought for a moment and said, “Boy, you should make sure that you are mentally prepared. If you truly desire to breakthrough to Life Destruction, then I fear it won’t be so easy…”

“Mm?”

“I said….if you want to break through into Life Destruction, then you will have to pay a price several times, or even ten times larger than other martial artists. The road ahead of you is filled with difficulties, but the corresponding rewards are also just as splendid. Of course, this all depends on if you can last until the very end….”

………

Time passed. In the blink of an eye, seven days had passed, and Lin Ming had finally slowly and safely made it out of the Jagged Slope Mountain range.

At this time, news of Lin Ming’s massacre of the Asura Divine Kingdom’s Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division and washing the entire grounds with blood had spread like wildfire over the four Divine Kingdoms.

Prior to that, the Asura Divine Kingdom had already released news that Lin Ming had stolen their Asura Divine Kingdom’s inheritance and had posted a sky high bounty to capture Lin Ming.

300,000 spirit essence stones, a peak medium-grade heaven-step treasure, and a God Transforming Pill. This sky high bounty had made even the top 100 ranked Destiny Decree masters froth from the mouth in excitement. Many other martial artists had joined in groups just to search for Lin Ming.

The Asura Divine Kingdom had used several large branch divisions as their bases of operations and gathered heroes from all around the world. They had planned to establish cooperative relations with the local fifth-grade sects and form a massive intelligence net with their help.

In this sort of situation, with such a widespread and tight intelligence network searching for Lin Ming, everyone thought that Lin Ming would be like a meteor, experiencing a brief period of blazing glory before falling from the sky.

However, seven days after that announcement, an explosive situation that made everyone's eyes pop out had occurred.

With just himself and his spear, Lin Ming had killed his way into the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division. He had stolen away the bounty rewards that the Asura Divine Kingdom had prepared, played the three Demon Envoys like dogs, and then killed several hundred outstanding elite disciples of three great sects and the Asura Divine Kingdom. Even four Destiny Decree masters hadn't been spared – all of them had been slaughtered!

While the world hadn't known of Lin Ming's battle with Situ Bonan, just the killing of the four masters was enough to shock everyone. Of the four people, Hall Master Situ and Old Man Sun had been the weaker of the group, barely being able to rank on the Destiny Decree. However, the other two, Old Man Yan and Lian Shiyu, were true Destiny Decree masters. Their rankings were no worse than Corpsemancer's.

Even with the four of them joining forces, they had all been routed and slayed by Lin Ming without a single one escaping!

Such a feat was bewildering! Lin Ming killing his way along into Jagged Slope Mountain and blatantly stealing the bounty reward…such brazen audacity had left everyone dumbfounded.

This was especially true for the surviving minority of young disciples that had escaped from Jagged Slope Mountain. To them, the mere mention of Lin Lanjian's name brought about bouts of nightmares. It could be said that the name of Lin Lanjian had already become a heart demon, infesting within their souls. If they couldn't rid themselves of this, then when they tried to cross Life Destruction in the future, it was highly likely they would suffer a backlash from this heart demon.

The infamous name of Lin Lanjian only took a few days to become well known amongst everyone. This was a hero that only came once every several thousand years! Even the Divine Emperors of the four Divine Kingdoms wouldn't be able to stand side-by-side with Lin Lanjian when they were his age!

This was because most of them only knew Lin Ming's approximate age. None of them knew just how far into his twenties he was. If they were to discover that Lin Ming was actually less than 22 years old when he washed the Jagged Slope Mountains with blood, and had even destroyed Situ Bonan's battle spirit will projection, then even the description of an eternally rare talent wouldn't be enough to describe Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's talent would even cause the major powers of the Sky Spill Continent to feel unease. This was because according to this rate of growth, it was entirely possible that Lin Ming would become the number one master of the Sky Spill Continent in the future.

He would then be able to influence all matters within the entire Sky Spill Continent using just his strength!

To such a future unrivalled powerhouse with unknown intentions, it was truly difficult for the major powers to decide how to process this matter. If Lin Ming grew, then it was possible that he would pose a threat to them. It was also possible that he could prove beneficial to them.

Winning him over would be the best course of action to take. However, just because they wanted to, didn't meant they would be successful.

If they couldn't win him over and decided to kill him, then it wouldn't be a matter if they did manage to kill him. If they failed to kill Lin Ming and made an enemy instead, however, then that would truly be a nightmare that would never end.

They knew that for such a developing legend like Lin Ming, those sorts of characters often had an inestimably great destiny on their bodies. Wanting to kill someone like that would not be easy at all. Moreover, the other major forces weren't like the Asura Divine Kingdom.

There were no entangled interests and enmities between them. Unless the ruling decision makers had decided to go insane, no one would want to earn the hatred and become the enemy of a peerless talent with an infinite potential for growth.

Ten days later, a new Destiny Decree was freshly printed.

This was a revised Destiny Decree, undoubtedly published because of Lin Ming.

If Lin Ming had managed to kill four Destiny Decree masters at once, then that meant his strength had recently made enormous progress. What was strange, however, was that his cultivation hadn’t grown by much.

This caused Lin Ming to be shrouded in increasing layers of mystery.

The several great information organizations were unable to give a reasonable explanation for this. They could only ambiguously speculate that Lin Ming had encountered some massive lucky chance or cultivated an extremely mighty arcane ability. That extreme, unparalleled speed that Lin Ming had shown when he set off a bloodbath in Jagged Slope Mountain was good proof of this.

The new Destiny Decree was sold out at nearly the same moment it was released. Of those that opened the Destiny Decree, they had no interest at all in those masters whose positions hadn’t moved for dozens of years. They turned the pages to search for Lin Ming.

On the 280th page, in scarlet letters written with great flourish was a name – Lin Lanjian.

This red ink was meant for the hottest rising star of the moment. At this time, Lin Ming’s name had already been written in red twice. Being on the 280th page meant that Lin Ming’s strength was ranked between 280-290, and was also faintly considered to be the strongest of that group.

Less than 30 years old, with a mere late Revolving Core cultivation, he had managed to climb to rank 280 on the Destiny Decree. This could be called unprecedented since ancient times!

And at the lower right corner of the name ‘Lin Lanjian’, there were also a few small words written in jet black ink. This was…

‘Title: Death God’

Everyone sucked in a breath of cold air as they saw these words. The several great intelligence organizations would only confer a title to specific masters. Every master on the Destiny Decree that was able to obtain a title was either extraordinarily strong or possessed unlimited potential.

There were 360 individuals on the Destiny Decree, but only 30% of the martial artists there could obtain a title.

These titles also had special declarations. For instance, ‘Saint’, ‘Life’, ‘Heroic’, ‘Sage’, and other variations. But, ‘God’ was the highest one.

On the Destiny Decree, not counting Lin Ming, there were only ten other martial artists that had earned the title of ‘God’.

Of these ten, seven were ranked in the top ten of the Destiny Decree, while the other three were ranked in the top twenty. Although these three weren’t considered to have strength at the peak of Life Destruction, their potential was simply too great. Without accident, they would one day reach the Divine Sea.

There had never been anyone that obtained the title of ‘God’ below rank 50. Lin Ming had done so while ranked at 280!

Moreover, he was still a Revolving Core martial artist!!!

There were already a few major powers considering whether or not it was necessary and worthwhile to shield and protect Lin Ming, coming into conflict with the Asura Divine Kingdom, or perhaps even waging war with them!

They only hated that Lin Ming wasn’t their direct descendant or even one of their juniors. For such an extreme never-before-seen talent, it was worth it, even if they had to take the entire world as their enemy!

Chapter 808 – The Trial of Life Destruction

Chapter 808 – The Trial of Life Destruction

…

…

…

38,000 miles northwest of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, there was a solitary small mountain range that extended for several hundred miles, named the Five Peak Mountains. Here, the heaven and earth origin energy couldn't be considered too rich and the grade of spirit veins were barely classified as the fourth grade; they were slightly worse than the spirit veins of the Five Element Region's seven great sects.

On Five Peak Mountains, there were three small sects scattered throughout, all of them third grade sects.

Although the three sects often had their own contradictions and battles, they were able to unite together to face a common enemy. Like this, they were able to protect their low fourth grade spirit vein from being captured by other sects.

In the early morning, disciples had already taken out their brooms and were sweeping up leaves from the stone steps of the mountain. Some core disciples began their day of training. Everything seemed calm and peaceful.

This area was outside of the four Divine Kingdoms and was also remote, thus they often didn't interact with the wider world. The disciples here lived a very tranquil and languid life. Most disciples couldn't even imagine what the Divine Sea was; they would be more than satisfied by reaching the Xiantian realm.

The three sects here each had Revolving Core Highest Elders guarding them. Generally speaking, the Sovereigns and the inner court Great Elders had an extreme Xiantian cultivation.

The head of the three sects was the Whiteart Sect, because their Highest Elder was at the middle Revolving Core realm. This Highest Elder's name was Whitewood Chun. For a third grade sect to have a middle Revolving Core Highest Elder, that was already more than enough to rule over all other sects of the same rank.

Today, Whitewood Chun was sitting in his chambers at the highest peak as per usual, deep in meditation. Suddenly he had a strange feeling in his heart. He opened his eyes to take a look, when at this moment he felt a burst of cool wind pass over him. His body went limp and he slumped over, not knowing anything of what had just happened.

A blue-clothed youth appeared like ghosts and phantoms within the training chamber of the Whiteart Sect's Highest Elder. He looked at the unconscious old man at his feet and shook his head, sighing, "It seems that wanting to hide from a Revolving Core powerhouse and quietly open a cave mansion underneath his room is really difficult..."

This blue-clothed youth was Lin Ming. He had been quietly digging out his own cave underneath the Whiteart Sect Highest Elder's chambers, using the power of space to cover up the noise and fluctuations of energy. However, the results were that he had been found out so, his only choice was to make him faint.

Demonshine grumpily said, "Do you think this old fellow is an idiot or deaf? If you're digging out a hole underneath his bed then he would notice it even if he were weaker. Otherwise he would be far too stupid."

Lin Ming faintly smiled, thinking little of it. His mind stirred and his figure instantly vanished from the training chamber.

His plan was to close up in seclusion for a few months, or even half a year, and officially try to reach the Life Destruction realm. And if he chose an area without spirit veins then he would need to consume a massive amount of spirit essence stones.

Moreover, the key point was that although the heaven and earth origin energy in spirit essence stones was rich, it was slightly hot-tempered. In this aspect it was inferior to the pure and natural heaven and earth origin of spiritual lands. If he only used spirit essence stones, then some problems would inevitably arise in the future.

Thus, Lin Ming had to find a spirit land to use that had at least a fourth grade spirit vein or higher. But, these sorts of places were all occupied by sects. To find an ownerless spirit vein was impossible.

Lin Ming could only hide himself within another sect and secretly cut open his own cave mansion.

To hide from the eyes of a great sect was obviously impossible. Thus, he looked around until he finally came to this Five Peak Mountain.

The chamber of the Whiteart Sect's Highest Elder was naturally the area of the entire Five Peak Mountain with the purest and richest origin energy. Thus, Lin Ming had chosen to carve his cave mansion here.

After making Whitewood Chun faint, Lin Ming was free to do as he pleased. He quickly completed the cave mansion.

Being cautious first and foremost, Lin Ming laid down a good number of array formations at the entrance of the cave mansion. There were defense arrays, concealing arrays, warning arrays, counterattack arrays, and all other arrays that could be imagined.

After this was completed, Lin Ming sat down on the stone bed, feeling satisfied with the density of heaven and earth origin energy around him. Then, he took out a half-foot long wood spirit jade box from his spatial ring. He unraveled the layers of seals on it, revealing the engraved Giant Demon design on the box. This was the God Transforming Pill!

“Lin Ming, if you want to attack the Life Destruction bottleneck then using a mere God Transforming Pill is far from enough!” Demonshine warned. When they had left Jagged Slope Mountain, Demonshine had warned Lin Ming that for him to reach the Life Destruction realm, the difficulty would be several times or even a dozen times harder than it would be for a normal martial artist.

A God Transforming Pill was greatly beneficial to a high stage Life Destruction powerhouse. It could even increase their chances of successfully becoming a Divine Sea Supreme Elder.

But when put in front of Lin Ming, it wasn’t even enough to have him successfully break through to Life Destruction. This truly made one feel as if they had been wronged.

“Demonshine, can you explain in detail to me about my situation in crossing Life Destruction?”

Demonshine jumped out of Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, gathering into his pug form in front of him and said with an air of great importance, “Lin Ming, this Saint has once told you that even in the Realm of the Gods, there aren’t many martial artists that dual cultivate body and law. There are countless, infinite geniuses in the Realm of the Gods, and everyone there is well aware that a dual body and law cultivating martial artist is stronger than other martial artists of the same level. Yet even so, there are very, very few martial artists that choose that path of dual cultivation. Do you know why that is?”

Demonshine didn’t speak directly of the difficulties of Life Destruction, instead first starting with body transformation. It was obvious that body transformation was closely linked with impacting the Life Destruction realm. This was already something that Lin Ming had anticipated.

Crossing through Life Destruction was to be reborn.

And body transformation was the process of tempering the body, washing the marrow and cleansing the flesh!

Since both focused on the body, it was inevitable that they were related.

Lin Ming didn’t reply, instead continuing to listen to Demonshine’s explanation.

Demonshine said, “There are four reasons why the geniuses within the Realm of the Gods rarely practice body transformation.”

“The first reason is that dual cultivating body and law takes energy. Humans have a limited amount of energy they can spend. Even if body transformation is a bit easier to train in, it still requires a good deal of energy to practice. Just the essence gathering system is more than enough to occupy your time. And isn’t saying that you’ll reach the peak of martial arts easier said than done? Rather than wasting all your energy with a dual cultivation system, sometimes it might be better to take a single road and travel down it even further.”

Lin Ming nodded. Indeed, in the memory of those Realm of the Gods Supreme Elders, there was no concept such as the so-called ‘martial arts peak’. As for what end the ultimate limit of martial arts was, no one had ever been able to define it. Even the highest peak had a higher peak; nobody would dare to ever say they reached the top. For a general martial artist, the essence gathering system alone was enough to occupy all of their time and energy.

“Secondly, practicing body transformation requires far too many resources. For essence gathering system martial artists, they can make breakthroughs by swallowing pills at their level. But, a body transformation martial artist can eat a bunch of pills and still not feel full. Especially when you reach the later stages, the total amount of resources you’ll need only becomes more and more terrifying. Even those great and respected family clans in the Realm of the Gods cannot withstand such a burden!”

Lin Ming agreed with this point even more. In the past, the Heaven Opening Pill was a medicine that low level essence gathering martial artists could only ever dream of. Even the calm and open-hearted Qin Ziya found it hard to maintain his concentration in the face of such temptation.

But Lin Ming couldn't complete Tempering Marrow even if he gulped down Heaven Opening Pills like candy. Even the more precious Shattered Demon Heart Crystal hadn't been enough. In order to complete 100% Tempering Marrow, Lin Ming had to absorb a several ten thousand year Nirvana Dragon Roots. That had been a heavenly material that even Life Destruction martial artists would go crazy over!

"Third, while you can pile on pills and resources to pass the early stages of body transformation, once you approach the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, not only will you need a massive amount of resources but you will also need to comprehend the source Laws. The further you go in body transformation, the more and more difficult it will be to cultivate! There was once an unrivalled talent who had dual cultivated body and law to an extremely high boundary. But, his body transformation system cultivation speed couldn't keep up with his essence gathering system speed and he eventually turned into a useless weakling.

"And the fourth reason, which is the main point of what I wish to say today, is that it increases the difficulty of crossing Life Destruction!

"When an essence gathering system martial artist crosses Life Destruction, the first three stages are to reform the body. You will melt back into your embryonic form and be rebirthed from a mortal, reshaping your very flesh. As for the next three stages, that is to shatter your core and reform your dantian. As for the seventh stage and the eighth stage, that is to reform the soul. Many martial artists miss out on this boundary and decide to reach the Divine Sea at only the sixth stage of Life Destruction. Without having tempered their soul, these powerhouses are destined to mediocrity.

As Demonshine spoke here he paused, letting Lin Ming mull over his words. Then, he continued, "The following is the key point. As you cross through the first stage of Life Destruction, your very body will decompose into its most basic components before reforging itself. This means that the martial artist's physical body will become like their dantian, able to store and save true essence at will. Thus, this is similar to body transformation's tempering of the body where the body becomes invincible like a treasure, but there is a fundamental difference. And, this is the point. Through body transformation, the body becomes that much tougher and much more difficult to decompose. You must consume far, far more energy to do so, and the process of reforming your body is exceedingly dangerous!

“You have now opened the third of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and you have also tempered your body with the profound gold divine fruit. Your body is comparable to a high-grade earth-step treasure. If you wish to fully break down your body then it will be difficult, far too difficult!”

Demonshine emphasized ‘difficult’ twice in order to stress how dangerous and hard it would be for him to cross Life Destruction. Then he switched the tone and said, “Although crossing Life Destruction is impossibly difficult, if you can achieve this then you will obtain an enormous advantage. That is that your body will be able to maintain the toughness of the body transformation system, being nearly invulnerable, while also being able to gain the spiritual body of the essence gathering system, freely absorbing true essence with your very flesh!”

Lin Ming was silent as he listened to Demonshine’s words. When he had first decided to officially step onto the road of dual body and law cultivation, Demonshine had warned him that this road he would travel was extremely difficult.

However, since Lin Ming had chosen so, he would unwaveringly walk down that road until he completely opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and even the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. In the memories of that Realm of the Gods Supreme Elder, he had heard that those martial artists who could open the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace would gain infinite strength. Their fists could break through the endless blue skies and their steps could sunder the earth.

And according to Demonshine, the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace involved the source Laws. Did this mean that all cultivation methods were connected to each other? Once he reached the limit of body transformation, would he reach the same origin as the essence gathering system?

So, wasn’t it even easier to touch upon the very source Laws of this universe by dual cultivating in body and law?

Lin Ming temporarily didn’t think about such remote matters. He opened the wood spirit jade box, revealing a thumb-sized green pill. This was the God Transforming Pill.

This pill contained a heaven and earth origin energy that was compressed to a terrifying degree. The entire pill seemed as if it were a black hole of energy, not releasing even the slightest bit of origin energy.

No matter how difficult it was to cross Life Destruction, he would walk down that road one step at at time.

Lin Ming swallowed the God Transforming Pill without hesitation. First, there was no reaction, and then slowly a flow of heat began to spread out into his meridians, passing into his limbs and bones.

Because of the highly compressed true essence in the God Transforming Pill, it was extremely difficult to refine. It could take a hundred days to fully assimilate with him, perhaps even longer. But Lin Ming didn’t worry. A bit at a time, he began to impact the Life Destruction realm.

Chapter 809 – The Second Revolving Core

Chapter 809 – The Second Revolving Core

…

…

…

In a cave mansion deep under Five Peak Mountain, silently and slowly, Lin Ming was peacefully refining the God Transforming Pill. Like this, a day passed.

It was only that evening when the Whiteart Sect's Highest Elder, Whitewood Chun, finally woke up from his coma.

He immediately realized what had happened to him and his breath stopped in his throat; he didn't even dare to open his eyes. First he restrained his energy and then meditated as he listened to everything around him.

After confirming nothing strange was amiss, he then released his perception. By all appearances, he had just had a bout of dizziness from old age and naturally fainted for a brief period of time.

If Whitewood Chun had to be honest with himself, this was obviously impossible. He wiped the cold sweat streaming down his forehead. From before and now, he was certain that a super master had quietly knocked him out and then left. As for what goal this mysterious master had, he had no idea at all.

If this sort of character ever gave birth to a dark thought then they could kill him the same as pulling weeds from the ground. It wouldn't be difficult at all.

Whitewood Chun really couldn't figure out what a mere third grade sect like his had that could interest such a top master. He was nothing but surprised.

He didn't spread the news of this happening. Towards this level of character, whatever they planned was something he didn't have the qualifications to speculate about.

For several days, Whitewood Chun lived in in seclusion, quietly meditating as he kept full vigilance of his surroundings. However, he never noticed anything strange underneath him.

Like this, two months passed by.

During his close door seclusion, Lin Ming had turned 22 years old. Most of the God Transforming Pill had been absorbed by him. Now, the only part left was the final core.

The core was also the portion of the God Transforming Pill that contained most of its essence. Over 60% of the God Transforming Pill's total energy was centralized within. This was also the key part of refining the God Transforming Pill.

Lin Ming silently revolved his true essence, triggering the energy in the core.

It was similar like adding a spark to a tank of oil; the entire God Transforming Pill began to violently combust.

Energy blazed with incomparable effervescence. Lin Ming could clearly feel a burning pain rush through his meridians. He could only stare on as the energy within his dantian suddenly soared up, as if his dantian would crack apart at any moment.

When a martial artist went from the late Revolving Core realm to Life Destruction, this was when the accumulated true essence in their dantian reached the limit that could be contained. Then, it would naturally detonate and the energy would break out of the dantian, surging through all of the surrounding meridians.

A martial artist's meridians had a far smaller ability to hold true essence than the dantian. As a result, the meridians would completely shatter and the massive amount of energy would rage out, destroying the body, dismantling the flesh, sending blood flying everywhere!

The meridians and blood vessels would be first and then the flesh and organs.

Finally, all that would be left over was the skeleton and brains.

Common sense dictated that once a person became like this, they were already deader than dead. However, through the power of unknown Laws that governed the universe, even though the body had completely disintegrated into a puddle of meat, their energy would be fused into this puddle and it would be imprisoned into a contained area. This would actually form a primordial life soup that sustained their soul, maintaining the fires of their life.

This primordial life soup was just like the amniotic fluid within a mother's womb. Finally, heaven and earth origin would enter and create new life, a new body.

And in such a new body, because of the energy reformed throughout, this would then condense into a spirit body.

Because the entire process of Life Destruction involved having the body decompose into nothing but the brain and skeleton, this could be called suffering a pain beyond death.

Moreover, a martial artist needed to maintain complete mental clarity throughout this entire process in order to use their energy to create a shield around them that sustained their life, making sure the fires of their life stayed vibrant and their soul didn't scatter.

If a martial artist's mind wavered because of the pain and they lost their concentration, then the cage that confined their primordial life soup would give way. Once that confinement collapsed, then they were beyond dead!

This was why crossing Life Destruction was known as the most dangerous boundary, especially to martial artists that didn't have a solid foundation. Even if one had the support of many heavenly materials that could increase the chances of success for crossing Life

Destruction, it was still possible that an accident could occur, causing one to instantly die without any chance for redemption!

Moreover, the higher stages of Life Destruction one progressed the more difficult it would become. Stage after stage after stage, this truly left one in despair!

And the Divine Sea realm was even farther away. This made Life Destruction martial artists feel as if a cold phantom saber was always hanging over their heads. Their lives were filled with constant fear and trepidation due to this. Many martial artists that didn't have a solid foundation and wouldn't even dare to cross just the first stage of Life Destruction, clinging to their current realm, wavering in their decision to go further.

And time was the most precious commodity to a martial artist. If they wasted their time, they would have less and less life, the fires of their life would become increasingly weak and their chances of crossing further stages of Life Destruction would become even worse. This was the reason why Old Man Yan, Lian Shiyu, and all those other wizened Elders had gone crazy over the Life Bestowing Heaven Pill.

Life Destruction realm martial artists only had two choices.

They could choose when the fires of their live were at their most vibrant and undertake this trial of life or death, possibly gaining a stronger power and a longer life.

Or they could condemn themselves to mediocrity, letting the fires of their life burn out until they became nothing but dirt.

There was no choice to wait until their life reached its end and gamble on a final bet. This caused many Life Destruction martial artists to live in an abyss of endless mental anguish, making it so that their hope to reach the Divine Sea reached manic levels of craziness.

Like this, several more days passed. The core of the God Transforming Pill within Lin Ming's dantian continued to melt.

Lin Ming had already become infinitely close to the peak of the late Revolving Core realm. Now that he absorbed this God Transforming Pill that could even greatly increase the strength of a high stage Life Destruction martial artist, the energy in his dantian had reached absolute saturation. Even his Black Hole Revolving Core couldn't hold any more.

Waves of terrible pain emitted from Lin Ming's stomach. The energy capacity of his dantian had reached its limits.

Lin Ming grit his teeth, persisting through the pain. Beads of sweat dripped down his forehead and blue veins rose like wriggling worms.

When the energy reached the extreme, there was suddenly an explosive noise in his dantian. Lin Ming felt like a thunderclap had sounded out in his ears. The true essence within his dantian had finally detonated due to the high degree of compression.

A raging, tyrannical flow of energy smashed into the barrier of his dantian, crashing into Lin Ming's tough body.

Peng!

A fierce collision occurred! The wall of meat tore apart and blood shot out. All of the meridians near the dantian were torn to pieces and the explosive energy was also weakened.

Puff!

Lin Ming spat out a mouthful of blood. This blood shot forth like an arrow, piercing through the rock in front of him.

His body suddenly shook and he slumped to the ground. His face was deathly pale and he trembled all over. His lips were a deep vibrant purple and blood constantly flowed out of his mouth.

His belly and his clothes had been all torn up. He was covered with blood, but this was it; his body didn't continue to break down. His tough physical body had finally managed to cage the erupting true essence. Lin Ming's attempt to cross Life Destruction had completely failed.

As Lin Ming wiped the blood from the corners of his lips, he only felt a deep pain in his stomach. As he looking within himself, he discovered that the God Transforming Pill's energy that had attacked his dantian had abruptly compressed into a solid form after being defeated.

Because the Black Hole Revolving Core had reached its saturation point, that fog of melted energy hadn't been able to latch onto the surface of the Black Hole Revolving Core. So, it slowly condensed, compressing in on itself until it became a bean-sized crystal nucleus that slowly revolved around the spinning Black Hole Revolving Core.

In other words, two Revolving Core crystal nuclei had appeared within Lin Ming's dantian!

"How could this be..."

Lin Ming was alarmed. This second crystal nucleus was smaller than the Black Hole crystal nucleus and the energy contained within was also smaller. But, this was a true second crystal nucleus. It was in no way inferior to an ordinary early Revolving Core martial artist's crystal nucleus!

This sort of situation was simply unheard of.

"Demonshine... this is..."

"Uh..." Demonshine also stared blankly on, completely dumbfounded. Although he knew it was difficult for body transformation martial artists to cross Life Destruction, he actually didn't know just what degree of difficulty it was. As for what accidents could occur, he wasn't sure about that either. After all, there were far too few dual body and law cultivating martial artists in the Realm of the Gods.

"Boy, you've really done it this time. This Saint has a feeling that if you really do cross through Life Destruction someday, that will truly be a heaven-shaking, earth-shattering event. Your dantian is the same as a powder keg now; there is far too much energy condensed within. That smaller second crystal nucleus will definitely explode when you cross Life Destruction and it will certainly combine with the true essence already in your dantian, crushing and pulverizing your body until it can't disintegrate any more!"

Lin Ming thought for a moment. What Demonshine said was highly possible. Although this small crystal nucleus in his dantian could help increase the energy, it was still a dangerous ticking time bomb. If the explosive energies of both crystal nuclei combined together, then the terrifying power produced at that time would be hard to imagine.

Demonshine manifested outside of Lin Ming's spiritual sea. He scratched his doggy chin with his little paws, a look of total concentration on his face as he observed Lin Ming's dantian. After some pondering, he said, "The more thoroughly your body breaks down, the better the spirit body you can form afterwards. Perhaps you might even have a chance of crossing the ninth stage of Life Destruction. But, the basis of this is that you can withstand the terrifying impact then. This is the price you will have to pay. If the energy is too potent and it blows you up to death then, well, it's been fun knowing you."

For the number one talent of the Sky Spill Continent to die while crossing the first stage of Life Destruction, that would simply be the greatest joke of the heavens.

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. He said, "Demonshine, let's not consider whether or not I can withstand the impact of energy. What I want to know now is how could I successfully cross through Life Destruction? If swallowing a God Transforming Pill doesn't work, should I go look for other heavenly materials and treasures again?"

Even though Lin Ming had resolved himself to walk down the road of dual body and law cultivation, he was still left speechless. Not only did the body transformation system require a massive amount of heavenly treasures to advance, even the associated essence gathering system was affected. A God Transforming Pill was enough to raise the cultivation of a high stage Life Destruction Martial artist, but it couldn't even allow him to cross the first stage of Life Destruction.

Demonshine raised up his paws in exasperation, "This Saint's knowledge of dual body and law cultivation is limited. But in short, what I do know is that staying here in seclusion definitely won't help you cross Life Destruction. You're just wasting time here. What you need to do is go out and find some lucky chance or spell of fortune or revelation somewhere. That might be of some help."

A martial artist would often face bottlenecks during their cultivation. Once they bumped into this bottleneck, no amount of tortuous seclusion could solve this problem. All they could do was go out and adventure through the world, searching for some fortuitous event that could help them make a successful breakthrough.

These fortuitous events came in all sorts of forms. Some were life and death battles, some were comprehending Laws, some were even inspired from the beauty of the world. Once one had a stroke of revelation they could enlighten themselves and make a breakthrough in their cultivation.

Before reaching Life Destruction, Lin Ming had never encountered a bottleneck before.

Houtian, Xiantian, Revolving Core, he had broken through all of those realms in a single attempt.

This was his first time facing a bottleneck.

If this were usual times then going out for some adventuring wouldn't be a problem. But now, the Asura Divine Kingdom wished that it could overturn the world to look for him. Going out anywhere at this time was a naturally dangerous affair.

"Just how can I successfully break through Life Destruction?"

Lin Ming frowned, his eyebrows wrinkling together. The body transformation technique had become an obstacle in his breakthroughs. But, this was the price of seeking greater strength – there were gains and losses. In any case, he had to quickly break through Life Destruction, otherwise his situation would only become much more dangerous.

Chapter 810 – Crisis

Chapter 810 – Crisis

…

…

…

West Imperial City was the third largest city of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom and also one of the 10 largest cities within the central region of the Sky Spill Continent. There were three great aristocratic families here as well as a specialized organization called Destiny Grasp.

The mortals had a saying: stand upright at 30, be confused at 40, grasp your destiny at 50. The meaning behind this was that by the time a mortal was 50 years old, their lives were finally set in stone and they knew what their own destiny would be like.

The organization Destiny Grasp's name also came from this.

It was the greatest intelligence organization within the entire Sky Spill Continent. Destiny Grasp was the one that had begun the Destiny Decree, jointly working with several other intelligence organizations to compile a the information together for a list.

Thousands of years ago, Destiny Grasp had only been ranked fourth or fifth amongst the various intelligence networks in the continent. Later, it had used a massive amount of energy and resources in order to compile the Destiny Decree and ensured that the rankings were essentially correct. After so many years, Destiny Grasp's fame and glory had continued to reach new heights until it gradually developed into its current scale.

The building that housed Destiny Grasp seemed very square and ordinary. At the first level of the building, there were a few people sitting around drinking tea as they chatted; it looked like a very ordinary teahouse. But, if one carefully investigated they would discover that this building was covered in powerful spells. Even a Destiny Decree ranked master could be severely wounded if they were caught up in these spells.

“This is Destiny Grasp which compiles the Destiny Decree…” Lin Ming looked up at the building and saw the name of the organization written in large characters on a signboard. Then, he stepped inside.

“What rank of news would you like? Ordinary? Secret?” Within Destiny Grasp, a gray-robed middle-aged man asked from a chair behind the counter. He began to size up Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was wearing a wood spirit jade mask as before, except that he had switched for one with a new look. This one had been personally carved by him.

In the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, when a martial artist attended an auction or went to a hidden city square, they would often wear a wood spirit jade mask for security purposes. When a martial artist went to an intelligence organization to inquire about news, many of them would also choose to wear a wood spirit mask to hide their identity. Thus, it was common to see a martial artist with Lin Ming’s appearance at Destiny Grasp.

“What’s the cost?”

“One spirit essence stone per article of ordinary news. As for secret news, that is depended on the value of the news itself. It starts at 50 spirit essence stones and there is no cap to how far it can rise. You can also inquire about specific things, but that will cost additional fees in accordance with the question.”

There were many martial artists that came to Destiny Grasp to inquire about certain information. For instance, looking for specific objects or searching for specific people. The cost of asking such questions was often quite high. Depending on how precious the information was, it could cost several thousand or even tens of thousands of spirit essence stones.

“Ordinary news. About the four Divine Kingdoms, lucky chances, and mystic realms. I’ll take 20.”

Lin Ming casually said. Ordinary news wasn’t necessarily worthless. It was just already widespread and one didn’t need to go through Destiny Grasp to find out, thus why the price was set low.

But Lin Ming had been in closed door seclusion for the last three months. He didn’t know anything about the four Divine Kingdoms’ current movements, especially those of the Asura Divine Kingdom. It was best for him to have an approximate understanding so that he wouldn’t be caught off guard later.

The gray-robed middle-aged man pulled out 20 cards and gave them to Lin Ming. Ten of them had information of the four Divine Kingdoms and the other ten listed lucky chances and Mystic Realms.

Lin Ming looked through them.

‘The Nine Furnace Crown Prince Yang Yun has already decided to move against the great trading companies… if this can be ordinary news, then it seems that almost everyone knows about already.’

Lin Ming looked at the second card. It said that Yang Yun had already sealed up two of the three great trading companies, leaving the Heavencraft Trading Company alone for now. Complete and proper evidence had been presented and all of their property had been confiscated.

‘Asura Divine Kingdom really has it out for me… the reward for my capture is 800,000 spirit essence stones, two God Transforming Pills, and even a Life Bestowing Pill. They’ve really laid down the capital this time.’

Lin Ming faintly smiled, not caring much. Something like robbing a reward could only occur once; it was nearly impossible to succeed the second time. Otherwise the Asura Divine Kingdom would have perished long ago.

‘The Asura Divine Kingdom’s Great Demon Envoy and an Imperial Scholar are both leading the operation to capture me. It seems that the second, third, and fourth Demon Envoy also wish to atone for their sins. That Great Demon Envoy must be that fellow I saw that day…’

Lin Ming recalled the Destiny Decree master he had sensed from afar as he was fleeing the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division. His energy had been terrifying. If Lin Ming really did encounter him then it would likely be difficult to escape.

Lin Ming put aside the rest of the cards concerning the Divine Kingdoms and then looked at those describing mystic realms, lucky chances, and things like that. Although he didn’t hold out on too much hope, there was still a slight possibility he would be able to find some stroke of fortune from these cards.

‘Mm? The Northwest Great Desert has successfully collected all of the jade keys and can open the mystic realm left behind by the ancient Holy Lord? And they have invited the heroes of the world to join them in exploring, as long as they can pay a price that could move the Northwest Great Desert?’

As Lin Ming saw this news his heart stirred. After he killed Xuan Wuji he had discovered one of these jade keys in his spatial ring. Because of that jade key he had come into fierce conflict with the Northwest Great Desert’s Wang Yichan. The two of them had clashed on the day of his grand wedding banquet.

Afterwards, Lin Ming had exchanged the jade key for that mysterious young girl named ‘Jue’. She had come from the Forsaken God Clan and was distantly related to the slumbering goddess in the Eternal Demon Abyss.

He didn’t expect that the Northwest Great Desert had finally collected all of the mystic realm keys and were preparing to open up the ancient ruins of this Holy Lord.

“Hehe, inviting the world of the heroes of the world as long as they can pay a price that moves them? That sounds nice to hear, but this Northwest Great Desert is likely looking for some free scouts to search the way ahead of them and die to all those traps for them." Demonshine's voice suddenly sounded out from Lin Ming's spiritual sea. "I can bet you that they will not invite martial artists that are too strong or are from the four Divine Kingdoms. They will likely only bring along martial artists that don't have strong backgrounds."

"Sounds about right. Even so, there will still be people that go in and gamble that they will stumble upon some great lucky chance there."

"Mm? You want to go?" Demonshine knew that Lin Ming had come to Destiny Grasp mostly to ask for lucky chances in the hope of seeking a turning point to break through Life Destruction. This Holy Lord Mystic Realm was actually quite the good opportunity.

There was likely some extremely precious and valuable heavenly treasure within. Or, if he could experience special life or death tribulations within, he might gain the ability to break through to Life Destruction.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment, not immediately responding. If he went to this Holy Lord Mystic Realm then there would be layers upon layers of dangers. And most importantly, he couldn't expose his identity. Trying to conceal his status in front of a group of masters was easier said than done.

Moreover, he had no understanding of this Holy Lord Mystic Realm. After he went in, he wouldn't have the slightest advantage of all. There was simply no way for him to struggle with a Holy Land level power like the Northwest Great Desert.

Once his status was revealed then Lin Ming absolutely believed that Wang Yichan, who had a grudge against him, would attempt to capture him alive and trade him in for the Asura Divine Kingdom's rewards.

If he went to this Holy Lord Mystic Realm then it could really be called walking into death's door. There were nine chances to die and only one chance to live!

Although Lin Ming didn't fear danger, he wouldn't easily try out this sort of hazardous adventure that he had absolutely no ability to control.

And even if he did go, that didn’t mean he would successfully cross Life Destruction afterwards.

The date for the mystic realm’s opening was two months away. He still had a month to decide before he would have to leave.

Lin Ming didn’t immediately make a decision. He didn’t stay in the city for too long. During the evening he left West Imperial City and slipped into the nighttime wilderness.

His status was extremely sensitive at the moment. Although he wore a wood spirit jade mask, it was inevitable that there would be people eyeing him. After all, it was easy to form an association since he was a late Revolving Core martial artist who wore a wood spirit jade mask.

Lin Ming found a random cave in the wild and laid down several defensive spells and warning spells nearby. He carefully concealed all traces he left behind and then began to meditate in silence.

For safety’s sake, Lin Ming had already decided to change location every night as long as he was within the borders of the four Divine Kingdoms.

Like this, several hours passed. The moon hung high in the cloudy sky.

Suddenly, as Lin Ming was in meditation, his eyes popped wide open and he went on high alert.

He could feel a dangerous atmosphere approaching and yet his warning spells hadn’t been triggered. It was clear that this other party had purposefully avoided them. They were definitely not common individuals!

‘Are they from the Asura Divine Kingdom? How did they find me? In the Sky Spill Continent’s central region, even if there aren’t 10,000 late Revolving Core martial artists wearing a wood spirit jade mask there should still be at least 8000.

‘Moreover, this is still the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. It is impossible for the Asura Divine Kingdom to place too many of their spies and eyes here. So how could they find me so quickly? Could they have begun following every single late Revolving Core martial artist that wears a wood spirit jade mask?

‘Or do they have some special method to break past a wood spirit jade mask’s concealment?’ This thought flit through Lin Ming’s mind before he denied it. If they had this method then they would have likely detected him at the start.

At this time, the uninvited guests outside finally stepped within range of a surveillance array he had set outside. From a battle array disc in the cave, Lin Ming finally saw the phantom images of these people.

With a single glance, he immediately sucked in a cold breath of air.

The second, third, and fourth Demon Envoy were all here. And beyond that, they were respectfully following behind three others. It was obvious that these three had a much higher status than them!

Those three at front were a middle-aged man, an old woman with a walking stick, and a soft and delicate little boy.

This little boy appeared very cute and lovable, but Lin Ming could actually sense a terrifying energy exuding from his body. It was as if a demon was contained within that little boy’s body. And that old woman with a walking stick was wreathed in evil, demonic energy. Her hair was twisted and bundled up like a group of pythons. She simply looked like an old witch.

Out of the three, the most normal-seeming was the black-clothed middle-aged man. He was tall with broad shoulders and eyes as profound as the nighttime stars. He emitted a very familiar atmosphere.

‘Great Demon Envoy?’

Lin Ming recognized this middle-aged man. Without doubt, he was the Great Demon Envoy that Lin Ming had spotted at the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division! Even though he had been within a spirit boat at the time, the atmosphere he exuded had still startled Lin Ming! The other two were likely to be Imperial Scholars of the Asura Divine Kingdom.

‘Run!’

This was Lin Ming’s first thought as well as his only thought.

Not to mention those three horrifying existences in the front, even the second, third, and fourth Demon Envoys, any one of them was someone that Lin Ming couldn’t contend with!

And it was obvious that they had already locked onto the area he was at. It was impossible to slip away from here without notice.

If this became a match of speed, could he really compare?

Lin Ming didn’t even have the slightest bit of confidence in this. Since they knew of his advantage in speed, it was impossible that they wouldn’t be prepared in advance. With the Asura Divine Kingdom’s deep heritage, how could they not have a means to greatly increase their own speed?

This was a killing party that specifically targeted him!

Chapter 811 – Killing Party

Chapter 811 – Killing Party

…

…

…

“He should be nearby. Seal off this area and dig up this entire place! We have to find that damned brat!”

The second Demon Envoy said, his voice thick with hate. The battle at Jagged Slope Mountain was his life’s greatest shame. If he couldn’t personally catch Lin Ming then it would be near-impossible to eliminate his heart demon. It would become a great impediment when he tried to break through to the Divine Sea.

“Demon Two, are you sure?” The black-clothed old woman abruptly said, her voice hoarse and wretched, like two pieces of sandpaper grinding against each other.

“At least 70% positive!” The second Demon Envoy took out a pair of jade slips from his spatial ring and compared them, gritting his teeth all the while.

“I hope you do not make the same mistake again!” The black-clothed old woman said in an icy tone.

“Honored Imperial Scholar, I have already sworn that if I cannot find Lin Ming within the year I shall cut off both my hands!” The second Demon Envoy said. He pressed a black jade slip between his eyebrows and revealed a very pained expression. A black energy flowed out from his between his eyebrows before being completely absorbed by that black jade slip.

Then, the black jade slip began to shine with a brilliant light, shining its splendor on the other jade slip in his hands as if there was some connection between them.

This was a unique demonic path secret searching technique utilized by the Asura Divine Kingdom. It used a special method to search one's divine soul, recording all memories of appearance, size, energy, aura, and everything else onto a jade slip.

Afterwards, these jade slips were copied and dispersed into all the branch divisions of the Asura Divine Kingdom. Then, their disciples would burn the information from the jade slip in their mind. When they encountered someone whose energy matched that of the jade slip, then those disciples would inform the Great Demon Envoy and the Asura Divine Kingdom Imperial Scholar, having them rush here at the fastest speed possible.

A wood spirit jade mask could conceal one's appearance, but it couldn't disguise one's energy signal.

Of course, there was a massive flaw in this technique and that was that the accuracy rate was extremely low. In these several months, many disciples had discovered martial artists that they believed were Lin Ming but all of them had been wrong.

However, the several Demon Envoys and the Imperial Scholars would not ignore any possibility. When someone notified them, they would rush over as soon as they could to confirm whether it was true or false.

During this time in the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, they had done nothing else. This was because all of their time was spent chasing after Lin Ming!

Seeing that the distribution of black light from the two jade slips was so similar, the second Demon Envoy became much more determined. "Honored Imperial Scholar, I have at least a 90% assurance that I am correct!"

"Good! Lay down an array formation and seal off this area. Be careful! This boy's understanding in array formations far surpasses ours. But it doesn't matter either way. As long as the array formation can delay him for just a bit of time then we'll be able to capture him!” The delicate and tiny little boy said. He was wearing small-fitting red clothes and his voice sounded extremely childish, but his eyes actually flashed with a thick killing intent, making everyone who looked into them feel ice cold.

The Great Demon Envoy took out array flags from his spatial ring and was about to lay them down, when in front of them a sudden explosion occurred. Half of a mountain was instantly blown away!

In the dark curtain of night, a flame shot into the heavens. A vague form rushed out from the chaos, flashing into the horizon like ghosts and gods, instantly disappearing!

This speed simply couldn’t be described with words.

As the red-clothed little boy saw Lin Ming escape, he didn’t panic at all. He cackled and then coldly said, “He’s really here! Chase after him!”

The old woman with a walking stick took out a spirit boat from her spatial ring that shined with a golden light. She tossed it out and the spirit boat rapidly grew to a gigantic size. All six people leapt on it together.

“Brat, today you will not be able to ascend into heaven or descend into hell. This is my Asura Divine Kingdom’s Godspeed Boat. It was brought here to especially deal with you! I want to see just how you’ll run away now!”

As the old woman spoke, her hands flicked the stone control disc in the center of the boat. Energy gathered and the control disc flashed with a dazzling light.

In an instant, the spirit boat turned into a blue beam of light that rushed into the sky!

This speed surpassed even Lin Ming’s!

Lin Ming stepped on the void; every step he took brought him five or six miles further. In addition, with the extreme speed of the Gate of Wonder supporting him, it only took him several breaths of time to fly over 100 miles.

As Lin Ming glanced behind him he actually saw that the six people of the Asura Divine Kingdom had ridden a spirit boat and were chasing after him in hot pursuit. And their speed was fast to the point of narrowing the distance between them!

Lin Ming could feel that a mark had locked onto him. This mark was sent out from the spirit boat. Like this, this mark would still lock onto him from thousands or even tens of thousands of miles!

Lin Ming was stricken. He didn't know what method his enemies used to find him, but he knew that he had no way to prevent this method.

He increased his speed even further. As he flushed through the clouds he even equipped the bat wings from Corpsemancer. At this time, his speed and reached the extreme!

The closer he came to reaching the limit of his speed, the more true essence he would consume. Even if Lin Ming had the recovery ability from the Gate of Healing supporting him, he still wouldn't be able to last too long.

But his enemies were riding a spirit boat. Most of the energy there was supplied from spirit essence stones. It would naturally outlast Lin Ming by far!

If this continued, it would only be a matter of time before he was overtaken.

At this moment, the second Demon Envoy's intermittent true essence sound transmission sounded out in Lin Ming's ear. His voice carried a wildly happy vengeful tone, "Haha, run away, run away! I want to see just where you can run to! This is a hunt and you are the prey! You must run faster otherwise this won't be entertaining at all! Oh, I should mention that the Old Ancestor Situ Bonan is also catching up to here. For him to leave seclusion just to deal with you, you should be honored!"

Situ Bonan!

Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. Situ Bonan's life was nearing its end. Most of his time was spent in seclusion, trying to reduce the rate of the fading of his life force as much as possible. Unless it was a major matter, he normally wouldn't come out.

When everyone had been searching for Lin Ming, because there was so much inaccurate intelligence out there it was simply impossible for Situ Bonan to follow and confirm every suspicious person. Thus, this matter had been handed over to the Great Demon Envoy and the two Imperial Scholars. Now that it had been determined that Lin Ming had truly been found, it was time for Situ Bonan to come himself!

The last time, Lin Ming had washed Jagged Slope Mountain with blood – that had truly been a sky-shattering event. Not only had he killed the disciples of the Asura Divine Kingdom but he had even severely wounded Situ Bonan, slapping the Asura Divine Kingdom so hard that everyone heard it!

This was also the reason that the Asura Divine Kingdom was willing to send out three great masters to hunt for Lin Ming, and even send out a Divine Sea Supreme Elder!

Lin Ming didn't think he had even the slightest chance of escaping from Situ Bonan once he arrived. When he had extinguished Situ Bonan's battle spirit will projection, that was all because his complete large success bronze battle spirit had been able to suppress Situ Bonan.

A battle spirit projection didn't have any material striking power by itself. It could only attach itself to other objects to kill people. Thus, Lin Ming had been able to easily destroy it. If Situ Bonan's main form were to appear here then Lin Ming feared that only two fingers were needed to pinch him to death!

As Lin Ming became aware of all this he realized he was now facing a very serious life or death crisis. Still, he didn't panic in the least. Throughout all these years after stepping onto the road of martial arts, he had faced multiple life or death situations.

In the Southern Wilderness he had faced Huo Gong. At Thundercrash Mountain he had faced the Purple Flood Dragon. At the Demon God Imperial Palace he had faced Life

Destruction Supreme Elders. At the King's Cage he had faced the great space locking array. And at Skysplit Tower he had faced the Tower Master's slave seal… these were only some of the catastrophic situations he had been caught up in. Every time he had managed to maintain a level head.

As he looked back at the spirit boat where the two Imperial Scholars and four Demon Envoys were, Lin Ming hardened his resolve and decided to take a gamble with his life!

He changed direction, veering towards the Sea of Miracles!

The Sea of Miracles was extremely similar to the Eternal Demon Abyss. It was known as the Sea of No Return and the Ocean of Endless Storms. The entire sea was pitch black, and all who entered would die. Not even Emperor powerhouses dared to cross it!

Even if Lin Ming couldn't break through the Life Destruction bottleneck, he still wouldn't easily attempt to enter the Sea of Miracles. This area was known as the absolute life forbidden zone of the Sky Spill Continent. It had swallowed up many Divine Sea Supreme Elders in the past and it had inestimable horrors within. Although Lin Ming had a great destiny on his body, he still wouldn't risk his life and venture into such a danger zone.

When Lin Ming had left the Eternal Demon Abyss' 1000 mile forbidden zone, he had been able to do that because he had inherited the Demon Emperor's memories. The Demon Emperor had once stayed in the 1000 mile forbidden zone for nearly 20 years.

But the Demon Emperor had never come to the Sea of Miracles!

Lin Ming couldn't rely on the possibility that that inner regions of the Sea of Miracles were similar to the Eternal Demon Abyss. He wouldn't be able to borrow the Demon Emperor's experience to travel.

But now, Lin Ming was being hunted down by six powerful masters and he also had no idea when Situ Bonan would catch up to him. Since this was the case, he could only risk his life on this final gamble!

If he ventured into the Sea of Miracles then he had a faint thread of hope that he could live. But if he were captured by Situ Bonan and those six great masters then he would undoubtedly die.

“This brat can actually persist for such a long time!”

As the Demon Envoy looked at Lin Ming who was a hundred miles away, he was filled with disbelief. This speed was nearly 50% faster than the speed he had showed at Jagged Slope Mountain!

This meant that Lin Ming had been holding back during the chase at Jagged Slope Mountain.

To think that a mere late Revolving Core martial artist only used 70% of his maximum speed to lead him in circles like a dog, the second Demon Envoy felt nothing but intense shame fill his heart!

“I must capture this brat, suck out his soul and refine his marrow!” The second Demon Envoy clenched his fists.

The spirit boat had already reached the limit of its speed. Compared to Lin Ming, it was just marginally faster.

“His direction seems to be… the Sea of Miracles?”

The old woman with the walking stick suddenly said. In 20,000 more miles they would arrive at the boundary of the Sea of Miracles.

The Sea of Miracles was the Sky Spill Continent’s number one danger zone.

“He wants to fly into the Sea of Miracles to kill himself? Humph, what a dream! There is 20,000 miles left! There is no way he can fly that far. We can definitely overtake him before then.”

The red-clothed little boy grit his teeth as he spoke. They had already flown 10,000 miles and yet Lin Ming still maintain a constant speed. According to all common sense, if he flew at his top speed for such a long distance then most of his true essence should have been consumed by now.

However, the red-clothed little boy didn't expect that as time marched on, another two hours and 10,000 miles passed and they still hadn't been able to catch up to Lin Ming by more than 20 miles!

Every now and then they would seem to close in, but then Lin Ming would display an even higher extreme speed for a brief moment, putting distance between them once again.

The speed limit of a spirit boat was set; it couldn't go any faster. But, a martial artist could overdraw some of their potential or use other methods to momentarily increase their speed.

Lin Ming's strange movements were similar to teleportation. Every step he took was five or six miles, and every dozen or so breaths he would cross 100 miles!

"How can this be!? Is this boy a puppet of some sort? Does he not know the meaning of exhaustion!?"

"Such endurance is truly fearful. We must capture him now, otherwise the Asura Divine Kingdom will never experience peaceful days again!"

"We're approaching the Sea of Miracles. If we fly much further then we will have reached the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. To the likes of us, that is the same as a life forbidden zone!"

The 8000 Mile Black Swamp was in truth equivalent to the shores of the Sea of Miracles. Although it was slightly less risky than the Sea of Miracles, it was still a deathtrap to any Life Destruction martial artist! And to those unlucky Divine Sea powerhouses, even they could perish there!

Chapter 812 – Death Swamp

Chapter 812 – Death Swamp

…

…

…

Lin Ming’s endurance was indeed extraordinary, but it wasn’t infinite. Flying at maximum speed consumed a massive amount of true essence. If a normal martial artist flew at half their max speed they could fly without trying, but when they flew at their speed limit, they wouldn’t be able to make it far before falling down from exhaustion.

Even though Lin Ming had support from the Gate of Healing, he still had to swallow down pills and absorb energy from spirit essence stones.

Luckily, when he had massacred the Jagged Slope Mountain Branch Division he obtained a massive number of medium-grade spirit essence stones. With the support of these spirit essence stones, he was able to greatly extend his limits.

Moreover, he now had a second Revolving Core in his dantian. Although he couldn’t freely control it as he could his first Revolving Core, it wasn’t a problem if he only used it as an energy reserve center.

Lin Ming got closer and closer to the Sea of Miracles. The uneasy feeling in the back of his mind also grew. He just didn’t know when Situ Bonan would finally catch up. Although the Asura Divine Kingdom was a far distance away from here, most of the journey could be crossed using transmission arrays.

2000 miles…

1500 miles…

1000 miles…

500 miles…

300 miles…

Lin Ming could already see the 8000 Mile Black Swamp ahead. It was an endlessly muddy beach, and above the beach were rolling black clouds that flashed with faint thunder light.

"Lin Lanjian, up ahead of you is the 8000 Miles Black Swamp. For all those under the Divine Sea, anyone who enters will arrive at death's door. Even a Divine Sea powerhouse can fall within if their luck is poor. You have nowhere left to run!"

The Great Demon Envoy's voice sounded out from the spirit boat, reaching Lin Ming's ears through a true essence sound transmission.

Lin Ming ignored the message. He accelerated once more shooting toward the 8000 Mile Black Swamp.

As the old woman leaning on her walking stick saw this, she frowned. If Lin Ming was lost in the Sea of Miracles then it would be immeasurably difficult to find his corpse. When that time came, the Demon Emperor Armor and the Demon Emperor's inheritance would also be lost forever.

"Lin Lanjian, if you enter the Sea of Miracles then, you'll undoubtedly die. But if you go back with me and hand over the Demon Emperor's inheritance and allow us to plant a spell within you, I can guarantee your life!"

Lin Ming sneered as he heard this, "You old witch, do you really think I'm a three year old child or something? I'll enter this Sea of Miracles and see whether or not you dare to follow me!"

As he spoke he had already flown into the black swamp region.

When he stepped in he could suddenly feel an infinitely ancient and cold energy blow across him, filling him with awe and apprehension. There was endless black underneath his feet and great roiling black clouds above his head; it was absolutely dismal and disheartening.

If he didn't use his perception to sense the road ahead then he wouldn't have been able to see his five fingers even if he held them up in front of his face.

Just what was in this Sea of Miracles? And how was it related to the Eternal Demon Abyss?

"That brat really went in!"

The red-clothed little boy was anxious. Unconsciously, even the spirit boat slowed down. He didn't dare to recklessly rush his way in. Even a top ranked Destiny Decree master was likely to die if they entered the 8000 Mile Black Swamp.

What should they do?

Lin Ming's news had already reached Situ Bonan; he would arrive in another hour or so. If he were to discover that they lost track of Lin Ming because they feared the black swamp, then their fate would truly be miserable. This was because Situ Bonan's life was nearing its end and he became increasingly paranoid and erratic in his behavior. It wouldn't be strange if he decided to deliver unto them all a harsh punishment.

They had left a true essence mark on Lin Ming. But he definitely wasn't a fool. After some more time passed, he would definitely be able to lift it on his own.

"Honored Imperial Scholar, Great Demon Envoy, I'm willing to go in!" The second Demon Envoy requested on his own initiative. Lin Ming was the basis of his heart demon. If he didn't capture Lin Ming, he would never absolve himself of it.

The Great Demon Envoy didn't answer. He thought for a moment and then lit a sound transmitting talisman for orders.

After several breaths of time, a purple sound transmission talisman lit up in front of them. This was Situ Bonan's reply. "Bi Ruyu, second, third, and fourth Demon Envoy, all of you go together. As for everyone else, stand by and wait for further instructions."

Bi Ruyu was the old woman with the walking stick. She paled upon hearing this order. Although she was the Imperial Scholar, she didn't have much lifespan remaining, and her hopes of breaking through to the Divine Sea were slim to none. Her value to the Asura Divine Kingdom was far lower than the Great Demon Envoy and the red-clothed little boy.

Thus, this nearly suicidal mission had fallen onto her.

If it were possible, Bi Ruyu certainly didn't want to enter too deep into the Sea of Miracles. But she also knew what her fate would be if she disobeyed his orders. She would suffer a fate much worse than if she died within the Sea of Miracles.

She poured all of the hate and resentment in her heart onto Lin Ming. She grit her teeth and looked at the direction where Lin Ming flew off to. "You little bastard, once I drain you of all your value, I'll turn you into a wax statue so that you can suffer day and night!"

The Great Demon Envoy and the red-clothed little boy were left behind. In front of them, the spirit boat continued forward, turning into a beam of light that vanished into the endless black swamp.

"They're continuing the chase?"

Lin Ming glanced backwards. He was only using 30-40% of his max speed to fly as he tried to restore his strength. As for Bi Ruyu, she also reduced the speed of the spirit boat. Flying within the 8000 Mile Black Swamp at high speeds was suicidal behavior.

The dark clouds above flashed with hints of thunder, but no bolts of lightning actually struck down.

The Sea of Miracles was also known as the Ocean of Endless Storms. The sea was always covered with infinite amounts of lightning, and the nearby 8000 Miles Black Swamp also perennially flashed with thunder.

With the support of the Heretical God Seed, Lin Ming didn't fear the power of thunder at all. In fact, he even hoped that the thunderstorms here would become even more violent.

But the Sea of Miracles didn't have just lightning. It had other things, horrible, terrifying existences that dwelled there. Those were truly the fatal dangers!

"A fog is coming!"

Suddenly, the entire black swamp was covered in a thick fog. The fog had come shrouding down from all directions. From the first moment Lin Ming noticed it, it only took several breaths of time until it became extremely heavy. It was similar to a syrupy black soup, able to be cut apart with a saber.

Seeing such a sudden scene occur, even though Lin Ming's mind was stable and composed, he still couldn't help but give birth to a feeling of unease.

"This fog can prevent perception and divine sense from penetrating outward.

He quickly discovered this point. This was obviously not a common type of fog. In this fog, his original 100 feet perception was reduced to a mere three feet in front of him. If he flew in this fog, he would be nothing more than a headless fly.

Chi chi chi!

He heard his bodily true essence rapidly being torn away. As he gazed around him, he saw that the surrounding fog seemed to come alive, constantly seeping and infiltrating into his bodily protective true essence. The power of the Demon Emperor Armor that melded with his true essence was rapidly melting away like metal being corroded by acid.

"What is this!?"

Lin Ming was horrified. He no longer dared to move forward, instead stimulating all of his energy to offset the corrosive mist around him. However, even in this case, the speed at which he replenished his bodily true essence was slower than the speed at which it melted away. After an incense stick of time, he could hear a ‘chi chi chi’ sound as the pair of bat wings on his back were swallowed up by the fog.

That was a heaven-step flight treasure created by Corpsemancer. Still, it deteriorated until there were only the bones left and even the bones melted away. It was like countless years of decay had been compressed into just several breaths of time.

This scene was truly fearful. If a normal heaven-step treasure didn’t have true essence poured into it, it would immediately melt within this black fog!

There was no need to imagine the result of an exposed human body being thrust into this fog.

If this continued, Lin Ming wouldn’t be able to last much longer. At this pivotal life or death moment, a sudden thought flashed through his mind.

That was right; he still had the Cosmic Melting Furnace!

Whispering a few words, the golden Cosmic Melting Furnace flew out from his dantian. It spun and spun, growing until it reached 30 feet in height. Lin Ming then dove inside. Although a heaven-step treasure would corrode, a quasi-Saint artifact might not!

………

While Lin Ming encountered such a situation, Bi Ruyu and the three Demon Envoys weren’t off any better. They were also trapped in the black fog. The Godspeed Boat violently trembled, as if it weren’t able to withstand it for much longer.

Bi Ruyu’s complexion changed. If this continued, the Godspeed Boat would be destroyed.

"Exit the boat. We're putting way the Godspeed Boat and reinforcing our bodily true essence!"

Bi Ruyu and the three Demon Envoys were top masters. Especially Bi Ruyu; she was a top 50 ranked Destiny Decree master. All of them were much more formidable than Lin Ming. If they concentrated on their bodily protective true essence, then even though it would still be melted away by this black fog, the speed of corrosion would be much slower than what had happened with Lin Ming.

The four formed a circle, blending their energies together and making sure their bodily protective true essence was constantly replenished.

However, good times never lasted. After several incense sticks of time, the black fog became increasingly strong, as if it had condensed into solid matter. Bi Ruyu and the three Demon Envoys felt an immense pressure growing against them. Their bodily protective true essence violently shook as if it could shatter at any moment.

Seeing the intensely shaking protective true essence, the three Demo Envoys blanched. If their protective true essence completely melted away, their fates could be imagined.

"We have to persist longer. If we're already in such a poor state, Lin Lanjian must be even more wretched. He shouldn't have any spare energy to erase the tracing mark on him. As long as we can withstand this black fog, we can capture that Lin Lanjian and get out of this damned ghostly hell hole! As long as we can return, that'll definitely be a great merit. We will have top rewards given to us!"

As Bi Ruyu spoke, a faint hope ignited in the three Demon Envoys' hearts. As long as they could catch Lin Lanjian, all of this suffering would be worth it. This fog might even be the end for Lin Lanjian. If that was true, then this fog would have saved them a great deal of strength. Otherwise, if they had to face the abnormally fast Lin Lanjian, that would really be a headache.

But the worse was still to come. The black fog became increasingly rich and thick as if it came from an inexhaustible source. The more they insisted, the more difficult it became. The four of them all huddled tightly together, their faces white and blood vessels popping out from all over their body. At this rate, it was unknown just how much longer they could continue shouldering it.

“C-could Lin Lanjian have already…?” The second Demon Envoy found it difficult to even speak.

“No, otherwise the tracing mark would have disappeared. But it’s strange, just how can he have lasted for such a long time?” Bi Ruyu asked, a bit blown away. But it was better if that Lin Lanjian didn’t die. The value of a living Lin Lanjian was far higher than just his corpse.

“Although he hasn’t died yet, he shouldn’t be able to live for much longer. Once this black fog disappears, we’ll catch him. I only hope that he can stick it out until that time, so he still has a life for me to torture!” Bi Ruyu evilly cackled.

While Bi Ruyu held onto her walking stick, she malevolently smiled as she licked her withered lips. Her face was pressed together, it was as wrinkly as a walnut.

Chapter 813 – Sea Serpent Gas

Chapter 813 – Sea Serpent Gas

…

…

…

Thick black fog solidified in the void, turning everything between the heavens and earth into utter chaos.

A gold alchemy furnace was suspended in the air, slowly rotating. Faint traces of flames flickered from its body, burning away all of the black fog that dared to encroach upon it.

The Cosmic Melting Furnace was a quasi-Saint artifact, and was an astounding defensive treasure. Although it could only play a limited role when used against living, thinking enemies, it was actually the best lifesaving card in this situation.

"Lin Ming, I know what this is…." Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, Demonshine's echoed out.

"Mm?"

"The Eternal Demon Abyss truly is greatly related to the Sea of Miracles. This isn't fog, but sea serpent gas. When the Demon Emperor was at the Eternal Demon Abyss, he too encountered a sea serpent once.

"Sea serpent gas…" Lin Ming was startled. As he looked through the Demon Emperor's memories about this 'sea serpent', he recalled that it was an ancient vicious beast similar to the great pythons and flood dragons. It lived in the sea, absorbing the essence of the sun and moon, constantly releasing fog.

Mortals would call the light that refracted off of the surface of the sea a ‘sea serpent mirage’. This was because they recognized it as the illusion formed from sea serpent gas.

“In other words, this black fog is released from a single sea serpent?” Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. This overwhelming black fog that blotted out the skies was actually the released gas from a single sea serpent dragon. Then, just how big could it be?”

It might be several hundred miles or even a thousand miles long!

A sea serpent was not a God Beast, but rather a Saint Beast. However, because different regions had different perspectives on things, the truth was that a Saint Beast was only a very general concept. The difference between a powerful Saint Beast and a weak Saint Beast was like the difference between the clouds and the earth below them.

However, now was not the time to be awed by these matters. It was urgent for him to remove the tracing mark in his body, otherwise his situation would become much more dangerous.

The tracing mark had been left on him by the Great Demon Envoy with the help of the Godspeed Boat. It had very strange energy traces within it; wanting to wipe it out would take some time.

As Demonshine saw Lin Ming fraught with anxiety over erasing the tracing mark, he said, “Don’t worry Lin Ming, this Sea of Miracles 8000 Mile Black Swamp is similar to the Eternal Demon Abyss’s 1000 miles forbidden zone. Both of them are areas closed off by a force field, and the inside and outside could be considered as separate world. Even if Situ Bonan were to catch up, he still wouldn’t be able to sense you from outside of the 8000 Mile Black Swamp.

“You might as well take this time to refine some of this sea serpent gas. When the sea serpent dragon sucks in the essence of the sun and moon, it would then release this gas. It is something that surpasses even spirit essence stones in value. It will be greatly beneficial in helping you make a breakthrough!”

Lin Ming thought for a moment as he heard Demonshine say this. He said, “I’ll cancel this tracing mark first, as it shouldn’t take too much time. After all, Situ Bonan is still a Divine Sea powerhouse–it’s very difficult to predict just what methods he’ll have available to him.

Lin Ming wouldn’t underestimate a Divine Sea Supreme Elder, even the weakest kind of Divine Sea master that had only broken through at the fifth stage of Life Destruction.

After an incense stick of time had passed, Lin Ming finally managed to break through the tracing mark, using his soul force to completely erase it.

……….

“The tracing mark that the Great Demon Envoy left behind has vanished.” Dozens of miles away, the second Demon Envoy sensed the sudden change and his heart sank. If the tracing mark disappeared, then that meant that Lin Ming had most likely died. It would be his life’s greatest regret if he couldn’t capture Lin Ming himself.

“It seems that boy has perished here. If even we have so much trouble withstanding to this point, then it’s already a miracle that he could last up to this point.” Bi Ruyu’s were gloomy as she found this fact hard to reconcile with. “Humph, it’s already benefitting him. Otherwise if I got him in my hands, then he could only beg for death!”

Bi Ruyu grit her teeth. And at this time, a flow of gray energy smashed into the three of them, severely slamming into their bodily true essence protection.

Bang!

With another loud ringing noise, the barrier of energy fiercely shook, nearly bursting apart. The third and fourth Demon Envoy coughed up blood at the same time, their faces pale and yellow.

Bi Ruyu found herself short of breath. Her chicken claw like fingers tightly grasped onto her walking stick.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The violent flow of energy became increasingly intense. Every single smash of energy made their barrier of energy tremble like a flickering candle in the wind. Bi Ruyu's expression changed. Just what was this black fog?

Peng!

All of the blood vessels on the third Demon Envoy's right hand suddenly ruptured. The protective true essence barrier in that area suddenly lost part of its support, a crack appearing on its surface. Black fog began seeping within.

"Ahh!"

The third Demon Envoy miserably cried out. As his right arm was touched by the black fog, it instantly melted away, becoming nothing but sharp white bones!

"Damn it all!"

Bi Ruyu was so angry that her eyes nearly popped out of her head. Not caring about how much true essence she lost, she raised her skinny claw-like hands and pounded her withered chest. It was only after forcefully spitting out her blood essence on the barrier of energy did she manage to forcefully stabilize it. As for that black fog that seeped within the barrier, it was cleared away by her blood essence.

"I've consumed 70% of my true essence!"

The second Demon Envoy's forehead was thick with beads of sweat. The third and fourth Demon Envoys had obviously reached their limit. Particularly the third Demon Envoy, as his arm had become nothing but bones, and he had nearly fallen unconscious.

"Take out your blood essence!"

Bi Ruyu crazily said. At this time, she could not care about losing blood essence. Surviving through this black fog was the highest priority!

To pull up more and more blood essence as true essence nearly all depleted, this would directly wound one’s life force. However, she couldn’t care about things like that at this moment!

....

Dang dang dang!

Lin Ming watched with alarm as the flame walls of the Cosmic Melting Furnace began to melt away with the energy flows of the sea serpent gas smashing into it. This sea serpent gas was so strong that it was even able to somewhat hollow out the flame walls.

However, the Cosmic Melting Furnace was extremely tough, and had a high regenerative capability. Even the depressed flame walls quickly restored themselves to their previous state.

This sort of situation only occurred because Lin Ming’s cultivation was too low, and he wasn’t able to pour in enough true essence into the Cosmic Melting Furnace. Otherwise, if a true powerhouse were to control a quasi-Saint artifact ranked treasure, then this certainly wouldn’t have happened.

At this time, Lin Ming was completely dependent on the Cosmic Melting Furnace to resist this sea serpent gas.

“This is only a sea serpent dragon from the very edge of the Sea of Miracles, and yet the gas that it unintentionally spewed out is already enough to make me suffer to this degree. Just what sort of scene will play out deep within the Sea of Miracles?”

Lin Ming sighed with emotion. It was highly likely that there existed a God Beast within both the Sea of Miracles and the Eternal Demon Abyss. A God Beast was in itself an incomparably rare and unimaginable existence in the Realm of the Gods, so why would they appear on such insignificant lands like the Sky Spill Continent and the Holy Demon Continent?

There was also the fact that the Great Emperor's heart had never stopped beating for over 100,000 years, which was truly shocking.

Lin Ming shook his head, no longer bothering with such distant matters. He carefully allowed some sea serpent gas to enter in. He began refine it according to Demonshine's method until only three shiny black crystals were left. These were sea serpent crystals.

In this time, the black fog energy that had previously attacked the Cosmic Melting Furnace without pause began to weaken. The sea serpent gas had finally begun to disperse.

……….

"We've finally….made it through!"

The sea serpent gas left just as quickly as it came. From the point that the sea serpent gas began to fade away, it only took several breaths of time before completely disappearing.

Bi Ruyu's entire body was soaked with sweat. She had continuously overdrawn her true essence, causing herself to rapidly age. By her side, the second Demon Envoy was also in dire straits. He had spat out blood essence twice, causing his mind to fall to an anguished state, and his face to become jaundiced.

The one worst off was the third Demon Envoy. He had lost his right hand and was already unconscious.

Bi Ruyu looked up to the sky and saw that the dark clouds floating up there were even heavier, as if they had become much richer with much more thunder light flashing within them. According to the time that passed, it should have been approximately dawn at this time. However, the 8000 Mile Black Swamp didn't have the least bit of sunlight. If it weren't for the intermittent lightning flashing in the skies, then she wouldn't have been able to see even her own fingers in front of her.

In such a place, even the fires of one's life were suppressed.

“Damn this place!” Bi Ruyu became ugly to the extreme. She originally had 400-500 years of life left, but after being tossed about today, she feared that she could only live for 300 more.

But, if she could bring back the Demon Emperor Armor and the Demon Emperor’s inheritance, then she should be able to obtain a life extending pill that was even more precious than the Life Bestowing Heaven Pill. At that time, she would be able to instantly make up for all her losses.

As Bi Ruyu thought this she said, “I’m guessing that there aren’t even ashes of that brat left over. We shall take the Demon Emperor Armor back. That is a holy relic, and shouldn’t have been melted by the black fog. I don’t know if that ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ jade slip is on that brat’s body, but the jade slip that such a cultivation method is engraved on should be an extraordinary treasure. It should still be in good condition if it’s there.”

Bi Ruyu swallowed a true essence recovery pill. The second Demon Envoy also swallowed down some pills and grabbed the third Demon Envoy. With the fourth Demon Envoy, all of them shot towards the last location of the tracing mark.

They were already very close to Lin Ming. At this time, the fog had also dissipated a bit, and they could make out 7-8 miles in front of them. At the very end of their vision, they could see the black-clothed Lin Ming floating in air, perfectly fine. Beside him, a small golden furnace was gently rotating in midair.

For a while, they were stunned, shocked, aghast, horrified, and all sorts of other emotions that quickly flashed across their faces.

Lin Ming was in front of them, without even a single wound on his body! Not only had he not used up any true essence, he even seemed to have nearly restored himself to the peak condition from when they had just started chasing him!

Just what was going on here!?

As the four people saw Lin Ming, Lin Ming also saw them. He instantly put away the Cosmic Melting Furnace that was still refining the sea serpent gas. At such a far distance, and with such a quick glimpse, Lin Ming wasn't worried that they would recognize just what rank of treasure the Cosmic Melting Furnace was.

"So you fellows are alive....the top 100 ranked Destiny Decree masters truly have extraordinary strength."

In the sea serpent gas, even the Cosmic Melting Furnace had developed a few holes in its defenses. Yet, these people were able to live through it.

"Get him!"

Bi Ruyu gravely cried out. At this time, she couldn't wonder about why Lin Ming hadn't died. What mattered was capturing him!

It was possible that Lin Ming had some sort of protective treasure on him that far exceeded their imaginations. It seemed as if there were endless valuable treasures on his body. This only caused Bi Ruyu to want to capture Lin Ming alive even more, so she could torture all the secrets out of him.

Netherworld Bone Claws!

Bi Ruyu gave a loud shout and stretched her claws out at Lin Ming, her energy gathering to the limit. A deep purple light burst out from her entire body as a ghostly phantom appeared above her withered right hand. The ghostly phantom opened its mouth, revealing her claws.

Although Bi Ruyu had consumed a great deal of energy and had even injured the source of her life, she was still a top 50 ranked Destiny Decree master. As this claw thrust out, it formed a strong suction force in space, causing all the nearby energy to spin into a vortex. It seemed as if it would devour everything in its path.

Chapter 814 – Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion

Chapter 814 – Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion

…

…

…

Bang!

Bi Ruyu's claw smashed into the black swamp's muddy ground, causing a massive amount of the slush to splash into the air. Purple flames burned the earth and countless mourning ghosts seemed to cry out in the flames, their souls seeming to be turned into fuel for the purple flames to burn even brighter.

Bi Ruyu's hair was split apart and her eyes were ferocious. She looked up to see that Lin Ming had flash stepped a thousand feet away. Her strike had completely missed.

Lin Ming looked at the purple flames still burning on the ground, his expression slightly changing.

He simply wasn't able to directly contend with Bi Ruyu at this moment; the disparity in their strength was far too great. He had opened the Gate of Wonder and used Golden Roc Shattering the Void to dodge Bi Ruyu's attack. At this time, his extreme speed was the greatest advantage he could rely on.

"Brat, don't think that your speed is invincible within Life Destruction. I will show you the power of a true top Life Destruction master!"

Bi Ruyu screeched, her voice ugly and horrifying like a tortured ghost. She suddenly bit down on her tongue and spat out a mouthful of blood before swallowing her tongue into her belly. In the next moment, her shriveled body emitted crackling sounds as her clothes broke apart and her hair went wildly flying into the air.

Bi Ruyu's body began to grow, becoming larger and taller. He claws became longer and her two hands nearly stooped down to the ground. Her elbows developed sharp spurs, her body became increasingly bent and a layer of fine fur covered her body. She looked just like the fabled corpse eating ghost ghouls of hell.

"This cultivation method..."

Lin Ming's mind chilled. There was a myriad of demonic path cultivations with countless effects. Bi Ruyu had used a body altering cultivation method similar to Corpsemancer's puppet technique. It was a strange cultivation method that changed the body with use of external forces.

Lin Ming would never despise such a technique that desired strength regardless of what cost had to be paid. When Corpsemancer had become ranked on the Destiny Decree he had only been at the fourth stage of Life Destruction, and that was all because of the strangeness of this cultivation method.

And now this Bi Ruyu in front of him didn't have much of her lifespan left, yet she was still able to rank in the top 50 masters of the Destiny Decree. She certainly had to have her extraordinary aspects.

When Bi Ruyu's body changed, the second Demon Envoy also moved. He preferred that Lin Ming hadn't died. He wanted to personally defeat Lin Ming and capture him.

With a loud shout, the second Demon Envoy's body seemed to blaze like an inferno as dozens of Blood Drinking Seals started to revolve around his body. His surname was Situ, and as a branch descendent of the Asura Divine Kingdom's Royal Family Situ, what he practiced was the true 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'.

"Rahh!"

Bi Ruyu let out an earthshaking roar as her body turned into a black line and shot towards Lin Ming. Her speed was no slower than Lin Ming's extreme speed!

And from behind, the second Demon Envoy was closely following her. He grasped a long lance in his hand, the black lance light seeming to cut a hole through the void.

'Great Desolate Halberd Art' – Slaughter Path!

Lin Ming's pupils contracted as he saw two people attacking him at the same time. He had no intention of fighting with Bi Ruyu and the second Demon Envoy – that was akin to suicide. At the same time, escaping from here wasn't an option either.

Bi Ruyu's current speed was no slower than his. It would be impossible to ditch her in a short period of time. Because Bi Ruyu was using this special technique to power up, she had simply lost all reasoning. In this 8000 Mile Black Swamp that was filled with dangers and more dangers, engaging this madwoman in an extreme speed chase was tantamount to suicide!

If they managed to annoy a divine dragon rank existence in this Sea of Miracles like that sea serpent, then a single breath would be able to kill all of them without leaving even a skeleton!

Lin Ming didn't wish to perish here together with this crazy old lady.

He made a split-second judgment. He opened the Gate of Wonder and stepped onto Golden Roc Shattering the Void, rushing away at full speed!

In the skies, the dark clouds hung high in the air like titanic black mountains, completely obscuring the sun. Only the faintly dazzling thunder light illuminated the world.

As for how thick these dark clouds were, only the heavens would know.

Lin Ming was fast. In just several blinks of the eye he had rushed out over a dozen miles. Here, strong heavenly winds roared about like killer razor blades, blowing and slicing away at Lin Ming's protective true essence as if it would break his defenses apart at any moment. If a lower level martial artist were to enter here then just this strong heavenly wind would be enough to slice them into pieces!

Lin Ming clenched his teeth. He opened the Heretical God Force and revolved his energy to the limit.

"Go!"

Lin Ming became one with his spear. He became a stream of light that directly pierced into the heavens. Bi Ruyu and the second Demon Envoy followed right after!

At this time, Bi Ruyu had already gone mad and the second Demon Envoy was also desperately wishing to capture Lin Ming. He had a feeling in his heart: if he could capture Lin Ming and obtain the Divine Kingdom's rewards then he would be able to eliminate this heart demon and have high hopes of impacting the Divine Sea in the future!

The Divine Sea realm was the ultimate temptation to any Life Destruction powerhouse. Even though he had to brave the perilous 8000 Mile Black Swamp, he had still come!

Peng!

Lin Ming placed his spear before him and pierced through the dark clouds. A powerful impact force twisted apart all of the clouds nearby for miles. For a time, lightning tumbled and loud thunderclaps rang through the world!

Lin Ming was inundated by this infinite heavenly lightning!

Above the Sea of Miracles was the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion. This was an area with endless thunder. If a general martial artist were to enter they would immediately turn into ash!

"Damnit!"

The second Demon Envoy was still sane and logical. As he saw Lin Ming submerge into the Thunder Dominion, his heart tightened. When Lin Ming had made it through the black fog without even the slightest of wounds, that had made him feel as if Lin Ming was as tough as a cockroach. Even this lightning might not be able to kill him.

"When the black fog covered the world I didn't manage to see how you lived through it. But now that you're in front of me, let me see just what methods you have! I don't believe that with my rank 83 Destiny Decree strength, I would still be inferior to a mere Revolving Core child only ranked 280th!"

The second Demon Envoy grit his teeth. He galvanized his protective true essence to the limit and chased after Lin Ming.

He didn't believe Lin Ming had a higher resistance to the black fog than them. He must have used some crafty method in order to survive!

Kakaka!

Thunder twisted into long whips that violently cracked against the second Demon Envoy's protective true essence. His protective true essence began to rapidly melt, and the remaining power of thunder drilled into his body like a viper. The energy spread through him, manically rushing through his meridians and flash. He had no choice but to revolve his true essence further to suppress it, making him slow down and his blood tumble.

As he looked up he saw that Lin Ming didn't even slow in the least. He had already pierced over a dozen miles into the Thunder Dominion!

"This boy!!"

The second Demon Envoy's pupils shrank. Was his body made from iron? He didn't even need to slow down upon entering the Thunder Dominion?

Or was he forcefully withstanding the numbing feeling from the thunder in order to maintain his maximum speed to escape?

The second Demon Envoy's speed continued to fall. But in front of him, Bi Ruyu didn't seem to care at all about this surrounding thunder. She was like a psychotic madwoman as she rushed forwards, not even caring if the torrents of thunder that fell upon her wounded her body.

As the chase continued, Bi Ruyu and Lin Ming quickly cast away the second Demon Envoy.

The second Demon Envoy stared with wide eyes. He looked in the direction that Bi Ruyu and Lin Ming vanished off to. There was no need to explain how Bi Ruyu had accomplished this. She was amazingly strong to begin with and her strange cultivation method allowed her to become stronger in exchange for her current freakish appearance.

This strong defensive power that came from necrosis of the nerves gave Bi Ruyu enormous resistance to this thunder.

But what method did Lin Ming use?

The second Demon Envoy stopped, crestfallen. Continuing any further would surpass the limit of his body.

20 miles…

25 miles…

30 miles…!

Lin Ming constantly flew deeper in. The thunder began to change color. It went from blue white and faded into purple white. The power of thunder became even more violent and feverish. The arcs of lightning became as thick as an arm and the thunder light became increasingly savage.

Even with the Heretical God Seed suppressing the power of thunder within him, Lin Ming still felt bursts of paralysis.

The thunder here was too terrifying. The power of thunder that Lin Ming could contain within his body was reaching the limit. His skin was beginning to char and sizzle, his entire body releasing crackling ‘chi chi chi’ sounds.

He glanced back to see that Bi Ruyu was still closely chasing him in hot pursuit!

“This damned old hag is still chasing after me!

“My cultivation is too low. Besides my dantian there is nowhere else in my body that I can store energy. Compared to a Life Destruction powerhouse, my losses are far too great! Even with the heaven-defying Heretical God Seed, there isn’t enough time to refine this power of thunder. If I continue to gather the power of thunder into my body then my meridians will explode!”

Lin Ming grit his teeth and continued to flee forwards, deeper into the Thunder Dominion. At this point, the thunder had become a deep purple. Lightning roared. If the arcs of lightning were like thick whips at the start, they had now become dragons of thunder!

This was a true hell of thunder!

Not only did the thunder attack Lin Ming’s body, but also his soul. In the skies above his spiritual sea, thunder swam about like flood dragons, wanting to tear Lin Ming’s spiritual sea apart.

The Samsara martial intent and battle spirit began to revolve, sharing in this great pressure.

The power of thunder was easily able to harm one’s spiritual sea. If one didn’t have a firm will and the power of thunder attacked them then they would easily fall unconscious.

A strong numbing feeling flooded Lin Ming’s entire body. Lin Ming desperately pushed his true essence past its limit. The Heretical God Seed violently trembled as it forcefully absorbed the massive amounts of the power of thunder. Still, there was far too much left over that brutally broke into Lin Ming's meridians.

His speed began to fall. But as his soul force locked onto Bi Ruyu, he was thankful that she was obviously reaching her limits.

Her speed had fallen by a great deal. At this time, her hair was split apart and countless areas of her body were scorched black. From time to time, currents of electricity arced on her body, emitting crackling sounds.

Her eyes were like ghosts. There was no pupil in them, only pure purple sclera, burst out with a fearful light that made one shiver.

'Danger!'

Lin Ming's heart gave birth to a sense of immense crisis. At the same time, Bi Ruyu moved. She screamed and her body suddenly accelerated. Her right hand turned into a claw, reaching out towards Lin Ming.

As her speed surged her skin and flesh also cracked. On her right arm, a white-robed ghost suddenly appeared, howling towards Lin Ming!

As this ghost appeared, most of it was immediately melted away by the endless power of thunder. However, the excess energy still made Lin Ming's scalp tingle!

There was absolutely no way he could contend with this!

Lin Ming ignored all possible dangers of the Thunder Dominion. He decisively opened the Gate of Wonder to the limit and brought about its highest speed.

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Woosh!

Lin Ming twisted the void. A single step brought him 10 miles ahead!

A massive explosive sound blasted out from behind Lin Ming – he had dodged Bi Ruyu's fatal attack. But as he slowed down his complexion suddenly changed. At the position he was in, the arcs of lightning around him had already turned golden. The arcs of golden lightning were only the width of a finger but they contained a horrifying annihilating energy as they crazily swelled up towards Lin Ming!

Chapter 815 – New Life From Destruction

Chapter 815 – New Life From Destruction

…

…

…

Bang!

The golden thunder formed a massive thunderstorm. Lin Ming was simply unable to dodge at all. The sound of thunder filled his ears, causing his senses to shake. He could only watch helplessly as the golden thunder merged into his body with irresistible force!

The might of this golden thunder far surpassed any divine thunder that Lin Ming had ever seen. Its brilliance was dazzling, glorious!

Lin Ming was struck by this golden thunder and his protective true essence rapidly melted like snow on a hot summer day. The golden thunder violently flowed into his body!

Lin Ming's entire body was paralyzed. He vomited a mouthful of blood and flew backwards, great sections of his body charred black.

In the sound of this raucous roaring thunder, an immense pressure from the sky pressed down on his body, making him feel as if he were just a mortal facing the endless heavens.

Thunder was the power that the heavens used to punish others. Since ancient times, when monsters wished to cross breakthroughs in their cultivation they would have to withstand the sundering thunder tribulation of the heavens. Compared to burning heat, freezing cold, or any of the five elements, the power of thunder was far more mysterious and wild. It symbolized destruction and it symbolized the heavens.

Lin Ming was as pale as paper. As he looked within him he could see that the Heretical God Seed was completely wrapped in this golden lightning. It had reached its saturation point, unable to contain any more energy.

In the end, Lin Ming still hadn't formed his spirit body. He was only able to store true essence in his body. Although his body was physically tough, it didn't have the ability to store true essence throughout. This meant that all of the energy within him could only be suppressed by the Heretical God Seed. If Lin Ming could quickly draw out the power of thunder from the Heretical God Seed then this wouldn't have happened. And, with Lin Ming's low comprehension of the Concept of Thunder added in, this made it difficult for him to control the golden thunder within his body.

"Boy, hurry up and get out of here or you'll die! In this Thunder Dominion, metal defensive treasures can only play a minor role. If you resort to using the Cosmic Melting Furnace, you will only be able to rely on its energy field to weaken the power of thunder by a little bit. But if you hide inside of it you will have lost all ability to do anything. That means you can only wait around to die!"

Demonshine's nervous voice sounded out in Lin Ming's mind. In his soul form, he was immensely restrained facing the power of thunder. There was simply no help he could offer Lin Ming here.

Zi zi zi!

Lin Ming's entire body sparkled with the arcs of lightning with golden light shining around him. Because his protective true essence had been broken, all of his clothes had been burnt to ashes by the thunder, revealing the jet black Demon Emperor Armor underneath.

A metal treasure armor's most formidable use lay in its ability to defend against physical attacks. In regards to energy attacks, such as fire or ice, the defensive role it could play was limited, and even more so for the power of thunder. There were even metal armors that had the side effect of gathering the power of thunder, making it so that the injuries a martial artist suffered were even worse.

Lin Ming was certainly well aware of all this, but his entire body was numbed and it was extremely difficult to move at all. A moment ago, Bi Ruyu must have sent out that final all-out attack because she couldn't continue withstanding the power of thunder.

Lin Ming grit his teeth, enduring the dual pain to both his body and divine soul and flew to the outer layer of the Thunder Dominion.

"Damn it! The power of space here is in complete chaos. Because the force field here is distorted by the crazy energy here it has already created a closed field.

Lin Ming had planned on flying upwards and leaving, but as he was exiting he found that he was completely unable to determine which direction he needed to go in.

With Lin Ming's current situation, wanting to analyze the chaotic Space Laws here would be far too difficult.

If these were normal times then Lin Ming could slowly resolve the issue. At most it would only take him the time to eat a meal to thoroughly comprehend the strange Space Laws. But now, in these 100,000 feet of thunder, Lin Ming would only need to stay for a dozen more breaths of time before he would no longer be able to withstand the power of thunder. His meridians would be scorched away permanently and even his ash would be destroyed!

"This is bad!"

Lin Ming bit his lips until they bled. In this sort of life or death situation, the need to remain calm was even greater.

"There's not enough time to work out the chaotic power of space here!"

Lin Ming grimaced. His pupils contracted and the gears of his mind rapidly turned as he shifted through the possible ways he could live through this.

At this time, Demonshine suddenly cried out in alarm. "Be careful!"

"Huh!?"

Lin Ming suddenly looked up to see that several hundred feet away, there was a pale golden fog flying towards him, as quiet and fast as ghosts and gods.

In that instant, Lin Ming could feel a terrifying power over 10 times that of the golden thunder.

“Thunder Soul!?!?”

In this Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion that was flooded with endless thunder, it was normal to encounter a Thunder Soul. Moreover, the grade of this Thunder Soul was absolutely above a medium-grade heaven-step one!

Normally, Lin Ming would have been beyond excited to encounter such a Thunder Soul. He would use everything within his means to capture it and then absorb it.

But now, as he saw that Thunder Soul, it was no different than seeing a grim reaper approaching him!

In this situation, if he were to even think of absorbing a Thunder Soul then he would explode apart on the spot and die!

When the human body exploded, that was a similar process to crossing Life Destruction, but Lin Ming didn’t even dare to imagine crossing Life Destruction here. In a normal case he would already be charred to ashes, and then if he were to disintegrate into the primordial life soup he wouldn’t even have bones left!

Sweat dripped down Lin Ming’s forehead. As this sweat appeared it was instantly evaporated by the lightning. He forcefully held back the numbness in his body and began to revolve his movement technique, hoping to avoid this heaven-step Thunder Soul.

At this time he could no longer care about how much longer he could persist in this thunder zone. If he couldn’t avoid the Thunder Soul then he would immediately perish.

It seemed that the only road left in front of him led to hell. But Lin Ming didn’t give up. As long as there was even the slimmest thread of survival then he would grasp it. He would wait for a chance to escape this thunder hell!

Chi chi chi!

The Thunder Soul issued a light crackling sound. Its atomized body slowly twisted, stretching out and forming a golden python from that thick golden fog. Although its body was ephemeral, it had truly manifested into a material being!

As Lin Ming saw this, his heart stopped. For a Thunder Soul to manifest in reality, this proved that the grade of this Thunder Soul far surpassed that of the Burning Star Flame!

In other words, it was a high-grade heaven-step Thunder Soul!

In the skies above the Sea of Miracles, just at the edge of the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, there actually existed a high-grade heaven-step Thunder Soul here. Moreover, this wasn’t even the deepest area of the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion. Deep in the Thunder Dominion there absolutely had to be an existence that surpassed a Thunder Soul!

If this was just the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, then what would the highest skies of the Sea of Miracles be like?

Lin Ming felt this was extremely shocking. He laughed at his own hubris for thinking he could fly into the skies of the Sea of Miracles if there was only thunder. Now, it seemed as if his current boundary was far from being sufficient. Even a late Divine Sea Supreme Elder wouldn’t be able to return from there, much less him. Although he had the support of the Heretical God Seed, it still wasn’t able to make up for the difference in cultivation.

At this moment, that snake-shaped Thunder Soul turned its eyes on Lin Ming. It issued out two golden lights that shot towards Lin Ming! Within the Thunder Soul’s eyes, a wisp of surprise and greed flashed through it.

For a Thunder Soul to substantialize, that meant that it already had its own intelligence. As this Thunder Soul looked at the spent Lin Ming, it didn't know why but it felt something deep within it that made it feel immeasurable awe. It was as if this was an inherited memory from before its birth, something that originated from the very source of all thunder.

This strange reverential feeling made it feel fear, but it also made it feel excited. This was because this feeling meant that the little human boy in front of it contained an incomparably pure energy within his body.

After this Thunder Soul was born, it had devoured endless thunder essence in order to slowly grow to its current boundary. But compared to this human in front of it, all of the power of thunder it had ever absorbed was simply insignificant. Even if all of it was added together it wouldn't even be one tenth of what this human had within him.

This came from an incomparably pure power of thunder. It brought with it a vast grandeur and exaltation, making the Thunder Soul tremble.

If it could swallow this human then it could obtain a greater strength!

When the Thunder Soul suddenly produced this thought, it occupied its entire being!

Swallow him!

Swallow him!

Swallow him!

This call reverberated endlessly within the Thunder Soul, making it go manic with desire, crazy with greed.

As it looked towards Lin Ming, its eyes became more and more brutal, more and more avaricious. Its golden vision condensed into swords that seemed as if they could pierced through the void.

Lin Ming remained motionless. He had tried pulling out every last out of strength from his body to take out the red spear in his spatial ring. He had to suppress the pain of overdrawing his soul force while suppressing the tyrannical power of thunder within his body and facing this formidable high-grade or possibly even top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul in front of him.

At this time, Lin Ming knew he could no longer avoid this battle. A Thunder Soul excelled at speed to begin with, and within the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion it could draw upon the endless power of thunder here as support. Its speed was countless times quicker than Lin Ming's in his current numbed state.

Since he couldn't avoid this battle, he could only make a final stand with his life on the line!

Facing this life or death crisis, Lin Ming's eyes became increasingly cold. He poured his complete will into the long spear. The long spear seemed as if it could feel its master's fighting spirit and it began to issue out a keening cry.

Roar!

The ancient Thunder Soul let loose an earth-shaking roar. That roar seemed as if it came from the thunder of ancient times, when there was only nihility in the world. It seemed as if it had passed through endless years to echo within the Nine Heavens Thunder Domain, penetrating through all the clouds and cracking apart any stone!

With this roar, all of the lightning within 10 miles of this thunder zone began to rewind back towards the Thunder Soul!

The golden thunder was already extremely powerful. If the countless amount of golden thunder in a 10 mile range were to be sucked in, then its power could be imagined.

At that time, all of the power of thunder around Lin Ming suddenly disappeared. The numbness in his body and divine soul weakened by a great deal, but this situation only caused him to be even more alarmed. This was because he had realized that he underestimated the colossal power of a peak high-grade Thunder Soul!

Ka ka ka ka ka!

With near infinite thunderclaps ringing out, the Thunder Soul's golden snake body twisted with countless arcs of golden lightning. Its body grew to several tens of thousands of feet. With a roar, it rushed forwards, wishing to swallow Lin Ming whole!

At that moment, the thunderclaps in this area of the Thunder Dominion began billowing outwards. A huge wave of golden thunder rolled up into a storm, causing large cracks to appear in the surrounding space.

Facing this top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul that was several tens of thousands of feet long, in this critical life or death moment, Lin Ming burst out with a roar, erupting with his greatest strength.

The Heretical God Force was opened to the limit. All of the endless power of thunder that was stored in the Heretical God Seed and his dantian was forcefully drawn out, completely fusing into his medium-grade heaven-step long spear.

At that moment, because he had overdrawn his soul force in order to control the power of thunder, monstrous waves were suddenly stirred up within Lin Ming's spiritual sea. Even with the suppression of the Samsara martial intent, a great cleft still appeared in his spiritual sea!

But this was still far from enough!!

His complete martial arts will broke out from his spiritual sea. The azure spear-shaped battle spirit howled out, merging together with his red spear!

Ho – !!

Lin Ming issued a final cry. The Heretical God Seed's Burning Star Flame also howled out, gathering into that endless power of thunder, creating the most violent, most potent explosion possible!

Bang!

It was like a purple-red sun had risen within the Thunder Dominion, embezzling the world in shining glory. The Concept of Space, the Concept of Fire, the Concept of Thunder, three Concepts fused into one, detonating with a flash of myriad flaming brilliance that made it seem as if a galaxy was crashing into the world!

In that instant, all sound was swallowed up and time slowed to a crawl. The tens of thousands of feet long golden python smashed into the purple-red sun. With all of the golden lightning in a 10 mile area gathered together and added onto the formidable strength a top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul, its power was monstrously enormous!

During this terrifying collision, the countless lightning shot out like 10,000 ten foot long golden swords. The Heretical God Seed within Lin Ming violently trembled as if it alone bore the endless might of the world.

All of the infinite power of thunder in a 10 mile radius as well as the top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul was completely withstood by the Heretical God Seed alone! Thunder was known as the punishing power of heaven. This was the same as defying fate, standing against the very will of the heavens!

Lin Ming's physical body had to withstand the remaining power of thunder. This was how things were. Even though Lin Ming's body had been tempered again and again, he was still washed in the vast wave of energy until his body broke, his blood vessels ruptured, and his meridians tore to pieces. He was caught in a hurricane of his own blood!

However, none of this caused Lin Ming to panic. He grit his teeth, relying on just his stubborn will to forcefully withstand all of this.

But at this moment, a scene occurred that frightened Lin Ming. With a crackling ‘ka ka ka’ sound, on the surface of the Heretical God Seed that had withstood the endless might of the heavens, a crack clearly emerged!

Lin Ming’s eyes popped wide open.

The Heretical God Seed… cracked!?!?!?

How could this be possible!?

For these last seven years, the mysterious effects of the Heretical God Seed had already engraved themselves in Lin Ming’s mind. This was a cultivation method that came from the ancient ruins of an Evil God. In Lin Ming’s mind, this Evil God cultivation method was a heaven-defying divine treasure only surpassed by the Magic Cube.

And the seed produced from such an arcane technique actually cracked?

How could this be?

Lin Ming could only stare blankly on at the crack on the Heretical God Seed. It was so clear, so hideous, so ferocious that it seemed like the maw of a vicious beast, slowly opening wide.

Lin Ming could feel that the complete power of the top-grade heaven-step Thunder Soul as well as the golden thunder in a 10 mile radius had all entered the Heretical God Seed. This was what had caused the Heretical God Seed to suddenly crack!

Ka ka ka!

The sound of cracking continued, falling into Lin Ming’s ears like a thunderclap. The crack continued to expand until the entire Heretical God Seed had been split in two halves.

Then, a stunning scene took place.

A purple and red bud gradually shot up from the ruins of the broken seed, slowly working hard to grow upwards. It had a faint misty glow, and small flames and arcs of lightning twined around it.

It was like a newborn divine plant god.

The Heretical God Seed... sprouted?

Chapter 816 – Heretical God Sprout

Chapter 816 – Heretical God Sprout

…

…

…

The Heretical God Force was an arcane technique left behind by an ancient Evil God. It had been the greatest stroke of luck for the Realm of the Gods Supreme Elder who found this cultivation method, but he had died before having the time to fully comprehend it.

Actually, as for what secrets the Heretical God Force had and just what would happen once he practiced it to higher levels, he actually had no idea where to even begin finding out. He could only blaze his way forwards and find out by practicing it.

He didn't think that after withstanding the impact of a top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul as well as the near-infinite amount of golden thunder in a 10 mile radius, the Heretical God Seed would actually sprout!

The Heretical God Seed was in truth a theoretical object condensed from energy; it was not a real seed. Lin Ming had never imagined that the Heretical God Seed would develop like a real seed and actually bud.

After being flooded with energy for so long, had it finally obtained true life?

It was said that if a martial artist poured enough of their will and energy into a weapon, that weapon would slowly obtain its own life, giving birth to sword spirits or spear souls – this wasn't unusual at all.

As Lin Ming was having all sorts of thoughts, at this moment, the Heretical God Seed let out a resonant cry. Two golden lights appeared on the surface of the seed; they were the eyes of that golden python.

The golden python fiercely struggled as it tried to break free from the Heretical God Seed. However, it was covered by an invisible barrier of energy. No matter how intensely it endeavored, it still couldn't break free from the shackles of the Heretical God Seed.

Following its movements, the thunder origin energy in the surrounding area began to move restlessly once again, becoming increasingly manic. The golden thunder that had been sucked dry was appearing once again.

This was because of the top grade Thunder Soul!

Lin Ming looked within at the Heretical God Seed. The newly sprouted Heretical God Seed was waging a fierce battle with the uninvited top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul.

The top-grade Thunder Soul wished to swallow the Heretical God Seed, but the Heretical God Seed desired to absorb the Thunder Soul.

Zi zi zi!

The endless gold electric light in the surrounding area was attracted by both of them, everything flowing into Lin Ming's body. At this time, Lin Ming didn't even have the slightest bit of strength left. That last strike had completely overdrawn every last bit of energy he had left.

Seeing the endless golden thunder rushing towards him, Lin Ming bit his teeth and closed his eyes. At this point he could only entrust his fate to the Heretical God Seed.

Bang!

Lightning baptized Lin Ming's body. Every pore, every length of his meridians, every inch of flesh underwent a baptism of golden thunder. Lin Ming's entire body was flooded in a raging sea of thunder yet he actually didn't feel much pain.

Although he was still numb like before, this sort of feeling was quite comfortable.

This surprised Lin Ming. It was as if his body had completely transformed into the body of the Thunder Soul.

The energy became increasingly powerful. The golden thunder howled and thunderclaps billowed in the winds. A normal martial artist would have long since turned to ashes in this situation. Even a powerhouse like Bi Ruyu, who had deformed her body for greater strength and also had a stronger resistance to the power of thunder, still wouldn't be able to withstand this!

"Is this the effect of the Heretical God Seed sprouting? My affinity with thunder and perhaps even my affinity with fire has greatly increased!"

Lin Ming was euphoric over such a change.

Since the golden thunder wasn't injuring him, he continued to pour the energy into the Heretical God Seed, helping it to subdue the top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul.

However, Lin Ming quickly discovered that in truth, the growing Heretical God Seed didn't need his help. Of all of the surrounding golden thunder that was ruthlessly and violently surging into Lin Ming's body, over 95% of it was being absorbed by the Heretical God Seed!

After germinating, the Heretical God Seed had become ravenous. It ate as much thunder energy as it could!

On top of the Heretical God Seed's bud, a layer of brilliant purple light completely enveloped it. This purple light formed floating iridescent rings, all of them circling the Heretical God Seed and emitting a marvelous light.

In such a magnificent and glorious light, the Heretical God Seed slowly grew. With great difficulty, but steadily!

The power of thunder continuously rolled up around Lin Ming, forming a massive golden vortex.

A titanic amount of energy converged into the Heretical God Seed, completely vanishing without hope of return. The growing Heretical God Seed was like a bottomless abyss.

The top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul was completely suppressed by the Heretical God Seed. At this time it was nothing more than a tiny snake underneath the claw of a great eagle: it simply wasn't able to resist.

Nearly all of the gathering golden power was absorbed by the Heretical God Seed. Even the energy essence within the Thunder Soul was being stolen away by the Heretical God Seed!

The top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul twisted in panic, its face full of fear and horror. But no matter how much it struggled or how violent it became, it could not escape the imprisonment of the Heretical God Seed.

Slowly, the Heretical God Seed's bud grew an inch and two tender young stems stretched outwards. On top of these two stems, two leaves curled upwards. One leaf was red and the other was gold.

These leaves slowly began to grow. Not only were their colors different but they were also different shapes. The red leaf was shaped like a heart and the gold leaf was long and narrow, as if it were forming a small sword.

As Lin Ming looked at these two leaves, his heart shook. On top of that succulent red leaf, there was a golden red totem mark; that was the flame totem seal that Lin Ming had comprehended at Timeworn Phoenix City which had then engraved itself onto the surface of the Heretical God Seed. Now, that engraving had appeared on top of this red leaf.

That mark symbolized the Law of Fire, intertwined with the Concept of Fire and its principles.

Soon after, a tiny mass of fiery red lights appeared upon that luscious red leaf. That was the Burning Star Flame Flame Essence.

The entire leaf began to blaze with a brilliant fire. However, that tender leaf didn’t seem afraid of the fire at all. Instead, it became increasingly vibrant.

As time passed, the Heretical God Seed’s bud became longer and larger. But in comparison, the heaven-step Thunder Soul was becoming increasingly weak. The golden python had shrunk to a tiny size and it seemed entirely crestfallen. Its eyes revealed a pleading light as it surrendered; the Thunder Soul realized that it was simply impossible for it to contend with the power of the Heretical God Seed.

After another dozen breaths of time, that top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul crawled onto the Heretical God Seed’s other leaf on its own initiative. It turned into an arc of thunder that surrounded the leaf, turning the entire leaf a vivid gold, sparkling with faint electric sparks.

Thus, the Heretical God Sprout already had two different kinds of heaven-step energies within it. The first was the Burning Star Flame and the other was the tiny golden thunder snake.

At this time, there was a stabbing pain in his mind. Demonshine let out a horrified scream!

Lin Ming was alarmed. He looked towards his spiritual sea and saw that because he had overdrawn his soul and will and forcefully transferred a massive power of thunder from his body, it had caused scars to appear there.

This led to a portion of the golden thunder leaking in. it raged within his spiritual sea, causing lightning to flash in the skies of his spiritual sea. And the area were Demonshine was hiding had been struck by a bolt of thunder, causing the hair on his tail to light up.

Phantasmal existences like ghosts and divine souls especially feared the power of thunder. In particular, this strange golden thunder. Demonshine was frightened as he saw it. He jumped up and down, shouting out, “Lin Ming, hurry up and suppress this lightning! This Saint is about to get shocked to death!”

Lin Ming quickly transferred energy within his body to suppress the lightning. As he looked at the scar in his spiritual sea, he discovered that it was regenerating as it bathed in endless lightning.

Lin Ming’s final strike had forced the Heretical God Seed to take the last step towards evolution. Otherwise, his body would have been swallowed up by the Thunder Soul and the Heretical God Seed would have become a rootless plant. Even though it had the mysterious Laws twined into it, it still wouldn’t have been able to exist any longer, much less bud.

Lin Ming had withstood a tremendous pressure in that last strike. Even though his will far surpassed other martial artists’, moving around so much energy had caused him to seriously overdraw his soul force.

It was a very difficult process to heal a divine soul scar. Wanting to completely regenerate it would take a very long time.

However, what was strange was that even though such a formidable power of thunder had seeped into his spiritual sea, he didn’t feel discomforted at all. He only felt a slight tingling feeling as before.

Instead, as this scar was soaked in lightning, it seemed like it was absorbing the power of thunder to aid in its own regeneration, as if it were ordinary for there to be thunder flashing in the skies above his spiritual sea.

Lin Ming swallowed down a soul recovery pill and began meditating, no longer paying attention to the wound in his divine soul. Wanting to completely cure it would take an extremely long time and also require top heavenly materials – this was obviously impossible here.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then looked upwards towards the heavens.

The skies were still pitch black, with endless arcs of lightning flashing throughout.

If there was this sort of golden thunder after entering just 50 miles into the Thunder Dominion, then what would it be like if he went deeper in?

The golden thunder was no longer a threat to Lin Ming. As it poured into his body, the tingling was actually sort of comfortable and there was even a certain extent of having his divine soul revitalized.

Without a doubt, these were the aftereffects of the Heretical God Seed sprouting.

If he were to go further and try absorbing an even stronger power of thunder with the Heretical God Seed, would it make it stronger? Could he capture an even more powerful Thunder Soul?

As Lin Ming thought of this, his eyes flashed with excitement. He directly shot forwards, deeper into the Thunder Dominion!

....

Outside the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion, under the endless black clouds, Bi Ruyu had already reverted to her true form. She pulled out a black robe from her spatial ring and quickly wrapped it around herself. Her hair was ruined, her body seemed more bent, her eyes were muddy and yellow, her teeth had become loose and hollow, and her black hair had turned white. Through that brief body transformation just now it seemed as if her appearance had aged by 10 years.

She trembled as she took out a small green bottle from her spatial ring. As she opened it, a pale green flame flushed out before being greedily swallowed down by her.

This pale green flame had been refined through the life fires of dozens of young girls. If she didn't have it, then every time she used that body altering cultivation method she would age by dozens of years. It wouldn't be long before she turned into nothing but a pile of bones.

After swallowing down this green flame, she recovered by a great deal. Her eyes became clear again and her hair darkened to its original black. It was only that she couldn't conceal her old age. The wrinkles on her face piled up together, bringing with it a faint flavor of the dying.

After overdrawing her physical strength in that chase, and afterwards having to consume a great deal of energy in order to forcefully escape the distorted space within the Thunder Dominion, this had placed an immeasurable burden on the fires of her life which had already been flickering about like a fading candle in the wind.

Every tiny bit of life force she lost was extremely difficult to restore through the use of medicines.

"That damned brat, I will definitely pull out his soul and refine it into a pill!" Bi Ruyu gnashed her teeth. But at this moment, she suddenly paused, stunned.

She looked at the scene underneath her. "This is... what is going on here...?"

Chapter 817 – Crazy Bi Ruyu

Chapter 817 – Crazy Bi Ruyu

…

…

…

Bi Ruyu floated high in the air, her dry and withered body wrapped in an overly large black robe. As her clothes blew in the wind, she looked like a skeleton.

Underneath her, the third and fourth Demon Envoys that had stayed behind because they were recuperating from their wounds had disappeared.

The only one left over was the second Demon Envoy. He was kneeling on the ground and his two calves had been nailed to the ground with foot-long black nails.

After the two nails passed through the second Demon Envoy's calves, they thrust into the ground. Muscle was twisted around them as blood flowed out; it was a mess of flesh and blood!

As Bi Ruyu saw this strange scene she felt her heart shrink. That pair of nails was the second Demon Envoy's own heaven-step mystic tools. They could be thrown out to kill others and were called the Nine Nether Iron Needles.

Why would the second Demon Envoy use the Nine Nether Iron Needles to nail himself to the ground? Or had someone snatched them away and then turned them against him, turning him into this appearance? But if so, why didn't they kill him?

Bi Ruyu suddenly felt a chill in the air. Although the second Demon Envoy was weaker than her, he wasn't a common martial artist of his generation. If this other party could easily play with him then they might prove a grave threat to herself.

"Demon Two!"

Bi Ruyu's voice resounded like a thunderclap in the second Demon Envoy's ears. The second Demon Envoy violently shook and he blankly looked up from the ground. His eyes had already lost their color; there was nothing reflected in them but white.

Bi Ruyu was a cruel and ruthless individual who practiced wicked Yin devil arts. But as she saw this strange scene before her, even she felt the hairs stand up all over her body.

In this 8000 Mile Black Swamp, even an unlucky Divine Sea Supreme Elder could perish. And anyone below the Divine Sea realm faced near-certain peril entering this damned land.

Bi Ruyu maintained full vigilance, completely releasing her perception to the limit. At this moment, she was wavering about whether she should turn and flee. But then, she heard the sound of surging water behind her.

As she turned around to look, what she saw struck her like a lightning bolt from the sky.

Behind her in the thick fog, there was a blurry river rapidly rolling forwards. This great river was over a thousand feet wide and the waves were vast and endless, carrying with them a deathly pale yellow color. The tumbling dirt waves made one feel an inexplicable sense of sorrow and anguish, demoralizing to the extreme!

Countless bones floated atop the waters of the river like weeds in the water. But, these bones had no root and no sources; it was unknown just where they were floating to.

There were bones of humans, vicious beasts, and even members of unknown races that had wings and tails, seeming as if they were ancient races from times long gone.

This torrential river seemed to originate from a boundless, archaic time, flowing towards a mystical graveyard!

If Lin Ming were here he would immediately recognize what this was. This was the Yellow Springs River!

When Lin Ming adventured into the Eternal Demon Abyss, he too had seen this river. The Demon Emperor had once gazed upon the Yellow Springs River and it had left an unfathomable deep impression on him. He had arrived at the banks of the Yellow Springs River, thinking to study that pale yellow river water but had nearly died as a result.

The Yellow Springs River. Anyone who touched its waters would die. Their body would disintegrate, their dantian would collapse, their soul would melt away, and there would be nothing left of them but stark white bones that floated in the river forever.

Although Bi Ruyu didn't know what the Yellow Springs River was, she knew that a deep fear was suddenly birthed within her. Despite not discovering anything dangerous, she still instantly turned around and fled without a second thought!

As she passed by the second Demon Envoy, she took out her whip and snapped it around his waist, forcefully ripping him away from the two Nine Nether Iron Needles.

Puff! Puff!

Blood splashed out. The second Demon Envoy had actually used his own Nine Nether Iron Needles on himself. Now that he was forcefully torn away, his two legs had nearly ripped off and there was nothing but a thin thread of flesh connecting them.

Bi Ruyu rushed seven or eight miles out in a single breath before stopping to collect herself from the shock.

It wasn't that she didn't want to run further away but that she was afraid she would run into something else that was dangerous. In this incomparably strange 8000 Mile Black Swamp, every step one took was an additional chance to die without a burial!

“What happened?”

Bi Ruyu threw the second Demon Envoy to the ground. The reason she had rescued him just now was mainly to understand just what had happened to him. She didn’t want to run around in confusion with so many life threatening dangers around. And now with the third and fourth Demon Envoy having disappeared, chances were that they had also succumbed to the dangers here. If she was alone in this strange place then it would inevitably be more dangerous.

With the second Demon Envoy accompanying her, at least she would have a shield during a critical moment.

The second Demon Envoy still had blank, listless eyes. Bi Ruyu put down the idea of forcibly searching his soul and then took out an extremely precious soul recovery pill from her spatial ring and force fed it to him.

A moment later, the second Demon Envoy hacked up in loud coughs. Every time he coughed he spat out pure black blood.

He collapsed to the ground, limp, as his eyes finally began to slowly restore themselves.

A deep fear and dread flashed across his face but he reined his emotions in, “Honored Imperial Scholar… are you the one who saved me?”

“What happened to you? Where are Demon Three and Demon Four?”

Bi Ruyu breathlessly asked.

“They died, they all died.” A pained expression crossed the second Demon Envoy’s face. “After I flew down from the Thunder Dominion, I waited with the two of them. Then, I don’t know when but a greenish yellow river suddenly appeared beside us. When the severely wounded Demon Three saw this river, his eyes turned dull and his face stiffened before he began walking towards the river like he had lost his soul. Demon Four felt that something was wrong and wanted to pull him back but he actually suffered the same fate. They had both become walking corpses, unable to be awakened.

“There is something strange within that river water. As they walked into the river, whatever the water ran over turned into bone, swallowing up all their flesh and blood. I hesitated for just a moment but I also came under the influence of the water. There seems to be an unbelievable magical summoning power in that river; I couldn’t even control my own legs and prevent them from stepping forwards. So I took out my Nine Nether Iron Needles and pierced them through my legs to nail myself to the ground. This was the only way I managed to maintain my life until now.”

As the second Demon Envoy spoke, his complexion became paper white. That incomparably strange scene just now had left a horrifying shadow in his heart.

To evil and cruel-hearted individuals like him, dying in battle wasn’t something they feared. What they feared were unknown, deviant forces like this that could kill them without them knowing what had even happened.

As Bi Ruyu listened to the second Demon Envoy’s story, her face whitened. The 8000 Mile Black Swamp was a land where anyone below a Divine Sea powerhouse would have nine chances to die and only one to live. Now it seemed as if this description wasn’t even enough to describe this place; it was truly terrifying to the extreme.

She also feared this strange mystical strength.

But now, she was simply unwilling to withdraw!

She didn’t even know if she could live while trying to leave the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. But even if she made it out alive, she would still receive Situ Bonan’s punishment.

And the key point was that after all this struggling and danger, she only had 100-200 years of life left. Even if she made it out of this land alive, what meaning was there?

She might as well place her life on the line and try to capture Lin Ming and obtain a 10,000 Year Peach Pith, a treasure far more valuable that a Life Bestowing Heaven Pill. This was a heavenly material that could even extend the life of a Divine Sea Supreme Elder.

Bi Ruyu knew that Situ Bonan had already absorbed a 10,000 Year Peach Pith. This sort of life extending treasure didn't have much effect when used multiple time, thus it was possible that she would be rewarded with one.

She looked at the second Demon Envoy and coldly said, "We will stay here and wait for Lin Lanjian!"

The second Demon Envoy's mind trembled with fear. "Lin Lanjian has already penetrated deeper into the Thunder Dominion than even you, Imperial Scholar. Wouldn't he have died by now?"

Bi Ruyu grit her teeth and said, "That boy is tougher than a cockroach! My last strike didn't hit him but I was still able to leave a tiny trace of my netherworld energy in his body. I can use that to faintly sense his current position. He still hasn't died yet! Even if living here is playing at death's door I will stay wait until that boy comes back so I can pull out his soul and refine his marrow!"

Bi Ruyu knew that even if Lin Ming didn't die in the Thunder Dominion, he wouldn't be able to stay in there much longer. As long as she could capture him when he left then everything would have been worth it.

The second Demon Envoy's lips twitched. He grit his teeth and finally said, "Then I will follow Honored Imperial Scholar!"

He also had no other path left to take. With his current strength, wanting to leave this 8000 Mile Black Swamp alone was next to impossible. It would be much safer to stay here with Bi Ruyu and wait for Lin Ming.

Moreover, Lin Ming was his heart demon. With his martial talent, he didn't have much hope of breaking through to the Divine Sea to begin with. And with this heart demon added onto it, he was certain to never break into the Divine Sea in the future.

"Good. Then we will join forces. At least we'll be able to watch each other's backs. You sit down and meditate to restore your strength first. Restore your leg injuries and then we'll decide what to do. That Lin Lanjian should come out soon enough; he shouldn't be able to last in there for much longer."

Bi Ruyu reached an agreement with the second Demon Envoy and began to nervously wait. The second Demon Envoy sat in meditation as he began to heal himself. With his sixth stage Life Destruction cultivation and his soul body having been reformed three times, he could fully recover his limbs as long as they weren't completely destroyed.

Bi Ruyu had originally thought that Lin Ming would at most be able to persist in the Thunder Dominion for half an incense stick of time, but she quickly discovered that she had been wrong. Not only had she been mistaken, but mistaken to a ridiculous degree!

After half an incense stick of time, the skies remained dark and cloudy with faint lightning flashing through without change.

After an incense stick of time, the lightning still flashed as before. Bi Ruyu could feel the extremely faint wisp of netherworld energy in Lin Ming's body. He was deep in the Thunder Dominion, and it was even possible that… he was going even deeper!

How was this possible!?!?

Bi Ruyu was breathless with anger. She realized that Lin Ming might have been trapped inside the Thunder Dominion's closed off force field. After all, even with her own strength she had to consume a massive amount of energy to break through the distorted space and forcibly leave that space. Lin Ming's cultivation was limited. After his body and divine soul were ruined with the manic power of thunder, he would likely not have the ability to break through that closed force field.

But the problem was, if he couldn't break through the force field then he should have died in the Thunder Dominion. It was impossible for him to stay in there alive for such a long time!

As Bi Ruyu thought about the black fog from before and how Lin Ming had emerged without a single injury, she had a crazy premonition. It was extremely likely that he had a quasi-Saint artifact on him, or even a true defensive Saint artifact treasure!

'Even if you have a Saint artifact you won't be able to last inside forever. After I kill you, everything you have will be mine!'

Bi Ruyu thought, her mind nearing madness.

However…

A quarter hour…

Two quarter hours…

Three quarter hours…

One hour…

After nearly two hours passed, Lin Ming still hadn't come out. And at this time, she suddenly heard a bass roar around her. As she looked ahead, her complexion completely changed, becoming as pale as paper. She stared blankly on as not too far in front of her was a humanoid vicious beast covered with red scales. Its red eyes glowed like ghostly fire, sending a chill down the backs of whoever looked into them.

Chapter 818 – Lightning Tempered Body

Chapter 818 – Lightning Tempered Body

…

…

…

Lin Ming had no idea how deep the Thunder Dominion was. As he flew from 50 miles to 80 miles, the color of the thunder changed two times.

From a red gold to blue gold, and then from a blue gold to a purple gold.

The power of this purple gold thunder made Lin Ming's heartbeat inexplicably quicken. Every arc of purple gold thunder was like a vicious beast, ready to bite down on anyone nearby. Even if Lin Ming had the Heretical God Sprout to protect himself, he still didn't dare to willfully absorb it. Instead, he searched for the smallest wisps of purple gold thunder and slowly and carefully introduced them into his body, letting it gather into the Heretical God Sprout.

Purple gold thunder flowed through Lin Ming's meridians like magma. Wherever it went, Lin Ming could feel a severe pain emanate from his meridians as if his flesh and blood were igniting into a blaze.

However, in these past seven years, Lin Ming had already experienced bouts of agonizing pain far worse than this. Thus, he was able to withstand the ache and completely concentrate on gathering the power of thunder into the Heretical God Sprout.

Chi chi chi!

The purple gold thunder wrapped around the Heretical God Sprout. The Heretical God Sprout that had stopped growing at the 50-60 mile zone began to grow once more.

The two leaves stretched out and veins became even clearer. The Heretical God Sprout lengthened at an extremely slow speed.

This growth continued for several quarter hours before finally stopping. It seemed it wouldn't grow anymore, no matter how much power of purple gold thunder it absorbed.

The extra power of the purple gold thunder was stored within the Heretical God Sprout. This power couldn't be transformed into energy for the Heretical God Sprout to grow, nor could it be refined by Lin Ming.

As soon as Lin Ming discovered that the Heretical God Sprout could store the excess power of thunder, his mind suddenly stirred.

"Demonshine, do you think there is a chance that when I'm trying to cross Life Destruction, I can detonate the saved up power of thunder from within the Heretical God Sprout? If I add in the energy from heavenly materials and completely disintegrate my body, would that be enough for me to smoothly cross Life Destruction?"

Demonshine was stunned for a moment as he heard Lin Ming's question. It was an extremely risky process to cross Life Destruction. A martial artist would be above and beyond careful for fear that there would be any problems during the breakthrough. Yet, Lin Ming had suggested a crazy idea.

Demonshine thought for some time and then began to slowly say, "About that... I can't say I really know. All I know is that I've heard that Realm of the Gods martial artists who dual cultivated in body and law had to depend upon the massive amount of energy inherent in heavenly materials to decompose their bodies and cross Life Destruction. That could be considered a type of external force. If you store the power of thunder within you and detonate it, the principle should also be the same. My only worry is that if your attempt this, you might lose control over the power of thunder at that time..."

Lin Ming shook his head, “It doesn’t matter. I have belief in myself.” Lin Ming looked at the Heretical God Sprout within him. The sprout was already two inches high. This thunder would become his greatest dependence in crossing Life Destruction.

In order to make it even more dependable, Lin Ming decided to rush even deeper into the Thunder Dominion. Although the purple gold thunder in the 80 mile range was powerful, it had only allowed the Heretical God Sprout to grow by a little bit. It hadn’t yet reached the limits of the Heretical God Sprout.

As Lin Ming continued his way deeper within, he flew at a very slow speed. Even Demonshine felt his heart rapidly beating in Lin Ming’s spiritual sea. After all, Demonshine only had his divine soul form. If Lin Ming had an accident then he would also be burnt to ashes.

“Boy, you best be careful and not let any more thunder enter your spiritual sea. My tiny body won’t be able to handle it!”

“I got it.” Lin Ming fully focused his mind, his speed becoming increasingly slow.

85 miles…

88 miles…

90 miles…

After reaching this depth, not only did the color of thunder change, but even the shape changed.

Before 80 miles, the thunder within the Thunder Dominion still had the shape of arcs, with both thick and thin. But after reaching 90 miles deep, the thunder had turned into fantastical dreamlike ephemeral light.

This surreal light appeared mostly purple white, but occasionally there were flashes of deep purple and golden red. It was like a sunset had lit up the world, glorious and majestic.

As he listened carefully he discovered that this lightning did not release any sound. It seemed incomparably quiet and peaceful, as if this area wasn't the Thunder Dominion but a purple fairyland of immortals and dreams.

However, Lin Ming could feel that lying beneath this tranquil and fascinating exterior, there was actually an incomparably terrifying power of thunder hiding beneath it all!

It was impossible for anyone below the Divine Sea to survive here!

Even though Lin Ming had the Heretical God Sprout protecting him, in the face of such lightning he was still aghast and alarmed.

"I'm at the very edge of the 90 mile Thunder Dominion zone. If I go any further, I won't be able to withstand the might of the thunder anymore." Lin Ming decided to temper the Heretical God Sprout at the edge of this lightning zone by occasionally catching the wisps of lightning that drifted toward him. If he were to directly bathe in that purple white and golden red lightning, he feared he would immediately be vaporized to ash.

Hiss…

A wisp of purple white lightning deviated from the 90 mile range of the Thunder Dominion. Lin Ming's heart skipped a beat and he suddenly moved. He wrapped his hands with true essence and directly grabbed that approaching lightning wisp.

Chi!

There was a faint sizzling sound as Lin Ming felt as if he had caught a red hot iron with bare hands. His hands were in severe pain as a stream of burning gas wafted upwards; his hands had been scorched black!

Lin Ming ate the pain, not releasing his hands. He transferred true essence to protect all the meridians in his body and then forcefully absorbed this wisp of lightning.

This was only a tiny wisp of lightning, but as it entered Lin Ming's body it seemed as if it turned to countless knives that cut into him, desiring to tear apart his body from within!

A tremendous pain tore through his body. Lin Ming was frightened but happy at the same time. He felt more and more that this power of thunder could really guarantee his chances of crossing Life Destruction.

Not just any sort of devastatingly destructive energy could help a martial artist cross Life Destruction. The premise to use this sort of energy was that the martial artist himself was able to control it, otherwise they would truly be eradicated by the energy, without even ashes left.

But, dangerously destructive energy wasn't easy to control. In addition, when a martial artist was in the process of crossing Life Destruction, their body would disintegrate and their strength would drop to the lowest point. At this time, for a martial artist to wish to control the tyrannical energy flooding their body was easier said than done.

Lin Ming carefully circulated the lightning through his meridians. Wherever it visited it brought with it a nearly unbearable pain. The Heretical God Sprout seemed to sense this brutal power of thunder and began to issues cries of excitement.

The lightning flowed even faster.

After several breaths of time, the lightning was swallowed up by the Heretical God Sprout. The delicate leaves of the sprout became even more crystal clear and luscious.

Just a wisp of lighting wouldn't be too useful. Lin Ming attempted to approach the 90 mile Thunder Dominion zone again to absorb more lightning.

However, he was careful to avoid the deep purple and golden red lightning that occasionally appeared. Lin Ming could feel an even more fearful strength exuding from these two types of lightning. He didn't want to take such an unnecessary and great risk.

More lightning converged into his meridians. Without a doubt this was even more painful. But in order to save time, this was all that Lin Ming could do. He didn't want to stay in the 8000 Mile Black Swamp for too long. There had been far too many masters that had perished here and Lin Ming's strength could only be placed in the middle of those fallen masters.

Hissss.....

With every revolution of energy, the Heretical God Sprout grew taller and its young leaves became that much more crystalline and succulent.

Throughout the process, Lin Ming was constantly bruised and damaged. He had no choice but to stop periodically and swallow healing pills. Fortunately, Lin Ming's body had been tempered for a long time and had become extremely tough. If a normal essence gathering system martial artist were to try this, then they would be fired into cinders even with the support of the Heretical God Sprout.

After an hour passed, Lin Ming introduced more and more purple white lightning into his body. There were even times where he would bring several wisps of deep purple lightning in, but he still didn't show any signs that he was nearing his limit of resistance.

This originally agonizing pain slowly transformed into a sense of numbness. And after that, even that sense of numbness made one feel a tinge of elation!

Lin Ming's mind stirred. His eyes locked onto a wisp of golden red lightning. His feet moved, stepping onto Golden Roc Shattering the Void as he reached out and grabbed it within his hands.

Chi-la!

Lin Ming's hands were scorched. But, he stubbornly forced that lightning into his body and forcefully suppressed it with the Heretical God Force and shoving it into the Heretical God Sprout.

As the Heretical God Sprout absorbed this golden red lightning, it grew increasingly vivacious. It was as if this wisp of golden red lightning was more effective than several dozen wisps of purple white lightning.

This changed surprised Lin Ming.

“It seems that since my body was baptized by thunder several times, I’ve gradually adapted to the power of thunder.”

Lin Ming thought out loud. At this time Demonshine spoke up, saying, “You’re about half right. There’s another reason, and that is that after your body is tempered by lightning it has become increasingly pure and tough! This is like those ghostly martial artists that cross thunder tribulation. It is difficult to cross the thunder tribulation, but once one does, it can actually temper their body, making them that much more formidable. This is a rare chance!”

“Oh?” Lin Ming was alarmed before immediately feeling relieved. Indeed, this was true. Thunder was not only the power of destruction but also the power of creation!

In the legends, during the most ancient times, infinitely far back, when universe was still chaos and the heavens and mountains were forming, at that time there was no life in the world. There was only primordial air, sea, magma, and endless amounts of thunder.

In this lifeless environment, lightning had struck the ocean, causing changes in the composition of air and giving birth to the most primitive forms of life.

This was a miracle belonging to lightning.

Lightning was not just vital in the creation of life, but it was important even now. Even in the human body it was an essential force. In all the infinitesimally small cells of the human body there were always countless arcs of electricity flowing through.

The existences of lightning and life were closely linked. If one could master lightning then that was similar to mastering the power of life. This would make their bodies far more powerful!

However, even if Lin Ming occasionally introduced golden red lightning into his body, the Heretical God Sprout stopped growing, as if it had reached a bottleneck in its growth. It was unable to depend on absorbing this power of thunder to make another breakthrough in its growth.

The Heretical God Sprout still absorbed the power of thunder in the 90 mile zone and stored it. Lin Ming hesitated for a moment and then flew several miles deeper in the Thunder Dominion until he saw the 100 mile zone border.

In the 100 mile Thunder Dominion zone, the appearance of the lightning changed once again!

At this time, even though Lin Ming had just tempered his body with thunder, he was also very clear that he could no longer move forwards any more.

At the 100 mile Thunder Dominion zone, the thunder was completely still, having condensed into individual thunder balls that quietly floated in the air. It looked tranquil, but upon closer observation Lin Ming actually discovered that these thunder balls all formed a closed off force field around themselves, sealing the entire thunder ball within.

This was because the energy of the thunder was far too strong. It tore apart space, thus forming this phenomenon!

For the power of thunder to twist apart space, it was hard to imagine just how powerful it actually was.

But, what Lin Ming could imagine was his fate if he were to touch any of these thunder balls.

Chapter 819 – Argent White Sword and the Lightning Source

Chapter 819 – Argent White Sword and the Lightning Source

…

…

…

Lin Ming didn’t dare to step into the 100 mile range of the Thunder Dominion. He only released a wisp of his perception to investigate the area. He discovered that the closed off force field in the 100 mile range was already twisted to the point of tearing, with large and small invisible space cracks flooding the entire area. If a general Life Destruction martial artist were to come here, then forget about those quietly terrifying thunder balls, but just those space cracks would prove fatal.

Lin Ming carefully manipulated his perception to bypass every thunder ball, giving them all a wide berth. If his wisp of perception were to accidently touch them then it would be burnt to absolutely nothing.

As his perception made its way deeper, a shocking matter occurred. He discovered that 100 miles high in the skies of the Thunder Dominion, there were actually islands floating in the air. These islands were only several miles wide but they looked like immortal paradises pulled out from fairytales.

There were floating islands above the Thunder Dominion? How were they even floating in the air?

Lin Ming was awed. The operation of Laws here already surpassed the scope of his understanding.

Then, as he used his perception to investigate the islands, he discovered something else alarming. On top of these islands there were actually… trees!

These divine trees were scarce; it was hard to find even a single tree on a floating island. But, they existed safely within the floating thunder balls, even absorbing the power of the thunder balls.

There were spirit trees growing 100 miles into the Thunder Dominion!

Lin Ming gulped. He had once collected Violet Electricity Spirit Bamboo from Thundercrash Mountain, but when that was compared to these spirit trees, the difference couldn’t even be described with clouds and mud!

Just how many years had these spirit trees existed for? If he cut one of these down and returned, just what rank of heavenly material would it be?

“Lin Ming, those look to be magnetic god trees!”

“Mm?”

“Hey, don’t look at me, I’m just making a guess. Where would I have the chance to see something like that? I’ve only heard of some descriptions. Within the Realm of the Gods, only the large sects would have something like this. I really have no idea why they would grow in the Sea of Miracle’s Thunder Dominion.” Demonshine was puzzled. The Sea of Miracles was a mystic realm that simply shouldn’t exist in the Sky Spill Continent.

Lin Ming suppressed his thoughts of rushing up and trying to cut down a few trees. Not to mention those floating thunder balls, but even these magnetic god trees themselves were strangely dangerous. They contained an immeasurably horrifying power of thunder within them. If his cultivation was lacking then he feared that just by approaching these trees he would be vaporized to ash just by a few rays of magnetic god light they would casually release.

Moreover, even if this magnetic god tree that was rare even in the Realm of the Gods just nicely lay there and let him chop at it, he still might not be able to cut it down.

"When I reach the Divine Sea, I'll come and see if I have a chance. If even the Divine Sea isn't enough then I will wait until my cultivation rises even further after ascending into the Realm of the Gods and then come back to investigate again!"

In any case, this Thunder Dominion Mystic Realm would not disappear. Lin Ming believed that the Divine Sea Supreme Elders of the Sky Spill Continent would never come up here. Disregarding those spirit islands that contained an alarming amount of energy, there might not even be anyone capable of standing anywhere nearby like how he was right now.

As Lin Ming was lost in thought, he suddenly heard a loud scream as if a wild animal was roaring.

"Mm? Is that a living being?"

Lin Ming was greatly surprised. Anything that could survive in the 90 mile zone of the Thunder Dominion had to be an absolutely terrifying existence. The only reason he was able to stand here was because he relied on the Heretical God Sprout. If this other party were to be standing here by virtue of their strength alone then it was highly likely they were a Divine Sea level being!

Lin Ming was shocked. He traced his spatial ring and restrained all the energy within his body, keeping complete vigilance of his surroundings!

"That's not right, that isn't a living creature… that is… a Thunder Soul?"

Lin Ming felt his heart grip in dread. A thousand feet far away, he could see a small purple lion only several feet long. He could clearly feel a pure power of thunder exuding from its body. Moreover, besides the power of thunder, there were no signs of any other energy. This was a clear indicating sign that only Thunder Souls had.

But looking at this small lion's appearance, it seemed incomparably real. Every hair and line was clear and solid, as if it had absolutely no distinction from an ordinary lion. How was this like a Thunder Soul? It was clearly a living lion.

"This is..."

"Lin Ming!!! That is a Thunder Source!!" Demonshine's voice burst out, his tone tinged with panic and fear.

"So it was!"

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. Above a Flame Essence was a Flame Elemental, and above a Thunder Soul was a Thunder Source.

Thunder Source – an origin of thunder. Even the worst Thunder Source was at least 10 times more terrifying than any existing Thunder Soul!

Currently, the Heretical God Sprout within Lin Ming's body could resist the might of a top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul. But facing a Thunder Source, it simply had no ability to resist.

A top-grade heaven-step was already intelligent, and a Thunder Source was naturally more so. Moreover, this was the 90 mile zone of the Thunder Dominion. This Thunder Source could draw upon the infinite power of thunder here. Lin Ming didn't even believe he had the slightest chance of victory.

Lin Ming's mind was completely focused on the Heretical God Sprout as he slightly traced his spatial ring. In front of this beautiful spectral lion, he was in an absolutely dangerous situation. Once this Thunder Source gave birth to the thought of eating him then he could only engage in a last ditch death struggle.

Rahh…..

The purple lion issued a bass roar, its amber eyes flashing with fear.

Lin Ming was startled. Was this purple lion afraid of the Heretical God Sprout?

Mm? No!

Lin Ming discovered that further off in the Thunder Dominion, just several hundred feet away from the purple lion, there was also a mass of purple that was exuding incomparably pure energy. As he looked more carefully he could see that it was actually a sword.

A four foot long sword, its blade shining with a cold light. Arcs of electricity wound around its body and the sword issued endless whistling cries.

How could there be a sword 90 miles deep in the Thunder Dominion!?!?

Although the sword was far away and also masked behind an amazing power of thunder, Lin Ming could still judge that the grade of this sword was unbelievably high! It might even be a Saint rank artifact!

Lin Ming felt this was more and more mind-boggling. This sort of divine sword would never be randomly abandoned in the Thunder Dominion. Was it possible that some Divine Sea Supreme Elder entered the Thunder Dominion and died here, leaving behind his sword?

As Lin Ming was dreaming up all these thoughts, his perception swept over that divine sword's hilt. Then, he became shocked!

On top of the sword hilt was clearly engraved an ancient and mysterious design, as if it were a bird totem. And, this mysterious totem was completely identical to the goddess' jade pendant from the Eternal Demon Abyss as well as the young girl from the Forsaken God Clan!

Was this… a sword left behind by the goddess?

No…

Lin Ming shook his head. The goddess had been sleeping deep within the Enteral Demon Abyss; she was entombed billions of miles far from here. Not just that, but she had also been buried along with her weapon, a long spear. It was only a pity that the spear had been damaged and broken so that it had lost all of its energy.

Because of the sharp contrast formed by that incomparably soft and beautiful young woman as well as the tower spear, it had let a deep impression upon Lin Ming. Since the goddess' weapon was a spear, this sword was unlikely to be hers.

As his eyes moved down, Lin Ming found that there were also two words inscribed onto the sword hilt. These words were actually written in the language of the Realm of the Gods, 'Argent White'.

Argent White Sword?

Lin Ming knew that this sword was likely a Saint artifact. Although he couldn't clearly identify its rank, he could tell that its value was no less than the Cosmic Melting Furnace's.

Lin Ming watched on at the confrontation between the Argent White Sword and the purple lion. It was better said that the two had been in a showdown to begin with and he had stumbled his way in, becoming an uninvited guest to their party.

As he remembered the fear in the purple lion's roars, was it possible that it feared this masterless sword?

For a sword to be able to threaten a Thunder Source, that was an incomparably bizarre matter.

A human body could be burnt by the power of thunder, but a sword could not. However, if a sword were to gain intelligence then it would either have to have a sword soul or a battle spirit attached to it. But, these things could be erased by a Thunder Source!

This Argent White Sword clearly had intelligence, but the Thunder Source obviously wasn't able to do anything against the sword.

After this confrontation continued for half an incense stick of time, the purple lion finally flinched first and began to withdraw. It turned to Lin Ming and deeply stared at him before flying away. It was a bad idea to confront two enemies at once, and Lin Ming also had a peculiar energy around his body that the purple lion feared.

The Argent White Sword didn't chase and Lin Ming naturally wouldn't chase either. Although he did wish to subdue this Thunder Source for his own use, he knew that with his current strength it was impossible to contend with even the weakest Thunder Source.

Thus, Lin Ming and the Argent White Sword were left together, distantly facing each other. Lin Ming hesitated for a moment before cautiously approaching this Argent White Sword. This sword began emitting a keening howl, overflowing with killing intent as it sent obvious warnings towards Lin Ming.

This sort of response was within Lin Ming's expectations. He took out an azure jade pendant and wore it; this was the goddess's jade pendant.

The sword had a mind of its own; it immediately recognized the energy from this jade pendant.

It trembled for a moment, then suddenly reversed, shooting in the opposite direction.

Lin Ming followed without hesitation. In that brief contact just now he could feel that there was terrifying martial arts will attached to the sword blade. This martial arts will had fused together with the sword soul, enabling it to touch upon the Concept of Immortality, as if it would never rust or weaken with the passage of time.

The sword instantly flew a dozen miles away, passing through endless lightning.

Lin Ming tread on Golden Roc Shattering the Void, not daring to fall a single step behind. Luckily, he had just completed tempering his body with lightning. Otherwise, if he were to try flying this fast in the 90 mile Thunder Dominion and ran into any bit of lightning, he would instantly vaporize without even ash remaining.

After a dozen breaths of time, a floating island appeared in front of Lin Ming. It was completely similar to the islands with the magnetic god trees that he had seen before, except that it was floating in the 90 mile region of the Thunder Dominion and not the 100 mile region.

The island was covered with a distorted force field, like a thin egg shell was protecting the entire island. There was a 1000 foot high hill at the end of the island.

The Argent White Sword easily broke through the force field and flew into a cave in the hillside.

Lin Ming followed close behind. He gripped his red spear and poured the power of thunderfire into it. His spear pierced through the force field and he flew towards the cave.

As Lin Ming approached the cave, he could feel a vast and lofty atmosphere blowing out from within, as if an unrivalled Emperor dwelled there.

‘Is this the cave mansion of a peerless powerhouse?’ This thought flashed through Lin Ming’s mind. With great respect in his heart he slowly stepped into the cave.

The cave was filled with the taste of endless years, as if it had already passed through a very long time.

Just several steps in, Lin Ming discovered that there was a stone tablet standing up from the ground. The letters carved upon it were in the language of the Realm of the Gods. The exquisite curving silver letters lingered with a sharp sword intent, making the heart palpitate.

‘With sword in hand, I defy the universe, I defy samsara. If fate will not accommodate my clan then I shall break the shackles of fate. If the heavens will not accommodate my clan then I shall go against heaven’s will and cut down all immortals!’

This short phrase, just a few dozen words, was overflowing with an unyielding will.

“If fate will not accommodate my clan then I shall break the shackles of fate. If the heavens will not accommodate my clan then I shall go against heaven’s will and cut down the immortals…”

This was indeed the curse of the so-called Forsaken God Clan…

Chapter 820 – God Forsaken Clan, Eightfall Thunder Emperor

Chapter 820 – God Forsaken Clan, Eightfall Thunder Emperor

…

…

…

When Lin Ming rescued the young girl from the Forsaken God Clan, Jue, he had heard her recount the curse that her clan had shouldered since time immemorial.

As a cursed family clan, they had no surname nor did they have an origin. The legends said that the ancestors of their clan had angered the gods, and the punishment meted out to them was that their clansmen would have to withstand a bloodline curse for all their future generations.

The tattoo seal on their faces was a symbol of that bloodline curse.

Once the descendants of the Forsaken God Clan were born, after a certain period of time they would have to endure an excruciatingly agonizing pain, an ache that burrowed into their very marrow. As they grew up, the gap between these outbreaks of pain would become shorter and the duration of them would become longer. This would continue until the cursed person died from the pain or they committed suicide to escape it.

Only by cultivating martial arts would they develop the strength and will to momentarily suppress and delay this pain. However, what was sad was that even if the juniors of the Forsaken God Clan had talent that far exceeded a normal martial artist's, it was still impossible for them to disobey their destiny. No matter how far they reached on their road of martial arts, they would inevitably succumb to the bloodline curse.

The master of this cave mansion had left behind these words, clearly expressing his will and determination as he struggled with the fate of his curse. These words contained an unyielding will between them, but also exuded a solemn and tragic feeling. Looking at this stone tablet only made one feel that the heavens were unfair.

Towards this sort of extraordinary heir who came from such a tragic and mysterious family, Lin Ming harbored nothing but deep respect.

He left the stone tablet and continued moving forwards. The cave wasn't too deep. Lin Ming only needed to walk a thousand feet to reach the end, where there was a small stone room.

As Lin Ming entered this stone room he immediately felt a vast pressure push down on him. It was like a pure and dominant thunder storm swept over him, nearly flinging him back outside.

Lin Ming was startled. He revolved the Heretical God Force and pushed his way through this thunder storm to enter the chamber.

The chamber was only a few dozen feet wide. There was a stone bed in the center as well as a stone table and several stone chairs.

The stone table and chairs were all carved from magnetic core stone. This magnetic core stone had existed in the Thunder Dominion for countless years. After being baptized in this thunder energy for such a long time, the magnetic core stone had already become as valuable as heavenly treasures.

On top of the magnetic core stone table was a purple crystal. It seemed as if that ephemeral thunder storm was emitted by this purple crystal just now.

Lying on the stone bed was a peaceful skeleton. This skeleton glistened, as if it had been carved from translucent crystal. This skeleton had lain down here for countless years already.

Lin Ming wasn't surprised to see this skeleton here. The master of this cave must have died a natural death, otherwise they wouldn't have allowed the sword to fly out to meet enemies.

As he glanced beside the skeleton, that Argent White Sword had already returned to its sheath, without the least bit of edge to its aura. It was hard to imagine that this sword had just faced off against a Thunder Source, an existence ten times more terrifying than even the strongest Thunder Soul.

"These are the remains of an ancient Emperor powerhouse..."

Lin Ming released a long sigh. It was obvious this was no ordinary Emperor powerhouse. No ordinary Emperor powerhouse would ever be able to construct their own cave mansion here. This person might even be a character of the same rank as the Demon Emperor.

But what a pity, no matter how glorious or peerless this person was, they could not withstand the wearing down of the years, nor could they escape the suffering of their samsara.

Lin Ming respectfully and quietly bowed. It was only then did he discover that there was a spatial ring on this Emperor powerhouse's finger.

Lin Ming hesitated. Since the Argent White Sword had brought him to this cave mansion, didn't that mean that it had consented to him searching the spatial ring?

And at this moment, Demonshine suddenly cried out in alarm!

Lin Ming was frightened for a moment. He quickly searched in his spiritual sea, thinking that something had happened to Demonshine. He saw that the dog fellow was in perfectly fine condition as if nothing had happened at all.

"What are you doing? You surprised me for a moment there." Lin Ming said, a bit disgruntled.

"Boy, look at what's on that stone table!"

Lin Ming followed the direction of Demonshine's voice. On the stone table was the fist-sized purple crystal, and beside the purple crystal were smaller finger-sized pieces of broken purple crystal. It was apparent that smaller amethyst-colored pieces had been broken off from the larger one.

Lin Ming had seen these purple crystals as soon as he entered this room. They contained an extremely pure thunder energy; it was clear they were some sort of thunder-attribute heavenly treasure. But, what Lin Ming had first investigated was the skeleton of the Emperor powerhouse, thus he had put aside those purple crystals for the time being.

He released his perception and examined it, yet couldn't find any related memory in his mind. After all, the memories he inherited from the Realm of the Gods Supreme Elders had only been ruined fragments.

"What is that?" Lin Ming asked.

Demonshine sounded as if he was hyperventilating with excitement. If this wasn't the Thunder Dominion and he didn't dare to appear in the open with his soul form then he would have already rushed out of Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

"If this Saint isn't wrong, then that is the Twinlife Thunder Crystal that the Thunder Source is born from! This is a heavenly treasure that can temper a battle spirit! Even in the Realm of the Gods, this sort of divine treasure can only be stumbled upon through pure luck, it simply can't be found!

"Temper a battle spirit?" Lin Ming's heart moved. There was a phrase in the Realm of the Gods' martial arts world – 'The mortal body is easy to train, but the battle spirit is difficult to complete.'

Although there were very few body transformation martial artist in the Realm of the Gods, the pure total number of martial artists in the Realm of the Gods was simply too terrifying – it could only be tallied in trillions. For a body transformation martial artist, the resources they had to consume were at least a hundred times that of an essence gathering system martial artist. Still, it was always a good idea to temper the mortal body.

As long as one was willing to sacrifice an unbelievable amount of resources, they could always open the Eight Inner Gates. But… a battle spirit was different.

It was far harder to cultivate than the mortal body!

Before a battle spirit was officially formed, it could only be tempered with the leftover will of other powerhouses. For instance, the Blood Demon Bone that Lin Ming had found before was this sort of treasure.

But after forming a battle spirit, especially after reaching bronze small success or bronze large success, there were far, far too few heavenly materials that could temper a battle spirit. This was because a battle spirit was formed from a martial artist's will. A martial artist's will depended on their heart and conscience; it had minimal influence from outside forces.

Thus, this was why it was said that the mortal body was easy to train, but a battle spirit was difficult to complete!

After a martial artist's battle spirit was formed, it could nearly only rely on itself to grow. Thus, the earlier one comprehended their own battle spirit, the more space there would be for growth. To a martial artist, whether or not they comprehended a battle spirit early or late in their cultivation would become greatly significant to their strength.

Lin Ming never imagined that these purple crystals in front of him were a top heavenly treasure capable of tempering a battle spirit.

"What is a Twinlife Thunder Crystal?"

Demonshine said, “A Thunder Source is bred after thunder origin energy passes through a near-endless amount of time. When it is first born, it is wrapped in a wondrous stone. Later, the Thunder Source slowly breaks open this wondrous stone and its power will also seep into it. After accumulating for a long time, the very composition of this stone will change, finally forming the Twinlife Thunder Crystal.

“After most Thunder Sources are born they will have a Twinlife Thunder Crystal. But, a Thunder Source is born through periods of hundreds of millions or even billions of years. Once a Thunder Source is born it basically cannot be destroyed. After a trillion years in the Realm of the Gods, there are a vast number of Thunder Sources that have accumulated.

“But, Twinlife Thunder Crystals are different. Once one is used, it disappears forever. In 10,000 years of the Realm of the Gods, how many Thunder Sources will be born? This is why there are far too few Twinlife Thunder Crystals! Thus… they are beyond precious! I am also guessing that the Thunder Source we saw before only confronted the Argent White Sword because it wished to retake its Twinlife Thunder Crystal!”

Demonshine’s explanation caused an epiphany in Lin Ming’s heart. Such a lucky chance could only be encountered through serendipity!

He glanced at the Argent White Sword. The sword was still in its scabbard and had no reaction, as if it were allowing Lin Ming to freely take the Twinlife Thunder Crystal.

Lin Ming first faced the crystalline skeleton and then deeply bowed in respect. Then, he carefully placed the Twinlife Thunder Crystal in his spatial ring.

At this time, the Argent White Sword faintly trembled. A wisp of sword light issued out from the hilt, wrapping around the crystal skeleton’s spatial ring and slowly lifting it up before floating it towards Lin Ming.

This left Lin Ming nonplussed. The sword wished to give him this spatial ring?

He already felt a bit guilty for taking the Twinlife Thunder Crystal, and now the Argent White Sword wished to give him its master’s spatial ring?

Although it could be said that anything in that spatial ring would have been useless to a sword, they had only met by chance; the sword shouldn't be giving him such a generous gift. Was it because it had sensed the goddess' jade pendant and had regarded him as a descendent of the Forsaken God Clan?

As Lin Ming was imagining all sorts of scenarios, a jade slip appeared from the spatial ring, wrapped in energy, and slowly floated into Lin Ming's hand.

Lin Ming's mind stirred as he sensed what this was. He caught the jade slip in his hand and swept his divine sense through it. This was not a rare cultivation method manual but rather a letter that recorded the cave master's life experiences.

And now Lin Ming knew the name of this cave master – Emperor Argent. His name was 'Argent', and Emperor represented his realm. He had no surname, the same as Jue.

Besides Emperor Argent, he also had a title...

The Eightfall Thunder Emperor.

"Eightfall, so it's also Eightfall... any martial artist who can enjoy such a title must be a powerhouse who has crossed Life Destruction eight times. Since ancient times, the Sky Spill Continent can count the number of Eightfall Emperor powerhouses on a single hand. Even the Demon Emperor was only at the seventh stage of Life Destruction."

Lin Ming continued to read through the jade slip letter. The more he read, the more admiration and reverence he had for the Eightfall Thunder Emperor.

When the Eightfall Thunder Emperor was a child, his martial talent wasn't considered too outstanding, especially in the Forsaken God Clan that was bursting with geniuses. There, his talent was only ordinary.

However, his will was tough and he trained extremely diligently, to the very limits possible. In order to sharpen himself he took on any battle. In order to seek out his own lucky chances he travelled the world, repeatedly running into all sorts of life or death situations. He stepped into Revolving Core and later broke through Life Destruction.

Because his willpower was incomparably tough, he comprehended a battle spirit at the middle Revolving Core realm and even three kinds of martial intents.

One of the martial intents he comprehended was an extremely rare force field martial intent – the Thunder Force Field.

This was also the fundamental reason that Emperor Argent had such amazing achievements in the future. He could form a force field of thunder energy around his body. If a normal martial artist were to step into his range, then in the best case they would experience numbness all over their body and in the worst case they would be burnt to coke.

This was where Emperor Argent's title of Thunder Emperor had come from.

Because of this Thunder Force Field, he had been able to enter into the Thunder Dominion of the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. Here, he tempered his body and rid it of impurities, laying down an incomparably firm foundation that allowed him to cross Life Destruction eight times and be titled the Eightfall Thunder Emperor.

After successfully crossing eight stages of Life Destruction and then breaking through to the Divine Sea, Emperor Argent was able to instantly kill Divine Sea powerhouses at the same level. In the next thousand years, his strength was unrivalled within the world. Here, he stood alone at the peak of the Sky Spill Continent.

Unfortunately, the Forsaken God Clan's cursed blood was a demonic curse that could not be broken. No matter how astonishing the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's talent was, he still didn't have the strength to rid himself of his curse. Finally, he had come to the Thunder Dominion, entering into closed door seclusion and finally perishing here…

"This hero was truly too unfortunate." Lin Ming sighed with deep emotion. To actually close up within the Thunder Dominion in the skies of the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, just what sort of courage was that? And even after his death, his martial arts will had fused with his sword, enabling it to contend with the Thunder Source.

Luckily, the Eightfall Thunder Emperor’s martial arts will was itself of the thunder attribute. Even his divine soul had no need to fear the Thunder Source. In this aspect it was something that Demonshine’s own divine soul simply couldn’t compare with.

Chapter 821 – Leaving the Thunder Dominion, Battling the Demon Envoy

Chapter 821 – Leaving the Thunder Dominion, Battling the Demon Envoy

…

…

…

The second half of Emperor Argent's letter recorded what he experienced in the last thousand years of his life. He had recorded all sorts of shocking details in his attempts to overcome his cursed fate with his strength. Without a doubt, this would be extremely valuable information to the God Forsaken Clan.

The last portion of this letter only contained a few sentences.

"Year 31,200 of the Sky Spill Calendar. In battle with Emperor Evil, I received severe wounds. The eighth bloodline curse calamity approaches. I will go to the Thunder Dominion to attempt my last crossing in seclusion."

As Lin Ming read this he was stunned. Who was Emperor Evil?

After the Eightfall Thunder Emperor reached the Divine Sea, his strength far surpassed everyone else in the world. He had been a true peerless powerhouse for that time. From when he first started recording on this jade slip his cultivation must have taken another step upwards. And yet this Emperor Evil was actually able to severely wound him?

Why was there no record about him in the history of the Sky Spill Continent? Could it be that this Emperor Evil didn't even come from the Sky Spill Continent's planet?

After the battle with the Eightfall Thunder Emperor did this Emperor Evil die or live?

Lin Ming's mind was filled with all sorts of confused questions. It was too bad that there were no follow ups to Emperor Argent's letter. Without doubt, the Eightfall Thunder Emperor must have perished here after entering into closed door seclusion.

While being severely wounded he also had to deal with the eighth calamity of his bloodline curse. The danger of closed door seclusion at this time could be imagined.

Lin Ming continued to search Emperor Argent's spatial ring for other relics. Although this spatial ring had passed through tens of thousands of years, the spirit mark on it was still incomparably clear as well as carrying with it a grand thunder attribute. This caused Lin Ming to sigh yet again. With Emperor Argent's unbelievable strength of will, it was likely he had achieved a silver battle spirit.

A silver battle spirit that also had the thunder attribute. After staying in the Thunder Dominion for tens of thousands of years, not only had his will not weakened but it was instead nourished in the power of thunder.

"I find it a bit strange… since the Eightfall Thunder Emperor already obtained this Twinlife Thunder Crystal, why didn't he use it to temper his battle spirit? Wouldn't he want to bring his battle spirit to an even higher level?"

Lin Ming mumbled to himself. Then, Demonshine said, "If I'm not wrong, the Eightfall Thunder Emperor had originally caught the Purple Lion Thunder Source and imprisoned it in his cave mansion. He wanted to absorb it, but his cultivation was lacking at the time so he temporarily sealed it here."

"And the Twinlife Thunder Crystal, as a heavenly treasure that was born together with the Purple Lion Thunder Source, was naturally the best vessel to seal the Thunder Source within. Unfortunately, the Eightfall Thunder Emperor perished before he reached a high enough boundary to absorb the Purple Lion Thunder Source. After his death, the power of the seal weakened every year until the Purple Lion Thunder Source was finally able to escape. Afterwards, the Purple Lion Thunder Source wanted to retake its Twinlife Thunder Crystal that was held in this cave, but the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's sword has continued to fight it up until the present."

Lin Ming nodded. What Demonshine said was most likely true. The Argent White Sword was in itself a metal Saint artifact; it simply had no need to fear any thunder. And the sword soul had fused together with the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's thunder attribute will so it had no need to fear thunder-based attacks. Because of this, the Purple Lion Thunder Source had nothing it could do.

Lin Ming looked further in the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's spatial ring, finding some bottles of pills, jade slips, treasures, as well as several thousand spirit essence stones.

The Eightfall Thunder Emperor wasn't as wealthy as Lin Ming imagined he would be. It could even be said that he was dirt poor.

Besides the Saint artifact level sword and the Twinlife Thunder Crystal, there unexpectedly weren't any other priceless treasures. This was too inconsistent with his status as highest under the heavens.

"The top pills were likely used up by the Eightfall Thunder Emperor in his final battle. As for the jade slips, they are inherited cultivation methods of the Forsaken God Clan as well as some records of the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's own experiences in training. These would actually be very important to the Forsaken God Clan… but to me it would only serve as an ordinary reference… mm? This is… a detailed explanation of the Concept of Thunder!"

Lin Ming's heart stirred as he looked over a purple jade slip. At this moment, he was extremely lacking in his comprehension of the Concept of Thunder. Although he had a very high compatibility with thunder origin energy, that wasn't too helpful in comprehending the Concept of Thunder. However, this jade slip would be of great help to him.

With the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's boundary, his understanding of the Concept of Thunder must have been surpassingly profound.

Lin Ming finished organizing the Eightfall Thunder Emperor’s relics and then inadvertently glanced at some descriptions of where the Forsaken God Clan lived.

And what incomparably surprised Lin Ming was that the Forsaken God Clan lived in a sealed off dimensional realm.

“The Forsaken God Clan lives in a dimensional realm?”

Lin Ming was amazed. There were very few dimensional realms attached to the Sky Spill Continent. This was because a dimensional realm was much more stable than a minor dimension; the Laws there were not much different than those of the boundless universe and it was also easy to defend. Thus, many powerful influences were willing to fight for these types of lands, especially for those dimensional realms that had spiritual veins. For the Forsaken God Clan to be able to occupy their own dimensional realm, this meant that their strength far surpassed what Lin Ming had originally thought it to be.

But this was strange… if the Forsaken God Clan was so powerful, how come Jue had been captured by the Northwest Great Desert?

“The entrance to the Forsaken God Clan’s dimensional realm is located 300,000 miles southwest of the Seven Star Divine Kingdom. I should go there and return some of the Eightfall Thunder Emperor’s relics to his Forsaken God Clan.”

Lin Ming took the Concept jade slip as well as the most precious Twinlife Thunder Crystal that the Eightfall Thunder Emperor had left behind. As for everything else, especially the recorded experiences of the Forsaken God Clan’s cultivation methods and the Eightfall Thunder Emperor’s attempts to resist the curse, these sorts of things were far too valuable to the Forsaken God Clan. Lin Ming thought that returning all of this was natural. The Eightfall Thunder Emperor’s skeleton and sword should also be returned to his homeland.

Even if Lin Ming did all these things, it was far from being able to repay the debt of gratitude. The value of the Twinlife Thunder Crystal was simply immeasurable.

Lin Ming estimated the time. He had already been inside the Thunder Dominion for over two hours. The 8000 Mile Black Swamp had a sealed force field and the power of space here was bizarre; anyone who entered would find it very difficult to leave. But even so, Lin Ming didn't dare to stay in the Thunder Dominion for too long. Who knew whether or not the Asura Divine Kingdom would turn crazy and decide to send seven or eight Divine Sea Supreme Elders after him. If that happened, when those Divine Sea Supreme Elders joined forces, and in addition to the Asura Divine Kingdom's accumulated inheritance after all these years, they might be able to find him through some means. Even hiding away in the Thunder Dominion wouldn't be safe.

Lin Ming resisted his desire to stay here and practice his Concept of Thunder and also temper his battle spirit with the Twinlife Thunder Crystal. He gathered everything up and prepared to leave.

As he saw the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's skeleton, he bowed once again before receiving it into his spatial ring. Then, he hesitated for a moment and picked up the Argent White Sword. The long sword was intelligent but it didn't resist. It allowed Lin Ming to place it in his spatial ring.

Lin Ming displayed his movement technique and launched himself out of the Thunder Emperor's cave mansion. Lin Ming wasn't in too great a hurry to run out of the Thunder Dominion; he still had a very important task to matter to do, and this was to allow the Heretical God Sprout to swallow up all the thunder energy it could so that he could use it to cross Life Destruction in the future.

The Heretical God Sprout had already absorbed a massive amount of purple gold thunder in the 80 mile region of the Thunder Dominion. Lin Ming didn't want this 'low level thunder' and released all of it, deciding to trade it for the more powerful golden red lightning.

Even though Lin Ming's body had been tempered with lightning, it was still hard for him to withstand this sort of lightning. He grit his teeth and persisted, slowly filling the Heretical God Sprout until it was full of golden red lightning.

After a quarter hour passed, Lin Ming's entire body was dripping with sweat, but the Heretical God Seed had finally absorbed enough lightning. At this time, the entire sprout was shining with a golden red light.

"Alright!"

Lin Ming let out a long breath. It was impossible for most Divine Sea Supreme Elders to arrive at the 90 mile region of the Thunder Dominion. Although the lightning he took from here was only an insignificant drop in an endless ocean, it was still the highest golden red lightning that he could absorb. There should be enough for him to cross Life Destruction.

Once everything was ready, Lin Ming took out the red spear from his spatial ring. The Concept of Thunder and Fire flooded into it as he thrust it out!

Peng!

Space trembled. Lin Ming broke through the distorted force field of the Thunder Dominion's 90 mile region and flew straight to the 80 mile region.

"Break again!"

With a second spear thrust Lin Ming smoothly arrived at the 70 mile region.

Again and again, Lin Ming was unstoppable as he pierced through all the distorted force fields.

Then, after several dozen breaths of time, Lin Ming had finally reached the outermost layer of the Thunder Dominion.

"I wonder if that old witch hag is still waiting for me outside. It's fine if she died to those existences in the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, but if she didn't... heh, that's even better!" Lin Ming's eyes blazed with a brilliant fighting spirit. As he thought about being chased down by Bi Ruyu and the Demon Envoys like some rabbit to be hunted, and also of the extreme dangers he had to stumble through in order to escape, a vengeful fire had already lit inside his heart.

And now that he had encountered a fortuitous turn of events in the Thunder Dominion, it would only be unfair to himself if he didn't find Bi Ruyu and demand her to pay back the interest for his suffering in blood!

Moreover, Lin Ming was not afraid of fighting Bi Ruyu at all. The Thunder Dominion was his ultimate base camp. He could freely flit in and out, but Bi Ruyu was limited to the 50 mile region.

Bang!

Lin Ming grasped his red spear and flushed out of the Thunder Dominion. He didn't see Bi Ruyu or the other Demon Envoys at all. Still, he kept on full alert of his surroundings, always keeping within 100 feet of the Thunder Dominion's clouds to ensure that he could withdraw at any time.

"Have they left? Or did they stay? Well, if that's the case then I'll leave the 8000 Mile Black Swamp first."

Although Lin Ming wished to fight Bi Ruyu, if she wasn't here then he wouldn't be so crazy as to seek her out. That was the same as using his own life as a joke. Moreover, if time dragged on then the Asura Divine Kingdom's Divine Sea Supreme Elders might be able to use some extraordinary method to find him.

Lin Ming was just about to rush out of the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, when at this time a brilliant red light flashed out. With a harsh scream, a large red net covered the clouds even as it fell down on him, completely enveloping him from above.

"You little beast. I have already waited for you for a long time here! I want to see just where you'll escape to now!"

Bi Ruyu's maniacal voice sounded out. She had used a secret technique to conceal her whereabouts, all in order to set this trap for Lin Ming.

At this time, her hair was disheveled, her clothes were tattered, and her withered face was wet with blood. She was missing her right eye, leaving nothing there but a gaping deep eye socket. Her shoulder had also been bitten by something. The flesh there was mangled and dripped with blood.

It was obvious that Bi Ruyu had experienced a perilous and wretched battle just now. She looked like a demon that was crawling up from the abyss of hell.

A normal woman martial artist would consume some of their cultivation after reaching Life Destruction in order to maintain their youthful appearance. Even if the fires of their life were fading away they would still be like Mu Fengxian, aging rapidly but gracefully.

But for a martial artist like Bi Ruyu who practiced arcane body transformation techniques, that would only intensify the aging process, making it seem as if they were a dried corpse that crawled out of a coffin.

"In order to wait for your return I have become like this! Today I must flay your skin and pull out your tendons!"

Chapter 822 – The Splendor of Lightning

Chapter 822 – The Splendor of Lightning

…

…

…

In the two or three hours that Lin Ming had been in the Thunder Dominion for, Bi Ruyu had experienced the Yellow Springs River as well as encountered a desolate ancient vicious beast that roamed the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. A fierce battle had begun between her and the ancient desolate beast and she had to use the body transformation cultivation method that harmed the fires of her life yet again. Only by desperately risking her life against that ancient desolate beast had she been able to emerge victorious.

All of the vitality-restoring medicines in her spatial ring had been used up. Now, she looked haggard and worn out beyond belief. She didn't even have the energy to restore the horrible wounds that covered her body.

At this point, Bi Ruyu had already fallen into madness. The only thought in her mind was to rip apart Lin Ming, steal away all his treasure, pull out his soul and refine his marrow and search him for every single secret he held.

As Lin Ming watched the maniacal Bi Ruyu rush towards him, he sneered and said, "You abominable witch, you still haven't died? I was just thinking about searching for you, but since you've decided to knock on my door then let me send you on your way!"

"You little beast! Keep on being arrogant! Wait until I catch you, I will rip open your mouth and hang your corpse by your tongue! I will refine your divine soul!"

Bi Ruyu coldly shouted out. Her body emitted crackling ‘ka ka ka’ sounds as it changed once more.

Lin Ming was startled as he saw this. This Bi Ruyu in front of him had just experienced constantly frigid battle and had consumed most of her true essence. Her entire body was covered with wounds and she didn’t have much lifespan remaining. The fires of her life had already dropped to an extremely feeble point. Even so, she was still able to maintain such a strong combat strength and use this arcane body transformation ability. The will and strength of a top 50 ranked Destiny Decree master truly made one’s heart tremble!

“I’ll tear off your mouth.”

Bi Ruyu slashed out with her claws and a dangerous black light gathered into a line, shooting towards him with incredible speed and strength. Even though Bi Ruyu was wounded to this point, her claw attack still had an immense inherent world-shaking power. Even a 30,000 foot cliffside would shatter into pieces under her claws!

Lin Ming’s expression turned solemn. To this point, this was the strongest enemy he had faced in direct combat. A top 50 ranked Destiny Decree martial artist, a master with a sixth stage Life Destruction cultivation, Bi Ruyu truly symbolized the first-class strength of the Sky Spill Continent’s Life Destruction powerhouses!

The Eight Inner Hidden Gates opened and the power of the Heretical God Force was unleashed. Lin Ming thrust out his spear. On top of the spear shaft, dual Concepts of Thunder and Fire intertwined!

The Burning Star Flame mixed with the top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul!

Penetrating Rainbow!

Woosh!

Spear light cut through the horizon, converging into a purple red line. From afar, it looked like the horizon line that divided the skies and seas. It was vast and mysterious, with a terrifying strength that made one shiver with despair.

Before now, whenever Lin Ming had used Penetrating Rainbow, the power of thunder had always been inferior to the power of fire, causing him to be unable to display the peak power of Penetrating Rainbow.

But now, although Lin Ming's Concept of Thunder was still at the lowest level, far inferior to his comprehension of the concept of Fire, the purple gold Thunder Soul was a small grade and a half higher than the Burning Star Flame. This was enough to make up for the disparity in Concepts. When Lin Ming now poured the balanced power of thunderfire into his spear, he was able to display Penetrating Rainbow's greatest killing strength!

Bang!

The claw shadow and Penetrating Rainbow's spear light collided into each other, forming a fierce explosion and creating shockwaves that rolled up into the skies. Lin Ming felt a strong force pass through his body as his spear light collapsed!

The black claw shadow was unstoppable as it tore through Penetrating Rainbow's spear light. It rushed towards him, weakened by just the smallest amount.

Too strong!

A trace of surprise appeared on Lin Ming's face. That spear strike just now could be considered one of his strongest strikes in his current state, yet it had been completely suppressed by Bi Ruyu. This was the disparity of absolute strength.

Lin Ming stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void and flash stepped five miles away. He watched as the claw shadow struck the ground just two miles away. With a corrosive 'chi chi chi' sound, three immeasurably deep holes had been formed in the ground!

Lin Ming rapidly heaved heavy breaths. After being scratched by that claw shadow just now, it had caused the blood vitality in his body to tumble, nearly severely injuring him.

"You little beast, you can actually melt away a bit of my Netherworld Claw; you truly aren't so simple. But this makes me just that much more excited! I can personally destroy a future King! I'm just too happy, hahahaha!" Bi Ruyu crazily cackled. That spear strike just now had been alarming – it wasn't strength that a Revolving Core powerhouse should have.

"If you must hate something, then hate your destiny for dooming you to perish under my hands!

"Take my strongest attack! Dark Crimson Hell!"

Bi Ruyu's body fiercely twitched and her right arm turned a deep blood red. The blood vessels on her arm suddenly bulged out as if they would burst apart at any time. Although she knew perfectly well that she could suppress Lin Ming and capture him sooner or later, she didn't want to delay any longer. Her fires of life were exceedingly damaged right now and she didn't even have 40% of her true essence remaining. If she were to encounter any of the other monsters in this black swamp then she would die without a grave.

Hiss –

A red ghost appeared on Bi Ruyu's right arm. It grasped a several dozen foot long scythe, a long scarlet tongue lolling from its mouth as it shot towards Lin Ming!

At this moment, Lin Ming was exceptionally calm. He took a step back and set his red spear horizontally. He linked his true essence to the Heretical God Sprout, quickening the golden red lightning saved up within.

"Go!"

With a loud shout, Lin Ming transferred the complete strength of his divine soul, only then forcing out a thin wisp of golden red lightning as thick as a newborn's finger. It shot out from the Heretical God Sprout!

Chi!

With a nearly inaudible sound, the twisted force field around the arc of lightning was torn apart!

This was golden red lightning from the 90 mile region of the Thunder Dominion! If a vast amount of this golden lightning gathered together, it could even char a Divine Sea Supreme Elder to cinders!

Even though the tiny wisp of lightning that Lin Ming took out was a paltry amount, it still wasn’t something that Bi Ruyu could ever hope of blocking.

The slender arc of lightning was unexpectedly considerably heavy. With Lin Ming’s soul force driving it, it simply couldn’t fly too quickly. This was because this amount of energy had exceeded the limits of his control.

However, the current Bi Ruyu had fallen into madness and was less than 100 feet from Lin Ming. Although she saw this tiny wisp of lightning shooting towards her, she only assumed that it was some arcane technique that Lin Ming sent out. The lightning energy was far too compressed; if one didn’t carefully investigate it then they would never discover just how terrifying it truly was.

“Brat, you are already at the edge of death! In front of absolute power, any move you try is just a useless last-ditch struggle! Break for me!”

The crazy Bi Ruyu stretched out her blood red right hand, clawing down at the golden red lightning. She wanted to break apart that lightning and tear apart Lin Ming at the same time.

In her opinion, such a slender wisp of lightning emitted by Lin Ming could never be strong. She would be able to crush it to pieces like a fallen branch.

Puff!

The red claw and golden red lightning struck each other. The lightning didn’t even seem as if it had been blocked by anything. It instantly penetrated through Bi Ruyu’s claw shadow and continued forwards!

In that instant, Bi Ruyu only felt her right hand heat up and her bodily true essence explode like fireworks. Her right hand was like a bag of blood that was lashed by a whip; it directly exploded!

Burnt black blood, fragments of bone and pieces of flesh sprayed onto Bi Ruyu’s face. In that instant, Bi Ruyu’s eye had gone completely blank as she completely forget about the searing pain in her right arm.

That lightning… just what was that!?!?

Chapter 823 – Hacking Apart the Divine Kingdom Imperial Scholar

Chapter 823 – Hacking Apart the Divine Kingdom Imperial Scholar

…

…

…

This thin wisp of lightning appeared very insignificant, yet, just by gently touching it, Bi Ruyu had suffered such a fate!

The raging power of thunder not only destroyed Bi Ruyu's entire arm, but the massive tyrannical power of thunder also took the opportunity to plunge into her body.

This was a terrifying energy that even a Divine Sea Supreme Elder would find difficult to resolve. Bi Ruyu was completely paralyzed and the right half of her body was nearly scorched black.

Lin Ming didn't give Bi Ruyu any chance to recover. His mind touched upon the Heretical God Sprout and forcefully pulled out a second wisp of golden red lightning. He poured his wisp of lightning into his spear and stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void, flitting through the void and flickering in front of Bi Ruyu!

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a frenzied light. He lifted the spear in both hands and smashed it downwards!

His large success bronze battle spirit flooded into the spear, mixing with the golden red power of thunder and fusing together. The entire spear looked like a golden red magnificent sun, a golden light directly impacting into the heavens!

“Ahh!”

Bi Ruyu issued out a soulless wail. In this critical life or death moment she bit off the remaining half of her tongue, spouting out a mouthful of blood as she regained her senses with the intense pain. Bi Ruyu’s eyeball bulged as if it were about to burst open at any time.

It was too late for her to avoid Lin Ming’s attack nor could she block that golden red spear light. At this crucial moment she decided to give up any thought of defending. She formed a claw with her left hand and thrust it towards Lin Ming’s dantian!

Lin Ming simply ignored Bi Ruyu’s final desperate attack. His spear came pounding down decisively. If he missed this chance then he would lose!

Lin Ming’s spear smashed into Bi Ruyu’s head. With the support of the golden red lightning, Lin Ming’s spear potential had reached a terrifying degree.

Peng!

Bi Ruyu’s head exploded like a watermelon. Red and white brain fluid sprayed Lin Ming’s face.

At the same time, Bi Ruyu’s claw had deeply thrust into Lin Ming’s stomach.

His protective true essence was torn apart like paper and Bi Ruyu’s sharp black claws mercilessly wrenched at the Demon Emperor Armor.

With a resonant ‘kacha’ sound, Lin Ming’s body shook like an earthquake and he flew backwards, a massive amount of dangerous and perverse energy breaking into him!

Lin Ming vomited a mouthful of blood. He crashed into the ground, feeling as if all his organs had been moved.

Bi Ruyu’s attack was too terrifying. Even when she was a dried up oil lamp, and even with the Demon Emperor Armor weakening the energy and protecting Lin Ming, that final attack had still wounded him and caused him to cough up blood.

In that strike, Lin Ming's meridians had nearly twisted together. His organs had been damaged and his dantian had been wounded from the shock.

The disparity between their absolute strength was simply too great. If it wasn't for the fact that Lin Ming's body was as tough as a high-grade earth-step treasure and all of his meridians and organs had been tempered multiple times, this attack would have ripped apart his dantian, killing him here.

This golden red lightning was truly terrifying. If a Life Destruction master were to be struck by a large arc of this golden red lightning, then they would have simply died, no matter how highly ranked they were on the Destiny Decree!

"What a pity. If the my divine soul was powerful enough then I could move more golden red lightning. If I were able to freely use it then I would have no need to fear anyone under the Divine Sea!"

After this incident, Lin Ming became increasingly aware of just how powerful the soul was. Although soul force couldn't be said to directly correlate with strength, it definitely marked the limit of a martial artist's cultivation. If one couldn't enhance their soul then their cultivation would forever stagnate.

At this moment, a feeling of crisis rose in Lin Ming's mind. Without thinking about it, he stepped on Golden Roc Shattering the Void, his body exploding forwards!

Bang!

A black spear light struck the ground where Lin Ming had been standing, causing a massive explosion. Lin Ming's pupils contracted. He swiveled around and saw that the one who had sneak attacked him was the second Demon Envoy.

Both of the second Demon Envoy's legs had been torn off. He floated in the air, carrying his long spear. Bloodstained bones stuck out of the remains his legs. It was like he had been bitten by some giant wild beast and had his legs ripped off.

The second Demon Envoy and Bi Ruyu had been keeping guard over two separate areas, waiting for Lin Ming to appear. When the second Demon Envoy arrived, the result was completely different from what he expected. In just several breaths of time, Lin Ming had killed Bi Ruyu.

Just what was that golden red lightning?

The second Demon Envoy became crazy with jealousy as he thought about the lucky chances Lin Ming must have experienced in the Thunder Dominion. How could this brat not have died after venturing deep into the Thunder Dominion? As for himself, he had both his legs chomped off by an ancient desolate beast in the 8000 Mile Black Swamp!

The second Demon Envoy's current situation was extremely poor. Both of his legs were ruined and his strength wasn't even 30% of his normal peak state.

But Lin Ming's situation wasn't much better. After being struck and wounded by Bi Ruyu's final desperate attack, his dantian had been injured. Without the time to regenerate, his strength was less than half of its peak state too.

If Lin Ming was at his prime then he could contend with the severely wounded second Demon Envoy in a battle. However, the chances of victory now were very slim. The second Demon Envoy had likely seen the golden red lightning and it couldn't be used as a sneak attack anymore.

The second Demon Envoy was also terrified of Lin Ming. Lin Ming was simply an unkillable cockroach! Ever since the Asura Divine Kingdom had discovered that the Demon Emperor's inheritance was held by Lin Ming, they had tried to capture him, even sending out two great Imperial Scholars and four Demon Envoys. Even after finding him after a wide search that spanned several months, no one had been able to harm him. And then, even when he was forced into such an alarming danger zone, he had still managed to emerge in perfect condition and use some strange method to kill Bi Ruyu instead.

How could the second Demon Envoy not be dismayed by this? As the second Demon Envoy of the Asura Divine Kingdom, he had all the power and authority he wanted in the palm of his hands. And yet, that faith in his own strength and consistent belief in his superiority had been eroded by Lin Ming. Only by defeating Lin Ming could he recover the faith he held in himself.

And, the self-confidence of a martial artist often influenced the limits of their future achievements.

Lin Ming had already become a heart demon that the second Demon Envoy had to overcome. Otherwise, his thoughts would never be peaceful again and he would never rid himself of his heart demons.

The second Demon Envoy took out a red pill from his spatial ring and swallowed it down. For a time, a strange flush crept up his face as if he were a drunk mortal.

Lin Ming immediately recognized this for what it was. This was a sort of medicine similar to the Scarlet Blood Pill. After taking it, one's strength would rapidly rise for a short period of time. But, the side effects were extremely dangerous. For the second Demon Envoy to swallow down this sort of pill in his severely wounded condition, it would cause an enormous loss of his lifespan. But at this time, the second Demon Envoy was prepared to disregard everything in order to kill Lin Ming.

Woosh!

Several hundred Blood Drinking Seals burst out from the second Demon Envoy's body. His eyes turned blood red and without a single word he took a step forwards. By practicing the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' for so many years, the second Demon Envoy had a high comprehension of the Concept of Space. Although it didn't reach Lin Ming's level, it was still enough for his attacks to seem ghostly and elusive.

With a single step forwards he arrived 100 feet in front of Lin Ming. All of the second Demon Envoy's potential poured into his spear.

Slaughter!

Blood Drinking Seals howled out. Lin Ming trod on Golden Roc Shattering the Void and quickly drew back. At the same time he retrieved a cold and shining four foot long sword from his spatial ring. Lightning lingered on the sword blade.

This was the Argent White Sword.

Lin Ming grasped the Argent White Sword and all of his muscles suddenly burst out. He completely opened all three gates of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, exhausting the totality of his strength to throw it towards the second Demon Envoy.

After completing 100% Tempering Marrow, Lin Ming's physical body strength already exceeded 200,000 jin. After opening the Gate of Wonder, his physical strength surpassed a million jin.

It was only because Lin Ming often fought with energy, settling battles with sword light and spear light, that he didn't have a chance to display the peak physical strength granted to his body by the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

Now, with his over one million jin of strength, he heaved the Argent White Sword forwards. The sword cut through the sky like a blazing white meteor, its speed reaching a nearly unbelievable degree.

A keen Saint artifact level sword, it also had the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's thunder will fused into it. Now with it being thrown with over a million jin of strength, its power had reached impossible degrees. Even a 100,000 foot high mountain would shatter to powder in front of it!

Si –

The sharp sword pierced through the air, bringing with it countless arcs of purple lighting and directly ripping apart the second Demon Envoy's spear light.

One sword, with irresistible force, continued shooting towards the second Demon Envoy.

“What sword is this!?”

The second Demon Envoy was horrified. The sword that Lin Ming had thrown out was a masterless sword; he had done so with just his physical strength. There was no true essence poured into this sword and yet its might and radiance had reached such an incredible degree!

“Saint artifact!?”

The second Demon Envoy held a high post in the Asura Divine Kingdom. With his deep background, he naturally had high insight. He had once seen the Demon God Heartguard Mirror before, but even that artifact simply wasn’t able to compare with this purple long sword shooting towards him!

Perhaps only the unified and complete version of the Demon Emperor Armor could compare with it!

The second Demon Envoy did not dare to be careless. He drew back and shot out a hundred spear lights at the same time, bombarding the Argent White Sword.

The Argent White Sword was a masterless weapon and Lin Ming hadn’t poured any true essence into it. Even though it was hurled out with a million jin of strength, the force still couldn’t compare to the energy attack sent out by a sixth stage Life Destruction essence gathering system martial artist.

As the rays of energy smashed into the Argent White Sword, explosions filled the sky like fireworks. The sword gradually slowed down before finally stopping in midair.

“It really is a masterless sword!”

The second Demon Envoy found himself short of breath. Without a doubt, this Saint level sword was found by that little beast in the Thunder Dominion. With that little beast’s cultivation and soul force it was simply impossible for him to leave his own spirit mark within it. And without a spirit mark it was impossible for him to pour his true essence into it. This must have been the reason why he threw out this divine sword like a dart to slay his enemy. This was simply a wasteful ruining of heaven's gifts!

If he could obtain this divine sword…

The second Demon Envoy's heart began pulsating. Even if he didn't use the sword, he could still give it to the Asura Divine Kingdom. That would be a colossal achievement, and the resources he would receive as a reward would be limitless!

There were several sword-wielding Divine Sea Supreme Elders within the Asura Divine Kingdom, yet all of them suffered because they had no suitable swords to match them. If they were to know about this sword then they would definitely not hesitate in paying any price to obtain it!

'You little beast, your sword is mine now!'

This thought flashed through the second Demon Envoy's mind. He quickly formed a black seal and threw it at the Argent White Sword. He wanted to grab the Argent White Sword first. Otherwise, if Lin Ming recovered it and then decided to not fight with him and escape instead, there was no way he could chase after Lin Ming in his current condition.

Chapter 824 – Death Reaper Curse

Chapter 824 – Death Reaper Curse

…

…

…

The energy of the black seal became increasingly strong, soon enveloping all the nearby space.

The second Demon Envoy was clearly aware of just how mighty this Saint artifact level divine sword's energy was. Wanting to place his own spirit mark on it was easier said than done, especially since he was in a life or death battle with Lin Ming at the moment. If he separated a spirit mark to control this divine sword and a problem occurred, then it was likely Lin Ming would take the chance to end his life instead.

The safest method was to first seal away this divine sword and then place it into his spatial ring. He would be able to slowly deal with it in the future.

In front of such an unbelievably rare treasure, there were far too few people that could restrain their greedy nature.

Pointing his spear, the black seal whistled towards the Argent White Sword placing a heavy layer of pressure on it!

At the moment the seal touched the sword blade –

Gong!!!

A resounding sword cry impacted into the endless skies, as if a deeply slumbering Azure Dragon had been awakened!

A vast purple energy rushed out from the sword and instantly crushed the black seal to nothing. The black seal was connected to the second Demon Envoy's soul force. The second Demon Envoy only felt as if someone had taken a 10,000 jin sledgehammer and smashed it into his head. His spiritual sea violently shook, nearly collapsing in on itself!

Blood began leaking from the corners of the second Demon Envoy's eyes, running down his ears and dripping from his nose. The Argent White Sword was marked with the martial arts will of the Eightfall Thunder Emperor. Tens of thousands of years ago, the Eightfall Thunder Emperor had been the highest man under the heavens and he was particularly extraordinary in the aspect of martial arts will. At the middle Revolving Core realm he had formed his own battle spirit, and by the time he reached the Divine Sea his battle spirit had reached the silver boundary and even fused together with the thunder attribute because of his Thunder Force Field.

This martial arts will was supremely formidable to begin with. And after being tempered in the Thunder Dominion for tens of thousands of years, how could a martial artist on the level of the second Demon Envoy even hope of violating it?

This was the fury of the divine sword.

This was the rage of the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's martial arts will!

At the moment when the second Demon Envoy's soul suffered a backlash, Lin Ming had already been patiently waiting for this chance. He grasped his red spear and burst forwards!

Space shrank underneath his feet. Lin Ming appeared in front of the second Demon Envoy in just the blink of an eye.

His soul force touched upon the Heretical God Sprout, forcefully pulling out a thin wisp of golden red lighting. He poured this lightning into his red spear and smashed down at the second Demon Envoy's head.

"Ahh!"

The second Demon Envoy was so angered that his eyes nearly popped out. He utilized the Concept of Space, distorting space to break and avoid this fatal spear.

However, just as the second Demon Envoy's figure blinked several hundred feet away, he suddenly paled upon reappearing. This was because Lin Ming had also appeared in front of him, the cold spear in his hands just three feet from his head!

In terms of understanding the Concept of Space, Lin Ming had experienced several fortuitous encounters in his adventures and had even cultivated 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void', thus he was far superior to the second Demon Envoy. How could Lin Ming give the second Demon Envoy a chance to dodge?

"You!!"

The second Demon Envoy hurriedly lifted his spear to meet the strike.

This time Lin Ming didn't decide to engage the second Demon Envoy in a suicidal strike, trading a severe wound for his life. After all, Lin Ming was in an extremely poor condition right now – he didn't want to sustain another serious injury. This 8000 Mile Black Swamp was simply too dangerous for him in that state.

He slightly changed the trajectory of his spear and smashed it into the area where the Demon Envoy's spear shaft connected with the spearhead. This was the weakest point of a spear.

Kacha!

The two spears slammed into each other. Although Lin Ming had taken the initiative and suppressed the second Demon Envoy's spear, he still wasn't able to injure him. This was the disparity brought about by the difference in their absolute strengths.

But at this moment, the golden red lightning hiding in the spear suddenly erupted outwards! It was like a sun rising in the deep night skies!

“Ahh!”

With a pitiful cry, the second Demon Envoy’s hands that he used to grasp his spear were charred to cinders. Now both his arms and both his legs and been completely ruined. Lin Ming didn’t give him a chance to catch his breath. His soul force touched on the Heretical God Sprout again, drawing out a second wisp of golden red lightning!

Although this lightning wasn’t too fast, the distance between him and the second Demon Envoy was small, and the second Demon Envoy’s entire body was also paralyzed.

The arc of lightning penetrated through the second Demon Envoy’s dantian!

Chi!

The second Demon Envoy’s lower stomach was turned to ash. A giant burnt black hole tunneled through his body.

“Lin Lanjian…”

Bitter hatred flashed through the second Demon Envoy’s eyes. He spat a mouthful of blood onto Lin Ming and grabbed his spear, a trace of malicious pleasure touching his lips.

“Death Reaper Curse… I curse you… in 100 days… you will die.”

As the second Demon Envoy spoke these last words, his body suddenly ignited with a blazing black flame. Lin Ming felt a sudden pain in his chest, a deep burning sensation as if someone had pressed a heated iron there.

He looked down at his chest to see that the area where the second Demon Envoy’s blood had splashed had left a black curse seal. The curse seal burned like hot iron, causing the surrounding skin to twist and turn black and red.

“This is...”

Demonshine suddenly spoke up, “This is the Death Reaper Curse! It as an extremely sinister and malevolent demonic path curse and the curse method is also similarly dire. Before the point of death, completely burn away your life force, including your soul and blood essence, taking all of that as a sacrifice to the Death Reaper, and beseeching the Death Reaper to slay your enemy. This curse... if you can’t undo this curse with your own strength then you will surely die in 100 days!”

“This...” Lin Ming’s mind turned cold. Humans certainly had a soul. But, after humans died, it was still a riddle whether or not they would be reincarnated. When a martial artist died their soul returned to the boundless universe. They always held a hope that they would reincarnate in a new life, but if their soul was destroyed after their death then that was truly the most miserable way to die.

Only some demonic path martial artists like Bi Ruyu would study such macabre cultivation methods that involved pulling someone’s soul and refining it, making a martial artist experience pain worse than death.

And now, in order to curse him, the second Demon Envoy had burnt away even his soul, turning into nothing but nihility. This was truly a depraved obsession. The stronger a martial artist’s will was, the stronger their obsessions were. And, the second Demon Envoy’s greatest obsession before he died was to kill Lin Ming.

“Can you break this curse?” Lin Ming asked Demonshine.

Demonshine helplessly spread out his paws, “I’m just a wisp of a remnant soul. I don’t even have a flesh and blood body or any true essence. The only energy I can move now is my soul force. When you were at the Xiantian realm I could still help you, but now... I’m a bit powerless.”

Demonshine poignantly said. Lin Ming’s growth was simply too fast. He could mostly only impart some of his experiences and knowledge to help Lin Ming now.

Lin Ming also felt sympathetic towards Demonshine. Demonshine had once been a Three-headed Divine Demon Hound, but all that was left over was a single head. Moreover, his divine soul had been seriously injured to begin with, and he still wasn't even close to fully recovering.

All Lin Ming could do was wait until he was strong enough and then help Demonshine reform his divine soul and physical body.

"Then how can I break the curse?" Lin Ming said with a calm tone. He didn't really think that he would die under this Death Reaper Curse.

"Easy. As long as you are strong enough – a lot stronger than the one who cursed you – then you can break it."

"Got it."

The Death Reaper Curse seemed mysterious, but in the end it was simply an energy-based final killing move. In order to break it all he would need was an even stronger energy.

"A hundred days. I should be able to break through Life Destruction before then. As long as I can successfully cross Life Destruction, undoing this curse seal shouldn't be a problem."

During this adventure in the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, Lin Ming had made a significant harvest. With the support of the golden red lightning, he was confident he would be able to cross Life Destruction within a hundred days.

Chapter 825 – The Asura Divine Emperor Moves

Chapter 825 – The Asura Divine Emperor Moves

…

…

…

Asura Divine Palace –

A dark grey corridor was lit up with the flickering flames of burning crimson torches. At the end of this corridor was a vast chamber with a ferocious demon statue.

A red-clothed little boy and a middle-aged man respectfully stood in front of this statue. Beside the little boy was a black-clothed deacon. This deacon was holding a tray in his hands, and on the tray were placed four lifesoul jade slips, three of which had cracked and the last one was completely crushed to pieces.

All of the high level personnel of the Asura Divine Kingdom were required to leave behind a lifesoul jade slip within the Divine Palace. The Asura Divine Kingdom created the lifesoul jade slips with a special arcane skill, making it so that the martial artist only suffered the slightest amount of damage from it.

"They've died…"

A commanding and elusive voice echoed out within the chamber. The red-clothed little boy and the middle-aged man hung their heads low, with even a bit of fear and awe in their hearts.

"This subordinate is incompetent!"

Even as Destiny Decree ranked masters they felt a tremendous pressure in front of a true Divine Sea Supreme Elder.

The tray in the black-clothed deacon’s hands flew up and the four jade slips floated up under the force of energy.

A black light shot forth from the demon statue, firing towards the most broken of the four lifesoul jade slips, completely covering the ruined pieces.

A faint trace of energy dissipated from the lifesoul jade slip.

“The soul is completely burned, blood essence depleted, the body turned to ash, this is… the Death Reaper Curse?”

A formless voice thought out loud. Before the second Demon Envoy died, he had used the Death Reaper Curse. This was very surprising. Just who had killed him that he didn’t hesitate to use this Death Reaper Curse that eliminated all chances of him entering the reincarnation cycle of samsara?

The Death Reaper Curse was useless against anyone far stronger than oneself. It could only be used by those with equivalent strength or just a tad stronger. Just who was this curse placed on?

Lin Lanjian?

By all reasoning, Lin Lanjian simply shouldn’t have the strength to kill the second Demon Envoy. But in the complex and dangerous environment of the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, events that occurred within there couldn’t be speculated with by common sense.

Ho!

The jade slip fragments vanished. The black statue gently trembled and the Divine Sea powerhouse had already left. In the next moment he appeared in front of a dark mountain peak.

There were deep valleys dotting this mountain. In some of the valleys, there was an incomparably rich heaven and earth origin energy. Spirit flowers and spirit grass grew everywhere in full bloom.

“Royal Princess!” The owner of the voice appeared. He was an exceptionally tall middle-aged man. His eyes each had two pupils and his eyebrows swooped up like swords. He exuded the aura of a king from head to toe; he was the Asura Divine Kingdom’s Divine Emperor, Situ Haotian.

The Royal Princess was his older sister, Situ Yaoxi. Situ Yaoxi had reached the Divine Sea a thousand years ago after reaching the sixth stage of Life Destruction. Now, she remained at the early Divine Sea realm. Although her strength wasn’t too outstanding, she was extremely talented in the aspect of soul force. The reason Situ Haotian came this time was to have Situ Yaoxi examine the shattered jade slip with her divine soul, so she could reconstruct the events of the second Demon Envoy’s death.

…….

Ho!

A flame burnt in the air. The lifesoul jade slip melted away and several wisps of a fragmented soul flew into the air, forming all sorts of phantoms.

“I cannot reconstruct the scene from his death.” Situ Yaoxi shook her head. The second Demon Envoy had imploded his own soul and not even the slightest bit of information had returned. Even though Situ Yaoxi had a deep understanding of soul force, she was also helpless in this situation.

“At most I can estimate the cultivation of who was cursed and their general position.”

As Situ Yaoxi spoke, she grasped the several wisps of fragmented soul in her hand and sealed them in a red crystal.

“Good!” Situ Haotian nodded.

It was already enough to know the approximate cultivation of the cursed person.

Situ Yaoxi took out a black skull from her spatial ring and poured a thread of her true essence into it. The skull immediately ignited with a pale green flame, as if it were a will o' the wisp.

She crushed the crystal in her hands. The fist-sized crystal turned into powder that burst into smoke as it flew into the pale green flame.

The powder also contained the fragmented soul. All of it was refined by the fire. A distorted face appeared above the flame; this was the face of the second Demon Envoy.

The face was fuzzy and elusive, composed of countless perplexing scenes. Besides Situ Yaoxi, no one was able to understand what they meant.

This eerie ceremony continued for two hours. The flame gradually extinguished.

“What is the result?” Situ Haotian asked.

Situ Yaoxi hesitated for a moment before slowly saying, “The cursed person's cultivation should be at the late Revolving Core realm to the first stage of Life Destruction. Their current position is around 100,000 miles southwest of the Seven Star Divine Kingdom. Also, he is continuing to move southwest at a high speed.”

“Late Revolving Core realm to the first stage of Life Destruction! So it really is that little beast....” Situ Haotian didn't have any expression on his face but his calmness was terrifying. For a late Revolving Core to first stage Life Destruction martial artist to kill the second Envoy and also force him to use the Death Reaper Curse, that person could only be Lin Lanjian.

However, regardless the situation, it was impossible for Lin Lanjian to kill the second Demon Envoy with his strength. He must have borrowed the strange ‘power’ that existed within the 8000 Mile Black Swamp in order to do so. But as to how he borrowed this power and why he didn't perish alongside it, Situ Haotian found this hard to imagine.

“This little beast has too many secrets on his body! He is simply a treasure trove. There must be more treasures on him besides the Demon Emperor Armor and the Demon Emperor’s inheritance. Everything he has must be greatly beneficial to Divine Sea powerhouses. Once others find out about this then it’s not only us, but also other Divine Sea powerhouses that’ll begin to move!”

“Then your meaning is… you want to leak out this information, so there’s nowhere for Lin Lanjian to hide?”

“Of course not. He’s just a little chick that hasn’t matured yet. We have suffered a small loss, but that doesn’t mean we can’t deal with him. This time I’ll personally go and capture him!”

Situ Haotian’s voice was indifferent, carrying with it the domineering and solemn aura of a Divine Emperor. For him to personally move against a late Revolving Core junior, that was simply unthinkable.

“You really don’t care about your status.” The Royal Princess gently smiled.

“Even a tiger uses all their strength to catch a rabbit. I thought that my Asura Divine Kingdom sending out two great Imperial Scholars and four Demon Envoys was more than enough, but even they fell under Lin Lanjian’s hands! Such a peerless talent will usually have a great destiny on their body; they are simply dragons in human form that will have the life of a future Emperor. To deal with him, we must put out our greatest strength and quickly destroy him. Otherwise, if we always put out strength comparable to his, then the only result will be us helping him grow. He’ll gradually defeat our forces and grow strong enough to annihilate our Asura Divine Kingdom! So… this time you’ll follow me along and assist in divining Lin Lanjian’s position.”

As Situ Haotian spoke, his double pupil eyes burst out with a star-like light, making one’s heart palpitate.

“Destroy our Asura Divine Kingdom? That’s too exaggerated! There’s no one on this continent capable of destroying one of the four Divine Kingdoms by themselves.”

“Just because there hasn’t been anyone in the past doesn’t mean there won’t be anyone in the future. I have a feeling… Lin Lanjian will become such an existence. Sooner or later he’ll cause a panic among all the great powers. He… he doesn’t seem to be a genius that should be able to exist in this world….”

Situ Haotian licked his lips. If he destroyed such a genius and dug out all the secrets from their body, then there was a possibility that he could inherit their luck and destiny, reaching inconceivable heights in the future!

Just fifteen minutes later, a massive Godspeed Boat that was several hundred feet long flew out into the skies above the Asura Divine Palace. Under the control of Situ Haotian, this boat flew towards Lin Ming’s position at an incredible speed.

On this Godspeed boat, there were not only the two Divine Sea powerhouses Situ Haotian and Royal Princess Situ Yaoxi, but also two Imperial Scholars, Situ Haotian’s great disciple, two Asura Divine Kingdom Princes, a number of High Successors, and even Situ Chuan and Situ Feng, who Lin Ming had defeated at the Nine Flowers Banquet.

Situ Chuan could not be any more happy to be given this chance to accompany the Divine Emperor and hunt down Lin Ming. He would never be able to forget the shame of the Nine Flowers Banquet!

“Lin Lanjian, just you wait! Now that my Father Emperor is coming, I want to see just where you’ll run to!”

Situ Chuan stood at the bow of the boat, feeling the strong winds blowing across him. His long hair recklessly blew in the air as he smiled in high spirits.

…………

At this time, southwest of the Seven Star Divine Kingdom, Lin Ming was riding the Godspeed Boat and flying forwards at full speed.

This Godspeed Boat was indeed worthy to be called a top flight treasure. After placing spirit essence stones within and pouring a bit of his true essence, the boat's speed was not any slower than Lin Ming's peak speed.

There was a limit to how long Lin Ming could maintain his peak velocity before he became exhausted, but this Godspeed Boat could actually fly without end as long as he had enough spirit essence stones.

In front of him was the dimensional realm where the Forsaken God Clan lived.

To arrive here, Lin Ming was also filled with overwhelming emotion. Back in the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, while he didn't fear the Thunder Dominion and he also had the golden red lightning, Argent White Sword, and Cosmic Melting Furnace as his hidden cards, it had still been an extremely dangerous journey here.

The 8000 Mile Black Swamp was filled with numerous ancient vicious beasts. These vicious beasts were all threatening existences. Out of every ten, at least eight of them were stronger than he was. He had no choice but to depend on the cards in his hands in order to contend with these enemies.

At the most dangerous time, Lin Ming had to hide inside the Cosmic Melting Furnace. The Cosmic Melting Furnace had been savagely slapped by a giant ape like beast. Hiding within the Cosmic Melting Furnace, Lin Ming had been violently shaken, bleeding from the head and nearly dying in the process.

Luckily, he had taken advantage of the period when he had been slapped away and found a chance to catch his breath. He escaped from the Cosmic Melting Furnace, put it away, and revolved his true essence to the limit. He opened the Gate of Wonder and tread on Golden Roc Shattering the Void at full speed to escape into the Thunder Dominion.

But the Thunder Dominion wasn’t safe either. There were also ancient vicious beasts that were able to survive there.

The Thunder Dominion could be said to be the area with the richest and purest thunder origin energy throughout the entire Sky Spill Continent. There were many ancient thunder-attribute vicious beasts that lived there.

Although the vicious beasts of the Thunder Dominion were far more sparse than those at the black swamp, each one of them were incomparably formidable existences. Fortunately, Li Ming had the Argent White Sword to protect himself. By relying on the thunder battle spirit attached to the sword blade, he had barely managed to protect himself.

In this way, Lin Ming sometimes escaped into the Thunder Dominion and sometimes flew closer to the black swamp. He carefully made his way through, and after living through several dangerous situations he finally managed to reach the outer edge of the 8000 Mile Black Swamp.

After reaching the boundary of the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, he finally broke through the distorted force field after a great deal of effort. It was no wonder that anyone underneath a Divine Sea powerhouse had such slim chances of survival after entering this area.

Chapter 826 – Forsaken God Clan, Dimensional Realm

Chapter 826 – Forsaken God Clan, Dimensional Realm

…

…

…

"According to the letter left behind by the Eightfall Thunder Emperor, this mountain peak is where the entrance to the Forsaken God Clan is."

Lin Ming thought out loud, looking at the massive mountain peak in front of him that looked like an ox head.

A dimensional realm was different from a minor dimension. A dimensional realm could be dozens, hundreds, thousands, or even tens of thousands of miles in length. The power of space within was also very stable. Once a dimensional realm was born, then it could exist for hundreds of thousands or even millions of years without collapsing.

The broken world the Demon God Imperial Palace was in could be considered a small dimensional realm.

The martial artists of the Sky Spill Continent simply didn't have the ability to split apart the void and create their own dimensional realm. These worlds were all formed naturally due to a variety of reasons. Because a dimensional realm was located in a hidden world, it was easy to defend from attacks. Every discovery of a new dimensional realm would cause intense struggle amongst all the major powers. The four Divine Kingdoms each had their own dimensional realms. For a sect to be able to lay down a base in a dimensional realm, that was in itself a manifestation and representation of their strength.

The ox-head-like mountain peak was covered in a light fog. The mountain peak was 70,000 feet high and had smooth cliffs that sloped down, as if they had been hewn by a giant axe.

Lin Ming raised his true essence and shot up like a rocket.

A height of 70,000 feet already entered into the Primal Chaos Heavens. Here, the heaven and earth origin energy was in chaos. The mountain peak was covered by 10,000 years of powder white snow and ice. Looking at it from afar, it was truly a magnificent sight to behold.

“Who goes there, halt!”

As Lin Ming approached the entrance to the dimensional realm, he was blocked by a squad of guards. These guards all had mystical tattoo seals on their faces, as if it were a tribal totem of their clan. Although these guard’s cultivation was only at the Xiantian realm, there was a sharp edge to them. None of them gave way or showed weakness to Lin Ming and his late Revolving Core Realm cultivation.

Lin Ming knew that the tattoo seal on these guard’s faces was the symbol of the Forsaken God Clan’s bloodline curse.

This was an extremely mysterious family clan. Because the truth was buried in the endless river of time, no one in the clan knew why they were born with such a vicious curse.

But they didn’t feel depressed, they did not give up, and they did not curse the heavens for being unfair.

They stoically withstood the pain of the curse, continuing to live on with their own strength for hundreds of thousands of years! Moreover, there were even lofty and imperious existences like the Eightfall Thunder Emperor that was born within their ranks!

An outstanding and close-knit family clan would often carry the mark and spirit of their clan in their bones. The Forsaken God Clan, their innermost feelings were that of defiance. They continued to tread forwards, never giving up a battle, fighting the heavens, fighting their fate!

Lin Ming could only harbor respect for this once glorious clan that withstood generations of immense pain. In particular that goddess that had died 100,000 years ago and that Great Emperor's heart that still beat within her chest after 100,000 years. All of this shocked Lin Ming to his core.

It was highly likely that the Forsaken God Clan was the descendant of these two great powerhouses.

Through inheriting the bloodline of these unrivalled powerhouses, even if their family clan's history was lost to time and even if their glorious days had passed, that lofty, unyielding, and proud character was still engraved in the bones of the Forsaken God Clan. It continued to stubbornly continue, following their bloodline curse and growing endlessly!

The reason Lin Ming would take the risk of returning to the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's relics was because he respected the achievements of the Thunder Emperor, and he respected the spirit of the Forsaken God Clan as well as their ancestors.

He cupped his fists together and said, "I have found a senior's relics from an ancient ruin. These relics are very important to his people. I believe that the final wish of this senior would be for me to return these relics to his people."

"Senior? Which senior?" The guard captain asked.

"The Eightfall Thunder Emperor, Senior Emperor Argent."

"Ancestor Emperor Argent?" The guard captain suddenly trembled as he heard Lin Ming's words. Emperor Argent was one of the greatest talents of his Forsaken God Clan. At 21 years of age he had broken through to the Xiantian realm and then stepped into the Revolving Core at 28 years of age. This speed could be considered very slow amongst the heroic young elites, and it would be very difficult to become an Emperor level powerhouse at this rate of development.

But, Emperor Argent relied on his powerful will and perseverance. He slowly tread on his own road of martial arts, comprehending a battle spirit as well as three martial intents, managing to form his own Thunder Force Field in the meantime. After he crossed Life Destruction he became invincible within his realm. After he crossed the eighth stage of Life Destruction and reached the Divine Sea, he showed disdain for all rivals and heroes. After a thousand years of being undefeated, he gained the title of highest under the heavens!

Unfortunately, even such a gallant and mighty genius had fallen like a meteor. He finally died in the Sea of Miracles and not even his bones were recovered. The only reason people knew of his death was because of his lifesoul jade slip. As for the reason why he died, no one knew.

The Eightfall Thunder Emperor's death added another layer of terror to the Sea of Miracles.

"Young Hero, do you have any evidence of this?" The guard captain unsuccessfully tried to restrain the growing excitement in his heart. The relics of the Eightfall Thunder Emperor were far too meaningful to the Forsaken God Clan. If what this youth said was true, then this was truly an accidental massive lucky chance for the Forsaken God Clan!

Although the guard captain was thrilled, that didn't mean he would blindly believe anything Lin Ming said. To allow someone into the home of his clan, especially someone that wore a wood spirit jade mask, it was possible that there was some problem with this person.

"This is a token Senior Emperor Argent once used."

As Lin Ming spoke, he fished out Emperor Argent's token from his spatial ring. This was a plain bronze token and on the back of it was a bird totem similar to the jade pendant. The front of the token was engraved with the word 'Argent.'

Although it was old, and the Clan Elder tokens had undergone several changes in style, the guard captain was still able to confirm that this was undoubtedly the token the Eightfall Thunder Emperor used in the past.

This ancient atmosphere that carried the flavor of years, as well as the will of thunder contained within the token, this was truly impossible to fake!

“Young Hero, please follow. I shall take you to see our Elder!” The guard captain’s tone became increasingly respectful. The Eightfall Thunder Emperor’s relics were priceless. For this youth to not keep them all for himself after finding them and even return them to the Forsaken God Clan, this alone was worthy of respect.

With the guard captain guiding the way, Lin Ming followed behind him. They passed through a space entrance that shimmered like mercury. As the entered into this dimensional realm where the Forsaken God Clan resided, they flew high in the sky. Along the way they passed various marvelous looking trees and flowers that dotted the land. Although these couldn’t be regarded as top heavenly treasures, it was still enough to make a third-grade or fourth-grade sect go mad with jealousy.

“What a rich heaven and earth origin energy here. The grade of the spirit vein should be less than six, but not too far off.”

Lin Ming was more and more surprised. For the Forsaken God Clan to occupy such prosperous land, their legacy must be far more formidable than he had imagined. But if this were true, how could Jue have ended up with such a miserable fate?

“Not only is the spiritual aura here rich and pure, but there are a multitude of unimaginably powerful grand array formations laid down in this dimensional realm. Even if someone manages to break through the entrance and invade this realm, they would have to pay a great price in order to pass these array formations.

As Lin Ming slowly moved forwards, he secretly assessed his surroundings. This Forsaken God Clan was truly low key. If he hadn’t managed to meet Jue by chance, then he would never have imagined that such a family clan would be hidden away at the edge of the four Divine Kingdoms.

“In front of us is the Elders’ Palace. I shall lead Young Hero to see our Patriarch.”

The guard captain quickly lit a sound transmitting talisman and relayed the entire series of events. He soon received a summon.

“Young Hero, please come with me.”

The guard captain flew into the Elders’ Palace, passing through corridors without touching the ground until they arrived at a great hall.

This great hall was shaped like a square and was over 300 feet wide. There were several statues arranged at the entrance to this hall, and every statue was built to real size. There were men as well as women, and all of them looked lifelike, as if they were people frozen in time. Looking carefully, one could even see the curse seals on the statues’ faces. These were undoubtedly ancestors of the Forsaken God Clan.

At the center of the great hall, three people were already waiting. Two men and a woman. They didn’t seem too old.

The middle-aged man that seemed to be leading them was the same as Lin Ming, both of them wearing a mask. The man and woman behind him were both wearing long red robes, and also had the unique curse seal of the Forsaken God Clan on their faces. The two of them were impressively at the sixth stage of Life Destruction!

“Sixth stage of Life Destruction, Destiny Decree masters…”

Lin Ming could feel that the foundations of these two individuals were extremely solid. Their comprehensive strength most likely far surpassed the Asura Divine Kingdom’s second Demon Envoy. Such people should be ranked around the top 50-80 of the Destiny Decree.

However, as Lin Ming recalled the name of the masters listed on the Destiny Decree, he realized there was no record of any of the Forsaken God Clan's masters. Obviously, such a mysterious and hidden family clan wouldn't be included in the Destiny Decree. Destiny Grasp had a formidable intelligence gathering network, but that doesn't mean they would be able to probe the situation of the Forsaken God Clan that was hidden away in their own dimensional realm.

Lin Ming's eyes turned to the middle-aged man in front. This person's aura was as deep as the sea; it was impossible to see his cultivation. When this person locked his eyes on him, Lin Ming could feel a deep sense of awe and trepidation growing in him, as if this person were an unreachable mountain peak!

Was this… a Divine Sea powerhouse?

Lin Ming didn't dare to confirm this. But for the Forsaken God Clan to be able to occupy such a magnificent treasure trove of a realm, it stood to reason that there must be a Divine Sea powerhouse here!

Lin Ming took a deep breath. This was his first time facing a true Divine Sea powerhouse. Although he could feel a great pressure, he still remained as calm as before. After all, when he had been in Timeworn Phoenix City he had encountered Fairy Feng, someone whose boundary was impossible to guess. She already far surpassed the Divine Sea realm.

"So it's you. Are you the one that found Ancestor Emperor Argent's relics?" The middle-aged man's eyes flashed like thunder. He didn't wait for Lin Ming to speak before suddenly appearing in front of Lin Ming. He swept his eyes past Lin Ming's dantian and was able to feel that Lin Ming's foundation already reached the peak of solidity. This caused him to be exceptionally surprised. For this young boy to cultivate to this point, he certainly wasn't some nameless nobody.

"Yes."

He had already decided to hand over Emperor Argent's relics. Lin Ming didn't bother with small talk. He pulled out a spatial ring he had prepared in advance and passed it to the middle-aged man, only leaving behind the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's recorded Thunder Concept jade slip as well as the Twinlife Thunder Crystal that could temper one's will. Both of those treasure were placed into the Cosmic Melting Furnace and then back into his dantian were no one could find them.

But as for the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's recorded experiences about the Forsaken God Clan's inherited cultivation methods as well as his experiences about how to resist the curse, all of that was returned to the Forsaken God Clan. Even the Argent White Sword was returned to them.

Although the Argent White Sword was a Saint artifact weapon, it didn't suit the spear wielding Lin Ming. Moreover, it was impossible for him to be recognized as the master of the Argent White Sword, so the might of the weapon would be greatly reduced in his hands. As it was, the weapon itself could only be considered as an unexpected surprise card in his hands. Lin Ming had confidence he would be able to cross Life Destruction in the future and would then have no need to rely on this card. It was better to simply return it to the Forsaken God Clan.

…………..

As Lin Ming entered the Elders Palace, outside of the Forsaken God Clan's dimensional realm, another Godspeed Boat arrived. This Godspeed Boat was several times larger than Lin Ming's own Godspeed Boat.

"It's here?" The Asura Divine Emperor looked at the ox head shaped mountain peak and frowned. "Are you positive he's within the Forsaken God Clan?"

"Yes!" Situ Yaoxi nodded. "He should have entered into the Forsaken God Clan's territory no more than an hour ago."

Chapter 827 – Shibai

Chapter 827 – Shibai

…

…

…

"He actually entered the Forsaken God Clan…." The Asura Divine Emperor was thoughtful for a moment.

If it wasn't for the fact that Situ Chuan had seen Lin Ming's true face at the Nine Flowers Banquet, and that he was able to confirm that there was no bloodline curse seal on his face, then the Asura Divine Emperor would have believed that Lin Ming had originated from the Forsaken God Clan. The Forsaken God Clan had an extremely mystical background, and it was highly possible that they could raise a heroic young elite like Lin Ming who defied all common sense. The Forsaken God Clan had existed for countless years and had produced far too many top talents.

At this moment, a guard of the Forsaken God Clan greeted them. "Who are you?"

"We are from the Asura Divine Kingdom, here to visit the Forsaken God Clan Patriarch. Have him come meet us quickly!"

There was no need for the Asura Divine Emperor to speak, as Situ Chuan had already taken the initiative to reply. With his status as an Asura Prince, he was simply disinclined to bother with these lowly Xiantian realm guards. He began emitting the aura of a Life Destruction powerhouse. The Forsaken God Clan guard was only a Xiantian martial artist, so he felt tremendous pressure in the face of this overwhelming aura.

Asura Divine Kingdom?

The Asura Divine Kingdom was one of the four great powers. Even a Holy Land level power wouldn't dare to be rash in front of them.

Against the oppressive momentum of the Asura Divine Kingdom, it was impossible to say that the Xiantian level guards weren't pressured. However, they didn't seem weakened either. The deputy commander who was temporarily leading the guard squad said, "The Patriarch is meeting with a guest right now. Please wait for a moment."

The Forsake God Clan was hidden within its own dimensional realm throughout the years. It simply didn't know much of the current events happening in the outside world, much less of the matter where the Asura Divine Kingdom chased down Lin Ming. Even if they did know, they wouldn't know that this matter had even brought these high level characters of the Asura Divine Kingdom knocking on their door.

"Guest?"

The Asura Divine Emperor's eyebrows shot up as he glanced at Situ Yaoxi. It was likely that this guest was Lin Ming. As long as Lin Ming entered this dimensional realm, then he was no different than a dead pigeon. It would be impossible for Lin Ming to escape from his palm.

…………

The masked, middle-aged man held onto the spatial ring that Lin Ming had passed to him, scanning it with his soul force. Suddenly, he felt a vast and ancient will press down onto him.

This was….

The middle-aged man's heart shook. This blazing purple lightning, this chilling sword edge…this was Emperor Argent's Saber, the Argent White Sword that was recorded down in the annals of their clan!

The Argent White Sword was the holy sword handed down within their Forsaken God Clan. It was a Saint level artifact weapon passed down from their ancestors! This sword had a history of over 100,000 years, and was a testament to the Forsaken God Clan's immeasurable history! It was the symbol of their family clan's glory and pride!

This sword blade contained an immortal sword intent that would never weaken, even after 10,000 years. This was the ultimate pursuit of a swordsman.

40,000 years ago, the Forsaken God Clan's greatest ancestor had achieved the title of the highest under the heavens, and was then granted this divine sword. Because of this sword, he changed his name to Argent. Since he was also renowned as an Emperor, he was called Emperor Argent from then on.

The Argent White Sword had been infused with the will of Ancestor Emperor Argent, and had also been tempered within the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion. It could be called the transcendent sword of this world! When it had been lost in the Sea of Miracles, this had caused countless jealous Supreme Elders, who had been frothing with desire over this sword, to ignore any danger and rush into the Sea of Miracles to search for its whereabouts. Not only was the sword powerful, but the sword intent contained within could inspire a swordsman, allowing their swordsmanship to reach even higher levels!

But…the Argent White Sword seemed as if it had vanished from the world. No matter how those sword wielding Supreme Elders searched for it, none of them could even find a trace of its whereabouts. Instead, they all perished from the skies, with over 90% of them dying on their fruitless quest.

The masked middle-aged man never thought for a moment that one day, this divine sword would be returned to their Forsaken God Clan!

His body shivered with joy. As he held this spatial ring in his hands, he felt as if it were a 10,000 jin weight, nearly causing him to lose his balance and fall onto the floor.

“Patriarch....” As the woman behind the masked middle-aged man saw his excited expression, she couldn’t help but comment.

“I’m fine...” This masked middle-aged man was the Patriarch of the Forsaken God Clan. The Patriarch took off his mask, revealing his true appearance and causing Lin Ming to be very surprised.

How could this be?

The masked middle-aged man had been tall, and exuded a noble aura. Therefore, his face should also be similarly dignified! However, as Lin Ming looked at his face, it seemed as if he were staring at him through a pale, translucent cloth. All of the middle-aged man’s features were completely blurred underneath. It was as if his face was gradually disappearing, leaving behind only a pair of eyes that seemed as peaceful and bright as the stars in the night sky.

The curse seal on his face was over three times larger than that of an ordinary Forsaken God Clan member. It nearly covered his entire face.

The Patriarch of the Forsaken God Clan walked towards the entrance of the grand hall where the row of statues was lined up. He knelt on both knees, his hands shivering as he held the spatial ring and drew out the Argent White Sword. The four foot purple treasure sword was as straight as a ruler, shining with an upright and earnest brilliance.

The sword blade was still exuding the a firm and unbending martial arts will. This was the battle spirit that the Eightfall Thunder Emperor had left in the sword blade.

“The Argent White Sword....has finally returned to my people! I have not shamed my ancestors any further!”

As the Patriarch of the Forsaken God Clan knelt on the floor, the man and woman behind him also knelt to the floor. This sword was not merely a weapon to the Forsaken God Clan. It was the symbol of the glory and magnificent history of their Forsaken God Clan, and held an incomparably deep significance to them.

It had to be known Forsaken God Clan had already lost their ancient history to the endlessly winding river of time. If they also lost the Argent White Sword that had been passed down from their ancestors, generation through generation, then they truly didn't have any inheritance.

"Little Brother, I am the 39th Patriarch of the Forsaken God Clan. My name is Shibai, and this graciousness will be carved onto my heart and onto the hearts of the entire Forsaken God Clan!"

Although Shibai had a strange appearance that could even be called ferocious, his eyes now showed a sincere gratitude and gratefulness. The Forsaken God Clan had once promised generous rewards to anyone who could recover the Argent White Sword, and then had even sent out their own clansmen into the Sea of Miracles. However, none of them had ever returned.

The Forsaken God Clan had paid an immense price for the Argent White Sword. Although they never gave up their search for countless generations, their quests had always been futile, and they would be forced to give up halfway. Now that Lin Ming had brought back this sword to their clan, this graciousness was as heavy as a mountain to the Forsaken God Clan.

"Sir Patriarch is too serious. At that time, I had mistakenly entered into the 8000 Mile Black Swamp and luckily obtained a great deal of help from the martial arts will left behind by Senior Emperor Argent. Otherwise, I fear I might have never managed to make my way here."

Lin Ming had repeatedly encountered dangerous situations in the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, and the Argent White Sword had greatly helped him during these times. Not to mention the other times, but solely based on the time he encountered the Purple Lion Thunder Source in the 90 mile region of the Thunder Dominion, if it weren't for the Argent White Sword protecting him, then he probably would have been eaten up by that Thunder Source.

“Little Brother, there is no need to speak anymore. My Forsaken God Clan will remember this graciousness. If Little Brother has any requests, please speak freely.” Shibai decisively said.

The graciousness of a Divine Sea powerhouse and the Holy Land behind him was undoubtedly precious. Lin Ming didn’t continue to decline. For his current self, having the protection of great power was ideal.

Shibai carefully put away the Argent White Sword and looked at the other items in the spatial ring. These were the personal jade slips that Emperor Argent had left behind.

As Shibai held these jade slips in his hands and sifted through them, he found it more and more difficult to maintain his calm. On each of these jade slips were various experiences and notes on the Forsaken God Clan’s heritage. Most importantly, there were even recorded experiences from Emperor Argent when he tried to break through the curse seal, and his process in doing so. To the Forsaken God Clan, this was extremely valuable information!

This spatial ring that Lin Ming had brought back to the Forsaken God Clan was simply a priceless treasure!

Shibai took a few breaths to calm himself. Then, as he quietly put away the jade slips and was about to speak to Lin Ming, a voice rang out from the other side of the door. “Sir Patriarch, there are guests here to visit.”

“Who are they? Have them wait outside.” Shibai casually waved his hands. At this time, there was no guest as important as Lin Ming.

“They are people from the Asura Divine Kingdom. The guards have already informed them to wait, but they did not wish to do so. The guards were unable to stop their advance.”

Asura Divine Kingdom?

Shibai twisted his eyebrows together. The Forsaken God Clan didn’t cross paths with the four Divine Kingdoms. Because they lived a secluded life in their own dimensional realm, they had very few visitors. Normally, only the nearby hidden family clans would occasionally come to visit them.

While Shibai had some suspicions, Lin Ming actually felt as if an earthquake and passed through him.

The Asura Divine Kingdom!?

Damn! How did they know he was here!?!?

He didn't think that it was a mere coincidence for the Asura Divine Kingdom to come visit the Forsaken God Clan. They must have used some unknown method to track his location!

As a top master, Shibai was naturally sensitive to the chances around him. He noticed Lin Ming's shocked expression and said, "Little Brother, do you have enmity with the Asura Divine Kingdom?"

Lin Ming let out a long breath. At this time, there was nothing more he could conceal from Shibai. After their last defeat, the Asura Divine Kingdom had surely sent out a stronger lineup of people. Additionally, they also had some unknown tracking method that he had no knowledge of. There was just no way for him to hide from them anymore!

After thinking about it, Lin Ming realized he only he once choice left, which was to believe in the Forsaken God Clan and believe that they would protect him. After coming here, the Forsaken God Clan's background had far surpassed his imagination. At this point he could only hope that they would honor their commitment and repay the graciousness they owed.

Facing Shibai's question, Lin Ming wryly smiled and said, "I won't hide the truth from Senior. The reason that this I risked my life and entered the 8000 Mile Black Swamp was because I was being chased down by the Asura Divine Kingdom's troops."

"Mm?" Shibai had thought it was strange that Lin Ming, with his mere late Revolving Core cultivation, would actually enter the Sea of Miracles and discover Ancestor Emperor Argent's relics. Now, it appeared that he had been forced to do so by others. However, for him to come out alive, that was because of skills and a destiny that Shibai found hard to understand.

Shibai said, “You became enemies with the Asura Divine Kingdom, and were forced into the Sea of Miracles. Even so, you managed to find the Ancestor Emperor Argent’s relics, which countless masters had failed to seek out. With your late Revolving Core cultivation, you managed to leave that land safely too. This in itself is proof that an unbelievably great destiny lies on your shoulders, and that you and my clan were fated to meet. Come with me, and I shall help you absolve the hatred between you and the Asura Divine Kingdom.”

Shibai didn’t think that Lin Ming, a late Revolving Core realm martial artist, would be able to form any enmity with the Asura Divine Kingdom that could not be resolved. His Forsaken God Clan had its own considerable background, and it shouldn’t be too hard for them to mollify the enmity that the Asura Divine Kingdom had with a late Revolving Core martial artist. Even if Lin Ming killed an Asura Divine Kingdom Prince, that would still be manageable. With the position of absolute strength here as the foundation, and in addition to paying a high enough price, this matter could be considered finished. However, with Lin Ming’s cultivation, it would be rather difficult for him to kill an Asura Prince. Moreover, there were several hundred Asura Divine Kingdom Princes, and with the sons of the High Prince added along, that meant there were even more.

As for the stronger Demon Envoys, Imperial Scholars, and Divine Sea powerhouses, Shibai didn’t believe that Lin Ming would have the qualifications to even offend them.

Lin Ming forced out a smile as he heard Shibai say these words. “This hatred….it might not be able to be resolved.”

“Mm?”

“I may have directly or indirectly killed three Demon Envoys of the Asura Divine Kingdom, as well as an Imperial Scholar. In addition, I massacred a branch division of the Asura Divine Kingdom, thus….” Lin Ming helplessly said.

In front of him, Shibai was left open mouthed and dumbfounded. He simply couldn't believe what he had heard.

"W-what did you say?"

Chapter 828 – That is Not the Key Point

Chapter 828 – That is Not the Key Point

…

…

…

"Three Demon Envoys… one Imperial Scholar… and you also massacred a branch division… this was all done by you?" Shibai found this hard to imagine. This youth in front of him only had a late Revolving Core cultivation. How could he possibly kill people like the Demon Envoys who were all highly ranked on the Destiny Decree?

If Shibai didn't know that Lin Ming lying at this point would only make matters worse, then he would have found it incredulous.

"They didn't directly die under my hands. In the 8000 Mile Black Swamp they had already been severely injured. I borrowed the power of some special abilities, including the Argent White Sword, and was only then able to kill them."

"So it's like this…"

Shibai found this a bit more reasonable after listening to Lin Ming's explanation. Still… this was far too shocking. The dangers that existed in the 8000 Black Swamp should also affect Lin Ming. Lin Ming was only at the late Revolving Core realm yet he had managed to avoid these dangers, instead borrowing their strength to kill four highly ranked Destiny Decree masters. Anyone would find this situation hard to believe.

"But… besides killing these people, there is also another matter…" Lin Ming hesitated before deciding to reveal everything that happened. Since the Asura Divine Kingdom had come here to look for him, he could only depend on the support of the Forsaken God Clan to resist them. He naturally had to reveal all the pertinent facts and remove any contradictions so that Shibai was mentally prepared.

Otherwise, if the Asura Divine Kingdom denounced him and Shibai was completely unaware of all this, then that wouldn't be good.

"What? There's something else?" Shibai gasped, speechless.

"Mm… it's like this. When I massacred the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division, there were also three superior fifth-grade sects present. Because of some conflicts during that time, I killed the man in charge of the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division as well as three Sovereigns and Highest Elders of the three great fifth-grade sects, for a total of four famous Elders. But, this isn't the key point…"

As Lin Ming spoke to here, Shibai was already completely dumbfounded. That still wasn't the key point!?

Three great superior fifth-grade sects, their famed Elders must be at the fifth or sixth stage of Life Destruction; it was even possible that they were Destiny Decree masters. Lin Ming was only at the late Revolving Core realm and yet he had managed to kill four of these people!?!?

How had he done this? The Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division was not near the 8000 Mile Black Swamp so there was no potential for him to borrow from. And, there were even the various array formations of the Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division!

In a situation where there was the support of array formations and also numerous disciples and subordinates, such a powerful strength had been completely butchered by Lin Ming?

Shibai didn't think that the four famed Elders were killed one at a time by Lin Ming. They must have fought against him together. Four against one, and yet they had died instead? Was that even possible?

If they couldn't fight, couldn't they still run?

And even if their speed was inferior to Lin Ming's, could they have been idiots? Why didn't they run away separately?

"You said that you killed four famed Elders in an Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Division!?" Shibai sucked in a breath of cold air. Even though he knew that Lin Ming wouldn't do something so insane such as boasting about this sort of matter at this time, he still found this unbelievable.

"Yes... just me." Lin Ming admitted.

Shibai ruefully smiled. "Good, you said that this wasn't the key point, then what is the key point? Don't tell me that you killed one of the Asura Divine Kingdom's top 10 ranked Destiny Decree masters..."

Shibai didn't know what expression to have at this time. He really didn't think that Lin Ming could kill a top 10 ranked Destiny Decree master; he was only saying this because he felt this whole situation was too ridiculous, so he also asked a ridiculous question. The meaning behind this was that Lin Ming couldn't possibly say anything more absurd.

"No, the truth is... there was a Divine Sea powerhouse who called himself the Asura Divine Kingdom's Emperor Uncle..."

As Lin Ming spoke to here, Shibai nearly vomited a mouthful of blood. Luckily, Lin Ming promptly followed that up, "He was just a wisp of will attached to a spear. He used a battle spirit projection to appear and then possessed the body of one of those dying famed Elders. He wanted to kill me, but the result was... he was instead exterminated by me."

Lin Ming described the whole process in simple terms, but Shibai felt his throat spasming the entire time.

Lin Ming took out an aquamarine green hairpin-like treasure from his spatial ring. Although this treasure looked like this, it was in truth a long spear. As long as one poured true essence into it, it would reform into its true form. This was the weapon that Situ Bonan had used.

“The Wishful Green Spear!” Shibai’s eyes widened until they were mostly white. “Situ Bonan!?!?”

“Yes…” Lin Ming nodded.

Shibai was floored. Situ Bonan’s life was coming to an end. For the last few millennia he had been constantly tempering his will. It was said that his battle spirit had reached a very high level. Even if it were just a battle spirit projection, that was still a terrifying opponent!

And that terrifying battle spirit projection was actually… completely destroyed by Lin Ming?

“He desired to kill me, but… he was instead annihilated by me.”

Shibai didn’t know whether to laugh or cry with these few words. Just who was this boy!?

At this time, as Shibai looked at Lin Ming, his vision was the same as if he were looking at a monster. Lin Ming was also in a hapless state. If it wasn’t for the Asura Divine Kingdom coming here and forcing his hand, he certainly wouldn’t speak of these matters. Every time he revealed something strange about himself it made his situation a bit more dangerous.

After a while, Shibai thoroughly digested all of this information. This wasn’t the time to ask Lin Ming just how he had managed to accomplish all this. The Asura Divine Kingdom had already rushed their way in. He needed to understand the original reason for their enmity with Lin Ming.

“Why did they form such a powerful lineup of individuals to deal with you?”

Shibai couldn’t help but ask. Three Demon Envoys and an Imperial Scholar. All of them were people with extremely high status in the Asura Divine Kingdom, and the 8000 Mile Black Swamp was known as the greatest life forbidden zone in the Sky Spill Continent.

Anyone below a Divine Sea powerhouse would only find near certain death within. Even so, they had still taken the massive risk and entered. It could be said that the Asura Divine Kingdom had spared no price in order to hunt down Lin Ming. To chase after a late Revolving Core boy in such a ruthless and reckless fashion, that was simply defying all common sense.

“The reason that they are hunting me down is… I once entered into the ruins of an ancient Great Emperor at the edge of the mainland. But, the Asura Divine Kingdom doesn’t know about this…”

Lin Ming stated the reason for the Asura Divine Kingdom’s hatred with him from beginning to end.

The struggle for the Demon Emperor’s legacy had begun with the South Sea Demon Region. Originally, the South Sea Demon Region could be said to be a legacy remnant of the Netherworld Great Emperor. Compared to the Demon Emperor of 60,000-70,000 years ago that had founded the sixth-grade Holy Land Demon God Imperial Palace with his own hands, and whose strength was known to by unrivalled in the world, the Netherworld Great Emperor that had died 3000 years ago and had only created a fifth-grade Holy Land was in truth not much to speak of at all.

The Netherworld Great Emperor could at most be considered a fierce Divine Emperor-like character. The ‘Netherworld Devil Arts’ that he created was not worth any jealously from the Asura Divine Kingdom. The four Divine Kingdoms had far too many cultivations methods of that level.

Moreover, when Silent Demon Emperor City was destroyed, most of the truly priceless treasures had already been stolen away by the four Divine Kingdoms, leaving only a few dregs behind. The Netherworld Great Emperor’s underlings had run away like miserable dogs to the South Sea, where they founded the South Sea Demon Region.

In the eyes of the four Divine Kingdoms, the South Sea Demon Region was only a tiny fish that simply wasn’t worth wasting time on.

Afterwards, Xuan Wuji had accidently obtained the personal letter of the Demon Emperor. Within this letter he had discovered information pertaining to the Demon God Imperial Palace. With this jade slip letter in his hand, he had resorted to every means possible to start a war throughout the entire South Sea, using that as a blood sacrifice to break open the seal of the ancient battlefield and open the pathway to the broken world of the Demon God Imperial Palace.

And until this secret Demon God Imperial Palace was opened, only Xuan Wuji and a minority of the South Sea Demon Region's high level figures were aware of it. Finally, Xuan Wuji's perfectly laid out plan failed and nearly all of the benefits fell into Lin Ming's hands.

The Demon God Imperial Palace was a dimensional realm that had lost its pillar of support and had also been sealed up afterwards. It was hidden and isolated from the outer world, and was only accessible from the surrounding several fragmented microrealms around it. After Lin Ming had left, there wasn't any more value in exploring it.

"I see… I understand now. I will go and negotiate with those from the Asura Divine Kingdom. Follow me along." Shibai finally calmed down, restoring his previous confidence.

Follow him?

Lin Ming paused. But in truth, following or not didn't matter at all. If the Asura Divine Kingdom managed to track him here all the way from the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, then they certainly had some method to deduce his position. There was no longer any meaning in hiding.

Shibai placed his mask back on and lit two sound transmitting talismans before walking towards the end of the Elders Palace.

Lin Ming followed, his mood soon returning to normal. As things stood, worrying wouldn't help him.

Shibai could feel Lin Ming's calm aura. He couldn't help but glance back at him. This young man simply appeared as if nothing had happened at all. Just who was he? For a late Revolving Core martial artist to be surprised in this matter was truly unimaginable.

Shibai led Lin Ming into a temple that was paved all over with black.

This temple was only 300 feet high. It looked simple and ordinary. But as Lin Ming walked inside, he could feel abnormal fluctuations of energy.

"Mm? This great hall is..."

"Can you feel it?" Shibai looked at Lin Ming with an appreciative glance. "This temple was built within the 'heart' of this dimensional realm. Every dimensional realm has a world heart that supports the entire world. This is the cornerstone of the world. The degree of its toughness is singular and unthinkable. Even if the top powerhouse of the Sky Spill Continent were to come here, they could give up any thoughts of destroying it."

Shibai said with absolute confidence in his voice. This black temple was the area within the entire Forsaken God Clan with the greatest power. Not only was this temple built atop the heart of this world, but there were also unimaginably powerful and immense array formations laid down here. Once they were opened and guided by someone's hands, the might of them was hard to imagine!

Lin Ming followed Shibai into the main hall. It was only the that he discovered there was an old man wearing a silver mask waiting here. This gray-haired old man was only casually standing there, but it was impossible to feel his anything from him. And, what puzzled Lin Ming was that even though his eyes clearly saw this old man, if he investigated with his perception, the area that the old man was standing in was actually empty!

'This mysterious masked old man and Shibai are both the same. They are unfathomable individuals. I have no way of seeing through his cultivation.'

It wasn’t that this old man was hiding his cultivation, but that Lin Ming simply wasn’t able to understand his boundary. Without a doubt, this old man was also a Divine Sea powerhouse!

The Forsaken God Clan unexpectedly had two Divine Sea powerhouses! Such a force, disregarding the four Divine Kingdoms, could be considered a first class Holy Land!

As Lin Ming entered, the masked old man nodded his head towards him, a faint smile and recognition in his eyes. It was obvious that he had learnt about Lin Ming’s situation from the sound transmitting talisman.

The Forsaken God Clan had suddenly gathered two Divine Sea powerhouses and also chose the heart of this dimensional realm as the meeting point. This was undoubtedly to demonstrate their might to the Asura Divine Kingdom.

Chapter 829 – Confrontation

Chapter 829 – Confrontation

…

…

…

“Realmheart Great Hall?” The Asura Divine Emperor Situ Haotian frowned as he noticed where the meeting place was. The heart of a dimensional realm was the cornerstone of that entire world; it was indestructible.

An array formation was engraved in the Realmheart Great Hall. The array heart was fused as one with the Realmheart. If one wished to forcefully break the array, they would have to destroy the Realmheart. But, this was simply impossible.

If this array formation was driven by a Divine Sea Supreme Elder, then its power could be imagined.

In other words, once they entered into this great hall in front of them, they would immediately be at a disadvantage. If a fight were to start then they would be in a perilous situation!

“Please!” The leading guard gestured in invitation, a trace of a smile on his face.

If they entered the Realmheart Great Hall then they would have lost the initiative. But if they didn’t then they would weaken their momentum; how would they then be able to force out Lin Ming?

Situ Haotian sneered and lifted his foot to walk inside.

"Your Majesty, you cannot!" As the Great Demon Envoy saw Situ Haotian about to enter the Realmheart Great Hall, he immediately cried out to stop him.

Situ Haotian coldly snorted. "I am the noble Asura Divine Kingdom's Divine Emperor. How can I not enter a mere great hall! My Asura Divine Kingdom is close to a sixth-grade Holy Land, why should I fear a mere fifth-grade Holy Land like the Forsaken God Clan?"

A fifth-grade sect and a sixth-grade sect were separated by a massive gulf. A sixth-grade sect took Divine Sea Supreme Elders as their ordinary Elders and the highest man under the heavens as their sect master. Besides ancient powers like the Demon God Imperial Palace and a few other great powers that had fallen throughout history, there hadn't yet been another sixth-grade sect that appeared. Even the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom could only be considered a quasi sixth-grade sect.

But, a fifth-grade sect took Life Destruction martial artists as Elders. There were far too many of this type of sect and there were massive differences in total strength between them.

For instance, the South Sea Demon Region took first stage Life Destruction martial artists as their Elders and an ordinary third or fourth stage Life Destruction martial artist as their sect master. This was comparable to the lowest of fifth grade sects. Above this, there were sects that had one or two Destiny Decree masters as their sect master; these could be considered superior fifth-grade sects.

If a sect could have an Emperor powerhouse as their sect leader then that was a peak fifth-grade sect, also called a Holy Land. The Forsaken God Clan could be considered a slightly formidable Holy Land, but compared to the Asura Divine Kingdom that had over a dozen Divine Sea powerhouses guarding it, there was still a very large disparity between them.

Situ Haotian strode into the Realmheart Great Hall. At this time, in the great hall, Shibai was all smiles as he sat in the head seat. There were seven or eight people beside him.

As Shibai saw Situ Haotian come in, he quickly welcomed him, "Divine Emperor Haotian, it's been a long time!"

Although he looked genteel and delighted on the outside, his true innermost feelings were that of utter bewilderment. Even though he knew that Lin Ming had provoked a calamity on himself, he still didn't think that the Asura Divine Kingdom would send out two Divine Sea powerhouses, including even the Asura Divine Emperor. For two Divine Sea powerhouses to come after a little Revolving Core realm youth, this was simply unprecedented since ancient times! He doubted there would be another scene like this in the future too!

Situ Haotian laughed, "Patriarch Shibai, it's been a thousand years since our last meeting!"

Although the Forsaken God Clan was mysterious, they still did occasionally interact with the outside world.

Situ Haotian's eyes were as sharp as a flash of lightning. He glanced over everyone before instantly locking onto a black-clothed youth wearing a wood spirit jade mask.

This youth was…

Lin Lanjian!?!

He was actually sitting out here in the open!

It wasn't just Situ Haotian, but the other Asura Divine Kingdom powerhouses had also discovered Lin Ming.

"You little beast, you actually dare to appear here!?" Situ Yaoxi glared daggers at Lin Ming. She had originally been thinking of negotiating with the Forsaken God Clan Patriarch. With sufficient threat of force as well as enough benefits, they would be able to force Shibai to hand Lin Ming over to them. But she never imagined Lin Ming would simply be standing there, appearing calm as if he didn't even care about what was happening.

If she wasn't able to recognize the curse energy coming from his body, she simply wouldn't believe that he was Lin Ming.

This was simply too audacious! Did he think their Asura Divine Kingdom was empty air? He didn't even bother avoiding them?

As Situ Yaoxi spoke, the Asura Divine Kingdom's martial artists all looked towards Lin Ming. The two that were defeated at the Nine Flower Banquet, Situ Chuan and Situ Feng, also glared at him, their eyes red with hatred.

"Aunty! Quickly capture that little beast!"

Situ Chuan glowered at Lin Ming with naked resentment in his eyes, but also some greed. He wanted to immediately grab Lin Ming and perform a complete soul search on him, taking everything that he had for himself. He wanted to steal away his destiny and become the number one Divine Sea master in the future.

"Humph!"

Shibai coldly coughed. The sound echoed like a loud thunderclap in Situ Chuan's ears. Situ Chuan's body shook and his blood and energy tumbled within him, nearly causing him to vomit blood.

"You!!"

Situ Chuan angrily looked over at Shibai.

"Insolence!"

Hearing another cold shout, Situ Chuan's complexion became even uglier.

The one who spoke was actually Situ Haotian. His voice was full of anger and energy, exploding throughout the entire meeting hall. Although he was outwardly speaking to Situ Chuan, this also secretly included Shibai and Lin Ming.

His Asura Divine Kingdom was on a completely different level of strength from the Forsaken God Clan. How could he allow such an insult?

“Father… I…” After being scolded by Situ Haotian, Situ Chuan felt very wronged.

“Sit down! It is not your turn to speak!” Situ Haotian icily said.

“Yes…” Situ Chuan’s heart itched with bitter loathing. He sat down and continued to glare at Lin Ming with open hostility.

Situ Haotian’s eyes burned as he sized up Lin Ming. Then he suddenly smiled and said, “Good! Good! Very good! Heroes have always come from the young, I never imagined that you would dare to appear and face me directly. How brave of you!”

These words contained an invisible momentum. Although he didn’t deliberately summon his aura, the unintentionally-released imposing aura of a strong Divine Sea Supreme Elder was still enough to cause an ordinary Life Destruction powerhouse to ooze with a cold sweat!

Lin Ming’s expression remained calm. He faintly smiled and replied, “If I didn’t appear here, would Your Majesty the Divine Emperor know that I am not hiding in the Forsaken God Clan? If so, then I wouldn’t freely appear in front of Your Majesty as if I loathed living for too long.”

Lin Ming’s tone of voice was respectful but contained an inherent edge and dauntless courage. Situ Haotian’s eyebrows shot up. For a Revolving Core powerhouse to be able to remain calm even under just a little bit of the pressure he released, this was startling!

This was truly worthy of the title of number one eternally rare talent in the Sky Spill Continent.

If this youth had only been his son then that would have been wonderful indeed.

Unfortunately, as things stood, the more powerful Lin Ming became, the more he must try to destroy him. This was because the conflicts of interest and enmity between them had already become irreconcilable!

Situ Haotian glanced over at Shibai as well as the ordinary-looking masked old man in the corner of the hall. The old man was clearly sitting under the lights, but he gave off a very hazy and vague feeling, as if it were extremely easy to ignore and forget him.

‘Shibai, Zushan… two of the Forsaken God Clan’s Divine Sea masters. That old man Zushan looks inconspicuous but he is actually stronger than Shibai… in the Forsaken God Clan where the youths tend to die young because of their curse, he has lived through the pain for 2000 years. This itself is extremely terrifying. And besides these two, the Forsaken God Clan should also have a third Divine Sea powerhouse. Since he hasn’t appeared then he must be secretly controlling the Realmheart array.’

Situ Haotian silently calculated in his mind. Once a fight started here then they would undoubtedly die. But, if he and the Royal Princess used all of their hidden cards from the very start then they would be able to escape this Realmheart Great Hall. For them to die here was actually not possible. The three Divine Sea masters of the Forsaken God Clan could also be considered chump change to the Asura Divine Kingdom’s higher number of Divine Sea masters. If the Asura Divine Kingdom was willing to disregard all costs and wage war with the Forsaken God Clan, then they would inevitably massacre them, even if they were hidden inside this highly defensible dimensional realm.

But, as long as the Forsaken God Clan didn’t go crazy, they would never engage in such suicidal behavior.

As Situ Haotian thought of this, he slyly smiled, his eyes gradually filling with a cold light. “Patriarch Shibai, I wonder if you know of the grudge between my Asura Divine Kingdom and Lin Lanjian? He stole away the inheritance of my Asura Divine Kingdom as well as the main piece of the Demon Emperor Armor. Not just that, but he caused a bloodbath in one of my Asura Divine Kingdom Branch Divisions, killing the leader there as well as three famed Elders from fifth-grade sects. Afterwards, he conspired and killed my Asura Divine Kingdom’s three Demon Envoys and an Imperial Scholar. Now that Patriarch Shibai has come forward with Lan Lanjian, could this mean that you wish to shelter him in the future?”

Shibai looked at Situ Haotian. He smiled and said, “Divine Emperor Haotian, Lin Lanjian here only has a cultivation at the late Revolving Core. You said that he stole away your Asura Divine Kingdom’s inheritances and also the main piece of the Demon Emperor Armor? How could he have possibly done something like that?”

“Humph, Patriarch Shibai, let us stop beating around the bush. Everyone knows that my Asura Divine Kingdom is the true successor to the great Demon Emperor. As for the Demon Emperor Armor being lost 10,000 years ago, that is a matter well known throughout the entire martial world. My Asura Divine Kingdom has the Demon God Heartguard Mirror left behind by the Demon Emperor. Certainly Lin Lanjian didn’t steal these things, but this was through the actions of his ancestors. These things should originally belong to my clan to begin with. In consideration of his ignorance, I was willing to forgive him as long as he handed over what belonged to us. But, not only did he refuse to return our legacies but he also repeatedly killed the powerhouses of my Asura Divine Kingdom, plotting against the officials of my court!”

As Situ Haotian spoke to here, Lin Ming actually sneered and said, “The Demon Emperor was originally a Giant Demon and you are a human. You don’t have the least bit relationship of with the Giant Demon race, and yet you said that the Asura Divine Kingdom is the chosen successor of all the Demon Emperor’s inheritances? Don’t make me laugh! The inheritances that the Demon Emperor left behind all have no master; it is up to fate whether or not one can obtain them! I can also say that your Demon God Heartguard Mirror is something that was stolen from me!”

“Arrogance!”

Situ Haotian’s eyes suddenly became sharp as all of his aura erupted at once. This was different from that slight momentum he had been releasing before. This aura was being driven with all of Situ Haotian’s strength! An overwhelming aura that belonged to a Divine Sea powerhouse came crashing down on Lin Ming!

If a normal Life Destruction powerhouse were to be covered in this aura, they would explode to death!

Lin Ming’s eyes widened. He had already been prepared for this. He opened the Heretical God Force to the limit as well as simultaneously utilizing the strength of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

The Asura Force Field and the Death God Force Field opened together. The Samsara martial intent protected his spiritual sea. True essence poured into his battle spirit, causing it to rapidly spin around.

Peng!

The chair that Lin Ming sat on was immediately blasted to pieces. His body shook and he used a hand to support himself on the table before him.

In the instant that Lin Ming’s palm touched the obsidian table, even though the table was reinforced by an array formation, cracks still began to appear on its surface. Dust and smoke began to waft out from the table, but Lin Ming still stood tall and upright, only looking slightly paler.

Bang!

The moment that Lin Ming let go of the table, it immediately scattered into broken pieces and dust!

“Situ Haotian!”

Shibai stood up, his right hand already tracing his spatial ring! He looked at Lin Ming with surprise. A martial artist’s aura was a similar type of energy to a force field or domain. Once it erupted it could instantly reach out. Even he didn’t have enough time to prevent Lin Ming from being harmed. He thought Lin Ming would be injured, but never expected that he would simply resist this aura.

This was truly worthy of a peerless monstrous talent that had managed to provoke the Asura Divine Kingdom to this degree.

Chapter 830 – However Many Come, I'll Take That Many

Chapter 830 – However Many Come, I'll Take That Many

…

…

…

There wasn't even a table in the hall anymore. Nearly all of the martial artists stood up at once. The young martial artists of the Asura Divine Kingdom stared at Lin Ming, their throats twitching. Even the Great Demon Envoy and Situ Haotian's great disciple had strange expressions on their faces. This Lin Ming was simply too freakish. A late Revolving Core realm martial artist had actually been able to withstand the might of a Divine Emperor!

The truth was they didn't know that Situ Bonan's battle spirit projection had been destroyed by Lin Ming. Situ Bonan definitely wouldn't make such a disgraceful and embarrassing matter public to the juniors. If they had known about this then they certainly wouldn't be surprised by what just happened now.

"Patriarch Shibai, do you really want to?" Situ Haotian stood up and Situ Yaoxi followed after.

At this time, the masked old man sitting in the corner also stood up. As he rose to his feet, countless vague and indistinct array symbols began to fill the entire great hall. A vast and potent energy exuded from these array symbols, as if the entire great hall had come alive.

This was a sign that the Realmheart array formation would soon activate!

Situ Haotian was normally assertive and dominant in his actions, but even he knew that fighting now was the worst decision to make. He and Situ Yaoxi wouldn't have any problems; at most they would lose some blood and energy. But as for the juniors behind him, the High Successors, the Princes, as well as his elder disciple, Great Demon Envoy, and two Imperial Scholars, all of them would die here. This was not a loss that the Asura Divine Kingdom was able to afford.

Before now, Situ Haotian never imagined such a situation to be possible, otherwise he wouldn't have led these juniors here.

"Shibai, do you really plan on waging war with my Asura Divine Kingdom over Lin Lanjian?" Situ Haotian spoke with a true essence sound transmission. "To the best of my knowledge, he isn't a member of your Forsaken God Clan. Do you even know the price of starting a war?"

"Of course I do." Shibai calmly replied, as if the Forsaken God Clan didn't care whatsoever.

"Hand over Lin Lanjian to me and my Asura Divine Kingdom will promise you one million spirit essence stones as well as two 10,000 Year Peach Piths!"

A 10,000 Year Peach Pith was a life extending heavenly treasure even more valuable than the Life Bestowing Heaven Pill. The Life Bestowing Heaven Pill was only useful for Life Destruction powerhouses, but the 10,000 Year Peach Pith was actually effective for Divine Sea powerhouses. This was the greatest heavenly treasure the Asura Divine Kingdom could provide that would move the hearts of Divine Sea powerhouses.

However, Situ Haotian never thought that Shibai would only faintly smile and say, "I'm sorry, but because of the bloodline curse within my Forsaken God Clan, it's already enough to burn some expensive incense if we can manage to live out our natural lifespans. Thus, a 10,000 Year Peach Pith is useless to us..."

"Then what do you want?" Situ Haotian demanded, his complexion growing ugly.

Shibai pondered it for a moment. He said, “If you willingly hand me the throne of the Asura Divine Kingdom as well as one or two dozen million spirit essence stones, I think I may be able to consider it.”

“You are courting death!”

“Do you want to fight?” Shibai said without fear.

“You!!”

Situ Haotian raged with anger. This entire time he had been under the assumption that the Forsaken God Clan would never dare to wage war with the Asura Divine Kingdom. If blood were truly to be spilled, then while the Asura Divine Kingdom was able to wipe out the Forsaken God Clan, the price they would have to pay for this was far too great.

This dimensional realm was covered with layers upon layers of array formations and was also easily defensible. If they wished to attack it then they would probably need to pay twice the price.

To lose four or five Divine Sea powerhouses in exchange for annihilating the Forsaken God Clan, that simply wasn’t worth it.

The Asura Divine Kingdom’s national strength was far from being comparable with the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom and the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. If they lost half of their strength, then the Asura Divine Kingdom’s position in the world would become much less steady. After all, there was a massive amount of resources held within their borders.

They had a valuable dimensional realm, wood spirit jade, and all sorts of ores and treasures. Although their resources were inferior to the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom and the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s, they still had rare heavenly materials like the 10,000 Year Peach Pith. It would be impossible to defend such abundant resources over such a broad territory if they couldn’t steady themselves with a position of absolute strength.

“Shibai, I cannot understand why you would form such hatred with my Asura Divine Kingdom for a mere outsider!” Situ Haotian’s tone softened a bit. Still, letting Lin Ming go here was impossible.

“Haha, this is because I very much appreciate Little Brother Lin’s talent here. I want to help train him – isn’t that reason enough?” Shibai didn’t mention the matters concerning Emperor Argent. Otherwise, if the Argent White Sword were added onto all the other secrets on Lin Ming’s body, then that really would cause several great powers to join forces and attack the Forsaken God Clan. Even with the Forsaken God Clan’s background, they absolutely would not be able to withstand that.

However, just the sole reason of appreciating Lin Ming’s talent wasn’t a lie either. Shibai truly did see the potential within Lin Ming. If he could help in raising such a powerhouse then it would be of unimaginable benefit to the Forsaken God Clan.

The tense atmosphere in the hall had reached a deadlock. Neither side wished to start a fight but Situ Haotian couldn’t give up here either.

“Haotian, we cannot allow this little beast to freely grow here. This little beast is cunning. If he could kill our Asura Divine Kingdom’s Imperial Scholar as well as three Demon Envoys, then just what would happen if he reached Life Destruction!”

Situ Yaoxi reminded as she saw Situ Haotian begin to retreat. Indeed, disregarding the secrets and treasures that Lin Ming possessed, just the potential that he carried within him was enough for the Asura Divine Kingdom to come after him. If they didn’t grasp the chance to destroy him before he grew, then there would be no end to their troubles in the future.

“You keep on saying that I am guilty of killing that old woman called Bi Ruyu, but if it wasn’t for them chasing me down, why would I have killed them? Moreover, the third and fourth Demon Envoy both died in the 8000 Mile Black Swamp – their deaths had nothing to do with me. As for Bi Ruyu and the second Demon Envoy, I directly killed them myself, so how could you say I schemed to bring about their deaths.”

“Hahahaha! Just by yourself, you think you could manage to kill the Imperial Scholar and second Demon Envoy without any traps? Don’t make me laugh!”

The one who spoke was the Imperial Scholar that looked like a little boy. He had chased after Lin Ming with Bi Ruyu. His lips were red and his teeth were white. With his little red clothes and the pigtails hanging down his face, he simply looked like a seven or eight year old child.

Demonic path martial artists usually studied peculiar cultivation methods, and there were some like Bi Ruyu, this red-clothed little boy, or Corpsemancer that would have their bodies be influenced by them. They might look too old, too young, or even inhuman.

“You little beast, if you have the guts then come and fight me in a fair match. My Destiny Decree ranking is similar to Imperial Scholar Bi Ruyu’s. If you can block 10 of my moves without running then I’ll believe you!”

The red-clothed little boy’s words were full of provocation. As he saw that the current situation wasn’t too good, he decided to stir up Lin Ming and challenge him in a fair match. That way, even Shibai couldn’t meddle.

He was well aware that Lin Ming’s strength was at most ranked 250-280th on the Destiny Decree. Let alone 10 moves, he probably wouldn’t even be able to fend off three moves.

Lin Ming looked at this red-clothed little boy and disregarded his words. Instead, he smiled and said, “Cute little child, what is your name?”

“You!!”

The red-clothed little boy glared at Lin Ming. He had fallen into depravity while cultivating his Samsara Devil Arts, and the more he practiced it the younger his appearance became. Now, he had come to look like this. Once he had consumed a bit of his cultivation to reverse his appearance, but it wasn’t even a few dozen years before he reverted again. Now, he could only remain like this. What he loathed the most was others mocking his appearance.

Shibai laughed out loud, “Little Brother Lin, you joke too much! This little red-dressed chubby child is already over 1500 years old.”

As Shibai said the words ‘little red-dressed chubby child’, the red-clothed little boy’s expression turned blue. He didn’t dare to mock someone like Shibai. Instead, he could only ruthlessly glare at Lin Ming and grit his teeth, saying, “Lin Lanjian! Do you dare to fight with me!? I’ll consider you as having won if you can receive 10 of my moves!”

“Fight with you? Don’t you think you’re being a bit too shameless here? You’re already over 1500 years old and your cultivation is at the sixth stage of Life Destruction. Compared to you, my age isn’t even considered chump change. And yet you actually want to challenge me to a match? You really are turning more and more into a child! If you have the ability, suppress your boundary to the Revolving Core realm and then fight with me. I will accompany you! If you can receive even a single one of my moves then I’ll consider you as having won.”

Lin Ming was simply disinclined to bother about him. During his battle with Bi Ruyu, he had won, but that was against a severely wounded Bi Ruyu who was at the end of her tether, and he had even borrowed the support of the golden red lightning in order to do so, using the element of surprise to barely overcome her.

That was how things were. Lin Ming had even been grievously wounded himself to the point of vomiting blood and his organs being damaged. Luckily, he had a tenacious life force, his body was as tough as a high-grade heaven-step treasure, and he even had the Demon Emperor Armor protecting him. If he were to fight with this red-clothed little boy, forget about blocking 10 moves, he wouldn’t even be able to escape. A top 50 ranked Destiny Decree master wasn’t a joke.

“Cultivation is also a part of strength. Why should I suppress my boundary?” The red-clothed little boy said.

Suppressing his boundary to fight with Lin Ming? Ridiculous! Lin Ming was a monstrous talent that had used his late Revolving Core cultivation to enter the top 300 ranks of the

Destiny Decree. Let alone suppressing everyone within the Revolving Core realm, he could even suppress all second and third stage Life Destruction masters. To fight him with a Revolving Core cultivation was simply suicide. The red-clothed little boy certainly wouldn't do something so stupid.

Lin Ming said, "Since you don't want to suppress your boundary, then wait for me to break into Life Destruction and we'll fight again. When that time comes, all of your Asura Divine Kingdom's Life Destruction martial artists can come. No matter what their boundary or ranking is, however many come, I'll take that many!"

"What!?"

Lin Ming's words shocked everyone around him. No matter what boundary or ranking they were, however many came, he would take that many!

In particular the Asura Divine Kingdom's two Imperial Scholars, Great Demon Envoy, and even Situ Haotian's elder disciple. All of them were sixth stage Life Destruction martial artists! That was the rank that Lin Ming was speaking of with utter disdain!

This was just too contemptuous!

"You said that as long as they are my Asura Divine Kingdom's Life Destruction powerhouses, no matter what their cultivation is, they can challenge you? No matter what their Destiny Decree ranking is or how many martial artists challenge you, or even if they engage you in a continuous battle!?" Situ Haotian's elder disciple suddenly stepped forwards, his eyes blazing as he stared at Lin Ming.

"Yes!" Lin Ming frankly said, completely fearless.

It appeared that he had made this promise impulsively, but he didn't have another choice. He could see that even though Shibai was strong, the truth was that he was under considerable pressure!

The Asura Divine Kingdom would never let him go. He was already far too dangerous a threat to them. If they were to release him, they would have no end of troubles in the future.

If they really fought to the end then the Asura Divine Kingdom would use all sorts of methods. They might offer a sky high reward or even make up a rumor that he had some sort of heaven-shaking secret on him, and use these methods to find several allies before finally attacking the Forsaken God Clan together. The Forsaken God Clan was hidden away in their secluded world all year round; they had no allies and could only fight by themselves.

Lin Ming didn’t have much help on his side either. He didn’t expect a playboy Prince like Li Yifeng to be able to convince the Seven Star Divine Kingdom to fight by his side.

If this continued then the Forsaken God Clan would be ruined because of him. Lin Ming didn’t wish to see this happen. Thus, he could only shift the pressure and give the Asura Divine Kingdom a direction to aim for him instead of acting out of desperation. This would also give him a buffer of time.

Chapter 831 – Battle

Chapter 831 – Battle

…

…

…

“You really have no concept of death or danger! Do you really think you are invincible as long as you can cross Life Destruction? How ridiculous!” The one who spoke was Situ Haotian’s elder disciple – Situ Bai.

Situ Bai was not a genuine martial artist of the Situ Family Clan, but was a top talent adopted as a child and bestowed the last name Situ while also being received as Situ Haotian’s elder disciple. His Destiny Decree ranking was even higher than the Great Demon Envoy’s.

“I don’t need anyone else. After you reach Life Destruction, I, Situ Bai, will be more than enough to handle you!”

“Good. Then I’ll wait for you.” Lin Ming fervently said.

“Brother Hao, don’t be so hasty!” The Great Demon Envoy hurriedly said with a true essence sound transmission. Situ Bai didn’t understand Lin Ming, but the Great Demon Envoy did. He had suffered a great loss under Lin Ming and was well aware of the fate of those that underestimated him.

Situ Bai wanted to speak further, but at this time Situ Haotian coldly shouted, “Step back!”

“Master…”

“I said step back!”

“Yes…” Even if Situ Bai appeared unwilling to accept this, he could only withdraw.

Situ Haotian stepped forwards, his eyes shining as he stared at Lin Ming. “You want to challenge all of the Life Destruction powerhouses of my Asura Divine Kingdom by yourself?”

“Yes!” Lin Ming decisively replied as he faced Situ Haotian’s pressure.

“Little Brother Lin, you…” Shibai was bewildered. Lin Ming was simply too wild in his actions. How could a first stage Life Destruction martial artist challenge all of the Destiny Decree masters that were under the Asura Divine Kingdom?

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He said with a true essence sound transmission, “Patriarch Shibai, I thank you for all that you’ve done for me, but I cannot allow the Forsaken God Clan to withstand all of the enmity aimed at me. The consequences are too serious!”

As Shibai recognized the strong sense of conviction in Lin Ming’s voice, he said, “Do you really believe in yourself? Do you understand the top masters of the Asura Divine Kingdom?”

“I only understand a small part.” Lin Ming truthfully said. He had naturally looked over and remembered the Destiny Decree himself and understood the Life Destruction powerhouses on there that were subordinate to the Asura Divine Kingdom. But, the Destiny Decree was by no means an omniscient list. Lin Ming was sure that there were some Destiny Decree level masters that were hidden away deep within the Asura Divine Kingdom that no one was aware of.

To make this crazy promise, Lin Ming also had to take an enormous risk!

But he had to do so. In this swords drawn atmosphere, if Situ Haotian was pressured, how could Lin Ming not be pressured?

This was a gamble he made with his life on the line. The sword was already drawn but no one was willing to make concessions. If all this resulted in a stalemate, then the likely end of this would be… total war!

This was a war between two superpowers. Once they fought there would inevitably be a great loss of life as rivers of blood flowed through the land. Neither Situ Haotian, Shibai, nor Lin Ming could afford such a loss.

Taking a step back, they could avoid a total war that Divine Sea powerhouses would participate in, and instead limit it to the stage of Life Destruction level martial artists. This was a solution built from compromise.

Situ Haotian held his hands behind himself. His eyes narrowed a bit, but his vision seemed even sharper than before, as if he could see through Lin Ming!

He didn't immediately agree to this challenge, nor did he refuse it. In his mind, he was rapidly analyzing just how strong Lin Ming was.

A hundred days ago, Lin Ming had been evaluated at rank 280 on the Destiny Decree. At the time, Lin Ming's cultivation was at the peak of the late Revolving Core realm. Now, his cultivation hadn't risen, so it was impossible for him to have made a substantial breakthrough in his strength.

Even if he was a heaven-gifted talent and had also obtained a number of hidden cards in these last 100 days, his strength still shouldn't surpass rank 250-260 on the Destiny Decree. This in itself was already an extremely high evaluation.

A ranked 250-260 Destiny Decree master wasn't much at all. The Destiny Decree had several great levels within its rankings. 200, 100, 50, 30, 10, all of these were completely different stages. Even if Lin Ming were to cross the great boundary of Life Destruction and his strength were to soar astronomically, he still shouldn't rise too much.

However… Lin Ming was a monster amongst monstrous talents. He was not someone that could be judged by common sense.

The truth was that it wasn’t just Situ Haotian that couldn’t estimate Lin Ming’s strength, but even Lin Ming couldn’t understand his own strength. Demonshine also hadn’t been able to give any worthwhile advice. After all, a dual body and law cultivator like Lin Ming was extremely rare to begin with. If he were to use the power of thunder to cross Life Destruction, then in addition to his battle spirit, Heretical God Force, and all sorts of skills that were unique and great even in the Realm of the Gods, all of these factors made it so that his power levels were thrown into confusion. To estimate Lin Ming’s strength after Life Destruction and arrange him on the Destiny Decree, this was simply an impossible matter.

Moreover, Lin Ming didn’t know whether or not the Asura Divine Kingdom had any hidden super masters.

This fight was truly a gamble!

“You want to use this battle to resolve the war that could erupt between two Holy Lands?” Situ Haotian said with a coldly indifferent tone.

“That’s right! How about it? Is such a great Divine Kingdom actually unable to fight a young junior like myself?” Lin Ming was tranquil as he faced Situ Haotian’s dreadful aura.

And in this calm, Situ Haotian was able to sense the mockery behind Lin Ming’s words. This was simply despising him, and despising his Asura Divine Kingdom!

At the age of the Asura Divine Emperor, it was naturally impossible for him to be goaded into action by words. But currently, he had to admit that Lin Ming’s proposal was truly a well thought out compromise. Otherwise, even if he did stir up the other great Divine Kingdoms to join forces and attack the Forsaken God Clan with him, these so-called ‘allies’ would still demand a sky high price for showing up. Added to all the losses they would suffer in the war, the gains just weren’t worth the losses.

As the Asura Divine Emperor thought of this, he brought his hands in front of him. A faintly chilling killing intent exuded from his body. “Is this a life or death battle?”

These words meant that Situ Haotian had already agreed to this battle.

"Yes! Those martial artists that can enter the stage are limited to the Life Destruction martial artists of your Asura Divine Kingdom!"

"Good. Then it shall be as you say!" The Asura Divine Emperor agreed. Although this type of revolving battle of attrition wasn't honorable, he wouldn't send out invitations for heroes to challenge Lin Ming.

This battle concerned the national destiny of the entire Asura Divine Kingdom! Winning meant to recover the complete inheritance of the Demon Emperor. Losing meant that they would help establish a great enemy with limitless potential for the Asura Divine Kingdom. The difference in these results was massive!

Lin Ming took a deep breath and clenched his fists, his eyes shining as he stared at the Asura Divine Emperor. He had really agreed!

Lin Ming didn't know whether he could win or what his true strength would be like after crossing Life Destruction. This gamble was filled with unknown risks. Even so, Lin Ming could feel his blood boiling over with fighting spirit, seething with excitement. He wanted this battle! He wanted a battle where he could slaughter his enemies and see their warm blood hit the floor!

Agreeing to this sort of gamble was mainly to reduce the pressure on the Forsaken God Clan. But at the same time, it was also because he wanted to use this pressure to force himself past his limits!

Lin Ming looked at the Asura Divine Emperor and said, "Since this is a life or death battle… my chips are all the inheritances on my body as well as the Demon Emperor Armor. And what about you? What stake are you placing in this bet?"

This was originally an unfair battle to begin with. Lin Ming would face countless enemies alone and losing meant he would be at the Asura Divine Kingdom's mercy. But even if he won, there wouldn't be any benefits for him. Lin Ming naturally wouldn't agree to this sort of matter.

“What do you want?”

The Asura Divine Emperor wasn’t surprised. His tone of voice became increasingly calm, making others unable to guess just what he was thinking at this time.

Lin Ming pondered for a moment. He first thought of the Demon God Heartguard Mirror. As long as he could obtain it then he could complete the Demon Emperor Armor. It would become a treasure that was in no way inferior to the Cosmic Melting Furnace.

However, Lin Ming quickly decided against this.

The complete Demon Emperor Armor wouldn’t increase Lin Ming’s strength too much. It was only armor after all; it wouldn’t be good for him to rely on it too much. If so, then it would be better for him to demand heavenly materials that could increase his cultivation.

Moreover, the most important point was that the Demon God Heartguard Mirror was the honor and pride of the Asura Divine Kingdom. If was the symbol that they were the true successors to the Demon Emperor’s legacy. If the Asura Divine Kingdom were to lose such a thing, then they would become the absolute laughing stock of the entire martial world.

The Asura Divine Kingdom had announced that Lin Lanjian’s ancestors had stolen their inheritance along with the Demon Emperor Armor, causing a massive manhunt to capture him. And, if the result was that not only did they not recapture their inheritance, but they even lost the Demon God Heartguard Mirror, then wouldn’t they become the biggest joke in the world?

At that time, the Asura Divine Emperor might go mad with rage and disregard all shame to abandon his promise in front of everyone, instead choosing to suffer the losses and wage war with the Forsaken God Clan. This would not be a good result.

As Lin Ming thought of this, he came to a decision. He recorded everything he wanted onto a jade slip.

“10 jin of million year wood spirit jade, 10,000 Year Peach Pith, Dawnmist Flower, Frostfly Stone, Aldertree Spirit Water…”

Lin Ming recorded down 15 different types of materials. These past years, Lin Ming had been thoroughly studying alchemy in detail as well as researching the native plants of the Sky Spill Continent. All of these materials he listed could be found on the Sky Spill Continent but were extremely rare and precious.

With these materials he would be able to refine two miracle pills.

The first pill was a Bluedrop Heartmelting Pill. It would greatly reduce the time it would take to go from the first stage of Life Destruction to the second stage of Life Destruction.

The second pill was a Violet Electricity Heaven Ice Pill. It would be helpful in opening the fourth of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. As for completely opening the fourth of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, it was still lacking some. The body transformation path was simply far too costly in terms of resources. Even in the Realm of the Gods, wishing to collect all of the necessary materials was neither cheap nor easy.

Shua!

A white light flashed and the jade slip flew into the Asura Divine Emperor’s hand.

As the Asura Divine Emperor looked over the items Lin Ming wanted, he nearly crushed the jade slip in his hands!

He thought that Lin Ming would want the Demon God Heartguard Mirror, but he never expected that Lin Ming would choose heavenly materials instead. These things were more precious than the last! If all of them were added together, it would require seven to eight million spirit essence stones!

Moreover, many of these materials couldn’t be bought. Searching for them would also consume a massive amount of resources. The total value might be no less than 10 million spirit essence stones!

This Lin Ming was simply a greedy lion opening his jaws wide!

But in all fairness, if this were compared to losing the Demon God Heartguard Mirror, he would rather choose Lin Ming's demand instead. He looked at Lin Ming and grit his teeth, "You are quite smart. You know to avoid touching this Emperor's reverse scale while aiming for the greatest benefit for yourself. Good! I agree then!"

As Situ Haotian finished speaking, he suddenly turned to leave. The other martial artists of the Asura Divine Kingdom hurried to keep up with him. In this tense atmosphere, all of them were aware of just how on the edge Situ Haotian was.

With his strength and power, today he had actually been forced by the Forsaken God Clan and a mere late Revolving Core boy to agree to a battle that he didn't want to agree to. Everyone could imagine just how volatile his mood was at this time!

As he was walking out of the Forsaken God Clan's Realmheart Great Hall, Situ Haotian suddenly stopped. He swiveled around and coldly looked at everyone behind him.

"All of you are required to participate in this battle. Victory means endless rewards! Defeat means death!"

Chapter 832 – The Coming Storm, The Rising Tide

Chapter 832 – The Coming Storm, The Rising Tide

…

…

…

"Little Brother Lin, you were too impulsive!" Shibai helplessly said to Lin Ming after the martial artists from the Asura Divine Kingdom left. But even though he said this, he knew that the Forsaken God Clan by themselves were unable to shield Lin Ming from the wrath of the Asura Divine Kingdom. The Forsaken God Clan would need to have at least half the strength of the Seven Star Divine Kingdom before they and the Asura Divine Kingdom could tear into each other.

Lin Ming also didn't know just what his chances of victory were. He looked at Shibai and said, "As far as I know, the Asura Divine Kingdom doesn't have many top 20 ranked Destiny Decree masters, right?"

"Yes." Shibai nodded, "But that is only on the surface. No one knows exactly what the truth is. Being in the top 20 of the Destiny Decree means you have an extremely high chance of reaching the Divine Sea! A top 20 Destiny Decree master might possibly become a future Divine Sea Supreme Elder, bringing their Divine Kingdom a massive increase in their national war strength. If the status of this type of person were to be exposed, then it is possible that they would meet all sorts of hostile plots and traps while out adventuring for their own lucky chances. They might even be killed by assassins sent from the Divine Kingdoms. Because of this, only the high level figures of the Asura Divine Kingdom would know just how many top Life Destruction powerhouses they truly have.

“Situ Haotian is a cunning old fox and fastidious in his nature. He is a lion that will use his full strength to capture even a rabbit. Don’t think that he’s afraid because he reluctantly agreed to your gamble. The truth is that he would never do that unless he had grasped an over 90% chance of winning. He would rarely gamble on anything, much less a fight so important to the Asura Divine Kingdom! The Asura Divine Kingdom’s background might be beyond your imagination. But Situ Haotian will not reveal this. He will wait until the point that his enemy shows their weakness and reveals all of their hidden cards before he finally strikes out with lightning speed and defeats his opponent!”

“I understand...” Lin Ming gripped his fists. He could already foresee how difficult this battle would be. The only reason that Situ Haotian had been so reluctant in agreeing was because regardless of whether it was victory or defeat, both endings would result in exposing some of the Asura Divine Kingdom’s hidden powerhouses. All of these powerhouses were of enormous value to the Asura Divine Kingdom. It would be difficult to withstand the loss if any of them died!

“You can cross Life Destruction in peace. My Forsaken God Clan will lend you a helping hand. Also, I’ve noticed that you have a wound in your spiritual sea that hasn’t recovered yet. My Forsaken God Clan has a master skilled in curing wounds to the soul.

The Forsaken God Clan were a people that countless talents had come from. Their clansmen had a bloodline seal – the Support Sphere, that could form a force field in a certain area and use this force field to enhance a martial artist’s strength. This included endurance, recovery ability, speed, defense, and striking power. It was even possible to increase the power of one’s will, soul force, perception, and so on.

As Lin Ming thought of this Support Sphere, he remembered Jue. “Patriarch Shibai, I have a matter to speak to you about.”

“Mm?” Shibai turned around.

Lin Ming recounted Jue's story to Shibai. As Shibai listened to this he was startled. He obviously knew of a fellow clansman named Jue, but he didn't know that she had been kidnapped.

As Lin Ming saw Shibai's response, he had some questions that he couldn't help but ask, "Patriarch Shibai, I don't understand why the Forsaken God Clan hides away in this world. Moreover, since your Forsaken God Clan's background far surpasses the majority of the Sky Spill Continent's Holy Lands, how come the Northwest Great Desert would still dare to kidnap Jue? Don't they fear that this matter would be discovered by you and that you would take revenge against them?"

Shibai bitterly sighed upon hearing Lin Ming's question. He said, "It's not that we want to hide in this world, but that we find it difficult to leave..."

"Mm?"

"Our Forsaken God Clan has to bear a bloodline curse. In this dimensional realm, there are array formations that have been laid down by our people throughout the generations, capable of weakening the power of the curse. But, these array formations do not exist outside. For our clansmen, the higher their cultivation is, the stronger the curse's effects are on them. Only Xiantian realm martial artists and below can leave. As for Revolving Core and above, it is simply far too dangerous for them. They can at most leave for a few days before having to return."

"The exception is if you are like Ancestor Emperor Argent, a super powerhouse with a formidable will and a body tempered through lightning. They would be able to rely on their own powerful strength and resist the curse outside! This is also the reason why the notes he left behind are so precious to my clan."

"So it's like that..." Lin Ming realized. No wonder the Forsaken God Clan hid in their own world and the other powers didn't seem to fear them either. It was because they had no way to leave this dimensional realm.

…………

Three days later, Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, West Imperial City, at the headquarters of Destiny Grasp…

“I want three different articles of news related to the movements of the four Divine Kingdoms…” A martial artist wearing a bamboo hat put a bag of spirit essence stones on the counter of Destiny Grasp.

A middle-aged man behind the counter lazily passed the bamboo hat man three cards.

As the man flipped through them, he was dazed as he read through the second card.

“The 280th Destiny Decree ranked Lin Lanjian has closed up to attack Life Destruction, and will challenge all Life Destruction masters of the Asura Divine Kingdom?”

This was shocking news!

The Forsaken God Clan, Lin Lanjian, crossing Life Destruction!

Lin Lanjian was known as the highest eternally rare talent underneath the heavens. With his late Revolving Core cultivation he had managed to rank on the Destiny Decree. If he were to cross Life Destruction, just what level would his combat strength rise to?

The bamboo hat man sucked in a deep breath. “I can’t miss an awesome event like this!”

This news quickly passed through every information channel. At the start it was a secret, then it became ordinary news, and finally it became common knowledge known by almost everyone!

The battle would take place in three months. Three months from now, regardless of whether Lin Lanjian could break through Life Destruction, the fight would begin. Moreover, this was a cutthroat life or death struggle!

“Lin Lanjian has finally declared war on the Asura Divine Kingdom! He was being hunted all this time, but now he has actually launched a counterattack!”

“I think this is a bit strange. Why would the Asura Divine Kingdom agree to Lin Lanjian’s demands? With their ability, couldn’t they just directly kill Lin Lanjian?”

Destiny Grasp’s information didn’t mention the Forsaken God Clan protecting Lin Ming. This caused many martial artists to be puzzled.

“There have to be reasons we’re not aware of. But don’t you think it’s impossible for Lin Lanjian to win this battle? Such an unfair match, could it have been suggested by the Asura Divine Kingdom? Lin Lanjian must have been forced to agree. Even though there’s no hope, he wouldn’t give up. Think about it. Even though he is known as the number one extraordinary talent of the Sky Spill Continent, the Asura Divine Kingdom’s background is still too deep. There wasn’t a limit of opponents placed on this match. Even though Lin Lanjian is strong, it’s impossible for him to fight a continuous battle of attrition!”

“Indeed. How could anyone win if there’s no limit to the number of opponents?”

The uproar became increasingly loud, like a coming storm, a rising tide. Not only did the four Divine Kingdoms hear of this, but even the surrounding Holy Lands, sects, and smaller countries also heard this news.

The number one rare talent of the Sky Spill Continent had challenged all the Life Destruction masters of the Asura Divine Kingdom. This grand event captured the attention of the entire continent.

Many martial artists crossed the hundreds of thousands of miles to come to the dimensional realm where the Forsaken God Clan lived. And at this time, the normally closed off Forsaken God Clan had opened their doors wide to the world, allowing all martial artists who came to enter. In Shibai’s mind, this battle naturally needed as many witnesses as possible and needed to be known of throughout the entire continent.

Otherwise, even if Lin Ming won, the stronger Asura Divine Kingdom might renege on their promises.

Chapter 833 – Situ Yaoyue

Chapter 833 – Situ Yaoyue

…

…

…

From the time the gauntlet had been laid down to the start of the battle, there was around three months. Lin Ming wasn't anxious. Normally, a martial artist would need around half a month of time to cross the first stage of Life Destruction. Lin Ming estimated that 40 days would be enough.

As for the first month and a half of time, that was mainly used to restore the wound in his soul as well as ease his mind, adjusting his mental state in addition to meditating on the Concept of Thunder jade slip that the Eightfall Thunder Emperor had left behind.

Breaking through the first stage of Life Destruction was an extremely dangerous event for Lin Ming. He would need to be in his top condition for that.

As time passed, more and more martial artists began arriving at the dimensional realm, and the Forsaken God Clan welcomed them all with open arms. Every martial artist at the Houtian realm or higher would only need to provide a valid form of identification before being allowed inside.

But later, even though the dimensional realm that the Forsaken God Clan inhabited was vast, it still became a bit crowded, requiring a few restrictions to be placed on the entry requirements.

"That area is where the Asura Divine Kingdom's martial artists are staying."

Within the dimensional realm, several martial artists pointed at a large black tower that floated in the skies.

This over 200 foot tall pagoda was suspended high in the air with black light shimmering all around it, releasing a formidable field of energy. A weaker martial artist felt a tremendous pressure when they approached. This caused the true essence in their bodies to run amok, forcing them to step back.

“The Asura Divine Kingdom is really sending a message that they want to eat up Lin Lanjian. They actually set up their base just 10 miles away from the Elders Palace. That black tower in itself is a type of dwelling type treasure. It can be stored in a spatial ring, and once taken out it can grow by hundreds of feet; it is extremely convenient.”

As everyone was speaking, a team of black-clothed martial artists suddenly flew into the skies, silent like a pack of black ghosts. The man at the head was wearing black robes, and as he stepped on the air barefoot, his handsome and elegant appearance combined with his long black hair that fluttered in the wind unexpectedly gave him a somewhat ethereal flavor.

His aura was immeasurably deep, like a vast ocean. All of the martial artists present weren’t able to guess his cultivation.

“Who is that? He’s too horrifying. Just by looking at him I feel as if I’ve seen a mountain peak that I can never reach.” A middle Revolving Core martial artist said with a tinge of fear.

Generally speaking, a middle Revolving Core martial artist could see the cultivation of a high stage Life Destruction martial artist, as long as they didn’t use some secret method to conceal it.

But that handsome man that flew up just now obviously wasn’t covering up his dantian. Still, no one could see just what realm he had reached.

“Is… that a Divine Sea powerhouse? The Asura Divine Kingdom has actually sent over a Divine Sea Supreme Elder?”

“He is not at the Divine Sea, definitely not!” A late Revolving Core martial artist shook his head. “I can vaguely make out that man’s cultivation. He is still at Life Destruction. If I’m not wrong, then he is one of the Asura Divine Kingdom’s Ascetics. It’s highly likely his is the one ranked number 12 on the Destiny Decree, Situ Luosha!”

“Situ Luosha…”

As the martial artists heard this guess, there was a collective gasp. In the Asura Divine Kingdom, besides masters like the Demon Envoys and Imperial Scholars, there were also Ascetics. These talents were the top masters of the Asura Divine Kingdom.

Demon Envoys and Imperial Scholars usually had to perform a variety of tasks issued forth by the Asura Divine Kingdom. They were responsible for managing the country and this would inevitably cause them to waste some of their energy, making it so that they couldn’t wholeheartedly devote their time to their cultivation.

Thus, Imperial Scholars and Demon Envoys usually never ranked past the top 30 on the Destiny Decree. There were even many of them, such as Bi Ruyu or the red-clothed little boy, that were already 1000-2000 years old and had simply no chance of breaking through to the Divine Sea realm. If these people died, the Asura Divine Kingdom wouldn’t miss them too much.

But an Ascetic was different. They were extraordinary talents amongst extraordinary talents. Their only mission in life was to cultivate well and to break through to the Divine Sea!

The Asura Divine Kingdom had invested a massive amount of resources into every one of these individuals. Losing one would be a backbreaking loss, but losing six or seven of them was the same as losing a Divine Sea Supreme Elder.

An Ascetic’s strength could be said to be immeasurably deep. For instance, the current Situ Luosha was ranked twelfth on the Destiny Decree, but the truth was that this was only a ranking formed from the estimation of Destiny Grasp. Situ Luosha had not fought for over

10 years, and his last match had also been a Destiny Decree master, moreover their ranking hadn't been low either. But that person had still died to a single palm strike from Situ Luosha, as if they were nothing more than an ant.

After such a long lapse of time, rumors spread that Situ Luosha was nearing the Divine Sea boundary. There was even a 30-40% chance he would make a breakthrough in the next 20 years.

At that time, Situ Luosha would be a little over 100 years old.

Those powerhouses that truly broke through to the Divine Sea mostly broke through at around a hundred years of age. As for those that broke through at several hundred or even a thousand years of age, that was usually completely dependent on whether or not they found any lucky chances.

And the strength of the people who made a breakthrough this way would often be far inferior to those Divine Sea powerhouses who made a breakthrough with their own strength. Thus, it could be imagined just how terrifying Situ Luosha actually was!

"Situ Luosha has arrived, and they haven't even bothered to conceal his whereabouts. Perhaps... perhaps this might mean that the Asura Divine Kingdom has not only Situ Luosha, but even some other unknown Ascetic that's been hidden away. That person would be the Asura Divine Kingdom's true hidden card!"

"If they are even bringing out their Ascetics, the Asura Divine Kingdom is really placing everything they have in this battle. I feel that Lin Lanjian's chances aren't looking too good..."

"Not even that. I feel that he..." The martial artist paused, looking towards the area where the Forsaken God Clan was with a bit of fear in his eyes.

"Consider this conversation over. Anything else we say is just absurd nonsense without meaning. This situation has already surpassed the scope of our understanding. For praying mantises to talk about whether a tiger or lion is more powerful, there simply isn't any significance to that at all."

"That's right, the disparity is just too great..." The martial artist sighed with emotion. Everyone here was a martial artist, yet how could the disparity be so great?

………………

At this time, on the highest level of the black tower, a handsome, ethereal man was kneeling on the floor, respectfully greeting Situ Haotian. He said with a magnetic voice, "Divine Emperor Your Majesty, Luosha has arrived to carry out your orders."

"Mm, well done. You should already know the general situation. Your match right now is only a single first stage Life Destruction martial artist named Lin Lanjian. Do not underestimate him because of his lower cultivation. His life is tough and he is extremely strong! This battle against him may be difficult for you, but it will also be the best tool to sharpen yourself!"

Situ Haotian sat at the head seat, the atmosphere around him commanding and domineering. When he said that Lin Ming's life was 'tough', he didn't mean that his defensive abilities were high, but rather that he saw Lin Ming as having the life and destiny of a Peerless Emperor. This sort of person was extremely difficult to kill. They would often survive even the direst of deathtraps set for them, giving those that wanted to kill them nothing but headaches.

"Everything shall be as Your Majesty desires. Luosha will not look down on any enemy." The black-robed man's expression was calm, his eyes shining like black gems in the night. From his gaze, Situ Haotian could see a solemn and earnest light. This made him very satisfied.

"This battle greatly concerns your destiny and the momentum you've accumulated throughout your entire life. If you can win then you will reach the Divine Sea within 10 years! But if you lose, this will cause a tremendous setback in your road of reaching the Divine Sea. Whether or not you can overcome this challenge will all depend on you!"

"Luosha understands!"

"Good! You may leave now." Situ Haotian waved his hand and took a deep breath. His tranquil expression contained a sharp energy to it as if it were the calm before a storm.

"Haotian, you even called out Luosha! Aren't you being too careful about this? He was even in the crucial stage of his closing up period." After Luosha left, a slightly older woman walked out from a side room, her voice tinted with dissatisfaction.

Situ Haotian looked at his own elder sister and lightly humphed, "Luosha must come, otherwise who will fight Lin Lanjian? Not only will I call Luosha but I will even summon Yaoyue."

"You even want to bring Yaoyue here? Are you joking with me? Not only is she closing up right now, but her status in itself is a great secret. Do you want everyone on this continent to know of her? Do you want her to stay in the Asura Divine Kingdom, never going out for adventuring or experience before she reaches the Divine Sea? And for what? Dealing with a boy that would just have broken through to the first stage of Life Destruction? Don't forget that this is a war of attrition with endless opponents. We can simply grind and grind and grind him to death!"

"Yaoxi! My Asura Divine Kingdom has already suffered two great losses under this Lin Lanjian! And what progress have we made? I have already said that Lin Lanjian has the destiny of a Peerless Emperor. Even if you think you've laid down a flawless killing trap, he can still escape safely as before! To deal with this sort of person you must put out a power several times his total strength and kill him with absolute, overwhelming speed and power! Otherwise there will be no end to our troubles in the future!

"This battle is too important to the future of my Asura Divine Kingdom. We cannot afford to lose nor can we lose. If Lin Lanjian dares to accept this revolving battle of attrition then he certainly has a special method to deal with it. We must guarantee not only the quantity of powerhouses we send out but also the quality. This is all in order to make it so that victory is guaranteed! If it wasn't for the fact that the Forsaken God Clan's background is too deep, I would rather launch a national war!"

Situ Haotian's tone revealed a firm and decisive feeling to it.

"You would rather start a national war? You are mad!" Situ Yaoxi said with a completely unbelievable expression. She simply didn't agree with Situ Haotian's opinion. "Who cares about the life of some Peerless Emperor? Just because you suffered two losses you have become frightened all of a sudden? No matter what, you are still the Divine Emperor and all decisions are made by you. But let me give you a warning. Yaoyue is the most magnificent talent that our bloodline has seen for the last thousand years. Her future potential is limitless. Not only will she reach the Divine Sea, but she will also become an extraordinary individual among all Divine Sea powerhouses. She even has a chance of inheriting your throne in the future. Since you must interrupt her seclusion then you must pay her back with enough resources!"

"Humph, if Yaoyue can win this battle, it is a good fortune for her. To defeat someone with the life of Peerless Emperor will help accumulate her own momentum and carve the confidence and destiny she needs into her bones. This is not something that mere closed door seclusion can ever compare with."

As Situ Haotian spoke to here he stood up, no longer wanting to speak nonsense with his elder sister.

He walked to the window and looked towards the starry skies. In this dimensional realm, the Laws approached that of the boundless universe. The stars here could also produce light, and the falling rays didn't diminish either.

As he looked up at the dazzling stars above him, Situ Haotian began speaking to himself. "Lin Lanjian, you might be the most splendid star that the Sky Spill Continent has ever seen. If I knew earlier that you would be able to obtain the protection of the Forsaken God Clan, then I would rather have given up the Demon Emperor's inheritances than form enmity with you. But what a pity, swords have already left their sheaths and there is no longer a path of retreat for any of us, and now I must destroy you."

………..

Ten days later, the dimensional realm of the Forsaken God Clan could be called a gathering of heroes. Divine Kingdom Princes, High Princes, High Successors, as well as fifth-grade sects and Holy Lands with their direct disciples and Elders and more had arrived.

This was a sort of battle that had never appeared in the history of the Sky Spill Continent. A youth with a mere first stage Life Destruction cultivation had challenged all the Life Destruction powerhouses of a Divine Kingdom!

This was simply an unrivalled, never before seen talent.

"Brother Lin, are you feeling some pressure?" In a nearby restaurant, a handsome and sharp-eared young man said with a pleasant smile.

Lin Ming was stunned as he looked at the three heroic young elites that had appeared in front of him. They were actually Lan Xin, Feng Shen, and Duanmu Qun!

Chapter 834 – Breakthrough, Begin

Chapter 834 – Breakthrough, Begin

…

…

…

"It's really you guys! I never thought that it would be a year before we'd meet again." Lin Ming said with some feeling in his voice. He glanced at Duanmu Qun and the others' cultivations. Duanmu Qun had reached the peak of a three star Fey King, and was just a step away from becoming a four star Fey King. Because the Fey practiced different cultivation systems from humans, a four star Fey King was equal to a second stage Life Destruction martial artist.

As for Lan Xin and Feng Shen, they had smoothly stepped into the three star Fey King realm. This cultivation was considered stronger than the late Revolving Core but just a tad weaker than the first stage of Life Destruction.

All three of them were Emperor level talents and they were much older than Lin Ming. From the point they met until now, none of them lost to Lin Ming in terms of cultivation. It was just that their total comprehensive combat strength was inferior.

"That's right! It's nice to see you again too. This last year we've been exploring all sorts of danger zones in the four Divine Kingdoms. Although we haven't obtained much, we have still experienced a number of life or death crises as well as having dueled with many heroic young elites of the Sky Spill Continent. We've lost some and also won some and managed to gain some insights. Brother Lin, do you plan on returning to the Holy Demon Continent in the next few years?"

Duanmu Qun spoke these words with a true essence sound transmission. When he heard of Lin Lanjian, he had a premonition that this youth was likely to be Lin Ming. Now that he was able to confirm his guess, he was naturally aware that Lin Ming's status was sensitive, and the Holy Demon Continent was also a secret that couldn't be easily revealed to others. Otherwise, if others knew that Lin Ming had a method to reach another continent, that would cause unnecessary trouble for him.

"Holy Demon Continent… indeed, I would like to go back some time."

Lin Ming had always remembered the Road of Emperor. That was a place he wanted to return to, but his strength was simply too lacking at the moment.

"I plan on returning in a few years. You can stay near the Forsaken God Clan. If I plan on returning then I will leave behind a message in the Forsaken God Clan."

The Sky Spill Continent's central region was an extremely vast area. Even if one had special sound transmitting talismans, it was still impossible to send a message millions of miles away, not to mention that the central region was over a dozen million miles wide. Wanting to find someone with a sound transmitting talisman wouldn't be easy at all, so leaving behind a sound transmission mark really wasn't too meaningful.

"Good, we also wanted to take that time and return in a few years. We've made a great deal of harvests during this adventure in the Sky Spill Continent." Lan Xin said with a bright smile. Broadening one's horizon was extremely important to the growth of a martial artist, even if she didn't have many lucky chances in the meantime.

"Brother Lin, I would like to know how confident you are in this battle. I heard that the Asura Divine Kingdom has already called over Ascetics as well as some hidden talents." The previously silent Feng Shen suddenly said. In this past year he had gained a much deeper understanding of the martial artists in the Sky Spill Continent's central region as well as just how terrifying the deep background of the Asura Divine Kingdom was. Even though he was well aware of just how strong Lin Ming was, Feng Shen couldn't help but feel some worry for his friend.

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He shook his head and said, “I have no way to estimate my chances after breaking through Life Destruction, or just what degree my strength will reach. I also don’t know how powerful the Asura Divine Kingdom’s masters will be. I can’t say that I’m not feeling pressured; otherwise I wouldn’t have taken the chance to come to this restaurant to relax. This is a gamble where I don’t even know the cards in my own hands. Of course, the Asura Divine Kingdom is also the same. No one will know just who the winner will be until the last moment.”

As the several of them were speaking, a burst of heavenly music sounded out in the air. As they looked outside the window they could see that a golden divine carriage was slowly flying in the air, being pulled by two majestic vicious beats. One side of this divine carriage was engraved with a two handled furnace, and the other side was carved with the character ‘Yun’ in flourishing writing.

The appearance of this divine carriage quickly caught everyone’s attention.

“That’s the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s divine carriage!”

“The ‘Yun’ character… that should be the Nine Furnace Crown Prince, Yang Yun! Even Yang Yun has come!”

“That’s understandable. I’ve heard the rumors that Yang Yun has taken a liking towards Lin Lanjian and appreciates his talents very much. For the likes of a battle that has never been recorded in the ancient texts, he would certainly want to come experience it!”

Yang Yun had an unshakeable status in the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. He hadn’t fought in over 10 years, and his cultivation was also hidden. No one knew just what sort of boundary he had reached.

Some rumors said that Yang Yun had been stuck at a bottleneck and his cultivation hadn’t improved in a long time.

However, some other rumors said that Yang Yun’s strength was fathomless, and that he was deliberately concealing it.

As for what the truth was, no one knew.

“Yang Yun…” Duanmu Qun’s eyebrows shot up. He said with a true essence sound transmission, “I have seen this person before. He is quite a fearful person and I don’t wish to see him again for now. Brother Lin, we shall be on our way first.” After Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin decided a method to contact each other, they bid their farewells.

The divine carriage shined with a golden light. A young man with a gentle temperament surrounded himself in true essence as he floated down from the skies.

“I didn’t expect that even Crown Prince Your Highness would also personally make a visit. I am truly honored.” Lin Ming went out to greet Yang Yun, secretly observing him in the meantime. Yang Yun hadn’t changed at all. His dantian was still covered by a layer of mist and it was impossible to discern his cultivation.

Even though Lin Ming had a formidable divine sense, he still couldn’t see just how deep Yang Yun’s cultivation was.

According to popular rumors, Yang Yun had been born to a beautiful concubine in the Nine Furnace Divine Emperor’s harem. That woman’s martial talent had been ordinary, and Yang Yun had also showed an ordinary martial arts talent, nothing special at all. But at 12 years of age, his martial arts potential suddenly skyrocketed in a stunning style, and at that point his ascension became unstoppable.

In the martial arts world, this sort of situation was relatively minor but it wasn’t too rare. For instance, someone like the Eightfall Thunder Emperor had both ups and down in his life and had managed to reach great heights in his future.

“Haha, Brother Lin, there is no need to be polite. I really didn’t expect for Brother Lin to show such bravery and challenge all the Life Destruction powerhouses of a Divine Kingdom at just the first stage of Life Destruction.”

Lin Ming said, “I was forced into a dead end. My only choice was to walk into the jaws of death and hope to be reborn from there.”

“Mm… The Asura Divine Kingdom is quite determined. If Brother Lin can truly win this unrivalled battle then I can guarantee that the Asura Divine Kingdom will no longer look to trouble Brother Lin anymore.”

Yang Yun solemnly promised. Lin Ming laughed and said, “Thank you for your good intentions Brother Yang.”

If Lin Ming could win this battle and cross another two to three stages of Life Destruction under the shelter of the Forsaken God Clan, then at that time even if he revealed some other secrets he had such as the Cosmic Melting Furnace, Burning Star Flame, or Nine Heavens Thunder Soul, those old Divine Sea fellows would no longer covet his treasures. This was the status and deterrence brought by strength.

Now there were already many powers thinking to win over Lin Ming.

Yang Yun deeply glanced at Lin Ming’s dantian and changed the topic, “But before then, if Brother Lin wishes to cross Life Destruction, it might not be as easy as you think. Actually, I’ve prepared a small gift for Brother Lin.”

Yang Yun took out a wood spirit jade box. After opening it, Lin Ming was bewildered as he saw what was inside.

Inside this wood spirit jade box were two God Transforming Pills!

A God Transforming Pill was extremely precious. It could increase the chances for a Life Destruction powerhouse to enter the Divine Sea. The Asura Divine Kingdom had once offered a single God Transforming Pill as the reward for capturing Lin Ming.

This sort of pill was simply wasted as a gift for a Revolving Core martial artist to break into Life Destruction.

Lin Ming didn’t think that Yang Yun would gift him a God Transforming Pill. Moreover, he had even given him two! Did he know that the difficulty of his attempt to cross Life

Destruction was different from a normal martial artist? Otherwise, why would he gift him two God Transforming Pills that only high stage Life Destruction powerhouses would use?

Lin Ming couldn't help but think this.

Yang Yun didn't seem affected. He faintly smiled and said, "A minor gift. I hope this can help Brother Lin safely cross Life Destruction. Please, accept it."

Two God Transforming Pills would truly help Lin Ming be much more confident in crossing Life Destruction. But as he saw Yang Yun's expression, he couldn't help but feel something strange in his heart. "Brother Yang's gift is too heavy; I can't accept this."

Even in an alchemy Holy Land like the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, it would still take at least 100,000 spirit essence stones to produce a single God Transforming Pill. If it were released into the public, it would sell for at least 300,000 spirit essence stones! Otherwise, why would the Asura Divine Kingdom use this as a reward?

Even so, the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom placed strict limits on the sale of the God Transforming Pill. No one wanted to help train the masters of enemies.

Two God Transforming Pills was enough to cause any high stage Life Destruction martial artist on the Destiny Decree to go mad with jealousy. Lin Ming didn't wish to owe such a favor to Yang Yun.

Yang Yun seemed to have seen through Lin Ming's thoughts. He slightly chuckled and said, "Brother, there is no need to refuse. I already know that you will need this. When a martial artist crosses Life Destruction, it is just like a vicious beast crossing heavenly tribulation. The more powerful the vicious beast, the more difficult their tribulation will become, because the heavens simply don't wish to accommodate them. If Brother Lin crosses Life Destruction, it is the same as a divine flood dragon turning into a True Dragon. Once you cross the dragon gate and soar into the skies, you will certainly soar through the world unhindered."

As Yang Yun spoke, Lin Ming's suspicions grew even heavier. He maintained his calm and said, "Humans are different from vicious beasts… vicious beasts must undergo divine tribulation because their cultivation defies the heavens, and thus the heavens will not accommodate them. A more powerful vicious beast will naturally find their tribulation harder to cross. But a martial artist's Life Destruction is to disintegrate the mortal body and reform it from the beginning. Rather, the more solid of a foundation a martial artist has, the easier it will be for them to cross Life Destruction."

"Haha, I know, but sometimes there are people that are similar to vicious beasts." Yang Yun said with a laugh as if he were speaking randomly. Lin Ming's eyebrows knit together; he always felt that Yang Yun had some other intent.

"Brother Lin, this is only two God Transforming Pills, it's not much of a favor at all. If you feel guilty in your heart then consider me having lent you them. After you win your battle you will surely obtain a great harvest. At that time, you can easily repay me 400,000 spirit essence stones!"

Yang Yun's manner was very easy and carefree. Lin Ming could only put away the suspicious feeling he had and accept the God Transforming Pills. These were truly something that he needed at this time. To him, crossing Life Destruction was a tremendous challenge. Failure was equal to a death sentence!

Thus, even if these two God Transforming Pills could only increase his chances by a few percent, he was still willing to buy them with a credit of 400,000 spirit essence stones.

It was only that he felt that Yang Yun was increasingly mysterious.

After Yang Yun, more heroic young elites arrived, including even the Seven Star Divine Kingdom's Li Yifeng.

"Haha, this place is so lively! I really came at the right time! I was confined for such a long time that I felt I was going to suffocate to death!" To be able to participate in such a never before seen event, Li Yifeng rubbed his hands, even more excited than before. Because he had stirred up so much trouble as he was out ‘adventuring’, and also did so much mischief, he had been reported by his fiancée and was then punished with confinement again. This time, he had used the excuse of wishing to ‘learn by observation’ and managed to sneak his way out. Naturally, he was very happy.

“I have no idea who this Lin Lanjian is or where he came from, but he’s even crazier than me.”

Li Yifeng loudly said. Even though he was also at the peak of the late Revolving Core, he could only barely contend with a Life Destruction powerhouse.

“He is a Destiny Decree master, of course he’s crazier than you.” The young maid by his side mercilessly said. Although she thought highly of Li Yifeng in her heart, she knew the disparity between an ordinary Life Destruction powerhouse and a Destiny Decree master.

The two of them didn’t realize that Lin Lanjian was Lin Ming. The main reason for this was that they had been punished with confinement and didn’t hear much news from the outside. But, after learning that such a mystical fight was about to erupt that was unprecedented since ancient times, both of them couldn’t wait to watch it. They had no further information about Lin Lanjian, such as his cultivation method or weapons he used. Otherwise, they would have discovered similarities with Lin Ming and naturally formed an association.

“I apologize, but Sir Lin Lanjian has already closed up to attack Life Destruction. He is not taking any guests!”

In front of the Elders Palace, two guards icily responded to Li Yifeng and the young maid. Li Yifeng loved to meet heroes of the world, so he naturally wouldn’t miss out on Lin Lanjian. However, he had been a step too late.

“He’s already closed up?” Li Yifeng’s eyes lit up. If this were true then after gathering energy for two or three days, Lin Lanjian would detonate all of the energy within him and officially attack Life Destruction. That would truly be a grand event!

Chapter 835 – All Treasures Gathered

Chapter 835 – All Treasures Gathered

…

…

…

Shibai had opened wide the gates to the Forsaken God Clan, allowing the heroes of the world to observe this battle. This was so they could all be witnesses to avoid a situation where the Asura Divine Kingdom began to desperately lash out once they lost.

But now, more and more heroes from the entire continent arrived in piling droves. Many of these were the famed Elders of large sects and the heroic young elites known throughout the Divine Kingdoms. Every single one of these characters was a talent of their era.

So many people gathered together wasn't necessarily beneficial for Lin Ming to break through to Life Destruction. When a martial artist was crossing Life Destruction, that was an extremely dangerous point when they were at their most vulnerable. This was why they needed to maintain their top mental state throughout. If there was too much external influence then it could possibly create a negative pressure on the martial artist instead.

These days, Shibai could faintly feel that Lin Ming's process of crossing Life Destruction wouldn't be as easy as he thought it would be. Otherwise, why would he accept two God Transforming Pills from Yang Yun? And use more than 10 days to recover his soul wound and adjust his state?

No matter what it was, everything would become clear in these next three days…

Shibai looked at the sky and then walked towards where Lin Ming was closed up.

This was the best seclusion spot in the entire Forsaken God Clan. It was built in an extremely firm and defensible great tower. This tower was located at the very center of the dimensional realm's spirit veins, and the heaven and earth origin energy was incomparably pure and rich here.

Not just that, but there were layers upon layers of protective array formations surrounding this seclusion spot. There was a very long history behind these arrays. 100,000 years ago, an ancestor of the Forsaken God Clan had laid it down; it was called the Sky Lock Array. Once it was activated, it would have ghostly and immeasurable functions. If a peerless powerhouse were to manage it then it could even trap gods and seal immortals.

Although the current power of the array wasn't as glorious as it used to be, with the Divine Sea powerhouses of the Forsaken God Clan managing it, it could resist the joint attack of six or seven Divine Sea powerhouses.

It was hard to defend against the thoughts and desires of others. Shibai had activated this Sky Lock Array in order to guarantee that Lin Ming would have absolute safety when he crossed Life Destruction.

Unfortunately, arranging this array formation required specific array flags, and the method of producing these array flags had already been lost to time. The entire Forsaken God Clan only had four of these array flags. Otherwise, if they could cover up the entire dimensional realm in the Sky Lock Array, Shibai wouldn't even fear waging war with the Asura Divine Kingdom.

"Patriarch!"

A guard immediately saluted as he saw Shibai.

Shibai stepped straight into the seclusion chamber. There were a massive number of runes drawn into the ground here aimed at increasing the heaven and earth origin energy, as well as secret techniques that could increase the chances of one successfully crossing Life Destruction.

Lin Ming sat at the center of these runes. Two old men stood on the left and right of him, acting as his protectors.

These two people were both proficient in Support Spheres. One could increase a martial artist's physical strength and the other could enhance a martial artist's soul force and will. These two people were carefully selected by Shibai to serve as Lin Ming's help when crossing Life Destruction.

There were thousands of spirit essence stones set around Lin Ming, as well as five jade boxes of various sizes. One of these boxes contained the two God Transforming Pills lent by Yang Yun.

Lin Ming was saving his final strength.

"Patriarch Shibai." Lin Ming felt Shibai arrive and began rising to greet him.

"No need to stand up!" Shibai saw Lin Ming's solemn expression and was able to confirm his own guess. It seemed that Lin Ming's crossing of Life Destruction would not be easy at all. He didn't ask why it would be so difficult for Lin Ming to cross Life Destruction, but instead waved his hand and then took out an ordinary-looking wooden box from his spatial ring. Upon opening it, a translucent crystal gem was revealed, around the size of half a pinky finger. But as this crystal gem appeared, it actually bloomed with a brilliant radiance as if the Laws of the world were changing around it.

"Top grade spirit essence stone?"

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. He was only able to vaguely confirm this.

There were three ranks of spirit essence stones – ordinary, superior, and top grade.

Superior spirit essence stones were already rare. A superior spirit essence stone was equivalent to 300 ordinary spirit essence stones. And top grade spirit essence stones were far, far rarer.

A top grade spirit essence stone was the source of a spirit essence stone mine; they had basically all but vanished from the world. It was already amazing if an entire spirit essence stone mine could produce a single top grade spirit essence stone. This was a treasure that even a Divine Sea Supreme Elder would turn berserk with greed for. It was enormously beneficial to help a martial artist make a breakthrough.

Shibai said, “It’s only a small piece. It’s around equal to one-sixth of a standard top grade spirit essence stone.”

“Patriarch Shibai, this is…”

“Little Brother Lin, don’t be pressured. I already feel that your aura isn’t too stable. This isn’t like you at all…” Shibai gently patted Lin Ming’s shoulder.

As Lin Ming approached his breakthrough, it would be a blatant lie to say that he wasn’t feeling the pressure around him. The Heretical God Sprout had stored the power of thunder from the golden red lightning 90 miles deep into the Thunder Dominion. The reason that Emperor Argent’s relics hadn’t been discovered for tens of thousands of years at that 90 mile Thunder Dominion region was not because those Divine Sea Supreme Elders couldn’t find them, but rather that they didn’t have a method to investigate the 90 mile Thunder Dominion area. From this it could be seen just how horrifyingly powerful the golden red lightning was. If enough of this lightning was gathered, then it could slay even a Divine Sea Supreme Elder.

If Lin Ming were to detonate this energy within him to disintegrate his body and be reborn into his spirit body, then the risks could be imagined!

Moreover, he had never heard of this situation in the Realm of the Gods before; there was no previous path taken to guide him. The martial artists in the Realm of the Gods that dual cultivated body and law crossed Life Destruction by having enough heavenly materials with them. They weren’t like Lin Ming, relying on controlling a devastating and ruinous power.

In this situation, how could Lin Ming not be earnest?

“This is for you, to ensure that you are absolutely successful.” Shibai said as he passed the wooden box into Lin Ming’s hands.

Lin Ming held onto the box with both hands and looked at the top grade spirit essence stone within. The surface of this crystal gem seemed to be covered entirely in a mysterious pattern; it had a faint hint of the charm that the chaos stone in Timeworn Phoenix City had. Although it was far inferior to the exquisite and profound nature of the chaos stone, it still proved just how extraordinary this top grade spirit essence stone was.

Just one-sixth of a top grade spirit essence stone had such an effect. No wonder it could cause even Divine Sea Supreme Elders to fight for it.

Before Lin Ming could speak, Shibai interrupted him and said, “Don’t decline. The value of the Argent White Sword you returned is far more than the value of this stone. Moreover, I have a selfish reason for helping you. Your current status could be called mighty to the point of being unapproachable. Once you pass this trial, you will surely cross into the Divine Sea! When that time comes, I fear you may quickly become the highest under the heavens. But as for me, I am doomed to a much shorter life, while you will live for 10,000 years. I only hope that perhaps you could look after my Forsaken God Clan in the future.”

As Shibai spoke, there was neither sadness nor sorrow in his eyes. In his entire life he had always calmly and confidently faced his Forsaken God Clan’s bloodline curse.

Outside of the Forsaken God Clan, when martial artist arrived at old age and neared the end of their life, they would go frantic in searching for medicines to extend their lifespan, not hesitating to pay any sky high price. But the martial artists of the Forsaken God Clan did not have this necessity. There were extremely few of their clansmen who could ever live out their natural lifespan.

Lin Ming sighed over the unjust destiny that the Forsaken God Clan had to bear. He had already firmed his resolve that in the future, when he had the strength, he would truly enter the Eternal Demon Abyss and Sea of Miracles. Not the 1000 mile forbidden zone or the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, but the true Eternal Demon Abyss and the true Sea of Miracles. He would explore and find out just what secrets the absolute life forbidden zones of the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent held.

The goddess that slumbered, the heart of the Great Emperor that remained beating for 100,000 years, the God Beast-like existence that spanned thousands of miles, Lin Ming wanted to explore all of these mysteries. If possible, he even wished to unravel the bloodline curse of the Forsaken God Clan.

“Thank you.”

Lin Ming said these two words and decisively accepted the small top grade spirit essence stone. If favors were owed they could be returned, but if he lost his life then he would have nothing at all.

At this time, there was no need to be hypocritical.

Lin Ming took in a deep breath, opening the jade boxes in front of him one at a time. Among these were two God Transforming Pills, a dozen or so sea serpent crystals that he had refined in the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, as well as… the heaven-step Demon God Bone that Lin Ming had obtained from the 1000 mile forbidden zone of the Eternal Demon Abyss!

In addition with the golden red lightning contained in the Heretical God Sprout, this was Lin Ming’s complete capital for attacking Life Destruction!

As Shibai looked at all the various heavenly treasures in front of Lin Ming, he was alarmed. These items were…

He deeply looked at Lin Ming. He had thought that the two God Transforming Pills Yang Yun had given Lin Ming were already precious enough, but now it seemed as if the treasures Lin Ming brought out were even above the God Transforming Pills. In particular that pigeon egg-sized green glass bead. The energy contained within that glass bead was actually several times that of the top grade spirit essence stone he had gifted Lin Ming. It was basically equal to a complete top grade spirit stone, with much more to spare!

By the heavens! Just what sort of treasure was this!?!?

Shibai searched through his memories but couldn't think of any treasure like this.

As a martial artist of the Sky Spill Continent, Shibai only knew of wood spirit jade; he had never seen a Demon God Bone before.

Shibai looked at Lin Ming and then at the items in front of him. These were only from four jade boxes. The last jade box wasn't yet opened. Perhaps the treasure contained within that last jade box was the most valuable of all!

Heavens! Was he really attacking the Life Destruction realm and not the Divine Sea boundary!?

No… even someone breaking through to the Divine Sea wouldn't need such a massive army of resources!

He looked at Lin Ming, his eyes filled with shock. He only felt that this youth in front of him had countless secrets on his body. Thinking further about it, for a late Revolving Core martial artist to reach rank 280 on the Destiny Decree, a completely unprecedented achieve since the ancient era, then if he didn't have something special about him, how could he possibly have such achievements!?

As he thought about this and then the heavenly treasures in front of Lin Ming that were emitting a terrifying amount of energy, Shibai felt relieved.

He sat down opposite Lin Ming and said, "Little Brother Lin, I shall personally be your protector!"

Ho-!

Energy revolved. Shibai opened his Support Sphere. This was the bloodline seal of the Forsaken God Clan, an ability exclusive to their people. With Shibai's cultivation, his Support Sphere naturally far outstripped that of the other two old men!

After Shibai’s energy field was released, Lin Ming felt a warm power flood through his entire body. Every cell in his body began to independently breathe in heaven and earth origin energy!

Lin Ming raised his hand and all the ordinary spirit essence stones in the entire chamber began to float in the air. A furious amount of energy manically dissipated into the air. Soon after, these thousands of ordinary spirit essence stones completely turned into ash, releasing a massive flood of heaven and earth origin energy that filled the entire chamber, making this entire room a sea of energy.

However, Lin Ming didn’t even bother thinking about absorbing this energy. The purity was just too low. Even if Lin Ming absorbed this energy, it would not increase the energy in his dantian. Instead, the reason that he had released this energy was to provide a nourishing and protective barrier for himself.

Lin Ming quietly lifted the two God Transforming Pills that Yang Yun had given him. He activated the ethereal martial intent and soon entered into a completely focused state.

Chapter 836 – Purple Air Comes From the East

Chapter 836 – Purple Air Comes From the East

…

…

…

Time slowly passed. From morning to evening, from evening to morning.

The palaces of the Forsaken God Clan were bathed under a gentle light, resplendent in shining gold and jade. Underneath the spells that blanketed the land, all sorts of beautiful flowers and rare trees grew, bringing a peaceful atmosphere to the land. But, this was only the outer appearance. In truth, all members of the Forsaken God Clan were on high alert in order to prevent a possible accident from occurring.

Especially the two Great Elders and Patriarch Shibai, they were completely concentrated on their task and were in no way more relaxed than Lin Ming.

The three Support Spheres had continued for a day and a half already. Even though the three of them had a deep cultivation, they still needed to occasionally stop and supplement their energy.

Peng! Peng!

The two God Transforming Pills in Lin Ming's hand lost their lust, breaking into medicinal powder. Lin Ming didn't directly swallow up the God Transforming Pills and instead used the acupoints of his hands to absorb them. Although this would waste a great deal of the God Transforming Pills' efficacy, the advantage of this was that Lin Ming wouldn't take in the pill toxins. At the critical period of Life Destruction, any impure energy he absorbed would be an unknown factor. Lin Ming wasn't greedy enough to take such a risk just for a little more power.

After 40 hours, all of the two God Transforming Pills' energy was compressed into Lin Ming's dantian. Lin Ming's dantian was now full to an extent beyond imagination. Even the second Revolving Core within him had become the size of a walnut.

Such a compressed energy would create an extremely high pressure. If a general Revolving Core martial artist held so much true essence within themselves, their dantian would have already exploded!

But Lin Ming, because he had opened three of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, his body was nearing that of a low-grade heaven-step treasure. Such a degree of energy was still far from enough!!

With a thought, that small piece of top grade spirit essence stone flew up and affixed itself to Lin Ming's forehead. Pure energy of the endless world began to endlessly surge into Lin Ming.

The various seals and patterns on the top grade spirit essence stone began to constantly flow on its surface, as if it had come to life. This was an energy source that contained a trace of the world's Laws. This was the most distilled essence of a spirit essence stone mine! It represented the strongest energy that could be naturally bred within the earth of the Sky Spill Continent.

Shibai and the two Great Elders kept guard on the side, their hearts gripped as they saw this scene. This young fellow was the same as a monster! The dantian in his body was like an endless ocean, able to contain limitless amounts of energy!

Shibai looked at the two jade boxes in front of Lin Ming. One was opened wide, containing a pigeon egg-sized glass bead that held an energy even greater than a complete top grade spirit essence stone.

But the last jade box, because it was sealed, Shibai didn't know just what was inside. But he had a feeling its contents were absolutely more valuable than the green glass bead.

Shibai sucked in a deep breath of cold air. 'Is this boy really human? The potential he needs for breaking into Life Destruction is greater than what I needed to break into the Divine sea!'

Shibai just couldn't imagine it. What would happen once Lin Ming's dantian was filled with up with the energy from those last two jade boxes?

The night passed in peace. At the break of dawn, with a loud 'ka' sound, the top grade spirit essence stone at Lin Ming's forehead split in half...

....

The sun rose from the east, followed by a faint purple glow that gathered above the vast mountain ranges. The sunlight shined through the light mist of the dimensional realm, illuminating the world.

The Laws of a dimensional realm were similar to those of the boundless universe. It didn't lack starlight or sunlight.

Yang Yun looked at the purple sun rising in the east and muttered, "Purple air comes from the east. This is an auspicious omen from the heavens. Lin Lanjian has already reached the final stretch. Perhaps tonight, he will begin to disintegrate his mortal form and truly attack Life Destruction, forming his spirit body. I look forwards to just what the result of that will be."

He stretched out his hand, and two flood dragons began pulling a golden divine carriage into the skies. Yang Yun slowly drifted upwards, his clothes fluttering in the wind as he stepped on the void, silently falling onto the divine carriage like an immortal descending from the heavens.

"I surely cannot miss such prosperous times..."

Meanwhile, at the highest level of the Asura Divine Kingdom's floating tower, the black-robed Asura Divine Emperor was standing at the window, his face contemplative as he looked towards the Elders Palace and the auspicious purple light that hung above it, washing the entire land in endless sunlight.

Standing not too far away from him was a purple-clothed girl. This girl was extremely tall, standing just a few inches lower than the towering Asura Divine Emperor. In particular her legs. Both of them were straight and slender, nearly twice the length of her body. Her white ankles were exposed underneath the hem of her purple dress, making her seem filled with a sense of beauty and power.

The Asura Divine Emperor stood here for a full half hour. The purple-clothed girl was also quiet during this time. Her skin seemed condensed from the cream of pearls, and her nose and features were perfectly proportioned, giving her a near flawless appearance. Her bright red lips had a flavor of wickedness to them, making it seem as if she were out of reach.

At this point, the Asura Divine Emperor suddenly said, “Yaoyue, Lin Lanjian will begin forming his spirit body tonight. For you, he will be the first battle since you've been revealed as well as the most important battle you have ever faced! It might be a bit premature for you, but that also means this is a great opportunity and challenge for you also!”

“Yes, Your Majesty Haotian.” The purple-clothed girl's voice was faint and elusive, as if her voice was a clear melody from the distant horizon, bringing with it not even the least bit of emotion.

She was Situ Yaoyue, the hidden genius of the Asura Divine Kingdom.

Situ Yaoyue had been born with an Extreme Violet Dantian. Her capacity to carry true essence was several times that of a normal martial artist, and it even had a special quality to it!

This sort of dantian was also known as the Purple Sea. Because of its existence as well as Situ Yaoyue's background as a direct descendent of the Emperor's clan, this was an extremely rare combination of circumstances. The Asura Divine Emperor's clan had placed Situ Yaoyue in the highest order of importance. The events leading up to her birth were strictly protected, and afterwards it was even declared to the world that she had died in childbirth. Instead, they had secretly transferred her to the Asura Mystic realm where she had been received as the last disciple of a High Prince in that hidden world.

After reaching the Xiantian realm, Situ Yaoyue had gone out adventuring. Although she had powerhouses trailing her in secret, she had been unaware of all of this. By passing through many dangers and trials, her strength and will now far surpassed that of a martial artist at her same level.

Situ Yaoyue was at the seventh stage of Life Destruction, and her cultivation was only rising. It had already been secretly decided that she would be the next candidate for the throne of the Divine Emperor. However, it was only that this news was kept secret, resulting in the many Princes like Situ Chuan remaining in the dark, continuing their meaningless struggle to become the Crown Prince. None of them were aware that Situ Yaoyue had long ago nabbed the position of successor.

"You are the greatest talent that my Asura Divine Kingdom has seen in the last 1000 years as well as the only junior to have reached the seventh stage of Life Destruction. Unfortunately, after breaking through to the seventh stage of Life Destruction, I had to stop your seclusion early and pull you out before your cultivation could stabilize. This will likely delay you entering the Divine Sea by another year or two. But… this doesn't matter. Lin Lanjian is an existence with a great destiny on his body. He is a true proud son of heaven. Defeat him, inherit his destiny, and this gain will be immeasurably greater than any losses you will ever have!"

"Yes, Your Majesty!" Situ Yaoyue succinctly said. She looked towards the direction of the Elders Palace, calmly and firmly saying, "I will win!"

"Good! When I agreed to Lin Lanjian's battle, I had already decided to reveal you. Only your inborn Extreme Violet Dantian will be able to restrain his destiny of an Emperor. Not only must you win, but you must win with overwhelming power and grace so that you can pave your own road of a peerless Emperor!"

The Asura Divine Emperor looked at Situ Yaoyue with a complex light in his eyes. Only through a baptism of blood and battle could one truly rule over the world!

Time passed. More and more martial artists became aware that tonight would be when Lin Ming finally began forming his spirit body!

Although the Forsaken God Clan didn't wish to disclose this news, this type of matter couldn't be concealed either. This was because when a martial artist attacked Life Destruction they would need to absorb a massive amount of heaven and earth origin energy. When that happened, all sorts of large and small heaven and earth origin energy vortexes would begin appearing in the skies above the Elders Palace.

And while the Sky Lock Array was both a defensive and offensive array, it still wouldn't stop pure heaven and earth origin energy from passing through.

This matter would be known by everyone sooner or later.

It was just that some masters discovered this much earlier than others. Quickly, news that Lin Ming would be forming his spirit body spread out like wildfire. From one to 10, from 10 to a hundred, more and more droves of heroes began gathering around the Elders Palace.

From the skies, it appeared as if the entire Elders Palace was surrounded by a massive mob.

"I heard that the Nine Furnace Crown Prince also came to personally watch Lin Lanjian cross Life Destruction. I heard he even gifted him two God Transforming Pills. I have no idea if that is true or not though."

"What nonsense, of course it's true! That matter isn't a secret anymore. It's two God Transforming Pills! Isn't that just a waste of heaven's treasures? And it is just for attacking the first stage of Life Destruction. I wonder just what he will need to break through to the Divine Sea!"

A fifth-grade sect Life Destruction martial artist said, a bit sour. He could be considered a key talent that was being raised in his fifth-grade sect, but to him, a God Transforming Pill was nothing but a legend.

This sort of pill had a value over 300,000 spirit essence stones. To an ordinary Life Destruction powerhouse, that was a luxury forever out of their reach. Even a top 200 ranked Destiny Decree master would find themselves pained to afford a God Transforming Pill.

Now Lin Ming had actually used two in order to attack Life Destruction. Of course this martial artist was jealous. In his eyes, this was just wasteful.

"Hehe, maybe Lin Lanjian's cultivation is lacking and he needs to depend on those God Transforming Pills to forcefully increase the energy in his dantian until it is enough to disintegrate his body. Otherwise, no matter how rich Lin Lanjian is, he still wouldn't waste such treasures. Of those top talents that naturally cultivated to the point of breaking into Life Destruction, which one of them didn't do so easily? As for using a God Transforming Pill to forcefully do so when their cultivation isn't sufficient, that can only harm them, there simply aren't any benefits to it. If Lin Lanjian has to use two God Transforming Pills, there definitely has to be some other reason for him doing so!"

"Mm… I also think it's strange. I remember that Lanjian already stole away a God Transforming Pill from the Asura Divine Kingdom but hasn't even used it yet, because his cultivation hasn't increased. I estimate that Lin Ming is being forced by the Asura Divine Kingdom, and since he doesn't believe in his chances too much, he will use three God Transforming Pills altogether in order to forcefully break through Life Destruction! Don't forget that Lin Lanjian isn't that old, he can't have reached late Revolving Core that long ago. Even a genius can't cross over from Revolving Core to Life Destruction so quickly."

“Impossible! If his cultivation is lacking and he wants to depend on external forces to attack Life Destruction, then not only is that extremely risky but it will cause his foundation to be unstable. That is the greatest nightmare for a top talent!”

“Humph, having an unstable foundation is still better than losing his life. Otherwise, what capital will Lin Lanjian have to fight against all the Life Destruction powerhouses of the Asura Divine Kingdom?”

Chapter 837 – Golden Lighting Piercing the Sky

Chapter 837 – Golden Lighting Piercing the Sky

…

…

…

More people arrived throughout the day, none of them leaving. Underneath so many expectations, the pall of night finally fell…

The night was destined to no longer be calm. The atmosphere of the entire dimensional realm was extremely contained. All around the Elders Palace there were many heroes grouped, but very few of them were actually making a noise. One could even hear the gentle night wind whistling in the air.

The Elders Palace was still peaceful as before. Besides the occasional true essence vortex in the sky, there was no difference.

A metal spirit boat cut through the sky. On the side of this spirit boat was carved a long sword; this was the symbol of the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom.

A young man and woman in their twenties stood on the spirit boat, both of them looking down at the world with a extraordinary heroic spirit.

“That is the twin prince and princess of the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom, Ouye Qingfeng and Ouye Qingyun!”

“This is truly an event that has captivated the world. Ouye Qingfeng and Ouye Qingyun are both astounding characters in the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom. For just Lin Lanjian crossing Life Destruction, over 20 Princes have already arrived!”

Besides Yang Yun, who had arrived earlier, all of the other Princes had come at night, staying high in the skies where the other famed Elders of the large sects were. Although there was plenty of room in the skies, the common martial artists simply didn't dare to stand side by side with these people. The pressure was simply too great.

"There are so many people watching! If Lin Lanjian fails to cross Life Destruction then that would truly be a joke!" No one had thought that an eternally unrivalled talent like Lin Ming would have any problems crossing Life Destruction. But someone had heard about the matter of the God Transforming Pills and had made a number of reasonable speculations from that. From that point on, some people began to suspect that Lin Ming wouldn't be able to successfully cross Life Destruction.

"I also feel that Lin Lanjian is in a bit of a dangerous situation. If he tries to forcefully break through even though his cultivation isn't sufficient, then his body might be obliterated and he would die."

"Don't be an idiot. Lin Lanjian is known as the number one eternally rare talent of the Sky Spill Continent. If he really perished while trying to break through the first stage of Life Destruction then that would just be too ridiculous. But after breaking through Life Destruction, his foundation might be unstable. Using the God Transforming Pills to forcefully enhance himself will definitely leave behind side effects."

When a top talent crossed Life Destruction in a perfect manner, they simply wouldn't need to use medicines. Those who needed to borrow the power of these medicines to cross Life Destruction were normally ordinary powerhouses, such as Xuan Wuji when he was crossing the fourth stage of Life Destruction.

As some of the martial artists were whispering to each other, a 10,000 foot beam of divine light suddenly shot out from the Elders Palace. It was like a keen sword that split the skies, causing the stars themselves to lose their luster.

An incomparable blood vitality lingered in the skies above the Elders Palace, merging with the 10,000 foot beam of golden light. Its brilliance was eye-catching and everyone who saw it was shocked. Could a mortal's blood vitality truly be rich to such a degree?

Bang! Bang! Bang!

A faint rumbling sound came out from the Elders palace. It was a low and bass sound, deep enough to shake the earth. Deep within the Elders Palace, it was like a True Dragon was slowly waking up from a long sleep…

"That is…"

"He's finally shattered his mortal form. Is he about to create his spirit body?"

"What a terrifying aura… who said that his cultivation was lacking and he needed three God Transforming Pills to forcefully cross Life Destruction? Could someone with an insufficient cultivation really have such an aura, as if the Laws of the world are being affected?"

……

Deep within the Elders Palace, Shibai and the two Great Elders were dripping with sweat, their concentration completely focused. Lin Ming had finished the sea serpent crystals and now the green heaven-step Demon God Bone was grasped in his hands.

At this time, all of Lin Ming's meridians were bulging like balloons, the blood vessels sticking out from all over his body. His entire body was filled to the limit; he could detonate at any time!

Even though Lin Ming had entered into the ethereal martial intent state, he could still feel an unbelievably agonizing pain from the energy tearing through his body.

This still wasn't enough!

Lin Ming grit his teeth and crumbled the heaven-step Demon God Bone in his hands!

A vast energy erupted, stirring up a storm of true essence within the seclusion chamber!

In such a terrifying storm of energy, the pressure within Lin Ming’s dantian could be imagined. The first Revolving Core had already reached its limits, unable to change any more. Only the second Revolving Core could change. From the size of a walnut it compressed to the size of a quail egg and then the size of a fingertip before finally compressing to the size of a little yellow bean.

The second Revolving Core became increasingly deep in color until it appeared inky black. The amount of energy compressed energy within it was not much worse than the Black Hole Revolving Core’s!

Lin Ming wasn’t able to control the second Revolving Core very well, thus he couldn’t compress it himself. But by relying on external forces, it had been forcefully squeezed into an existence near to that of a Black Hole Revolving Core.

At this moment, Lin Ming controlled his first Black Hole Revolving Core and forced it to smash into the second Revolving Core!

Bang!

In that split second, Lin Ming’s dantian finally exploded!

He vomited a mouthful of blood. Near his dantian, all of his meridians began to rupture and blood rained out into the air, turning into a fog of blood within the incomparably pure sea of heaven and earth origin energy!

Lin Ming’s body finally began to crack. But detonating his dantian was still not enough to completely disintegrate his tough physical form. It blew up large chunks of flesh and blood, but was still unable to thoroughly decompose his body.

With a decisive thought, Lin Ming then discharged the highly compressed golden red lightning within the Heretical God Sprout!

In a flash, a golden sun seemed to rise within the seclusion chamber.

Shibai’s eyes flashed with a sharp light. Before this, Lin Ming had already informed him that there was a power of thunder within him capable of turning even a Divine Sea Supreme Elder into ash. Once it detonated, everything around him and within the great array formation would be burnt to ash!

“We’re withdrawing!”

Shibai stretched out his hands to grab the two Great Elders, revolving his movement technique to the limit and then stormed away!

Kacha!

A golden divine thunder broke through the dome of the Elders Palace, directly impacting into the night sky. The deep night sky was lit up bright by this divine thunder as if it were morning. As everyone turned to look at this lightning, they felt a stabbing pain in their eyes as if they were turning blind!

This was truly a world shocking scene. The countless arcs of divine thunder in the air were like peerless immortal soldiers of a divine god. They blazed with an incandescent light, leaving a reflection in the eyes that turned into an eternal phantom, making it so that one would never forget!

“Is this really crossing Life Destruction!?”

“What a terrifying power of thunder, even though it’s so far away it can still make me shiver with fear!”

All of the surrounding martial artists stared at the shining golden thunder in the sky with blank eyes, as if they were watching something from a dream. This fantastical and incredible power that could change even the heavens and earth, perhaps this wouldn’t even appear if someone else were to break through to the Divine Sea!

Ka ka ka ka!

Not too far away, a great palace shook and then began to collapse, raising a storm of dust!

The palaces of the Forsaken God Clan naturally had array formations supporting their internal structures. Even so, they were still being shattered by this terrifying energy!

Yang Yun stood high above his divine carriage, looking on from a far distance, an unspeakable expression on his face. He gently traced his spatial ring and spoke to himself, "A new golden era is coming..."

The seclusion chamber had already turned into a sea of golden energy, with thunder manically howling within. Submerged in this sea of energy, Lin Ming's body constantly exploded, again and again and again!

From fist-sized lumps of flesh to egg-sized lumps of flesh and then to bean-sized lumps of flesh... they constantly decomposed, until they were as small as dust!

If it were other martial artists, even dual body and law geniuses from the Realm of the Gods, then without their bodies being tempered by thunder and without the Heretical God Sprout to control this power of thunder, if they were to be submerged in this sea of brutal and overbearing energy then they would be turned into nothing but ash, instead of decomposing to their tiniest units like Lin Ming.

Bang bang bang!

The thunder did not end; instead, it became increasingly fierce. It was like the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion of the Sea of Miracles had reappeared within the Forsaken God Clan's dimensional realm.

Within the highest level of the Asura Divine Kingdom's tower, Situ Yaoyue was watching all of this from a distance. Her lips curved up, revealing beautiful white teeth.

"I never imagined that Lin Lanjian could contain such a terrifying power of thunder within his body…"

Situ Yaoyue muttered to herself. Her limpid eyes flashed with a clear fighting spirit, her mind undeterred by the phenomenon occurring in the skies.

She had trained since childhood and had bitterly cultivated all this time. She had been through countless dangerous situations, and had even broken through to the seventh stage of Life Destruction. Now, facing a mere first stage Life Destruction martial artist, it was impossible for her to say that she didn't feel some contempt for him. After all, Lin Lanjian was a genius, but wasn't she a genius too?

Yet now she finally began to find the meaning in all this. At least this wouldn't be a senseless fight that bored her.

"Lin Lanjian has the life of an Emperor. He has most likely inherited some unrivalled lucky chance. Yaoyue, if you can kill him, everything he has will be yours. In the future you might even become the highest under the heavens!" Situ Haotian's voice suddenly resounded in her ears.

The highest under the heavens was the title used to describe an unrivalled, undefeatable Divine Sea powerhouse. Ever since Emperor Shakya broke through his martial path and ascended, no one else had filled that position. These years, there were some extraordinary powerhouses that had come close to being the highest under the heavens, but they did not far surpass all martial artists of the world. They could only be called one of the top powerhouses of the Sky Spill Continent. For instance, the Highest Divine Emperor of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, the Imperial Grand Uncle of the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom, or even the Netherworld Great Emperor from 3000 years ago that had died in the South Sea.

Although Situ Yaoyue was talented, she was far from becoming the highest under the heavens. Her only chance was if she could cross the eighth stage of Life Destruction. However, the eighth stage of Life Destruction was not simple to cross at all. Looking over the last 100,000 years of history in the Sky Spill Continent, the number of Divine Emperors that had crossed eight stages of Life Destruction could be counted on a single hand.

"The highest under the heavens?" Yaoyue's slender eyes narrowed, her vision becoming increasingly firm. She gripped her fists, "I will!"

....

With the raging destruction of energy, even the Sky Lock Array began to tremble. Two God Transforming Pills, a heaven-step Demon God Bone, a top quality spirit essence stone, all of their energy was released into the raging sea around Lin Ming. And as Lin Ming's body was submerged in this sea of energy, it decomposed into its most basic tiny units, fully absorbing the surrounding energy and undergoing a most fundamental change.

The essence of Life Destruction was to use energy to transform the body and then reform into a spirit body that could hold true essence throughout.

And during this process of transformation, not only did Lin Ming undergo a baptism of energy, but he was also being tempered by thunder!

Every cell within Lin Ming's body twinkled with the glory of thunder. Under the control of the Heretical God Sprout, the power of thunder penetrated deep into every single cell.

Thunder was the power of destruction but also the power of life. When a vicious beast underwent their tribulation, their body would be tempered by thunder, making their physical form even more formidable. And now, Lin Ming was undergoing a similar transformation, having equally wonderful results from different methods!

Chapter 838 – Silver Battle Spirit

Chapter 838 – Silver Battle Spirit

…

…

…

The transformation of the body continued for another hour. With a series of cracking sounds, the heaven-step Demon God Bone and the sea serpent crystal shattered into powder. All of the various energies twisted together, completely blowing up the tower that the seclusion chamber was located within!

Dust and smoke rose from all over. When the flying stones finally settled, Lin Ming's seclusion chamber was completely revealed in plain sight of all the spectators, leaving behind only the Sky Lock Array around it.

The entire sky with filled with endless thunder. And within the array formation, everything had turned into a sea of brilliant gold.

All of the martial artists cast their eyes towards the Sky Lock Array. Most of them weren't able to see through the blazing light within.

However, some martial artists with high cultivation were able to clearly see what was happening inside. All of them were left dumbfounded.

What was going on?

As these high cultivation martial artists' faces twisted with strange expressions, the other martial artists impatiently asked them, "What is it?"

“Lin Lanjian… has disappeared!”

“What!?” This observation left all of the martial artists stricken, “He disappeared!?”

“There is nothing left behind. No bones, no blood fog, in that array formation there is only some sort of golden energy!”

Normally, when a martial artist crossed Life Destruction, the first three stages were calamities of the body. Their body would disintegrate and then reform from its fundamental essence, creating a new flesh and blood spirit body of true essence.

When the body decomposed, this didn’t mean that everything would decompose. There were vital body parts that were left over. For instance, the brain, spine, skeleton, and for martial artists that had unstable foundations, even their heart, lungs, and several other major internal organs would remain.

Without a doubt, the more one’s body broke down, the more dangerous it would become!

Especially the brain and spine; those were related to a martial artist’s soul and where their spiritual sea was located. The structures and relations between these structures were incomparably complex. Once any one of them was damaged, it would be extremely difficult to repair. No matter how talented a martial artist was, when they crossed Life Destruction their brain would always be protected by energy so that they weren’t affected by the explosion of energy.

Otherwise it would be very easy to damage one’s spiritual sea, or it could even lead to instant death.

Even when a body decomposed, it didn’t disappear. Rather, it disintegrated into a rain of blood that fused with their own energy, imprisoning all of this in a small area. This energy would provide a formation outline for the soul and a new being would be born within this primordial soup of life.

This primordial soup of life was similar to the amniotic fluid within a mother's womb. From afar, it actually looked like a deep crimson blood fog.

But in Lin Ming's seclusion chamber, his head and skeleton had all disappeared, leaving nothing but an endless golden energy. Everything else had vanished!

If this situation were to happen to other martial artists then that meant one thing; something had gone awry in their process of Life Destruction and their body had completely disintegrated, leaving not even ashes behind!

"Lin Lanjian died…" A Revolving Core realm martial artist gulped, speculating that such a ridiculous turn of events had happened.

"It can't be!"

"This is too big of a joke!"

Everyone made this conclusion in their minds. Even if they found this unbelievable, the facts were placed in front of them.

The eternally rare number one talent Lin Lanjian, who had reached rank 280 on the Destiny Decree with just a late Revolving Core cultivation and also obtained the title of 'Death God', had actually died while crossing the first stage of Life Destruction!

This was the world's greatest farce!

"Since ancient times, even peak Emperor level talents have fallen from the skies. They can die in mystic realms, in life or death battles with others, or can even be assassinated by other major powers. But who has ever heard of this cause of death, dying while crossing the first stage of Life Destruction? This is too bizarre!"

"Did the Asura Divine Kingdom secretly plot something? Why would Lin Lanjian fail Life Destruction?"

"Don't be silly. The Forsaken God Clan are not idiots. Do you see that great array above the Elders Palace? It is said that array is called the Sky Lock Array and it was passed down from ancient times. It could defend against the attack of even a Divine Sea Supreme Elder. Then again, do you think that the Asura Divine Kingdom really fears Lin Lanjian? If they send out some of the masters they have hidden then defeating Lin Lanjian wouldn't be difficult at all!"

Most of the martial artists present simply felt this was incredulous. But they also couldn't find any other explanation for what was happening in front of them.

Shibai had always been hiding around the edges to make sure that no one disturbed Lin Ming as he crossed Life Destruction. The energy within the Sky Lock Array was simply too wild and tyrannical. Even though Shibai had broken through to the Divine Sea, he still couldn't stay within. After all, he wasn't the Eightfall Thunder Emperor.

As Shibai looked at the golden sea of energy, his expression remained calm. This was because he could feel that Lin Ming's fires of life were still burning with an incomparable effervescence.

Lin Ming didn't encounter a problem nor did his body disappear. He had completely turned into a body of source energy, perfectly fusing with that golden lightning and becoming one!

For an ordinary martial artist, their flesh and blood would turn into primordial soup of life. After being baptized by energy they would then reform their body. During this there would always be incomplete parts of their transformation. For instance, large pieces of flesh, body fluids that had clumped together and so on.

And there was no need to mention disintegrating their brain or spine; those were completely untouched by the transformative energy.

Thus, the so-called decomposing the body and reforming a ‘spirit body’ was only a relative term. When one spoke of a ‘spirit body’, that was in truth only 70-80% of their body, leaving the rest as their mortal body.

A relatively poor Life Destruction martial artist might have a 60% spirit body, whereas a peerless talent might have a 90% spirit body. That was already the highest peak.

Once they reached a higher boundary, these mortal body portions would become constraints to a martial artist. When they fought, these parts of their body would become weaknesses!

In the Sky Spill Continent, there was no one able to do what Lin Ming could. With the support of the Heretical God Sprout, he completely fused his body with the energy even as he tempered every single cell with the power of thunder!

Even his soul and will underwent a baptism of thunder.

At this time, within the sea of golden energy, the battle spirit in Lin Ming’s spiritual sea was also withstanding being tempered by thunder.

Although Lin Ming’s physical body had already melted away, his consciousness was acutely clear. He could precisely make out the movement of energy in the golden sea as well as feel all of his cells exchanging energy with their surroundings.

In that moment, Lin Ming felt as if he were standing on a higher realm above the world of mortals, aloof and haughty with the fate of all grasped in his hands.

Indifferent, calm, and without the slightest hint of emotion; this was the perspective of a divine god.

‘Does the life of an energy body come close to a divine god? Or is a divine god similar to an energy body type of existence?’

A thought inexplicably flashed through Lin Ming's mind. A so-called divine god should be an existence close to the peak of martial arts, or perhaps an unrivalled powerhouse that had already traced the peak. For instance, the 'Evil God' that had created the Heretical God Force.

But as for what the peak of martial arts was like, he had no idea what sort of concept that would be. He could only guess what would possibly happen upon reaching that step. Would his body then be constituted completely of source energy?

As Lin Ming was thinking of these things, he suddenly felt a burst of stabbing pain from the depths of his soul.

The battle spirit violently trembled, as if something were trying to break free from within it!

'Mm? Could this be… the battle spirit is evolving!?'

When a martial artist first comprehended their battle spirit, after successfully forming it, they could only let it grow on its own. The earlier one comprehended a battle spirit, the more potential for growth their battle spirit had. This was because every time a martial artist's cultivation increased, this would subtly manifest a change in their battle spirit.

Now that Lin Ming was crossing Life Destruction, his battle spirit was about to take another step forwards!

Lin Ming naturally couldn't miss out on this opportunity. With a thought, the seals on the heavily protected fifth jade box began to unravel.

As the seals were undone, the wood spirit jade box immediately disintegrated into nothing. What was left over was the contents of the box, an exceptionally clear and vibrant purple crystal the size of a fist, along with several smaller fragments around it.

This was the Twinlife Thunder Crystal!

As the vessel that a Thunder Source was bred within, a Twinlife Thunder Crystal only appeared once every several hundred million years or even billions of years. Even within the Realm of the Gods, such a treasure could only be found through a stroke of destiny.

By concentrating the power of his will, the Twinlife Thunder Crystal floated in the air as it began to melt together with Lin Ming's spear-shaped battle spirit.

Peng!

The Twinlife Thunder Crystal completely shattered, turning into countless translucent purple crystal shards that shimmered with a bright luminescence. These shards evenly distributed themselves all over the spear-shaped battle spirit.

In that instant, an energy beyond description suddenly erupted like a volcano. Above Lin Ming's spear-shaped battle spirit, countless purple Dao patterns began to appear!

As these Dao patterns glowed and rippled, they seemed incomparably mystical, as if they contained the Source Laws and the charm of the Great Dao. Compared to the chaos stone engravings, they had arrived at the same result from different paths!

The reason that the Twinlife Thunder Crystal was able to temper the will was because it had existed for billions of years, bearing witness to the infinite changes through the endless years of the universe. Bit by bit, the thunder energy carved itself into the Twinlife Thunder Crystal, reflecting and manifesting the most essential changes in energy.

And once these changes were engraved into the battle spirit, the source energy would fuse together with the battle spirit and temper the will.

A soul-tearing pain caused Lin Ming's consciousness to suddenly tremble. The energy body containing his fires of life violently rocked as it was sealed in the array formation. In such a situation, as soon as Lin Ming lost consciousness he would immediately lose control of his energy body and disperse. At that time, there really wouldn't be anything left of him.

Pain of the soul was far more unbearable than pain of the flesh. But Lin Ming had practiced martial arts for many years by now, and especially with the experiences of absorbing the soul fragments of the Magic Cube, he had experienced agonizing pain of the soul several times already. Now, his determination and mental resiliency were already as hard as iron.

He stubbornly defended his mind, pouring the endless energy essence surrounding him into the battle spirit, letting the purple Dao patterns freely wrap around it and having it withstand a baptism of the Great Dao's charm.

The Dao patterns destroyed and created, washing through every single inch of Lin Ming's battle spirit. Slowly, the spear-shaped battle spirit lengthened and became increasingly dense. After a quarter hour, the bronze color began to fade away, revealing a touch of silver white radiance!

Although this radiance was weak, Lin Ming was astounded as soon as he saw it!

Silver battle spirit!

By crossing Life Destruction and in addition to the baptism of the Twinlife Thunder Crystal, his battle spirit had unexpectedly crossed over bronze perfection and stepped directly into the silver level!

A bronze battle spirit and a silver battle spirit were separated by a large boundary. Lin Ming had originally estimated he would need to cross another three or four stages of Life Destruction before being able to cross it. He never imagined that with the help of the Twinlife Thunder Crystal, he would be able to break through that barrier at just the first stage of Life Destruction!

The battle spirit trembled. The silver brilliance was like the cold light of a moon that came falling to the earth. At that moment, the spear-shaped battle spirit seemed to fuse into the void, turning this part of the world into an everlasting and eternal existence.

Chapter 839 – Purple Lion Thunder Source

Chapter 839 – Purple Lion Thunder Source

…

…

…

The evolution of a battle spirit wasn't instant, but a gradual process. The spear-shaped battle spirit slowly shed its original bronze color and changed into a brilliant silver.

Time passed on. The purple Dao patterns constantly circled around that spear-shaped battle spirit, greedily absorbing all of the surrounding energy in that golden sea. This was the heaven and earth origin energy released from a top grade spirit essence stone, a heaven-step Demon God Bone, sea serpent crystals, and other such heavenly treasures; the quality was exceedingly high.

However, as this vast and terrifying energy flowed into the tiny purple Dao patterns, it actually only caused them to slightly brighten, without any change at all.

After the energy was constantly consumed by Lin Ming, the sea of energy within the Sky Lock Array also began to subside. The golden light in the skies faded, no longer being blinding to the eye. Even the golden divine thunder that flashed in the heavens began to dim down, hiding away deep within the clouds.

A moment later, the energy finally stopped moving. The mighty and overwhelming supernatural power that had shocked everyone present had finally disappeared. Everyone could clearly make out the scene within the Sky Lock Array.

Lin Ming had truly vanished. His body hadn't even reformed.

"It's over?"

After discovering that Lin Ming's body had vanished, the surrounding martial artists waited for an entire hour. However, there wasn't any turnaround.

"It's been an hour. Did Lin Lanjian really die here?"

"Lin Lanjian's cultivation might have really been insufficient. To use three God Transforming Pills to force his way through a breakthrough, that is simply far too risky! We can only lament that this eternally rare talent was forced into a dead end by the Asura Divine Kingdom and had to make a final gamble. However, he still fell short in the end!"

A fifth-grade sect's Life Destruction martial artist shook his head with regret. If Lin Lanjian had been allowed to grow, then he would have inevitably blossomed into brilliance, becoming the greatest genius in the history of the Sky Spill Continent!

However, reality was reality, there were no ifs or buts.

None of the martial artists left yet. Since the high level figures didn't depart, the low level martial artists blindly followed, milling about in the surroundings.

Watching the serene Sky Lock Array, a sect Elder sighed and said to the disciples behind him, "Crossing Life Destruction is the riskiest step. You must wait until your cultivation is solid enough before you attempt this. Otherwise, even if you are an eternally rare talent, you still have a chance of dying."

"Yes, this disciple will remember your teachings!"

"Mm." The old man nodded with satisfaction, no longer saying anything. At this moment, he heard a faint sound in the sky.

"Mm? What's that?"

Not only did this old man hear this, but the others also heard it.

As the purple Dao patterns revolved around Lin Ming's spear-shaped battle spirit, they seemed to form an attractive force towards something in the distant night skies. The sound of the Great Dao returned in bursts, like the whispers of a divine god, cold, calm, and without any emotion.

As this thrumming sound entered the ear, it made them feel a sense of awe emerge from their hearts, even making them want to fall to the ground and lie prostrate in worship.

The sound became increasingly clear. The Xiantian realm martial artists and below weren't able to withstand this pressure and fell to their knees, feeling a faint shiver in their souls.

Everyone couldn't help but look up. They saw that changes were occurring in the violent thunder that was rampaging across the skies. The originally quiet divine thunder seemed to have come to life once again, condensing in the air, intensifying and becoming increasingly fierce and wild like a raging tide!

The thunderclaps became increasingly loud until they were able to penetrate the clouds and crack apart stone, nearly breaking apart the eardrums of those who listened to it!

"What is happening!?!?"

All of the martial artists' complexions changed, especially those with lower cultivations. Facing the glory of the world appearing in such a fashion, they inevitably felt the deepest part of their souls tremble.

Arcs of lightning rolled in the sky, forming a net of purple thunder. The void fiercely trembled over and over again, as if it were a fragile layer of ice about to tear apart at any moment!

Shibai was floored, "This… it's as if the dimensional realm's space barrier wants to…"

"That's impossible! Even the combined force of several Divine Sea Supreme Elders cannot tear apart the stable dimensional realm space barrier!"

However, as if the heavens were answering Shibai's doubts, the space barrier suddenly broke apart in the next moment!

It didn't seem to be destroyed, but simply vanished! At that moment, the dimensional realm had fused with the boundless universe into one!

"Just what is this phenomenon? How could this be happening!?"

Shibai was incredulous. In the 100,000 years of the Sky Spill Continent's recorded history, this sort of situation had never happened before.

It wasn't just Shibai who was shocked – even the Asura Divine Emperor was surprised, with an uncertain expression on his face. Could this be...

As the Asura Divine Emperor looked into the skies, purple lines began to appear in the air. These lines seemed as if they were faint tracings of a dragon, recklessly twisting and waving around! These purple lines corresponded with the lines appearing on Lin Ming's spear-shaped battle spirit.

These were the mysteries of heaven, a phenomenon closest to the source Laws of the universe. The space barrier of the dimensional realm simply wasn't able to stop it.

These purple patterns began to fall downwards like a heavy mountain. The Elders Palace was unable to withstand such a great pressure and began to collapse like a sand castle!

"Retreat! Quickly retreat!"

All martial artists below Life Destruction weren't able to withstand this majesty of heaven. They all flew back over a dozen miles, shocked speechless.

"Just what is happening? Are those flying things in the air dragons?"

"Can someone tell me whether Lin Lanjian is dead or not?"

A young martial artist dazedly asked. This was the question he was most concerned about.

“You idiot, of course he hasn’t died, otherwise how could this sort of scene occur!” The young martial artist’s master snappily replied. However, as he spoke these words, even he couldn’t confirm them. Could Lin Lanjian really have made such a tremendous scene occur?

Shibai also retreated a distance, a dignified look on his face.

He used his soul force to observe Lin Ming’s situation within the Sky Lock Array. Before this, of the energy that Lin Ming had been using to reform himself, he had absorbed all of it, whether it was the energy from the heavenly treasures or the golden red lightning. But now, this golden purple lightning didn’t seem as if it had come from Lin Ming.

The net of thunder in the skies became increasingly dense, finally interweaving into a blanket without a single gap. It covered the entire dimensional realm, making it appear even brighter than daytime. Most people had difficulty simply opening their eyes.

And at this time, from the far north of the dimensional realm, a blazing beam of light shot over. This purple gold beam of light was like a falling galaxy!

Massive amounts of lightning light gathered together, forming a horrifying and tyrannical vicious beast. It stepped on a path of purple light that spread out beneath it, dashing over from the far horizon.

Its baleful glare locked onto Lin Ming’s position, its eyes filled with a frenzied rage.

This vicious beast of thunder was the Purple Lion Thunder Source that had come from the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion above the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. It had felt its life’s Twinlife Thunder Crystal suddenly shatter, and it felt a deep pain in its heart. It had rushed out from the Sea of Miracles, wanting to rip Lin Ming to pieces to give vent to this fiery anger.

“What is that!?”

“It’s a lion! A purple lion!”

“A manifestation of thunder… is that a Thunder Soul!?”

“Heavens! Such a powerful energy, it must be at least a heaven-step Thunder Soul! It was attracted by the thunder here!”

Several high stage thunder-attribute Life Destruction martial artists revealed expressions of naked desire. Such an imposing aura, such majestic power, this was undoubtedly a heaven-step Thunder Soul. It might even be a medium-grade heaven-step or high-grade heaven-step Thunder Soul!

Within the Sky Spill Continent, no one knew of the existence of a Thunder Source. Even a low-grade heaven-step Thunder Soul was rarely seen once in a lifetime, so how could these martial artists possibly determine the level of this Thunder Source?

“This Thunder Soul came from the north so it has nothing to do with Lin Lanjian. It must have come here for the vast power of thunder!” A thunder-attribute old man said.

This was a masterless treasure, and also priceless!

To a thunder-attribute martial artist, the value of a low-grade heaven-step Thunder Soul was equal to a high-grade heaven-step treasure; it was even slightly comparable to a quasi-Saint artifact.

“What an amazing thing! This is truly a marvelous accidental harvest!”

“Let’s work together! We can catch it!”

A heaven-step Thunder Soul was already powerful, much less they didn’t know what rank this supposed heaven-step Thunder Soul in front of them was. Even though the present thunder-attribute martial artists had already reached high stages of Life Destruction, and two of them were ranked highly on the Destiny Decree, none of them dared to rashly do anything.

Now was not the time to consider how to split this Thunder Soul – they first had to capture it.

“Let’s attack together!”

A purple-clothed old man took the lead. He shouted out loud, his eyes filling with excitement!

He was the 250 ranked master of the Destiny Decree. Currently, he only had a high-grade earth-step Thunder Soul. If he could obtain this heaven-step Thunder Soul then his strength would inevitably rise to another level!

Five thunder-attribute martial artists displayed their supernatural abilities. Of them, the weakest was at the fourth stage of Life Destruction. Anyone at a lower boundary didn’t help, because anything they tried would be useless anyway. It was impossible for them to subdue a heaven-step Thunder Soul; this level of power was not something they could encroach upon.

The purple-clothed old man rushed to the front. He held a mace in his hands and smashed down at the heaven-step Thunder Soul. If he faced this heaven-step Thunder Soul alone then he wouldn’t have much confidence in himself, but with four people behind him he had faith he could seal it with a single strike.

Bang bang bang!

The purple-clothed old man’s treasure mace shined with blue white lightning as he struck out with 100% of his strength.

“Hah!”

The purple-clothed old man roared out and smashed his mace down at the Purple Lion Thunder Source’s head.

“Roar!”

The Purple Lion Thunder Source released an earthshaking bellow. All of the surrounding Life Destruction martial artists felt themselves go deaf for a moment. Those with weaker cultivations even had their eardrums burst apart!

The purple-clothed old man bore the brunt of this shockwave. His body shook as the roar washed over him, causing him to bleed out from his head. The Purple Lion Thunder Source then formed a massive purple claw and swiped out at the purple-clothed old man. With a loud explosive sound, the purple-clothed old man was sent flying back like a ball!

As he flew backwards, the purple-clothed old man's treasure armor was burnt by the power of thunder. His internal organs were completely shattered and he vomited a great mouthful of blood, his life quickly fading away.

"What!?"

The four other thunder-attribute martial artists instantly skidded to a halt. Luckily, they hadn't yet approached and had escaped this attack. As they saw the fate that the strongest purple-clothed old man had suffered, all of them were frightened to the point their souls nearly left them. They turned around to flee, but it was already too late!

The Purple Lion Thunder Source was the very incarnation of thunder-attribute Laws; it was a proud and haughty existence! Because its Twinlife Thunder Crystal had been shattered, it had been sent into a raving anger. And now, how could it possibly tolerate a bunch of ants daring to provoke it!?

It erupted with a great roar and then rushed towards the four thunder-attribute martial artists. It was like a lion running into a flock of sheep. For a time, miserable cries filled the air and a rain of blood fell down from the skies!

In just a few blinks of the eye, four thunder-attribute martial artists were tossed away like broken sacks. One of their heads had exploded; he had obviously died. As for the other three, their bodies had been charred black, their lives soon coming to an end!

This sudden scene caused all of the surrounding martial artists to pale; just where had this thing come from!?

Chapter 840 – Forming the Spirit Body

Chapter 840 – Forming the Spirit Body

…

…

…

Even a ranked 250 Destiny Decree master wasn’t a worthy opponent. This monster was far too strong!

Could a heaven-step Thunder Soul be powerful to this degree?

As the surrounding low level martial artists saw the purple lion clawing and raving in the sky, they had already fled far away. They feared that they would be affected by this power of thunder and scorched into ash.

A Sovereign from a superior fifth-grade sect looked up at the Purple Lion Thunder Source in the sky, a pensive expression on his face.

“It came from the north… did it come from the Sea of Miracles?”

“What? The Sea of Miracles?”

As soon as these words were mentioned, many martial artists were shaken to the core!

That was right! Looking at the entire Sky Spill Continent, the area with the strongest thunder was only a single place. That was the Sea of Miracles, also known as the Ocean of Endless Storms!

The skies above the Sea of Miracles were always covered in dark clouds with countless flashes of lightning illuminating them. There, it wouldn't be strange to find a heaven-step Thunder Soul at all. But in other areas, heaven-step Thunder Souls had nearly all vanished.

Currently, this purple lion in front of them was obviously an extraordinary heaven-step Thunder Soul amongst its rank. There was a very high chance that it had been bred within the Sea of Miracles!

Moreover, the direction it had come from had verified this!

Why would a super heaven-step Thunder Soul come here from the Sea of Miracles?

As the martial artists thought of this, all of them paled. To them, the Sea of Miracles was a land of demons and ghosts – all who entered who died without exception. Even a peerless genius, even the highest under the heavens was the same!

Any sort of existence that originated from that horrifying land would frighten everyone, no matter what it was!

Had it come for Lin Lanjian?

The Asura Divine Emperor looked at all of this from a distance, his lips curving in a smile. Although he didn't know why Lin Lanjian's crossing of Life Destruction would draw in an existence from the Sea of Miracles, there was something that was clear to him. That was that the purple lion spelled disaster for Lin Lanjian!

Bang!

Purple golden thunder violently raged as it fell from the skies, forming a massive wave of purple thunder. The Elders Palace was covered in endless purple lightning, instantly disintegrating it into ashes!

After a brief moment, all that was left over in the area was the Sky Lock Array that Lin Ming was within.

The Sky Lock Array trembled as it was covered in that thunderstorm. Although it didn't shatter, the rampaging power of thunder managed to penetrate the array formation and rush into that sea of golden energy.

Chi chi chi!

Lightning flashed in that sea of energy, a brilliant burst of light emanating from it once more!

And Lin Ming was within this sea of thunder. With his being dispersed into a body of energy, he directly faced a baptism of this purple thunder.

If it were an ordinary Life Destruction martial artist then they would have perished here. But Lin Ming's true form was unharmed. His fires of life still blazed as vigorously as before!

Shibai was startled but he didn't take action.

He was completely focused on maintaining the Sky Lock Array. Without any emotion in his voice he said, "Increase the energy input and stabilize the Sky Lock Array."

With three great Divine Sea powerhouses managing the Sky Lock Array, Shibai was fully confident in the firmness of the array protections. As for the lightning that the Purple Lion Thunder Source released, it hadn't harmed Lin Ming at all. Shibai was able to clearly sense this through his contact with the array formation.

"This Thunder Soul from the Sea of Miracles must have some grudge with Lin Lanjian..."

This situation had gone beyond his imagination. But as he thought about it, it was also reasonable. When Lin Ming had entered the Sea of Miracles and obtained the legacy of Ancestor Emperor Argent, he didn't know why, but Lin Ming must have offended this purple lion Thunder Soul somehow.

"Roar!"

Before the first attack ended, the Purple Lion Thunder Source issued out another savage roar. This roar had just caused a rank 250 Destiny Decree master to bleed from the head and be seriously wounded. However, through the protection of this large array, this roar became nothing but a gentle breeze, unable to cause any damage at all.

The thunder became increasingly violent. The Purple Lion Thunder Source's expression became grim and fierce. Its body turned into countless bolts of lightning that assimilated into the dark clouds!

It had turned its form to pure thunder!

Bang bang bang!

Everything between the heavens and earth was already bathed in a rich purple gold light. Lightning blazed beyond comparison, breaking through all. As for Lin Ming, he remained inside the Sky Lock Array, withstanding this terrifying baptism alone!

From afar, it was as if he stood alone, facing the world with just his power!

The grandeur and potency of this power was terrifying. No one could imagine just what sort of calamity Lin Ming was experiencing within the Sky Lock Array!

"This is too horrible. Even with the protection of the array formation he still has to directly withstand the might of this thunder. Without the protection of his physical form, his soul and will are all exposed to this thunder!"

"How can anyone possibly live in this kind of environment!?" A martial artist dozens of miles away gulped. From then until now, he still didn't understand one thing.

Was Lin Ming dead or alive?

At the start it seemed as if he had died. Afterwards, with the beating sound that came from the heavens it seemed that he was still alive. And now, with countless arcs of purple gold lightning crashing down on him, no one could say with confidence whether he was dead or alive.

“He absolutely must have perished here. Only a Divine Sea Supreme Elder could possibly withstand this sort of environment. And Lin Ming was at the most critical moment of crossing Life Destruction. He does not have true essence to protect himself, or even a physical form to withstand the might of thunder. If he can survive through this then I… I will eat my own sword.”

A fifth-grade sect genius lifted the sword in his hand as he swore this oath.

However, just as he made this oath, a white-clothed youth turned his head and faintly smiled at him, causing him to feel faint.

“What’re you looking at me for?”

The white-clothed youth snickered and said, “I’m seeing how tough your teeth look.”

“You!!”

The fifth-grade sect genius became angry from shame. But at this time, there was a loud cracking sound as if the world was breaking. This resonant blast broke through the skies, as if a great dragon were roaring out loud, shattering mountains and rivers!

At this time, a brilliant light burst out from the Sky Lock Array. Then, a shocking scene occurred. From the Sky Lock Array, a bolt of silver white light shot upwards, like an unrivalled divine spear that split apart the endless sky!

“What is that!?”

Everyone turned their eyes to the silver white divine light that broke into the heavens. For a time, everyone thought that their minds had fallen into an illusion!

“That is a spear of will formed from a battle spirit! This silver white majesty… silver battle spirit!?”

A bronze battle spirit was grayish green in color and a silver battle spirit was silver white in color. Then, this scene in front of them had to be the truth.

Silver battle spirit?

The martial artists present didn't have time to ask just what a so-called silver battle spirit meant, because at this moment, that unrivalled divine spear suddenly came chopping down from the skies.

It was like a pillar of heaven that was being wielded by a giant!

Kacha!

The thick and dark thunder clouds in the sky were split in half!

"Roar!"

The Purple Lion Thunder Source issued a maniacal roar. It transformed back into its main body, plunging towards that silver white divine light and smashing into it!

Bang bang bang!

The sound of 10,000 thunderclaps filled the air. The entire world was lit up with a boundless purple light. The stars and moon lost their color, and the void itself seemed to nearly shatter under the pressure!

"Awoo!"

The Purple Lion Thunder Source let out a miserable cry as it tumbled backwards like it was wounded.

As an indestructible and immortal energy body, the Purple Lion Thunder Source did not fear any powerhouse that could not control the power of thunder, no matter how high their cultivation was. Even a Divine Sea Supreme Elder couldn't harm it. This was because if it dissipated into thunder, it would disappear without a trace, being simultaneously immune to both material and soul attacks.

What it most feared were martial artists skilled in Laws of Thunder. Their cultivation did not necessarily need to be high. They only needed to use their understanding of the Thunder Laws to capture and imprison it.

Before, the Argent White Sword had relied on the residual thunder will of the Eightfall Thunder Emperor in order to command the power of thunder. The Argent White Sword had been able to galvanize the power of Laws to twist thunder, causing the Purple Lion Thunder Source to be injured.

And now, this had been repeated once more. Lin Ming had depended on his silver battle spirit that contained a will of thunder to stab into the Purple Lion Thunder Source.

The Purple Lion Thunder Source let out a roar of anger and loathing. It began to attract all of the surrounding power of thunder, like a whale drawing in water, all of this energy entering into its body. At this time, the Purple Lion Thunder Source's body expanded to hundreds of feet in size. Its domineering aura rose to unprecedented height as it faced the silver white battle spirit and rushed out at it once more!

Peng peng peng!

In the night skies, a purple lion was wildly struggling with a white dragon. Purple gold light and golden red lightning filled every inch of the world. The entire night sky was completely swallowed by thunder!

This was a battle that made the heart race!

The surrounding sect Elders and Princes were all dumbstruck. They had repeatedly confirmed that the silver white spear of divine light was in truth a silver battle spirit!

"It really is a silver battle spirit… a silver battle spirit that even a Divine Sea Supreme Elder cannot comprehend… just how did he do it?"

Within the Sky Spill Continent, a silver battle spirit was simply a legendary existence. Of the current existing Divine Sea powerhouses, none of them had a silver battle spirit. Even a perfect bronze battle spirit was extremely rare!

And Lin Ming somehow had a silver battle spirit?

Above the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom’s spirit boat, Ouye Qingfeng sucked in a deep breath of cold air. He could faintly feel Lin Ming’s fires of life that blazed like an inferno within the Sky Lock Array, his control over the spear of will, as well as the exalted glory as if he were facing the world alone.

The more violently the thunder came crashing down, the more exuberant Lin Ming’s fires of life became. Although Ouye Qingfeng was certainly a proud son of heaven in his generation, when he compared himself to Lin Ming, a feeling that he would never catch up to him was born in his heart.

In the direction of the Asura Divine Kingdom, Situ Yaoyue was bathed in the bright lightning light, no color reflected in her inky black pupils. “A body melted into an energy form, merging into one with the power of thunder. Not only did that purple lion’s attack not harm him, but it instead tempered his body once more. Now, his body has become thunder. With his battle spirit as his spear and fused with the Concept of Thunder, he is unstoppable! This is a fight that I am looking forwards to more and more!”

Situ Yaoyue stroked the shaft of her spear, her fighting spirit soaring high.

Only the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s Yang Yun was calmly standing atop his golden divine carriage. He remained completely unmoved as he was before, without any hint of what he was thinking crossing his face.

“Awoo!”

In the skies, the Purple Lion Thunder Source once again let out a miserable cry. Its body was actually stabbed through by Lin Ming’s spear of will again!

As an energy lifeform, there was no problem for the Purple Lion Thunder Source to have its body pierced. However, this time was different. Lin Ming's battle spirit contained the Laws of Thunder. After the spear pierced through the Purple Lion Thunder Source, the pure power of thunder within the purple lion broke out like a burst dam, flooding into the battle spirit spear and being continuously sucked into the Sky Lock Array!

The Purple Lion Thunder Source was shocked. It cried out in agony again and again.

But within the Sky Lock Array, after being flooded with the Purple Lion Thunder Source's energy, Lin Ming's disintegrated body finally began to slowly assemble itself!

After the physical body was destroyed, reform the spirit body!

Chapter 841 – Successfully Leaving Seclusion, Achieving Life Destruction

Chapter 841 – Successfully Leaving Seclusion, Achieving Life Destruction

…

…

…

The Purple Lion Thunder Source howled, using all of its strength to break free of that silver white spear of will. A massive hole had been torn through the right side of its body as its entire right leg had been cut off!

Chi chi chi!

The severed right leg of the Purple Lion Thunder Source immediately turned into a pure arc of electricity, imprisoned by the Laws of Thunder that were fused onto Lin Ming's spear. It was instantly absorbed and thrust into the Sky Lock Array.

A Thunder Source was known as immortal and indestructible. However, that immortal and indestructible part was only the crystal nucleus of the Thunder Source. For instance, the crystal nucleus of the Purple Lion Thunder Source was located in the head, and the rest of its 'body' was only a condensed form of energy. If it were destroyed, then it could be formed from energy once more, although it would require a long time to do so.

The Purple Lion Thunder Source howled in utter sorrow. Its hatred towards Lin Ming reached the limits of possibility. However, it was also extremely afraid of the Thunder Laws contained within that spear of will.

As the Purple Lion Thunder Source saw that silver white spear of will once again tremble and hum, a sliver of fear finally enveloped its heart. It turned around and escaped to the north!

The Purple Lion Thunder Source fled. With its speed, if it decided to run away, then there was nothing Lin Ming could do about it. Moreover, the silver battle spirit was far from being able to seal it.

The endless lightning that filled the skies began to recede. A massive amount of lightning light was captured by that silver white spear, and transformed into energy that was absorbed into the Sky Lock Array.

The Heaven and earth origin energy, the power of thunder, as well as the infinite starlight in this dimensional realm flushed towards the sea of energy that Lin Ming was within, causing the energy around him to wildly surge.

A moment later, all of the thunder in the sky vanished, and the night sky became calm once again. The moon was bright against the dark clouds, and the night wind still blew as gently as before. All that remained were the shades of lightning in everyone's pupils to remind them of what had just occurred.

It was like everything just now had been a fleeting dream!

A silver rank battle spirit that surpassed a Divine Sea Supreme Elder had appeared, as well as a seemingly peak heaven-step Thunder Soul from the Sea of Miracles. The battle between these two existences had left everyone dumbfounded. In the end, that Thunder Soul from the Sea of Miracles had actually been defeated by Lin Lanjian!

Too many shocking scenes had happened tonight. This had surpassed their scope of understanding.

"Mm? What is that sound?"

A martial artist's mind stirred. He could hear a faint drumming sound in the air.

As he said this, the other martial artists present also pricked up their ears.

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

That sound was just like a great beating drum. However, the sound was faint and lingering, as if it came from the distance horizon.

“What is that sound?”

“Are those footsteps?”

Every time this powerful and rhythmic beat sounded out, it left a great impact in everyone’s heart. Although it wasn’t as majestic as the heavenly notes that contained a bit of the Great Dao’s charm, every single beat caused the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy to surge, as if they contained some sort of unspeakable power of Laws.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

The beating sound became increasingly loud until it rang out like thunderclaps in the ears.

A deep red mass of light began gathering within the Sky Lock Array. Every time this beat rang out, a brilliant burst of light came from within the red mass of light.

“Look at the Sky Lock Array! It’s that red light!”

“Is that a heart? Lin Lanjian is finally reforming his body!”

Martial artists shouted out, horrified. After a martial artists body was decomposed and began the process of forming the spirit body, it would all start with the heart! That heavy rhythmic drum had been the sound of Lin Ming’s heartbeat!

In the legends, when a powerhouse neared the peak of martial arts, they could rip their heart out, and it would still beat for several hundred thus years without end. This was because their heart would spur the Laws of the world.

Although Lin Ming's heart still couldn't reach such a boundary, he still had the ability to quicken the heaven and earth origin energy.

"He's finally began to form his spirit body. All of those calamities just now have all been overcome by him! He's simply not human!"

"Why are there so many fantastical phenomena appearing as Lin Lanjian is crossing Life Destruction? Can it only be because his foundation is so solid?" Everyone couldn't help but wonder this in their heart. All of these things that occurred around Lin Ming ran counter to everything they knew about martial arts.

"Perhaps he has an inborn divine body, like the Extreme Violet Dantian, or maybe he has something like an inborn Thunder Soul. It's hard to explain just what is happening." There were far too many strange secrets on Lin Ming's body. Although it wasn't uncommon for a genius to have secrets, Lin Ming's secrets were just far too mystical.

Although a first stage Life Destruction martial artist was said to be required in order to decompose every part of their body and reform a spirit one, nobody could be reborn so thoroughly as Lin Ming had been. Even his brain and skeleton had reformed! This could truly be referred to as life after destruction.

After the heart formed, next were the blood vessels.

The cells that had been floating around in the thunder energy began being pulled together by some supernatural power. These cells had all undergone transformation through energy, which thoroughly changed from their most fundamental basis.

As the blood vessels began to form, it first appeared like translucent crystal, so clear to the point that one could see the energy circulating within. The shining energy finally converged into blood, looking like pale gold mercury, both viscous and profound.

This was new blood. It did not seem like blood, but rather flowing liquid energy.

After the blood appeared, sections of bones began to form. These bones looked as if they were carved from exquisite glass, shining with a radiant crystalline light.

Not only had Lin Ming inherited the tough and indestructible qualities of a body transformation martial artist, he also inherited the true essence containing characteristics of a Life Destruction martial artist. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that if someone took one of Lin Ming's bones and polished them a bit, they wouldn't need to be refined too much before they turned into a low-grade heaven step treasure.

After the skeleton formed, the surrounding flesh and organs began to form. After the physical form was transformed by energy, every ounce of flesh looked like blood red jade without the slightest hint of impurities. After being transformed and condensed through the essence energy of the world, every inch of flesh could hold a massive amount of energy within it.

Chi chi chi!

Golden thunder came shooting down from Lin Ming's head and wrapped around his body, forming a tight net of thunder that looked light a thick cocoon.

Lin Ming was within this cocoon. He was like a butterfly, undergoing the final phase of his transformation.

Strips of muscles, layers of skin, all of it slowly gathered on until the eyes, facial features, and limbs formed.

Finally, his long black hair and lashes reformed, shining with a glorious energy.

Lin Ming's entire body was naked. His knees were pressured up against his chest, wrapped by his arms, as if he were a newborn baby curled up in a cocoon of lightning.

His eyes were closed, and his expression was light, as if he was asleep. Although he had a heartbeat, he didn't breathe. In this form, his body was naturally able to absorb the heaven and earth origin energy from the liquid energy that surrounded him.

His looks became more handsome and perfect, his face more edged and strong. His straight eyebrows slanted towards his temples, and his skin seemed as if it were a work of art carved from the most precious jade. His back was tall and broad, and his legs were long and slender. His heels were solid and powerful. Every subtle line of his muscles was filled with a powerful and dominant beauty. At this time, his entire body could be called perfection.

He was in a deep sleep for 8-10 hours as he completed this final phase of his transformation. None of the surrounding martial artists left, all of them staying to bear witness to this momentous event. Slowly, the first ray of sunlight rose from the east, piercing through the morning mist and illuminating the land in a deep purple luster.

“Purple air comes from the east, an auspicious sign for a lucky day…” Yang Yun looked up towards the slowly rising eastern sun, an incomprehensible smile on his face.

“A new golden era is arriving. I truly anticipate what the future really holds. However, I fear that the world that awaits you isn’t as happy as you think it may be..” Yang Yun said to himself, smiling as he watched the distant thunder cocoon that Lin Ming was within. Then, he said with a faint whisper, “Perhaps you might have the qualifications…to become the key to this golden era…”

……………………

After the sun rose, it arced towards the west. By the afternoon, more than half of the second day had passed. To a martial artist that had lived for over a thousand years, this was only the time it took for meditation.

For many martial artists crossing Life Destruction, forming their spirit body was an extremely long process. Some might even use an entire month of time. Last night, Lin Ming had used a mere quarter hour to form his body. However, the subtle facets of the transformation actually required a much greater amount of time.

In the evening, the Sky Lock Array suddenly trembled. All off the scattered rich heaven and earth origin energy began to rush back towards the Sky Lock Array like a surging tide!

Chi chi chi!

Lightning sparked. Heaven and earth origin energy formed a violent and wild whirlpool.

After a martial artist successfully crossed Life Destruction, the excessive energy in their dantian would spread throughout their body, then becoming empty of energy.

And after the human body transformed into a spirit body that could contain true essence, their body would also have an energy deficit. This would cause them to crazily absorb heaven and earth origin energy from them surroundings, filling them with an energy several times that of before. This was also a reason why a first stage Life Destruction martial artist was so much stronger than a late Revolving Core martial artist.

Normally, a martial artist required several days to absorb energy. For Lin Ming, even though the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy around him was already as rich as it could be, his foundation was extremely solid, and thus he needed far more energy.

Lin Ming's body was like a bottomless pit. A massive cyclone of energy appeared in the sky, forming a funnel at the center that stretched down into the Sky Lock Array, and constantly gathering heaven and earth origin energy at that point.

Lin Ming greedily absorbed all of this energy from his cocoon of thunder. After a quarter hour passed, the surrounding heaven and earth energy was nearly completely absorbed. At this moment, that cocoon of thunder also burst out with a myriad brilliance. A faint echo of the heavens sounded out again, and the breath of the Great Dao seemed to blow through the world, mystical and cast as if a divine dragon were being born.

Everyone's eyes were locked onto the cocoon. The cocoon turned into countless arcs of thunder that scattered away. With the glorious sunset fading behind him, Lin Ming appeared floating high in the air, wrapped in a untouched white robe.

Handsome and beautiful, his temperament was ethereal and sublime, as if he weren't of the world. His steps were calm. As he walked on the wind, his black hair danced in the wind, whipped up by the frenzied heaven and earth origin energy. His eyes were as deep as the stars, and as one looked into them, it was as if one could see the mysteries of the heavens within, making one easy to be lost within his gaze.

At that moment, Lin Ming was soaked in the rays of the setting sun. A peerless talent with a divine appearance, this image branded itself into the hearts of the watching martial artists forever.

“This is really… incredible.” The Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom Princess Ouye Qingyun said. She couldn’t help but acknowledge that at this moment, Lin Ming was filled with an infinitely alluring charm.

Beside her, Ouye Qingfeng faintly smiled, “He truly is a peerless genius of this era. If we can somehow win him over to our Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom, our benefits will be endless.”

As he spoke to here, he turned to his beautiful younger sister, his bright smile widening.

Chapter 842 – Peak of the First Stage of Life Destruction

Chapter 842 – Peak of the First Stage of Life Destruction

…

…

…

The audience of tens of thousands of martial artists was left silent. Lin Ming fluttered high in the sky, the infinite magnificence of the setting sun illuminating his white clothing from behind, leaving a tapestry of light upon it.

At this time he was like an immortal lord descended from the heavens.

“Hahaha! Very good!”

A hearty laugh sounded out. Shibai flew over.

Today was a day that would be recorded in the annals of history. Lin Lanjian had a high chance of becoming a future powerhouse that would be the highest under the heavens. And the location he had crossed his first stage of Life Destruction at was the Forsaken God Clan. As long as Lin Ming didn’t perish in the future then the Forsaken God Clan would have endless benefits.

Lin Ming waved his hand and placed the Sky Lock Array tools in a special spatial ring. He respectfully bowed towards the approaching Shibai and clearly said, “I, Lin Ming, will carve Patriarch Shibai’s graciousness in my heart.”

The Forsaken God Clan had played a pivotal role in Lin Ming's successful crossing of Life Destruction. This could even be considered a life debt. Otherwise, Lin Ming might have died under the Asura Divine Kingdom's hands.

Although this was only a simple pledge, to a martial artist like Lin Ming with an extraordinary will, this pledge was far more than enough.

Shibai slapped Lin Ming's shoulder, all smiles. The reason he had paid such a great price to help Lin Ming wasn't just to repay a favor, but also because he was optimistic about Lin Ming's future prospects. He would definitely be a peerless powerhouse that could reach the late Divine Sea and live for 10,000 years. To the Forsaken God Clan, that meant that they would be protected for another 10,000 years.

"Congratulations Brother Lin." Yang Yun rode over on his divine carriage. He stood up and cupped a hand across his chest. He was also an unrivalled genius of his era. It was just that compared to Lin Ming, he was short a bit of his ethereal temperament, but with an extra point of the noble and free energy of a king.

"Thank you Brother Yang for the God Transforming Pills."

Lin Ming nodded in return. Although he hadn't accepted Yang Yun's invitation to join the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, Lin Ming still had a very good impression of Yang Yun.

As Lin Ming glanced at Yang Yun's dantian, he discovered that even though he broke through Life Destruction, he still wasn't able to clearly see Yang Yun's cultivation. Yang Yun and the Nine Furnace Guard practiced a secret technique to conceal their cultivation, making it difficult to see their dantian.

'That is a very strange and useful cultivation method. If I could learn it then it would be extremely useful to me.'

As Lin Ming thought this, he checked inwards at his own body. As he carefully searched through it he found that the Death Reaper Curse that the second Demon Envoy left within him had completely vanished.

The Death Reaper Curse was a cruel and ruthless curse that was cast at the end of one's life. In exchange for completely burning their own life, soul, and blood essence, they could give a sacrifice to the Death Reaper. This curse would kill the bearer in 100 days. The only method to undo this curse was if the bearer of curse became stronger than the caster, unraveling it with their own strength.

Lin Ming finally obtained this strength after successfully crossing Life Destruction. Thus, the Death Reaper Curse was naturally eliminated.

As he looked at his dantian again, he was impressed to discover that a layer of azure origin energy fog covered his dantian. Also, this fog connected his dantian to his flesh, faintly combining as one. This was the symbol of a true Life Destruction martial artist. The faint dantian was directly connected to the body, unlike a Revolving Core martial artist where their dantian was connected to the body through meridians.

And Lin Ming found that the energy in his dantian was far too rich.

"Mm? I'm already at the peak of the first stage of Life Destruction!"

As soon as he crossed the first stage of Life Destruction he reached the peak! However, this was also reasonable. Lin Ming's cultivation was originally far more than enough. It was just that his physical body was far too tenacious because he practiced body transformation and opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. It had made it extremely difficult to decompose his body, forcing Lin Ming's cultivation to be compressed to the extreme. Then, with a great number of heavenly treasures combined together, he had finally made his breakthrough. His strength had soared in return.

"What? This is..."

As he looked through that azure fog, Lin Ming was startled to find that within his dantian, there was actually a two inch high sprout growing on top of the Black Hole Revolving Core! Two young and luscious leaves stretched out. One of these leaves was red and one of these leaves was gold. These were the young leaves that symbolized fire and thunder. The fire leaf was in the shape of a heart, intertwined with the golden totem symbol that represented the Fire Laws. As for the thunder leaf, that was in the shape of a sword, with the Nine Heavens Thunder Soul twisted around it.

"The Heretical God Sprout moved to my dantian?"

When Lin Ming had first obtained the Heretical God Force, the memories of the Realm of the Gods Supreme Elder had stated that the Heretical God Seed would move to a martial artist's dantian once it was opened. This was because a martial artist's central focus point would at that time shift from their heart to their dantian.

However, for Lin Ming, the Heretical God Sprout had only shifted to his dantian after he crossed Life Destruction and formed his spirit body. Lin Ming guessed that this was related to the body transformation technique he cultivated. In the body transformation path, the heart was the most important part of the body, and that was likely to be why the Heretical God Sprout had stayed there until now.

"The Heretical God Sprout is actually growing on top of my Revolving Core crystal nucleus… I have no idea what sort of change that will bring about…"

Lin Ming looked at the Heretical God Sprout, feeling a bit gripped and apprehensive. It had actually chosen to grow on top of the Revolving Core crystal nucleus… he had no idea just how it would influence his future cultivation.

As Lin Ming was examining himself, Shibai also discovered that Lin Ming had reached the peak of the first stage. That meant that Lin Ming was only a step away from reaching the second stage of Life Destruction!

This caused him to be ecstatic. He had never heard of this type of situation before!

"Little Brother Lin, you broke through straight to the peak of the first stage of Life Destruction?"

Lin Ming nodded. "It's likely because I used too many precious materials and reached this boundary by luck. I'll have to consolidate my foundation before continuing."

Shibai laughed, "Very good! Solidify your foundation! Good preparation is the key to success. Once you break through your shackles you will soar into the skies like a dragon, unstoppable! And what is rare is that your character is good and your will is tough. You are most suited for practicing martial arts!"

If Lin Ming had to say what he excelled in, it wasn't his martial talent or perception, but rather his heart of martial arts and solid will. The martial intents that Lin Ming had obtained were all closely related to these two.

Before Lin Ming could speak further, a golden brother and sister duo came walking over. They were the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom's Ouye Qingfeng and Ouye Qingyun.

"Congratulations Brother Lin for successfully crossing Life Destruction! Your future potential is limitless!" Ouye Qingfeng crossed an arm across his chest. "Brother Lin is truly an unrivalled grace of heaven. I'm really feeling the pressure here!"

"Sir Lin, congratulations." Ouye Qingyun lightly whispered.

Lin Ming had long ago known the background of these two. He respectfully greeted them in return. Since he still had to stay on the Sky Spill Continent for a long period of time, it would be beneficial for him if he formed good relations with these important characters of the four Divine Kingdoms.

"These past few days I've heard that Brother Lin has been collecting medicines, spirit plants, and wood spirit jade. I just happened to have prepared some. It's just a minor gift. Brother Lin, please accept this."

Ouye Qingfeng pulled out a wood spirit jade box as he spoke. There was a specially carved slit in the box so that Lin Ming could investigate the inside with his perception.

There was a piece of million year wood spirit jade as well as a massive number of precious medicinal plants. A conservative estimate of this wood spirit jade box was 300,000 spirit essence stones in total. To the current Lin Ming, these things were naturally useful to him. He needed this and more in order to complete his study of alchemy. Regardless of whether it was crossing Life Destruction or opening the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, all of that needed precious medicines.

Just as Lin Ming was about to speak, Ouye Qingfeng suddenly said, ”Brother Lin absolutely must not refuse. I only wish to make a good friend, nothing more.”

Since Lin Ming had gone into seclusion, there had been a good number of people seeking to meet him. They all wished to become friends with Lin Ming, and Ouye Qingfeng was no exception. If Lin Ming really could defeat all the Life Destruction martial artists of the Asura Divine Kingdom, then his future achievements would be limitless.

Ouye Qingfeng had originally prepared to send out this gift only if Lin Ming defeated the Asura Divine Kingdom. But now that he saw all the phenomena that occurred as Lin Ming crossed Life Destruction he had changed his mind. Giving Lin Ming a gift and befriending him now would be much better than to be one of the endless others that would follow if he won.

“Then I’ll have to thank you, Brother Ouye.” Lin Ming accepted the wood spirit jade and medicinal materials. He really did need these things, and he had also accepted Yang Yun’s God Transforming Pills before this. If he refused to accept Ouye Qingfeng’s gifts then he would certainly grow suspicious in his heart. This wasn’t a result that he wanted.

“Haha, Brother Lin is too polite. Brother Lin has the life of a Peerless Emperor. In the future, you might even become the highest under the heavens. At that time, you’ll just need to take care of this little brother a little.” Ouye Qingfeng jokingly said.

As everyone was in a congratulatory mood, a harsh voice suddenly cut through it –

“How pompous. Don’t you know that you only crossed Life Destruction? It’s like you think you broke through the Divine Sea or something and not the first stage of Life Destruction. In the Sky Spill Continent, there are at least 50,000, if not 80,000 martial artists at the first stage of Life Destruction or above. Even this dimensional realm has a bunch of them. This place is literally covered in them. So what’s the big deal with you?”

This caustic voice caught everyone’s attention. Everyone looked over to see that the one speaking was a black-clothed youth. His hands were crossed over his chest, a look of disapproval on his face.

This person was Situ Chuan, who had been badly beaten by Lin Ming.

After he had been humiliated by Lin Ming, he had seen Lin Ming as his competitor. But now, he could only watch on as the gap between them grew more and more wide; there was simply no chance at all that he would ever catch up. This possibility caused Situ Chuan to both hate and be jealous of Lin Ming, making him openly taunt him.

“Humph! Who cares what sort of worldly phenomenon occurs during your breakthrough, the first stage of Life Destruction is still the first stage of Life Destruction! Do you think you can really defeat the Life Destruction powerhouses of my Asura Divine Kingdom?”

As Situ Chuan spoke, seven or eight martial artists began appearing from the dark behind him, each one of them a high stage Life Destruction powerhouse. Their foundations were also incomparably solid. Without a doubt, all of these individuals were Destiny Decree masters.

Lin Ming saw the red-clothed little boy and the Great Demon Envoy among them. They both had a sixth stage Life Destruction cultivation and were in the top 100 ranks of the Destiny Decree. But among these people, they were obviously not the strongest. The one who gave off the most unfathomable feeling was a handsome young man that stood in front of everyone. He wore a large black robe and his feet were bare. His two eyes were bright and clear like a spring sky, and he gave off a light and vibrant feeling from head to toe. Just looking at him made one’s heart twist.

Lin Ming completely disregarded Situ Chuan and looked straight at this black-robed man. Towards someone like Situ Chan, Lin Ming was simply disinclined to waste breath on him. It wasn't that Situ Chuan was waste, but he was just far too young. For those geniuses of the younger generation to challenge Lin Ming, they would need to be at least 40 years old.

'He is Situ Luosha…' Lin Ming thought. Because Situ Luosha hadn't been hidden, he had heard this man's name.

Situ Luosha was silent. Facing Lin Ming, he felt pressured but was also filled with fighting spirit. Although the process of Lin Ming crossing Life Destruction had been grand and massive, it was still unknown just what his combat strength was like now; he could only find out through true battle. He would not be threatened or intimidated by this young man's aura.

"Lin Lanjian, it doesn't matter how talented you are, there is no meaning to it if you aren't allowed to grow any further! I want to see just how you'll manage to win this battle!" Situ Chuan angrily said as he saw that Lin Ming was obviously ignoring him.

Chapter 843 – Finger as Spear

Chapter 843 – Finger as Spear

…

…

…

As Situ Chuan spoke, all of the present martial artists then remembered the impending battle between Lin Ming and all the Life Destruction martial artists of the Asura Divine Kingdom. Because of the shock that came from seeing all the worldly phenomena that occurred when Lin Ming crossed Life Destruction, they had nearly forgotten about this event.

They originally thought that Lin Ming would absolutely lose this battle. But now, they began to think it was worth watching. After crossing Life Destruction, just what level did Lin Ming's true combat strength reach?

While all sorts of wonderful miracles had occurred around him, the disparity of cultivation still couldn't be made up. Compared to the powerhouses of the Asura Divine Kingdom, there were at least five small boundaries separating them.

"I wonder how Situ Luosha is compared to Lin Ming?"

"I have no idea. Situ Luosha is rank 12 on the Destiny Decree, but that is only an estimation. After all, Situ Luosha hasn't publicly fought in the last 10 years; no one knows just how strong he has become in that time. While Lin Lanjian's talent is extraordinary and all sorts of phenomena occurred during his Life Destruction process, his true combat strength is still unknown. I can't say just how the battle between them will play out."

Phenomena did not represent absolute strength; it only indicated that Lin Ming's strength was not ordinary. As to what degree his true potential had reached, no one was able to guess.

Situ Luosha was also the same. The top 20 ranked martial artists of the Destiny Decree were mystical existences to begin with. They rarely fought, and even if they did it wasn't an event that ordinary martial artists would ever have a chance to see.

To a martial artist, a battle between top masters was a rousing and blood boiling event, much less this one was already filled with unbelievable suspense. Both of their strengths were unknown. On one side was the number one eternally rare talent of the Sky Spill Continent, and the other was also a peak Emperor level talent. The results were simply unpredictable!

Without a doubt, this battle would truly become a grand event in the Sky Spill Content's central region!

Lin Ming faintly smiled at Situ Chuan, "Now that you speak of it, I remember now. I'm already at the peak of the first stage of Life Destruction. In order to break through to the second stage of Life Destruction I'll need some more medicines and materials for support. With my own meager savings, it's not something I can afford. This bet with the Asura Divine Kingdom came just in time. I'll have you pay for all the medicines I'll need."

After reaching the first stage of Life Destruction, the mortal body had already transformed into a spirit body. Although his body hadn't become much tougher, his cells had become more dense. When he crossed the second stage of Life Destruction he would need to decompose his body even more thoroughly than the first time.

And to Lin Ming, whose mortal body was as tough as a heaven-step treasure, all common sense indicated that the difficulty of crossing Life Destruction the second time would be far more difficult, that it should require even rarer medicines.

But this actually wasn't true. Because after crossing the first stage of Life Destruction, the entire body was reformed from energy and could store true essence.

When crossing Life Destruction the first time, the dantian was the center used to detonate true essence and disintegrate the body. This was just like using an explosive bullet to break apart a solid boulder. It would be impossible to break that boulder unless the energy of that bullet exceeded imagination.

But the second stage of Life Destruction was different. This was because a martial artist could use all the true essence stored throughout their body as the foundation for detonating the energy. It was equal to using dozens or hundreds of explosive bullets to break apart a boulder. Wanting to shatter that boulder to fragments would be much easier.

So, while a dual body and law martial artist would find it incredibly difficult to enter Life Destruction from Revolving Core, the following stages of Life Destruction were only slightly more difficult than an essence gathering system martial artist's process. This wasn't strange at all. Otherwise, if a dual body and law martial artist found it increasingly difficult to cross Life Destruction every time, then the medicines they would need would reach such an exaggerated point that even the largest sects within the Realm of the Gods would vomit to death in disgust. There simply wouldn't be any martial artists that dual cultivated in body and law.

Situ Chuan heard Lin Ming still recalling the bet and immediately laughed, "You are already at the edge of death and yet you're still thinking of a bet for medicine! What an idiot!"

Lin Ming glanced at the overly animated Situ Chuan. He was originally too lazy to bother with his nonsense, but that didn't mean he would let someone else freely step on his face. "You're called Situ Chuan, right? You're quite the arrogant one. When the time comes, do you dare to follow me onstage and exchange a few moves?"

Lin Ming's few words caught in Situ Chuan's throat. Going onstage and fighting Lin Ming? Wasn't that the same as suicide? He wasn't even a match for Lin Ming before he crossed Life Destruction, much less at this time.

“Too scared?” Lin Ming laughed. “If you go onstage, I won’t even use my true essence. I’ll just use my finger to make a single move. If you can block it then you can consider yourself as having won.”

“What!?” Situ Chuan raged with anger. In front of so many people he was actually being looked down upon. To use only a finger and make only a single move. And most importantly… he wouldn’t use true essence!

If a martial artist didn’t use true essence, the power of their attack would be far too limited. This was because true essence was the fundamental basis for a martial artist’s attacks. The reason that a Revolving Core martial artist’s strength experienced a qualitative leap upwards once they reached the Life Destruction realm was because their body would become a spirit body and true essence would no longer be restricted to their dantian and meridians. This meant that their total amount of true essence would increase by several times. Naturally, the power of all their attacks would greatly improve, and even their endurance would be enhanced.

Lin Ming not using true essence was the same as him not using the superiority of a Life Destruction martial artist. In other words, if Lin Ming placed this restriction on himself, that was basically the same as him not having broken through to Life Destruction.

In front of so many heroes of the world, if Situ Chuan couldn’t even win in this situation then how could he still have any face to stay in the Sky Spill Continent’s central region?

“Your bullying has gone too far! Do you really think you’re invincible in the world? Alright then, I will block your finger!!”

Although Situ Chuan was arrogant and rude, he wasn’t a fool who was swayed by his emotions. He agreed to the rules Lin Ming had set just now; he didn’t think he could withstand any stronger attack from Lin Ming.

At this moment, a cold voice suddenly sounded out in Situ Chuan’s ears, “You are far too immature! Do you want to die!?”

This voice was a true essence sound transmission. As it reached Situ Chuan, it rang in his ears like a thunderclap, causing him to shiver throughout his body and mind. The one who spoke was his father, the Asura Divine Emperor Situ Haotian!

Situ Haotian had agreed with Lin Ming that this would be a life or death struggle; one could freely kill their opponent. If Lin Ming killed Situ Chuan then he wouldn't be able to do anything about it!

The Asura Divine Emperor had countless sons and daughters. Those children of his with ordinary talent could die however they wanted and the Asura Divine Emperor wouldn't feel anything at all. But Situ Chuan was an extremely talented son of his. The reason he was weak right now was because he was simply too young. As long as he could live through a few dozen more years, then with Situ Chuan's talent there was absolutely no problem for him to reach the sixth stage of Life Destruction. At that time he might even reach the top 30 ranks of the Destiny Decree. Before a hundred years of age, he even had a faint hope of attacking the Divine Sea. The Asura Divine Emperor certainly didn't want to see such a talented son perish here.

After being scolded by his father, Situ Chuan looked a bit afraid. "Father, he has gone too far! Moreover, how can I not even keep off a single finger of his without true essence? If I cower and back down today then how will I walk with my head held high in the future?"

The surrounding tens of thousands of martial artists stared at Situ Chuan, some of them with gloating expressions. Even if Situ Chuan could rid himself of this potential heart demon and reach the Divine Sea, this shame would still be remembered by everyone here today. It would never be erased.

Situ Haotian was deep in thought for a moment. He believed that if Lin Ming dared to say this then he would have the confidence to win. But, he didn't think that Lin Ming could use just a finger to kill his son.

He swiped his spatial ring, and with a flick of his finger, a black light submerged into Situ Chuan's body.

“Mm? This is…” Situ Chuan traced his chest. He could feel a layer of solid protective energy there. “Demon God Heartguard Mirror?”

This was one of the Asura Divine Kingdom’s holy relics, a defensive quasi-Saint artifact. The Demon God Heartguard Mirror was always held in Situ Haotian’s hands and now he was using it to protect Situ Chuan. Situ Haotian believed that with this, Situ Chuan should be able to block Lin Ming’s attack.

With the Demon God Heartguard Mirror, Situ Chuan became much more confident in himself. He urged his protective true essence to the limit. With the support of the Demon God Heartguard Mirror, his protective true essence contained a hint of a darkness-attribute, as if it would swallow all!

Situ Chuan looked at Lin Ming, grinning diabolically as he said, “Lin Lanjian, let’s exchange moves here, we don’t have to wait for the battle two months from now! I want to see just what you can do to me!”

‘Demon God Heartguard Mirror… so it’s the Concept of Darkness.’ Lin Ming looked at the true essence barrier. On the barrier, faint black patterned lines flowed across. Although the Demon God Heartguard Mirror only accounted for a small part of the Demon Emperor Armor, it was actually the core of the Demon Emperor Armor. Its value was higher than every other part of the Demon Emperor Armor!

The barrier of true essence contained the Laws of Darkness. In order to activate the Demon God Heartguard Mirror and display its true and complete strength, one needed to understand the Darkness Laws. Otherwise, one wouldn’t even be able to use one-tenth of its power.

With Situ Chuan’s current level, he was obviously unable to display the use of these black patterns.

Lin Ming stretched out his right index finger. He didn’t use any true essence, but his index finger burst out with a brilliantly glowing silver light.

"Mm? He's not using true essence right? So how come there's light shooting out?" A nearby low level martial artist asked, puzzled.

"That is a battle spirit, a silver level battle spirit. It isn't true essence..." A sect Elder near that young martial artist said with a sigh. A silver battle spirit belonged in the domain of legends. He never thought that it would ever appear in his lifetime, much less with a mere first stage Life Destruction martial artist.

The silver light gradually condensed until a silver long spear appeared out of thin air. After a battle spirit stepped into the silver level, it no longer needed to be attached to objects. One could directly manifest it into reality to attack someone.

Lin Ming also wanted to know just what degree of striking power his battle spirit had obtained.

'The Demon God Heartguard Mirror is something that I will take sooner or later, once I have enough strength!' As Lin Ming thought this, he used his finger as a spear and pointed it out.

Situ Chuan tightly gripped his fists as he faced Lin Ming's attack. He revolved his true essence to the limit.

Woosh!

The dazzling silver light flashed. The swift, sharp, and incomparably fierce spear potential made it hard to watch this with wide eyes. Without any true essence and by just depending on a battle spirit, this attack was just like a sharp spear. Even though this strike wasn't aimed at any of the other martial artists present, they still felt as if a spear was being pointed at their foreheads.

As for Situ Chuan, who bore the brunt of this attack, in this instant he felt a deep regret as if 10,000 arrows had pierced his heart. He was overcome by sorrow. Facing this tyrannical will, his martial arts will seemed to tremble. All of his original confidence and momentum suddenly crumbled. He was unable to control the Darkness Laws to begin with, and now faults began to appear even in the true essence that he was pouring into the Demon God Heartguard Mirror.

This was absolute suppression originating from a martial arts will. It was no longer just a difference in striking power.

Peng!

The Demon God Heartguard Mirror's barrier trembled. The silver light slowed for a moment and then ran through Situ Chuan's body!

Situ Chuan gave a stuffy cough and flew backwards.

Chapter 844 – The Day of the Fated Battle

Chapter 844 – The Day of the Fated Battle

…

…

…

Situ Haotian moved, instantly appearing behind Situ Chuan and catching him.

He quickly examined Situ Chuan's injuries with his perception. With the protection of the Demon God Heartguard Mirror, Lin Ming's attack had pierced through Situ Chuan's body, but hadn't managed to kill him.

Even if Situ Chuan wasn't able to display the true might of the Demon God Heartguard Mirror, he still shouldn't have been in such a miserable situation. After all, Lin Ming didn't use any true essence at all.

The combat strength of a silver battle spirit had truly exceeded Situ Haotian's imagination. This sort of thing was originally something that should have existed only in the domain of legends. In the ancient texts, there were only a precious few rough and ominous descriptions of it. There had simply been no one who had ever seen it before.

Lin Ming had a silver battle spirit, extraordinary speed, super strong defensive power, an incomparably solid cultivation foundation, multiple types of high level martial intents, and even a deep understanding of Concept and Laws.

Situ Haotian broke down all of Lin Ming's superior aspects. These were all that he knew about. Perhaps, he might have even more. With all of these factors superimposed upon each other, Lin Ming nearly had no weaknesses at all. His fearfulness lay in his all-around versatility. Every single aspect of battle was simply a strength of his!

“We’re leaving!”

Situ Haotian lifted the unconscious Situ Chuan and turned, flying back to the Asura Divine Kingdom’s tower. From the beginning to the end, Situ Yaoyue still hadn’t appeared. She was Situ Haotian’s strongest trump card, especially prepared for Li Ming.

“No matter how many advantages you have, I want to see just what you’ll do when you face an absolute suppression of cultivation against a seventh stage Life Destruction power. Against Yaoyue, who has an Extreme Violet Dantian, and is also a peak Emperor level talent, just what can you possibly do?”

The Asura Divine Kingdom left, and the other Asura Divine Kingdom Life Destruction powerhouses left with him. The initial deadline for the match was three months. Only one month had passed so far, and there were still two months left.

For a martial artist, two months weren’t enough for a single round of closed door seclusion; it was actually a very short period of time. No one left the dimensional realm. Everyone waited here for the distant day of the decisive battle to begin.

The scene of Lin Ming defeating Situ Chuan with a finger was shocking, but most of the martial artists didn’t change their views.

Lin Ming’s finger didn’t contain any true essence, but he had used his silver battle spirit. A silver battle spirit was one of Lin Ming’s trump cards. After using it, it wasn’t too surprising that he would win.

The key factor lay in all of Lin Ming’s other superiorities. If they were combined together into a perfect whole, just what sort of absolute strength could he reach?

The Asura Divine Kingdom had an inheritance that stretched back for 10,000 years, as their background was extremely deep. The masters they publicly showed had included the unfathomable Situ Luosha, and it was likely they had more hidden masters as well. Lin Ming would certainly find this battle difficult and dangerous. Perhaps he might even die here.

Even so, none of the great influences dared to ignore Lin Ming. What if the Asura Divine Kingdom had no stronger masters available? What if Lin Ming's strength surpassed their greatest imaginations?

If he could pass this trial, then he might have a chance of reaching the Divine Sea in 20 years. Once he broke through to the Divine Sea, he might even become the highest under the heavens. At that time, he would be able to rule over the world for 10,000 years. In the future, he might even be able to use just his strength alone to contend with an entire Divine Kingdom!

Such a character had never appeared since Emperor Shakya. Just who wasn't afraid of this?

If they could form good relations with him, then they could obtain some benefits and shelter, letting them prosper for thousands of years or more. On the other hand, if they offended him, then even if he flipped his hand and exterminated a fifth-grade Holy Land, that still wouldn't be considered too big of a deal!

Thus, even if the chances of Lin Ming winning weren't high, for the following days there were still martial artists of all backgrounds coming to pay him a visit.

Lin Ming's residence was crowded like a city market. Every visiting influence naturally had to prepare some gifts. Although it was impossible for them to be filthy rich like the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom, and bring out several hundred thousand spirit essence stones at once, bringing out treasures worth 20,000-30,000 spirit essence stones was still affordable for them.

Because they knew that Lin Ming needed wood spirit jade and medicine plants and materials, these influences mostly gifted these things. Enough drops of water could eventually fill a bucket. With the gifts of several dozen influences added up, it was more than a small fortune!

However, since Lin Ming had made a breakthrough to Life Destruction, he had continued to close up in training, refusing all visitors. Still, he didn't neglect these people or treat them coldly. All of them were personally received by the Forsaken God Clan's Great Elders and all gifts were received.

The world of martial artists had the custom of reciprocity. After receiving these gifts, if their own sect had someone make a great breakthrough, then others would have to gift them in return. But matters of the future belonged in the future. These treasures were actually very important to Lin Ming right now, and it could be considered timely assistance.

Lin Ming sat within his chamber. Several jade slips were placed before him, all of them containing records of thunder-attribute cultivation methods and the Concept of Thunder understandings from the Eightfall Thunder Emperor.

The Eightfall Thunder Emperor had a talent gifted from the heavens. He had reached an extremely high understanding into the Concept of Thunder. With Lin Ming's current level, he was just able to practice this.

Lin Ming planned to rapidly make up for his deficiency in the Concept of Thunder. Now that he also had a thunder spirit body, he actually didn't have a corresponding Concept cultivation method to support it. This was simply wasting everything he had earned, as he wouldn't be able to display the full power of thunder.

If he couldn't balance the Concepts of Thunder and Fire, then his moves would always appear uncoordinated.

Lin Ming had crossed the first stage of Life Destruction in a perfect manner. He had reached the large success of his spirit body, and every cell within him had been tempered. Even his will and soul now contained the attribute of thunder. Simultaneously, his battle spirit had evolved to the silver level. His strength had risen by astronomical levels…

But Lin Ming was still genuinely determined to meet this battle two months from now with everything he had. Those that looked down on their opponents often suffered miserable fates. Moreover, Lin Ming didn’t even know how strong the powerhouses of the Asura Divine Kingdom were.

“Thunder, the power of death…the power of life….”

Above Lin Ming’s two hands, a thunder ball floated above his palms. The thunder ball in his left hand was filled with a wild and tyrannical energy, while the thunder ball in his right hand looked extremely soft and gentle, like a sphere of milky white light.

Thunder was not just the power of death, but also the power of life.

The so-called power of death describes when a bolt of thunder is able to split apart a towering tree or even kill an enemy. It could even pierce through the endless void. However, the power of life was the ability for thunder to give birth to life.

In the legends, the very first life forms were born when a bolt of thunder struck the ancient sea. Every single human body is even filled with countless tiny arcs of electricity. Their nerves and thoughts were all connected to these small arcs of electricity. When a monster underwent tribulation, they would be tempered by the power of thunder, making their bodies much more formidable.

The power of life and the power of death were the first and second levels of the Thunder Laws.

Lin Ming had touched upon the Fire Laws at Timeworn Phoenix City. The first level Law was Burning Heat, and the second level Law was Annihilation. Every level of Fire Laws corresponded to a different world in the God Transforming Mirror.

The God Transforming Mirror had a total of nine worlds, corresponding with the nine levels of Fire Laws.

Just how many levels were there in the Laws of Thunder?

Without inheritances from the ancient times, it was simply impossible to enlighten oneself on the Laws behind the Concept of Thunder. However, with his heaven-gifted talent, the Eightfall Thunder Emperor had been able to comprehend the first two Concepts of the Thunder Laws. This by itself was proof that his talent was more than extraordinary.

The Eightfall Thunder Emperor had left behind many different martial skills. Lin Ming only had two months, so it was impossible for him to practice all of them. He could only choose two different martial skills. These were…

“The power of death – Sword of Judgment.”

Although this was a sword-based cultivation method, it could still be used with a spear. This was because the Eightfall Thunder Emperor’s thunder-attribute cultivation methods focused only on the Laws, and not the style itself. By thoroughly comprehending the Laws, the myriad abilities were connected.

“The power of life – Thunder Battleform.”

To use the power of thunder to galvanize and enhance the body. This would make the body tougher and attacks stronger. This was impressively a type of supportive martial skill that could indirectly increase one’s striking power. In order to use it, one had to have a thorough understanding into the Thunder Laws that gave birth to the power of life, as well as an extremely clear understanding of how the power of thunder was used in the body.

Only then would a person be able to utilize the Thunder Battleform. If one didn’t understand the power of life Thunder Laws, and carelessly fused the power of raging thunder into their meridians and organs, then they would only end up ruining their body.

These two cultivation methods were the strongest abilities of the Eightfall Thunder Emperor. Of course, they were also the most difficult to comprehend. The reason that Lin Ming dared to practice them in a mere two months of time was because he had full faith in the Heretical God Sprout, as well as in his Thunder Soul.

To the present Lin Ming, not only had all of his cells been tempered by thunder, even his will and soul contained the thunder attribute. In addition, with the Heretical God Sprout supporting him, his affinity with thunder was even higher than the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's. Even the young thunder-attribute geniuses in the Realm of the Gods couldn't compare to him in this aspect.

Time passed by slowly as Li Ming's understanding into the Thunder Laws subtly improved.

Soon, two months breezed by. This time was simply too short for a martial artist to close up for.

"Little Brother Lin!" Just as Lin Ming finished practicing a new move, Shibai's true essence sound transmission sounded out in his ears. "Tomorrow is the day of the grand battle, and the Asura Divine Kingdom has already built the arena. It's about time for you to leave seclusion now."

"Oh, that was too fast!"

Cultivating was truly timeless. Lin Ming felt as if only several days had passed.

After sitting up from his stone bed, popping noises could be heard from Lin Ming's joints, as if countless tiny arcs of thunder exploding within his body.

"Little Brother Lin, how did your training go?" Shibai hurriedly asked after the chamber's stone door opened. He had also looked over the jade slips that the Eightfall Thunder Emperor had left behind. Because he wasn't a thunder-attribute martial artist, he simply wasn't able to cultivate any of them.

Lin Ming said, "I was rushed for time, so I only practiced two martial skills."

"Which martial skills?"

"The Sword of Judgment and the Thunder Battle form."

“Huh?” Shibai was instantly startled. Even if he didn’t look through the cultivation method jade slips that the Eightfall Thunder Emperor left behind, he would still know of these two martial skills, because the history of his family clan had a very detailed recording on these two martial skills. These were the unique and famous martial skills that the Eightfall Thunder Emperor had relied on to walk through the world unrivalled! Yes, it was true that they were powerful, but it was also true that they were also undoubtedly the hardest to practice!

While it was true that Lin Ming was a genius, just how much could he perceive in a mere two months of time?

Shibai also couldn’t help but worry a little. He had thought that Lin Ming would choose a few relatively simple Concept cultivation methods. As long as one had a good enough foundation, one could easily learn them if they could control the power of thunder. He never imagined that Lin Ming’s appetite would be so great that he would choose the two most difficult martial skills from the start.

Shibai opened his mouth and wanted to say something, but shut his mouth soon after, no longer saying anything. Tomorrow was the day of the battle, and any advice he gave now would be useless. He might as well let Lin Ming do as he pleased, so that he could reduce some of the unnecessary pressure around him.

“Come. Your great war approaches. I shall provide you with a good place to rest your mind and soul, so that you will be prepared to meet the fated battle tomorrow. “

Chapter 845 – In Sharp Opposition

Chapter 845 – In Sharp Opposition

…

…

…

On the next day, morning had arrived and the dawn was just rising. Bustling sounds already covered the entire dimensional realm as groups of martial artists came out from their residences, gathering in streams of people as they walked over to where the Asura Divine Kingdom had built the arena.

These martial artists were nearly all the heroes from the Sky Spill Continent's central region. Just from looking around, one could see Revolving Core and Life Destruction level masters everywhere. Xiantian realm martial artists were rare and Houtian realm martial artists were even lower.

After all, this was the battle that symbolized the highest level under the Divine Sea. Let alone Houtian realm martial artists, even Xiantian realm martial artists only came for fun. The attacks would be incomparably fast, and they wouldn't even be able to see or understand the Concepts and Laws behind them. If they had come here, it was only because they were brought by their Elders to widen their horizons.

"There are truly many heroic young elites in the Sky Spill Continent. Just the four Divine Kingdoms themselves surpass our Holy Demon Continent's super Holy Lands."

Lan Xin flew in the sky, sighing.

Duanmu Qun nodded. He came from a Fey super Holy Land, the Divine Wood Holy Land. They could also be barely considered a quasi sixth-grade sect, but was just shy of coming close to one of the four Divine Kingdoms. The four Divine Kingdoms were not only powerful but they also had many fifth-grade sects subordinate to them. This point alone far surpassed the Divine Wood Holy Land.

In truth, in terms of total comprehensive strength, the Sky Spill Continent was weaker than the Holy Demon Continent. The Holy Demon Continent had numerous races and there was war being waged all year round. The martial artists there that were constantly in life or death situations, progressing at a speed far surpassing those of the more pastoral Sky Spill Continent.

However, in terms of just the most powerful martial arts influences, the Sky Spill Continent actually surpassed the Holy Demon Continent.

This was because of the existence of the Sea of Miracles.

The Sea of Miracles produced a massive amount of resources from its center. The four Divine Kingdoms were bountiful and rich because of the Sea of Miracles.

The Holy Demon Continent had the corresponding Eternal Demon Abyss. However, tens of thousands of years ago, a sixth-grade sect that ruled over the Holy Demon Continent had gathered 12 Emperor level powerhouses and wished to confine all the infernal energy of the Eternal Demon Abyss with a massive array, saving it for themselves to guarantee that their Holy Land would have a boundless destiny for the next 100,000 years. The result was that a great claw had stretched out from the Eternal Demon Abyss and killed all 12 Emperor level powerhouses, including even the Holy Lord of that Holy Land. On that day, that Holy Lord and his Holy Land perished. From then on, the Eternal Demon Abyss was cursed. Any Divine Sea powerhouse that dared take a step into the Blood Slaughter Steppes would die, let alone be able to enter the 1000 mile forbidden zone to search for lucky chances. The only exception was for those that had become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon.

It was still two hours from the start of the battle, but the nearby martial field was already filled with people. The most favorable positions in the sky were occupied by the great figures present. Even the Elders of fifth-grade sects were only able to suspend themselves at a low altitude. As for Revolving Core powerhouses, they had to fall on the ground and watch from afar.

Tens of thousands of powerhouses had converged within the dimensional realm, all of them here to bear witness to this great battle.

The morning sun rose, radiant, and prismatic light spread throughout the world. At that time, a loud and clear phoenix cry rang through the heavens and earth. From afar, one could see 12 phoenix-like birds pulling a floating jade green ship, slowing flying over.

Each one of these birds was 100 feet long with a wingspan of over 150 feet. As they spread their wings and floated, a faint golden light sprinkled downwards. It was simply like a goddess travelling out in the world.

"That is… the White Clan's Fairy Snow Gale!"

The White Clan was a Holy Land level family clan that lived at the borders of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. This family clan had a special bloodline. It was similar to the bloodline seal of the Forsaken God Clan; their power was not to be trifled with. And, Fairy Snow Gale was the Divine Sea Supreme Elder of the White Clan.

In a battle between Life Destruction level powerhouses, a Divine Sea Supreme Elder had actually come to watch!

When Lin Ming was preparing to cross Life Destruction, although it captured the attention of the world, it still wasn't enough to disturb any Divine Sea Supreme Elders. But later, all sorts of various phenomena had occurred as he was crossing Life Destruction, repeatedly confirming the truth that he was the eternally rare number one talent. If he could win this battle then it was likely he would become the highest under the havens. This matter was naturally worthy of a Divine Sea Supreme Elder's attention!

After the White Clan's Fairy Snow Gale arrived, a misty auspicious purple light appeared in the sky. From afar, an extraordinary and venerable blue-clothed old man flew over. He held a peach walking stick in his hand and rode on top of a green ox.

This old man’s eyebrows were so long that they hung at the corners of his mouth. He looked kind and elderly. From his head to his toes, there wasn’t the least bit of pressure coming from him. He only seemed to be an old mortal man with an otherworldly temperament.

“That’s Old Man Good Fortune! Heavens! He’s still alive!” A martial artist blabbed out.

“Shut up, a Divine Sea Supreme Elder’s senses are beyond sharp. What happens if you manage to offend them? Do you want to die?”

“Old Man Good Fortune is the oldest living Divine Sea Supreme Elder in the world. He is at the late Divine Sea realm!

The last time that Old Man Good Fortune had appeared in the world was over a thousand years ago. At that time, it was already said that he was over 7000 years old. After not being seen for a long time, it was rumored that Old Man Good Fortune had died while meditating. No one ever imagined that he would reappear in the public eye today.

Old Man Good Fortune came from no sect, nor did he have a family clan. He was like a wild crane leisurely flying through the world. No one knew just how strong he was. But, rumors said that thousands of years ago, he had once fought the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s Highest Divine Emperor with neither side being able to emerge victorious!

In short, he was a super powerhouse nearing the highest under the heavens. He was a character at the same level as the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor and the Great Smelting Imperial Grand Uncle, unfathomable.

“I never thought that Senior Good Fortune would also come to the Forsaken God Clan’s dimensional realm to watch a fight between juniors. Two thousand years ago, I followed Master to pay respects to Senior. Today, for this junior to see senior’s magnificence again is truly a deep honor.”

As an exquisite voice rang out, a woman wearing white silk flew out from the jade ship. She was Fairy Snow Gale. With Old Man Good Fortune’s appearance, Fairy Snow Gale naturally had to personally come down from her boat to pay her respects to him, faintly like a junior seeing a senior. This left all the surrounding martial artists speechless. This Old Man Good Fortune truly had a ridiculously high rank. Even Fairy Snow Gale had to respectfully greet him as a junior.

“Ah, so it’s White Fengfeng’s disciple, Little Snow? Back then you had just crossed Life Destruction and were at the prime of your life! Now, in the blink of an eye 2000 years already passed and you’ve reached the Divine Sea. Time truly flies by. I heard that in recent years your master has already passed away, what a pity, what a pity…”

Old Man Old Fortune shook his head, his voice filled with the vicissitudes of time. The surrounding martial artists were actually dumbfounded as they heard his words, all of them shocked silent.

Having lived for 8000 years, two thousand years was actually just a ‘blink of an eye’. This left the surrounding martial artists dispirited. After all, most of them weren’t even 1000 years old yet! Especially when he said the words ‘Little Snow’, they really didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. To be able to call Fairy Snow Gale Little Snow, the only one with these qualifications was probably Old Man Good Fortune.

After Old Man Good Fortune arrived, two more Divine Sea Supreme Elders also came. Although they were both characters with great backgrounds and it was nearly impossible to see them, once everyone saw a legendary figure like Old Man Good Fortune, they weren’t surprised by anything else anymore.

An hour soon passed with four Divine Sea Supreme Elders having arrived in this time. Even the direct disciples of a Holy Land rarely saw the Divine Sea powerhouse of their own sect, so how could they ever see a scene like today? With four Divine Sea Supreme Elders in attendance, it wasn’t an exaggeration to say that this was the grandest event in the last 1000 years of the Sky Spill Continent!

This was a battle that concerned the future of someone with the potential to become the highest under the heavens. This sort of grand event could only be compared with a battle between two Divine Sea powerhouses. But, a Divine Sea powerhouse would normally only take action when a war was being waged. At their level, once they fought and received internal injuries, those wounds wouldn't be something that could be cured by common medicines. It would possibly affect their life.

"Lian Lanjian has arrived!"

No one knew just who spoke this, but everyone's eyes turned towards the Forsaken God Clan's palace. From that direction they could see over a dozen powerhouses flying over. The ones in the lead were Shibai and a masked old man, two of the Forsaken God Clan's Divine Sea Supreme Elders.

There was still another Divine Sea powerhouse that hadn't appeared. He had likely remained in the Forsaken God Clan's Realmheart Great Hall to operate the dimensional realm's array formation.

The Forsaken God Clan had put out their highest elites for this battle.

Closely following behind Shibai was a young man. This young man was Lin Ming. He wore white clothes and every step he took seemed calm and tranquil, as if he were taking a leisurely stroll. His makings were ethereal and his eyes were like the sky, bright and clear.

"That is the number one talent of the Sky Spill Continent! He only looks as if he's 18 or 19 years old."

"Such a handsome young man might actually rank in the top 10 powerhouses of the Destiny Decree. That is truly incredible!"

Although most of the martial artists didn't think Lin Ming could win, none of them suspected that Lin Ming couldn't rank in the top 10 of the Destiny Decree. If he didn't have at least this strength, then challenging all the Life Destruction powerhouses of a Divine Kingdom was suicide.

Old Man Good Fortune looked at Lin Ming from a distance and exclaimed, “He is truly the number one rare talent of the Sky Spill Continent! With a skeletal age of just over 20 years old, he actually declared war on all the Life Destruction martial artists of a Divine Kingdom! The younger generation is truly astounding!”

“Just over 20?” Beside Old Man Good Fortune, a flash of astonishment appeared on Fairy Snow Gale’s face. When young martial artists’ cultivation reached this cultivation boundary, it was very difficult to estimate their age from their appearance. For instance, Situ Yaoyue had practiced martial arts for over sixty years, but she still appeared like a young 18 year old girl.

Fairy Snow Gale had only known that Lin Ming was very young, but she didn’t know just how young he was. She vaguely guessed that he was in his thirties, but after hearing today from Old Man Good Fortune that Lin Ming’s skeletal age was just over 20 years, how could she not be startled!

“To be more accurate, he should be around 21 to 24 years old! He is no older than 25 years of age.” Fairy Snow Gale didn’t know how Old Man Good Fortune saw Lin Ming’s true age, but since he said so then this naturally wouldn’t be wrong.

To be at most 24-25 years old, then not mentioning his strength, just his peak first stage Life Destruction cultivation could already be considered unprecedented since ancient times! Even Fairy Snow Gale herself had only broken through to the Revolving Core realm at 25 years of age!

The Revolving Core realm was an entire large boundary away from Life Destruction!

As Fairy Snow Gale was shocked, the martial artists of the Asura Divine Kingdom also arrived. A massive black Godspeed Boat flew over, covered with people from the Asura Divine Kingdom. The Godspeed Boat was surrounded with an array formation that isolated all perception. It was impossible to tell just who was on the boat or how many people there were.

The Asura Divine Kingdom had undoubtedly done this to hide their cards and pressure Lin Ming.

“Jejeje!” Before the Godspeed Boat came to a stop, a harsh grating voice came out from the Godspeed Boat. “You little bastard, your death day has arrived! After this battle I will capture you and refine your soul!”

These vicious words completely ignored the presence of Shibai and everyone else there. A withered old man with stringy long hair appeared outside of the spirit boat. He was the Asura Divine Kingdom’s Emperor Uncle, Situ Bonan. He had a bitter grudge against Lin Ming!

Chapter 846 – Killers of the Asura Divine Kingdom

Chapter 846 – Killers of the Asura Divine Kingdom

…

…

…

As Situ Bonan appeared, he stared at Lin Ming like a vulture, his eyes as hard and sharp as swords. If an ordinary Life Destruction martial artist were to be caught in this stare, their back would have become wet with a cold sweat.

Lin Ming shrugged, confident. He had already expected this old monster to appear.

"You little beast, make sure you cherish the rest of your time alive. Although this is a life or death struggle, this old man will make sure to order to the juniors to keep your cheap life alive. Then, I will capture you and bring you to the Asura Divine Kingdom and show you just what it means to feel pain worse than death!"

Normally, a Divine Sea powerhouse would consider their status and not say such malignant words publicly, but as Situ Bonan reached the end of his life, his personality became increasingly eccentric and strange. He simply didn't care about things like this.

Shibai frowned as he heard Situ Bonan's virulent words. He was prepared to retort but Lin Ming smiled and casually said, "You old geezer, even if I didn't destroy your wisp of battle spirit projection, you have no one to blame but yourself for being inferior in style and technique. And since you tried to chase me down through the world and failed to do so, all you can blame is your own incompetence. Now you've become angry from shame and actually threatened to refine my soul? Then I'll wait for you. Let me see whether or not your disciples and followers have this ability!"

Lin Ming's words shocked everyone present!

"What? Situ Bonan's battle spirit projection was extinguished by Lin Ming?"

"I have no idea if that's true or false. From his words, this battle should have happened before he came to the Forsaken God Clan. At that time he was only a late Revolving Core martial artist, could this even be possible!?"

All of them only knew that Lin Ming had enmity with the Asura Divine Kingdom, but they weren't sure as to the details behind it. The deaths of the three Demon Envoys, Bi Ruyu, and the annihilation of Situ Bonan's battle spirit projection under Lin Ming's hands were certainly a disgraceful matter that the Asura Divine Kingdom wouldn't want to spread out.

"Thinking of it, it really is possible. If this were a frontal confrontation then Lin Lanjian isn't Situ Bonan's match. But, if it were a battle of battle spirits, then how could Situ Bonan possibly compare to such an abnormal freak like Lin Ming!?"

"That's right, if he could obtain a silver battle spirit at the first stage of Life Destruction, then when he was at the late Revolving Core realm he should have had at least a large success bronze battle spirit or a perfect bronze battle spirit. The manifestation of a battle spirit can cut all existence into nihility!"

Everyone quickly reacted. It was likely that what Lin Ming said was true.

Situ Bonan's ugly expression confirmed this point. After having this old scar picked at publicly by Lin Ming, his eyes had turned blood red and he was already on the edge of storming onstage!

"Good! What a good little beast! After you fall into my hands I will have you suffer horribly for a thousand years!" Situ Bonan's voice contained an ice cold killing intent. When a Divine Sea powerhouse revealed their killing intent, it was truly a terrifying spectacle. All of the Life Destruction martial artists within a thousand feet of him fell silent.

But Lin Ming didn't hide the mocking smile on his lips. "1000 years? Hahaha! I called you an old geezer but do you happen to think you aren't one? You already have half a foot into the grave, you're nearly a corpse already. Even if I wanted to show you some pity and let you torture me a bit, just how long do you think you can still live for?"

All the surrounding martial artists shuddered as they heard Lin Ming's fearful words.

Good heavens! Lin Ming's words were even more vicious than Situ Bonan's! He kept calling Situ Bonan an old geezer and poking at his words. To treat a Divine Sea Supreme Elder like this, Lin Ming's guts were larger than the skies! Did he really think he would win? If he fell into Situ Bonan's hands now, then his fate could be imagined!

The truth was that Lin Ming didn't care either way. In any case he had already shed all pretense of cordiality. He didn't mind further enraging this old Situ Bonan.

Situ Bonan was completely livid. As a man near death, what he hated the most was others mentioning just how little lifespan he had left. This was his ultimate sore spot and obsession!

If looks could kill, then Lin Ming would have died 10,000 times already.

"You little beast! I will have you know what it means to reap what you sow! I will show you the background of the Asura Divine Kingdom! There is no chance for you to win! None! You will die!" Situ Bonan's voice trembled from his extreme rage. As he spoke, his voice became sharper and higher as he poured his true essence into it, until that final word of 'die' that rang out through the world like a grieving thunderclap. Everyone who heard this felt pain in their heads. Revolving Core martial artists couldn't help but cover their ears. This sound was like a demon that snuck into their brain, making them feel uncomfortable.

"Emperor Uncle, it's time!"

Situ Haotian looked at his own strange and violent uncle who seemed as if he was on the verge of causing a ruckus and spoke a short reminder. He was afraid that this eccentric uncle of his would make some wildly radical move and accidently harm someone that shouldn't be harmed.

In this current situation where even Old Man Good Fortune was present, the Asura Divine Kingdom was unable to bully anyone. Once they harmed someone outside of the rules, they would have to give reasoning for that.

"Hehe, that's right, the time is nigh! I really can't wait for this show!" Situ Bonan licked his lips, his eyes full of a dark and ominous glint.

"I want to see just how long this little beast can be so flippant for. Yaksha King, come out!"

With Situ Bonan's shout, a demonic-looking man with sharp and long canines left the Godspeed Boat. He held a steel trident in his hands. His skin was dark and his eyes were large like bells. No matter how one looked at it, he seemed like an evil ghost from legends.

"Jejejeje!" Yaksha King gratingly laughed, the sound harsh and unpleasant. He didn't fear Lin Ming, but instead roared out with bravado, "Boy, I will use this steel trident to dig out your heart! Your warm heart blood… should taste quite good!"

Lin Ming stared at this evil ghost-like man in front of him, a bit puzzled.

Yaksha King?

He didn't think that top level powerhouses like the Great Demon Envoy would enter the stage first. It was impossible that the Asura Divine Kingdom had so many martial artists of that rank. For every one of them that died in this life or death battle, that meant they would have one less. Although the Asura Divine Kingdom had to win this battle at all costs, that didn't mean they would take a massive number of top 100 Destiny Decree ranked masters to waste Lin Ming's strength with their lives. After all, as long as these individuals were below

80 years old, they only needed to raise them a bit more and there was a chance they would reach the Divine Sea.

This was also one of the reasons why Lin Ming had agreed to this revolving battle of attrition so easily.

But he never thought that the first person to enter the stage would be this Yaksha King that he had never heard of before. This Yaksha King's cultivation was already at the peak of fifth stage Life Destruction and was just shy of reaching the sixth stage of Life Destruction. With his deep and profound aura, he was absolutely a top 300 ranked master of the Destiny Decree, or perhaps even in the top 200 rankings!

There was no record of this person on the Destiny Decree. Was this person one of the Asura Divine Kingdom's hidden strengths? Just how much hidden strength did they have, and how much were they willing to waste on him to consume his strength in order to win this battle?

This question flashed through Lin Ming's mind. But at this moment, he discovered something strange. Within the current Yaksha King in front of him, although his fires of life were vibrant, it actually seemed as if he had overdrawn his life potential. This was similar to the final radiance of a setting sun. This Yaksha King wouldn't live much longer!

What was going on here?

As Lin Ming had these suspicions in his mind, at this moment, Shibai's true essence sound transmission resounded in his ears. "Little Brother Lin, your situation isn't good. If I'm not wrong, then this is a sort of slaughter puppet created through a secret demonic path technique! You're in danger!"

"Mm? Puppet?" Lin Ming frowned. In this battle with the Asura Divine Kingdom, he had challenged all the Life Destruction martial artists of the Asura Divine Kingdom. The so-called 'martial artist' meant that they had to have a soul as well as self-awareness. Puppets applied if they were like Corpsemancer, martial artists who had altered themselves but still had their own souls. As for the other types of puppets, they couldn't be considered human.

Otherwise, if a puppet technique Divine Sea Supreme Elder were to use their own puppet to deal with Lin Ming, then even if Lin Ming was stronger he would still exhaust himself to death!

"Did the Asura Divine Kingdom violate the rules?"

"No… they did not break the rules." Shibai bitterly said, shaking his head. "This 'Yaksha King' is a true human with his own soul and self-awareness. But, perhaps because his life was coming to an end or because he was severely wounded, in short he was something that would soon die. The demonic path sects have a secret technique that can transform the body of a dying person, making their life potential glow in that last moment before sealing them up with a special freezing technique. When they are needed for future battles then this seal can be undone on the battlefield. Once this seal is undone, they might have at most another month to live. Because they know they will die, they will fight without fear of death. Moreover, some of them might even have a slave seal planted within them, making them brutal and ruthless, with every move overexerting their strength to take you out.

"That is, your opponent is likely someone that should have died one or two thousand years ago!"

"There is this sort of secret technique?" Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. Those that practiced the righteous or orthodox path called the demonic path the misguided road. When following the demonic path, it was easy to fall into obsession, and there were even some arcane techniques that disfigured one until they didn't seem like a human or ghost. But even so, its power was undeniably formidable!

"This secret technique has a limit. It cannot preserve an individual forever; two to three thousand years is the limit. And, the higher the cultivation of the 'material' is, the more resources are required to create it and the higher the failure rate is too. It is nearly impossible for this technique to work in a Divine Sea powerhouse. Thus, these types of slaughter puppets can be considered massive piles of spirit essence stones. The Asura Divine Kingdom has really laid down the capital for this fight!”

“Little Brother Lin, you must be careful. These puppets don’t have long to live so have altered themselves without scruples. In addition, they have recklessly overdrawn their life potential. Whether it is their defensive power of striking power, all of it is formidable. They are extremely difficult to deal with!”

“I see… so that’s how it is. I understand now…” Lin Ming took a deep breath, his expression calm once again.

The Asura Divine Kingdom’s secret technique was no secret. There were many Holy Lands and sects that had heard of this before. Rather, this was the background of a Divine Kingdom; it wasn’t surprising that they would take this out to deal with Lin Ming now.

It was also because of this inheritance that a Divine Kingdom had accumulated over the years, that even though all sorts of miraculous phenomena occurred when Lin Ming was crossing Life Destruction, there were still very few people that thought he would emerge from this battle victorious.

“Hehe, the Asura Divine Kingdom will definitely win this battle!”

“Of course. This doesn’t involve just the honor of the Asura Divine Kingdom but also just who owns the inheritance of the Demon Emperor. And then again, they must kill their enemy Lin Lanjian. Otherwise, the Asura Divine Kingdom will have endless troubles in the future!”

“It’s impossible to estimate the background of a Divine Kingdom. These slaughter puppets are fierce, unafraid of death, and their bodies are as tough as a heaven-step treasure. It will require a massive amount of true essence to kill one, and this is also a revolving battle. I fear that Lin Lanjian won’t be able to last until Situ Luosha steps onstage!”

“Mm, how could one look down on the 10,000 year inheritance of a Divine Kingdom. Lin Lanjian is young but he really hit the wall this time. Because of his impulsiveness, if he were to be defeated here, the price will be far too heavy for him…”

Chapter 847 – A World Stunning Spear

Chapter 847 – A World Stunning Spear

…

…

…

The terror of a slaughter puppet was not only their lack of fear in the face of death, but also their powerful physical defensive power. They had gone through all sorts of transformations to eliminate their ability to sense pain and could burn their life potential at any moment, giving them a high endurance.

In a sense, they resembled corpse devils that did not feel pain nor know exhaustion. Even if one was stronger than them, it would require a massive amount of energy to kill them, possibly being injured in the process.

“Yaksha King, go and have some fun with that little beast!”

Situ Bonan ruthlessly smiled. Although he didn’t expect Yaksha King to defeat Lin Ming, it was still enough to consume his strength and wipe that snotty and insufferably arrogant smirk off of his face.

This type of slaughter puppet would not need to block attacks, only exchanging attacks head on in the cruelest manner possible. If Lin Ming were to confront this slaughter puppet head on then his fate could be imagined.

Although Yaksha King was a puppet, he still had his own mind and thoughts. He looked towards Lin Ming like a beast towards his prey, his eyes filled with a greedy and brutish light.

He had been sealed up until now, so he had no idea what sort of person Lin Ming was or how strong he was. Yaksha King only knew that this youth in front of him was his opponent. Although Situ Bonan had warned him about just how fierce Lin Ming was, it was impossible for him to take a first stage Life Destruction youth seriously.

"Hehe, brat, your luck is so shit. You're only at the first stage of Life Destruction. Killing you would be as easy as ripping apart paper. As for me, I really hit the jackpot this time. Do you know how valuable your life is? As long as I can kill you I will be rewarded with a 10,000 Year Peach Pith. That is enough to nourish the fires of my life so that I may live for another 200 years!"

These slaughter puppets' life vitality had already come to an end. Even a 10,000 Year Peach Pith couldn't bring them back to life. But, continuing their existence for another 200 years, where they could recklessly play and enjoy their glory, was more than enough. This time was equal to three mortal lifespans. It was an extremely great temptation to them.

Yaksha Kling flourished his trident and stepped onstage. This area was not built from stone. It had been a several tens of thousand feet high mountain peak that had been forcibly sheared off by the great powers of the Asura Divine Kingdom, leaving behind nothing but a flat foundation that was as smooth as if it were butter sliced through with a saber. Of course, an array formation was built in to support it.

On the plateau of this sheared off mountain peak, the arena itself was hundreds of miles wide. Even if tens of thousands of people were to stand here, it still wouldn't seem crowded.

Dang –

A large bronze bell was rung. The ringing sound spread out for several hundred miles before fading away.

The battle begins!

Lin Ming held his red spear and took a sudden step forward, the rock exploding beneath his feet. With the void twisting beneath his feet, space seemed to lose meaning. He opened the Heretical God Force, his entire body revolving with true essence. After breaking through to Life Destruction, all of Lin Ming's cells had been reformed from energy, becoming able to store true essence. By adjusting himself with Flow like Silk, it was like his entire body was breathing in unison. As he stepped forwards, it was like an erupting volcano!

After crossing through Life Destruction, not only was his endurance several times what it was when he was at the late Revolving Core, but his explosive force had also increased! This sort of full and hearty feeling left Lin Ming addicted. But now, only a cold killing intent shined in Lin Ming's eyes. This was not the time to hide his abilities, but to win this battle quickly like a flash of lightning.

"Chasing Thunder!"

The Heretical God Sprout howled. On top of Lin Ming's long spear, arcs of purple gold lightning electricity sizzled. This thunder was like a purple divine blade that instantly passed through ten miles of space. And on the outside of the long spear, there was impressively a silver white shadow. This was the silver battle spirit. Once a battle spirit broke into the silver level it could manifest into reality!

"Mm!?"

Yaksha King's pupils shrank. With his own strength, he could reach rank 200 on the Destiny Decree. If he disregarded all costs to use a special demonic path transformation ability, then he could even have a combat strength equal to rank 170-180.

As a master, he was naturally able to discern the power behind moves. The reason he had been rampant before was because he had been a martial artist who had crossed through fire and waters, surviving through countless dangers. Facing a young little boy who was four small boundaries below him, his rampant arrogance had been a natural response. Even though Situ Bonan had warned him, he still hadn't thought Lin Ming had a chance of winning.

But now as he saw the power and potential within Lin Ming's spear, he immediately felt a fatal crisis approaching!

His opponent was absolutely a top master that could not be judged by cultivation!

"Demon King Trident!"

Yaksha King erupted in a roar. He simply didn't think of blocking this spear. He gripped his trident and poured his true essence into it, stabbing out at Lin Ming!

On the dark and bleak trident, countless demonic phantoms began condensing. Each one was incomparably hideous and fierce, biting out at everything before them!

Roar roar roar!

All of the demonic phantoms converged into a massive demon that bit down at Lin Ming's chest!

This was a purely offensive attack with no intention of blocking, all aimed at Lin Ming. As long as Lin Ming thrust out his spear, then even if he killed Yaksha King he would still be injured!

Lin Ming could use his absolute speed and Concept of Space to attack Yaksha King first, but Yaksha King had already sent out his move. Because of how close they were, Lin Ming would still be struck by the shockwaves after the energy exploded. Under such a close range strike, Lin Ming would suffer some minor wounds even with the Demon Emperor Armor to protect him.

Lin Ming had a tough physical body. A shockwave injury certainly wouldn't affect his combat strength, but if many of these light wounds accumulated over time, it would actually become extremely dangerous. The Asura Divine Kingdom had an untold number of powerhouses they still hadn't sent out, and the more powerful enemies were still behind!

He had to maintain his peak condition before fighting the final master in this battle.

This was the overwhelming advantage of a slaughter puppet. They could forcefully meet all attacks but Lin Ming couldn't. Yaksha King knew this point and was trying to force Lin Ming to change the direction of his attack before he gathered enough potential.

Once Lin Ming changed his attack then he would consume even more energy and also create chaos in his body's true essence.

"You little beast, I want to see just what you'll do!"

Situ Bonan's vulture-like eyes erupted with a thick killing intent. His face was full of a brutal and savage happiness.

This move was to hit him where it hurt and to cause a loss to Lin Ming. No matter how much stronger Lin Ming was than Yaksha King, so what? In this situation where he was trying to use the least amount of energy, defeating Yaksha King, who didn't care about any damage he took, would be extremely difficult!

When everyone thought Lin Ming would change his attack, at this moment, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a sharp purple electric light. All of his muscles suddenly bulged and strength reached into his legs and waist, his spine bending like a divine bow!

Lin Ming had opened the second of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, the Gate of Limit. This gate was located in the spine and was responsible for coordination, balance, and explosive power. Compared to the obvious functions of speed and endurance from the Gate of Wonder and the Gate of Healing, the uses of the Gate of Limit were much more inconspicuous. But at this time, with an eruption of energy from the Gate of Limit, Lin Ming's spine burst out with an unrivalled strength!

Lin Ming's physical body strength was originally equal to one million jins. With the specialized support of the Gate of Limit, it now reached 1.5 million jins!

With 1.5 million jins as the basis, Lin Ming threw out the long spear in his hand. It flashed out like a bolt of flaming lighting. This was a divine arrow that Lin Ming had shot out with his spine as a bow. It brought with it the sound of rumbling thunder as it howled through the void!

This scene left all martial artists present dumbfounded!

In an exchange between masters, they would rarely throw weapons. This was because essence gathering system martial artists relied on true essence to attack, not their physical strength.

True essence came from the body, from the dantian. Only by holding a weapon in their hand would they be able to continuously pour true essence into it to display its strongest might. The so-called grades of treasure judged not the sharpness of a weapon, but their hardness and how much they could enhance true essence.

Once a treasure weapon left the hand, no matter how high of a grade it was, the amount of true essence that could be poured into it was limited. If a treasure attack were to be shot out by a martial artist using their physical strength, just how could it compare to an enemy's complete strength? How much impact force would still be remaining in the thrown weapon?

Not only that, but after a treasure was released, it could only fly in a single trajectory, becoming extremely easy to dodge. In addition to the loss of the weapon itself, this was an extremely dangerous thing to do. A martial artist that didn't have a treasure weapon would lose the sharp penetrative power in their attacks, causing their combat efficiency to drop by over half.

This could even be called a very stupid act.

Woosh!

The long spear broke through space, causing the air to tremble and issue out a terrifying sonic boom. On the other side, the demon phantom that Yaksha King summoned snarled, stretching out a giant demon claw and maniacally plunging down at Lin Ming's spear.

"Once I separate you from your treasure, you'll just be nothing but weeds. With your strength limited, you won't be able to block my all-out attack even if you're stronger than me!"

Kacha!

The demon claw collided with the red spear. But then, a mind boggling scene occurred. Yaksha King's demon claw was actually burst apart by that red spear! Just how terrifying was it if a 1.5 million jin boulder were dropped from the air? And if all of this strength was poured into a spear, the might would only be doubled!

The long spear passed through without slowing, piercing straight towards the Demon King phantom's front!

Just what was this physical strength!?

In that split second, Yaksha King simply didn't have time to think about this. He thrust out his hands and the Demon King phantom spat out a mass of black fog that enveloped the purple electric long spear. This black fog was able to corrode true essence. The power in that long spear was limited. As long as more true essence was melted away, it would exhaust itself in the end.

But at this time, a silver light suddenly flashed out. In the next moment, the Demon King phantom was directly stabbed through! This was the glory of a battle spirit. While Lin Ming had used 1.5 million jins of strength to shoot out this long spear, he had simultaneously poured his silver battle spirit into it!

With both of these factors added together, the power of this strike was hard to imagine. Compared to this, attacks with thunder-attribute true essence poured into them were nothing at all!

Peng!

The Demon King phantom completely exploded. Yaksha King's eyes turned blood red. He couldn't even believe this was true. This was the power of a silver battle spirit! Although Situ Bonan had repeatedly warned him, he only knew of its terror after personally experiencing it!

Energy erupted in his legs. He wanted to dodge this red spear, but in that moment, Yaksha King felt as if all of his movements had slowed down. Although it was only a little bit slower, in the face of that incomparably fast long spear, it was far more than enough. In the next instant the long spear had stabbed into Yaksha King!

Puff!

His protective true essence was torn apart like paper. The long spear with 1.5 million jins of strength penetrated through Yaksha King's chest, shattering his ribcage and turning all of his organs to mush!

The spear was unstoppable. With a rain of blood it shot out the other side! In that moment, Yaksha King was like a small chicken that had been shot by a massive crossbow. The powerful impact force sent him flying backwards several miles before landing on the floor, bouncing and tumbling over and over for hundreds of feet before finally lying still on the ground like a dead dog. There was a keg-sized hole in his chest; his entire body had nearly been split in half!

But the long spear's velocity still didn't stop. It instantly passed through a hundred miles and pierced through a distant mountain peak as if it were made from tofu. The spear shot through the middle of the mountain, forming a large hole 10 feet wide within it!

Pu pu pu!

A tremendous amount of stone powder flew out from this hole. This stone powder was as fine as dust. With a slight breeze in the wind, the stone powder was blown into the air, turning the entire sky a hazy gray.

Chapter 848 – Five Poison King

Chapter 848 – Five Poison King

…

…

…

As the martial artists present stared at the dusty sky filled with stone powder, all of their eyes widened, shocked speechless.

The spear had pierced through Yaksha King's two moves as well as his body. Not just that, but there was so much power left over that the spear had shot through a mountain, creating a massive tunnel through it and a cloud of dust to fill the sky. Just what kind of freakish strength was this?!

This was a treasure weapon that was thrown! It had an extremely limited amount of true essence within it!

And looking at Yaksha King on the ground again, even though he had disregarded all costs to transform his body with demonic path techniques, making it so that he was as tough as a low-grade heaven-step treasure, he was still torn apart by that shot, as if he had been quartered to pieces.

Yaksha King's death was too sudden. Many of the lower cultivation martial artists didn't even have time to react. The entire battle had only lasted for a few blinks of the eye. That Yaksha King who could be ranked 200 on the Destiny Decree, and could possibly contend with a rank 170-180 master because of his various transformations, had actually been instantly killed by Lin Ming's spear.

And this spear had been thrown!

Throughout this entire process, not even the hem of Lin Ming's robes was touched. He had consumed only an insignificant amount of strength and true essence. The disparity was just too great.

"This is really surprising, the fabled silver battle spirit… is stronger than I imagined!" On the large jade ship, Fairy Snow Gale sighed with emotion. She was extremely envious towards this sort of strength.

"Haha, Little Snow, you're only 2000 years old. Once you temper your will some more perhaps you'll be able to achieve it." Near Fairy Snow Gale, Old Man Good Fortune congenially smiled.

"Senior's joke is funny. This junior only comprehended a battle spirit at the Divine Sea realm. I really do have no talent in this aspect. In my life, If I can reach small success bronze or large success bronze, that will already be a stroke of luck for me. As for perfect bronze or even the legendary silver, this junior doesn't dare to think about that." Fairy Snow Gale smiled as she spoke. Although her words were humble, she wasn't too far off. It was far too difficult to grow one's battle spirit.

"Haha, don't underestimate yourself. But really, this little fellow Lin Lanjian is truly a rare heaven gifted talent. Not only does he have a silver battle spirit but his understandings into the Concepts and Laws are also startling. Besides the power in that spear just now, the reason it was able to strike Yaksha King was that it contained the Concept of Time. For him to fuse the mysterious and elusive Concept of Time into a spear that left his hand, that is indeed uncommon!"

Once a weapon left the hand, there were far too many disadvantages. Not only could the trajectory be predicted and dodged, but the Concept and Laws poured within would also be hindered. Lin Ming's spear had caused the flow of time around Yaksha King to slow down for the briefest of moments, but that was already enough time to kill him. The spear he threw was just far too quick.

Fairy Snow Gale could clearly see the admiration and interest on Old Man Good Fortune's face, causing her mind to stir. Could it be that Old Man Good Fortune was thinking of sheltering Lin Lanjian, or even receiving him as a disciple? If that were true, then there really wasn't anything the Asura Divine Kingdom would be able to do to him anymore!

It had to be known that Old Man Good Fortune's strength easily surpassed any Divine Sea powerhouse within the Asura Divine Kingdom. The Asura Divine Palace had an ancient great array so that Old Man Good Fortune couldn't break his way in, but outside of that, 80-90% of the Asura Divine Kingdom's Divine Sea powerhouses wouldn't even be able to escape from Old Man Good Fortune's hands!

Fairy Snow Gale came from the White Clan so she was very happy to see someone that didn't come from the four Divine Kingdoms become the highest under the heavens. The birth of that sort of powerhouse would affect the stability of the Sky Spill Continent's central region, creating a chance for her family clan to benefit. Of course, if Old Man Good Fortune was really intending on protecting Lin Lanjian, then being able to form good relations with him through Old Man Good Fortune was even better.

………..

As Fairy Snow Gale had all sorts of small thoughts running through her mind, Situ Bonan's expression actually became gloomy like water. He had personally transformed this Yaksha King over a thousand years ago, and now he had been defeated so easily! This damned Yaksha King hadn't even been able to touch the hem of Lin Ming's clothes!

He wanted to pull out Lin Ming's soul and refine his marrow, but now his plans had suffered repeated setbacks again and again!

Situ Haotian's eyebrows wrinkled together. In order ensure absolute, 100% victory, he had already arranged a good number of people to fight Lin Ming and wear him down in this revolving battle. But now, that slaughter puppet that had cost a massive amount of wealth to retain was actually killed by a single spear strike. In comparison, Lin Ming didn't even seem to be the least bit tired. This caused a sudden sense of unease to appear in his heart.

Every slaughter puppet was a great wealth of their Divine Kingdom. Even though they had a deep background, they still couldn't afford to consume resources like this.

This was the result Lin Ming desired through killing Yaksha King with absolute superiority. Although his endurance was monstrous, he still didn't believe he could go through an unlimited number of opponents in this revolving battle. He wanted the Asura Divine Kingdom to feel fear, he wanted every Life Destruction martial artist who stepped onstage to feel fear!

Fear to the point that they no longer dared to try wearing down his endurance.

"How could it be possible that a thrown long spear could be so powerful!?" Situ Bonan gnashed through his teeth. He had summed up the power of the long spear as being from the silver battle spirit; he hadn't considered Lin Ming's physical body strength at all.

"If a silver battle spirit is already so strong then only the heavens will know what this little beast's battle spirit will grow to once he breaks through to the Divine Sea! This little beast absolutely cannot be allowed to live!"

Situ Yaoxi echoed from the side.

At this time, Situ Yaoyue stepped forwards. She softly said, "Your Majesty, please permit me to fight him. An ordinary slaughter puppet simply isn't Lin Lanjian's opponent. And I do not wish to use such a dishonorable method to consume his strength. I wish to fight Lin Lanjian in a battle when both of us are in our peak states. Only such a victory will be able to carve that winning faith into my heart and help me lay down the foundation for attacking a higher boundary in the future. I hope that Your Majesty will grant me this."

Situ Yaoyue and the others had all been able to see everything clearly from within the Godspeed Boat. Her words were filled with a firm confidence and determination. With her seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation as well as her Extreme Violet Dantian, she didn't feel that the current strength Lin Ming displayed was any threat to her at all. Of course, she also guessed that Lin Ming hadn't shown his full hand yet. To be able to fight against such an eternally rare talent, she was truly looking forwards to this. As a proud and haughty genius, Situ Yaoyue didn't wish to use a revolving battle of attrition to wear him down in order to gain victory. To win this way was nothing but a kind of insult to her.

Situ Haotian frowned upon hearing Situ Yaoyue's words. He slowly and clearly said, "Yaoyue, you are nearly certain to become the successor to the imperial throne of my Asura Divine Kingdom. Every word you speak, every action you take, all of that is related to the future of my Asura Divine Kingdom. Your life now no longer belongs to just you. The Asura Divine Kingdom has trained you, spending countless resources to do so, and yet you want to engage in your so-called fair battle and use the future of the Divine Kingdom and your own life as a bet? Do you know what price we have to pay if we lost this battle?"

Situ Haotian's words became louder and more severe as he spoke. Although he didn't believe that Lin Ming could defeat Situ Yaoyue, it was best to be careful. If Situ Yaoyue were to perish here, then that was absolutely an immeasurably great loss that the Asura Divine Kingdom would not be able to afford!

The Asura Divine Kingdom possessed several Divine Sea powerhouses. But, the truth was that the greatest factor of a Divine Kingdom's strength was not their number of Divine Sea powerhouses, but the strength of the peak Divine Sea powerhouse they possessed!

The reason that the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom and the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom could stand in front of the Asura Divine Kingdom and the Seven Star Divine Kingdom was because the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom had their Imperial Grand Uncle and the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom had their Highest Divine Emperor. Both of them were existences close to being the highest under the heavens!

Although Situ Haotian had used the title of highest under the heavens to encourage Situ Yaoyue, he didn't have any hopes that she would actually become the highest under the heavens. That was simply too unrealistic a goal, unless she managed to come across some unbelievable lucky chance. But, she had hopes of becoming someone close to being the highest under the heavens. When that happened, the Asura Divine Kingdom would rise in status once more and they would be able to obtain a greater portion of the resources from the Sea of Miracles.

Situ Yaoyue's life was worth more than two ordinary Divine Sea Supreme Elders. Not to mention if they lost this battle and couldn't kill Lin Ming, then it would be difficult to withstand the price they would have to pay in the future.

"Yes, Your Majesty. Yaoyue was wrong."

Although she was unwilling in her heart, Situ Yaoyue could only obey.

"Continue to send out the slaughter puppets! Everything we've saved up is for is for a day like this! Regardless, a national war won't erupt any time soon. Compared to the price of losing this battle, some puppets are nothing at all!"

Situ Bonan clenched his teeth. Even a lion had to use its full force to capture a rabbit. In this battle they had already planned to use their slaughter puppets and then Imperial Scholars in order to ensure absolute victory!

"Humph, he might not be injured, but that powerful attack just now might have been some specialized martial skill. He must have used a great amount of strength there. This time we will bring out a stronger puppet! I want to see just how long this little beast can last!"

The might behind Lin Ming's spear was far too extraordinary. Situ Yaoxi didn't believe Lin Ming had easily shot out that spear. Since they had already laid down their cards, Situ Yaoxi would not back down. She vowed to continue this to the end and consume as much of Lin Ming's strength as possible.

"Five Poison King, go!"

Situ Bonan ordered.

“Yes!” The Five Poison King was a thin old man with a sallow face, covered all over with age spots. When a martial artist cultivated to Life Destruction they simply wouldn’t have age spots. But, these age spots on the Five Poison King were left behind by poisons. His entire body was simply a giant container of poison.

On the arena stage, Lin Ming’s spear had already been retrieved by a deacon from the Forsaken God Clan. This red spear’s toughness had reached the standard of a high-grade heaven-step treasure. There was absolutely no worry that he would damage it.

In this period of time, Lin Ming had already opened the Gate of Healing and completely restored all the strength and true essence he had consumed, reaching his peak condition once again. The amount of energy he had consumed wasn’t much to begin with.

Five Poison King and Lin Ming were several miles away from each other. To a mortal, such a far distance would make their opponent look like the size of a little bean in their sight. But to a martial artist, this distance was just a short sprint.

And this sprint time was to give Five Poison King some room to react. He obviously feared that strange spear that Lin Ming had thrown just now. As long as Five Poison King was struck by that spear, he didn’t believe he had any chance of surviving.

Quickly wrapping himself with true essence, Five Poison King hastily took out several black array flags and laid down a poison array. As a poison master and an array master, he could display his strongest combat strength by combining the two. By staying in this array formation he could both attack and defend.

As Lin Ming saw Five Poison King’s extremely cautious movements, he smiled. Did this old fellow really think he was safe?

Chapter 849 – Without Equal

Chapter 849 – Without Equal

…

…

…

Hu – !

Five Poison King quickly laid down his array. In the blink of an eye, a purple fog emerged from the ground and completely enveloped him. This purple fog was Five Poison King's special defensive array formation that contained his particular poisonous true essence. If a martial artist broke through this array formation, then even if they had bodily protective true essence, as long as they were touched by this purple fog then the poison would sneak into their body and injure them.

"You also don't seem afraid of death?"

Lin Ming walked forwards, one step at a time.

Five Poison King quickly laid down a second array formation and another layer of purple fog appeared, making the defense even tighter. He said without emotion, "We are already dead. As long as we can wound you, that is enough to bring luck to our descendants."

"So that's how it is…"

As his voice fell, a shimmer of cold light suddenly burst out from Lin Ming's eyes. It looked as if he took a single casual step forwards, but several miles disappeared underneath his feet, making it seem as if he had teleported past the poison arrays. The two poisonous gas array formations that Five Poison King laid down weren't able to hinder him in the least.

With Lin Ming's current understanding into the Concept of Space, if an array formation didn't have the Space Laws integrated into it then it was simply useless in front of him.

Chi chi chi!

Purple thunder poured into his red long spear. The top grade heaven-step Nine Heavens Thunder Soul burst out in all its radiant glory!

Chasing Thunder!

A spear thrust out, quick as lightning, simply not giving Five Poison King the least bit of space to respond.

In that instant, all the poisonous fog was covered by a net of crackling purple lightning. Five Poison King issued a roar and threw out the array disc in his hand. The array disc rapidly spun in the air, ready to explode at any moment. However, Lin Ming's speed was far too quick. Space distorted and he vanished in in a twinkling light.

A spear thrust through Five Poison King's body. Sizzling thunder charred his entire body black.

And at this time, Five Poison King's body blew up without any indication. All sorts of poisonous blood and venom rained down in all directions!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank as he instantly drew back.

Bang!

Five Poison King blew up with his poison arrays. A terrifyingly potent poison shout out in all directions, causing a large hole to appear even in the array formation-supported mountain,

Lin Ming had already retreated five miles away. His bodily true essence fiercely vibrated with a sizzling sound. This was the sound of his protective true essence colliding with the poison.

"What a strange poison. It can even pollute true essence."

Lin Ming didn't have any expression. The silver battle spirit stirred and a spear of will chopped out, instantly extinguishing the poison.

The special characteristic of a battle spirit was that it could be attached to any object and could cut apart all. This included material objects, souls, force fields, energy, heart demons, true essence, and so on.

Defeating Five Poison King in a single move hadn't exceeded the expectations of the martial artists present.

"He also killed him in a single move, how fierce!"

"But… Lin Lanjian was touched by the poison. I don't know if this will be a problem for him."

"Doesn't look like there's an issue."

"I don't know…"

The poison arts of the demonic path were extremely strange. Sometimes, after being poisoned, it wouldn't seem as if there was a problem, but the poison would suddenly manifest after a period of time, turning a martial artist's body into bloody pus.

Of course, to the surrounding martial artists, someone with Lin Ming's strength certainly wouldn't be reduced to that sort of situation. However, coming under a slight influence was still likely. This was a revolving battle. As long as these minor influences accumulated they would ultimately become fatal.

"This little beast, even the Five Poison King's explosion wasn't able to harm him!"

"Humph! And so what? Every battle will consume some of his strength. I want to see just how long he can last. White Bone King, go out! As long as you can wound him then I will release your family clan from slavery!"

Throughout the centuries, the Asura Divine Kingdom had fought wars in all directions in order to conquer anyone who dared to challenge their authority. And the top powerhouses of these conquered influences would have a slave seal planted within them and then be turned into a slaughter puppet.

White Bone King was one of those powerhouses. His family clan had been a fifth-grade family clan, but the patron of his family clan had been enemies with the Asura Divine Kingdom. Afterwards, their patron collapsed and the White Bone King’s family clan was implicated in the ensuing mess.

White Bone King was tall and broad. He wore an armor of bones, and as he walked the pieces struck and grinded against each other, emitting ‘ka ka ka’ sounds.

Because he had been transformed with all sorts of secret techniques and he also had a slave seal planted in him, White Bone King didn’t have any intelligence in his eyes. But, Situ Bonan’s promise seemed to stir a strange compulsion in his mind, awakening the memories deep within his heart.

“Kill!”

White Bone King bit out this word. With ‘chi chi chi’ sounds, countless bone spurs appeared from all over his body. He rushed towards Lin Ming like a cannonball!

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with an interested light. The bone armor of this White Bone King in front of him wasn’t forged from the bones of others, but rather came from his own skeleton.

A bone transforming specialist martial artist was really unusual.

However, this was far from being able to make up the absolute disparity in strength.

Bang!

With the sound of a collision, White Bone King's frontal bone spurs all shattered. In the next moment, the long spear turned around and smashed into White Bone King's head!

White Bone King's bone armor burst apart like shattered porcelain. His spine cracked and his neck twisted off. His head flew a thousand feet away, crashing into the floor with both eyeballs burst apart.

Lin Ming's figure appeared a thousand feet away, a slightly numb feeling in his right hand. These bones were much harder than he had imagined.

This was already the third match. Situ Haotian's eyes were cold. He vowed to disregard all cost to bring this revolving battle to its ultimate end. "Crimson Blood Demon, your turn!"

Roar!

A red demon covered in blood rushed onto the arena stage. These demonic path martial artists practiced all sorts of evil and dark mystical cultivation methods. Many times it was impossible to tell whether they were a man or ghost.

However, regardless of what shape Lin Ming's enemy took, the gap in absolute strength could not be surpassed. The Crimson Blood Demon rushed forward in a suicidal manner, wanting to bring Lin Ming down with him. But Lin Ming shot his silver battle spirit-imbued red spear forwards and with the sound of rolling thunder it pierced through the Crimson Blood Demon's body like an arrow!

The Crimson Blood Demon exploded in a shower of bloody rain. The long spear smashed into the arena ground hundreds of feet away, ripping a large crumbling hole into the array formation-protected arena ground.

The Crimson Blood Demon's cause of death was nearly the same as Yaksha King's.

"The fifth match, Nightmare King!"

Situ Bonan's eyes were red with raging anger. He immediately sent out another master.

Bang!

Nightmare King's soul illusion attack was directly torn apart by Lin Ming's battle spirit.

With a whistling sound, Lin Ming's long spear shot forwards. Nightmare King wanted to dodge it, but the Concept of Space and the Concept of Time within the spear made it unpredictable and unblockable.

Nightmare King forcibly avoided having his heart pierced through, but nearly half of his body was ripped off by the spear.

Nightmare King flew backwards but Lin Ming stepped forwards, crossing through space and instantly appearing in front of him. A fist punched out.

Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!

Peng!

The half-torn Nightmare King was simply unable to dodge this sudden attack. He instantly burst into a rain of blood.

After Lin Ming crossed the first stage of Life Destruction, all of the cells in his body were transformed, activated by energy and now able to all breath in unison. The power of Flow like Silk had risen by a great boundary. With a single punch, even a 100 foot tall boulder would be completely smashed into powder.

The fifth match, victory again.

So far, none of the martial artists that entered the arena stage had been Lin Ming's match!

"Sixth match, Earth Bowing Monster!"

….

"Seventh match, Black Iron Demon!"

…

“Eighth match, Soul Eater!”

…

“Ninth match, Green Hair Corpse Puppet!”

….

Every new match was sounded with a new bell ring. Because the matches were too fast, before the first ring faded away, the next ring already began to sound out.

Back and forth, this vibrant ringing bell sound echoed through the world, shocking everyone’s minds again and again.

This was simply a bloody massacre. No matter what strange demonic path techniques these slaughter puppets used, Lin Ming would finish the fight within three breaths of time.

During this time, it was inevitable that Lin Ming would have frontal collisions with these powerhouses. According to all reasoning, although these collisions might not result in Lin Ming being wounded, they should at least create disorder in his true essence or cause his aura to be unstable. But Lin Ming continued fighting as if he didn’t even know what exhaustion was.

At least it was impossible to tell if there was something wrong with him from his exterior appearance.

11th match…

12th match…

13th match…

…

18th match!!

The Lin Ming on the arena stage had turned vicious and ruthless. At this time, he was like a True Dragon that had awoken from a deep slumber. His powerful body seemed invincible to all attacks. All enemies that appeared before him were torn to pieces, completely swept away without any ability to resist!

All of the surrounding martial artists were bewildered. These martial artists that died under Lin Ming's hands weren't some random cabbages. The lowest of them were at the peak fifth stage of Life Destruction, and there were even sixth stage Life Destruction masters. A thousand or two thousand years ago they were characters that ruled the Destiny Decree of their eras. Some of them might have even been ranked in the top 100 of the Destiny Decree!

And these people were chopped apart by Lin Ming as if they were vegetables and then tossed to the side, over and over again. Lin Ming only used several moves, but these moves, no one was able to dodge them!

Every single one of these attacks contained a powerful strength; the consumption of energy shouldn't be minor. If a general martial artist was strong, they would still find themselves short of breath after using these moves several times. They would have no choice but to supplement themselves with medicines. But, no matter how good these medicines were, the supplemented true essence would have differences with their own true essence. Eating up enough of these pills would cause the energy within their bodies to turn impure, causing their combat strength to plummet.

But Lin Ming hadn't even taken a single pill yet. And looking at his appearance, he didn't even have the least bit of disorder in his breath. Was he even human?

20th match…

Bang!

The demonic path slaughter puppet that stepped onstage had his head burst apart by Lin Ming's spear. Red and white brain mass sprayed onto the ground before immediately being charred by the power of thunder in the air. That demonic path martial artist's headless corpse plopped to the ground.

There was a cold gasp of air from outside the arena stage. It had come from a slaughter puppet that knew it would only be dying by entering the stage. If he were just a normal person then he wouldn't have dared to go onstage. Even walking into the jaws of death shouldn't be done in such a miserable manner.

In fact, even the rest of the slaughter puppets were frightened by Lin Ming. After killing 20 people, Lin Ming's aura made him seem as if he were a wild vicious beast from ancient times. The accumulated killing intent had formed an invisible energy field around him. Just by approaching him one would feel pressured and find it difficult to breathe.

Even Situ Haotian was a bit deterred and made weak-hearted by Lin Ming's dominating aura. Every slaughter puppet that he sent onstage was a massive pile of spirit essence stones!

Had the slaughter puppets he sent out even been able to exhaust Lin Ming's strength?

As he looked at the perfectly calm Lin Ming onstage, Situ Haotian lacked the assurance to continue like this. His eyes turned and his vision locked onto a red-clothed little boy.

"Imperial Scholar Xuan, it's your turn next."

"Huh?" The red-clothed little boy's heart shrank, a cold sweat suddenly streaming down his entire body.

Chapter 850 – An Aura to Wash Away the Clouds

Chapter 850 – An Aura to Wash Away the Clouds

…

…

…

“Your Majesty, I…” The red-clothed little boy’s strength was ranked 42 on the Destiny Decree. Although he was much stronger than those slaughter puppets that had gone onstage so far, he still lacked the courage to face Lin Ming head on.

Even an idiot could see that Lin Ming hadn’t used everything he had so far. He went back and forth with the same three moves and was already on a rampage right now. The red-clothed little boy didn’t think he had a snowball’s chance in hell of winning. And, in a life or death battle, the red-clothed little boy didn’t expect that Lin Ming would show him any mercy at all.

He and Lin Ming had a particularly high number of grudges.

“What? You don’t want to fight?” Situ Haotian frowned, a faint killing intent exuding from him.

“I…” The red-clothed little boy gulped before falling to his knees. “Your Majesty, please show mercy. It isn’t that this official won’t fight, but this official simply isn’t that Lin Lanjian’s match! I beg Your Majesty to spare my life. This official has always faithfully served and worked for the Asura Divine Kingdom’s best interests, please allow me to continue doing so!”

Situ Haotian sneered, “Humph, I am now giving you your chance to faithfully serve. Have you forgotten just who it was that started this battle?”

As Situ Haotian spoke, the red-clothed little boy paled until there wasn’t a drop of blood left in his face. When Lin Ming had proposed a revolving battle, that had been done to reduce the pressure on the Forsaken God Clan. And, the turning point for that had been the red-clothed little boy. He had taken advantage of his superior strength at the time to bully Lin Ming and declare the battle against him. He had even said that he would lose if he couldn’t defeat Lin Ming within 10 moves.

Finally, the result was that Lin Ming didn’t dodge the battle. Once he crossed Life Destruction he would challenge every Life Destruction master of the Asura Divine Kingdom. In a sense, the reason that this battle even happened was related to the red-clothed little boy. Now that the battle had become much more difficult than they had imagined and the losses were mounting, it was natural for Situ Haotian to vent his anger on him!

The red-clothed little boy’s forehead was wet with sweat. He regretted his previous decision so much that his guts turned blue. How could he have spoken words so cheaply? This was really what they meant by careless talk causes trouble.

He wanted to say that the one who finally agreed to this battle was Situ Haotian himself, but he didn’t have this courage. He feared that saying such words would cause Situ Haotian to kill him right here with a single palm.

It wasn’t just the red-clothed little boy who was soaked in a cold sweat, but Situ Haotian’s elder disciple Situ Bai also felt his palms sweat. He was ranked 26 on the Destiny Decree. There was a chance he could defeat Lin Ming, but it was more likely he would suffer a ruinous fate. When he had been at the Forsaken God Clan’s Realmheart Great Hall and Lin Ming had declared he would battle all the Life Destruction masters of the Asura Divine Kingdom, he too had participated in that with several cheap words he now bitterly regretted.

He had even said that he wouldn't need anyone to deal with Lin Ming after he crossed Life Destruction. Situ Bai had said he could single-handedly defeat Lin Ming.

Now that he thought back to those words, he really wanted to smash his head into a wall.

Once the red-clothed little boy lost, wouldn't he be next on the list to enter the stage?

"Will you fight or not?" Situ Haotian glared at the red-clothed little boy. The red-clothed little boy wasn't part of the Situ Family Clan and had lived for over 1500 years already. His chances of breaking through to the Divine Sea were near zero. If he died then he died; it wouldn't too great a loss.

"I… I will fight."

The red-clothed little boy grit his teeth. Compared to being directly executed here by Situ Haotian, he might as well challenge Lin Ming.

Perhaps he might have a slim chance of survival.

Moreover, if he died in battle then his family clan would at least obtain the shelter of the Asura Divine Kingdom. If they were executed because of him then that would really be an injustice.

The red-clothed little boy took a deep breath and flew off of the Godspeed Boat.

"It's you…" Lin Ming said with a faintly interested smile. He and the red-clothed little boy who was an Asura Imperial Scholar could be said to have a very deep enmity. He had been chased by this little boy into the 8000 Mile Black Swamp and had also been challenged by him in the Forsaken God Clan's Realmheart Great Hall.

"You challenged me three months ago and we set a date, but I never thought you would actually come." Although Lin Ming was smiling, his killing intent didn't diminish in the least.

“Cut the crap. Don’t think that you will definitely defeat me!” The red-clothed little boy placed all of his hatred onto Lin Ming. Ever since he met Lin Ming, that was when his unlucky fate began.

He gave a loud shout and his body blew up like a balloon, his muscles sticking out. He grasped a thick lance in his hands.

The only problem was that he still had the appearance of a little boy; it made it very awkward looking at him.

“Samsara Devil Arts!”

A six-armed demon phantom appeared behind the red-clothed little boy. Each of the six arms held a magic tool, its face pallid and cruel. It looked like an immortal underworld king from the totems of the demonic path.

The red-clothed little boy was ranked in the top 50 of the Destiny Decree. After using the Samsara Devil Arts, his aura suddenly shot up. Every martial artist in a 10 mile radius could suddenly feel a tremendous pressure pushing down on them.

“That is one of the Asura Divine Kingdom’s three great Imperial Scholars, Imperial Scholar Xuan! A fierce character finally came out! This match should be worth watching.”

“That’s right. Although Imperial Scholar Xuan shouldn’t be Lin Lanjian’s match, he should still be able to support himself for some time. Either that or he’ll be instantly killed. Now that would be truly frightening!”

The red-clothed little boy grasped the lance with both hands, a viscous chaotic and demonic energy revolving around the lance shaft. Just looking at this demonic energy made one feel as if their soul was falling for eternity.

“Concept of Darkness?” Lin Ming was slightly surprised. The Concept of Darkness had the attribute of devouring all energy. Its degree of mystery surpassed the Concepts of the five elements and neared that of the Concepts of Space and Time. For this red-clothed little boy to be able to comprehend this Concept to such a degree, he really wasn't an ordinary martial artist. This was also the reason that he was able to stand out amongst all the sixth stage Life Destruction martial artists and rank in the top 50 of the Destiny Decree!

Myriad Demons Samsara!

The red-clothed little boy split into six forms, each one of them carrying a thick lance that curved like a snake. A deep and sticky darkness came shrouding down from the sky, swallowing up all the sunlight.

It was like the entire dimensional realm had fallen into darkness. The immortal underworld king appeared high in the sky, its six magic tools smashing down at Lin Ming.

This was the red-clothed little boy's strongest martial skill. He didn't dare to hold back against Lin Ming, otherwise he wouldn't have a chance in the future.

Facing this massive blow, Lin Ming was calm as usual. He held his spear with a single hand and drew a crescent moon in the air. The space around the spear edge began to quietly collapse.

Law of Annihilation, Chain of Stars!

Ka ka ka!

Countless cracks began to appear throughout the entire shroud of darkness, like a black mirror that was being broken apart!

Back when he was in the Timeworn Phoenix City's God Transforming Mirror, Lin Ming had already comprehended the Space Laws to the point where he was able to rip apart the void. And at that time, the space there had been even more stable than now.

The broken space fragments shot out, following Lin Ming's red spear around as he thrust it outwards!

Ca!

Space continued to collapse. At the same time, that immortal underworld king phantom was being torn apart by the space fragments. A fierce and grim light flashed over the red-clothed little boy's face as the six lance-wielding shadows around him thrust at Lin Ming's dantian!

Puff! Puff!

Space fragments cut into the red-clothed little boy and blood shot into the air. However, he had already held onto the determination to die. He was completely unaware of all the damage being inflicted to him. His every thought was locked onto Lin Ming; he would rather die than miss this lance strike!

"Mm? The Concept of Darkness can actually make the void sticky and limit my movements?" Lin Ming was about to back away, but he discovered that the space around him had turned into something like a swamp. His movements were hindered, causing him to be slightly surprised.

However he was only surprised. From the moment that he started this battle until now, he may have instantly killed his enemies so far, but in order to save his strength and also hide his cards he had only been using 40-50% of his energy.

After Life Destruction transformed his body, every cell within him had undergone a baptism of energy and he had thoroughly formed his spirit body. Combined with his body transformation cultivation, his strength far surpassed that of an ordinary Life Destruction martial artist to a nearly impossible degree.

His peak strength had never been revealed.

He flourished his long spear and opened the Heretical God Force to the limit as well as galvanizing the power of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. All of the cells within his body began to breathe in unison. The energy that belonged to a Life Destruction martial artist burst out. At the same time, his silver battle spirit howled out and formed a silver white divine spear on the outside of his own red spear.

Lin Ming took a sudden step back and grasped the spear's end with both hands. He lowered himself, concentrating the power of his waist. With the support of the Gate of Limit, his spine tightened along his shoulder, gathering more and more power. His spear was like a red dragon about to leap out from the sea.

And then, Lin Ming shot forwards.

The void was torn apart like paper as the cold spear edge drew a scintillating brilliance through the darkness.

Ca!

With a light sound, a dazzling flash of silver white light shot into the sky as a divine spear directly impacted through the nine heavens. Billowing purple thunder and waves of surging flames followed, as if the entire world were falling apart!

In that instant, the divine spear disappeared. The raging power of thunder and fire swept through the world, invincible and unstoppable!

Ka ka ka!

A crack several miles long appeared in the sheared off mountain peak. The red-clothed little boy's expression was dull and listless as he stood suspended in the air. Behind him, the immortal underworld king phantom also appeared bleak as it floated in the air.

Peng!

The immortal underworld king phantom blew apart and the red-clothed little boy's lance split in half. From the lance edge to the lance shaft, the lance was cleanly cut open. This crack spread to the red-clothed little boy's body, forming a grim crimson line of blood that continued up his arm, cut through his dantian, stomach, chest, neck, mouth, nose… finally arriving at his forehead. Then, that bloody line continued around his spine until it formed a complete circle.

Next, underneath the eyes of everyone watching, the red-clothed little boy and his lance split in half, blood spraying into the air as his body and weapon dropped to the ground.

As the audience saw the red-clothed little boy that was split in half as well as that heaven-step lance that was also the same, all of them were shocked speechless. They had guessed that Lin Ming was hiding his strength, but none of them imagined that his true strength would be so horrifying. That medium-grade heaven-step lance had been split apart from edge to shaft as if it were a radish!

Lin Ming was like a juggernaut as he tore his way through all the matches so far without equal. Although everyone thought that the red-clothed little boy wasn't Lin Ming's opponent, they still believed he could last for a while. But, although he had managed to last until the second move, he was still instantly killed right afterwards!

So now it seemed that the reason Lin Ming threw his spear against those slaughter puppets was because he was hiding his ability and saving his strength. Otherwise, he could simply have used an extraordinarily powerful attack like this. Who cared if it was a suicidal attack? Both attack and person would have been completely torn apart by his spear!

He was simply a monster!

As Situ Haotian saw the red-clothed little boy's miserable death, the corners of his lips began twitching. His eyes swept over and he saw that Situ Bai's forehead was dripping with sweat, and his knuckles were gripped so tightly that they were white.

Situ Bai thought he would have had a chance against Lin Ming, but now it seemed that fighting him was certain death!

"Garbage!" Situ Haotian spat out this word.

Situ Bai was frightened so much that he fell to his knees, his entire body trembling. He didn't want to die!

At this time, Situ Luosha stepped forwards and then kneeled on one knee, “Your Majesty, please allow me to fight!”

Chapter 851 – Luosha's Determination

Chapter 851 – Luosha's Determination

…

…

…

As Situ Bai saw Situ Luosha volunteer, he suddenly let out a deep breath of relief, nearly collapsing to the floor.

Sometimes, when a martial artist faced a life or death situation, their attitude might veer towards one of two extremes. One would be a desperado, not fearing death nor danger. They would mostly come from poorer backgrounds and rely on this sort of character to grasp lucky chances, finally arriving at a higher boundary.

And then there were those that treasured their own life. These types of people would often come from large sects and would have enjoyed endless resources since childhood. They had already developed an inherent sense of superiority so how would they be willing to die?

Situ Bai was the latter. As a martial artist at his level, he had a life that would be several thousand years long. For as long as he wanted he could enjoy a life more luxurious than that of any mortal king of this world, enough to satisfy for a hundred lifetimes. Thus, he cherished his life, and this was also the reason that he found Situ Haotian's eyes so unbearable.

"Humph!"

Situ Haotian's cold cough fell like thunder in Situ Bai's ears. Situ Bai shook and he was nearly knocked to the floor.

Situ Bai would rather be called garbage by Situ Haotian or disappoint him than to die. As he recalled the bragging talk three months ago when he said he could pinch Lin Ming to death even after he crossed Life Destruction, he wanted to tear his own mouth out.

In the end, Situ Haotian didn't send Situ Bai onstage. Situ Bai was worth far more than the red-clothed little boy was. Situ Bai was just over 70 years old, not that much older than Situ Yaoyue. He had a small chance of reaching the Divine Sea in the future. However, because of today's mental attack, his chances of reaching the Divine Sea had become that much slimmer.

Moreover, the most important point was that even though Situ Bai was more powerful than the red-clothed little boy, he wasn't that much stronger. If the red-clothed little boy could support himself up to Lin Ming's second attack, then Situ Bai would at most be able to withstand five attacks. The result would still be the same; Lin Ming's combat strength wouldn't be affected too much.

As a Divine Sea powerhouse, Situ Haotian was not an idiot. According to his original plan, even if Lin Ming and Situ Yaoyue were similar in strength, or perhaps Lin Ming was even a bit stronger, his physical condition would suffer after having to continue through 20-30 fights. Small wounds or injuries would accumulate in his body – this was inevitable. He had prepared 20-30 slaughter puppets for the explicit purpose of wearing down Lin Ming at all costs. No one was able to fight like a mechanical puppet, never knowing exhaustion.

However, after observing over 20 matches, Situ Haotian was able to confirm that Lin Ming had a terrifying ability. And that was – self recovery!

With Situ Haotian's vision, he shouldn't have discovered this so late. But, Lin Ming's restorative ability came from the Gate of Healing; it was from a cultivation system beyond Situ Haotian's understanding. Even now he was only able to generally speculate about this ability of Lin Ming's; he simply wasn't able to identify just why Lin Ming's regenerative abilities were so strong.

Lin Ming’s total energy within his body far surpassed that of a normal martial artist. Not just that, but he could also rapidly absorb heaven and earth origin energy from his surroundings, quickly supplementing any energy he consumed. This caused his endurance to reach a terrifying degree!

Also, Lin Ming’s physical defense and blood vitality were extraordinary, and he wore the Demon Emperor Armor. Even if he was affected by an attack from those slaughter puppets, over half of those effects would have been melted away anyway. He would have only received a minor shock wound. If an ordinary martial artist were to continue this for 20 or more fights, these tiny shock wounds would accumulate and cause the blood energy within their body to be unstable, making their true essence chaotic.

But, Lin Ming’s blood vitality was vibrant and exuberant. With the support of the Gate of Healing, his restorative ability was completely abnormal. Even minor wounds healed at ridiculous speeds. In other words, those 20 fights that Lin Ming had fought in before only had minimal effects on him!

Even if Lin Ming consumed a bit of his energy, he was still constantly accumulating momentum. After so many battles in which he slayed his enemies, he had become like an ancient and wild vicious beast, ominous and dire, his momentum seeming as if it had merged with the world itself. These battles had caused him to reach the peak in yet another state!

“This damned boy!”

Situ Haotian grimaced. He didn’t blame himself for his stupidity, he was always careful. This method of using a revolving battle to wear down Lin Ming was reasonable and indisputable, but the one factor he never expected was that Lin Ming was actually such an abnormal freak.

“Get out!”

Situ Haotian shouted at the insufferable Situ Bai. After obtaining this pardon, Situ Bai scurried away with his tail between his legs, absolutely scared out of his wits. At this moment, even facing Situ Haotian was a form of suffering. He only hated that he couldn't grow another pair of legs and run away even faster.

Situ Haotian's sharp and brutal eyes swept over all the remaining martial artists. Even the several remaining slaughter puppets were frightened. Although they already came here prepared to die, none of them wished to face that vicious beast in human form, Lin Ming. The pressure that Lin Ming put out was simply too great; no one could see the slightest hope of themselves winning.

This was like when a death sentenced prisoner faced the guillotine, and their legs would finally tremble. It was because the cold shine of that guillotine blade was far too oppressive.

This was the fear born from killing intent!

"A group of garbage!" Situ didn't intend to send these remaining slaughter puppets out. The strongest of them was only a bit better than the red-clothed little boy. He didn't want to uselessly send them off and allow Lin Ming to accumulate even more momentum.

The Great Demon Envoy actually didn't lower his head. Instead, he looked back at Situ Haotian with confidence in his eyes. From his eyes, Situ Haotian could not sense any fear at all, but instead a trace of determination. The Great Demon Envoy was not like these slaughter puppets. He was just over 70 years old and had a small chance of reaching the Divine Sea. In the face of certain death, it was extremely rare for him to maintain his calm composure.

"Demon One, you seem as if you intend to step onstage?" Situ Haotian asked.

The Great Demon Envoy cupped his hands together. "If Your Majesty needs, then this official shall go to battle."

"Oh? You aren't afraid of death?"

“This official has repeatedly failed against Lin Lanjian. Although I fear death, I also fear that my determination and confidence will be ruined.”

“Good!” Situ Haotian showed an appreciative look. A martial artist that wanted to reach greater heights would first have to have a firm heart of martial arts. If they were someone like Situ Bai or the red-clothed little boy who trembled and faltered when facing a powerful match, then they could simply forget about ever reaching a higher boundary. Even if Situ Bai’s talent surpassed that of the Great Demon Envoy, when he attempted to break into the Divine Sea, he would encounter a heart demon that was birthed from his innermost fear of Lin Ming. A heart demon that was shaped like Lin Ming would have unbelievable power and control. It was likely that Situ Bai would be defeated by this heart demon and fall into obsession.

In order to step onto the peak of martial arts, one had to strengthen their determination and their own beliefs. This was because when climbing upwards to the peak of martial arts, they would have to encounter endless difficulties to begin with.

Situ Haotian didn’t intend on sending the Great Demon Envoy to a battle he would certainly lose and die in. His eyes shifted to Situ Luosha, and he saw on him a similar determination.

As Situ Luosha saw Situ Haotian glance at him a second time, he pleaded once more, “Your Majesty, please allow Luosha to go to battle!”

Situ Luosha was different from the others. Although he appeared solemn, he truly did have the confidence to defeat Lin Ming. This match would by no means be certain death for him. Out of all the people present, he was one of the peerless proud sons of heaven that the Asura Divine Kingdom was raising. There was no business of the Divine Kingdom that he had to handle – his only mission was to cultivate. As long as he remained focused, he had a great chance of reaching the Divine Sea realm within 20 years!

“This is truly destined retribution…” Situ Haotian let out a deep breath. Situ Luosha was one of his outstanding Ascetics; his value was even near that of a Divine Sea Supreme Elder. If he died, it would be a significant loss to the Asura Divine Kingdom!

Situ Haotian looked to the heavens and sighed. If he knew that this would happen then he would never have become enemies with Lin Ming. But now the Asura Divine Kingdom was already riding the tiger; they were no longer able to back down!

As a Divine Sea powerhouse and a dignified Asura Divine Emperor, it would be incomparably ridiculous or him to beg for mercy from a Life Destruction realm junior. But, if this could solve the Asura Divine Kingdom’s predicament then Situ Haotian would disregard all shame to do this. But now, the problem was that attempting to ease their enmity had no meaning at all!

Apologizing now was in truth the same as admitting defeat and the same as saying that the Asura Divine Kingdom couldn’t fight Lin Ming even if they disregarded all costs to do so. Losing their national prestige was one matter, but the key question was: could Lin Ming truly lay down this past animosity?

If he were to become the highest under the heavens, would he not retaliate against the Asura Divine Kingdom?

The Asura Divine Kingdom had tried to push Lin Ming into a dead end several times. Thinking about it, if Situ Haotian were in Lin Ming’s position then he wouldn’t let this go either!

………….

“What’s going on? How come the Asura Divine Kingdom isn’t sending out the next match?” After the red-clothed little boy was defeated by Lin Ming, an entire quarter hour passed without any reaction from the Asura Divine Kingdom’s Godspeed Boat. There hadn’t been anyone coming out to battle…

“Send send send your head! That red little boy was one of the Asura Divine Kingdom’s Imperial Scholars! Now even an Imperial Scholar has died. He was killed in just two moves by Lin Lanjian; he wasn’t even able to support himself for five breaths of time! That boy is simply a monster! Anyone who goes up against him dies! If I think about it, those Life Destruction masters of the Asura Divine Kingdom are probably scared out of their wits. They might just pack their bags and go home in a bit so that they can cry themselves to sleep tonight!”

The one who spoke was a Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom Prince. His talent was ordinary and his words were like a scoundrel’s. But, by relying on his Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom’s background, he didn’t fear that his words would offend the Asura Divine Kingdom.

“That’s possible, otherwise how could they delay for a quarter hour. You know, the longer this goes on, the more beneficial it is for Lin Lanjian. They are just giving him more time to restore himself to his peak condition!”

“Are you just blathering on like an idiot because you can? What do you mean the longer this goes on the more beneficial it is for Lin Lanjian? Haven’t you discovered that in these 21 matches, Lin Lanjian doesn’t even seem as if he has consumed any energy? Instead, his killing intent force field is accumulating more and more! One comes up then one dies, two come up then two die!”

All of the martial artists present were elite heroes of the continent. Even if their cultivation was low, they were still unrivalled peers of their sects’ generations. Their eyesight was naturally better than an ordinary martial artist’s.

Someone less than 30 years old who had just broken through to the first stage of Life Destruction had actually caused all the Life Destruction masters of the Asura Divine Kingdom to not even dare to fight him! Just what kind of boldness was this?! Not just that, but this was a revolving battle and the worst of these martial artists could be ranked 160-170 on the Destiny Decree, and the stronger of them could reach the top 50 ranks of the Destiny Decree!

Even so, all of them had been completely killed off by Lin Ming. Not just that, but Lin Ming didn’t seem to have consumed any energy. Instead, his killing intent only accumulated, every death superimposing on the last until it soared into the sky, seeming as if it was changing the world itself!

Now facing this Lin Ming onstage, even the famed Elders of fifth-grade sects felt frightened, their scalps tingling in horror.

Chapter 852 – Fighting Situ Luosha

Chapter 852 – Fighting Situ Luosha

…

…

…

The entire arena was already wrecked beyond repair. The sheared mountain top was crisscrossed with fissures that were several miles long and hundreds of feet deep. If it wasn't for the Asura Divine Kingdom's array formation supporting the entire area, then this place would have long collapsed into the ground.

Ruined meat, blood, and bits of organs were scattered all over the place. There were some corpses that weren't even taken away because of how miserable their deaths had been.

The entire arena was filled with the strong acrid smell of blood.

However, the shaft of Lin Ming's spear was not stained with blood and his clothes didn't even have the slightest bit of damage. His white clothes were as clean as fresh snow. He fluttered high and proud above the arena, his clothes waving in the wind and his hair flying in the air.

His expression was light and breezy, as if he wasn't even worried about this life or death battle. With his handsome, jade-like looks and his leisurely manner, he was extraordinary and refined, like an immortal cavalier exiled from the heavens.

Within the seamless heaven and earth, the ethereal and elegant Lin Ming stood high above the bloody arena that resembled an Asura slaughter field. This sharp contrast made one feel as if this scene was unreal, as if all this death before him had nothing to do with him at all.

Time slowly passed. Soon, half an hour had passed and the Asura Divine Kingdom still hadn't set anyone out to battle.

All of the martial artists were impatiently waiting.

"What's going on? Is the Asura Divine Kingdom admitting defeat?"

Many martial artists couldn't help but think this. The Asura Divine Kingdom's background was truly powerful; in a single breath they had sent out 20 slaughter puppets. No one dared to look down on the Asura Divine Kingdom's war strength, but now it seemed that Lin Ming was even stronger!

"It's time. Go to battle…" Situ Haotian nodded at Situ Luosha. Even if he was worried that Situ Luosha would fall here, he still had to send him to fight.

After all, Situ Yaoyue's life was far more precious than Situ Luosha's!

"Be careful. If you cannot defeat him then retreat. As long as you are alive then I can protect you."

Situ Haotian said to Situ Luosha with a true essence sound transmission.

"Your Majesty, rest assured that I shall definitely defeat Lin Lanjian. I will not disappoint your graciousness!" Hearing that Situ Haotian would guarantee his life, Situ Luosha was grateful. But, he would not retreat. This battle was one he had to win.

"We've already been waiting half an hour, how interesting. Situ Haotian is delaying time in order to break down Lin Lanjian's momentum." On the great jade ship, the White Clan's Fairy Snow Gale saw Situ Luosha step into the arena and faintly smiled. "This is the same as acknowledging that everything he did before this was in vain. Lin Lanjian's hidden ability is too great; Situ Haotian has really eaten it this time."

When a strong opponent fell, it would carve a sense of intention in the victor's bones, a faith that they would win, creating a sort of invisible energy field that would drive them to victory. This would cause a martial artist to fight even more vigorously. Situ Haotian obviously feared this.

Old Man Good Fortune laughed, “Situ Haotian is so careful, but how useful will it be to waste this time to break down Lin Lanjian’s momentum?”

The accumulated faith that a martial artist gathered in himself would stay for a few days – it certainly wouldn’t be broken in just half an hour. The most that Situ Haotian did was diminish some of the momentum Lin Ming gathered, but he hadn’t broken it.

Under the attention of all, Situ Luosha finally grasped his spear and fell down from the Godspeed Boat. He fell onto the mountain ring, distantly facing Lin Ming.

“It’s Situ Luosha! Situ Luosha is finally fighting!” As the impatient martial artists saw the black-clothed Situ Luosha slowly fly into the arena stage, all of their eyes turned wide as they locked onto him.

“I thought that the Asura Divine Kingdom would still send out some suicide troops to wear down Lin Lanjian some more, but I never imagined they would directly send out Situ Luosha. Does this mean that the Asura Divine Kingdom still has hidden powerhouses it hasn’t used?”

“How could there be so many hidden powerhouses? Ten years ago, Situ Luosha was already ranked in the top 15 of the Destiny Decree. Now his ranking is 12 and no one still knows just how strong he is. I hear he is already nearing the Divine Sea realm. He should already be the Asura Divine Kingdom’s strongest Life Destruction martial artist!”

A battle between top masters could always make one’s blood boil with excitement. Especially this battle between the mysterious peak ranked Destiny Decree masters Situ Luosha and Lin Lanjian. Situ Luosha’s strength was an unknown variable, but so was Lin Ming’s. Those with a discerning eye could see that he had never put his full force forth in any of the previous battles. There were likely many Concept and Laws and martial skills that he hadn’t used.

Unknown against the unknown, this was truly a battle that filled with heart with anticipation. Everyone wanted to know just what the limits of their strength were!

Hualala!

A pair of massive black wings unfolded from behind Situ Luosha, keeping him suspended in the air. It wasn't strange for a martial artist to have a pair of treasure wings – even Corpsemancer had his own pair. But, Situ Luosha's pair of wings was different. It was not a treasure that had been refined, but a true part of Situ Luosha's body.

These were wings of flesh and blood!

Without a doubt, Situ Luosha had the bloodline of another species in his blood. It was probable that this even included a special bloodline seal ability!

"Lin Ming, with my peak sixth stage Life Destruction cultivation, even if I emerge victorious against you, it is not a win for my martial path. But I will not hold back. In this battle I will kill you with everything I have!"

As Situ Luosha spoke, several thousand crimson red Blood Drinking Seals suddenly flew out from his body. Then, a scene that startled Lin Ming occurred. These Blood Drinking Seals completely immersed into Situ Luosha's black wings. The Blood Drinking Seal tightly pasted themselves onto the feathers, causing the black wings to instantly become red like blood!

"This combat method…" Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. Without a doubt this was a stylistic cultivation method that Situ Luosha had devised from the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art'. He was the same as Lin Ming, a martial arts grandmaster who was stepping onto the path of creating his own set of martial arts!

No matter how good others' cultivation methods were, they were still others'; they might not suit someone else. For instance, Situ Luosha. By combining his special bloodline characteristics with the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art', he could display an absolutely stronger combat effectiveness.

‘Truly worthy of being one of the Destiny Decree’s peak ranked chosen prides of heaven!’

Although Lin Ming’s current talent far surpassed the standard of the Sky Spill Continent, he still wouldn’t underestimate the powerhouses of this world. This was because they were characters that stood out from a trillion or even hundreds of trillions of lives.

Ding!

A great bell that stood above the sheared off mountain top rang out once again, resounding through the dimensional realm.

The fight had officially started!

Situ Luosha acted first. Without any hesitation he grasped his long spear and turned into a black beam of light that shot forwards. His speed surpassed imagination!

Countless spear shades filled the air, creating a brilliant tapestry that blinded the eyes!

“You want to compare speed?”

Lin Ming’s lips curved up in a smile. What he feared the least was comparing speed. Or, it was more accurate to say that he didn’t fear comparing in any aspect. Whether it was physical strength, endurance, will, or anything else, it was enough to make his opponents vomit blood in frustration.

Without opening the Gate of Wonder, Lin Ming only used ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’ to create a series of phantom shadows in the air. The red spear in his hands wove through the universe, completely meeting all of Situ Luosha’s spear shades together.

Peng peng peng peng!

Like a crashing wave on a breaking shore, the entire mountain arena reinforced by the Asura Divine Kingdom’s array formation began to violently tremble. Spear wind savagely hewed off massive chunks of stone before crushing them into powder. Clouds of broken rocks and dust began to rush into the clear skies!

A black and red energy were like two flood dragons violently clashing in the desert, twisting around and staring down at the world with contempt!

“What speed, I can’t even see clearly!”

All of the heroic young elites present had already retreated 10 miles out. With their sight, watching this battle from 10 miles away was no problem at all. However, they simply couldn’t make out Lin Ming and Situ Luosha’s movements; their speed was just too fast.

It wasn’t just them, but even the famed Elders of the various sects were blind as to what was happening. All they saw was a storm of black and red light weaving together in the skies. But as for the exact happenings, none of them were able to distinguish anything in that battle of extreme speed.

“It seems like… they are evenly matched?” An Elder from a fifth-grade sect said with uncertainty.

“Maybe…” Another fifth-grade sect’s Highest Elder echoed. He was also a Destiny Decree master and yet he wasn’t able to see just who had the upper hand so far. This was truly a disgraceful matter for him.

Peng!

Situ Luosha’s two wings spread out. His blood red wings seemed as if they were carved from pure ruby. After the Blood Drinking Seals were fused into them they had become incomparably sharp, able to cut down several spear lights by themselves.

A faint red light shot across the skies like a rainbow. Six blood red feathers quietly separated from behind Situ Luosha, circling around Lin Ming and aiming at his limbs, back, and head, before shooting out together!

Meanwhile, Situ Luosha stabbed his spear at Lin Ming’s dantian.

“He’s fast!”

An excited light flashed through Lin Ming’s pupils. If he didn’t open the Gate of Wonder then just by using ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’, his movements were even slightly slower than Situ Luosha’s. This was already enough to startle Lin Ming. It seemed as if Situ Luosha’s special bloodline ability was also connected with extremely fast movement.

Bang!

A red long spear swept out, drawing a full moon completely around him. The blazing spear light completely blocked all of Situ Luosha’s attacks.

Kacha!

The two collided for the first time. A fierce storm of true essence suddenly stirred up, causing raging true essence to fill the air. The array formation that held together the mountain seemed unable to bear this, and a crack several hundred miles long appeared within it!

To Lin Ming and Situ Luosha, this arena was only a boundary. The true battlefield was in the sky!

Bang bang bang!

Thunder flashed, space trembled. Lin Ming took his dantian as the center and released a dazzling purple light. This was the glory of thunder!

Wild and stormy thunder condensed, forming substantialized purple scales all over Lin Ming’s body. Section by section, they covered his entire body. Arcs of electricity flashed from these scales formed from the power of thunder, deeply piercing into Lin Ming’s acupoints, connecting him to the tyrannical power of thunder around him.

The power of life – Thunder Battleform.

This was one of the most famed techniques of the Eightfall Thunder Emperor. Using thunder as the power of life and changing the body, stimulating it to produce a greater strength. This was a type of supportive martial skill. In order to use it, one had to have a thorough understanding of the Laws that formed its foundation. Otherwise, recklessly using this technique would not stimulate their life potential but would instead damage their organs and meridians.

As the martial artists present saw Lin Ming's entire body began to be covered with purple scales, they didn't sense anything unusual. But the several Divine Sea powerhouses, especially the Forsaken God Clan's Elders and Patriarch Shibai, were actually dumbfounded!

This was really the Thunder Battleform!

This was a unique skill that the Eightfall Thunder Emperor had once relied on to walk the world unrivalled. Although the complete jade slip inheritance had been left in the Forsaken God Clan, no one had been able to successfully practice it!

Chapter 853 – The Glory of Thunder

Chapter 853 – The Glory of Thunder

…

…

…

The Thunder Battleform was a lucky chance the Eightfall Thunder Emperor found within the Sea of Miracles. It was a thunder-attribute cultivation method found from ancient ruins that no one else had been capable of entering.

Following the Eightfall Thunder Emperor, there were a quite a few thunder-attribute martial artists that came from the Forsaken God Clan. Some of them even had a thunder-attribute Support Sphere. However, they were only able to obtain a very small amount of harvests from meditating on the Thunder Concept jade slips that the Eightfall Thunder Emperor left behind. They found it exceedingly difficult to practice even the intermediate thunder-attribute martial skills, let alone the Thunder Battleform.

Two months ago, Shibai lent the complete set of thunder-attribute jade slips the Eightfall Thunder Emperor left behind to Lin Ming, adding it to the Thunder Concept jade slips that Lin Ming already had. His intention had been to let Lin Ming grasp some of the basic techniques to control thunder as soon as possible in order to increase his own strength.

He never imagined that Lin Ming would focus most of his energy on the two strongest cultivation methods of the Eightfall Thunder Emperor – Thunder Battleform and Sword of Judgment. He worried that Li Ming had been to ambitious, but he never even dreamed Lin Ming would successfully practice the Thunder Battleform.

If he had successfully practiced the Thunder Battleform, did that mean he was also capable of using Sword of Judgment?

This was a cultivation method no one in the entire Forsaken God Clan had been able to successfully learn in the last several tens of thousands of years. Yet Lin Ming had only needed two months in order to learn it.

Just what kind of talent and perception was this…?

Shibai found this impossible to understand. Lin Ming's talent in thunder-attribute cultivation methods surpassed the scope of his imagination.

Chi-la!

With a bursting sound, purple gold arcs of thunder crawled on the edge of the red spear. This was the Nine Heavens Thunder Soul. Until now, Lin Ming had never used this top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul.

As the thunder-attribute martial artists in the audience saw the Thunder Soul on the tip of Lin Ming's spear, their eyes began to shine. That was a heaven-step Thunder Soul! Not just that, but it was an extraordinary existence amongst all heaven-step Thunder Souls!

Such a grade of Thunder Soul could probably only be possessed by a thunder-attribute Divine Sea powerhouse!

Lin Ming stepped on the void, instantly appearing in front of Situ Luosha. At such a close distance and by using the ghostly speed of 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void', Situ Luosha simply didn't have any ability to dodge.

Thunder Battleform combined with the attack of a top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul.

Chasing Thunder!

A blazing electric light shook the heavens and earth. Lin Ming's strike seemed to stir the power of the world, causing it to envelop Situ Luosha!

After crossing the threshold of Life Destruction, now that Lin Ming used Chasing Thunder with a top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul, the entire space ten miles around him seemed to have become a hell of thunder! Raging waves of purple electricity howled, drowning all of existence!

All of the martial artists present paled. This thunder seemed as if it was pulled down from the Thunder Dominion that was above the skies of the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. It was truly world shaking!

If these dozens of famed fifth-grade sect Elders were to be submerged in this sea of thunder, they would instantly perish and burn to ash!

In the face of this overwhelming sea of thunder that covered the heavens, Situ Luosha erupted forth with a loud shout. All of the feathers on his body stood on end. At this moment, a high pitched screech rushed out from his body, piercing through clouds and stones and spreading out for a hundred miles!

The two red wings behind Situ Luosha began to spin. A massive black hawk phantom thousands of feet long appeared behind him. This black hawk had four massive claws. It screeched out before soaring into the skies, spreading its broadsword like wings as it threw itself into the sea of thunder!

Bang bang bang!

A radiant purple light shined out for 100,000 feet, gorgeous and charming. Countless thunderclaps sounded out before melting into a single endless explosion. Many martial artists couldn't help but forcefully revolve their bodily protective true essence to block the terrifying sound waves. They were still shaken to the core, their ears in extreme pain with some of them even bleeding from their eardrums.

That black jaw shadow twisted and twirled inside that sea of thunder. In the moment before it was extinguished to nothing, it forcefully broke through the sea of thunder!

"He blocked it?"

“Awesome! How powerful! That is truly worthy of a top ranked Destiny Decree master!”

The scene of Situ Luosha and Lin Ming’s battle was too shocking. The entire mountain was filled with deep crevices and the aftershock energy waves from their collisions spread out dozens of miles.

“Situ Luosha may be surnamed Situ, but the truth is that his identity is greatly related to the Ancient Profound Hawk Clan. This Ancient Profound Hawk was otherwise known as the Black-Winged Roc. 100,000 years ago, it was an astounding ancient desolate vicious beast! A mature Ancient Profound Hawk could easily hunt down a Divine Sea Supreme Elder! And Situ Luosha has perfectly inherited the bloodline of the Ancient Profound Hawk Clan!”

“Easily hunt down a Divine Sea Supreme Elder? How is that even possible?!” All of the present martial artists found this unbelievable. A Divine Sea Supreme Elder represented the peak strength of the entire Sky Spill Continent to them. So how could they be easily hunted down?

“It’s true. Legends say that 100,000 years ago, the Laws of the world were different from the present. Afterwards, the heavens and earth changed and those ancient desolate vicious beasts were never able to appear again. The so-called Saint Beasts we give now are just flattering titles touted by the ignorant. Perhaps they only carry a tiny trace of the ancient desolate vicious beast bloodlines.”

The Sky Spill Continent’s central region had many ancient family clans that had an inheritance that continued for tens of thousands of years. In these family clans there were some ancient texts that vaguely described the world of the Sky Spill Continent from 100,000 years ago. By combining this information together, one could speculate a number of things. These several sect Elders were only casually discussing and yet they disclosed such shocking secrets.

Many young disciples had never heard of the strange matters of 100,000 years ago and were greatly interested. They wanted to ask more questions, when a terrifying sound of thunder resounded in the skies. This sound seemed as if it could shatter the skies and lift the seas.

These young disciples paled; they hurriedly revolved their true essence to forcefully resist the sound.

As they looked up, they saw that a nearly 10,000 feet long golden python had appeared behind Lin Ming!

As this golden python twisted in the air, it resembled a living mountain ridge!

“This is…”

As the martial artists present saw this golden python, all of them felt their scalps tingle with dread. In particular the thunder-attribute martial artists; they were completely floored.

Li Ming had finally released the main form of the top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul he had absorbed in the skies above the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. When Lin Ming was in the 90 mile range of the Thunder Dominion this was the appearance that the top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul had taken! Before crossing Life Destruction, Lin Ming was only able to rely on the Heretical God Sprout to suppress that Thunder Soul; it was itself difficult to control.

Now that Lin Ming’s entire body was tempered by the power of thunder and he was reborn, it wasn’t difficult for him to control and galvanize the top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul.

Lin Ming evenly lifted the long spear in his hands. With rumbling sound, the 10 mile wide sea of thunder appeared once again!

But this time, the sea of thunder was not purple but a pale gold!

The pale gold divine thunder seemed to contain an aura even more terrifying than the purple thunder before, as if it were capable of annihilating everything!

All of the surrounding martial artists were dumbstruck. That localized Thunder Dominion had just been destroyed and now a new one was already formed! Moreover, this Thunder Dominion was even more terrifying than the last one!

With Lin Ming's strength, he was still unable to reproduce that pale gold lightning from the 90 mile range of the Thunder Dominion. But by using the top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul as a foundation, it was possible to reproduce a minor trace of the annihilating pale gold lightning within the purple sea of thunder.

Chasing Thunder!

It was the same move, but the power had more than doubled from the previous time!

Situ Luosha's expression was grim. After an intense exchange, he now had to confront an even more terrifying attack. Even he found this somewhat difficult to withstand.

A severe light flashed in his eyes. He bit the tip of his tongue and spat out blood essence. This was the source blood essence of the Ancient Profound Hawk Clan. Blood essence quickly burnt up in the air. Soon after, over 20% of the Blood Drinking Seals on Situ Luosha's black wings disintegrated. His entire body shined with a blood light and the faint cry of a hawk seemed to emerge from his body. This sound was even more terrifying than before and an even more solid Ancient Profound Hawk phantom grew out from his body!

This Ancient Profound Hawk phantom completely embezzled Situ Luosha in its center. In other words, Situ Luosha had himself manifested into an Ancient Profound Hawk as he soared into that sea of golden thunder.

Chi chi chi!

The Ancient Profound Hawk's feathers were divine swords that chopped apart the power of thunder. But at this time, with a terrifying roar, the massive golden python behind Lin Ming also dove into the sea of thunder, wrestling together with the Ancient Profound Hawk in a brutal brawl!

Situ Luosha had consumed the blood essence as the price to summon a greater and more powerful Ancient Profound Hawk. The Ancient Profound Hawk forcefully tore apart the sea of golden thunder, colliding with the golden python transformed from the Nine Heavens Thunder Soul, causing it to retreat again and again!

"An eagle preying on a python, this is far too shocking! It's hard to imagine that this is a battle between Life Destruction martial artists!" The surrounding martial artist's kept their eyes glued to the action. Even if they couldn't understand what was happening in such a high level battle, it could still expand their horizons.

Pa!

The golden python was gripped by the Ancient Profound Hawk's claws; it was about to be torn in half!

Lin Ming moved at this moment. The Nine Heavens Thunder Soul was only a part of Lin Ming's combat strength. How could he allow things to end like this?

With a step forwards, he instantly crossed thousands of feet. Lin Ming instantly appeared in the sea of thunder as he thrust out the red spear in his hands. But at this time, the spear point was burning with a blood red fire!

Chasing Sun!

In the last 20 some fights, Lin Ming had only ever used the Concept of Thunder and had never used the Concept of Fire. But now the alarming flames combined with the sea of thunder, creating a titanic detonation.

Lin Ming's spear carried a vast and explosive true essence force. It smashed into the back of the Ancient Profound Hawk.

"Krrah!"

The Ancient Profound Hawk issued a sad and mournful screech, It flew backwards and smashed into a mountain. A side of the mountain collapsed in a rumbling avalanche. Giant stone boulders the size of a palace broke off and were tossed into the air.

Situ Luosha knelt on the ground, propping himself on one knee with his long spear as he vomited blood on the ground; his face was pale like paper.

One of the black wings on his back was broken, half of it collapsed and dangled at a strange angle. This was the result of Lin Ming attacking the back of the Ancient Profound Hawk!

"Is it over?"

The martial artists present held their breath. The battle between the two had changed too quickly. Situ Luosha was prevailing, but in the twinkling of an eye, Lin Ming's spear of fire had stabbed out and completely changed the situation. The Ancient Profound Hawk phantom that Situ Luosha summoned had shattered, leaving Situ Luosha with a broken wing and blood flowing from his mouth.

Above the great jade ship, Old Man Good Fortune saw the battle play out before him and sighed. "Lin Lanjian decomposed his body with thunder, turning it into the most basic tiny units. These tiny units were then tempered with thunder before being reformed. He has already long fused the power of thunder into his body, and his compatibility with it has reached a terrifyingly high degree. Even the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's famous unique techniques were successfully and easily learnt by him. To display a part of the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion's glory is impressive enough, but I never thought he would also have a similarly deep understanding into the Concept of Fire. It's just incredible!"

Chapter 854 – Admitting Defeat

Chapter 854 – Admitting Defeat

…

…

…

On the sheared and shattered mountain peak, Situ Luosha knelt on the ground. His entire body was covered in blood and he was barely supporting himself with his black long spear. He looked up, his stubborn eyes locked onto Lin Ming.

Even though he had been severely wounded, his eyes were still burning with a brilliant and fiery fighting spirit, unwilling to concede.

Or perhaps it was because conceding was also insignificant. Because… this was a life or death struggle!

Lin Ming waved his long spear and pointed the top towards Situ Luosha's forehead. Although he had a decent impression of this Situ Luosha and they had no previous enmity, in this life or death battle, Lin Ming had no intention of showing empathy or compassion to his enemies.

As a martial artist of the Asura Divine Kingdom, Situ Luosha was already destined to be his enemy. To show benevolence to the enemy was to be cruel to himself. If Situ Luosha had won this fight, then Lin Ming's fate would have been to suffer a life worse than death.

Spear light surged. A faint trace of pale gold thunder sizzled on Lin Ming's spearpoint.

Situ Luosha also stood up. Behind him, over 30% of the thousands of Blood Drinking Seals broke apart, covering his entire body in a blood fog once again.

This was likely to be their last clash. But, the victor of this match was already clear at a glance!

"Situ Luosha will certainly lose."

"No kidding! The disparity is too great!"

At this point, even a Xiantian realm martial could see where the direction of this battle was leading. Lin Ming obviously had a great deal of strength left over but Situ Luosha was now spent, a bow with no more arrows. With these two completely inverse conditions, the gap was obvious.

"Stop!"

As Situ Luosha was preparing to burn his Ancient Profound Hawk blood essence and risk his life once more, Situ Haotian's cold voice suddenly shouted out.

This shout was like billowing thunder. Some of the martial artists flying in the air were nearly knocked unconscious from the shock.

"We admit defeat in this match! Luosha, withdraw!" With a distortion of black light, the black-robed Situ Haotian appeared in the skies above the battlefield. His calm and indifferent pupils overlooked the fierce battle between Lin Ming and Situ Luosha without any emotion at all.

But from his eyes, one could sense an indescribable dignity, as if the words he spoke were the commands of heaven.

However, Lin Ming didn't feel the slightest bit of pressure in front of these eyes with their inviolable majesty. Instead, his mouth curved in a satire-filled smirk. "Withdraw? This is a life or death struggle! For every two people on this arena stage, only one is allowed to leave alive. Now that Situ Luosha has lost he can withdraw, but if I were to lose, then I should let you do with me as you please? What sort of reasoning is this!?"

Facing Situ Haotian's pressure, Lin Ming was still able to loudly retort to a Divine Sea Supreme Elder. This courage left all the heroic young elites present ashamed at their own inferiority. This was not a question of just being psychologically frightened. The key issue was that a Divine Sea Supreme Elder held an aura within them that naturally formed a force field. Just looking at them could scare someone witless!

Shwa!

A white shadow instantly appeared in the distant arena skies, directly confronting Situ Haotian.

This was Shibai.

"Since we set a life or death struggle, you must understand the rules of a life or death struggle. If you wish to change your mind now and say that this is a simple friendly spar, then that is also fine! Little Brother Lin will not kill your people but you can forget about taking away Little Brother Lin!"

Shibai was also worried about the background of the Asura Divine Kingdom. Even if Lin Ming seemed outrageously powerful at the moment, he still didn't dare to have 100% confidence that Lin Ming would be the one to finally emerge victorious. Thus, he put forth these conditions to ensure his absolute safety.

But how could Situ Haotian possibly agree with Shibai's suggestion. If he cancelled this life or death battle then that meant admitting defeat ahead of time. Everything he had done before now would all have been in vain.

"One million spirit essence stones or equivalent heavenly materials!"

Situ Haotian was unambiguous as he directly spoke out this sky high price. But, his intentions were clear. He intended to trade this price for Situ Luosha's life.

"Your Majesty…" Situ Luosha's heart twitched. At this moment, he felt nothing but the greatest shame and humiliation of his life. As a sixth stage Life Destruction martial artist, he had been completely suppressed by a mere first stage Life Destruction junior! Even after combusting his blood essence, he still wasn't able to injure his opponent! Finally, he had to depend on His Majesty the Divine Emperor to lay down his pride and redeem his life with spirit essence stones.

Situ Luosha had never felt this utterly incompetent.

To someone like him who was almost insufferably arrogant, this would undoubtedly be a significant setback to his future martial path.

"One million spirit essence stones to buy the life of a future Divine Sea powerhouse, your plan is quite good!" Shibai taunted.

Back in the confrontation at the Realmheart Great Hall, Shibai had feared that Situ Haotian would become mad and lose all reasoning. But now, Shibai didn't fear Situ Haotian at all. A massive number of influences had tried to win over Lin Ming in these past few days, including the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom, Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, Holy Land sects and family clans and many others, all of them sending gifts in great heaps.

Of course, Shibai didn't expect that these influences would help the Forsaken God Clan if the Asura Divine Kingdom were to wage war against them. But, what Shibai could affirm was that they wouldn't join the side of the Asura Divine Kingdom in a war. Also, the Death Reaper Curse that the Asura Divine Kingdom had used to track Lin Ming had been eliminated from his body. Even if a great war were to break out, them wishing to kill Lin Ming would not be easy at all. Those influences would not do something so thankless in exchange for fatally offending the future highest under the heavens.

As long as those other influences didn't help the Asura Divine Kingdom, then by relying on the absolute defenses of this dimensional realm, the Asura Divine Kingdom would have to continuously weigh over just whether or not they should try to invade this land. After all, they didn't have a top level super master like the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's Highest Divine Emperor.

"1.5 million, that is my bottom line!" Situ Haotian said with finality, his expression extremely gloomy.

"And if we don't agree?" Shibai asked back.

"Then use your spear!" Situ Haotian coldly said, his eyes filled with a murderous intent. Although a Divine Sea powerhouse's value far surpassed 1.5 million spirit essence stones, he was still a proud and lofty Divine Emperor. Just because he was willing to yield once didn't mean he would be coerced into making endless concessions forever.

"Good, then I agree!" The one who spoke was Lin Ming. The Asura Divine Emperor appearing had already been showing sufficient face, and he had also made enough concessions. In any case, killing Situ Luosha and enraging this Asura Divine Emperor to the point where he might do something crazy was of no benefit to him.

Moreover, Situ Luosha's attitude wasn't too bad. Lin Ming had neither injustice nor enmity with Situ Luosha. And most importantly of all, Situ Luosha had already been surpassed by Lin Ming; in the future, it was impossible for him to ever be his match again.

And 1.5 million spirit essence stones' worth of materials was also enough to move Lin Ming's heart. It could be called a pie falling from the sky.

"The Asura Divine Emperor has lowered his head..."

"Yah. To Situ Haotian, yielding in front of the eyes of everyone here is probably worse than paying 1.5 million spirit essence stones. This is a Divine Sea Supreme Elder lowering his head to a first stage Life Destruction junior. This sort of thing has probably never happened in the entire 10,000 year plus history of the Asura Divine Kingdom!"

"This Lin Lanjian is too horrifying! When he reaches the Divine Sea in the future he will be like a dragon ascending to the heavens! He will rule the entire Sky Spill Continent for 10,000 years!"

“Hey, that’s not necessarily true. This type of character might ascend upwards, just like Emperor Shakya did in the past.”

It was unknown just who said these words, but it left all of the heroic young elites excited. To them, the elusive Realm of the Gods was a land filled with infinite appeal. All of them wished to go to the legendary Realm of the Gods described in the ancient texts to broaden their horizons. But that was actually impossible for them. Ascending into the Realm of the Gods was far too difficult.

The 22nd match ended once more with Lin Ming’s victory!

But this time, Situ Luosha wasn’t without achievement. He had forced Lin Ming to use the power of the Thunder Dominion here twice in a row, and he also used the main form of the Nine Heavens Thunder Soul as well as the explosive power of thunderfire with Chasing Sun. In such an intense battle, it was inevitable that Lin Ming would have consumed some energy.

“What a good seedling. A dual Thunder and Fire Law explosion, those two Concepts were perfectly combined together. That should have been a martial skill that he created himself.” Old Man Good Fortune praised without hesitation.

Normally, a martial artist only had a single attribute physique, skilled in just a single one of the five elements. It was extremely rare to see a dual attribute physique. And as for someone like Lin Ming. who had an extremely high talent in both aspects of thunder and fire, this was the first time that Old Man Good Fortune had seen something like this.

“Thunder and fire… those aren’t part of the domain that I’m skilled at.” Old Man Good Fortune stroked his beard, slightly shaking his head.

“Oh?” Fairy Snow Gale’s heart stirred as she heard this. “Listening to Senior Good Fortune’s meaning, are you planning on accepting him as a disciple? Although Senior may not be proficient in the Concepts of Thunder and Fire, you understand the Concepts of Space and Time. In that alone, you are absolutely the number one master in the entire Sky Spill

Continent! And Lin Lanjian also has excellent achievements in the Concepts of Space and Time. If he can obtain your guidance, that would be an amazingly extraordinary lucky chance!"

As for Old Man Good Fortune's name and birth, perhaps no one knew besides him. People only knew of his title. In the superstitions and beliefs of the world, good fortune had always represented the Great Dao, represented the boundless universe.

The axis of space, the eons that passed since ancient times, the universe was the fusion of space and time. It was said Old Man Good Fortune's nickname had come from this. In terms of the Concepts of Space and Time, no one was able to reach him.

It was exactly because of his deep understanding towards these mysterious and elusive Concepts that Old Man Good Fortune was considered someone close to being the highest under the heavens. Rumors said that he once even fought the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor in fierce combat until they reached a standstill.

Although the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor did not have the strength of the highest under the heavens, he could actually be called the one that possessed the most authority under the heavens. He had the unreserved support of an entire Divine Kingdom at his back, and yet he still wasn't able to defeat a wild and free-spirited crane like Old Man Good Fortune, someone who didn't even come from a sect. From this alone it could be seen just how powerful Old Man Good Fortune was.

"Accept him as a disciple? Haha..." Old Man Good Fortune chuckled as he shook his head, "Useless old me already has a foot half into the coffin, so how could I teach such an eternally rare talent? When he steps into the Divine Sea, or perhaps even before he steps into the Divine Sea, his strength will already surpass mine! What use is there in me teaching him anything?"

"Surpass Senior in strength before the Divine Sea? That's impossible!" Fairy Snow Gale's eyes widened like saucers. She didn't speak out of respect to Old Man Good Fortune, but because she sincerely believed in her words. Old Man Good Fortune was a late Divine Sea powerhouse, and with his achievements in the Concepts of Space and Time, he could be called unrivalled within the world!

Fairy Snow Gale could also barely accept if Lin Ming became the highest under the heavens after breaking through to the Divine Sea, but for him to do so before that, even she felt this was far too overstated!

“The disparity between Life Destruction and the Divine Sea is enormous. Aren’t Senior Good Fortune’s words a bit too exaggerated?” If it wasn’t for these words having come out of Old Man Good Fortune’s mouth, then Fairy Snow Gale would have only snorted in contempt.

“There is no exaggeration. Little Snow, you must remember that an Emperor powerhouse is not the same as a Divine Sea powerhouse. A Divine Sea martial artist is an Emperor level powerhouse, but an Emperor level powerhouse isn’t necessarily a Divine Sea martial artist…”

Early access Patreon chapters

Chapter 855 – Yaoyue Fights

Chapter 855 – Yaoyue Fights

…

…

…

In the Sky Spill Continent, an Emperor level powerhouse was only a title, not a true name for a cultivation realm. When a martial artist had reached a certain level of strength, they would then be recognized as an Emperor level powerhouse. Although there was a massive disparity between Life Destruction and the Divine Sea, there were still some heaven-gifted individuals who could contend with a Divine Sea powerhouse at only the Life Destruction realm.

Such a person would equally be able to obtain the title of Emperor powerhouse.

In particular, there were eighth stage Life Destruction martial artists. These were extremely rare and precious talents whose strength far surpassed all other martial artists at their level. After crossing Life Destruction eight times, they might even be more powerful than an early Divine Sea powerhouse.

“Senior Good Fortune, are you saying that Lin Lanjian will be able to cross eight stages of Life Destruction?” Thinking about it, Lin Ming being able to cross Life Destruction eight times was well within reason. But, it was just that since ancient times, there were less than a handful of Divine Sea powerhouses who had crossed Life Destruction eight times. This caused Fairy Snow Gale to feel as if this were all very unreal, like a dream itself.

The Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor and the Sublime Smelting Imperial Grand Uncle, and even Old Man Good Fortune himself had only crossed seven stages of Life

Destruction. For the last 100,000 years, every eighth stage Life Destruction Divine Sea Supreme Elder had become the highest under the heavens. However, the highest under the heavens wasn't necessarily an eighth stage Life Destruction Divine Sea martial artist.

For instance, the most recent highest under the heavens was Emperor Shakya, who had crossed seven stages of Life Destruction.

Emperor Shakya's strength lay in his comprehension of seven different martial intents, and then fusing these seven different martial intents together. With these seven martial intents combined with his seven stages of Life Destruction, he had reached enlightenment under a Bodhi tree and had finally broken through the martial void.

In terms of the power of his spirit body, Emperor Shakya far surpassed that of the Eightfall Thunder Emperor.

Normally, an Emperor level talent had one or two aspects that they could claim to be the best in within the entire continent. Those that excelled in three or four aspects could be called the rarest talents within the world, someone who would eventually become the highest under the heavens.

And Lin Ming was certainly this case. It was simply impossible to find out where his flaw was. He had lasting endurance, formidable strength, extreme speed, an incomparably solid foundation, as well a profound understanding of Concepts and Laws. As long as Lin Ming could cross eight stages of Life Destruction then he would be unrivalled in this world!

At this time, atop the Asura Divine Kingdom's Godspeed Boat, Situ Haotian was indifferently standing there. In front of him, the wounded Situ Luosha was kneeling.

"You may leave..." Situ Haotian waved his hand and then took a deep breath. The situation had eventually taken a turn for the worst scenario possible.

Now, he only had one card left in his hand.

That was Situ Yaoyue.

He couldn't help but acknowledge that of the 22 masters that he had sent to battle, besides Situ Luosha playing a minor role, all of the rest had died in vain.

"Luosha, this will be your life's greatest obstacle. Pass it, and you will reach the Divine Sea. Fail, and you will be forever stranded as you are!"

The best chance for a martial artist to attack the Divine Sea realm was before they were 100 years old. If they couldn't accomplish this then their chances of success would lower more and more with every following year. After they reached 200 years of age, it was basically impossible for them to ever hope of breaking through on their own.

Then, if they still wished to step into the Divine Sea, their only chance would be to go out and adventure for their own lucky chance and use that lucky chance to make their breakthrough.

This sort of lucky chance was certainly not easy to find. But since ancient times, there had been countless Life Destruction powerhouses in the Sky Spill Continent, and some of them were sure to find their own lucky chances. As long as one found a good enough lucky chance, a fifth stage or even fourth stage Life Destruction martial artist could also break into the Divine sea.

In fact, within the Sky Spill Continent, there weren't that many less fifth stage Life Destruction Divine Sea powerhouses than there were sixths stage Life Destruction Divine Sea powerhouses.

Of course, their strengths were on two completely different levels.

Situ Luosha still had 20-30 years to make his breakthrough. For Lin Ming to defeat him here was truly a great setback to him. If he failed to overcome the heart demon of Lin Ming then he would fail any breakthrough he attempted. But, if he could overcome his heart demons, then he might experience a nirvana of the soul, and step even further on his road of martial arts.

Situ Luosha clenched his fists and silently withdrew.

Then, a young woman wearing black armor and with very slender legs slowly walked forwards. She kneeled in front of Situ Haotian and requested, “Your Majesty, please allow Yaoyue to go to battle!”

Looking at Situ Yaoyue, the Asura Divine Emperor helplessly shook his head. He was silent for a while before sighing, saying, “I never thought that I would ultimately have to place all my hopes on you. It seems that everything done before this only had a limited effect…”

If he had to come up with any effect that the 20 slaughter puppets and the red-clothed little boy had, that would be that they had discovered Lin Lanjian’s abnormal endurance.

This could at least be given as good advice to Situ Yaoyue.

“Yaoyue, you must remember not to engage him in an extended battle. Your endurance is far inferior to his!”

Situ Haotian was very clear that if Yaoyue had fought those 22 battles, although she could win, her consumption of energy would have been enormous. In this aspect alone, she had no way of comparing with Lin Ming.

“Yaoyue understands!”

Above the arena stage, Lin Ming’s white clothes were still as spotless as before. He flew proud and high in the wind, naturally revealing an aura as if he defied the heavens. At this time, he seemed to have become one with the world itself.

After defeating Situ Luosha with absolute superiority, all of the martial artists began to look at him with awe in their eyes.

This was a peerless talent! In the future, it was extremely likely he would become the master of the entire Sky Spill Continent!

“Even Situ Luosha has lost! He was a peak Destiny Decree powerhouse and had never used that Ancient Profound Hawk bloodline of his either! The Destiny Decree had never accurately ranked him, but I think that with Situ Luosha’s strength, he could at least rank seventh or eighth on the Destiny Decree!”

“The Asura Divine Kingdom’s background is already so strong and yet they can’t withstand such a monstrous genius like Lin Lanjian!”

The slaughter puppets that the Asura Divine Kingdom had put out were definitely one of their killing moves. Even a top 10 ranked Destiny Decree master would find themselves exhausted in a revolving battle. However, they had actually been useless against Lin Ming.

“The Asura Divine Kingdom is in danger. It seems more likely they will lose this battle. It might even be possible that they no longer have any other cards to play!”

With events having reached this step, more and more people favored Lin Ming. After defeating Situ Luosha with such massive superiority, Lin Ming absolutely had the qualifications to place in the top three ranks of the Destiny Decree.

As everyone was talking, a young woman flew off from the Asura Godspeed Boat.

This woman was extremely tall; not any shorter than Lin Ming. She wore a set of black armor, an extremely exquisite and delicate work that wrapped around her chest, shoulders, and waist, revealing a pair of creamy and thick thighs.

This woman flew until she was only 200 feet away from Lin Ming before stopping there. Fluttering high in the air, her black hair danced in the wind. Her perfect skin seemed as if it were carved from jade, and her bright pupils were a pale red, as if they were twin blood moons. Her bright red lips were curved up, revealing a devilish charm. She was gorgeous and fascinating, making all others seem inferior.

This woman…

As all of the heroes saw Situ Yaoyue, they were surprised. At first glance, Situ Yaoyue looked like a fairy from heaven. But looking closer, she resembled a demonic immortal seductress that had escaped from the nine nether hells. Her smile revealed an evil killing intent, as if her looks could kill!

“That woman is horrifying!”

There were many heroic young elites present that couldn’t help but shiver in fear. Normally, such a stunning beauty that could bring a kingdom to its knees would have these heroic young elites dreaming and fantasizing about her in their minds. But facing Situ Yaoyue, they couldn’t stir up the least bit of courage to do so. It was like they were afraid that she would see through their thoughts and they would draw a calamity onto themselves.

“What is her cultivation? I can’t see!”

A Life Destruction martial artist said, bewildered. He was a first stage Life Destruction martial artist and yet he couldn’t see through Situ Yaoyue’s cultivation. How could he not be surprised?

“Seventh stage Life Destruction…”

Beside him, a sect Elder deeply sighed. This era of juniors was simply too fearful. This magnificent woman with her seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation would surely step into the Divine Sea in the future. Perhaps she would become an existence nearing that of the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor! Compared to such a character, he was only like a dim flame next to her radiant woman; there was just no comparison.

“Seventh stage Life Destruction, heavens!” The young man who spoke before couldn’t help but exclaim in astonishment.

The most common Divine Sea Supreme Elders of the Sky Spill Continent were at the fifth or sixth stage of Life Destruction. There were only seven or eight known seventh stage Life Destruction martial artists. Of these, nearly half of them were characters approaching the highest under the heavens, and as for the other half, it was only because their cultivation was lacking. Once their cultivation stepped into the late Divine Sea realm, they too would likely become powerhouses at the rank of the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor.

In fact, on the Destiny Decree issued by Destiny Grasp, the top three ranked martial artists were all at the seventh stage of Life Destruction. But, these three people had extremely special circumstances – they were already over 1000 years old. They were originally sixth stage Life Destruction martial artists that had failed to reach the Divine Sea and had then gone out to seek their own lucky chances. Finally, they didn't manage to break into the Divine Sea but did successfully stumble their way into the seventh stage of Life Destruction. To them, this was not anything good, because a heavenly material that could help a person break through to the Divine Sea could only be used once. Using that material a second time would have nearly no effect.

As for those martial artists that had broken through to the seventh stage of Life Destruction on their own, the heroic young elites present had never heard of any. Of course, the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom and the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom surely had their own seventh stage Life Destruction elites. But these individuals were all being secretly trained, and none of them had ever been exposed, so no one knew of them.

As of now, Situ Yaoyue was the first of these hidden elites that had been exposed. She was a peak talent that had relied on her own strength to break into the seventh stage of Life Destruction.

She was likely even more powerful than the first three ranked masters of the Destiny Decree!

Everyone knew that the Asura Divine Kingdom's background was formidable and they had hidden masters, but no one knew what degree of strength these hidden masters had. They could only make vague guesses without basis. They had all thought that Lin Ming had more or less won, but now it seemed as if Lin Ming was the one in danger instead!

"All those that can arrive at the seventh stage of Life Destruction are peak talents originally, and Lin Lanjian is six small boundaries away. The disparity is just too great!"

Jumping boundaries to fight was not new or terrifying. Since ancient times there had always been Life Destruction talents capable of fighting Divine Sea martial artists. But, what was horrifying was when those they fought were similarly geniuses!

Thus, was there any chance that Lin Ming could win?

All of the martial artists couldn't help but have these doubts. To them, Situ Yaoyue was like an unreachable mountain peak, impossible to overcome!

Shibai also felt his palms go wet with sweat. He never imagined that the Asura Divine Kingdom's final card would be so terrifying.

Lin Ming was in a crisis!

"Although you just fought with Luosha and immediately fighting you may be a bit unfair, I will not go the least bit easy on you just because of that." A devilish smile still hung on Situ Yaoyue's face. As she slowly spoke, her voice was misty and alluring, like a siren from legends that could cause fleets of sailors to be lost in illusion.

"I also do not need a woman to go easy on me." Lin Ming calmly replied, his voice signaling his sharp opposition.

"Ha! How interesting!"

Chapter 856 – Extreme Violet Domain, Demon Moon Illuminating the Sky

Chapter 856 – Extreme Violet Domain, Demon Moon Illuminating the Sky

…

…

…

In the 100 mile wide area, Lin Ming and Situ Yaoyue were only standing 200 feet apart in the air. To a top master, this distance wouldn't even take the blink of an eye to cross.

Once the two fought, this would absolutely be an earthshaking event!

"Back away, everyone back away! Retreat several dozen miles or else you might be affected!" A sect Elder began to direct the young elites of his sect to withdraw.

Although they all hoped to be closer, the martial artists present knew just how serious the gravity of the situation was, and they all retreated together, not stopping until they were over 20 miles away. They stood there, breath abated, their sight completely concentrated on the movements of the two as they anticipated the violent and raging fight that could erupt at any moment.

This battle was simply too exciting. It would be the greatest battle in the Sky Spill Continent for the last 1000 years, a soul stirring, blood boiling battle that was more breathtaking than a duel between Divine Sea Supreme Elders.

Ding!

With the ring of the great bell, Lin Ming and Situ Yaoyue still didn't move. They kept their distance of 200 feet, both of them looking down on the other.

Situ Yaoyue's armor was covered with extremely fine patterns. Lin Ming, who had an extremely high understanding of inscription symbols and arrays, could see that this armor was actually a high-grade heaven-step treasure.

A defensive high-grade heaven-step treasure was several times more precious than an offensive treasure. There were even many Divine Sea Supreme Elders that didn't have one. Yet, Situ Yaoyue was able to wear this. From this alone it could be seen just how deep the inheritance of the Asura Divine Kingdom was.

The two people faced each other for several dozen breaths of time. Then, Situ Yaoyue smiled, a brilliance that could cause nations to tumble. She said with a low and strong voice, "My name is Situ Yaoyue, remember it well!"

As she smiled, the myriad stars seemed to dim down, as if they had all been eclipsed by her smile.

'The starlight was swallowed?'

Lin Ming looked towards the sky, a trace of interest flashing over his face. A mere smile had been able to dim the starlight. Was this the Law of Darkness?

"How could the sky have turned dark...?"

All of the martial artists present had been completely concentrated on Lin Ming and Situ Yaoyue. They didn't even know when, but at some point the bright moon in the sky began to pale, until the moon and stars completely vanished. A thick cover of darkness slowly enveloped the world, as if some invisible ancient vicious beast had devoured the heavens!

"What is going on?"

All of the martial artists present paled. Their vision hadn't been affected by this darkness, but the sudden fall of gloom had caused all of them to feel a trace of fear.

"Look behind that woman!"

A martial artist suddenly cried out in alarm. Everyone followed his eyes, and saw that behind Situ Yaoyue, all of the darkness seemed to gather together, forming a pure sea of black chaos.

The sea surged, mighty waves of pitch black tumbling about. Deep within that sea, a blood red demon moon slowly began to rise. All around that crimson demon moon, a sparkling purple light shone!

This strange scene shocked everyone present!

"What is that? Is that an illusionary attack used by that woman?"

"It's not an illusion..." A Life Destruction old man from a Holy Land family clan took a deep breath as he saw the sparkling purple light in that sea of black chaos. "That is the Extreme Violet Dantian... the Extreme Violet Dantian can become a sea of purple. It is a special inherent trait that one is born with. The dantian does not need to form a Revolving Core in order to store a massive amount of true essence. As for the demon moon phenomenon behind that woman, that is the projection of the Extreme Violet Dantian into the world. That is a sort of domain!

"Extreme Violet Dantian? Domain?"

That was a dantian variation that many Supreme Elders of ancient times had. It was said that 20,000-30,000 thousand years ago, the highest under the heavens at that time also possessed the Extreme Violet Dantian!

When an ordinary martial artist trained their dantian, besides the immediate area outside of the Revolving Core crystal nucleus, the other regions of their dantian were mostly empty. At most, there would be some true essence mist floating about. But for an Extreme Violet

Dantian martial artist, these regions were filled by the so-called ‘purple sea’. The purple sea was in truth liquefied energy. In other words, an Extreme Violet Dantian martial artist had a total true essence quantity several times that of an ordinary marital artist!

“So that’s the Extreme Violet Dantian… no wonder that woman can step into the seventh stage of Life Destruction!” The heroic young elites all had complex emotions crossing their faces. Some were jealous, some were resentful, and some were awed.

Normally, a martial artist that could step into the seventh stage of Life Destruction had to have some sort of special characteristic. For instance, the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor had an inborn combat spirit divine body, and the Sublime Smelting Imperial Grand Uncle had a king dragon vein.

But just by having a single outstanding aspect, it was unlikely for one to become the highest under the heavens. One had to have at least several areas in which they surpassed all others.

After all, someone who could be the highest under the heavens was only born every 8000-9000 years!

“The Asura Divine Kingdom indeed cannot be underestimated. Without any sign or smoke, they’ve managed to cultivate a peerless talent with an Extreme Violent Dantian, and they’ve also managed to keep her out until the last moment on stage. I wonder just how Lin Lanjian will be able to stop her.”

Near the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom’s side, Ouye Qingfeng’s expression was quite peculiar. Although he was vaguely aware that the Asura Divine Kingdom had a number of Ascetics they kept hidden around, he wasn’t sure just how powerful Situ Yaoyue was. If she could maintain her talent then she had a chance of becoming someone close to the highest under the heavens. At that time, she would be able to lead the Asura Divine Kingdom so that they could stand on equal footing with the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom.

This was certainly not good news to the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom.

“Lin Lanjian is in danger. Besides his foundation being extremely solid, he doesn’t seem to have a special divine body…”

To many martial artists, Lin Ming was undoubtedly a freak of nature. Whether it was strength, endurance, battle spirit, speed, or comprehension of Concepts, he far surpassed all other martial artists at his level.

But Lin Ming seemed as if he was missing a little something ‘special’, such as a divine body, divine bloodline, or variation dantian. This was because back in ancient times, there were many Supreme Elders that had similar divine bodies or variation dantians that they used to rule the Sky Spill Continent. As long one had a divine body or a variation dantian, they had the justification and public belief that they could have incredible achievements.

On the contrary, without these things, then just talking about solid foundation, moves, cultivation methods, or comprehension of Concepts, all of that would seem pale and weak.

This would cause people to not help but wonder just what Lin Ming would rely on to advance into the top three of the Destiny Decree as a first stage Life Destruction martial artist. With his foundation, perception, or battle spirit?

“Lin Lanjian, you have killed 21 of my Asura Divine Kingdom’s people before this, and now, I shall be the one to collect their blood debt. Let me see just how you’ll block my attack!”

As Situ Yaoyue spoke, she withdrew a nine foot long spear from her spatial ring. The spear shaft was black and the spear blade was red. This was also a high-grade heaven-step treasure!

Nearly every martial artist of the Asura Divine Kingdom used a spear; Situ Yaoyue was no exception.

A peerlessly exquisite woman, who seemed as if she were only 18-19 years old and had a slender body with a beauty that could cause kingdoms to fall, she actually wielded the spear, the weapon known as the king of weapons. This sort of scene left a great visual impact that caused others to exclaim in awe.

Lin Ming also raised his spear. Thunder wildly danced off of the spear edge.

On one side was a graceful beauty and on the other was a handsome chosen pride of heaven. These two individuals battled with spears; this was a struggle between kings!

At this time, Lin Ming directly summoned the Nine Heavens Thunder Soul, causing arcs of pale gold electricity to writhe on his spear.

Seeing Lin Ming summon this thunder once more, Situ Yaoyue laughed out loud, “Is this your Thunder Dominion attack? What a pity, your Thunder Dominion is useless against me!”

“Words are useless, come and test it out yourself!”

Lin Ming took a sudden step forwards and the power of thunder burst out from his spear. The entire sky began to be covered with a faint pale gold Thunder Dominion. Arcs of lightning crashed down like electric snakes, annihilating all!

Chasing Thunder!

With a thrust of his spear, a ten mile wide Thunder Dominion enveloped the skies; it was unavoidable!

Situ Yaoyue’s lips curved up in a tempting smile. She lifted both her hands and the sea of black chaos behind her suddenly exploded into the heavens. The blood red demon moon began to shine even brighter!

Extreme Violet Domain, God Burying Sea!

Sparkling purple seawater gushed out, forming a tide that reached into the vault of the heavens, vast and endless. Situ Yaoyue stood above those tumbling tides as if she were a mythical siren.

Bang!

The purple sea and the pale gold Thunder Dominion collided with each other. In that moment, the sky separated into two obvious sides. Lin Ming's side was a brilliant gold flaming divine light, as if a sun itself were rising on his side. As for Situ Yaoyue's side, it was a thick and sticky darkness that was only accentuated by the crimson light from that blood red demon moon on the purple sea tides.

One light one dark, the struggle of these two terrifying energies seemed as if it would split apart the skies!

"This is terrifying… I can't believe that this is a only battle between Life Destruction powerhouses." All of the other martial artists present paled. The Extreme Violet Dantian truly lived up to its reputation. But, what was more mysterious was Lin Lanjian. He was actually able to overcome such a great disparity in cultivation boundaries and fight with her!

"Nine Heavens Thunder Soul!"

Lin Ming stretched out a hand, and the top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul hiding within the Heretical God Sprout suddenly burst out. Its form was that of a golden python. As the golden python manifested in the world it broke into the purple sea, turning over and over, wanting to tear that sea apart!

Situ Yaoyue's expression was cold as she suddenly thrust her spear outwards.

Law of Darkness, Storm of Annihilation!

Along with this spear, dozens of black water columns shot up from that purple sea, forming a terrifying black storm in the air. The Nine Heavens Thunder Soul miserably cried out again and again as it collided with this black storm. Lin Ming was surprised. This black storm actually had the ability to swallow the energy of a top grade heaven-step Thunder Soul?

"Return!"

Lin Ming recalled the Nine Heavens Thunder Soul with a wave of his hand, retreating backwards in the meantime.

Bang!

The Thunder Dominion was completely crushed, all the golden light swallowed by darkness. The purple sea rolled backwards, flowing back behind Situ Yaoyue.

“I already said that your Thunder Dominion is useless against me.”

Situ Yaoyue’s lips curved up in a taunting smile. Her Extreme Violet Domain was a sort of force field with the effect of swallowing all. It could even weaken and swallow an energy attack. With Situ Yaoyue also fusing the Law of Darkness into it, its devouring attribute reached the limit.

Unfortunately, Situ Yaoyue could not utilize this swallowed energy. This was because the property of this energy did not match her own. Swallowing this energy into her body would cause her own energy to becoming impure, just like swallowing pills.

“Lin Lanjian is a bit worse. Although this is just a probing strike, that was enough to separate who was better and who was worse. This is a life or death struggle, Lin Lanjian is in danger…”

“Awesome! The Extreme Violet Dantian lives up to its reputation!”

The martial artists present held their collective breath, staring unblinkingly at the two figures in the skies for fear that they would miss a wonderful scene.

Chapter 857 – A Bitter Fight

Chapter 857 – A Bitter Fight

…

…

…

Behind Lin Ming, the golden python had clearly dimmed down, and its golden pupils were looking at that black sea with a hint of fear.

"If you cannot break my Extreme Violet Domain, then all of your moves will be swallowed by my God Burying Sea!" Situ Yaoyue was already smirking as if she had won. The Extreme Violet Domain was the ability she was the most proud of within her repertoire. "This time it's my turn to attack!"

Situ Yaoyue raised her high-grade heaven-step spear high in the air. A blood red light directly impacted into the sky, like a column that supported the heavens. The bright red demon moon above the God Burying Sea became even brighter, incandescent, as if it had been lit on fire. Energy surged into Situ Yaoyue's entire body as if she had become one with the sea behind her. Her aura was like a surging like a tsunami, boundlessly majestic like a great mountain!

Demon Moon Seal!

The blood moon suddenly dropped down, appearing right behind Situ Yaoyue. Her clothes dance in the air and her black hair fluttered like 3000 threads of silk, making her appear like a moon goddess. However, this beautiful scene was unable to stir up even the slightest appreciation from the crowd. This was because Situ Yaoyue's dominant killing intent was nearly sharp enough to cut off one's fires of life.

Situ Yaoyue slashed out with her spear. With a surge of energy, that round blood moon shot towards Lin Ming. As it flew forwards, it was like the sky split apart in its awake. The array formation that supported the mountain peak was split apart like tofu, rumbling and crumbling to the ground.

Facing this strike, Lin Ming revolved his energy to the limit. The Heretical God Sprout fiercely trembled as the Thunder Battleform crept over his entire body.

Buzz!

Lin Ming thrust towards the blood moon with all his strength.

Kacha!

Bloody waves surged into the heavens, blotting out the skies. Lin Ming was completely submerged within this raging tide.

“He was swallowed up?”

“He’ll die!”

The stormy energy and choppy blood waves completely cut off all of the watching martial artists’ perception. They simply did not know what Lin Ming’s present situation was.

“Even a powerful ancient vicious beast would die horribly if they were submerged in such a terrifying energy!” This sort of energy caused chills to crawl up everyone’s backs, even though they were dozens of miles away. This was simply like a blood pond had been raised from the depths of hell.

Bloody waves tumbled as before. But with a harsh piercing sound, a silver white divine blade thrust into the skies.

This was Lin Ming’s silver battle spirit.

The silver battle spirit cut the blood moon in half! An azure spear light shot out from the choppy waves. It compressed together, shooting towards Situ Yaoyue!

Puff puff!

A spear light pierced through the God Burying Sea. The intense collision formed a violently spinning storm that spread out for several miles. However, it was still inevitably being swallowed up. By the time that spear light reached Situ Yaoyue, it only had half of its strength left. Situ Yaoyue merely chopped down with her spear, easily blocking Lin Ming's spear light.

Lin Ming stood in the distance. His clothes had been melted by that blood energy just now and great portions of them were in tatters. For a martial artist, their clothes were next to their skin, within their bodily protective true essence. If clothes were damaged, then that was proof that Lin Ming's protective true essence had ruptured just now!

"That boy was submerged in those blood waves, and even though his protective true essence shattered, his true body was actually unharmed? That defensive power is horrifying!"

"It doesn't matter how horrifying it is; everything is useless against Situ Yaoyue. An Extreme Violet Domain that can project into the world, fused with the Darkness Laws, it can devour all energy. Even Lin Lanjian's attack is weakened by 50%!"

"Situ Yaoyue is invincible within the Extreme Violet Domain, and her attacks are also powerful, even more so than Lin Lanjian's! If he can't break through the Extreme Violet Domain then he will lose here!"

Situ Yaoyue had the blood demon moon behind her for attacks and the Extreme Violet Domain for defense. Without a doubt, Situ Yaoyue was worthy of being called the number one junior of the Asura Divine Kingdom.

Above the Godspeed Boat, Situ Bonan was watching the fight with glee and excitement in his ruddy old eyes. “Good, very good! I haven’t seen her for several years but Yaoyue’s strength has exceeded my expectations. That little beast will definitely lose here!”

Beside Situ Bonan, Situ Haotian’s tight face also relaxed a bit. However, he still couldn’t lay down the worries in his heart. Although they had the advantage right now, he would not feel at ease until they finally achieved victory.

………..

“An offensive and defensive ability…”

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He had met many such similar opponents in the past, for instance, the Seven Profound Valleys’ Puppet Faction’s Mugu Buyu also had an offensive and defensive three-dimensional fighting system. Such an opponent was extremely difficult because they simply didn’t have a weakness. In order to break such a system, one could only attack it with absolute force and tear it apart!

Ho – !

Lin Ming released his aura to the limit. Energy revolved within his body and his force fields erupted!

The Asura Force Field and the Death God Force Field, these dual force fields were released together. Power surged out in all directions, setting off a terrifying storm.

The Death God Force Field was able to extinguish life vitality.

The Asura Force Field was able to suppress a martial artist’s strength and soul.

These two force fields superimposed on each other and fiercely collided with the Extreme Violet Domain.

Chi chi chi!

Situ Yaoyue could clearly hear her own force field being torn apart.

Domains and force fields were extremely rare classes of skills. Lin Ming had two high level force fields, however, when compared to the Extreme Violet Domain, they actually seemed somewhat inferior.

When Situ Yaoyue released her own force field she had been able to form a perfect defensive system and suppress Lin Ming's attacks to a great degree. In comparison, Lin Ming's force fields didn't seem as if they gave him any advantage.

In truth, this didn't meant that Lin Ming's two force fields were inferior to the Extreme Violet Domain. It was actually just the opposite. If Lin Ming combined his two force fields, it was far, far more powerful than just the Extreme Violet Domain. Unfortunately, Lin Ming was jumping ranks to fight. As a peak first stage Life Destruction martial artist going against a seventh stage Life Destruction martial artist, it wasn't just his force fields, but all of his abilities – including his Thunder Soul, battle spirit, self-created martial skills – all of it was suppressed through the absolute disparity in their boundaries.

If Lin Ming faced a martial artist at the same level, then by opening the Death God Force Field and the Asura Force Field, he could easily disintegrate their bodies and cut off their lives. He wouldn't even need to lift a finger to kill them.

The Thunder Battleform was also the same. If it were the Eightfall Thunder Emperor that were to use the Thunder Battleform, then with his incomparably thick true essence as a foundation, once he displayed that renowned ability of his, if he saw a Buddha then he would kill a Buddha! If he saw a god then he would kill a god!

In the end, one's cultivation was the most essential factor in one's combat strength. This was because it directly correlated to how much true essence a martial artist held within them.

"This Lin Lanjian isn't human! A force field is such a rare skill and yet he just released two of them at once!" The martial artists watching noticed that a pale red energy field had formed around Lin Ming, directly contending with the Extreme Violet Domain. At the point where the two energy fields touched, constant sizzling sounds emitted into the air.

For such a person like Lin Ming, not even a ghost would believe that he didn't experience massive lucky chances in the past. It was far too normal for a genius to have encountered lucky chances. However, those martial artists that were jealous of Lin Ming's lucky chances now had to rethink whether or not they were qualified to obtain them. Even the dignified Asura Divine Kingdom and its 10,000 year inheritance was forced to this stage by Lin Ming. The other influences here naturally didn't dare to covet anything from Lin Ming.

"This fellow simply doesn't have a weakness. Since ancient times, those heroic young elites that excelled in a single aspect could proclaim themselves an Emperor level talent. And those that excelled in several aspects could be called the future highest under the heavens! And this Lin Lanjian is actually excellent in every single facet! I can't imagine just what boundary he will reach in the future!"

"Future? You still think he'll have a future? It doesn't matter if he excels in all aspects, because what he is facing is the Extreme Violet Dantian and the seventh stage Life Destruction Situ Yaoyue – she is also a peak Emperor level talent that might become someone close to the highest under the heavens! Once he dies in this battle then everything he's ever done will be nothing but a fading dream."

…………

"Interesting! You also have a force field domain, and even more than one!" Situ Yaoyue calmly said. But, the truth was that she was secretly stupefied. Compared to Lin Ming's talent, she was far from being able to compare with him. She was only average in the aspect of will; she had not yet been able to comprehend her own battle spirit.

As for Lin Ming's battle spirit, that had already surpassed the level of a Divine Sea Supreme Elder's. As for speed, endurance, and the solidity of foundation, there was even less to say there. Now she had no choice but to resort to the Extreme Violet Domain that she was so proud of. Even so, Lin Ming had unexpectedly opened up two force fields in his battle with her, and the rank of these force fields were even superior to her own!

Facing this unrivalled talent whose only weakness was his lower cultivation, Situ Yaoyue felt an immense pressure on herself.

She gripped her long spear, drawing a crescent moon in the air. Without expression she said, “Although I may not defeat your martial path today, I will still kill you here and use you to pave my road to becoming an Emperor!”

Lin Ming lightly chuckled, “It’s like you think you’ve already won.”

“Words are useless. I will prove this with the truth!”

“Then make your move. Let me see just how difficult it is to break your Extreme Violet Domain!”

As his voice fell, Lin Ming’s aura rose even higher, becoming boundless and majestic. The force field collision became even more intense, as if the skies themselves were about to collapse!

Situ Yaoyue rose up, a rich blood energy swirling around her. She lifted her spear high in the air and a bloody light pierced through the sky. The round demon moon appeared behind her once more.

“Bury the Heavens!”

The Darkness Laws fused with the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’ and then also combined with Situ Yaoyue’s slaughter path. With a thrust of her spear, a vast and limitless darkness covered the heavens.

This was the potential of the true Bury the Heavens!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. In the face of such a powerful Situ Yaoyue, he naturally wouldn't hold back. He raised his long spear. The Heretical God Sprout howled and a crazy amount of potent fire energy poured into his spear.

Peng!

Space around Lin Ming's spearpoint seemed to shatter like glass. The power of space wildly rushed out, merging together with the flames on the spear. A space storm howled, and the space winds fueled the raging fires. The power of fire and the power of space erupted, creating a demonic flame that burnt down the void!

"Bury the Heavens!"

What Lin Ming and Situ Yaoyue used were the same move. However, these two Bury the Heavens had been transformed. By combining the Concepts that they excelled at, they were completely different from the Bury the Heavens inspired by the 'Great Desolate Halberd Arts'.

Lin Ming's Bury the Heavens used the Concept of Space to break apart the void, destroying the skies. And Situ Yaoyue's Bury the Heavens used the Concept of Darkness to swallow the skies. Both of them were different, but the power was similarly formidable!

"Break!"

Lin Ming became one with his spear. Like a fiery rainbow stretching to infinity, the spear light cut through the Extreme Violet Domain, with even the God Burying Sea split in half!

The two spears shot through the void like meteors before smashing into each other. The 100 mile mountain arena underneath them finally collapsed, turning into a massive avalanche that tumbled to the ground.

The ruined mountain was completely shredded apart by the explosive shockwaves!

"Mm?"

Situ Yaoyue's expression greatly changed. Her Extreme Violet Domain had actually been torn apart!?

"Darkness Laws, Storm of Annihilation!"

Bang bang bang!

Countless waves of energy rushed out from the God Burying Sea, all of them attacking Lin Ming's stunning spear light. Both of them struck together, forming a terrifying explosion that recklessly spread out. Her Extreme Violet Domain nearly collapsed to nothing with this intense impact.

Puff!

Lin Ming was sent flying backwards by the explosive shockwaves. A spear light bent around him like a whip before striking his back. His protective true essence was only able to offset a small portion of the power before breaking! The clothing on Lin Ming's back was torn apart as he spat out a mouthful of blood!

In that moment, he felt as if his spine itself would break. Luckily, the Demon Emperor Armor was able to offset much of the power. Combined with the Gate of Limit having tempered his spine, he forcefully withstood this blow without serious injury.

Ho!

Seeing her strike succeed, Situ Yaoyue's gloomy expression from seeing her Extreme Violet Domain torn to pieces eased a bit. She was well aware of that attack just now. Even a slight rub would instantly kill a sixth stage Life Destruction martial artist! Even if Lin Ming managed to defend against it, he would still be severely wounded!

However, she hadn't been able to smile before her lips froze. She watched helplessly on as the space storm in front of her carried an azure spear light that stabbed out at her. It contained the power of a silver battle spirit, thrusting straight towards her chest!

The speed was just too fast. Moreover, Situ Yaoyue had exhausted her true essence with those two consecutive moves and hadn't yet been able to summon new energy. She had no chance of resisting this attack!

This strike might pierce through her chest!

Peng!

At this critical moment, the Demon God Heartguard Mirror hidden within Situ Yaoyue's chest shined out with a black and glorious light, forcefully diverting the azure spear light by a small amount.

The spear light turned away from her heart and towards her collarbone.

Situ Yaoyue's protective true essence was unable to stop it even a little bit. Blood shot into the wind. Situ Yaoyue lightly coughed as the clothing on her beautiful shoulder was torn apart, exposing torn flesh and fresh blood!

She was left heavily panting for breath, her milky white chest heaving up and down. Because her clothes had been torn, the Demon God Heartguard Mirror was completely revealed, with faint and mysterious runes still swirling around it.

Just what kind of terrifying attack was this? After breaking through the Extreme Violet Domain, it also passed through the horrifying space storm, and even with just a wisp of spear light left, it was still enough to heavily attack Situ Yaoyue!

If it weren't for Situ Haotian lending her the Demon God Heartguard Mirror ahead of time, then even though that one strike would not have been fatal, it would still have reduced her combat strength by half. At that time, the results could be imagined!

"Situ Yaoyue was injured!"

"That spear strike just now was too terrifying. It didn't even melt away after passing through that horrifying space storm. Is this the might of a silver battle spirit?"

No one expected that Situ Yaoyue, who had held the advantage the entire time, would suddenly be injured. This was because her seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation and Extreme Violet Domain were far too intimidating; there was nearly no one that believed Lin Ming would win. From the very start of the fight, Lin Ming had fallen into the inferior position. But now, after all the twists and turns of life, Lin Ming's spear had actually wounded Situ Yaoyue! Even with the Demon God Heartguard Mirror protecting her, Situ Yaoyue was still heavily injured.

In truth, the reason that Lin Ming was able to accomplish this was not just because the silver battle spirit was attached to his spear; that was still not enough to make up for the difference in total true essence. But, Lin Ming's true essence had a special attribute of endlessness to it. It could continuously grow, giving it a tenacity that far outstripped all other types of true essence at his level.

Chapter 858 – Cage of Darkness

Chapter 858 – Cage of Darkness

…

…

…

“Yaoyue!”

As Situ Yaoxi saw Situ Yaoyue’s shoulder covered in blood, she instantly felt her heart tighten. The talent Situ Yaoyue displayed was rarely seen in a thousand years in the Asura Divine Kingdom. She was their greatest hope to lead and nurture the next generation! More importantly, she was a direct descendant of the Situ Family Clan, not like Situ Luosha whose main bloodline came from the Ancient Profound Hawk Clan, and whose only relation with the Situ Family Clan was his last name.

It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that Situ Yaoyue’s value to the Asura Divine Kingdom far surpassed 2-3 Divine Sea Supreme Elders. To Situ Yaoxi, Situ Yaoyue was her lifeblood.

“That little beast actually dared to harm Yaoyue! Once he falls into my hands I’ll tear out his bones and slice his tendons!”

Situ Yaoxi’s words trembled with anger as she continued to viciously curse Lin Ming. This was the only way to vent the anger in her heart.

She was also very nervous now. Once Situ Yaoyue lost, the consequences would be disastrous!

“No, it’s impossible, absolutely impossible! After Yaoyue’s Extreme Violet Domain is broken she can release it again. But that little beast Lin Lanjian should have paid a deep price to do so; his injuries must be greater than Yaoyue's!" Situ Yaoxi said to comfort herself. Then her eyes flashed over to Lin Ming. Although the Extreme Violet Domain had been shattered, the true essence storm had greatly weakened Lin Ming's attack, and with the addition of the Demon God Heartguard Mirror's protection, it had reduced the lethality of Lin Ming's attack to its lowest point.

On the other hand, Lin Ming had to fully withstand Situ Yaoyue's attack! Although both were wounded, there had to be differences in the severity of their wounds.

Situ Yaoyue greatly hoped that she would see Lin Ming's entire body covered with wounds and looking like a dying man on his last breath. However, as she glanced over her face froze. Her complexion became increasingly ugly until it became red like pig liver.

She saw Lin Ming cough out a mouthful of blood, and then stand up from the ruins of that shattered mountain. He grasped the spear in his hands and slanted it towards the ground.

Energy slowly burned within Lin Ming's body once more. The dual Death God and Asura Force Fields were released together once more!

Bang!

The force fields' energy erupted like a tide, spreading in all directions. It was actually no weaker than it was before!

Situ Yaoxi gnashed her teeth and uttered a string of curses, "Lin Lanjian, you damned little beast!"

……

Lin Ming felt a searing pain on his back as if he had been scorched by fire. Luckily he had the Demon Emperor Armor protecting his body, otherwise that attack would have shattered his organs.

Situ Yaoyue's strength surpassed his expectations. He secretly revolved the power of the Gate of Healing, allowing the energy to circulate through his meridians. A trace of pleasant coldness followed, subtly revitalizing his damaged meridians and making him much more comfortable.

As the surrounding martial artists saw Lin Ming release his dual force fields again, all of them were left dumbfounded. He was severely wounded to the point of spitting out blood, so how could his aura still be this strong?

"He forcefully resisted Situ Yaoyue's attack and yet he's still alright..."

"His aura hasn't diminished at all. Is his body made from profound metal or something?"

"He is simply a vicious beast in human form!"

Situ Yaoyue looked at Lin Ming, a dignified light in her red eyes. Lin Ming's defensive power far surpassed her own.

Superior endurance, faster extreme speed, and there wasn't even the need to mention battle spirits. Situ Yaoyue discovered that besides cultivation, there was nothing in which she surpassed Lin Ming.

Lin Ming wiped the blood from the corners of his mouth. He glanced at Situ Yaoyue's left chest where there was a metal mirror that was faintly sparkling with black light.

"Demon God Heartguard Mirror.."

This was the final and most important battle, and Situ Yaoyue was also the most exceptional junior of the Asura Divine Kingdom. It was also reasonable that Situ Haotian had given her the Demon God Heartguard Mirror.

This mere foot long black mirror could not be underestimated, because in terms of pure defensive ability, it surpassed even the main armor pece!

The Demon God Heartguard Mirror had to be activated by the Concept of Darkness in order for it to display its greatest strength. That just happened to be the Concept Situ Yoayue excelled at.

“This is going to be a bit tricky,” Lin Ming thought aloud. That move just now was almost his strongest attack, but he could still only wound Situ Yaoyue. It simply wasn’t enough to establish his victory.

Situ Yaoyue summoned true essence to support the injury that tumbled in her chest. Because her clothing had been torn apart, the snow white skin of her right chest was exposed. Situ Yaoyue casually touched it and caused the thick darkness around her to condense on her shoulder, turning into a solid black veil.

“Lin Lanjian, if it weren’t for the Demon God Heartguard Mirror then I might have lost just now. Don’t think I’ll give you the chance to do that again!”

Situ Yaoyue’s eyes turned cold and her killing intent reached the peak.

She found it unimaginable that she was pushed to this degree by a mere peak first stage Life Destruction junior.

Situ Yaoyue gave a loud shot; the Extreme Violet Domain opened once more!

At this time, a crazy Concept of Darkness gathered up like a tide, sweeping out in all directions. The glowing purple God Burying Sea drowned out all space within a hundred miles!

“This is…”

The martial artists’ dozens of miles away all paled as they were surrounded by this purple sea. Even though they were only a little affected by these tides, they still found their breath stop in their throat and their heartbeats turn heavy. They had no choice but to retreat again and again!

It was obvious that the current Extreme Violet Domain's power and majesty had gone up by another level!

"This is the Concept of Darkness! A darkness that covered a hundred mile radius! Situ Yaoyue's achievements in the Laws of Darkness already caught up to a Divine Sea Supreme Elder!"

Not only did Situ Yaoyue have the Extreme Violet Domain but she also had extremely high attainments in the Concept of Space!

A peak Emperor level always had one aspect in which they excelled, but their other qualities weren't bad either. While Situ Yaoyue was ordinary in strength, speed, soul force, and blood vitality, there was still one aspect in which she surpassed all other martial artists of her level. This was in her understanding of the Concepts and Laws. In this alone, she had reached an extremely high level.

The Nine Furnace Crown Prince Yang Yun stood above his golden divine carriage, watching all of this happen from a distance. He wasn't surprised that the Asura Divine Kingdom would send out Situ Yaoyue for the last battle.

For a Divine Kingdom to carefully and secretly raise a first class heroic young elite with a chance to hopefully become a figure like the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor, that wasn't strange at all.

He softly said to himself, "A once in a millennium Extreme Purple Dantian, this Extreme Purple Domain itself can't be considered much at all. Only if several sorts of dantian variations, divine bodies, and bloodlines are gathered together would that be able to be the opening prelude to the golden age I desire..."

....

Situ Yaoyue slanted her spear and rushed forwards, her figure fading into countless black shades in the void.

“Situ Yaoyue wants to compare with speed?”

As the heroic young elites saw Situ Yaoyue’s form fade away, all of them were bewildered.

In terms of speed alone, if Lin Ming opened the Gate of Wonder and also used ‘Golden Roc Shattering the Void’, he would easily be considered the man with the highest max velocity underneath the Divine Sea. No one was able to challenge his position in this regard. Situ Yaoyue was strong, but wasn’t she making a mistake to compare speed?

“Mm? Something’s wrong! After the Extreme Violet Domain fused with the Concept of Darkness, it’s as if space has become sticky!”

Just like the Concept of Fire had nine levels of Laws, the Concept of Darkness also had more than a single Law. The first Law was to devour true essence, and the second Law was to turn space viscous!

Darkness was similar to chaos. Once darkness became thick enough, even space would become viscous. This stickiness would make all motions slower. When Lin Ming was at the King’s Cage in Polaris Tower, he had gone through the Cage of Chaos, and this current viscous black darkness that suppressed all feeling brought back vivid memories of that.

Ho – !

A hundred miles of darkness came shrouding down with overwhelming might; it was unavoidable!

Lin Ming felt as if he had fallen into a black swamp. His breathing was slightly blocked, and even moving consumed more true essence. Moreover, his speed was less than 30% of its usual standard. Even his attacks were greatly weakened because of the lowered speed.

“What a mysterious Concept of Darkness!’

The Concept of Darkness was a Concept that surpassed the five elements. It could even stand shoulder to shoulder with the Concept of Space and Time, the Concept of Annihilation, and the Concept of Eternity.

Thus, the Concept of Darkness naturally had its own advantages!

Prior to this, Lin Ming's understanding of the Concept of Darkness was next to nothing. The Demon Emperor had a very deep understanding into the Concept of Darkness and the Demon Emperor Armor also needed the Concept of Darkness in order to activate. Unfortunately, the soul fragments of the Demon Emperor that Lin Ming swallowed had been incomplete and they lacked information on this aspect.

"Lin Lanjian, now that you've entered my Extreme Violet Domain and my Cage of Darkness, your loss has already been decided!"

The Cage of Darkness was able to contain Lin Ming's attack speed and movement speed. Situ Yaoyue could use this method to gain the advantage in movement and attack Lin Ming with absolute speed.

"Demon Moon Seal!"

The blood red demon moon rushed out of Situ Yaoyue's spear once more, howling into the void!

Lin Ming had just fallen into the Cage of Darkness and wasn't yet able to determine the characteristics of the Laws of Darkness. At this time, he saw the crimson demon moon cutting straight towards him!

The void shattered. The whistling sound thrust straight into his ears!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. He opened the Gate of Wonder.

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

He tread on space. Normally, he would be able to easily pass 10 miles with a single step, but now he could only cross several hundred feet at a time.

The Demon Moon Seal only flashed as it chased after him!

“This is bad!”

Although he was mentally prepared for this, Lin Ming never thought that the Cage of Darkness would be able to limit his movements to such a degree.

Moreover, the faster he moved, the greater the resistance became!

The crimson moon cut straight towards him. At this critical moment, Lin Ming gave a loud shout. The Thunder Battleform scaled thunder armor suddenly exploded, condensing into a divine sword of purple thunder in his hand!

This was the second martial skill that the Eightfall Thunder Emperor had relied on to roam unrivalled throughout the world.

The Sword of Judgment!

Now that it was displayed with Lin Ming’s peak first stage Life Destruction cultivation, although it was far, far inferior to the Eightfall Thunder Emperor’s power, it was still able to split apart a mountain!

“Chop!” Lin Ming shouted out loud. He brought his hand down, the sword diving downwards, splitting apart the endless skies!

He would chop apart the Demon Moon Seal along with this Cage of Darkness!

Bang!

The sword of thunder clashed together with the Demon Moon Seal. An explosive sound burst out as a brilliant beam of crackling thunder directly impacted the skies. A wild and rampaging energy surged in all directions. The Demon Moon Seal had broken apart, but although the Cage of Darkness was also cut open, it immediately closed up!

“Hahahahaha! Stop wasting your strength! How can you possibly cut apart the darkness? It is impossible for you to break my cage!” Situ Yaoyue slowly said as she saw Lin Ming’s strike ineffective against the darkness. In this force field where the Cage of Darkness and Extreme Violet Domain superimposed on each other, she was the master! She controlled everything here!

“I see. So that’s how it is. Darkness is invisible and intangible, immune to all physical attacks…”

In his first time facing an opponent who was so skilled in the Concept of Darkness, Lin Ming had suffered a loss because he simply didn’t understand it. But now he had gained a rough understanding of just what it was.

He looked at Situ Yaoyue and calmly said, “Since you say that your Cage of Darkness cannot be broken, then let me show you just how I’ll shatter it.”

Chapter 859 – Ancient Phoenix Saint Body

Chapter 859 – Ancient Phoenix Saint Body

…

…

…

The Cage of Darkness covered all space for 100 miles. In the skies, endless waves of pale golden thunder still danced in the air, lingering on, a memory of that electric sword strike that seemed as if it could split apart the dome of heaven.

Everyone felt as if they were lost in a dream, waking up with nothing but hints of purple light and shadow within their pupils.

"The Sword of Judgment, he actually did it…"

Although Shibai had already expected this, he still felt it to be unbelievable. In just two months, both the Sword of Judgment and the Thunder Battleform, the two unique martial skills that the Eightfall Thunder Emperor had relied on to walk unrivalled within the world, had actually been learnt by Lin Ming.

This could no longer be described with just the word 'talent'.

Not just that, but there was no hitch in Lin Ming's control of these two unique skills. He was able to perfectly utilize the Concept of Thunder, skillfully manipulating the power of life and the power of death.

If Lin Ming had Situ Yaoyue's cultivation, then even a Divine Sea Supreme Elder would perish under his hands.

Unfortunately, he was only at the peak of the first stage of Life Destruction, and the result of this was that he was being tightly suppressed by Situ Yaoyue. In that Cage of Darkness that was able to hinder speed, Lin Ming's velocity had plummeted. Every movement, every action he took required over double the normal amount of true essence. If he was unable to break through this cage, then it was only a matter of time until he was defeated.

In the Cage of Darkness, Situ Yaoyue had already turned into a wisp of black smoke. Her so-called 'slow' speed was only in comparison to a beast like Lin Ming. When compared to a normal Life Destruction martial artist, her movements were simply untraceable like a ghost!

"Lin Lanjian, I want to see just how you'll break my Cage of Darkness! Go die!" Situ Yaoyue circled behind Lin Ming and stabbed out her long spear. Because she had the advantage of speed, Situ Yaoyue didn't have to use any fierce martial skills. Her superiority was that with Lin Ming's current speed being weighed down, it was impossible for him to block her fast moves.

Peng!

Lin Ming flew backwards, his protective true essence surging around him.

Situ Yaoyue chased him. She took a step forwards and arrived in front of him, thrusting her spear out nearly three times simultaneously!

Lin Ming blocked the first two spear lights, but the third spear light actually scratched his right arm, causing blood to shoot into the wind.

"This boy, his body's defensive power is like a dragon's!"

Situ Yaoyue was dumbfounded. Although she was currently sacrificing striking power for attack speed, every spear strike of hers was still equal to the all-out attack of a top 100 ranked Destiny Decree master.

Even so, Lin Ming only had a minor flesh wound after receiving such a strike, as if his entire body was forged from profound metal.

“Who cares how great your defensive power is, let’s see just how many spear strikes you can take!”

Situ Yaoyue rushed out once more, clearly wanting to use her superiority in speed to defeat Lin Ming. This method of fighting didn’t seem honorable, but any winning tactic was a good tactic.

“The Concept of Darkness can actually be used like this! Situ Yaoyue is truly a genius!”

A martial artist commented. He had an understanding of the Concept of Darkness, but that had only stopped at the Laws of Devouring; he hadn’t even heard about the second level Concept of slowing space.

“It isn’t just Lin Lanjian, but even if it were someone like Situ Yaoyue, who has a dantian variation, or if it were some monstrous genius with an inborn divine body or divine bloodline, they would also perish if caught in this Cage of Darkness!” To the martial artists present, the formidable and awe-inspiring majesty of a divine body, divine blood, or dantian variation had already been deeply rooted in their psyches. Thus, they used them as an example.

A blood red spear light stretched into a rainbow. This was Situ Yaoyue’s third spear strike. Just as she was stabbing towards lin Ming’s throat, a feeling of impending danger burst within her mind!

‘This is bad!’

Situ Yaoyue’s beautiful face paled. Just as her spear was thrust halfway, she forcefully retrieved it and stormed backwards. However, it was already too late!

Suddenly, a resonant and glorious phoenix cry resounded from within Lin Ming’s body. The Ancient Phoenix mark between his eyebrows began to blaze with a fiery gold divine light. That golden light turned into a brilliant rainbow, seeming as if it had turned into countless golden swords that pierced the heavens!

In that instant, Lin Ming had completely burnt all of the Ancient Phoenix blood within himself!

At that moment, all of the Divine Sea powerhouses present felt a formidable pressure pushing down on them, as if a true God Beast had descended upon the world. All of them revealed a trace of surprise. Even the normally calm Yang Yun revealed an expression of amazement.

Yang Yun was stricken. This feeling was…

100 drops of Ancient Phoenix blood combusted within him, forcibly summoning the majesty of the Ancient Phoenix God Beast that dwelled within his body!

Before reaching the Revolving Core realm, Lin Ming had often used the ability of burning the Ancient Phoenix blood within him. However, ever since he returned from Timeworn Phoenix City where he had absorbed 100 drops of Ancient Phoenix blood, this was his first time thoroughly burning it all.

Normally, a martial artist would burn their blood essence in exchange for a far higher combat strength. However, once that blood essence was burned it would disappear.

But the blood of the Ancient Phoenix was different.

The Ancient Phoenix was a God Beast of the heavens and earth, an existence that possessed an immortal body. Its bloodline was also the same. It could bathe within the hot fires of nirvana and be reborn. Thus, even if its blood was combusted, it would not reduce in the least.

Lin Ming had 100 drops of Ancient Phoenix blood within his body. If he completely burnt all of this then it could release a terrifying energy. Before Lin Ming had attained the body of a Life Destruction powerhouse, this massive amount of energy could have easily scorched his meridians. But now, after every cell within his body had been tempered and transformed by energy, his entire body could transmit energy without needing to pass it through his meridians. This was one of the greatest benefits of Life Destruction.

With this, Lin Ming unscrupulously burnt all the Ancient Phoenix blood within his body. A vast and titanic power of fire erupted, and the strength of the Ancient Phoenix blood poured into Lin Ming's bloodline, causing his blood to boil over.

In that moment, Lin Ming's entire body was lit aflame. The heaven-step Burning Star Flame howled as it rushed out, manifesting into a giant phoenix with a thousand foot wingspan that flew into the skies, directly impacting into the heavens!

The conflagration of flames was monstrous, earth-shattering! All of the fire origin energy within a radius of several hundred miles was stirred up by this massive phoenix, completely rushing towards the center. A red storm covered the skies as if a crimson tsunami had appeared in the heavens, enveloping the world!

At this time, space itself was scorched by the power of fire. A crimson sun seemed to slowly rise from within Lin Ming's body, glorious and magnificent!

Lin Ming's entire body was bathed in an inferno of flames. He bit down on the tip of his tongue. Then, the totem mark on the Heretical God Sprout that symbolized the Fire Source Laws suddenly emitted a flaming golden light.

Lin Ming's blood fused into the Heretical God Sprout, and a small golden phoenix slowly budded out from the leaves of the Heretical God Sprout. The small phoenix slowly flapped its wings as it flew into the air.

This small phoenix was countless times smaller than the one formed by the Burning star Flame. However, it emitted a divine light that blinded all eyes, with a far more terrifying energy roiling within it. This was the power born from the fusion of Lin Ming's blood essence and the Laws carved onto the Heretical God Sprout!

The small golden phoenix flew into the skies, melting into that red Burning Star Flame phoenix. As they touched, it was like a shining sun had suddenly appeared in the skies. The entire dimensional realm was completely covered in endless golden light, sparkling with a divine radiance.

"Break!"

Lin Ming coldly said as he flourished his spear. If this Cage of Darkness was immune to physical attacks, then he would use the burning light of source flames as his sword and cut away the darkness!

Kree – !

The golden red flame phoenix let out a keening cry. It rushed out towards Situ Yaoyue, bringing with it great billowing waves of flame as if it had emerged from the center of a star!

Ka ka ka!

Wherever the fire passed, space would melt and break away, causing a massive amount of chaotic power of space to overflow into the world and form a massive space storm. The wind caused the fires to become even more intense, howling with an even fiercer madness.

Situ Yaoyue paled. The thick darkness around her rapidly melted like snow underneath these roaring flames. Even the Extreme Violet Domain shook as if it would collapse at any moment.

'What is this? How can he contain such a terrifying power of fire within his body!?'

Situ Yaoyue was alarmed, panic filling her mind. She had thought Lin Ming was a thunder-attribute martial artist because of the various phenomena that occurred when he crossed Life Destruction. At that time, his entire body had been tempered by thunder, giving him affinity to Thunder Laws that no one could reach.

But she never imagined that his ability to control fire even far surpassed his ability to control thunder. It was like there was a blazing sun within his body!

Peng!

The Cage of Darkness shattered. Situ Yaoyue violently trembled as she spat out a mouthful of blood. This Cage of Darkness was connected to her life. Once it was broken she would suffer a serious backlash.

And by now, the flame phoenix had appeared in front of her.

“Demon Moon Extreme Heaven!”

Situ Yaoyue bit down on her cherry red lips and spat out blood essence onto her spear. She grasped her spear with both hands and then slashed it downwards!

A crimson demon moon even brighter than the last one emerged out of thin air. It spun as it flew towards the flame phoenix, cutting into its chest with an unimaginable speed.

Bang!

Energy broke out. The world seemed to lose all color as a massive fireball enveloped the entire world. The ruined mountain was completely melted in a 100 mile range!

Rumble rumble!

Rock melted, turning into rivers of surging lava. Red waves of flames washed over the land, causing the earth to tremble.

All of the surrounding martial artists were greatly shocked. The vast energy and tremendous pressure of a God Beast caused the Xiantian martial artists to not even be able to escape. Luckily, these juniors had masters to protect them. These masters grabbed onto the Xiantian juniors as they hurriedly retreated.

After retreating dozens of miles, they then turned around to see that the mountain had completely vanished. In its place was a gargantuan pit that was filled with hot red lava. The entire arena stage had already become a sea of flames. Lava splashed into the air, causing sweltering heat waves to spread out.

“This power is… too terrifying!”

It wasn't strange for a Life Destruction martial artist to have the ability to destroy a mountain. But, for them to completely turn a 100 mile radius of a mountain into a sea of lava, that was actually shocking!

"Who is this Lin Lanjian!? I don't believe that an ordinary person can contain such a horrifying energy within themselves. This has nothing to do with talent, this is an issue of his body! Does he have a divine body?"

"I've never heard of a divine body like this."

Talent mainly manifested in martial arts talent, perception, battle spirit, understanding of Concepts of Laws, and other similar aspects. But no matter how much one excelled in these aspects, the amount of energy they could contain within their bodies was still limited. No matter how solid their foundation was, if they didn't have a dantian variation or a special physique that allowed them hold four or five times more true essence, then how could they contain such a terrifying fire energy within them?

And Lin Ming was only at the first stage of Life Destruction!

"Such a compatibility with fire, this can't be achieved by just the so-called fire spirit body. In the ancient texts, there are simply no records of divine bodies. That is, unless you consider the ancient carved stones from 100,000 years ago. These are records that cannot be verified, for instance, the Ancient Phoenix Saint Body that once ruled the world…"

On a spirit boat, a Divine Sea Supreme Elder from an ancient Holy Land family clan silently muttered, his expression unsure.

Chapter 860 – Great Desolate Blood Halberd

Chapter 860 – Great Desolate Blood Halberd

…

…

…

The so-called thunder spirit body, fire spirit body and water spirit body, those were in truth not special physiques, but rather what some geniuses were called when they had an extremely high talent in one of the five main elements. In terms of physicality, they weren't that different from someone ordinary.

As for the Ancient Phoenix Saint Body, that was completely different. That was a divine body that had once existed in the Sky Spill Continent during ancient times.

Although the history of the Sky Spill Continent from 100,000 years ago and further back was missing, there were still some glorious family clans with a long legacy that had managed to obtain some ruined jade slips or carved stones from ancient times, and had thus obtained minor understandings of the situation back then.

According to the available records, in the Sky Spill Continent of 100,000 years ago, that was when warlords and rivals all rose up together, with countless peerless heroes filling the land. The so-called Ancient Phoenix Saint Body was a physique that came from a special family clan. In terms of comprehending the Fire Laws, they excelled far more than everyone else on the continent. They could also summon a flame phoenix phantom and other such miracles that Lin Ming was performing right now.

Of course, no one could tell if these stories were true or false, and only a minor number of those present had heard these legends. There was simply no one that was able to confirm that Lin Ming's physique was the Ancient Phoenix Saint Body.

But without a doubt, there was definitely something special about Lin Ming's physique, otherwise it would have been impossible for him to display such a terrifying energy.

Originally no one thought that Lin Ming had a divine body or divine bloodline, and he would always be handicapped because of this. But now it seemed that not only did Lin Ming have a divine body, but this special physique was even superior to the Extreme Violet Dantian! Otherwise, since Lin Ming and Situ Yaoyue's cultivations were separated by so many small boundaries, how could her Cage of Darkness have been shattered by Lin Ming?

This was the embodiment of physique disparity.

All of the other heroic young elites couldn't help but be emotionally affected. A monstrous talent, lucky changes that defied the heavens, and now he even had a divine body!

How could any other hero of this era still call themselves a talent in front of him?

....

Lava tumbled and splashed into the skies. Within the lake of lava, there were still some rocks that hadn't completely melted yet. These rocks contained certain types of minerals that made them have a much higher melting temperature.

Lin Ming stood on one of these flame-scorched rocks, supporting himself with his spear. Because he had burnt the blood of the Ancient Phoenix just now, he had consumed an enormous amount of energy. Even with his endurance and energy, he still felt it a bit difficult to withstand.

Bang!

Five miles in front of Lin Ming, the lake of lava suddenly exploded. Situ Yaoyue rushed out, looking like a mess. In that confrontation just now, she had directly faced the flame phoenix phantom that had rushed out from Lin Ming's body, and had to expend some of her blood essence to use her strongest attack – Demon Moon Extreme Heaven. Even so, she had been shaken and injured by the energy shockwaves. When this was coupled with her Cage of Darkness being shattered by the great torrential waves of flame, this had caused her to suffer a serious backlash, and now her injuries had become far worse. When she had fallen into the lava now, her protective true essence was like a candle in the wind, nearly fading away. Her hair and clothing had been ignited by the lava and burnt away. If she hadn't used the Concept of Darkness to form new clothes for herself then she feared half of her body would have been publicly exposed by now.

"Lin Lanjian!" Situ Yaoyue stared at Lin Ming, her eyes brilliant and shining. Since she was born, she had never experienced such a difficult battle before. The Extreme Violet Domain and Cage of Darkness had both been broken and she had been seriously injured.

In terms of battle spirit and speed she was inferior to begin with. What she was proud of was her understanding into the Concept of Darkness as well as her Extreme Violet Dantian.

But when compared with Lin Ming, her Concept of Darkness was broken by Lin Ming's Concept of Fire, and her Extreme Violet Domain was inferior to Lin Ming's two force fields. Although she had a dantian variation, Lin Ming had an even more formidable divine body.

There was no need to compare their other aspects.

Every single domain she excelled in had been defeated one by one under Lin Ming's hand. Her once haughty arrogance had already lost all of its support.

Situ Yaoyue grit her teeth and pointed her spear right towards Lin Ming's forehead. Since the fight had reached this point, she could no longer back down. She had also seen that Lin Ming had consumed a massive amount of energy just now when he used that secret divine body technique. If they continued to fight, it was still uncertain just who would win and who would lose!

Woosh!

Suddenly, a violent and wild blood light shot into the skies. All of the flowing lava underneath Situ Yaoyue's feet froze, turning into black volcanic rock.

A strong infernal energy dissipated into the air, causing all of the martial artists present to feel their heartbeats quicken with fear. There were even some that found it hard to breathe. Just now it was like Situ Yaoyue had opened up an ancient sealed demon box, releasing an ancient demonic spirit!

"That is..."

Lin Ming's pupils shrank.

In Situ Yaoyue's hands, there was actually a blood red war halberd!

This halberd was 10 feet long and the shaft was as thick as an arm. Countless symbols were inscribed upon it. On the foot long halberd edge, there was a cruel demon engraving. Its expression was fierce and hideous, lifelike to the point where it seemed it would jump out. All those that looked at it couldn't help but feel their souls trembling in fear.

With Situ Yaoyue's delicate body holding this massive and thick halberd, it left an immense visual impact on everyone present.

'That is...' Lin Ming's eyes widened. 'That is the Great Desolate Blood Halberd! That is the weapon the Demon Emperor once used!'

It was unexpectedly held by the Asura Divine Kingdom! Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. Thinking of it, this wasn't too surprising. The Asura Divine Kingdom was a super Holy Land with a 10,000 year inheritance. Their background was immeasurably deep. Since they had the Demon God Heartguard Mirror, it was also natural that they might have been able to obtain the Great Desolate Blood Halberd.

Lin Ming was extremely familiar with the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. Back at Revered Master Tianguang's birthday banquet, Lin Ming had fought Lei Mubai, and the weapon he used had been a replica of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. Afterwards, Lei Mubai had perished under Lin Ming's hands, and that replica became Lin Ming's possession.

Then Lin Ming had gone to the South Sea battlefield in order to practice the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' and had used this halberd for a very long time. This was also the reason why he tried to walk on the slaughter path. But afterwards, he discovered that he didn't have much talent in the slaughter path, thus he no longer used the halberd and switched back to his spear.

The halberd and spear were similar pole-type weapons. Lin Ming had practiced martial arts for many years and naturally had a deep understanding into those two types of weapons. As he looked at the Great Desolate Blood Halberd in Situ Yaoyue's hands, he could sense an evil demonic energy coming from it. That was truly an unlucky and ominous weapon!

'Saint rank artifact… also the halberd has an evil demon energy on it that causes it to rise above a normal Saint artifact!' Lin Ming instantly judged.

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd was obviously the final card Situ Yaoyue had hidden.

"In the end… she still had to use it…"

On the Godspeed Boat, Situ Haotian began to slowly shake his head. When he had given the Great Desolate Blood Halberd to Situ Yaoyue, he had urged her again and again to never use it until she was forced to bring out her last resort. And now, the time had come for her to bring out that halberd.

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd was a dangerous and unlucky treasure. After the Demon Emperor flew into the Realm of the Gods tens of thousands of years ago, the Great Desolate Blood Halberd had changed hands several times. With it, one could be called an earth-shaking character that awed the world.

However, written in the ancient records, it showed that Emperor level powerhouses that wielded the Great Desolate Blood Halberd had died horrible, unnatural deaths. Even Divine Sea Supreme Elders were the same. They could be said to have insufficient destiny, and thus were killed by the unlucky curse that existed on the blood halberd.

There was even a case a thousand years ago of this occurring. The Netherworld Great Emperor had also obtained the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, and he had eventually died a miserable death when several Emperor level powerhouses joined forces to exterminate him.

At the time, Situ Haotian had participated in the siege of Silent Demon Emperor City, and the Great Desolate Blood Halberd had thus been obtained by the Asura Divine Kingdom. For this blood halberd, the Asura Divine Kingdom had to give up many other things.

After Situ Haotian obtained the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, he didn’t use it. Instead, he sealed it up and suppressed it deep within the Asura Divine Kingdom’s dimensional realm. The Great Desolate Blood Halberd’s ominous and unlucky history was well documented; even a powerhouse that was close to being the highest under the heavens like the Netherworld Great Emperor had still died because of its curse. Situ Haotian certainly didn’t think he was stronger than the Netherworld Great Emperor, thus he hadn’t used this weapon for the entire thousand years.

Even when he gave this halberd to Situ Yaoyue, he still sealed away the majority of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd’s strength. That was merely how things were. Situ Haotian had told her again and again only to use this weapon as a final resort, fearing that she wouldn’t be able to withstand the curse of the blood halberd.

“So it was the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. The Asura Divine Kingdom is really holding nothing back!”

“Hehe, Situ Haotian isn’t a brash idiot. He’s always been extremely careful; the majority of this unlucky halberd’s strength should have been sealed away. Situ Yaoyue should still be able to withstand it. Even so, although this girl won’t die to the curse, her destiny will certainly be affected. This is not a blessing for her.”

On a spirit boat, two Divine Sea Supreme Elders were casually talking with each other.

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd was extremely famous. Many of those famed sect Elders present certainly recognized this ominous halberd. For these past tens of thousands of years it had drunk countless amounts of blood, including even that of Divine Sea Supreme Elders!

Legends said that this ominous halberd only needed to be casually dropped to be able to crush a mountain. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that this was the world's greatest ominous weapon!

"To think that it's the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. This battle between the strongest Life Destruction powerhouses is truly full of winding paths and changes, with startling events happening again and again. I thought that Lin Lanjian had the advantage, but now that Situ Yaoyue has brought out the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, I have no idea just what will happen!"

"Lin Lanjian is in danger. That ominous halberd is as heavy as a mountain. A mere scratch or bump would be enough to crush someone to death. If that fell from her hands, it would shatter mountains, let alone when it is moved by energy. I wonder just how Lin Lanjian will block it?"

"He might be able to evade it and win through speed. Lin Lanjian's speed is called the highest below the Divine Sea. He can still fight." A sect Elder thoughtfully said.

Situ Yaoyue grasped the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and stood proud and arrogant above her island in the lava sea. "Lin Lanjian, this is the world's greatest ominous weapon. Today, I shall sacrifice your blood to it!"

As she spoke, she rushed forwards. She wielded the desolate halberd downwards like a falling avalanche!

Lin Ming's face was decisive and cold. He evenly lifted his long spear and sneered, "The Great Desolate Blood Halberd may be called the greatest ominous weapon in the world, but just how much of its strength could you possibly display?"

“Humph! Then come and try it out! Meet my move!” Situ Yaoyue said as she smashed the halberd down at Lin Ming. The Great Desolate Blood Halberd was incomparably heavy. Situ Yaoyue had to expend all of her true essence in order to move it, without having any left over to use martial skills.

But, none of this mattered. Absolute power could break apart all techniques. Just wielding the Great Desolate Blood Halberd could be said to be her strongest martial skill!

This simple attack smashed onto Lin Ming. At this moment, it was like a mountain was falling down on him!

Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. The Eight Inner Gates opened, the Heretical God Force erupted!

He spread his feet wide and sank his waist down, transmitting strength through his spine. With the support of the Gate of Limit, 1.5 million jins of strength erupted with his red spear!

To meet spear with halberd, all of the martial artists present stared with wide eyes, dumbfounded at what they were seeing. Even the Divine Sea Supreme Elders were startled.

He wanted to directly resist the Great Desolate Blood Halberd!?

Dang!

Spear and halberd crossed. An explosive ringing sound burst through the clouds and cracked stones, sounding like a thunderclap in everyone’s ears and making their hearts feel faint. The red rock underneath Lin Ming’s feet instantly shattered and a massive shockwave caused the lava beneath him to surge into the air, forming a tsunami of lava that was hundreds of feet high, directly impacting into the horizon!

Lin Ming held his spear with both hands. Because of the immense pressure, the spear shaft had curved like a crescent moon.

However, he had truly been able to frontally block the Great Desolate Blood Halberd’s attack!

On the other side of the blood halberd, Situ Yaoyue’s beautiful face was twisted, her eyes wide with utterly incredulous disbelief!

Chapter 861 – Suppressing Yaoyue

Chapter 861 – Suppressing Yaoyue

…

…

…

"You…"

Situ Yaoyue's cherry red lips slightly parted, her voice trembling.

She had no idea what to say!

If the Great Desolate Blood Halberd was used by a Divine Sea powerhouse, then with its terrifying weight as well as the true essence that would be poured into it, it could be said to have incomparable power.

Now that it had fallen into Situ Yaoyue's hands, although it couldn't display its greatest strength, she could still use her energy to move it. Even so, just its falling momentum was more than astounding!

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd was a weapon that could break apart a mountain just if it were dropped! Now, it even had Situ Yaoyue's added energy to move it!

And such an attack had been directly blocked by Lin Ming!

Ka ka ka!

The red spear in Lin Ming's hand bent to the extreme. This was a standard service weapon of Timeworn Phoenix City. Although it was only a middle-grade heaven-step weapon, in terms of toughness, it actually surpassed a high-grade heaven-step treasure. And with Lin

Ming's silver battle spirit attached to it, it was able to abruptly resist the Great Desolate Blood Halberd without breaking.

"Hahh!"

Lin Ming erupted with a shout and the muscles of his arms suddenly bulged outwards, the blue veins twisting about. He exhausted all of his strength to suddenly push forwards, restoring the red spear to its straight form. Situ Yaoyue felt an unstoppable potential rush towards her as she flew backwards. She tumbled in the air for several miles, the blood in her body tumbling, her insides hurting like all her organs were being twisted around.

After resisting the Great Desolate Blood Halberd's attack, she had been easily struck backwards by Lin Ming!

What!?!?

Situ Yaoyue didn't dare to believe this was real. If Lin Ming had used a martial skill to attack her, then Situ Yaoyue would not be afraid. The Great Desolate Blood Halberd had the attribute of breaking apart all with absolute strength. She could depend on its powerful potential to shatter all energy based attacks.

But, something she never thought possible had happened. Lin Ming had frontally confronted her and blocked her attack! Where did this strength come from? Was he even human?! It was like he was an ancient dragon!

It had to be known that Situ Yaoyue was the wielder of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. Even though she lacked the physical strength to move it, she could still drive it with her energy and use it to smash her opponents.

But Lin Ming was her enemy. It was impossible for him to pour any energy into the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. That meant that he could only rely on his own physical strength to block the Great Desolate Blood Halberd!

Normally, a martial artist would only undergo six phases of body transformation – Strength Training, Flesh Training, Viscera Training, Altering Muscle, Bone Forging and Pulse Condensation. During this time, one's bodily strength would soar again and again. But after crossing Pulse Condensation, one's strength would only slowly grow.

In addition, one's strength would increase again during the marrow washing of the Xiantian realm and also when the body was reformed during Life Destruction. A monstrous genius would have 50,000-60,000 jins of strength, and even someone with inborn divine strength wouldn't surpass 70,000-80,000 jins of strength. After all, a martial artist simply wouldn't use this strength fight. A Life Destruction martial artist could use heaven and earth origin energy to create sword lights and easily slice apart a mountain, so why would they care about a mere several tens of thousands of jins of strength?

But now, Lin Ming had completely subverted all of Situ Yaoyue's understandings!

It wasn't just Situ Yaoyue, but even the other martial artists watching were dumbfounded. This included even the Divine Sea Supreme Elders!

Looking at Lin Ming's handsome and slender appearance, he didn't seem like someone that could erupt with such terrifying strength.

Such supernatural strength; could this also be a type of divine body?

Within the central region of the Sky Spill Continent, divine bodies, divine bloodlines, and dantian variations were all ideas deeply rooted in the hearts of the people. To them, anything that could greatly increase one's martial talent or strength would be called a divine body. For instance, Lin Ming's Ancient Phoenix bloodline.

"Maybe it's not a divine body, but rather a special body strength enhancing technique that relies on true essence." On a spirit boat, a blue-clothed old man commended. His name was Shang Yuetian and his cultivation was at the early Divine Sea realm. He was the Highest Elder of the Shang Family Clan Holy Land. The Shang Family Clan was a part of the Sublime

Smelting Divine Kingdom, and all of their previous generations had been on good terms with the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom.

"I also think so. Otherwise, to have two simultaneous kinds of divine body is far too terrifying!" Beside Shang Yuetian, a black-haired middle-aged man commented. His cultivation was also at the Divine Sea realm, and he was even at the middle Divine Sea realm. He was a subordinate of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom.

Although these two Divine Sea Supreme Elders had a great deal of experience, they had never heard of body transformation techniques like the Eight Inner Hidden Gates or Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, that could give someone millions or even billions of jins of strength. That simply exceeded everything they knew. Let alone now, but even 100,000 years ago, there were almost no body transformation technique martial artists left over on the Sky Spill Continent. This was because the Sky Spill Continent simply didn't have enough resources for them to freely spend.

"This secret technique is rarely seen… but no matter how powerful one's bodily strength is, only a limited amount can be transformed into striking power…"

Shang Yuetian thought out loud. The martial artists of the Sky Spill Continent had never placed bodily strength in high regard. This was just like how mortals who used gunpowder weapons would then look down on sabers and swords.

Situ Yaoyue calmed down after a brief period of shock. She believed that Lin Ming must have forcefully enhanced his strength through the use of some arcane technique. However, this sort of technique inevitably had limits; it was impossible to maintain for extended periods of time.

"Let me see how many of my moves you can block!"

Situ Yaoyue gave a cold shout and rushed forwards once more. She raised the Great Desolate Blood Halberd in her hands and pounded it towards Lin Ming again.

Clang!

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd brutally collided with Lin Ming's red spear once more!

In every collision, the red spear in Lin Ming's hand would violently deform. It would become a crescent moon or like a bent bow. Lin Ming's two arms contained a terrifying divine strength. After bending, the red spear would return like a whip, every movement enough to shake mountains.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

It was like a divine bell of heaven was being rung again and again. A terrifying sound echoed throughout the world, piecing through the heavens and penetrating deep into the earth.

The powerful strikes set off a fierce storm of energy that rushed out in all directions, causing lava and stones to wildly clutter the air.

The two fought from the sea of lava to other mountain peaks, and from those mountain peaks to deep valleys. Wherever they fought, mountains would shatter. Every casual step Lin Ming took was enough to collapse the ground, causing a storm of crushed stone to fly into the air!

Such a method of fighting left all the present martial artists' scalps tingling with fear and their souls shivering. This didn't even seem like a fight between martial artists. It looked like two ancient vicious beasts that were fiercely wrestling with each other!

Bang!

Situ Yaoyue was swept several thousand feet away by Lin Ming's spear. She used the Great Desolate Blood Halberd to catch the ground and slow herself down, causing a massive fissure to appear in the ground. Situ Yaoyue stood up with difficulty. Her blood tumbled within her and her creamy white chest fiercely heaved up and down in exhaustion. Her hands had already become numb!

At this point, Situ Yaoyue wasn't able to steadily hold onto the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. Her two lotus root-like arms trembled, as if she were an old woman at the end of her life!

She watched Lin Ming approach her from not too far away, and a look of panic and dread finally appeared on her beautiful face. Lin Ming simply didn't seem as if he knew what exhaustion was. His strength continued to grow, becoming more and more fierce as the battle dragged on. This caused her to feel a blossoming fear in her heart. She was fast approaching her limit.

Although the two of them had clashed their weapons several times, they still hadn't directly wounded each other. But, under the support of one million jins of strength, every single collision was like the impact of a falling meteor, a massive shaking impact that spread outwards. Even with their weapons as buffers, this shaking force still passed into their organs. If this damage accumulated, it would cause one's blood to surge within them. If it was enough, then even their organs would break apart from the shock and bleed!

After those several dozen strikes, Situ Yaoyue nearly felt her bones break.

As for Lin Ming, the more he fought, the more ferocious he became!

"You..."

As Situ Yaoyue spoke, blood began to flow out from the corners of her lips. Just as she was about to speak further, Lin Ming took a step forwards and attacked!

Woosh!

Lin Ming lifted his long spear high in the air. The overwhelming power of his spear swept down, bringing with it the pressure of a falling mountain. Situ Yaoyue forcefully suppressed the aching pain in her arms and lifted the Great Desolate Blood Halberd to block this attack.

Bang!

Situ Yaoyue's legs softened. Her flight technique simply wasn't enough to withstand such a tremendous impact force. Half of her body was directly pounded in the rock. The collision of their weapons had caused the blood vessels in her arms to burst apart!

The accumulation of these minor shaking wounds had finally surpassed the limits of her body!

The blood vessels and meridians in her arms were in a complete mess, with the tendons and ligaments nearly torn apart. Situ Yaoyue could barely even hold onto the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. Her mind went blank and she wanted to retreat, but at this time Lin Ming brought his spear smashing down again like a collapsing mountain!

Bang!

The two pole type weapons violently impacted each other again. Situ Yaoyue's body shook, and her clear jade-like arms became covered with blood. Several of her bones had also fractured. She vomited a mouthful of blood as an immense impact force rushed out from her body, causing countless stones to shoot into the air. With Situ Yaoyue as the center, the surrounding area in a several hundred foot wide radius nearly completely collapsed. As for Situ Yaoyue, originally just her legs had been nailed into the rock, but now her entire waist and stomach were buried too!

"You!!"

Situ Yaoyue's face burned with shame and anger. She wanted to suppress the pain in all her organs and retreat from here, but Lin Ming didn't give her the chance. His spear came smashing down yet again!

Bang!

Situ Yaoyue wasn't able to resist this attack. The bones in her two arms were shattered to pieces and blood began pouring out from her head. In that moment, she felt the world flip upside down as her mind went dizzy and thunder roared in her ears. The broken stones around her body had been completely crushed into powder by the tremendous impact force, causing sand and smoke to shoot into the skies. Situ Yaoyue was completely pounded into the ground by Lin Ming, leaving only her head on the outside!

That overweeningly arrogant Situ Yaoyue, that proud daughter of heaven that resembled an immortal moon fairy, had actually been beaten into such a miserable appearance!

All of the martial artists present gulped, their throats violently spasming. Even if Situ Yaoyue were to reach the Divine Sea in the future, she would never be able to erase the humiliation of today. In front of everyone's watching eyes, she had been pounded into the ground by Lin Ming as if she were nothing more than a stake.

After the battle reached this state, victory and defeat were almost decided. But, Lin Ming had no intention of showing tender mercy or compassion. He grasped his red spear, poured energy into it and smashed yet again!

Bang!

All of the crushed stones on the ground blew up like a fountain. Situ Yaoyue gave a pitiful cry as her lithe body was sent flying backwards by the tremendous impact force. She vomited a large mouthful of blood.

Flying back in the air, she no longer had the least bit of strength left. Now that the Great Desolate Blood Halberd had lost the controlling support of energy, it fell to the floor.

Bang!

The 10 foot long blood halberd struck the ground, causing a massive 200 foot wide hole to appear. All of the surrounding rock broke into countless shards!

And Situ Yaoyue's entire body was covered with blood. She looked like a sack of boneless meat within the rubble, limp and unmoving, near the point of death.

Seeing such a result, all of the martial artists who watched the battle were left speechless in complete shock. As they looked at Lin Ming, who was bathed in blood, words like cruel, ruthless, vicious, tyrannical, and such all appeared far too pale and weak to describe him!

By using his powerful bodily strength to forcefully beat Situ Yaoyue until she didn’t have an unbroken bone in her body, this scene was far more shocking than those magnificent and gorgeous exchanges with true essence! Moreover, what was most incredible was that the weapon Situ Yaoyue used was the weapon that could crush a mountain, the Great Desolate Blood Halberd!

Chapter 862 – Dropping All Pretenses

Chapter 862 – Dropping All Pretenses

…

…

…

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd’s weight was without doubt. One could tell just how terrifying it was from when it was smashed downwards. But, Lin Ming’s red spear was only a flexible heaven-step treasure. Even so, he was still using that heaven-step treasure to forcefully resist and defeat the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. Such a scene caused all the present martial artists to feel as if they had swallowed an entire cow. All of them were speechless, only blankly looking on at what was happening before them.

“Situ Yaoyue was defeated! She has a seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation and also the Extreme Violet Dantian, but she still lost to Lin Lanjian! If this continues, then Lin Lanjian will only need to cross a few more small boundaries before he becomes a Peerless Emperor!”

“As long as he can pass another three or four stages of Life Destruction then he might be able to contend with a weaker Divine Sea Supreme Elder. This Lin Lanjian is really an undefeated legend. I wonder just what degree he will grow to in the future. He might even be someone more ruthless and famous than Emperor Shakya!”

With events having reached this step, no one doubted Lin Ming’s strength and talent any longer. As long as he didn’t die, he was certain to become the future highest under the heavens. When this sort of existence appeared, it would always cause all the major influences to feel extremely contradictory thoughts. Lin Lanjian would become someone that they would desperately try to win over, while also secretly fearing and dreading him at the same time.

"Yaoyue was defeated, Yaoyue was defeated..." On top of the Asura Divine Kingdom's Godspeed Boat, Situ Yaoxi had paled and her lips were shivering as if her entire body was quaking. "Impossible... impossible... impossible... how could this little beast be so powerful?! Whether it is an assassination or whatever else, I absolutely must kill him. Even if I must sacrifice the lives of several Divine Sea powerhouses, I still must do this!"

The Asura Divine Kingdom had already agreed to this gambling battle with Lin Ming. It was impossible for Situ Yaoxi to use the reason of Lin Ming to launch a national war that disregarded all cost.

"I never thought this would happen..." Situ Haotian deeply sighed, instantly seeming as if he had aged overnight. He had used every possible plan for this battle, and even though he had paid every price possible, they had still lost in the end!

"Is this really the inescapable fate of my Asura Divine Kingdom?"

Lin Ming grasped the red spear and aimed its point at Situ Yaoyue. He trembled by a nearly imperceptible degree. That fierce and long fight had indeed consumed a massive amount of his energy.

In the end, Lin Ming's combat strength was not superior to Situ Yaoyue's. The reason he had won was his superior physical strength and abnormal defensive power.

From the very start, Lin Ming had been the one being suppressed by Situ Yaoyue. After several exchanges of moves, Lin Ming had suffered greater damage than Situ Yaoyue. If a normal martial artist were to be wounded in such a manner, they would have died. But Lin Ming was able to brave through the pain, supporting himself with his hardened will and stubbornness.

The true turning point of this battle had been when Lin Ming burnt the blood of the Ancient Phoenix to shatter Situ Yaoyue's Cage of Darkness. That move had consumed a massive amount of Lin Ming's energy. But by relying on the restorative powers of the Gate of Healing, as well as the body he gained from crossing Life Destruction, he was able to withstand the burden.

Then, Lin Ming had relied on his one million jin strength to engage Situ Yaoyue in a brutal melee that lasted for dozens of rounds. He forcefully resisted all of the shaking damage that from the impact, and instead, Situ Yaoyue had been the one to be severely wounded to the point of bleeding from her head.

"The Great Desolate Blood Halberd really lives up to its reputation." Lin Ming looked at the red halberd. If its sealed form could display such a terrifying might and power, then just what would it be like once its complete strength was unleashed.

If Situ Yaoyue didn't have this desolate halberd, it would have been impossible for her to contend with Lin Ming and further. After her Cage of Darkness had been broken by him, she had occupied the position of absolute weakness.

"If I use this halberd to fight and combine it with my one million jin strength, just what would that be like?" A halberd and spear were extremely close in fighting style. Even though Lin Ming no longer focused on the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' for battle, he could still use a halberd to fight.

As for the curse of the halberd, Lin Ming could ask Demonshine about that. Just because there was no current known solution didn't mean one didn't exist.

As Lin Ming thought this, he began to step towards Situ Yaoyue, one steady pace at a time.

At that time, Situ Yaoyue was already on the verge of death. She lay upon a rock, her bloody arms hanging down at strange angles as wisps of blood fled from her body like small winding snakes.

All of her bones had been shattered. Her face was wet with blood and her crimson eyes were filled with shame and unwillingness.

This was her life's greatest shame, and the greatest failure of her life! As she placed her ear on the ground, she could hear Lin Ming's slowly approaching footsteps.

In a life or death battle, to be defeated meant death.

"Enough, it's time for this to end."

With a deep sigh, a black figure slowly appeared. This figure stood in front of Lin Ming, his hands crossed behind his back. This person was Situ Haotian.

Lin Ming wasn't surprised to see Situ Haotian appear. How could the Asura Divine Emperor watch him slaughter the future hope of his Asura Divine Kingdom?

Lin Ming's lips curved up in a taunting smile. "What is it? Does Your Majesty Haotian plan on using another a million spirit essence stones to purchase Situ Yaoyue's life? The life of a future Asura Divine Emperor is quite 'valuable'."

Lin Ming didn't conceal the mocking tone in his words. Situ Haotian cared enough about face that he could watch Situ Luosha die, but he absolutely would not let Situ Yaoyue perish here. Even if he had to drop every ounce of face he had until it was sweeping the ground, he still had to save Situ Yaoyue's life. This was not only because she had hopes of becoming a first class powerhouse on the level of the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor, but also because she was the direct bloodline descendant of the Situ Family Clan and the future candidate to become the ruler of the Asura Divine Kingdom!

To use a million spirit essence stones to buy the life of a future Divine Emperor was in itself a great irony.

As Situ Haotian heard Lin Ming's words, his expression suddenly became gloomy and dire. Situ Yaoyue and Situ Luosha were different. He had already expected that keeping her life would not be easy or cheap, but he didn't expect Lin Ming to directly ridicule him.

"You little beast, you actually dare to threaten us? You really have no idea of death or danger! Do you really not believe that I'll slap you to death with a single palm?" A figure flashed and an old woman appeared beside Situ Haotian. Her body was slightly bent with age but her eyes were blazing with utter hatred. She was Situ Yaoxi. “Yaoyue has already been wounded so severely and yet you still want to threaten us. Do you really think that we won’t do anything to you just because you have the Forsaken God Clan as your backer? You better fuck off right now or I’ll have your head rolling on the ground!”

Situ Yaoxi roared and the aura of a Divine Sea powerhouse erupted from her like a howling storm towards Lin Ming. However, Lin Ming only sneered, not even taking a single step backwards. It was like he wasn’t even affected at all.

When he was at the late Revolving Core realm, he had already been able to rely on his dual force fields to forcefully resist Situ Haotian’s immense pressure, much less resisting Situ Yaoxi’s pressure with his current Life Destruction cultivation.

“You!!” As Situ Yaoxi saw Lin Ming not even care about her threatening aura, her complexion became much uglier. Her rage had reached the limit! This rage finally turned into a horrifying killing intent that caused her to lose all reasoning. Situ Yaoxi suddenly raised her palm and slammed it towards Lin Ming!

“You little beast, die for me!” Situ Yaoxi only had one thought percolating in her mind now, and that was to kill Lin Ming! No matter how talented Lin Ming was, in this situation where they dropped all pretense of honor and violently killed him, everything would be finished! Even if they killed him right here, what could the Forsaken God Clan possibly do? Would they start a war against the Asura Divine Kingdom just for some revenge? Although this was a ruinous and greatly shameful event that would cause all the martial artists of the world to look down at the Asura Divine Kingdom with contempt, Situ Yaoxi simply didn’t consider any of this. At this time, how could she possibly care about such matters!?

Hu-!

A black demon claw emerged from thin air, grasping towards Lin Ming!

Lin Ming had already begun retreating as he heard Situ Yaoxi's killing intent manifest. With an extreme speed known as unrivalled below the Divine Sea, how could he let himself be easily killed here?

After defeating Situ Yaoyue, Lin Ming already proved that he had a top class strength equal to or greater than a seventh stage Life Destruction powerhouse. Although he was still weaker than a Divine Sea Supreme Elder, the difference wasn't too far off. And with the Gate of Wonder and 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void', it wasn't an exaggeration to say that Lin Ming already had the power to maintain his life in front of the weakest of Divine Sea powerhouses. In the worst case scenario, holding out for four or five moves wasn't a problem at all!

"You demonic bitch, do you want to die!?"

Shibai's heart blazed with anger and he stepped forwards. The masked old man behind him also rushed ahead, his speed even faster than Shibai.

Ho – !

With a loud shout, before the masked old man arrived, a silver sword light shot through the void like a shimmering rainbow, instantly slicing into Situ Yaoxi's demon claw!

The masked old man was less than a mile away from Situ Yaoxi. For a Divine Sea Supreme Elder, that distance wouldn't even take the blink of an eye to cross, and martial artists' attacks were faster than their movements to begin with!

Kacha!

Situ Yaoxi's demon claw was shorn apart by the silver sword light sent out by the masked old man. The sword light continued unabated, slashing straight towards Situ Yaoxi's throat!

One side was a close range eruption and the other side was a long distance attack. Yet, the result was that Situ Yaoxi's demon claw was instantly broken apart. The difference in their strength was as clear as night and day!

As Situ Yaoxi saw this silver sword light cut towards her, she was greatly shocked. Her strength originally wasn’t considered too powerful amongst Divine Sea powerhouses, and she was already quite old. It was impossible for her to block this masked old man’s attack.

Situ Haotian frowned. He also didn’t expect that Situ Yaoxi would suddenly act in such a manner, but since they had already dropped any veneer of civility, he naturally couldn’t allow his own side to weaken in momentum.

He took a sudden step forwards and smashed his fist at the rapidly approaching silver sword light.

Peng!

The sword light shattered into pieces, turning into a brilliant silver radiance that spread out in all directions, causing everyone to feel as if they had been blinded.

At this time, Lin Ming had already withdrawn a mile away without harm. Then a slightly old and pleasant voice sounded out in his ears, “Little Friend, be careful behind you.”

Mm!?!?

A feeling of intense catastrophe suddenly appeared in Lin Ming’s mind. Without further thought he stepped on Golden Roc Shattering the Void, instantly vanishing.

Bang!

The ground where Lin Ming had been standing violently exploded with the strength to shake mountains and rivers. The earth cracked apart, leaving deep and long fissures. Lin Ming turned around to see the white-haired Situ Bonan standing there. He held a black spear in his hands, his ugly old face filled with hostility and displeasure.

“How unfortunate, I was just a bit off.” Situ Bonan cursed. He had thought he had hidden himself very well, but he never imagined that Lin Ming’s perception would be so sensitive.

This damned old geezer!

Lin Ming was startled, his heart simmering with fury and anger. He had actually been attacked on both sides. While Situ Yaoxi and Situ Haotian’s attacks had attracted Shibai and the masked old man’s attention, Situ Bonan had used this chance to aim a sneak attack at him.

After all, the Forsaken God Clan only had two Divine Sea powerhouses present. The third one was managing the array formation within the Realmheart Great Hall. Being outnumbered, they were stretched to protect Lin Ming.

‘Once I have enough strength, I will absolutely kill those old fossils Situ Bonan and Situ Yaoxi!’ Lin Ming carved this thought into his heart, his killing intent roiling off of his body. Even though he had defeated Situ Yaoyue, his strength was still lacking. Without strength, he could only let others knead and humiliate him, even if he were the future highest under the heavens.

Chapter 863 – All Parties Involved

Chapter 863 – All Parties Involved

…

…

…

As Shibai watched Lin Ming nearly die to Situ Bonan's sneak attack because he had been distracted, a furious rage burnt in his heart.

Everything had happened so suddenly that he had been forced to resist Situ Yaoxi and Situ Haotian in a hurry. Especially that Situ Haotian! His strength was unfathomable, to the point that even Shibai feared him. If Situ Haotian had been the one to sneak attack Lin Ming, then perhaps Lin Ming really would have died here.

"Situ Yaoxi! Situ Bonan!" The corners of Shibai's lips twitched as he spoke, a thick killing intent sparkling in his eyes. "I never thought you would be so shameless. Today, with all the martial artists of the world as witnesses, you actually dared to do something so pathetic! In terms of being cheap little shits, you are truly invincible!"

Shibai flashed several times before arriving at Lin Ming's side, protecting him with the masked old man on the other side. Only then was he slightly relieved and able to ruthlessly mock the Asura Divine Kingdom.

The Asura Divine Kingdom's actions had truly left many of the martial artists present dumbfounded. For them to publicly attempt to kill Lin Ming… they really didn't care about face at all!

But at this time, face was useless.

“Humph, Shibai, do you think that as long as your Forsaken God Clan turtles up in this dimensional realm, I really won’t dare to move against you? Be careful that your fellow clansmen don’t mysteriously go missing when they leave to go adventuring!”

As those from the Forsaken God Clan rose in cultivation, the power of their curse would become increasingly strong. This made it difficult for anyone who reached the Revolving Core realm to leave the Forsaken God Clan. But, those Xiantian and Houtian realm martial artists would still go out to gain experience and adventure. There was no small number of fellow clansmen that had gone missing because of this.

In front of so many heroes, Situ Yaoxi had actually spoken merciless words targeting juniors. She could only be described as insane.

Shibai’s complexion completely sunk, a true anger beginning to burn in his heart. “You can try! My Forsaken God Clan has never feared any threats!”

“Humph, you think I don’t dare!?” Situ Yaoxi sharply said in complete opposition. For a Divine Sea Supreme Elder to target the juniors of someone else, she was no different from a rabid dog!

“Enough!”

At this time, a cold shout sounded out. Situ Haotian suddenly stepped forwards, every step crashing down like an avalanche. He looked like a volcano that was ready to erupt at any moment.

His eyes shined as he glared at Lin Ming. “Lin Lanjian, put forward your conditions. I want this battle to stop here!”

Situ Yaoxi and Situ Bonan both didn’t have much longer to live. They were old and paranoid, eccentric to the point where they had now become crazed. But, Situ Haotian had to remember the honor and dignity of the Asura Divine Emperor. In this situation, he at least had to give Lin Ming the chance to state his conditions.

Of course, this was because he was trying to protect Situ Yaoyue's life. Otherwise, today he would have sundered this dimensional realm even if it cost him his life.

"Heh!" Lin Ming had already expected this result. At this time, a true essence sound transmission sounded out in his ears.

"Hehe, boy, don't be scared by that old idiot Situ's words. This old man will support you. As long as you insist on killing that Situ Yaoyue, I will give you 10 million spirit essence stones!"

This true essence sound transmission came from somewhere in the world, forcefully suppressing Lin Ming's words in his throat.

Who?

Lin Ming turned around. He guessed that the true essence sound transmission had come from one of those high level figures on the several spirit boats in the sky. Otherwise, there was no way they would have promised such a sky high price like 10 million spirit essence stones. It was highly likely that they were a Divine Sea Supreme Elder. Chances are they were related to one of the other three Divine Kingdoms, and didn't wish to see someone like Situ Yaoyue remain living.

They had let Situ Luosha off because they didn't care much for him. In the future, if he reached the Divine Sea, that would mean the Asura Divine Kingdom would gain another powerhouse. But this didn't matter much, because a Divine Kingdom's ultimate combat strength was decided by the peak powerhouse of that Divine Kingdom. A late Divine Sea Supreme Elder would definitely be able to instantly kill a weak Divine Sea powerhouse who relied on lucky chances to enhance their cultivation to that point.

And Situ Yaoyue had a slight chance of reaching the late Divine Sea. Her value was incomparable with that of Situ Luosha.

'The bunch of old foxes.' Lin Ming cursed in his heart. This other person only used a true essence sound transmission and didn't actually come forwards. It was obvious that the old fellow who sent the true essence sound transmission didn't have the courage to face Situ Haotian. This also proved just how powerful Situ Haotian was.

'Are you saying that you'll support me? Support your ass!' The three Divine Sea masters of the Asura Divine Kingdom present were all standing around Situ Yaoyue. Just how could he possibly kill her at this point?

If he really insisted on killing Situ Yaoyue then he would have to wage absolute war here!

Lin Ming estimated that Situ Haotian was more or less a middle Divine Sea powerhouse, and one of the top characters of his level. He was only inferior to a first class existence like the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor, otherwise he would never have been able to become a Divine Emperor. If they really fought, then without the support of the Realmheart Great Hall and the strongest array formation there, the Forsaken God Clan wouldn't have the advantage anymore.

Moreover, the Forsaken God Clan would not fight with Situ Haotian over some minor benefits for killing Situ Yaoyue.

"Haotian, this little bastard doesn't know what death or danger are. Why are you even bothering with him? If we want to take away Yaoyue, just what can he do!?" Situ Yaoxi fiercely said. The Asura Divine Kingdom had already bled a tremendous amount today. After losing the battle, they would have to pay Lin Ming the materials they promised as well as the 1.5 million spirit essence stones for Situ Luosha's life. This was already more than 10 million spirit essence stones. And that didn't even include the slaughter puppets that had died. Paying such a great price was really the same as slicing off their flesh.

"Just shut your mouth!" Situ Haotian angrily responded with a true essence sound transmission. Right now his mood was extremely poor. He simply didn't want to speak nonsense with Situ Yaoxi anymore.

After Situ Yaoxi was scolded by her younger brother, she was naturally unhappy. She could only vent her anger onto Lin Ming and say with a true essence sound transmission, “You little beast, consider yourself lucky today. 1.5 million spirit essence stones! Demand this price in front of everyone and I will agree to it. Otherwise, we will simply use force to take away Yaoyue and also not honor any of our previous agreements! We will make it so that you don’t even obtain a single spirit essence stone from us!”

As Lin Ming heard Situ Yaoxi’s words, he was enraged. He hated this damnable old witch to the extreme.

Even if she didn’t care about honor, she still recognized that the Forsaken God Clan wouldn’t be able to do anything to the Asura Divine Kingdom. If they really waged war with each other, then the Forsaken God Clan would still be able to struggle against them in this dimensional realm. But if they left this dimensional realm then the Forsaken God Clan would be in a miserable state. They wouldn’t even need the Asura Divine Kingdom to do anything. Just the power of the curse would be enough to destroy them.

In other words, if the Asura Divine Kingdom didn’t care about face and ignored their gamble, refusing to pay anything at all, there was nothing Lin Ming would be able to do about it.

This was the result of not having enough strength. If Lin Ming were currently the highest under the heavens, then he could kill Situ Yaoxi in front of everyone and Situ Haotian wouldn’t even dare to fart.

‘When I become an Emperor, the first one I’ll kill will be you!’ Lin Ming had already sentenced Situ Yaoxi to death in his heart.

“You little beast, I’ll give you three breaths of time to make your decision, otherwise you won’t obtain anything at all!” Situ Yaoxi shouted once more.

Lin Ming sneered. Then, he slowly said, “You disgusting old witch, a Divine Sea Supreme Elder just sent me a sound transmission saying that as long as I kill Situ Yaoyue, they will pay me 10 million spirit essence stones. Compared to the 1.5 million spirit essence stones you offer, they are far more generous.

‘If you want to fight then say it out loud and fight yourself. Otherwise, I’ll really be made a fool. That old fellow who sent the sound transmission likely didn’t have good intentions to begin with, and I have no idea who he is anyway. Perhaps he might even have offered that number of spirit essence stones in order to stir up a fight between the Forsaken God Clan and the Asura Divine Kingdom.’

Although Lin Ming didn’t speak too loudly, his words were fused with true essence. His words spread to every corner within a hundred miles, where every martial artist could clearly hear him.

All of the heroic young elites present sucked in a cold breath. They already had a feeling that today’s events wouldn’t be able to end peacefully. Someone was aiming at the Asura Divine Kingdom and had offered a sky high price of 10 million spirit essence stones. They had no idea just what Situ Haotian and Lin Ming would do in this situation!

“10 million… hehehaha…!” Situ Haotian sneered. It was already well within his expectations that Lin Ming would be offered this.

Situ Haotian suddenly looked up, his eyes sweeping over all the high level spirit boats. “This fellow martial arts cultivator is so generous! How about you stand out so this Emperor can experience such grandiosity!”

10 million spirit essence stones was not a minor number. It was likely that the one who offered that amount was a Divine Sea Supreme Elder. For instance, someone like Shang Yuetian, Fairy Snow Gale, Yang Yun, and the others. There was no need to mention Yang Yun’s motivations – he was the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom Crown Prince. As for Shang Yuetian and the others, they also had Divine Kingdoms that they followed, meaning they had no need to have their family clans pay this price. The other three Divine Kingdoms would love to see Situ Yaoyue die. Let alone 10 million, they might even pay a higher price.

“Humph, no one is willing to step forwards?” Situ Haotian sneered.

This scene caused Lin Ming to reevaluate Situ Haotian's strength. Since he dared to bring Situ Yaoyue into this dimension realm, he naturally had faith in his own strength.

'This group of old foxes is indeed unreliable…' Lin Ming frowned. He had planned to pull them in to help him out, but that now looked impossible. These people simply had no intention of tearing apart all face and engaging in a violent battle in this dimensional realm. At that time, even if Situ Yaoyue was killed, one or two Divine Sea powerhouses might perish here under Situ Haotian's hands.

"You little bastard, if you have a request then spit it out!" Situ Bonan coldly shouted. At this time, everyone's eyes focused on Lin Ming. In this sort of situation, every word he spoke would be under pressure. Because he lacked strength, there was simply no energy to back his words.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then calmly said, "I will not kill Situ Yaoyue, nor do I need spirit essence stones."

"Mm?" Situ Yaoxi and Situ Bonan absolutely didn't expect that Lin Ming would say such words. Situ Yaoxi sneered in her heart, coming to the conclusion that her threat had been effective.

"You little beast, I guess you do know your limitations after all! Let's go!" Situ Yaoxi coldly coughed as she spoke and then turned, planning on carrying off Situ Yaoyue.

Lin Ming shook his head. "Hold up. Although I said that I won't kill Situ Yaoyue, we shall still defer to customary rules. After a life or death battle, everything on Situ Yaoyue's body is now my spoils of battle."

"What!?"

As Lin Ming spoke, the entire audience was shocked. Situ Yaoxi cried out in alarm like a cat whose tail had been stepped on. It had to be said that Situ Yaoyue had two great treasures on her, the Demon God Heartguard Mirror and the Great Desolate Blood Halberd!

The value of these two treasures was impossible to estimate!

Chapter 864 – The Side of Morality and Principle

Chapter 864 – The Side of Morality and Principle

…

…

…

“You little beast, what did you say!?”

Situ Yaoxi was so angry she nearly fainted. She had already given Lin Ming an offer of 1.5 million spirit essence stones, but Lin Ming had actually opened his mouth wide like a lion and demanded the Demon God Heartguard Mirror and the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, two top treasures! Their value was impossible to estimate!

Lin Ming looked at Situ Yaoxi with faint indifference and then laughed, “This is a life or death struggle to begin with. Since I defeated Situ Yaoyue, I can also take her life and naturally everything on her would be mine. These are the established customs of the Sky Spill Continent. Do you that you can use a saber to try to kill me, and then when your plan fails I somehow should give that saber back to you!?”

Lin Ming didn’t fear Situ Yaoxi. In any case, he simply wasn’t able to do anything else. It’s not like he had been planning to kill Situ Yaoyue anyway; killing her was of no benefit to him. If so, then he might as well make a deal with the Asura Divine Kingdom.

But Situ Yaoxi had been so arrogant that she had actually started out with an offer of 1.5 million spirit essence stones. That was simply a disgraceful offer.

"You little bastard…" Situ Yaoxi gnashed out these three words and then turned to look at Situ Haotian. "Haotian, this little beast cannot be allowed to live. The three of us will fight together. Emperor Uncle and I will stop Shibai and that masked old man while you kill that boy. With your strength you should have at least a 70-80% assurance!"

After a life or death struggle that was intended to resolve their differences, Situ Yaoxi had actually disregarded the results and launched a vicious attack. Since she had already torn off any face she had left, she simply didn't care about how the rest of the martial world looked at her.

Situ Haotian took a deep breath and calmly said, "The Forsaken God Clan's third Divine Sea powerhouse has already caught up. He's hiding in the distorted space around Lin Lanjian. With Lin Lanjian under the protection of a Divine Sea powerhouse skilled in Space Laws, do you really think that I have a 70-80% chance of killing him?"

As Situ Yaoxi heard Situ Haotian's words, she was stunned. She opened her mouth as if she wanted to speak, but finally didn't say anything.

Situ Haotian pondered for a moment. Although he should be stronger than that third Divine Sea Elder, wanting to suppress him within a few moves was not realistic. Even if he disregarded how the world's martial artists saw him and attacked Lin Lanjian publicly, he still had to do so in a situation where he would be able to instantly and successfully kill him.

The atmosphere had fallen into an impasse. The three Divine Sea powerhouses of the Forsaken God Clan faced off against the three Divine Sea powerhouses of the Asura Divine Kingdom. Although Situ Haotian's previous words had been filled with bravado, the truth was that he really didn't wish to fight here. He might not fear anyone, but with so many masters present, one of them might take advantage of the chaos and launch a sneak attack against Situ Yaoyue. If that happened, it was obvious what would happen to her.

In the end, Situ Haotian had simply brought too few top powerhouses here today. The Asura Divine Kingdom had over a dozen Divine Sea Supreme Elders. Three of them were old Emperor Uncles that had either gone into seclusion, were travelling the world, or were adventuring for their own lucky chances. It was impossible for him to request those three Emperor Uncles to escort Situ Yaoyue for a single battle.

As for the rest of the Divine Sea Supreme Elders, they had to be left behind to defend the Asura Divine Kingdom. Thus, the Asura Divine Kingdom didn't have many masters they were able to bring today.

In such a dreadful stalemate, a long ringing bell suddenly rang out. An extraordinary and wizened blue-clothed old man came riding forwards on the back of a green ox, a peach staff in his hand. That ringing sound had come from the copper bell around the green ox's neck.

This blue-clothed old man was Old Man Good Fortune.

"Everyone, please calm down and be patient."

Old Man Good Fortune only spoke a few casual words, but these words seemed to contain an invisible magic. The tense atmosphere immediately eased by a great deal.

As Situ Haotian saw Old Man Good Fortune, his pupils suddenly shrank. This old fellow was rumored to have lived for 8000 years! In the Sky Spill Continent, he was the oldest human alive. Situ Haotian naturally feared and dreaded him.

'So he was the one who warned me of that sneak attack…' When Situ Bonan had sneak attacked him, Lin Ming had heard an old voice filled with the vicissitudes of life, reminding him to watch his back. That voice was the same as Old Man Good Fortune's.

Lin Ming had already been in a poor condition at the time. If Old Man Good Fortune hadn't warned him, then he might have been struck by Situ Bonan. At the least, he would have been hit by the energy shockwaves. In this tense situation, if he had been severely wounded and lost his combat efficiency, then that would undoubtedly have put him in an extremely dangerous position.

Thus, Lin Ming felt very grateful to Old Man Good Fortune.

"Divine Emperor Haotian, how about listening to the words of an old man?"

In a confrontation of two sides, Old Man Good Fortune had suddenly appeared, adding a number of complex variables to the mix. All of the martial artists present suddenly rose to attention, waiting to see just what would happen.

This was related to the national destiny of the Asura Divine Kingdom and the fate of the future highest under the heavens. It naturally attracted the attention of everyone present.

Situ Haotian knit his eyebrows together. When it came to the interests of the Asura Divine Kingdom, he simply didn't wish for outsiders to intervene. This was because for today's matters, no matter what happened, it was the Asura Divine Kingdom that was in the wrong.

As long as this Old Man Good Fortune decided to reason with rationale and principle, then whatever remarks he said would be extremely unfavorable towards the Asura Divine Kingdom. How could Situ Haotian possibly be willing to allow this to happen?

However, Old Man Good Fortune's status and seniority that could crush him into the dirt actually left him no choice but to endure this. He reluctantly said, "Senior Good Fortune, please speak."

Old Man Good Fortune nodded. He looked at Shibai and Lin Ming, wanting to know what they thought of this.

Lin Ming cupped his fists together and said, "Senior Good Fortune, please speak. This junior will listen with rapt attention."

Old Man Good Fortune faintly smiled, "Since you two are willing to give old me some face, then I shall act as peacemaker this time. Little Friend Lin Lanjian, according to what I know, today is the day you first met Situ Yaoyue. You do not have any grudges or injustice with her. Although this is a life or death struggle, to show mercy and forgiveness is what men should do. So, how about we let her off for today?"

As Old Man Good Fortune spoke, Shibai slightly pressed his eyebrows together. Although he knew that Old Man Good Fortune wasn't finished speaking and he should have some conditions aimed at the Asura Divine Kingdom, if they agreed now then it would be impossible for them to go back on this promise. They would have lost all capital for bargaining and would only be able to listen to Old Man Good Fortune's request.

However, Lin Ming actually agreed without any hesitation. Not to mention that Old Man Good Fortune hadn't finished speaking, but just the kindness of warning him of danger was enough for Lin Ming to agree to this condition.

"Good. Then, Divine Emperor Haotian, for today's matter, your Asura Divine Kingdom was the first to act and even decided on the life or death battle for today. This battle was supposed to resolve all enmity between you, however… after this battle ended, two of your Asura Divine Kingdom's Divine Sea powerhouses actually attacked a mere first stage Life Destruction junior. One of them even launched a sneak attack on him! I fear that no matter where you go in the world, there is no way you can convince anyone that what you say is right!"

As Old Man Good Fortune spoke to here, Situ Yaoxi and Situ Bonan both had extremely ugly expressions. Old Man Good Fortune was obviously helping Lin Ming. Or rather, it could be said he was standing on the side of 'principle and morality'.

If it weren't for Old Man Good Fortune's status and strength, they would have already flipped these peace talks upside down.

Situ Haotian narrowed his eyes a bit. He had expected this would happen. Since Old Man Good Fortune appeared, if he didn't stand on the side of principles and morality then he would certainly be criticized by everyone. In other words, he had come today to help Lin Ming.

"Senior Good Fortune, just what do you want?"

Chapter 865 – Two Conditions

Chapter 865 – Two Conditions

…

…

…

Facing Situ Haotian's question, Old Man Good Fortune said at a moderate pace, "I would like Divine Emperor Haotian to agree to two conditions!"

"Do continue," Situ Haotian's complexion was downcast. It was impossible to tell just what he was thinking at the moment.

"Firstly, about the two Saint artifact treasures with Situ Yaoyue, both you and Little Friend Lin Lanjian here will take a step back. Of the two Saint artifacts, Little Friend Lin Lanjian will be able to take his choice of one!"

"What!?"

Old Man Good Fortune hadn't even finished speaking when Situ Yaoxi cried out in alarm and anger. She really would have liked to shove her middle finger at Old Man Good Fortune's nose and hurl insults at him, but she didn't have the courage to do so. "Senior Good Fortune, while I do respect you as a senior, today you have clearly shown favor and bias towards Lin Lanjian! The Demon God Heartguard Mirror and the Great Desolate Blood Halberd are both national treasures of my Asura Divine Kingdom, so why should we give them to him!?"

Old Man Good Fortune chuckled and then slowly said, "Because of 'principle'!"

“You...” Situ Yaoxi was so angry that she felt her intestines twisting. Old Man Good Fortune had made it clear that her Asura Divine Kingdom was the one being unreasonable and unprincipled.

“Today’s matter, since it is a life or death struggle, then even if the Demon God Heartguard Mirror and Great Desolate Blood Halberd were to be taken by Little Friend Lin Lanjian, then by all rights, there shouldn’t be any problems. You should know when to take a step back and be able to tell the difference between right and wrong.” Although Old Man Good Fortune’s words were spoken calmly, everyone present was able to discern the warning within them.

But how could this possibly convince Situ Yaoxi? Her face was grim as she said, “While I may not be in the right today, strength is always the greatest truth! Why should my noble Divine Kingdom bother speaking about principles with this little bastard?”

As she spoke, all of the martial artists present were flabbergasted. Situ Yaoxi was truly shameless to the point of not caring about face. This had been a life or death struggle fought in front of many of the world’s martial artists! However, upon her loss, not only had she gone back on her promise, she also spoke confidently, as if she were in the right.

At this time, a light laugh echoed out. “Situ Yaoxi, you keep on breaking your promises and yet still dare to act so righteously about things. You have truly opened my mind!”

As everyone heard these words, they were quite startled. Anyone that would dare say such provocative words must undoubtedly be a Divine Sea powerhouse!

There was another Divine Sea powerhouse joining the fray!

Everyone followed the voice to see a beautiful fairy-like woman flying in the wind, her white clothes fluttering about her. She was Fairy Snow Gale, with a handsome young man standing above a golden divine carriage at her side. This young man had a heavenly, jade-like appearance – he was the Nine Furnace Crown Prince, Yang Yun!

“Fairy Snow Gale! Yang Yun!”

"I've heard that Fairy Snow Gale has already long since reached the peak of the early Divine Sea realm. Moreover, she's not too old. She should have a high chance of breaking into the middle Divine Sea realm!"

"Fairy Snow Gale comes from the White Clan, and the White Clan is part of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. They had problems with the Asura Divine Kingdom to begin with, so Fairy Snow Gale certainly isn't afraid of offending Situ Haotian!"

"Fairy Snow Gale is also stepping in, and things are really becoming interesting!" All of the martial artists present had the mindset of watching these entertaining events play out. Out of the four Divine Kingdoms, the Asura Divine Kingdom was the only one that followed the demonic path. They were a nation of people who recklessly followed their most debased natures, and were naturally cruel and violent individuals. It was inevitable that they had managed to offend a great number of influences. Thus, the Asura Divine Kingdom had a very poor reputation around the world. As people saw Old Man Good Fortune, Fairy Snow Gale, and even Yang Yun step forwards, all of them were secretly taking pleasure in the Asura Divine Kingdom's troubles.

"Strength is indeed the greatest truth. Thus, if you really plan on waging war, do you really believe the Asura Divine Kingdom will occupy the overwhelming advantage?" Fairy Snow Gale slowly said with a tranquil expression. Her words lacked any killing intent, and she spoke as if she were just discussing the weather. However, the implicit meaning in her words left Situ Haotian drenched in cold sweat.

Fairy Snow Gale's meaning was that once war started, she would join Lin Ming along with Old Man Good Fortune. If that happened, then the Asura Divine Kingdom's fate could be easily imagined!

No matter how haughty and domineering Situ Yaoxi was, she still didn't dare to speak up anymore at this point.

In this dimensional realm, the Asura Divine Kingdom was surrounded by countless enemies on all sides. Before, these enemies had been deterred by Situ Haotian's strength;

none had dared to step forwards. They were afraid that if a fight broke out, they would be severely wounded, or even killed by him.

But now that the massive tree of Old Man Good Fortune was sheltering them, these people no longer felt the least bit of pressure in revealing themselves. Moreover, Fairy Snow Gale had thoughts of befriending Lin Ming to begin with, so stepping forwards at this time was also an appropriate matter.

Situ Haotian's complexion became increasingly dismal. He didn't even greet Fairy Snow Gale, but instead coldly said to Old Man Good Fortune, "Senior Good Fortune, please speak your second condition."

Fairy Snow Gale thought little of it. She naturally sauntered near Lin Ming's side, obviously with the meaning of shielding him.

At such a close distance, Lin Ming could even smell the light and airy fragrance drifting from Fairy Snow Gale's body. Although he knew perfectly well just why Fairy Snow Gale had stepped up now, she had still helped him. Lin Ming recorded this graciousness in his heart.

"The second condition...." Old Man Good Fortune stroked his grey beard and faintly smiled "That is to place Situ Yaoyue in the Forsaken God Clan's Realmheart Great Hall for three years. You may send someone to guard her for this time period, but she cannot be allowed to leave the Realmheart Great Hall by even a single step. I believe that the Forsaken God Clan will assure us that Situ Yaoyue will remain absolutely safe."

"What?" Situ Haotian's thick eyebrows shot up. This condition basically meant that he wanted to take Situ Yaoyue as a hostage. Even a fool could see that Situ Yaoxi and Situ Bonan would continue to hunt down Lin Ming. If Lin Ming stayed in the Forsaken God Clan, then he would certainly be safe; however, if he went out to adventure, then he would be in grave danger. If the Asura Divine Kingdom finally lost all rationale and reasoning in the end, then they might even truly make war with the Forsaken God Clan!

The reason that Old Man Good Fortune wanted to take Situ Yaoyue as a hostage was to give Lin Ming three years. With Lin Ming's speed of growth, this was the time that Old Man Good Fortune decided Lin Ming would need in order to gain the strength to preserve his life in front of a Divine Sea powerhouse.

"Absolutely impossible!" Situ Yaoxi barked out like a rabid dog. "Why should I believe the Forsaken God Clan? Why should I imprison Yaoyue here!?"

As Shibai heard Old Man Good Fortune's second condition, his eyes began to shine. This was indeed a very good method. He stepped forwards and said, "My Forsaken God Clan's Realmheart Great Hall is the fulcrum that supports the heart of this dimensional realm. Even someone on the level of the highest under the heavens will find it impossible to break through. Situ Yaoyue will have absolute safety within, and you can also have someone sent over to guard her. As for us killing Situ Yaoyue, you don't have to be an idiot to know that we wouldn't do something so unreasonable! Situ Yaoxi, your reaction just now was so dramatic, could it be possible that you were already thinking of ways to eliminate Little Brother Lin in these next few years!?"

Facing Shibai's question, Situ Yaoxi's eyes revealed a thick killing intent. Indeed, she had been preparing to deal with Lin Ming. Assassination, murder, whatever it took; she would stop at nothing to slaughter him. However, if they controlled Yaoyue's life then that was the same as holding onto her throat. How could she possibly agree to this?

Old Man Good Fortune didn't have much of an expression. He looked towards Situ Haotian, "Divine Emperor Haotian, what do you think?"

Situ Haotian's originally narrowed eyes slowly opened, a terrifying, breathtaking light suddenly bursting from within. At this moment, Situ Haotian's aura suddenly surged outwards, causing all of the martial artists present to gasp out loud. It was like an ancient vicious beast had suddenly awoken from a deep slumber!

Situ Haotian had always been hiding his abilities. 2500 years ago, when he was just 90 years old, he had taken his seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation and successfully crossed the Divine Sea. The only aspect in which he was inferior to Situ Yaoyue was her Extreme Violet Dantian. It had already been several hundred years since he had last fought, and it was rumored that he was the top powerhouse amongst all middle Divine Sea martial artists. It was said that he was only weaker than the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor and the Sublime Smelting Imperial Grand Uncle, and that he was stronger that the Seven Star Divine Emperor.

As for where the limits of his true strength lay, no one knew.

“This is…is Situ Haotian planning to fight?”

“What can he do in this situation, is he planning on fighting both Old Man Good Fortune and Fairy Snow Gale? That is impossible!”

“No kidding. Once they begin to fight, then the Asura Divine Kingdom will lose without a doubt!”

Even if Situ Haotian were much stronger than he was now, the solemn dignity and majesty of Old Man Good Fortune was already stamped into everyone’s hearts. He was an unrivalled powerhouse that had already lived for 8000 years, an existence close to being the highest under the heavens.

Moreover, despite the fact that he didn’t come from a sect or family clan, he was still able to reach this level today. In these 8000 years, it was impossible to count how many people he must have killed or how many life or death situations he had survived. Although he looked kind and benign like an old grandfather on the outside, who knew just what sort of terrifying ability he would show once he broke out in anger. That would truly be an earth-shaking scene!

However, the event that no one thought could possibly happen was actually happening!

Situ Haotian suddenly stepped forwards, his eyes blazing as he looked at Old Man Good Fortune. “Senior Good Fortune, as you say, strength is the greatest truth in the martial world! I have always diligently and eagerly tried to increase my own strength. However, for the last 1000 years, although I gained a few faint understandings on my martial road, I am still stranded at the bottleneck between the middle and late Divine Sea realm, and have been unable to make a breakthrough. Now that I am so lucky to see Senior today, I hope that Senior can give me advice on three moves so that I might gain some lucky insights. Senior, what do you think?"

Situ Haotian's surprising words were stubborn to the point of death. Although his tone was polite, and he had limited this spar to three moves, it still didn't change the fact that he had challenged Old Man Good Fortune!

Situ Haotian was an absolute madman!

"He's crazy! Situ Haotian wants to fight Old Man Good Fortune!"

"Stop making such a fuss over nothing. Situ Haotian is an extremely smart person. If he limits himself to three moves, then he might be able to withstand it!"

As people were talking, it was unknown just who was it that said, "Speaking of it, I fear that Old Man Good Fortune is probably reaching the end of his natural life...."

As the martial artists present heard this, all of them were bewildered.

That's right! A late Divine Sea powerhouse was said to have 10,000 years of life, but the truth was that they often lived to only 8000-9000 years of life. There were many reasons for this. For instance, they might overdraw their life or be wounded in battle, or perish as they explored a mystic realm. Whatever the reasons were, the truth was that very few late Divine Sea powerhouses lived to be 9000 years old.

To a martial artist, time was their most terrifying opponent. The martial arts road could be said to be a daily struggle with the heavens. In the currently known martial arts boundary, no one had ever been able to obtain eternal life. No matter how remarkable or talented you were, and whether you were an unrivalled Emperor or the highest under the heavens, in the end, time would slowly sap away all of your strength. Time would age you until the fires of your life were exhausted, and you finally died.

Old Man Good Fortune was already reaching the end of his natural life. But all reasons given, he shouldn't have much of his peak strength remaining.

On the other hand, Situ Haotian was only 2600 years old. He was at the age when a middle Divine Sea powerhouse was in their prime, their combat strength having reached its peak!

If they truly fought, then although Situ Haotian might not be able to win, he still might have the strength to protect himself. Also, this was only for three moves!

Situ Haotian only needed to survive three moves and create a draw. That would be enough to have his name shock the world, frightening everyone!

And at that time, Old Man Good Fortune would also be too embarrassed to continue. The reason that Old Man Good Fortune was able to mediate the situation today was because he relied on his strength and status as someone close to the highest under the heavens. But, if he fought Situ Haotian and still couldn't prevail in three moves, then what basis did he have to stick his nose into their business?

Once Old Man Good Fortune retreated, then Fairy Snow Gale and Yang Yun naturally would have no reason to step forwards anymore.

Thus, this was the reason he had only proposed three moves.

Chapter 866 – Divide the Void

Chapter 866 – Divide the Void

…

…

…

The situation had originally been disadvantageous for the Asura Divine Kingdom, but Situ Haotian's miraculous chess move had caused the road to curve once more, adding new variables!

In this fight, if he could end it in a draw, then not only would Situ Haotian gain immeasurable fame, enough to deter the world, but he would also be able to solve Situ Yaoyue's problem.

"He must defeat Situ Haotian in three moves or at least dominate him. Otherwise it will be impossible for him to command everyone's respect. Can Old Man Good Fortune really do this?"

"If this were four thousand years ago when Old Man Good Fortune was still at his peak state, then that certainly wouldn't be a problem. But now… I think the situation is an unknown!"

"Situ Haotian is too cunning and limited this match to only three moves. Old Man Good Fortune can't change anything now even if he wanted to. After all, he's the senior here."

"Perhaps… Old Man Good Fortune will avoid this battle and use some casual excuse to refuse Situ Haotian. Although this will be enough to save his face, that will be the same as showing weakness. He won't be able to meddle in Lin Lanjian's affairs anymore!"

Everyone’s eyes turned to Old Man Good Fortune. Shibai and the other Forsaken God Clan martial artists looked a bit tense. All of them couldn’t help but think that 8000 years of life really did seem just a bit too old. And didn’t this elderly man seem as if he were in the last years of his life?

To suppress Situ Haotian with overwhelming strength in three moves, the chances were a bit unknown…

Old Man Good Fortune’s blue clothes fluttered in the wind. He held onto his peach walking stick, a kind and benevolent smile still hanging on his face. However, as this smile fell into the eyes of others, it appeared abstruse and profound. Old Man Good Fortune lightly coughed and said, “You know… being so stubborn isn’t always good…”

These words didn’t show if Old Man Good Fortune was planning to accept the match or not. Situ Haotian’s eyebrows shot up, “Senior Good Fortune, do you have no intention of directing this Emperor?”

“Haha…” Old Man Good Fortune stroked his white beard and said with a smile, “I don’t think I can direct you, but for a senior to be able to exchange some moves with a junior, at least this old man’s legacy might not be wasted in the coffin. This can also be considered good fortune.”

The surrounding martial artists all became excited as they heard Old Man Good Fortune speak. He had really decided to fight!

Those two were among the top powerhouses of the Sky Spill Continent! This sort of fight could be said to be rarer than a once in a millennium battle!

Existences of their level would only fight in the eruption of a national war or to compete for lucky chances. Otherwise, they simply wouldn’t bother fighting. If they did vigorously battle then they would have to consume their energy. Once they damaged their life source or harmed the fires of their life, the gains simply wouldn’t be equal to the losses.

Situ Haotian narrowed his eyes. At this moment he was like a massive dragon that was charging his strength, containing a potent and terrifying power within him. Once he erupted, it would truly be an earth-shaking event!

Old Man Good Fortune grasped his peach walking stick and hobbled over to stand in front of Situ Haotian. Compared to Situ Haotian's dominating aura, he was simply like a normal old man without any special characteristics at all.

"Senior Good Fortune, let's go up." At this time, Situ Haotian's fighting spirit was blazing. He had no intention of underestimating Old Man Good Fortune at all. He would go all-out in this battle!

He could not lose!

"Alright." Old Man Good Fortune's feet lifted off from the ground as he floated upwards without a sound. His green ox mount rode over from the clouds to position itself underneath Old Man Good Fortune's feet.

Like this, Old Man Good Fortune rode his green ox and ascended into the skies.

The two flew 10,000 feet high in the air. As for the younger martial artists, they had moved far into the distance under the direction of their Elders. Those who were still staying within the 10 mile range were all powerful characters.

"A battle between Divine Sea Supreme Elders." Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath, his heart filling with anticipation. This would be the most high level battle he had witnessed to date.

Near Lin Ming, Shibai was a bit worried. Just what would the result of this match be? Could Old Man Good Fortune really subdue Situ Haotian in three moves?

"Senior Good Fortune, do you not plan on putting away your mount?"

10,000 feet in the air, Situ Haotian frowned a bit as he saw Old Man Good Fortune ride up on his green ox. Once this battle began it would definitely be an apocalyptic scene. That mount would be crushed into goo.

“No need. This green ox will ride into battle with me.” Old Man Good Fortune said with a smile.

Situ Haotian guessed that the green ox was some sort of contract beast, but he didn’t care too much about it. It was a perfectly justified matter for a martial artist to fight with their contract beast.

“Divine Emperor Haotian, you may make your move.” Old Man Good Fortune reminded him.

“Then this Emperor shall do as you wish!” At this time, Situ Haotian naturally wouldn’t care about modesty or humility. In this battle he had to guarantee at least a draw. If he was able to put pressure on Old Man Good Fortune, then that would be even better!

Situ Haotian had kept a low profile for all these years and had collected a number of special trump abilities. Facing this Old Man Good Fortune, who was near the end of his life, he was confident he could put pressure on him.

Bang!

A great strength erupted. Situ Haotian extracted a black halberd from his spatial ring. This war halberd was 10 feet long and released bursts of fierce black light. The shaft of the halberd was etched with compact and complex patterns. This was impressively a quasi-Saint artifact!

Counting this unknown black halberd, the Asura Divine Kingdom had continually revealed two quasi-Saint artifacts and one Saint artifact.

Among them, although the Demon God Heartguard mirror was a quasi-Saint level artifact, because it was a defensive treasure its value was in no way inferior to an offensive Saint artifact.

At this time, Situ Haotian's thick black hair was flying in the wind. He seemed like a god that overlooked mortals, looking down at the world with arrogance and contempt!

"God Murder!"

Omm –

A loud ringing cry emerged from the black war halberd, followed by an endless amount of energy that extended outwards like a growing galaxy. Situ Haotian had used the strongest killing move of the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art', a move that required the strength of the Divine Sea to use.

Facing this terrifying strike, Old Man Good Fortune still rode on his green ox. His blue clothes gently waved in the wind. With a calm expression, he lifted his hands and drew a line downwards. A star-like energy suddenly appeared like a fleeting illusion, falling down and cutting off the world.

Bang!

Situ Haotian's terrifying attack smashed towards Old Man Good Fortune. However, just as his attack reached 10 feet away, it simply vanished into the void, disappearing forever. It was like an invisible endless abyss had appeared in front of Old Man Good Fortune. Any energy that came towards him simply faded away with no trace left!

"What!?"

All of the martial artists watching from afar were dumbfounded. Situ Haotian's horrifying attack had vanished just like that. Old Man Good Fortune still calmly rode his green ox, his blue clothes fluttering in the wind. As this scene fell into everyone's watching eyes, they felt an inestimable feeling.

Lin Ming was also stricken; Old Man Good Fortune had easily divided space!

At this time, although Old Man Good Fortune was standing still and seemed close by, the truth was that he was in a completely separate world. Between him and Situ Haotian was an invisible moat that could not be crossed. No matter what sort of monstrous supernatural strength came rushing towards him, it would all fall into this unknown space, unable to harm even a single hair of Old Man Good Fortune.

Just how deep did one's comprehension of the Space Laws have to be in order to use such a heaven-defying ability with such casual ease?

Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. The Concepts of Space, Thunder, and Fire were all the same in that they were divided into multiple levels. Until now, Lin Ming had only encountered a single level, and that was to distort and shrink space. His elusive and ghostly attacks and movements all depended on this. It was the first time that he had seen Old Man Good Fortune's method of utilizing the Concept of Space. Without a doubt, Old Man Good Fortune's actions today had opened up a great mystical door for Lin Ming.

With his first attack unsuccessful, Situ Haotian was still calm without the least bit of panic. Everything had gone as he had expected. "Heaven's Divide. Senior Good Fortune's technique is truly good. Since this first move failed, then here is the second!"

As Situ Haotian spoke to here he suddenly emitted a loud shout. His voice didn't even seem as if it could be that of a human. In that instant, a savage dragon seemed to awaken within his body. His joints began to emit popping sounds and his muscles rose, bulging out in all directions. His body began to grow, and in just several breaths of time he actually grew a whole 10 feet taller. His muscles had become as hard as rock. His face was ferocious and ravenous, and both his eyes were a bright blood red.

After transforming his body, Situ Haotian's aura had soared by several times, the power of his blood vitality billowing into the sky like a blazing blame. At this time, he was filled with insufferable arrogance, like a demon god that had arrived in the world, overlooking all of existence!

Even if Old Man Good Fortune was able to divide the void, Situ Haotian now had sufficient strength to break it!

As Lin Ming saw Situ Haotian morph his body, he was startled. Situ Haotian's body had actually become that of a Giant Demon. This was... just how had he done this? In that moment, he could clearly feel a rich and pure Giant Demon bloodline from within Situ Haotian. This bloodline was exactly the same as the Giant Demon blood essence that Lin Ming had seen when he opened the Cosmic Melting Furnace!

The Cosmic Melting Furnace had contained two masses of Giant Demon blood essence. The first mass had been absorbed by the Magic Cube and the second mass was given to Demonshine.

"Demonshine, what's going on here? Could Situ Haotian come from the Giant Demon race's bloodline?"

Lin Ming asked with a true essence sound transmission. Ever since Lin Ming had decided to attack Life Destruction, Demonshine had temporarily left Lin Ming's body. Whether it was crossing Life Destruction or his life or death struggle with Situ Yaoyue, Lin Ming had a chance of dying. Thus, Demonshine had chosen to leave Lin Ming's spiritual sea for the moment.

"He doesn't. It's just that this Situ Haotian must have obtained some Ancient Giant Demon blood essence from somewhere and then transplanted it into his body, thus he gained the ability to transform his body. This sort of bloodline is far inferior to your own Ancient Phoenix bloodline."

The Ancient Giant Demons that once existed on the Holy Demon Continent were different from the currently existing Giant Demons. Those Ancient Giant Demons had a bloodline that contained a powerful strength. Of course, this couldn't even be compared to the bloodline of a God Beast like a True Phoenix or True Dragon.

However, what Situ Haotian used was the blood essence of the Ancient Giant Demons and what Lin Ming had was only the most ordinary blood of the Ancient Phoenix, and the quantity was far less too. Thus, the disparity in their bloodlines wasn't too great at this moment.

As Lin Ming was engaged in these thoughts, he suddenly heard a martial artist near him cry out in alarm. "A divine body! Battle Demon Emperor Body, that is also another kind of divine body!"

"The Asura Divine Emperor has a Battle Demon Emperor Body? I've never even heard of that before!"

"When the Asura Divine Emperor was born, he didn't have a divine body. He only relied on his own extraordinary talent to reach where he is today. It's likely he obtained this current divine body from some lucky chance somewhere.

"In just a single day I've seen two divine bodies as well as the Extreme Violet Dantian. This has really been an eye-opener!"

As these people were all crying out in acclaim, Lin Ming was dumbfounded; he simply didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. So this was what they thought the so-called divine body was. It appeared that everyone who possessed a physique different from that of the average man and was able to display a stronger combat strength was referred to as having a divine body.

Chapter 867 – The Miracle of Time Laws

Chapter 867 – The Miracle of Time Laws

…

…

…

“So that’s what it is, the Ancient Giant Demon bloodline. It seems that Divine Emperor Haotian has obtained many lucky chances from the Giant Demon dimensional realm…” Old Man Good Fortune didn’t mind. The Asura Divine Kingdom had a dimensional realm on their borders that had many secrets of the Ancient Giant Demon race sealed within. It wasn’t surprising for him to have obtained some lucky chances.

“Senior does not need to worry about this Emperor’s lucky chances. Instead, think about how you’ll block this Emperor’s second attack!” Situ Haotian shouted out. His voice carried with it a metal energy, making it seem as if his words were ringing out from a great bell, sonorous and deafening.

After completing his transformation, Situ Haotian had full confidence in himself!

Old Man Good Fortune faintly smiled, “It looks like old me really has to work today. Really, for the young to continue being so stubborn isn’t always good…”

As Old Man Good Fortune spoke, he slowly stood up from his green ox without the slightest hint of dismay.

All of the surrounding martial artists suddenly felt something wrong. “Huh? Did Old Man Good Fortune’s voice change?”

“Yes… it’s changed. He doesn’t sound as old as he did before.”

As everyone was confused, a completely unexpected and bewildering scene occurred. As Old man Good Fortune stepped down from his green ox, his body suddenly began to grow. His back was no longer bent and his white hair turned to black, dangling over his shoulders like a waterfall of ink. His body had turned into that of a 20-30 year old youth. His once muddy eyes became clear, and his eyebrows straightened, pointing up and slanting towards his temples.

In just a few breaths of time, Old Man Good Fortune had transformed from an old man at the end of his life into a handsome youth with jade-like features. His long blue clothes still loosely draped over him as before, but the peach walking stick was no longer in his hands. Rather, that peach walking stick had transformed into a sword. This sword was four feet long and shone like burnished silver. The sword hilt was made of jade and the blade was carved with faint patterns.

This was a true Saint artifact!

No one saw when Old Man Good Fortune had drawn this sword. It was as if he had never been carrying a peach walking stick, but had always been carrying this silver sword instead!

This sudden change left everyone utterly shocked!

After crossing Life Destruction, a martial artist’s body would be reborn. The only way they could restore their youthful appearance was if they displayed a supernatural power that defied the will of the heavens. But, this young appearance would only be a façade. Their lifespan would not change and their fires of life would continue to weaken with time.

Rather, maintaining a youthful appearance would cause a martial artist’s cultivation to lessen. The price simply wasn’t worth the benefits. Thus, unless it was a woman who valued their beauty and only cared about their looks, a general martial artist simply wouldn’t waste their efforts on such things.

And now, Old Man Good Fortune had suddenly restored his youth in the middle of battle. And this was not an illusion. This was because everyone present could clearly feel his vibrant fires of life burning like the fires of heaven, vast and limitless.

“This… how is this possible!?” Situ Haotian’s complexion completely changed. He had just finished his body transformation and he had believed with his swollen pride and arrogance that no one could defeat him. However, as he felt Old Man Good Fortune’s suddenly vibrant fires of life, all of his momentum instantly vanished!

The disparity was just too great!

Old Man Good Fortune faintly smiled and said in a soft voice, “In the presence of Laws, there is nothing that is impossible, unless your wish is to violate the Laws themselves. And… reversing time is only a single aspect of the Time Laws; it isn’t considered too advanced. The reason that I am able to live for so long is also because of my understanding of the Laws of Time. Although this isn’t the orthodox way of going about things, being able to linger on with my last breath for another 4000-5000 years isn’t a problem at all.”

“4000-5000 years!?”

Old Man Good Fortune’s words nearly caused Situ Haotian to vomit blood. Situ Haotian didn’t know if he could still live for another 4000-5000 years. He could only laugh at himself for thinking that his fires of life were more potent than those of Old Man Good Fortune and that he could suppress him. Now it seemed that his remaining lifespan wasn’t even as long as Old Man Good Fortune’s!

Moreover, Old Man Good Fortune’s choice of words caused Situ Haotian to wish he could slam his face into his halberd.

‘It isn’t considered too advanced’ and ‘linger on with my last breath’…

A power of Laws that he had never heard of before, the ability to reverse time and restore his combat strength to its peak, this technique that defied the heavens was actually considered not too advanced to Old Man Good Fortune!

Just what kind of abnormal monster was Old Man Good Fortune? And this freak was still able to live on for another 4000-5000 years…?

Then what could Situ Haotian be considered? A clown? Was he worse than a pig or dog?

All of Old Man Good Fortune's words fell into the ears of the martial artists present, leaving all of them floored, their minds fiercely shocked.

The Laws of Time were actually so heaven-defying!

Since ancient times, in the domain of Laws, it was said that Space was the king and Time was the emperor. Although these were clearly biased, this was enough to explain just how terrifying the might of these two types of Concepts and Laws were.

But because these two different Concepts were mysterious and elusive, there were far too few people capable of comprehending these kinds of Laws. And even if they did, they would only have a brief superficial knowledge of it. It would be extremely difficult for them to ever improve.

Especially the Laws of Time that were even more mysterious than the Laws of Space. Since ancient times, there had been very, very few inheritances that had ever been left behind. No one imagined that under Old Man Good Fortune's control, the Laws of Time were actually able to display such a dreadful power.

"It's a miracle…" Lin Ming muttered to himself. The Laws of Time had the supernatural and unstoppable ability to decay all of existence. This was the so-called entropy that the Concepts of the five main elements were unable to achieve. Because a martial artist defied the heavens, their lifespan was almost decided by their cultivation. Although there were some heavenly materials that were able to extend a martial artist's lifespan, that was only unearthing their undeveloped life potential – it was by no means a way to extend their life that defied the heavens.

The only method of truly extending one's life was to go against the will of the heavens and walk further down the road of martial arts. But now, it seemed that the Laws of Time could achieve a similar effect to a certain extent!

'Such matters would likely arouse the jealousy of many Divine Sea masters. But what a pity. If they aren't talented in this aspect then it doesn't matter how jealous they become!'

As Lin Ming was thinking this, in the skies, Old Man Good Fortune had already raised his silver sword high in the air. Situ Haotian's expression was grim and solemn. Facing Old Man Good Fortune in his peak state, he felt an incomparably terrifying pressure. This opponent of his might even surpass the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor!

"A sword. Let's see whether or not you can resist it." Old Man Good Fortune gently said, as if this were the trial of a god.

When he finished speaking, he slashed down with that silver sword in his hands.

Ca!

With a light sound, space collapsed as if it were as fragile as ice.

A silver sword energy cut out, appearing in the shape of a perfect crescent moon.

No… this was not just mere sword energy. This was a substantialized space fragment!

Old Man Good Fortune had used space itself as his weapon. By pouring his unrivalled supernatural power into this attack, it had become an earth-shaking strike!

Situ Haotian's pupils shrank and he recklessly poured of all of his energy into his halberd without reservation. The one he faced was someone close to being the highest under the heavens, or even an existence equal to the highest under the heavens!

If he could not resist this attack then he would die right here!

"Ho!"

Situ Haotian shouted out loud. A massive Giant Demon phantom hundreds of feet high appeared behind him. This phantom wielded a divine halberd, and together with Situ Haotian, both of them cut downwards.

Bang!

In that moment, the world seemed to lose all color. A terrifying corona of energy swallowed up all the stars in the sky, making it seem as if everyone were in a completely different land.

Situ Haotian’s halberd was struck from his hand. All the meridians of his two arms tore apart and he vomited a great mouthful of blood as he was sent flying back. His body shot backwards like a falling meteor before he crashed into a mountain peak.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Giant shelves of rock fell down, causing great clouds of dust and smoke to fill the skies. In that collision, half of that massive mountain had directly collapsed.

As everyone looked at that half gone mountain, all of them were speechless with shock. If just Situ Haotian crashing into that mountain peak had caused such a result, then just how terrifying had the true collision of energy been?

Chapter 868 – Unapproachable

Chapter 868 – Unapproachable

…

…

…

Everyone thought that because Old Man Good Fortune was reaching the end of his life, if he truly fought with Divine Emperor Haotian then it was unknown just who would emerge victorious. None of them imagined that Old Man Good Fortune would send Divine Emperor Haotian hurtling backwards with just a single strike. They were simply on completely different levels.

"How could this be…?" On a spirit boat, Shang Yuetian was speechless for a long time. It was within his expectations that Situ Haotian would have obtained the Ancient Giant Blood bloodline and grown sharply stronger. As a noble Divine Kingdom Emperor, his strength was surely ranked in the top five of the Sky Spill Continent, so there must be some cards he managed to keep hidden up until now. But that Situ Haotian actually didn't even have the strength to resist Old Man Good Fortune's attack!

'Could the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor and the Sublime Smelting Imperial Grand Uncle have this strength? Is this the strength of a powerhouse close to being the highest under the heavens?'

All of the martial artists present couldn't help but think this. It was said that thousands of years ago, Old Man Good Fortune had once fought the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor and forced him into a draw. Although this was only a rumor, smoke always meant there was fire. There had to be some kernel of truth to it. To everyone, this meant that Old Man Good Fortune and the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor stood on equal ground.

Now that thousands of years had passed, Old Man Good Fortune should have become weaker than the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor. After all, he was much older than him to begin with. But, how could this be the result?

“Maybe… Old Man Good Fortune had a breakthrough in these last few thousands of years! If the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor and Sublime Smelting Imperial Grand Uncle haven’t grown in strength, then they might not be Old Man Good Fortune’s match anymore…” Shang Yuetian quietly mumbled.

This was an explanation anyone would find hard to accept. According to all common sense, the easiest time for a martial artist to grow was when they were young. This was the time that their fires of life were at their most exuberant. The longer the lifespan that a martial artist had, the more time they would stay in their youthful phase. For instance, a Life Destruction martial artist would still be considered young before they reached 100 years of age, so if they didn’t break through to the Divine Sea by the time they reached that age point then they could only count on external help and lucky chances.

Once a martial artist reached maturity, their cultivation would only grow at a snail’s pace. But, this was also the time that a martial artist’s combat strength was at its peak. For instance, Situ Haotian’s current combat strength had reached the highest point in his life, it was just that it was extremely difficult for him to increase his cultivation. Otherwise, if he were able to take another step forwards then he would become a character on the same rank as the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor.

After that would be old age. This was a period where their combat strength and cultivation would almost never increase. An old Divine Sea Supreme Elder would at most be able to make some minor breakthroughs in the aspects of will and soul. But as for everything else, they would begin to decline over the years.

So how could Old Man Good Fortune have made such progress?

“He must have some secret on his body!” While Shang Yuetian believed that the Laws of Time were able to extend a martial artist’s life, he didn’t believe it was as exaggerated as 4000-5000 years!

What he found even more unbelievable was that the Time Laws were able to temporarily reverse a martial artist’s age for long enough that they could make another breakthrough.

Thus, this left only two possibilities.

The first was that Old Man Good Fortune had come across some massive lucky chance that he couldn’t imagine.

And the second was that Old Man Good Fortune had surpassed the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor from the start, but he had been hiding his strength until now.

The chances of the second possibility being true weren’t too great. Although Old Man Good Fortune had lived hidden from the world these past few thousands of years, in the past he too had been a glorious character of the continent. There was just no reason for him to have hidden such strength until now.

The first possibility was much more likely. Where could Old Man Good Fortune have found such a lucky chance? Was it the Sea of Miracles?

As Shang Yuetian thought of this, his heart stirred. Just how would it be if he himself were able to obtain such a lucky chance?

Bang!

The distant great mountain exploded and Situ Haotian rushed out from the collapsing chaos of stone. Although he had been struck backwards and was left extremely embarrassed and flustered, he hadn’t suffered too much damage. His bloodstained arms were rapidly regenerating, leaving nothing behind but some light scars now. This was the most powerful characteristic of the Giant Demon bloodline – recovery ability.

According to legends, the Ancient Giant Demons had an immortal body, able to regrow their limbs at will. In terms of recovery ability, the Giant Demon bloodline exceeded the Gate of Healing. However, regenerating wounds required a massive amount of true essence, thus, the Giant Demon bloodline was far, far inferior to the Gate of Healing in terms of endurance.

As Situ Haotian looked at Old Man Good Fortune, his face was filled with fear and dismay.

Although he still had a third, stronger move, he knew it was impossible for him to match that strike from Old Man Good Fortune just now.

Perhaps Old Man Good Fortune might be worse than Emperor Shakya of the past, but in this era there was no one who could rival him. Even the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor and the Sublime Smelting Imperial Grand Uncle were most likely not his match.

Just where had this old geezer come across his lucky chance?

He did not believe that Old Man Good Fortune was able to make another breakthrough while temporarily reversing his age. Moreover, the Time Laws he had displayed far surpassed the understanding of the Sky Spill Continent. No matter how talented Old Man Good Fortune was in the Laws of Time and Space, it was impossible for him to reach this point with no previous inheritance!

Situ Haotian glared at Old Man Good Fortune for a long period of time and then bit out two words.

“I concede!”

“Yaoyue will stay in the Forsaken God Clan for three years, and everything that I owe Lin Lanjian will be delivered here within the month. Of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and the Demon God Heartguard Mirror, Lin Lanjian can choose either one he likes!”

Situ Haotian looked to Lin Ming. At this point, his body still resembled that of a Giant Demon. Just a glance was enough to cause one’s mind shake with fear.

“What do you want!?!?”

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then said without hesitation, “The Great Desolate Blood Halberd!”

The Demon God Heartguard Mirror was undoubtedly a tempting option, but Lin Ming always believed that the best defense was a good offense. The nameless long spear in his hands was only a standard issue spear from Timeworn Phoenix City. Although it was extremely durable, the power was a bit lacking.

If he had the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, then even though he might not use the ‘Great Desolate Halberd Art’, but with his one million jins of strength, his true essence, as well as his silver battle spirit all being poured into that halberd, then one could imagine the terrifying might if he smashed it down at someone!

With the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, Lin Ming’s comprehensive combat strength would rise yet again. As for the Demon God Heartguard Mirror, even if his defensive power rose again, he would still die if he was bumped by a Divine Sea powerhouse, much less be able to contend with them.

“Good! Then I hope you aren’t cursed to death!” Situ Haotian coldly snorted, his heart twitching all the while. Within the entire Asura Divine Kingdom, that was the only true Saint artifact. The remaining two were only quasi-Saint artifacts.

As for relying on the curse of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd to kill Lin Ming, Situ Haotian didn’t have much hope for that to happen. Lin Ming’s life was extremely tenacious. His destiny had been repeatedly accumulated from defeating similar top talents of his era as well as passing through numerous life or death situations. It would be extremely difficult to shatter his destiny.

In the future, Lin Ming was likely to become a character that surpassed even the Demon Emperor. Wanting to rely on the curse of the Demon Emperor’s war halberd to kill him was useless.

Om –

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd issued a long keening sound as it shot out from the chaos and flew into Lin Ming's hand. For a brief moment, Lin Ming felt as if he were holding up an entire mountain range and his feet sank into the ground. If he didn't use the power of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates then he actually wouldn't be able to lift it!

'This is at least 700,000-800,000 jins heavy. A martial artist normally has to use a tremendous amount of true essence to galvanize its movement. It won't be easy for me to move it with just my physical strength.'

Lin Ming had to use his flying ability to stop himself from sinking into the ground. Then, he grasped the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and flew into the air. This was truly a weapon worthy of being called the world's most ominous halberd.

"I thank Senior for this great graciousness!"

Lin Ming cupped a fist across his chest as he bowed towards Old Man Good Fortune and carved this favor in his mind.

Old Man Good Fortune faintly smiled. At some unknown time he had already restored his looks to his original elderly appearance. Although he appeared wise and extraordinary, there was actually a faint flavor of someone that had reached the end of his life.

But now, no one thought that. The events that occurred just now were simply too shocking.

"Little Friend Lin Lanjian does not need to be so polite. Old me will stay in this dimensional realm for several more days. We'll have to speak more in detail."

Speak more in detail?

Upon hearing this, all of the present martial artists were stunned. Just what did Old Man Good Fortune plan on discussing with Lin Ming?

“Senior Good Fortune, do you really plan on accepting him as a disciple?”

Fairy Snow Gale asked with a true essence sound transmission. Old Man Good Fortune had no enmity or grudge with the Asura Divine Kingdom and there simply wasn’t any reason for him to aim at Situ Haotian. Yet he had shown his hand to defeat Situ Haotian in order to help Lin Ming. If this were to win over Lin Ming, there simply wasn’t a need for that because Old Man Good Fortune had always freely roamed the world like a wild crane and didn’t belong to any influence. His strength had most likely surpassed the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor’s, so there was simply no need for him to do so.

Then for him to do this, the only possibility was that his heart had been moved to accept a disciple!

“Haha, Little Snow, I already said that old me cannot teach Little Friend Lin Lanjian anything. As for accepting him as a disciple, I might not be able to afford that.”

This was already the second time that Old Man Good Fortune had said something similar. He wasn’t being humble, but really did think he couldn’t teach Lin Ming much.

“Then why would you do all this today…” Fairy Snow Gale couldn’t help but ask.

“Haha…” Old Man Good Fortune smiled but didn’t respond. He obviously didn’t wish to say much more. Fairy Snow Gale could only suppress the burning questions that lingered in her mind.

The martial artists of the Asura Divine Kingdom left, leaving behind only Situ Yaoyue. They would soon send over a Divine Sea powerhouse to protect her. Situ Haotian didn’t dare to leave behind Situ Yaoxi – who knew just what sort of catastrophe she would stir up.

But the other heroes of the Sky Spill Continent’s central region didn’t leave. Instead, they remained within the dimensional realm even as it seemed that more and more people were gathering.

This was because of… Lin Ming.

The present Lin Ming could be called unapproachable, commanding utter respect!

After defeating Situ Yaoyue, Lin Ming had overcome his greatest crisis. His future was now bright and glorious.

Even if it were hopeless to win over Lin Ming, everyone still wished to form some good relations with him.

For a time, Lin Ming's residence was bustling. All the influences came to greet him and Lin Ming accepted all without rejection. There were even many great influences, for instance the Sublime Melting Divine Kingdom's Shang Family and the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's White Clan.

There were even many Divine Sea powerhouses like Shang Yuetian and Fairy Snow Gale who personally made a visit. Lin Ming greeted all of them with Shibai.

When these major influences visited, they also brought along many meeting gifts for Lin Ming. Most of these gifts were heavenly materials and rare pills. Added together it was at least three or four million spirit essence stones. Just Yang Yun himself gifted Lin Ming 800,000 spirit essence stones. In addition to the two God Transforming Pills from before, that was a gift of over one million spirit essence stones.

"Yang Yun…" Lin Ming looked at the many treasures in front of him and thought for a moment. Yang Yun favored him by a ridiculous amount, but Lin Ming always felt that it wasn't as simple as forming good relations with him. Did Yang Yun think he would join the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom?

Chapter 869 – The New Destiny Decree

Chapter 869 – The New Destiny Decree

…

…

…

News of Lin Ming's victory over Situ Yaoyue spread over the central region like a blazing whirlwind. A peak first stage Life Destruction youth had defeated a seventh stage Life Destruction master with an Extreme Violet Dantian. This news was certainly shocking enough to be described as explosive.

No one had thought that Lin Ming would have been able to survive this ordeal, nor did they think that the Asura Divine Kingdom would be so thoroughly defeated by Lin Ming.

Anyone could see just how bright Lin Ming's future was. It was possible he would rule the world for 10,000 years.

Three days later, a new version of the Destiny Decree was released.

After opening it, the first name on the first page was written down with flourishing letters of red ink.

Lin Lanjian!

Lin Ming had already been listed three times with the red ink that indicated he was the man of the hour. From over rank 200 of the Destiny Decree to leaping into first place, this sort of progress left chills crawling up everyone's spines!

And on the back of that sheet, Lin Ming's evaluation was written down in black.

‘The number one rarest talent that the Sky Spill Continent has witnessed in 100,000 years. His talent far surpasses that of the Demon Emperor and Eightfall Thunder Emperor, and it even faintly rises past that of Emperor Shakya. With his first stage Life Destruction cultivation, he became the highest master below the Divine Sea.’

The new Destiny Decree also reached Lin Ming’s hands. “Destiny Grasp has judged my talent as surpassing the Demon Emperor, Eightfall Thunder Emperor, and Emperor Shakya. From the wording, it seems that Emperor Shakya was a monstrous talent that exceeded the first two. Even Destiny Grasp used ‘faintly rises past’ as a prelude…”

”Emperor Shakya was only at the seventh stage of Life Destruction. With that seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation, he fused together seven different martial intents and broke through the void of martial arts. His talent actually surpasses that of the Eightfall Thunder Emperor. I wonder just what it would be like to fuse martial intents together?” Lin Ming was looking forward to the Prime Emperor Force Field more and more. Only by fusing the Prime Emperor Force Field, Asura Force Field, and Death God Force Field together would he be able to form the complete Heavenly Demon martial intent!

The complete Heavenly Demon martial intent was able to directly kill and suppress the Divine Sea!

“Unfortunately I am not strong enough yet, and going to the Holy Demon Continent isn’t too good. I have a blood feud with the Steppes Master. If I enter the Road of Emperor, that will definitely draw his attention.”

After the new Destiny Decree reached the dimensional realm, it was immediately known. Lin Ming began to receive more and more invitations to banquets all over. But, regardless of which banquet Lin Ming attended, the masked old man would follow behind him like a shadow to ensure his safety.

At the current banquet, those present were Prince level figures or Holy Land descendants. The worst of them were sons and potential successors of Divine Kingdom High Princes.

Every junior had to have a Divine Sea powerhouse backing them, otherwise they simply didn't have the qualifications to attend such a banquet.

"Brother Lin, congratulations on becoming the top master within Life Destruction. To become the greatest within Life Destruction at only the first stage, you will surely be the highest under the heavens after reaching the Divine Sea!"

"Haha, Brother White underestimates Brother Lin too much. I believe that Brother Lin won't even need to reach the Divine Sea before having strength nearing that of the highest under the heavens!"

At this banquet, Lin Ming was undoubtedly the main character and all the Divine Kingdom Princes had become his supporting cast. This wasn't too strange. With a Divine Emperor being able to live for several thousand years, there were just far too many Princes. Perhaps their fathers didn't even know how many children they had.

"Brother Lin, you have worked so hard to deceive me, hmm!" A white-clothed youth said as he lifted a glass of wine, his true essence sound transmission filled with a wry tone. This youth was Li Yifeng. When Lin Ming was crossing Life Destruction, his wood spirit jade mask had been crushed apart in the explosions of energy, and that was when Li Yifeng had seen Lin Ming's appearance. At that time, he had been left staring dumbfounded, and the young maid at his side also had a mouth open wide enough to fit an egg. Although they knew that Lin Ming was extraordinarily talented, they never imagined that his talent would reach such a degree.

Afterwards, Lin Ming had gone directly into closed door seclusion and Li Yifeng didn't have a chance to see Lin Ming again. It was only at today's banquet that he had the chance to see Lin Ming.

"Brother Li, about my identity, please keep it a secret." Lin Ming was clear that he couldn't hide the truth from Li Yifeng. Even if his appearance hadn't been seen, he only needed to combine his moves with his weapon in order to make an approximation.

When Lin Ming became enemies with the Asura Divine Kingdom, he had Demonshine control the Giant Leviathan and send his family and friends into the deep sea. Even so, he still wasn't completely relieved.

"Of course! I won't even say half a word." Li Yifeng struck his chest in promise. He had no reason to betray Lin Ming anyway; there was just no benefit to doing something so dishonorable.

"I… I also won't say anything." As Li Yifeng's young maid faced Lin Ming, she began to stumble over her words. It was obvious that she was feeling extremely nervous at this time. There was no longer even a hint of the arrogant and haughty attitude she used to have. The reason she had been so rampant before was that she looked down on everywhere that was outside of the central region and her background was also quite illustrious. In the future she would be Li Yifeng's concubine so her vision was naturally high. But facing someone like Lin Ming, who would become the future highest under the heavens, there was simply no comparison at all.

"Thank you." Lin Ming faintly smiled, not too worried. The South Sea was vast and endless; it would be extremely difficult for the Asura Divine Kingdom find his family. And even if they did, they wouldn't necessarily do anything irrational. After all, those that walked down the road of martial arts were doomed to be lonely – they had much fainter concepts of family. As for women and lovers, that was an even fainter concept. The Asura Divine Kingdom would never think that they could force Lin Ming to kill himself after capturing Mu Qianyu.

"Little Brother Lin, Old Man Good Fortune is about to leave the dimensional realm. He would like to see you before that." Shibai said.

"Oh? Okay."

Towards Old Man Good Fortune, who had strength beyond imagination, Lin Ming had some suspicious. Of course, even if the entire world knew what secret he had with him, it wouldn't matter to him at all.

“Little Friend Lin Lanjian, it’s good to see you again.” Old Man Good Fortune had been staying at the Forsaken God Clan as an honored guest. He was still wearing blue clothes, with an appearance that seemed extraordinary and wizened.

“Senior Good Fortune, this junior will forever remember your graciousness. Please accept this junior’s bow.” Just as Lin Ming was about to bow, he was stopped by Old Man Good Fortune.

“Haha, old me might not be able to afford Little Friend Lin’s gift. I’m just far too old for this.”

Old Man Good Fortune was extremely humble, to the point that even Lin Ming couldn’t stand it. With his original status and seniority, accepting a bow from a junior was natural.

“Little Friend Lin, I know that you have some interest in the Laws of Space and Time. I have several jade slips here, you may borrow them to have a look and return them to me sometime in the future.”

Old Man Good Fortune’s words were very casually spoken, but Lin Ming was sent into a daze. The value of this type of inheritance that was basically extinct on the Sky Spill Continent could be imagined, and Old Man Good Fortune was directly lending them to him?

It had to be known that a normal martial artist or family clan was extremely careful of their inheritances, for fear that others would study them and surpass them. Old Man Good Fortune didn’t even have a master and disciple relationship with Lin Ming; they weren’t even friends. There was just no reason for him to lend Lin Ming such incomparably precious Space-Time Laws jade slips.

Old Man Good Fortune didn’t further explain. He waved his sleeves and six jade slips flew into Lin Ming’s hands. “Little Friend Lin, in truth, the Laws of Time aren’t as heaven-defying as you might imagine. They can indeed extend your life a little and have me linger on a bit longer, but the truth was that I used a different method to live longer…”

“Mm?” Old Man Good Fortune’s contradictory words left Lin Ming puzzled.

Old man Good Fortune smiled, “Old me can change the speed at which time flows. For instance, when I enter into seclusion I can slow down time to one-tenth of its normal rate, so that one year of closing up is equal to 10 years outside. If I close up for a few dozen years, then several hundred years would have passed in the world. Thus, while the world believes I am 8000 years old, that is in fact false. As for my weak fires of life, that is an illusion made by an arcane technique. The purpose of that is to prolong my life…”

Old Man Good Fortune laughed at himself as he spoke to here, “To live to such an age, I still cannot look past old age and death! There are still far too many secrets on the road of martial arts. What I have explored and will explore is only the tip of the tiniest iceberg. When I die, I will inevitably be unwilling… so in order to live for longer, I have tried too many methods to extend my life. Even if I don’t count altering the flow of time, I have used far too many life extending techniques. Even so, I can only live to 10,000 years of age. In the Divine Sea realm, that is the lifespan of a top powerhouse.

As Old Man Good Fortune explained, Lin Ming suddenly became aware. To change the flow of time, that couldn’t be regarded as extending his life. He had the same lifespan he always had, it was just that he had pushed it back.

As for truly defying the will of the heavens, the only true means was to cultivate the martial path. All other methods were simply meandering roads that led to nowhere.

Life had always been reluctant to part with life. Whether it was intelligent creatures or non-intelligent life, this instinct was engraved into the very core of their beings. And for a martial artist, this was doubly so. They hadn’t even reached the end of their martial arts road, so how could they be willing to drop off halfway?

“Little Friend Lin, you have an excellent future and time ahead of you; it really arouses envy in others. Cherish it well. Life is short and no matter how beautiful the springtime of your youth is, white hair will await you in the end. If you waste your years then it will become far more difficult to advance when you reach old age!” Old man Good Fortune deeply sighed as he spoke here, shaking his head.

“Thank you for the guidance, Senior.” Lin Ming respectfully said.

“I am far from being able to guide you; you should also have understood these truths. It is just that you haven’t personally experienced them yet so your understanding towards them isn’t as profound. Well, little old me shall bid farewell first. We’ll meet again.”

Old Man Good Fortune floated away as he spoke. Lin Ming watched him vanish into the distance and deeply bowed in respect.

On the next day, invitations to banquets still reached Lin Ming. However, Lin Ming no longer participated. Although being friends with these influences had its advantages, when compared to absolute strength, they were merely worldly customs.

And the time was just right. On this day, the Asura Divine Kingdom’s payment for losing the life or death struggle arrived. When this was added to all the other gifts that Lin Ming had received, the total value was around 14 million spirit essence stones.

It had to be said that even a Prince like Li Yifeng only had a complete wealth of several tens of thousands of spirit essence stones. As for others like the sons of the High Princes, they wouldn’t even have 10,000 spirit essence stones.

When the Asura Divine Kingdom had put out a bounty reward of 300,000 spirit essence stones for Lin Ming that was already enough to tempt the heart of a Destiny Decree Master. Thus, the value of 14 million spirit essence stones could be imagined. This was an astronomical figure that not even an ordinary Holy Land would be able to suddenly afford.

Lin Ming was preparing to take all of this as his capital to open the fourth of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates – The Gate of Pain!

This was a very important gate in the first four of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. It was located in the fists and could greatly enhance a martial artist’s striking power and physical strength.

With the increased power from the Gate of Pain, Lin Ming estimated that his strength would rise to one million and several hundred thousand jin of strength. It might even near two million jins! At that time, if he wielded the Great Desolate Blood Halberd with such strength, then he would be able to display its true might!

Lin Ming decided on his plan and executed it. That night, he went to the seclusion chamber of the Forsaken God Clan. There, underneath the protection of multiple array formations, he released the Cosmic Melting Furnace. All of the heavenly treasures and massive amounts of wood spirit jade gathered up into great piles in the chamber. They shined with a glorious light, their brilliance piercing into the skies!

Success or failure would all be decided in one attempt!

Chapter 870 – Myriad Spirit Pill

Chapter 870 – Myriad Spirit Pill

…

…

…

Several months had passed since Lin Ming and Situ Yaoyue's cataclysmic battle. Duanmu Qun left his sound transmission mark at the Forsaken God Clan and left. As for Yang Yun, Li Yifeng, the Holy Land Holy Sons, Princes, High Successors, and other such characters, all of them had left one after the other.

However, Lin Ming's momentum was simply too great. When one great influence left, a smaller one would come again. Even though Lin Ming had already declined to receive visitors for a long time, there were still many representatives of smaller influences entering and leaving the dimensional realm. It didn't matter that they couldn't see Lin Ming; they never had this hope to begin with. It was enough for them to see someone from the Forsaken God Clan.

In any case, they did not need to personally hand over gifts to Lin Ming. They only needed to pass them through the Forsaken God Clan. According to the customs of the Sky Spill Continent, all gifts would be recorded in the register. While no one expected to form good relations with Lin Ming like this, they only wanted to express their friendly attitude.

After several months, although the gifts received from those small influences were rather small individually, there were just far too many. With every small influence sending 8000-10,000 spirit essence stones, several hundred of these gifts added up to two or three million spirit essence stones. Shibai sold or exchanged all of these gifts for more heavenly materials. Then, this formed a massive amount of medicinal herbs for Lin Ming.

As Shibai thought that the total value of all these materials was 16-17 million spirit essence stones, he was left speechless. Just what kind of physique did Lin Ming have? He was simply the same as a bottomless pit. With so many resources, it was enough to raise a martial artist all the way to the Divine Sea realm. Of course, this was all provided that they had sufficient talent.

Even so, all this was just for Lin Ming to attack the second stage of Life Destruction?

Shibai didn't know that Lin Ming was opening the Gate of Pain; he only thought he was trying to cross another stage of Life Destruction. In his opinion, since Lin Ming had consumed resources to break through into the first stage of Life Destruction, he would have to consume an equal or greater amount of resources for future breakthroughs.

In the seclusion chamber, the Cosmic Melting Furnace was spinning around with the Burning Star Flame raging around it. Lin Ming casually threw a medicinal herb into it. A brief moment later, this herb was melted by the fires into a viridian bubble that was wrapped by true essence and slowly flew out.

With a pinch of his hand, a streak of red fire shot out and the green liquid evaporated, leaving behind a faint wisp of plant essence that had been refined by Lin Ming.

Success. This was the 920th ingredient.

Lin Ming let out a light sigh, not bothering to wipe the sweat off of his forehead. He used a million year wood spirit jade bottle to slowly store away this essence energy.

He was currently concocting a special medicine named the Myriad Spirit Pill. One had to withdraw the plant essence from thousands of medicinal herbs, fuse them together and then refine it multiple times, finally producing a Myriad Spirit Pill!

A normal alchemist would never choose to create such a pill. This was because the refining process was extremely tedious and cumbersome, and the consumption of soul force was also immense! Not just that, but it required a massive amount of wood spirit jade. Wood spirit jade was no less valuable than spiritual plants. Thus, there was simply too much unnecessary cost and waste involved in refining a Myriad Spirit Pill.

However, Lin Ming's current situation was special. With such a massive pile of medicine herbs in front of him, this was the best time for him to refine the Myriad Spirit Pill. As for the massive amount of wood spirit jade required, he simply didn't need to worry about that. The various influences had sent him so much wood spirit jade that it had piled into a little hill, and there were even more treasures that were carved from wood spirit jade.

Ho – -!

Another medicinal herb was melted by Lin Ming into a green bubble. This green bubble was carefully zapped by a lick of fire before turning into a wisp of plant essence.

This process required a great deal of care and concentration. The slightest fluctuation of soul force could cause the medicinal herb to be scorched into ash.

There was already a great deal of herb ash at Lin Ming's feet. These were from the medicinal herbs he had used to practice. Even a top alchemist master could easily make a mistake; alchemy had a very high demand on one's soul force.

Lin Ming's alchemy technique certainly couldn't be considered at the top; there just hadn't been enough time since he had begun learning alchemy. But, Lin Ming had inherited the memories of that Divine Realm alchemist, including all of his attainments and experiences. All of these were things that could not be taught. After Lin Ming had inherited these memories, he was able to integrate them within himself, making his progress in alchemy surpassingly quick.

And the most important factor was that Lin Ming's understandings into the Concepts and Laws of Fire were top notch, as was his control of the power of fire. With the Burning Star Flame at his command, he could twist the flame into whatever shape he wanted, or even divide it several times. This was something that a normal alchemist would find impossible difficult to do.

"The next one!"

With the support from the Gate of Healing, Lin Ming's ability to sustain his true essence was freakishly abnormal. After such a long time of expending true essence, he still didn't show any signs of running out of true essence. Instead, it was his soul force that began to lag behind.

The Gate of Healing could only restore physical strength and true essence, also increasing the rate at which someone recovered. But as for the consumption of soul force, it simply couldn't do anything at all.

Chi!

A medicinal herb worth several thousand spirit essence stones turned to ash in Lin Ming's palm.

"My soul force has reached its limit; it will be hard to continue." Lin Ming did not stop because of this failure. He continued to refine for some time, but eventually the success rate became far too low. Then, Lin Ming finally stopped refining the medicinal herbs. He stoppered the wood spirit jade bottle and temporarily ended his creation of the Myriad Spirit Pill, instead taking out the lowest level medicinal herbs from his spatial ring and starting to practice with them.

In a situation where he had seriously overdrawn his soul force, Lin Ming nearly failed every time he tried to refine a pill. Piles of ashes grew on the ground. Lin Ming felt a splitting headache and then his vision suddenly went dark as he slumped to the ground, unconscious.

Alchemy was a very good tempering technique for one's mental strength and soul force. Every time one overdrew their divine soul, after recovering, their divine soul would be more formidable than before. This was the reason that most martial artists chose to learn a secondary skill as an occupation.

As Lin Ming was sleeping, although he was unconscious, the 'Overbearing Soul Tactic' was still running of its own accord, subtly revitalizing Lin Ming's soul.

He quickly entered into a deep sleep and rested like this for several days.

After an unknown period of time, Lin Ming awoke from his slumber, feeling spirited and well rested. His mindset was extremely clear and energetic. He took out the wood spirit jade bottle without pause and began to refine medicinal herbs again. After he exhausted his soul force, he fell asleep once again.

This process continued again and again. Like this, over half a year passed.

Jin after jin of superior wood spirit jade had its essence refined out and then combined with the plant essence of the 1000-2000 medicinal herbs, fusing together as one before being placed in the wood spirit jade bottle. At this time, the Myriad Spirit Pill was 80% complete.

Lin Ming's soul force had also made considerable progress in this past half year. At the start he was only able to perform alchemy for three days before sleeping, but now he was able to last for five days. After crossing Life Destruction, the potential of his soul had been completely dug out and exposed, and it was only continuing to increase.

Although soul force could not directly influence a martial artist's strength, it was actually one of the main limiting factors of what realm a martial artist would reach. If one didn't have a powerful soul force then they wouldn't be able to control too much true essence. If a Revolving Core powerhouse's soul force was combined with the body of a Divine Sea master, their body would probably burst apart in an uncontrollable explosion of energy.

During this process of using up massive amounts of true essence while continuously restoring it, Lin Ming was rapidly approaching the second stage of Life Destruction. This was also reasonable. Lin Ming's foundation was just far too stable, making it so that he reached the peak first stage Life Destruction as soon as he made his breakthrough. At that time, he had only been a step away from the second stage of Life Destruction.

Crossing from the first to the second stage of Life Destruction was much easier than opening the Gate of Pain. This was because where he had once been limited to disintegrating his body through exploding his dantian, Lin Ming could now store energy throughout his body, detonating it everywhere in order to destroy himself. It would not be as difficult as breaking into the first stage of Life Destruction, thus Lin Ming was not worried at all.

Several more months passed. Lin Ming had already closed up for an entire year!

The Forsaken God Clan had finally calmed down. As for Situ Yaoyue, per the original agreement she had been housed in the Realmheart Great Hall, unable to take even half a step out.

This appeared as if it were to prevent Situ Yaoyue from escaping. However, Situ Yaoyue was only a Life Destruction martial artist. There was simply nothing she could do against the layers upon layers of array formations that covered the Forsaken God Clan.

No, this was mainly to protect Situ Yaoyue. If she were to somehow die here within the Forsaken God Clan, then the consequences would be disastrous.

Although the Realmheart Great Hall was known as the cornerstone of this world that even the highest under the heavens couldn't break, the Asura Divine Kingdom still sent a Divine Sea powerhouse to constantly protect Situ Yaoyue.

Since this guardian had to stay in the same room as Situ Yaoyue and accompany her at all times, it was best for them to be a woman. Also, they had to be absolutely trustworthy, which meant that they would need to be a direct descendant of the Situ Family Clan. Beside the malicious and sinister Situ Yaoxi, who would likely get into all sorts of trouble at the Forsaken God Clan, the only other choice was Situ Haotian's younger cousin – Situ Qingzhao.

Situ Qingzhao was 2000 years old, only half the age of Situ Yaoxi. In addition, due to her nature of loving beauty, she had been willing to consume some of her cultivation to maintain her youthful appearance, thus she looked as if she were Situ Yaoyue's big sister.

"Yaoyue, you are being too harsh on yourself. If you continue to overdraw your energy you will damage your soul and possibly leave hidden wounds in your spiritual sea." Situ

Qingzhao couldn’t help but say as she watched her niece bitterly cultivate with dedication. It could even be called self-torture.

“Aunty Qingzhao, you don’t have to try persuading me. Even if there are some hidden wounds left over, I still have ways of eliminating them after I reach the Divine Sea. Lin Lanjian is the shame of my life and I must return this loss to him. He is indeed a peerless genius. Now that I was defeated by him, he has surpassed me and it is no longer possible for me to catch up to him, all that will happen will be me falling further and further behind. The only chance I have is to break into the Divine Sea! As soon as I break into the Divine Sea I must challenge him again! That is my final chance as well as my only chance!”

Although Situ Yaoyue was arrogant, she wasn’t so delusional as to think she could stand shoulder to shoulder against Lin Ming in the future. But this life or death struggle was her life’s greatest disgrace; she had no choice but to avenge her loss.

She had been publicly pounded into the ground like a stake in front of the world’s heroes, leaving an eternally unforgettable shame in her heart. Then Divine Emperor Haotian had stepped forwards for her sake, but even he had been suppressed by Old Man Good Fortune. The Asura Divine Kingdom had been forced to pay out a price of over 10 million spirit essence stones for her, making it so that these events would haunt her forever.

If she wanted to defeat Lin Ming, she only had a single chance. And that was to break through to the Divine Sea while Lin Ming was still at Life Destruction!

Old Man Good Fortune had given Lin Ming three years of time. This was because he predicted that Lin Ming would have the qualifications to tussle with or at least preserve his life against a weak Divine Sea Supreme Elder at that time.

That meant that her time left remaining… wasn’t much at all!

As Situ Yaoyue was bitterly cultivating, in the seclusion chamber, Lin Ming’s refinement of the Myriad Spirit Pill had reached its final stage!

Refining the Myriad Spirit Pill was a very laborious task with many steps, and required a massive amount of medicinal herbs. Even though Lin Ming had an extremely high regenerative ability, it still required a full year for him to complete it.

Of course, his harvests for this past year had been tremendous. After overdrawing his energy again and again and again, Lin Ming was ready to break through to the second stage of Life Destruction at any moment. At the same time, he had built a solid foundation of his soul force for when he needed to impact the Divine Sea in the future.

Lin Ming carefully took the small wood spirit jade bottle that contained the plant essence of thousands of medicinal herbs, and then gently tossed it into the Cosmic Melting Furnace…

Chapter 871 – Sea Serpent Crystal

Chapter 871 – Sea Serpent Crystal

…

…

…

This was the final stage of refining the Myriad Spirit Pill as well as the most critical stage. All of the plant essence was sealed within the wood spirit jade bottle, where it would be condensed into a pill through the flames. If there was even a single mistake in this process then all of Lin Ming's efforts would have become wasted.

Before continuing with this step, Lin Ming rested for seven days and seven nights. He lit incense, bathed, washed his hands, and meditated for two hours.

These rituals were not useless. Rather, he had to go through these rituals in order to adjust his mind to its best state.

Hu! Hu! Hu!

Flames flickered and burned. Lin Ming watched as that million year wood spirit jade bottle rolled in the scorching fire.

There was no need to uncap the bottle for the final stage of refinement. The several thousands of medicinal herb essences had their own spiritual intelligence, so it was easy for them to flee. They were sealed into that wood spirit jade bottle via its special characteristics of isolating all perception. However, if the bottle were to be opened then these plant essences would escape over time.

By throwing the entire bottle into the Cosmic Melting Furnace, the bottle itself would be refined and become a part of the Myriad Spirit Pill.

A million year wood spirit jade bottle was highly heat resistant. Lin Ming had to burn the bottle with the Burning Star Flame for several hours in order to refine it. As the bottle melted, all sorts of rainbow-colored plant essence dissipated out with a trace of green, floating away like a foggy smoke!

Lin Ming immediately released his true essence to wrap around the million year wood spirit essence liquid. If this fog was burnt by the flames then it would turn to ash.

After stabilizing the temperature of the wood spirit jade liquid to an absolutely accurate range and without the slightest bit of heat fluctuation, Lin Ming continued to maintain the output with his own mental strength.

Two hours… four hours…

Lin Ming’s forehead was wet with sweat, but his mind was still steady like a mountain.

After, another four hours passed. This was a total of eight hours of complete mental concentration. Broken blood vessels began to appear as a sharp bright red in Lin Ming’s eyes.

As he watched the million year wood spirit jade liquid be evaporated by the flames, it slowly began to solidify into a translucent green sphere. This was the main form of the Myriad Spirit Pill.

And in the center of this green sphere, there were all sorts of colored threads running within like endless snakes. Some wandered about, some were long like silk and some were short like the hairs of an ox. Some areas were dense and some areas were sparse, but all in all there were thousands of these threads!

These threads were the refined medicinal essence of the pill.

The pill had formed!

In that moment, bursts of shaking sounds emitted from the Cosmic Melting Furnace. It was like a night wind blowing over the forested mountains, or waves crashing into the shore to an endless beat.

This sound started out faint but it began to become increasingly loud, until it sounded like raging waves and crushing landslides!

Above the pill furnace, a five colored ray of light shot upwards like the dawn. It was like a rainbow, dazzling and brilliant.

At this time, Lin Ming's entire focus was concentrated on the pill furnace, his eyes unblinking. Veins had risen up on his forehead, sticking out all over.

At this time, there was a loud sound like a dragon roaring. The lid shot upwards and a fist-sized deep green ball of light suddenly flew out.

And within this ball of light, there was actually a pigeon egg-sized bead that was a vibrant green!

The Myriad Spirit Pill had concentrated so many plant essences that it had naturally formed its own rudimentary intelligence. Once it left the furnace it would inevitably attempt to fly away.

Lin Ming was already prepared for this. He displayed 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void', taking a single step forwards and grabbing that green bead in his hands.

After the pill left the furnace it should have been boiling hot. But as Lin Ming grasped it in his hands, he could actually feel an extraordinary cool feeling spreading through his limbs and bones, and even his mind seemed as if it had become much clearer.

"Success!"

Lin Ming let out a long breath of relief. He hadn't wasted this last year of effort!

After taking ahold of Myriad Spirit Pill, Lin Ming could feel the immense energy contained within. The rank of the Myriad Spirit Pill was in no way inferior to the Fivefade Void Pill.

But compared to the Fivefade Void Pill that opened the Gate of Wonder, the Gate of Pain was much more difficult to open. The Gate of Pain's function involved striking power and lethality of abilities. It was an extremely powerful gate and the most important of the first four Eight Inner Hidden Gates, only being inferior to the Gate of Life and the Gate of Death in the last four gates.

Just this Myriad Spirit Pill could guarantee a 70% chance of opening the Gate of Pain.

Although his chances were not small, Lin Ming couldn't afford even a 30% failure rate. This was a pill that was refined from 16-17 million spirit essence stones, an amount of resources capable of raising a Divine Sea Supreme Elder. This was an amount of wealth that even a Divine Kingdom would find unbearably painful to bring out. If he failed his breakthrough then he wouldn't have the resources to refine a second Myriad Spirit Pill.

He had to guarantee absolute success!

"70% chance… I would rather not take such risks. But now, all of the heavenly treasures on me, including the heaven-step Demon God Bone and Twinlife Thunder Crystal, have been used up. If I want to collect some more materials that can help me open the Gate of Pain then that will be easier said than done…"

Lin Ming didn't want to ask the Forsaken God Clan for five or six million spirit essence stones' worth of raw materials to make pills. The Forsaken God Clan themselves were limited to this dimensional realm and couldn't leave. Thus they could only gather resources from here and their resources were also very tight. In this clan with countless geniuses waiting to use them, they were simply far too stretched.

Before, Lin Ming had received a shard of a top grade spirit essence stone from Shibai, and he hadn't yet repaid this favor. This had always been floating somewhere on his mind. At this time, he couldn't request so many resources, not to mention that the Forsaken God Clan most likely couldn't afford it.

As Lin Ming mulled it over, there was only one kind of heavenly material that was extremely easy to obtain and didn't have too poor a value. That was... Sea Serpent Crystals.

The sea serpent was a divine dragon that lived deep in the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. It absorbed the essence of the sun and moon, turning it into a gas that it released into the world. This sea serpent gas could be drawn into the Cosmic Melting Furnace and then refined using a special technique to obtain Sea Serpent Crystals.

The method of refining the Sea Serpent Crystals came from Demonshine; the martial artists of the Sky Spill Continent might not know of it. Moreover, in that sea serpent gas, most martial artists would already spend the majority of their time protecting themselves, so how could they possibly study the sea serpent gas to refine its essence?

When Lin Ming was crossing Life Destruction, he had used up a good number of Sea Serpent Crystals. He was deeply experienced with the formidable energy contained within them.

If he could use the Myriad Spirit Pill and add on several dozen more Sea Serpent Crystals, then his chances of opening the Gate of Pain would rise to over 90%!

An over 90% chance was more than enough. If he failed then he could only chalk it up to fate.

Of course, there was no small risk in going to the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. But this was actually a risk that Lin Ming had to take, because in order to break through to the second stage of Life Destruction, he had to return to there.

Although it would be much easier for Lin Ming to cross the second stage of Life Destruction, it was still more difficult than it would be for a pure essence gathering system martial artist. He would need to use a massive amount of energy to do so. Using pills for this energy would have negative effects, and there would be a great waste. It was far better to use the golden red lightning from the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion.

When Lin Ming crossed into Life Destruction, he had exhausted all of the golden red lightning he had stored in the Heretical God Sprout. Now he had to go to the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion to gather up some more golden red lightning.

"Mm? You want to go to train?"

Shibai didn't think that Lin Ming would want to leave as soon as he left seclusion. Although Situ Yaoyue was currently held within the Forsaken God Clan, that was only enough to guarantee that the Asura Divine Kingdom wouldn't publicly and blatantly kill Lin Ming. After all, if they wanted to kill Lin Ming now they could only send out a Divine Sea Supreme Elder to do so. But on the entire continent there were only around 100 Divine Sea masters, and it was easy to trace just what background they came from. If it wasn't a Divine Sea Supreme Elder that was directly related to the Asura Divine Kingdom, who would take the risk of trying to kill Lin Ming and offending the future highest under the heavens?

But… if Lin Ming went out adventuring, especially in those inaccessible and far off danger zones, then that was a different story.

If Lin Ming's whereabouts were to be discovered by the Asura Divine Kingdom, then they would spare no expense to secretly send Supreme Elders to kill him. In that sort of place, it would be impossible for the Forsaken God Clan to find enough evidence of who was responsible. It was impossible for them to execute Situ Yaoyue on the basis of some speculation. After all, there was always the danger of dying when one went out to adventure.

Shibai frowned, "You want to go out?"

"Yes…"

"Would it be a bad idea if I had my clansmen escort you?"

“It might not be a good idea…” Lin Ming shook his head. Not everyone could refine Sea Serpent Crystals; they had to use Demonshine’s secret method as well as have the Cosmic Melting Furnace and the Burning Star Flame. Moreover, the 8000 Mile Black Swamp was dangerous for any non-Divine Sea powerhouse.

“Alright, I understand…” As Shibai saw Lin Ming having firmly decided what he wanted to do, he didn’t argue any further. Since Lin Ming was able to arrive at this step today, he naturally had to have the ability to distinguish the danger of the situation, so he had to have his reasons for leaving now.

“My Forsaken God Clan has a hidden transmission array in this dimensional realm that directly connects to the outside world. I suspect that the outside has already been covered with spies from the Asura Divine Kingdom. If you use this transmission array to leave, that should reduce the risk of you being found to the minimum. But… this transmission should be used as little as possible. Once the energy is activated, there will always be the risk that it is exposed. Leave early and return as soon as possible. Be careful.”

“I understand. Senior Shibai, please feel relieved.”

………

Lin Ming didn’t immediately leave. Instead, he took up the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and called Demonshine, asking him, “Demonshine, do you know what the curse on the Great Desolate Blood Halberd is?”

In this last year, Demonshine hadn’t followed Lin Ming, but instead stayed in the dimensional realm to restore his divine soul. In fact, with his current ability, there was very little assistance he could provide to Lin Ming.

Demonshine licked his lips and said, “The Great Desolate Blood Halberd is an ominous weapon that the Demon Emperor found near the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss. The blood halberd is heavy like a mountain and also contains the strange curse of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Even the Demon Emperor was unable to remove it. When the Demon

Emperor possessed the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, he also feared that he would be influenced by it. In fact, when the Demon Emperor ascended into the Divine Realm, his passage didn't go smoothly at all…"

As for what the Demon Emperor had experienced 70,000-80,000 years ago, it was impossible to find out, or even begin to find out. But, what was certain was that the Demon Emperor had encountered a great catastrophe. The Demon God Imperial Palace had once been a sixth-grade sect that was located in a dimensional realm. However, an unparalleled war had erupted there and the entire dimensional realm was shattered apart, leaving behind the present broken world. Within a few thousand years, that world would finally collapse!

It had to be known that a dimensional realm would only collapse if the Realmheart was destroyed. And, the Forsaken God Clan's Realmheart Great Hall was known as a structure that even the highest under the heavens could not break.

From this it could be seen just how powerful the Demon Emperor's enemies had been. Moreover, for some unknown reason, the Cosmic Melting Furnace and the Great Desolate Blood Halberd had been left behind.

Chapter 872 – The Bronze Ghost Coffin

Chapter 872 – The Bronze Ghost Coffin

…

…

…

In the end, the Great Desolate Blood Halberd's curse wasn't able to be broken. In Demonshine's opinion, the Great Desolate Blood Halberd already had the majority of its strength sealed away by the Asura Divine Kingdom, so most of the curse's power was reduced. And throughout these years, Lin Ming had defeated countless heroic young elites and passed through multiple trials of fire. He was a peerless youth of this world and after accumulating all of that momentum so far, his destiny was extremely formidable.

In addition, he had trained at Timeworn Phoenix City and also inherited the bloodline of the Ancient Phoenix. Lin Ming even had a drop of reverse scale blood from an Azure Dragon. With all of these factors combined together, Lin Ming's life was that of a Peerless Emperor!

It could be foreseen that, without accident, Lin Ming would easily become a character that surpassed the Divine Sea realm, or even reached higher boundaries. For such an absolute character to restrain a single Great Desolate Blood Halberd from the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss shouldn't be difficult.

After all, the Great Desolate Blood Halberd could only be considered to be amongst the weakest of Saint artifacts.

………..

In the middle of night, Lin Ming changed his clothes and without wearing his wood spirit jade mask, he directly stepped through the transmission array and into the outer world. He didn’t fly high in the air but rather near the ground, all the way until he was over 2000 miles away from the Forsaken God Clan’s dimensional realm. Lin Ming then took out the Godspeed Boat that had been specially altered for him, and flew straight towards the Sea of Miracles.

Along the way, Lin Ming carefully chose his route and avoided all major cities. Without danger or surprise, he soon reached the 8000 Mile Black Swamp.

The 8000 Mile Black Swamp was known as a land where Life Destruction powerhouses would encounter almost certain death. If a Divine Sea powerhouse entered, they would be relatively safe. However, if they were unlucky then even they could perish here.

Lin Ming was now nearly the strongest person under the Divine Sea within the Sky Spill Continent. In addition, he had many protective treasures with him. His fires of life were potent, his defensive power was abnormal, and his endurance and extreme speed limit were both freakish. In terms of survivability and escape capacity, here at the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, he wasn’t necessarily much worse than a Divine Sea powerhouse like Situ Bonan who was nearing the end of his life.

After entering the 8000 Mile Black Swamp once again, Lin Ming was no longer the same late Revolving Core weakling he had been. In the face of the dangers here, he had enough strength to resist.

Moreover, Lin Ming had already come to the 8000 Mile Black Swamp once before and was extremely familiar with the environment. Without any great danger, he soon arrived close to the center of the 8000 Mile Black Swamp.

However, wanting to find this divine dragon was not simple. Although this sea serpent divine dragon had a body over a thousand miles long and emitted a gas that could cover the sun and moon, both space and time within this 8000 Mile Black Swamp were distorted and there were closed off force fields everywhere. It was impossible to search for this divine dragon using one’s perception. If one wished to find it, then they could only rely on their own luck.

Soon, several days passed as Lin Ming searched the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, during which he encountered many of the strange and peculiar existences that lived here. There were creatures similar to ghosts, creatures of flesh and blood, and even creatures that looked as if they were formed from mud. However, since their strength was all below that of the Divine Sea, they simply weren't a threat to the current Lin Ming.

At this point, in front of Lin Ming, a 10 foot high humanoid monster appeared. Its skin was the color of a ghostly green and it was thickly corded with muscles. There was a single giant eye that dominated its head, and it grasped a mace that was larger than two men, waving it haphazardly in the wind!

"Cyclops Demon!" Lin Ming was stunned and immediately recalled the name of this monster. This creature was an archaic desolate monster that existed in the ancient times of the Sky Spill Continent 100,000 ago. Sometimes it was tamed by top masters to be their mounts.

This monster's strength was incomparably powerful and its bodily defensive power was comparable to a heaven-step treasure. Its single eye could release a demonic light that sucked away all life vitality and turned the body to stone.

Any random Cyclops Demon could absolutely be ranked anywhere in the top 20 of the Destiny Decree. And this was only because they had low intelligence. Otherwise, if they could practice cultivation methods, martial skills, and Concepts, then their combat efficiency could be imagined.

The eye of a Cyclops Demons was an extremely rare and precious alchemy ingredient, and their tough skin could be used to make heaven-step leather armor. However, they were simply far too difficult to deal with. Even a top 10 ranked Destiny Decree master would find this task near-impossible and would be advised to avoid them.

The Cyclops Demon's defensive power was just too formidable and its blood vitality was too potent. If one couldn't defeat it in a short period of time then that was a recipe for disaster.

However, Lin Ming actually didn't plan on avoiding it. He wanted to test the might of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and he also fancied the bodily materials of the Cyclops Demon. He could keep the eye for his own use and the rest of the body could be given to the Forsaken God Clan to refine into treasures.

Ca!

A demonic light shot from the Cyclops Demon's eye, beaming towards Lin Ming's heart like a bolt of thunder. Lin Ming stepped on 'Golden Roc Shattering the Void' and vanished like a puff of smoke. In the next moment he had arrived behind the Cyclops Demon. He held the Great Desolate Blood Halberd with both hands and revolved the power of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, using the Gate of Limit to erupt with over one million jins of strength, and the heavy Great Desolate Blood Halberd smashed down like a falling meteor where it struck the Cyclops Demon's shoulder!

Bang!

With an explosive sound, the Cyclops Demon's shoulder was twisted apart. Blood and broken pieces of bones shot into the wind. Because its feet couldn't withstand the tremendous pressure, both of them fractured and buckled. The entire right side of the Cyclops Demon became ruined flesh and all of its ribs were broken even as its organs came spilling out!

The Cyclops Demon that was famed for its amazing defensive power was smashed to death by Lin Ming's halberd!

"This halberd is awesome!"

Lin Ming exclaimed out loud. Although he had erupted with his complete physical strength, he actually hadn't used true essence. Striking with that halberd had caused his arm to tingle and his blood to tumble in his body, but even so, he felt a feeling of satisfaction as if all the cells in his body were stretching out at once and wantonly absorbing energy. By just moving his body he emitted crackling sounds from all his joints. This feeling of bliss was something that fighting with the essence gathering system could never achieve.

Fighting with energy was still relying on non-bodily forces after all. If spear lights struck each other, no matter how intense the collision was, a martial artist would be safe as long as they weren't affected by the shockwaves. It wasn't like the body transformation fighting style, where every strike released an impact force that could be felt through the body.

"Although I don't use the 'Great Desolate Halberd Art' anymore, just using the Great Desolate Blood Halberd to hit people makes it a great weapon!"

Lin Ming thought out loud. He was about to cut apart the Cyclops Demon's corpse, when at this moment he felt his heart shrink a bit as an inexplicable chill covered his entire body. This sense of unease and dread caused him to look up into the distance.

He could only see that far off through the dense layers of fog, there was a group of shimmering fluorescent shadows floating over like ghosts.

These shadows looked as though they were slowly drifting, but the truth was that their speed had reached the extreme. At first they were only small lights in the distance, but in the blink of an eye one could make out their appearance. They were six sinister-looking evil spirits all dressed in black robes. Their faces were fierce and they drifted to and fro like ghosts. Their demon claws each grasped a thick chain, and the six chains linked together, dragging a bronze ghost coffin behind them. This ghost coffin was immeasurably large, being 10 feet high and 30 feet long. All sorts of strange and mystical totems were carved into the coffin, and it seemed heavy and terrible, emitting an energy that made the soul tremble.

Lin Ming instantly felt a cold chill crawl up his spine! He held his breath and drew back as far into the shadows as he could, not even daring to move about.

It wasn't the coffin that these six evil spirits dragged that terrified him, but rather the six evil spirits themselves left Lin Ming gasping for breath.

Because humans practiced a different cultivation system, Lin Ming couldn't make out the cultivations of these evil spirits. But, he could still feel that all of them surpassed him by an immeasurable amount!

Lin Ming himself already had a combat strength that reached the very pinnacle of all Life Destruction masters. Anyone higher would be at the legendary eighth stage of Life Destruction or the Divine Sea. And, these six evil spirits had strength nearing that of a human Divine Sea Supreme Elder!

They were likely equal to quasi Emperor existences of the Fey race and Giant Demon race!

These six quasi Emperor level powerhouses were all pulling a bronze ghost coffin together!

Just what was in the ghost coffin?

Lin Ming didn't think that it would contain only a corpse. Even if it were a corpse, it would be some strange demonic monster like a 10,000 year corpse devil or corpse puppet.

And what was most likely was that whatever was inside that bronze ghost coffin was an existence from the same race as those six black-robed evil spirits. And, its strength must be unimaginable!

The 8000 Mile Black Swamp was known as a land that Life Destruction martial artists would find perilous, but a Divine Sea Supreme Elder wouldn't be in too great of a danger. Thus, that mysterious existence within that bronze ghost coffin shouldn't belong to the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. Otherwise, if a normal Divine Sea powerhouse were to encounter it, they would be more than dead!

Did that mean… it was something that came from the true Sea of Miracles!?

As this thought suddenly flashed through his mind, Lin Ming's heartbeat nearly stopped. At this moment, he was very clear that if the monster in that bronze ghost coffin had even the slightest bit of interest in him then he would most assuredly die here!

The bronze ghost coffin was extremely fast. It only took a few breaths of time to travel several hundred miles away. However, to Lin Ming, every breath of time felt as long as a year.

Ho – !

The ghost coffin flew away, floating right over Lin Ming's head before vanishing without a trace. The endless dark clouds on the horizon didn't have the slightest hint of light, as if complete darkness had fallen over the entire 8000 Mile Black Swamp.

They left…

Lin Ming felt his back and palms wet with a cold sweat. He knew that if that mysterious existence in that coffin had investigated its surroundings, there was no way he could have hidden from it.

It was possible that it might have been sleeping, or it might have been because Lin Ming's own first stage Life Destruction cultivation was too low to arouse interest. But no matter the reason, he had just passed a great calamity.

Just what was that…

Wiping away his cold sweat, Lin Ming was still shaken with shock and alarm. He had originally been planning on exploring the 8000 Mile Black Swamp some more, but now it seemed as if it would be prudent to obtain the Sea Serpent Crystals and leave here as soon as possible. Against a powerhouse of that level, he didn't believe he could resist even a tiny bit.

Lin Ming hurriedly put away the Cyclops Demon's corpse and immediately left. He displayed his movement technique and rushed towards the opposite direction of bronze ghost coffin, rapidly flying ahead!

However, before even an incense stick of time passed, he instantly came to a screeching halt. His breath caught in his throat and a chill crawled up his spine. In front of him was a dirty dark yellow river that surged with great billowing waves, emitting an infinite deathly energy.

The Yellow Springs River!!!

Chapter 873 – Opening the Gate of Pain

Chapter 873 – Opening the Gate of Pain

…

…

…

The dark and putrid Yellow Springs River was 1000 feet wide. On the shores of the other side, the world was submerged in the darkness of night and filled with a suppressive, deathly silence. In the river's waters, countless skeletons floated on the surface. Of these skeletons, many of them were non-human races. Some of these races had wings, horns, tails, and even looked like hell demons from myths and legends.

Just by glancing at this Yellow Springs River, an inexhaustible sorrow and despair filled the heart. It was like this river was alive and also held the most important thing of their entire life. But, no matter how they thought about it, they could never remember what it was. All they knew was that once they left here, they would lose it forever.

Lin Ming had seen the Yellow Springs River before, but this time he was struck by the greatest summoning power yet. If it weren't for the fact that Lin Ming's heart of martial arts was tough and his will was steady like iron and he had also comprehended a silver battle spirit, then his mind would have likely fallen into the illusion and he would have died here!

He fiercely bit down on the tip of his tongue, using that stinging pain to awaken himself. Lin Ming instantly launched his movement technique and flew backwards, running several dozen miles in a single breath. Only then did he slow down to collect his scattered thoughts and calm his fearful shock.

As he looked over to the direction of the Yellow Springs River, he saw that it had already been covered in a foggy darkness, completely vanished without a trace.

“Just what is that Yellow Springs River? Why would it flow in the Eternal Demon Abyss’ 1000 mile forbidden zone and why would I see it here at the 8000 Mile Black Swamp?”

The 8000 Mile Black Swamp was so broad; how could he possibly encounter the Yellow Springs River here? And as for those skeletons floating on top of the river, just looking at the pure number there was likely no less than a billion corpses!

That was a billion lives. Moreover, those were not ordinary existences. Those were all top super powerhouses!

“It seems… that those evil spirits pulling the coffin were also one of the types of monsters in the Yellow Springs River… they have a horn on their head and their height is also similar!

Although they were very far away, Lin Ming had been able to approximate the size of those six black evil spirits. They were around 10-20 feet tall. As for that bronze ghost coffin, it was 30 feet long. That was many times the height of a human.

“Perhaps they really did come from the Sea of Miracles…”

When Lin Ming was at the Holy Demon Continent, he had looked at many jade slips with records of the Eternal Demon Abyss. He was able to confirm that there were existences that lived within the Eternal Demon Abyss. Moreover, Lin Ming had also seen with his own eyes a living beast within the Eternal Demon Abyss, a massive God Beast that was thousands of miles in length.

However, according to the description of the jade slips, these existences would never leave the Eternal Demon Abyss of their own volition. There were only some of the weaker monsters that would be shot out by the occasional eruptions of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

“What is in the Sea of Miracles? Could there be an entrance to another world?”

Lin Ming shook his head, not really believing that explanation. If the Sea of Miracles was truly an entrance to another world, then it was certainly a high level world. Without discussing how extensive it was, just the rank of that world itself should be no less than a world of the Divine Realm. How could such a world be located at the remote and unknown Sky Spill Continent? And how could the martial artists from the Divine Realm just freely ignore it?

The existence of a new world meant new lucky chances. There would certainly be top powerhouses that came to explore the dangers of that new world.

Lin Ming didn't understand this puzzle. He shook his head, no longer thinking about it. This matter simply far exceeded his current boundary and wasn't something he could investigate. Even by the time he reached the Divine Sea he might not have the ability to enter the Sea of Miracles. That was a life forbidden zone in the truest meaning of the term.

"I'm too weak. If I can reach Fairy Feng's level, then I might be able to do some investigating…"

Lin Ming sighed. At this time, a dense fog suddenly filled the dark skies, completely enveloping the world. The fog became increasingly thick, and after a short period of time it became like a thick black soup in the air, nearly solidifying into essence.

As Lin Ming saw this occur, he let out a light breath. This was sea serpent gas! He had finally run into it!

After being in the 8000 Mile Black Swamp for so many days, Lin Ming finally encountered the sea serpent gas once again. He calmly took out the Cosmic Melting Furnace and began drawing a large amount of sea serpent gas into it.

The Burning Star Flame blazed and the black sea serpent gas quickly condensed. Compared to the last time that he entered the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, Lin Ming's speed at which he refined the sea serpent gas was several times quicker than before. This was because he had increased his cultivation and also because he had made significant progress with his alchemy technique.

Soon, that massive amount of sea serpent gas was refined into a bean-sized Sea Serpent Crystal.

Lin Ming didn't stop here. He continued to draw in sea serpent gas and refine it, growing the crystal larger and larger until it reached the size of a finger. Because Lin Ming's strength had risen, his refined Sea Serpent Crystals were even purer. Just this small crystal seemed as if it contained a hidden space within, both strange and mysterious.

Lin Ming only required an incense stick of time to complete the first Sea Serpent Crystal. He kept refining all the way until the black sea serpent gas finally dispersed. By this time, Lin Ming had refined over 50 Sea Serpent Crystals. The last time Lin Ming was here, he had only refined a dozen or so Sea Serpent Crystals.

After leaving the Cosmic Melting Furnace, Lin Ming felt a bit unsatisfied. These Sea Serpent Crystals were top treasures. It was a pity that the sea serpent gas didn't last longer, otherwise his harvests would have been greater.

And the next time he wanted to find this sea serpent dragon wouldn't be easy. The 8000 Mile Black Swamp was filled with layers of dangers. Even with Lin Ming's current cultivation, he still wasn't safe here.

"I only took less than 0.0001% of this sea serpent gas and yet there is such an effect. I wonder just how powerful this sea serpent dragon is and just where it is hiding. How powerful is it compared to that great beast in the Eternal Demon Abyss?"

Lin Ming didn't stop. He directly impacted straight into the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion until he reached the 90 mile zone. He let the Heretical God Sprout absorb the golden red lightning to its limit, and then left the 8000 Mile Black Swamp in the same night.

All through this time, Lin Ming didn't meet the Purple Lion Thunder Source. Perhaps it was because the Twinlife Thunder Crystal had already been used by Lin Ming, but whatever the reason, the Purple Lion Thunder Source hadn't sensed Lin Ming arriving. This saved him a great deal of trouble.

Three days later, Lin Ming returned to the Forsaken God Clan through their hidden transmission array, and went directly to the seclusion chamber. He readied himself to open the Gate of Pain as well as simultaneously crossing the second stage of Life Destruction.

With over 50 Sea Serpent Crystals lined up around him, Lin Ming took out the wood spirit jade box containing the sealed Myriad Spirit Pill from his spatial ring.

As soon as he opened the wood spirit jade box, the Myriad Spirit Pill instantly tried to rush out. Lin Ming caught it, feeling like he was holding a powerful divine insect in his hands. The pill wildly dashed around in his hand, hoping to escape.

"This pill really does have intelligence. If I were to let it go here then it would escape into the deep mountains or seas where it would absorb essence energy. Perhaps after hundreds of thousands or even millions of years, it would eventually transform into some ghostly spirit."

After he grasped the Myriad Spirit Pill, Lin Ming recalled the method of how to use it from the Divine Realm alchemist's memories.

He took out a heaven-step dagger that he had requested from Shibai earlier, and then cut open his own chest without hesitation!

Puff!

Blood splattered outwards. Lin Ming's body was extremely tough. Even if he didn't use any energy to protect himself, just his own physical body was difficult enough to pierce. He had no choice but to pour his silver battle spirit into this dagger.

After cutting open a gap in his chest between two of his ribs, Lin Ming could clearly feel the strong beating of his own heart. The Myriad Spirit Pill contained the condensed plant essence from thousands of medicinal herbs, all of them turned into thin filaments. In order to completely absorb this pill, he would have to directly implant it into his heart and let his blood wash over it, causing those several thousand filaments to fuse into his body where it would be slowly absorbed. This was a long process that would take several days.

To cut up their own heart, that was an action that an ordinary person would never have the will to do.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and steadfastly cut down.

Blood splashed out. Lin Ming shoved the Myriad Spirit Pill into his heart, burying it deep inside a ventricle. Then, Lin Ming revolved the power of the Gate of Healing to slowly regenerate his wounds.

However, the Myriad Spirit Pill did not peacefully lie in Lin Ming's heart. It dashed left and right, smashing into the walls of Lin Ming's heart, every single impact like a hammer smashing into him. The heart was an extremely fragile and important organ. Normally, if a martial artist's heart were to be struck like this then their heart would explode. They would vomit out blood and die on the spot. Even someone that practiced body transformation techniques and had extremely tough heart walls would find this sort of impact leading to arrhythmia and eventually death of the heart muscles.

After Lin Ming swallowed the profound gold divine fruit, his physical body had become incomparably tough. In addition, with having opened the first three of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, he was just able to withstand this Myriad Spirit Pill. It was only when the Myriad Spirit Pill smashed into the wound that Lin Ming had created with a dagger did Lin Ming feel as if a saber was gouging into him. Every time this happened, he would become deathly pale and his forehead would become wet with sweat.

As the medicinal efficacy flowed into his body, the striking impact of the Myriad Spirit Pill became increasingly weak. Finally, it stopped crashing around and began to be obediently absorbed by Lin Ming.

In implanting the Myriad Spirit Pill, the only danger and pain were at the start. The medicinal efficacy itself was very gentle and easy to absorb. This was because the Myriad

Spirit Pill took a long time to dissolve. The several thousands of condensed medicinal herb filaments would have to enter the bloodstream one by one. This process was extremely time consuming.

In the blink of an eye, several more hours passed. The scab on Lin Ming's chest naturally fell off, leaving nothing behind but a shallow and rapidly fading white mark. At this time, Lin Ming had already entered the ethereal martial intent state. His two fists grasped five Sea Serpent Crystals as he began to impact the Gate of Pain!

The Gate of Pain was located in the palms. It could also be said to be two gates, one in each hand.

At this time, Lin Ming moved his arms, lifting them evenly, palms up. Two whirlpools of energy formed above Lin Ming's palms and the essence of the Sea Serpent Crystals was rapidly absorbed into them. The translucent black Sea Serpent Crystals began to slowly whiten before becoming a stone-like white lime and then finally cracking with a 'pa' and turning into power.

After 10 Sea Serpent Crystals were finished, Lin Ming grabbed another 10 and continued to absorb them.

Under the continuous wearing of this energy, the Gates of Pain in Lin Ming's palms were continually being impacted, becoming more and more loose.

10 hours…

20 hours…

One day…

Two days…

Three days…

On the fourth day, far too much energy had gathered within Lin Ming's palms, full to the point where it seemed it would explode. The energy of over 50 Sea Serpent Crystals had been completely sucked clean by Lin Ming. With a loud shout, his fists suddenly exploded and two arrows of blood shot high upwards, even breaking apart a massive hole in the dome of the seclusion chamber. Lin Ming's two palms seemed as if they had been pierced by arrows and shattered!

The Gate of Pain had finally opened.

Chapter 874 – Comprehending the Laws of Time

Chapter 874 – Comprehending the Laws of Time

…

…

…

Lin Ming drooped downwards until his back was against the ground. His hands slightly trembled and a small pool of blood was already appearing underneath him.

Looking at his body, Lin Ming was overjoyed even as he wryly shook his head. All the meridians on his arms had been broken, and even some of the meridians of his body had been damaged. His two hands would be temporarily useless.

The word 'pain' in the Gate of Pain contained the implications of a double-edged sword. Opening the Gate of Pain would cause damage to the martial artist, and while fighting using the power of the Gate of Pain, that would also cause a burden on a martial artist's body.

Thus, this was the reason the Gate of Pain was the last of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates' first four gates. Only by opening the Gate of Healing and the Gate of Limit, which could drastically change the physical properties of a martial artist, would they then be able to withstand the backlash from the Gate of Pain.

As Lin Ming looked at his hands, he gave up crossing the second stage of Life Destruction for the time being. Usually, these types of wounds could be healed in several days with Lin Ming's regenerative powers. But, the wounds brought forth by the Gate of Pain would last for over a month.

Moreover, during this period of time, his physical condition and all aspects of his combat strength would decline by a great deal, before slowly restoring to an even higher peak. There was a sense of breaking himself and creating something even better.

But during this time, Lin Ming didn't plan on simply resting either. He planned to meditate on the Space-Time Laws jade slips that Old Man Good Fortune had left behind. In particular, the records concerning the Concept of Time; Lin Ming was extremely interested in those.

With the meridians in his arms ruined and unable to connect energy through his body, Lin Ming's current strength was even worse than some low level martial artists'.

He simply rode a divine carriage that was pulled by eight golden birds that resembled phoenixes, soaring through the skies of the Forsaken God Clan's back mountains. He enjoyed viewing the various beautiful flowers and trees, meditating on the Time Laws in comfort.

Although the Forsaken God Clan's dimensional realm was covered in layers of array formations, Shibai still sent out many bodyguards to accompany him. There were even many beautiful maids that served him, meticulously meeting all of his needs.

As Lin Ming rode on top of the divine carriage, wrapped in silk and cloth and jewels, his handsome and exquisite jade-like looks facing the world, he seemed like a noble prince.

This was a sort of life that many martial artists desired. For instance, the South Sea's Nanyun Wang, or many of the Princes and Princesses of the four Divine Kingdoms would be accompanied by heavenly music as they went out to travel. They would have divine soldiers clearing the way for them with Saint Beasts drawing their carriage forwards. Meanwhile, they would even have massive numbers of beautiful young maids and concubines around then, hugging these women left and right.

Lin Ming never thought that one day, he too would enjoy a similar life.

After resting for 40 days, Lin Ming finally felt his strength slowly return to his body. The meridians of his arms had nearly been completely restored and there was nothing left on his two palms but extremely faint scars that looked like water marks. One couldn't even see them unless one looked very closely.

These were scars left behind by the Gate of Pain. After more time passed, even those would vanish, only revealing themselves when he opened the Gate of Pain. At that time, Lin Ming would also be able to burst out with his strongest energy, instantly reaching almost two million jins of strength!

Following that, Lin Ming felt his strength was growing every day. The muscles of his body grew with beautiful edged lines, accentuating a gently aesthetic beauty that was smooth and powerful at the same time.

He felt as if he had been reborn once again. His body had been filled with endless strength, as if he could lift a mountain above himself.

What Lin Ming most desired to do now was to find a powerful opponent to fight. Unfortunately, no one under the Divine Sea was his match any longer, and as for those Divine Sea masters like Shibai, he wasn't able to defeat them.

Within the Sky Spill Continent, in the last 100,000 years of never ending time, it was extremely rare for a Life Destruction martial artist to be able to jump ranks and fight a Divine Sea master. First, this was because there was a massive gap between Life Destruction and the Divine Sea, and every person able to break into the Divine Sea was themselves a proud son of heaven, a peerless genius of their era. Of course, those Divine Sea powerhouses that couldn't break into the Divine Sea before they were 100 years old and had to rely on lucky chances to do so were only the weakest of Divine Sea powerhouses. Only those martial artists that stepped into the Divine Sea realm through their own strength could be considered true peak Emperor level talents.

In order to cross a great boundary to defeat a proud son of heaven, one had to be an even more monstrous genius. Wasn't that easier said than done?

“Perhaps those six evil spirits I saw in the 8000 Mile Black Swamp that were pulling the bronze ghost coffin might be able to give me a hearty battle.”

That bronze ghost coffin still echoed in Lin Ming’s mind. Just what level had the existence slumbering within reached?

Lin Ming shook his head, no longer thinking about these things as he continued to perceive the Time Laws. The Time Laws that Old Man Good Fortune left behind were extremely mysterious, enough to keep Lin Ming entranced. After immersing himself within them, several hours passed in an instant.

Lin Ming’s impression was that the Concept inheritances of the Sky Spill Continent were far more limited than those from the Divine Realm. But, the Concept of Time jade slip that Old Man Good Fortune had left behind actually had some direct hints about the source of the Great Dao. This was simply like the inheritances from the Divine Realm!

“Did Old Man Good Fortune enter into a mystic realm left behind in the Sky Spill Continent from 100,000 years ago, and obtain an inheritance from the Divine Realm?”

No matter how talented a martial artist was, they still had to have some sort of basis in order to deduce even more profound Concepts and Laws. It was impossible to form a set of Laws from thin air. All signs indicated that 100,000 years ago, the martial arts civilization of the Sky Spill Continent was glorious, even containing the tiniest hint of the splendor from the Divine Realm.

Old Man Good Fortune had lived for 8000 years; it was impossible to count just how many places he had been to or how many mystic realms he had explored. It wasn’t strange for him to have such an inheritance.

“I wonder why Old Man Good Fortune would lend such precious jade slips to me?”

As Lin Ming was thinking of returning to his chamber and practicing some of the Laws recorded on the jade slips, at this time, the flame of a sound transmitting talisman shined out in front of him. This was a message from Shibai. The message was simply – ‘please come to the Elders Palace’.

“Mm?” Lin Ming was startled. This must be a serious matter for Shibai to want to speak to him face to face.

……………

As Lin Ming arrived at the Elder’s Palace, he saw that Shibai and the masked old man were already waiting inside for him. The masked old man was the second Divine Sea Supreme Elder of the Forsaken God Clan. He was extremely mysterious and rarely spoke; even Lin Ming didn’t know his name.

On a table in front of Shibai were placed two letters. As Lin Ming looked at the seals marking them, he saw that they came from the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom and the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom.

“The Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s Yang Yun and the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom’s Ouye Qingfeng have each sent a letter. Take a look at them.”

Shibai flicked his finger and both letters flew into Lin Ming’s hands. Lin Ming was originally calm, but as he slowly read through them, he found it increasingly difficult to keep his cool.

As Lin Ming finished reading both letters, he let out a long breath. The two letters spoke of the same matter. It was that the Temple of Marvels that existed in the Sea of Miracles had appeared in the skies above the 8000 Mile Black Swamp!

When Lin Ming had joined Yang Yun at the Nine Flowers Banquet, he had heard a Sublime Smelting Prince mention the Temple of Marvels. This temple was extremely fantastical and was said to appear only in the deepest areas of the Sea of Miracles. Only some Divine Sea Supreme Elders that had penetrated deep into the 8000 Mile Black Swamp had been able to spot it from a distance, and even they felt as if they were looking at nothing more than a mirage.

No one had ever returned alive from the Sea of Miracles, and even approaching the edge was dangerous, let alone investigating the temple. Just a random great beast from the Sea of Miracles would be able to easily devour a Divine Sea Supreme Elder.

But now, because of some unknown reason, the Temple of Marvels had appeared in the skies of the 8000 Mile Black Swamp for the first time in known history!

As Lin Ming thought of this, he immediately remembered the bronze ghost coffin he had encountered earlier. The existence sleeping within it might very well have come from the Sea of Miracles!

After he saw that bronze ghost coffin, the Temple of Marvels had drifted out from the Sea of Miracles. It was natural to associate the two when there was such a coincidence. How were the two related? Was it even possible that the Temple of Marvels was the palace of the existence within the coffin?

Looking again, it seemed that the four Divine Kingdoms had already used various methods to investigate the Temple of Marvels the day before.

The Sea of Miracles was known as an absolute life forbidden zone, and the Temple of Marvels was also likely a cursed place. Even if they knew there were lucky chances within that defied the will of the heavens, no one dared to recklessly rush in for fear that they would never be able to step back out.

The Asura Divine Kingdom had sent out slaughter puppets to investigate. The Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom, and Seven Star Divine Kingdom had also sent out similar puppets or enemies they had planted slaves seals within to investigate the Temple of Marvels. In around a month’s time they would have their results. At that time, they would assess the risks and decide whether or not they should enter.

Currently, the entire periphery of the 8000 Mile Black Swamp had been cordoned off by the four Divine Kingdoms and it was impossible to enter.

Yang Yun and Ouye Qingfeng had both sent these letters because they wished to ask Lin Ming whether or not he would like to explore the Temple of Marvels with them.

Lin Ming was filled with longing and curiosity for the secrets in the Sea of Miracles. With Lin Ming's character, he normally would have made the trip. But now, with the great enemy of Situ Haotian floating around, he couldn't help but think solemnly of his decision.

Lin Ming didn't think he had the ability to escape Situ Haotian, even after opening the Gate of Pain.

In the mystic realm, the Asura Divine Kingdom simply wouldn't care about decorum. Once Lin Ming was killed, just what could the Forsaken God Clan do? If he died, what use would there be in them killing Situ Yaoyue?

And besides Situ Haotian, he feared that characters like the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor and the Sublime Smelting Imperial Grand Uncle would appear. These people were existences Lin Ming could not possibly hope to contend with. They might outwardly be on good terms with him, but in that mystic realm with enormous benefits all around, who knew just what they would do.

"Little Brother Lin, I don't think you need to take this risk..." Shibai slowly said after considering the matter for a moment. "Because of my Forsaken God Clan's bloodline curse, we are unable to leave this dimensional realm for an extended period of time. This sort of mystic realm will likely not be explored in three to five days, so it's impossible for us to go. And in truth, even if we did go with you, if we leave the protection of the Realmheart great array, we will no longer be a match for the Asura Divine Kingdom. And if you go by yourself, you will be in extreme danger. Situ Yaoyue can be used as a chip to threaten the Asura Divine Kingdom, but it's impossible for you to take her along as a protective charm."

"I understand..." Lin Ming nodded. Although he loved to adventure and explore, he certainly wouldn't enter a mystic realm with such a low chance of survival. He could only say that it was an unfortunate set of circumstances.

However, what Lin Ming didn’t expect was that just a day later, another letter would arrive. This letter was from Old Man Good Fortune. He intended to enter the Temple of Marvels, and if Lin Ming desired to go, he could also bring Lin Ming along.

“Old Man Good Fortune!” Lin Ming’s heart stirred as he took a deep breath.

Chapter 875 – Second Stage Life Destruction

Chapter 875 – Second Stage Life Destruction

…

…

…

With Lin Ming's current strength, he was far from being able to protect himself if he entered the Temple of Marvels. But, if he could obtain the protection of Old Man Good Fortune, then even a top level character like the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor wouldn't even be able to touch him.

Lin Ming only casually knew Old Man Good Fortune and had no particular reason to trust him. But as he thought of it, Old Man Good Fortune was like a wild crane that leisurely flew through the world with no influence behind him, and without any conflicts of interest, there was just no reason to harm him. Moreover, for someone at his rank, there was very little in this world that would cause him to scheme. And even Old Man Good Fortune had been planning something, he could have just abducted Lin Ming from the dimensional realm by force and Shibai would have only been able to watch helplessly as that happened. There would have been no need to wait for today.

"Little Brother Lin, what do you plan on doing?" Shibai asked.

"No matter what I do, first I must break through the second stage of Life Destruction." There was only a month until the time to enter the Temple of Marvels. Increasing his own strength first would be the safest bet. If he crossed the second stage of Life Destruction and also opened the Gate of Pain, then Lin Ming had no idea just how strong he would become at that time.

Although it was impossible for him to contend against the likes of Situ Haotian, he believed he would have enough strength to safely escape Situ Yaoxi or Situ Bonan with his life intact.

"Break through the second stage of Life Destruction? Great!" Shibai was startled, but not too surprised. Lin Ming had stepped into the peak of the first stage of Life Destruction a year ago, and after such a long time passed, it wasn't strange for him to break into the second stage.

Two days later, Lin Ming closed up once again. After opening the Gate of Pain, Lin Ming's physical strength and mentality were at their highest peak. Successfully breaking through the second stage of Life Destruction was nearly guaranteed.

When Lin Ming first crossed into Life Destruction from the Revolving Core realm, he had used his dantian as the core to disintegrate his body, so it hadn't been easy at all. But for breaking through to the second stage Life Destruction, he was able to use all of the true essence within his body and flesh to thoroughly decompose his body. This was a much simpler process, and Lin Ming also had ample amounts of golden red lightning stored in the Heretical God Sprout.

Within the seclusion chamber, layers of array formations covered the central platform. Lin Ming stepped onto the central array platform and then revolved all the energy within his body and divided his 360 acupoints into 72 points.

These 72 points covered his entire body. With Lin Ming's control, he crazily absorbed true essence. Then, with his dantian as the center, he erupted!

Golden red lighting poured out from the Heretical God Sprout. Combined with the energy throughout his body, it thoroughly broke down his body. All his meridians ruptured as a rain of blood shot into the air. Lin Ming turned into a vague blood fog that was filled with an incomparably pure heaven and earth origin energy.

Normally, if a person's body exploded like this then they would be deader than dead. However, the miraculous and marvelous Laws prevented this from happening. This could be called the Heavenly Dao, and the road of martial arts was only a single path of exploring the Heavenly Dao. When a martial artist cultivated martial arts, they were conquering the Heavenly Dao to use for themselves, thus the reason why cultivating the martial path was considered to be defying the will of heavens.

On a human's journey on the road of martial arts, there were unknown Laws that would protect them during these crucial moments. When they were about to break through the boundaries of Life Destruction, their body would completely disintegrate, with energy fusing into their every cell. Then, all of this would be locked into a small area, forming an accommodation for their soul. This primordial life soup was similar to the amniotic fluid that surrounded a baby in their mother's womb, allowing the martial artist to maintain their fires of life.

Rich heaven and earth origin energy would fuse into this primordial life soup, tempering all the cells with energy and ejecting the impurities. These cells would then begin to reform into a spirit body.

The grade of the spirit body all depended on how thoroughly a martial artist disintegrated their body and how pure the energy was that tempered their cells.

In this primordial life soup, Lin Ming's consciousness was incomparably clear. It was like he had become a liquid life form. He swam in a sea of energy, able to examine every cell in his body and watch as his flesh and blood were tempered by energy, slowing changing.

....

A month soon passed. The results of the investigation of the Temple of Marvels returned. The four Divine Kingdoms had joined forces to jointly send 30 test puppets into the Temple of Marvels. Finally, only two had returned: one from the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom and one from the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. This was because the test puppets those two Divine Kingdoms had sent out had been the strongest. Especially the Nine Furnace

Divine Kingdom's. In order to obtain the best and the most information they could on the Temple of Marvels, they had even sent out a Divine Sea level puppet.

Even the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom only had a single such puppet. They had consumed a massive amount of heavenly materials in order to freeze its fires of life and seal it away, and now was the best time to use it.

"All those below the Divine Sea will be in dire peril if they enter. And those at the Divine Sea have a chance of dying, but they can most likely return alive."

The results of the investigation were extremely satisfying. It had to be said that the Temple of Marvels was a place of ancient ruins that floated over the skies in the Sea of Miracles. It wouldn't be strange for all who entered to die.

However, with the protection of a Divine Sea powerhouse, then the most extraordinary disciples of the four Divine Kingdoms might be able to go in to experience and adventure. Not to mention the massive lucky chances that likely existed in the Temple of Marvels, but even if these young disciples weren't able to obtain any great treasures for themselves, just going in and expanding their horizons by experienced such a high level mystic realm would be extremely advantageous for their future growth.

………….

Forsaken God Clan, Dimensional Realm –

In the seclusion chamber, Lin Ming slowly woke up. He was lying naked on the floor. After his body was broken down and reformed, it gave off a feeling that he had been resurrected from the dead.

The second stage of Life Destruction had been successfully crossed.

From outer appearances, Lin Ming lacked a touch of sharp and dominating aura. All of it was restrained within him, making him see as if he were an elegant young man that loved to read books and recite poetry.

Lin Ming stretched out his hand and countless arcs of purple electricity formed in the air. These electric arcs were thin and long and gathered together like strands of silk, forming substantialized purple cloth. After a moment, this purple silk wrapped around Lin Ming's body and formed a loose robe.

This loose robe covered all the beautiful hard lines of Lin Ming's muscles, making him seem like a young student scholar. However, Lin Ming's eyes flashed as if thunder was contained within them. These shining sparks were actually the power of thunder that had deeply penetrated into every cell of Lin Ming's body, almost having the same effect of carving the Thunder Laws into his body.

In terms of Lin Ming's cultivation, although he had just stepped into the second stage of Life Destruction, he had already reached large success of the second stage. Despite the fact that he wasn't yet at the peak, this couldn't be considered too far from the third stage of Life Destruction. This was the superiority that came from having an incomparably solid foundation. Once one broke through, they would easily be able to touch upon the next realm.

With every step Lin Ming took, he could feel that every breath he took contained a touch of fragrance. Even his bodily fluids like his saliva and sweat had an aromatic and fresh scent. This was because after he was reborn with a spirit body, not only were there no impurities in his body, but any casual movement he took was able to direct heaven and earth origin energy into his body, flooding every corner of his being with that pure energy.

Mortals loved to describe the bodily fragrance of a fairy maiden as having been untouched by the fires and smoke of men, their bodies not smelling like the wine and meat of the mortal world. The reason for this was because they ate rare spirit flowers and fruits every day, and what they drank was the fresh mountain dew of the early morning. Only through this way could they guarantee that their bodies weren't tainted by the impurities of common mortals.

But Lin Ming didn't need to do any of this. He could eat rice and meat just like a common mortal, and because he now possessed a spirit body, he would naturally eliminate all impurities from his body and refine pure energy.

This was also the reason why the Life Destruction stages were called the process when a martial artist was reborn.

"Little Brother Lin, Old Man Good Fortune's letter has arrived. He will arrive at Port State in three days and wait for you there." As Shibai saw Lin Ming leave seclusion, his eyes brightened for a moment before he spoke. For someone like Lin Ming, it would only be strange if he failed his breakthrough.

"Okay." Port State was a city located in the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom. It was close to the 8000 Mile Black Swamp and not too far away from where the Temple of Marvels was located.

"Little Brother Lin, I will personally bring you to Port State. But everything after that will depend on your own ability. You must be extra cautious. Although you broke through to the second stage of Life Destruction, it is still far away from making up for the gap between you and a Divine Sea powerhouse."

Shibai said in his estimation. He didn't know that Lin Ming had broken through the Gate of Pain, so it was naturally impossible for him to estimate Lin Ming's combat strength.

"Then I must trouble Patriarch Shibai," Lin Ming didn't refuse the offer.

Three days later, at a courtyard deep within Port State, a Godspeed Boat flew in and dropped off a young man and woman. These two appeared as if they were 20-30 years old, but the truth was that they had already practiced martial arts for over sixty years. They only had a youthful appearance because they had crossed Life Destruction at a very young age.

These two people were the hidden Ascetics of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom and some of the most astounding youths of their generation. The young man was named Yang Mu, and his cultivation was impressively at the seventh stage of Life Destruction. However he didn't have a dantian variation, so he was slightly inferior to Situ Yaoyue in that aspect. Nonetheless, his comprehension of Laws actually surpassed hers, and he had also comprehended an elementary battle spirit.

The young woman was named Qin Yu. She was not part of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's royal family, but rather a disciple with a different last name. Although her cultivation was only at the sixth stage of Life Destruction, if one looked carefully at her dantian, they could see that all sorts of strange phenomena were occurring within. There seemed to be a faint space developing within her dantian and her true essence also appeared as if it were condensing into liquid. This was the sign that she was beginning to enter the Divine Sea!

After a martial reached the Houtian realm, that was the time they opened their dantian and would begin to train it. During the Houtian realm, one's true essence would be a mess without any organization to it, so their reserves of true essence would be extremely limited.

Once the true essence within the dantian condensed into a cyclone, there would then be order. The total amount of true essence would increase and it would also become much easier to control.

And after arriving at the Revolving Core realm, true essence would solidify into a Revolving Core crystal nucleus. During this time, their total true essence quantity would rise several times.

During the stages of Life Destruction, there would be no changes in the dantian. Rather, a martial artist's physical body would transform into a spirit body and they would gain the characteristic of saving true essence in their flesh. This would again cause the total quantity of true essence within them to increase by several times.

After arriving at the Divine Sea realm, a martial artist's body would be completely soaked in true essence, without any more space to store more. And at this point, countless billions of years ago, the innumerable Supreme Elders that had forged the foundation for the road of martial arts had developed a new path. This was to form a minor dimension within the dantian, and after true essence liquefied, to store that true essence within!

The size of this minor dimension depended on a martial artist's foundation and strength; it could be small or large. When an eighth stage Life Destruction powerhouse finally reached the late Divine Sea realm, that minor dimension would be extremely vast. The liquid true essence would surge and tumble just like a vast sea. Thus, this boundary was called the Divine Sea!

To a martial artist, the Divine Sea realm was a major leap upwards. The word 'Divine' also indicated that martial artists who stepped into this realm gained the power of a god in the eyes of mortals. Their fists could shatter the skies, their feet could crack the earth, and they were capable of upturning the oceans. They were simply omnipotent beings!

And now, this young woman named Qin Yu had given birth to a rudimentary minor dimension within her dantian, with half of her true essence liquefied. This was the sign that she was a half-step into the Divine Sea realm!

Once one reached half-step Divine Sea, then barring any accident, they would be able to become a Divine Sea Supreme Elder within two or three years.

This Qin Yu was already destined to become a Divine Sea powerhouse.

Chapter 876 – All Heroes Gathered

Chapter 876 – All Heroes Gathered

…

…

…

The Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom was the most powerful of the four Divine Kingdoms, and thus their number of geniuses far outstripped that of the Asura Divine Kingdom. Although a talent on the level of Situ Yaoyue was once in a millennium to the Asura Divine Kingdom, in the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom she would have appeared every 300-400 years.

“Crown Prince Your Highness!”

Yang Mu and Qin Yu greeted Yang Yun, but there wasn’t much respect showing on their faces. Qin Yu was already a half-step Divine Sea master, and would become a Divine Sea Supreme Elder in just a few more years, enjoying similar treatment to a High Prince. She naturally didn’t need to bow to the Crown Prince.

As for Yang Mu, he was already 70 years old and had a seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation. In the future there was a chance he would become a top level character like the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor, so he naturally wouldn’t respect someone like Yang Yun who was over 30 years younger than him. In fact, Yang Mu was very unwilling to accept that Yang Yun had inherited the position of Crown Prince. Yang Mu even had faint thoughts of replacing him.

“Elder Brother Mu, Fairy Qin.” Yang Yun faintly smiled as he greeted them. “Tomorrow, the four Divine Kingdoms will remove the blockade and officially enter the Temple of

Marvels. This exploration might even reveal the secrets of the Sea of Miracles. It is of great significance. Moreover…”

As Yang Yun spoke to here, he took out a blue jade slip, “My Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom was the first to bring back information about the Temple of Marvels from our probe. As for the Seven Star Divine Kingdom and the Asura Divine Kingdom, all of the puppets and slaves they sent in died, so they have no information. As for the explorer from the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom, he didn’t dare to go too deep into the Temple of Marvels, so their information isn’t as detailed as ours! Take a look. This information came at a significant cost, so make sure you keep it absolutely secret.”

As Yang Yun spoke, he tossed the blue jade slip towards Yang Mu and Qin Yu.

After the two looked through it, their expressions changed. Yang Mu’s eyes lit up. “The Temple of Marvels is related to the secrets of the ancient times’ martial artists that ascended?”

“It’s our speculation.” Yang Yun calmly nodded.

The so-called ancient times referred to the period of time 100,000 years ago. That was when the Sky Spill Continent’s martial arts civilization was at its most glorious and prosperous era. Compared to the current times, it seemed as if they were two completely separate worlds.

According to the legends, 100,000 years ago, when a martial artist reached the middle Divine Sea realm, they would have a reasonable chance of ascending into the Divine Realm. As for those unrivalled talents with strength that far surpassed martial artists of their level, they could break through the martial void at the early Divine Sea realm or even eighth stage Life Destruction realm and ascend upwards.

But in the last 100,000 years, there were far too few martial artists that were able to ascend to the Divine Realm. There were only the few widely known and extremely rare martial artists like Emperor Shakya and the Demon Emperor that were known to have ascended. As for some others that were said to have ascended, no one knew if they had succeeded or died in the process.

Moreover, it was a complete riddle just how these people had ascended. It seemed as if once they reached a certain amount of strength, they had formed a phenomenon of the heavens and earth and simply vanished.

Even top level characters like the Sublime Smelting Imperial Grand Uncle and the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor had no idea how to ascend upwards.

After flying into the Divine Realm, there were advantages as well as disadvantages. In the Sky Spill Continent, characters like the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor could be said to control the world in their palms with no one daring to slight them. But once they reached the Divine Realm, they would actually be more miniscule then a nameless peon. If they tried to explore a mystic realm, they would easily die four or five times if someone tried to slap them to death.

Even so, there were many masters that wished to ascend, especially the juniors. Those that were able to reach the Divine Sea could be said to have a devoted heart towards their road of martial arts; it was difficult for them to be tempted by any of the pleasures of the world. To them, only further martial arts breakthroughs would bring them joy and fulfill their obsessions.

The Sky Spill Continent was too limited. Not to mention the resources, but the environment and inheritances there were simply a blank slate. In the Sky Spill Continent, for the inheritances of Concepts and Laws to reach the second or third boundary, that was already first class. As for the seven or eight boundaries behind that, no one in the Sky Spill Continent had even heard of them before.

This sort of martial arts inheritance was accumulated over hundreds of thousands, or even millions of years, through the combined effort of countless martial artists. No matter how talented one was, it was impossible for a single person to accomplish all of this.

To stay in the Sky Spill Continent meant that one would be destined to have no luck in reaching a realm above the Divine Sea and also be limited to 10,000 years of life. All of the juniors to have reached this stage were chosen prides of heaven, and all of them were ambitious individuals. Just who was willing to watch the thousands of years pass them by before they slowly turned into bones?

Taking a step back, even if they didn't manage to accomplish anything in the Divine Realm, it seemed that there was a way to re-enter the lower realms. Although they needed to pay some price, there was hope.

As Yang Mu and Qin Yu thought of this, both of them appeared excited and looked forwards to this jaunt into the Temple of Marvels more and more. This would relate to both of their future achievements.

………….

After Lin Ming arrived at Port State, he saw Old Man Good Fortune sitting near a table in a courtyard, his appearance still otherworldly and wizened as it had always been. His green ox was grazing underneath a tree. Looking at this scene, it was impossible to imagine that he might be the current top master of the entire Sky Spill Continent.

"Greetings to Senior Good Fortune!"

"Little Friend Lin does not need to be so courteous. During this trip into the Temple of Marvels, I fear that those old fellows Yang Laotian and Ouye Hua will also come. Although old me has confidence to defeat them one on one, if the two of them joined forces then I would definitely lose! Moreover, besides those two fellows, there will also be many masters that have stayed hidden so far, with early and middle Divine Sea martial artists everywhere. The younger generation, including you, should only enter to gain experience. Make sure that you take your own safety as your top priority."

Old Man Good said in a gentle tone as he sat on a stone stool, his hands leaning on his peach walking stick. The Yang Laotian he referred to was the Nine Furnace Highest Divine

Emperor, and Ouye Hua was the Sublime Smelting Imperial Grand Uncle. Both of them were characters that had lived for 5000-6000 years and were unfathomable.

It had already been thousands of years since Old Man Good Fortune fought with Yang Laotian. It was impossible to determine just how strong he had become since then.

“This junior understands.”

Lin Ming nodded. The truth was that while one of the reason he came to the Temple of Marvels was to seek lucky chances, that wasn’t the most important reason. The reason that he would take the risk and journey into the Temple of Marvels was also because he wished to investigate the secret of the Sea of Miracles and the Eternal Demon Abyss. He faintly felt that it was related to the fall of the Sky Spill Continent’s martial arts world 100,000 years ago. He wanted to know just who that Great Emperor was that had left the heart that still kept beating after 100,000 years, and just what the identity of that peerless goddess was.

It was impossible for him to guess what realm that unrivalled Great Emperor was at. But in terms of life alone, a late Divine Sea martial artist could live for 10,000 years.

Taking a step further, at the next great boundary, it stood to reason that one could live for tens of thousands of years.

As for the boundary after that, that should be 100,000 years of life. And as for that unrivalled Great Emperor who had left his heart in the Eternal Demon Abyss, his heart still kept beating after 100,000 years. Moreover, it was filled with rushing blood vitality, every beat being able to move the heavens and earth. If so, just how long was he able to live for? It was simply unimaginable!

Lin Ming had inherited the memories of many Divine Realm powerhouses. Although they were all incomplete memories, he could still approximate just what status that unrivalled Great Emperor had within the Divine Realm. He was definitely a peak, top level character, in no way inferior to the legendary World Kings!

To such a singular and unsurpassed hero, Lin Ming was filled with curiosity and respect towards his majesty and life story.

On the next day, the skies above the 8000 Mile Black Swamp welcomed a crowd of the Sky Spill Continent's peak powerhouses. The four Divine Kingdoms, Holy Lands, and various hidden masters around the world did not want to miss such a rare opportunity.

There was no need to mention why the young Divine Sea powerhouses came; as long as they could come across some lucky chance, they could walk further down their martial path. As for the older Divine Sea powerhouses, they didn't have much hope for making further progress, but since their lives were already coming to an end, they might as well take this battle to the death and hope that they could bump into some amazing luck.

In addition, the various heroic young elites of the Divine Kingdoms and Holy Lands had come. They had come here mainly under the shelter of their Elders in order to see the world and open their minds.

For a time, hundreds of Saint Beast mounts, shining gold divine carriages, and jade spirit boats hundreds of feet long appeared in the skies, overflowing with divine light. This truly seemed like an auspicious sign!

Against such a big ruckus, the startled and scared vicious beasts of the 8000 Mile Black Swamp didn't dare to appear.

However, these vicious beasts were only the ordinary vicious beasts. If the truly terrifying phenomena of the 8000 Mile Black Swamp appeared, then even these great figures would have to make way. For instance, the Yellow Springs River or an ancient beast on the level of the sea serpent dragon.

Thus, even as these great figures seemed proud and haughty, they were in fact spreading their perception in all directions. As long as some type of phenomenon occurred that they weren't able to contend with, then they would be able to dodge ahead of time. Otherwise, if this strongest lineup of the entire Sky Spill Continent suffered serious losses before they could even reach the entrance to the Temple of Marvels, that would truly be a joke.

All the powerhouses were divided into five different waves. The first four waves were made up of the four Divine Kingdoms and the sects and family clans that followed them.

The last wave was comprised of the lone sects and scattered martial artists. This wave was the smallest and the weakest, with only a few dozen people there. The younger generation of this wave was even more sad; they were simply unable to compare with the four Divine Kingdoms.

“Mm? Old Man Good Fortune!” It wasn’t known which martial artist suddenly shouted this, but as everyone followed his gaze they could see the white-robed Old Man Good Fortune riding a green ox as they floated on a cloud. And behind him was a handsome young man who didn’t even seem like a martial artist, but rather an elegant scholar.

“Old Man Good Fortune! Lin Lanjian!”

Before now, those present didn’t know if these two would come. Even Yang Yun and Ouye Qingfeng weren’t sure.

As these two arrived, even Divine Sea Supreme Elders felt fear in their hearts. Old Man Good Fortune’s fame was too great!

As for Lin Ming, there was no need to mention him. He was an existence that absolutely could not be provoked. One only had to take a look at the Asura Divine Kingdom’s current fate to see what the outcome would be, and this was only the time when Lin Ming hadn’t yet grown. No one knew just what heights he would reach in ten years.

“Old Man Good Fortune, I didn’t think you would really come! You really have appeared too much this past while!” An old voice suddenly sounded out. On the side of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, an old man in a purple gold imperial robe suddenly stood up from a golden divine carriage. He was the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s Highest Divine Emperor, Yang Laotian.

Even Yang Laotian didn't know Old Man Good Fortune's real name. They only knew the moniker that he went by.

Old Man Good Fortune showed a smile that didn't seem as if it would change in 10,000 years. "Old me has just finished 800 years of seclusion, so I've been feeling a bit restless and wanted to come out and catch some fresh air. Brother Laotian should feel relieved. Old me only wishes to come to this Temple of Marvels to take a look, I'll make sure I don't bother Brother Laotian's little treasure hunt."

Seclusion for 800 years!?

There was a collective gasp from the surroundings. Many of the young martial artists present weren't even 80 years old yet. It was nearly impossible for them to imagine closing up for 800 years in one go!

Lin Ming thought this was hilarious. What these people didn't know was that while Old Man Good Fortune said he had gone into seclusion for 800 years, the truth was that it was only 80 years. He had slowed down the flow of time within his seclusion by ten times, thus 80 years there was equal to 800 years outside.

Chapter 877 – Entering the Temple

Chapter 877 – Entering the Temple

…

…

…

Yang Laotian's eyebrows audibly clicked together as he heard Old Man Good Fortune's words. Although he didn't believe such nonsense like that he would be able to close up for 800 years at a time, he was able to confirm that he certainly had some sort of secret skill to extend his life. That was his understanding of Time Laws. Yang Laotian couldn't say that this didn't tempt him, but against this Old Man Good Fortune, whose strength likely surpassed his own, Yang Laotian had no thoughts that he would be able to snatch the Concept of Time inheritance from Old Man Good Fortune's hands.

Yang Laotian thought for a moment and didn't continue to speak. He felt an extreme fear towards Old Man Good Fortune in his heart.

On the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom side, the Sublime Smelting Imperial Grand Uncle Ouye Hua greeted Old Man Good Fortune with a faint smile. He wasn't too familiar with Old Man Good Fortune – they were neither enemies nor friends. He wasn't like Yang Laotian, who had once fought with Old Man Good Fortune.

Lin Ming could feel gazes filled with intense hatred beaming onto his body from the crowd. As he looked around, he wasn't surprised at all to see that it was Situ Bonan and Situ Yaoxi.

'Those two old fellows are really haunting me like ghosts!'

Lin Ming's expression sank. Situ Yaoxi and Situ Bonan were nearing the end of their lifespan and they had originally relied on lucky chances to forcefully rise to the Divine Sea realm. If they missed this chance then their lives would come to an end in another 500-600 years. Lin Ming would have been shocked if they hadn't come.

"Haha, Brother Lin, you really came."

In the distance, Ouye Qingfeng and Yang Yun greeted Lin Ming, both of them cupping their hands across their chests. Lin Ming also greeted them in return.

In a brief glimpse, Lin Ming could see that there were several outstanding young elites standing beside Ouye Qingfeng and Yang Yun. Their cultivations were at the sixth and seventh stage of Life Destruction and the aura they released was no weaker than that of Situ Yaoyue.

"He's Lin Lanjian?"

Beside Ouye Qingfeng, a young man holding a blue sword arched his eyebrows upwards. His name was Ouye Qun and he was the same as Qin Yu, a sixth stage Life Destruction martial artist that was a half-step into the Divine Sea. However, he was just a tad stronger than Qin Yu. He had inborn purple tang meridians, a meridian variation.

However, those born with purple yang meridians were destined to have normal martial talent. Ouye Qin was finally unable to take that final step into the seventh stage of Life Destruction. And thus, with his sixth stage Life Destruction cultivation, he began to step into the Divine Sea.

To this end, Ouye Qun had also taken this to heart, constantly brooding over this. He had great ambitions, but if he wasn't able to step into the seventh stage of Life Destruction then he simply had no hope of ever becoming the highest under the heavens.

"That's right." Ouye Qingfeng nodded.

Ouye Qun narrowed his eyes. This Lan Lanjian was the future highest under the heavens? Just what secrets could be on his body?

"The Temple of Marvels is just in the dense fog ahead. The entrance is protected by a barrier of energy, and this energy barrier is weakest in the early morning and late evening. In just another incense stick of time, we will be able to enter!"

The one who spoke was the Sublime Smelting Imperial Grand Uncle. With his words, the group began to slowly make their way forwards. Lin Ming passed through the fog and watched as the legendary Temple of Marvels appeared in front of him.

The temple floated high above the clouds. From afar it emitted a dazzling golden light. It seemed to be carved from jade and the top of the temple pierced straight into the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion. Countless arcs of thunder surrounded the dome of the temple.

There was no signboard on the Temple of Marvels, only countless silver runes that covered the outside.

There were no doors leading to the great hall. Right in front of them was a row of massive columns that rose thousands of feet into the air, and in between these columns was a number of pitch black entrances. There was a strange force field that twisted these entrances, separating them from the outside world.

This sort of force field was not created by human hands. Rather, it appeared because of some mystical energy from within the Temple of Marvels. This energy was far too powerful so it naturally distorted the space around it, forming a closed force field. It was the same as the Eternal Demon Abyss' 1000 mile forbidden zone and the 8000 Black Swamp. And although the force field around the Temple of Marvels was smaller, it was far more formidable.

"I'll go first!"

Yang Laotian let out a long laugh and then drove his divine carriage to an entrance between two columns. As he approached the force field, he extracted a shining gold divine mace from his spatial ring and slammed it against the closed off force field, directly shattering it. The Divine Sea powerhouses of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom brought their heroic young elites in with them. In addition to the other Holy Land influences subordinate to them, over 50 people made their way in.

Soon after they entered, the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom followed close behind. Ouye Hua broke through the force field and brought in a group of over 40 people.

The Asura Divine Kingdom and the Seven Star Divine Kingdom went next, followed by the scattered martial artists.

Old Man Good Fortune didn’t seem to be in a hurry. He said to Lin Ming, “At the entrance to the Temple of Marvels, every gap between two pillars leads to a different place. Let’s choose a separate route so we don’t end up together with them.”

Old Man Good Fortune casually chose an entryway, then with a single pat of his palm the force field shattered, and he and Lin Ming calmly entered the Temple of Marvels.

....

Woosh… woosh… woosh…

Great black waves tumbled as they beat against rocks. Lin Ming stood on a desolate island beach.

A black sea spread out without end, appearing like the fabled Sea of Miracles.

And above this island there were giant trees that resembled umbrellas. These great trees were hundreds of feet high and not even a dozen people holding hands could wrap around the trunk. The little bits of light that made it through the canopy of these trees resembled stars. This world had no sun, but the little bit of star-like light coming from those trees illuminated the world.

“This shouldn’t be an island in the Sea of Miracles, right?”

Lin Ming was stunned. Even though he truly wished to discover the secrets of the Sea of Miracles, he was extremely frightened by this sea. He did not even have the slightest hope that he would be able to make it out. After all, his strength was far from comparable to the past highest under the heavens.

“No need to be anxious. This is only a world within the Temple of Marvels, a world of sand. Those ancient Supreme Elders with an extremely high cultivation were able to create independent spaces, so opening numerous worlds within this temple isn’t strange at all! This is also the fifth level of the Concept of Space – Spatial Genesis!”

“The fifth level?” Lin Ming was startled. He already knew that every Law was divided into several different levels. For instance, the Fire Laws were divided into nine different boundaries. The first two boundaries were the Concept of Burning Heat and the Concept of Annihilation, both of them corresponding to the first two worlds of the God Transforming Mirror. And behind these two worlds were more worlds, each corresponding to a different kind of Concept. The deeper one delved, the more profound and difficult it became to understand these Laws. Lin Ming was stranded at the second level of the Fire Laws; he hadn’t even been able to touch upon the entryway to the third level. Even so, Lin Ming’s achievements in the fire-attribute Concepts were already considered extraordinary.

And listening to Old Man Good Fortune’s words, it seemed that the ancient Supreme Elder who had created this Temple of Marvels had reached at least the Concept of Space’s fifth level. This was far too amazing!

“How many boundaries are there in the Space Laws? And what are they?” Lin Ming couldn’t help but ask.

Old Man Good Fortune didn’t hide anything. He directly said, “The Space Laws have a total of ten different boundaries. They are: Space Distortion, Heaven’s Divide, Dimensional Slash, Space Disruption, Spatial Genesis, Space Storm, Black Hole Vortex, Tenth Space Dimension, World Destruction, and World Creation!”

Old Man Good Fortune spoke out the names of these ten boundaries but didn't give a detailed explanation of them. Still, Lin Ming was shocked just hearing these names. He found it hard to imagine just what it was like the further back one went.

Old Man Good Fortune sighed, "The road of martial arts is endless and infinite. Of these ten different levels of Concepts, the first five are relatively simple. But, the latter half is nearly impossible to speculate. The so-called Space Storm is in truth controlling the power of space. With just a thought, you would be able to move space freely. As for Black Hole Vortex, that is the ability to compress space to a single point, collapsing all of existence into nothingness, forever unable to leave. As for the Tenth Space Dimension, even I haven't been able to figure out just what that is. Then there is World Destruction and World Creation. Those refer to the destruction and creation of a true realm; it's impossible to imagine just what sort of mighty force that would be!"

The planet that the Sky Spill Continent resided on was part of a true boundless realm. But, it was only one of the three thousand boundless worlds; it was impossible to calculate just how many worlds there were. The Divine Realm measured the lower realms by 1000 times 1000 times 1000, meaning that there were a billion worlds, thus naming it a true boundless realm. Every one of these boundless realms also had countless dimensional realms and minor dimensions located within them; it was incomparably complex.

To destroy and create such a terrifyingly massive world system – that was unimaginable!

"What boundary has Senior Good Fortune reached?" Lin Ming asked.

Old Man Good Fortune shook his head, "I've only been able to comprehend the third boundary – Dimensional Slash. It's impossible for me to think of reaching any further in my life."

As Lin Ming heard Dimensional Slash, he suddenly thought of that sword strike Old Man Good Fortune had used to defeat Situ Haotian. That had been the Dimensional Slash. To use a space fragment as a weapon and cut through all! Even though Situ Haotian had transformed his body into that of a Giant Demon, he still wasn't able to defend against it. They were simply on two completely disparate levels!

To comprehend the third level Concept, Dimensional Slash, was also impressively breathtaking.

"Little Friend Lin, the road in front of us isn't too hard. How about you help an old man lead the way?"

Lin Ming could hear the implicit meaning within his words. Old Man Good Fortune wanted him to gain more experience.

He pondered for a moment, hesitating, and then couldn't help but ask, "Senior Good Fortune, this junior has a question that he isn't sure whether it is proper to ask."

"There's no danger in asking."

"This junior would like to ask, why does Senior Good Fortune help this junior so much?"

Chapter 878 – The Link Between the Sea of Miracles and the Eternal Demon Abyss

Chapter 878 – The Link Between the Sea of Miracles and the Eternal Demon Abyss

…

…

…

After hearing Lin Ming ask such a question, Old Man Good Fortune congenially laughed and traced his white beard. "Little Friend Lin, the truth is that old me comes from the Divine Realm. I am the warden for the Sky Spill Continent's world, and am responsible for watching over the martial artists on both of the continents on this planet. Because this planet has been blocked off by some mysterious power, martial artists from the Divine Realm that are above the Divine Sea realm cannot descend here. At least, it is impossible for them to arrive with their true forms; they can only send a projection. And for the Divine Sea martial artists of this world, wanting to use their martial path to pierce the void is nearly impossible. They will need to leave through a special space channel, thus I am the one to recommend them."

Lin Ming was shocked by Old Man Good Fortune's few words. He couldn't believe that Old Man Good Fortune had such a status.

He came from the Divine Realm and was also the warden of this planet!

And listening to his words, he obviously knew of the existence of the Holy Demon Continent. This world had a total of two continents, the Sky Spill Continent and the Holy Demon Continent!

However, the more Lin Ming thought over this, the more reasonable it was. Old Man Good Fortune seemed as if he had come out from nowhere, and had an extremely mystical history within the Sky Spill Continent. Even the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor and the others didn't know his true name or status, only the moniker that he went by.

Moreover, Old Man Good Fortune had extremely high achievements in the Concept of Space and the Concept of Time. This also explained why he was able to have these in the Sky Spill Continent, where there were basically no inheritances of Space and Time Concepts.

If Old Man Good Fortune came from the Divine Realm and was simultaneously responsible for being the warden and also instructing and receiving certain individuals to ascend, then he wouldn't necessarily worry or care about Lin Ming threatening his current status once he became highest under the heavens. On the contrary, he might even help train him. If Old Man Good Fortune could help deliver a top talent to the Divine Realm, then the influence backing him might grant him certain resources.

Thinking about it, when Emperor Shakya ascended into the Divine Realm 3000 years ago, that was also the time when Old Man Good Fortune and the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor had once fought, resulting in a tie. Afterwards, Old Man Good Fortune had become increasingly old. His strength should have declined since then, but he instead managed to make a breakthrough, improving his abilities once again. There was a chance that this was because Emperor Shakya was simply far too talented an individual and thus the Divine Realm influence had given him very rich rewards in return, allowing him to make another breakthrough in his old age and also likely being the reason for extending his life.

In that flash, Lin Ming immediately understood everything that had happened. No wonder Old Man Good Fortune said he couldn't teach him or be his master. It was likely that Old Man Good Fortune had come to a deep understanding of him and even knew of his dual body and essence cultivation.

"So you're saying that Emperor Shakya, the Demon Emperor, and others didn't rely on their own strength to break through the void with their martial path and ascend, but rather had other similar wardens that delivered them upwards?"

“That’s right.” Old Man Good Fortune wryly laughed and said with a bit of helplessness, “Old me is simply too stupid and untalented. I was stranded at the middle Divine Sea realm for 500 years and had no hopes for further breakthroughs. In the Divine Realm, the competition between martial artists is too intense, and I was tired of being far weaker than everyone else. Thus I took the initiative to apply for the lower realms, where I would be able to live freely and grandly!”

Lin Ming felt this was a bit ironic. He was someone from the Divine Realm that wanted to descend, but the people from the lower realms wished to ascend. Those old fellows of the Sky Spill Continent all desperately desired to soar into the Divine Realm, but their talent was no more than that of Old Man Good Fortune. Old Man Good Fortune had likely broken through the middle Divine Sea realm before 500 years of age. The only martial artists of the Sky Spill Continent that could accomplish something similar were top level characters like Situ Haotian.

Old fellows like the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor all wished to enter the Divine Realm, thinking that massive lucky chances were just waiting for them everywhere. But now it seemed that if they really went, they would probably get beaten up badly wherever they went, or perhaps just directly die.

Only such magnificent and glorious individuals like the Demon Emperor and Emperor Shakya were able to go to the Divine Realm to seek greater lucky chances in hopes that they would be able to surpass the Divine Sea realm.

“Senior said just now that the Sky Spill Continent’s world is blocked by some mysterious strength?”

“Yes! This strength comes from the Sea of Miracles. Every martial artist above the Divine Sea is unable to step into the Sky Spill Continent.” Old Man Good Fortune shook his head. If it weren’t for this reason, then him having applied to be the warden of this planet with his middle Divine Sea cultivation would have been far too embarrassing.

“Then what about the Eternal Demon Abyss?” Lin Ming suddenly asked.

Old Man Good Fortune was slightly startled. “You know about the Holy Demon Continent and the Eternal Demon Abyss?”

“Mm… this junior accidently stumbled upon an opportunity and obtained the inheritance of Senior Demon Emperor. I managed to reach the Holy Demon Continent through the transmission array at the Demon God Imperial Palace, and also experienced the Eternal Demon Abyss during my time there. This junior would like to know, just how are the Eternal Demon Abyss and the Sea of Miracles related?”

Lin Ming didn’t conceal anything, nor did he need to. He could now see that Old Man Good Fortune was someone that didn’t have great ambitions, otherwise he wouldn’t have come down to become the warden of this world. Moreover, there was little within the Demon God Imperial Palace that he would like.

“Eternal Demon Abyss… Sea of Miracles…” Old Man Good Fortune revealed a trace of reverence and awe as he heard these two names. “I don’t know the specifics as to what happened at those two places, but I do have some speculations…”

“Mm? Senior, please speak them!”

“Little Friend Lin, I’m not sure whether you know this, but the Sky Spill Continent and the Holy Demon Continent are in fact located on a celestial body, and the shape of this celestial body is that of a sphere, similar to the sun in the skies.”

“Sphere?” Lin Ming was stunned. Although he obtained some knowledge about celestial bodies from the Divine Realm Supreme Elders’ memories, it was a bit strange and magical to suddenly realize that the earth underneath his feet was in the shape of a sphere.

“The Eternal Demon Abyss and the Sea of Miracles are directly ‘underneath’ each other. Does this form any associations in your mind?”

“This is…” Lin Ming’s mind began to race. Old Man Good Fortune’s meaning was that the Eternal Demon Abyss and the Sea of Miracles were on exact opposites of this spherical planet, each of them both above and below the other. This sort of wondrous positioning caused Lin Ming to feel as if he could faintly understand something, but he couldn't yet put it into words.

Old Man Good Fortune took a deep breath and then, with a hint of fear glinting in his eyes, he slowly said, "If I'm not wrong, the Eternal Demon Abyss and the Sea of Miracles pass directly through each other, connecting through an unfathomable abyss that runes between them. And, the reason for this abyss being formed is likely because a Divine Realm Supreme Elder pierced through this planet, thus leaving this path! The Sea of Miracles is much larger than the Eternal Demon Abyss, so my guess is that the Sea of Miracles is the point of initial impact. As for the Eternal Demon Abyss, that should be the exit point of that attack that was left over after it pierced directly through this planet."

"…What?" As Lin Ming heard Old Man Good Fortune's words, his eyes went perfectly round, his mind boggled!

Just how great was the planet that the Sky Spill Continent was on? It was unimaginable… he feared that it was over 100 million miles wide in diameter!

To pierce through such a massive planet, just what kind of strength was needed for this!? This was incomprehensible. Was this done by a legendary Empyrean from the Divine Realm?

Old Man Good Fortune said, "The Divine Realm is far too vast, with countless worlds. Those Supreme Elders of the Divine Realm can simply wave their hands to destroy the heavens, collapse moons, and sink stars. To them, piercing through a planet with a single strike isn't much at all…"

Chapter 879 – Top Grade Spirit Vein

Chapter 879 – Top Grade Spirit Vein

…

…

…

Lin Ming continued with Old Man Good Fortune all the way forwards. He grasped his red spear as he led the way. As they walked down, the forest that was filled with countless massive umbrella-shaped plants began to become bleak and desolate. The ground started to turn bumpy, covered with holes that revealed bare stones that shined with a blue and black light.

Looking up at the sky, crushed stones filled the air, shining and glittering like jewels, as if they were a chain of gems.

At this time, a figure unexpectedly appeared in front of them. As Lin Ming locked his eyes on this newcomer, his heart immediately turned cold.

This figure was an old woman. Her appearance was ancient and her body was bent with rickets. It had actually turned out to be… Situ Yaoxi!

“What is going on here?”

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with surprise. He didn’t fear Situ Yaoxi at all. Let alone the fact that Old Man Good Fortune stood behind him, but even if he were alone he would feel no fear at all.

Only Lin Ming and Old Man Good Fortune had entered this space, so it should have been only the two of them here. How did Situ Yaoxi make her way here? Had she managed to enter this world through some other entrance? Even if that were true, then what about the other Asura Divine Kingdom martial artists that were with her?

As he looked back at Old Man Good Fortune, he was surprised to see him in thought.

Old Man Good Fortune only smiled back at Lin Ming, obviously with the intention of letting him handle this situation.

At this time, Situ Yaoxi's hair was a mess and there were wounds marked all over her body, as if she had just emerged from a catastrophic battle. After she saw Lin Ming, she began to stumble her way towards him, saying, "Don't attack me, there is a horrifying monster in front of us that has swallowed up so, so many people…"

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. He simply didn't care about her words. At this moment, he suddenly felt something strange about Situ Yaoxi's body. Once he connected that to the strangeness of seeing her here, his heart suddenly chilled.

Something was wrong with this situation.

Situ Yaoxi's eyes suddenly flashed with a cold light. She leapt forwards like a giant caterpillar, stretching out a pair of demon claws as she grasped at Lin Ming's throat.

"Who are you?"

Lin Ming loudly shouted out as he drew backwards. The red spear in his hands swept out, cutting the 'Situ Yaoxi' in front of him in half!

With a miserable scream, a purple monster shaped like a fox flew outwards. This creature's body seemed illusory and unreal. Even though Lin Ming's spear had solidly cut into its body, it actually didn't cause much damage.

"What is this thing?"

This was the first time that Lin Ming had seen such a monster that was able to use his own memories to create an illusion. After coming to this strange world, and knowing that Situ

Yaoxi had also come, it would be very easy to be confused by this scene. If Lin Ming didn't have a silver battle spirit and a formidable will and soul, he would have fallen for this monster's tricks.

The purple fox issued out grating screams at Lin Ming, the sharp sounds directly piercing into his ear drums.

Even with Lin Ming's strength, this sort of sonic attack still caused his blood to surge, making him feel as if he were about to vomit. At this time, the purple fox took this chance to leap forwards, directly impacting towards Lin Ming!

Bang!

The surroundings changed. Lin Ming suddenly found himself in a vast and endless purple world. Above him, the phantom of a massive fox overlooked him, its jaws open as if it wanted to swallow him!

World of will?

This fox monster actually knew how to use will attacks?

Lin Ming couldn't help but be startled. A battle spirit was an elusive and difficult concept to grasp. Even humans could normally only comprehend a battle spirit at the Divine Sea realm. But for monsters and beasts, this was far more difficult. For instance, Demonshine would have a nearly zero chance of comprehending his own battle spirit.

Lin Ming didn't know how this fox comprehended a battle spirit, nor did he care. In a battle in the world of will, he didn't even fear a late Divine Sea powerhouse.

Ca!

The silver battle spirit shot out like a bolt of snow white silk, turning into a silver sword that reached across the entire world of will, slicing through the boundless skies!

“You… how can you have such a powerful will!?” The purple fox spat out in utter panic and fear. In the next moment, the giant phantom fox’s head had been sliced off by Lin Ming’s sword of will, a massive amount of blood raining down onto the world!

Peng!

The purple fox head burst apart, turning into blue smoke that quickly vanished.

Lin Ming looked at the blue smoke that filled the air and discovered that this purple fox was an existence that was both material and incorporeall. He simply didn’t know what it was; this was his first time encountering such a strange existence.

“It is a dreameater fiend.” Old Man Good Fortune slowly said, “This is a legendary creature that takes the dreams and souls of others as its food. It can hypnotize human martial artists and specializes in having them dream so that it can swallow them. It can have a person sleep forever, never awakening again. Or perhaps it might just kill them in their dreams. If someone were to be killed by this dreameater fiend in their dreams, then they really would die in reality.”

“This sort of vicious beast is extremely powerful in will and soul, thus it was able to form its own battle spirit. At the start, I was nearly tricked by it.”

“Dreameater fiend…” Lin Ming repeated this creature’s name. Back when he had made his way up the Sorcerer Pagoda, he had encountered a creature named Yan Mo who survived in a spatial slit and lived off of the dreams of others. This sort of creature was naturally familiar with illusions and ghosts, and it was nearly impossible for a human to guard against. Especially for those people that had heart demons lurking within them; it was extremely easy for their mental state to fall to this sort of attack.

The boundless universe contained all possibilities and all sorts of strange vicious beasts. There were countless methods to kill others. If one wasn’t careful then anyone could easily die.

“Let’s continue forwards. These types of dimensional realms are usually interlinked with each other at certain areas. After some time, it is likely that we’ll run into other martial artists.

“Mm.”

Lin nodded and continued forwards. After just an incense stick of time, a finger thick red line suddenly shot out at Lin Ming’s neck. This red line was as quick as a bolt of lightning, forming a red phantom a thousand feet behind it, leaving one unable to respond in time!

“Concept of Time!”

Lin Ming’s pupils shrank as the flow of time suddenly slowed down around him. His red spear thrust out like a snake, piercing the front of this red line!

Peng!

A fog of blood burst into the air. Lightning spread along the red line, swallowing it up all the way down.

“Kill!”

His spearpoint swept out, forming a crescent moon. An arc of spear light recklessly shot out, splitting that 1000 foot red line down the middle!

“What is this thing?”

Lin Ming looked at this strange lifeform on the ground and felt a creepy tingle on his scalp. This finger thick, 1000 foot long ‘roundworm’ didn’t have eyes or ears. It only had a single circular opening at the front that had rows of sharp teeth. These teeth were like barbs and glowed with a ghostly green light; they were obviously poisonous.

“This should be a vampiric roundworm. It is a type of parasite found in the Divine Realm. In the Divine Realm, there are countless desolate ancient beasts with the bloodline of God Beasts. These creatures can have bodies a thousand feet long, with blood vessels as thick as massive trees and thousands of feet long, or even tens of thousands of feet long. This vampiric roundworm parasite specially latches onto the blood vessels of these ancient desolate beasts and sucks their blood with their only mouth. Because they grow in a lightless environment, they have no eyes or ears, and only depend on their sense of smell to feel out the strength of blood vitality. Because your blood vitality is so potent, that is the reason that this creature attacked you. Although its defenses are weak, its speed is extremely quick; it can easily pierce through the heart of someone without them noticing.

“So it was a parasite…” Lin Ming gulped, speechless. This was a 1000 foot long parasite!

“Your Concept of Stagnation was decent, able to change the flow of time. But in the end you were relying on the entire energy field, and there was no difference in density in your energy field. It was the same all around, resulting in a weakened effect. If you could concentrate this Concept into an area and directly launch it towards that vampiric roundworm, then you could have its speed drop 10 times more. Unless it had the strength to break apart your energy field, you would then be able to freely slaughter it.”

Although Old Man Good Fortune’s martial talent was average and he only held the most miniscule role in the Divine Realm, he had still lived for 7000-8000 years. With his cultivation, vision, and experience that was even richer than Demonshine’s, even casually giving Lin Ming some pointers was of great benefit to him.

“No wonder they say that inheritances are the foundation for a sect’s existence. With inheritances, walking down one’s martial path will become that much easier. Otherwise, without knowing the way to go, even constantly being in seclusion would make it difficult to take even the tiniest steps.”

With a teacher like Old Man Good Fortune, who was familiar with the Laws of Space and Time, Lin Ming intended to incorporate some Space and Time Laws into his attacks. Old Man Good Fortune could point out some flaws in his abilities and then Lin Ming would be able to make adjustments accordingly and gain benefits from that.

Following this, the more fights he crossed, the easier it became. Evil spirits, demonic wraiths, vicious beasts, all sorts of strange and fantastical enemies fell before Lin Ming's spear.

Lin Ming fought like this the entire time, tempering himself in true battle. Like this, they continued for seven days and seven nights. Because of Lin Ming's strong regenerative abilities, he only needed to rest once.

During this time, Lin Ming encountered many tricky enemies and was also injured several times. Even so, he had never needed Old Man Good Fortune to help him.

With Old Man Good Fortune's guidance, Lin Ming gained an increasingly profound understanding into the Concepts of Space and Time. He was able to integrate the understandings he had gained from the jade slips into his spear attacks, becoming more and more skilled at doing so.

Like this, on the tenth day, Lin Ming and Old Man Good Fortune passed through a thin space barrier, coming into another space altogether. The heaven and earth origin energy here was extremely rich, and high mountain peaks shot into the skies, extending all the way up. The blue skies were awash with clouds as if they were a painting.

The ground was an endless grassland, and there were all sorts of mystical trees and rare flowers growing here. This was not spirit grass that was purposefully planted here, but wild medicinal plants that had naturally bred here because of the amazingly thick heaven and earth origin energy.

"What great rich heaven and earth origin energy. There should be a top grade spirit vein here. There might even be several top grade spirit essence stones that have formed here!"

A top grade spirit essence stone was the very source of a spirit essence stone mine. These types of spirit essence stones had nearly vanished from the world. It was already considered very fortunate for a single top grade spirit essence stone to be extracted from an entire spirit essence stone mine. Moreover, most of them had already been used up. These top grade spirit essence stones would only appear if new mines were discovered.

This was a treasure that would cause even a Divine Sea Supreme Elder to go mad with envy for, brutally struggling with others for it. It was enormously helpful for a martial artist to make breakthroughs in bottlenecks. Even a dignified Divine Sea powerhouse like Shibai had only collected a small piece of top grade spirit essence stones one-sixth the size of a normal-sized piece. Shibai had given this piece to Lin Ming to help him cross Life Destruction. At that time, the tiny scrap of top grade spirit essence stone had been very helpful to Lin Ming.

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that an entire high quality top grade spirit essence stone wouldn't be much worse than a heaven-step Demon God Bone!

"Top grade spirit essence stone..." Lin Ming's eyes brightened. Now that his spirit body had been 100% tempered, he was countless times stronger than other Life Destruction martial artists at his cultivation level. His foundation was incomparably solid. As long as he had enough of these top grade spirit essence stones then he would be able to make great strides in his cultivation and be able to rapidly break through boundaries.

Chapter 880 – Master of the Bronze Ghost Coffin

Chapter 880 – Master of the Bronze Ghost Coffin

…

…

…

Lin Ming and Old Man Good Fortune continued to walk towards the core of the dimensional realm where the spirit vein source was.

On their way, they passed all sorts of divine and magical spirit flowers and trees. Flowing rivers and streams crossed the grasslands like elegant roads of blue jade. These rivers were filled with all sorts of beautiful and exquisite fish. After staying at such a mystic land, these fish had already gained consciousness with the most simple form of intelligence.

"Silent nether flowers, ghostly fog grass, spotted sky grass…" Lin Ming called out the names of several different types of spiritual plants. As an alchemist, he had an extremely high understanding towards various spirit plant materials.

These sorts of spirit plants were bred within this spiritual treasure land. The younger ones were several hundred years old and the older ones were thousands of years old. And this was only because the lifespans of these spirit plants were limited by their grade. Otherwise, with as long as this Temple of Marvels had existed, there might even have been medicinal plants that were over 100,000 years old.

These many medicinal plants weren't too precious, but as an alchemist, whether it was for alchemy practice or truly concocting medicines, there would always be a place for medicinal plants of all ranks. The Cosmic Melting Furnace was simply a bottomless pit. No matter how many medicinal herbs Lin Ming threw in, he could refine that many.

Lin Ming started to unceremoniously pick up everything around him. As long as they were mature herbs, he would take them all.

"This is..."

Lin Ming saw a crimson tree in front of him, his eyes revealing surprise and disbelief.

This tree was only 20 feet tall and the roots twisted aboveground. From afar, it looked like horned dragons that had locked together in combat.

On the crown of this tree there were seven or eight fist-sized fruits. And, what was amazing was that each fruit beat like a heart, seeming as if they could quicken and suck away one's blood vitality. They were incomparably mysterious fruits.

On top of this 20 foot tall spirit tree, there were fruits that were like hearts!

"Dragonheart Tree. Looking at it, it must be over 50,000 years old!" Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath, his eyes flashing. Normally speaking, a spirit tree had a much longer lifespan than spirit grasses. A spirit grass was already considered quite excellent if it grew to a thousand years old, but to a spirit tree, a thousand years wasn't anything at all. In the mortal world, there were trees that lived for a thousand years and some trees that had lived for two thousand years.

That was how things were. But even so, a 50,000 year old spirit tree was nearly extinct within the Sky Spill Continent!

In particular, this Dragonheart Tree was especially beneficial to Lin Ming. The fruits of the Dragonheart Tree were magnificent medicines for body transformation; they were able to greatly supplement one's blood vitality. When Lin Ming finally began refining the medicine to open up the fifth of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, he could use these Dragonheart Fruits as the leading material!

"What a great tree. Unfortunately I have no way to move it, so I can only take away a few of the Dragonheart Fruits." Lin Ming said with a tinge of regret. The little dimension within his spatial ring could not contain living creatures. No matter how good a spirit tree was, it would slowly lose its vitality after being placed into a spatial ring. Although the roots of the Dragonheart Tree were also great materials, Lin Ming didn't want to do something so cruel and wasteful as ruining the pond just to get a few more fish. It was not easy for a heavenly treasure like this to form. It needed all sorts of lucky chances and a special environment before it would be bred. If he could move it away then that would be fine, but if he couldn't and actually destroyed the roots instead, that he would surely suffer some sort of karmic retribution.

This Dragonheart Tree was nearly extinct in the Sky Spill Continent. To pick the medicine and not destroy the roots was the unspoken rule of all alchemists. Doing so was also a good deed for himself.

At this time, Old Man Good Fortune suddenly spoke up and said, "Little Friend Lin, old me has several profound spirit pots; I can lend you one. A profound spirit pot can temporarily hold a spirit plant and can also maintain its spiritual nature.

As Old Man Good Fortune spoke, he fished out a palm-sized pot from his spatial ring. Although he called it a pot, it looked more like a rice bowl.

Old Man Good Fortune extended his hand. The pot spun in the air, rapidly growing larger.

Lin Ming was overjoyed as he saw this. Although this sort of pot had limited space, it was actually extremely valuable. Normally, an alchemist from the Divine Realm would have several of these on them, but in the Sky Spill Continent, these sorts of profound spirit pots were far too rare.

Just as Lin Ming was about to take the profound spirit pot, his heart moved. He asked, "Senior Good Fortune, wouldn't you like to use it?"

Old Man Good Fortune said, "I might be able to, but even if I needed to, I wouldn't need this much. As for these Dragonheart Fruits and other spiritual plants, they are already useless for me. They are better to be used for youngsters like you to break into higher boundaries. As for me, my problem comes from my own fires of life. With my fires of life diminishing, medicines that can help me with breakthroughs are useless; they won't be useful for me. The only type of medicine I want is one kind, and that is the type that can extend my life, moreover the quality must be higher than that of a 10,000 Year Peach Pith."

A life extending medicine was the most precious kind, as well as the most difficult to find. To cultivate the martial path was to struggle daily against the heavens; only by doing that could one extend their life. But, to use medicines to defy the will of the heavens and seize a longer lifespan, that was far more difficult. Over the endless years, there had been countless heroes that were eventually unable to contend with the overflowing river of time.

Moreover, the higher level a martial artist was, the higher grade of medicine they would need to extend their life. To someone like Old Man Good Fortune, even a 10,000 Year Peach Pith was no longer effective. After Old Man Good Fortune had brought Emperor Shakya upwards, he had actually obtained a life extending medicine, but after that there was nothing else.

With such harsh requirements, he would already be thankful to the heavens and earth if he could find just a little tiny bit of medicinal plant that could extend his life. He simply didn't need so many profound spirit pots.

Lin Ming wasn't too humble. He took the profound spirit pot and put away the Dragonheart Tree, as well as taking away the spirit earth around it. He covered the roots of the Dragonheart Tree to preserve its vitality.

At this point, Old Man Good Fortune's mind suddenly chilled as his breath caught in his chest.

"Mm?" Lin Ming also went on high alert. As he saw Old Man Good Fortune's sudden response, he maintained absolute vigilance, looking all around himself.

However, the vast grasslands were still as they were before. The wind blew through the swaying stalks and the spirit plants were still in full bloom without anything out of the normal.

After shutting his eyes for a moment, Old Man Good Fortune opened his eyes and shook his head. “Maybe I was being too cautious just now, but I had a feeling that someone was peeping at us... it was only a feeling; I might have made a mistake. Still, we should be careful. In this abundant land there might not necessarily be no enemies.”

“Mm.” Lin Ming nodded. Old Man Good Fortune’s boundary was amazing. Even a small, baseless idea might indicate extreme danger. Lin Ming increased his vigilance, making sure that nothing was out of place around him.

At this time, what Lin Ming didn’t know was that outside of the dimension he was in, within an underground chamber, there was a handsome and pretty demon youth sitting atop a bronze ghost coffin. He had a bamboo flute in his hands and a sly smile was blooming at the corners of his lips. “This old man is really vigilant, hehe...”

The demon youth played with the flute in his hands as he danced on the bronze ghost coffin. If Lin Ming were here, then he would have recognized that this bronze ghost coffin was the exact same one he had seen at the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. This bronze ghost coffin exuded a timeless, simple atmosphere with the breath of the Great Dao!

This ghost coffin was 30 feet long and yet its master was actually such a handsome and charming youth. His height was the exact same as a normal human’s, and his eyes were a deep purple, as if they contained the endless starry night within them.

He had sharp ears similar to the Fey race. His fingers were slender, his nails sharp, and his skin looked like it was carved from white jade. In fact, this made him seem a bit fragile.

At the side of this demon youth were six black-clothed underworld beings, each of them fierce and dangerous-looking. They were the six evil spirits that had pulled the coffin.

Each one of them had strength equal to a quasi Emperor from the Giant Demon race!

In front of these six black-clothed underworld beings, there was a white-clothed person standing there with a mask covering his face. His voice was deep and low as he said, “With Honored Sir’s strength, solving this Old Man Good Fortune shouldn’t be too difficult!”

“Humph! A mere late Divine Sea martial artist, and his life is also reaching its end. He is nothing but garbage. All he is good for is lording his minimal power over the Sky Spill Continent. If I was in my peak state then I wouldn’t even need half a finger to crush him to pieces! But now, since I had to use a special technique to overcome the force field in the Sea of Miracles, I must expend some effort. However…”

As the curious demon youth spoke to here, his eyes turned to the young man standing near Old Man Good Fortune. This youth was Lin Ming. The demon youth cackled, licking his lips as he said, “This young seedling you chose is quite good! I never imagined that the Sky Spill Continent would have such a great seedling! 23-24 year skeletal age, second stage Life Destruction cultivation, and he also cultivates in dual body and essence. Besides all this, he even has curious bloodlines on him. This is truly unbelievable! This boy must have some secret on him, otherwise it is impossible to grow to this degree in the Sky Spill Continent with its meager resources and trash level inheritances. Not to mention everything else, but just his body transformation technique does not exist on the Sky Spill Continent!

The masked man was silent. The strange demon youth raised his bamboo flute and then jumped down from the bronze ghost coffin. “I will deal with that old man. Everything else will be up to you!”

“Good.”

……………

“It’s here, this is the spirit vein source!”

Old Man Good Fortune and Lin Ming both had some experience in seeking spirit veins. They soon found the core of the dimensional realm, which was also where the spirit vein source was.

“Open!”

Old Man Good Fortune casually waved his hand and all of the surrounded soil divided apart, separated in half by some invisible force and revealing a deep channel that glittered all around. This flowing channel soon led into a cave.

This was a skill application of the power of space. One could substantialize space to open up a path.

Although Lin Ming’s current understanding into the Concept of Space was excellent and he could fuse the power of space into his attacks, it was still difficult for him to accomplish such an ingenious method like smoothly carving out a cave by just using the tyrannical and dominating power of space.

As they entered the cave, they walked around 100 steps before a light appeared before them. In front of Lin Ming and Old Man Good Fortune, a jade green world suddenly appeared.

The heaven and earth origin energy here was so thick that it condensed into droplets. This small space was filled with a layer of green mist. Just by casually taking a breath here, one could feel their soul and body be refreshed, saving them several days of hard training.

In this green fog, clusters of spirit essence stones freely grew like giant crystal formations, making it seem like a dream. This was a phenomenon that would only appear in a top grade spirit essence stone mine. In a normal spirit essence stone mine, the spirit essence stones would mix together with the impurities of the earth and would need to be refined several times in order to create an end product. It wouldn’t be like now where it was naturally pure.

And in the center of this cave, there was a milky white stalactite pillar jutting down from the roof. This pillar seemed as if it were made from translucent crystal and the interior glowed with a dim green light, as if there were some demon sealed with.

“This is the source of the top grade spirit essence stones, the core of the mine.”

Lin Ming took a deep breath. In this stalactite pillar, he could see that sealed within were top grade spirit essence stones.

Such a massive mine source would be able to produce 20-30 top grade spirit essence stones. This was an amount that the mines of the Sky Spill Continent could never compete with.

While Lin Ming was staring at the top grade spirit essence stones, Old Man Good Fortune's eyes were actually locked onto the stalactite pillar. The crystal clear stalactite seemed to be made from quartz. After a long time, a single drop slowly condensed onto the tip of that stalactite, gathering and gathering until it gained enough mass to drop down with a light dripping sound. This added onto a milky white pond at the bottom, forming ripples.

This pool was similar to the stalactite, faint and otherworldly. It looked as if it were made of milk.

"10,000 year stone milk!"

Old Man Good Fortune's voice was filled with excitement. He was a man with some aspirations after all; finally his hard work had paid off. After searching the continent for so many years, he had finally found a type of medicine that could extend his life.

Rather, it was more accurate to say that this pond of stone milk was 100,000 year stone milk. This sort of liquid could help revitalize a martial artist's fires of life. As long as a martial artist's cultivation was at the Divine Sea or below, this sort of material could extend their life by nearly 12 sixty year cycles.

And now, this 10,000 year stone milk in front of him had accumulated for over 100,000 years. If he could refine it, then it would be enough for Old Man Good Fortune to extend his life by the longest span possible. That would be 720 years of extra life!

To Old Man Good Fortune, this was the most precious type of treasure! How could he not be moved by it?

He took out an exquisite treasure box from his spatial ring and opened the lid. All of the stone milk gathered into a stream that was completely received into the small treasure box.

"Lucky, I'm far too lucky!" Old Man Good Fortune's face was flushed red with blood in his excitement. This stone milk was even slightly better than the treasures he was rewarded with for bringing Emperor Shakya into the Divine Realm!

As Lin Ming saw Old Man Good Fortune so ecstatic, he couldn't help but sigh in his mind. To a martial artist, age truly was fearful. One would slowly lose all their strength that they worked so hard for, lose their youthful appearance, and eventually even lose their life. Finally, they could only come to a conclusion that they would never be able to fully explore their road of martial arts. To them, this was truly a painful and heart-wrenching matter.

Even someone like Old Man Good Fortune, who didn't have many ambitions, would find it difficult to face old age and death with a calm manner.

As Old Man Good Fortune took that stone milk, Lin Ming also mined the spirit vein source that shined with a deep green divine light. It was the size of a head!

Such a large chunk of top-grade spirit essence stone was simply unheard of. In terms of just the essence gathering system, even though Lin Ming's process of crossing Life Destruction consumed far more energy than a normal martial artist's, it might still be enough for him to reach the Divine Sea!

Lin Ming was not greedy. He poured his silver battle spirit into a treasure dagger and sheared off four fifths of the top-grade spirit essence stone, leaving the other fifth. This leftover piece could serve as the core mine source, and after hundreds of thousands of years, it would condense and accumulate heaven and earth origin energy, eventually returning to its original size.

Otherwise, if he were to just take away everything at once, then this mine would immediately lower by a grade, causing all of the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy to be sparse and all the spirit plants to wilt and die. This was not a result that Lin Ming wished to see.

Old Man Good Fortune wasn't interested in the 20 plus top grade spirit essence stones. His cultivation was at the late Divine Sea realm; another step forwards would be stepping up another great boundary. Compared to entering the Divine Sea from Life Destruction, this process was much, much more difficult. Even if Old Man Good Fortune didn't come to the lower realms and stayed in the Divine Realm and diligently trained, it would still have been basically impossible for him to further enhance his cultivation.

Increasing his lifespan by several hundred years was already excellent. To make a breakthrough in his cultivation, reach the next great boundary and extend his lifespan by tens of thousands of years, that was something that could only happen in Old Man Good Fortune's dreams.

Lin Ming and Old Man Good Fortune could have been said to both be satisfied with their harvests. They decided to further explore this tunnel to see if there were other heavenly materials present, but at this moment, the world suddenly trembled around them, and an icy cold divine sense poured onto them like a pot of freezing water. Lin Ming instantly felt as if he had fallen into the nine nether abyss.

"Who is it!?"

Chapter 881 – Furious Battle

Chapter 881 – Furious Battle

…

…

…

Just from looking at this other party's aura, they were absolutely a terrifying opponent. If Lin Ming hadn't been discovered then he would have chosen to hide away, but now that this other party's divine sense had locked onto him, there was simply no place to run away to!

As he looked at Old Man Good Fortune, Lin Ming could see that his eyebrows were tightly wrinkled together. It was apparent that he didn't have much assurance against this opponent.

"It shouldn't be someone from the Sky Spill Continent. There are no powerhouses of this level within the Sky Spill Continent." Old Man Good Fortune said with a solemn expression. Although he came from the Divine Realm and could be called the warden of this world, the truth was that he really didn't have much to do with the Divine Realm anymore. The reason he came to this Temple of Marvels was to seek his own lucky chances. Against this mysterious existence within the Temple of Marvels, his Divine Realm background could not be used, and even if it could, it wouldn't have worked anyway.

Lin Ming and Old Man Good Fortune left the underground mine tunnel together. As they emerged, they saw that the originally dreamy, picturesque blue sky was now awash with billowing dark clouds and sparkling thunder.

With a loud bang, a blood red light perforated the vault of heaven, making it seem as if the sky was being torn apart. A bronze ghost coffin appeared in the skies, and above this coffin were six thick chains, each one held by demon-faced Asura spirit.

As Lin Ming saw this, his complexion completely changed. It looks like the unexpected events from the 8000 Mile Black Swamp were truly related to the Temple of Marvels!

Could it be that the entire Temple of Marvels was itself a trap?

Lin Ming's mind raced and he quickly retold the scene he saw in the 8000 Mile Black Swamp to Old Man Good Fortune with a true essence sound transmission. However, this was simply useless. Old Man Good Fortune just didn't know what the true connection was between the Sea of Miracles and the Eternal Demon Abyss. It was impossible for him to draw up any useful information from Lin Ming's description.

"Those six black evil spirits that are drawing that coffin are six refined Asura Ghost Slaves. Those six ghost slaves each have a quasi Emperor level strength. After being tempered for such a long time, their bodies are nearly indestructible, and with their strength combined together they are even stronger. This sort of Asura Ghost Slave is countless times more difficult and precious than those slaughter puppets that the Asura Divine Kingdom created. This is certainly not something that belongs to the inheritances of the Sky Spill Continent.

"And the material of that bronze ghost coffin is a top quality heavenly metal, great resisting profound bronze. It can even be used to produce a quasi-Saint artifact treasure. It's impossible to gather this much of that material even in all the mines of the Sky Spill Continent combined. Little Friend Lin, we are in deep trouble this time!"

Within the Sky Spill Continent, there was only a very small number of Saint artifacts and quasi-Saint artifacts. Nearly all of them were left over from ancient times 100,000 years ago. Even Lin Ming's Great Desolate Blood Halberd and Cosmic Melting Furnace were both found by the Demon Emperor in ancient ruins from 100,000 years past, finally ending up in Lin Ming's hands in the current era.

It was nearly impossible for the Sky Spill Continent to create Saint artifacts and quasi-Saint artifacts. One reason was that there weren't the necessary materials, and the second reason was that there weren't the legacy forging skills required.

Bang bang bang!

The ghost coffin shook and the entire dimensional realm seemed to tremble. As the chains struck the bronze coffin, it emitted a deafening clanging sound.

Old Man Good Fortune's face was grim. He extracted a four foot long sword from his spatial ring. He already had a foreboding feeling that this battle would be difficult.

Kacha!

A bloody thunder crashed down from the skies and the ghost coffin opened!

A slender figure appeared from within the dazzling light. This was the strange and pale demon youth. He held a war lance in his hands as he slowly descended to the earth from the ghost coffin. As he walked on the ground, the lance point furrowed the earth, the scratches seeming as if they could cut through the will of all, giving people an uncomfortable feeling that they couldn't identify.

"Hehe, the time for the great hunt has come!" The pale youth said with a thoughtful smile. Although he looked around 20 some years old, his voice seemed old and decrepit, tinted with the flavor of the years.

"Who are you?" Old Man Good Fortune stretched out his sword. As the sword tip touched the ground, space seemed to swirl around the sword blade, even twisting the cold light that emitted from the sword.

Old Man Good Fortune was completely unable to see the cultivation of this pale youth in front of him. Moreover, this pale youth hadn't bothered to hide it. That only meant there were two possibilities. This pale demon youth's cultivation system was different from that of humanity, or he was a powerhouse above the Divine Sea realm!

"Old man, I advise you not to waste your effort. Although you don't have much time left over, your cultivation is still decent for this trash continent. There still might be some uses in keeping you around."

As the pale youth spoke, his figure suddenly stormed forwards. The purple lance in his hands pointed forwards and endless star light seemed to flow out from his lance point. As his lance thrust out, it made one feel as if they were facing the endless universe!

Lin Ming's hands and feet went icy cold and he felt as if his soul had frozen. If just the pressure from this lance was so horrifying, then how terrifying would it be to directly face this?

Old Man Good Fortune's expression was grim. He took a step back, seeming as if he were rewinding. The flow of time seemed to twist around his sword. As he slashed out, his strike carried with it the feeling of the years. The brilliant sword light that followed seemed as if it had come from the nothingness of ancient times. Wherever it went, plants would rapidly grow and blossom, die, and bloom once again.

Concept of Time – Glory and Withering of Years!

The pale youth's lance light intensely collided with Old Man Good Fortune's time-breaking sword light. However, there was no sound or light from that collision. Instead, it seemed as if everything was being annihilated into infinite nihility.

Although there wasn't the terrifying explosion that was anticipated, this annihilating energy was even more terrifying. All light and material around this collision seemed to disappear, as if it never existed at all.

In that moment, Lin Ming stepped on Golden Roc Shattering the Void and quickly retreated!

Mm!?!?

As Lin Ming turned his head, he saw that the ghostly, black-dressed Yama had grasped a chain. And without any expression on their faces, had pulled it over Lin Ming!

These were the evil spirits that pulled the coffin!

Lin Ming's pupils contracted. With a sudden flick, the red spear in his hands swapped to the several hundred thousand jin Great Desolate Blood Halberd!

These six coffin pulling evil spirits all had strength equal to a quasi Emperor level martial artist. If it were Lin Ming from a year ago, who had just crossed Life Destruction, then it would have been impossible to defeat them. But now his strength had increased and he had also obtained the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. With halberd in hand, he was a god slaughtering demon!

"Gate of Pain – open!"

Lin Ming shouted out, the energy in his body revolving to the limit. The first four gates of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates suddenly opened together and two million jins of strength completely burst out in the blink of an eye!

A blinding divine light shined out from both of his hands, and two black energy-devouring vortexes appeared above his palms. This was exactly where the Gate of Pain was located.

Lin Ming grasped the halberd in both hands and steadied his waist. His spine drew backwards like a stretched bow as a great force concentrated up his legs and waist. The several hundred thousand jin Great Desolate Blood Halberd cut through a perfect arc as it smashed downwards!

Bang!

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd pounded into the chains, emitting a deafening bang as space collapsed and the earth caved apart. The 20 foot tall ghost slave and the chain it carried were actually swatted backwards by Lin Ming's halberd!

But at the same time, the other five ghost slaves rushed up together. They held chains in their hands, and these chains were also the same material of the ghost coffin – great resisting profound bronze!

Lin Ming had smashed away a single ghost slave, but it was impossible for him to simultaneously strike away five ghost slaves!

In this critical life or death moment, Lin Ming exploded with potential that surpassed his limits! Holding the halberd in one hand, he drew a crescent moon in the void. The power of space gathered on the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, forming a space storm. Great, countless cracks began to appear in space, as if a black mirror had been shattered!

Law of Annihilation, Chain of Stars!

A halberd struck out. The power of space condensed into fragments, each filled with the power of a silver battle spirit. As it combined with the howling annihilating flames, this destructive attack fired towards the five ghost slaves!

This was the first time Lin Ming had used the Great Desolate Blood Halberd to display a martial skill. Before now he hadn’t, because using the Great Desolate Blood Halberd consumed a great deal of energy. If he were to use a martial skill on top of this then that would create an immense burden on his body. As for Situ Yaoyue, even she had only driven the movement of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, only using its weight to fight Lin Ming.

But now in Lin Ming’s hands, with his great two million jin strength and his second stage Life Destruction cultivation, he was finally able to use a martial skill with the Great Desolate Blood Halberd!

Peng peng peng peng peng peng!

A series of metallic ringing sounds filled the skies, as if flying swords were striking against great copper bells. The five tempered Asura Ghost Slaves had bodies as tough as divine metal. The space fragments exploded in succession as they slammed into their bodies. This was the superiority of these ghost slave puppets. It was impossible for a flesh and blood being, no matter how they trained, to have such a terrifying defensive power!

“Let me see just how tough you are!”

Lin Ming’s eyes turned blood red. Not only did he have the space fragment attack of Chain of Stars, but there was also the Great Desolate Blood Halberd itself. He took a sudden step forwards as the Great Desolate Blood Halberd thundered forwards. A cold, bloody light directly impacted into the skies, illuminating the stars!

“Haaah!”

With a loud shout, and with the support of a martial skill, the silver battle spirit-infused Great Desolate Blood Halberd smashed into the chest of a ghost slave!

Just freely dropping the Great Desolate Blood Halberd could shatter a mountain ridge. With Lin Ming’s enormous strength behind it, the power of this strike could be imagined!

Bang!

Like a meteor crashing into the ground, a terrifying explosive sound resounded throughout the entire world. The ghost slave’s chest collapsed after being pounded by Lin Ming’s halberd, all of its organs bursting apart. Its body hurtled backwards, instantly sent back hundreds of miles before colliding into a far off mountain peak in the dimensional realm. After that, the entire mountain peak collapsed into a rumbling avalanche!

Bang bang bang!

Countless massive stones plummeted to the ground. That ghost slave had been miserably smashed to death by Lin Ming’s halberd!

After this strike, Lin Ming’s arm was still shaking. The glorious light emitting from the Gate of Pain on his palms flickered. It was obvious he had consumed a great deal of energy just now.

One reason was that using a martial skill with the Great Desolate Blood Halberd required a massive amount of energy. But, the second and more important reason was that the Great Desolate Blood Halberd was not like the long spear that he had been using; it had no flexibility. With every strike he made, he would have to withstand a terrible counter shaking strength without any buffer. This was also the reason why Situ Yaoyue was shaken to the point of vomiting blood after exchanging several dozen strikes with Lin Ming.

Now, even though Lin Ming had opened the first four of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, and his strength was as powerful as a dragon with two million jins of strength, it was still hard for him to withstand the shock of smashing the halberd against this Asura puppet's body, which was like a massive lump of divine metal. The web of his palm was near the point of cracking apart.

At this moment, Old Man Good Fortune's true essence sound transmission suddenly sounded out in his ears. "Little Friend Lin, you leave, old me can barely defend myself as it is, there is no way I can protect you!"

Lin Ming looked up and saw that Old Man Good Fortune and that strange ghostly green youth had already flown 10,000 feet in the air, engaged in a vicious battle. Every strike of that strange youth spurred starlight, but every move from Old Man Good Fortune shattered the void!

Facing such a level of existence, Lin Ming knew that he would only be a burden if he remained. On the other hand, if he ran away then Old Man Good Fortune would be able to have fewer scruples.

Chapter 882 – Divine Tree

Chapter 882 – Divine Tree

…

…

…

“Roar!!”

“Roar!”

The five surviving Asura Ghost Slaves emitted cacophonic cries as they wildly hurtled towards Lin Ming. Although this sort of Asura Ghost Slave only had the strength of a quasi Emperor, their bodies were as solid as divine iron. Killing them was several times more difficult than killing a normal quasi Emperor.

Although Lin Ming had killed an Asura Ghost Slave, the web of his palm had shaken to the point that it nearly tore apart. If he wanted to kill these five ghost slaves then he might have to trade his right hand in the process.

In the current situation, it was absolutely a bad idea to injure himself.

As he saw the five ghost slaves surround him, he loudly shouted out and the highly compressed power of thunder and fire within the Heretical God Sprout erupted. The Burning Star Flame and the Nine Heavens Thunder Soul joined together!

Penetrating Rainbow!

Woosh!

In that moment, a brilliant divine light lit up the dark and hazy skies. Lin Ming became one with his halberd, turning into a ray of light as he cut across the infinite skies!

Bang!

With a sound of crackling thunder, a ghost slave was struck in the chest by Lin Ming's halberd. The forceful impact and energy waves blew it away like a piece of flimsy straw!

The ghost slave's ribs shattered. Lin Ming felt an intense pain in both of his arms as blood spurted from his palms!

His speed suddenly slowed. At this time, he could feel a deep killing intent erupt from behind him. Lin Ming didn't need to turn his head to know that four thick chains were already shooting towards him! Lin Ming didn't even have time to receive his weapon and meet this new barrage of attacks.

Concept of Time!

At this critical moment, an invisible energy field erupted from Lin Ming, covering those four chains. For a brief period, the chains seemed as if they had fallen into a swamp, their speed drastically plummeting.

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Lin Ming didn't even look back. Space shrank beneath his feet. With the Gate of Wonder opened, his speed reached the extreme. With the Gate of Wonder combined with Golden Roc Shattering the Void, even an early Divine Sea powerhouse would lose to Lin Ming in speed!

By the time the four chains struck his location, Lin Ming had already appeared dozens of miles away, instantly leaving their encirclement.

And at this time, in the high skies, Old Man Good Fortune's battle with the strange demon youth was reaching a burning crescendo!

In terms of true essence magnitude, Old Man Good Fortune was actually inferior to the strange demon youth. But by relying on his elusive Time Laws, he was able to force the battle into a reluctant tie. This caused the strange demon youth to seethe with anger. Although the strange demon youth had used a secret technique to escape the Sea of Miracles and reach the Sky Spill Continent, causing his strength to greatly weaken, it angered him to be halted here by a pathetic old man who couldn't even handle the Divine Realm.

"Just die already!"

A purple tattoo on the back of the strange demon youth lit up with a bright purple light. The true essence currents behind him condensed into the phantom of a giant hydra!

"So you were part of the Hydra Clan!" Old Man Good Fortune sucked in a deep breath. The Hydra Clan clansmen of the Divine Realm had the bloodline of the Hydra flowing within them. This could also be called one of the so-called divine bodies of the Sky Spill Continent. The Hydra Clan could be considered a large influence within the Divine Realm. Their clansmen were valiant and battle-skilled, with an inborn affinity to the power of stars.

Of course, this didn't mean that the strange demon youth in front of him was from the Divine Realm. The Hydra Clan was the same as the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Because they continued to grow and blossom through the endless years, producing countless children, they had many disciples go to worlds in the lower realms to form minor collateral branches.

"To force me to use the power of my bloodline, I have actually underestimated you!" The strange demon youth had already been weakened by leaving the Sea of Miracles. Using the power of his bloodline at this time would put a tremendous burden on his body. He hadn't wanted to do this, but now that the battle had dragged on until now and he still couldn't overcome Old Man Good Fortune, his temper had finally exploded.

"Snake Swallows the Universe!"

The strange demon youth lifted his lance high up into the air and the hydra phantom behind him emitted an earth-shattering roar. At this time, Old Man Good Fortune grimaced. He didn't use his sword. Instead, he took out a pale white bead from his spatial ring.

Old Man Good Fortune bit down on the tip of his tongue and sprayed a fine mist of blood on this white bead. With a hissing sound, the blood was absorbed by the white bead!

"This is..." The strange demon youth's eyes immediately widened, "A heaven perishing bead, you actually have a heaven perishing bead!?"

A heaven perishing bead was able to massacre a Divine Sea master and all martial artists below that. Even a Divine Realm genius that had reached the Divine Sea might perish if they were not careful. And if one used their blood essence to reinforce it, the might was that much greater!

A sense of fear and crisis suddenly rose within the demon youth's heart. "This damned old fellow!"

He suddenly drew backwards, but at this time the heaven perishing bead exploded!

Bang!

A flash of blazing white light swept through the skies, encapsulating everything in explosive shockwaves...

……

Ho – !

Lin Ming broke through several dimensional realms in a single breath. As he reached this new dimensional realm, he had no idea where he was.

"They aren't chasing me..."

Lin Ming's speed was too fast. It wasn't a surprise that the Asura Ghost Slaves hadn't been able to catch him, but could he have just escaped the tracking of the strange demon youth like this?

Lin Ming felt this was a bit incredible. For a powerhouse of this level, especially one with such a powerful divine sense, it was possible that they had a method to search him out. It was only because he was fighting Old Man Good Fortune at this time, so he couldn't divert attention to these matters.

"I must hurry and leave this Temple of Marvels!"

The strength of the powerhouses in the Temple of Marvels had far surpassed his imagination. If he stayed, there was nothing he could do against them. He wouldn't even be able to raise the smallest of waves. Although he desired to know the secret of the Sea of Miracles, ensuring he survived here was the most important thing. As for whatever secret there was, he could wait until he was powerful enough and then return in the future.

"I can only return backwards following the road in my memories. If the arrangement of space here hasn't changed then I can leave, but if it has then I'll be in danger."

Lin Ming grit his teeth, chose the best direction, restrained his energy, and then quickly shuttled through the many dimensional arrays.

One world after another passed before him. Although they seemed similar, they formed a three dimensional map in Lin Ming's mind, neatly ordered together.

"After I pass through here, I should reach the dark forest I traveled through before."

As Lin Ming thought this, he stepped into a new world. As he saw the scene before him, his complexion changed. In this new world, the skies were gloomy and overcast, with thunder rolling in between them. The ground underneath him was an endless black swamp, and at the farthest distance he could see, there was a great divine tree that pierced through the heavens. The crown of this tree was wreathed in endless arcs of purple electricity. This world simply had no relationship at all with the world he had been in before!

This was the first time that Lin Ming had entered into this world.

“Did I remember incorrectly? Or was I forcefully led to this world by someone else? Or perhaps the arrangement of worlds within the Temple of Marvels was constantly shifting to begin with?”

Lin Ming’s mind raced with all these thoughts, his expression solemn. With his memory, it was highly unlikely that he had remembered incorrectly, leaving only the latter two options. Regardless, either situation was bad for him, particularly if someone led him here with sinister intentions in mind. If so then he was already a mouse in their cage; there would be no way for him to escape!

Lin Ming grit his teeth and flew forwards. This current world was similar to the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. Although he had a faint foreboding feeling in his heart, he wouldn’t just sit here and wait for death to reach him.

“What a tall and massive tree. It soars straight into the skies and galvanizes the power of thunder within the highest heavens. How mysterious is that…” As Lin Ming looked at this great tree, it seemed to connect the heavens and earth. The Sea of Miracles was also named the Ocean of Endless Storms, so it was reasonable to assume that a mammoth amount of power of thunder also flooded the Temple of Marvels. But, he never imagined that this would be able to breed such a divine tree.

Chapter 883 – Twelve Dao Fruits

Chapter 883 – Twelve Dao Fruits

…

…

…

“Shit, this old fox’s strength is pathetic to the point of being a garbled mess and even though he’s been suppressed by me from all angles, he actually has so many life maintaining methods and refuses to die. He even put out a heaven perishing bead in the end, causing me to suffer a great loss!”

In the underground chamber, the purple-clothed strange demon youth coughed up a mouthful of blood. He was in an extremely miserable situation at this time. The right half of his body was covered in blood and the skin on the right side of his face was ruined, making him look ferocious and ghastly. This was the fate of being struck by the heaven perishing bead.

The heaven perishing bead was a one-time disposable explosive treasure produced in the Divine Realm that could be used to destroy enemies. This treasure even contained the Laws of the Great Dao. When a heaven perishing bead exploded, it’s terrifying explosive force might could even be dangerous for a late Divine Sea martial artist from the Divine Realm. Moreover, for added security, Old Man Good Fortune had not cared about losing his lifespan and had spat blood essence onto the heaven perishing bead!

However, Old Man Good Fortune was able to withstand this loss of blood essence. Now that he had obtained a pool of 10,000 year stone milk, that was a loss he could definitely recover from and still extend his life for another 700 years. He had already perfectly achieved the goal he was seeking at the Temple of Marvels. Although it was a pity that he had to spend a heaven perishing bead, to Old Man Good Fortune there was nothing more precious than extending his life.

Mixing his own blood essence with the heaven perishing bead was Old Man Good Fortune's final trump card and also his strongest attack. In addition, the strange demon youth had been weakened after emerging from the Sea of Miracles. If it weren't for his fast responses, then he wouldn't have suffered something as simple as a grievous injury!

Moreover, what sent the strange demon youth into a flying rage was that Old Man Good Fortune was no different from a slippery old cockroach. After wounding him, the old man had relied on his understandings into the Concept of Space and crazily flew through the dimensional realms. As for the injured demon youth, he actually wasn't able to follow him!

The master of the Temple of Marvels had comprehended at least the fifth level of the Concept of Space – Spatial Genesis. Such a ruthless individual was far, far more formidable than the demon youth had been or would ever be, thus he felt a great fear towards this Temple of Marvels. Moreover, he didn't understand the layout of the temple. After chasing after Old Man Good Fortune for half an hour, he finally lost him!

This caused the strange demon youth's heart to burn with rage. This was simply his life's greatest shame! Before coming here, he had boasted repeatedly about not placing Old Man Good Fortune and Lin Ming in his eyes. To him, they were nothing more than easy prey that could easily be handled.

In front of the strange demon youth, the masked man was faintly smiling. "You underestimated your opponent too much. If you were a bit more careful, then even if that old man had the heaven perishing bead, he still wouldn't have been able to wound you. That old man is a very cunning individual and he also has some relationship with the Divine Realm. After living for so many years, it's natural that he would have some final trump card to preserve his life. Then again, there are many ancient ruins left behind in the Sky Spill Continent from 100,000 years ago. If he explored these ancient ruins then it is possible he could obtain the life preserving treasures left behind by some ancient powerhouse."

"That old fool, I will definitely pull out his soul and turn him into an Asura Ghost Slave, making him regret every decision he ever made!" The strange demon youth grit his teeth as he said.

"Haha, I'm afraid you won't have this chance. That old fellow has an extremely high understanding into the Concept of Space. It's likely that he will soon leave the Temple of Marvels. And with your current injuries, you won't be able to catch him now. But none of this matters to begin with. Our main goal here is Lin Lanjian. Even if we don't have Old Man Good Fortune, there are still several Divine Sea powerhouses with similar enough strength. They should be enough."

"Humph, I just can't swallow this insult. Once the plan is completed, I will leave the Temple of Marvels to find him! As for that Lin Lanjian, his strength surpassed my expectations. With his mere second stage Life Destruction cultivation, he actually managed to escape the pursuit of six great quasi-Emperor level ghost slaves, even killing two of them in the process! His strength is no different from that of a dragon!"

The strange demon youth was well aware of just how great the defensive power of the Asura Ghost Slaves he refined was; they were simply like large blocks of divine iron. But two of these tough ghost slaves had actually been pounded to death by Lin Ming's halberd!

How could he not be surprised by this? This was simply not strength that should be possessed by a human.

The masked man was not surprised. Rather, his eyes began to glimmer with excitement. He licked his lips, saying, "Lin Lanjian dual cultivates in body and essence, and his achievements in the body transformation path are extremely high. For him to arrive at this step in the Sky Spill Continent is already a miracle. But the more spectacular he is, the more he is able to arouse my interest. Rest assured, there is no way that he will be able to escape. Although you weren't able to capture him, you still forced away that bothersome Old Man Good Fortune from his side. Now that they are separated, there is no way for them to contact each other in these isolated dimensional realms that twist together like a maze. Moreover, Old Man Good Fortune and Lin Lanjian are neither friends nor family, it's already a great act of benevolence for him to create an opportunity for him to escape. It's impossible that he would risk his life to return and save Lin Lanjian! That old man treasures nothing more than his life!"

Although Old Man Good Fortune seemed wizened and disconnected from the world, the truth was that what he valued most in the world was his life. Those that feared death were easy to deal with.

The masked man's lips curved up in a thoughtful smile. He looked at that strange demon youth and said, "I will personally go this time. Stay here and recover from your wounds. The heaven perishing bead contains the Laws of the Great Dao. If you leave behind scars of the Great Dao in your body then it will be difficult for you to recover from them. I alone will be enough. As long as it is in this world, with Lin Lanjian's cultivation, there is no way for him to escape my grasp!"

....

At this time, within this dimensional realm that looked like the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, Lin Ming looked at the distant divine thunder tree that pierced into the skies, his heart filled with shock.

Although danger was abound, Lin Ming still didn't search for a shortcut to leave the Temple of Marvels. Since he saw this sort of divine tree only several dozen miles away, he certainly had to go and take a look. Perhaps this was a lucky chance that would give him the opportunity to make a turning point!

Lin Ming opened the Gate of Wonder, travelling 10 miles in a single step. In just a few blinks of the eye, he had arrived in front of the divine tree.

As he truly saw this divine tree up close, Lin Ming was stunned. This divine tree was thicker than a pagoda and towered upwards for several tens of thousands of feet!

Looking up, this divine tree looked like a column that supported the heavens, shooting straight into the skies!

Lin Ming found that the so-called ‘crown’ of the tree had no leaves, but instead was replaced by a tangle of roots. This was a strange tree that kept itself rooted in the skies.

These roots were as thick as pythons. They looked like Azure Dragons that circled around the tree, gripping their thick claws into the billowing dark clouds, sucking in the power of thunder!

The power of thunder was absorbed by the divine tree. As it passed down, it caused the entire divine tree to sparkle with lightning, looking like a descending god!

Under these twisting roots, there were actually fruits hanging that were four or five feet wide. These fruits sounded extremely large, but placed on this massive divine tree they only looked like little dots. If Lin Ming didn’t look carefully then he would have easily passed over them. Lin Ming began to carefully count them. This divine tree had absorbed a massive amount of the power of thunder for countless years, and yet it only bore a total of 12 fruits. He sighed as he thought of just how difficult it must be for these fruits to be bred!

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes as he looked on. These 12 fruits all had strange lines on them, like bolts of lightning that crawled all over the skin of the fruits. Moreover, each line on these fruits was different, mysterious, enigmatic, profound… and filled with a faint flavor of the Great Dao.

“This is…” Lin Ming was dumbfounded, suddenly remembering the chaos stones he had seen in Timeworn Phoenix City. Those chaos stones had been formed at the creation of the universe and then slowly evolved over the countless years. Those chaos stone recorded the vicissitudes of the universe, having been marked by chaos energy, a type of energy that preceded all other types of energy such as the five main elemental energies, primal chaos energies, and so forth. They also contained the power of the Source Laws and were a worldly treasure. As for these lines of thunder, there were similarities!

“These lines should be marks of the Great Dao that have been naturally left behind through tens of thousands of years by the circulation of the power of thunder from the Nine

Heavens Thunder Dominion. Although they are inferior to the mystical chaos stones, they still deeply reflect the mysterious Concept of Thunder!

“Just these lines themselves are a priceless treasure, much less the fruit!”

When Lin Ming had crossed into Life Destruction, his body had been tempered by the power of thunder and every cell in his body had been activated by it. His compatibility with thunder was already inestimable. However, Lin Ming’s comprehension of the Concept of Thunder had remained low throughout.

Even though he had meditated on the Thunder Concept jade slips left behind by the Eightfall Thunder Emperor, the Eightfall Thunder Emperor was still someone from the Sky Spill Continent after all. No matter how excellent he had been, in this continent with its limited inheritances, there would always be many flaws and omissions in the system of Thunder Laws that he established. It was simply incomparable to the God Transforming Mirror at Timeworn Phoenix City that recorded the Concept of Fire. But now, these 12 fruits would be able to make up for Lin Ming’s weakness!

“The Sea of Miracles seems to have a 100,000 year history. If that is true, then the history of this Temple of Marvels must surpass 100,000 years. Perhaps it has existed for 120,000 years, and each of these 12 fruits represents the results of 10,000 years!”

As Lin Ming realized this, he took a deep breath, suppressing the excitement in his heart. Riches always came with danger. Even if he were being pursued by enemies right now, none of them were able to dampen his determination to pick these fruits!

Lin Ming moved towards the divine thunder tree. As he reached 10 miles away, he felt all of the hairs on his body stand erect. This was because of the powerful electrical field that emitted from the tree. Around the entire divine thunder tree there was an invisible force field. Because the energy was too intense, the force field naturally twisted, causing the formation of ionized particles in the air that contained a deep power of thunder.

If a martial artist that wasn't strong enough were to approach this force field then they would be immediately incinerated to ash. Even a high stage Life Destruction martial artist would have to consume a great deal of energy to maintain their bodily protective true essence to move within this electric force field.

However, this was not a problem at all to Lin Ming. He had a thunder-attribute body and every cell within him had been tempered by the power of thunder, leading to him having a great affinity with it. In addition, his understandings of the Concept of Thunder were also decent enough. After entering this thunder force field, he actually felt like he was a tiger in the mountains or a fish swimming in the sea.

All the pores throughout his body opened, relaxed as they vigorously absorbed the pure power of thunder. "This is a wonderful power of thunder. If I could train here then the results would be incredible!"

Lin Ming took a deep breath and looked up at the 12 thunder fruits in the skies. His feet moved as he shot upwards!

As Lin Ming approached these thunder fruits, he could increasingly feel the inherent mystical Concepts and Laws within them!

The stems of these fruits were as thick as an arm and extremely tough. Lin Ming took out the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, and with his great two million jin strength and silver battle spirit poured into the blood halberd, he cut down the first fruit!

Chapter 884 – Saint Artifact Treasure

Chapter 884 – Saint Artifact Treasure

…

…

…

Lin Ming followed a pattern, soon picking down all 12 fruits. The four or five foot wide fruits couldn't even be held in both his arms.

These thunder Dao fruits were all covered with a purple skin that was etched with lines. Although it was just the skin, one could feel a pure thunder energy coming from them.

Lin Ming dropped down and took out a thunder Dao fruit. He hesitated for a moment and then decided to directly cut this fruit apart here. In this strange and unknown space, it was indeed a bit risky to eat a Dao fruit when he had no idea what the effects would be. But now that he was being chased down by others, he had to take every chance possible to increase his strength, in order to increase his chances of escaping by even the tiniest percentage.

If he cowered from something like this, then he really would be hopeless.

Lin Ming placed the purple fruit on the ground and pried off the stalk with the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. A large piece of skin was ripped off with it, revealing the pale white fruit flesh within. A tempting fragrance wafted into the air, carrying with it the taste of the ages.

Lin Ming was very particular about what part of the thunder Dao fruit he opened it from. The area around the stalk was the only part that didn't have the Law lines engraved onto it, so ripping off this part wouldn't matter too much. He had to keep the rest of the skin peel intact so that he could meditate on the Concept of Thunder principles contained within. He certainly couldn’t touch that part.

“Smells great. I’ve eaten a good number of heavenly materials in my time, but most of them are extremely painful and cause the entire body to ache and tear. Let alone the taste, this is my first time smelling such a fragrant fruit before.”

Lin Ming didn’t hesitate. He took a dagger and carved out part of the fruit flesh. The fruit flesh was white and translucent, as if it were carved from exquisite jade. As he held a piece in his hands, the sharp and sweet aroma was extremely appealing.

“What a great rich and pure power of thunder. If a non thunder-attribute martial artist were to eat this, their body would blow up from not being able to withstand this energy. Even a thunder-attribute martial artist would perish if their compatibility was lacking. There would be no way they could withstand such a terrible baptism of thunder energy.”

Lin Ming used his perception to investigate the fruit piece and then directly swallowed it up.

As the fruit entered his mouth, it turned into a rich fragrance that spread through all of his inner organs. At the same time, Lin Ming could also feel an incomparably pure power of thunder diffusing throughout his body, rushing into his meridians!

“This is so comfortable!”

This thunder energy that would be fatal to others was actually immeasurably pleasurable to Lin Ming. Not to mention the comfort that spread through his body, even the shaking wounds from his battle with the ghost slaves were instantly healed up!

Lin Ming didn’t stop at just eating one piece. He continued to eat. This four or five feet diameter fruit could feed a family for several days.

However, for a martial artist, since their consumption of energy was great, their appetite was also great. If they didn’t use heaven and earth origin energy to restore themselves and relied on just food, then the amount of food they would have to eat simply couldn't be calculated.

Lin Ming ate up a third of this fruit in a single go. As the violet juices flowed out from his mouth, Lin Ming didn't waste this at all. He wiped it up with his fingers and licked them with loud smacking sounds.

"This is delicious!"

Lin Ming burped and actually spat out purple thunder.

Lin Ming felt as if his entire body was filled to the brim with energy, as if he had endless amounts of power within him. Currently, if he were to encounter those several ghost slaves again, Lin Ming was confident he could defeat them all by himself. Moreover, he would also be able to withstand the shaking strength of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd.

"This fruit is so strange. It's causing the power of thunder within my body to become even deeper, to the point that it's tempering my body. My cultivation has already reached the peak of the second stage of Life Destruction and I've already reached the limit of energy I can contain. If I take another step forwards then that will be the third stage of Life Destruction. I'm confident I will be able to cross the third stage of Life Destruction now, but doing so in this environment is just too dangerous."

The road of martial arts was like this. As long as one's foundation was solid enough, then every breakthrough would bring immeasurable progress and strength at astronomical speeds. When Lin Ming first broken through the late Revolving Core realm and into Life Destruction, his foundation had been far too solid. As long as he gathered enough energy, he would be able to cross another stage of Life Destruction. There wasn't much else he would need to consider. But as for a normal martial artist, their chances of survival, even if they had enough energy, were fraught with dangers and angst. They would have to search for all sorts of precious medicines and materials that would increase their chances of crossing Life Destruction successfully, otherwise they would simply perish in a cloud of ash.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then dispelled all thoughts of crossing the third stage of Life Destruction here. To do so, he would need to completely disintegrate his body and temper himself in the energy. This was a highly dangerous process that couldn't tolerate any disturbance. Otherwise, there wouldn't even be bones left of him!

In this dimensional realm, it was possible that danger could come at any time. And crossing the third stage of Life Destruction would also require several days. It was unlikely he would be able to pass those days in peace and quiet.

As Lin Ming was about to put away the rest of the fruit, his heart suddenly stirred.

"Mm? This is..."

At the bottom of the divine thunder tree, because of the electric energy field that surrounded this area, there had been a great deal of interference towards Lin Ming's perception. But after eating the thunder Dao fruit, his perception here had increased by a great deal and he discovered that there was something strange at the back of this divine thunder tree.

Lin Ming walked around the divine thunder tree. The truck of this divine tree was thick, nearly circling for half a mile. As Lin Ming reached the other side, he discovered that there was a human skeleton sitting cross-legged within the roots at the base.

This skeleton was translucent and sparkled with light, as if it were carved from the most precious jade. There was a seven colored gem embedded between the eyebrows of the skeleton that sent out gorgeous, dazzling lights. This sort of gem was certainly not used for decoration; it was obviously produced from some type of cultivation method. "I wonder what sort of mystic cultivation method this is that it can produce a divine crystal between the eyes."

Although Lin Ming wanted to pry off the divine crystal and study it, he didn't let his greed get the best of him. This skeleton was currently emitting a faint yet powerful aura. Lin Ming knew that this sort of aura was an energy field. Even though the owner of this skeleton had been dead for tens of thousands of years by now, the energy field around him still lingered here, not dispersing. It was hard to imagine just what boundary he had reached before his death.

He had no idea why such an extraordinary figure would be sitting here. Could he have reached the end of his life and was trying to make a final breakthrough? Or had he been sabotaged by others and had died here from fatal wounds?

But no matter what happened, Lin Ming maintained a deep reverence and respect towards such an amazing character. He naturally wouldn't do something so dastardly as destroying this person's skeleton.

"He shouldn't be the Temple Master of the Temple of Marvels."

Lin Ming discovered that there was a spatial ring and bracer on the left hand of the skeleton. The bracer shined with a faint light. Even after 100,000 years, its magnificent light still hadn't dimmed.

This was obviously a type of treasure.

Lin Ming deeply bowed to the skeleton and then carefully took the spatial ring and bracer off.

"This bracer is… a Saint artifact!"

After Lin Ming investigated the bracer, he came to this conclusion that left him floored. This was the first time that Lin Ming had seen a bracer-shaped Saint artifact.

All of the Saint artifacts and normal treasures that appeared in the Sky Spill Continent had mostly been weapons or armor. There were very, very few accessory type treasures, and nearly no Saint artifacts of that kind.

"It's too bad Demonshine isn't here, otherwise I could ask him about this."

Lin Ming shook his head and strapped the bracer onto his wrist. He could immediately feel a deep tranquility emerge from deep within his heart, as if his very soul was being gently cleansed. In that instant, Lin Ming's perception became sharper and his thoughts became much more agile and clear.

As he thought back to some insights about the Time Laws that Old Man Good Fortune had left for him that he hadn't yet been able to comprehend, he suddenly developed some insights and positive directions in his mind. This caused him to be overjoyed.

"This is a Saint artifact that can enhance soul force! It can even increase perception to an extent!"

He had never heard of a Saint artifact with such an effect in the Sky Spill Continent. He had never even imagined one containing such beneficial effects!

Even in the Divine Realm, Saint artifacts that conferred special effects were relatively scarce. Their value was much higher than that of a normal offensive or defensive type Saint artifact.

Among Saint artifacts, those with the lowest value were offensive Saint artifacts. Defensive Saint artifacts were several times more valuable, and Saint effects with special effects were several times more valuable above that.

But this sort of Saint artifact normally increased defensive or offensive abilities. As for increasing soul force and perception, there were very few of these types of Saint artifacts. If this Supreme Elder that died here could have such a bracer, then his strength before his death surpassed even Lin Ming's lofty imagination.

The intensity of soul force wasn't related to perception, but that didn't mean that was the only relationship between them. Currently, Lin Ming's perception was considered good, but not at the peak of talent. He could be considered just decent enough.

As for this Saint artifact, although it couldn't increase perception by too much, it was still extremely precious. The effect that this would have on Lin Ming's future meditations on the Laws could be imagined!

"Of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates' last four gates, the Gate of Opening is located at the brain. After opening it, it can also similarly increase my perception. With this bracer on top of that, I'll have a much better grasp of contemplating Time and Space Laws in the future."

As Lin Ming thought this, he began to investigate the spatial ring left behind on the skeleton. As he looked through it, he immediately sucked in a deep breath. This ring…

This was a spatial ring?

For an ordinary spatial ring, there was a miniature space locked within it. This space could be called a minor dimension, but the truth was that it was far worse than a true minor dimension.

The space within a spatial ring wasn't able to hold life. Moreover, it was highly unstable. Depending on the quality of a spatial ring, the space within would collapse after hundreds or thousands of years.

But as for the spatial ring in Lin Ming's hand, there was actually a true world contained within!

This world had grass, sunlight, rivers and lakes, and even trees… without a doubt, this spatial ring had the ability to contain living beings. This was a complete minor world.

A minor world contained within a spatial ring. Lin Ming couldn't help but praise such a mighty force that could do this.

"This is the fifth level of the Concept of Space – Spatial Genesis!"

Lin Ming suddenly recalled Old Man Good Fortune's words. Without mistake, this spatial ring must have been forged by a Supreme Elder with an astoundingly high comprehension in Space Laws. There was a possibility that it was the owner of these bones.

As Lin Ming was about to search the spatial ring some more, at this time his heart suddenly went cold. He turned around to see the shades of several people appearing miles away.

"Ghost slaves!?"

Lin Ming's first reaction was to think that those chasing after him had finally caught up. But with some shock, he looked closer to see that these figures actually weren't ghost slaves, but were rather martial artists from the four Divine Kingdoms. They were several of the martial artists that had initially entered the Temple of Marvels ahead of Lin Ming.

To a high stage Life Destruction martial artist and above, their eyesight allowed them to see everything a dozen miles away as if it were happening right in front of them. In other words, they had seen everything that Lin Ming had done just now. This caused Lin Ming to furrow his eyebrows together.

When it rains it pours. He hadn't solved the problem of the ghost slaves but now another problem had arrived. In this danger-ridden temple, Lin Ming couldn't afford to waste his time here.

Chapter 885 – Unreasonable

Chapter 885 – Unreasonable

…

…

…

At this time, Lin Ming didn't want to get himself snarled into a mess with anyone else. He quickly received the thunder Dao fruit into his spatial ring as well as putting away the spatial ring that he didn't have time to look at now. As he was about to leave, several figures flashed and appeared in front of him.

"So it was Little Friend Lin. Why don't you stay for a moment?"

Lin Ming frowned. He looked and saw that there was a total of four people standing in front of him. This group included the heroic young seventh stage Life Destruction Yang Mu from the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom as well as the half-step Divine Sea Ouye Qun from the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom. There was also a young man that Lin Ming didn't know. Although this youth's cultivation was only at the sixth stage of Life Destruction, his foundation was exceedingly deep. He was much stronger than Situ Luosha had been.

These were three of the most astounding young elites of the Sky Spill Continent. They were led by a blue-clothed middle-aged person, whose cultivation was impressively at the early Divine Sea!

Lin Ming had a faint impression of this middle-aged man. He came from a Holy Land level family clan that was vassal to the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom. Their family clan was surnamed Sun, and this middle-aged Sun fellow was an important figure in his family clan.

Although this Elder Sun's cultivation was at the early Divine Sea, his foundation couldn't be considered too deep; he was much worse than Shibai. He had likely only managed to break through to the Divine Sea by stumbling on some lucky chance. This type of person wasn't too scary. Either way, Lin Ming still wouldn't underestimate him.

The four of them all had wounds covering their bodies, as if they had come from some brutal battle. Those from the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom and Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom had entered in two separate groups, but now they had gathered together and these four had been scattered out from their original groups. It was likely they had experienced many fierce battles, and their losses were probably not too small.

"Greetings to you all. Do you have some matter to ask me?"

Although Lin Ming's tone was peaceful, it was still a bit cold. During this sensitive time, he didn't think that this party of people would stop him just to greet him.

"Haha, Little Friend Lin, I was wondering what that skeleton behind you was..." Elder Sun had lived for 1700-1800 years already, his sight wasn't any worse than Lin Ming's. He could sense the amazing pressure exuded from the force field around the skeleton that hadn't dispersed even after tens of thousands of years. This person that had died must have had a terrifying level of strength while they were still alive. And, just what rank of treasures would the relics be that such an amazing powerhouse left behind? It was simply hard to imagine. And right before now, he had clearly seen Lin Ming take away this skeleton's treasures.

Although Elder Sun maintained a suitable amount of restraint, the three youths beside him already had shining eyes. As they looked at Lin Ming, drool nearly dripped down their chins.

If they could obtain the inheritance of such a character, that would be an immense lucky chance. They might even be able to rely on that to become the highest under the heavens!

If it were possible, they certainly wouldn't want to offend Lin Ming. But with such massive benefits hanging in front of them, the situation had changed. Moreover, in their opinion, in this last year Lin Ming may have broken through to the second stage of Life Destruction, but just a little jump in his cultivation wouldn't make him a match for a Divine Sea powerhouse. And the three youths weren't some random cabbage weaklings either.

If the four joined forces, it was more or less assured that they would be able to defeat Lin Ming and steal away his treasures. If they could kill Lin Ming, that would be even more perfect. Then they wouldn't have to worry that they would draw Lin Ming's retaliation in the future.

"This skeleton was left behind by a senior Supreme Elder that died here. What else is there to say about it?" Lin Ming calmly traced his spatial ring. He had a faint feeling that today's matters wouldn't end peacefully.

Elder Sun laughed as his eyes swept the surrounding areas, "How come I don't see Senior Good Fortune here?"

Since Elder Sun didn't see Old Man Good Fortune, he always had some doubts in his mind. If Old Man Good Fortune were here then he could kill him with a single palm.

"Senior Good Fortune is in a neighboring dimensional realm. If there's some matter you wish to consult with him about then you may go over and see him." Lin Ming casually said, hoping to use Old Man Good Fortune's reputation to frighten Elder Sun.

Lin Ming wasn't afraid of these people in front of him but he also didn't want to fight. Any battle would cause energy to surge in the surrounding areas. It might be enough to draw the notice of that strange demon youth and his Asura Ghost Slaves.

"Haha..." Elder Sun traced his long beard. "I truly am looking for Senior Good Fortune about some matters. How about Little Friend Lin escorts this old man to see Senior Good Fortune?"

Elder Sun wasn't an idiot for having lived for such a long time. He certainly wouldn't be deceived by Lin Ming's little tricks. Just this probing sentence was enough. If Old Man Good Fortune hadn't really been separated from Lin Ming, and Lin Ming wished to avoid a battle, then he would definitely lead him to see Old Man Good Fortune. Otherwise, his earlier words would be a lie.

Lin Ming's complexion sank. He icily said, "I do not have the time!"

He didn't want to fight here, but if he was forced to then he would. His situation was not the same as it was a year ago. After breaking through the second stage of Life Destruction and opening the Gate of Pain, and even eating up the thunder Dao fruit, his entire body was now filled with an uncontainable, overflowing energy. How could he be afraid of battle!?

"Hehe…" Elder Sun simply ignored the icy disdain in Lin Ming's words. His lips curved up in a smile. He was already able to confirm that because of some unknown reasons, Old Man Good Fortune had been separated from Lin Ming.

"Patriarch Sun, this boy is clearly putting on an act. If we act together then it doesn't matter how talented he is. In the presence of a true Divine Sea powerhouse, whatever genius he will become in the future will be useless once we kill him. Patriarch Sun, you also have to have a Heaven Sealing Pagoda that can lock down an area, making it so that this boy cannot display his true speed. There will be no way for him to escape then!"

Ouye Qun licked his lips as he as he sent out a true essence sound transmission.

He had a sixth stage Life Destruction cultivation and was also a half-step into the Divine Sea. With his inborn purple yang meridians, he had full confidence in his own combat strength.

A sixth stage Life Destruction half-step Divine Sea martial artist was stronger than a seventh stage Life Destruction martial artist. In addition, with Ouye Qun's purple yang meridians and his comprehension of Laws and Concepts, he had full faith he could easily defeat someone like Situ Yaoyue. He wouldn't be like Lin Ming, who would narrowly squeak by with a victory.

Although Lin Ming had now broken through to the second stage of Life Destruction, that didn't mean he was unstoppable. Even if Ouye Qun couldn't defeat Lin Ming, he still wouldn't be defeated either. Moreover, there was Yang Mu here, who was no weaker than he was, as well as the most powerful, Patriarch Sun. If the three of them attacked together, then with the Heaven Sealing Pagoda cutting off Lin Ming's range of movement, defeating him was already a settled matter. Even killing Lin Ming shouldn't be too difficult.

"I know." Elder Sun said with a smile hanging on his face. He continued saying to Lin Ming, "Little Friend Lin, mortals equally divide money and martial artists equally divide treasures. This is all according to the customs of righteous sects. If many martial artists find treasures together, they will distribute the treasures according to rank of strength. Little Friend Lin, we currently have five people here, and you obtained three treasures. There was a strange fruit, a bracer, as well as a spatial ring. Since I am the strongest one here, how about you allow me the opportunity to choose which treasure to take first? Since it seems you ate part of that strange fruit, we'll completely turn that over to you. As for the other treasure, that will be handed to the three juniors. How about it?"

As Elder Sun slowly spoke, Ouye Qun was overjoyed. Elder Sun would definitely choose that dead master's spatial ring; there was bound to be even more treasures within, and he would be able to divide a part of those benefits too. As for that strange fruit, it seemed to be a thunder-attribute fruit that wouldn't benefit him too much, so it didn't matter if he obtained it or not.

"Hahaha!" Lin Ming suddenly laughed out loud. This shameless attitude was truly an eye-opening experience!

"Why are you laughing?" Elder Sun's voice suddenly turned icy.

"Find treasures together? Only someone like you can say such pathetically shameless words. You have truly broadened my mind today!"

“Hehe…” Elder Sun sinisterly chuckled a few times before saying, “The four of us were caught by a crowd of vicious beasts in a nearby dimensional realm. If it weren’t for us blocking them for you, then you would have been caught in their trap. Perhaps you might have been torn apart and used to fill their stomachs by now! How would you still have such a lucky chance! You obtaining these treasures was just luck on your part, but the greater credit belongs to us!”

“You have really confused right and wrong and twisted what is black and white. You were chased by that crowd of vicious beasts and separated from your main groups, miserably making your way here, and yet you managed to change all of that into saying that you blocked the enemy for me! To think that a piece of garbage like you that only managed to break into the Divine Sea by a lucky chance actually dares to call themselves the strongest… that is completely laughable! And for trash like you to say that you will choose which treasure to take first… haha!

“I have walked down the road of martial arts for many years and have seen many thieves and murderers, killing others for their treasure. But as for thinking of competing for treasures like you are now and even doing something so sad and pathetic and using the so-called righteous path to convince me, this is truly the first time that I have seen that! The skin of your face is already so thick and tough that it can be used as material for a Saint artifact level armor!”

Lin Ming’s heart burned with anger, thus every word he spoke was filled with ruthless and merciless taunting. As he finished, Elder Sun’s blood swelled up to his face as a thick killing intent billowed out from him.

“Humph, you ignorant junior! You think that just because you have some talent, you are unrivalled in this world? Let me tell you, compared to a true Divine Sea powerhouse, you are still far from being able to match! Since you dare to break the customs and insult your seniors, then let me teach you a good lesson for your reckless behavior today! I will let you experience the disparity between you and a Divine Sea powerhouse!”

As Elder Sun spoke, he swiped his spatial ring and threw out a pagoda. This pagoda rose with a gale of wind, instantly expanding to dozens of feet high. This pagoda suppressed the heavens, immediately locking down the nearby area!

The reason that Elder Sun dared to attack Lin Ming was because of this treasure. Otherwise, Lin Ming's speed would have been an immense headache for him. If he couldn't kill Lin Ming then there would be no end to his future troubles.

At the same time, Lin Ming directly took out the 800,000 jin Great Desolate Blood Halberd. As the Great Desolate Blood Halberd fell into Lin Ming's hands, it felt just right.

"Humph, if you want to fight Patriarch Sun then you must pass me first!"

Before Elder Sun did anything, Ouye Qun already moved first. Ouye Qun was an extremely haughty and arrogant individual. Before now, Lin Ming's limelight was far too overwhelming; it had completely suppressed him. Compared to Lin Ming, he was nothing but a tiny star shining near a blazing moon. He simply looked ordinary and not special at all. How could the arrogant him possibly be happy about this?

He had long been wanting to test out Lin Ming's strength.

"Sword of the Great Dao!"

Ouye Qun flourished a white long sword from his spatial ring. Sword light surged outwards, stretching endlessly!

He didn't expect that he would be able to obtain the advantage in this battle. But it was enough as long as he didn't lose to Lin Ming. In his opinion, he alone would be able to reluctantly contend with Lin Ming, much less with a Divine Sea powerhouse added onto it. This battle was already won. At the end, the only truth that mattered was that Lin Ming would die under his hands.

Sword light soared to the heavens. Ouye Qun ferociously grinned.

“Screw off!”

Lin Ming’s heart was burning with a raging anger at this moment. Against Ouye Qun’s infinite sword light, all he did was simply wave his halberd. With his silver battle spirit and the strength of the Gate of Pain poured into it, the terror of two million jins of strength could be imagined!

With an explosive sound, the sword light was torn apart like paper. Ouye Qun’s pupils instantly contracted. He had never imagined this would happen. How could his sword light be so fragile that it would crumble at first contact? He sharply cried out in alarm, but there was no time for him to make an effective response before the halberd light smashed into his chest. Ouye Qun’s body suddenly shook as all of his ribs shattered and his organs burst apart. His body flew backwards, plopping onto the ground like a bag of mushy meat.

In just a single strike, Ouye Qun had been injured to the brink of death, completely unable to resist!

Chapter 886 – Two Years To Take Your Head

Chapter 886 – Two Years To Take Your Head

…

…

…

Ouye Qun's limp body flew 10 miles back before crashing into the ground, causing a cloud of dust to be stirred up. It was unknown whether or not he was still alive.

As Elder Sun saw this, his heart suddenly skipped a beat. Ouye Qun was an important figure of the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom and he had even taken a half-step into the Divine Sea. In just several more years he would have become a Divine Sea Supreme Elder, and moreover, he would be someone that relied on his own momentum to reach the Divine Sea. That was a true Divine Sea powerhouse. If anything happened to Ouye Qun here, he would be the one to take responsibility for it!

Moreover, Lin Ming's strength had far exceeded his imagination. "How could this be… in just a year, his cultivation only rose by a small boundary, so how could his strength be so great? If this continues then in another one or two years when his cultivation rises by another small boundary, won't he be able to defeat an ordinary Divine Sea powerhouse?"

Not only was Elder Sun bewildered, but even Yang Mu felt a lingering fear from what he just witnessed. He was glad he didn't do anything a moment ago, otherwise he would have shared Ouye Qun's fate.

The rate at which Lin Ming grew was too terrifying. The most difficult period for a genius was the time when they were still growing. It was possible for them to die while they were exploring a mystic realm, or perhaps they would be killed by others.

Lin Ming didn’t have any background, so it was even easier for him to stumble into dangerous accidents. In particular, he had provoked a great enemy in the Asura Divine Kingdom. But now it seemed that in another two years at most, he would have the strength to become an unrivalled Emperor!

Elder Sun felt the situation had become a bit thorny; he had jumped on top of the tiger and there was no way for him to back down. But at this moment, Lin Ming took the initiative to attack!

This was the first time that Lin Ming had directly faced a Divine Sea powerhouse. Energy revolved through his entire body as the Gate of Pain opened. Two million jins of strength combined with the true essence of a peak second stage Life Destruction martial artist ran up his body. A terrifying electric current filled the edge of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd while simultaneously mixing with the power of fire!

With Lin Ming’s current strength, he could easily use martial skills with the Great Desolate Blood Halberd.

Penetrating Rainbow!

The halberd stabbed out and a halberd light passed through the void of several miles. It was like a falling mountain, unstoppable and irresistible!

“Bold junior, do you really think you can overcome me!?”

Elder Sun erupted with a loud roar. He flourished a three foot long saber from his spatial ring and violently cut down at Lin Ming’s halberd light.

He didn’t dare to hold back with this saber strike. The saber wind slashed out like raging waves, tumultuous and savage!

Bang!

With an earthshaking explosion, thunder and fire twined together. There was a terrifying detonation as a sun seemed to rise between the heavens and earth!

Lin Ming's Concepts of Thunder and Fire had become deeper, and in addition to the increase of his cultivation, his current Penetrating Rainbow was on a completely different level from how it was in the past. As for Elder Sun, he was still a Divine Sea powerhouse. Even though he was the weakest of Divine Sea powerhouses, he wasn't some weakling waiting to be chopped. His saber cut through the billowing flames with unstoppable force, dividing that rising sun in half.

The explosive energy was split apart, still sweeping towards Elder Sun. A severe light flashed in Elder Sun's eyes. His saber flashed twice, scattering the energy.

As for Lin Ming, he smashed his halberd against the greatly weakened saber light, breaking it apart and then quickly retreating backwards.

This exchange of moves was evenly matched!

Elder Sun felt a numbing sensation crawl up his arm, horror beginning to fill his heart as panic overtook his mind. He was actually evenly matched with Lin Ming?

Did this mean that Divine Sea powerhouses weaker than him would have fallen under Lin Ming's hands?

It had to be known that although Elder Sun had relied on lucky chances to cross in the Divine Sea with just a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation, and he was considered one of the weakest Divine Sea masters, the truth was there were those even worse than him. That is, those fifth stage Life Destruction martial artists that had also relied on lucky chances to enter the Divine Sea, and were also nearing the end of their lives. That kind of Divine Sea powerhouse would have been defeated by Lin Ming!

In other words, the current Lin Ming already had strength equal to an Emperor. That meant he was the same as the eighth stage Life Destruction masters that once lived!

As Elder Sun came to this conclusion, he was incredulous with disbelief. How could Lin Ming have made so much progress from just going from the first stage to the second stage of Life Destruction? This was the same as others making three or more increases in small cultivation boundaries!

He was already sick with regret for choosing to fight Lin Ming. If Lin Ming were a normal Life Destruction powerhouse, then he could at least rely on the deeper true essence reserves of the Divine Sea realm as well as the greater endurance to defeat him. But Lin Ming's endurance had become famous to the point of being terrifying. Elder Sun simply didn't have the least bit of an advantage here. Since he offended Lin Ming and couldn't kill him, this was indeed catastrophic news for him.

As Elder Sun was trying to figure out how to deal with the aftermath of his choices, Lin Ming attacked once again!

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd slashed out and a cold light surged from the halberd edge. Before the move was sent out, all of the surrounding space suddenly cracked like a broken mirror as a massive amount of the power of space gushed out from the space cracks, gathering together to form a horrifying space storm. This space storm fused together with the power of fire from the Burning Star Flame, forming a calamity of wind and fire.

Bury the Heavens!

“Damn it all!”

Elder Sun was also stirred into a blazing anger. He slashed out his saber and a snow white saber light formed a wave a thousand feet tall, containing a deep Concept of Water. Elder Sun had been at the Divine Sea for many years now, and he wasn't without his own successes. At least, his Concept of Water had reached an extremely high degree.

“White Dragon Driving Stream!”

A strike went out and everything within a 10 mile range froze, turning the world into a winter wonderland. However, even though Elder Sun's attack finally managed to freeze the shattered void, the ice still broke apart as the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and its 800,000 jin weight crushed through the ice, unstoppable!

Bang!

Elder Sun was sent flying backwards, blood tumbling in his body. As for Lin Ming, he also felt his arm go numb with shock. If this battle continued then he might not be able to win. And even if he narrowly came out victorious, it would still exhaust all of his strength. If the ghost slaves were to come at that time then he would have no ability to resist them.

Lin Ming suddenly reversed his halberd light. The power of space mixed together with the Concept of Annihilating Flames and the Burning Star Flame erupted outwards, howling as it shot out into the world.

Law of Annihilation, Chain of Stars!

With a loud ringing explosive sound, the force field from the Heaven Sealing Pagoda that locked down this area suddenly shattered. Elder Sun also shook, his face paling; his soul had been connected to the force field. In that previous strike, he had been forced to transfer all of his strength resist Lin Ming's attack, so he hadn't been able to maintain the power of the Heaven Sealing Pagoda. Thus, the energy enchantment was naturally demolished by Lin Ming!

"I will remember what happened today!"

Lin Ming stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void, flashing 10 miles away with a single step. This was simply beyond Elder Sun's ability to react. In frontal combat he was evenly matched with Lin Ming, but in terms of speed he would forever occupy the inferior role.

Lin Ming's step just happened to lead him right beside the half-dead Ouye Qun.

Elder Sun's complexion completely changed as he saw this. "No!"

He wanted to slash out with his saber light to intercept Lin Ming, but it was already too late. The Great Desolate Blood Halberd smashed down with the force of mountains and rivers!

Bang!

The earth ruptured as if a meteor has crashed into it. A massive hole appeared in the ground. Ouye Qun had taken the brunt of this deadly attack. After losing all of his bodily true essence, it was impossible for his fragile mortal body to possibly withstand such an impact. His body directly turned to ashes without a single piece of his skeleton left.

"You!! You dare to kill a Prince of the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom!? He is a future Divine Sea powerhouse of the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom!!"

Elder Sun felt his entire body turn ice cold. Lin Ming already had an unquenchable blood feud with the Asura Divine Kingdom, and now he even wanted to offend the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom. A half-step Divine Sea master that was only several years off from becoming a true Divine Sea king had been eliminated by Lin Ming here, turned to nothing but ash!

A martial artist that could step into the Divine Sea with their own strength had inestimable value to a Divine Kingdom. Even 10 million spirit essence stones couldn't be traded for one!

"Interesting. So if he wants to kill me, I can't kill him in return? If it weren't for my strength surpassing that idiot's expectations, I fear that the one dead now would be me. Should I just sit here and let you fools do as you wish to me and not think of retaliating? Do you think I can swallow such an insult? As for offending the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom? Humph! If the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom wants to do anything to me, they must first carefully weigh up the dire consequences of hunting me down!"

Lin Ming did not fear offending the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom. If this were a year ago, he truly would have swallowed the insult and allowed Ouye Qun to live. Otherwise, if the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom joined forces with the Asura Divine Kingdom, even the Forsaken God Clan wouldn't be able to stop them from doing as they pleased.

But the current Lin Ming had opened the Gate of Pain and his cultivation had also risen. Moreover, he would soon break into the third stage of Life Destruction. Once he finally stepped into the third stage of Life Destruction, bottom tier Divine Sea powerhouses would no longer be his match. As for top level characters like Situ Haotian, while he was still far from being their opponent, Lin Ming would still be able to rely on his ghostly and extraordinary speed to escape.

There was also a massive number of top grade spirit essence stones in his spatial ring. It was more than enough to break into the fourth stage of Life Destruction. At that time, there wouldn't be many Divine Sea powerhouses in the Sky Spill Continent that would be able to pose a threat to him.

The Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom chasing him down? Let's see if they had the guts to try that first!

And as for today's matters, Lin Ming was the one in the right, he was the one that occupied the platform of truth and reasoning here. Killing Ouye Qun was a perfectly justifiable response. The Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom could only suck in this grievance.

"You..." Elder Sun gulped, not knowing what to say. The four Divine Kingdoms were gargantuan monsters; it had always been them bullying others, when had others ever been the ones to bully them? But now, Lin Ming had directly slapped the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom in the face.

And the high level figures of the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom would likely hold up their noses and excuse this matter. They had already learnt from watching the suffering of the Asura Divine Kingdom. In fact, they might even desperately try to cover up what had happened here. After all, even if Lin Ming's actions were in the right, this was still a shameful matter.

“And there’s you too. I will record down this grudge. Two years from now, I will come to take your head!” Lin Ming sneered at Elder Sun. Although he couldn’t kill him now, killing him two years from now would be easy.

“You!!” In that moment, Elder Sun felt as if he had fallen into the nine nether abyss. He was simply helpless against this nakedly blatant threat. Let alone two years, he might not even be Lin Ming’s opponent anymore in one year!

‘No, I cannot just sit here and wait for this monster to seek revenge, otherwise I’ll just be waiting to die. I must go deep into seclusion… I have to find some distant isolated island to run to and not emerge for 3000 years!’

Elder Sun already made up his mind. Even if his family clan was exterminated, he still wouldn’t appear in the world. To him, living his days in fear and trepidation, hiding like a bug, that was still better than dying. Towards Lin Ming, he felt nothing but a deep and foreboding fear.

At this moment, Elder Sun saw Lin Ming’s finger move. Then, a force field quickly passed over him, as if it had left something within his body.

“W-what have you done!?”

Elder Sun was immensely shocked. Lin Ming had quietly left something within his body, and yet he wasn’t able to discover it!?

“It’s a tracing mark, can’t you feel it? Did you think I would just let you escape as you wished? Oh, that’s right, I’ve forgotten. You still haven’t managed to comprehend a battle spirit, thus you have no way of sensing it.” Lin Ming said without demur. A battle spirit was the manifestation of the martial arts will. It could live on for tens or even hundreds of thousands of years without fading. In this current world, there was no one capable of undoing this silver battle spirit tracing mark, and that was because no one in the Sky Spill Continent had a grade of battle spirit comparable to Lin Ming’s.

Chapter 887 – Electric Violet Kirin Clan

Chapter 887 – Electric Violet Kirin Clan

…

…

…

"T-tracing mark?" As Elder Sun met Lin Ming's gaze, he felt his entire body turn ice cold. For better or worse, he was still someone that had lived for over a thousand years and had experienced many methods of tracking others, but he had never experienced such a tracing mark before! He could only faintly feel that something was wrong with his body, but as for what exactly Lin Ming had done to him, he had no idea.

"You… do you think your tracing mark can last forever…" Elder Sun said, his forehead wet with sweat. All of Lin Ming's abilities were far too strange. Since Lin Ming didn't hide that he had left a tracing mark on him, this was likely extremely difficult to undo!

However, he was still holding out for some possible hope. If a late Divine Sea Supreme Elder that was close to the highest under the heavens was willing to help, then they might be able to undo this tracing mark.

It was like Lin Ming had seen through Elder Sun's thoughts. He faintly smiled and said, "It looks like your family clan has some decent relations with the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom. Are you thinking about asking the Sublime Smelting Imperial Grand Uncle Ouye Hua to undo my tracing mark? Well, you can try."

Lin Ming sneered. Undoing his battle spirit mark was essentially a struggle between battle spirits. In terms of battle spirit combat, who could defeat him in the Sky Spill Continent?

“You…” Elder Sun trembled as he heard the brisk confidence lacing Lin Ming’s words. It was quite obvious that he believed Ouye Hua didn’t have the ability to help him.

After suffering losses under Lin Ming because he had underestimated him too much, Elder Sun no longer dared to look down on him. Since Lin Ming dared to speak these words, he must be sure of himself.

And nearby Elder Sun, Yang Mu and the other young elites were also dripping with sweat. To tell the truth, it would have been wrong to say that they didn’t feel tempted by greed after finding out that Lin Ming had obtained the relics left behind by an ancient Supreme Elder. But, Yang Mu was not someone from the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom so Elder Sun likely wouldn’t give him much, if any, of the benefits. This was the reason that he hadn’t attacked Lin Ming. Now that he witnessed Elder Sun’s pitiful fate and Ouye Qun’s miserable demise, he was scared witless. He counted his lucky stars that he didn’t decided to do anything rash, otherwise he would have died without a burial!

“You… what do you want?” Elder Sun’s voice had gone completely limp. He simply didn’t have the ability to resist Lin Ming. If begging on his knees would have worked, then he would have ignored his own dignity and done so.

Lin Ming was disinclined to bother with this Elder Sun. With a quick thought, he carefully received the ancient Supreme Elder’s skeleton into his spatial ring, preparing to leave. If he left the skeleton here then it was likely that it would be robbed and ruined by these people. Whether it was the divine crystal on the skeleton’s skull or the skeleton itself, everything was a top treasure. They could be used to forge a mystic weapon or even refined into alchemy materials. If others were going to commit sacrilege against this skeleton then he might as well take it away himself.

“I… I will buy my life with spirit essence stones… five million… no, eight million spirit essence stones! Don’t kill me!” Elder Sun’s eyes widened. After speaking out a price of eight million spirit essence stones, he bit his lips to the point of bleeding. His family clan did not have the same deep background as the Asura Divine Kingdom. To him, eight million spirit essence stones was a massive amount; it was extremely damaging to take out so much wealth. Although a Divine Sea powerhouse's life far surpassed 10 million spirit essence stones in value, that didn't meant that a Divine Sea powerhouse was able to come up with 10 million spirit essence stones or some other equivalent materials.

Lin Ming didn't bother speaking to Elder Sun. After obtaining over 20 top grade spirit essence stones, he no longer needed too many spirit essence stones. A massive amount of spirit essence stones would only be useful for buying relatively ordinary medicines to concoct a Myriad Spirit Pill. But, refining such a pill was extremely time consuming, and this sort of divine pill was most useful the first time it was used. It wouldn't be too effective the second time. It would be impossible to rely on this pill to open the second half of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, which were far more difficult to open.

"Nine million… 10 million spirit essence stones!" Elder Sun nearly bit off his tongue as all his intestines twisted together. This sky high price was the limit that he could offer, and he would also need to borrow a massive amount in order to gather that much. But Lin Ming didn't even seem to care about such a price.

Lin Ming only looked up at the divine thunder tree that reached into the skies, sighing within that he couldn't take away this divine tree. This divine tree had already gained a spiritual consciousness. After absorbing the purest power of thunder for all these tens of thousands of years, its strength far surpassed any Divine Sea powerhouse's. It was simply impossible for Lin Ming to take it away with his current strength.

"Lin… Lin Lanjian… don't push things too far…" Elder Sun's voice began to sound hysterical. No matter what he said, Lin Ming seemed to ignore him, not even deigning to spare him a glance. This made him angry but also anxious at the same time.

Lin Ming used his perception to check again that he didn't miss anything, and then his feet stepped on Golden Roc Shattering the Void, instantly disappearing.

"You!!" Elder Sun's eyes turned red. "Wait… wait, don't go!"

Elder Sun's despairing voice echoed out from behind him, but Lin Ming didn't care. Towards such a weak Divine Sea powerhouse, Lin Ming simply didn't place him in his heart.

After several blinks of an eye, Lin Ming vanished without a trace. There was no way for Elder Sun to ever catch up to him.

The left behind Elder Sun seemed as if he had lost his soul. He plopped to the ground, his eyes dazed and sluggish.

'It's over for me...'

This thought echoed in Elder Sun's mind again and again. Martial artists valued their lives greatly, and Divine Sea powerhouses even more so. They had crossed the most sad and painful realm of Life Destruction, and had managed to acquire a long life and lofty status. In this great world, as long as they didn't manage to offend a powerful existence, they could do as they pleased. Who was willing to die?

Dying was already a painful matter, but not knowing just when he would die was even worse. These last two years of his life would be filled with fear and anxiety that crept underneath every moment. Every day that passed meant he would have one less day to live. And to a martial artist like him, this wasn't even time to finish a single round of seclusion. This was just the blink of an eye!

Elder Sun really wanted to slap himself. How could he have been hotheaded for a moment and offended Lin Ming? Now he could only regret his own actions!

Beside Elder Sun, Yang Mu and the other young elites didn't speak for fear that they would overly stimulate this old fellow whose nerves were fraying. They discovered that Lin Ming was a much more terrifying existence than they had imagined. His speed of growth was simply unimaginable. They had kept thinking about how fierce Lin Ming would be in the future, but now they had suddenly realized that 'future' they thought about had already arrived in front of them. Now, none of them dared to provoke Lin Ming any more. Even the four Divine Kingdoms or any other Divine Sea Supreme Elder had to be afraid of him. The Asura Divine Kingdom and this Elder Sun already served as good examples of why!

……….

At this time, in a desolate and glum far off dimensional realm, the skies were filled with red clouds, thick and murky like blood. The ground was covered with shattered stone tablets and these tablets were all engraved with mysterious ancient letters. Even though these stone tablets were extremely hard, the writing on them was blurred, a testament to the extremely long time that had passed.

“This isn’t the common language of the Divine Realm but some other type of language system. I really have no idea just what happened in the Sky Spill Continent’s past.”

Lin Ming shook his head. It was very difficult to investigate these matters that had been buried in the sands of time. Even going to the Divine Realm wouldn’t help much, after all, the Divine Realm was just far too broad; there were countless worlds in the lower realms. Just which influence of the Sky Spill Continent had connections with the Divine Realm?

As Lin Ming casually sat on a stone tablet, he began to investigate the spatial ring left behind by the ancient Supreme Elder.

Within this spatial ring, there was a line of small letters. These letters were fortunately written in the language of the Divine Realm, thus Lin Ming was able to understand them.

It said…

“Electric Violet Clan Shadeless Lightning Vindicator Jiang Ziji.”

“Jiang Ziji… that’s the name of the Supreme Elder that died sitting? Electric Violet Kirin Clan, that should be the clan he originated from.”

The Electric Violet Kirin was one of the God Beasts from the Divine Realm. It was a similar existence to a Phoenix, True Dragon, and Golden-winged Roc!

There was more than a single type of God Beast in the Divine Realm. For instance, there were several kinds of True Dragons. The reverse scale blood that Lin Ming had inherited had come from the Azure Dragon bloodline and it also contained the attribute of endlessness. In addition, there was a Red Dragon, Blood Dragon, Five Clawed Gold Dragon, all with their own unique attributes.

As for the Electric Violet Kirin, that was a thunder-attribute God Beast.

“Jiang Ziji came from the Electric Violet Kirin Clan, so he must be skilled in the Concept of Thunder and the Concept of Space. I wonder just how this clan compares with the Ancient Phoenix Clan? Can they stand on even ground in the Divine Realm?”

A clan with the bloodline of a God Beast wouldn’t be inferior. At least, they should be one of the greater powers of the Divine Realm.

“This ‘Shadeless Lightning Vindicator’ in the middle should be his title. He might have been called Emperor Shadeless or Emperor Lightning Vindicator...”

Lin Ming muttered to himself. Of course, the kind of Emperor he referred to was not the Divine Sea powerhouse of the Sky Spill Continent. That sort of Emperor could only be used to describe a top powerhouse of the lower realms. An Emperor level powerhouse of the Sky Spill Continent was a completely different concept from an Emperor of the Divine Realm.

After using his perception to explore the spatial ring, Lin Ming began to probe what was inside.

This was a true sealed minor dimension. In this world, there was sunlight, grass, lakes, rivers, and heaven and earth origin energy. This origin energy was even somewhat richer than it was in the outside. It was apparent that this small world had the ability to gather heaven and earth origin energy.

Thus, a martial artist could definitely enter this spatial ring for practice. And since Lin Ming could carry this spatial ring around, the functions of it could be imagined.

At the center of this minor dimension, there was impressively a palace carved from spirit jade. And behind this palace was a large medicine garden!

As Lin Ming saw this, he sighed with emotion. This was the essential difference between a common spatial ring and one created with Spatial Genesis. This special type of spatial ring could contain a medicine garden, meaning that a martial artist could carry a medicine garden with them. Thus, any types of medicinal plants they found could instantly be placed inside this medicine garden. This sort of treasure was something a common alchemist could only dream of.

As Lin Ming's perception entered the medicine garden, he actually discovered that most of the medicinal plants there had died because no one had cared for them. After all, most medicinal plants couldn't survive for tens of thousands of years, and they also had extremely harsh conditions for growth. They needed to consume a massive amount of heaven and earth origin energy, and if they weren't fed, they would die. Wanting them to reproduce before they died in this situation was simply impossible.

However, even though over 90% of the medicinal plants had died, there was still less than 10% that had survived. These types of medicinal plants were the types that could live for a terrifyingly long time. They could grow for 100,000 years without dying!

Some had fallen into a deep slumber, and some were even filled with life vitality. The spirit energy released by the dead and dying medicinal herbs had all been absorbed by them!

Humanity's martial artists, animals' vicious beasts, plants' medicinal herbs, all of these were existences that defied the will of the heavens. They fiercely competed with each other and followed the survival of the fittest. In this extremely brutal competition, the winners would live and the losers would be used for nutrients.

Thus, although there weren't many medicinal plants left here, each of them was vividly growing with an astonishing heaven and earth origin energy contained within!

Chapter 888 – Electric Violet Inheritance

Chapter 888 – Electric Violet Inheritance

…

…

…

These divine medicinal plants had all been accumulated for tens of thousands of years. Even though the heaven and earth origin energy in the spatial ring was lacking due to neglect, because of the immense amount of time that had passed, it was more than enough to successfully raise the wonderful treasures!

"120,000 year bodhi immortal vine, 110,000 devil ghost bamboo, 110,000 sacred heaven dragon fruit…"

Lin Ming had a deep understanding of how valuable these heavenly materials were. He felt his heart rapidly racing as he looked at all of them. This was truly a great harvest! It had to be known that even in the Divine Realm, 100,000 year medicinal herbs were still extremely hard to find. This was because they were simply far too time consuming to cultivate. Only those great sects with hundreds of thousands or millions of years of inheritance would raise these types of medicinal herbs so that their descendants could make use of them. This method of passing these legacies down generations again and again was a way of blessing their descendants.

"With these medicinal herbs, I'll finally have some chances of opening the second half of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates."

The difficulty of opening the last four of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates was much higher than opening the first four. In particular, the Gate of Life and the Gate of Death. Those were the two hardest gates to open!

In the Divine Realm, there were many lofty and heaven-gifted geniuses of the greatest sects that dual cultivated in body and essence. But even for them, once they encountered these last two gates they would find it far too difficult to open them.

Of course, after the Gate of Death, the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace were on a completely different level of difficulty. One didn't need just heavenly materials, but they also needed comprehensions of the 'Dao'.

"If I use up all of these medicinal herbs then it should be enough for me to open another two or three more gates. Well, hopefully it will be enough for at least two gates." Such a great harvest had solved one of Lin Ming's greatest problems. He wouldn't need to worry about needing medicinal herbs for a long time now, so how could he not be excited about this?

Lin Ming's perception soon passed over this incomparably precious medicine garden and then entered the palace at the center of the minor dimension.

This palace had an extremely simple layout. There were only a few large rooms inside. Among them, a study room caught Lin Ming's attention. In this study room there was a row of bookshelves, all of them filled with jade slips.

Lin Ming casually looked over a jade slip. "Divine Realm 3000 Worlds' Lightshaking World."

As he looked through this jade slip, he discovered that it detailed the various sects and influences of the Lightshaking World. It also included local customs, trade environments, regional mystic realms, details of seas, forests, deserts, grasslands, levels of vicious beasts and wild beasts that appeared there as well as possible God Beasts. There was even listed every possible heavenly material that could be produced on that world as well as its value and how it could be obtained. There was information about astronomy, geography, and various knowledge and histories of that world. This was truly an all-encompassing index of information. The amount of information contained within was extremely rich.

A jade slip could contain information billions of times greater than a vast encyclopedia. Because the jade slips Jiang Ziji made were crafted from special material, the information capacity was even greater. However, to record the information of the Lightshaking World, this single jade slip was far, far from being able to do so. The Lightshaking World was far too broad; it far exceeded the size of the planet that the Sky Spill Continent and the Holy Demon Continent were located on. If one wished to fully record the information of the Lightshaking World, they would need countless more of these jade slips.

And for just this jade slip, even with Lin Ming's extreme speed reading abilities, it would still take him several days to finish reading through it.

As he looked again, all of the jade slips on the bookshelves pertained to the Divine Realm. "Divine Realm 3000 Worlds' Mantle World!"

"Divine Realm 3000 Worlds' Seven Star World!"

"Divine Light World!"

"Snowfall World!"

"Skycloud World!"

....

Of the introduction to these divine worlds, some were detailed and some were vague. This was because the Divine Realm was far too broad, and some worlds were still shrouded in mystery or were too far away. Even the Electric Violet Kirin Clan couldn't have detailed materials about all worlds.

Lin Ming counted the jade slips. There were a total of 3600 jade slips, recording the information of 3600 worlds.

The truth was that the so-called Divine Realm 3000 Worlds didn't really mean 3000. '3000' was just an empty term; the true number far surpassed 3000. Here, there were 3600 great worlds recorded, but there were many smaller worlds that weren't counted.

Even in the lower realms, where the three thousand boundless universe referred to one billion worlds, even that one billion worlds was just an empty term. In truth, there were far, far more worlds in the lower realms than one billion worlds. The true number was immeasurable. As for the world that the Sky Spill Continent was on, the planet was over a hundred million miles wide, so this was a relatively large world that could be included in one of the billion worlds of the three thousand boundless universe. But, there were far more smaller worlds which only had a diameter of several hundred thousand miles or even several million miles. These worlds were much smaller than the world of the Sky Spill Continent, thus they were all ignored.

Although these neglected worlds seemed small in comparison, the truth was that these worlds all had a population of several trillion individuals. If one added these innumerable worlds together, the number of lives was immeasurable.

Lin Ming laid down these jade slips and continued to look around. The jade slips on another shelf caught Lin Ming's attention. There were very few jade slips on these shelf, just a bit more than 20, but all of them recorded down martial arts inheritances!

These were all the inheritances of the Electric Violet Kirin Clan!

Lin Ming's mind stirred and he took a deep breath. How did the Electric Violet Kirin Clan compare to the Ancient Phoenix Clan in the Divine Realm? He estimated that even if they were inferior to the Ancient Phoenix Clan, they shouldn't be much worse. That meant that the thunder-attribute Concept legacies of the Electric Violet Kirin Clan represented one of the highest inheritances of the Divine Realm!

The value of obtaining such mystic skills could be imagined!

Lin Ming hurriedly swept over these jade slips with his perception, but as he looked through them, there were two points that caused him to feel disappointed.

The first point was that in order to practice the cultivation method inheritances of the Electric Violet Kirin Clan to a high boundary, one needed the bloodline of the Electric Violet Kirin. Although this Electric Violet Kirin bloodline could be transplanted, obtaining it wasn't easy at all.

The second point was that these Electric Violet Kirin mystic techniques were only introductory cultivation method manuals; they didn't record the later layers of these cultivation methods. All of these cultivation methods were extremely core inheritances only passed down to important personages; it was unlikely they would be randomly placed here.

Even so, Lin Ming's harvests were still great, particularly concerning the Concept of Thunder inheritances.

One didn't need the Electric Violet Kirin bloodline to comprehend the Concept of Thunder. These jade slips contained insights into the Concept of Thunder that far surpassed what the Eightfall Thunder Emperor had left behind. It was enough for Lin Ming to meditate over for a very long time.

"After I enter the Divine Realm, I should be able to have the support of the Ancient Phoenix Clan to study Fire Laws, so I don't need to worry about that. Now I have the Electric Violet Kirin Clan's jade slips on the Concept of Thunder, so I should have some guarantee there. Now all I'm missing are jade slips about the Concepts of Space and Time. Of course, if I could obtain some jade slips on the Concept of Wind then that would be even better."

Lin Ming didn't have high demands concerning the Concept of Wind. He just needed enough to help him use Golden Roc Shattering the Void.

After putting down these jade slips, Lin Ming continued to explore this heavenly abode. He soon discovered a medicine room. This medicine room had many materials for healing, detoxification, strengthening, and many other medical pills for cultivation, recovery, and so forth. Many of the pill bottles had been opened and most of the pills had been eaten. In Lin Ming's estimation, nearly all of the truly good pills had been eaten, leaving behind only the most basic pills.

This was also reasonable. Jiang Ziji had died sitting, and it was unlikely that he had died of old age. Most likely, he had been severely wounded after a brutal battle. Most of the good pills should have already been eaten by him, and the other Saint artifacts he carried were probably destroyed.

These leftover pills were much lower in quality than the heavenly materials in the medicine garden. But even so, within the Sky Spill Continent, these pills were still incomparably precious medicines.

Lin Ming took these medicines out and put them away in a separate spatial ring. Then, after he didn't discover anything else, his perception left the minor dimension.

He prepared to leave the Temple of Marvels as soon as possible.

Because of his battle with Elder Sun as well as him organizing the treasures he found, he had been delayed here for a long time already. He had to find the path to leave the Temple of Marvels as soon as possible, otherwise he would become increasingly in danger.

…………

At this time, in another distant dimensional realm, Elder Sun, who had Lin Ming's tracing mark imbedded within him, had an expression of pain and grief etched on his face. He was currently looking at a purple-robed man with a pleading light in his eyes. This purple-robed man had his eyes tightly closed shut. A faint trace of his will had condensed into thin needles that entered Elder Sun's body, probing within him. This continued for a quarter hour.

The purple-robed man opened his eyes and let out a light sigh.

"How is it? How is it?"

Elder Sun was like a drowning man that had seized upon a final piece of straw tossed to him. He impatiently asked this question again and again. This purple-robed man in front of him was a good friend of his. He had relied on his own ability and cultivation to enter the Divine Sea realm, and was now at the middle Divine Sea. He also had extremely high achievements in terms of a battle spirit. Elder Sun was counting on this purple-robed man to help him undo the battle spirit tracing mark that Lin Ming left in his body.

"I cannot unravel this tracing mark. In terms of battle spirits, the disparity between me and Lin Lanjian is simply too great. He is truly a monstrous genius." The purple-robed man shook his head as he spoke. His words were like a bucket of cold water that washed over Elder Sun, making him feel as if he had been dumped in a freezing sea.

Elder Sun begged, saying, "Brother Liang, you must save me. Lin Lanjian has already threatened to take my head in two years. If he doesn't die then that means I only have two years left to live. Moreover... Lin Lanjian has obtained a massive inheritance. It is definitely from an ancient Supreme Elder... it might even be from the Temple Master of the Temple of Marvels! If you can kill him and obtain that inheritance, you will surely become the future highest under the heavens!"

Elder Sun first begged and then tried temptation. However, the purple-robed man wasn't moved. The purple-robed man shook his head, saying, "You weren't able to do anything against Lin Lanjian. Although I am stronger than you, I would only be able to suppress him. If he decided to escape, then with his speed there is nothing I could do to stop him. Let alone me, I fear that even a true middle Divine Sea powerhouse would find themselves at the end of their rope chasing him around. For him to stumble upon the inheritance of an ancient Supreme Elder, that proves that his destiny is that of an unrivalled Emperor. He is already fated to become the highest under the heavens. If I try to defy the will of the heavens and attempt to go against Lin Lanjian's destiny, then I fear even I will die. Even the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom will likely swallow the insult of Ouye Qun's death and not say anything. Lin Lanjian has already grown into an unshakeable tree. With his strength, he can already be considered an Emperor."

The purple-robed man sighed as he spoke to here. He looked at Elder Sun's extremely pitiable expression and said, "If you want to save yourself then your only choice is to inform the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor and the Sublime Smelting Imperial Grand Uncle that Lin Lanjian has obtained the inheritance of the Temple of Marvels' Temple Master. If the two of them join forces, you have a slim chance of survival."

Although the inheritance of the Temple of Marvels' Temple Master was tempting, to the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor and the Sublime Smelting Imperial Grand Uncle, what they cared about the most were pills that could extend their lives. If this inheritance did not include those pills then they wouldn't risk arousing Lin Ming's ire. Moreover, Lin Ming also had Old Man Good Fortune who was closely behind him.

As the purple-robed man spoke to here, Elder Sun became increasingly depressed. If he had just been more humble when he saw Lin Ming then everything would have been fine. Thinking back to it, it was laughable how he had threatened to show Lin Ming the difference between a Life Destruction martial artist and a true Divine Sea powerhouse. Now, the result was that he had ended up in an extremely miserable state.

Elder Sun's body suddenly went cold, and the purple-robed man was also shocked, his forehead instantly turning wet with sweat. Just now, for a brief moment, he had felt an incomparably chilling perception passing over him. The master of this perception was absolutely a terrifying existence.

"Who is it!?"

The two of them held their breaths, not even daring to move. After that perception swept past them it didn't pause, and had now gone far away.

They both let out deep breaths of relief, feeling like they had just survived the apocalypse. That perception had just covered them for a brief moment and yet it felt as if their souls had frozen. Just who was that?

In the high skies, a voice muttered, “The one with the lower cultivation has seen Lin Lanjian. That means that Lin Lanjian should be in a world not too far away. With my speed, it should take at most a quarter hour to find him. Humph, your luck is over. You couldn’t escape even if you grew wings!”

Chapter 889 – Masked Man

Chapter 889 – Masked Man

…

…

…

"It's this world, I've finally returned to this world!" As Lin Ming looked at the dark forest around him, he determined that he had come here once before.

In this Temple of Marvels, every dimensional realm was different. It wasn't just different scenery, but even the frequency of spatial fluctuations was different.

This type of spatial fluctuation was like a person's fingerprints. If one was skilled in the Concept of Space, they could rely on this to judge whether or not they had come to this world before.

"Although I've found a familiar space here, that doesn't mean I'll be able to find the road out." The Temple of Marvels had a very strange and enigmatic spatial arrangement; it was like a massive maze. With Lin Ming's understandings towards the Concept of Space, he would slowly have to feel his way out.

As Lin Ming flew, he also began to quietly refine the spatial ring in his hand. This ring had been named by Jiang Ziji, and it was called the Extreme Violet Ring.

The Extreme Violet Ring was already a masterless object; configuring it for his own use wouldn't be difficult.

"Mm? This ring actually turned into a seal mark."

Lin Ming discovered that the Extreme Violet Ring suddenly vanished as he put his spirit mark on it. It turned into a little purple tattoo on his finger.

“It seems some quasi-Saint or true Saint artifact level treasures can be directly integrated into the body. The Cosmic Melting Furnace is the same.”

Lin Ming was overjoyed. If he wore the ring on his hand then it would be easy to damage, but if it turned into a seal tattoo on his body then it would be much more secure as well as hidden.

Each dimensional realm of the Temple of Marvels was only the size of a province of the Sky Fortune Kingdom; they were around 1000-2000 thousand miles wide. Lin Ming was able to quickly fly from one end to the other with his speed.

“After this dark forest dimensional realm, I should arrive at those strange islands. However, I’m afraid the spatial arrangements might have changed, making it more difficult to leave.”

As Lin Ming spoke to himself, he was about to leave through the space barrier of the dark forest world. But at this moment, he was suddenly startled. All of the hairs on his body stood on end as he rapidly drew backwards!

As Lin Ming helplessly watched the scene unfolding in front of him, he felt as if he had fallen into an icy lake. Before him, the space barrier was torn apart. A man wearing white clothes and a wood spirit jade mask suddenly strolled out from the void.

This person’s aura was deep like a fathomless ocean. His strength was impossible to estimate. He might even be more powerful than Old Man Good Fortune!

Without a doubt, this white-clothed masked man was a partner of that strange demon youth. This mysterious influence that was targeting him had likely come from the Sea of Miracles!

As his eyes locked on that wood spirit mask and he looked at its peculiar style and unique shape, Lin Ming was flooded with a horrifying realization.

His heart thumped in his chest. He remembered the model of this mask. He had seen it many times before. It was a design worn by the Nine Furnace Guard, and one that only the most upper level figures could wear.

Could it be…

Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air.

The Nine Furnace Guard was a military regiment directly under the political control of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. They had authority over all prisons in the nation. Later, they had been thoroughly controlled by Crown Prince Yang Yun and subordinated for his desires. Such a link already caused Lin Ming to correctly guess just who this masked man was.

“Yang Yun! It’s you!?!?” Lin Ming’s voice was icy cold!

And in front of him, the masked man only faintly smiled as he took off his wood spirit jade mask, revealing a handsome and exquisite face.

This man was Yang Yun!

“Haha, Brother Lin, how have you been?” Yang Yun smiled. It wasn’t surprising that Lin Ming had seen through his identity, nor had he been planning to conceal his status anyways.

As Lin Ming looked at the Yang Yun in front of him, his eyes flashed with an odd light. He had always felt that Yang Yun was extremely deep and impenetrable, not revealing just what he was hiding. And, what was most peculiar was that he never understood just what Yang Yun’s cultivation was.

Lin Ming had first come to know of Yang Yun because of his matters with the Heavencraft Trading Company. Yang Yun had sent forth the Nine Furnace Guard to thoroughly investigate all three trading companies of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, as well as the two great banks and the Hundred Treasures Auction House. He had planned to completely control these six great commercial organizations. It had to be known that once an economic organization was grasped in the hands of a nation, it was easy for corruption to multiply there, making it so that all gains and profits would slowly slip away. Thus, doing so was not a wise move. Even so, Yang Yun insisted on doing this, even moving against a tremendous pressure to do so.

This had caused the successor of the Heavencraft Trading Company, Heavencraft Xiaoxiao, to enter his room late at night and beg Lin Ming to request mercy for the Heavencraft Trading Company, using her own body as the price to do so. At the time, Lin Ming had thought something had felt wrong. Yang Yun's actions were simply too abrupt and forceful. Moreover, he had also called Xiaoxiao over to attend the Nine Flowers Banquet. It was likely that Yang Yun had planned to use her as a chip to win him over as a subordinate. Throughout this entire process, Yang Yun had never revealed his hand, and although Lin Ming had some faint suspicions, he still wasn't sure of them.

This had caused Lin Ming to always guard his mind and remain vigilant against him. Although Yang Yun repeatedly sent out great gifts to him, he maintained an appropriate distance throughout.

He had always felt that Yang Yun was simply too deep, with too many secrets.

Lin Ming didn't understand; just why did Yang Yun wish to control such a great portion of the economy? The three trading companies, two great banks, and the Hundred Treasures Auction House accounted for a total of 10% of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's economy. In addition, with the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom controlling all natural resource production such as mines, wood spirit jade lodes, medicine gardens and so forth, over half of the nation's economy had fallen into Yang Yun's hands.

Even so, he had managed to smoothly carry out all of his plans with no high level figures from the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom stopping him, or even trying to slow him down. This only showed just how meticulous and perfect Yang Yun's methods were. Regardless of what it was, this proved that Yang Yun's status in the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom was unshakeable!

But no matter how deep Yang Yun's abilities were hidden, Lin Ming never imagined that it would be to this degree. Today, Lin Ming could finally clearly see Yang Yun's cultivation.

He was at the early Divine Sea, but that was actually an eighth stage Life Destruction master's early Divine Sea! In the entire 100,000 year history of the Sky Spill Continent, the number of eighth stage Life Destruction martial artists could be counted on a single hand. The highest under the heavens didn't need to be at the eighth stage of Life Destruction, but every eighth stage Life Destruction martial artist was assured to become the highest under the heavens!

Yang Yun's early Divine Sea cultivation by itself was already able to sweep away the entire world! That was someone close to the highest under the heavens. After breaking through to the middle Divine Sea, he would truly be the highest under the heavens. This was a matter that could immeasurably raise the prestige of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. It was completely different from Situ Yaoyue, who had to fear assassination before she grew.

But Yang Yun had hidden all the time until now! He certainly had some scheme he was plotting!

Yang Yun had actually managed to reach the eighth stage of Life Destruction without raising any waves. This was simply unimaginable… he was only 40 years old!

Lin Ming remembered that Yang Yun was a genius that crossed into Life Destruction at 30 years of age. This was a cultivation speed that wasn't too fast for a peak Emperor level talent that aspired to reach the Divine Sea. Even Situ Luosha or Situ Chuan could achieve something like this.

But to first cross Life Destruction at 30 years of age and then reach the eighth stage Life Destruction Divine Sea by 40 years of age, that was simply impossible.

There was only one possibility… that was that the true Yang Yun had already died!

“Who are you?” Lin Ming’s guard and mind were concentrated to an unbelievable degree. In the face of such danger, even his own palms were wet with sweat. This was because he couldn’t imagine a single scenario in which he could win or escape. If Old Man Good Fortune were here then they might be able to use some tricky means to escape, but now there was absolutely no hope.

“I am truly Yang Yun, that is nothing but the truth!” Yang Yun had already guessed what Lin Ming was thinking.

“Then tell me, just how were you able to reach the Divine Sea after only 10 years in Life Destruction?” Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a cold light as he silently took out the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. Although there was nearly no hope of escape, he still had to struggle with everything he had.

“Haha…” Yang Yun congenially smiled. “The cultivation I showed before was purposely to mislead the public; it was simply an illusion. My cultivation can’t really be considered much. Brother Lin is only 23-24 years old, and with your speed you have high hopes of reaching the Divine Sea by the time you are 30 years old. In fact, there is even an extreme chance that you will become a ninth stage Life Destruction Divine Sea master. Ninth stage Life Destruction… in the Sky Spill Continent and the Holy Demon Continent, there had never appeared a ninth stage Life Destruction martial artist since ancient times. It is a concept that only exists in the most ancient of records… once Ninefall appears, the heavens and earth will change. Even in the Divine Realm that is an extraordinary character! But as for me, I only reached the eighth stage Life Destruction Divine Sea by 40 years of age. I cannot even hold a candle to Brother Lin’s achievements!”

Yang Yun casually spoke, not even drawing out a weapon. His entire body was relaxed, as if he were speaking to an old friend that he had run into. With his cultivation, he truly had the capital to be confident and lax.

“You entered the Sea of Miracles and came out alive?” Lin Ming suddenly thought of this possibility. Only such a lucky chance could explain everything that was happening now.

"You're half right." Yang Yun deeply sighed. "Brother Lin, your destiny is a rising rainbow. You have the life of an unrivalled Emperor. This is the destiny that you have accumulated through countless dangerous battles and life or death experiences. I simply cannot be compared to you. All I could do was use some evil methods to betray myself, giving away everything I had in exchange for power!"

As Yang Yun spoke to here, his eyes began to twinkle, causing Lin Ming to be stricken. Lin Ming was able to faintly guess some things. He had been especially shocked upon hearing Yang Yun say that he had given everything away. Yang Yun was burdened with far too many secrets.

"Brother Lin, although we are enemies, I still see you as my close friend. Everyone knows that I, Yang Yun, have a rare heaven-blessed talent, and I began rising to prominence at 12 years of age, never slowing down and finally becoming a once in a thousand year genius of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. But… no one actually knows just what I experienced when I was 12 years old."

As Yang Yun spoke to here, he shook his head as if he didn't wish to remember the events of the past. No matter how deep his secrets were, he still had to pour out his heart to others after binding these secrets within himself for far too long. Otherwise, it would cause psychological problems for him.

"I was born a bastard to a beautiful woman when my father visited one of his many imperial harems. For a son like me, in my father's several thousand years of life, if there weren't 5000 there were at least 3000 of them. And that didn't even account for all the other bastards he sired elsewhere in the world. A common mortal emperor only lives for a few dozen years and has a harem of 3000 beauties. But for a Divine Kingdom's Divine Emperor, as well as the High Prince and all the collateral royal Dukes, Marquises, Princes, and others, the number of imperial concubines is inestimable. There are at least one million possible male heirs. I was nothing but one person in an army of a million."

Yang Yun had a bit of a mocking tone in his voice as he spoke. Describing the royal clan juniors of a Divine Kingdom with an army of a million was truly a joke.

“With so many sons, those without strength were no different than ants. Their status would be no higher than a maid’s. My mother was even worse off. Because of my weakness, she had no status, and afterwards she died tragically in the palace harem…”

Yang Yun’s nonchalant words sounded as if he wasn’t sad at all. But the more calm his expression was, the more Lin Ming was actually able to sense the deeply rooted hatred in his heart, simmering with blazing heat for eternity.

Chapter 890 – Ancient Devil

Chapter 890 – Ancient Devil

…

…

…

In order for the royal families of the four Divine Kingdoms to maintain their thriving bloodlines, they also had to have a massive number of talents and a correspondingly massive amount of heirs. Even if their bloodline was amazing, they would need a large base of talents to screen out the most extraordinary amongst them.

And humanity's ability to multiply was extremely terrifying. The four Divine Kingdoms had a history of over 10,000 years and the number of royal family juniors had grown by a near exponential rate. In every generation, the most astounding talents of the bloodline would be screened out. All martial artists with ordinary talent would be eliminated, becoming nothing more than sacrifices for the rest.

Although Lin Ming was already aware of these matters and also deeply understood just how brutal the battles behind a harem could be, he was still secretly shocked upon hearing Yang Yun's words.

"Yang Yun, I can imagine and empathize with just how tragic your childhood was, because I too was unhappy in my youth. But do you really plan on retaliating against the world just because of this?"

"Retaliate against this world?" Yang Yun chuckled, "Why would I retaliate against this world? Not only will I not do that, but I will instead usher in a new golden era! I wish to establish my own legacy of glory and have my name etched eternally into the annals of history! You have probably heard this before, but the Sky Spill Continent is on a cursed world that has been sealed. I will break the curse over the Sky Spill Continent and restore it to its previous majesty from 100,000 years ago!”

As Yang Yun said this, his eyes flashed with a trace of demented madness. Lin Ming was taken aback. He never imagined that this would be Yang Yun’s goal. Those with a dream, and the perseverance, intelligence, and ability to accomplish them were the most terrifying opponents. They had no weakness nor would they be confused; they had a clear and defined purpose that they would chase to the ends of the world.

“If that’s true then why do you want to kill me? It doesn’t seem as if I conflict with your dream.”

“That’s right, you indeed do not conflict with my plans. In fact, I do not envy your strength. Only when more and more peerless talents arise can they complete my dream of ushering in a new golden age! But before then, I will actually need your body. There is an ancient soul within me that wishes to possess you. You are simply too extraordinary. Dual body and essence cultivation, your body has a 100% tempered spirit body as well as abnormal strength. It is the most suitable body for this spirit. I had originally wanted to take you in as my subordinate and train you until you grew further, but unfortunately… you did not agree. Now, you have grown far too quickly. I have no choice but to begin my plan ahead of time, otherwise I will lose the ability to control you in the future.”

As Yang Yun spoke to here, the space behind him twisted and the phantom of a titanic devil began to slowly spear. It blocked out the skies, releasing an old and deep laugh that echoed through the world.

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes and watched all that was happening behind Yang Yun. He finally understood that there was an ancient soul in Yang Yun’s body, and what Yang Yun meant by selling everything he had was the deal he made with this ancient soul. The reason that Yang Yun was able to obtain such strength was all because of this ancient soul!

A soul that had survived for 100,000 years… could it be an existence from the Sea of Miracles?

Lin Ming's mind rapidly raced. But at this time, the normally placid and genteel Yang Yun's eyes turned blood red. He roared out like a savage beast as his white robes tore off from his body, his face becoming disgustingly ferocious!

It was obvious that Yang Yun had already become one with the ancient devil in his body. With Yang Yun's strength combined with that devil body, his combat strength had reached a point that Lin Ming could not imagine!

"Mortal! To become my body will be your honor!"

Roarr!

Yang Yun's speed reached an incredulous degree. He turned into a blur. Although it seemed that he was still standing in place, his claws had already caught up to Lin Ming!

Lin Ming's pupils contracted. He stepped on Golden Roc Shattering the Void and drew backwards. Facing such a powerful enemy, it was simply impossible to frontally contend with him. His only choice was to run away! He had to take advantage of his understanding into the Concept of Space as well as his abnormal speed to run as far as he could.

Woosh!

A single step took him over a dozen miles away. Lin Ming opened the Gate of Wonder, reaching the pinnacle of speed.

However, just as he emerged from the distorted space, he actually felt a maddening killing intent enveloping him from behind. As he looked back he was shocked to see that Yang Yun was close behind, his icy claws reaching for him again!

This speed that crossed over a dozen miles in just a split second didn't require any understandings of Concepts or Laws at all – it was simply brute strength. For Yang Yun to be able to follow Lin Ming like this after he had opened the Gate of Wonder and used Golden Roc Shattering the Void, such speed was horrifying!

Ho – !

Seeing that it was impossible to dodge this claw strike, Lin Ming erupted in a loud bellow and opened the Gate of Pain. The Heretical God Force was revolved to the limit as two million jins of strength erupted from his body. The power of thunder and fire howled out as the Great Desolate Blood Halberd pounded downwards!

Peng!

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd violently clashed with Yang Yun's claw phantom. Lin Ming felt a savage force wash through his body as he was sent flying backwards like a broken leaf in a storm. He was unable to control his body as the crazy and rampant energy blew him around. His blood vitality tumbled in his body as many of his organs began to break apart!

No matter how formidable his body was, he was simply unable to withstand Yang Yun's terrifying energy attack!

"Give me your body!!!"

Yang Yun grasped out with his claw. Lin Ming bit down on the tip of his tongue and the flame mark between his eyebrows ignited with a blazing bloody light. The phantom of a phoenix appeared behind Lin Ming as he burned all 100 drops of the Ancient Phoenix blood within his body!

Hoo – !

The phoenix's cry pierced through the world. At that moment it was like a fiery sun had been born within Lin Ming. As Yang Yun's demon claw approached, it seemed to be lit up by the sun, sending out 'chi chi chi' sounds as it was melted away by the phoenix's flames!

That brief delay bought Lin Ming valuable time. He brought the Great Desolate Blood Halberd forth, the power of fire and thunder twisting together on the halberd edge!

"Penetrating Rainbow!"

Lin Ming roared out as the Heretical God Sprout's Burning Star Flame and Nine Heavens Divine Thunder were released without reservation, a potent and violent explosion blowing up!

Peng!

The demon claw shattered apart even as Yang Yun's lips curved up in a hideous grin. Lin Ming was far from being Yang Yun's opponent. However, the Ancient Devil in his body was only a soul form; as long as a soul didn't have a true body, it would fear thunder. When ancient monsters had to cross heavenly tribulation in their cultivations, their divine souls would find this pass difficult to cross. In a thunderstorm, a single thunderclap would send infinite ghosts scattered out, none of them daring to appear. This was because they feared the thunder.

Moreover, Lin Ming's attack contained no ordinary thunder, but the top grade heaven-step Nine Heavens Divine Thunder!

Not just that, but the Ancient Devil in Yang Yun's body was a yin energy form, but the blazing phoenix produced from burning the Ancient Phoenix blood was actually the yang energy-filled Nine Yang Flames. It was the nemesis of all yin energy!

With both of these forces combined, the demon claw sent out by Yang Yun was forcefully broken apart!

"Nine Heavens Divine Thunder, Burning Star Flame, and you even have the Ancient Phoenix Saint Body! That is the most powerful physique from the Sky Spill Continent of 100,000 years ago that was able to stand on par with the Electric Violet Kirin Saint Body! If I can obtain your pure yang body then that will be the greatest nourishment to restore my deteriorating soul. You are truly the greatest possible gift that the heavens could bless me with!”

‘Yang Yun’ cackled with strange ‘jejejeje’ sounds. Although he was restrained in terms of attributes, he had injured Lin Ming without being touched at all. The difference in strength was simply too great! Yang Yun’s strength already approached Old Man Good Fortune’s, and now with the Ancient Devil possessing him, he was no weaker than a top level character like the Eightfall Thunder Emperor. In other words, he was on the same level as the highest under the heavens!

“Resistance is futile. Join me, assimilate with me, become one with me, turn into the foundation to bring forth an eternal golden age!” Yang Yun had already fallen into depravity. After being possessed by the Ancient Devil, he had lost all rationality!

Lin Ming didn’t run. After witnessing Yang Yun’s terrifying speed, he was now well aware that running was useless. Instead, it would only weaken his own momentum. Although the gap between them was insurmountable, he wouldn’t sit idly by and be captured. He did not give up hope or his will. Since this Ancient Devil wished to seize his body then there was no way it could avoid a battle of soul and will. In terms of combat strength, Lin Ming was not a match, but if this Ancient Devil tried to possess his body then he had a faint chance of survival!

With such a thread of hope hanging in front of him, how could he give up!?

After having burnt the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, Lin Ming’s strength had reached the peak. But, this was unable to continue forever. With his current strength, he was only able to burn all of the Ancient Phoenix blood for a brief moment before it faded away. During this time, he had to use his highest combat strength and wound that ancient soul so that it would give him that much greater a chance of survival.

“Thunder Battleform!”

Ca!

The power of thunder in the entire world stirred up, completely gathering towards Lin Ming. This energy attached to his body, forming a purple scaled war armor. He was mighty and majestic like a god of thunder born unto the world!

This was a technique created by the Eightfall Thunder Emperor. It was able to greatly enhance one's defensive power and combat strength. Now that Lin Ming had stepped into the second stage of Life Destruction and also opened the Gate of Pain, his Thunder Battleform had risen to a new level. Although he wasn't yet able to reach the world-domineering might of the Eightfall Thunder Emperor, he was still able to show off some of its true valor.

"Hehe, it's true that I am only a soul form, but do you think that with your little power of thunder you can actually harm me? And do you think that if you injure me, you can rely on your silver battle spirit to contend with me when I possess your body, and even swallow me in return? Haha… dream on boy, I have lived a life thousands of times longer than your own. How could I not see through every single thought you have? Any resistance you put up will be meaningless. You are destined to become my body!"

Yang Yun faced the skies and wildly laughed. At this time there wasn't any hint of Yang Yun left; he had devolved into an avatar of that cruel Ancient Devil.

Lin Ming was a man of determination and a hardened will. Even so, his heart sank as he heard the Ancient Devil's words, a feeling of despair beginning to gush up from within him. That was right… when he fought Situ Yaoyue, he had to put out every single hidden card he had and had displayed the limit of his strength; his opponent was keenly aware of every possible move he could make. Moreover, he was up against an old monster of ancient times who had been plotting and planning all for today. It was even possible that the appearance of the Temple of Marvels was all a part of its plans, so how could it not be prepared for anything Lin Ming could try?

This feeling of anguish and despair grew within him like a weed, spreading through Lin Ming's entire body like a fast acting disease. His fighting spirit immediately plummeted. It was as if he knew all resistance was useless.

Perhaps it was better to just let himself be captured and possessed.

This gloomy and disheartening feeling that made Lin Ming want to give up and wait for his doom left him startled.

This was… demonic charm!!

This was to use an invisible soul force and confuse and poison the mind of an opponent, causing them to lose all strength to resist. Even though Lin Ming had comprehended a silver battle spirit, he had still almost fallen for this move. This devil, whether it was combat experience or trickery, everything it did far surpassed Lin Ming's imagination.

Lin Ming fiercely bit down on his tongue, using the pain to shake himself from the shadow of this demonic charm. But at this moment, Yang Yun had already made his move.

How could he possibly miss such an opportunity!?

The demon claw grasped out, covering the world!

Chapter 891 – Seize

Chapter 891 – Seize

…

…

…

An endlessly stretching demon claw fired towards Lin Ming like a twister. A terrifying aura completely locked down the surrounding space, making it so that Lin Ming couldn't dodge even if he wanted to.

At this critical moment, Lin Ming's pupils contracted and he suddenly thrust out the Great Desolate Blood Halberd in his hands.

Ohh!

The flaming phoenix cried out, the Nine Heavens Divine Thunder impacted straight into the dark skies.

The intense collision caused all of the space around Lin Ming to explode. The intertwining power of thunder and fire was actually unable to resist the power of that demon claw.

This was the disparity of absolute strength. When coupled with the creeping influence of that demonic charm, even if Lin Ming's attributes repelled Yang Yun, he still wasn't his match.

Bang!

Thunder and fire were forcefully torn apart. Although part of that demon claw was melted away, it still grasped down on Lin Ming's body!

His protective true essence ripped apart along with his clothes, revealing the Demon Emperor Armor beneath.

Although the quasi-Saint artifact level Demon Emperor Armor was tough, it still had a fatal flaw in the hole at the chest. The Ancient Devil was treacherous and cunning; all of the attack's energy slipped past that flaw.

Puff!

Lin Ming spat out a mouthful of blood, his entire chest covered in red! The Thunder Battleform nearly completely vanished. The disparity was just too great!

Yang Yun chased forwards, sending out another claw. Lin Ming wasn't able to gather himself; he simply wasn't able to resist.

"Hehe, be a good little boy and obediently let me seize your body!"

This claw easily enveloped Lin Ming. Lin Ming was caught in this hand as if he would be crushed at any moment.

"Essence! Energy! Soul! Devour all!"

That massive devil phantom appeared behind Yang Yun once again. The devil opened its great maw and a black vortex appeared, beginning to attract everything towards it. Lin Ming felt his spiritual sea become restless. The blood vitality within him raged and his true essence trembled as if it would be pulled out from him at any moment.

Essence, energy, and soul were the three treasures that comprised a human being, the life vigor of an individual. Essence was vitality, power of the bloodline, the very basis of the mortal body. Energy was origin energy and the dantian's true essence. The soul was the primordial spirit, the marriage of spirit and will.

The Ancient Devil wanted to swallow up Lin Ming's essence, energy, and soul. Once he lost those three things, he would lose everything that he was!

At this life or death moment, Lin Ming's mind was still unbelievably calm. That Ancient Devil didn't dare to directly seize his body because it wasn't willing to engage in a showdown of will and soul. First, he would suck away his vital essence and weaken him to increase its strength. At that time it would have a much higher assurance of possessing Lin Ming.

In other words, even if the Ancient Devil knew that Lin Ming's final trump card was his silver battle spirit, it still didn't have anything it could do. This was because in order to possess Lin Ming's body, it had no choice but to engage in a showdown of will.

In that instant, the silver battle spirit within Lin Ming's spiritual sea howled forth. His originally restless soul force was immediately suppressed and his will stabilized!

But the power of blood and all of the energy within his body seemed as if it would break out at any moment.

"Silver battle spirit, sword of will!"

Lin Ming shouted out loud, and a silver white sword of will shot out from between his eyebrows. This sword of will had the power of thunder poured into it. This projection of will mixed with the power of thunder thrust straight towards the Ancient Devil behind Yang Yun!

The sword of will could only be used to extinguish bodies of will, spiritual beings that had no physical existence. For instance, when Lin Ming had crossed Life Destruction and the Purple Lion Thunder Source had attacked him, it had been injured by the battle spirit manifestation of his will. And this current Ancient Devil soul in front of him was also a kind of will body!

"Hehe, how naïve! Although I am not afraid of your silver battle spirit, that doesn't mean that I'll freely engage you in a battle of wills. Return!"

In that moment, the giant devil phantom behind Yang Yun was sucked back into his body without the least bit outside. When the Ancient Devil still had a mortal form, its cultivation had been extremely high and its battle spirit accomplishments were no worse than Lin

Ming's. It was only because its soul was incomplete so its will was slightly weakened, thus it didn't want to give Lin Ming even the slightest chance.

Lin Ming could feel the Ancient Devil stop absorbing his life vigor. And at the same time, Lin Ming's sword of will chopped through the void!

Once a soul entered a body, that soul would only enter the world of will for a will showdown if they so decided on their own initiative, otherwise, it was impossible to use a battle spirit to directly kill the life of another. This was the reason that a battle spirit had to be attached to a material object.

With his true essence moving restlessly and his blood vitality also suppressed, Yang Yun suddenly stretched out his demon claw and grasped out at Lin Ming. "Jejejeje, I do not need to swallow your essence, energy, and soul in order to kill you all the same! In front of me you are nothing more than a little baby: useless and weak!

"Netherworld Demon Claw!"

Monstrous ghosts filled the skies and space itself was torn apart like paper. Lin Ming tightly guarded his mind and the power of thunder within the Heretical God Sprout burst out without hesitation.

"Power of death! Sword of Judgment!"

Purple lightning condensed into the phantom of a divine sword, slashing through the infinite skies! This was also one of the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's famed unique techniques. The power of thunder was most effective at suppressing ghosts and demons; the Sword of Judgment was Lin Ming's most effective attack method!

"Humph, the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's Sword of Judgment? Even if the Eightfall Thunder Emperor were to personally arrive here, he still might not be able to harm me. Your cultivation is simply far too low to the point that it doesn't even matter at all! Break for me!" The Ancient Devil could sift through Yang Yun's memories. It was well aware of the

Eightfall Thunder Emperor and his Sword of Judgment, and simply didn’t place it in his eyes at all.

The Netherworld Demon Claw smashed into the Sword of Judgment. A tiny bit of that demon claw was melted away by the power of thunder, but the Sword of Judgment was directly grasped by that Netherworld Demon Claw and shattered to bits!

The Sword of Judgment was connected to Lin Ming’s will. As it shattered, his face turned paper white. At this time, the power from burning the Ancient Phoenix blood had nearly all faded away. Burning the Ancient Phoenix blood simply required too much true essence. Even if his true essence reserves were extremely deep right now, he still couldn’t sustain this continued combustion of the Ancient Phoenix blood. When he fought Situ Yaoyue, he had only burnt this blood for a very short time.

Once Lin Ming lost the support of the Ancient Phoenix blood, it would no longer be possible for him to resist the Ancient Devil.

“Is your strength almost gone? What a pity. If you had the Electric Violet Kirin Saint Body and could reach the same degree as your Ancient Phoenix Saint Body, as well as reach a third stage Life Destruction cultivation, your power of thunder might pose a little bit of a threat to me. But now, everything you’re doing is merely the useless struggles of the dying!”

Yang Yun attacked once again. The only reason that the fight had dragged on to this point was that the Ancient Devil wanted to possess Lin Ming’s body. Otherwise, if it wanted to kill Lin Ming, he would have been long dead by now.

As Lin Ming saw Yang Yun rushing at him, his eyes flashed with a crazed light. He bit down on the tip of his tongue, burning the blood of the Ancient Phoenix even as he spat forth his blood essence!

Instead of having his body seized by others, he might as well burn his soul, combust his life source, and desperately fight with every last ounce he had!

“You want to combust your life source? Your body is already mine, how can I let you ruin it? Time Laws, Concept of Stagnation!”

In that moment when Lin Ming was about to burn his soul, he suddenly felt the flow of time slow down around him. The fluttering of his fires of life, his heartbeat, his nerves, his will, his divine soul, everything slowed down, nearly coming to a screeching halt. It was like he was an old wooden puppet that was thickened with age and dirt.

Time Laws!

Lin Ming’s consciousness sobered in that moment. He wanted to use his own understanding of the Concept of Time to break through this time cage, but compared to the Ancient Devil, his strength was like a little gust of wind blowing against a titanic tree; the disparity was too great!

The Ancient Devil before him had a boundary that was far too high. It was an existence that Lin Ming could hardly even look up to!

“It’s over!”

Yang Yun waved his hands and an infinite darkness came falling down. Lin Ming felt like the space around him had condensed into reality and he was mired in this thick darkness. He was unable to breathe, unable to even hear his own heartbeat!

Concept of Darkness!

This Ancient Devil was a fierce elite from 100,000 years ago. It was both skilled in the Concept of Time and the Concept of Darkness. It was exactly because it could change the flow of time with its Concept of Time that it could survive for 100,000 years in the Sea or Miracles. In terms of just its understandings towards the Concept of Time, the Ancient Devil surpassed even Old Man Good Fortune.

Lin Ming gradually lost control of his body. His limbs turned cold, his heart paused, and he found it hard to even have a single thought.

He poured the entirety of his will into his spiritual sea, tenaciously clinging onto that last bit of clarity in his mind. He waited for the Ancient Devil to enter and attempt to seize his body so that he could carry on the final battle of wills.

This would be Lin Ming's last chance to make a comeback!

If he lost this battle then he would turn to nothing, leaving nothing behind but a zombie corpse. In this world, this body of his would no longer have anything to do with him.

"You want to cling to your body and attempt a final battle with me in a struggle for your body? I do not fear you! Let me tell you, when I still had a body, my cultivation had reached a boundary that you cannot possibly imagine! My true form's battle spirit has already reached silver perfection, just a single step from becoming a gold battle spirit! That is far higher than your elementary silver level! Do you actually think you can win? How stupid of you! Hahahaha!"

The Ancient Devil's voice clearly resounded in Lin Ming's ear. But Lin Ming tightly maintained his spiritual sea, no longer allowing his will and belief to be shaken by these words. He had already suffered a loss to this demonic charm and he wouldn't fall for it a second time. He was well aware that the reason the Ancient Devil was wasting so much strength to weaken him was because this being didn't have a complete assurance it could steal his body. Otherwise, there was no reason it would spout so much crap, all in order to tear down his own confidence and will. Even this current blabbering was the same!

Perhaps it might have really achieved a perfect silver battle spirit, but after 100,000 years of being sealed in the Sea of Miracles, its soul must have been severely wounded. The soul was the vessel of will. Once the soul was damaged, one's will would inevitably weaken. Although those ancient Supreme Elders' wills could endure for over 100,000 years without extinguishing, that will was incomparable to how it was in their peak form.

"Fight! I must win this fight!" Lin Ming's mind was incomparably firm and filled with determination. In that moment, his silver battle spirit howled, faintly seeming as if it would evolve to the silver small success level!

“This brat actually isn’t fooled by me, but that doesn’t matter. All that means is that I will have to consume some of my vital primordial essence. Victory is already guaranteed.”

The Ancient Devil had already spent an immense amount of effort creating his plans. It had been preparing for this for thousands of years already in the Sea of Miracles. It started with Yang Yun, and then came to the Sky Spill Continent and continued the next steps in its grand plan. Finally, it had chosen Lin Ming to be its mortal vessel. How could it possibly fail at the final step?

“Give me your mortal body!”

The Ancient Devil roared and split its soul in two. The more formidable part thrust through the chaotic darkness, penetrating into Lin Ming’s body!

The Ancient Devil left behind a third of its soul as support. In these last 100,000 years, the Ancient Devil had developed a character that could not be more cautious. It left behind a third of its soul in Yang Yun to control him. The Ancient Devil did not trust anyone. If Yang Yun decided to do something to him while it was seizing Lin Ming’s body and it finally became the victim in all this then it truly would be an idiot.

Another reason was to guard against any helper of Lin Ming’s. It would be able to call upon this leftover soul to support it at any time.

Chapter 892 – Bringing About One's Own Destruction

Chapter 892 – Bringing About One's Own Destruction

…

…

…

"Die for me!"

As the Ancient Devil rushed into Lin Ming's body, it manifested into a fierce avatar. Its entire body was covered with spines like an ancient vicious beast. It rushed towards Lin Ming's spiritual sea with an unimaginable speed!

In the world with this, every step this ancient vicious beast took shook the world. Such a terrible momentum made one feel small and powerless.

"It really is a silver battle spirit of a higher rank than my own!" Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath, his pupils shrinking. He tightly grasped his spiritual sea, waiting for this oncoming storm. This was the final battle he had been waiting for, the struggle to seize his body!

"Boy, go die!"

The Ancient Devil suddenly launched into the air, making a life or death attack. This momentum had gathered for such a long time that in this world of will, this attack was able to sunder mountains and split seas!

However, just as that Ancient Devil sprung into the air, it actually felt a massive suction force pulling on its body. This traction was endless, mysterious and colossal, as if it were an unmatched force that would brook no resistance!

Compared to this terrifying aura, the Ancient Devil was nothing but a little ant in front of a dragon, lacking all ability to revolt!

“What!?”

The Ancient Devil was shocked. It swiveled its head to see that behind it was a titanic black vortex. This vortex covered the entire world of will, seeming as if there were a door behind it that led to all the mysteries of the Great Dao!

The black vortex swirled at an extremely slow speed. However, as it spun around, it seemed as if it were able to crush apart all Laws and principles. In front of this black vortex, all power was meaningless, as if one were facing the boundless universe itself.

“This… this is…”

The Ancient Devil’s eyes widened in shock. Before it even had time to think, its body that had just jumped up was like a leaf in a storm, uncontrollably flying towards the black vortex.

“Ahhhhh!”

The Ancient Devil roared out with panic and horror as it desperately tried to rid itself from the shackles of the suction force. But, using his body to withstand the power that seemed to encompass the entire universe couldn’t even be considered as a breath of wind against a massive tree!

“Ahhh, break for me!”

The Ancient Devil’s eyes turned blood red as it split its soul form in half. One half suddenly accelerated towards the black vortex, but the other half tried to desperately flee by using the knockback from the explosion. At this moment it could only endure discarding part of its soul to preserve the rest of it. This was his divine soul. One he lost even just a part of it he would never be able to restore it.

The soul-tearing pain caused the Ancient Devil to go crazy with pain. But what was even more maddening was that even with the support of rupturing its own soul, it still couldn't escape the suction of this black vortex. Not only did that black vortex swallow his soul, but it also swallowed all will and space, blocking off every avenue of escape.

"Nooo!"

The Ancient Devil emitted a cry of unwilling rage. Finally, its body was slowly swallowed up into that black vortex, like a tiny wisp of smoke despairing into the endless sea, not even worth mentioning. After swallowing this soul, the black vortex still slowly revolved at its own pace as if nothing had happened at all...

From beginning to end, Lin Ming, who had been stubbornly defending his spiritual sea, hadn't been moved in the least. He had planned to fight until the bitter end and had even psychologically prepared himself to suicide into that Ancient Devil, but now he merely stood there, stunned.

He stared blankly on as that Ancient Devil roared like a rabid dog as it rushed over to him. Then, he also witnessed the crazy scene of it being sucked into that black vortex without even the slightest bit of a chance.

That black vortex was the Magic Cube.

Lin Ming gulped. As he looked at the Magic Cube black vortex in the world of will, he was simply speechless.

He felt as if all of this had been a dream. The Magic Cube seemed as if it contained the Source Laws of the Great Dao. However, he was unable to delve into its secrets with his current boundary.

Such a thing had actually stayed in his body?

Lin Ming remembered when the Saintess of the Verdant Feather Holy Land had activated the supernatural powers of the Magic Cube, causing the 10,000 Divine Realm Supreme Elders to disintegrate and sucking all of their souls into the Magic Cube!

Those Divine Realm Supreme Elders were not random weaklings and minions. They had been powerhouses from all over the universe that Tian Mingzi had recruited. The Demon Emperor was one of them. Although the Demon Emperor couldn't be considered as a heaven-defying character in the Divine Realm, he was still an outstanding elite of his era. Even if he couldn't compare with a top level character like Fairy Feng, he shouldn't have been too far off.

Moreover, the Demon Emperor wasn't even the strongest of the group. And those stronger powerhouses had still been swallowed up by the Magic Cube, all of their souls cleanly devoured without anything remaining.

Although Lin Ming didn't know what boundary this devil that wanted to seize his body had reached, no matter how amazing it was, it still shouldn't have reached the level of the Demon Emperor. Even that assumption was already grossly overestimating it.

As all of these thoughts rapidly cut through Lin Ming's mind, he suddenly awoke to consciousness again. At this time, he had to break through the cage of darkness as quickly as he could!

………..

"Ahhhhh!"

Outside in the real world, the possessed Yang Yun issued a miserable scream. Two-thirds of the Ancient Devil's soul had been lost in Lin Ming's body without even a speck remaining!

Moreover, after its soul had been swallowed up by that mysterious black vortex, its spirit mark had immediately been erased, becoming nothing but pure memories. At that moment when its spirit mark had been erased, the excruciating pain had caused the Ancient Devil to go mad!

And at this time, Lin Ming suddenly opened his eyes within the cage of darkness.

After the cage of darkness lost the control from the Ancient Devil, it became incomparably fragile. Lin Ming roared, bringing up the Great Desolate Blood Halberd as he planned to rip apart this cage of darkness!

Ka ka ka!

The condensed darkness that had manifested into substance began cracking like a shattered mirror. Lin Ming was like a beast as he flushed outside!

He slammed his teeth against the tip of his tongue without hesitation, instantly spitting out his life's blood essence. In this life or death crisis, he naturally couldn't be cheap about spending his blood essence. After all, his life source and blood vitality were vivid and potent and he also had a massive amount of heavenly materials on him. He could restore this lost blood essence at a later date. But if he lost his life, then everything he had would be lost.

Nine Heavens Divine Thunder!

Burning Star Flame!

Eight Inner Hidden Gates!

Heretical God Force!

Light began to flash between Lin Ming's eyebrows as he burned the last of the Ancient Phoenix blood within him. He roared out and with over 100% of his strength, the power of thunderfire twisted together on the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, erupting in a violent explosion.

Penetrating Rainbow!

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd's halberd light crossed through 10 miles of the void. A blinding light lit up the dimensional realm for thousands of miles, fiery and radiant!

And at this time, the Ancient Devil that controlled Yang Yun's body was in a spasmodic state. Even though Yang Yun's cultivation was at the early Divine Sea and he had also crossed eight stages of Life Destruction, he still wasn't able to resist this. It was impossible to rely on just his mortal body to resist the Great Desolate Blood Halberd that was being wielded with two million jins of strength!

The body of an essence gathering martial artist was extremely frail!

At this crucial moment, Yang Yun's own divine soul shot out from his spiritual sea as he tried to forcibly take control over his body. But at this time, because two-thirds of the Ancient Devil's soul had been torn away and the soul mark also erased by the Magic Cube, it had simply lost all control and rationale. In this state, Yang Yun's soul was still inferior to the great power of the Ancient Devil; it would be difficult to wrest control of his body quickly!

"Damnit!"

Yang Yun crazily shouted out. As he saw Lin Ming's Great Desolate Blood Halberd falling down on him, he desperately and decisively burnt a part of his soul source, forcibly taking control over most of his body and recalling half of his energy.

There was no time to take a weapon out from his spatial ring. Yang Yun's claw smashed against Lin Ming's Great Desolate Blood Halberd!

Yang Yun was not the same as the Ancient Devil. The Ancient Devil had used its claws originally and with its powerful energy it could contend with the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. But as for Yang Yun, he leaned towards using the sword. Although he had studied some claw techniques from the Ancient Devil, in a condition where he had to hastily resort to this claw attack and where he only had control of half his body, how could he possibly resist Lin Ming's strike?

"Ahh!"

Yang Yun exploded with a roar as his entire right arm burst apart. He vomited a great mouthful of blood as his body was sent flying backwards like a broken sack!

He had lost his hand in a single exchange!

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a sharp light. At this time, his eyes were already red with killing rage. Now that his attack had succeeded, how could he possibly stop!? His feet trod upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void as he flashed in front of Yang Yun, his halberd falling once again!

Law of Annihilation, Chain of Stars!

Bang!

The space around Lin Ming shattered, turning into countless space fragments that swept towards Yang Yun like a cloud!

Yang Yun's right had a stump of meat and bone that had been burst apart, with blood pouring out. As he saw Lin Ming's halberd cut down at him, he finally let out a long laugh. "Good! Very good! Lin Lanjian, you truly have the destiny of an unrivalled Emperor! Even now you haven't died! Then, let me meet your halberd!"

Yang Yun used his left hand to extract a sword. The sword howled forth, slanting as it slashed against the halberd light!

Bang!

A violent explosion caused the world to pale and mountains to collapse. Yang Yun and Lin Ming both flew backwards. Yang Yun was covered with layers of wounds, but Lin Ming's blood vitality was also tumbling within him, making it hard for him to sustain himself. The combustion of the Ancient Phoenix Blood had reached its end as well as the blood essence he burned. Although he had the Gate of Healing to restore his strength, he still couldn't withstand such consumption of energy.

But Yang Yun was in an even worse condition than Lin Ming. Not only had been seriously wounded by the previous attack, but the Ancient Devil in his mind was maniacally rampaging about, making it impossible to fully control his body.

“Yang Yun, I will remember this!”

As Lin Ming spoke this, he turned around and fled at full speed. Most of his strength had been spent. Although Yang Yun was in an extremely poor state, once that Ancient Demon recovered its consciousness, Lin Ming would die if he stayed. The Ancient Devil knew that he had a mystic object within his body that could devour souls. It wouldn’t walk into that trap again and try to do something as stupid as seizing his body.

If they fought, Lin Ming would most assuredly be the one to die.

Moreover, Lin Ming had no idea where that strange demon youth was. If that demon youth suddenly appeared then Lin Ming would have no ability to resist!

Although he very much wanted to take this chance to kill Yang Yun, Lin Ming had no choice but to suppress this unrealistic and fanciful thought, instead turning around to escape!

With the speed at which his strength grew, he simply didn’t need to take such a risk. It was better to escape this Temple of Marvels and then rely on the lucky chances he had found here, find a secure location, and then cross another two or three stages of Life Destruction, keeping hidden from the world for three years!

At that time, once he emerged from his seclusion he could laugh at the entire world with arrogant disdain!

After opening the Gate of Wonder, Lin Ming was like a meteor as he shot into the distant horizon. As for Yang Yun, with his severe wounds and also not being in full control of his body, it was impossible for him to give chase.

“Failure at the end!” Yang Yun grit his teeth as he saw Lin Ming vanish.

Yang Yun looked in at the Ancient Devil in his spiritual sea that was crazily struggling. It had only one-third of its strength left. Yang Yun suddenly gave birth to the thought of swallowing it up instead, but after a moment's hesitation he put down that thought.

First, he didn't have full assurance he could do so, and secondly, facing this archenemy Lin Ming, he needed a helper.

Chapter 893 – Narrow Escape

Chapter 893 – Narrow Escape

…

…

…

Lin Ming rapidly fled past the dimensional realms. Because his speed was too fast, a strong heavenly wind violently blew into him, causing sparks to fly off his bodily protective true essence.

Burning the Ancient Phoenix blood greatly exhausted Lin Ming's true essence, leaving him with no choice but to use pills to supplement it. He had already collected many types of pills and medicines that could restore his strength. These were all high grade goods. High grade true essence restoring pills were relatively pure. But eating too many of them could lead to the energy mixing up and becoming impure, which would lead to a drop in his combat strength.

He flew past many worlds in a single breath, his mind constantly constructing and deducing a map of space in his mind. By relying on his understandings of the Concept of Space, Lin Ming was finally able to find the exit from the Temple of Marvels!

"It's here! I've finally escaped!"

Lin Ming summoned his true essence and rushed out from the Temple of Marvels. As he saw the dark and gloomy 8000 Mile Black Swamp before him, he was overjoyed like someone that had just survived the apocalypse. This adventure into the Temple of Marvels had been filled with dangers!

“I have to leave here immediately. That sharp-eared strange demon youth isn’t that much different from the Ancient Devil that possessed Yang Yun; both of them have strength near the highest under the heavens. If they join forces they can turn any Divine Kingdom upside down. In addition, not only did I offend the Asura Divine Kingdom but now I’ve even formed a grudge with the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom. To make matters worse, I don’t even know what sort of plot that Ancient Devil and Yang Yun have in mind. If they really plan on controlling this world then by the time they come looking for me that will make the entire world my enemy!”

Lin Ming didn’t know what the result of the strange demon youth’s fight with Old Man Good Fortune was like. He also didn’t know that Old Man Good Fortune had unexpectedly managed to severely wound the strange demon youth. Not knowing what happened caused Lin Ming to be even more anxious. After entering the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, he immediately flew into the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion, wildly flying through the fields of lightning.

This was the third time that Lin Ming had come to the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. At this point, he was already familiar with the terrain. In addition, he ate less than half of a thunder Dao fruit, causing his compatibility with thunder to increase even more. With his free and unimpeded movements in the thunder dominion, it took him only one hour to fly out of the 8000 Mile Black Swamp.

Not just that, but when he passed through the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion he also had the Heretical God Sprout absorb the golden red lightning to its limits. This was his final preparation for breaking through to the third stage of Life Destruction. Using this method would save him a great deal of top grade spirit essence stones.

The 8000 Mile Black Swamp was surrounded by the four Divine Kingdoms. Lin Ming chose the direction of the weakest of them, the Seven Star Divine Kingdom, and shot towards it.

In terms of speed, Lin Ming was just a bit slower than top characters like the strange demon youth, Yang Yun, and Old Man Good Fortune. At this time, not even Situ Haotian would be able to chase after him, and with his outstanding endurance, he could maintain this extreme speed for most of a day. The civilians of the Seven Star Divine Kingdom only saw a faint blue ray of light streak through the skies, but they were unable to see just what it was.

Lin Ming shot through the Seven Stars Divine Kingdom in a single go. As he left their borders, he put on a wood spirit jade mask and changed directions several times before finally choosing a distant and desolate hill. The Sky Spill Continent was an incomparably vast land. No matter how monstrous or exquisite Yang Yun's methods were, it would still be extremely difficult for him to find Lin Ming. Not even a needle in a haystack was a good enough analogy.

………………

At this time, in the Temple of Marvels, the strange demon youth finally awoke from his deep sleep; he had been restoring his wounds in his bronze ghost coffin. As for Yang Yun, the Ancient Devil had finally restored his consciousness after surviving the unbearable pain of having his soul torn apart.

"Damn it all! Kill! Kill, kill, kill, kill, kill, kill!"

"Lin Lanjian, I will annihilate your body and soul!! Ahhhh!"

Bang!

The Ancient Devil thrust out a claw and a distant mountain burst apart. A terrifying energy exploded outwards, causing this part of the world to shake, as if it couldn't withstand the Ancient Devil's rage and was about to rupture at any moment!

Yang Yun was in his own spiritual sea, coldly and closely watching as the Ancient Devil rampaged like a madman. In fact, his relation with the Ancient Devil wasn't harmonious at all. Yang Yun was a man filled with his own ambitions who needed to control his destiny, just the like Ancient Devil. The two of them had joined forces due to mutual benefit, but the truth was that they always kept their guard up against against the other.

"My soul! Two-thirds of my soul! That damned little beast, just what kind of treasure does he have on him!? Is it a spirit artifact? How is this possible!?"

A Saint artifact was not the peak of all magic treasures. A Saint artifact could be divided into three different grades, and above a high-grade Saint artifact were even higher ranks of mystical treasures. It was obvious that a high-grade Saint artifact was nowhere near enough to describe the terrifying black vortex in Lin Ming's body.

"Spirit artifact?" Yang Yun's heart stirred, but he remained silent. He only secretly paid attention, his mind on full alert. It was apparent that the Ancient Devil had encountered some mysterious force when it tried to seize Lin Ming's body and had ended up suffering for it.

"No, that's not right! I couldn't even feel the existence of that thing. That black vortex seemed like the power of pure Laws, Laws that were fused with endless divine power. I was simply unable to resist it at all. Just what can that possibly be!?"

Fear flashed in the Ancient Devil's eyes. When it was being swallowed up by that energy, it felt more miniscule and helpless than a little ant facing the entire universe. This was a feeling it would never forget in its life.

After this fear had reached its peak, the Ancient Devil's eyes began to fill with greed. This mysterious item seemed to be some sort of soul treasure. Not just that, but it was able to instantly erase a spirit mark. This was an ability that it had never heard of before. Normally speaking, a spirit mark was an extremely profound concept. A spirit mark was deeply branded into the very foundation of a soul.

Erasing a spirit mark was simple. One could simply use a battle spirit to destroy a person's will and also wipe off their spirit mark. Of course, this would also destroy their soul in the process.

If the soul were compared to the brain, then a spirit mark was like every single nerve and vessel in the brain. No matter how skilled a doctor was, it was impossible for them to pull out all of these nerves and vessels without damaging the brain. When erasing a spirit mark, the soul would crumble before the spirit mark did, ultimately causing the soul to shatter and turn into nothingness.

The Ancient Devil had never heard of any divine treasure in the universe that could easily erase a spirit mark but keep the complete and intact soul form. If it could obtain this item, then it could restore the injuries to its soul and return to its peak strength. After its strength returned, it would be able to reform its physical body and wouldn't need to do something so dangerous as seizing the body of others.

No matter how good a body it possessed would be, it still wouldn't be the Ancient Devil's body. After seizing this body, because of incompatibilities between the soul and body, that body's life would also be affected, lowering the natural lifespan of it.

The only advantage of possessing a body was that after slowly adapting to that body, the Ancient Devil would be able to slowly cultivate. Although it wouldn't be its own body and cultivation would be difficult, with its powerful soul and deep breadth of experience, it was still possible to cultivate back to its peak form.

"Yang Yun! Although that boy Lin Lanjian managed to run away, our original plan must continue. We'll use those two old geezers, Ouye Hua and Yang Laotian's, blood essence as a sacrifice to restore my strength!" The Ancient Devil licked its lips as it spoke. As a soul form, the best nourishment it could have was blood essence. This was also the reason why Demonshine and the soul residing in the Magic Cube would swallow blood essence.

"Of course," Yang Yun said without the slightest change in expression. His eyebrows didn't even furrow in the least.

"Hahaha!" As the Ancient Devil saw Yang Yun's response it suddenly chuckled. "Ouye Hua doesn't matter too much. After all, their Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom is always struggling with your Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, so if such an old man dies then so be it. But Yang Laotian is your Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's Highest Divine Emperor, as well as your great grandfather! Although you suffered humiliation and sorrow as a child, to not even bat an eye and offer your own great grandfather as a blood sacrifice, you are truly heartless!"

Yang Yun was the son of the Nine Furnace Divine Emperor, and the Nine Furnace Divine Emperor was Yang Laotian's grandson. Not only did the children of the royal family include the first generation like the Divine Emperor and High Princess, but it even included the second generation, third generation, fourth generation, and so on.

A Divine Emperor had a life of 6000-7000 thousand years, sometimes even 10,000 years. In their long lives, they would have countless children. It wasn't strange if their grandchildren or great grandchildren were thousands of years older than their own children. This was the reason why the number of juniors in the royal family would increase at such exponential rates. It also caused the various ranks and relations between all of them to be an utter mess.

Yang Yun calmly replied, "My father, grandfather, and great grandfather have an inestimable number of descendants. The strong among them become Princes and the weak among them live lives worse than slaves. If I didn't have enough strength I would have died like a stray dog or chicken with my body wrapped up in sheets and randomly buried in some random hill that belongs to the royal family; nobody would know or care. In order for the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom to grow just a bit stronger, they're willing to sacrifice hundreds if not thousands of their descendants without the slightest hesitation."

"To them, compared to the national destiny of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, all sacrifices of family and fellowship is worth it. If I can lead the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom to rule the world as well as restore the golden age of the Sky Spill Continent of 100,000 years ago, then even if my great grandfather has to sacrifice the remaining last bits of his life, he would happily agree."

As Yang Yun spoke to here, his voice suddenly turned icy. Even the Ancient Devil paused for a moment before cackling, "Since ancient times, ruthlessness has always been the mark of a truly great man. All important matters should be conducted like so! Very well, then let us continue with our plans! When Whitedemon's injuries are healed, we shall immediately commence. At that time, when we join forces, Yang Laotian and Ouye Hua will be nothing more than prey!"

Whitedemon was that strange demon youth. In terms of strength, Yang Laotian and Ouye Hua were both weaker than Old Man Good Fortune, and their final life preserving cards were also worse than Old Man Good Fortune's. If they came face to face with Whitedemon and Yang Yun, it was unlikely any of them would be able to escape!

………

Lin Ming had already flew beyond the borders of the Seven Star Divine Kingdom. He changed his appearance and continuously used several long distance transmission arrays to travel a million miles away. He then changed direction, flew another 200,000 miles, passed through a jungle quietly for a period of time, and then found a barren hill where he began to cut open his own cave dwelling.

In the forest surrounding this hill, the strongest vicious beasts were only equal to a human early Revolving Core martial artist. They weren't even the least bit of a threat to Lin Ming.

Of course, correspondingly the spirit energy here was extremely thin; it was even worse than the Sky Fortune Kingdom's Seven Profound Martial House. But this didn't matter much to Lin Ming. He already had over 20 top grade spirit essence stones. What he needed here was absolute safety. A lack of spirit energy could be tolerated in return.

A spear thrust formed a 1000 foot deep cave, finally connecting to the center of the hill. He left four exits and began to arrange a variety of array formations all around. There were concealing arrays, defensive arrays, alarm arrays, and many more. After finishing these preparations, Lin Ming opened up his own martial arts training chamber in the center of the hill and casually carved a stone bed there. He sat on the bed and began to take inventory of everything he obtained from the Temple of Marvels.

This was all in preparation to break through to the third stage of Life Destruction!

Chapter 894 – Preparation is the Key, Third Stage of Life Destruction

Chapter 894 – Preparation is the Key, Third Stage of Life Destruction

…

…

..

When Lin Ming had swallowed the thunder Dao fruit in the Temple of Marvels' dimensional realms, he had gained the ability to impact the third stage of Life Destruction. The only reason he had been forced to give up that idea was that the situation at the time had been far too dangerous. Otherwise, although Lin Ming still wouldn't have been Yang Yun's opponent, he wouldn't have had to escape in such a distressed and desperate manner.

"I wonder just what sort of ancient species the divine tree that gave birth to those 12 thunder Dao fruits is. Perhaps Demonshine might have known…"

As Lin Ming was fleeing, he had already sent Demonshine a message to have him return to the South Sea immediately and personally oversee the Giant Leviathan, having it travel deep into the South Sea.

According to Old Man Good Fortune, the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent were both landmasses on the opposite sides of a single planet. There was an immeasurably vast distance that separated the two. Theoretically speaking, as long as the Giant Leviathan continued deep through the South Sea for a long enough time, it could even arrive at the borders of the Holy Demon Continent.

But the deeper one went into the South Sea, the more strange and mysterious existences there would be. Although the Giant Leviathan had extraordinary defensive capabilities, it still had its limits. It was a creature that only contained a light bloodline of an ancient desolate Saint Beast; it couldn't be compared to a true Leviathan or Roc God Beast. If the Giant Leviathan met some mystical existence deep in the South Sea, it was likely that it would experience danger. If that old dog Demonshine was personally commanding the Giant Leviathan then Lin Ming would feel much more at ease.

Lin Ming placed all his harvests on the stone bed and began to slowly organize them.

12 thunder Dao fruits, of which Lin Ming had eaten a part of one. The mysterious thunder lines on the skin were the most precious treasures.

22 top grade spirit essence stones, each one of them a treasure that a Divine Sea Supreme Elder would savagely wrestle others for.

The Extreme Violet Ring, which had a massive amount of jade slips inside, of which the Concept of Thunder jade slips were the most useful to Lin Ming. In addition, there was also a medicine garden that had many spiritual herbs that were over 100,000 years old. These were the treasures that Lin Ming would be relying on to further open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

As for the pills left behind by Jiang Ziji, Lin Ming hadn't looked over them too carefully in his haste to leave the Temple of Marvels. As he looked over the pills, he was actually disappointed to discover that even if these pills had been sealed in wood spirit jade bottles, after 100,000 years had passed, they had lost most of their spiritual nature, causing their medicinal efficacy to sharply drop. Some of them were even completely useless by now.

100,000 years was simply far too great a span of time. Those plants in the medicine garden were able to absorb the spirit energy of the heavens and earth, constantly growing, but dead objects like these pills weren't as well off.

Before obtaining the top grade spirit essence stones, Lin Ming had also gathered a massive amount of thousand year or even ten thousand year medicinal herbs in the dimensional realm. Old Man Good Fortune had lent Lin Ming a profound spirit pot so that he could maintain the life of these medicinal herbs, but afterwards Lin Ming had completely transported all of them into the Extreme Violet Ring. This was just how important a transportable medicine garden was to Lin Ming. There was no need to mention the high level medicinal herbs, but even the lower level ones could be used for practice.

The most precious of the medicinal plants he had gathered in the dimensional realm had been a crimson and sturdy tree called a Dragonheart Tree. It was 50,000 years old, and the fruits on its crown beat like living hearts.

This was a miracle medicine particularly used for body transformation. It was no worse than those medicinal herbs found in the Extreme Violet Ring's medicine garden.

There was Jiang Ziji's bracelet that was able to enhance his soul and perception. This would be immensely valuable for his future comprehension of Laws.

And last of all, there were Jiang Ziji's remains. The shining crystal skeleton had been completely preserved, not even decaying a bit after 100,000 years of time. The divine crystal that was embedded in the skull was like a rainbow gem, constantly emitting a gorgeous and dazzling radiance.

"It's time to start breaking into the third stage of Life Destruction."

After Lin Ming reorganized his possessions, he took a top grade spirit essence stone in his hands. When Shibai had given Lin Ming a top grade spirit essence stone, it was only one-sixth the size of a regular one, causing some of its charm to be lost. Its mystical nature was far from being comparable to this complete spirit essence stone.

This top grade spirit essence stone had mysterious patterns covering its entire surface; it unexpectedly seemed similar to the chaos stones at Timeworn Phoenix City. Although its intricacy wasn't comparable to the chaos stones, it still had several points of their charm.

This was the extraordinary nature of a top grade spirit essence stone; it contained a part of the Great Dao Laws and the aura of source energy. This was the reason that so many Divine Sea powerhouses were obsessed with it.

Lin Ming placed the top grade spirit essence stone between his eyebrows and began to absorb the energy. This sort of scene was a top luxury that a Divine Sea Supreme Elder would curse to the heavens if they saw. It had to be said that a top grade spirit essence stone was the very source of a spirit essence stone mine. it was even able to increase the chances of an early Divine Sea martial artist reaching the middle Divine Sea. And yet it was wasted by Lin Ming in order to cross the third stage of Life Destruction. This was simply an obscene extravagance.

Of course, Lin Ming also had his reasons for doing this. The energy he would need to break through to the third stage of Life Destruction far surpassed the requirements of an ordinary martial artist, and no one had ever complained about their foundation being too solid.

The reason that Lin Ming was able to attack the third stage of Life Destruction was all because his foundation had reached the limit of solidity. This was truly an example of preparation being the key to success.

Of course, there would always be some drawbacks in advancing one's cultivation too quickly. Using the pure origin energy of a top grade spirit essence stone to break through to the third stage of Life Destruction would be able to eliminate those drawbacks to a certain degree, once again allowing him to develop a stable foundation.

The energy from the top grade spirit essence stone rapidly flowed into Lin Ming's body. At that same time, he also galvanized the golden red lightning within the Heretical God Sprout, and chose 81 acupoints of his body to crazily absorb the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy.

In the dark chamber, one could clearly see the top grade spirit essence stone between Lin Ming's eyebrows shining with a brilliant light, separating into 81 wisps of energy, each as thick as a finger, that flowed into his acupoints. These acupoints were like stars in the endless night sky, quietly sparkling.

The energy of a top grade spirit essence stone was far too pure. In fact, it couldn't even be described with the word 'pure'. Rather, one could say that this energy was close to the source energy of the universe.

Before the formation of the universe, all that existed was utter chaos. Then, the world opened, and yin and yang formed. Thus there was energy. This energy was also known as source energy.

Afterwards, the five main elements gradually came into existence and the variation energies differentiated from each other. All of these energies scattered throughout the universe, forming all matter and life. Since then, the energy of the universe had become diluted and polluted, far from being comparable to the pure energy of the forming universe. This was also why the chaos stones were so valuable – they were engraved with the trace lines from the source energy of the forming universe.

A top grade spirit essence stone's energy was close to the universal source energy. Even a tiny bit of this source energy could increase one's understanding of the world.

Sucking in a bit of this energy would refresh and revitalize the body, even purifying the dantian.

This absorption process continued for two hours. Lin Ming had long ago entered the ethereal martial intent, delving into a completely concentrated state. He felt as if his body had turned into a pure energy form without the least bit of impurities.

Peng!

With a light cracking sound, the top grade spirit essence stone split apart. It lost its lustrous crystal sheen and turned into ordinary white jade.

At this time, the energy within Lin Ming's body was stored to the limit.

“Break apart…”

As Lin Ming quietly said these words, golden red lightning shot out from the Heretical God Sprout. It combined with the top grade spirit essence stone energy within his body and then erupted.

There was no great explosive sound as one would expect. Instead, the detonating energy expanded outwards, swallowing up Lin Ming’s entire body. Every inch of his meridians shattered and his body disintegrated into an incomparably fine blood fog, fusing together with the pure heaven and earth origin energy.

A moment later, the crimson blood fog vanished and Lin Ming’s body disappeared without a trace. But, the truth was that he hadn’t really disappeared. Instead, his body had been disintegrated into tiny particles that were even smaller than dust, completely invisible to the naked eye. These particles fluttered about in the chamber as they withstood the baptism of energy.

This was the third Life Destruction as well as the last time that the physical body was tempered. The fourth to sixth stages of Life Destruction focused on tempering the dantian.

And this tempering was far more thorough than that of the first two times.

Lin Ming’s consciousness wandered about this sea of energy. As he watched his own body vanish, his mind and perception were extremely clear. This feeling of being separated from his body gave him many insights as to the nature of energy itself. At that moment, it was like he had become a pure energy lifeform.

Time slowly passed…

One day, two days, three days…

After seven days passed, those tiny particles that fluttered in the heaven and earth origin energy began to gather together, condensing. From forming small pieces to forming large pieces, Lin Ming’s body began to slowly take form.

First was the crystalline skeleton that seemed carved from the finest jade. Then, the blood vessels began to form as gushing crimson blood filled them, as viscous and potent as liquid mercury. Then, powerful and tight muscles formed, covering his body with a layer of beautiful flesh.

Every muscle striation seemed to flow like a river, appearing like art itself. While Lin Ming's muscles contained an aesthetic beauty, they also contained a crazy explosive force.

His back was broad, his spine strong. His legs were long and filled with potent power. His eyelashes were thick and his eyes were like priceless black gems. His nose was straight and his face seemed to be carved by the sword of a master. After being decomposed and reformed three times, Lin Ming's body had reached perfection.

Even his hair shone with brilliance. From the countless pores on his body, pure heaven and earth energy freely flowed outwards.

Every breath he exhaled was fragrant and his saliva was sweet like honey. His entire body appeared clean and refreshed. This was the true meaning of being otherworldly and untouched by the smoke of the world. Even bathing couldn't clean him any more than he was right now.

Lin Ming's spirit body completely formed. As his handsome naked form stood in the darkness of the chamber, a bright light flashed through his eyes like a bolt of lightning, making one unable to look directly at him.

With a casual wave of his hands, countless rays of thunder collected together, forming a loose robe that draped around him. He had finally completed the third stage of Life Destruction!

At this time, Lin Ming even had a feeling that if someone managed to cut off his hands and feet, he could regrow them.

Of course, this was only an illusion of the mind. Even a Divine Sea martial artist didn't have this ability. When crossing Life Destruction, the energy Laws that were involved were extremely special. In a situation where there was no external force disturbing it, the physical body could disintegrate and then reform. But this was only reforming – true regeneration was impossible. It was easy to rejoin a cut off limb, but wanting to regrow a lost limb would require a great deal of effort. Also, a newly regrown limb would have to be tempered all over again, otherwise it would become a martial artist's great weakness.

However, if Lin Ming could open the Gate of Life of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, then he really would gain the ability to regenerate his limbs. Moreover, doing so would only consume Lin Ming's energy; it would still be the same as his original body.

This was a special characteristic of the body transformation cultivation route. In the legends, it was even said that if one could open the Natal Life Dao Palace of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, then one could be reborn from a single drop of blood. As long as their energy did not fade and their will remained immortal, then that person would never die. Such an opponent was difficult to defeat and even harder to kill.

Chapter 895 – The Third Thunder Concept

Chapter 895 – The Third Thunder Concept

…

…

…

After breaking through to the third stage of Life Destruction, Lin Ming didn't plan to immediately set out. Instead, he planned to close up for a further period of time. Once the coming storm finally blew over, he would leave, and with his strength having risen again it would be much safer for him.

Lin Ming had continuously taken pills, heavenly materials, and had even absorbed a top grade spirit essence stone. His cultivation had skyrocketed, and now he needed time to stabilize and fully digest everything that had happened, otherwise there would be negative effects. It was even possible that he could fall into obsession. This was the reason why so many martial artists that fervently cultivated the demonic path would so easily fall to obsession.

Besides Lin Ming's cultivation rate having been too fast and his spirit body having reached perfection, there was just too much energy contained in his body. He was finding it difficult to control so much true essence in his body with his soul force.

The truth was that Lin Ming's soul force was actually extremely formidable, and he also had alchemy and the 'Overbearing Soul Tactic' to help him temper it. Even so, his cultivation speed was too fast.

After crossing into Life Destruction, he had crossed three small boundaries in just less than a year!

Statically and slowly cultivating in seclusion was a boring and tedious process. If one did this, then their enhancement in strength would eventually slow down. Wanting to eat everything in a single go was simply impossible.

Lin Ming prepared to spend a period of time perceiving the Concepts as well as fusing the Laws into his being.

It was a pity that the Magic Cube had absorbed two-thirds of the Ancient Devil's soul and still hadn't opened. It seemed that the Magic Cube needed the blood essence of masters no matter what.

The last time Lin Ming had opened the Magic Cube had been with the blood essence of a Life Destruction realm powerhouse. Naturally, the next step would be to use the blood essence of a Divine Sea realm powerhouse. If he could kill a Divine Sea Supreme Elder and then open the Magic Cube again, he was highly interested in absorbing the soul fragments of the Ancient Devil. Each soul fragment was one-third of the size of the original soul and much larger than most soul fragments in the Magic Cube. Moreover, the Ancient Devil was skilled in the Concept of Darkness and the Concept of Time. If Lin Ming could obtain memories related to these two Concepts, then it would save him a great deal of effort and time in his meditation.

"The easiest Divine Sea powerhouse for me to kill now should be that Elder Sun. I planted a battle spirit mark in his body and can feel his approximate position; he should have left the Temple of Marvels by now. However, although I might have broken through to the third stage of Life Destruction and my strength has risen yet again, while defeating him is easy, killing him will be quite difficult. Moreover, if Yang Yun has already controlled the situation, he'll have ordered the entire continent to hunt me down. That Elder Sun isn't an idiot. He should have told Yang Yun about the tracing mark in his body to seek shelter with him. If I go to kill that Elder Sun then it will be the same as walking into a trap."

Lin Ming shook his head, abandoning that idea. With the same reasoning, Situ Yaoxi and Situ Bonan – who had similar strength to Elder Sun – were also ignored. Although he wanted to take revenge on them for what they had done, it wouldn't be at this time.

There was still a Divine Sea Supreme Elder that had a grudge with Lin Ming. Or, it was more accurate to say that he was not a Divine Sea powerhouse, but rather a Demon Emperor equal to a Divine Sea powerhouse. That was… the Steppes Master of the Blood Slaughter Steppes!

The Steppes Master was from the Giant Demon race, and his cultivation system was different from humanity's. When a Giant Demon martial artist was in the Demon General and Demon King realms, their physicality was much better than a human's. They could hold much more energy within them, so their strength surpassed human martial artists' at their level.

But before a human reached the Divine Sea they would have to cross five to six stages of Life Destruction, reforming and tempering a spirit body. At this time, the disparity between a human and Giant Demon would level out. And if a human could cross seven stages of Life Destruction before reaching the Divine Sea, then their strength would even surpass the Giant Demon race's Demon Emperor powerhouses'. There was no need to even mention an eighth stage Life Destruction master. When Lin Ming had looked at the battle array discs left behind of the Eightfall War Emperor, the Eightfall War Emperor had been able to fight against several quasi-Emperor powerhouses before stepping into the Divine Sea, instantly killing all of them as if it were as simple as chopping melons and vegetables. With the Eightfall War Emperor's strength at the time, he could even have faced a true Demon Emperor in frontal combat.

Thus, Lin Ming wasn't too worried about the Steppes Master's strength; he estimated that it was about the same as a sixth stage Life Destruction middle Divine Sea powerhouse's. The difference couldn't be that far off.

Of course, it was impossible for the current Lin Ming to kill the Blood Slaughter Steppes' Steppes Master.

But, he still had the Road of Emperor.

With Lin Ming's current strength, he was strong enough to cross the Road of Emperor. Once he completed the Road of Emperor and obtained the strongest force field of the Heavenly Demon martial intent, the Prime Emperor Force Field, his strength would dramatically soar. At that time he would have gained the capital to kill the Steppes Master!

If he could slay the Steppes Master and use his blood to open the Magic Cube once more, and obtain the memories of the Ancient Devil, he would be able to learn all of the weaknesses and strengths of the Ancient Devil. At that time, he would know the Ancient Devil as well as the Ancient Devil knew itself. As they said, know your enemy and be undefeated!

Lin Ming had laid down this plan in order to increase his strength at the fastest rate possible!

Lin Ming took a thunder jade slip that Jiang Ziji had left behind and began to meditate on the Thunder Concepts.

The first level Concept of Thunder was the power of death. The second level Concept of Thunder was the power of life.

There was no need to speak of the power of death. Lightning could char a man to cinders, annihilate forests, and exterminate all life.

But the power of life was because thunder could temper the body and temper the divine soul. In the most ancient of times, it was said that the world bred life when lightning struck the endless oceans.

These two Concepts had been comprehended from the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's legacies. Of course, the Eightfall Thunder Emperor had completely relied on his own talent and genius to comprehend these two Concepts, leading to inevitable flaws in his understandings. Although Lin Ming still had to make up for these missing parts and flaws at some time, he wasn't too anxious about it.

What he desired most was to comprehend the third level Concept of Thunder – Extreme Speed!

Metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, thunder. Of these seven types of energies, wind-attribute energy was renowned for its speed. Even the infamous Golden Roc Shattering the Void contained Wind Laws.

But wind actually wasn't the fastest. That honor belonged to thunder!

The power of thunder could pass several hundred thousand miles in the blink of an eye. Even though the Holy Demon Continent and Sky Spill Continent were so far apart, a bolt of lightning would only need an incense stick of time to pass between them. This could be called the ultimate speed of the world!

Of course, it was impossible for a martial artist to achieve this speed. They could only comprehend the Concepts and Laws, fusing them into their movements until they reached speed that resembled a flash of lightning.

After opening the Gate of Wonder, stepping on Golden Roc Shattering the Void, and even fusing the Concept of Thunder into his movements, just how fast would he become? It was hard to imagine!

"Mm? 'Mystic Lighting Shade'... this is a thunder-attribute movement technique that I can practice without the Electric Violet Kirin bloodline!"

The Mystic Lightning Shade was more accurately not a movement technique, but rather a secret supportive skill. After gathering various types of divine thunder from the world, a martial artist could turn these divine thunders into numerous threads of lightning, condensing them into 12 vital thunder symbols. These thunder symbols could turn into an invisible power of thunder that could fuse into the body, significantly increasing a martial artist's speed.

"This Mystic Lightning Shade actually suits me best. If it were a movement martial skill then I wouldn't be able to use it in conjunction with Golden Roc Shattering the Void. With these 12 vital thunder symbols, I will be able to use Golden Roc Shattering the Void and further speed up with the support of these thunder symbols."

Lin Ming placed the Mystic Lightning Shade jade slip between his eyebrows and began to remember everything within, carefully perceiving the Concepts and Laws within. Wishing to comprehend a new Concept through meditation was extremely difficult, much less that this was the third Concept of Thunder; the difficulty would be far higher than that of the first two Concepts. Even if Lin Ming had the support of the Heretical God Sprout, it would be immeasurably difficult for him.

He immersed himself in the ethereal martial intent, forgetting the passage of time.

One day, two days, three days...

Seven days passed like this. Every time that Lin Ming felt his mind nearing the point of utter exhaustion, he would feel a cool feeling transmit up from the Saint artifact bracer on his wrist, clearing and cleansing his thoughts. He even felt as if his soul was being gently washed and vitalized. Often at that moment, Lin Ming would receive a flash of inspiration and gain new directions for further insights.

Seven days, 10 days, 15 days... Lin Ming remained deep in the ethereal martial intent throughout. Even after perceiving the jade slip for such a long time, not only were his thoughts not chaotic or in confusion, but his perception actually became much clearer and his thoughts much faster.

This was the effect of the Saint artifact bracer. Although this bracer didn't have any offensive or defensive power, it was truly a divine treasure for enlightenment.

After the 20th day arrived, a faint outline of the Extreme Speed Thunder Concept finally began to slowly form in Lin Ming's mind.

To touch upon the edge of the Extreme Speed Concept in just 20 days, this sort of speed would be enough to shock and horrify the geniuses of the Divine Realm if they were to learn of it. The reason that Lin Ming was able to accomplish this was partly because of the Saint artifact bracer supporting him, but the most important reason was the Heretical God Sprout within his body.

With the Heretical God Sprout that could control all power of thunder and fire, an in addition to his body that had been 100% tempered by thunder when he crossed Life Destruction, this made it so that it seemed he had divine assistance when comprehending any type of Thunder Laws!

The current Lin Ming was no different from a son of thunder.

On the 21st day, Lin Ming's eyes suddenly shot open from his deep meditation. A bolt of brilliant lightning seemed to cut across the darkness of his eyes. He raised his index finger, and from the Heretical God Sprout, the Purple Flood Dragon Divine Thunder, Blood Extinguishing Demon Thunder, Disenchanting Dream Light, and Nine Heavens Divine Thunder all rushed outwards. The several types of divine thunder gathered onto his fingertip and slowly began to shape themselves into strands of thunder threads. These thunder threads ranged from purple to red to purple gold to various other colors, even as they shifted into different hues.

Lin Ming's mind stirred. A small thread of golden red thunder silk rushed out from the Heretical God Sprout. This golden red thunder silk was divine thunder gathered by Lin Ming from the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion. This power of thunder was a driving force that Lin Ming had depended on to cross Life Destruction. After crossing the third stage of Life Destruction, there was still a tiny bit of this golden red lightning left over, thus it was also called out by Lin Ming.

Five different types of lightning gathered in his hands. Lightning instantly formed several hundred seals. Because his movements were too quick, his hands and fingers blended together in a blur, like overlapping shadows, mysterious and eye-catching.

Several hundred thunder threads violently spun around, condensing into mysterious symbols in the sky. This was a bit similar to inscription. With Lin Ming's current strength, accomplishing all this was far too easy.

"Thunder escape symbol, form!"

Shua!

Thunder symbols that contained multiple colors began appearing in the air, sparkling and dazzling to the point where it was hard to directly look at them.

After this formless thunder was condensed into thunder symbols, it actually turned into something that resembled colored metal. As Lin Ming took these thunder symbols into his hands, he could feel they were quite weighty. This was a phenomenon that occurred once energy reached a highly condensed state, because energy and mass were originally the same.

"Receive!"

Lin Ming waved his right hand and a thunder escape symbol sank into his right leg, disappearing without a trace. As he looked within his body, he could sense that this thunder symbol had long turned into energy Laws, fusing together with his body.

This was the most primitive form of thunder symbols. In the future, Lin Ming could gather more types of divine thunder to improve it, allowing his speed to become that much faster.

As for his Extreme Speed Concept, he had only just touched the threshold. In order to be skilled at this Concept or even reach perfection, he still had a very long road to travel down.

However, this only made Lin Ming more excited. He wasn't afraid to take a difficult path, he only feared that his path would be limited. Luckily, this Mystic Lightning Shade had an immense space for improvement. In the future, Lin Ming's speed would become faster and faster. After he fully comprehended the Extreme Speed Concept and reached perfection, he wouldn't even need to use a secret skill to reach lightning-like speeds, travelling thousands of miles in a second.

Chapter 896 – The Capture Order

Chapter 896 – The Capture Order

…

…

…

After creating the first thunder escape symbol, Lin Ming repeated the process, soon forming 11 thunder escape symbols. After receiving all of them into his body, he had finally cultivated the Mystic Lightning Shade!

“The Thunder Laws’ Extreme Speed Concept is really mysterious. With this ability, combined with the Gate of Wonder and Golden Roc Shattering the Void, even if I encounter Ouye Hua and Yang Laotian together I should still be able to easily retreat. But if I run into that strange demon youth or the Ancient Devil-possessed Yang Yun, I still don’t think I’ll be able to escape…”

Ouye Hua and Yang Laotian were people with strength close to the highest under the heavens. Old Man Good Fortune was stronger than these two, but he wouldn’t be able to fight the two of them together. In the end, Old Man Good Fortune was also a martial artist with strength closest to the highest under the heavens.

But the strange demon youth and the Ancient Devil-possessed Yang Yun truly did have strength equal to the highest under the heavens. If Old Man Good Fortune didn’t use his heaven perishing bead without reservation then he would likely have died to the demon youth.

As Lin Ming was thinking, what he didn’t know was that at this time, Ouye Hua and Yang Laotian were already near death.

In the completely dark divine palace, over 20 Divine Sea powerhouses were standing in the great hall. All of them had pale faces that were dripping with a frightened sweat.

Sitting in front of them were two people. At the front was a white-clothed youth who sat regally on a pitch black throne. A suppressive and ghastly aura exuded from his body, covering all of the Divine Sea powerhouses present and forcing them into absolute silence!

This white-clothed youth was Yang Yun.

And sitting beside Yang Yun was the strange demon youth, a sinister smile crossing his lips. Even so, he seemed like a 15-16 year old youth. This was Whitedemon.

Back before the Sea of Miracles, Whitedemon had been the Ancient Devil's little brother. Now, with the Ancient Devil occupying Yang Yun's body, Whitedemon naturally gave over the prime seat of honor to Yang Yun.

The compelling aura of these two was one of the reasons that over 20 Divine Sea powerhouses felt a strong fear in their hearts, but it wasn't the main reason.

What truly caused them to shiver in a cold sweat was that behind Yang Yun there were two torture racks. Each torture rack was as tall as three people, and its entire frame was an inky black that didn't seem to reflect any light. There even seemed to be some sort of rust on it. As one looked carefully, one could faintly make out that this was dark, dried blood.

The main body of these torture racks was a large square pillar in the center. Countless chains as thick as a man's thigh coiled around the pillar, each of them with sharp and ferocious-looking barbs jutting out from them as if they had been used to nail countless demons!

At this time, there was an old man tied up on each of these two torture racks. These two old men both wore purple gold imperial robes. Those purple gold imperial robes that were crafted with countless heavenly materials were already damaged and frayed, having long lost all the dignity and majesty they once had.

Eight cruel iron hooks stabbed into these old men's shoulders and collar bones. They hung there unconscious like dead dogs. In addition, there were a number of iron thorns jabbed into the important acupoints of these two old men, completely sealing up all their energy. The chains that wrapped around them seem to be alive, quietly sucking away their blood essence. Blood essence slowly dripped down the chains, finally gathering into a small crimson pool within a goblet carved of bone.

These two old men had shaken the foundations of the Sky Spill Continent for several thousand years. They were great characters that were able to recklessly stomp through all four Divine Kingdoms – Ouye Hua and Yang Laotian!

With their fame and glory having accumulated for so many years, the immeasurable influence they wielded, as well as their strength that was close to being the highest under the heavens, they were existences that terrified all others. Even other Divine Sea powerhouses had to tremble and be meek when facing them. Even a top character like Situ Haotian feared them from his heart.

But now, these two old men that had stood at the very peak of the Sky Spill Continent were like pieces of pork hung on a street market stall. Their faces were haggard and their eyes were listless and glossed over. There was nothing coming from them but despair, as if all their hopes had already faded away. As a massive amount of blood essence was sucked away from them, their fires of life had weakened to the point of collapse, about to extinguish at any moment.

And the ones who had accomplished all of this were Yang Yun and the strange demon youth! How could these Divine Sea powerhouses not remain silent? Even a character like Situ Haotian would instantly die if he tried to resist them!

At this time, Situ Haotian was indeed one of the strongest of the Divine Sea powerhouses present. He never imagined that Yang Yun's ability and secrets would have been hidden so deeply; there were simply no words to describe it. He thought that Yang Yun was an interesting character, but he had never really placed this Crown Prince in his eyes. No matter how talented he was, or even if he would become the next Yang Laotian, that was still a matter that would happen in 1000-2000 years. There was just nothing to worry about for the moment. He never expected that today, Yang Laotian, Yang Yun's own great grandfather, would actually have all of his cultivation sealed away, hung on a torture rack to have his blood essence sucked out!

Situ Haotian had originally only feared Lin Ming. But compared to the present Yang Yun, Lin Ming had been completed overshadowed. There was no comparing the two at all.

Besides Situ Haotian, the most ashen-faced person was the current Nine Furnace Divine Emperor. He was also Yang Yun's own father – Yang Xiaohe.

As Yang Xiaohe looked at Yang Yun sitting on that jet black throne, it was like he was living in a dream.

Although he knew that Yang Yun had been keeping his cards deeply hidden, and he also faintly understood that Yang Yun had obtained a massive lucky chance, he didn't think that such a day would ever occur.

Really, this was a nightmare.

Silence!

A pall of quiet fell over the entire grand hall. No one opened their mouths to speak. The only noise was the sound of liquid slowly dripping into the goblet of bone. This sound was incomparably clear; it was the blood essence of Ouye Hua and Yang Laotian.

"Father… are you trembling?"

Yang Yun suddenly looked up and faintly smiled at Yang Xiaohe.

What kind of character was Yang Xiaohe? Although he had inherited the throne of the Divine Emperor less than 500 years ago and still hadn't developed the aura of one who controlled the entire world, he had still overseen all matters of the Sky Spill Continent's top Divine Kingdom. He had seen many magnificent scenes. Even so, because of a single person, his heart and body trembled. This person was his son. The mental impact Yang Yun had given him was just too great.

“You… you traitorous son, you… you will actually kill your great grandfather!? This will not be tolerated by the heavens or earth!” Although Yang Xiaohe’s voice was harsh, everyone could hear that there wasn’t the least bit of vigor in his words; it was nothing more than a front of a faint-hearted man. This was the suppression of absolute strength and aura.

“Humph! Not tolerated by the heavens or earth? If a father kills their child, that is divine will, but if a child kills their father then that is not tolerated by the heavens or earth?” Yang Yun’s eyebrows shot up as a mocking expression crossed his face. “Yang Xiaohe, if you tried to kill me right now instead of uttering all that nonsense, then I would have at least shown you some respect. But what a pity, you are afraid. Fear fills your heart, and any words you say cannot hide the utter horror you feel. For you to try and maintain your sad and hypocritical illusion, you are truly disappointing!”

Yang Yun’s few words aimed for blood, violently thrusting into Yang Xiaohe’s most fragile weakness! Yes! He was truly afraid, and he truly did not dare to resist Yang Yun. Since Yang Yun dared to treat Yang Laotian like this in front of all the heroes of the world, then killing him would be no simpler than slaughtering a chicken or dog. Those ridiculous emotional bonds between a father and son were currently nothing more than a joke!

After being seen through by Yang Yun, Yang Xiaohe paled. Even his fingers shook. But, what could he do against Yang Yun? What if he really tried to desperately battle Yang Yun? The result of that could be imagined. He would inevitably be humiliated once more in front of Yang Yun’s strength. After that defeat he would surely be disposed of!

With Yang Yun’s ruthless decisiveness, how could he possibly be lenient?

At that moment, Yang Xiaohe had never been so shamed before in his life. In front of all the heroes of the world, a noble Divine Emperor of the highest Divine Kingdom had actually been forced to swallow such an insult by his own son. This was complete humiliation!

“You… you…” Yang Xiaohe clenched his fists, his nails digging deep into his flesh until they drew blood. At that moment, he felt his own heart of martial arts weakening, as if it were about to shatter at any moment.

“You do not deserve the title of Divine Emperor…” Yang Yun shook his head, his voice filled with contempt. “There are two types of hero. The first does not fear pain or death. For glory and honor, they can descend into hell and withstand the cruelest pain! Such a person lives an honorable life, willing to die as a martyr! I admire that type of person! The second can adapt to any situation. Hatred, shame, humiliation, they can tolerate all, eating the food of pigs and dogs, enduring those insults that the world cannot bear, all so that they can one day reverse their fate. This type of person is similarly worthy of my admiration.”

As Yang Yun slowly spoke these words, no one knew that he was exactly this second type of person. As for the humiliation he was forced to endure in the past, not even Yang Laotian knew about that.

“Yang Yun, just what do you want?”

As Situ Haotian saw Yang Yun force Yang Xiaohe into a dead end, he suddenly stepped forwards, directly facing Yang Yun.

The deciding factor of a Divine Kingdom’s true strength was not the number of Divine Sea powerhouses they had, but the strongest Divine Sea powerhouse that they had. This was because the differences in strength between various Divine Sea powerhouses was just too great. For instance, in front of Yang Yun, characters like Situ Yaoxi and Situ Bonan could simply be ignored, much less with the strange demon youth also here. If Yang Yun and the strange demon youth joined forces, the two of them were truly invincible. They already had the qualifications to dominate the entire Sky Spill Continent. Situ Haotian had no choice but to admit defeat in front of them.

Yang Yun’s eyes crossed over the crowd before settling on Situ Haotian. He calmly and slowly enunciated, “From now on, those who follow me will find prosperity and those who defy me will find death! The four Divine Kingdoms may retain their original national boundaries, and I will not annex any influence. Everyone must obey my orders. Those who violate my command – death!"

As Yang Yun spoke, an invisible force field erupted out from him. His battle spirit condensed into 20 some tracing marks that directly flew into bodies of these Divine Sea powerhouses! When the Ancient Devil still had a mortal form, the level of his battle spirit had even surpassed Lin Ming's. He had achieved a perfect silver battle spirit, thus implanting a battle spirit mark was as simple as turning a hand.

"You… what have you done!?"

"A tracing mark. Do you think I would let you all freely run away?" Yang Yun sneered. His words caused all of the martial artists present to feel despair swell up in their hearts. With this tracing mark within them, it meant they would forever be slaves. If they ever tried to revolt against Yang Yun, he would hunt them down even if they fled to the edges of the world! Even if all of them joined forces to resist Yang Yun, it still might be useless!

"Now, I will issue the first order. Everyone is commanded to capture Lin Lanjian. If you find out his location then do not rashly do anything but inform me first. The person who can inform me of his location, not only will I bestow upon them permanent freedom but I shall also grant them Divine Realm cultivation methods and Divine Realm spirit pills!"

Chase down Lin Lanjian?

This order caused all of the martial artists present to gulp. They didn't think that this would be Yang Yun's first order.

No one wished to be under the control of others. If they could take back their freedom while also obtaining pills and cultivation methods from the Divine Realm, then that truly was a great temptation.

Chapter 897 – Target: Road of Emperor

Chapter 897 – Target: Road of Emperor

…

…

…

The Sky Spill Continent was far too broad. No matter how thorough and far reaching the Ancient Devil's methods were, there was simply no way to search every nook and cranny of the Sky Spill Continent, not to mention that Lin Ming had gone deep into seclusion in the middle of a desolate mountain hill.

The capture order for Lin Ming continued, even until a year later.

Bang bang bang!

In a remote and desolate mountain range over a million miles away from the four Divine Kingdoms, a barren hill suddenly trembled as if an earthquake was passing through. After several breaths of time, this hill suddenly exploded in a shower of stones, lightning violently surging into the skies!

A youth dressed in white with long black hair rushed out from the ruins of the hill!

The youth's eyes were sharp and swift. He looked to be around 19 or 20 years old. This youth was Lin Ming.

For the last year, Lin Ming had gone into arduous closed door seclusion. Although his cultivation didn't grow by much, his foundation had become much more solid and his fervid true essence had calmed down, becoming more solid and substantial. Even the minor flaws that had accompanied Lin Ming's rapid rise in cultivation had been eliminated.

Lin Ming's understandings of the Concepts of Space, Time, and Thunder had gone a step further. His comprehensions in the Thunder Concepts had grown by the greatest degree.

Of the 12 thunder Dao fruits, Lin Ming had completely eaten one of them, and had also perceived the Thunder Laws traces on that Dao fruit, thoroughly comprehending those mysteries.

"After closing up for one year, my cultivation has been stranded at the peak of third stage Life Destruction but my strength has risen even more. Now, if I were to face that Elder Sun then I would definitely be able to instantly kill him!"

Lin Ming really wanted to find and kill that person to use their blood essence to open the Magic Cube once more. However, he suppressed this idea.

"If I go to the Holy Demon Continent now, I should be able to kill the master of the Blood Slaughter Steppes!"

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. Without using the Godspeed Boat, he launched forwards at extreme speed, rushing out like a rapid hurricane!

The 12 thunder escape symbols whistled within Lin Ming's body, violently shaking. Combined with the Gate of Wonder and Golden Roc Shattering the Void, Lin Ming's speed had reached a nearly incomprehensible degree. His body dashed through the air like a falling meteor, his speed savagely tearing the air around him and creating a horrifying sonic boom. From afar, the sound of his travel was like a billowing thunderclap.

The forests underneath Lin Ming were pressed down by the terrifying wind pressure, causing massive amounts of trees to snap off and all the vicious beasts to flee in panic!

"What amazing speed, it feels like I'm filled with power. I really want to find someone to fight right now!"

A month later, Lin Ming finally rendezvoused with Demonshine at the Demon God Imperial Palace dimensional realm. This was only a wisp of Demonshine's soul.

Demonshine's main soul was still residing within the Giant Leviathan where he was managing the beast. In this past year, the Giant Leviathan had traveled countless miles through the sea. At this rate, it might even reach the Holy Demon Continent sometime soon.

In the deep seas, the water depth reached over a hundred million miles. Here, there was plenty of food for the Giant Leviathan. After devouring some sea beasts, it had even become more powerful.

“Is everything alright?” Lin Ming asked. One of the main reasons he called Demonshine over here was because it would be much easier to transmit messages.

“Mm, it's going very well. Heh, when this Saint does things, you can rest assured, kukukuhahaha!” Demonshine grinned. After adventuring with Lin Ming in the past, he had gathered up a great deal of aggravations and grudges. Because his strength was momentarily weakened, he had no choice but to be cautious at all times, lest he alarm the master of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. Before Lin Ming entered the Road of Emperor, he even had to act as a servant for half a year. Although it was only Lin Ming that was pretending to be confused, the arrogant and bossy Demonshine found it difficult to endure such an insult.

This time he definitely had to give vent to all of these gathered grudges!

“This time entering the Road of Emperor we will fucking roll our way in! Let's see just who dares to stop us!”

The Blood Slaughter Steppes was controlled by the Giant Demons, Goliaths, and Imps. This was all in order to ensure the continued interests of the Steppes Master. twelve-winged Heavenly Demons were strictly forbidden from developing, and humans weren't even allowed to become High Lords. Once a human martial artist became an eight-winged Heavenly Demon, they would face all sorts of troubles and resistance. As for entering the Road of Emperor, that was even greater wishful thinking!

When Lin Ming was at Polaris Tower, if it hadn't been for Demonshine's help then he would have been turned into a slave, much less thinking about entering the Road of Emperor.

"Indeed. This time we will fight our way in. Those who block our path will die!" Lin Ming's heart surged with a sense of heroic pride and valor!

Prior to now, although Lin Ming's strength had rapidly grown, whether he was at the Sky Spill Continent or the Holy Demon Continent, he still had to be careful as if he were walking on ice. Because his strength was not at the highest levels, he inevitably was subject to the control and commands of others.

But now, he had the strength of a true Emperor level powerhouse! Within the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent, his strength could be considered at the highest levels.

Even though he still couldn't defeat Whitedemon and Yang Yun, by relying on his strange and extraordinary speed, he would still be able to successfully escape.

It could be said that within this entire planet, it was difficult for anyone to be a threat to Lin Ming!

After entering the broken dimensional realm, Lin Ming activated the ultra-long range transmission array. In the next moment he had vanished into a vast and boundless white light…

…………..

Holy Demon Continent, Blood Slaughter Steppes –

The Blood Slaughter Steppes had a 100,000 year history. This was the killing paradise of the Holy Demon Continent. Not only was there strong and pure infernal energy here, there were also no rules. As long as one had strength, they could freely kill whoever they wished.

But, this land was also cursed. Because of this mystical curse, any high stage Life Destruction, high star Demon King, or anyone else above that strength would fall under that curse once they entered the Blood Slaughter Steppes, finally perishing. Over many years, numerous Demon Emperors had fallen within the Blood Slaughter Steppes. Of just the famous and recorded Demon Emperors, there were more than 10.

All Demon Emperors that stepped foot into the Blood Slaughter Steppes would die; this was nearly an ironclad rule that could not be broken. However, there was an exception, and that was anyone that had managed to become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon and obtain the Death God martial intent.

This sort of character could simply ignore the curse of the Blood Slaughter Steppes and would even have the ability to threaten the rule of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. The most representative person of these characters was the Eightfall War Emperor. The Eightfall War Emperor had caused the Steppes Master to have many restless nights where he found it difficult to even eat. This was because the Eightfall War Emperor was simply far too strong. Even in the Holy Demon Continent that was larger and had far more masters than the Sky Spill Continent, the Eightfall War Emperor had a strength that approached invincibility.

Of course, besides the Eightfall War Emperor, there was also another human that had managed to become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon.

That was Lin Ming.

At this time, within the center of a blood red temple in the Blood Slaughter Steppes, an armored Giant Demon was regally sitting on top of a throne, a metal wine cup in his hands as he slowly took sips from it. This wine cup was filled with a thick, bright red liquid. This was human blood.

The Giant Demon was the Steppes Master, also known as High Lord Divine Demon. He had a blood feud with Lin Ming over the death of his child.

Ho – !

A flame lit up in the dark grand hall. This was the light of a sound transmitting talisman.

The Steppes Master grasped the sound transmitting talisman. After hearing the message inside, he frowned. For all these years, the Blood Slaughter Steppes had been hunting Lin Ming, but this hunt had so far produced nothing. Even now it was the same.

“Five years. That youth called Lin Ming seemed as if he came from nothing and then vanished into nothing. I used every single connection I had and still couldn’t figure out just where he came from or what his background is!”

The Steppes Master’s eyes flashed with a cold killing intent as he crushed the metal wine cup in his hands. Bright red blood splashed onto the floor. Even if Lin Ming hadn’t killed his son, that still wouldn’t be the reason he wanted to kill Lin Ming. The reason he wanted to kill Lin Ming was because Lin Ming had become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon and had thus gained the ability to freely enter the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

The Steppes Master did not wish to see the appearance of another Eightfall War Emperor.

He had to stifle this threat before it grew, even if he had to offend a Holy Land in doing so. After all, as long as a martial artist wasn’t a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, not even an unrivalled Emperor would be able to step into the Blood Slaughter Steppes. So even if a Holy Land was offended by him, what would they even be able to do to him?

“This Lin Ming is a heaven-gifted eternally rare talent. In these last five years, he must have reached at least the late Revolving Core realm, or perhaps he has even stepped into the first stage of Life Destruction. Moreover, because of his unbelievable talent, his strength should far surpass that of other martial artists at his level. It’s likely he’ll have strength equal to a fifth stage Life Destruction human martial artist. After another 20-30 years pass, he will have combat strength equal to a human Emperor level powerhouse. I don’t have much time left to stop him.”

Chapter 898 – Unstoppable

Chapter 898 – Unstoppable

…

…

…

Blood Slaughter Steppes, Heavenly Cloud Skysplit Tower –

There were a total of 12 main cities in the Blood Slaughter Steppes. The Heavenly Cloud Skysplit Tower was located at the center of Heavenly Cloud City. Heavenly Cloud City was the most formidable main city within the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

Duanmu Qun had come from Heavenly Cloud Tower.

Since ancient times, Heavenly Cloud Tower had produced the most talents and also the strongest talents. Heavenly Cloud Tower had a total of 16 High Lords, whereas Polar Skysplit Tower only had 12. And in terms of Tower Masters, the Tower Master of Heavenly Cloud Skysplit Tower was much more formidable than the Tower Master of Polar Skysplit Tower.

Of course, to the current Lin Ming, all of this was nothing more than floating clouds. Lin Ming arrived at the gates of Heavenly Cloud Tower. The Heavenly Cloud Tower was over 10,000 feet tall and was situated on top of a 60,000 foot mountain precipice, bringing the total height to over 70,000 feet and hovering within the primal chaos heavens. This was why it was called Skysplit Tower.

The front gates of Heavenly Cloud Tower were over 200 feet high, cast in a massive copper frame with countless buckles. Altogether, these gates likely weighed over 80,000-90,000 jins!

The gates to the Heavenly Cloud Tower were guarded by two rows of Giant Demon guards. Each of them was filled with a robust vitality, and their figure and form was strong like a mighty dragon. Their cultivations were at least at the Demon General level, and every single one was at least 10 feet tall and was wearing black treasure armor. They gave off an inexplicable pressure, making those with a weaker aura lose all courage to pass the gates.

"Halt, show your Blood Slaughter Token!"

Two Giant Demon guards grasped their war halberds and crossed them in front of Lin Ming, blocking his path. The Blood Slaughter Token was a city entrance token to enter the Blood Slaughter Steppes. Lin Ming had once obtained one, and the token had ended up fusing into his body, forming the source of infernal energy and serving as the basis for killing others to accumulate their infernal energy.

Now Lin Ming had already become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. Normally, he kept it within his body and would manifest it in the form of the Death God Force Field. If Lin Ming didn't summon the twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, it would remain undetectable. Thus, these two rows of Giant Demon guards didn't recognize that Lin Ming was once a trial challenger.

"Make way."

Lin Ming's steps didn't stop. As he walked forwards, an invisible force field spread out from him. The two rows of guards were suppressed by this force field, making them gasp for breath as if all air had vanished. Before they could react, Lin Ming had passed through them, about to shove open the gates leading to the tower.

"You! You bold..."

As the guard captain just shouted out these words, he immediately shut up as his eyes went as round as large copper bells. Disbelief began to cloud over his face.

At that moment, those 80,000-90,000 jin heavy gates, those massive copper gates that needed dozens of people to open, were actually pushed open by a single hand!

As the gears of the bronze gates were forcefully pushed open, they even began to issue loud ‘ka ka ka’ sounds as if they couldn’t withstand the pressure. This scene simply left everyone stunned!

“Who… who is he!?”

The several guards were all shocked. How was this a human? He was simply a dragon in human form!

“Quick, hurry up and inform the managing deacon!”

These guards naturally didn’t have the qualifications to directly speak to the High Lords. They had to transmit a message through several layers of authority first.

But by the time the news was sent out, Lin Ming had already reached the transmission array that connected Skysplit Tower’s first floor to the second floor.

Bang!

A terrifying energy exploded upwards and the protective array formation that surrounded the transmission array was directly shattered to bits. Lin Ming stood on the transmission array and activated it with brute force. As for the deacon that managed the protective array formation, he was scared witless.

The deacon felt that Lin Ming looked familiar, but he just couldn’t place where he had seen him before.

In fact, five years ago, the Steppes Master had once issued an arrest warrant for Lin Ming throughout the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes. But before even half a year passed, the Steppes Master was able to confirm that Lin Ming had already left the Blood Slaughter Steppes, thus the capture zone had changed to the wider Holy Demon Continent. In the Blood Slaughter Steppes, the arrest warrant slowly faded away.

There were always massive numbers of individuals that left and entered the Blood Slaughter Steppes. In fact, a majority of these people in the Blood Slaughter Steppes' Skysplit Towers had entered in the last five years; they simply didn't recognize Lin Ming. Even though this current deacon had seen Lin Ming's arrest warrant, in these last five years Lin Ming had already passed through Life Destruction three times and had reformed his spirit body. His looks had become more perfect, his aura was swifter and sharper, and he was now a handsome youth with jade-like looks, ethereal and otherworldly. It was simply impossible for others to recognize him for a time.

Moreover, they never imagined that Lin Ming would actually have the gall to return to the Blood Slaughter Steppes to raise trouble!

As the deacon of that level reported the news, Lin Ming had already reached the transmission array on the second floor!

"You actually dare to cause trouble at Skysplit Tower? You really don't know how to write the word death!"

The deacon responsible for the second floor's transmission array was a Giant Demon. The deacon grasped a large ax, his entire body as hard and dark as granite. His face was cruel and barbaric. The deacon was unable to see just what Lin Ming's cultivation was. His understanding of humanity's cultivation system was limited to begin with, and when that was added with just how high Lin Ming's cultivation was as well as his restrained aura, it was impossible for him to see through it.

"How dare you! Are you deaf or something!?"

The Giant Demon deacon burned with rage as he chopped down with his ax. However, there was suddenly an explosive ringing that filled the air. Without Lin Ming moving a hand, the Giant Demon deacon was sent flying backwards like a broken sack. All of his inner organs ruptured as he vomited blood in the air before smashing against a wall hundreds of feet away. His ax, his armor, and all of his meridians were shattered to bits. It was unknown whether or not he was still alive.

Everyone watching was dumbfounded by this scene, causing them to freeze in place. That Giant Demon deacon was a one-star Demon King, the equivalent of a human early Revolving Core powerhouse, and even a bit stronger than that. And yet, such a one-star Demon King was actually instantly swatted away without the other party even moving a finger. Just what kind of power was that?

“A Life Destruction powerhouse! Could that be a human Life Destruction powerhouse? Otherwise there shouldn’t be any reason why we can’t see through his cultivation!” A Goliath guard said with rising panic in his voice.

“That’s impossible! All Life Destruction powerhouses that enter the Blood Slaughter Steppes will encounter the mystical curse here and die a miserable death! Who wouldn’t treasure their own life and actually come here?” An Imp deacon chimed in.

“Yes, he should have a late Revolving Core cultivation with strength equal to the weakest of Life Destruction powerhouses. Humph, but let alone the fact that he isn’t at Life Destruction, even if a true Life Destruction powerhouse were to come here, they would still die for the violation of causing trouble!”

“Our Skysplit Tower has the strongest High Lords of the 12 Skysplit Towers. The higher ranking High Lords can definitely contend with a human Life Destruction powerhouse. For this fellow to come here, even dragons must hide and tigers must lie low. Moreover, our Heavenly Cloud Tower Master is the strongest existence amongst all of the 12 Skysplit Tower Masters! He is only inferior to the Steppes Master himself!”

“Let’s follow him first and wait for the High Lords to come and kill him. Otherwise we will be executed for being derelict in our duties.”

After seeing what happened to the Giant Demon deacon, the other guards and deacons didn’t dare to do anything against Lin Ming. That would be the same as suicide.

And as they hoped, the High Lords of the Heavenly Cloud Tower soon appeared. And once they appeared, there were actually five at once. The one leading them was the second ranked

High Lord of Heavenly Cloud Tower. As for the top ranked High Lord, although he had indeed received the news, he felt that five High Lords was already more than enough to handle the situation, so it was unnecessary for him to do anything. For all of the High Lords to show up just because a single human powerhouse was causing a mess was simply making too great a fuss over nothing. It would even be quite a shameful matter once others were to know of it.

“The High Lords have come!”

“Hahaha, this boy is already dead! Let’s enjoy the good fun to follow!” The guards and deacons hurried to surround and cordon off the area. Each of them brandished their weapons and took position to make sure that Lin Ming wouldn’t be able to escape. With the High Lords supporting them, they weren’t afraid at all.

“Who are you?! How impudent!” The second ranked High Lord of Heavenly Cloud Tower had much better sight than these guards and deacons. As he saw Lin Ming, he could see that his strength was unfathomably deep. Otherwise, he would have already killed Lin Ming here with a single slap; why would he still be wasting his time speaking nonsense?

As his eyes stopped on Lin Ming’s eyes, he was alarmed for a moment but couldn’t identify why. Although many High Lords had participated in the previous adventure to the Eternal Demon Abyss, most of them had been killed off by Lin Ming. None of these five High Lords had seen Lin Ming’s face before.

“I am here to enter the Road of Emperor. Get out of my way!”

“What? Enter the Road of Emperor?” The five High Lords were stunned as they heard this and then immediately began chuckling. This was just like a beggar suddenly demanding to enter the royal palace, telling the emperor that they wanted to conduct a treasure hunt in the imperial treasure vaults.

“How ridiculous, just who do you think you are? The Road of Emperor is the highest level mystic realm of my Blood Slaughter Steppes, do you think you can enter just because you wish to!? Let alone the fact that you are a nobody, but even if you slaughtered your way up Heavenly Cloud Tower and became one of the Heavenly Demon Seven Stars, with your status of being a human you could still give up any hope of entering the Road of Emperor!"

"Second Brother, why are you wasting time talking with him. This sort of person obviously came here to die!"

"Haha, he is indeed an idiot! If you want to enter the Road of Emperor then let me guide you to the right path. All you have to do is release your spiritual sea and allow me to plant a slave seal within you. Perhaps then I will allow you to enter, hahahahaha!"

The five High Lords recklessly taunted Lin Ming. Lin Ming only sneered and said, "The Road of Emperor is an ancient ruin left from 100,000 years ago for the future generations. Since when did it belong to you lot?"

"Humph, nothing good can come from talking with a fool. This person isn't simple. Let us use our infernal energy and kill him with everything we have!!"

"Okay!"

The five High Lords cried out together. Behind them, Heavenly Demon phantoms began to form in the air. These were early ten-winged Heavenly Demons!

With the rules of the Blood Slaughter Steppes, one could become a High Lord as soon as they became a ten-winged Heavenly Demon. But, a High Lord could not form a middle stage ten-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo, or else a portion of their infernal energy would be forcefully dispersed.

The truth was that even without this rule, it was nearly impossible from go from a ten-winged Heavenly Demon to a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. That was because in order to complete this final step, one had to slaughter a massive number of High Lords and absorb their infernal energy. Where would there be so many High Lords that freely allowed themselves to be killed?

“Go!”

The five High Lords suddenly stormed outwards and the Heavenly Demon phantoms behind them also followed suit. All sorts of powerful attacks rained down at Lin Ming, completely enveloping him!

But Lin Ming didn’t even move. As the five ten-winged Heavenly Demon phantoms rushed out, another Heavenly Demon phantom formed behind Lin Ming. This Heavenly Demon phantom was several times larger than the High Lords’ ten-winged Heavenly Demon Phantoms. As the two rows of crimson blood wings slowly spread out, one could actually count that there were…12 wings! This was a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon!

The twelve-winged Heavenly Demon was the true form of the Death God Force Field. After the Heavenly Demon phantom formed, a terrifying infernal energy erupted outwards, flooding out like a bloody tsunami that impacted into the skies!

“What!?”

“A twelve-winged Heavenly Demon! How is this possible!!?”

“Ahhh!”

The five High Lords all issued out screams of pain and misery. At that time, they felt the Heavenly Demon phantoms behind them being forcefully ripped away by an immense strength. It was like someone had cut apart their backs and was pulling out their spines! The pain was unbearable, excruciating!

“My Heavenly Demon Tattoo!”

“My infernal energy, noo!”

Pitiful screams of horror and despair filled the air. The Heavenly Demon phantom behind Lin Ming suddenly swept out its 12 wings, forming a crimson vortex. The five ten-winged Heavenly Demon phantoms were completely sucked into this crimson vortex and crushed by the tremendous force within, turning into the purest infernal energy that was absorbed by the twelve-winged Heavenly Demon.

Puff!

The five High Lords all vomited mouthfuls of blood as they were sent flying backs. They heavily hit the ground, all of their organs and meridians torn to pieces.

From start to finish, Lin Ming hadn’t even moved a single finger.

Chapter 899 – Once Again Into the Road of Emperor

Chapter 899 – Once Again Into the Road of Emperor

…

…

…

The Heavenly Demon Tattoos were forcefully erased from the five High Lords, greatly reducing their strength. This deprival also diminished their fires of life until they were like the last flickering flame of a candle in the wind. At this time they had been turned into garbage without much of a lifespan left over.

This was the great power of the Death God Force Field – to extinguish all life vitality!

The Asura Force Field. Omnidirectional suppression of an enemy's physical body, true essence, dantian, and soul.

The Death God Force Field. To cut off the enemy's source of life.

But as for what the Prime Emperor Force Field was, Lin Ming had no idea. He only faintly knew that it was the strongest of the three force fields. If he could fuse all three together and form the complete Heavenly Demon Force Field, then he would be able to crush and kill Divine Sea Supreme Elders!

The Heavenly Demon Force Field was highly likely to be related to that nameless Great Emperor from the Eternal Demon Abyss. But, that nameless Great Emperor had already reached an unimaginable boundary; it was likely he was a top level existence of the Divine Realm!

After wasting away five High Lords with nothing more than a thought, Lin Ming casually strolled forwards. The present him now had sufficient strength to directly enter the Road of Emperor. All gods that blocked him would die; all buddhas that blocked him would perish!

As Lin Ming walked forwards, the guards who surrounded him were scared to the point that their legs trembled, nearly toppling over like their legs were made from jelly. This youth was able to instantly kill five High Lords.

This… was this even human!?

He was simply like an abyssal demon. Against such a monstrous demon, all of them were terrified they even thought of helping the five High Lords to surround and kill Lin Ming.

After seeing Lin Ming stroll away, none of them were able to summon the courage to flee. Against such an existence, a mere thought was enough to kill them all. No matter if they were 10 times faster or a hundred times faster, they still wouldn't be able to escape.

Each and every guard was wet with sweat, with limp and shaking limbs. Their faces were ashen and their souls seemed to flee from their backs. They stood there, paralyzed where they were until Lin Ming finally left.

"That… that youth is actually a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon! He is actually a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon!"

A twelve-winged Heavenly Demon was a legendary existence but also a taboo existence. They never imagined that this human who came here today was a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon!

"He must be Lin Ming from five years ago. The great Steppes Master has already issued a warrant for his capture and yet he dares to return to the Blood Slaughter Steppes?"

Lin Ming confidently strode into the fourth floor of the Heavenly Cloud Tower. There was no one here waiting to stop him. After killing five High Lords with nothing more than a glance, at this time no one dared to leap to their deaths. Even if every single master of

Heavenly Cloud Tower combined forces to attack Lin Ming, they would simply instantly perish.

The fifth floor! The Road of Emperor was already very close.

At this time, news of Lin Ming's appearance had reached the Steppes Master.

……

Peng!

The Steppes master crushed the arms of this throne to dust. "Lin Ming, he actually dares to return. He probably thought that just because he developed some supernatural power that he would be able to dominate me. How ridiculous. I shall show him just what it means to be a frog in a well!"

When Lin Ming had left the Blood Slaughter Steppes, his cultivation had only been at the early Revolving Core realm. To cross from the early Revolving Core into Life Destruction in just a mere five years, one had to have an eternally rare heaven-gifted talent and foundation, and also must have experienced great lucky chances repeatedly.

The Steppes Master guessed that Lin Ming truly did have a destiny that defied the will of the heavens. With his first stage Life Destruction cultivation and his monstrous talent added on top of that, his true strength likely reached the level of a fifth grade Life Destruction martial artist. To such a top master, instantly killing five High Lords was nothing at all.

After all, in the Blood Slaughter Steppes, all High Lords did not reach Life Destruction, four-star Demon King, or an equivalent rank. Otherwise they would possibly come under the influence of the curse.

The Steppes Master lit a sound transmitting talisman and then left the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple, using a movement technique to fly towards Heavenly Cloud Tower at full speed!

…………

“What? He wants me to delay for time so that Lin Ming cannot enter the Road of Emperor? How can I delay anything at all!?” After the Heavenly Cloud Tower Master received the Steppes Master’s sound transmission, he nearly flipped over the table he was sitting at.

Although he was far stronger than the 16 High Lords, he absolutely could not reach a degree of strength that could kill five High Lords with a single glance. Facing Lin Ming meant that he would be as good as dead!

“This is stupidly unreasonable and outrageous. What the fuck can I possibly do? If I encounter a monster like Lin Ming then even betting my entire life wouldn’t do anything at all!”

The Heavenly Cloud Tower master was from the Goliath race. He had immense strength and normally wouldn’t even fear the heavens. But, facing such an impossible and ridiculous order, he couldn’t help but curse out loud. The Steppes Master was flying here from the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple and would need at most a quarter hour to arrive. How could he possibly delay Lin Ming for a quarter hour?

“But Tower Master, this is the order of the Steppes Master. If we do not follow it then we will be disposed of.” Beside the Tower Master, an Imp martial artist suddenly spoke up. He was the most trusted friend of the Heavenly Cloud Tower Master.

The Steppes Master was an extremely cruel, violent, and malicious individual. All who dared to disobey his orders would suffer a truly miserable fate.

“Shit, shit, shit, I really hit the shit jackpot this time! I have no idea just how strong this boy’s true strength is. Perhaps he might even be able to contend with a quasi-Emperor powerhouse. How can I even think of delaying him!”

The Heavenly Cloud Tower Master cursed again. He could only brace himself for this crisis and go to the Road of Emperor.

But, just as he reached the Road of Emperor, he heard a massive explosive sound. The spells that sealed away the Road of Emperor had been shattered by Lin Ming's halberd!

These sealing spells were added to the Skysplit Tower after it was founded, they weren't part of the original structure. Otherwise, even if Lin Ming had the strength of an unrivalled Emperor he still wouldn't have been able to force his way through them.

But even so, the toughness and firmness of these spells was staggering. The Heavenly Cloud Tower Master was frightened witless as he saw Lin Ming easily rip them apart.

"Young Hero, please hold on, if there is some matter then we can surely discuss it!" The Heavenly Cloud Tower Master shouted out, making his tone as polite as possible so that he wouldn't provoke Lin Ming's ire. However, Lin Ming only swept his eyes over him. The icy cold meaning in them caused the Heavenly Cloud Tower Master's body to feel cold, as if his soul itself had frozen.

The Death God Force Field was able to cut off all life vitality. Even if Lin Ming wasn't actively galvanizing it, it still wasn't a power that the Heavenly Cloud Tower Master was able to resist.

The Heavenly Cloud Tower Master had originally wanted to delay Lin Ming with some nonsense banter. But before he could actually speak, he gulped over and over before sputtering, "You… if you don't know the law formula to open the Road of Emperor's array formation, there is no way for you to enter…"

As he spoke, the Heavenly Cloud Tower Master took several steps back until he reached a safe distance. This distance was only for comfort of mind. If Lin Ming wanted to kill him, he would die with nothing more than a thought.

The Heavenly Cloud Tower Master was thinking about how to tell Lin Ming the law formula to open the Road of Emperor and also to switch it a bit so that he wouldn't be able to open it for a period of time. This would give him time and also satisfy the order of Steppes Master. However, he discovered that Lin Ming simply ignored him. Lin Ming had already began turning the outer runes of the Road of Emperor, and with a ‘ka ka ka’ sound, the array formation was solved by Lin Ming.

“…What?”

The Heavenly Cloud Tower Master gulped, his eyes perfectly round. He was left completely speechless! It seemed as if there was nothing Lin Ming couldn’t do.

The truth was that the outer array formation of the Road of Emperor was only a simple gate. It was like an ordinary gated fence installed outside of mortal palaces; it wasn’t difficult to open at all. Those people that had first discovered the 12 Skysplit Towers were able to solve it, much less someone like Lin Ming.

Thus, in just half an incense stick of time, the gating array formation of the Road of Emperor had been opened by Lin Ming. He calmly stepped onto the crimson altar and sprinkled his blood onto the ground. A red light enveloped him and he was swallowed up by it.

The Heavenly Cloud Tower Master and his trusted High Lord confidante were left behind, flabbergasted. But, they were also helpless. The Road of Emperor only allowed a single person to enter on their own path; no one could follow them. Since Lin Ming had gone in, there was no way of chasing him inside. They could only wait for him to come out.

The Heavenly Cloud Tower Master quickly sent out a sound transmitting talisman to inform the Steppes Master of the sudden turn in events. He could only anxiously wait to bear the anger of the Steppes Master.

A quarter hour later, a sharp sonic boom rang out in the skies, accompanied by a massive explosion outside of the Heavenly Cloud Tower. The Steppes Master had finally arrived at Heavenly Cloud City, and the Heavenly Cloud Tower Master as well as the other 11 surviving High Lords hurriedly ran out to greet him.

The Steppes Master’s eyes flashed with a gloomy killing intent. He was well aware of just what Lin Ming had planned. In fact, he had already approximated Lin Ming’s current strength and didn't expect that the Heavenly Cloud Tower Master would really be able to delay Lin Ming.

"Lin Ming, do you really think that after entering the Road of Emperor you will be able to become a Peerless Emperor and gain strength that surpasses mine? You are far too naïve!" The Steppes Master sinisterly grinned. "Those that pass through the Road of Emperor can indeed become Peerless Emperors, but do you think that the Road of Emperor can be walked so easily? You were far too impatient. Perhaps if you wanted another 20 years and your cultivation reached the fifth or sixth stage of Life Destruction, nothing would have been able to stop you from passing the Road of Emperor. But now it is simply impossible for you to completely cross it. I shall wait outside and lay down a great array formation for you. You are now nothing more than a pigeon in a cage. Let me see just how you'll escape this time!"

In the last 10,000 years, beside the Eightfall War Emperor and a few other individuals, no one had been able to walk far down the Road of Emperor. Not even the Steppes Master himself had the strength to reach the end of the Road of Emperor. Moreover, obtaining the recognition of the Road of Emperor was the most important part, or else no one was able to cross it.

The Steppes Master didn't doubt Lin Ming's talent. But, his cultivation was far too low. Only five years had passed, and Lin Ming was likely only 24 years old or so.

Even if his talent was recognized by the Road of Emperor, his strength would still be lacking.

"Everyone come and assist in laying down the array formation. The day he emerges from the Road of Emperor is the day he dies!" After the Steppes Master issued this order, he sat down in front of the Road of Emperor's gate. He closed his eyes, meditating and adjusting his condition to its peak state.

Sine Lin Ming had gone in from here, he would sooner or later have to come out from here. The Steppes Master planned on personally killing Lin Ming. He had to do this, no matter what means he was forced to use.

At this time, within the Road of Emperor, Lin Ming stood at an entirely similar crimson altar. There was a 10 foot wide wooden plank road in front of him. This plank road was suspended in the air, ghostly and ethereal, extending into the infinite distance until it disappeared into the darkness. There was no support that held up the plank road, and underneath this road was nothing but an endless abyss! It was impossible to see just what lay at the bottom; it was possible that this abyss even connected to the Eternal Demon Abyss. If he fell here, he would fall to the very center of the world, beyond all salvation.

On the sides of this plank road were lights that floated in the air, around 100 feet away from each other. These lights were all given off by strange lamps carved from black rock. They were held up by some mysterious strength.

This was where Lin Ming had first comprehended his battle spirit, the road of will lights!

Chapter 900 – Tempering the Battle Spirit

Chapter 900 – Tempering the Battle Spirit

…

…

…

After five years, Lin Ming had once again stepped onto the Road of Emperor. Every 100 feet on this road there would be a light, a quiet and ghostly blue flame that slowly burned. These will lights had burnt for 100,000 years without diminishing, like they would continue to burn for forever.

Under every light, there was a carving of a person, each carving corresponding to an unrivalled genius of their generation. These people were either Emperor level powerhouses or chosen prides of heaven that could easily become an Emperor level powerhouse, except that they had perished as they were growing.

Every heroic elite that stepped onto the Road of Emperor would be recorded here for all of eternity, as if their souls had been left behind.

This was the mysterious Road of Emperor. It was unknown who had been the one to build it.

Hu –

Hu –

Hu –

Every time that Lin Ming passed a light, it would naturally extinguish. And every single one of these early lights were the young geniuses that had died early with relatively weak wills. As Lin Ming slowly advanced forwards, he began to feel the pressure of the Emperor wills.

Hua –

A purple light emitted out from a will light, covering Lin Ming. Afterwards, Lin Ming felt as if his soul and body had been separated and in the next moment his consciousness had entered a world of will. This was the world of will of an ancient Supreme Elder, and Lin Ming was facing the pressure from their battle spirit.

"Kill! Kill! Kill!"

A 10 foot tall demon grasped a halberd as he barreled towards Lin Ming with overflowing killing intent.

Lin Ming remained motionless. His eyes flashed with a sharp light.

Woosh!

A silver white divine sword shot out from between his eyebrows, directly splitting apart that demon and the world behind it in half!

Ka ka ka!

The world of will collapsed, completely destroyed. Lin Ming hadn't even taken a single step; the disparity was simply too great. Let alone these battle spirits that had been weakened through the passage of 100,00 years, even if these war Emperors came back to life they still wouldn't be Lin Ming's match.

Ho – !

The will light extinguished. Lin Ming continued to face the next will light.

This time, a Goliath Supreme Elder appeared. This will was a bit stronger than the last demon's, but to Lin Ming it was only the difference between an ant and a cockroach – he instantly killed them all the same!

Ca!

A silver white battle spirit continued to cut forwards, splitting apart all. Every time it slashed forwards a world of will would break! These battle spirits weren't even able to contend with Lin Ming, not even a single round.

A silver level battle spirit was extremely rare for a Divine Sea powerhouse; it had completely vanished from the Sky Spill Continent!

Lin Ming's advance was unstoppable. Even Gu Xiao's will that had stopped Lin Ming for seven days and caused him to struggle and exert an enormous amount of energy was still cut apart by his sword of will, without the slightest difference from the others.

As Lin Ming continued forwards, light after light was extinguished, all the way until 100 had been snuffed out. At this time, Lin Ming finally arrived at a split in the road. Here, the Road of Emperor that continued into the endless darkness divided into two paths, each leading to a different place.

Right in front of him was the same Road of Emperor, with will lights that lit up the sides. But on a diverging path was another Road of Emperor, this one surrounded by stone tablets.

These were respectively the road of will lights and the road of emperor stone tablets.

If a trial challenger found it difficult to continue, this choice of diverging paths would appear in advance so that a trial challenger could choose, making it so that their trip here wasn't wasted.

Five years ago, Lin Ming had chosen the road of will lights. But talents like Feng Shen, Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin, and the others had unwisely chosen the road of emperor stone tablets.

However, Lin Ming hadn't been able to persist for long on the road of will lights. Although he had ultimately managed to comprehend his own battle spirit, he had still been defeated early. The pressure from the road of will lights had rapidly risen; he had no idea just how terrifying it would become the further he went.

This time, facing the same choice, Lin Ming still decisively chose to step on the road of will lights. He wanted to take a good look at just how far he could go with his current silver battle spirit.

As Lin Ming stepped down the road of will lights once again, he immediately felt a great pressure fall down over him, even suppressing the world of will. Lin Ming guessed that this was a manifestation of a single facet from the Prime Emperor martial intent. As for what the complete Prime Emperor martial intent was like, he had no idea.

The Asura martial intent and Death God martial intent aimed to suppress a martial artist in the physical real world, but the Prime Emperor martial intent was aimed at the world of will. If one's soul was too weak, then their spiritual sea would directly collapse, turning them into a mindless zombie.

Now, the first world that Lin Ming encountered on this new road of will lights was the battle spirit of a two-star Demon Emperor. This battle spirit even contained a wisp of that Demon Emperor's remnant soul. It was simply incomparable to the previous wills.

Five years ago, Lin Ming had also faced such a battle spirit and had been instantly killed where he stood. He simply didn't even have a single chance of resisting, and ultimately had no choice but to leave the Road of Emperor.

Shua!

The silver white sword of will slashed out, directly chopping the enemy to pieces. However, not only did they not die, but it even seemed as if they were reforming.

"Mm? This will form seems to have been enhanced by the Prime Emperor martial intent, otherwise it shouldn't have been able to withstand my sword."

Lin Ming maintained his calm and slashed out with the sword of will once more. With a ‘peng’ sound, the will form completely collapsed, turning into pure energy that vitalized Lin Ming’s battle spirit.

“This Road of Emperor is truly mysterious. After slaying the battle spirit that I couldn’t exterminate last time, I feel that my will has become a little bit stronger. It feels like I’ll break through to the silver small success level soon.”

Lin Ming had broken through to the third stage of Life Destruction and his battle spirit also grew along with his cultivation. He was very near to developing a small success silver level battle spirit. This breakthrough had originally only been a matter of time, but now his battle spirit was stimulated by the Road of Emperor, digging out the hidden potential within so that the breakthrough approached much faster.

One lamp one world. All of the will lights were cut apart by Lin Ming’s sword of will and extinguished. Nothing was able to stop his forwards advance. In just a mere four hours, Lin Ming had stamped out 200 will lights. As he continued, the will lights became more and more vivid and vibrant as if they could burn down everything. Not just that, but the lights in front of him began to change color. From the light blue, it looked like melted metal and finally began to exude a blazing silver light.

Silver battle spirit?

As Lin Ming looked at the glittering silver light that lit up a world of will, the phantom of a great Emperor appeared, startling him. Had he already reached the will lights on the level of silver battle spirits?

This Road of Emperor remembered all peerless elites that had ever entered. And among these unrivalled heroes, there were even some whose achievements didn’t stop at the Divine Sea realm!

Especially those powerhouses that had lived 100,000 years ago. Their battle spirits were also contained in the Road of Emperor. It wasn't strange if they reached a silver level battle spirit.

"Kill!"

A great Emperor that shined all over with a silver light grasped a silver heavy sword as he rushed towards Lin Ming. Lin Ming's mind stirred; the sword of will cut forwards!

Kacha!

The sword of will collided with the dazzling silver heavy sword. Lin Ming felt his spiritual sea shake; he actually hadn't been able to cut apart his opponent's sword.

"What a tough will. Even after 100,000 years have passed, his will is still so formidable. He should be an unrivalled powerhouse that surpassed the Divine Sea."

Chain of Stars!

Lin Ming's thoughts changed and his battle spirit turned into countless star fragments that shot towards that silver will form.

In the world of will, one could use any attack they could imagine.

Ping ping ping ping ping ping!

Silver light flooded outwards. A series of clanging metal strikes filled the air like a storm, deafening.

Lin Ming exchanged over a dozen moves with this silver white Emperor battle spirit. He managed to split apart his opponent's body several times, but that will form was able to mend itself every time. After 30 moves, Lin Ming finally wore down his opponent's will and completely extinguished it.

The silver light battle spirit melted into a pure will energy that flowed into Lin Ming. In that moment, Lin Ming felt as if some faint barrier that covered his spiritual sea finally shattered. The mist that surrounded his battle spirit suddenly converged onto it, became more solid. Now, it seemed no different from a true silver spear. The cold spear light became even more keen and fierce.

Silver battle spirit small success!

“Haha, congratulations Lin Ming! Third stage Life Destruction and a small success silver battle spirit! You should be able to easily form a gold battle spirit when you step into the Divine Sea. And perhaps you might be able to form a gold battle spirit before you even reach the Divine Sea! This Road of Emperor is truly wonderful to develop the potential of your battle spirit. Before now, your cultivation increase had been too fast, so the growth of your battle spirit wasn’t able to follow. Although you had the potential, you still hadn’t been able to achieve a small success silver battle spirit. If it weren’t for this Road of Emperor, you would have had to constantly temper your will for several years before you could release all of that hidden potential.” Demonshine’s wisp of soul exclaimed from within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea.

The potential of a battle spirit was 80-90% inherent to a martial artist. Of course, there were a minor number of heavenly materials that were able to directly enhance a battle spirit’s potential, such as the Twinlife Thunder Crystal. However, this sort of heavenly material could only be found through a stroke of divine luck. They were simply invaluable treasures that couldn’t be purchased.

Although a martial artist’s battle spirit was set, that didn’t mean they could unleash all of this potential. In order to enhance a battle spirit one needed to constantly gain experience and temper their will.

The higher level a battle spirit was, the more difficult it would be for it to grow. If one’s experience was insufficient then a martial artist might not be able to release their full potential even after tens of thousands of years.

When a martial artist reached old age, their strength, body, blood vitality, and fires of life would all start weakening – only their battle spirit would not decline. For instance, someone like Situ Bonan was already on the verge of death, but his achievements in the aspect of battle spirits actually surpassed many other talents.

Lin Ming's battle spirit had immense potential, but it actually lacked experience and tempering. This Road of Emperor just happened to be the best place to hone a battle spirit.

Lin Ming understood all of this and was greatly anticipating walking down this road of will lights. The more formidable the will forms he faced, the more his battle spirit would grow.

Time passed. In just the blink of an eye, two months passed. During these two months, Lin Ming had completely immersed himself in combat within the world of will.

At the very beginning, all battle spirits were instantly killed by Lin Ming. Following that, it gradually became a struggle between two opponents on the same level. And now, Lin Ming was even finding himself being suppressed by the battle spirits of the will lights once again.

The 215th will light had cost Lin Ming 20 days to pass. After suffering grievous wounds countless times, he only then managed to reluctantly exterminate it.

"Next one."

Lin Ming let out a heavy breath. Because he had overexerted his will, his complexion was slightly pale. As his slightly tired eyes gazed at the carved image of the next will light, his eyes immediately widened.

The 216th will light – the Demon Emperor!

"Demon Emperor… it's actually the Demon Emperor?" Not only was Lin Ming bewildered, but even Demonshine was completely stunned.

Chapter 901 – Secret of the Road of Emperor

Chapter 901 – Secret of the Road of Emperor

…

…

…

The Demon Emperor was once the most famed character of the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent 70,000-80,000 years ago. He had formed the sixth-grade sect, the Demon God Imperial Palace, and became the highest under the heavens. His strength far surpassed the current Old Man Good Fortune, Yang Laotian, and all the others. Just the legacies he casually left behind had been able to form the foundation for the Asura Divine Kingdom, and that was only a minor portion of his inheritances.

"It really is Master's will light…" Demonshine quietly mumbled. He could feel the energy coming from the will light; this was undoubtedly the Demon Emperor.

After being sealed in the Magic Cube for such an unimaginably long time, now that Demonshine felt this all too familiar energy and aura, he was suddenly filled with a deep emotion.

"Let's go take a look." Once Lin Ming felt that he had almost recovered his energy, he steadfastly entered into the Demon Emperor's world of will.

This was an endless plain. The land was dark black with bones buried all over.

"Kill!"

Lin Ming had just set foot on the ground when an incomparably horrifying energy field came crashing down from the sky, spreading throughout the world. The entire world of will seemed as if it couldn't bear this brutal energy, trembling as if it neared collapse!

As Lin Ming was shrouded in this energy, he wasn't even able to move. He was about to use his sword of will to break out of the shackles of energy, when at this moment, his pupils shrank. A golden red halberd light was thrusting straight towards his forehead!

Gold battle spirit!

Peng!

Lin Ming's will form was easily shattered into a rain of blood, wildly falling down!

"What an amazingly tyrannical aura!" Although his body had shattered, Lin Ming's will had become much tougher and wasn't destroyed by just this. In fact, the first time he entered the Road of Emperor there were countless times his will form had been torn apart in the world of will. "My will is everlasting and forever. Even if you have a golden battle spirit it still is not your true self. There is no way you can kill me!"

If one's will was completely and thoroughly annihilated in the will world, then they would also die in the real world. A sharp light flashed in Lin Ming's eyes and in the next moment his body began to slowly reform itself.

"Mm? You have this king's aura on your body. Just who are you?"

In front of Lin Ming stood a large phantom, its body over 50 feet tall. Its entire form was ethereal and phantasmal. It had a grim and fierce appearance. As it was enveloped in the haze of golden light, it looked just like a savage god.

As the Demon Emperor's phantom floated in the air, his powerful pressure extended in all directions, suppressing all. The truth was that this pressure was also a type of force field. When a powerhouse reached a certain level in their cultivation, and their inner energy became formidable enough, this type of force field would naturally form. It would make those that were weaker simply unable to step near or even look straight at them.

Before the Demon Emperor had died, he had reached a boundary that was hard to estimate. If he had personally come here, then even if Lin Ming reached the Divine Sea realm, he would still find it hard to withstand.

But now, the Demon Emperor phantom floating in the air was only a faded will form. It was no problem for Lin Ming to withstand this will pressure with just his silver battle spirit.

“Third stage Life Destruction, silver battle spirit?” Two ghostly blue flames lit up in the Demon Emperor’s pupils. He obviously found this hard to believe, especially that an energy akin to his own emanated from Lin Ming’s body. “Just who are you?”

Before Lin Ming could open his mouth to speak, a faint red shadow emerged from his body, curling up in the air.

“Master, it is me… it’s me, Demonshine. Do you remember me?” Demonshine said with a subdued and meek tone. Facing the dual pressure of the Demon Emperor and the Prime Emperor Force Field, this mere wisp of Demonshine’s soul avatar found it difficult to withstand. His voice trembled. To see the Demon Emperor once more, Demonshine felt both excitement and fear.

“Demonshine…”

The Demon Emperor seemed as if he had fallen into a long recollection of his memories. This was not the main soul of the Demon Emperor, but rather only a tiny piece of spirit mark and incomplete remnant soul, so he didn’t immediately recognize Demonshine.

“I remember… the war of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. I reached the end of my road and you and I both perished together. I never thought that someday… I would see this part of the world again…” The Demon Emperor looked up to the heavens, muttering. From the time he first appeared when he had only killing intent in his heart, he had now recovered some degree of sanity and intelligence.

After all, the Demon Emperor was the Demon Emperor. Even if he only had a tiny piece of his residual soul left over, he could still find himself.

"I… where am I?"

The Demon Emperor suddenly asked. Lin Ming was startled. Did the Demon Emperor not know where he was?

Lin Ming answered truthfully. "Senior is within the Road of Emperor. You have been sleeping within the will lights."

"Will lights… Road of Emperor…" The Demon Emperor revealed a thoughtful expression. After a long period of time, he finally remembered. "The Road of Emperor. I remember, this is the Samsara Road!"

"Samsara Road?" Lin Ming was shocked. The word samsara left his heart cold. "What is the Samsara Road?"

"This is the Samsara Road created by Empyrean Primordius!" The Demon Emperor sighed as he said this. "Samsara, samsara, Empyrean Primordius, you were one of the strongest Kings of the Divine Realm, and your ambitions were greater than the skies, but unfortunately… you tried to go against the will of the heavens and finally all your efforts became for naught!"

The Demon Emperor expressing such a feeling caused Lin Ming's heart to skip a beat.

Empyrean Primordius?

Could that be the master of the Great Emperor's heart?

Was the Road of Emperor named the Samsara Road?

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. The Road of Emperor was an incomparably mysterious land. All peerless geniuses that entered here would leave behind will lights after they died.

Under these lights, a carving of their image would be formed. Such enigmatic matters left Lin Ming beyond surprised.

Now that he heard the Demon Emperor call the Road of Emperor the Samsara Road, he could faintly feel that the Road of Emperor, Eternal Demon Abyss, and Sea of Miracles contained a heaven-shaking secret!

But just why would Empyrean Primordius arrive at this world where the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent were located? Could there have been something special about this planet?

He hurriedly asked, "Senior, could you please explain in detail what the Samsara Road actually is?"

"Samsara… samsara!" As the Demon Emperor mentioned this word, he found it hard to maintain his calm. "The so-called samsara means that after the journey of life and death, one can reincarnate in the six paths of eternity, continuing the cycle of life and death! However, this is only a legend. Perhaps in ancient times this type of samsara actually existed, but currently it does not!"

"What!?!?" Lin Ming was floored. He had always doubted whether the path of samsara actually existed, but he had never dared to affirm or deny this. After a martial artist died, they would still care about their soul and wish they didn't fade into nothing. They wished that they would be able to survive on in this universe, holding out on a faint hope that they would reincarnate somewhere.

Thus, the demonic path murder techniques that sucked out a person's soul and refined it were extremely nasty and sinister killing techniques. Even the Demon Envoy of before had combusted his soul only as a last resort so that he could plant a Death Reaper Curse onto Lin Ming.

This was because after doing that, they were destined to never enter the cycle of samsara. But now Lin Ming learned from the Demon Emperor's own mouth that after death, there was no samsara. How could he not be shocked?

"Humph, about just what samsara is like, there are very few who actually know anything at all. There is a theory. That is that after a mortal dies they may enter samsara, but a martial artist cannot. This is because a martial artist cultivating martial arts is a practice that defies the heavens' wishes. Thus, after they die they will be cursed by the heavens, unable to enter the cycle of samsara. When their physical form dies, they will truly perish, turning into absolute nothingness!

Lin Ming hadn't yet recovered from the initial shock when he was left speechless by the Demon Emperor's next words.

A mortal could enter samsara, but because a martial artist's very existence defied the will of the heavens, they would be cursed after death and unable to enter samsara?

Did that mean that all who practiced martial arts were destined to travel a path of no return? Struggling to cross the final stage, betting everything to reach the peak of all martial arts, with the only other choice being to become nothing more than ashes? But since ancient times, had there really been anyone that had ever managed to reach the true peak of martial arts? And even if there were, how many people could there have possibly been?

There was no martial artist that would not be shocked, or even feel an intense fear, after hearing the Demon Emperor's theory. Even Lin Ming, who had a firm will and steady mind, was the same!

"Hehe, little devil, everything I said is merely a guess. No one can guess just what it is like. But, even my guess is one of the greatest secrets of the Divine Realm. The Road of Emperor you are walking on is exactly the Samsara Road that Empyrean Primordius created. The reason he created the Samsara Road and Yellow Springs River was all to establish a true path of reincarnation for the countless martial artists of the boundless universe! But what a pity, he actually failed at the end."

“What?” Lin Ming was stunned. How many worlds did the boundless universe actually have; it was simply innumerable. Then, how many martial artists must there be in the boundless universe? Even ‘grains of sand in the desert’ or ‘drops of water in the ocean’ wouldn’t be enough to describe it.

And to establish a road of reincarnation for so many people? What sort of boldness and daring must that have been! Just what boundary had Empyrean Primordius reached?

“Senior mentioned the Yellow Springs River. Could that be the Yellow Springs River in the Eternal Demon Abyss?”

“Yes, that is the Yellow Springs River!” The Demon Emperor nodded. “A martial artist’s soul and body are one and the same. Once one’s life is over, their soul will disappear, vanishing forever. Thus, the soul cannot be used for samsara. But, to place the old soul into a newborn body is only seizing that body – it is not true samsara. After one’s soul perishes, they are doomed to die!”

“The only force that can approach immortality is the martial arts will! That is also called the battle spirit. A powerful battle spirit can last for several million years, or even tens of millions of years. Empyrean Primordius created the Samsara Road all in order to transfer the will of martial artists into it. This was so that a martial artist’s spirit mark would be contained in the martial arts will, forming will lights and being permanently sealed away! All to wait for the samsara in the future!

“This Samsara Road is in truth a divine relic! However, the refining of this divine relic is not complete. If it were to be completed, then there really might be a chance of establishing a true road to reincarnation, to have these spirit marks bearing battle spirits serve as the road to samsara! This was the goal of Samsara Road! However, Empyrean Primordius only managed to accomplish this for martial artists that had comprehended a battle spirit; there was still an immeasurably long road to go. However… in the end, he didn’t manage to defy the heavens!”

The Demon Emperor heaved a deep sigh as he spoke here, as if he felt sad for the defeat of such a divine emperor.

The Demon Emperor's words today were like an explosion in Lin Ming's mind, leaving him completely shocked. He never imagined that this was the reason that the Road of Emperor existed!

"Senior, this junior would like to know just how Empyrean Primordius was defeated."

"I do not know." The Demon Emperor shook his head.

"Then why would Empyrean Primordius form the Samsara Road on the Holy Demon Continent of one of the countless worlds of the lower realms, but not in the Divine Realm?"

"I do not know!" The Demon Emperor shook his head once more. "Junior, I have already told you what I know, and as for the rest, I do not know that either. Now tell me, just why do you have my aura coming from your body?"

As the Demon Emperor asked this, Lin Ming's heart skipped a beat and he nearly jumped up. If he revealed that he had swallowed one of the Demon Emperor's soul fragments, would he take revenge against him?

Chapter 902 – 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array Formation

Chapter 902 – 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array Formation

…

…

…

Facing the Demon Emperor’s question, Demonshine didn’t even speak a single word. Although he was the Demon Emperor’s contract beast, the truth was that his status wasn’t high. When the Demon Emperor was at his peak strength, Demonshine basically never appeared in battles. At most, he was a loud supporter that tagged along from behind.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment and said, “Senior, this junior cannot reply to that question.”

The reason why Lin Ming couldn’t answer was not because he feared the Demon Emperor. In truth, the current Demon Emperor phantom was no more than a wisp of the Demon Emperor’s will form combined with a wisp of his remnant soul. He had already lost over 90% of his spirit mark and no longer posed any threat to Lin Ming.

Although Lin Ming’s will wasn’t a match for the Demon Emperor’s will form, he could still leave this world in order to protect himself.

He didn’t reply to the Demon Emperor’s question because of the Magic Cube. Such a divine object had already caused two great superpowers within the Divine Realm to annihilate each other. If others were to learn he had obtained it then that would definitely not be a good matter.

"I see… well, I can already make a guess even if you don't answer. Demonshine's divine soul should have been torn apart with me and sucked into the Divine Crystal Magic Cube. Since he's with you, then that object must have something to do with all of this, humph!"

The Demon Emperor coldly snorted. This cold snort actually contained a deep and abiding unwillingness. In the past, he had followed Tian Mingzi's army and entered the Verdant Feather Holy Lands together with him. In the end, not only did he not obtain anything, but he even paid with his life. Even so, the Demon Emperor didn't know just what the Divine Crystal Magic Cube was or what uses it had. The existence of this Divine Crystal Magic Cube was itself a mystery. Tian Mingzi had paid a great price in order to attract many masters to struggle for it. This secret had been kept hidden from all of the World Kings and Empyreans.

But now, this lucky chance was obtained by this junior in front of him. The Demon Emperor would be lying if he said he wasn't envious.

"Your destiny really leaves me jealous. You have a silver battle spirit at only the third stage of Life Destruction, and your foundation is as solid as it could be. You dual cultivate body and essence, and you've even already opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. Compared to when I was your age, you are at least a hundred times better than me! When I walked down this Road of Emperor, I only managed to extinguish 113 will lights. Compared to you, the difference between us is like clouds and mud!" The Demon Emperor sighed as he spoke here. The word genius couldn't even describe how Lin Ming had managed to grow to such a degree in this situation. Of course, there had to be massive lucky chances, but just lucky chances wasn't enough. He would need to have an iron will and immense talent in order to do so. Without those, there would be no number of lucky chances that could boost a person to the peak of martial arts.

"The martial artists of the lower realms start at a much lower point than the martial artists of the Divine Realm. Because of the catastrophe from 100,000 years ago, the planet of the Sky Spill Continent and the Holy Demon Continent devolved into one of the inferior worlds in the three thousand boundless universe. If I had half your talent in the past then I wouldn't have been reduced to this situation! If I didn't diverge in my cultivation path and cultivate Life Destruction once again, causing me to delay a massive amount of time, then even if I couldn't become a Holy Lord, I could still have become a quasi-Holy Lord!"

The Demon Emperor's voice was filled with great unwillingness. Lin Ming was startled as he heard this, "Diverge cultivation paths and cultivate Life Destruction once again?"

"Not wrong. I reached the Divine Sea after seven stages of Life Destruction. In the Sky Spill Continent that is already an extraordinary character, but in the Divine Realm that is nothing at all. A seventh stage Life Destruction means you will be destined to a limited potential. Thus, the only choice I had was to diverge from my cultivation and redo Life Destruction!"

The Demon Emperor's words left Lin Ming bewildered. The path to the Divine Sea was filled with dangers, but even after reaching that boundary, the Demon Emperor had still diverged from his cultivation, taking a long and arduous path to cultivate Life Destruction once again. Not only had the Demon Emperor done this, but he had even made wonderful achievements afterwards; he was indeed amazing. When he was at the Sky Spill Continent, he must have obtained several heaven-defying lucky chances.

If this were so, then perhaps not only the Demon Emperor did this, but even Emperor Shakya! This was the suffering of martial artists from the lower realms that ascended upwards.

Lin Ming rejoiced that his foundation was extremely solid so he wouldn't have to follow such a long-winded detour.

"Forget it, forget it, you are after all a martial artist that comes from the Holy Demon Continent, so you also share a similar origin with me. I have already died and the memories of this tiny bit of remnant soul will not be able to last forever. Since my legacies have all been inherited by you, you can be considered a half-descendent of mine. For you to cultivate to such a boundary with only a 24 year skeletal age, it is already certain that you will be an unrivalled hero in the future. That shouldn't be hard at all. Even if you only rely on the great lucky chance of the Magic Cube, you will still be able to become a Holy Lord or even an Empyrean!

"When that time comes, if you could inherit the will and hopes of Empyrean Primordius and establish your own Samsara Road, that would be the testament and glory of all martial artists in this universe! Since you have come here to whet your battle spirit, let me pass the energy of my will light to you!"

The Demon Emperor's form exploded, turning into a rain of golden light that showered downwards. This light completed gathered onto Lin Ming's will form, invigorating his battle spirit.

Lin Ming felt the fog around the battle spirit in his spiritual sea slowly thicken. The battle spirit's energy rapidly increased. Once this thick fog increased and condensed once again, Lin Ming would then step into large success of his silver battle spirit.

The energy from this rain of light came from the Road of Emperor, not the Demon Emperor's soul form. This Road of Emperor was originally meant to become a divine artifact; it wasn't strange that it could temper a battle spirit.

The rain of light slowly faded away and Lin Ming left the Demon Emperor's world of will. "Under such adversity, the Demon Emperor even managed to diverge his cultivation and practice Life Destruction again. Even then, he still reached such a boundary. He truly was a hero of his era. It's just a pity that he actually died on his road of martial arts. That is regretful!"

Lin Ming spoke out loud. But as for Demonshine, he remained silent. To be able to see his master one last time, he was filled with emotion.

Lin Ming had passed the Demon Emperor's will light without the need for battle, and he had even obtained information pertaining to the Eternal Demon Abyss and the Sea of Miracles.

He continued forwards and discovered that after the Demon Emperor's will light, there were only three will lights left.

But these three will lights – especially the last two – were much larger than the will lights before them. They were like raging torches with flames that reached the skies, illuminating the entire space around them.

And on the side of the road in front of Lin Ming, there was actually a tall stone tablet rising hundreds of feet into the air. Large characters written in the ancient common language of the Divine Realm were written with flourishing brush strokes. Each character was extremely large and they occupied most of the stone tablet.

"The masterless rivers of star in the endless cosmos, I shall rewrite the infinite history!"

Each of these words exuded an endless and potent energy, making all those who read them feel as if they had lost their minds. Even though Lin Ming had a silver battle spirit, he still found it hard to look directly at them.

Such assertive words and such dauntless brush strokes, could these words have been left behind by the Empyrean Primordius that the Demon Emperor had mentioned?

Lin Ming took a deep breath. As he watched those conflagrating will lights at the end of the Road of Emperor, he felt a stirring emotion in his heart. Could that final will light be a battle spirit left behind by Empyrean Primordius? If so, then just what degree of formidability could it have reached?

If Empyrean Primordius wanted to create his own Samsara Road, he should have also left a turning point for his own samsara!

Before the last and most vibrant will light, there were also two will lights in front of that one. Just who had left those behind?

……………

Outside the Road of Emperor, at the entrance to the Heavenly Cloud Skysplit Tower, four old men were milling around. They had black array flags in their hands as they were in the process of laying down a great array.

Every array flag surface was as dark as ink, filled with ghostly energy as if they contained countless sinister spirits and were refined with suffering souls from hell!

There was a total of 360 array flags in this set. As they were laid down, a terrifying and dreadful ghostly energy filled the skies. The entire nearby space was filled with the resentment of a million spirits and demonic flames lit up everywhere, making it so that no one alive could approach.

“Humph, this 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array is laid down with 360 array flags. Each array flag is equivalent to a peak low-grade heaven-step treasure, and the array disc I used to back up this entire array is a high-grade heaven-step treasure! I have spent an immeasurable amount of energy to lay down this array and even took abyssal flames to constantly refine it. Once this array formation is laid down, and with myself managing it, even a human late Divine Sea powerhouse would be lost within! For me to use all of this to deal with you, you can be proud of yourself even in hell!”

The Steppes Master maliciously grinned. The 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array was in truth a great defensive array. This was because it took far too much time to arrange. Because it required at least half a month of effort to form, it simply wasn’t able to be used for attack.

Usually, the 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array Formation was laid around the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple as protection. Even if the Eightfall War Emperor were to arrive, although it wouldn’t be able to last forever, it would still be able to persist long enough for the Steppes Master to run away.

This was the Steppes Master’s ultimate life preserving means. But now he had moved it over here, all for that one in a million chance that Lin Ming might manage to stumble through to the end of the Road of Emperor and become an unrivalled Emperor level powerhouse.

Now, with the 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array here, even if Lin Ming managed to become an Emperor level powerhouse he would still die. A newly crowned Emperor level powerhouse simply had too great a disparity with a late Divine Sea martial artist. Against this 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array, Lin Ming would have no ability to resist.

“Humph, you have at most a first stage Life Destruction cultivation and you actually dream that you can pass through the Road of Emperor? Even if you do complete it, your true combat strength will still only compare to the weakest of Peerless Emperor powerhouses. You are truly an eternally rare heaven-gifted talent. If you had hidden yourself and patiently waited 20 years before coming to find me, then perhaps I really would have been ruined by you. But you were blinded by your own vain arrogance and greed, thinking that you could enter the Road of Emperor to increase your strength, but the truth is that you have only brought about your own destruction! Since you want to die so much, then let me fulfill your wish!”

In a total of 16 days, the four old men finally finished arranging the 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array. Then they guarded the four directions of the array formation, each of them spitting out their source blood essence to activate it. At this moment, the entire 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array began to howl with sharp whistling sounds!

The four old men that had spat out their blood essence appeared a bit pale. This was their life’s blood essence, just how precious was that? Doing so would reduce their lifespan. All of this was done so that they could guarantee that Lin Ming would die. The Steppes Master had stopped at nothing, stooping to the most extreme measures to ensure absolute safety.

This was indeed his last chance to kill Lin Ming. He did not worry that Lin Ming had the ability to contend with him. He only feared that Lin Ming would be crafty and use some tricky methods to escape. If the Steppes Master allowed Lin Ming to escape this time then it would be impossible to ever catch him again.

After the great array formation was laid down, the Steppes Master personally guarded it, without leaving the area at all.

Like this, half a year passed, without the least bit of movement from the Road of Emperor.

However, the Blood Slaughter Steppes Master didn't lose any patience at all. The first time Lin Ming entered the Road of Emperor, he had stayed in it for seven months. This time in the Road of Emperor, he should stay for an even longer period. The Steppes Master personally guarded the area, waiting for that sudden moment when lightning struck and Lin Ming emerged.

To a Demon Emperor level powerhouse, a single round of closed door seclusion could last for several years or even dozens of years.

For the Steppes Master, waiting a few years was no problem at all.

Chapter 903 – The Goddess In Ice

Chapter 903 – The Goddess In Ice

…

…

…

Bang!

In the Road of Emperor's world of will, Lin Ming's will turned into a stream of light as he smashed into a golden statue. The violent impact caused his entire body to split apart!

"Break!"

Bolts of lightning, the power of fire, the power of space, and the Time Laws recklessly washed downwards, completely enveloping that golden statue!

Ka ka ka!

Cracks began appearing in the golden statue. Lin Ming had already exchanged over 600 moves with it, constantly barraging it and constantly breaking it apart. He exhausted every single one of his techniques before forcefully grinding that gold statue to nothing.

"It's finally over!" Lin Ming's shattered will form began joining back together. His mind was dizzy and his footsteps were muddled. It felt like the first time he had drawn his body inscription symbol and had overdrawn his soul force in the process.

The will light that had followed the Demon Emperor's one had stranded him here for a full half year!

During this half year, Lin Ming had been constantly fighting, carrying on a life or death battle with this golden battle spirit. This nameless Supreme Elder had clearly lived over 100,000 years ago. Before he died, his boundary was also much higher than the Demon Emperor's had been. If his complete will form had been here then Lin Ming simply wouldn't have had any ability to resist.

Lin Ming relied on his unyielding perseverance and tenacious will. After constantly breaking himself against that golden battle spirit and continuously polishing and tempering his battle spirit again and again, only then did he eliminate it!

And in the process of this battle, every time Lin Ming's will form was broken, his battle spirit gained more and more experience. During this half year, his battle spirit became more solid, more real, and increasingly sharp, as if it were faintly about to break through to the silver large success level.

Lin Ming's battle spirit was just like a treasure spear. The materials and array formation used to forge it were all top class of top class ingredients, but it simply hadn't been sharpened.

With a deep foundation the potential would be immense. But if it wasn't sharp enough then a battle spirit wouldn't be able to display its true strength. First he had to sharpen and whet his battle spirit, creating a keen edge. This would allow Lin Ming's battle spirit to quickly bloom in terrifying glory.

And in this world, the best place to temper a battle spirit was likely this Road of Emperor. It had been created by an Empyrean from the Divine Realm, and could even be refined to complete a divine artifact.

After the gold battle spirit shattered, it turned into pure energy that nourished Lin Ming's battle spirit. Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, the mist around the spear-shaped battle spirit became increasingly thick, as if it were condensing into droplets.

His battle spirit was now near the silver large success stage. He was only separated by a thin layer of film; he would break through at any moment.

And at this time, there were still two will lights left!

Lin Ming looked at the end of the Road of Emperor and let out a long breath. As he looked at the next will light, he saw that the flames were a deep blue color. Looking at this light, he discovered that it was easy to fall into an illusion when watching it and be trapped for eternity. It resembled the smoky waves of an endless sea. This will light contained an unblemished and hallowed energy. It was calm and profound, yet containing a deep power.

Lin Ming sat down in meditation, entering the ethereal martial intent to adjust himself to his best condition.

Then, he resolutely entered the will world of that ghostly blue fire.

This world of will was located at an unfathomably deep seabed. The dark blue seawater seemed as if it were carved from the purest gems. Exquisite small fish swam through the water, and Lin Ming knew that these fish were phenomena transformed from the purest will energy.

At the seabed, the sand looked like crystal clear pearls. There were fascinating and bewitching jade shells that were scattered over the ground, making the entire landscape seem like a dream.

And among this sand, there was a massive shard of chilling ice silently laying there. Lin Ming gazed at this ice shard and was suddenly shocked. Sealed within this shard of ice was a young veiled woman.

This young woman was curled into a round fetal position, grasping both of her knees. Her long and slender legs shined like clear crystal, and her beautiful face rested between her knees. Her long black hair hung down like an inky waterfall, covering up her body.

This young woman appeared exactly the same as the goddess from the Eternal Demon Abyss!

“If the penultimate will light contains the sealed will and spirit mark of the goddess, then is Empyrean Primordius sealed within the last will light?”

Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. These final two will lights were actually from Supreme Elders! It was impossible to imagine just what degree of formidability their will forms reached!

“Empyrean Primordius sealed away the goddess’ will form here. Did he think that after the goddess died, she could reincarnate through the Samsara Road? And in the Eternal Demon Abyss, there is also the Great Emperor’s heart that is sealed within the goddess. That heart is able to destroy all evil spirits and beings that dare move against the goddess’ corpse, and is even able to preserve her lifelike appearance after 100,000 years!”

All sorts of thoughts flashed through Lin Ming’s mind. He harbored a deep respect for this goddess that was deeply sleeping in this shard of ice. Within, it looked as if she had merely fallen asleep. Even her long eyelashes appeared as if they were gently trembling.

Sunlight spread through the deep blue seawater, illuminating the entire land with brilliant splendor. A faint silver sheen of light glinted off of the skin of that young woman, making her seem as beautiful as a fading dream.

“Senior?”

Lin Ming tried to communicate with the goddess’ will form but failed. His perception simply wasn’t able to penetrate through that shard of ice. Even so, he could feel a powerful will contained within the goddess’ body. This was not a gold battle spirit, but an existence that surpassed even that.

“Demonshine, what is the boundary above a gold battle spirit?” Lin Ming suddenly asked.

“That is the blue soul battle spirit. The battle spirit will become dim and ethereal like smoke, and it will return from gold back to its original color. There is no way I can see through this goddess’ boundary.” Demonshine helplessly spread his doggy paws.

Lin Ming’s mind stirred. If he could take out the goddess’ sealed spirit from this will light and then fuse it into her sleeping body within the 1000 mile forbidden zone, would the goddess then be resurrected?

Without a doubt, Empyrean Primordius made many preparations for the goddess’ rebirth. Could it be that he wished for a successor to revive her?

It could even be that Empyrean Primordius had left behind his life’s inheritances within the Eternal Demon Abyss and the Sea of Miracles, all in order for destined individuals to find it!

“Empyrean Primordius placed the goddess’ life on a higher level of importance than his own. I wonder just what this goddess was to him? Lover? Daughter?” Lin Ming shook his head. These two explanations were not necessarily true. An Empyrean had a seemingly limitless lifespan. What scenes or events would they not have experienced in their lives? Would they really be captivated to such an extent by something like a lover? As for a daughter, that didn’t seem as if it could be justified either. As long as a martial arts Supreme Elder desired, they could have tens of thousands or even millions of children in their long lives.

“If I can reach a high enough boundary on the road of martial artists, perhaps I really can defy the will of the heavens and change the fate of life, reviving the goddess. At that time, I will discover just what Empyrean Primordius’ Samsara Road is, and just what secrets are contained in the Eternal Demon Abyss.”

As Lin Ming thought like this, he left the goddess’ world of will. The goddess’ will form was completely different from all those he had seen. It did not attack him, nor was there any way he could communicate with it. Since there was nothing he could do, he could only step back.

But as Lin Ming left the world of will, he suddenly felt a wave of energy break into his body like a gushing tide. The battle spirit in his spiritual sea rapidly condensed, and the thick mist around it became increasingly solid at a breakneck pace. His battle spirit had instantly broken through to the large success silver level! And the flow of energy did not stop there. From the early large success silver level, it rapidly climbed to the peak of large success!

Chapter 904 – Reforming the Shattered Core

Chapter 904 – Reforming the Shattered Core

…

…

…

"Break large success silver… you damned brat, it seems you'll have the momentum to break into the gold battle spirit level before you reach the Divine Sea!" Demonshine said from within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, "There's also a final will light. How about we go take a look?"

Lin Ming nodded. If he was right then the last will light was the spirit mark left behind by Empyrean Primordius himself. Empyrean Primordius had wanted to create the Road to Samsara; it was impossible that he wouldn't leave behind a hope for his own revival.

As his will touched the last will light, Lin Ming arrived in a new world of will. Here, all he saw was chaos around him. Gray currents of chaos flooded the entire space, vast and endless. Besides that, there was nothing else. Lin Ming didn't even see Empyrean Primordius' spirit mark here.

"This is…"

"Is this… grandmist energy?" Demonshine was shocked. With his talent, it was naturally impossible for him to contact Source Law energy like grandmist energy. But with the knowledge that Empyrean Primordius had left behind this last will light and also with the gray currents in this chaos space, he could approximate just what this was.

Primordius was the same as chaos, and thus also the same as grandmist. Empyrean Primordius was the Empyrean of chaos, the Empyrean of grandmist!

"Grandmist energy!"

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. He naturally knew what grandmist energy was. The fables said that when the universe first formed, it had all started with nothingness, with nothing in space, the beginning of all. This was also the beginning of all energy. Matter had not yet developed, this was the absolute beginning!

After the absolute beginning, there was chaos. Yin and yang hadn't yet divided, the heavens and earth hadn't been created, and there was nothing in the universe but chaos origin energy. This natural origin energy was called grandmist energy.

Grandmist energy had once filled the entire boundless universe. But afterwards, this grandmist energy turned into the yin yang primal chaos, the energy of the sun and the moon, the five primal elements, and all of the various lifeforms that existed, causing that grandmist energy to be almost completely consumed. Now, a mere wisp of grandmist energy was something that approached the source of the Great Dao; its value could be imagined!

However, grandmist energy was something that was impossible for Lin Ming to refine at his current level. Even gathering just the tiniest speck of it was nothing more than a fantastical dream.

This grandmist energy seemed to have been refined by Empyrean Primordius and was also related to his Source Laws. It was not possible to gather this grandmist energy. Because there was far too much mass compressed into grandmist energy, it was similar to black holes in the universe. With so much material energy compressed to such a high degree, its weight was unimaginable.

The tiniest trace of grandmist energy could crush vast mountain ranges. A wisp of grandmist energy could use its own weight to slice apart stars.

Even if Lin Ming was able to move some grandmist energy into his spatial ring, his spatial ring would instantly disintegrate!

This was because the space couldn't withstand such a weight. A black hole could disintegrate all space because space couldn't withstand the pure condensed mass.

"Whelp, it's over, let's pack up and get out of here Lin Ming. These things are not something that you can obtain. Since Empyrean Primordius' Samsara Heavenly Dao failed, it's possible that he might have enemies. But, since he dares to leave these will lights behind and also this grandmist energy, there is naturally something that he is relying on. With your current ability, you certainly cannot gather this grandmist energy. Of course… I'm also guessing that Empyrean Primordius should have left his legacy here. If in the future, if you can inherit Empyrean Primordius' legacy and establish the Road to Samsara, you might even be able to obtain all of the inheritances that he left behind, and perhaps you may even be able to revive Empyrean Primordius and the goddess!"

Demonshine's speculations were reasonable. Lin Ming was lost in thought for a moment, and then with a sudden thought, a sharp light burst out from between his eyebrows. The spear-shaped battle spirit from his spiritual sea howled outwards!

"Lin Ming, you…" Demonshine was startled as he saw Lin Ming's spear-shaped battle spirit fly into the incomparably heavy grandmist energy, trembling as if it could shatter at any moment.

Since he was destined to not be able to receive this grandmist energy, Lin Ming planned on using it to temper his battle spirit.

A battle spirit was invisible and intangible; it was originally impossible to hone it with material matter. Normally, it would only be able to be tempered in the world of will where it would also grow. But, grandmist energy was different. In this universe, besides time and space, everything had been formed from grandmist energy. This included even battle spirits. Grandmist energy was the source of all things and also the source of all battle spirits, thus it could also be used to temper a battle spirit.

A battle spirit was known as immortal and indestructible. But, to use the star-crushing grandmist energy to whet it would actually be filled with layers of dangers. Lin Ming didn't dare to be too bold or reckless. He moved his battle spirit to the very edge of the wandering grandmist energy to absorb just the tiniest bit of it. Even so, that thin and sheer grandmist energy caused Lin Ming's battle spirit to violently tremble as if it would shatter at any moment. Lin Ming paled, his forehead wet with sweat. Facing such an immense pressure, it was hard it withstand it even though his will was tough.

"You madman… if you use grandmist energy to temper your battle spirit, just what degree of formidability will it reach?" Demonshine couldn't imagine it. This was the final lamp on the road of will lights. There had never been anyone who had ever made it this far before. The lights themselves were not a test, but rather a great lucky chance!

Lin Ming sat on the periphery of the grandmist energy. He was impressively prepared to start cultivating here.

Although he couldn't gather the grandmist energy, comprehending the Source Laws here would be far faster. "Demonshine, I will close up here and also break through the fourth stage of Life Destruction. I'll need you to be my protector."

Although he asked Demonshine to be his protector, the truth was that he didn't need a protector. In the Road of Emperor, there would be absolute safety.

Like this, Lin Ming went into seclusion. He tempered his battle spirit, meditated on the grandmist energy, and prepared to break through to the next boundary!

There were enough spirit medicines in his spatial ring as well as top grade spirit essence stones. As long as he didn't encounter a bottleneck, he would be able to continue cultivating.

Time slowly passed. From spring to winter, flowers bloomed and withered.

Like this, another half year passed. Lin Ming had already stayed in the Road of Emperor for over a full year of time. In addition to training at the Sky Spill Continent, Lin Ming had continuously cultivated for two entire years. He was now 25 years old.

In these two years, his martial arts cultivation passed the third stage of Life Destruction and presently he was preparing to attack the fourth stage of Life Destruction.

A hazy cloud of flesh and blood was shrouded in the chaos space. Floating within this flesh and blood was actually a dark crystal nucleus. This was Lin Ming's Revolving Core.

The most perfect path to cross Life Destruction was divided into nine stages. The first three stages rebuilt the mortal body, the second three stages shattered and recast the Revolving Core, and the last three stages of Life Destruction reformed the soul.

From the third stage of Life Destruction to the fourth stage of Life Destruction, that was to shatter the Revolving Core and then reform it. Although it wasn't a large boundary, it was actually greater than a small boundary.

Lin Ming had gathered strength for an entire half year for this reason. He had consumed two top grade spirit essence stones as well as a number of heavenly materials, all in order to accumulate the required origin energy to finally attack the fourth stage of Life Destruction.

Now, his body had already exploded into a fog of blood and flesh, but his black crystal nucleus still hadn't shattered. This was Lin Ming's Black Hole Revolving Core. To have a Black Hole Revolving Core meant that one's foundation had reached the limit of solidity, and the degree of highly compressed energy within had also reached the limit. Compared to an ordinary Revolving Core crystal nucleus, it was far more durable!

If someone managed to kill Lin Ming now and obtain his Revolving Core crystal nucleus, then this Revolving Core itself would be the most precious of treasures. It could be used to forge a top grade pill furnace.

Breaking into the fourth stage of Life Destruction from the third stage of Life Destruction was several times more difficult than breaking into the third stage of Life Destruction from the second stage of Life Destruction. This was particularly true for Lin Ming. The truth was that he was already able to shatter his Revolving Core, but to break it down even more thoroughly was much more difficult. There were many Divine Realm talents that after reaching the Black Hole Revolving Core boundary would need an Elder to assist them in breaking through to the fourth stage of Life Destruction.

Lin Ming naturally didn't have such luxurious treatment. His thoughts moved and his battle spirit actually moved a trace of grandmist energy above his Revolving Core!

Using this incomparably heavy grandmist energy that could crush even stars, he would crush his Revolving Core!

This was an insane procedure. But, Lin Ming didn't do this randomly or recklessly. He estimated that since grandmist energy was the source of all life and matter then it shouldn't conflict with any other type of material energy. If that were true then it shouldn't conflict with the energy in the Revolving Core crystal nucleus either.

At the same time, grandmist energy contained a nearly immeasurable amount of mass, similar to a black hole. And, Lin Ming's Revolving Core crystal nucleus was also similar to a black hole. Both of them shared extremely similar aspects of Laws.

To use grandmist energy to drive the shattering and reforming of the Revolving Core was a risk-filled method, But, it was also a great lucky chance. After reforming his Revolving Core with grandmist energy, that would far more thoroughly temper Lin Ming's Black Hole Revolving Core, making it approach a true energy black hole.

Kacha!

Cracks began to appear on the Revolving Core. Then, it completely shattered. A wisp of grandmist energy followed in, changing the circulating of energy within. The grandmist energy did not come into conflict with the highly compressed power of thunder and fire within the Revolving Core.

The Chaos Laws were undoubtedly much stronger than the Laws of the five elements. This was because chaos gave birth to all things. First there was time, space, and chaos. Then, the five elements came later. This was also the reason why Space and Time Laws also dominated the majority of other Laws.

Using grandmist energy to shatter and reform a Revolving Core was a sort of lucky chance that even geniuses from the Divine Realm wouldn't have access to.

Time slowly passed. One month, two months, three months…

When Lin Ming had crossed the first three stages of Life Destruction, he only needed several days for each stage. But for the fourth stage of Life Destruction, he had used an entire three months. The energy from Lin Ming's Revolving Core crystal nucleus experienced countless incredible changes after interacting with the grandmist energy.

Finally, after three months of time, a vast and ancient aura overflowed into the world. Lin Ming's shattered Revolving Core energy began to form a cyclone together with the grandmist energy.

The cyclone spun around and around as it began to compress together, emitting bursts of brilliant light and heat!

This sort of light and this sort of heat was actually blue in color. Its temperature was comparable to the center of a sun, even though it was just a tiny speck. The light continued to radiate for several hours. The light changed colors several times, and the volume would constantly expand, reaching a critical point before suddenly collapsing, slowing, and then inflating once again!

With an explosive banging sound, Demonshine, who had been standing guard, jumped up in shock. A flaming light shot outwards, blazing and blinding, able to even kill all other senses. Demonshine was only a soul form; all he could do was defend his soul source at that moment. He couldn't see what happened to Lin Ming, nor could he help.

After several quarter hours of time passed, Demonshine's senses finally began filtering back. As he opened both of his eyes, he could see that right in front of him was a walnut-sized Revolving Core crystal nucleus, its entire body jet black like liquid ink. After several breaths of time it vanished into the void, twisting all nearby light so that one couldn't see it.

As Demonshine was dumbfounded, a vigorous and familiar voice sounded in his mind.

“Demonshine, my cultivation has reached large success. It’s time to leave!”

Chapter 905 – Departure, the Prime Emperor Force Field

Chapter 905 – Departure, the Prime Emperor Force Field

…

…

…

"You want to leave? Lin Ming, you don't want to walk the road of emperor stone tablets?"

Demonshine was startled. Lin Ming still hadn't walked down the road of emperor stone tablets. That road seemed to be easier to walk down than the road of will lights. Those who had passed the Road of Emperor had likely taken this road.

But Lin Ming had chosen differently, remaining on the road of will lights until he reached the very end. If he wanted to, he could also return and walk down the road of emperor stone tablets. Once he reached the end of both roads, Lin Ming's cultivation would rise once again. Even Demonshine couldn't imagine what it would be like at that time.

"Let's go, I'm not in a hurry. I'll enter the road of emperor stone tablets next time to enlighten myself. I've already been training for two years and three months straight, and I've realized far too many things. I won't be able to process all of this without fighting. If I continue to further enlighten myself then it won't be good if my mind can't digest all of it!"

As Lin Ming spoke, Demonshine also nodded. The life of a martial artist was to struggle and fight. Theoretically speaking, if a martial artist had enough pills, top grade spirit essence stones, a solid enough cultivation foundation, no bottlenecks, and even the guidance of famed masters, then they could always continue training.

But even in the Divine Realm's super Holy Lands, there had never been a genius who had gone into seclusion during the Xiantian realm or Revolving Core realm and had closed up and trained straight to the Divine Sea in a single go.

If martial artists were compared to the generals and commanders of the mortal world, then Laws, comprehensions, and training were just like military tactics and true battle was actual battlefield combat. If one never engaged in a true battle in real life then all they would be was an armchair general. No matter how much they comprehended or how great their teachers were, all of that would be useless. That was because they would overthink the situation, thinking themselves infallible and invincible, straying off of the correct path and falling into disaster.

There were many armchair generals that wouldn't lose in debates, but would be defeated on the battlefield. Those that cultivated the martial path were the same.

"Good, your cultivation has already continued for two years and three months. You haven't cultivated for that long before. Coming back to the road of emperor stone tablets in another year or two wouldn't be a bad idea."

"Mm, not just the road of emperor stone tablets, but there is also the last will light on the road of will lights. I will come again to visit the chaos world that Empyrean Primordius created. That is truly a miraculous place. The harvests that I obtained there cannot be described in words!"

Lin Ming and Demonshine's exchanges had all been between their consciousnesses. Lin Ming hadn't yet formed his physical form. The Revolving Core crystal nucleus still floated in the air, staying hidden at some times and appearing at other times. Demonshine didn't know just what was happening, but Lin Ming was actually aware that in this vast universe there was a phenomenon known as a black hole, a celestial body similar to grandmist energy. The truth was that a black hole wasn't black, but rather 'invisible'. A black hole had the ability to swallow all matter and all energy. Even a Divine Realm Holy Lord would perish if they accidently strayed into it. If light were projected inside, that light would also be swallowed up. And because its force field was too powerful, it would cause all light passing around it to distort. Anything hiding in that distorted light would be invisible.

A martial artist could use a similar Law of Space Distortion to hide. But, a black hole was a far higher level and a more sophisticated method. It was nearly impossible to detect with one's perception because one's perception was also a type of energy. Even something like perception could be sucked up by a black hole and lost forever.

Lin Ming knew all of this because he had perceived it from meditating in the chaos space. A black hole simultaneously involved high level Laws of Chaos, Space, and Time. When Lin Ming first heard Old Man Good Fortune describe the different levels of Space Laws, there had been 10 of them: Space Distortion, Heaven's Divide, Dimensional Slash, Space Disruption, Spatial Genesis, Space Storm, Black Hole Vortex, Tenth Space Dimension, World Destruction, and World Creation.

The Black Hole Laws occupied the area of the seventh level Concept of Space, Black Hole Vortex!

This was a seventh level Law, a height that Lin Ming could not see even if he wanted to. He had only managed to find some clues of it in the chaos space.

In the three month process where he had shattered and reformed his Revolving Core, Lin Ming's perception had entered into a unique detached state. It was like he stood at the same precipice as a Divine Realm Supreme Elder, able to see many things that he could never have imagined before. This even included part of the ancient natural changes of the universe.

This also included the formation of black holes! Although this sort of thing couldn't directly improve his strength, it was still able to widen Lin Ming's horizons. It was an incomparably rare experience for his soul and mind that would have an inestimable use when he tried to perceive the source of the Great Dao in the future. It could even be said that Lin Ming's current harvests from the chaos space surpassed any harvests and lucky chances he obtained from precious mystic realms, including Timeworn Phoenix City and even the Temple of Marvels.

The other harvests were mostly obtaining heavenly materials that shortened Lin Ming's cultivation time. If he had enough time then he would have been able to make up for all of that. It was only the experience in the chaos space that had essentially changed Lin Ming's thinking.

When Lin Ming had used the grandmist energy to reform the Black Hole Revolving Core, the flaming bright Revolving Core crystal nucleus had formed a cyclone of energy that emitted a sun-like light and heat. It had expanded and collapsed again and again as it formed the Black Hole Revolving Core crystal nucleus, simulating the natural formation of black holes in the universe.

A black hole was formed from a cyclone of matter, slowly condensing into a large celestial body. Then, it would burn, igniting all elements and becoming a star. Over an immeasurable amount of time, this star would slowly burn out until the moment it finally collapsed under its own gravity, when it would form a black hole.

If Lin Ming hadn't seen this process then he simply wouldn't have been able to condense his Revolving Core crystal nucleus to such a degree where it would produce phenomena similar to a true black hole. It was even able to swallow light for a certain amount of time and become 'invisible'.

Through all the myriad Laws, a human body could be described as its own small universe. All changes that governed the stars in the universe could also be reflected in the human body. Lin Ming couldn't help but sigh about just how incredible the human form and universe were, and how they were all connected together.

Of course, Lin Ming's current Revolving Core crystal nucleus could in truth only be counted as a tiny miniature energy black hole. The difference from a true black hole couldn't even be described with the comparison of clouds and mud. If he could truly form a black hole that absorbed both matter and energy, then that really would be ridiculous. At that time, if someone killed Lin Ming, took out his Revolving Core crystal nucleus and casually tossed it into a star, then that Revolving Core crystal nucleus would swallow all of the matter within that star until that star was destroyed!

That would truly be collapsing moons and sinking stars!

"Let's go!"

As Lin Ming's voice faded, he had already turned into countless particles that began to form a body wit the Revolving Core crystal nucleus as the center. In the rapidly shaping storm of energy, the skeleton formed, then muscles, skin, facial features, and finally hair.

Everything had been restored to its previous state!

Compared to when he passed the third stage of Life Destruction, Lin Ming's appearance hadn't changed too much. It was only that his temperament was more restrained and it was impossible to detect any terrifying energy exuding from him. But, if one carefully probed with their perception, one could see that there seemed to be another universe sealed within his body, profound and endless!

At this time, Lin Ming resembled a young and elegant scholar. But, there was actually a great dragon slumbering within his body. Once it awoke, the heavens and earth would tremble!

Shua!

At the end of the road of will lights, there was a dark portal. At the center of this portal, an invisible energy had gathered together, forming a terrifying force field storm that was able to suppress all divine senses, the soul, and perception. As Demonshine looked at this portal, he was so scared that he wanted to flee. He didn't doubt that if he passed through this portal, he would surely die!

"Did someone mess up here or something? Who would actually dare to cross this portal… I fear I will perish even if I stay in your spiritual sea!"

As Lin Ming saw this, he smiled. He soothingly said, "This is the final reward from the Road of Emperor – the Prime Emperor Force Field!"

Empyrean Primordius was truly an Empyrean worthy of respect. Not only had he refined the Road of Emperor to such a degree, but Lin Ming was even able to take this force field as a reward!

....

Heavenly Cloud Skysplit Tower.

Outside the Road of Emperor, over a dozen people were gathered, all of them bowing or saluting.

Even the Steppes Master had restrained his usually imperious and domineering aura. There was even the slightest bit of respect in his demeanor. There were not many people in the entire Holy Demon Continent that could have the Steppes Master act this way. This was because after withdrawing into the Blood Slaughter Steppes, there was simply nothing anyone could do to him here.

As for those that could enter the Blood Slaughter Steppes, none of them could defeat him. And those that could defeat him couldn't enter the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

But there were always exceptions. For instance, the Eightfall War Emperor, or this person currently in front of him.

In front of the Blood Slaughter Steppes' Steppes Master, there were four amazingly beautiful Fey women. All of them had a cultivation at the early Revolving Core realm, and their figures were tall and buxom, all of them seeming as if they were carved from the same mold. The four of them were actually quadruplets. For quadruplets to all manage to enter the early Revolving Core realm, that was an extremely rare occurrence.

However, if an Emperor level powerhouse were to diligently raise them, then it wouldn't be too difficult as long as their talent wasn't too poor. All four women were dressed in the thinnest strands of silk, revealing the abundant spring scenery of their bodies. They lifted a warm covered sedan in their hands. A maid standing near the sedan slowly lifted up a thick curtain, revealing a five foot tall elderly Imp.

This old Imp grasped onto a peach walking stick as he slowly stepped down from the sedan. He looked like an old man on the verge of death, but the Steppes Master didn't dare to show him the least bit of contempt. This was because this old Imp had also formed a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon and he had once held the title of Steppes Master!

This elderly Imp ruled over the Blood Slaughter Steppes for almost 2000 years. Afterwards, he continually failed to make a breakthrough in his boundary, thus he left the Blood Slaughter Steppes to seek his own lucky chances and close up in cultivation.

Although he had less than 1000 years of life left, and his strength had already started to wane, his cultivation had still reached a three-star Demon Emperor. That was equal to the late Divine Sea, but less than a seventh stage Life Destruction late Divine Sea master. Even so, a starving camel was still larger than a horse, and the Imp race also excelled at soul attacks. The Imp race were naturally gifted in the aspect of soul force and will; both of those were things that didn't weaken with age. Thus in a true battle, the current Steppes Master had to admit that he wouldn't be a match for the previous Steppes Master.

A year after Lin Ming officially entered the Road of Emperor, the Steppes Master began to feel a faint foreboding sense in his heart. Even with the 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array laid down and himself personally assuming command, he still didn't feel relieved. There was always this niggling feeling at the back of his mind that he was missing something. He never thought that he wouldn't be able to kill Lin Ming, he only feared that Lin Ming would somehow manage to escape. If Lin Ming escaped, then the Steppes Master would truly lose his mind.

Beside the Eightfall War Emperor, there were still several twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Emperor level powerhouses. They were all powerhouses of the Imp, Giant Demon, and Goliath races. But, these individuals had terrifying statuses and nearly all of them had returned to their own lands. In fact, it was unknown whether many of them were still alive or not. The Steppes Master had paid a great price in order to move this old Imp in front of him.

All of this was to absolutely guarantee that Lin Ming wouldn't escape!

With the 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array, the old Imp and himself, the Steppes Master believed that against such a powerful lineup, no matter how talented Lin Ming was, there was no way he could possibly escape. This was where he would die!

Chapter 906 – If You Are Chaos, Then What Am I?

Chapter 906 – If You Are Chaos, Then What Am I?

…

…

…

The Steppes Master didn't think that Lin Ming was an idiot. Since he dared to enter under the eyes of the public, he naturally had to have some secret method he was relying on to escape. The Steppes Master invited the old Imp here to add an unknown variable to the mix. If Lin Ming didn't anticipate this new variable then he would die in a miserable manner.

"Lin Ming? Hehe, brat Luosha, you really are becoming more and more pathetic. A mere lowly 25 year old Life Destruction human junior actually caused you to put on such a show, you even brought out the 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array, called me over and also decided to personally garrison this area. To prepare such a great battle formation, don't you think that will make the other Holy Lands laugh at our Blood Slaughter Steppes?"

The old Imp directly called the Steppes Master 'brat Luosha', moreover his words were filled with an admonishing rebuke, causing all of the nearby supervisory deacons of the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple to feel a chill crawl up their spines. They didn't say half a word for fear that Luosha would grow angry.

But, they never imagined that not only would Luosha not rise up in rage, he would instead begin to patiently explain the situation. In the past, the reason that Luosha was able to become a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon was undoubtedly his talent and struggling, but he also had this old Imp supporting him from behind.

Not every Emperor level powerhouse would have Emperor level powerhouse appear amongst their descendants. This was the old Imp's failure. Although he was a lustful individual who fathered countless children, all of his descendants so far had been wasteful good for nothings. He could only pass on the position of Steppes Master to something else. Otherwise, if he were to pass the position to his descendants, they wouldn't have been able to maintain the status quo and would eventually have been exterminated.

Thus, Luosha had always been respectful to the old Imp. Even being reprimanded a bit wasn't too big a deal.

"You don't know just how terrifying Lin Ming's talent is. He is a genius that far surpasses anything the Holy Demon Continent has seen so far, and his origin is extremely strange too. My most talented and extraordinary son died under his hands, and before I was able to react, he had managed to escape the Blood Slaughter Steppes. At that time, his cultivation was only at the early Revolving Core, but he still managed to face off against an encirclement of three-star Demon King level High Lords and actually killed most of them off. Then, he became a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon and managed to escape. Such a cunning child definitely has some sort of life preserving method. And after he entered the Road of Emperor, his strength must have risen once again. I'm not scared that he can threaten me, but what I fear is that he will use some strange method to escape from here. That is why I asked Senior to come here and use a soul attack to lock down his spiritual sea, so that he can't do anything at all!"

After suffering a loss, the Steppes Master had learnt from his mistakes; he wouldn't underestimate Lin Ming again. But, the old Imp hadn't encountered Lin Ming before. No matter how others described Lin Ming, he couldn't believe that a mere Life Destruction boy could set off any type of unmanageable ruckus. Wouldn't that be the same as admitting that a 7000-8000 year old master like himself was inferior to a smelly little baby boy?

"A little 25 year boy without any hair yet, this old man has already crossed longer bridges than all the roads he has travelled combined. Since you had me come out of seclusion this time, let me take a look as to just what a super hero this boy is. Once you capture him, I will suck out his soul and refine him. I will see just what lucky chances he has experienced and what secrets he has on him!

“This kind of talent must inevitably have some sort of amazing destiny on their body as well as a massive number of treasures. To me, he is nothing but a little boy running towards me bearing gifts. I will show him just how great the disparity is between a three-star Demon Emperor and a low stage Life Destruction martial artist.”

The old Imp disdainfully said. Of course, no matter how much contempt was in his voice, he still entered the 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring array and began meditating, waiting for the moment Lin Ming emerged to strike him.

And as is the heavens were planning to test his own haughty rhetoric, on the third day after he arrived at Heavenly Cloud Tower, at the exit of the Road of Emperor, the skies above the blood altar began to fluctuate.

“Hehe, this boy has finally decided to come out. One year and three months. I want to see just how much he’s grown in there!”

Bang bang bang!

The crimson blood altar’s trembling became increasingly intense. Even the connected Heavenly Cloud Tower began to shake. Above the crimson blood altar, a black vortex appeared out of thin air, and a powerful aura suddenly flowed out from it, causing all of the High Lords and supervisory deacons present to pale. If it wasn’t for there being two Emperor level powerhouses standing here, they would have already turned around and fled.

The old Imp’s smile froze on his face. Mm? Did that boy actually manage to pass the Road of Emperor?

Just as this thought flashed through his mind in that split-second, the black vortex suddenly folded in on itself, vanishing out of sight. A white-clothed youth flew out at that moment, floating high above the crimson blood altar. After two years and three months, his long hair was hanging down to his waist.

“Lin Ming!”

As Lin Ming suddenly appeared, Steppes Master Luosha's eyes began to burn with a blazing hatred.

As the Steppes Master, he certainly hoped that he could pass the position on to his own descendants. But, Lin Ming had killed his most outstanding son – the Polaris Tower Master. And for him to raise another descendant that was capable of reaching the Demon Emperor realm, wasn't that easier said than done?

"10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring array formation, rise!"

With a loud shout from the Steppes Master, 360 array flags from all over began to violently tremble. Lin Ming then discovered that the Road of Emperor's crimson blood altar had been surrounded by a gray array formation.

Wu wu wu –

10,000 ghosts cried out. Countless ghosts and resentful spirits filled this space. Deathly energy blocked off all!

"Senior!"

"I got it. Humph, a fourth stage Life Destruction cultivation. Even if you had the strength of an early Divine Sea master, that wouldn't matter either." The old Imp's robes began to rise without wind around him. Behind him, a massive six-armed ancient demon spirit phantom appeared. This ancient demon spirit had three horns that pointed forwards, its face was vicious and its teeth were blue. Each of its six claws held a magic tool. There was a battle drum, a bronze bell, beads, an iron needle, a hammer, and an ancient mirror.

These six weapons were not common weapons; it was extremely strange. And around this six-armed ancient demon spirit, there were countless lives. There were humans, devils, Fey, and all sorts of vicious beasts, each and every one of them kneeling in worship, awe and reverence on their faces.

Even the surrounding High Lords, Tower Masters, and supervisory deacons couldn't withstand the pressure of this six-armed ancient demon spirit. They were forced to kneel on one knee. The force field surrounding them was like a spiritual storm; it was too terrifying!

"High Chaos Devil Arts! Senior, you have successfully cultivated the life incarnation of the High Chaos Devil Arts?" The Steppes Master was shocked. This was no trivial matter. To the Imp race, this was one of their highest supernatural divine powers. One had to have a soul force and will that reached the highest limits. Once one successfully cultivated this technique, they could rely on this six-armed ancient demon spirit to shatter the enemy's spiritual sea. The power of this attack was endless!

"No wonder Senior is so confident – it's because you've already cultivated the life incarnation boundary of the High Chaos Devil Arts. Once the incarnation appears, not even immortals will remain!" The Steppes Master's confidence sharply rose. Just this life incarnation should be more than enough.

"Junior, you should be honored to die under the life incarnation of my High Chaos Devil Arts!" the old Imp cackled like a demented madman and the ancient demon spirit behind him suddenly rushed forwards! "I think that your soul force isn't too bad. Be a good little boy and serve as the food for my High Chaos Devil Arts' life incarnation. Eating you should be quite nourishing!"

The chaos demon spirit wielded all six weapons at the same time. The copper bell rang with a deafening sound, the battle drum beat to an overwhelming tempo. A demonic melody came crashing down from above, onto Lin Ming.

"Chaos demon spirit?" Lin Ming's lips curved in a taunting smile. "I just returned from the chaos space, and even after eight months there, I only dared to take a trivial amount of grandmist energy to temper my body. Since when has the idea of chaos become so cheap? A mere little ghost spirit actually dares to call itself chaos? If you are chaos, then what am I?"

As Lin Ming spoke, the spear-shaped battle spirit in his spiritual sea shot out, howling into the wind!

After being tempered for half a year in the chaos space, Lin Ming's battle spirit had reached the peak of silver large success. But, its power was actually not limited to just this!

Woosh!

The originally silver white spear-shaped battle spirit had taken on a silver gray color after being tempered in the grandmist energy. Although it seemed simple and light, it was actually incomparably heavy.

A wisp of grandmist energy was able to demolish stars. The chaos world that Empyrean Primordius built was an extremely stable space; it was certainly able to seal grandmist energy within it.

But how could the space of the lower realms' boundless universe withstand such a power? Especially in the full onslaught of the battle spirit; wherever it went, space began to collapse. Massive space fragments could not withstand the force of the grandmist energy and directly shattered to pieces!

This caused the supervisory deacons and tower masters to be panic-stricken. They had seen attacks that were able to break space, but to rely on just a battle spirit to shatter space? Was that even possible? A battle spirit was the manifestation of will, a virtual and intangible thing. In other words, it was equivalent to Lin Ming's thoughts alone being able to shatter space!

"What!? Is that a perfect bronze battle spirit… no, that is a silver level battle spirit!?!?"

The old Imp's eyes suddenly turned as round as twin moons. This was the first time he had ever seen such a silver gray battle spirit! A bronze battle spirit was a greenish gray color, but a silver battle spirit was said to be silver white. He had never heard of a battle spirit situated in between both colors that was a silver gray. And most importantly, just how was Lin Ming's battle spirit able to break apart space?

The spear-shaped battle spirit's attack was too fast. Although the old Imp realized that something was wrong, he still didn't have enough time to respond. With an explosive ‘kacha’ sound, the spear-shaped battle spirit collided with the six-armed ancient demon spirit, causing that demon spirit to crack apart like glass!

Countless fragments of energy scattered downwards like flower petals. A large portion of these fragments were drawn towards the spear-shaped battle spirit!

Grandmist energy was amazingly dense. And the denser an object was, the greater gravity there was. This battle spirit was in some ways similar to a black hole.

Lin Ming’s spear-shaped battle spirit directly sucked in a small part of this old Imp’s will energy and smashed it apart.

It was naturally impossible to absorb others’ will energy, but using it as nourishment was not a problem. For instance, while it was impossible to turn a tiger’s strength into one’s own, it was still possible to cook the tiger into bone soup to feed the body.

Puff!

The six-armed ancient demon spirit was connected to the old Imp’s spiritual sea. As the demon spirit was suddenly shattered by Lin Ming, the old Imp vomited out a mouthful of blood, his face whiter than paper!

Lin Ming’s strike was the same as breaking apart the supernatural powers that the old Imp had cultivated arduously for such a long time! At the same time, it greatly damaged his soul and will, causing a massive amount of mist to disperse from the perfect bronze battle spirit in his spiritual sea. The light of that old Imp’s battle spirit dimmed; it had forcefully degenerated to the bronze small success level!

For his battle spirit to suddenly drop two small boundaries, his soul force to shatter, and countless cracks to appear in his spiritual sea, the old Imp found this hard to believe as he saw all this happen!

In fact, if it were a late Divine Sea Giant Demon powerhouse who had come, they wouldn’t have been reduced to such a miserable state by Lin Ming. But, the main problem was that

Imp martial artists all specialized in will and soul force. To encounter Lin Ming and engage him in a battle of soul and will was the same as running into the end of a spear. This could only be described by two words...

Courting death!

Chapter 907 – Three Force Fields Superimposed

Chapter 907 – Three Force Fields Superimposed

…

…

…

"You… you…"

The old Imp was paler than death and both of his eyes were bloodshot red. Behind him, everyone else – including even the Steppes Master – were left dumbfounded.

This old Imp had a three-star Demon Emperor cultivation. In the entire Holy Demon Continent, his strength belonged to the upper echelon, and in terms of soul attacks, the Imp race far surpassed all others. But even in this case, the old Imp's chaos demon spirit life incarnation was actually crushed by Lin Ming's battle spirit in a single exchange!

The Steppes Master was stunned for a moment before suddenly recovering. He threw out the array disc in his hands, "10,000 ghosts kill together, Crimson Blood Extermination!"

Hu hu hu – !

Countless grieving spirits shot towards Lin Ming. At the same time, the Steppes Master extracted a war lance from his spatial ring. As this lance appeared, countless blood lights appeared in the air like innumerable fireworks setting off at once. With the sound of billowing thunder, he stabbed at Lin Ming!

For a time, blood fog filled the skies!

This strike contained the infinite resentment of the 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array Formation. It could be said to be the absolute advantage of location!

The Steppes Master was only a two-star Demon Emperor; he was inferior to the old Imp in terms of strength. But, with the might of the 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array supporting his attacks, the power of this strike could actually compare with that of a three-star Demon Emperor to a certain extent.

Most importantly, this was a physical and energy attack, not a soul force and will attack. It would not be suppressed by Lin Ming's battle spirit.

In other words, for Lin Ming to face the Steppes Master's attack was much more difficult than facing the old Imp's chaos demon spirit. After all, he was only at the fourth stage of Life Destruction – this was a disadvantage that was difficult to make up for.

As this monstrous spear that filled the air with a blood fog thrust at Lin Ming, behind him, a crimson lotus began to bloom. The traces of red lights formed a divine red lotus that began to slowly bloom.

This red lotus seemed to contain the power of the Great Dao's Laws. At the same time, it contained an indescribable sense of suppression, as if the center of the lotus passed straight into the depths of hell.

As the red lotus appeared, even a faint red mist appeared around it, as if it had become a completely different world. It was an unfathomable feeling that contained the breath of the Great Dao itself. One flower, one world; one petal, one divine god!

The last portion of the Heavenly Demon martial intent – the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower!

As the red lotus appeared, it was like another world of Laws appeared around Lin Ming. All Laws, all principles, and even all energy became difficult to use! It was like the Laws of Time and Space were completely controlled here. The red lotus was the master of this space. A divine god – that was the Prime Emperor!

When Lin Ming truly comprehended the Prime Emperor martial intent, he discovered that his previous speculations that the Prime Emperor martial intent was aimed at the world of will had been partially wrong. The Prime Emperor martial intent was in truth the formation of a side world. Whether it was the physical world or the world of will, both of them were pieces included in the Prime Emperor martial intent.

In truth, the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower's essence was the grandmist chaos space before all matter and energy had been formed. Before yin and yang had divided, before the five main elements had come into reality, everything in the universe had been in the form of grandmist energy. There wasn't even heaven and earth origin energy or true essence. Here, the Laws of Metal, Wood, Water, Earth, Fire, Wind, Thunder, the Concepts of Life and Death, the Concept of Vibration, the Concept of Starlight, all martial skills, battle spirits, divine souls, everything lost their function in the presence of this grandmist chaos space.

Of course, the premise of all this was that Lin Ming was strong enough so that the enemy couldn't break through this grandmist space. Otherwise, none of that would matter.

In the legends, when Empyrean Primordius summoned the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower, he could transform this entire part of the boundless universe into grandmist space, reproducing the true scene of when the universe first formed. After a long period of refining, all matter and energy within the grandmist space could also be reduced into grandmist energy. This was a boundary that Lin Ming couldn't even fathom.

But as for Lin Ming's Prime Emperor martial intent, he could only cover 100 feet of space around him. Although this was a mere 100 feet, if the Steppes Master were to rush into this space, he would find it endless and infinite!

"What is this!?"

The Steppes Master's eyes widened. He suddenly felt as if all the heaven and earth origin energy around him had been sucked out and could no longer be used. At the same time, the power of blood began rapidly fading from his spear. Before his attack had even reached Lin Ming, it had weakened by over 50%.

The power of blood was also the Concept of Blood; it was a branch of the Concept of Life. In the chaos space when the universe was just forming, the heavens and earth hadn't even been formed yet, so how could there possibly have been life?

If Lin Ming's boundary were to increase some more, he could absolutely cause the Steppes Master's attacks to vanish. At that point, he wouldn't even need to fight. Once the Steppes Master entered into his side world, he would lose all combat strength, allowing Lin Ming to freely slaughter him.

Peng peng peng!

With a thought from Lin Ming, all of the grieving spirits burst apart in the space covered by the Prime Emperor Flower Lotus, turning into nihility. If there was no life, then how could there possibly be spirits?

In the moment that the Steppes Master reached Lin Ming, Lin Ming also attacked. His strength was not weakened by the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower. This was because he was the master of this side world. To a certain degree, he had refined grandmist energy and had touched upon the Chaos Laws.

A halberd thrust out and a halberd light violently swept forwards. A silver gray spear-shaped battle spirit fused with the halberd, turning the entire Great Desolate Blood Halberd a silver gray color from its original blood red. Its weight became far more terrifying and its attack power rose by a large degree.

After being tempered in grandmist energy, Lin Ming's battle spirit had gradually transformed from a purely abstract existence and had even taken on some tangible material properties.

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd collided with the Steppes Master's war lance!

There was no fancy explosion. Silver gray light shot out into the air, forming lights like swirling galaxies that came crashing down. An overwhelming momentum followed, magnificent and blinding. A devastating and ruinous energy scattered in all directions as if it would tear apart all.

But compared to this light, the Steppes Master's blood light was much weaker. It melted like pure snow underneath the blazing summer sun and then was completely submerged by Lin Ming's halberd light.

In that moment, all sound in the world seemed to be swallowed up. There was no medium for sound to travel in the grandmist space, thus all sounds vanished into it. There was nothing left but a terrifying energy that rolled up into a storm, sweeping up everyone watching. If this weren't the Skysplit Tower, but rather an ordinary structure, then the entire place would have been reduced to powder already.

The Steppes Master painfully coughed and flew backwards, directly ejected out of the grandmist space. With a faint 'ka ka ka' sound, cracks appeared in the war lance he held.

A high-grade heaven-step treasure had broken apart like this!

As the Steppes Master looked at his shattered weapon, he felt incredulous. A single attack had ruined his treasure weapon!

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd was a Saint artifact rank weapon to begin with; it was far superior to the Steppes Master's own treasure weapon. With Lin Ming's battle spirit that had been tempered by grandmist energy fused into the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, it had become incomparably sharp. For it to destroy a treasure weapon in a single blow was no surprise at all!

"Steppes Master!"

The several Tower Masters and High Lords present paled as they saw the Steppes Master sent flying backwards and his weapon cracking apart. If the Steppes Master were to be defeated here then their fates could be imagined!

But they also didn't have the courage to escape now. What if the Steppes Master survived and punished them for running?

Just as these thoughts appeared in their minds, the situation on the battlefield had taken a sharp turn from what they originally anticipated would happen. Lin Ming took a step forwards, directly shooting towards the Steppes Master.

Behind Lin Ming, a red lotus bloomed. The majesty and glory of an emperor exuded outwards, causing all the Tower Masters, High Lords, and supervisory deacons to feel like their souls left their bodies in fear!

Nobody dared believe that Lin Ming would leave the Blood Slaughter Steppes with an early Revolving Core cultivation, and in just a mere six years, would actually grow to such a degree. He directly faced a two-star and three-star Demon Emperor together and even managed to resist the 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array, beating them all into the ground!

The Steppes Master's pupils shrank as he saw Lin Ming rush towards him. He reached out a hand to grasp the 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array's array disc. To his horror and dismay, he discovered that the array disc had already lost a great deal of its spiritual power. As for the 10,000 ghosts sealed within it, a single attack from Lin Ming had left a third of them ruined!

10,000 ghosts did not seem like a high number, but these 10,000 ghosts were completely refined from extreme Emperor level talents that were at the Xiantian realm, Revolving Core realm, Demon King realm, or Fey King realm! Before their deaths, all of the sacrifices for this array disc had been great elites of their era, and after their deaths they were terrifying ghosts. Even a Holy Land could not produce a 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array like this; there was simply no way for them to produce such a great number of talents. But, this was actually not a problem for the Steppes Master. To control the 12 Skysplit Towers was the same as controlling 12 graveyards of geniuses.

However, such a 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array had been one-third ruined by Lin Ming in a single strike!

"10,000 ghosts, perish forever, explode for me!"

The Steppes Master crumbled the array disc in his hands, a demented light in his eyes. The remaining several thousand ghosts in the array disc all rushed into Lin Ming's grandmist space. But, before the ghosts were even able to enter the grandmist space, all of them exploded!

Bang bang bang bang bang!

Terrifying energy currents swept the world. As the present martial artists saw the Steppes Master exterminate the remainder of the 10,000 ghosts, all of them tried to run away. But, there was not enough time!

In this enclosed space, a terrifying energy wave overtook them. Several High Lords with the lowest cultivation were directly torn apart, bursting into a fog of blood!

This was the terrifying destructive power caused by simultaneously detonating the divine souls and source energy of 7000 geniuses, and it was also one of the Steppes Master's greatest killing moves. Once this move was used, the entire 10,000 Ghost Soul Devouring Array would immediately be destroyed!

Peng peng peng!

360 array flags began to collapse in unison. Under the control of the Steppes Master, all of that energy fell upon Lin Ming's grandmist space like a torrential storm. The grandmist space violently trembled, and within that side world, Lin Ming also had to withstand a tremendous pressure.

The grandmist space could wipe away Laws and true essence, but it actually couldn't withstand an infinite barrage of energy. In that moment, Lin Ming felt that his Prime Emperor Force Field was like a boat in a storm, capable of capsizing at any moment. There were even small cracks that had begun to appear in the grandmist space!

The Prime Emperor Force Field would soon be unable to persist!

“Senior, this is a good chance!”

The Steppes Master cried out, and the old Imp who had his supernatural powers destroyed suddenly shot open his eyes, a monstrous animus and murderous intent flooding them. After his battle spirit had been forcefully knocked down two small boundaries by Lin Ming, all he felt now was hatred to the bone.

“Evil Demon Claw!”

The old Imp didn’t dare to use a soul attack again, thus he used an energy attack. A massive black claw smashed down at Lin Ming from above!

The two Emperor level powerhouses combined their attacks. At this time, Lin Ming’s Prime Emperor Force Field seemed as if it would collapse at any moment.

Lin Ming’s eyes sharpened as he revolved the energy within him to the limit.

“Asura Force Field!

“Death God Force Field!”

Open!!

In that moment, an annihilating energy erupted from within Lin Ming, superimposing onto the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower…

Chapter 908 – Massacring Emperors

Chapter 908 – Massacring Emperors

…

…

…

Asura Force Field. Capable of suppressing true essence, bodily strength, the soul, organs, and the spiritual sea. When a martial artist with insufficient cultivation was covered by the Asura Force Field, their spiritual sea would shatter and their heart would stop beating.

Death God Force Field. Formed from endless killing intent. Killing intent was itself a type of energy field. When a martial artist developed the desire to kill, they would emit an invisible energy. Once this killing intent reached an unparalleled level, it could even cut off all life vitality, extinguishing fires of life!

Prime Emperor Force Field. Reproducing the grandmist space. Here, Laws were suppressed, life was suppressed, the divine soul was suppressed, all of existence was suppressed. It would shatter the vast majority of supernatural powers. True essence, origin energy, battle spirit, will, soul, all would returning to nothingness, all would return to chaos!

Now, once these three great force fields were superimposed together, they formed the parts of the complete Heavenly Demon martial intent.

Although, this was only superimposing them over each other – it was in no way fusing the three together. Even so, it wasn’t the same as one plus one plus one equals three.

With the support of the other two great force fields, all of the fissures within the Prime Emperor Force Field completely vanished. The Prime Emperor Lotus Flower behind Lin Ming became even more succulent and vivid!

The grandmist space rose suddenly and sharply, expanding outwards, soaring into the skies!

“What a useless bluff. Watch as I shatter your force field!” With the fight reaching this boiling point, the Steppes Master put forth everything he had. He had a strong premonition that if he couldn’t kill Lin Ming today, he would die here!

“Great Demon Assassination Art, Apocalypse End!”

As the Steppes Master, Luosha’s martial skills were endlessly varied. As he saw his Concept of Blood suppressed by Lin Ming, he instantly changed styles. Demonic clouds roiled around him, rumbling through the air.

And behind him, the evil demon claw that the old Imp sent out was swallowed up by the endless dark clouds, combining with them.

A two-star Demon Emperor and a three-star Demon Emperor combined attacks. Their energies fused together, destroying all!

By now, Lin Ming had opened the Heretical God Force and all four of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. Deep between his eyebrows, a flaming red light flashed out, blazing like a fire. From there, a vague red phoenix phantom shot into the skies, turning into a pure energy that integrated with the grandmist space!

Lin Ming had completely opened 100% of the Heretical God Force even as he burnt the blood of the Ancient Phoenix!

He had exerted his complete strength in a single breath. This was because simultaneously opening all three force fields was far too consuming of his true essence. The Prime Emperor

Force Field now covered 500 feet of space. If anyone were to enter this space, it would truly be entering another world, not unlike stepping into a dimensional realm!

"Grandmist battle spirit, fusion!"

Sou!

With two Demon Emperors attacking the Prime Emperor Force Field together, a silver gray spear-shaped battle spirit shot out from between Lin Ming's eyebrows. As this battle spirit appeared, it naturally collapsed and then fused together with the grandmist space.

A battle spirit could be used to directly kill an enemy, but it could be attached to any object. This included physical matter, true essence, and force fields. Although the grandmist space was able to isolate Laws and will was ineffective here, to Lin Ming, who was the master of this space, none of that mattered.

With the grandmist battle spirit combined together, the Prime Emperor Force Field expanded by another 300 feet!

Bang! Bang!

With two explosive sounds, in the moment that the Steppes Master and the old Imp broke into the grandmist space, all of their Laws became invalid. Their billowing demon essence began to rapidly melt like pure snow underneath the sun!

Moreover, the deeper they went, the faster their energy melted away. Even the Steppes Master and the old Imp's protective demon essence began to dissolve!

"This is bad!"

The Steppes Master was shocked speechless as he watched with his own eyes as his bodily protective demon essence was melted by this strange and unknown space!

Kacha!

The Steppes Master's black lance light was the first to explode. Then, the old Imp's evil demon claw shattered. The two great supernatural powers, the attacks of two Emperor level powerhouses, had collapsed before they even reached Lin Ming's body!

"Retreat!"

The Steppes Master and the old Imp rapidly drew backwards. In this grandmist space, they could only use brute force to tear apart this force field. Otherwise, all Laws and energy became invalid.

To an essence gathering system martial artist, energy was the basis for their style of combat. How could they continue fighting if they couldn't utilize energy?

The Steppes Master thought that the combined strength of two Emperor level powerhouses would be able to tear apart Lin Ming's Prime Emperor Force Field with brute force. But before the attacks had arrived, they had already melted away!

The Steppes Master and the old Imp tried to escape the grandmist space, but how could Lin Ming give them such a chance. With a thought, the grandmist mist spread forwards. At the same time, Lin Ming launched a movement technique and chased after the Steppes Master and the old Imp.

The truth was that the current Steppes Master and old Imp weren't able to summon the demon essence within their bodies. If Lin Ming could use Penetrating Rainbow, a single spear strike would be able to slaughter them.

But supporting the galvanization of three great force fields into the Heavenly Demon martial intent was far too energy consuming. Lin Ming only had enough true essence by opening the Heretical God Force and burning the blood of the Ancient Phoenix at the same time; there was no leftover energy for him to use in an attack.

Ka ka ka!

Cracks began to appear in the Steppes Master's protective demon essence; it was nearing the point of collapse. His complexion immediately changed.

"Split up and run!"

The old Imp roared out. The two of them chose different directions to run in, escaping at full speed!

Lin Ming's grandmist space was less than a thousand feet long and wide, moreover, the Steppes Master and old Imp were both a good distance from the center of the force field. It would only take a brief moment to leave with their speed.

Seeing the edge of the force field in front of him, the Steppes Master's eyes turned blood red. He had already reached his limits.

Lin Ming's cold gaze locked onto the Steppes Master; he would kill him first!

Divine sense erupted and more force field energy came crashing down. In that instant, the Steppes Master's last bit of energy completely collapsed. With an explosive 'peng' sound, his protective demon essence finally exploded!

The Steppes Master's expression drastically changed. "Brat, I'll die together with you!"

The Steppes Master had already gone mad. After realizing that Lin Ming had locked onto him, he didn't even bother trying to escape anymore. He changed direction and rushed towards Lin Ming!

Facing the desperate attack of the Steppes Master, Lin Ming remained unmoved. More and more of the force field came crashing down on the Steppes Master. The Steppes Master wanted to send out an attack, but his body was empty; where did he have the energy to do anything?

"I… ahhhhh!"

The Steppes Master issued a miserable scream, but even this last cry was swallowed up by the grandmist space. His clothes disintegrated like they had been worn out over endless years, becoming powder that vanished into the wind. Then, his flesh began to crack apart. His meridians exploded, and pieces of flesh and blood flew into the grandmist space where they were instantly annihilated, turning into nothing. Then, his muscles, skeleton, marrow, organs, brain…

Grandmist space turned all matter into entropy and chaos. Even time and space could come under the influence of the grandmist space, where it could easily collapse into a singularity. Yin and yang hadn't divided and the five main elements hadn't even formed. In this case, once one lost the protection of energy, how could a flesh and blood physical form still survive? It would simply be returned to nothing within the grandmist space!

Hu – !

In just several breaths of time, the Steppes Master was like a sand sculpture that eroded away, his body dissipating and wafting away in countless particles of dust, with nothing left behind! The entire process had been silent. Sound needed a medium to travel through, thus a martial artist wouldn't be able to hear anything but the sounds produced within their own body. The medium of the grandmist space was grandmist energy, an existence that was as heavy as stars. If one wanted to vibrate it and transmit sound waves, then how would that even be possible?

Like that, an Emperor level powerhouse had strangely died in utter silence. He had thoroughly perished without even bones left!

This terrifying scene left all the surviving High Lords and Tower Masters horrified, cold sweat streaming down their backs. Just what kind of ability was this? It was just a force field, and yet it was able to massacre a two-star Demon Emperor!

In the moment that the Steppes Master died, the old Imp actually let out a roar and ran out of the Prime Emperor Force Field!

He was still a three-star Demon Emperor after all. Even though he was old, his demon essence was still far more vast and deep than the Steppes Master's. Just as he flushed out of the force field, his bodily protective demon essence exploded into pieces.

Peng!

The old Imp's clothes all tore apart. He had felt the moment when the Steppes Master had died. This had left him shaken and panic-stricken. As soon as he rushed out, he rapidly fled deep into Heavenly Cloud Skysplit Tower.

Heavenly Cloud Skysplit Tower had been built and refined by Empyrean Primordius himself. The tower body was incomparably firm and it was impossible for anyone to break or mar it. With the various protective arrays within, it could be considered to be layered in traps and secrets.

The old Imp was the previous Steppes Master; he was extremely familiar with the layout of Heavenly Cloud Skysplit Tower. He was confident that with his own knowledge of Heavenly Cloud Skysplit Tower, that as long as he could draw a few miles away from Lin Ming, he would be able to take several transmission arrays and escape from this damned place.

And now because Luosha had attracted Lin Ming's killing move, that had already won enough time for the old Imp. With his speed he was just like a nimble little mouse, rapidly traveling through the transmission channels of Heavenly Cloud Skysplit Tower and dashing 10 miles away.

"Monster! He's just a monster! How could I have possibly encountered such an abnormal freak?!"

The old Imp hysterically shouted. How could a 25 year old possibly be so fierce!? This surpassed all common sense. Whatever Eightfall War Emperor, Demon Origin Emperor, Archaic Eternity Emperor, or even that Six Fingered Sin Fey that died in the Eternal Demon

Abyss, when they were all 25 years old, all of them would be nothing but garbage in front of Lin Ming!

If the old Imp had known all of this earlier, he would never have come here to die, no matter what rewards Luosha promised him.

As Lin Ming watched the old Imp vanish in the blink of an eye and sneak into the complex maze-like roads of Skysplit Tower like a mouse, running into all directions, his lips curved up into a smile. Did this old Imp want to compare speed with him?

What he feared the least was a competition of speed. Without mentioning the Gate of Wonder or Golden Roc Shattering the Void, Lin Ming had comprehended the third level of the Concept of Thunder – Extreme Speed!

Of the seven elemental energies of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, and thunder, wind was famed for its speed. However, wind was not the fastest. That honor belonged to thunder!

Golden Roc Shattering the Void, Mystic Lightning Shade!

Twelve different colored thunder symbols formed from threads of lightning began to shine from all over Lin Ming's body. The dazzling threads of lightning had fully fused into Lin Ming's flesh, gleaming with a blinding radiance.

After opening the Gate of Wonder and stepping on Golden Roc Shattering the Void, he also activated the arcane support ability, Mystic Lightning Shade!

In that instant, countless arcs of lightning crackled off of Lin Ming's body. His body suddenly disappeared as he reached incredulous speeds.

The surviving martial artists felt their knees weaken as they almost slumped to the ground. In a one on one fight, Lin Ming was a monster amongst monsters. Even if one wanted to escape, he still had such ghostly speed! Even if someone were able to temporarily suppress Lin Ming by superiority of cultivation, as long as they couldn’t kill him then he would only need to return in two years to take his revenge.

How could such a person ever allow his enemy to live?

Chapter 909 – Sixth Opening of the Magic Cube

Chapter 909 – Sixth Opening of the Magic Cube

…

…

…

The dozens of miles of chaotic and convoluted roads within Skysplit Tower had all lost their meaning underneath Lin Ming's steps. He flashed through in just a few fleeting moments, leaving nothing behind but a phantom of thunder!

"Transmission array! I've arrived!"

As the old Imp saw that transmission array, his eyes brightened with joy. He would already be lucky to escape from here with his life; how would he still care about his battle spirit being weakened?

The battle with Lin Ming had already cost him 200-300 years of his lifespan. But even when this was taken from the 1000 years of life remaining, he still had a great deal of time to live. How could the old Imp possibly give any of this up?

Hundreds of miles would only take a few breaths of time for an Emperor level powerhouse to travel. But with a dark killing star chasing from behind, the old Imp simply wouldn't give him that much time.

But as he turned his head, he saw Lin Ming grasping the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, flitting forwards with the speed of ghosts and gods. He had already caught up to him!

"What!?!? How could you be so fast!?" As the old Imp saw Lin Ming barreling towards him, both of his eyes widened like full moons. A look of disbelief flashed across his face. He had run out for just one or two breaths of time, and yet he was overtaken by Lin Ming already? Was this kind of speed even possible?

"Wait... wait wait wait!" The old Imp's eyes nearly popped out of his head with despair. He anxiously blurted out, "I don't have any enmity or injustice with you, I was only helping out others for some wealth. I was only working for Luosha and I have no conflict of interests with you. If you let me go then there are massive benefits I can give you. I can teach you the High Chaos Devil Arts of my Imp race, and I can tell you where the greatest treasures of our Imp race are located! I can even give you massive amounts of Demon God Bones! If you kill me then you will only be able to obtain the items in my spatial ring, and as for all of those hidden treasures I just mentioned, you will never be able to obtain them, even if you search my soul. My soul force is powerful. Before I die, I can definitely self-destruct my spiritual sea. If you kill me, you will not obtain any of my secrets at all!"

The old Imp immediately threw out several conditions that he thought were quite tempting. Especially the High Chaos Devil Arts; he believed Lin Ming would be particularly interested in that. The High Chaos Devil Arts was a soul attack technique. The old Imp discovered that even though Lin Ming had a strong soul force, he still hadn't cultivated any soul attack martial skills. If he had this High Chaos Devil Arts then he could increase his number of attack methods.

Hearing the old Imp's conditions, Lin Ming only chuckled, "I don't want any of that. All I want is one thing."

"What do you want then?" The old Imp's mind raced. As long as Lin Ming was willing to put forth some conditions then there would be hope and he could bargain with him. If the old Imp could keep his life, then giving everything he had to Lin Ming would be worth it.

Lin Ming grinned. "I only want... all of your blood essence. I wish to use it to open something."

Steppes Master Luosha's body had disintegrated to nothing in the grandmist space and had been completely destroyed; there was no blood essence left over to open the Magic Cube with. Fortunately, the old Imp was still here. As a three-star Demon Emperor, his blood essence was of a higher quality anyway.

"You are seeking death!"

The old Imp's heart burned with a rage. If all of his blood essence was drawn out then his fires of life would also be extinguished. This Lin Ming was simply playing with him.

"Then I'll bet everything against you! Let's perish together!"

The old Imp burst out with a loud roar, suddenly biting down on his tongue and spitting out blood essence. Behind him, the chaos demon spirit phantom appeared once more, except this time it was much weaker and fainter than before. The High Chaos Devil Arts were his life's greatest supernatural power, but this strongest soul attack of his was actually suppressed by Lin Ming. Now, he could only use material attacks.

"Heavenly Demon Suppression!"

The old Imp stretched out a withered palm and slashed at Lin Ming. Lin Ming raised the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower bloomed once more. He intended to use the force field to avoid the old Imp's true body and attack the chaos demon spirit phantom behind him.

Peng!

Cracks began to appear in the chaos demon spirit phantom behind the old Imp; this caused the old Imp's attack to weaken by over half.

By not fully activating the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower with his complete strength, this left enough energy for Lin Ming to attack.

"Concept of Thunderfire – Penetrating Rainbow!"

A highly compressed power of thunder and fire crazily gushed out from the Heretical God Sprout. The Great Desolate Blood Halberd came falling down, crashing into the chaos demon spirit phantom.

In that instant, the scene was similar to sledgehammer striking a thin pane of glass. The chaos demon spirit phantom directly exploded, and Lin Ming's Great Desolate Blood Halberd continued with vigor, crashing into the old Imp's chest.

The old Imp's protective true instantly exploded as Lin Ming's halberd smashed into his chest, creating a large dent and forcing the old Imp to vomit out a mouthful of blood.

As this strike succeeded, Lin Ming didn't give his enemy a chance to escape. The Prime Emperor Force Field dispersed, and he waved the blood halberd in his hands, space cracking around it.

"Law of Annihilation, Chain of Stars!"

Ca!

Countless space fragments stabbed into the old Imp's body like innumerable sharpened knives. Blood splashed into the air. The old Imp's supernatural powers had been shattered by Lin Ming's battle spirit, and his own battle spirit had fallen by two small boundaries because of it. He had been injured in the grandmist space and his origin of life was greatly damaged. Now that he faced Lin Ming, who his most skilled soul attacks were useless against, he simply didn't have the strength to resist.

"You..." The old Imp's face was covered in blood. His body was like a broken water bag filled with space shards. He looked like a grieving spirit that had been dismembered during life; it was beyond miserable.

"If you want me to die, then I won't let you be any better off!"

The old Imp fiercely slammed down on his tongue, directly biting it off. He spat out blood essence as energy erupted from his body! He wanted to burn all of the blood essence within him, so that even if Lin Ming killed him, he still wouldn't have any blood essence to open the Magic Cube!

And an Emperor level powerhouse, even if their body was crushed, could instantly mobilize the energy in their body even if they had just a small amount of consciousness left over. Wanting to instantly kill them wasn't easy.

Lin Ming sneered as he saw this. His fist came pounding out, surrounded by a dim silver gray light. This was his grandmist battle spirit.

"Concept of Stagnation!"

At that moment, the flow of time around the old Imp suddenly slowed down. He felt as if his body had been petrified, and even his thoughts slowed down. The energy circulating in his meridians slowed down to a crawl. He wanted to burn all of his blood essence to commit suicide, but he lacked the force to do so!

The old Imp's eyes widened with unwillingness and despair.

The Concept of Time… he had comprehended the Concept of Time…

Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!

Peng!

Lin Ming's fist smashed into the old Imp's forehead and thousands of vibrating true essence filaments imbued with his grandmist battle spirit broke into the old Imp's body. All of the old Imp's meridians shattered, and even his spiritual sea collapsed!

With Lin Ming's current understanding towards the Concept of Stagnation, he could bring the flow of time to nearly a standstill for a split-second. It was enough to completely kill the old Imp and even disintegrate his soul.

No matter how powerful the vitality of a Demon Emperor was, they were finished once their spiritual sea shattered.

Plop!

When the effects of the Concept of Stagnation ended, the old Imp fell onto the ground like a pile of crushed meat, blood splashing everywhere.

As Lin Ming saw the old Imp thoroughly die but still retain 90% of his blood essence, he relaxed. If the old Imp had really burned off all his blood essence, then that would really have been troublesome. In order to open the Magic Cube again, he would have to find some other Emperor level powerhouse in the Holy Demon Continent and kill them. But Lin Ming wasn't a bloodthirsty killer. He needed a reason to kill others – he wouldn't slaughter innocents.

"I never thought that the Prime Emperor Force Field obtained through the Road of Emperor could combine with the Asura Force Field and Death God Force Field, and massacre Emperor level powerhouses in such a manner. In the grandmist space, all Laws are annihilated, all energy is annihilated, and even all life and matter is annihilated, forcing all to return to the nothingness of chaos. But what a pity, this is truly a thorough killing method. After killing someone, nothing will be left behind. Even a spatial ring will be annihilated…"

Before Lin Ming obtained the Prime Emperor martial intent, he never thought that the so-called ability to massacre Emperor level powerhouses would be like this.

"I can't indiscriminately use this killing method too much. Besides some tougher Saint artifacts, nothing else would remain." Lin Ming shook his head. He hadn't fused the three martial intents together, he had only superimposed them on top of each other. The power was already very strong, and in addition with the grandmist battle spirit fused into it, and the support of the Heretical God Force and the combusting Ancient Phoenix blood, it was able to massacre all Emperor level powerhouses weaker than himself.

As for those opponents that were stronger than him or were equally as strong as him, the grandmist space could still weaken their strength, increasing his chances of victory.

To weaken an enemy's offensive power and defensive power by 60-70%, the result of a fight could be imagined. But, the only problem was that stimulating the complete Heavenly Demon martial intent consumed a massive amount of true essence. It was not easy for Lin Ming to do.

Lin Ming took out a small jade bottle from the Extreme Violet Ring and received all of the old Imp's blood essence into it. Then, he wiped this blood essence onto the area of his chest where the Magic Cube was.

Until now, Lin Ming still couldn't activate the Magic Cube with his strength. He could only let the Magic Cube act as a passive form of defense.

Lin Ming was very clear that the Magic Cube was a divine treasure that countless powerhouses within the Divine Realm had desperately struggled for, even paying with their lives in the process. Its function was certainly not so simple as holding soul fragments. As for what other uses it had, that still remained unknown to Lin Ming.

Hiss... hiss...

The old Imp's blood essence was absorbed by the Magic Cube. In the next moment, Lin Ming felt a bit dizzy before he arrived at the space within the Magic Cube once again.

Since the time when Lin Ming killed a Life Destruction powerhouse to open the Magic Cube, over six years had passed!

In these six years, Lin Ming's strength had crossed over the Life Destruction realm and reached the Divine Sea! It had to be known that Lin Ming had only obtained the Magic Cube when he was 15 years old. In the 10 years since then, Lin Ming had cultivated from Body Transformation to the Revolving Core realm in four years. But for his strength to rise from Life Destruction to the Divine Sea, that had taken a full six years. It was obvious just how difficult that step was to take!

The space within the Magic Cube was still dim and hazy as before. Countless soul fragments floated around like stars, slowly orbiting a central sphere of light. It looked like a wonderful and strange galaxy.

Lin Ming swept his perception through the area and quickly found two of the largest soul fragments. They were over a foot wide, much larger than the head of an average person.

These two soul fragments were naturally left behind from the Ancient Devil that resided within Yang Yun’s body. They contained exquisite Time Laws, Darkness Laws, and also fairly complete memories. This likely included the Ancient Devil’s weaknesses or secrets of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

The soul fragment that Lin Ming wished to choose this time was naturally a soul fragment of the Ancient Devil.

Chapter 910 – Fusing the Three Great Force Fields

Chapter 910 – Fusing the Three Great Force Fields

…

…

…

"It would have been better if that Ancient Devil hadn't blown himself up. If these two soul fragments were together then the memories would be much more complete."

When Lin Ming was still at the Body Transformation realm, he had to be beyond careful when choosing which soul fragment to absorb, and he even had to choose the smallest ones. But the situation was different now. Besides the sphere of light in the center, Lin Ming could freely choose which soul fragment to absorb. Even if the Ancient Devil's complete soul fragment were here, he had full confidence that he could absorb it.

Lin Ming didn't randomly choose which of these two soul fragments to absorb. First, he used his perception to investigate them. He discovered that there was a small difference their size; the first soul fragment was about 10% larger than the second.

However, the smaller soul fragment had a faint black light flowing out from it. There even seemed to be a slight difference in the flow of time around the soul fragment.

On the other hand, the Law fluctuations around the larger soul fragment were much weaker.

Without a doubt, the smaller soul fragment contained more of the Ancient Devil's comprehensions of Laws.

“I’ll choose this one then!”

Lin Ming grasped that small soul fragment. Most of the memories in this soul fragment were about its master’s early life experiences. These memories weren’t of much use to Lin Ming; he was mainly concerned about abilities, techniques, and Laws. These types of cultivation memories could allow Lin Ming’s strength to reach yet another level.

Woosh!

The soul fragment was completely swallowed up by Lin Ming and dissolved into his spiritual sea.

As Lin Ming’s cultivation grew, he began to understand that it was impossible for other martial artists to directly swallow up the memories of others like this. This was because every soul fragment, no matter how small or unimportant, would have a spirit mark left behind by its owner.

A spirit mark was a characteristic of the source of life. If one absorbed the spirit mark of others, their personality would become muddled, possibly splitting apart. Finally, they would fall into depravity and become a zombie.

But erasing the spirit mark was impossible. This was because a spirit mark was thoroughly threaded into every part of a soul, where it completely merged with the soul. If one used force to destroy it, then that would destroy the soul fragment itself.

But the Magic Cube had some mysterious and inerrable charm; any soul that was sucked into the Magic Cube would have its spirit mark immediately wiped out, becoming pure memories that could be directly absorbed by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming recalled the time he first entered the Magic Cube space, and saw the scene of Mo Qianxue using the Divine Crystal Magic Cube to instantly mince 10,000 Divine Realm Supreme Elders into divine soul fragments. Lin Ming guessed that the Magic Cube was likely a soul-based divine artifact. Its rank far surpassed his understanding.

As soon as the Ancient Devil's soul fragment entered into Lin Ming's spiritual sea, it started a fierce soul storm within him. Even though Lin Ming's mind and will were firm, he still felt his mind shake as the terrifying spirit storm thundered through him, making his head ache as if it would explode at any moment!

This was one-third of the Ancient Devil, who had lived for tens of thousands of years!

After living for tens of thousands of years, just how much had the Ancient Devil experienced? Just how much information was within him? It was inestimable.

Lin Ming had only lived for 25 years, and he didn't even remember what happened before he was three years old. In truth, he had 22 years' worth of memories. With his 22 years' worth of memories, he was absorbing one-third of tens of thousands of years' worth of memories; the impact on his mind could be imagined.

Because Lin Ming practiced alchemy and also trained in the Overbearing Soul Tactic, his soul was extremely formidable, more so than most Divine Sea martial artists'. Yet even for him, having to accept such an impact to his soul made him feel as if his spiritual sea was cracking apart.

A person's capacity for retaining knowledge in their spiritual sea was limited. The stronger their soul force was, the greater their capacity would be. It had to be known that a martial artist with a Xiantian cultivation would have photographic memory. As for martial artists with a Divine Sea cultivation or above, they could quickly scan through a jade slip and memorize the contents within. What took them one or two days to memorize would be enough for a mortal to remember for an entire life.

If one lived for tens of thousands of years or even hundreds of thousands of years, the amount of knowledge they would have to contain within their spiritual sea could be imagined. Thus, if one's spiritual sea was not formidable enough and not large enough, they would have no choice but to only selectively remember useful information, discarding all else.

And the Ancient Devil had a massive amount of memories that were useless to Lin Ming. As Lin Ming felt his spiritual sea near the point of collapse, he revolved the Samsara martial intent and twisted apart all of these useless memories, leaving behind only cultivation methods, Concepts, training comprehensions, and other experiences that would be useful to him.

Several hours later, Lin Ming finally managed to absorb all of the Ancient Devil's memories. Over 90% of the memories had been discarded, and not even 10% was left. All of them were deeply compressed within Lin Ming's spiritual sea; he didn't have the time yet to look over them in depth.

After obtaining the Ancient Devil's memories, the first ones Lin Ming looked at were actually not those related to Concepts or cultivation methods, but those related to the Eternal Demon Abyss and the Sea of Miracles.

Unfortunately, things were different than he had thought. This Ancient Devil had followed several Empyreans 100,000 years ago to exterminate Empyrean Primordius and the force he established on the Holy Demon Continent. However, those Empyreans had vast, immeasurable armies, and the Ancient Devil was only a minor foot soldier amongst them. He simply didn't have the qualifications to see how Empyrean Primordius had died.

Soon after the great war began, the Ancient Devil had his mortal body destroyed by someone else. Afterwards, for some inexplicable reason, he had been sealed in the Sea of Miracles. But, the Sea of Miracles and the Eternal Demon Abyss had been blocked off by Empyrean Primordius' grand supernatural powers. The Yellow Springs River was a magic tool used by Empyrean Primordius to seal off the Sea of Miracles and Eternal Demon Abyss. This legendary Yellow Springs River had been refined from the corpse of a True Dragon; it was a powerful and incredible existence.

"The corpse of a True Dragon..." Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. A True Dragon was a God Beast of the Divine Realm, a creature of the same rank as a Phoenix. Its strength had reached an unimaginable boundary. After Lin Ming obtained just a single drop of reverse scale blood, the benefits to him had been ridiculous. And after obtaining 100 drops of normal Ancient Phoenix blood, he also obtained a great power.

But the real bodies of a True Dragon and Phoenix were thousands or even tens of thousands of miles long. Just how much blood did they have in their bodies? It was unimaginable!

Thinking about it, if a Phoenix that was thousands of miles long burned the trillion jins of blood within its body, as well as all of its blood essence, just what sort of strength would it reach? Perhaps even destroying the boundless universe wouldn't be difficult.

"I see… so the reason that it became difficult for anyone to ascend from the Sky Spill Continent was that Empyrean Primordius sealed off the Sea of Miracles and the Eternal Demon Abyss with the Yellow Springs River, and a side effect of this was that the channels connecting the Sky Spill Continent's world to the Divine Realm were also affected. After that cataclysmic war, there were no longer any powerhouses from the Divine Realm with a cultivation above the Divine Sea that were able to descend to the Sky Spill Continent's world. This was because this planet has been sealed by an invisible energy field. Only a Divine Sea martial artist like Old Man Good Fortune can come here because his cultivation is minor and weak, and he is able to enter through the gaps in this energy field."

"The reason that the Sky Spill Continent has gradually deteriorated from its once grand and prosperous times is that the war of 100,000 years ago affected the rules of this world. At that same time, the seal of the Yellow Springs River cut off the connection between the Divine Realm and the Sky Spill Continent's world. Since the origin energy from the Divine Realm cannot seep into the Sky Spill Continent, this made it so that there have been no martial artists born in this world that could surpass the Divine Sea realm. The late Divine Sea is already the extreme limit, and it is impossible to rid oneself of this curse because of the suppression of this world's rules. Even if it were me, wanting to break through this curse would not be easy. In order to surpass the Divine Sea, ascending into the Divine Realm is inevitable."

Without a doubt, the martial artists of the Divine Realm started at a point on a completely different level from those martial artists of the Sky Spill Continent. This was because the Divine Realm had a massive volume of origin energy, thus it was much easier for one to break through to the Divine Sea in the Divine Realm. It wasn't like the Sky Spill Continent, where a martial artist had to painstakingly absorb the minor bits of origin energy here, and yet even have the possibility of failing during Life Destruction, turning into nothing but ashes.

Lin Ming didn't complain or blame the heavens that he wasn't born in the Divine Realm. This was because for a martial artist to be born in the Divine Realm, that in itself was also a part of their destiny. If a martial artist was born in the lower realms then they could only say their destiny was lacking.

But Lin Ming was an anomaly – he had obtained the Magic Cube when he was at the body transformation realm. If this weren't the Sky Spill Continent but the Divine Realm, how could he have come upon such a great stroke of destiny? Could he have still reached his present achievements?

Thus, martial artists of the lower realms should never think that it would be better if they were born in the Divine Realm. If they were already mentally defeated before they even cultivated the martial path, then these thoughts would strangle them, making them always feel as if they were inferior to martial artists of the Divine Realm and correspondingly making it more difficult for them to have any great accomplishments.

After all, even in the abandoned and barren Sky Spill Continent, in these last 100,000 years there had also been outstanding individuals like the Demon Emperor, Emperor Shakya, and even Yang Yun.

Yang Yun had bravely said he would bring back the golden age of the Sky Spill Continent, restoring the glory of 100,000 years ago. But in order to do this, he first had to break the seal of the Yellow Springs River and reconnect the channels between the Divine Realm and the Sky Spill Continent's origin energy. Lin Ming didn't know whether or not Yang Yun could ever succeed, but just this ambition and spirit was startling. Yang Yun had an origin of a bastard son, had been humiliated for his entire early life, and yet he had endured all of this and still maintained a heart that was higher than the heavens!

A martial artist's road of martial arts was already defying the heavens' will. Do not give up, do not accept fate, defy the heavens and earth, only by doing this could one defy the will of the heavens!

As Lin Ming understood this, he felt a faint sublimating of his soul, as if his soul force had taken another step forwards. He could vaguely feel the Prime Emperor martial intent, Asura martial intent, and Death God martial intent slowly gathering as if there was a shift towards fusing together.

A fusion of martial intents was a process of comprehension. If one couldn't comprehend this, it was useless no matter what sort of heavenly materials one ate up!

Thinking back, Emperor Shakya had once sat underneath a Bodhi tree and meditated for seven days and seven nights, fusing together seven different martial intents and breaking through the void with his martial path. And at the time, he had only been at the seventh stage of Life Destruction!

Such a talented individual didn't experience any kind of great lucky chance and yet was able to rely only on their comprehension to reach that step. How amazing was that!

"We both came from the abandoned Sky Sill Continent. Emperor Shakya was able to fuse seven different kinds of martial intents, but I cannot manage to fuse together three? Do I, Lin Ming, really have such a great difference with others?

"My heart of martial arts is like the sun, moon, and stars, immortal and inextinguishable! My martial arts will won't stop here, it will perpetuate into infinity! Although my soul and flesh haven't yet become eternal, once I step foot onto the peak of martial arts, I will reverse the samsara of the heavens and earth and live as long as the universe exists!"

In that moment, Lin Ming suddenly gained insight and all of his thoughts became incomparably clear and free-flowing. He only felt a deep heroic spirit rise from within him and impact towards the highest heavens!

Although Lin Ming had never given birth to thoughts that it would be better if he were born in the Divine Realm, he had still been in awe and wonder of the martial artists of the Divine Realm and the geniuses there. He was fully aware that there was no limit in the universe and that there would always be a higher mountain, a stronger person. He was aware of just how great this world was and how tiny he was.

Once, Lin Ming had thought that realizing all of this was a symbol of his horizons expanding, but now, his thoughts were even purer and more defined. Even if there was no limit in this universe and there was always a higher mountain, a stronger person – so what? Even if the Divine Realm was endless, and there were over a billion great worlds in the lower realms, with countless other smaller worlds – so what?

My road of martial arts is to conquer all, overcome all obstacles, and defy the will of the heavens!

I want to defy the heavens, I want to become a demon, I want to become an immortal, I want to step onto the peak of all martial arts and become an existence that surpasses an Empyrean!

Chapter 911 – I, Prime Emperor

Chapter 911 – I, Prime Emperor

…

…

…

At that moment, a lofty heroic spirit and daring pride gushed out from Lin Ming's spiritual sea. With a loud sound of something shattering, the Prime Emperor martial intent, Asura martial intent, and Death God martial intent all began to dance in the skies of his spiritual sea. A rumbling storm formed as all three martial intents began to slowly fuse together!

Asura – across the endless battlefield, the immortal champion of a hundred battles, condensing pure killing intent into a pressure that could oppress an opponent's divine soul, body, true essence, sapping their fighting will, and causing fear to seep into their hearts before the first blow was even exchanged.

That was the essence of Asura!

Death God – countless murders, limitless bloodshed, passing through mountains of blood and death, forming a force field of killing intent that could cut off an enemy's life and extinguish the fires of life of countless people.

That was the essence of Death God!

Prime Emperor – absolute control of a side world, halting the Laws of the world, and becoming the spiritual god of a separate space, ruling life and death, commanding all.

That was the essence of Prime Emperor!

Bloodshed and struggling were the life of a martial artist; there was no one that could diverge from this path. If one only closed up in training, it was impossible to become a king.

Once an individual stepped on the road of martial arts and wished to reach the martial arts peak, they had to live through countless battles and become an Asura. They had to take countless lives, stepping over innumerable bodies and become a Death God. Finally, they must control their own side world and comprehend the Laws, becoming a Prime Emperor!

"I understand now. No wonder the Asura martial intent came from the King's Cage, and the Death God martial intent came from slaughtering all the talents of the Blood Slaughter Steppes and becoming a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon. Even for the final Prime Emperor martial intent, I had to pass through the Road of Emperor and obtain the approval of the Road of Emperor, finally becoming an Emperor level powerhouse!

"These three great martial intents seemed as if they could stand side by side together, but the truth was that they must be obtained step by step, slowly and steadily. Each of them has a karmic effect with the others. First become an Asura, then become a Death God, and finally ascend to a Prime Emperor. When Empyrean Primordius created the Heavenly Demon martial intent, this martial intent in itself contained a causal link and involved the Laws of martial arts..."

In that moment, Lin Ming realized many things. He had unknowingly entered a state of sudden enlightenment. The Ancient Devil's memories weren't too detailed, but just those memories about the Sky Spill Continent and Divine Realm let Lin Ming attain higher comprehensions.

The road of martial arts was not a blind road. Gaining experience, knowledge, and expanding one's field of vision could allow a martial artist to suddenly break through bottlenecks that had stopped them previously, having them realize the principles of the heavens and earth. This was also the reason why Duanmu Qun, Lan Xin and Feng Shen had come to the Sky Spill Continent to gain further experience and grow.

When one had many experiences and combined that with one's own martial arts cultivation, they could then verify these truths and enter a state of sudden enlightenment!

In the past, Emperor Shakya had undergone seven days and seven nights of sudden enlightenment underneath a Bodhi tree before ascending into the Divine Realm.

Like this, Lin Ming meditated in Heavenly Cloud Skysplit Tower, completely engrossed in an ethereal state. Everything that happened outside became distant.

And in Lin Ming's spiritual sea, Demonshine sighed with emotion. Lin Ming's talent, lucky chances, and perception could cause the heavens themselves to be jealous. He had just obtained the Prime Emperor martial intent and yet the three martial intents had started to fuse together. Once the three martial intents fused together and formed the complete Heavenly Demon Force Field, just how powerful would that become?

"This child's destiny is in the Sky Spill Continent. He found the Magic Cube in the Sky Spill Continent and also obtained countless lucky chances in the Sky Spill Continent. Before he reaches the peak of the Sky Spill Continent and plays out his destiny to its limit, it will not be suitable for him to ascend into the Divine Realm. Otherwise, he will waste his great destiny, those mystic realms, the inheritances, and all the lucky chances he has found. When that time comes, the cycle of karma and causality will influence the progress of his cultivation, making him be unable to reach the peak of martial arts."

Karma, destiny, those were illusory and intangible concepts, but they truly did exist. Destiny was a part of one's talent. Otherwise, no matter how talented one was or how great one's perception was, they would not be fated to reach the peak of martial arts.

One could even say that having talent and perception was because of destiny.

When Lin Ming had been at Timeworn Phoenix City, Fairy Feng and City Lord Guru Blueflame had considered this point. They had recognized that Lin Ming's destiny belonged within the Sky Spill Continent, and he had to return to that land in order to inherit it as well as to simultaneously finish all grudges and enmity. Once he absolved the karmic ties that held him here and stepped into the Divine Sea, then his future achievements would be limitless.

That didn't mean that Lin Ming wouldn't have a destiny upon reaching the Divine Realm, only that the karmic ties of the Sky Spill Continent would have a certain influence on him. It had to be known that many martial artists that had ascended to the Divine Realm would experience bottlenecks after making leaps of progress in their cultivation. Sometimes they would even have to return to the world of mortals and finish their karma of cause and effect. Of course, doing this would mean they would have to travel a long and arduous detour.

When Lin Ming had adventured through the Southern Wilderness, he had come to known of an individual called the Sorcerer. The Sorcerer was a Supreme Elder of the Divine Realm, who had also once come from the Sky Spill Continent. After he ascended to the Divine Realm, there came a day when he had to enter life or death closed door seclusion. However, his karmic ties had not been absolved yet, thus he separated a wisp of his cultivation and produced an avatar with a late Divine Sea realm cultivation, spending a massive amount of strength to pass through the energy barrier of the Sky Spill Continent and return. Upon his return, he left behind a set of spirit artifacts – the 72 Sorcerer Pagodas. These pagodas were guarded by Yan Mo, to allow the Sorcerer's descendants that still lived in the Southern Wilderness to have some good fortune, thus ending his karma here.

Of course, no one knew this secret of the Southern Wilderness besides Lin Ming. Refining the spirit artifacts that the Sorcerer left behind was impossible, and no one was even aware that the 72 Sorcerer Pagodas were produced from a spirit tool. When Lin Ming had entered the Sorcerer Pagoda, he had rushed to the seventh level, obtained the reverse scale blood, and even comprehended the Samsara martial intent.

However, the Samsara martial intent was obtained from Lin Ming experiencing the cycle of 100 samsaras and comprehending it for himself. It wasn't like the Road of Emperor where it was directly granted to him. For this alone, one could see just how terrifying Empyrean Primordius had been.

Time passed slowly. In just the blink of an eye, three days passed.

Lin Ming was sitting cross-legged next to a transmission array, both of his eyes shut tight. His consciousness seemed to have left his body as it delved into the nine high heavens.

In a state of sudden enlightenment, one had to prevent being disturbed. Otherwise, if one was awakened from this state then it would be extremely difficult to re-enter it.

During this period, many Skysplit Tower High Lords discovered where Lin Ming was. As they saw this death god sitting there, all of them hid away as far as possible. As for ruining Lin Ming's sudden enlightenment or anything like that, that was simply a joke. None of them had the courage to do so.

In truth, even approaching Lin Ming was impossible. Although Lin Ming looked as if he were just calmly sitting there, the truth was that he had fallen into a different flow of time and space. Around his body, an invisible force field spread outwards. The power of Laws was imprisoned and energy was pulled away. A constant small amount of grandmist space bred in the chaos before instantly flashing into nihility.

Even if a half-step Divine Sea powerhouse were to accidently enter this strange chaos space, they would be torn to shreds by the grandmist energy within, turning into ash that evaporated into nothingness!

After the fifth day passed, Lin Ming suddenly opened his eyes from his enlightenment. In that moment, the countless lights and torches within Skysplit Tower were sucked into Lin Ming's two pupils, disappearing within. All of the space in Skysplit Tower suddenly turned black!

And in Lin Ming's eyes, there were no longer black pupils, but rather a grandmist space filled with grandmist energy! Chaos, entropy, it was as if the Laws of the Great Dao were breeding new stars within his eyes!

Chaos divided into yin and yang, chaos gave birth to the five elements, chaos produced all of existence. To control the power of chaos, I am Prime Emperor!

In that moment, all of Lin Ming's aura suddenly converged within himself. The invisible force field and that tiny grandmist space suddenly vanished with it.

"Lin Ming, have you really fused the three great force fields and formed the complete Heavenly Demon martial intent?" Demonshine's wisp of soul suddenly jumped out from Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

"It can be considered the complete Heavenly Demon martial intent. There are still some parts I need to reinforce, but now I finally understand just how the Heavenly Demon martial intent should be used. If I had comprehended this earlier then I would have been able to kill the Steppes Master and that old Imp much more easily!"

Lin Ming's thoughts moved and he flicked his fingers. A gray energy light shot out from his fingertips, shooting towards a nearby torch.

As the gray energy light struck the torch, an incredible scene took place. The torch was covered by the gray energy light and then completely disintegrated, being crushed further and turning into countless pieces of dust that blew away into the wind!

"This is…"

Demonshine's eyes widened. He certainly understood that what Lin Ming just shot out was a little piece of the Prime Emperor Force Field. Moreover, it also had the Asura Force Field and Death God Force Field fused into it.

That tiny group of energy had decomposed matter into nothingness, completely annihilating it. If it were to hit a person's body, that would truly be terrifying!

"I never thought that after fusing the three great force fields, your control of the grandmist space would reach such a degree," Demonshine praised. "Whoever your opponent is in the future, as long as you shoot out a bit of this force field energy then they will turn to ash!"

Demonshine was well aware that if such a powerful force field were to strike his body, even a small rice-sized bit would be enough to obliterate him.

And what was most freakish was that not only could grandmist space exterminate life and souls, but it could also eliminate true essence, abilities, techniques, and the vast majority of Laws!

It could be called a single move that broke all styles; just who could block it?

Facing Demonshine's praise, Lin Ming was still as calm as before. He shook his head and said, "My grandmist space has limits. It cannot be used to kill anyone as strong or stronger than me. For instance, just look at the wall of this Heavenly Cloud Tower. Even though the Heavenly Demon martial intent struck it, there wasn't any response at all."

The torch that Lin Ming had destroyed was added on later. But, the main body of the Heavenly Cloud Skysplit Tower was personally refined by Empyrean Primordius. If Lin Ming wasn't wrong, then the 12 Skysplit Towers should be extremely high rank magic tools. But whether or not it was a spirit artifact or some other rank of treasure, Lin Ming had no idea.

A superior magic tool could form a self-contained space within itself. It wasn't strange to suppress it into the form of a tower.

It was certainly impossible for Lin Ming to destroy something that Empyrean Primordius had created. Thus, when that small bit of grandmist space struck the wall, it broke the torch but didn't even leave a mark behind on the wall itself.

"You should be satisfied already! What kind of existence was Empyrean Primordius? He was an Empyrean! In the Divine Realm, that is a rank of character even higher than a World King. Let alone an Empyrean, I can't even imagine what a World King is like. Underneath a World King is a Holy Lord, and the Demon Emperor of the past wasn't even able to become a Holy Lord! You are just at the Divine Sea, did you think you could actually leave behind a mark on a tower created by an Empyrean?

“Your current grandmist space – if used against top powerhouses – might not be able to instantly kill them, but it could swallow up their true essence and weaken all of their attacks and abilities. Compared to your Heavenly Demon martial intent, the so-called Extreme Violet Domain, Emperor Pure Lands, or whatever blah blah blah skills, they are all garbage that would blow up at any time.”

Demonshine said as he nodded, seemingly panting with excitement as if he were imagining the scene of Lin Ming killing his way through the Sky Spill Continent. He was tired of the days of hiding and scurrying about.

Chapter 912 – Becoming the Steppes Master

Chapter 912 – Becoming the Steppes Master

…

…

…

Lin Ming wasn't in a hurry to return to the Sky Spill Continent. He was now at the fourth stage of Life Destruction and had opened the first four of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, but he still had the Ancient Devil's memories that he hadn't assimilated yet. If he could thoroughly perceive these memories, then his understandings of the Concept of Time and Concept of Darkness could take another step forwards. As for the other parts, while they wouldn't increase his strength any time soon, they would still allow him to clearly understand the Ancient Devil's weaknesses.

This was the greatest capital that Lin Ming was relying on to contend with Yang Yun. Otherwise, even though his strength had improved so much recently, he still wouldn't have any assurance he could defeat Yang Yun.

As Demonshine saw Lin Ming receive the Heavenly Demon martial intent back inside himself, his thoughts suddenly stirred. "Don't you think it's a bit strange? If the Prime Emperor, Asura, and Death God force fields fused together, that forms the complete Heavenly Demon martial intent, but why is it named after the heavenly demons? I think it would be better if it were called chaos, grandmist, or even something like primordial. It seems that would be much more appropriate." Demonshine said as he stroked his red-furred chin.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and said, “Perhaps the grandmist martial intent is the true name, and the so-called Heavenly Demon martial intent is only a portion of the grandmist martial intent.”

When the three martial intents fused into one, Lin Ming had a faint feeling that the Heavenly Demon martial intent was incomplete. From Asura to Death God to Prime Emperor, these all took the killing path as a basis. Although fighting was essential to a martial artist’s life, that didn’t mean it was everything to them.

If in this world there were demons, then it would be fair to say that there were also mortals and gods. The three martial intents that comprised the Heavenly Demon martial intent should only be a part of it. Only by comprehending the complete martial intent could he achieve the true grandmist martial intent.

“What? Such a kickass Heavenly Demon martial intent is only a small, incomplete part? Then just how amazing would the whole martial intent be?” Demonshine was flabbergasted; this surpassed the scope of his understanding.

“It’s not too strange. Just what kind of character is Empyrean Primordius? In the past, Emperor Shakya sat under a Bodhi tree for seven days and seven nights, fusing seven martial intents together. If he could do that, then Empyrean Primordius should be able to fuse even more martial intents together. Remember, the Heavenly Demon martial intent is divided into three martial intents – Prime Emperor, Death God, and Asura. They are all domains, force field type martial intents, but martial intents are in no way restricted to just this type of force field.

Demonshine nodded. What Lin Ming said made sense.

However, the three martial intents underneath the Heavenly Demon martial intent were not ordinary marital intents – they were much stronger. Moreover, they were the relatively rare force field martial intents. Although there were only three different kinds of martial intents fused together, it might even be superior to the final fused result of seven martial intents that Emperor Shakya had accomplished so many years ago. Also, Emperor Shakya had to comprehend those martial intents on his own; the strength of those martial intents must have been limited.

As Demonshine was speaking with Lin Ming, three black-robed men cautiously approached Lin Ming, trembling.

Lin Ming's vision narrowed. He noticed that these three black-robed men were at the peak of a three-star Demon King cultivation; they were each just a step away from becoming a four-star Demon King. That meant they were comparable to the weakest of Life Destruction powerhouses.

"Who are you?" Lin Ming called out.

After forming the complete Heavenly Demon martial intent, the pressure exuding from his body was even better. With a few words that didn't even have any true essence in them, it actually fell onto these three men's ears like a thunderclap, even shaking their souls!

It was impossible for the three black-robed men to withstand Lin Ming's pressure; all of them slumped to their knees. "Sir Lin, we are the supervisory Elders of the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple. Since Sir Lin was closed up in training, we didn't dare to disturb you. But now that Sir Lin's Supernatural Demon Blood Laws have reached large success, we have come here to follow your instructions!"

As the three black-robed men spoke, Lin Ming understood what was happening. These three people had come here to show their loyalty to him. Since Luosha died, the position of Steppes Master was empty. As Lin Ming was the one to kill Luosha, the position was naturally passed over to him.

Control of the Blood Slaughter Steppes had been seized by the Giant Demons, Imps, and Goliaths. These races all feared the human Lin Ming, but even so, these three people were exactly the opposite. They came here specifically to flatter and lick Lin Ming's boots, hoping to become his trusted subordinates and obtain benefits from the change of the Steppes Master position.

Lin Ming disliked this type of person, but if he brought them under his control it would be easy to use them for some tasks.

“Reporting to Sir Lin, the previous Steppes Master Luosha had accumulated a massive amount of treasures at the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple. It is now sealed by an array formation, but some dastardly thieves are planning to undo that array formation and plunder all of the treasures of the Blood Slaughter Steppes.”

There were no permanent alliances, only eternal self-interests. In order to curry favor from Lin Ming, the three black-robed men immediately sold out their companions.

“Plunder the treasures and flee?” Lin Ming’s lips curved up in a smirk. After obtaining treasures from the Temple of Marvels, he didn’t really care much for the Steppes Master’s possessions. But, he still wouldn’t let others just take advantage of him like this. Otherwise, wouldn’t others just think he was a fool?

Lin Ming waved his hand and directly snatched up these three black-robed men. Ignoring their cries of alarm, he placed all of them within the Extreme Violet Ring. Then, he grabbed the old Imp’s spatial ring, stepped onto the void, and flew straight to the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple!

Lin Ming had stayed at the Blood Slaughter Steppes for a long time and certainly knew where the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple was located. It was just 20,000 miles away from Heavenly Cloud Skysplit Tower. But to the current Lin Ming, this distance only took an incense stick of time to cross.

Hu – !

Lin Ming shot into the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple like a bolt of lightning. With a flick of his hand, the three black-robed men were thrown out from the Extreme Violet Ring. At this moment, they had arrived right in front of Luosha’s treasure chamber. Here, there were several Tower Masters, High Lords, Elders, Supervisory Envoys, and array masters all joined together as they tried to open Luosha’s treasure chamber.

As they saw Lin Ming suddenly appear, they were stunned for a moment before being suddenly horrified to the point that their souls nearly left them!

Luosha wasn't proficient at array formations to begin with, thus the array formations protecting the treasure chamber had been mostly laid down by others. Now, the array masters had managed to undo 80-90% of the protective arrays and it was only a matter of time until they succeeded. They had originally wanted to take advantage of the time when Lin Ming had closed up in training and seize the vast amount of treasures here before fleeing, but now their fates could be imagined!

“Really, birds die for food and men die for wealth.” Lin Ming faintly sneered.

“Ahh!”

The group of martial artists were all frightened and at a loss of what to do. They didn't even dare to take a breath. As long as Lin Ming wished it, any of them would die here without a grave.

“You three, plant a slave seal into every High Lord here.” Lin Ming first said to the three black-robed men behind him. He didn't plan on killing these people. The Blood Slaughter Steppes was a giant piece of fatty meat. Every year there would be a massive amount of benefits he could use. After he ascended into the Divine Realm, he wouldn't need this wealth, but he could actually transport it to Divine Phoenix Island. After all, when Lin Ming ascended to the Divine Realm, his family would still be here.

He wanted to turn Divine Phoenix Island into a Divine Kingdom. To do this, he would need a massive amount of financial resources.

Before he ascended, he planned on making a connection between the barriers that divided the Sky Spill Continent and establish a new transmission array. If he could take in the Blood Slaughter Steppes then that would undoubtedly guarantee his family clan a higher degree of prosperity.

"We..." The three supervisory Elders were too startled to respond at the start. It was only when they clearly saw the scene before them that they realized they had arrived at Blood Slaughter Temple all the way from Heavenly Cloud Tower!

Heavens! What kind of speed was this?!

Before they could exclaim in surprise, they heard the order Lin Ming gave to the three of them and were shocked silly. Plant slave seals in them? That was a bit horrifying.

"Plant slave seals in them?" The strongest supervisory Elder gulped. He could see everyone present glaring at him with hatred and fear in their eyes. The fools had now become aware that the three supervisory Elders had sold them out.

"Yes. Plant the slave seals. All who resist will die!" As Lin Ming spoke, a thick killing intent poured out from his body. To these martial artists, having a slave seal planted in them wasn't that much different from dying.

For these Tower Masters and High Lords to be able to reach this step, all of them were talented and proud characters of their generation. Even if they were afraid of Lin Ming, they also weren't willing to be controlled.

"Separate and run away!"

The Great Ax Tower Master suddenly shouted. However, just as his voice came out, his body suddenly shook. Then, a scene occurred that left everyone terror-stricken. Underneath the eyes of everyone present, the Great Ax Tower Master's tall and robust figure suddenly disintegrated, tumbling into chunks that soon turned into a fine powder that scattered into the wind. The Great Ax Tower Master had been thoroughly reduced to nothing.

The entire process had happened instantly and silently. There was only the distorted face of the Great Ax Tower Master crying out in muted despair. The anguish and pain on his face left a permanent impression on everyone's hearts, becoming a nightmare that they would never be able to forget.

“Give me your loyalty. And perhaps, your freedom might come one day. Otherwise, die now.” Lin Ming calmly said with placid indifference. Killing all of these people here would be a bit troublesome, but it didn’t matter to him either way.

A High Lord couldn’t withstand Lin Ming’s pressure and caved in to him. He was the first one willing to accept the slave seal. The second soon followed, then the third, fourth, and so on. Lin Ming’s strength was formidable enough; they could accept being Lin Ming’s slave If there was a chance of obtaining freedom in the future – that was always better than immediately dying here. If they died then they wouldn’t have anything left at all.

Thus, the 10 plus High Lords had slave seals planted within them by the supervisory Elders. As for the leftover Tower Masters and Elders, Demonshine planted slave seals in them. After all this was done, Lin Ming flicked his fingers and three gray lights shot out, drilling their way into the supervisory Elders’ bodies.

They were shocked, “Sir Lin… you…”

“I have placed a seal within you that contains a bit of my Heavenly Demon Force Field. If you ever think of betraying me, all I will need is a single thought and the force field will erupt in your body, and you will suffer the same fate as that Tower Master just now!”

As Lin Ming spoke, the three supervisory Elders felt a cold sweat stream down their backs. They had no courage or thoughts of ever daring to betray Lin Ming.

In any case, these three Heavenly Demon Force Fields were much better than slave seals. At least it wouldn’t affect their free will and control their thoughts.

“From today onwards, I am the Steppes Master, I am the ruler of the Blood Slaughter Steppes!” Lin Ming slowly said with a potent force in his voice. As he spoke, everyone present bowed to their knees, completely worshipping him, their faces full of reverence, fear, and awe. To the current Lin Ming, none of them dared to give birth to any thoughts of resistance. Facing Lin Ming, the pressure was far greater than facing Luosha!

Lin Ming took several medicinal herbs from his spatial ring and tossed them towards the three supervisory Elders.

These medicinal herbs were casually gathered by Lin Ming when he had been strolling through the open grasslands within the Temple of Marvels. While they weren't too precious to him, they could be considered highly precious treasures to others. The three supervisory Elders were overjoyed as they saw this. Although they were considered wealthy, their boundary was still limited. How could they possibly compare with someone like Lin Ming, who repeatedly encountered lucky chances everywhere?

"If you follow me, I will not treat you unfairly."

Lin Ming indifferently said. The three supervisory Elders quickly bowed again, showing their loyalty. Their cultivation was only equal to some point between a human late Revolving Core and a Life Destruction martial artist. If there was anything that could shorten the time it would take for them to become an Emperor level powerhouse, then even a slave seal was worth it.

Without speaking to anyone further, Lin Ming suddenly punched at the 80-90% resolved array formations.

"Break!"

Bang!

With an explosive sound, the many array formations that protected the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple's treasure chambers suddenly shattered. Luosha's treasure chambers had been completely opened to the world.

Chapter 913 – Strange Black Bead

Chapter 913 – Strange Black Bead

…

…

…

With Lin Ming's understanding of array formations in addition to the grandmist space that annihilated all Laws, it wasn't difficult for him to destroy a grand array formation that was only functioning at 20% or so.

This caused everyone to remain silent. Breaking through array formations like paper, slaughtering masters like chickens; Lin Ming was truly a dark star. It was impossible for them to think he wasn't even 30 years old yet, and that just six years ago he had broken through to Revolving Core.

Lin Ming's perception swept over the wreckage. After determining that there wasn't any problem with the treasure chambers, he stepped inside.

The Blood Slaughter Steppes was a gathering land for geniuses, and the martial artists that came here every year were all rich individuals of their sects. In addition to guarding the Eternal Demon Abyss, gathering wealth, treasures, the Blood Slaughter Steppes could be said to be paved with gold. Every High Lord was ridiculously rich, and as the Steppes Master who controlled all of the Blood Slaughter Steppes, the degree of valuables in his treasure chamber could be imagined.

It had to be known that not every martial artist needed to build a treasure chamber; normally a spatial ring was enough. The exceptions were large sects or great characters like the Steppes Master who had far too many treasures in his possession but still needed massive numbers of items to reward his followers. Only when a heaven-step spatial ring wasn't enough would a treasure chamber.

In this treasure chamber, there were 30-40 metal racks. Each rack was filled with heaven-step treasures, many of which were medium-grade heaven-step weapons. There were even some high-grade heaven-step treasures.

These things weren't useful to Lin Ming but they would still be useful for gifting others or for strengthening the forces of Divine Phoenix Island. Lin Ming waved his hand and received everything into the Extreme Violet Ring. This ring contained a true small world within it. There were palaces, a sun, grasslands; the storage capacity was nearly unlimited. Nearly anything could be placed inside.

Behind these weapons was a massive amount of Blood Demon Crystals. The dark crimson Blood Demon Crystals were piled up and formed a small hill. Most of them were medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals, but there was even a smaller hill that was comprised of high-grade Blood Demon Crystals.

Blood Demon Crystals was the common currency used by the Giant Demon race and Imp race. Lin Ming had initially used this sort of currency to purchase items when he was at the Skysplit Tower.

A high-grade Blood Demon Crystal was worth 100 medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals, or about the equivalent of 20-30 low-grade spirit essence stones. Lin Ming estimated that there were tens of millions of medium-grade Blood Demon Crystals and around a million high-grade Blood Demon Crystals. This could be exchanged for at least 30 million low-grade spirit essence stones!

Such a massive amount of wealth was the total accumulation of the Steppes Master for the last thousand years! To loose such an amount would even make a Divine Kingdom suffer!

Lin Ming wasn't polite; he took everything into his spatial ring.

Following that were Demon God Bones. Large and small Demon God Bones were like black colored beads, all of them piled up in two great boxes. This was also taken by Lin Ming.

As for pills, cultivation method manuals, and the rest, Lin Ming didn't have much interest in that. In terms of wealth, the Blood Slaughter Steppes was beyond rich, but in terms of pills and inheritances, they were actually inferior to the four Divine Kingdoms.

"Mm? What's this?"

Something caught Lin Ming's attention. He discovered that beside the boxes of Demon God Bones, there was a baby fist sized bead. It was black all over, and it seemed to be made of wood but also not made of wood. It was like stone, but not like stone at all. There were many strange demonic patterns that were engraved into its surface.

"This isn't a Demon God Bone."

Lin Ming felt that were no energy fluctuations coming from the black bead. He investigated it with his perception but also didn't find anything special about it. He reached for it, wanting to take a closer look of this bead.

As he took it in his hands his eyeballs nearly popped out of his head. Good heavens, this baby fist sized bead was even heavier than the Great Desolate Blood Halberd!

"What is this thing!?"

Lin Ming was completely stunned. With his casual million jin strength he still wasn't able to lift it!

He was forced to open the Gate of Pain and use 2 million jins of strength before being able to take the bead in his hand.

"This should weigh at least 1.5 million jins or even 1.8 million jins! This is absolutely the heaviest thing I have ever seen!"

The black bead was less than 1% the size of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, but it was actually two times heavier!

Lin Ming discovered that the structure holding the strange bead was very special. The material was a metal that could be used to forge a heaven-step treasure. The base was attached to the ground where a number of array formations supported it. Only then could it firmly carry the weight of the black bead, otherwise the black bead would have fallen through the ground.

"According to what I saw in the grandmist space about the evolution of the universe, such a heavy thing can only be produced within some great stars."

Within the grandmist space, Lin Ming learned that celestial bodies like the sun and moon couldn't last forever. The combustion of the sun would gradually burn away all of its energy, and it would slowly dim down before extinguishing into a dark star. Only the material of this dark star would have such weight.

Materials from that dark star would be understandable, and even grandmist energy was thousands of times heavier than the dark star matter. But the key point was that this black bead in Lin Ming's hand obviously didn't come from a dark star. Lin Ming could even feel a trace of the breath of life coming from within the bead.

Although it was incomparably weak, Lin Ming wasn't imagining things! If it weren't for his soul force being so powerful, he simply wouldn't have been able to sense it.

"This thing is alive?"

Lin Ming was startled. He nearly dropped the black bead on the floor.

If this was possibly alive, then the gravity of this situation surpassed that of some dark star material being here. What kind of existence was this? It couldn't be a dragon egg, could it!?

“Impossible! A dragon egg would not be so small. A True Dragon has a body that is tens of thousands of miles long, so it wouldn’t be strange for a dragon egg to be dozens of miles wide.”

Lin Ming used every method at his disposal to investigate the black bead. He even asked Demonshine and also scanned through the memories of the Ancient Demon, finally discovering nothing at all.

The only thing he determined was that Luosha had obtained this black bead from the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, there lived unfathomable existences. Luosha had been the Steppes Master for over a thousand years, and every ten years he would organize High Lords to explore the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Whatever strange and mystical items that these High Lords first picked up that came from the eruptions deep within the Eternal Demon Abyss should be given to Luosha.

There was no doubt that Luosha also had no idea what this bead was. He likely thought that it was very magical, and decided to keep it and slowly study it, hoping that one day he would determine just what sort of precious treasure it was.

“I’ll take this first. If I ask Senior Fairy Feng then she might know what it is.”

Lin Ming touched his left hand and placed the black bead into the Extreme Violet Ring.

After sweeping through Luosha’s treasure chamber in a single go, Lin Ming searched through the old Imp’s spatial ring. This fellow had been the previous Steppes Master; his total wealth surpassed even Luosha.

It was only a pity that the majority of the old Imp’s wealth was hidden in his own treasure chamber. The contents of this spatial ring was only a small part of it.

Lin Ming searched through the spatial ring but didn’t discover anything as strange as that black bead. As for the rest of the normal treasures, they totaled to around 10-20 million spirit essence stones and there was even a jade slip containing the ‘High Chaos Devil Arts’. Lin Ming browsed through it. This cultivation method was much more profound than what he had imagined. It was even more exquisite than the Great Desolate Halberd Art, and wasn’t inferior to some inheritances from the Divine Realm. Some of the Concepts and Laws within it were lost unfortunately, so the old Imp wasn’t able to display its full might.

“It seems this cultivation method was also found in the Eternal Demon Abyss. The Eternal Demon Abyss is truly a land filled with treasures. I wonder just how many people obtained their lucky chances there.

“This High Chaos Devil Arts would actually be quite useful for me to study. It would give me a much better soul attack method.”

Lin Ming’s soul was extremely formidable, but it was inferior to his battle spirit.

A battle spirit was the manifestation of will and thoughts. Although related, it was different from the soul.

Will was an energy wave emitted from the brain; it was a type of energy similar to a force field. There were even some mortals with a particularly powerful will that could move objects in space. These types of people were referred to as telekinetics. If these people had extraordinary martial arts talent, it would be very easy for them to form a battle spirit before they reached the Divine Sea.

A battle spirit couldn’t directly be used to attack material objects, but it could be attached to anything to strengthen its power. This applied to true essence, force fields, soul, and many other things.

If Lin Ming attached his battle spirit to his soul, in addition to his Samsara martial intent, his soul defense power would be incredibly powerful. Anyone that tried to use a soul attack against him would be seeking death. For instance, that old Imp had his chaos demon spirit shattered in half after trying to use a soul attack.

Lin Ming's soul defense was freakishly abnormal. But unfortunately, besides the Samsara martial intent, he didn't have any true soul attack method he could use to kill enemies on his own initiative. This was because he didn't have an appropriate soul-based martial skill.

This High Chaos Devil Arts could change this. With Lin Ming's soul and perception as the foundation, in addition to his Samsara martial intent and Saint artifact bracer supporting him, it would only take from ten days up to half a month to learn this.

"Demonshine, take control all of these people and clear out the Blood Slaughter Steppes in the next several months. Everyone that remains must obey my commands, otherwise slaughter them without mercy! I'll use this time period to close up and organize my harvests. The day I leave seclusion is the day we return to the Sky Spill Continent!"

In Lin Ming's heart, Yang Yun was one of the few people that he wasn't able to understand. Almost all enemies Lin Ming had faced were individuals that had been blinded by greed. Their main goals were to gather wealth and amass treasures, or cultivate to a higher boundary so that they would have a longer life. Those like Xuan Wuji and Situ Haotian could be included in this classification.

But Yang Yun was different. He was an ambitious man with ambitious ideals – these ideals could possibly be called the definition of madness. Moreover, he used every possible effort to walk towards his goals, willing to use any method to accomplish it, no matter how underhanded or unscrupulous it would be.

Such a person was the most terrifying opponent of all!

Every day that Yang Yun remained in the Sky Spill Continent was another day that Lin Ming remained uneasy. He simply didn't know just what sort of mess Yang Yun would stir up.

At this time, Lin Ming had closed up in a chamber of the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple. The main portion of his time would be used to perceive the Ancient Devil's memories.

What Lin Ming found surprising, was that this Ancient Devil was actually a magnificent array master; he was skilled in demonic path array formations.

Although Lin Ming had absorbed the memories of an array master in the past, that array master had been biased towards the orthodox path. If he could use these demonic array techniques to complement the orthodox array techniques, then his array formation skill would rise to yet another level!

“Cyclic Demon Slaughter Array, Spectral Blood Skylock Array, Yellow Springs Ghost Burying Array, Six Path Samsara Array.” Lin Ming slowly scanned through these memories. Whenever his mind began to be dazed and his thoughts a bit confused, the Saint artifact bracer he wore would sent up relaxing waves of energy into his mind like a cool spring wind. This cleared his mind, making all his thoughts much more lucid.

Know yourself, know your enemy, and be undefeated! Most of Yang Yun’s cultivation methods came from the Ancient Devil. When they inevitably battled in the future, the Ancient Devil would surely attach himself to Yang Yun to increase his strength. As long as Lin Ming could familiarize himself with the techniques and abilities of the Ancient Devil, then the battle was already half won!

Chapter 914 – Returning to The Sky Spill Continent

Chapter 914 – Returning to The Sky Spill Continent

…

…

…

In the vast and endless sea, a group of sharks was shuttling through a raging storm. They were a terrifying pack of beasts, powerful and vicious, and the leader of these sharks was a 70-80 foot long great shark that was gray all over. Its dorsal fin cut upwards like a steel knife, and its great mouth was large enough to swallow an elephant.

On the back of this giant shark, there was actually a little girl sitting there. Her body was round and slightly pudgy, and her cheeks were cute and pinchable. Her powdered body looked just like a newly born mouse.

She wore a small red bellyband and there was a shining silver necklace around her neck. Her hair was wet with seawater, causing it to stick to her forehead. Her cheeks dripped with crystal clear droplets of water, and her two meaty arms looked like lotus roots as they were squished together.

This little girl only looked around seven or eight years old. As she sat on the back of this giant shark, there wasn’t the least bit of fear in her expression. Rather, a bright smile lit up her face as she giggled, her voice like tinkling silver bells. But, the tone was strangely strong. In this billowing storm, it was actually quite clear.

This was also a reasonable matter. Although this little girl looked like a porcelain doll, the truth was that her cultivation was already at the Bone Forging realm; she was just a step away from reaching Pulse Condensation.

“Little Gray, swim faster! Hurry up! Go, go, go, let’s get past those waves!”

The little girl hugged the shark fin that was even taller than she was as she shouted out in the air. Her large and intelligent black eyes were filled with excitement and mischief. And, the little shark called ‘Little Gray’ that she was riding seemed willing to listen to the little girl. It swam even faster in the storm.

At this moment, a red light suddenly gathered in front of her and then a little red pug appeared by her side. The pug floated in the air, its entire body covered in red fur. This was Demonshine’s soul, sent by Lin Ming to oversee the Giant Leviathan.

“You little devil, it’s time to return.” Demonshine slowly said, trying to keep his voice deep and majestic.

“Ah? Little Red! Come and play with me!” As the little girl saw Demonshine appear, she began to clap excitedly.

As Demonshine heard the little girl call him ‘Little Red’, he immediately sulked. But facing this little brat there was nothing he could do. This was because she was Lin Ming’s little sister, Lin Xiaoge.

With all those heavenly materials that Lin Ming had brought back, Lin Xiaoge had been bathed in all sorts of liquid medicines since she was born. Now, she had already reached the fifth stage of Body Transformation, the Bone Forging realm. If this sort of scene was placed in the Sky Fortune Kingdom then that would truly be an astonishing scene. This was because the children of Sky Fortune Kingdom lacked these sorts of heavenly materials. They would often have to wait until they were 12 years old and their bones and muscles had reached a certain level of strength before they were able to practice martial arts, otherwise they would ruin their not fully developed body.

Demonshine wagged a paw at the little girl, a serious expression on his face as he said, “We have to return immediately. We’re about to return to the Sky Spill Continent!”

Over three years had passed since Lin Ming’s battle with Yang Yun and the Ancient Devil. During the first year, Lin Ming had spent that time closing up in the Sky Spill Continent. Then, he spent a year and three months tempering his will in the Road of Emperor, perceiving the grandmist space, and enhancing his cultivation boundary. The final 10 months were spent digesting the Ancient Devil’s memories in the Blood Slaughter Divine Temple’s training chamber and studying all sorts of demonic path array formations, the Concept of Time, as well as the Concept of Darkness.

The array formations of the Divine Realm were limitless and diverse. The Ancient Devil had extremely high achievements in the Dao of array formations. Even if he took a disciple and taught him without reservation, it would still take the disciple hundreds, or even thousands of years to reach a similar level of understanding, and all of this was based on the premise that the disciple’s talent was amazing.

There was no other way to go about this. Alchemy, refining, inscription, array formations: all of these auxiliary skills required one to remember and comprehend an immense amount of principles and theories, and then undergo a massive period of practice and failure in order to slowly improve.

But Lin Ming was the exception to the rule; he was able to directly inherit the memories of the Ancient Devil. That was equal to inheriting all of the Ancient Devil’s array formation experience as well as his understandings towards it. Lin Ming only required some time to fully absorb these memories and adapt them to his own body to completely transform this array formation knowledge to become his own. Coupled with some extra practice, Lin Ming could easily become an array formation grandmaster of his era.

In just a short 10 months, Lin Ming’s skill in array formations had risen to another level! In addition, Lin Ming originally had a foundation of orthodox array formations. His current understanding of array formations even surpassed the Ancient Devil’s now!

Besides his understanding of array formations was increasing, the Ancient Devil's understandings of the Concept of Space and Concept of Darkness were also thoroughly assimilated by Lin Ming!

Lin Ming now had confidence he could fight Yang Yun head on. Even if he couldn't defeat him, he could still rely on his abnormal speed to escape.

Since he had this assurance, he decided now was the time to return to the Sky Spill Continent!

And in the South Sea, during the last three years the Giant Leviathan had penetrated 30 million miles into the deep waters. The water depth reached thousands of miles and the underwater pressure reached an unimaginable degree.

In the endless South Sea, even the massive Giant Leviathan could only be considered a slightly big fish here. If Yang Yun wanted to find them, it would be like searching for a needle in a haystack; wasn't it just easier said than done?

Thus, Demonshine had been passing these days with carefree leisure. Periodically he would have the Giant Leviathan surface to the shallow waters to breathe. And under his guidance, Lin Xiaoge also rapidly grew. The little girl wasn't big, but her courage was much larger than her body. For her to dare to ride on a shark, she was just like a small witch on the waters.

"Return to the Sky Spill Continent?" Lin Xiaoge's eyes widened. Although she was young, she understood more or less what had happened and also why they had to flee, becoming fugitives. Now that Demonshine said that he was returning, there was obvious only one possibility.

She excitedly asked, "Is my big brother coming back?"

"Yes, we've already come back, we're at the boundaries of the South Horizon Region. We're returning earlier than I had anticipated. Once we truly come back, your big brother will solve everything." Demonshine had kept a wisp of his soul with Lin Ming. He could use this wisp of soul to easily communicate and he also understood clearly where Lin Ming's position was.

At this time, Lin Ming had just passed through the ancient transmission array. As he stood above the boundless South Sea and he watched the familiar lands around him, an incomparably complex feeling surged in his heart.

He had grown up in the South Horizon Region, and here he had encountered powerful enemies that had forced him to dead ends many times. This was the road that martial artists had to take. Although it couldn't be said to be taking the entire world as an enemy, a martial artist would inevitably run into increasingly formidable adversaries. One had to step on their corpses to walk forwards, or otherwise be stepped on by them instead, dying and paving the road for them.

With a sudden thought, Lin Ming turned towards the four Divine Kingdoms and flew straight ahead. He no longer needed to use a tool like a Godspeed Boat. No matter what type of extreme speed magic tool it was, it still wouldn't be able to keep up with one-fifth of Lin Ming's speed. Moreover, Lin Ming could maintain such speed continuously for half a month.

"All of the transmission arrays from here to the four Divine Kingdoms must be controlled by Yang Yun already. As long as I appear in public, he will inevitably obtain this news. That's also fine. I'll come to you and see just where the limits of your strength are!"

As Lin Ming flew, he simultaneously sensed the battle spirit tracing mark that he had left in Elder Sun. He didn't know where Yang Yun was now and wanted to find him as quickly as possible. Doing so through Elder Sun would be the fastest and most efficient method.

Lin Ming was certain that Elder Sun would have gone to Yang Yun about the matter of the battle spirit tracing mark in order to seek his protection. But, Yang Yun likely didn't help Elder Sun to erase that tracing mark. Rather, he would purposely let it remain as bait for a trap. Once Yang Yun discovered that Lin Ming was going over to kill Elder Sun, he would definitely rush over as soon as possible.

Although the bait wasn’t too tempting to Lin Ming, it was still better than nothing.

Lin Ming closed his eyes and calmly felt out the position of the battle spirit mark. His guess was correct; Yang Yun hadn’t yet removed the tracing mark, allowing it to remain in Elder Sun’s body instead.

It was just that…

“Mm? Why is it so near? That Elder Sun is in the South Horizon Region, and the position is… the Sky Fortune Kingdom!!” Lin Ming was surprised. In these past three years, it seemed that his background and identity had been seen through by Yang Yun!

“Sky Fortune Kingdom… Sky Fortune Kingdom…”

Lin Ming muttered to himself again and again. The sudden discovery of Elder Sun in the Sky Fortune Kingdom caused him to have a brief moment of panic. That was his homeland. Luckily, Qin Xingxuan, Mu Qianyu, and his parents had already been transferred deep into the South Sea, and Demonshine had told him they were all safe.

“The only attachment that I have left in the Sky Fortune Kingdom is… the Lin Family Clan?” Lin Ming’s gaze turned cold as he thought of this. In emotional terms, Lin Ming didn’t feel much of a sense of belonging to the Lin Family Clan. He had come from a minor branch and had no hopes of inheriting the family clan’s property to begin with. His parents had depended on renting out a small business from the family clan – the Lin Family Restaurant, in order to make a living. When Lin Ming had first decided to practice martial arts, he didn’t have the support of the Lin Family Clan, otherwise he wouldn’t have been bound by so many financial constraints at the start.

But even though he thought that, the Lin Family were still his relatives and also his roots. The reason he could be born into this world was all because of the Lin Family. As for being treated with cold indifference at the start, Lin Ming didn’t hold any lingering grudges or resentment. In order for a family clan to exist, they had to follow the survival of the fittest and distribute limited resources in a reasonable manner. Otherwise, if everyone were to divide the pot of resources then the family clan would perish after a single generation.

“Yang Yun… you really do resort to all cruel methods, no matter how unscrupulous they are. You didn’t manage to find those that were most important to me, thus you decided to aim at the Lin Family even though I am not too attached to them. I have already reached the point that I must kill that Elder Sun, and any trap you put there is meaningless. Even so, you placing Elder Sun in the Sky Fortune Kingdom, even with a tracing mark to reveal his location, is your message to me saying that you already completely control the Lin Family Clan. I suppose I have no choice but to come.”

Lin Ming’s face darkened. He didn’t need to think too much to know that the current Green Mulberry City had trap array formations laid down all over the land, waiting for him to jump into it.

However, this was exactly what he wanted. Even though there were tigers in the mountain, he still walked straight towards it. This was the confidence brought about by strength!

“Let me take a good look at what traps you have waiting for me!” Lin Ming coldly snorted and then flew straight towards the Sky Fortune Kingdom!

The Sky Fortune Kingdom was only several hundred thousand miles from the South Sea. With Lin Ming’s speed, he quickly saw the endless coastline ahead of him. Right after reaching the coast, there was a great wilderness. This was the Southern Wilderness. Once he crossed here, he would be at the Sky Fortune Kingdom.

Chapter 915 – Old Friends, Wrath

Chapter 915 – Old Friends, Wrath

…

…

…

Sky Fortune Kingdom was a tiny common country that was subordinate to the Seven Profound Territory of the South Horizon Region's Divine Phoenix Province. It had a populations of several tens of million and was only a standard mortal country with no sect inheritances of any kind; they only had their own ingrown system of their country. To develop a Xiantian powerhouse was impossibly difficult. This was because without resources and guidance, one could only explore the road of martial arts on their own. Any talent born there would be buried in the barren lands.

And now, as Lin Ming approached Green Mulberry City, he actually discovered a strange energy atmosphere. This sort of revolving energy formation that hid the rules of the Great Dao naturally came from the hands of a top powerhouse.

"They really are waiting for me there!"

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a harsh light. With a simple thought, his figure vanished as he calmly hid away in a space distortion. With his understanding towards the Space Laws, hiding his body with space distortions was a simple matter. In this world, besides Yang Yun, Old Man Good Fortune, and perhaps a few others, there was no one who could find out he was here.

Lin Ming followed the battle spirit tracing mark's location all the way to the Lin Family residence in Green Mulberry City. Elder Sun was indeed here, but the entire 10 mile area around the Lin Family residence was blocked off by an array formation. As mortals, the Lin Family descendants and anyone else simply weren't able to leave.

As Lin Ming was thinking about what to do first, he suddenly caught sight of a woman's figure. His heart shook, and an inexplicably deep sense of sorrow and grief was born in his heart. The space distortion he was hiding in trembled for a brief moment, nearly revealing a flaw.

This woman wore a simple blue cotton dress. Her appearance was delicate and pretty and her skin was beautiful and smooth. Her wet hair was sticking to the side of her face, and her left sleeve hung far downwards. She raised a heavy wooden bucket as she drew water from a well.

This woman was Lan Yunyue.

"Lan Yunyue..."

Lin Ming was lost for a moment, as if he had fallen into a long recollection of memories. When he had parted with Lan Yunyue, she was still 15-16 years old, and her face still had a hint of young naiveté. But that innocence could no longer be found on the current Lan Yunyue. She looked tired, exhausted, and somewhat sad.

The simple blue dress had no lace or decorations. Her hair was casually pulled up and tied back with a blue cloth strip. At this time, the winter of Sky Fortune Kingdom had just arrived. As the leaves fell within the Lin Family's courtyard, they seemed a bit desolate. A faint winter breeze blew inwards, causing Lan Yunyue's clothes to flap and a bleak wind to fill the air.

Ten years!

When Lin Ming and Lan Yunyue broke up in the past, they had been less than 16 years old. The Sky Fortune Kingdom, the Seven Profound Martial House – those days had passed by like a dream. He didn't enter the Seven Profound Martial House because of Lan Yunyue, but rather for himself. He fought to succeed because he wanted to prove that he was no worse than anyone else.

And now he was nearly 26 years old, and his strength was infinitely close to the highest under the heavens from ancient times. He had achieved his promise and had also accomplished it to an unbelievable degree. That beautiful and pleasant with a hint of ladylike temperament Lan Yunyue of the past was now giving off a sad and melancholic feeling.

Although she was still as beautiful as before, and her figure was more curvaceous and abundant than in the past, her bleak eyes and worn-down face made his heart ache with a bitter pain.

It was like she had become the most common woman of the Sky Fortune Kingdom. Every day was filled with hard work and labor, and even if someone bullied and humiliated her, she would have no choice but to remain silent, patiently and submissively resigning herself to her fate.

Lan Yunyue poured the bucket of water into a large pot, lit a fire, added some firewood, and then began to boil the water.

The entire process was performed silently. As she looked at the hazy steam rising from the pot, she seemed to be lost in thought. Occasionally, a once warm and happy memory would flash by in her mind and she would faintly smile. But then she would shake her head, sighing all the while.

The past was covered by wind and dust, and left beneath this faint wind and dust of time, just whose shattered dreams were buried there?

Ten years filled with endless life and death, even a broken dream was an unforgettable memory, and yet meeting again was not to be…

After the water was prepared, Lan Yunyue used the hot water to prepare a pot of tea and then brought it to the Lin Family’s front hall. Here, there was a young man and a young woman sitting in a chair, both of them handsome and pretty individuals. Beside them was a wrinkled old woman with a ruthless light in her eyes. This old woman was the Asura Divine Kingdom's Royal Princess – Situ Yaoxi.

As for that young man and woman, they were both similar to Situ Yaoyue: hidden strengths of the Asura Divine Kingdom. They had been supplied with many resources since childhood, but the only difference between them was that they were much weaker than Situ Yaoyue.

As Situ Yaoxi saw Lan Yunyue prepare a pot of tea and place the teacup onto the table, she sneered and said, "You little slut, how can you be so slow in steeping some tea!"

As she spoke, the young woman beside Situ Yaoxi suddenly slapped Lan Yunyue without any warning. This young woman was Situ Meiyue, also a talent of the Asura Divine Kingdom. She had a sixth stage Life Destruction cultivation and even though she was slightly worse than Situ Luosha, she still had hopes of reaching the Divine Sea. Even a slap that didn't have any true essence contained in it still sent Lan Yunyue tumbling to the ground like piece of straw.

Lan Yunyue didn't speak. She only clutched her face, a trail of blood leaking down from her lips.

"Grandaunt, it seems that this stupid little slut is insignificant to that damned dog Lin Ming. She was nothing but his girlfriend during his common mortal times, and they have already separated since then. She even betrayed him in the past. Lin Ming won't feel anything even if we kill her!"

The young woman looked at Lan Yunyue with contempt in her eyes. In her opinion, a martial artist was doomed to loneliness as they walked the road of martial arts – their concept of affection was also very faint. Moreover, Lan Yunyue didn't even have any further relationship with Lin Ming; it was impossible to use her as a chip to coerce him.

Lan Yunyue bit down on her lips. Situ Meiyue's words twisted into her heart like a knife. Indeed, she was well aware that she was insignificant in Lin Ming's eyes. She had originally thought that her life would never intersect with Lin Ming's again, but she also never imagined she would be held prisoner by Lin Ming's enemies and used as a bargaining chip to force his hand.

The boundaries of these individuals already surpassed the limited knowledge she had. Even this young woman could cause the Seven Profound Valleys' Highest Elder to vomit blood and die with just a glance, much less this unfathomable old woman.

With such terrifying enemies here, Lan Yunyue held no hopes that Lin Ming would appear. If he walked into their trap, then Lin Ming's fate would be miserable no matter how powerful he had become.

"What are you looking at, you cheap slut! How about I dig out your eyes right here? In my eyes you are nothing more than an ant, we are simply people of two different worlds. If it weren't for Lin Ming then our paths would have never crossed. It should be your honor that I slapped you just now!"

Situ Meiyue's voice and eyes were filled with disdain. She was a proud daughter of heaven that had a chance of reaching the Divine Sea in the future. To someone as arrogant as her, a Houtian realm martial artist like Lan Yunyue was no different from a bug in her eyes. It was already a favor for her to experience a slap from such a higher level existence.

Within the space distortion, Lin Ming's fists began to clench tighter and tighter, as if space itself would crumble underneath his hands! In that moment, he nearly attacked that vicious woman along with that hag Situ Yaoxi and would have torn them to shreds, but he contained his rising anger. He wanted to continue listening and see just what they knew about Yang Yun's plans and how Yang Yun planned on dealing with him.

"This cheap slut is nothing in Lin Ming's eyes, but she was still his woman once upon a time. Hehe, even though I can't find Lin Ming, taking this cheap slut as my slave and using her to vent my anger is also good. It's still a pity that I couldn't find Mu Qianyu and Qin

Xingxuan. If I could catch them, I could turn them into my maids and torture them every day. And then once Yang Yun captured Lin Ming, I could throw those two cheap sluts to some martial artist that walks the path of obscenity and have them raped in front of him. Then I'd toss them to a pack of sex fiends until their yin energy is all sucked dry! Hahaha! I want to have that little beast wish that he could dig his eyes out! I want him to suffer a life worse than death!" Situ Yaoxi's eyes were filled with hatred. She was very unhappy that she still hadn't been able to catch Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu.

At this moment, the young man beside Situ Yaoxi said, "Grandaunt, let alone Lan Yunyue, even the entire Lin Family Clan is likely worthless in Lin Ming's eyes. If Lin Ming doesn't show up, then do we still have to keep guard here and stay with these wretched mortals all day?"

These youths were part of the Situ Family Clan bloodline. Although their cultivation was only at the fifth and sixth stage of Life Destruction they actually had the strength to stand in the Destiny Decree. Their future was bright and limitless. They certainly didn't want to stay with these mortals in this god-forsaken land with its barren heaven and earth origin energy.

"These are Yang Yun's orders; who can possibly defy them? However, it doesn't matter even if Lin Ming doesn't come. Yang Yun's calculations are magnificent. He is implementing a plan already. Probably in just another year, there will be no place on this continent that Lin Ming will be able to hide in. When that time comes, Yang Yun will be able to lock onto his position even if he climbs into the heavens or dives into the sea; he will absolutely die! At that time, I will take that little beast's soul and slowly boil it away, hehehe. I want him to beg for death!"

Situ Yaoxi seemed to imagine the scene of Lin Ming's death and a cruel and wide smile flashed across her face.

Lin Ming looked at all of this from the space distortion he was in. His knuckles crackled in his silent rage. In his life, he had never desired to kill a person as much as he did now. Moreover, he wanted to murder them with the cruelest and most sinister method possible! "Yang Yun has some great plan aimed at me and it seems he'll be able to find me after a year.

Indeed, he wasn't wasting his time while I was gone! But too bad for him, I have already returned!"

At this moment, Situ Yaoxi continued to say, "We must still remain on guard here for another year. Humph, we've arranged so many traps in Green Mulberry City that it will be a waste if Lin Ming doesn't show up. That boy left a tracing mark in Patriarch Sun's body and he'll certainly discover that Patriarch Sun is at the Lin Family. If he doesn't show up then that's only because we weren't cruel enough! It seems that only cutting off a few fingers or half a palm was being too soft on them. Meiyue, chop off that cheap slut's arm and feed it to the dogs. Then grab 20 direct descendant juniors of the Lin Family and cut off their arms too! I want to see just what response that little beast Lin Ming will have then!"

As Situ Yaoxi spoke, she casually picked up that cup of boiling tea and threw it at Lan Yunyue!

Chapter 916 – Taking Control

Chapter 916 – Taking Control

…

…

…

As Lin Ming saw the teacup that was flying through the air and also remembered the words that Situ Yaoxi had just said, ‘It seems only cutting off a few fingers or half a palm was being too soft on them’, both of his eyes turned crimson with wrath.

The memory of Lan Yunyue just now struck him like a bolt of lightning. Her left sleeve had been hanging downwards, concealing her hand. She had left it hanging there and obstructing her movement, no matter whether she was boiling water or steeping the tea. He had thought that it was strange, though he hadn’t been paying too much attention. But now, as he suddenly understood just what had happened, his mind nearly turned blank with fury.

His perception shot out towards Lan Yunyue’s left sleeve and he discovered that she only had half a palm left; all five of her fingers had been cut off!

In that moment, Lin Ming’s eyes nearly popped out of his head as he felt his heart crack into seven or eight pieces. In his life, he had never experienced such a profound hatred and killing intent!

As the teacup flew in the air, the boiling tea water rained downwards. But as Lan Yunyue saw this teacup flying towards her, her face paled; she was unable to dodge it. Even though Situ Yaoxi had only casually thrown the teacup at her, this teacup still contained the power of Laws. With Lan Yunyue’s mere Houtian realm cultivation, it was impossible for her to avoid it.

Just as the teacup was about to hit her head, it suddenly shattered as if it had struck something. Then, in Lan Yunyue's bewildered gaze, the teacup turned into dust that vanished altogether. All of the boiling tea water also disappeared. This wasn't evaporation – this was truly ceasing to exist, true annihilation!

This is…

Lan Yunyue's eyes shot open. She watched as the space in front of her tore apart, and a black-clothed young man with flowing long hair stepped out from the void. He grasped a blood red halberd in his hands. His inky black hair nearly hung to his knees and his aura was deep enough to overwhelm the world!

His eyebrows were like swords that slanted to his temples. His appearance was handsome, his build strong yet slender. He seemed like a jade-like immortal, but his eyes actually contained a passionate rage and resentment that could make the heavens shiver!

An invisible killing intent came shrouding down, locking this entire space. At this time, Lin Ming no longer cared about listening in on whatever information there was about Yang Yun.

All he wanted to do now was to kill off these people present with the cruelest and most inhumane methods possible!

He spoke slowly, enunciating each and every word. His voice dripped with an icy cold tone that stabbed to the bone, "I want all of you to die here! I will obliterate your souls so that you will never experience samsara, you will never reincarnate!"

"Lin Ming!" As Situ Meiyue and the young man saw Lin Ming suddenly appear, they jumped up like a cat whose tail was stomped on. Although they were normally insufferable and arrogant individuals, in the face of the eternally monstrous freak Lin Ming, just where would they find the capital to be proud and haughty? He was an abnormality that already had the power to contend with a weak Divine Sea powerhouse three years ago!

“Don’t panic!” After Situ Yaoxi was shocked for a moment, she immediately calmed down. Lin Ming’s appearance here was exactly what she was hoping for!

“Hehe, Lin Ming, you could walk through the roads of heaven but you would rather break through the gates of hell! You clearly know there is a trap here and yet you rush in like an idiot! It seems that I underestimated just how important this little slut is in your heart. Good! Very good! If I had known she was so important to you earlier then I would have tortured her even more! I’d have cut open her face, torn off her nose, and dug out her eyes! And it’s not too late now either. Slowly torturing her in front of you would have an even better effect! Hahahaha!”

Situ Yaoxi had already gone mad. She recklessly laughed and crushed a bead in her hand. Lin Ming suddenly felt that the world rules around him had slightly changed, as if the space had suddenly contracted around him!

‘Mm? This is... the Spectral Blood Skylock Array!’

The Spectral Blood Skylock Array was one of the array formations that the Ancient Devil was highly proud of. It could lock down the world rules of space and time in an area, trapping a martial artist within so that they couldn’t leave.

The Spectral Blood Skylock Array had to be arranged in advance. It would form a trap in an area of several miles, and once someone were to step in range of this array formation, one only had to crush a previously prepared array bead to activate the array. Once the array formation started, it would suddenly shrink and trap everyone within a 30 foot space, imprisoning all supernatural powers.

Because this array formation was a trap, it was very easily hidden; it was hard for anyone to sense it. However, Lin Ming had perceived the memories of the Ancient Devil and was familiar with all circumstances of the Spectral Blood Skylock Array. If he had been more careful ahead of time and had investigated, then he would have discovered the Spectral Blood Skylock Array. But since he was hiding in the space distortion to avoid Situ Yaoxi, he naturally wasn’t able to release his perception, thus he hadn’t discovered it before now.

“Hahaha, you’re an idiot, an idiot! I’ve never seen such an idiot before!” Situ Yaoxi laughed as she suddenly saw herself in control of Lin Ming. She knew that after three years she was likely not Lin Ming’s match, but with Yang Yun’s array formation here, capturing Lin Ming would be easy.

Behind Lin Ming, Lan Yunyue first felt surprised to see him suddenly appear, then incredulity, and then nervousness. She didn’t know about the Spectral Blood Skylock Array, but she knew that these people had certainly prepared a trap for Lin Ming and were waiting for him to appear here.

She cried out in dismay, “Lin Ming, hurry up and run! They’ve set a trap for you!”

“Hahaha, you stupid little slut, you really are an idiot! This little beast was already doomed the moment he stepped into my trap! He has already been surrounded!” The young man beside Situ Yaoxi began laughing crazily. For the eternally number one monstrous genius to perish under his hands was a matter to be proud of. Although he didn’t have any hopes that he could obtain the secrets on Lin Ming’s body, he still hoped he could inherit a small portion of Lin Ming’s destiny.

As Lan Yunyue heard the young man speak, her heart faded like a dying candle. “Lin Ming… I…”

Her eyes were filled with tears. She felt as if a knife were twisted into her heart. She would rather that Lin Ming be cruel and completely disregard her, she would rather her arm be cut off, she would rather be humiliated by a group of sex fiends; she would rather all of that happen than for Lin Ming to die here because of her.

“Humph, disgusting bitch, although you are stupid, you actually dare to warn Lin Ming in front of me. You really are too impatient to die. Meiyue, Yangon, I want you to tear off this slut’s clothes and rip off a chunk of her meat! I’m looking forwards to enjoying her expression!”

“Haha, alright!” As the young man heard Situ Yaoxi’s orders, he wickedly smiled. He was Situ Yangon.

Lan Yunyue clutched her arms together as she saw the two youths walk towards her. Her face paled and her eyes filled with lifeless despair. But, what she worried about was not herself. She looked at Lin Ming as tears flowed down her cheeks. “I am sorry… I am so sorry… my death is worthless, you… you shouldn’t have come…”

Within the Spectral Blood Skylock Array, Lin Ming remained silent. His thoughts were completely concentrated on the Spectral Blood Skylock Array’s array heart. The Saint artifact bracer on his wrist began to shine with a golden light. The angrier he became, the clearer his thoughts were. He already understood this array. Now, he only needed to understand its arrangement of runes. Once he did that, he could pour his own true essence into it and wrest away control of the array formation.

As Situ Yaoxi saw all of this happen, she was increasingly happy and satisfied, and her thoughts became that much more smooth. Because of Lin Ming, her face had been swept to the floor. She had suffered great losses that left her trembling with rage, and now she was finally able to take revenge.

“I originally thought that this worthless woman wasn’t even worth a damn in your heart, so I never placed her in my eyes. But if I knew that you thought so greatly of her then I would have called several freakish sex demons to rape her in front of you today so that she would beg for death!”

“Haha, Grandaunt, this nephew also understands some obscenity path cultivation methods to suck up a woman’s yin energy and nourish my yang energy. If you wish, I can try them out on her today. It’s just that this woman’s cultivation is too low, so there isn’t much primordial yin energy I would be able to obtain from her. Rather, she might be the one that profits from me. Heh, then today I will bestow upon her a lucky chance.” Situ Yangon manically grinned as he jumped towards Lan Yunyue. But at this moment, Lin Ming’s eyes burst open with a sharp light. In just five breaths of time, the entire Spectral Blood Skylock Array had been completely unraveled by him.

“Spectral Blood Skylock Array, expand!” Lin Ming cried out. He opened the Heretical God Force to the limit as he poured his true essence into the Spectral Blood Skylock Array, tracing his energy across the arrangement of runes and stealing away control of the array formation! The mere 30 foot radius Spectral Blood Skylock Array suddenly expanded to a radius of 100 feet, completely covering Situ Yangon inside.

Peng!

Situ Yangon smashed into the array barrier. Blood surged in his body as stars appeared in his vision.

“How… how is this…”

Situ Yangon was completely stunned. He had been inexplicably trapped in the Spectral Blood Skylock Array with Lin Ming!!

How could this be possible!?

It wasn’t just Situ Yangon, but Situ Yaoxi and Situ Meiyue were also dumbfounded. They wanted to run away, but at this moment the Spectral Blood Skylock Array suddenly expanded outwards crazily once again. It grew out to a radius of several hundred feet, also covering Situ Yaoxi and Situ Meiyue!

In an instant, the three of them were trapped in an unbreakable cage with Lin Ming. They were like three dogs trapped in a pit with a wild lion; their fates could be imagined!

“What… what is going on here!?”

Situ Yaoxi was frightened as her complexion turned gray! As for Situ Meiyue and Situ Yangon, they both felt as if they had fallen into an icy lake, their hearts filling with horror!

The Spectral Blood Skylock Array was an array formation set down by Yang Yun! How could Lin Ming possibly seize control of it!?

Outside of the array formation, Lan Yunyue was completely unaware of what had just occurred. But she could see from the frightened expressions of the three people that Lin Ming had suddenly taken control of the situation. She felt as if she was dreaming all of this. In just a mere 10 years of time, Lin Ming had become someone that could make people like this fall into abject terror!

"Don't be afraid! Although this little beast managed to reach the fourth stage of Life Destruction in these last three years, I can still rely on my Divine Sea realm cultivation to withstand him for a brief period. Reinforcements should arrive by then! No one panic!" Situ Yaoxi roared out loud, wanting to see if she could send out this message to anyone listening.

But at this moment, Lin Ming suddenly rushed over. Without even using the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, he directly grabbed at Situ Yangon. Like an eagle catching a rabbit, with both of them locked in this space together, there was just no way for Situ Yangon to dodge!

"Grandaunt! Save me!" Situ Yangon was scared witless. His face was paler than death. Lin Ming's hand seemed as if it had taken hold of the space around him – there was nowhere for him to dodge to. Against Lin Ming, he was nothing more than a little baby facing an adult; he had no strength to resist. Even the true essence within his body had been instantly locked down. He was unable to circulate the energy within himself! This spooked him so much that he could only cry out to Situ Yaoxi.

"You little beast, let him go! I'll be the one to fight you!" Situ Yaoxi shrieked as she took out a crimson sickle and slashed at Lin Ming's neck. But at that moment, Situ Yaoxi actually paused in her steps. She saw that behind Lin Ming, a strange and bewitching blood lotus was blooming…

Chapter 917 – Kill, Kill, Kill!

Chapter 917 – Kill, Kill, Kill!

…

…

…

As that blood red lotus fully bloomed, Situ Yaoxi felt an invisible energy field overwhelm the skies and fall over the world. This force field was desolate, bleak, and carrying with it the aura of the Great Dao Laws, making one unable to defy it and have no choice but to prostrate themselves to the floor in awe and worship.

Covered in this energy field, she felt the last dregs of power leave her body. Her true essence collapsed and dispersed away, and she lacked even the strength to grab a chicken. It was like she had turned back into a common mortal. Let alone attack Lin Ming, she didn't even have the ability to run away.

"How could this happen?!" Situ Yaoxi said in panic. She was completely flustered. A martial artist was used to relying on their own strength. If they lost all of their strength and turned back into a mortal then how could they not be panicked?

Lin Ming didn't even bother to glance at Situ Yaoxi. He grabbed Situ Yangon like a chicken and lifted him off the ground.

"You… what are you doing!?" Situ Yangon pedaled his legs in the air. Lin Ming's hands were like a pincer, inescapable.

Lin Ming grinned devilishly, ignoring all of Situ Yangon's miserable howls, "Didn't you say you knew many obscenity path cultivation methods to suck up her primordial yin? Hehe, I will make it so that you'll never be able to use these techniques again."

“You… what are you planning to do!?” Situ Yangon thought that Lin Ming’s cold smile was like an inhuman devil’s. He shouted out even louder, trying his hardest to revolve his true essence, but no matter what he did, it was useless.

Lin Ming ignored Situ Yangon’s struggling. He lifted him higher, positioned himself between Situ Yangon’s legs and then shot his knee upwards!

Splat!

With the sound of a cracking egg, Situ Yangon let out a pitiful scream like a pig that was being butchered. Sticky blood dripped downwards. He felt a horrifying pain between his legs that made him wish he was dead!

Lin Ming’s knee strike had destroyed his functions as a man!

Martial artists’ capacity to withstand pain was extremely high. They could clench their teeth and break an arm or break a leg. They could even use heavenly materials to make up for their losses. But sexual organs were different; that was also where the dignity of a man was located. The psychological trauma of losing this part was even worse than physical pain.

“I was castrated… I was castrated… I, Situ Yangon, have resolved myself to become a Divine Sea powerhouse level extreme talent, and now I’ve been castrated by another!”

Situ Yangon’s pupils lost their focus. His lips trembled as he muttered to himself again and again. At this moment, his entire world had become dark and dreary!

Lin Ming sneered. Then, with a hard tug of his arm, there was a shockingly grotesque ‘ka ka ka’ sound as both of Situ Yangon’s hands were ripped off by Lin Ming! Lin Ming crushed Situ Yangon’s palms in his hands, even pulling out his bloody tendons!

Situ Yangon squealed like a pig. His entire body shook; this was a fate worse than death!

Like this, Lin Ming had crippled a fifth stage Life Destruction extreme genius. Without weapon, without martial skills, and without even true essence, he relied on only his physical strength to waste away Situ Yangon. This was a truly ridiculous level of strength!

Lin Ming tossed away Situ Yangon like a dead dog and then turned towards Situ Yaoxi and Situ Meiyue, his face filled with a fierce wrath!

At this time, both of Situ Yaoxi's legs were trembling, and Situ Meiyue was frightened to the point of curling up on herself. Her chest was violently heaving up and down and her beautiful face was as white as paper. She painfully said, "No… don't…"

As Situ Meiyue saw Lin Ming walk towards her, her legs gave way and she slumped to the ground. Her strength had vanished from her body and there was nowhere for her to retreat to. She was the same as Situ Yaoxi; underneath the effects of this strange force field, all of the true essence within her body had become stagnant. If it weren't for Lin Ming deliberately not killing them, they would have been turned to ashes long ago!

"Weren't you about to tear off her clothes and hack her to thousands of pieces?" Lin Ming first moved towards Situ Meiyue.

"I… I wouldn't dare, I wouldn't dare!" Situ Meiyue cried out. She had her own pride, but that was built over a foundation of absolute strength. And now that she was shrouded in the force field and had lost all of her strength, she was no different from a mortal. If she couldn't do anything, just where would her pride come from?

Outside of the array, Lan Yunyue watched blankly as all of this happened. She had no idea what was going on within the array formation. Those three people were obviously extremely powerful characters that could overturn the heavens, but how come they had turned into common people in front of Lin Ming? They didn't even have the strength to resist him and were letting him mess with them as he wished.

"Don't kill me, no, please, I'll do anything you want, I'll even be your slave, please don't kill me!" Situ Meiyue's heart of martial arts was originally shakier than Situ Yaoyue's and Situ Luosha's. With the threat of death hanging over her head, she was completely cowed.

"Slave? Humph, I have no need for you! Let me show you what it means to reap what you sow!"

Lin Ming suddenly thrust out his hands and tore off Situ Meiyue's clothes. Then he slammed his palm at her chest.

Pulse Cutting Palm!

Peng!

A violent true essence rampaged into Situ Meiyue's body where it recklessly destroyed everything in its path. All of her meridians shattered and she vomited out a mouthful of blood. Her true essence was broken up by Lin Ming and even her dantian ruptured, with origin energy rapidly dissipating from her!

Lin Ming's palm had completely wasted away all of Situ Meiyue's remarkable abilities!

Situ Meiyue certainly knew just what had happened. Her lips shivered, her expression like a dying light. As a proud daughter of heaven, she was used to being haughty and standing above all others. To suddenly fall from the position she had in the clouds, the pain in her heart could be imagined!

Lin Ming grabbed Situ Meiyue and tossed her out of the Spectral Blood Skylock Array, right at Lan Yunyue's feet. He had already become one with the Spectral Blood Skylock Array and he could open it however and whenever he wanted.

"I won't kill you, I will let you keep your life. I've abandoned all of your abilities but you've still crossed six stages of Life Destruction. Although your supernatural powers are shattered, your mortal body was still tempered after all and you'll have at least another thousand years of life. From this point onwards, you are her servant. You will act as her dog and bag and never violate a single order she gives. If you serve her diligently then perhaps I might restore some of your strength. Otherwise I will slowly hack you apart and make you wish I had killed you instead!”

Lin Ming had originally wanted to do to Situ Meiyue what she had been planning to do to Lan Yunyue. He would rip off her clothes and then slowly cut her apart. But as he began, he felt a tinge of disgust and loathing and thus chose a second punishment method instead.

“I’ll be a slave or servant…” Situ Meiyue’s lips shivered. For the proud and haughty her to serve a mortal for the rest of her life, that was even worse than killing her.

“Lin Ming… Lin Ming… you beast, I won’t let you go even when I’m a ghost!” Situ Yaoxi’s body trembled with anger and also with fear. In front of Lin Ming, she had no strength to resist him.

“Next is you!” Lin Ming slowly arrived in front of Situ Yaoxi, a fiendish grin hanging on his lips.

But at this time, the sound of bustling footsteps came from the other side of the door. Lin Ming turned to see several martial artists burst into the room. Most of them were juniors from the Asura Divine Kingdom, and there was even Elder Sun, whom Lin Ming had planted a tracing mark in.

“What happened here!?” As the others outside heard the pained screams coming from inside the front hall, they used their perception to investigate. However, their perception was blocked off from this area by some unknown force. By the time these people rushed over, they just happened to see this pitiful scene in front of them.

“Lin Lanjian!”

Elder Sun immediately recognized Lin Ming. However, he was still accustomed to calling Lin Ming by his fake name. This was because the name Lin Lanjian was his eternal nightmare!

“Hey, you’ve all made it here. Since you’ve come, don’t plan on leaving.” A cruel smile appeared on Lin Ming’s face.

Chapter 918 – Ten Steps To Kill One Person

Chapter 918 – Ten Steps To Kill One Person

…

…

…

Lin Ming had completely fallen into a violent rage. All of these people had entered the Lin Family, taken them hostage, humiliated the elderly, the women, and the children, and they even sliced off the fingers of Lan Yunyue and the Lin Family juniors.

All of them deserved nothing but death!

As Situ Yaoxi saw Lin Ming's thick killing intent overflow into the world, a rising horror emerged from within her. Yang Yun had given the mission of capturing or killing Lin Ming to her and Situ Bonan. After she experienced just how magnificent Yang Yun's array formation and methods were, she thought that Lin Ming would be instantly doomed the moment he took one step in here. In order to inherit a portion of Lin Ming's destiny after killing him, she had gathered as many outstanding talented juniors of the Asura Divine Kingdom as she could, so that they could gain some advantages when Lin Ming died.

Thus, most of the people that had rushed in here were the direct descendent juniors of the Asura Divine Kingdom; all of them were related to the future of the Asura Divine Kingdom.

As Situ Yaoxi saw them all rush into this god of death, Lin Ming, she began to panic. She wanted to warn all these people to run away, but just as was about to do so, she thought of Elder Sun. Elder Sun was not a part of her Asura Divine Kingdom; she naturally didn't want him to leave here alive. If this old fellow could stay and buy some time for them then perhaps she could be saved.

Situ Yaoxi just thought of this idea. She was about to use a true essence sound transmission to order all of the Asura Divine Kingdom juniors to quickly flee, but it was already too late.

Lin Ming's domination over the Spectral Blood Skylock Array far surpassed Situ Yaoxi's imagination. In just the blink of an eye, the Spectral Blood Skylock Array expanded several more hundred feet, rapidly covering everyone within it.

Lin Ming reached out his hands and directly snatched Lan Yunyue into the Extreme Violet Ring. Then, he coldly looked at everyone remaining as a thick murderous tone dripped from his voice.

"All of you have stepped on the road to death!"

"Lin Lanjian, just who do you think you are!? Do you really think that with your fourth stage Life Destruction cultivation you can do as you wish in this world? You think that you can summon clouds and rain if you want!?" Elder Sun was panic-stricken for a brief moment before quickly reacting. As the bait to attract Lin Ming here, Yang Yun had already given him a card to maintain his own life.

"Howling heaven mythic lion, come out!" In the blink of an eye, Elder Sun took out a leather bag from his sleeves and flung it into the sky. This was a vicious beast bag. It was a magic tool similar to a profound spirit pot, but while a profound spirit pot held plants, a vicious beast bag was used to summon beasts.

The summoned beast was crimson all over and seemed like a normal lion, except it was several dozen times the size of a regular lion!

As the crimson mythic lion appeared, it immediately occupied nearly half the space of the great front hall. Situ Yaoxi was overjoyed as she saw the beast appear. "A howling heaven mythic lion! Haha, Patriarch Sun has actually managed to obtain such a Saint Beast! I will join together with you and destroy this little bastard!"

A howling heaven mythic lion was a Saint Beast equal to a peak middle Divine Sea powerhouse. In addition, the physical body of a Saint Beast was extremely tough and formidable to begin with. A howling heaven mythic lion's true comprehensive combat strength wasn't that much worse than Situ Haotian's. With a howling heaven mythic lion added with two Divine Sea powerhouses, even if they couldn't defeat Lin Ming, they should still be able to force a draw. If they could do this then they could buy enough time for Yang Yun to rush over here. At that time, Lin Ming's moment of death would arrive!

Situ Yaoxi finally saw a faint hope of surviving through this calamity. As long as they could all persist until Yang Yun came then they would win!

"Roar!!"

The crimson mythic lion roared out and blood red flames and smoke suddenly wreathed its entire body. A terrifying miraculous aura surged outwards, causing all of the nearby martial artists to rapidly retreat. This was the pressure brought by the presence of a strong Saint Beast.

"Break the heavens!" With a loud order from Elder Sun, the howling heaven mythic lion slashed two large claws towards Lin Ming's head!

A Saint Beast was born with an inherently formidable physical body and they had no need to cultivate in order to use their energy. They were equal to a dual essence and energy cultivating martial artist. Just this claw strike was mighty enough to shake the heavens and earth. Even a divine mountain would be shorn apart by this attack!

"Mythic lion? Humph, the legends say that a mythic lion is the son of a True Dragon. Such a beast with a meager and nearly undetectable bloodline actually dares to call itself a howling heaven mythic lion? Just die!"

Lin Ming sneered, and the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and Heretical God Force erupted. He grasped the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and smashed downwards. On the blood halberd, the power of fire and thunder twisted together, even as the grandmist battle spirit fused into it!

As the grandmist battle spirit appeared, all of the grandmist space around Lin Ming suddenly became stronger. As that crimson mythic lion rushed out, half of its claw energy had already been depleted. And at this time, Lin Ming's Great Desolate Blood Halberd crashed into it!

Dang!

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd and the crimson mythic lion's claws collided. Although the howling heaven mythic lion was a flesh and blood beast, its claws were actually sharper than a heaven-step treasure. As its claws struck the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, there was a massive ringing sound of metal striking metal.

However, at this time, the halberd edge suddenly flashed with a silver gray light. A deep killing intent surged out from the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. This potent and vigorous momentum suddenly gave the halberd edge a nearly unrivalled sharp edge!

This was the glory of a grandmist battle spirit.

Kacha!

The howling heaven mythic lion's claws were directly torn apart and shattered by the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. Blood rained on the earth!

"Roarr!"

The mythic lion howled in pain. But its strength was only equal to a peak middle Divine Sea powerhouse's; how could it possibly be Lin Ming's match?

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd suddenly shot upwards and smashed into the howling heaven mythic lion's chest. With a sorrowful whine, the beast was smashed away by Lin Ming.

"What!?" Situ Yaoxi and Elder Sun's eyes widened in terror. Although they didn't think that the howling heaven mythic lion could defeat Lin Ming, they absolutely didn't imagine that a beast equal to a peak middle Divine Sea powerhouse would actually be sent flying backwards in a frontal confrontation! What strength did Lin Ming have in order to do this? Did his power already approach the highest under the heavens?

In just these three years, his cultivation had only risen to the fourth stage of Life Destruction, and yet he obtained strength close to the highest under the heavens!?!?

Elder Sun was scared witless for a moment. But at this time, Lin Ming had already rushed in front of him!

"Your life is mine!"

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd pierced forth like a bloody dragon. Facing this chilling halberd edge, Elder Sun only felt his entire body's true essence locked within his body, unable to move it at all. He had no way to avoid this strike!

"Noo!"

On the brink of death, Elder Sun erupted with all of his potential. He extracted a three foot long saber from his spatial ring and spat a mouthful of blood essence onto the blade edge, finally managing to counterbalance the suppression of Laws and energy within the grandmist space and allowing him to circulate energy from his dantian.

The saber turned a flaming blood red. Strong winds cut through the air, true essence howled – God Slaughter Cut!

With a loud roar, Elder Sun slashed out his saber at Lin Ming. With his blood essence to utilize the God Slaughter Cut, this saber strike contained both a material attack as well as the ability to annihilate a person's divine soul!

This was Elder Sun's ultimate killing move. It cost him a massive amount of blood essence as well as several hundred years of life to use. Moreover, even if he managed to slay his opponent, he would still suffer an enormous backlash that would harm his cultivation for a very long period of time. But now his hand had been forced; he had to use this attack, otherwise he would perish in the next moment!

“Grandmist battle spirit!”

Lin Ming didn’t even bother with it. The Great Desolate Blood Halberd whistled out, a single move to break all techniques!

Bang!

The incomparably heavy battle spirit erupted, and the crimson saber light was easily broken apart. The Great Desolate Blood Halberd struck the thick saber, and with a resounding ‘kacha’ sound, the medium-grade heaven-step treasure saber was shattered by Lin Ming’s strike!

After the halberd light broke apart the saber it slightly changed direction, and with 40-50% of its strength remaining, it smashed into Elder Sun’s right side.

For a moment, it was like a sledgehammer had struck a watermelon. Elder Sun’s entire right half of his body had been smashed to a pulp. Bloody meat, organs, and bloodstained bones all flew outwards!

“Ahhh!”

Elder Sun issued out a miserable scream as his body was sent flying away. Lin Ming’s strike had left him with half a life left. If it were just his arm or leg that had been torn off then he could still restore that with heavenly materials, but with the entire right half of his body crushed and even his right lung mashed into goo, it was nearly impossible for any type of miracle medicine to regenerate this.

Elder Sun’s half-broken body fell with a heavy thud like a dead dog on the floor, and large mouthfuls of blood spilled out from his lips.

“Run away! Run away!”

All of the Asura Divine Kingdom juniors in the hall were frightened to the point where all the blood left their faces. A Divine Sea powerhouse had burnt his own blood essence and risked his life in a desperate strike, but he had still been blown away by Lin Ming as if he were a bug!

Facing such a monster, who would actually dare to fight him!?

But, this Spectral Blood Skylock Array had locked down this entire area of space. Even if they wanted to escape, where could they run off to?

Lin Ming instantly vanished. After displaying his extreme speed, these people weren’t even able to catch sight of his fading shadow.

In the blink of an eye, Lin Ming appeared behind a young man that looked to be in his twenties. This person only had a third stage Life Destruction cultivation. Although he was far from being comparable to Situ Luosha, he was still less than 40 years old. Moreover, he was able to jump ranks to fight an ordinary fifth stage Life Destruction master and had a faint hope of reaching the Divine Sea. Amongst all of the direct descendant juniors of the Asura Divine Kingdom, he was considered a very talented one.

Peng!

A fist came pounding out.

Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!

The young man shook and blood gushed out from his entire body. His body slumped to the ground like a pile of ruined meat. He had died just like that!

“Lin Ming you little bastard, I will kill you!” Situ Yaoxi’s hair was in tatters. She was so angry that her eyes were popping out of her head. But now she was literally out of power; how could she possibly threaten Lin Ming?

"You? After I finish everyone here, it will be your turn. Then, I will completely erase the Asura Divine Kingdom from this world!" Lin Ming's voice was bone-chilling to the extreme. The Asura Divine Kingdom's actions had repeatedly touched his bottom line. The least he would do was kill off every single one of these young elites that had come here to ambush him and had ruined the lives of the Lin Family Clan.

Since they all hoped to obtain some advantages from his death and also dared to come here, then Lin Ming would not tolerate the existence of any of these people.

"After I die, I won't let you go even when I become a resentful ghost!" Situ Yaoxi hysterically shouted.

"Humph, you want to turn into a ghost? What wishful thinking. Do you think that you are the only one who can suck out a soul and refine it, and that I can't do the same?" Lin Ming sneered. The essence of a ghost was the soul. If he pulled out her soul and refined it, even erasing the spirit mark, then where would there still be a ghost?

Situ Yaoxi had always threatened that she would suck out others' souls and refine them, but today someone had turned the tables on her!

For a time, her complexion turned ashen in fear. Her entire body trembled!

Chapter 919 – Whitedemon Arrives

Chapter 919 – Whitedemon Arrives

….

…

…

Peng! Peng! Peng!

Lin Ming was like a tiger amidst a flock of sheep. Killing these Asura Divine Kingdom juniors was as easy as killing a chicken. Each one he ran over died with a single punch.

“Wait… wait wait! Don’t kill me! I never humiliated anyone from your Lin Family!” A Revolving Core youth said with a weeping tone.

“Is that so?”

Lin Ming sneered and slammed his palm down on the young martial artist’s forehead. Energy violently surged in as he mercilessly used a demonic path soul searching technique.

When a massive disparity in soul force intensity and cultivation existed between the soul searcher and the soul searchee, there was no need to fear that a spirit mark would pollute the other.

“Humph, you haven’t humiliated my Lin Family?” It would have been better if Lin Ming didn’t perform a soul search, because once he did, he became furious. This young man had violently ravaged and killed dozens of young women from the Lin Family. Although Lin Ming didn’t know who these young women were, his eyes still turned blood red with rage after seeing how they were cruelly tortured before their deaths.

Demonic path martial artists had naturally cruel dispositions. When they were young, it was easy for this type of barbaric mentality to manifest.

“You are so young and yet so vicious. Killing you is equal to saving tens of thousands of lives!” As Lin Ming spoke, he suddenly pinched his right hand and this demonic path martial artist’s skull was crushed apart!

“Ahhh!” Situ Yaoxi had already become crazy. She desperately attacked the barriers of the Spectral Blood Skylock Array. But with her strength, and also being covered under the Prime Emperor Force Field, how could she possibly break through an array formation that Yang Yun had set down?

As Asura Divine Kingdom martial artists began dying all around him, Lin Ming’s eyes suddenly shot up. “Mm? Situ Chuan?”

He found that a martial artist cowering in the corner was actually Situ Chuan.

“Situ Chuan! It’s been such a long time! How have you been?” Lin Ming’s lips curved up in a smile.

At Yang Yun’s Nine Flowers Banquet, Situ Chuan had known that Lin Ming had the inheritance of the Demon Emperor on him, and thus openly provoked him into a fight. Situ Chuan had wanted to steal away all of Lin Ming’s inheritances, but he had underestimated Lin Ming’s strength and finally had to run away after being beaten up.

Afterwards, at the Forsaken God Clan’s dimensional realm, Situ Chuan had once again clashed with Lin Ming. He had taunted Lin Ming repeatedly and also challenged him. However, even with the Demon God Heartguard Mirror protecting him, he had been severely wounded by Lin Ming’s single finger.

The two of them could be said to be enemies that often crossed paths. Situ Chuan had been hiding in the crowd for fear that Lin Ming would see him, but after half of the martial artists died in the blink of an eye, Situ Chuan was eventually noticed.

“Lin Lanjian… let’s not be hasty here…” Situ Chuan’s heart trembled. He had no idea what to say.

“Die!”

Towards someone like Situ Chuan, Lin Ming didn’t even bother saying anything. His palm came slamming out!

“Lin Lanjian, I hope you die you bastard!” Situ Chuan’s crazy screams faded in the next moment as Lin Ming’s palm crushed him into pulpy meat.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

Miserable wails filled the air as blood and flesh covered the walls. The heroic elites of the Asura Divine Kingdom were all killed off by Lin Ming. Situ Yaoxi’s eyes were deep red. She violently struck the Spectral Blood Skylock Array, but there wasn’t even the slightest change in the barrier.

Lin Ming grasped the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and walked towards Situ Yaoxi step by step. Situ Yaoxi was slumped to the ground, her face ashen and her heart dimming with despair.

She didn’t want to die. She especially didn’t want to die under Lin Ming’s hands. If he said that he could suck out her soul and refine it then he absolutely could do that.

Thinking about sucking out someone’s soul and refining it, Situ Yaoxi felt her entire body shake. She had done this procedure to her own enemies countless times already; she was well aware of just how painful it was.

She wanted to abandon her own meridians and commit suicide, but the true essence within her body was completely out of her control.

What kind of force field was this? How could it be so fierce!?

“You little bastard, I was the one who ordered the fingers and palms of your Lin Family’s juniors to be chopped off! If you have the guts then kill me with your palm!” Situ Yaoxi madly shouted out. She wanted to enrage Lin Ming enough that he would simply kill her here.

Lin Ming smiled, a smile filled with a sinister malice. “You want to die? It won’t be that easy. I will let you live and slowly torture you, otherwise it will be impossible for me to swallow this anger.”

Just as Situ Yaoxi lost all hope, dark clouds suddenly gathered in the sky. A bronze coffin dozens of feet long flew through the skies like a ghost. Six large black-clothed ghost slaves each held thick chains as they dragged this bronze coffin behind them. A strange demon youth was sitting calmly on the bronze coffin, a curious smile playing on his face. It was like he was simply taking a scenic tour of the world; he seemed peaceful and comfortable.

This strange demon youth was a follower of the Ancient Devil. His name was Whitedemon. He too possessed strength equal to the highest under the heavens, and possessed a greater level of strength than Old Man Good Fortune. If Old Man Good Fortune hadn’t gone all out with using the heaven perishing bead, then even he might have fallen underneath this strange demon youth’s hands.

Behind Whitedemon, there were also eight Emperor level powerhouses. All of these individuals were unexpectedly not human. Some of them had scales, fins, gills, several arms, or even long snake-like tails. All of these individuals appeared to be from the deep sea races. Undoubtedly, they had been brought under control by the Ancient Devil.

The Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent were on a spherical planet and the two land continents only occupied an extremely minor part of it. The true vastness was found in the seas. The South Sea, Fog Sea, North Sea, and Red Sea – these four seas combined together were endlessly flowing, wrapping around the entire planet. Far more Emperor level powerhouses lived in the sea than on land!

And these Divine Sea powerhouses had likely come from the most mysterious Fog Sea that lay on the western side of the Sky Spill Continent. Most of these deep sea martial artists that came were at the early Divine Sea realm, with a small number of them at the middle Divine Sea. There was even an old monster that was close to the late Divine Sea; he looked like a squid.

With the Ancient Devil's methods as well as all the countless secrets and cultivation methods he possessed, it was simple for him to tempt these deep sea races with benefits. Coupled with his powerful strength, it was easy for him to bring all of these powerhouses under his control.

As Situ Yaoxi saw the strange demon youth as well as the several Divine Sea powerhouses behind him, she was like a drowning sailor that saw a piece of wood in the ocean. Her heart filled with happiness and she began to wildly laugh.

"Hahaha! Sir Whitedemon! The heavens have not abandoned me! The heavens have not abandoned me! Hahahahahaha!

"Sir Whitedemon, save me!"

Situ Yaoxi cried out.

"Lin Ming, you actually dared to come here. It seems that Sir Demon Lord has far overestimated you. I thought that no matter how dumb you were, even you would know this entire place was a trap. And yet you still walked in here to die. Very well then, let me deliver you onto the road to hell!"

Whitedemon waved his hand and crushed an array bead in his palm. The Spectral Blood Skylock Array shattered!

As Situ Yaoxi saw the great array that trapped her finally collapse, she wanted to cry out in relief. To be rescued after falling into the jaws of death, that was a truly indescribable feeling!

Situ Yaoxi felt a good portion of her strength return to her. She glared at Lin Ming with utter hatred in her eyes as she cried out in her mind, ‘You little bastard! I will make you pay a painful price for everything you’ve done today! When I capture you, I will have you suffer for a thousand years!’

Her figure moved and she displayed her movement technique, desperately trying to escape to Whitedemon. But just as she moved, it suddenly seemed as if she was separated from the strange demon youth by a nearly insurmountable distance. It was like she was trapped in a bubble of space, unable to escape this area.

That invisible force field once again covered over her, rapidly ablating all of her strength!

Situ Yaoxi panicked. She looked at Lin Ming with horror in her eyes. “Sir Whitedemon, save me!”

When Whitedemon broke the Spectral Blood Skylock Array, it had truly caused the energy of Lin Ming’s force field to scatter. But that was only for a brief moment. Lin Ming called up the Heavenly Demon martial intent and formed the complete grandmist space, covering everything in 1300 miles and directly isolating Situ Yaoxi.

“Humph, don’t worry, as long as I’m here there is nothing he can do to you!”

Whitedemon said with a conceited tone. Although he didn’t care about Situ Yaoxi’s life, he still cared about his face. If Situ Yaoxi, who also had the strength of an Emperor level powerhouse, were to be killed in front of him by Lin Ming, then what face would he have left?

Lin Ming sneered, “If I want to kill someone, do you really think you can stop me?”

“Hah! You really are stupid! You’ve already entered the trap that we laid down and yet you still think you’re in control of the situation? This is just a minor force field; do you think I can’t break it?” As Whitedemon Spoke, his right hand slammed outwards. His palm formed a demon claw made up of billowing demonic energy. He wanted to tear apart Lin Ming’s grandmist space and rescue Situ Yaoxi.

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light and energy erupted from his body. The Heavenly Demon martial intent rapidly revolved and the grandmist space trembled. Faintly, a slight trace of gray energy appeared in the grandmist space. This was the elementary form of grandmist energy!

Grandmist space. It was able to smash apart all Laws, extinguish all life, true essence, and power of the five fundamental elements, turning all of that into ash that faded away. However, it didn't truly disappear, but rather transformed into the elementary form of grandmist energy. Although it was the elementary form of grandmist energy, it was still an impossibly far distance from becoming true grandmist energy. In order to practice true grandmist energy, Lin Ming would need to become at least an overlord of the Divine Realm before that was possible.

Bang!

As the roiling black demon claw smashed into the grandmist space, the space suddenly shook. The demon claw exploded into pieces, but the grandmist space actually didn't break. As for Situ Yaoxi, who had already lost all of her strength, she was sent flying back from the aftermath of Whitedemon's strike and nearly vomited blood.

"…What?"

Whitedemon burned with a shameful anger. He had just said he would shatter Lin Ming's force field, but instead the result was that he had failed and also injured Situ Yaoxi with the shockwaves.

And at this moment, Lin Ming reached out a hand and a black vortex appeared in his palm. An invisible traction force hooked onto Situ Yaoxi and pulled her over.

"Ahhhhhhh!"

Situ Yaoxi issued loud harrowing screams, but she was simply unable to resist this force. Her body tumbled over and over as she flew towards Lin Ming.

At this time, Lin Ming grasped the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and pointed it towards Situ Yaoxi's chest.

"No – !"

Situ Yaoxi screamed out to the point where her throat tore apart. But she had no strength to resist in the least. She could only watch helplessly as she approached the chilling point of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd.

Puff!

Blood shot out. Lin Ming's halberd cleanly pierced through her body. It shattered her spine and cut apart her right lung before directly penetrating through her chest. She was simply like a frog that had been stuck onto the end of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd.

A Divine Sea powerhouse could survive as long as their heart and brain didn't burst apart. And Situ Yaoxi's true essence was locked down by Lin Ming, so she couldn't even commit suicide.

Fresh blood dripped down the halberd edge. Situ Yaoxi's legs rapidly pedaled in the air as she desperately struggled to free herself. However, she was no different from a grasshopper pierced with a needle. At this moment her heart filled with despair. "Sir Whitedemon… save me…"

"Lin Ming, you are seeking death!" Whitedemon was furious. He had said in front of his underlings that he would protect Situ Yaoxi, but the result was that she had been pierced through by Lin Ming's halberd like a bug. This was simply slapping his face in front of everyone!

Chapter 920 – Massacre

Chapter 920 – Massacre

…

…

…

Lin Ming stood there, with Situ Yaoxi stuck onto the end of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. He glanced upwards at the strange demon youth in the sky and said with a sneer, “You’re called Whitedemon? How come it’s just you, where is your master?”

After obtaining the memories of the Ancient Devil, Lin Ming was much more clear as to what the relationship was between him and Whitedemon. When a number of Empyreans descended to this mortal world in order to subjugate Empyrean Primordius, they brought along with them armies from the Divine Realm that were millions in number. This Ancient Devil had been one of the minor military officers, and this Whitedemon was the loyal vice-captain of the Ancient Devil.

Afterwards, the two of them had been severely wounded by followers of Empyrean Primordius and sealed within the Sea of Miracles. With the Ancient Devil’s understandings of the Time Laws’ Concept of Stagnation, he had used them to change the flow of time and withstand the passing of 100,000 years. As time passed, the seal over the Sea of Miracles slightly loosened, and they took advantage of this chance, paying an immense price to escape from that calamity.

Of course, this was all because they were luckier than the others and hadn’t been locked in the depths of the Sea of Miracles. Otherwise, no matter how high their cultivation was, it would have been impossible for them to emerge from it even after hundreds of thousands or millions of years.

“Hehe, the Demon Lord is closed up right now, how could he possibly be keeping guard near the Sky Fortune Kingdom all the time to wait for you? Even so, you are far too stupid. Those who walk down the road of martial arts defy the will of the heavens. Those who break through the limits of life are doomed to live days of loneliness. Family clans, descendants, even wives and parents, all of them are nothing but passing travelers in your life. And yet for this family clan that you are not even deeply related to, you are willing to step into such obvious danger. What a joke. How can someone like you, who cannot even clean themselves from the karma of this world, possibly speak of walking down the road of martial arts or defying the will of the heavens?”

Whitedemon had stashed away all of his past arrogance and conceit. After confirming that Lin Ming’s strength was no worse than his, he began to use other means to weaken Lin Ming instead. He wanted to use words to break apart Lin Ming’s heart of martial arts and have his mind waver.

Lin Ming coldly smiled, caustically replying, “In this world, there is no one that can divorce themselves from their karma. Those that walk down the road of martial arts must all depend on lucky chances, thus they cannot diverge from their destiny. If their destiny is lacking then no matter how monstrous a talent is, they will never be able to grow. They may even die. Destiny is an illusory ideal and yet it is not at the same time. Fulfilling your wishes, passing through countless dangerous situations, having your thoughts be smooth, defeating kings on the same level, those are the ways that you can accumulate destiny. Destiny must be hand in hand with your faith to overcome all; only then will you be able to walk down your road! Those that cultivate martial arts must have their hearts clear of distractions. They do not like to owe debts to others because they do not wish to saturate themselves with further karma.

“But in the dust of mortality, all living creatures, the endless lands, splendor and destitution, glory and failure, life and death, all of these ideas are entangled together, becoming the most complex karma in your life. Just because you do not clearly understand it does not mean you can just blindly cut it off, because if your fatality with your world is never resolved, then your heart will forever be discontent. In the Southern Wilderness I once experienced the 72 Sorcerer Pagodas, a lucky chance left behind by a true Divine Realm powerhouse. In order to settle his karma with this world, he spent an immense amount of strength to cast his incarnation down and return to this world. And you, a little demon cultivator, actually dares to speak of the fatality of this world!"

Without noticing it, Lin Ming's words brought with them an overwhelming momentum. Although Whitedemon once had a cultivation that surpassed the Divine Sea and he was also a character that had participated in the great war 100,000 years ago, in Lin Ming's words he was nothing more than a little demon cultivator, not worth mentioning at all.

For Lin Ming to say these words with his fourth stage Life Destruction cultivation by no means stemmed from his arrogance. Rather, it came from his extraordinary experience and insight, as well as his great strength and talent that surpassed the will of the heavens. This unwavering confidence made all who heard it feel as if every word he spoke was the truth.

Whitedemon had wanted to attack Lin Ming's heart of martial arts with words, but after experiencing Lin Ming's intense rebuttal, he had no words left to reply with!

In terms of speaking of the heart of martial arts, the fatality of the world, and karmic ties, he had already lost.

After being spoken to with disdain by Lin Ming, Whitedemon became angry out of shame. "A little Life Destruction martial artist like you actually dares to look down on me? You really have no idea what it means to walk into death or danger!"

"Haha, how am I looking down on you? You said that you would protect Situ Yaoxi and yet she is now stuck on my halberd, unable to beg for life or death!"

"Good! Good! Good!" Whitedemon viciously spat out the word 'good' three times. "You may not know, but a 10 mile area around the Lin Family Clan already has a Yellow Springs Ghost Burying Array laid down beneath it. I will activate the array and turn you, your family clan, and all of your so-called fatality of the world and karmic ties into ghosts of the Yellow Springs! I want to see just how smooth your mindset will be then!"

Whitedemon barked out an order and the eight Divine Sea martial artists scattered in all directions. The Yellow Springs Ghost Burying Array was able to melt all life into evil spirits. It was one of the strongest array formations that the Ancient Devil understood.

Lin Ming seemed as if he already predicted Whitedemon's actions. The energy within his body revolved to the limit and the grandmist space suddenly wildly expanded outwards!

The 1300 mile grandmist space actually formed a virtual projection in the real world, covering nearly the entire Green Mulberry City!

"Extreme Violet Ring, receive!"

A giant vortex appeared around Lin Ming. Countless arcs of origin energy shot out towards the Lin Family Clan. Underneath the cover of Lin Ming's divine sense, all the Lin Family descendants, their husbands and wives, maids, friends, subordinates, even cats and dogs were all sucked in by this energy. Their houses and pavilions were all completely pulled up and sucked into the Extreme Violet Ring!

It was impossible for these mortals to withstand such a pressure. In just a brief moment, the energy covered everyone and the entire Lin Family Clan was received into Lin Ming's Extreme Violet Ring.

For a Divine Sea Supreme Elder, it wasn't difficult to place an entire city into a magic tool. However, what was difficult was finding a magic tool with a large enough inner world to contain it.

This was truly a Saint artifact rank treasure, moreover, its grade was placed in the upper echelons of Saint artifacts. It had to be known that even the wealthy Steppes Master Luosha had to hide away the massive amount of his wealth in his own treasure chambers. This was because he didn't have a magic tool with a large enough capacity; he had never even heard of something like that before!

Lin Ming's Extreme Violet Ring could accommodate half a city worth of people. It was more than enough to gather the entire Lin Family Clan.

"Mm? A spatial treasure that can hold life and form a side world?" The strange demon youth's mind stirred and his eyes locked onto the Extreme Violet Ring. Even he didn't have such a treasure. "Lin Ming, there really are far too many secrets on your body, and you also seemed to have somehow understood how to break through ancient array formations. Even the Spectral Blood Skylock Array had its control wrested away by you. But this Yellow Springs Ghost Burying Array is different: it depends on absolute power to activate. With the nine of us joining forces, it is impossible for you to break it. And when you fail to break it, that is when you will die. This array formation can refine all life. Even if your strength is no worse than mine, or even if you are slightly stronger than me, you will perish here!"

As the demon youth spoke, the eight deep sea race Divine Sea powerhouses all began to simultaneously revolve their energy. The sounds of 10,000 ghosts howled in a radius of 10 miles. The heavens cried, dark clouds rolled through the skies, and a bone-chilling wind blew through the city!

"Hehe, little demon, after we kill this person do not forget our agreement!" A deep sea powerhouse said. His entire body was comprised of thick tentacles.

"Yes, and according to our agreement, our deep sea clan will take 20% of this boy's wealth!" A deep sea race martial artist that looked like a snake echoed. He was clear on just how rich Lin Ming was; even 20% was a considerable amount.

"There is also Sir Demon Lord's Concept of Time jade slip. I am very interested in that!"

The eight deep sea Divine Sea powerhouses all laughed as they jovially joked with each other. Together, they injected their energies into the Yellow Springs Ghost Burying Array. The ground rumbled and ruptured, and for a time it was like an Asura hell had opened up beneath them!

Lin Ming could feel the thick smell of blood waft over him. It was like he had fallen into the eighteen layered hells.

‘The Yellow Springs Ghost Burying Array is different from the Spectral Blood Skylock Array: this is a true killing array. After it is laid down, it is activated by the stimulation of absolute energy and there is no secret password of array runes distributed anywhere. Even if it’s me, the only way I will be able to break through this is with absolute strength. But there are nine Divine Sea powerhouses that are collaborating to drive this array and their strength has fused together with the Yellow Springs Ghost Burying Array. It’s impossible for me to resist it like this, but…’

A sharp light suddenly burst out from Lin Ming’s eyes, like a bolt of lightning crossing through the dark night sky.

In that moment, the compressed energy within the Heretical God Sprout flooded outwards. All of the meridians within Lin Ming’s body began to bulge.

Gate of Healing, Gate of Limit, Gate of Wonder, Gate of Pain, four gates were all released together!

Ka ka ka!

The land fractured. A crimson flame lit up between Lin Ming’s eyebrows and a golden phoenix rushed out from his body, directly impacting into the skies!

In that instant, Lin Ming erupted with his complete strength. However, he did not use any martial skills; he poured all of his strength into the Heavenly Demon martial intent grandmist space.

Behind Lin Ming, a blood red lotus began to slowly bloom. The grandmist space rapidly expanded outwards.

Although the Yellow Springs Ghost Burying Array was fierce, it was an array formation based on Laws. It would be unable to block the grandmist space that disregarded all principles. For a time, everyone, including Whitedemon, was covered in this force field.

“Grandmist battle spirit, fusion!”

A silver gray grandmist battle spirit shot out from between Lin Ming's eyebrows. The battle spirit melted into the grandmist space, causing the range to increase by several hundred miles once again.

The might of the grandmist space suddenly rose. Suddenly, there was a series of loud explosions as the protective true essence of five deep sea early Divine Sea powerhouses was directly crushed apart. As for the three middle Divine Sea powerhouses, they also trembled as blood tumbled in their bodies. Although their bodily protective true essence didn't shatter, the energy they were injecting into the Yellow Springs Ghost Burying Array was interrupted!

"What!?"

Whitedemon and the other deep sea race powerhouses were all shocked and frightened. Lin Ming hadn't even moved a finger. He had merely relied on a force field to deal them all a heavy blow. How was this possible?

"Heavenly Demon martial intent, massacre!" Lin Ming coldly spat out these words. Clutching his fists together, the phoenix phantom behind him suddenly combined with the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower, causing that red lotus to shine with an even more dazzling and radiant light, as if a crimson sun were rising in the world!

In that moment, traces of elementary grandmist energy appeared in the grandmist space and twisted together into a chaos storm. This storm was like countless immeasurably sharp knives. The five early Divine Sea powerhouses watched helplessly as this chaos storm tore through their mortal bodies. Blood and flesh rained down. Their meridians shattered and even their bones were shattered to pieces by the chaos storm.

"Noo – !"

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

With a series of bursting sounds, the five early Divine Sea powerhouses were directly shattered to pieces and then further disintegrated into ashes that faded away, with nothing left behind. As for the three middle Divine Sea powerhouses, they also vomited great mouthfuls of blood. Cracks appeared in their protective true essence. They were frightened so much that their courage cracked apart and their minds went blank with panic.

Run! Run away!

But, within the grandmist space realized from the Heavenly Demon martial intent, wasn’t escaping easier said than done?

Peng!

The middle Divine Sea martial artist with the weakest cultivation suddenly exploded within the chaos storm. As for the other two, they were even scared witless as if their souls had left their body.

Stuck on top of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, Situ Yaoxi watched as all of this happened. Her face turned whiter than paper and her entire body trembled.

“Devil... he is simply a devil...” Situ Yaoxi mumbled as blood trickled down her lips.

Chapter 921 – Transcendent Divine Might

Chapter 921 – Transcendent Divine Might

…

…

…

All of this happened in just a brief moment. Within several blinks of an eye, six Divine Sea martial artists had died, but Lin Ming hadn't even moved. By just releasing his force field, he had killed six martial artists; the disparity was too great!

"Lin Ming, you dare!?"

The demon youth was both surprised and angry. He never imagined that of the helpers he gathered to activate the great array, over half of them would die before the fighting even began.

By relying on just a force field to massacre Divine Sea powerhouses, Lin Ming had reached a level beyond all of his expectations!

"Broken Star!"

The demon youth gave a loud shout and extracted a purple lance from his spatial ring. Endless starlight flowed out from the lance point, turning into purple bolts of power that fell down like galaxies.

At this moment, the demon youth had completely abandoned the Yellow Springs Ghost Burying Array. He attacked with everything he had!

Ca!

The purple light pierced into the grandmist space like a hot knife, weakening the further in int went. At the same time, the grandmist space trembled as it collided with Whitedemon's spear light.

Their attacks struck in sharp contention!

Whitedemon was a late Divine Sea powerhouse, moreover, he also came from the Divine Realm. The various cultivation methods and martial skills he learned were not what the martial artists of the Sky Spill Continent could compare with. He had strength that deserved to be called the highest under the heavens within the Sky Spill Continent. With his all-out attack, his strike even had a faint impulse as if it would rip open the grandmist space. This was also because Lin Ming had completely driven the grandmist space to kill the surrounding deep sea powerhouses and didn't concentrate it on Whitedemon. Lin Ming was very clear that using just the Heavenly Demon martial intent to slaughter Whitedemon was impossible.

The purple lance light shot out with all of its might. As the two surviving deep sea powerhouses resisted the force field with all their power, Lin Ming suddenly moved!

He flung Situ Yaoxi off the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. Blood rained downwards as Situ Yaoxi's mortal body was crudely and brutally torn off of the halberd point, causing her to painfully scream.

Then, Lin Ming opened the Gate of Wonder and revolved his true essence to the limit.

Mystic Lightning Shade, Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

In that moment, Lin Ming's body turned into a bolt of lightning as his velocity reached an inconceivable degree. Whitedemon's attack fell on empty air. At the same time, Lin Ming appeared to teleport directly in front of a deep sea martial artist. The Gate of Pain opened and his halberd came smashing down!

The 800,000 jin heavy Great Desolate Blood Halberd combined with Lin Ming's two million jin physical strength and fused with the grandmist battle spirit, shattered the surrounding space!

The deep sea martial artist had the appearance of a shark. Its gray mouth opened and its two eyes turned bloodshot, "Ahhhh!"

The shark-like deep sea martial artist released a earthshaking roar. At this moment it was impossible for him to dodge Lin Ming's attack; he could only struggle with his life!

He grasped a pitch black trident. Hundreds of black flood dragons thousands of feet long appeared around him. These flood dragons all merged together onto the tip of the trident, causing the trident to instantly become an unrivalled divine weapon, overwhelming and unstoppable!

The trident collided with the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. However, no matter how powerful the shark-like powerhouse's attack was, he wasn't Lin Ming's match at all. The Great Desolate Blood Halberd was originally a Saint artifact level treasure, and it also had the grandmist battle spirit fused within it. It was all-conquering, able to penetrate the hardest defenses!

Kacha!

The trident was crushed to pieces by Lin Ming's attack. The Great Desolate Blood Halberd didn't stop there. It continued forward, pounding into the chest of that deep sea martial artist, causing his ribs to shatter and his flesh to rupture. The battle spirit-infused true essence broke into his innards, grinding all of his organs to mush.

The deep sea powerhouse vomited a mouthful of black blood and his body collapsed to the ground like an exploded bag of blood.

Chi!

The shark-like martial artist's corpse was directly swallowed up by the grandmist space and turned into dust that soon faded away. The truth was that the powerhouses and energy that were decomposed within the grandmist space would turn into a trace of insignificant elementary grandmist energy that slowly accumulated. The more powerhouses the grandmist space swallowed and the stronger they were, the more potential for growth there would be. In the future, this could even evolve into the true grandmist space.

After killing someone with a single halberd strike, Lin Ming didn't stop there. He shot towards the last Divine Sea powerhouse. This deep sea martial artist was also the one with the highest cultivation; he neared the late Divine Sea.

The deep sea powerhouse was frightened as he saw Lin Ming rush towards him and rapidly retreated.

"Lin Ming, I am your opponent! If you dare to fight with me then come on! Why are you running away like a coward!?" Whitedemon grasped the purple lance and rushed out. He was already breathless with rage and his mind nearly cracked from anger. Lin Ming simply didn't dare to fight him in a frontal melee, but instead dashed around him and killed his underlings. And with Lin Ming's speed reaching nearly unimaginable velocities, it was simply impossible to stop him.

Moreover, there was that strange force field that surrounded Lin Ming. Wherever he went, whether it was speed, true essence, or strength, every attribute of his opponents was greatly weakened. Since he couldn't catch up to Lin Ming, he could only watch helplessly as Lin Ming killed off the remaining deep sea martial artists in front of him.

By now, Whitedemon had become aware that the trap he had laid beforehand was worthless. The main form of the trap was the Yellow Springs Ghost Burying Array, and now the martial artists needed to activate it were killed off by Lin Ming. How could he possibly continue to start the array formation?

As the deep sea martial artist saw Lin Ming's halberd thrust forwards, he lost his mind in panic, "Wait… wait a moment! Don't kill me! I only came here as a job for wealth! I have no enmity with you! We can discuss terms, I can compensate you!"

Besides the scales on his face, the strongest remaining deep sea martial artist more or less resembled a human. At this moment, his hair was completely in disarray and he looked demented.

"If you dare to rob people then you must be prepared to die. I have no interest in your terms, now die."

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd smashed downwards like a collapsing mountain, a falling galaxy!

With the grandmist battle spirit fused into the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and in addition to the sharpness of a Saint artifact and Lin Ming's terrifying physical strength, it was impossible for the heaven-step treasure in the deep sea powerhouse's hands to withstand such an impact force.

Kacha!

The heaven-step weapon shattered. This deep sea powerhouse's cultivation was quite good; it unexpectedly spat out a mouthful of blood essence at the last moment and its entire body turned into a red light as it used some sort of arcane escape technique.

Bang!

The deep sea powerhouse turned into a crimson beam of light that shot out hundreds of miles in a single blink of the eye. It smashed into the grandmist space barrier, but was actually unable to break it apart.

"Break for me ahhhh!"

The deep sea martial artist emitted cries of despair. However, his power was fading far too fast. A massive amount of his true essence was swallowed up by the grandmist space, dissipating into nothingness!

Lin Ming coldly looked at this deep sea martial artist and spat out two words. “Blow up!”

Peng!

The deep sea martial artist’s body exploded in a rain of blood that then broke down into smaller and smaller fragments before completely disappearing.

Like this, eight deep sea Divine Sea martial artists completely perished!

At this time, Situ Yaoxi was half-buried in the rubble, watching blankly as all of this happened around her. Her lips shivered and terror filled her mind. Facing this demon god Lin Ming, she felt like nothing more than a little bug that could be crushed by him at any moment.

“How could he become like this? How is this possible…”

Situ Yaoxi mumbled, her voice shaking. And then Lin Ming fell beside Situ Yaoxi. As she saw him appear next to her, she immediately broke out into a cold sweat.

“Old witch, it looks like your life is quite tenacious. You haven’t died yet.”

“If you have the guts then kill me…” Situ Yaoxi said, shivering. She really wished for Lin Ming to use his halberd and smash her to bits immediately, but that was nothing more than a wild hope to her now.

Lin Ming stabbed the Great Desolate Blood Halberd at Situ Yaoxi’s thigh.

Puff!

Situ Yaoxi’s thigh was pierced through by the halberd edge. With a miserable wail, she was lifted up by her leg.

Like this, Lin Ming faced Whitedemon once again with Situ Yaoxi hanging off his halberd.

Whitedemon's face paled, his eyebrows shooting all the way up. "I know... I know what your force field is..."

As Whitedemon spoke to here, a trace of fear actually appeared on his face. "What you are using is a sub force field of the Primordius martial intent – the Heavenly Demon Force Field. That is one of Empyrean Primordius' strongest abilities... he relied on that power to walk unhindered through the endless Divine Realm, unrivaled and without match. Impossible... this is impossible... how can you possibly have learned the Heavenly Demon Force Field!?"

Whitedemon's voice shook, his entire body quaking. In the 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm, there were countless extraordinary powers, amazing abilities, and martial skills. But, those that were truly renowned throughout the entire universe and far surpassed all other powers were limited in number. Among them there were cultivation methods, martial skills, arcane skills, soul law formulas, martial intents, and so on.

These supernatural powers all had a title: they were called transcendent divine mights. Any ability with this title was a top-grade supernatural power amongst all top-grade supernatural powers. If a martial artist were to obtain such an ability, then after practicing it, they would be able to rely on this power to walk freely through the Divine Realm! If a Holy Land were to obtain such a power and pass down this inheritance, then they would develop into a massive super influence in the future, able to rule over a great world within the Divine Realm!

Of course, this was all based on the premise that they could survive and preserve that ability. If a transcendent divine might jade slip were to appear, it would inevitably set off a terrifying bloody war!

Although Lin Ming had many cultivation methods on him, such as Golden Roc Shattering the Void or the Ancient Phoenix Code, these top movement and cultivation methods, even if complete, could not even think of tracing upon the boundary of a transcendent divine might. As for the Great Desolate Halberd Art, Vermillion Bird Forbidden Divine Chronicle, Overbearing Soul Tactic, and Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians, those were even less worthy of mentioning. The ranks of these techniques were a level lower than the Ancient Phoenix Code.

Amongst all of Lin Ming's abilities, there was only one that could be called a transcendent divine might. That was… the Heretical God Force.

The Heretical God Force was an arcane skill-type transcendent divine might; it was particularly rare. Lin Ming obtaining it was all because of his great destiny.

A transcendent divine might was unrivalled in fierceness and prestige; it was no wonder that Whitedemon had shown such extreme shock and fear upon learning that Lin Ming had comprehended the Heavenly Demon Force Field!

Although the Primordius martial intent was a true transcendent divine might, the Heavenly Demon Force Field was only a minor part of it, thus it was an incomplete transcendent divine might. Even so, this was enough for countless martial artists to go crazy over it, struggling with their lives to obtain it!

"How could this be… how is this possible… could you have entered the Sea of Miracles and obtained Empyrean Primordius' inheritance?" The demon youth's eyes shined with a brilliant light as he stared at Lin Ming. If Lin Ming could one day obtain the complete Primordius martial intent, then as long as he didn't die, his future would be limitless. This was an unrivalled supernatural power that could turn garbage into a tiger!

Chapter 922 – Fighting Whitedemon

Chapter 922 – Fighting Whitedemon

…

…

…

A single transcendent divine might could allow a martial artist to jump several boundaries in order to fight. For instance, Lin Ming's current true combat strength was only slightly stronger than Situ Haotian's; he was far from being comparable to characters like the Sublime Smelting Imperial Grand Uncle Ouye Hua and the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor Yang Laotian, and there was no comparison with someone like Whitedemon. But, by relying on the grandmist space, Lin Ming's strength had reached a level where he could contend with Whitedemon.

The creation of a transcendent divine might was the product of an Empyrean's lifetime experience and knowledge, completely gathered into a single ability. There were even some existences that were referred to as 'Divine'. These transcendent divine mights had been preserved and passed down in the Divine Realm for billions of years. This meant that there wasn't even a single transcendent divine might created every million years. The rarity and magnificence of such an ability could be inferred. There were even many Divine Realm World Kings that never had a chance to obtain a portion of a transcendent divine might.

Among all the transcendent divine mights, a martial intent was one of the most special kinds. This was because a martial intent could not be studied, only comprehended. However, there was a single exception. This was if the master of the martial intent was willing to separate a portion of their martial intent and form a martial intent seed, sealing that seed into a symbol paper or spirit artifact and then granting it to others.

The situation was exceedingly rare. Firstly, no one was willing to separate a portion of their own martial intent and weaken their own supernatural powers. Secondly, in order to do so, one had to have a cultivation of at least a World King or Empyrean, and also have an extremely high understanding into soul and will. Only then would they have the ability to cut off a portion of their own martial intent and form a martial intent seed, bestowing it to others.

But with Whitedemon's experience, he simply didn't know this. This was why he was so shocked. He couldn't understand how Lin Ming had managed to comprehend the Heavenly Demon martial intent.

In fact, the only reason he was able to recognize the Heavenly Demon martial intent was because he participated in the great war 100,000 years ago. He had been a part of the armies that fought against Empyrean Primordius and also saw him use this ability with his own eyes. When Empyrean Primordius used the Heavenly Demon martial intent, he was able to instantly kill thousands and tens of thousands of Divine Realm martial artists. And most of those people that perished had been far stronger than Whitedemon. This scene had frightened Whitedemon and left an incomparably deep impression in his heart. Otherwise with his status, he would have never seen such a legendary martial intent.

"I never imagined that your destiny would reach such a degree. Even a portion of the transcendent divine might-ranked Primordius martial intent was comprehended by you! I wonder, if I kill you, will I be able to obtain Empyrean Primordius' inheritance?"

"Transcendent divine might?" Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. This term had appeared in the Ancient Devil's memories and Lin Ming also had a minor understanding of it. Indeed, if it were the complete Primordius martial intent then it truly was deserving of the title of transcendent divine might.

"There are numerous kinds of transcendent divine mights in the Divine Realm, I wonder how my Heretical God Force would rank among them? Where can I obtain the other parts of the Primordius martial intent? Could it be the Sea of Miracles and Eternal Demon Abyss? And just what degree would the complete Primordius martial intent reach?"

All of those thoughts instantly flashed through Lin Ming's mind.

At this moment, Whitedemon moved.

With the Yellow Springs Ghost Burying Array having failed, Whitedemon could only rely on his own strength. His upper clothes suddenly bulged and tore apart, and a bright purple tattoo lit up on his back with a dazzling light. Currents of true essence condensed behind him, forming into a massive black phantom. This great black phantom was hundreds of feet tall and had nine heads in total.

This was the legendary Hydra monster!

Whitedemon was from the Hydra Clan. This was one of the greater clans of the Divine Realm, with countless clansmen spread throughout the universe. Although the Hydra was not a God Beast and inferior to a Phoenix, the Divine Realm Hydra Clan's bloodline was much richer than the Ancient Phoenix Clan's, thus the Hydra Clan was in no way inferior to the Divine Realm Phoenix Clan.

"Snake Swallows the Universe!"

The strange demon youth raised his purple lance and the hydra phantom behind him ravenously opened all nine ghoulish mouths, and all of the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy around him began to stir up.

"Roarr!"

The nine hydra heads roared together, the terrifying sonic explosion directly impacting into the skies.

Ever since Whitedemon had slipped through his prison in the Sea of Miracles, his body had been greatly weakened. He originally didn't plan on using the power of his bloodline, but now he was forced with no other option. Let alone killing Lin Ming, it was possible he would even be killed instead.

Whitedemon rushed forwards, bringing the massive hydra phantom to smash into the grandmist space. The hundreds of feet tall hydra crashed into the grandmist space and began to crazily bite at it. It wanted to tear the space barrier apart!

As the saying went, a snake was greedy and hungry enough to swallow an elephant. A snake could swallow down an object several times its size, and the hydra had reached the peak in this regard. The nine heads of a hydra were said to be able to swallow the sun, thus the reason the hydra was also named the sky devouring python.

With Snake Swallows the Universe, Whitedemon wanted to use this move to forcefully devour the grandmist space.

The grandmist space was both offensive and defensive and extended over a thousand miles outwards. After a long distance attack ran into the grandmist space, it would weaken the further it penetrated inwards. In order to attack Lin Ming, one’s main body had to enter the grandmist space. But, within the grandmist space, they would fall under suppressive principles and their combat strength would greatly drop.

Whitedemon didn’t want to give Lin Ming the advantage or initiative. Thus, he utilized the power of his bloodline in order to break apart the grandmist space. As long as the grandmist space was broken then Lin Ming simply wasn’t his match.

“You want to swallow my grandmist space?” A cold smile appeared on Lin Ming’s face. “The world represents the highest Laws, the Laws that all myriad creatures must obey. It is impossible for a hydra to swallow the highest Laws. If you wish to swallow the grandmist space, then let me swallow you down first!”

Lin Ming shook the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and joints through his entire body began to emit crackling ‘ka ka ka’ sounds. The compressed energy within the Heretical God Seed surged out once more and the grandmist space expanded outwards, completely enveloping the hydra phantom released by Whitedemon.

“Chaos storm!”

Lin Ming pointed the Great Desolate Blood Halberd outwards and the faint elementary grandmist energy formed a massive storm in the world, clashing together with the black hydra. Flesh and blood flew out, storms filled the air, and the world lost its color. This was a frigid battle!

Whitedemon's bloodline power rapidly faded away and Lin Ming wasn't any better off. The hydra phantom's energy was far too vigorous. To swallow that strength with the grandmist space cost a massive amount of Lin Ming's true essence. In addition with having to burning the Ancient Phoenix blood, even if Lin Ming's foundation was solid and he had the Gate of Healing supporting him, he wasn't able to withstand this for too long.

As Whitedemon saw his own hydra incarnation about to be swallowed up by the grandmist space, his eyes turned blood red. He grabbed his purple lance and shot forwards.

Chi-la!

The grandmist space tore apart. Whitedemon fused together with the black hydra phantom, and with a resounding 'ka ka ka' sound, all of the muscles in his body suddenly bulged outwards. The lower half of his body was embezzled by the black energy, forming a snake tail.

Whitedemon had unexpectedly transformed into a half-man-half-snake monster. Moreover, he now he nine heads, each of them with the exact appearance of Whitedemon.

"Shattered Star, break for me!"

Whitedemon spat out blood essence onto his weapon, and the purple lance began to emit a dazzling light. A 100,000 foot long beam of purple light pierced through 10,000 miles of space. The chaos storm was torn asunder, and the grandmist space began to emit crackling sounds as if it couldn't withstand the impact force.

With the savage battle having reached this point, both combatants had put forth their complete abilities, neither of them holding back. This was a true battle with their lives on the line!

"Power of thunder and fire, Penetrating Rainbow!"

As Lin Ming saw Whitedemon about to burst through the grandmist space, he focused his mind within the Heretical God Sprout and completely ignited all of the power of thunder and fire. Thunder and fire twisted together, and for a moment it seemed as if Lin Ming held a sun in his hands. His attack collided with Whitedemon's Shattered Star.

Stars smashed into the blazing sun!

Bang!

When the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and the purple lance collided, the world changed colors and the sun and moon lost their light.

Whitedemon's true essence was deeper. Even though he was weakened by the grandmist space, he still managed to suppress Lin Ming. But at this time, a black light flashed between Lin Ming's eyebrows as a spear-shaped battle spirit came howling out!

The grandmist battle spirit fused with the Great Desolate Blood Halberd!

With a battle spirit attached to the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, the sharp might of the weapon rose to another level. The purple lance seemed to emit a whimpering sound as if it wasn't able to withstand the great strength and would shatter at any moment.

"Mm?"

Whitedemon was shocked. He branched out a part of his power to protect the purple lance, but this distracted him for the briefest moment. Lin Ming took the opportunity to suddenly recover his battle spirit, fuse it with his soul force, and then shoot it outwards!

In that moment, a chaos demon spirit phantom appeared behind him. Lin Ming's soul force thrust in between Whitedemon's eyebrows, shooting straight towards his spiritual sea!

This was the High Chaos Devil Arts that Lin Ming had obtained from the old Imp. This was a soul attack law formula. If used directly against someone like Whitedemon, who had a potent soul force himself, then even with the battle spirit's support it wouldn't have too great an effect. At best they would both be severely wounded.

But in a surprise, if Lin Ming managed to take advantage of a time when Whitedemon lost concentration, then that was a different story. Lin Ming had used his battle spirit to set a trap, and now he had caught Whitedemon off guard.

Whitedemon felt his spiritual sea violently tremble as his mind blanked for a brief moment. But in a battle between masters, the shortest lapse of consciousness was enough to turn the tables.

Bang!

The halberd light and lance light exploded together. A terrifying shock wave surged outwards, nearly tearing apart the grandmist space. Lin Ming's complexion turned pale white as he drew back the Heavenly Demon martial intent and tumbled backwards.

But Whitedemon was in an even more miserable condition. His bodily protective true essence had been torn apart by the shockwave and his entire chest was covered with thick blood!

"You bastard!"

Whitedemon's hair was in disarray and his entire body was dripping with blood. Although these wounds didn't harm his vitality, it was still a great humiliation!

His cultivation was currently equal to a late Divine Sea powerhouse, and yet he had been injured to such an extent by Lin Ming, a mere fourth stage Life Destruction martial artist. How could he not be enraged to the point of gasping for air?

But there was nothing he could do to Lin Ming. This offensive and defensive grandmist space was too tricky. His base strength far exceeded Lin Ming's, but he was powerless to do anything!

Although Lin Ming was able to take the upper hand in that strike, wanting to defeat Whitedemon was actually extremely difficult. He grasped the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and compressed the grandmist space to a range of 100 feet to save true essence.

‘The Ancient Phoenix blood’s burning period will pass soon… that Whitedemon has the Hydra bloodline, his restorative abilities shouldn’t be much worse than mine.’

Lin Ming discovered that after Whitedemon was injured, the flesh on his chest began to wriggle together, slowly regenerating. If this battle continued then it would be a test to see who could last longer.

Lin Ming activated the grandmist space and burned the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, both of which consumed a massive amount of energy. But the energy Whitedemon required to stimulate the power of his bloodline was not minor either. It was hard to say who would emerge victorious here.

But at this moment, a blazing flame flashed in front of Whitedemon. This light was an ultra-long distance sound transmitting talisman that had sent a message from seven or eight million miles away.

There was only one person on the Sky Spill Continent who had such a long distance sound transmitting talisman.

That person was Yang Yun.

Chapter 923 – Refine the Soul

Chapter 923 – Refine the Soul

…

…

…

"Mm? He wants me to return?"

After Whitedemon heard the message in the sound transmitting talisman, he hatefully glared at Lin Ming, "You brat, consider yourself lucky. One year from now is when you die!"

As Whitedemon finished speaking, his body turned into a beam of light that flew towards the north.

Lin Ming didn't stop him, and in fact couldn't stop him. The two of them had similar strength and neither could block the other. If Lin Ming wanted to leave, Whitedemon wouldn't have been able to stop him either.

Whitedemon soon vanished in the horizon. Lin Ming was silent for a moment and then also left. He displayed his maximum speed and flew away from the Sky Fortune Kingdom, across the Southern Wildness, and then changed directions several more times before finding a isolated and lonely island in the South Sea where he landed.

"So this is the strength of the highest under the heavens. I wonder how Yang Yun's strength can compare? If it were three years ago and Yang Yun drew support from the Ancient Devil then his strength would be about similar to Whitedemon."

Lin Ming mumbled to himself. Although the Ancient Devil was also an officer of a Divine Realm army in the past, all he had left was an incomplete soul form. Soul force had no physical combat strength, thus it had no choice but to raise Yang Yun and rely on possessing Yang Yun's body. Because the Ancient Devil mainly relied on Yang Yun's own strength, he wasn't much stronger than his subordinate Whitedemon.

"10 months ago I was able to easily kill the Steppes Master and that old Imp. One of them was a two-star Demon Emperor and the other was a three-star Demon Emperor near the end of his life; that is equivalent to a middle Divine Sea and late Divine Sea powerhouse. Afterwards I closed up and my strength rose again. After I was able to nearly instantly kill a middle Divine Sea martial artist – that is also the strength of the highest under the heavens. Even if I met the past Yang Yun I wouldn't need to be afraid, but the only problem is that I have no idea what's happened to Yang Yun in the past three years."

As Lin Ming thought of this, his thoughts moved and he entered into the Extreme Violet Ring. The first sight that greeted him was Situ Yaoxi. Situ Yaoxi had been turned into a bloody mess by Lin Ming. Her spine was split apart, her thigh was pierced, and she looked like a bag of rotten meat. Her true essence was locked within her body and remained out of her control. She was only able to suffer here, barely surviving.

"You little bastard! If you have the guts, kill me!"

As Situ Yaoxi saw Lin Ming, both of her eyes erupted with flames of hatred. Her animosity towards Lin Ming had reached the extreme. She was well aware that after falling into Lin Ming's hands there was no hope to survive. Softly pleading meant death and insulting him also meant death. Since that was the case, she might as well curse him to her heart's content.

"I acknowledged my fate after falling into your hands, but I also don't have many years left to live. You are different though, you still have a long life ahead of you, but what a pity. Hahahaha, you also won't live much longer! I'll wait for you in hell!"

Lin Ming indifferently looked at Situ Yaoxi and said, "My life isn't something that you have a say in."

"Humph! You'll die! And you'll die in the ugliest manner possible! Your body will be a gift and your soul will be turned into ash!" Situ Yaoxi roared with malice, her eyes blood red. She was about to speak further but Lin Ming suddenly kicked out and shattered her arm.

"Ahhh! You little bastard, you'll get what you deserve!" Situ Yaoxi bitterly cried out.

"Get what I deserve? You tried to kill me, that is cause. And now I'll kill you, that is effect. Cause and effect have both come full circle, and killing you now is perfectly justified!" Lin Ming reached down and grabbed Situ Yaoxi's neck. Her entire body was exhausted and didn't have the least bit of strength left. She limply dangled in Lin Ming's hands like a trussed up chicken.

Roarr!

Behind Lin Ming, a massive demon spirit phantom appeared. This monstrous demon spirit had three horns on its head, had fierce features, and dark green teeth. It's six arms each held onto different strange weapons. There was a battle drum, a bell, rosary beads, a hammer, iron needles, and an ancient mirror. All around this six-armed ancient demon spirit, there were countless creatures that lay down in worship; looks of reverence and awe on their faces.

This was the High Chaos Devil Arts, a soul cultivation method that originated from the Eternal Demon Abyss. Although it wasn't some top ranked technique from the Divine Realm, it was still very useful for the current Lin Ming to practice. For instance, surprise souls, more profound and effective slave seals, and even techniques to suck out a soul and refine it. It even had the soul searching technique that Lin Ming was about to use.

Moreover, it was simple to practice and didn't require much effort. It was an extremely useful transitive law formula.

The chaos demon spirit stretched out its claws and directly grabbed Situ Yaoxi by her neck. She screamed out like a cat that had its tail stomped on. "You! What are you doing, stop –"

Situ Yaoxi issued out a soul-rending scream. She watched as the chaos demon spirit lifted a hammer in one hand and lifted a rusty black iron needle in the other, and then continued watching as the iron needle was placed between her eyebrows.

It was obvious that this chaos demon spirit wanted to use this immaterial iron needle to enter her spiritual sea!

Anyone that saw such a needle about to be pounded into their heads would also have their courage crack apart.

The chaos demon spirit used two hands to hold down Situ Yaoxi's neck. It lifted the hammer and suddenly pounded down.

"Ahhh –"

In that moment, Situ Yaoxi's throat cracked as if fragments of glass had been thrust into her mouth. It was hard to imagine that a human could emit such a hoarse and terrified scream.

The hammer pounded down again and again. Situ Yaoxi's body began shaking. After her soul was smashed by that iron needle again and again, it was almost forced out of her body by that chaos demon spirit.

"You little beast, y-you'll die like a dog!"

Situ Yaoxi screamed out as she began kicking out her legs. However, her efforts soon subsided as she slumped down, motionless. Her entire body went soft as her soul was completely pulled out. Her soul became a ball of light that was gripped into the chaos demon spirit's hand and held beneath the iron needle. Above the iron needle, a distorted image of a pained face appeared – it was Situ Yaoxi's.

Puff!

The ball of light was shattered by the iron needle. Situ Yaoxi let out one last miserable scream as her soul shattered into countless fragments that were eaten up by the chaos demon spirit.

Lin Ming closed his eyes and sifted through the memories for valuable information. A soul searching technique could not be compared to the wonders of using the Magic Cube to swallow a soul fragment; at most he could obtain a few fuzzy memories, searching for a cultivation method was basically impossible. He could only search for pieces of information and events.

“Mm, this Situ Yaoxi doesn’t seem to know what Yang Yun has been doing for these past three years. However, what she can confirm is that Yang Yun’s strength has sharply risen since then. Moreover, it seems as if Yang Yun is completing some type of arcane skill. In at most one year, he’ll be able to lock onto my position.”

“Now that Whitedemon has returned, he’s already identified my limit and Yang Yun now knows just how strong I am. If he continues with his old plan then that means he is confident he can still deal with me.”

Lin Ming thought for a moment. This Yang Yun had kept his cards too well hidden, and he was also far too patient and smart. Such an opponent truly made one dread facing. When Lin Ming faced Xuan Wuji, even he hadn’t been so thorny as Yang Yun.

Lin Ming fully understood Xuan Wuji’s background and was able to estimate his strength and contrast it with his own, thus he knew that victory was in his hands. After he returned from Timeworn Phoenix City, he had been able to smoothly exterminate Xuan Wuji.

But against Yang Yun, Lin Ming actually didn’t have much confidence.

“This Sky Fortune Kingdom trap should be a chess move that Yang Yun casually arranged. His original intention should have been to probe the limit of my strength; he probably didn’t expect it to kill me.”

There's no way to know whether or not Lin Ming would have returned to the Sky Fortune Kingdom. And even if Yang Yun knew Lin Ming would return, it was still impossible for someone like him to keep guard around the Sky Fortune Kingdom. If he did so for 2-3 years, then he wouldn't have been able to grow any stronger than Whitedemon and it would've been impossible for him to deal with Lin Ming.

The Sky Fortune Kingdom was only a probing move. The true killing move should still be behind.

Peng!

With a light cracking sound, Situ Yaoxi's soul completely turned to smoke and faded to nothing. Lin Ming opened his eyes. He didn't obtain much valuable information from this soul search, but aside from some minor information on Yang Yun, there was also some other information that could barely be considered valuable to him.

Lin Ming had finally learnt just how his true identity had been exposed.

When Lin Ming crossed Life Destruction, the wood spirit jade mask he wore had been crushed, and his true appearance had been revealed and known to the world.

Afterwards, Yang Yun had used his absolute strength to kill Yang Laotian and Ouye Hua. He used their blood essence to restore the life vitality that had been sucked up by the Magic Cube. He put a part of his collection of Divine Realm inheritances as a reward, united the deep sea clans of the Fog Sea, planted a tracing mark in many of the other three Divine Kingdom powerhouses, and was able to thoroughly control all four Divine Kingdoms.

After obtaining control of the four Divine Kingdoms, Yang Yun immediately launched a massive manhunt for Lin Ming. Lin Ming's portrait was naturally posted everywhere. Those that knew Lin Ming's status like Li Yifeng, Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, Lan Xin, and others had all kept hidden; they certainly wouldn't betray Lin Ming. Yang Yun also didn't know that these individuals knew Lin Ming so he didn't search for them either.

However, near the four Divine Kingdoms, there was also someone else that knew of Lin Ming's true identity.

That was the Northwest Great Desert's Wang Yichan.

During Lin Ming's great marriage celebrations, Wang Yichan had come because of Xuan Wuji's inheritance and got entangled in a dispute with Lin Ming. There was a violent fight at the wedding banquet and Wang Yichan lost to Lin Ming. As a result, Wang Yichan was forced to compensate with his concubine from the Forsaken God Clan, a girl named 'Jue'.

Wang Yichan had a grudge against Lin Ming, selling him out was only natural, let alone that Yang Yun also provided sufficient benefits for doing so.

"Wang Yichan, Northwest Great Desert, very good."

A thick killing intent flashed in Lin Ming's eyes. Although the Northwest Great Desert held some resentment towards Lin Ming, Lin Ming was simply disinclined to bother with them over such minor matters. The Northwest Great Desert was only the weakest of the weak Holy Lands. With Lin Ming's current strength, he could extinguish their entire sect with a wave of his hand.

But now, because of the Northwest Great Desert's Wang Yichan, the Lin Family Clan and even Lan Yunyue were forced to suffer a great calamity. They had been mercilessly tortured and humiliated for the last two years. This debt had to be cleared.

Without sufficient strength, rushing into a battle between two giants was the behavior of an idiot. If one of those giants didn't die, then their bad luck could only be blamed on their own stupidity; it would be easy for them to become the victim.

Lin Ming had sentenced the Northwest Great Desert and Wang Yichan to death!

At this time, the Lin Family descendants as well as Lan Yunyue came walking over. The group of thousands was comprised of the young and the old. The one at the head was the Lin Family Clan Patriarch, Lin Wanshan.

As Lin Wanshan saw Lin Ming once more, his thoughts were very complex. This youth in front of him, this junior, had already reached heights that he could never comprehend. It was no different from a mortal meeting a god; they were individuals that lived in two completely different worlds, and their paths should never have crossed to begin with.

And beside Lin Wanshan, Lan Yunyue hesitated in her step.

In the blink of an eye, ten years had already passed. The passing of time, the wearing of the years, all of this had left deep and swelling emotions within her.

Chapter 924(A) – Settling the Cycle of Karma

Chapter 924(A) – Settling the Cycle of Karma

…

…

…

The space within the Extreme Violet Ring was sizable and comfortable. When Lin Ming received the Lin Family Clan into his spatial ring, he had left the majority of the buildings intact. As Lin Ming saw these buildings, memories began to emerge within his mind.

Hidden Smoke Hall. Rain Flower Pavilion.

As Lin Ming looked at these places that once resembled the most noble and upper crust society of the family clan, he felt emotions swell within him. These were areas that only the young masters and ladies of the family clan could enter. They would ride on wooden sedans and enjoy the flowery scenery. They would be accompanied by groups of servants as well as having trays of fruits and exquisite desserts waiting for them at any time.

When Lin Ming was young, this represented the ultimate lifestyle in his mind. He had longed for this type of wealthy life, and thought that after he grew up and reached the peak of martial arts, he could also become such a top character. But now, none of this was what he pursued.

In the past, Lin Ming came to the Lin Mansion several times with his father to prepare for great feasts. His job was to debone meat. With his sharp boning knife in hand, he would slice vicious beasts into various parts, and watch as his father cooked them into a number of different dishes.

Besides that, he and the Lin Family didn’t have much exchanges.

In the blink of an eye, ten years had passed. To martial artists that lived for tens of thousands of years, ten years was an insignificant period of time. But as Lin Ming recalled the memories of his childhood, all of those scenes and recollections of the past seemed blurry and remote.

The Lin Family descendants all arranged themselves according to rank and seniority and stood behind Lin Wanshan. A respected mortal family like the Lin Family had strict rules and tedious customs. Now that they were greeting Lin Ming, they naturally couldn't show poor etiquette.

As the Lin Family descendants looked at Lin Ming, their eyes were filled with both respect and unease. To a legendary character like Lin Ming, all of them had been influenced by him, but very few had ever seen or heard from him. In the past several years, the Lin Family's status had grown several times over, and they had faintly become the Sky Fortune Kingdom's number one family.

Lin Wanshan had been assigned the title of Duke Lin. The Lin Family's properties and businesses were countless. They could be said to be at the zenith of their glory. Even the Sky Fortune Kingdom Emperor Yang Lin had to be respectful when seeing Lin Wanshan. Not only did Lin Wanshan not need to bow, but he was even offered a site. In private, Yang Lin also had to call Lin Wanshan 'Uncle Lin'.

Such respect and courtesy was rarely honored ever since the founding of the Sky Fortune Kingdom. Lin Wanshan wasn't an idiot to think that Yang Lin treated him with respect because he appreciated his talents. Rather, all of this was because of Lin Ming. Even Yang Lin becoming the Emperor was because of Lin Ming's support.

The truth was that after Lin Ming left the Seven Profound Valleys, the Lin Family descendants had no idea what degree Lin Ming had reached. They only knew that he was extremely fierce. Even after Situ Yaoxi and the others came, they still had difficulty understanding the situation of the world; those people already completely surpassed their imaginations.

Some Lin Family juniors and even elders began to pay their respects to Lin Ming and bow. This wasn’t unusual. According to the customs of the Sky Fortune Kingdom, if an Empress were produced within the family clan, then when the empress returned to her home, there would be a grand festive celebration. Everyone in the family would bathe in incense and there would be great banquets for days, ceremonial worshipping of ancestors, and events all around. Even the Patriarch of the family would have to bow down on both knees, even if he were the Empress’s father.

Now Lin Ming’s status was countless times higher than a mere Empress of the Sky Fortune Kingdom. According to the customs of a mortal family, everyone had to bow to Lin Ming.

There were many Lin Family descendants. Merely among the servants there were over a thousand sharing the same surname. As Lin Ming gazed upon such a large family, he actually didn’t feel much of a sense of belonging.

In his mind, his true family were his parents, his sister, and Lin Xiaodong, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan. Everyone else could only be considered distant relatives.

“Everyone, there is no need for such ceremony. Uncle Lin, please rise, I cannot afford such courtesy. When I left home in the past to pursue the road of martial arts, I never imagined I would bring such great blessings and such great disasters to the Lin Family. After the beast tide ended, I haven’t set foot in Green Mulberry City. I didn’t think that you all would be drawn into my troubles.

“Nephew Lin, you can’t say that. As long as the family clan remains prosperous in the future, then let alone losing a hand, I wouldn’t even blink if I had to sacrifice my life.

Lin Wanshan honestly and earnestly said. To a traditional respected family, the prosperity of the family clan and the passing of the glory onto the next generation was the most important matter. Even a clansman’s life was expendable in the face of such an important matter.

Lin Ming's eyes moved to Lin Wanshan's left hand and he saw that his hand had already been cut off. Lin Ming sighed. In this calamity, many Lin Family descendants should have died. There were even many that had lost their feet or arms, and all of this was because of him. He took out some pill bottles from his spatial ring and said, "Here are some medicinal pills that can regenerate limbs. For all those who had their arms or legs cut off, please take these pills to restore them."

Spirit medicines that could regenerate mortal limbs weren't considered too precious. Lin Ming had put out many different types of medicines, but none of these medicines were suitable for high level martial artists. To a high level martial artist that had crossed Life Destruction, their body would reform into a spirit body. If their arm was cut down and an ordinary untempered arm was attached in place of the old, then that would become nothing but a burden to them. In a fight, once true essence flooded into that limb, it would simply explode when it became unable to withstand the amount of true essence.

Of course, to a mortal and their daily life, none of this was a problem.

As Lin Wanshan saw all of these spirit medicines, his heart was overjoyed. No one wished to be disabled for the rest of their lives. As the rest of the Lin Family descendants saw these spirit medicines, that tiny trace of resentment they held towards Lin Ming also vanished.

"And here are some other medicines. Although they are useless to me, if a mortal were to take them, they can prologue life and eliminate all diseases. They can live for over a hundred some years. As for the rest, it's to help raise the martial artists. Allow the martial arts masters of the family to eat these and it'll allow them to break through the body transformation realm, and help their cultivation increase by leaps and bounds. If a Houtian master were to eat these medicines, it can even help them break through to the Xiantian realm.

As Lin Ming spoke, he took out another massive pile of medicinal pills. All of these medicines pills had been obtained from the countless martial artists he had killed. These were only basic low level medicines, but to a small sect they were priceless treasures.

Just these dozens of medicinal pills that could allow a Houtian master to break into the Xiantian realm was enough to make a third-grade sect go crazy with jealousy. One can see this from just how much effort Qin Ziya had spent in order to obtain a Heaven Opening Pill.

“These, these are spirit pills that can allow a Houtian master to break into the Xiantian realm?” Lin Wanshan gulped with some difficulty. He had some experience and certainly knew how precious these types of miracle medicines were. They were truly precious! A single one of these pills was equivalent to a city!

Lin Ming had casually handed out several dozen of these pills. That was equal to several dozen cities worth of wealth. Lin Wanshan was unavoidably uneasy that such precious treasures were placed within the family clan.

Lin Ming saw through Lin Wanshan’s thoughts and said, “Rest assured, the sects that will be jealous of these pills are small sects; they won’t dare to move against the Lin Family. As for those sects that dare to move against the Lin Family, they won’t care about these low level medicines.”

Lin Ming waved his hand. These words caused all of the Lin Family descendants to fall into a incredulous daze. To casually hand over so many pills on the level of a Heaven Opening Pill and still call them low level medicines, Lin Ming’s boundary was simply unimaginable.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then pulled out a set of puppets from his spatial ring. There were a total of 18 puppets, and each one resembled a cruel demon, grim and savage as if they were devils that had crawled up from hell.

These were the puppets left behind by Corpsemancer. He had used these puppets when he was still at a low stage of Life Destruction, but after he entered the Destiny Decree, these puppets weren’t too useful to him anymore. They remained as only part of his collection. Lin Ming originally didn’t have any use for them, but now they actually came in handy.

Lin Ming took out a jade slip and placed his soul mark on it. He poured some true essence into the jade slip and passed it to Lin Wanshan “Just for emergencies. I give these puppets to the Lin Family as protective guards. If the Lin Family suffers a disaster one day, they can use this jade slip to control the puppets and safely pass through that calamity. This jade slip can be given to the Patriarch of the Lin Family. It can be considered a keepsake of the Patriarch and passed down through generations.

As Lin Ming spoke, the Lin Family descendants stared at the puppets with curiosity and horror. Corpsemancer was a bloodthirsty individual that loved death and chaos. These puppets had mostly been crafted from the corpses of top masters, and their skin and bones were tempered by sacrifices. These 18 puppets had crossed through oceans of blood, and the killing intent they exuded was nearly thick enough to condense into reality. If a mortal looked at them for too long, their souls would be damaged.

“Don’t look at them,” Lin Ming calmly said. He sent out an energy wave that completely isolated the killing intent emanating from the puppets.

The mortal Lin Family descendants were all lost in a stupor until Lin Ming sealed off the puppets’ killing intent. Their consciousness slowly returned, and a cold sweat began to ooze off their bodies. If just looking at these inactive puppets could do this to them, then it was hard to imagine how powerful they would be once activated!

Lin Ming flicked his fingers and 18 gray balls of energy shot into the 18 puppets; this was the compressed Heavenly Demon Force Field. He said, “Any one of these 18 puppets can easily sweep away the Seven Profound Valleys. If the 18 of them join forces, their power will increase a hundred times over. It will be enough to protect the Lin Family and guarantee your safety.”

“Sweep, sweep away the Seven Profound Valleys? 18 join forces, their power will increase a hundred times over?”

Lin Wanshan’s eyes widened as he heard Lin Ming’s words. Although he knew Lin Ming had reached a boundary that none of them were able to comprehend, the Seven Profound

Valleys was still a heaven-like existence to the mortals of the Sky Fortune Kingdom. Even the Emperor wasn't able to defy them, and the Seven Profound Valleys could even remove the Emperor if they wished. If that wasn't heaven, then what was?

And such a heaven could be easily swept away by a single puppet. The psychological impact to Lin Wanshan could be imagined!

Lin Ming said, "That's right. But the true essence I left behind in this jade slip is only enough to activate these puppets two times. Once they have been activated two times and the true essence is exhausted, the force field I left within the puppets will swallow them up and reduce them to dust. This is also to prevent other sects from coveting these puppets and bringing trouble to the Lin Family."

"Only two times..." As Lin Wanshan heard these words, he thought it was somewhat a pity. It was obvious that Lin Ming had the ability to activate these puppets many more times, but he simply didn't want to do that. For him to destroy these puppets after they were used, proved that these puppets weren't worth anything to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming continued, "Two times is the limit. This is to prevent the descendants of the family clan to use these puppets to wage war with the world, recklessly plundering other lands and committing evil."

"For a large family clan to rely on external forces to establish itself, that will make the family clan's foundation shaky and able to fall apart in a single night. Placing a limit of two times is so that the family clan will only use them in periods of great calamity. If the Lin Family wishes to develop, then they must rely on their own foundations. As for what possible calamities may come your way, that will likely only happen when the switching of dynasties occurs, and that is only something that happens every several hundred years. These 18 puppets will guarantee the Lin Family a thousand years of prosperity. That alone should be enough."

Chapter 924(B) – Settling the Cycle of Karma

Chapter 924(B) – Settling the Cycle of Karma

…

…

…

As Lin Ming spoke, Lin Wanshan could only nod.

Lin Ming saw Lin Wanshan's disappointment that these 18 puppets would be destroyed after they were used twice, but he wasn't surprised. After all, a Patriarch of a mortal family had a single most important goal, and that was ensuring the prosperity of his descendants. How could his heart not ache upon learning that such divine objects that could protect his family clan would disappear after being used? It was just that with Lin Ming's status, there was nothing he could say.

Lin Ming shook his head and said, "Even if these 18 puppets I leave behind can be used permanently, it still won't be enough for the Lin Family to remain prosperous forever. Instead, it might cause the Lin Family's might to rise as fast as a bubble, and also blow up as fast as a bubble. A hundred year dynasty, a thousand year sect, and a 10,000 year Holy Land; who doesn't want to enjoy glory and prosperity forever? I also want the Lin Family to develop into a superpower that can live on for tens of thousands of years. But the Lin Family doesn't have the foundation to do so, nor does it have the destiny. If the Lin Family is one day beaten into the sands of time and lost to the world, that is merely the cycle of samsara at work. It's to be mourned, but it isn't a bad thing."

Lin Ming said these words to Lin Wanshan, but also to himself. A Holy Land like the Silent Demon Emperor City existed for only 3 to 4 thousand years, and even a Divine Kingdom would one day topple to the ground and be forgotten. The boundless universe was endless and infinite, but it was not eternal. This was the law of the Heavenly Dao.

A martial artist that chased after the peak of martial arts and wanted to live on forever in the world was defying the will of the heavens!

To step on this road meant to encounter countless dangers. Without a great destiny and valorous perseverance, one would never succeed.

Lin Wanshan knew that what Lin Ming said was the truth, and he had no words to refute him. If a small and weak family clan held a great power in their hands, that would only end in their own suffering and doom.

“Very well. After today’s matters, this can be considered as having settled the karma between me and the Lin Family. Once I leave this world, the prosperity and decline of the Lin Family will all depend on your own samsara and destiny. If you wish to resist samsara, you can only step onto the road of martial arts and resist destiny. If one day such a person were to appear within the Lin Family again, then that would be the Lin Family’s good fortune.”

If a martial artist wished to ensure that their conscience and heart were complete, then they couldn’t entangle themselves in cause and effect. They had to straighten out their karma in the world; it was impossible to cut it off.

Lin Ming’s karmic ties to this world were two. First was the Lin Family Clan, and second was Qin Xingxuan, Mu Qianyu, and his parents.

Lin Ming didn’t plan to receive the Lin Family Clan into the Divine Phoenix Clan. In the end, the Lin Family Clan was only a mortal family clan; they had very few martial talents. Even if Lin Ming were to bring them to Divine Phoenix Island, it still wouldn’t result in their family clan developing further. Rather, it would only burden Divine Phoenix Island.

If so, then it was better to let the Lin Family Clan stay in the mortal world. They could be kings, emperors, and rulers. They could achieve the ultimate glory and wealth possible to mortals.

As for Divine Phoenix Island, Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, and the others, that was another matter.

After all of this was finished, Lin Ming turned to Lan Yunyue and said, “Yunyue, come with me.”

Lin Ming moved towards the Hidden Smoke Pavilion. Lan Yunyue hesitated for a moment but silently followed him from behind. As she looked at Lin Ming’s tall and broad back, she felt a hundred different complex emotions swell up in her heart. In these last ten years, Lan Yunyue had regretted what she had done. But as her personality and mind gradually matured with adulthood, she began to see things differently, and she began to understand many things.

What was not hers was ultimately not hers. Perhaps the path she had chosen was also long ago decided by the hands of fate.

Lin Ming was a dragon amongst men, but she was not a phoenix amongst women. The great gulf that existed between them would only grow larger and larger. In other words, even if she didn’t betray Li Ming in the past, it was impossible for them to grow old together until both of them had heads full of white hair. Since this was their fate, perhaps giving all of this up was a good deed instead.

Within the luxurious and jade-inlaid Hidden Smoke Pavilion, Lin Ming randomly gestured to a chair in front. Lan Yunyue cautiously sat down in the center, her figure only occupying a third of the seat.

Lin Ming said, “Yunyue, if you never left me, then perhaps I would’ve had different experiences, and the scene now would’ve been different.”

Lin Ming obtained the Magic Cube in the kitchen of the Great Clarity Pavilion as he was deboning a gold-backed pangolin; it had come from the beast's stomach. The reason that Lin Ming had gone to Great Clarity Pavilion was because Zhu Yan's friend had forced him to lose his lodgings.

All of this had been set in motion by Lan Yunyue leaving Lin Ming.

Lan Yunyue gently shook her head, "Fate has no ifs or whats. These years, I believe more and more that heaven has arranged our paths for us. I've become used to this simple and plain life, and as I grow, I've learnt to slowly endure the sins brought about by the vanity and impulsiveness of my youth."

Lan Yunyue's voice was soft. She smoothed the hair that fell down her shoulders. Her face was still beautiful and her temperament was still pleasant and charming. Unexpectedly, there was even a faint taste of innocence to her, as if she were someone that had returned to their true state.

After ten years of trials and tribulations, as Lin Ming finally saw Lan Yunyue again, he couldn't help but acknowledge that even though she was a mortal woman, she had an inherent beauty and elegance contained in her temperament and experience. She was like a thick, enthralling novel, leaving behind an emotional aftertaste to all who read her.

"You're right. Fate has no ifs or whats, but that doesn't mean that destiny cannot be changed. The past me also followed the flow of fate, but the current me has enough strength and destiny to resist that river of fate and defy the will of the heavens.

When one had a great destiny and lived the life of an Emperor, they would be able to resist fate and survive, turning bad luck into good fortune. As for this destiny, part of it was bestowed by the heavens, and another part of it was accumulated through the trials he went through. Even in the mortal world, there were similar views. For instance, the mortal who had a 'tough life' and wouldn't die, the number one scholar who could divine the stars, or even historical figures that were True Dragons and sons of heaven, with the life of an emperor.

In mortal history, these so-called kings and emperors would often encounter many instances of assassination in their lives. But they would manage to avoid death every time. This was a result of their destiny. There was nearly never a case of a fierce and valiant hero who stole the hearts of the world that would be assassinated before they achieved their ambitions.

As Lin Ming spoke, he held onto Lin Yunyue's sleeve that held her cut off hand. She was shocked and instinctively pulled back, not wanting to show off such a horrifying sight to Lin Ming. But her sleeve was tightly caught by him.

The originally slender and beautiful fingers had all been cut off, making one's heart fill with incomparably pain. Lin Ming remained silent and began to slowly urge his energy into her body. Lan Yunyue felt a sudden flow of heat enter her, spreading through all her meridians, her limbs, her bones, and making her feel extremely comfortable.

Quickly, Lan Yunyue felt her body become increasingly hot. She began to fragrantly sweat from all over and before long her clothes were soaked wet. Faint traces of gray material came out with this sweat; these were the impurities within Lan Yunyue.

Lin Ming used his own true essence to help Lan Yunyue cleanse her being and wash her marrows. The reason he was able to do so was because after crossing Life Destruction and forming a complete spirit body, his understandings into the structures and principles of the human body had risen to a new level. If someone were to do this rashly, they would only end up ruining the other person's meridians. After all, a mortal's body was exceedingly fragile.

This process continued for a full hour. Lin Ming patiently and gently combed through every inch of Lan Yunyue's meridians. At the end, her complexion was bright red and her chest was heaving up and down.

"Good," Lin Ming said. He released another burst of energy that eliminated Lan Yunyue's fatigue.

Lan Yunyue was surprised to find that she could clearly feel the flow of energy within her meridians. She had a faint feeling that as long as she wished to, she could clearly see throughout her own body.

“This is the Pulse Condensation realm?”

Lan Yunyue’s cultivation was only at the Altering Muscle stage. In the martial world, those that entered into the Xiantian realm would condense pre-natal energy within their bodies, returning to a fetus-like state where they breathed in energy and remained free from the pollution of the world. This could be called the time when one truly became a martial cultivator. Below the Xiantian realm, they wouldn’t be able to clear the impurities from their bodies, and remain only a mortal.

“This isn’t the Pulse Condensation realm.” Lin Ming shook his head, “Although I can help you directly increase your cultivation, that’ll only ruin your mentality and drive. It’ll affect your future progress. Now I have rid all of the postnatal air from your body, and transformed the meridians and cells of your body with energy. You shouldn’t have any problems in cultivating to the Xiantian realm.”

“Moreover, here is a pill that can help you regenerate your arm and extend your life by several hundred years. In the future I’ll also grant you further resources. If you cultivate diligently, you should be able to break into the Revolving Core realm, and live a thousand or even two thousand years. That is the limit of what I’m be able to help you to. To arrive at Life Destruction may be far too difficult for you.”

As Lin Ming spoke, he took out a medicinal pill from a jade bottle and slipped it between Lan Yunyue’s lips. He whispered, “Swallow this after chewing. This pill has mild aftereffects and shouldn’t bring you any harm.

Lan Yunyue tightened her lips and stared at Lin Ming as if she were in a daze. There was an unreadable emotion that played across her face. Eventually, she began to carefully chew the pill.

The pill was bitter. It was bitter like the last 10 years of life she had lived. As Lan Yunyue looked at the young man in front of her who was once her boyfriend, she couldn't stop tears from forming at the corners of her eyes. She began to silently cry.

By meeting Lin Ming, she had made far too many mistakes and lost far too many things, but she had also obtained many things. He was a memory that she would never be able to forget, a figure that was eternally etched into her heart.

Lin Ming smiled, his gaze gentle and charming. He reached out a hand and wiped away her tears. "I'll bring you somewhere. In the future, you can cultivate there. One day, I'll leave this world, but that doesn't mean that this will be our final farewell. If there is a chance, then I'll return once more and we'll walk with each other once more."

Everything that Lin Ming did now was to resolve the worries he had left on this planet, and to prepare himself to ascend into the Divine Realm.

Although he didn't know what Yang Yun's plan was, the only thing he didn't doubt was that the battle between them was inevitable.

And at this time, millions of miles away, Yang Yun was sitting cross-legged atop a mound of rocks. All around him was a bright sea of crimson red blood. Countless skeletons floated in this sea of blood. Some of these skeletons were jet black, hard like divine iron, and some resembled dark red blood, with an infernal energy that pierced through the heavens. There were even some that were crystal clear like jade, sending out a faint heavenly energy.

Without a doubt, these skeletons were all Supreme Elders during their lifetime. They were far stronger than Yang Laotian and Ouye Hua, and even far stronger than the Eightfall Thunder Emperor that had died in the 8000 Mile Black Swamp!

These skeletons were all from characters that had lived 100,000 years ago. They had once been Divine Realm powerhouses!

Waves of blood beat against the stone, causing it to splash into the air. In the far off horizon, a blue light shot towards this place. This light was a bronze ghost coffin, and atop of this coffin was a demon youth. That youth was Whitedemon.

“Demon Lord, why did you summon me back? Has something happened?” Whitedemon fell onto a rock opposite of Yang Yun and bowed in respect.

Chapter 925 – Merciless Indifference

Chapter 925 – Merciless Indifference

…

…

…

In the span of three years, Yang Yun's looks hadn't changed but his temperament was completely different. The past Yang Yun had white clothes that fluttered in the wind and his temperament was ethereal, as if he were untainted by the world. His words were elegant and he was extraordinarily handsome. To describe him with a term would be: a jade-like gentleman.

The current Yang Yun was completely different. There was no longer even the slightest shadow of his past self in his current incarnation. He wore a long crimson robe, and most of his clothes were pulled wide open, revealing powerful shoulders and a defined chest that surged with vitality. His muscles were aesthetic and beautifully cut as if they were formed from jade, crystalline and without flaw.

There was a red line that slashed down between his eyebrows, with two sharp points and a round center, looking like an eye. It lent him a devilish charm.

Such a transformation was because Yang Yun was approaching the demonic path. A martial artists aura was in the end the energy field that surrounded them. Those that studied orthodox cultivation methods would have an energy field that veered towards the correct path, and those that studied demonic path cultivation methods had temperaments that tended to seem demonic, their auras seemingly more demonic and bloody.

Originally, with Yang Yun's methods and outstanding talents, everyone believed that he would become a great leader and hero of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. No one imagined that after the trip into the Temple of Marvels, such an unbelievable series of events would follow. Yang Yun had actually slain his own great grandfather and even forced his father into a dead end.

Afterwards, not only did Yang Yun take control of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, but he also established dominance over the other three Divine Kingdoms. The world was already under his control. If he managed to fuse the four Divine Kingdoms together, he would establish a true sixth-grade sect!

A fifth-grade sect took Life Destruction powerhouses as Elders, and if they had a Divine Sea leader then they would be called a Holy Land. A sixth-grade sect took Divine Sea powerhouses as Elders, and the highest under the heavens as their leader. For the last 100,000 years, there had been 10 people that appeared in the martial world that qualified as the highest under the heavens, but the number of sixth-grade sects did not surpass three!

Every time a sixth-grade sect appeared, that was the gathering of the entire continent's strength, a brief moment of flourishing history!

If Yang Yun managed to join the four Divine Kingdoms together, he could complete this great goal.

At this time, Yang Yun's eyes were closed and his face expressionless. He exuded a forceful and compelling momentum from his body, making him feel unapproachable.

"Demon Lord, why have you summoned me back?"

Whitedemon fell onto one knee. The one he was kneeling to was the Ancient Devil within Yang Yun's body. For these past three years, more and more of the Ancient Devil's personality and past appearance began to reappear in Yang Yun. In the battle within the Temple of Marvels, the Ancient Devil had lost two-thirds of his soul. But for these last three years, the Ancient Devil had been restoring and nourishing himself in this blood pond. He collected the countless skeletons of Supreme Elders that had died in the great war 100,000 years ago, gathering them together to absorb their energy. The current Ancient Devil had already restored his combat strength to a certain degree. If he were to possess Yang Yun now, his strength would even surpass Whitedemon. Whitedemon became increasingly respectful towards him.

“You cannot defeat Lin Ming.”

The Ancient Devil said. Although he hadn’t seen the great battle between Whitedemon and Lin Ming, he had been able to draw sufficient conclusions from the incomplete information Whitedemon had sent him.

Whitedemon didn’t seem too convinced, but he couldn’t help but acknowledge, “I don’t know where, but Lin Ming has managed to inherit some extremely powerful force field. If I’m not wrong, then it should be part of the Primordius martial intent that Empyrean Primordius wielded in the past. Once this strange martial intent activates, it’ll form a mystical space around him, covering the world in a range of 1300 miles and all Laws and energy lose their effectiveness within. With a long distance attack, my lance light weakens to less than 30% of its original strength after piercing through to the center. But if I were to enter that strange space and fight him, that instead causes all of the true essence in my body to be suppressed by the undeniable principles within; there simply wasn’t anything I could do against Lin Ming.”

“If it weren’t for that strange space, I would’ve been able to kill him in three moves!” Whitedemon said with resentful bitterness. When he fought against Lin Ming, it made him feel like he had strength that he couldn’t use; it was an extremely vexing feeling.

“Mm? Primordius martial intent!” The Ancient Devil’s eyes suddenly shot open and his expression changed. As someone who participated in the great war 100,000 years ago, he had personally witnessed the scene of Empyrean Primordius activate his Primordius martial intent and instantly exterminating tens of thousands of Divine Realm powerhouses where they stood. The Ancient Devil naturally knew just what these words meant!

He pondered over this for fifteen minutes and said, “I’ve looked up Lin Ming’s life history. Before he was 15 years old, his talent was average and his achievements common. But after he reached 15 years of age, his growth became out of control. In just 10 short years, he grew to such a degree already. It’s obvious that 10 years ago he managed to encounter some heaven-defying lucky chance. And I suspect that this lucky chance has some relation with Empyrean Primordius.”

“Could that black vortex within Lin Ming’s body be the elementary form of the Primordius martial intent?”

The Ancient Devil muttered to himself. He had only seen the Primordius martial intent; he had no understandings of it. It was impossible for the likes of him to speculate on existences at the boundary of Empyrean Primordius.

As for the Magic Cube, the Ancient Devil simply didn’t know about this. He had no idea that Lin Ming would have such an fortuitous encounter at 15 years of age, so he came to such a misunderstanding.

As Whitedemon saw the Ancient Devil deep in thought, he brown-nosed and said, “No matter what lucky chance Lin Ming had, after killing him all of that will belong to Sir Demon Lord. Everything he has done or achieved is just a gift for you!”

As Whitedemon spoke to here, the Ancient Devil started to laugh out loud. “You’re right. After some more time passes, my Great Blood Refining Art will reach large success. At that time I’ll kill Lin Ming and obtain all of the secrets on his body as well as all of the destiny that he’s accumulated!”

Whitedemon glanced over the surrounding blood pond and said, “Since the last time I was here, 20% of the blood pond’s power has been absorbed by you. If this continues, will it be enough for you to reach perfection in your Great Blood Refining Art?”

Blood essence was highly nourishing to the divine soul. When the Ancient Devil killed Yang Laotian and Ouye Hua, he had done so to lay dominance over the four Divine Kingdoms but also for their blood essence.

In these past three years, the Ancient Devil gathered the deep sea clans of the Fog Sea and ordered them to slay countless deep sea vicious beasts, using their blood to complete this blood pond. The Ancient Devil had collected the remains of some powerhouses from the Sea of Miracles and tossed their skeletons into the blood pond. All of these were conditions he prepared to cultivate the Great Blood Refining Art.

“That’s right. The grade of these deep sea vicious beasts isn’t high enough. Although there are many high level vicious beasts in the sea, those Divine Sea rank vicious beasts normally stay far off in 500,000 feet water depths. Even I would find it hard to withstand the pressure at such depths, much less kill them. As for the remains of these Divine Realm powerhouses, although they used to be fierce existences, after 100,000 years have passed, their blood has nearly all dried up and they don’t have much effect.”

The Ancient Devil shook his head as he spoke.

Whitedemon’s thoughts stirred. “Is the reason that Sir Demon Lord called me back so hastily that he wishes for me to kill some deep sea vicious beasts to help your supernatural powers reach large success?”

The Ancient Devil nodded. “Indeed, what I need now is fresh blood essence. It’s unlikely that you’ll be able to kill Divine Sea rank deep sea vicious beasts. Currently my supernatural powers are just short of reaching completion. The blood essence of basic vicious beasts is no longer useful to me.”

“Then what should we do? Although human Divine Sea powerhouses are easy to kill, they focus on their dantian, and the power of their blood is far inferior to a complete vicious beast.” Whitedemon said with a thoughtful expression.

At this moment, the Ancient Devil's lips curved up into a sly smile. "Human blood naturally has a limited effect, but if they have the blood of different beasts within their bodies, then that is a different matter. For instance, the Ancient Phoenix Clan bloodline or the Hydra Clan bloodline are both excellent bloodlines."

"Mm?" Whitedemon's eyes widened and a chill crawled up his back. He had the Hydra bloodline!

Woosh!

The surrounding world suddenly changed. A deep blood red barrier rose up, covering Whitedemon and the Ancient Devil inside!

This was the Spectral Blood Skylock Array!

This was far different from the Spectral Blood Skylock Array that had been set for Lin Ming. This Spectral Blood Skylock Array was personally controlled by the Ancient Devil and also had the massive blood pond as support. There was no comparison in the strength between the two. Even Lin Ming would be hard pressed to break through if he personally came here. Moreover, Whitedemon's ability to break through array formations was far inferior to Lin Ming's!

"Demon Lord, you, you...!" Whitedemon looked at the Ancient Devil with a disbelieving incredulity etched onto his face. As a subordinate to the Ancient Devil, he owed a great debt of gratitude to him. The reason that Whitedemon was able to cultivate to such an extent was all because the Ancient Devil had provided him with sufficient resources. For all these years he maintained utter loyalty to the Ancient Devil. He never thought that one day he would be the one taken as a sacrifice.

"If you look for vicious beasts, their blood won't be enough. Lin Ming's growth is too fast and I don't have much time left; I'm only a step away from completion. I need your bloodline as the last finishing touch. You currently have a late Divine Sea cultivation, and in the past you even reached the higher Divine Transformation realm. Your Hydra bloodline is just what I need. All I can do is take your minor sacrifice to realize my great plans."

The Ancient Devil had no expression on his face nor did his voice have any emotion.

Whitedemon's eyes turned blood red. He grasped his purple spear, feeling as if a knife had been twisted into his heart. He never imagined that one day the benefactor he respected so much would betray him in such a manner.

"Sir Demon Lord, I don't believe this. In the Sea of Miracles your physical body was destroyed and your strength greatly reduced. Without a mortal body you didn't have any combat strength at all. If it weren't for my shelter and support, you would never have been able to live until now. We spent over 100,000 years in the Sea of Miracles together, and yet you are doing this to me?"

The Ancient Devil indifferently looked at Whitedemon. "There is no more meaning in mentioning matters that have already passed. You cannot resist me. 100,000 years ago when I trained you, I already placed a spell in your body. With this big array here as support, killing you is as simple as turning my hand."

"I don't believe this! I won't believe this!" Whitedemon's eyes blazed as he stared into the Ancient Devil's eyes. Suddenly, his mind shook as he became aware of what was happening. "You-you are not the Demon Lord! You are Yang Yun! Where is the Demon Lord!? Sir Demon Lord! Sir Demon Lord! Save me! Yang Yun wishes to kill me!"

No matter how much Whitedemon shouted, the young man in front of him maintained his cold apathy, as if everything happening was within his plans and under his control.

"To think that you would recognize me at the end. Correct, I am not the Demon lord, I am me, I am Yang Yun!" Yang Yun stood up, looking over Whitedemon as a divine god oversees mortals, a merciless indifference in his eyes.

Chapter 926 – The End of Whitedemon

Chapter 926 – The End of Whitedemon

…

…

…

"Impossible, impossible!" Whitedemon's mental state became extremely unstable, "You sealed away the Demon Lord? How can you have the power!?"

"There is nothing that's impossible. Whitedemon, go in peace and follow your master!" Yang Yun's hands grasped the void, and the blood pool around him suddenly soared up into the sky, turning into a massive python.

"You damned beast! You ungrateful little bastard! If it weren't for us, you would've already died unknown and forgotten. How could you have such strength to stand at the peak of this continent!" Whitedemon hysterically shouted. His eyes were blood red; he wished that he could tear Yang Yun to pieces.

"Ungrateful?" Yang Yun sneered, "You think I'm a little child who'll be fooled by such meaningless words? Between you two and I, we've already been mutually using each other. I've never trusted you, and you've never trusted me. If I didn't act against your master, then once that devil's supernatural powers reached large success, I would've already become a sacrifice or had my body stolen away.

Yang Yun pulled out a bright crimson treasure sword from his spatial ring. This sword had also been refined within the blood pond, and its power was incomparable to the past.

He stroked the flat blade of the sword, and left a touch of fresh blood on the edge. The sword blade absorbed the blood, becoming increasingly beguiling and bewitching!

“Demon Lord! Demon Lord! Have you been sealed away!? Wake up! Wake up! Wake up! Wake up!”

Whitedemon revolved all of the energy within his body and poured it into his voice, forming a sonic boom that shot towards Yang Yun like landslides and tsunamis.

This was one of the Hydra Clan’s unique sonic energy martial skills, called the Heaven Devouring Roar. He poured his energy into a sound wave to attack the enemy which was extremely effective towards the intangible and invisible divine soul. Whitedemon wanted to use this sort of impact to awaken the Ancient Devil.

Yang Yun remained unmoved. He coldly said, “There is no need to shout. Most of your Lord’s strength was swallowed up by Lin Ming in the Temple of Marvels, and now his strength has sharply dropped. At that time, I bided my time, saved my strength, and while he was recovering from his wounds, I suppressed him in a single go and swallowed him up. For these past few years, the Demon Lord that you’ve been bowing to is me, Yang Yun. Even if you shout until your throat tears apart, he still won’t awaken.”

“What!?” Whitedemon found this unbelievable. He crazily shouted, “Without erasing the spirit mark, you’ll lose yourself if you swallow the souls of others! How is this possible!? How is this possible!?”

“You’re right. I was unable to erase that devil’s spirit mark and could only seal him away. Even so, I will frequently lose my personality and my memories will become muddled. Sometimes I don’t even know who I am anymore. Everything that happens, I rely on my own willpower to withstand and overcome. In the future, once my cultivation rises further and my understanding of the soul increases, I’ll completely eat up that devil’s soul and cancel his spirit mark along with all his memories.”

A soul was composed of memories and a spirit mark; both were inseparable from each other. If Lin Ming wished to thoroughly erase the Ancient Devil’s spirit mark, he also had to destroy the associated memories. But by that time, the Ancient Devil’s memories would also become useless to Yang Yun.

Whitedemon's heart chilled as he heard this. This Yang Yun was simply a madman, a madman!

Although Yang Yun seemed to casually say all of this, the truth was that this method was the same as suicide. No one was willing to take their own soul as a joke, and rely upon some so-called willpower to overcome the extremely dangerous loss of personality and individuality. Once they failed to do so, they would become insane, falling into depravity and becoming a lunatic with no sense of self.

As for Yang Yun relying on enhancing his boundary in the future and then eliminating the devil's spirit mark, that was far too difficult. Once memories were fused together, wanting to separate them was easier said than done. If he made a single misstep in the process, he could possibly erase his own memories.

The reason Yang Yun chose such a dangerous path was because he truly did need the Ancient Devil's knowledge. When the Ancient Devil tried to possess Lin Ming and suffered a near fatal backlash, he had lost most of his soul. But the part that was left behind was the essence of the Ancient Devil's soul and the source of his memories; it was even more important than the other two parts combined. This was also a reasonable matter. In the dangers of possessing someone, the Ancient Devil would naturally save the most important part of his soul as a contingency.

Yang Yun's ambitions were great. He wanted to become an unrivalled powerhouse and climb to the peak of all martial arts. He didn't want to be stopped at the Sky Spill Continent. So to do this, he had to take the risk.

"Madman, you are an absolute madman!"

Whitedemon's complexion paled. Facing this maniacal Yang Yun, he felt nothing but fear.

Those that didn't fear a strong opponent, feared those that didn't care for their life. Those that didn't fear those that didn't care for their lives, feared those that were demented. In Whitedemon's eyes, this Yang Yun was a demented madman.

He was ruthless to his enemies and even more ruthless to himself!

From the start they underestimated Yang Yun and chosen the wrong person. They had raised a tiger, creating this disaster, and making all of their efforts a gift for someone else!

Bang!

Thousands of blood waves shot up into the sky, twisting together into the giant blood python that fell towards Whitedemon. Yang Yun soared high into the skies, seeming as if he controlled this world. “You’re truly a faithful dog. Now, show me your final worth!”

At this moment, words were useless; there was only battle. Whitedemon gave a loud shout and a massive hydra phantom appeared behind him. He grasped his purple lance and shot towards Yang Yun!

“Hydra bloodline, Broken Star!”

As Yang Yun saw Whitedemon strike out with his strongest attack, a trace of pity appeared in his eyes. He casually formed a seal and sent it flying towards Whitedemon. Whitedemon’s body shook, and the hydra behind him suddenly vanished, all of the condensed true essence dissipating into thin air!

“What?” Whitedemon was shocked. He glared at Yang Yun with hatred blazing in his eyes, “You despicable scum!”

He wished that he could devour Yang Yun, but an irresistible energy was suppressing him, giving him no chance to defy. At the same time, the rivers of blood in the air that formed a python fell down and swallowed him. Energy violently exploded and a massive wave of blood shot into the sky, forming endless clouds of blood. Finally, all of it rained down.

Over 30% of Whitedemon’s meridians shattered. He floated face up in a sea of blood, his face pale and fading.

His nose and ears were leaking blood, and his eyes were filled with wavering despair.

Whitedemon smiled. It was pitiful and wretched. “Demon Lord, you didn’t trust me, in the end you didn’t trust me! In the Sea of Miracles I was loyal and devoted to you for 100,000 years, and yet you still didn’t lift the binding spell in my body. Now, that choice will take my life today. It’ll take my life!”

Yang Yun glanced at Whitedemon without sympathy. He hadn’t used any martial skill just now. All he had done was use his great strength to activate the spell that the Ancient Devil had left within Whitedemon.

This was the safest and also cruelest method to defeat Whitedemon. There was not even a chance for him to desperately struggle. To a martial artist, this was the saddest way to die. They possessed supernatural powers, had unwavering confidence in their strength, and yet they didn’t even have a chance to fight for their life.

“In the battle with Lin Ming, you consumed far too much energy and you rushed all the way here without giving yourself a chance to restore your strength. All of that led to you not having any chance to resist this spell.”

Yang Yun’s words were ruthless and indifferent. “Before you die, I would like to advise you one last time. In this world, the only one you can trust is yourself. Your lord was not mistaken. The only reason he would be defeated by me, is because his destiny is lacking and he was severely wounded by Lin Ming. But as for you, you died in a far too stupid manner.”

Yang Yun lifted his right hand and grasped the void. An arrow of blood pierced through Whitedemon’s chest and then flew up high into the sky!

All of Whitedemon’s blood essence began to be attracted by an invisible force, streaming out from his body. It condensed in the air, forming a blood red light that constantly sparkled, incomparably brilliant.

Whitedemon watched helplessly as all his blood essence left through his heart and formed a beautiful yet strange scene in the air. The corners of his lips curved up in an ironic smile. He never thought that his end would come like this.

Blood continued flowing out from Whitedemon's body. The Hydra bloodline was extremely tough. In addition, Whitedemon had once reached the Divine Transformation realm that existed above the Divine Sea, making his physical body that much tougher. Even though his heart was ruined and his blood essence sucked out from his body, he still didn't die. Instead, his body withered as more and more blood was pumped out of his body.

Finally, all of Whitedemon's blood essence and vitality were completely sucked out by Yang Yun!

Yang Yun shot seals of energy into that mass of blood. Faintly, a blood-soaked phantom hydra appeared in that mass of blood; it was the last struggles of the blood essence and vitality.

"The blood vitality actually formed a true shape. Whitedemon's blood essence quality is indeed wonderful." Yang Yun murmured. His hand movements became faster; he wanted to refine the blood vitality form.

There were many times when a precious pill was formed and produced a phantom form after leaving the furnace. This was because the medicinal energy was too rich. After a long period of time, it might even develop its own intelligence. Heavenly materials that existed for a long period of time would also possess a medicine spirit; this was the same concept.

Although the blood vitality phantom form was from forming a spirit, it didn't have any intelligence, merely survival instincts. As it was covered by Yang Yun's blood energy and began to be slowly refined, it crazily struggled.

However, it was ultimately impossible to resist Yang Yun's strength. All of its spiritual energy was sucked out and it began to slowly sag down.

"Fuse!"

Yang Yun clutched his hands together and the phantom hydra blood vitality was eventually absorbed by the mass of blood essence, becoming one and turning into a thumb-sized blood pill.

"With this blood pill, this blood pond will become a blood spring; that is a qualitative leap upwards. It will finally allow me to achieve perfection in my Great Blood refining Art. So long as my Great Blood Refining Art reaches perfection, I'll be able to rely on an array formation and sense a person's blood vitality, locking onto them in a range of one million miles."

"When that time comes, Lin Ming, there will be no place left for you to run to!"

"You have the life of an Emperor, and your destiny rises like a rainbow. As for me, although I have gathered and accumulated my own destiny for 40 years, my destiny is still inferior to yours, and even your life is tougher than mine. If I fight you, even if I'm stronger than you, I still don't have too great of an assurance to defeat you. But even so, our battle cannot be avoided. I tried to kill you, I had the entire world hunt you, and I even harmed your family; our enmity will never be resolved. Just the destiny and secrets that you possess leave me with no choice but to slay you!"

Yang Yun's ambitions and heart were higher than the heavens, but his true life and talent were worthless. The reason he could obtain his current achievements was because he relied on the Ancient Devil's resources and teachings. In the Divine Realm, although the Ancient Devil could be considered having some ability, he wasn't an overlord, much less a great figure. Even if Yang Yun swallowed his memories and reached his boundary in the future, it would be exceedingly hard, nearly impossible to rise any more. He had to inherit another destiny. This destiny would come from Lin Ming.

Since ancient time, if a genius didn't experience lucky chances, they would never have great achievements. But all lucky chances came from betting one's life and struggling until the end. Now, with such an extraordinary and singular lucky chance placed in front of him, even though Yang Yun knew that there was danger, he still had to stake his life on it!

Chapter 927 – Once Again Battling the Purple Lion Thunder Source

Chapter 927 – Once Again Battling the Purple Lion Thunder Source

…

…

…

15 days later, 8000 Mile Black Swamp.

As the Sky Spill Continents true life forbidden zone, the 8000 Mile Black Swamp was permanently covered in dark gray clouds. Here existed dangers upon dangers. If a Life Destruction powerhouse entered, survival would be perilous with nine chance of death and only one hope of life. Even a weak Divine Sea powerhouse could perish here if their luck was lacking.

At this time, a black-clothed youth appeared in the skies above the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. He carried a thick saber in his hands, and his appearance was plain and normal. He looked like someone that could be easily lost within a crowd.

This person was Lin Ming. After he used his appearance changing technique. After forcing Whitedemon back, Lin Ming had rushed to the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. Because he had to pass through a number of transmission arrays to arrive here, he chose to use an appearance changing technique in order to avoid any unnecessary troubles.

He didn't go to see Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan first. The Giant Leviathan had swam far too deep in the South Sea and was still a long distance away. Moreover, there weren't any transmission arrays in the deep sea lands. Even if Lin Ming flew at full speed towards the

Giant Leviathan, it would still take him a very long time. Lin Ming couldn't afford the time it would take him to do that. According to Situ Yaoxi's memories, he had at most one year before he had to fight Yang Yun. The battle was inevitable.

He was now overflowing with spirit medicines, and his cultivation was also quickly approaching a bottleneck. If he had enough time and was able to single mindedly go into seclusion, he would be able to cross more stages of Life Destruction, finally emerging at the sixth or seventh stage of Life Destruction.

Unfortunately, he only had a single year. He had to make full use of this year, thus he came to the 8000 Mile Black Swamp for a single objective. That was the Purple Lion Thunder Source!

When Lin Ming was at the late Revolving Core realm, he had entered the skies above the 8000 Mile Black Swamp and encountered the Purple Lion Thunder Source. Let alone swallowing it, Lin Ming had almost been the one devoured by it instead. If it weren't for the frightening deterrence of the Heretical God Sprout and Argent White Sword, he might've really died in the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion.

"It should be here."

Lin Ming followed the route in his memories and arrived underneath the area of the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's cave dwelling. He looked upwards at the sky.

"Are you sure?" Demonshine asked.

"About 70%," Lin Ming responded, not daring to have absolute certainty. The space and time within the 8000 Mile Black Swamp was in disarray. Even though Lin Ming had greatly progressed in the Concepts of Space and Time, he couldn't guarantee that he could find the same location he reached in the past.

Lin Ming suppressed the aura of the Heretical God Sprout and shot into the skies. He broke into a sea of thunder. Countless bolts of lightning flashed in the sky, and arcs of electricity swept through the skies. To the current Lin Ming, this sort of endless thunder was like a mortal bathing in warm water. Not only did he not feel discomfort, but it was rather comfortable and enjoyable.

10 miles, 20 miles, 30 miles.

Lin Ming passed straight into the Thunder Dominion. The color of thunder constantly changed around him, and also increased in strength. However, Lin Ming seemed unaware of this all.

70 miles, 80 miles, all the way to the 90 mile range of the Thunder Dominion!

Here, not only did the color of thunder change, but even its shape changed.

The past thunder came in the form of arcs, but the current power of thunder here was fantastical sheets of glimmering light. Purple white, deep purple, golden red, all of it linked into a single endless stretch of thunder that continued on forever without the slightest sound. It looked like a multi-colored mist, a colorful land where immortals dwelled.

Beneath this tranquil façade, there was actually a terrifying killing intent hiding. The golden red lightning here had been used by Lin Ming to break through to the first stage of Life Destruction. If enough of this golden red lightning was gathered, even a Divine Sea powerhouse would be struck to death.

When Lin Ming's cultivation was at the late Revolving Core, he had been forced to stop here, unable to go any further in. But now, even this fierce and violet golden red lightning was not a threat to Lin Ming.

Continue upwards!

The 100 mile range Thunder Dominion!

In the past, although Lin Ming hadn't dared to step into the 100 mile Thunder Dominion, he had still released a wisp of his perception to investigate the area. The 100 mile Thunder Dominion and the 90 mile Thunder Dominion were two completely different realities.

There were numerous large and small thunderballs up here, each of them floating around light stars in the sky. A horrifying power of thunder formed a force field that wrapped around them. The space near these thunderballs was already twisted to shreds, and countless space cracks blanketed the area. Regardless whether space or energy, both were unstable, and even the power of Laws was affected.

If the 90 mile Thunder Dominion was a land where a Divine Sea powerhouse who studied thunder-attribute cultivation could possibly survive, then the 100 mile Thunder Dominion was a true absolute life forbidden zone. All who entered here were doomed to die!

Even Lin Ming had to be extremely cautious after reaching the 100 mile Thunder Dominion. He didn’t dare to rush in. Instead, he used his perception to investigate the area.

“I wonder just how these islands were formed.”

The skies of the 100 mile Thunder Dominion were completely different, as if this was an entirely different world altogether. Many islands of various sizes floated in the sky, and each of these islands held a magnetic god tree!

These magnetic god trees safely coexisted with the thunderballs that floated in the air. Some of them even had roots that extended into these thunderballs, absorbing their energy.

Each and every one of these magnetic god trees were undoubtedly precious treasures! It was just that the last time Lin Ming had come here, he couldn’t even approach them, much less move them.

“A magnetic god tree itself contains a terrifying attack power, and it is also incomparably durable. Cutting them wouldn’t be easy at all. Even if the current me wants to investigate these god trees, that is also very dangerous.”

Lin Ming thought for a moment. Then, his thoughts suddenly stirred and a smile curved up his lips.

“You’ve come? There is no need to hide, I’ve already sensed you!”

Lin Ming’s eyes locked onto a direction. Several breaths of time later, the lightning there began to waver like ripples in the water, forming into countless threads of lightning that gathered together, finally forming into a small purple lion.

This lion was only three feet long, and after forming itself, it looked no different from a real lion. It’s body was robust and powerful, and its purple mane was glorious and magnificent. Every hair strand was clearly differentiated, and its amber eyes were bright and watery. It didn’t seem as if it were formed from the power of thunder, but rather from a genuine lion.

This was the Purple Lion Thunder Source!

Thunder Source – the source of thunder. It was an existence a step above a Thunder Soul. The lowest level Thunder Source was at least 10 times more terrifying than a Thunder Soul.

The Purple Lion Thunder Source already had an inkling of spiritual intelligence. In truth it had discovered Lin Ming from the very start. This was because some of its energy emitted from Lin Ming’s body. That was the energy of the Twinlife Thunder Crystal!

Hundreds of millions of years ago, the Twinlife Thunder Crystal and the Purple Lion Thunder Source were born together. They were from the same body, so the Purple Lion Thunder Source could certainly feel its presence.

The Twinlife Thunder Crystal was involved with the evolution of the Purple Lion Thunder Soul. But such an important object had actually been stolen away by this young man in front of it; how could it not hate Lin Ming to the bones?

It was only that it could feel Lin Ming’s great strength. This young man was already incomparable to several years ago. This caused it to feel a great deal of fear and was also the reason why it didn’t immediately appear. Rather, it remained hidden, secretly observing him.

Even though Lin Ming was strong, it was impossible for the Purple Lion Thunder Source to give up on the Twinlife Thunder Crystal. It prepared to desperately gamble on a battle and waited for a chance to launch a sneak attack. But it had been discovered by Lin Ming.

“Your intelligence isn’t too bad. Your Twinlife Thunder Crystal has already been absorbed by me. If you want to take it back, your only choice is to devour me.” Lin Ming extracted a purple long spear as he spoke.

This was a weapon that Jiang Ziji had left in the palace within the Extreme Violet Ring. It was a high-grade heaven-step thunder-attribute long spear. It was nothing to someone like Jiang Ziji, but to Lin Ming now, it was actually extremely convenient. To deal with the intangible Purple Lion Thunder Source, the heavy and cumbersome Great Desolate Blood Halberd wasn’t the best choice to do so. Instead, the blood and death energy on the Great Desolate Blood Halberd might be restrained by the power of thunder instead.

The best weapon for this situation was undoubtedly this purple spear.

“Submit to me, and travel the world with me. I’ll allow you to evolve!” Lin Ming pointed his spear towards the Purple Lion Thunder Source. An invisible force field erupted from his body. Before now, he had been deliberately suppressing the Heretical God Sprout’s aura; he was afraid he would startle the Purple Lion Thunder Source and cause it to be too afraid to approach him. Now, he no longer needed to do that.

The Heretical God Seed was dual-attribute thunder and fire transcendent divine might. With the full eruption of the Heretical God Seed’s aura, it immediately created an immense pressure on the Purple Lion Thunder Source!

This was a feeling of awe and dread that swelled up within the Purple Lion Thunder Source, which seemed as if it had already been etched into its soul from the very time it was born all those hundreds of millions of years ago. It was a feeling that it could never erase.

In that moment, a trace of fear and alarm flashed in the Purple Lion Thunder Source’s eyes. But it immediately forced out all those emotions, replacing them with a burning anger!

As a Thunder Source, it was extremely arrogant and haughty; how could it be willing to surrender to a human and be used however which way?

Roarr!

The Purple Lion Thunder Source emitted a heaven-shaking roar, bringing with it the glory of the world. All lightning in the 90 mile Thunder Dominion, the purple white, the purple gold, and the golden red, all of it was swept up into a massive multicolored vortex!

If several dozen arcs of this golden red lightning gathered together, it'd be enough to threaten the life of a Divine Sea powerhouse. With so much power of thunder gathered here together, the might could be imagined!

A brilliant fighting intent sizzled in Lin Ming's eyes. This Purple Lion Thunder Source could obtain increased power from the surroundings in the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion. As it desperately went all out, its strength was terrifying. If Lin Ming wanted to absorb this Thunder Source, he would need to be exceedingly careful. Otherwise there was a chance he would suffer a backlash and burn away all his meridians, dying in the process.

With the support of the massive amount of thunder energy within the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion, The Purple Lion Thunder Source's suddenly expanded to a horrifying degree. Its eyes flashed with a bloodthirsty light. It was certainly afraid of the power and pressure from Lin Ming's Heretical God Seed, but it also desired to possess this power. If it could swallow Lin Ming, its evolution would reach new heights.

As these thoughts appeared in the Purple Lion Thunder Source's mind, it began to react in a crazed and excited manner.

Chi-la!

The lightning behind the Purple Lion Thunder source twisted into colorful lightning dragons that shot towards Lin Ming. The five colored lightning dragons emitted whistling cries, their howls echoing between the heavens and earth like rolling thunder claps, piercing straight through the world!

Lin Ming's eyes were icy cold. He revolved his true essence to the limit and poured his grandmist battle spirit into his purple long spear, thrusting straight towards the light dragons.

Chi! Chi! Chi!

Purple golden thunder surged; even the misty light within the Thunder Dominion was split apart. Lin Ming's grandmist battle spirit directly bore the attacks of the five colored lightning dragons, withstanding the baptism of thunder. But not only did the grandmist battle spirit not weaken, it instead became increasingly strong.

Heavenly Demon martial intent – grandmist space!

As the lightning dragons roared, an enchanting red lotus slowly bloomed behind Lin Ming. An invisible force field surged outwards, bringing with it an ancient and boundless atmosphere. In an instant, the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion was enshrouded by the grandmist space.

The grandmist space was able to smother out nearly all energies and power of Laws. Thunder belonged to the class of the five main elements. The power of thunder was born after chaos and was exactly one of the Laws that was suppressed by the grandmist space!

Chapter 928 – Swallowing the Thunder Source

Chapter 928 – Swallowing the Thunder Source

…

…

…

The grandmist space was broad and vast, extending outwards for over a thousand miles. As the Purple Lion Thunder Source was covered in the grandmist space, it suddenly felt its connection to the power of thunder in the world cut off, greatly startling it.

"Law of Annihilation, Chain of Stars!"

Lin Ming suddenly shook his long spear and the power of space erupted. A strong destruction twist force dispersed, combining with the elementary grandmist energy and spinning itself into a chaos storm. The lightning dragons sent out by the Purple Lion Thunder Source were all swallowed up!

With the choking power of the chaos storm combined together with the suppression of Thunder Laws from the grandmist space, the lightning dragons shattered like glass in just several breaths of time!

After the lightning dragons shattered, they turned into a pure power of thunder. Lin Ming swept out his purple long spear, swallowing up all of the power of thunder like a thirsty whale.

As the Purple Lion Thunder Source saw a massive amount of its own energies being sucked up by Lin Ming, it flew into a violent rage.

Roar!!!

With a loud cry, it shot towards Lin Ming!

A Thunder Source was the origin of thunder that was produced over hundreds of millions of years; it symbolized the greatest power of thunder. As it threw its body towards Lin Ming, even the grandmist space around it began to tremble.

"You're truly worthy of being a Thunder Source. But the more powerful you are, only means the greater the power you bring to me will be!"

A flash of excitement shone in Lin Ming's eyes. He raised his long spear and lashed it out like a whip. As the spear came smashing down, it contained the compressed energy of the Heretical God Sprout as well as the grandmist battle spirit. If someone who just entered the late Divine Sea were to withstand this strike, they would be greatly wounded and even their dantian might shatter.

Although the inherent energy within the Purple Lion Thunder source was potent, it didn't have the ability or knowledge of cultivation methods. Even though it held so much energy within itself, it was actually unable to display its full potential.

Lin Ming didn't fear the current Purple Lion Thunder Source's main form. What he feared was what would happen after swallowing it, and the terrifying impact to his meridians that the terrifying energy would cause. If his control was lacking in the slightest, all of his meridians would burn to a crisp.

Woosh!

The spear came slashing down like a purple arc of light, nearly splitting the void in half. But the Purple Lion Thunder Source suddenly vanished in that moment!

A series of purple phantoms appeared in the void like an ethereal dream. Thunder was the fastest of the main elements, and this Purple Lion Thunder Source also had an intangible body. It's speed was nearly unrivalled!

"You want to compare speed? I also have faith in my own speed!"

Lin Ming coldly smiled. The Gate of Wonder opened and it merged with the Mystic Lightning Shade and Golden Roc Shattering the Void. His body became a blur, splitting into countless fading lights that nearly filled the entire grandmist space!

“Chasing Thunder!”

While using his extreme speed, Lin Ming also poured the power of thunder from the Heretical God Sprout into his purple spear and thrust outwards!

The attack power of Chasing Thunder wasn’t too high. But just in terms of being a Concept based martial skill, it was able to reach the limit of speed.

To deal with the intangible Purple Lion Thunder Source, he didn’t need an extremely powerful attack. In fact, all he needed was a Thunder Law martial skill attack to damage the Purple Lion Thunder Source to an even greater extent.

With so many movement techniques combined with Chasing Thunder, he overtook the Purple Lion Thunder Source in the blink of an eye!

As the Purple Lion Thunder Source saw Lin Ming catch up, its eyes filled with an incredulous disbelief. The reason that it dared to attempt ambushing Lin Ming was mainly because it had to retake the Twinlife Thunder Crystal within Lin Ming’s body, and secondly because it believed its own speed was extraordinary and abnormal. It believed that no matter what happened, it could freely come and go as it pleased. It never imagined that Lin Ming’s speed would actually surpass its own.

The Purple Lion Thunder Source finally began to feel fear!

Bang!

Lin Ming’s spear struck the Purple Lion Thunder Source!

Lin Ming didn’t feel as if he stabbed into a body, but a violent energy still surged into his meridians, wanting to burn his body.

This was the energy of the Purple Lion Thunder Source causing a backlash. If a normal Divine Sea powerhouse were to have such a brutal thunder energy enter their bodies, they would be severely wounded.

But this wasn't anything much to Lin Ming. His thoughts touched upon the Heretical God Sprout as he revolved the energy in his body, instantly sweeping away the violent thunder energy within him. As for his meridians, his own body had already been tempered by thunder, so he didn't receive any damage at all.

The Purple Lion Thunder Source was in a miserable state. After its stomach was pierced through by Lin Ming's spear, its main form had been shaken by the power of Laws within Lin Ming's Chasing Thunder, causing a massive portion of its energy to disperse. In this grandmist space, not only was it unable to supplement itself with energy from the Thunder Dominion, but instead it had to constantly consume energy. Its body suddenly turned much less ethereal and illusory, and its shining eyes began to dim down. If the Purple Lion Thunder Source had resembled a real lion in the past, the current Purple Lion Thunder Source seemed like a reflection in the water blurry and unclear.

"It's injured. Take this chance to cage it." Demonshine's voice sounded out from Lin Ming's spiritual sea. Without needing Demonshine's advice, Lin Ming already shot out eight gray marks of energy that turned into thunder symbols and flew into the Purple Lion Thunder Source's body.

This was the Concept of Thunder that Lin Ming had perceived through Jiang Ziji's jade slips. The 12 lighting symbols that comprised the Mystic Lightning Shade were also based off a similar principle. But those 12 lighting symbols revolved the power of thunder to stimulate the potential of the body, whereas these eight thunder symbols utilized the power of thunder to display a sealing effect.

As these lighting symbols flew into the Purple Lion Thunder Source, the Purple Lion Thunder Source felt as if a saber had been thrust into its body, it's strength rapidly reducing. It desperately roared out, wanting to use energy to break off all eight of the thunder symbols, but these thunder symbols were like barbed shackles that chained it down. They deeply dug themselves into its body. The more the Purple Lion Thunder Source struggled, the more pain it felt!

“Awoo! Awoo!”

The Purple Lion Thunder Source sent out pitiful cries!

Lin Ming didn’t give it the chance to recover. He stepped on Golden Roc Shattering the Void, flashing through space and appeared right above the Purple Lion Thunder Source.

Both of Lin Ming’s hands grasped the purple long spear. An endless amount of thunder energy swelled into the spear as he brought it crashing down!

Puff!

The long spear nearly split the Purple Lion Thunder Source in half!

The fading Purple Lion Thunder was simply unable to dodge. Disregarding the pain that wracked its body, it cried out again and again, its roars shaking the heavens and earth. It wanted to shake loose these thunder symbol shackles, but at this moment, it suddenly felt as if it had lost control of all the energy in its body, all of that energy was being rapidly sucked out via Lin Ming’s spear.

In just several blinks of an eye, the Purple Lion Thunder Source’s body lost its luster, nearly turning transparent.

It’s roars were also feeble, lacking the strength hey had before. The eight thunder symbols in its body were like shackles of divine iron, not even allowing it to move in the slightest.

The current Purple Lion Thunder Source could not ascend into heaven nor escape into the earth; there was no path left for it to go. The grandmist space blockade also cut off all of its energy supply. Finally, the Purple Lion Thunder Source was overcome by despair.

It howled again and again, begging for mercy, but Lin Ming ignored its cries and continued to draw out the energy from its body.

"Yield to me, otherwise I will destroy your spiritual wisdom and only absorb the source of your energy. Although this is a bit less effective to me, the different won't be too great! Moreover, if I wipe out your spiritual wisdom and only absorb your energy, the energy would also be much easier for me to control! There are plenty of benefits to doing so!"

Lin Ming's face was mercilessly indifferent and the energy in his hands became increasingly strong. The Purple Lion Thunder Source didn't doubt that at the moment it refused, Lin Ming would really wipe out its spiritual wisdom!

After a brief moment of hesitation, the Purple Lion Thunder Source finally showed a begging expression. It issued a series of purring 'awoo awoo' cries as its body shrank, finally submitting itself to Lin Ming.

"Hehe, if you take in this fellow without wiping out its spiritual wisdom, it'll be a bit dangerous. If there is ever a day you are seriously wounded, this fellow might take that chance to revolt." Demonshine said. He wasn't too approving of Lin Ming's methods.

Lin Ming had also thought of this point. He said, "If I erase its spiritual wisdom, that'll be the same as erasing the most essential part of the Thunder Source. Not only will its strength be reduced, but attacks using it will lack that spiritual sense, and it won't be able to evolve in the future either."

"Moreover, what is more important is that if it submits to me without resistance, it'll be much easier for me to absorb. If I try to absorb such a violent Thunder source now, that doesn't have any spiritual wisdom, my meridians might not be able to withstand the immense pressure. I have no idea whether or not I would be successful."

Lin Ming didn't fear that the Purple Lion Thunder Source would betray him in the future. With his rate of growth, his strength would soon far surpass the Purple Lion Thunder source. And there was also the suppression of the Heretical God Sprout. Once the Purple Lion Thunder source entered the Heretical God Sprout, its energy would come under the control of the transcendent divine might. Wasn't betraying him easier said than done?

"Come in!"

Lin Ming grasped out his hand and directly grabbed the tiny Purple Lion Thunder Source in his hand. In that moment, an energy vortex formed in Lin Ming's hand. All of the thunder origin energy that comprised the Purple Lion Thunder Source's body was continuously absorbed by this vortex, constantly flowing into the Heretical God Sprout, vitalizing the Heretical God Sprout's leaves and roots.

The Purple Lion Thunder Source didn't dare to resist. It allowed Lin Ming to draw out all of its energy. At that time, it would only be able to retain its own spiritual wisdom, and most of its energy would be under Lin Ming's control.

As Lin Ming absorbed it, the Purple Lion Thunder Source became increasingly small. Finally, it shrank to a size even smaller than Lin Ming's palm before it was also sucked into the vortex.

Like this, it traveled through Lin Ming's meridians until it reached his dantian. There it saw the Heretical God Sprout.

The sprout didn't contain too formidable a thunder energy; it was only a third of the Purple Lion Thunder Source's prime condition. However, the energy it contained was extremely pure and moreover exuded a faint aura of the Great Dao Laws, causing it to feel fear and alarm as it approached.

Compared to this Heretical God Sprout, all of the essence of thunder that it had ever absorbed in the past was nothing at all; they were on two completely different levels!

After discovering this, the Purple Lion Thunder Source no longer held any resistance to being absorbed by the Heretical God Sprout. The key point was that it wasn't able to resist.

It obediently allowed itself to be absorbed by the Heretical God Sprout, completely fusing into the branches and leaves. At that moment, the Heretical God Sprout also began to gently wiggle around. A young leaf began to bud out from the crown of the sprout, slowly unfurling out from a curled form. The veins of the leaf became gradually clear. This leaf had an incomparably strange appearance. It resembled a small furnace, and on the surface of this furnace was the design of a purple lion.

Chapter 929 – To Another Level

Chapter 929 – To Another Level

…

…

…

"The Heretical God Sprout grew."

Lin Ming was overjoyed as he saw the Heretical God Sprout that had grown by an inch. He could clearly feel that the Heretical God Sprout's strength increased by a great deal. This would help him to perceive the Concepts of Thunder and Fire to an even higher degree in the future. It was as if there was some divine power assisting him. After he ascended to the Divine Realm, chances were likely that he would join the Ancient Phoenix Clan and receive the direction of Fairy Feng. At that time, with the support of the Heretical God Sprout, his strength would surely rapidly rise.

After the Purple Lion Thunder Source was completely absorbed, lightning began to twinkle above the Heretical God Sprout. Lin Ming closed his eyes and sensed within himself, nodding with satisfaction. The Heretical God Sprout's control of energy was far better than what he had imagined. After the Purple Lion Thunder Source entered the Heretical God Sprout, most of its energy was absorbed by the Heretical God Sprout and the control of that energy also fell into Lin Ming's hands.

If the Purple Lion Thunder Source's spiritual wisdom was a general, then the energy of its body was the army. But now, all military power was held by Lin Ming.

This feeling of controlling all was very gratifying. As Lin Ming's strength grew, the chances of the Purple Lion Thunder Source betraying him would also become increasingly low.

"Demonshine, after absorbing the Purple Lion Thunder Source, I feel as if my entire body is flooded with energy. Breaking through to the fifth stage of Life Destruction shouldn't be difficult!"

"You want to break through to the fifth stage of Life Destruction? You haven't even entered the fourth stage of Life Destruction for a full year, and you want to break through to the fifth stage? Your cultivation has been far too fast recently. If you don't suppress this speed it'll cause your foundation to be shakier and make it harder for you to advance in the future."

A general Emperor level talent would step into Life Destruction at 50 years of age. From that point on, they would pass a stage of Life Destruction every 7-8 years, finally reaching a maximum of six or seven stages.

But for Lin Ming, he nearly crossed a stage of Life Destruction every year. In less than five years he had crossed four stages of Life Destruction and was about to cross the fifth.

Lin Ming's cultivation had risen too quickly, and more importantly, for these last five years, Lin Ming hadn't experienced true combat too much. Without tempering himself in the fires of the battlefield, this would cause his comprehension of Laws and martial skills to be flawed and imperfect, resulting in further instability within his foundation.

Lin Ming said, "I know, but I can still make up for it in the future. As long as I break through to the Divine Sea realm and calmly cultivate, I'll be able to calm down and solidify my energy. Although it will be a great deal of work, I'll face Yang Yun soon and I must increase my strength as much as possible before then. A year from now, Yang Yun's strength will absolutely surpass Whitedemon's. With my current cultivation, even if I absorb the Purple Lion Thunder Source, I don't think I'll be able to defeat him."

“Indeed. Yang Yun is proficient in the Concept of Time. If he changes the flow of time and seals himself up within a space, he might be able to train for ten years in this one year. I fear he might even break into the middle Divine Sea.”

Demonshine said with a bit of worry. Eight stages of Life Destruction, breaking into the middle Divine Sea, as well as Yang Yun’s cultivation methods not being too bad to begin with, if all of these factors were combined together then Lin Ming truly was in a dangerous position.

“Yang Yun can indeed change the flow of time, but to change the flow of time in an enchantment requires a martial artist to constantly revolve the power of Laws to maintain it. If he wishes to put forth his full heart and effort, completely investing in cultivating his supernatural powers, it’s actually difficult to maintain the change in time flow to a 10 to 1 degree.”

A martial artist had to wholeheartedly devote their attention to cultivating. The reason that Lin Ming’s ethereal martial intent was so amazing was because it allowed him to eliminate all distractions from his mind.

The best condition for cultivation was to remain in a selfless state, free of all distractions. To cultivate in such a manner and also maintain the enchantment was extremely difficult. When Old Man Good Fortune had done so in the past, it was because he had reached a bottleneck in his cultivation for thousands of years already. The so-called closed door seclusion was actually sitting in meditation, self-cultivation his soul, becoming aware of the Laws, and tempering his will. It was incomparable to what Yang Yun needed to do.

In order to cultivate in a 10:1 time flow enchantment, he would have to have another powerhouse devote themselves to maintaining the revolution of Laws. This was the only way in which he would be able to completely invest himself in cultivating. But wasn’t it easier said than done to find a powerhouse like that, who would also serve him for so many years?

In truth, Lin Ming could accomplish his. With his current understandings into the Concept of Time, he could also achieve this point to a degree. Although he couldn't change the flow of time to a 10:1 ratio, 5:1 or even 6:1 wasn't a problem.

Lin Ming received the grandmist space and flew straight to the cave dwelling that the Eightfall Thunder Emperor had opened in the past.

This cave dwelling was located on one of the floating islands. But, this floating island was actually not located in the 100 mile Thunder Dominion, but within the 90 mile Thunder Dominion.

This was the only floating island within the 90 mile Thunder Dominion. As for the islands in the 100 mile Thunder Dominion, even the Eightfall Thunder Emperor didn't have the ability to approach them.

Lin Ming flew into the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's cave dwelling. The plain and simple cave revealed an ancient and timeless atmosphere, no different from the last time that Lin Ming was here. The stone tablet within the cave dwelling stood tall, with the same words engraved on it as before.

"If fate will not accommodate my clan, then I shall break the shackles of fate. If the heavens will not accommodate my clan, then I shall go against heaven's will and cut down all immortals!"

These words contained a thrilling sword intent, causing those who saw it to feel awe in their hearts.

As Lin Ming's boundary grew, he could increasingly feel just how powerful the Eightfall Thunder Emperor of the past was.

"Since ancient times, several unrivalled powerhouses appeared from the Sky Spill Continent that have been given the highest under the heavens title. Even amongst all of them, the Eightfall Thunder Emperor was outstanding.

The so-called highest under the heavens was someone that had the ability to instantly kill off all other powerhouses from their era. This was not merely defeating them, but killing them.

Before the appearance of Yang Yun and Whitedemon, even Old Man Good Fortune wasn't able to achieve this degree of strength. This was why he was only considered the quasi strongest under the heavens.

Among the several highest under the heavens that had appeared throughout the years, there existed the strong and the weak amongst them. Whitedemon could only be considered as being on the weaker end.

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath and sighed, "Even though I absorbed the Purple Lion Thunder Source, I shouldn't be much stronger than him. Defeating him should be easy, killing him is extremely difficult though. If this were in ancient times, I could only be considered the lowest level of the highest under the heaven individuals within the Sky Spill Continent."

In terms of pure quantity of peerless powerhouses, the Sky Spill Continent was far inferior to the Holy Demon Continent. Correspondingly, the Holy Demon Continent's highest under the heavens was much stronger.

And above the Holy Demon Continent, there was also the endless sea that existed around the two continents. That boundless area was over 10 times larger than the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent combined! The number of powerhouses that existed there could be imagined.

Even such a vast world was an insignificant speck of sand in the three thousand boundless universes. There were countless worlds and dimensions that were far more powerful than the Sky Spill Continent.

And beyond all of that, there was the far more terrifying Divine Realm!

As Lin Ming thought of this, he deeply felt that the road he walked upon still had a near infinite distance to go. Becoming the highest under the heavens within the Sky Spill Continent wasn't anything special.

After his battle with Yang Yun, he brought to completion all of his ties to this world. He would ascend into the Divine Realm, stepping onto a wider stage and meet even greater challenges.

Lin Ming set down an array formation in the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's cave dwelling. With his current understandings into the Concept of Thunder, he was already able to isolate the ruinous lightning from the 90 mile Thunder Dominion.

The 8000 Mile Black Swamp was a land filled with great dangers. There would always be some risks if Lin Ming were to cultivate here. When laying down array formations, he did so diligently and meticulously.

After a full day passed, Lin Ming fused the Laws of the grandmist space into the array formations he recalled from the Ancient Devil's memories, arranging three layers of great formations. He sat down on the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's stone bed and took out the 12 thunder dao fruits as well as the 20 top grade spirit essence stones from his spatial ring.

Of these 12 thunder dao fruits, one of them had already been eaten up by Lin Ming, leaving behind only the peel that contained the marks of the mysterious Thunder Concepts. Up until now, Lin Ming hadn't managed to find the time to thoroughly perceive them.

This time, Lin Ming picked up a thunder dao fruit and used a dagger to slowly peel off the skin near the stalk, revealing a red fruit flesh that glowed a beautiful red.

The fragrance of wine drifted upwards, the aroma sharp and refreshing. It smelled like millennium aged wine, and the highest quality aged wine at that.

"Mm? This thunder dao fruit seems different from the one I ate before. That fruit was cream colored and white, but this one seems bright red like flesh and blood."

The crystalline fruit flesh actually had bright red vessels that ran through it. The intoxicating aroma assaulted his senses, tantalizing and sweet.

Lin Ming cut off a piece of the fruit with his dagger and gently touched it with his fingers. It was bouncy and thick. He swallowed it down. As the fruit flesh entered his mouth, it melted without him even needing to chew. The fragrance dissipated down his throat, turning into a refreshing energy that filled his limbs, flowing to his heart, his dantian, and his head.

In that moment, Lin Ming felt as if he was drunk. His mind was dizzy and his arms and legs turned soft. All of his bones loosened, as if he would melt to the ground.

The second thunder dao fruit had an effect that was completely different from the first. It caused Lin Ming to feel as if he were floating on clouds; light and satisfied.

“What a strong and strange medicinal efficacy. It seems every thunder dao fruit is different.”

Lin Ming took advantage of the time before the medicinal efficacy of the thunder dao fruit faded and began to revolve a Divine Realm thunder cultivation method that was left behind on one of Jiang Ziji’s jade slips – ‘Thunder Sovereign Edict’. Within Jiang Ziji’s great collection, it was of the few cultivation methods that could be practiced without the Electric Violet Kirin bloodline.

Thunder energy mixed with true essence, circulating around and around again.

Lin Ming hadn’t entered the ethereal martial intent, but although he was half-drunk and half-awake and his mind seemed to be blank, his thoughts were incomparably clear. Although his actions were slow, energy crazily swelled up within his body.

This strange condition was similar to when a mortal martial artist drank wine to utilize the drunken fist. It was a cultivating state that was superior to the ethereal martial intent, similar to being hypnotized. In this state, there was no fear, no astonishment. In this state, one felt as if they had dug out their full potential and that any impossible matter had become possible.

Two hours.

Four hours.

Lin Ming digested the energy from the thunder dao fruit. As he was finished absorbing the energy, he would wake up from that strange state and eat another slice of the thunder dao fruit's bright red flesh.

This fruit flesh contained an extremely great deal of energy. A normal thunder-attribute martial artist would be able to eat no more than 4, maybe 5 slices, otherwise their bodies would burst apart from all the energy. To eat more, they would have to discharge all the excess energy, but doing so was a complete waste.

Lin Ming didn't have such a problem. The Heretical God Sprout had risen to another level and it swallowed up all the energy it was offered.

During such a high intensity training period, Lin Ming's understandings towards the Thunder Laws became increasingly clear. Light shimmered around his body, brilliant and dazzling, as if he were about to turn into an immortal. And behind Lin Ming, dao diagrams began to partially reveal themselves, looming over him. They were abstruse and mystical, etched with lines that seemed to contain the most mysterious Thunder Laws.

Chapter 930 – Dark Clouds

Chapter 930 – Dark Clouds

…

…

…

In a great and empty hall, fifteen individuals were sitting around a long table. There were men and women, each one of them had an extremely deep aura; all of them were Divine Sea powerhouses.

Within the Sky Spill Continent, there were just over a hundred Divine Sea powerhouses. For the last several hundred years no Divine Sea powerhouse was born. On the contrary, the old Divine Sea powerhouses began falling from the skies. Now there were only 90 Divine Sea powerhouses left. In this grand hall, one sixth of the remaining Divine Sea powerhouses were gathered.

Sitting around this table, many people had worried and anxious expressions.

“I wonder just what reason this Yang Yun has to have summoned us here today.” At the end of the table, a white-clothed woman was lightly rubbing her forehead, her voice uneasy and filled with doubt.

She was the White Clan’s Fairy Snow Gale.

In these past years, Yang Yun had become increasingly strong. In particular, he managed to unite the deep sea race powerhouses of the Fog Sea under his name, and now there were over 20 Emperor level powerhouses who pledged their lives to him. When this was combined with the deterrence of the two top powerhouses in him and Whitedemon, this made it so that no one dared to resist him.

"No matter what it is, we should just do it and get it over with. We still have Yang Yun's battle spirit tracing mark on our bodies; we can only erase these marks if the force of our will approaches his. Now, whatever he says is law, how can we possibly defy him?" Beside Fairy Snow Gale, a blue-clothed middle-aged man hesitantly said.

Since ancient times, even if one was the highest under the heavens, they had rarely managed to take complete control of the continent in their hands like Yang Yun. The reason Yang Yun was able to accomplish this was because of his battle spirit. If anyone dared to defy his orders, he would be able to hunt them down across the world.

As the blue-clothed man spoke, silence fell over the hall. After half an incense stick of time passed, another person suddenly whispered, their voice faintly trembling, "For the last year, there have been seven Divine Sea powerhouses that have gone missing. These seven people all have a single common characteristic, and that is that they have a divine body or variation bloodline."

Just these words caused a chill to creep down everyone's backs. A divine body, variation bloodline, or variation dantian, all of these belonged to geniuses amongst geniuses. Their cultivation was rapid and their chances of reaching the Divine Sea were much higher than others. So even if there were an exceedingly small number of martial artists that possessed a divine body or variation bloodline, that number wasn't small within the population of Divine Sea powerhouses. They accounted for around 20% of all Divine Sea powerhouses.

Moreover, these people tended to break into the Divine Sea realm by themselves; their overall strength was greater than others.

In just the last year, seven of these variation bloodline Divine Sea powerhouses had gone missing. That meant that nearly half of them had disappeared!

Of these people, three of them had been determined dead, because their lifesoul jade slip had shattered. The other four didn't leave behind a jade slip, but they had left behind a message and declared that they had either 'gone into seclusion' or were 'travelling the world to search for immortality’. How could these Divine Sea powerhouses that had lived for thousands of years possibly believe such words?

For this sort of matter to suddenly happen, how could someone not be shocked!

The Divine Sea powerhouse that spoke was only casually thinking of this point; they didn’t speak any further. But all of the present Divine Sea powerhouses were wise people who had each gone through their own trials and tribulations; none of them were idiots.

It was likely that those seven people had all died!

Underneath the heavens, there were only a few who possessed the power to kill seven Divine Sea powerhouses in a year and to leave very few clues as to who had done it.

Whitedemon, Yang Yun, and Old Man Good Fortune qualified to do so.

As for Lin Ming, everyone present thought he was a bit worse than Old Man Good Fortune. No one had seen his battle with Whitedemon. The only ones who had witnessed that battle had been Situ Yaoxi and the several deep sea Emperor powerhouses that had accompanied Whitedemon, and all of them were dead.

Although everyone thought that Lin Ming’s cultivation must have been extraordinary for these past few years, they all thought it was unlikely that his strength would grow to the point of being on par with Whitedemon or Yang Yun.

This wasn’t to say that they underestimated Lin Ming. It was just that three years was truly too short a time and they didn’t know that he had comprehended a transcendent divine might. In truth, if it weren’t for the Heavenly Demon martial intent, Lin Ming really wouldn’t have been Whitedemon’s match.

Of the three people capable of killing seven Divine Sea powerhouses in such a manner, Old Man Good Fortune didn’t have the motive to slaughter them. The most likely culprits were Whitedemon and Yang Yun.

All seven of those Divine Sea powerhouses had a divine body or variation bloodline. This common characteristic resounded in everyone's minds, making them draw some associations and conclusions. For instance, there were some demonic path cultivation methods that could refine the blood essence of variation bloodlines to vitalize one owns body. Yang Yun's demonic atmosphere was enough to blot out the sky; it wouldn't be strange if he used such a cultivation method!

Moreover, he was even willing to slay his own great grandfather. If he could do that, what wouldn't he do?

As the martial artists present realized this, they all felt like lambs in a pen, waiting to be slaughtered. Especially the Divine Sea powerhouses present that had variation bloodlines; their complexions paled. If Yang Yun wished to kill them, they wouldn't be able to do anything.

"Do we just sit here and wait for death?" Fairy Snow Gale sent out a true essence sound transmission. She only sent out a sound transmission to those people that she trusted most. Within Yang Yun's domain, she wouldn't dare to speak carelessly.

A blue-clothed old man responded, "This child Yang Yun, his ambitions are far too great! He has already started to move against us. Once he has enough strength in the future, I fear he'll unite the four divine Kingdoms. We must band together to oppose him. If the remaining 90 some Divine Sea powerhouses wholeheartedly join forces, we'll still be able to resist him!"

"Remaining 90 some Divine Sea powerhouses join forces?" A middle-aged man helplessly shook his head, "That's easy for you to say. There are likely many of Yang Yun's spies in the remaining Divine Sea powerhouses, and there is also the Asura Divine Kingdom that has completely surrendered to Yang Yun. To them, a world controlled by Yang Yun is better than one dominated by Lin Ming. Then again, even if we all get together, wanting to defeat top masters like Yang Yun and Whitedemon, and even those Fog Sea powerhouses under him doesn't seem too possible. If we try that, it's likely we'll be instantly killed by Yang Yun instead!"

“Then what do you propose we do? Do you think we should allow Yang Yun to slowly nibble away at our strength until we simply fall apart?”

Everyone fell into silence. They lacked the strength to resist Yang Yun, but if they didn’t resist him, their ultimate fate wasn’t looking too good either.

The Shang Clan Patriarch, Shang Yuetian said, “Yang Yun isn’t without threat. His greatest threat is Lin Ming. In these past years, Yang Yun has put out a world-wide arrest order for Lin Ming but no one has been able to find him. The Sky Spill Continent is incomparably broad. If Lin Ming is wise and finds some place to close up in seclusion and cultivate, then 10 years later he’ll definitely be able to kill Yang Yun. That is our last and only hope.”

“You think that Lin Ming is fine if he goes into hiding and cultivates by himself? Hey, don’t underestimate Yang Yun, his methods aren’t necessarily worse than Lin Ming. I have no idea what he’s been up to these years, but he might be able to sniff out Lin Ming’s location somehow.”

Fairy Snow Gale shook her head and said, “I’m hopeful about Lin Ming. You probably don’t know what happened in the South Horizon Region’s Sky Fortune Kingdom?”

The Sky Fortune Kingdom was only a common and insignificant country within the vast Sky Spill Continent, moreover it was a mortal nation, lacking martial arts inheritances. It could be described as a tiny village in the middle of nowhere to those present. The only reason the powerhouses knew of it was due to Lin Ming.

They had also heard of the trap Yang Yun had arranged at the Sky Fortune Kingdom.

“Mm? What happened?” The Sky Fortune Kingdom was far too distant from the four Divine Kingdoms, and Lin Ming had also killed off almost everyone present at the time. News of the event hadn’t yet spread out. Of course, the Asura Divine Kingdom that had suffered the greatest losses was certainly aware of what happened, but they would never have spread such news outwards.

“All of the Asura Divine Kingdom powerhouses that were stationed at the Sky Fortune Kingdom’s Lin Family, including Situ Yaoxi and the Sun Family Clan Patriarch, all of them have been completely exterminated. Even the Lin Family clansmen and buildings have all been completely swept up by some great supernatural power. Does this help you draw any associations?”

“Mm? Are you saying that the one who did this was Lin Ming? Lin Ming has finally shown himself again!?”

Fairy Snow Gale’s words shocked everyone! Lin Ming had gone missing for over three years, but he had actually reappeared!

Some people were immediately excited. This young man Lin Ming always gave them a pleasant surprise. Now they finally had a chance of toppling Yang Yun!

“It’s only been a bit more than three years, he’s too impatient.” The middle-aged man who had been a bit gloomy shook his head, “And killing Situ Yaoxi and Patriarch Sun isn’t much at all. They are the weakest Emperor level powerhouses that only managed to reach the Divine Sea through lucky chances. Yang Yun and Whitedemon could kill them by lifting their fingers. If Lin Ming were compared to Yang Yun, I’m afraid the difference is still too great.”

“How come you always say such depressing words?” Fairy Snow Gale slightly frowned, “Lin Ming killing Situ Yaoxi and Patriarch Sun indeed isn’t much, but don’t forget, how could Yang Yun not keep some alternative chess pieces within the trap he set at the Sky Fortune Kingdom? Even though Lin Ming knew it was a trap and he didn’t know Yang Yun’s true self was waiting there, he still dared to rush in and save others. He even managed to safely escape! This is enough proof that Lin Ming has confidence he can freely escape from Yang Yun and Whitedemon’s hands. It might even be possible that he fought with Whitedemon. Lin Ming is an unrivalled talent, the likes that we’ve never seen before; it’s impossible to judge his limits with common sense.”

Fairy Snow Gale’s speculations were reasonable. Everyone glanced at each other, a faint ember of hope lighting up in their hearts. With Lin Ming reappearing, they could follow Lin Ming and engage Yang Yun in a final battle.

Of course, the premise of this was that Lin Ming had the ability to frontally contend with Yang Yun. Even if he was weaker, he needed to at least be able to contend with him.

“We just need to endure for a few more years. Once Lin Ming has grown enough, we can join together and counterattack Yang Yun.”

As Fairy Snow Gale spoke, she suddenly felt a powerful aura surge over her. Looking up, she could see a tall young man walking into the grand hall. He wore a red robe and a thin red line cut between his eyebrows. His posture was straight, his looks perfect, his skin as clear as jade, and his demonic temperament incomparable.

This person was Yang Yun!

By just meeting his eyes, Fairy Snow Gale felt as if her own soul had become lost, as if he saw through every inch of her body. She even suspected that he listened in on the true essence sound transmissions she sent out.

“How-how could he have such terrifying power?”

Fairy Snow Gale’s breath was caught in her throat. After not seeing him for over half a year, Yang Yun had become even more unfathomable. It was like he succeeded in practicing some monumentally strong devil arts. The momentum that rolled off of him left her alarmed and horrified!

“Were done for. Yang Yun’s strength has already reached this level, how can anyone still hope to defy him?”

Despair filled Fairy Snow Gale’s heart. It wasn’t just her, everyone else had similar feelings. All of the confidence they had of relying on Lin Ming to bring down Yang Yun came crashing down like an avalanche.”

Chapter 931 – Inescapable Net

Chapter 931 – Inescapable Net

…

…

…

"What are you all discussing with true essence sound transmissions?"

Yang Yun asked with a smile as he glanced over everyone. But his smile actually had a faintly eerie taste!

True essence sound transmission?

As everyone heard these words, they felt their palms turn sweaty. At that moment, they even felt as if the contents of their discussion was sensed!

By all reasoning, a true essence sound transmission shouldn't be discovered by others, so when had Yang Yun realized it? Or had he said these words just to fool them?

Facing this Yang Yun who seemed to be omniscient, all of them felt a pressure, a pressure as heavy as a mountain!

Yang Yun's eyes flashed like bolts of lightning; no one dared to meet his gaze.

"Fairy Snow, you seem to have something to say to me. If you wish to say it out loud, it doesn't matter. Your White Clan has followed my Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom for thousands of years already. You can be considered loyal and devoted."

Yang Yun's vision fell onto Fairy Snow Gale. Fairy Snow Gale suddenly felt suppressed by a deep aura, as if all of her innermost thoughts and feelings were seen through. This feeling caused her heart to waver and a chill crawled down her back.

However, Fairy Snow Gale was also someone with a strong will and she was a master of her own mood. She took a deep breath, her voice coming out calm and even as she said, "We haven't been speaking about anything, only waiting here for you."

"Oh? Is that so?" A smile hung on Yang Yun's lips; no one could understand just what this smile meant.

Behind Yang Yun, Situ Haotian and the other powerhouses of the Asura Divine Kingdom followed. The Asura Divine Kingdom was already like water and fire with Lin Ming; they were destined to submit themselves to Yang Yun so they could resist Lin Ming.

Several weeks ago during the battle within the Sky Fortune Kingdom, the Asura Divine Kingdom had suffered serious losses. Situ Haotian's face was dark and dismal as he stood behind Yang Yun. No one knew just what he was thinking at this moment.

Yang Yun calmly arrived at the head seat, flicked his red robe, and sat down. "I have called you all here today so that you could all help me with something."

As Yang Yun spoke, he flicked his fingers and over a dozen jade slips flew out from his sleeves, each of them landing in the hands of the Divine Sea powerhouses present. "Arrange an array formation according to the description in the jade slip. I have prepared the array flags already. All you have to do is pour your energy within it."

Everyone took a jade slip, glanced at each other, and then immersed their perception within the jade slip. They discovered that the content of the jade slip was actually a map that encapsulated the entire Sky Spill Continent, as well as the South Sea, Fog Sea, North Sea, and Red Sea and continuing for 60-70 million miles outwards.

Hundreds of red spots dotted the map, and every red spot was connected to other red spots with red lines. Looking at the entire picture, it formed a massive network that covered the entire continent as well as a great portion of the four seas.

"This is a transmission array?"

"Yes, it's a transmission array, ultra-long distance transmission arrays that have a distance of 8 million miles each. Together they cover the entire continent. You'll only be responsible for the Sky Spill Continent. As for the four seas, I've arranged for others to handle that."

There were several hundred transmission arrays and they were also placed very far from each other. If Yang Yun personally went to arrange them then, he would have to expend an incalculable amount of time and effort. If he wanted to arrange these arrays in several months, the only way was to use these Divine Sea powerhouses to lay them down separately.

Yang Yun had killed seven variation bloodline Divine Sea powerhouses of the Sky Spill Continent. He drew out all of their blood vitality and mixed them together with Whitedemon's hydra bloodline, finally completing the last step of his Great Blood Refining Art. Now, as long as he could cultivate for another half year, his cultivation method would reach perfection.

At that time he would be able to use the aura of Lin Ming's blood vitality and lock down his position within a million mile range. By utilizing these transmission arrays, he would then be able to search the entire continent in a short period of time. There would be nowhere for Lin Ming to hide.

Yang Yun took out a set of array flags and divided them between spatial rings that he then tossed out. He coldly said, "There are a total of 316 transmission arrays. All of you only need to lay down 82 of them. The array discs have already been completed. I will give you two months to finish this simple task. It's best if all of you be careful and not make a mistake, otherwise I'll have you all pay the price for it."

Yang Yun's voice contained a light killing intent, causing the hearts of everyone present to turn cold. Facing the unfathomable Yang Yun, none of them were able to resist.

Yang Yun turned away and departed, leaving everyone left behind to look at each other in dread and trepidation. As they held the jade slips in their hands they tasted despair on their tongues.

"I have a feeling that all of Yang Yun's actions this time are aimed at Lin Ming." Fairy Snow Gale said with a true essence sound transmission.

Humans and animals occasionally developed faint premonitions about the future. This feeling was illusory and difficult to put into words, but often it was quite accurate. Especially to martial artists whose cultivations had reached a certain level, their premonitions tended to be more accurate.

"It is possible that Yang Yun is finally making his move. After staying quiet for nearly 4 years, there is no way he'll allow Lin Ming to freely develop as he wishes any longer."

"I have no idea what Yang Yun has done these past years but his strength has soared. Compared to 3-4 years ago, his power seems far deeper. I feel a great pressure pushing me to my limit just by looking at him. How could Lin Ming possibly defeat him?"

"Indeed. Lin Ming simply doesn't have enough time. If he had five years, no, as long as he had another three years, this would be an entirely different situation." An old man shook his head, feeling this entire situation unfortunate. Lin Ming's talent far exceeded Yang Yun's, but Yang Yun wouldn't give him the time to grow up.

"There's nothing we can do. Anyway, we still have to lay down these transmission arrays, otherwise we'll die even faster."

A blue-clothed old man said. He took out an array disc and an array flag from a spatial ring. These array flags were carved with countless complex lines and symbols, and there were also special instructions inscribed in the jade slip on how to set it up. After Yang Yun studied the Ancient Devils array formations for all these years and became proficient in the demonic path array formations of the Divine Realm, it was simple for him to set up a transmission array that could span 8 million miles.

At the same time, millions of miles away in the skies above the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, Lin Ming was calmly meditating at the Eightfall Thunder Emperor's cave dwelling. Arcs of thunder freely crawled around his body, and behind him 12 complex array diagrams appeared. These array diagrams were formed from the Laws of the Great Dao, and there were endless mysteries contained within them.

These array diagrams slowly rotated, slowly fusing into Lin Ming's body. A hot, burning feeling emitted outwards. His body seemed to become like a sun as his entire body emitted a radiant light.

"This is the aura of the Great Dao Laws. The thunder dao fruits have the tracings of the Great Dao Laws fused into them, and these tracings formed these diagrams. These are also fragments of the Great Dao Laws."

Lin Ming opened his eyes, seeing everything through a haze of purple. He wasn't a stranger to this mystical feeling. When he was at Timeworn Phoenix City, he felt something similar when he faced the chaos stones, but the feeling wasn't as clear as it was today.

"This is truly worthy of being a divine fruit bred from the essence of the heavens and earth. The fruit pulp actually has tracings of the Great Dao integrated into it. If my cultivation was higher, I would've experienced even more profound feelings from these tracings."

Lin Ming mumbled to himself. His body was filled with vitality and overflowed with energy.

He continued to meditate and cultivate, absorbing energy and becoming increasingly aware of the Great Dao Laws. After an unknown period of time, Lin Ming's body silently collapsed. First it was his skin, then his muscles, then his meridians, all the way down to his bones and organs.

After his physical body broke apart, he turned into an intangible substance.

Without noticing it, the calamity of Lin Ming’s fifth stage of Life Destruction appeared.

Chapter 932 – Postcelestial Dao Diagram

Chapter 932 – Postcelestial Dao Diagram

…

…

…

The fifth stage of Life Destruction, shatter and reform the core, carving the form of elementary Laws on the surface of the Revolving Core. As long as one could reach the sixth stage of Life Destruction and thoroughly condense the Laws into their Revolving Core, they could officially cross Life Destruction and attempt to break into the Divine Sea.

The highest levels of Life Destruction were divided into nine stages. The first three stages reformed the spirit body, the second three stages reformed the core, and the last three stages reformed the divine soul.

After crossing six stages of Life Destruction, one could rely on their own strength to reach the Divine Sea. But the last three stages pertained to the future strength of a martial artist and how far they would be able to walk on their path of martial arts. The more formidable a soul was, the more energy it was able to manipulate. The soul was also related to the will; it was the carrier of the battle spirit. If one's soul wasn't powerful, their potential was limited.

In the cave dwelling, Lin Ming's physical body had already become a loose fog of flesh and blood. He was slowly tempering himself in the sea of energy.

One day. Two days. Three days.

After half a month passed, within that blood fog, energy and essence began to gather together, forming a Revolving Core.

The process of forming the Revolving Core was extremely slow. A faint atmosphere of source energy lingered around the Revolving Core, condensing into a dao diagram.

When source energy naturally evolved, it would also naturally form a dao diagram. This was the so-called ‘postcelestial dao diagram’. The postcelestial meant that the dao diagram was naturally formed, whereas precelestial meant that it was man-made.

When source energy formed a postcelestial dao diagram, it would contain the inherent Great Dao of martial arts principles. This was also the so-called natural Laws.

Of the many dao diagrams, the most eye-catching and distinct one was the purple dao diagram. This dao diagram was ten feet wide, and the dao patterns engraved upon it shone like arcs of light, similar to bolts of thunder. The evolution was complex and enigmatic, containing profound mysteries and truths. This was the dao diagram of Thunder Laws. Lin Ming had perceived the thunder-attribute jade slip that Jiang Ziji left behind and had also eaten the thunder dao fruits, grasping all of the Great Dao fragments within the fruits. Out of all the Laws that Lin Ming comprehended, the Thunder Laws were far above all others!

A close second to the thunder dao diagram was a round red dao diagram. This red dao diagram was 8 feet wide, and the traces that throbbed on its surface where like countless beating flames. This was naturally the Fire Laws dao diagram. Lin Ming had the bloodline of the Ancient Phoenix and also trained for a long period of time at Timeworn Phoenix City. He had even meditated on the chaos stones. The fire dao diagram also had unrivalled might.

Following that, the Space Laws and Time Laws dao diagrams were far from being as impeccable as the first two; many of its traces were faint and blurry.

Behind that, there was the Darkness Laws that had just barely managed to form a dao diagram. There were many sections missing.

As for the final Wind Laws and the Concept of Vibration, they didn’t form dao diagrams. They condensed one inch long square symbols that were eclipsed underneath the dazzling radiance of the two great dao diagrams of thunder and fire.

When crossing the fifth stage of Life Destruction, and during the period when the elementary form of Laws were being carved into the surface of the Revolving Core, if dao diagrams were to form at this period, then that was an extreme phenomenon. It represented the peak solidity of foundation and also of great achievements in the future.

In the boundless universe there were countless martial artists. From body transformation to Houtian, Xiantian, Revolving Core, Life Destruction, Divine Sea, and then slowly continuing upwards to Divine Transformation, Divine Lord, Holy Lord, World King, and finally to reach the boundary of Empyrean.

It was unknown how many martial artists had died on the road of martial arts. To nearly all of them, they had taken a World King to be their final goal. Within the 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm and also including the countless smaller worlds, there were only a total of 3000 World Kings. Moreover, this number was accumulated over several hundreds of thousands of years. To step onto the throne of a World King, one had to encounter many lucky chances. They had to have a great will, great intelligence, a strong heart of martial arts, heaven-defying talent, the direction of skilled masters, and countless resources stacked upon each other. Only when everything came together would one have a small chance of achieving such a boundary.

Lin Ming had now condensed postcelestial dao diagrams at the fifth stage of Life Destruction. Although this didn’t mean that he would become a World King in the future, this was considered a solid step towards reaching the peak of martial arts.

After three days passed, all of the dao diagrams disappeared as they fused into Lin Ming’s Revolving Core crystal nucleus. Lin Ming’s body began to slowly form. First his skeleton, then his muscles, blood vessels, meridians, and finally his skin and his hair.

Lin Ming sat naked on the stone bed, his body glimmering with a bright light. He could feel that the vigor of his essence, energy, and soul had reached an entirely new level. If he were to fight with Whitedemon now, he was confident he could easily defeat him, and perhaps even kill him.

Just as Lin Ming was thinking about what his next step would be, he suddenly heard an earthshaking explosion spread through the nine heavens. Even the island he was on began to tremble because of the sound. The ceiling of the cave began to tremble and release dust and stone powder, as if it would collapse at any time.

“Mm? What’s that?”

Lin Ming was startled. This shouldn’t be a Thunder Source or some other holy object. Just from the momentum and prestige of this sound, if it really were a Thunder Source then it was a Thunder Source on a completely different level from the Purple Lion Thunder Source. There was no way that Lin Ming was a match for it.

After thinking for a moment, Lin Ming decided to carefully hide his energy aura. He quietly creeped towards the cave entrance to see what was happening.

Bang bang bang!

The deafening sound continued. It sounded like chains and rings slapping against each other.

This sound seemed able to rupture the heavens and earth. If an ordinary person were to hear this, even their soul would be shattered.

Lin Ming held his breath and arrived at the cave entrance. He cautiously released his perception to investigate the situation outside. What he saw caused a chill to crawl up his back and into the skies!

Above the nine heavens, there were actually several hundred thick iron chains that formed a massive web, spreading out in all directions. These iron chains were hundreds of feet thick, and each one was covered with dense layers of symbols. The hundreds of chains formed a faint great array that seemed to separate the world. At this moment, this massive network of chains violently trembled, as if some utterly terrifying existence attempted to break free from the bindings of these chains!

Ka ka ka!

The demonic sounds of the chains colliding with each other caused Lin Ming's mind to shiver. It was like he was listening to the death knell of a grim reaper from the abyss of hell.

He discovered that every iron chain was connected to a floating island. These chains penetrated deep into the mountains on the islands, where they were suppressed by the magnetic god trees.

"Roar!"

The ancient desolate beast that was locked within the great array of chains suddenly emitted a thunderous cry. The terrifying howl shook the world. As Lin Ming heard this sound, he felt all of his blood tumble as his face turned white.

"What a terrifying roar. Could there be a God Beast locked within this array formation?"

Lin Ming remembered the great dragon within the Eternal Demon Abyss that was likely a God Beast. He didn't doubt that if a normal Divine Sea powerhouse were to face the frontal roar of whatever God Beast this was, their souls would likely be expelled from their body and broken down into nothingness!

Lin Ming wanted to ask Demonshine just what this was, but he sensed that Demonshine had fallen into the very depths of his spiritual sea and remained absolutely quiet there, impossible to wake up no matter who called to him. This sort of invisible and intangible great roar contained an inherent energy that was extremely damaging to the divine soul. Even though Demonshine was hidden within Lin Ming's body, he still had to completely seal himself off lest he be grievously wounded by this roar!

And at this moment, with the sound of billowing thunder, all of the countless thunder balls that floated around the skies suddenly shot into the magnetic god trees. The several hundred islands and the several hundred magnetic god trees suddenly bloomed with a brilliant purple gold divine light. Vast and endless thunder energy raced down the chains, turning the chains a radiant purple gold.

The roaring God Beast seemed to withstand a brutal pain. It emitted a miserable howl as the power behind its voice weakened. It had obviously been injured by the thunder attack of the array formation.

From the cave dwelling of the Eightfall Thunder Emperor, Lin Ming was able to clearly see everything that happened. Each thunder ball that floated within the 100 mile Thunder Dominion contained an incomparably terrifying power. Even though Lin Ming had reached the fifth stage of Life Destruction and also had a profound understanding of Thunder laws, he still didn't dare to impulsively enter the 100 mile Thunder Dominion. It could be seen how ghastly these thunder balls were.

But now, the countless thunder balls gathered together to deliver the sealed God Beast a nearly lethal blow. It was hard to imagine just what level of power this attack reached!

It was highly likely that this was the work of an Empyrean level existence!

"So these hundreds of floating immortal islands were only the base of the great chain array, and those magnetic god trees only served as the focal eye to gather all of the energy. A magnetic god tree of this size would be a treasure even within a large sect of the Divine Realm, and yet someone used several hundred of them to seal off this God Beast existence. Could such a bold tactic be the work of Empyrean Primordius?"

"No, that's wrong. Empyrean Primordius controls the power of chaos. When I passed through the Road of Emperor, I was able to experience the grandmist space that he left behind and even gained a minor understanding towards him. If Empyrean Primordius were the one to arrange this array formation, he should've used the power of chaos as the foundation, not these Thunder Laws."

"Could it be that this is an array formation left behind by Empyrean Primordius' enemy?"

As Lin Ming became aware of this point, he thought it more and more probable. Empyrean Primordius' enemy was definitely also an Empyrean. If they were an Empyrean skilled in Thunder Laws, creating such a great array was also reasonable.

But just what did this great array seal off, and for what reason?

Lin Ming's mind raced with thoughts. At this time, the roars that enveloped the skies begun to fade away. Demonshine's weak voice resounded in Lin Ming's mind, "This is incredible, seriously incredible. These chains might possibly be the legendary dragon trapping cables. Every link of the chain has a weight that surpasses the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. A single dragon trapping cable has 1080 links, and there are several hundred dragon trapping cables here. The weight of them all added together surpasses a small meteor. Could there really be a True Dragon trapped within?"

"It might be Empyrean Primordius' contract beast that is sealed within. Who knows just what's going on."

Lin Ming shook his head. Although this was undoubtedly related to Empyrean Primordius, it wasn't something he could explore with his current boundary.

The God Beast that was locked away in the skies had stopped roaring, and the dragon trapping cables also vanished into thin air, leaving nothing but the hundreds of immortal islands floating around as they had been before. The only difference was that the thunder balls in the air had become 70% smaller.

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred as he saw this. After a brief moment of hesitation, he slowly and carefully made his way towards the 100 mile Thunder Dominion. With Lin Ming's strength, he didn't have the ability to enter the 100 mile Thunder Dominion. But the struggle of the God Beast just now had greatly depleted the energy within the 100 mile Thunder Dominion. The thunder balls had all dimmed down, with less than 30% of their energy reserves remaining.

Perhaps he would be able to absorb some to give Yang Yun a happy surprise?

If he could borrow some of the power of these thunderballs that supported in sealing off a God Beast, just what would it be like if it struck Yang Yun?

Lin Ming was filled with anticipation.

He completely focused his mind on the Heretical God Sprout and slowly approached the 100 mile Thunder Dominion. The barrier between the 90 mile Thunder Dominion and 100 mile Thunder Dominion simply wasn’t able to stop Lin Ming who was skilled in Thunder Laws.

Lin Ming smoothly arrived at a fist-sized thunderball.

Chapter 933 – Lin Ming Returns

Chapter 933 – Lin Ming Returns

…

…

…

The fist-sized thunderball appeared serene and listless. But as Lin Ming approached, he could feel the hairs on his body stand up. The energy within the thunderball was too dense; it had formed an energy field around it.

This energy field actually caused the nearby space to twist together. As Lin Ming closed in, his heartbeat, his breathing, everything got affected by it.

Facing this thunderball which was likely left behind by an Empyrean rank master, Lin Ming didn't dare to be the least bit sloppy in his actions, even though he had the Heretical God Sprout supporting him.

Although the Heretical God Force was a potent ability, it wasn't infallible. As for what rank martial arts cultivation method it was, Lin Ming wasn't sure. But no matter how powerful it was, it shouldn't surpass a transcendent divine might rank cultivation method.

One could approximate how powerful a transcendent divine might was just from observing the Heavenly Demon martial intent. The Heavenly Demon martial intent was only a Heavenly Demon martial intent, but it was able to instantly kill a Divine Sea powerhouse and allow Lin Ming to jump ranks to battle.

Empyrean rank masters might even possess more than one transcendent divine might. If this thunder ball in front of him was formed by a transcendent divine might rank cultivation method, it'd be difficult for Lin Ming's not yet fully grown Heretical God Sprout to suppress it.

Lin Ming's concentration was completely focused on the Heretical God Sprout. He slowly reached his hand out and began to suck out the thunder ball's energy through his fingertip.

As this small trace of energy entered his body, Lin Ming felt like a steel needle pierced into his body. Wherever this energy went, he felt like his meridians would burst apart at any moment, unable to withstand the burden.

This energy gave of an unbelievably heavy feeling, just like grandmist energy.

Thunder energy that was invisible and intangible could actually give off such a heavy feeling; Lin Ming thought this was incredible.

Looking up at the large and small thunderballs that floated in the sky, Lin Ming thought they looked like stars in space.

"This ancient powerhouse was actually able to transform the power of thunder into state like stars. If it weren't for that sealed God Beast trying to free itself from its shackles and greatly weakening the energy within these thunderballs, there would have been no way for me to even absorb one."

The supernatural powers of an Empyrean level character were already far beyond Lin Ming's imagination. Any great array they casually left behind would contain a heaven-shaking grandeur.

Lin Ming withstood the pain that wracked his meridians and continued to gather the thunder energy, having the Heretical God Sprout freely absorb it.

After absorbing this thunderball, Lin Ming found two similarly sized thunderballs and also absorbed them. Only then was the Heretical God Sprout completely saturated with energy.

Everything was successful. Lin Ming could feel that his own combat strength reached an unprecedented level. He was even looking forward to his battle with Yang Yun so he could test the limits of his own strength!

Lin Ming descended from the Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion, a straight black line that zoomed towards the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. To the current Lin Ming, the dangers of the 8000 Mile Black Swamp weren't anything much.

After a quarter hour, Lin Ming reached the edge of the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. A flame suddenly lit up in front of him; this was unexpectedly the light of a sound transmitting talisman.

"Sound transmitting talisman? Is it Duanmu Qun? Or the Forsaken god Clan?"

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. Within the entire Sky Spill Continent, the only ones who could find Lin Ming were Duanmu Qun and the others. When Lin Ming met with Duanmu Qun at the Forsaken God Clan, he had left his sound transmission mark at their dimensional realm so that they could contact each other in the future in order to help lead them back to the Holy Demon Continent.

A sound transmission mark could only be used to send a message; it couldn't be used to lock onto Lin Ming's position. He had no fear that his sound transmission mark would be revealed to others.

"Only Li Yifeng and a few others know of my relations with Duanmu Qun and the others. Moreover, Duanmu Qun tends to keep a low profile; Yang Yun shouldn't be targeting them. But the Forsaken God Clan is different. Everyone under the heavens knows that I have significant ties to the Forsaken God Clan. Even so, Yang Yun shouldn't try to start anything with them."

By all reasoning, Lin Ming was only a friend to the Forsaken God Clan. Even if Yang Yun wanted to force out Lin Ming, it was meaningless for him to try something with the Forsaken God Clan. But that didn't guarantee that Yang Yun wouldn't fall into a demented state and release his anger on the Forsaken God Clan. If that happened, there was no way the Forsaken God Clan would be able to resist him.

After the flame flashed for several breaths of time, it extinguished itself. Lin Ming thought for a moment as he heard the message in the sound transmitting talisman. “Yang Yun is planning on laying down a massive network of transmission arrays through the world to deal with me? And they want me to go to White Cloud Mountain Range to discuss countermeasures with Fairy Snow Gale?”

“Could it be a trap?” Demonshine suddenly asked. “If Yang Yun has taken control of the Forsaken God Clan, then it shouldn’t be difficult to find your sound transmission mark.”

Lin Ming shook his head. “It shouldn’t be. This message should be sent by Duanmu Qun and Feng Shen. In order for me to trust this message, they even added on several matters that occurred in the Eternal Demon Abyss’s 1000 mile forbidden zone. Besides us, no one else should be aware of those matters. It’s unlikely that Duanmu Qun and Feng Shen would be discovered by Yang Yun. And with their personalities, even if Yang Yun caught them, they wouldn’t willingly be controlled by him.”

Demonshine nodded. Indeed, this sounded true. Especially that Feng Shen. He was an indifferent and proud character, and would rather die than be controlled by others.

“It seems like the Forsaken God Clan is safe. Yang Yun hasn’t done anything to them yet.” Lin Ming let out a sigh of relief. If the Forsaken God Clan was exterminated because of him, the guilt would weigh heavily on his heart.

“It might be because of the goddess and Empyrean Primordius. Don’t forget, that devil also comes from the Sea of Miracles, and the Forsaken God Clan is significantly related to Empyrean Primordius and the goddess; they might even be their descendants. The Ancient Devil should also be aware of this. Not just that, but the Forsaken God Clan also has to bear a mysterious bloodline curse. Even if Empyrean Primordius already perished, the Ancient Devil wouldn’t rashly do anything to the Forsaken God Clan. There is always the possibility that he might get himself killed by the curse.”

"Yeah." Whether it was the Eternal Demon Abyss or Forsaken God Clan, they both had an inexplicable curse placed on them. An Emperor level powerhouse that entered the Blood Slaughter Steppes would also be killed by this curse.

"White Cloud Mountain Range, Fairy Snow Gale, let's go!"

Lin Ming flew straight towards the White Cloud Mountain Range. The truth was that even if this was Yang Yun's trap, Lin Ming wouldn't have been afraid to go. He already knew the level of Yang Yun's array formations. After he combined the Ancient Devil's knowledge of demonic path array formations with the knowledge of orthodox array formations he knew, his comprehension of array formations far surpassed Yang Yun's. Even if Yang Yun laid down an array formation to trap him, Lin Ming had the ability to break through it.

As for a battle, Lin Ming didn't fear that at all. In fact, he was even anticipating it.

.....

Millions of miles away in a hidden cave dwelling deep within White Cloud Mountain Range, Fairy Snow Gale sat at a jade table, a trace of worry coloring her face.

Beside her was a blue-clothed old man and a white-clothed middle-aged man. They were respectively the Shang Family's Highest Elder, Shang Yuetian, and the Seven Star Divine Kingdom's Divine Emperor, Li Yuxiao.

Out of the four Divine Kingdoms, Li Yuxiao was the Divine Emperor with the least achievements. He only ruled for a mere 300 years, and his cultivation wasn't too extraordinary either; he had barely stepped into the middle Divine Sea realm. Compared to an established, older middle Divine Sea powerhouse like Situ Haotian, his strength fell short. This was also the reason why the Seven Star Divine Kingdom was ranked at the very end of the four Divine Kingdoms.

The most crucial aspect of a Divine Kingdom's strength was the peak strength of the Divine Kingdom's highest master. In this aspect, the Seven Star Divine Kingdom was simply unable to compete with the other three Divine Kingdoms.

"In these past 40 days, we've split up to dozens of places and sent out over a hundred sound transmitting talismans. Yang Yun only gave us a two month deadline to complete the transmission array network. We only have 20 days left and we still haven't managed to find Lin Ming." Shang Yuetian slowly said, his wizened eyes tinged with nervousness.

"The sound transmitting talismans we use can only go 6 million miles at most. If Lin Ming isn't in the scope of this range, we won't be able to find him."

Li Yuxiao sighed. The Sky Spill Continent was simply too vast. With the four great seas also added on, even with Lin Ming's sound transmission mark and these sound transmitting talismans that had a 6 million mile range, wanting to find him was easier said than done. They couldn't do as Yang Yun had done and lay down hundreds of ultra-long distance transmission arrays in a single go. Moreover, if Lin Ming was trapped in some great array or mystic realm, it was possible the sound transmitting talisman would be blocked.

"At this point there is no way to reach him. If we cannot find him, then that is our fate and there isn't anything that can be done." The Forsaken God Clan Patriarch Shibai said from across Li Yuxiao and Fairy Snow Gale.

Sitting beside Shibai were three people; Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin.

There were only 20 days remaining. With every passing day, their hopes of finding Lin Ming became increasingly dim. Producing this sort of ultra-long distance sound transmitting talisman wasn't easy at all. Even with the Seven Star Divine Kingdom, White Clan, Shang Clan, and many other Holy Land level family clans joining together, they were only able to gather up a hundred some of them. If they wanted to create new sound transmitting talismans, they simply didn't have enough time to find the raw materials.

If they used up all these sound transmitting talismans, they really had no hope of finding Lin Ming.

Shang Yuetian frowned. "Could it be that Lin Ming doesn't believe us and thinks this is a trap instead?"

“No.” Feng Shen’s words were as precious as gold. He was confident in his belief.

“I hope that’s true.” Fairy Snow Gale shook her head. Yang Yun’s tracing mark was on her and Shang Yuetian’s body. Although she had used the excuse of arranging a transmission array to come here, she had still taken an enormous risk in doing so. If Yang Yun wasn’t closing up in cultivation and secretly hid himself here to ambush them, there was no way they would be able to sense him with their differences in strength. At that time, the results could be imagined.

As Fairy Snow Gale was lost in worry, her mind suddenly stirred. She could faintly feel the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy restlessly moving as a strong aura suddenly came shrouding down.

“Someone has come!”

Everyone’s hearts tightened. They swept their perception outwards and could actually see a white-clothed young man gracefully passing over the White Cloud Mountain Range. The White Cloud Mountain Range was hundreds of miles long, and Fairy Snow Gale and the others had all chosen an extremely covert location for the cave dwelling. Moreover, there was concealing array formations at the cave entrance. Even so, the white-clothed young man took less than half an incense stick of time to lock in on their position.

This white-clothed youth was naturally Lin Ming.

Lin Ming swept his divine sense outwards. After he couldn’t find any signs of traps or ambushes, he moved directly towards the cave dwelling. To someone like Lin Ming who was proficient in both the demonic and orthodox array formations of the Divine Realm, seeing through this array formation was a simple matter.

“Lin Ming! Lin Ming has come!” Fairy Snow Gale’s eyes lit up, her heart swelling with joy!

“What amazing methods. Such a great White Cloud Mountain Range and there is even a concealing array formation, yet he’s managed to find our positions so soon. The young are truly worthy of respect!” The Seven Star Divine Emperor Li Yuxiao acclaimed. To see Lin Ming was to see the light at the end of the tunnel. Just the actions of him discovering their location so easily was enough to startle everyone!

Chapter 934 – Counterattack

Chapter 934 – Counterattack

…

…

…

Lin Ming fell into the cave dwelling. He was dressed in white and spotless. The clothes he wore were formed from countless threads of thunder twined together, unstained by earthly dust. If the cloth tore in battle, it would automatically repair itself. If given to a mortal, they would be invulnerable to attacks, and these clothes would be a priceless treasure passed down through their family.

The aura exuding from Lin Ming's body was like the great and vast sea, unfathomable.

"Little Brother Lin, you've finally come!" Shibai was filled with emotion upon seeing Lin Ming again after so many years. Lin Ming's strength had already surpassed his; the speed of his growth was unbelievable!

"Patriarch Shibai!" Lin Ming respectfully bowed in the ceremony of a junior to a senior. He didn't pull rank just because his strength surpassed Shibai's. When Lin Ming was younger and far weaker, if it weren't for the protection of the Forsaken God Clan, there would have been no way he would've been able to escape Situ Haotian's clutches. This was the equivalent of a lifesaving graciousness, something he would never forget in his life.

"Haha, Little Brother Lin doesn't need to be so polite, I'm not sure I can afford it. We've already been waiting for you for quite some time now." Shibai chuckled in an extremely good mood.

Beside him, Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, Lan Xin, Fairy Snow Gale, and Shang Yuetian all greeted Lin Ming. Of these people, Lin Ming had already seen all of them before.

"Little Brother Lin, I'm Li Yuxiao, the ruler of the Seven Star Divine Kingdom." The only one Lin Ming hadn't met before was the Seven Star Divine Kingdom's Divine Emperor, Li Yuxiao's tone was very pleasant and relaxed, even forgoing his title of Divine Emperor.

"So it's the Seven Star Divine Emperor. Me and Li Yifeng can also be considered good friends." Lin Ming smiled in return.

"Haha, no need to be humble, we're all family here. Quick, come and sit. We've asked you to come this time because we want to discuss with you a plan on how to deal with Yang Yun."

Duanmu Qun's sound transmitting talisman had only mentioned that Yang Yun was arranging some massive transmission array network to deal with Lin Ming; it hadn't gone into much detail.

Lin Ming had an extreme understanding into Yang Yun, giving him a great advantage. That was because he had taken a great portion of the Ancient Devil's memories. As they said, know yourself, know your enemy, and be invincible in battle.

Before, Lin Ming only had to hear Duanmu Qun's message to faintly guess just what Yang Yun was plotting.

"Okay." Lin Ming nodded. He also wanted to know what Yang Yun had been up to recently to confirm his own thoughts.

"But let's not speak about Yang Yun's matters first. Fairy Snow Gale, Sage Shang, I've discovered that there's a battle spirit mark left in your bodies. What happened?"

A battle spirit tracing mark was not some profound and mystical tracing technique. Someone with a battle spirit could easily sense it, but it was impossible to erase if one's will was weaker.

Hearing Lin Ming's question, Fairy Snow Gale and Shang Yuetian both bitterly sighed. Of the Divine Sea powerhouses that had entered the Temple of Marvels, the great majority of them had a battle spirit mark left within them by Yang Yun to control them. Those like Li Yuxiao had managed to luckily escape. And to them, even if Yang Yun controlled the entire world, they could still live to a comfortable old age if they were willing to discard everything they had worked for and hideaway far away in some deep sea island. Of course, this wouldn't be a pleasant life; they would have to live forever under Yang Yun!

Fairy Snow Gale reiterated her knowledge of everything that happened. "I have no idea just what fortuitous encounter Yang Yun managed to run into, but his battle spirit has already reached silver perfection. That goes beyond our scope of understanding."

Fairy Snow Gale sighed. In the Sky Spill Continent, a silver level battle spirit was already a legend, and silver perfection was simply unimaginable. The only reason Fairy Snow Gale was able to recognize this boundary was because she had heard about it from Old Man Good Fortune.

Fairy Snow Gale's Honorable Master White Fengfeng had a very good friendship with Old Man Good Fortune before her passing. As this calamity befell Fairy Snow Gale, her first thought was to look for Old Man Good Fortune to help erase the battle spirit mark within her. However, even he was helpless. A perfect silver battle spirit was not something a Divine Sea powerhouse should possess.

"According to Senior Good Fortune, there is likely a powerful divine soul that resides within Yang Yun. Perhaps this divine soul might be at the boundary above the Divine Sea, Divine Transformation. It might be at the mid or late Divine Transformation realm, or even surpass that." As Fairy Snow Gale spoke, a sense of powerlessness filled her heart. A late Divine Sea martial artist might have the capital to be the highest under the heavens, or at least be someone close to it. As for what lay beyond the Divine Sea, such a boundary hadn't appeared in the Sky Spill Continent in the last 100,000 years. If it weren't for Old Man Good Fortune informing her of this, she would've never known about Divine Transformation.

Lin Ming nodded. Old Man Good Fortune was indeed experienced and insightful. Although he didn't have much talent for cultivation, he stayed in the Divine Realm for many years and his horizons couldn't be compared to a martial artist from the lower realms. He had been able to gather all the various clues and hints and come to this conclusion about Yang Yun.

Lin Ming said, "Yang Yun really does have a perfect silver battle spirit, but this battle spirit originates from a devil that came from the Sea of Miracles. That devil is temporarily residing within Yang Yun. During the Temple of Marvels, this devil once tried to possess my body, and it depended on a perfect silver battle spirit back then.

Everyone was startled by Lin Ming's words. Li Yuxiao said, boggled, "It wanted to possess your body? Then how did you?"

Li Yuxiao looked at Lin Ming with disbelief, clearly wondering just how Lin Ming managed to escape the clutches of the Ancient Devil. During the Temple of Marvels, Lin Ming's strength was only on par with the weakest Divine Sea powerhouse.

"I had some fortunate encounters and managed to escape with luck," Lin Ming casually said. Everyone could hear that Lin Ming didn't want to speak further about the topic so they didn't push him on it.

Lin Ming said, "A perfect silver battle spirit is truly formidable, but that Ancient Devil has already been sealed away in the Sea of Miracles for the last 100,000 years. His soul has weakened, and his battle spirit should no longer be as strong as a true perfect silver battle spirit. Moreover, my own battle spirit has a special quality to it, so it won't be difficult for me to erase the tracing mark from your body."

Lin Ming stretched out his finger and a gray energy lingered on his fingertip, slowly spinning. This was his grandmist battle spirit. Lin Ming's battle spirit had reached the peak of silver large success, and although its rank was slightly inferior to silver perfection, it had been tempered in grandmist energy for a long period of time and it was superior in quality to the Ancient Devil's battle spirit.

“You can erase the battle spirit mark left behind by Yang Yun?” Fairy Snow Gale and Shang Yuetian were ecstatic to hear Lin Ming say that, and some others even glanced at him incredulously. Although they knew that Lin Ming’s battle spirit was strong, they never imagined that he could possess a perfect battle spirit at the fifth stage of Life Destruction. It was something someone at the late Divine Transformation might not even have.

The battle spirit mark that Yang Yun had placed within them was like a curse that hung over their heads. They had to be constantly careful, not daring to disobey Yang Yun’s orders in the least, lest they draw his wrath.

A Divine Sea Supreme Elder could live from 4 thousand years all the way up to 10 thousand years. In this world, they stood at the highest stage of power with everything at their fingertips. They freely wandered the world, proud and arrogant. Which one of them would possibly be willing to be slaves to others and have to send every waking moment in fear and unease?

Upon hearing that Lin Ming could erase the battle spirit tracing mark in their bodies, Fairy Snow Gale and Shang Yuetian were especially excited.

Lin Ming sent out a bit of his perception to investigate the tracing mark in their bodies. Indeed, it was a perfect silver battle spirit. He hesitated for a moment, thinking, “During the Temple of Marvels, the Ancient Devil abandoned two thirds of his soul to escape from the Magic Cube, but now it looks like the Ancient Devil didn’t discard the important part of his soul; the true core of his being was kept behind. Otherwise, his battle spirit would be like that old Imp from the Blood Slaughter Steppes and it would’ve dropped a few small boundaries.”

Reaching out his hand, a gray energy sunk into Fairy Snow Gale’s body, flowing within her and wrapping around the battle spirit mark that Yang Yun left behind.

“Little Brother Lin, if you remove these two battle spirit marks then Yang Yun will immediately know,” Shang Yuetian cautioned. Although he eagerly wished to rid the shadow of this tracing mark from his body, he also didn’t want to alert the enemy.

Lin Ming said, “If he knows, he knows. I already have a general idea of what Yang Yun is doing to deal with me. He is practicing a type of devil arts, but he still hasn’t completed it. Brother Duanmu, didn’t you say that there was nearly a month before the transmission array network has to be completed?”

“Yes.” Duanmu Qun nodded. “Yang Yun gave us two months. We now have 20 days left.”

“With several hundred array formations, wanting to lay them all down without fault is nearly impossible. These array formations must be tested and the faults must be fixed. That should take several more months to complete. Yang Yun is a very intelligent man with clever methods, the type that can even obtain oil from sand. How can he possibly give me the time to cultivate? I’m guessing that he’s practicing some demonic path cultivation method and it’ll be several more months until he reaches large success. At that time, he might even break through to the middle Divine Sea in a single go. When his cultivation reaches large success and his strength rises to another level, those hundreds of array formations should finally be fixed and ready to go. He probably thinks that day will also be my last day.”

Lin Ming was able to guess Yang Yun’s plans after thinking about it. Of course, he naturally relied on the memories of the Ancient Devil to do so.

“Demonic path cultivation method?” Shang Yuetian seemed to come to a realization. “No wonder. The last time I saw Yang Yun, his aura was much deeper and the atmosphere around him had become demonic with blood energy exuding from him. It’s completely different from the elegant and untouchable atmosphere that he had in the past.”

“Oh? Then it should be the Great Blood Refining Art.” Lin Ming confirmed his own thoughts. The Ancient Devil knew a great number of cultivation methods, but the one that suited the early Divine Sea Yang Yun the most and could rapidly increase his strength was the Great Blood Refining Art. Moreover, and most importantly, after perfecting the Great Blood Refining Art, he could lock onto a person’s blood vitality and locate anyone within a million miles. This was the ideal method for Yang Yun to hunt him down.

“Great Blood Refining Art. Everything is becoming clear now. That’s why when Yang Yun killed Yang Laotian and Ouye Hua, he drew out all of their blood essence. So it was all in order to cultivate his martial arts. There’s also those seven variation bloodline Divine Sea powerhouses that’ve gone missing in the past year. They were likely killed by Yang Yun to help his cultivation.” Fairy Snow Gale was a smart woman. Just by hearing the name of the Great Blood Refining Art, she was able to deduce what sort of cultivation method it was. Within the demonic path cultivation methods, types that used blood essence to cultivate were extremely common.

“He killed Yang Laotian, Ouye Hua, and seven variation bloodline Divine Sea powerhouse?” Lin Ming was stunned for a moment. He never thought that the Nine Furnace Highest Divine Emperor and the Sublime Smelting Imperial Grand Uncle, two characters that had lorded over the Sky Spill Continent, would actually die in such a manner and be used as Yang Yun’s tonic. The twists and turns of life were truly unpredictable.

“Little Brother Lin, since you know about the Great Blood Refining Art, that makes things easier. How about you use these next few months and flee deep into the South Sea beyond the range of the transmission arrays. You can cultivate for 8-10 years and then return to kill Yang Yun.” Li Yuxiao laughed, all smiles. The unknown was scary. Now that he knew just what Yang Yun was and what he was doing, he wasn’t really afraid anymore.

“Flee?” Lin Ming faintly smiled. “Why would I run away? Yang Yun’s devil arts haven’t been completed yet, so wouldn’t this be the best time to kill him?”

Lin Ming’s voice contained a light killing intent, causing all of the people present to be startled. They speechlessly stared at him.

Chapter 935 – Command the World

Chapter 935 – Command the World

…

…

…

“Kill? You want to go and kill Yang Yun now?” Li Yuxiao stammered, his eyes wide open. He never expected that Lin Ming would have this idea. If an ordinary person were to learn of Yang Yun’s plans, they would subconsciously think of escaping. Yang Yun had arranged a wide network of transmission arrays, but no matter how great it was it still wouldn’t be enough to cover the vast and endless sea. As long as Lin Ming hid deep enough in the deep sea, somewhere that was several dozen million miles beyond the nearest transmission array, Yang Yun would have to run his legs off if he wanted to find him.

Lin Ming actually didn’t think of running away. Instead, he decided to take this chance to kill Yang Yun. This was really bewildering.

“Little Brother Lin, don’t you think this might be a bit reckless?” Shibai asked, a bit unsure. He felt that Lin Ming’s idea was too crazy, but it was also consistent with Lin Ming’s usual style. He had always been like this. At just the late Revolving Core realm, Lin Ming dared to risk his life to cross into Life Destruction and challenge every Destiny Decree master of the Asura Divine Kingdom by himself. Moreover, he had obtained victory in the end. This was a valor and determination that couldn’t be possessed by the average person.

“After closing up, Yang Yun should be more powerful than Whitedemon. Even if his supernatural powers haven’t been completed, he still has the qualifications to be the highest under the heavens.” Fairy Snow Gale pressed her eyebrows together. She didn’t try to persuade Lin Ming, instead only stating this fact. She didn't know about the battle between Lin Ming and Whitedemon, so she could only guess just how strong Lin Ming was.

However, according to the choices and actions Lin Ming took in the past, he wouldn't make such an insane decision unless he had confidence in himself.

"Highest under the heavens? That is only the Sky Spill Continent's highest under the heavens."

Lin Ming's words left everyone speechless.

"Only the Sky Spill Continent's highest under the heavens."

How could any of them respond to such brave words? In Fairy Snow Gale and Lu Yuxiao's life, their ultimate goal was to reach the late Divine Sea realm, but even that seemed a nearly impossible dream. As for someone like Shang Yuetian, he only managed to break through to the Divine Sea with lucky chances. His life's goal was to find heavenly materials that could extend his life and help him stay on the mortal coil for a few hundred more years. As for the late Divine Sea realm? Becoming the highest under the heavens? Those were simply legendary existences to him, stories that had no relation to him at all.

It could be said that to everyone here, Yang Yun was the same as those ancient inimitable kings like the Demon Emperor and the Eightfall Thunder Emperor; a nearly unreachable boundary for them. But to Lin Ming, it wasn't all that much.

"Little Brother Lin, you..." Shibai wasn't sure what to say for a moment. "Yang Yun has deeply hidden abilities and his talent is also high. He's just over 40 years old but his cultivation is at the eighth stage of Life Destruction, early Divine Sea realm. If you underestimate him, then the one who eats a loss will be you."

Lin Ming shook his head, "Patriarch Shibai, life in the universe is endless and infinite, and the road of martial arts has no end or limit. Although Yang Yun is formidable, he is still only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction, early Divine Sea realm. Within the Divine Realm, this sort of talent isn't much at all."

“And in terms of lucky chances, he managed to encounter the remnant soul of the late Divine Transformation Ancient Devil and obtained his guidance. Even with all the resources at his disposal, so what? Within the Divine Realm, there are geniuses that have World Kings as their masters! Moreover, their talent, their resources, everything they possess is countless times superior to Yang Yun!

“Within the three thousand boundless universes, there’s countless individuals like Yang Yun. But nearly all of them perish as they walk on their own roads of martial arts. If Yang Yun was better than average in an aspect, it would be that his plans and ambitions are high. But on the road of martial arts, one needs a great destiny, a great will, great talent, and nearly endless resources gathered today. Only then would they have a faint hope of continuing forwards. In this, Yang Yun is far from comparing to any of them.”

“If a mere Yang Yun can force me to hide deep within the South Sea for 8-10 years before returning, then I have no need to further walk down my road of martial arts. I might as well stay in the Sky Spill Continent and be happily content with being the ‘highest under the heavens’.

Lin Ming’s words left everyone, especially proud-hearted talents like Duanmu Qun, utterly silent. Lin Ming clearly intended to enter the Divine Realm and already was planning his ascension.

While those present all laid their eyes on the late Divine Sea as their goal, Lin Ming already looked above that towards the Divine Realm, seeing the geniuses there as his competition!

Such a disparity could no longer be put in words.

Fairy Snow Gale was silent for a while, and then said with a worried voice, “Lin Ming, although you taking advantage of the time when Yang Yun’s devil arts haven’t reached perfection could be considered grasping the time, but time is still inferior to terrain. Yang Yun is cultivating deep within the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s Divine Palace. The Nine

Furnace Divine Palace has a great array formation protecting it; it won't be easy for you to forcefully break in."

Fairy Snow gale was from the White Clan, one of the subordinate family clans of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. She had a very good understanding into the layout and defensive measures in place at the Nine Furnace Divine Palace. The deepest center of the Nine Furnace Divine Palace was the area within the entire Sky Spill Continent with the richest and purest heaven and earth origin energy. It was natural to assume that Yang Yun was cultivating there.

"What Fairy Snow Gale says is correct. But although time isn't as important as terrain, terrain isn't as important as the will of the people. In order to complete his supernatural powers, Yang Yun has already lost the heart of the people. Even if the Nine Furnace Divine Palace has a great array formation, it still needs people driving the activation to display its might. Since Yang Yun is in closed door seclusion, how can he possibly do so? As for others, even if they are the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's Divine Sea powerhouses, they likely won't be going to give their lives for someone like Yang Yun who was willing to kill his own great grandfather. He's a devil who used despicable strong-arm tactics to take control of all the Divine Sea powerhouses under the heavens."

"With such injustice, there's no support from him among his people. Now is the time to strike. Fairy Snow Gale, Divine Emperor Li, Sage Shang, I ask you to help gather all of the Divine Sea powerhouses that have a tracing mark planted within them to gather here. I'll help erase all of their tracing marks at once, and afterwards we'll go through the transmission arrays Yang Yun has set up to go straight to the Nine Furnace Divine Palace. I'll place down an array plate, gather everyone's attacks together, and break through that great array formation. At that time, Yang Yun and I will have our final showdown!"

Lin Ming's words were filled with a gritty daring and also held a deep confidence and glory. This was the so-called king's aura. If someone heard these words, it was easy for them to be infected by the stirring emotions.

Fairy Snow Gale sighed in her heart. This sort of confidence and valor was slowly accumulated over time. If Lin Ming didn't cultivate the martial path and stayed in the mortal world, he'd still be able to become an emperor among the people.

"Okay. I'll summon everyone." Shang Yuetian and Li Yuxiao said in unison. In order for Yang Yun to complete his devil arts, he had offended every Divine Sea powerhouse in the world. All these wandering people only lacked a leader to rally behind. Once they found one, they could unite and launch a counterattack on Yang Yun.

Lin Ming was the best choice to be that leader.

After they had their tracing marks erased from them, they'd inevitably be grateful to Lin Ming. With dozens of Divine Sea powerhouses joining forces in a single barrage of attacks, even the Nine Furnace Divine Palace's array formation might not be able to withstand them. Trapped there, Yang Yun would have dug his own grave.

Shang Yuetian and the others all lit up a series of sound transmitting talismans. Over half of Yang Yun's transmission array network had been completed. With knowledge of the approximate position of the martial artists as well as these sound transmitting talismans that could travel millions of miles, it would be quick to spread the message and gather everyone here.

.....

Shua! Shua! Shua!

Array symbols were drawn and shot into the array, joining together with an array flag. An array disc spun around in the air, quickly expanding and evolving into a large array formation as it slowly fell down.

There was a man and woman here. Both of them were Divine Sea powerhouses that were arranging a long distance transmission array.

This was the task that Yang Yun had given them.

Looking at the great array formation being completed, the man let out a light breath. He sighed, sounding a bit morose as he said, “That’s the 12th transmission array finished and we still have 20 days left. It seems that finishing this task won’t be a problem. Though I have no idea whether or not there’s any problems or mistakes when these transmission arrays are created.

This transmission array task was an absolute order upon death by Yang Yun. If they couldn’t complete them in time, the consequences would be disastrous.

The woman was silent as if she didn’t hear anything that was being said.

As the man saw this, his heart ached. He gently whispered, “Yu’er, don’t worry. Perhaps things aren’t as bad as they seem. Maybe there’s some other reason those several Divine Sea powerhouses went missing.”

The man didn’t know how to comfort and assure her. The man and woman were a married couple. The woman was called Yu’er, and she had a tracing mark left in her by Yang Yun. But that didn’t matter. What was important was that she possessed a variation bloodline called the moonlight bloodline.

Before now, seven Divine Sea powerhouses that possessed a variation bloodline had gone missing. Three of them were determined dead, and the other four were likely to have perished. The one who did all this was most likely Yang Yun. How could she not feel despair about all this? She felt like nothing more than a lamb in a cage, waiting to be slaughtered.

The man spoke a few words but couldn’t continue. He was a bit stronger than Yu’er. If this were the past and her life was in danger, he definitely could have spoken some brave words that he would protect her and keep her safe no matter what. But now, facing Yang Yun, all he felt was hopeless. The disparity between them was just too great. If he said any words about protecting his wife, even he wouldn’t believe them.

As the man was thinking about what to say, a flame suddenly lit up in front of him. It was the light of a sound transmitting talisman. The message was passed to both the man and the woman.

“Li Yuxiao. What could the Seven Star Divine Emperor want from us?”

The man was startled as he heard the message. He solemnly listened on. The sound transmitting talisman was very lengthy. When Li Yuxiao’s message mentioned Yang Yun cultivating the Great Blood Refining Art and killing the seven variation bloodline Divine Sea powerhouses to help do that, the man’s entire body trembled with rage. But as for Yu’er, her face turned paler than death and her lips quivered.

Although Li Yuxiao had no evidence, neither of them doubted his words. The two of them were also able to distinguish between right and wrong, and there was also no reason for Li Yuxiao to lie to them.

In the past they had only made some faint guesses as to what happened and they still held onto some hope. But now that they knew the exact situation, this knowledge pushed them into the abyss of despair.

“Yang Yun, that damned beast!”

The man clenched his jaws, his heart overflowing with rage and animus.

It had to be known that within many demonic path cultivation methods, the slaughter path and obscenity path weren’t separated. If his wife were to be taken by Yang Yun, then who knew just what would happen to her!

He wholeheartedly cultivated martial arts his entire life, even reaching the highest level of this continent, the Divine Sea, becoming a Peerless Emperor.

But in the end, he couldn’t even protect the woman he loved.

The man clenched his fists until his nails broke his flesh, drawing blood. However, as the message continued, his hands actually gradually relaxed. His eyes flashed with anticipation, surprise, and disbelief.

“Lin Ming has returned. He wants to gather all Divine Sea powerhouses of the Sky Spill Continent to attack the Nine Furnace Divine Palace, and he can even erase the battle spirit tracing mark in us?”

As the man looked at his wife, he could also see that she was shocked by the message. But within this shock, there was also a budding glimmer of hope.

Even if they couldn’t defeat Yang Yun, just erasing the tracing mark was a lifesaving favor.

“Not even four years have passed and Lin Ming wishes to fight Yang Yun? How could he have such strength?” The man muttered. “He also says he can remove the tracing marks. Does that mean his battle spirit has reached silver perfection? Is that even possible?”

Yu’er crumpled the sound transmitting talisman flame in her hand. She bit her lips and said, “No matter what it is, I must go and take a look. Even if I have to die in battle, I won’t allow Yang Yun to treat me as a pig to be raised in a pen.”

Chapter 936 – Erase Them All

Chapter 936 – Erase Them All

…

…

…

Within the 100,000 mile long White Cloud Mountain Range, in a deep and desolate canyon. Here over 50 Divine Sea powerhouses had gathered within three days. Except for the 20 some Divine Sea powerhouses from the Asura Divine Kingdom and their subordinate influences and also the Northwest Great Desert, nearly every Divine Sea powerhouse from the Sky Spill Continent had arrived here today.

“Seven Star Majesty, where is Sage Lin?”

“Yes, where is Sage Lin?”

Everyone began to ask Li Yuxiao. In particular, those that had tracing marks within them or those that had a variation bloodline or divine body were especially impatient.

It had to be known that most of these people had tracing marks within them and were tightly controlled by Yang Yun. If they revolted against him and won, everything would be happy and wonderful. But if they lost, it meant death.

A Divine Sea powerhouse had thousands of years of life and were also overlords of their own lands; which one of them was willing to die? If Yang Yun hadn’t forced them into a dead end, none of them would have desperately risked their lives to resist him.

If they were to place their lives on the line in a final struggle, they needed a qualified leader to command them. Otherwise, rather than walking into the jaws of death, wasn't it better to linger on alive?

No one doubted Lin Ming's talent. Within the last 100,000 years of the Sky Spill Continent, he stood at the pinnacle of all geniuses. But many of these people actually lacked faith in his strength. Three to four years ago Lin Ming hadn't even been comparable to an ordinary Divine Sea powerhouse. In such a short span of time, no matter how many lucky chances Lin Ming obtained, was it actually possible for him to possess the strength to challenge Yang Yun?

As everyone anxiously waited, Lin Ming finally emerged from the White Cloud Mountain Range's cave dwelling. His clothes were white and unblemished, his aura was restrained, and every step he took was peaceful as if he stepped on the void, carried by the wind.

"Please remain patient." Lin Ming lifted his hand. His voice contained an invisible energy field, making all those who heard him calm down and feel relaxed.

"He's Lin Ming. He looks a bit different from the portraits that Yang Yun has given us."

"Indeed. Although the appearance is similar, the atmosphere and temperament around Lin Ming cannot be contained in a simple portrait. I've seen many mighty people in my life. Some have a tyrannical momentum, brutal and aggressive, and some have a steady aura as if they returned to their true self, indiscernible from a mortal. But the feeling I get from Lin Ming is stranger. When I look at him, I feel like I'm facing the endless starry skies. There is no order, no borders, no limit, it is impossible for me to speculate on him!"

The one who spoke was a blue-clothed old man. He had a long white beard, and he stood atop a spinning compass that floated in the sky.

This old man was named the Sage Heavenmirror. He was a martial artist that had relied on his own strength to break into the Divine Sea, and his cultivation had reached the peak of the middle Divine Sea realm. Before the appearance of Yang Yun, Old Man Good Fortune, Whitedemon, and a few others, his strength had once been ranked in the top 10 of the Sky Spill Continent. Rumors said that the compass underneath his feet could even look into the past and prophesize the future; it was extremely mysterious.

The reason that Sage Heavenmirror had such a great prestige and fame amongst the Divine Sea powerhouses of the Sky Spill Continent was because of his sight. As he first looking at Lin Ming, he felt as if he were staring at a chaotic starry sky. In truth, this was the grandmist space.

“Sage Heavenmirror, you have the best sight amongst us. What do you think Lin Ming’s chances of defeating Yang Yun are? I’m a bit dubious about this. Perhaps after another 5-6 years pass, he might have that possibility.”

Sage Heavenmirror said, “The future is comprised of infinite changes and truths; to calculate it is easier said than done. With my current cultivation, foreseeing the destiny of a mortal nation is possible, but to discern the future fate of a True Dragon, I do not possess that ability.”

Sage Heavenmirror shook his head again and again, attracting Lin Ming’s eyes.

Lin Ming thought to himself, “I never thought that this world would actually have such an exquisite divination cultivation method. This is quite amazing.”

“Sage Lin, can you unravel the tracing mark in our bodies?” A soothing and melodious woman’s voice suddenly rang out. The one who spoke was Yu’er. She had a variation bloodline and also a tracing mark on her. If Yang Yun wished to kill her, there would be nowhere for her to escape to.

“That’s right, could you lift the tracing mark from us first?” Some people echoed Yu’ers thoughts. This was the most important immediate goal for them. If they didn’t have the tracing mark within them, then even if they lost they still had a chance of escaping.

Although Lin Ming was well known for his powerful battle spirit, the people present found it hard to believe that he could reach silver perfection in just a few years. After all, Lin Ming's cultivation was only at the fifth stage of Life Destruction.

According to the reports from Fairy Snow Gale, one needed to have stepped into the boundaries of the late Divine Transformation to acquire a perfect silver battle spirit. From the fifth stage of Life Destruction to the late Divine Transformation realm, the distance between was already beyond their imaginations.

"I can."

Lin Ming stretched out his hand and flicked his fingers. A grey arrow of energy zipped into Yu'er's body. This grey energy was the grandmist battle spirit. Although it was only at the silver large success level, the quality it possessed was superior to the Ancient Devil's perfect silver battle spirit.

The battle spirit drifted within her body. It turned into a silver grey spear that aimed towards the battle spirit mark and violently stabbed at it!

Kacha!

The battle spirit mark shattered like glass as it was instantly erased!

Ho!

A grey energy flew out from Yu'er's body. She blinked several times, a dazed look on her face.

"Was it over?"

"This...the tracing mark is gone?"

Yu'er's husband asked, flabbergasted. He too had a battle spirit. Although it was only at the most basic bronze forming stage, he could still sense that the battle spirit mark within Yu'er's body had disappeared!

In just several blinks of an eye, the tracing mark that Yang Yun had left within them, a dearth perk that caused them to have trouble eating and sleeping for these past few years, was actually pulled out like radish and chopped up by Lin Ming!

This was just too easy.

There were a good number of Divine Sea powerhouses that had a battle spirit. They also soon realized this. This proved that the potency of Lin Ming's battle spirit was greater than Yang Yun's!

"A silver grey battle spirit, how could it be silver grey?" Sage Heavenmirror couldn't understand what was happening. He had a great deal of understandings into the ranks of battle spirits, but he had never heard of a silver grey battle spirit before.

Lin Ming naturally wouldn't explain further. He said, "We're going to speed this up. Yang Yun should have already discovered that his battle spirit mark has been erased. In ten breaths of time, I'll erase everyone's battle spirit marks, then we'll collectively go the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom through the transmission array and annihilate Yang Yun!"

Lin Ming's words were filled with a zealous energy and the confidence that belonged to a king.

"Ten breaths of time? How could he possibly do that in ten breaths of time?" Some people began to wonder if Lin Ming had made a slip of the tongue. But at this time, Lin Ming flicked his fingers again and dozens of silver grey battle spirit energy balls shot out, each separately piercing into the Divine Sea powerhouses like a barrage of javelins. All of the martial artists glanced at each other, stupefied. Did Lin Ming plan to erase all of their battle spirit marks together in a single go?

This was far too aggressive!

They had all thought they needed to be extremely careful in lifting the battle spirit marks, slowly wearing them down with will over an extended period of time in order to completely erase it. When Lin Ming had wiped out the battle spirit mark in Fairy Yu'er's body in just a few blinks of the eye, that was already astounding enough to them. They never thought that the next action Lin Ming would take would be even crazier. He wanted to obliterate every battle spirit mark at the same time!

In truth, this wasn't too strange. Lin Ming's grandmist battle spirit was more intense than the Ancient Devil's battle spirit. If the Ancient Devil could leave behind multiple spirit battle marks, Lin Ming could also erase multiple battle spirit marks at once!

Peng peng peng!

Nearly indiscernible sounds came from everyone's bodies, as if a soul was breaking. In just 10 breaths of time, several dozen battle spirit marks were completely and thoroughly destroyed by Lin Ming!

This scene left everyone speechless and in shock. Maybe, just maybe in another 3-4 years, Lin Ming really had the possibility of growing to a level where he could defeat Yang Yun!

………

At this time, deep within the Nine Furnace Divine Palace, Yang Yun was completely immersed within a blood pond. His cultivation had reached a critical point.

His entire body was covered in a diagram of blood. Viscous blood was sucked into his mouth, spreading through his meridians and seeping out of his pores. A faint trace of blood line energy and essence remained within his body.

In between Yang Yun's eyebrows, the vertical red line began to slowly split open, revealing a bright red eyeball. This eyeball was also wrapped in a layer of blood essence; it looked extremely ghostly and eerie.

Around Yang Yun, the blood dao diagram slowly contracted as if it were about to fuse into his body. As it shrank it beat like a heart in a macabre fashion.

"It's time. Once I absorb this blood dao diagram, my Great Blood Refining will nearly be complete. All I'll have to do next is to fully form this Blood Law Eye. In another month or two, my Great Blood Refining Art will reach large success. At that time, I can use the Blood Law Eye to absorb a trace of Lin Ming's bloodline and then find him anywhere within a million miles. I'll hunt him down, kill him, and wrest away his destiny. With his great secrets in my hands, I'll step onto the peak of martial arts!"

The red line between Yang Yun's eyebrows was the third eye of the Great Blood Refining Art – the elementary form of the Blood Law Eye. Once this eye was completely formed, it could be used to search for Lin Ming in a range of a million miles. As for obtaining the aura of Lin Ming's bloodline, he had already obtained that when he fought with Lin Ming several years ago at the Temple of Marvels.

To use the Blood Law Eye to absorb the aura of a bloodline; he would then completely understand Lin Ming's position. This was the absolute best method he had decided to search for Lin Ming using the Great Blood Refining Art.

"Blood dao diagram, flesh and blood astral body, combine two as one!"

Yang Yun roared and energy erupted from his body like a volcanic explosion. A rich power of blood rose up, solidifying into tentacles. Every tentacle was only as thick as a finger, but there were thousands of them altogether.

Pa pa pa pa!

These tentacles latched onto the blood dao diagram, wanting to completely drag it into Yang Yun's body.

The tentacles contracted as they pulled against the resistance of the blood dao diagram's natural strength. As for Yang Yun, his eyes turned blood red, and veins stuck out from his body like wriggling worms. He was using his complete strength in the process.

"Almost there! I'm almost there!"

Yang Yun grit his teeth and watched as the blood dao diagram nearly completely sank into his body. But at that moment, he felt a deep pain stab into the deepest recesses of his soul, as if he was being pierced by needles.

“Mm? What?”

As Yang Yun was distracted, the blood dao diagram broke free from a tenth of the blood tentacles and began to expand outwards again.

“Someone has erased my battle spirit mark?” Yang Yun was enraged. A battle spirit mark was connected to his main battle spirit. If it was forcefully wiped out, it’d naturally have an impact on his body. Especially as he was in the most critical moment of his cultivation, if there was any mistake during the process then it was possible he could fall into obsession. But if it were only a single battle spirit mark being erased, that was also easily withstood.

Chapter 937 – Failure at the End

Chapter 937 – Failure at the End

…

…

…

Yang Yun took a deep breath, his eyes flashing with a thick killing intent. Because he was closed up in seclusion, he had no time to bother tracking those Divine Sea powerhouses who he had implanted with his tracing mark. He also didn't know that they had gathered together until one of his tracing marks was erased, causing him to experience a stabbing pain in his soul.

Although these battle spirit marks had been left by the Ancient Devil, Yang Yun had swallowed the Ancient Devil and their two souls had fused together. The Ancient Devils battle spirit mark was now the same as his, and erasing this mark caused him pain.

"Every battle spirit mark I left behind is different. The battle spirit mark that was erased was from a woman called Yu'er. To think that she'd actually dare to betray me. I wonder what methods she used to erase the tracing mark. Could this be Lin Ming's work?"

Yang Yun shook his head, "That's unlikely. Even if Lin Ming's will is strong, it's impossible for him to achieve a perfect silver battle spirit in just a few years and at only the fifth stage of Life Destruction. Perhaps it might be because of some treasure that Old Man Good Fortune found from 100,000 years ago. That old geezer had far too many cards in his hands, and he's also crafty like a fox. Once I finish my Blood Law Eye, I'll find and eradicate him from this world; I still have a wisp of his blood vitality with me."

Yang Yun coldly smiled. He always had contingencies in place. Once his Great Blood Refining Art was completed, he would find Old Man Good Fortune and draw out all his blood essence.

Yang Yun separated his thoughts and stretched out the tentacles to catch the blood dao diagram again. In that shock just now only 10% of the blood tentacles had fallen off; the impact wasn't too great.

"This battle spirit mark was erased during the most critical time of my cultivation, nearly causing me to taste defeat. After I reach large success in my cultivation, Fairy Yu'er, I'll slowly take back this debt. It also seems as if you have a variation bloodline, heh."

Yang Yun smiled, but his smile contained a certain cruelty to it. There was no longer the handsome and elegant demeanor he possessed in the past. A part of this was because the Great Blood Refining Art had changed his temperament, but the second, more direct reason was that he had swallowed the Ancient Devil's soul. However, he didn't have the ability to wipe out the Ancient Devil's spirit mark. After they fused together, this would inevitably cause his personality to be influenced by the Ancient Devil. In fact, the current Yang Yun was no longer purely Yang Yun; he was the fusion form of Yang Yun and the Ancient Devil, with Yang Yun maintaining the final command.

Such a fusion form was an extremely unstable state. Yang Yun's only choice was to rapidly increase his boundary in a short time and thoroughly refine the Ancient Devil's soul, restoring his pure self. Otherwise, there was a chance that he would fall into depravity and become a twisted lunatic.

Yang Yun's hands flashed and several hundred seals flew into the sea of blood.

"Blood dao diagram, flesh and blood astral body, combine two as one!"

Energy erupted from his body once again. Crimson tentacles shot forth like arrows, latching onto the blood dao diagram and contracting once more. With great difficulty, the dao diagram nearly entered into his body, but at this time, his body suddenly shook. A great pain burst up within his spiritual sea, nearly cracking it apart! The impact on Yang Yun's consciousness caused several thousand blood tentacles to break apart!

At this moment, several dozen battle spirit marks that Li Ming had left in the bodies of the Divine Sea powerhouses had suddenly shattered. Yang Yun's own divine soul came under a tremendous impact.

If this was an ordinary moment, this attack wouldn't have mattered to Yang Yun. Besides some slight pain to his spiritual sea, there wouldn't be any direct damage. But now, this was the most critical period of his cultivation. The sudden shock to his spiritual sea had nearly caused him to fall into madness!

It had to be known that demonic cultivation methods focused on speed, a road to obtaining power no matter the cost. Compared to the slow and steady orthodox cultivation methods, the risks were over a hundred times greater!

In absorbing the flesh, blood essences, or divine souls of others, it was easy to also inhale the chaos of their consciousness, leading to all sorts of dangers.

For instance, this Great Blood Refining Art absorbed the bloodlines of others. But this made it easy for one's own blood vitality to be mixed up in disorder. Even if one diligently practiced this cultivation method, it'd still be easy to fall into madness, much less when one received a critical disturbance.

Puff!

Yang Yun violently vomited a mouthful of blood. He lost control of the violent and frenzied blood vitality all around him and suffered a severe backlash. Blood vessels bursted apart all over his body, and even his meridians were damaged by the tyrannical energy!

This power of blood contained a very thick resentment. This was left behind by the agony and unwillingness of those that had died. Who wanted to die and have their blood essence drawn out for others to swallow up and use for cultivating their martial arts? Those that died had walked the road of martial arts their entire life, and yet this was their final fate. How could the dead possibly accept this?

If their unwillingness wasn't reconciled with, this would transform into resentment. In particular, those Divine Sea powerhouses that had comprehended their own battle spirit; their resentment was even more powerful. Once this resentment fused into their blood vitality, it'd form an intangible will form. If one couldn't suppress this resentment then it would come back to bite them!

Those that cultivated martial arts had to be careful of the karma they sowed and the karma they reaped, or else they'd have to bear the power of resentment.

"Damn!"

Yang Yun savagely roared, just like a wounded beast.

However, his will was still strong enough that he had attained a perfect silver battle spirit. He forcefully suppressed the endless resentment in the sea of blood. His hair was stained red, sticking to him like a sheet of crimson oil. He looked like a devil that had climbed out from the abyss of hell!

As the blood dao diagram lost the shackles of the blood tentacles, it began to violently expand. The dao diagram sank into the sea of blood, expanded to over a hundred times its size before fusing into the sea of blood and thoroughly vanished.

Yang Yun was incensed. After coming under the influence of the Ancient Devil's personality, he was no longer the gentle and collected Yang Yun of before, the Yang Yun who was unfathomable in his thoughts. The current Yang Yun was quick to anger and easily driven to extremes.

"Just who was it, who was able to erase dozens of the tracing marks I left behind in just a few breaths of time! Could it really be Lin Ming!? Could he have had another fortuitous encounter!?"

Yang Yun became gloomy, his face darkening. He spent several months forming this blood dao diagram, and when he was just about to succeed, he failed instead!

If he had absorbed this blood dao diagram his chances of breaking into the middle Divine Sea would have been far higher. But now he would have to expend several more months of hard work.

He also needed the 1-2 months afterwards to form the Blood Law Eye. Added together, that was nearly half a year of time.

This meant that he'd have to give Lin Ming another half year to grow. Yang Yun was fearful of Lin Ming's talent; he didn't want to allow him that much time.

“These ants actually dare to resist me and ruin my plans! After I kill Lin Ming, I'll execute all of them!” Yang Yun fiercely spat out. At this time, an old and discordant voice raucously laughed from the depths of his soul.

“Jejejeje, Yang Yun, you little ungrateful beast. Do you really think that you've swallowed me? How laughable! Even now, you've already been subconsciously assimilated by me. Haven't you noticed it yet? The original you would've never said such words, but now you are no longer you!”

“You, you've already lost who you are!”

The old and discordant voice echoed in Yang Yun's spiritual sea. Yang Yun's eyes suddenly turned cold. “You old thing, if you think that you can break my heart of martial arts then get lost. Sooner or later I'll completely refine you so that you can no longer affect my personality. Now, screw off!”

Yang Yun shouted out and the old voice was immediately engulfed back into nothingness. The Ancient Devil was only a shattered soul fragment now; he had no ability to resist Yang Yun.

Yang Yun suddenly rushed out from the blood pond. His entire body was soaked in blood and his hair was a chaotic mess. His three eyes flashed with a bloodthirsty crimson light. There was no longer a hint of the previous dignified aura of the Nine Furnace Crown Prince.

“Half a year, I have to let Lin Ming grow for another half year! Damn it all! If I want to kill him, I must take advantage of the time before he’s fully grown! In this half year, my chances of breaking into the middle divine Sea are high, but who knows just what sort of progress Lin Ming will make.”

Yang Yun took out several soul recovery pills and healing pills and swallowed them all. His current condition was extremely poor. Many of his meridians were damaged and his spiritual sea was in turmoil. His will had managed to suppress the chaotic resentments within him. Otherwise, if he left these hidden dangers freely roaming, they would cause him to lose his mind in the future and fall into a demented state.

Just as Yang Yun was recuperating, a flame suddenly lit up in front of him. It was a message from an Asura Divine Kingdom powerhouse. After hearing the message, Yang Yun shot up, his heart seething with rage!

“Over 50 Divine Sea powerhouses have gathered outside the Nine Furnace Divine Palace and want to break through the great array formation? And the white-clothed youth leading them is most likely Lin Ming!?”

“Lin Ming!! I want to fight him and yet he took the initiative to deliver himself to my door!”

Yang Yun’s eyes flashed. He didn’t expect that Lin Ming would actually be bold and resolute in his actions. He had gathered the Divine Sea powerhouses of the Sky Spill Continent to siege the Nine Furnace Divine Palace!

He had concocted a plan to hunt Lin Ming down throughout the entire world, but before this plan was completed, Lin Ming had come to him!

This ruthless and valiant daring caused Yang Yun to be shocked!

“He actually chose this time to come, damn it all! It looks like those dozens of Divine Sea powerhouses all have the tracking marks erased from their bodies. Is this his handiwork? Just how did he do this!?”

Yang Yun grimaced. Lin Ming had erased his tracking marks, causing him to be injured at his most critical time. He then rushed over here full of momentum to kill him. Whether this was intentional or not, for Lin Ming to reach this step was extremely terrifying!

Lin Ming’s momentum was like a beam of light while he suffered a backlash of blood vitality. There was no way he could fight Lin Ming right now. He had to spend at least a quarter hour to suppress his injuries with a secret technique.

“Activate the Nine Furnace Divine Palace’s great array! Hold them off for me!”

After Yang Yun issued the other, he completely concentrated his thoughts on restoring his wounds.

Hu –

Outside the Nine Furnace Divine Palace, a seven-colored light barrier suddenly rose up into the air, surrounding the entire palace. This was the great protective array of the Nine Furnace Divine Palace. As a colossal influence that was almost a sixth-grade sect, the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s great protective array that guarded the Nine Furnace Divine Palace was nearly impregnable. Of course, the basis of this was that there were enough powerhouses managing it.

30 miles away from the Nine Furnace Divine Palace, Lin Ming floated high up in the sky, his white clothes fluttering in the wind. Behind him were over 50 Divine Sea powerhouses. He had unknowingly become the leader of all the Divine Sea powerhouses of the Sky Spill Continent. He was now a true king!

“Attack!”

Lin Ming was expressionless and his voice was cold. He casually waved his hand and tossed out an array disc that spun around in the air!

The dirge of the Death God had finally begun.

Chapter 938 – Nine Furnace Great Array

Chapter 938 – Nine Furnace Great Array

…

…

…

This array disc spinning in the air was arranged by Li Ming. It was a simple array formation that could gather the attacks of the over 50 Divine Sea powerhouses together. Otherwise, if their attacks were scattered, it wouldn’t be able to deal the most powerful blow.

“Everyone, let’s attack together.”

“That’s right. Bring out your complete strength. If we still try to hide anything at this point, we’re really going to die.”

“Great, take out all of your trump cards. After being suppressed for such a long time we must vent our anger, but let’s break this damned turtle shell before we do that!”

Even a mortal slave had their pride, much less these arrogant Divine Sea powerhouses. After being ruled and dominated by Yang Yun’s immense pressure for such a long time, their gathered rage had already reached the limit!

At this moment, over 50 Divine Sea powerhouses suddenly attacked with everything they had!

These Divine Sea powerhouses all stood out and blossomed from the trillions of lives on the Sky Spill Continent. Moreover, they had lived for thousands of years. Throughout the years, the amount of treasures and secrets they accumulated couldn't be underestimated. How could any of them not have a final trump card in hand?

In this matter were failure meant death and success meant life, no one was stupid enough to stay their hand. If they did, it'd be taking their own life and the lives of everyone else here as a joke!

Many of these people not only used 120% of their strength to attack, but they also took out treasures from their spatial ring that they obtained from ancient ruins, such as earth rupturing symbols, divine thunder beads, and so on. Although these treasures were weaker than Old Man Good Fortune's heaven perishing bead, they were still treasures left behind from 100,000 years ago; their lethality far exceeded the all-out attack of a normal Divine Sea powerhouse, equal at least to someone like Yang Laotian.

With over 50 Divine Sea powerhouses attack with all their might, the skies were obscured by energy rays!

The void trembled. The energy beams passed through the array formation and converged together, turning into a heaven shattering beam of light that savagely smashed into the Nine Furnace Divine Palace!

Just before the Nine Furnace Divine Palace's barrier was about to be washed over by a terrifying baptism of energy, 10 powerhouses suddenly flew out from the depths of the Nine Furnace Divine Palace. Of these people, seven had scales all over their bodies, long writhing snake tails, fins, and gills. They were clearly powerhouses from the deep sea races. The three others were martial artists of the Asura Divine Kingdom. Situ Bonan was amongst them.

When enemies encountered each other, there would be particular eye reddening rage. After Situ Bonan saw Lin Ming, his vision filled with a monstrous hate. "Everyone, let's all defend the Nine Furnace Divine Palace together!"

These 10 powerhouses were all Divine Sea level powerhouses. Seven were at the early Divine Realm and three were at the middle Divine Sea realm. They completely poured their energy into the nine great furnaces that acted as the array's heart. At this time, none of them dared to hold back; all of them used their strongest power.

Yang Yun had been injured during his cultivation and wasn't at his peak condition. They had to delay for time otherwise they would also be the first ones to die.

With 10 great powerhouses managing it, the Nine Furnace Divine Palace's energy barrier array rose to another level.

Bang!

A beam of multi-colored lights smashed into the Nine Furnace Great Array like a dazzling rainbow dragon. The world shook. A terrifying explosion rang out, seeming to shake the entire Sky Spill Continent. Large patches of earth ruptured. An incomparably vast shockwave swept up into the sky. A round and glorious sun seemed to appear above the Nine Furnace Divine Palace, and mountain ranges hundreds of miles away were completely obliterated by the shockwave, turning into endless amounts of stone and dirt!

The rainbow dragon howled, as if it wished to smash the entire Nine Furnace Divine Palace deep into the ground!

The great array guarding the Nine Furnace Divine Palace violently shook, but it was far from shattering. This protective array formation represented the glory and majesty of the strongest Divine Kingdom. With 10 Divine Sea powerhouses managing it, it was able to forcefully resist the combined attacks of over 50 Divine Sea powerhouses.

In Lin Ming's opinion, in order to break through the array, they would need to at least increase the power of the attack by 30-40%. But, everyone here had already used their complete strength; how could there be room for improvement?

"Damn, with these people managing the array formation, the power has increased several times over. Wanting to break through it in a single try is too difficult." Veins were sticking out on Li Yuxiao's face. Even when using 120% of their strength, they still weren't able to break through the Nine Furnace Divine Palace's protective array, and now anxiousness began creeping in his heart.

"Fairy Snow Gale, Yang Chenglin, you were both part of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom to begin with, do you know what weakness the Nine Furnace Divine Palace's great array has?"

Fairy Snow Gale was inevitably an outsider, even though her family clan was subordinate to the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. However, Yang Chenglin was part of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's royal family. He knew the exact situation of the Nine Furnace Great Array. He said with a true essence sound transmission, "This great array formation is almost without flaw. The Nine Furnace Divine Palace's great array formation is powered by nine top grade heaven-step furnaces that combine together to suppress all power. These nine furnaces have been tempered for such a long time that they have reached the peak, nearly qualifying as saint artifacts. With the nine furnaces combined, the overall power will increase dozens of times. You can only break through using external strength."

As he spoke, he glanced at Lin Ming, wanting to see what plan Lin Ming had this time. But he saw that Lin Ming was no longer attacking, and his eyes were shut as if he were deep in thought.

This caused him to feel distressed. He knew that Lin Ming had a nearly unparalleled understanding of array formations, but at this critical point when over 50 Divine Sea powerhouses were attacking with everything they had, they could only continue this barrage for another half an incense stick of time. Could Lin Ming be planning on thoroughly understanding this great array formation during that brief period of time and breaking through it?

It had to be known that this sort of protective array formation was nearly unsolvable to begin with; it was part of the characteristics of all protective arrays formations. It was not like killing arrays, illusion arrays, caging arrays, or other such array formations that had methods in which they could be cracked apart. Moreover, the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom had existed for so many years that they had strength close to a sixth-grade sect. For all these tens of thousands of years, they managed to produce countless chosen prides of the heavens. Although they were all inferior to Lin Ming, their knowledge still accumulated over the generations. How could the Nine Furnace Divine Palace's great array formation they laid down possibly be solved by Lin Ming in just half an incense stick of time?

He wanted to remind Lin Ming of this, but he found that Lin Ming had sealed away his divine sense and was in a completely engrossed state. He became even more jittery.

At this time, from within the divine palace, Situ Bonan madly laughed, "Haha, if you think that you can break through this Nine Furnace Great Array, then keep on dreaming! You might not know this, but Great Emperor Yang Yun is currently cultivating his supernatural powers deep within the Nine Furnace Divine Palace. After another half an hour, he'll finish his cultivation and leave seclusion. When he comes out, he'll slaughter you all like chickens and pigs!"

The Nine Furnace Divine Palace's great array heart had nine furnaces to stabilize the array. On Situ Bonan's side, there were a total of 10 people. Nine of them were managing the divine furnaces; that was enough to resist the combined attack of 50 some Divine Sea powerhouses. As for Situ Bonan himself, he poured his energy into his voice to speak to spread his nefarious messages to everyone. His words clearly reached everyone's ears as he tried to ruin their morale.

And indeed, if Situ Bonan managed to destroy these Divine Sea powerhouses' morales and also buy enough time for Yang Yu to recuperate his wounds and complete his supernatural powers, they would really be defeated. He wanted them all to believe from the depths of their hearts that resistance was futile!

Of the over 50 Divine Sea powerhouses, the youngest of them was several hundred years old. They had seen and experienced many great storms and tribulations in their lives, and normally they wouldn't be fooled by Situ Bonan's words. However, the power and influence that Yang Yun gathered these past years was far too big. It formed a shadow that covered their hearts, making them unable to resist him.

Moreover, they had no way to determine whether or not Situ Bonan's words were true or false. Because of this, many of them faltered, their fighting spirit shaking, causing a seed of fear to appear within them.

As this seed of fear was planted, it caused their striking power and momentum to immediately weaken by 20%.

As Li Yuxiao saw this, he was overwrought with dismay. "Sage Lin!"

Lin Ming's eyes were shut and he remained unmoved by what was happening around him. At this time, his perception was clearly concentrated on the Nine Furnace Great Array. In his mind, the great array was reduced to countless lines, like a spherical spider web. Each silk thread of this web was made of energy. That was the backbone of the energy structure, and also the most solid parts of the Nine Furnace Great Array's protective barrier.

Even if Lin Ming was skilled in a variety of Divine Realm array formations, it was impossible to solve the Nine Furnace Great Array and break through it in such a short time. A protective array was different from killing arrays, caging arrays, or illusion arrays. Of the latter three, in order to cage someone, kill someone, or bring someone under illusion, they all required that the person step into them, thus producing the possibility that someone could break out.

But for a protective array, it was to keep all enemies outside. And all central mechanism of an array formation were located within. Wanting to break through was easier said than done.

However, although Lin Ming was unable to find a method to resolve the Nine Furnace Great Array, he could actually rely on his understanding of array formations and also the fierce barrage of over 50 Divine Sea powerhouses to find traces of a gap!

The combined attack of over 50 Divine Sea powerhouses couldn't be underestimated. Even if it were Yang Yun, if he were struck by this attack he would turn to ash. Of course, this all depended on whether or not they could hit him and also if they could survive to do it. These

Divine Sea powerhouses had a limited cultivation; it was impossible for them to collectively strike Yang Yun. But with such a powerful attacking colliding with the unmoving Nine Furnace Great Array, the energy barrier still violently shook, causing tiny, nearly imperceptible gaps to appear.

Within Lin Ming's perception vision, he could clearly see every weak spot in the barrier where the energy lines were thin, even on the verge of collapse.

"I've found it! There are a total of 12 cracks!"

Lin Ming's eyes shot open. In that moment, his eyes were like a divine thunderbolt that fell onto the Nine Furnace Great Array.

As Situ Bonan met Lin Ming's eyes, he had an illusion that his soul was extinguished.

"This brat! Humph! Who cares how sharp your eyes are, what's so scary about you? Although I'm far from being your match, you're still outside the great array. What can you possibly do to me?" As Situ Bonan thought of this, he became much more energetic. "Lin Ming, Great Emperor Yang Yun will soon leave seclusion. That moment will be your death knell. I'll suck out your divine soul and marrow to take revenge for the Asura Divine Kingdom!"

"Is that right?" Lin Ming derisively smiled. His smile seemed to contain chilling winds from the nine nether abyss, making all who looked at him feel inexplicably frightened as their heart skipped a beat.

In the next moment, an alluring red lotus slowly bloomed behind Lin Ming. The entire sky began to reflect a gorgeous red glow!

Such a phenomenon actually faintly overshadowed the radiant light caused by the combined attack of over 50 Divine Sea powerhouses!

"Heavenly Demon martial intent – grandmist space!"

Lin Ming clearly enunciated every word, his voice cold and indifferent. At this time, his voice resounded between the heavens and earth like the solemn judgment of a divine god.

Suddenly, the Prime Emperor Force Field came enveloping down. With the support of the grandmist battle spirit, it completely swallowed up the Nine Furnace Great Array!

This anomaly stunned all the martial artists present. Situ Bonan’s heart shivered, nearly feeling as if his divine soul had fallen into illusion.

“What is that red lotus?”

Situ Bonan only needed to glance at the red lotus to feel as if his soul had been sucked out of his body. As he looked at the martial artists beside him, all of them were alarmed, like they had encountered some horrifying monster.

Chapter 939 – Complete Massacre

Chapter 939 – Complete Massacre

…

…

…

"Break!" Lin Ming roared out. The grandmist space had the power to swallow all Laws. However, even then one needed the energy to support it. Lin Ming's current boundary was insufficient so it was impossible to reach a degree where he could swallow the entire Nine Furnace Great Array. This was a ultra-protection array that even the combined attack of 50 Divine Sea powerhouses couldn't break. It represented the pinnacle of array formation achievements in the Sky Spill Continent!

However, if it were just the 12 cracks in the Nine Furnace Great Array where the energy lines were weak and shallow, Lin Ming could actually break through them!

Si si si!

The Heavenly Demon martial intent divided into 12 streams that rushed towards the 12 cracks in the Nine Furnace Great Array. In that moment, there were no powerful energy collisions, no dazzling divine lights, and no earthshaking bangs. The 12 cracks silently disintegrated!

The Nine Furnace Great Array was an array formation that contained the five central elements, gathering all elements as one. The power was incomparable. But in the face of the grandmist space that negated all Laws, even such an array formation was suppressed.

Every tiny spot that disintegrated was formed by countless tiny energy seals and formed a complex energy backbone, similar to a spider web. And like a spider web, every space between the energy lines that disintegrated was only the size of a grain of rice. Let alone a human being, even a fly would have trouble passing through them. As long as this gap was created, no matter how small it was, an invisible and intangible force field could pass through.

Lin Ming shouted out. The Heavenly Demon Force Field divided into 12 streams and flooded into the Nine Furnace Great Array, surging towards Situ Bonan and the others.

Lin Ming didn’t have the ability to rip apart the Nine Furnace Great Array. But if he could kill the Divine Sea powerhouses inside that were managing the nine stabilizing divine furnaces, the Nine Furnace Great Array’s power would weaken by over 50%. At that time, breaking this large array wouldn’t be difficult anymore.

“What!?”

At this time, Situ Bonan could clearly feel a vast and boundless, extremely terrifying energy pour down over him. This sort of feeling was like a mortal witnessing a great volcano erupting and watching as a trillion jins of lava rained down on them!

“Damn! What power is this, he can actually break into the Nine Furnace Great Array!? Let’s defend this little beast’s attack together, then repair the Nine Furnace Great Array!” Situ Bonan hysterically shouted. The other nine Divine Sea powerhouses didn’t dare to delay. They temporarily withdrew the energy they were pouring into the divine furnaces to resist the Heavenly Demon Force Field.

However, the Heavenly Demon Force Field was a transcendent divine might level ability. It was the capital that Empyrean Primordius relied on to walk unhindered in the boundless universe. Even if Lin Ming could only display the tiniest amount of its prestige, it was still more than enough to massacre Divine Sea martial artists.

“Death!”

Lin Ming waved his hand, his voice cold to the extreme. This aura was similar to the fabled Yama of hell, a lord who was able to sentence all to life and death with but a single brushstroke!

Bang!

Grandmist space erupted within the Nine Furnace Great Array. The five deep sea powerhouses that bore the brunt of this attack trembled. The protective true essence around their bodies melted like snow under the sun, disappearing as it entered the grandmist space.

Disintegrate all rules, decompose all energy, this was the chaos grandmist!

"How is this possible!?"

The several deep sea powerhouses were bewildered, horrified. They used their ultimate trump cards to resist this energy. Even if they were weaker, they wouldn't be shocked if their true essence exploded in a shower of sparks before it disappeared. But they never thought that it would disappear without a trace, slowly dissipating into nothingness.

This was the first time they had ever seen something like this. How could they not be panicking?

However, this horror only lasted for less than the blink of an eye. The grandmist space covered them after which the five Emperor level deep sea powerhouses felt their protective true essence shatter. Their clothes, skin, muscles, meridians, bones, everything began to crumble down before turning into dust that disappeared into the wind. This was a complete and total annihilation.

As everyone witnessed this, their eyes turned round. Let alone those with Situ Bonan, even those 50 plus Divine Sea powerhouses standing on Lin Ming's side felt a cold chill crawl up their spines and their palms to turn slick with sweat.

It was natural for Lin Ming to defeat a Divine Sea powerhouse; even instantly killing a Divine Sea powerhouse wasn't a surprise. But when separated by the Nine Furnace Great

Array and also dozens of miles away, to easily kill five Divine Sea powerhouses and with one of them even being at the middle Divine Sea realm, this was truly terrifying.

If Lin Ming could accomplish that, that also meant that he could take any of their lives with but a thought. Even if they were separated by dozens of miles, the result would be the same. Even with a great protective array between them, none of that would matter!

This sort of supernatural power already surpassed their scope of understanding.

Moreover, these five died in the most miserable way. Their death crept up on them silently and rapidly; a cruel death wasn't even enough to describe it. This was true annihilation. They quietly dissipated into nothingness; even their bones and energy left this world!

In that silence, to watch the ghastly scene of five Divine Sea powerhouses turn into trillions of motes of dust, that was truly a fearful matter.

And from start to finish, Lin Ming hadn't moved at all. Besides an enchanting red lotus blossoming behind him, he hadn't even lifted a hand.

This scene was truly hair-raising!

What sort of cultivation method did this supernatural power come from!?

"How is this possible? How..." Situ Bonan's eyes were like full moons. He was well aware that the only reason he hadn't died just now was because Lin Ming hadn't aimed at him, but instead killed the five other Divine Sea powerhouses. Otherwise, he would've died already, his fate the same as the dead.

With just a thought he had killed them from dozens of miles away, treating the Nine Furnace Great Array like it was nothing at all. He was simply a demonic monster!

"Run!"

This was the only thought of the survivors. None of them had the courage to face the monstrous Lin Ming.

“Run away?”

Lin Ming’s lips curved up in a cruel sneer. He only killed five first because he didn’t have full assurance he could kill all 10 Divine Sea powerhouses at once. But now that he had killed off half of them, killing the other half was that much easier.

“Grandmist space, massacre!”

Energy erupted from Lin Ming’s body. The Heavenly Demon martial intent surged out like a light-speed tsunami, rapidly swallowing up the five fleeing Divine Sea martial artists!

“Ahhhh!”

Situ Bonan emitted a miserable wail. He was the weakest and also at the last years of his life. He fell and was the first to be swallowed up by the Heavenly Demon martial intent.

Peng!

With a light sound, Situ Bonan’s protective true essence directly shattered. He watched helplessly as the grandmist space disintegrated his legs, his torso, his arms, and then his neck.

Within the grandmist space, his old flesh fell off like dead and dry bark. Blood poured out, his meridians shattered, everything silently turned to dust.

Nothing was more frightening than watching his own body dissipate like dust.

“No! Noooo!”

Situ Bonan cried out with one last unwilling roar before he was completely swallowed by the grandmist space. Everyone watched as he futilely struggled before finally being decomposed into nothingness.

Just like Situ Bonan, the other four Divine Sea powerhouses weren't able to escape either. They were sucked into the grandmist space one at a time. With despairing cries, their protective true essence shattered and their bodies crumbled apart!

From the point that Lin Ming managed to break into the Nine Furnace Great Array, he had only taken several breaths of time to kill 10 Divine Sea martial artists. He hadn't even taken half a step, easily slaughtering them all.

To kill with just a thought, this was the majesty of a true death god, the executioner of life and death!

"Lin, Sage Lin..."

At some unknown time, the 50 some Divine Sea powerhouses seemed to unanimously agree to half their attacks. What happened just now was no different from a dream to them. Those 10 Divine Sea powerhouses were not random minions, but Supreme Elders at similar levels of power. But facing Lin Ming, none of them had the ability to resist. If they were in their place, they would've encountered a similar fate.

To face someone who could kill them by just lifting a finger, they certainly felt a heavy pressure.

"Sage Ling's supernatural powers are peerless. I didn't think that you'd be able to contend with Yang Yun, but now I see that my judgment and experiences are shallow."

Sage Heavenmirror sighed as he watched Lin Ming, his voice full of respect and awe. He was renowned as the god of divination, but even he couldn't imagine that Lin Ming possessed such strength.

Lin Ming shook his head, "The reason I was able to kill those 10 Divine Sea martial artists is because I used a special martial skill. Although I didn't move, the truth is that I was attacking with my complete strength; it wasn't as easy as you think it was. Otherwise, I would've killed those 10 Divine Sea masters together instead of killing five first and then the other five."

It wasn't easy for Lin Ming to galvanize the grandmist space; he had to display his complete strength. And if he were to drive the grandmist space to the limit, he wouldn't have any remaining energy to use martial skills.

But although he said that, when others saw this scene, what they witnessed was that Lin Ming killed others from dozens of miles away with just a thought, not even moving to do it.

"Alright everyone! Now that the 10 Divine Sea powerhouses that were managing the Nine Furnace Great Array are dead, that is the same as a tiger losing their teeth and claws. Let's attack together and shatter that barrier!"

Although Lin Ming's Heavenly Demon martial intent could dissolve the Nine Furnace Great Array to a certain extent, he wasn't able to completely destroy it. To do that he required the strength of the others.

"Okay!"

50 plus Divine Sea powerhouses attacked again with everything they had. Dozens of light beams gathered at an array disc, condensing into a rainbow dragon that howled towards the Nine Furnace Great Array.

Bang!

The great array violently trembled. Everything within a thousand miles was completely razed to the ground by the tyrannical energy. Luckily, the Nine Furnace Divine Palace symbolized the absolute majesty and glory of the Divine Kingdom and didn't allow mortals or martial artists to live nearby. Otherwise, this battle would've cost countless lives.

After the Nine Furnace Great Array lost the support of 10 Divine Sea powerhouses, it wasn't able to withstand the massive joint attack. The energy barrier trembled more and more, and then with a loud 'ka ka ka' sound, a great crack finally appeared!

As soon as one crack appeared, more cracks rapidly expanded outwards, spreading through the entire array. With a long explosion, the Nine Furnace Great Array completely collapsed!

This was the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's highest array formation that represented the total accumulation of tens of thousands of years. If there were enough Divine Sea powerhouses overseeing it, then even the joint attack of 100 Divine Sea powerhouses along with the highest under the heavens wouldn't have been able to break it!

When Yang Yun was at the Temple of Marvels, he had suppressed the many Divine Sea powerhouses with lightning speed, then killed Yang Laotian and Ouye Hua afterwards. Only due to that was his plan able to progress smoothly. Otherwise, if Yang Laotian holed up in the Nine Furnace Divine Palace for dozens of years, then Yang Yun would've had a big headache.

Chapter 940 – Fighting Yang Yun

Chapter 940 – Fighting Yang Yun

…

…

…

With the Nine Furnace Great Array shattered, the Nine Furnace Divine Palace was completely exposed to the barrage of over 50 Divine Sea masters.

The massive divine palace extended over several hundred miles. There were glorious jade palaces and beautiful lake pagodas, both looking like heaven on earth. But now, everything would have to bear a devastating disaster.

“Everyone, please show mercy! The Nine Furnace Divine Palace houses a great number of my Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom’s disciples and clansmen. They’re all innocent! Yang Yun is currently residing in the deepest minor dimension within the Nine Furnace Divine Palace; it’ll be good as long as we can break into that area.”

As Fairy Snow Gale and Yang Chenglin saw everyone’s attacks about to fall onto the Nine Furnace Divine Palace, they quickly called out to stop them. They were part of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom and certainly didn’t hope to see the innocent disciples slaughtered.

“You two are right!” Lin Ming raised his hand, calling a stop to the attacks. He swept out with his divine sense, locking onto the position of the minor dimension in the blink of an eye. There it was, a red pagoda with a blood red light that soared into the skies. Without a doubt, that was where Yang Yun was hiding. There was nowhere else he could be.

“If you don’t want to come out, then I’ll make you!”

Lin Ming waved his hand and the Great Desolate Blood Halberd jumped into his hands. On the blood halberd, thunder and fire energy twisted together, sending out a dazzling light like a birthing sun.

Penetrating Rainbow!

Lin Ming struck down with the halberd. It was like a river of stars dropping down from the nine heavens, splitting apart the sky. A titanic power of thunder and flames wove together, and within, two faint dao diagrams appeared; they were red and purple!

For a postcelestial dao diagram to appear during a martial skill attack, this was an ability that Lin Ming gained after breaking through to the fifth stage of Life Destruction and having the dao traces engraved into his Revolving Core. Only when one's understanding of the world's Laws reached an extremely high boundary would this sort of phenomenon occur. These dao diagrams would be naturally formed, representing the operational rules of source energy.

"Postcelestial dao diagram!" All of the Divine Sea powerhouses were individuals with great amounts of experience. They were able to understand just what the dao diagrams appearing behind Lin Ming meant at a glance.

"This is incredible. Just a casual attack already contained a dao diagram, and moreover two dao diagrams at that. This sort of boundary has already surpassed my comprehension. I've heard rumors that when the Eightfall Thunder Emperor used the Sword of Judgment, a purple dao diagram would form behind him. But that was only one dao diagram! Lin Ming has two dao diagrams, and they seem to represent thunder and fire!"

"At the fifth stage of Life Destruction Lin Ming has already surpassed the Eightfall Thunder Emperor!"

As the Penetrating Rainbow shot out, the world paled. This was Lin Ming's self-created martial skill. Although its level of finesse couldn't compare to the supernatural powers possessed by those in the Divine Realm, it was most suited for him, a martial skill tailored to his strengths.

Bang!

Thunderfire energy crashed down like an avalanche. A long piercing cry emitted from the deepest parts of the Nine Furnace Divine Palace. A giant blood diagram emerged from the ground to welcome the Penetrating Rainbow!

The thunder and fire dao diagrams fused together, crashing into the blood diagram.

The void shattered. The red pagoda deep within the Nine Furnace Divine Palace was broken in half, completely destroyed!

A demonic red-clothed man slowly departed from the ruins. This man had three eyes. The third eye between his eyebrows seemed wrapped in red crystal as if it weren't fully formed yet.

This person was Yang Yun. He was tranquil as he looked indifferently at Lin Ming; there was neither joy nor anger on his face.

"Yang Yun…"

Beside Lin Ming, as the other dozens of Divine Sea powerhouses saw Yang Yun appear, their eyes shrank. Even if they had Lin Ming commanding them, even if they had so many of them gathered together, now that they were truly coming face to face with Yang Yun, they felt their hearts shaking. This was the result of fame and momentum that had gathered over such a long period!

This was just like a mortal facing a fierce tiger. Even if there was a warrior on their side able to compete with the tiger, they would also find it difficult to remain calm. No one could guarantee that this brave warrior would be able to block the tiger whil also keeping them safe and sound.

Among them, only Lin Ming was calm and poised as he faced Yang Yun.

“Yang Yun, it’s been nearly four years since we’ve last crossed paths. Time flies by far too quickly.”

“Nearly four years? Haha! Haven’t you been hiding from me for these last four years? I do have to admire you though. Your strength has truly risen too quickly, and your battle spirit has also nearly reached the gold level. How else would you’ve been able to erase all my tracing marks in just several breaths of time?”

Yang Yun’s eyes shined with a cold light. Just as his cultivation method was reaching completion, Lin Ming had chosen that most critical time to disturb him, causing him to fail and even causing his soul to be damaged. He nearly fell into madness, and the Ancient Devil he had swallowed couldn’t be suppressed for a brief moment, causing it to regain consciousness. Because of that, he had nearly lost his own identity and mind.

How could Yang Yun not be furious!

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes as he gazed at Yang Yun, seeming as if he could see through him. He shook his head, “I’m still very far from possessing a gold battle spirit.”

A gold battle spirit and a silver battle spirit were fundamentally different.

A silver battle spirit was sharp and able to strengthen the attack of a martial artist. But it ultimately couldn’t directly impact the combat strength of a martial artist; it was like icing on the cake.

But a gold battle spirit was different. Once one had a gold battle spirit, their will would be so powerful that they could directly project their world of will into reality, affecting the real world.

“Lin Ming, you’re marvelous. You hid from me for years and yet you managed to choose the best time to challenge me. Destiny has truly gathered in your body. It seems that for these past four years, you’ve had another series of fortuitous encounters.”

Lin Ming slowly said, “My destiny is accumulated over time. Through victories, through escaping dangers, I have inscribed my will to win and valiant spirit into my bones. I did this without wetting myself with karma and also by resolving my fatality with the world. Naturally I’d have a great destiny on my body. However, your sins are far too heavy. You imprisoned your father and even killed your own great grandfather. Everything you’ve done will inevitably become shackles of fate that lock you down. Moreover, my so-called fortuitous encounters aren’t fortuitous encounters at all. They’re placed there for all who can obtain them to obtain them. For me to do is the result of my strength!”

Lin Ming raised the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and pointed the halberd blade towards Yang Yun’s head. The Death God Force Field and Asura Force Field invisibly spread outwards. As everyone was surrounded by this killing intent that was so thick it nearly condensed into reality, they couldn’t help but retreat to a safe distance.

A battle of this level already surpassed the limits of their strength.

Beneath Yang Yun’s steps, a crimson blood diagram appeared as he extracted a blood red sword from his spatial ring. With the blood diagram beneath his feet and a sword in his right hand, he swiped his left hand against the blade, leaving a line of blood. This was the greatest and most important battle of his life. It was time for him to fight with everything he had!

“Lin Ming, you truly deserve to be called the most outstanding talent the Sky Spill Continent has seen in the last 100,000 years. But even so, you’ll still lose to me.”

Yang Yun directed his sword at the world, his words containing a noble aura that looked down at all others with contempt. He was like the king of the heavens and earth.

However, Lin Ming only laughed as he heard Yang Yun’s words.

Yang Yun’s complexion turned a tad colder. “What are you laughing at?”

“Of course I’m laughing at you. You’ve been injured and were even forced to use an arcane ability to suppress your wounds. You even had to smear your blood essence onto your blade. To use the strength of your blood essence will cost you your lifespan. You’ve actually injured yourself just to put on such an act. You appear as if you're filled with confidence, but all you are is a bragging faker."

Lin Ming's voice was light as if he were casually conversing. But as his words fell upon Yang Yun's ears, Yang Yun felt his heart shake.

This damned brat, how did he see I was injured!

Using the Great Blood Refining Art, Yang Yun had sacrificed 300 years of his life in order to suppress his injuries. This couldn't be seen on the surface, but Lin Ming had somehow managed to see through everything. How could he not be shocked by this? It felt as if everything he did was within Lin Ming's control. How was this possible?

"Could he have calculated the time I would be wounded after he erased my battle spirit marks? Or does he have some divination high master assisting him from behind? No, that's impossible!"

Lin Ming's sudden words could be called a psychological attack. Even though Yang Yun tried not to show his emotions, he was actually tricked by Lin Ming's words, causing the unwavering belief he had in emerging victorious to slightly shake.

Just as a brief gap appeared in Yang Yun's thoughts, Lin Ming suddenly rushed forwards. Behind him, a blood red Prime Emperor Lotus Flower bloomed. Grandmist space came shrouding down from the skies with irresistible force!

In this life or death battle, Lin Ming naturally wouldn't care about showing a gentleman's fairness or honesty. Killing Yang Yun was the only goal!

"Humph! So you wanted to use your words to affect my mentality and ambush me! Your plan is calculated quite well, but this only proves that you do not have full assurance to defeat me! Blood array diagram, explode!"

Yang Yun waved his hands and the blood array diagram underneath his feet shot towards Lin Ming. As it neared him, it suddenly detonated!

Lin Ming smashed the Great Desolate blood Halberd onto the array diagram, causing his offensive rush to be slowed.

After Lin Ming took the initiative, Yang Yun was only able to sacrifice his blood array diagram to delay his attack. “Lin Ming, I’ll let you experience the glorious majesty of the Great Blood Refining Art! The Great Blood Refining Art can refine all bloodlines in the world. As long as you possess a body of flesh and blood, you will be restrained by my supernatural powers!”

“Six paths of samsara, eight ranks of demigods, blood pond of hell, refine!”

Yang Yun was covered by a blood red light that soared to the heavens. His long red hair crazily flew into the air. Behind him, a blood red scroll appeared. On it were drawn images of countless lives, and every single life was in immeasurable pain. The great ten torture methods of the world were there; shearing the nose, gouging the eyes, hot pillar, fried by oil, death by dismemberment, and the others. Not only that, but there were also the 18 hells. The black rope hell, tongue slitting hell, inferno hell, iceberg hell, and so on.

Every pain imaginable was represented within the picture scroll. Seas of blood reached the skies and waves of blood tumbled about. One only needed to look at this picture scroll to feel an incomparable constraint in their hearts. If one had to completely concentrate on this picture scroll, they would even turn mad.

Even though the 50 some Divine Sea masters were dozens of miles away, they simply didn’t have the momentum to frontally face this picture scroll. Even so, they could feel the blood within their bodies heat up, boiling, as if all the blood within their body was being called away from them with an irresistible force. Their heartbeats quickened until it seemed as if it would burst out from their chests at any moment.

“What a strange supernatural power! It can summon the power of blood from within a person’s body. If someone were to be wrapped in this scroll, they would probably be reduced to a puddle of blood in no time at all!”

“The Great Blood Refining Art is truly worthy of its reputation. It can even directly refine life!”

These Divine Sea powerhouses were all experienced individuals. They only needed to look upon the aura of the picture scroll to sense how powerful it was.

However, Lin Ming stood there, his arms crossed behind his back. Placed within the Divine Realm, the Great Blood Refining Art could only be considered a decent supernatural ability; it wasn’t anything too extraordinary. Most importantly, Yang Yun hadn’t been able to cultivate it to completion yet.

Chapter 941 – Insight Into Weakness

Chapter 941 – Insight Into Weakness

…

…

…

“Blood refining diagram, catch him!”

Yang Yun pointed his hand at Lin Ming, and the blood refining diagram expanded, becoming like an endless world capable of containing infinite life. It exuded a terrifying swallowing force, wanting to directly devour Lin Ming.

The blood refining diagram surged and the entire world shook. A tyrannical, cruel, and painful aura scattered outwards from the blood diagram scroll, turning into thoughts. These thoughts were hidden in the blood refining diagram, turning into agonizing beliefs that gathered together as one, finally turning into a blood red flow of energy that fell down on Lin Ming.

This ability of the Great Blood Refining Art attacked both the physical body and the divine soul. For a moment, a chilling wind blew through the world; the heavens and earth were dyed a deep red from the potent blood energy!

The 50 some Divine Sea powerhouses rapidly retreated as they saw this. Lin Ming grasped the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, his eyes flashing with a sharp light. From just this move alone, he could see that Yang Yun had reached 99% completion in the Great Blood Refining Art. The blood refining diagram was formed; all he had to do was fuse it into his body.

Although this was only a single step, the difference between the two was like the clouds and mud. In the end, the Great Blood Refining Art was a Divine Realm cultivation method only useful up to the Divine Transformation realm; it was comparable to the Great Desolate Halberd Art in fierceness. After Lin Ming experienced so many top level martial arts techniques, he simply didn't place the Great Blood Refining Art in his eyes.

"Purple Lion Thunder Source, break it for me!"

Lin Ming's thoughts touched upon the Heretical God Sprout. The Purple Lion Thunder Source came roaring out, crazily dashing forwards!

At the same time, Lin Ming traced his spatial ring and a purple thunder spear leapt into his hands; this was a weapon that Jiang Ziji had left behind in the Extreme Violet Ring. Using this spear with thunder-attribute cultivation methods would have a far more marvelous effect than using the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. Lin Ming lifted the purple thunder spear, fusing it with the Purple Lion Thunder Source.

The power of thunder was the natural nemesis of ghosts and blood energy. Using it to resist the blood refining diagram was the most suitable action.

The Purple Lion Thunder Source and the thunder spear combined into one, immediately transforming into a 10,000 foot long thunder lion. The thunder lion emitted an earthshaking roar as it shot towards the ten mile radius blood refining diagram.

Yang Yun's eyes flashed with a severe light. "That is the power of a Thunder Source! A mere Life Destruction martial artist like you was actually able to control a Thunder Source, the origin of thunder!"

"Your destiny is simply monstrous and overwhelming! However, did you think you can rely on just the power of this Thunder Source to resist my Great Blood Refining Art? You're far too naïve! My Great Blood Refining Art is a cultivation method that touches upon the Blood Source Laws! It represents the peak of the Concept of Blood! After using it, it'll form a blood domain, creating a self-contained space where it can dominate the rules of the world. How can it possibly be broken by your Thunder Source? I'll now swallow your Thunder Source and take it as my own, using that power of thunder to temper my blood diagram!"

Yang Yun roared, and the 10,000 feet long purple lion was completely surrounded by the blood diagram! The thunder lion roared, but the area around it still turned a ghostly red. The blood domain was the creation of a separate space. Compared to Lin Ming's grandmist space it was like the faint glow of the stars against a bright full moon. But Yang Yun's cultivation was still at the peak of the early Divine Sea, just a step away from entering the middle Divine Sea realm. When he displayed this blood domain, it was able to cast over the clouds and block out the sun, bringing with it an immense power!

The blood domain wanted to suck up the Purple Lion Thunder Source's power and completely refine it. Thunder was the power of death, but also the power of life. If it were correctly applied, it could truly be used to temper the flesh and blood. If yang Yun could integrate the Purple Lion Thunder Source into his own blood refining diagram, he would be able to strengthen the power of blood and enhance the diagram's power.

As the Purple Lion Thunder Source was covered in the blood domain, it frantically moved left and right, but it still couldn't break free.

At this moment, Lin Ming laughed. "Peak of the Concept of Blood? When the word 'peak' comes from your lips, it really is cheap. This is nothing more than a second rate cultivation method, moreover you haven't even completed it yet. Let me show you just how I'll break it!"

Lin Ming shouted out and energy erupted from within the Heretical God Sprout. The first four of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates opened and as the Mystic Lightning Shade activated around his body, Lin Ming's speed instantly rose the limit.

As Lin Ming stepped on Golden Roc Shattering the Void, he instantly vanished. He passed through space and appeared right in front of the blood domain. His white clothes were like snow, flapping in the strong winds. After reaching the fifth stage of Life Destruction and engraving the dao diagrams into his Revolving Core, his aura was completely different from the past. His strength had risen to a new, higher level.

"Chasing Thunder!"

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light. His halberd thrust outwards, and a several hundred foot thick halberd light shot out, twined with endless red lightning. The halberd light followed the blood domain's energy fluctuations to the strongest point.

Peng!

With a shattering sound, this point was directly broken by Lin Ming. However, he didn't stop there. In just a thousandth of a second, he attacked a total of twelve times!

These twelve attacks smashed into the strongest points of the blood domain, breaking them. As they combined together, it actually created a resonating crack in the domain.

Ka ka ka ka!

With the sound of breaking glass, the blood domain, with these twelve spots as the focal points, completely shattered. A massive power of blood poured out from the crack, causing the nearby space to be riddled with holes. As for that blood refining diagram that gathered the blood of countless tortured lives, it was also torn apart. The blood refining diagram seemed to contain a life of its own. After it was torn apart, a vast amount of blood flowed out from it, like a collapsed dam!

"What!? You broke through my blood domain!?"

Yang Yun's eyes went fully round, his expression filled with incredulity and madness.

The blood refining diagram had been torn apart by Lin Ming, and even the blood domain had disintegrated!

The blood domain was connected to Yang Yun's own life essence. Although it could be reformed after shattering, it'd injure his fire of life, costing him at least several months of diligent training to recover. In particular, Yang Yun was now wounded and had to use an arcane technique to suppress his injuries at a cost of several hundred years of his life. He simply couldn't afford to be injured any more.

Most importantly, Lin Ming didn't use absolute strength to tear through the blood refining diagram. It was impossible for his strength to reach that degree. The only possibility was that Lin Ming completely understood the weaknesses of the blood domain. In that barrage of twelve attacks that had taken a thousandth of a second, he had attacked the twelve strongest points of the blood domain, crushing them to nothing. When the blood domain lost support of its energy backbone, it simply collapsed!

"How can this be? How is this possible!?"

Yang Yun refused to accept this! He absolutely refused! This supernatural power of his had been assiduously cultivated for several years. In order to accomplish this, he accepted the universal hatred of the world and slaughtered a massive amount of vicious beasts, even slaying variation bloodline powerhouses to use them as sacrifices. But even with all he had done, the result was that Lin Ming instantly saw through all weaknesses!

If the Great Blood Refining Art reached perfection, this weakness wouldn't exist. But Yang Yun hadn't managed to complete the Great Blood Refining Art yet. Even so, it was impossible for someone to break it apart in such a short period of time. This simply surpassed any sort of common sense!

It was like Lin Ming had personally cultivated the Great Blood Refining Art and also clearly understood all of its energy structures.

"Could it be..."

A thought suddenly cut through Yang Yun's mind. The only possible explanation was that Lin Ming had swallowed up the other two-thirds of the Ancient Devil's soul. Only like this would Lin Ming have been able to see the weaknesses of the Great Blood Refining Art and break through it. It was because he already knew all of it to begin with!

"The Ancient Devil tried to seize your body, but you swallowed its soul instead!?" Yang Yun's eyes shined with pure shock. "With your mere Life Destruction cultivation, you swallowed that soul fragment without wiping out the Ancient Devil's spirit mark? You're a madman!"

Yang Yun had swallowed the Ancient Devil's soul because he was forced into a dead end. The Ancient Devil was residing in his spiritual sea to make use of him. If Yang Yun hadn't taken action, it was highly possible that the Ancient Devil would've swallowed him instead. He also needed the Ancient Devil's memories. But as for Lin Ming, he had such a great destiny on his body and yet he took the near suicidal danger of swallowing the Ancient Devil's soul fragment and losing his personality? Was he insane?

In that split-second, Yang Yun didn't have time to further deliberate as to what happened. Lin Ming was already rushing towards him!

Lin Ming was cold and expressionless. He indifferently said, "Yang Yun, what a coincidence, I too have a domain ability. Let me show you what a true domain is, and what it means to represent the peak of Laws!"

Behind Lin Ming, an enchanting red lotus slowly bloomed. This was the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower. As the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower appeared, it seemed as if it could cover the entire sky. The entire area within a range of 10 miles was covered in an endlessly chaotic energy, isolating all Laws and all energies.

Heavenly Demon Force Field – grandmist space!

Lin Ming's grandmist space was countless times more profound than the blood domain. Even though he was only driving it with his fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation, it was still far more terrifying than the blood domain!

"Good! Well done Lin Ming! In order to restrict me and understand my weaknesses, you ignored the danger of losing yourself to swallow the Ancient Devil's soul. I never imagined that you would do something like that. I was wondering just how you managed to see that I was suppressing my injuries with an arcane technique and also how you managed to easily break through the Spectral Blood Skylock Array that I laid down at the Sky Fortune

Kingdom. It seems that even if you don't practice my cultivation methods or array formations, you still have a deep understanding into all of them!"

Lin Ming disdainfully said, "Yang Yun, you really think too much of yourself. I've never seen you as my rival, only as a grinding stone that could help me grow. There is no way that I would do something that affects my future achievements just to defeat you. Grandmist space, cover him!"

Yang Yun was covered in the grandmist space. The energy essence within his body, his flesh and blood, his soul, everything instantly came under the tremendous pressure of the grandmist space. If he didn't revolve his bodily protective true essence to resist it, he would turn to ash in the next moment.

Yang Yun coldly sneered, "Primordius martial intent! Humph! Whitedemon was right – you've really managed to comprehend the Primordius martial intent. However, what a pity. The Primordius martial intent needs someone at the Empyrean level or at least at the World King level in order to display its truly terrifying power. As for you, you're only able to display a millionth of the Primordius martial intent's power. Do you think that the higher level a cultivation method is, the mightier it is? If you cannot display its full power then it's useless no matter how high ranked an ability it is! My Great Blood Refining Art is different from what you know, it's a cultivation method that completely suits my current boundary! Since you swallowed the Ancient Devil's memories, you should also be aware that within the Great blood Refining Art, there is an all-out desperation ability. You have forced me to use it!"

The Great Blood Refining Art refined the blood essence of myriad creatures to fuse into the body. The blood refining diagram that Yang Yun used was formed from the blood essence of myriad creatures. This power came from the blood essence of myriad creatures and wasn't the strongest ability of the Great Blood Refining Art. The strongest aspect of the Great Blood Refining Art lay in the martial artist themselves.

In other words, that was for a martial artist to combust the power of their own flesh and blood to fight.

Chapter 942 – Coiling Martial Divine Furnace

Chapter 942 – Coiling Martial Divine Furnace

…

…

…

Yang Yun's expression was fierce. After fusing with the Ancient Devil's soul, he was no longer the temperate and chivalrous person he once was. He had truly become demonic.

A bass roar rang out and he stabbed his finger out. He aimed between his eyebrows and thrust downwards!

Between Yang Yun's eyebrows was his third eye, the Blood Law Eye. But now, Yang Yun had actually crushed this eyeball apart with his finger!

Peng!

The Blood Law Eye that was wrapped in a crystalline layer suddenly burst apart. A faint trace of blood essence swelled forth, flowing dark crimson.

To pierce through one's own eye required a ruthless resolve. Yang Yun's face twisted as his aura suddenly soared upwards.

After the Blood Law Eye was broken, the blood essence energy that dissipated from it was completely swallowed into Yang Yun's mouth. His body began to change, becoming larger and thicker. Dragon-like muscles wrapped around his body. From his back, red tentacles burst out, freely waving about. His skeleton and muscles were died with a bright blood red light as the red tentacles extended thousands of feet into the sky before they completely sunk into his body.

Yang Yun's cultivation had infinitely approached the middle Divine Sea realm. It could even be said that he had managed to step into that realm for a brief period of time.

He had to destroy the Blood Law Eye and deplete the supernatural powers that he had arduously cultivated for so many years. Only then could he completely erupt with the energy of the Great Blood Refining Art, causing his Great Blood Refining Art to forcefully enter completion!

If Yang Yun had cultivated the Great Blood Refining Art to the highest level he wouldn't have been forced to this step. But he was severely wounded and was suppressing the injuries with an arcane technique. He now also knew that Lin Ming thoroughly comprehended all of his weaknesses. Moreover, he was covered in this grandmist space. Whether it was time, terrain, or individually, Yang Yun was in the worst state possible. If he didn't fight Lin Ming with every ounce of strength he had, he really would perish here.

"I destroyed my own Blood Law Eye, ruining three years of my hard work just so I can have the power of blood in my body reach the limit. But if I can kill you, everything I've done will be worth it!

To kill Lin Ming and obtain his secrets was Yang Yun's only chance of ascending and breaking past the Divine Sea, then the Divine Transformation, and then becoming an overlord of the Divine realm. Yang Yun's talent by itself was nothing when placed within the endless universe. There were countless people like him, more people than there were grains of sand in the desert. And yet, they all died on their road of martial arts. To them, reaching the peak of martial arts was only a dream.

Yang Yun violently bit down on his tongue and spat out a mouthful of blood. This blood turned into a blood rain that sprinkled down.

The sky filled with the blood rain. Ghostly wails filled the air, as if a trillion ghosts were weeping through the heavens and earth.

"Slaughter Demon Blood Rain! That's a vicious and cruel martial skill within the Great Blood Refining Art. To use this move, you have to burn away your own blood essence and life force, costing a hundred years of lifespan!"

Lin Ming's mind flashed. He knew every single one of Yang Yun's tricks from start to finish. Life was extremely precious to a martial artist; they would only use an ability that cost life at their most desperate moments. And now, Yang Yun was using such a martial skill to bet everything he had against Lin Ming.

Every drop of the blood rain contained a primordial soul; this was from the countless beings that Yang Yun had killed to practice his Great Blood Refining Art and it contained endless resentment. If this blood rain were able to invade the divine soul it would make a person go crazy, falling into insanity until they died.

The blood rain fell like a torrential storm, recklessly pouring into the grandmist space.

The grandmist space annihilated all energy and annihilated the Laws of all existences. This naturally included blood.

With a sparking sound, drops of blood were burned away as the endless resentment was destroyed, vanishing into nihility! However, the grandmist space wasn't invincible. To keep up its annihilating strength also consumed Lin Ming's energy.

As Yang Yun saw large traces of his blood rain being swallowed up, he didn't feel pained at all. He bit on his tongue once more and spat out three more masses of blood. These three masses of blood were each 100 years of his life. Combined with the previous mouthful of blood, Yang Yun had instantly burned away 400 years of his life.

More and more blood rain appeared, flooding downwards, it's momentum increasing every second. Finally, it became like a waterfall of blood pouring down from the heavens!

As the blood rain poured down on the grandmist space, the grandmist space began to contract, shrinking more and more. As for Lin Ming, he felt energy rapidly depleting from his body!

The grandmist space was powerful, but its consumption of energy was also equally terrifying. If it weren't Lin Ming and instead a normal martial artist, let alone massacring Divine Sea powerhouses, merely attempting to activate the grandmist space would suck their body dry of energy.

As the grandmist space was suppressed, Yang Yun felt his own strength returning to him, flooding back into him like a returning tide. At this time, after displaying arcane techniques without caring about the cost, he had finally restored his combat strength to the strongest point it had been so far.

"Hahaha! This is my greatest strength! Now, I'll show you just how strong I am! If it weren't for your villainous plot ruining my Great Blood Refining Art from reaching completion, I would've fought with you in such a condition in just a few months! But now, I've spent a total of 1000 years of life in order to reach this state!"

A middle Divine Sea martial artist was far different from the Life Destruction martial artist; they would have 4000-7000 years of life. But when Yang Yun was young, in order to rapidly increase his strength, he had used secret demonic arcane skills under the supervision of the Ancient Devil, costing him 2000 years of his life. Now he spent another 1000 years of his life in a single go. His fires of life already begun diminishing; it was equal to him reaching middle age. If he couldn't kill Lin Ming and find some way to restore his life force, his potential would gradually fade away and he would never be able to make another breakthrough in his cultivation.

It could be said that Yang Yun had burned away every path to retreat.

Yang Yun revolved his energy to the limits, erupting with the strength of a middle Divine Sea martial artist as he slashed out with his sword. With his eighth stage Life Destruction as a foundation in addition to all the resources of the Ancient Devils as well as the Divine Realm cultivation methods he had practiced, it was incomparable to what a martial artist from the Sky Spill Continent could accomplish. He was even slightly superior to the Eightfall Thunder Emperor from tens of thousands of years ago.

Now with an attack that contained his complete strength, the heavens and earth seemed to lose their luster. Wind and clouds vanished and endless blood ponds from an Asura hell seemed to appear in the world.

Facing this strike, Lin Ming shouted out, “Yang Yun, even if you burn away all of your life, all you have studied is a second-rate cultivation method from the Divine Realm, even if you overturned the heavens just how much strength can you display? As for me, I have two different transcendent divine mights, I cultivate dual body and essence, and I also possess a grandmist battle spirit! My background, my Concepts, my will, everything I have is far from what the likes of you can compare with. You doing everything you can to defeat me only causes my blood to boil in excitement!”

“Burn for me, blood of the Ancient Phoenix!”

A brilliant flaming red light burst out from between Lin Ming’s eyebrows, burning the heavens and earth! Behind him, the phantom of an Ancient Phoenix appeared and soared straight into the skies!

Lin Ming grasped the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and thrust out. Even the slaughter blood energy on the halberd was burnt away!

Bang!

With an earthshaking explosion, Yang Yun’s sword light was shattered by the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. But at this time, Yang Yun extracted a three-legged furnace from his spatial ring. This furnace was engraved with countless images, and among these images were an azure dragon, vermillion bird, white tiger, and black turtle. These were the four different great Saint Beasts. This ancient furnace was stained with blood as if it had passed through countless years!

As Lin Ming saw this divine furnace, he didn’t recall anything about it. But the surrounding 50 some Divine Sea powerhouses all changed complexions.

“That is the Coiling Martial Divine Furnace! The number one divine weapon of the Sky Spill Continent!”

“Yes, that is indeed the Coiling Martial Divine Furnace, the saint artifact used to stabilize the destiny of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. It’s quality even surpasses the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and the complete Demon Emperor Armor. It was originally in Yang Laotian’s possession, but since he died, the Coiling Martial Divine Furnace naturally fell into Yang Yun’s hands.”

“I’ve heard rumors that this saint artifact weights 2.16 million jins. This is my first time seeing it. It’s more accurate to say that this divine furnace hasn’t appeared in the world for the last 5000 years. There has never been an event dire enough for the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom to bring it out.”

As the Coiling Martial Divine Furnace appeared, Yang Yun used the power of blood to wrap around the furnace and bring it smashing down at Lin Ming!

At 2.16 million jins, this furnace was nearly four times the weight of the great Desolate Blood Halberd. And because it was refined by Yang Yun, he was able to freely control it with his thoughts and without the need to expend too much energy. This attack was similar to an ancient meteor crashing into the world. If an ordinary Divine Sea master were to be struck, their physical bodies would instantly turn to ash!

Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. He completely opened the four of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. After opening the four gates, his strength was still only at 2 million jins; it was simply not enough to counter the Coiling Martial Divine Furnace.

But he still had his true essence as well as his battle spirit.

“Grandmist battle spirit, fuse!”

The silver gray spear-shaped battle spirit shot forth from his spiritual sea and combined with the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. Lin Ming roared out, lifted his hand and threw the Great Desolate Blood Halberd!

Rumble, rumble, rumble!

As the blood halberd flew, space trembled, like 10,000 thunderclaps exploding together.

On one side was the 2.16 million jin divine furnace and other the other side was the 800,000 jin Great Desolate Blood Halberd. With both weapons flying at velocities that surpassed the speed of sound, just how terrifying would the collision be?

Dang!

The blood halberd smashed into the divine furnace. The sound of deafening thunder and drums filled the air, as space collapsed several miles around.

The Coiling Martial Divine Furnace suddenly trembled as it was bounced away. But the Great Desolate Blood Halberd also ricocheted backwards. One could see that a deep dent had appeared on the surface of the Coiling Martial Divine Furnace. This had clearly been left by the Great Desolate Blood Halberd!

As for the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, it wasn't damaged too much. This was the power of a battle spirit. With the grandmist battle spirit supporting the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, it could be called indestructible!

"The Coiling Martial Divine Furnace was damaged!?"

"To use the 800,000 jin Great Desolate Blood Halberd to resist the 2.16 million jin Coiling Martial Divine Furnace, the one that was actually damaged was the Coiling Martial Divine Furnace!?"

As everyone saw this deep dent, they felt as though they were dreaming. This was unbelievable. The number one saint artifact of the Sky Spill Continent, the founding treasure of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, the divine treasure that stabilized the destiny of the nation, such a weapon was actually damaged? Just how terrifying had the impact been?

In that split second, no one was able to respond properly. After Yang Yun threw out the Coiling Martial Divine Furnace, he didn't bother with it any further. He grasped his blood sword and flashed in front of Lin Ming, his sword blade snapping forth like a biting viper as it shot towards Lin Ming's throat.

This sword pierced through the void, its speed reaching the extreme. Lin Ming coldly sneered and retreated backwards. With a flick of his right hand, a milky white thunder ball appeared above his palm.

This was the divine thunder that Lin Ming had picked up from the 100 mile Thunder Dominion.

Chapter 943 – Heaven Punishment Divine Thunder

Chapter 943 – Heaven Punishment Divine Thunder

…

…

…

Yang Yun had never been planning on using the Coiling Martial Divine Furnace to grievously wound Lin Ming. It would've been enough as long as he could use it to catch a glimmer of an opportunity.

Although Yang Yun originated from the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, what he truly excelled at was the demonic cultivation methods obtained from the Ancient Devil. To Yang Yun, the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's cultivation methods were far inferior in power to those of the Ancient Devil. The demonic cultivation methods that Yang Yun studied were not too useful in maximizing the movement and strength of the Coiling Martial Divine Furnace. Instead, what he specialized in was the demon blood sword in his hand that was refined from the Divine Realm's devil arts.

In just the blink of an eye, Yang Yun stabbed out a thousand times!

These one thousand sword strikes each seemed as if they cut through space and time. In that moment, endless waves of blood filled the sky. One thousand crimson beams of light cut through the horizon like an army of blood dragons!

The mountain range in a radius of 100 miles, as well as the array formations of the Nine Furnace Divine palace and everywhere else were completely sliced apart by the sword strikes, reduced to smithereens!

Although Fairy Snow Gale and the others had begun evacuating the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's disciples, there was still a massive number of Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's disciples that died a horrible death under the terrifying sword lights! Even some weaker Divine Sea powerhouses had their protective true essence sliced apart by the sword light, causing their blood to tumble and surge in their bodies.

As everyone saw this, they had no choice but to rapidly withdraw. Their minds filled with shock and alarm. The Nine Furnace Divine Palace's strongest array formation was the grand protective array, but there were also numerous array formations within. And now, the majority of them were split apart by Yang Yun. Aside from some specialized protective array formations within the palace, nearly everything had been turned to fine powder.

One thousand sword strikes blocked all paths for Lin Ming to dodge. They pointed inwards and thrust towards him!

"I know that you have some strange movement technique that has Space Laws fused in, nearly allowing you to teleport and giving you unparalleled speed. But my thousand swords can cut apart the power of space. Without the power of space under your control, I want to see how you'll step your way out of there!"

Yang Yun rabidly shouted out. Lin Ming had already thrown away the Great Desolate Blood Halberd. He didn't choose to retrieve it, instead taking two spears from the Extreme Violet Ring, one red and one purple. The red spear was the service weapon he obtained from Timeworn Phoenix City. Although the rank wasn't too high, it was a solid weapon. As for the purple spear, that was the weapon of the Electric Violet Kirin Clan, part of Jiang Ziji's collection.

Lin Ming grabbed the two spears. Behind him, a red and a purple dao diagram appeared. Highly compressed thunder and fire energy violently surged out from the Heretical God Sprout!

“Penetrating Rainbow!”

Thunder and fire twisted together. All sound between the heavens and earth was swallowed up. The glory of this thunderfire welcomed the one thousand sword lights.

An intense collision occurred. Thousands of massive fissures appeared in the ground, each of them hundreds or even thousands of feet long.

After the range of the grandmist space was suppressed by the slaughter demon blood rain, the power of Yang Yun’s cultivation method was actually overshadowed by Lin Ming’s.

Nearly all of the sword lights shattered. But the remnants began to slice through Lin Ming’s curtain of thunderfire, falling down onto him.

At this moment, several gentle glowing balls of light appeared. They were white, purple, gold, and other colors; some as large as a walnut, and some as large as a fist. Underneath the camouflage of the endless curtain of thunderfire, they silently maneuvered through the sword lights and appeared in front of Yang Yun.

“Mm? What’s this?”

Yang Yun was startled. These balls of light in front of him had their energies restrained, he couldn’t feel how powerful they were. But if they were able to break through the net of his sword light and arrive in front of him, they certainly weren’t ordinary. Moreover, in Yang Yun’s eyes, Lin Ming was an extremely tricking and cunning young man. There was no way he would use any useless supernatural abilities.

Without even thinking about it, Yang Yun drew back. He didn’t want to touch these seven balls of light.

However, as Yang Yun was retreating, the seven balls of light struck together!

Even the massive explosion of light from Penetrating Rainbow striking the sword lights was swallowed up. In the surrounding space, everything turned utterly black, making it impossible to even see your own fingers. All light was completely swallowed up without anything remaining. A purple light flickered. A purple sun suddenly appeared in the world. Every single ray of divine light that this purple sun emitted were like heavenly swords that were thousands of miles long, piercing through the world!

These balls of light were the divine thunder that Lin Ming obtained from the 1000 mile Thunder Dominion in the skies above the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. The 100 mile Thunder Dominion was a true absolute life forbidden zone. Even after Lin Ming had broken into the fifth stage of Life Destruction and swallowed up the Purple Lion Thunder Source, and even with his thunder spirit body and even with the support of the Heretical God Sprout, there was just no way for him to truly enter the 100 mile Thunder Dominion. The lightning and magnetic god trees there could easily reduce him to ashes.

The entire 100 mile Thunder Dominion was a massive array formation laid down by an Empyrean level character from the Divine Realm and used to seal away an ancient existence that seemed to be a God Beast. The reason there was infinite thunder in the skies above the 8000 mile Black Swamp, and the reason the Sea of Miracles was called the Ocean of Endless Storms, was because of this massive thunder-attribute array formation!

As for these thunderballs, they were obtained from that thunder-attribute array formation. Even if the power of that entire array formation was nothing more than a drop in the ocean, it was still the power of an Empyrean level character. The might of these thunderballs was boundless.

As that purple sun erupted, the entire world shivered. It was like the planet that the Sky Spill Continent was on wasn’t able to withstand such a divine might.

“You! How’s this possible!? This. This. This is Empyrean Thunder Punishment’s heaven punishment divine thunder! How could you possibly have obtained this strength!?”

Yang Yun shouted out in panic. 100,000 years ago, in that great divine war, Empyrean Thunder Punishment had been one of the participants and also an opponent of Empyrean Primordius. The Ancient Devil had been part of the army that stood on Empyrean Thunder Punishment's side, he was naturally clear as to what power Empyrean Thunder Punishment held.

Of course, compared to an existence on the level of Empyrean Thunder Punishment, the Ancient Devil was only a tiny ant. But he had once clearly seen the heaven punishment divine thunder that blanketed the entire world. In his life, how could he ever forget such an apocalyptic scene?

Yang Yun had swallowed the Ancient Devil's soul so he naturally remembered what the true power of the heaven punishment divine thunder was like. Even the tiniest insignificant speck of heaven punishment divine thunder would have an incomparably terrifying explosive power. The current Yang Yun was far weaker than the Ancient Devil of the past.

Facing this terrifying thunder light, the layers upon layers of blood fog that Yang Yun used to protect himself was burned away to nothingness. He even felt as if his own fires of life were pierced by the thunder light.

Puff!

Yang Yun violently vomited a mouthful of blood, his injuries worsening. Although he managed to avoid 70% of the heaven punishment divine thunder's strength, he was still injured by the remaining explosive shockwaves of the heaven punishment divine thunder detonating.

"You obtained heaven punishment divine thunder from the Sea of Miracles!? That's impossible! Although there really is a massive amount of heaven punishment divine thunder in the skies above the Sea of Miracles, it's impossible for the likes of you to control it. How could you possible control this strength!?"

Yang Yun found this impossible to accept. He had inherited the Ancient Devil's memories, he was well aware of the situation above the skies in the Sea of Miracles.

But no matter how much heaven punishment divine thunder there was, no matter how many magnetic god trees there were, or even if there were several thousand dragon trapping cables there, it was impossible for him to ever take any of these treasures. He would be exterminated by the divine thunder.

But now, this strength was controlled by Lin Ming. And Lin Ming's boundary was even lower than his own!

"I already said that I have more than one transcendent divine might. My second transcendent divine might can control the power of thunder and fire. You can die in peace now!"

Lin Ming's voice directly reached Yang Yun's ears. He didn't fear telling Yang Yun this, because in his eyes, Yang Yun was already a dead man standing. He took advantage of the moment when Yang Yun was severely wounded to start his attack, and he even used the power of the heaven punishment divine thunder. Moreover, Lin Ming had a complete understanding into all of Yang Yun's weaknesses.

In this situation, how could Yang Yun ever escape Lin Ming?

"Heavenly Demon martial intent, exterminate!"

Lin Ming cried out, revolving his true essence to the limit. The Prime Emperor Lotus Flower began to bloom behind him once again. The lotus petals rose like liquid flames. The grandmist space expanded out once again!

Without the suppression of the slaughter demon blood rain, Lin Ming was able to display the full strength of the grandmist space. If Yang Yun wanted to resist Lin Ming's grandmist space again, he would have to expend several hundred more years of his life. Even if Yang Yun had a eighth stage Life Destruction Divine Sea realm cultivation, he didn't have the capital to burn away so much of his life, otherwise he would flicker out like a lamp without oil!

Bang!

Yang Yun was enveloped in the grandmist space. His strength, his true essence, everything began to rapidly melt and diminish due to the power of chaos. With a hissing sound, 30% of Yang Yun's protective true essence was already consumed, and his energy was quickly weakening.

"Primordius martial intent, heaven punishment divine thunder, you actually managed to obtain the strength of two Empyreans at the same time. I refuse this! I am unwilling!" Yang Yun cried out. He bit on his tongue once again, causing a rain of blood to fall down!

"Slaughter demon blood rain!"

Yang Yun's eyes had already turned blood red! It had to be known that Yang Yun's fires of life had already reached the point of decline. He had even been severely wounded and was only able to suppress it with an arcane technique. Even so, he had no choice but to use the slaughter demon blood rain once more. He overdrew his life, seeming as if he would die at any moment!

Ho!

Endless blood clouds formed in the skies and a rain of blood flooded the world. The slaughter demon blood rain suppressed the grandmist space once again. However, Lin Ming only coldly smiled. "Yang Yun, a middle Divine Sea powerhouse only has 4000-7000 years of life. Your cultivation had approached the middle Divine Sea realm, and your background is also extremely deep, so you should have been able to live for more than 4000 years, perhaps even 5000 years. But now you have freely wasted away your life force and weakened your fires of life, cutting off your martial arts potential. You should know that when a martial artist is young, that is when their martial arts progress is the fastest and usually when they make any progress at all. Once they reach middle age or old age, their cultivation begins to decline, not to mention making any further breakthroughs. Even if you somehow manage to escape this battle, it's no longer possible for you to break through into the Divine Transformation. You're destined to die within the Divine Sea realm!"

Lin Ming's words stabbed at Yang Yun's heart, antagonizing him. Yang Yun had great ambitions. He dreamed of cultivating to a Divine Realm World King, Empyrean, and even reach the peak of all martial arts.

However, his talent was ordinary. Although he had lucky chances, his lucky chances couldn't compare to martial artists that had truly great lucky chances. By consuming so much of his life, it would cause his potential to come under massive influence. This was a sore spot in his heart. And Lin Ming repeatedly poked at this sore spot, causing him to turn unhinged with rage.

"Cut the shit! Why would I escape!? I'll kill you and claw out every secret and lucky chance from your body! Even if I have consumed some of my potential, I'll still be able to make up for it!" As Yang Yun spoke, his eyes flashed with a bloody light. He looked ferocious like a rabid beast.

As Lin Ming saw the light in Yang Yun's eyes, a thought popped up in his mind. "I finally understand. I thought it was strange. From the very start I was able to sense the Ancient Devil's aura from your body. But it seems as if that Ancient Devil no longer exists in your body, and you understand what happened 100,000 years ago all too well, as if you were the Ancient Devil himself. I know what happened now. You fused together with that Ancient Devil's soul, losing yourself in the process!"

"You have lost the prudence and wisdom you once had. Today, you are destined to die!"

Chapter 944 – Yang Yun's Death

Chapter 944 – Yang Yun's Death

…

…

…

Lin Ming's sharp words stabbed Yang Yun again and again, every new word more excruciating than the last. It was pain that pierced into his marrow!

When Lin Ming said that Yang Yun had fused with the Ancient Devil's soul and lost himself, that was the same as saying that Yang Yun had died. It was the same as saying that Yang Yun's body was actually being occupied by someone else!

Hearing these words, how could Yang Yun not become crazy. His eyes were blood red as he roared, "Shut up! I am me! I am Yang Yun! Lin Ming, stop trying to use your words to shake my spirit! You're wasting your time!"

"Haha, are you feeling guilty? Are you feeling afraid? If you really believe your words, then why would you feel this? No matter what I say, the real Yang Yun would've remained serene without any change in his composure. But as for you, you've already fallen into a violent rage and turned crazy. This is because you're no longer Yang Yun!"

"In today's battle I already discovered that your personality has completely changed. You've become demented, easy to anger, hysterical at all things. The Yang Yun in my mind reveals neither happiness nor anger and his mind is unfathomable, not allowing anyone to guess what's on his mind. You're not Yang Yun, but the result of the fusion of Yang Yun and the Ancient Devil. The real Yang Yun has already died, don't you know that? He died the moment that he chose to fuse with the Ancient devil! As for you, who is standing in front of me, you are nothing more than a soul fused monster!"

"Shut up shut up shut up shut up! I'll kill you!"

Yang Yun's eyes burned with a psychotic light. He vomited another mouthful of blood essence. In the skies, blood rained down, forming an endless waterfall of blood.

A martial artist had a limited amount of blood essence. If an ordinary martial artist were to attempt what Yang Yun was doing, they would've already turned into a desiccated corpse. The only reason that Yang Yun hadn't died was because of the Great Blood Refining Art.

Facing this even more terrifying slaughter demon blood rain, Lin Ming actually loudly laughed, "Yang Yun, fusing with the Ancient Devil was your life's greatest mistake. The current you has lost all wisdom and reasoning; you're nothing more than a mad devil now. Your ambitions were too great, and your desires were too great. You were finally controlled by those ambitions and desires and killed yourself!"

"In the future, your demonic heart will become infinite. You'll lose your mind, lose your personality, lose yourself and become a rabid beast!"

The real Yang Yun was able to tolerate all humiliation, keeping his thoughts immeasurable deep. He had great courage, greater determination, and was an outstanding hero of his era. If there wasn't a problem, his future achievements would've surpassed the Eightfall Thunder Emperor and the Sorcerer of the Southern Wilderness; he would've become someone equal to the Demon Emperor or even Emperor Shakya!

But what a pity. His ambitions and his desires were too great and he was devoured by them instead!

A single wrong move and the entire game ruined!

If a martial artist's heart demon could kill them, then their desires and ambitions could also do the same!

Yang Yun roared. He was like a demon. Then, without warning, he slammed down his jaws and bit off his tongue. He slammed his chest until his ribs shattered, forcing more blood essence onto the blood sword. The blood sword in Yang Yun's hand began to excitedly whistle, as if it were a demon that was unsealed after 100,000 years!

Yang Yun had really gone mad, without regards to the consequences; this mouthful of blood essence cost him 800-900 years of his life.

At this point, Yang Yun didn't even have a thousand years remaining. Although his fires of life were extremely vibrant, that was traded at the price of combusting his blood essence. Once his blood essence was burnt through, he would enter into the twilight of his life, all of his potential completely consumed!

Yang Yun's lips and teeth were stained with blood and his hair was split apart. He looked like a demon that had crawled out from the blood abyss. He miserably chuckled, his laughter like the shrill and ugly cries of a banshee.

"Lin Ming, you have the life of an Emperor, so how would you know my pain? My heart is higher than the heavens and yet my life is more worthless than a sheet of paper! I was born a bastard, my mother nothing more than a mortal. She died a tragic death in the harem and her corpse was buried under some random hill! During my childhood my life was worth less than a dog. I had no talent, no resources, and even through the harem that was filled with factional strife and deceit, I still managed to survive!"

"When I was 12 years old, I encountered the only lucky chance of my life, and that was the Ancient Devil. However, he was only using me. He trained me, built me up just so that I could be a chess piece to him. He even planted a spell within my body! If I wasn't able to find a suitable vessel for him to possess, then my body would be seized instead! I endured the humiliation and pain, bearing it all in my heart. In order to train in the devil arts I suffered unimaginable pain. I consumed my blood essence and my life to advance. In order to cross the trial of passion I killed the woman I loved most in the world. In order to rid myself of heart demons I cut off all my emotions!"

"I've paid such a great price and endured so much, all in order to take back from the heavens what I have lost! I have to become the best! I must become the greatest! I must become the king of kings! Otherwise, I'm unwilling!"

"You said I made life's greatest mistake by swallowing that Ancient Devil, but if I didn't do that I would've been the one to die. I would've been the one to die, don't you know that!? If I didn't swallow the Ancient Devil, I wouldn't have been able to obtain its memories. If I didn't obtain its memories, then what capital would I have to ascend to the Divine Realm and become king of everything?"

"Ahhhhh! I hate everything! I hate that the heavens are unfair! I hate that destiny mocks me! Why, why? I have sacrificed so much and yet I am still inferior to you! Why!?"

"I must kill you! I must take your secrets! That is the only chance I have left, because there's no other road left for me to go! Great Blood Refining Art – 3000 Sword Genocide!"

Yang Yun had gone crazy. In the blink of an eye he stabbed out his sword 3000 times!

Blood essence combusted. Yang Yun's body could no longer withstand the massive amount of energy. His wounds couldn't be suppressed anymore. It erupted, causing his meridians to break as his body began to burst open!

"My fire of life, don't give up, bloom with your most dazzling brilliance!"

Yang Yun's entire body was bathed in blood. He became a blood dao diagram, taking those 3000 sword lights and shooting towards Lin Ming!

Lin Ming grasped the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, burning the blood of the Ancient Phoenix to the limit, revolving the heretical God Force to the extreme, and completely unleashing the power of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

"In this world, fairness does not exist to begin with. In the Divine Realm there are geniuses that are birthed with countless resources surrounding them. They have divine bodies and bloodlines inherited from their parents, and they even have World King level powerhouses as their masters. They have the best cultivation methods to practice and the most outstanding proud daughters of heaven to dual cultivate with. How do you think anyone in this world can possibly compare!?"

"My lucky chance, the Divine Crystal Magic Cube, has only given me some memories and martial arts cultivation methods. Besides a single transcendent divine might, all other cultivation methods that I gained from it aren't necessarily any worse than those that could be provided by the Ancient Devil! While I haven't experienced the plotting and deceit of the royal family's harem, I also experienced a heartbreaking and dismal youth."

"Betrayal of the one I loved, indifference of my clansmen. I had no resources and had to endure internal injuries, betting everything I had on my choice. After you were born you had the support of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. I did not. After you showed your talent, you had unlimited resources at your disposal. I had to struggle for everything I had myself. You're a central decision maker of the Sky Spill Continent's greatest power, but I was only able to take my first step at a mortal martial house that is subordinate to a tiny third-grade sect."

"The road of martial arts is to defy the will of the heavens to begin with! You blame the heavens for being unfair, then you might as well blame the world for not being flat. You place all the blame on your own destiny, and all you can think of is stealing the secrets of others for yourself. Your mind is dominated by your ambitions and your greed! You didn't hesitate to sacrifice your very identity, even resorting to any sinister and cruel method that could help you achieve your goals. Because of this, you have doomed yourself to defeat and to death!"

"Yang Yun, the true you has already died. When I kill you, what I'm killing is the monster formed from the unification of the real Yang Yun and the Ancient Devil!"

Lin Ming's words were all sent within one tenth of an eye blink, directly transmitting into Yang Yun's mind with a true essence sound transmission. He didn't even conceal knowledge of the Divine Crystal Magic Cube in his body.

This was a life or death battle to begin with; there naturally wasn't any way for his secret to be revealed.

"Blood of the Ancient Phoenix, condense!"

With a keen phoenix cry, the blood of the Ancient Phoenix combusted and formed a golden phoenix phantom that rushed out from Lin Ming's back. The phoenix phantom soared into the air, forming a massive flaming fire dao diagram. This dao diagram was 200 feet wide and contained countless twisting fire patterns; these were actually the mystical traces from the chaos stones in Timeworn Phoenix City!

"Purple Lion Thunder source, condense!"

"Roar!"

The Purple Lion Thunder source blitzed out from the Heretical God Sprout, howling again and again. It's voice was like an endless thunderclap that echoed between the heavens and earth. The Purple Lion Thunder Source also turned into a thunder dao diagram. This thunder dao diagram was 300 feet wide, larger than the fire dao diagram. Innumerable thunder tracings winded on the surface of the thunder dao diagram like little electric snakes. The tracings were similar to those that were on the 12 thunder dao fruits. They represented the operating rules of the Thunder Laws.

The Ancient Phoenix phantom condensed into fire!

The Purple Lion Thunder Source condensed into thunder!

This was Lin Ming's strongest technique, an attack which magnificence and power eclipsed Penetrating Rainbow.

Thunderfire Dao Diagram!

The halberd thrust out like the harbinger of the apocalypse. The entire world was covered by the two red and purple dao diagrams. The two dao diagrams sandwiched the world like two grinding plates, seeming as if it would grind away the world!

This was a strength that approached the Source Laws of the Great Dao. It was simply not a strength that the martial artists of the Sky Spill Continent could comprehend.

3000 sword lights all pierced the Thunderfire Dao Diagram!

Peng peng peng peng peng!

A series of ringing explosions filled the air as legions of sword lights shattered. The two great dao diagrams violently trembled. Countless thunder and fire tracings were broken by the sword lights, turning into a potent and savage energy that broke into the void!

In order to display the thunder and fire dao diagrams, Lin Ming's consumption was also monstrous!

His cultivation was only at the fifth stage of Life Destruction. Even with the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, complete spirit body, and extremely deep reserves of energy to support him, he was still close to reaching his limit!

"Die!"

Lin Ming's waved the blood halberd. The great dao diagrams began gathering together, squeezing Yang Yun within!

Over half of Yang Yun's sword lights had shattered. With a low howl, blood spurted out from all over his body yet again. Behind him, the blood dao diagram reappeared and began to slowly spin around. Within the blink of an eye, Yang Yun thrust out his sword another 3000 times!

3000 sword strikes followed by another 3000 sword strikes, Yang Yun's mortal body had already begun to collapse. His blood vessels were torn apart and he vomited mouthfuls of blood!

"You stubborn fool!"

Lin Ming's muscles bulged out and veins stuck out from all over him like blue worms. He bit down on the tip of his tongue, spitting out a layer of blood essence. The Great Desolate Blood Halberd chopped downwards. Within the air, the thunder and fire dao diagrams finally combined together and violently exploded!

In that instant, all color vanished from the world. A raging energy swallowed up this part of the sky, cutting itself off from the world. It was like the moon collapsed and stars were sinking.

This terrifying energy completely fell onto Yang Yun. The blood sword shattered. Yang Yun's broken body was sucked into the brutal and vicious storm. His protective true essence was torn apart like paper, his meridians crushed, and his body completely burst apart.

Chapter 945 – Ashes to Ashes

Chapter 945 – Ashes to Ashes

…

…

…

The light vanished and silence fell over the world. Lin Ming's face was white and a trickle of blood dripped down from the corners of his mouth. That last strike had consumed nearly all of his strength and even cost him a bit of his life essence. This life essence could be restored later but it would require a great deal of heavenly materials.

With Lin Ming's current level of strength, simultaneously using the Purple Lion Thunder Source and the blood of the Ancient Phoenix to activate the dual thunder and fire dao diagrams, then fusing them together was simply too much strain on his body. After all, he was still only at the fifth stage of Life Destruction.

The surrounding area within a thousand miles was completely razed to the ground. Below Lin Ming's feet, there was a massive abyss dozens of miles deep. This was carved into the ground by Lin Ming's final strike.

The over 50 Divine Sea powerhouses had already retreated a hundred miles away. As they watched the horrifying earth rending battle between the two come to an end, they were left speechless. For the last 100,000 years, several people appeared that qualified to be the highest under the heavens. After Yang Yun cultivated the Great Blood Refining Art, his strength could be considered among those people. But even so, he was still slain by Lin Ming. What was most terrifying was that Lin Ming was only at the fifth stage of Life Destruction. Since ancient times, the highest under the heavens always had at least a middle Divine Sea cultivation. The disparity between the fifth stage of Life Destruction and the middle Divine

Sea realm was far too great. If it were an ordinary fifth stage Life Destruction martial artist, they probably wouldn't even be able to rank on the Destiny Decree. As for a middle Divine Sea master, they could exterminate a hundred regular fifth stage Life Destruction martial artists with a wave of their hand!

Lin Ming's foundation was already unimaginable; it was impossible to imagine. If this continued then it was likely he would be able to break into the legendary ninth stage of Life Destruction. His strength would then reach heights beyond anyone's wildest dreams!

Without a doubt, Lin Ming was destined to ascend into the Divine Realm. But the legends and stories he would leave behind on the Sky Spill Continent would have no equal, whether it was now, in the past, or in the future.

"Yang Yun's not dead yet?"

Lin Ming fixed his eyes, peering deep into the abyss. Yang Yun was no more than several pieces of flesh and blood, but his head still remained intact. His fires of life were weakened to the point of extinguishing and his aura was thin as cobwebs.

Lin Ming moved, landing in front of Yang Yun.

"...Lin... Ming..."

Yang Yun was bleeding from everywhere. His teeth were shattered and his tongue was bitten off cleanly. He managed to use a slight bit of energy to simulate his voice, but it still came out blurry.

"The feeling of all your ambitions being smashed apart, do you find it hard to reconcile with?" Lin Ming indifferently asked. As he looked at Yang Yun, there wasn't any emotion in his eyes. Yang Yun had used all means possible to reach his goal no matter how nefarious they were. Now that his fate ended up like this, he deserved nothing less."

“Hehe…” Yang Yun demonically grinned, his eyes filled with loathing and venom. “You stand in front of me as a victor, but one day, others will stand in front of you the same way. You’ll share the same fate as me, hahahahaha!”

He hated Lin Ming! He hated Lin Ming to the depths of his soul!

It was said that when people died their final parting words would be peaceful. But when Yang Yun died, all he did was crazily curse.

The original Yang Yun, whether he was lying or just exceptional at hiding his true thoughts, his outwards appearance was always that of a handsome gentleman. There was no comparison to this dying rabid dog in front of him.

It could only be said that Yang Yun had become completely demented after losing himself. His original character had completely disappeared.

Lin Ming grimly sighed. This was the fate of recklessly fusing your soul with someone else. Thinking about it, he was also extremely lucky. The divine object, the Magic Cube, was able to cleanly erase a soul mark and allow him to absorb only the memories, making it so that he was never influenced by another person’s thoughts.

This Magic Cube had caused the struggle of countless great figures within the Divine Realm. Just what secrets and uses did it truly have? What was it made from and how was it created?

The Magic Cube had a mysterious origin that was impossible to guess. In fact, up until this point, Lin Ming depended on the Magic Cube too many times. He absorbed the memories of some others, but these people had all been characters on the same level of the Demon emperor. They couldn’t compare to the Holy Lords or World Kings of the Divine Realm, much less an Empyrean.

The Magic Cube certainly had other functions. It was just that his boundary was too low to understand or utilize them.

As Lin Ming was thinking about this, he suddenly felt a burning heat emanate from his chest. This feeling came from the Magic Cube!

Ever since the Magic Cube fused into Lin Ming's body, he never found it again. It was simply as if it had vanished. He couldn't make contact with it or activate it. Even when he crossed Life Destruction and his body burst apart into a fog of blood, he still wasn't able to detect a single trace of the Magic Cube.

To the Magic Cube, Lin Ming was only able to passively accept its wishes. But at this time, he was able to feel the slightest bit of will from the Magic Cube. Lin Ming only felt this trace of will when he fed the Magic Cube some blood essence.

“The Magic Cube wants to swallow Yang Yun's blood essence?” Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. Yang Yun was only a Divine Sea powerhouse. Before this, Lin Ming already fed the Magic Cube the blood essence of a Divine Sea Supreme Elder; the blood essence of the old Imp form the Blood Slaughter Steppes. He thought that the next rank of blood essence the Magic Cube would want would be from a Divine Transformation master. He never thought that the Magic Cube would actually be interested in Yang Yun's blood essence.

“Jejejeje, Lin Ming, I know that you want to climb onto the peak of martial arts, but there are countless martial artists just like you, which one of them doesn't wish to reach the peak!? How many of them will finally fail before they get there!? The road of martial arts is paved with the lives of others! Sooner or later, you'll be the same as me, the same as me!”

Yang Yun crazily shouted out, cursing with his final breath. Lin Ming glanced at him in pity. He quietly sent out a layer of energy that covered Yang Yun's ruined body.

“You! What are you doing?” Yang Yan was shocked. He suddenly discovered a powerful attractive force acting on him. The power of his blood vitality rapidly left his body. It was gathering towards Lin Ming!

“You, you want to swallow me!?” Yang Yun's face gruesomely distorted. He was far too familiar with this feeling. He cultivated the Great Blood Refining Art for several years and had sucked up the life of countless vicious beasts and divine body and variation bloodline Divine Sea powerhouses. How could he not know what Lin Ming was doing?

Hu!

Blood essence rapidly left Yang Yun's body. He was so angry that his eyes popped out of his head, a monstrous, heaven-shaking hatred within them. However, as his life force left his body, his every thought and motion slowed down and down.

Masses of blood fog formed phantoms in the air. There were flood dragons, strange fishes, white tigers, massive snakes, all sorts of Saint Beasts, all of them were swallowed up by Lin Ming. More accurately, all of it was swallowed up by the Magic Cube.

A faint scarlet vortex appeared on the surface of the Magic Cube. All of these blood phantoms were minced apart by this vortex.

Finally, the scarlet phantom of a hydra was also swallowed up by the Magic Cube. At this point, all of Yang Yun's blood essence was completely absorbed.

Yang Yun's face was already white and filled with defeat; his last breath was near. Lin Ming couldn't help but sigh at just how tenacious Yang Yun's life was. Normally, if a Divine Sea powerhouse had their head chopped off they would live for less than ten breaths of time. But Yang Yun struggled around and around, still hanging onto that single breath.

This was obviously because of the Great Blood Refining art. Yang Yun had refined countless bloodlines into himself that were filled with an exuberant and stubborn vitality, including even the stalwart hydra bloodline.

"It looks like even Whitedemon was swallowed up by Yang Yun." Lin Ming recognized the hydra phantom; he sensed the aura of Whitedemon coming from it. Within the Divine Realm, the hydra bloodline was also a considerably powerful clan with countless clansmen spread throughout.

"Lin Ming, there'll be a day, when you..."

Yang Yun was sending out his final curse, but as he spoke, his head suddenly split apart. A crack appeared from his forehead, extending down to his lower jaw like a knife that passed through a watermelon. His head exploded.

Yang Yun's voice was stopped short. He had thoroughly died.

However, at the moment when Yang Yun's head split apart, a tiny wisp of remnant shot out, its soul force extremely weak. It violently thrashed and twisted about. This soul emitted the aura of the Ancient Devil.

This was a wisp of the Ancient Devil's remnant soul that Yang Yun hadn't fused with, instead choosing to suppress it within his spiritual sea. Now that Yang Yuns' spiritual sea had broken apart, this tiny wisp of soul had no place left to hide.

The Magic Cube didn't seem to have any interest in swallowing up this soul wisp, instead remaining silent. In the Temple of Marvels, the reason that the Magic Cube swallowed the Ancient Devil's soul was because it had taken the initiative to deliver itself to the Magic Cube when it tried to seize Lin Ming's body.

"Yang Yun has already died and you still have a wisp of soul left over? That's really persistent of you." Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light as he pinched that wisp of soul in his fist.

Screech screech!

That soul wisp sent out tiny screams as it was pinched between Lin Ming's fingers, as if it were a large rat that had been caught around the neck.

A thought entered Lin Ming's mind. This was the voice of the Ancient Devil. "Don't kill me! Don't kill me! I know many secrets about the Sea of Miracles and the Eternal Demon Abyss! I also know where many powerhouses have left their treasures! You still haven't truly entered the Sea of Miracles, I can lead you there to seek treasures!"

The Ancient Devil furiously struggled. However, Lin Ming only sneered. He twisted his fingers, and with a lighting cracking sound, the Ancient Devil was completely annihilated.

At this point, Yang Yun, Whitedemon, and the Ancient Devil were all dead!

Lin Ming took a deep breath, tracing his chest. The Magic Cube remained quiet. Although it had absorbed blood essence this time, it didn't open the Magic Cube space.

This made Lin Ming feel a tinge of regret. It seemed that in order to open up the Magic Cube again, he would need the blood essence of a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse.

Lin Ming hypothesized that it wasn't the Magic Cube that absorbed blood essence, but rather that powerful soul deeply sleeping within the Magic Cube. That is, the Saintess that used the Magic Cube to devour the souls of 10,000 Divine Realm Supreme Elders.

Each and every one of those Divine Realm Supreme Elders had been super powerhouses. If the Demon Emperor were ranked amongst them, he would only be extremely ordinary. But every single one of them was completely exterminated with a single move from that woman.

That woman likely needed blood essence to repair her own soul.

Before this, every time she had opened the Magic Cube after absorbing blood essence was only to inform him that she needed the blood essence of stronger powerhouses to recover.

And now, the Magic Cube sucked Yang Yun's blood essence of its own volition. That explained a question, and that was that Yang Yun's blood essence was finally at a high enough level for the woman to use.

This should also be because Yang Yun cultivated the Great Blood Refining Art, and the blood vitality within his body was far too exuberant and potent. A normal Divine Sea powerhouse would not have the qualifications to have their blood essence be used by that woman, because that Divine Sea boundary was far too low for her.

Chapter 946 – The Highest Under the Heavens

Chapter 946 – The Highest Under the Heavens

…

…

…

With the Magic Cube's fluctuations, Lin Ming became aware of something. That was that the day of the Magic Cube's awakening was approaching. If the woman's soul within the Magic Cube could awaken, then perhaps he might be able to learn the Magic Cube's secrets and find out just what it was.

"I have no idea whether that woman will be an enemy or friend. For someone at her level, even a wisp of her soul will have terrifying power. I have to strengthen myself as soon as possible; strength is the most fundamental truth of all."

As Lin Ming thought this, he looked up and saw the 50 some Divine Sea powerhouses flying towards him.

There were currently around 90 Divine Sea powerhouses remaining in the entire Sky Spill Continent. These 50 some individuals accounted for the majority of them!

In peaceful times, if these 50 some individuals gathered together, that would truly be an awe inspiring scene. That was equivalent to the greatest strength of the Sky Spill Continent gathering together; just what sort of influence wouldn't they be able to flatten and raze to the ground? If they attacked the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, even Yang Laotian would have been frightened out of his wits, withdrawing into the Nine Furnace Divine Palace with only the great array to resist them.

But now, these 50 some people didn't even dare to take a deep breath in front of Lin Ming. They felt an enormous pressure just being in his presence.

Lin Ming was simply far too strong. Now that he killed Yang Yun, he officially earned the title of highest under the heavens. He was someone with the status equal to the Demon Emperor of 70,000-80,000 years ago.

This was absolute domination!

Moreover, he was only at the fifth stage of Life Destruction. Breaking through another two stages of Life Destruction in 3-4 years would be as simple as eating a meal to him. He would then be able to massacre swathes of Divine Sea masters with just a thought.

Of the 90 some Divine Sea powerhouses remaining in the Sky Spill Continent, nearly half of them had relied on lucky chances to break into the Divine Sea. That was over 40 people!

Of the remaining 50, although a majority of them broke into the Divine Sea with their own strength and will, they had neither divine bodies or variation bloodlines and they weren't even at the seventh stage of Life Destruction, but the most ordinary and common sixth stage of Life Destruction. Although they were stronger than those that relied on lucky chances to break into the Divine Sea, it would be extremely difficult for them to step foot into the middle Divine Sea realm.

Considering all factors, there were 20 people in the Sky Spill Continent that managed to break into the middle Divine Sea, and only a single person that was at the late Divine Sea realm. That was Old Man Good Fortune. All other late Divine Sea masters were slain by Yang Yun.

The Divine Sea powerhouses of the Sky Spill Continent, in terms of cultivation, strength, and foundation, could only be considered a ragtag group of martial artists in front of Lin Ming.

"Sage Lin."

Many Divine Sea powerhouses saluted Lin Ming. As for calling him Little Brother Lin, no one dared to refer to him by that name again. This was the honor and status conferred by absolute suppression of strength. If the current Lin Ming wanted to form his own sect, he could even take his time to annex the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom and build a sixth-grade sect.

“Yang Yun, is he really dead?” Fairy Snow Gale saw Yang Yun’s corpse on the ground. His body was covered with blood and all of his blood essence was sucked out. She found this incredible. A cruel demon of his era who had managed to enslave nearly all Divine Sea powerhouses of the Sky Spill Continent for four years, the sinister and powerful Yang Yun had finally died.

It wasn’t just Fairy Snow Gale, but everyone else let out a sigh of relief. Some of them used to have a tracing mark planted within them, and those Divine Sea powerhouses with a variation bloodline felt an even greater sense of relief.

The woman called Yu’er deeply bowed to Lin Ming. “Sage Lin, killing Yang Yun is a life saving graciousness to me. I’ll carve that graciousness in my mind.”

Followed by Yu’er, a tall and robustly built middle-aged man bowed to Lin Ming. “My life and death blood brother Luo Mo died under Yang Yun’s hands. I thank Sage Lin for killing Yang Yun and completing this hatred and blood debt for me.”

With the death of Yang Yun, everyone was happy and overjoyed, finally being able to be at ease of mind.

“Sage Lin, if you have any requests for us, please speak. I shall wait until my dying breath for them!” A martial artist said.

Lin Ming calmly replied, “Yang Yun is my enemy and we were destined to have a life and death battle. Although it incidentally helped you, it isn’t a great kindness or anything like that. Whether there’s something I would like done, there is indeed something.”

“Sage Lin, please be frank. I’ll wade through water and fire to accomplish it!” The martial artists straightened themselves. So many Divine Sea powerhouses had gathered here today, and each one of them were overlords of the Sky Spill Continent that ruled over powerful influences. Just what wouldn’t they be able to do?

Lin Ming smiled. “It’s not that serious. Everyone, you’re all basically part of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom, Seven Star Divine Kingdom, or one of their subordinate influences right?”

“Yes. There’s also some freely wandering martial artists that have no sect; around 7-8 of them are here. As for the Asura Divine Kingdom, they have a grudge with Sage Lin so they completely backed Yang Yun. We didn’t find any of them trustworthy so we didn’t contact them.” The Seven Star Divine Emperor Li Yuxiao quickly said.

“Mm.” Lin Ming nodded. “Then, I have two requests. First, I hope that in the future, there’ll only be three Divine Kingdoms around the Sea of Miracles. From this point onwards, the Asura Divine Kingdom shall no longer exist!”

Lin Ming’s request was amazing. With just several words, he directly sentenced a Divine Kingdom to obliteration. He indeed had the qualifications to say this.

Li Yuxiao sucked in a deep breath as he heard Lin Ming’s words, but he wasn’t surprised. The Asura Divine Kingdom was already as incompatible with Lin Ming as fire was to water. If Lin Ming planned to ascend into the Divine Realm in the future, he would surely leave behind his family and inheritance in the Sky Spill Continent. If there was some hostile influence greedily eyeing them, how could he possibly be at peace?

The four Divine Kingdoms had existed for over 10,000 years. Now, because of just a few words from Lin Ming, there would be one less. There would only be three great pillars remaining!

“How about it?” Lin Ming’s eyebrows shot up.

“No problem!” Not only did Li Yuxiao agree, but the other important figures from the three Divine Kingdoms also concurred. In truth, the reason the four Divine Kingdoms could co-exist with each other in a stable state for over 10,000 years was entirely because they mutually suppressed each other. The price of waging war was simply too great. As for joining forces with another Divine Kingdom to conquer another, if they could do it then others could also. The interests and subterfuge between the four Divine Kingdoms were far too complex and intricate; wanting to start a war wasn’t simple at all.

But now, because of Lin Ming, none of this was a problem!

Lin Ming said, “Exterminate the Asura Divine Kingdom. The territory, resource, and benefits will all be divided by your three Divine Kingdoms. I won’t intervene and I don’t want any of it. I only have one demand. When you do this, do not recklessly kill. Try to use peaceful means to solve conflict if possible instead. As for the inheritance and descendants of the Asura Divine Kingdom, do not slaughter them all. You may absorb them into your three Divine Kingdoms and allow them to continue to exist.”

The leaders of the three Divine Kingdoms were delighted to hear Lin Ming say this. This was equal to handing them a giant cake. With the deterrence of Lin Ming and the three Divine Kingdoms joining forces, the Asura Divine Kingdom was doomed to destruction. There likely wouldn’t be many people that would resist this. In this war, they would be able to gain the greatest harvests in exchange for the smallest losses.

As for the Asura Divine Kingdom, they had existed for over 10,000 years and the resources they accumulated were abundant beyond imagination. If the three Divine Kingdoms could equally divide in the spoils, then the many Holy Land family clans and even many fifth-grade sects would be able to take a cup of this soup.

Where could anyone find such a marvelous matter?

Lin Ming continued, “There is also another matter. The Asura Divine Kingdom has a subordinate influence called the Northwest Great Desert. There’s someone amongst them named Wang Yichan. I don’t want him to continue living on in this world.”

The reason that Lin Ming's real identity had been exposed was because Wang Yichan had told Yang Yun. This caused the Lin Family to suffer a great catastrophe.

Lin Ming had formed a grudge with Wang Yichan during his great banquet wedding, creating a viper. After Lin Ming ascended into the Divine Realm, he didn't want such a viper aiming at his family. If this person died, he would feel much more at ease.

"This is a minor matter. Please allow me to handle it." Li Yuxiao volunteered. Wang Yichan was only a Life Destruction martial artist, killing him was no different from killing a chicken. As for the Northwest Great Desert, they certainly wouldn't dare to shelter Wang Yichan. That was the same as seeking death.

From the age of 15 when Lin Ming first officially stepped onto the road of martial arts, 11 years had passed. 11 years ago, he was only an unimportant and minor character not worth remembering, but now, with just a few words, he was able to change the status quo of the Sky Spill Continent!

In the next three years the Asura Divine Kingdom would be carved up and annexed, completely vanishing from the world. As for Situ Haotian, that proud ruler of his era would be forced into a dead end and die on the road of regret. On this continent, the Asura Divine Kingdom would no longer exist and the name would fade into obscurity.

Of course, that was a story for another time.

……

Lin Ming crossed several dozen million miles to arrive at the Giant Leviathan in the South Sea.

Within a minor dimension of the Giant Leviathan, Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, Demonshine, Lin Fu, and Lin Mu were gathered together.

Even Lan Yunyue had shown up. After so many years, she finally saw Lin Fu and Lin Mu again. She was filled with guilt and embarrassment upon seeing them and deeply bowed to them.

Lin Fu and Lin Mu could've been said to have helped raise Lan Yunyue from childhood. As they saw her again, they were filled with emotion.

Lin Ming stood at the side, not saying anything. Mu Qianyu walked to Lin Ming's side and asked him in a soft voice, "When do you plan on leaving?"

Lin Ming's heart quivered. He knew this so-called 'leaving' was in truth ascending to the Divine Realm. When he left, it was unknown just when they would meet again. Towards Mu Qianyu, Lin Ming felt a great deal of guilt. After their great wedding, they only enjoyed a few months of tenderness and love before he had gone to the four Divine Kingdoms. During that adventure he left for several years. And now that they met each other again, he would have to ascend into the Divine realm soon.

"I haven't really thought about it yet." Lin Ming didn't know what to say.

Mu Qianyu softly smiled. "You don't have to feel guilty about anything. In truth, from the day that I gave you my heart, I knew that I might not be able to continue walking down the same path as you. I just didn't think that day would come so soon."

"No matter what the future brings, that is the choice I made completely of my own will and desire. You know, if you didn't exist, I would've probably perished in the South Sea war. I'm also someone that walks down the road of martial arts. All of us martial cultivators take martial arts as our central focus with things like feelings and sentiment as mere distant details. When you go to the Divine Realm, do so with confidence. I'll stay in the lower realm and handle everything here."

Mu Qianyu whispered into Lin Ming's ear. To a true martial artist, unless they were a martial artist that specialized in emotions, they would cultivate martial arts wholeheartedly with no time for things like feelings or sentiment. To cultivate martial arts was the struggle against the heavens. Only when a martial artist determined that there wasn't much hope for further advancement would they settle down, taking a wife and concubines and wildly enjoying their time. Otherwise, most of them would bitterly and diligently cultivate, chasing after the Great Dao with their complete heart and will. As for feelings and sentiments, they would become somewhat indifferent to them.

Mu Qianyu was also a martial arts genius. Although she couldn't compare to those peak Emperor level talents, she had the support of a massive amount of resources brought by Lin Ming as well a drop of the Ancient Phoenix bloodline fused into her body. It wouldn't be too difficult for her to break into the Divine Sea in the future.

She was not the type of woman that would vacantly live her life once her man left; she also had her own road of martial arts that she desired to walk down and she was also fiercely independent. If she hadn't met someone like Lin Ming, then not marrying for her entire life was also an acceptable matter to her.

Chapter 947 – Grandest Event Since Ancient Times

Chapter 947 – Grandest Event Since Ancient Times

…

…

…

The next several months, Lin Ming resided in the Giant Leviathan with his family and good friends as they traveled back to the Sky Spill Continent.

During this time, Lin Ming didn't train much. Instead, he spent his time with Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, his parents, and the others, enjoying happy days together.

After meeting each other after such a long period of separation, Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu fell into intimacy like fish into water. The two of them didn't have much experience in this regard. As martial arts cultivators, they naturally had to suppress the passions and lusts in their hearts. But now, they were finally able to indulge to their hearts' content.

"Lin Ming, what plans do you have with Little Sister Xingxuan? Do you plan on bringing her to the Divine Realm with you?" After a vigorous bout of lovemaking, Mu Qianyu lay down on Lin Ming's chest. Her face was flushed red and she was lightly panting.

Lin Ming stroked his wife's fragrant and warm breasts while thinking of the answer. Ever since the Lin Family Clan was harmed by Yang Yun, the series of events had cast a shadow on his heart. Luckily they hadn't attached too much importance to Lan Yunyue or the consequences would have been much more serious.

If he brought Qin Xingxuan to the Divine Realm, it'd be creating a weakness for him. He had no idea what sort of powerful enemies he would make in the future. If he faced an unscrupulous enemy, they were likely to harm Qin Xingxuan.

Lin Ming's emotions ran deep. If something really happened to Qin Xingxuan, if she was humiliated, raped, or killed, he couldn't imagine just what he would do.

If he left Qin Xingxuan behind in the Sky Spill Continent, then even if he managed to offend some great influence in the Divine Realm, she would still be safe here because of the barrier that Empyrean Primordius had set up around the planet.

Lin Ming shook his head. "Xingxuan's cultivation is too weak. Even with my help, it won't be easy for her to reach the Divine Sea in the future. And passing into higher levels will be even more difficult. Besides, the channels between the Sky Spill Continent and the Divine Realm have been sealed away. If I try to bring her upwards, there might be some problems. Even now, I have no idea how to ascend. I'll have to ask Old Man Good Fortune or the Ancient Phoenix Great Temple's Temple Spirit for help."

The rules of the world originally only allow a Divine Sea master to ascend to the Divine Realm. Lin Ming was currently only at the fifth stage of Life Destruction. Even if his strength already surpassed a normal late Divine Sea master, he still wasn't able to go against this rule. If he wanted to ascend, he would likely have to pay some price; bringing someone with him would make that even harder.

Mu Qianyu said, "I want things to be simple. However, leaving Little Sister Xingxuan in the lower realms is unfair to her."

Lin Ming felt extremely guilty as Mu Qianyu spoke. He could give Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu countless lucky chances, but he eventually wouldn't be able to walk with them.

Lin Ming took out a spatial ring. "There's 80 million spirit essence stones here, as well as all sorts of rare and precious pills, heavenly materials, heaven-step treasures, and all sorts of other things. There's also the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's national destiny stabilizing divine treasure, the Coiling Martial Divine Furnace. It can be used to stabilize the destiny of Divine Phoenix Island. With me acting as deterrence as well as the other Divine Sea powerhouses that received my help, no one should think about moving against Divine Phoenix Island for some time."

After Lin Ming killed Yang Yun he naturally obtained all of his belongings. In addition to the Steppes Master's treasury and the Blood Slaughter Steppes itself, Lin Ming's wealth was incalculable.

Mu Qianyu silently received the spatial ring. This was a ridiculous amount of wealth, nearly equal to a Divine Kingdom's national treasury. Especially the Coiling Martial Divine Furnace. That was a treasure used to stabilize the national destiny of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom; the value was unimaginable.

But Mu Qianyu wasn't happy. She knew this was the legacy that Lin Ming was leaving her.

"Then how will you repay Little Sister Xingxuan?" Mu Qianyu asked.

"A grand marriage for the whole world to witness. We will also take this time to move Divine Phoenix Island into the central region of the Sky Spill Continent. With my power and influence, we shall stand tall there and become a Holy Land from this point on!"

……

Three months later the Giant Leviathan returned to the Sky Spill Continent. Lin Ming and everyone else passed through transmission arrays to quickly return to the central region. Before Yang Yun died, he had at least done one final good deed and that was that he had established a near perfect transmission array network. This made travelling through the Sky Spill Continent much more convenient.

Soon after, an important matter spread through the entire Sky Spill Continent. This was the news of Lin Ming's grand marriage.

Every large sect's Divine Sea powerhouse received invitations. The highest under the heavens, Lin Ming, was actually planning to hold a dual cultivation marriage ceremony with an unknown woman.

The three Divine Kingdoms as well as many of the Holy Lands were greatly surprised. There were even many of them that were disappointed. It had to be known that Lin Ming's current status was that of supreme power, nearly unapproachable. Even if they knew that Lin Ming would ascend into the Divine Realm, there were still countless influences that were eagerly willing to marry their proudest daughters to him.

Even if Lin Ming ascended to the Divine Realm, he would still leave behind his fame and legacy in the Sky Spill Continent; no one would dare to move against his people, because no one could guarantee that he wouldn't return in the future. Then again, Lin Ming's connections were extremely deep now. Many Divine Sea powerhouses had received a lifesaving graciousness from him; they owed him a great favor.

When a martial artist reached the Divine Sea realm, it wasn't easy for them to owe anything to anyone, because they tried to avoid involving themselves with karma. They found owing favors to others bitter to taste, and always looked for opportunities to return them. In this situation, if anyone dared to act against the family Lin Ming left behind in the Sky Spill Continent, Lin Ming wouldn't even need to take action before that person became the target of the whole world.

Moreover, if they saved Lin Ming's family and Lin Ming returned in the future, he would probably repay them for their kindness. It was unknown just what level of strength Lin Ming would be able to reach. Just some casual goods that he handed out might give them infinite delight.

If the great influences could choose the most exquisite and perfect woman to receive Lin Ming's favor and have them win his heart by virtue of outstanding talent and beauty, then that was equal to climbing the great tree that was Lin Ming. They would be able to receive 10,000 years of endless good luck!

But Lin Ming was actually planning on marrying; how could all these great influences not be disappointed,

Some people were curious. They soon found out that when Lin Ming was in the South Horizon Region, he had already held a great wedding. This would be the second one. In other words, Lin Ming already had a wife.

This was good news. It was proof that Lin Ming didn't refuse concubines. This made everything much easier to handle. It had to be known that while Lin Ming ventured in the central region for all these years, he had kept a pure heart, indifferent like ice. They feared that Lin Ming was the sort of fellow that only had martial arts in their hearts, and wholeheartedly walked down the road of martial arts with no other concerns, uninterested in the matters between men and women. If that were true, they really would have no idea where to begin.

Although individuals the great influences selected were the most glorious and proud heavenly daughters, the truth was that they didn't care too much about being Lin Ming's wife; even being a concubine was more than good enough.

Taking this opportunity, many great influences brought rich gifts to Lin Ming's grand wedding as well as the most splendid heroic young elites of their sects so that they could open their eyes and expand their vision. Of course, they also brought along the most stunning and alluring young women, all of them had heaven-gifted talents.

The wedding venue was the new Vermillion Bird Palace. The Vermillion Bird Palace floated in the skies with the help of array formations. There were also several otherworldly celestial mountains floating nearby under the powered array formations. On top of these celestial mountains, there were countless multicolored rainbows that lit up the skies in dazzling glory as well as grandiose palaces dotting the landscape. There were countless rare spirit flowers and spirit trees. Countless worldly treasures bloomed under the effects of spells. These spells had the strength of a million spirit essence stones melted into them. The heaven and earth origin energy here was rich to the point that it nearly condensed into bubbles. Fragrant scents, clouds, pavilions, all sorts of beautiful sights accentuated each other. If a mortal were to take a single breath here, they would live past a hundred years in good health. This was truly an immortal fairyland within the mortal world.

In fact, most of these arrangements hadn't been done by Lin Ming, nor did he care much about doing them. As for Divine Phoenix Island, their background was too weak and they also couldn't arrange such sights. All of this was jointly done by the three Divine Kingdoms and the various Holy lands. They wished to make this grand wedding as glorious and resplendent as possible to please and curry favor with Lin Ming. These sects had all tried their hardest; they had really laid down a capital.

It could be said that Lin Ming's marriage ceremony was the grandest event in the Sky Spill Continent for the last several tens of thousands of years! Perhaps only the establishing ceremony of a sixth-grade sect could reach similar heights. Otherwise, who would ever be able to move nearly 80 Divine Sea powerhouses?

Nearly all of the Divine Sea powerhouses of the Sky Spill Continent arrived; that included even the Northwest Great Desert's Wang Yenli. As for the matter concerning his dead son, he came to this wedding with a hearty laugh, even preparing generous gifts to apologize for what his son did. He didn't really care but about Wang Yichan's death. He had over a thousand sons after all. He only hated that his son had possibly involved him in a calamity.

Besides the three Divine Kingdoms attending, there were also many important Holy Land figures, fifth-grade sect Sovereigns and Highest Elders, famed Elders from all around, fifth-grade family clan Patriarchs, and many others. All of them brought their own gifts.

There were also many wild and scattered martial artists that came. Although they had no sect behind them, they were still powerful characters, lords of their own lands. They had come to experience the illustriousness of the highest under the heavens. If they missed the grandest event of tens of thousands of years, they truly would feel regret.

For some time, near the new Vermillion Bird Palace and the many celestial mountains that floated in the sky, countless shining gold divine carriages appeared. There were also jade spirit boats and spirit ships, mountains, palanquins, many of them towed by auspicious Saint Beasts of all varieties. This truly seemed like a grand gathering of immortals.

Amongst all these dazzling divine carriages and spirit boats, there was an extremely simple green ox that stuck out like a sore thumb. Besides walking on a cloud, this green ox didn't look any different from an ox that a common mortal farming family would use.

This was naturally Old Man Good Fortune's mount.

"Hahaha, Little Friend Lin, it's been four years since we last met, you've truly bloomed in magnificence. Although I already expected you to become the highest under the heavens, I didn't think that day would come so soon! This old man didn't receive an invitation but would you perhaps allow me to join in on the festivities?"

"Senior Good Fortune is too funny. The reason that this junior can be here today is all because I received Senior Good Fortune's shelter and guidance. This junior wanted to request Senior Good Fortune to this wedding feast, but it's only that Senior Good Fortune is secretive in movements, a divine dragon that doesn't show their head, only their tail. There was no place for me to send an invitation to."

Lin Ming pleasantly laughed. He owed Old Man Good Fortune a great deal. Even in the Temple of Marvels, Old Man Good Fortune gave Lin Ming the chance to escape. He also grievously wounded Whitedemon. If Whitedemon and Yang Yun had joined forces at that time, he would've never made it out alive even with the Magic Cube.

This grand event continued for nine days. But Lin Ming only appeared on the first day. He brought Qin Xingxuan around to speak to the crowd and drink with some important guests. Then they flew away together.

Many sects had brought proud, beautiful daughters of the heavens to this wedding banquet to obtain Lin Ming's favor. All of them were left disappointed.

Chapter 948 – Incarnation of the Jade Slip

Chapter 948 – Incarnation of the Jade Slip

…

…

…

Atop the peak of a floating mountain, underneath the glow of multicolored lights, Lin Ming and Qin Xingxuan lay spread out on the grass, watching as the white clouds rolled past them. All the wonders around them left one intoxicated like a dream.

With the world as a bed, flowers as a blanket, a beautiful woman hugged close to his chest, Lin Ming watched the scenery around him. He stood at the very pinnacle of the Sky Spill Continent; his life could've been said to have reached the limit of happiness.

In these past years, if Lin Ming hadn't been bitterly cultivating, then he was slaughtering or fleeing. He had rushed headlong into all sorts of dangerous situations with only slim hopes for survival; he never had a chance to calm his heart and enjoy his life.

If one didn't experience such a free and glorious fairy-like life at least once, then their life would be lacking. While the road of martial arts was filled with long periods of cultivation, they also needed to become aware of themselves and their feelings. They needed to taste the hundreds of emotions in life; this was also part of cultivation.

Lin Ming gently skimmed his fingers over Qin Xingxuan's body. She snuggled up to his chest like a cat. Both of their hearts were filled with an unprecedented peace.

After a long time passed, Qin Xingxuan seemed to suddenly remember something. She said, "Husband, before Old Man Good Fortune left, he left you a letter. You might want to take a look at it."

Lin Ming faintly smiled. “I already know what Senior Good Fortune wants to say; it’s about the matter of ascending. Unfortunately, I cannot go along with Senior Good Fortune’s wishes. Senior Good Fortune already has a sect that he has devoted his life too and that sect is less suitable for me than the Ancient Phoenix Clan. I’m also only at the fifth-stage of Life Destruction; it’ll be difficult for him to open a space gate for me. I can only decline Senior Good Fortune’s kind intentions.”

Lin Ming planned to ascend as soon as possible; he certainly wouldn’t wait until he reached the Divine Sea. “Xingxuan, If there’s no accident, I’ll stay in the lower realms for another year or two. Before I go, I’ll help raise your cultivation to the Revolving Core and Yu’er’s cultivation to Life Destruction. Tomorrow we’ll go on a little adventure; I’ll bring you somewhere fun.”

“Mm? Where?”

“You’ll know once we get there.”

The place Lin Ming brought Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu to was the Blood Slaughter Steppes – the Road of the Emperor.

With Steppes Master Lin Ming bringing them, there was certainly no one that would dare stop Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu from entering the Road of the Emperor. Moreover, most of the Tower Masters and High Lords were controlled by Demonshine. In the future, the Blood Slaughter Steppes would become a great support for Divine Phoenix Island.

Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu split up and went to two different Sky Split Towers, separately entering the Road of the Emperor. As for Lin Ming, he also entered and began to perceive the emperor stone tablets.

The road of the Emperor stone tablets were far inferior to the road of will lights in term of mysteriousness. The emperor stone tablets were carved with Laws that geniuses had left behind after they passed through the Road of the Emperor. Besides a few people like the Demon Emperor, none of these emperor stone tablets entered Lin Ming’s eyes. Even the highest of these emperor stone tablets were inferior to the exquisiteness of the Thunder Laws jade slip left behind by Jiang Ziji.

Lin Ming was a bit disappointed by this.

Empyrean Primordius and the goddess from the Eternal Demon Abyss had each left behind one will light, but they hadn't left behind any emperor stone tablets. Lin Ming's greatest harvest on the Road of the Emperor was from entering the grandmist space that Empyrean Primordius had left behind. He managed to form his grandmist battle spirit in a single go and even came into contact with the mystical Chaos Laws.

No such lucky chance existed in the road of the Emperor stone tablets.

For the next year, Lin Ming assisted Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu in cultivating, passing their days in love and warmth.

During this year, Qin Xingxuan succeeded in breaking into the Revolving Core realm. Compared to Mu Qianyu who broke into the Revolving Core realm at 30 years of age, she was two years faster.

As for Mu Qianyu, she was at the peak of the late Revolving Core realm, just a single step away from Life Destruction. This was also because she felt her foundation and background were lacking, so she intentionally suppressed her cultivation. Otherwise she would've already broken through.

As for Lin Ming, he had used this year to thoroughly stabilize his cultivation and purify his understanding of Laws. He completely eliminated all hidden dangers left behind by the ridiculously rapid rise of his cultivation.

In spring a year later, on a clear sunny day, Lin Ming brought Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan to Divine Phoenix Island's Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, where they entered the restricted zone.

Before Lin Ming entered the restricted zone, the Temple Spirit already felt his presence.

An old and indifferent voice echoed in his ear, “It’s been a long time, trial challenger.”

“Mm. It’s been a while. I apologize for disturbing Senior’s sleep. I came this time to ask you a question. How can I break through the space barrier of this world? I would like to leave the Sky Spill Continent and go to the Divine Realm.”

The Temple Spirit said, “Trial challenger, Lady Fairy Feng already investigated the situation around the Sky Spill Continent. The space-time around this planet has been blocked off by some mysterious power. If you wish to create a space channel out of this world and ascend to the Divine Realm then it’ll be very difficult. The simplest method is to go to another world through a transmission array, then take a space channel through there instead. When you left Timeworn Phoenix City, Lady Fairy Feng also passed you several jade slips. One of those jade slips has a single hair of Fairy Feng. If you crush this jade slip, that hair will turn into an incarnation of her. You can rely on this to speak to Lady Fairy Feng again. “

“Mm? That happened?” Lin Ming was stunned. He didn’t think that Fairy Feng would leave behind such a contingency plan. When he left Timeworn Phoenix City, Fairy Feng gave him several Fire Concept jade slips so that he could perceive them. He never discovered anything strange with them.

The Temple Spirit said, “Lady Fairy Feng and Guru Blueflame calculated that you have karma within the Sky Spill Continent that you have not yet resolved, and a greater destiny that you had yet to inherit. If you prematurely ascend to the Divine Realm then you will not be able to fully delve into your potential. Thus, they allowed you to return to the Sky Spill Continent.”

“However, a most elegant white dragon fish is still restrained by the fishermen and birds. Although you’re a mighty dragon in a deep pool and you also have Lady Fairy Feng’s appreciation, before you grow, your fate will inexorably be filled with layers upon layers of trials and tribulations. Without anyone protecting you, even if your destiny is potent, there still exists the danger that you will perish.”

“So Lady Fairy Feng spent a hundred years of her cultivation to keep her incarnation in her hair to accompany you. She didn’t inform you of this so that you wouldn’t grow an arrogant heart and display your true potential instead, reaching the peak of destiny in the Sky Spill Continent and settling your karmic ties. But if you truly did suffer an accident and your life was on the edge between life and death, this jade slip would automatically shatter and Lade Fairy Feng’s incarnation would appear, comprehensively and completely protecting you.”

“Because of the laws that limit the Sky Spill Continent, this incarnation wisp only has a cultivation suppressed to the peak of the late Divine Sea realm. Even so, the incarnation perfectly inherited Lady Fairy Feng’s understanding of Laws. For her to exterminate someone like the Sky Spill Continent’s highest under the heavens would be as simply as waving her hand.”

The Temple Spirit unhurriedly said. Lin Ming took a deep breath. He never imagined that Fairy Feng handled so many matters in secret.

With Fairy Feng’s boundary, let alone having her incarnation suppressed to the late Divine Sea realm, even if it were suppressed to the Life Destruction realm, that would be more than enough to annihilate Yang Yun. It had to be known that Lin Ming was only at the fifth stage of Life Destruction and he managed to kill Yang Yun. Cultivation wasn’t everything. If Fairy Feng’s true form were to arrive on this world, even if her cultivation was suppressed to the fourth stage of Life Destruction she would likely be able to defeat the fifth stage Life Destruction Lin Ming. That was the disparity brought along by different boundaries.

“I never thought that Senior Fairy Feng would make such arrangements. I, Lin Ming, will carve this kindness in my heart.”

Lin Ming honestly said. He knew he was currently an unimportant person. If he showed great talent, he could still only be considered a talented junior. When he obtained first place in the smelting trial, that was only in the lower realms’ Timeworn Phoenix City. The smelting trial in the Divine Realm was far more terrifying; there were simply far too many geniuses there.

A new batch of talents appeared every ten years or so and these extreme talents accumulated for tens of thousands of years. Even if he was the most outstanding talent of his generation, that didn't mean he would achieve great accomplishments in the future.

With Fairy Feng's status, she still painstakingly arranged such a protection for him. This was enough for Lin Ming to remember this kindness.

The Temple Spirit said, "Lady Fairy Feng has indeed taken great pains to help you, but you also did not disappoint. From when you returned until now, that wisp of incarnation has never been activated. This is proof that you perfectly resolved your karmic ties in the Sky Spill Continent. You can now choose any time you desire to ascend. Of course, don't delay for too long. You already stand at the apex of the Sky Spill Continent. Your destiny in the lower realms has already reached its peak. The lower realms will only be your shackles. Only by continuing into the Divine Realm will you be able to broaden your horizons, seek greater lucky chances, meet stronger opponents, and soar into the heavens!"

"As for your cultivation being too low, you don't need to worry about that. Martial artists born within the Divine Realm occupy the vast majority. They also start from body transformation and go step by step in their cultivations. Within the Ancient Phoenix Clan, there's disciples at the Xiantian Realm and Revolving Core realm. Of course, there's also disciples at the Divine Sea realm and Divine Transformation realm. The Ancient Phoenix Clan is an immensely large clan; it's near impossible to count the number of clansmen. There's probably billions, tens of billions, or even a hundred billion clansmen. Each and every single one of them have a high degree of cultivation talent. Even then, while the Ancient Phoenix Clan is massive, it's insignificant in the face of the infinite Divine Realm."

The Temple Spirit's voice still lacked any emotion. These words made it clear just how vast and terrifying the Divine Realm really was. In terms of martial artists' strength, even if all one billion worlds of the three thousands boundless universes were added together, it still couldn't compare to the tiniest corner of the Divine Realm.

Lin Ming said, “Thank you Senior. This junior will spend another three months in the lower realms before officially ascending.”

“Everything is up to you.” The Temple Spirit’s voice faded away.

For the next three months, Lin Ming completely abandoned training. He brought his parents, Lin Xiaoge, Qin Xingxuan, and Mu Qianyu to sightsee, travelling all over the Sky Spill Continent.

These three months they rode high in the sky, looking down at the picturesque scenery. Sometimes they would disguise themselves as mortals, joining into the bustling marketplaces and experience the happiness and joy of common mortals. Other times they would spend money as if it were water. They would enjoy the most luxurious establishments in the world, savoring the high life of nobility.

During this tour, Lin Ming naturally drowned himself in the pleasures of Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu, becoming drunk on their bodies. Every night they would make love until the lingering dawn approached, intoxicating themselves in the smell of each other. As the three month deadline approached, the two women also gave up any sense of shyness and propriety, allowing Lin Ming to hold them both at night and enjoy the blessings of two wives. They serviced Lin Ming together, all of them basking in love and bliss.

A long life, thousands of years of youth, carefree without worry, endless wealth, beautiful women that willingly ran into his arms, his every need taken care of. In this world, as long as he wished for it, it would be his. Such a life could be said to be at the highest peak.

But all good things had to come to an end. The happy times were far too short. The three month deadline finally arrived.

It was time for Lin Ming to ascend to the Divine Realm.

Chapter 949 – Towards the Divine Realm

Chapter 949 – Towards the Divine Realm

…

…

…

Lin Ming took out the jade slip Fairy Feng left him and crushed it. For a while, countless dazzling lights formed in the sky, like a sea of fireflies had appeared. Space rippled and a red dressed woman seemingly appeared from nowhere. This woman was elegant and tied up her hair with a long hairpin. She looked at Lin Ming and smiled with appreciation.

"You have taken the initiative to crush the jade slip. Does this mean you have completed all matters before ascending to the Divine Realm?"

This wisp of Fairy Feng's incarnation was no different from her true self. As she spoke her eyes fell on Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan behind Lin Ming. She only needed to glance at them to guess the relationship between them and Lin Ming. If Lin Ming was ascending to the Divine Realm, these two women would naturally be Lin Ming's worries.

"Yes, everything has been completed." Lin Ming said.

"Good. For these past years in the Sky Spill Continent you've resolved your karmic ties without using the power that I left with you. You've reached the limit of your destiny and delved into the depths of your intention. Now, you may enter the Divine Realm without worry. In the future, you may return here and it can also be your true self that returns. When Empyrean Primordius left this barrier on the world, the truth is that it only affects those from the outside; it won't block martial artists that originate from the Sky Spill

Continent or Holy Demon Continent. Even if your future cultivation far surpasses the Divine Sea, you'll still be able to come back to this planet."

As Fairy Feng spoke Lin Ming was first startled, and then immediately overjoyed.

So that's how it was. It seemed that the reason Empyrean Primordius left this seal behind was to prevent his enemies from the Divine Realm from entering the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent. They might covet the Road of the Emperor, destroy the goddess' true body, or steal the inheritances that he had left behind.

However, local martial artists that originated from the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent didn't have this restriction.

It seemed that tens of thousands of years ago the Sorcerer of the Southern Wilderness also returned with his true body instead of his incarnation. If it was truly just his incarnation then it would have been difficult to leave behind those incomparably complex and exquisite 72 Sorcerer Pagodas.

Fairy Feng said to Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan, "You two have followed Lin Ming but now you must see your husband ascend, not knowing when he will return. That is a bit pitiful for you. I'll bestow upon you two a lucky chance as compensation."

Fairy Feng flicked her finger and two red balls of light sunk into Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu's body. Their bodies trembled for a brief moment and they felt as if they were lit on fire with endless energy rushing into them.

"These are flame seeds formed by three years of my cultivation and Ancient Phoenix blood; it also contains a fragment of Fire Laws. You can meditate on this and perceive it, melting it into your bodies as your train. This will assist you in breaking through to the eighth stage of Life Destruction and the late Divine Sea, giving you 10,000 years of life. That will bring you enough youthful vitality to wait for your husband's return. At that time, Lin Ming will also help you cultivate and perhaps you may even reach the Divine Transformation realm, obtaining 30,000 years of life and everlasting youth."

Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan were ecstatic upon hearing Fairy Feng's words. They rejoiced and hastily thanked her for her kindness. Which woman didn't wish to be beautiful, which woman didn't wish to have everlasting youth? With Fairy Feng's boundary, just how precious was a flame seed formed by three years of her cultivation as well as her refined Ancient Phoenix blood? Moreover, the two of them also practiced fire-attribute cultivation methods, so melting this flame seed would be much easier for them.

If they could reach the Divine Transformation realm and obtain 30,000 years of youth, just what sort of concept was that? The change of a royal dynasty happened every few hundred years. 30,000 years was enough to see a dynasty change a hundred times. Countless emperors, princes, nobles, leaders, all of them would pass by like clouds. Even Divine Kingdoms would fall during this time.

But they would retain their youthful appearance and vigor. To a mortal, that was nearly immortality.

Fairy Feng thought for a moment, then tossed out several bottles filled with pills into Mu Qianyu's hands. "These are spirit pills from the Divine Realm. They have mild effects. Among them are some fire-attribute pills that can help you break through boundaries, medicines that can help you wash your marrow and transform your body, and even some heavenly materials that can prolong a mortal's life to a thousand years. Take them and do with them as you see fit."

"Thank you fairy maiden." Mu Qianyu bowed once more. These pills gifted by Fairy Feng were likely far more precious than the entirety of what Lin Ming left them.

"Good. Lin Ming, if you have anything else to say then speak up. If you do not, then come with me to the Divine Realm."

"No. In place of my parents and family, this junior thanks Senior Fairy Feng." Lin Ming said.

"Very well. Then, let's go."

Fairy Feng waved her sleeve and a bright crimson flame wrapped around Lin Ming. Lin Ming only felt slightly dizzy as countless streams of multicolored light rapidly passed by him. Lin Ming passed through space channels several times – this was clearly a space channel.

He was extremely shocked. Fairy Feng didn't even use any array formations. She used her titanic supernatural powers to directly tear open the void and form this space channel!

"Senior Fairy Feng, you can actually shuttle through space by only relying on a late Divine Sea cultivation?" Lin Ming was floored. He defeated late Divine Sea level powerhouses and didn't feel much awed by them. But now with a similar late Divine Sea cultivation presented in Fairy Feng, she was actually able to cross the void.

And during the time crossing the void, they were travelling to other worlds. This was shuttling through billions of miles; it was simply unimaginable!

Fairy Feng said, "This is the great void shift. It's normally impossible to activate with a late Divine Sea cultivation, but I can make up for this difference with violet sun stones. The great void shift mainly relies on a martial artist's comprehensions into the Space Laws; you need to reach at least the sixth level of Space Laws and comprehend Space Storm before being able to do this."

Lin Ming had learned from Old Man Good Fortune that there were ten different levels in the Concept of Space.

They were: Space Distortion, Heaven's Divide, Dimensional Slash, Space Disruption, Spatial Genesis, Space Storm, Black Hole Vortex, Tenth Space Dimension, World Destruction, and World Creation.

Old Man Good Fortune had given a detailed explanation of the first five levels.

Heaven's Divide was to form a self-contained space, creating a defensive space all attacks would fail to reach.

Space Disruption was to use one's will to disintegrate space, then use the scattered power of space offensively.

Spatial Genesis was to form an independent minor dimension. This minor dimension would have the five main elements. It would have air and it would have the ability to contain life. Upon reaching this step, one could forge magic tools like the Extreme Violet Ring.

As for the sixth level Space Storm, that was to seize control of space storms. Space storms were formed from the power of space. Taking control of a space storm was to master the power of space.

Upon reaching this level, a martial artist could casually tear open the void and enter a space crack. With just a thought, they could take complete control of the originally all-annihilating power of space within that space crack. A martial artist could wrap themselves in this space crack to travel forwards like a fish swimming in the water. This was the great void shift!

At this boundary, a martial artist could travel back and forth through the boundless universe with just a thought. They could travel 10 billion miles in just the blink of an eye!

Lin Ming never imagined that not only Fairy Feng's comprehension into the Concept of Fire was extremely deep, but her comprehension into the Space Laws also reached at least the sixth level!

Fairy Feng realized Lin Ming's thoughts and faintly smiled. "The power of Laws each have their own uses. Of course it's great the deeper into Laws you're able to comprehend, but sometimes it's also good to not be greedy. If you focus on perceiving Laws too much, it'll become an obstacle in your cultivation. There are some martial artists that have reached a very high boundary in cultivation but still haven't managed to comprehend the sixth level of Space Laws. However, they can rely on some array formation magic tools to use great void shift."

"Yes, this junior understands." Lin Ming humbly said.

After an incense stick of time, the rainbow colored light around them disappeared. Lin Ming saw a sudden bright light and in the next moment he arrived within a grand hall. Rich fire origin energy was all around him; this was clearly no longer the world where the Sky Spill Continent was located.

It was impossible for Fairy Feng to break through the space barrier set up by Empyrean Primordius that divided the Sky Spill Continent's planet and the Divine Realm. They could only go to other worlds before entering the Divine Realm.

In this grand hall, a red dressed woman was standing. This was Fairy Feng's true form. The incarnation that led Lin Ming here turned into pure energy and flew into Fairy Feng's body. This incarnation was originally formed by adding a hundred years of her cultivation to a single hair; she could naturally take it back whenever she wished.

"Let's go. With your fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation, you will be hindered by the laws of the universe during your ascension to the Divine Realm. You'll need me to personally bring you there. The space channel between the lower realm and the Divine Realm is filled with the power of heavenly retribution; it's likely you'll be scorched to ashes."

"Yes. I must trouble Senior."

Fairy Feng brought Lin Ming onto an altar. This red altar was completely carved with red flame jade. From the lower realm to the Divine Realm, the space was locked up by the laws of the universe. Even if a martial artist comprehended Space Storms and was able to freely use great void shift, they would still need to borrow the power of an array formation to ascend. It was impossible to tear apart that void.

Therefore, whether it was flying to the Divine Realm from the lower realms, or returning to the lower realms from the Divine Realm, neither option was easy. One had to pay a large price every trip. Normally, after a martial artist reached the Divine Realm they wouldn't have the ability to return to the lower realms unless they cultivated to a high enough boundary and were able to afford the price.

The array formation activated and the dizzying feeling of transferring through space came over Lin Ming once again. Except this time was much more intense than the previous times. In front of Lin Ming countless beams of light formed together, forming a rainbow colored cloud. This was a retribution cloud and contained the power of heavenly retribution!”

For a Divine Sea martial artist to ascend to the Divine Realm was the rules of the Heavenly Dao. If one’s cultivation was lower than the Divine Sea, they would receive the impediment of the Heavenly Dao. The lower one’s cultivation was, the great this hindrance would be. If Lin Ming had decided to bring Qin Xingxuan with him, then even if Qin Xingxuan was hidden in the Extreme Violet Ring, she would still have to face the power of heavenly retribution and it would be even more powerful than what Lin Ming would have to face. Even Fairy Feng might not be able to block it.

Kacha!

Heavenly thunder turned into a surging purple dragon that shot towards Lin Ming. Since ancient times, thunder symbolized the power of heavenly retribution, and heavenly retribution normally expressed itself through the power of thunder.

Fairy Feng said, “Lin Ming, revolve your complete strength to resist this. Although I can scatter the thunder for you, there’s still a great deal of escaping energy that I cannot eliminate. Moreover, you must personally resist a part of this thunder tribulation, otherwise the heavenly retribution will only become increasingly formidable. I have some pills here. If you take them, they’ll increase your strength for some time and assist you in resisting the thunder tribulation.”

Fairy Feng flicked her finger and a red light fell into Lin Ming’s hand. At that same time, Fairy Feng struck her palm against that thunder dragon. Flames soared into the heavens, and behind Fairy Feng, a massive Ancient Phoenix phantom formed, wildly colliding with that purple thunder dragon.

Chapter 950 – Phoenix Cry Palace

Chapter 950 – Phoenix Cry Palace

…

…

…

With a ringing explosion, countless arcs of thunder and blazing flames surged outwards, blotting out the world!

Fairy Feng only needed a single attack to defeat the purple thunder dragon. It turned into a massive number of tiny specks of thunder energy that came falling over Lin Ming and Fairy Feng.

As Lin Ming saw this his mind stirred. He revolved the Heretical God Force and began to greedily absorb the tiny specks of thunder energy like a drunk in a wine cellar.

Within Lin Ming's body, the Heretical God Sprout trembled underneath the nourishing thunder.

This was the power of heavenly retribution; it was different from the thunder of the mortal world. The inherent energy was extremely pure and was greatly beneficial towards Lin Ming.

"Eh?"

Fairy Feng glanced at Lin Ming with some surprise. She thought that Lin Ming would have some trouble resisting the thunder, but he seemed to be smoothly swallowing up the power of thunder tribulation instead. Not only was he not injured, he even seemed to be obtaining some benefits.

“Lin Ming, I didn’t think that you would also have such high achievements in the Concept of Thunder. It seems as if…” Fairy Feng’s thoughts stirred and she immediately covered Lin Ming within her divine sense. It seemed as if she could see through him.

“Not bad! Not bad at all!” Fairy Feng praised. “Your body, after passing through the tempering of Thunder Laws several times has already become a thunder-attribute spirit body. Every cell within your body is activated through the stimulation of thunder. It seems you have an extremely high compatibility with Thunder Laws! Did you temper your body within thunder energy when you crossed Life Destruction?”

Fairy Feng had amazing eyesight. She could immediately see where Lin Ming’s thunder-attribute spirit body came from.

“Senior has excellent vision. That is exactly the reason.” As Lin Ming spoke, Fairy Feng scattered another bolt of heavenly retribution thunder once more. The dispersed energy was completely absorbed by Lin Ming. As the two spoke, they resisted the power of heavenly retribution in a extremely relaxed manner.”

“Very good. But when you enter the Ancient Phoenix Clan you must focus your studies on the Concept of Fire. The Thunder Concepts are mainly concentrated in the Thunder Dragon branch of the Ancient Dragon Clan. There’s also the Ancient Kirin Clan’s Electric Violet Kirin branch. My Ancient Phoenix Clan doesn’t have any great inheritances for the Concept of Thunder. You have passed the first five stages of Life Destruction by tempering your body in thunder, but from this point on you must temper your body within fire energy instead! This will allow your body to reach the extremes of thunderfire compatibility!”

Another bolt of divine thunder was split apart by Fairy Feng. She diverted 70% of this thunder energy and let the remaining 30% flow towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. His mind touched upon the Heretical God Sprout and he began to crackle as he prepared to withstand this bolt of thunder.

Kacha!

Lin Ming's protective true essence shattered and the power of thunder violently surged into him, crashing left and right as it rushed through his meridians. It reached the Heretical God Sprout, and as it did, Lin Ming felt his entire body go numb. But he was also inexplicably comfortable; he couldn't help but shout out loud.

"Good! Very good!"

Fairy Feng nodded. She linked her hands together and continued to split apart the incoming thunder. From diverting 70% of the heavenly retribution thunder, it became 60%, 50%, and then 40%, with Lin Ming having to withstand more and more of the power of heavenly retribution. His body was filled to the brim with energy as if he would burst apart at any moment. Suddenly, the Heretical God Sprout unexpectedly stretched out a little bud; the fourth leaf was about to grow!

The Heretical God Sprout successfully formed the third leaf only after absorbing the Purple Lion Thunder Source as well as accumulating a massive amount of thunder energy beforehand. But the fourth leaf was beginning to form only after absorbing the power of heavenly retribution which hadn't even condensed into a Thunder Soul or Thunder Source. It could be seen that heavenly retribution thunder was superior to an ordinary Thunder Source.

The current Heretical God Sprout now had four leaves. Three of them were thunder leaves and only a single one was a fire leaf. But this wasn't a problem. After Lin Ming entered the Ancient Phoenix Clan, the number of fire leaves would likely far surpass the thunder leaves.

The power of heavenly retribution became increasingly intense. Fairy Feng repeatedly blocked in the front, but afterwards, it wasn't just thunder, but also round dao diagrams! These were the rules of the Heavenly Dao. They naturally formed dao diagrams in space.

As Lin Ming saw this, he felt the terrifying strength exuding from the dao diagrams. He sucked in a deep breath. He thought that with his own thunder spirit body, once his cultivation rose he might even be able to resist the Heavenly dao and freely travel between the Divine Realm and the lower realms. But now it seemed that he was far too naïve in his expectations. These dao diagrams were too terrifying; if he bumped into one then he'd be reduced to ashes.

Fairy Feng's expression turned solemn. She lifted both her arms and a side world formed around him. This was the projection of Fairy Feng's inner world. Facing this Heavenly Dao, she couldn't help but wholeheartedly project her inner world.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Dao diagram after dao diagram was shattered by Fairy Feng with countless Law fragments bursting apart. This fierce collision continued for half an hour but Fairy Feng's strength seemed to be unlimited; her supernatural powers didn't weaken in the slightest.

After an hour passed, the last circular dao diagram was blocked by Fairy Feng. Lin Ming felt a brightness in front of him. The rainbow colored power of space around him vanished and he arrived in the air above a great world.

The skies above were vast and limitless, and the earth beneath him extended to eternity. The mountains below him seemed as small as sand and the rivers appeared like strands of silk. Lin Ming guessed that he was several thousand miles above the ground, but even though he was so high up, the ground beneath him had no end. This sort of scene was startling.

An earthshaking roar suddenly filled the air. He looked up and saw a thousand mile long ancient vicious beast flying through the skies. The ancient vicious beast had massive wings and a ferocious appearance. The pressure that it emitted was bewildering. Lin Ming could clearly feel that he was in no way a match for this vicious beast.

This was the Divine Realm?

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He discovered that the heaven and earth origin energy here wasn't pure like he had imagined. Rather, it was mixed and violent!

Five elemental energy, pure yang energy, extreme yin energy, life energy, blood demon energy, ghost energy, demon essence; a multitude of energies together, overbearing and brutal!

As he sucked in a deep breath of this energy, Lin Ming immediately felt the violet energies break into his meridians like wild horses. Of course, Lin Ming's boundary reached Life Destruction so suppressing this energy was easy. But for a martial artist at the body transformation realm or some other low level boundary, they might not have the ability to withstand this energy.

To use this energy to cultivate, one had to separate and purify it. If one wasn't careful during training then it was even possible to fall into madness.

"Divine Realm martial artists actually grow up in such an environment..." Lin Ming said, a bit dumbfounded. This kind of heaven and earth origin energy raised the threshold for those that could cultivate martial arts. Many martial artists with lower talents would not even have the qualifications to begin cultivating, otherwise, they might mess up the flow of energy in their meridians and die.

But for those martial artists with extraordinary talent, because they breathed in this violent heaven and earth origin energy since birth, their training was tempered and their strength was even more formidable!

Fairy Feng sensed what Lin Ming was thinking. She said, "The environment in the Divine Realm is much more brutal than the lower realms. Here is the true law of the jungle. Here, strength is not everything, strength is the only thing. Here, the competition is far more intense, and the fate of those who are eliminated is also far more miserable. You must know that a martial artist lives for a long time, and they have numerous descendants. Because of this, the population growth here is exponential. But no matter how broad and vast the Divine Realm is, the resources are still limited. It's impossible for the Divine Realm to bear such a increasingly massive population. Moreover, not every family clan has the ability to send the overflow of their clansmen to the lower realms. Here, the result of losing is often death."

Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. Indeed, if a martial artist lived for several thousand years or even 10,000 years, it wouldn't be strange if they had several hundred children. Most of these children would likely practice martial arts too, with a similarly long life. And their children would have children, continuing on and on. The population of a family clan would grow at ridiculous rates. One wouldn't even need 10 generations for a single person to produce hundreds of thousands or even millions of descendants.

The Divine Realm existed for countless billions of years. If death wasn't overwhelmingly common, then no matter how large the Divine Realm was, it would be packed full with people.

This was a cruel world!

"Let's go. I'll bring you to Phoenix Cry Palace. My Ancient Phoenix Clan has a total of three great family clans and seventy two palaces, all of them located on different worlds in the Divine Realm. In addition, there's also the independent Ice Phoenix Clan. They have a total of 36 palaces. The Ice Phoenix Clan tends to live in the extreme polar regions of worlds as well as worlds of snow and ice and other hidden worlds. They don't reach out to the outside world often and they also aren't managed by us. Even though the Ancient Phoenix Clan has a true total of 108 palaces, the number referred to is usually the 72 Fire Phoenix Palaces. I'm from Phoenix Cry Palace and am also the 69th seated disciple of the Phoenix Cry Palace's Palace Master."

"Uh. 69th disciple?" Lin Ming repeated, his mouth hanging open. In his impression, Fairy Feng's strength was extremely overbearing; he feared that she was no weaker than a character like the Demon Emperor. This impressive character was only the 69th disciple of Phoenix Cry Palace? And the Ancient Phoenix Clan had a total of 107 other palaces that were similar to Phoenix Cry Palace? Just how many masters were there?

Fairy Feng sensed Lin Ming's thoughts. She said, "The Phoenix Cry Palace Master has a total of 81 disciples; he gathered nine groups of nine disciples. And these 81 disciples also have varying levels of strength. The strongest amongst them that stand out are only 5-6 individuals, and these people are called the Vice Palace Masters. I'm one of the Vice Palace Masters of Phoenix Cry Palace."

"I see..." Lin Ming nodded. He found this much easier to accept.

As Fairy Feng spoke, she brought Lin Ming and tore apart the void again, using the great void shift once more. The space of the Divine Realm was extremely stable; it was countless times more difficult to tear space here as opposed to the lower realms. With Lin Ming's strength, his casual attack could shatter space in the Sky Spill Continent, but in the Divine Realm, his strongest attack was barely able to distort space.

After an incense stick of time, Fairy Feng broke through space and appeared above an endless sea. The seawater was unexpectedly a gold color. Looking at this dazzling sea of gold from afar, this sight was beautiful and mesmerizing.

Lin Ming looked all around but couldn't see so much as a shadow of Phoenix Cry Palace.

Fairy Feng formed a seal. The space in front of Lin Ming suddenly twisted, extending outwards like ripples in the water.

A several hundred foot gap appeared in space. And through this space gap, Lin Ming could see a world. A world hidden in the void; a world that was created by an overwhelming supernatural power. Phoenix Cry Palace was actually hidden in this world!

It had to be said that the space within the Divine Realm was extremely stable. For someone to split open and create a great world here, Lin Ming found it difficult to imagine just what level of character that must have been.

Chapter 951 – Contention

Chapter 951 – Contention

…

…

…

Casting out his divine sense to the limit, he wasn't able to sense the boundaries of this world. All he saw were billowing clouds, endless celestial mountains, immortal islands, and heavenly cave dwellings; this entire world was a paradise.

Floating amongst the clouds were countless spirit birds and spirit beasts. The spirit beasts rolled about in the air, many of them hundreds of miles long, some even a thousand miles long. Lin Ming could even see a sea serpent dragon in the distance, the same sort that had emitted the sea serpent gas in the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, the same sort of sea serpent dragon whose gas could form sea serpent crystals!

Phoenix Cry Palace's sea serpent dragon was over a thousand miles long, and its immense body was draped over a massive mountain range. It sprayed out ridiculous amounts of gas, but this gas was actually different from the black corrosive poison in the 8000 Mile Black Swamp. Rather, this gas formed rainbow colored clouds, beautiful and auspicious.

Besides the sea serpent dragon were golden crows, flame birds, vermillion birds, and many other birds and beasts of all colors that resembled phoenixes. All of them soared through the skies between heaven and earth; Lin Ming looked at this scene, awestruck.

These celestial mountains, immortal islands, endless clouds over an infinite sea, fairy birds, spirit beasts, and this world that was created within the void, all of this was shocking. Who cared about the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom or Demon God Imperial Palace? Those quasi-sixth grade and sixth grade sects of the Sky Spill Continent were nothing more than little uncivilized bumpkin villages compared to the massive metropolis of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's Phoenix Cry Palace.

Fairy Feng calmly brought Lin Ming into Phoenix Cry Palace. A 7-8 mile high five-colored bird immediately flew in front of Fairy Feng and prostrated itself before her.

This five-colored bird looked like a phoenix and also like a vermillion bird. Compared to this spirit bird, the vermillion birds of Divine Phoenix Island were nothing more than little chickens. Not even mentioning aura and pressure, just their size was unbelievable. This five-colored bird was 7-8 miles tall, but the vermillion birds of Divine Phoenix Island were only 70-80 feet tall; they just couldn't be compared.

Alas, nothing could be done about this. The current vermillion birds of the Sky Spill Continent were distant remnants of ancient birds that were inoculated with the blood of the Ancient Phoenix. Although the blood of the Ancient Phoenix had extremely mystical properties, several drops alone wasn't enough to allow these birds to reach the Divine Sea realm in strength. Moreover, the Sky Spill Continent's Ancient Phoenix Clan was extinguished 100,000 years ago. With no one to raise the vermillion birds, weed out the weak from their bloodline and further fuse Ancient Phoenix blood into them, after 100,000 years, those ancient vermilion birds bred with common birds, diluting their bloodline repeatedly until it was a faint shadow of the past. Now, they no longer had their past glory.

When Divine Phoenix Island was established, if a vermillion bird were to grow up they would reach an extreme Xiantian cultivation. If they could train some more, it would already be impressive for them to reach the late Revolving Core realm.

A few drops of Ancient Phoenix blood, after passing through the weakening of 100,000 years, just how much could there possibly be left?

This was the difference of inheritances. There was no comparing those vermillion birds to this five-colored bird in front of him.

Fairy Feng and Lin Ming stepped onto the five-colored bird. The bird spread its vast wings and soared into the skies, passing through layers upon layers of celestial mountains and immortal islands. After fifteen minutes, Lin Ming finally saw a titanic palace looming in front of him. This palace's dimensions were beyond belief; it simply looked like a small planet!

It was even possible that this palace was forged from a planet by a top Supreme Elder.

Lin Ming was deeply shocked. But thinking about it some more, this was also normal. The normal Ancient Phoenix Clan was comprised of three great family clans and 72 palaces. Each palace held several hundred million or even a billion Ancient Phoenix clansmen. With so many people, how could this palace possibly hold them if it wasn't the size of a planet?

Fairy Feng brought Lin Ming towards Phoenix Cry Palace. As they said, a mountain in the distance could run a horse dead. Even though Lin Ming could see Phoenix Cry Palace in front of him, and the speed of the multicolored spirit birds and beasts were at thousands of miles in the blink of an eye, they still flew for a long time before arriving at Phoenix Cry Palace.

As they neared Phoenix Cry Palace, Lin Ming could finally sense just how immense it was. Even the 7 to 8 mile five-colored bird he rode on was nothing more than a tiny speck of dust in front of this massive palace!

Within this palace, there were countless great jade temples and pagodas. Above the palace, there were nine great suns floating in the air, each of them showing a vague golden crow within.

Nine golden crows, nine suns in space!

Lin Ming very much suspected that the nine suns in the sky were evolved from the nine golden crow saint beasts. Phoenix Cry Palace was a true immortal paradise!

Approaching Phoenix Cry Palace, he could see countless Ancient Phoenix Clan disciples shuttling back and forth on spirit birds and spirit beasts. There were endless saint beasts and spirit boats flying about.

Many people bowed as they saw Fairy Feng. As one of Phoenix Cry Palace's Vice Palace Masters, she naturally enjoyed an extremely high status.

As Fairy Feng was about to bring Lin Ming down towards Phoenix Cry Palace, the sounds of heavenly music resounded in the air. Lin Ming looked up to see a massive ship carved in the form of a golden eagle, pulled by nine crimson sun birds, slowly flying towards them.

Around this large ship were 72 heavenly women flying, each of them slender and beautiful, fragrant and alluring. They carried various instruments, ribbons, flower vases, or art pieces, while chatting. Heavenly music lingered around them, making the scene look like an emperor was going out on a trip.

This large ship stopped in front of Fairy Feng. A thick curtain of divine silk was pulled open and a handsome man stepped out, holding a beautiful woman in his arms. He smiled at Fairy Feng from the great ship.

"I was wondering who it was, so it was Junior-apprentice Sister Yan."

The man lazily spoke to Fairy Feng, not even sparing a glance at Lin Ming. This man referred to Fairy Feng by her surname. Fairy Feng's surname was Yan, and her full name was Yan Fengxian. Fairy Feng was only a title.

Lin Ming could feel the aura and surging momentum from this man's body, as if a sleeping volcano was sealed within his body, absolutely terrifying. This man was another Divine Realm Supreme Elder that surpassed his understandings.

However, from this man's posture, he didn't seem to be on good relations with Fairy Feng.

As Lin Ming was thinking of this, Fairy Feng's eyebrow arched up. She coldly smiled and said, "Sun Yanming? What do you want? Thirty years ago you ate a Flame Yang Pill and borrowed the World Returning Divine Furnace Xiao Jiuyang to cultivate. You even used a time shifting array to slow time down, taking one year as ten years. You closed up for 30 years, but in fact that was equal to 300 years. For such a long time, you still haven't managed to make a breakthrough? Not only is your cultivation the same as it was 30 years ago, but your true essence isn't any thicker at all. You're truly a waste of resources!"

Fairy Feng's words left Lin Ming secretly flabbergasted. He never thought that Fairy Feng would have such a fierce side to her. Facing her enemy, her words sharply confronted him, harsh and contentious.

Fairy Feng's words were obviously meant to poke at Sun Yanming's sore spots. His complexion turned ugly as he was unable to refute her words. Sun Yanming glanced at Lin Ming and suddenly smiled, appearing much happier. He thought that Lin Ming was Fairy Feng's attendant, but now he discovered something interesting about him.

"You're a martial artist that ascended from the lower realms?"

Sun Yanming immediately saw through Lin Ming's status. The most significant difference between a Divine Realm martial artist and a lower realms martial artist was the true essence within their bodies. A Divine Realm martial artist cultivated with violent and mixed heaven and earth origin energy, making the energy within their bodies much more brutal and powerful; it wouldn't be so calm and gentle like the energy within a lower realms martial artist.

"To ascend with a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation, haha, you must have an unrivalled powerhouse who formed their own inner world as your protector to do so, otherwise you would be reduced to ashes by the explosive power of the heavenly retribution. No wonder, so it was Junior-apprentice Sister Yan who took a trip to the lower realms, consuming a massive amount of violet sun stones in order to bring you up? That's quite strange. A lower realms martial artist is actually held in such high esteem by Junior-apprentice Sister Yan, to the point she would bring you here?"

"Could it be that Junior-apprentice Sister Yan knows that she has no one to support her here in the sect and that it's impossible for her to compare with Senior-apprentice Brother Jiuyang? Does she want to establish her own forces and picked you up, the little baby boy, to do so?"

Sun Yanming intentionally bit out the words ‘little baby boy’, the mocking tone thick in his voice. Indeed, with his boundary, a fifth stage Life Destruction martial artist that ascended from the lower realms was indeed only a little baby boy. “Junior-apprentice Sister Yan, do you really plan on waiting for the lower realms martial artists to grow up and support you? Haha! Junior-apprentice Sister Yan, I must say, don’t you think your plan of relying on these lower realms martial artists is a bit too naïve?”

Sun Yanming rubbed his chin, sizing up Lin Ming and also wantonly piercing through him with his perception, seeing through his body. This was extremely rude behavior. Lin Ming tried as hard as he could to prevent this divine sense, but there simply wasn’t anything he could to do stop it.

“Haha, what a handsome young boy toy, he really is good material for a cute little gigolo.”

Sun Yanming exposed a disdainful smile, his meaning apparent. But his words actually angered Fairy Feng. A cold light flashed in Fairy Feng’s eyes, and in less than 1/100,000 of an instant, a light misty blue light shot out from Fairy Feng’s eyes and thrust into Sun Yanming’s body. Sun Yanming shook as something painful happened to him. His features twisted and he backed away, his face whitening.

This glance also interrupted Sun Yanming’s perception so that Lin Ming didn’t have to resist that powerful pressure anymore.

It was obvious that Sun Yanming was far inferior to Fairy Feng in strength, otherwise he wouldn’t have been forced back by a simple glance.

“That’s a battle spirit?” Lin Ming was startled. Everything had happened in a flash. He only managed to speculate that it was a battle spirit from the brief flash of light, and moreover, it was absolutely above a gold battle spirit!

Once one reached a gold battle spirit their will would be able to directly project onto reality and affect the real world, multiplying the strength of a battle spirit. Fairy Feng had obviously superseded this boundary.

The higher boundary a battle spirit was, the greater impact it would have on one's combat strength. Now, Fairy Feng had relied on just her battle spirit to have Sun Yanming eat a loss.

Lin Ming was a bit surprised. He thought that if this Sun Yanming was mocking Fairy Feng, then he should have strength at least equal to hers; he didn't think the disparity would be so great. Did he have backing behind him? Was it that Senior-apprentice Brother Jiuyang? If he obviously opposed someone stronger than him without someone propping him up from behind then that was just seeking death.

As Lin Ming was thinking, Yan Fengxian sent out a red beam of light that wrapped around Lin Ming. She coldly said, "We're leaving!"

Yan Fengxian disappeared like a bolt of lightning, leaving behind the gloomy Sun Yanming. Sun Yanming took out a soul recovery pill and swallowed it, his eyes flashing with a tint of fear and malice.

"Yan Fengxian, you're ruthless! I'll wait for the day that Senior-apprentice Brother Yang becomes the Phoenix Cry Palace Master, and on that day, you'll be finished. When that day comes, I will rip off your proud and haughty exterior and humiliate you!"

Chapter 952 – Nine Divine Shifts

Chapter 952 – Nine Divine Shifts

…

…

…

Led by Fairy Feng, Lin Ming flew on the five-colored bird towards Phoenix Cry Palace at lightning speed. A strong heavenly wind blew past Fairy Feng, sending her hair recklessly waving in the air. Lin Ming stood behind her, silent.

“Do you have some questions in your heart that you would like to ask?” Fairy Feng asked.

“I do have some questions, but it seems they are power struggles between the upper level figures of Phoenix Cry Palace so they don’t have much to do with me,” Lin Ming calmly said. His current boundary was simply too low. These high level power struggles of Phoenix Cry Palace didn’t have much of a connection to him.

“Simply because you don’t think you’re related doesn’t mean you aren’t. What is relevant to you will be relevant to you. Lin Ming, you are someone that I hold in high esteem, and as someone that I brought to Phoenix Cry Palace, you can be considered my person. As someone who is on my side, I can naturally provide you resources. But at the same time, you will also have to face many enemies.”

“Phoenix Cry Palace has a total of nine great Vice Palace Masters, the first of them being Vice Palace Master Sage Jiuyang, also known as Xiao Jiuyang. He is from one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s three great family clans, the Xiao Family Clan. He has been a disciple longer than I have, and his talent is extraordinary. He has experienced many fortuitous encounters, and is extremely strong. He has a massive amount of personal connections in the sect, and he is also ridiculously rich, to the point where he can toss away resources like they're nothing. There's many talented disciples, Palace Elders, and Hall masters that have received benefits from him. Many matters of Phoenix Cry Palace are also handled by him. Every year, the rising stars amongst the new disciples almost all follow him as subordinates. It can be said that within Phoenix Cry Palace, Xiao Jiuyang's words are as good as law. When the Palace Master goes into seclusion, Xiao Jiuyang often manages many of the important matters."

"The Palace Master will soon resign from his position, just another few hundred years. At that time, he'll go to the Ancient Phoenix Clan's core Heaven Phoenix Palace to enter closed door cultivation, and the struggle for the position of Palace Master will begin in earnest. Out of the nine great Vice Palace Masters, one of us will be chosen, and out of all of us, Xiao Jiuyang has the highest chances of winning."

As Fairy Feng spoke, Lin Ming immediately became aware of what was happening. This power struggle of authority was for the position of the Palace master. In the mortal world, when a Crown Prince struggled for the throne, they could sacrifice family and friends. The Vice Palace Masters of Phoenix Cry Palace were neither family nor friends. In the Divine Realm where strength was worshipped and respected above all, the power struggles would be even more ruthless.

Lin Ming asked, "Senior Fairy Feng, do you plan on struggling for the position of Phoenix Cry Palace Master?"

"Of course. Why wouldn't I struggle? As someone who walks the road of martial arts, the most important goal in my life is cultivation. Without cultivation, everything else is hollow. In order to increase my cultivation, I'll need massive lucky chances. Becoming the Phoenix Cry Palace Master is such a massive lucky chance. If I become the Phoenix Cry Palace Master, I'll be able to control this divine palace and freely move resources as I see fit. The treatment and resources enjoyed by the Palace Master cannot be compared to others. Of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's 72 palaces, each Palace Master commands their own land and receives the help of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Not just that, but everyone will ride on your coattails. Those that earnestly followed you will be able to enjoy good fortune, and as for those that worked against you, they'll suffer miserable fates."

"The man you just saw is called Sun Yanming. Although he is my senior, his strength is limited and he isn't even a Vice Palace Master. He flatters Xiao Jiuyang because he thinks that he will obtain benefits after Xiao Jiuyang becomes the Palace Master.

Fairy Feng thoroughly explained the situation to Lin Ming. Whether it was emperors of the mortal world, or Palace Masters of the Divine Realm, one had to have the support of others to struggle for status. If the entire Phoenix Cry Palace was willing to support someone, then the other Vice Palace masters couldn't struggle for the position even if they wanted to.

Fairy Feng started late and the moment when the Palace Master would resign was just several hundred years away. She had to cultivate her own troops to help her resist Xiao Jiuyang; it was natural for her to value Lin Ming so highly.

Lin Ming became clear on what was happening. Regardless of what his own attitude on the matter was, in the hearts of everyone else he had already joined Fairy Feng's side. But this result wasn't too bad. In a place where the factions were distinct, it was best to join one of them. Trying to maintain a neutral stance and fish for benefits from both sides was impossible. He would just receive a cold shoulder from both factions and obtain no resources at all.

Moreover, the reason that he could ascend to the Divine Realm with just a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation was all thanks to Fairy Feng helping him. According to Sun Yanming, she had to consume a massive amount of violet sun stones to help him ascend from the lower realms. Not just that, but she had even helped raise Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan's cultivation, and had even left behind an emergency life-saving jade slip.

Lin Ming certainly remembered all of these benevolences. If it weren't for Fairy Feng, Lin Ming would have had to wait until he reached the Divine Sea to ascend and that'd be a great waste of time.

In this world there were no good intentions without reason nor were there bad intentions with no reason. Even if Fairy Feng had a motive behind her actions, Lin Ming would still repay her kindness.

After understanding all this, Lin Ming said, “I thank Senior for the high appraisal. This junior won’t disappoint Senior.”

“Mm, good! If you follow me, I won’t treat you unjustly. Come, I’ll take you to get a status badge as well as give you some violet sun stones and jade slips.”

Fairy Feng brought Lin Ming to the Burning Sun Hall. This was a 1000 feet grand hall at the edge of Phoenix Cry Palace. After stepping into this flame colored grand hall, Lin Ming could feel a rich and savage flame aura blowing towards him.

There were already many disciples here waiting in line. All of them were new disciples to the Phoenix Cry Palace. There were many of them that had ascended from the lower realms like Lin Ming. But unlike Lin Ming, they all had a Divine Sea realm cultivation.

Just that group of people had over 200 individuals, and the overall line was over two miles long. It wasn’t strange when one realized how many people were gathered here. It had to be known that Phoenix Cry Palace was less of a palace and more of a planet. This was a great world with several hundred million people living here. Amongst these several hundred million people, the vast majority of them were at the Revolving Core realm or below. They weren’t disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace, but rather martial artists that diligently trained every year, going through all sorts of harsh inspections in hopes of being promoted to a disciple. There was always a great number of new disciples at Phoenix Cry Palace.

In the Sky Spill Continent, those that reached Life Destruction were extremely powerful, and those that reached the Divine Sea could rule over their own side of the world. But in Phoenix Cry Palace, the Life Destruction and Divine Sea realms were only the lowest basic requirements to apply for being a formal disciple.

When Lin Ming arrived he immediately attracted the attention of many people, especially since he was being escorted by Fairy Feng. Although they didn't know she was a Vice Palace Master, they could faintly feel just how terrifyingly formidable she was. And yet, such a character was leading a new disciple to obtain his status badge. Compared to all of them that had lined up here, the treatment was clearly different.

"Who is he?"

"I don't recognize him. He should be someone that ascended from the lower realms though. I wonder which clan he came from."

"Does he have special connections? Otherwise, how could he possibly trouble such a great person to lead him? He doesn't even need to wait in line!" A martial artist who also ascended from the lower realms grumpily said. He could only watch as Fairy Feng brought Lin Ming to the front of the line to obtain his status badge, while he himself was already waiting here all day.

"Humph, what connections could he possibly have? If he had connections, why would he go to the lower realms? He would've already been enjoying himself in the Divine Realm! I think that he must have offered some great treasure. Every year tens of thousands of new disciples enter Phoenix Cry Palace, I wonder just how many of them think to offer up some sort of treasure."

It wasn't known which martial artist said this, but everyone suddenly felt this made sense. They began to regret that they themselves didn't bring their own treasures. But then again, it wasn't simple to take out a treasure that could tempt the heart of a Divine Realm powerhouse.

Another martial artist jealously remarked, "I have no idea what good thing that brat picked up, but humph, it's stupid of him to give it away. Those that cultivate martial arts should focus on themselves, since when can others help you? If he finds a lucky chance, it's best to keep it for himself to use. I bet that brat won't last more than a few years."

Lin Ming ignored the envious stares of those around him. He obtained his status plate. Looking at it, he could see that there was a golden crow spreading its wings engraved into the front, and the words “Lin Ming Command” carved into the back.

Lin Ming came from the Sky Spill Continent’s Nuyan Family Clan, so he should be named Nuyan Ming. However, he felt that this name was a bit awkward so he decided to use his given name instead. In any case, the Ancient Phoenix Clan only looked at one’s bloodline; the surname was just for recording purposes.

Normally, a disciple that just joined would have to perform a variety of chores. For instance, guarding, mining, tending to the medicine garden, and so on. But because of his relationship with Fairy Feng, he was exempt from this mandatory service.

Moreover, this was different from the Fire Crow Command that ordinary disciples received; this was the higher level Golden Crow Command.

According to their rank, Phoenix Cry Palace disciples were divided into four different halls. These were Firebird Hall, Golden Crow Hall, Vermillion Bird Hall, and Phoenix Hall.

Lin Ming should have entered the lowest level Firebird Hall, but because of Fairy Feng, he directly entered Golden Crow Hall. If his future results were extraordinary, he would be able to rise up and enter Vermillion Bird Hall, and finally set his sights on Phoenix Hall.

From bottom to top, every hall had a massive disparity in treatment. Lin Ming certainly wanted to enter Phoenix Hall as soon as possible. He couldn’t help but ask Fairy Feng, “Senior Fairy Feng, how do I enter Phoenix Hall?”

Fairy Feng was already expecting Lin Ming to ask this. She explained, “There are two ways. The first is to reach Divine Transformation. You’ll then obtain the qualifications to enter Phoenix Hall. After you pass the entrance examination, you’ll be able to enter Phoenix Hall. But this examination is extremely strict. There’s many people that cannot pass it even after reaching the Divine Transformation realm.”

“And the second way?” Lin Ming wanted to enter Phoenix Hall earlier, the Divine Transformation realm seemed a bit distant to him at the moment.

Fairy Feng replied, “The second way is a bit more difficult. That is to reach the ninth stage of Life Destruction. If you do, you can directly enter Phoenix Hall without need for any examination.”

“Oh? The ninth stage of Life Destruction!” Lin Ming was stunned. This was quite the shortcut. From the way it sounded, even in the Ancient Phoenix Clan a ninth stage Life Destruction martial artist was quite rare.

The Divine Realm’s top talents were powerful, enjoying top resources and the guidance of World Kings. But these talents were only in the tiny minority. How many World Kings could there be, and how many top resources were there to be divided?

The Divine Realm had many people, and the average person was stronger than the average person from the lower realms, but they were far from being comparably with Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was confident he could reach the ninth stage of Life Destruction.

Fairy Feng saw Lin Ming’s eyes flash and she understood what he was thinking. She laughed and said, “Not bad. Indeed, you must break into the ninth stage of Life Destruction, otherwise you’ll meet a bottleneck at the Divine Lord realm.”

“After Life Destruction are the three great realms of Divine Sea, Divine Transformation, and Divine Lord. Each of these three large boundaries are divided into three small boundaries of early, middle, and late stages. Three small boundaries within three large boundaries, that is a total of nine. Every martial artist that walks the road of martial arts must ‘journey towards Ninefall for the Nine Divine Shifts’.”

“Journey towards Ninefall means to reach the ninth stage of Life Destruction, and completely transform your mortal born body into a spirit body. Without crossing the ninth stage of Life Destruction, it will be extremely difficult to complete the ‘Nine Divine Shifts’.”

Chapter 953 – Saint Artifact Pavilion

Chapter 953 – Saint Artifact Pavilion

…

…

…

“The Divine Sea boundary is the first step onto your road of becoming a god. Your dantian opens up to form a minor dimension, able to accommodate true essence as your dantian becomes a sea. Divine Transformation falls upon the word ‘transformation’. It’s where you evolve the world within your dantian to a dimensional realm. Finally, the Divine Lord realm is to truly become a god. A true world will evolve within your dantian and you will be able to sustain endless true essence. In addition, this world can even hold people, forests, lakes, seas, rivers, countries, and even stars! You can contain a massive number of your subjects in the world. When that happens, you shall be the god that they all believe in, you shall be their Divine Lord! That’s why this boundary is named the Divine Lord boundary; it’s to truly become a god.”

“If you can cross the nine stages of Life Destruction, that doesn’t necessarily mean you will become a Divine Lord. But after reaching the Divine Lord realm you won’t encounter endless bottlenecks and your potential will be far greater.”

Lin Ming was intrigued by the explanation given to him by Fairy Feng.. In truth, when he inherited the memories of the Ancient Devil, he became aware of the Divine Sea, Divine Transformation, and Divine Lord boundaries. But the Ancient Devil only knew that the Divine Lord boundary could contain forests and lakes. As for containing stars and even evolving the dantian into a great world that could contain countless people to live there, this was the first time Lin Ming heard of this.

According to Fairy Feng's description, this world could have countries, farms, wars, sacrifices, life and death, joy and sorrow, the emotions of passing time, countless stories and legends all being staged simultaneously; it'd be like a country in the Sky Spill Continent. There could even be martial artists that cultivated, using the heaven and earth origin energy that the Divine Lord would pour into their body's great world.

If they obtained a lucky chance they could even cultivate to the Divine Sea realm! Of course, compared to a martial artist that grew up in a true boundless universe, their difficulties would be multiplied many times.

A martial artist would become a divine god of their own inner world, with the worship of countless people. When they fought, they would even have the support of an entire great world's origin energy; just how powerful would that be?

It was almost impossible to imagine!

That was a true and tested Divine Lord.

Fairy Feng said, "Alright. Lin Ming, I have already informed your situation to Jun Yunrue. She is one of my people and will guide you to your own dwelling. Here is a jade talisman; you can use it to contact me if you wish. I hope that you will soon enter Phoenix Hall."

Fairy Feng flicked a spatial ring directly into Lin Ming's hands. Lin Ming swept his divine sense through the spatial ring and found that it contained not only a jade talisman to contact Fairy Feng, but also a massive amount of purple colored divine stones and a complete set of jade slips. Without a doubt, these were violet sun stones and the jade slips were fire-attribute cultivation methods and Concept of Fire jade slips.

This was obviously special treatment she gave only Lin Ming; ordinary disciples couldn't even beg for them.

After Fairy Feng left, several disciples walked over. The one leading them was a woman, and behind her were also three men and two women. One of these men looked older, while the three others appeared to be young disciples of Golden Crow Hall.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, I am Jun Yunrue. Honorable Master Fairy Feng already sent me a sound transmission and bid me to look after you.” As Jun Yunrue spoke, she carefully sized up Lin Ming. The four young disciples also looked at Lin Ming with strange eyes filled with judgment, their expressions filled with a thick envy.

Any person that could be personally led by Fairy Feng had to be highly valued in her mind and would likely have incomparably rich resources in the future. It had to be known that although Fairy Feng’s status was inferior to Sage Jiuyang within Phoenix Cry Palace, whether it was in power or influence, obtaining her recognition was only a shot in the dark for the vast majority of disciples. Phoenix Cry Palace was indeed divided into factions, but the majority of disciples didn’t even have the qualifications to enter a faction. They were too weak or their potential was too small. Others didn’t even notice them, so gathering them to their faction was useless to begin with.

“Yes. Senior-apprentice Sister Yunrue, I also look forward to your advice.”

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin is too polite.” Jun Yunrue faintly smiled. She introduced Lin Ming to the other disciples here. “This is Lin Ming. You may call him Junior-apprentice Brother Lin. All of you will have to look after him in the future. Honorable Master Fairy Feng has already sent a sound transmission detailing me on the situation. Junior-apprentice Brother Lin ascended from the lower realms, and he is the top 100,000 year talent of a great world there, able to kill a Divine Sea powerhouse at just the fifth stage of Life Destruction.”

As Jun Yunrue spoke, the other disciples’ eyes widened, especially upon hearing that he was the top 100,000 year talent of a great world and was able to kill Divine Sea powerhouses with a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation.

Although the martial artists of the lower realms were far inferior to the fierceness of the Divine Realm’s geniuses, it was still a great world with countless trillions of lives. Within such a great number of people, being able to be the top talent in 100,000 years was no trifling matter! Martial artists that ascended were also unrivalled geniuses of their era. They had great potential to begin with, and to them entering the Divine Realm was like a True Dragon plunging into the vast seas, ridding themselves of their shackles and going beyond all control.

The disciples behind Jun Yunrue were valued by Fairy Feng and they were all extremely talented individuals. Each one of them was a proud and haughty genius of their generation and they had all passed fierce competitions and brutal assessments. They were originally common subjects of the Phoenix Cry Palace world, and finally managed to make their way into the ranks of official disciples. Out of the hundreds of millions of lives on this world, they managed to stand out.

Although they were temporarily residing in Golden Crow Hall, it was more or less decided that they would enter Vermillion Bird Hall in the future. They even had high hopes of entering Phoenix Hall. However, they didn't have the qualifications nor were they as daring to call themselves the top 100,000 year talent of a great world. This title only belonged to a truly freakish monster.

Now that they saw Lin Ming in front of them, besides his handsome appearance and his ethereal, untouchable temperament, he didn't seem anything special at all. In fact, he was quite ordinary. It was hard to imagine he was such an extreme genius.

A male disciple couldn't help but curl his lips and say, "The top 100,000 year talent of a great world, this title seems a bit exaggerated, right?"

"I'm not saying I suspect you, it just seems a bit excessive to me. For instance, if I went to the mortal world and saw a random fortune teller who earned his meals by reading palms, and he told me that he was actually a Divine Lord realm powerhouse that wanted to experience life as a common mortal, wouldn't that be a bit shocking?"

The man shrugged as he spoke. Jun Yunrue's complexion turned a bit ugly. "What kind of stupid analogy are you trying to make? It's a complete mess. Well, whatever, first we'll bring Junior-apprentice Brother to his residence and help him familiarize himself with the area here. Let's go."

As these disciples were discussing, Lin Ming didn't interject once, only lightly smiling throughout. He guessed that Fairy Feng only heard about his matters from the Ancient Phoenix Great Temple's Temple Spirit, and the Temple Spirit's knowledge of what happened outside of the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm was extremely limited to begin with. Fairy Feng probably didn't understand what his true strength was.

As they were walking, the several Golden Crow Hall disciples didn't give up. They tried to strike up a conversation with Lin Ming, asking, "I must say Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, I heard that you killed many Divine Sea level powerhouses. How many have you slain?"

"Mm, around 15 to 20." Lin Ming truthfully said. He hadn't really been paying attention to how many he had killed.

"So, so many?"

The several disciples' eyes widened. "Good heavens, 15 to 20!"

Although the Divine Sea powerhouses of the lower realms couldn't be considered powerful, they were still Divine Sea martial artists; killing 15-20 of them was quite an amazing feat.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, my name is Lin Junzhi, it seems that we both share the same surname. You are really awesome. Out of those 15-20 Divine Sea powerhouses you killed, who was the most powerful amongst them? What was his cultivation?"

A young female disciple asked while blinking. She looked like a 16-17 year old young girl and was extremely cute and lovable, just like a small rabbit. Her manners were very polite.

Lin Junzhi had to admit that it was impossible for her to kill a Divine Sea powerhouse if she had a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation. However, the Divine Sea powerhouses of the lower realms were disgustingly weak, and there were even fourth and fifth stage Life Destruction martial artists that were able to rely on lucky chances to enter the Divine Sea. Their strength was pathetic to the point of being an absolute mess, so she did have a faint trace of hope of defeating someone like that.

Lin Ming frankly answered, “The strongest person I killed had an early Divine Sea cultivation.”

The strongest Divine Sea powerhouse Lin Ming was referring to was naturally Yang Yun. Yang Yun had failed to complete his Great Blood Refining Art and had finally relied on combusting his blood essence and ruining his Blood Law Eye in order to forcibly raise his combat strength to the middle Divine Sea for a short period of time. But his cultivation was truly at the early Divine Sea. However, as these disciples heard this, they assumed something different.

“Early Divine Sea realm. That’s not too preposterous.”

Lin Junzhi muttered to herself, patting her chest as if she were letting out a sigh of relief. If it were only the early Divine Sea, the disciples of Golden Crow Hall could also do it. Even their Elder Senior Jun Yunrue could accomplish that.

Another disciple with the surname Lui had an understanding expression as he said to everyone with a true essence sound transmission, “It seems this Lin Ming really did kill a Divine Sea master with a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation. I heard that the Divine Sea powerhouses of the lower realms are generally absurdly weak, so facing such a Divine Sea powerhouse, it’s possible to kill 15 to 20 of them if he does so one at a time.”

“Mm, I also believe I can do this. Even if I can’t kill them, I can still defeat them.”

“Yeah, and that title of number one talent in 100,000 years might not be so real either; there are many lower realm talents that don’t have this sort of title. But if he has exceptionally rare talent, there might be some people that wanted to win him over so of course they would compliment him and choose some pleasant words like giving him the title of top 100,000 year talent. This title simply spreads around and is repeated to the point that everyone confuses what is real with what is fake.”

“Indeed, Senior-apprentice Brother Liu’s explanation makes much more sense.”

The several disciples spoke amongst each other and quickly found their minds calming down. These talents were all very proud and haughty individuals, they certainly didn't want to admit that they were weaker than others. Of course, since Lin Ming was personally brought here by Fairy Feng, it was natural he was stronger than them. So long as he was just a tad stronger than them, they could accept it.

As the disciples were talking amongst themselves, Jun Yunrue only listened, not interjecting her opinion. Finally, as they were discussing the 'final result', she finally said, "There's no limit in the universe, there's always higher heavens and stronger people. Don't think that the martial artists of the lower realms are all inferior to the martial artists of the Divine Realm. Although the Divine Realm is vast and boundless, the lower realms are just as great. The number of martial artists in the lower realms might even surpass those of the Divine Realm!"

Jun Yunrue glanced at Lin Ming. She could feel that he was restraining his aura within his body. Although she couldn't speculate anything based on this, she believed in Fairy Feng's judgment and knew that she wouldn't be wrong. Lin Ming would inevitably prove that he was an outstanding talent. But as for how strong he actually was, that would be seen in the future.

She suddenly thought of something, saying, "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, since you just arrived at the Divine Realm you shouldn't have a good weapon in hand. How about I bring you to Saint Artifact Pavilion to choose one?"

Saint Artifact Pavilion was not a simple weapon storage area. To choose a weapon here depended on one's strength and talent; it wasn't as simple as it seemed.

Chapter 954 – Deliberately Creating Difficulties

Chapter 954 – Deliberately Creating Difficulties

…

…

…

"Saint Artifact Pavilion! Great, let's all go!" When Saint Artifact Pavilion was brought up, the other disciples became giddy. Within Saint Artifact Pavilion, there were no treasures besides saint artifacts. Moreover, saint artifacts had massive differences depending on the rank. A peak saint artifact was completely different in value from a general saint artifact. Saint Artifact Pavilion contained not only general saint artifacts but also top ranked high-grade saint artifacts. Of course, whether or not someone could obtain it all relied on their own abilities.

When Lin Ming heard of Saint Artifact Pavilion, he was also tempted. He hadn't held a weapon he liked in his hand ever since the Purple Comet Spear. Lin Ming had replaced weapons several times, but because of their different natures they didn't suit him too well.

The first low-grade heaven-step white spear he obtained within the Eternal Demon Abyss had been tossed to him by Duanmu Qun who had bartered for it with a High Lord. It didn't even have its own name. The quality was rather ordinary and he only casually used it.

As for the second heaven-step, that was a red spear given to him by Timeworn Phoenix City, a common service weapon for being a trial challenger there. Besides that it was exceptionally durable and fire-attributed, it didn't have any other special characteristics.

The third, the Great Desolate Blood Halberd was a saint artifact rank weapon, but it was still a halberd, not a spear. Moreover, it wasn't too useful for boosting his Concepts and

Laws, and a halberd wasn't flexible to begin with. This simply wasn't suited to Lin Ming's fighting style.

The fourth, the purple spear was a thunder-attribute weapon left behind in the Extreme Violet Ring by Jiang Ziji. He also only occasionally used it.

Now as Lin Ming heard Jun Yunrue mention he could choose a weapon at Saint Artifact Pavilion, his interested was piqued. "Then I must bother Senior-apprentice Sister Jun to guide me."

Jun Yunrue said, "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, in Saint Artifact Pavilion, the type of saint artifact you can choose, and whether or not you can at all, will depend on your own ability. If you cannot obtain one, you'll have wasted this chance. You must remember this and make sure you grasp the chance you are given."

"Oh?" Lin Ming was startled. He thought that he could choose any weapon from Saint Artifact Pavilion, but now it seemed that there was some other mystery behind it.

Jun Yunrue said, "It isn't easy for us to exchange enough resources to enter Saint Artifact Pavilion. If you aren't able to obtain a high-grade saint artifact, even a low-grade saint artifact is a very good result. 95% of the Golden Crow Hall's disciples don't have a saint artifact, and even many disciples of the Vermillion Bird Hall haven't been able to obtain one yet either."

Even the most ordinary of saint artifacts had a decent value; in the Divine Realm, saint artifacts weren't as common as cabbage. Within the entire Sky Spill Continent, there were only about ten or so saint artifacts, and even a Divine Kingdom would only have 1 or 2 available to stabilize the destiny of their nation. The Sky Spill Continent's saint artifacts were all passed down from ancient times 100,000 years ago, and after that, no one had ever been able to forge another one.

Jun Yunrue let the group directly to Saint Artifact Pavilion.

……

Phoenix Cry Palace was built atop a planet, with countless palaces, halls, temples, and other buildings scattered throughout; the area it covered was simply terrifying. In order to pass between different areas of Phoenix Cry Palace, one needed to take transmission arrays or fly for long periods of time.

Lin Ming and the others passed through several transmission arrays on their trip to Saint Artifact Pavilion. Along the way, he saw a massive city with city walls that were over a thousand feet high and spread to the distant horizon. In terms of length and width, this city was several thousand miles. It was equal to a great province in the Sky Fortune Kingdom. There was no city in the Sky Spill Continent that could compare with it.

Such a large city could easily sustain a hundred million people!

However, within the cities of Phoenix Cry Palace, there were substantial amounts of smelting trial areas and related resources. For instance, mountains and jungles where vicious beasts were raised, or grand array formations used for training and testing. Only several million people lived in these cities. They all had a great deal of space, and every family had their own palaces to live in.

Lin Ming passed his perception through these families and discovered that nearly everyone here trained in martial arts. A 12-13 year old child was at the second or third stage of body transformation and at 18-19 years of age they were at the Houtian realm. This meant that the number of talents was also much higher.

The food these people ate was far from what martial artists from the lower realms could compare with. There were all sorts of vicious beast meat, spirit fruits, and spirit vegetables. They would even soak in medicinal baths at a young age, helping their foundation be extremely solid.

Lin Ming couldn’t help but sigh in praise. The martial artists of the Divine Realm would start cultivating at a young age. They took spirit pills and spirit foods from birth, and what they bathed in were medicinal baths. They lived in palaces and what they wore were array clothes. When they went out they would ride on spirit boats and visit others by passing through transmission arrays. If they wanted to train, they could visit any of the training grounds near their homes.

There was also a massive difference in inheritance. Although it wasn't the top class inheritances of the Divine Realm, it was still far superior to those from the lower realms. In addition, their bloodline talent also vastly exceeded those from the lower realms in quality. This was why they were able to create a martial arts city, a city where everyone practiced martial arts!

With such massive cities developed by a super sect to act as their foundation, how could there not be tremendous amounts of geniuses raised and developed?

Jun Yunrue glanced at Lin Ming and could see the interest playing in his eyes. She smiled and said, "This is a mortal city. There's several hundred similar cities like this in Phoenix Cry Palace, and every city has several million people. Added together, that is hundreds of millions of people, most of whom are mortals. As for us, we also came from these mortal cities. We showed our skills, rose above the several hundred million people, and finally became disciples of Golden Crow Hall. Let alone Golden Crow Hall, even the lowest Firebird Hall has intense competition to enter. All mortal juniors hope to one day become an official disciple of Phoenix Cry Palace, soaring into the skies with a single leap."

As Jun Yunrue spoke, Lin Junzhi blushed. She said somewhat embarrassedly, "What are you talking about. I'm still far from being comparable with Senior-apprentice Sister Jun."

"Haha, Junior-apprentice Sister Lin, your potential is great. Honorable Master Fairy Feng favors you a great deal. Well, let's end this conversation for now. We've finally arrived at Saint Artifact Pavilion."

Although Jun Yunrue said that, Lin Ming only saw rolling clouds above an endless ea. But above the clouds, there was actually a massive pavilion, floating amongst the clouds as if it were a mirage. On the pavilion there was a giant golden signboard that had three words written in large flowing strokes.

‘Saint Artifact Pavilion’.

“Come, let’s go.”

Jun Yunrue led everyone to the gate of Saint Artifact Pavilion with a sense of familiarity. This was a spacious square paved with fiery red stones as if they were some sort of fire jade. These fire jades were clear and iridescent, shining with a faint red light, seeming as if there was a raging flame simmering within them. These beating flames exuded an incomparably rich fire origin energy, and the massive amount of fire origin energy gathered into the air, forming the faint outline of a dao diagram. Although this was only the elementary form of a postcelestial dao diagram, for them to be formed by just the rich energies here and with no one actively stirring them up, this was proof that the fire origin energy was of a ridiculously high quality!

At this moment, a squad of guards riding fire lions crossed their paths, directly stopping in front of Jun Yunrue and her group. This squad of guards had a Divine Sea cultivation, and the captain was impressively at the late Divine Sea realm.

Lin Ming could feel the energy coming from these guards. Most of them had crossed the seventh stage of Life Destruction, and the captain had likely crossed the eighth stage of Life Destruction. The aura they emitted was formidable.

An eighth stage Life Destruction late Divine Sea cultivation. Lin Ming had to admit that he wasn’t a match.

As the guard captain saw Jun Yunrue, he clamped his legs down on the fire lion’s sides, stopping it and the squad of guards. He cheekily smiled and said, “So it’s Golden Crow Hall’s Junior-apprentice Sister Jun. How come you decided to visit Saint Artifact Pavilion today?”

Jun Yunrue frowned. “I came this time to guide my Junior-apprentice Brother Lin to choose a weapon. I hope that Senior-apprentice Brother Song won’t make things difficult for me.”

“Haha, of course I won’t make things difficult for you. Saint Artifact Pavilion is originally for disciples of Phoenix Cry palace to choose a weapon or magic tool for their own use, why would I think of hindering Junior-apprentice Sister Jun in any way? Well, according to the rules of Saint Artifact Pavilion, those that enter can only choose a single saint artifact, and what they choose will all depend on their own ability. If they can’t obtain one then that is only their own bad luck. Oh, right, those that enter Saint Artifact Pavilion must pay 3000 phoenix cry seal marks or an equal value in violet sun stones.” The guard captain licked his lips as he looked at Jun Yunrue and Lin Ming with greedy eyes.

“What? 3000 phoenix cry marks!? Entering Saint Artifact Pavilion only costs 1000 phoenix cry seal marks! Why are you charging us three times the price?”

The so-called phoenix cry seal marks was a point system for the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace based on the merits they performed. For instance when killing enemies in sect wars, finding heavenly materials, and handing in cultivation jade slips of other sects, these and other tasks, one could receive phoenix cry seal marks according to their contribution. There were even some people on the level of Sage Jiuyang who could create their own martial skills and pass those to the sect as inheritances and receive a corresponding amount of phoenix cry seal marks.

The phoenix cry seal mark was a form of currency used solely in Phoenix Cry Palace. It could be used to purchase a number of sect benefits. Entering Saint Artifact Pavilion was one such sect benefit.

“Oh? Is that so? Too bad, it seems prices have risen recently.” The guard captain smiled, clearly containing a mocking meaning behind it.

Jun Yunrue’s complexion turned overcast. The rules of Saint Artifact Pavilion hadn’t changed for 10,000 years. If there was such a great change it would be spread throughout the entire palace, but there had been no news at all. It was clear that this guard captain was deliberately creating roadblocks for them, but there was nothing she could do about it. She only had an early Divine Sea cultivation; she wasn’t a match for this guard captain. As the Elder Senior Sister who managed Fairy Feng’s faction at Golden Crow Hall, she led her juniors-apprentice brothers and sisters here to choose a weapon. But they hadn't even passed the gate and yet there were difficulties blocking their way. How could she possibly raise her head in this circumstance?

"Song Baifeng, I'll remember this!" Jun Yunrue grit her teeth and traced her spatial ring, preparing to pay the 3000 phoenix cry seal marks for each disciple. It was best to let Lin Ming choose a weapon before doing anything else.

At this time, Lin Ming's true essence sound transmission echoed in her ears. "Senior-apprentice Sister, what's going on here? They're only the guards of Saint Artifact Pavilion and yet they can arbitrarily extort you like this? Is there no one that can manage them?"

As Lin Ming saw Jun Yunrue about to capitulate, he couldn't help but ask her this. This was simply too outrageous. In such a massive place like Phoenix Cry Palace, how could a late Divine Sea realm guard be so arrogant?

Jun Yunrue shook her head, "They are Sage Jiuyang's people. Not only are the guards of Saint Artifact Pavilion his people, but also the guards of the Pill Pavilion and the Scripture Pavilion, all of them are disciples subordinate to Sage Jiuyang. Within the entire Phoenix Cry Palace, besides the Palace Elders and the Phoenix Cry palace master, Sage Jiuyang can be called omnipotent. Do you really expect to count on the Palace Elders and the Phoenix Cry Palace Master to worry about minor matters like this? So these people under Sage Jiuyang can randomly make rules up to hinder us because we are Honorable Master Fairy Feng's people and there is nothing we can do about it. Do you think we can go complain to Sage Jiuyang or something?"

"These guards know this so they are deliberately creating troubles for us to line their own pockets. Of course, Sage Jiuyang is also happy to see these situations occur."

Chapter 955 – Huang Yuehong

Chapter 955 – Huang Yuehong

…

…

…

Sage Jiuyang's people were lurking everywhere within Phoenix Cry Palace. This meant that all those who dared to be hostile against him would be pushed aside!

If Fairy Feng herself were here today, then Song Baifeng wouldn't even dare to say a single rude word. Otherwise, that would be offending a Vice Palace Master and Fairy Feng would have the authority to punish him on the spot.

However, Jun Yunrue and her group had no choice but to swallow this insult. In the end, she was just too weak. Her cultivation was only at the early Divine Sea. Even if her talent far surpassed this Song Baifeng in front of her, she still wasn't his match at this moment.

As for the disciples behind Jun Yunrue, they were only at the seventh and eighth stage of Life Destruction or at the half-step Divine Sea; they weren't any better. They would be instantly defeated by Song Baifeng.

Lin Ming wasn't any better either. His cultivation was only at the fifth stage of Life Destruction while Song Baifeng was an eighth stage Life Destruction late Divine Sea realm martial artist, far superior to the early Divine Sea Yang Yun.

The weak could only allow themselves to be suppressed everywhere.

"Song Baifeng, I will remember this." Jun Yunrue took out a jade book from her spatial ring. After opening the book, one could see pages covered with rows upon rows of dense red seal marks, as if they were phalanxes of tadpoles. These were phoenix cry seal marks, a type of contribution point that Phoenix Cry Palace recorded for their disciples. Every contribution point was a single phoenix cry seal mark, and they could be transferred or traded to others. Because many resources at Phoenix Cry Palace required phoenix cry seal marks to purchase or access, they were much more welcomed by the disciples than violet sun stones, a type of currency that was always in demand.

Jun Yunrue waved her hand and several thousand red seal marks left the jade book. At this moment, a rich and compelling voice suddenly sounded out. “Isn’t that Junior-apprentice Sister Jun Yunrue?”

Everyone turned to see a spirit boat flying towards them. This spirit boat was carved from priceless jade and it was being towed by nine golden crows. At the bow of this spirit boat, an elegant youth in embroidered robes slowly flew down, accompanied by two others behind him, both of which had a late Divine Sea cultivation.

The elegant youth held a folding fan, his feet stepping atop an auspicious cloud. Motes of light faintly floated around him as if he were an immortal exiled from heaven.

This youth’s cultivation was deep like the sea, and his appearance was extraordinarily handsome. He emitted a kingly atmosphere from head to toe, making one feel awed in his presence.

If this person were described within the world of mortals, then he would be a naturally born emperor. Whether it was his temperament, aura, or appearance, everything he possessed was so.

“Huang Yuegong, Senior-apprentice Brother Huang!”

As Song Baifeng and the other guards of Saint Artifact Pavilion saw this elegant youth, they were surprised for a brief moment before revealing flattering smiles. They hurriedly jumped off their fire lions to greet him.

To dismount when greeting someone was an expression of respect, otherwise it would give off a commanding and superior feeling. When Song Baifeng faced Jun Yunrue and the others, he didn't step off his mount. But now he rapidly dismounted. It was clear that this person had a noble status.

"Who is that?" Lin Ming couldn't help but ask with a true essence sound transmission. Although he could feel that this elegant youth had an early Divine Sea cultivation, he could feel that his aura was vastly different from others. In other words, he was an extremely terrifying individual.

Jun Yunrue took a deep breath and said, "That is Phoenix Hall disciple Huang Yuegong. He has a ninth stage Life Destruction Divine Sea cultivation! Don't look at him being at just the early Divine Sea realm. In true battle, his strength even surpasses Song Baifeng. His foundation is absolutely solid, and in the future he even has great hopes of becoming a character on the level of a Divine Lord! Moreover, after reaching the Divine Lord realm, the inner world he creates will be far larger than others. It might hold mountains, rivers, seas, and even stars."

"Oh? Phoenix Hall? Ninth stage of Life Destruction!"

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. Phoenix Hall was the highest rank of disciple, equal to a core disciple.

He deeply gazed at Huang Yuegong. Besides Fairy Feng and a few others, this was the first time he truly saw a ninth stage Life Destruction powerhouse. A ninth stage Life Destruction powerhouse was indeed far more horrifying than an eighth stage Life Destruction martial artist!

Jun Yunrue continued, "Not only is Huang Yuegong strong, but his background is the Huang Family Clan. The Huang Family Clan is one of the three great family clans of our Ancient Phoenix Clan, along with the Huo Family Clan and the Xiao Family Clan! Within Phoenix Cry Palace, the ones that cannot be provoked are these types of individuals, those that are extremely strong and also come from prominent noble families. That is the reason why Song Baifeng flatters him like this."

"I see..." Lin Ming said, suddenly aware. This sort of person was strong and their roots were deep. Offending them would often lead to a miserable outcome. Only they were allowed to step on others; no one would dare move against them.

"Could he also be in Sage Jiuyang's faction?"

Jun Yunrue said, "The Huo, Xiao, and Huang Family Clans intensely compete amongst each other, but in the Ancient Phoenix Clan, they're all connected through various divisions of benefits. They'll certainly support the juniors of the three great family clans over others. In Phoenix Cry Palace, the Huang Family Clan supports the Xiao Family Clan, and in some other palaces, the Xiao Family Clan will support the Huang Family Clan. This Huang Yuegong is also one of Sage Jiuyang's people. He hasn't grown too strong now, but in the future once he reaches Divine Transformation or even the Divine Lord realm, he will definitely become a big boost to Sage Jiuyang's position!"

Lin Ming understood the approximate situation about Huang Yuegong at Phoenix Cry Palace. Although he was only a junior for now, he would inevitably shine in the future, blooming into brilliance.

Huang Yuegong didn't land on the floor, instead staying floating in the air. As he watched Jun Yunrue and the others, his expression and eyes were just like a king overlooking his subjects. The other disciples behind Lin Ming drew back several steps. Against such a character they lacked the energy to withstand the tremendous pressure.

In the end, they came from humble origins and were ordinary themselves. In the face of someone from the Ancient Phoenix Clan's noble Huang Family Clan, they naturally felt awe and fear.

“Someone that ascended from the lower realms.” Huang Yuegong instantly discovered Lin Ming and his eyes swept through him. Lin Ming felt a perception rush through his body like a vast and surging tide, as if all his secrets were being flipped over.

However, this feeling left just as fast as it came, lasting only for the briefest of moments. After, Huang Yuegong ignored Lin Ming as if he hadn’t seen him at all, instead treating Jun Yunrue and the two other female disciples to a bright smile.

“Junior-apprentice Sister Jun, how are you? Are you here to find a saint artifact? If Junior-apprentice Sister Jun needs a saint artifact, in truth you only needed to speak to me. Here, I just happen to have a good saint artifact here that is for women to use. It would be better served in the hands of Junior-apprentice Sister Jun.”

Huang Yuegong flicked his hand and a bracelet flew toward Jun Yunrue. This bracelet seemed as if it was forged from starlight. In an instant, it wrapped around her hand without leaving her the chance to react. This also reflected the vast disparity of strength between Huang Yuegong and Jun Yunrue.”

As the twinkling silver bracelet was worn on Jun Yunrue’s white arms, it was especially beautiful.

“This is, a low-grade saint artifact?” Jun Yunrue’s eyebrows shot up. As she looked at her hand, an incredulous expression was etched on her face. She wanted to decline it but she hesitated instead.

“Yes. That is a low-grade saint artifact called the Chain of Stars. If you wear it, it has the effect of nourishing your soul. Moreover, when you revolve your true essence it will enhance your strength by 10%.” Huang Yuegong said with a smiling face.

A saint artifact was very precious and many disciples of Vermillion Bird Hall didn’t even have one. An accessory type saint artifact was several times more valuable than other types of saint artifacts. A low-grade saint artifact bracelet far surpassed an ordinary medium-grade offensive saint artifact in value.

For instance, Lin Ming’s saint artifact bracer was able to increase his perception. It played an extremely helpful supporting role when he was comprehending Laws. This was one of the more prized treasures he had obtained from the Temple of Marvels.

The bracelet Huang Yuegong just casually gifted wasn’t much worse than Lin Ming’s saint artifact bracer. It was extremely difficult for Jun Yunrue to decline this gift; she really liked this bracer. Moreover, the use of this bracer was amazing. With it, Jun Yunrue’s strength would increase and she could rise even quicker and enter Phoenix Hall, becoming a core disciple.

Huang Yuegong chuckled, “Junior-apprentice Sister Jun, this bracelet looks beautiful on you, as if it were custom made for your wrists.”

Jun Yunrue’s appearance was exceptional. Her chest was full and seductive and her legs were straight and slender. Her butt and thighs curved up deliciously, and her expression was usually stern. Due to her beauty, this sternness actually contained a beguiling charm. Because of this, Jun Yunrue was also exceedingly appealing even in the Ancient Phoenix Clan where beauties were present like clouds. She attracted the attention and pursuit of many men.

Moreover, Jun Yunrue was favored by Fairy Feng and her talent was good. Although she was currently in the Golden Crow Hall, in truth she could enter the Vermillion Bird Hall whenever she pleased. It wouldn’t even be a problem for her to enter the Phoenix Hall in the future. Her prospects were bright and shining.

The action of Huang Yuegong sending out this bracelet was obvious in its meaning. Behind Jun Yunrue, Lin Junzhi and the other female disciple looked on with expressions full of envy.

As Huang Yuegong saw the two young women’s responses, he faintly smiled and said, “Although this is my first time meeting these two fellow junior-apprentice sisters, our meeting can also be considered a stroke of fate. Here are two low-grade saint artifact swords; consider them a meeting gift.”

Huang Yuegong waved his hands and two saint artifact swords shot out. These two swords sparkled with a bright light, sharp and cold. One could see they were excellent swords at first glance!

As Lin Ming saw these two swords, he couldn't help but sigh at just how shamefully and excessively wealthy Huang Yuegong was. Out of all the swords he had seen throughout his life, besides the Argent White Sword surpassing these two swords in quality, all other swords were like scrap metal in comparison.

"This, this..."

As Lin Junzhi received this sword, her cute face blushed red. She never thought that Huang Yuegong would gift such a precious gift on their first meeting. She came from a humble mortal background, so where could she ever obtain a saint artifact? And now someone actually gifted her this divine sword, how could she not be amazed.

Behind Lin Junzhi, the other male disciples had expressions thick with envy. They licked their lips and looked at Huang Yuegong, hoping that he would also gift them something.

As Lin Ming saw their eyes, he shook his head.

As for Huang Yuegong, his eyes flashed with a trace of disdain. He folded his hands together, holding no meaning of giving them anything.

Behind Huang Yuegong, one of his two subordinates laughed heartily, "These two idiots, who do they think they are? Young Master gave the sister apprentices saint artifacts because he favors them. Especially that Jun Yunrue, she is truly a top quality woman. Those two ridiculous fools, they have the face of a slave, have they ever even looked in a mirror? It's like they really think they're in high demand or something."

The other subordinate said, “This also can’t be helped. Yan Fengxian came from a common origin, so the disciples she gathers are mostly from the same common origin. To the poor, an ordinary saint artifact can have their eyes go red with jealousy!”

Chapter 956 – The Rules for Obtaining a Saint Artifact

Chapter 956 – The Rules for Obtaining a Saint Artifact

…

…

…

The two lackeys talked with each other using true essence sound transmissions. They sized up the two male disciples, looking at them the same way a noble looked at a beggar.

Huang Yuegong maintained a smiling expression; the deep loathing and contempt he felt was hidden deep within his eyes. As for the two male disciples, they didn't notice anything at all. They didn't realize that the only reason Huang Yuegong was showing such grace was due to the presence of Jun Yunrue, otherwise he would have told them to screw off.

Huang Yuegong was rich but it wasn't like saint artifacts fell from the sky. There were still many beauties he could give saint artifacts, so how could he waste them on these two ugly pieces of trash?

"I must say young master, I think that this little Jun girl is tempted by you. Haha, and who can blame her? Young master is so handsome and dashing, and he even gifted such a valuable gift on their first meeting, which girl wouldn't have her heart moved by this? It's a surprise she isn't already obediently crawling into young master's bed!"

"Hehe, this Jun Yunrue's talent isn't bad. If young master can suck up her primal yin energy, it'll be beneficial to young master's cultivation method. Moreover, her figure is so soft and ample, I'm sure she tastes great. If the two other female disciples are added on top, then it'll be that much better!"

The two lackeys' words were filled with crudely suggestive innuendos. Huang Yuegong maintained his composure and said, "I don't value this Jun Yunrue just because I desire her and want to conquer her. The key factor is that I value her potential. She has an over 70% chance of stepping into Phoenix Hall and becoming a core disciple in the future. Once her cultivation is higher, she can even be a useful helper to my cause. I have a complete understanding into the behavior of women like her. Once I conquer her body and mind, she will follow me with her entire heart. Moreover, she is also one of Fairy Feng's people. If I conceal my relationship with her and leave her as a spy with Fairy Feng, that would be even better."

Huang Yuegong swung his fan, his expression brimming with confidence. He had a tremendous amount of experience in chasing after women. These past years, he succeeded in obtaining the hearts of countless women, moreover, they weren't common women either. They were all outstanding geniuses that were proud daughters of heaven.

"Amazing! Young master's methods are so amazing!" The two lackeys endlessly flattered Huang Yuegong, spewing out all sorts of praises. It was obvious they were skilled in flattery.

"I thought that young master only wanted to satisfy the desires of the flesh, but I never imagined young master would plan so far into the future. This is really hitting two birds with one stone. Not only can young master enjoy this girl, but she will also be a servant to young master! Fierce, way too fierce!"

Huang Yuegong's exchange with his lackeys only took an instant; Jun Yunrue obviously didn't know of it. She bit her lips and reluctantly looked at the beautiful and useful bracelet on her wrist. She took it off, and said, "Senior-apprentice Brother Huang, this gift is just too precious for us. I cannot receive it."

Although the bracelet was good, Jun Yunrue wasn't an idiot. To hand her such a gift on a simple meeting, it was clear that Huang Yuegong was pursuing her.

Receiving this gift would be equal to tacitly consenting to the pursuit of Huang Yuegong. If that happened, sooner or later she would be conquered by him. The key problem was that Huang Yuegong was Sage Jiuyang's person while she was Fairy Feng's person. How could the two of them ever have a future together?

Even though Jun Yunrue dearly desired this bracelet, she had no choice but to return it.

As Jun Yunrue returned the bracelet, Lin Junzhi and the other female disciple also hesitantly returned their swords. They were well aware of the twisting circumstances to them receiving these gifts; it was clear that Huang Yuegong targeted Jun Yunrue. Since Jun Yunrue returned her gift, it would be shameful if they kept theirs.

"Junior-apprentice Sister Jun, this is only a minor gift. It means nothing to me, so please don't decline it."

"I really cannot receive this. I can only turn down Senior-apprentice Brother Huang's good intentions."

Huang Yuegong faintly smiled as he saw Jun Yunrue firmly turn down his gift. He said, "That's fine. It seems I was too brash in presenting this gift and offended a beauty. It doesn't matter if Junior-apprentice Sister Jun refuses this gift. After we finish our treasure hunt at Saint Artifact Pavilion, how about we share a meal and talk further?"

Huang Yuegong knew when to stop. It was clear that Jun Yunrue was tempted this time. As long as she was tempted, there was hope. If he could launch another offensive in the future and do something that she liked, this beauty would be his sooner or later.

Only this sort of difficult women that cost him time and effort would raise his ardor. Just waving a hand and having a girl join his bed was meaningless.

"That is, I still have some matters to manage later. I'm afraid I cannot agree to Senior-apprentice Brother Huang." Jun Yunrue's expression and tone already softened. Although she and Huang Yuegong belonged to different factions, in the face of a gentleman who was so strong and came from such a prominent family and even treated her so kindly, it was impossible to say that she didn't have a favorable impression of him.

"It doesn't matter, we'll always have more chances in the future. That's right, Junior-apprentice Sister Jun was planning to enter Saint Artifact Pavilion? How many of you are entering?" Huang Yuegong didn't continue bothering her about the matter, instead switching topics.

"Three people. Me, Junior-apprentice Sister Lin, and also Junior-apprentice Brother Lin who just joined." Jun Yunrue indicated Lin Ming. From the beginning until now, Lin Ming remained unknown in the background. With his cultivation and background, it was easy for others to assume he was an attendant of some sort. In Huang Yuegong's eyes, this sort of attendant was no different from an ant. He didn't' even bother sparing him a glance.

"Oh? Three people? But when I was on my spirit boat I seemed to see Junior-apprentice Sister Jun pull out more than 3000 phoenix cry seal marks. It looked as if there were 9000 of them?

Huang Yuegong's eyesight was extraordinary; he could see the exact number of phoenix cry seal marks that Jun Yunrue had taken out. Song Baifeng panicked as he heard this. He quickly said, "Sir Huang, this servant should die, this servant was confused for a moment so..."

Song Baifeng was extremely tense. Being a guard for Saint Artifact Pavilion was a highly sought after role with many advantages. For him to reach this point with his common civilian disciple status, that was because he was able to predict the moods and mood changes of others; he knew who he could offend and who he had to flatter. As for someone like Huang Yuegong who had such a deep background, he could order any of them wherever he wished, even if it were to guard a tomb. The difference between them was simply like the heavens and earth.

How could he not be panicking?

The truth was that Huang Yuegong already understood the situation when he asked this question; he was only deliberately questioning the guard captain to show off his power. He frowned, pretending to be angry, “Song Baifeng, you are just a guard of Saint Artifact Pavilion and yet you dare to extort Junior-apprentice Sister Jun?”

“Sir Huang please forgive me, I will never dare to do something like this again. This servant has eyes but couldn’t see Mount Tai. This servant never knew that Junior-apprentice Sister Jun was good friends with Sir Huang. Had I known this earlier, I would’ve allowed her to freely enter Saint Artifact Pavilion.

Song Baifeng’s words were carefully chosen. Huang Yuegong was pleasantly delighted to hear them. He wished that he could clap Song Baifeng’s shoulder and say ‘good job!’.

“Humph, there better not be a next time. As a guard of Saint Artifact Pavilion, you should follow regulations in handling all matters. One thousand phoenix cry seal marks for one person, I will pay!”

Huang Yuegong raised his hands and took out 4000 phoenix cry seal marks. Jun Yunrue wanted to stop him but bit her lips, not saying anything.

As for Song Baifeng, he shook his head like a rattle, not willing to receive them. He wanted Huang Yuegong and the others to quickly enter free of charge.

This performance satisfied Huang Yuegong. Song Baifeng was indeed a smart man; he had shown him enough face. He said to one of his lackeys with a true essence sound transmission, “Give this Song Baifeng 15,000 phoenix cry seal marks later to make up for his losses today, otherwise this will be considered free entry. In truth, he would have to take out these phoenix cry seal marks from his own purse later. Although this minor character isn’t worth mentioning, he still shouldn’t suffer a loss since we must win him over.”

Huang Yuegong was utterly thorough in all matters, like a watertight basket. The lackey responded, “Young master has really considered all angles. Truly fierce. This servant will manage it later.”

Huang Yuegong smiled, “Since that’s the case, I won’t be humble. Junior-apprentice Sister Jun, let’s go.”

Huang Yuegong gestured invitingly. Jun Yunrue blushed. She waved at Lin Ming and the others, “Let’s go. Thank you Senior-apprentice Brother Huang.”

Song Baifeng led the way with a bright and shining smile. His attitude towards Jun Yunrue took a complete 180 degree turn, and all of this was because of Huang Yuegong.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Huang is really gallant.”

The disciples behind Jun Yunrue began speaking to each other with true essence sound transmissions. The female disciples had cheeks tinged pink.

“That’s right. Look at that Song Baifeng, he was like a dog seeing his master.”

“He’s handsome, strong, and even so generous. Where would you find such great husband material? How could Senior-apprentice Sister Jun reject him? Perhaps Senior-apprentice Sister Jun can even go with him and pull him over to our side.”

The two female disciples kept recalling the swords that Huang Yuegong gifted them, feeling it was a pity they had to return them. As Lin Ming was in their group, he also heard the true essence sound transmissions being exchanged. He could only secretly shake his head. The idea of winning over someone like Huang Yuegong was simply too naïve.

As the disciples were in discussion, they entered Saint Artifact Pavilion.

Song Baifeng fastidiously introduced, “For obtaining the treasures of Saint Artifact Pavilion, everyone should be well informed. But there’s some new junior-apprentice brothers and sisters that might not know, so I will blabber on for a bit.”

“Saint Artifact Pavilion is in itself a great magic tool with its own intelligence. In order to obtain a treasure, one must first obtain the approval of Saint Artifact Pavilion.”

“As for the factors that Saint Artifacts Pavilion considers, there are many. For instance, destiny, bloodline, perception, comprehension of Laws, and even your own moral character might be one. But those are only secondary. The truth is that the two most important aspects that Saint Artifact Pavilion considers are talent and potential!”

A martial artist’s talent was similar to their potential, but there were some slight differences.

Talent was a martial artist’s true comprehensive combat strength in comparison to their age. At the same age, those that were stronger had the greater talent. At the same strength, those that were younger had the greater talent.

But potential measures the future growth of a martial artist. A high talent didn’t necessarily mean a great potential. There were many eighth stage Life Destruction Divine Sea powerhouses that for all sorts of various reasons could surpass a ninth stage Life Destruction Divine Sea powerhouse in strength. But in terms of potential, they would be surpassed at some point.

In order to obtain a treasure in Saint Artifact Pavilion, one had to first earn the recognition of Saint Artifact Pavilion. As for the rank of the treasure, that would depend on how great one’s potential and talent were. While one only had to pay a thousand phoenix cry seal marks, which were hundreds of times less expensive than a true saint artifact in value, the truth was that most disciples that entered Saint Artifact Pavilion left empty-handed.

Chapter 957 – Phoenix Blood Spear

Chapter 957 – Phoenix Blood Spear

…

…

…

After Song Baifeng finished his introduction he pushed open the doors to Saint Artifact Pavilion. At the same time, a compelling slaughter energy surged outward, making all in its presence tremble. The several disciples beside Jun Yunrue felt as if they were turned into little babies with cold and sharp swords pointed between their eyebrows. A cold energy seeped into their bones, a killing intent overflowing into the world!

They couldn't help but draw back one step. Song Baifeng proudly said, "The saint artifacts in Saint Artifact Pavilion have histories of tens of thousands of years or even hundreds of thousands of years. Some have followed proud sons of heavens, and some have been handed down by Palace Elders. These saint artifacts have been quenched in the blood of countless battles and have been used to tear down numerous extreme powerhouses. The killing intent they emanate is terrifying."

Saint Artifact Pavilion was established several hundred thousands of years ago. Every year there were new saint artifacts brought in as well as saint artifacts taken out by disciples. Most of the saint artifacts here were low-grade saint artifacts, thousands of them. Beyond that, there were fewer medium-grade saint artifacts, even fewer high-grade saint artifacts, and finally only a small number of top grade saint artifacts. Amongst these top grade saint artifacts, there were some that approached a transcendent saint artifact, in other words, a spirit artifact!

Saint artifacts were divided into four grades; low-grade, medium-grade, high-grade, and top grade. It wasn't like common treasures that were divided into human-step, earth-step, and heaven-step, with many grades within.

Above a top grade saint artifact was a transcendent saint artifact. Some transcendent saint artifacts would gain their own spiritual sense. Once they gained life, they would also gain wisdom. The with transcendent saint artifacts with wisdom were called spirit artifacts.

A spirit artifact could even cultivate to raise its own boundary. Theoretically speaking, once a treasure reached the rank of a spirit artifact, it would have unlimited potential for growth and be able to rise without limit. This process was extremely difficult, far more so than a martial artist cultivating.

A person that could have a transcendent saint artifact or spirit artifact was a Supreme Elder that controlled their own territory, a true top character!

If a transcendent saint artifact was given to a martial artist at the Divine Sea realm, Divine Transformation realm, or even those at the weaker end of the Divine Lord realm, it would be difficult for them to draw out its full potential. They would only be able to display less than 10% of the artifact's power.

There were no transcendent saint artifacts placed within Saint Artifact Pavilion, but even an ordinary high-grade saint artifact was extremely heaven-defying. It would be able to greatly enhance a martial artist's strength. It was far from what a mere treasure tool would be able to accomplish.

In the end, a treasure was merely a weapon that didn't contain any strength itself. It relied on a martial artist pouring their true essence into it in order to become sharper and firmer, gaining the advantage in collisions with other weapons.

But a saint artifact was different. A saint artifact contained an inherent strength. From a common treasure to a saint artifact, that was the difference between a mortal and an immortal.

Huang Yuegong was disgustingly wealthy, but the most he could gift were low-grade and medium-grade saint artifacts.

As for high-grade saint artifacts, he wasn’t able to gift those, because he used high-grade saint artifacts himself. Moreover, he only had three.

Amongst saint artifacts, every different grade was dozens or even hundreds of times more valuable than a lower grade. As for a top grade saint artifact, not even Huang Yuegong had one. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that if Jun Yunrue managed to obtain a top grade saint artifact and also obtained the recognition of that saint artifact, she could immediately challenge Song Baifeng and even defeat him.

If Lin Ming obtained a top grade saint artifact, he would be able to instantly kill Yang Yun. Even if Yang Yun completed the Great Blood Refining Art and reached the middle Divine Sea, he would die all the same!

This was because a saint artifact in itself contained an immense power!

……

The interior of Saint Artifact Pavilion wasn’t a hall but an incomparably broad and vast world. As everyone entered they fell onto an endless plain. Floating above them were stars. Each star had the faint shadow of a saint artifact within it.

There were large and small stars, and the light they released also varied between strong and weak.

Song Baifeng said, “The brighter a saint artifact, the higher its grade and the more powerful it is. Each of you only has a single chance. Do what you wish. If you cannot pass the trial of Saint Artifact Pavilion, it means you will fail in obtaining anything here, and you will have wasted your chance. You may start whenever you please.”

“Junior-apprentice Sister Jun, please.” Huang Yuegong smiled as he spoke. He had a very explicit goal in entering Saint Artifact Pavilion this time and that was to obtain one of the several top grade saint artifacts. Although a high-grade saint artifact was valuable, he already had three of them. Phoenix Cry Palace had a rule; that was that a Phoenix Hall disciple could obtain at most two saint artifacts from Saint Artifact Pavilion no matter what grade it was. Other halls could only obtain one.

With this limit, Huang Yuegong definitely wanted to obtain a top grade saint artifact.

“Junior-apprentice Sister Lin, would you like to try first?” Jun Yunrue looked at Lin Junzhi.

“I…” Lin Junzhi looked at the stars floating above her, somewhat nervous. She was afraid she would waste this chance. Every attempt cost 1000 phoenix cry seal marks. To a humble disciple with common origins like her, this was an immense amount of wealth.

“Junior-apprentice Sister Lin, there is no need to be anxious. Just do what you can. Choose a low-grade saint artifact. With Junior-apprentice Sister Lin’s talent, there shouldn’t be any problems.” Huang Yuegong softly said, a smile brightening his complexion like the gentle warm rays of a morning sun. His smile contained a strange charm and inexplicably calmed Lin Junzhi down.

Lin Junzhi gratefully looked at Huang Yuegong and forcefully nodded.

She opened her already excessively large eyes even wider and looked at the numerous stars in the sky. Finally, it seemed as if she had decided something with a great deal of determination. She flew toward one of the modestly glowing stars.

What this star contained was a low grade saint artifact vestment.

A vestment type of saint artifact was naturally several times more valuable than a weapon type saint artifact. But it was correspondingly much more difficult to obtain.

Hu- !

With a light sound, Lin Junzhi was sucked into that shining starlight.

Now she had to face the test of Saint Artifact Pavilion.

Lin Ming wasn't completely sure just what this test entailed, but he could see that the star blazed even brighter and the space around it seemed to twist around.

"Good, she's managed to last for an incense stick of time. Junior-apprentice Sister Lin has hopes of succeeding."

Huang Yuegong smiled as he spoke. Every saint artifact was sealed within an illusionary space. If one was ejected early then that was basically defeat. Of course, there was also a chance that one could immediately pass through the test. However, what kind of idiot would choose a saint artifact they could obtain so easily instead of a higher ranked saint artifact?

Besides Lin Ming, the other disciples were secretly fretting over Lin Junzhi. They had no idea whether or not she would succeed.

One incense stick of time passed, two incense sticks of time, a quarter hour...

Time slowly passed. At this moment, the star suddenly flared out and Lin Junzhi was shot out. Her complexion was flushed red and she was panting for breath. She had clearly consumed a great deal of energy.

After Lin Junzhi was sent out, the star in the sky twinkled several more times and then a vestment slowly fell downwards. As this happened, the star gradually lost its light, dimming down until it disappeared.

Lin Junzhi grasped this lightly fluttering piece of clothing with a face filled with excitement. This piece of clothing was extremely bright and colorful, as if it had been made from the feathers of a peacock. There was also a faint halo that surrounded it. This halo was an extremely durable protection. It could merge into one's true essence. If someone wanted to harm Lin Junzhi, they would first have to break the protection of this saint artifact vestment.

“Congratulations Junior-apprentice Sister Lin, you have obtained this vestment and the quality is also extremely high. Compared to a weapon type saint artifact, it’s much more precious.

Huang Yuegong chuckled. Beside him, Song Baifeng also congratulated her. Lin Junzhi felt a bit embarrassed by all the praise.

She clutched this attractive piece of clothing to her chest. What kind of girl didn’t love beauty? This vestment wasn’t just beautiful but it was also highly useful. To Lin Junzhi, it was the perfect gift.

“Junior-apprentice Sister Lin, you’ve done well.” Jun Yunrue said.

It was already excellent for someone new that entered Saint Artifact Pavilion to return with something in their hands. Lin Junzhi was also someone that was favored by Fairy Feng. Her obtaining this vestment proved that Fairy Feng’s judgment was correct.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, would you like to try taking one?”

Jun Yunrue glanced at Lin Ming. Lin Ming shook his head, “Senior-apprentice Sister, I haven’t chosen one yet. I’d like to look around some more.”

Lin Ming could see that at the area near the entrance of Saint Artifact Pavilion, the saint artifacts were all low-grade. When Lin Ming was at the Sky Spill Continent, he obtained five different saint artifacts; the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, the Coiling Martial Divine Furnace, the Extremely Violet Ring, the Extreme Violet Bracer, as well as the complete Demon Emperor Armor. There was also the quasi-saint artifact Cosmic Melting Furnace.

Afterwards, Lin Ming gave the Demon Emperor Armor and the Coiling Martial Divine Furnace to Mu Qianyu so that she could use it to stabilize the destiny of Divine Phoenix Island as well as to protect herself. The rest was brought up to the Divine Realm on his body. Since he already had the low-grade saint artifact Great Desolate Blood Halberd, there was no point in swapping it out for another low-grade saint artifact spear.

"That's also a good decision. Choosing a saint artifact is a great event. Take your time and look around, I will choose my own in the meantime."

Jun Yunrue walked deep into Saint Artifact Pavilion.

The depths of Saint Artifact Pavilion were much deeper than the area near the entrance. Here, the stars in the sky were far larger and much brighter. Many stars were dozens, hundreds, or even thousands of times brighter than those at the entrance!

In particular, the nine largest stars shined with a bright heavenly light, as if they were scorching suns!

The boundless atmosphere that surged from them left shock in Lin Ming's heart, leaving him dumbfounded.

Huang Yuegong's eyes revealed a trace of contempt as he saw Lin Ming's shocked expression.

A lower realms martial artist that ascended to the Divine Realm was similar to a country bumpkin entering into a great city. How would they ever have had the chance to experience the majesty of a top grade saint artifact?

As Huang Yuegong thought this, he proudly said, "Those nine stars that shine like suns are top grade saint artifacts. There are nine in total. In my Ancient Phoenix Clan, nine is our most precious and divine number which is why there's always nine top grade saint artifacts at Saint Artifact Pavilion. These nine saint artifacts are the nine suns that shine in the sky!"

"Among these nine top grade saint artifacts, there is a sword, a saber, a spear, a bow, a pill furnace, a vestment, a ring, a necklace, and an armor!"

"For instance, the Sunpierce Sword is forged by a late Divine Transformation master using a Solar Flame Essence as foundation. He placed it in his own inner world to temper it for an incalculable period of time, integrating countless heavenly materials to repeatedly refine it until completion. It is incomparably sharp!"

"Then there is the spear, the Phoenix Blood Spear. When that spear was forged, it was quenched not in water but in phoenix blood! How precious is phoenix blood? A martial artist normally only needs several dozen drops to soar into the heavens. If an ordinary bird were to obtain just a tiny bit of phoenix blood, it could transform into a golden crow or a vermillion bird! And that precious phoenix blood was actually used to quench this saint artifact. This Blood Phoenix Spear contains the essence of phoenix blood. It's impossible to guess just how strong it is!"

As Huang Yuegong spoke, his eyes shined with a heated passionate light. The reason he entered Saint Artifact Pavilion this time was for these nine top grade saint artifacts!

"Phoenix Blood Spear..." Lin Ming's eyes shone as he heard these words. As his vision fell onto the star of that spear, he couldn't move them away anymore.

Chapter 958 – Obtaining Treasures

Chapter 958 – Obtaining Treasures

…

…

…

Lin Ming looked as far as he could. He was able to vaguely make out a crimson long spear within the center of the blazing sun. Countless runes shined on its body and a vast and boundless atmosphere surged out from it.

Even though the nine suns hanging in the skies were the brightest of the many stars, they all had minor differences between then; some had a weaker light and others had a stronger light. The light of the Phoenix Blood Spear was one of the brightest; it was one of the most brilliant saint treasures. This proved that even though the Phoenix Blood Spear was a top grade treasure, it was still positioned at the top of its rank!

Besides the Phoenix Blood Spear, the Sunpierce Sword's light wasn't any dimmer. The sword was clearly a top saint artifact amongst all top grade saint artifacts. This was also within reason. Although the Ancient Phoenix Clan's inheritances varied with all sorts of weapons in use, the most common weapons were swords and spears.

There were many female disciples in the Ancient Phoenix Clan and the vast majority of them preferred to use swords. As for spears, because the Ancient Phoenix Clan waged war against many other sects in ancient times, they had to ride colossal firebirds and golden crows. During those dire times, a spear would be far more convenient than a sword.

"It's a wonderful spear." Lin Ming couldn't help but praise.

“Naturally, if we could obtain such a top grade saint artifact, that’d be awesome; I have no idea just how much our strength would increase. Moreover, the top grade saint artifacts all have the Laws of the Great Dao inscribed into them. If you can perceive them through meditation, it will be greatly beneficial.” A disciple standing next to Lin Ming said, a besotted look on his face.

“Dream on! You’re far from being qualified to obtain a top grade saint artifact. Only Senior-apprentice Brother Huang has such a chance.” Another male disciple ruthlessly poked apart the disciple’s daydreams.

“Oh, that’s right, Senior-apprentice Brother Huang, did you come this time to take a top grade saint artifact?” A female disciple echoed.

Huang Yuegong chuckled as he heard this question. He swung his fan and said, “That’s right, this time I indeed came for the several top grade saint artifacts. As for those high-grade saint artifacts, although they are precious, I do not lack them.”

“It’s just that, the top grade saint artifacts are far too difficult to obtain. Whether it’s the Sunpierce Sword or the Phoenix Blood Spear, both are extraordinary specimens of top grade saint artifacts, nearing the existence of transcendent saint artifacts. Even for me, I only have a 30% chance of success.”

“Even Senior-apprentice Brother Huang has just a 30% chance of success?” A disciple said with a wide open mouth.

Song Baifeng humphed, “What do you know? I have guarded the Saint Artifact Pavilion for so many years and no one has managed to take the Sunpierce Sword or the Phoenix Blood Spear. They are true top grade saint artifacts! You must know that even most disciples of Phoenix Hall use medium-grade saint artifacts, not high-grade saint artifacts. Those that can use high-grade saint artifacts are truly outstanding individuals within the Phoenix Hall!”

Song Baifeng’s flattery had reached perfection. Every word he spoke aimed to bring up Huang Yuegong, making him enjoy it very much.

However, what Song Baifeng said was also the truth. Most Phoenix Hall disciples used medium-grade saint artifacts. The disciples managed to enter Phoenix Hall after breaking into the Divine Transformation realm and then undergoing a strict test. As for those that directly entered Phoenix Hall by crossing through nine stages of Life Destruction, that was a minority.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Huang, show us your prodigious skills!” A female disciple said.

“Yeah, let us open our eyes!” Several disciples quickly repeated. Huang Yuegong swung his fan, thinking for a moment before snapping it shut. “I suppose I will try again this time. Although I made sufficient preparations this time, the truth is my chances aren’t too great. A top grade saint artifact really is too hard to obtain.”

“Junior-apprentice Sister Jun. how about we try taking a treasure together?”

Huang Yuegong said to Jun Yunrue.

“Mm, alright.”

At this time, Jun Yunrue had also found a saint artifact she liked; it was a sword, a medium-grade saint artifact. In fact, it was at the peak of medium-grade saint artifacts.

Jun Yunrue and Huang Yuegong flew up at the same time. Jun Yunrue flew toward the sword saint artifact while Huang Yuegong approached the top grade Sunpierce Sword.

The Sunpierce Sword’s light was in no way inferior to the Phoenix Blood Spear. Compared to the top grade saint artifact ring or saint artifact vestment, it was much more brilliant! As the several disciples saw Huang Yuegong fly toward the Sunpierce Sword, all of their eyes turned wide, including Song Baifeng’s. They steadily locked their eyes on the sky lest they miss a single moment of glory.

Puff!

Like a fish jumping into the sea, Huang Yuegong was directly sucked into the scorching sun that was the Sunpierce Sword, disappearing without a trace.

As for Jun Yunrue, she flew into the medium-grade sword's light to start the test of Saint Artifact Pavilion.

The other disciples eagerly waited. They looked at that blazing sun in the air, awe and expectation etched on their faces.

"Junior-apprentice Sister Lin, what did you encounter when you took that low-grade saint artifact?" A fellow disciple, Zhang, asked. He never attempted taking a treasure before.

Lin Junzhi said, "It was a complex test. Those saint artifact stars seem to have their own world within them. Senior-apprentice Sister Jun and Senior-apprentice Brother Huang are both attempting to take saint artifacts at a much higher grade, so the difficulty of their test should be far more difficult than mine."

As Lin Junzhi spoke her eyes never left the star that Jun Yunrue vanished into. She hoped with all of her heart that Jun Yunrue would be able to pass the test and obtain the saint artifact.

Time slowly passed. Fifteen minutes flew by. The light of the two saint artifact stars in the sky began to shine increasingly bright. Lin Ming silently looked, carefully branching out his sensation and remembering the faint changes within the characteristics of the light. He could faintly feel that the every saint artifact star that floated in the sky was in truth part of a great array formation, and each saint artifact served as the eye of that array. This array formation was incomparably mysterious; Lin Ming could only speculate.

He suddenly thought of something and asked Song Baifeng, "Could there be 9999 treasures within Saint Artifact Pavilion?"

Song Baifeng glanced at Lin Ming with some shock. He said, "That's right, there's exactly 9999 saint artifacts. 9000 low-grade saint artifacts, 900 medium-grade saint artifacts, 90 high-grade saint artifacts, and 9 top grade saint artifacts."

The Ancient Phoenix Clan worshipped and revered the number nine. Nine divided by nine was one and to pass nine was to return to one; this was a symbol of a phoenix being reborn through nirvana.

Nine was the extreme numeral; it in itself contained the principles of the Great Dao.

Saint Artifact Pavilion was in truth a low-grade spirit artifact. At its core, these 9999 saint artifacts composed a great array formation. Once a saint artifact was taken by a disciple, Phoenix Cry Palace would add in a new one to ensure that the total number of saint artifacts in the Saint Artifact Pavilion would always be the same.

Lin Ming understood more and more of this great array formation's mysteries as he watched. He unconsciously sunk his thoughts into comprehending it. At this time, he suddenly heard a light sound in the air. He looked up and saw that Jun Yunrue was ejected from the star in the sky that shimmered like a moon. Her complexion was flushed red as she landed on the ground.

"Senior-apprentice Sister Jun, how was it?"

Several disciples quickly circled her.

Although Jun Yunrue's breath was a bit rapid and she consumed a great deal of energy, her eyes were actually filled with excitement. She didn't reply to everyone's questions, instead looking up at the sky. After several breaths of time, the star in the sky began to gradually dim down, converging in on itself until it became a coldly shining treasure sword that fell down.

Zing –

As the treasure sword fell into Jun Yunrue's hand, it released a clarion cry.

Jun Yunrue successfully obtained the saint artifact!

“Congratulations senior-apprentice sister, congratulations!” Several disciples shouted out, overcome with happiness but also envy. This was a medium-grade saint artifact! Besides the elite disciples of Phoenix Hall, the others usually only had low-grade saint artifacts.

Jun Yunrue was currently only in Golden Crow Hall, soon to rise to Vermillion Bird Hall, but she managed to obtain a medium-grade saint artifact already. Once she entered Phoenix Hall, there was a high chance she would be able to obtain a high-grade saint artifact!

“Senior-apprentice Sister is fierce, you actually managed to obtain a medium-grade saint artifact sword. Senior-apprentice Sister’s strength will surely rise a great deal in the future!”

“That’s right, haha, with senior-apprentice sister supporting us in the future, we can surely move undaunted!”

As several disciples gleefully rejoiced, Jun Yunrue also couldn’t conceal the euphoria on her face. “Alright, alright, that’s enough flattery. If you all can display enough talent that Honorable Master Fairy Feng will admire your ability, she will surely reward you. At that time, what would a mere medium-grade saint artifact be worth?”

Jun Yunrue glanced at everyone. At this time, the burning sun that was the Sunpierce Sword began to violently tremble.

Everyone was startled. They looked up and heard an explosive sound as that sun burst out with a light ten times brighter than before. In that moment, someone was thrown out from the blazing sun; it was Huang Yuegong.

After Huang Yuegong was ejected, the blazing sun’s light gradually weakened down before returning to normal several breaths later.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Huang!”

“Senior-apprentice Brother Huang are you okay!?”

Several disciples quickly went over to help him as they saw him being tossed onto the ground. In particular, Song Baifeng was the most attentive. He faithfully rushed over to give him mouth to mouth.

“Young Master! Young Master!” Huang Yuegong’s two lackeys arrived at his side like a bolt of lightning. They quickly took out all sorts of pills from their spatial ring, prepared to force feed him.

“What are you all freaking out for, I haven’t died yet!”

Huang Yuegong was enraged with shame. He shoved away the two lackeys that were trying to push pills in his mouth and looked at the Sunpierce Sword star in the air, his face darkening. It still hung there as before, continuing to dazzle like a sun with heavenly light, like a proud divine god that was looking down at the world, mocking all the mortals that presumptuously bit off more than they could chew.

“This damned sword!” Huang Yue indignantly spouted out. His eyes flashed with an ominous light. He came here today with great hopes of obtaining this treasure, but now he failed to obtain the sword and also lost face, especially since it was in front of Jun Yunrue. He wanted to use this chance to impress and conquer Jun Yunrue, but now his face swept the floor.

As he looked at Jun Yunrue, he could see that she managed to obtain the sword she tried for. This caused Huang Yuegong to be even more ashamed. Today, three people tried to obtain a saint artifact and only he failed.

Song Baifeng was looking at the situation and saw Huang Yuegong’s dilemma. He quickly said, “Sir Huang is fierce to face the Sunpierce Sword for half an hour. I’ve guarded Saint Artifact Pavilion for 30 years and the number of people that could withstand half an hour within the light of the Sunpierce Sword can be counted on two hands!”

Song Baifeng could be considered as restoring a bit of Huang Yuegong’s face. Although Huang Yuegong knew that Song Baifeng was clearly spouting drivel, he tacitly allowed him to do so.

Chapter 959 – Towards the Phoenix Blood Spear

Chapter 959 – Towards the Phoenix Blood Spear

…

…

…

“Sir Huang, would you like to try taking a high-grade saint artifact? Saint Artifact Pavilion has many high-grade saint artifacts that are of a very high quality. Although they cannot compare to the nine top grade saint artifacts, they are still quite formidable. With Sir Huang’s strength, taking a high-grade saint artifact should be no problem at all!” Song Baifeng improvised some advice on the spot as he saw Huang Yuegong’s face being swept all over the ground.

A high-grade saint artifact and a top grade saint artifact were different in terms of value by over a hundred times; they were on two completely different levels. Huang Yuegong certainly didn’t want to take a high-grade saint artifact, but taking a top grade saint artifact was easier said than done. What Saint Artifact Pavilion tested was talent and potential; these two factors normally wouldn’t change much no matter how high a martial artist’s cultivation grew. If there wasn’t some great lucky chance, then even if Huang Yuegong cultivated to the Divine Transformation realm and returned to attempt taking a top grade saint artifact again, the result would likely more or less be the same.

He thought of this, then glanced at Jun Yunrue. He stood up and said, “Okay, as a disciple of Phoenix Hall, I can take two saint artifacts from Saint Artifact Pavilion. Since I haven’t taken any before, I can take a high-grade saint artifact as my first and the Sunpierce Sword as my second!”

Since it was far too difficult to obtain a top grade saint artifact at this time, he might as well take a high-grade saint artifact to recover some of the face he lost here. Otherwise, as a chosen pride of the heavens who had an unfathomable image to his junior-apprentice brothers and sisters and as someone who was revered and respected by so many, if his only memory of this place were to be being flung to the ground almost vomiting blood after failing to retrieve a saint artifact, then that really would be too shameful.

He decided to try a second time. In Saint Artifact Pavilion, every attempt was 1000 phoenix cry seal marks. Of course, with his status, Song Baifeng wouldn't pursue this matter at all.

Huang Yuegong looked at the numerous saint artifacts in the sky and said, "Of the high-grade saint artifacts, I have a sword, a vestment, and a ring. What I'm still missing is a pill furnace!"

He settled on a star that shined like a full moon. He directly rushed up and submerged into that light!

Just from how bright the light was one could extrapolate that the pill furnace Huang Yuegong wanted to take was a peak high-grade saint artifact. Between high-grade saint artifacts, there was a massive difference in value between the best and the worst. If he could obtain a peak high-grade saint artifact, it would be of great help to enhance his strength.

"As expected of Senior-apprentice Brother Huang, he immediately chooses such a fierce treasure. I can't believe that this is his alternate to the Sunpierce Sword."

"That's right, this is a boundary that we can't imagine."

The disciples beside Jun Yunrue felt ashamed at their own weakness. They could only barely manage to obtain a low-grade saint artifact.

After Huang Yuegong sunk into the bright moon-like star, the light became increasingly dazzling until it began emitting beams of golden light that seemed like they could cut apart the void.

After an incense stick of time passed, Huang Yuegong calmly flew out from the shining light. He stretched his hand out and the shining light began to rapidly shrink until it fell into his palm where it spun around.

The light continued to converge. After several breaths of time, that brilliant light turned into a small, ordinary seeming bronze furnace.

“He did it!”

“Completely mind-blowing! A high-grade saint artifact was taken just like that in five minutes. Senior-apprentice Brother Huang is so fierce!”

This shocked all of the young disciples present. Jun Yunrue was already so strong but even she found it difficult to obtain a medium-grade saint artifact.

Huang Yuegong obtained a high-grade saint artifact with such ease. In terms of potential and talent, they were on completely different levels.

“This is incredible. Senior-apprentice Brother Huang is so amazing and yet he can’t obtain the Sunpierce Sword. Just how much stronger is the Sunpierce Sword!?”

“No kidding. There’s even several more top grade saint artifacts. I wonder just what sort of monster would be able to obtain them.”

“It’s already good if I can reach Senior-apprentice Brother Huang’s level. There really is no way I can compare!”

The several young disciples all exclaimed out loud. From listening to their compliments, Huang Yuegong’s face finally improved some.

He casually threw the furnace to his lackeys and deliberately said in his most casual tone, “Hold it for me. It should be of some use when I’m practicing alchemy later. It’s a decent transition furnace for me.”

Transition?

As the several young disciples heard this word, they were left speechless. Such an extraordinary pill furnace was actually just a transitory item for others. Really, comparing oneself to others could aggravate someone to death.

Song Baifeng laughed, “Sir Huang is indeed Sir Huang. This is a peak high-grade saint artifact called the Triple Shroud Divine Furnace. Although this furnace isn’t a top grade saint artifact, it isn’t too far off!”

Song Baifeng continued to flatter again and again. Huang Yuegong only laughed. Since others were busy repairing his reputation with gold, he certainly wouldn’t stop them.

“It’s fine. Although I didn’t manage to obtain the Sunpierce Sword this time, I still managed to take this Triple Shroud Divine Furnace. It’s adequate. Junior-apprentice Sister Jun, do you plan on leaving now? How about we head out together?” Huang Yuegong felt as if he had restored enough of the face he lost, and now his words were much more gallant than before. He invited Jun Yunrue out once again.

Jun Yunrue faintly smiled. “Senior-apprentice Brother Huang, we can leave on our own in a bit. But I brought Junior-apprentice Brother Lin here and he hasn’t tried obtaining a treasure yet.”

“Oh? Junior-apprentice Brother Lin?” Huang Yuegong recalled that Lin Ming hadn’t yet taken a treasure. The memory of a Divine Sea martial artist was outstanding; they wouldn’t forget something they wanted to remember. The only reason Huang Yuegong had forgotten about this matter was because he had directly taken Lin Ming as an attendant and ignored him.

“It’s no problem. Junior-apprentice Sister Jun, I’ll wait for you.” Huang Yuegong glanced at Lin Ming and impatiently said, “This junior-apprentice brother, hurry up.”

As Huang Yuegong and Jun Yunrue spoke, everyone’s eyes turned to Lin Ming. Lin Ming ignored Huang Yuegong as he looked up at the sky, his eyes passing over the nine top grade saint artifacts one at a time. He asked the guard captain Song Baifeng, “Senior Song, is there a limit to what grade saint artifact we can attempt to take depending on what hall we are in? Or can we choose whichever we like.”

“Of course. You can choose whichever you like as long as you have the ability to do so. Do you want to return to the entrance? The worst saint artifact here are medium-grade saint artifacts. The low-grade saint artifacts are near the edge.” Song Baifeng casually said as he looked over to Lin Ming.

“No need.” Lin Ming faintly smiled. “Here is fine.”

“Oh? You are quite confident in yourself. Did you ascend from the lower realms? You martial artists that ascend from the lower realms are normally far too confident when you first come to the Divine Realm. You will slowly understand just how terrifying the Divine Realm is and what your place within it is too. Every attempt here will cost you 1000 phoenix cry seal marks, so don’t blame me for not reminding you.” Song Baifeng sized up Lin Ming, waiting for him to back down. Those disciples that ascended from the lower realms were usually the top masters of their own great world and correspondingly arrogant. But compared to the geniuses of the Divine Realm, they were far from being comparable.

“Senior-apprentice Sister Jun, it might be a bit difficult for Junior-apprentice Brother Lin to take a saint artifact from here.” Lin Junzhi whispered to Jun Yunrue. She already obtained a saint artifact so she knew how difficult the test was.

“It shouldn’t be a problem. Don’t forget that Junior-apprentice Brother Lin is someone who Honorable Master values highly. Taking a medium-grade saint artifact shouldn’t be a problem for him at all.” Jun Yunrue believed in Lin Ming. Or rather, it was better to say that she believed in Fairy Feng’s judgment. She turned to Lin Ming and said, “Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, don’t be nervous. It’s good enough if you can bring out your true strength. Pick something that you like.”

“Thank you senior-apprentice sister. Well, I guess it’s my turn.”

Lin Ming rose into the sky, his feet stepping on Golden Roc Shattering the Void. His movements were erratic and ghostly as he passed through the many medium-grade saint artifacts and arrived at the height of the high-grade saint artifacts!

Here, the medium-grade saint artifacts floated at the lowest position in the sky. The high-grade saint artifacts were above them, and finally the top-grade saint artifacts were located at the zenith of this space.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, could he be planning on taking a high-grade saint artifact?" Lin Junzhi's large and watery black eyes widened. Before she finished speaking, Lin Ming had already passed the height of the high-grade saint artifacts and reached the highest point of this space!

That was the elevation of the top grade saint artifacts!

"What!?"

"What is he planning on doing?"

It wasn't just Lin Junzhi that was surprised, but even Jun Yunrue was watching with widened eyes. She stared blankly on as Lin Ming flew towards the nine top grade saint artifacts.

His goal was the Phoenix Blood Spear!

The light of the Phoenix Blood Spear was even bright than the Sunpierce Sword. It was the peak existence amongst all nine top grade saint artifacts, approaching a transcendent saint artifact!

Did Lin Ming really choose the Phoenix Blood Spear?

Or perhaps he was curious and just wanted to take a closer look?

Lin Ming was extremely fast. Jun Yunrue didn't even have time to respond before Lin Ming rushed in front of the blazing sun that was the Phoenix Blood Spear. Moreover, he didn't seem to be slowing down at all; he wanted to rush directly at it!

Jun Yunrue, Lin Junzhi, and the others were all bewildered. Even Song Baifeng and Huang Yuegong were stunned with disbelief. Their expressions were replaced with silly looks as they watched Lin Ming.

"Is he crazy?" Huang Yuegong sneered. This Lin Ming was simply a madman. Although the test wasn't life-threatening, if the disparity was too great then he might possibly injure his soul. Even he couldn't obtain a top grade saint artifact and yet this Lin Ming actually wanted to try taking one like an idiot. Did he even look in the mirror?

"How perversely incredible, I thought that martial artists that ascended from the lower realms were reckless, but I've never seen one like this." Song Baifeng was at a loss for words. Martial artists that ascended from the lower realms tended to be crazy at the start, but no matter how crazy they were they were still somewhat smart. This Lin Ming, on the other hand, was just brain dead.

Puff!

Lin Ming directly sank into the most dazzling light.

Everyone on the ground was stricken, their eyes like full moons. They never thought a scene like this would occur.

Huang Yuegong queerly smiled. "Junior-apprentice Sister Jun, this junior-apprentice brother of yours is quite, quite special."

Huang Yuegong emphasized the last word. In front of Jun Yunrue, in order to maintain his image, he naturally wouldn't say any words that would embarrass her. After all, she was the one that brought Lin Ming here.

However, Song Baifeng didn't have such qualms. He laughed and said, "Sir Huang is too polite. In the words of us coarse people, they call this 'forced by a large tiger'. Someone that is truly an idiot and ignores all consequences to rush in. Haha, that is just too suitable for him."

Huang Yuegong smiled at Song Baifeng's words. He waved his fan several times.

As for Jun Yunrue, she blushed red, extremely embarrassed. The other young disciples also weren't feeling too good. Lin Ming hadn't given them any hint at all and had rushed straight toward the Phoenix Blood Spear. This was simply beyond their expectations.

Chapter 960 – Test

Chapter 960 – Test

…

…

…

Of the nine top grade saint artifacts, the Phoenix Blood Spear, the Sunpierce Sword, and the Sun Shooting Bow were of the highest quality. The Phoenix Blood Spear was faintly superior to the Sunpierce Sword; it could be considered the most powerful saint artifact here.

As for the ring, the necklace, the vestment, and so forth, because they were defensive or accessory types saint artifacts, their supposed value should be higher. However, due to fact that their quality was far inferior to the Phoenix Blood Spear, there was no way to compare the actual value.

On Lin Ming’s first attempt, he actually went toward the most precious of the nine top grade saint artifacts. How could this not cause everyone’s eyes to bulge out of their heads?

“That idiot, I estimate that he will last 10 breaths at most.” A lackey laughed out loud from behind Huang Yuegong.

“10 breaths is overestimating him too much. I think five breaths is his limit and his soul will also be damaged in the test, possibly affecting his future cultivation.” Another lackey guffawed. In front of them, Huang Yuegong only swung his fan, smiling without speaking.

“If his cultivation is affected, then it’s affected. In any case, rotten wood cannot be made into a carving.”

As the two lackeys bantered with each other, five breaths of time soon passed. Shortly after, 7-8 breaths of time passed. However, the light of the Phoenix Blood Spear only grew brighter, showing no signs of dimming down.

“Five breaths of time have passed already.” Jun Yunrue coldly said. While she did think that Lin Ming was a bit too reckless in going straight for the Phoenix Blood Spear, she wasn’t going to let Huang Yuegong’s hanger-ons belittle Lin Ming like this. After all, Lin Ming was someone that Fairy Feng placed in high esteem. Even if he couldn’t take a top grade saint artifact, taking a medium-grade saint artifact shouldn’t be a problem; he might even have a chance of obtaining a high-grade saint artifact. As for a top grade saint artifact, it wouldn’t be too unseemly as long as he could withstand the test for some time.

“Haha, it seems I spoke too soon. This Junior-apprentice Brother Lin really does seem as if he can last for 10 breaths of time.” The lackey that said Lin Ming would only last for five breaths of time laughed. But as he spoke, another two breaths of time passed. Ten breaths of time passed in total.

The lackey frowned. The words he had just spoke were tossed back in his face, and his complexion became ugly. However, following that:

11 breaths of time.

12 breaths of time.

13 breaths of time…

As time passed one breath at a time, the faces of the two lackeys became increasingly ugly. Someone that could stay in the dazzling light of a top grade saint artifact was indeed a top character. They would be able to at least enter Vermillion Bird Hall. This proved that Lin Ming’s talent surpassed the both of them.

Of course, compared to someone like Huang Yuegong who was even ranked in the upper echelons of Phoenix Hall, this sort of talent was still far from being enough. Huang Yuegong swung his fan and smiled, “You too have looked down on others too much. The junior-apprentice brother that Junior-apprentice Sister Jun brought here is quite good. After raising him a bit, it's a settled matter for him to enter Vermillion Bird Hall; he even has some hopes of entering Phoenix Hall. At that time, he will be considered my junior-apprentice brother. I will help him out so that he won't have to struggle too much. For someone that ascended from the lower realms, their vision, inheritance, and Concepts will inevitably be lacking."

Huang Yuegong pleasantly smiled, casually taking the role of a senior directing a junior. He appeared open-minded as if he were a likable elder senior-apprentice brother.

Jun Yunrue said, "Then I'll thank Senior-apprentice Brother Huang in place of Junior-apprentice Brother Lin."

The disciple surnamed Zhang hurriedly added in, "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin is really lucky. With Senior-apprentice Brother Huang's guidance, his cultivation will definitely soar."

"Haha, no need speak such flattery." Huang Yuegong smirked. As they spoke, 20 breaths of time had already passed.

20 breaths of time already faintly and steadily surpassed their expectations.

But it didn't end there.

This was followed by:

30 breaths of time.

35 breaths of time…

Huang Yuegong looked up at the Phoenix Blood Spear in the sky, his eyes flashing with surprise. This ordinary martial artist from the lower realms was actually able to last inside the test for such a long time?

As for the two lackeys that were previously mocking Lin Ming, they were already stunned silent. Song Baifeng was also dumbfounded. He guarded Saint Artifact Pavilion for many years, and certainly understood just what lasting 35 breaths of time meant.

Saint Artifact Pavilion was in itself a spirit artifact. It could change the flow of time in its inner world, reaching degrees of 10:1 or even 100:1. Lin Ming was in the test for 35 breaths of time, but the truth was he might have already been tested for half an hour.

Even an ordinary Phoenix Hall disciple could only support themselves for around this period of time. This was proof that after reaching the Divine Transformation, Lin Ming would enter Phoenix Hall and become a true core disciple!

If Lin Ming could hold on longer, that meant he would have chances of obtaining a high-grade saint artifact. That was a high-grade saint artifact! Song Baifeng guarded Saint Artifact Pavilion for so many years, accumulating a great deal of wealth from extortion and blackmail, but he still didn’t have something as luxurious as a high-grade saint artifact.

This brat just rushed toward the Phoenix Blood Spear without a word. He thought this Lin Ming that ascended from the lower realms was a hot-blooded, stupid youth, but he never imagined he would really be so fierce.

“Junior-apprentice Brother is this strong?” The young disciples around Jun Yunrue glanced at each other, their eyes filled with disbelief.

“No wonder Honorable Master values him so highly. Although he is someone that ascended from the lower realms, he is still far more powerful than we are.”

“Yeah. It’s 40 breaths of time already. Even if Junior-apprentice Brother Lin fails now, it’s still a result to be proud of,” Lin Junzhi said, her wide eyes filled with envy as they were glued onto that brilliant light in the sky.

“Not bad, indeed not bad. He is quite the good material.” Huang Yuegong swung his fan, a reluctant smile on his face. He was still able to keep his calm at this time. After all, he lasted in the light of the Sunpierce Sword for fifteen minutes. It was far from what the mere 40 breaths of Lin Ming could compare with.

As everyone was speaking, Lin Ming had already entered a vast white world.

Saint Artifact Pavilion was a world that had more worlds within. Of the 9999 saint artifacts within Saint Artifact Pavilion, each had their own individual world which differed in size depending on their grade.

The Phoenix Blood Spear world that Lin Ming was at was an especially large world. It was about the size of the Forsaken God Clan's dimensional realm.

In the skies above this world, a huge face emerged. The skies for several hundred miles out gathered together to form this face. Lin Ming could feel a vast aura emitting from it, startling him.

He had only ever felt this type of atmosphere from Fairy Feng. However, Fairy Feng's aura was far more formidable than the one from this massive floating face.

At this moment, the giant floating face opened its mouth, and a loud and endless voice poured out like a rolling thunderclap. "27 year skeletal age, peak fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation. Placed among the several hundred million disciples and subjects of Phoenix Cry Palace, this cultivation cannot be considered at the peak. However, it is still first class. Coupled with an unknown strength that resides in your body, you have earned the qualifications for me to personally test you."

"You are Saint Artifact Pavilion's temple spirit?" Lin Ming's thoughts stirred as he asked this. The words of this spirit gave Lin Ming a new understanding into Phoenix Cry Palace. To have a peak fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation at 27 still couldn't be considered at the peak. This meant that there were those at his age who had an even higher cultivation!

It had to be known that Phoenix Cry Palace was only one of the 72 palaces of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Within the Divine Realm, the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan combined was only a grain of sand in a vast desert, simply not worth mentioning. From the looks of things, his own cultivation speed wasn't anything special at all. But speed of cultivation didn't fully represent one's talent.

Lin Ming was a dual body and essence cultivator, and he also had the Heretical God Seed and Magic Cube within him. His foundation was extremely solid, his grandmist battle spirit neared silver perfection, and he even had a portion of the Primordius martial intent. All of this together made him someone that a normal genius of the Divine Realm couldn't compare with.

Even facing the vast Divine Realm with the endless and infinite young heroic elites that gushed forth, Lin Ming did not fear any challenger!

"Young man, you are quite smart. Yes, I am indeed Saint Artifact Pavilion's temple spirit. Or, to be more accurate, I am the artifact spirit. Saint Artifact Pavilion is a spirit artifact and I am the artifact spirit. You're not bad at all. Not every trial challenger has the qualifications for me to personally appear, but you, you suffice. I will oversee your test and create a test suitable to your skeletal age. If you pass, you may take the Phoenix Blood Spear."

As this massive face spoke, Lin Ming felt his surroundings suddenly change. He arrived above an endless sea of fire. The flames were limitless, infinite, extending to the endless horizons. The ground was an ocean of lava and in the skies were crimson meteors both large and small. The crimson meteors were bred from burning fire essence energy. They constantly grew in the skies, and once they gained enough size and strength they would fall downwards, bringing with it a trailing tail of flame. Once they crashed they would tear the earth apart, creating a limitless storm of annihilating fire!

This scene was quite familiar.

"This is the second world of the God Transforming Mirror – the space of annihilation. The world contains the second of the nine levels of Concepts within the Flame Laws – the Concept of Annihilation!

“Good. It seems you’ve entered the second world of the God Transforming Mirror before. I assume you did so during the second Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. However, the space of annihilation here is far more formidable than what you encountered at the second smelting trial. Prepare yourself to withstand the baptism of the Annihilation Laws.”

As the artifact spirit spoke, the massive face phantom slowly faded away. A several mile wide meteor that had been concealed behind this face rapidly plummeted through the fading face.

Bang bang bang!

Space trembled. If this several mile wide meteor fell onto the Sky Spill Continent, it would be enough to destroy a province and bring calamity to an entire nation. But now in front of Lin Ming, this was only the first attack!

Lin Ming grasped the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and pointed the halberd blade at the skies. Within his pupils, the image of phantom flames began to flicker, blazing and burning.

When Lin Ming as at Timeworn Phoenix City, he studied the Concept of Fire textures from the Burning Heaven Totem Stone. Now those textures reappeared within his mind one at a time. A trace of a mysterious Concept began to appear in his mind, as if he were gaining insights and faintly becoming aware of something.

Law of Annihilation, Chain of Stars!

Lin Ming roared out and the lava became a massive wave that rose 1000 feet into the skies. The blood halberd in Lin Ming’s hands was like a red divine dragon as it rocketed toward the heavens.

A 10,000 foot long beam of crimson light smashed into the red meteor. It actually pierced through the red meteor and crushed it to pieces!

Bang bang bang!

That several mile wide meteor was split into 7-8 sections, all falling to the earth. Although it's might was still astounding, it wasn't able to harm Lin Ming in the slightest.

Chapter 961 – Break the World

Chapter 961 – Break the World

…

…

…

As the meteor crashed into the earth, lava splashed into the skies. But in this chaos, Lin Ming was actually like a fish in water.

After the first meteor exploded, the second meteor followed immediately after, then the third, the fourth…

More and more meteors plummeted toward the world. They were beams of brilliant light that covered the sky. When Lin Ming was within the God Transforming Mirror in Timeworn Phoenix City, the meteors dropped down one at a time. But now, dozens of meteors fell together as if the apocalypse had arrived!

Amongst these meteors, besides the miles wide meteors, there were also those that were only the size of a fist. To all common sense, these sorts of mini meteors shouldn't pose any threat to Lin Ming. But the truth was just the opposite. These mini meteors were even more dangerous to Lin Ming.

These mini meteors were a hundred times faster than the larger meteors. Moreover, they contained an incomparably destructive energy and also contained the Annihilation Laws of pure fire. Every mini meteor was the same as an explosive missile. Every time one fell to the earth, a convulsive detonation would follow!

Bang!

A fist sized meteor exploded less than 100 feet from Lin Ming. Lin Ming's protective true essence was attacked by the meteor's shockwave. With a series of snapping sounds, cracks began to appear in his protective true essence!

At this moment, three meteors also fell down on all sides, each the size of a bowl. These three meteors were far too fast; they blocked off all directions for Lin Ming to escape, wanting to pin him to death.

"Golden Roc Shattering the Void!"

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He wanted to use Space Distortion but he was surprised to discover that the space here was far too stable. In the lower realms, Lin Ming could cross several miles with a single step, but now crossing even a dozen feet was difficult.

"Mystic Lightning Shade!"

At this critical moment, the 12 thunder escape symbols within Lin Ming's body erupted with a blazing light. He forcefully accelerated to the extreme speed of thunder. However, without the support of Space Distortion, his speed wasn't comparable to those bowl sized meteors.

A meteor exploded close to where Lin Ming was.

Bang!

Lin Ming violently shook as his protective true essence exploded. Wild fire energy rampantly stampeded into his body. It directly tore apart his clothes, which were formed from thunder silk, and began ravaging his meridians!

This fire energy was filled with the terrifying aura of the Law of Annihilation. Lin Ming's complexion paled and he nearly spat out a mouthful of blood.

Even the Heretical God Sprout wasn't able to immediately suppress such a crazy and potent fire energy; it required some time to do so. The raging energy of the meteor was simply too ferocious; it caused Lin Ming to receive some minor damage to his meridians.

In this land like hell where there was nothing but scenes of destruction, Lin Ming fell into a trap of flames! A crazy fire carried with it an annihilating aura as it rushed toward him. Above Lin Ming was a barrier of meteors and underneath him were endless flames. Lin Ming couldn't even use Space Distortion; there was nowhere for him to evade!

As Lin Ming was soon about to be engulfed by this devastating fire, he loudly shouted out and a red lotus flower suddenly bloomed behind him.

Heavenly Demon martial intent – grandmist space!

Grandmist was infinity. Infinity gave birth to the primal chaos, and the primal chaos transformed into yin and yang. First there was grandmist, then there was primal chaos, after primal chaos was the division of yin and yang, and finally there was the formation of the five elements. The Fire Laws was one of these five elements. Within the grandmist space that extinguished all Laws, it would naturally be restrained!

Ssssss!

Underneath the cover of the grandmist space, the flames rapidly melted away!

"Break for me!"

Lin Ming took this chance and swung his halberd. The 800,000 jin Great Desolate Blood Halberd carried Lin Ming's full strength, falling down like an avalanche from heaven.

The waves of flames as high as a mountain were directly split apart by the halberd!

"Blood of the Ancient Phoenix, combust!"

After breaking through these choppy waves of flames, a golden light began shining from between Lin Ming's eyebrows, emitting a glorious and majestic light. A golden phoenix phantom formed behind him, appearing as if it would fuse with the world.

Ca – !

The flame phoenix cried out, directly soaring into the endless skies. All of the surrounding fire energy was mixed up by this phoenix, turning into a storm of flames.

Lin Ming fused together with the flame phoenix. He pointed his blood halberd towards the skies where the countless meteors were.

Reverse the Chain of Stars!

The boundless grandmist battle spirit converged with the halberd light, bringing with it the power of chaos that annihilated all Laws as it crashed into the chain of meteors in the sky.

Within the second world of the God Transforming World, the chain of stars that was formed from countless stones actually revolved according to some mysterious rule. And the chain of stars in Saint Artifact Pavilion was also the same.

In the skies, countless pieces of stones stuck together, slowly condensing into new meteors, some of which were fist-sized mini meteors that dazzled with a flaming light. Although these mini meteors were small, they were extremely dangerous. As for meteors that were dimmer, they were slower but also became giant meteors with great destructive power.

These meteors all floated in a seething fog of fire. As long as they meteors were fully formed, they would be thrust down under the support of the annihilating energy.

This was not the first time that Lin Ming encountered the space of annihilation. The strange patterns of revolution within the stones and flames were reflected in his eyes. His attack was to be aimed at the crux of the rules of revolution!

“Break!”

Lin Ming shouted out loud. On top of the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, the power of fire gathered into a red dao diagram. The Purple Lion Thunder Source absorbed into the Heretical God Seed also howled as it rushed out, forming out a larger, mightier purple dao diagram in the air.

The two dao diagrams fused into one. A terrifying thunderfire energy exploded outward. This energy gathered into a raging torrent of thunderfire that directly interrupted the revolving route of the chain of stars!

As the revolving route shattered, there was a crackling sound as all of the meteors taking shape suddenly broke apart.

The chain of stars was forcefully ripped apart by Lin Ming. With it, the falling meteors became much less concentrated and the pressure on Lin Ming was reduced several times over.

“Mm?”

The artifact spirit that had been hiding within Saint Artifact Pavilion while viewing Lin Ming’s progress was shocked. “He broke the chain of stars! My original intention was that if he could withstand it for half an hour, it would be considered as passing the test of Concept. I never imagined he would be able to break the chain of stars!”

“But he did not rely on just the Fire Concepts to do this; his understandings into the Fire Concepts aren’t too extraordinary. The reason he could accomplish this is because he was able to fuse Thunder Concepts with Fire Concepts, as well as that mysterious force field. I wonder, just what is that force field? It was actually able to melt away the Fire Laws…”

Saint Artifact Pavilion artifact spirit muttered. It didn’t know about the Primordius martial intent. Just what sort of existence was Empyrean Primordius? His status was even a level higher than a World King. He was one of the true top powerhouses of the entire Divine Realm! Within the entire Divine Realm, there were an extremely small number of people that could see an Empyrean. Even a character on the level of a World King or Holy Lord would find it extremely difficult to see an Empyrean. As for those that were actually able to see an Empyrean fight, they were a minority amongst minorities!

To the vast majority of martial artists in the Divine Realm, an Empyrean was a spiritual god, extremely mysterious and unrivalled. As for an Empyrean's cultivation methods, abilities, or the limits of their strength, these were also enigmas that far surpassed the comprehension of mortals. If the Ancient Devil within Yang Yun hadn't taken part in the great war 100,000 years ago and personally saw Empyrean Primordius slay armies with the Primordius martial intent, it would've been impossible for him to recognize that Lin Ming was also using the same martial intent.

As for Saint Artifact Pavilion artifact spirit, although it had lived for countless tens of thousands of years, it was locked within Phoenix Cry Palace and had no way of coming into contact with a character like Empyrean Primordius. It couldn't recognize the Primordius martial intent. But even so, it could feel that Lin Ming's martial intent was terrifying.

"This child actually has such a mysterious force field martial intent on him. In addition to his cultivation, age, and solid foundation, his potential is truly terrifying. Moreover, it seems as if he is a martial artist that ascended from the lower realms. From the way he fought just now, he should have completed his dual body and essence cultivation and opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. To accomplish this in the lower realms where resources are so lacking is truly incredible!"

Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit was far more intelligent than the common man. It was able to instantly discern many things. If the nine stages of Life Destruction decided a martial artist's future boundary, then Lin Ming's martial intent, Laws, battle spirit, and dual body and essence cultivation played an immense role in deciding his comparative combat strength with other martial artists at his level. Those factors also played a great role in determining a martial artist's future achievements.

"Dual body and essence cultivation, how many years has it been in Phoenix Cry Palace since someone decided to take this route. The body transformation path conflicts with Life

Destruction. After body transformation, crossing Life Destruction becomes extremely difficult. As for the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace that follow the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, that is impossible. If one cannot break through the most essential Nine stars of the dao palace, then the effects of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates will be minimized when one reaches the late Divine Lord realm. It can almost be ignored afterward.

The artifact spirit thought like this and took a glimmer of interest in Lin Ming. It looked forward to seeing to what degree this junior would grow.

“Let me see what boundary your body transformation technique has reached. The second round of the test will be a test of your body transformation!”

Saint Artifact Pavilion’s tests were all decided by the artifact spirit. The artifact spirit itself was a martial arts grandmaster. All sorts of tests, including those that looked at Laws, perception, and so forth could be freely utilized by the artifact spirit.

Thanks to the long years of accumulation the artifact spirit had developed a near endless variety of testing methods. Many geniuses of Phoenix Hall were tortured by its tests to the brink of despair. As the artifact spirit saw these chosen prides of heaven being pushed into the ground, it was also overjoyed.

At this time, Lin Ming actually had no idea that he managed to arouse the interest of this old antiquity that already existed for countless tens of thousands of years. He could only feel the power of fire around him instantly vanish, and the chain of stars that roiled in the skies also disappeared.

Lin Ming took a deep breath, secretly thinking to himself, “The first round of the test only looks at the Concept of Fire and yet it is so difficult. I thought that I could rely on just my Concept of Fire to pass the test, but my results were far worse than what I imagined. I had no choice but to use the Concept of Thunder as well as the Heavenly Demon martial intent to break the chain of stars. This top grade saint artifact test that can even sweep the ground with top geniuses of the Divine Realm isn’t easy to pass at all!”

Lin Ming muttered. But he didn't know that he would have passed the first round of tests as long as he was able to withstand it for half an hour. As for breaking the chain of stars, that was simply overdoing everything.

As Lin Ming was still in thoughts, the surrounding environment changed again. All of the heaven and earth origin energy was rapidly drained away!

All of the true essence in his dantian was locked down; it was unable to be moved at all.

"Hmm? What's going on here?"

Chapter 962 – Totem Stone

Chapter 962 – Totem Stone

…

…

…

"True essence was unusable?"

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. He knew that the artifact spirit had sealed away his dantian by blocking off the connection between his spirit body's true essence and soul.

This left him bewildered. He simply had no idea just what level of cultivation this artifact spirit had reached; it was as if it simply needed to wave its hand to accomplish this. Moreover, it was skilled in all sorts of array formations. Not to mention everything else, but just the 9999 saint artifacts that composed the main body of Saint Artifact Pavilion left Lin Ming floored. Although he was able to discern a faint trace of the great array formation's mysteries, wanting to break through it was impossible.

"I can't use true essence but I can still use my physical strength. Could this round be examining my body transformation technique?"

Lin Ming had some doubts about this. The Ancient Phoenix Clan did not cultivate body transformation techniques. It was more accurate to say that within the countless sects and family clans of the Divine Realm, there were far too few that bothered with training in body transformation. The inheritances were nearly lost because of this. Compared to the essence gathering system, there were simply far too many shortcomings and problems. One needed to consume a massive amount of resources, and the later it went the more difficult it would be to train in.

Undoubtedly, dual cultivating in body and essence was more formidable than solely following the essence gathering system. But the premise of this was that one's body transformation technique was able to follow the essence gathering system. Otherwise, if one system were to far surpass the other, it would weaken until it was eventually useless.

As for cultivating just the essence gathering system, if one could train to the very peak then their power would also become unfathomable. For instance, Empyrean Primordius relied on just the essence gathering system to walk the entire Divine Realm unhindered. If one dual cultivated body and essence, it would be a major problem trying to reach the level of an Empyrean. Throughout the entire Divine Realm and the infinite lives that lived here, just how many people were able to become an Empyrean?

In this situation, Lin Ming didn't think that Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit would actually test his body transformation technique. But at this moment, in front of Lin Ming, a great crowd of red-scaled divine cows appeared. These divine cows were all 20 feet tall and several times larger than the average cow. If an average cow were this size, they might weigh up to 10,000 jins. But these red divine cows had thick scales covering their entire bodies; they were at least 10 times heavier than a normal cow.

As this group of red divine cows appeared, they began to crazily stampede towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming grasped the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and calmly stood still, watching the red-scaled divine cows wildly charge at him. The movement of true essence in his body was blocked now so he could only rely on his physical strength. This was a first for Lin Ming!

Rahh!

The red-scaled divine cows issued terrifying roars. These sounds didn't seem like they came from cows but rather from giant tigers. As several hundred divine cows smashed their way toward him, their charging momentum broke through the heavens and caused the ground to tremble. Although these divine cows were only simulacrums produced by an array formation, there was no differentiating them from reality.

Lin Ming calmly watched the first red-scaled divine cow rush at him. Up until now, he had experienced countless battlefields and his combat experience was rich and varied. As the divine cow reached him, he did not flinch. Instead, he took a step forward, opening four Inner Hidden Gates at the same time, then smashed out with the 800,000 jin Great Desolate Blood Halberd. The blood halberd came falling down like a collapsing mountain!

Bang!

The 20 feet high divine cow that weighed several tens of thousands of jins, and was rushing forwards with a terrifying speed, was actually pounded into gooey flesh by Lin Ming's halberd!

After obtaining the treasures from the Temple of Marvels, Lin Ming did not lack materials for medicine. As he practiced the essence gathering system, he didn't forget to train in body transformation either. There was a large disparity between the fourth and fifth of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. Compared to opening the first four gates, the difficulty of opening the fifth gate rose to another level. After Lin Ming defeated Yang Yun, he had been saving his strength in preparation for opening the fifth of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. Although he hadn't managed to do it so far, his strength already surpassed 2 million jins and was nearing 3 million jins.

If this massive strength was used to wield the 800,000 jin Great Desolate Blood Halberd and bring it smashing down, the destructive potential could be imagined!

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a bloodthirsty light. Using just his physical strength to beat a 100,000 jin divine cow to death unleashed his bestial side and ignited his fighting spirit.

Using one's physical strength to fight was completely different from fighting with the support of true essence.

"Second one!"

Lin Ming shouted and pointed his halberd toward the belly of a second divine cow. His foot stepped back and the hard ground beneath his foot cracked apart. He lowered his waist and thrust both hands upward, instantly erupting with 3 million jins of strength.

A 100,000 jin divine cow was sent flying away be Lin Ming.

“Third one!”

Lin Ming was completely immersed in this hot-blooded battle. The Great Desolate Blood Halberd in his hands flew through the air. That 800,000 jin halberd combined with Lin Ming’s 3 million jins of strength was enough to split apart a divine cow upon contact!

The Great Desolate Blood Halberd had no flexibility to begin with. As Lin Ming constantly killed these divine cows, the shaking strength in the halberd shaft was also terrifying. All of this was completely withstood by Lin Ming.

If a normal martial artist had to withstand this terrifying shaking strength, their hands would have already been cracked open. But Lin Ming was able to rely on the regenerative power of the Gate of Healing to forcefully suppress it. Although his blood vitality was sent tumbling, this great strength also caused his blood to boil over with a brutal furor.

82.

83.

84…

Lin Ming killed his way through the divine cows. Blood rained down from the air, dying his entire body a bright blood red. He was someone that seemed as if they emerged from a pool of blood. The ground underneath his feet was wet with mixed flesh and blood, and every step he took left a deep indent.

191!

192!

As Lin Ming killed his way to the end, this slaughter had nearly become instinctive. He didn't need to think at all. As long as a red-scaled divine cow rushed up to him, he was able to instantly respond and kill it!

As the artifact spirit watched all of this happen, it sighed in praise. It never imagined that Lin Ming's achievements in body transformation would be so great. It seemed that Lin Ming's body transforming was in no way left behind by the essence gathering system. The creation of his spirit body through Life Destruction was tempered by the body transformation technique, allowing both methods to complement each other.

"This child has already opened the fourth Gate of Pain of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. The Gate of Pain focusses on offensive strength. After the Gate of Pain is opened, the mortal strength of a martial artist will enter a period of explosive growth, until they reach 10 times their original strength. This child shouldn't have any problems in completing the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, but if he wants to step into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, that is far too difficult."

"The second test round can be considered as being perfectly passed."

The artifact spirit muttered to itself. At this point it already confirmed Lin Ming's potential and talent; he absolutely had the qualifications to obtain the Phoenix Blood Spear.

"Although these two test rounds have confirmed that you have the qualifications to obtain a top grade saint artifact, I will still test you one final time. I will test your martial arts will and perception; this can be considered giving you some good fortune. If you can pass this final test round to my satisfaction, then not only will I gift you the Phoenix Blood Spear but I will also bestow a fragment of energy and Laws that the previous Phoenix Cry Palace Master left here on the Phoenix Blood Spear, allowing its grade to come infinitely close to becoming a transcendent saint artifact."

Lin Ming had no idea that the artifact spirit was making these plans. He continued to stand on the endless plains, his hand grasping the Great Desolate Blood Halberd, prepared to continue this life or death slaughterfest.

At this time, the countless red-scaled divine cows that rampaged over the boundless plains seemed to receive some sort of summoning call. They began to retreat like an ebbing tide. The several hundred corpses of red-scaled divine cows around Li Ming also vanished, and not a bit of flesh or blood was left on the ground.

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He knew he had passed the second round.

Following this, would there be a third?

As he was thinking, the ground in front of him suddenly trembled. A fissure spread through the earth, and with a loud rumbling sound, a massive stone tablet slowly rose into the world!

“Mm, this is…?” Lin Ming’s pupils focused. This stone tablet in front of him was 10 feet wide, 20 feet high, and five feet thick.

The surface of the stone tablet was covered with dense rows of flame runes. These flame runes were all different from each other, and from the bottom to the top, there was a gradual change in them. At the very bottom, the flame runes were small, appearing like beating flames. But as they rose, the flame runes turned into all sorts of weird lines that crawled over the stone tablet like a network of vines. Further up, those flame runes became abstract designs. Some designs looked like eyes, some looked like monsters, and some looked like ancient races.

“A chaos stone?”

Lin Ming was startled but immediately shook his head. When he was at Timeworn Phoenix City, he had the luck to see a tiny piece of a chaos stone. A chaos stone was formed at the beginning of the universe, and it became a naturally formed totem of chaos, with the traces of the universe’s source energy left on the chaos stone. A chaos stone was something that was pointed at the source of the Great Dao. If one could fully understand a chaos stone, they would be enlightened on the principles of revolution for the universe’s source energy.

One could even become the person with the deepest comprehension of Laws in the entire divine Realm, becoming an existence on the level of an Empyrean!

The traces on a chaos stone were not so fine, but rather a bit rough. Those were traces formed from natural energy, with both deep and shallow grooves. They were unlike this stone tablet, with its delicate countless and diverse traces.

Without a doubt, this stone tablet was likely carved by some top Supreme Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. It was highly possible that this Supreme Elder was a Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

Lin Ming had an approximate understanding into how high of a status the Patriarch had within the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Fairy Feng's strength reached an unimaginable degree, but she was only the Vice Palace Master of Phoenix Cry Palace. Above a Vice Palace Master was a Palace Master, and a Palace Master was an Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. With 72 palaces of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, that meant there were at least 72 Elders. Above these Elders was a Patriarch!

A Patriarch level character had left behind this stone tablet, and it was also at least 20 times larger than the carved stones in Timeworn Phoenix City. The value of this stone tablet could be imagined!

"The treatment in the Divine Realm is really different. If a Patriarch level character wants to inscribe their comprehension of Laws onto a stone tablet, they would inevitably have to spend an enormous amount of effort and time. In Timeworn Phoenix City, there were only three tiny pieces, each of them a square foot in size. Those simply cannot be compared to this stone tablet in Saint Artifact Pavilion. It looks like this test round is examining my perception."

As a martial artist's boundary grew, perception became more and more important. This was because perception was related to a martial artist's understanding into the Heavenly Dao. As Lin Ming was thinking of this, his body suddenly shook. A vast will surged forth from the stone tablet, enveloping him within!

As this martial arts will covered him, Lin Ming felt an enormous oppression on his spiritual sea. As for the small spear-shaped battle spirit in his spiritual sea, it began to issues cries of excitement from the pressure.

“This is the will left behind in the stone tablet by an Ancient Phoenix Clan Patriarch?” Lin Ming realized just what this vast will, filled with great vigor, was.

Chapter 963 – Silver Perfection

Chapter 963 – Silver Perfection

…

…

…

"So that's how it is. This stone tablet isn't just testing my perception but also my martial arts will."

This will was obviously left behind by the person who had carved this totem stone tablet. If such an extreme character were to leave behind their will, it could last for several hundred thousands of years up to even millions of years.

"If I can withstand this baptism of will, it'll greatly benefit the growth of my battle spirit. This is a good opportunity!"

Lin Ming was thrilled. When he travelled down the Road of the Emperor, the strongest baptism of will he had withstood was the will of the Demon Emperor. Compared to a Patriarch of the ancient Phoenix Clan, the Demon Emperor was far from being equal.

If he could withstand the suppression of a powerhouse's will, that would help him further exploring the potential of his battle spirit.

For those that cultivated martial arts, the potential of a battle spirit was determined by a variety of factors. Once it was formed, it would be difficult to increase it. There were very few heavenly materials that existed with the ability to enhance a battle spirit, and they could only be found through a stroke of destiny. For instance, the Twinlife Thunder Crystal.

The Twinlife Thunder Crystal was a divine stone that was bred along with a Thunder Source. However, a Thunder Source required hundreds of millions, sometimes even billions of years to be born. This made a Twinlife Thunder Crystal rare to the point that it was maddening. Only a great Holy Land of the Divine Realms would be able to obtain something so precious.

It was extremely difficult to enhance a battle spirit's potential. When a battle spirit's potential was already set, wanting to dig out every last bit of its potential wasn't easy either. But using the will pressure of a top martial artist's will was an outstanding method to temper and explore the potential of a battle spirit.

Hu!

The totem stone tablet's martial arts will swept up like a storm, violently rushing towards Lin Ming's spiritual sea. Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, the spear-shaped battle spirit floating in the air was forced to directly bear a baptism of this pressure.

Lin Ming's entire body was covered in this pressure. He felt as if he was taking a pleasant swim in a sea of energy, comfortable and relaxing.

The artifact spirit's eyes brightened. It looked at Lin Ming with some surprise, "From this boy's last attacks, I felt that his will and battle spirit were extremely formidable. For the third test, I made him withstand a will that far surpassed his current skeletal age. I didn't think he would be able to withstand it so easily…"

"That gray battle spirit is indeed special. Because of that layer of misty gray light, I didn't notice the grade of the battle spirit from the beginning. I thought that it just reached silver, but now it seems to be at the peak of silver large success, just a step away from reaching silver perfection!"

"A fifth stage Life Destruction boy has a battle spirit at the peak of silver large success, that is incredible! Although the geniuses of the Divine Realm are like crouching tigers and hidden dragons, this is still the first time that I've heard someone managing to have their battle spirit reach the peak of silver large success at the fifth stage of Life Destruction! His battle spirit also has a special attribute to it, making its might far exceed an ordinary perfect silver battle spirit. If he can reach a gold level battle spirit in the future, allowing his battle spirit to directly influence reality, his combat strength will greatly increase.”

Many thoughts began rapidly cutting through the artifact spirit’s mind. It looked forward to Lin Ming’s growth more and more.

“Hey, this brat seems to be enjoying himself a bit too much. How can I let you relax in a test of my Saint Artifact Pavilion and easily pass? If I do that, I won’t have any face left at all.”

The Saint Artifact Pavilion artifact spirit was itself equal to a Divine Lord realm master. Moreover, it had been in charge of Saint Artifact Pavilion for so many years and was an ancient existence of Phoenix Cry Palace, it was naturally proud and arrogant in its own right. But this arrogance was also awoken by Lin Ming’s actions.

“I want to see just how long you can manage to support yourself!”

The artifact spirit maliciously smiled. The will pressure on Lin Ming rapidly increased.

From using the level of a 35 year skeletal age at the start, it rapidly increased to 50 years, 70 years, and then 80 years!

The will pressure rapidly increased. Moreover, the totem stone tablet left behind by the Ancient Phoenix Clan Patriach contained not only his will but also the aura of the Great Dao’s Fire Laws together with the comprehension of Fire Laws belonging to an ancient Supreme Elder.

“So strong!”

The hazy mist around the spear-shaped battle spirit was forced down by the pressure; it was pushed down and squeezed together, less than an inch left between it and the battle spirit.

Lin Ming could feel the pressure, an incomparably daunting pressure. Even he was finding it difficult to withstand.

A black energy surged into Lin Ming's spiritual sea as if it would tear everything apart!

"Is the third test round absurdly difficult, or is it purposely aimed at me to squeeze out my potential?"

Lin Ming had 120% confidence in his own martial arts will. While his other aspects might not be considered at the peak, he believed that in terms of will, it was difficult to find another genius in the Divine Realm that could stand side-by-side with him. But now, he actually felt pressured to his limits. If even he was being pressured this much, were there really any other disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan that could pass such a ridiculous test?

Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, the mist that usually floated around the spear-shaped battle spirit was actually forced onto that spear by the immense pressure.

"Let's see just how long you can last!" The artifact spirit's arrogant heart was roused by Lin Ming. In truth, it had long since determined that Lin Ming had successfully passed the test. It only wished to test Lin Ming's limit and have him reach the breaking point.

"100 year skeletal age!"

The artifact spirit lightly shouted and no longer suppressed the will and aura of the totem stone tablet, instead allowing it to wantonly surge outwards. This totem stone tablet was left behind by the 26th acting Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Xiao Daoji. This totem stone tablet was originally part of a set. Xiao Daoji created seven sets of seven for a total of 49 stone tablets. The only reason this stone tablet was stored within Saint Artifact Pavilion was because it acted as the eye of the great formation and stabilized the 9999 saint artifacts that composed it.

Even when the past Xiao Daoji was placed between all the Patriarchs of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, he was still a stunningly amazing character. He had wanted to refine nine sets of nine for a total of 81 stone tablets, but unfortunately only managed to create 49 before he suffered a great calamity and perished.

Each of the 49 stone tablets contained a wisp of Xiao Daoji's will and thoughts. Although this was only a tiny insignificant amount when compared to Xiao Daoji himself, it was still not something that an ordinary disciple could hope to contend with.

The limit of entering Saint Artifact Pavilion was a 100 year skeletal age. At this step, the entirety of Xiao Daoji's thoughts were recklessly unleashed onto Lin Ming. And within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, the mist floating around the spear-shaped battle was compressed to such a terrifying degree that it condensed onto the spear shaft itself.

Ka ka ka!

At this moment, a small crack appeared within the spear-shaped battle spirit.

"Mm!?"

The artifact spirit was startled. Without any time to respond, an indescribable aura gushed forth, surging out from the cracks on the surface of the battle spirit. This aura was a vast, endless, vigorous, deep, and unfathomable aura that left the artifact spirit stunned.

Lin Ming's strength was clearly nothing compared to the artifact spirit itself, but this aura actually caused the artifact spirit to feel a deep sense of dread. This awe and trepidation seemed engraved into the very essence of its being, as if it were something passed down from time immemorial.

"Grandmist energy?"

The artifact spirit was dumbstruck. In the legends, the Divine Realm had a grandmist spirit artifact, formed at the very beginning of the world. This was the Heavenly Dao Relic formed within grandmist, and its age was as ancient as the universe itself!

That was an existence surpassing a spirit artifact, and grandmist energy was also a sign of a Heavenly Dao Relic. According to rumors, a Heavenly Dao Relic could not be formed, even by an Empyrean. But without a doubt, if a normal spirit artifact was able to absorb a sliver of grandmist energy, it'd be greatly beneficial to it!

Grandmist energy was something that could cause all spirit artifacts to feel awe and a maddening sense of desire.

"This youth actually has grandmist energy!?" The Saint Artifact Pavilion artifact spirit was spooked; if true, this was a serious matter. It released a part of its divine sense to envelop Lin Ming's body, but a moment later it shook its head. This wasn't grandmist energy but rather contained an aura similar in nature to grandmist energy. It could just barely be called the elementary form of grandmist energy.

"It was indeed impossible for something like this to happen." The artifact spirit sighed. Grandmist energy existed when the universe formed, but ever since it divided into yin and yang and then differentiated into the five elements, it vanished from existence. Even if some still existed in certain mystic realms throughout the universe, it still wasn't something that Lin Ming could possibly refine. Just a wisp of grandmist energy was able to crush a star. Let alone Lin Ming, even a Divine Lord did not have the ability to do so!

"But although this youth only has an elementary form of grandmist energy, that is still very rare. I have no idea what he trains in, but in the future, if he can become a Holy Lord, World King, or even an Empyrean, there really might be a chance that he can evolve grandmist energy in his own world!"

As the artifact spirit was thinking, it suddenly saw Lin Ming's spear-shaped battle spirit erupt with a dazzling light. In the next moment, the battle spirit was reborn. Although the main form was still silver gray as before, it clearly reflected a light trace of gold.

"Perfect silver battle spirit!"

The artifact spirit's eyes lit up. This state was close to the level of a gold battle spirit. It never thought that by testing Lin Ming's will, it would actually cause him to have a breakthrough in the boundary of his battle spirit!

"His battle spirit contains a grandmist aura and it has also reached silver perfection, just a step from becoming a gold battle spirit. This is truly extraordinary; this youth's potential has no limits!"

"But compared to his will, his perception is quite ordinary. He hasn't managed to comprehend much from the fragment of the Great Dao Laws within the totem stone tablet. This might be because I urged the energy within the stone tablet too much and it surpassed the limits of his skeletal age."

"This is also normal. There's no talent that excels in all aspects and can reach the limit in every field. This in itself is already beyond all expectations; he has perfectly passed this test. It is still incredible. I find it hard to believe that he is a martial artist that ascended from the lower realms. I wonder just how many lucky chances he encountered and how many adventures he experienced!"

As the artifact spirit had such thoughts run through his head, its eyes suddenly paused and the thoughts came to a screeching halt. It looked at Lin Ming, completely dumbfounded!

Just now the artifact spirit wanted to end the test. But when it tried to reclaim the aura of the stone tablet, it discovered that when it pulled back the aura, a massive part of the Great Dao Laws fragments was absorbed into Lin Ming's body. These fragments seemed to have disappeared without a trace!

"The Great Dao Laws fragments were actually swallowed up as if they were water being drunk by a whale?" The artifact spirit was unable to figure out just what was going on. It could not see that within Lin Ming's body, the Heretical God Sprout was shining with a crimson light. The Great Dao fragment that Xiao Daoji left behind was related to the Fire Laws; it perfectly matched the attribute of the Heretical God Sprout!

Chapter 964 – Saint Spear in Hand

Chapter 964 – Saint Spear in Hand

…

…

…

Lin Ming felt a burning heat in his dantian. The Heretical God Sprout was wildly swallowing up the fragments of the Great Dao that Xiao Daoji left behind. These fragments all contained the comprehension that Xiao Daoji held toward the Great Dao of Fire. For Lin Ming to perceive them was certainly difficult, but for the Heretical God Sprout, there wasn't any problem at all.

Every fragment was caught in a boiling flow of energy and pulled into the Heretical God Sprout. They formed runes upon the Heretical God Sprout.

The numerous fragments of the Great Dao Laws constantly inscribed new symbols onto the Heretical God Sprout. The symbols slowly creeped together, gathering until a new bud slowly popped up from the crown of the Heretical God Sprout. It slowly grew larger until a young and tender leaf unfurled.

At this point, the Heretical God sprout had five leaves. Three thunder-attribute leaves and two fire-attribute leaves. Every one of them had their own special characteristics. The color and shapes were all completely different from one another.

The first flame leaf was shaped like a crimson heart of fire.

The second thunder leaf was long and narrow, keen like a golden sword.

The third leaf was also a thunder leaf. This leaf was purple and was strangely shaped like a small three-legged furnace, a small lion engraved into it. This was the Purple Lion Thunder Source that was swallowed into the Heretical God Sprout.

The fourth leaf was a thunder leaf. It was formed when Lin Ming ascended to the Divine Realm and absorbed the power of heavenly retribution. This leaf was golden red and shaped like a heavy sword.

The newest, fifth leaf was also very strange in appearance. It was square just like a jade seal stamp. The leaf was also a golden red, and the veins within the leaf formed strange textures, all of them reflecting the Great Dao Fire Laws that Xiao Daoji had comprehended.

In just 10 short breaths of time, Lin Ming managed to absorb half of the Great Dao Laws fragments!

In truth, these fragments were the core seeds of the Laws Xiao Daoji had left behind. They merged with the stone tablet and slowly evolved over time. Of those that were swallowed, it was possible for them to regenerate over time. But after having accumulated these fragments for so many years and now for half of them to be suddenly absorbed by Lin Ming, the artifact spirit felt an unusually rending pain. Moreover, it had no idea what had happened. These Great Dao Laws fragments were extremely esoteric. If one wanted to refine one, they would have to spend a great deal of time. How had this boy managed to absorb so many of them and to do it so easily?

“This brat certainly has some secrets on him. It’s impossible to achieve this level with just perception.” The artifact spirit had an extraordinary level of experience. Even though it couldn’t see the existence of the Heretical God Sprout, it could speculate based on the given information.

“This young man has the life of an Emperor. His potential and talent are both phenomenal. Most geniuses in Phoenix Cry Palace are in a mess when they finish my tests, but this boy not only passed them perfectly, he even obtained a great advantage. This sort of person, once their momentum reaches the limit, has the ability to turn the tables in all situations. A calamity that would annihilate a normal genius would be turned into an opportunity by this youth. This is the so-called destiny of an Emperor! It isn't that their luck is good, but they have the strength to change dangers into lucky chances and also a confidence etched into their bones that allows them to do so!"

The artifact spirit sighed. A massive face appeared in the world once more. As for that stone tablet, it sunk back into the ground with a rumbling sound.

"Thank you, senior!" Lin Ming was overjoyed.

"I am only doing my duty as written in the rules. Young man, your harvests can be considered great this time. Not only did you obtain the power of Laws left behind by the last Palace Master, you also absorbed half of the Great Dao Fire Laws fragments that have accumulated for the last 20,000 years. Hehehaha!" The artifact spirit's face twitched as it spoke to here, obviously pained by what had just happened.

"I thank senior for taking care of me." Lin Ming smirked.

"Humph, what a flowery mouth, your words are quite nice!" The artifact spirit mocked. "I don't know what method you used to absorb the Great Dao Laws fragments, but it must've been some trick of yours. Let me tell you, only the things you comprehend yourself are the most stable and solid. You must try to enhance your perception as much as possible. The further down you travel on the road of martial arts, the more and more important your perception will become. But you dual cultivate body and essence and the Gate of Opening within the Eight Inner Hidden Gates helps in developing the brain. It will allow you to enhance your perception. To you, that will be the most useful of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates."

"I thank senior for the guidance." Lin Ming respectfully said. Once one reached the end of the Divine Lord realm, the Eight Inner Hidden Gates would become less and less useful. At that time, he would have to step into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace to display the best results. However, perception was different. Perception would always be useful.

“Mm, the Phoenix Blood Spear is yours. I look forward to seeing your growth!” The artifact spirit’s voice echoed between heaven and earth. There were three rounds in this test and it had lasted for an hour. However, only two incense sticks of time had passed outside.

Fifteen minutes was three incense sticks of time. When Huang Yuegong entered into the world of the Sunpierce Sword to take the test, he only managed to last for fifteen minutes.

Now, as Huang Yuegong saw Lin Ming reach two incense sticks of time, his complexion inevitably became ugly.

Although he knew that it was impossible for Lin Ming to succeed in his heart, for Lin Ming to last for two incense sticks of time proved that the brat’s talent was nearly equal to his own!

How could Huang Yuegong be comfortable with this? He became especially gloomy after listening to Jun Yunrue and the other female disciples continuously praise Lin Ming.

“Two incense sticks of time have passed, this is unbelievable. Junior-apprentice Brother Lin is too fierce!” Lin Junzhi praised as she looked at the hourglass, not noticing how grim Huang Yuegong had become.

“This defies the heavens! Two incense sticks of time, that is a level not even the Divine Transformation realm seniors of Phoenix Hall can reach!” A disciple surnamed Zhang praised. But he had a strange, unpleasant feeling in his heart.

Huang Yuegong was a haughty and powerful figure who was the young master of a great clan. As for him, he was only a commoner in the Divine Realm; his background was far surpassed by everyone else. He did not envy the differences in their starting points because the difference was just too great.

But as for Lin Ming, Lin Ming was only a martial artist from the mortal realms, a similar background to his own. But now that Lin Ming managed to accomplish something that this disciple surnamed Zhang never could, he certainly felt envy in his heart.

"The disciples of Phoenix Hall are strong, but that is only in strength; their talent and potential might not be any higher. Junior-apprentice Brother Lin really surpasses all expectations. Honorable Master's judgment was indeed not wrong." Jun Yunrue happily said. She was thrilled that Fairy Feng had found another powerful supporter.

Jun Yunrue's words were like salt that scattered over Huang Yuegong's wounds.

Huang Yuegong nearly gnashed his teeth. He said, "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin is indeed talented. But two incense sticks of time should be his limit!"

Huang Yuegong maintained the appearance of a magnanimous gentleman even though he crushed the fan in his hands. If this fan weren't a low-grade saint artifact, it would have already shattered under the pressure.

"Damn it all, how could this happen!?" Huang Yuegong couldn't accept what was happening. He was a chosen pride of the heavens, a genius even within the Huang Family Clan, one of the three great family clans of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. With his background, he should've blossomed into glory in Phoenix Cry Palace. He should be forcing all the countless heroic young elites here underneath him as he slowly climbed up to his position as the top master of Phoenix Cry Palace.

But now, he casually encountered this little commoner, a little martial artist that had ascended from the lower realms and was merely Jun Yunrue's attendant, and this person that he would normally ignore as nothing more than an ant had actually managed to surpass him in talent! He would only need to last for another incense stick of time to reach his level.

If Lin Ming really managed to last for another incense stick of time and obtain the same result, then where would he have the face to hold his head high? If Lin Ming obtained the same result, that was simply an insult!

"Sir Huang, perhaps the boy fainted in the test." One of Huang Yuegong's lackeys said.

"That's right. I think the most likely scenario is that he couldn't withstand the terrifying test of a top grade saint artifact, and this caused his spiritual sea to be damaged and for him to faint. There's no other way this is possible!" Song Baifeng echoed.

However, none of their words were able to alleviate Huang Yuegong's gloomy complexion. His eyes shone as he stared at the scorching bright sun in the sky. He noticed something and he let out a long sigh of relief. His complexion relaxed and returned to normal as he said, "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin is about to exit."

As he spoke, the blazing bright Phoenix Blood Spear sun in the sky violently rocked about.

As the two lackeys behind Huang Yuegong saw this, they all let out deep breaths. They praised, "Young master's eyesight is amazing. Young master said that two incense sticks of time would be Lin Ming's limit, and now it seems to be true. Two incense sticks and several more breaths of time, young master's predictions really hit the mark!"

"That's right, it's like the words of a prophet" Song Baifeng followed up with more flattery.

As Huang Yuegong heard these words and saw what he expected would happen, he finally restored his calm. He opened his fan and swung it several times. This was his iconic action. Only when he was in a good mood would he wave his fan and play the gentleman.

"This Lin Ming is truly spectacular. He managed to last just a bit more than two-thirds of my time. But this top grade saint artifact test becomes more difficult the further on it goes, especially when nearing the fifteen minutes mark, it is at least 10 times more difficult than before!" Huang Yuegong said. Intentionally or unintentionally, what he said was the truth. The test became more and more difficult the further it progressed, and there was no exaggeration in his words.

His words meant that Lin Ming was still a lot worse than he was. Huang Yuegong was able to accept this.

“That’s right, a little martial artist who ascended from the lower realms is no different from a beggar to us. How could he possibly compare to the dignity and majesty of Sir Huang? Although he managed to last a bit shorter than Sir Huang, because the test rapidly climbs in difficulty near the end, the difference is still like the clouds and mud!”

The lackeys flattered again and again. This caused Jun Yunrue to slightly frown.

At this time, Lin Ming was ejected from the scorching bright sun. He didn’t look awkward and messed up like Huang Yuegong had been. Instead, he gently landed on the ground. Besides his face being flushed a bit red, there was nothing else out of place.

“Mm? How come the boy isn’t injured?”

Huang Yuegong’s eyebrows twisted together. He badly wanted to see Lin Ming vomiting up blood after being grievously wounded.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, are you alright?” Jun Yunrue quickly ran up to him. She probed him for a moment and was relieved to find that there wasn’t any serious damage.

“I’m fine, senior-apprentice sister.” Lin Ming casually replied, his eyes still looking up at the blazing sun in the sky.

Chapter 965 – Blinding Spear Light

Chapter 965 – Blinding Spear Light

…

…

…

Huang Yuegong smiled as he watched Lin Ming stare at the Phoenix Blood Spear. He leisurely swung his fan and thoughtfully said, “There’s no need to keep looking. That top grade saint artifact isn’t easy to obtain. You can only look but you can’t touch.”

“Hehe, boy, continuing to look is useless. One of them will be our young master’s sooner or later. However, a brat like you should already be proud to have even a tiny fraction of our young master’s talent.” A lackey spouted with a pompous tone.

Lin Ming ignored him and continued to look at the sky.

The lackey saw that he was being ignored and angrily said, “You little shit, I am speaking to you! Are you deaf!?”

There were some people with a strong sense of slave mentality and self-esteem. They would happily wag their tails in front of their masters, but they actually wouldn’t endure the insults of commoners. This was because they normally groveled and were insulted in front of others too much. They had traded in whatever shred of dignity they had left for status and power. If they couldn’t even keep their swagger in front of commoners, they would certainly be angry!

“Motherfucker you are courting death.” The lackey had an impulse to fight. In his opinion, Lin Ming only had a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation. He definitely wouldn’t be a match for a Divine Sea powerhouse.

Just as he was about to make his move, the blazing sun in the sky radiated with an even brighter light than before, as if it would explode at any moment. It instantly eased down with the light rapidly retracting in on itself, turning into a three foot thick beam of light that fell downward!

In this beam of light was a dim shadow that spun around. It was a long spear!

“This…”

Huang Yuegong’s eyes widened. The two lackeys behind him, as well as Song Baifeng, JunYunrue, and the others, were all dumbstruck.

“That spear, is that the Phoenix Blood Spear!?”

“The Phoenix Blood Spear is coming down? How is that possible?”

As the red saint rank spear flew toward Lin Ming, the unbelievable result had become an undeniable truth!

Lin Ming had obtained the Phoenix Blood Spear!

Huang Yuegong’s fan fell on the ground with a plop. The faces of the two lackeys behind him, as well as Song Baifeng’s, were twisted in a complex puzzle. Even that sensible and naïve Lin Junzhi wasn’t any different. She rubbed her eyes as if she was seeing things.

This was a top grade saint artifact! A top grade saint artifact that contained terrifying power!

As the saint spear neared, it began to emit thrumming sounds. From the start, there wasn’t any sound. But as it appeared, it became increasingly loud, increasingly resonant, as if a True Dragon that was caged for a long time was emerging from its deep slumber. As excited whistling sounds filled the air, within the rich energy of Saint Artifact Pavilion, a potent infernal energy was stirred up by the Phoenix Blood Spear. The energy formed weak red ripples in the air that revolved around the Phoenix Blood Spear like a hundred flaming birds.

To have the surrounding energy submit in worship of its own volition, and to be able to command the infernal energy and origin energy around it, this spear managed to achieve such phenomenons.

Wuwuwu – !

The Phoenix Blood Spear issued out a clear cry as Lin Ming firmly grasped it in his palm. Although the spear hadn't reached the level of forming its own artifact spirit, it still seemed to have a life of its own. This was truly a weapon worthy of being called a peak existence amongst all top grade saint artifacts.

With a top grade saint artifact in hand, a Divine Sea powerhouse's strength would greatly increase. An early Divine Sea martial artist could use this to defeat a late Divine Sea martial artist!

Moreover, this was a peak top grade saint artifact!

In truth, even a high-grade saint artifact was enough to cause most disciples of Phoenix Hall to go mad with envy. Even though Huang Yuegong had such a prestigious background, he still only had three high-grade saint artifacts.

Lin Ming grasped the nine foot nine inch Phoenix Blood Spear and thrust it toward the vast skies. At this moment his figure was tall and straight. His handsome appearance, the ethereal temperament that was untainted by the world, the faint frosty bloodthirsty underneath, and the Phoenix Blood Spear that overflowed with killing intent; all of these factors complemented each other, making it seem as if a high principle of the Heavenly Dao was contained within him!

This sight caused an inexplicable feeling to surge in the hearts of Jun Yunrue and the other women present. Lin Ming actually managed to take a peak top grade saint artifact!

"How is this possible…"

Huang Yuegong looked at Lin Ming in a daze. He had estimated Lin Ming's limit would be two incense sticks of time, and Lin Ming had indeed lasted for two incense sticks of time before he left the test. However, the truth was that it wasn't that he only lasted for two incense sticks of time, but that it only took him two incense sticks of time to obtain the recognition of Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit!

As he recalled how he was filled with such confidence in his predictions, the charitable disdain he had shown when he obtained a high-grade saint artifact, and even the moment he said he would help guide Lin Ming, Huang Yuegong felt as if he were nothing more than a clown!

"This fellow, is the Saint Artifact Pavilion artifact spirit blind? How can he possibly surpass me? He is only someone from the lower realms, someone with a background no different from a beggar! But me, I am a direct descendant from one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's three great family clans, the Huang Family Clan! In the entire Phoenix Cry Palace, my talent should be at the peak! But now, I'm completely surpassed by him!"

Huang Yuegong's face twitched. This was the most disgraceful event in his entire life. Compared to a martial artist from the lower realms, it wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that the difference was like a prince and a beggar. But now, that prince was defeated by the beggar!

As for Song Baifeng, he began to feel some fear. How could his luck be so bad. He had casually extorted someone this time but somehow managed to offend a monstrous genius, Lin Ming. If this fellow were to rise up in fame and glory in the future, wouldn't that mean that his life was over?

His thoughts raced. Just as he was thinking about how to remedy the situation, another startling scene caused his jaw to nearly drop to the ground.

He saw that in the sky, the scorching sun that represented the Phoenix Blood Spear slowly disappeared. But at the same time, at an even higher space, a bright red spot of light formed, condensing into a seed that slowly fell down toward Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear.

"That is, that is the source power left behind in Saint Artifact Pavilion by the old Palace master, it contains the old Palace Master's comprehension of Laws and is supposed to be a reward only bestowed upon the most extraordinarily talented of disciples!" Song Baifeng blurted out, his expression as if he had seen a ghost. He guarded Saint Artifact Pavilion for many years and had a very good understanding of the place. He never thought that when Lin Ming obtained the Phoenix Blood Spear, he would also obtain the approval of Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit to such an extent that it would actually gift him a wisp of the old Palace Master's source power!"

The Phoenix Blood Spear was originally a peak top grade spirit weapon. This wisp of source power also contained a blood mark of the old Palace Master; that was incomparably pure blood of the Ancient Phoenix. If that were to be absorbed into the Phoenix Blood Spear, the Phoenix Blood Spear would come infinitely close to being a transcendent saint artifact!

If a few more heavenly materials and sacrifices were refined into the spear, there truly would be a chance that it would transform into a transcendent saint artifact. After becoming a transcendent saint artifact, with the Phoenix Blood Spear's origins, it would be very easy to form an artifact spirit. A transcendent saint artifact with an artifact spirit was a spirit artifact!

A spirit artifact – that was an existence he could simply not imagine!

He could already foresee the terrifying potential Lin Ming would unveil in the future. By offending such a person, he would never again have another restful night of sleep!

Chapter 966 – Talent and Treasure That Arouse Envy

Chapter 966 – Talent and Treasure That Arouse Envy

…

…

…

The moment that the source strength left behind by the old Palace Master fused into the Phoenix Blood Spear, Lin Ming felt an intense familiarity, as if this spear became part of his flesh and blood.

He obtained the approval of Saint Artifact Pavilion and now the Phoenix Blood Spear also recognized him as its master, connecting to him through heart and soul.

“What a strong source strength! There’s even such pure blood of the Ancient Phoenix. I wonder just what boundary the old Palace Master was. Although he cannot be compared to the Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, he should still be a heaven-shaking existence, someone with a cultivation even above Senior Fairy Feng. Since he is someone that can forge a spirit artifact, it is my good fortune to be able to obtain a wisp of his source strength.” Lin Ming said to himself.

The stone tablet that stabilized the eye of the great array formation within Saint Artifact Pavilion was left behind by an old Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. But the source strength that was absorbed into the Phoenix Blood Spear was left behind by the old Palace Master.

While a Palace Master was certainly inferior to a Patriarch, source strength was something consumable, whereas a stone tablet could continue existing in perpetuity. After hundreds of millions of years, the number of stone tablets accumulated would be terrifying. But as for source strength, every single drop used meant one drop less; it was an extremely rare and precious treasure.

The Ancient Phoenix Clean had a population of countless hundreds of billions. Nearly all these people cultivated martial arts. From a common mortal to becoming an outer disciple of a palace, from an outer disciple to entering Firebird Hall and becoming an official disciple, and then even entering Golden Crow Hall, Vermillion Hall, and Phoenix Hall afterward, the competition was furious and vivid. With so many geniuses being raised every year, just how many of them were ever able to obtain a wisp of source strength left behind by a Palace Master?

Once Lin Ming really became a great character and no longer needed to rely on the Phoenix Blood Spear, he could absorb the wisp of source strength and use it to enhance his bloodline and refine the Laws within him, even enhancing his own cultivation. It was a treasure with many uses.

The source strength of the old Palace Master turned into a golden red line that spread over the Phoenix Blood Spear. This source strength would greatly enhance the might of the Phoenix Blood Spear. Although the spear hadn’t reached the level of a transcendent saint artifact, the source strength allowed it to come infinitely close!

The Phoenix Blood Spear’s light became increasingly radiant as if a sun fused into the shaft.

Nine feet nine inches, a numeral that existed at the pinnacle. The array formation within the Phoenix Blood Spear also contained a high principles of the Heavenly Dao; this spear was truly an incomparably beast amongst saint artifacts.

Beside Lin Ming, Jun Yunrue and the other disciples' faces were full of envy. Lin Junzhi stared at the spear shaft in Lin Ming's hands with watery eyes. She wanted to reach out with her hand and trace it.

As for Song Baifeng, he looked as if he had lost his soul. He had put on an act to flatter Huang Yuegong today, but in the process he had managed to offend Lin Ming. If Lin Ming didn't die in the future and managed to rise to glory, wouldn't stepping on a small shrimp like himself be as easy as turning a hand?

"Good spear." Lin Ming casually swung the spear and an invisible wave shot out. The surrounding heaven and earth origin energy and infernal energy were stirred up by the Phoenix Blood Spear, forming a faint crescent moon shaped energy blade that shot outward.

Peng!

The energy blade struck Saint Artifact Pavilion's spatial barrier where it vanished. Lin Ming hadn't used any of his own strength just now; that was merely a damaging power formed from the Phoenix Blood Spear. This was the greatest difference between saint artifacts and ordinary treasures. A saint artifact contained an inherent array formation as well as the principles of the Great Dao. If a mortal were to obtain the recognition of a great high-grade saint artifact, they could use it to instantly kill a Xiantian realm martial artist. That crescent moon shaped energy blade was absolutely not something that a Xiantian, or even a Revolving Core, martial artist could block.

A scratch to wound, a touch to kill, that was the attribute of a divine weapon.

Close to Lin Ming, Huang Yuegong also paled. The fiercer the Phoenix Blood Spear was, the more unwilling he became!

On this day, if it were one of the top disciples of Phoenix Hall that obtained the Phoenix Blood Spear, he would at most feel envy in his heart but he would still compliment them outwardly. This was because the top disciples of Phoenix Hall had a background not any worse than his own. Even if they were a cow, there wouldn't be anything to say if their talent was higher.

But now he was stepped on by Lin Ming and his face had been maliciously slapped. Huang Yuegong felt as if he would rather die than live.

"Young master, I think that Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit was confused. How could it possibly bestow the Phoenix Blood Spear onto Lin Ming and not give the Sunpierce Sword to young master? He is only a beggar that ascended from the lower realms, he simply doesn't have the qualifications to wield the Phoenix Blood Spear."

"That's right, the Phoenix Blood Spear should belong to young master. Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit definitely made a mistake somewhere."

The two lackeys could see that their master was enraged and they quickly tried to soothe him with true essence sound transmissions. However, all their blabbering had no effect. It even further angered Huang Yuegong instead. "Shut the hell up! Are you saying that I am inferior to a beggar? Have I not lost enough face already!?"

Huang Yuegong's true essence sound transmission contained a thick killing intent that immediately silenced his two lackeys.

"You are called Lin Ming?" Huang Yuegong suddenly looked at Lin Ming. "It seems I was wrong. Your potential was actually high enough to obtain the recognition of Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit. You're very good!"

Huang Yuegong's was gloomy. Although he was temporarily suppressing the rage in his heart and saying some pleasant banter, his tone actually contained an aggressive edge.

Lin Ming turned and looked at Huang Yuegong. With his tall and straight figure combined with the nine foot nine inch Phoenix Blood Spear, even though Huang Yuegong was trying to pressure him with his momentum, Lin Ming remained unmoved.

“What an impressive aura. For you to reach this point even though you ascended from the lower realms, that proves you’ve got quite the talent. You know, I’ve heard a little story in Phoenix Cry Palace that originated from the mortal worlds. Are you interested in hearing it?”

Although Huang Yuegong asked Lin Ming a question, he didn’t wait for him to reply before speaking. “There was once a beautiful little mortal girl who had an uncle that managed to cultivate to the Divine Sea realm. One day, he gifted her a beautiful vermillion bird feather dress. She put on this feather dress every day when she went to her martial house to train, and she enjoyed the looks of envy that she received from everyone there. But one day, her vermillion bird feather dress disappeared. She eventually found it. It had been shredded apart by someone and thrown in the gutter, utterly ruined and filthy. The little girl cried over and over again, miserably and pitifully, her heart broken. She simply wasn’t able to bear it. Afterwards, her uncle gifted her yet another, more beautiful vermillion bird feather dress. She put it on to show off at the martial house, and as a result, the little girl disappeared. When they finally found her, her primal yin energy had been snatched away and the fires of her life had diminished to the point of fading away at any moment. She had become utterly mad…”

Huang Yuegong’s voice turned colder and crueler as he spoke. The meaning behind his little story was obvious to all. Jun Yunrue stiffened as she heard this and she felt her heart go cold. But Lin Ming maintained his calm, as if he simply didn’t understand the meaning of the story. He looked at Huang Yuegong and faintly smiled, “What are you trying to say?”

“I am only informing you that whether it is Golden Crow Hall, Vermillion Bird Hall, Phoenix Hall, the entire Phoenix Cry Palace, or even the Ancient Phoenix Clan itself, the struggles of the various factions are far from what the likes of you can imagine. Sometimes, not only will talent not bring you supreme honor and glory, but it will instead draw a fatal calamity upon your head!”

“Huang Yuegong, what nonsense are you spouting!? Do you think that my Phoenix Cry Palace has no rules? If you murder a talented disciple, you will be personally executed by the

Palace Master!” Jun Yunrue became incensed as she saw Huang Yuegong threaten someone on her side.

“Palace Master? Hehe, who is the Palace Master? Junior-apprentice Sister Jun, you haven’t been here long enough so you have no idea how high and lofty the status of Palace Master is! Do you really think that Lin Ming has the qualifications to be personally raised by the Palace Master? You think that just because he obtained the approval of Saint Artifact Pavilion and the source strength of the old Palace Master that he has the qualifications? Let me tell you something, the source strength left behind by the old Palace Master can last for tens of thousands of years and be given to dozens if not hundreds of disciples. And out of all these disciples, just how many can become the Palace Master? Let alone the Palace Master, even becoming a Vice Palace Master is a near insurmountable moat! Which palace has several hundred Vice Palace Masters?”

“Phoenix Cry Palace has countless talents. Even if you’re the chief disciple of Phoenix Hall, the most you will obtain is the Palace Master’s notice. Take my Phoenix Cry Palace for example. There is at least one Phoenix Hall chief disciple every 100 years, and sometimes even several of them! But a Palace Master only comes once every several tens of thousands of years! How can you even compare?”

“Moreover, Lin Ming isn’t even the chief disciple of Phoenix Hall; he falls far short! Do you think that Phoenix Hall’s chief disciple doesn’t have their own top grade saint artifact? Especially Senior-apprentice Brother White Daohong, his origin is deep and people even say he has spiritual powers. I believe that at his level, he doesn’t even need to come to Saint Artifact Pavilion!”

Lin Ming maintained his calm demeanor throughout Huang Yuegong’s tirade. He said, “Huang Yuegong, if you have any words to say, then speak them out, loud and clear. Stop beating around the bush.”

“Heh, Junior-apprentice Brother Lin is indeed a smart man. I will tell you that in a situation where you have no foundation, the more you show off your talents the more dangerous it will be for you. Although you don’t have the qualifications to be noticed by the

Palace Master, do you think that Senior Xiao Jiuyang will ignore you? Don't you remember just what sort of a relationship Senior Xiao Jiuyang has with Fairy Feng!?"

"Without an influence to support you, those with talent might die even faster! The Divine Realm is a world of factions, and the Ancient Phoenix Clan is not a single monolith. In a situation where there is no war against some foreign enemy, the struggles on the inside are far more violent and fierce than the fights on the outside! Do you think that all talents will be vigorously raised? If you do, then you're wrong. Of everyone within the Ancient Phoenix Clan, their first and foremost consideration is their own benefit, then the benefit of their family clan, and only then the benefit of the Ancient Phoenix Clan."

Huang Yuegong's words were not lies. The Ancient Phoenix Clan was simply far too large with a population of several hundred billion people. It was equivalent to a superpower in the mortal world. All the citizens of this superpower might not consider their country's interests first, but would think of their own benefit and their family clan's benefit.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Huang Yuegong, are you trying to say that you are planning to be my backer?" Lin Ming's lips curved up in a droll smile.

"Haha, speaking with a smart man like you is indeed refreshing. Yes, my Huang Family Clan is one of the three great family clans of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. It is one of the strongest influences within the Ancient Phoenix Clan. If you join us, you will be able to find asylum and endless resources to enjoy!"

"Oh, is there something so good? Is Senior-apprentice Brother so kind that you would help me without reason?"

"Hehe, Junior-apprentice Brother Lin is clever. If that's the case, I won't mince words any longer. I'll be frank with you, I want to buy your Phoenix Blood Spear! The price I pay will not have you suffer a loss. In truth, me taking the Phoenix Blood Spear off your hands is actually helping you. There is a saying that a man's own wealth will be his ruin if he arouses the greed of others. You simply cannot protect the Phoenix Blood Spear, and moreover, with your fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation, you cannot display the full might of the Phoenix Blood Spear. But I am different. If I have the Phoenix Blood Spear, my combat strength will dramatically rise. At that time, I and the Huang Family Clan behind me will shelter you within Phoenix Cry Palace!”

Chapter 967 – Ready to Fight

Chapter 967 – Ready to Fight

…

…

…

“Junior-brother Lin, don’t listen to him!” Jun Yunrue was afraid as she saw Lin Ming appear as if he were listening; she thought he might think of switching sides to being one of Huang Yuegong’s subordinates and thus be on Xiao Jiuyang’s side. She quickly said, “You cannot believe Huang Yuegong’s words; he is lying to you!”

“Hey, Junior-apprentice Sister Jun, you can eat anything you want but that doesn’t mean you can speak however you want. How are my words lies? Of the three great family clans, no matter which one, all of them have countless members from the outside. If we want to develop we certainly can’t rely on just our own members. If Junior-apprentice Brother wishes, I can immediately bring him to see an Elder of my Huang Family Clan.” Huang Yuegong’s voice was cold. Although he wanted to obtain Jun Yunrue as a toy and helper, compared to a top grade saint artifact she was nothing at all.

“Huang Yuegong! Junior-apprentice Brother Lin is my Honorable Master Fairy Feng’s person. With Honorable Master, who would dare to move against her!”

“Fairy Feng? How hilarious!” Huang Yuegong shook his head, snickering.

“If there was not Fairy Feng, Lin Ming might have some safety. But because of her, Lin Ming is now the enemy of the world! Who is Fairy Feng? Some slut of common origin! You think that she can reach the level of Sage Jiuyang? Open your eyes and take a good look! Of the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s 72 palaces, just which Palace Master comes from a common mortal background!? Of those Palace Masters, even if they aren't from the three great family clans, they are still from famous great families. For instance, Senior-apprentice Brother White Daohong is from the White Family Clan. If Fairy Feng wants to compete for the throne, heh, she is simply biting off more than she can chew. A hundred years from now when the Palace Master retires and Senior Sage Jiuyang takes the throne, do you think he'll get rid of all opposition?"

Huang Yuegong devilishly grinned, not caring about how ruthless his words were. He did not fear offending Fairy Feng, because he knew that a hundred years from now, the one to become the new Palace Master would be Sage Jiuyang. Fairy Feng was simply unable to compare with him.

And now, Huang Yuegong had enough status in Phoenix Cry Palace that even Fairy Feng couldn't do anything against him.

"Junior-apprentice Sister Jun, let me advise you that even birds know to choose good wood for their nests. If you are willing to follow me, I will assuredly favor you as my good little pet. Medium-grade saint artifacts, pills of all kinds, everything can be yours. In this world, people should be smart about the choices they make. Do you know that little story I told you? That story is not some folktale, but a true story. That little girl's uncle tried investigating what happened to her afterward but finally gave up with nothing to show for. Do you know why? Because there will always be people in this world more ruthless than you!"

Huang Yuegong seemed to be happier the more he spoke. He was venting all the pent up gloominess from being slapped in the face by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was patiently listening. In truth, he wasn't just listening to Huang Yuegong's nonsense for fun, but because he wanted to have a better understanding of the real situation in the Ancient Phoenix Clan so that he wouldn't suffer a loss later because of his own lack of knowledge.

Through his own reasoning, Huang Yuegong was exaggerating matters, but not by much. The Ancient Phoenix Clan was indeed far too large. With 72 palaces and three great family clans divided all over the Divine Realm, in a situation where there wasn't a foreign enemy they were forced to band together against, the cohesion and comradery throughout wasn't too great. In the Ancient Phoenix Clan, even if one had talent, it was still possible to summon a calamity upon your head if there wasn't protection!

"Huang Yuegong, you can dream on!" Jun Yunrue's face was red with fury. If she had any favorable impressions of Huang Yuegong before, after listening to him refer to her as a pet and also wanting to have her join his harem, she was fuming.

"Humph, it seems you would rather do things the hard way! Jun Yunrue, you will regret everything one day, because the one that is destined to become the next Palace master is Senior Sage Jiuyang! When that time comes and you wish to seek refuge under me, I don't know if I'll even bother to see you! Humph!" After reaching this step, Huang Yuegong no longer bothered trying to maintain his image. This caused Jun Yunrue to huff with anger.

Huang Yuegong no longer bothered with Jun Yunrue. His eyes moved to Lin Ming and he said in a low voice, "Lin Ming, you best think about it carefully. I have a set of high-grade saint artifacts, a high-grade ring, high-grade vestment, high-grade spear, high-grade bracer, and high-grade pill furnace, all to trade for your Phoenix Blood Spear! You should know that the value of each of these five treasures is inferior to your Phoenix Blood Spear, but if combined they might not be any worse. Moreover, you can obtain the asylum of my Huang Family Clan, so what is there to lose?"

As Huang Yuegong finished, Lin Ming laughed, he laughed recklessly.

"What are you laughing about." Huang Yuegong frowned.

"I'm laughing at how wonderfully calculated your plan is. Five high-grade saint artifacts to trade for my Phoenix Blood Spear? Although I might not understand saint artifacts too much, even I know that every grade will have a difference of at least ten times. This Phoenix Blood Spear in my hands is a peak top grade saint artifact, and it also has the source strength of the old Palace Master fused into it. What you just offered me might be only enough for a top high-grade saint artifact. If I wanted to trade in my Phoenix Blood Spear, I could trade in 200-300 of your kind of saint artifacts. And yet you want to use just five of them to trade for my Phoenix Blood Spear? Do you think I'm an idiot or something?"

As Lin Ming spoke, blue veins started to stick out from Huang Yuegong's forehead. Huang Yuegong forcefully restrained the anger in his heart and coldly said, "When people are too greedy, sometimes they will die because of it!"

Lin Ming sneered. "How ridiculous. You want to trade for my several hundred high-grade saint artifact value Phoenix Blood Spear with only five? And I am greedy if I don't? Is there such a truth in this world? Those two worms behind you keep on blabbering about how I have the background of a beggar, and indeed, compared to a chosen pride of heaven from the Divine Realm, I am truly a beggar. But the current question is, if I wanted to sell you the Phoenix Blood Spear as a beggar, can you afford this beggar's spear even with your entire net worth?"

Lin Ming mercilessly mocked. His words were like a palm that slapped Huang Yuegong. Beside him, Jun Yunrue was excitedly applauding in her heard. She wanted to cry out 'well said'. Such a counterattack really vented her anger!

Huang Yuegong's face was red to the point of looking like a liver. He had always been wealthy, but against this top grade Phoenix Blood Spear, if he went according to its market price, then even if he sold everything he still wouldn't be able to afford the spear head. He only had five high-grade saint artifacts himself, so how could he not be angry?

Huang Yuegong was angry from shame, and from behind him, his two lackeys that were scolded as dogs by Lin Ming suddenly rushed forward!

"You brat, you are courting death!"

The two lackeys were like dogs whose tail had been stepped on. They wildly shouted. They were Divine Sea martial artists that were servants of a great family clan, so how could they allow a fifth stage Life Destruction martial artist from the lower realms to insult them?

The two lackeys took thick sabers from their spatial ring and chopped out at Lin Ming's head. These two sabers were saint artifacts, and although they were the worst among the lowest grade of saint artifacts, a saint artifact was still a saint artifact. As the two sabers cut out, killing intent surged forth!

Lin Ming chuckled. "Sixth stage Life Destruction early Divine Sea realm? How laughable!"

These two lackeys' strength was 108,000 miles from comparing with Yang Yun, let alone someone like Lin Ming. Especially since he acquired the Phoenix Blood Spear!

"Let me take a good look at the might of this divine spear!"

Lin Ming stepped forward and his spear thrust out. He did not use true essence nor did he open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. All he used was his pure physical strength combined with the Phoenix Blood Spear to attack!

Hu-!

A sharp and resonant cry filled the air, as if a divine phoenix had awoken within the Phoenix Blood Spear. In the surrounding world, all of the origin energy was stirred up around the Phoenix Blood Spear without need for Lin Ming to do anything. With a thrust of his spear, the saber lights of the two lackeys were shredded to pieces.

A beam of light recklessly swallowed their bodies. The two lackeys miserable screamed out as their protective true essence exploded. Flesh and blood burst out from their chests. Fragments of ribs mixed with crushed meat rained down on the world!

The two cried out like pigs being slaughtered. They flew backwards and crashed into the ground, blood pooling around them.

In a single exchange, the two of them were sent to the point of life and death with a single strike from the Phoenix Blood Spear. This was not Lin Ming's strength but the power inherent within the Phoenix Blood Spear. Lin Ming only released the spear's power into the world.

Two Divine Sea martial artists were actually easily defeated by Lin Ming. Lin Junzhi and the other young disciples were shocked so much their mouths closed shut. Although someone who was willing to be a lackey was normally limited in talent and strength, they were still martial artists that relied on themselves to break into the Divine Sea. But in front of Lin Ming, they were no different from little children, unable to resist at all!

"This isn't surprising at all! Junior-apprentice Brother Lin's strength is stronger than what we imagined. We thought that he was only able to kill the weakest of Divine Sea powerhouses, but now it seems he is far better than that, especially now that he has obtained the top grade saint artifact, the Phoenix Blood Spear!"

Jun Yunrue flourished her long sword and stood by Lin Ming, vigilantly looking at Huang Yuegong. At this moment, Huang Yuegong's anger reached the extreme. He was a volcano that was about to burst!

"Lin Ming, if you want to beat a dog you must look at their owner. You actually dare to attack my lackeys? Very well then!"

An incomparably sharp killing intent surged out from Huang Yuegong, causing the surrounding temperature to drop. A soft sword jumped into Huang Yuegong's hand as if it had a mind of its own. This was Huang Yuegong's favored sword, a peak high-grade saint artifact!

With sword in hand, Huang Yuegong's aura changed. He was now similar to a resting ancient vicious beast. He hadn't attacked yet, but once he did it would come crashing out like a bolt of thunder!

Lin Ming's expression was dignified. Putting aside the disparity between their weapons, Huang Yuegong's strength far surpassed his own.

Lin Ming's current strength was equivalent to Yang Yun if he had managed to reach the middle Divine Sea realm. Yang Yun's talent wasn't too amazing. In terms of foundation, there was no way he could compare to the geniuses of the Divine Realm.

Moreover, Huang Yuegong had crossed nine stages of Life Destruction. As one of the more talented individuals of Phoenix Hall, how could he not be extraordinary?

Beside Lin Ming, Jun Yunrue and the others all felt as if this was their last stand. The pressure in facing Huang Yuegong was simply too great.

At this moment when all daggers were drawn, a strange fluctuation appeared in the skies. A massive face slowly appeared, and a vast and compelling voice rang through the world. "Saint Artifact Pavilion is the deposit of Phoenix Cry Palace's great weapons. According to the palace's rules, those who dare to fight here will be suppressed for 1000 years!"

This massive face was Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit. As it spoke, colossal energy was released from the sky, falling down on the entire world and instantly imprisoning an area of space.

Lin Ming, Huang Yuegong, Jun Yunrue, and everyone else were unable to move.

Chapter 968 – To Cause a Stir

Chapter 968 – To Cause a Stir

…

…

…

Phoenix Cry Palace had their own strictly enforced sect rules. Although Phoenix Cry Palace, and even the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan, had their own struggles with intrigue and infighting occurring behind the scenes, the assassination and ruination of talented disciples, and even the murder of others to steal their treasures, had to be done in private; they could not be publicly shown. The reputation of the sect would otherwise suffer irreparable damage. On the surface, the Ancient Phoenix Clan's rules could not be violated by anyone.

Saint Artifact Pavilion forbade private battles inside, and the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace were absolutely forbidden from killing each other over treasures.

Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit was equal to a Divine Lord realm master. Although it didn't have a physical form, it could still manipulate the various great arrays in Saint Artifact Pavilion. As it appeared this time, it immediately suppressed the energy within the disciples present.

"Huang Yuegong, the two lackeys behind you were the first to start a fight. According to the palace's rules, they will be locked away for a thousand years! Do you have any objections?"

The artifact spirit icily said. As Huang Yuegong heard this, he almost turned and stormed away. His lackeys were only sixth stage Life Destruction Divine Sea martial artists. Amongst the common mortals of the Divine Realm, they could be considered decent. However, when placed against the standard of Phoenix Cry Palace, they weren't even gifted enough to be a disciple. If this were ordinary times, he wouldn't care about the fate of these lackeys. But now Lin Ming had injured them, and the artifact spirit wanted to imprison them; this was the same as slapping him in the face.

He came from a noble and distinguished family! Aside from the top disciples of Phoenix Hall, it was always him stepping on others, not others making him eat a loss.

But today, his face had been thoroughly ruined. He had been stepped on until he was covered in cuts and bruises!

"What about it? Do you refuse my judgment?" The artifact spirit indifferently said. Everything that it did was in line with the palace's rules. Although Lin Ming had humiliated the two, they were the ones that mocked Lin Ming as a beggar first. The verdict handed down by the artifact spirit could not be questioned by anyone.

"I have no opinion!" Huang Yuegong grimaced. He wasn't an idiot. He simply didn't have the ability to resist an existence on the level of the Saint Artifact Pavilion artifact spirit. In the face of such a powerful being, Huang Yuegong could only patiently bear the shame.

At this point, he actually calmed down. Before now, all the words he spoke were to obtain Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear. But now, he realized that he had been played by Lin Ming. Lin Ming never planned on selling him the Phoenix Blood Spear, and instead was playing along as if he were a monkey. How could Huang Yuegong not hate him?

As Huang Yuegong's voice fell, an invisible energy surged out from the sky, covering the two lackeys that were lying face down on the ground like dead dogs. The two lackeys then disappeared.

A sixth stage Life Destruction Divine Sea martial artist would only have several thousand years of life. Imprisoning them for 1000 years was the same as writing off a good portion of their life.

Huang Yuegong coldly watched as his servants disappeared. His eyes, which had been brimming with a thick killing intent when he realized Lin Ming was playing with him, were now containing a stark indifference. But there was actually a deep hatred hidden within.

He deeply looked at Lin Ming as if he were scanning him down to the bone. Finally, he turned around and strode away.

This left Song Baifeng silently standing behind Lin Ming, covered in cold sweat. His job was to guard Saint Artifact Pavilion, and in other words that was to serve the Saint Artifact Pavilion artifact spirit. Now that he saw that the artifact spirit had the intention of supporting Lin Ming, he became even more afraid. As he recalled the scene of him extorting Jun Yunrue and the others, he had the urge to commit suicide right here and now, in this hall. He wished that he could transform into a lump of poop so that Lin Ming would ignore him.

Luckily, Jun Yunrue and the others didn't seem to care for him, and the artifact spirit also vanished from the skies.

"Lin Ming, what Huang Yuegong said is actually not wrong. Since you refused him today, that is the same as offending the entire Huang Family Clan. In addition, Xiao Jiuyang is part of the Xiao Family Clan. Of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's two great family clans, you've managed to offend two." Jun Yunrue quietly said.

Thinking about it, if she were in Lin Ming's shoes today, she wouldn't necessarily be able to withstand Huang Yuegong's threats. Huang Yuegong was rampant and arrogant, but the words he said because he wanted to obtain the Phoenix Blood Spear were perfectly rational. Someone with a weaker will would've truly felt fear.

Lin Ming smiled, "Senior-apprentice Sister Jun worries for me too much. As for offending the Xiao Family Clan, that is something that will happen in the future. Xiao Jiuyang is vying for the position of Palace Master and he likely has a high status in the Xiao Family Clan too. But my current strength can't be considered anything great right now, it just isn't worth it for the Xiao Family Clan to bother with me. As for obtaining the source strength of the old

Palace Master, how many people have managed to do so in the past several hundred years? But someone that has the potential to become the Palace Master only appears once every several tens of thousands of years. In my opinion, the Xiao Family Clan will be far more wary of a Divine Lord realm senior that supports Fairy Feng than a junior like me. Most importantly, the Xiao Family Clan is simply too large with too many matters that are occurring every day. When would they have the thoughts to bother with an ant-like existence like me? The current me doesn't even have the qualifications to offend the Xiao Family Clan."

"As for offending the Huang Family Clan, that is even more unworthy of mentioning. From the start that Huang Yuegong kept on talking like he was so seriously badass, saying that he wanted to introduce me to his family Elders or other such great kindnesses. But the truth is that if I really wanted to join some family clan, I have no need to seek his recommendation. With my talent, I believe anyone would eagerly accept me. In fact, Huang Yuegong recommending me might even bring him more merit in his family clan! Huang Yuegong's background is truly wonderful, but most of what he says is bragging and blustering used to fool the disciples of common origin. His true status in the Huang Family Clan isn't as high as Senior-apprentice Sister Jun thinks it is. The shame he received today from me is only a matter between the two of us, just like two little children fighting. How could an Elder of the Huang Family Clan kill another child just because their child was shamed by someone else's child?"

Lin Ming calmly stated his analysis. As Jun Yunrue thought about it, this was also the truth. She hadn't entered Phoenix Cry Palace for too long. She had no deep background, so she naturally felt a sense of fear towards the three great family clans, always believing that she couldn't offend them. If anyone from one of the three great family clans approached the common disciples, the pressure was enough to make them bow their heads low.

In this sort of situation, Jun Yunrue was deceived by Huang Yuegong. When he made his threat, she had been afraid. She had worried for Lin Ming so she didn't consider the overall situation too much. Now, after listening to Lin Ming's reasoning, it seemed that her fears were unfounded.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, I never imagined that you would be someone from the lower realms. You just arrived in Phoenix Cry Palace and you have no foundation here, and with your fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation you were even threatened by Huang Yuegong. But not only were you not frightened or panicked, instead you even managed to see through his words. This senior-apprentice sister is really ashamed," Jun Yunrue sincerely said. For a lower realms martial artist that had no background and was also new to the Divine Realm to stay exceedingly calm in the face of such a terrifying influence was extraordinary. He also managed to maintain his own position and interests while not touching their bottom line. This insight and poise was not something that just anybody had.

Lin Ming shook his head, "Senior-apprentice sister praises me too much. In the future I really will encounter a great deal of dangers, so I must be careful. Currently, Senior Fairy Feng alone should be enough to shelter me for some time. When Senior Fairy Feng and Sage Jiuyang's battle reaches the superheating phase in the future, I should have the ability to protect myself."

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, no matter what you say, I must still thank you today for supporting Honorable Master Fairy Feng. If a disciple without much talent was recognized by Honorable Master Fairy Feng, then that would be their good fortune. But for someone like you that has talent, strength, and a mentality stronger than others, it would be easy to seek protection under any influence you wish. Even so, you chose to follow Honorable Master Fairy Feng. About today's matters, I will report them to Honorable Master from beginning to end so that she can reward you."

Jun Yunrue felt a bit apologetic toward Lin Ming. If Lin Ming chose not to support Fairy Feng and threw his chips in with Sage Jiuyang instead, then not only would he be in no danger in Phoenix Cry Palace, but he would have even more resources available to him than he already did. If he managed to enter Phoenix Hall in the future and break into the Divine Sea realm, he really could do whatever he wanted to.

But because he joined Fairy Feng, there were too many variables to account for. This would actually be a loss for Lin Ming.

Lin Ming said, “Senior-apprentice Sister Jun, you’re overstating things a bit too much. I’m someone that knows graciousness and knows how to repay it. Senior Fairy Feng recognized me in Timeworn Phoenix City and advised me. She left a lifesoul jade slip on me, and even spent a part of her cultivation to help my wives in the lower realms. Finally, she personally helped me ascend to the Divine Realm. If it weren’t for Senior Fairy Feng, I would’ve needed to waste a great deal of time and reach the Divine Sea before ascending.”

When Lin Ming reached the fifth stage of Life Destruction in the Sky Spill Continent, his destiny there already reached the pinnacle. In this case, if he had to wait until he reached the Divine Sea realm to ascend, he would have wasted a great deal of time.

……

The matter of Lin Ming obtaining the Phoenix Blood Spear didn’t spread out like a tide as Jun Yunrue had imagined. On the contrary, only very few people knew of it.

There weren’t many people that knew of this matter to begin with. The two lackeys that followed Huang Yuegong were imprisoned by Saint Artifact Pavilion’s artifact spirit. As for Huang Yuegong himself, this was the greatest shame of his life and a major blow to his mentality. He certainly wouldn’t spread the news of such a disgraceful matter. Instead, he immediately returned to his palace and holed himself up in seclusion, disappearing from the public eye.

As for Song Baifeng, he was scared silent. He was well aware that Saint Artifact Pavilion’s artifact spirit supported Lin Ming, so spreading out any information was only something that would happen if he was tired of living. Song Baifeng certainly knew of the dangers of ‘loose lips sinks ships’, and while it was possible for him to obtain some benefits from revealing what he knew, it was incomparable to the future dangers he might suffer. When anyone asked Song Baifeng, he simply stated that he didn’t know anything. Not just that, but he even made a sacrifice and allowed the other young disciples following Jun Yunrue to freely select a low-grade saint artifact.

But paper can’t be used to wrap fire. The disciples that entered Saint Artifact Pavilion after soon discovered that one of the nine top grade saint artifacts, the Phoenix Blood Spear, had disappeared, and in its place was now a halberd. Although the halberd was also a top grade saint artifact, the quality was far inferior to the Phoenix Blood Spear.

In other words, that meant someone had taken the Phoenix Blood Spear!

The spear had hung within Saint Artifact Pavilion for over 30 years, and was faintly recognized as the top saint artifact of Saint Artifact Pavilion, surpassing even the Sunpierce Sword and Sun Shooting Bow. But that spear was now taken away by someone!

The news quickly spread. But no one knew just who had acquired the Phoenix Blood Spear.

The Divine Lord realm figures as well as the various Hall Masters and Elders didn’t care about such a minor matter. But to the young disciples of Vermillion Bird Hall and Phoenix Hall, this was an explosive situation!

Chapter 969 – Fairy Feng's Summon

Chapter 969 – Fairy Feng's Summon

…

…

…

"The Phoenix Blood Spear is a peak saint artifact quenched in Ancient Phoenix blood. It was the most magnificent treasure in Saint Artifact Pavilion and yet someone's managed to take it away! It's been within Saint Artifact Pavilion for 36 years already!"

In Phoenix Hall, the matter of the Phoenix Blood Spear being taken instantly became the hottest topic. 36 years wasn't anything to a Divine Lord realm powerhouse, but to the young disciples of the Vermillion Bird Hall and Phoenix Hall, it was a good portion of their life. There were even some disciples that weren't even 30 years old. Moreover, the disciples of the Vermillion Bird and Phoenix Hall were in a constant competition with each other. If a top grade saint artifact were to fall into the hands of a fellow competitor, that was something they certainly had to be cautious of.

"What a pity. Us Phoenix Hall disciples can take two saint artifacts at most from Saint Artifact Pavilion. I only took one saint artifact because I wanted to save my last pick for the Phoenix Blood Spear. I thought that spear would definitely be mine, but now I missed my chance!" A spear wielding disciple regretfully said.

If he could obtain the Phoenix Blood Spear, not only would his strength increase, but by absorbing the energy that belonged to a top grade saint artifact during training as well as perceiving the array formation within, his cultivation would rise. It could even help him break through a bottleneck.

"Yeah right. How many times have you tried to take the Phoenix Blood Spear? You've used no less than 10,000 phoenix cry seal marks and yet you've never managed to obtain it. The one who took the Phoenix Blood Spear has a talent and potential that we cannot match up to. I really wonder just who the one who took it was."

"They're probably one of the top ranked disciples of Phoenix Hall. Only they have the ability to take the Phoenix Blood Spear!"

"That might be true. Well, we just can't compare."

Even in Phoenix Hall, ninth stage Life Destruction disciples only accounted for a very small percentage. The other disciples had a lower status.

Some disciples tried investigating and finally started questioning Song Baifeng. But Song Baifeng was a very slick character. He kept to his excuse of only having guarded Saint Artifact Pavilion and simply not having seen anything. These days, he saw so many people enter and leave, so how could he know just who had taken it?

When someone attempted to take a treasure from Saint Artifact Pavilion, they did not need Song Baifeng to accompany them. The deduction of contribution points and the matter of obtaining a saint artifact were all handled by the artifact spirit. The reason that Song Baifeng joined in before was because he was bored with nothing to do, so he helped guide Huang Yuegong, a choice he now regretted until his intestines were blue.

All top grade saint artifacts were recorded down by the Saint Artifact Pavilion artifact spirit so that when one was taken, it would be replaced by a new one. If someone wished to investigate just who had taken that top grade saint artifact, their only recourse was to ask the artifact spirit. However, the juniors simply didn't have the qualifications to meet the artifact spirit.

At this time, deep within Phoenix Cry Palace, inside a space distortion, a middle-aged man standing with his back to the door, faced a golden red divine furnace. This divine furnace was the size of a palace and it burnt with a blazing white flame. The temperature was so high that it seemed as if it could burn space itself.

The middle-aged man wore a bright yellow robe with the sleeves loose and open. There was an eight trigrams image embroidered on his back. He created seal after seal in his hands, and these seals seemed to have a life of their own as they slowly fluttered toward the divine furnace.

This middle-aged man was Sage Jiuyang, and the divine furnace in front of him was his spirit artifact, the Vast World Divine Furnace. He was using this divine furnace to concoct pills.

At this moment, a flame flashed beside him. This was the light of a sound transmitting talisman.

As Sage Jiuyang heard the message, his eyebrows pricked up. “One of Fairy Feng’s people took the Phoenix Blood Spear and he is also a martial artist from the lower realms?”

Sage Jiuyang thought for a moment. Although those low level disciples wouldn’t know who took the Phoenix Blood Spear, it was easy for the high level figures of Phoenix Cry Palace to look it up.

“If they can take the Phoenix Blood Spear, in the future they’ll certainly become a top ten ranked disciple of Phoenix Hall. Perhaps they might even have a chance of becoming a Vice Palace Master. Junior-apprentice Sister Yan, you’ve finally started to show your strength. You want to establish your own influence and build up your forces to become stronger, but only in this way would it be interesting to defeat you, haha…”

Sage Jiuyang smiled and crumbled the sound transmitting talisman flame. He continued to concoct pills.

He didn’t know that besides Lin Ming taking the Phoenix Blood Spear, Lin Ming also obtained the source strength of the old Palace Master. This matter was deliberately concealed by the Saint Artifact Pavilion artifact spirit.

Just taking the Phoenix Blood Spear wasn't an act worthy of Sage Jiuyang's attention. Saint Artifact Pavilion had nine top grade saint artifacts and one would be taken away every several years. In a 10,000 year period, the number of talented disciples that accumulated was immense. Of these people, many were won over to Sage Jiuyang's side. He simply didn't care for a single Lin Ming.

Of the younger generation, the only ones worthy of him noticing were those that were already famous. For instance, the current chief disciple of Phoenix Hall, White Daohong.

……

"Oh? Senior Fairy Feng is summoning me?" Lin Ming was cultivating within his residence when he suddenly received Jun Yunrue's sound transmitting talisman. Jun Yunrue had already informed the matter of Lin Ming taking the Phoenix Blood Spear to Fairy Feng, with no details omitted. This even included the words that Huang Yuegong had spoken to Lin Ming. After Fairy Feng knew the entire situation, she immediately issued a summon for Lin Ming.

"I wonder what Senior Fairy Feng is looking for me for."

Lin Ming quickly arrived at Yan Fengxian's residence – Fengxian Palace. This Fengxian Palace covered an area of 10 miles, a gleaming jade palace that expanded to the distant horizons.

Fairy Feng lived in an elegant grand hall located in the deepest reaches of the palace.

As Lin Ming flew in, he saw Fairy Feng sitting high atop an ornately carved phoenix chair. She was the only one in the entire grand hall.

The fire origin energy was extremely rich in this hall, and the temperature was also high. If a mortal were to stand here, he would be scorched to death.

A massive amount of fire energy gathered around Fairy Feng. This fire energy seemed to have a mind of its own as it formed faint fire birds in the air that flew around her.

Fairy Feng did not intentionally form these fire birds; they were a manifested symbol, proof that her comprehension of Fire Laws reached the peak.

This left Lin Ming startled. Every time he saw Fairy Feng, he could feel an increasingly terrifying and formidable side to her.

This woman was absolutely unfathomable. Fairy Feng came from a common mortal background and had no foundation, but here in Phoenix Cry Palace, she actually dared to struggle with the Xiao Clan's Sage Jiuyang for the throne of Palace Master. This meant that she inevitably had something she could rely on!

She hadn't yet established her own considerable force and influence yet. This meant that what she relied on could only be her own abnormally strange and extraordinary strength!

"Junior greets Senior Fairy Feng."

"Lin Ming, you've done well. Very well!" Fairy Feng's first words were praise; she didn't hold back in her appreciation of Lin Ming. "I already expected that you could obtain the Phoenix Blood Spear, but I didn't think you could also obtain the source strength leftover by the old Palace Master. If you perceive this source strength well, it will be greatly beneficial to you."

"Yes, junior understands."

"Mm. This time I summoned you here because I want to tell you to cultivate well. In another half year, the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial will begin again. This is a grand event for all young disciples! The top three of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial will receive plenty of rewards!"

"Ancient Phoenix smelting trial?" Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He didn't think that he would encounter the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial after such a short period of time in the Divine Realm.

He already participated in the general level smelting trial at Divine Phoenix Island's Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. Afterwards, he entered Timeworn Phoenix City to participate in the king level smelting trial.

And now, the third smelting trial in the Divine Realm was the most essential and important smelting trial of them all!

"Lin Ming, your talent is high enough to enter Phoenix Hall. Although you haven't reached the ninth stage of Life Destruction or stepped into the Divine Transformation realm, there can be an exception made to help you enter Phoenix Hall because you managed to obtain the Phoenix Blood Spear! Phoenix Hall's Hall master is one of Xiao Jiuyang's people, but if I wish to arrange for you to go, there is nothing he can say or do. I will receive Phoenix Hall Token for you."

"Phoenix Hall? I just entered Phoenix Cry Palace and I can enter Phoenix Hall already?" Lin Ming was dazed. He thought he would have to pass some tests in order to enter Phoenix Hall. He didn't think he would be directly arranged into it. He leapt over Vermillion Bird Hall to directly enter Phoenix Hall.

Fairy Feng was a Vice Palace Master of Phoenix Cry Palace and she had her own formidable side. Xiao Jiuyang's people could bully Fairy Feng's people, but none of them dared to bully Fairy Feng herself. Otherwise, that was no different from seeking death. This was the right to speak brought about by absolute strength.

Fairy Feng said, "Phoenix Hall's resources are 100 times superior to those of the Golden Crow Hall. You must cultivate well within Phoenix Hall. When you are about to break through the sixth stage of Life Destruction, come to me and I will use my Nirvanic Sacred Flame to disintegrate your body, remove the impurities, and reform your spirit body! When you crossed Life Destruction, you crossed the first five stages by using the power of thunder to decompose your body. That gave you a tremendous benefit. But your thunder spirit body has reached the limit. If you try to use the power of thunder to temper your body again, you won't be able to advance any further. From this point on, for the next four stages of your

Life Destruction, I will assist you with my Nirvanic Sacred Flame. This will give you a thunderfire body and allow you to reach an unimaginable boundary!"

Lin Ming was stunned by Fairy Feng's words, then overjoyed. Entering Phoenix Hall wasn't much at all, but if Fairy Feng could help him decompose his body with her Nirvanic Sacred Flame and cross the sixth stage of Life Destruction, then the seventh and eighth stages later, the benefits would be incalculable.

The Nirvanic Sacred Flame was formed by taking the flame from a phoenix when it underwent nirvana, then fusing that into one's own Fire Elemental. It was a divine flame of a far higher grade than the Purple Lion Thunder Source!

This was the advantage of having the asylum of a top master. A martial artist that dual cultivated in body and energy would have an extremely tough mortal body; it was not easy to break it apart. Before, when Lin Ming tried to cross Life Destruction, he would have to expend a great deal of effort and strength to do so. But now with Fairy Feng helping him, everything became much simpler, and the effects would also be far superior than if he did it himself.

"Thank you Senior Fairy Feng."

"It's just some minor effort on my part. If you follow me, I will not treat you unjustly. Now, let's go. We shall head to Phoenix Hall. There is no need for you to hide the fact that you've obtained the Phoenix Blood Spear. This sort of matter cannot be concealed anyways; it will be found out sooner or later. If this arouses the envy of a genius, they aren't a genius at all!"

Fairy Feng waved her sleeve and a red light wrapped around Lin Ming. A moment later they arrived at Phoenix Hall.

Fairy Feng was a resolute and decisive person, bold in both words and actions. Once she said she would do something, she would immediately do so without delay.

Chapter 970 – Top of the Storm

Chapter 970 – Top of the Storm

…

…

…

“Fairy Feng, you wish to arrange this fifth stage Life Destruction baby into Phoenix Hall?” As Lin Ming and Fairy Feng received Phoenix Hall status token, the old man in charge of registration frowned. He suspiciously glanced at Lin Ming. The old man was the First Vice Hall Master of Phoenix Hall, surnamed Sun, with a Divine Lord realm cultivation.

“His foundation is solid enough but his cultivation is simply too low. Unless a Life Destruction martial artist is at the ninth stage, they cannot enter Phoenix Hall.”

“Is that right? I know that although Phoenix Hall has rules stipulating disciples needing to be at the ninth stage of Life Destruction or Divine Transformation realm to join, there are some martial artists from great families that can join during Life Destruction or even the Revolving Core realm. Those with a deep background and proven potential can be made an exception to enter prematurely.”

Fairy Feng’s words exposed Old Man Sun’s tricks. But Old Man Sun was not embarrassed. Instead, he smiled and said, “Yes, you said that one needs to come from a great family and have great potential, but is this boy from some wonderful background?”

Old Man Sun sized up Lin Ming. Lin Ming had just entered the Divine Realm and his true essence still retained the unique characteristics of a lower realm martial artist. One could see that he simply didn’t have an extraordinary origin.

Fairy Feng calmly said, “Lin Ming entered Saint Artifact Pavilion and obtained the approval of the artifact spirit. He even received the Phoenix Blood Spear. Is that enough qualifications to enter?”

“Mm?” The old man’s eyes shone as he heard Fairy Feng’s words. “The Phoenix Blood Spear! So that’s what happened! The one who obtained the number one saint artifact of Saint Artifact Pavilion was this young boy?”

The old man looked over Lin Ming once more, a hint of surprise in his eyes. He thought for a moment. “A martial artist from the lower realms can actually obtain the Phoenix Blood Spear. That’s quite magical. Fairy Feng, you’ve got some good eyesight. You’ve actually managed to pick up a treasure from the garbage dump.”

As he stared at Lin Ming, the old man’s eyes contained a strange and inexplicable meaning. Lin Ming remained silent. He could faintly feel that this old man had a Divine Lord realm cultivation, and perhaps he even surpassed the early Divine Lord realm. But as for what boundary he was truly at, he could not say. This sort of existence was not something he could contend with.

This sort of old monster with such a high cultivation naturally wouldn’t target him because of a top grade saint artifact. But Fairy Feng had mentioned to him that this old man was one of Sage Jiuyang’s people. He naturally had to be more vigilant against him.

“If you obtain the approval of Saint Artifact Pavilion’s artifact spirit, you can indeed enter Phoenix Hall. But, let me get the ugly talk out of the way first. If your future achievements are lacking, then I’ll have no choice but to kick you out. That might be a very big psychological attack on you, so you must consider this clearly before joining,” Old Man Sun slowly sad.

“If I am inferior to others, then senior will not need to drive me out; I will leave myself.”

“Good. Then here is your status token.” Old Man Sun casually tossed a token into Lin Ming’s hand. This was a golden red token with the image of a phoenix carved in the front and with the words ‘Lin Ming Command’. It was the same as the Golden Crow Hall’s token except for some minor differences.

“From this point on, you are a disciple of my Phoenix Hall and must follow my rules and accept my jurisdiction. Private battles are forbidden between disciples of Phoenix Hall. If there are problems that cannot be solved through more amicable means, you can fight. However, you must do so under the watch of a Hall Protector and your fight shall be carried out on the Nirvana Altar. The loser must pay the agreed upon price. As for anyone that dares to break these laws, they will be imprisoned for a thousand years!”

What Old Man Sun said weren’t just the rules of Phoenix Hall, but the rules of the entire Phoenix Cry Palace. But Phoenix Cry Palace had its own strict hierarchies. If a disciple of Firebird Hall or below were to offend their superiors or malign a disciple of Phoenix Hall, they could be directly executed by said disciple and it wouldn’t be considered violating the rules.

Fairy Feng said, “Lin Ming, you will be cultivating here from now on. I will leave you a jade slip that I spent 300 years of my cultivation on. It has a wisp of my incarnation within it. During a period of danger, as long as you crumble this jade slip, my incarnation will appear and my true self will also arrive within three breaths of time. Of course, this is as long as you don’t leave the world of Phoenix Cry Palace. “

Once a martial artist reached a certain boundary, they could form their own incarnation. The strength of this incarnation would depend on just how much of one’s cultivation was poured into it. However, the cultivation used to form the incarnation wasn’t lost; it could be taken back at any time. Only if the incarnation were to be killed, would the cultivation be lost.

“Haha, an incarnation formed from 300 years of cultivation, Fairy Feng, you really have hedged your bets on this Lin Ming. I fear you can only refine 2-3 incarnations like this or it would start affecting your training.

Old Man Sun chuckled. He knew that Fairy Feng giving Lin Ming the incarnation jade slip in front of him was to act as deterrence. She wanted all those who had dark intentions against him to give up.

“Lin Ming, come with me. Today just happens to be the day that I lecture, so come and listen.”

As Old Man Sun spoke, he waved his sleeves and a red light wrapped around Lin Ming. Together, they went directly toward the region of Phoenix Hall. This region was 100,000 miles wide and was one of the largest complexes in Phoenix Cry Palace.

Here, every disciple had their own mansion, and the size and degree of opulence of these palaces far surpassed any royal palace in the world of the mortals. There were pavilions built on lakes, glorious jade temples and palaces, vast gardens, spring baths, and even hunting grounds. There were daily meals specially prepared, and every palace was staffed with mortal maids and servants. These hundreds of people handled all trivial aspects of life and did so meticulously.

Some disciples even had three palaces and six courtyards in their residences with harems filled with 3000 beautiful women. This was truly the life of an emperor.

In fact, within Phoenix Cry Palace, there were a massive amount of people that weren’t Ancient Phoenix clansmen. These people were only ordinary people from the Divine Realm. They were recruited here to work the variety of chores that needed to be done. Most of Phoenix Hall’s maids and servants were these types of people.

In Phoenix Hall, besides the many disciples’ mansions, there was also a great number of smelting trial fields, training arrays, as well as forests that were filled with vicious beasts. These places occupied the majority of the region.

When Lin Ming entered the core area of Phoenix Hall, the disciples were gathered in the lecture hall to listen to the lectures. Phoenix Hall would have Divine Lord realm powerhouses that would pontificate on various topics every day, for several hours at a time.

This included the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s cultivation methods, martial skills, Fire Laws, and many other subjects. There were even lectures on the Concept of Time and the Concept of Space.

Today’s lecturer was Old Man Sun.

The lecture began at noon. Old Man Sun turned into a beam of light and brought Lin Ming to the lecture hall.

“Mm? Hall Master Sun brought someone along. Is that a new disciple?” Phoenix Hall only had a few hundred disciples. Divine Transformation martial artists accounted for 90% of them. These people all knew each other, so they were able to instantly recognize a fresh face.

“He’s only at the fifth stage of Life Destruction. Is he a junior from a great noble family?”

“How could that be possible? He’s clearly someone from the lower realms, and it doesn’t seem as if he’s been at the Divine Realm for too long. I wonder why he is accompanying Hall Master Sun. Could he have come to listen to the lecture? But only disciples of Phoenix Hall are allowed in on the lectures.”

As everyone was discussing, Old Man Sun suddenly pressed down his hands and all the disciples immediately quieted down. “Everyone, this is a new disciple to my Phoenix Hall. His name is Lin Ming. In the future, he will be staying at Yang Phoenix Hall!”

Phoenix Hall was in truth comprised of two different halls. One was them Yang Phoenix Hall and one was Yin Phoenix Hall. Yang phoenix and yin phoenix designated male and female phoenixes. Males where yang phoenix and females where yin phoenix. Male disciples stayed at Yang Phoenix Hall and female disciples stayed at Yin Phoenix Hall.

“Mm? So he really is a new disciple of our Phoenix Hall!”

“He’s only at the fifth stage of Life Destruction and he’s also a martial artist from the lower realms. How could he possibly have the qualifications to enter? Could his talent be that extraordinary?”

Old Man Sun’s declaration stunned all the disciples present. Many of them glared at Lin Ming with suspicious eyes. Among them, there were those who had to diligently cultivate and reach the Divine Transformation before they had the chance to enter Phoenix Hall, but Lin Ming was only at the fifth stage of Life Destruction. If the resources available to Lin Ming now were far better than what they had available to them back then, they certainly would feel ill at heart.

“Haha, none of you need suspect Lin Ming’s talent. With the matter of the Phoenix Blood Spear being taken, it’s caused quite the uproar. You should all know that it was taken by Lin Ming, and he also managed to obtain the approval of Saint Artifact Pavilion’s artifact spirit. He naturally has the qualifications to enter my Phoenix Hall.” Old Man Sun casually said.

“What? The one who took the Phoenix Blood Spear was him!?”

“A lower realm martial artist managed to take the Phoenix Blood Spear!”

All of a sudden, the way everyone looked at Lin Ming changed. They never imagined that this ordinary but handsome youth would actually be the new owner of the Phoenix Blood Spear.

“I really cannot understand the judgment of Saint Artifact Pavilion’s artifact spirit. My Phoenix Hall has so many talented senior-apprentice brothers that have tried to take the Phoenix Blood Spear and all of them failed. But now a lower realm martial artist actually managed to do so? I don’t believe that his talent or potential is greater than ours!”

A disciple said, refusal thick in his voice. The method that Saint Artifact Pavilion used to determine a martial artist’s talent and potential was not through a fixed standard. Everything was completely up to the own determination of the artifact spirit. This caused some disciples to feel as if a great injustice befell them. They suspected that the Saint Artifact Pavilion artifact spirit had made an unfair judgment.

"I also use a spear. I never imagined that the top divine weapon of Saint Artifact Pavilion, the Phoenix Blood Spear, would actually fall into the hands of a lower realm martial arts. My six years of hard work have all been for naught...."

A disciple sighed, feeling a bit regretful. This situation was as if an unparalleled beauty had appeared in a sect, and her talent lay at the pinnacle of the world, a junior-apprentice sister whose every aspect was perfect. If anyone was able to double cultivate with her, it would be greatly beneficial to one's own cultivation, possibly even helping one to break through a bottleneck.

Countless male disciples would pursue her but all of them returned with empty hands, defeated. But later, a common man who just entered the sect would manage to obtain this perfect junior-apprentice sister with unparalleled beauty. How could others not feel envy?

Old Man Sun stood on stage, holding his hands together and allowing the disciples below to speak as they wished. He faintly smiled, not interfering.

As Lin Ming saw this, he could only ruefully smile. This was a truly inexplicable and baffling hatred. This Old Man Sun had 90% intentionally done this. With just a few words, Lin Min was pushed onto the top of the storm.

After half an incense stick of time, the noise gradually died down. Old Man Sun then said, "Alright, Lin Ming, you look for a place to sit down. I will now start my lecture. During my lecture, everyone is forbidden to speak."

Old Man Sun waved his voluminous sleeve and sent Lin Ming into the crowd. Immediately, the eyes of the several disciples around him focussed on him.

Chapter 971 – You Only Have Yourself To Blame

Chapter 971 – You Only Have Yourself To Blame

…

…

…

Arousing interest was inevitable. Lin Ming didn't care about the eyes of these disciples and began listening to the lecture in peace.

He already expected that the disciples of Phoenix Hall would ask him questions, and the more notorious amongst them would have ideas of taking his Phoenix Blood Spear just like Huang Yuegong. Lin Ming didn't bother with them. He closed off his mind, refusing all of their true essence sound transmissions.

"This brat, I wanted to ask him about the details but who would've thought he'd be so decisive as to refuse all sound transmissions. It's impossible to speak to him."

"Fifth stage Life Destruction, that is the third lowest cultivation in our Phoenix Hall. Besides a Revolving Core disciple called Huo Shaoyan and a second stage Life Destruction martial artist from the Xiao Family Clan, the lowest would be him. Let's wait and take a good look at just what ability he has. Although the Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit is known for having ruthless judgment, I don't believe that it could accurately see through the secrets of heaven to predict the growth of talent with so many variables as well as look at one's potential. Well, at least not every time. If Lin Ming's strength is found to be inferior, it'll be a good show when he is expelled."

The disciples discussed amongst themselves. Geniuses tended to have arrogant and haughty personalities. Of those that could enter Phoenix Hall, which of them weren't among the most outstanding young elites of Phoenix Cry Palace? Of these people, ignoring those with magnificent family backgrounds, they were all the center of existence since their childhoods. There were those that came from small family clans and common mortal origins that were a bit worse, but they were still chosen from the hundreds of millions of Ancient Phoenix clansmen in Phoenix Cry Palace. They got to where they were know by successively emerging as victor through intense series of competitions. They were the chosen amongst all the chosen prides of the heavens, so whom of them would acknowledge they were inferior to others?

Now, the Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit had recognized that a martial artist from the lower realms, who was younger than them, had a talent that surpassed their own. The artifact spirit had even given him the Phoenix Blood Spear that had been unmoved for 36 years. How could they be convinced about this?

Who was strong and who was weak, one had to battle in order to truly find out. As a genius, one needed to have an unyielding mindset that never admitted to loss. If others said someone else was stronger and they didn't confirm this through battle, that genius would lose their proud heart and their future achievements would also diminish.

High above the lecture hall dais, Old Man Sun was lecturing without end.

Lin Ming didn't bother with the sound transmissions that the disciples were shooting his way. He was wholeheartedly listening to Old Man Sun's lecture instead. Although Old Man Sun didn't have any particularly good intentions toward him, the Fire Concepts and fire-attribute cultivation methods that he lectured on were quite mysterious and interesting. Even when he spoke of the most basic Fire Concept, the Concept of Burning Heat, Lin Ming was still able to derive a great number of truths from it. These truths contained profound principles. Lin Ming would be able to slowly mull over them later.

This lecture continued for six hours, all the way until the nine suns began setting in the sky. Old Man Sun said, "Very well, this lecture is over. You may all go back to your residences and meditate."

Old Man Sun floated away, leaving behind Lin Ming deep in thought. By listening to the lecture of a master, he was able to obtain many experiences that he couldn't from a jade slip. Old Man Sun had spoken a great deal about theorems and Lin Ming gained many inspirations.

"The conditions the heroic young elites of the Divine Realm are raised in are truly not what martial artists from the lower realms can compare with. In the lower realms, a martial artist is already extraordinarily lucky if they can have a Divine Sea realm master. But these Divine Realm martial artists have instructors at the Divine Lord realm and masters at even higher boundaries..." Lin Ming sighed.

But luckily, he managed to find the Magic Cube in the Sky Spill Continent, and in lower realms with its barren desert-like resources, he had racked up a number of achievements.

As he was thinking, a loud voice spoke up. "Lin Ming? I am a junior from the Huo Family Clan, Huo Yanguang. My cultivation is at the eighth stage of Life Destruction and I am also a disciple of Phoenix Hall. Hall Master Sun said that you obtained the approval of Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit, and you even took the Phoenix Blood Spear?"

"What do you want to say?" Lin Ming faintly frowned. Huo Yanguang stood in front of him with several other disciples backing him up. They had cultivations at Life Destruction and the Divine Sea, none of them lower than his own. He could tell from their postures that they didn't come here with any good intentions.

"What I want is to have a short little bout with you. Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit may have recognized that your talent and potential are better than mine, but I do not believe this! I want to verify whether or not you are truly fiercer than I am. Although my cultivation is higher than yours by three stages of Life Destruction, you still have the Phoenix Blood Spear which is more than enough to make up for the disparity in our cultivation. In fact, I would say you even have the advantage! If you lose to me, that proves you are not fit to be the master of the Phoenix Blood Spear. What about it, do you have the guts to take me on?" As Huo Yanguang spoke, a sharp momentum followed him, aimed right at the point between

Lin Ming's eyebrows. This feeling was just as if someone had taken a cold dagger and pressed it to his forehead.

Lin Ming thought this was funny. “What do you mean? You think that I don't deserve the Phoenix Blood Spear, so if I lose I have to give it to you?”

“Hey, jewelry has always been gifted to beautiful women, and divine weapons have always been bestowed upon heroes. A top grade saint artifact should definitely go to someone who deserves it. If you, with your fifth stage Life Destruction and top grade saint spear, fight me with my eighth stage Life Destruction and lose, then what honor do you have left to keep that Phoenix Blood Spear?”

Huo Yanguang loudly laughed, trying to stir up Lin Ming. According to the rules of Phoenix Hall, disciples could not privately battle against each other, but had to do so at the Nirvana Altar under the supervision of the Hall Protectors. The loser would have to pay the agreed upon price, and what Huo Yanguang wanted was Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear.

As Huo Yanguang finished speaking, the other martial artists behind him began to add oil to the fire. “A good show is about to stay. Huo Yanguang's cultivation is at the peak of the eighth stage of Life Destruction, and he is also an outstanding disciple amongst the juniors of the Huo Family Clan. He's just a single step away from reaching the ninth stage of Life Destruction. I don't think Lin Ming is his match!”

“Yeah, ninth stage Life Destruction, Phoenix Hall doesn't even have 30 of them. Most of those people have reached the Divine Transformation realm, and there are even those at the middle Divine Sea and late Divine Sea. After achieving the ninth stage of Life Destruction, it becomes extremely easy to step into the Divine Lord realm in the future. Huo Yanguang is destined to become a Divine Lord powerhouse and Lin Ming isn't too bad either. He managed to obtain the approval of Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit and even took the Phoenix Blood Spear. I think this will be a battle between two lions.”

“You know nothing! Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit is equal to an early Divine Lord realm master. It has lived for a long time and its vision is exemplary, but in the growth of talent, there's countless variables involved, so how could it possibly correctly assess talent every time? Perhaps it made a mistake this time. Huo Yanguang has already proven his strength through countless battles. His 'Raging Fires Burning Heaven' combat technique has already reached an extremely high boundary, and he has even comprehended the third level of the Concept of Fire – Creation. He already defeated numerous geniuses of his own age!"

Several disciple bantered together, trying to deliberately provoke Lin Ming's ire.

Huo Yanguang had an extremely obvious goal in challenging Lin Ming. First, he refused to accept the judgment of Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit and wanted to prove that he was stronger than Lin Ming. Second, and most importantly, he wanted to obtain the Phoenix Blood Spear. As long as he could anger Lin Ming and bait him into a battle, then even if he was defeated it would only be losing a bit of face; the losses wouldn't be too big.

Lin Ming watched them as if he were watching a bunch of clowns putting on some silly act. He suddenly laughed and said, "Your plan is far too second-rate. I don't know who you think you are fooling, but do you really believe everyone in this world is as idiotic as you are? If you challenge me and win, you want my Phoenix Blood Spear, but if you lose all you lose is some face? Is there such a great bargain in this world? Do you think your face is as valuable as a top grade saint artifact?"

Lin Ming's words caused all of the disciples in front of him to have ugly and horrible expressions. All of the clownish expressions they wore on their faces suddenly froze.

Before, they were indeed trying to bully Lin Ming for having just arrived at the Divine Realm and having far too little experience. They thought he would be rash, impulsive, and lacking in sensibility, but as a result they were the ones who seemed like fools.

"Lin Ming, I thought you were some amazing character, but it looks as if you're as timid as a mouse. Are you not fighting me because you're afraid you will lose? Hehe, it seems this is all you are. It will be hard for you to achieve anything in the future." As Huo Yanguang's plan was poked through by Lin Ming, he wasn't embarrassed at all. Instead, he continued to antagonize Lin Ming.

Lin Ming sneered. He mockingly said, “Your ability to reason is truly not one of your flattering points. When did I say that I wouldn’t fight? If you want to challenge me you can, but you will need to put forth a top grade saint artifact as the gambling stake!”

Lin Ming had come to Phoenix Hall to calmly cultivate in order to attack the sixth stage of Life Destruction. He was preparing to enter the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial half a year from now so he could win the rich rewards offered there. He didn’t have time to be pestered by all these people.

If he agreed to Huo Yanguang’s challenge today, then even if he won, tomorrow there would still be Huang Yanguang, Xiao Yanguang, and all the other Yanguang’s would pile up to challenge him.

Huo Yanguang was only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction. Above him there were Divine Sea powerhouses, even Divine Sea powerhouses that reached the ninth stage of Life Destruction. These Divine Sea powerhouses cared about their status and wouldn’t disgrace themselves by challenging him. It was the same as an adult challenging a little child to battle; it couldn’t be justified to anyone in anyway.

However, if he continued to win again and again, then it might not be too long until a Ninefall Divine Sea master challenged him. Lin Ming wasn’t so full of himself that he believed he could defeat a Ninefall Divine Sea martial artist. Once he lost, he really would be an idiot.

“You!” Huo Yanguang’s face turned red. Although he came from a prestigious family background, his cultivation was only at the Life Destruction realm. Just where would he be able to find a top grade saint artifact?

“How about it? Is there a problem with what I said? I thought you were some amazing character, but it looks as if you’re as timid as a mouse. Are you not fighting me because you’re afraid you will lose? Hehe, it seems this is all you are. It will be hard for you to achieve anything in the future.”

Lin Ming threw Huo Yanguang's mocking words back in his face. In this world, one of the most depressing things was to have your own words tossed back in your face.

This caused Huo Yanguang's complexion to turn even uglier.

"Oh. I get it now. It's because you don't have a top grade saint artifact. If you can't take one out, then stop wasting my time and get out of my way. When you find a top grade saint artifact, come back and bother me again."

Lin Ming was disinclined to speak to these fools. He stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void and flew straight back to his own mansion residence.

"Damn that brat!" Huo Yanguang never managed to take even the tiniest bit of advantage from Lin Ming. He was humiliated and made a joke in front of everyone instead.

There were numerous martial artists that saw the little play. Some were at the Divine Sea realm and some were even at the Divine Lord realm.

"Hehe, how interesting. Although that boy is only from the lower realms, he's not some naïve little baby. Huo Yanguang tried to take him as a fool, but now he's been embarrassed and he only has himself to blame. In the future I should also be wary of this Lin Ming fellow; he might become one of my great rivals." In the crowd, a man with an earring rubbed his chin, smiling. The competition between the disciples of Phoenix Hall was extremely intense. Here, there were no friends, only competitors. For instance, the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, if one wanted to reach first place and obtain the rich rewards there, one would have to step over everyone else to get there.

Chapter 972 – Making Enemies

Chapter 972 – Making Enemies

…

…

…

"Sir Huo, we can't let things end like this. That Lin Ming is far too rampant!" Next to Huo Yanguang, several disciples that weren't part of the Huo Family Clan shouted out. They joined the Huo Family Clan with the status of non-family disciples. In the Ancient Phoenix Clan, the competition was fierce. It was difficult for a martial artist of common origin to succeed here, and even if they managed to obtain some lucky chances, they might even be killed for their treasures.

In the world of martial artists, a man's wealth was his own downfall. This was the simple truth. In order to seek protection and also more resources, common martial artists had to join prestigious families.

These disciples that joined the Huo Family Clan certainly had to flatter Huo Yanguang. They became the butt of the joke in front of so many witnesses, and now they were gnashing their teeth in hate.

"Humph, I will avenge this insult sooner or later."

"Sir Huo, how about this, you can apply for a top grade saint artifact from your family clan. With Sir Huo's status, I'm sure that it isn't impossible to borrow one. When you have a top grade saint artifact, you can battle with Lin Ming and openly and honestly win his Phoenix Blood Spear while slapping him across the face." A non-family disciple suggested on a whim. He felt this idea was quite good.

However, he didn't think his words would draw a disgusted look from Huo Yanguang. This caused him to be confused. What? Was there something wrong with what he said?

"I don't need the likes of you to teach me what to do!" Huang Yanguang coldly said. That disciple immediately turned quiet as he was yelled at. His flattering had clearly backfired on him.

"Haha, Third Brother, you seem as if you're not confident you can defeat Lin Ming." Behind Huo Yanguang, a red haired youth smiled. This youth was also a direct descendant junior from the Huo Family Clan as well as Huo Yanguang's cousin. "Otherwise, with your status, you should be able to borrow a top grade saint artifact."

"Humph, a top grade saint artifact is worth dozens of high-grade saint artifacts. If the stakes weren't so high, I wouldn't care about provoking Lin Ming. If I win then it'd be good, but if I lose I could still bear it. But if the battle concerns two top grade saint artifacts, I have to choice but to be careful!"

"Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit might not be too strong, but it has seen countless geniuses these past few hundred thousand years. I fear it has seen a hundred million geniuses pass through its doors! Its sight isn't what the average person can compare with and that's the only reason why Phoenix Cry Palace would be so relaxed about letting the artifact spirit assign saint artifacts as it wishes! Although there are countless factors involved in the growth of talent, since Lin Ming could obtain the approval of Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit, he definitely has his strengths. Although my cultivation is higher than Lin Ming's by three stages of Life Destruction, the Phoenix Blood Spear is more than enough to make up for the difference. Even if I am proud of my abilities, that doesn't mean I have a 100% chance of winning the battle. If I fight him and lose and recklessly lose a top grade saint artifact, there will be no way I can escape punishment once the family clan investigates me. If I lose, my loss will be deducted from all the resources I receive in the future. It will greatly affect my future achievements!"

"Moreover, such an important battle for two top grade saint artifacts will attract attention from everywhere. If I lose, I won't have any face left. The loss will become a heart demon that haunts me, and I have no idea whether or not I would be able to overcome something like that!"

Huo Yanguang said these words only to his cousin with a true essence sound transmission. He naturally wouldn't say words like these that increased the fame of others while ruining his own.

"Hehe, Third Brother, you are quite the calm one!" The red haired youth laughed. In fact, he also felt that Huo Yanguang didn't have a 100% chance of defeating Lin Ming.

"Humph! I'm not afraid of fighting, I'm not afraid of competition, nor am I afraid of gambling. But in a situation where I don't have an absolute grasp on victory, I won't do something so stupid as betting my entire property and future. Even if I were to add up everything I have, I still can't even match up to a fifth of a top grade saint artifact!"

"Then are you going to let it go like this?"

"Let it go? Of course not! I, Huo Yanguang, have never suffered a loss. It's always me stepping on others, not others stepping on me. The only exceptions are if their backgrounds and talents are far more dangerous than mine. But I wouldn't offend that type of person to begin with. This Lin Ming fellow is merely a small fry from the lower realms, he's no different from a monkey in my eyes. Yet this monkey dared to use my own words against me and shame me in front of everyone here, leaving me with nothing to say! If I let someone slap me like this without retaliating, how can I still stay in Phoenix Hall? If I don't vent this anger, my thoughts will not be smooth and even my meridians will be blocked. It will affect my cultivation."

A martial artist with thoughts that weren't smooth was the same as a mortal that seethed and sulked over something. This sort of seething and sulking would eventually ruin their health. If a martial artist felt they were aggrieved and their thoughts weren't smooth, this would hinder their training and harm their cultivation.

This was the so-called 'sick with anger'.

Some mortals were so angry they would lose their breath and even turn ill. Similarly, there were martial artists that were so angry that this anger would shatter their heart of martial arts, causing them to have tremendous difficulties taking even the tiniest step forwards in their cultivation.

“Oh? Then what do you plan on doing?” The red haired youth asked, his eyebrows arching upwards.

“I will soon break through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction. The ninth stage of Life Destruction is perfection. To seek the Nine Divine Shifts is to seek Ninefall first. The ninth stage of Life Destruction is the symbol of transformation through rebirth, the process of mortal to divine. In the entire Phoenix Hall there are only 28-29 martial artists who in the ninth stage of Life Destruction. From the eighth to the ninth stage, there is a significant leap in strength. When I reach this step, I will put out the gambling bet, defeat Lin Ming, and obtain the Phoenix blood Spear!”

“Good!” However, when you reach the ninth stage of Life Destruction, Lin Ming might not accept your challenge. He isn’t an idiot. If he clearly knows he will lose the fight, why would he be so stupid as to jump into the pit?”

“Hehe, he’ll accept. Of the common disciples of Phoenix Hall, which one hasn’t suffered a loss or paid with blood? The waters of Phoenix Hall are deep, but the rewards are actually limited. Normally, only the top few will receive rewards, but if one climbs, others will drag them down. It’s only natural for geniuses without any great background to be pushed aside and suppressed. Lin Ming thinks that just because he joined Fairy Feng he will have someone to watch over him, but what he doesn’t know is that Senior Sage Jiuyang will act against Fairy Feng sooner or later. This will be before the Palace Master abdicates!”

With Huo Yanguang’s level, he actually wasn’t able to come into contact with someone like Sage Jiuyang. Even so, he was able to speculate on some matters. Many people believed that the Palace Master would abdicate in around a hundred years or so, and that would be the time when blood would spill in the struggle between Fairy Feng and Sage Jiuyang. But this was a wrong way of thinking. Sage Jiuyang now held the advantage, so how could he stand idly by and watch his competition grow?

“Third Brother, you’ve considered this quite carefully. Not bad, I’m starting to favor your chances of winning against Lin Ming more and more. From the moment you were born in the family until now, you’ve seen all sorts of intrigue and plots happening behind the scenes. Your insight is not what Lin Ming can compare with. He is nothing but a martial artist from the lower realms, no different from a country bumpkin. How could his vision possibly match yours? Even if he has talent, if he doesn’t have brains, then he’s nothing more than a brute. There’s no need to fear him at all!”

“Humph! To the Divine Realm, those martial artists from the lower realms are nothing more than ants. Lin Ming can at most be called a king ant. If he chose to hide his abilities and keep a low profile after entering the Divine Realm, being patient and slowly gaining strength, he might have been able to become someone. But currently he lacks strength and background. He pretends to be so awesome and daring, but he is standing on the top of the wave. He has managed to offend so many people from everywhere, he is simply an idiot. He even dared to insult my dignity. I will take his Phoenix Blood Spear and beat him into the ground in the presence of everyone. I will shame him, ruin him, and leave a heart demon within him that he will never manage to get rid of. I will make it so that he will never be able to recover from this loss!”

As Huo Yanguang spoke, his eyes flashed with a cold light. All sorts of calculations happened in his mind as his plan began to come together.

……

After Old Man Sun’s lecture, it was dinner time. In the Sky Spill Continent, a top sect would enjoy all sorts of vicious beast meat, high quality spirit vegetables and spirit grains. If a single vegetable leaf were to fall into the world or mortals, it would sell for an astronomical price with the effect of extending a mortal’s lifespan for several years.

In Phoenix Hall the food was even more exaggerated. Everything here could be considered heavenly materials!

Many heavenly materials would have impurities or toxins. Although they could strengthen one's cultivation, eating too much for too long a time would cause the toxins to accumulate and form irregularities in their true essence.

However, Phoenix Hall had a method to deal with this. All of these heavenly materials would be processed to rid them of their impurities and toxins as they were turned into food. Even if they had to lose most of their medicinal efficacy, this was still acceptable!

Phoenix Hall had a pill furnace named the Nine Phoenix Royal Yang Furnace; this was a spirit artifact!

This was a pill furnace. However, it wasn't used to concoct pills, but rather to process food materials and melt away the impurities.

The Nine Phoenix Royal Yang Furnace could only create a limited amount of food per day. Only disciples of Phoenix Hall and important sect figures had the privilege of enjoying this food. The disciples from Vermillion Bird Hall and Golden Crow Hall did not have such luxurious treatment.

At this time, Lin Ming was eating a bowl of noodles. The noodles looked ordinary, just a bit fresher than normal. As he ate them, he immediately felt his mouth salivate as the noodles melted on his tongue with an incomparably delicious taste. They entered his stomach, turning into a stream of heat that spread through all his limbs and body. Lin Ming had inherited the memories of a Divine Realm's alchemist so he was knowledgeable in medicinal effects; he naturally knew what was happening as he ate these noodles.

"What great noodles. Just these noodles have dozens of medicinal ingredients fused into them. They were beaten for at least a thousand times and then boiled in solar origin spring water. I've also drank solar origin spring water during the final phase of the general level smelting combat at Divine Phoenix Island and it was extremely beneficial to my cultivation.

At that time, I treated it like a treasure and stocked up on it, even using it to refine the Nirvana Dragon Root. But here it's actually only used to boil some noodles because these noodles are far more valuable than solar origin spring water. By tasting it, I can tell there are at least 32 different kinds of medicinal herbs, and all of them are priceless treasures. If a single one of these ingredients were placed in the Sky Spill Continent, it would arouse the greed of every single fourth-grade sect. Once they obtained it, they would treat it like a treasure, raising it for decades before using it to concoct a pill."

Lin Ming ate the bowl of noodles in a single go, then began to sip on a soup made with the bones of several spirit birds. "This soup should be prepared from the five-colored spirit birds that have the phoenix bloodline. The Ancient Phoenix bloodline can transform common birds into immortal cranes. This bloodline would be bred onward. Phoenix Cry Palace should have many pens with Ancient Phoenix bloodline spirit birds that constantly reproduce, then they're used to make food. Although the bloodline of these spirit birds isn't too rich, they're still screened and bred by Phoenix Cry palace. They're far from what the several vermillion birds of Divine Phoenix Island can compare with after their bloodline was diluted over 100,000 years. The vermillion birds are the saint beasts of Divine Phoenix Island, and I recall that Yin Yang Profound Palace once sorely struggled for them. But if the vermillion birds were placed here, they wouldn't even be qualified for boiling soup. There really is just no way to compare."

Lin Ming sighed and drank the spirit bird soup until not a single drop was left. He suddenly felt the light in front of him being blocked. As he looked up, he could see five youths standing side-by-side in front of him. They casually sat down, a playful smile hanging on their lips.

Chapter 973 – To Provoke and Ignore

Chapter 973 – To Provoke and Ignore

…

…

…

The dining tables of Phoenix Hall was carved from fire spirit jade and very wide. When the five youths sat down, it didn't seem crowded at all.

Two of them had red hair. Red hair was the symbol of the Huo Family Clan. Only direct descendant juniors of the Huo Family Clan with a rich bloodline had red hair. When Lin Ming encountered Huo Family Clan juniors at Timeworn Phoenix City in the lower realms they hadn't had such blazing red hair.

As for the others, Lin Ming had seen them before. They were following behind Huo Yanguang before and were disciples that latched onto the Huo Family Clan.

The red-haired youth leading them looked at Lin Ming. As he saw Lin Ming polish off the noodles and the spirit bird bone soup, he smiled and mockingly said, "You really are a martial artist from the lower realms. You even eat like a beggar."

"Haha, haven't you eaten in the last three days? You ate all the soup and even licked your bowl off cleaner than my family's dog would." Another follower disciple echoed.

They all came here to stir up trouble. Their attitude, posture, and words all conveyed a signle message to Lin Ming: 'hit me, why don't you hit me'.

According to the rules of Phoenix Hall, private fighting between disciples was forbidden. If one wished to fight they had to do so fairly on the Nirvana Altar under the watch of a Hall

Protector. This sort of rule was established to prevent disciples from dying during battle. The environment in Phoenix Hall was simply far too complex with too many interests mixed up together and too many factions opposing each other. If private battles between disciples were allowed, it was likely the disciples would be killed by people manipulating things behind the scenes.

If Lin Ming was the first attack, he would be in violation of sect rules and would be imprisoned for a thousand years. This was likely what these people wished for.

Lin Ming certainly wouldn't make such a silly mistake. He grabbed a bowl of rice that looked as if it were made from pearls and diamonds and continued to slowly eat, not even glancing at these people in front of him. "Although I knew that people would try to suppress me in Phoenix Hall, I didn't think I would draw flies even when I'm trying to eat a meal."

"You actually dare to call us flies? You really have no idea what the word death means! Lin Ming, if you have the guts, follow me up to the Nirvana Altar and let's fight! I know that you're scared to bet the Phoenix Blood Spear but that doesn't matter to me. I don't want it, all I want is the loser to slap themselves across the face!"

The one who spoke was a non Huo Family Clan disciple. His cultivation was at the eighth stage of Life Destruction. The other disciples with him were at the Divine Sea realm and they also had an eighth stage Life Destruction base.

These people clearly relied on their relationship with the Huo Family Clan to enter Phoenix Hall during the Life Destruction realm. Afterward, they failed to reach the ninth stage of Life Destruction but hadn't been kicked out of Phoenix Hall because they relied on their special connections once again. These people's talents were much worse than Huang Yuegong or Huang Yanguang.

"So you came to test me?" Lin Ming immediately understood what was happening. These were all people of the Huo Family Clan. "It looks like Huo Yanguang is preparing for me. However, in a fight involving two top saint artifacts, he can't help but be cautious. After I entered the Divine Realm, the only time I fought was those two sixth stage Life Destruction servants of Huang Yuegong. Other than that I haven’t shown my cards, so Huo Yanguang lacks the confidence that he can defeat me, so he sent this group of people here to test me.”

In Huo Yanguang’s opinion, these people were more than enough to test out Lin Ming’s hidden cards. If Lin Ming’s strength was freakishly abnormal, he would give up any thoughts of challenging. On the other hand, if their strength was similar, he would be able to prepare some special counters to Lin Ming’s moves. This was the so-called know yourself, know your enemy, and be invincible.

“Huo Yanguang, your plan is quite well thought out. But do you think everyone in this world is an idiot and you are the only intelligent one out there? If you sent a few people out to test me, do you really expect me to just let you?”

Lin Ming stood up. He simply didn’t bother with the provocations of these flies. He didn’t even want to challenge them and deliberately show a weaker side, because that would only attract the attention of others to himself.

“If you want to fight me, prepare a top grade saint artifact. Why would you call yourself juniors of some great noble family if you don’t even have a single top grade saint artifact? You might as well go work as beggars instead.”

Lin Ming left these last words behind and then walked away, leaving the group of disciples fuming in anger.

“Lin Ming, you always use the excuse of a top grade saint artifact! But the truth is that you just don’t have the balls to fight us!”

“You turtle!”

The group of disciples shouted out loud. Lin Ming walked away, seeming as though he couldn’t hear them at all.

His cultivation was rising more and more these days; it was only a matter of time until he could break through to the sixth stage of Life Destruction.

For the next several days Lin Ming was constantly provoked. There were even those that came outside of his residence to shout out challenges at him. Lin Ming ignored them all. He only put out a single condition; anyone that wished to challenge him would need to put out a top grade saint artifact.

Those that could put out a top grade saint artifact were mostly ninth stage Life Destruction Divine Transformation realm martial artists. Or at least a ninth stage Life Destruction late Divine Sea martial artist. But it was impossible for those people to challenge Lin Ming. Lin Ming was at Phoenix Hall for a while now, and although he was regularly challenged by people, he actually hadn't fought yet.

Facing this Lin Ming that refused all challengers, the disciples of the Huo Family Clan began to spread the news that Lin Ming was a fraud and that his true strength was actually pathetic.

This news caused some people to suspect Lin Ming's true strength. Was he really as amazing as Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit recognized him to be, or had Lin Ming managed to trick it using some devious method?

Lin Ming turned a deaf ear to all of these suspicious. These false rumors had no significance to him. If he fought one of those minions because of these lies and defeated them, another would simply jump up to replace him. He would have to continue fighting, and this would give him no time to cultivate. Besides, if he appeared to powerful, Huo Yanguang would step back from challenging him.

Only a true fool would do that.

"This Lin Ming really is unaffected!" In his residence, Huo Yanguang frowned. "I'm beginning to suspect that he really is a weakling."

In front of Huo Yanguang, there was a tall youth sitting with fire red hair that fell to his waist. This youth had a calm demeanor and his eyebrows slanted upward like swords. His cultivation was at the late Divine Transformation realm, and his inner world had begun to transition to a true great dimension; he was only a single step from becoming a Divine Lord.

"I advise you not to underestimate your opponent. Although Lin Ming is just an ant, you still haven't grown yet. Compared to the entire Divine Realm, we are nothing but ants too."

The tall youth slowly said. Although he was strong, he wasn't arrogant at all. He always held a trace of fear and awe toward the vast Divine Realm.

"Brother in law, you are far too humble! You will soon become a Divine Lord and form your own world. Your body will contain life and you will be a god to all beings in your world, so how can you possibly be considered an ant? I asked uncle to come this time because I wanted to borrow something to guarantee my victory in the upcoming battle."

"Oh? Are you saying you want to borrow a top grade saint artifact? Well, I guess I can, but you must first break through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction."

"Okay. I've already saved up my strength at the eighth stage of Life Destruction for three years; I have the confidence I can make a breakthrough. I wanted to gather a bit more strength, but now is still a good time. I will borrow the pressure of this fight and officially attack the ninth stage of Life Destruction. In order to ensure that I successfully enter the ninth stage of Life Destruction, I would like to request some phoenix plume blood from uncle!"

"Phoenix plume blood?" The tall youth's eyelids shot up. Phoenix plume blood was also Ancient Phoenix blood, but the quality was higher than ordinary phoenix blood. Phoenix plume blood was the bloodline found within the plume feather of an Ancient Phoenix. It had the richest fire energy, and was an extremely high quality type of Ancient Phoenix blood.

"Yes, I can apply to the family clan for some, but you must guarantee that you can make a breakthrough, otherwise things will be difficult for me."

"Definitely. Once I break through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction my strength will make a rapid leap and I will challenge Lin Ming. He has a top grade saint artifact but I will have one too. Although the grade is inferior, the difference can't be that large! When I am at the ninth stage of Life Destruction and I have a top grade saint artifact on top of that, if I fight him with his fifth stage of Life Destruction, then even if his talent and potential are superior to mine, I will still win. But before then, I must hide my top grade saint artifact or else he'll be too afraid to challenge me. When we fight, I'll take it out and then... Hehe, I'm really looking forwards to seeing his expression."

The tall youth nodded at Huo Yanguang's words. "Your plan is good, but if you hide the top grade saint artifact, what will you use as the gambling stake? The gambling stake must have a value equal to a top quality saint artifact. Moreover, it must be enough to tempt Lin Ming to action!"

"The gambling stake will be the phoenix plume blood. The phoenix plume blood has immense benefit to a martial artist. If you can absorb it into your body, it will directly increase your talent and also your affinity with Fire Laws. I don't believe that Lin Ming will be able to reject my offer!"

The tall youth frowned. "You want to absorb a portion of phoenix plume blood but you also want to use some as a gambling stake? You'll need quite a bit of phoenix plume blood then. Fine. I will help you apply for as much as possible, but as for how much you will receive, all of that will depend on the family clan Elders."

"Then I must thank uncle."

Huo Yanguang was overjoyed. Although he called this youth uncle, the truth was that he wasn't much older than he was. This uncle of his had a great deal of attention placed on him in the family clan. If he was willing to speak on his behalf, there were high hopes his plan would succeed.

……

Time slowly passed in Phoenix Cry Palace. Without knowing it, a month had passed. In this month, Lin Ming was the subject of countless lies and slander, with those from the Huo

Family Clan ruthlessly spreading these rumors. As they continued to spread and Lin Ming still refused to battle, many people began to suspect Lin Ming's strength and they began to believe he was just a tricky weakling that was too cowardly to fight.

However, Lin Ming turned a deaf ear to all of this and peacefully cultivated.

In Phoenix Cry Palace, with the nourishment of all the various heavenly materials as well as absorbing the fire origin energy of the Divine Realm, his fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation reached perfection. His dantian was brimming with origin energy that was ready to overflow at any time.

On this day, Lin Ming opened his eyes during seclusion and said to himself, "It's time to ask Senior Fairy Feng to help me break through to the sixth stage of Life Destruction. My foundation has become as solid as it can be. Breaking through to the sixth stage of Life Destruction will be a guaranteed success."

As Lin Ming was thinking this, he suddenly felt the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy stir up around him as though some treasure was being born. He released his senses and discovered that the heaven and earth origin energy for several hundreds of miles was gathering towards a single point. Within the skies, clouds of origin energy formed. These clouds slowly fell downward into the shape of a giant funnel as it connected to a residence in Phoenix Hall.

"Mm? This is..." Lin Ming's eyes shone as he flew out of his palace. At the same time, many Life Destruction, Divine Sea, and even Divine Transformation disciples flew out, all of them looking towards the same location – the converging point of the vortex of heaven and earth origin energy.

"Someone is breaking through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction!"

"That is Huo Yanguang's residence. Huo Yanguang is breaking through, he's finally done it!"

Chapter 974 – Ninefall Huo Yanguang

Chapter 974 – Ninefall Huo Yanguang

…

…

…

"Huo Yanguang broke through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction. I didn't think he would be so quick." Lin Ming inherited some memories of the Ancient Devil. He knew that in the moment when a martial artist broke through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction, they'd be able to enlighten themselves with the world Laws. The clouds of origin energy above Huo Yanguang's residence were gathered and formed by the world Laws, not by Huo Yanguang's own strength.

It was hard to speculate what the Laws of the world were. The clouds of origin contained fragments of the Great Dao Laws. When one's body was wrapped in this energy, their entire body would be combed over by these Laws. The benefits were immeasurable.

This was also the reason why such a great disparity existed between the eighth and ninth stage of Life Destruction. A ninth stage Life Destruction early Divine Sea martial artist could easily defeat an eighth stage Life Destruction late Divine Sea martial artist.

Lin Ming looked around. In the clouds of origin energy he could see dao diagrams condensing. These dao diagrams contained patterns that were incomparably mysterious and profound; they were even similar to the intricacies within the chaos stones. Even a Divine Lord powerhouse would not be able to completely perceive these dao diagram traces. This was the Heavenly Dao; the most fundamental source path for the revolution of energy. When one broke through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction, the Heavenly Dao would pour out like a tide.

How much one could perceive from this would all rely on themselves.

“The Hall Protectors! The Hall Protectors have come!”

Several disciples cried out with excitement. A group of red-clothed Hall Protectors flew forward. All of them had cultivations at the late Divine Transformation realm.

The Hall Protectors were once disciples of Phoenix Hall during their youth. To enter Phoenix Hall, they hadn’t stepped into Ninefall, but instead joined during the Divine Transformation realm. This sort of martial artist had high talent, but it was still a bit difficult for them to enter the Divine Lord realm.

The rules of Phoenix Hall stated that once a disciple reached 120 years of age they would have to leave Phoenix Hall. Some could hold a post in Phoenix Cry Palace and others decided to stay in Phoenix Hall as a Hall Protector instead.

As several Hall Protectors appeared, they joined forces to form a great array, covering Huo Yanguang’s residence within. This was to prevent others from disturbing him. To these disciples, crossing the ninth stage of Life Destruction would be the most important opportunity in their life. In the ninth stage of Life Destruction, the physical body, dantian, and soul would completely decompose, turning into the most basic particles. These particles would fuse into the clouds of origin energy formed by the world Laws, making it the best time to perceive the Heavenly Dao.

The comprehensions gained from crossing to the ninth stage of Life Destruction were equal to a Divine Lord realm powerhouse going into seclusion for a hundred years!

It was said that those that crossed to the ninth stage of Life Destruction would pass through the dragon gate to become a true dragon. The difference between the ninth and eighth stage of Life Destruction was the same as the difference between the heavens and earth. Eighth stage Life Destruction martial artists would be mostly stranded in the Divine Transformation realm, with only a small number of them being able to reach the Divine Lord realm after obtaining enough lucky chances.

But a ninth stage Life Destruction martial artist could easily step into the Divine Lord realm and reach even higher boundaries in the future. There was even a faint hope of being an existence on the level of the Phoenix Cry Palace Master!

Amongst all the disciples of Phoenix Hall, of those that were at the ninth stage of Life Destruction, even if Huo Yanguang was included now that would only amount to 29 individuals.

The overwhelming majority of disciples entered Phoenix Hall after breaking through to the Divine Transformation realm. In Phoenix Hall, Divine Transformation realm martial artists occupied the majority and they also had separate training, teaching, and residential areas from the Life Destruction and Divine Sea realm martial artists. This was a natural matter. No matter how poor a Divine Transformation martial artist's talent was, their strength would still surpass Lin Ming's by a large amount. It was fundamentally impossible to teach them in the same way.

There were very few Ninefall martial artists still in the Divine Sea realm. As for those Ninefall Life Destruction martial artists, there was only Huo Yanguang!

Phoenix Hall placed great importance on any Ninefall martial artist. In the process of breaking through to Ninefall, not even the slightest mistake would be tolerated!

"How fierce, far too fierce! Although I knew that Huo Yanguang had a high chance of breaking into Ninefall, I didn't think he would do it so quickly. Moreover, he did it in such a solid manner. The origin energy clouds in the sky have already gathered for 10 miles, that is an excellent result! Three years ago when Huang Yuegong broke through to the ninth stage of life Destruction his origin energy clouds were only 6-7 miles wide!"

Among ninth stage Life Destruction martial artists were also great differences. When some people broke through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction, they formed origin energy clouds around 3-4 miles wide. In such a small origin energy cloud, the Heavenly Dao contained would certainly be limited. As the body, Revolving Core, and soul entered that cloud, the comprehensions made within would be relatively less.

But for some people, their origin energy clouds would be several times larger. In legends, there were even some Ninefall martial artists that could form origin energy clouds that extended for several dozen miles; that was a truly terrifying area.

Origin energy clouds that were dozens of miles wide were not just ten times larger than an origin energy cloud several miles wide, but rather 100 times larger!

That was the difference in talent of 100 times!

It had to be known that anyone who could break into Ninefall was a dragon amongst men. And to be 100 times stronger than even a dragon amongst men, just what sort of concept was that?

“Incredible, just incredible! The origin energy clouds are only increasing in size. It hasn’t reached the limit yet and it’s already 12 miles wide!”

“12 miles, this number contains the principles of the world. Origin energy clouds are ranked by every three miles. The smallest is three miles, the second rank is six miles, the third rank is nine miles, and the fourth rank is 12 miles. But the ranks of the ninth stage of Life Destruction aren’t called ranks, but the layered heavens. The first rank is one layered heavens and the fourth rank is four layered heavens! Huang Yuegong’s seven mile origin energy cloud could only be considered two layered heavens, but now, Hho Yanguang actually achieved four layered heavens. That is two levels higher than Huang Yuegong!”

“Ah, this really fills the heart with jealousy! There’s already very little hope for the likes of us to cross the ninth stage of Life Destruction. If I even managed to have a three mile origin energy cloud, I would still burn quality incense to my ancestors! But unfortunately, I’ll likely enter the Divine Sea realm at the eighth stage of Life Destruction. At that time, I’ll still be able to stay in Phoenix Hall due to my family clan’s connections, but Huo Yanguang actually managed to reach the fourth layered heavens.”

“Four layered heavens… I really have no idea how many Great Dao Laws fragments are contained in those origin energy clouds and how many dao diagrams are formed. As Huo

Yanguang undergoes a baptism within these Laws of heaven and earth, his achievements will only rise further and further in the future. It will be impossible for us to catch up."

As the surrounding martial artists discussed, some people sighed with emotion, many with envy, and even more with jealousy. Besides Huo Yanguang's little brothers, there were very few people willing to see Huo Yanguang crawl over them and take up their own resources.

A Ninefall martial artist was an extremely dignified character in Phoenix Cry Palace. Each one had great strength and excelled in their own aspects. Lin Ming knew that the only reason he could beat Huang Yuegong to obtain a top grade saint artifact was because his talent and potential surpassed his, not because of his strength.

If they really fought, even if Lin Ming had the Phoenix Blood Spear supporting him, chances were he would lose. Huang Yuegong's cultivation was at the Ninefall early Divine Sea realm.

The heaven and earth dao diagrams constantly formed and shattered, forming and shattering again and again. The origin energy clouds, after expanding to 12 miles, finally started to slowly shrink. After about 45 minutes, the clouds compressed into Huo Yanguang's residence.

"Hahahahahahaha! Hahahahahaha!"

In the roiling origin energy clouds, Huo Yanguang's loud laugh echoed into the world, directly impacting towards the sky, deafening enough to pierce through clouds and crack stone! An indescribable momentum recklessly surged outward, alarming everyone in the vicinity! At this time, Huo Yanguang had fused together with the Laws of heaven and earth. It was difficult for the eighth stage Life Destruction martial artists and below to resist his mighty aura!

"He's succeeded! Huo Yanguang has crossed to the ninth stage of Life Destruction and undergone the baptism of world Laws. His future achievements will have no limit!"

“No kidding. Just his aura is unbearable. If we were to fight him, the result could be imagined. We would be beaten into the ground and wasted. The disparity between us far surpasses our imaginations!”

“After Huo Yanguang crossed to the ninth stage of Life Destruction, the next ones with the greatest chances of crossing into Ninefall should be Lin Ming and Huo Shaoyan. Huo Shaoyan is still at the Revolving Core realm, so it’s still too early for him. The next one should be Lin Ming. I wonder whether or not Lin Ming can successfully enter the ninth stage of Life Destruction?”

“There shouldn’t be a problem. He’s someone who’s favored by Saint Artifact Pavilion’s artifact spirit and the Phoenix Blood Spear which hung in the sky for 36 years was also taken by him. If he can’t cross the ninth stage of Life Destruction then that would truly be a joke.”

“Heh, I’m not too sure about that. Lin Ming has entered Phoenix Hall for only a month but he’s ignored every challenge that has come his way. Perhaps his strength is only a façade. Saint Artifact Pavilion’s artifact spirit might have made a biased judgment. It’s also a life with a consciousness of its own, so that means it can also be selfish in its thoughts!”

As the disciples spoke, the origin energy clouds in the sky had already completely contracted in on themselves. A golden phoenix phantom formed in the sky, unfurling its great wings!

This was an image formed from Huo Yanguang’s life blood essence. Such a rich Ancient Phoenix bloodline was not what Lin Ming could compare with.

“This bloodline…” Lin Ming gazed at the golden phoenix soaring through the air. Compared to his own Ancient Phoenix bloodline, it was simply impossible to compare. Huo Yanguang might have at least several thousand drops of Ancient Phoenix blood within him, and the quality of that Ancient Phoenix blood was also higher. This was the advantage of coming from a distinguished noble family.

“Good! Very good!” Huo Yanguang’s booming voice carried out into the world. “Four layered heavens ninth stage Life Destruction! I’ve finally achieved the baptism of the Heavenly Dao from crossing to the ninth stage of Life Destruction! I’ve heard of this experience countless times before, but this is the first time I’ve personally experienced the Heavenly Dao so closely. My body, dantian, and soul were completely turned into the tiniest of particles and enlightened within the Heavenly Dao! The effects this will have on my future cultivation are incalculable! The phoenix plume blood is truly a wonderful treasure. If I didn’t have it, I fear I would only have been able to form a 10 mile origin energy cloud. Wonderful! Too amazing!”

“Phoenix plume blood! So this was due to the support of phoenix plume blood!”

The surrounding disciples all sighed, many with envy. How could they ever have a chance to enjoy such a high quality type of Ancient Phoenix blood?

“Lin Ming, I already reached the ninth stage of Life Destruction, but why are you still only at the fifth stage? Your training speed is far too slow! Before, you said that if I can put out a sufficient gambling stake, you will fight me. Do you still remember? Now, I will put forth my gambling stake, and that is phoenix plume blood, 10 drops of phoenix plume blood! I will use that to bet against your Phoenix Blood Spear!”

“But I guess that you won’t dare to fight. Even if you have the Phoenix Blood Spear to make up for the difference, you will still lose to the suppressing momentum of my four layered heavens ninth stage Life Destruction cultivation. You’ll just drop down at the first strike! If you’re too afraid to accept my challenge then that’s fine, but get down on your knees and apologize to me. I won’t bother you over breaking the promises you made!”

A ninth stage Life Destruction martial artist fighting a fifth stage Life Destruction martial artist was simply overwhelming someone with unfair power; even victory wouldn’t be the true martial path. But Huo Yanguang was different. Lin Ming said that as long as Huo Yanguang could put forth a sufficient gambling stake. he’d accept the challenger, and he even shamed Huo Yanguang for it. But now that Huo Yanguang had made his breakthrough and issued a challenge; he even put forth a sufficient gambling stake. Everything he did was logical!

To a proud and arrogant genius, the words one spoke was spilled water that couldn’t be taken back. Reneging on words that were publically spoken wasn’t a glorious matter at all.

Chapter 975 – Nirvana Altar

Chapter 975 – Nirvana Altar

…

…

…

"10 drops of phoenix plume blood is equal in value to an ordinary top grade saint artifact. Even though Huo Yanguang comes from a distinguished noble family, he still shouldn't have been able to get his hands on so much. Don't forget, he also used some to break through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction."

"He certainly couldn't obtain it himself, but he can borrow it! I heard he has a disgustingly talented little uncle who is about to reach the Divine Lord realm any day now. Huo Yanguang could've asked him to borrow some phoenix plume blood, and after he wins the Phoenix Blood Spear he can return the rest. He might need to divide the Phoenix Blood Spear somehow with his uncle too."

"This Huo Yanguang is too overbearing. A four layered heavens ninth stage Life Destruction cultivation and he challenges Lin Ming, isn't that just bullying? Lin Ming is only at the fifth stage of Life Destruction, how could he possibly accept?"

"Yah, this is simply bullying others and slapping them across the face. Huo Yanguang probably isn't expecting Lin Ming to have the courage to accept this challenge. Because his limelight is too great from breaking into the ninth stage of Life Destruction today, he wants to take this chance to humiliate Lin Ming and avenge the shame he suffered awhile back."

"I think that Lin Ming is done today. His words were snobby and he used the excuse of Huo Yanguang not having a top grade saint artifact to not fight him. Now he has to reap what he sowed! If I were Lin Ming, I would just endure what happens today and retreat like a turtle. I'd only need to keep a low profile and diligently cultivate. Once I broke through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction, I'd finally return to public view."

"Heh, are you an idiot? After Lin Ming enters Ninefall, Huo Yanguang will definitely have broken into the Divine Sea. That would be even more suppressing. Moreover, Huo Yanguang's wants Lin Ming to kneel down and apologize. A man has gold under their knees; pride is everything to them. Especially to a proud genius. How could he possibly kneel?

As these martial artist were discussing, they looked toward Lin Ming to see what response he would give. By all reasoning, Lin Ming should just patiently endure this shame. Losing honor was a minor loss, losing the Phoenix Blood Spear was a big deal.

Lin Ming held his hands behind his back, proudly floating in the sky with a calm demeanor. Because Huo Yanguang condensed the heaven and earth origin energy, the origin energy in the world was blowing about like strong gusts of wind. The wind streaked through Lin Ming's cloths and long hair. At this moment, he looked like a solitary hero facing the world.

Lin Ming's lips curved up in a mocking smile. He slowly said, "I said that I would agree to fight you if you were able to put forth a top grade saint artifact, and you actually put forth 10 drops of phoenix plume blood? Let me ask you, do 10 drops of phoenix plume blood match up to the Phoenix Blood Spear in value?"

Lin Ming had read many ancient texts within Phoenix Cry Palace these past days and had an approximate understanding of how valuable phoenix plume blood was. 10 drops was only slightly better than a normal top grade saint artifact, but inferior to the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Lin Ming had decided if there was to be a fight, then the gambling stake should be as large as possible. Huo Yanguang had only put forth 10 drops of phoenix plume blood; that was far too little.

However, the words Lin Ming spoke just now had a completely different meaning to the other martial artists that heard it.

"This Lin Ming really isn't planning on accepting the challenge. In fact, if he doesn't wish to accept the challenger, he should honestly admit defeat and get it over with. There is too great a disparity between the ninth stage and fifth stage of Life Destruction to begin with, but having to find another excuse to refuse is just disgraceful."

"Heh, do you think that if Lin Ming honestly admits defeat, Huo Yanguang will let things go like this? He'll definitely take this chance to ruthlessly shame Lin Ming. Stirring up things as much as possible would be the smart thing to do in this situation."

"Hahahahaha!" Huo Yanguang laughed. "Lin Ming, I thought you were someone special but I never thought you would be so shameless. You don't dare to fight me so you come up with such a pathetic excuse, that is simply laughable! Today, I will tear through all your excuses. If you say that 10 drops of phoenix plume blood aren't enough, then fine, I will put forth 20 drops of phoenix plume blood as well as two high-grade saint artifacts. These are peak high-grade saint artifacts, one a pill furnace and the other a vestment! What do you have to say to that!?"

Huo Yanguang initially applied for 20 drops of phoenix plume blood as the limit. In addition, he also had a top grade saint artifact. But he didn't take out this top grade saint artifact as a gambling stake. If he revealed it to Lin Ming, then even if he was as dumb as a pig, he still wouldn't dare to fight.

At that time, he would only be able to shame Lin Ming and he wouldn't be able to ruthlessly beat him into the ground. How could he feel satisfied about just that?

Huo Yanguang had put forth 20 drops of phoenix plume blood as a gambling stake in a single breath. Even his uncle would suffer taking out such a great price! And he also included his pill furnace and vestment; he truly put forth the required capital. The reason Huo Yanguang dared to do this was because he had absolute confidence in victory. A four layered heavens ninth stage Life Destruction cultivation in addition to a hidden top grade saint artifact as his trump card. If he couldn't win with this, he might as well hit his head on a wall and die.

"That's 20 drops of phoenix plume blood! And there's also a top high-grade pill furnace and vestment! That should be Huo Yanguang's own Sun Melting Furnace and Nine Feathered Heaven Robe! How is this a simple gambling fight? It's as if they're putting their own lives on the line!"

"That's right, everything added up together isn't any more than the Phoenix Blood Spear. Whoever loses will lose everything they have!"

"You're worrying for nothing. Do you really think that Lin Ming will fight? The only way would be if he was mentally handicapped," an early Divine Sea realm disciple contemptuously said. He had an eighth stage Life Destruction base. As someone who could only look on with envy at these ninth stage Life Destruction geniuses, he couldn't help but be a bit sarcastic.

However, before he finished speaking, Lin Ming suddenly laughed, and in a very reckless and shameless way he said, "Good! 20 drops of phoenix plume blood! As well as a top high-grade pill furnace and vestment! Good! You take them out now and place them in the Nirvana Altar and I'll fight with you!"

Lin Ming's heart was also filled with expectations. A Divine Realm talent as well as a true ninth stage Life Destruction martial artist; this would be his first time fighting one. Moreover, the gambling stakes were so high! This battle would truly be thrilling!

"What!?"

As Lin Ming spoke, the disciple who was mocking Lin Ming felt his chin drop to the ground. "Lin Ming accepted the challenge? Is he insane?"

It wasn't wrong that Lin Ming was talented. He hadn't fought for a month and had refused all challengers, so some people thought that he was putting on a front. But there were still a considerable number of people who believed that Lin Ming was extraordinary strong in certain areas, and this was solely based upon the Saint Artifact Pavilion artifact spirit's judgment.

However, even if Saint Artifact Pavilion confirmed that one was a genius, it was impossible for a fifth stage Life Destruction martial artist to fight a ninth stage Life Destruction martial artist. It had to be known that even though the Phoenix Blood Spear was taken only after 36 years, for those 36 years, there were also many other top grade saint artifacts that were taken. There was even a peak top grade saint artifact like the Phoenix Blood Spear that was taken.

It was a spectacular result for Lin Ming to obtain the Phoenix Blood Spear, but it wasn't a unique result. Amongst the Divine Transformation realm powerhouses of Phoenix Hall, there were even those that were more freakish than Lin Ming was. For instance, 80 years ago, the chief disciple of Phoenix Hall, White Daohong, had instantly taken two top grade saint artifacts from Saint Artifact Pavilion and even obtained the source strength of the old Palace Master. Since then, if he claimed to be number two, no one claimed to be number one.

Lin Ming could only be known as a top 30 year talent of Phoenix Hall, and this in a case where Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit had made no errors in judgment. Looking further, others weren't that much worse. Huo Yanguang wasn't too bad. He achieved a four layered heavens Ninefall and could barely be called a top 10 year talent. For a top 30 year talent to compare with a top 10 year talent, just how different could they be? With just a 20 year disparity, could that really allow a fifth stage Life Destruction martial artist to contend with a ninth stage Life Destruction martial artist?

"Is Lin Ming agreeing to such an outrageous challenge just because he wants to save face? Does he not know that if he agrees to this battle, he might feel good for a moment but he'll end up in an even worse situation? When he's beaten to pulp, he'll be even worse off than he was before!" a martial artist said with a frown.

Beside him, one of Huo Yanguang's servants loudly laughed, "Don't you know that those lower realms martial artists are all stupid? Even so, I didn't think they would be stupid to this degree. I wonder, is he confused about whether or not this is the Divine Realm or one of the lower realms? Maybe in the lower realms he might be able to defeat a Divine Sea martial artist at the fifth stage of Life Destruction, but does he believe the same applies to the Divine Realm? Just how low is his intelligence?"

"I still don't think things are so simple. Maybe Lin Ming has some other plan, don't forget, the Phoenix Blood Spear can make up for a difference of several boundaries. Doesn't Huo Yanguang only have a high-grade saint artifact?"

"Only a high-grade saint artifact? Heheh..." That different surnamed disciple of the Huo Family Clan sneered as he thought to himself, "How could you know that Huo Yanguang has especially borrowed a top grade saint artifact for this fight. Although it is inferior to the Phoenix Blood Spear, it isn't that much worse. In addition with a high-grade saint artifact vestment and ring, Huo Yanguang's equipment isn't any worse than Lin Ming's. Even a lion would use its full force to capture a rabbit. Moreover, in a situation where so much is on the line, do you think Huo Yanguang would challenge Lin Ming with the near entirety of his wealth if he didn't have full confidence in his chances of winning?"

Besides those close to Huo Yanguang, no one else knew of this secret.

In the skies, Huo Yanguang turned ecstatic as he heard Lin Ming agree to his challenge! "He really took the bait, he actually agreed! You fool, you really have no idea what it means to bring about your own destruction. A fifth stage Life Destruction actually dares to challenge my ninth stage Life Destruction. I also have a top grade saint artifact so there's no need for me to fear your Phoenix Blood Spear at all! Since you're offering me your weapon, if I don't take your Phoenix Blood Spear this time, then that really would be unfair to you!"

Huo Yanguang was afraid that Lin Ming would back away from his promise. He suppressed the joy in his heart and immediately said, "Fine. Let's go to the Nirvana Altar. I'll wait for you there!"

He turned to the several Hall Protectors and said, "Fellow Seniors, I invite you to witness our fight!"

The Hall Protectors glanced at each other. They were also surprised that Lin Ming agreed to this battle. Even White Daohong from the past wouldn't be able to achieve victory in this situation.

"Of course. That's our duty."

The several Hall Protectors turned into beams of light that flew toward the Nirvana Altar. Huo Yanguang was close behind them, followed by Lin Ming and the other disciples. No one wanted to miss such a great show.

The Nirvana Altar was located at the direct center of Phoenix Hall. The altar was over 200 feet high and spread out for a hundred miles!

At the edges of the altar was a barricade comprised of bloodied weapons. There were hundreds of thousands of these weapons, each one plunged into the ground, seeming as if they had just drunk their fill of blood. They exuded a boundless momentum and a savage killing intent!

These weapons were all saint artifacts! Several hundred thousand saint artifacts! But these were ruined saint artifacts that were no longer able to display their true strength.

Phoenix Cry Palace had accumulated these ruined saint artifacts for countless tens of thousands of years. There were low-grade saint artifacts, medium-grade saint artifacts, a small number of high-grade saint artifacts, and even some top grade saint artifacts. These ruined saint artifacts weren't melted down and reforged into new weapons. Rather, they were peacefully placed here, a remembrance of their solemn dignity and past glory. This was an iron forest, thick with killing intent!

This place was also known as the Terrace of Buried Weapons!

This land of buried weapons was at the same time a tomb of swords, a tomb of sabers, a tomb of spears, a tomb of halberds, and a tomb of countless other types of weapons. Some weapons here even had a history that surpassed a million years. Even if they were forged from divine metal, they would still be rusted by now!

Chapter 976 – Glory of the Phoenix Blood Spear

Chapter 976 – Glory of the Phoenix Blood Spear

…

…

…

Lin Ming looked at the solemn and sanctified Nirvana Altar that exuded a thick killing intent as a feeling of respect was born in his heart.

The so-called nirvana was to break past the shackles of life and death and achieve true liberation. However, true nirvana was nothing but a legend. A Divine Lord realm powerhouse was a god to an ordinary person, but they too would die.

All of these buried weapons had already lost their spirits and were in states of decay. These saint artifact weapons had once cut down powerhouses, but they inevitably weren't able to resist the decay of the years. Saint artifacts had a lifespan, and artifact spirits also had a lifespan. In the legends, the phoenix was able to bathe in the fires of nirvana and be reborn, immortal and inextinguishable. However, a phoenix was in truth unable to exist in perpetuity within this world. This was because all life had to eventually come to an end. Even the boundless universe would one day collapse.

If one reached the end of the road of martial arts, just what would be awaiting them?

"Lin Ming, what are you standing around there in a daze for? Hurry to the Nirvana Altar to meet your defeat!"

Huo Yanguang's words broke through Lin Ming's thoughts. At this time, Huo Yanguang was floating in the air, proud and tall. He flicked his fingers and a small jade vial flew out. This jade vial was filled with 20 drops of phoenix plume blood.

“Lord Protectors, please take care of that for me. As for the other two high-grade saint artifacts, the Sun Melting Furnace and the Nine Feathered Heaven Robe, I will use them in this battle. If I lose, I will hand them over as the price.”

“Naturally. On the Nirvana Altar, no one can renege on their promises. Once the parties have agreed to something, it must be carried out no matter what. The four Hall Protectors moved to the four corners of the altar. They were here to ensure that all conditions of the duel were fairly carried out and also to ensure that the disciples wouldn’t resort to extreme measures and kill each other.

“Haha, very good!” Huo Yanguang wildly laughed. “Lin Ming, once you stand on this Nirvana Altar there will be no more path of retreat. If you lose, the Phoenix Blood Spear will be mine!”

“I won’t take back the words I’ve said.”

Lin Ming stepped on the Nirvana Altar. The Nirvana Altar was covered by an invisible array formation. Its power was not something that someone like Lin Ming could hope to shake.

“Good! Great! Haha, I’ll teach you today what it means to bring about your own destruction!”

As Huo Yanguang spoke he extracted an extremely long sword from his spatial ring. The sword blade was six feet long and the hilt was a foot long itself. Combined together, this sword was as tall as a man.

This is…

Lin Ming’s eyebrows shot up. A top grade saint artifact?

“It’s a top grade saint artifact! Huo Yanguang actually has a top grade saint artifact!”

“He clearly has a top grade saint artifact, so why didn’t he use that as the gambling stake? I see, he was probably afraid that he would scare Lin Ming away from accepting the challenge, so he intentionally hid the top grade saint artifact. He wanted to trick Lin Ming into this battle, then reveal this top grade saint artifact and completely push him into despair. This move is ruthless enough. Lin Ming really fell for it this time!”

“Huo Yanguang is too despicable. It was already cheap of him to fight a fifth stage Life Destruction with his ninth stage Life Destruction. Lin Ming had the Phoenix Blood Spear to make up for the difference, but now Huo Yanguang also has a top grade saint artifact. This is just unfair!”

“Humph, what do you know? Everything is fair in love and war. He should have borrowed the top grade saint artifact from his uncle. His uncle really is ridiculously wealthy.”

It wasn’t strange for a first level figure like Huo Yanguang’s uncle to have a top grade saint artifact. But for a martial artist to form their life’s saint artifact, they had to leave behind a spirit mark and also imbue their own energy into it. It was impossible to casually lend it to others. Otherwise, if others left their spirit mark and their energy within the saint artifact, it would affect the power of the saint artifact and one would have to waste time further refining it.

What Huo Yanguang borrowed was likely his uncle’s spare weapon. Even this spare weapon was a top grade saint artifact. Although it was slightly inferior to the main weapon, it was still enough to prove just how ridiculously wealthy Huo Yanguang’s uncle was. That uncle was once a disciple of Phoenix Hall and he was in no way inferior to White Daohong in talent. It was said that he had also once taken the number one saint artifact from Saint Artifact Pavilion.

“Hahaha, Lin Ming, even if I don’t use this Blackfire Blade, I still have the confidence to defeat you. But even a lion must use its full strength to capture a rabbit. I won’t give you the slightest chance of victory. I’ll use my greatest strength and roll over you. I’ll show you what despair is so that you’ll never dare to struggle with me ever again!”

Huo Yanguang took out this top grade saint artifact from the start so that Lin Ming wouldn't have the slightest chance of victory. This was a battle with his entire life's wealth on the line! He absolutely could not lose. Huo Yanguang also wanted to bowl over Lin Ming with absolute strength and form his own glory!

A four layered heavens ninth stage Life Destruction combined with absolute strength and with the support of his family clan, in the future, just who would dare to provoke him in Phoenix Hall?

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes as he looked at the Blackfire Blade. He could see its keen and cruel edge. That cold gleam seemed as though it were pointed at his forehead, making one suffocate.

He swiped the Extreme Violet Ring and a deep blood red light flashed out. The nine feet nine inch crimson Phoenix Blood Spear flew into Lin Ming's hand as if though had a will of its own. A scarlet pillar of light directly shot toward the heavens, breaking through the skies as a vast and endless strength surged outward, dying the heavens a thick blood red.

"Good! What a wonderful Phoenix Blood Spear! That is truly a magnificent weapon that nears becoming a transcendent saint artifact! If it weren't for that saint spear, I wouldn't have fought you. Since you have obtained the approval of Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit, that is enough proof to lay claim to being the most splendid new talent Phoenix Hall has seen in 30 years. However, not every talent can grow. There are all sorts of reasons for them to exhaust their potential, fading to nothing or even perishing. If you wish to become the strongest disciple of Phoenix Hall and become a Divine Lord in the future, you must first pass the trial known as me. But too bad for you, today you're destined to lose!"

"You sure spout a lot of crap. Make your move!" Lin Ming stepped forward and the 12 thunder escape symbols in his body bloomed with a dazzling purple radiance. The Gate of Wonder opened as his velocity reached the limit!

Woosh!

The endless blood red light in the skies gathered, all of it condensing onto the tip of the Phoenix Blood Spear. This spear caused a scarlet tornado to form as it thrust straight toward Huo Yanguang's chest!

This was the first time since Lin Ming obtained the Phoenix Blood Spear that he attacked with his full strength. The scarlet storm whipped up a vortex all around, causing even the surrounding space to slightly tremble. This was the Divine Realm's space! With Lin Ming's understanding of Space Laws it was impossible for him to move the Divine Realm's space. But this strike with the Phoenix Blood Spear actually caused the most minute distortions in space. This was the power of a top grade saint artifact. They themselves were equal to a peerless master!

If a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse were to galvanize this spear, the power would be even greater.

Facing this strike, Huo Yanguang rapidly drew backward. He slashed out with the Blackfire Blade in his hands, causing waves of endless black fire to sweep upward, causing black and red surges of energy to collide in the sky. He also activated the power inherent within the Blackfire Blade.

Black flames smashed against the scarlet storm created by the Phoenix Blood Spear. The roiling black flames were swallowed up by the scarlet storm, but the scarlet storm was also burnt away by the black flames.

Chapter 977 – Third Level of the Concept of Fire

Chapter 977 – Third Level of the Concept of Fire

…

…

…

Bang!

The black flames and scarlet storm riotously exploded. The black flames disappeared into nothingness, but only 70% of the scarlet storm melted away. The remaining 30% shot toward Huo Yanguang!

This was only a single spear strike from Lin Ming but Huo Yanguang slashed out three times. The difference in quality between the two top grade saint artifacts could be seen with just a glance. In terms of the saint artifact's strength alone, the Blackfire Blade was completely suppressed by the Phoenix Blood Spear.

"Great spear. The Phoenix Blood Spear itself has such might, if it were to fall into my hands, just how powerful would it be!" Huo Yanguang moved, his feet shifting like a fast rabbit in the high grass. His speed was surprisingly fast and highly flexible. It was unknown what movement technique he used but it was no worse than Lin Ming's Mystic Lightning Shade!

Huo Yanguang's figure erratically danced through the scarlet storm, flitting back and forth. His body became a series of afterimages that dodged all of the Phoenix Blood Spear's attack.

"Ghostly Firefade Steps! I didn't think that Huo Yanguang practiced the Ghostly Firefade Steps to this level! He really is a genius!"

"You're wrong. Huo Yanguang's Ghostly Firefade Steps hadn't reached this level of exquisiteness before. This is what happened after he crossed the ninth stage of Life Destruction and received a baptism of the world Laws. His comprehension of the Fire Laws has deepened, so his Ghostly Firefade Steps have become more amazing. The ninth stage of Life Destruction was truly not wasted."

The Ghostly Firefade Steps were traceless and shadowless. It was one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's high level movement martial skills. Because fire cultivation methods were inferior to thunder cultivation methods in speed, the Ancient Phoenix Clan's Ghostly Firefade Steps were in truth inferior to the Electric Violet Kirin Clan's Mystic Lightning Shade.

However, in terms of the comprehension of Laws, Huo Yanguang came from a distinguished noble family clan of the Divine Realm and he had 8000 drops of Ancient Phoenix blood in his body. He meditated on the Fire Laws since childhood and had undergone the Heavenly Dao's baptism through the ninth stage of Life Destruction. His understanding of the Concept of Fire surpassed Lin Ming's understanding of the Concept of Thunder.

Lin Ming's Mystic Lightning Shade surpassed Huo Yanguang in speed, but in terms of flexibility, Huo Yanguang occupied a great advantage.

In only 1% of an instant, Huo Yanguang switched direction countless times. In the sky, afterimages were formed through his movements, hundreds and even thousands of them!

These afterimages suddenly drew together, fusing back into Huo Yanguang's true body. But at this time, Huo Yanguang was only three feet away from Lin Ming!

"Too fast!"

"He managed to break through the barrier of that endless scarlet storm!"

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. A ninth stage Life Destruction genius of the Divine Realm truly could not be underestimated. As Lin Ming saw Huo Yanguang about to thrust out his sword, he subconsciously released the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower!

As long as the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower bloomed, all Laws would be hindered. This would cause Huo Yanguang's Ghostly Firefade Steps to lose its flexibility. No matter how fast he was, in the grandmist space he would lose all that nimbleness!

This was the suppression of absolute strength, a single force to break all methods!

However, in the instant that Lin Ming was about to use the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower, he suddenly hesitated and decided not to.

"Die!"

In a battle between masters, a split-second could decide victory and defeat. At the moment that Lin Ming hesitated, Huo Yanguang's Blackfire Blade already pierced toward his front.

"Law of Annihilation, Chain of Stars!"

In a haste, Li Ming forcefully cancelled the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower and raised the Phoenix Blood Spear. Countless lights formed in front of him, slowly rotating around like a whirlpool of stars. Huo Yanguang's sword thrust into this vortex of stars.

Kacha!

A hastily formed defense could not compare with Huo Yanguang's all-out attack he gathered potential for. The vortex of stars exploded and energy flushed outward. Lin Ming's bodily protective true essence violently trembled as half of it was torn apart by sword energy and he was sent flying backward.

As Lin Ming's protective true essence broke, sword energy fell onto Lin Ming and shredded his lightning silk clothes. Luckily, he opened four of the Inner Hidden Gates, otherwise it would have been impossible for him to withstand the frontal attack of a top grade saint artifact.

The energy of the black flames swept through Lin Ming's body, wrecking their way past his meridians.

Lin Ming's complexion changed and he nearly spat out a mouthful of blood. He immediately transferred all of his true essence into the Heretical God Sprout.

The Heretical God Sprout's two fire leafs emitted a blazing light. A powerful energy covered the black flames, absorbing most of them.

However, these black flames were extremely tenacious. Even the Heretical God Sprout could only slowly absorb and refine them. Even when the flames were suppressed they were still extremely wild, rushing about as though they hoped to break through their shackles.

"This is indeed the flames of a top grade saint artifact. Even the Heretical God Sprout absorbs them so slowly." Lin Ming was startled. A top grade saint artifact was truly fierce!

"Lin Ming is injured! In just the second exchange of moves he actually appears to be the injured one! The difference between them is too great. In the first exchange of moves, he only made us of the advantage of the Phoenix Blood Spear. If he relied on just his own strength, he wouldn't' be Huo Yanguang's match at all. That was only Huo Yanguang's probing attack just now. His true killing moves will follow right behind. Lin Ming couldn't even withstand that probing attack."

"With the Blackfire Blade's black flames invading his body, his meridians are surely damaged. I think he must have swallowed down a mouthful of blood just now!"

A top grade saint artifact needed to be wielded by a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse to display its full might and glory. In Huo Yanguang's hands, the Blackfire Blade could only display a fraction of its true power, but the flames he emitted were still at the level of Divine Transformation. If those flames entered someone's body, they would create tremendous damage. Lin Ming was originally weaker than Huo Yanguang and if his meridians were burnt by those black flames, then how could he continue fighting?"

"Well, this is over, but Lin Ming was good enough. For a fifth stage Life Destruction to challenge a ninth stage Life Destruction, that already requires a great amount of courage!"

The surrounding disciples discussed. They already assumed the outcome of this match. However, of the four Hall Protectors that were watching this battle from the corners, the strongest slightly frowned with a thoughtful expression on his face. In that second exchange of moves, Lin Ming's movements seemed out of place for the briefest moment. It was as if he wanted to use another move at the start, but just as he was about to do so he suddenly changed his mind and switched. That moment was only 1% of an instant. If it weren't for the fact that the Hall Protector was over a thousand years old and had borne witness to countless battles, he wouldn't have realized it.

Normally, once a martial artist had fought through many battles, every move they used would become a nearly conditioned reflex. It was extremely rare to change moves in a split-second—that was tantamount to suicide. Was Lin Ming simply lacking in combat experience, or was there some other plan?

As the Hall Protector was thinking, his companion's true essence sound transmission echoed in his ears. "It looks like this fight is going to finish soon. Lin Ming is good but he's only within the scope of a normal genius. In this state he can only last for five more moves, and Huo Yanguang hasn't even shown his true strength yet."

"Maybe. There might also be another variable..." The Hall Protector thought out loud. He would've never dreamt that the move Lin Ming terminated mid-way just now was actually a transcendent divine might!

A transcendent divine might. That was something that only an Empyrean level existence could create by combining every aspect of their power and knowledge into a single ultimate ability. Most Empyreans did not even have this ability. It might take a generation or two of Empyreans, hundreds of millions of years, before a single transcendent divine might was born. The transcendent divine mights of the Divine Realm were accumulated for countless billions of years. All those that were able to create their own would be crowned with the title of 'Divine'. This was not a god of mortals like a Divine Lord, but a god of martial artists!

The Primordius martial intent had significant concerns around it. Lin Ming didn't know whether or not Empyrean Primordius' enemies were still alive. Although only the most extreme powerhouses of the Divine Realm would be able to recognize the Primordius martial intent, such as those old beings that had lived for millions of years, he still had to be careful.

He couldn't willfully display the transcendent divine might whenever he wished; it was better to be safe than sorry. While he could still use the Primordius martial intent, he had to at least hide the most glaring and conspicuous Prime Emperor Lotus Flower. He would need to cover the Primordius martial intent a bit and fuse it into his own attack, making it so others wouldn't be able to see through it. Using it at critical moments was the best method.

Of course, Lin Ming also had no choice but to resort to the Primordius martial intent sooner or later because Huo Yanguang was indeed too troublesome. The four layered heavens Ninefall Huo Yanguang with a top grade saint artifact added on top was weaker than the early Divine Sea Huang Yuegong, but he actually surpassed eighth stage Life Destruction late Divine Sea martial artists like Song Baifeng.

To Lin Ming, the Primordius martial intent was one of his greatest dependences he used to jump ranks in battle. If he didn't use it, it'd be difficult to defeat Huo Yanguang.

"Hahaha! Lin Ming, you disappoint me! Is this your limit!? That was just the second sword strike! I haven't even warmed up yet, but you've reached the end?" Huo Yanguang contemptuously smirked. He felt that all the worries he had were for nothing. This was all Lin Ming was. Without having crossed the ninth stage of Life Destruction, Lin Ming still thought he could defeat him. "Besides relying on the Phoenix Blood Spear to gain the advantage during the first move, your own strength is nothing special. I will let you know today what it means to enter Ninefall to enter the Nine Divine Shifts. To enter Ninefall is to withstand the baptism of world Laws. That means that the body, the dantian, and the soul will finally began transitioning to become a true spiritual god. Do you know what a spiritual god is? That is not something that a mortal like you could possibly compare with!"

Huo Yanguang maliciously laughed and stretched out three fingers. "Three moves! In just three moves I will beat you so bad that your teeth litter the ground!"

To a top genius, the words they said were water that couldn't be taken back. If they said they could defeat the enemy in three moves then they had to do so in three moves. Otherwise, they would become the butt of all jokes. Huo Yanguang had always said that a lion must use its full force to capture a rabbit. And now Lin Ming was injured by the Blackfire Blade and black flames flooded through his meridians. Even if he didn't attack, it was only a matter of time before Lin Ming succumbed. Huo Yanguang had the confidence he could settle this in the next strike!

"Lin Ming, your end is nigh. Let me show you my comprehension of the Fire Laws!"

Huo Yanguang gave a loud shout and burnt one-tenth of the Ancient Phoenix blood in his body. Ancient Phoenix blood could be burnt without end, but Huo Yanguang could only burn 10% of it or his body wouldn't be able to withstand the burden.

As the Ancient Phoenix blood was burnt, blue flames arose from all over Huo Yanguang's body. As these blue flames appeared, a domain formed around him!

This domain seemed as if it contained infinite vitality! These blue flames could burn the heavens, and there was an incomparably burning heat contained within them. But as people looked at this domain, they could actually see flowers, birds, insects, beasts, countless spirit plants, and spirit trees, all sorts of life rapidly being born within, as if it were a paradise on earth.

"That is Blue Lotus Truefire. He already formed a domain of Blue Lotus Truefire!"

Blue Lotus Truefire was not a Flame Essence nor was it a Flame Elemental. It was a type of fire that the clansmen of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were able to manipulate once their boundary reached a certain level. In order to use this Blue Lotus Truefire, one needed to understand the third level of the Concept of Fire – Creation!

Chapter 978 – Overpower

Chapter 978 – Overpower

…

…

…

The first level of the Fire Laws was Burning Heat; that was the foundation of all Fire Laws and also the most basic attribute of fire.

The second Concept was Annihilation; that was the manifestation of fire's strength. The ability to destroy all and to burn away all of existence!

However, when things reached the extreme, they would return to the opposite. Once annihilation reached the extreme, it would actually become creation!

From flames flaring from nothing, that was creation.

From flames starting out weak and becoming a raging inferno, that was creation.

When a spark touched upon the grasslands and set the entire world ablaze, that was also creation.

When fields of rice grew from the ruins made by flames, producing a greater, more abundant harvest, that was similarly creation.

A star itself was a massive burning fireball. Underneath the shining light of the sun, all lives thrived; that was creation.

Even in human history, because fire saved men from ignorance, mankind finally became prosperous and gave birth to a glorious martial arts civilization.

Fire could destroy all life but it could also breed all life. When a wildfire blew through a forest, it gave birth to new growth in spring. After annihilation there was creation!

Hua Yanguang's comprehension of Fire Laws already reached the third level. After crossing the ninth stage of Life Destruction and withstanding the baptism of the Heavenly Dao, his understanding of Fire Laws had increased even further; he even managed to form the Blue Lotus Domain. The Blue Lotus Domain was a phenomenon that would occur when one's understanding of the third level Fire Laws reached the peak. Moreover, not everyone was able to do this.

Within the Blue Lotus, all life was created. It rapidly grew from several hundred feet to 10 miles in size, enveloping Lin Ming within.

“Haha, once you've entered my Blue Lotus Domain, you'll definitely lose. Do you know what a domain is? In this domain, I control everything. The Blue Lotus Domain is a true phenomenon! Only a martial artist that has the life of an Emperor can accomplish this after practicing the Fire Laws to the extreme of the third level. This sort of person is beyond rare, but I am actually someone capable of doing so! I am destined to become a new king of the Divine Realm!” Huo Yanguang wildly laughed. Before crossing the ninth stage of Life Destruction his Blue Lotus Truefire was still unable to form a domain. His uncle speculated that he would be able to do so after reaching Ninefall, and his predictions came true!

“Go die! Blue Lotus Truefire, black flames, combine!”

Huo Yanguang slashed out his sword. As the Blue Lotus Truefire burst outward, he also poured in the black flames from the Blackfire Blade!

The billowing black flames were filled with a thick demonic energy. As the flames swept out, it seemed as if countless pained souls were being burnt within the flames, filling them with the power of death and destruction.

However, the deathly black flames sent out by the Blackfire Blade joined with the Blue Lotus Truefire that symbolized the power of life, fused into one!

As the surrounding disciples saw this, all of their eyes turned wide. Even the four Divine Transformation Hall Protectors had a change in expression. There were the Blue Lotus Truefire that wielded the power of creation as well as the black flames that wielded the power of death! This was fusing life and death together, creating a new might that approached the source of the Great Dao! This sort of attack was the highest manifestation of Huo Yanguang's understanding of the Laws of the heavens and earth. Even if someone on the level of Song Baifeng were standing here, the power behind this attack would instantly kill them.

"Incredible. This attack is too fierce."

"After reaching Ninefall, Huo Yanguang's understanding towards the Heavenly Dao has greatly strengthened. He's actually able to use such a move. Life and death are originally two polar opposites, wanting to fuse them is easier said than done!"

"Prepare yourselves. When Lin Ming is defeated, we must instantly save him. Do not let his life be in danger or we won't be able to deal with the consequences."

The four Divine Transformation realm Hall Protectors gathered their potential, preparing to rescue Lin Ming. This was their duty as the arbiters and witnesses of this battle.

As Lin Ming faced this monstrous flame, his complexion slightly changed. Without having crossed the ninth stage of Life Destruction and withstanding the baptism of the Heavenly Dao, it was impossible for him to compare with such a mysterious comprehension of Laws. A Ninefall genius of the Divine Realm was no simple matter!

Since he couldn't compare with comprehension of Laws, he could only break through with absolute strength!

Lin Ming started to recite a string of strange syllables. Except for himself, no one was able to understand what he was saying.

"The world originates from grandmist. You are the source of all creation. When fire creates life, that is also you creating life. You are the home to which all returns after destruction. When all life is destroyed, everything shall return to grandmist. The annihilation of fire is also your annihilation! The space you form shatters all Laws! Fire belongs to the five elements. The five elements cannot exist. Life and death belong to essence energy. Essence energy cannot exist!”

In that moment, Lin Ming’s eyes bloomed with a black-gray light. A faint mist formed in Lin Ming’s eyes; that was the elementary form of grandmist energy!

After hiding the dazzling Prime Emperor Lotus Flower, the grandmist space was compressed to an area of 50 feet around Lin Ming. However, this sort of compression actually caused the grandmist space around Lin Ming to be even more solid and realistic!

What could the Blue Lotus Domain even be considered as? In this world, grandmist was the origin of all things. Grandmist space was the most source domain! The Blue Lotus Domain could only be considered a tiny branch of the Concept of Fire; it was simply unable to compare!

Chi-la!

The atmosphere trembled. A tearing sound filled the air. The dual flames released by Huo Yanguang were actually constantly annihilated by some invisible strength!

Lin Ming was like a divine dragon leaping through the sea, crashing through the winds and waves, unstoppable and indomitable! All the fire was completely broken by the Phoenix Blood Spear!

Whether it was the Blue Lotus Truefire that wielded the power of creation or the black flames that wielded the power of death, both were suppressed by the grandmist space.

Concept of Creation? Concept of Death? If all fire was extinguished, what Laws could there still be?

“What!?”

Huo Yanguang never imagined that this could happen. Lin Ming had been struck by his black flames with the power of death within them and should have been struggling to suppress his energy. Against this all-out attack of his, Lin Ming shouldn't have had the strength to resist. He should've been defeated and severely wounded, but the result ran contrary to all his expectations. Lin Ming actually broke through his finishing blow!

As Huo Yanguang saw Lin Ming barreling towards him, he felt as if he were facing some ancient god. It was like some ancient god had resurrected and arrived in this world.

The aura Lin Ming exuded was the boundless vigor and atmosphere of grandmist energy. It was not a strength that a mortal should have.

The pressure of this energy left everyone stricken!

Many of the disciples present thought Lin Ming was bound to lose. But Lin Ming managed to use some move that was so potent that Huo Yanguang's fused flames of death and creation were completely annihilated!

"What kind of strength is that? Even my heart is racing from it. That incomparably mystical energy has an aura of an unrivalled powerhouse from the Divine Realm, but it just doesn't have the power behind it!" The four Hall Protectors were stunned. They were planning on saving Lin Ming, but now they might have to save Huo Yanguang instead!

"My domain, my Blue Lotus Domain was broken!?" Huo Yanguang could clearly feel that the Blue Lotus Domain he was so proud of, the Blue Lotus Domain that he had declared that only a peerless Emperor level talent could have, was actually ruthlessly torn apart by some invisible power coming from Lin Ming, as if it were nothing but paper!

"How can this be!? What kind of strength is this!? Is this also a domain? Damn it all! You are ferocious enough, but do you think you've won just by breaking it once!?"

Huo Yanguang's pride was torn apart just like his Blue Lotus Domain. That Blue Lotus Domain had actually collapsed at the first strike.

He stepped on the Ghostly Firefade Steps and drew back while he repeatedly slashed out with the Blackfire Blade. A bronze flow of energy shot out from between his eyebrows, condensing into a small sword that fused into his domain.

"Bronze perfection, divine sword battle spirit, reinforce my domain!"

A battle spirit was invisible and intangible. It could be added to anything to strengthen its power and tenacity.

At this moment, Huo Yanguang used his greatest strength, utilizing every ability he had. Domain, Laws, true essence, and battle spirit, he used everything to win this fight and his consumption was equally great.

As Huo Yanguang's battle spirit fused into the Blue Lotus Domain, the domain was immediately augmented, causing Lin Ming's speed to be greatly hindered.

Lin Ming's lips curved up in a smile.

"Silver perfection, grandmist battle spirit, break this domain for me!"

A silver gray battle spirit shot out from between Lin Ming's eyebrows and fused into the Phoenix Blood Spear. The saint spear's edge became far sharper than before!

This battle spirit was only a step away from reaching the gold level. After reaching the gold battle spirit boundary, he could use the battle spirit to directly kill others; he wouldn't even need to attach it to anything. There were even those that could project the battle spirit world into the real world, causing a martial artist to be lost within it. Against a battle spirit that was just a single step away from reaching the gold level, how could Huo Yanguang's battle spirit compare? Not to mention, Lin Ming's battle spirit was tempered in grandmist energy and had taken in the grandmist attribute.

Peng, peng, peng!

The Blue Lotus Domain was ripped open. The Blue Lotus Truefire and burning black flames were all swept away by Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear. They melted away like snow underneath the blazing sun, fading into nihility!

This was overpowering, completely overpowering!

"Perfect silver battle spirit? Is that a perfect silver battle spirit? Am I imagining things!?"

A Divine Transformation realm Hall Protector's eyes widened like two full moons. Because Lin Ming's battle spirit had a special attribute, he wasn't able to confirm at first. But after seeing the shape and power of the battle spirit, he could tell that it was undoubtedly a perfect silver battle spirit!

"What kind of joke is this? He's only at the fifth stage of Life Destruction and I am at the late Divine Transformation realm, we're separated by the entire Divine Sea realm as well as four stages of Life Destruction and three boundaries of Divine Transformation, but even so, his battle spirit is only a level worse than mine?"

Of the four Hall Protectors, besides the leader of the four who had a small success gold level battle spirit, the other three had elementary gold battle spirits. That was only a single level better than Lin Ming's perfect silver battle spirit.

From the fifth stage of Life Destruction to late Divine Transformation, that was a difference of a ridiculous number of boundaries and yet their battle spirits were only a single level apart!

As for the other disciples, their battle spirit mostly paused at the bronze level. There were only some outstanding middle and late Divine Sea disciples that were able to achieve an elementary silver level battle spirit. As for silver perfection? Not even an early Divine Transformation realm martial artist might be able to accomplish that!

More importantly, They could see that Lin Ming's battle spirit was of an extremely high quality and even had a special attribute to it! When Lin Ming's battle spirit broke into the gold level, his comprehensive strength would rise by a massive amount!

A perfect silver grandmist battle spirit combined with the strongest grandmist space domain collided against the perfect bronze ordinary battle spirit combined with the third level Concept of Fire’s Blue Lotus Domain. What kind of result would that produce?

Not even utterly overpowering was enough to describe it!

Chapter 979 – Can Only Be Described As Miserable

Chapter 979 – Can Only Be Described As Miserable

…

…

…

Blue Lotus Domain's force field was like a fragile shell of sugar that cracked without end. In just 1% of an instant, Lin Ming's spear already reached the front of Huo Yanguang's chest.

The spear light hadn't arrived yet but Huo Yanguang could already feel that he was covered in some sort of strange space. He could not feel this space and he could not see this space, but he knew that it existed. As he was stuck in this space, he felt as if he were caught in a quagmire. It immensely shocked him!

"What is this!?"

With Huo Yanguang's experience and knowledge, how could he possibly recognize the grandmist space? He only thought that this was some sort of strange space. His energy, his body, and even his soul came under a great suppressive pressure. The movement of energy in his body was blocked, and his meridians and even his heart were overwhelmed, finding it hard to withstand. His protective true essence nearly broke apart!

"Phoenix Blood Spear, phoenix true blood!"

Lin Ming loudly shouted out as he combusted the blood of the Ancient Phoenix in his body. He thrusted his spear straight toward the point between Huo Yanguang's eyebrows. In that moment, a dark blood red light emerged from the Phoenix Blood Spear, twisting into a blood colored storm. This blood colored storm was formed of 999 small spears. These small spears were all formed by blood and this blood contained a nearly endless infernal energy and infinite divine might. This was the phoenix true blood contained within the Phoenix Blood Spear!

The Phoenix Blood Spear was forged by a senior Supreme Elder, using a special technique that sealed 999 drops of phoenix blood within it to form an array that represented nine through nine to return to one. The original master of the Phoenix Blood Spear could ignite their Ancient Phoenix blood to stimulate the array formation within, and the 999 drops of phoenix blood would form spears that attacked the enemy. This was the greatest killing move contained within the Phoenix Blood Spear!

The Phoenix Blood Spear's attack even surpassed the thunderfire dual dao diagram attack formed from burning the Ancient Phoenix Blood and releasing the Purple Lion Thunder Source!

This was the might of a top grade saint artifact!

"Lin Ming! You have forced me to do this!"

Huo Yanguang's face fiercely twisted. At this critical moment he bit down on the tip of his tongue and spat out a mouthful of blood essence on the Blackfire Blade. The Blackfire Blade absorbed Huo Yanguang's blood essence and violently trembled, emitting a faint ringing sound.

To a martial artist of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, solely burning the blood of the Ancient Phoenix would cause a massive increase in the consumption of true essence. In a way, it was the same as combusting one's true essence to erupt with a greater strength. If true essence was burnt away, it could still be restored, but one's life blood essence was different. If blood essence was burnt away, there would be that much less. In a gambling fight between disciples of Phoenix Hall, burning one's life blood essence was truly going all-out!

"Blackfire Blade, burn down the world!"

An incomparably mighty sword strike slashed outward. Huo Yanguang burnt his blood essence to drive the power of the Blackfire Blade, increasing the power of the sword by three times its usual state!

However, three times was still not enough!

As the black flames entered the grandmist space, the majority of the power was weakened by the grandmist space!

In the end, even though Huo Yanguang burnt his blood essence, the power of his attack only rose by 30%. How could the Blackfire Blade that only increased in power by 30% possibly contend with the Phoenix Blood Spear that attacked with all of its strength?

Bang!!

The deathly black flames were torn apart by the 999 blood spears. The blood spears finally gathered, forming a crimson torrent of light that smashed into Huo Yanguang's protective true essence!

Peng!

Huo Yanguang's protective true essence exploded like glass. As his protective true essence shattered, the robes he wore began to shine with a faint red light. This was the protection of the high-grade saint artifact – the Nine Feathered Heaven Robe.

For an attack to wound Huo Yanguang, it first had to break through the protection of the Nine Feathered Heaven Robe. But how could the high-grade saint artifact rank Nine Feathered Heaven Robe compare with the Phoenix Blood Spear, a weapon that was almost a transcendent saint artifact? The Phoenix Blood Spear also had the source strength of the old Palace Master sealed within it!

The Nine Feathered Heaven Robe's barrier of light got destroyed. The surging torrent of light formed by the 999 blood spears smashed into Huo Yanguang's chest!

Puff!

Huo Yanguang felt as if he was struck by a million jin steel ball. Blood spewed out from his body and he flew backward like a broken sack. Blood wet his chest even as it sprinkled to the ground!

“Huo Yanguang was injured! He vomited blood! His wound is even greater than Lin Ming’s!”

“What just happened? Huo Yanguang was just about to win but everything suddenly changed!”

The Phoenix Hall disciples were spooked silly. The battlefield situation had changed too fast; they simply weren’t able to keep up. After Lin Ming exchanged two probing strikes with Huo Yanguang, only then did the true all-out fight begin. That was the bloodshed began!

It had to be known that when Phoenix Hall disciples dueled each other, they would probe again and again, hiding their cards in hand and slowly reveal them one at a time until they reached a hundred collisions in a single go. Only then would the outcome be decided.

When would it be like the fight between Lin Ming and Huo Yanguang were blood was shed nearly the moment they stepped on stage?

One had formed the 999 blood spear array of the Phoenix Blood Spear and used a mighty unknown martial skill.

The other had burnt their life blood essence!

How was this a gambling battle between fellow disciples? This was more like a life or death duel between bitter enemies! They desperately attacked to force the other into the jaws of death!

The four Hall Protectors that were bearing witness to this fight were highly vigilant, prepared to act at a moment’s notice. They were ready to rescue Lin Ming but the one they needed to save was Huo Yanguang. Huo Yanguang was a talented disciple of the Huo Family Clan. If he were beaten up, the Huo Family Clan couldn't do anything about that. But if he were killed, it'd be a major problem. That was not something they could afford to have happen under their watch!

Although they were supposed to be the arbiters of this battle, they also felt bitter about the situation. To them, Life Destruction martial artists were nothing but children. When two children fought, there shouldn't be any dangers with four adults watching from the side. But now, their minds were all at a high degree of concentration with none of them daring to even blink. This fight was simply far too ruthless.

Lin Ming's attack severely wounded Huo Yanguang, but he didn't show any mercy. He grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and stepped upon Golden Roc Shattering the Void. The Gate of Wonder opened as he rushed forth once more.

The grandmist battle spirit fused into the Phoenix Blood Spear again. The Phoenix Blood Spear emitted an excited whistling cry. In that moment, a blood red phoenix phantom formed above the Phoenix Blood Spear. This was not a phenomenon created by Lin Ming, but one naturally formed by the 999 drops of Ancient Phoenix blood from the Phoenix Blood Spear. This was dozens of times or even a hundred times more formidable than the golden phoenix formed by Lin Ming burning his own Ancient Phoenix blood!

Huo Yanguang watched this spear thrusting towards him and hurriedly released a golden pill furnace. As this pill furnace appeared, it spun round and round, releasing a brilliant golden light that seemed to contain a golden crow. This was Huo Yanguang's high-grade saint artifact pill furnace, the Sun Melting Furnace!

As Huo Yanguang released the Sun Melting Furnace, he flew forward and entered it. He used this pill furnace to defend, not to attack. To use the Sun Melting Furnace to attack Lin Ming with his unstoppable rainbow-like momentum was simply a dream!

Lin Ming didn't change his actions at all. His spear smashed down as before, like a mountain was falling, as if the heavens and earth were collapsing!

Clang!

Like the tail whip of a divine dragon, the Phoenix Blood Spear pounded the Sun Melting Furnace!

The Sun Melting Furnace was hammered by Lin Ming's spear. It flew down like a ball and crashed into the ground!

Bang!

With a loud explosive sound, the furnace hit the ground like a meteor. The ground cracked apart, and Huo Yanguang as well as the Sun Melting Furnace penetrated deep into the ground, completely buried!

As the martial artists present saw this scene, they fell silent. The sudden change in this battle was too sudden; it left them dumbfounded and stumped. The battle was far too short. Everything occurred in the blink of an eye, leaving them too little time to be shocked or even to react.

In particular, the moment when Lin Ming had beaten the Sun Melting Furnace, with Huo Yanguang inside, into the ground. Even words like bloodthirsty, savage, or brutal weren't enough to describe this.

"This is like a dream. Lin Ming has comprehended a perfect silver battle spirit. Am I imagining things?"

An early Divine Sea disciple muttered. During this battle, what shocked him the most was not the sudden change in tides, it was not Lin Ming's amazing strength, nor was it the unrivalled might and majesty of the Phoenix Blood Spear. No, it was Lin Ming's perfect silver battle spirit, a battle spirit that was only a single step away from reaching the gold level boundary!

In comparison to his cultivation, this martial artist's battle spirit wasn't too bad; it was at the large success bronze level. Although he couldn't compare to those Ninefall geniuses, he was still capable enough. But compared to Lin Ming now, the difference was like clouds and muds!

Bang!

The lid of the Sun Melting Furnace flew off and a bloodied Huo Yanguang crawled out. At this time, the Sun Melting Furnace was like a coffin buried deep in the ground, and Huo Yanguang with a face wet with blood looked like a zombie, wriggling his way out.

“Lin Ming, you…” Huo Yanguang was angry from shame. He wanted to spit out some malicious words to maintain whatever face he had left, but as he opened his mouth to speak all that came out was a gurgling mouthful of blood. He couldn’t even remain steady. Pill furnace, divine tripods, those types of magic tools could be used defensively but they weren’t defensive type magic tools in the end. If one hid inside, they could block a direct attack but they still had to withstand the shaking force. This sort of feeling was no better!

All of Huo Yanguang’s bones were broken, his meridians were torn, and his blood vessels had burst open. His entire body was like a leaking bag of blood!

In this sort of situation, Huo Yanguang already knew that the battle was as good as lost. However, he still couldn’t accept this result!

Forgetting the fact he was beaten into the ground in front of everyone, he wanted to suicide by smashing his head into the wall when he thought of the two high-grade saint artifacts and 20 drops of phoenix plume blood.

The two high-grade saint artifacts accounted for most of his wealth, and the 20 drops of phoenix plume blood were borrowed; he had to return it. Not just that, but when he broke through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction, he had borrowed another 20 drops of phoenix plume blood from his uncle. Huo Yanguang had promised he would return all of this phoenix plume blood. His original thoughts were that his strength would rapidly increase once he had the Phoenix Blood Spear and once he was able to perceive the mysterious Laws within, he would be able to rapidly reach the Divine Sea realm. He would have more than enough time to return the phoenix plume blood. But now, everything he had was gone!

He owed 40 drops of phoenix plume blood and a majority of his wealth had been lost!

In his life, he had never suffered such a miserable loss before!

Chapter 980 – Phoenix Plume Blood in Hand

Chapter 980 – Phoenix Plume Blood in Hand

…

…

…

Huo Yanguang was beaten up by Lin Ming so bad that over half his blood vessels had burst apart. Victory and defeat were already decided. The leading Hall Protector came down from the air and glanced at Huo Yanguang. He sighed.

He was a genius amongst the juniors of the Huo Family Clan. Without mentioning his background, the resources he enjoyed were far superior to those of a common disciple. He had formed a 12 mile origin energy cloud that covered his entire residence and withstood the baptism of the Heavenly Dao, surprising the entire Phoenix Hall. His limelight was unmatched, and even some Divine Lord Elders of Phoenix Cry Palace were disturbed.

With such a story, today should've been the greatest and most celebrated moment in Huo Yanguang's life. Today should've been the day he carved the confidence and belief of victory into his bones, and used this power to overwhelm Lin Ming and win the Phoenix Blood Spear. He would've really been a chosen pride of heaven with a great destiny gathered in his body. With his four level layered heavens ninth stage Life Destruction as well as the immense destiny placed on him, his future achievements were infinite.

However, fate always made fools of men. Huo Yanguang had lost, and he had lost in such a miserable way that he couldn't be any more miserable!

Without mentioning the 20 drops of phoenix plume blood, the two top high-grade saint artifacts were meticulously and lovingly raised by Huo Yanguang. He received them during the Revolving Core realm and slowly built them up. The artifacts even shared the same roots with him. Giving them to others was the same as cutting off his own flesh!

To a martial artist, the magic instruments they carefully raised would never be leant to others. If others were to fuse their own spirit marks, true essence, and other energies into it, the quality of the magic instrument would suffer. Once it returned to the owner's hands, they would have to slowly refine it again over time.

This was also the reason why Huo Yanguang was only able to borrow an ordinary top grade saint artifact from his uncle.

A lifelong magic weapon could be said to be similar to a martial artist's wife. Who was willing to lend their wife to others to use?

But now, Huo Yanguang had to look helplessly on as he lost his two wives to someone else. This caused him to nearly vomit blood again.

Just how proud was a genius? Even if it were a mortal, if they were ruthlessly trampled on in public and also had to compensate others with their property along with their two most beautiful wives, that taste would truly be hard to swallow!

There were some hot-headed mortals that could get sick from anger, some even died.

But if it were a martial artist instead, this wouldn't happen to them. However, their thoughts wouldn't be smooth and this would affect their cultivation.

"Huo Yanguang, I hereby judge that Lin Ming won the battle. Do you wish to object?"

The Hall Protector didn't want to rub salt onto Huo Yanguang's wounds. However, in this sort of gambling battle, one needed to consult the participants in order to decide the outcome.

Huo Yanguang's complexion was grim. He glared at Lin Ming, unable to say anything. For him to personally acknowledge out loud that he had lost was something he just couldn't do.

"What about it? Do you still want to fight? If you do, I'll accompany you. However, I can't guarantee you won't suffer even worse injuries!"

Lin Ming's voice was loud and clear, bringing with it a rolling momentum and power, shocking the entire audience!

"Everything in life comes and goes. I will remember today's humiliation!"

Huo Yanguang gnashed out these last ruthless words to keep up the fading tatters of his honor and then turned around to leave.

Lin Ming faintly smiled and said, "Huo Yanguang, have you forgotten something?"

The words stabbed Huo Yanguang like sharp knives, grating on his ears. Lin Ming was certainly speaking of the two high-grade saint artifacts.

Huo Yanguang was already at the edge of the altar. He stopped and with a deep breath he grit his teeth, took off his Nine Feathered Heaven Robe, and passed it along with the Sun Melting Furnace to Lin Ming.

Before handing over his magic tools he also had to personally erase the spirit marks he had left on them after he had so assiduously raised them these past years. If he didn't remove the spirit marks and they were refined by Lin Ming instead, that would've caused damage to his soul.

"Nice. I was just lacking some clothes."

Lin Ming caught the Nine Feathered Heaven Robe and Sun Melting Furnace as they flew toward him. When Lin Ming ascended to the Divine Realm, he left the Demon Emperor Armor and the Coiling Martial Divine Furnace with Mu Qianyu. He didn't have any protective armor right now and the Demon Emperor Armor was only a low-grade saint artifact to begin with. It was unable to compare with the Nine Feathered Heaven Robe.

As for the Sun Melting Furnace, that came at a perfect time.

Lin Ming's Cosmic Melting Furnace was originally only a quasi-Saint artifact. It was sufficient when he was at the Sky Spill Continent, but now the furnace was having difficulties withstanding the intensities of his flames.

The Ancient Phoenix Clan was a sect that controlled fire. There were many alchemist grandmasters and refining grandmasters in the clan. The quality of pill furnaces the Ancient Phoenix Clan forged were absolutely first class in the Divine Realm.

"If I knew about this, I would've left the Cosmic Melting Furnace in the lower realms. It seems that when I inherited the Great Desolate Blood Halberd left behind by the Demon Emperor as well as the Cosmic Melting Furnace and Demon Emperor Armor, those items were not things that were left behind when the Demon Emperor was in a hurry, but rather he did it intentionally so that others could inherit them.

Lin Ming estimated that the Demon Emperor's cultivation was around the middle late Divine Sea when he ascended to the Divine Realm. Moreover, he definitely had experienced additional lucky chances in the Eternal Demon Abyss. There was no need for him to bring low-grade saint artifacts with him.

Although the martial artists of the lower realms were far inferior to the martial artists of the Divine Realm, this was because they lacked resources, masters, inheritances, talent, and even the origin energy of their lands was nearly barren. Because those lower realms martial artists had to suffer through fierce and brutal competition to emerge from a world of trillions of people, those martial artists that managed to ascend to the Divine Realms were ultimately the most outstanding of individuals. They were the chosen amongst the chosen prides of heaven, and they all gathered a great destiny on their bodies. In terms of will and mentality, they often exceeded martial artists of the Divine Realm. Their potential was enormous.

Especially in the Sky Spill Continent where the world was blocked off by a barrier, the heaven and earth origin energy was even more desolate. A martial artist that could cultivate to an eighth stage Life Destruction in the Sky Spill Continent could often have even greater achievements in the Divine Realm than a ninth stage Life Destruction martial artist.

It had to be known that in the last 100,000 years of the Sky Spill Continent, there were very few individuals that ascended. The Demon Emperor, Emperor Shakya, and the Sorcerer of the Southern Wilderness each had great accomplishments when they ascended to the Divine Realm. Although they weren't able to become a Holy Lord, they were still able to control their own territory. One could infer this from the fact that the Demon Emperor was qualified to participate in the battle for the Magic Cube.

"Congratulations Junior-apprentice Brother Lin."

After Huo Yanguang left, the leading Hall Protector smiled. He handed the vial of phoenix plume blood to Lin Ming.

There were only 20 drops of phoenix plume blood and it was placed in a small jade vial. As Lin Ming received it, he could feel it sink in his palm. These 20 drops of phoenix plume blood were actually equal to a 180 jin heavy weapon.

The blood within a Phoenix God Beast's body was divided into different ranks. The highest ranking blood was the phoenix blood essence. A single drop of phoenix blood essence had an inestimable value. It was a treasure that could not be measured with saint artifacts, regardless of how many.

Below that was phoenix coronet blood. Phoenix coronet blood had the property of pure yang, and it was an extremely beneficial treasure to martial artists that cultivated pure yang energy. Its value was also inestimable.

Followed by that was phoenix marrow blood, phoenix heart blood, phoenix plume blood, and various other types of blood. At the lowest end of the spectrum was ordinary phoenix blood.

Ordinary phoenix blood was about the same weight as an ordinary martial artist's blood. A Phoenix God Beast was thousands, or even tens of thousands of miles long. Within the body of such a massive beast, there were trillions of jins of blood. If this blood rained down, it could drown a city.

This was also the reason why Divine Realm martial artists were able to use such precious phoenix blood. Otherwise, as an unrivalled God Beast, how could anyone obtain the blood of an Ancient Phoenix?

Lin Ming uncapped the small jade vial and took a deep breath. He could immediately feel a rich pure yang energy waft out. Through just smelling the blood, he could feel a hot flow of energy rush into his meridians, solidifying his cultivation and giving him great benefits.

If he could have Fairy Feng fuse this phoenix plume blood into his body when he crossed the sixth stage of Life Destruction, just what effect would it have?

The Hall Protector smiled and said, “Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, quickly close it again. This jade vial has a special trait and that is that it can prevent the pure yang energy of the phoenix plume blood to escape. If you open bottle for too long, the phoenix plume blood will lose its energy.”

The Hall Protector was speaking to Lin Ming in a friendly manner, much more respectful than he would’ve normally been. As for the other disciples, their eyes were filled with awe as they looked at Lin Ming!

Yes, that was awe.

In the past, when they had known that Lin Ming obtained the Phoenix Blood Spear, they had thoughts of jealousy and envy cross their minds. In their hearts, they wondered why Saint Artifact Pavilion’s artifact spirit approved of Lin Ming. They had thoughts of stepping over Lin Ming’s fame in the future and proving that they themselves were the most extraordinary disciples.

After all, just taking the Phoenix Blood Spear wasn’t too special. A saint artifact on the level of the Phoenix Blood Spear would be obtained by others a few times every 100 years. As for a more ordinary top grade saint artifact, they’d be taken away every 2-3 years.

But now, with Lin Ming's fifth stage Life Destruction strength, he managed to defeat the ninth stage Life Destruction Huo Yanguang. The envy that filled their hearts now turned to awe.

Lin Ming's talent and achievements were simply incredible!

If Lin Ming's talent was slightly better than theirs, they would still envy him. But if Lin Ming's talent far surpassed theirs, they could no longer feel envy. They could only look up and worship him!

This was similar to the chief disciple of Phoenix Hall, White Daohong. To him, all the other young disciples only felt a deep awe.

"This is truly heaven defying. A fifth stage Life Destruction martial artist defeated the four layered heavens ninth stage Life Destruction Huo Yanguang! That is a difference of four stages of Life Destruction! Moreover, from Eightfall to Ninefall, although it can't be compared to great a boundary, it's still around half of one!

While undergoing Ninefall, a martial artist would undergo a baptism of the Heavenly Dao and their comprehension of Laws would soar by a great deal. But their true essence wouldn't increase by much. The benefits of Ninefall were mostly embodied in the tempering of the soul. Soul force was only the carrier of true essence and Laws; it didn't have an immediate influence on actual combat strength.

"He's too strong. That's a difference of four stages of Life Destruction. Although the 999 blood spear array within the Phoenix Blood Spear could make up for a part of it, that's at most a small boundary. To overcome a disparity of three stages of Life Destruction is extraordinary!"

"No kidding. Jumping three stages of Life Destruction to fight isn't considered much, but the problem here is that Huo Yanguang is also a genius amongst geniuses. He even far surpasses the ninth stage Life Destruction Huang Yuegong from several years ago! We are inferior to Huo Yanguang, but even if our cultivations were several small boundaries above his, we would still be defeated. Yet Lin Ming defeated Huo Yanguang with an even lower cultivation than his. That’s just unbelievable!”

“I wonder how Lin Ming’s talent compares to Senior-apprentice Brother White Daohong?” A disciple suddenly asked in a hushed whisper.

To these disciples, White Daohong was the only person in Phoenix Hall worthy of being called the number one disciple. Whether it was talent or potential, he far exceeded everyone else. In terms of cultivation he had already broken through to Divine Transformation.

Chapter 981 – Sixth Stage Life Destruction

Chapter 981 – Sixth Stage Life Destruction

…

…

…

White Daohong also received the approval of Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit, and had taken the number one top grade saint artifact that hung there at the time. Moreover, he too inherited a portion of the old Palace Master's source strength. In the minds of the junior disciples of Phoenix Hall, White Daohong was synonymous with a living god. When he crossed the ninth stage of Life Destruction, an origin energy cloud that spread out for 18 miles formed. That was a six layered heavens ninth stage Life Destruction!

Compared with Huo Yanguang, the difference was tremendous.

A gambling fight between Lin Ming and Huo Yanguang was a big deal to an ordinary disciple, but to someone like White Daohong it was the same as two talented children wrestling with each other. He didn't even appear to watch the battle. A contest between Life Destruction level powerhouses simply wasn't worthy of his attention.

"Compared to Senior-apprentice Brother White Daohong, I feel Lin Ming is a bit worse," a disciple said somewhat unsure. In fact, he could faintly feel that Lin Ming's talent already surpassed the White Daohong of the past. However, just as these words were on the tip of his tongue, he changed his words. This was due to the power and influence accumulated by White Daohong over such a long time.

These ordinary disciples already subconsciously recognized White Daohong as an insurmountable existence, undefeatable.

"Could Senior-apprentice Brother White Daohong have defeated a Ninefall master at the fifth stage of Life Destruction?" another uncertain disciple asked. This was because this sort of jumping ranks to battle was just far too incredible. It was the reason why no one had believed Lin Ming could win, because even someone like White Daohong couldn't have done it!

At this moment, a Divine Transformation realm disciple said, "He cannot! Although Senior-apprentice Brother White Daohong is fierce, he absolutely could not have defeated a four layered heavens Ninefall master during the fifth stage of Life Destruction. In terms of strength at the same level, Senior-apprentice Brother White Daohong is not inferior to Lin Ming, but they simply cannot compare in terms of battle spirit. It seems that Senior-apprentice Brother White Daohong's battle spirit boundary is currently at gold perfection. He's just a step away from reaching the next level."

The early Divine Transformation realm martial artist who spoke only had an eighth grade Life Destruction base. But his experience was far greater than the Divine Sea and Life Destruction juniors here. He was one of the people who climbed up in White Daohong's era, and had seen him personally fight. Of course, his words held a much greater authority.

"He is stronger than Senior-apprentice Brother White Daohong if both of them were at the same level?" Several disciples gasped. This was a bit inconceivable.

"Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit is indeed a senior that has existed for nearly a million years. For these several hundred thousands of years it has seen hundreds of millions of heroic young elites, just what type of talent has it not seen before? In terms of identifying talent, even the Palace Master cannot compare!"

The Palace Master that the Phoenix Hall disciple spoke of was naturally the Palace Master of the entire Phoenix Cry Palace. He was also Fairy Feng and Sage Jiuyang's honorable master. To these ordinary disciples, such a character was the same as a legend. Even the disciples of Phoenix Hall, and even some Divine Lord realm Elders didn't have the qualifications to see him!

“He is indeed stronger than Senior-apprentice Brother White Daohong was at that level. But…” As the Divine Transformation disciple spoke to here, he suddenly changed his tone, “It’s hard to predict what Lin Ming’s future achievements will be like depending on just this point, and whether or not he will become someone more formidable than Senior-apprentice Brother White Daohong.”

“To seek Ninefall and pass through the Nine Divine Shifts, his first step is to step into the ninth stage of Life Destruction. That will be the point when he truly starts to cultivate the Heavenly Dao. The road that Lin Ming must travel is still long; who can guarantee that his future will continue to be smooth, or that he can even continue walking down the road for much longer? You must know that the reason Senior-apprentice Brother White Daohong can have such great achievements now is because he encountered a massive lucky chance during the Divine Sea realm, cementing his status as the chief disciple of Phoenix Hall! If Lin Ming wishes to compare with Senior-apprentice White Daohong, he’ll first have to enter the Divine Sea realm, the late Divine Sea realm, and the early Divine Transformation realm. Only then can we see clues into his future success. In order to become a true top talent and rush to the level of Palace Master in the future, every step he takes must shake the heavens and tremble the earth!”

The final evaluation that this Divine Transformation martial artist gave of Lin Ming was fair and objective. If one was successful during the Life Destruction realm, that didn’t mean they would continue to have such success in the future. It only meant they had a chance of reaching the Holy Lord realm. As for whether or not they could grasp that chance, that remained to be seen.

What kind of existence was a Holy Lord? Even in the vast Divine Realm, a Holy Lord was a master of their own land. The Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan was also a Holy Lord!

The Ancient Phoenix Clan was in truth a Holy Land level influence within the Divine Realm. That was not Phoenix Cry Palace, but the totality of the 72 palaces and three great family clans of the Ancient Phoenix Clan combined!

They had a population of over a hundred billion disciples, endless geniuses, a massive volume of Divine Transformation realm powerhouses, numerous Divine Lord realm powerhouses, 648 Vice Palace Masters, and 72 Palace Masters. Even above that were the Highest Elders, Disciplinary Elders, Enlightening Elders, and various other Elders that were in seclusion. That combined with the three great family clans comprised the Ancient Phoenix Land and was a Holy Land level influence.

Compared to the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom, this sort of Holy Land was like comparing a giant dragon to a tiny ant. For someone to be able to become the highest leader of this Holy Land, the power of a Holy Lord level powerhouse could be imagined!

No matter how talented Lin Ming was, or how talented White Daohong was, they were both far from becoming a Holy Lord!

“Fellow senior-apprentice brother Protectors, I must visit Senior Fairy Feng and close up so that I can prepare to reach the next realm. I thank you all for bearing witness to the gambling battle just now. Thank you and farewell.”

“Haha, Junior-apprentice Brother Lin’s progress is indeed fast. You want to attack the sixth stage of Life Destruction? Hm, well it does seem that Junior-apprentice Brother Lin’s cultivation has reached perfection of the fifth stage of Life Destruction; you will be able to enter the sixth stage of Life Destruction at any moment now. Once Junior-apprentice Brother Lin reaches the sixth stage of Life Destruction, then under the same conditions I think you might even be able to contend a bit with a Ninefall Divine Sea powerhouse!”

The ninth stage of Life Destruction to the Divine Sea was a large boundary, but fifth stage Life Destruction to sixth stage Life Destruction was only a small boundary. If Lin Ming reached the sixth stage of Life Destruction, then under these conditions where both sides had a top quality saint artifact, it was still impossible for Lin Ming to frontally fight with a Ninefall Divine Sea master. The most he would be able to do was to save his own life. In order to truly contend with a Ninefall Divine Sea master with a top grade saint artifact, he would have to reach at least the seventh stage of Life Destruction. Moreover, that was only being able to struggle with them for a little bit.

Lin Ming faintly smiled, not responding. He knew that he still had a very long road ahead of him. Today he defeated Huo Yanguang with overwhelming force, but the truth was that he used almost every skill available to him and that even accounted for the advantage of the Phoenix Blood Spear. If he didn't have the Phoenix Blood Spear and also didn't have the Primordius martial intent, Lin Ming would never have defeated Huo Yanguang.

A Ninefall genius of the Divine Realm was no common elite of their era.

After Lin Ming said his farewells, he transformed into a beam of light and flew straight toward Fairy Feng's palace.

Fairy Feng had already received news of what happened before Lin Ming arrived. This news was sent by the several Hall Protectors. It was possible to receive some rewards in reporting this sort of good news; they certainly didn't want to miss out on such an opportunity.

"A fifth stage Life Destruction martial artist defeated the four layered heavens Ninefall Huo Yanguang?" Fairy Feng's expression changed as she heard this news. This was truly incredible!

"A lower realms martial artist is said to have great potential, but their weak points are their talent and their cultivation speed. This is because the resources of the lower realms are simply unable to compare with the Divine Realm. I knew Lin Ming was extraordinary, but I didn't know the limits of his strength. I only expected he would grow in the future and completely dig out his potential, but I never thought he would have such great strength at only the fifth stage of Life Destruction!"

As Fairy Feng was thinking, a flame appeared in front of her. This was a message sent from one of her maids.

"Honorable Master, Junior-apprentice Brother Lin has come!"

"Oh?" Fairy Feng's eyebrows arched up. "Lin Ming should've come to ask me to help him break through the sixth stage of Life Destruction. Very well!"

Fairy Feng was pleased. Now that Lin Ming won the phoenix plume blood, if a bit of her own collection was added, that would be able to further consolidate Lin Ming's foundation. When he broke through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction in the future, he would receive an even greater baptism of Laws!

"Send him in."

Fairy Feng's sound transmission was sent out. A moment later, Lin Ming arrived at the grand hall where she was.

"Senior Fairy Feng, the reason that this disciple requests to see senior is to ask for help in breaking through to the sixth stage of Life Destruction and also to request that Senior Fairy Feng can act as a protector for this junior."

"Sixth stage Life Destruction, very good!" Fairy Feng sized up Lin Ming. He had indeed reached perfection of the fifth stage; his foundation could not become any more solid either. It was rare for this sort of scene to appear in the body of a lower realms martial artist. The resources of the lower realms were barren and their inheritances were limited. This caused many talents to take detours and shortcuts.

"Lin Ming, I've already heard of your victory over Huo Yanguang. You've done well, very well! Although you revealing your strength may draw some trouble, I have always advocated strength above all. If you can clearly defeat your opponent, then why should you cower and hide! That is not the style of a martial artist! I also heard you won 20 drops of phoenix plume blood, is that right?"

"Yes."

"Bring them out!"

"Alright."

Lin Ming swept the Extreme Violet Ring and a small jade vial flew out. Fairy Feng grasped the vial and swept her sense through it. It were indeed 20 drops of phoenix plume blood.

She took a deep breath, then took out a giant red feather from her spatial ring. This feather was 30 feet long and nearly reached the dome of the grand hall.

Lin Ming only needed to glance at this feather in front of him to sense a cold light and a sharp intent. He didn't doubt that if this feather was used as a weapon, it could stab a top master death!

"Phoenix feather?" Lin Ming asked.

"Yes. It's exactly a phoenix feather. When you cross the sixth stage of Life Destruction, that is the last pass of you shattering your core. After reaching the sixth stage of Life Destruction, that is when you will star tempering your soul. In seeking Ninefall, the path is divided into three stages of three. They are called – essence, energy, and soul!"

Essence meant the physical form and blood essence. The first three stages cultivated 'essence', meaning they decomposed the mortal body to form a spirit body.

Energy was origin energy and true essence. When others said to concentrate energy into the dantian, that was because the dantian contained 'energy'. The second three stages of Life Destruction cultivated this 'energy'. That was to shatter the dantian and reform the Revolving Core!

Soul meant divine soul. The final three stages where about the soul and this was also the most mysterious process.

Essence, energy, and soul were the basis of all life, and also the basis of every martial artists' martial path. The three were the most fundamental aspects of martial arts. In order to seek Ninefall, one had to cultivate essence, energy, and soul to perfection before stepping into the Divine Sea realm, otherwise it would be extremely difficult to have great success in the future. Lin Ming's sixth stage of Life Destruction was the final pass in cultivating 'energy', he certainly had to do everything to perfection.

Fairy Feng said, “Come to my chamber. I will destroy this phoenix feather and take its energy essence and fuse it into your dantian. When you reform your core, it will bring bring it to perfection!”

“Thank you Senior Fairy Feng.” Lin Ming bowed. Fairy Feng came from common origins, and in terms of wealth she was far inferior to Sage Jiuyang. Things such as phoenix true blood and phoenix feathers were also greatly useful to herself. For Fairy Feng to divide these resources to him was a kindness.

Chapter 982 – Perfect Dantian

Chapter 982 – Perfect Dantian

…

…

…

Fairy Feng's seclusion chamber was located underneath Fengxian Palace. The entire chamber was built from saint artifact level material and it was also supported by an array formation. Even if there was no one specially managing it, it was still able to withstand a barrage from a late Divine Lord boundary master.

In the center of this chamber was something that looked like a giant egg. Lin Ming was about to ask what it was when Fairy Feng wrapped him up in red light and they both entered the giant egg.

"This is…"

Lin Ming looked at his surroundings with shock. The walls were a deep red and they were incomparably thick. As he pressed on them, he could feel that the walls were highly elastic, pulsating as though they had a life of their own.

"This is a wall made of flesh and blood?" Lin Ming asked with some disbelief.

"Yes, this is a flesh and blood dao womb an ancient supreme elder created by using the body of a catastrophic great beast. I obtained it during a treasure hunt in a mystic realm. It is a spirit artifact level treasure. However, this flesh and blood dao womb cannot be used to attack the enemy because it does not have any striking power. It can only be used to train during seclusion. If you cultivate in this flesh and blood dao womb, it can strengthen the essence energy within your body. If you absorb the flesh and blood essence within this flesh and blood dao womb, there will be all sorts of interesting effects. It'll be greatly beneficial for you in crossing the sixth stage of Life Destruction."

"There are spirit artifacts like this?" Lin Ming asked in a daze. In the Sky Spill Continent, the types of treasures were very singular and well known. There were sabers, swords, spears, halberds, shields, helmets, and all sorts of other armors and weapons. There was a minority of jewelry type treasures; they were extremely rare. As for this strange treasure Fairy Feng showed him, he had never seen anything like it before, nor had he thought about it.

Lin Ming released his senses into the flesh and blood dao womb. He could feel the flesh and blood essence energy rush around like a surging tide. If he cultivated here, it'd give him a great deal of help in opening the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

Fairy Feng said, "This flesh and blood dao womb is one of my lucky chances. For me to achieve my current accomplishments, this flesh and blood dao womb played a great part."

As Fairy Feng spoke, she raised her hand. A wisp of a pale gold flame slowly rose from the palm of her hand. The flame didn't seem as if it had the least bit of burning heat, but it actually twisted the space around it. In this flesh and blood dao womb, the fire origin energy began to slowly circle around the pale golden flame, turning into faint firebirds, fire crows, fire wolfs, fire lions, and all sorts of other spirit body shaped animals. All creatures of flames lay prostrate in front of that golden flame in worship.

This left Lin Ming flabbergasted. The flame that Fairy Feng had produced didn't even need to be controlled by her to display such a miraculous effect. This flame that contained the high principles of the Great Dao was truly bewildering.

"This is the Nirvanic Sacred Flame?"

"Yes."

The Nirvanic Sacred Flame was not a type of Flame Essence. In fact, for a character like Fairy Feng, they would not raise and nourish a Flame Essence within their bodies. Instead, they would raise Fire Elementals. A Flame Essence was equal to a Thunder Soul and a Fire Elemental was equal to a Thunder Source.

The divine flames left behind when a phoenix ignited itself during nirvana was combined with a high-grade Fire Elemental. This fusion resulted in the Nirvanic Sacred Flame. The grade of this flame was incomparable to the Purple Lion Thunder Source.

The Nirvanic Sacred Flame contained the truths of rebirth through nirvana within. Breaking one's revolving core through Life Destruction and then reforming it was a similar process; both were to break apart, then reform.

"Very well, I shall begin. I will penetrate the Nirvanic Sacred Flame into your body and you will begin revolving your energy to disintegrate your body."

As Fairy Feng spoke, she slapped her palm on Lin Ming's stomach. The Nirvanic Sacred Flame immediately surged into his meridians and dantian. As long as Lin Ming controlled the eruption of energy while simultaneously galvanizing all the energy within his body, he could break apart his body.

Of course, this was only under normal circumstances. What surprised Fairy Feng was that when the wisp of Nirvanic Sacred Flame entered Lin Ming's body, it actually seemed to lack strength. It was as though there was a strange energy within Lin Ming's body that faintly wished to devour the Nirvanic Sacred Flame.

"What is this supernatural power? It can actually suppress the Nirvanic Sacred Flame? Although I released the Nirvanic Sacred Flame, the truth is that it's only 1/1000 of the sacred flame's energy. The quality is extremely high; ordinary supernatural powers should not be able to suppress it. Lin Ming indeed has a great destiny upon his body."

Fairy Feng was surprised. She quickly searched through Lin Ming's body to see what sort of supernatural power was at work. However, after a quick pass through, she still didn't find anything.

"Interesting, interesting!"

Fairy Feng was even more surprised than before, but also pleasantly delighted. In order for a genius to grow, mere diligent cultivation and talent wasn't enough. One needed a great lucky chance, or even many of them.

"I was afraid that too much of the Nirvanic Sacred Flame would burn his meridians, but it seems my worries were unfounded. This is even better. The more of the Nirvanic Sacred Flame I can pour in the more thoroughly Lin Ming's body will be tempered."

As Fairy Feng thought of this, she increased the amount of Nirvanic Sacred Flame she was infusing into Lin Ming. In both her palms, the flames were no longer pale but a dazzling brilliant gold.

Fairy Feng poured 5/1000 of the Nirvanic Sacred Flame's strength into Lin Ming, but this still wasn't enough!

"Good."

Fairy Feng shot out a seal, increasing the Nirvanic Sacred Flame to 1%, then 2%!

The brilliant golden flame wrapped around Lin Ming. The essence energy and blood essence of the flesh and blood dao womb was also quickened as it began to slowly pour into Lin Ming's body.

At this time, Lin Ming's body finally began to disintegrate. From his skin to his muscles, meridians, blood vessels, organs, skeleton, marrow, and finally even his brain!

Lin Ming's entire body was decomposed, turning into the purest and tiniest particles possible as they wafted around the flesh and blood dao womb. The revolving core crystal nucleus within Lin Ming's dantian flew out. This pitch black revolving core crystal nucleus was actually a perfect black hole revolving core.

Fairy Feng nodded appreciatively as she saw this revolving core crystal nucleus. The foundation of his revolving core crystal nucleus was so solid, that even in the entire Phoenix Cry Palace it was at the peak.

Wisps of golden flames sprang out from her fingers and sunk into Lin Ming's revolving core crystal nucleus. The crystal nucleus began to melt, turning into the most pure and essential energy as it fused into the particles of flesh and blood.

Lin Ming was currently in his weakest and most fragile state. The only reason he could maintain his life in this state was due to the support of the World Laws. But if the miraculous ordered phenomenon around Lin Ming's disintegrated body was ruined, he would immediately perish into nothingness!

This situation was similar to a mortal dying if their heads were cut open. There were some skilled doctors that could slice open the head to remove a brain tumor, then stitch the head back together, allowing the patient to live. However, if there was even the smallest disturbance in the surgery, the patient would die.

However, with Fairy Feng's boundary, controlling all of this at the same time was a very easy and calm matter. She took out the 30 foot long phoenix feather and began to heat it with the Nirvanic Sacred Flame.

The phoenix feather was the feather of a God Beast; it was extremely tough. Even a Divine Lord powerhouse would find it extremely difficult to break it down!

But underneath the reducing power of the Nirvanic Sacred Flame, the phoenix feather quickly melted.

The Nirvanic Sacred Flame was originally the flames a phoenix bathed in when it was being reborn. It could burn the entire body of a phoenix, so a feather was a simple matter.

"Go!"

Fairy Feng lightly cried out and the phoenix feather melted into pure energy that fused into Lin Ming's flesh and blood! She opened the vial of phoenix plume blood. The 20 drops of phoenix plume blood flew out and exploded into a blood fog underneath the energy, fusing into Lin Ming's body.

When Huo Yanguang crossed the ninth stage of Life Destruction he also fused 20 drops of phoenix plume blood. But Lin Ming was able to receive such a luxurious treatment during the sixth stage of Life Destruction. Not only did Lin Ming have the phoenix plume blood, but he also had the essence energy of the phoenix feather to complement it as well as Fairy Feng using her Nirvanic Sacred Flame to temper his spirit body.

This treatment surpassed even the disciples of the three great family clans. Only the most outstanding disciples of the three family clans could possibly enjoy such resources.

The process of the sixth stage of Life Destruction could last for over a dozen days. Fairy Feng stood by the side and watched as Lin Ming's flesh and blood particles were tempered in the energy as they absorbed the blood energy of the flesh and blood dao womb.

On the eighteenth day, there was a sudden change in the circulation of flesh and blood particles. They began to gather. Lin Ming's sixth stage Life Destruction was finally coming to an end.

The energy within the flesh and blood dao palace began to slowly fuse together. From liquid to a solid state, until the spherical crystal nucleus formed, then collapsed, and finally became a black revolving core.

After passing through the reforming process of the sixth stage of Life Destruction, Lin Ming's revolving core was smaller, but the energy inherent within was greater and purer.

With this revolving core crystal nucleus at the center, the energy condensed into the dantian. The countless particles of flesh and blood accumulated, forming the brain, skeleton, organs, meridians, flesh, skin, and everything else.

This process continued for an entire day. Lin Ming's body had taken shape and he was suspended in the air, his hands wrapped around his knees. His black hair hung down like a waterfall that hid his entire body. In this moment, Lin Ming was like a newborn baby. His body shined crystal bright as if it contained endless vitality.

Slowly, both his eyes opened, clear and bright like twin stars. With a thought, fire origin energy swept up around him. It formed clouds that threaded themselves into beautiful red silk and wrapped around Lin Ming, forming clothes.

As he immersed his thoughts into his body and dantian, Lin Ming felt as though he was reborn and his dantian had reached perfection. The phoenix plume blood and the essence energy from the phoenix feather were completely absorbed into his flesh and blood. This feeling was incomparably wonderful!

Lin Ming gripped his fists together. He could feel strength filling his body. If he were to fight Huo Yanguang now, he believed he had a high chance of winning even without using the Primordius martial intent!

Moreover, after having absorbed the blood vitality of the flesh and blood dao womb, his body already reached the edge of transformation. He now had a great assurance he would be able to break through the fifth of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates in a single go – the Gate of Opening!

The Gate of Opening was located in the brain. After reaching the fifth gate, his perception would increase as well as his soul force. Although this wasn’t immediately of influence to his combat strength, it was actually known as being the most valuable of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. That was because this gate wouldn’t become any less valuable even after reaching the Holy Lord realm.

There was a tremendous gap between the first four and the second four of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. Lin Ming had opened the fourth Gate of Pain but it had been several years since then. This was mainly because the momentum and energy he accumulated were insufficient. But now, it was finally time.

Chapter 983 – The Gate of Opening Which Enhances Perception

Chapter 983 – The Gate of Opening Which Enhances Perception

…

…

…

“Thank you Senior Fairy Feng.”

Lin Ming bowed to Fairy Feng. He would carve down this graciousness in his heart. Lin Ming was aware that he encountered numerous lucky chances in the lower realms. But compared to the top geniuses of the Divine Realm, lucky chances like the Sorcerer Pagoda in the Southern Wilderness or the adventure through the Demon God Imperial Palace could only be considered ordinary at best.

In this situation, every step he took had to be incomparably solid if he wished to shine bright in the future. Otherwise, he would exhaust his potential and fade away. If that happened, discussing something like chasing the peak of martial arts would simply be a fanciful dream.

“Lin Ming, do not call me senior. From now on, I shall receive you as my secret disciple. Would you be willing?”

“Secret disciple?” Lin Ming was slightly surprised. Generally speaking, a secret disciple was one of the lower ranks of disciples; it wasn’t even an ordinary disciple. They would rarely receive any guidance. He certainly wouldn’t turn down the offer of being Fairy Feng’s disciple, but how could it only be a secret disciple?

Fairy Feng guessed Lin Ming's thoughts. She said, "Although I will accept you as a secret disciple, I will help train you with everything I have. Being a secret disciple is only a title in name. I can already faintly feel you won't remain in Phoenix Cry Palace in the future. You have your own lucky chances and destiny, and you'll continue to move forward in the boundless Divine Realm. You may even become a hero in your own right. Perhaps you may even find another master to teach you and become his disciple. Although it isn't strange for martial artists of the Divine Realm to have several masters, having one acknowledge you as a direct disciple is still a significant matter. If I cannot teach you in the future, then recognizing you as my official disciple is meaningless."

Fairy Feng's words dazed Lin Ming. Fairy Feng said all this for a single reason. She believed, she wouldn't be able to teach Lin Ming in the future. Since that was the case, she didn't want to officially establish that sort of embarrassing master-disciple relationship.

"Senior Fairy Feng thinks too highly of this junior. Junior is still far from being able to compare with the true heroes of the Divine Realm!"

"Not bad, you are indeed far from being able to compare! You are merely a single disciple of Phoenix Hall within Phoenix Cry Palace, one of the 72 palaces of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Your accomplishment of jumping four stages of Life Destruction to defeat Huo Yanguang was impressive enough to astonish the other disciple here, but placed within the vast Divine Realm, that accomplishment is nothing at all. Even White Daohong, the current number one disciple of Phoenix Hall, if he doesn't have any other great fortuitous encounters in the future, he will never be able to blossom into glory. The most he will achieve is becoming a Vice Palace Master of Phoenix Cry Palace. Moreover, he will only be the weakest of Vice Palace Masters; he will never compare with me or Sage Jiuyang. White Daohong falls far short of being able to compare with Phoenix Cry Palace's Palace Master and the Phoenix Cry Palace Master falls far short of being able to compare with the Ancient Phoenix Clan's Patriarch. And even the Ancient Phoenix Clan Patriarch is far from being able to compare with a true top Holy Lord powerhouse of the Divine Realm. For you to guard against your own arrogance and understand that your future road still stretches endlessly before you, you have done well."

“This disciple will remember honorable master’s teachings.” Lin Ming’s words proved he recognized Fairy Feng as his honorable master.

“Good. You still have half a year until the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial begins. How will you prepare for it? If you can obtain first place during this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, the rewards will be extremely rich. Top grade saint artifacts, Ancient Phoenix blood, phoenix heart blood, top pills, you may choose anything you wish. However, you must obtain first place in order to grasp what you want!”

Lin Ming thought for a while and said, “Honorably Master Fairy Feng, this disciple is preparing to close up for a period of time to open the fifth of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.”

“Oh?” Fairy Feng slightly frowned. “The Eight Inner Hidden Gates, the fifth gate should be the Gate of Opening. It enhances your perception. Truly a useful gate. However, Lin Ming, master will advise you to be careful about the path you are taking and not to neglect the basics. The Divine Realm’s body transformation technique, I fear, is a cultivation system from billions of years ago, or even from an ancient time far surpassing that. In legends I’ve heard, in the past, body transformation was popular and well practiced throughout the realm, and the essence gathering system only emerged afterward. But the essence gathering system actually slowly replaced the body transformation system. There are definitely reasons behind this.”

“It was said that the rules that governed the world changed. But in brief, within the current Divine Realm there are very few geniuses that dual cultivate body and energy, even if they are peak talents of a Great Holy Land. While the geniuses that dual cultivate body and energy have a great superiority to martial artists that only follow a single cultivation system, they will have to pay a corresponding amount of energy and time. If your studies are too varied and mixed, it will be difficult to achieve a profound understanding in any of them! Moreover, body transformation’s Nine Stars of the Dao Palace are legendary in their difficulty of breaking into! If you cultivate just the essence gathering system, you can still become a Holy Lord, World King, or even an Empyrean. The potential of the essence gathering system is already more than enough for you to dig out. If you can fully explore that potential, you will become an Empyrean. Aren't you satisfied with becoming an Empyrean?"

Fairy Feng was also only casually speaking. She didn't expect that Lin Ming would become an Empyrean. What kind of existence was an Empyrean? In the entire Divine Realm, an Empyrean might not appear for 100,000 years or even millions of years!

Of the talent in the Divine Realm, no matter how amazing they were and no matter if they were the current number one talent of the Divine Realm, they were still incomparably far from ever becoming an Empyrean!

Lin Ming didn't say anything. No matter how far an Empyrean was, he would still firmly walk down on the road he decided on to take.

Fairy Feng saw that Lin Ming had already made up his mind and knew that saying anything further was useless. In fact, she also understood that with someone like Lin Ming, who was so determined, once they made a decision they would rarely veer off that path and instead steadfastly walk down that road no matter what lay ahead. Those people that made a decision and changed their mind the next moment would rarely have great achievements.

Although she knew this, she still had to raise this matter. As Lin Ming's master, it was her duty to mention these points. As for what decision Lin Ming made, that was all up to him.

"If you wish to break through the Gate of Opening, now is your time. Since you've reached this step, you must step into the Gate of Opening no matter what. As for the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, that will all depend on heaven's will. Do you have the materials for making body transformation medicine? If you wish to break through to the Gate of Opening you need to accumulate a great deal of medicinal materials."

"I do. But I haven't turned them into pills yet." Lin Ming took out the Extreme Violet Ring. Within the Extreme Violet Ring was a medicine garden with a massive amount of medicinal plants, all over 100,000 years of age.

This was one of the relics Jiang Ziji had left behind in the Temple of Marvels. The medicine garden in the ring was untouched for over 100,000 years. Although most of the medicinal herbs had died, those that lived on were extremely valuable breeds. Such long lived medicinal herbs would be difficult to find even in a Divine Realm Holy Land!

"You actually have such a medicine garden? These are 100,000 year and even older medicinal herbs!" Fairy Feng was surprised. Even she didn't have such a medicine garden. It wasn't a matter of how precious the medicinal herb were, but how long they had grown for.

Fairy Feng could obtain obtain more precious medicinal herbs than these, but as for raising them herself, she wasn't even 10,000 years old herself yet, so how could she have grown medicinal herbs that were over 100,000 years old?

Moreover, medicinal plants like these had their own life and spirit. They had to absorb heaven and earth origin energy to transform themselves. There were many herbs that lived for less than 10,000 years. As for the types of medicinal herbs able to live up to 100,000 years and longer, they were extremely rare.

"This should be a high-grade saint artifact level spirit realm left behind by a Divine Realm master. The inside has its own world and can be used to raise medicinal herbs and even raise wonderful beasts. This should be something you obtained from some ancient ruin. But in a situation where the master has died and there hasn't been anyone to care for the spirit realm for 100,000 years, and yet these medicinal plants can maintain their life, that must be because this ring was left in an exceptionally wonderful land with extremely rich spirit energy. "

Fairy Feng had amazing insight. With just a few words, she was able to discern how Lin Ming had obtained this ring. Indeed, Jiang Ziji died meditating beneath a divine thunder tree. Because of the divine thunder tree, the heaven and earth origin energy around the entire dimensional realm was pure and rich, with spirit plants, spirit trees, and even top grade spirit essence stones being born.

Jiang Ziji was a clansmen of the Electric Violet Kirin Clan. The medicinal herbs he planted were mostly of the thunder-attribute type. In a land with such thick and pure thunder origin energy and where the environment was perfectly suited the for the growth of these medicinal herbs, after 100,000 years this type of medicine garden finally formed.

"What wonderful materials. Moreover, these materials are mostly of the thunder attribute. Mm?" Fairy Feng suddenly noticed a small line of characters carved on the inside of the ring. "Electric Violet Kirin Clan Shadeless Lightning Vindicator Jiang Ziji."

"The Electric Violet Kirin Clan is originally a branch of the Ancient Kirin Clan. No wonder there's so many thunder attribute medicinal herbs here. Thunder attribute medicinal herbs are best used for tempering the body. Thunder originally has the power of life, so it is far superior to tempering the body than fire is. The superiority of fire is to burn away impurities of the revolving core and refine energy. The superiority of thunder is in body transformation."

"Good. I will help you process these medicinal herbs and refine the spirit pill for you to open the fifth Eight Inner Hidden Gate."

The Ancient Phoenix Clan was a massive sect that took the Flame Laws as their core and their achievements in alchemy were correspondingly wonderful. In alchemy, control of the flame was essential in creating pills. Fairy Feng was also an alchemist grandmaster.

Although Lin Ming inherited the memories of a Divine Realm alchemist, it would likely take him at least a year to process all of these medicinal herbs. He would've missed the date of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial.

But if Fairy Feng were to help him, she would only need ten days to do what would take him a full year, and the quality would also be far superior.

"Thank you, honorable master."

“This is only a minor matter. You prepared the materials and I’m only putting in a little effort. Moreover, I can also enhance my alchemy technique and soul force and prepare to step into the next realm.”

As Fairy Feng spoke to this point, she took out a golden red pill furnace from her spatial ring. This pill furnace was a spirit artifact level treasure. To an alchemist grandmaster, a pill furnace was even more important than a weapon. A weapon could only be used to increase one’s combat strength, but a pill furnace was required for alchemy, and alchemy concerned a martial artist’s cultivation. With top quality pills, it was far easier to enhance one’s cultivation.

With a spirit artifact level pill furnace combined with Fairy Feng’s alchemy technique and also being refined by the Nirvanic Sacred Flame, any pill she produced would be heads and shoulders above what Lin Ming could make.

This was the benefit of having a master. For a disciple born into a distinguished family in a Divine Realm Holy Land, they would have many Elders to support them. The Elders could assist in concocting pills, personally explaining cultivation methods, and even demonstrating skills. From all of this support, their cultivation speed could be imagined.

“Lin Ming, during the time I create this pill for you, you will meditate on the Fire Laws.” Fairy Feng took out a jade slip from her spatial ring and gave it to Lin Ming. This was Fairy Feng’s collections of insights of the Fire Laws that she personally wrote down. It was a priceless treasure. Only someone that thoroughly understood the Fire Laws could create such a jade slip; it was impossible to duplicate. Each and every one was a valuable treasure. A jade slip like this would never be casually granted to someone that wasn’t a direct disciple.

Fairy Feng seemed to suddenly remember something. “That’s right, you are now a Phoenix Hall disciple. Phoenix Hall disciples can take two saint artifacts from Saint Artifact Pavilion. Since you’ve taken one, go and take another one. Don’t miss out!”

“Yes, honorable master.” How precious was a top grade saint artifact? With such an opportunity placed in front of him, Lin Ming certainly wouldn’t miss out.

Chapter 984 – Movement of the Magic Cube

Chapter 984 – Movement of the Magic Cube

…

…

…

Ever since Lin Ming took the Phoenix Blood Spear from Saint Artifact Pavilion, many disciples were stimulated by it. They trained hard, hoping to test their luck at Saint Artifact Pavilion. Although they didn't expect to take a top grade saint artifact, even taking a low-grade saint artifact was enough.

This was similar to when in the world of mortals someone who ran into some luck and found a nugget of gold in the fields. Other people wouldn't care about whether or not they would have the same luck and would rush toward that same field to dig it up.

"What? 1000 phoenix cry seal marks is enough to enter Saint Artifact Pavilion, so why are you charging us 2000?" Several new disciples scowled at Song Baifeng. They had worked hard in order to save up 1000 contribution points each and they came to Saint Artifact Pavilion to test their luck. But the result was that they were blocked by Song Baifeng before they were even able to pass through the door.

Song Baifeng proudly rode on his fire lion, looking down on these new Life Destruction realm Firebird Hall disciples with an authoritative air. He looked over these new disciple as if they were toads, thinking to himself, "Humph, these fellows want to come and take a saint artifact? Have they even looked in the mirror recently?"

Song Baifeng uproariously laughed and said, "What I say you need to enter, is how much you need to enter!"

These past days, Song Baifeng's days hadn't passed in peace. He didn't dare to bully any of Fairy Feng's people anymore. It wasn't that he feared Fairy Feng, but that he feared Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit. The artifact spirit was his immediate commanding superior. He atleast had to make it through this period of limelight first.

With less people to extort, Song Baifeng became anxious. After all, for someone in his position he had people above and below him that he needed to bribe, otherwise how could he stay here for 20-30 years?

Song Baifeng had decided to mess around with the disciples of the smaller factions. But these disciples didn't have much to begin with. No matter what, it was impossible to strain water from these dry rocks. This caused his days to be rough.

“You, how dare you do this!” The several disciples flushed red. Just as they were about to say something else, they suddenly saw Song Baifeng jump up as if a fire was lit under his ass. He hurled himself off the fire lion and his arrogant expression completely became servile with a flattering smile. In the blink of an eye, his entire person had done a complete 180, and he acted like someone else entirely.

These disciples didn't understand just what trick Song Baifeng was playing until they saw him groveling towards the front of a young man in front of him. “Sir Lin, welcome. Sir Lin, please come in. Sir Lin, did you make such a majestic appearance today to pick up your second top grade saint artifact? Hahaha, it seems as if my Saint Artifact Pavilion will have another top grade saint artifact that will find its rightful master. A top grade saint artifact can only be matched with such a heavenly genius like Sir Lin in order to be considered the best use.”

Sir Lin?

Lin Ming didn't know whether to laugh or cry at hearing this title. He was just a common person who originated from the lower realms, so when had he so suddenly become a young master?

Song Baifeng was an extremely obsequious toad-like character. Even if he needed to open his mouth and call Lin Ming his daddy right now, he would still do so without batting an eye. He attentively led the way for Lin Ming, treating those shocked disciples behind him as though they were nothing more than air.

After Lin Ming entered Saint Artifact Pavilion, the dumbfounded disciples finally regained their composure. This scene had truly opened their minds. For someone to be so arrogant at one moment and then become such a bootlicker the next, this sort of thick skin could only come from a top cultivation method.

“Pathetic! I can’t believe he is craven to such a degree. When he sees the juniors of noble families, it’s like he’s seeing his own father. How can this sort of person even think of cultivating on the martial path? He will never enter the Divine Transformation realm!’

“No kidding, this is too aggravating. What’s so special about those noble family juniors? They’ve had a silver spoon in their mouths since they were born. All of their cultivations are entirely dependent on their sheer amount of resources. If I was born in a noble family, I would be at least ten times stronger than they are.”

“Noble family? Are your ears deaf? Did you not hear just who that was?” The third disciple with the highest cultivation shook his head. “That youth’s last name was Lin. In Phoenix Cry Palace, are there any Lin Family Clans you know of that can have Song Baifeng be respectful to such a degree? Well, rather than respect that should be called fear. Song Baifeng asked that Sir Lin if he came for his second top grade saint artifact, meaning another one was taken before by him. The young disciples that can take a top grade saint artifact are rare, even in the entire Phoenix Cry palace, and with his sixth stage Life Destruction cultivation added on top, who do you think that is?”

As the other two disciples heard this, one of them was still confused. But the other one perked up and said, “He’s Lin Ming, the one that took the Phoenix Blood Spear and defeated the four layered heavens Ninefall Huo Yanguang?”

“So that’s Lin Ming! He looks like a scholar from the mortal world; there’s nothing too special about him!”

”What do you know about what’s special about him? He restrained his aura so that he doesn’t seem any different from a common man. If he released his aura, we wouldn’t even be able to approach him! Just a while ago he was at the fifth stage of Life Destruction but now he’s already at the sixth stage!” The leading disciple shook his head and patted the shoulders of his two brothers.

“You don’t need to come from a noble family to be treated with respect. All you need is strength.”

……

In Saint Artifact Pavilion, Song Baifeng was all smiles as he led the way in front. His small and timid steps made him seem like a eunuch from a mortal royal palace.

“Sir Lin, come take a look. This great halberd is the top grade saint artifact that replaced the Phoenix Blood Spear after it was taken by you. The quality is a much lower than the Phoenix Blood Spear though; Sir Lin definitely doesn’t need it. There are still 8 top grade saint artifacts here, why don’t you see which one fits your preferences best?”

After reaching the center of Saint Artifact Pavilion, Song Baifeng attentively introduced Lin Ming around. How was this the glorious procedure of challenging and taking a saint artifact from Saint Artifact Pavilion? It was more like purchasing clothes from a store.

However, Lin Ming truly did have the ability to choose as he wished. He simply didn’t need to care about the test and could choose whatever he wanted. This was the advantage conferred to him by strength.

“I don’t need a weapon. As for the pill furnace, ring, vestment, necklace, and armor, tell me what they are. Especially the ring and necklace.”

Lin Ming didn't need vestments or a pill furnace; he already had the Nine Feathered Heaven Robe and Sun Melting Furnace that he won from Huo Yanguang. Although they were only high-grade saint artifacts, he could use them all the same. An armor wasn't important to him now either. What Lin Ming most wanted were the ring and necklace.

The necklace was in truth a protective charm. It was attached onto a very ordinary looking red thread, something that seemed as though it could be sold in a stall of a mortal kingdom.

"Of course!" Song Baifeng certainly wanted a chance to show off his good side.

"Sir Lin, this ring is called Eye of Reality. It can break through illusions and speed up your recovery of physical stamina and true essence."

"As for the protective charm necklace, it's called Saint's Will. That is not something made in my Ancient Phoenix Clan, but rather a treasure taken from an enemy after they were killed by an Elder of Phoenix Cry Palace. Its origin is quite mysterious. According to the analysis of the Elders, it is a fragment of will left over by an ancient Holy Lord that managed to continue existing for hundreds of thousands of years. It was obtained by a refining master, then sealed into the protective charm necklace. It can increase one's soul force and willpower.

After Song Baifeng introduced the necklace and ring to Lin Ming, Lin Ming nodded as he mulled over them. An accessory type saint artifact had a far smaller effect on combat strength than a weapon or armor, but their value was far higher than saint artifacts of the same grade.

Song Baifeng continued to introduce the several other top grade saint artifacts, including the Sunpierce Sword and Sun Shooting Bow. Those two weren't too inferior to the Phoenix Blood Spear, but Lin Ming didn't need them nor would he use them. Although the pill furnace, vestment, and armor were good, he didn't urgently require them now either. As Lin Ming thought about it, he decided on the extremely ordinary looking protective charm necklace – Saint's Will.

"I'll take that one!"

Lin Ming looked at the protective charm necklace floating in the air. It looked extremely common. If it wasn't hanging within Saint Artifact Pavilion, it would be difficult to notice.

Lin Ming chose Saint's Will for his own reason. Although this protective charm necklace wouldn't increase his strength by too much, he very much liked its ability to enhance his will and soul force.

The soul was related to perception and also his cultivation. As for will, he was just a step away from achieving a gold battle spirit. Once he did, his combat strength would rise by another level. But this single step was actually extremely difficult. His battle spirit didn't enhance by much after he entered the sixth stage of Life Destruction. Instead, he wandered on the edge of making a breakthrough to a gold battle spirit and now he wanted to seek a turning point to make that breakthrough.

Lin Ming flew up into the sky and disappeared into the shining light of Saint's Will. The light flared for a moment before quieting down like a lake that quieted down after having a rock dropped into it.

Song Baifeng looked onward, silently keeping track of the time in his heart.

10 breaths of time, 20 breaths of time, 30 breaths of time…

80 breaths of time passed, around half an incense stick of time, when Lin Ming fell down from the sky. He calmly landed and looked up toward the skies. That shining star that was Saint's Will shrank, and a moment later it completely condensed into Saint's Will. The protective charm necklace fell down and landed in Lin Ming's hands.

This entire process was easy and relaxed. Lin Ming's face hadn't even changed color. It was as if he performed some trivial matter.

"Magnificent, truly magnificent! Sir Lin is indeed Sir Lin! A Ninefall powerhouse would try their hardest to obtain a top grade saint artifact, and they would fail even after panting and becoming exhausted. But Sir Lin seems to just be picking something out of the air and obtained it in just half an incense stick of time. In this lowly servant's life, I have also seen other geniuses take top grade saint artifacts, but they usually take fifteen to thirty minutes. Moreover, they would have to consume a great deal of energy, like they would in a grueling battle. How could anyone of them compare with Sir Lin who looks so elegant and handsome afterward? Sir Lin's talent and potential will be unrivalled for the next 500 years in the entire Phoenix Cry Palace. For the next 500 years, I fear no one will be able to compare with Sir Lin!"

Although Song Baifeng already expected Lin Ming to obtain Saint's Will, he never thought he would do it so quickly His flattering words also stemmed from true admiration. He guarded Saint Artifact Pavilion for many years and saw many heroic young elites take top grade saint artifacts. But even if they managed to do so, they would be panting and tired, looking as if they were half-dead. Compared to Lin Ming, the difference was like the clouds and mud.

Lin Ming naturally didn't care about Song Baifeng's flattery. He touched the protective charm necklace in his hand. This protective charm was cold like ice, and as he was carefully feeling the properties and mysteries within it, something unexpected occurred.

He could feel the deeply sleeping Magic Cube in his heart slightly tremble, seemingly regaining consciousness after a long period of sleep.

Chapter 985 – Strange Protective Charm

Chapter 985 – Strange Protective Charm

…

…

…

As the Magic Cube throbbed, Lin Ming was startled. "This is? The Magic Cube actually has some strange reaction to the protective charm necklace?"

"What is happening here? This is only a top grade saint artifact. Something of this level shouldn't have any value in front of the Magic Cube, so why is there such a response?"

If it were some high level mystical treasure, how come the person who refined it or the Phoenix Cry Palace Elder didn't notice anything?

Lin Ming's mind raced, but he had no change of expression on the surface. To Song Baifeng, Lin Ming was only grasping this protective charm necklace to feel it increasing the strength of his will.

"How is it Sir Lin? This protective charm is wonderful and it also works as a simple accessory. Once you step into the Divine Lord realm, this protective charm won't be as useful to you and you can definitely bestow it upon a good friend of yours. Then again, Sir Lin is handsome and elegant, dashing and charming, and your talent is also extremely high. I fear that in the future, Sir Lin will have to beat off the countless beautiful women that struggle to jump in your bed and be your concubine."

Song Baifeng went all-out in his flattery but Lin Ming didn't listen to a single word of it. He took a deep breath and calmly put the necklace away. He smiled at Song Baifeng and said, "Thank you for assisting me Senior-apprentice Brother Song. I'll be on my way first."

"Haha, no need, no need, if you have any matter in the future, please inform me," Song Baifeng nodded and sent Lin Ming away. As he watched Lin Ming vanish, he took a deep breath and said to himself. "At least I've resolved the problems from last time. This sort of character will grow to unimaginable heights. Solely with him obtaining the recognition of Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit, he is someone I absolutely cannot afford to offend."

Song Baifeng guarded Saint Artifact Pavilion for many years and had a deep understanding of how Saint Artifact Pavilion's artifact spirit judged others. Some Phoenix Hall disciples suspected that the artifact spirit sometimes had a problem in its judgment, but Song Baifeng was deeply aware of just how cruel and sinister the tests of the artifact spirit could be. Every genius it approved of was bound to shine in glory as long as they didn't perish halfway!

Lin Ming had already returned to his own residence. In order to ensure absolute safety he didn't even go to Fengxian Palace.

After entering deep into an array formation covered chamber deep underground, Lin Ming laid down several more layers of array formations. He carefully took out Saint's Will and looked over it. He didn't sense anything strange.

After searching through it with his sense, he didn't discover anything out of place. He couldn't imagine just why the Magic Cube had a reaction to it.

Frowning, Lin Ming wore the protective charm on his neck, wanting to see how it would increase his willpower. But as he put on the protective charm, an unbelievable scene happened. The protective charm slipped into his chest, disappearing like mud into the sea.

"The Magic Cube swallowed it?"

Lin Ming's eyes widened. He sank his mind within himself to sense the Magic Cube, but he was left disappointed as he couldn't feel anything. Ever since the Magic Cube fused into Lin Ming's body it had simply vanished, and no matter how he tried to contact it or how he used his sense to investigate it, he couldn't even find a shadow of the Magic Cube. Even when he first crossed Life Destruction and disintegrated his body into tiny particles, he still couldn't find the Magic Cube.

There were only some unique circumstances when the Magic Cube would appear, such as when it absorbed the blood essence of a powerhouse. Or when something provoked the Magic Cube's dignity. At that time, it would display an awe-inspiring strength that went beyond Lin Ming's understanding.

What was the protective charm necklace and why was it swallowed by the Magic Cube?

Lin Ming looked down at his own chest. The red string that hooked around the protective charm was still here; it hadn't been absorbed by the Magic Cube. But, the end of the red string where it tied onto the protective talisman had been torn off; it was obviously due to the Magic Cube.

Lin Ming took up this red string and analyzed the material with his senses.

At a bare minimum, Lin Ming inherited the memories of a Divine Realm alchemist and array master, as well as those of the Ancient Devil. He had a great deal of understanding into many materials.

After analyzing the red string, Lin Ming was actually startled. This red string looked ordinary, but it was actually the tendon of a winged rain dragon. After being tempered in dragonwood oil, it was refined multiple times through a variety of complex processes before this end product was produced.

Although the winged rain dragon wasn't a True Dragon, it still had a very rich dragon bloodline within its body. It was not what those vicious beasts that were transformed by a drop of a God Beast bloodline could compare with. This dragon tendon thread was only a foot long and was one of many strands, but it was still exceedingly precious!

However, it was clear that the Magic Cube was not interested in this red thread. Moreover, it cut it apart without Lin Ming noticing at all.

From this, it could be seen that the winged rain dragon tendon thread could not compare with the value of the protective charm itself.

Lin Ming thought for a moment, then muttered, “If I’m guessing correctly, the senior supreme elder who refined this protective charm should’ve used an unknown material that it accidently obtained. He didn’t know what the material was, but he discovered that it had the property of increasing will and soul force to some extent. Afterwards, it was refined into Saint Will’s protective charm, and this string was added on. The true worth of the protective charm likely far surpasses the value of a top grade saint artifact. It’s an ancient relic, but as for what it is, the refiner supreme elder didn’t know, Phoenix Cry Palace’s Elder didn’t know, and I certainly don’t know. But the Magic Cube knows. If I didn’t have the Magic Cube, I would’ve only assumed it was an ordinary top grade saint artifact protective charm necklace.“

Lin Ming wanted to understand just what it was, but unfortunately the Magic Cube had swallowed it and there wasn’t any significant change.

The Magic Cube was the start of Lin Ming’s road of martial arts. It was his foundation and origin.

However, Lin Ming’s current achievements were also due in large part to his own effort and desperate struggles. The Magic Cube hadn’t given him much, besides some memory fragments from characters on the level of the Demon Emperor and Fairy Feng. Within these memory fragments, besides the Heretical God Force, there wasn’t anything truly too spectacular.

Still, Lin Ming was well aware that the power of the Magic Cube was far from being revealed. It definitely had more capabilities than the pitiful function of providing him with soul fragments. The Magic Cube caused Divine Realm Holy Land level influences to struggle for it with their lives, so how could it be a common relic? It had to be known that the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan with its 72 palaces and three great family clans was only a Holy Land after everything was added together!

During the battle for the Magic Cube, numerous Holy Land masters had joined in. Of these people, someone on the level of Fairy Feng could only be considered at the bottom of the group. Above that were characters on the level of the Phoenix Cry Palace Master, Ancient Phoenix Clan Highest Elder, or even Ancient Phoenix Clan Patriarch.

But even with 10,000 of these supreme elders gathered together, they were killed off by the Verdant Feather Holy Land Saintess with just a single move!

That Saintess cultivation reached a degree so terrifying that even Lin Ming couldn’t imagine it. Of course, for her to be able to kill off 10,000 supreme elders, that was by relying on the horrifying power of the Magic Cube.

Chapter 986 – Opening the Gate of Opening

Chapter 986 – Opening the Gate of Opening

…

…

…

After Saint's Will was swallowed up by the Magic Cube, Lin Ming studied it all day to no avail. Finally, he gave up on his investigation and started to perceive the jade slips Fairy Feng had left him.

In this jade slip, the Concept that was narrated was the third Concept of Fire – Creation.

When things reached the extreme they would turn around. What lay behind annihilation was creation.

The explanations Fair Feng gave for the Law of Creation had no text; they were nearly all explained with images. Between every two images was a spell. One had to comprehend the previous image to be able to look at the next one.

The first image was that of a blue lotus. The blue lotus grew on top of a flaming red rock, and lava surged all around. The rock was heated to a terrifying degree and it looked like a hell of heat. But the blue lotus that grew above the red rock was actually filled with vibrant life, jade blue and luscious.

"Blue lotus, Blue Lotus Domain." Lin Ming knew that some extremely talented geniuses who understood the Concept of Creation to the highest degree could form the Blue Lotus Domain. This was one of the many kinds of phenomena.

A domain would form a self-contained space. As long as someone entered, they would be suppressed by the Laws of the domain. In order to break through the domain, a martial artist had to use a brute force that was several times what was needed to form it. This was extremely advantageous when facing enemies.

When Lin Ming fought Huo Yanguang, Huo Yanguang had used the Blue lotus Domain. Unfortunately, the rank of the Blue Lotus Domain was far inferior to that of grandmist space. The Blue Lotus Domain was directly suppressed by Lin Ming's grandmist space, and it simply hadn't been able to have any effect in the battle.

Even so, the Blue Lotus Domain was extremely valuable; even Lin Ming was attracted to it. Lin Miong could jump ranks to fight geniuses of the Divine Realm right now, and a major reason for this was his grandmist space. If he could add on the Blue Lotus Domain and superimpose the two great domains together, the suppressive effect on the enemy would be even better.

Lin Ming quickly entered a trance-like state as he observed this mysterious picture. This picture no longer seemed like just a picture, but appeared as though it were reality instead. The billowing flames, the raging lava, the blue lotus that could grow in such an incompatible environment, all of it seemed to contain the highest truths of the Heavenly Dao.

The Fire Laws jade slip that Fairy Feng had created didn't have any explanations, but every single image contained endless riddles. If one's perception was lacking, they would only feel inexplicably confused upon reading through Fairy Feng's jade slip. They would only feel as if they were looking at a pretty picture, much less being able to comprehend the Concept of Fire from within it.

Time passed, day after day. Lin Ming sat in his training chamber meditating without moving.

His comprehension of the Fire Laws constantly grew. Every time he managed to comprehend just a little bit more, the young flame leaf on the Heretical God Sprout would have more traces of Laws textured onto it.

These textures were little tiny totems that gathered in a circle. Although it was different from Fairy Feng's blue lotus image, it still carried with it a similar charm. But these tiny totems were sleeker and more mystical than the blue lotus image.

When Lin Ming was at Timeworn Phoenix City, he realized that every time he comprehended the Fire Laws, every little bit of understanding he gained would form a corresponding dao pattern totem on the Heretical God Sprout's leaves. These totems were enigmatic and contained the truths of the Great Dao. However, with Lin Ming's current boundary, it was simply far too difficult for him to be enlightened on them.

"The Heretical God Sprout is my cultivation method, but it is still an external force. I cannot completely depend on the Heretical God Sprout to absorb the Fire Laws; I must comprehend them on my own. Otherwise, I fear that I'll encounter a bottleneck once I reach a higher boundary.

Using the Heretical God Sprout to swallow the Fire Laws, then study them from there was a short cut. But those were the Heretical God Sprout's Laws. Lin Ming could use them, but he didn't understand the truths behind them. For making his foundation solid, this was far inferior to comprehending them himself.

Lin Ming spent his following days meditating on Fairy Feng's jade slip. One day, a flame suddenly lit up in front of Lin Ming, followed by Fairy Feng's voice. "Lin Ming, I've finished concocting the pills. Come to Fengxian Palace and be ready to open the Gate of Opening!"

Lin Ming suddenly woke up from his contemplative state. He looked at a time glass in the corner of the chamber and saw that ten days had passed. In ten days, Lin Ming still wasn't able to fully understand the first image Fairy Feng had recorded, but she was actually able to create the body transformation spirit pills.

This was the advantage of having a great master. If Lin Ming tried to refine these pills, it was unknown just how long it would take him.

Lin Ming rose up and turned into a stream of light that flew away. A moment later he arrived at Fengxian Palace and found Fairy Feng waiting for him within the grand hall.

"Disciple Lin greets honorable master."

"Mm," Fairy Feng nodded. She flung out her hand and a wood spirit jade box flew toward Lin Ming. He received the box and opened it. Within were two spirit pills; one white and one black.

"Ying Yang Good Fortune Pills!" Lin Ming recognized this pair of pills. Pills were also divided into grades just like magic tools. These Yin Yang Good Fortune Pills were excellent saint level pills, equal to top grade saint artifacts. Although these were pills, their value could not be compared with magic tools. For instance, these Yin Yang Good Fortune Pills Fairy Feng had concocted required numerous medicinal herbs over 100,000 years old. In order to collect all these medicinal materials, it was unknown just how long it would take.

"I didn't think you would recognize these pills. Do you know how to take these Yin Yang Good Fortune Pills?"

"I do."

"Good. With your status as a lower realms martial artist, for you to have such an understanding toward the pills of the Divine Realm, you must've obtained alchemical technique records from some ancient ruins in the Sky Spill Continent. Well done. Although we cultivate martial arts, we still need to have one or two sub-skills that we can practice to temper our soul," Fairy Feng casually said. She stood up, "Follow me. You will take the Yin Yang Good Fortune Pills in my seclusion chamber and open the Gate of Opening. After you do that, the potential of your mind will develop further, and at the same time more of the power hidden within the Gate of Pain will be released. Your physical strength will double!"

Within body transformation's Eight Inner Hidden Gates, the gate that increased strength the most was the Gate of Pain. However, after the Gate of Pain opened, this eruption of strength would continue; it wouldn't happen just once. With every one of the next four gates that were opened, more strength would be released until the opening of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates reached completion. At that time, one would have the supernatural strength of tens of millions of jins. When that strength was combined with some body transformation type martial skills, the physical might one could bring out of their abilities would reach a terrifying degree.

“Yes, honorable master.” Lin Ming respectfully said. He followed Fairy Feng to her seclusion chamber.

“Lin Ming, the Gate of Opening is located within the brain. The brain is the most mysterious part of the human body. Any type of training that involves the brain will have great dangers involved. When you open the Gate of Opening, you will face illusions beyond compare. Guard your mind and your heart, otherwise you will lose yourself. Moreover, when you open the Gate of Opening, there are differences in how much you can open. The better you protect your mind, the more thoroughly the Gate of Opening will open and the more your mind and spiritual sea will develop. On the other hand, if you cannot guard your mind, the Gate of Opening will only open to a small degree, and the increase to your perception and soul force will also be limited.”

Fairy Feng earnestly warned Lin Ming. In truth, Lin Ming was also aware of this. Within the Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians, there were records of when some body transformation martial artists underwent the process of opening the Gate of Opening. Sometimes, their heart demons would emerge and the illusions would seep into their mind. They would lose themselves, falling into madness and never recovering.

Some didn’t open the Gate of Opening thoroughly. This would cause extremely limited growth to their spiritual sea and perception, making it difficult to continue on in the future.

Lin Ming didn’t immediately start to open the Gate of Opening. He first sat in meditation, lighting incense and settling his heart for an incense stick of time. This ceremony didn’t seem to have an important role, but it was actually a method used to regulate the body and mind to the optimal condition. Through doing all of this, Lin Ming would be able to eliminate all the distracting thoughts from his mind and completely focus on the task at hand. The Gate of Opening was located in the brain. Opening the Gate of Opening was equal to expanding his spiritual sea. He had to be careful lest he make even the slightest mistake.

Fairy Feng nodded as she saw Lin Ming's patient actions.

After completing these ceremonies, Lin Ming opened his eyes. He placed the Yin Yang Good Fortune Pills in his hands. His left hand held the White Yang Pill and his right the Black Yin Pill. He entered into the ethereal martial intent state, formed a seal and placed the two pills between his eyebrows. But at this time, a strange scene occurred. The two Yin and Yang pills fused together, forming into a yin yang circle that slowly revolved. It faintly contained the Laws of Yin Yang and the truths of the world.

This was the mystery of the Yin Yang Good Fortune Pills. These pills were not used for swallowing, but for placing between the eyebrows where they would fuse together and form a yin yang circle. This yin yang circle would fuse together with the martial artist and directly open up one's mind.

The yin yang circle spun faster and faster, finally attaching onto the point between Lin Ming's eyebrows until it completely turned to energy. It melted into his skin and slowly fused into his mind. Lin Ming felt his head shake. It was as if a vast starry expanse had appeared within his mind.

Infinity gave birth to primal chaos, and primal chaos gave birth to the twins, named yin yang energy. This yin yang energy was the basis of the world. When Lin Ming fused the yin yang circle into his mind, he felt as if a world appeared. Starlight, sunlight, moonlight, all the lights of the sky rushed into his mind. It was extremely overwhelming.

In that moment, Lin Ming felt as if his mind was like a universe, endless and infinite. It was like he was able to swim around this boundless space, shuttling with the starlight to far off distances even as the light shined upon himself.

With just a thought, he could travel a trillion miles in the blink of an eye. All of existence within the universe was grasped in his hands. He traveled through the heavens, the sole immortal ruler of 10,000 realms!

The peak of martial arts? Was this what the peak of martial arts felt like?

This thought suddenly flashed through Lin Ming's mind. The peak of martial arts was his ultimate pursuit. As he was opening the Gate of Opening, he briefly felt as if he had reached that point, as if he had climbed onto the peak of all martial arts.

No, this was wrong!

This was an illusion! This endlessly broad universe was a maze of his mind. If he lost himself in this illusion, his consciousness would be lost forever, exiled for eternity and never able to return.

Lin Ming was stricken, a cold sweat streaming down his body!

Almost every martial artist had a heart demon. It could be a shame that they could never forget, an irreconcilable blood hatred, something they loved to deeply, something they feared too much, or even something they pursued with all their heart; anything could become one's heart demon!

When Lin Ming was at the Sky Fortune Kingdom and he sat upon the Seven Profound Martial House's sea jade platform, his heart demon was Lan Yunyue; that was passion. He had long since rid himself of that hindrance. But now, his pursuit of the peak of all martial arts had the potential to become his heart demon!

Chapter 987 – Enhanced Perception

Chapter 987 – Enhanced Perception

…

…

…

As Lin Ming realized this, he began to vigorously guard his mind. A silver gray spear-shaped battle spirit shot out from between his eyebrows and smashed into the void!

Peng!

With an explosive sound, countless cracks appeared where the spear-shaped battle spirit struck the void. These cracks spread out at a speed faster than light, spreading through countless galaxies. The entire universe shattered like glass and completely broke apart!

“Ahh!”

Lin Ming screamed out. It felt as if what collapsed in front of him was not the universe but his spiritual sea. It was like his soul and mind shattered alongside the universe as an indescribably pain wracked his very essence. His head felt as if it were splitting apart!

“Was I wrong? Was there a mistake?”

Was that just now not my heart demon, but my spiritual sea that I personally destroyed?

This thought flashed through Lin Ming’s mind. For the briefest of moments his heart wavered but he immediately rejected this idea!

“My battle spirit is my will, a spear of will that is bred from within my spiritual sea. My will would only destroy illusions and lies. How could it possibly harm my own spiritual sea?

"Break! Break it all!"

Lin Ming loudly shouted into the void. His spear of will grew endless millions of miles, then came smashing down like a cosmos splitting axe!

Kacha!

The endless space was shattered by the spear of will!

The scenery changed. From the cracks within the space, endless devils, evil spirits, raving ghosts, zombies, cruel demons, yakshas, asuras, and other monsters appeared. They blotted out the heavens as they rushed toward Lin Ming, wanting to swallow him whole.

Each and every single one of these beings were hundreds of feet tall, with some even a thousand feet tall. They gathered together in a line that stretched for infinity. From the distance they resembled an army of ants!

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a severe light. The spear that was hundreds of millions of miles long suddenly swept out and countless screams filled the air as the trillions of evil creatures were slain by Lin Ming!

At this time, Lin Ming's spear of will had also weakened by a great deal. Although he had a powerful will, it wasn't endless. After killing so many demonic illusions in a single breath, the burden on him was also great.

He focused his heart, continuing to gather and sharpen his will to guard his mind. If he wavered and the Gate of Opening didn't completely open, his consciousness would fall into an illusion and he would be beyond saving.

After the demonic illusions vanished, countless Fey flew through the space cracks. As these Fey flew forward, they changed into exquisite and peerless beauties. They were light and transparent veils and their bodies were half clothed, exposing lusty imagery. Some of them were slender with a bountiful figure, some were young, some were more mature, some were cute and lovable, some were charming and seductive, and some seemed as pure as snow. All of these beautiful women danced and sung as light music filled the air. They had dark eyes that held promises of sweet nights, visions that blurred the eyes and sent one into a drooling stupor.

Even a high monk might find their will shaken by this scene, but Lin Ming's eyes were actually filled with a cold indifference. He swept out with the spear of will once again!

Peng!

All the beautiful Fey women were reduced to ashes!

The spear of will faded further. It was only by relying on the grandmist attribute of the spear that it was able to keep its strength and complete this final slaughter.

At this time, Li Ming felt his own strength suddenly leaving his body. He looked down to see that his hands had aged. His skin was mottled and wrinkled, his eyes were deeply set back in their sockets, his hair was stringy and white, and his fires of life were lowly flickering, as if they were a candle in a storm, ready to fade away at any moment.

Maggots began to crawl out from his old and nearly rotten skin. Beetles began to gnaw on his flesh and dig away at his bones.

Lin Ming coldly snorted. "My will is everlasting and eternal. My flesh can tear off mountains and split apart the earth. My fire of life is like the sun that blazes in the brilliant skies, burning away all!"

Lin Ming roared out and his entire body lit up with flames. The maggots and beetles were all burnt to ashes, and as Lin Ming's body was wreathed in these flames, his rotten old skin was scorched away by the fire and replaced by delicate newborn skin. He was like a phoenix in the flames of nirvana, reborn through a bath of fire!

Bang!

Fire erupted, filling the entire universe. At this moment, Lin Ming's spiritual sea violently trembled. His spiritual sea was filled with raging flames, and the universe around him seemed to fuse into that sea!

Lin Ming stuffily coughed as his eyes suddenly shot open. His complexion was paler than paper and his body was soaked with sweat!

A feeling of infinite exhaustion filled his heart and mind. Lin Ming felt his eyelids weight down like lead and a piercing ache on the side of his head. Moreover, the illusions caused him to have trouble differentiating reality from fantasy.

He looked up to see Fairy Feng sitting in front of him. She was looking at him with a bright smile and nodded appreciatively.

"It's over. I've done it."

Lin Ming took a long breath and slowly sank into a deep sleep.

Opening the Eight Inner Hidden Gate's fifth Gate of Opening was equivalent to opening one's spiritual sea. It caused a terrifying consumption on one's mental strength, divine soul, and will. If one lacked in willpower or soul force, it was possible he'd fail to fully open the Gate of Opening.

There were even some people that would suddenly die. Others would exhaust themselves, allowing their minds to fall into illusions and become vegetables for the rest of their lives.

Lin Ming's sleep was extremely deep, 100% of his being concentrated on his slumber. His heartbeat slowed down and his senses were completely closed off. His brain was closed off and all the pores on his body were relaxed open, spontaneously absorbing heaven and earth origin energy.

During this period, if anyone wanted to kill Lin Ming, he wouldn't have any ability to resist them.

Fairy Feng sat in meditation on the side, keeping track of Lin Ming’s condition the entire time.

She was satisfied that Lin Ming was able to reach this step, extremely satisfied. Lin Ming had almost exhausted all of his will and battle spirit in this attempt and the result was that he had perfectly opened the Gate of Opening and had completely developed the potential of his brain.

‘In terms of how formidable his will and battle spirit are, I fear that there is no one of his age in the entire Divine Realm that could stand on par with him. The benefits that this powerful willpower will grant him will slowly manifest during his future cultivation. For instance, for him to open the Gate of Opening and also to such a degree, all of that is because of the strength of his will. Moreover, his battle spirit seems to have a strange attribute to it. It is wild and vigorous, and it seems to correspond with the Heavenly Dao. If it weren’t for the support of this special attribute, Lin Ming wouldn’t have been able to open the Gate of Opening to perfection.”

For Lin Ming to open the Gate of Opening to perfection, it would greatly enhance his perception and soul force. The advantages to his future cultivation were obvious!

If each and every martial artist was able to open the Gate of Opening to such a degree, there would likely be many geniuses that wouldn’t hesitate to dual cultivate body and energy at all costs just for this Gate of Opening.

But what a pity, that was only a dream.

If one desired to dual cultivate body and energy, they would have to start from a period when their cultivation was at an extremely low point. Otherwise, if they cultivated to Life Destruction and their physical body was transformed into a spirit body, they would be unable to practice body transformation any longer. This was because the bodily matrix would’ve already changed. When one reached the Divine Transformation realm or the Divine Lord realm, a small world would begin to open within their bodies as their spirit bodies slowly became divine bodies. At that point, there was no need to even raise the question of body transformation.

The opposite was true too. If one managed to cultivate the body transformation technique to some point within the Eight Hidden Inner Gates or even the Nine Stars of The Dao Palace, the physical body would simply become too tough and durable. Wishing to cross Life Destruction at that time would be nothing more than a wild dream!

In both these situations, a martial artist's boundary was destined to be low when they opened the fifth Gate of Opening of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. If their boundary was low, the boundary of their will wouldn't be higher either, and their will and battle spirit would be correspondingly weak. With a weak will and battle spirit, wasn't wishing to open the Gate of Opening easier said than done?

It was more accurate to say that regardless of failure or success, it would be excellent if they didn't lose their mind to an illusion.

"This child is truly a dragon in a pool. All sorts of destiny have converged onto his body, and as he walks forward on his road of martial arts, every step he takes nears perfection. If he can continue this progress, he'll be a legend in the future, an Empyrean. But the problem is that to have every step reach perfection is far too difficult. Especially during the Divine Transformation realm and Divine Lord realm. At that time, there are many geniuses that will have exhausted their potential. They must seek their own lucky chances in order to further advance."

"Yet even so, within the lower realms with the barren resources that exist there, he was able to cultivate something that required countless resources like the Eight Inner Hidden Gates to such a degree. Moreover, he obtained a 100,000 year medicine garden from somewhere, and this allowed him to continue cultivating. Now he has fully opened the Gate of Opening and completely developed his brain. Perhaps, perhaps he really might have a chance of stepping into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace."

“To my knowledge, no one has managed to step into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace for millions or even billions of years. Of course, in the vast and endless Divine Realm, what I know is also limited. There might be some people out there somewhere who have managed to do so, but I simply haven’t heard about it at.”

The Divine Realm was truly broad and boundless, with countless geniuses everywhere. However, martial artists that dual cultivated body and energy only accounted for a miniscule amount. As for those that were able to step into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, those individuals had all but vanished!

If one couldn’t step into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, the might of their body transformation would be limited. To open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, that required one to consume a massive amount of resources, and there was also the added difficulties of crossing Life Destruction. This meant a tremendous delay in one’s cultivation. If one couldn’t open the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, all of that really wasn’t worth it. The Eight Inner Hidden Gates would have a much weaker role once one stepped into the Divine Lord realm. And the higher one’s cultivation rose, the more diminished it would become.

Lin Ming’s sleep continued for a full seven days and seven nights.

Seven days later, Lin Ming finally woke up from his deep slumber. He felt that his mind was refreshed and light and his thoughts were incomparably quick!

As he inspected his own spiritual sea, he was pleased to discover that his spiritual sea had expanded by several times its original size. It faintly felt as though it was becoming a world of its own!

The spear-shaped battle spirit floated high in the skies above his spiritual sea. His battle spirit was wrapped in a thick silver gray mist, but in the deepest layers of that mist, there was actually a faint golden color.

Pale gold! That was the sign of a gold battle spirit!

This meant that after Lin Ming's battle spirit was tempered through opening the Gate of Opening, it had reached the peak of silver perfection! It would soon break through and become a gold battle spirit!

But there still existed a great gap between a silver battle spirit and a gold battle spirit; this was an extremely difficult step to take. After Lin Ming's battle spirit had reached silver perfection, he experienced some lucky chances, but that only made his silver battle spirit approach a gold battle spirit that much more; he hadn't been able to make the breakthrough yet.

"My soul force has become three times as powerful in a single go. Moreover..." Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He recalled the blue lotus image that Fairy Feng had drawn, and he was pleasantly surprised to discover that many previous areas he didn't understand completely became crystal clear to him.

Of the areas he couldn't understand at all, he touched upon some directions of where to begin. He was confident that as long as he had the time, he would be able to thoroughly perceive the blue lotus image!

Perception. After opening the Gate of Opening, Lin Ming's originally decent perception had undergone a massive leap upward.

Chapter 988 – The Smelting Trial Begins

Chapter 988 – The Smelting Trial Begins

…

…

…

“Thank you, honorable master!” Lin Ming happily said, overjoyed. After opening the Gate of Opening, he couldn’t wait to perceive the Concept of Fire.

“Lin Ming, for you to open the Gate of Opening to this degree is your lucky chance; grasp it tightly. Your achievements in Concepts and Laws weren’t high to begin with. You can rely on the Gate of Opening to make up for that weakness,” Fairy Feng slowly said. In truth, Lin Ming’s understandings of the Fire Laws could be considered at the pinnacle of the Sky Spill Continent. But in comparison to the geniuses of the Divine Realm’s Ancient Phoenix Clan, he was merely ordinary.

“The Ancient Phoenix smelting trial will begin in only half a year. This smelting trial will have many opportunities for you, but the competition will be equally intense. Not only will there be disciples from our Phoenix Cry Palace, but also disciples from Praying Phoenix Palace and Charming Phoenix Palace. At the same time, there will also be Divine Transformation realm disciples that will come out from their seclusion and participate. They have been meditating on the Laws, and their understandings of Fire Laws will have risen to another level. Although your talent is good, it’s still impossible for you to obtain first place amongst those Divine Transformation realm disciples. I only hope that you can obtain first place among the younger rising talents. Among those, the highest cultivation is at the early Divine Sea.

From the Divine Sea realm to the Divine Transformation realm, one had to close up for a long time and accumulate Laws of the world. They had to fuse these source Laws into their minor dimension, then condense that into a dimensional realm with its own set of rules.

The process was extremely long and difficult. In the Divine Realm, rising from Life Destruction to the Divine Sea would take a genius around ten years. But for those at the Divine Sea to step into Divine Transformation, that often took dozens of years.

This was because rising into the Divine Transformation realm was filled with all sorts of difficulties, and there were also flaws in the various inheritances, even in the Divine Realm. This was also the reason why the martial artists of the lower realms' Sky Spill Continent never had anyone capable of breaking through to Divine Transformation.

"Yes, honorable master."

Lin Ming bowed and excused himself. He flew back to his own training chamber and began to meditate on the third level of the Fire Laws. After opening the Gate of Opening, many areas that he hadn't understood before suddenly became clear. On the Heretical God Sprout, more and more fragments of Laws were carved into the leaves. The golden red round totem became increasingly mystical and profound.

Cultivation passed without sense of time. In the blink of an eye, half a year had passed.

For the Phoenix Cry Palace disciples, the incomparably important Ancient Phoenix smelting trial had begun.

Before the Ancient Phoenix Smelting Trial began, Firebird Hall, Golden Crow Hall, and Vermillion Bird Hall began a vast and bitterly fierce competition in order to decide who had the qualifications to enter the Ancient Phoenix Smelting Trial.

The qualifications to enter the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial were the same as an immense lucky chance. Even if they couldn't rank in the smelting trial itself, they could still expand their horizons and meditate on the source Concepts. There were all sorts or resources they could enjoy there to help them. This was greatly beneficial to their cultivation.

However, Firebird Hall had nearly a million disciples, Golden Crow Hall had tens of thousands of disciples, and Vermillion Bird Hall had several thousand disciples. If all three halls were combined, the number of disciples was terrifying and the competition was fierce. If one wished to obtain a spot, they would have to suffer through difficulties beyond imagination. In order to obtain a single spot, they put forth every secret they had and utilized every connection and trick, desperately lunging for their chance!

Between the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace, it wasn't just a competition of talent and strength; it was also a contest of methods and plans. It was just like the harem of a mortal emperor. The competition between the 3000 concubines was bloody and cruel.

However, as the first of the four halls, the disciples of Phoenix Hall didn't need to participate in the competition; they easily obtained the smelting trial qualifications that all the disciples of the different halls longed for in their dreams. This was the advantage of being a Phoenix Hall disciple. However, it was actually ten times more difficult to become a Phoenix Hall disciple than to obtain the qualifications for the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial.

Before the smelting trial began, a spirit boat flew high above the skies of Phoenix Cry Palace. In truth, this could not be called a spirit boat but rather a spirit ship. The ship was tens of thousands of feet long and was thousands of feet high. It could easily accommodate hundreds of thousands of disciples.

"All trial disciples enter the spirit ship!"

A Divine Lord realm powerhouse floated in the sky, pouring true essence into his voice. His voice spread far over the entire planet that was Phoenix Cry Palace.

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes and looked at the sky. What a coincidence. This Divine Lord Elder was exactly the Vice Palace Master of Phoenix Hall, the smiling old man that had received Lin Ming into Phoenix Hall.

Although this person was Sage Jiuyang's person, he hadn't created any difficulties for Lin Ming when he entered Phoenix Hall. Lin Ming's impression toward him wasn't good or bad.

Disciples flew into the sky like a swarm of flies, 7000-8000 people in total. Of these people, the disciples of Phoenix Hall accounted for less than 10%, the disciples of Vermillion Bird Hall accounted for 80%, and the disciples of Golden Crow Hall and Firebird Hall filled in the rest. Golden Crow Hall and Firebird Hall had around a thousand participants. In order to cull these 1000 people from the hundreds of thousands of disciples, the competition had been brutal and cutthroat.

As these 7000-8000 disciples flew into the spirit ship, it wasn't crowded at all. Instead, it was extremely spacious.

Old Man Sun floated high above the spirit ship, taking count of everyone.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, haha, aren't you Junior-apprentice Brother Lin? I'm Protector Liu, the one who will be leading you this time. During this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial you must bring honor to our Phoenix Cry palace. At this Atlas World, there are a total of three Ancient Phoenix Clan branch palaces that will join in; they're our Phoenix Cry Palace, Praying Phoenix Palace, and Charming Phoenix Palace. The three palaces will gather at the same area where the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial is held. In these past years, our Phoenix Cry Palace hasn't really been too outstanding amongst the three palaces. The older generation has Junior-apprentice Brother White Daohong to support them, but for the younger disciples there isn't anyone at all. They're in a miserable state!"

Lin Ming had just stepped onto the spirit ship when someone recognized him. The one who spoke was Protector Liu, the one who would be leading the batch of younger disciples. Protector Liu's cultivation was at the late Divine Transformation realm. Although his strength far surpassed Lin Ming's, his expression was still polite as he spoke to him. This was the respect earned by talent. So long as Lin Ming didn't perish midway, it was already an assured matter that he'd become a Divine Lord in the future. A Divine Lord realm powerhouse was rare even in the massive Phoenix Cry Palace.

“Protector Liu,” Lin Ming greeted in return. As for Atlas World, he had already read through the jade slips that Jiang Ziji left behind detailing the various influences of the Divine Realm and he also read through some ancient texts of Phoenix Cry Palace, gaining an approximate understanding of the Divine Realm.

The Divine Realm had 3000 great worlds that were called primary worlds. There were also countless medium and small worlds. Of course, these were only small worlds in comparison to the primary worlds. In truth, these small worlds were all as large as the world the Sky Spill Continent was on, if not larger.

Atlas World was one of the Divine Realm’s 3000 great worlds. The world was vast to the point that it was nearly immeasurable. This world held three of the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s branch palaces, and the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial was also held here.

After Protector Liu called out to Lin Ming, many disciples turned to look at him. Lin Ming’s name was currently at the height of fame within Phoenix Cry Palace. It wasn’t just because he had taken the Phoenix Blood Spear, but also because he defeated the four layered heavens Ninefall Huo Yanguang with only a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation. Moreover, news spread that Lin Ming had also inherited the old Palace Master’s source strength from Saint Artifact Pavilion. This was treatment that only the highest disciples of Phoenix Hall could hope to receive. It was rare for this type of genius to emerge even in a hundred years.

At this moment, streaks of light appeared on the horizon, shooting forwards at an extreme speed. There were only around 20 some people, but as these people appeared, all the arrogant and proud talents instantly changed their expressions. Even Protector Liu straightened up, appearing much more respectful than before.

“Is that Senior-apprentice Brother White and the others?”

“Elder senior-apprentice brother has finally come.”

The 20 some people were not random people but the Ninefall Divine Transformation realm powerhouses of Phoenix Hall, and the one leading them was the number one disciple of Phoenix Cry Palace, White Daohong.

Phoenix Hall had a total of 29 Ninefall powerhouses, and most of them were Divine Transformation realm martial artists. There were a few Ninefall Divine Sea martial artists, and as for Ninefall Life Destruction martial artists, Huo Yanguang was the only one.

These 20 some people had an extremely high and lofty status within Phoenix Hall. They served as the core of Phoenix Hall and their status was much higher than the Hall Protectors. There were even some outer court Elders that treated them with respect, especially White Daohong. White Daohong was a character who would one day become a Vice Palace Master. That was a status that a common Elder could not compare with.

"So that's White Daohong. His background is indeed deep." Lin Ming looked up to see White Daohong. White Daohong was wearing white clothing and his eyebrows slanted upward like swords. His temperament was otherworldly, as if he were unpolluted by the world.

As Lin Ming looked at him, he could feel something peculiar about him. The heaven and earth origin around him seemed to be in harmony with him. This was something that would happen when one's destiny reached an extremely high boundary. They would become one with the world, forming a phenomenon where the world would resonate with them as though they were a sovereign king of the heavens and earth.

According to Fairy Feng's opinion, if White Daohong relied on only his current achievements, he'd become only the weakest and most inferior of Vice Palace Masters in the future. This was in a situation where he didn't experience some fortuitous encounter. But in truth, a genius like this was highly likely to have many great lucky chances awaiting them. If he managed to experience another great lucky chance after becoming a Divine Lord, it was possible he would become a top ranking figure like Fairy Feng or Sage Jiuyang. At that time, he would be only a step away from being a Palace Master.

For those like White Daohong, it wasn't easy for them to perish. His strength, mentality, and destiny defied common sense, and even if he entered a danger zone where death was a near certainty, it was highly likely he would escape through the heavens and even obtain some benefits.

"Elder Sun," White Daohong greeted Elder Sun. His eyes swept over the new disciples. He stopped on Lin Ming for a brief moment before continuing.

"Haha, Apprentice Nephew White, isn't your 120th birthday arriving soon? This will be your last Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. Do you think you can obtain first place?" Elder Sun nodded, smiling and laughing. In terms of status and identity, he was under White Daohong.

"Perhaps not. Charming Phoenix Palace's Lu Xiaoyuan is 10 years younger than me. Although she was inferior to me in the past, she has actually managed to catch up already. After her senior-apprentice sister reached 120 years of age, she became the new chief disciple of Charming Phoenix Palace." White Daohong casually said.

Although he had taken first place among the older disciples twice in the past, both times had been very tough on him. He had experienced fierce competition and only managed to win with a slight advantage both times.

"Everyone is here. We're embarking!"

Once Elder Sun finished taking count of everyone, the spirit ship shot up into the sky!

The several tens of thousands of feet long ship was like an ancient vicious beast. It's velocity rapidly rose to a terrifying degree. Behind it, the massive buildings of Phoenix Cry Palace shrank until they disappeared from sight altogether. Soon, the entire planet Phoenix Cry Palace was located on was also cast off.

Chapter 989 – Fire Spirit Star

Chapter 989 – Fire Spirit Star

…

…

…

Bang!

The spirit ship broke through the barriers of the great dimension that Phoenix Cry Palace was located within and arrived in the primary Atlas World. The spirit ship crossed through space and activated the great void shift.

In order to travel through a primary world of the Divine Realm, one had to use the great void shift. If they didn't, it'd take tens of thousands of years or even hundreds of millions of years to fly from one end to another.

The spirit ship flew higher and higher. Quickly, the primary world's hundred thousand feet high mountains and hundred mile wide rivers turned vague, shrinking to little particles of dust. Even so, the primary world's main continent was still endlessly broad. The size of a primary world was difficult to measure even when using trillions of miles as a unit.

Lin Ming stood at a porthole and watched the endless void within the heavens of Atlas World, deeply shocked. Although he had already looked through jade slips for a brief introduction of the Divine Realm, he was still shocked by its vastness as he witnessed it with his own eyes!

The great worlds of the Divine Realm not only included the primary world, but also the greater space that surrounded it as well as the countless celestial bodies in this space.

Before, when the spirit ship underwent a great void shift just now, they had already traveled a trillion miles from the continent they were previously at. Along the way, Lin Ming saw almost limitless tiny shining spots in the sky, each spot representing a celestial star.

In the universe, every celestial star represented a celestial body, coming in nearly infinite forms and shapes.

These celestial stars were large and small. Some were blazing fire stars, some were massive planets, some were giant meteors, and some were even black holes that were known as the closest existence in the universe to grandmist energy.

There were countless celestial stars, and most of them had extremely poor environments with nearly no heaven and earth origin. These were desolate stars, unsuited for the survival of mortals or martial artists.

But there were some celestial stars with had rich heaven and earth origin energy and were full of life, vibrant, with many mortals living on them. The resources they had couldn't compare with those on the primary world, but they were far superior to those of the lower realms. Amid these stars, Divine Sea masters, Divine Transformation masters, and even Divine Lord masters would emerge.

There were even some stars that were developed by martial artists as their personal territories or abodes. These martial artists were often supreme elders of the Divine Realm. They kept themselves secluded from the world. But once they appeared, they would frighten an entire area.

Whether it was ancient or current times, the stars that existed in the skies of a Divine Realm primary world always had martial artists living on them and powerhouses with their own hidden abodes. Naturally, there were countless lucky chances that were passed down through time. On these stars, there were an immeasurable number of rare treasures to obtain. There were caves of ancient vicious beasts and even hidden lairs of God Beasts. If one could fully explore these stars, the wealth they would find would be endless!

Of course, even if a late Divine Lord realm powerhouse were to spend their entire life exploring these stars, they wouldn't even manage to visit 1/100,000 of them.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, are you enjoying the scenery? Come on, this journey will last for 20-30 hours. Let's go to the dining hall and get something to eat." A tall man walked over to Lin Ming. He was Protector Liu who was responsible for the rookie disciples.

Once a martial artist reached Lin Ming's boundary, they could ward off hunger forever by absorbing heaven and earth origin energy for sustenance. Still, eating good meals brought about enjoyment and pleasure, and the food of Phoenix Cry Palace was made from refined heavenly materials. Eating this type of food was very beneficial to a martial artist's cultivation.

As they walked to the dining room, many people recognized Lin Ming along the way. They looked at him with a great deal of respect etched into their expressions, and some even made way for him to pass through. This was proof that Lin Ming's prestige in Phoenix Cry Palace was already firmly established.

The world was like this. If a person suddenly had a great accomplishment, they would often incur the envy and exclusion of others. These jealous people might think that this person's successes were only due to luck, and some people would even want to wrest away his achievements. But if that person were to have an even greater accomplishment once again, then that'd be proof they had strength others could not rival. The other envious people would slowly shut up and their envy would be replaced by respect and awe instead.

Lin Ming defeating Huo Yanguang had undoubtedly consolidated his position.

Of course, there were no absolutes. There were still many people who imaged Lin Ming as their rival and took him as the goal they had to surpass in the future.

"Zhou Fei, the one who passed us just now was Lin Ming. He's the person in Phoenix Hall with the greatest limelight right now. Compared to him, we still have a long way to go." After Lin Ming walked by, a blue robed man spoke to a man in red armor.

“A long way? Yes, that’s right, the road I want to walk down is indeed long. But that is only the road to becoming a Palace Master or Holy Lord. As for Lin Ming, I will surpass him sooner or later. When I entered the sect, I only managed to enter into the lowest level Firebird Hall, but that is only because of my background. I’m not like that Lin Ming. I don’t have to latch onto the thigh of a Vice Palace master and have her recommend me to directly enter Phoenix Hall. If I want to enter Phoenix Hall, I can only do so by crossing the ninth stage of Life Destruction. Even with everything against me, I was still able to rely on my status as a Firebird Hall disciple to obtain first place amongst the rookie disciples in the qualification tournament!”

As the red armored man spoke, his eyes flashed with a confident light. He had just reached the eighth stage of Life Destruction.

The red armored man’s name was Zhou Fei. He came from common mortal origins and was a disciple of Firebird Hall. However, during the qualification tournament for the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, Zhou Fei won from all his rivals. As a Firebird Hall disciple, he defeated all the other rookie talents of Golden Crow Hall and Vermillion Bird Hall, and managed to obtain first place. He currently enjoyed a very great limelight.

However, what made Zhou Fei uncomfortable was that he thought he would soar into prominence this time and become the focus of the entire Phoenix Cry Palace. He thought that he’d be the next man of the hour after Lin Ming. That the Elders would realize they were blind to talent and would descend to Firebird Hall to wring their hands and praise him.

But reality was not what he expected. He only caused a great stir within Firebird Hall and Golden Crow Hall and the worship of many young disciples there. In the second highest ranking Vermillion Bird Hall, he attracted jealousy and exclusion, and many even insisted he had only been lucky.

As for the highest level Phoenix Hall, everyone there ignored him, no one was concerned about him from the start!

Compared to the limelight that Lin Ming had created, him winning first place in the qualifications tournament was like comparing a tiny wave in front of a vast sea. It was simply insignificant.

Even when he saw disciples of Phoenix Hall and greeted them, none of them had heard of him.

It was impossible for him to reconcile with this! He procured such a great achievement, so where was the honor and glory he deserved?

As he thought this over, Zhou Fei could only come up with a single explanation. The disciple of Phoenix Hall always kept a mentality of being high above others from the start and simply looked down at everyone from the Firebird Hall, Golden Crow Hall, and Vermillion Bird Hall. They must think that all other disciples were nothing but grasshoppers and ants, and even someone who obtained first place would just be a slightly larger ant.

This sort of contempt caused a fire to rage in Zhou Fei's heart!

"Humph, you lot think that us disciples of the three halls are nothing but ants, but what you don't know is that common mortal talents like me simply don't have the chance to enter Phoenix Hall if we don't reach the ninth stage of Life Destruction. But even so, I am far stronger than most of you!"

Zhou Fei took a deep breath, clenching his fists together. He planned to amaze the world in a single feat during this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. He believed that with such a result, the high-level figures of Phoenix Cry palace would finally take him seriously and give him the attention he deserved. He would become the focus of all eyes!

Lin Ming naturally didn't know he had become the goal that many people were chasing after. As he was eating, the spirit ship underwent the great void shift again and again, shifting dozens of times over.

Finally, the spirit ship came to a stop in front of a flaming red star. From afar, this fire star seemed extremely serene. It was only that the surface of this star was covered with red spots, as if it were the texture of wood. Surrounding this planet was also a massive ring. This ring stretched out for millions of miles, passing through the skies like a beautiful and endless rainbow.

This was the location of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial–Fire Spirit Star.

This star was only several hundred thousand miles in diameter–it was far smaller than the planet the Sky Spill Continent was on. As the spirit ship entered the atmosphere of Fire Spirit Star, it began to collide with the atmosphere and the fierce friction resulted in endless flames.

Within the atmosphere of Fire Spirit Star, there were terrifying vortexes of fire origin energy everywhere. Strong winds of fire origin energy traveled at thousands of miles per second, ten times the speed of sound. It was more accurate to say that instead of winds, these were actually shock waves. If a mortal were to be hit by such a breeze, they'd be smashed to death.

Even a martial artist couldn't withstand such an impact. This was because what these shock waves blew was not air but extremely wild fire origin energy. Although Fire Spirit Star looked tranquil from the outside, if one looked carefully, they could discover just how terrifying it truly was. Those beautiful red spots one could see from afar were actually formed by the strong winds.

In such a dangerous and brutal environment, it was impossible for any kind of life to form. This was why Fire Spirit Star was classified as a desolate star. Even so, to a high level martial artist, it was actually an excellent smelting trial location.

This Fire Spirit Star was considered the territory of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. The Ancient Phoenix Clan had built many smelting trial locations within it.

"We've arrived. Everyone, disembark the spirit ship!"

Elder Sun yelled out as the leader of the troop.

“Hehe, let’s go Junior-apprentice Brother Lin. Fire Spirit Star isn’t a place to have fun. You should be careful…” Protector Liu who was responsible for the rookie disciple grinned as he spoke. But just as his voice faded, there were two miserable screams that echoed out. Two rookie disciples of Firebird Hall had their protective true essence blown apart by the strong heavenly winds. They were sent flying backwards by the impact force. Savage and wild fire origin energy broke into their meridians, causing them to vomit a mouthful of blood!

Several Protectors immediately flew out to catch them. One Protector expanded his protective true essence to cover them and another Protector injected true essence into their bodies. Only then were the two disciples able to catch their breath.

Elder Sun’s eyes turned chilling. He coldly said, :”What a bunch of pathetic fools. Although I didn’t warn you about the dangers of Fire Spirit Star, you should have sensed just how harsh the environment here was while on the spirit ship. Even so, you casually walked out. I really don’t know how such idiots managed to pass the qualification test. If people like you two entered into a mystic realm to hunt for treasures with others, the best you’ll ever accomplish is being cannon fodder for others, let alone obtaining benefits or lucky chances. Once you leave Firebird Hall, you will likely perish on your road of martial arts. Forget trying to cultivate to higher boundaries. You are both utter disappointments!”

Elder Sun intentionally didn’t warn the junior disciples about the dangers of Fire Spirit Star because he wanted to test their powers of observation. The result was that they really were idiots.

The two disciples had already suffered enough misery. After being publicly reprimanded by Elder Sun, their complexions turned white.

“These two idiots really disgrace Firebird Hall. I can’t believe that I’m stuck in the same hall with them.” Zhou Fei frowned. He was ashamed in his heart that he was in the same group as these people.

“Haha, they truly are disgraces. But for the lower cultivation disciples, even if they know about the strong heavenly winds of Fire Spirit Star beforehand, it’s still difficult to withstand even if they put forth their full strength. This is why Phoenix Cry Palace has such a rigorous qualification competition that removes over 99% of the disciples. Just watch, many disciples won’t even be able to stand above Fire Spirit Star.” The blue-clothed man that accompanied Zhou Fei casually said.

Chapter 990 – Hell of Fire

Chapter 990 – Hell of Fire

…

…

…

As the blue-clothed man spoke, several Firebird Hall disciples carefully flew out from range of the spirit ship's protective array formation. They desperately urged their protective true essence to the limit, but in the violent fire origin energy, their protective true essence shook and creaked, seeming like a bubble that could burst apart at any moment.

They all had Life Destruction realm cultivations; there was not a single Divine Sea martial artist among them.

This was because besides Phoenix Hall, all three other halls only had rookie disciples attending the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. The senior disciples no longer had any value in raising, and all junior disciples were required to be younger than 33. In the Divine Realm, a martial artist could be considered the cream of the crop if they could cultivate to the early Divine Sea by the age of 33. In Phoenix Cry Palace, nearly all of these disciples were gathered at Phoenix Hall. All other hall disciples were at the eighth stage of Life Destruction or below.

In fact, most Firebird Hall disciples didn't even have the ability to step into the eighth stage of Life Destruction; it was already excellent if they stepped into the Divine Sea with a seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation. If they didn't have some great lucky chance, it'd simply be impossible for them to reach Divine Transformation. However, the Firebird Hall disciples that were here all passed the qualification test and they could be considered the highest percentile of the elites. It wouldn't be an issue for them to reach the eighth stage of Life Destruction, but they were still far from reaching the ninth stage.

Elder Sun frowned as he saw these junior disciples that couldn't even stand steady. In this state, they could barely survive on Fire Spirit Star, so how could they possibly gain experience?

This time it wasn't just disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace that had come to gain experience, but also those from Praying Phoenix Palace and Charming Phoenix Palace. If the disciples in a group performed poorly, the leader would also lose a great deal of face. Elder Sun would inevitably be ridiculed by his old friends at Praying Phoenix Palace and Charming Phoenix Palace.

Afterward, disciples of Golden Crow Hall and Vermillion Bird Hall began to leave the spirit ship one after another. The Golden Crow Hall disciples weren't much stronger than those of Firebird Hall. Most of them barely made it through the qualifications test after experiencing the fierce competition.

As for Vermillion Bird Hall, they had many masters. These were the outstanding individuals of Vermillion Bird Hall and they easily passed the qualification test. In terms of quality they were only inferior to the disciples of Phoenix Hall. They flew into the strong heavenly wind. Although their protective true essence violently fluctuated, their postures were still stable. The strong heavenly wind didn't impact their bodies in the least. This signified that their foundations were far superior to those of Firebird Hall.

However, Elder Sun's face was still ugly. In his eyes, these people barely passed and would only complete the lowest level content in the smelting trial. They were all disgraces!

This was until a red armored young man flew into the strong heavenly wind of fire origin energy. His body was like a fish as he casually flew through the skies without any hindrance. All of the fire origin energy heavenly wind blew around his body and was instantly deflected by his formidable protective true essence, unable to approach four feet near him.

Elder Sun's eyebrows arched up. He looked at the red armored youth for a brief moment, then asked, "Who's that?"

“Reporting to Vice Palace Master Sun, that person is named Zhou Fei. He comes from Firebird Hall and obtained first place in the smelting trial qualifications competition!”

“Oh? Someone from Firebird Hall can actually obtain first place in the smelting trial qualification test? Not bad. With this ability he is eligible to enter Phoenix Hall.” Elder Sun slowly nodded, exposing the tiniest of rare smiles.

For a time, Zhou Fei was the focus of everyone’s attention. Many Phoenix Hall disciples also asked where he came from. To Zhou Fei, this was an extremely enjoyable feeling. As he turned to look back at the disciples of Phoenix Hall, wanting to see just what degree of excellence they could achieve.

“That boy’s quite the crazy one. His eyes are telling me he wants to compare with us. Hey little eighth stage Life Destruction brat, you’re still far from capable.”

An early Divine Sea junior disciple faintly smiled. Only Phoenix Hall had Divine Sea junior disciples.

“Come on, let’s go.”

Several Divine Sea disciples flew off the spirit ship.

Hu! Hu! Hu!

A savage and violent fire origin energy heavenly wind blew against them. Several Divine Sea realm disciples suddenly condensed their protective true essence, forming a protective barrier. The turbulent heavenly wind violently clashed with the protective barrier and was bounced back, colliding with the incoming heavenly wind. This caused all the strong heavenly wind to be unable to approach within five feet of them.

A five feet distance was superior to Zhou Fei’s four feet distance.

However, these people were older than Zhou Fei. The disparity in comparing a Divine Sea martial artist and an eighth stage Life Destruction martial artist was obvious. This proved that the talent of these Divine Sea martial artists was inferior to Zhou Fei's.

Zhou Fei faintly smiled. His eyes turned to the others. Those people weren't able to qualify as rivals in his eyes. He waited to see if there were any fiercer disciples from Phoenix Hall.

After the Divine Sea realm disciples passed, several more Phoenix Hall disciples followed after them. They also had decent performances. They were able to reflect the fire origin energy heavenly wind of Fire Spirit Star several feet away, but even though their performance was better than Zhou Fei, they were also older than him. If they were the same age as Zhou Fei, they would've been faintly inferior to him.

Zhou Fei's smile became increasingly bright. At this time, Zhou Fei's eyebrows shot up.

"Mm? Huo Yanguang! Good, I want to see just how far you can deflect this fire origin energy heavenly wind!"

Zhou Fei wanted to use Huo Yanguang to estimate Lin Ming's strength. When Lin Ming fought Huo Yanguang the battle didn't last long, but Lin Ming still used his full strength to defeat Huo Yanguang. If he could understand Huo Yanguang's strength, then he could also understand Lin Ming's strength.

From above the spirit ship, a red haired man silently flew down. His expression was indifferent and he was casually floating down, but wherever he went, all of the fire origin energy would be sliced apart by his protective true essence, forming beautiful patterns like ripples in water.

Huo Yanguang didn't even use his protective true essence to deflect the strong heavenly wind. In his mind, there was simply no meaning to this. With his four layered heavens ninth stage Life Destruction cultivation, he had lost to Lin Ming. If he competed with these martial artists who were competing with all their effort to see who could deflect the heavenly wind further, wouldn't he just be a joke?

In Phoenix Hall, his only rival was Lin Ming. He simply didn't have any interest in competing with anyone else.

In fact, after losing to Lin Ming, Huo Yanguang became a completely different person. He no longer attended any meetings with the juniors of other noble families, but spent most of his time in seclusion, diligently cultivating, withdrawn and indifferent to everything else. Originally, Huo Yanguang should've been punished by his family clan due to the seriousness of his loss, and the resources he owed were impossible for him to pay off by himself. However, his uncle had taken responsibility for his loss and had received the blame in his stead. His uncle was willing to repay the phoenix plume blood for him, but Huo Yanguang had rejected his good intentions. His uncle even wanted to compensate him with some high-grade saint artifacts but this was also similarly rejected. To Huo Yanguang's uncle, several high-grade saint artifacts wasn't considered anything at all.

This was because Huo Yanguang wanted to depend on himself to repay his own debt.

From start to finish, Huo Yanguang only diverted the heavenly wind around him, appearing extremely calm and natural the entire time. Although this seemed simple, the truth was that it wasn't simple at all. Just this calmness was something the average person could not hope to achieve.

Huo Yanguang arrived like this in the crowd of people, his expression staying indifferent throughout.

“This Huo Yanguang is indeed formidable. He didn't even drive his protective true essence and yet he could descend so calmly.” Zhou Fei took a deep breath. He was not afraid of a strong rival, because the stronger a rival was, the more it would arouse his fighting spirit.

Zhou Fei's eyes turned to Lin Ming. He wanted to see just what Lin Ming would do.

But before Lin Ming could fly down, several white-clothed men flew down from the spirit ship, laughing and conversing with each other. These people were all Ninefall Divine Transformation disciples that were led by White Daohong. They were the most outstanding individuals of Phoenix Hall and were characters that would at least become an Elder in the future.

These people didn't even raise their protective true essence nor did they reflect the strong heavenly wind. Instead, they flew directly into it. As the fire origin energy heavenly wind blew onto their bodies, this heavenly wind was actually absorbed by them!

Especially White Daohong. Around him, all of the originally crazy and violent fire origin energy suddenly became gentle and submissive. There was even a faint feeling of the energy around him worshipping him. This scene shocked all the surrounding disciples!

Things could even be done this way!?

The Phoenix Hall disciples had been comparing with Zhou Fei to see who could deflect the strong heavenly wind further. But now, compared with White Daohong, it seemed that all of their actions were as laughable as children trying to compete with an adult.

"Senior-apprentice Brother White Daohong can actually reach such a degree!"

"This is too fierce. The violent fire origin energy heavenly wind that is fatal to us, is actually like ordinary fire origin energy to them. They can even absorb it into their bodies. Just how high has their comprehension of the Fire Laws reached?"

"The difference is too great!"

The surrounding disciples from the four halls looked at White Daohong with awe and reverence in their hearts. To them, this fire origin energy heavenly wind was the same as lava to a common mortal. They had to carefully avoid it. But White Daohong was able to directly bathe in the lava; they were on two different levels altogether.

Even Lin Ming was staring intently towards White Daohong. In his field of vision, White Daohong had already disappeared. What he was paying attention to was the points where the fire origin energy heavenly wind flowed and changed. Every single line produced a clear image that reflected in Lin Ming's immense spiritual sea whereupon it was carefully analyzed by him.

With his current perception along with the support of the saint artifact bracer, he was able to quickly discern the circulating laws of the fire origin energy from their patterns.

"This is the Concept of Creation, the reverse side of the Concept of Annihilation. They use the Concept of Creation to resolve the destructive power of the fire origin energy and diminish it, converting it to a gently fire energy they can absorb. To think that you can actually use the Concept of Creation like this!"

In that moment, Lin Ming could feel the thoughts of Concept of Creation that were lingering in his mind for the past six months suddenly touch upon something, as if he had spontaneously been enlightened on a truth.

After contemplating on the jade slip left behind by Fairy Feng and accumulating a massive amount of understandings, the final finishing touch was added on today as he suddenly obtained mastery. Lin Ming could feel at that moment he comprehended a trace of the Concept of Creation's essence. He impatiently wanted to take advantage of this time to verify his own comprehensions.

His figure moved and he flew off the spirit ship. He didn't summon his protective true essence at all, and only relied on his mortal body to rush into that turbulent fire origin energy heavenly wind.

"What is Lin Ming planning on doing? He hasn't used any protective true essence at all? Does he want to be the same as Senior-apprentice Brother White?" Several junior disciples were dumbfounded by this scene.

Chapter 991 – Origin Energy Impact

Chapter 991 – Origin Energy Impact

…

…

…

“Lin Ming doesn’t want to use his protective true essence to defend himself. He wants to use his body to absorb that strong fire origin energy heavenly wind!”

“He’s too reckless! The reason that Senior-apprentice Brother White Daohong can achieve this is not just because of his comprehension of Laws, but moreover because of his extraordinary cultivation. Junior-apprentice Brother Lin is only at the sixth stage of Life Destruction; it’ll be far too difficult for him at this level. If he can’t accomplish it, then the heavenly winds can easily severely wound him. Moreover, Junior-apprentice Brother Lin’s comprehension of Laws is far too lacking. In that regard he can’t even compare with Huo Yanguang!” a Phoenix Hall Divine Sea disciple said. He could feel that Lin Ming’s understanding into the Concept of Creation wasn’t particularly deep.

“Of course he can’t. Huo Yanguang’s Concept of Creation was able to form the Blue Lotus Domain; that is the manifestation of having reached large success in the Concept of Creation. Lin Ming can’t do this. He should’ve just barely caught a hint of the Concept of Creation. If he continues on his current path, he is simply seeking death.” The one who spoke was Zhou Fei. Although it was impossible for him to do the same as White Daohong, he still partly understood how White Daohong was capable of such a feat. In his opinion, with Lin Ming’s cultivation and current comprehension of Concepts, wanting to do the same was nothing but a fanciful dream.

In truth, Lin Ming's Concept of Creation truly was far inferior to Huo Yanguang. This was also a matter of course. Lin Ming only touched upon the Concept of Creation for half a year now, and even though he opened the Gate of Opening, his perception was greatly enhanced, and he also had the Heretical God Sprout supporting him, half a year's worth of comprehension was just far too little. There was just no way for him to compare with Huo Yanguang who had begun perceiving the Concept of Fire since birth.

Lin Ming had the jade slip left behind by Fairy Feng, but the jade slips that Huo Yanguang used were even better. The Huo Family Clan already existed for countless tens of thousands of years and Huo Yanguang's talent wasn't poor to begin with.

As for comprehending the Blue Lotus Domain, it required one to accumulate an even greater comprehension before there was the possibility of doing so. A domain class ability was not some cabbage lying around waiting to be picked up by just anyone. Even an unrivalled genius wouldn't be able to comprehend it just because they wanted to.

"This little fellow has some guts." Elder Sun chuckled. He didn't believe Lin Ming could succeed. His cultivation was at Life Destruction whereas White Daohong was a Divine Transformation realm master. For White Daohong to be able to directly absorb the fire origin energy heavenly winds, it was unknown just how long he had to learn and comprehend in order to reach this step. No matter how talented Lin Ming was, it was impossible for him to do the same at his age. "Hehe, this little fellow dual cultivates in body and energy. He won't die if he's struck by the heavenly wind. At most he'll have some minor wounds. Having him eat a small loss will be beneficial to his future."

Elder Sun thought this and decided not to step in. In the skies, White Daohong also stopped to turn toward Lin Ming, a faint smile playing on his lips.

"This Junior-apprentice Brother Lin is quite interesting. I've come to Fire Spirit Star many times now but I've only seen one other junior disciple attempt this. That person was Charming Phoenix Palace's Lu Xiaoyun, and her talent is even greater than mine. Even then, Lu Xiaoyun was barely able to reach this step. She couldn't last for long, and she was also 32 years old at the time, nearly surpassing the limits for being a junior disciple. At the time, her cultivation reached the peak of the Early Divine Sea and she had nearly stepped into the middle Divine Sea realm. That sort of cultivation is absolutely not what Lin Ming can compare with. When she crossed the ninth stage of Life Destruction she gathered a seven layered heavens 21 mile origin energy cloud. Compared to her, I can only be ashamed at my own inferiority."

"Haha, Senior-apprentice Brother White is too humble. Senior-apprentice Brother White's great lucky chance was encountered within the Divine Sea realm. If you had managed to do so during Life Destruction, perhaps Senior-apprentice Brother might've been able to cross Ninefall with an eight layered heavens 24 mile origin energy cloud. On this point alone, fate was truly unfair to Senior-apprentice Brother White!" The several Divine Transformation realm disciples said from next to White Daohong.

"The lucky chance I encountered during the Divine Sea realm might not be something that Lu Xiaoyun could find. Usually, once you are cast behind by an extreme talent, it will be far too difficult to ever hope of overtaking them again, even if you put forth ten times the effort." White Daohong took a deep breath, his words very modest.

The higher his realm of experience at cultivation, the more he came into contact with the other extreme geniuses of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's 72 palaces and 3 great family clans. He had to compete with them and he even had to compete with the direct disciples of other Holy Lands. Because of this, a feeling of awe and respect was born in his heart. The Divine Realm was simply too vast. In this universe there was no limit–there was always a higher mountain and a stronger person.

As White Daohong spoke, Lin Ming had already rushed into the fire origin energy heavenly winds. He didn't rely on his protective true essence nor his defensive vestments, instead directly resisting the impact of the heavenly winds.

Peng!

Lin Ming could feel a shaking at his chest as if he had struck a large mountain. The supersonic air current wasn't able to damage him, but this was not an air current but a violently raging fire origin energy!

In that moment, a gargantuan amount of wild and brutal fire origin energy recklessly flushed into Lin Ming's meridians like a stampede of beasts, wantonly destroying whatever they could touch.

Lin Ming vigilantly guarded his spiritual sea. At that time, the nearly gold grandmist battle spirit shot out, turning into a flow of silver gray energy that fused together with his soul force and flooded into the tyrannical fire origin energy. His soul force began utilizing the Concept of Creation to change the composition of the fire origin energy.

After Annihilation was Creation.

The strong fire origin energy heavenly winds was the ultimate representation of the Laws of Annihilation. Under the effects of Lin Ming's thoughts, threads of this wild energy began turning into plumes of blue energy, the same color as a blue lotus.

Unfortunately, before Lin Ming was even able to transform 10% of the tyrannical fire origin energy that broke into his body, an amount of fire origin energy several times greater than before flushed into his meridians. It was like a flood erupted within him, unstoppable!

With Lin Ming's rate of conversion, it was simply impossible for him to transform all this fire origin energy; the amount he managed was only a drop in the bucket. As he saw his meridians about to be ruined by the violet fire origin energy, Lin Ming's soul force suddenly condensed.

Heretical God Sprout!

Bang!

Within Lin Ming's dantian, the energy hidden within the Heretical God Sprout burst out. The two fire leaves stretched out as far as they could. In particular the second fire leaf that was shaped like an imperial jade seal. That was the fire leaf Lin Ming had formed during the test within Saint Artifact Pavilion, after he had swallowed the condensed Law fragments left behind in the stone tablet by the 26th Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Xiao Daoji.

What sort of boundary had Xiao Daoji reached? He was not the Palace Master of Phoenix Cry Palace, but the Patriarch of the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan. Even amongst the past Patriarchs, he managed to stand out! Although he had only left behind fragments of the Great Dao Laws, those fragments were not something ordinary disciples could comprehend.

By using the Heretical God Sprout, Lin Ming had been able to swallow them.

With the suppressive absorbing power of the Heretical God Sprout, the power behind the incomparably wild fire origin energy was reduced by half.

“Mm? Three breaths of time.” Elder Sun was shocked. He didn’t think Lin Ming would be able to last for even a single breath of time. But now, not only had Lin Ming lasted for three breaths of time but the only consequence was that his face had flushed red a little.

Four breaths of time!

Even White Daohong’s complexion changed now.

Five breaths of time, six breaths of time…

White Daohong became more and more bewildered. At the seventh breath, Lin Ming was finally unable to withstand the strong heavenly winds. His body was struck backward by the crazy and powerful fire origin energy and he smashed against the hull of the spirit ship at supersonic speed.

But to Lin Ming who trained in the body transformation system, an impact of such a degree wasn’t anything at all. Parts of his meridians were scorched a bit by the fire origin energy. After all, the Law fragments swallowed by the Heretical God Sprout weren’t Lin

Ming's own comprehensions; his own comprehension of the Concept of Creation was still far too lacking.

Chapter 992 – Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron

Chapter 992 – Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron

…

…

…

"Huhk!"

Lin Ming harshly coughed as he stood up on the spirit ship's hull, his complexion was pale. He used his senses to quickly investigate his body and discovered that he didn't have any serious wounds. With his regenerative power and some pills, he would be able to restore himself to normal condition in a quarter hour.

Although he had failed in his attempt a moment ago, Lin Ming actually gained a great deal of harvests. His comprehension of the Concept of Creation had deepened, and he could faintly feel that converting the destructive fire energy into blue energy was the elementary form of the Blue Lotus Domain.

In the end, he would have to understand Laws on his own in order to form the most solid foundation. Although the Heretical God Sprout was able to swallow the fragments of Fire Laws, Lin Ming was only able to passively use what it absorbed; he wasn't able to perceive the truths behind it. This was just like giving Li Ming a good crossbow. Although he could use it, he wouldn't be able to create his own. In the future, if he needed a more formidable crossbow, it would be impossible for him to make his own. This was because he never understood the principles behind it from the beginning.

On the road of martial arts, he had to lay down the most stable foundation he could. Otherwise, more and more weaknesses would appear the further he went.

Lin Ming took out a pill from his spatial ring and swallowed it. He sat down and began to control his breathing.

In the skies, White Daohong and Elder Sun glanced at each other, surprise in their eyes.

“With a sixth stage Life Destruction cultivation, he was actually able to persist in the heavenly winds of Fire Spirit Star for six breaths of time!”

White Daohong recalled Lu Xiaoyun’s strength when she was at the sixth and seventh stage of Life Destruction. She absolutely could not achieve this point. “Strange. This Junior-apprentice Brother Lin’s comprehension of Fire Laws is far inferior to Lu Xiaoyun’s when she was at the same boundary, so how was he able to accomplish what she couldn’t?”

When Lu Xiaoyun was at the sixth stage of Life Destruction, her comprehension of the Creation Laws had reached perfection and she had already been able to form a Blue Lotus Domain. She even began to trace upon the fourth level Concept of the Fire Laws. That was an accomplishment Lin Ming could not compare with at all.

White Daohong originally thought that Lin Ming would be miserably battered and knocked around by the heavenly winds, but he never imagined that he would actually persist for six breaths of time. That greatly exceeded all of his expectations.

Elder Sun said with a true essence sound transmission, “This child should’ve had some great lucky chance, but his comprehension of the Laws is too weak. The higher one’s boundary, the more important comprehension of the Laws become. As for what degree Lin Ming will grow to in the future, I still have no idea.”

White Daohong nodded. “If he cannot increase his comprehension of Laws, it’ll be difficult to break through realms in the future. But in terms of combat power on the same level, Junior-apprentice Brother Lin is invincible within Phoenix Cry Palace.”

As Elder Sun and White Daohong were exchanging sound transmissions, the other disciples were also whispering with each other.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Lin really failed but he did last for six breaths of time. That should be a good result, right?”

“Why would you think I know? This is my first time on Fire Spirit Star. How about you remove your own protective true essence and test if you want to see what six breaths of time means.”

“What a joke.” The previous disciple stiffened, clutching himself. He didn’t have the courage to remove his protective true essence and let that violent heavenly wind do with him as it wished.

These disciples simply didn’t know what it meant to last for six breaths of time in the strong heavenly wind and whether it was fierce or weak. However, some confident disciples were eager to test their own mettle and wanted to confirm their strength in comparison with Lin Ming.

At this moment, in the skies, a clarion phoenix cry echoed out.

Everyone looked up to see that in the highest heavens, a massive seven colored divine bird dived down. This seven colored divine bird had a wingspan of 100 miles and Fire Spirit Star’s strong heavenly wind was split apart by this divine bird’s wings like a fast boat through water. The terrifying aura and pressure immediately created a disturbance among all of the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace.

“What kind of bird is that!?” A Firebird Hall disciple cried out in shock.

“A seven colored divine bird with a 100 mile wingspan. Heavens! That is the first time I’ve ever seen such a massive divine bird. The deadly heavenly winds of Fire Spirit Star are nothing but ordinary wind to that bird. Could that bird be a phoenix!?” Another disciple cried out in alarm.

For the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace with a common mortal background, when had they ever seen such a massive divine bird before?

“Shut up you fool! You’re making a big deal out of nothing and shaming all of us! A phoenix is a God Beast, how could it possibly be tamed by humans? That is only a seven colored vermillion bird that was tamed by Charming Phoenix Palace. It’s nothing but a normal bird that was transformed with a single drop of phoenix coronet blood. Look at yourself, you really are a disgrace!”

Elder Sun’s complexion darkened as he saw the Firebird Hall disciples panicking.

He certainly was unhappy. The one time that he decided to lead the junior disciples to the Ancient Phoenix Smelting Trial, Charming Phoenix Palace actually brought out a seven colored vermillion bird to show off. The 100 mile wide seven colored vermillion bird was able to block out the skies with its wings. Compared to this overly large bird, the spirit ship they arrived on looked like a tiny little toy.

“It must be that old woman Chu Redcloud. She loves making big scenes like this.”

Elder Sun calmly looked up and saw the seven colored vermillion bird land not too far away in front of the Phoenix Cry Palace disciples. After it folded its wings together, its form shrank by a great deal; it only looked like a massive mountain peak that directly blocked the strong heavenly winds. This immediately caused the pressure of the heavenly wind that was pushing down on the disciples to weaken by half. The junior disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace felt their imposing aura suddenly weaken because of this.

A rainbow shot out from the back of the seven colored vermillion bird, forming an iridescent arc in the sky as it landed in front of the Phoenix Cry Palace disciples. Unexpectedly, a group of female disciples appeared, without a single male disciple among them.

Of these several hundred women, any one of them would be a beauty that could bring the downfall of nations. Charming Phoenix Palace was a palace that only took female disciples. The martial artists of the Ancient Phoenix Clan had outstanding talent, and these women all had rich bloodlines and their appearances and temperaments were both top class. Charming Phoenix Palace was a gathering land of beauties.

There were women with full and busty figures, women with slender figures, women that were cute, women that were graceful, women that were bewitching, and women that were as pure as snow. There were women of all sorts of flavors, but they were all beautiful. As these hundreds of women stood together chattering, the sounds of the voices were like spring bells. The visual impact of this scene was immense.

Even some male disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace where astonished. Phoenix Cry Palace was a palace where 80% of the disciples were male, so where would these disciples have ever seen such a scene?

As the female disciples of Charming Phoenix Palace saw the eyes of the male disciples widen, they were briefly startled before clicking their tongues and smiling. Their voices were pleasant on the ears, but this sound actually caused Elder Sun's complexion to turn increasingly ugly.

This was far too shameful!

"Oh, so the one leading the group was Vice Hall Master Sun Cyprestar?" A woman's voice drifted out. A beautiful woman dressed in red floated down in front of Elder Sun with a smile on her face.

"Humph, an old man like me doesn't have any status in Phoenix Cry Palace. All I can manage is to become the Vice Hall Master of Phoenix Hall; there's no chance of me advancing any further, so taking on these sorts of tasks is part of my duty. Chu Redcloud, I heard that you are about to enter the late Divine Lord realm, how come you're here messing around instead of being deep in seclusion? This Ancient Phoenix smelting trial will last for a year or two." From Sun Cyprestar's words, this Chu Redcloud woman seemed to be stronger than he was. But even so, Sun Cyprestar's words were actually filled with a mocking tone.

"Hohoho, isn't Vice Hall Master Sun being a bit to grumpy? When you wanted to buy the pentatic metal essence from me, I did raise the price a bit but we both agreed on it, right? You shouldn't have taken that to heart and still be brooding over it after all this time."

“What do you mean raising the price a bit? The price was over double what it should have been. And that pentatic metal essence should have been assigned to my Phoenix Cry Palace to begin with, but your Charming Phoenix Palace actually used some devious methods to obtain it. Don’t think I don’t know about it,” Sun Cyprestar said with a true essence sound transmission.

After being retorted by Sun Cyprestar, Chu Redcloud wasn’t annoyed at all. Instead, her flowery smile became even brighter and more dazzling. “Yes, there’s no point in not admitting it. But you should know that when resources are divided downward, those who have the ability to struggle for it will obtain them. If you failed to struggle for it, who else can you blame but yourself? Alas, I, Chu Redcloud, am not a stingy woman. The last time I gained some minor advantages from Vice Hall Master Sun, so this time I’ll actually give you a chance. As long as you can grasp it, then not only will you recover your losses but you’ll even make a fortune.”

“Stop with the act. How could someone like you have any good intentions? All you want to do is trick me and make me suffer.” Sun Cyprestar directly declined her offer, seemingly disinclined to even banter with her.

“Oh? Could it be that Vice Hall Master Sun isn’t interested in an arctic ice immortal stamen? I heard some rumors that you’ve been gathering materials to create a Phoenix Heart Pill, in order to create an opportunity to break through to the late Divine Lord realm. This arctic ice immortal stamen is one of the main medicinal ingredients for the Phoenix Heart Pill. Has Vice Hall Master Sun managed to obtain one yet?”

Chu Redcloud spoke in a casual manner but her tone contained a victorious feeling. The arctic ice immortal stamen was the most precious ingredient in refining the Phoenix Heart Pill and also the most difficult to obtain. She didn’t believe that her offer wouldn’t tempt Sun Cyprestar.

“What did you say? Arctic ice immortal stamen?” Sun Cyprestar’s eyes widened and his expression changed. He hadn’t been young for a long time and his chances of breaking into the late Divine Lord realm were near zero. This Phoenix Heart Pill was extremely important to him. Even if he knew Chu Redcloud was plotting against him, he had no choice but to jump into the pit and hope for the best. The temptation was simply far too great. To the current Sun Cyprestar, besides his life, everything else was inferior to refining the Phoenix Heart Pill.

“What do you want? Just say it!”

“Haha, simple. I want to bet with Vice Hall Master Sun about the results of this smelting trial. If your Phoenix Cry Palace’s disciples have better results than my Charming Phoenix Palace’s disciples, I shall offer you my arctic ice immortal stamen with both hands!”

“A bet on results!” Sun Cyprestar’s mind raced. Although he desperately needed the arctic ice immortal stamen, he wouldn’t easily agree to this sort of bet. He already suffered multiple losses to this women and was somewhat leery of her.

“Speak honestly. What do you want from an old man like me.”

“Hehe, Vice Hall Master Sun is indeed intelligent. If your Phoenix Cry Palace’s disciples lose, I want your pill furnace–the Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron!”

“What!?” Sun Cyprestar’s complexion immediately changed. The Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron was his life’s greatest lucky chance. He had managed to accidently obtain it on a treasure hunt within a mystic realm. Without this Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron, he would’ve never managed to reach the boundary he was at today. This Chu Redcloud actually wanted to take his lifeblood!

“Chu Redcloud, you are indeed the same as you’ve always been. A wolf will never stop eating meat! You are ruthless enough! As soon as you open your mouth, you actually want to take my life’s greatest wealth. Your plan is well played indeed!”

“Haha, I thank Vice Hall Master Sun for the great praise. But if I had to make a guess, I think that Vice Hall Master Sun hasn’t managed to obtain the arctic ice immortal stamen yet. And if so, then keeping the Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron around isn’t important anyways. I wonder, is Vice Hall Master Sun willing to make this bet with me or not?”

Chu Redcloud slyly smiled, a look in her eyes as if she were ready to eat up Sun Cyprestar.

Chapter 993 – Phoenix Heart Blood

Chapter 993 – Phoenix Heart Blood

…

…

…

When a martial artist broke through to the Divine Transformation realm, their body would begin to transform from a spirit body to a divine body. At this time, their fires of life would greatly strengthen and their lifespan would massively increase. Their aging process would slow down and the potential of their life would also improve.

A Life Destruction martial artist over 100 years of age would find it hard to break into the Divine Sea, but a Divine Transformation martial artist over a thousand years old still had a chance of entering the Divine Lord realm. A 10,000 year old Divine Lord martial artist could even increase their cultivation by small boundaries during the Divine Lord realm. The only problem was if they wished to cultivate to a higher realm.

Sun Cyprestar had already lived for over 20,000 years and he had been stranded at the middle Divine Lord realm for 10,000 years now. 3000 years ago, he had started the preparations for refining the Phoenix Heart Pill. Gathering all of the materials for making the Phoenix Heart Pill wasn’t easy. By himself, it was nearly impossible to complete the collection, especially when it came to the rarest and most valuable medicinal ingredient – the arctic ice immortal stamen. For Sun Cyprestar, his only chance of being able to afford that ingredient was if he sold the Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron.

But once he sold the Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron, it would be impossible for him to think of refining the Phoenix Heart Pill.

On the other hand, if he couldn't collect the full list of ingredients for making the Phoenix Heart Pill then keeping the Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron around was also worthless. Things like pill furnaces and cauldrons were magic tools mainly used in alchemy to create pills to assist in breakthroughs. These kinds of secondary magic tools were inferior to weapons when it came to directly increasing a martial artist's strength. Besides the Phoenix Heart Pill, Sun Cyprestar didn't need medicinal ingredients to refine anything else.

If he bet the Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron, then although the chances of losing were extremely high, there was still the faint hope that he could win and break through to the late Divine Lord realm and increase his lifespan. Otherwise, there was no hope for him. With Sun Cyprestar's age, he had already dug out all of his potential and destiny.

Chu Redcloud had realized this point and that was the only reason why she was willing to make such a bet. She knew that even if Sun Cyprestar was aware that this was a trap, he would still readily jump into it.

Sun Cyprestar thought for a moment and said, "Chu Redcloud, your Charming Phoenix Palace was stronger than my Phoenix Cry Palace to begin with. You clearly made this bet to trick me!"

"Hehe, since it's a bet, of course it has to be a bit more fair. My Charming Phoenix Palace's disciples will consider their results lowered by 30%, that should be showing enough sincerity. How about it? Is Vice Hall Master Sun really so lacking in confidence towards his own disciples?"

"30%..."

Sun Cyprestar glanced at the disciples behind Chu Redcloud and then towards his own. His eyes swept over Huo Yanguang and then Lin Ming.

Although it was difficult to measure victory with sight alone, he could at least attempt to get a faint feeling. Sun Cyprestar did some calculations about potential scenarios. He felt that if Chu Redcloud lowered the results of her disciples by 30% then there really might be a chance to win.

Sun Cyprestar had already been tempted. But his voice was still cold as he said, “You’ve already understood my entire situation and have even grasped my weak point. It seems you’ve really been aiming at my Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron for a while!”

“Haha, Vice Hall Master Sun is too exaggerated. Vice Hall Master Sun is a fellow clansman of the Ancient Phoenix Hall and is also so famous. There is no need to investigate to know the situation! Of course, I truly am interested in your Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron. So how about it, would you like to make this bet with me?”

Sun Cyprestar’s lips twitched. Chu Redcloud had always been a crafty and scheming individual. He had come across her several times in his life and he had never managed to gain an advantage. Moreover, she had come prepared this time and had likely planned everything out from the start in order to win his Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron. She definitely had a great assurance she would win. But, the temptation was too great; he simply wasn’t able to refuse.

“My Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron is a valuable treasure found in an ancient ruin. Although the arctic ice immortal stamen is precious, it absolutely cannot compare equally to the Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron. I can agree to your bet, but if I win I want more things!”

“Haha, well said, then what do you want?” Chu Redcloud asked with a smile. She had already long expected that Sun Cyprestar would agree.

“A drop of phoenix heart blood!” Sun Cyprestar slowly enunciated.

Chu Redcloud slightly frowned but immediately said, “Done!”

Phoenix heart blood was at least a hundred times more precious than phoenix plume blood. Even a Divine Lord powerhouse would find it hard to give out a single drop. For a character on the level of Fairy Feng, even someone like her couldn’t immediately take out a drop of phoenix heart blood, because if she had it she would have already used it.

Chu Redcloud was certainly no exception. Although she had a high status in Charming Phoenix Palace, the only way for her to obtain a drop of phoenix heart blood was to pay a really high price.

“What are the rules for this bet?” Sun Cyprestar asked, his tone solemn. In the world of martial artists, bets happened all the time. But this time, the stakes were simply too high. This was a bet that concerned his life.

“Junior disciples, senior disciples, you can choose any one of those sides as you please. We will only look at the results of the top five, and victory or defeat will be decided by Senior Ruby Sovereign. I think that even you should trust the fairness of Senior Ruby Sovereign!”

The Ruby Sovereign that Chu Redcloud spoke of was the artifact spirit of Fire Spirit Star’s spirit artifact. It was an artifact spirit that had existed for a time far longer than Phoenix Cry Palace’s Saint Artifact Pavilion artifact spirit. Moreover, its strength was formidable, and through all these years it had managed the smelting trial for the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace, Praying Phoenix Palace, and Charming Phoenix Palace. The number of talented disciples it had seen through the years was countless.

With such a respected senior judging the bet, it would undoubtedly be fair.

“I can choose junior disciples or senior disciples?” Sun Cyprestar’s eyes brightened. He turned to look at White Daohong, clearly wanting his opinion on the matter.

White Daohong thought for a brief moment and said with a true essence sound transmission, “Elder Sun, if you are counting on me to defeat Lu Xiaoyun, then I might have to disappoint you. My chances of defeating her are no higher than 30%.”

As White Daohong spoke, he kept his eyes locked onto a blue-clothed woman standing behind Chu Redcloud. This woman looked indifferent, with an ethereal air around her. The point between her eyebrows was dotted with intricate runes, lending her a mystical and marvelous temperament.

This person was the number one disciple of Charming Phoenix Palace's Phoenix Hall, Lu Xiaoyun. She was also White Daohong's greatest competition here.

"It's not just Lu Xiaoyun, but everyone else is unfathomably strong. Besides me, only Junior-apprentice Brother Xiao has a chance of entering the top five. Even if Charming Phoenix Palace were to lower their results by 30%, I fear we will still lose."

Sun Cyprestar grit his teeth. He looked over towards the junior disciples and his eyes stopped at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming remained silent throughout, not commenting on anything.

Finally, Sun Cyprestar took a deep breath and grimly said, "I choose the junior disciples!"

"Oh?" Chu Redcloud seemed surprised and then immediately smiled. "It seems Vice Hall Master Sun is confident in the junior disciples. Do you perhaps have some hidden card in hand?"

"Heh, my Phoenix Cry Palace has indeed produced a passable disciple, but… Chu Redcloud, since you made this bet it's impossible that you didn't look up everything ahead of time. I think you should already know who I'm talking about!" Sun Cyprestar didn't believe that Chu Redcloud did not know about Lin Ming. Lin Ming's name had already spread throughout the entire Phoenix Cry Palace as it stirred up a great wave. If Chu Redcloud wanted to look up information on him, that would be an extremely easy task.

At this time, Chu Redcloud was only deliberately pretending she hadn't calculated everything in advance, thus the reason why Sun Cyprestar was lacking confidence in victory.

"Haha!" Chu Redcloud smiled, not replying.

She certainly knew of Lin Ming. And in a situation where she knew of Lin Ming, she still dared to make this bet. That meant that not only was she extremely confident in the junior disciples of Charming Phoenix Hall, but she had also found a method to deal with Lin Ming. Then again, this competition was measuring the top five and not just solely first place.

“Good. Then let’s clap hands to seal the oath.”

Chu Redcloud stretched out a snow white palm. Sun Cyprestar grit his teeth and slapped his palm against hers.

Pa!

A light clap echoed out, a clear sound even in the surging winds. This meant that the bet had officially started.

“Let’s go.”

Sun Cyprestar spoke to the disciples behind him. “All disciples, follow me back to the spirit ship.”

As Chu Redcloud saw this, she smiled, not saying anything. She knew that Sun Cyprestar was gathering up all the disciples to incentivize and galvanize them.

Her eyes fell onto the back of a white-clothed youth from Phoenix Cry Palace, and her lips curved up in a devious smile. “So you’re Lin Ming, right? What a pity that you’re a man and cannot join my Charming Phoenix Palace. I’ve already looked up your information and am well aware of your strengths. Your combat strength far surpasses all other rising talents, and you truly deserve first place in that aspect. But unfortunately, when it comes down to achievements in Concepts and Laws, you are destined to suffer a loss in this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. Littlemoon, what do you think?”

Chu Redcloud turned around to glance at a 16-17 year old girl behind her.

“Hehe, Aunty, please feel relieved. Although this Lin Ming looks a bit wooden and stodgy, I won’t underestimate my opponent. I will help Aunty win the Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron. At that time, you can help others refine pills even better.” The girl called Littlemoon said.

"Hoho, aren't you a smart little trickster!"

Chu Redcloud brightly laughed, as if spring were blooming around her.

But at this time, within Phoenix Cry Palace's spirit ship, another scene was occurring. Sun Cyprestar's complexion was sober and gloomy; extremely gloomy. Since Chu Redcloud had dared to make this bet, she certainly had confidence she could win. As for him, he was just the opposite.

The Ancient Phoenix smelting trial was not just a competition of one, but a bet that looked at the top five. Phoenix Cry Palace had already gained a profit from Chu Redcloud's decision to only look at the top five. If the two palaces had to compare overall results, Phoenix Cry Palace would be in a much worse state.

"You may have heard, but this gambling bet is extremely important to me. Extremely. Important. It concerns my life and my property. In the bet just now, I also added in the condition of a single drop of phoenix heart blood from Chu Redcloud. This drop of phoenix heart blood is for all of you. If you have the ability to win, then this drop of phoenix heart blood will be yours. Whoever has the ability to take it can take it. A drop of phoenix heart blood is a treasure that can cause even Divine Lord realm powerhouses to fight over it. Compared to a top grade saint artifact, it is at least 10 times more precious. If you can obtain a drop of phoenix heart blood and fuse it into your body, then the quality of your bloodline will vastly improve. It will be highly beneficial to you when you break into the ninth stage of Life Destruction from the eighth stage. When you are making your breakthrough into Ninefall, you will even have another two layered heavens added onto your success!

"Not just that, but I will personally put forth lucrative rewards. All sorts of pills, heavenly materials, high-grade saint artifacts, top grade saint artifacts – all those who make good contributions will be suitably rewarded!"

"In addition, in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, the artifact spirit that watches over this trial, Senior Ruby Sovereign, will also pass out corresponding rewards. These are the rules of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. All rewards come from the Ancient Phoenix Clan

Headquarters. Thus, to all of you, this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial is a great lucky chance!"

Sun Cyprestar's words were extremely moving. As the disciples heard him, all of them began to stir restlessly, their auras shooting into the skies like rainbows.

All sorts of lucky chances and treasures were placed right before them, just waiting for them to reach out their hands!

The ordinary disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace didn't have a master who appreciated them and supported them. Thus, they had to rely on themselves and fight for every lucky chance they could. With so many opportunities placed in front of them, even if the chances of obtaining them weren't too high, they still had to desperately claw their way towards them!

Chapter 994 – Trial by Fire

Chapter 994 – Trial by Fire

…

…

…

After the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace and Charming Phoenix Palace arrived, in the same evening the disciples of Praying Phoenix Palace also landed.

Praying Phoenix Palace was the opposite of Charming Phoenix Palace: their disciples were entirely male. As Charming Phoenix Palace represented yin phoenixes and Praying Phoenix Palace represented yang phoenixes, the meaning of Praying Phoenix Palace was that they were praying for a wife to match them.

Whether it was the male disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace or Praying Phoenix Palace, it was an honor if they could marry a proud phoenix bloodline disciple. And every Ancient Phoenix smelting trial was a prime opportunity for the male disciples to mingle with these female disciples.

They could show off their skills, obtain rewards, and also have chances to win the hearts of beautiful women; to these male disciples, what was better than this?

After the disciples of Praying Phoenix Palace arrived, the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial finally began.

The main venue of Fire Spirit Star's Ancient Phoenix smelting trial was an underground divine pagoda named the 18 Hells of Flame. It was a spirit artifact level treasure that was a higher grade than Saint Artifact Pavilion. And the Ruby Sovereign was the artifact spirit of the 18 Hells of Flame.

The 18 Hells of Flame Pagoda was built extremely strangely. Normally, a pagoda was thicker at the base and thinner at the top, but the 18 Hells of Flame Pagoda was different. It was narrow at the base and grew thicker the further it extended downwards, as if a pagoda had been smashed underground.

A pagoda with 18 levels didn't seem too great, but the 18 Hells of Flame Pagoda was actually 180,000 miles long, and every level represented 10,000 miles. From the surface of Fire Spirit Star, this pagoda passed straight into the planet's core!

Whether it was a fire star or an ordinary planet, the deeper one went towards the core, the greater the temperature would become. The environment would become far more dangerous and terrifying.

The core of a blazing fire star was at least 10,000 times hotter than magma! At such a high temperature, even a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse would be burnt to ash if they touched it.

However, even though Fire Spirit Star was not a true fire star, it was still a celestial planet that converged a massive amount of fire origin energy. It wasn't that much worse than a small fire star. Not to mention anything else, but the fire energy heavenly wind already surpassed the speed of sound. Every gust of wind blew for tens of thousands or even hundreds of thousands of years around the entire star. The energy required for this was unfathomable.

If the surface was so horrifying then the inside could be imagined. The temperature and pressure reached a nearly unimaginable degree.

The first level of the 18 Hells of Flame Pagoda had the lowest temperature. But that was only relatively speaking. The first level continued for 10,000 miles and the starting temperature was the heat of magma. The closer one approached to the second level, the greater the temperature became. The very bottom of the first level had a temperature over a dozen times hotter than molten magma.

And temperature was only one of the dangers. The 18 Hells of Flame were filled with all sorts of various array formations, all of them designed to test and torture the trial challengers to their limits.

Lin Ming floated high above the skies of the 18 Hells of Flame Pagoda with the rest of the Phoenix Cry Palace disciples. The base of the pagoda and also the smallest point was much wider than the Eternal Demon Abyss; it was over 30,000 miles in diameter.

A pagoda body at least 30,000 miles wide and 180,000 miles high, Lin Ming had no idea what sort of supreme elder had used their great supernatural powers to insert this titanic structure into Fire Spirit Star.

Lin Ming could faintly feel that the heaven and earth origin energy of Fire Spirit Star was being absorbed into this divine pagoda. For hundreds of thousands of years, from the surface to the core, the 18 Hells of Flame Pagoda had been absorbing fire origin energy from all over the world. Lin Ming suspected that the Ancient Phoenix Clan supreme elder who had placed the 18 Hells of Flame Pagoda here wished to use the entire Fire Spirit Star as a sacrifice to refine the pagoda, increasing the grade of the pagoda by yet another level.

To use Fire Spirit Star as a furnace to refine the 180,000 mile long divine pagoda, such boldness surpassed Lin Ming's imagination!

"Come, all disciples follow me to enter the 18 Hells of Flame. You will all cultivate in there and see just what level you can stay at." Sun Cyprestar said as he led the crowd of disciples to fly into the 18 Hells of Flame.

In other directions, the disciples of Charming Phoenix Palace and Praying Phoenix Palace also flew into the 18 Hells of Flame.

As soon as Lin Ming entered the space within the 18 Hells of Flame, he could feel that the fire origin energy heavenly winds suddenly rose to another level!

This place was simply a sea of fire. Endless red mist filled this vast space, covering everything and making it hard to see through.

Lin Ming also knew that this red mist passed all the way through a bottomless pit into the core of Fire Spirit Star. The deeper one went, the more terrifying it would become.

Many of Phoenix Cry Palace's disciples already had a hard time maintaining their protective true essence on the surface of Fire Spirit Star, let alone against the heavenly winds in the 18 Hells of Flame. There were four or five disciples that could not resist the pressure as their protective true essence immediately cracked apart like an egg.

"Ahh!"

These disciples cried out in terror as they saw the violent heavenly wind rush towards them, ready to rip them apart. But at this moment, a blue-green energy emerged out of thin air and wrapped around their bodies, isolating the heavenly wind outside so that these disciples weren't torn to bits.

The several disciples were panic-stricken. At that moment they thought they would lose their lives.

"This is..."

They looked at the blue-green energy surrounding their bodies.

"You useless piles of garbage, humph, I really have no idea how you lot managed to pass the smelting trial qualifications. You just entered the 18 Hells of Flame and faced a bit of heavenly wind and yet you couldn't even withstand that. Senior Ruby Sovereign even had to save you. All of you have shamed my Phoenix Cry Palace!"

Sun Cyprestar bluntly said, his nerves grating. The blue-green energy that had rescued these disciples had come from the artifact spirit of the 18 Hells of Flame, Ruby Sovereign. Ever since Sun Cyprestar agreed to Chu Redcloud's bet, his mood had become extremely grim and he was worried about losing. Now that he saw the disciples he brought along being so useless, how could he not become mad.

"Hohoho!"

At this moment, a clear and light laugh echoed out. Without looking, Sun Cyprestar could tell that it was Charming Phoenix Palace's Chu Redcloud.

Behind her was the crowd of Charming Phoenix Palace disciples. The one leading these disciples was the blue-clothed Lu Xiaoyun, and behind Lu Xiaoyun was that strange little trickster girl who had been called Littlemoon.

Besides them, Charming Phoenix Palace still had 800-900 female disciples. Their average strength was indeed higher than that of the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace. Even the weakest and most mediocre of Charming Phoenix Palace's Firebird Hall disciples were able to maintain their protective true essence so that it didn't shatter, albeit barely managing to do so.

In fact, within the Ancient Phoenix Clan, there tended to be more female talents than male talents. Back in Divine Phoenix Island, this was also the same situation. It was easier for purer phoenix bloodlines to appear within the bodies of women.

And within the entire Atlas World, 80% of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's female geniuses were gathered at Charming Phoenix Palace.

Thus, Charming Phoenix Palace surpassed Phoenix Cry Palace and Praying Phoenix Palace in terms of talent. Correspondingly, the resources that the headquarters passed down to them also surpassed those of Phoenix Cry Palace and Praying Phoenix Palace.

Littlemoon clucked her tongue and smiled as she saw the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace clumsily fumble around like swimmers that were drowning. She only looked to be 16-17 years old, but she flew through the heavenly winds like a nimble little fish in water, without seeming bothered at all.

"We're going to go first. We'll wait for you at the second level of the 18 Hells of Flame." Chu Redcloud laughed as she spoke. She led her crowd of female disciples deeper underground.

“We’re keeping up!” Sun Cyprestar coldly said. “If you discover you cannot withstand going any further, stop where you are and begin cultivating. This portion of the smelting trial will continue for another 20 days, and after that you will all undergo a harsh and rigorous special training period. If you cannot continue then hurry up and get the fuck out of my way!”

Sun Cyprestar’s anger had reached the point where he began cursing. Then, he longer cared about these low level disciples. He led the elite disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace deeper underground.

The further they went, the more violent and brutal the fire origin energy heavenly winds became. Here, the heavenly winds formed high speed rotating vortexes that spun around in the air. This wind was similar to endless sharp knives. If a martial artist with insufficient cultivation were to step into this wind, they would be directly torn to pieces.

Not just that, but the surrounding temperature soared higher and higher. They were already at a temperature that was eight or nine times hotter than ordinary magma.

This was still a temperature these geniuses could withstand. But, the true essence they consumed to maintain their protective barriers increased, making it increasingly difficult to continue.

There were constantly disciples that were left behind. They couldn’t continue any further because they reached the limit to maintain their protective true essence. Many of them even had their protective true essence shatter, forcing the 18 Hells of Flame artifact spirit to protect them and bring them back to a higher area.

Of course, the female disciples of Charming Phoenix Palace weren’t all peerless talents. Starting at a hundred miles, there were constantly female disciples that were left behind. These female disciples casually chose a place to sit down and began cultivating.

Within the 18 Hells of Flame there were many ways to train. One of the simplest kinds was to just stay within the 18 Hells of Flame and use true essence to resist the baptism of heat and pressure. This would continue until one's true essence was completely exhausted, and there would even be some people that fell unconscious.

A martial artist's body was similar to a lake, and true essence was the water within. Every time a martial artist exhausted their true essence and pushed it past the limits, that was the same as digging in the lake and making it even deeper. This process made one's foundation more solid.

It was an extremely simple but also extremely effective training method.

As for the disciples of Praying Phoenix Palace, the performances of their disciples were about the same as those from Phoenix Cry Palace. By the time they reached 3000 miles deep into the 18 Hells of Flame, half of their disciples had needed to stop because they couldn't withstand going any further.

Then 4000 miles, 5000 miles, 6000 miles!

They quickly flew deeper down. The temperature here was already over a dozen times that of magma and the velocity of the heavenly winds was over 10 times the speed of sound. Because the wind was too fast, the wind currents created terrifying sonic booms wherever they went. The sound of passing wind was like glass being etched with sabers; it was grating and excruciating to the ears!

Even for those junior disciples who were making their first trip to Fire Spirit Star and were able to easily withstand the surface heat and wind, at this depth, many of them felt their protective true essence waver, ready to pop apart like bubbles in the wind.

Peng!

A high ranked Vermillion Bird Hall disciple's protective true essence shattered and his body was sent flying backwards. His body was almost instantly wrapped up in a blue energy.

Lin Ming was left speechless as he saw this scene. The three great branch palaces had a total of nearly 3000 disciples here, and within the 18 Hells of Flame they were all scattered in different locations. Even so, that artifact spirit named Ruby Sovereign was actually able to divide its divine sense into 3000 sections, each part able to simultaneously look after a different disciple.

Moreover, when the protective true essence of these disciples shattered, there might only be a period of one thousandth of the blink of an eye before the fire origin energy heavenly wind struck them. But even in such a short period of time, Ruby Sovereign was able to form blue flame energy from the Concept of Creation and use this to protect the disciples.

This strength was truly startling!

"I really have no idea just what boundary this Ruby Sovereign has reached." Lin Ming thought out loud.

At this moment, Sun Cyprestar said, "We're just 2000 miles away from reaching the second level. Everyone, grit your teeth and continue forwards!"

Chapter 995 – Hells of Flame, Second Level

Chapter 995 – Hells of Flame, Second Level

…

…

…

They had penetrated 8000 miles deep into the Hells of Flame. This was a terrifying depth. Here, not only were the temperature and the fire origin energy heavenly winds terrifying, but the immense pressure from the thick fire fog pressed down on them. As it grinded against the martial artists' protective true essence, it emitted crackling sounds like a millstone.

"Guard your mind and do not blindly use force to resist it. You must use your understandings of Laws to withstand it; this will be greatly beneficial to training and tempering your true essence!"

Sun Cyprestar said as he continued flying downwards. An 8000 mile depth was a distance that even the disciples of Phoenix Hall were finding hard to resist.

9000 miles!

The several disciples who had entered Phoenix Hall only by virtue of their connections finally had their protective true essence burst open. Because one robed youth had exhausted all his energy he directly fainted on the spot. In the next moment, he was wrapped up by the blue-green flame energy of the Ruby Sovereign and was sent to a safe minor dimension.

In the last 1000 miles, the difficulty rapidly shot up. More and more Phoenix Hall disciples found that they couldn't continue onwards.

Besides Phoenix Hall, the disciples of the other three halls couldn't continue onwards. There was only one person left, and that was Zhou Fei.

At this time, Zhou Fei was still fairly easily continuing downwards. But, he knew that this relaxedness wouldn't last for much longer.

He couldn't help but glance at Lin Ming. Lin Ming was doing well within his expectations; otherwise he wouldn't have been considered the target he had to surpass in the future.

"Huo Yanguang, Lin Ming, I want to see what step you two will be able to last until." Zhou Fei quickened his pace as he thought this.

The second level of the Hells of Flame was close at hand.

At this moment, within the vast red dust and fog, everyone saw a group of women. The beautiful woman leading them was Chu Redcloud.

She had been waiting there for the Phoenix Cry Palace disciples.

"Hoho." Chu Redcloud smiled as the Phoenix Cry Palace disciples finally caught up. She wanted to take a look and see just how great the junior disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace were.

Sun Cyprestar naturally noticed Chu Redcloud. The two sides had a feeling of being in sharp opposition.

"Let's go, we're entering the second level!" Chu Redcloud led her disciples and directly rushed towards the second level.

Sun Cyprestar took a deep breath and said, "Everyone wake up and give it everything you have! Don't weaken our morale!"

Bang!

From the first level to the second level, space suddenly changed. Everyone saw their surroundings brighten as the world turned light blue.

The flames here were blue in color.

In the second level of the 18 Hells of Flame Pagoda, the temperature suddenly rose to yet another level. It was now 30 times the temperature of magma.

At the same time, the fire origin energy turned into beasts within the air that rushed towards everyone!

Even Lin Ming felt a tremendous pressure within this space.

At this point, besides the senior disciples, there were only a dozen or so junior disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace remaining.

As for Charming Phoenix Palace, they were better off: they had 20 some people left remaining.

“White Daohong, take the Divine Transformation realm disciples and continue downwards. I will slowly continue with the junior disciples.” Sun Cyprestar said. He could faintly feel that the second level was the limit for the junior disciples. If they continued much further, the junior disciples wouldn’t be able to last.

“Okay, Elder Sun.”

White Daohong turned into a beam of light and led the Divine Transformation realm disciples deeper into the Hells of Flame. To the Divine Transformation realm disciples, the first two levels weren’t considered much at all.

Chu Redcloud faintly smiled and softly said, “Xiaoyun, take the Divine Transformation realm disciples and follow White Daohong. Do not weaken the momentum of our Charming Phoenix Palace!”

“Yes, Elder Master.” Lu Xiaoyun replied without expression. She turned into a blue beam of light and led the Divine Transformation realm disciples of Charming Phoenix Palace to chase after White Daohong!

Two brilliant rainbows shot downwards. In the Hells of Flame, they were actually having a competition of speed.

As soon as the Divine Transformation realm disciples left, the ones remaining were mostly Life Destruction and Divine Sea realm disciples.

And the focus of the competition was concentrated on the junior disciples that were 33 years old and below.

This was not without reason. These people were the key characters that decided victory or defeat in the bet between Sun Cyprestar and Chu Redcloud.

Lin Ming didn't hastily rush downwards. Instead, he peacefully meditated on the wild yet mysterious fire origin energy here, comprehending the Fire Laws from the various shapes that the fire origin energy took.

At this moment, Lin Ming felt a pair of eyes aimed at him. He looked up to see that on the side of Charming Phoenix Palace, a 16-17 year old girl was looking at him with a smarmy smirk on her face, a hint of provocation in her eyes.

"You're the one called Lin Ming? My name is Yan Littlemoon. I've heard of you before. It seems that you defeated a ninth stage Life Destruction martial artist during the fifth stage of Life Destruction so your reputation shot up?"

Lin Ming looked at this Yan Littlemoon, not responding. Once a martial artist reached Life Destruction it was extremely difficult to tell their age from their appearance. This Yan Littlemoon should be in her twenties, and her cultivation was a stage higher than his at the seventh stage of Life Destruction. Of all the junior disciples who were able to reach the second level of the Hells of Flame, that cultivation could be considered among the lowest.

To arrive here with a seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation, this girl was undoubtedly a proud heavenly daughter of Charming Phoenix Palace. In the future it was highly likely she would grow into a character on the level of Lu Xiaoyun.

“Hehe, our cultivations are similar. How about we compete a bit and see who can reach the third level first?”

Third level?

Lin Ming was slightly startled. With his current condition, he absolutely could not reach the third level. The only reasonable method he could use to do so was to use the Heretical God Sprout to shield himself and absorb the fire origin energy. Only then would it be possible for him to reach the third level. As a final resort, he could open the grandmist space and directly melt away the Fire Laws within the Hells of Flame. If he did that then there would be no problem to reach the third level.

However, Lin Ming didn’t want to depend on the Heretical God Sprout too much. The power of Laws was something he had to comprehend himself in order to develop the most solid foundation. While he could use the things that the Heretical God Force absorbed, they still weren’t his own. As for releasing the grandmist space, that completely negated the training effect of this smelting trial; there would be no significance in doing so.

Thus, Lin Ming was preparing to rely on himself to rush into the 18 Hells of Flame.

Not too far away from Yan Littlemoon, Chu Redcloud was watching all of this happen. Her lips curved up in a small smile. No one at Phoenix Cry Palace knew that Yan Littlemoon had a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Within her body, half her bloodline was human and the other half was of the Ancient Phoenix!

Such an extreme genius had already achieved a terrifying boundary in the comprehension and compatibility of Fire Laws; it was to a degree that ordinary martial artists could never compete with her. In the future, Yan Littlemoon’s accomplishments would surely be far more extraordinary than Lu Xiaoyun’s.

Even placed within Charming Phoenix Palace where talents freely poured forth, she was a rare talent that appeared only every several hundred years or even every thousand years!

"I'm not interested. I'll descend another 2000 miles at most before I stop." Lin Ming said without expression. He could faintly feel that this Yan Littlemoon's understanding of Fire Laws surpassed even Huo Yanguang's.

It had to be known that Huo Yanguang had crossed the ninth stage of Life Destruction. When he crossed the ninth stage of Life Destruction he had to withstand the baptism of the Heavenly Dao. But Yan Littlemoon hadn't gone through that. Yet even so, her comprehension of Fire Laws had reached the level of Huo Yanguang. From this alone her talent and perception could be imagined!

As for Lin Ming, his comprehension of Fire Laws was far inferior to Huo Yanguang's. If his understanding of Fire Laws was lacking then he would have to expend several times the true essence for every step he took within the 18 Hells of Flame; it would simply be impossible for him to go much further. If Lin Ming didn't cheat by using the Heretical God Sprout then the most he could descend was another two to three thousand miles in the second level.

"You can only descend another two to three thousand miles?" Yan Littlemoon was surprised. "That's the level you're at? This is far too boring! Aunty Redcloud, you really determined that this Lin Ming fellow is my greatest rival here?"

Yan Littlemoon looked at Chu Redcloud with some dissatisfaction. Before arriving at Fire Spirit Star, Chu Redcloud had urged Yan Littlemoon numerous times to be careful of Lin Ming. But now that she saw Lin Ming with her own eyes, all she could see was that he was nothing but… mediocre!

"Do not underestimate your opponent. Lin Ming's superiority stems not from his comprehension of Fire Laws. There are many aspects of which he has an advantage you cannot compare against. In this smelting trial, although Fire Laws and compatibility with fire origin energy are the most important parts, it doesn't solely focus on these two points. As for other aspects, they will also be tested here."

"Humph! If we haven't competed then how can it be known that I am inferior to him in any aspect at all? He defeated a ninth stage Life Destruction martial artist at the fifth stage of

Life Destruction, but that's probably because that Huo Yanguang is far too stupid. Since Aunty favors him, I will take a look and see just how he excels in other fields. But for now, I'm not going to follow them along. These people are so slow that they seem like snails. I'll be heading down first."

As Yan Littlemoon spoke, she no longer bothered with Lin Ming. She gathered her true essence and turned into a red beam of light that shot towards the third level of the Hells of Flame!

Her speed couldn't compare with the Divine Transformation realm disciples' but it was still alarming. As the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace saw this, all of them were left bamboozled!

"This… who is that young girl?"

"If I didn't read wrong then isn't she at the seventh stage of Life Destruction?"

"Heavens! I'm at the Divine Sea realm but I'm already finding it hard to continue. If I flew down at high speed I would likely just die, but she's doing it so easily. She… is she even human?"

Yan Littlemoon was a genius that had just recently appeared at Charming Phoenix Palace; the people of Phoenix Cry Palace simply didn't know of her. Now that they saw her prowess, all of them were inevitably shocked.

And as Sun Cyprestar saw this, he felt his heart skip a beat. He reached out a part of his sense and tracked down Yan Littlemoon. Then, he made a startling discovery. In just two breaths of time, Yan Littlemoon had dove over a thousand miles downwards to reach a 12,000 mile depth.

Then…

13,000 miles, 14,000 miles, 15,000 miles…

Moreover, at that depth her speed still didn't diminish!

It was only at the 18,000 mile depth that Yan Littlemoon's speed began to faintly reduce. At 19,000 miles, she began to slow down as if she were reaching her limit.

But the 19,000 mile distance was already nearing the third level of the Hells of Flame!

How could this be possible!?

A seventh stage Life Destruction martial artist neared the third level of the Hells of Flame!

Sun Cyprestar looked up at Chu Redcloud and his voice changed. "She has..."

Chu Redcloud faintly smiled in response. She slowly and clearly said, "Perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline."

"Perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline!?!? How is that possible!? Those with perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodlines are only born in the three great family clans and they are concentrated at headquarters, so how could any one of them be at your Charming Phoenix Palace!?"

Chapter 996 – If You Want To Bet Then Bet Yan Littlemoon

Chapter 996 – If You Want To Bet Then Bet Yan Littlemoon

…

…

…

In the Ancient Phoenix Clan, geniuses could appear even within the common folk. But, it was impossible for someone with a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline to appear within the commoners, because a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline required two parents with extremely rich bloodlines in order for a slight chance of such a child appearing.

Such people were concentrated in the three great family clans and the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters. They could be considered the royal family of the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

And for a genius that appeared amongst the common people, their talent usually lay in comprehension of Laws, training speed, or other such aspects. But in terms of solely bloodline, even the most unrivalled genius of the common people would pale in comparison to the most ordinary disciples of the three great family clans.

The power of bloodline was the very foundation on which the three great family clans existed. That was the reason they had been able to dominate the Ancient Phoenix Clan for so many years. They maintained a strict and harsh marriage system and absolutely prohibited their bloodlines from being diluted.

But this Yan Littlemoon, looking at her last name, didn't seem to originate from the three great family clans. In the Ancient Phoenix Clan there was indeed a distinguished Yan Family, but they were still far from being able to birth someone with a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline.

Sun Cyprestar never would have imagined that Charming Phoenix Palace actually had a disciple with a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline; this simply defied all logic, because such a person would only appear in the three great family clans. After they appeared, they would surely be kept in the bases of the three great family clans or the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters and be a focus of training. They would not be sent to branch palaces. Sun Cyprestar knew this, that was why he was willing to make this bet. If he knew that Charming Phoenix Palace had such a disciple, he would never have agreed to it.

"Hehe, in life, everything is possible. Normally speaking, if you aren't a junior of the three great family clans then you're unlikely to have a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. But... Littlemoon stumbled upon a lucky chance. As she was exploring a mystic realm, she was sent tumbling into a God Burying Valley by a wild space flow. But not only did she not die, she even found a pond of phoenix blood there and she used that pond to evolve her Ancient Phoenix bloodline into perfection!"

Chu Redcloud smiled as she spoke. She ignored Sun Cyprestar's increasingly ugly complexion.

Sun Cyprestar felt as if someone had stabbed a dagger into his heart. He already knew that this Chu Redcloud woman was difficult to deal with, and there would be a high chance of losing any bet made with her.

However, Chu Redcloud had suddenly put forth an arctic ice immortal stamen, a temptation that he wasn't able to refuse. As they said, humans died for wealth and birds died for food. In the face of such an irresistible lure, even a 20,000 year old man like him had to take the risk. Thus, he had fallen into Chu Redcloud's devious machinations!

Originally, Sun Cyprestar's greatest hope was Lin Ming. Besides Lin Ming, it was fine if just one of the other junior disciples could place in the top five. But now, when Lin Ming was compared to the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline of this Yan Littlemoon, it seemed that he was bound to lose. As for the other disciples, they were even less worthy of mentioning! Even if Charming Phoenix Palace had decided to lower their results by 30%, all hope of victory was quickly fading away.

His chances of winning this bet were looking more and more unlikely.

“If you agreed to the bet then you must also accept the loss. Vice Hall Master Sun, you wouldn’t go back on a promise, right?” Chu Redcloud laughed out loud.

But in Sun Cyprestar’s eyes, that laughing face was actually filled with extreme evil and sinister intent. If possible, he really wanted to rush over and strike her to death with a palm.

“Humph! What nonsense are you spouting? I agreed to the best so I must agree to the loss? Chu Redcloud, there are still two years left in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, don’t think that you’ve already won!” Sun Cyprestar calmly said.

“Haha! Two years is fine, but I’m afraid that the longer this lasts, the further your Phoenix Cry Palace disciples will be thrown away. Two years from now, Littlemoon should be able to reach the fifth level of the Hells of Flame; she might even have a chance of entering the sixth level, who knows? Amongst your disciples, how many can reach the fourth level? As for the fifth level, I think you’re all done for.”

Chu Redcloud chuckled. Her eyes fell onto Lin Ming, “Apprentice Nephew Lin, what do you think?”

Lin Ming didn’t expect that Chu Redcloud would suddenly point her spear at him. For a time, he was the focus of all attention. Whether it was Phoenix Cry Palace or Charming Phoenix Palace, all disciples looked towards Lin Ming to see what his response would be.

Lin Ming slightly frowned. Chu Redcloud’s words were difficult to answer. Agreeing with her was impossible, but if he disagreed then that would place a tremendous pressure on the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace. If he couldn’t keep up with his own words later then that would really be disgraceful.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then said, “Martial Senior Chu, are you saying that you wish for me to agree with you?”

Chu Redcloud’s eyebrows arched upwards. She softly laughed and said, “Apprentice Nephew Lin can certainly disagree with me.”

“This is my first time entering Fire Spirit Star to participate in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. I don’t have much of an understanding towards this 18 Hells of Flame so I naturally wouldn’t dare to make outrageous boasts or claims. But, Martial Senior Chu has so generously promised one drop of phoenix heart blood if Elder Sun can win. I, Lin Ming, am of low talent and my bloodline is also very faint; I truly do need a drop of phoenix heart blood to help consolidate my foundation when I cross the seventh stage of Life Destruction. Thus, I thank Martial Senior Chu for the good intentions and shall naturally try my hardest not to disappoint you. Only by desperately risking my life will I have a slight hope of winning. Then, how about this, since Martial Senior Chu is so confident in Junior-apprentice Sister Yan Littlemoon, how about we change the conditions of this bet so that the other disciples are no longer involved and it will only be between me and Junior-apprentice Sister Yan Littlemoon. I also no longer need Charming Phoenix Palace to lower their results by 30%. Whoever places higher shall be the victor; how about that?”

Lin Ming’s words were extremely gentle and polite, but also extremely forceful. His response caused all the surrounding martial artists to suck in a breath of cold air. Facing Chu Redcloud’s trick question, Lin Ming not only answered, but he also put forth a strong counterattack.

Of course, this counterattack was built on the basis that Lin Ming could win!

At the minimum, his results needed to not be too different from Yan Littlemoon’s. Otherwise, if he were beaten into the ground by Yan Littlemoon, then he would draw the ridicule of everyone onto him.

What Lin Ming did was the same as placing all the burden on his shoulders. This caused the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace to feel relieved, but also to feel worried for Lin Ming.

This was a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline!

Just from looking at the results within the 18 Hells of Flame so far, Lin Ming was clearly inferior to Yan Littlemoon. Since he put forth such a change in the betting rules, could he really do anything?

It was not wrong that Lin Ming's progression was frighteningly fast, but how could Yan Littlemoon, with her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, be slow? Two years from now, Lin Ming might not have overtaken her, but instead have fallen further behind!

All of the Phoenix Cry Palace disciples were nervous for Lin Ming, and each of them had different thoughts on the situation. Zhou Fei opened his mouth several times as if he wanted to say something, but he eventually didn't. Lin Ming's words were the same as removing him from the bet. If this was before, then Zhou Fei might have been the first one to jump out and object. However, when he saw Yan Littlemoon's terrifying talent on full display just now, even his proud and arrogant heart had come under heavy attack. After arriving at the second level of the Hells of Flame, he couldn't go much further. If someone told him to be boastful and challenge Yan Littlemoon, he absolutely would not have the courage to do so. Without any valiant intrepidness left in his heart, all he could do was shut up and not argue. Zhou Fei grit his teeth and glanced over at Huo Yanguang. He saw that Huo Yanguang was actually calm, without any intentions of opposing.

Lin Ming didn't wait for Chu Redcloud to respond. He first looked at Sun Cyprestar. This bet was made by Sun Cyprestar. If he wanted to change the rules of the bet, he first had to obtain the approval of Sun Cyprestar.

Sun Cyprestar deeply looked at Lin Ming and then slowly nodded.

In fact, if Lin Ming lost to Yan Littlemoon, then if Huo Yanguang managed to advance into the top five, they would still only occupy two spots. Even if Charming Phoenix Palace lowered their results by 30%, there still wasn't any hope of victory. Thus, whether Lin Ming could win or not was already the key of this bet. Lin Ming changing the rules of the bet didn't increase the chances of Sun Cyprestar winning. In fact, there would be even less random variables added in. Lin Ming would only need to worry about his own strength and not about others'.

This was a choice originating from absolute self-confidence.

"Hahahaha!" Chu Redcloud's clear laughter echoed through the world. "Heroes have always come from the young. When I was still at Charming Phoenix Palace I had already heard great tales of Apprentice Nephew Lin's bravado and daring. But now that I see you today, your boldness is truly extraordinary. Good, since you have proposed this change, I will agree. Moreover, I will also increase the stakes. If Apprentice Nephew Lin can win, then not only will I give up the drop of phoenix heart blood and the arctic ice immortal stamen, but how about I also gift you a pair of utterly exquisite women?"

Chu Redcloud's words caused a strange expression to appear on Lin Ming's face. And on the side of Phoenix Cry Palace, many junior disciples were surprised at Chu Redcloud's words before revealing looks thick with envy and desire. The so-called utterly exquisite women were clearly disciples of Charming Phoenix Palace, and they would also be a pair!

Within the three branch palaces of Atlas World, whether it was Phoenix Cry Palace or Praying Phoenix Palace, the male disciples of both palaces coveted and would be proud to marry a disciple from Charming Phoenix Palace. Moreover, there would be two of them!

Of course, being envious was useless. If they wished to enjoy the happiness of two such wives, they would need the strength to back up their thoughts.

As for the female disciples of Charming Phoenix Palace, they were stunned at first before all of them reacted differently. Most of the senior disciples tenderly smiled, a meaningful and amiable look on their faces. But as for the junior disciples, most of them blushed a deep crimson. These young women hadn't yet experienced any romantic feelings towards other men yet. Now that this matter was suddenly brought up, they were naturally shy and embarrassed.

In fact, with Lin Ming's talent and his handsome looks, he was truly an ideal candidate for a husband.

At this time, Sun Cyprestar sneered. He said, "Chu Redcloud, your wishful thoughts are planned out quite well. If Lin Ming can win, then that proves his talent surpasses that of Yan Littlemoon. For him to not possess a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline but to have a talent that surpasses it, that would truly be incredible. That is because one can obtain a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline as long as they pay a great enough price! But for all other aspects of talent, they are mostly set. It is highly difficult to enhance any of them.

"In that way, Lin Ming will likely become a character on the level of a Palace Master. You plan to randomly throw out two girls from the Chu Family and not only climb up using this relationship, but all talented disciples that stem from those girls in the future will also be children of the Chu Family! Lin Ming would also become the son-in-law of your Chu Family. No matter how one looks at it, you will profit no matter what happens. Chu Redcloud, you really are a wolf that can never stop eating meat. No matter what the situation is, the one to eat a loss will never be you."

After her plans were revealed by Sun Cyprestar, Chu Redcloud wasn't embarrassed at all. Instead, she brightly smiled and said, "What do you mean I'll randomly throw out two girls? I already have two girls in mind, and they are beautiful twin sisters that have both first class looks and talent. If they take care of Lin Ming together, that will absolutely not be disgraceful to him. Others could never search for such a good deed even if they tried. Moreover, I never said that Lin Ming wouldn't be able to take concubines in the future. What sort of hot-blooded man would refuse such conditions? What do you say, Apprentice Nephew Lin?"

Chu Redcloud revealed a meaningful smile, a happy teasing light in her eyes as she looked at Lin Ming. Even Lin Ming was a bit embarrassed by this situation and he didn't speak at all. But then, Sun Cyprestar scoffed. "What beautiful twin sisters? If you really have the gall then just marry Yan Littlemoon to Lin Ming! If you want to bet then bet Yan Littlemoon!"

Chapter 997 – Dare

Chapter 997 – Dare

…

…

…

Bet Yan Littlemoon?

All the Phoenix Cry Palace disciples felt their jaws drop as they heard Sun Cyprestar say this. They were all left staring dumbfounded. Just who was Yan Littlemoon? She was someone with a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. She was a proud daughter of heaven that stood out amongst all proud daughters of heaven!

If one could make love to Yan Littlemoon, then that truly would be a wonderful event!

Without discussing Yan Littlemoon's top class appearance and figure, just her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline would be a massive lucky chance to the man who took her primordial yin!

In the Ancient Phoenix Clan, if a man and woman had sex then their bloodlines would supplement each other. When Lin Ming was at Divine Phoenix Island, this was also the case. Mu Qianyu and Mu Bingyun were both Saintesses of Divine Phoenix Island, and they possessed pure vermillion bird and blue luan bloodlines. The person who took their primordial yin could strengthen their own bloodlines. However, Lin Ming was an exception at the time. With his 100 drops of Ancient Phoenix blood, his bloodline was far purer and richer than Mu Qianyu's vermillion bird bloodline by countless times.

When Lin Ming and Mu Qianyu made love, she had actually been the one to pick up all the advantages from his body.

When a male and female had sex, the one with the thinner bloodline would obtain advantages from the one with the richer bloodline. If Lin Ming had the chance to have sex with someone with a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, the immense advantages could be imagined!

In particular the virginity of a woman. If one could obtain a woman's primordial yin energy, the advantages would be even greater!

Lin Ming was indeed talented, but the bloodline within his body was far too pale. This was because he had never been a true legitimate Ancient Phoenix Clan clansman from the start; he was far from being able to compare with Huo Yanguang, let alone someone like Yan Littlemoon. If he could make love with Yan Littlemoon then the benefits couldn't be outweighed by even several drops of phoenix heart blood!

It was exactly because of this reason that the Phoenix Cry Palace disciples were stirred up. They began to shout out loud.

"Bet Yan Littlemoon? Elder Sun is far too ruthless, Yan Littlemoon is a fairy-like figure, like an immortal celestial of heaven. When she grows in the future there will be countless handsome heroic young elites who will chase her hand for marriage. These people will likely include the future family head successors for the three great family clans, or even someone like the son of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's Patriarch. Their status surpasses Senior-apprentice Brother White Daohong by countless times, to a point that we cannot imagine. Lin Ming is talented, but that is only in relation to our Phoenix Cry Palace. If he is compared to geniuses like them, he is far from being qualified. If Yan Littlemoon marries Lin Ming, that is something beyond his status!"

"That's right. Lin Ming is a martial artist who ascended from the lower realms. In terms of background he is no better than a common mortal disciple of Phoenix Cry Palace or Charming Phoenix Palace. His bloodline density is extremely limited. If he dual cultivates with Yan Littlemoon, then she will be the one to suffer a loss. If they have children in the future, their bloodline will be lacking too. How could her family possibly agree to this?"

“Yan Littlemoon will suffer a loss but that punk Lin Ming’s gains will be far too great and for far too little! Those benefits, it makes one crazy just thinking about them!”

The disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace were drooling just talking about it. Which one of the male disciples didn’t wish to marry such a magnificent woman like Yan Littlemoon? If they had to exchange 20,000 years of their life in exchange for a single night with her, at least 90% of the male disciples might be willing to do that.

However, someone poured water over everyone’s parade. “You make it sound as if Yan Littlemoon is already married to Lin Ming. For Lin Ming to win against Yan Littlemoon in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, that is just far too difficult!”

“Yeah, it does seem impossible… in the entire junior generation of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, there are only a few people with perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodlines. It won’t be easy to win.”

Sun Cyprestar’s words had caused a heated discussion throughout the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace. Men were always enthusiastic to discuss beautiful women to begin with. Moreover, this was a topic that Elder Sun had raised himself. Even if they couldn’t obtain Yan Littlemoon, they could still drool over their imaginations.

Sun Cyprestar normally managed his disciples in a strict and severe manner. But today, as he saw the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace heatedly discussing Yan Littlemoon, not only did he not admonish them, but he even smiled. After seeing Chu Redcloud and suffering repeated losses to her, he had finally been able to retaliate. Seeing Chu Redcloud’s flustered expression really caused his thoughts to flow much more smoothly.

“What about it Fairy Chu? Wasn’t victory already in your hands? Weren’t you sure that Yan Littlemoon could win? Didn’t you say that someone who agrees to a bet must accept their losses? Since you’re so confident, you might as well agree as you’re winning anyway.”

“Hohoho!” Chu Redcloud gingerly laughed. She shook her head, saying, “Vice Hall Master Sun doesn’t need to try and shock me. This child Littlemoon is not my daughter and I cannot take responsibility for her. Lin Ming is still a handsome and talented young man. Although he is slightly inferior in the aspect of bloodlines and Laws, those can be increased by paying a steep enough price. Unfortunately, only my big brother can take responsibility for Littlemoon's marriage matters. However, what I can guarantee is that if Lin Ming truly does defeat Littlemoon, then I shall serve as a matchmaker and raise the issue with my big brother. As for whether or not he agrees, I can make no guarantees!"

Chu Redcloud impishly smiled. Sun Cyprestar was not satisfied with this reply. He said, "Chu Redcloud, is everything you say always a bunch of nonsense? When Lin Ming defeats Yan Littlemoon and then your big brother does not agree, then what? Is that interesting at all?"

"Elder Sun, I already said I cannot take responsibility for this matter. If Apprentice Nephew Lin has a liking for a little girl from my Chu Family, then I can take responsibility for that. However, she is only 14 years old so you'll have to wait several more years for her."

Chu Redcloud laughed. But at this time, a red beam of light shot out from deep within the Hells of Flame at an extremely quick speed. It was Yan Littlemoon, who had returned from the third level of the Hells of Flame.

Yan Littlemoon was very popular in Charming Phoenix Palace. When Sun Cyprestar had stirred up Chu Redcloud with his suggestions just now, Yan Littlemoon's close confidant had quietly used a special sound transmitting talisman to send a message to Yan Littlemoon.

As soon as Yan Littlemoon heard the message, she became incensed with anger. She didn't bother impacting into the third level and returned at full speed instead.

"Aunty, you are betting my marriage? You make a bet and you want me as part of the stakes now? Did this old man say that?" Yan Littlemoon glared at Sun Cyprestar, her small chest heaving up and down in rage. Any girl would be angry after hearing that they were made into some betting stake. Moreover, Yan Littlemoon was extremely arrogant to begin with. In these past years, there had been so many handsome heroic young elites chasing after her that she couldn’t lose them even if she tried, and yet today someone was turning her into a betting stake? How ridiculous! How preposterous! How dare they!

But unfortunately, Yan Littlemoon’s angry expression was not fierce or vicious at all. Instead, she appeared quite lovable and cute. As the male disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace looked at the angry Yan Littlemoon, they revealed happy expressions in their eyes.

Yan Littlemoon was in her twenties but her outer appearance was that of a 16 year old girl. Really, her angry expression was simply too adorable.

“What a cute and lovable girl. If Junior-apprentice Brother Lin can marry Yan Littlemoon, that will be a good fortune he can enjoy for several lifetimes.”

“Indeed. She’s a wild and playful girl, but she’s so beautiful even when she’s angry. If I could marry her I’d even be willing to give up 10,000 years of my life.”

The comments from the Phoenix Cry Palace disciples only added fuel to the fire.

“You people!!” Yan Littlemoon was furious. These people simply didn’t take her anger seriously. She felt as if she was being disregarded by them.

Sun Cyprestar smiled. He stroked his beard and said, “Yes, I am the old man who suggested this. How about it, do you dare to agree to this bet?”

“Humph, if you want to defeat me then keep on dreaming! Yan Littlemoon’s lips curved up in a charming smiled. At this time, she was fully displaying all of the arrogance and disdain in her heart.

As Chu Redcloud saw this, she felt her heart gripped. She said with a sound transmission, “Littlemoon, don’t be tricked. This old man is only trying to provoke you. You absolutely must not be impulsive and agree.”

Chapter 998 – Training Within the Hells of Flame

Chapter 998 – Training Within the Hells of Flame

…

…

…

"Humph, who cares if he provokes me? It isn't that I fear any bet, but that I do not like others using me as a betting stake! Even if I know I will absolutely win, I still won't agree to such a ridiculous proposition! Just because I am a girl doesn't mean I am a pet nor am I an object, so why would I allow anyone to use me!? Even the Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan cannot do that!"

Yan Littlemoon coldly said. Her words were not spoken with a true essence sound transmission, but loudly shouted out for everyone to hear. She contemptuously looked at Lin Ming and said, "Lin Ming, I'll make my own bet with you! If I lose to you, then I'll be your slave for the rest of my life, so how about it?"

Lin Ming's eyes twitched. He chuckled in response and said, "I have to say that I definitely won't agree to something like that. Moreover, I think Miss Yan has misunderstood the situation. I certainly wouldn't take Miss Yan as a betting stake; that is simply a joke of Elder Sun. And most importantly… I already have two wives, but they are living within the lower realms for now."

Sun Cypresstar shook his head as he heard Lin Ming speak. This Lin Ming was really ruining his own stage. However, he was indeed just casually joking around to fluster Chu Redcloud, he didn't have any hopes that Lin Ming would really marry Yan Littlemoon.

Looking at the wider situation, even if Yan Littlemoon was naïve and gambled with herself on the line, the Yan Family definitely wouldn't allow her to marry Lin Ming. A talent like Yan Littlemoon would likely marry a character on the level of the Ancient Phoenix Clan Patriarch's son. Without mentioning that the child they produced would likely also have a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, just the advantages they could offer were far from what Lin Ming could compare with.

The only possibility was if Lin Ming made ridiculous achievements in the future, the kind that were nearly impossible to accomplish. At that time, if he could marry Yan Littlemoon and make love to her then that would be a great lucky chance for him. Yan Littlemoon's perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline could not be compared to several drops of phoenix heart blood or even several spirit artifacts. And since Lin Ming's bloodline was so light, the advantages would be even greater!

After hearing Lin Ming's explanation, Yan Littlemoon coldly snorted and said, "You already have two wives and yet you allowed this misunderstanding to continue. It doesn't seem like you're a decent man or anything good at all. If you want to defeat me, then follow me to the third level. Let me take a look at just how strong the number one junior disciple genius of Phoenix Cry Palace is."

Yan Littlemoon turned into a beam of red light that directly impacted towards the third level of the Hells of Flame. This time, her speed was even faster than before. It could simply be described as a thousand miles passed in the blink of an eye!

15,000 miles…

16,000 miles…

17,000 miles…

Yan Littlemoon rapidly reached the 19,000 mile distance and was nearing the third level of the Hells of Flame. She finally began to slow down, but she still continued downwards as before.

500 miles…

700 miles…

900 miles…

Bang!

Yan Littlemoon broke through the space barrier of the second level and officially entered the third level!

At this time, it wasn't just Sun Cyprestar who was tracking her position, but also some powerful disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace. As they saw her break through to the third level, all of them had shocked expressions.

The third level! Yan Littlemoon had been able to break through into the third level from the very start!

The only reason Yan Littlemoon had stopped at the 19,000 mile distance of the second level was because she felt that was a good place to start training; it didn't mean she couldn't continue further. But just now she had been aggravated by Sun Cyprestar and thus she displayed her full strength to demonstrate how no one could mess with her!

After Yan Littlemoon entered the third level, the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace were no longer able to track her. Perhaps the third level was not Yan Littlemoon's limit. She might even be able to continue for several thousand more miles downwards. That was a depth that none of them could hold a candle to!

Of the remaining disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace, only those Ninefall middle or late Divine Sea martial artists had a chance of reaching the third floor. It was an impossible task even for a Ninefall early Divine Sea martial artist!

This didn't mean that a Ninefall early Divine Sea martial artist had lower combat strength than Yan Littlemoon. It only meant that their understanding and control of the Fire Laws were inferior to Yan Littlemoon's. The 18 Hells of Flame did not test strength, but rather a martial artist's comprehension of the Fire Laws.

Yan Littlemoon had a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. The Phoenix Cry Palace disciples naturally weren't able to compete with her in this regard.

"Haha, Apprentice Nephew Lin, I'll be heading out first."

Chu Redcloud smiled at Lin Ming and then led the disciples of Charming Phoenix Palace towards the third level. The Phoenix Cry Palace disciples that were left behind glanced at each other in trepidation. This was Yan Littlemoon's first time coming to the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial but she was simply far too difficult to deal with!

If Lin Ming wanted to defeat her, it would just be far too difficult.

"Lin Ming, what do you think about your chances of winning?" Sun Cyprestar asked Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission. Although he realized that it would be nearly impossible for Lin Ming to win, he did have a somewhat decent understanding of him. Since Lin Ming dared to take on such a burden and withstand such a pressure, he inevitably must be confident in himself. Otherwise, there would be no one to blame but himself.

"This disciple does not have a complete understanding of the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline so I cannot guarantee anything. The reason I changed the rules of the bet is that I believe in my own strength more than the strength of others here."

"Mm… I understand… in any case, I was the one who agreed to this bet. As long as you try your best then that will be fine. Don't feel burdened in your heart." Sun Cyprestar nodded and said, "Lin Ming, the bet about Yan Littlemoon was indeed just me playing around, but if you really can obtain Yan Littlemoon then that would be a great shortcut to you becoming a supreme character! The perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline means to have a half phoenix bloodline and half human bloodline. Those with such bloodlines can inherit the powerful physique and different talents of God Beasts as well as retaining the learning and perception of mankind. If your bloodline is a degree less rich then that means you will be lacking, but if your God Beast bloodline is too high then you will become a monster. If you become a monster then it will be impossible for you to train in humanity's cultivation methods.

"A person's body has a total of 150,000-200,000 drops of blood. Someone having a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline means that they have nearly 90,000 drops of Ancient Phoenix blood within their bodies. That is a thousand times what you have within you. A thousand times doesn't seem that much; you probably think if you pay a high enough price you can accomplish the same state. However, the truth isn't so simple. The purer your bloodline is, the richer it is and the closer to a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline you approach, the more difficult it will be to enhance your bloodline. At that time, even if you absorb 100 drops of Ancient Phoenix blood into your body, it still won't have the effect of a single drop! You must know that the reason Yan Littlemoon could do this was that she found a pool of Ancient Phoenix blood somewhere. Do you know how much Ancient Phoenix blood there must have been in there? It's simply impossible to imagine! Thus, in the ancient Phoenix Clan, the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline can only be obtained through a stroke of fate!"

As Lin Ming listened to Sun Cyprestar, he gained a deeper understanding of the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. The Ancient Phoenix Clan was indeed able to forcefully create a person with a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, but they simply wouldn't do such a thing. The cost of doing that was just far too heavy.

As they spoke, Lin Ming had already penetrated 13,000 miles deep into the Hells of Flame. Here, Lin Ming could feel that his comprehension of the Fire Laws could not allow him to continue any further. The only way would be to use the power of the Heretical God Sprout.

However, that would almost be the same as cheating and it wouldn't be too meaningful for Lin Ming's training. That completely negated the effect of this smelting trial.

Thus, a 13,000 mile distance was Lin Ming's limit.

"Mm? You're stopping here?"

As Sun Cyprestar saw Lin Ming stop here, he was stunned. Huo Yanguang still had a good deal of energy left to spare, but Lin Ming had already reached his limits.

However, this was also reasonable. Lin Ming's comprehension of the Fire Laws was inferior to Huo Yanguang's to begin with. The 18 Hells of Flame was not a test of comprehensive combat strength, but of one's understandings towards the Fire Laws.

In fact, the reason Lin Ming was able to arrive at this step was his thick true essence and solid foundation. Any other normal sixth stage Life Destruction martial artist could never come so deep.

As for Yan Littlemoon, she was already at the third level. Moreover, it was unknown how many thousands of miles more she had travelled into the third level. The difference between them was far too great.

If it weren't for Sun Cyprestar knowing that Lin Ming had obtained the Phoenix Blood Spear and defeated Huo Yanguang, and had done so in a situation where no one believed he could to begin with, he would have thought Lin Ming was a moron who was blabbering nonsense.

"Good. You train here then. This Ancient Phoenix smelting trial will continue for another two years. You have plenty of time remaining. But, let me remind you that Yan Littlemoon's training speed is even faster than your own. She is also two years younger than you, but her cultivation is at the seventh stage of Life Destruction, one stage higher than you."

"Mm, I understand." Lin Ming was well aware that his cultivation speed couldn't be considered number one within Phoenix Cry Palace, but only at the peak. It was normal for him to be worse than Yan Littlemoon in this regard. After all, the first 15 years of his life had nearly been a complete waste in terms of cultivation. As for a talented disciple of the Divine Realm, from birth their body was bathed in all sorts of heavenly materials and they ate various spirit pills and luxurious spirit foods.

Lin Ming stopping here inevitably caused some of Phoenix Cry Palace and Charming Phoenix Palace's disciples to glance at him with surprise. However, he simply didn't care about them at all. He left the group and looked for a quiet place of his own to train. The 18 Hells of Flame had a radius of tens of thousands of miles; the interior was extremely broad and vast. One could casually fly several thousand miles and find any peaceful training location they wished.

Lin Ming soon entered the ethereal martial intent state. Although the fire origin energy here was wild and brutal, it didn't make any sound at all; it seemed quite harmonious. Lin Ming felt as if he had entered his own world with a different space and time. The power of fire blazed through his body. Although he deflected the majority of the power of fire with his protective true essence, a small portion of it rushed into his acupoints and his meridians, burning through his body and blood vessels. If a non-fire-attribute martial artist were to withstand such a fire within their body and blood, they would have long since been scorched to death.

"Mm? This is..."

Lin Ming suddenly discovered that every wisp of fire energy that rushed into his body wasn't strong, but they each contained exquisite Fire Laws. It might be the Concept of Burning Heat, it might be the Concept of Annihilation, it might be the Concept of Creation, or even the Concept of Manifestation... every small wisp of fire energy contained at least one kind of Concept.

Moreover, even for the same Concept, there were still subtle differences among them.

For instance, for the Concept of Annihilation, it could be the explosive force when a giant meteor crashed into the world, or it might be a wave of surging lava that swallowed up a forest and burned it down...

Each of these Concepts had to be resolved by Lin Ming using the corresponding Fire Laws. If he didn't use the Laws then he could only do so with brute force. If he used brute force then he would have to use several dozen times the strength to do so. If he did that then he would exhaust his true essence in just an incense stick of time.

"This 18 Hells of Flame has such a mystical array formation within it. The senior who created this must have been a true genius. He actually devised such a method to allow trial challengers to comprehend the Concept of Fire…"

Chapter 999 – Burn the Body

Chapter 999 – Burn the Body

…

…

…

Lin Ming completely relaxed his body as he focused his mind on resolving every wisp of fire energy and then absorbing them. Every one of these Laws was different, but combined together they faintly painted a picture of the complete Great Dao.

“I understand now… although the Fire Laws are incomparably mysterious, their essence is comprised of elements of the tiniest Laws. These tiny elements are like the imperceptible particles that form all of creation, and yet are extremely simple. According to the texts of the Divine Realm, there aren’t many types of these tiny particles that form all life, but when combined together they can actually evolve into infinite shapes and varieties, forming the 3000 boundless worlds. That is the charm of Laws.”

In that moment, Lin Ming could faintly feel the mysteries and Laws of the world. Although there were only a small number of these tiny particles, they were able to form the vast and boundless universe. In this universe there were celestial bodies, there was space and time, there were mountains, rivers, lakes, birds and beasts, bugs and plants. There were mortals without the strength to chop a chicken and there were martial artists that could move mountains and churn seas. The endless vicissitudes of life, all of the world’s laughter, anger, sorrow, happiness, love, hate, despair, hope, countless births and countless deaths continued in this world. The laws of the jungle where the strong eat the weak, the evolution of the universe where celestial bodies can change, all of this left one feeling drowned in the endless mysteries of the vast and infinite universe.

In front of the universe, a simple human was as unimportant as a mote of dust.

And all of this was composed of these most basic particles. And, the force that controlled the arrangement and interactions of these particles were the Source Laws of the universe.

Metal, wood, water, fire, earth, thunder, wind, time, space, light, darkness, life, death… everyone and everything that existed in this universe corresponded to the Laws. When one's understanding of Laws reached the peak, that was when they could touch upon the very source of the universe!

However, within these Laws, the most basic types were limited in number. But in fact, when they were combined together, they were ever-changing with limitless variations. A simple word of complex wasn't enough to describe them. Through countless years there had been an unimaginable number of supreme elders who had unceasingly perceived these Source Laws, in the hopes that they could identify the essence of the universe's truths and become an immortal king. However, the so-called peak of martial arts continued to remain clouded in mist, impossible to understand!

If there was really someone that could comprehend all the Laws and rules that governed this universe, they could exist beyond the cycle of samsara and become a true god of the world.

As Lin Ming understood this, he suddenly experienced an enlightened feeling. In that moment, his mind shook, and he felt even more closely linked to the Fire Laws and fire origin energy that wrapped around him in the Hells of Flame. He faintly felt as if a great door had begun to swing open before him, and behind this great door lay the endless universe, with the mystical and profound aura of the Great Dao Laws rushing towards him head on.

As Lin Ming was fully concentrated on comprehending the Laws, what he didn't know what that somewhere deep within the Hells of Flame, there was someone eyeing him the entire time.

"This little fellow is not bad. Although his bloodline density is weak, his perception is amazingly rare! No wonder he was willing to change the bet with that little fellow Chu Redcloud."

A faint and ethereal sound echoed out, but no one was able to hear it.

The one who spoke was the Ruby Sovereign, the artifact spirit of the 18 Hells of Flame!

An artifact spirit lived far longer than a human martial artist did. The Ruby Sovereign was an ancient artifact spirit that had lived for countless tens of thousands of years already; he had even existed for longer than Phoenix Cry Palace and Charming Phoenix Palace! So, whether it was Lin Ming or Chu Redcloud, both of them were nothing but little babies in front of him.

"So that's what is going on… this little boy's perception has been enhanced by the Gate of Opening. A martial artist who dual cultivates in body and energy is very rare. Hmm… his Gate of Opening was actually opened to a perfect degree? Unbelievable… billions of years ago when the rules of the Heavenly Dao changed, the ancient body transformation technique slowly faded away from the Divine Realm. There are now very few martial artists who can stumble their way through this dual body and energy cultivation technique, let alone someone that managed to open the Gate of Opening perfectly. Just how did this little boy do this?"

The Ruby Sovereign's interest was suddenly aroused. During the process of opening the Gate of Opening, one had to withstand endless temptations, heart demons, and all sorts of illusions and ghosts that would appear in your spiritual sea. Once you lost your mind, your consciousness would all be beyond saving.

It was already an excellent result to just barely open the Gate of Opening. Those that could perfectly do so were simply nonexistent. To accomplish it, their will had to be as tough as divine metal in order to resist all the temptations and heart demons.

However, when a martial artist opened the Gate of Opening, they had to do so before they attained a divine body. This meant that a martial artist was destined to have low achievements in the aspect of battle spirits when they opened the Gate of Opening.

"This little boy's talent in battle spirits must be beyond extraordinary, that's the only way he could perfectly open the Gate of Opening. No wonder he could have such perception and talent. Unfortunately, his bloodline density is far too lacking. Compared to that Yan Littlemoon girl, he is 108,000 miles away from being able to compare with her. It's just like that Sun Cyprestar said. If these two little kids are able to dual cultivate then that would be interesting indeed! One has an extremely high perception and the other has an extremely pure and rich bloodline. If they could complement each other, then the effect would be… hehe…"

Deep within the Hells of Flame, the Ruby Sovereign revealed a sinister and sadistic smile. His eyes continued to follow Yan Littlemoon and Lin Ming, sighing and praising from time to time. Of course, no one was aware of this. Even Sun Cyprestar and Chu Redcloud, the two middle Divine Lord realm powerhouses, were also unaware.

At this time, Lin Ming had unconsciously entered the ethereal martial intent. He felt as if his soul had left his body and every inch of his body and meridians were resolving the violent power of fire on their own, constantly illuminating the Laws within him.

Everything around was peaceful and serene. The only sound was Lin Ming's slow heartbeat that thumped at intervals like a pendulum.

As time passed, the energy within Lin Ming's body was unconsciously consumed. Even with the Gate of Healing replenishing his energy, it still wasn't enough.

As his energy was consumed, his protective true essence also weakened. More and more fire energy rushed into Lin Ming's body before it was resolved by him.

At the start, he had barely been able to keep up with resolving the Laws and energy. Slowly, the Laws and energy accumulated in Lin Ming's body, raging around as they began to scorch his meridians.

Lin Ming frowned as he felt this. However, he was able to forcefully withstand it by virtue of his powerful body.

Even if his meridians were burnt, he still had the Gate of Healing supporting him. In any case, with the body transformation technique on his side, he didn't fear that he would develop hidden wounds. He grit his teeth and withstood the agonizing pain, suppressing it all with his battle spirit.

"How interesting, I thought that he was about to give up, but he actually managed to last until now. The closer he approaches to his limit and the longer he stays there, the deeper his comprehension of the Laws will be. But now, every second he persists is a great test of his will, strength, and body! Normally, a martial artist would be able to last for less than half an incense stick of time. Even if they know their benefits would be much greater the longer they could persist, they still wouldn't be able to continue."

Deep within the Hells of Flame, the Ruby Sovereign's senses locked onto Lin Ming. Most of the time, the Ruby Sovereign was in a deep slumber; he would only wake up when trial challengers arrived. After all, his responsibility was to protect the trial challengers from being caught and consumed by the wild and tyrannical fire energy within the 18 Hells of Flame.

The Ruby Sovereign thought that Lin Ming would falter at any moment and he was prepared to rescue him. But, he never imagined that even though Lin Ming teetered at his limit, he was able to grit his teeth and continue for an entire incense stick of time. This was already three times longer than an ordinary martial artist.

When a martial artist reached their limits, their protective true essence would weaken and fade away until it vanished. That was the same as placing oneself into a fire. Imagine, if a person was thrown into a stove and burnt alive, just what would that feel like?

Moreover, the fire within the Hells of Flame was dozens, hundreds, and even thousands of times hotter than the burning flames that existed in the world of mortals! This was a true hell of fire, a hell that not even martial artists could endure!

"Mm? He can still persist?" The Ruby Sovereign became more and more surprised. Two incense sticks of time passed and he could see that Lin Ming's protective true essence had already begun to burn down. Then, it shattered. His clothes turned to ashes and his hair was charred by fire. His skin crackled as it began to burn. But, Lin Ming grit his teeth and persisted as before, not uttering a single word!

Any sweat that came out was instantly evaporated into steam by the flames. His entire body was roasted by a burning heat 40 times the temperature of magma. Even the oil was being baked out of his body; just how painful was that?

Lin Ming truly couldn't bear this. At the start he had used the ethereal martial intent to hypnotize himself to ignore the pain. But afterwards, even the ethereal martial intent wasn't enough. The grueling pain forcefully dragged him out of the ethereal martial intent state, forcing him to directly withstand the harrowing pain.

His burnt skin split apart and blood began to leak out. However, that blood evaporated once it touched the air. Every exposed blood vessel was cauterized by the fire. The taste of this sort of pain was enough to make one's mind break down.

But underneath this state, Lin Ming could feel that the benefits he was obtaining were tens of times or even a hundred times better than before!

The mysteries of these basic Fire Laws were burnt into his body with the sizzling flames, directly etching them into his bodily memory!

One was memory of the mind and one was memory of the body; these were extremely different!

Those things that the mind remembered could easily fade away. After all, the Fire Laws were far too intricate. Even a martial artist with extraordinary memory couldn't say that they could completely remember these Fire Laws with one try. But, those things that the body remembered were different. They would form conditioned reflexes that would stay with the body forever, lasting for a lifetime. This was the same even for mortals. If a mortal learnt how to swim, they would always know how to swim. This was the difference between memory of the mind and memory of the body.

Also, when the mind remembered something, a person would have to mull over and recall those memories, passing through various thoughts and delaying for the slightest moment before coming out. But, a bodily memory did not need to be processed by the mind in that manner. Instead, it became instinct! It was how a child learned to write. If they had to think about what brush strokes to make, they would have to ponder for a moment every time. But, if the strokes of a word were imprinted onto the memory of the body, then they would write much faster.

Lin Ming knew this point, that was why he continued to persist even through the unrelenting pain.

“What an amazing little boy, he’s lasted for a quarter hour!”

The Ruby Sovereign had guarded the 18 Hells of Flame for many years and had seen countless peerless talents pass through his trials. But, those individuals that could persist for a quarter hour at their limits were extremely rare!

In this quarter hour, the advantages one could obtain were far more than ten times the advantages they could obtain if they lasted for only half an incense stick of time!

“This little fellow’s willpower has reached a terrifying degree; he doesn’t even seem human. However, no matter how powerful his will is, it is impossible for him to continue on forever. This is because his body itself has a true limit. I estimate he will be able to last for another incense stuck of time.”

Chapter 1000 – Concept Large Success, Blue Lotus Domain

Chapter 1000 – Concept Large Success, Blue Lotus Domain

…

…

…

The Ruby Sovereign was ready to rescue Lin Ming. But, he continued surging past his limits for another two incense sticks of time. This left him incomparably amazed. Just because one's willpower could bear the pain didn't mean that their body could also withstand it. If some people forcefully pushed their willpower past its limits and their bodies couldn't keep up, they would simply fall unconscious.

But Lin Ming didn't have such a situation. This was because his body was already formidable enough. When he last crossed Life Destruction, his body had been tempered by fire energy, and his compatibility with the Fire Laws was extremely high due to this. And, he also dual cultivated body and energy. Even the physical body of a Divine Lord realm powerhouse couldn't compare with Lin Ming's.

"That's right, this little fellow dual cultivates body and energy, so the limits of his body are far greater than those of a normal martial artist. Incredible, this has already lasted for five incense sticks of time. As far as I know, no one has ever managed to reach this step. A formidable willpower, solid foundation, dual body and energy cultivation, all three of these are indispensable and necessary factors. Combined together, they allowed him to achieve this step!

“In these last two incense sticks of time, Lin Ming’s comprehension of Fire Laws has likely been even greater than what he gained during the first quarter hour!”

As the Ruby Sovereign was thinking out loud, a complete half hour passed. Energy constantly accumulated within Lin Ming’s body, like a roiling volcano that was ready to erupt at any moment. His body contained a terrifying strength, and now it was rapidly approaching the point of outbreak!

As the last Law symbol surged into Lin Ming’s meridians, it became the last straw that crushed the camel’s back. Lin Ming’s body suddenly shook and his protective true essence completely shattered. His defenseless body was made to directly bear the brutal and violent impact of fire origin energy!

If this fire origin energy struck his body, then even Lin Ming would end up half dead. And if he continued for much longer then his body would be charred to ashes!

“Hehe, little boy, you finally couldn’t withstand it. If you kept persisting then how could that be? I definitely wouldn’t be feeling too well about that.” The Ruby Sovereign insidiously grinned. But just as he was about to rescue Lin Ming, he suddenly stopped in his movements. The energy filled with the Concept of Creation that he had prepared beforehand suddenly stagnated.

“This is… what’s going on here?”

The Ruby Sovereign’s eyes widened. It never imagined that the crazy and violent fire origin energy that roared into Lin Ming’s body would suddenly be suppressed by some mysterious strength. That mysterious strength actually caused the Ruby Sovereign to feel a slight bit of fear. Although the nature of this mysterious power was very pale and weak, it still contained a vast and limitless atmosphere that seemed to contain the most source Laws of the Great Dao, leaving the Ruby Sovereign dazed in awe.

This awe was like a memory that was etched deep into the very essence of the Ruby Sovereign. As the artifact spirit of a fire-attribute spirit artifact, it had an instinctual feeling of wanting to submit to the Great Dao Fire Laws.

“This power… just what is it?”

.....

As the Ruby Sovereign was shocked, a change was happening to the violent fire origin energy within Lin Ming’s body. Originally, with Lin Ming’s strength and in a situation where he was defenseless, there was simply no way for him to withstand the scorching temperature of the fire energy within the Hells of Flame, even if he tried his best.

But, after comprehending the Laws for half an hour, a slight change occurred to the Heretical God Sprout within Lin Ming’s body. After his physical body reached the limit and he couldn’t withstand the impact of fire origin energy anymore, Lin Ming sunk his thoughts deep into the Heretical God Sprout and diverted all the fire origin energy into the Heretical God Sprout.

In that moment, the Heretical God Sprout blazed with a burning light, sending out dazzling rays of gold, as if it were a golden Bodhi tree undergoing nirvana in a sea of flames. All of the accumulated fire origin energy within his body was completely sucked up by the Heretical God Sprout in a single breath. Then, at the peak of the Heretical God Sprout, new budding leaves slowly stretched out. These small blue leaves slowly unfurled, a deep and vibrant color that was catching to the eyes. Then, these luscious green leaves formed a circle, taking the shape of a tiny blue lotus.

These were blue lotus leaves!

Lin Ming instantly understood that all of the tiny leaves that grew from the Heretical God Sprout were actually a single leaf. They were the representation of the Laws comprehended in the Hells of Flame, and also the representation of large success of the Concept of Creation!

At this point, the Heretical God Sprout now had six leaves; three thunder leaves and three fire leaves. Of these three fire leaves, one was formed at the germination of the Heretical God Seed; it was shaped like a crimson flaming heart. The second leaf had formed after absorbing the condensed Law fragments from the stone tablet left behind by Xiao Daoji; it had the appearance of a square golden-red imperial jade seal. Now, the third leaf was this blue-green leaf that had the appearance of a blue lotus.

These three fire leaves complemented each other's glory and beauty, constantly swallowing up the fire origin energy within Lin Ming's body. Soon, the violently rampaging fire origin energy within his body was cleared out, but this still wasn't the end! The Heretical God Sprout hadn't absorbed enough, so it began to devour the surrounding power of fire all around Lin Ming. A red vortex formed around Lin Ming where a massive amount of fire origin energy was being swallowed up!

Because Lin Ming had left on his own and was at least 10,000 miles from the closest martial artist, the only one who saw this was the Ruby Sovereign. Still, even the Ruby Sovereign was shocked to the point that he couldn't speak. "This is… what's going on here? Even though this child's phoenix bloodline density is so light, how can he have such high compatibility with fire origin energy? This is his first time entering the Hells of Flame, so how did he manage to make such a massive breakthrough? Just what did he do to accomplish this ridiculous feat?"

The Ruby Sovereign thought out loud. Even with his incomparably rich experience and knowledge, he still wasn't able to explain just what phenomenon was occurring within Lin Ming's body. Lin Ming's body seemed to contain an unimaginable power, and by borrowing the strength of the Hells of Flame, he entered into a state of sudden enlightenment and began to crazily absorb energy to make a breakthrough!

Although the Ruby Sovereign had lived for countless tens of thousands of years, the Heretical God Force was an existence that surpassed his understanding. After all, the Ruby Sovereign was only the artifact spirit of a spirit artifact rank magic tool; it simply wasn't able to ever come into contact with something on the level of an Empyrean. And, the Heretical God Force was at least a transcendent divine might!

A transcendent divine might would be born only every million years, several million years, or even longer than that!

Moreover, after some transcendent divine mights were created, they would slowly be lost to time. For instance, the Heretical God Force. If the Heretical God Force hadn't been accidentally obtained by a supreme elder of the Divine Realm as he was exploring the ancient ruins of an Evil God, and if Lin Ming hadn't accidentally obtained the soul fragment of this Divine Realm supreme elder after he had died, then this transcendent divine might would have been lost forever in the universe.

Taking a broad view, it was difficult to find a single transcendent divine might even in the entire Divine Realm. Each and every one was a heaven-shaking world-changing supernatural power. One could infer this from just the Primordius martial intent. Lin Ming had only grasped a third of the Primordius martial intent, and yet it was able to enhance his combat strength to such a degree. The might of the complete Primordius martial intent could be imagined.

And the Heretical God Force was even beyond that of the complete Primordius martial intent!

At the very start of Lin Ming's journey on the road of martial arts, he had the Heretical God Force. But even so, his perception had always been his weakness.

Lin Ming's perception could be considered at most decently good, however, compared to the peak talents of the Divine Realm, the disparity was far too great between them. This was similar to him having treasures but being unable to use them. For instance, when Lin Ming had faced the stone tablet left behind by Xiao Daoji, he had only been to release the Heretical God Force to absorb the Great Dao Law fragments. However, his own comprehension of them was actually limited.

But now, by relying on the grandmist battle spirit, Lin Ming had been able to perfectly open the Gate of Opening. This was an achievement that no genius in the entire Divine Realm could match. Lin Ming's perception had now leapt towards the highest standard.

With a perfect perception combined with the Heretical God Force, a transcendent divine might that was especially useful in cultivating the Laws of Thunder and Fire, these two factors added together were more than the sum of their parts!

Lin Ming had now reached a breakthrough in Laws that he obtained through an accumulation of quantitative changes brought about by qualitative changes. This was a ‘sudden enlightenment’!

The longer the vortex spun around, the more violent it became. It continued for a long time, without any indication of slowing down. The Ruby Sovereign was wholly focused on observing this. As an artifact spirit of Fire Laws, it could feel that within that raging fire energy, countless fragments of Fire Laws began forming, even as they were sucked into the vortex surrounding Lin Ming and swallowed up!

In this massive amount of Law fragments, there was more than just the first three Concepts of the Fire Laws. There were fourth level Concept and fifth level Concept Law fragments. Even though Lin Ming wasn’t able to understand them now, they were still able to lay down a solid foundation for his future comprehension of Laws. This was similar to a martial artist being baptized by the Heavenly Dao as they crossed the ninth stage of Life Destruction. Although Lin Ming’s baptism of Laws was far inferior to the baptism of the Heavenly Dao during Ninefall, there was still a similar effect!

The vortex of flame still continued even after a quarter hour. The Ruby Sovereign sighed as he watched, “Just what kind of lucky chance did this Lin Ming obtain that he could reach this step? This is absolutely not something possible solely due to a high perception. I have seen countless geniuses with amazing talent and perception before. Let alone the previous geniuses, even that little girl Yan Littlemoon has a perception that’s high to an absurd degree, but even she cannot reach this little boy’s level. He is far from breaking through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction and yet he is already being baptized by the Laws. This simply defies the will of the heavens!”

The Ruby Sovereign thought out loud. At this moment, there certainly wasn’t any need to help. Lin Ming had already completely absorbed the fire origin energy within his body, but even that wasn't enough and he had begun to recklessly absorb all the surrounding fire energy in the Hells of Flame. In this situation, how could he possibly need anyone to rescue him?

After half an hour passed, the vortex of fire around Lin Ming slowly began to die down before vanishing completely. Lin Ming was completely naked and his eyes were firmly shut within the Hells of Flame, as if he were deeply sleeping.

And at this time, because all of the surrounding fire origin energy had been cleanly swallowed up by Lin Ming, a vacuum of fire origin energy had been created around him. A tide of fire origin energy rushed to fill the emptiness. Just as it seemed it would swallow up Lin Ming within, a blue-green layer of energy took Lin Ming's dantian as the center and sprung outwards like a wave!

Hu –

Lin Ming was instantly surrounded by the layer of blue energy. The raging fire origin energy smashed into that layer of blue energy before being isolated outside.

The surrounding fire origin energy raged like wild stallions all around, but within that layer of blue energy there seemed to exist another world altogether!

Within the layers of blue energy, life began to appear. Flowers, birds, insects, beasts, even countless spirit plants and trees seemed to rise up into the world. This world was like an immortal fairyland, a paradise within a hell of fire.

"This is... the Blue Lotus Domain! This little boy... he actually comprehended the Blue Lotus Domain so quickly!?" The Ruby Sovereign sputtered out, his face full of horror and shock.

Chapter 1001 – Smelting Trial Rewards

Chapter 1001 – Smelting Trial Rewards

…

…

…

The truth was that comprehending the Blue Lotus Domain wasn't much at all.

When a heroic young elite comprehended the third level Concept of Fire Laws to the peak, and also had great potential and a great destiny upon them, anyone could successfully form the Blue Lotus Domain. As long as they didn't perish on their road, their future achievements wouldn't be low. Thus, the Blue Lotus Domain was considered a type of phenomenon that symbolized someone with the life of an Emperor.

But as things stood, there were countless geniuses within the Ancient Phoenix Clan that had comprehended the Blue Lotus Domain. With a hundred billion clansmen, the base number was simply too great!

The Ruby Sovereign had guarded Fire Spirit Star for many years now and it was difficult to measure how many geniuses had comprehended the Blue Lotus Domain. But, no one had managed to comprehend the Blue Lotus Domain in such a way that left the Ruby Sovereign so surprised!

When Lin Ming first arrived at Fire Spirit Star, the Ruby Sovereign could see that Lin Ming had just traced upon the threshold of the Concept of Creation – he was far from reaching large success. It was inferior to a normal genius disciple, much less those like Yan Littlemoon or Huo Yanguang.

In ordinary circumstances, one had to slowly accumulate understandings for years or even decades to comprehend each level of the Fire Law. Lin Ming's perception was extremely high. With the support of Fire Spirit Star's atmosphere, it would already be good if he could comprehend the Blue Lotus Domain in a year and a half. But now, in his first trip into the Hells of Flame, he had undergone a single period of sudden enlightenment to walk the same distance that should have taken him a year and a half!

How could the Ruby Sovereign not be stupefied by this!

Moreover, the quality of the Blue Lotus Domain that Lin Ming condensed was at the peak of all peaks!

The Ruby Sovereign had impeccable judgment. He had seen countless talents form the Blue Lotus Domain over the years, but there were very few that could compare to Lin Ming's degree.

"The reason that the Blue Lotus Domain was condensed to such a degree should be because of Lin Ming's solid foundation. Once he entered sudden enlightenment, he managed to achieve this. Another reason should be because of that strange and mystical power within his body. After absorbing so many Law fragments, it would be strange if his Blue Lotus Domain didn't reach such a high caliber."

The Ruby Sovereign thought out loud. A state of sudden enlightenment could only be found through a stroke of fate. A single period of sudden enlightenment that lasted for one or two quarter hours of time was the same as a long period of seclusion. But even so, for Lin Ming to produce such an impeccable Blue Lotus Domain after a single period of sudden enlightenment, the Ruby Sovereign thought this was simply incredulous.

As the Ruby Sovereign was wrapped up in his imagination, he saw that Lin Ming's scorched skin, and even the parts where the oil was baked out of his body, began to peel away, revealing new and tender skin beneath. Some places were severely burned with even the meridians and flesh scorched black, but a blue-green energy wrapped around those wounds. The flesh underneath slowly wriggled, glowing with vitality as it regenerated at a speed visible to the eye.

This was the most important aspect of the Blue Lotus Domain – healing. Especially with the Heretical God Sprout supporting him, the healing effect of the Blue Lotus Domain was even better! At this time, within Lin Ming's dantian, the blue lotus-shaped leaf on the Heretical God Sprout began to glow with a misty light. The speed at which his wounds regenerated was actually faster than the healing from the Gate of Healing!

If the Blue Lotus Domain and the Gate of Healing combined together, the effects could be imagined!

Moreover, the Blue Lotus Domain could heal more than just Lin Ming's own injuries – it had a healing effect on anyone within the range of the domain. As long as Lin Ming desired it, he could expend some of his true essence to shroud others in his Blue Lotus Domain, saving them from injury and harm.

"His restorative ability is too extraordinary. However, that should also be because there is the Gate of Healing added on that such an effect is produced. This boy's Blue Lotus Domain can likely even compare with Yan Littlemoon's! And Yan Littlemoon has already begun to touch upon the fourth level Concept of Fire. In this Fire Spirit Star's smelting trial, she should be able to comprehend the fourth level of the Fire Concepts. If Lin Ming wants to catch up to her, he'll have to work hard for it." The Ruby Sovereign thought out loud.

And at this time, Yan Littlemoon had already penetrated 33,000 miles deep into the Hells of Flame!

In fact, this wasn't Yan Littlemoon's limit. The only problem was that if she passed down to the deepest depths she could, she would only be able to stay at that limit for an incense stick of time before she would be forced back. If she stayed at the 33,000 mile area, she would be able to reluctantly absorb the fire origin energy here and comprehend the Fire Laws. In other words, this was the depth limit at which she could reasonably train.

Within the third level, the fire origin energy was no longer lifeless, but had a mind of its own.

Endless fire origin energy turned into vicious beasts and saint beasts that charged towards Yan Littlemoon. But at this time, Yan Littlemoon was similar to a descended goddess. Her entire body was wrapped in flaming golden light. This flaming golden light was similar to the golden light that appeared between Lin Ming's eyebrows when he burnt the blood of the Ancient Phoenix.

But when Lin Ming burnt the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, only a wisp of golden light shot out. As for Yan Littlemoon, her entire body was shining in radiant glory!

When the beasts formed by fire origin energy met this golden light, they immediately melted away, turning into pure energy that was absorbed by Yan Littlemoon.

Compared to Lin Ming, Yan Littlemoon may not have entered the state of sudden enlightenment, but the speed at which she absorbed fire origin energy was a rate Lin Ming could not hold a candle to! The perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline was well known for its strength; how could it be empty talk?

If Lin Ming wanted to reach Yan Littlemoon's speed of absorption, he would have to use the Heretical God Sprout. But, the fire origin energy that the Heretical God Sprout absorbed wasn't his own.

In the 8000 Mile Black Swamp's Nine Heavens Thunder Dominion, The Heretical God Sprout had even absorbed the heavenly retribution divine thunder left behind by Empyrean Thunder Punishment. Afterwards when Lin Ming fought Yan Yun in the final battle, he has used that divine thunder to break through Yan Yun's master move and cause him to suffer deep losses. It had a miraculous effect on the battle. However, this heavenly retribution divine thunder was in the end not part of Lin Ming's own strength. Once he used it up it was impossible to use again.

Thus, the Heretical God Sprout was only a cultivation method in the end. No matter how powerful it was, it could only play a supporting role. It was impossible for him to rely on a single set of cultivation methods to comprehend the source Laws of the universe.

Time passed minute by minute, second by second. Yan Littlemoon training at the 33,000 mile distance was still extremely difficult for her. She quickly reached her limit as fragrant sweat dripped down her body.

This training state continued for two incense sticks of time. Then, with an explosive shattering sound, Yan Littlemoon's protective true essence broke apart. Wild and turbulent fire energy crazily impacted towards her.

However, Yan Littlemoon did not need the Ruby Sovereign to rescue her. An invisible layer of energy emitted from the surface of her body, shielding her from the fire origin energy.

This was Yan Littlemoon's top grade saint artifact vestment. This vestment was also a peak top grade saint artifact; its value was no worse than the Phoenix Blood Spear. With this vestment on, any non-Ninefall Divine Sea master could forget about breaking through this defense. Even if Yan Littlemoon stood still and allowed others to freely strike her, they wouldn't be able to harm a single hair on her body, until both Yan Littlemoon and the top grade vestment's energy was depleted!

"Good, Littlemoon, you have done well!" Chu Redcloud freely sprinkled praise on Yan Littlemoon. "In this smelting trial of junior disciples, whether it was your foundation from the start or your training speed, you are far and ahead number one!"

Those with a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline had a monstrous compatibility with Fire Laws. If others took several years to comprehend the Fire Laws, it would only take Yan Littlemoon several months, if not less. Not just that, but Yan Littlemoon's perception was also exceedingly high. With these two conditions combined together, Chu Redcloud really couldn't imagine how anyone could surpass her in training speed. Moreover, Yan Littlemoon's starting point was higher than the others' to begin with. While most disciples were diligently training in the second level, Yan Littlemoon had already penetrated 33,000 miles deep into the Hells of Flame. If she didn't care about training, she could even reach a depth of 35,000 miles!

"Aunty, in another month I should be able to reach the 36,000 mile depth. After that is the 39,000 mile depth and then after that is the fourth level!

"Aunty, please rest assured. I will definitely win that Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron for you. That smelly nincompoop Lin Ming is still stuck in the second level! Hehe, I want to see just how he'll compete with me! With the Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron's help, Aunty will easily break into the late Divine Lord realm, and you might even reach perfection of the late Divine Lord realm. There may even be a chance that you will break into the Holy Lord realm and truly control the Heavenly Dao!"

Yan Littlemoon blithely said. Even so, Chu Redcloud was all smiles as she listened.

"Haha, you little girl, you still want to trick me with your flattery? Breaking through to the late Divine Lord realm isn't a problem, but reaching the peak late Divine Lord realm is extremely difficult. As for breaking past the Divine Lord realm, the chances of that are too faint for someone like me. There are countless Divine Lord realm powerhouses that cannot pass that moat. Compared to that mountain, even the ninth stage of Life Destruction seems weak.

"However, I am confident in you, Littlemoon. You really have potential to break through the limit of the Divine Lord realm! However, I have to remind you again, do not look down on that Lin Ming boy. If he was able to defeat the ninth stage Life Destruction Huo Yanguang with a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation, then he definitely has his strengths. Even if Lin Ming loses in this smelting trial to you, that may only be in the aspect of Fire Laws. In terms of comprehensive combat strength, I fear he is no weaker than you are! Do not forget, your cultivation is higher than his by a single stage of Life Destruction."

"Of course I know that. Humph, you also shouldn't forget that I am younger than he is! The reason my cultivation is one stage of Life Destruction higher than his is all because of my diligent and torturous training. If I reached the seventh stage of Life Destruction two years faster than him, then I can reach the Divine Sea realm three years ahead of him. Then, when I reach Divine Transformation or the Divine Lord realm, my lead against him will become greater and greater! I do not believe that with my perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline my cultivation speed will be lower than his!

Yan Littlemoon pursed her lips. She acknowledged Lin Ming's talent in combat, but in terms of cultivation speed, there was no way for Lin Ming to defeat her.

"Mm, what you said is right Littlemoon. Very well, this round of the Hells of Flame smelting trial will continue for a few more days. We should leave soon. That's right, as a junior disciple there will be rewards for you breaking into the third level. Although they aren't worthy of mentioning to you."

"Rewards? What rewards?" As Yan Littlemoon heard the word 'rewards', she suddenly perked up.

"Haha, just a single drop of phoenix plume blood sent down from the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters. It is intended as a reward for those junior disciples with excellent results."

"What! That's too cheap!" Yan Littlemoon already had a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Why would she still care about a single drop of phoenix plume blood now?

"You certainly wouldn't care about the rewards for entering the third level. But if a junior disciple can enter the fourth, fifth, or even sixth level, the rewards will become exponentially greater, to the point where it can make others go crazy. Not just you, but even I would be tempted by them. You must rush ahead with all your strength. The further you can go, the better your rewards will be. And after your first smelting trial is over, you will not be able to experience such treatment again!"

Chapter 1002 – Totem Tower

Chapter 1002 – Totem Tower

…

…

…

The Ancient Phoenix Clan placed the greatest importance upon the junior disciples. Only the junior disciples had the greatest potential. And to those disciples with great potential, the Ancient Phoenix Clan was willing to generously reward them.

No matter what hall the disciples came from, they would all be on even ground the first time they entered the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. If they were able to fully reveal their talent and potential, they would be able to enjoy great rewards from the Ancient Phoenix Clan. However, if they couldn't grasp this chance then they would be eliminated from consideration, and later they might not even earn the qualifications to participate in future Ancient Phoenix smelting trials.

And in truth, after a smelting trial was completed, 99% of the disciples would be eliminated. These people would mostly stop at the Divine Transformation realm, and they would reach the end of their lives after 20,000-30,000 years.

The first testing round of the 18 Hells of Flame only lasted for several days. On the last day, Lin Ming completely gathered his thoughts and began to rush as deep into the Hells of Flame as he could. Without using the Heretical God Force and without using the grandmist space, he wanted to see how many miles he could penetrate into the Hells of Flame.

Gathering his energy, Lin Ming rushed downwards at full speed.

15,000 miles…

16,000 miles…

The raging fire origin energy continually bombarded Lin Ming. However, all of this energy was blocked out by the Blue Lotus Domain. Once the devastating energy entered the Blue Lotus Domain, it was actually transformed into blue-green creation energy. This creation energy was astoundingly gentle as it entered his meridians and was easily absorbed by him.

Up to 18,000 miles, Lin Ming felt the entire process was extremely relaxed. But as he reached 19,000 miles, he suddenly felt a massive increase in pressure.

At this distance, the temperature would rise every 100 miles he traversed. The fire origin energy heavenly winds also became far more turbid and fierce. Lin Ming finally understood just what impact Yan Littlemoon had faced when she reached this distance.

“The perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline really does live up to its fame.” Lin Ming exclaimed. As he reached 19,800 miles, the Blue Lotus Domain that surrounded him was compressed by the fire origin energy to three inches away from his body, unable to expand any further out. His protective true essence had also reached its limit; this was the deepest that he could go.

Lin Ming wasn’t in a hurry. There was a great deal of time until the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial ended; he could still slowly catch up.

At this moment, a loud sound echoed throughout the entire 18 Hells of Flame. The first stage of the Hells of Flame smelting trial had ended. All disciples were required to leave the 18 Hells of Flame and enter the Totem Tower.

Fire Spirit Star’s smelting trial was concentrated into two locations: one was the 18 Hells of Flame, and the other was the Totem Tower.

Only those disciples that reached at least 5000 miles deep into the 18 Flames of Hell had the qualifications to enter the Totem Tower.

The Totem Tower was a place used to store Ancient Phoenix Testaments, totem stones, and chaos stones. When Lin Ming was at Timeworn Phoenix City, the area where the totem stones were located was also similar.

But, the totem stones and chaos stones stored within Fire Spirit Star's Totem Tower were of much richer variety and quality. A massive number of totem stones here were left behind by past Patriarchs of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. There were even many complete sets. When these sets were combined, they produced magnificent vast images of mountains and rivers, the greatest of which was 100 feet wide and tall. In Timeworn Phoenix City, the largest totem stone Lin Ming saw was only a square foot – they were simply incomparable.

At this time, all disciples with the necessary qualifications had converged in front of the Totem Tower. Fire Spirit Star's Totem Tower was a hundred miles tall. It was extremely grand and magnificent when compared to structures that mortals built, but compared to the 18 Hells of Flame, it wasn't anything at all.

"All young trial challengers, you have done well. You have managed to earn the qualifications to enter the Totem Tower. Before entering, I will first hand out rewards to the most outstanding disciples."

In front of the many disciples, a black-robed messenger slowly floated down from the Totem Tower. He was the guardian of Fire Spirit Star. He was not an artifact spirit but a human, and also part of one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's most unique clans, the Justice Clan.

"Reward?"

As the junior disciples heard this, they were stunned. They hadn't known that there would also be rewards passed out in the 18 Hells of Flame.

"Hehe, of course the 18 Hells of Flame smelting trial has rewards. During every Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, headquarters will pass out immense rewards. Depending on how great your ability is, your rewards will be equally great! And of you all, the junior disciples who have come here for the first time have the most luxurious rewards. Starting from the third level, every 5000 miles you reach will have rewards. The further you go, the better the rewards. If you can rush to the fifth level or even the sixth level of the 18 Hells of Flame, the rewards will be rich enough to make any of you go crazy. There is Ancient Phoenix blood, top grade saint artifacts, heavenly materials, Fire Elementals, source strength left behind by old Palace Masters before they underwent nirvana, Law fragments, and all sorts of other rewards of which you can choose depending on your strength!"

As the black-robed messenger spoke, many senior disciples who had already participated in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial several times revealed envious looks. This sort of treatment was only given to the junior disciples. As for the senior disciples who had come to Fire Spirit Star multiple times already, the degree of rewards they received were much smaller.

"Enough. I shall now start passing out rewards. First will be the senior disciples. White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun have entered the eleventh level of the Hells of Flame. They will each be rewarded one top grade saint artifact!"

To a disciple on the level of White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun, they definitely did not lack top grade saint artifacts. But, it wasn't easy to obtain another top grade saint artifact. Among the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, there wasn't anybody that hated having too many top grade saint artifacts.

However, this revealed the differences between the degree of rewards between the junior disciples and the senior disciples. The senior disciples had to enter the eleventh level to be rewarded with a top grade saint artifact. They weren't like the junior disciples who had greater rewards every 5000 miles.

"Next will be the junior disciples. The only one who obtained rewards is Yan Littlemoon. Yan Littlemoon has managed to reach 6000 miles deep into the third level of the Hells of Flame, and she has earned rewards for entering the third level as well as rewards for reaching another 5000 miles after that. The prize is a single drop of phoenix plume blood as well as a high-grade saint artifact. Of course, you may exchange them for treasures of equivalent value.”

After the black-robed messenger spoke, the disciples of the three branch palaces were shocked. Yan Littlemoon had actually managed to penetrate 6000 miles deep into the third level! They thought that Yan Littlemoon had just barely managed to enter the third level; they never imagined that she would continue so far. That sort of achievement was simply impossible to imagine!

“This Yan Littlemoon is too fierce! She reached 6000 miles deep into the third level! I just managed to enter the second level. This sort of difference is…”

A Praying Phoenix Palace disciple gulped. He was a disciple of Praying Phoenix Palace’s Phoenix Hall and was considered an outstanding individual amongst his peers. But when it came to Yan Littlemoon, it was simply impossible to compare them.

“No joke. The gap is just too great. This is the first time she entered the Hells of Flame, and yet besides her, no one else managed to obtain rewards. That includes even our Praying Phoenix Palace’s Xiao Whitesnow, Phoenix Cry Palace’s Lin Ming, and all the other Ninefall Divine Sea geniuses. No one among them was able to enter the third level; they were all defeated by Yan Littlemoon!”

“The perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline lives up to its name. There’s no need to mention Yan Littlemoon starting even farther than we did, but in the next two years of training, I fear her progress will soar into the heavens and the gap between us will only become greater!”

The disciples of the three branch palaces discussed amongst themselves. This was a result that they couldn’t even be envious of if they wanted to. Against Yan Littlemoon, all these disciples felt powerless and defeated, as if they would never be able to catch up to her.

And at this time, Yan Littlemoon had started to pout, not seeming happy at all. This was a result that was natural for her to obtain, but the rewards were simply too junky. She had no interest at all in a high-grade saint artifact and a drop of phoenix plume blood.

Near Yan Littlemoon, Chu Redcloud smiled and said, “There indeed aren’t many rewards in the Hells of Flame’s third level. This is because most disciples will be able to enter the third level after one year in the smelting trial and similarly obtain these rewards. Thus, it’s impossible to reward anything that’s too valuable. The difference will truly show up at the fourth and fifth levels.”

The Ancient Phoenix Clan’s reasoning was to focus resources on the most extraordinary of talents. This was the practice that nearly all sects followed. As they said, the best steel should be used on the sword’s edge.

Thus, upon reaching the fourth and fifth levels, the degree of rewards rose by a dramatic scale! Of course, amongst the junior disciples of the three branch palaces, only the rarest and most amazing of individuals could obtain them.

This was Yan Littlemoon’s first time entering the Hells of Flame and she had gone 6000 miles deep into the third level. It was already a settled matter that she would enter the fourth and fifth levels. There might even be a faint hope that she could enter the sixth level!

“Alright. All disciples enter the Totem Tower and choose a totem stone that you wish to perceive through meditation! The totem stones of Totem Tower have been left behind by previous Great Elders and Patriarchs of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. They are divided into three ranks of mortal, earth, and heaven. There are also the most source chaos stones amongst them. Now, you shall enter according to the results you obtained in the first round of the Hells of Flame smelting trial. The first one to enter and choose will be Yan Littlemoon. Then, the disciples that entered the Hells of Flame’s second level will choose, and finally the disciples that entered the Hells of Flame’s first level will choose.”

The black-robed messenger led the many disciples into Totem Tower. As Lin Ming entered Totem Tower, he immediately felt an incomparably rich fire origin energy rush over him, leaving his heart racing.

The walls of Totem Tower were all a vivid fire red. They had been built with fire spirit jade, and the crystalline structures glowed with light. Every brick of the tower was sealed with an array formation. They were able to automatically absorb fire origin energy from Fire Spirit Star. As one investigated them, they could feel endless flames burning within.

The areas deep within the Totem Tower were covered with layers of space mazes and time mazes. Each maze was connected with encrypted array formation portals, and many paths led to illusions. There were countless array formation traps that littered the tower. Without a guide, if one went just a single step off track then they would be lost forever within the mazes of space and time, unable to come out.

“What rich and pure fire origin energy. Even if I didn’t come to meditate on the totem stones, just training here would give me twice the results for half the effort.”

“Indeed. This Totem Tower is one of the most precious treasures of our three branch palaces. Although it isn’t a spirit artifact, its value is actually above that of an ordinary spirit artifact. In order to construct it, there were countless fire-attribute materials that were used in doing so.

As the junior disciples of the three branch palaces saw this scene within the Totem Tower, all of them sighed in praise. Just training in this place could be considered a lucky chance.

The black-robed messenger led the disciples through the layers of twisting space. Finally, they stopped in front of a magnificent main hall. He said, “We’ve arrived. You will now begin to choose which totem stone you wish to meditate on. The first one to choose will be Yan Littlemoon!”

Chapter 1003 – 100 Foot Royal Skyseal

Chapter 1003 – 100 Foot Royal Skyseal

…

…

…

The Totem Tower contained a collection of chaos stones and totem stones. The chaos stones were a kind of natural totem stone that were formed within the primordial chaos as the universe formed; they contained the inherent source Laws of the universe.

But the totem stones were carved by senior supreme elders who had spent a great deal of effort to do so. They contained the understandings that these supreme elders had towards the Great Dao Laws.

For the Ancient Phoenix Clan, the totem stones they meditated on only concerned the Fire Laws. The Fire Laws had a total of nine levels of Concepts. If one could understand these Concepts to the limit then they could even burn down the world.

Although the totem stones from Totem Tower were mostly carved by past Patriarchs, they were also separated into those that were better and those that were worse. The poorer totem stones might be casually carved by a Patriarch, and the Laws and Concepts they contained might be lacking. But for those excellent totem stones, they might be masterworks of an Ancient Phoenix Clan Patriarch that took painstaking effort and hundreds of years to complete. They might be several tens of feet or even a hundred feet large. That was a size and quality that ordinary totem stones could not compare with.

However, only one trial challenger could be meditating on a totem stone at any given time. This was because when a trial challenger was meditating on the totem stones, they had to fuse their own senses into it and combine their consciousness with the Law fragments within. If two people were to simultaneously do this, they would interfere with each other and it would result in a great deal of wasted effort.

Thus, the priority in choosing a totem stone was extremely important. The higher quality totem stone someone could select, the more beneficial it would be for the speed of their cultivation.

"So it really is Yan Littlemoon who chooses first."

"Of course. Priority in choosing totem stones only looks at talent and the results of the smelting trial. Yan Littlemoon has a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, and her results were much better than ours, so it's only natural that she goes first. I bet that she will choose the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal; that is Totem Tower's best totem stone!"

The so-called 100 Foot Royal Skyseal was a totem stone that the 18th Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan had carved after spending an entire 360 years to do so. The totem stone was 100 foot wide and tall, and it was an earth-shaking treasure of Fire Spirit Star's Totem Tower! Although this was the first time that many disciples had attended this Fire Spirit Star smelting trial, they had already heard of the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. It was something that all of these disciples longed for in their dreams, even if they knew it was impossible for them to have the chance to perceive it.

"Yan Littlemoon, you have one hour to select either a totem stone or a chaos stone. You may start now."

"No need, I will choose the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal!" Yan Littlemoon faintly smiled as she spoke clearly for all to hear. In fact, like some other disciples, she had already studied the data on the different totem stones that were at Totem Tower before she arrived here. Since she had already made her choice, there simply wasn't any need for her to look. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal was at least 30% superior to the next best totem stone in terms of meditative effects. Since this was the case, why wouldn't she choose it?

"She really chose the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal!"

"The best totem stone was chosen by Yan Littlemoon. Others can only choose the ones that haven't been chosen. Compared to the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal, the other heaven-step totem stones are far inferior. I wonder which ones Lin Ming and Xiao Whitesnow will choose. Lin Ming has yet again been cast away by Yan Littlemoon!"

"Yeah, this Yan Littlemoon's foundation was originally much more solid than Lin Ming's, moreover, she also has the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. It was impossible for him to compare to her in training speed, but now she even chose the best totem stone, the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. How could Lin Ming possibly have any hope of winning?"

"There wasn't any hope to begin with. This is how the Ancient Phoenix Clan raises talents; the best resources are focused on the best disciples. If they can manage to raise someone on the level of a Palace Master, that is far more valuable than raising 100 ordinary Divine Lord realm powerhouses! Thus in every Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, they only have a single totem stone that rises above all others. The rest are simply too inferior! Now Yan Littlemoon is the greatest focus target for raising in this smelting trial, and we are only collateral thoughts..." A disciple sighed. Even under the same circumstances he would be cast insurmountably away by Yan Littlemoon, let alone in a situation where their circumstances were so different.

"The 100 Foot Royal Skyseal, are you sure?" The black-robed messenger wasn't surprised, but he asked again in accordance with tradition.

"I'm sure!" Yan Littlemoon said, glancing at Lin Ming with a bragging light in her eyes.

But Lin Ming didn't look back at her. At this time, his head was lowered. It was unknown just what he was thinking.

"Alright. Then, Xiao Whitesnow, Lin Ming, you two may go and choose." The black-robed messenger looked towards Lin Ming and Xiao Whitesnow.

Xiao Whitesnow was standing beside Lin Ming. He glanced at Lin Ming and wryly smiled, shaking his head. “Brother Lin, if you will. Let’s go and have a look. Although I don’t want to say it, I must admit that we might have lost in this round of the smelting trial. Among Totem Tower’s totem stones, besides the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal, the other totem stones are far worse. Thus we have no need to struggle with each other; we can slowly choose whichever one we want.”

Xiao Whitesnow slowly said. Then, he walked towards the main hall. Lin Ming remained calm and followed him.

The ancient and solemn totem hall had a gilded bronze door directly in the front. When this door was opened, the aura of the Great Dao Laws came surging outwards!

Behind this door was a separate dimension of time and space. Within this dimension, there were countless large and small totem stones floating in the air, both close and far away. There were ones that were dozens of feet large and ones that were only a few feet small.

These totem stones were mostly carved from extremely exotic and bizarre materials. Some were made from an unknown type of spirit jade, filled with fire origin energy. Some were carved from metal that was rarely found between the heavens and earth, able to be forged into spirit artifacts. There were even some carved from divine stone, and this stone originally had the mysteries of the world represented in the stone’s texture.

All kinds of rare materials were carved with the Great Dao Fire Laws. They resonated with each other, bathing and enhancing each other’s light and beauty, causing all who saw them to be shocked!

Normally, the larger a totem stone was, the more Laws it would contain. And in this separate dimension of space and time, the most obvious totem stone was a square one located in the dead center of the space. It was 100 feet tall and wide, and it stood upright with sharp and defined corners. This was the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal!

The 100 Foot Royal Skyseal contained the complete first seven Concepts of the Fire Laws, part of the eighth level Concept, and even slightly traced upon the ninth level Concept.

This totem stone still wasn’t able to completely manifest the eighth and ninth level Concepts. This was because the one who carved the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal hadn’t been able to completely understand the mysteries of the last two Concepts.

Although the junior disciples present couldn’t even perceive the fourth level Concept, that didn’t mean it was completely impossible or useless. The effect of the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal was far superior to the other totem stones’. This was just like gathering spirit essence stones from different spirit essence stone mines. Although it was impossible to fully excavate these mines, digging through a top grade spirit essence stone mine was still much better than digging through an ordinary spirit essence stone mine.

Xiao Whitesnow looked at the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal floating in the air, his face filling with envy and desire. As for Lin Ming, he glanced at it once before no longer bothering with it. His eyes slowly swept over the totem stones left behind by these Ancient Phoenix Clan seniors. Finally, his gaze fell upon the chaos stones.

Chaos stones were totems naturally formed in the chaos of the forming universe. The natural evolution of source energy had been left behind in the traces of the chaos stones. They were considered objects that directly peered into the source of the Great Dao.

Chaos stones carried with them the history from the formation of the universe. They were considered history books of the universe!

If one could fully comprehend these chaos stones, they would be able to see the history of the forming universe and the evolution of Laws. By completely comprehending these chaos stones, one could become someone with one of the deepest comprehensions of Laws in the entire Divine Realm!

However, it was far too difficult to meditate on these chaos stones. As natural objects, they hadn’t been processed by human hands, and they remained prohibitively obscure and difficult to understand. In addition, countless billions of years had passed since the forming of the universe. Grandmist energy had more or less disappeared from the world, and there was nowhere to find it. Wasn't wanting to meditate on the source Laws of the forming universe easier said than done?

So, even though chaos stones were incomparably precious, the truth was that most chaos stones were only gathered for a collection display. Some Divine Realm supreme elders who encountered a bottleneck in their comprehension of Laws would meditate on these chaos stones, hoping to encounter some inspiration and be suddenly enlightened.

As for these disciples of lower boundaries, they would generally not choose to meditate on the chaos stones. As disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, they excelled and focused on Fire Laws. But, these chaos stones served as the basis for all Laws. They were etched with the rules of revolution that preceded the five elements. If they tried to meditate on them, just how much would they actually be able to learn?

Thus for all these years, of the 12 chaos stones stored in Totem Tower, only those Divine Transformation realm disciples like White Daohong would choose to occasionally look over these chaos stones. However, it was only looking at them for a month or two; they would never choose to do so for an extended period of time.

Xiao Whitesnow followed Lin Ming's line of sight and was startled for a moment. He was a bit surprised as he asked, "Brother Lin, you aren't interested in these chaos stones, right? These things might be known as objects that contain the source of the Great Dao, but the truth is that it is just far too difficult to comprehend them. To the likes of us, their level is far too high. There were genius disciples that tried to perceive something about them before, but in the end they all failed."

As the saying said, the Great Dao was the simplest concept. But in truth, all the complex variations and diverse wonders of the universe could be reduced to the simplest attributes. Those things that seemed simple might not be simple at all.

"I'm only taking a casual look. I thank Brother Xiao for the advice." Lin Ming's impression towards Xiao Whitesnow was quite good. This person was relatively low key, and the advice he gave him came from a good heart with no dark intentions behind them.

Lin Ming slowly approached the chaos stones. Totem Tower had a total of 12 chaos stones, the largest of which were ten feet in size. Compared to the countless shining totem stones that were carved from all sorts of heavenly materials, these chaos stones seemed very plain. One could even call them rough!

The ash gray chaos stones looked like ordinary stone. The depths of the patterns and lines within the chaos stones varied; there were even some parts with deep cracks. They looked as if they had been slowly eroded by wind and frost over a long time.

But in these rough traces, Lin Ming could actually feel an inexplicably familiar feeling. This feeling seemed to be close to him, as if it were a profound and majestic memory that had been engraved into his very bones.

"This is grandmist aura..."

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. He slowly closed his eyes and entered an ethereal state...

Chapter 1004 – The 12 Chaos Stones

Chapter 1004 – The 12 Chaos Stones

…

…

…

Lin Ming immersed himself within the chaos stones. He soon entered a selfless state and lost sense of everything around him.

Xiao Whitesnow was a bit stunned as he watched from the side. They were only given several quarter hours to choose a totem stone and they had to make their choice within that time. There were still many others waiting outside. If everyone took too long then it would take several days and nights for all the geniuses of the three branch palaces to choose their totem stones.

"Brother Lin, you really aren't planning to choose the chaos stones right? We don't have much time left." Xiao Whitesnow tentatively asked. But, Lin Ming didn't reply. His consciousness was still immersed within the chaos stones, feeling the boundless and ancient grandmist atmosphere coming from them.

This was the taste of the years. Carved at the forming of the universe, these chaos stones had accumulated the infinite years of time. They were objects that had existed longer than anything else in the world. Every trace upon the chaos stone told a story about the myriad changes of the universe. They recorded the birth of countless celestial bodies, their glory, their radiance, and even their death!

At the same time, this chaos stone also carried it with the aura of endless space. This universe was truly infinite. 3000 boundless worlds and the 3000 Great Worlds of the Divine

Realm did not account for the entirety of the universe! Within this world, there were countless mystic realms and too many unknown enigmas and riddles that were waiting for mankind to explore. A simple Law could evolve into countless mysterious and limitless incomprehensible phenomena. Even an Empyrean would find it difficult to fully understand all the Laws of the universe.

The universe with its three axis held infinite space. From ancient times until now, countless eons had passed and would continue to pass without end! The largest of the 12 chaos stones was a 10 foot square; it was only 1% of the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal's size. But, the mysteries contained within were everlasting and interminable. It was not what the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal could ever compare with.

That wasn't to say the one who carved the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal was insufficient in boundary. In truth, the weakest of the Ancient Phoenix Clan Patriarchs was a powerful Holy Lord level existence, and the most outstanding amongst them neared becoming a World King. The one who carved the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal was an existence that approached a World King. This existence had used up 360 years of time to carve the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. From this alone, the number of mysteries within could be imagined!

But, no matter how powerful that Patriarch had been, he was still a martial artist and he still wasn't able to compare with an Empyrean. And an Empyrean couldn't compare with the universe! This was because what an Empyrean perceived was the Laws of the universe!

The chaos stones were carved by the universe itself! How could a totem stone carved by human hands be comparable to a chaos stone carved from the universe?

Thus, this 10 foot square chaos stone recorded the most source Laws of the universe. In just Fire Laws alone, it was far more profound and mystical than the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal!

The reason that Lin Ming could faintly feel the endless mysteries within these chaos stones was not because his perception was high. In fact, there were countless geniuses within the Divine Realm with abnormally high perception, but there had never been a heroic young elite among them who could sense the mysteries within the chaos stones during the Life Destruction realm.

The only reason Lin Ming was able to accomplish this was that he had once entered into the Road of Emperor’s grandmist space. The opportunities he gained there were the equivalent of inheriting a portion of Empyrean Primordius’ inheritance!

Lin Ming looked over every chaos stone. His soul had entered into a deep empty state.

And in Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, the nearly gold level battle spirit trembled. A hazy mist condensed around the spear-shaped battle spirit. That was the elementary form of grandmist energy!

Grandmist was primal chaos. When the universe was forming, before the heavens and earth had been formed, the universe had been filled with energy and impossibly dense matter. This was grandmist energy.

A wisp of grandmist energy could crush a star!

This was because if a star was condensed and turned into grandmist energy, it would only be the size of a walnut!

Lin Ming could feel that this chaos stone seemed to form a resonance with the grandmist battle spirit in his spiritual sea. This sort of resonance allowed him to swim within the mysteries of Laws within the chaos stone, deriving sustenance from within.

“This is the feeling of yin yang!”

Lin Ming’s mind stirred. The first chaos stone only contained two black and white stripes. These stripes curved and twisted together like twin snakes. When he first looked at them, he couldn’t identify what these abstract lines were. But, as he sank his consciousness into them, he felt as if he could actually make out the sundering of the universe when yin and yang both split apart and formed.

“Atlas World’s chaos stone number one is the Yin Yang Chaos Stone. It contains the Yin Yang Laws…” The name of this chaos stone emerged from within Lin Ming’s mind. These 12 chaos stones did not have illustrious names like those totem stones left behind by supreme elders of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. For instance, the Extreme Dao Tablet, 100 Foot Royal Skyseal, and all the others with their wonderful names.

These chaos stones were only numbered from one to 12, with their respective domains announcing them.

“Chaos stone number two, the Endless Years Chaos Stone, it contains the power of endless years!”

Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred. Chaos stone number two recorded the passing of time. On the surface of this chaos stone was inscribed the power of time. Compared to the traces on the Yin Yang Chaos Stone, the traces formed from the power of time were even more ethereal and faint. As he casually swept over them, the phantom images were produced in his spiritual sea. But as he investigated more carefully, they became far more faint until they finally vanished from his mind without a trace of having ever been there! This was as uncertain as time itself. Although the past couldn’t be altered, it could still be buried in the sands of history. If one tried to look, they could see that the future was misty and uncertain, hidden behind infinite variables. These variables were endless, to a degree that even an Empyrean could not solve them!

“Chaos stone number three, Universe Space Chaos Stone. This chaos stone contains the boundlessness of space!”

The element that paired with time was space. Lin Ming’s grandmist space was able to annihilate all Laws, but its effects against the Laws of Space and Time were actually greatly weakened. Time and Space were known as the most mysterious Laws for a reason. Before the universe had formed, time and space were compressed within the grandmist. At this time, the universe didn’t have the Concepts of Space and Time. But after the universe formed, before yin and yang separated, before the world was sundered open, and before the five elements were created, space and time had already existed. They had existed before the yin yang primal chaos!

On the Universe Space Chaos Stone, the traces were shallow and deep, long and short. Some lines diverged to the limit of the chaos stone, as if their end lay somewhere in the endless void. Some lines ended and collapsed within a single spot, as if the space inherent had returned to a point of singularity. The many mysteries were impossible to clearly see.

“Chaos stone number four, the Five Elements Chaos Stone, it contains the power of the five elements!”

The power of the five elements was birthed at the final stage of the creation of the universe. When the universe evolved, first there was chaos, then there was space and time, then there was yin yang, then there were five elements, and finally celestial bodies were formed. On these celestial bodies, all forms of life were bred.

Although the Five Element Laws didn’t appear to point towards the source of the universe like yin yang and chaos, this didn’t mean that they weren’t mysterious. In fact, things that came later may have been even more complex.

The power of the five elements; metal, wood, water, fire, earth, as well as wind and thunder that were derived from them. Every single one of them was the most direct application of energy. In terms of speed, in terms of destructive power, in terms of regeneration, or even in terms of defense, each of these elements had reached the peak in some aspect. In just these extreme points, the power of the five elements was the most incomparably simple Laws of the Great Dao. In order for source Laws to be converted into striking power, they first had to pass through the power of the five elements.

“Chaos stone number five, the Star Chaos Stone, it contains the power of the stars…”

Lin Ming continued to look over the chaos stones. Stars existed all over the universe. The power of stars was the power to annihilate all matter. Although they seemed weak and not dangerous, that was because they were too far away. If one approached them, the power was incomparable! Not just that, the stars contained the winding path of destiny. This was because the movement of and rotation of stars contained the Heavenly Dao. By understanding their movements and positions, one could learn to faintly see through the fog of the future.

“Sixth chaos stone, All Life Chaos Stone, it contains the Laws of Life…”

Lin Ming continued to look through all 12 chaos stones, immersing himself in their secrets until he finally woke up from his ethereal condition. As his consciousness perked up, he found that Xiao Whitesnow had already been calling out to him for a long time.

“Brother Lin, hello, can you hear me? It’s time for us to leave. Have you chosen a totem stone yet?”

As Lin Ming heard Xiao Whitesnow’s voice, a reflective and contemplative feeling washed over him. It was like being within the chaos stones was a completely different time and space.

Xiao Whitesnow saw Lin Ming’s confused look and couldn’t help but say, “Brother Lin, I want to advise you that while these chaos stones are profound and mysterious, they are simply not practical at all. We are mainly involved in perceiving the Concepts of Fire, and these chaos stones are far too large and expansive. If you want to meditate on them you will need to expend a great deal of effort to just understand a tiny bit. Even then, you might not be able to use these understandings on the Concept of Fire.”

Xiao Whitesnow was aware that Lin Ming hadn’t looked at any totem stones, thus he reminded Lin Ming out of kindness. He certainly didn’t know of Lin Ming’s luck or fortune. In his mind, although Lin Ming was indeed talented, that talent mostly manifested in his combat strength. As for his perception, that was relatively normal, otherwise how could his understanding of Fire Laws be so bad?

If Xiao Whitesnow had to be extremely blunt about this situation, then he would say that Lin Ming was a simple-minded man with a very strong body. Of course, Lin Ming being simple-minded was only in comparison to peak talents such as Yan Littlemoon. Even Yan Littlemoon wasn't able to perceive these chaos stones, much less Lin Ming.

He naturally wouldn't believe that Lin Ming would have a deep impression and understanding of these chaos stones. "Brother Lin, I know that you haven't chosen yet but our time limit is over and we must leave. How about this, if you trust me then I can recommend you a totem stone that will undoubtedly be good for you. What do you think?"

Among Totem Tower's totem stones, besides the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal, the other heaven-step totem stones weren't too different in quality. Xiao Whitesnow had given a cursory glance over them just now and had settled on three or four of them. In any case, he was only able to choose one, so recommending one to Lin Ming as a good way to befriend him was fine also.

Lin Ming knew that Xiao Whitesnow was trying to be helpful. He smiled and said, "No need Brother Xiao, I've already chosen."

"Okay, then let's go." Xiao Whitesnow thought that Lin Ming might have already read up on these totem stones beforehand and had made his decision long ago. It didn't matter too much in any case.

He left Totem Tower with Lin Ming.

At this time, outside of Totem Tower, the disciples of the three branch palaces were waiting. The black-robed messenger stood high above a platform outside Totem Tower and patronizingly looked down at Lin Ming and Xiao Whitesnow.

"You two, have you made your choice?"

Chapter 1005 – Lin Ming's Choice

Chapter 1005 – Lin Ming's Choice

…

…

…

"We have already chosen, Lord Messenger." Xiao Whitesnow said. He was satisfied with his own choice of totem stone. Although it was a bit regrettable that it couldn't compare with the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal, it did match up with his Concepts more. It could be considered passable.

"Mm. Then speak out what you have chosen. Once you have made your choice you cannot change it, so think well over your decision." The black-robed messenger said without expression.

"Reporting to Lord Messenger, this disciple has chosen the 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet!" Xiao Whitesnow spoke out loud. The 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet was 90 feet high, so it seemed only 10 feet shorter than the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. But, the truth was that the 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet was shaped like a rectangle and it was only 20 feet wide. Thus, it was less than a fifth of the size of the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal.

Even so, the 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet originated from the ninth Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. This person was called Burning Heaven, and he had an extremely grand and famous history within the Ancient Phoenix Clan. When Lin Ming had gone to Timeworn Phoenix City, the Burning Heaven Totem Stone he meditated over also came from this person. At that time, Lin Ming didn't possess the ability to perceive the chaos stones, thus he stepped back and requested the next best totem stone – the Burning Heaven Totem Stone.

The 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet and the Burning Heaven Totem Stone were both works created by Patriarch Burning Heaven. But, the Burning Heaven Totem Stone in Timeworn Phoenix City only recorded the most preliminary Concepts of the Fire Laws. As for the 90 Foot Burning Heaven Totem Stone, that was etched with the first eight level Concepts of the Fire Laws. The mysteries inherent within were far superior. Of course, this was to be expected. The 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet was 1800 times larger than Timeworn Phoenix City's Burning Heaven Totem Stone.

"Alright. The 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet." The black-robed messenger recorded Xiao Whitesnow's choice on a jade slip and then turned to Lin Ming. "Lin Ming, what choice have you made?"

As the black-robed messenger asked this question, everyone's eyes turned to Lin Ming. They wanted to hear just what he chose. In their opinion, Lin Ming and Xiao Whitesnow had similar talent, but Lin Ming was more oriented towards actual combat, and Xiao Whitesnow was oriented towards comprehension of Laws. Originally, with Yan Littlemoon here, no one would have cared about Lin Ming so much. But now that Chu Redcloud and Sun Cyprestar had made a bet, that bet had pushed Lin Ming to the crest of the waves.

"Lin Ming is in a bind. The best 100 Foot Royal Skyseal was taken by Yan Littlemoon, anything he chooses will just be leftovers."

"Yah, but that's just how things are. Who let Yan Littlemoon have the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline? I think that Lin Ming will choose the Extreme Dao Heaven Tablet. That stone tablet is 120 feet high and 15 feet wide; it's similar to the 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet. Since it comes from Senior Xiao Daoji, it is also an extremely high quality work!"

"I think so too."

Several disciples discussed amongst themselves. At this time, Lin Ming finally opened his mouth to speak. However, he didn't state his choice directly. He first asked the black-robed messenger, "Lord Messenger, I have a question. If I choose those stone tablets that no one else has chosen, can I choose more than one?"

"Mm?"

Lin Ming's suddenly question left all the martial artists present dumbfounded. What was the meaning of this? Lin Ming wanted to choose totem stones that no one else had chosen?

Fire Spirit Star's Totem Tower had an incomparably rich collection of totem stones. There were far more totem stones than disciples that had come, this was without doubt. But, those totem stones that no one chose did not originate from Patriarchs of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, but from the hands of Elders.

A true Ancient Phoenix Clan Elder was on the same level as a branch palace's Palace Master. It was more accurate to say that there were far more Elders than there were Palace Masters. This was because the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters had a great number of Merit Elders, Disciplinary Elders, Highest Elders, and all sorts of other Elders. When combined with the 72 Palace Masters, there were well over a hundred Elders.

One could look at the number to see what the difference in strength was between a Patriarch and an Elder. The Ancient Phoenix Clan only had a single Patriarch, but there were over a hundred Elders!

The Ancient Phoenix Clan had existed for countless tens of thousands of years. When all past and present Elders were added together, they had to be counted with 10,000 as the base unit!

Of these Elders, many would leave behind totem stones before they died. These totem stones certainly couldn't compare with one made by the Patriarch. Thus, most of them were used by martial artists of the lower realms, and only the highest quality ones would be kept in the Divine Realm Totem Towers.

Of course, the so-called highest quality totem stones still couldn't compete with those like the 90 Foot Burning Heaven Totem Stone.

So when Lin Ming suddenly asked this question, the black-robed messenger and the other disciples had all been extremely shocked.

“What’s Lin Ming trying to do? Is he going to wait until all the other disciples have chosen before he chooses again?”

“How could that be? Do you think that he is an idiot? Even if 100 of those poor quality totem stones are combined, it still wouldn’t match up to a single top quality totem stone!”

Lin Ming’s words left all the disciples scratching their heads. Even Yan Littlemoon was puzzled as she stared at Lin Ming. “What sort of tricks is this fellow trying to play?”

The black-robed messenger was a bit startled as he looked at Lin Ming. Then he gently smiled and said with some interest, “If you choose the totem stones that no one else has chosen, then I will allow you to choose multiple!”

“Great! Thank you Lord Messenger for the help. This disciple has chosen four totem stones. They are respectively: Atlas World’s chaos stone number one, the Yin Yang Chaos Stone! Atlas World’s chaos stone number two, the Endless Years Chaos Stone! Atlas World’s chaos stone number three, the Universe Space Chaos Stone! Atlas World’s number chaos stone four, the Five Elements Chaos Stone!”

Lin Ming’s clear voice spread throughout the entire audience. For a time, a pall of stunned silence fell over the entire crowd. All of the disciples were stunned silent. Lin Ming had listed four stone tablets in a single breath, and all of them were chaos stones!

The chaos stones had always been mostly ignored in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, and there were rarely any trial challengers who chose them. But, there was still the occasional person, and those people tended to be Divine Transformation realm powerhouses on the level of White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun. They had already meditated on the other totem stones many times, and it was difficult to make further breakthroughs. Only then would they choose a chaos stone in the hopes they would obtain some inspirations and make a breakthrough. But now, a junior disciple had actually chosen the chaos stones, and moreover, he had also chosen four. This had simply never happened before.

"Just what is Lin Ming thinking? He actually chose four chaos stones, and listening to their names, Yin Yang Chaos Stone, Universe Space Chaos Stone, Endless Years Chaos Stone, and Five Elements Chaos Stone, only that last Five Elements Chaos Stone has anything to do with the Fire Laws. Is he planning on perceiving the Fire Laws through the Five Elements Chaos Stone?"

This was what all the martial artists present were thinking. Even White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun weren't too sure just what was happening. Yan Littlemoon's eyes were wide like plates; she didn't think Lin Ming would make this choice.

As for Xiao Whitesnow, who had entered Totem Tower with Lin Ming, he was looking at Lin Ming with a floored expression, as if he were trying to say, "Are you kidding me here?" However, even though he opened his mouth, no words came out. He had been left speechless. He had already mentioned this point to Lin Ming, and since this was the choice Lin Ming had made, he naturally couldn't say anything else.

Those that walked down the road of martial arts most respected and admired characters with great ambition and drive. The Laws within the chaos stones were undefined and mysterious, without any specific content. To make an analogy, the totem stones left behind by all the previous Patriarchs of the Ancient Phoenix Clan could be considered extremely rare and detailed martial arts manuscripts. But, the chaos stones represented a general outline of every single martial arts manuscript that existed in the world. If one didn't even learn martial arts but wanted to see the general outline of everything, this sort of approach even had Sun Cyprestar frowning, and Sun Cyprestar was the one here with the most confidence in Lin Ming. He simply didn't understand Lin Ming's reasoning behind all this.

"Lin Ming, do you know what you are doing? Those chaos stones are normally for Divine Lord realm powerhouses to meditate on, and that is only occasionally too. We cultivate the Fire Laws, and the Laws within the chaos stones are simply too general and mysterious. Even if you meditate on them for a long time, you still won't be able to learn much from them; you will only be able to use them as a reference point. You are a first time rookie disciple so you have the advantage within Totem Tower. Didn't you notice that even White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun have lower priority of choice than you? This is your most precious opportunity. If you miss this chance then the next time you come here you won't be a rookie disciple anymore, and it will be more difficult to choose a totem stone that you like. I know that you don't feel too well about not being able to choose the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal, but the Extreme Dao heaven Tablet is also a very good choice. Many disciples who want to meditate on that totem stone don't ever have the chance to do so."

Sun Cyprestar sent Lin Ming a true essence sound transmission, sincerely worried for him.

Lin Ming faintly smiled and responded with a sound transmission, "I thank Senior Sun for the advice, but since I have made my choice I naturally have confidence in myself."

"Well… okay." Sun Cyprestar thought of saying something else but shook his head. Thinking about it, up until now, everything Lin Ming did or said had a clear goal behind it. In the past when no one believed in him, he had still emerged victorious. Perhaps he also had a special reason this time too?

As Sun Cyprestar thought this, he no longer stopped Lin Ming. He only ordered him, "Put your best into it!"

"This disciples understands."

In the square of Totem Tower, the black-robed messenger had waited for 20 breaths of time. He meaningfully gazed at Lin Ming and said, "Lin Ming, have you determined your choice? Once you've made it, you can no longer change it. Do not regret the decision you made!"

"This disciple has chosen."

"Good, then I shall write them down!" The black-robed messenger flourished a brush and drew a seal mark on a jade slip. "The third group of people to enter the Totem Tower – White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun!"

Amongst talents of the same level, junior disciples went first. The black-robed messenger had used this method to tacitly signify that Lin Ming and Xiao Whitesnow were on the same level as White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun. But, Yan Littlemoon was yet another level higher than them.

White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun quickly flew into Totem Tower and made their choices.

After them was Huo Yanguang. Huo Yanguang was the only Ninefall Life Destruction martial artist of Phoenix Cry Palace, moreover he was also a four layered heavens Ninefall martial artist. In Phoenix City Palace, he was second only to Lin Ming within the group of junior disciples. All other geniuses that were superior to Huo Yanguang were no longer junior disciples.

After Huo Yanguang, the Ninefall Divine Transformation senior disciples went to choose.

Everyone slowly filtered in and out. It took a full day and night for the disciples of the three branch palaces to complete their choices.

“Very well. All disciples have finished their choices. From this point on, you may freely cultivate. Whether it is the 18 Hells of Flame or the Totem Tower, you may do as you wish. Two years from now we shall test your final results. This smelting trial is divided into two aspects. One is the 18 Hells of Flame that tests your comprehension of Laws and Concepts and the other is the Illusionary God Combat Array that tests your actual combat prowess! Those with extraordinary trial results may obtain rewards passed down from the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters! Fire Elementals, top grade pills, top grade saint artifacts, phoenix heart blood, phoenix plume blood, and even phoenix coronet blood and transcendent saint artifacts! As long as you have the ability, everything is yours for the taking!

“Now, you are all dismissed! Cultivate as you will!”

Chapter 1006 – Lotus Blooming Step By Step

Chapter 1006 – Lotus Blooming Step By Step

…

…

…

“Freely cultivate? That’s great, too great! I just chose a totem stone so I’ll have to focus on perceiving it. If I can close up for a year or so before returning to the 18 Hells of Flame, I’ll be able to go even deeper. And the deeper I go, the more benefits there will be!”

“That’s right. When I was at Praying Phoenix Palace I had the chance to meditate over a totem stone, but that was only for several days. These totem stones are also of a much greater quality than the ones I saw.”

As the black-robed messenger said that they could freely cultivate as they wished and decide how to arrange their own time, all of the junior disciples were extremely excited.

“Close up for a year? Yah, keep on dreaming. The reason that the totem stones allow people to perceive the Laws within them is that they have Law fragments condensed within them. These totem stones are in essence a sort of array formation. Only someone with an extremely deep understanding of Laws can carve them down and gather the truths of the Heavenly Dao within them. As long as you touch your mind to them, you will be able to slowly absorb the Law fragments within. But as that continues as, less and less Law fragments are there, the effect will become increasingly worse. Once there are about 70% of the Law fragments left, you normally have to stop training and let the totem stones recover and gather more Law fragments before you can use them again. Otherwise, why did you think that only a single disciple was able to choose a stone tablet and no one else was able to choose it afterwards?”

Some Divine Transformation realm disciples said that had already participated in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial several times. They immediately shattered the dreams of the junior disciples.

This was also the first time the junior disciples had heard of such a thing. But as they thought of it, it made much more sense. No wonder the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial was only held once every four years; this was obviously to give the totem stones time to recondense Law fragments. Otherwise, the Ancient Phoenix Clan would have made full use of their resources and sent new disciples to Fire Spirit Star every year.

As for the reason a totem stone was assigned to only one person, this was because the Law fragments within them were difficult to divide. If it wasn't for this, several people could meditate on a stone tablet together, or they could even take turns.

"Let's meditate on the totem stones first and absorb some of the Law fragments before we head back to the 18 Hells of Flame."

A disciple suggested.

"Mm, that sounds like a good idea. We can go to the 18 Hells of Flame whenever we want, but the Law fragments within the totem stones are limited. We have to make full use of them."

The disciples all flew towards Totem Tower, Lin Ming included.

In Totem Tower, all the totem stones were already separated and sealed in different spaces by the black-robed messenger according to what he wrote down on the jade slip. Every space corresponded to a totem stone, each with a disciple assigned to it.

Of course, Lin Ming was an exception. The space he trained at had four chaos stones. They were the Yin Yang Chaos Stone, the Universe Space Chaos Stone, the Endless Years Chaos Stone, and the Five Elements Chaos Stone!

The four chaos stones floated in the air, suspended around Lin Ming. His surroundings vaguely shined with a starry light. The place where Lin Ming stood now seemed to be somewhere in the empty boundless universe.

With no sound around him, and an endless stretch of space extending past what his eyes could see, it was extremely easy to adjust his mental state in this environment to one of peace and serenity. He was able to wholeheartedly invest his mind in meditating on the Laws.

Lin Ming separated out a part of his divine sense and touched it upon the Five Elements Chaos Stone.

The grandmist battle spirit faintly trembled within Lin Ming's spiritual sea. That boundless and simple aura that originated from the most ancient of times immediately reached into Lin Ming's mind.

When Lin Ming had been choosing the chaos stones, he already perceived them to a preliminary degree. He was able to vaguely feel the Concepts within the chaos stones, something that not even a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse could comprehend, and he had gained many benefits in the process.

However…

That still wasn't Lin Ming's limit!

If he weren't pressed for time and if he hadn't also had to worry about Xiao Whitesnow's presence, Lin Ming would have been able to perceive even more things.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and sunk his mind into the chaos stone. In his spiritual sea, the spear-shaped battle spirit began to shine out with a silver gray radiance.

A blood red lotus flower began blooming behind Lin Ming.

Prime Emperor martial intent – grandmist space!

Hu – !

In that moment, Lin Ming completely enveloped the four chaos stones around him with the grandmist space. A faint trace of elementary grandmist energy emerged, echoing through space. It was like a faint mist that slowly wrapped around the chaos stones.

Grandmist space was the chaotic state that existed before the forming of the universe. And these chaos stones were formed at the beginning of the universe and were carved with the revolution of the universe's source energy. Both of them complemented each other.

Although Lin Ming couldn't fully reproduce the chaos that existed before the universe formed, he could still rely on the grandmist space to stimulate the mysteries within the chaos stones. This was similar to waking up the ancient memories slumbering within them!

Underneath the quickening effect of the elementary grandmist energy, the traces upon the chaos stones seemed to come to life. Law fragments slowly overflowed from within them, falling into Lin Ming's mind and etching themselves on his consciousness.

The Law fragments contained within the chaos stones were far richer in number than those in the totem stones!

One reason was that the chaos stones were originally of a far greater quality than the totem stone tablets. Even the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal could not compare with the chaos stones.

Another reason was that very few martial artists chose the chaos stones, and it was difficult for them to perceive them. It was difficult for them to even understand the most minute knowledge from them. Even if a Divine Lord powerhouse were to meditate over them for a long time, they still wouldn't be able to perceive many of the mysteries within. Thus, the Law fragments they absorbed were also extremely limited.

After accumulating for so many years, the Law fragments within each chaos stone were at a near-saturated state. Lin Ming was able to use the Primordius martial intent to freely extract them.

Currently Lin Ming's perception was at the peak of the highest echelons within all the geniuses of the Divine Realm. In addition, with his saint artifact bracer supporting him, Lin Ming's speed of understanding the Chaos Laws could be said to be to be astronomical.

Lin Ming unconsciously entered the ethereal intent state. He forgot the passage of time, forgot existence, and even forgot himself…

Cultivating passed as if time didn't exist. In the blink of an eye, three months had gone by.

In Fire Spirit Star, all the disciples were busily training. Some disciples even left Totem Tower just two months in. This was because there were insufficient Law fragments in the totem stones for them to continue perceiving them. If they continued then their speed would be extremely slow. Thus, they entered the 18 Hells of Flame and withstood the baptism of the power of fire there, slowly tempering their learnings.

Although training within the 18 Hells of Flame was worse than training within Totem Tower, it was still an important and indispensable part. The 18 Hells of Flame focused on practicality while Totem Tower focused on theory. Both of them complemented each other.

On the third month, many talented disciples such as Huo Yanguang, Zhou Fei, and some of the more amazing senior disciples left Totem Tower and entered the 18 Hells of Flame.

This reflected the amount of benefits within the totem stones. The larger the totem stone, the more Law fragments that were condensed within. For instance, the Extreme Dao Heaven Tablet and the 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet both had more Law fragments within them than the ordinary totem stones. This also meant that the time a martial artist could meditate over them for was longer.

This was the reason why Huo Yanguang, Zhou Fei, and other such talented disciples were able to last for three months before leaving.

They had all obtained great benefits from this smelting trial. On the same day that they left seclusion and entered the 18 Hells of Flame, they were actually able to dive 9900 miles deep into the second level, almost breaking into the third level! And before now, 5000 miles into the second level had been their limit.

However, before they could enjoy their happiness for too long, they came under tremendous attack. Praying Phoenix Palace's most talented junior disciple, Xiao Whitesnow, finally emerged from seclusion after three months and broke through to the third level of the Hells of Flame in a single attempt. He even made it 3000 miles into the third level and cultivated there for an entire day before he exhausted his true essence. This caused all the other junior disciples to feel weak and frustrated. They had thought they were able to catch up to him a little bit, but they didn't expect for the gap between them to grow even larger!

However, this couldn't be helped. Xiao Whitesnow was originally the number one talented junior disciple of Praying Phoenix Palace and the 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet he chose was only inferior to the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. With such an advantage, how could the speed of his progress be compared with other disciples'?

After perceiving the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal for half a year, Yan Littlemoon finally left seclusion. At that time, she seemed to be an entirely different person. Her blue clothes fluttered in the wind, and with every step she took in the air, blue lotuses would bloom underneath her feet!

The blue lotuses were formed by pure fire origin energy. After these lifelike replicas appeared in the sky, they didn't fade away for a long time!

This was a type of phenomenon, one called Lotus Blooming Step by Step!

If a martial artist was able to comprehend the third level Concept of Fire, the Concept of Creation, to the peak of perfection, and if they could gather a great destiny onto themselves, then they would be able to comprehend the Blue Lotus Domain. But, Lotus Blooming Step by Step was actually on a higher level than the Blue Lotus Domain!

This meant that she had completely fused together with the fire origin energy around her. She had reached a boundary in which her body was able to move the Laws itself. Every movement she took, every word she said was able to resonate with the Laws of the world and the origin energy around her.

When Xiao Whitesnow first saw Yan Littlemoon again, he knew that the difference between them had grown even greater, to a point that it was impossible to ever overtake her. To a genius, the proud arrogance in their hearts was a vital aspect of themselves. They could lose everything else besides their arrogant nature, because if they did, they would also lose the courage to chase after others' footsteps.

But Xiao Whitesnow had no choice but to admit a truth, and that was that there was little hope that he would ever manage to surpass Yan Littlemoon's shadow.

The boundary of Lotus Blooming Step by Step was something that almost existed only in legends. Many of the present Elders, including Sun Cyprestar and Chu Redcloud, had never witnessed Lotus Blooming Step by Step before. But now this phenomenon had actually manifested within the body of a seventh stage Life Destruction young woman. This was simply unbelievable!

"I never thought this was possible... that I would be able to witness Lotus Blooming Step by Step! This young woman is simply a monster! If I had to lose to such a phenomenon then that could only be the fate given to me!"

Sun Cyprestar wryly shook his head and forcefully smiled. No matter how he calculated it, he never would have thought that Charming Phoenix Palace would actually produce such a monstrous talent with the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. This sort of bloodline was not easily born even in the three great family clans.

Moreover, even those with the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline might not be able to comprehend Lotus Blooming Step by Step!

Yan Littlemoon was originally beloved by the heavens to begin with. And with her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, it perfectly complemented her in perceiving the 100 Foot Royal

Skyseal. As long as she didn’t perish in the future, she would become an existence no less than a Palace Master!

Chapter 1007 – Phoenix Blood Essence

Chapter 1007 – Phoenix Blood Essence

…

…

…

As Chu Redcloud saw the current Yan Littlemoon, it was no longer possible for her to conceal her smile. Yan Littlemoon surpassed all her expectations. At this time, she no longer even cared about the bet; it was better to say that she assumed the bet was already won. Now, what she cared about was Yan Littlemoon's results in this smelting trial. With such talent, it was possible for Yan Littlemoon to become a pivotal figure within the Ancient Phoenix Clan. If so, then at that time she would be able to rely on her relationship with Yan Littlemoon to obtain great benefits for the Chu Family.

Compared to winning the Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron, this was far more valuable.

After Yan Littlemoon left seclusion, she dove into the 18 Hells of Flame. In the first two levels, the fire origin energy heavenly winds breezed past her like gentle winds, unable to hinder her movement at all. She turned into a blue beam of light that shot 9000 miles deep into the third level. Here, her speed slowed down, but it was only by a little bit.

She rushed through to the fourth level without pause. In the fourth level, the fiery wind became even stronger and the temperature rose by another level. But even this was not able to stop her!

Fourth level 1000 miles, fourth level 2000 miles, fourth level 3000 miles…

Yan Littlemoon rushed all the way to 5000 miles into the fourth level before she stopped and began training. There, she trained for an entire day!

If Yan Littlemoon could stop 5000 miles into the fourth level to train, then that proved that distance wasn't her limit. She was likely capable of reaching 7000-8000 miles deep into the fourth level; that was almost at the fifth level!

In just half a year of practice, she was able to near the fifth level. This result was like a massive mountain that appeared in front of everyone else, making it so that no one could approach her.

"She's too strong… it's hard for anyone to summon the courage to chase her."

"Yeah, she has a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline and she even perceived the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. Compared to her, let alone us, even characters like Lin Ming and Xiao Whitesnow cannot compare to her. In fact, if Lin Ming and Xiao Whitesnow had come in past years, they would have already been considered peak talents. But now that this perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline Yan Littlemoon appeared during this smelting trial, both of them are destined to be overshadowed by her."

As Lin Ming was mentioned, everyone's thoughts changed. Lin Ming still hadn't emerged from Totem Tower. He had actually closed up for almost half a year without a peep coming from him.

In the fourth and fifth months, there were some lower ranking disciples that had already entered Totem Tower for the second time to perceive the Fire Laws again. But Lin Ming still hadn't emerged.

"Now that you mention it, Lin Ming still hasn't come out of training. What's going on with him?"

Many disciples were confused. In their opinion, the longer someone stayed in, the more amazing their performance would be after coming out. But now Yan Littlemoon had already emerged and yet Lin Ming was still secluded within Totem Tower. This was an extremely mysterious situation.

"Maybe he didn't manage to perceive anything so he's too embarrassed to come out?"

“That might be true.”

“It might be another reason. Lin Ming chose four chaos stones to meditate on, but the power of the Laws within those chaos stones is very difficult to comprehend; even a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse would have to spend several years to do so. Even then they might not gain too much. Lin Ming has only been inside for five months. Do you think he really could have cleanly absorbed all the Law fragments in the chaos stones?”

“Lin Ming is indeed a chosen pride of heaven, especially in the aspect of combat strength. With a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation he was able to defeat a four layered heavens Ninefall martial artist. That isn’t something that the average person could hope to accomplish. But, the choice he made this time is really puzzling. For these last months, just how much could he have perceived? I feel like he’s just wasting his time in there and wasting the chance that he’s been given. A rookie disciple only gets one chance. The next time he comes, he won’t be a rookie disciple, even if he isn’t 33 years old yet.”

“Who knows what these geniuses are thinking. It could be that Lin Ming did so because of the bet and because he needs to defeat Yan Littlemoon, thus he chose to take such a dangerous risk. The best 100 Foot Royal Skyseal was already taken by Yan Littlemoon, and she also has the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Her foundation is better than Lin Ming’s. If he chose the Extreme Dao Heaven Tablet then he would certainly lose. Maybe that’s why he took the chance and chose the chaos stones…”

“Choosing the chaos stones is also a losing method, and a much uglier way of losing.” The disciple that was previously speaking was interrupted. Indeed, the Laws contained within the chaos stones were simply too general and vague. It was impossible for lower realm disciples to perceive anything from them, and even if they did, it might not help increase their understandings of the Fire Laws.

At this point, no one spoke about Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon’s bet anymore. To them, victory and defeat had basically been decided. Now, the topic that people were discussing was what rewards Yan Littlemoon would obtain for entering 5000 miles deep into the fourth level of the Hells of Flame!

When Yan Littlemoon had entered 5000 miles into the third level, she had obtained a drop of phoenix plume blood and a high-grade saint artifact. To Yan Littlemoon, these rewards weren't useful at all. They were simply garbage in her eyes.

However, this couldn't be helped. Because by the time the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial ended, many people would be able to reach that depth and obtain similar rewards. If the rewards for such levels were too precious, then even the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters would find that hard to withstand.

But the fourth level was different. Starting from the fourth level, that was a domain that only peak talents could reach.

As for the fifth level, that was a point which even Xiao Whitesnow might not be able to achieve at the end of the smelting trial. In the past 100 years, only White Daohong, Lu Xiaoyun, and Praying Phoenix Palace's Fang Qiren had been able to reach the fifth level as rookie disciples. Fang Qiren had already reached 120 years of age and was no longer a disciple, instead becoming a Hall Protector.

As for the sixth level, that was a legend. Someone entering that level as a rookie disciple might not occur even every one or two thousand years.

From the fourth level upwards, the rewards became much richer.

If one could enter the fourth level, they would obtain one top grade saint artifact!

If one could reach 5000 miles into the fourth level, they could obtain a mortal-step Fire Elemental!

As for the fifth level and the legendary sixth level, the rewards were even more terrifying. One could obtain a full set of top grade saint artifacts, or perhaps even spirit artifacts! There were even bottles of phoenix plume blood, phoenix heart blood, phoenix marrow blood, and maybe even phoenix coronet blood!

In the legends, tens of thousands of years ago there was even a drop of phoenix blood essence given as a reward!

Blood essence could not be compared with ordinary phoenix blood. A phoenix was thousands of miles long, even 10,000 miles long. If its blood were to fall it could drown entire cities and cause great rivers to overflow!

If one could raise a phoenix, then it was possible to gather the extremely precious phoenix coronet blood every day, obtaining endless amounts of it.

But, phoenix blood essence was different. That was a phoenix's life blood essence. It was similar to a martial artist's blood essence. Once it was lost, it was overly difficult to restore!

Thus, the value of phoenix blood essence was impossible to measure!

Even if Yan Littlemoon was able to produce the phenomenon of Lotus Blood Step by Step, if she wanted to produce an amazing heaven-shocking result that was able to qualify her for a drop of phoenix blood essence, that was far, far too difficult!

As the young disciples saw Yan Littlemoon receive the rewards from the black-robed messenger, many of them were filled with envy. For them, even by the time they left Fire Spirit Star it would still be impossible for them to set foot in the fourth floor.

"Incredible. Yan Littlemoon's smelting trial might even alert the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters. Moreover, Yan Littlemoon has already reached the age of marriage. If she is willing to marry someone, then her wedding will become a grand and important event of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. I have no idea just how many handsome and heroic young elites will be chasing after her with dreams of marriage."

"Yes, and I think that the Yan Family will marry Yan Littlemoon off to someone else who also has the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. That would be the best method of producing descendants that also have the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline.

In the Ancient Phoenix Clan, great importance was placed upon the idea of bloodlines. Bloodline was often considered more valuable than talent or strength.

This was because a strong martial artist might be strong only because of their destiny, and the children they had might not have the same strength they did. But, a martial artist with a pure and rich bloodline would definitely give birth to children with a similarly rich bloodline.

The richer the parents' bloodline was, the higher the chances that a child with the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline would be produced.

Unfortunately, the richer a martial artist's Ancient Phoenix bloodline was, the more difficult it became for them to have children. Long ago, there had been a husband and wife that both had perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodlines and were also important figures of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. But, they still weren't able to produce a child even after 10,000 years of attempts.

The glory and dazzling radiance of Yan Littlemoon's Lotus Blooming Step by Step completely covered the halo of all other geniuses. Xiao Whitesnow, Lin Ming, and even the Divine Transformation realm disciples, White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun, were all cast away, only able to act as foils to her success.

"Littlemoon, this time headquarters have rewarded you with a top grade saint artifact as well as a mortal-step Fire Elemental. The Fire Elemental can wait until you break through Ninefall and undergo a baptism of the Heavenly Dao before you absorb it. It will help you increase your understandings of the Fire Laws. As for the top grade saint artifact, that will increase your combat strength. The more the better, but don't depend on them too much. In this smelting trial, the goal I've set for you is to become the top talent with the best results in the last 10,000 years! If that happens, I can represent Charming Phoenix Palace and apply for a drop of phoenix blood essence from the Ancient Phoenix Clan for you. That is the most vital goal!"

Chu Redcloud said after Yan Littlemoon received her rewards.

“I know Aunty. I will try my best.” After Yan Littlemoon comprehended the Lotus Blooming Step by Step phenomenon, she was also very excited and giddy. This was affirmation and recognition of her talent towards the Fire Laws. Since she had reached this step, she naturally had to try and earn the reputation of the top genius of Fire Spirit Star’s last 10,000 years. She wanted to see whether or not she could earn a drop of phoenix blood essence!

Yan Littlemoon already had the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Half of her blood was human and the other half was that of a phoenix. If her Ancient Phoenix bloodline became any richer, she would become a Fey.

It sounded as if Yan Littlemoon’s bloodline had reached the peak, but that was in fact untrue. The perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline was also divided into different grades. If two people had the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, but one had ordinary Ancient Phoenix blood and the other had phoenix plume blood, would they still be the same?

If she could use the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s special bloodline transplant technique, then she would be able to raise only the quality of her bloodline without affecting the quantity.

In that way, let alone a single drop of phoenix blood essence, Yan Littlemoon would be able to absorb a hundred drops of phoenix blood essence without it affecting her bloodline density.

As Yan Littlemoon, Xiao Whitesnow, and the others had all left seclusion and were dazzling others with their newfound abilities, deep within Totem Tower, Lin Ming’s training had entered into a critical period.

At this time, Lin Ming was completely immersed within the grandmist space. A light fog floated around his body; this was the elementary form of grandmist energy.

Lin Ming fluttered in space, motionless. His breath and his heartbeat had both stopped as if he had died, a stone carving that remained unmoved for a trillion years…

Chapter 1008 – Gold Battle Spirit

Chapter 1008 – Gold Battle Spirit

…

…

…

The four chaos stones were boundless, solemn, and mysterious. They circled in the air around Lin Ming, slowly gushing out with vague Law runes that fused together with the faint traces of grandmist energy around. As they flowed through space, they seemed to come from the nothingness of ancient times, bringing with them the highest truths of the infinite Heavenly Dao, containing the burden of arcane Laws.

Chaos represented the limitless, and limitless represented the world before heaven, a reality without beginning nor end. No one could guess the meaning behind it. Besides the universe itself, no one was able to understand its cryptic mysteries.

First there was the infinite exhaustible void, then there was primal chaos, then there was yin yang energies, which later divided into the five elements, which grew into celestial bodies, and which finally gave birth to all life and creation.

From the hazy void, grandmist energy emerged, an energy that surpassed a star in weight. On these stars, countless complex life forms evolved, growing and changing. Just how many Laws of the Heavenly Dao were observed in these changes? Just how many truths of the Great Dao were contained within?

It was simply unimaginable!

And the most complicated truths also extended from the infinite arrangement of the simplest truths. Evolution, combination, transformation, the process really made one praise the heavens!

Perhaps even for an Empyrean level character, in the face of all the Laws of the universe, the totality of their comprehensions were nothing more than a drop in the ocean, simply unworthy of mentioning!

And at this time, Lin Ming was actually unknowingly swimming in such an ocean. It was as if his soul had left his body and his mind was swimming through endless space.

Vaguely, through a dim haze, he could see the world filled with infinite chaos. This chaos energy was vast and endless. As it flooded the universe, it seemed great without limit, and yet it also seemed infinitesimally small, as if it could all be concentrated into a single spot without any volume at all.

This absurd illusion caused Lin Ming to feel flummoxed. But as he thought over it carefully, a feeling of awareness appeared in his mind. This was the state of chaos that the universe existed in before it was formed.

In chaos, there was neither space nor time, there was nothing to hear or anything to feel, so how could anything be called large or small?

Such a state continued for an unknown time. It seemed to last for an infinitely long period of time, a period of time where the entire evolution of the universe could be followed, where the universe was born and destroyed. It seemed to last for an infinitely short period of time, a period of time so short that even an instant couldn’t describe it, a period of time so short that it couldn’t be described in words at all.

But whether it was a long time or a short time, in this moment, the chaotic state of the universe was torn apart!

A terrifyingly high temperature, a tyrannically crazy explosion!

In that moment, it was as if all the energy within the vast Divine Realm, all the energy throughout the infinite boundless universe was completely released at once!

Even an Empyrean or divine god wouldn't be able to resist one-billionth trillionth of this energy!

In this horrifying explosion, that grandmist energy that was heavier than the stars was actually sundered apart!

Infinite matter, infinite energy, all of it began within this terrifyingly high temperature. All of it was ejected out from this jumbled state of chaos.

As the temperature cooled down, a miraculous change began to occur.

As the chaotic state of the universe slowly disappeared, everything began to move and slowly evolve. This was the primal chaos!

Primal chaos was the source of change.

The primal chaos gave birth to the vigorous yang and the calm yin. Like this, the two yin and yang energies came into being.

In that blazingly high temperature, Lin Ming could see yin and yang energy being produced. They were originally a single pure energy. Yin energy and yang energy slowly evolved into the smallest particles, particles so small that they were a billion trillion times smaller than a speck of dust! Even if a Divine Lord powerhouse poured all of their supernatural power into their eyes, they still wouldn't be able to see them!

But Lin Ming, who was meditating on the chaos stones through his grandmist space, was actually able to see them.

He saw energy evolve into yin thunder and yang thunder. The particles that contained yin thunder and yang thunder were mutually attracted to each other, latching onto one another and maintaining a most delicate balance.

Since ancient times, yin and yang did not mix. If they collided they would annihilate each other. But, in these smallest particles, yin thunder actually revolved together with yang thunder. Both energies complemented each other, supporting and restraining the other.

After the yin and yang particles were split and paired together, they began to condense, combining and arranging themselves in a series of patterns that exhibited countless properties and characteristics.

And these were the five elements.

The five elements were not solely five different types of matter. Rather, they were the ultimate embodiments of matter. With the five elements as a foundation, they could be combined into all of life and the infinite energies of the world.

These were the truths contained within the Heavenly Dao. The infinite nothing gave birth to primal chaos, primal chaos divided to yin and yang energies, yin and yang energies transformed into the five elements, and the five elements formed all life!

“So this is the primal chaos… it was originally yin and yang energy as well as the power of the five elements…”

Lin Ming took a deep breath, an unprecedented clarity appearing within his mind. The Heavenly Dao was incomparably abstract. The five elements could be partly understood, but as for what yin and yang were, and what primal chaos was, that was an extremely abstruse and philosophical idea. Even if a supreme elder tried to explain it, they would say that one could only understand it and not put it into words.

But today, Lin Ming was finally able to see that the primal chaos was the evolution of the limitless nothing, and that the primal chaos contained the most source Laws from the beginning of the universe. As for yin and yang, they were not abstract ideas, but rather particles that truly existed as the tiniest manifestation of matter.

Yin and yang transforming into all of existence was not empty talk. Those infinitesimally tiny yin and yang particles truly existed in all things. This included the stars, this included mountains and rivers, seas and lakes, this included all the people of the world! Even Lin Ming was no exception. Even the chaos stones here were formed by yin and yang energies. In all matter, yin and yang energy existed equally. Otherwise, if they were in an imbalanced situation then they would produce thunder.

The divine thunder of fire, water, metal, earth, wood – that was how the five elements divine thunder was produced. Although thunder was tied to the five elements, it in truth didn't belong to the five elements. Rather, it was the evolution of the five elements.

In this short period, Lin Ming was enlightened to many truths. He personally saw the evolution of the universe. Watching this was the same as bearing witness to billions of years of the universe compressed into a short moment. This experience itself was a massive lucky chance. Even a Holy Lord or World King might not have the good fortune to experience it!

In that moment, Lin Ming's mind was filled with knowledge. He felt his spiritual sea suddenly tremble. A boundless aura surged into the world, accompanied with countless Law fragments that overflowed from the chaos stones and poured into Lin Ming's body.

These Law fragments were constantly absorbed by Lin Ming, turning into mysterious runes within his body.

And in the skies above Lin Ming's spiritual sea, the silver gray grandmist battle spirit began to transform.

A faint trace of elementary grandmist energy gathered above the spear-shaped battle spirit. This made the battle spirit emit a brilliantly dazzling radiance. This radiance started silver but slowly began to mix with a golden light. As time passed, more and more golden light appeared, becoming brighter and more abundant until it completely engulfed the silver light!

In that moment, the spear-shaped battle spirit within Lin Ming's spiritual sea finally turned from silver to a sparkling gold. After a long period of accumulation, his battle spirit finally broke through the bottleneck of silver perfection and became a gold battle spirit!

A gold battle spirit could be projected into the world and form a space of will. At this step, a battle spirit would have a tremendous effect on one's combat strength!

A gold battle spirit was no longer just a supportive attack method but could also be used as a main attack method.

However, Lin Ming's gold battle spirit was different from that of an ordinary martial artist. It was not a brilliant shining gold, but had the dark color of grandmist energy fused into it.

It was a dark gold color!

The dark gold battle spirit contained an ancient and boundless aura; this was the atmosphere of chaos. Because Lin Ming had perceived the Chaos Laws, his grandmist battle spirit contained an aura of grandmist energy that was far more vivid than before.

Because of this special attribute, Lin Ming's battle spirit was only at the formative gold level, but it was actually far more powerful than a normal small success gold battle spirit!

A martial artist with a mere sixth stage Life Destruction cultivation actually had a battle spirit comparable to that of a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse. This accomplishment couldn't even be described with the words monstrous genius!

At this time, as Lin Ming recalled the jade slip that Fairy Feng had left behind to him, he felt as if all the truths within there were easily seen and understood!

Indeed, the Chaos Laws were not directly related to the Fire Laws. But, the Chaos Laws were all-encompassing. From time, space, yin and yang, the five elements, stars, life – all of it was included within the Chaos Laws. This was the universe originated from chaos, and all matter and energy within the world was part of the universe.

Chaos was the foundation of the universe. Once one comprehended it, that was the same as grasping the very nature of the universe!

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that from this moment on, Lin Ming had truly stepped into the divine pantheon of the universe's source Laws.

As for all other geniuses, they were kept outside of the door, waiting anxiously to catch the little fragments of Laws that overflowed from this divine pantheon of Laws. As they were happy and complacent with their own achievements, Lin Ming was actually swimming within that divine pantheon of Laws, starting his journey to comprehending the origin of the universe!

This was the very essence of disparity. This difference wouldn't manifest too obviously at the start, but as time passed, the distance between him and others would begin to become increasingly large. At that time, Lin Ming would truly step towards the peak of martial arts. As for other geniuses, including even the once in a millennium talent Yan Littlemoon, they would at most be guaranteed to become someone like a future Palace Master of one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's branch palaces. As for becoming an even higher Holy Lord and becoming a ruler of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, they would have to put forth enormous effort. In this process, if their mind, mentality, will, destiny, or strength ever fell just a single point short, they would fail!

Time slowly passed. Without knowing it, Lin Ming had already been in Totem Tower for an entire year. In this year, there were still many Law fragments within the chaos stones. What Lin Ming managed to absorb was only a very tiny portion of them. He lay suspended in the air as before, withstanding the baptism of Law fragments.

And outside of Totem Tower, many great changes were occurring once more.

White Daohong, Lu Xiaoyun, Yan Littlemoon, and Xiao Whitesnow had all completed their second period of seclusion in Totem Tower. Now, they were all training within the 18 Hells of Flame. They had finished two seclusion rounds within Totem Tower, but as for Lin Ming, he hadn't even finished his first.

After the second period of seclusion, the Divine Transformation realm disciples like White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun didn't have that great of a change. This was also to be expected. At their boundary, it would take them a very long time to perceive the Laws, and they had to do so in an ordered manner, step by step. Wanting to rapidly increase their understandings of the Laws in a year or two was actually impossible.

However, Yan Littlemoon and Xiao Whitesnow had made tremendous progress…

Chapter 1009 – Headquarters Envoy

Chapter 1009 – Headquarters Envoy

…

…

…

After Xiao Whitesnow finished his second period of seclusion, he was finally able to enter the fourth level, and even made it an additional 2000 miles in. This result neared the distance Yan Littlemoon reached after she left her first period of seclusion.

But as for Yan Littlemoon herself, she was even more amazing. After she left her second period of seclusion, she broke through to the fifth level of the Hells of Flame and reached an additional 4000 miles in!

This depth already surpassed the distance that White Daohong reached in the 18 Hells of Flame smelting trial when he first arrived as a rookie disciple!

70-80 years ago, when White Daohong was also a junior disciple, he had passed through two years of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial and his final result was 3000 miles deep into the fifth level. This result had been surpassed by Yan Littlemoon in just a single year!

This result was enough to alarm the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters!

Whether it was the phenomenon of Lotus Blooming Step by Step, or reaching 4000 miles deep into the fifth level after just one year, both of these were results that stunned and amazed all. These results even surpassed those of the talented geniuses of the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters!

It could be said that as long as nothing happened to Yan Littlemoon, she would become a future Palace Master of one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's 72 branch palaces, controlling a territory of her own. That would be an extremely easy goal to accomplish. And if she trained well, there was even the faintest of hopes that she would become the next Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

That was a Holy Lord level character of the Divine Realm!

Such a talent was definitely worthy of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's attention. Moreover, some Elders from headquarters even had thoughts of having Yan Littlemoon marry into their family.

"What? Headquarters is sending some people here?"

Whether it was Sun Cyprestar, Chu Redcloud, or any of the disciples from the three branch palaces, all of them were surprised as they heard this news from Fire Spirit Star's black-robed guardian.

The Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters was the center of power for the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan!

In the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters, there were all sorts of great Elders that wielded great amounts of power and authority. There were Disciplinary Elders, Merit Elders, Alchemy Elders, Refiner Elders, and all sorts of other Elders. These Elders were no weaker than the Palace Masters of the 72 branch palaces. There were even some Elders in important positions that were above the Palace Masters in power and authority.

In addition, there were also the Highest Elders. These Highest Elders were all old monstrous fellows that no longer bothered with worldly affairs. They were old Patriarchs or Vice Patriarchs that had stepped back from their position and had wholeheartedly dedicated their efforts to cultivating. Thus they became Highest Elders.

Their cultivations had long ago reached an unimaginable boundary. There were those among them that had stepped back from the position of Patriarch tens of thousands of years ago. Their strength could be imagined!

Thus, let alone Chu Redcloud and Sun Cyprestar, even characters like Xiao Jiuyang and Fairy Feng had to be respectful to those from the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters. In the world of mortals, this was just like an imperial minister visiting a local magistrate!

“Headquarters have sent visitors. All disciples come out and greet them!”

The black-robed messenger issued out an order. For such a serious matter, besides the disciples that were still closed up in Totem Tower, all disciples were required to gather at the 18 Hells of Flame and wait for the review of the headquarters envoys. There were even some disciples still in Totem Tower that had ended their seclusion early to see the glory and majesty of these people from headquarters. After all, this was an extremely rare opportunity.

On this day, red clouds suddenly gathered above Fire Spirit Star. These red clouds surged out for thousands of miles with fiery heavenly winds howling beneath them. Then, ripples began to appear in space, and the sky itself seemed to be ripped apart. A massive golden crow head emerged from the space crack, slowly tearing it further and further apart. Space fluctuations rippled out for thousands of miles.

After the head emerged, a blazingly beautiful crown of feathers appeared, wrapped around a gorgeous neck. This bird had a back like a mountain range and its wingspan extended for hundreds of miles. As its wings unfurled, they were wide enough to blot out the skies and sharp like unrivalled divine weapons. Its claws gleamed with a cold light as if they were pillars that supported the heavens.

This was a massive golden crow with a body several hundred miles long. It had an appearance similar to that of a phoenix. This golden crow’s Ancient Phoenix bloodline was undoubtedly extremely rich. In order to raise this sort of golden crow, the amount of resources necessary was mind-boggling!

As the great golden crow appeared, the endless fiery heavenly wind that blew around Fire Spirit Star suddenly stopped moving. In front of this golden crow, the fire origin energy of Fire Spirit Star was like soldiers bowing to a general, all of them surrendering of their own volition.

And above this golden crown was a male and female envoy. In addition, there were also a number of maids.

Of these two envoys, the man was extremely tall and he wore a red set of armor. His figure was commanding and grand. As for the female, she was more petite: her height only reached the man's chest. And, what was most peculiar was that she even had a long fox tail. It was clear that she was not a pure human.

This wasn't strange. There were many non-human races in the Divine Realm. For instance, Giant Demons, Imps, Fey, and so forth. Deep beyond the Divine Realm there were even worlds completely comprised of different races! But because they were so far away, they basically existed independently from the Divine Realm's 3000 Great Worlds. Although their scale was far from comparing with the Divine Realm's 3000 Great Worlds, their total size added together was still far larger than a single primary world of the Divine Realm.

This fox-tailed woman clearly had the bloodline of a monster beast within her. She also had a human bloodline and the Ancient Phoenix bloodline, for a total of three different kinds of bloodlines.

However this didn't matter at all. The Ancient Phoenix Clan considered anyone with the Ancient Phoenix Bloodline as one of their clansmen.

"Envoy Duke Golden Sword! Monarch Sweetyfox! I never thought that those two would come!"

Chu Redcloud instantly recognized the two arrivals. These two were around 10,000 years old and were highly famous and prominent figures within the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters.

To be more specific, they were successors of important positions at headquarters. Without accident, Duke Golden Sword would become the next Disciplinary Elder, and Monarch Sweetyfox would become the Internal Affairs Envoy.

Although the Internal Affairs Envoy wasn't an Elder, their power and influence actually exceeded most Elders'.

The position of Internal Affairs Envoy was the same as being the majordomo of the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan. They were responsible for arranging storage of resources and distributing them outwards. This was the equivalent of caring for the daily basic necessities for the 100 billion clansmen of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. The authority of such a position could be imagined!

Every single one of the 72 Palace Masters had to be extremely flattering and pleasant to the current and future Internal Affairs Envoy. Otherwise, if any one of them managed to offend the Internal Affairs Envoy, they would find the resources they were given to be reduced by 20-30%, and there would be nothing they could do to change that no matter how much they cried!

Before this, Phoenix Cry Palace's relationship with the Internal Affairs Envoy was far inferior to Charming Phoenix Palace's. That was the reason why Sun Cyprestar had been so ornery about the pentatic metal essence and had been severely swindled by Chu Redcloud. He had brooded over this for years.

As everyone saw Envoy Duke Golden Sword and Monarch Sweetyfox, Chu Redcloud, Sun Cyprestar, and the rest of the Elders of the three branch palaces came to respectfully welcome them, their faces all covered with smiles.

This was something they couldn't help. The difference in status was simply too great!

The statuses of the Disciplinary Elder and Internal Affairs Envoy were just above those of the 72 Palace Masters. As successors, their futures were already decided, and thus they had a status far higher than Palace Master candidates like Fairy Feng and Sage Jiuyang.

But as for Chu Redcloud and Sun Cyprestar, one was a Palace Elder of Charming Phoenix Palace and the other was even worse: he was only a Vice Hall Master of Phoenix Cry Palace's Phoenix Hall. Their status was not just different by a little bit, there was simply no comparing them.

The black-robed messenger in charge of Fire Spirit Star appeared undisturbed. He calmly said, "Golden Sword, Sweetyfox, I never thought that this Fire Spirit Star smelting trial would be enough to bother the two of you."

"Hahaha, Blackwood, it's already been 3000 years since we last met, right? You came to Atlas World's Fire Spirit Star to cultivate, but our ambitions have always been different. Me and Sweetyfox here have always wanted to serve the clan from within and hold positions. From Protectors, we will become Elders and continue trying to crawl upwards. If we can become Vice Patriarchs then even our laughs in our dreams will wake you up. As for you, you have wholeheartedly committed your life to cultivation. I'm afraid that your cultivation has already surpassed ours now!" Duke Golden Sword laughed gaily as he saw the black-robed messenger.

With these words, Chu Redcloud, Sun Cyprestar, and the rest all felt their hearts jump. They looked at the black-robed messenger with incredulity in their eyes. They never imagined that such a low-key, ordinary-looking Fire Spirit Star guardian would actually have such a great background. Could this person have regarded Fire Spirit Star as a wonderful place to cultivate and thus applied to be the guardian of this place?

"Golden Sword, what sorts of jokes are you making now? I was originally inferior to the two of you to begin with, and during the selection process I was eliminated. I wasn't able to compare to you, thus I didn't receive the key focus from headquarters like you did. Your future is far better than mine. But, the truth is whether I chose to cultivate in seclusion here or chose to hold a position in the clan like you do, both of us are only trying to walk as far as we can on our road of martial arts. We are both travelling to the same goal with different roads."

The black-robed messenger casually said.

Monarch Sweetyfox brightly laughed and said, “Okay, okay, we can reminisce about the past some other time. We’ve come here for a reason, and that is to see that so-called Yan Littlemoon with her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. I heard that this young woman already comprehended the phenomenon of Lotus Blooming Step by Step. That would make her far stronger than I was in the past!”

Monarch Sweetyfox had not comprehended Lotus Blooming Step by Step and had only formed a perfect Blue Lotus Domain. This proved just how rare the Lotus Blooming Step by Step phenomenon was – it clearly deserved to be called a legend!

“This young girl Yan Littlemoon surprised me. She doesn’t come from the three great family clans and only has a background of Charming Phoenix Palace’s Yan Family. Her life experience can’t be regarded as too rich but she was still able to have such achievements. This is a result of her great destiny; it isn’t easy at all! We’ll have to have Fairy Chu explain this one to us.”

As Blackwood spoke, he turned to Chu Redcloud.

Chu Redcloud was usually a very intelligent and scheming person with multiple contingency plans. She had even managed to trick someone like Sun Cyprestar several times. But Facing Monarch Sweetyfox, Duke Golden Sword, and this Blackwood, who seemed ordinary but was actually just as powerful as the two arriving envoys, she couldn’t help but be nervous!

It wasn’t a surprise for her to be nervous. In a mortal kingdom, this was just like a countryside magistrate suddenly learning that an imperial envoy was visiting to assess her work. How could she not be nervous about this? This was a question that concerned her future and whether or not Yan Littlemoon could obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence!

That was phoenix blood essence! Let alone her, even a great figure like Charming Phoenix Palace’s Palace Master couldn’t obtain it!

Phoenix blood essence was only bestowed upon the unparalleled greatest genius of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

And the Monarch Sweetyfox in front of her was the future Internal Affairs Envoy. She had the authority to control almost all resources within the Ancient Phoenix Clan! Of course, that didn't mean she had the jurisdiction to assign something like phoenix blood essence. However, she could apply to headquarters for a drop and have the Patriarch or the Council of Elders decide!

Chu Redcloud took a deep breath and calmed her racing heart. She said, "Reporting to Lord and Lady Envoy, our Littlemoon once traveled for fun and adventure abroad and managed to stumble upon a phoenix blood pond, achieving a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. But, besides Littlemoon's destiny being excellent, her perception is also outstanding. That is the only reason she managed to comprehend the Lotus Blooming Step by Step phenomenon during this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. Littlemoon will easily become the top disciple of this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial!"

Chapter 1010 – Requirements for a Drop of Phoenix Blood Essence

Chapter 1010 – Requirements for a Drop of Phoenix Blood Essence

…

…

…

“Mm, not bad.” Monarch Sweetyfox sweetly smiled and nodded, seeming quite satisfied with Yan Littlemoon. In order for a martial artist to continue walking down the road of martial arts, both destiny and talent were indispensable. There were some peak talents of the Ancient Phoenix Clan that possessed the Ancient Phoenix bloodline because of their family background. But, even though they had talent amongst talents, their destiny was lacking. In other words, they wouldn’t be able to walk as far as Yan Littlemoon could on the road of martial arts in the future. This Lotus Blooming Step by Step phenomenon was good proof of just how great her destiny was.

Duke Golden Sword then stuck in and said, ”Yan Littlemoon isn’t too bad, but let me warn you that Yan Littlemoon obtaining first place in this Fire Spirit Star’s Ancient Phoenix smelting trial is nothing at all. In our view it should be naturally what happens. What she must compare with is the geniuses of the other 71 branch palaces and the Ancient Phoenix Headquarters. Her opponents are the geniuses that lived thousands or even tens of thousands of years ago. Only they are the true opponents of Yan Littlemoon.”

Those geniuses from thousands or tens of thousands of years ago had grown up by now and had become great figures within the Ancient Phoenix Clan. For instance, Duke Golden Sword and Monarch Sweetyfox were both ex number one trial challengers in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial.

“I thank Sir Envoy for the guidance. Littlemoon will take it to heart.” Beside Chu Redcloud, Yan Littlemoon bowed.

Monarch Sweetyfox revealed an appreciative smile. “Yan Littlemoon, you must rush through the 18 Hells of Flame as well as the Illusionary God Combat Array. Let me see just how far you can go! If your results are good, then I can apply to Internal Affairs for extra rewards for you!”

As Monarch Sweetyfox spoke, Yan Littlemoon’s heart burst with excitement. She understood that this was her chance! Her family background was excellent in comparison to other disciples’ of the branch palaces, but compared to those giant family clans at headquarters, her foundation was just too shallow. She needed to find a turning point, and this was her lucky chance to stir up the interest of headquarters!

“Littlemoon, try your hardest!”

Chu Redcloud said with a true essence sound transmission.

“Mm, don’t worry Aunty, this time I absolutely will not disappoint you, nor can I disappoint myself.” Yan Littlemoon gripped her white fists together, her heart filling with steadfast determination.

She was very clear about her limits in the 18 Hells of Flame, but she had never tried the Illusionary God Combat Array before.

That was a test of one’s comprehensive combat strength, and usually the last test taken before the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial ended.

Although she had never attempted it, she had full confidence in herself.

Blackwood faintly smiled and said, “Senior Ruby Sovereign, since headquarters has come, I ask that you open a fire spirit mirror so we can all take a better look.”

“Hahaha!” An energetic laughter suddenly filled the 18 Hells of Flame, “No problem, it’s just a tiny bit of effort!”

The Ruby Sovereign was the artifact spirit of the 18 Hells of Flame. The 18 Hells of Flame itself was a spirit artifact, and the inside was a self-contained space. If one didn’t have the Ruby Sovereign’s permission, it was very difficult to spy on what was occurring tens of thousands of miles deep within.

In the skies, fire origin energy gathered together, slowly forming a fire origin energy mirror. The image of the 18 Hells of Flame was reflected within it.

“It’s done. Yan Littlemoon was it? Enter. I am looking forwards to your performance!”

“Senior Ruby Sovereign, please look after me.”

Yan Littlemoon turned into a beam of light that broke into the 18 Hells of Flame. Through the fire spirit mirror in the sky, others could see Yan Littlemoon’s figure. She flushed through the Hells of Flame like a lithe fish, easily passing through without any hindrance. All of the violet fire origin energy and the blazingly high temperature was no different from warm water to her, comfortable and relaxing.

First level, second level, third level, Yan Littlemoon continued to flush straight down!

“Good!”

Monarch Sweetyfox nodded. What she was noticing was the aura of the Laws around her. By depending on just her comprehension of Fire Laws, Yan Littlemoon was able to transform all that violent and wild fire origin energy around her into a gentle energy that she was able to easily absorb. She could do this freely and easily with a practiced hand.

Yan Littlemoon didn’t slow down even when she broke through to the fourth floor. It was only at the fifth floor when her speed began to gradually decline.

“Fifth level 5000 miles… 5500 miles, 5600 miles…” Monarch Sweetyfox silently counted in her mind. At 5600 miles, a clear crack appeared in Yan Littlemoon’s protective true essence. Once she continued down further, she wouldn’t be able to withstand it.

At 6000 miles, there was an explosive shattering sound as Yan Littlemoon’s protective true essence shattered. The wild and rampant fiery heavenly wind crazily rushed towards Yan Littlemoon but was blocked by the energy barrier created by the Ruby Sovereign.

Her final result was 6000 miles into the fifth level!

“6000 miles into the fifth level is indeed quite good.” Monarch Sweetyfox nodded in appreciation. “In the past when I was at the Life Destruction realm and came to the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial as a rookie disciple, I wasn’t able to reach this depth. I will have others record this reward down. When this smelting trial ends, besides the other rewards, I shall also grand Yan Littlemoon three drops of phoenix heart blood.”

Phoenix heart blood was even greater than phoenix plume blood. A drop of phoenix plume blood was equal to a hundred drops of ordinary Ancient Phoenix Blood, and a drop of phoenix heart blood was equal to 50 drops of phoenix plume blood. Now that Monarch Sweetyfox had granted Yan Littlemoon three drops of phoenix heart blood, that was the same as 150 drops of phoenix plume blood.

It had to be known that when Huo Yanguang made a gambling battle with Lin Ming, he had put out 20 drops of phoenix plume blood. That price was enough to make all others go crazy.

And now Monarch Sweetyfox had casually tossed out the equivalent of 150 drops of phoenix plume blood as a reward. As the other heroic young elites heard this, all of them were filled with incomparable envy. There were many among them who hadn’t even seen 10 drops of phoenix plume blood in their lives before.

But, such a reward actually wasn’t to Chu Redcloud’s satisfaction.

To Yan Littlemoon, who had the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, three drops of phoenix heart blood wouldn't have too amazing of an effect on her.

Chu Redcloud grit her teeth and said, "This child Littlemoon has both talent and destiny, but her family background is ordinary. The Yan Family is considered a good distinguished family in my Charming Phoenix Palace, but placed within the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan and compared with the Xiao Family Clan, Huo Family Clan, and Huang Family Clan, they aren't anything at all. Even if the Yan Family does their best to raise and train Littlemoon, the support they can provide to her is still limited at best. Thus, I humbly, and with great respect, request Envoy Monarch Sweetyfox to give additional bloodline resources so that Littlemoon's bloodline power can increase even further!"

"Hohohoho!" Monarch Sweetyfox gently smiled as she heard Chu Redcloud. "You want to increase the power of her bloodline even further? Yan Littlemoon already has a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. If you wish to take yet another step forwards, I fear you will need something even better than phoenix heart blood. I think that you want phoenix blood essence! But, that is something that I cannot take responsibility for!"

Envoy Duke Golden Sword gaily laughed. "Fairy Chu, ever since the current Patriarch took a single drop of phoenix blood essence tens of thousands of years ago when he ascended to his position, there has only been a single time when a drop of phoenix blood essence has been awarded to a junior disciple because of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial! This is something that let alone a Palace Master, but not even some Patriarchs can obtain! Both I and Monarch Sweetyfox have never obtained a drop of phoenix blood essence, and that is because we fall far short of having the qualifications. Perhaps we will never have the qualifications for our entire lives!

"Yan Littlemoon's results are exceedingly far from being enough to obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence. The only way possible is if her results surpass all others from the 72 branch palaces for the last 10,000 years. Fairy Chu, you have to know that Yan Littlemoon is not the only one with a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, and she might not be the only one who can produce the phenomenon of Lotus Blooming Step by Step either. Just by relying on that minor point, she is far, far off from being able to obtain a single drop of phoenix blood essence.”

As Envoy Duke Golden Sword spoke, all the other young disciples were dumbfounded. In their minds, Yan Littlemoon’s talent was already at the peak of possibility. It was high to the point that no one had the courage to chase after her. But, listening to Duke Golden Sword’s words, even Yan Littlemoon fell far short of being able to apply for a drop of phoenix blood essence!

There was no limit in the universe. There was always a higher peak and a stronger person. In Fire Spirit Star’s smelting trial, Yan Littlemoon was a crane among chickens. But, Fire Spirit Star’s smelting trial occurred every four years, and it lasted two years each time. In 10,000 years, just how many smelting trials had been carried out here? Moreover, the Ancient Phoenix Clan had 72 branch palaces, and there were also over 20 similar smelting trial locations like Fire Spirit Star. Thus, the number of times the smelting trial had been carried out could be imagined!

Obtaining first place in an Ancient Phoenix smelting trial was simple. But, wanting to take first place and far surpass all other rivals in all Ancient Phoenix smelting trials for the last 10,000 years was unimaginably difficult.

How could Chu Redcloud not know this? She clenched her teeth and said, “I humbly request that lord and lady envoy give a target, and that as long as Littlemoon can surpass that target she can obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence!”

This was all Chu Redcloud could say to force the two envoys as well as to force Yan Littlemoon. It had to be known that wherever there were people, there would be factions and relationships between them. In the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters and the three great family clans, the relations between them were complex and inextricably linked on 10,000 different levels. The juniors of the three great family clans, through some energy and methods, might be able to obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence even if their qualifications were lacking.

But as for Yan Littlemoon, the Yan Family she came from was neither small nor great. Compared to the Ancient Phoenix Headquarters, her foundation was far too shallow. If Yan Littlemoon wanted to struggle for a drop of phoenix blood essence, the path she would have to take would be suitably difficult!

Chu Redcloud was aware of this point. She never expected that it would be easy to successfully apply for a single drop of phoenix blood essence. She could only set up a target and then break through it in full view of everyone else, and seize this precious chance to obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence. She had to make it so that headquarters couldn't deny her request, and that those people who tried to play little tricks wouldn't have the chance to do so!

"Oh?" Monarch Sweetyfox revealed a trace of surprise. Her eyes moved as she looked at Yan Littlemoon. She saw that the little girl was blushing red, her fists gripped together, obviously not backing down. She seemed full of vigor and courage. It was clear she wanted to go all out to desperately struggle for this drop of phoenix blood essence!

Monarch Sweetyfox's eyes revealed an amused light. "Good. But, I can only report this matter to headquarters; I do not have the authority to promise you anything. Headquarters will need to set the standard for this target. And, I hate to be rude, but this standard will be exceedingly high. It will be so high that all of you will believe that it is impossible, that we are forcing you into a dead end!"

Monarch Sweetyfox said with a smile. In truth, she didn't believe in Yan Littlemoon too much, but she still had to speak her piece.

In the last 10,000 years, just how many geniuses had emerged in the 100 billion clansmen of the Ancient Phoenix Clan? It was an uncountable number. But among them, who had managed to obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence?

The truth was that since Monarch Sweetyfox had begun serving as successor to the Internal Affairs Envoy, several family clans had put forth their most dazzling geniuses and applied for a drop of phoenix blood essence from her. Headquarters had also given them a standard, but none of them had ever been able to achieve it!

This standard was outrageous even to Monarch Sweetyfox. Even if those family clans used all of their connections to reduce the standards by a tiny bit, all of them had failed without exception!

Chapter 1011 – Lin Ming Leaves Seclusion

Chapter 1011 – Lin Ming Leaves Seclusion

…

…

…

"Thank you lord and lady envoy for your help in inquiring about the standard needed for phoenix blood essence. No matter what, I will not be afraid. I have full confidence in my own abilities!" Yan Littlemoon gripped her fists together, her voice solemn. She had obtained an entire pond of Ancient Phoenix blood, so the quantity of her bloodline was already enough. However, that pool of blood hadn't been too high in quality; she needed a drop of phoenix blood essence to round it out and put the final finishing touches on her bloodline. As long as she could obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence, the power of her bloodline would increase to another level.

Monarch Sweetyfox shook her head as she saw Yan Littlemoon. With the Yan Family's foundation and connections, it would be impossible for the standard to be reduced by even a little bit. In other words, Yan Littlemoon would face the most harsh and difficult standard possible.

If this standard was the only one, then perhaps even Xiao Chuji, who obtained a drop of phoenix blood essence 10,000 years ago, would find it unbearable.

It had to be known that Xiao Chuji was currently one of the greatest candidates to be the next Patriarch, and he was also the most illustrious figure of the entire Xiao Family!

In any case, Monarch Sweetyfox would do as regulations required and report this message.

She took out an exquisite and delicate array disc from her spatial ring. Her 10 fingers linked together and produced thousands of seals in an instant. These seals combined together into complex runes as they poured into the array disc.

A character on the level of Monarch Sweetyfox was already able to perform the great void shift, and that made sending messages much easier. If there were some specialized supportive array formations added on, then it wasn't difficult to send a message even past several great worlds of the Divine Realm.

Just two hours later, Monarch Sweetyfox received a reply from headquarters.

Hu –

A blazing flame lit up in front of Monarch Sweetyfox's array disc. It turned into countless runes that sank into her mind. The sound transmission runes that the Ancient Phoenix Clan sent back were much more convenient than sending a voice message. Not only were they easier to understand, but they also prevented the message from being leaked out.

Monarch Sweetyfox's eyebrows shot up. Although she already expected that headquarters would respond with an extremely overbearing and default standard, she still let out a light breath upon hearing what it was.

She shook her head and said to herself, "Headquarters is being a bit petty. This sort of standard is no different from saying no. But, headquarters also has their own issues. The Ancient Phoenix Clan has over 100 billion clansmen, and the resources required every year are countless. It's difficult to maintain a balance between harvesting resources and handing them out. Especially when it comes to something like Ancient Phoenix blood essence, there are countless people that are greedily eyeing it and can't obtain it. In particular the candidates to be the next Patriarch. Everyone wants a single drop, and in order for her to obtain a single drop and others not to, the standards must definitely be high."

As Monarch Sweetyfox was thinking, Chu Redcloud was eagerly looking at her, waiting for her to speak.

Monarch Sweetyfox faintly smiled and said, “Headquarters passed down instructions. In order to obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence, you will need to enter the seventh level of the Hells of Flame before the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial ends! Moreover, you must fully complete the Thousand Slaughter within the Illusionary God Combat Array!”

As Monarch Sweetyfox said this, even Duke Golden Sword ruefully smiled. Headquarters was simply playing a joke on others.

In the 18 Hells of Flame, the further down one went, the more difficult it became; the difficulty grew at a nearly exponential rate. In the smelting trial for rookie disciples, only a peak talent of a branch palace was able to enter the fourth level of the Hells of Flame.

The fifth level was reserved for talents such as White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun. During their first smelting trial here, they had both been able to enter the fifth level by the end. But, they didn’t manage to reach the 8000-9000 mile depth of the fifth level.

The sixth level was nearly a legendary domain to the branch palaces. In a smelting trial location like Fire Spirit Star, with Charming Phoenix Palace, Phoenix Cry Palace, and Praying Phoenix Palace combined together, there might not even be someone that could reach that depth in 1000 years!

But, if all 72 branch palaces of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were gathered together, along with headquarters and the three great families, it wasn’t too rare of an event. Someone that could enter the sixth level would appear once every 20-30 years.

But to travel 5000 miles into the sixth level, those people nearly didn’t exist. Even in the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan, it was still extremely rare for one or two people capable of such a feat to appear in a thousand years.

After that was the seventh level. That was simply not a domain possible for rookie disciples to reach. Even a peak late Divine Sea genius would find it extremely difficult to go that far. Most of those that trained in the seventh level were early Divine Transformation realm disciples!

For instance, White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun both reached the eleventh level.

That was a depth that cast away all other Divine Transformation realm disciples. Most Divine Transformation realm disciples were still only capable of reaching the eighth and ninth levels.

Of course, if one had to persist in asking the Ancient Phoenix Clan if there were any junior disciples capable of reaching the seventh level in all these years, there certainly would be. For instance, Xiao Chuji from 10,000 years ago was capable of reaching the seventh level when the smelting trial ended. But, Xiao Chuji had been at the eighth stage of Life Destruction and Yan Littlemoon was only at the seventh stage of Life Destruction.

Between the eighth stage of Life Destruction and the seventh stage of Life Destruction, there was only a difference of a single stage. But to a peak talent, there was an enormous disparity between every stage of Life Destruction!

Moreover, reaching the seventh level of the Hells of Flame was only a single aspect. There was also another aspect, and that was the Illusionary God Combat Array!

The Hells of Flame trial looked at one’s comprehension of Laws. But, the Illusionary God Combat Array trial tested one’s true combat strength.

And the condition to complete the Thousand Slaughter within the Illusionary God Combat Array was far more difficult than reaching the seventh level of the Hells of Flame!

Envoy Duke Golden Sword himself was a combat freak. His comprehension of Laws was ordinary, but in terms of actual combat, his talent was terrifying. It was also because of this point that he was able to become the Disciplinary Elder successor. After all, in a true battle, what decided victory or defeat was actual combat strength. Comprehension of Laws was only an indicator of one’s future potential and accomplishments. If one had great attainments in Laws, it was still useless if they couldn’t defeat someone else.

True combat strength had always been the point of pride for Envoy Duke Golden Sword. During his own rookie smelting trial, he had gone through the Illusionary God Combat

Array and had killed over 600 individuals. This result was enough to shock and awe the trial site guardian at the time!

As for completing the Thousand Slaughter, Envoy Duke Golden Sword only had two words to say – Ha. Ha.

The Illusionary God Combat Array also became increasingly difficult the further it went. This was because the enemies within would become increasingly strong, and every opponent would also be a peak talent!

After several hundred people, the enemies that would emerge would be on the same level of talent as White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun. Of course, their ages would also be the same as the trial challengers'. In other words, one would have to face White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun when they were in their twenties.

Facing such an opponent one on one would already be a difficult situation to win in, but facing against a crowd of them, how could one continue to fight?

No matter how one looked at it, headquarters simply didn't want to pass down a drop of phoenix blood essence. This was because there were far too many factors involved in the growth of a talent. Even if Yan Littlemoon seemed extraordinary now, there might be some problems on her future road of martial arts. For instance, maybe she would exhaust all of her potential or all of her destiny. She might even go adventuring in a mystic realm and perish there!

Phoenix blood essence had far greater advantages the earlier it was implanted in a martial artist's body. Even so, the only way headquarters would be willing to pass down a drop of phoenix blood essence would be if Yan Littlemoon's talent was so extraordinary that the Elders at headquarters all had their eyeballs pop out of their heads when they heard of it. Otherwise, they would never take such a risk.

As Chu Redcloud heard Monarch Sweetyfox's conditions, her expression of anticipation suddenly froze. Screw making things tough, this was simply playing a joke on them!

“How can anyone possibly accomplish such a request!?” Chu Redcloud directly blurted out, ignoring just how great Monarch Sweetyfox’s status was.

Although Monarch Sweetyfox agreed with Chu Redcloud, she definitely couldn’t say such words publicly. She was someone from headquarters, and thus she had to respect headquarters’ wishes. She said, “This target isn’t something that I came up with. Moreover, in the last 10,000 years, there have been some individuals that managed to reach the seventh level of the Hells of Flame, such as Xiao Chuji, Huang Yuefeng, and other such unrivalled geniuses. All of them were able to accomplish that. As for completing the Thousand Slaughter within the Illusionary God Combat Array, I suppose you would have to look further back in history, but it isn’t like no one has ever accomplished it. The standards that headquarters have set are difficult, but they are not impossible.”

“Xiao Chuji, Huang Yuefeng…” Chu Redcloud sucked in a breath of cold air. Those two people were the leaders of the Xiao Family and Huang Family. They were heroes amongst heroes!

“Great Envoy Sweetyfox, I also know that those two individuals were older than Littlemoon when they underwent their rookie smelting trial. Moreover, their cultivations were also higher. Senior Xiao Chuji was at the eighth stage of Life Destruction, and Senior Huang Yuefeng was also likely at the eighth stage of Life Destruction! They are a level apart and yet the standards are still the same. How could there be such a truth? Moreover, although Seniors Xiao Chuji and Huang Yuefeng were able to enter the seventh level of the Hells of Flame, neither of them were able to complete the Thousand Slaughter within the Illusionary God Combat Array!”

Monarch Sweetyfox faintly smiled and said, “Yes, that’s right, that’s why Senior Huang Yuegong wasn’t able to obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence. But, the reason Senior Xiao Chuji was able to obtain a drop was that the Xiao Family worked their connections in the background. For this drop of phoenix blood essence, the Xiao Family paid a tremendous amount of equivalent merit points to balance out the difference in standards. If the Yan Family has earned enough merit points, then they may also have the standards reduced by a small amount.”

Chu Redcloud's expression stiffened and she finally shook her head. The so-called merit points were a conversion of a family's contributions to the Ancient Phoenix Clan. The three great family clans had existed for countless tens of thousands of years, and the amount of merit points they accumulated was certainly astronomically high. But, the foundation of the Yan Family was too shallow and they didn't have any merit points. They lacked the ability to help Yan Littlemoon lower the standards. Moreover, even if they did reduce the standards by a little, that wouldn't make it much easier.

"Aunty, there's no need to say anything else. There is still a year left. I won't necessarily lose! There have been some people that have entered the seventh level of the Hells of Flame, and there have also been some people that have completed the Thousand Slaughter in the Illusionary God Combat Array. Since my predecessors were able to succeed, I don't believe that I can't do the same. And if I can't, that only proves that my strength is weaker than others' and I have no right to complain." Yan Littlemoon said, stopped Chu Redcloud from speaking further.

"Littlemoon...." Chu Redcloud sighed.

"Aunty, since I have set my determination I will struggle as much as I can, and I also will not regret my decisions. Moreover, since these are the standards that headquarters has sent down, it's useless for us to oppose them."

As Yan Littlemoon spook, Chu Redcloud could only let out a long breath. She no longer tried to complain. Indeed, they didn't have the ability to change a decision made by headquarters. "Okay, Littlemoon, try the Illusionary God Combat Array first. Let's see how far you can go and how many opponents you can slay..."

As Chu Redcloud spoke, the protective barrier of light around Totem Tower suddenly trembled. Then, ripples appeared in the barrier as it was ripped apart by someone. A young man's figure leisurely strolled out from Totem Tower, his long hair hanging loose against his waist. At this point, he looked disheveled, but his eyes shined like stars in the night sky, incomparably bright.

“Mm? Isn’t that Lin Ming? He actually stayed within Totem Tower for over a year before he came out?”

Chapter 1012 – To Find a Foil

Chapter 1012 – To Find a Foil

…

…

…

Lin Ming flew high in the skies. Behind him, the bright moon of Fire Spirit Star hung in the heavens, illuminating his body in clear splendor. Because the golden crow's appearance had caused the strong astral winds of Fire Spirit Star to calm down, his long hair was slowly fluttering in the wind, dancing like black threads of silk.

At this time, he was like an immortal descended to the world, his temperament elegant and ethereal.

As Lin Ming saw the sight before him, his clear and bright eyes revealed an astonished light.

He had just emerged from Totem Tower and hadn't expected such a scene to be occurring. A massive golden crow hundreds of miles long floated in the skies and all the disciples of Fire Spirit Star had gathered in the square in front of Totem Tower. The man and woman flying in the skies were obviously two top powerhouses.

What special occasion was it today?

Lin Ming was puzzled. He had been peacefully perceiving the Laws within Totem Tower, so he didn't realize the changes occurring outside.

Lin Ming leaving at this time was an extremely noticeable event. Because the envoys from headquarters had arrived, the vast majority of disciples had gathered here to greet them. Lin Ming coming out from Totem Tower himself was very eye-catching.

"Oh? There are still some people in seclusion at this time." Monarch Sweetyfox faintly smiled as she looked towards Lin Ming.

Sun Cyprestar revealed an embarrassed expression. He wanted to quickly say a few words to cover this up, but Chu Redcloud brightly laughed at this time and said, "Hohoho, it's Apprentice Nephew Lin. He has been meditating on the chaos stones in Totem Tower and has been in seclusion all the time until now. It's been over an entire year! Since he has meditated for more than an entire year, his harvests should have been tremendous! Apprentice Nephew Lin is after all the number one rookie disciple of Phoenix Cry Palace; his perception is extraordinary!"

Chu Redcloud deliberately emphasized the words 'chaos stones' as well as the fact that Lin Ming was the number one rookie disciple of Phoenix Cry Palace. As she said this, Sun Cyprestar's face flushed red with shame. Although Chu Redcloud had said that Lin Ming must have had many harvests and outwardly seemed to be praising him, anyone who listened could understand that there were daggers hidden in her words. She clearly knew how difficult it was to perceive the chaos stones and she was also aware that Lin Ming's harvests must have been very small. Thus, she spoke this way to draw more attention to him and embarrass him even more.

This was an especially critical strike since the two envoys from headquarters were here!

Just what was a chaos stone? And just how much could a rookie disciple perceive from them? If one chose them and couldn't perceive anything from them, then that was simply overestimating one's own abilities, biting off more than one could chew and becoming the joke of the public.

The truth was that Lin Ming's current level wasn't enough to draw attention from headquarters. And today's matters would cause the two envoys to develop a bad impression towards Phoenix Cry Palace. After all, Lin Ming was the top junior disciple of Phoenix Cry Palace and also the glory of Phoenix Cry Palace. If Lin Ming was turned into a joke, just how could anyone from Phoenix Cry Palace hold their head up high? And since Sun Cyprestar was the person in charge of Phoenix Cry Palace's disciples for this smelting trial, he naturally would suffer the greatest shame.

"Aiyaya, Brother Lin's luck is indeed horrible. He didn't come out earlier or later, but chose this moment when all attention was focused on the lord and lady envoys to emerge. Not just that, but Chu Redcloud is also stirring up trouble. It's impossible for him to try and blend in and be forgotten. Brother Lin was stuck in meditation over those chaos stones and didn't learn anything for the last year. But, everyone has taken a detour in their cultivation before. Putting aside this year, Brother Lin's performance was still among the best. But now, I fear that he will leave a poor impression on the lord and lady envoys..."

Xiao Whitesnow mumbled to himself. His thoughts were the same as everyone else's: Lin Ming's luck was just garbage.

Something that was originally a small matter had suddenly turned into an important matter in this situation.

At this time, Sun Cyprestar really hated Chu Redcloud to the extreme. She was simply his mortal enemy. This woman was cunning and knew a bunch of dirty tricks, and she always seized every opportunity to ruin others. If it weren't for her idle talk today, then no one would have known that this was still Lin Ming's first time closing up in Totem Tower. Those two envoys would have assumed that this was Lin Ming's second or third time in Totem Tower and wouldn't have cared too much.

All Sun Cyprestar could do was suppress the disheartened feeling within him and smile, saying, "Fairy Chu is simply making a joke. How can our Phoenix Cry Palace's disciples compare with the astounding disciples from your Charming Phoenix Palace. Lin Ming is simply undergoing an impromptu session of meditation. Even if he didn't perceive anything, he still gained experience, broadening his horizons and laying down a good foundation for his future cultivation."

"Hohoho! Vice Hall Master Sun is too modest. I actually know that Apprentice Nephew Lin here was able to jump ranks and defeat a Four Layered Heavens Ninefall Master with just a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation. How could he be as horrible as Vice Hall Master Sun is making him out to be? In this smelting trial I am also looking forwards to Apprentice Nephew Lin's performance. Since Vice Hall Master Sun has said that Apprentice Nephew Lin meditated on the chaos stones to lay down his foundation, perhaps you will allow me to see just what sort of foundation this is?"

Chu Redcloud's meaning was obvious. She wanted Lin Ming to rush through the 18 Hells of Flame and the Illusionary God Combat Array. Sometimes, no matter how bright your light was, you still needed someone else to serve as contrast so others could see how kickass you were. Lin Ming jumping ranks to defeat a Four Layered Heavens Ninefall master with a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation had sufficient qualifications to serve as a foil. She wanted others to see that if even someone like Lin Ming lost to Yan Littlemoon, that would emphasize just how amazing and unusual her talent was.

How could Sun Cyprestar not know Chu Redcloud's thoughts? She actually wanted to use the number one genius of his Phoenix Cry palace to serve as a foil. Could this woman be any more vicious and ruthless?

His inner thoughts were grim and filled with animosity, but his outer appearance was much more genial. He stroked his beard and looked a bit uninterested as he said, "Fairy Chu must be joking. Apprentice Nephew Lin has heaven-gifted talent, so how could our Phoenix Cry Palace show off our poor performance? We admit defeat, we admit defeat, haha."

"Oh? Fairy Maiden Chu said that Apprentice Nephew Lin here managed to jump ranks and defeat a Four Layered Heavens Ninefall master with a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation?" Whether it was Duke Golden Sword or Monarch Sweetyfox, either one of them could make out the duel of tongues they were having.

Monarch Sweetyfox faintly smiled. She had seen this sort of situation many times before; it was clear that these two Elders had a very acrimonious relationship. Since one of them had the chance to step on the other, they certainly wouldn't miss out on it. Normally, neither of them would care about this sort of catfight, but Envoy Duke Golden Sword's interest was actually aroused by Chu Redcloud's words, and that was that Lin Ming had jumped ranks to defeat a Four Layered Heavens Ninefall master with a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation.

This was proof that Lin Ming was a genius of actual combat!

A Four Layered Heavens Ninefall wasn't too bad. Moreover, when one passed from the eighth to the ninth stage of Life Destruction and underwent a baptism of the Heavenly Dao, that was equal to half a great boundary of cultivation. In the past, if Xiao Daoji was able to rush through the 18 Hells of Flame with a Ninefall cultivation, then he would have been able to break through to the seventh level far more easily.

However, the truth was that there was an extremely small number of martial artists that would choose to enter the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial for the first time after reaching Ninefall. This was because before crossing Ninefall, the deeper one's foundation was and the more solid their foundation, the greater the origin energy cloud would be, and the more thorough their baptisms of Laws would be. And, they could develop this foundation by undergoing the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial before Ninefall.

On the other hand, there were also advantages in undergoing the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial after reaching Ninefall. That was because after stepping into Ninefall and accepting the baptism of the world's Laws, one's comprehension of Laws would be much deeper, and the gains from entering and meditating within Totem Tower would also be greater. They would be able to go deeper into the 18 Hells of Flame and obtain more rewards. Once they went to the smelting trial the second time, they would no longer be rookie disciples and receive this treatment.

And in truth, sometimes this just didn't look at one's wishes. The Ancient Phoenix smelting trial had a gap of four years between each time it occurred, in order for the totem stones to be replenished. In such a long time, many weren't able to make early breakthroughs. For instance, there were very few people who participated in the Ancient

Phoenix smelting trial in their twenties. After all, not everyone was as talented as Yan Littlemoon.

Envoy Duke Golden Sword himself was originally a genius of combat. In terms of comprehension of Laws, he was nothing but an amateur. It was because of this reason that he was mocked by those geniuses who excelled in Laws, but he didn't mind those jokes. After all, strength was the only truth. If your comprehension of Laws was high but you still couldn't defeat someone else in battle, just what use was it?

Thus, he had a deep appreciation for those geniuses that had similar characteristics to him.

"Reporting to Envoy, Lin Ming did indeed jump ranks to defeat a Four Layered Heavens Ninefall martial artist at the fifth stage of Life Destruction. In terms of combat, he can be considered just a bit gifted." Sun Cyprestar modestly said.

"Haha, Elder Sun, you are being far too humble. What do you mean just a bit gifted? That is actually an amazing accomplishment! Lin Ming, right? You're not bad. In fact, you're very much to my liking! During this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, me and Sweetyfox will be staying at Fire Spirit Star for a while. I look forwards to your performance in the Illusionary God Combat Array. I don't really care at all about how well you do in the 18 Hells of Flame, but you must slaughter at least 600 people within the Illusionary God Combat Array! If you can kill 600 people, then I will take responsibility and reward you with three drops of phoenix heart blood!"

As soon as Envoy Duke Golden Sword spoke, he also promised three drops of phoenix heart blood. That was the same as 150 drops of phoenix plume blood!

This left Lin Ming stunned. He could sense what sort of lofty status these two had from Sun Cyprestar's tone as he spoke to Duke Golden Sword and Monarch Sweetyfox. But even so, he didn't think this man would promise three drops of phoenix heart blood without batting an eye. It had to be known that when Sun Cyprestar and Chu Redcloud made their bet for the Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron, they had also bet a drop of phoenix heart blood.

Obviously, the status of these two people was countless times higher than that of Sun Cyprestar and Chu Redcloud!

Chu Redcloud faintly frowned. She could see that Duke Golden Sword had an excellent impression towards Lin Ming and he didn't even inquire about the joke of Lin Ming meditating on the chaos stones. It seemed that she wouldn't be able to successfully step on Sun Cyprestar this time. She said, "Two envoys, how about we have Littlemoon attempt the Illusionary God Combat Array for the first time to see how far she can go?"

"Mm, alright."

Monarch Sweetyfox nodded. She naturally wouldn't disagree to that.

Yan Littlemoon was about to attempt the Illusionary God Combat Array!

The other disciples had already been looking forwards to this for a long time. At this time, all of them couldn't help but start talking about it!

"She's finally going to rush through! I wonder how many people Yan Littlemoon can kill, 600? 700?"

"Don't be an idiot. Yan Littlemoon might not be good in the aspect of combat. Do you think that it is easy to kill 600-700 people in the Illusionary God Killing Array? As for completing the Thousand Slaughter and obtaining a drop of phoenix blood essence, that is even more of a joke. It looks nice as a goal, but who can possibly accomplish it? Not even Senior Xiao Chuji of the past was able to do so!"

As some disciples were casually speaking, Lin Ming was shocked by their words. "What? Phoenix blood essence!? What are you fellows talking about? You can obtain phoenix blood essence if you rush through the Illusionary God Combat Array?"

"Oh, Brother Lin, you might not know but Chu Redcloud applied to headquarters for a drop of phoenix blood essence for Yan Littlemoon. Headquarters didn't directly agree.

Instead, they set down a standard. If she can pass this standard then she can obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence.”

“There’s such a matter!?”

Lin Ming was bewildered. If she could pass a standard then she could obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence! If he could pass this same standard, then could he also obtain it!?!?

Chapter 1013 – Illusionary God Combat Array

Chapter 1013 – Illusionary God Combat Array

…

…

…

Concerning the value of phoenix blood essence, Lin Ming had a clear understanding of it from perusing the texts of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. A phoenix's blood essence was the fundamental basis for its rebirthing through nirvana. Generally speaking, an Ancient Phoenix would be fine no matter how much ordinary blood was drawn out from it. But, every drop of phoenix blood essence taken away would damage the life source of the phoenix!

It was more accurate to say that blood essence was no longer blood, but the condensed form of a phoenix's life force!

How many phoenixes were there in the Divine Realm? No one could say for sure, but it was absolutely a small number. There were even types of God Beasts that had only one member. Between the heavens and earth, they were singular. Within the vast universe, they were unique!

Only when this type of unique God Beast died would the next reincarnation of that God Beast appear. This could be said to be a rule of the Heavenly Dao!

Rather than a living being, a God Beast could be called a divine god evolved from the Heavenly Dao itself. For instance, the phoenix was a divine god that represented the manifestation of the Fire Laws, wielding the power of flame!

Even though the Ancient Phoenix Clan called themselves the descendants of a phoenix and also had the phoenix bloodline within their bodies, the truth was that the Ancient Phoenix Clan was merely a group of people within the Divine Realm that had slowly evolved with the Ancient Phoenix bloodline over time, multiplying over generations. From the very start, they never had a True Phoenix in their clan. This was because even the Ancient Phoenix Clan Patriarch would never have the ability to control a phoenix. They were on completely different levels!

Lin Ming was well aware of what a drop of phoenix blood essence meant. To someone like him who had such a light phoenix bloodline, this was an amazingly great lucky chance!

It had to be known that when Lin Ming first started walking down the road of martial arts, his talent was ordinary. But, after being transformed with the blood of the Ancient Phoenix and the blood of the Azure Dragon, his talent was slowly enhanced. Even so, he was far from being comparable with the peak talents of the Divine Realm. If his talent was worse than theirs, his cultivation speed would be slower. Even if Lin Ming had the ethereal martial intent supporting him and had come across all sorts of lucky chances, his cultivation speed was still far from reaching the peak!

He only needed to be compared to Yan Littlemoon to understand this point. Yan Littlemoon was younger than Lin Ming by two years, but her cultivation was actually higher than his by a full stage of Life Destruction.

If he were compared with peak talents of other Divine Realm Holy Lands, the difference would be even greater. There was always someone stronger.

Thus, Lin Ming earnestly wished for this drop of Ancient Phoenix blood essence.

He asked, “What standards did headquarters request?”

“Well, the standards are that before this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial ends, Yan Littlemoon must enter the Hells of Flame’s seventh level and she must also complete the

Thousand Slaughter within the Illusionary God Combat Array. Hmm, in my opinion this standard is simply making fun of others. Just who could possibly accomplish it?"

So that was the request…

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He hadn't attempted the Illusionary God Combat Array, but he had gone into the Hells of Flame one time. He was completely unaware of what it was like in the deeper parts.

Lin Ming began to feel some excitement in the face of such a challenge. He had closed up for over a year in Totem Tower and his comprehension of Laws had soared. During the entire year of monotonous and humdrum meditation, let alone fighting, he hadn't even moved. Lin Ming was a hot-blooded fighter who loved battle from the marrow of his bones. After being suppressed for such a long time, he eagerly looked forwards to a good challenge so that he could verify his own strength!

At this time, an explosive sound echoed out from far away. In the center of the giant square in front of Totem Tower, the ground began to sink in and a giant portal construction slowly emerged from the ground. This portal was hundreds of feet high and the entire gateway shimmered with brilliant light, as if it were leading to another time and space.

This was the Illusionary God Combat Array, the trial within Fire Spirit Star that was used to test combat ability!

After entering the Illusionary God Combat Array, geniuses of varying levels would appear, all of them with an age similar to the trial challenger.

For instance, if a 30 year old martial artist were to enter the Illusionary God Combat Array, he would encounter all sorts of 30 year old geniuses. They would have numerous different attack styles, cultivation methods, Concepts, and all sorts of other combat aspects. If one could overcome all of them and complete the Thousand Slaughter, then they would absolutely be a mythical combat genius!

To complete the Thousand Slaughter of the Illusionary God Combat Array was even more difficult than entering the seventh level of the 18 Hells of Flame!

Yan Littlemoon looked at the vibrating stone portal in front of her and clenched her teeth before rushing inside. Her body disappeared into the Illusionary God Combat Array.

Everyone outside held their breath, waiting to see Yan Littlemoon's performance.

On an arch on top of the Illusionary God Combat Array portal, there was a row of nine stars. Every time the trial challenger passed a certain goal, a star would light up.

These stars each respectively represented – slaying the first enemy, slaughtering 10 enemies, slaughtering 50 enemies, slaughtering 100 enemies, slaughtering 200 enemies, slaughtering 500 enemies, slaughtering 700 enemies, slaughtering 900 enemies, and finally the Thousand Slaughter.

Yan Littlemoon had just been in the Illusionary God Combat Array for several breaths of time when the first star lit up with a dazzling light. This meant that Yan Littlemoon had already struck down the first enemy.

In the crowd, White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun sighed with emotion. As they said, the new would always replace the old. People were constantly evolving. Back when they were rookie disciples, they were far from reaching Yan Littlemoon's strength.

The Illusionary God Combat Array factored in the disparity of age and would match trial challengers with opponents of a corresponding age. Thus, whenever one went inside, the situation would be the same no matter what. Currently, White Daohong estimated that he could kill just over 400 people.

Lu Xiaoyun was a bit better, but even she could only kill around 500 people.

Then, at 30 breaths of time, the second star lit up. This meant that Yan Littlemoon had succeeded in slaughtering 10 people.

An incense stick of time passed. 50 people slaughtered!

Then, a hundred people slaughtered!

Monarch Sweetyfox nodded, but Duke Golden Sword seemed to be in disagreement. "Slow, she's way too slow."

Monarch Sweetyfox sweetly smiled. "Golden Sword, I hope you aren't using the results of your past to compare with this little girl. You originally walked straight down the path of destruction, and your aura and moves were both irresistibly strong, so you naturally rushed through the trial quickly. But Yan Littlemoon is different from you. She is focused more on comprehending the Concepts and Laws. Moreover, Yan Littlemoon's true combat potential still hasn't fully developed. She is currently focused on perceiving the Laws, but in the future when she gains more combat experience she will be able to go even further in the Illusionary God Combat Array."

"Hehe, such a gentle combat style and focus on Laws is nothing more than all show and no go in my opinion. Truly what they call fancy but impractical. That Lin Ming is much more to my taste. I bet that when he enters the Illusionary God Combat Array, he will far surpass Yan Littlemoon!"

"Haha, that might not be true. Lin Ming indeed excels in combat, but Yan Littlemoon is ahead of him by far too much in the aspect of bloodline and comprehension of Laws. I'm not sure if you heard it just now, but Lin Ming has been meditating on the chaos stones for the last year. I don't know what he was planning, but even at my boundary or your boundary, it is difficult for us to perceive anything from them. Moreover, those things that can be perceived are the highest truths of the Great Dao. In other words, they are just a general outline; it might not necessarily help in increasing his combat strength.

Monarch Sweetyfox's words were reasonable, but Duke Golden Sword chuckled and said, "I still believe in what I said. That is the intuition that I developed from living through countless battlefields! I believe in Lin Ming's strength! Perhaps his performance in the 18 Hells of Flame might be ordinary, and it might even be poor, but he will absolutely surpass

Yan Littlemoon in the Illusionary God Combat Array. He might even break through that critical point of slaughtering 600 people, or even close in on 700 people, surpassing the me of the past!"

"Your evaluation of him is too high, I'm not too optimistic of his chances." Monarch Sweetyfox shook her head in contradiction. And at this time, on the top of the Illusionary God Combat Array, the star that symbolized 200 people having been slaughtered lit up.

Yan Littlemoon had killed 200 people within the Illusionary God Combat Array!

However, the further it went, the more difficult it would become. Even as Yan Littlemoon slowly exhausted her strength, her enemies would only become increasingly powerful and increasingly greater in numbers. Later, Yan Littlemoon would even need to face 10 or 20 opponents at once. And all of these people were geniuses in their own right. Moreover, their attack style, their cultivation methods, every aspect of their combat ability would vary. They would come out one after another, endlessly until she was overwhelmed!

Yan Littlemoon soon found it difficult to continue. Her strongest aspect was her comprehension in Fire Laws – she didn't understand other Laws all too much. In the face of some specialized enemies, for instance ice-attribute martial artists or water-attribute martial artists, her Fire Laws were actually faintly restrained.

After slaughtering 400 people, Yan Littlemoon's enemies joined together in great formations. The several different combat styles joined together, complementing each other and multiplying their combat strength!

Yan Littlemoon suddenly felt the pressure rapidly increase. As the battle continued, her consumption of energy became enormous. Even so, she withstood it all and slaughtered her five hundredth opponent!

The sixth star lit up!

Following that, killing every person became increasingly different. Amongst Yan Littlemoon's opponents, a large number of fifth stage and sixth stage Life Destruction martial artists began to emerge. In terms of cultivation talent, they were not much worse than Lin Ming!

Of course, in terms of overall combat prowess they were far inferior to Lin Ming. Even so, they far exceeded other ordinary geniuses. If these sixth stage Life Destruction martial artists were true people then they would likely reach the ninth stage Life Destruction. In other words, they were Ninefall geniuses. If they were placed in the world of mortals, they would be able to sweep away all Divine Sea powerhouses that existed there!

To face a siege from these sorts of people, the pressure on Yan Littlemoon could be imagined!

570 people…

580 people…

590 people…

As soon as Yan Littlemoon slaughtered 596 people, she finally reached her limit. Her body shook and her protective true essence shattered. A phantom sword pierced through her chest.

In that brief moment, 10 saint artifacts thrust towards her, immediately killing Yan Littlemoon!

Hu – !

Yan Littlemoon was ejected from the Illusionary God Combat Array, her face as pale as paper!

She had finished. The total number of people she slaughtered was… 596!

This number surpassed White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun. It even surpassed the greatest geniuses that had come to Fire Spirit Star for the last 1000 years.

This was because Yan Littlemoon hadn't fought many times in her life and thus her combat experience was lacking. She wasn't like the martial artists of the lower realms that had slain their way to the top. Most of her time was spent closed up in seclusion, cultivating. From Xiantian to Revolving Core, from Revolving Core to Life Destruction, to a mortal, these could be bottlenecks that they never passed in their life. But, these bottlenecks were simply nothing to Yan Littlemoon. She was able to break through them with a single period of seclusion. Thus, her actual experience was very little.

To slaughter 596 people, this result simply left all of the martial artists present dumbfounded. They had thought that Yan Littlemoon was weak in terms of true combat, but now it seemed that her so-called 'bad at combat' was only in comparison to her comprehension of Laws. When she was compared to other people, she had already cast them far off!

Xiao Whitesnow and White Daohong felt inferior at their own abilities. As for Sun Cyprestar, he looked at Yan Littlemoon with some envy. This wasn't envy of Yan Littlemoon, but envy towards the Yan Family that was able to produce such a talented disciple. The Yan Family wasn't a powerful family to begin with, but because of Yan Littlemoon they were destined to rise in the future.

At worst, Yan Littlemoon would become a Palace Master. If she was just a little bit lucky then she could become a Merit Elder, Internal Affairs Envoy, or even a Vice Patriarch!

Chapter 1014 – Lin Ming's Turn

Chapter 1014 – Lin Ming's Turn

…

…

…

"She was just four people away from slaughtering 600. Who can still say that Yan Littlemoon's combat ability is lousy?"

"Of course it wouldn't be bad. She is a genius with the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Even her worst aspect is likely something that we could never hope to catch up to. If she casually tries, she can already be the top talent of Fire Spirit Star for the last thousand years. If she can use this next period of time to temper her true combat strength then she will easily be able to break through 600 people, and perhaps even 600 and several dozen more wouldn't be too difficult."

"Mm… however, that's her limit. The request for the phoenix blood essence is to complete the Thousand Slaughter. To slaughter a thousand people in there… that's just a joke and a half."

All of the disciples present felt pity for Yan Littlemoon. She was already this strong and yet she wasn't fated to obtain the phoenix blood essence. Her ability was simply far from being enough and the requests were just too severe.

Chu Redcloud was also disappointed. Although Yan Littlemoon's performance was excellent so far and she had expected this result, after actually seeing this result with her own eyes, she felt nothing but despair at such a massive gap. She couldn't even fake a smile with how ridiculous the difference was. To slaughter another 400 people… that was a moat that could never be overcome!

The Illusionary God Combat Array was different from the 18 Hells of Flame. In the 18 Hells of Flame, as long as you could progress, you could go even deeper. But, the opponents within the Illusionary God Combat Array were formed based on one’s age. If you made progress, the array formation’s opponents would also progress.

“596 people. That’s actually much better than what I imagined. How about it Golden Sword, do you still insist on your previous judgment?”

Monarch Sweetyfox shot an eye at Duke Golden Sword. Duke Golden Sword smiled and said, “Of course. Did you want to make a bet? How about we have Lin Ming step up now?”

“Haha, there’s no use making a bet. If Lin Ming can slaughter 600 people then I will not need your Disciplinary Enforcement Division to put out the promised three drops of phoenix heart blood. My Office of Internal Affairs will personally put forth the rewards for you.” Monarch Sweetyfox casually said. Providing resources to talented disciples was part of her duties to begin with.

“Okay.” Duke Golden Sword chuckled, a joking expression on his face. He turned to Lin Ming and said, “You brat Lin Ming, do you want to enter the Illusionary God Combat Array and give it a go? The beautiful Sweetyfox here has said that as long as you can slaughter 600 people, she will reward you with three drops of phoenix heart blood! That is phoenix heart blood! In addition, I will personally grant you a top grade saint artifact armor that approaches a transcendent saint artifact.”

Duke Golden Sword’s words floored all the martial artists present. All of them began to be filled with excitement.

Lin Ming was actually going to rush through the Illusionary God Combat Array! There was really climax after climax today!

Originally Lin Ming had meditated over the chaos stones for an entire year before coming out, so others had a little bit of fun over him because of that, and there was also some criticism spoken against him in private. But, that was just how things there. In terms of Lin Ming's combat strength alone, no one dared to doubt him there!

A fifth stage Life Destruction martial artist had defeated a Four Layered Heavens Ninefall master. That achievement was enough to startle someone from headquarters.

Even if no one believed that Lin Ming could make it far in the 18 Hells of Flame, they all had to admit that he had the qualifications to contend with Yan Littlemoon in the Illusionary God Combat Array!

"Lin Ming is going to enter the Illusionary God Combat Array. I wonder just how far he can go? How many people can he slaughter? I don't think his results will be any worse than Yan Littlemoon's!"

"That might not be true. Yan Littlemoon's comprehension of Laws is too terrifying and her progress in this last year has been far too rapid. As for Lin Ming, he meditated on the chaos stones for this last year and wasted all of that valuable time. Even if he managed to understand a little bit of the Chaos Laws, that is simply a general outline of the Laws. They aren't necessarily applicable to actual combat."

"I also think that Yan Littlemoon's results will be a tad better. After all, she has the Ancient Phoenix bloodline. But even if Lin Ming is worse, he won't be that much worse."

All of the young disciples present were eager and enthusiastic. They ardently waited for Lin Ming to rush through the Illusionary God Combat Array so they could see him struggle with Yan Littlemoon for superiority!

On the side, Chu Redcloud contemptuously curled her lips and said, "He's just rushing through the Illusionary God Combat Array. In the Illusionary God Combat Array, he'll barely be able to keep up with Littlemoon. And in terms of understanding of Laws, that is truly where a person's potential can be seen. The more prevailing one's comprehension of

Laws is, the more amazing their future accomplishments will be. As for having extraordinary combat strength, that doesn't mean they will be able to maintain that in the future."

Chu Redcloud's voice wasn't loud, but everyone present was a top master, thus they naturally heard her clearly. Sun Cyprestar tugged on his beard in anger, his eyes wide with rage. But, he still couldn't find the words to refute her. Lin Ming's decision to meditate on the chaos stones for an entire year had left him speechless.

Everyone turned to Lin Ming, waiting for him to enter the Illusionary God Combat Array. However, what happened next left them all puzzled.

Lin Ming faintly smiled and said, "Lord and lady envoy, this disciple has a matter he wishes to discuss with you two. I wonder if that is permissible?"

"Oh? What is it? Speak as you will!" Monarch Sweetyfox looked at Lin Ming. In her opinion, a young disciple like Lin Ming was hot-blooded and loved to contest with others. With such a grand opportunity laid down in front of him, he should have already rushed inside. But she didn't think that he would smile and change the topic with such polite language. He clearly had some deeper meaning in doing so.

"This disciple has heard that the two lord and lady envoys have laid down a standard for obtaining a drop of phoenix blood essence. That is, to enter the seventh level of the Hells of Flame and also to simultaneously complete the Thousand Slaughter within the Illusionary God Combat Array. Is that true?"

"Yes. But this standard was not set by us, but sent down from headquarters. What about it?"

"Mm… this disciple wishes to ask, if I can achieve this standard, then can I also receive a drop of phoenix blood essence?"

Lin Ming's voice was slow and unhurried, filled with energy and true essence. As he spoke, his voice spread throughout the entire audience. For a time, everyone was stunned silent!

Sun Cyprestar and Xiao Whitesnow had their mouths hanging open, unable to figure out just what facial expression to make.

Yan Littlemoon's eyes had gone perfectly round. After rushing through the Illusionary God Combat Array herself, even she didn't have much hope of obtaining the drop of phoenix blood essence. But Lin Ming had actually asked such a question; just what was he doing?

As for Chu Redcloud, after being momentarily stunned, she looked at Lin Ming with kindness, as if she were looking at someone with brain damage. She chuckled and said, "Apprentice Nephew Lin, what kind of question are you asking! Did you also want to take that drop of phoenix blood essence?"

Lin Ming didn't respond. He had no interest in Chu Redcloud. He kept his eyes glued onto Monarch Sweetyfox and Duke Golden Sword, his thoughts completely centered on the phoenix blood essence.

Chu Redcloud frowned, extremely annoyed at being treated with such contempt by a junior. She wanted to smack him around to teach him a lesson, but in this situation in front of two envoys, she naturally couldn't do anything like that.

Duke Golden Sword deeply looked at Lin Ming. Lin Ming's words had indeed startled him. "Are you saying you wish to attempt meeting this standard?"

"Yes, Lord Envoy!"

"Hohohohoho!" Monarch Sweetyfox started laughing like tinkling bells. "Indeed, the baby calf does not fear the tiger. Since this is the standard sent down by headquarters, then of course it's acceptable. If you can achieve that standard then that drop of phoenix blood essence shall be granted to you! However... do you know just how difficult it is to achieve such a standard?"

Monarch Sweetyfox's words caused all of the martial artists present to start privately speaking amongst themselves. Did Lin Ming really not know how difficult the standard was?

Thinking about it, Lin Ming truly didn't have much of an understanding of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. He had come to Fire Spirit Star for just a brief period before holing himself up in Totem Tower. He hadn't even been as far as the third level yet, so he naturally didn't know how difficult it would become. As for the Illusionary God Combat Array, he had never attempted that before. Was it possible that Lin Ming was really setting himself up to be a giant joke?

If Lin Ming didn't meet the standard then he certainly wouldn't suffer any losses. But if the difference was too great, that would just be too shameful.

Sun Cyprestar felt his palms turn sweaty. Just what sort of games was Lin Ming trying to play today? Lin Ming choosing to meditate on the chaos stones had already given him a great shock. And now that he was doing all of this, Sun Cyprestar really wasn't sure if his heart could withstand it. On such a grand occasion, once Lin Ming lost face, not only did that mean he would lose face, but Phoenix Cry Palace would also lose face by association.

"Lin Ming you brat, do you know what you are saying?" Sun Cyprestar angrily said with a true essence sound transmission.

Lin Ming was abnormally calm as he replied, "I only want to give it a try. Elder Sun, please rest assured."

"Lin Ming, this standard is for one year later when the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial ends. Did you want to try it now instead of one year from now?" Even Duke Golden Sword, who favored Lin Ming, didn't believe that he had even the faintest hope of success. He thought that Lin Ming simply didn't know how difficult it was.

"Now!" Lin Ming enunciated loudly. If he obtained the phoenix blood essence a year earlier, that would be a year more of benefits. Of course earlier was better.

“Hah! Okay, then start from the Illusionary God Combat Array!” Duke Golden Sword motioned towards the Illusionary God Combat Array. He estimated that Lin Ming’s results in the Illusionary God Combat Array wouldn’t be too bad. Although he wouldn’t be able to achieve the Thousand Slaughter, his results wouldn’t be too ugly.

But, Lin Ming shook his head and said, “Lord Envoy, this disciple wishes to begin at the 18 Hells of Flame.”

Lin Ming chose the 18 Hells of Flame for a reason. In this last year, he had comprehended far too many Law fragments. These Law fragments were stored in his body and mind, and he needed to verify these Laws within the 18 Hells of Flame and thoroughly master them.

Only like this could he become stronger. Then, his results in the Illusionary God Array would also be better!

But Lin Ming’s words caused the martial artists present to stare at him, mouths agape.

What Lin Ming wanted to attempt was not the Illusionary God Combat Array, but the 18 Hells of Flame!

In their opinion, Lin Ming excelled at combat. As for his comprehension of Laws, no one had a good opinion of him. At best, his talent with Laws could compare with someone like Huo Yanguang.

It would have been far better for him to attempt the Illusionary God Combat Array. If he didn’t fail too miserably then no one would mention him not achieving the standards and there also wouldn’t be a need to try the 18 Hells of Flame.

But now, Lin Ming wanted to rush through the 18 Hells of Flame first. If this happened then his weakness with Laws would be exposed. At that time, if he couldn’t even reach the fourth level then wouldn’t that be a great loss of face?

Chu Redcloud also felt that Lin Ming was crazy. If this boy actually wanted to take a piece of shit and smear it all over his face, just who could stop him?

“This brat was locked up in Totem Tower for an entire year. In front of those chaos stones that are like tomes of heaven, could he have been stimulated somehow?” Chu Redcloud thought. Duke Golden Sword had given Lin Ming a way out and yet he refused it and insisted in disgracing himself. Even if he didn’t know how difficult the 18 Hells of Flame was, was he actually naïve enough to think that he could instantly rush to the sixth or seventh level?”

As Chu Redcloud was thinking, Lin Ming had already turned into a beam of light that shot towards the 18 Hells of Flame.

At this time, the 18 Hells of Flame’s artifact spirit naturally formed a light screen projection of Lin Ming as he rushed downwards.

Lin Ming was like a falling meteor as he blazed down with amazing velocity!

The first level!

The second level!

The third level!

Nothing was able to hinder him!

Chapter 1015 – The Origin of Burning Heat

Chapter 1015 – The Origin of Burning Heat

…

…

…

When Lin Ming first arrived at Fire Spirit Star, his comprehension of Fire Laws was still inferior to that of Huo Yanguang. He hadn't even been able to reach the third level of the 18 Hells of Flame. But now, he had immediately broken through in a single go. The wild fire origin energy brushed past him like a cool breeze, not affecting him at all.

The Chaos Laws were the source of all Laws. When Lin Ming was in Totem Tower, he had witnessed the creation and formation of the universe, and was able to understand the key material structure of existence. He knew the essence of the two yin and yang energies. Such a lucky chance was something that not even a World King might be able to obtain.

Now, after having perceived the Great Dao of the universe's source, Lin Ming needed to verify his Fire Laws once again. It was like the top imperial scholar returning to his province to take a local civil examination. It would naturally be easy after having mastered everything else!

"So this is how it is… the first level of the Concept of Fire, Burning Heat, is not as simple as I thought it would be. I thought that my Concept of Burning Heat had already reached perfection, but now I understood that I had simply never understood the essence of the Concept of Burning Heat!"

Before, Lin Ming had no idea just what burning heat was. He simply thought that it was a single type of energy.

Burning heat could be conducted, it could breed fire, it could burn down all life, it could annihilate enemies. Lin Ming had once comprehended the Concept of Burning Heat to perfection in Timeworn Phoenix City, and had used that as the foundation to break through the first world of the God Transforming Mirror. But now, after looking back, he realized that his comprehension of the Concept was simply too crude and unrefined.

Not to mention anything else, he hadn't even been sure about what the essence of burning heat had been.

In fact, it wasn't just Lin Ming, but many powerhouses that excelled in the Concept of Fire didn't understood what the essence of burning heat was. They merely thought it was the manifestation of one kind of energy.

The so-called Concept of Burning Heat they comprehended was only something that they used. As for how it worked, they didn't actually know.

But now, after Lin Ming had perceived how matter and energy had been composed, he was able to look back at the Concept of Burning Heat and discover that it was the evolution of yin and yang energy.

The essence of burning heat was the movement produced by the energies coming from yin and yang particles. The faster these particles moved, the higher the temperature would be. When the speed of these particles reached the limit, so would their temperature!

There were even some Divine Transformation or Divine Lord powerhouses that had assumed they had comprehended the Concept of Burning Heat to perfection, that their understandings had reached the peak. But they never realized that above perfection was an even deeper meaning. That was… to comprehend the origin.

If Lin Ming hadn't been able to see the formation of matter then he would never have realized this. The source of burning heat stemmed from the twin energies of yin and yang. On the surface, there didn't seem to be any connection at all.

The mysteries of the universe's Laws were difficult to imagine. Even after seeing it with his own eyes, Lin Ming still wasn't able to fully become aware of it, so it was completely useful for him to tell others of what he knew. Even those World Kings who understood the composition of matter to a degree wouldn't be able to pass these understandings to their disciples. This was because only by seeing the evolution of yin and yang energies, and seeing the movement and path of the particles, could one understand the inherent revolution of energy for the Laws. The rules of the Laws were nearly impossible to describe.

Now that Lin Ming had entered the third level of the Hells of Flame, the temperature of the fire origin energy astral winds here was a hundred times the temperature of magma. Normally, if a martial artist needed to resist such a high temperature they would need to consume a massive amount of energy. But, after Lin Ming had comprehended the source of Burning Heat, all he needed to do was use a bit of his own energy and slow down the tiny particles of energy within the fiery astral winds to slow them down, lowering their heat and thus easily resist them!

Third level, 7000 miles…

Third level, 8000 miles…

Lin Ming continued to rush downwards. As time passed, everyone who had been laughing at Lin Ming had shut up. In truth, 8000 miles into the third level wasn't much at all – it was similar to Huo Yanguang's current progress. But, none of them forgot that Lin Ming's comprehension of the Fire Laws had been extremely weak. Moreover, he had spent the last year in seclusion perceiving the chaos stones. The chaos stones did not discuss something as specific as the Concept of Fire, but were a general outline of the Laws within the entire universe. They were all-encompassing, holding all ideas, and yet being obscure and nearly impossible to discern. If one meditated on the chaos stones, just how much would they be able to enhance their comprehension of the Concept of Fire?

If it was said that Lin Ming had meditated on the Extreme Dao Heaven Tablet to reach this depth then no one would have been surprised. But he had managed to make such progress after meditating on the chaos stones; it was simply beyond anyone's understanding.

“How could this be… Lin Ming has actually made so much progress in the last year? If he continues then he’ll break through to the fourth level and reach Xiao Whitesnow’s level.” A Charming Phoenix Palace disciple said with incredulity in her voice.

“Humph, Lin Ming is still the number one talent of Phoenix Cry Palace after all. Even if his enlightenment in Laws is lacking, he is still able to rely on his deep true essence to make up for that deficit. This doesn’t mean anything at all. Once he reaches the fourth level, the difficulty will shoot up to another level and he won’t be able to continue so languidly anymore. When Littlemoon came out of seclusion she also reached the fourth level!” Chu Redcloud sneered.

At this time, Lin Ming had already traveled 9000 miles into the third level; he would soon pass into the fourth level.

At this depth, Lin Ming began to slow down, he didn’t blaze downwards like before. After reaching 9500 miles, his speed was only 20% of what it was at the start. This was because he needed time to enlighten himself on the source of the Burning Heat Concept. He needed to reaffirm and sort out the understandings he had obtained from the Law fragments in Totem Tower.

None of them had thought perfection was not the ultimate limit of Concepts. It was more precise to say that the comprehension of Laws never had a limit to begin with.

Even though Lin Ming had comprehended the essence of burning heat, his understanding still hadn’t reached the limit. There were different particles and they all had different properties and moved differently, and all of them needed to be carefully thought over.

The Laws of the universe were unimaginably vast. Even an Empyrean would never be able to comprehend one ten thousandth of their complete exquisiteness. The only thing that a martial artist could do was solidify their foundation as much as possible. Only when one’s foundation was solid would they be able to deduce and comprehend higher boundaries of Laws.

“Honorable Mater was right. Lin Ming is really slowing down.” Many Charming Phoenix Palace disciples echoed out. “If this continues then the fourth level will be his limit.”

Chu Redcloud stroked her hair as she looked at the fire spirit mirror in the sky. She muttered to herself, “This brat has quite the ability. He was able to perceive the chaos stones to such a degree and actually reach the fourth level.”

9500 miles…

9600 miles…

9700 miles…

Lin Ming’s speed became increasingly slow. What he needed was not to break through in a single go, to demonstrate his strength, nor to bathe in the adulation and praise of others. What he needed was to use the 18 Hells of Flame to temper his understanding of Laws, precipitating everything he had accumulated and make a breakthrough!

Bang!

Lin Ming officially broke through the 9999 mile mark of the third level and entered the fourth level of the Hells of Flame.

Then, fourth level 2000 miles, fourth level 3000 miles, fourth level 4000 miles! Without noticing it, Lin Ming’s depth had already surpassed Xiao Whitesnow’s! But, his speed also slowed down. Although he had become extremely slow, to the point that others would have thought he would stop at any moment, he still continued downwards without stopping.

At this point, the martial artists present slowly turned from surprise to stunned awe. Lin Ming had actually surpassed Xiao Whitesnow?

Xiao Whitesnow had meditated on the 90 Foot Burning Heaven Tablet, a totem stone that was only inferior to the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. Moreover, Xiao Whitesnow was a balanced genius: he was decent in both combat and Laws. But now, in terms of Laws, he had been surpassed by Lin Ming!

How could this be? Lin Ming had clearly meditated on the chaos stones in Totem Tower for an entire year. Could he really have managed to perceive some things from the chaos stones?

On Phoenix Cry Palace's side, Sun Cyprestar was pleasantly surprised as he gazed at the fire spirit mirror in the air. Lin Ming's performance was far better than what he had expected!

"He actually surpassed Xiao Whitesnow. This brat Lin Ming, I wonder just what he was able to perceive in this last year. It's really unbelievable. Even if he is defeated now, I'll still be satisfied in his progress." Sun Cyprestar still couldn't understand what was happening. Lin Ming had meditated over the chaos stones in Totem Tower for the last year, so how could he manage to comprehend any truths about the Fire Laws from the chaos stones?

The scene that appeared within the fire spirit mirror was only a virtual projection. With Sun Cyprestar's boundary, he wasn't able to fully assess Lin Ming's situation from this virtual projection. But high in the air, what Monarch Sweetyfox was able to see was a completely different scene.

Monarch Sweetyfox also had the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Without a doubt, out of everyone present, she was the one with the deepest comprehension of the Fire Laws.

She stared at Lin Ming, her thin eyebrows pressed together.

"Am I seeing things? All the way until the fourth floor Lin Ming has only used the Concept of Burning Heat. He hasn't even touched the Concept of Annihilation or the Concept of Creation."

This was completely beyond common sense. Generally speaking, in the third level one had to face a temperature so high that it would instantly evaporate tempered gold. One had to use the Concept of Creation to transform that energy into something more palatable. If one used the Concept of Burning Heat and their control was lacking, then that would be adding fuel to the fire!

"What's wrong?" Duke Golden Sword casually asked as he saw Monarch Sweetyfox frown. He had always been a greenhorn when it came to Laws and Concepts. Even if he saw Lin Ming up close in person rushing through the 18 Hells of Flame, he would only be able to come up with some general observations. And now that he was looking at this scene from the fire spirit mirror, he could only be a spectator that was watching for fun.

"No… nothing's wrong." Monarch Sweetyfox shook her head.

Duke Gold Sword thought that Monarch Sweetyfox was not too optimistic about Lin Ming. He chuckled and said, "Are you dissatisfied with Lin Ming's results? This boy Lin Ming's comprehension of Fire Laws is only ordinary. Of course he cannot compare to the past you. But that doesn't matter. One's true ability can only be seen in the heat of combat. That is the only strength that matters. This boy is exactly to my tastes. This time I will definitely give him some pointers. Perhaps in the future I can transfer him to my Disciplinary Enforcement Division."

The Disciplinary Enforcement Division was a troop directly subordinate to the Disciplinary Elder. They were equal to the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's Nine Furnace Guard. They wielded the authority of enforcing laws and their power and influence was terrifyingly great. In the Disciplinary Enforcement Division, every single member was a peak master that excelled in combat. Duke Golden Sword was the captain of the Disciplinary Enforcement Division and also the successor to be the next Disciplinary Elder. The Disciplinary Enforcement Division were treated exceedingly well and were provided with many, many resources. Duke Golden Sword had no reason to believe that Lin Ming would refuse his offer.

"This is still ordinary?" Monarch Sweetyfox echoed Duke Golden Sword's words. Her delicate and beautiful eyelids trembled for a brief moment as a ridiculous idea popped up in her mind. But she shook her head, immediately denying it. "I'm just imagining things."

Time passed a minute and second at a time. After two hours passed, Lin Ming's speed became increasingly slow. When he reached 7000 miles into the fourth level, he simply stopped where he was. It was unknown just what he was doing.

He seemed to be accumulating his strength and perceiving something. A moment later, he even sat cross-legged in the air, his eyes closed in meditation!

This left all the people waiting in the square flabbergasted. Just what was Lin Ming doing? Normally, a martial artist would take advantage of their momentum and rush down as far as they could in a single go. But Lin Ming had actually stopped where he was. Wasn't he just wasting his energy?

Chapter 1016 – Another Breakthrough

Chapter 1016 – Another Breakthrough

…

…

…

On normal days, one would stay at certain depths of the 18 Hells of Flame if they planned on deliberately using the fire origin energy within to temper their understanding of Laws.

But in this circumstance with everyone watching, a martial artist rushing through was the same as a farmer picking up a massive sack of grain and rushing to drop it off. They wouldn't be able to hold the sack for long and would have to take advantage of their momentum to go as far as they could. Who had ever heard of a farmer who held onto the sack and sat down in meditation? Wasn't this just a waste of strength?

None of the present disciples were aware that Lin Ming was peacefully perceiving the Concepts of Annihilation and Creation. With the Chaos Laws as a foundation, he was able to deeply grasp the truths of these two Concepts.

Creation and Annihilation were two sides of the same coin. Even though they were opposites, they actually complemented each other, each unable to exist without the other.

If there was creation, then sooner or later there would be annihilation. In order for there to be annihilation, there first had to be creation.

From the small ants that crawled over the ground, to the beasts that wandered the woods, to the nations of the world, to the great Holy Land sects, to the giant celestial bodies in the heavens, to the boundless universe itself, nothing was able to escape from the logic of these Laws!

Even the scene that Lin Ming saw in the chaos stones, that of the universe being born, was simply an interpretation of these two Laws.

The universe was created from nothing, and from creation it would flow towards the end of annihilation, turning into nothingness once more. Then, the universe would be created again, annihilated again, repeating endlessly and infinitely…

As Lin Ming was meditating, thousands of inspirations flashed through his mind. He slowly contrasted them to the Law fragments of the chaos stones, perceiving them one at a time. He suddenly felt as if something in his mind snapped, and in that instant he obtained mastery of those two Concepts.

From Creation to Annihilation, when all was added together, that was samsara!

After perceiving the dual Concepts of Creation and Annihilation, Lin Ming's eyes flashed open. All around him fire origin energy was annihilated and created, similar to limitless flowers blooming and wilting, growing and dying…

Every small flame was a single point of creation and annihilation. Every small flame was its own samsara!

Fifth level of the Hells of Flame, break through!

In that instant, Lin Ming's speed suddenly shot up. In just several breaths of time, his velocity rapidly increased to over a dozen times the speed of sound. He was even faster than when he first entered the 18 Hells of Flame!

"What!?!?"

No one imagined that Lin Ming's speed would shoot up like a rising hurricane. It had to be known that in the Hells of Flame, although one had to take advantage of their momentum to rush as deep as they could, the faster they went, the fiercer the fiery astral winds would become, and the greater the pressure on one's protective true essence would be.

Dozens of times the speed of sound meant that Lin Ming could pass over a hundred miles in a breath of time. Such a speed was similar to a falling meteor! When a meteor fell, its excessive speed would cause it to burn in the air due to friction. Although it didn't take long to crash into the ground, the high temperature that scorched the meteor would often completely destroy it!

And, what Lin Ming burst through was not ordinary air, but fierce astral winds of Fire Spirit Star that were over a hundred times hotter than magma. Just what would the result of that be?

The pressure that temperature put on his protective true essence could be imagined!

If one didn't understand the Concept of Fire and depended on just their own strength to resist this, then not even a middle or late Divine Transformation realm powerhouse would be able to withstand it!

A hundred miles per breath of time – that was a thousand miles per 10 breaths of time!

8000 miles!

9000 miles!

9900 miles!

Fifth level, shatter the barrier!

Bang!

With unstoppable momentum, Lin Ming directly broke into the fifth level of the Flames of Hells, shooting straight for the sixth!

"He… he broke through to the fifth level?" Chu Redcloud gulped. Her eyes were wide open as she stared at the fire spirit mirror in the sky with abject horror. She had only been a bit shocked when Lin Ming had reached 9000 miles into the third level, and even after Lin Ming broke through to the fourth level she had only been stunned.

But now, she was beginning to feel fear creeping into her heart.

Yan Littlemoon could break through to the fifth level, but she absolutely could not do it at over a dozen times the speed of sound! If this meant that Lin Ming had already surpassed Yan Littlemoon, that was something that Chu Redcloud could absolutely not accept. “He has obviously been meditating on the chaos stones in Totem Tower for the last year. The chaos stones are only a general outline of the Laws, and moreover they are extremely mysterious and difficult to perceive. And, what Littlemoon meditated on was the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal, the absolute best totem stone in Fire Spirit Star. Not just that, but Littlemoon’s understanding of the Fire Laws surpassed Lin Ming’s to begin with, so how could the likes of him actually surpass her!? I cannot, I will not believe this!”

“How can this be happening? Lin Ming had obviously slowed to a crawl, so how could his speed suddenly rise by so much!” Many disciples of Charming Phoenix Palace were also confused. They had thought that Lin Ming had already reached his limits.

As for the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace, Xiao Whitesnow, or even Sun Cyprestar, all of them were bewildered. Lin Ming’s process of breaking through was too strange. He had been extremely fast at the beginning but then he had quickly slowed down, even stopping motionless for a brief moment. Then, his speed had crazily shot up and he had rushed through in a single go. Just what was going on here?

Let alone Sun Cyprestar being confused, even Duke Golden Sword was floored by Lin Ming’s performance. It was said that Lin Ming excelled in actual combat, so when did his comprehension of Laws become so kick ass? When Duke Golden Sword rushed through the 18 Hells of Flame himself, he had only managed to reach the fifth level and that was at the very end of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. Now, Lin Ming had accomplished the same with still an entire year to go.

Duke Golden Sword’s eyes were wide as he looked at the fire spirit mirror in the sky. Then, he turned to Monarch Sweetyfox and asked, “Sweetyfox, um… what is going on here… I’m a bit confused. Why did that boy’s speed suddenly shoot up so much and so suddenly? If he had this ability to begin with then why was his speed slow like a snail just then?”

Sweetyfox had an extremely complex look on her face. She looked up at the fire spirit mirror in the sky and took a deep breath. It seemed that her earlier feelings had been correct. Underneath the gaze of everyone, this brat Lin Ming was taking this attempt through the 18 Hells of Flame as his personal smelting trial. Not only did he consider this a test, but he was also training himself within it!

If this were just a test, then all that mattered was how far he could go. But in order to perceive and train in the Laws, one needed to consume strength. The results would be worse than if one solely rushed down as far as possible.

“This brat Lin Ming, the reason his speed was slower at the beginning was that he was enlightening himself on the Laws, and slowly confirming his own comprehension of the Fire Laws one at a time within the Hells of Flame. He should have used the pressure of the astral winds within the Hells of Flame to complete the final process of sublimation and integration…”

Monarch Sweetyfox had an extremely deep understanding of Laws and Concepts. When she rushed through the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial as a rookie disciple, she was a character that had managed to reach the sixth level. By combining her previous knowledge with what she saw now, she quickly came to understand what Lin Ming was doing and for what reason he was doing it.

“What? We are testing him and yet he’s taking this chance to train? This brat is too crazy! He clearly doesn’t place our test in his eyes!” Duke Golden Sword shouted out, looking a bit angry. But, this was only to maintain appearances. Deep down in his heart, he actually very much appreciated the daring and crazy nature of this Lin Ming.

Monarch Sweetyfox said, “It’s better to say that Lin Ming just came out from Totem Tower and he wasn’t able to convert those comprehensions of Laws he gained into something applicable in true combat. He is grasping this opportunity, finding a turning point to completely master his understandings. It was inconceivable that he was meditating on the chaos stones for an entire year!”

What Monarch Sweetyfox said was right. The reason that Lin Ming had suddenly accelerated was to draw support from the violent fiery astral winds of the 18 Hells of Flame to fuse the Fire Laws within himself, further increasing his strength.

In the first three level Concepts of Fire, Burning Heat, Annihilation, and Creation, in just these three low level Fire Concepts, Lin Ming’s comprehension of them surpassed that of all other young disciples present. His comprehension of them even surpassed that of Divine Transformation realm powerhouses like White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun. This was the difference from the heights at which they understood the Concepts. One understood the origin of the Concepts, while the other only understood how to apply them. Of course, the disparity would be great.

And having comprehended these Concepts to this degree, Lin Ming actually had a deeper idea in mind: that was to fuse the three levels of Concepts together!

When one’s Concepts reached an extremely high level, they could be fused together. Lin Ming had long ago understood this point. Let alone fusing the various level Concepts within the Fire Laws, even completely different Laws could be fused together!

For instance, fire and thunder, or time and space.

However, when Lin Ming had fused a thunder-attribute cultivation method and a fire-attribute cultivation method together to create an explosive attack move, that was actually not the fusion of the Laws themselves. That could at best be called combining the Laws.

But even a simple combination was actually able to multiply their total might. If one could truly fuse them together then the power could be imagined.

Lin Ming didn’t have any hopes of fully fusing the Fire Concepts together. What he wanted was to find a small chance today to slightly fuse them. Everything was difficult at the start. Just finding the tiniest starting point would be enough.

Fifth level, 2000 miles.

Fifth level, 3000 miles.

Fifth level, 4000 miles!

Every 10 breaths of time, Lin Ming would pass a thousand miles deeper. At this point, even Lin Ming felt a tremendous pressure on him. This was nearly the same as flying through the surface of the sun at high speeds. Even he found it difficult to continue.

But under such tremendous pressure, Lin Ming felt a massive advantage.

All of the Concept and Law fragments within his body seemed to melt away, fusing deeper into him, becoming one with his organs, flesh, blood, and bones!

Faint traces of inscriptions began to carve themselves into Lin Ming's bone, forming mysterious runes. In a sense, Lin Ming's body itself was becoming a totem stone, it was only that his understanding of Concepts was too shallow. If he died now and his bones were pulled out, then others would be able to meditate on them.

At 5000 miles into the fifth level, Lin Ming began to slow down. Even so, his velocity was still at least a dozen times the speed of sound.

And, 6000 miles into the fifth level had been Yan Littlemoon's limit!

If Lin Ming could break past that depth, then that meant he had surpassed Yan Littlemoon.

And with Lin Ming's current speed, it was likely he would shatter that record without stopping!

In that moment, every martial artist watched Lin Ming with breath abated.

Yan Littlemoon gripped her fists together, her large eyes shining as she stared at the fire spirit mirror in the sky.

“Lin Ming will actually eclipse me? How could that be? My Concepts and Laws were far ahead of his by a large margin at the start, and I also have the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. I even meditated on the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal, the best totem stone in Totem Tower. He meditated on the chaos stones and he should have learnt nothing from those obscure and mystical objects. A year later, I should have flung him even farther away, but now, he will actually transcend me? How could this be…?”

Yan Littlemoon couldn’t accept this, and Chu Redcloud couldn’t either. Everyone’s eyes remained wide and unblinking. Lin Ming’s speed had dropped to 10 times the speed of sound, but 10 times the speed of sound was still amazing. That was 20 miles every breath of time!

No matter what Yan Littlemoon or Chu Redcloud were thinking at this moment, neither of them could affect Lin Ming. In a single final breath he rushed past the 6000 mile mark of the fifth level, breaking through without a single hitch!

Chapter 1017 – Bloom For Me, Heretical God Sprout!

Chapter 1017 – Bloom For Me, Heretical God Sprout!

…

…

…

“He broke through! He has surpassed Yan Littlemoon!”

As everyone watched Lin Ming rush forwards with unstoppable momentum, no one suspected that he wouldn’t be able to break through the fifth level 6000 mile distance. Even so, as they watched him break that marker, all the martial artists felt as if they were caught up in a dream. Yan Littlemoon had the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline and had meditated on the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. In their eyes, she was a nearly insurmountable existence. Even so, such a person was brutally flung behind by Lin Ming!

Moreover, after surpassing Yan Littlemoon, Lin Ming’s speed was still 10 times the speed of sound!

As Yan Littlemoon saw Lin Ming shatter the fifth level 6000 mile distance, she suddenly began to tremble. She bit her lips. In that instant, a strange feeling began to swell up in her heart. Although she was well aware that her talent wasn’t amazing when placed within the entire Divine Realm, she still couldn’t bear that the record she just set had been mercilessly broken by a youth that was around the same age she was. And a year ago this youth was still far behind her!

Yan Littlemoon could accept it if she was inferior to others from the start, but she couldn't accept that she had been overshadowed by someone who had been far weaker than she was a year ago. This severely crushed and ruined her glory and pride!

This sort of situation caused even her own confidence to waver. She inevitably developed suspicions about herself. She suspected, was she really a proud daughter of heaven within her generation? If she was, then how could she be so different from others?

Fifth level 7000 miles, fifth level 8000 miles, Lin Ming flew deeper and deeper down, passing 20 miles with a single breath of time. In an incense stick worth of time, that was 2000 miles!

At 8000 miles into the fifth level, the surrounding temperature suddenly shot up to 200 times the temperature of magma. Not just that, but as Lin Ming passed through the wild friction of the fire origin energy within the Hells of Flame at breakneck speed, it was a pressure that even a top grade saint artifact would find difficult to withstand!

But Lin Ming was able to withstand it. It wasn't that his defensive ability was tougher than a top grade saint artifact's, but he used the Fire Laws to continuously resolve the burning power of fire.

All of the martial artists present were already left speechless. This momentum… was he really going to break through to the sixth level?

A genius that could break through to the sixth level of the 18 Hells of Flame only appeared within Fire Spirit Star once in every 1000 years! In the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan with the three great families and the 72 palaces combined, that meant that such a talent would appear every 20-30 years. These people had an extremely high hope of becoming a Palace Master in the future!

And, those geniuses had only passed through the sixth level at the end of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial.

As for now, the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial was only half finished. Yan Littlemoon had only made it 6000 miles into the fifth level, but Lin Ming would soon enter the sixth level!

If this continued, then there was a chance that Lin Ming could attack the seventh level before the smelting trial ended. This was simply an unimaginable feat!

“The seventh level of the Hells of Flame is the legendary domain of god!” A disciple mumbled to himself. To a rookie disciple, the 18 Hells of Flame’s seventh level was called the domain of god. The reason it had such a name was that anyone who managed to step into the seventh level as a rookie disciple would have a high chance of becoming the Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan in the future. That was the same as a god to the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan!

“The beast! The madman! I really can’t understand what just happened. How did he manage to perceive such exquisite Fire Laws from the chaos stones!?”

“No wonder Lin Ming dared to ask about what the standards were for the phoenix blood essence. It seems that Lin Ming really has a high chance of completing the Thousand Slaughter! Even though he might not be able to do it now, a year from now he can achieve that goal at the end of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial!”

“Phoenix blood essence… I can’t even dream of that…”

As the phoenix blood essence was mentioned, all of the disciples revealed expressions of desire and envy. Let alone phoenix blood essence, even a drop of phoenix heart blood would make them ecstatic with joy. Beyond that, for phoenix marrow blood and phoenix coronet blood, that was even more unimaginable. And for phoenix blood essence, that was no different from a fairy tale to them. It was the same as a common farmer looking up at the throne of the emperor; it would forever be a distant dream, always out of reach.

As these disciples were speaking, Lin Ming finally broke through the end of the fifth level and flew into the sixth!

In the sixth level the temperature of the flames soared up by a ridiculous degree, reaching 300 times the temperature of magma! And in the space of the sixth level, the fire origin energy actually condensed into tiny dao diagrams that were swept up in the astral winds and impacted towards Lin Ming.

The fire origin energy in the sixth level was no longer simply blazing and tyrannical, but condensed into postcelestial dao diagrams that attacked all intruders!

If the fire origin energy before the sixth level was a group of straggling and scattered soldiers, then from the sixth level, the fire origin energy turned into tight phalanxes, multiplying their power and rushing forwards!

The pressure of the sixth level was incomparable to that of the fifth!

Since ancient times, countless outstanding and extraordinary heroes of the Ancient Phoenix Clan had been stopped at the sixth level. There was only an extremely tiny minority that managed to break through to the seventh level. As for Xiao Daoji and Huang Yuefeng, both of them were at the eighth stage of Life Destruction when they just barely managed to break into the seventh level.

Even Lin Ming now felt the pressure on his body double and triple and his speed plummeting.

"The sixth level. Lin Ming's speed has already slowed down to the speed of sound. He should be able to reach 1000-2000 miles into the sixth floor, but as for entering the seventh floor, that is simply impossible. However, he has a chance of accomplishing that before the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial ends. There really is a chance that he can obtain the drop of phoenix blood essence. Lin Ming has the capital to challenge the standards sent down by headquarters!"

In the skies, Monarch Sweetyfox said out loud as her unblinking eyes were locked onto the fire spirit mirror.

Monarch Sweetyfox had an extremely accurate grasp of the Fire Laws. When Lin Ming had been hiding his strength, she had managed to see through him. She didn't speak out at the time because she couldn't believe her own eyes. But Lin Ming wasn't able to hide his strength any longer, because he was relying on the pressure of the Hells of Flame to fuse the three levels of Fire Concepts together.

Monarch Sweetyfox also had extremely good judgment. To the present Lin Ming, the greater the pressure the better. If he hid his strength right now then the pressure on him would be insufficient and he would fail at his fusion attempts.

He had already consumed a massive amount of energy. Even with the Gate of Healing supporting him, he was still reaching his limit. With a light crackling sound, breaches began to appear in Lin Ming's protective true essence.

"Mm? He still hasn't slowed down?"

Monarch Sweetyfox's eyebrows shot up. Although the speed of sound wasn't fast, the fire origin energy of the sixth level was extremely explosive and dangerous. Even at the speed of sound, the pressure he would have to withstand was tremendous. Lin Ming's smartest move was to drop down to the speed of sound. Only like this would he be able to go further. Otherwise, Lin Ming wouldn't have been able to even reach 1000 miles into the sixth level.

"I understand now. Lin Ming's fusion of Laws has reached the critical point. If he slows down now then he'll fail, but if he continues at this speed then he won't be able to withstand it either."

If Lin Ming slowed down then the pressure on him would be reduced. But, his fusion of the three Fire Concepts was reaching the key moment. If he slowed down now then he would fail at the end. This was similar to turning down the fire right before a pot of water reached the boiling point!

If he gave up now then all his previous efforts would be wasted!

But wasn't wanting to continue easier said than done?

Now all that remained to be seen was whether or not Lin Ming could complete the initial fusion of Concepts before his protective true essence shattered. If he was able to fuse them together, then even if he failed immediately afterwards, he would still absolutely be able to break through to the seventh floor within the next year!

If Lin Ming could then complete the Thousand Slaughter within the Illusionary God Combat Array, he would be able to obtain the drop of phoenix blood essence, a treasure that could cause the countless heroic young elites, Elders, and Palace Masters of the Ancient Phoenix Clan to go crazy with want!

Ka ka ka!

The cracks in Lin Ming's protective true essence grew larger and larger even as more of them appeared. But, the fusion of Concepts was always a single step away from success. Monarch Sweetyfox sighed. "What a pity. He's just a step away from success. The first attempt is always the best. If Lin Ming is able to succeed in fusing the Concepts on his first try, then he will be able to save a massive amount of time in his comprehension of Laws."

Monarch Sweetyfox's voice was slow and quiet. But now, because everyone was focused on watching Lin Ming rush towards the seventh level, all of them were silent. Thus, her voice was heard far and wide.

As the martial artists present heard Monarch Sweetyfox's explanation, only then did they figure out what Lin Ming was doing. As for Duke Golden Sword and Sun Cyprestar, they felt sorry for Lin Ming. Even so, in terms of achievements alone at this moment, Lin Ming was far beyond Xiao Daoji and Huang Yuefeng of the past!

As everyone thought that Lin Ming's attempt to fuse the Concepts would have a miserable end, he was focused on his own struggle. He completely converged all of his soul force, pouring his entire being into his dantian!

Lin Ming's star-like eyes blazed with a dazzling incandescence!

"Bloom for me, Heretical God Sprout!"

Wuu –

Within Lin Ming, his spiritual sea began to violently seethe and tumble as his gold battle spirit roared out. All around Lin Ming, the fire origin energy astral winds began breaking into his body but were actually suppressed by a pale gold power. The wild and fierce fire energy was forcefully tamed as it rushed into his meridians, surging towards his dantian like a rising tide.

The fire origin energy of the sixth level was too rich. It gathered together at a maddening speed, and within this raging inferno of energy, the Heretical God Sprout began to slowly stretch out its leaves.

“What? What is that!?” Duke Golden Sword’s eyes widened.

“Heavens! That is… that is a gold battle spirit!!? A sixth stage Life Destruction junior actually comprehended a gold battle spirit? That is simply… inconceivable!!!”

A gold battle spirit was something that normally only a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse would be able to comprehend. Moreover, only an outstanding Divine Transformation genius would be able to do so. For instance, Phoenix Hall disciples, Phoenix Hall Protectors, and so forth.

As for those worse Divine Transformation realm powerhouses, such as the Ancient Devil that had attached itself to Yang Yun, they only managed to comprehend a perfect silver battle spirit.

Only a single step separated a perfect silver battle spirit and a gold battle spirit. But, this single step was as far away as the horizon – they simply couldn’t be compared!

And at this time, as Monarch Sweetyfox closed her eyes, her voice actually had a faint tremble to it.

“Not only is that a gold battle spirit, but within Lin Ming’s body there is also some kind of Law phenomenon!”

Out of all the martial artists present, and in fact, out of all the martial artists and supreme elders that Lin Ming had ever encountered before, excluding Empyrean Primordius and the ancient goddess who had died, out of all the ones living, Monarch Sweetyfox was the person with the greatest comprehension of Laws. Her understanding surpassed even Fairy Feng's!

She could feel some sort of phenomenon occurring within Lin Ming's body that belonged to the Fire Laws. Perhaps there was even another Law phenomenon within him! This sort of phenomenon was similar to the Blue Lotus Domain or Lotus Blooming Step by Step. But, the rank was far higher. In fact, there was no comparing them at all!

Chapter 1018 – Fusing the Three Concepts

Chapter 1018 – Fusing the Three Concepts

…

…

…

"What? Law phenomenon?" Duke Golden Sword was startled as he heard Monarch Sweetyfox speak. "What sort of phenomenon?"

"I have no idea. I've never seen it before!" Monarch Sweetyfox shook her head.

There were all sorts of phenomena that a martial artist could produce, and they were separated into many different categories. Among them were some directly related to combat, and some related to Laws.

Martial artists had different bloodlines, talent, good fortunes, bad fortunes, destiny, physique, perception of Laws, cultivation methods, and thousands upon thousands of other variables that were always changing. Thus, there were countless different phenomena that could appear within a martial artist, so it wasn't strange for Monarch Sweetyfox to encounter one she hadn't experienced before.

The Blue Lotus Domain and Lotus Blooming Step by Step could be considered types of phenomenon. The definition of a phenomenon was extremely broad, and even vague.

Back on the Sky Spill Continent when Lin Ming fought with Situ Yaoyue, she had the Extreme Violet Dantian, thus she could form the Extreme Violet Domain. That could also be considered a type of phenomenon. When he fought with Whitedemon, Whitedemon had been able to use his hydra bloodline to form a hydra phantom; this was also a type of phenomenon.

Phenomena were divided into varying quality, with those that were better and those that were weaker. A low level phenomenon wasn't anything at all, but a high level phenomenon like Lotus Blooming Step by Step was impressive enough to amaze others.

And above Lotus Blooming Step by Step there were even more extraordinary phenomena. For instance, some phenomena were directly involved with a martial artist's inner world. There were some Divine Lord realm powerhouses that had a phenomenon where their inner world was 10 times greater and 10 times tougher than others'. And, the source of a Divine Lord powerhouse's strength was the heaven and earth origin energy condensed within their inner world, as well as the worship of those existences within. If there was a 10 times difference in inner worlds, then the disparity in combat strength could be imagined.

As for the phenomenon occurring within Lin Ming's body, Monarch Sweetyfox had never seen or heard of it before. Even so, he was able to swallow the wild fire origin energy within the Hells of Flame's sixth level, and he was even able to affect the surrounding revolution of Fire Laws around him. Thus, the rank of this phenomenon could be imagined!

"Just what adventures has Lin Ming gone through, what experiences and what fortuitous encounters has he had? The strength of his bloodline is clearly so light, yet why was he able to comprehend such a formidable phenomenon?"

Monarch Sweetyfox muttered to herself. "If it was said that Lin Ming has some amazingly powerful Law phenomenon within his body, then in addition to his marvelous perception, him obtaining such comprehensions is… no, I still can't believe it. This can only be described as… a monstrous genius!"

As Monarch Sweetyfox was marveling over the Law phenomenon within Lin Ming's body, all of the other martial artists present were gawking at Lin Ming's gold battle spirit. In truth, they simply weren't able to feel or make out the phenomenon of the Heretical God Sprout.

They knew that Lin Ming was a battle spirit genius. Moreover, he had used that as his foundation to perfectly open the Gate of Opening, gaining a perception that transcended common understanding.

But, no one imagined that Lin Ming would be able to push his battle spirit into the gold level at just the sixth stage of Life Destruction!

There was a fundamental difference between a gold battle spirit and a silver battle spirit.

A silver battle spirit could be used to strengthen a martial artist's attacks, but it wasn't a decisive and direct factor in a martial artist's combat strength. Its greatest function in a fight between martial artists of similar boundaries was to strengthen weapons, making them sharper and more durable. If two martial artists fought and one of them had their weapon cut off, how could the battle continue?

However, if both sides had a high-grade saint artifact, then the effect of a battle spirit would be greatly weakened. This was because an ordinary Life Destruction or Divine Sea martial artist didn't have the ability to destroy a high-grade saint artifact in a collision of weapons.

A silver battle spirit could be said to only be improving on perfection.

But a gold battle spirit was different. Once one achieved a gold battle spirit, the battle spirit would be so powerful that it could form a projection of their world of will and affect the real world.

From a silver battle spirit to a golden battle spirit, there was a great moat that separated them. And to cross over this moat, one needed to accumulate a massive amount of energy and experience. But Lin Ming had managed to form his gold battle spirit at the sixth stage of Life Destruction. How could this not cause the other young disciples who labeled themselves as geniuses to feel powerless and frustrated?

In the sixth level of the Hells of Flame, a sea of fire filled the world. Lin Ming was completely unaware of everything happening in Totem Tower's square as he focused his concentration on fusing the Concepts.

Heretical God Sprout – !

Three flame leaves!

Three thunder leaves!

Of the three flame leaves, one was shaped like a heart, one was shaped like a stone tablet, and the last was shaped like a blue lotus.

Of the three thunder leaves, one was shaped like a sword, one was shaped like a golden tripod with a purple lion relief carved into it, and the last was shaped like a sovereign heavy sword.

The six leaves each represented a different Law. At this time, all of these leaves emitted a luminous light, continuously swallowing up all the surging fire origin within Lin Ming's body! At this moment, the fire origin energy that was able to destroy all life was nothing but fertile land to the Heretical God Sprout!

The fire origin energy of the Hells of Flame's sixth level was extremely fierce. But, underneath the dual suppression of the gold battle spirit's world of will projection and the Heretical God Sprout, this formed a tentative balance within Lin Ming's body. And the moment that this balance was reached, there was a change within the three levels of Concepts in Lin Ming's body. In this blazing hot heat, there were all sorts of wondrous changes!

If one used their senses to investigate Lin Ming's body, then they would discover that there were runes appearing on Lin Ming's skeleton. These runes began to shine. They symbolized the first three levels of Concepts of the Fire Laws!

Originally, Lin Ming's Laws were etched onto the Heretical God Sprout where they condensed into little totem runes. But now, Lin Ming had perceived the Laws and the Heretical God Sprout took a supporting role. Thus, the Law runes naturally inscribed themselves onto his body instead, where the formed mysterious marks on his bones.

These runes were carved onto Lin Ming's bones and flesh. But now it seemed as if they were melting together, fusing as one.

The runes on his bones were of three different colors. The rune that symbolizing the Concept of Burning Heat was a vivid red, the rune that symbolized the Concept of Annihilation was black red, and the rune that symbolized the Concept of Creation was blue green. And now, these three runes were gathering on top of Lin Ming's bones, fusing together as one. This was different from when Lin Ming created his martial skills in Thunderfire Annihilation and Penetrating Rainbow; they were only a combination of the Concepts of Thunder and Fire. But what was happening within his body, on his bones, was a true Law fusion!

"Lin Ming, he... he succeeded!?"

Monarch Sweetyfox sucked in a breath of cold air. From perceiving the Fire Laws, to impacting the sixth level of the Hells of Flame, and now where he began the preliminary fusion of three different levels of Concepts, everything that happened to Lin Ming today was simply a legend!

Because of Lin Ming's abnormally fierce perception, the Heretical God Sprout's ability to control the power of fire, and also the effect that the Primordius martial intent had on the Chaos Laws that allowed Lin Ming to perceive the chaos stones and see the evolution of matter and energy, and also the forming of the universe, all of these powerful advantages had resulted in this present miracle.

Of course, this was inseparable from Lin Ming's solid foundation. If it weren't for his impossibly deep true essence and his meridians that were tough to a ridiculous level that allowed him to withstand the violent and tyrannical power of fire, everything else would have been useless!

After less than half an incense stick of time, the three different kinds of runes that were etched into Lin Ming's body melted and reformed, slowly fusing into one.

The three different levels of Concepts had finally completed their preliminary fusion.

Lin Ming knew that this was only the start. The Laws of the universe were infinitely mysterious. In the future as his strength increased, his comprehension of the source of matter and the source of the universe would become increasingly deep, and this fusion would become increasingly thorough!

Even so, among all the disciples of the three branch palaces present, including even the Divine Transformation realm disciples, in terms of just the first three Concepts of the Fire Laws, Lin Ming's comprehension far surpassed all of theirs!

In the 18 Hells of Flame, the crazy and violent fire origin energy astral winds gushed into Lin Ming's body. They were first weakened by the dual Concepts of Burning Heat and Annihilation, then transformed into pure energy by the Concept of Creation before being easily absorbed. With the strength of the three fused Concepts, the fiery astral winds were easily melted away. Lin Ming continued shooting down the 18 Hells of Flame with a near-unstoppable momentum!

Boom!

In that moment, an intense explosion blew up around Lin Ming. The thick fire origin energy around him was savagely thrown away by the shockwaves. Lin Ming's body shot down like a meteor, continuing to rush towards the Hells of Flame's seventh level!

The speed of sound…

Two times the speed of sound…

Three times the speed of sound…

All the way until 10 times the speed of sound!

Lin Ming's speed once again increased to 10 times the speed of sound!

Bang bang bang!

Because Lin Ming's speed was too quick and the dense fiery astral winds were crudely and rapidly separated by him, this caused rolling thunderclaps to fill the air, reverberating within the interior of Fire Spirit Star. Everyone standing on the ground could feel the earth beneath them tremble, as if an earthquake was happening!

Sixth level 2000 miles, sixth level 3000 miles, sixth level 4000 miles, the depth rapidly increased!

The three branch palace's disciples, as well as the several Elders present, were completely dumbfounded, some of them panic-stricken. They didn't know what sort of change had happened in Lin Ming's body just now. All they saw was Lin Ming coming to a near standstill in the purgatory like flames of the sixth level. Then, his speed shot up and he began rushing towards the center of Fire Spirit star with unstoppable momentum!

Fire Spirit Star was a massive planet that gathered an infinite amount of wild and raging fire origin energy from all over. Although it was a planet, the truth was that the temperature and intensity within the core was no less than that of a small sun. But now, Lin Ming was passing through the sixth level with monstrous speed, as if he were flying through the skies of a windswept prairie!

"This…"

"This defies the heavens! This goes against heaven's will!"

"Didn't Lin Ming reach his limit? Why did he suddenly break out with such speed? Was he hiding his strength just now?" Many disciples didn't know just what happened to Lin Ming.

"That's impossible… Lin Ming should have completed a breakthrough just now. He is truly a monstrous genius… in the trial of the 18 Hells of Flame, everyone is giving their all to go as deep as they can go. They already thank the heavens and earth if they can display their best results. But now, Lin Ming actually used this time to make a breakthrough in such a dangerous situation… monster… he is a monster!"

The one who spoke was White Daohong. Towards this junior-apprentice brother of his, White Daohong had to admit complete defeat. After a few more years he would have to leave Phoenix Hall and become a Hall Protector. This would be his last Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. Even so, he had no regrets. He never imagined that during his last smelting trial he would be able to personally witness something that would be forever recorded in the annals of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's history.

"Is he going to break through to the seventh level in a single attempt?"

Lu Xiaoyun sucked in a cold breath as she mumbled to herself. And behind Lu Xiaoyun was Yan Littlemoon.

Yan Littlemoon was pale and her lips were gently trembling. If there was someone present that had the strongest changes in emotions due to the miracles being created by Lin Ming, that would be Yan Littlemoon.

Today would be a day that would be eternally engraved into Yan Littlemoon's mind. She would never be able to forget it!

Chapter 1019 – Hells of Flame’s Seventh Level, The Domain of God

Chapter 1019 – Hells of Flame’s Seventh Level, The Domain of God

…

…

…

Rumble rumble rumble!

With irresistible momentum, Lin Ming broke through to the sixth level 5000 miles distance!

The Ancient Phoenix Clan used every 5000 miles as a separate grade. The sixth level 5000 miles, even in the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan with the 72 branch palaces, three great families, and headquarters added in, was a target that was only met by a few individuals every several thousand years! It was an extremely rare occurrence!

And that was only at the end of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. To reach this goal halfway through the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, that was more difficult than ascending to the heavens!

But now Lin Ming had broken through the sixth level 5000 mile distance without slowing down at all. He continued barreling towards the seventh level of the Hells of Flame!

As everyone saw this, they were shocked numb. Using a sixth stage Life Destruction cultivation to rush into the Hells of Flame’s seventh level, just what sort of wondrous feat was that!

The impossible standard that had been laid down by the Ancient Phoenix Clan was now actually soon to be met by Lin Ming!

After successfully reaching the seventh level of the Hells of Flame, no one dared to doubt Lin Ming any longer. It was likely that Lin Ming would continue onwards to complete the Thousand Slaughter within the Illusionary God Combat Array!

It had to be known that true combat was Lin Ming's strong point, and his comprehension of Laws was his weak point.

If his weak point was still enough to reach the seventh level, then what about his strong point?

Perhaps this argument was no longer accurate. It could be said that Lin Ming no longer had a weakness.

If one had to insist, then maybe Lin Ming's weak point could only be his cultivation speed. Lin Ming was 29 years old with a sixth stage Life Destruction cultivation. Compared to other top geniuses of a similar level throughout history, he was much older!

However, this wasn't an absolute. A genius' cultivation wasn't necessarily better the faster it progressed. During the process of cultivation, if one desperately impacted towards the next realm they could certainly quickly rise in cultivation realms. But, their combat prowess might not be too amazing and their foundation could be unsteady.

During the cultivation process, if one was enlightened on all sorts of Laws and perceived many Concepts, such as Lin Ming, and also dual cultivated in body and energy, then it would be difficult to rise in cultivation realms rapidly.

But this wasn't a problem. For someone like Lin Ming, once he stepped into Ninefall, the origin energy cloud he summoned would be titanic, and the baptism of Laws he would have to withstand would also be much greater. After undergoing this baptism of Laws and slowly verifying his comprehension, his future achievements would be unimaginable!

“Can Lin Ming really succeed in obtaining the drop of phoenix blood essence?”

Sun Cyprestar gripped his fists. He could feel his palms slick with sweat. From the depths of his heart, he hoped that Lin Ming could succeed in his endeavors and leave an endlessly glorious reputation within the tomes of history!

At this time, he had a sudden thought. He turned towards Charming Phoenix Palace’s direction and saw that Chu Redcloud’s face was wan as she floated in the air, her fingers gently shivering.

At the moment that Lin Ming had broken through the sixth level 5000 mile distance at 10 times the speed of sound, all of her pride, all of her machinations, and all of her cunning had been mercilessly smashed apart.

In the presence of absolute strength, everything she did had become a joke.

It could even be said that the bet between her and Sun Cyprestar had already become a joke. The betting stakes were only a spirit artifact level Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron, an arctic ice immortal stamen, and a drop of phoenix heart blood. Those treasures were undoubtedly precious, and the Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron was an object that even a Divine Lord powerhouse would struggle for. But compared to a drop of phoenix blood essence, all of it was nothing more than sand and wind.

When Lin Ming first involved the phoenix blood essence in this smelting trial, the bet for the Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron had already lost all meaning! This was a grand milestone that would be etched into the history of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. It was destined to be a story that would be spread down for all of eternity, turned into a myth by the clansmen of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. How could a mere Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron possibly compare?

Sixth level 8000 miles!

The temperature here was already 360 times the temperature of magma, and even the surrounding space was scorched so hot that it began twisting. The fiery astral winds were far more powerful, crazily howling as they flowed all over. Even if a 10,000 foot high mountain of divine iron were placed here, it would still be turned into gas by the air currents!

Luckily, Lin Ming's three levels of Concepts had completed their initial fusion state. Moreover, no matter which one of these three Concepts was taken out, his understanding of them far surpassed that of all other disciples present. But now, in this environment, Lin Ming still had no choice but to slow down.

From 10 times the speed of sound he plummeted to five times the speed of sound. Then, he gradually slowed to three times the speed of sound.

As his speed reduced, the pressure he had to bear was much lower and he would also consume less energy.

In truth, after reaching this depth, no matter how extraordinary Lin Ming's restorative ability was, it was impossible for him to continue with such a terrifying consumption rate of energy. He was able to maintain 80% of his strength, and the only reason for this was that he was using the Concept of Creation to transform the violent fire origin energy into a gentler form that he could use for himself.

Sixth level 9000 miles!

Lin Ming's speed fell below the speed of sound. As he no longer passed through the sonic barrier, his consumption of true essence was reduced yet again.

Wishing to break into the Hells of Flame's seventh level was more difficult than ascending to the heavens. But now, all the miracles that occurred on Lin Ming's body had allowed him to reach this step. Even so, he was still reaching the end of the line!

All of the martial artists in the square held their breath, their eyes glued onto the light screen in the sky. They were all waiting for this historical moment to occur.

A sixth stage Life Destruction, 29 year old rookie disciple on his first smelting trial, would actually break through to the seventh level of the Hells of Flame!

At this step, all of Phoenix Cry Palace's disciples, including even Huo Yanguang, were cheering Lin Ming on. Although many of Phoenix Cry Palace's disciples had envied Lin Ming, now that his talent far surpassed all of theirs, they finally understood that it was impossible for any of them to chase after him, and all of that envy had slowly faded away.

On the contrary, Lin Ming's growth would instead bring glory and prosperity to Phoenix Cry Palace. In the future, when everyone talked about Lin Ming, these disciples could proudly brag that they came from Phoenix Cry Palace, the same branch palace that Lin Ming came from!

Also, in the future when Lin Ming became a vital figure at headquarters, he would be able to bring good fortune to Phoenix Cry Palace. For the 72 palaces of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, it was impossible to be fair and even with all of them. There would always be some palaces that received far more resources than others, and there would always be some palaces that were stretched for resources.

In such a situation, no one in Phoenix Cry Palace would dare to offend Lin Ming anymore. Even someone like Sage Jiuyang, who almost controlled the entire Phoenix Cry Palace, would not think of moving against Lin Ming. This was because Lin Ming was now destined to become a paramount character of headquarters, someone that was the focus of attention.

9600 miles; Lin Ming's speed dropped to half the speed of sound.

9800 miles; Lin Ming's muscles bulged all over, blue veins popping up from his skin.

9900 miles; cracks began to form in Lin Ming's protective true essence once again.

However, this didn't matter. Even if some fire origin energy astral winds managed to break through his defenses, they would still be suppressed by the Heretical God Sprout and then absorbed by Lin Ming. With his tough meridians he was capable of withstanding such an impact.

50 miles… 40 miles… 30 miles… 10 miles… one mile!!!

Bang!

With a light sound, it seemed as if the entire 180,000 mile long 18 Hells of Flame quietly trembled at that moment. Lin Ming broke through the space barrier that separated the sixth and seventh level, officially stepping into the space of the seventh level!

The seventh level of the Hells of Flame; the domain of god!

“He did it!!!”

“Too fierce… I never imagined that I would be able to witness history occurring with my own eyes…”

“Although I might never reach this boundary in my entire life, for better or worse, no matter what, Lin Ming is still a disciple who came from our Phoenix Cry Palace. I can feel proud just stating this fact in the future.”

“That’s right. Maybe headquarters will place a bit more focus on our Phoenix Cry Palace now?”

The Phoenix Cry Palace disciples spoke amongst themselves with fervid excitement. At this time, if Lin Ming were among them, he would have been surrounded and grabbed by them, tossed up into the air!

This was Lin Ming’s glory! This was also the glory of Phoenix Cry palace!

“He really reached the seventh level. It seems like the drop of phoenix blood essence will really be obtained by Lin Ming. This child, as long as he doesn’t perish in the future he will surely become an incomparably wonderful character!”

Duke Golden Sword said with zest.

“That’s right. Moreover, with Lin Ming’s background, it is already a miracle that he was able to reach this step. He has a great destiny, strong mentality, and unshakeable will. He can only be called extraordinary. It isn’t easy for such a person to perish. I believe that our

Ancient Phoenix Clan is destined to produce another extreme character. Even the current Lord Patriarch could not compare to Lin Ming when he was at the Life Destruction realm!" Monarch Sweetyfox gave her own evaluation.

The Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, that was a Divine Realm Holy Lord. Placed in the Divine Realm, a Holy Lord was a top character that could dominate their own stretch of the world. However, this didn't mean that Lin Ming would inevitably become a Holy Lord in the future. After all, there were countless variables and uncertainties on the road of martial arts.

The current Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan indeed couldn't compare with Lin Ming when he was at the Life Destruction Realm. But, the Patriarch had experienced immense lucky chances during the Divine Sea, Divine Transformation, and Divine Lord realms. These also had to be placed into consideration.

If Lin Ming wished to become a Holy Lord, he would need to continue the momentum that he currently had at Life Destruction.

This was the reason why the Ancient Phoenix Clan wasn't willing to invest a drop of phoenix blood essence in a Life Destruction realm martial artist. There were simply too many unknown factors that could affect a genius' future. Even if a genius died, they might be lost within the rising talents in the future. A genius needed destiny and lucky chances to continue walking down the road of martial arts.

And at this time, Lin Ming's smelting trial still hadn't ended. This was the first time that he had entered the seventh level of the Hells of Flame. To a rookie disciple, this mysterious space was called the domain of god!

To a Life Destruction realm martial artist, this was an absolute forbidden zone!

The seventh level of the Hells of Flame no longer had fire origin energy astral winds. Rather, they were replaced by an aurora of glowing red light!

This glowing light was illusive like a dream. It filled the world, incomparably vivid, similar to a paradise of immortals. But, if a martial artist who didn't comprehend the Fire Laws was covered by this glowing light, then their entire being would evaporate without even ashes left over!

At this time, it was already Lin Ming's limit to break into the seventh level. And now that he suddenly had to bear the impact of this glowing red light, his protective true essence began to rapidly rupture!

Beams of glowing light shot into Lin Ming's body, burning through his meridians!

Lin Ming focused all of his will into the Heretical God Sprout, resisting the impact of the multi-hued light. But, he found himself verging on the edge of collapse. His body burned. His skin was scorched black, cracking, and his flesh was cooked, emitting sizzling sounds.

Lin Ming's current condition was extremely poor. He had less than 60% of his true essence remaining. Moreover, he was consuming it at a ridiculous rate.

But Lin Ming still held on. He grit his teeth and persisted. The role of the 18 Hells of Flame was originally not to check the level of a disciple and how far they could go. Rather, it was a smelting trial that pushed one's potential to the limits. In the smelting trial of the 18 Hells of Flame, when one arrived at their limits, the longer they stayed in that dangerous zone, the greater their harvests would be.

When Lin Ming first started the initial fusion of the three levels of Fire Concepts, he had used the pressure of this environment as the turning point of his comprehension of Laws.

As they said, one had to strike the iron while it was hot. To use the 18 Hells of Flame at this time to temper his own Laws was the best method to do so. If he gave up now then his benefits would be significantly lessened and he would have to take many more detours.

Lin Ming grit his teeth and actually pulled the glowing red light into his bones and flesh, allowing that glowing light to burn the Law runes on his bones!

Zi zi zi!

As his flesh burned, the pure jade-white bones were also scorched black, and they even began to wither and crack.

To draw fire into one’s body and set their own bones on fire, just what sort of pain was that? Even so, Lin Ming clenched his teeth and withstood it all!

Chapter 1020 – Seventh Stage Life Destruction

Chapter 1020 – Seventh Stage Life Destruction

…

…

…

Blood flooded out from Lin Ming's cracked body. His skin was roasted black and it fell off his body like old bark. This was a pain worthy of tearing one's own skin off. At the same time that his flesh and bones were being burnt, his skin was also peeling away! The severe agony of this pain was difficult to imagine. If a martial artist's will wasn't firm, then this pain would be enough to wipe out their spiritual sea!

If a mortal were in such a situation then their mind would break and they would turn mad in just a few breaths of time. Even a martial artist, when their body was placed in a burning heat that was hundreds of times the temperature of magma, would find it hard to bear!

However, this was an extremely important aspect of training within the 18 Hells of Flame. The fiery astral winds would press down upon the limits of a martial artist's strength. In such a violent and torturous state, perceiving the Fire Laws through this method would deepen one's comprehension towards the Laws!

The longer Lin Ming was able to last in this state, the greater the benefits would be!

In the fire spirit mirror, Monarch Sweetyfox watched with her own eyes as the Law runes on Lin Ming's bones were melted away by the scorching heat and sunk into his very marrow, truly fusing with his body!

Comprehension of Laws came in several stages. The first stage was to memorize the Laws with the mind. It was easy to forget or misplace memories, and when recalling these memories, there was also a slight delay. In the midst of a heated battle, responding even just a little bit slower would often have fatal consequences.

As for the second stage, that was memorizing Laws with the body. If one remembered the Laws with the body, they would never forget them in their entire life. Also, it would become a conditioned reflex, completely natural to use.

And the third stage was Lin Ming's current stage. That was to use one's bones and marrow to store the memories. To deeply inscribe the Laws into one's bones and burn them into the marrow until those Laws became a part of the body!

From that point on, the body was Laws, and Laws were the body; everything was the same!

For such a person, their body was a totem stone. By killing someone like that, others could pick up their bones and perceive the Laws from them. Every single part of their body would be a priceless treasure.

After reaching such a stage, one could freely drive the Laws, and even one's bodily movements would arouse the corresponding Laws. This was because the body itself had become a form of the Laws. Every action one took would contain the truth of the Laws, thus it was easy to foment the Laws of the world!

With the light splashing sound of falling water, the fire origin energy around Lin Ming began to condense into various spiritual life forms. There were fire insects, fire birds, fire beasts, and even humans and Fey, all made of fire energy. All of these life forms bowed towards Lin Ming, worshipping him. And underneath his feet, a blue lotus bloomed in radiant splendor before slowly withering. Each lotus was able to bloom for several dozen breaths of time. Slowly, more and more lotuses bloomed until the space underneath Lin Ming's feet was covered with them like a lush spring.

Lotus Blooming Step by Step!

This was the phenomenon of the Fire Laws. Yan Littlemoon had comprehended it, and now Lin Ming had too!

No one thought this was strange. Lin Ming had broken through to the seventh level of the Hells of Flame in a single attempt. If he wasn't able to comprehend the Lotus Blooming Step by Step phenomenon then that would be strange instead!

But with Lin Ming's current achievements, he no longer needed the Lotus Blooming Step by Step phenomenon to prove himself.

Time passed slowly. Soon, half an hour passed. Although the visions of fire appeared beside Lin Ming in an endless stream of visual beauty, Monarch Sweetyfox and a few others knew that Lin Ming was actually withstanding an excruciating pain!

To use the physical body to withstand this burning hot fire that was several hundred times the temperature of magma and still withstand such a pain for half an hour, it made one's scalp tingle just thinking about it!

"It's just like a phoenix undergoing nirvana isn't it? Lin Ming is being reborn, transforming his body in the process. This test was itself a great lucky chance and smelting trial for him. Through this smelting trial, Lin Ming's boundaries of Laws have reached an unbelievable a degree in a single go. From now on, no one will dare say that Lin Ming is only outstanding in combat and that his comprehension of Laws is lacking. Perhaps from this point on, Lin Ming's comprehension of Laws will instead become one of his greatest strengths! At this point, I fear that Lin Ming may have no weakness!"

Monarch Sweetyfox said with a solemn expression.

Of the current Lin Ming –

In terms of the energy within him, his true essence was astoundingly deep and his foundation was extremely solid.

In terms of comprehension of Laws, he had fused three levels of Concepts and had even thoroughly melted the Laws into his marrow.

In terms of cultivation methods and martial skills, he possessed two transcendent divine mights and had already started on the road of creating his own martial skills.

In terms of speed and movement techniques, he understood the Thunder Laws' Concept of Extreme Speed. At the same time, he had the Gate of Wonder to support him.

In terms of defensive power, he was a dual body and energy cultivator and his physical body had been tempered repeatedly over the years.

In terms of willpower, he possessed a gold battle spirit that carried with it the grandmist attribute…

Lin Ming's strength had almost reached perfection!

"Mm? This is…"

Duke Golden Sword's eyes shined as he cried out in surprise. He discovered to his fascination that after the glowing red clouds of light energy from the seventh level rushed into Lin Ming's body, they had repeatedly pushed Lin Ming's body past the limits that it could bear. His mortal body was now on the verge of disintegrating. This was because the glowing red light of the seventh level had quickened the energy within Lin Ming's own body, stirring it up and completely breaking down his flesh and bones!

This was the sign that Lin Ming was crossing to the next stage of Life Destruction!

In truth, when Lin Ming had closed up in Totem Tower for an entire year, he had reached the critical point of being able to break through to the seventh stage of Life Destruction many times. But, because the timing wasn't too good, it had been forcibly suppressed by Lin Ming.

And now, the glowing red light of the seventh level had spurred the energy within his body far past its limits; he could no longer suppress it!

If it could not be suppressed then it must explode!

“Mm? Lin Ming is actually going to cross Life Destruction at this time?”

“Indeed. The power within his body has already been accumulated to its limits. Let’s allow Lin Ming to cross Life Destruction first.”

After Lin Ming entered the seventh level of the Hells of Flame, he had already reached the part of the standard required to obtain the phoenix blood essence. At the same time, Lin Ming had truly reached his limits and it was impossible for him to penetrate any further down; he no longer needed to continue rushing downwards. At this time, crossing the seventh stage of Life Destruction was the most important matter.

“I ask that Senior Ruby Sovereign lends a hand and return Lin Ming to us!” Blackwood, Fire Spirit Star’s guardian, suddenly spoke out. He could not allow such a talented genius like Lin Ming to experience any problems crossing Life Destruction while he was at Fire Spirit Star. Otherwise, he would not be able to bear such a failure. Lin Ming had a high chance of becoming a figure like the Ancient Phoenix Clan Patriarch in the future.

“No need. He will cross Life Destruction in the Hells of Flame’s seventh level and then I shall return him. You punk Golden Sword, pretty lady Sweetyfox, didn’t you each promise Lin Ming some rewards earlier? Take them all out! While Lin Ming crosses Life Destruction, this is the best time for him to fuse the phoenix bloodline within him. Also you, stripling Blackwood, since Lin Ming was able to rush as far as the seventh level of the Hells of Flame, he should have obtained many rewards. From the third level downwards, he should have received a reward for every 5000 miles. I will call the shots for Lin Ming. I have no need for any saint artifacts or fire elementals or pills. I want everything changed into phoenix blood of equivalent value. Don’t be such a scrooge about it. Take it all out!”

“Hahaha! Very well! Since Senior Ruby Sovereign says such, then I naturally cannot be cheap about it!” Duke Golden Sword heartily laughed out loud. “I had said that as long as Lin Ming could slaughter 600 people in the Illusionary God Combat Array, I would bestow him an armor nearing a transcendent saint artifact. But now it seems that such an item wouldn’t be of much use to him. I will put forth five drops of phoenix heart blood instead!”

As the captain of the Disciplinary Enforcement Division, approving the use of five drops of phoenix heart blood was naturally no problem for him.

“Monarch Sweetyfox, you too! You are the steward of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, so don’t be such a miser!” Duke Golden Sword smiled as he looked towards Monarch Sweetyfox. Monarch Sweetyfox had said that if Lin Ming could slaughter 600 people within the Illusionary God Combat Array, she would reward him with three drops of phoenix heart blood. But now it seemed taking something of that amount out wouldn’t be enough.

“Hohoho!” Monarch Sweetyfox brightly laughed. “I, Sweetyfox, represent the Office of Internal Affairs and am responsible for dividing the resources of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Although I do not have the authority to approve high grade resources, I do have the power to give out ordinary resources. Golden Sword, since you’ve put out five drops of phoenix heart blood, I naturally cannot be a cheapskate. I will put forth two drops of phoenix marrow blood. This is something that I also must follow regulations for if I pass it out, but today’s circumstances are a bit peculiar. If I do some extra work in the future then this shouldn’t be a problem.”

A drop of phoenix marrow blood was almost equal to 10 drops of phoenix heart blood. If used on a martial artist with an extremely high quality phoenix bloodline, a drop of phoenix marrow blood would have an even better effect than 10 drops of phoenix heart blood. Since Monarch Sweetyfox had put forth two drops of phoenix marrow blood, that was the same as 20 drops of phoenix heart blood! If converted into phoenix plume blood, that would be equal to 1000 drops!

When Huo Yanguang had taken out 20 drops of phoenix plume blood in his gambling fight with Lin Ming, that was enough to stir up a massive commotion in the entire Phoenix Cry

Palace. From this alone one could see the value of the two drops of phoenix marrow blood that Monarch Sweetyfox put forth. This was a wealth that could more than bankrupt an ordinary Divine Lord powerhouse!

On this point, one could infer the difference from the contents of the bet between Chu Redcloud and Sun Cyprestar. It was simply impossible to compare the wealth of an Elder from one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's 72 branch palaces to an envoy from the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters. This was the same difference between a countryside landlord and a noble from the capital!

Following that, there was also Blackwood! As the guardian of Fire Spirit Star, Blackwood was directly in charge of all the rewards that headquarters had left at Fire Spirit Star!

Blackwood didn't speak. He only flung his hand and tossed out three jade bottles. He didn't explain what was inside. According to the rules of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, starting from the third level, one could obtain better rewards every 5000 miles they went down in the 18 Hells of Flame. At the sixth level and the seventh level, the rewards were so valuable they could drive saints to madness. The value of those rewards absolutely surpassed that of the two drops of phoenix marrow blood that Monarch Sweetyfox had put forth!

"Hey! Blackwood! What did you just hand over?"

Duke Golden Sword asked as he excitedly licked his lips.

"1200 drops of ordinary Ancient Phoenix blood, 600 drops of phoenix plume blood, 10 drops of phoenix heart blood, a drop of phoenix marrow blood, and a drop of phoenix coronet blood! The phoenix marrow blood and the phoenix coronet blood comprise nearly the complete wealth of rewards that headquarters left for me. I never imagined that such a situation would appear in this smelting trial. I never thought that I would have to bring them out."

Blackwood casually spoke, but Duke Golden Sword was silently bewildered. Phoenix coronet blood was only inferior to phoenix blood essence, and it was much higher in value than phoenix marrow blood. A drop of phoenix coronet blood was equal to two or three drops of phoenix marrow blood.

Not just that, but the rewards Blackwood took out were of all ranks. There were low level rewards and high level rewards. It wasn't just high quality phoenix blood like the phoenix marrow blood and phoenix coronet blood, but also lower level phoenix blood like phoenix plume blood and even ordinary Ancient Phoenix blood.

Those low level bloods might have seemed worthless, but the truth was just the opposite. Lin Ming's phoenix bloodline was extremely faint. If he could use the phoenix plume blood to raise the quality of his bloodline, and then transform it again with the far more precious phoenix marrow blood and phoenix coronet blood, the effects would be far better!

To a genius of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, phoenix marrow blood and phoenix coronet blood were used as the finishing touch. But in order to have a finishing touch, one had to have a base first. Without a base there would be nothing to add a finishing touch to. First, Lin Ming had to add the lower rank phoenix blood into his body, forcibly enhancing his phoenix bloodline. Otherwise, everything else would be wasted.

Chapter 1021 – Ten Thousand Flames Burning Sun

Chapter 1021 – Ten Thousand Flames Burning Sun

…

…

…

The different types of phoenix blood that the three masters put forth floated in the air. The blood would be used when Lin Ming was crossing Life Destruction and his body was completely disintegrated, where they would be able to completely fuse into his bloodline.

Transforming the bloodline also had to proceed in an ordered manner. Through this fusion, it would create a better foundation for Lin Ming's bloodline to withstand absorbing the phoenix blood essence and the baptism that followed it in the future.

At this time, on Phoenix Cry Palace's side, Sun Cyprestar suddenly remembered something as he watched all of this. He glanced over at Chu Redcloud and smiled very widely as he said, "Fairy Chu, I remember that you made a bet and also owe me a drop of phoenix heart blood. That drop of phoenix heart blood was originally for Lin Ming, and since Lin Ming is crossing Life Destruction right now, it is the best moment to make up for his faint bloodline. You might as well take that drop of phoenix heart blood out right now."

Sun Cyprestar's words grated on Chu Redcloud's ears like nails on chalk!

Chu Redcloud's body shook and her complexion became extremely ugly. The truth was that there was still a year before her bet with Sun Cyprestar came to a close, and it was far too early. Even so, even if Chu Redcloud was absolutely unwilling to acknowledge it, she also realized that it was likely impossible for Yan Littlemoon to ever catch up to Lin Ming.

She had completely lost the bet. Not only had she lost the arctic ice immortal stamen and a drop of phoenix heart blood, but she lost her honor.

"Sun Cyprestar, our bet still isn't over yet, so what are you in such a hurry for!"

"Hehe, I know that, but isn't the result already obvious?" Sun Cyprestar was not some kind-hearted man. After being bullied by Chu Redcloud without the ability to retaliate, a fire had long been smoldering in his heart. Now that Chu Redcloud had suffered a bout of misfortune, why wouldn't he take this chance to stomp on her a bit? "If you think that Yan Littlemoon can still catch up to Lin Ming after a year, then I'll wait. Even so, how about you take out that drop of phoenix heart blood right now, and a year later, if Yan Littlemoon can catch up to Lin Ming, I'll compensate you with 10 drops instead? That is if you believe in yourself so much!"

Chu Redcloud's face turned bright red. In front of so many people, she couldn't find the words to refuse Sun Cyprestar. Otherwise she would develop a reputation that she was a person who couldn't pay her debts.

She suppressed the humiliation in her head and said in a grim voice, "I do not have any phoenix heart blood with me right now!"

Chu Redcloud couldn't pull out a drop of phoenix heart blood at the moment. She was different from Monarch Sweetyfox and Duke Golden Sword. They had brought their phoenix heart blood with them as a reward all along, but if Chu Redcloud had any phoenix heart blood she would have used it already, so how could she just casually keep some with her?

"It doesn't matter, you can borrow it from Yan Littlemoon. If I remember correctly, when Yan Littlemoon broke through the fifth level 5000 mile distance of the Hells of Flame, she also obtained some phoenix heart blood as a reward." Sun Cyprestar said, not caring if he sounded unreasonable.

Chu Redcloud had never been so mortified before. She actually had to ask a junior to borrow the rewards she received in order to pay a bet she lost. This was simply her life's greatest shame.

"Aunty, let it go, we've really lost this time." Yan Littlemoon bit her lips as she spoke in a soft voice. She touched her spatial ring and threw out a jade bottle; this was the phoenix heart blood.

Sun Cyprestar smiled as he received the jade box. With a flick of his fingers, he threw the drop of phoenix heart blood in the air. As Lin Ming was crossing Life Destruction this time, there were around 70-80 drops of phoenix heart blood worth of phoenix bloodline in the air. But, every drop of phoenix heart blood was extremely precious; every single drop would be able to give Lin Ming that much greater of an advantage.

"Senior Ruby Sovereign, you may begin." Blackwood said.

"Haha, good! What a luxurious bloodline power! Even a peak talent from a distinguished family of the Ancient Phoenix Clan might not have so much phoenix bloodline at their disposal. This is enough to lay down a solid foundation for Lin Ming. I believe that Lin Ming will also remember your kindness from today!"

The Ruby Sovereign laughed and a beam of red light suddenly shot out from the depths of the 18 Hells of Flame. It wrapped around the phoenix blood and dragged it all downwards.

There was 60,000 miles separating the surface from the seventh level that Lin Ming was located at. But with the supernatural powers of the Ruby Sovereign shifting space itself, the phoenix blood arrived in a mere blink of the eye.

"We're starting!"

As the Ruby Sovereign spoke, a massive distortion occurred in the seventh level of the Hells of Flame. An immense amount of fire origin energy condensed, gathering and forming into the image of a fierce-looking man. This man had a face as wild as a lion; he was the artifact spirit of the 18 Hells of Flame, the Ruby Sovereign.

The Ruby Sovereign had already existed for countless tens of thousands of years, and no one knew just how high his cultivation was. But, just from the fact that the Ruby Sovereign was able to split his divine sense into tens of thousands of strands to look after and secure the safety of every trial challenger in the Hells of Flame, one could approximate his strength. He was simply an unfathomably powerful old monster.

As the Ruby Sovereign appeared, all of the fire origin energy of the seventh level turned docile as if it were soldiers greeting the general. No matter how high Lin Ming's comprehension of the Fire Laws was, when it came to controlling the fire origin energy within the Hells of Flame, he couldn't even compare to a single percent of the Ruby Sovereign. This was because the Ruby Sovereign was the true master of the Hells of Flame!

The Ruby Sovereign pushed his hands out. Between his hands, a massive amount of the power of fire rushed out.

When Lin Ming crossed the sixth stage of Life Destruction, he had done so with Fairy Feng's help and the aid of the Nirvanic Sacred Flame.

But now, the power of fire within the Ruby Sovereign's hands was completely different. It wasn't just a single Fire Elemental, but the strength of thousands of flames gathered together, all-encompassing!

The 18 Hells of Flame was a fire-attribute spirit artifact. Every level had a Fire Elemental, or even multiple Fire Elementals on guard. Moreover, these Fire Elementals weren't of an ordinary grade.

The first six levels of the 18 Hells of Flame each had a single Fire Elemental, the next six levels had two Fire Elementals, and the last six levels had three fire elementals, for a total of 36 Fire Elementals!

Besides Fire Elementals, the 18 Hells of Flames had a massive number of Flame Essences. Every level had hundreds of Flame Essences of different grades. With all of them added together, there was a total of 9999 Flame Essences!

These Flame Essences and Fire Elementals were all born from Fire Spirit Star after billions of years of history. With a planet that was a giant conflagration of fire origin energy, after such a long time, the amount of Flame Essences and Fire Elementals born could be imagined! And most of these Flame Essences and Fire Elementals were gathered within the 18 Hells of Flame!

The 18 Hells of Flame took myriad Flame Essences as soldiers, the 36 Fire Elementals as generals, and the Ruby Sovereign as an extremely magnificent spirit artifact!

And now, around the Ruby Sovereign, flames of all colors shot out from every level of the Hells of Flame. Every single wisp of the power of fire was pulled out from the numerous Flame Essences and Fire Elementals by the Ruby Sovereign.

9999 Flame Essences and 36 Fire Elementals, the power of fire was extracted from each one!

When the power of these flames gathered together, fusing as one, it formed a massive sun that floated between the Ruby Sovereign's hands.

"Ten Thousand Flames Burning Sun!"

The Ruby Sovereign directly poured this power of fire into Lin Ming's body!

Bang!

No matter how tenacious Lin Ming's body was, how tough his meridians were, or how much power of fire the Heretical God Sprout could absorb, it still couldn't withstand such an instantaneous impact. Lin Ming's physical body began to disintegrate. His skin, his flesh, his meridians, blood vessels, organs, muscles, bones, marrow, brain, all of it completely exploded! It turned into the purest and tiniest particles of flesh and blood that floated in the surrounding space.

The process of crossing Life Destruction was extremely risky; it didn't allow for the slightest disturbance. Crossing Life Destruction in the dangerous Hells of Flame was originally an impossible matter. However, with the Ruby Sovereign supporting him, this impossibility had become possible. Not just that, but the Ruby Sovereign had gathered the power of fire from all over to help temper Lin Ming's body.

At the moment Lin Ming's body disintegrated, his spiritual sea was also torn apart. The feeling was like a million jin steel ball smashing into his head. Along with a fierce headache, Lin Ming could also clearly feel his own soul being decomposed by energy!

The nine stages of Life Destruction were to cultivate a martial artist's essence, energy, and divine. The first three stages tempered essence, the second three stages tempered energy, and the last three stages, the so-called 'divine', tempered the divine soul. The seventh stage of Life Destruction was the start of tempering the soul!

No matter what sort of activity it was, anything that involved the soul was extremely risky!

"This is the seventh stage of Life Destruction, shatter and reform the soul!" Although Lin Ming could feel his own soul disintegrating, his thoughts were still incomparably clear.

At this moment, the faint voice of the Ruby Sovereign floated into his ears. This voice seemed to come from some distant and imaginary world, hazy and vague.

"Lin Ming! Defend your mind! With your will as the foundation, shatter your soul. The more thoroughly your soul is shattered, the greater the baptism you will have to withstand

and the greater the benefits you will receive in breaking through realms in the future! But, remember that you cannot lose yourself. There is a great risk in shattering and reforming the soul. If your soul is ruptured too greatly then your thoughts will fall into confusion and you may even lose your spirit mark, forever being lost in the maze of your mind, never to return! You have a gold battle spirit – this is your greatest capital. As for what degree you can shatter your soul to, all of that is up to you!”

When a martial artist attempted to cross the last three stages of Life Destruction, the destruction of the ‘divine’, their body, dantian, and soul would completely disintegrate. But, there would be one thing that would not be destroyed; that was one‘s will!

The will was the most tenacious aspect of a martial artist. After a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse died, their body would fully decay after thousands of years. But, their will would pass through hundreds of thousands of years without scattering.

At the last three stages of Life Destruction, the soul would decompose but the will would not. When the soul shattered and swam through the endless void, the will was the lighthouse, the beacon that called to the soul. As long as one’s will didn’t disintegrate, the soul could be reformed.

Lin Ming focused his mind. With a humming sound, the gold battle spirit hiding in his shattered spiritual sea came flying out. The dark golden light illuminated the surrounding space in the Hells of Flame. The world of will projected into reality, covering Lin Ming’s soul fragments.

In this space, Lin Ming shattered his soul again and again without reservation!

When Lin Ming was being enlightened on the forming of life within the chaos space, he came to understand that the soul and physical body were different. The mortal body was formed by yin and yang energies; it was a material existence composed of the tiniest yin and yang particles. But, the soul was a type of energy. It was a field of energy similar to a force field. When this force field was concentrated within a single area, that formed the soul.

And now, Lin Ming was using his will to lock in this field of energy, decomposing it into the most fundamental soul waves. Then, he tempered it with energy and Laws, completing his own seventh stage of Life Destruction!

Chapter 1022 – Sevenfall Phenomenon

Chapter 1022 – Sevenfall Phenomenon

…

…

…

As Lin Ming crossed Life Destruction, the entire process was shown in the fire spirit mirror above Totem Tower's square. It was only because of the world of will projection as well as the dazzling brilliance from the 10,000 Flames Burning Sun that the disciples weren't able to see what was happening within Lin Ming's body.

However, top masters like Blackwood, Monarch Sweetyfox, and Duke Golden Sword were able to generally sense what was happening.

Within the world of will projection, with Lin Ming's gold battle spirit as the center, countless soul fragments continuously disintegrated. They turned from the size of an eggshell to the size of a grain of rice, once more arriving at the size of a dust particle before further reducing in size yet again…

Monarch Sweetyfox sensed everything that was happening and sighed. "In terms of battle spirits, Lin Ming could be said to far surpass the geniuses of the Divine Realm. In this alone, he truly has a massive superiority. He opened the Gate of Opening and the way he is crossing the seventh stage of Life Destruction now is not what an ordinary genius can compare with…"

As a measurement, a battle spirit was an important indicator of a martial artist's talent. It naturally had a correspondingly great significance!

"I fear that Lin Ming is able to completely reduce his soul to the small fragments possible. Him crossing Life Destruction once is the same as an ordinary genius crossing Life Destruction twice! Once he finishes his last three stages of Life Destruction, I wonder just what degree Lin Ming's soul force will reach?"

Soul force – it withstood all Laws and was also the basis of martial intents. It was the foundation for the control of true essence. If one's soul wasn't strong enough, then a martial artist's potential would die out. This was the reason why an Eightfall powerhouse found it extremely difficult to reach the Divine Lord realm.

Normally speaking, a martial artist's martial talent, perception, martial intents, soul force, willpower, and destiny were all considered a comprehensive manifestation of their talent. Within these categories, martial talent was in truth the least important. If one's martial talent was lacking, it could be made up for! There were all sorts of precious spirit pills and God Beast bloodlines that could make up for a deficiency in martial talent.

However, in the lower realms, these sorts of pills were extremely scarce and God Beast bloodlines had nearly vanished. In addition, when a martial artist first started cultivating, their martial talent would be the most obvious. This was why they placed such excessive emphasis on it.

But for the other aspects, each was incomparably difficult and they were extremely difficult to increase!

If one wanted to truly increase perception, only the Eight Inner Hidden Gates' Gate of Opening had such an effect. As for heavenly materials that increased perception, they were simply treasures from legends.

If one wanted to increase willpower, they would have to use treasures like the Twinlife Thunder Crystal that had almost vanished from existence.

As for destiny, even a Divine Realm Holy Lord, World King, or those extreme supreme elders weren't able to clearly understand what it was. As for enhancing their destiny, that was simply a joke. In a sense, destiny was the key aspect of a martial artist's talent. Even a martial artist's origins could be considered a kind of destiny!

As Monarch Sweetyfox and the others were talking, within the seventh level, Lin Ming had already reduced his soul fragments into particles 10,000 times smaller than a mote of dust. After the soul force completely lost its last confines, it began to spread out in the most fundamental soul waves.

The soul was a particle but also a wave. As for what the origin of a soul was, Lin Ming hadn't yet figured that out. Even so, this didn't prevent him from completely shattering his soul and tempering it!

Countless soul waves reverberated within the world of will projection. As they struck the barrier of the projection, they naturally reflected back inwards and underwent a baptism of Laws!

“This boy, he actually managed to reach such a degree!” Duke Golden Sword exclaimed as he saw this, amazed.

Monarch Sweetyfox sincerely praised Lin Ming from the depths of her heart. “Not only does Lin Ming have a gold battle spirit, but his battle spirit also isn't normal; it has a special type of attribute to it. If he couldn't reach this step then there probably aren't many others who would be able to succeed. His talent really arouses envy in all who see him. Every step Lin Ming takes reaches perfection. If this continues, I can't imagine just what boundary he will reach in the future!”

Time slowly passed. When a martial artist crossed Life Destruction, they would usually need several days of time. Even if Lin Ming had the help of the Ruby Sovereign, who was pouring the accumulated energy of the 18 Hells of Flame into him, this still wasn't a process that could be finished in one or two days. But since Monarch Sweetyfox and Duke Golden Sword hadn't indicated that they would leave, none of the disciples from the three branch palaces were able to leave either. Even so, no one wanted to leave to begin with. To witness such a glorious event was itself an extremely rare experience. There were even those that were able to obtain insight from Lin Ming's process of crossing the seventh stage of Life Destruction.

20 hours passed. The Ruby Sovereign closed his eyes, continuously standing guard beside Lin Ming. As for Lin Ming's soul, it had finally completely disintegrated. The last soul fragment had turned into soul waves.

At this moment, the Ruby Sovereign's eyes shot up. It was time to fuse the power of the phoenix bloodline!

As Lin Ming was crossing the seventh stage of Life Destruction, he had 1200 drops of ordinary Ancient Phoenix blood, 600 drops of phoenix plume blood, 16 drops of phoenix heart blood, three drops of phoenix marrow blood, and one drop of phoenix coronet blood as support!

In addition, with the Ruby Sovereign personally assisting, the artifact spirit had pulled out the power of 9999 different Flame Essences and 36 Fire Elementals. The Ruby Sovereign even added in a tiny amount of his source strength. This was the equivalent of using 10,036 different variations of flames to decompose Lin Ming's mortal body and temper his soul!

This was a treatment that not even the extreme talents of the three great family clans would have!

These were resources won by talent and by strength! Although the Ancient Phoenix Clan had numerous factions that struggled against each other, they still wouldn't bury their geniuses. Especially a super genius like Lin Ming who had the potential to become the Ancient Phoenix Clan Patriarch in the future!

If such a genius were to be buried, then the Ancient Phoenix Clan would have long begun their descent into decline and destruction!

"Power of bloodline… fuse!"

The Ruby Sovereign waved his hand and all the phoenix blood passed through and was heated by 10,036 different flames. All of the impurities were scorched away as the phoenix blood turned into a fog that fused into Lin Ming's body, becoming one with his bloodline.

Bang bang bang!

Origin energy surged. Even the 18 Hells of Flame seemed to faintly tremble. Faintly, within Lin Ming's will world projection, a golden phoenix could be seen bathing in flames, undergoing rebirth through nirvana!

But, this phoenix was not the usual golden red phoenix or the brilliant gold phoenix, but a rare dark and burnished gold.

This was a dark gold phoenix!

This was because Lin Ming's bloodline strength already had the elementary form of grandmist energy fused into it. Although the light was blinding, everyone who watched the fire spirit mirror was able to clearly see this dark gold phoenix.

As the young disciples felt the formidable aura coming from the phoenix's figure, they all had a feeling of awe and reverence emerge from the depths of their souls, making them want to bow down in worship. This was the same awe that ancient primitive tribal humans felt towards their divine tribal totems.

"This bloodline power is… incredible!" The present martial artists were unsure of what was happening. Lin Ming's current bloodline strength already surpassed that of many of those present. But, it was still countless miles away from being able to compare with Yan Littlemoon's perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Even so, they had no idea why, but in front of the power of this bloodline, all of them felt a pressure, a pressure that originated from the same bloodline!

In the direction of Charming Phoenix Palace, Yan Littlemoon's vision was blurry as she looked at the dark gold phoenix reflected in the fire spirit mirror. Her eyes stung and her hands were cold.

Laws and bloodline strength were originally Lin Ming's weak points. But now, they were no longer his weaknesses!

Yan Littlemoon took a deep shuddering breath, her eyelashes trembling. She bitterly sighed with hardship in her heart.

"In just a single year, what he meditated on was the chaos stones and yet his comprehension of Laws has already surpassed mine. As for bloodline strength, while he currently cannot compare with me, perhaps several days from now he might obtain the drop of phoenix blood essence. After fusing with that, he still won't have a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, but the power of his bloodline will carry with it a faint aura of a true God Beast. Even I won't have such an aura. The only way I would is if I too could obtain a drop of phoenix blood essence."

"At that time… who could still stop Lin Ming? The advantages he has, I might not have. But the advantages I have, he does not lack any of them…"

Yan Littlemoon looked at the dark gold phoenix fluttering its wings in the seventh level of the Hells of Flame, and myriad emotions swelled up in her heart. Everything that happened on this day seemed like a fantastical illusion. Today, she had suffered a tremendous setback, but at the same time she had also learned an important lesson.

Unconsciously, another 20 hours passed.

Fire Spirit Star's sun fell and rose again. As for Lin Ming, his breakthrough into the seventh stage of Life Destruction was drawing to an end. His particles of flesh and blood had been heated and burned by the power of 10,036 different kinds of flames, and had already completely fused with the Ancient Phoenix bloodline!

The soul waves that bounced within the world of will projection also completed their final round of tempering. As everyone thought that Lin Ming was about to reform his body, in the skies above, there was suddenly a bass rumbling sound.

"Mm? What is that?"

Everyone looked up at the skies and discovered something amazing. The heaven and earth origin energy above Fire Spirit Star was suddenly stirred up, becoming restless as if there was some heavenly treasure being born!

Hu – !

Hu – !

The heaven and earth origin energy formed a massive vortex, all of it surging around and curling up together. And, the center of that vortex was the 18 Hells of Flame!

“What is this!?” The young disciples all widened their eyes in shock.

Even Duke Golden Sword, Monarch Sweetyfox, and the normally emotionless and deadpan Blackwood were stricken! What occurred now was even more startling than Lin Ming breaking through to the seventh level of the Hells of Flame!

“This… could it be…”

“Impossible!”

Duke Golden Sword, Monarch Sweetyfox, and Blackwood simultaneously became aware of a possibility, but none of them dared to believe their own thoughts. This disbelief continued until the heaven and earth origin energy above the 18 Hells of Flame formed a vortex with a layer of clouds above it. The center of this cloud layer slowly fell down like a giant funnel, linking directly to the center of the 18 Hells of Flame’s entrance!

As this happened, all of them realized that their previous thoughts were correct. Even so, with the truth placed right in front of them, they still found it hard to believe!

“Origin energy cloud! It’s an origin energy cloud condensed from the Laws of the world!” Monarch Sweetyfox cried out with a hoarse voice.

"How could this be possible!? Lin Ming is only at the seventh stage of Life Destruction and yet he managed to form an origin energy cloud? This is simply… I can't even… this is unimaginable!"

Origin energy clouds were a phenomenon that would appear only when a martial artist was crossing the ninth stage of Life Destruction. When a martial artist broke through the Ninefall boundary, their essence, energy, and divine would reach perfection, and this event would cause heaven and earth origin energy to gather and condense, forming origin energy clouds. These origin energy clouds were filled with countless fragments of the world's Laws, all of them containing endless mysteries!

Origin energy clouds were also divided into ranks. The lowest rank was a three mile wide origin energy cloud; this was called a Single Layered Heavens Ninefall. When Huo Yanguang crossed Ninefall, he had done so with a Four Layered Heavens, 12 mile wide origin energy cloud. This was already enough to alarm and impress the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace. But now, none of them could ever imagine that when Lin Ming crossed the seventh stage of Life Destruction, there would actually be origin energy clouds gathering in the skies!

Chapter 1023 – Perfect Sevenfall

Chapter 1023 – Perfect Sevenfall

…

…

…

Within the long history of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, there had indeed been geniuses that were able to form an origin energy cloud before they reached Ninefall. But, that only happened at Eightfall. For someone to condense an origin energy cloud at Sevenfall, that was almost impossible to imagine!

After Monarch Sweetyfox and Duke Golden Sword realized what happened, the other young disciples all began to catch on. It had to be known that most of the disciples present hadn't been able to achieve the ninth stage of Life Destruction. They had only reached the eighth stage of Life Destruction before stepping into the Divine Sea realm.

To reach Ninefall and form the lowest level of origin energy clouds was a dream that many of these disciples wished for, much less forming an origin energy cloud at Sevenfall.

This meant that in the future when Lin Ming stepped into the eighth and ninth stages of Life Destruction, the origin energy clouds he formed would be far greater, and the baptism of Laws he would bathe in would be that much more intense!

To an ordinary disciple, being able to undertake a baptism of Laws was an unbelievable luxury, much less being able to do so three times. That was a feat that others simply couldn't compete with.

As the surging origin energy clouds reflected in Yan Littlemoon's bright pupils, she sighed again and again. She had a faint premonition in her heart that Lin Ming was destined to shine in radiant glory within the Ancient Phoenix Clan. He would take that as his foundation, and move towards the greater stage of the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds…

……………

The turbulent origin energy cloud in the sky continued for a quarter hour. It finally gathered in a radius of three miles; this was also called a Single Layered Heavens.

The origin energy cloud of a Single Layered Heavens wasn't considered much at all. However, Lin Ming was only at the seventh stage of Life Destruction. This three mile radius origin energy cloud actually represented the beginning of everything.

As they said, the Dao gave birth to one, one gave birth to two, two gave birth to three, and three gave birth to all of creation!

Three was the beginning of all things and also the foundation of the world. This numeral in itself contained the great truths of the universe.

"A three mile origin energy cloud…" Monarch Sweetyfox gulped. As she looked up at the skies, she was actually glad that Lin Ming hadn't been able to reach four or five Layered Heavens in a single go, otherwise she really wouldn't know what expression to make.

However, she soon discovered that the origin energy cloud Lin Ming formed was not ordinary at all. Rather, a thin layer of fog fluttered around the origin energy cloud. This fog seemed common and ordinary, but it actually gave off a boundless and ancient feeling. Just by looking at it, one could feel the breath of the Great Dao blowing down at them.

"What is that?"

Monarch Sweetyfox was startled. Even with her understandings of the Laws, she still found it difficult to see through that thin layer of fog. As she continued gazing at it, she found that the breath of the Great Dao Laws had simply vanished, as if it had never been there to begin with.

This fog was the elementary form of grandmist energy. When Lin Ming had perceived the chaos stones, he had incorporated the Grandmist Laws within him. Thus, the origin energy cloud he formed naturally carried with it the aura of the Grandmist Laws.

The Grandmist Laws were derived from the changes that happened when the universe first formed. Because that time was too far away, grandmist energy had all but disappeared from the world. It could only be found in some black holes as well as some extremely mystical stars. Even if one found grandmist energy, that grandmist energy would have already lost its vibrancy, and thus it would have also lost the aura of its Laws.

Lin Ming's flesh and blood particles, the fragments of his soul, all of it shot upwards through the massive energy funnel and into the origin energy cloud.

Here, the heaven and earth origin energy had already condensed into countless postcelestial dao diagrams. These postcelestial dao diagrams were incomparably mysterious and exquisite. They condensed, shattered, reformed, and then cracked apart once again in a never ending cycle. Lin Ming's flesh and blood particles wrapped around these postcelestial dao diagrams. His entire body was subtly sifted through by the Laws; the advantages he obtained from this were immeasurable.

When a martial artist crossed Life Destruction and had to withstand a baptism of Laws from within the origin energy cloud, that was the same as directly thrusting the Heavenly Dao into their body. One was a memory of the brain, and the other was having the Heavenly Dao plunge into the body. The differences between these two methods could be imagined!

This baptism continued for two hours. Lin Ming's physical body finally began to slowly reform. First was the black hole revolving core. Then, with the revolving core as the foundation, countless particles gathered, forming the skeleton, organs, bones, and finally the muscles and skin…

The spiritual sea also began to slowly condense. Those soul waves that were reverberating within the origin energy cloud began to gather within Lin Ming's mortal body, forming a complete soul.

As Lin Ming's body formed, many of the postcelestial dao diagrams formed by the Laws buried themselves into Lin Ming's body, becoming a part of him.

If someone were to cut apart Lin Ming's body now, they would be able to find fragments of Laws and postcelestial dao diagrams formed from Laws within him. Not just that, but there were also the Law runes that had deeply engraved themselves into the very marrow of his bones.

This was also a manifestation of the postcelestial Great Dao.

The process of his body reforming continued for several hours. Because a massive amount of the phoenix bloodline had been integrated into him, Lin Ming's physical body had become far more tenacious and clear like crystal, like the purest jade that contained not a single impurity. His compatibility with the Fire Laws had also been raised to a nearly unimaginable degree.

His hair was tinged with red. Every single strand of hair was like a thread of silk, glossy and lustrous, yet incomparably tough. Even a saber wouldn't be able to cut a strand of hair apart.

If someone was able to obtain a single strand of Lin Ming's hair, they could absolutely refine it into a top quality rope-class treasure. If this treasure were placed in the world of mortals, it would cause even Divine Sea powerhouses to struggle for it.

Lin Ming slowly opened his eyes. A brief brilliant flame flashed in his clear pupils. With a thought, the fire origin energy around him transformed into a red silk robe that wrapped round his body. In the next moment, the entire three mile origin energy cloud also completely gathered towards the center and submerged into Lin Ming's body.

Lin Ming had used around two whole days to complete this seventh stage of Life Destruction!

As the red-robed Lin Ming slowly fell down from the sky, the incomparably wild and violent fiery astral winds that blew towards him suddenly became inexplicably quiet and gentle around him, as if Lin Ming had become their master.

Dressed in red, his clothes floating in the wind and his long hair wildly waving around, Lin Ming's two pupils shined like twin moons in the night sky. As he stepped onto the wind, every step he took formed a blue lotus of heaven and earth origin energy underneath his feet. These blue lotuses blazed like flames, lingering for a long period of time, clearly far more wondrous and profound than the blue lotuses Yan Littlemoon had formed. As he walked onto these blossoming flowers, it was like he was stepping on the road to heaven.

In this moment, Lin Ming seemed as if he had come from the heavens, an immortal ruler descended to the world!

As the martial artists present saw Lin Ming, all of them were shocked from the depths of their hearts. It was as if Lin Ming himself was a condensation of the Heavenly Dao. Every step he took brought with it the aura of the Laws!

With a single order, with the slightest movement, the Laws moved at his command!

"Perfect seventh stage Life Destruction…" Monarch Sweetyfox gazed at Lin Ming with some envy in her eyes. "Because of his gold battle spirit, he was able to break down his soul into the tiniest soul waves, thoroughly tempering himself. In addition to that, he was also baptized by the Laws of the world. If he rushes into the 18 Hells of Flame again, he might not be able to make it to the eighth level, but he can at least approach the seventh level 5000 mile distance!"

The 18 Hells of Flame mainly tested a martial artist's understandings of the Laws; cultivation had a much smaller influence. In truth, regardless of whether Lin Ming was at the sixth or seventh stage of Life Destruction when he entered the Hells of Flame, the difference wouldn't be much. The reason was that at this depth, the fiery astral winds were too violent and dangerous. Even a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse would find it difficult to withstand it if they didn't use the power of Laws. Compared to a Divine

Transformation powerhouse, the difference between the sixth and seventh stage of Life Destruction was just too minor.

But when Lin Ming had crossed the seventh stage of Life Destruction, he had withstood a baptism of the world's Laws. His understanding of the Laws was already destined to become far more profound, and the distance he could reach would also be much deeper!

Duke Golden Sword's voice was thick with feeling as he said, "When Lin Ming crossed the seventh stage of Life Destruction, the impact this will have on his results in the 18 Hells of Flame won't be that great. But, the influence it will have in the Illusionary God Combat Array will be remarkable. The Illusionary God Combat Array only tests one's talent in true combat ability. Whether the enemies are weak or strong, that will depend on Lin Ming's age. When Lin Ming crossed the seventh stage of Life Destruction his age didn't change, thus his enemies' strength will not have increased. But, Lin Ming's strength actually rose by a large margin! I fear even the set standard of the Thousand Slaughter cannot hold him back!"

Duke Golden Sword originally held a great appreciation towards Lin Ming. But now, his appreciation seemed far too insufficient. Lin Ming's talent was over a 100 times what he had dared to imagine!

He feared that within a thousand years, rather than him appreciating Lin Ming, he would be hoping that Lin Ming appreciated him instead.

"In any case, Lin Ming's Fire Spirit Star smelting trial will shock the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan. All of the great noble families will extend an olive branch to him. Lin Ming will step to the height of his fame, wielding great power. At that time, which family Lin Ming chooses to side with will become a vital matter that the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan will be focusing on!"

"That's right. Another tumultuous storm will come to the Ancient Phoenix Clan. The Xiao Family has Xiao Chuji and the Huang Family has Huang Yuefeng. Only the Huo Family's current generation is a bit weak. I think that the Huo Family will do everything in their power, no matter how unsavory, in order to win over Lin Ming. They may even think of raising Lin Ming to be their next candidate for the throne of the Patriarch, so that they can compete with the Huang Family and Xiao Family!"

In order to raise a Divine Realm Holy Lord level extreme talent, a tremendous amount of resources was necessary. There were even many resources that there was only a single portion of. If someone used it, no one else would be able to. Thus, even in the three great noble families that had such a deep background, they could only focus their strength and raise one genius at a time.

The Xiao Family and Huang Family already possessed an extreme genius in their ranks, so it was impossible for them to do everything in their power to raise Lin Ming. Moreover, even if they decided to raise Lin Ming, they still wouldn't push him into struggling for the position of Patriarch. First they would place the greatest consideration on their own direct descendent disciples. This meant that the Huo Family would have an even greater superiority in winning over Lin Ming!

Monarch Sweetyfox said, "I fear that the Huo Family will have to hemorrhage a great deal of wealth this time. Lin Ming's existence is too important to them. In order to win over Lin Ming, they will put forth endless benefits! Even if they will bear a great deal of resistance in pushing Lin Ming to become the next Patriarch, and even if they fail in the end, if they managed to gain a Vice Patriarch with the strength of a Holy Lord level master, that will also be greatly significant to the Huo Family!"

Although the Ancient Phoenix Clan only had a single Patriarch at any given time, there were actually multiple Holy Lord level powerhouses. For instance, the Highest Elders that had withdrawn from their position of Patriarch or Vice Patriarch. There were even some divinely gifted extreme geniuses that had become Vice Patriarchs after failing for some reason in their struggle for the throne of the Patriarch. Even so, their combat strength wasn't necessarily any worse than the current Patriarch's.

"Send this news out. I think that the Huo Family needs it the most. I believe that before the Fire Spirit Star smelting trial ends, they will already have sent out a messenger to contact Lin Ming. Golden Sword, aren't you also someone of the Huo Family? Your father-in-law should be very happy to hear this news."

Monarch Sweetyfox teased as she suddenly remembered something.

Duke Golden Sword glared back at Monarch Sweetyfox. He grouchily said, "I am of the Golden Family. I only married a daughter of the Huo Family. Only someone like you would use such a matter to pick on me."

Although Golden Sword seemed angry, he actually didn't mind that much. He understood how important it was to seek the shelter of a distinguished family. If he hadn't married a talented young woman of the Huo Clan, he would never have managed to reach this step.

Chapter 1024 – Sacred Flame Testament

Chapter 1024 – Sacred Flame Testament

…

…

…

News of Lin Ming rushing into the seventh level of the Hells of Flame and simultaneously forming an origin energy cloud at the seventh stage of Life Destruction spread out like a surging tide over the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan.

Without a doubt, this was the grandest event in the Ancient Phoenix Clan for the last tens of thousands of years!

In Phoenix Cry Palace, when Fairy Feng obtained this news she was pleasantly surprised. Although she had held high faith in Lin Ming, she never imagined that he would bring her such great and wondrous surprises.

However, those that had the greatest reaction to Lin Ming were the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters as well as the great families.

At this time, at the Divine Realm's Crimson Light World, within a sealed space, there was a large planet that had been shifted into it by some great supernatural power.

This was the home base of the Huo Family, one of the three great distinguished families of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. The Huo Family, a single family by itself, was able to occupy the entire planet. When all the direct descendants of the Huo Family as well as the branch descendants were added together, they were no fewer in number than the entire population of Phoenix Cry Palace! It was a figure that used a million as the base unit!

With so many people, not every junior of the three great families had a rich bloodline. Only the true top genius disciples among them would be allowed to remain at the family headquarters and be given focus in training. Most other juniors were sent to other faction palaces as their own personal smelting trial. They would stand with the juniors of the ordinary families and all of them would begin at the same starting line. They would rise based on their own talent. Perhaps they would be able to wield great power and become a pivotal figure at their branch palace, adding influence to the family. Or perhaps they would vanish in the sands of time, slowly forgotten by their family.

At this time, within the central core palace of the Huo Family, over a dozen Elders were sitting around a circular table. A flame-colored jade slip was mounted at the center of the round table. This was the message sent by Duke Golden Sword. In this jade slip, there were also some sealed images of Lin Ming's crossing of the seventh stage of Life Destruction. The phenomenon of the origin energy cloud left everyone flustered.

And circling around this jade slip, the Elders present had divided into two camps, fiercely arguing with each other. The key question was just what they were quarreling about.

They were arguing over whether or not they should take in Lin Ming as the top core disciple of their Huo Family, and perhaps even faithfully push him into the position to be the next Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan to compete with the Huang Family and the Xiao Family.

On one side was the conservative faction of the Huo Family. They advocated for purity of bloodline, and believed that no matter what, Lin Ming was still an outsider that wasn't worth the focused training of the Huo Family. They believed they should focus all resources on the juniors of the Huo Family.

And on the other side was everyone that was laughing at the Huo Family's conservative faction. They believed that after spending 10,000 years diligently training the so-called 'genius' disciples, all of them had turned out to be useless idiots that couldn't stand up to anyone. They had wasted so many resources and yet no one they produced had even come close to comparing with Huang Yuefeng or Xiao Chuji.

This sort of dispute had frequently repeated itself for the last several hundreds of years. But this time the argument was particularly nasty.

But no matter how desperately any side argued, the final judgment lay in the hands of the Huo Family's Patriarch.

"Patriarch, in these past years, although our Huo Family has been called part of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's three great families along with the Xiao Family and the Huang Family, the truth is that our family is slowly diminishing. In fact, we have already been long cast away by the other two. In the 72 branch palaces, most of the vital positions have been wrested away by the other two families. And as for the future position of the Ancient Phoenix Clan Patriarch, it seems likely that Huang Yuefeng or Xiao Chuji will take the throne. Regardless of which one of them takes the position of Patriarch, the other will still be the top Vice Patriarch! This is a major attack on our family! We must raise a talented disciple at all costs to compete with those two!"

"If they do not come from our family then the wishes and desires of their heart will be different. Can you guarantee that this Lin Ming isn't some greedy and treacherous wolf? If we spend so much strength training him and yet he doesn't help our Huo Family, then wouldn't we just lose everything?"

"That's still better than sitting here and waiting to rot away! Looking at the greater picture, even if Lin Ming isn't a junior of our Huo Family, I am still willing to train him to become the next Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. That result is still far better than to have the position fall into the hands of the other two!"

The Elders of both sides became increasingly intense in their arguing. The meeting continued for several hours. But at this moment, the Patriarch of the Huo Family, a red-robed old man sitting in the seat of honor, suddenly spoke up.

"Enough! No more arguing. Inform Highdragon. Have him bring along a drop of phoenix blood essence and follow me. I shall personally go to Atlas World's Fire Spirit Star. And you too Whitejade, you're coming along. Bring with you the Sacred Flame Testament. I want to see with my own eyes just what sort of heroic young elite this Lin Ming is!"

"...What?"

As the Elders heard the red-robed old man speak, all of them were stunned. The Huo Family Patriarch actually planned on going to Atlas World's Fire Spirit Star to personally observe this Lin Ming? Moreover, he also wanted to take with him a drop of phoenix blood essence and the Sacred Flame Testament!

The Highdragon that the red-robed old man spoke of was Huo Highdragon, the Internal Affairs Envoy of the Ancient Phoenix Clan and also Monarch Sweetyfox's immediate boss. He was part of the Huo Family, and regardless of strength or status, he far surpassed any ordinary Palace Master of the 72 palaces!

However, even Huo Highdragon couldn't take a drop of phoenix blood essence whenever he wanted. Because this involved so many interests and oppositions, he had to go through and obtain the approval of the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters as well as the three great families in order to do so.

However, because the standard that headquarters had set down seemed on the verge of being met, it was well within reason for Huo Highdragon to bring with him a drop of phoenix blood essence.

As for the Sacred Flame Testament, that was a set a totem stones. Moreover, it was the most precious set of totem stones in the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan. If someone called these totem stones number two, no one would dare to classify anything else as number one!

There was a total of nine carvings in this set of totem stones. However, these totem stones did not originate from the clansmen of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Rather, they had been found by the first Patriarch of the Huo Family. That Patriarch had been exploring a mystic realm when he accidentally stumbled upon this set of totem stones. And, this Patriarch was also one of the most mythical characters of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. He had a great number of lucky chances in his life and nearly became a World King. This set of totem stones was one of his lucky chances.

This set of totem stones altogether was named the Sacred Flame Testament. As for who had carved them, no one knew anything except that it was absolutely some ancient supreme elder. It was even possible that they were left behind by an Empyrean level character!

The Sacred Flame Testament was the most precious treasure of the Huo Family, and also the foundation of the Huo Family's glory and strength.

For all these tens of thousands of years, the Huo Family had relied on the Sacred Flame Testament and the blessings of the First Patriarch to slowly develop, eventually becoming one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's three great families.

"Patriarch wishes to bring the Sacred Flame Testament to Atlas World's Fire Spirit Star?" Several Elders of the conservative faction gulped in unison. The Huo Family Patriarch also had another position at the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters. That was… Highest Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

The Patriarchs of the three great families were all Highest Elders of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Their status was not what a normal Palace Master could ever hope to compare with. And now he wanted to go and personally observe a Life Destruction realm junior disciple as he underwent the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial.

Moreover, if the Sacred Flame Testament was brought to Fire Spirit Star then it was certainly so that Lin Ming could meditate on it. The Sacred Flame Testament was the same as other totem stones. There were Law fragments that slowly accumulated inside, and once they were perceived, these Law fragments would be drained out. Not even the Elders of the Huo Clan had many chances to perceive them, and yet Lin Ming was going to be given a chance to do so. Without a doubt, the Patriarch had already decided that he would win over Lin Ming.

………………

Two days later, Atlas World, Fire Spirit Star –

In these two days, Lin Ming had been in seclusion as he slowly combed over the Laws within his body. He had just broken through to the seventh stage of Life Destruction and had also withstood the baptism of the Laws within the origin energy cloud. He had accumulated a great deal of insights in the meantime and had to take this prime time to enlighten himself on the Laws. Closing up and meditating at this moment was the best method for Lin Ming to increase his strength.

During these last two days, Lin Ming felt as if his spirit was freely roaming through the highest heavens. His strength as well as his comprehension of Laws greatly increased every day.

On the third day, Lin Ming suddenly opened his eyes. In that moment, all of the light around him vanished. And within his body, the runes on his bones began to light up one at a time, blooming with a luminous light.

It was time for him to take the phoenix blood essence!

Lin Ming thought to himself. On this day, he had accumulated enough energy. His body was overflowing with strength. What he wished for was a happy and wild battle!

“Lin Ming left seclusion!”

Some disciples immediately cried out. In these two days, the many disciples of Fire Spirit Star didn’t train at all; at most they would rush through the 18 Hells of Flame. But none of them entered Totem Tower. They were waiting for the grand occasion that was coming. They all wanted to see Lin Ming complete the Thousand Slaughter of the Illusionary God Combat Array and finally obtain the drop of phoenix blood essence.

“It’s about to begin…”

Yan Littlemoon stepped out from a floating cave abode. She looked at Lin Ming floating in the sky, a complex emotion coloring her face. She didn’t want to see Lin Ming shine in brilliance yet again, but with her complex mood and her strange thoughts, she silently flew over to the Illusionary God Combat Array.

And behind Yan Littlemoon, the female disciples of Charming Phoenix Palace all flew out one by one. Today was destined to be carved in the history of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. With so much hope and expectation, they definitely wouldn't miss such a scene.

"Lin Ming... truly miraculous..." On Phoenix Cry Palace's side, White Daohong floated high in the sky. Behind him were the other Divine Transformation realm disciples of Phoenix Hall, the Divine Sea realm disciples, and then the rookie disciples.

Zhou Fei, the rookie disciple that had taken the number one spot in the qualification tournament, was naturally also in this group. After he witnessed Lin Ming break into the seventh level of the Hells of Flame and then summon a three mile origin energy cloud as he crossed the seventh stage of Life Destruction, he had already long discarded any thoughts of competing with Lin Ming. As he thought back to how he planned on surpassing Lin Ming, Zhou Fei only felt his cheeks blush red. Luckily, he hadn't been audacious enough to say that to Lin Ming's face, otherwise he truly would become the laughing stock of all.

The disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace, Charming Phoenix Palace, and Praying Phoenix Palace all left their respective spirit boats, cave dwellings, residences, or even returned from the 18 Hells of Flame if they were training there. They all returned to watch Lin Ming begin his final impact on the last standard for obtaining the drop of phoenix blood essence.

And in front of Totem Tower's square, Blackwood, Duke Golden Sword, and Monarch Sweetyfox were all flying in the air. They saw Lin Ming approach, bursting with energy and potential. Monarch Sweetyfox lovably smiled and said, "Lin Ming, you seem as if you are prepared?"

"Yes!"

"Mm... good! Then I will first tell you something. To complete the Thousand Slaughter in the Illusionary God Combat Array is much more difficult than reaching the seventh level of the 18 Hells of Flame. The last person to complete the Thousand Slaughter did so 40,000 years ago. According to the standards set by headquarters, all you need to do is complete the Thousand Slaughter before the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial ends. Are you sure that you wish to attempt this now?"

"Yes, Lady Envoy."

"Good. Blackwood, activate the array." Monarch Sweetyfox said.

Beside her, Blackwood swept out his hand and a rumbling sound echoed through Totem Tower's square. The great portal gate of the Illusionary God Combat Array emerged once again.

Chapter 1025 – Rushing the Illusionary God Combat Array

Chapter 1025 – Rushing the Illusionary God Combat Array

…

…

…

Fire Spirit Star's Illusionary God Combat Array already had a history of a million years. After the supreme elder of the past laid down this array formation, it had recorded the countless heroic young elites that had passed through it. Then, a simulacrum of these heroic young elites was reproduced through the array formation and energy, forming a killing array. When a trial challenger rushed through the Illusionary God Combat Array they would have to face the onslaught of these numerous geniuses.

Lin Ming silently extracted the Phoenix Blood Spear and slowly flew into the Illusionary God Combat Array. It had already been over a full year since he had last had a hearty and fulfilling battle. Now, his body was bursting with energy, impatient to erupt!

"I wonder how many people Lin Ming can slay. What happens if he surpasses the Thousand Slaughter?" Several young girls from Charming Phoenix Palace whispered to themselves, lost in a daze as they stared at Lin Ming's fading back, dreaming of him.

In fact, Lin Ming was indeed a peerless young heroic elite. Not to mention the great marvels that occurred when he crossed the seventh stage of Life Destruction or his handsome appearance and ethereal temperament, but just based on his talent, future, and also the possibility that he would be able to absorb a drop of phoenix blood essence and obtain the characteristics of a God Beast's blood essence in his veins, that alone was enough for countless young beauties to wish that they could marry him.

After having reached this step, it was normal for young girls to be captivated by him.

"Who knows? No one has managed to complete the Thousand Slaughter in 40,000 years. To complete the Illusionary God Combat Array's Thousand Slaughter is more difficult than reaching the seventh level of the Hells of Flame. Lin Ming is powerful, but wanting to accomplish this feat won't be easy. Just a few days ago he had barely managed to reach the seventh level of the Hells of Flame too."

At this point not many people doubted that Lin Ming would be able to obtain the drop of phoenix blood essence. They were only guessing on how far Lin Ming could go in his first attempt within the Illusionary God Combat Array.

Hu –

Lin Ming suddenly shot forwards. His body turned into a ray of light that directly broke into the Illusionary God Combat Array.

When Lin Ming arrived within the Illusionary God Combat Array, he discovered that he had entered a very broad expanse of space.

Lin Ming was in a land of fire. Beating flames surrounded him on all sides, dancing in groups around him. Besides that, there was nothing here but a vast, dark and deathly silent plain, incomparably quiet.

Several hundred feet in front of Lin Ming, a dark gray-clothed person slowly surfaced from the ground. This person was eight feet tall and his features were fierce and demonic. He held a great curved knife in his hand.

"Mm? This isn't a human?"

Lin Ming looked at this gray-clothed man. He had a fifth stage Life Destruction cultivation, two stages lower than Lin Ming himself. This was equal to the most ordinary standard for being a genius in the Divine Realm.

According to age, as a 29 year old seventh stage Life Destruction martial artist, Lin Ming was considered a standard top talent of one of the 72 branch palaces. But, when placed within the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan, this wasn't too amazing at all. For instance, Yan Littlemoon had a seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation and was two years younger than he was.

In other words, once Lin Ming had slain around 500 or 600 people, he would begin to face groups of top seventh and eighth stage Life Destruction masters. When he neared a thousand people, he might even face large squads of ninth stage Life Destruction elites.

Moreover, these people would not be normal ninth stage Life Destruction masters. That would be the true start of the battle!

Sii – !

The gray-clothed man raised his curved knife and rushed forwards. This curved knife was a high-grade saint artifact. As the gray-clothed man slashed it down, a knife light shot out like a 10,000 foot bolt of white lightning, splitting apart the atmosphere.

Lin Ming turned his hand. His body turned into a haze of blue smoke as the Phoenix Blood Spear shot forth like a laser beam!

Kacha!

The 10,000 foot knife light was torn apart by the Phoenix Blood Spear's spear light. The spear light continued forth unabated, piercing through that gray-clothed man's protective true essence and stabbing through his heart.

Blood splashed all around! The gray-clothed man flew backwards. He smashed into the ground, and then his body began to slowly fade away.

Lin Ming effortlessly killed his first opponent. This was also a matter of course. Up to this point, Lin Ming had never yet met a genius at his level whose combat strength had surpassed his own. Moreover, this gray-clothed man had only been at the fifth stage of Life Destruction: he was two stages of Life Destruction lower. Killing him was as easy as turning his hand.

At this time, outside the Illusionary God Combat Array, a star lit up on the arch of the gate. This star represented Lin Ming having slain the first opponent.

Only two breaths of time had passed for Lin Ming to complete the first kill. No one was surprised by this. They waited for the other stars to start shining, especially the ninth star; that represented completion of the Thousand Slaughter.

At this time, Monarch Sweetyfox's thoughts moved. She looked up at the sky and mumbled to herself. "Mm? Some people have arrived. This aura is… high-grade spirit artifact?"

Just as her voice fell, a rumbling sound filled the sky like endless thunderclaps. The skies above Fire Spirit Star were torn asunder, and a massive scroll flew out from that shattered space. It slowly unfurled in the skies, forming countless beautiful and exquisite images. These scenes were clearly part of the scroll, and yet when they were projected into the skies of Fire Spirit Star they seemed completely lifelike. They formed a separate domain of space in the skies.

"That is the Sacred Flame Samsara Scroll! It is someone from the Huo Family, and someone extremely important at that!"

Monarch Sweetyfox was surprised. The Sacred Flame Samsara Scroll was one of the Huo Family's high-grade spirit artifact magic treasures. Not just that, but it was an outstanding existence amongst all high-grade spirit artifacts. To be able to activate the Sacred Flame Samsara Scroll and drive it through the void, only a high level figure of the Huo Family would be able to do that. "The news of this was just passed out and yet the Huo Family personally sent someone to Fire Spirit Star in order to win over Lin Ming? That's a bit too much isn't it? I wonder who came this time?"

Monarch Sweetyfox glanced over at Duke Golden Sword. Duke Golden Sword shrugged. He had only sent the news, he didn't know who had come from the Huo Family.

The disciples of the three branch palaces as well as their leading Elders all stopped talking about Lin Ming attempting the Illusionary God Combat Array and looked up at the Sacred Flame Samsara Scroll in the sky.

"That is actually a… high-grade spirit artifact?" Sun Cyprestar said, startled. There was an enormous difference in value between every small grade of spirit artifacts. His Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron was in truth only a top low-grade spirit artifact, and yet that was enough to cause Chu Redcloud plot to make a bet with him. As for the Samsara Scroll floating in the sky, that was something that his Heaven Eclipsing Cauldron could not hope to compare with.

Without a doubt, whoever had come was a great figure from either headquarters or the three great families.

As the Sacred Flame Samsara Scroll unfurled, three red-robed Elders slowly floated down, flanked by a pair of golden-armored warriors.

As Monarch Sweetyfox, Blackwood, and Duke Golden Sword saw these three Elders, especially the one in front, all of their eyes widened to the point of nearly falling out. Their hearts nearly stopped beating in their chests.

As for Sun Cyprestar and Chu Redcloud, both of them had a perplexed expression as they didn't know who had arrived. But, this confusion only lasted for a brief moment before they were frightened out of their wits.

This was because Monarch Sweetyfox, Blackwood, and Duke Golden Sword all deeply bowed to the red-robed Elder at the front.

“Disciple Sweetyfox respectfully welcomes the Highest Elder!”

“Disciple Blackwood respectfully welcomes the Highest Elder!”

“Disciple Golden Sword respectfully welcomes the Highest Elder!”

Highest Elder!?!?

This red-robed old man was actually a Highest Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, someone whose status could compare with the Patriarch’s!? That was simply a god-like figure! Just what would he have come to Fire Spirit Star for?

Chapter 1026 – Kill Them All

Chapter 1026 – Kill Them All

…

…

…

As Monarch Sweetyfox and the others called out the title of the Highest Elder, Chu Redcloud, Sun Cyprestar, and the many disciples of the three branch palaces were all left dumbfounded. They didn't think that this red-robed old man was actually the Highest Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

The Highest Elders were titanic figures. Whether it was strength or status, they were equal with the Patriarch. There were even some Highest Elders that had been the Patriarch in the past, but then had abdicated the throne in order to go into seclusion and cultivate. Their strength was even higher than the current Patriarch's.

These characters were lofty and existed above others. Normally they would never come into contact with low level disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, nor would they visit the 72 branch palaces. If a Palace Master of one of the 72 branch palaces went to the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters to request an audience with the Highest Elder, they would also have to respectfully bow.

As for low level palace Elders like Chu Redcloud and Sun Cyprestar, they would simply never see any of the Highest Elders in their lifetimes. At most they would see someone at a lower level like the Internal Affairs Envoy or the Merit Elder. And in their opinion, these types of people were already extraordinary figures. Meeting them was similar to a countryside magistrate seeing an imperial emissary. As for the Highest Elder, that was the emperor.

Now the Highest Elder had come to Fire Spirit Star. There could only be one explanation for it, and that was that he had come here to observe Lin Ming's trial!

As Chu Redcloud and Sun Cyprestar thought of this, both of them gulped. Lin Ming had even managed to arouse the interest of such a grand character!

"Lin Ming is inside?"

The red-robed old man indifferently asked Duke Golden Sword as he floated high in the sky.

"Yes." Duke Golden Sword swallowed a mouthful of saliva. This old man speaking to him was named Huo Violentstone and was also his father-in-law's grandfather. In the face of a Highest Elder whose status was so great it could frighten others to death, even the normally impertinent Duke Golden Sword felt an immense pressure.

Huo Violentstone looked over to the single star shining on the arch of the Illusionary God Combat Array. Of the nine stars, only one had lit up. This signified that Lin Ming had slain his first opponent.

"He just entered?"

"Yes, it's only been a dozen or so breaths of time."

"Mm." Huo Violentstone nodded. Normally the Illusionary God Combat Array trial took an extremely long period of time to complete. In a battle between two geniuses where their strength wasn't too far apart, a battle could last several quarter hours or even several hours, not to mention the time it would take to complete the Thousand Slaughter. Even though the beginning would be a bit faster, the further one progressed, the longer each battle would take.

Normally, it would take around a few hours to slay 600 to 700 people. But to kill 800 people, that would take most of the day. As for 900 people, that might take a full day.

40,000 years ago, when someone completed the Thousand Slaughter, that had lasted for two days and two nights!

The last section of the battles was particularly difficult. Withstanding such an endeavor was far easier said than done! A martial artist that completed the Thousand Slaughter would have to have terrifying endurance, and a recovery ability that would allow them to continue through a near-endless revolving war. They also had to possess strong nerves and a powerful will. Otherwise, in a high intensity battle where one's mind was stressed from maintaining total concentration, even if one's body and true essence could withstand it, their mind might not. In a battle between masters, a single distraction could prove to be fatal!

Huo Violentstone thought for a moment and then fell onto the ground in front of Totem Tower. As for everyone else, they retreated in unison, giving ground to Huo Violentstone. In front of a Highest Elder, all of these people were vigilant and also cautious in their discussion.

At this time, the second star lit up; this star symbolized that 10 people had been slain.

Currently, Lin Ming had only been in there for 20 breaths of time. The first 10 people within the Illusionary God Combat Array came out one at a time. After killing one, it would take one or two breaths of time for the next opponent to appear. For Lin Ming to slaughter 10 opponents within 20 breaths of time, that proved that he had instantly killed his opponents as they showed up.

This was also natural. The opponents at the beginning wouldn't surpass the sixth stage of Life Destruction. With Lin Ming's killing strength, it was no different from cutting vegetables.

Then, the third star also lit up. Lin Ming had slain 50 opponents within the Illusionary God Combat Array.

Starting at the 51st opponent, Lin Ming would have to face three at a time.

In this battle, three opponents would appear. Moreover, two of these three would have a seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation, the same as Lin Ming.

These three people appeared and then joined forces to rush at Lin Ming. Each one was fully focused on attacking without giving a single thought to defense. Their moves were all designed for them to perish together with Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's expression was calm. He waved the Phoenix Blood Spear and endless spear lights covered his body. With a 'peng peng peng' sound, the combined attack of the three was blocked by Lin Ming.

Then, Lin Ming swept his spear out. A beautiful spear light drew a brilliant arc, a simple move capable of sweeping through an army. The spearpoint slashed the throats of the three opponents, instantly beheading all of them. They collapsed and vanished in a bloody light!

Lin Ming's moves were extremely simple, but they could be described with a single word – fast, so fast that they reached the extremes of velocity. With such a high speed, the might that such a simple move could display was unimaginable.

After slaying these three people, more and more opponents emerged. However, none of them were Lin Ming's match.

100 slaughtered!

200 slaughtered!

300 slaughtered!

400 slaughtered!

After killing 400 people, the geniuses Lin Ming faced were all at the seventh stage of Life Destruction and above, with many at the eighth stage of Life Destruction.

Lin Ming discovered that the number of opponents he had to face at the same time increased by three for every 100 people he killed. For instance, he faced 12 enemies simultaneously after killing 400 people, and now he faced 15 enemies simultaneously after killing 500 people!

The cultivation of these opponents didn't sound too high. In the past, let alone Life Destruction powerhouses, Lin Ming had even slain numerous Divine Sea powerhouses. But, those Divine Sea powerhouses he had killed couldn't compare with these people in front of him.

If any one of these opponents were chosen, they would be equal to a 29 year old Huo Yanguang or Zhou Fei. In the future they would become characters that crossed the ninth stage of Life Destruction.

Moreover, these people all attacked as if they didn't care for their lives. Their coordination was impeccable and their various attack moves sealed away all avenues of retreat!

However, in the face of absolute strength, all of that was useless!

Spear light swept out and blood splashed out. The Phoenix Blood Spear was like a red dragon diving through a sea of blood. Wherever it visited, flesh and blood would rain down!

Outside of the Illusionary God Combat Array, another star lit up.

Before, because fewer enemies had appeared, Lin Ming's kill count had increased slowly. But now that over 10 opponents appeared each time, the number of them he slaughtered rapidly grew!

An hour later, Lin Ming had already slaughtered 600 people within the Illusionary God Combat Array. This was the same distance that Yan Littlemoon had reached.

Once he passed the checkpoint of slaying 600 enemies, 18 of them appeared at a time!

Moreover, these 18 people all had eighth stage Life Destruction cultivations, a single stage higher than Lin Ming. This meant that if they were real people, their cultivation speed would surpass Lin Ming's, reaching the same level as White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun!

Correspondingly, their combat strength wasn't very different from a 29 year old White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun. Now, Lin Ming had to face 18 of these enemies at a time!

"Trial challenger, for you to rush this far, you have done well. But, this is where your journey ends. Starting from slaughtering 600 opponents, the difficulty will soar to another level. Us 18 people will send you on your way out of here!" The leader of the 18 people suddenly said out loud.

"Mm?" Lin Ming was slightly surprised. He didn't think that these people would actually speak out like real living persons. It was clear that these 18 people were different from his previous opponents, and this difference was that they all had spiritual wisdom. They weren't too different from true living opponents. They weren't like the previous opponents, without the slightest bit of will, risking everything to bring down Lin Ming.

"Then bring it on!" Lin Ming faintly began to stir with excitement. His opponents so far hadn't been able to place the least bit of pressure on him. But now, he felt a tiny bit of threat from these 18 enemies. He could finally be a bit serious about this, even if it was only a little bit.

"Kill!"

The black-clothed man in the lead roared out and then all 18 of them attacked together as if they were a single person. They moved in in sync, launching a barrage of attacks at Lin Ming.

And, the weapons they used to attack were all top grade saint artifacts!

These weren't weapons formed from energy, but true top grade saint artifacts!

Within the Illusionary God Combat Array, there were many top grade saint artifacts stored. Their purpose was to stabilize the eye of the array formation. Now, these weapons were used by these virtual energy simulacrums to attack.

The previous opponents Lin Ming faced had only used high-grade saint artifacts, and the majority of them were formed by energy so their strength was limited. But now, all the weapons used were top grade saint artifact. The might of a top grade saint artifact was far from what a high-grade saint artifact could ever hope to compare with!

18 top grade saint artifacts!

Although there was still a great disparity between these top grade saint artifacts and the Phoenix Blood Spear that neared being a transcendent saint artifact, when these 18 weapons were combined together, their power absolutely surpassed the Phoenix Blood Spear's!

In the moment when the 18 enemies attacked, Lin Ming felt a great pressure fall over him. This was the might and glory of a top grade saint artifact, as well as the influence of a domain!

18 layers of domains!

Each of these enemies Lin Ming currently faced actually possessed a domain!

The grade of these domains was no worse than the Blue Lotus Domain. If any of these people were placed in the 72 branch palaces, they would be splendid and famous characters. 99% of the disciples that attended the Fire Spirit Star smelting trial this round would be unable to be a match for any of them!

18 different domains superimposed on each other! And then, the pressure of 18 top grade saint artifacts was added on top of that!

Because these different domains could directly multiply each other's strength due to the competing influences, this was still not a pressure that the average person could withstand. If one's combat strength wasn't high enough, they wouldn't even be able to move their true essence in this combined domain field. In other words, if any of the other trial challengers from the three branch palaces were to be in his shoes, they would find it difficult to even stand, so how could they begin to fight back?

"Great!"

Lin Ming's eyes brightened. After killing 600 people and reaching this point, he finally felt pressure! Only such a vigorous battle could stir his excitement and rouse his heart. He simply hadn't been able to display his strength before this. Since breaking through to the seventh stage of Life Destruction, this would be his first chance to verify the insights he comprehended from within the 18 Hells of Flame!

Bang!

With an explosive sound, Lin Ming's figure instantly disappeared, avoiding the combined strike of the 18 people. And this strike ruptured the earth, able to cause mountains to collapse. Endless amounts of crushed stone flew into the air.

Lin Ming raised the Phoenix Blood Spear as he floated in the air. He didn't have a serious expression on at all. Instead, he grinned with fervor. "You're not bad, but you're still far short of being able to defeat me."

"Haha! Don't worry, the fun part is still coming. Combined martial skills, kill!"

The black-clothed man in the lead gave a loud shout. The 18 people combined forces to attack. The entire sky was filled with the light of top grade saint artifacts!

Chapter 1027 – How Hard Could This Be?

Chapter 1027 – How Hard Could This Be?

…

…

…

Outside of the Illusionary God Combat Array, all of the disciples present had their gazes turned to the stars above the arch of the portal. As they saw the stars light up with astounding speed, all of them were thrilled.

"This speed! It's so fast!"

Lin Ming hadn't even been inside for an hour before so many stars had lit up. With such unstoppable momentum, how was this slaughtering geniuses? It was more like cutting down scattered soldiers!

"It really is fast. It's much faster than Yan Littlemoon's performance. It shouldn't be difficult for Lin Ming to complete the Thousand Slaughter!"

"A bit more than three quarters of an hour has passed. In less than an hour, Lin Ming has slaughtered 500 opponents! Now, I fear that in another quarter hour he will finish killing 600 enemies. If that continues, then he should reach 800 enemies or even 900 enemies slain in four to six hours! Within eight hours the Thousand Slaughter might even be in sight!"

"It shouldn't be a problem for Lin Ming to obtain the phoenix blood essence anymore! With such irresistible momentum, he might kill 1100 enemies or even 1200 enemies!"

"No kidding, just look at how fast Lin Ming is going. Even I want to give it a try!"

“Yeah, for this last year we’ve either been meditating over the Concepts or been roasted in the Hells of Flame. I’m so bored that even my hair has grown long. I really want to go into the Illusionary God Combat Array and have a grand battle. Although I might not be able to complete the Thousand Slaughter, it shouldn’t be a problem to kill several hundred opponents. You know, thinking about it, I also excel in combat. Although I’m not some sort of master when it comes to perceiving the Laws, my true combat skills are definitely worth some merit!”

“Haha, me too! My head hurts when I have to perceive all this nonsense about Laws. Combat is my true strong suit. Ahh, my hands are really itching for some action!”

On Praying Phoenix Palace’s side, several genius disciples were whipped up. As they saw Lin Ming kill in such a hot-blooded manner, they were also stirred up into a frenzy. Their voices became increasingly loud as they impatiently wished to test out their own strength.

Young disciples, especially those geniuses, always held a proud and arrogant mindset. When they met a challenge that the public regarded as impossible, they would invariably want to attempt it. There would always be a voice in their mind asking them, if they were so strong in this area, just how poor could their performance be?

Of course, they also knew the limits of their own ability. Completing the Thousand Slaughter was impossible, but maybe slaughtering 600 or so opponents was a possibility.

They had never rushed through the Illusionary God Combat Array before, so they simply didn’t understand just how difficult it was. They had only seen Yan Littlemoon attempt it once, and Yan Littlemoon was also a genius who excelled in the aspect of Laws. For most of her life, she had been closed up in cultivation. She hadn’t gone out adventuring many times and hadn’t been tempered through trials of actual combat. Moreover, to these geniuses, Yan Littlemoon was also a woman. There were many young disciples present that were renowned for their combat abilities. They had journeyed into mystic realms before and killed hundreds and thousands of opponents, undergoing countless life or death tribulations. None of them believed they were weaker than Yan Littlemoon when it came to combat. At least, they weren’t too far off.

But what they didn't know was that the difficulty of the Illusionary God Combat Array's Thousand Slaughter had far surpassed their wildest imaginations.

The echoes of these discussions naturally fell into the ears of the Highest Elder Huo Violentstone.

"To take four to six hours to kill 800 people, or 900 people?

"To near the Thousand Slaughter in eight hours?

"They all want to go into the Illusionary God Combat Array to fight, and even though completing the Thousand Slaughter is impossible, killing several hundred opponents isn't a problem?

"Lin Ming has unstoppable momentum? He can slaughter 1100, or even 1200 opponents?"

As Huo Violentstone heard these disciples talking, he sneered. This bunch of stupid pigs, they knew nothing!!!

They only knew that the Thousand Slaughter was difficult, but as to how difficult it really was, they had no idea. They knew that it wouldn't be easy for Lin Ming to complete the Thousand Slaughter, but as to how not easy it really was, they also had no idea!

This was similar to a mentally handicapped retard not knowing how difficult a high imperial examination was. They didn't know just how hard it was for others to score perfectly, because they didn't even know that one plus one equaled two!

As a Highest Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Huo Violentstone had also rushed through the Illusionary God Combat Array in the past, and had managed to kill 700 enemies as his limit. Afterwards, he stumbled upon a massive fortuitous encounter in the Divine Transformation realm. He returned to the Illusionary God Combat Array after that and killed a total of 882 opponents.

Although Huo Violentstone was only 18 away from reaching 900 enemies slain, those enemies that appeared after 900 people had already appeared, and he was able to personally witness just how terrifying they actually were!

If any single one of those geniuses were picked out then they could be a 100 year ranked talent of the 72 branch palaces. If 27 of them joined forces, their combat strength was impossible to estimate.

When Huo Violentstone encountered those enemies, he felt as if an insurmountable mountain had appeared in front of him. Not just that, but if he managed to kill them, there would still be increasingly powerful opponents that appeared, all the way until the mythical Thousand Slaughter!

That was already an existence that Huo Violentstone found hard to imagine. He really couldn't imagine how the man known as the Battle King from 40,000 years ago had managed to break through the Thousand Slaughter! That was simply a feat found in legends!

Huo Violentstone highly suspected that once one approached the Thousand Slaughter, any one of those 27 people that would appear had the ability to sweep away all of the so-called 'geniuses' present.

As Huo Violentstone heard the excited discussions of the disciples behind him grow ever louder, with many of them saying that they would participate in the Illusionary God Combat Array tomorrow, his frown became increasingly deep.

And beside Huo Violentstone, Duke Golden Sword, who was on full alert, also felt like he where standing on pins and needles. These geniuses were simply unaware of how difficult it was. In truth, they didn't even possess the qualifications to attempt the Illusionary God Combat Array.

Duke Golden Sword gulped. He stumbled through an explanation, "Highest Elder, please forgive these juniors your anger. These branch palace disciples have never attempted the Illusionary God Combat Array and they have never experienced just how wide the word is.

Before this, Yan Littlemoon had gone through once, and although she is outstanding in comprehension of Laws, her true combat ability can't be considered to be at the peak. Even then, Yan Littlemoon still managed to kill almost 600 opponents. They have no idea just how difficult it becomes after that."

Huo Violentstone didn't bother with Duke Golden Sword. Instead, he turned to the two middle-aged men behind him and said, "Highdragon, Whitejade, bring out a projection of the battlefield so that this crowd of small minded idiots can broaden their horizons, lest they think themselves infallible! Moreover, I also want to see just what sort of scene appears after 900 people, and what strength it will take to overcome that pass!"

"Yes, Patriarch."

Huo Highdragon and Huo Whitejade nodded. Then, they joined together and released thousands of array symbols that flew into the Illusionary God Combat Array. As two individuals skilled in ancient arrays, they were able to project the situation that was happening within the Illusionary God Combat Array.

Soon after, a screen of light appeared above the Illusionary God Combat Array, as if phantom images were condensing. Duke Golden Sword's eyes widened as he saw this and he locked onto the shining light screen above him. In the past, he had stopped short of killing 700 opponents. As for what the scene would be like after that, he wasn't sure. He wished to experience it with his own eyes.

"Whoa, look at that light screen!" Behind Huo Violentstone, the disciples of the three branch palaces were shocked as they saw a screen of light appear above the Illusionary God Combat Array. Then, their surprise turned to excitement.

"That is a projection of the Illusionary God Combat Array that was formed by the supernatural powers of the honored lords present? Amazing! We can see Lin Ming's killing fight within the Illusionary God Combat Array now!"

“Haha, this is awesome! We don’t have to stare at those stars anymore, that simply isn’t any fun at all. You just can’t see anything from them and you have to rely on your imagination.”

“The scene of battle within the Illusionary God Combat Array must be very intense and very exciting!”

As the disciples present spoke, they all turned their eyes to the screen of light above them. The images that appeared were dim at the start, as if it were a reflection in the water. Slowly, it became completely clear. They were even able to sense the fluctuations of energy coming from each person. It was no different from standing on the sidelines of the fight and seeing it in person.

Following that, the disciples all watched with open mouths.

One of the disciples that had been loudly wondering out how awesome the fight was within the Illusionary God Combat Array immediately shut up without a single word to say. His eyes were so wide it seemed they would nearly fall out from their sockets.

He was able to see a black-clothed man that was clearly an opponent. In his mind, this opponent should have been the same as random cannon fodder that would be swept away by Lin Ming. But, they saw that this black-clothed man wielded a massive great sword, and with every slash of his sword, roaring flames would blaze into the heavens. And all around this black-clothed man for a radius of ten miles, the entire land was actually covered with life of all sorts. Insects, fish, birds, beasts, plants, all types of lifeforms were forming, and blue lotuses were constantly in bloom.

“That… that… that is the Blue Lotus Domain? That person’s cultivation is at the eighth stage of Life Destruction?” The disciple stared with wide eyes. He could sense that that person’s aura and energy fluctuations were extremely deep. His foundation was solid and his strength was terrifying!

And, the Blue Lotus Domain was something that this disciple hadn't yet managed to comprehend. Although he had confidence in his combat prowess, he couldn't summon the least bit of courage to face this single black-clothed man!

And beside this disciple, another disciple was so shocked his voice trembled. "It isn't just the Blue Lotus Domain, everyone else also has a domain! That is the Purple Light Electric Field of the Thunder Laws! It is a domain on the same level as the Blue Lotus Domain! Mm!?!? This… that is… look at their weapons!!"

As this disciple cried out in alarm, all of the other disciples turned to the weapons that the energy body opponents held.

"Heavens! They are actually top grade saint artifacts! 18 top grade saint artifacts! Top grade saint artifacts already have a tremendous strength by themselves. They are terrifying even without a martial artist needed to actively use them! And with 18 top grade saint artifacts combined together, this is… this is just…"

Although many top grade saint artifacts had appeared around Lin Ming, that was because at Lin Ming's level, many people he came into contact with were peak talents that were able to obtain top grade saint artifacts of their own. But, a common disciple often didn't even have a high-grade saint artifact!

For instance, even Ninefall geniuses that came from distinguished families like Huang Yuegong and Huo Yanguang also only used high-grade saint artifacts!

Besides Lin Ming, only other monstrous geniuses like White Daohong, Lu Xiaoyun, and Yan Littlemoon were able to possess top grade saint artifacts in the Life Destruction realm.

The Ancient Phoenix smelting trial rewarded top grade saint artifacts, but one needed to reach the fourth level 5000 mile distance. Out of all the other disciples present, besides Xiao Whitesnow, just who was able to accomplish such a feat?

Thus, to the many young disciples, a top grade saint artifact was a treasure they could only yearn for in their dreams. To them, the existence of a top grade saint artifact had already left an indelible and great impression in their hearts. A single top grade saint artifact was worth at least 20 times the total wealth of one of these young disciples; they could forget about ever obtaining one until they reached the Divine Transformation realm.

But now, by himself, Lin Ming had to face the siege of 18 top grade saint artifacts together!

Chapter 1028 – Source of Phoenix Blood

Chapter 1028 – Source of Phoenix Blood

…

…

…

18 figures, underneath the support of their domains, simultaneously displayed the power of their top grade saint artifacts!

Woosh woosh woosh!

The sound of splitting air filled the skies. The multiple domains superimposed on each other and countless wonderful phenomena appeared. The fiery ground underneath Lin Ming's feet ruptured from the oppression of energy and main domains together. The earth shattered, becoming powdered stone. The magma that was flowing underneath shot up to the heavens!

18 different attacks combined together and came falling down like a great net!

In that moment, Lin Ming suddenly condensed his aura. He opened the Gate of Wonder and revolved the Mystic Lightning Shade, his speed instantly reaching the limit!

On the screen of light, one could also see blurry after shadows.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Three true essence attacks fell onto nothing!

With an incredible angle, Lin Ming passed through space like a nimble little fish, searching for a breakthrough in this net of attacks!

He thrust the Phoenix Blood Spear forwards!

Ca!

In that instant, a straight beam of blood red light shot into the heavens, condensing into an explosion of energy that dyed the entire world sanguine.

A resonant phoenix cry echoed outwards as an endless blood light surged out from the Phoenix Blood Spear, forming a crimson storm. This storm tore apart all of the overlapping domains around Lin Ming; even the space around him trembled!

This was the power of the Phoenix Blood Spear. As a divine weapon that neared a transcendent saint artifact, its strength was originally that of a top master. When combined with Lin Ming's strength, it was able to instantly detonate with an incomparable might that flooded the world!

Chi!

Two shadow figures were swallowed up by the crimson storm and torn into pieces of flesh, instantly killed.

However, Lin Ming didn't relax. Just as he killed those two, a saber light seemed to cut through space and appear in front of him. It carried with it a large success bronze battle spirit, overwhelming all!

A bronze battle spirit wasn't much at all, but these attacks originated from a top grade saint artifact; they were no laughing matter! Even someone like Lin Ming would be severely wounded and vomit blood if he were to be simultaneously struck by these attacks.

Without looking, Lin Ming instantly turned into blue smoke. This straight and seemingly unavoidable saber light fell onto nothing. In that moment, Lin Ming's shadow seemed to be like a stream of water without figure or substance, dizzying to the eyes.

The Phoenix Blood Spear's spear light swept out once again. The keen blood light formed a straight line that shot outwards, sweeping through the skies!

Three figures were split in half by this spear light!

In that brief moment, Lin Ming had dodged the attacks coming from all sides and had also killed five opponents. In the blink of an eye, not only did Lin Ming avoid the combined attacks of 18 people, but he also tore through their combined domains!

From start to finish, Lin Ming had only used the strength of the Phoenix Blood Spear; he hadn't even poured much true essence into his weapon. The might of the Phoenix Blood Spear was already freakish enough!

"Two have died – no, five have died!"

In Totem Tower's square, everyone watched as Lin Ming faced 18 powerful geniuses. Even so, with just the spear in his hand he had killed five people! The changing situation on the battlefield had surpassed everyone's expectations!

These seemingly strong opponents had been cut down by Lin Ming like mere fodder. The process happened so fast that most of the disciples couldn't even follow it!

As for the top grade saint artifacts, they might be powerful but they weren't able to touch Lin Ming.

And, the numerous domain force fields superimposed on top of each other had been broken apart by Lin Ming using absolute strength!

Out of the 18 people, five had died. With their combined fighting technique broken through, everyone else lost their coordination and more gaps appeared in their defenses. As for the superimposed domains, they also lost a great deal of power.

"Damn, how could this be!"

The leader of the 18 martial artists was enraged. He never imagined that in just a single exchange of moves his entire party would be routed like this!

And at this time, Lin Ming shot forth once again!

Lin Ming was clear that rushing through the Illusionary God Combat Array would be an enormous challenge. He was only at 600 people slain and yet his opponents were already so formidable. If White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun were at his age, then it would be impossible for them to pass this step! Not just that, but there was still the 700 mark, 800 mark, all the way until the Thousand Slaughter. What sort of scene would that be?

Moreover, it couldn't be forgotten that he wouldn't have any rest time at all. As the fight continued, his true essence reserves would be rapidly depleted.

If this were so, Lin Ming naturally couldn't drag things on, nor could he underestimate his opponents. He had to utilize the smallest amount of energy possible to settle these battles as quickly as possible!

Kill!

Spear light surged forth and a bloody light rained down on the world. Above the Phoenix Blood Spear, 99 miniature blood spears condensed!

This was the special technique laid down by the ancient senior supreme elder that had forged the Phoenix Blood Spear. That senior supreme elder had fused 999 drops of phoenix blood into the Phoenix Blood Spear. Every drop of phoenix blood was capable of transforming into a spear, finally forming a great array with the principles of nine through nine returning to one. This was also the Phoenix Blood Spear's greatest killing move. When Lin Ming had been at the fifth stage of Life Destruction, he had relied on this move to jump ranks and defeat the Four Layered Heavens Ninefall Huo Yanguang.

However, in order to save strength, Lin Ming had only used 99 of these blood spears. As these 99 small spears swirled together, they formed a crimson storm. Wherever this storm visited, a deluge of infernal energy would appear!

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Six black-clothed men were slaughtered by these blood spears. After the encirclement was torn apart, Lin Ming's killing speed rose to another level. He was able to kill a person in just three steps!

After the six black-clothed men died, their blood was drawn out by the 99 small spears. Their energy seemed to have been sucked away by the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Although they were all top grade saint artifacts, the might that Lin Ming's spear was able to display in his hands was countless times more formidable than what those 18 people were able to do.

In just several breaths of time, 11 out of the 18 people had been killed!

"You damned freak..." The black-clothed man in the lead was actually able to produce a trace of fear.

This caused Lin Ming to sigh at the reality that this Illusionary God Combat Array was able to reproduce. But, this was because this black-clothed man had once been a genius, a true powerhouse of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, and all of his information had been recorded in this killing array. The entirety of this simulacrum had come from a true living person.

"Go die!" The black-clothed man actually combusted his blood essence as he prepared to release his final attack.

However, Lin Ming was far faster. The Phoenix Blood Spear shot forwards and instantly pierced through the black-clothed man's throat. With a sweep of spear light, the other six people were also killed!

All 18 people were cleanly slaughtered.

Lin Ming's kill count had reached 616!

"They're all dead... they were all killed..."

As the young disciples saw these 18 people die, some of there were stunned, unable to produce a response. They knew that it would be difficult for Lin Ming to rush through the Illusionary God Combat Array. They also knew that after killing 500 people, it would become more and more difficult. Still, this difficulty surpassed even their wildest imaginations. 18 people combining attacks, each with their own domain and each with their own top grade saint artifact.

Even though it was already difficult to such a degree, Lin Ming had still killed them in a short period of time without the least bit of injury to himself!

"If it is already so difficult after killing 600 people, then what about slaughtering 700 or even 800? What about slaughtering 900 or even completing the Thousand Slaughter? Is there anyone that can actually overcome that hurdle?" The Illusionary God Combat Array increased to another difficulty level every 100 people. This was because within this hundred, it was only the individual strength of the enemies that increased. But with every 100 enemies killed, that also meant that not only would their strength increase, but three more opponents would appear, and their combined attacks would become even fiercer.

"I feel that any one of those 18 people that Lin Ming killed is likely to be stronger than me. I fear that if I tried this, I wouldn't even be able to kill 300 opponents…"

"How could headquarters set such a bizarrely abnormal standard. This is the same as them not wanting to give the phoenix blood essence to anyone!"

In the view of the many disciples, if the Ancient Phoenix Clan set forth such a standard then that meant there would be a chance of completing it. But, the truth that they didn't know was that the reason headquarters had put forth this impossible standard was because they didn't wish to bestow upon anyone a drop of phoenix blood essence.

There wasn't anything that could be done about it – there was just too little phoenix blood essence. A God Beast was an existence situated between a World King and an Empyrean. As for the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan, they were only a Holy Land level influence; it was impossible for them to raise a true phoenix. All of the phoenix blood essence they had was obtained in the past. Before they were able to obtain more phoenix blood essence, every drop used was a drop less.

As for how the Ancient Phoenix Clan gathered phoenix blood essence, that was the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters' greatest secret. This secret was sealed deep within headquarters in order to prevent it being lost to time. In addition, only the current Patriarch and the previous Patriarchs that had abdicated and become a Highest Elder knew of it. Although Huo Violentstone was a Highest Elder, he hadn't been Patriarch before so he didn't know this secret either.

Even so, Huo Violentstone was able to approximate enough information for a guess. The phoenix blood essence should come from the remnant body of a phoenix after it went through nirvana and was burnt down by the sacred flames. As for how the Ancient phoenix Clan determined when a phoenix nirvana happened and where the remnant body would be located, this was actually a mystery. This was the greatest capital that the Ancient Phoenix Clan had to survive, and also the reason they were able to multiply into a giant sect with 100 billion clansmen.

It was more accurate to say that the Ancient Phoenix Clan weren't true descendants of a phoenix, but rather a massive sect that originated from a small group of people that had obtained a tremendous secret.

However, a phoenix's nirvana occurred only every ten million or even tens of millions of years. As for blood essence, there would only be an extremely small amount within that remnant body. Just how much blood essence could possibly be extracted each time?

Even so, this blood essence had to be saved for 10 million years and carefully divided amongst the countless true geniuses that emerged during that time. To the Patriarch, the degree of nervousness they felt when choosing who to grant a drop of phoenix blood essence to could be imagined.

As Huo Violentstone watched the images in the sky, he was silent throughout. Up until now, Lin Ming still hadn't shown a performance that was awe worthy.

But as for Duke Golden Sword, he was actually bowled over by Lin Ming. When he had killed 600 people, every following battle afterwards had been extremely difficulty. He had never fought as relaxedly as Lin Ming did.

After killing the 18 people at the start, there wasn't anything surprising that came after them. Although the opponents were a tad more powerful each time, it wasn't anything to Lin Ming. Lin Ming continued killing his way through them. Blood rained down and his kill count rapidly increased.

As for Lin Ming himself, he didn't use too much true essence. He only relied on the strength of the Phoenix Blood Spear and the small blood spears. He used 99 at the start, and then the number slowly increased to 360. At 360 small spears, the blood storm created by them was able to fill the skies, bringing with them enough power to tear apart the combined domains as well as kill off his opponents.

As long as Lin Ming was able to kill one person, killing every person behind them was much easier.

Chapter 1029 – World of Will Projection

Chapter 1029 – World of Will Projection

…

…

…

650 people, 680 people, 700 people!

As the seventh star on the portal's arch lit up, this signified that Lin Ming had cut down 700 enemies. At the same time, the number of opponents he faced at once suddenly increased to 21 people.

With every 100 people slain, the difficulty of the Illusionary God Combat Array would sharply increase. Upon reaching 600, the difficulty wasn't too great. But from going to 600 to 700, the difficulty would double!

All 21 opponents that showed up were eighth stage Life Destruction powerhouses. In the future, they would be characters that would step into Ninefall. If the 21 of them combined their strengths, uniting their combat techniques together, the pressure they placed on Lin Ming would increase by another level!

Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands, his nerves as sharp as steel wire. Up until now, he had been focusing on saving as much true essence and energy as possible. If he could use just one move to defeat his opponent then he wouldn't use a second. If he could depend on the Phoenix Blood Spear then he wouldn't need to use his own true essence.

Using various methods to reserve his strength also meant that he was limiting his combat prowess. This caused his battles to seem on the edge of danger.

And as Lin Ming was buried in this battle, he forced himself to his limit again and again. He lowered his strength and true essence usage to just the amount required, tempering his own fighting style.

After cutting down 700 enemies, every subsequent one had their own intelligence and mind, and their combat methods also came in an endlessly shifting variety. Lin Ming suspected that all of these people were once absolutely genius martial artists. When the supreme elder built the Illusionary God Combat Array, he had also used some special method to input all of these genius' information into the array formation, reproducing the glory of their past!

These energy bodies were all outstanding heroes of their own era. All of them excelled in combat, and all of them had rich experience in life or death trials. Although their cultivation was only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction, it still wasn't easy for Lin Ming to slay them in a situation where he was trying to conserve his true essence! In particular, when he went to kill someone, he would encounter the coordinated counterattack of the others; he had to be extremely careful in his movements.

But in such a brutal melee, Lin Ming also obtained enormous benefits. He was absorbing everything around him, experiencing for himself the countless fighting methods of past combat crazy geniuses.

730 people…

740 people…

750 people…

Although the opponents past 700 were more powerful than those that had come before, none of them were able to stop Lin Ming's footsteps. He killed his way through the crowd of opponents until he had finally cut down 800 in total!

At this time, from the point when Lin Ming had entered the Illusionary God Combat Array, nearly six hours had passed.

“800 Slaughter!”

As everyone outside looked at the light screen in the sky, all of them gulped. They had discovered that their thoughts of the Illusionary God Combat Array had been far too simple. Not to mention that Lin Ming was undergoing a frigid battle inside, even they who were watching from the outside felt their minds strained as they lay witness to this never ending battle.

“Mm? That person is… Ninefall cultivation!”

After killing 800 people, Lin Ming now faced 24 opponents at once. And among them was a single Ninefall powerhouse!

Lin Ming was currently 29 years old, so his opponent was naturally also 29 years old. What sort of concept was a 29 year old Ninefall martial artist? That was a cultivation speed almost the same as Yan Littlemoon’s. Although Yan Littlemoon had the appearance of a young girl, the truth was that she was 27 years old. She would soon step into Eightfall, and she would reach Ninefall when she was 28 or 29 years of age.

For such a monstrous genius with an amazingly high cultivation speed, even if their strength couldn’t exceed Yan Littlemoon’s because of the difference in their bloodlines, the difference was probably not too far off.

After cutting down 800 people, the crowd of enemies he faced now could be called truly terrifying!

As these 24 opponents appeared, they didn’t immediately attack. Instead, they carefully observed Lin Ming. Their eyes didn’t seem like those of an energy body that didn’t possess life. Instead, a vibrant intelligence glimmered behind their pupils. They were looking for Lin Ming’s weakness.

As one went further into the Illusionary God Combat Array, the opponents would become increasingly intelligent. At the very start, the energy forms that the Illusionary God Combat Array produced seemed no different from puppets that didn’t have a mind of their own.

Thus, they didn’t understand anything that was happening. But now, nearing the end, these opponents all had varied mystical combat methods. Their attacks were cunning and filled with guile, and their defenses were tightly guarded. These were extremely difficult opponents!

“It looks like what I’ve heard before wasn’t wrong. The Illusionary God Combat Array is a special memory-type array formation system. The world inside is a projection of a will world. Every genius that enters is recorded by the array formation. Now, the opponents that Lin Ming has to face are all true geniuses that were recorded down inside the array formation’s memory. If any one of these people were to be placed in the 72 branch palaces, they would be extremely outstanding characters, leaders of their own generation. If they went to somewhere like Saint Artifact Pavilion, they would even be able to take their own top grade saint artifact!”

The one who spoke was White Daohong. He had also rushed through the Illusionary God Combat Array several times in the past. But, for him to have an achievement like killing 700 or even 600 people, that was simply impossible. He could only feel powerless and bitter in the face of such a hurdle. Thus, the opponents White Daohong faced inside were usually energy form puppets that the Illusionary God Combat Array produced, beings without a mind of their own. Their fighting techniques were rigid and they were easy to kill. There was no way to compare them with the opponents that Lin Ming was currently facing.

“800 Slaughter… this brat has finally reached this step. In the past when I was at the Divine Transformation realm, I was also stranded here. At the end, I managed to kill 882 people, but I never managed to break through 900 people. It looks like this brat Lin Ming is still holding himself back, so surpassing me shouldn’t be a problem for him. However, after 900 people, that is when the true difficulty begins!”

Huo Violentstone thought out loud. And as he spoke, Lin Ming began fighting these 24 opponents.

Woosh –

As 24 people attacked him together, all of their attacks locked onto Lin Ming's vital points. At 600 people, Lin Ming was still able to rely on his extraordinary speed to dodge through the gaps produced by the difference in weapon speeds. But now, after slaying 800 opponents, all of these attacks were like bolts of lightning, far too difficult to avoid. He immediately fell into a siege on all sides.

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. With a loud shout, the gold battle spirit in his spiritual sea howled out, forming a world of will projection around him.

A gold battle spirit's world of will was able to suppress the real world to an extent. When one's will was formidable enough, they could pour their will into anything within their world of will, making it indestructible and impenetrable.

For instance, the air and heaven and earth origin energy within the world of will projection.

If he fused his will with the air, he could make the air as hard as divine steel, crushing to death all enemies that stepped into his world of will.

If he poured his will into the heaven and earth origin energy, he could cause it to become as wild and fiery as a volcano, making it so that enemies couldn't use it.

Peng! Peng!

In front of Lin Ming, two sword lights were directly blown up by a single thought from him!

Although it seemed as if Lin Ming had only glanced at the two sword lights to destroy them, the truth was that in that brief flash, he had disturbed the composition of origin energy that served as the foundation for the sword lights, causing them to not be cohesive anymore and naturally disperse. Such a move wasn't light on Lin Ming's consumption of soul force.

Then, Lin Ming took advantage of this opportunity he created by ripping apart the two attacks, and flushed out.

Chasing Thunder!

Without using the energy attack of the Phoenix Blood Spear, Lin Ming directly used his true essence. Although Chasing Thunder couldn't compare with the might of the nine through nine rebirthed to one array formation in the Phoenix Blood Spear, in terms of speed it was far faster. At this moment, what Lin Ming needed the most was speed!

Ca!

There was a flash of purple light, a saber-using black-clothed man was directly stabbed through the stomach by Lin Ming. A flash of lightning swept over him, instantly crushing his dantian into pieces. The black-clothed man died where he stood.

After Lin Ming instantly killed one person, he took this chance to kill another. However, he was blocked by others and forced away by their attacks. But, the wave of electricity still surged over that second person, causing their entire body to be briefly paralyzed.

This brief moment was all Lin Ming needed.

Purple Lion Thunder Source!

Roar!

The Heretical God Sprout's second thunder leaf began to shine with a blazing light. With a loud lion's roar, a purple lion shot out like a bolt of lightning. With the support of the gold battle spirit, the purple lion's speed instantly reached an unbelievable degree, a velocity so fast that even the surrounding space twisted!

Puff!

The purple lion turned into a bolt of light that broke into the second black-clothed man's body, searing his organs and instantly killing him!

Although he had killed two people in the blink of an eye, Lin Ming's battle in this brief moment was not easy at all. If his response had been slightly slower or if his attacks didn't connect correctly, then the results would have been drastically different. After slaying 800 people, the enemies Lin Ming faced had slowly begun to truly threaten him. He had no choice but to reveal more and more of his strength, consuming more energy in the process.

Lin Ming began to admire the Battle King that had completed the Thousand Slaughter 40,000 years ago. Completing the Illusionary God Combat Array's Thousand Slaughter was much more difficult than how Lin Ming imagined it would be. Although Lin Ming was still holding back, he expected that once he had slain 900 people and neared the Thousand Slaughter, the enemies he faced would be far more terrifying. In order to confront them he would have to fight with everything he had.

The Illusionary God Combat Array's Thousand Slaughter surpassed even the 18 Hells of Flame's seventh level in difficulty. There was a reason that only one person in the Ancient Phoenix Clan had managed to overcome this pass in over 40,000 years!

It had to be known that the Ancient Phoenix Clan had over 100 billion clansmen. In 40,000 years, over a trillion geniuses had probably emerged. And among these geniuses were countless ones that had come from great noble families, and also countless ones that had gone through epic adventures and encountered unbelievable lucky chances. But even then, in front of completing the Thousand Slaughter, all of these countless geniuses had been defeated!

After killing two people, Lin Ming immediately felt the pressure on him reduce by a great amount. He combined his attacks with the gold battle spirit and easily followed up by killing a third, fourth, and fifth person.

After killing the eighth person, a third of the 24 man formation had been killed off. The combined combat technique completely shattered! Following that was a scene of massacre. Lin Ming put forth all kinds of moves and killed one after another until all 24 had died!

From killing 800 to killing 900, there would only be four waves of enemies. Lin Ming had exterminated a wave and clearly had plenty of strength left over. No one suspected that he would have trouble slaying 900 enemies.

“I never thought that Junior-apprentice Brother Lin would have such achievements in the Concept of Thunder!”

“He has a dual-attribute physique. His compatibility with the Thunder Laws must be beyond our imaginations!”

Like this, Lin Ming slaughtered wave after wave, all the way until he cut down the 890th person. He easily surpassed Huo Violentstone’s past results.

At this time, the number of opponents he faced at once increased by three yet again, turning into 27!

27 was originally three sets of nine. This numeral it itself contained a truth of the world that was difficult to describe.

As long as he could pass through this checkpoint of 900 people, he would reach the Thousand Slaughter!

Chapter 1030 – The Power of Laws

Chapter 1030 – The Power of Laws

…

…

…

After reaching the 900 Slaughter, 27 opponents appeared. And, among these opponents, a third of them were ninth stage Life Destruction masters. If they were placed within the 72 branch palaces, their talent would far surpass that of Lu Xiaoyun!

With their domains, top grade saint artifacts, and combat experience that lay at the pinnacle, when all of these conditions were added together, the difficulty of overcoming them could be imagined!

And after these 27 people appeared, light began to shimmer beneath their feet. This light formed a series of strange symbols that linked up into a pattern, like ripples across a lake surface.

Underneath the feet of these 27 people, there were actually three postcelestial dao diagrams that had formed!

These three dao diagrams were divided into three different parts. They were the pillars of a giant sphere that surrounded Lin Ming. Each dao diagram had a total of seven sections, and the shining runes that lay at these seven directions were red, yellow, orange, green, cerulean, blue, and purple. And, in the center was a white and black yin yang symbol, forming a complete eight trigrams design.

The 27 people were divided into three groups of nine and were surrounding Lin Ming.

Red, yellow, orange, green, cerulean, blue, and purple represented seven different types of origin energy: the elements of fire, earth, metal, wood, water, thunder, and wind.

Red was fire, yellow was earth, orange was metal, green was wood, cerulean was wind, blue was water, and purple was thunder!

In addition, with the black and white in the center, black represented yin and white represented yang!

Metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, thunder, yin, and yang were nine different energies. Nine symbolized the extreme of all numbers, and three diagrams represented the truth that three gave birth to all life, three was the beginning of all existence!

Lin Ming was instantly vigilant, his expression solemn. These people at 900 Slaughter were actually so powerful! All of them were geniuses with talent far beyond White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun, and they had also formed a great formation, multiplying their attack power!

And above Totem Tower's square, the disciples of the three branch palaces could see for themselves just how terrifying this sort of battle formation was.

Even though they didn't know how Lin Ming would manage to break through this giant battle formation, just thinking back to 40,000 years ago aroused a deep respect in their heart, respect towards the Battle King who had completed the Thousand Slaughter.

"This is simply a hurdle that no person can pass!"

"It is indeed too difficult. But, 40,000 years ago, wasn't there a senior that managed to rush all the way through? I really have no idea just how he accomplished that!"

"I also thought that Lin Ming completing the Thousand Slaughter would be no different from playing a game, but now I know just how freakishly difficult the Thousand Slaughter actually is!"

As the disciples of the three branch palaces were talking, Lin Ming had already started fighting with the 27 enemies.

The 27 people each displayed their own cultivation method. Lin Ming then discovered that each person's cultivation method matched with the rune element underneath their feet on the postcelestial dao diagrams. The one that trained in fire-attribute cultivation methods stood on the corresponding fire rune and the one that trained in thunder-attribute cultivation methods stood on the corresponding thunder rune!

"This is…"

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. As he saw these three postcelestial dao diagrams rush towards him, he poured his true essence into the Phoenix Blood Spear and thrust out!

A dark crimson blood stream emerged from the Phoenix Blood Spear. This crimson blood stream swirled up into a massive red storm formed of 999 small crimson spears. Each small spear contained near-infinite infernal energy and heavenly glory!

Bang!

The small blood spears gathered into a great surging torrent that smashed into the three postcelestial dao diagrams. Blood red light and infernal energy erupted, but the postcelestial dao diagrams didn't shake at all. The 27 people still shot towards Lin Ming!

"How fierce! They actually managed to block the attack of the Phoenix Blood Spear!"

"This is bad for Lin Ming. The Phoenix Blood Spear is a top grade saint artifact nearing a transcendent saint artifact! Its striking power is equivalent to an extreme master's, but now, the Phoenix Blood Spear is useless against the array formation created by these 27 people. In order to kill them he will need a far greater strength!"

"If even the Phoenix Blood Spear's nine through nine return to one array formation isn't enough, just what can Lin Ming still do?"

The disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace were worried for Lin Ming. A top grade saint artifact was enough for a martial artist to use until the late Divine Transformation realm; their strength was incomparable. When Lin Ming had defeated Huo Yanguang, he had relied on the power of the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. The Phoenix Blood Spear was indeed powerful, but even though he galvanized this weapon with all his strength, he still didn't manage to break through the three postcelestial dao diagrams. This wasn't because he lost in strength, but because he lost in Laws. These three postcelestial dao diagrams were simply far too exquisite. Metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, thunder, yin, yang, these nine different Concepts complemented and supported each other, their might multiplying!

And on Lin Ming's side, the Phoenix Blood Spear's nine through nine return to one array formation that formed the crimson storm actually required comprehension of the Concept of Blood to fully utilize it. However, Lin Ming's understanding towards the Concept of Blood was lacking, thus it was inevitable that he couldn't break through the postcelestial dao diagrams.

However, Lin Ming did not panic. He didn't decide to use the grandmist martial intent, but decided to use another method to deal with this challenge.

He drew backwards and gave a loud shout as he opened the Heretical God Force to the limit! In that moment, the ubiquitous fire origin energy of Fire Spirit Star was gathered up by Lin Ming, forming a massive funnel. The fire origin energy gathered together, causing a dazzling blue lotus to bloom into full glory in front of Lin Ming!

This was a move that Lin Ming had never used before, and also a killing move that he had created!

Lin Ming had studiously meditated in Totem Tower for an entire year. Then, in the 18 Hells of Flame he had also mastered his insights. He had combined the first three levels of the Fire Concepts together and had deeply ingrained the Law runes and postcelestial dao diagrams into his very bones.

After that, when he crossed into the seventh stage of Life Destruction he had withstood the baptism of Laws from a three mile wide origin energy cloud. Then, he had meditated for two days afterwards, thoroughly digesting these Laws.

As he diligently perceived all of this, Lin Ming hadn't been playing around, but had instead perceived a killing move based on the Fire Laws!

Before Lin Ming had opened the Gate of Opening, he had already used the memories of the soul fragments he absorbed and combined his understandings from them to form his self-created style. And now, after opening the Gate of Opening, his perception had leapt into the top echelons of the Divine Realm, and it had become even easier to create his own techniques!

The attack styles he created certainly couldn't compare with those created by supreme elders, but they were absolutely more suited to himself. At this time, he slashed out with his spear and the earthshaking howl of a spear resounded through the world. A blinding, flaming beam of light shot up, lighting up the entire sky as if it were a pillar that supported the heavens. Then, this beam of light shot forth, piercing through the center of that vivid blue lotus.

After Lin Ming understood how matter had formed, he fully grasped the essence of the first three Concepts of Fire. In terms of achievements in Laws, he was incomparable to how he was a year ago! Even Divine Transformation realm geniuses like White Daohong and Lu Xiaoyun could not compare with Lin Ming when it came to comprehension of the first three levels of the Concept of Fire!

And comprehension of Laws was an extremely important standard in determining a martial artist's potential strength. Since Lin Ming had comprehended the Laws to such a degree, it certainly wasn't solely for bragging rights and to show off. Rather, he was able to clearly transform it into combat strength of his own.

At that time, it was like another sun had appeared within the Illusionary God Combat Array, lighting up the entire world with a lustrous glow. The spear light brought with it an unstoppable momentum. It tore through the wild earth, cutting a massive canyon into the ground. Countless stones shattered into powder, filling up the air!

This spear strike was the strongest attack that Lin Ming had displayed in his 14 years of cultivating martial arts!

Bang!

The spear light smashed into a postcelestial dao diagram. Although it had only struck a single postcelestial dao diagram, the impact was actually withstood by all three of them. In that moment, time itself came to a standstill. Between the heavens and earth, there was nothing but the endless sky above, the earth-rupturing spear light, and those three postcelestial dao diagrams.

The rapidly spinning postcelestial dao diagrams suddenly trembled and came to an immediate stop. As for the point that Lin Ming attacked, that was the center of the formation, representing yin and yang of the primal chaos. The two martial artists standing there suddenly spat out great mouthfuls of blood. The shining runes underneath their feet flickered, as if the entire formation was also a little bit off from collapsing altogether!

Lin Ming's eyes condensed. The gold battle spirit sleeping in his spiritual sea shot outwards.

"Break for me!"

A strong will burst out, pouring into the yin and yang lights at the center of the formation, destroying the power of Laws there!

With the blue lotus spear light attack, in addition to the will projection of his gold battle spirit, besides the grandmist space, Lin Ming had already displayed his greatest strengths!

And this strength had finally torn apart the postcelestial dao diagrams, exposing Lin Ming's opponents to his full attack power!

"Die!"

How could Lin Ming let this chance go? He instantly opened the Gate of Wonder and used Mystic Lightning Shade, increasing his speed to the limit.

The Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands thrust forth!

Penetrating Rainbow!

The power of fire formed from the fusion of three Concepts mixed together with the power of thunder. A furious and violent explosion broke out. The two martial artists that were already severely wounded by Lin Ming's last attack didn't have the ability to resist such an attack. They vomited one last mouthful of blood as their entire bodies were torn apart in the ensuing explosion, their bodies instantly disintegrating on the spot.

Of the 27 people, two of them had been killed by Lin Ming. The grand formation of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, thunder, and wind, was broken apart by Lin Ming!

"He broke through!"

"Too strong! Even the Phoenix Blood Spear's own nine through nine return to one great array formation wasn't able to do it! Lin Ming relied on just his own energy to break through! Now that two people have died, the array formation can no longer be maintained! Lin Ming has won!"

"What Lin Ming used was the Fire Laws, and that is likely a move he created himself! That's right, from the first moment Lin Ming entered the Illusionary God Combat Array, he hadn't used the power of his true Fire Laws!"

Chapter 1031 – The One Thousandth Person

Chapter 1031 – The One Thousandth Person

…

…

…

No matter how powerful the opponents were that appeared after slaying 900 people, Lin Ming relied on his attainments in the Concept of Fire to tear that triple postcelestial dao diagram array formation apart!

This self-created martial skill was called the Blue Lotus Flame Dance. It was a killing move that combined the first three Concepts of the Fire Laws: the Concepts of Burning Heat, Annihilation, and Creation. It was also Lin Ming's current strongest attack.

Once the nine essence array formation was shattered, it was much easier for Lin Ming to kill the others. This array formation attack method was no longer a threat to Lin Ming, and Lin Ming using the Blue Lotus Flame Dance was enough to instantly kill the martial artists that appeared.

Peng!

Lin Ming fell from the sky, and a torrent of flames engulfed the enemy's sword light. A spear light thrust out like a viper and tore a blue-clothed martial artist's dantian to shreds, immediately killing him!

At the same time, the martial artists near the one that had died raised their weapons, ready to take advantage of this moment to attack. Unfortunately, now that the dao diagrams were broken, their attacks were no longer able to seal off all of his escape routes. Lin Ming used his extreme speed and cut through all the incoming attacks like a bird through a storm of blades.

He flash stepped in front of a purple-robed martial artist, and before that purple-robed martial artist had time to respond, the Phoenix Blood Spear was already sweeping outwards. 999 small spears shot out, filling the purple-robed martial artist with holes!

Another two enemies had died!

The more opponents Lin Ming killed, the faster he was able to kill them and the easier it became. At the end, he casually slaughtered them. Finally, these 27 people had been completely cut down by Lin Ming!

Finished! Lin Ming let out a deep breath, and at this time, light shined in front of him, signaling the approach of new opponents.

This group was comprised of 27 people, and the postcelestial dao diagrams had been swapped for another version. Moreover, 12 of these people possessed a Ninefall cultivation!

Every new batch of enemies in the Illusionary God Combat Array would be stronger than the last!

The disciples outside sucked in a breath of cold air. This was simply too abnormal. There wasn't even time for Lin Ming to catch his breath!

"This is simply an unreasonable and impassable test. And if Lin Ming is having so much trouble, how can the average person withstand it?"

"No joke. Is this really a trial meant for humans? I couldn't even defeat one of them, much less when they form an array formation together!"

"It can only be said that there is always a higher heaven, a higher existence. 40,000 years ago, wasn't there also a senior known as the Battle King who passed this trial?"

A Divine Transformation realm martial artist suddenly said. Not many people knew the real name of the Battle King. In fact, most disciples only knew that there was some top character that had managed to complete the Thousand Slaughter 40,000 years ago. But as for what that person's name was, it was simply a mystery to most of them.

"So the senior was called Battle King? Where is he now? If he was so kick ass 40,000 years ago, then he must have been some extreme character, but the current Patriarch isn't him, right? I have never heard the Patriarch being referred to as the Battle King before. If this Battle King was so awesome, how come he wasn't able to become the Patriarch?"

A disciple suddenly asked. Indeed, this question also echoed in everyone's heart. Why did the Battle King not become the Patriarch?

Moreover, over these last tens of thousands of years, no one had heard of any other achievements of the Battle King, nor did they see any totem stones that he had left behind. Did this person perish somewhere? If such a stupendous genius were to have fallen, then that would truly be a pity.

As the three branch palaces' disciples discussed, Monarch Sweetyfox and Duke Golden Sword were listening in with strange and uneasy complexions.

In truth, the Battle King was indeed rarely mentioned in the history of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, and this was because there had been a deliberate effort to dilute and erase his name.

The two envoys cautiously peeked over at Huo Violentstone. They feared that Huo Violentstone would be sullen at hearing discussion of the Battle King. This was because the Battle King had extremely poor relations with many high level figures of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, and this included even Huo Violentstone. This was also the reason that the two of them found it taboo to speak of the Battle King…

But, they didn't think that Huo Violentstone actually wouldn't avoid this matter. Instead, the Highest Elder coldly coughed and spoke with a caustic and derisive tone, "Crimson

Strifecloud cannot be considered someone of our Ancient Phoenix Clan, so he certainly would not succeed the position of Patriarch. He is the 196th son of the Crimson Light World's current World King. That person has had an extremely high compatibility with the Fire Laws since the day he was born. 40,000 years ago, in order for our Ancient Phoenix Clan to curry favor with the Crimson Light World's World King, the Patriarch chose his most outstanding daughter, a little princess with the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, and married her off to Crimson Strifecloud. Afterwards, Crimson Strifecloud stayed in the Ancient Phoenix Clan for a period of time, and even participated in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial at headquarters. At that time, when Crimson Strifecloud rushed through the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, all other geniuses of my Ancient Phoenix Clan were completely swept away by him! No one was able to come close to comparing with him! It might as well have been described as a crane amongst chickens!

"Can you imagine that? In the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan, out of 100 billion people, there was not a single genius that was able to stand tall and proud in front of Crimson Strifecloud, because they did not have the courage or qualifications to do so!"

As Huo Violentstone spoke to here, he seemed to reminisce about the past, a bit emotional. The Crimson Strifecloud he spoke of was the true name of the Battle King.

40,000 years ago, Huo Violentstone had also been one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's geniuses. But, to achieve the Thousand Slaughter within the Illusionary God Combat Array... such a feat left him feeling impotent and frustrated. He couldn't imagine just how Crimson Strifecloud had managed to pass it!

He took a deep breath and humorlessly said, "And, the greatest mockery of all is that all the high level figures of the Ancient Phoenix Clan at that time actually constantly praised and kissed the ass of that Crimson Strifecloud as he went through the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. They personally delivered the primordial yin and bloodline strength of our little princess to him, and then cheered as he stepped over all of the geniuses of our clan. Finally, they also gave him a massive amount of resources. So, tell me, isn't that just so cheap and pathetic?"

No one ever imagined that Huo Violentstone would suddenly say such words. The high level figures of 40,000 years ago had a background that could scare everyone else to death. Who would dare agree with Huo Violentstone's words?

"Hehe, it was truly pathetic. In fact, even they thought they were pathetic themselves. But, there was nothing that could be done. He was the son of the Crimson Light World's World King! The Crimson Light World's World King, do you know who that is? The Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters are based at the Crimson Light World. Since they are in the Crimson Light World, they naturally must lower their heads and bow before him; that is all normal! And now, there are many high level figures in the Ancient Phoenix Clan that were once the pursuers of the little princess. None of you can imagine just how beautiful and talented she was! Not even calling her a 10,000 year proud daughter of heaven would do her justice! But... all of her courters were only able to stare on helplessly as she was married to Crimson Strifecloud! And, in a bridal chamber that the Ancient Phoenix Clan specially prepared themselves, he obtained the little princess' primordial yin as well as the power of her bloodline, hehehahahaha!"

Although Huo Violentstone was laughing, his laughter was actually cold and maddening. The martial artists around him all shuddered in fear. All of them couldn't help but wonder, was Huo Violentstone also one of the little princess' pursuers? Of course, asking this was the same as asking to die.

Huo Violentstone was silent for a moment, then he said, "Crimson Strifecloud received all the wealth and resources he could hold, he received glory and honor, and then he proceeded to run away without wiping his ass. All of those people that had been trampled by Crimson Strifecloud slowly became the current high level figures of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Don't you think that's pathetic? Don't you think that's miserable? Don't you think that's unbelievable? How about it, do you feel the grand image you've built up of all those extreme top characters of the Ancient Phoenix Clan loudly toppling in front of you?"

Huo Violentstone spoke without reserve or care. Indeed, there was nothing he needed to worry about. With his rank, besides some Highest Elders that had once been the Patriarch, no one would dare to say or do anything to him.

However, the disciples of the three branch palaces were left dumbfounded by these words. They didn't even notice that Lin Ming had started to fight the second wave of enemies in the Illusionary God Combat Array.

This period of unknown history that Huo Violentstone explained truly left these low level disciples shocked. In their minds, the top characters of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were supreme elders with the power to move seas and mountains. They never imagined that in their youth, there was also a time when they were as cowardly and shameful as turtles. And to them, the Ancient Phoenix Clan was vast and had an unfathomably deep foundation, able to pierce through the heavens themselves. But now, it seemed that in the face of a higher power, the Ancient Phoenix Clan had no choice but to grovel on their hands and knees.

"No wonder we haven't heard much about this Battle King. It's because the current high level figures of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were stepped over by this Battle King, and the little princess they fancied was also taken away by him. How could they not hate him? If it were me, I wouldn't want this issue ever mentioned again either."

"No kidding. Crimson Strifecloud must have taken away a considerable amount of resources from our Ancient Phoenix Clan, enough that it can make anyone's eyes turn red with envy!"

Several disciples discussed in secret with true essence sound transmissions.

"I wonder, just where is this Crimson Strifecloud person now?"

Many disciples couldn't help but wonder. And, Huo Violentstone seemed to see through their thoughts. He said, "Crimson Strifecloud is now the Crimson Dragon Envoy of the Crimson Light World. If he visited the Ancient Phoenix Clan now, even the Patriarch would have to personally welcome him. A Dragon Envoy can one day control a small world that belongs in the domain of the Crimson Light Great World. That is a truly extreme character!"

Crimson Dragon Envoy, Crimson Strifecloud, son of a World King, also known as the Battle King!

Moreover, he had once married the 10,000 year proud daughter of heaven of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

All of this information left the martial artists present sick with envy, especially that he had married the little princess. Not only did she have the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, but she was also beautiful. How could it not be a wonderful matter to take her primordial yin?

Unfortunately, everyone's destiny was different. Any envy they felt was useless.

At this time, Lin Ming had actually reached the last wave in the Illusionary God Combat Array. After killing them, Lin Ming would finally face the Thousand Slaughter!

"Shatter the formation!"

This wave had 18 ninth stage Life Destruction masters. However, after their nine essence array formation was broken by Lin Ming, Lin Ming took this chance while the formation was disrupted and killed two enemies with lightning speed. After those two died, the overall situation was already decided!

Lin Ming saved as much true essence as possible as he killed off the enemies in this wave one at a time.

"It's over!"

"Now it's time for the Thousand Slaughter. Will 30 opponents appear this time?"

Everyone's hearts were filled with anticipation. They wanted to see if Lin Ming could complete the Thousand Slaughter, and just how he would do so. But, what surprised them was that no enemies appeared. It seemed as if the Illusionary God Combat Array was giving Lin Ming a long period of time to rest, around a quarter hour.

Lin Ming hadn't used up too much energy to begin with, and he also had the Gate of Healing and Ancient Phoenix bloodline supporting him. In a quarter hour, he had more or less recovered most of his strength. And at this time, the space in front of Lin Ming twisted, and countless rays of light gathered together, forming into a man that was holding a great sword in one hand.

This man wore red armor with a purple cape fluttering behind him. He was tall and his shoulders were broad, his aura filled with energy!

“Mm? There’s just one opponent?”

Lin Ming, along with everyone else watching, was stunned. They all thought that there would be 30 opponents; none of them expected that there would only be a single person!

And in front of the disciples of the three branch palaces, Huo Violentstone suddenly shook. His eyes widened and a sharp light filled with naked hostility flashed in his eyes!

“Crimson Strifecloud! That person is actually Crimson Strifecloud!”

Lin Ming’s opponent was the Battle King of 40,000 years ago who had once completed the Thousand Slaughter!

Chapter 1032 – Old Sorrows, New Hate

Chapter 1032 – Old Sorrows, New Hate

…

…

…

“What!? Crimson Strifecloud!?”

“The Battle King! He is fighting the Battle King!?”

As Huo Violentstone spoke, the jaws of the all the martial artists present dropped to the floor, greatly shocked.

“I never thought that Lin Ming’s opponent would actually be Crimson Strifecloud!” Huo Violentstone stared at the phantom figure of the Battle King reflected in the fire spirit mirror. His eyes shot open, and fire seemed to pour out from his heated gaze. He never thought that everything would line up in such a coincidental manner!

“Yes… in the past when Crimson Strifecloud rushed through the Illusionary God Combat Array, he was also 29 years old. That is why he has appeared as Lin Ming’s opponent!”

A rookie disciple could attend their first Ancient Phoenix smelting trial anytime before they were 33 years of age. But, the most common age was between 28 and 31 years. This was because at that period of time, most martial artists were beginning to form their comprehension of the Fire Laws, and their cultivation would also be at the seventh, eighth, or ninth stage of Life Destruction. If they attended the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial in this period, it would have the best effects in enhancing their comprehensions of Laws.

If they came too early, their comprehensions would be lacking and the benefits they gained would be limited. However, if they came too late, their foundation would be far more settled and the benefits they gained would be far less.

Thus, Crimson Strifecloud and Lin Ming had both rushed through the Illusionary God Combat Array at the same time. It could be called a coincidence, but also the truth.

And the Illusionary God Combat Array would record the information of every person that entered, and would then be able to produce a perfect energy form simulacrum of them. Lin Ming and Crimson Strifecloud were of the same age, so it was natural for them to encounter each other.

This was an unrivalled powerhouse of 40,000 years in the past, duking it out with the current top talent!

"Who is Crimson Strifecloud? He was the Battle King of 40,000 years ago, the son of a World King, the current Crimson Dragon Envoy of Crimson Light World! His status, his power, his influence, all of it surpasses the current Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan! When such a character was young, just how powerful would they have been?"

It had to be known that many of the current high level figures of the Ancient Phoenix Clan had once been rolled over by the Battle King. The disparity was far too obvious!

"Can Lin Ming win? His opponent is the Battle King!"

"I think it's over. This Battle King is too kick ass, he is the son of a World King!"

"It really is hard to win, but that doesn't mean there isn't a chance. For better or worse, Lin Ming is still the best talent to appear in my Ancient Phoenix Clan for the last few tens of thousands of years!"

"How laughable. I once thought that Lin Ming would be able to smoothly complete the Thousand Slaughter, but now I can see just how abnormal the difficulty of it is. Moreover, Lin Ming's Thousand Slaughter is far harder to complete than the Battle King's Thousand Slaughter from 40,000 years ago!"

40,000 years ago, Crimson Strifecloud was someone who had defeated his opponents to achieve the Thousand Slaughter. But now, Lin Ming had to face Crimson Strifecloud himself; the difficulty was certainly higher!

"Looking at the results, this should be an equal battle between a dragon and a tiger! If Lin Ming can really win then he will be even more freaking amazing! Even if he can't win, if he can fight with Crimson Strifecloud for several dozen rounds, that will still be enough to etch his eternal name down in the annals of history!"

As people were discussing, Lin Ming couldn't hear them within the Illusionary God Combat Array. Instead, he was carefully observing his opponent.

"Eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation?"

Lin Ming was surprised. He thought that his opponent now would be a Ninefall master, or perhaps even a Divine Sea master. He didn't think that they would only be at the eighth stage of Life Dsetruction!

An eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation at 29 years of age wasn't considered too fast for an extreme cultivating talent.

But, Lin Ming didn't underestimate his opponent. Cultivation speed wasn't everything. In this world there were countless extreme geniuses that would intentionally suppress their cultivation at the eighth stage of Life Destruction, staying there for several years. This was in order to further increase their comprehension of Laws and consolidate their foundation, so that when they stepped into Ninefall, they would undergo a greater baptism of Laws. Then they would truly be a dragon that ascended to heaven!

Perhaps this man in front of him was such a person!

“Hahaha, I never imagined that after so many years someone would finally be able to reach this step! Ancient Phoenix Clan, you fellows aren’t as shabby as I thought you were!”

Crimson Strifecloud looked at Lin Ming and guffawed. Lin Ming faintly frowned. This person’s attitude was arrogant enough, and listening to his words, he wasn’t from the Ancient Phoenix Clan either.

“Speak your name, peasant! When I completed the Illusionary God Combat Array’s Thousand Slaughter in the past, all of the so-called ‘geniuses’ that attempted the same smelting trial as me were simply nothing more than a pile of unsightly garbage, nothing but a crowd of trash! To think that they dared to call themselves the chosen prides of heavens, how ridiculous! I left behind a wisp of my divine sense to see just what genius of the Ancient Phoenix Clan would barely be able to reach here. But, I was left disappointed. For 40,000 years no one appeared, until you. You just manage to qualify for the likes of I to remember your name. Now, tell me your name!”

“Mm?” Lin Ming was surprised. From Crimson Strifecloud’s speech just now, Lin Ming was able to discern his identity. “You are the Battle King!”

“Correct! I am the Battle King, Crimson Strifecloud!” Crimson Strifecloud heartily laughed. His laughter was filled with a wild self-confidence and rampant arrogance. But, he indeed had the capital to act so recklessly!

At this time, outside of the Illusionary God Combat Array, Huo Violentstone’s hair nearly stood on end from anger! Even the air around him began to twist from a burning heat. This was the fire energy that he subconsciously released due to the extreme rage in his heart. This was a violent animosity worthy of his name!

How could he not be angry!? What Crimson Strifecloud just said was, ‘in the past, all of the so-called ‘geniuses’ that attempted the same smelting trial as me were simply nothing more than a pile of unsightly garbage, nothing but a crowd of trash! To think that they dared to call themselves the chosen prides of heavens, how ridiculous!’

And this clearly included Huo Violentstone in the same group!

"Good! Good! Very good! In this old man's life, this is the first time anyone has dared to call me trash! Very good! Crimson Strifecloud, you are a crazy bastard! I want to see just how kick ass you actually are! 40,000 years ago, you managed to trample all over our faces, but now I want to see if you still have this ability 40,000 years later!"

Huo Violentstone seemed like an erupting volcano. At this moment, anyone or anything that dared approach within three feet of Huo Violentstone would have been instantly burnt to ash!

It had to be known that the geniuses within the Illusionary God Combat Array were energy form simulacrums reproduced by the information recorded in the array formation. Even their intelligence was a copy. But, what Crimson Strifecloud had said was that he had left a wisp of his divine sense behind. In other words, the opponent Lin Ming faced was nearly the exact same as Crimson Strifecloud. And, the words he spoke also represented the true ideas of Crimson Strifecloud.

How could Huo Violentstone not be enraged? Crimson Strifecloud had swept away not just countless resources of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, but also their little princess. At that time, numerous heroic young elites wished to cut down Crimson Strifecloud's glory in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. But, the result was that they had been beaten up so badly that their mothers and fathers wouldn't have recognized them. And now, Crimson Strifecloud laughed in their faces and called them a crowd of trash.

This was the same as poking at their reverse scale, the source of all rage!

If this could be tolerated, what else could be tolerated!?

At this time, behind Huo Violentstone, Monarch Sweetyfox and Duke Golden Sword were holding their breath as they teetered on edge, careful not to exacerbate the situation.

As for Huo Highdragon and Huo Whitejade, they ruefully smiled at each other. This High Ancestor of the Huo Family was indeed just like his name. His anger was not ordinary anger!

When he was angered, even the Elders of his own family would be publicly abused and scolded. He wouldn't even care about maintaining face in front of the juniors. Now, the Crimson Strifecloud in the Illusionary God Combat Array could be described as having opened the forbidden box of shame and humiliation. How could Huo Violentstone not turn mad with rage!?

Those near him could feel that Huo Violentstone was a volcano ready to erupt at any moment. If they approached him at this time it was possible they would really eat shit; they might even become the target of some collateral anger. However, none of them dared to draw back. They could only stand where they were in utter silence.

"I pray to the heavens that Lin Ming can contend with him. At least, the manner in which he loses cannot be too ugly. He needs to last at least several dozen moves, and it would be best if he could wound Crimson Strifecloud..." Huo Highdragon gulped as he spoke to Huo Whitejade with a true essence sound transmission.

Huo Whitejade forced a smile, saying, "Yeah. Otherwise, once this old man turns angry, none of us will have a good time. Once he is angry, he doesn't distinguish between right and wrong and vents his anger on anyone close to him. It is a 100% possibility that we will be the punching bags this time. Before, the two of us have already committed a number of mistakes and screwed up some matters. If the old man is happy then he won't bother investigating these matters, but if he's angry, then both of us are done for!"

"Aiyaya, we can only hope that Lin Ming can claw back some honor for us so that the High Ancestor can calm his anger a bit. If he can do this then I'll gift him some resources from the Office of Internal Affairs in the future." Huo Highdragon said. His position was that of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's Internal Affairs Envoy.

And at this time, within the Illusionary God Combat Array, just as Lin Ming was beginning to fight, an old voice abruptly sounded out from the skies.

"Lin Ming! This old man is the Ancient Phoenix Clan's Highest Elder, Huo Violentstone! I am also the Patriarch of the Huo Family! You listen well to me. In the past, this little bastard stole our resources and wrested away the little princess of our Ancient Phoenix Clan along with her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline! In this battle, you must do everything you can to win for me! Even if you have to risk your life, you have to win at all costs! Even if you must wrestle with Buddha for a single incense stick of time, that is what you must do! If you want to become an unrivalled genius, then you must sweep away all obstacles that block your path! You must kick that Crimson Strifecloud into the ground and beat him up so that his teeth scatter over the ground! I want you to slap him so hard that not even his parents will recognize him! If you can do this then I will immediately give you the phoenix blood essence! Not just that, but resources, phoenix blood, beautiful women with pure bloodlines, anything else you desire will be yours! I will even happily lend you the Sacred Flame Testament to perceive for an entire year! The Huo Family will support you with the entirety of our strength!"

This sudden voice left Lin Ming in a daze. Ancient Phoenix Clan Highest Elder? Huo Family Patriarch, Huo Violentstone?

How… how could such a top character suddenly appear in Fire Spirit Star, and also be observing his smelting trial? Moreover, his words just now had been extremely vulgar. Especially when he said he would gift 'beautiful women with pure bloodlines'; Lin Ming didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. In his impression, Highest Elders were noble and respected characters. They quietly sat atop their lofty thrones, looking down at others, so where would one appear that was so ribald. Did this Huo Violentstone have a deep-seated grudge with Crimson Strifecloud?

But soon after, the Crimson Strifecloud in front of Lin Ming responded. He loudly laughed and said, "The one who spoke, aren't you someone from 40,000 years ago, someone referred to as the Fire Lion or something like that? I also have a tiny impression of you. I never imagined that with your strength you could actually manage to become a Highest Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. It seems that the Ancient Phoenix Clan is really in trouble. Ever since those extreme characters like Huo Burning Heaven and Xiao Daoji appeared, your Ancient Phoenix Clan has become worse with every generation."

As Crimson Strifecloud spoke, Huo Violentstone became even angrier. “Crimson Strifecloud, whether or not my Ancient Phoenix Clan is in trouble is not for the likes of you to say. Enough with the trash talk; fists speak the only truth. The opponent in front of you is my disciple. This father wants to see whether or not you will get beaten up so badly by my disciple today that not even your mother and father will recognize you!”

Crimson Strifecloud’s current status neared that of a World King. Although Huo Violentstone was far inferior, his temper was hotter than flames, and he had a fearless disposition; he simply didn’t fear offending Crimson Strifecloud. He didn’t even ask for Lin Ming’s opinion and directly became Lin Ming’s cheap master.

Lin Ming didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry.

Chapter 1033 – Intense

Chapter 1033 – Intense

…

…

…

From Huo Violentstone and Crimson Strifecloud's dialog, Lin Ming could guess that there was some major dispute between the two as well as some of the details. Huo Violentstone was clearly far worse than Crimson Strifecloud, moreover, Crimson Strifecloud wasn't someone from the Ancient Phoenix Clan. This also made it so that Huo Violentstone sincerely hoped that a disciple of the Ancient Phoenix Clan could defeat Crimson Strifecloud.

If Lin Ming could win this battle, then the advantages he could obtain from Huo Violentstone wouldn't be minor.

Of course, because of Huo Violentstone and Crimson Strifecloud's conflict, wanting to win would be even more difficult. Lin Ming's opponent was not an energy puppet that lacked a consciousness, but an energy form with a spiritual consciousness of his own.

"Haha, that old fool Huo has blown up so much. Then, let me have a good look at just what qualifications you have. A seventh stage Life Destruction to fight my eighth stage Life Destruction, you've got guts! To think that I, Crimson Strifecloud, would ever have a day where someone would jump ranks to right me! Hahaha! How interesting! Let's see if you can block 10 of my swords first!"

As Crimson Strifecloud laughed, the aura of his body began to rapidly climb, and the heaven and earth origin energy around him began to hum.

Only he had jumped ranks to defeat others, since when had others jumped ranks to challenge him? That was simply a humiliation to his immense talent! In this battle, Crimson Strifecloud also had a great advantage. If he couldn't smoothly defeat Lin Ming then that would prove that his talent was inferior to Lin Ming's. Crimson Strifecloud certainly wouldn't believe this, he wanted to roll over Lin Ming right from the get go.

Crimson Strifecloud lifted the great sword in his hand. This was also a top quality saint artifact that approached a transcendent saint artifact. When a martial artist was at the Life Destruction and Divine Sea realms, they would at most use top grade saint artifacts. Even if they managed to obtain a transcendent saint artifact or spirit artifact, it would be extremely difficult to bring out its true potential and might. Thus, they wouldn't be able to use it to its full effect.

At this moment, Crimson Strifecloud seemed like an impassable mountain. He gave off a heavy feeling that made one wish to avert their eyes from him. Even when the disciples of the three branch palaces looked at him through the fire spirit mirror, all of them felt breathless, like some energy was pressing down on them.

"Take my sword, World Razing Edge!"

Crimson Strifecloud moved. He grasped his five foot long great sword with both hands and smashed down. The desolate earth underneath him cracked, sending out 'ka ka ka' sounds as fissures spread out from around him like a spider web. The cracks in the earth were 10 feet wide, deep enough that one couldn't see where they ended!

As this sword came slashing out, everyone who looked at the sword light felt as if the sword blade was pressing against their necks, sending them into cold sweats!

Lin Ming focused his thoughts. The Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands thrust outwards!

In that moment, the heaven and earth origin energy around Lin Ming erupted like a blazing volcano. It formed a heated storm around him, and in the center of this storm, a blue lotus began blooming in radiance.

This was Lin Ming's spear move created by fusing the first three levels of the Concept of Fire, the Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

Bang!

Crimson Strifecloud's sword smashed into the blooming blue lotus in front of the Phoenix Blood Spear. Energy erupted. The powerful impact formed heart-stopping shockwaves. In the violent collision of their attacks, the barren ground beneath them began to collapse!

In that moment, the disciples of the three branch palaces could see the Illusionary God Combat Array's portal trembling. The battle of the two within actually caused the array formation to tremble!

There was already such momentum in just the first exchange of moves. It was unbelievable that this was a battle between Life Destruction powerhouses.

"Mm? Concept fusion?"

Crimson Strifecloud's face flashed with surprise. His original contempt and derision also lessened. He had great understandings of the Fire Laws as well as the guidance of his father. And yet, he could faintly feel that when he was at Lin Ming's realm, his comprehension of Laws was actually inferior to his!

How could this be?

"To think you have such attainments and skill in the Laws; you truly have the qualifications for me to take you seriously. But, that is only to treat you seriously. When I fight with my complete strength, that will be your death knell!"

"Is that so? You haven't given this your all, but neither have I. I still have moves to use, but it was only that using those techniques before would have rapidly exhausted my energy. I thought that I would have to continue on with a protracted battle in the Illusionary God Combat Array, thus I deliberately refrained from using those techniques. But now that I face you, an extreme character from 40,000 years ago, I naturally won't hold back."

Once Lin Ming opened the grandmist space, he would need a massive amount of true essence to support it. He would have to consume true essence at a ridiculous rate. Even with the Gate of Healing helping him, he still wouldn't be able to maintain it for a long time. He had thought of slaying 1100 people or even 1200 people to see where his limits lay, but now it seemed as if the Illusionary God Combat Array ended after completing the Thousand Slaughter. If so, then he naturally didn't need to reserve any strength for later.

"What? From their words, that exchange of moves just now was only a casual probing strike?"

"Lin Ming has just used his triple Concept fusion attack, that should be his strongest strike. Was he still holding back even after all that?"

After hearing the exchange between the two in the fire spirit mirror, the heroic young elites outside felt powerless and frustrated.

They had all known that Lin Ming was strong, very strong, but as to what degree of strong he was, none of them had ever seen it with their own eyes. But now, as they saw him fight with the Battle King, they finally understood that he had surpassed the level of their understanding.

Hu – !

Crimson Strifecloud moved forwards. In the barren lands, his figure vanished, leaving nothing but a series of afterimages. Wherever he went, ripples of energy would appear in space. His speed rapidly reached the peak, causing the numerous disciples looking in from the fire spirit mirror to be unable to lock onto his position.

Hu – hu – !

A strong wind was suddenly whipped up. Crimson Strifecloud's movements actually spun up several violent tornados that swept through the earth.

"Concept of Wind!"

Lin Ming’s eyebrows shot up. Crimson Strifecloud was able to utilize the powers of more than one Law. Crimson Strifecloud’s current speed was a result of the Concept of Wind. In terms of speed, the Concept of Wind and the Concept of Thunder were the fastest Concepts of the elements.

But, the Concept of Wind focused on flexibility and change, whereas the Concept of Thunder focused on absolute velocity; they were slightly different.

“The reason I was able to sweep away all geniuses of the Ancient Phoenix Clan 40,000 years ago was that every single one of my combat aspects was strong! If I selected any one of them, no one else was able to compare! Let me have a look at whether you can follow my steps. If you cannot, then just stand there and be pummeled by me!”

The speed of the Concept of Wind was renowned for its rapidly change movements. If Lin Ming couldn’t follow Crimson Strifecloud’s movements then he wouldn’t even be able to touch the hem of his robe. At that time, there was no point even thinking of fighting.

“You want to compare speed? In terms of speed, I also believe in myself.” Lin Ming’s lips curved up in a charming smile. In terms of speed, he had never met his match amongst martial artists of his level.

The Gate of Wonder opened. Golden Roc Shattering the Void and Mystic Lighting Shade began revolving together. Suddenly, between the heavens and earth, Lin Ming’s form disappeared. It was like he had dissolved into a puff of blue smoke; it was impossible to find his location.

This blue smoke joined together with Crimson Strifecloud’s tornados.

“Concept of Thunder? Concept of Space? How interesting! You have indeed surprised me. Now meet my sword!” Crimson Strifecloud shouted out loud and slashed out with his sword.

Chi!

Crimson Strifecloud's heavy sword cut down on Lin Ming's neck. However, this sword continued all the way through without leaving a single mark; it had only been an afterimage.

At the same time, Lin Ming appeared behind Crimson Strifecloud. He thrust his spear straight into Crimson Strifecloud's back. However, Crimson Strifecloud seemed to have eyes on his back. His body shifted and immediately appeared hundreds of feet away.

The two great powerhouses were each confident in their speed. Both of them launched into a barrage of high-speed attacks!

"This speed… I can't see it clearly!"

"Not just being unable to see them clearly, I can't even make out their figures. All I see are colored blurs!"

Of the disciples from the three branch palaces, most of them were rookies. This was their first time here and their cultivations were only at the Life Destruction realm. With their talent, they were barely able to see the blurs of Lin Ming and Crimson Strifecloud. These blurry images linked up into an endless stretch of phantoms; it was impossible to distinguish which one was real and which ones were fake!

There were even some Divine Sea martial artists that had to completely focus their concentration to make out just where Lin Ming and Crimson Strifecloud's positions were. However, this was only seeing them. To follow their movements was simply impossible!

"So fast! If I were there then I wouldn't even be able to see anything, so how could I fight?" An Eightfall Divine Sea powerhouse said, somewhat morosely. People like him were destined to become nothing but foils and spectators in this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. Moreover, this was their only chance to come here as rookies; it would be extremely difficult to return in the future.

"Slaughter God's Disc!"

During the high speed battle, Crimson Strifecloud chopped out with his sword, using the inherent attack of the top grade saint artifact in his hands. The Slaughter God's Disc was an array formation built within the great sword. Once it was activated, a blazing crimson red wheel flew out towards Lin Ming's neck. Several dozens of Lin Ming's afterimages were torn apart by this fiery wheel!

Lin Ming calmly twirled the Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands. 999 small blood spears formed a raging storm of death that collided with the burning wheel!

Ka ka ka!

The small blood spears were like a hail of sabers that poured onto the blazing wheel, emitting thunderclaps upon every impact.

In just a fraction of an instant, most of the 999 small blood spears shattered, turning into an endless bloody fog. As for that Slaughter God's Disc, it had been torn apart by Lin Ming's attack. A massive crack appeared on the surface and its speed had greatly reduced.

Top grade saint artifact against top grade saint artifact, it had produced an unprecedented fierce collision!

"Break!"

Lin Ming smashed his spear against the Slaughter God's Disc, pounding it into pieces. But in that moment, Crimson Strifecloud took advantage of the period when Lin Ming had used another attack on the Slaughter God's Disc and flash stepped in front of him like ghosts and demons. Crimson Strifecloud waved the heavy sword in his hands, and following that, an astonishing scene occurred. The heavy sword in Crimson Strifecloud's hands instantly divided into seven blades that attacked Lin Ming from all directions, sealing away all possible avenues of escape.

This great sword was actually formed from seven other swords!

"This weapon! It can actually be controlled by thoughts!?"

This thought cut through Lin Ming's mind like a bolt of lightning. As he watched these seven flying swords shooting at him from all sides, about to pierce through his protective true essence, his thoughts suddenly focused together.

Gold battle spirit!

Woosh!

In that moment, the gold battle spirit slumbering within Lin Ming's spiritual sea shot out from between his eyebrows. The world of will projected into reality. Within this space, everything came under the governance of Lin Ming's mind.

"Freeze!"

Lin Ming gave a loud shout and his gold battle spirit divided into seven and poured into the seven swords, forcing those rapidly shooting swords to abruptly freeze in midair!

"What? Projection of will? Gold battle spirit!?"

As Crimson Strifecloud saw the will world projection around Lin Ming that froze his swords, he was completely shocked.

This was actually a gold battle spirit!?

Chapter 1034 – Scorching Blood VS Phoenix Blood

Chapter 1034 – Scorching Blood VS Phoenix Blood

…

…

…

The technique Crimson Strifecloud used just now was called the ruling spirit art. It was a type of martial skill that was trained with a battle spirit.

Battle spirits also had corresponding martial skills. The world of the Sky Spill Continent had its legacies and inheritances cut off 100,000 years ago. Because of that, there was an extremely small number of people that possessed a battle spirit. Thus, most people of the Sky Spill Continent only used their battle spirit as an auxiliary attack. This was because they didn't know of any special martial skills that corresponded to them.

But in the Divine Realm, there were inheritances that had been passed down for hundreds of millions or even billions of years. In terms of battle spirits, they also had developed martial skills that utilized them. The ruling spirit art was one of the broadest and most important types.

The so-called ruling spirit art was a technique that used a battle spirit to rule a weapon, controlling it and sending it to kill others. There were also different ranks and grades within the ruling spirit art. If one could cultivate it to small success, then they could use a mere thought to kill someone over a thousand miles away. If one cultivated this ability to the limit, they could even use a weapon to pierce through a planet and kill someone on the other side.

The ruling spirit that Crimson Strifecloud cultivated was of an extremely high rank and grade. His usual fighting method was to use his extreme speed to confuse and mislead his opponent. Then, he would use the ruling spirit art and control the seven swords to kill his enemies. This attack was virtually impossible to predict or guard against. But now, Crimson Strifecloud's attack was directly stopped by Lin Ming's thoughts!

"Gold battle spirit, a seventh stage Life Destruction martial artist like you actually has a gold battle spirit?"

Crimson Strifecloud was inexplicably horrified. When he had rushed through the Illusionary God Combat Array, his battle spirit had only been at the formative silver level. That had already been amazing enough. But now, his battle spirit was an entire large boundary lower than Lin Ming's!

Lin Ming didn't clearly didn't practice the ruling spirit art, but even so he was able to suppress Crimson Strifecloud. This was the disparity from the difference in their levels of battle spirits!

If Lin Ming one day practiced a type of high grade ruling spirit art, he could use his battle spirit to control weapons and kill others. Or, he could even fuse Concepts and Laws into his attacks before he did so. This would cause Lin Ming's combat strength to rise to yet another level!

"For someone to possess a gold battle spirit at the Life Destruction realm, that is indeed unbelievable. It seems that I really did underestimate you. Since that's the case, let me show you my true strength. As a mere mortal, you should be proud for having pushed me to this step!"

Crimson Strifecloud wildly laughed. However, this wild and crazy tone caused Lin Ming to frown. "You really are boastful. Just where does this confidence of yours come from? Do you think just because you come from a World King Family you are a cut above everyone else? Do you think just because of that you can display such a arrogant and cocky attitude?"

“Hahaha! Yes, what you said is correct! Indeed, my bloodline is truly a cut above all others. In other words, we are a Divine Blood Family! There are countless people within the Divine Realm and they are also divided into all sorts of classes! There are mortals, royals, divine beings, and even a God Clan! Although your Ancient Phoenix Clan is called the Ancient Phoenix Clan, the truth is that you are not genuine descendent of phoenixes. If there really were 100 billion true descendants of phoenixes, then how could that still be manageable! The entire Divine Realm would likely have been occupied by your Ancient Phoenix Clan! No, you are nothing but people with the phoenix bloodline transplanted into your body. In the end, you are nothing more than mortals!”

There were certainly differences between a true phoenix descendent and someone that had the phoenix bloodline transplanted into their bodies. Ignoring the density of bloodline, a true phoenix descendant’s flesh, skeleton, muscles, organs, blood, and even their hair and nails would also originate from a true God Beast. That would be a true Divine Body. If such people established a clan and multiplied, then their bloodline would never diminish. They would forever have bodies of a true God Beast.

But, having a transplanted bloodline was different. As those with transplanted bloodlines multiplied, the power of their bloodline would also gradually dilute and weaken with time. When two people with the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline married and produced children, those children might not have the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. As for their grandchildren, their bloodlines would be even lighter.

Thus, the Ancient Phoenix Clan had to constantly transplant Ancient Phoenix blood within the bodies of their clansmen in order to guarantee the density of their bloodline.

But Crimson Strifecloud was different. Their family was a Divine Blood Family. Although their bloodline couldn’t compare with the bloodline of the Ancient Phoenix by far, his bloodline was inherently inherited through birth.

As Crimson Strifecloud spoke, all the bones throughout his body began to emit crackling noises. His body began to rise up, and all the solids muscles beneath his red armor tightened and bulged outwards as if he were about to explode out from his armor.

On his face, on his hands, everything was covered with red scales the color of blood. They shined with a cold light!

“My Crimson Light World’s World King Family bloodline is called Scorching Blood, where our blood is like fire! After transforming our bodies, we can stimulate the bloodline of our family! Our combat strength can increase by multiple times! And as for you? Can you become a phoenix? Your Ancient Phoenix Clan has developed for all this time and yet you are still only a Holy Land level sect! A World King has never appeared within your clan, and they never will! Even extreme characters like Xiao Daoji or Huo Burning Heaven are only nearing the realm of a World King. In the vast Divine Realm, they are simply nothing to speak of at all! But me, I come from a World King Family! Our family has existed for several hundreds of millions of years and we have produced three World Kings! Your bloodline is doomed to forever be inferior to mine!”

Crimson Strifecloud gave a loud shout and energy rapidly revolved through his entire body. He no longer relied on his speed and clever attacks. Now he would use his absolute strength, a strength that belonged to his bloodline!

Everyone outside was watching the scene reflected within the fire spirit.

Huo Violentstone’s face was calm like a placid like. Behind him, Huo Highdragon, Duke Golden Sword, and Monarch Sweetyfox were all suppressing a simmering rage in their hearts. As for the disciples of the three branch palaces, all of them were clenching their fists to the point of drawing blood.

No one wished to be despised and disparaged by others, especially when it involved the glory of their people!

However, if one wanted to counter these claims, they didn’t know how to do so. This was because their Ancient Phoenix Clan was indeed inferior to the Crimson Light World’s World King Family, and this had been the de facto situation for the last tens of thousands of years!

It was simply impossible to refute these claims!

They could only hope that Lin Ming could defeat Crimson Strifecloud and use absolute strength to shut him up!

Lin Ming took half a step backwards, firmly rooting himself in the ground. He seemed like an ancient tree, solid and unmoving. The nine foot nine inch Phoenix Blood Spear lay in his hands, with 999 small blood spears spinning around the barrel. His aura began to rise without end!

He faintly smiled and said, “Crimson Strifecloud, the history of my Ancient Phoenix Clan is indeed not wondrous or magnificent, but, that is not because the blood of the Ancient Phoenix isn’t strong, but because we do not have enough. Do you know how precious a single drop of phoenix blood essence is? Not even a Vice Patriarch can obtain a single drop. That is a luxury that only a Patriarch could possibly afford! If my Ancient Phoenix Clan’s clansmen were able to transplant 10 drops of phoenix blood essence each, just what degree would their bloodline reach? Do you think your so-called ‘Scorching Blood’ would be able to compare!?

“And that is only ten drops. What if there was more? On the other hand, your bloodline has already reached the limits! You are already a descendent of the Scorching Blood bloodline family. Even if you transplanted 10,000 jins of this so-called ‘Scorching Blood’ blood essence into your body, it would all be wasted!

“If you really disdain the Ancient Phoenix bloodline, then why would you specifically run over to my Ancient Phoenix Clan and marry the little princess with her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline!?

“My Ancient Phoenix Clan has received the blood of a God Beast, so how could your variation bloodlines possibly compare? If my bloodline is inferior to yours now, that is only because the density of my bloodline is inferior to yours. But in terms of quality, the Ancient Phoenix bloodline is a thousand times better than your Scorching Blood bloodline. Although my bloodline is faint, it contains infinite potential! In the future, I could possibly obtain dozens of even 100 drops of phoenix blood essence! And in a future beyond even that, I might even achieve a Phoenix Divine Body! And you? How could you ever compare!?”

Each one of Lin Ming's words was filled with energy and daring. The more he spoke, the louder his voice became, especially at the end, his voice was simply like beating great drums, the roar of a dragon! His words flooded through the world, piercing through the skies!

These words entered the hearts of all the Ancient Phoenix Clan clansmen present, causing their blood to boil with fervor. Even Huo Violentstone was moved by Lin Ming's words.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, well said!"

"Brilliant!"

The disciples of the three branch palaces couldn't help but shout out their happiness! Indeed, if Crimson Strifecloud really despised the Ancient Phoenix bloodline so much, then why would he marry the little princess of the Ancient Phoenix Clan?

This was clearly because his family's so-called 'Scorching Blood' bloodline was in truth inferior to the Ancient Phoenix bloodline. The only reason it seemed so fierce was because its density had long ago reached the limit. Thus, he needed the Ancient Phoenix bloodline to improve the quality of his own.

Of the three branch palaces' many disciples, their bloodlines were inferior to the Crimson Light World's World King Family bloodline. But, this wasn't because the Ancient Phoenix bloodline was of an inferior rank, but because their bloodline density was too low!

If they could be like Lin Ming and display a heaven-shocking talent and constantly strive for their own lucky chances, then their futures would be filled with infinite possibilities!

To a true martial artist, what they feared was not being weak in the present. Rather, what they feared was not being able to find a goal, and not being able to see what direction to go in. If they could see a bright future waiting for them ahead, they would courageously soldier onwards even if it meant untold misery and incomparable danger. They would continue with all their heart and soul, seeking out ever higher limits!

“Good! Very good!” As Crimson Strifecloud looked at Lin Ming, his eyes flashed with a sharp light. “I was mistaken. Not only do you have extraordinary talent, but you also have the heart of a true unrivalled powerhouse. It is probably because your heart of martial arts is so firm and steady that you were able to obtain a gold battle spirit at the seventh stage of Life Destruction. Further words are useless. Let us fight and confirm the truth with our own bodies!”

As Crimson Strifecloud spoke, his aura suddenly converged. Then, as if a dam had been broken down, thick killing intent surged out into the world!

The suppressive atmosphere had transformed into a pure and rich killing intent.

At this time, the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan held their breaths as they watched the fire spirit screen, their hearts filled with anxiousness. Let alone these disciples, even Monarch Sweetyfox, Duke Golden Sword, and the other high level figures were nervously sweating for Lin Ming.

Now that the battle had reached this step, it was no longer about Lin Ming completing the Thousand Slaughter. Rather, this battle concerned the glory of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

This even included Yan Littlemoon, who was conflicted about Lin Ming. As she looked at his figure in the fire spirit mirror, her eyes were wide and unblinking. Before this, she never had a good impression of Lin Ming. After all, ever since she was born, the greatest humiliation and defeat she suffered had been underneath Lin Ming’s hands. It was truly an experienced etched forever into her bones.

But just now, the words Lin Ming spoke had roused a heroic spirit in her heart that shot into the heavens. She could faintly feel that her heart had been inexplicably touched by something.

Now she also hoped that Lin Ming could win!

However, she was also deeply aware of just how terrifying Lin Ming’s opponent was!

Bang!

Crimson Strifecloud’s body blazed with burning flames. After displaying the Scorching Blood Battle Body, his striking power, physical strength, all of it had risen to a completely different degree. The rocks and dirt underneath his feet instantly evaporated, and even the space around him twisted about.

And around Crimson Strifecloud’s side, fire origin energy formed countless spiritual forms. There were birds, beasts, insects, fish, flowers, grass, and even spirit trees…

This was the fourth level Concept of the Fire Laws – Manifestation!

To comprehend the Fire Concepts to such a degree, this was a feat that all the rookie disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan could never compete with!

Chapter 1035 – Concept of Manifestation

Chapter 1035 – Concept of Manifestation

…

…

…

"That is the fourth level Concept of Fire!"

As the branch palace disciples saw fire dragons, fire snakes, fire cranes, fire golden birds, fire parasol trees, and all sorts of fire existences spin into life around Crimson Strifecloud, all of them sucked in a deep breath of cold air.

These things around Crimson Strifecloud that transformed from flames were not lifeless. Rather, they were spiritual beings with their own intelligence. They were life forms composed of living flames. In fact, these spiritual existences were not condensed by Crimson Strifecloud, but produced by fire origin energy that was controlled by the Laws.

The was the symbol of the fourth level Fire Concept – Manifestation!

Metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, thunder, these elemental Laws all had different types of Concepts for the first three levels. However, all of them shared the same fourth level Concept.

And that was… Manifestation.

After arriving at this step, energy would have life and intelligence of its own.

Fire origin energy could manifest as fiery vermillion birds or fiery crows. Thunder origin energy could combine into a thunder kirin. Earth origin energy could develop into an earthen black turtle, or earthen snake. Wind origin energy could form gale birds, great rocs, and so on!

Without having comprehended the fourth level Concept, a martial artist's true essence and energy would only be lifeless. In order for martial artists to kill an enemy, they would have to control their true essence with every attack. Without a martial artist's thoughts controlling their own true essence, it would be nothing but a pile of scattered sand without any lethal killing force.

But for someone that had comprehended the Concept of Manifestation, that was different.

Their true essence would have life. Sometimes it would scatter, sometimes it would gather, it would have endless and infinite changes. A martial artist could use their true essence to kill an enemy without the need to control it!

This type of true essence was far easier to manipulate. With just a thought, hundreds and thousands of supernatural powers could be displayed; this was almost impossible to defend against!

When two martial artists used a similar amount of energy, the one that understood the Concept of Manifestation would be able to display a far greater power. This was because their energy contained a life of its own!

"The Concept of Manifestation, Crimson Strifecloud has actually managed to comprehend the Concept of Manifestation! How can Junior-apprentice Brother Lin still fight?"

"Their speed is similar and their true essence foundation is similar. But, Crimson Strifecloud's cultivation is greater and his comprehension of the Laws is actually an entire boundary ahead. Moreover, he has the Scorching Blood Battle Body. In all other aspects Junior-apprentice Brother Lin doesn't have any advantages. I'm afraid he will lose here."

Although all the disciples present passionately wished for Lin Ming to win, they weren't too confident about whether he could truly defeat Crimson Strifecloud. Just now, Lin Ming's heroic words and daring spirit had set their blood boiling over with zeal, but in the end, Lin Ming was only speaking about how great his potential was. In terms of their current bloodline strength, he was still inferior to Crimson Strifecloud.

"Come out, Crimson Flame Dragon!"

Crimson Strifecloud gave a loud shout and all the fire existences that formed around him gathered together, forming a flaming red dragon. With a loud roar, this flaming red dragon rushed towards Lin Ming!

This flame dragon was itself a Fire Elemental!

To use a Fire Elemental as the foundation, and pouring in fire origin energy with the Concept of Manifestation, that made this flame dragon nearly have a life of its own.

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. The Phoenix Blood Spear shot out like a bolt of lightning. The 999 small blood spears around the spear shaft twisted into a scarlet storm that swept towards the Crimson Flame Dragon.

Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

As Lin Ming used the source energy of the Phoenix Blood Spear, he also fused the power of Laws into it. On top of the Phoenix Blood Spear's point, a blue lotus of flame slowly appeared, blooming in brilliant glory.

The blue flame lotus was surrounded by 999 sword-like blood spears!

The two massive energies violently smashed into each other!

However, there was no chaotic explosion as expected. Instead, the Crimson Flame Dragon actually opened its great jaws. Its body suddenly expanded 10 times over and swallowed up Lin Ming along with the blue lotus!

The martial artists watching this battle at Totem Tower's square widened their eyes. Their hearts jumped into their throats.

“Hahaha! Useless! Although I am inferior to you in the first three level Concepts of the Fire Laws, my Concept of Fire is still an entire boundary higher than your own. With the fourth level Concept of the Fire Laws, the Concept of Manifestation, combined together with the Crimson Flame Dragon Fire Elemental, that has created an energy form with a life of its own. Its might is beyond your imagination! Now, die for me!”

Crimson Strifecloud raised his hands, wanting to galvanize the energy within the Crimson Flame Dragon to grind Lin Ming to death. The stomach of the Crimson Flame Dragon was a separate space. As long as one entered within, the space would collapse and the violent power of fire would rush in. That incomparably terrifying destructive power was able to tear everything to bits and pieces!

But at this moment, a scene that left Crimson Strifecloud shocked occurred.

Suddenly, a boundless, ancient, and yet simple power erupted from within the belly of the Crimson Flame Dragon. It turned into a gray beam of light that shot out from within the flame dragon.

Lin Ming had poured the Heavenly Demon martial intent into his spear attack, hiding the blooming blood red lotus. With the grandmist space fused into his spear, he thrust out, a strike to annihilate all Laws!

Whether it was the first three level Concepts of the Fire Laws or the fourth level Concept, whether or not Crimson Strifecloud’s true essence had a spirituality of its own, in the face of the all-annihilating grandmist space, everything would come under tremendous suppression.

This move could not be fully used – after all, it was related to Empyrean Primordius. Although he had disguised it as a type of suppressive force field, if there really were a character that had managed to come into contact with Empyrean Primordius, there was a chance that they would recognize Lin Ming’s attack styles!

A martial intent type of skill could not be stolen away by others. But, Lin Ming might be forced into revealing the process of how he obtained this martial intent. If that happened, there would be endless trouble awaiting him.

Within the spear, the energy of the Heavenly Demon martial intent erupted outwards along with the dark gold battle spirit. The Crimson Flame Dragon howled miserably, then, it was suddenly sliced in half from the center!

“Mm!?” Crimson Strifecloud’s eyes shot open. “You tore apart my Crimson Flame Dragon? How can you possibly possess such great strength!?”

Through their battle so far, Crimson Strifecloud had gained an approximate understanding of Lin Ming’s strength. Blue Lotus Flame Dance was already Lin Ming’s strongest move. When it was fused with the Phoenix Blood Spear’s attack yet again, that had become Lin Ming’s greatest attack so far. But even such an attack would not be able to tear apart the Crimson Flame Dragon!

Yet now, the Crimson Flame Dragon had been torn asunder!

“What is going on!? Is that a force field!? Lin Ming’s strength was increased by such a force field and at the same time this force field suppressed my strength!? At just a seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation, Lin Ming was able to comprehend such an aberrant force field!!?”

These thoughts instantly cut through Crimson Strifecloud’s Laws. A force field ability was rare. A Law type force field like the Blue Lotus Domain was a bit rarer, and a martial intent force field was even rarer than that. Normally, anyone that could comprehend just a single force field, or even multiple force fields, were extreme geniuses!

This force field that Lin Ming displayed seemed like a martial intent force field but it also seemed like a Law force field. Crimson Strifecloud was simply unable to see through it. This wasn’t strange. This was because while Law force fields were similar when a martial artist comprehended them, martial intent force fields were different. Martial intent force fields were developed based on a martial artist's cultivation method, true essence, physical characteristics, and countless other constantly shifting variables. There was simply no single standard to identify them. A martial intent force field was similar to a martial artist's thumbprint, or the unique composition of their very being; every one was different, thus it was normal to not recognize it!

A battle between masters was filled with changes. Before Crimson Strifecloud was able to understand exactly what happened, Lin Ming had already rushed in front of him!

"Phoenix bloodline, combust!"

In that moment, golden light burst out from the entirety of Lin Ming's body. Crimson Strifecloud's Scorching Blood bloodline could transform the body into a Scorching Blood Battle Body. Of course, the Ancient Phoenix bloodline also had a corresponding state of erupting energy. And that was to burn the blood of the Ancient Phoenix!

When Lin Ming crossed the seventh stage of Life Destruction, he had used an immense amount of precious Ancient Phoenix blood. Now, this was his first time completely combusting his phoenix bloodline!

The stronger one's Ancient Phoenix bloodline was, the greater the burden combustion would place on the body. When a martial artist with a perfect Ancient Phoenix Bloodline combusted their blood, they would only do so with one ten thousandth of their bloodline. This already produced a titanic level of power. But now, Lin Ming had fully combusted all of the phoenix blood within him, without leaving the least bit behind!

After entering the Illusionary God Combat Array, Lin Ming had saved his strength and true essence. All of it was done so that he could completely erupt with his strength at the crucial moment!

By relying on the support of the Gate of Healing and also relying on his deep and solid foundation, Lin Ming forcefully withstood combusting the equivalent of 70 drops of phoenix heart blood. His strength suddenly multiplied to an extent even greater than Crimson Strifecloud's Scorching Blood Battle Body!

As the branch palace disciples saw Lin Ming's entire body burning in an inferno of flames, and a dark golden light radiating from all over him, all of them cried out in alarm and shock!

"Lin Ming has burnt all of the Ancient Phoenix blood within his body!"

"Heavens! He absorbed so much phoenix blood when he crossed Life Destruction, and yet he's ignited it all!"

"I thought that Junior-apprentice Brother Lin would be swallowed up and eaten by that Crimson Flame Dragon Fire Elemental fused with the Concept of Manifestation, but he actually managed to break through the prison of that Fire Elemental and rush out!"

All of the disciples present held their breath, watching with helpless eyes as Lin Ming shot forwards like a beam of light, hurtling towards Crimson Strifecloud like a falling meteor!

Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

Lin Ming gave a loud shot and all of his true essence poured into the Phoenix Blood Spear. A blue lotus 10 times larger than the last shot out, and on top of this blue lotus was a dark gold phoenix phantom!

The dark gold phoenix within Lin Ming's body had fused together with the Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

"Explode!"

In that moment, time seemed to come to a standstill. The blue lotus exploded and an inexhaustible gold light flooded through the entire world of the Illusionary God Combat Array!

Facing such an attack, Crimson Strifecloud's pupils shrank. He fiercely cut down with his sword!

Boom!

Crimson Strifecloud’s body shook and he was sent soaring backwards. As his body flew through the air, blood gushed out from the shattered scales on his chest, staining his body. Blood also leaked out from the corners of his lips.

As for Lin Ming, he wasn’t much better off!

Although he didn’t vomit blood, his face was still paper white. In that strike just now he had burnt all of his Ancient Phoenix blood so he was able to rush forth with unstoppable momentum and gain the advantage. But before then, Lin Ming had been swallowed up into the stomach of the Crimson Flame Dragon. And when Crimson Strifecloud had caused fire origin energy to explode within, this had injured Lin Ming, causing all the blood within his body to tumble around, and also forcing him to expend a massive amount of true essence.

This battle between two great masters was extremely intense!

“Crimson Strifecloud, son of a World King, the current Crimson Dragon Envoy, he… he was injured by Lin Ming!”

Several disciples cried out in shock. With Lin Ming’s seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation and his Concept of Fire that was an entire boundary lower, he had managed to injure the eighth stage Life Destruction Crimson Strifecloud. This achievement was enough to ring out for all of eternity!

“Lin Ming…” On Charming Phoenix Palace’s side, Yan Littlemoon’s two fists were clutched tightly together. Her lips slowly moved.

“Maybe… just maybe… Lin Ming can win!”

Chapter 1036 – To Complete the Thousand Slaughter

Chapter 1036 – To Complete the Thousand Slaughter

…

…

…

"I never imagined that not only did you have a gold battle spirit, but you even managed to comprehend such a bizarre and powerful martial intent force field, and you were actually able to jump ranks to wound me!"

Crimson Strifecloud rose up from the ruins of his landing. He wiped the leaking blood from his mouth. As he recalled that strange martial intent force field just now, even he couldn't believe it. Lin Ming had actually managed to comprehend such a mystical force field martial intent!

A martial intent was illusive and impossible to clarify. Every person that comprehended one did so differently, and whether or not they managed to comprehend one, this wasn't too related to their comprehension of Laws or their talent. There were some extreme geniuses that would never be able to comprehend their own martial intent.

It could even be said that martial intents were a kind of manifestation of a martial artist's destiny.

"Lin Ming, your cultivation is lower than mine by a single stage of Life Destruction and yet you have been able to force me to this step. I really must praise you. I admit that your talent is no longer beneath mine. This next move is my strongest ace. Even 40,000 years ago when I completed the Thousand Slaughter here, I did not use this move.

“Lin Ming, it is still not too late for you to admit defeat. Because once I use this move, even I am unable to control its strength. Even though we are in the Illusionary God Combat Array and you are nothing but an energy form, my attack will wound your divine soul. This is because this move is one that my father comprehended from a fragment of a transcendent divine might jade slip that he obtained in an ancient ruin. Although it is not a true transcendent divine might, it is actually quite close. And whilst I can only display the first attack of this ability, even so, the likes of you will not be able to resist it!”

“Transcendent divine might?”

As the martial artists present heard Crimson Strifecloud’s words, all of them were floored. A transcendent divine might was a peak top level ultimate ability of the Divine Realm! Only an extreme Empyrean level character, an existence that others called equivalent to a god, was able to create their own. Moreover, an Empyrean would only be able to create a single transcendent divine might, because a transcendent divine might was the complete accumulation of their entire life’s studies!

Thus, in the entire Divine Realm, a new transcendent divine might would only be born every million or even several million years. In addition, there were many transcendent divine mights that were lost in mystic realms, causing transcendent divine mights in the Divine Realm to be extremely scarce. Normally only an Empyrean or extraordinary World King would experience a lucky chance and obtain one. As for a Holy Lord, there was no point in mentioning them.

For instance, Crimson Strifecloud’s father had obtained only a fragment of a transcendent divine might. The amount that could be learnt from it was limited.

Even so, that was still an amazing inheritance!

"A transcendent divine might jade slip fragment! By the heavens! Crimson Strifecloud actually had the chance to learn such an ability!"

"There's nothing that can be done about it. That's the background of a World King Family. The reason that Crimson Strifecloud's family is so glorious is not just because of their bloodline, but also because their inheritances are far superior. For instance, our Ancient Phoenix Clan would never have something so mythical like a fragment of a transcendent divine might."

"I fear Junior-apprentice Brother Lin won't be able to stop him… what a pity, if only Crimson Strifecloud didn't have a transcendent divine might then Junior-apprentice Brother Lin might have won."

"There isn't anything that can be done, this is the difference of background. There isn't any shame for Junior-apprentice Brother Lin to lose like this. This battle is destined to be recorded in the grand history of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!"

As the disciples of the three branch palaces were feeling sorrow for Lin Ming, at this time, Lin Ming was facing off against Crimson Strifecloud, a dignified expression on his face. Even a transcendent divine might jade slip fragment couldn't be underestimated. It had to be known that his own Heavenly Demon martial intent was only a minor portion of the complete Primordius martial intent, and yet it held so much power already.

As for the Heretical God Force, that should be a complete transcendent divine might. But, the nature of this secret skill was focused on auxiliary cultivation, passive support, and helping to perceive the Laws; its striking power wasn't its greatest strength. As for Crimson Strifecloud, from the meaning behind his words, what his father obtained was a fragment of an offensive transcendent divine might!

A martial skill comprehended from a transcendent divine might jade slip fragment might not be a true transcendent divine might, but it was still recreated through the strength and understandings of a World King level powerhouse. Its might was absolutely powerful.

At this moment, Lin Ming no longer held anything back. This was likely Crimson Strifecloud's final attack. He needed to receive this attack, and his greatest dependence was the transcendent divine might level grandmist space. In other words, to release the grandmist space to the edge of its limits.

Before this, because of all sorts of worries, Lin Ming had suppressed the grandmist space to about three feet around his body, and he also hid the phenomena of the grandmist space. But if he were to continue with this charade then he would likely lose here.

"It looks you really want to fight to the death. Hehe, that is also what I expected. Otherwise, that wouldn't be you, and I would lose interest in defeating you." As Crimson Strifecloud saw Lin Ming's aura rapidly rising, he wasn't surprised at all. He lifted his sword with both hands and his own aura also ascended into the heavens, turning into a billowing blaze that shot into the sky, dyeing the entire sky blood red!

"Tyrant Ether Blood!"

Crimson Strifecloud suddenly chopped down with his sword. At this time, he was like the world itself, wielding control of heavenly retribution, and his sword was the judgment of the Heavenly Dao!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. In that moment, he once again combusted all of his Ancient Phoenix blood. His soul force and willpower completely erupted! Behind Lin Ming, in the midst of a blazing golden light and a fiery phoenix dancing in the sky, a blood red lotus began to slowly bloom!

This was the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower. Only when this lotus flower bloomed would the grandmist martial intent reach the pinnacle of its strength!

However, Lin Ming didn't dare to allow just the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower to bloom. Although Crimson Strifecloud or Huo Violentstone were both characters that were far from the level of an Empyrean, and it was also impossible for them to ever see someone like Empyrean Primordius, Lin Ming still didn't look down on their experience. As he released the blooming blood red Prime Emperor Lotus Flower, he used the Blue Lotus Flame Dance once again!

The first three Concepts of the Fire Laws condensed into a blue lotus and fused together with the Prime Emperor red lotus, causing a lotus flower to appear that was a strange blue-red!

But, Lin Ming wasn't done yet. He poured his grandmist battle spirit into this blue-red lotus flower. The gold battle spirit was capable of forming a world of will projection into reality. It changed the appearance of the Prime Emperor red lotus again, covering it with a dark gold!

Bang!

Ka ka ka!

Crimson Strifecloud's sword cut into the grandmist space. The deep red energy violently collided with the grandmist space. Then, the strands of elementary grandmist energy were forcefully sheared off by Crimson Strifecloud. At the same time, Crimson Strifecloud's Tyrant Ether Blood also weakened. A thick red energy washed out in all directions, dyeing the grandmist space crimson, as if the endless heavens were crying tears of blood!

"Just what kind of force field is this?! It's actually so powerful!" Crimson Strifecloud was stunned. He felt his own strength being rapidly sucked away. "Break for me!"

Crimson Strifecloud erupted with a bellowing roar. His body suddenly bulged out. The blood vessels underneath his skin all burst open, and blue veins stuck out from all over his body. He pushed the strength of his body to the limit and forcefully tore away the elementary grandmist energy in front that was hindering him!

However at the same time, most of the strength of his Tyrant Ether Blood had been used up!

"Heretical God Force, explode!"

Lin Ming's thoughts reached towards the Heretical God Sprout. The Heretical God Sprout's six leaves released a brilliance as bright as a noon sun. In that moment, behind Lin Ming, the blue-red lotus flower appeared once again, shooting straight forwards!

Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

Bang!

In the violent collision, the Tyrant Ether Blood and the Blue Lotus Flame Dance smashed against each other. The blue-red lotus was ripped apart, but Crimson Strifecloud's Tyrant Ether Blood was also mutilated until it exploded!

Wild shockwaves of energy swept outwards. Lin Ming's protective true essence shattered and his meridians were torn apart by the energy. He vomited a great mouthful of blood.

As for Crimson Strifecloud, a third of the scales around his body had been torn off by Lin Ming's attack. His entire body was dyed with blood!

However, the two of them did not retreat. They both wanted to use this moment when their opponent was severely wounded and their attacks would be at their weakest to deliver a fatal blow!

Tyrant Ether Blood!

Crimson Strifecloud wanted to display the Tyrant Ether Blood once more. But with his current condition, he was barely able to use this move and the burden on his body was great. Also, even though he was barely able to use this move, the power would be incomparable to the last time.

But, just as Crimson Strifecloud was about to strike, he could hear a sound of rolling thunder roaring at him. From Lin Ming's body, a purple lion tore towards him!

"Purple Lion Thunder Source, explode!"

Lin Ming crazily shouted out. The Purple Lion Thunder Source dashed into the great currents of flame that still surged about. The power of thunder and fire wove together, creating a riotous explosion.

Bang!

The heavens and earth trembled. Explosive origin energy burst out in all directions. Crimson Strifecloud didn’t have time to condense his sword energy before he was swept up by the frenzied thunderfire energy. His stance broke and he was sent flying backwards. All of his scales were ripped off, scattering across the world as his blood shot into the wind.

Lin Ming’s final strike nearly took all of his energy. As he slaughtered his way to this step, every opponent he faced had been a genius of their own era. Moreover, he had faced groups of them that had joined together in formations. The consumption of his energy could be imagined.

Even if Lin Ming had the Gate of Healing supporting him, it was still difficult to make up for the stress of his mind in the mere quarter hour of time given to him before he fought Crimson Strifecloud.

Because he had erupted with too much strength in that last attack and he had also suffered a backlash from the explosive true essence, 30% of Lin Ming’s meridians had been torn and he was in a critically injured stage. He didn’t have much combat efficiency left. If Crimson Strifecloud still had strength remaining, then he could only admit defeat.

However, the truth was that Crimson Strifecloud was in an even worse state.

In Lin Ming’s final strike, he had used the Purple Lion Thunder source to detonate the remnants of the Blue Lotus Flame Dance. Crimson Strifecloud had withstood the greatest impact. If it weren’t for his Scorching Blood Battle Body, the scales that covered him, as well as his amazing defensive power, then Lin Ming’s strike would have torn Crimson Strifecloud to pieces!

"You…!" Crimson Strifecloud's voice was hoarse as he glared at Lin Ming. Every time he spoke a word, blood would gush out from his mouth. "Lin Ming, right? I'll remember you!"

Hu – !

As Crimson Strifecloud finished speaking, his body turned into beams of red light that faded away, soon completely vanishing altogether.

Lin Ming… had defeated Crimson Strifecloud!

This also meant that he had completed the final stage, the Thousand Slaughter!

"Lin Ming has defeated Crimson Strifecloud! Heavens!"

"Thousand Slaughter! The madman did it, he completed the Thousand Slaughter!"

As the disciples of the three branch palaces saw Lin Ming finally defeat Crimson Strifecloud, all of them were first struck dumb. They thought that Lin Ming originally had a ray of hope to achieve victory, but after Crimson Strifecloud had pulled out that attack that was perceived from a transcendent divine might jade slip fragment, everyone had felt that final ray of hope disappear.

But, the true result had defied all of their expectations!

Chapter 1037 – Phoenix Blood Essence

Chapter 1037 – Phoenix Blood Essence

…

…

…

“He won… he really won…” Monarch Sweetyfox mumbled. Beside her, Duke Golden Sword and Huo Highdragon were stunned speechless.

“Good! Well fought!” Huo Violentstone raised his fists. This battle was too amazing! He had only been watching the fight and yet he was filled with a hearty feeling. This was what all battles should be like!

“This Lin Ming must have obtained some lucky chance somewhere. The might of those final abilities he used as well as that martial intent was simply incredible. It’s impossible that he created such moves on his own. He must have obtained the inheritance of a top extreme powerhouse.”

Huo Violentstone could see that Lin Ming’s last attack was not ordinary at all. It was normal for geniuses to obtain lucky chances, and Lin Ming’s lucky chance was far more terrifying than he had assumed. This wasn’t surprising. After all, Lin Ming was a martial artist from the lower realms. If he didn’t have some great lucky chance then it would have been impossible for him to reach this step.

“It looks like I underestimated Lin Ming. I originally thought he was a powerhouse who had the possibility and potential of becoming a character on the level of a Highest Elder in the future. But now, it seems that his achievements may continue past even those of a Holy

Lord. Perhaps the Ancient Phoenix Clan will not be the final destination. He will leave the Ancient Phoenix Clan and step onto a broader stage in the Divine Realm!"

Huo Violentstone took a deep breath. The 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm each took an incomparably broad mainland as their center; this was the so-called primary world. But, there were also countless celestial stars that existed outside of these primary worlds. Many of these celestial stars were even larger than the planet that the Sky Spill Continent was located on!

And on these celestial stars lived incalculable lives!

Of the 3000 great worlds, every great world had an unimaginable population base and every great world also had over a hundred Holy Land level influences.

And these were only the 3000 great worlds! Besides the 3000 great worlds there were also medium worlds and small worlds. Even these small worlds had top powerhouses!

In addition, a Divine Lord powerhouse was able to form a divine world within their bodies. This world could hold rivers, lakes, seas, deserts, grasslands, and all sorts of life could be raised within. Then, the master of this world could obtain strength from all the power of faith emanating from their inner world.

For instance, characters like Huo Highdragon and Monarch Sweetyfox had divine inner worlds. If the population of this world was added together, that was also a huge number!

It was impossible to measure how vast the Divine Realm was. Even if a World King were to spend a million years wandering the cosmos, they would still find it difficult to explore even a ten thousandth of the Divine Realm.

"My Ancient Phoenix Clan has continued on in the Divine Realm for so many years and yet a World King has never appeared among our people. Even Xiao Daoji, Huo Burning Heaven, all of them were almost close to becoming a World King. With Lin Ming's current achievements it is still far from him becoming a World King, but he has a faint hope in doing so."

Huo Violentstone truly hoped that the Ancient Phoenix Clan would be able to raise a World King. But, training a World King was simply too difficult! There were only 3000 World Kings for the 3000 major worlds of the Divine Realm. These were accumulated over hundreds of thousands of years.

The truth was that one could step onto the stage of the Divine Realm after becoming a Holy Lord. If one could surpass a Holy Lord and become a World King, then one could become a leading actor on the Divine Realm's stage.

....

At this time, in the distant Crimson Light Word, in an endless space of fire, a tall and broad middle-aged man with long crimson hair was sitting down.

Then, he had a sudden feeling in his heart. He slowly opened his eyes, "Mm? The wisp of divine sense I left in the Ancient Phoenix Clan's Illusionary God Combat Array was broken?"

The red-haired middle-aged man was surprised. He stood up. This man was Crimson Strifecloud!

It had already been a matter of 40,000 years ago when he left behind a strand of his divine sense.

At that time, he had been filled with the fire of youth and also far too much arrogance. He had believed that all geniuses beneath the heavens were inferior to him. But now, he had become much more composed and levelheaded than before. His boundary was different and thus his horizons were different. As he grew older, he slowly became deeply aware of just how broad and vast the Divine Realm truly was.

If it were now, he wouldn't leave behind a wisp of his divine sense to provoke a Holy Land, because there simply wasn't any meaning in such an act.

A Holy Land also couldn't be underestimated. Although it was true he had suppressed the Ancient Phoenix Clan 40,000 years ago, that was only a matter of 40,000 years ago. There was the glory of ten million years ago or even longer than that. During that long history, the Ancient Phoenix Clan had produced numerous talents that exceeded him in all aspects, not to mention existences like Xiao Daoji or Huo Burning Heaven, extreme characters that had been half-step World Kings. There were even some less famous past Patriarchs of the Ancient Phoenix Clan that were about the same as Crimson Strifecloud.

At his age, Crimson Strifecloud's chances of stepping into the World King realm were becoming more and more uncertain. He had more or less stopped at the peak of a Holy Lord. A peak Holy Lord was still a Holy Lord. Compared to a World King, there was simply an insurmountable chasm between them.

Crimson Strifecloud casually reached out his hands and tore apart space. From the endless space, he grasped a tiny red strand. This red strand slowly lingered in his palm; this was the wisp of divine sense he had left behind, but it had already been scattered by Lin Ming.

Crimson Strifecloud opened his mouth and absorbed this strand of divine sense into his body. The scene of battle within the Illusionary God Combat Array reappeared in his mind. However, because the strand of divine sense had been brutally ruined by Lin Ming, he could not recover the complete battle scene. The most he could do was recognize Lin Ming's appearance and his cultivation.

"In the past, I completed the Thousand Slaughter in the Illusionary God Combat Array when I was 29 years old. This youth should by the same age. The Illusionary God Combat Array should be able to perfectly reproduce my past understandings of the Concept and Laws, my skills and cultivation methods, my complete combat efficiency, and even the fiery hotheadedness of my youth. In order to create a legend that would never be broken, I also displayed the Tyrant Ether Blood in the Illusionary God Combat Array before I left. That strength was left behind along with my divine sense. I should have been reproduced in the exact same condition of my peak strength back then. And even then, I actually managed to lose. He is the same age as I was, and moreover he is… mm? Seventh stage Life Destruction!"

Crimson Strifecloud's eyes widened. This discovery was even more shocking!

In truth, for a genius of Crimson Strifecloud's level, it was extremely easy for him to break through the earlier realms. If he wanted to he could have stepped into the Divine Sea at 26-27 years of age. But, there was no reason to do that. Only when he felt that his cultivation had become the greatest limiting factor of his comprehension of the Laws would he then break through to the next boundary. In his opinion, if a 29 year old could suppress their cultivation to the seventh stage of Life Destruction then their talent must truly be great! This youth must possess a talent that surpassed his own by a great margin.

"This Lin Ming fellow appeared in the Ancient Phoenix Clan. With such talent, it is possible that he will become a character like Xiao Daoji. In the future, our paths will surely intersect. I want to take a good look to see just what sort of monstrous little creature he is."

Crimson Strifecloud muttered to himself. Then, he sat back down and continued to perceive the Laws. When he was 25,000 years old he had already reached the peak of the Holy Lord realm. Now, he either spent his time perceiving the Laws and Concepts, closed up in diligent cultivation, travelled for enjoyment, or sought lucky chances of his own in dangerous lands. Even so, he had still been stuck at this step for a full 15,000 years!

…………..

At this time, at Fire Spirit Star, the last star lit up on the arch of the Illusionary God Combat Array. The ninth star symbolized the completion of the Thousand Slaughter!

The array formation portal violently trembled. Then, with a whistling sound, the portal disappeared and a pale-faced youth was kicked out. This youth was Lin Ming.

It was over!

Lin Ming took a deep breath. At this time his long hair was in chaos and exhaustion tinged his eyes.

It had only been Lin Ming's spiritual form that fought in the Illusionary God Combat. The spiritual form had been reproduced from his own body so that he wouldn't be directly harmed during the trial. Even so, in an endless revolving fight that continued for almost an entire day, it had been a tremendous test of Lin Ming's mind, will, and soul. His consumption had been immense!

Without a doubt, his Thousand Slaughter was far more difficult than what Crimson Strifecloud experienced 40,000 years ago!

Although he had been brimming with energy and vitality when he first rushed into the Illusionary God Combat Array, now that he exited, all he felt was exhaustion.

Even so, as his figure fell into the eyes of the other martial artists present, there was nothing reflected in them but supreme power and influence, a grandeur that left their hearts racing.

Lin Ming had jumped levels to defeat Crimson Strifecloud. Such strength, such talent, it was all like an unreachable mountain peak. Just this point was enough to have the three branch palaces' disciples feel awe. But before, Lin Ming had also given a rousing verbal counter to Crimson Strifecloud's words. Those words had caused their blood to boil and for them to deeply worship and revere his daring bravado.

Lin Mind had defended the glory of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. He had defended the pride of everyone in the Ancient Phoenix Clan, so that they could hold their heads up high.

"Littlemoon, you cannot struggle with him." Lu Xiaoyun couldn't help but say. Beside her, Yan Littlemoon was staring at Lin Ming in a daze, her lips gently moving as if she were speaking to herself. This blow to the heart of the arrogant Yan Littlemoon was not minor.

Yan Littlemoon's body shivered. Then, she averted her gaze. She bowed her head and said, "Senior-apprentice Sister Lu, I'm fine."

Yan Littlemoon seemed to think of something. She looked up and clenched her fists.

"Regardless of whether or not I can struggle with him, I will still try to do so no matter what. As long as I can follow his footsteps, then even if I never surpass him, in the future, I too have hopes of becoming a Holy Lord level character. But, if I were to be ashamed of my own weakness now and give up my hope, then there would be nothing left…" Yan Littlemoon said after a moment of thought.

As Lu Xiaoyun heard these words, she smiled in appreciation. "That's right. At any time, no matter how powerful our rivals and enemies are, we still cannot lose heart, we cannot abandon our will to never surrender… Littlemoon, your talent far surpasses my own. As long as you grasp the chances that appear to you in the future, you truly do have a chance of becoming a Holy Lord!"

"Mm!" Yan Littlemoon firmly nodded. There was no limit in this universe; there was always a higher mountain, a stronger person. Yan Littlemoon understood this. She knew that she was far from being able to compare with those truly monstrous geniuses out in the wide universe. But, there had never been a situation like today where she personally experienced this with her own eyes and heart. Now, she understood just how great the disparity was. Although this was a major blow to Yan Littlemoon, it was also an extremely important life lesson. It had broadened her horizons and cemented her goal, giving her the strength to press forwards.

"Apprentice Nephew Lin, congratulations. You have reached the seventh level of the Hells of Flame and have also completed the Illusionary God Combat Array's Thousand Slaughter. This is yours – you have earned it."

Huo Highdragon took out an ordinary-looking wooden box and handed it to Lin Ming.

This wooden box was extremely plain-looking; it was unknown just what type of wood it was made from. As Lin Ming opened this box, he could see that there was a square crystal inside, translucent and utterly clear, shimmering with a faint light. And sealed in the center of this crystal was a single crimson drop of blood. This drop of blood seemed to have a spirit of its own. Just by looking at it, one could feel endless flames burning within, and within these flames was a phoenix bathing in the fires of nirvana.

This was… phoenix blood essence!

Chapter 1038 – Absorbing the Phoenix Blood Essence

Chapter 1038 – Absorbing the Phoenix Blood Essence

…

…

….

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, congratulations!”

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, awesome fight!”

As Lin Ming obtained the phoenix blood essence, many disciples that knew Lin Ming came up to congratulate him, some of them with voices thick with envy.

This was Ancient Phoenix blood essence! Even someone like Crimson Strifecloud, who came from a World King family background, would crave and yearn for it.

In the Divine Realm, there were countless various bloodlines. In order to reach a higher realm of cultivation, besides perception, lucky chances, and destiny, one also need to have enough martial talent.

Of the several factors that formed a genius, martial talent was at the end. But, this didn’t mean that it was unimportant. On the contrary, martial talent was actually indispensable. It was just that in the Divine Realm there were many different methods to increase one’s martial talent, thus it wasn’t considered too important.

Improving one’s bloodline was often the main method to increase one’s talent.

In this universe, the human bloodline wasn't much at all. Humans were small and weak animals. They were slow, their physical strength was lacking, and their bodies were frail. Although they were more formidable than ants, cats, dogs, and other such ordinary animals, they fell far short of being able to compare with fierce beasts like lions and tigers.

Compared to vicious beasts and saint beasts, they couldn't even hold a candle to them.

As for a God Beast, there was even less to speak of. A God Beast did not even need to train. As long as they grew up, they would have the strength of a peak World King powerhouse. As for a human, they would die in several dozen years if they didn't cultivate.

But after so many billions of years, humanity had actually taken rule over the entire Divine Realm. Besides humans' terrifying ability to multiply, the main reason they had been able to do this was based on their perception, creativity, and ability to learn!

Mankind had created a brilliant and magnificent martial arts civilization. There was no other race in this cosmos that was more suited to cultivating martial arts than humans. A weak little baby that cried just after being born, could 100,000 years later destroy a star with their own hands. This weak baby could become an Empyrean with the ability to create their own miracle. This could be said to be an unbelievable miracle!

As for saint beasts and God Beasts, their effects of cultivating were limited. Nearly all transcendent divine mights were created by humanity. Although a God Beast was powerful, they could not compare with a human Empyrean!

And while humans had an advantage in cultivation, their bloodline talent was actually poor. The children they gave birth to were frail and weak without even the strength to grab a chicken. Then, in the distant past, the ancient martial artists of the Divine Realm underwent a variety of experiments to transform their own bloodline.

With humanity's cultivation speed, if they also had a bloodline superiority then they would truly become the beloved of heaven!

And by this era, in the vast and boundless Divine Realm, the truly powerful families all had their own unique bloodline inheritances. All these various bloodlines had strange and wonderful powers, each with their own strengths and disadvantages, some better and some worse.

This included God Beast Families like the Ancient Phoenix Clan. For instance, the Ancient Dragon Clan, Kirin Clan, or Roc Clan.

These God Beast Families all had noble bloodlines. But, what a pity, they were never able to fuse the God Beast bloodline into their own genes. Thus, they could only rely on transplanting additional blood to maintain their bloodline.

Of these four great God Beast Families, only the Ancient Dragon Clan had several World Kings appear within their ranks. As for the other three noble families, the strongest powerhouses they had were half-step World Kings.

As Lin Ming entered the Divine Realm, it became important for him to constantly enhance his own talent. This would save him a great deal of cultivation time in the future.

At this moment, a beautiful and alluring woman with 10,000 different flavors of sexuality arrived in front of Lin Ming. She gently smiled and said, “Apprentice Nephew Lin, I am the Vice Internal Affairs Envoy of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Monarch Sweetyfox. This is the Internal Affairs Envoy, Huo Highdragon. This is the captain of the Disciplinary Enforcement Division, Golden Sword. And finally, as you should be well aware, this is the current Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s Huo Family, Highest Elder Huo Violentstone!”

Monarch Sweetyfox slowly introduced everyone to Lin Ming.

Highest Elder Huo Violentstone…

Lin Ming sucked in a light breath. A Highest Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan – that was a Holy Lord level existence!

In the Divine Realm there was a colossal number of Holy Lands, and even more Holy Lord level characters. But, this didn't mean that a Holy Lord wasn't special. In fact, becoming a Holy Lord was unimaginably rare and difficult. Once one became a Holy Lord, they could rule their own section of the Divine Realm and become an overlord. Crimson Strifecloud was also a Holy Lord, and a peak Holy Lord at that.

But, there were far too many lives in the Divine Realm, even more than a trillion trillion lives. It was simply impossible to count. Thus, that was why there were so many Holy Lords!

For example, out of a population of a trillion martial artists, a single Divine Lord powerhouse would appear. But, only one out of every 10,000 Divine Lords would manage to become a Holy Lord level powerhouse. If one calculated this, then the chance that a martial artist would manage to become a Holy Lord powerhouse was one in 10,000 trillion!

Then, 10,000 Holy Lords would appear from a group of a hundred thousand trillion martial artists. And in a population of 10 billion trillion martial artists, there would be a million Holy Lords!

"This old man… is the strongest powerhouse I've seen to date…" Lin Ming deeply looked at Huo Violentstone. He simply couldn't make out what cultivation or power of Laws this old man had. It was hard to imagine that this old man might even have the power to move a small planet.

"Brat, come with me!"

Huo Violentstone suddenly said. Then, as he spoke he waved his hand and casually tore apart space, forming a space vortex.

"Come on in!"

Huo Violentstone's voice was full of energy; it was impossible to refuse him.

Lin Ming nodded and stepped into this space vortex. In the next moment, he felt his own divine soul twist as if he had crossed through a million mile distance. He arrived in a great and broad world. This was not a minor dimension that an ordinary martial artist opened up with their true essence, but a truly great world that extended as far out as the eye could see. There was no limit or edge. As Lin Ming cast his divine sense out and investigated, this world seemed endless.

“This is… a mortal nation?”

Lin Ming was surprised. When he investigated with his senses he discovered that several hundred miles away there was a large number of mortals carrying out some sort of prayer and worship ceremony, as if they were praying for good crops and good weather. This sort of ceremony would only occur in the world of mortals. A martial artist believed in their own strength and ability to change the world as they saw fit. Thus, they naturally felt less awe towards certain beliefs, and they certainly wouldn’t believe in some faint and illusory divine god.

And besides this ceremony, Lin Ming could also make out the noisy market streets, bustling cities, fertile fields of crops, and even battlefields where life and death slaughter was happening.

On this battlefield, the soldiers were basically all at the body transformation realm. The generals might be at the Houtian realm, and nearly none were at the Xiantian realm. This sort of army strength was similar to the Sky Fortune Kingdom that Lin Ming grew up in.

“This place is…”

“This is my divine world, the world I formed when I stepped into the Divine Lord realm, a world evolved from the great dimension within my body.”

As an old voice sounded out, Huo Violentstone appeared beside Lin Ming. “The reason that a Divine Lord is called a Divine Lord is that they can open a true world within their body and become the divine existence of their own world, then being able to receive the power of faith from those that live within them. Well, enough of that. Lin Ming, the reason I brought you here is that I want to ask you several questions. But before that, I will help you absorb this drop of phoenix blood essence first. If you can maintain your current rate of achievements in the future, and perhaps rise even further, then the Ancient Phoenix Clan will do everything in their power to help train and raise you. There can be a second drop of phoenix blood essence, perhaps even a third, all the way until you become a half-step World King and achieve the same level of Xiao Daoji and Huo Burning Heaven of the past. You can even surpass them and struggle for glory for the Ancient Phoenix Clan!"

The Ancient Phoenix had remained silent for hundreds of thousands of years already. They urgently needed a top powerhouse to appear within their ranks in order to enhance the destiny of the entire clan!

Destiny was a concept that couldn't be explained clearly. An ordinary shop would find a treasure for their store in order to stabilize their destiny and bring about more business and prosperity. Similarly, an ancient family needed a peerless powerhouse to present themselves in order to enhance their own destiny.

Often, after an unrivalled genius was successfully raised, other top geniuses would begin popping up like endless mushrooms one after another. This was not solely an issue of something so fickle like destiny, but because of the truth that the appearance of an unrivalled powerhouse would be accompanied with a great number of lucky chances.

As Huo Violentstone finished speaking, his mind moved and the thought of a battle spirit shot out and destroyed the crystal that sealed the drop of phoenix blood essence. As the crystal shattered, the drop of blood essence that contained the inherent life essence of a Phoenix God Beast slowly drifted downwards. This drop of phoenix blood essence emitted a powerful, vast, and fiery aura!

Lin Ming could even feel that this drop of phoenix blood essence contained fragments of the Great Dao Laws. These Laws were of course not perceived by the phoenix. Rather, when the phoenix was born it had already inherently comprehended these Laws!

When a God Beast like a phoenix was born, their body would naturally be inscribed with dao diagrams, and there would be Law runes deeply etched into their bones. These Laws were all completely natural; one could say they were closest to the Heavenly Dao!

Huo Violentstone used his thoughts to control this drop of blood essence and move it towards Lin Ming. Wherever this blood essence went, Lin Ming could see that the space around it twisted around. This was because of the highly compressed energy contained within the drop of blood essence. It was even able to twist the space within Huo Violentstone's divine world. This was a truly impressive condensed energy!

As soon as this drop of phoenix blood essence approached the point between Lin Ming's eyebrows, he could feel a sharp pain there as if a needle were stabbing into him, as well a pain that came from being burned by flames.

The Ancient Phoenix mark on Lin Ming's forehead naturally revealed itself. It released a dazzling golden light that shined along beautifully with the drop of phoenix blood essence. All of the power of blood within Lin Ming's body seemed to be summoned by some invisible force, swelling up towards the point between his eyebrows as if it were gathering into something.

"What an extraordinary strength, and what rich Source Laws..." Lin Ming exclaimed to himself. Then, that drop of phoenix blood essence finally fell onto the point between Lin Ming's eyebrows.

In that instant, Lin Ming was able to feel just how heavy this drop of blood essence was!

Ordinary Ancient Phoenix blood was around the same weight as human blood. But, this drop of phoenix blood essence was as dense as mountains and rivers, as heavy as the sea!

This was because this drop of blood essence was condensed from the life essence of a Phoenix God Beast. It was the most precious treasure of a phoenix!

Hiss...

A burning heat beyond compare spread outwards. The skin between Lin Ming's eyes was penetrated through by that drop of phoenix blood essence. Lin Ming felt his heart suddenly jump, as if his heart were having trouble processing the massive load coming from the drop of blood essence.

Hu – Hu –

Lin Ming wildly gasped for breath. Blue veins stuck out from his forehead and sweat streamed down his entire body.

In front of him, Huo Violentstone was completely focused. In a flash, his hands twisted together in a series of motions and 10,000 seal marks shot out, sinking into Lin Ming.

In order to transplant a bloodline, a secret technique was required. Let alone phoenix blood essence, even back at the Sky Spill Continent, disciples of Divine Phoenix Island also needed a special secret technique and inheritance to transplant the vermillion bird bloodline. It wasn't that anyone who wished to transplant the bloodline could do it.

As for transplanting phoenix blood essence, that was especially difficult and laborious. The more powerful the person assisting with the transplant, the better the effects would be.

Chapter 1039 – The Thoughts of God

Chapter 1039 – The Thoughts of God

…

…

…

As the blood essence thoroughly fused into Lin Ming, it turned into a million wisps of blood that entered all the blood vessels of his body. Lin Ming felt as if his entire body was burning.

In a trance, a strong and overwhelming feeling rushed through Lin Ming's spiritual sea, blotting out the world. This vast will was like the thoughts of heaven, unbearable and difficult to withstand.

"Is this the will left behind by the God Beast?"

Lin Ming shut his eyes. In his mind, the scene of a vast sea of flames appeared. This boundless sea of fire stretched for billions of miles. The billowing waves of heat were at an impossibly high temperature! Even when compared to the core of Fire Spirit Star, this sea of flames blazed dozens or even hundreds of times hotter!

"This is a star?"

Lin Ming was surprised and then extremely shocked. This was not just a star, but a super large star. It was a titan that towered above all blazing stars in the universe!

Within such a fiery star, the inherent energy it contained was incomparably terrifying. If the Sky Spill Continent were tossed inside, the entire continent would be instantly sublimated!

Faintly, Lin Ming was able to see that in the center of this massive star, there was a giant golden-red bird. This bird had a body that was nearly 10,000 miles long and its entire body was covered with smoldering flames, as if it had become one with the star itself.

As the bird cried out, its clarion cry could be heard clearly across the entire star. It was like bass drums that quaked through the marrow, shaking one's divine soul!

And the aura it exuded was vast and endless, like the infinite universe itself. In front of such a grand being, it was nearly impossible to withstand such a tremendous pressure.

This was… a phoenix?

This was the scene of a phoenix undergoing nirvana!

And it actually underwent nirvana in the center of such a great star!

Lin Ming gasped, finally understanding. After absorbing the drop of phoenix blood essence, he had also absorbed the phoenix's life essence. Through this, he had become aware of the phoenix's will as well as a small portion of its memories.

The Ancient Phoenix Clan had obtained its Ancient Phoenix blood from the remnants left behind after a phoenix underwent nirvana, and phoenix blood essence was the same. Thus, this drop of phoenix blood essence contained the residual thoughts of the phoenix as it underwent nirvana.

It was just that Lin Ming never imagined that this phoenix would actually choose the center of a several billion mile wide star to undergo nirvana in.

Bang!

The phoenix's entire body erupted with a golden red light. Terrifying flames soared to the heavens, reaching billions of miles high! These flames penetrated through the entire star, shooting out into the endless space!

When the phoenix was truly undergoing nirvana, the entire star began to shake. Endless flames spewed outwards, forming hundreds of thousands of solar prominences, each great enough to wrap around an entire planet!

As Lin Ming watched the phoenix undergo nirvana with its body bathed in flames, he felt as if he himself had become the incarnation of the phoenix, able to pull in energy from the entire star. His vision increased yet again. Not just broadening, but ascending to another level altogether.

Lin Ming felt as if he had become the master of all between the heavens and earth, a true divine god!

From his vantage point as a divine god, he overlooked all the common people of the world, he overlooked the Laws of the universe, he overlooked the creation of all matter!

This sort of viewpoint was indifferent, ruthless, and yet noble at the same time. This was what scholars meant when they said the world was unbiased and equitable, taking all of existence as nothing more than grass and dogs. In the eyes of a true divine god of the heavens, humans were no different from ants, vast seas were no different from a drop of water, and stars were no different from motes of dust. In the eyes of a divine god, everything was equal without any difference. There was no way to describe such a feeling!

In the scene that played before Lin Ming's eyes, in that moment, all of it changed!

He could see with his own the finest details of matter, a composition of yin and yang energies.

In the blink of an eye, he could also see the grandest macrocosmic scale of the universe. He saw countless galaxies flow about like vast rivers of liquid mercury. He could see the birth of stars within these galaxies. He could see their growth and also their destruction. He saw the changes of the primary worlds and their evolution over time!

Then, he also saw the power of Laws. He could make out all the changes that happened in the fire within the star, and he could also make out the endless dao diagrams on the phoenix's bones that came in countless variations. Slowly, ever so slowly, traces of insights began to blossom in Lin Ming's heart.

In that moment, Lin Ming felt a great many things appear in his mind, as if he had obtained the most precious memories of the universe. But when he wanted to remember them, they fell through his grasp like sand through a net. This feeling was extremely puzzling and mysterious.

"This comprehension of Laws..."

Lin Ming opened his eyes and countless images reappeared in his pupils. It was like galaxies were reflected in his eyes, slowly spinning around.

He knew that this was a memory of the phoenix. It was a memory of when it underwent nirvana as well as some of its understandings towards the Laws. How a phoenix understood the Laws was different from how humanity comprehended Laws from the Heavenly Dao. A phoenix was born with a deep comprehension of Laws. These comprehensions were a memory carved into their very bones!

The Laws inscribed into the marrow of a God Beast originated from the truths of the Heavenly Dao. These truths were not tainted by the world, nor had they ever been processed through anything; they were truths that were closest to the Source Laws of the universe.

"So from phoenix blood essence, the most precious factor is not that it can transform my bloodline and martial talent, but that the phoenix blood essence itself contains the source memories and Laws of the phoenix. I saw the entire universe from the viewpoint of a God Beast, and I used the mind of a human to understand it. This is truly a great lucky chance! No wonder the Ancient Phoenix Clan values the phoenix blood essence so much; it is truly marvelous. The Ancient Phoenix Clan likely doesn't have much phoenix blood essence left. Perhaps a dozen drops or maybe even two dozen drops."

After realizing all of this, Lin Ming was suddenly enlightened. To look over the source of Laws and composition of matter from the perspective of a divine god would be a tremendous advantage to his future comprehension of the Laws.

A God Beast was an existence that approached a true divine god. They possessed the so-called ‘eyes of heaven’, something that humans did not have. They were beings of a higher realm. However, their comprehension and creativity were lacking. Their great strength originated from the innate gifts they were birthed with as well as their bloodline and genes.

As for a human’s perception and creativity, that was limited by their physical restriction. If they wanted to perceive the Laws of the universe they would encounter great barriers blocking their way.

If Lin Ming was able to integrate both together, his benefits would be enormous!

“This sort of lucky chance is really too rare. I feel as if I’ve already touched the fourth level Concept of the Fire Laws. As long as I have some more time to close up, I should be able to comprehend it! Unfortunately, the time I saw from the perspective of a divine god was too short. If I were able to stay in that state for longer, my comprehensions would be much greater. In the future, if I can obtain a second or even third drop of phoenix blood essence then I will have another such chance. I have to take the greatest advantage from it that I can.”

As Lin Ming thought this, he also wondered if there was a possibility he would be able to receive the blood essence of other God Beasts or ‘divine gods’ in the future. For instance, a God Beast of the dragon race, or a God Beast like a Golden-winged Roc or Electric Violet Kirin.

If he could do so then his understandings would be even deeper and more comprehensive. After all, the phoenix only focused on the Fire Laws.

Hu – !

Lin Ming suddenly awoke from the state of sudden enlightenment he entered after absorbing the phoenix blood essence. His eyes shot open and he saw that he was in Huo Violentstone's divine world.

Huo Violentstone was sitting cross-legged a hundred feet away from Lin Ming. As he sensed Lin Ming open his eyes, he also opened his own.

"Lin Ming, you've awoken!"

"Thank you Highest Elder!" Lin Ming bowed. The reason he was able to smoothly absorb the drop of phoenix blood essence was entirely Huo Violentstone's help.

"Hehe, raising the geniuses of my clan is my duty. I also hope that you can one day create a miracle in the future and surpass Xiao Daoji or Huo Burning Heaven. I hope that you can become an extreme Holy Lord, and there may even be a slim chance that you will become a World King! However, to do so is far too difficult, far too difficult!"

Huo Violentstone sighed. The birth of a World King level powerhouse was often the cumulative progress of 100 million years. For instance, it was already considered excellent if a World King Family was able to produce a World King every 100 million years! Compared to this, Lin Ming's reputation as the Ancient Phoenix Clan's greatest talent for the last several tens of thousands of years wasn't anything at all.

Huo Violentstone said, "Lin Ming, when I helped transplant the phoenix blood essence into your body, I discovered that you have some ancient Azure Dragon bloodline within you; is that correct?"

"Yes." Lin Ming nodded. "It is reverse scale blood. When this disciple was in the lower realms world I accidentally stumbled upon an ancient relic left behind by a supreme elder, obtaining this drop of reverse scale blood. It was all because of this drop of reverse scale blood that I was able to increase my martial talent. Otherwise, I would never have had my current achievements."

In the past, Lin Ming had entered the Sorcerer Pagoda in the Southern Wilderness and obtained the drop of reverse scale blood left behind by the Sorcerer of the Southern Wilderness. The drop of reverse scale blood had nearly been absorbed by the Magic Cube before he managed to fuse together with it. The greatest benefit from this was his improved martial talent. Lin Ming's martial talent was originally not that great. Without the drop of reverse scale blood, then even with the ethereal martial intent supporting him, he would never have stepped into Life Destruction in his twenties.

"Mm… what a pity. This reverse scale blood is of an extremely high quality; it is no inferior to phoenix marrow or phoenix coronet blood. However, you didn't have any special bloodline inheritance or technique so you were forced to crudely absorb it. That was truly a waste of heaven's gifts."

Huo Violentstone shook his head. Reverse scale blood, dragon marrow blood, dragon horn blood – all of them were extremely high quality types of dragon blood. Every drop was incomparably precious.

The best method would have been for Lin Ming to first absorb a thousand drops of ordinary dragon blood to create a bloodline foundation for him. Then, the reverse scale blood would have been absorbed using a special technique of the Ancient Dragon Clan to improve the overall quality of the dragon bloodline. This would have had the effect of adding the last finishing touch. Unfortunately, Lin Ming didn't have such conditions. He had crudely absorbed the drop of reverse scale blood and also diluted it with his own bloodline. The effect was reduced to the equivalent of absorbing some ordinary dragon blood.

"Lin Ming, out of the Divine Realm God Beast Families, the Ancient Dragon Clan is the most formidable one. This is because there are many different types of Dragon God Beasts. There is an Azure Dragon, Blood Dragon, Thunder Dragon, Fire Dragon, Black Dragon, Five-clawed Gold Dragon, and Cerulean Dragon. There are even those lesser dragons with fainter bloodlines, such as hornless dragons, winged rain dragons, and others. Even the suanni and chimera can be considered part of the dragon race. They are different from my Ancient Phoenix Clan that only has the Fire Phoenix and Ice Phoenix. The Ancient Dragon Clan have extremely rich bloodline resources. There have been a few World Kings born into their clan. A World King can control a great world of their own, thus their resources are naturally much richer.

“As for my Ancient Phoenix Clan, the Kirin Clan, and the Roc Clan, we are all a great deal worse. The Ancient Dragon Clan is the leader of the four God Beast Families. On the outside, our four God Beast Families are all cooperative and mixed up together. Added up, we comprise a World King level influence. You will inevitably become an important figure in my Ancient Phoenix Clan, thus you will one day have to deal with the Ancient Dragon Clan. You must be more attentive to such matters.”

The Ancient Phoenix Clan was inferior to the Ancient Dragon Clan. However, this was not because a phoenix was weaker than a dragon, but because dragons were highly sexual creatures by nature. Their bloodlines multiplied at a far higher rate than a phoenix’s did. If a dragon had nine children, their dragon bloodline would multiply by 10 times. Moreover, there were far more types of dragons to begin with.

Chapter 1040 – End of the Smelting Trial

Chapter 1040 – End of the Smelting Trial

…

…

…

Lin Ming nodded at Huo Violentstone’s counseling.

“Alright. Lin Ming, you should have already guessed the reason why I came to Fire Spirit Star. I’m not going to play word games with you. I will ask you directly, I have decided to take you in as my disciple. What do you think?

“I’ve already heard that Yan Fengxian has taken you in as her secret disciple, but you do not need to worry about this. Martial artists of the Divine Realm all have different masters at different boundaries; it wouldn’t be strange for someone to have 10 masters. The reason I want to take you in as my disciple is to cement your status. With this status, you will by someone of my Huo Family. My Huo Family will pour forth our strength to raise you. Of course, in the future you must also support my Huo Family. I will not limit your freedom, nor will I limit your growth. In the future when your wings have spread, you may leave the Ancient Phoenix Clan and wander as you wish, adventuring and exploring to your heart’s desire. Would you be interested in such a proposal?”

Lin Ming wasn’t surprised at Huo Violentstone’s words. The more extraordinary talent he revealed, the more attention he was bound to obtain from high level forces of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Numerous influences would desire to win him over. There was no advantage to remaining neutral. Instead, he would be suspected or even excluded by the major powers. Having the backing of a great tree to cover him was the most sensible and wise decision.

“You do not need to immediately answer. After all, this isn’t a minor matter. I am willing to give you time to consider this. But, I will also tell you something. Of the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s three great families, my Huo Family will put forth the greatest effort to train you, far more than what the Xiao and Huang Families are willing to do! This is because those two families already have core figures that they are raising.

“When you entered the Illusionary God Combat Array, you should have understood just what family Crimson Strifecloud came from. Perhaps you even think that the Ancient Phoenix Clan is extremely miserable and pathetic to be suppressed by the Crimson Family. But, there is no choice but to admit that this is the truth, this is reality!”

“But that doesn’t mean that our Ancient Phoenix Clan’s legacy is incomparably far from the Crimson Family’s. Rather, it is because the Crimson Family has produced a World King and now they are enjoying their greatest period of glory. As for my Ancient Phoenix Clan, we are actually stuck in a rut. The blood pond reserves at headquarters are running low, and this has caused no amazing character to appear for the last 100,000 years. In order to measure a family, one must consider their history through a period of millions or even tens of millions of years. My Ancient Phoenix Clan may only be a Holy Land level influence, but it is actually a peak Holy Land level influence. The Kirin Clan and Roc Clan are also the same.”

“This disciple understands.” Lin Ming nodded. A World King Family would not enjoy glory for perpetuity. After a World King died, it would take tens of millions or even hundreds of millions of years in order to raise a second World King.

“Lin Ming, for these next few months you will meditate on the Laws in my divine world. I will change the flow of time so that it is reduced by 20 times. You can meditate on the Laws here before returning to participate in the end of Fire Spirit Star’s smelting trial.

As Huo Violentstone spoke, he waved his hand. Nine totem stones appeared before him.

These nine totem stones flowed seamlessly together. Thick and twisted traces appeared on them. These traces had no method to them; some were deep and some were shallow. It was somewhat similar to the chaos stones.

At the center of each of the nine totem stones, there was a pattern that converged into a single eye. These eyes were very abstract, but also seemed as if they were alive. As these nine totem stones appeared, the nine eyes also looked at Lin Ming. In that moment, Lin Ming had a feeling like his entire being had been seen through.

These nine totem stones were undoubtedly far superior to the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal. In terms of profound exquisiteness, they approached the chaos stones.

It had to be known that even though the chaos stones were close to the Source Laws, they were still only a general outline of the universe. If Lin Ming wanted an even more comprehensive understanding of the Laws, he would have to perceive the sole elements of the Laws.

“This is the most precious treasure of my Huo Family, the Sacred Flame Testament. An ancestor of my Huo Family obtained this in an ancient ruin. It does not come from the hands of any previous Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. In fact, no one really knows just what boundary the senior who left behind the Sacred Flame Testament was at. You may meditate on these. 200 days from now, I will come back and look for you.”

As a result of the change in the flow of time, 200 days in the divine world was only 10 days outside.

After Huo Violentstone left, Lin Ming sat down in the center of the Sacred Flame Testament. He began to perceive the Laws contained within them.

Dao patterns constantly appeared in Lin Ming’s pupils, slowly verifying the truths that Lin Ming had obtained from the chaos stones.

If the chaos stones that Lin Ming meditated on before could be said to be the skeleton of Laws, then the current Sacred Flame Testament was the flesh and blood that filled the skeleton. The skeleton was the foundation, but having flesh and blood was also essential.

“This Sacred Flame Testament is really mystical. Not only is there a massive amount of Law fragments in them, but these nine eyes also contain the will of the senior who left behind the Sacred Flame Testament. If I can withstand the baptism of this will, the advantages will be tremendous…”

Lin Ming thought. He quickly entered the ethereal state and found himself swimming in a sea of Laws, constantly absorbing the Law fragments within the Sacred Flame Testament.

After a totem stone was carved and completed, it could independently absorb Laws from the vast space of the universe and condense them into Law fragments. These Law fragments could then be comprehended through meditation and absorbed.

These Law fragments were extremely precious. Once they were absorbed it would take a great deal of time to reform them. Thus, just allowing Lin Ming to meditate on the Sacred Flame Testament was a great hemorrhaging cost to the Huo Family. Lin Ming wasn’t an ungrateful person that had no virtues. Since the Huo Family showed him sufficient sincerity and since there also wasn’t any harm in joining them, he might as well push the boat along and take Huo Violentstone as his master.

During these 200 days of meditation, Lin Ming’s enlightenment of the Sacred Flame Testament’s Fire Laws became increasingly profound. On the 180th day, Lin Ming suddenly opened up his eyes from meditation. In that moment, the fire origin energy around him stirred up. Underneath his watchful gaze, a wisp of fire origin energy slowly condensed into the shape of a crane. The fire crane landed on his shoulder and crooned.

Lin Ming’s eyes moved. The fire crane turned into a fire snake that winded down and around Lin Ming’s arm.

Then, in front of Lin Ming, fire origin energy constantly condensed into various shapes. There were fire birds, golden crows, flaming parasol trees, and so forth!

This was the fourth level Concept of the Fire Laws – Manifestation!

In that moment, Lin Ming had finally touched upon the threshold of the fourth level Concept of Fire and just barely crossed into it. All that was left was to comprehend the fourth level Concept to large success. He would understand its essence and fuse it with the first three level Concepts into one.

After comprehending the fourth level Concept of Fire, condensed origin energy would have a spirituality and life of its own; it wouldn't just be a shape on the surface. In the future, when Lin Ming was manipulating origin energy, it would also be far more powerful.

The same Concept also appeared within the Thunder Concepts. With the Fire Laws' Concept of Manifestation to serve as a guide and signal, it would be much easier to comprehend the Thunder Laws' Concept of Manifestation in the future.

After several more days of meditation, Lin Ming's comprehension of the fourth level Concept became even more profound. Then, after Huo Violentstone contacted him, he left the divine world and flew straight towards the 18 Hells of Flame.

The Laws comprehended from the totem stones needed to be tempered and verified in the Hells of Flame. Lin Ming once again broke through into the seventh level 5000 mile zone.

At this depth, the power of fire that swirled about was just perfect for him. He rapidly consumed his energy here. Yet, it wasn't at an unbearable point, nor was it at a point where there wasn't enough pressure.

Lin Ming began a long period of training at the seventh level 5000 mile distance of the Hells of Flame. When he consumed nearly all of his true essence he would return to the second and third level to rest and restore his strength before returning to the seventh level yet again.

Besides training in the Hells of Flame, Lin Ming also entered Totem Tower. He took the time to meditate on the chaos stones again to verify the truths from the Sacred Flame Testament. His understandings of the chaos stones also deepened.

Like this, time slowly passed. Soon, a year had gone by.

The end of the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial soon approached.

And today began the final round of the smelting trial. All of the Ancient Phoenix Clan disciples needed to undergo a final examination. All rookie disciples that could enter the third level of the Hells of Flame would obtain a high-grade saint artifact as well as a drop of phoenix plume blood.

In addition, those who passed the Hells of Flame's third level obtained the qualifications to attempt the Illusionary God Combat Array smelting trial. Those that managed to slaughter 300 enemies within would also receive rewards.

At killing 400 and 500 enemies, the rewards would increase. Every 100 enemies cut down resulted in a greater reward.

"Mm? Yan Littlemoon has slain 650 people in the Illusionary God Combat Array?"

Praying Phoenix Palace's top rookie disciple Xiao Whitesnow was shocked as he heard this news. He had only managed to slaughter 500 enemies and yet Yan Littlemoon had reached 650!

Before this, Yan Littlemoon had only managed to kill 596 people. In the following year, not only did she not lose heart because of her frustrations towards Lin Ming, but her progress increased by a great deal instead!

Although Lin Ming was the unparalleled shining star of this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial, Yan Littlemoon also couldn't be ignored. Her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline brought her a great deal of attention from many distinguished families. There were countless handsome and charming heroic young elites that were attracted to an unmarried virgin with the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin also came!"

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin has left seclusion!"

At this time, many people were gathered at Totem Tower's square. As Lin Ming left seclusion, everyone's eyes turned over to him. No one was concerned with Yan Littlemoon and Xiao Whitesnow's achievements anymore. All attention was turned to Lin Ming.

Ever since Lin Ming completed the Illusionary God Combat Array's Thousand Slaughter a year ago, he had spent nearly all his time in seclusion and training. This was his first time making a public appearance.

"I heard that Lin Ming had been training at the seventh level 5000-6000 mile distance. And that is only training – he hasn't been trying to rush through! I heard he can stay for several days at a time!"

"Are you sure? Holy crap. Does Junior-apprentice Brother Lin have a chance of reaching the eighth level?"

"Of course I'm sure! Also, Junior-apprentice Brother Lin seems to have comprehended the Concept of Manifestation. This level of understanding towards the Laws is quickly catching up to Crimson Strifecloud!"

"Heavens. I have no idea just what step Lin Ming's strength has arrived at."

All the disciples looked at Lin Ming, discussing and praising him. Xiao Whitesnow ruefully smiled, darkly sighing in his heart. Lin Ming's speed of progress was just too fast. It was so fast that he couldn't even see his back.

At this point, Huo Violentstone, Monarch Sweetyfox, Duke Golden Sword, as well as two fresh new faces appeared in front of everyone. The two newcomers were a man and a woman. But, what was strange was that they were covered with purple scales and there was a pair of antlers on their heads. They didn't appear to be Ancient Phoenix Clan clansmen.

"Is that the… Ancient Dragon Clan? Kirin Clan?"

Chapter 1041 – God Beast Mystic Realm

Chapter 1041 – God Beast Mystic Realm

…

…

…

“Senior Huo, is that Lin Ming?”

Of the two strangers from different clans, the woman turned to look over all the disciples before her eyes finally fell onto Lin Ming.

Just from looking at him, she couldn’t see anything special about Lin Ming besides his solid foundation.

“He defeated Crimson Strifecloud of the same age?”

“Yes!” Huo Violentstone said in a satisfied voice as he stroked his beard.

“Mm…” The woman fell into thought, not saying anything. Since Huo Violentstone said so, then even if there was some exaggeration to his stories, they were mostly true. Even so, she found it hard to believe that this handsome young man before her was such an extraordinary chosen pride of heaven.

“There is Lin Ming as well as Yan Littlemoon with her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Senior’s harvests during this Ancient Phoenix smelting trial aren’t too bad!” The man from the two strangers politely said. His status was somewhat lower than Huo Violentstone’s.

“This is the most glorious moment that my Ancient Phoenix Clan has experienced for the last several tens of thousands of years. Of my Phoenix Clan’s two great branches, the Ice

Phoenix Patriarch has gone off to who knows where and returned to some strange polar land. As for my Fire Phoenix Clan, it is hard for us to handle everything alone. We're not like your Kirin Clan. You have several great branches supporting each other so it's much easier for you fellows to grow and develop."

The phoenix was one of the rarest God Beasts of the Divine Realm. As for the kirins and dragons, there were many more of them. The Ancient Phoenix Clan only had two branches: the Fire Phoenix Branch and the Ice Phoenix Branch. However, the Kirin Clan actually had four branches: the Electric Violet Kirin, Fire Kirin, Water Kirin, and Umbral Kirin Branches. They had over 200 billion clansmen among their ranks.

"Senior Huo is too humble. Just your Fire Phoenix Clan is grand enough to compare favorably with two or three branches of our Kirin Clan. It seems that Senior is planning to allow Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon to attend the journey into the God Beast Mystic Realm to explore and gain experience?"

"That's the plan!"

Huo Violentstone nodded. The reason that Monarch Sweetyfox and Duke Golden Sword had come to Fire Spirit Star this time was to observe Yan Littlemoon as well as receive and bring her to the God Beast Mystic Realm to gain experience. They never imagined that they would find an even greater pleasant surprise in Lin Ming, to a degree that even Huo Violentstone was alerted.

The God Beast Mystic Realm was located in a separate world from the Divine Realm.

The Divine Realm didn't have only 3000 great worlds. Rather, there were countless worlds that existed around these 3000 worlds, with numerous mystic realms and near-endless space.

The God Beast Mystic Realm was located in one of these chaotic mystic realms. Its position was one of the greatest secrets of the four God Beast Clans.

This was the hidden treasure of the four God Beast Clans.

The Kirin Clan woman looked at Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon. She nodded and said, "The four great clans can only allow an extremely limited number of people to enter the mystic realm each time. The Ancient Dragon Clan accounts for most of the quota. As for the remainder of the spots divided amongst the rest, each one is extremely valuable. They do have the qualifications, but..."

Of the four great God Beast Clans, the Ancient Dragon Clan was the most overbearing and arrogant. But, they indeed had the capital to be overbearing. They had the richest bloodline resources, and their strength was greater than the other three clans' combined together!

The strength of the four God Beast Clans added together could compare with a World King Family, and this was mainly because of the Ancient Dragon Clan.

And the reason that the four God Beast Clans could continue to obtain the God Beast bloodline and preserve the God Beast Mystic Realm was also mainly credited to the Ancient Dragon Clan. Otherwise, there might be some World King level influences that would move against the God Beast Clans and wrest away the God Beast Mystic Realm as well as the four God Beast Clans' bloodline strength. Although the God Beast bloodline was extremely thin, the quality was correspondingly extremely high. It was immensely beneficial to a powerhouse.

The Kirin Clan woman's words trailed off, but Huo Violentstone could clearly understand her meaning. She wanted to experience Yan Littlemoon's strength, and especially Lin Ming's strength. After all, one couldn't simply rely on rumors and hearsay; seeing was believing. When Huo Violentstone had described Lin Ming, it had all seemed too exaggerated. Even though the Kirin Clan woman knew that Huo Violentstone wasn't one to speak nonsense, she still couldn't believe his words.

Huo Violentstone stroked his beard and smiled, saying, "Lin Ming, Yan Littlemoon, the two of you go into the 18 Hells of Flame and rush as deep as you can."

Huo Violentstone had left the Sacred Flame Testament for Lin Ming to meditate on for 200 days. Then he left Fire Spirit Star. Afterwards, for Lin Ming's training, he didn't question him and an entire year had passed in the meantime. He didn't know just how Lin Ming's cultivation had gone and he also wanted to take a good look at how he was now. This could be considered the final test before the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial ended.

"I wonder just how much this brat managed to perceive from the Sacred Flame Testament, and just how much he comprehended of the fourth level Concept of Fire."

Huo Violentstone mumbled to himself. He had great expectations in his heart. The seventh level of the Hells of Flame was called the domain of god. As for the eighth level, that was simply unimaginable.

"Yes!"

Lin Ming nodded. Rushing through the Illusionary God Combat Array was troublesome but rushing through the 18 Hells of Flame was much faster. In the last four months, he had used the majority of his time to meditate on the Laws. The 18 Hells of Flame was a place where he could temper and verify the Laws he had learnt. Normally he couldn't go too deep into the Hells of Flame, otherwise his consumption of energy would be too great and he wouldn't be able to last too long; that wasn't too helpful for training. Thus, Lin Ming simply didn't know just what his limits were.

Now, he could finally test it out.

Without further ado, Lin Ming broke straight into the 18 Hells of Flame. He opened the Gate of Wonder and Mystic Lightning Shade, hurtling deep into the Hells of Flame at a breakneck pace.

A fire spirit mirror appeared in the sky above the square. The fire spirit mirror was thousands of feet long and Lin Ming was clearly reflected in it; this was naturally the handiwork of the Ruby Sovereign.

As the disciples of the three branch palaces looked up at the vast fire spirit mirror in the sky, all of them were filled with rabid excitement. They also wanted to see just what progress Lin Ming had made in the last year. It had to be known that Lin Ming usually trained in the seventh level 5000 mile distance, so a thought would always pop up in these people's minds.

Just where was Lin Ming's limit?

"I wonder if Junior-apprentice Brother Lin can break through the limit of the eighth level…" White Daohong whispered.

Beside him, Lu Xiaoyun also watched the fire spirit mirror in the skies, her vision a bit blurry. "The eighth level. That is a legend among legends, a myth beyond reckoning. I simply cannot imagine it. When I attended the Ancient Phoenix smelting trail for a second time, even I wasn't able to step into the eighth level…"

The 18 levels of the Hells of Flame became much more difficult the further down they went, nearly growing at an exponential rate. The difficulty soared at the seventh level 5000 mile mark, but at the eighth level, the difficulty took a qualitative leap forwards. It had to be known that even characters like Lu Xiaoyun and White Daohong could only reach the eleventh level at the moment, and both of their cultivations were two large boundaries higher than Lin Ming's.

Lin Ming's speed was extremely high. Even at the third level he could maintain a velocity 30 times the speed of sound!

This time, he no longer needed to reduce his speed to temper his Laws. His only goal now was to plunge downward as far as he could and find out just where his limits lay!

Fourth level broken!

Fifth level broken!

Yan Littlemoon had rushed through the Hells of Flame with Lin Ming and was rapidly flung far behind, the distance growing larger and larger between them. Although Yan Littlemoon was a stunning character in her own right, the difference between her and Lin Ming was too great.

Before long, Lin Ming broke into the sixth level.

At this point his speed had already reduced by a great deal. The pressure of the sixth level was not minor. The reason that Lin Ming lowered his speed was not that he couldn't maintain it, but because the consumption of energy would have been too great. Since he was trying to break past all previous records, he had to save his true essence and physical strength.

Half an hour later, Lin Ming shot into the seventh level. Then, he reached 5000 miles deep into the seventh level.

This depth was the depth that Lin Ming usually trained at. When he trained here he could do so for several days at a time. Training for such a long time would exhaust nearly all of Lin Ming's energy. Each time he finished training here he would reach his limits, and his entire body would be burnt black and made into a miserable appearance.

Pushing oneself to the limit was the most crude and brutal, yet effective method to comprehend the Laws.

Seventh level 6000 miles, seventh level 7000 miles, seventh level 8000 miles…

Lin Ming's speed continued to decline. When he reached the seventh level 9000 mile distance, that was his first time reaching such a depth.

At this depth, Lin Ming simply felt as if he were in the midst of a sun. The flames here had long since turned into pure light. This was because the little particles had been heated up to such a mind-boggling degree that they began to release blazing light!

As this fiery light fell onto Lin Ming's body, it fused with the spiritual fire origin energy within him, transforming it. This was an expression of the Concept of Manifestation.

At this depth, Lin Ming felt a tremendous pressure on him. His protective true essence was compressed to within three inches of his body. Moreover, it began to emit crackling noises as if he couldn't withstand such a great pressure.

Lin Ming’s thoughts focused and his mind touched upon the Heretical God Sprout.

Heretical God Force – open!

In that moment, the three flame leaves of the Heretical God Sprout began blooming with a brilliant radiance.

Lin Ming became a flaming meteor that plunged towards the eighth level!

With the sound of rolling thunder, the space barrier of the eighth level was shattered by Lin Ming.

At that time, he had truly entered into the eighth level of the Hells of Flame!

Chapter 1042 – Ancient Dragon Clan

Chapter 1042 – Ancient Dragon Clan

…

…

…

The eighth level of the Hells of Flame. Even when placed within the entire history of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, that was nothing less than a miracle!

This depth could be called the birth of a new era!

"Great!"

Huo Violentstone couldn't help but uproariously laugh. He originally only wanted to see Lin Ming's practice; he didn't have any hopes that he would really be able to break into the eighth level.

"The two of you, how about it? Hahahahaha!" Huo Violentstone clapped his hands together. He had a straightforward and bold personality. Now that he was so elated, he couldn't conceal his satisfaction and pride, thus he laughed as he spoke to the two Kirin Clan envoys.

The Kirin Clan woman gulped. She opened her mouth as if she wanted to say something, but eventually no words came out.

Beside her, the man forcefully smiled and said with some stammered difficulty, "He's quite… good!"

The two envoys were well aware of what it meant for a seventh stage Life Destruction rookie disciple to break into the eighth level of the Hells of Flame. Although their Kirin Clan was overflowing with geniuses, when these geniuses were compared to Lin Ming, they couldn't even stand up to half his height.

Rumors were heard, but seeing was believed. When they heard that Lin Ming had defeated Crimson Strifecloud, they always had a question in their hearts. But now that they saw Lin Ming's results with their own eyes, they were really left speechless.

But after that…

Lin Ming didn't stop after reaching the eighth level!

He released the Heretical God Force and continued to rush ahead. Then, he unexpectedly managed to reach the eighth level 1500 mile distance before arriving at his limit.

Lin Ming's final result was 1500 miles into the eighth level!

This was a terrifying depth. The disciples of the three branch palaces were numbed with shock. To them, the seventh level was already a concept that was difficult to understand, much less the eighth level!

Yan Littlemoon was also quite extraordinary; her final result was 5000 miles into the sixth level. If this result was announced in usual times it would have been enough to alarm the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters. But now, when compared to Lin Ming, this result seemed a bit dismal.

"I really must congratulate Senior Huo, you have truly accepted a wonderful disciple this time."

"Hahahaha!" Huo Violentstone happily laughed. "This old man's luck could be said to be finally changing for the better. What about it. Do Lin Ming and this Yan Littlemoon have the qualifications to enter the God Beast Mystic Realm?"

“Of course! However, there is some risk associated with entering the God Beast Mystic Realm. Senior Huo should form some contingency plans for emergencies.” The Kirin Clan woman said, switching the topic.

“Of course. Jade that isn’t cut and polished cannot be made into anything good. For a martial artist to grow, taking risks and suffering bitter dangers is normal. If there is no risk and a genius simply stays in the Ancient Phoenix Clan all year in seclusion, then they will never have any great achievements. A beast must return to the mountains in order to become the king of all beasts. If someone dies just because of a bit of risk then it can only be said that their destiny was lacking. If so, then death would be their inevitable fate to begin with!”

As for the risks involved in the mystic realm, Huo Violentstone was extremely confident in Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon. He firmly believed that characters like them wouldn’t die in some mystic realm.

“Mm. There are still some months before entering the mystic realm so we have to return to the clan and prepare. And Senior Huo, you should be aware that the Ancient Dragon Clan also has several extreme talents amongst their younger generation. I fear that there will be a collision amongst everyone in this adventure. I wonder just how Apprentice Nephew Lin will fare in the chaos…”

“Hah, I also know of those little babies from the Ancient Dragon Clan. How could they possibly compare with this old man’s own disciple!” Huo Violentstone proudly said, taking a stance as if none of those Ancient Dragon Clan disciples could compete with Lin Ming.

But, those words of ‘how could they possibly compare with this old man’s own disciple’ really left the two Kirin Clan envoys staring back, amazed.

According to what they knew, it was only when Lin Ming defeated Crimson Strifecloud that Huo Violentstone had received him as a disciple. But listening to the meaning behind Huo Violentstone’s words, it was as if all of Lin Ming’s achievements were due to Huo Violentstone’s teachings.

Of course, they only thought this. Neither of them dared to voice their thoughts out loud.

"Lin Ming is truly fierce, but the Ancient Dragon Clan cannot be underestimated. This time, our Kirin Clan and the Roc Clan might have some difficulties…"

The reason that the Ancient Dragon Clan was so strong was not just because of how widely spread their bloodline was, but also because they had over ten times the clansmen than the Ancient Phoenix Clan did.

The Ancient Dragon Clan was comprised of over a trillion individuals!

With such a massive base number of clansmen and such thick bloodlines, the Ancient Dragon Clan naturally had more heroic young elites appearing amongst their ranks. This was also the reason why the Ancient Dragon Clan was able to produce a World King. In normal years, even all the heroic young elites of the three other God Beast Clans combined couldn't compare with those from the Ancient Dragon Clan! Correspondingly, most of the benefits from the God Beast Mystic Realm were also taken up by the Ancient Dragon Clan.

And this time, with a monstrous freak like Lin Ming added into the mix, the Kirin Clan and Roc Clan would have a much smaller piece of cake to divide.

As the two Kirin Clan envoys thoughts of this, all they could do was force a bitter smile.

The final result of Lin Ming's Ancient Phoenix smelting trial in which he broke into the eighth level of the Hells of Flame soon spread to the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters.

……..

At this time, within a grand immortal palace of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, there was a dimensional realm filled with elegant and beautiful scenery.

Here, there were stretches of celestial mountains, vast seas of clouds, glorious jade palaces, and lakeside pavilions scattered all over. Countless spirit birds soared through the sky. There were divine cranes holding wine, white monkeys presenting fruit – such imagery was truly too beautiful to behold!

And in the center of this paradise was a towering parasol tree. Hundreds and thousands of people could hold hands and they still wouldn't be able to wrap around the base of this parasol tree. And, underneath this giant parasol tree was a plain stone table. Sitting down at this stone table, a yellow-clothed old man and a middle-aged person with a long beard were playing chess. This old man was a Highest Elder of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, and as for that middle-aged man with a long beard, he was the current Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Gale Violetsun!

"Mm? What is it?" The yellow-clothed old man looked up and asked. He noticed that Gale Violetsun hesitated for a moment just now.

"It's Lin Ming. He's finally finished his test. He managed to reach the eighth level of the Hells of Flame. Or, it is more accurate to say he reached a depth of 1500 miles into the eighth level!"

"Hoh!" The yellow-clothed old man put away the chess piece in his hand as a wonderful light bloomed in his eyes. "How incredible! Violetsun, didn't you participate in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial as a rookie disciple 50,000 years ago? If I remembered correctly, you reached a depth of 4000 miles into the seventh level! As for me, I participated 70,000 years ago and I was still worse than you by 1000 miles!"

"That's right. The eighth level… I never imagined that was possible! If there is no accident then Lin Ming will become a figure on the level of Xiao Daoji or Huo Burning Heaven in the future. Not just that, but besides Lin Ming there is also Yan Littlemoon. Moreover, in the Central Palace there is also someone who managed to reach the sixth level. But speaking of it, it is really a failure. The Central Palace has the most resources and the best conditions, and yet the disciples who are raised there are inferior to those from Fire Spirit Star!"

"You can't blame the Central Palace, their performance has been the same as usual. It's just that the appearance of a monstrous once in 10 million year genius like Lin Ming is beyond anyone's expectations. This time that old man Huo has really gained a great deal. But the Xiao Family and the Huang Family also had no way of competing with that old man Huo. It's not like they could push aside all the geniuses of their own family in order to raise an outsider. Speaking of which, the God Beast Mystic Realm is about to open. Do you plan on sending Lin Ming there?" The yellow-clothed old man suddenly asked as he fiddled with the crystal chess piece in his hand.

"Of course! We have to spend a billion violet sun stones to open the mystic realm so we certainly can't have Lin Ming miss out on such a lucky chance."

"Heh, a billion violet sun stones eh?" The yellow-clothed old man laughed. "Whenever this time comes around, the Internal Affairs Envoy is in such a frazzled state that he looks like a frosted eggplant. It truly is expensive, but also worth the cost. Our Ancient Phoenix Clan should be able to strive for over 10 spots this time!"

"Mm, that's about right. We should have 12 spots. The Kirin Clan and Roc Clan should each have 10. As for the Ancient Dragon Clan, they should have 36."

"36!" The yellow-clothed old man frowned. "That's more than all other three clans combined!"

The quota of people allowed into the God Beast Mystic Realm smelting trial was based on the quality of the geniuses in every young generation of the clans. The higher quality of geniuses that a clan had, the more spots they would be apportioned. Otherwise, they would receive fewer spots. These were the rules established by the Ancient Dragon Clan.

The Ancient Dragon Clan had an immense population as well as many resources. Thus, they overflowed with talent. Every time they would obtain the majority of the quota of spots.

Every single spot was extremely precious, because each time a person was sent through to the God Beast Mystic Realm, it required a massive amount of violet sun stones to be used up.

This was because there was some strange energy barrier separating the God Beast Mystic Realm and the Divine Realm. As for what this barrier was or how it formed, no one knew. Perhaps it wasn't even created by human hands, but rather formed naturally from the Heavenly Dao.

A mortal could pass through this barrier, but for a martial artist to pass through they needed to consume a massive amount of energy. The higher their cultivation, the more energy was required!

If one wanted to have a Divine Lord powerhouse pass into the God Beast Mystic Realm, then the amount of violet sun stones necessary to do so would be an unimaginable number. Perhaps even dozens or hundreds of billions of violet sun stones wouldn't be enough!

As for a Holy Lord level character, just forget it!

There were countless treasures and lucky chances to be found in the God Beast Mystic Realm. Many of these lucky chances would even make Holy Lords and World Kings froth at the mouth. But unfortunately, these supreme elders actually weren't able to go exploring because the costs were just too great.

Every time the God Beast Clans sent people over, they could only send several dozen martial artists all at the Divine Sea realm or Life Destruction realm. The amount they could explore was highly limited.

Thus, even though the God Beast Mystic Realm had been in the hands of the four God Beast Clans for over a hundred million years by now, to date, the treasures that the four God Beast Clans obtained from the God Beast Mystic Realm only amounted to less than a millionth of what was there!

Inside was a massive amount of mysterious and fantastic collections of all sorts. If the entirety of the treasures were excavated then the total value of the wealth simply couldn't be imagined.

It would be enough to cause a massive war to rage throughout the entire Divine Realm!

But, it was also this strange limiting rule of the God Beast Mystic Realm that allowed the four God Beast Clans to calmly and steadily secure the mystic realm for all this time. Otherwise, there might be some World King level influences that joined forces to struggle with the four God Beast Clans.

The feeling of seeing a mountain of treasures in front of them and still not being able to touch it wasn't much better. A mortal could consume a miniscule, nearly imperceptible amount of transmission energy to cross through, but mortals were just far too weak and fragile. They weren't even able to withstand the power of tearing space of the transmission array, and would be reduced to ashes before anything happened. As for a Xiantian realm or Revolving Core realm martial artist, although they could manage to be transmitted to the God Beast Mystic Realm, they weren't able to withstand the dangers there.

They could go, but they could never return.

It was because of all these various reasons that the best candidates to dispatch over were the most talented geniuses amongst the junior disciples.

These junior disciples' cultivations weren't too high so the energy required to send them wasn't too high. But, they were also individuals with extremely high combat strength. They could contend with Divine Sea martial artists at Life Destruction, or contend with Divine Transformation martial artists at the Divine Sea. Their ability to survive was high enough.

Moreover, entering the mystic realm was a great lucky chance to begin with. Sending a top genius disciple there was the best use of a spot.

"Humph, the Ancient Dragon Clan is too imperious. The number of disciples they send out is actually three times our own, and yet they only have to pay 1.5 billion violet sun stones; that isn't even much more than what we pay. Every time we have to freely subsidize their disciples with our violet sun stones!"

The yellow-clothed man said with angry indignation as he thought of this.

Gale Violetsun shook his head. This was just how things were. The Ancient Dragon Clan was the most powerful, thus they were able to protect the total resources of the four great God Beast Clans. They played the role of deterrent to all other influences that would dare move against them. In brief, these violet sun stones were no different from a protection fee that the Ancient Dragon Clan received.

Chapter 1043 – 12 People

Chapter 1043 – 12 People

…

…

…

“The God Beast Mystic Realm has God Beasts buried within its lands? And it was also once an ancient battlefield? Many powerhouses died in that mystic realm before?” As Lin Ming heard Huo Violentstone’s description of the God Beast Mystic Realm, he echoed the words out of surprise. He didn’t think that such strange and fantastical lands existed in the Divine Realm.

“Didn’t Senior Huo say that those with higher cultivations have a harder time shifting through the space barrier? So how would there be so many powerhouses that died in the God Beast Mystic Realm?” Yan Littlemoon asked, puzzled.

“That war was something that occurred far too long ago. The history of the Divine Realm is endless; there are many matters where the truth can no longer be found. Perhaps in the past this God Beast Mystic Realm was part of the Divine Realm but was later cut off, forming the current realm. What I must tell you two is that there are countless treasures littered throughout the mystic realm. However, it is a pity that we cannot take them. There are many treasures that are even more precious than phoenix blood essence! Of course, it is also extremely difficult to obtain them! This is an enormous opportunity for you. This will be a test of not just your strength, but also your destiny. If your strength is lacking then there will be no returning alive for you. If your destiny is lacking then even if you return alive, you will come back empty-handed.”

Lin Ming nodded. This was indeed a great opportunity for him. If he was to depend on just the support of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's resources alone then it would be easy to become a Holy Lord level powerhouse, but ascending to a realm beyond that would be far more difficult. For instance, absorbing one or two drops of phoenix blood essence was the limit of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. If he absorbed several dozen drops then all the reserves of the Ancient Phoenix Clan would be sucked dry by Lin Ming.

"I also have to warn you. After you enter the mystic realm, you must not only be cautious of the mystic realm's dangers, but you also need to be wary of the others there. All methods of detection and surveillance will be cut off. There may be cases where people kill others to steal away their wealth. Although the four great God Beast Clans appear to be united on the outside, that is only a surface illusion. In the face of treasures, all else becomes for naught. There can be, and there will be people that will try and take advantage of you or murder you. You must not be soft-hearted. Make your kills clean, erase all evidence, and no one will be able to trace anything back to you."

Huo Violentstone's last words were spoken with a true essence sound transmission. Lin Ming wasn't surprised at all. In his years when he wandered the world, he had experienced many frigid life or death battles, and he had also killed countless others. If someone tried to kill him, then he would retaliate without hesitation.

However, Yan Littlemoon was different. As she heard Huo Violentstone's true essence message, she was startled and her complexion changed.

Most of her life had been spent diligently cultivating. Although she had also fought many times, most of that was dueling and comparing martial arts. She had yet to engage in a true life or death slaughterfest. Although she was well aware that murder and robbery happened all the time in mystic realm adventures, she still felt her heart tighten as she heard Huo Violentstone directly advise them to cleanly kill off their enemies and erase the evidence.

Huo Violentstone had lived for tens of thousands of years. He only needed to look at Yan Littlemoon's reaction to see what the problem was.

This was the flaw of a flower that only grew in a greenhouse. In terms of the ability to survive in a mystic realm, even if she rode a horse she would never catch up to Lin Ming.

“Lin Ming, look after Yan Littlemoon and don’t let anything too bad happen to her. Otherwise, it will truly be a great loss to my clan.” Huo Violentstone suddenly turned and grinned at Lin Ming. “Moreover, she still hasn’t married yet and the bloodline strength in her body is very precious. Hehe, perhaps such a good thing might fall into your lap in the future, hahaha!”

“Uh…” Lin Ming never thought that Huo Violentstone would actually say such crude and vulgar words. He was left speechless for a long time.

…………….

Several months quickly passed. In this time, Lin Ming closed up in cultivation. As for Yan Littlemoon, she journeyed off to a forest mystic realm in order to experience true combat and slaughter.

Finally, all the disciples that were to enter the God Beast Mystic Realm gathered at a special meeting place on a far off planet. There was a total of 12 people!

Of these 12 people, Lin Ming didn’t recognize any of them besides Yan Littlemoon. These were geniuses of the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters, the three great families, as well as the 72 branch palaces.

As for Lu Xiaoyun and White Daohong, they did not have the qualifications to join. First, their talent was lacking. Second, and the most important reason, was that their cultivation was just too high. The energy required to push them through into the mystic realm was far too great.

When Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon arrived, everyone’s eyes shifted to Lin Ming. Lin Ming didn’t recognize them, but all of them knew of Lin Ming. Lin Ming was the first disciple in 40,000 years to complete the Thousand Slaughter of the Illusionary God Combat

Array. He defeated Crimson Strifecloud of the same age and he had even entered the eighth level of the Hells of Flame as a rookie disciple.

No matter which one of these achievements was mentioned, any one of them was enough to shock and alarm the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, I've heard so much of your great fame! And there is also Miss Littlemoon, I have also heard of your wonderful reputation. To see you two in the flesh today, I am truly honored!" As soon as Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon landed, a young man approached them, holding a folding fan in his hands. This young man was extremely handsome and his build was athletic. He was around the same height as Lin Ming. He wore all white clothes, and he had an elegant and noble bearing as if he were untouched by the world.

"This senior-apprentice brother is..."

"Haha, my name is Xiao Ping. I am the son of the Xiao Family's Xiao Chuji." The man smiled as he spoke. His smile gave off a refreshing spring feel.

Xiao Chuji!

Lin Ming's eyebrow arched up. 10,000 years ago, Xiao Chuji had attended his rookie disciple smelting trial and had reached the seventh level of the Hells of Flame. He was the Xiao Family's most infamous figure at the moment, and also a powerful candidate to become the next Patriarch!

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that within the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan, besides the current Patriarch and the old monsters that were the Highest Elders, Xiao Chuji and Huang Yuefeng had the highest statuses!

"Xiao Ping... he's actually at the middle Divine Sea realm. His cultivation is really high!"

Lin Ming glanced through the crowd. He discovered that Xiao Ping had the highest cultivation of everyone present. Besides him, there were two early Divine Sea martial artists and the rest were all at Life Destruction.

The energy required to transmit a middle Divine Sea martial artist into the God Beast Mystic Realm was several times the amount it took to transfer a Life Destruction martial artist. If one didn’t have an exorbitant background and also the secret support of their family, then it was impossible for a disciple to have such treatment!

“Middle Divine Sea cultivation. It’s assured that he has reached Ninefall, but I have no idea how many Layered Heavens he managed to produce. I am not this man’s match.”

Lin Ming secretly estimated in his mind. A martial artist could see if someone had reached Eightfall or Ninefall, but what they couldn’t see was how many Layered Heavens they gathered during their Ninefall process. But thinking about it, if someone like White Daohong could produce a Seven Layered Heavens, then this Xiao Ping should have reached at least Nine Layered Heavens!

Nine Layered Heavens could be considered a qualitative leap! The baptism of Laws that Xiao Ping had to withstand was much greater and his cultivation was much higher than Lin Ming’s to begin with. Lin Ming was truly not this Xiao Ping’s opponent.

“So it is Senior Xiao Chuji’s son, Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao. Your aura is indeed extraordinary!” Lin Ming complimented. Yan Littlemoon also curtsied.

Of the 12 people present, only three of them were women. Yan Littlemoon received the most attention of the women present. She was the only one of the three to have a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline and she was also a virgin.

In the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters and the three great families, there were also others with the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. But, among the juniors that were under 33 years of age, there was only Yan Littlemoon!

After Xiao Ping, Lin Ming was introduced to the others. When meeting the others, Lin Ming discovered that only two of them came from the 72 branch palaces like him and Yan Littlemoon. The rest all originated from either the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters or the three great families!

For instance, there was a Highest Elder's great-great-grandson, a daughter of a Vice Patriarch, grandson of a Vice Patriarch, and so forth.

This caused Lin Ming to sigh. The Ancient Phoenix Clan was really a pyramid in which those at the top enjoyed the greatest amount of resources!

As for such wonderful opportunities like entering the God Beast Mystic Realm, they were also mostly given to these individuals. Their relations were solid, their backgrounds were deep, their bloodline was powerful, and their martial talents were extremely high. These were geniuses that had been meticulously raised since birth. With such great talent, why wouldn't it be their turn to enter the God Beast Mystic Realm?

He and Yan Littlemoon also stood here, but that was because their talent was too outstanding and they had forcefully struggled for the spots.

"So he's the Lin Ming I've heard about. Brother Xiao, if he goes together with us into the mystic realm then I fear he will take away a good part of our benefits. Moreover, that fellow is also part of the Huo Family, so he is a natural enemy to your Xiao Family. If this boy manages to grow in the future then he will likely be able to threaten your father for the position of Patriarch! During this adventure in the God Beat Mystic Realm, of the Seven Riverflame Sons, only four of us have come. We will do everything we can to support Eldest Brother. Although this brat Lin Ming has amazing talent, his cultivation is just too low. Even I will be able to deal with him. And, there is also that little beauty Yan Littlemoon. She's quite the looker and she also has the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Perhaps we should..."

Behind Xiao Ping, a young man smirked as he spoke with a true essence sound transmission. His name was Huang Tidemark and he came from the Huang Family. He was known as the Little Tornado of the Riverflame Sons, and he was extremely infamous amongst the young masters for being a playboy. But this nickname not only included his talent, but also his dark and heinous reputation.

Xiao Ping frowned and grimly said, “Tidemark, what nonsense are you spouting this time! Although there are countless disputes between our three great families, we must appear united on the outside. The Ancient Phoenix Clan is a unit where everyone’s glory is connected. Harm to one family means harm to the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan. Destroying a genius that my clan has spent so many resources and time to train is a capital crime! If this sort of matter happens then sooner or later my Ancient Phoenix Clan will decline and finally perish. Moreover, before we enter the mystic realm we will also have a spell placed within our bodies. We must make an oath that we cannot kill each other!”

“Haha, I was just joking around, right? I’m not speaking of killing Lin Ming, but causing him to eat some losses isn’t too bad. Or else I fear that most of our potential gains will be swallowed up by him.” Huang Tidemark laughed as he saw Xiao Ping’s stern and grim face, no longer bringing up the matter.

Lin Ming certainly didn’t know what these young masters were speaking about with their true essence sound transmissions. But whether or not he knew didn’t matter, because he wasn’t someone to easily believe others to begin with.

At this time, he was calculating his own cards.

As he prepared to enter the God Beast Mystic Realm, Huo Violentstone had given him three god slaying beads as well as a single divine protective talisman. All of these were single use treasures that served as a contingency measure for emergencies.

As for the guardian jade slip that Fairy Feng had given him, he couldn’t use that anymore. This was because that guardian jade slip contained Fairy Feng’s incarnation that had been condensed with several hundred years of her cultivation. Thus, it was also subject to the limitations of the space barrier. If he wanted to transmit this jade slip into the God Beast Mystic Realm then he would need to use up a massive amount of violet sun stones.

“Everyone has arrived. Fellow junior-apprentice brothers and sisters, it’s time to head off.”

Xiao Ping waved his hand and everyone flew onto a spirit ship. First, they had to fly to a planet that held a transmission array, and then they would have to pass through this hidden transmission array to the God Beast Mystic Realm.

The 12 heroic young elites boarded the spirit ship. The spirit ship ascended to the skies. After combusting a massive amount of violet sun stones, the ship broke through the void, moving towards the planet with the transmission array…

Chapter 1044 – Can I Go With You?

Chapter 1044 – Can I Go With You?

…

…

…

Celestial Dragon World was a small world that existed outside of the Divine Realm’s 3000 great worlds. It was only one-fiftieth of the size of a great world, but its size was already more than amazing.

The ruler of Celestial Dragon World was the current Patriarch of the Ancient Dragon Clan. Celestial Dragon World had an extremely deep inheritance. Throughout the history of the Ancient Dragon Clan, there had even been a true Great World King that had appeared. And, even when the Ancient Dragon Clan was at their worst state they still had a half-step World King character within their ranks.

But, it needed to be said that although a Divine Realm World King was said to be a king of a world, it was actually impossible to rule an entire major world. No matter how large a World King Family was, they would occupy at most several hundred planets, or a billion mile area of a major world mainland. It was near impossible to occupy much more land.

And this area was nothing but a drop of water to a major world of the Divine Realm. In the other lands of a great world, there were countless sects and families, many of them Holy Lands.

These sects were at most on good terms with the World King Family. They wouldn’t blindly obey the orders of the World King.

At this time, within a secret hidden space slit within Celestial Dragon World. Within this space slit was an ordinary tiny planet. This planet had a diameter of only 2000 miles.

Besides the high level figures of the four God Beast Clans, no one knew that this minor planet was the location of the transmission array leading to the God Beast Mystic Realm.

“There is still four hours until the mystic realm opens. Senior-apprentice Brother Dragon One, I heard that there was a genius disciple that appeared in the Ancient Phoenix Clan this year, and he managed to defeat Crimson Strifecloud of the same age and complete the Thousand Slaughter. At his rookie smelting trial he even broke through into the eighth level of the Hells of Flame. I wonder if these rumors are a bit exaggerated?”

On the minor planet, there were 30 some people standing loosely about. These people all had patterned blue clothing on, a similar design that showed they were from the same sect. The youth who spoke was tall and large, and his muscles were extremely compact. He had a pair of fierce tiger-like eyes and his aura was staggering.

Within the Ancient Dragon Clan there was a ranking list called the Divine Fate Decree. All young geniuses that were below 33 years of age and in the Divine Sea or Life Destruction realm had the possibility or ranking on the list. The standard ranking system for this list was to arrange those that slayed the highest numbers of opponents in the Illusionary God Combat Array in descending order. There were a total of 108 individuals on this ranking list.

The Ancient Phoenix Clan took the numeral nine and worshipped it as the most extreme number. But, the Ancient Dragon Clan worshipped the number eight. The Ancient Dragon Clan Headquarters had eight Celestial Dragons that acted as the High Council of Elders for the Ancient Dragon Clan.

The top disciple of the Divine Fate Decree was given the title of Dragon One. The second was Dragon Two, the tenth was Dragon 10, and this continued all the way in a similar pattern to Dragon 108.

This sort of title was a symbol of glory. Disciples would refer to each other not by their names but by their titles. The large man who just spoke was ranked twelfth on the Divine Fate Decree so he was called Dragon 12. And, the one he spoke to was the top number one junior disciple of the Ancient Dragon Clan – Dragon One.

This person was the extreme talent of the Ancient Dragon Clan that the Kirin Clan envoys had spoken of.

“It should be true. This person will likely become a top class character like Xiao Daoji in the future. He won’t be much inferior to our Ancient Dragon Clan’s Patriarch.” A blue-clothed man with a medium build said. This young man looked to be around 27-28 years old, but he had an extremely mature and noble appearance, one that was filled with high dignity. This young man was Dragon One.

“Become a top class character like Xiao Daoji? Even a World King would have to pay attention to such a character! However, Senior-apprentice Brother Dragon One, when you were still at your rookie smelting trial, you managed to kill 850 people in the Illusionary God Combat Array, and you also reached the seventh level of the Dragon Labyrinth. Our Divine Dragon smelting trial is far more difficult and intense than the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial. Senior-apprentice Brother Dragon One’s results aren’t that much worse!”

In the minds of the Ancient Dragon Clan’s young disciples, Dragon One was an invincible existence with unstoppable prestige. As this man spoke, everyone looked up into the skies to see faint ripples appearing in space. A spirit ship broke through the barrier of space and appeared above the minor planet. In the next moment, several young men and women flew down from the ship. These were the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

“Ancient Phoenix Clan!” Dragon One looked up and locked his eyes onto a blue-clothed youth fluttering in the air. “With that cultivation, that person should be Lin Ming!”

……….

“Below us are the disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan’s Dragon Soul Palace. The one with the unfathomably deep foundation is Dragon One. You all must be careful of him!”

Xiao Ping sent a true essence sound transmission to everyone as he flew down from the spirit ship and saw the disciples of Dragon Soul Palace.

“Dragon One?”

Lin Ming looked at the youth below him and was surprised to discover that he seemed like a placid lake. He was calm and without any ripples on the surface, but no matter how one tried it was impossible to see below the surface of that water. Lin Ming couldn’t even make out his cultivation!

“I can’t see his cultivation. Is this some arcane ability to conceal one’s cultivation?”

Normally, heroic young elites underneath 33 years of age would be at most at the middle Divine Sea stage. There were even some extreme talents that deliberately suppressed their cultivation to the early Divine Sea realm. With Lin Ming’s cultivation it was impossible that he couldn’t see theirs.

“This person is a bit troublesome…” Lin Ming whispered. After having experienced the threat known as Yang Yun, Lin Ming always felt suspicious and guarded towards those people that hid their cultivation.

“Haha, Brother Dragon One, it’s been a long time since we last saw each other. Your Ancient Dragon Clan is truly filled with talented individuals; you’ve even managed to send out such a mighty lineup. With Brother Dragon One to Dragon 36, all of you have come!”

After the Ancient Dragon Clan released the Divine Fate Decree, there was one great advantage. That was that all distributing of resources would be fair. No matter what resources were available, everything would be spread down beginning with Dragon One. If one wanted to obtain more resources then that would all depend on their own ability.

For instance, in this God Beast Mystic Realm smelting trial, the first 36 ranked disciples of the Divine Fate Decree had been selected.

“Brother Xiao Ping is too hilarious. In our generation of junior disciples, your Ancient Phoenix Clan is the true winner. Not only does the Ancient Phoenix Clan have such a talented individual like you, but they even have Junior-apprentice Sister Yan Littlemoon with her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, and also Junior-apprentice Brother Lin Ming, who managed to defeat Senior Crimson Strifecloud at the same age…”

Dragon One smiled as he spoke. He glanced over at Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon, giving them a tiny nod.

Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon also nodded in return.

Then, at this moment, a ripple appeared in the skies once again. The Kirin Clan and Roc Clan’s disciples had arrived.

The Roc Clan had even fewer clansmen than the Ancient Phoenix Clan. They only had two branches: the Golden-winged Roc Branch and the Blue-winged Roc Branch. Their clan was the weakest among the four God Beast Clans.

Those two great clans only brought 10 disciples each, for a total of 20. In addition with the Ancient Dragon Clan and the Ancient Phoenix Clan, the number of disciples entering the God Beast Mystic Realm this time was a total of 68.

These 68 disciples were all the elites of the elites. They were true chosen prides of heaven selected from a population of 1.5 trillion. Not a single one of these individuals could be underestimated!

Lin Ming secretly sized up the masters of the Roc Clan and Kirin Clan, recording their unique characteristics in his mind.

“Most of the disciples that are participating in the journey into this mystic realm are at the Life Destruction realm. There is only a small number of early Divine Sea martial artists, and the middle Divine Sea martial artists can be counted on one hand. I can defeat those at Life Destruction, but it's difficult to say if I can defeat those at the early Divine Sea. As for going against the middle Divine Sea martial artists, I will only be able to preserve my own life. And as for that Dragon One, I don't know if I would even be able to escape him…"

Lin Ming speculated. After all, these were all extreme characters of their generation. Even though Lin Ming's combat strength was extremely abnormal, to cross a large boundary and four small boundaries to fight was still past his limits.

"Everyone is here; let's go!"

Dragon One waved his hand and 1.5 billion violet sun stones flew out from his spatial ring, piling up into a massive crystal mountain! Surging origin energy rushed out like a broken dam, causing everyone to feel a great impact.

And after Dragon One threw out the violet sun stones, Xiao Ping and the head disciples of the Roc Clan and Kirin Clan also threw in their violet sun stones. For a time, purple light broke through the heavens, shooting towards the stars!

At this time, with a great rumbling sound, an ancient stone platform rose from the ground. The four mountains of violet sun stones began burning at the same time!

The vast amount of energy was constantly absorbed by the stone platform, twisting the entire surrounding space.

"The transmission is about to begin. Everyone, focus and defend your mind. Because the distance is so great, the load on our soul force will not be minor." Xiao Ping said with a true essence sound transmission. In the next moment a dizzying feeling came over Lin Ming. This feeling became increasingly intense, as if his spiritual sea would rupture at any moment!

Lin Ming twisted his eyebrows together. His mind touched upon the gold battle spirit in his spiritual sea. The spear-shaped battle spirit emitted a soft cry and then the dizzying feeling vanished.

Without knowing how much time had passed, Lin Ming suddenly felt his body shake. In the next instant he had arrived above a wild and desolate land.

This vast and boundless land was quiet and uninhabited. There weren't even plants. The sky was entirely covered with inky clouds. The clouds were very low, and arcs of lighting faintly glittered amidst the layers of clouds. As they flashed across the sky they looked like passing white dragons.

"This place is..."

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. He could taste the ancient and inexhaustible flavor that tinged the air. This was because this space had existed for far too long. It was at least several hundred million years, or even a billion years old!

This was the God Beast Mystic Realm. In ancient times, this land might have shined with a splendor and magnificence so great that no mortal could imagine it, with numerous powerful existences living here. But now, everything was gone.

Time was the most terrifying weapon of all. Even an Empyrean or God Beast was unable to withstand the baptism of infinite time!

At this time, all 68 transmitted people arrived together. Dragon One squatted down and sifted through some dirt. He picked up the dirt and placed it between his lips, tasting it. Then, he smiled and said, "We're in luck. This area hasn't been explored yet! This means more lucky chances for us, but it also means far greater unknown dangers. You all must be extra careful. You may all explore by yourself or you may even form groups. Now, let's go. We only have 96 hours until we are transmitted out of here!"

The domain of the God Beast Mystic Realm was broad and boundless. But, the ancient transmission array was actually very random in where it transmitted people. It was normal for groups to be transmitted to an area that had never been explored before.

"Junior-apprentice Sister Littlemoon, I am Huang Tidemark. I'm also known as the Riverflame LIttle Tornado. Exploring this sort of mystic realm is extremely dangerous. I have a great deal of experience. Perhaps Junior-apprentice Sister Littlemoon would like to join me? The benefits that we obtain can be divided equally." Just as everyone was preparing to leave, a smiling youth suddenly spoke out from near Yan Littlemoon.

Yan Littlemoon froze. In truth, although she had been training and gaining as much experience as she could in true life or death battles, she was still inexperienced in adventuring through this type of mystic realm. She simply didn't have any experience at all. She was a bit nervous and really did hope to join someone. But, she had never met Huang Tidemark before and all she knew about him were some unsavory rumors. If she randomly joined a stranger then the dangers could be imagined.

Out of the 11 other individuals from the Ancient Phoenix Clan, the only one she knew was Lin Ming.

Yan Littlemoon hesitated for a moment before sending Lin Ming a true essence sound transmission. "Um… Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, can I go with you?"

Chapter 1045 – Together

Chapter 1045 – Together

…

…

…

Lin Ming was just about to leave, when he was suddenly startled. He turned around to see Yan Littlemoon awkwardly looking at him. Out of everyone that had come here, Yan Littlemoon's talent particularly manifested itself in her comprehension of Laws and her training speed, but she didn't actually excel in combat or life and death battles. In addition, ever her cultivation was somewhat lower. In terms of combat strength she was amongst the lowest. If she went by herself then she would indeed experience a great deal of danger.

Yan Littlemoon was well aware of her circumstances. Although the God Beast Mystic Realm smelting trial wasn't fatal, there would still always be people that died as they explored this land. Yan Littlemoon didn't want to become one of the corpses that nourished the land.

"Didn't Huang Tidemark invite you?" Lin Ming faintly frowned, responding to her with a true essence sound transmission.

Although he didn't particularly mind helping Yan Littlemoon, if he did this sort of thing it would attract the hatred and hostility of others onto of himself. This would be an action that was equal to slapping Huang Tidemark in the face. Although he didn't fear Huang Tidemark, he didn't want to stir up trouble where there wasn't any to begin with.

"Yes… he did, but… I've heard that he has an extremely poor reputation…" Yan Littlemoon was truly embarrassed at this time. She had always been the little princess of

Charming Phoenix Palace, and if she left Charming Phoenix Palace and went to other palaces, countless men would wholeheartedly chase after her. With her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline in addition to her good looks, her number of suitors could be imagined!

Humans weren't born with arrogance and a natural air of superiority. Rather, it developed as they grew up. Since Yan Littlemoon was raised in such an environment, it was impossible that she couldn't be so proud. It was the first time in her life that she had to ignore all mortification and ask for help in such a manner from someone.

She had taken the initiative to ask to join a man, but instead he had questioned her back. She was afraid that Lin Ming would develop some sort of misunderstanding.

Lin Ming glanced over at Huang Tidemark without moving his eyes and he saw that Huang Tidemark was still smiling as he waited where he was.

Yan Littlemoon and Lin Ming had spoken to each other with a true essence sound transmission that only took a single breath of time, and they had also only glanced at each other for a brief moment, so Huang Tidemark simply didn't know what was happening. Huang Tidemark was stupidly waiting for Yan Littlemoon to respond to him. There were even a few people behind him that looked like his friends who were joking around and laughing, waiting to see Huang Tidemark successfully pursue the woman he chose.

If Lin Ming left with Yan Littlemoon then that would be the same as kicking Huang Tidemark into the ground.

In addition, there was another problem. Lin Ming had originally come here to hunt for treasures. If he brought Yan Littlemoon along then there would be a problem in the distribution of treasure.

Yan Littlemoon saw Lin Ming hesitate, clearly not wanting to bring her along. She felt extremely depressed. Since when had she become such an unpopular outsider? Was she so deplorable that she affected his mood? This was the first time she had ever experienced such a matter.

Feeling anxious, Yan Littlemoon gritted her teeth and said, “Before I entered the God Beast Mystic Realm, Senior Huo Violentstone told me that if I had any problems I should come look for you. He told me that he already asked you to take care of me in private…”

Yan Littlemoon subconsciously gripped her fists as she spoke. It was truly damaging to her self-respect to speak out such words. She felt as if she had been greatly wronged.

“Uh…” Lin Ming fumbled out. He did indeed hear Huo Violentstone say such words, but since it had only been tacked onto the end of some other things, Lin Ming simply thought he was joking and didn’t place it in his heart. But now, it seemed as if that old fellow had been serious.

“Well… fine then.”

Lin Ming reluctantly agreed. In truth, he wasn’t a cold and callous individual. Although he didn’t consider himself friends with Yan Littlemoon, for better or worse they had still trained at the same Fire Spirit Star for two years. He couldn’t watch helplessly as something happened to her. Whether she was by herself or with Huang Tidemark, it would be extremely easy for her to stumble into some fatal or disastrous danger. If that happened he wouldn’t be able to explain things to Huo Violentstone.

But after thinking about it again, Lin Ming added an addendum. “You can go with me, but we’re going to hash things out first. All treasures we find will depend on our own respective abilities first and foremost. What I find I will not share with you, and the things you obtain I will not want.”

“…You!!” Yan Littlemoon’s eyes widened. She huffed up, her body heaving with righteous indignation. As she saw how seriously Lin Ming had spoken with a deadpan expression, she wanted to punch him in the face.

He was too great of a bully!

Lin Ming’s words clearly judged her as a burden, and also implied that she wouldn’t be able to find anything of value at all. And, the most annoying thing was that he also meant to guard against her as if she were some sort of thief. Did he really think she was a shameless and good-for-nothing hanger-on?

Yan Littlemoon had always been a proud and haughty individual. She would never think of sharing in the treasures of others without putting in due effort on her own part!

“Who do you think I am! Do you really think I desire the things you find so much!? I never wanted them to begin with and yet you think so poorly of me! Also, you are the rudest person I’ve ever met in my entire life!”

“Uh…” Lin Ming traced his nose, a bit embarrassed. The words he said were indeed a bit too crass. But, it was best to put the ugly stuff in front first and settle these conditions before anything happened. If they really did stumble across some massive hidden treasure then Lin Ming actually wouldn’t mind dividing a part to Yan Littlemoon.

“My background cannot compare to that of a proud daughter of heaven like you who comes from such a magnificent family. I am of humble and common birth so I certainly need to value any resources I find.

“Then again, in this God Beast Mystic Realm, there are treasures that could even tempt the heart of a Holy Lord. It’s not as if I want to be greedy or something like that. Time is precious here so I wanted to hash these things out beforehand. Also, since you are going with me, I will tell you something before we head off. If we manage to encounter some danger that I cannot deal with then there might be the chance that I abandon you to yourself. If that really happens then I wish you nothing but the best of luck to survive.”

As Lin Ming finished speaking, he turned around and flew in the direction where the least people were.

“Ahh! What a hateful scumbag!”

As Yan Littlemoon heard Lin Ming’s last words she stomped her feet in anger. But, in the end she still had to follow Lin Ming. Although Lin Ming was a hateful little bastard, she could still trust him.

Just as Yan Littlemoon was about to leave, the continually waiting Huang Tidemark was left flummoxed. “Yan Littlemoon, what is the meaning of this. I was speaking to you, didn’t you hear me!?”

Huang Tidemark didn’t know that Yan Littlemoon was speaking to Lin Ming just now. All he saw was her randomly stomping her feet in a fit of rage as if she had gone psychotic. Then, she began to fly away without a single word. He was immediately enraged. Even his good friends were watching on, and yet Yan Littlemoon treated him as nothing but empty air. How could he hold his head up high after this? He had always managed to successfully capture women in his hands, and this was also one of his greatest talents he was proud of. And yet, today he had been given the cold shoulder by a little girl.

Yan Littlemoon was in the air when she heard Huang Tidemark’s words, words that caused her to turn even angrier. If it weren’t for this sexual deviant approaching her and making her feel even more in danger, then she wouldn’t have had to desperately ask Lin Ming for help, causing her to suffer such humiliation and be so miffed about matters.

“What if I heard you and what if I didn’t hear you? Why do I have to reply to the likes of you? Do you really think you are so awesome or something? You are just a creepy pig out chasing after skirts everywhere, but does your wife know of this?”

After Yan Littlemoon spat out these words she impatiently flew into the sky, eager to get as far away as she could from someone like Huang Tidemark. The direction she flew in was the same direction Lin Ming had gone, leaving a completely dumbfounded Huang Tidemark behind. After being cursed by Yan Littlemoon directly to his face, he didn’t know how to react. He didn’t know what he had done to provoke her so much for her to act so crazy all of a sudden.

“You…”

Huang Tidemark wanted to say something else, but Yan Littlemoon had already soared into the skies, immediately vanishing from sight, leaving him unable to finish his words.

“Brother Tidemark, the direction that Junior-apprentice Sister Yan chose is... probably the same as Junior-apprentice Brother Lin!” A red-clothed man smiled from behind Huang Tidemark. He was a descendant of the Huo Family, Huo Clearheart.

At this time, such sarcastic remarks were clearly meant to ridicule Huang Tidemark. Huang Tidemark was originally angry, and such words were the same as salt being pushed into his wounds.

“Huo Clearheart, were you kicked in the head by an ass? Do you really think that Lin Ming is part of your Huo Family? Do you really think that his gains are also your gains? Don’t be stupid. If he didn’t divide the resources that were rightfully yours, you might have become the number one disciple of your Huo Family!” Huang Tidemark said, trying to sow discord.

Huo Clearheart chuckled, saying, “Even if Lin Ming weren’t here it still wouldn’t be my turn to be the number one disciple. The Huo Family has produced many geniuses these past thousands of years, so why would it be my turn? I’m also aware of my own abilities. On the other hand, if the Huo Family can become stronger because of someone like him, then that means my family will have even more resources to share, and the benefits I gain will be correspondingly greater. During this God Beast Mystic Realm smelting trial, the High Ancestor has also specifically ordered me to help Junior-apprentice Brother Lin as much as I can. I’m not like Brother Huang here. Do you really think that just because you call yourself Riverflame Little Tornado or some crap like that, you are so attractive to everyone you meet? Do you think those girls you’ve caught before are the same as Yan Littlemoon? She has the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline! In my Ancient Phoenix Clan, she is the only junior disciple under 33 years of age that has the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline! Even Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao Ping doesn’t! And you think she would follow you for some reason? Based on what? Your bloodline density? Hahaha, stop cracking me up here! Hahahaha!”

As Huo Clearheart guffawed, he chose a direction near Lin Ming’s and flew away.

After Huo Clearheart left, Huang Tidemark’s expression became all the more ugly. The relations between the various factions of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were complex to begin with. Since everyone was struggling with each other, it was natural for others to taunt someone given the opportunity.

Huo Clearheart simply didn't care about offending Huang Tidemark. He was someone that had inherited Huo Violentstone's wild temperament, and in terms of background, strength, and talent, he wasn't inferior to Huang Tidemark in any way.

"Lin Ming, Huo Clearheart, just you wait!" Huang Tidemark grit his teeth. He turned and shouted to the two Huang Family disciples behind him. "We're leaving!"

They chose a direction and flew away. This direction was also close to Lin Ming's.

And at this time, Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon had already flown over a dozen miles out. In this unknown area of the mystic realm, they had to always remain vigilant and no one dared to fly too fast. Otherwise, if they flew into a space crack at 10 times the speed of sound, that really would be a death of injustice.

Along the way, Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon didn't speak a single word to each other. Lin Ming was spreading his senses in all directions, combing through every inch of land. As for Yan Littlemoon, she was still fuming with anger so she didn't bother trying to speak to Lin Ming.

Before entering the God Beast Mystic Realm, Lin Ming had read up on all the available materials about this land. One of the texts he read was the 'God Beast Mystic Realm Compendium'. This compendium was the total gathered information and materials left behind by the all the past seniors of the four God Beast Families who had explored the God Beast Mystic Realm in the last 100 million years.

The God Beast Mystic Realm was a separate space and time; it was a completely different space and time from the 3000 worlds of the Divine Realm. The rules of the world were also different here.

The life that lived here followed another set of rules. They had ghostly and secret movements, and were all cruel and bloodthirsty killers. Although the God Beast Mystic Realm looked dead and abandoned, the truth was that countless dangers lay in ambush here.

Chapter 1046 – Black Coral

Chapter 1046 – Black Coral

…

…

…

After Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon had flown for a while, Lin Ming suddenly felt a stirring feeling in his mind. He looked down to see that the solid land beneath them had disappeared, turning into a vast and endless black swamp. The jet black mud roiled with giant bubbles. Each time a bubble exploded it would release a dark gray fog.

"The scene on the ground has changed."

Lin Ming had read through the entire God Beast Mystic Realm Compendium, so he knew that the surroundings in the God Beast Mystic Realm could rapidly and unexpectedly shift at any given moment. After these changes, any sort of previous safety could become extreme danger. The Laws here were truly unpredictable.

This sort of change occurred not just beneath Lin Ming, but also beneath the other disciples of the four God Beast Clans.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Dragon One, the terrain has changed. This is the swamp terrain with a third grade hazard level. When the land changes into a black swamp, a massive amount of poison swamp gas will swell out. This poison gas is what many lifeforms in this realm like to suck up. We might encounter a massive number of demons here."

In the God Beast Mystic Realm, the Laws of the world were different. The life here lived by sucking up the energy of the world. They were entities that existed as forms of energy with no physical body. These strange creatures were collectively referred to as mystic realm demons.

These demons were like a stream of air. They were fast, cunning, and loved to devour any form of energy. To a mystic realm demon, martial artists were the best source of energy. If they discovered a martial artist, they would swarm them and suck up all of their body's energy and life essence.

However, while a mystic realm demon posed a danger to a martial artist, they could also be considered a great wealth. A mystic realm demon swallowed up a massive amount of energy, purifying this energy to form their body. If one could catch these demons and toss them into a pill furnace, they could turn these demons into the purest form of heaven and earth origin energy and absorb it to cultivate.

This heaven and earth origin energy was greatly different from the heaven and earth origin energy in the Divine Realm!

The heaven and earth origin energy within the God Beast Mystic Realm leaned towards the Laws present at the forming of the universe. This type of heaven and earth origin energy even had some similarities to grandmist energy. If one could absorb this heaven and earth origin energy, it was possible to be enlightened on extremely strange and exotic Laws, allowing a martial artist's comprehension of the Laws to take a step further.

"I hope that we can come across some mystic realm demons. If we can encounter some 10,000 year mystic realm demons, then using them will have an even better effect on cultivating our martial arts."

Dragon One smirked. "Remember, do not try to come into conflict with the disciples of the three other God Beast Clans if you can. That will violate the taboo. And if we stumble into some extraordinarily rare treasure that will tempt even a Holy Lord, it will be fine as long as they don't try to snatch it from us. However, if they don't know what's good for them and try to divide our soup, then we shall be ruthless and retaliate. Moreover, once we kill them we must do so cleanly and erase all evidence, leaving behind no witnesses!

“Also, there is that Lin Ming! Everyone must avoid provoking him if at all possible. For a person to reach this step, the destiny gathered upon their body is terrifying. If anyone provokes him they might find themselves suffering disaster instead! However, that is only under normal circumstances. In a crucial moment, kill him without hesitation. We too have the life of an Emperor! If we struggle with him, we won’t necessarily be much worse off. The brat hasn’t grown up yet. With his seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation, he is still comprehensively weaker than us.”

“Yes, Senior-apprentice Brother Dragon One!”

All of the other disciples nodded, following Dragon One’s lead.

“Let’s go!”

Dragon One’s form flashed and he vanished, leading several other Ancient Dragon Clan disciples with him.

………….

“Mm? What is that?”

Lin Ming’s vision narrowed. He discovered that there was a withered old tree planted in the black swamp. This tree’s trunk was macabre and eerily shaped. And there was also some black thing located in the mud beneath the tree. It looked like a plant and a stone at the same time.

“Black coral! And such a large piece!”

Yan Littlemoon cried out in alarm after being silent for all this time. The black coral that grew in the swamp was condensed from the purest energy of the God Beast Mystic Realm. The energy it contained was much more refined than the energy of the Divine Realm! It was a surpassingly wonderful material to refine pills with!

One small piece of black coral was not inferior in value to a drop of phoenix plume blood!

And to the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix branch palaces, a drop of phoenix plume blood was highly precious. Although someone like Yan Littlemoon, with such high talent, might not care too much about giving away several drops of phoenix blood, having to give out over a hundred drops of phoenix plume blood would cause her to suffer. Moreover, if this giant black coral was completely exchanged for phoenix plume blood, it might be worth several hundred drops!

Yan Littlemoon really wanted to go and pick up the black coral. But, although she lacked experience in exploring mystic realms, she wasn't an idiot who would be blinded by treasures. She knew that around treasures, there was likely to be hidden dangers, and even some cunning beings skulking. These sorts of tricky creatures especially liked to defend the area around heavenly materials and use them as bait in order to slaughter humans or other creatures that came to pick them.

Yan Littlemoon immediately released her senses, investigating everything around her. She didn't find anything out of the ordinary.

"It seems like… there's no ambush?"

She asked Lin Ming with a bit of hesitation. The God Beast Mystic Realm was extremely bizarre. Yan Littlemoon was fully aware of her own lack of experience.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. He whispered. "There is no ambush… but…"

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light. "But, that black coral itself is a problem. It has already developed a spirituality of its own. When we try to pick it, it will also try to absorb us as nutrients!"

As Lin Ming spoke to here, he traced the Extreme Violet Ring. With a humming cry, the Phoenix Blood Spear leapt to his hand!

Around the Phoenix Blood Spear, 999 small blood spears shot out. They surged up and down, rolling up into a storm of sharp blades that cut apart all.

At this time, underneath Yan Littlemoon's surprised gaze, she saw that the old tree that the black coral was attached to suddenly twisted up. Its trunk and branches turned into black ropes that grasped towards them!

"Those are... black coral roots? No... those are tentacles!"

Yan Littlemoon sucked in a breath of cold air. A living existence like a black coral had no roots to begin with. Rather, the black coral had countless tentacles. It used these tentacles to prey on other creatures.

And, this black coral had exposed its tentacles to the outside, transforming their appearance into that of a withered old tree. If a martial artist approached to pick up the black coral, they would immediately be entangled within these tentacles. All of the martial artist's energy and vitality would be sucked out and absorbed.

As Yan Littlemoon thought of this, her palms became wet with sweat as a deep fear swelled up in her heart. If she had rashly gone down to pick up that black coral then she would have already been tied down by that black coral's tentacles!

Although Yan Littlemoon also had methods and the confidence to free herself, she would inevitably have to pay a great price to do so. And, in this God Beast Mystic Realm, there were countless dangers lurking around every corner. What if she managed to free herself from those tentacles and then stumbled into some other danger? For instance, a swarm of mystic realm demons?

The consequences could be imagined!

And this was just the beginning. There was bound to be more dangers the longer she was here! She wouldn't be this lucky every time.

As Yan Littlemoon thought of this, her face turned red with shame. If it weren't for Lin Ming, she really might perish here.

As Yan Littlemoon was caught in her thoughts, Lin Ming was already engaging those tentacles in a fierce and violent battle!

Ka ka ka!

The small blood spears crashed into the tentacles, creating crazy explosions. Lin Ming displayed his movement technique and poured all of his energy into the Phoenix Blood Spear. The spear-shaped battle spirit also howled forth, combining with the Phoenix Blood Spear. In that moment, the Phoenix Blood Spear in Lin Ming's hands turned a dark gold!

Ca!

With a piercing, ear-scratching scream, three tentacles were directly sliced apart by Lin Ming! Blood rained down!

The Phoenix Blood Spear was originally a top grade saint artifact. With a gold battle spirit supporting it, the degree of its sharpness could be imagined!

At the moment Lin Ming cut off the three tentacles, he stashed them into the Extreme Violent Ring. And at this time, the exposed black coral realized its situation was bad and began to submerge into the black mud, wishing to escape!

The black coral was originally a life form that lived in the swamp mud. Once it entered into the mud it would be the same as a fish in the sea or a bird in the sky. No matter how fast one was, it would be impossible to catch it.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, it's running away!"

Yan Littlemoon watched this occur but was helpless to do anything. After all, the main body of the black coral was buried in the mud so it was able to run away whenever it wished to and there was no method she had to catch it. Also, she was afraid that thrusting herself into the situation would cause more chaos and confusion on Lin Ming's part.

Although three tentacles had been cut off, the main body still escaped! That was truly a pity!

But as Yan Littlemoon lost hope, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a sudden frosty light. The gold battle spirit immersed in his spiritual sea shot out once more. Lin Ming's thoughts spread out, forming a world of will projection!

In that instant, the space for a mile around Lin Ming was completely covered in his world of will and was also restrained by the Laws of his will!

Ka ka ka!

Lin Ming's thoughts poured into the black swamp, suddenly turning the sludgy mud into a substance as hard as divine iron!

In just the blink of an eye, the swamp for a mile around Lin Ming had been locked down by his thoughts. As for that black coral, it was unable to drill any further so there naturally wasn't any way it could escape anymore.

The black coral was wild with panic. It emitted a series of whistling cries and then its body broke through the hard swamp mud and even jumped up from the ground!

As Yan Littlemoon saw a massive black object that looked like a gnarly old tree suddenly jump up from the ground, she was startled. The main body of the black coral was actually so big!

The black coral knew that it could no longer escape through the ground, thus it thought of breaking through Lin Ming's world of will projection blockade. However, how could Lin Ming allow it to do as it wished? His mind touched upon the Heretical God Sprout and a column of fire shot out from his hands, turning into a chain that wrapped around the black coral's main body and sealed away its tentacles.

"Seal!"

Lin Ming linked his hands together, and in just a split second formed over a thousand seal runes. These seal runes fell onto the black coral's main body, imprisoning it under layers upon layers of seals!

"Uwohh!"

The black coral screamed out. However, as it was continuously covered with hundreds upon hundreds of seal runes, its struggles began to die down. Finally, it was completely captured by Lin Ming!

Yan Littlemoon watched the entire process of Lin Ming capturing the black coral from the side, completely stunned. She couldn't even react properly!

In truth, the black coral didn't have much combat strength. But, it had a cunning and sly nature, and it was also very good at camouflaging itself and even better at escaping underground. If someone wanted to catch it? That would truly be hard!

And if it were someone that wasn't experienced enough like Yan Littlemoon, then she might even be tricked in return.

But with the situation in Lin Ming's hand, he only took several breaths of time to capture the black coral. This was the difference in ability. It wasn't just the gap in their combat efficiency, but also their experience and ability to react! If it were Yan Littlemoon in Lin Ming's place, then even if she had a gold battle spirit she still wouldn't have been able to make a split second judgment to instantly lock down the swamp mud with a world of will projection.

Chapter 1047 – Bizarre Enemy

Chapter 1047 – Bizarre Enemy

…

…

…

Really too fierce…

Yan Littlemoon sighed inwardly. The flame chains that Lin Ming had used at the end to lock up the black coral were based on the fourth level Concept of the Fire Laws – the Concept of Manifestation.

Although Yan Littlemoon had also touched upon the threshold of the fourth Fire Concept, she was still far from being able to apply it in actual combat like Lin Ming.

Yan Littlemoon thought of the difference between her and Lin Ming. Their difference in comprehension of Laws was the smallest, and the difference of their ability in combat was much greater. And, the so-called 'combat' was when two opponents were evenly and equally facing each other on an arena stage.

In the complex real world with its countless variable conditions and the changing environment, where attacks and counterattacks occurred in desperate succession, she was flung impossibly far from Lin Ming.

One only had to see how Lin Ming hunted the black coral to understand this.

As Yan Littlemoon realized this, she gently sighed. This difference in combat experience could not be made up for in a day or two.

When Lin Ming had implied she was a burden, he had been right all along.

And just when she was a bit depressed and frustrated, she suddenly heard Lin Ming make a small alerting sound. She raised her head to see that in the distance, there was a figure stumbling towards them.

This person had disheveled hair and their entire body was covered with blood. One could make out her once beautiful appearance, but unfortunately, this woman had three gruesome wounds on her body as if some vicious creature has clawed at her face and neck. These three grisly wounds completely destroyed the woman's beauty.

"Heavens! That is the senior-apprentice sister from Phoenix Feather Palace!"

Yan Littlemoon jumped in shock. She recognized this woman. This woman was the same as her and Lin Ming: she came from one of the 72 branch palaces. She was a senior-apprentice sister that originated from Phoenix Feather Palace.

This senior-apprentice sister's background was that of a small distinguished family. It was not easy for her to struggle for a spot and arrive at this step. Moreover, she was also a woman, and only three of the twelve people that entered the God Beast Mystic Realm from the Ancient Phoenix Clan were women. Because of this, Yan Littlemoon subconsciously felt a bit of sisterly closeness towards this senior-apprentice sister. Now that she saw this senior-apprentice sister in such a dire state, she couldn't help but empathize with her a bit.

"Senior-apprentice Sister, what injured you?!" Yan Littlemoon hurriedly asked.

The senior-apprentice sister's eyes were originally glazed over, but as she heard Yan Littlemoon's shout, she looked up to see her and Lin Ming. Her eyes heated up as if she were about to cry at any moment. "Junior-apprentice Sister Yan, Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, it's you two, I'm so glad..."

"Senior-apprentice Sister, what happened to you..."

"I met some strange plant. I thought it was a spirit herb, but after I approached it, it turned into a massive claw that wanted to catch me. I paid a great cost to escape its grasp and I nearly died!" As the woman saw Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon, she seemed to lose all her strength and nearly fell down where she stood. Yan Littlemoon quickly took out a recovery pill from her spatial ring and was about to go and feed it to this senior-apprentice sister. But at this moment, she felt Lin Ming's hand grasp her arm like an iron pincer, to the point that it even caused her some pain.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, what are you..."

Yan Littlemoon felt a bit cold as she was grasped by Lin Ming's hand. A strange taste filled her mouth.

Yan Littlemoon certainly wouldn't care if Lin Ming did something rude like grab her at this moment. She was originally highly tense in this mystic realm and was suspicious of everything. And now that Lin Ming grasped her arm to stop her, she immediately raised her guard.

Could it be...

Just as this idea flashed through Yan Littlemoon's eyes, in a split second, the senior-apprentice sister in front of Yan Littlemoon craftily smiled. The senior-apprentice sister's body turned into a black shadow that rushed towards her like an evil spirit, stretching out a pair of sharp claws that wanted to grasp Yan Littlemoon's neck!

"It's a mystic realm demon!"

Yan Littlemoon was horrified. But for good or bad she was still a top genius of Charming Phoenix Palace. She instantly overcame her panic and pulled out a thin red sword from her spatial ring, chopping it downwards.

This was a top-grade saint artifact. With the sound of a sharp sword energy splitting apart the air, an arc of light cut through the phantom figure, directly dividing it half!

But, this mystic realm demon didn't die. It was originally an energy form like a stream of air, without a physical body. Now that it was sliced it half, it still hurtled its pieces towards Yan Littlemoon!

These two streams of energy each turned into a fierce and hideous face lined with sharp fangs that bit towards Yan Littlemoon's pale snow-white neck. Although Yan Littlemoon hadn't been attacked, she could still feel a chilling killing intent reach her. All of the blood in her body was stirred up by this thick killing intent.

She knew that because a mystic realm demon's body was invisible and intangible, it excelled at mental attacks and soul attacks. If a martial artist with a weak will was possessed by a mystic realm demon, their spiritual sea would be shattered by the energy form. Then, the mystic realm demon would slowly suck up the martial artist's life force until they were nothing more than a withered corpse!

"Che!"

Lin Ming frowned. At this time he finally acted.

He didn't move, but a dark gold spear-shaped battle spirit howled out from between his eyebrows, turning into a blazing beam of light. In that moment, Lin Ming's willpower was like the divine sword of a war god, glorious and righteous. This divine light tore through the two sections of the mystic realm demon, ripping it to countless pieces!

A mystic realm demon had an intangible body and it excelled in soul and will. But, Lin Ming's grandmist battle spirit had already reached the gold level; he was the ultimate nemesis of a mystic realm demon!

"Ahhhhhh!"

The mystic realm demon miserably wailed before exploding into a gray fog. Lin Ming thrust out his hand and grasped the gray fog, condensing it into a ball.

Then, Lin Ming took out the Sun Melting Furnace to refine it. This Sun Melting Furnace was a high-grade saint artifact that he won in the gambling fight with Huo Yanguang. It had replaced the Cosmic Melting Furnace and had become his new pill furnace.

A mystic realm demon was a body of pure energy to begin with. Lin Ming only needed to use the pill furnace to burn out some of the impurities. This was a relatively easy procedure that he could do by himself with ease.

After Lin Ming eliminated the mystic realm demon, Yan Littlemoon stiffly stood on the side, embarrassed. She felt a bit helpless about this situation.

And she certainly had a reason to be embarrassed. In just a couple dozen breaths of time, she had already needed to rely on Lin Ming to save her twice. Although she wouldn't have died if he didn't help, she would still be distressed and possibly even injured. If she were injured in the God Beast Mystic Realm at such an early time, that would really put her in danger.

Yan Littlemoon originally knew that because of her low cultivation, her combat strength lay at the bottom of the 12 disciples from the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Even so, she never though her combat strength would be so garbage. It truly left her ashamed of herself.

At the start she had thought that Lin Ming looked down on her and thus she became angry at him, not speaking to him as they flew. But now that she thought back to this, she really wanted to smash her head into a wall and end her life. When had someone as proud as her lost so much face?

As she saw that Lin Ming was about to refine the mystic realm demon, she finally opened her mouth and stammered out, "That is… how… how about you use my Fire Pattern Furnace?"

"Oh?"

Lin Ming glanced over at the Fire Pattern Furnace in Yan Littlemoon's hand. This small and exquisite furnace was patterned with images of flowers and birds, and it was entirely crafted with fire spirit jade. It was very polished and refined.

"Top grade saint artifact furnace? And it's a top grade saint artifact that is infinitely close to becoming a transcendent saint artifact!"

Lin Ming secretly estimated that the quality of this furnace was no worse than that of the Phoenix Blood Spear.

It had to be known that after Lin Ming obtained the Phoenix Blood Spear at Saint Artifact Pavilion, it had a part of the old Palace Master's source strength poured into it. It had an extremely high value!

And, this Fire Pattern Furnace was the same!

This was also normal. Yan Littlemoon was a top extreme talent of Charming Phoenix Palace. If Lin Ming could have the source strength of the old Palace Master injected into his treasure, so could she.

In order to make it easier for Lin Ming to use the Fire Pattern Furnace, she temporarily sealed up her own spirit mark before handing it to him.

"What a wonderful furnace! It also has the source strength of an old Palace Master poured into it. Its value must be several hundred times that of my Sun Melting Furnace! Thank you very much."

Lin Ming's words of thanks actually left Yan Littlemoon feeling pained and bitter in her heart. She secretly thought to herself, "This is about the most I can do…

"Once I leave this God Beast Mystic Realm, I must go out and adventure on my own. It is as they say; a flower born in a greenhouse cannot withstand the wind and rain. Although I already knew this, I never realized it in such a profound manner as I have today. When I compared with this fellow, it's no different from a little baby being compared to a grown man! Whether it was the black coral or the mystic realm demon, neither of them were supposed to be my match. But they can use all sorts of strange and peculiar methods to make me eat a loss. I could suffer a loss once or twice, but if I continued at such a rate then I would surely perish here!"

Yan Littlemoon clenched her fists with determination. She made an oath in her heart that she would undergo a massive amount of actual combat in the future to increase and temper her own fighting experience. As for breaking through boundaries, she simply wasn't worried. When Crimson Strifecloud was 29 years old he only had an eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation, so there was no need for her to be in any sort of hurry.

As Yan Littlemoon was thinking this, Lin Ming had placed his hands on the Fire Pattern Furnace and was heating it up with real fire!

The mystic realm demon screamed as it was scorched within the Fire Pattern Furnace. It continued to emit rending cries until its consciousness was completely burnt away within the furnace. All that was left behind was its pure energy that condensed into a rainbow-colored stream.

In half an incense stick of time, this stream of energy flew out. Lin Ming cut this energy in half, swallowing up one wisp himself and injecting the other into Yan Littlemoon's body.

"Mm?" Yan Littlemoon flushed red and silently absorbed this wisp of energy. She knew that this was the compensation for letting Lin Ming use her furnace. "This fellow is really detestable. Is it really necessary to divide everything so clearly?"

The energy within the mystic realm demons contained Laws of a different world. These things were extremely difficult to perceive in the Divine Realm universe.

After Yan Littlemoon swallowed up the wisp of energy, she felt as if a hot breeze blew across her body. Her entire body began to heat up.

Energy flowed throughout her body, making her body lighten as if she were floating above the clouds.

And at the same time, within her mind her comprehension of Laws also deepened just a little bit. To a genius disciple of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, the energy that a mystic realm demon provided wasn't too important. It was the Laws contained within them that were the true great harvest!

When a martial artist perceived the Laws, perceiving the Laws to a profound degree was one aspect. But, another aspect was to understand a comprehensive portion of Laws!

One had to comprehend many different Laws of all types. Only by summing up all the Laws together could one approach the truth of the universe's origin!

After a bit of time, Yan Littlemoon absorbed half of the Laws contained in the mystic realm demon's energy. She felt that her comprehension of the Fire Laws' fourth level Concept deepened further, nearly equal to 10 days of meditating herself. If she could obtain more mystic realm demon Law energy, she would be able to comprehend the Fire Laws even further!

Chapter 1048 – Asura King

Chapter 1048 – Asura King

…

…

…

Lin Ming continued forwards with Yan Littlemoon. Every 10 miles or so they advanced, they would encounter several mystic realm demons. Lin Ming effortlessly slaughtered these mystic realm demons. And as for Yan Littlemoon, after she overcame her initial shock and panic, she also began to show her own formidable strength.

Yan Littlemoon was still a genius disciple of the Ancient Phoenix Clan after all. Although she was far from being able to compare with Lin Ming in the aspect of battle spirits, she still stood out amongst disciples of the same age. She used her own thoughts to staunchly defend against the will attacks of the mystic realm demons and simultaneously used her true fire abilities to melt away her enemies. As this sort of fighting continued, her actions became increasingly smooth.

This sort of fight was a common event for someone like Lin Ming. But to Yan Littlemoon, it was actually a rare opportunity to temper herself. Yan Littlemoon was an extremely talented character. As long as she had the time and space to grow, she would undoubtedly become a Holy Lord level character in the future.

More and more mystic realm demons were refined into streams of energy. But, the more mystic realm demons they killed, the less useful these energy streams became in enhancing their comprehension of Laws. This was because many of the Laws within the mystic realm demons' bodies were repeated and redundant, thus new insights became much less effective.

"These ordinary mystic realm demons are becoming less and less useful. If we can find and slay some 1000 year mystic realm demons or even some 10,000 year mystic realm demons then they'll have Law energy that is far more valuable."

As Lin Ming spoke, his eyes suddenly narrowed. He looked off somewhere into the distance.

"Mm? What is it?"

As Yan Littlemoon saw Lin Ming suddenly act strangely, she put up her guard. Soon, she discovered a vast aura surging out from the distance, ebbing and flowing, like a great drumming beat was causing the distant heaven and earth origin energy to tumble over.

"What is that?"

Yan Littlemoon was shocked. Such a powerful yet unknown existence could be a great lucky chance, but it could also be a life-threatening disaster.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then said, "Stick close to me and stay near the ground. Restrain your aura as much as possible; we're going forward at high speed!"

As Lin Ming spoke, his entire body sank down to the ground, drawing close to the swamp. He flushed forwards like a fish in a downwards stream.

His speed was extremely fast. But from just a bit farther, it was nearly impossible to detect the movements he created in the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy.

Yan Littlemoon also quickly restrained her aura and followed behind Lin Ming.

After flying for just a short period of time, they were able to make out a towering mountain peak in the far off distance.

In the muddy swamp, there was actually a pitch black mountain rising into the heavens!

What was that?

Lin Ming's eyes turned steely. He quickly reduced his speed.

It was mystic realm demons; a massive number of mystic realm demons! As Lin Ming swept out with his divine sense, he discovered there were tens of thousands or even a hundred thousand mystic realm demons scattered around this mountain!

Although Lin Ming had a grandmist battle spirit, a perfect weapon to kill these mystic realm demons, he still felt his scalp tingle as he imagined facing off against so many. If he were to rush into these mystic realm demons and be surrounded by them, there wouldn't even be ashes left of his body.

Moreover, Lin Ming discovered that some of these mystic realm demons were slightly blue in color. Only mystic realm demons that were thousands of years old and were nearing 10,000 years of age would have such a special characteristic.

These types of older mystic realm demons had strength 10 times or even tens of times greater than an ordinary mystic realm demon.

But, the Laws inherent within their bodies were also far from what a common mystic realm demon could compare with.

"Mm? What is that?"

From within that throng of 100,000 mystic realm demons, there was suddenly an eruption of energy that pierced through the skies, directly shooting into the horizon. Even the dark clouds high above were washed away by this energy.

This type of energy was definitely not something that could be emitted by 100,000 mystic realm demons gathered together. The energy that 100,000 mystic realm demons could emit when gathered was only huge and great – it wouldn't be pure to such a level.

In other words, the energy that Lin Ming felt in front of him was not only massive, but the quality of pureness had also reached an incredible degree.

Lin Ming's thoughts raced. He began to whisper, "Is this… a 100,000 year mystic realm demon? It's a 100,000 year mystic realm demon evolving into an Asura King!"

A mystic realm demon was a life form of energy. They naturally evolved from the energy of the world, and also relied on that same energy for sustenance. If energy was lacking, then they would even devour each other.

Normally, a mystic realm demon would grow to a certain stage and then a new mystic realm demon would develop from their body and split out. Afterwards, the old mystic realm demon would slowly wither away until death. It was already excellent for a mystic real demon to live to a thousand years, and those that lived to several thousand years were even fewer. As for those 10,000 year mystic realm demons, they were nearly extinct!

However, mystic realm demons were similar to human martial artists in that there were also those geniuses amongst them with a massive destiny upon their bodies.

There were some mystic realm demons that were born with Law energy far more exquisite and profound than others. Then, because they encountered great lucky chances, they were able to swallow up spirit medicines, spirit pills, or other heavenly materials. They were able to gather a massive amount of energy within their bodies, changing the Laws within them and making a breakthrough that extended their lifespan.

The longer a mystic realm demon lived and the more energy they devoured, the stronger they would be.

Only by being strong would they be able to obtain even greater treasures. For instance, that black coral that Lin Ming had gathered. If an ordinary mystic realm demon tried to gather that black coral, it would only end up as food for the black coral instead. But for a 100,000 year mystic realm demon, this was actually easy.

According to the God Beast Mystic Realm Compendium, the records showed that when a mystic realm demon reached 100,000 years of age, they would be able to undergo demonic tribulation and be reborn into the incarnation of an Asura King. An Asura King was equal to a human late Divine Transformation powerhouse. And, because a mystic realm demon was formed from energy to begin with, the energy within their bodies would be 10 times greater than that of a human! In terms of just energy alone, they could even compare with an early Divine Lord realm powerhouse.

With Lin Ming's strength, he simply wouldn't have the ability to resist in the face of such an existence. This sort of mystic realm demon was beyond rare. In the long history of the four God Beast Clans, such a dreadful existence had only been encountered a few times. And every time this occurred, there would be a massive loss of genius disciples. At those times, the gains in this mystic realm smelting trial were definitely not equal to the losses.

However, that was only a mature Asura King. This Asura King in front of them hadn't yet crossed its great tribulation.

And, most importantly, an Asura King would be in its weakest state after crossing its demonic tribulation, without much strength to protect itself.

This time was actually the golden time to defeat it. Otherwise, if the Asura King were allowed to recover its strength, then even a top level character like White Daohong would find it difficult to kill such a creature. And, with White Daohong's cultivation it was impossible for him to enter the God Beast Mystic realm. At that time, such an Asura King would become a dire calamity to the four God Beast Clans. In the future, if there was ever a wave of disciples that had the bad luck to be transmitted near such a being, their fates could be imagined.

"To think that we would encounter a mystic realm demon that has manifested into an Asura King. This is far too strange. If we can kill it and use its inherent Law energy to baptize our spirit bodies then that will not be much different from crossing Ninefall. And these types of Laws simply cannot be found in the Divine Realm! Moreover, the powerful energy will also enter our bodies and greatly strengthen our cultivation. Although that effect isn't as great, it will still save us a great deal of cultivation time."

Yan Littlemoon muttered. As she looked at the Asura King, she was extremely tempted. But she also knew that wanting to kill such a creature and obtain its source energy was as difficult as ascending to the heavens.

And even not considering the Asura King, there was still the 100,000 mystic realm demons surrounding it.

At this time, Lin Ming whispered in a low voice, “There are some experts that have arrived nearby. It seems like they are… Ancient Dragon Clan disciples.”

As the Asura King was undergoing its demonic tribulation, it released a mammoth momentum. The strange fluctuations in the world’s energy could be felt from thousands of miles away. What would be truly strange was if there were no experts that were drawn in.

“Ancient Dragon Clan…” Yan Littlemoon’s complexion changed. The Ancient Dragon Clan had always been overbearing and insolent in their actions. Moreover, the comprehensive combat strength of their disciples far surpassed that of the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Even someone as arrogant as Huo Violentstone had to be reticent in his dealings with the Ancient Dragon Clan, otherwise it would be easy for him to suffer a loss.

“From the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples that came, Dragon One, Dragon Six, Dragon Eight, Dragon 12, and Dragon 13 are all Divine Sea powerhouses and top combat masters. We are not their match. Especially that Dragon One. His cultivation is unknown but I can tell he is an unfathomable character! With them here, our chances of obtaining the Asura King’s source energy has dropped to zero.”

The Divine Fate Decree only ranked disciples in order of their talent, not their combat strength. A lower ranking disciple might not have a lower cultivation, and a higher ranking disciple might not have greater combat strength.

Lin Ming pondered the situation, not speaking. He was well aware that wanting to seize the treasure in such a situation was beyond difficult!

Lin Ming couldn't even feel Dragon One's aura. Since those from the Ancient Dragon Clan had come, that should mean that Dragon One had to be here. This person must have been hiding somewhere and had likely already discovered his presence.

Lin Ming's guess was indeed correct. At this time, Dragon One had already discovered Lin Ming. Of course, this was because Lin Ming hadn't been hiding himself to the greatest degree he could. Otherwise, if he completely shielded himself in grandmist space and hid in the swamp then it would be near-impossible for these people to discover him.

"Two little fish have mixed their way into here. It's the two little baby chicks from the Ancient Phoenix Clan."

Dragon 12 vigorously said. He was tall and had a robust and well-built body. At 35 years of age, he was the oldest of the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples that had come. Although he was no longer considered to be in the ranks of the junior disciples, the limits set on those that entered the God Beast Mystic Realm were based on cultivation and not age. Thus, Dragon 12 was still able to come.

"Heh, those are just two little seventh stage Life Destruction babies. Elder Brother, should I go and play with them a bit? They should suffer some losses lest they try something later and add themselves to the chaos." Dragon Eight eagerly said from beside Dragon 12.

Dragon One briefly frowned. Then, he whispered, "Don't stir up any trouble. If there isn't a top treasure to come into conflict over then don't cause a ruckus on your own. The two of them shouldn't pose a threat to us. Still, we must give them a warning. If we finally come close to hunting down that Asura King as it crosses demonic tribulation after so much trouble, and then those two join in at a critical moment to muddy the waters, causing us to finally fail at the end, then we will kill them 10,000 times over!"

"18, go and give them a warning. Have them leave this area immediately."

Dragon One said. But at this time, from the distance, a loud roar rang out. This roar lingered through the world, resounding between the heavens and earth!

As Dragon One heard this sound, his complexion immediately changed.

This… this sound… could it be… a dragon's roar!?

This sort of roar contained a boundless and ancient touch to it, as well as a great majesty that looked down at the world with contempt. This was not a sound that a normal creature could form. As this roar echoed out, Dragon One could clearly feel his bloodline surge within him, resonating with that sound!

Chapter 1049 – Supreme Dragon Bone

Chapter 1049 – Supreme Dragon Bone

…

…

…

Was there a Divine Dragon here?

That was impossible!

Dragon One's eyes widened. The majesty and absolute dignity contained in this echoing roar could not be wrong! As this sound fell into his ears, it even caused a faint trace of awe and reverence to appear in his heart. These were the most ancient memories of his bloodline resonating with this roar.

Although Dragon One had the perfect dragon race bloodline, this bloodline had been transplanted into his body after birth. And, the so-called 'perfect dragon race bloodline' only meant that half of his blood was dragon blood. Even then, the quality was actually relatively low.

In front of a true Divine Dragon, the blood within his body would give birth to fear and awe, as if his entire being were worshipping the ancestral gods.

"That is a dragon's cry, there can be no mistake! How could this be!? Although the God Beast Mystic Realm is said to have once had God Beasts, that is a matter from countless hundreds of millions of years ago. The Laws of this universe have already collapsed, turning this place into a completely different space, and with the new Laws that followed after, it became impossible for any God Beast to be born in these lands ever again."

“It shouldn’t be a God Beast, but…”

Just as Dragon One was alarmed, he suddenly saw a blue beam of light shoot up into the sky. The dragon’s roar became even more clarion!

At this time, a massive phantom appeared in the sky, tens of thousands of feet long. The incomparably pure energy of the mystic realm constantly transformed, gathering together! As it gathered, countless bolts of thunder formed in the sky, chopping straight down!

This was thunder tribulation. When a mystic realm demon was evolving into an Asura King, it needed to cross thunder tribulation!

Dragon One looked up. That massive phantom in the air had been manifested by the Asura King. And, what left Dragon One incomparably shocked was that this great phantom had clearly evolved into a dragon-like shape!

There was a dragon head, dragon horn, even a dragon body!

This mystic realm demon was actually manifesting into a dragon in the skies!?!?

Of course, it was not a True Dragon, but there was clearly the aura of a dragon coming from its body. That dragon roar was clearly emitted by this creature!

“How can this be?”

It wasn’t just Dragon One, but everyone from the Ancient Dragon Clan was stricken! They completely did not understand what was happening!

At this time, within the countless arcs of lightning in the far off distant sky, there was a group of shadows that were speaking to each other in some strange language. And, in the center of these shadows was someone that looked like a naked man with long hair hanging to his knees.

This man’s face constantly changed. Sometimes he was handsome and heroic, sometimes he was grim and fierce, sometimes he was ordinary and common, and sometimes he was ugly and grotesque. There were even times when he appeared to be like a beautiful woman or a wild beast.

This was the Asura King that was undergoing demonic tribulation. It already had an essential difference from ordinary mystic realm demons. It had condensed a body of flesh and blood, and this body seemed no different from that of a human. In fact, its stature and form were even more perfect and handsome. However, its arms and ankles were actually covered with blue scales. They seemed like… dragon scales!

A mystic realm demon was a life form of energy, a being with no physical body. However, if it had the chance to swallow up a massive amount of life force and blood energy then it could condense its own mortal body.

“Great King, those lowly and pathetic beings have already come. They are spying on you!” A vague and blurry voice sounded out from beside the man, in words that martial artists of the Divine Realm would not be able to understand.

“Of course I know, hehe… these beings from the outside world wish to take advantage of my weakest point as I undergo tribulation and kill me! But, what they don’t know is that I have already long discovered them and am still crossing tribulation to draw them near!

“These beings actually think as if they are the infallible masters of this mystic realm. Every period of time they will send people here to plunder our wealth and hunt down my Hallowed Demon race! In their eyes, we are nothing but prey! How ridiculous! But what they do not know is that my Hallowed Demon race is under the care and holy protection of the Heavenly Demon God! After constantly developing for hundreds of millions of years, our wisdom and strength have already improved beyond their reckoning. We are no longer unconsciously wandering around like before! Since they think of us as prey, we also treat them as tasty food. During my tribulation I just happen to lack some flesh and life force. I will make them come to me and help me complete my final step!

“Send out the orders. Hold the troops, do not have them move! They will take advantage of the last moment of my tribulation to begin their attack against me. Stay at the periphery and when that happens, block off the entire surrounding area of a hundred miles and completely kill all of them! All of them shall become my nutrition!"

As the Asura King spoke, it emitted a dreadful demonic energy that blotted out the heavens. And not only that, but there was even the aura of a dragon emitting from him!

"Yes, Great King."

The several shadows respectfully said. They held incomparable admiration towards the Asura King, as if it were no different from their one and only god.

The Asura King's aura became increasingly intense. Endless bolts of thunder fell down, setting the swamp underneath the Asura King into a blazing fire. Mud evaporated, burnt, and then even heated up into molten magma before evaporating once again!

This process happened extremely fast. In just the blink of an eye, a massive stretch of the black swamp had disappeared!

And in the distance, Dragon One, who had been lying unmoving, actually frowned. He felt signs that there was something wrong about this!

Before he came to the God Beast Mystic Realm he had only completely familiarized himself with the 'God Beast Mystic Realm Compendium'. And, the Ancient Dragon Clan's version of the 'God Beast Mystic Realm Compendium' was far more comprehensive than the Ancient Phoenix Clan's. According to the records left behind, an Asura King of the mystic realm demons shouldn't be so powerful.

This sort of thunder tribulation was too terrifying. And within this tribulation the Asura King was adamantly withstanding it, without seeming as if it were having any troubles.

Dragon One had a very bad feeling!

Although Dragon One knew that there was a massive lucky chance placed in front of him, he was still an extremely cautious person. For his talent and cultivation to reach such a degree, he understood his own destiny to an extent and was able to sense when impending catastrophes were around the corner.

He had an extremely tough life. Normally when he was exploring a mystic realm and he was close to death's door at every moment, he would still be able to emerge alive, and moreover he would even be able to obtain great benefits.

And now, as Dragon One saw that the situation in front of him surpassed his every expectation, he had the idea of wholeheartedly retreating. To an extreme talent, if a lucky chance was placed in front of them, they had to go all out to obtain it even if the chances of survival were slimmer than a hair.

But, sometimes, just sometimes, in a situation where one couldn't grasp the circumstances and variables involved, one would need to give up. And giving up also took enormous determination.

But just as Dragon One was thinking about whether to retreat, he saw another scene in front of him, one that caused his body to tremble and his eyes to shrink to dots before bursting out with a blinding light!

As the black swamp was evaporated by the bolts of thunder, a massive pit appeared in the ground. And, Dragon One also saw something that wasn't visible before.

In this pit, there was actually a massive bone that was a thousand feet long. This bone was whiter than jade, and the top was narrow and seamless like a divine sword, piercing through the endless heavens!

This bone looked like a fragment of an unimaginably massive skeleton. Perhaps it was part of a rib, or perhaps it was part of a femur. But no matter what it was, this bone had an unbelievable number of complex runes scattered all over it. There were large runes like buckets and small runes like grains of rice. They were endless!

Every rune contained the Laws of this world!

From this fragment of bone, an indescribably great pressure surged outwards. This pressure was unfathomably profound and also mixed together with an overwhelmingly pure yang energy. Even though he was hundreds of miles away, he could still feel the incomparably pure baptism of energy and even feel the power of the boundless vibrant ancient Laws!

“This… this is…” Dragon One’s voice quivered. Although he had never seen one before, he knew that he wasn’t wrong. This fragment of bone in front of him was…

“A supreme dragon bone!”

Buried beneath the black swamp of the God Beast Mystic Realm there was actually a piece of dragon bone! A 1000 foot long dragon bone!

What sort of concept was a 1000 foot long dragon bone?

One just needed to think of the value of dragon marrow blood to understand this. Dragon blood and phoenix blood were of similar degrees of preciousness. Ordinary dragon blood was naturally the least valuable. Above that was dragon heart blood, dragon horn blood, dragon marrow blood, reverse scale blood, and so forth.

Dragon marrow blood was similar to phoenix marrow blood in terms of value. When Lin Ming had broken through to the seventh level of the Hells of Flame, besides the phoenix blood essence which he hadn’t yet managed to reach the full standards for, he only managed to obtain three drops of phoenix marrow blood. A single drop of phoenix marrow blood was enough to cause a Divine Lord powerhouse to struggle for it. As for 10 drops of phoenix marrow blood, that was enough for a Divine Lord powerhouse to go all out.

And this 1000 foot dragon bone was still complete, so there must be a massive amount of marrow inside. Just how much dragon marrow blood must there be within it?

And that was only the dragon marrow blood. The value of the dragon bone itself wasn’t even mentioned.

In fact, the dragon bone was even more valuable than the dragon marrow blood within it!

This was because no matter which one of the four God Beast Clans it was, the clansmen only transplanted the bloodline of the God Beasts. This method would only transform their bloodline. As for their skin, flesh, bones, and tendons, those actually couldn't be transformed.

This was because they didn't have the materials to do so!

If Dragon One could obtain this piece of dragon bone and fuse it into his body, the advantages couldn't even be calculated!

Not only would the strength of his bloodline rise, but all of his bones would become near-indestructible because they would have fused together with the dragon bone. His physical strength and defensive ability would rise to a whole new level.

At this moment, Dragon One turned into a zealot. Desire flashed in his eyes, an intensity of emotion he had never felt in his life before!

If it was said that he had high hopes of becoming a Holy Lord in the future, then after obtaining this dragon bone he would be foreordained to reach the late Holy Lord realm or even the peak Holy Lord realm. Perhaps if he stumbled into more lucky chances in the future, he might even have a chance of becoming a World King!

At that time he would become another World King of the Ancient Dragon Clan. He would be one of the top three existences to ever appear in the last 100 million history of the Ancient Dragon Clan!

With such an impossibly great lucky chance in front of him, if he didn't chase after it with everything he had just because of some worries, then he wouldn't be Dragon One.

It wasn't just Dragon One, but the other Ancient Dragon Clan disciples also felt their blood boiling over with longing. Dragon One would assuredly obtain most of the benefits, but they too could share in some of the soup. After all, this dragon bone was 1000 feet long.

It was natural that some part of it would be divided to them. This was a heavenly treasure that even a World King powerhouse would go crazy over. Even if they were given a tiny imperceptible amount, it would be more than enough for them to soar in the future.

"Junior-apprentice brothers and sisters, form the formation, we're going in together!"

Dragon One shook with excitement, but his eyes were still terrifying calm. This was the most important moment of his life!

In the skies, the phantom formed by the Asura King had reached 100,000 feet long. A terrifying aura showered down, enveloping the entire world. Without a doubt, this piece of dragon bone had been obtained by this Asura King that was currently crossing its demonic tribulation. It must have swallowed up the blood energy and pure yang energy of the dragon bone, thus developing some dragon-like characteristics.

Because of this Asura King, the dragon bone must have lost a great deal of its energy essence. However, this didn't matter. If they could slay this Asura King and refine it, they could equally make up for the losses.

Chapter 1050 – You Two, Fuck Off!

Chapter 1050 – You Two, Fuck Off!

…

..

…

In the blink of an eye, the several disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan spread out. Their locations complemented each other; they had formed a battle formation.

There were many Ancient Dragon Clan disciples and their average strength was also high, much higher than that of the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

The 12 disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were the greatest elites chosen from 100 billion clansmen. But, the 36 disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan were actually chosen from a trillion clansmen. Although they had three times the disciples chosen, the base number was 10 times that of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

It was no wonder they were strong!

And with such a group of disciples, especially with such an unfathomably deep character like Dragon One, the power of their great battle array formation could be imagined!

Perhaps even an ordinary Divine Transformation realm powerhouse would be immediately killed by their explosive power!

"Not enough! These people are not enough! Send out the Iron Dragon Command and have all disciples hurry up and join us. All 36 of us, it cannot be any less! This will be the greatest lucky chance that the 36 of us will ever encounter in our lives! As long as we can obtain this dragon bone, we will be able to soar into greatness! All other harvests are nothing at all.

Even if headquarters gives us Divine Dragon blood essence, that still cannot compare with the supreme dragon bone in any way whatsoever!"

Divine Dragon blood essence was certainly valuable, but there was just too little of it. How could a single drop of Divine Dragon blood essence compare with a 1000 foot long dragon bone? Moreover, what was most important was that all four God Beast Clans, including even the Ancient Dragon Clan, only had methods to obtain the God Beast bloodlines to improve the strength of their clansmen's bloodlines. It was impossible for them to obtain something like a dragon bone. If they could obtain such a dragon bone and then obtain Divine Dragon blood essence after that, the advantages would be beyond imagination!

"This time our enemy is powerful, powerful beyond reckoning! This Asura King has absorbed the power of the supreme dragon bone, and it is no longer an ordinary Asura King. I fear that it has already discovered us, and even then it dares to cross tribulation in our sight without any attempt to hide. It simply doesn't fear us at all. It likely even wants us to come over and to swallow us up whole!"

For Dragon One to arrive at this step and become the top disciple of the Ancient Dragon Clan, besides his own talent and destiny, he was also an extremely intelligent and cunning individual. Although the dragon bone was enough to drive him mad with want, he still wasn't blinded without reason. In just a moment he had more or less correctly guessed the approximate situation.

"Yes, Senior-apprentice Brother Dragon One!"

Dragon 12 waved his hand and a black light shot out, penetrating through the void like an arrow. This was a secret sound transmission technique of the Ancient Dragon Clan. Every Iron Dragon Command was an extremely precious treasure. One could cross the void to send messages and normal mystic realm array formations could not stop it. If a disciple was sealed into an unknown space, others could determine their position using this Iron Dragon Command.

As Yan Littlemoon saw Dragon 12 sending out that light, she nervously said, “That is the Iron Dragon Command. Lin Ming, I fear the Ancient Dragon Clan is calling all of their other disciples to come here. They will form a great battle formation to struggle with the Asura King. We are simply not their match! Let alone us, even if all other disciples of the other three clans joined forces, we would still be inferior!”

The Ancient Dragon Clan’s disciples had the highest average strength of the four God Beast Clans. Moreover, the other three God Beast clans only had a total of 32 disciples in this mystic realm, four less than the Ancient Dragon Clan. It was impossible to handle them in a frontal confrontation, and even less so now that the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples were forming a great battle array! That would multiply their combat strength!

Lin Ming certainly knew this. He didn’t fear Life Destruction martial artists, and he could still contend with early Divine Sea martial artists. But, he had to admit that he was far inferior to this Dragon One, especially since he was supported by a battle array formation!

But he wasn’t willing to give up like this. Yan Littlemoon probably didn’t know what sort of divine bone that was. She likely thought it was some extraordinary treasure, but as to exactly what it was, she was clueless.

However, Lin Ming was different. He had a drop of reverse scale blood within him!

Even though he didn’t have the secret technique of the Ancient Dragon Clan to absorb the drop of reverse scale blood, nor did he have a foundation of ordinary dragon blood, causing him to waste 99% of the blood’s essence, reverse scale blood was still reverse scale blood. It was one of the most precious types of blood in a Divine Dragon’s body and had also inherited the aura of a Divine Dragon. How could Lin Ming not know that the aura of the reverse scale blood was the same as that of the divine bone?

Boundless, potent, vast, ruling over the world, overwhelming the heavens!

This was a supreme dragon bone!

If he could fuse this bone into his body, he could improve his own bones, causing his entire skeleton to take on the characteristics of a Divine Dragon's bones. His bones would become as hard as divine iron, and his striking power and defensive ability would both take a qualitative leap forwards!

Moreover, Lin Ming trained in the Divine Realm's body transformation technique. He knew that the further one went in body transformation, the harder it would become. Just the Eight Inner Hidden Gates would cost so many resources that it would cause unimaginably wealthy martial artists to shrink back in fear. And, there was still the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, something that was infinitely more difficult!

After being in the Divine Realm for such a long time, besides himself, he had never met a martial artist who dual cultivated in body and energy. Even extreme top characters like Xiao Daoji, Huo Burning Heaven, and Crimson Strifecloud, all of them walked the sole path of the essence gathering system!

Any one of those geniuses was extremely proud and confident in themselves. And they had the right to be arrogant, because their talent allowed them to be so. But, they still didn't cultivate in dual body and energy, because they knew just how difficult that road was to walk! If one couldn't open the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, then all previous efforts would slowly become meaningless and they would have wasted all of their time in vain.

Although Lin Ming had experienced numerous lucky chances, he still didn't think he would be able to smoothly break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. According to Fairy Feng, the reason it was near-impossible to step into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was that the rules of the world had changed in ancient times. Now, wanting to step into that boundary was the same as defying the Heavenly Dao itself. The difficulty of attempting to do so could be imagined!

But now that Lin Ming had already put forth the effort, he didn't want to waste it. He had to constantly search for ways to improve his own physical body. Absorbing this dragon bone would transform his entire skeleton. It would provide unreal advantages to his body transformation technique in the future.

The temptation was too great. The value of this dragon bone could not be compared to a single drop of phoenix blood essence!

Moreover, a single drop of phoenix blood essence had already caused so much pain to the Ancient Phoenix Clan, much less this dragon bone! Thus, even if Lin Ming knew the difficulty of obtaining this dragon bone was beyond his imagination, he still wasn't willing to give up and leave like this.

However, at this time, a thick killing intent shrouded down on them along with a chilling voice.

"Fuck off! You two, fuck off! Otherwise I will have you both die here without a grave!"

This overbearing tone didn't hide its thick killing intent, completely tearing apart all previous gentlemanly appearances. This was because Dragon One knew that being honorable or kind at this moment had lost all meaning. It was impossible for others to give up on such a lucky chance after a few polite words. Only absolute strength and the threat of certain death was enough to scare off people and make them vanish for good.

Lin Ming frowned; this killing intent was clear and true. He didn't doubt for a moment that Dragon One would slaughter them if they didn't leave. And, he would do so without mercy. Even if this matter were found out, he still wouldn't care about the disputes that the Ancient Phoenix Clan would raise with the Ancient Dragon Clan!

Compared to the value of the dragon bone, what would the Ancient Dragon Clan care about such minor matters? The Ancient Phoenix Clan would absolutely not wage war for just for Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon!

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, we..." As Yan Littlemoon heard Dragon One's naked threat, she shook her fists, incensed. But, there was nothing she could do. In this world, strength was the only eternal truth. If one lacked strength then they could only allow themselves to be oppressed. Now with such a massive lucky chance placed in front of them, and with Dragon One holding the overwhelming advantage, everything he did was perfectly justified. No one would wish to be bothered by others at the final critical moment before they obtained the dragon bone. After all, the opponent they faced was simply far too formidable. It was possible that both sides would be grievously injured. At that time, any accident from some unknown variable could cause them to fail at the last moment.

Lin Ming grimaced. He didn't immediately leave.

"It looks like you won't cry until you see your own coffin! Do you really think I won't dare to kill you? You two are indeed amazingly talented, but what a pity, your cultivation is too low!"

Dragon One sneered. He had full confidence in himself. With 10 people on his side and also with them forming an array formation, the bombardment of attacks would rip Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon to shreds.

"You really have no sense of death or danger. Let's go, we're killing those two first! I will take on all responsibility for this! I can guarantee that the clan will protect us at all costs, the Ancient Phoenix Clan can only swallow down their objections, and it isn't even necessarily true that they will find any evidence! Oh yes, that's right, leave that Yan Littlemoon alive. We can't waste the virgin bloodline in her body. Since we're going to do this, we're going all in. We will take Yan Littlemoon's primordial yin first before slaughtering her. Since ancient times, dragons and phoenixes have always complemented each other. The Ancient Phoenix bloodline will have great benefits to us."

As Dragon One spoke, he even talked of taking Yan Littlemoon's primordial yin without any emotion. In the face of a beauty like Yan Littlemoon, he was actually able to speak in such a cold and indifferent manner, taking her primordial yin with no obscene desire or meaning behind it. All he had was ice cold killing intent!

In his eyes, Yan Littlemoon's only value was her virginity and bloodline strength. As for her beauty, that was meaningless to him. For Dragon One to remain calm in such a situation, that was truly terrifying!

As Yan Littlemoon heard Dragon One's words, even though she was usually arrogant, she still paled. Lin Ming was also startled.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin!" Yan Littlemoon cried out in alarm. This was a true life or death moment!

Lin Ming took a step back and the Phoenix Blood Spear jumped into his hands. His eyes shined with a cold light. "Don't worry too much yet. There are 100,000 mystic realm demons here and they are still dozens of miles away from us, with a massive number of mystic realm demons between us. Once they start their great battle array they will definitely injure some mystic realm demons. At that time, a complete war will break out. And beyond that, others have also arrived!

Although Dragon One really intended to kill them, Lin Ming wasn't afraid. In this situation, if they disregarded any price to kill them then it would be possible. But, would Dragon One dare to kill everyone else here?

As Lin Ming spoke, three red lights flew in from the horizon. They were disciples of the Ancient Kirin Clan, from the Fire Kirin Branch!

As Dragon One saw this, his complexion became much more grim. The momentum produced by the Asura King crossing his demonic tribulation was far too great. If this continued then more and more people would show up.

The more people showed up, the more complex the situation would become!

"Damn it all!"

"What do we do, Senior-apprentice Dragon One? Should we kill them all off?"

As the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples saw the three Kirin Clan disciples, they also felt that things had become more difficult. Killing Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon and offending the Ancient Phoenix Clan was something they could still live with, but if they slaughtered everyone that arrived then they really would arouse the anger of all. If they really managed to offend all three other God Beast Clans then even the Ancient Dragon Clan wouldn't be able to bear the pressure.

Unless…

They killed off every single person!

Chapter 1051 – The Great War Begins

Chapter 1051 – The Great War Begins

…

…

…

Dragon One sucked in a deep breath, a cold light shining in his eyes. He knew that if he tried to keep this a secret and kill them all, even he couldn't manage that! Moreover, if they fought then they would inevitably be weakened in the aftermath, adding even more variables to the situation!

At this moment, two more beams of blue light caught up. They were disciples from the Roc Clan, the Blue-winged Roc Branch. They were favored children of the Wind Laws and excelled at speed. Dealing with their high speed movements was extremely difficult.

"What is that?"

"I have no idea! It should be some kind of extreme saint beast, or possibly even a God Beast bone!"

The Blue-winged Roc disciple as well as the Fire Kirin disciples could all feel the terrifying aura emanating from the God Beast bone. Such a great lucky chance left them all frothing with excitement.

"Mm? Those are the Ancient Dragon Clan's people! Dragon One, Dragon Six, Dragon Eight, Dragon 12… so many of them!" As the Blue-winged Roc disciple saw so many Ancient Dragon Clan disciples here, his heart immediately sank.

“Shit! We were too late! The Dragon Clan people definitely won’t let off such a fat piece of meat. Moreover, there are still 100,000 mystic realm demons here that are extremely difficult to deal with. Wanting to obtain that divine bone will be far too difficult.”

“Summon all our other clansmen here, we’re going to join forces!”

None of the heroic young elites present were idiots that couldn’t tell just what the current situation was like, thus they made the most sensible judgment. Only by gathering all of their scattered clansmen and uniting together could they have a chance of obtaining this divine bone. Trying to take possession of it alone was far too unrealistic.

“You lot, I want all of you to fuck off!”

Dragon One’s entire body surged with crushing killing intent. With him as the center, the great array formation formed by several powerhouses of the Ancient Dragon Clan was indeed extraordinary. The thick killing intent condensed into reality, giving off bottomless pressure.

But, the geniuses of the other clans were heroic elites chosen from a hundred billion people. There was not a single one of them that was weak. Facing Dragon One’s pressure, their complexions changed for the slightest moment before they immediately recovered.

“How amusing! Your Ancient Dragon Clan has been far too cocky! For world treasures like this, they belong to whoever can take them. Just when was it that the likes of you could monopolize them yourself!”

A Kirin Clan martial artist said with a severe light, his entire posture vigilant. He was a peak early Divine Sea martial artist, just a step away from the middle Divine Sea realm. His strength was amazing.

And as he spoke, with two whistling sounds, two sound transmission talismans flew out.

Summon all reinforcements!

They were extremely far from Dragon One and sending a sound transmission talisman only took a brief moment. How could anyone possibly stop it?

Moreover, Dragon One also knew that it wouldn't matter if he tried to stop him. This was because it would take the Asura King a long period of time to cross its demonic tribulation. Even if there wasn't a sound transmission, with such a massive scene occurring around them, the powerhouses of the other clans were bound to catch up sooner or later.

This lake was bound to become more and more muddied!

"Senior-apprentice Brother Dragon One, what should we do!?"

Dragon 12 nervously asked. If the disciples from all three other God Beast Clans arrived here, their Ancient Dragon Clan would absolutely become the target. This was because they were the most powerful. As long as the other three clans weren't idiots, they would join forces to deal with them.

"We might as well start now and take advantage of the time before they join together. If you see one kill one, if you see two kill two!"

Dragon Six harshly said. As the genius disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan grew up, all of them were subject to extremely intense competition that could even be called brutal and tragic. Each one was more ruthless than the last! This Dragon Six actually wanted to kill everyone present!

Dragon One's face darkened until it resembled the nine nether abyss. A cold light blazed from his eyes, but he actually maintained total silence as countless plans and machinations flashed through his mind.

Everyone was scattered and they were also very far away. They were able to run away at any moment. Wanting to kill them was easier said than done. If he needed to kill them then he had to make sure no survivors were left behind. Otherwise, if the survivors managed to grab their treasures in the ensuing chaos later, they would really be fools.

As time passed, more and more people arrived!

It wasn't just people from the Ancient Dragon Clan that caught up, but also disciples of the other three clans.

Although there were countless dangers in the God Beast Mystic Realm, the geniuses of the four clans were nearly unscathed. One reason was that they were all geniuses that excelled in combat to begin with, and the destiny gathered upon their bodies was also great, so ordinary dangers weren't likely to harm them much. Another reason was that even if there was someone who was inexperienced and tender like Yan Littlemoon with insufficient cultivation, they could still seek out the shelter of an older powerhouse, thus preventing any troubles from rising.

Soon, over 60 people had gathered up. Nearly every genius that had entered the God Beast Mystic Realm had arrived!

On one side was the Ancient Dragon Clan with Dragon One leading them, and on the other side were the disciples of the three other clans.

The two sides stood in sharp opposition!

At this time, everyone knew that having sole control of the supreme dragon bone was impossible. Let alone a single person taking it, but even a single clan taking the entire thing was impossible. Even if the most powerful Ancient Dragon Clan wanted to eat up all the treasures, they would bite off more than they could chew.

"Haha! Brother Dragon One, how about our four clans join forces to obtain the dragon bone before we decided further about how to split the benefits?"

Xiao Ping laughed out. He had already heard from the Kirin Clan and Roc Clan about how Dragon One had acted against them before the other disciples arrived. Even so, he still happily laughed and chatted with Dragon One as if nothing had happened.

“Yes, let’s join forces. At that time your Ancient Dragon Clan can have a bit more of the benefits!” Near Xiao Ping, the Kirin Clan’s Eldest Disciple Jiang Bai echoed in joyous agreement.

“Join forces? Have a bit more of the benefits? Hahahaha!” Dragon One suddenly raucously laughed, raving like madman.

Jiang Bai wrinkled his eyebrows. “What are you laughing about? Is this situation funny to you?”

Dragon One’s smile disappeared and he icily said, “What pleasant words. Even if all you scattered garbage come here, what combat strength do you have? The 36 of us can join together to form the Astral Heaven Formation and will inevitably become the main target of the Asura King and its minions. Meanwhile, the lot of you will randomly wander at the sides until both of us are wounded and then you’ll swoop in and snatch away the victory! Dream on! You want to fight together? Alright! We might as well start now!”

Dragon One’s face flashed with a ferocious light. He swiped his spatial ring and in the next moment a massive arc of blue sword light cut through the skies, directly impacting towards the distant mountain peak with 100,000 mystic realm demons around it!

“What are you trying to do!?!?” Jiang Bai’s eyes widened in utter shock!

Before his voice fell, there was an explosive ringing sound as the sword light smashed into a group of mystic realm demons. In that moment, over 20 mystic realm demons were ruthlessly torn apart by that sword energy, bursting into smoke!

All of the mystic realm demons swiveled towards the disciples of the four clans. Their strange red eyes formed by energy began to fill with a violent rage!

All of the disciples from the four clans suddenly felt a creepy feeling washing them. Originally they were all standing on the periphery. Since their strength far surpassed that of an ordinary mystic realm demon, all they needed to do was use some special barrier concealment methods to deceive the sense of the mystic realm demons. But now, Dragon One's attack had exposed their position.

"Shit!"

Jiang Bai was infuriated. He had originally been prepared to wait for the final moment when the Asura King was undergoing its demonic tribulation, and then by gathering the strength of everyone present and focusing it together, they would launch a long-range attack through a combining array formation and heavily wound the Asura King. They might have even managed to kill the Asura King. Then, those 100,000 mystic realm demons would become like headless flies. If everyone then rushed over with on overwhelming momentum, they could cause all the mystic realm demons to scatter in panic.

But, he didn't imagine that Dragon One would directly launch a solo attack on the 100,000 mystic realm demons. They originally had the perfect advantage, but now this attack exposed their position. If they were forced to engage in a massive melee with an army of 100,000 mystic realm demons, the disciples would suffer serious losses!

That was 100,000 mystic realm demons! And they were only a group of 60 some disciples!

Dragon One was filled with bloodthirst. From the start he had never thought of sharing anything with the other clans. His only desire was to swallow up half of that supreme dragon bone by himself! Only then would he have a faint chance of attacking the World King boundary!

"You want to join forces? Fine! Then I'll draw those 100,000 mystic realm demons and we'll engage in a true, tragic, slaughterfest! I want to see just where you'll hide! You pack of blithering retards, did you really think that the Asura King hasn't discovered us from the start? It has already absorbed the strength of the supreme dragon bone and is no longer an ordinary Asura King! It is a spider that set out web, waiting for you small flies to gather in before catching you all! Hehehahaha! Since you've come here, then you might as well make use of your life and blood and pave the way for me!"

Dragon One crazily laughed. His laughter echoed between the heavens and earth. As the number one master of all the geniuses present, Dragon One's sense and judgment were far above everyone else's! Moreover, as a member of the Ancient Dragon Clan, he was clearest about just what the supreme dragon bone was. He was able to vaguely estimate just how powerful the Asura King had become after absorbing the supreme dragon bone!

Now was not the time to decide how the four clans would divide the supreme dragon bone. Rather, it was the time to decide whether they would become the hunters of the supreme dragon bone, or become the prey that was hunted instead!

The 100,000 mystic realm demons surged forth like a black tide. 200,000 eyes radiated with a blood red light, their killing intent soaring to the heavens!

"Hehe, have they all arrived? Over 60 talents from the outside; their flesh and blood should be enough for nourishing me a bit. That little kid from the Dragon Clan isn't too bad, he knows just what I was planning. He dared to provoke such an attack so he should have a bit of ability. But even so… all of them will die the same!"

At this time, the Asura King was still undergoing tribulation. Its face was that of a handsome man, and its lips were curved up in a cunning smile. But as it spoke his last word, its face suddenly shifted into that of a brutal demon. Killing intent gushed out from its entire body. "Encircle them, kill them all! Leave their energy essence for me to swallow up!"

………

"You are deranged! You are out of your mind!" As the disciples of the four clans saw the waves of mystic realm demons hurtle towards them, all of them felt a cold chill run up their backs. If they fought in this war, they would suffer absolutely tremendous losses.

"Hahahaha! Fight! Fight and die! The more of you that die, the less people there will be to compete with me for the dragon bone!" Dragon One flourished a top grade saint artifact sword. He seethed with a fevered frenzy!

At this time, although he looked as if he had gone mad, the truth was that his innermost thoughts were as calm and cold as a lake of ice! At the moment he had decided to compete for the dragon bone, he knew that this sort of cataclysmic war would occur. And, the disciples of the other three clans were the best sacrificial lambs!

Yan Littlemoon blanched as she saw the waves of mystic realm demons rush towards her like a massive tsunami. She was well aware that once she was embroiled in this sort of chaotic melee, the first one to die would be an inexperienced rookie like herself!

As for counting on Lin Ming to protect her, that was just a joke. It wasn't like she was his woman or something, so why would he feel the duty or obligation to do so?

For a time, a trace of despair and fear flashed through Yan Littlemoon's heart. In the face of impending death, who could still be calm?

But at this moment, an incomparably tranquil and familiar voice sounded out in her ears.

"Enter my ring."

"Mm?" Yan Littlemoon paused. She felt a soft strength cover her and she subconsciously didn't resist. In the next moment she had entered into an unknown space.

This was actually a beautiful valley with mountains and rivers around her, resembling a summer paradise.

At the moment the war was about to break out, Lin Ming placed Yan Littlemoon into his Extreme Violet Ring. This was one of Jiang Ziji's relics he obtained from the Temple of Marvels. The inside contained a separate space that could hold rivers, valleys, mountains, and even a medicine garden. Naturally, it could also hold a living person.

Chapter 1052 – Grandmist Battle Armor

Chapter 1052 – Grandmist Battle Armor

…

…

…

Yan Littlemoon looked at the scenery around her in a shocked daze. Right in front of her was a lush and vibrant medicine garden, completely filled with spirit herbs that were 100,000 years old and above. It was a verdant land, colored with spring. And behind this medicine garden, there was a palace. As she saw this, she immediately knew where she was. She was in Lin Ming's spatial ring, in a minor dimension formed within.

"That fellow… he rescued me…"

As she looked at this quiet and peaceful scenery, Yan Littlemoon felt all sorts of strange and complex emotions fill her heart.

She never thought that in the final moment, Lin Ming would receive her into his Extreme Violet Ring. As long as Lin Ming didn't die and the ring didn't break, she would be safe and well.

And in terms of Lin Ming's combat effectiveness, Yan Littlemoon didn't know why, but she felt an inexplicable blind belief in him. Even though she knew that it was impossible for him to resist 100,000 mystic realm demons, she still thought that he could escape, even if he couldn't obtain the dragon bone.

…………..

And at this moment, outside of the Extreme Violet Ring, a life and death slaughterfest had been engaged between the disciples of the four God Beast Clans and the mystic realm demons!

This was 100,000 mystic realm demons against 60 some genius clan disciples!

“Dragon One, that fucking psycho! Everyone, get in formation!”

Jiang Bai breathlessly said as six other disciples gathered by his side and began to form an array formation. As for the other three disciples, they didn’t join in because they didn’t have the ability to!

Not all disciples of the four God Beast Clans could form array formations with each other. For instance, in the Ancient Phoenix Clan there were many genius disciples spread out in the 72 branch palaces, so it was simply unrealistic for them to train in array formations. After all, doing so was impractical, especially since they didn’t gather together often. Even when they explored this mystic realm they were often dispersed all over. This current group war was an entirely unexpected event.

Such a result also led to not every disciple from the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Roc Clan, or Kirin Clan being able to gather into array formations. In the Ancient Phoenix Clan, only several disciples that had been together at headquarters were able to do so and compete with the Ancient Dragon Clan’s 36 Astral Heaven Formation!

“Everyone, gather by me, we’re forming the 100 Bird Burning Sun Formation!” Xiao Ping shouted out. This was an array formation that the several disciples from headquarters had practiced together before.

“If we form the array… then what will those branch palace disciples like Lin Ming do?” A disciple subconsciously asked.

“What a bunch of nonsense. At this time what else can we do, just let them run about as they will!” Huang Tidemark sneered. But, this argument was also understandable. In such a crisis, who could still worry and look after others?

As Huang Tidemark imagined Lin Ming being swallowed up by countless demons until there was nothing left of him, he felt pleased with himself. That brat had taken Yan Littlemoon away from him in front of everyone and caused him to lose face.

“Not even having a corpse left is the most miserable way to die. But what a pity about that Yan Littlemoon girl; I still haven’t managed to taste her yet. Her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline is truly wasted!”

But then, when Huang Tidemark glanced at Lin Ming through the chaos, he actually saw that Yan Littlemoon, who had been standing beside him, had suddenly disappeared.

“Mm? A spatial ring with its own minor dimension? Humph, that’s still useless. You will die no matter what!”

Against a great army of 100,000 mystic realm demons, even they weren’t sure they could survive after having formed their great array formation, much less Lin Ming, who was all alone.

Bang!

With a terrifying series of ringing explosive sounds, the swarm of 100,000 mystic realm demons formed a giant current that smashed down against the disciples like a heavy armored fist. But, the genius disciples of the four great clans were like a sharp blade, colliding with the mystic realm demons together. For a time, wild and turbulent energy recklessly shot out!

And above the disciples of the four great clans, a giant blue wheel shot up into the skies. On top of this spinning wheel there were 36 runes, each of them sparkling with a bright light!

36 disciples each stood above their own rune. The runes combined together, causing a resonant dragon’s cry to soar into the skies! The phantom of an Azure Dragon floated above the blue spinning wheel, its claws slashing outwards!

“All fellow apprentices! Burn your blood essence together to form a Celestial Dragon Rune and inscribe it onto the 36 Astral Heaven Formation! We will increase the might of our formation to the limit! This is the greatest lucky chance that we will ever have in our entire lives! No one must think they will get lucky, we must all go all-out for this!”

Dragon One bellowed. He was the first to burn his Dragon Clan blood essence!

Burning Dragon Clan blood essence was different from burning Ancient Phoenix blood essence. This was because a Phoenix God Beast could bathe in the fires of nirvana and be reborn. No matter how much blood essence it burnt, it still wouldn’t diminish by a single drop. But as for the Dragon Clan’s blood essence, that was simply not like the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s at all. Every drop of blood essence they burnt was another drop gone!

At this time, Dragon One had really gone all out!

Bang!

With a loud shout from Dragon One, 36 divine pillars of light beamed forth from the bodies of the 36 disciples; each of them had burnt their life’s blood essence!

These pillars of light came in a rainbow of scintillating colors. There was azure, gold, blood red… each color represented each disciple’s bloodline relationship with the different Divine Dragons!

The entire sky was lit up with multicolored halos!

And in the center of the array formation’s 36 runes, each rune rose up as if they had come to life. Each rune turned into a little dragon that soared into the winds, flying about like living beings.

“Oh, Ancient Dragon God, with our blood essence as the sacrifice, we summon your glorious strength. We beg you, grant us loyal subjects your unsurpassed supernatural divine might!”

Dragon One’s face was filled with a pious reverence, as if he were carrying out some sacrosanct ceremony.

Wu— wu—-

The spinning wheel beneath his feet had already become a kaleidoscope of colors. As it quickly revolved, the spinning wheel even cut through the air, releasing a harsh grating sound as if countless ghosts were crying in the sky. Even the surrounding space began to tremble!

Such a sound was fused with the aura of a Divine Dragon as well as the energy of 36 powerhouses from the Ancient Dragon Clan. Wherever these sonic waves struck, numerous mystic realm demons exploded into smoke!

These mystic realm demons were intangible and invisible bodies of energy to begin with. To strike them with these sound waves filled with energy, the lethality was truly great!

Not just that, but as the rainbow wheel spun around, it was also able to absorb the mystic realm demons that had exploded into energy. A massive amount of mystic realm energy curled up into the spinning wheel, nourishing and strengthening its body, making it shine with an even brighter divine light!

“What!?!? What kind of array formation is that! The array formation formed by the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples can actually absorb mystic realm demons to strengthen itself and increase its killing strength!”

“If it’s like this then they have no need to bear 100,000 mystic realm demons. This is because they can use the strength of the mystic realm demons themselves to slaughter even more of them! No wonder Dragon One was so crazy! He truly has the ability to stir up the 100,000 mystic realm demons and kill the Asura King as it’s undergoing its final demonic tribulation!”

“This is bad! If this continues then we will be stranded in this sea of mystic realm demons! And the disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan will directly push their way into the center. At that time, if they manage to obtain the dragon bone and walk away while we are stuck here, then we might exhaust ourselves and perish!"

Jiang Bai instantly realized this and he fumed with anger. He felt as if he had been tricked by Dragon One. Not only had he turned into bait that had to share the pressure, and not only would he not obtain any benefits, but he might even have to compensate with his life!

However, it was simply impossible for him to compete for the dragon bone right now, especially within the swarm of mystic realm demons. Trying to advance just 100 meters within all these mystic realm demons was extremely difficult.

"What do we do? Do we break out or rush in with the Dragon Clan disciples?"

Everyone was caught in a dilemma. They had confidence they could break out of this encirclement. Even if they took some damage, they would still be able to survive with 70% of the disciples intact.

But, that was the same as giving up on the supreme dragon bone.

If they rushed forwards then there was a chance they could obtain the supreme dragon bone. However, the losses would truly be great. There was a chance that even with so many losses, they still wouldn't achieve anything!

And at this time, Lin Ming was also swallowed up by the swarms of mystic realm demons!

He hadn't formed an array formation. The advantage of this was that he was the most inconspicuous and this also made him the smallest target with the least amount of mystic realm demons rushing at him.

"Grandmist battle spirit!"

As he saw seven or eight mystic realm demons hurtle towards him, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred and the dark gold grandmist battle spirit directly shot forth from his spiritual sea. In a split second, those seven or eight mystic realm demons were all crushed to death and turned into pure mystic realm energy. Lin Ming waved his hand and received the energy into the Fire Pattern Furnace left behind by Yan Littlemoon.

Although Lin Ming's total combat strength wasn't the highest amongst the 60 some disciples, he actually had the easiest time killing groups of mystic realm demons. This was because with just a sweep of his battle spirit, all ordinary mystic realm demons in front of him would perish. This saved both energy and time.

However, this wasn't enough. Lin Ming was aware that if he approached the Asura King, he would suffer greater resistance. As he went closer to the Asura King, not only would there be more mystic realm demons, but they would also be stronger. There were mystic realm demons that had lived for thousands or even ten thousand years!

"Heavenly Demon force field, open!"

The Prime Emperor red lotus began to slowly bloom behind Lin Ming! In the chaos of the battlefield, no one had time to notice this. And as the Prime Emperor red lotus bloomed, the composition of space around Lin Ming began to change, turning into grandmist space!

Grandmist space symbolized the power of the most source Laws present at the forming of the universe. Even though the rules of the God Beast Mystic Realm world were different and had even caused the genius disciples of the four God Beast Clans to be slightly hindered as they tried to use the power of Laws, this still wasn't able to affect the grandmist space at all.

This was because the God Beast Mystic Realm was still a place that had evolved due to some unknown rules, countless hundreds of millions of years after the forming of the universe. Thus, it was unable to contend with the most original and source Chaos Laws.

As soon as the grandmist space appeared, Lin Ming's aura suddenly changed! He compressed the grandmist space to within 30 feet of himself. Any mystic realm demons that intruded upon this grandmist space immediately issued a terrifying scream as their bodies melted away!

Grandmist space annihilated all Laws. These bodies of energy were unable to withstand the decomposing power of the grandmist space!

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred and the grandmist battle spirit shot out. A world of will projection overlapped with the grandmist space, turning the entire grandmist space golden!

The grandmist space continued to compress and condense until it was finally only three feet away from Lin Ming. This nearly created a grandmist battle armor around Lin Ming, and the power of this grandmist battle armor to decompose the power of Laws had reached a terrifying degree. Any mystic realm demon that even slightly bumped into it would immediately explode before being twisted into the grandmist space and forming the elementary form of grandmist energy.

With the Ancient Dragon Clan's 36 Astral Heaven Formation as well as the other disciples of the three clans gathered into their own formations, Lin Ming was the smallest target. At any given time there were only two dozen or so mystic realm demons rushing towards him. And as these mystic realm demons touched his grandmist battle armor, they were immediately killed. None of them were able to stop Lin Ming's high-speed advance forward!

Chapter 1053 – Sneaky

Chapter 1053 – Sneaky

…

…

…

Rumble rumble rumble!

With Dragon One in the lead, the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples rushed over in a blazing surge of light. Every breath of time, a dozen mystic realm demons would be torn to nothing by their rainbow-colored corona!

Of course, such a savage killing method required the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples to expend a great deal of their source strength as the foundation. These disciples had all burnt a portion of their life's blood essence!

Moreover, the closer they got to the Asura King, the greater the pressure they felt!

They had already reached a distance where there were mystic realm demons that had lived for thousands or even for 10,000 years. The mystic realm demons violently impacted against the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples!

And, as the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples were braving their way towards the Asura King, the other clans' disciples were all taking different actions.

The three great clans each had their own small core group. The Ancient Phoenix Clan took Xiao Ping as the head, the Kirin Clan took Jiang Bai as the head, and the Roc Clan took their own eldest disciple, Argent Gale, as their head. With these three acting as the center, and with the God Beast Clan disciples that were familiar with ancient array formations supporting them, they also rushed over towards the Asura King, wanting to claim their own portion of the plunder!

With such a massive lucky chance splayed out in front of them, no one was willing to give up just yet.

However, their speed was far slower than the Ancient Dragon Clan's. As they fell into the swarm of mystic realm demons, every step forwards they took was done with extreme difficulty.

As for the other edge disciples that didn't understand or know how to coordinate battle array formations, they began to escape!

They were weak, alone, and besieged on all sides by this demonic army. If they were fully sucked into this army of 100,000 mystic realm demons, then that meant certain death! Even if they somehow managed to approach the Asura King, they still knew that it was impossible for them to obtain the supreme dragon bone. Although they loathed abandoning such a tremendous lucky chance, they were also well aware that blindly rushing towards the supreme dragon bone in such conditions would only mean their death.

Thus, their only choice was to escape. But even if they wanted to escape, there were nine chances of death and only one chance to make it out alive!

"Ahh!"

With a miserable cry, a Kirin Clan disciple's spiritual sea was drilled into by a mystic realm demon!

Mystic realm demons excelled in will attacks. Once they invaded a martial artist's spiritual sea, they would desperately attempt to swallow up that martial artist's will. In normal times, with this Kirin Clan disciple's willpower, he would certainly be able to engage in an epic struggle and finally extinguish this mystic realm demon that had penetrated into his body.

But, within this swarming army of 100,000 mystic realm demons, how would the other mystic realm demons possibly give this Kirin Clan disciple a chance to kill their comrade?

Dozens of mystic realm demons plunged forwards!

In just the blink of an eye, two dozen mystic realm demons broke into that Kirin Clan disciple’s body like wolves to the slaughter.

“Ahhhhh!”

The Kirin Clan disciple issued heart-rending screams. His face violently twisted, with pain, despair, and madness flashing across his features. Blood flowed out of his eyes and his body suddenly swelled up. Then, with a loud explosion, his body burst apart into a fog of blood with bits of bone and flesh spraying out into the world. These leftover pieces of flesh were quickly eaten clean by the countless mystic realm demons. Finally, all that was left of that Kirin Clan disciple was a bit of unnoticeable residue...

This was the first genius disciple who had been killed by the mystic realm demons. As the other disciples that were running away saw this person’s death, all of them felt sadness and also fear. Such a horrifying way of dying caused their scalps to tingle with creepiness. Which one of them wasn’t a talented genius of their sect? In the future they were bound to rise into glory, so who would want to die here?

“Let’s run away together!”

“We have to fight!”

“Join together and let’s break our way out of here!”

The survivors began to gather together. However, in just several breaths of time, two more disciples were possessed by mystic realm demons. Their bodies exploded into a fog of blood!

The flesh and blood essence of geniuses was originally a greatly nourishing substance to mystic realm demons. And now that they were stimulated by all the blood essence, the mystic realm demons became even more rapid as they crazily charged forwards!

The pressure on the disciples that were escaping suddenly rose to another level!

And at this time, Xiao Ping, Jiang Bai, and Argent Gale weren't much better off!

Each of them only had six or seven disciples in their group forming an array formation, so just how powerful could it be? And, with so few people, these array formations weren't even complete. The further they rushed in, the greater the pressure was!

However, they had already made it halfway in. Even if they decided to turn around now, they would also have to bitterly struggle on their way out! But above all, they were not willing to do so!

In order to not be surrounded on all sides, the three groups finally joined together. However, as they joined together, their presence became an even larger target, attracting far more mystic realm demons!

This caused their speed to drop considerably. Every step they took was made through brutal and savage carnage!

Of the four clans' disciples, only the Ancient Dragon Clan had a momentum like a surging beam of light. The 36 of them attracted nearly half of the mystic realm demons!

Underneath the control of the Asura King, countless mystic realm demons ignored their lives and rushed at them. There were even 10,000 year mystic realm demons that transformed into all sorts of vicious beast phantoms in the air, hurtling towards them; this was similar to martial skills and Law attacks!

Mystic realm demons had developed for several hundred million years already, slowly fumbling their way forwards. They now had their own rudimentary martial arts civilization. Although they couldn't compare with humanity's splendid and majestic martial arts history, they were themselves pure forms of energy. Once they displayed their own abilities that were similar to martial skills, their strength doubled!

“How amusing. That one called Dragon One is truly not some common nobody. He clearly knows that I intend to lure them in and hunt them and yet he still rushes my way. He truly has the capital to do so!”

The Asura King was still crossing its tribulation. At this time, the teasing expression on its face slowly fell and it began to become more serious. This was because it was able to feel a faint power that could threaten it from the combined formation of the Ancient Dragon Clan’s 36 disciples. Especially since this was the moment it was crossing tribulation. For an Asura King, the weakest point of their entire life was during this process.

“Slaughter them all!”

A cold light flashed in the Asura King’s eyes with a thick killing intent accompanying it. The mystic realm demons in the sky began to rush towards the rainbow halo of the Ancient Dragon Clan without a care for their lives!

From the distance, there were even more and more mystic realm demons that were catching up. This was because this Asura King was the ruler of all mystic realm demons in a million mile radius!

During this ensuing chaos, no one noticed an ordinary-looking stream of light that was shuttling through the battle.

This stream of light was Lin Ming.

Grandmist space was an extremely good method to hide his own aura. With the grandmist space covering his body, all of his presence was broken down by the grandmist space without the least bit leaking out.

In addition, the two forces of the disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan and the disciples of the other three clans were just too eye-catching. They shot out countless beams of wild energy, causing heaven and earth origin energy to tumble and surge. Thus, in this merciless melee, Lin Ming wasn't noticeable at all.

And then, Lin Ming simply sank into the swamp ground!

With the grandmist battle armor protecting him, it was extremely easy for Lin Ming to drill into the swamp ground. The swamp was composed of the elements of earth and water. However, no matter what material it was, anything that entered into the annihilating grandmist space would be decomposed into elementary grandmist energy and completely destroyed. Even though the Laws of the God Beast Mystic Realm were slightly different, they still couldn't escape such a fate.

Thus, Lin Ming could drill into the swamp like a hot knife through butter. But, for the other disciples of the four God Beast Clans, digging their way in was far more difficult!

The Ancient Phoenix Clan disciples would have to summon fire true essence to melt the ground into magma before drilling their way through. As for the other three clans, they would have to blow up the ground with their own strength, which was an even greater waste of energy. This was because none of them understood the Earth Laws. The Ancient Dragon Clan had no Earth Dragon in their history, the Kirin Clan had no Earth Kirin, and the Roc Clan definitely had no Earth Roc.

On the ground, wind-attribute and thunder-attribute martial artists could display a mind-boggling speed. But below the ground, they simply didn't have any advantages at all. Not only would they have to slowly move forwards, but they would also consume true essence at a tremendous speed. If they battled underground, they would truly be heading towards death. Every move they used would cost several times the amount of true essence.

Even for Lin Ming, passing through the ground would cause his true essence consumption to rapidly increase. But, this was also the best method of concealing himself. With the grandmist battle armor to shield his own aura and then drill downwards, Lin Ming was able to hide his presence to the extreme.

There were also mystic realm demons underneath the swamp. Because mystic realm demons had no physical body to begin with, it was definitely easy for them to pass underground. However, under the commands of the Asura King, nearly all of the mystic realm demons had gone to attack the Ancient Dragon Clan and the allied group of the other three clans. There was now an extremely scarce number of mystic realm demons underground. Lin Ming occasionally bumped into a straggler, but once they touched his grandmist battle armor, they still evaporated into smoke!

Although these mystic realm demons were controlled by the Asura King, they only followed its orders through its voice and the transmission of will waves – their senses weren't directly connected. When these mystic realm demons underground were instantly destroyed by Lin Ming, they didn't even have a chance to send the Asura King a single thought.

Like this, Lin Ming quietly made his way over to the supreme dragon bone's position. And in the skies, the Ancient Dragon Clan's 36 disciples finally killed their way to the front of the Asura King!

The 36 Astral Heaven Formation, fused with a Celestial Dragon Rune that was formed by burning one's blood essence as the price, now faced off against the Asura King, a being whose cultivation reached 100,000 years and who had also absorbed a massive amount of dragon bone essence!

"Hahaha! Well done! Wonderfully so! For you all to arrive at this step, I have really looked down on your outsiders. I thought that you were only easily obtainable food to me, but now it seems that there is finally some meaning. You have aroused my interest enough for me to personally take action!" As the Asura King spoke in the common language of the Divine Realm, its voice was sharp and grating. It wasn't strange that it knew the common language of humans. This was because after a mystic realm demon swallowed up a person's spiritual sea, they would also be able to absorb a part of their memories. This Asura King had lived for 100,000 years. In the past, it had swallowed up a number of disciples from the four God Beast Clans and had inherited their memories. This included their martial skills and cultivation methods. However, it didn’t practice these cultivation methods because human cultivation methods simply weren’t suitable for a mystic realm demon.

“Demon One! Demon Two! Demon Three! Go help my children kill the other group. I will personally deal with these Dragon Clan babies!”

“Yes, my King!”

From behind the Asura King, three mystic realm demons with cultivations surpassing 30,000 years rushed towards Xiao Ping, Jiang Bai, Argent Gale, and the other disciples of the three clans.

These three demons had already begun to take human form. Their bodies shined with a brilliant blue light. It was obvious that the energy within them had condensed to a ridiculous degree.

Each of them was a powerful and terrifying opponent!

And now, they all rushed towards the allied group of the three clans that was already having difficulty surviving. Without a doubt, these three demons would cause tremendous damage to the disciples of the three clans. It was possible that they would even be directly routed and destroyed!

Chapter 1054 – To Play Both Sides

Chapter 1054 – To Play Both Sides

…

…

…

“Attack together! This is the most important battle we will ever experience in our lives! We can only win, we cannot be defeated here!” Dragon One bellowed, his blood boiling over. Behind him, the 35 other Dragon Clan disciples were the same. They would either emerge victorious from this ashen land or perish within the encirclement of 100,000 mystic realm demons. No matter what they did, there was no escape path left for them!

At this time, the Asura King also attacked. Its entire body was twined with countless arcs of tribulation thunder, but it was still able to lift its hands to attack. One could see from this alone just how terrifying it was!

Roar!

A resounding dragon cry filled the skies. An Azure Dragon rushed out from the body of the Asura King. This was a phantom formed from the dragon bone essence that the Asura King had absorbed.

“You all take me and my supreme dragon bone as your rightful treasures, but I also take all of your blood vitality and Dragon Clan bloodline as my food! Although your bloodline density isn’t too high, it will still be enough to allow me to completely form my flesh and blood body! I have swallowed countless martial artists and obtained an incalculable number of cultivation methods from their memories. All I need is a human body to finally cultivate these abilities! When that happens, I will enter into the greater world of the Divine Realm! I will become a World King, an Empyrean, living carefree through the universe, hahahaha!”

“World King? Empyrean? Your pompous words are far too shameless!” Dragon One roared, his entire body emitting explosive crackling sounds. His eyes began to turn amber brown and his pupils widened to cover the sclera. They became deeper, more profound, as if they were tunnels connecting to the endless deep space. At the same time, dragon scales covered Dragon One. And with him in the lead, the other 35 Dragon Clan disciples behind him began to go all out. All of them burnt 10% of their life’s blood essence!

At this point, they had burnt 20% of their blood essence. If they burnt all of their blood essence, the fires of their lives would immediately extinguish. As for burning 20% of their blood essence, although they wouldn’t die, this would still greatly reduce their lifespan. This would have tremendous effects on all their future accomplishments. It could already be said that the Ancient Dragon Clan’s 36 disciples had cut off all their roads of retreat. At this point it was fight until they won, or fight until they died!

When driven by such great benefits, everyone had gone mad!

Bang!

The spinning blue wheel smashed against the Azure Dragon phantom formed by the Asura King. Both phenomena exploded, and a violent surge of energy flooded outwards, turning hundreds of nearby mystic realm demons into smoke!

The Asura King’s body shook and its blood tumbled. It nearly vomited blood. In that strike just now, it had been injured!

“Damn!” The Asura King frowned, wiping blood from the corners of its lips. While it was crossing tribulation, it had expended over 80% of his energy to resist the demonic tribulation. And in this situation, the 36 disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan had formed a great array formation to contend with it; the pressure of this could be imagined.

“I’ve really underestimated this bunch of outside mousies. Although these mousies are small and weak, when dozens of them join together they can actually threaten me! Humanity’s array formations and cultivation methods are truly bizarre. But, this is my stage, this is my home. Since you lot dare to fight me here, all of you are doomed to perish!”

The Asura King gave a loud shout and a massive vortex swirled around it. Heaven and earth origin energy spun around it and the numerous mystic realm demons nearby were twisted up into this vortex, turning into pure energy that was devoured by the Asura King!

The Asura King’s body emitted explosive crackling sounds. Its entire form began to grow. Its muscles bulged, becoming harder and tougher. Its appearance also became increasingly gruesome. The Asura King was actually able to absorb the power of ordinary mystic realm demons.

This battle was destined to become increasingly intense and frantic until it turned into a crazy melee. Whether it was the Asura King or the 36 disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan, all of them were desperately attacking, paying any cost to kill their enemies. It was do or die!

And at the same time, the disciples of the other three clans fell into a rancorous battle.

Demon One, Demon Two, and Demon Three were all mystic realm demons with a 30,000 year cultivation. Each of them was cruel and vicious. Their cultivation certainly couldn’t compare to the Asura King’s, and they definitely hadn’t absorbed the strength of the supreme dragon bone. However, they were all in their peak conditions. They weren’t undergoing demonic tribulation like the Asura King.

This let them fight without any scruples!

And because of the Asura King’s mind control, only one thought percolated within them. That was… to kill all enemies!

Kill all enemies no matter the price!

The three clans didn't have many disciples to begin with, and their array formations weren't complete. Underneath the assault of the massive number of mystic realm demons, they were constantly dancing on the verge of the abyss. And now, facing the additional pressure of these three demons, they finally began to crumble!

At this time, let alone continuing forwards to the center region where the Asura King was, even saving their own lives was a problem.

"Ah!"

With a miserable cry, a Kirin Clan disciple had his arm bitten off by Demon Two. In the next moment, seven or eight mystic realm demons dove into his body, completely dismantling him!

Peng!

A bloody fog burst into the air like beautiful fireworks. But, as this image fell into the other disciples' eyes, all of them felt their hands and feet turn cold, as if they had fallen into the nine nether abyss.

After such a long and frigid period of combat, the first person of the three clans' core disciples had finally died!

It had to be known that these disciples were forming array formations. Once the first one died, the power of the array formation would greatly reduce. That meant that the second person would die much faster. The more people died, the weaker their combat strength would be!

Thus, the death of that person meant that the three great clans were now in a precarious situation!

"What do we do!?" Jiang Bai urgently said. He was normally confident in his own strength. In normal dangerous circumstances, he could still calmly analyze the situation. But now, in such imminent danger, even he began to panic! He had thought that the Asura King would be in an extremely weak state as it crossed its demonic tribulation and that obtaining that supreme dragon bone would be easy. The only problem there should have been was how to deal with the Ancient Dragon Clan.

But now, Jiang Bai finally realized that everything he thought was wrong! He had made a grave mistake! Even though the Ancient Dragon Clan's 36 disciples had burnt their blood essence, they still hadn't been able to defeat the Asura King.

And, there were far more than 100,000 mystic realm demons in this area! As they killed their way through, their group and even the Ancient Dragon Clan were able to kill a hundred mystic realm demons with every breath of time. Up until now, they had been engaged in fierce combat for half an hour. They should have killed 60,000-70,000 of the mystic realm demons, but looking around, the amount of them hadn't diminished at all. That meant that there was a massive number of mystic realm demons continuously arriving!

"Do we retreat? Do we continue forwards?" Jiang Bai asked Xiao Ping. In truth, he had already given birth to the idea of escaping in his heart.

But Xiao Ping was also having difficulty making a decision in this situation. It had to be known that whatever decision he made would involve the lives of all the disciples near him.

If they chose to continue, even taking a single step forwards would be difficult. Also, their chances of obtaining the dragon bone weren't too great. Their only hope was if the Ancient Dragon Clan finished the battle as soon as possible.

But, retreating was also extremely difficult. They were besieged on all sides and there were also the three 30,000 year old mystic realm demons attacking them. Wasn't wanting to withdraw easier said than done?

Without a doubt, this was the greatest danger of their lives! This was a true life or death trial!

"Ahh!"

A miserable cry sounded out. A second disciple had died!

The one who died this time was a disciple of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Huang Tidemark had been standing by the dead disciple and had watched helplessly as the disciple's entire body blew up before being cleanly eaten away by the mystic realm demons. Seeing this, his face paled until it was paper white!

Only when truly facing death would one understand how terrifying death was. There were indeed people in this world that did not fear death, but most of those people had lived hard and rough lives. If they died then they died. None of them were like him, someone that was destined to reach the late Divine Lord realm and have 100,000 years of life to freely live as he pleased. There were countless beautiful women and pleasures waiting for him to enjoy, so how could Huang Tidemark be willing to die here?

"Big Brother Xiao, let's retreat! Forget that dragon bone!" Huang Tidemark said, his voice shaking.

Xiao Ping was grim and silent. He deeply looked over at Jiang Bai and Argent Gale and could see from their faces that they already wished to retreat. But, if they drew back now, that would truly be losing one's wife and soldier to the enemy. Not only would they not obtain any benefits, but they had lost so many disciples. This would prove just how incompetent the one in command had been.

But there was nothing else that could be done. In the history of the four God Beast Clans, there had only been a few other times when the disciples had encountered an Asura King in the God Beast Mystic Realm. And every time, there had been grievous losses!

"All disciples heed my order. Combust part of your blood essence; we're killing our way out of here!" Jiang Bai, Xiao Ping, and Argent Gale simultaneously issued this order.

To them, combusting their blood essence to escape was the smartest choice.

In the skies, a fierce battle raged on in full swing. Every breath of time there would be dozens or hundreds of mystic realm demons that died. But, in the surrounding hundreds of thousands of miles, there were constantly mystic realm demons that were catching up from distant lands. As long as the Asura King didn't die, everyone here would eventually be killed!

Of course, none of this was related to Lin Ming. He had already quietly arrived below the dragon bone!

The supreme dragon bone was a thousand feet high. It stabbed into the swamp like a divine sword. However, the majority of its mass was submerged into the black mud – this was also where Lin Ming was!

Lin Ming didn't believe he could quietly steal the supreme dragon bone and also quietly sneak away.

The reason he was able to make it here without anyone noticing him was that he had the grandmist space concealing his aura. In addition, he moved in the ground underneath the swamp. In the chaotic battle happening up above, no one was able to detect Lin Ming's existence beneath them.

But, the supreme dragon bone was different. If such a large dragon bone suddenly vanished, everyone would notice. The Ancient Dragon Clan disciples and the Asura King weren't idiots after all.

At that time, in a situation where someone like Lin Ming snuck in and benefited as both parties battled, they would definitely be enraged and then he would become their main focus.

Lin Ming didn't think that with his current strength he could defend against the attacks of any party. There was no need to mention the Asura King. Just the array formation that the Dragon Clan's 36 disciples had formed was abnormally terrifying. Moreover, they had even burned their blood essence.

Lin Ming's low cultivation had always been a weakness of his that he couldn't ignore.

Then… what to do?

Thousands of potential scenarios flashed through Lin Ming's mind. The most ideal result would be the Asura King and the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples fighting each other to the bitter end until both sides were heavily wounded. The Asura King would die and the Ancient Dragon Clan would only have a few dying disciples left over. As for the other three clans, they were surrounded by the 100,000 mystic realm demons.

Then, at that time, Lin Ming would have the confidence to take the supreme dragon bone and immediately escape. With the grandmist battle armor, Lin Ming simply didn't fear any mystic realm demons. Once he barreled into them, all of them would be reduced to smoke.

However, this was only an ideal situation. Once the balance of the battle shifted and one side was able to obtain complete victory, Lin Ming would no longer be able to implement his plan to steal the dragon bone. The winning side might even discover him hiding in the swamp and turn to kill him.

Chapter 1055 – Opportunity

Chapter 1055 – Opportunity

…

…

…

In the sky, the longer the fight continued, the more vicious it became. At this time, it could only be described as absolutely frigid.

Whether it was the mystic realm demons or the disciples of the four God Beast Clans, all of them were betting their lives and desperately fighting!

Dragon One's face was pale. As for the other Dragon Clan disciples, all of them had consumed a massive amount of energy. If this battle ended, even if they lived, if they didn't obtain the supreme dragon bone then they would only live for another 10,000-20,000 years.

To a genius, this was undoubtedly fatal.

Thus, they had to win!

Bang!

Another crazy collision occurred. A dozen Ancient Dragon Clan disciples felt their bodies shake and a sweet coppery taste touch the back of their throats. They immediately vomited a mouthful of blood! And, the only seventh stage Life Destruction disciple paled, his lips shivering. He had finally reached his limits.

The Ancient Dragon Clan's disciples were mostly at the eighth or ninth stage of Life Destruction; the seventh stage disciple was the lowest amongst them. This disciple also didn’t have heaven-defying talent like Lin Ming, thus his combat strength was limited. Within such a crazy battle, he found it extremely difficult to continue.

Let alone him, even Dragon One felt the blood tumbling within his body. Blue veins stuck out on his forehead – he too was nearing his limit. Out of everyone present, he had the highest talent and the highest cultivation. He was also the strongest one here; he could instantly slaughter any of the seventh or eighth stage Life Destruction geniuses present.

But because he was strong, the burden he had to bear was far greater. He was the eye of the 36 Astral Heaven Formation, and a quarter to a third of the array formation was shouldered by him alone!

However, at this time, the Asura King wasn’t much better off.

The demonic tribulation continued to fall down without end. If the Asura King hadn’t absorbed the supreme dragon bone’s essence energy and blood vitality, it would have died long ago.

“Damnit! This bunch of mousies has completely angered me!”

The Asura King’s entire right arm was wet with blood. After swallowing up a massive amount of human martial artists’ flesh and blood, and also the dragon marrow within the supreme dragon bone, the Asura King had already formed a physical body. It had organs, meridians, and even acupoints. If it was wounded then it would also bleed.

“Demon One, return to me and help me kill off these Dragon Clan disciples! Demon Two, Demon Three, burn away your cultivation and slaughter everyone else as soon as possible!”

As the Asura King saw that the other three clans had the idea of retreating but were struggling to do so, it issued this order.

Now, the greatest threat to it was the Ancient Dragon Clan’s disciples.

Woosh!

Demon One turned into a shadow that flew back towards the Asura King's side. As for the other two demons, the blue light within them suddenly blazed out; they were clearly about to go all out.

Underneath the mind control of the Asura King, they obeyed his orders to the letter.

…………

At this time, underneath the supreme dragon bone, Lin Ming was completely buried in the black mud of the swamp. He steadily observed the brutal battle happening in the skies!

Because he was afraid that he would be found, he didn't dare to reveal his sense. He only rose up high enough to expose his eyes, hidden beneath a cluster of dead mushrooms. His field of vision was limited and what he made out was also very vague. But, he could tell from the surges of origin energy how the power of space nearby trembled, and how the mystic realm demons constantly exploded into bursts of energy flows, and that the battle was reaching a calamitous state.

At this time, there was nothing he could do.

He thought of using an illusory magic array to recreate the image of the supreme dragon bone and then steal it away. But, this sort of array was difficult to lay down in such a situation and also easy to see through. Moreover, the Asura King had likely left behind a wisp of its sense on the supreme dragon bone. As long as the Asura King didn't die, then let alone taking it away, the Asura King would likely know if Lin Ming even touched it!

Lin Ming could only wait for the best opportunity to arrive.

This was also a great test of Lin Ming's mentality. He was in an extremely dangerous situation at the moment. As soon as he was discovered, the only thing waiting for him was death.

Like this, time slowly passed!

Lin Ming's palms became wet with sweat. This sweat couldn't even drip down before it was instantly decomposed by the power of the grandmist space, turning into an imperceptibly faint wisp that gathered into the elementary form of grandmist energy.

Lin Ming's nerves were as taut as steel wire. Although he hadn't done anything, this was still no easier than a life or death battle!

The only thing he could feel fortunate about was that there were no mystic realm demons around the supreme dragon bone. This allowed Lin Ming to concentrate his entire mind, waiting for that split second when he could grasp the opportunity.

"Ah!"

On the side of the three great clans, two Ancient Phoenix Clan disciples, because of Demon Two and Demon Three's all-out attack, finally weren't able to persist any longer. They emitted pitiful cries and exploded into fogs of blood that were then cleanly eaten up by the massive number of mystic realm demons. These mystic realm demons were like starving wolves. Wherever they went, nothing was left remaining.

As these disciples died, a massive gap appeared in the Ancient Phoenix Clan's array formation. Before this, Xiao Ping was able to rely on his extraordinary strength to continue on, but he too had reached his limit now. He could no longer continue shouldering the array formation; three mystic realm demons rushed in from the array formation's gap.

And their goal was the closest disciple, Huang Tidemark! Now, in the Ancient Phoenix Clan's 100 Bird Burning Sun Formation, there were only five people left living. And the one with the weakest cultivation amongst them was Huang Tidemark! And now, he had become the main target of the mystic realm demons. These three mystic realm demons that charged towards him each had a cultivation above 8000 years!

"No!"

Huang Tidemark cried out in panic, his face as pale as paper. A cold fear shot up his back and into the heavens. Now that he truly faced death, a deep fear and despair appeared in the deepest depths of his soul. He didn't want to die. He didn't want to die!

"Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao, save me!"

Huang Tidemark miserably cried out. But, Xiao Ping seemed as if he didn't hear Huang Tidemark's cries. Xiao Ping's eyes quickly glanced over at Huang Tidemark and instantly judged his situation. Three mystic realm demons, each with an 8000 year cultivation, were attacking him from a pincer angle; as Xiao Ping saw these, he immediately judged Huang Tidemark to death!

If Xiao Ping was in his top state then he could easily block the three mystic realm demons and save Huang Tidemark. But now, he had nearly spent all of his strength and he was resisting the attacks of a dozen mystic realm demons around him. At this time, he could barely manage himself, so how could he possibly help others?

"When Huang Tidemark blows up, I will use that opportunity to escape!"

Xiao Ping callously thought. Not only was he not planning on saving Huang Tidemark, but he was instead planning to take advantage of the moment when Huang Tidemark blew up and attracted a massive amount of mystic realm demons to escape. After all, once Huang Tidemark died, their Ancient Phoenix Clan would only have four people to form an array formation. With just four people, how could an array formation even be formed?

All that mattered was escape!

This was what the heart of man was like. Xiao Ping was the leader of the Ancient Phoenix Clan group that had come here and was also given the task of protecting the other disciples. He would easily help a fellow disciple out when it didn't harm his own interests, but when something concerned his own life, he gave priority to himself first and foremost. All others could be sacrificed for his survival.

"No! No! No! Senior apprentice-Brother Xiao...!"

At this time, over 10 mystic realm demons dove into Huang Tidemark. His organs, his spiritual sea, all of it was filled with mystic realm demons!

His marrow was eaten, his organs were chewed up, his blood was swallowed, and even his spiritual sea was about to tear apart. This agonizing pain came from all directions, causing his face to twist. His cries became unbearably shrill.

He thrust out a hand towards Xiao Ping's direction, his eyes full of hatred, as if he wanted to drag Xiao Ping into hell with him.

Why won't you save me?

Huang Tidemark wanted to shout out. But, he could no longer voice words.

Peng!

Underneath the callous and indifferent vision of Xiao Ping, both of Huang Tidemark's eyeballs bulged out from his head before bursting open! Blood gushed out of his head. His chest and stomach completely blew up with flesh and blood flying in all directions! Then, his last thoughts were of countless mystic realm demons feeding on him before his consciousness faded away...

And in the moment when Huang Tidemark died, when a massive number of mystic realm demons were attracted over to that direction, Xiao Ping launched his movement technique without any words and raced away!

He no longer cared about managing the group. The group's combat strength had already become extremely feeble. Now, he could only count on his own strength and the little bit of combat efficiency he had left. Everyone else would simply be a burden on him.

The group had lost all use to him. Instead, the situation would cause far more mystic realm demons to attack them. In this case, Xiao Ping decided to run away by himself. As for the ones left behind, they could stay there and hold down the mystic realm demons for him.

“Xiao Ping!”

“Senior-apprentice Brother, you!!”

As the other Ancient Phoenix Clan disciples saw Xiao Ping run away by himself, they were all stunned for a moment before immediately frothing with resentment and despair. Without Xiao Ping here, it would be nearly impossible for them to resist this onslaught!

“Run! We all have to run away!”

Without their main pillar of support, the other disciples all panicked and began to disperse to escape. But, scattering also meant dying faster.

“Jejejeje! You will all die!” Demon Two screeched out in a coarse voice, also speaking in an extremely crude version of the Divine Realm language. Demon Two began to turn even crazier as it rushed over to the remaining disciples…

……………

“51… 50… 49…”

With his body buried in the swamp mud, Lin Ming began to silently count the dwindling number of disciples.

Of the disciples of the three clans that didn’t come from their respective headquarters, Lin Ming hadn’t noticed if they had died or successfully ran away. But, of the remaining disciples that could form array formations, only 49 were left over. Of these 49, the Ancient Dragon Clan occupied 36 of these spots. In other words, the other three clans only had 14 disciples left. Each clan now had less than five people on average!

And of these remaining people, many of them were probably on the brink of disaster. Chances were that at least half of them would die here. The savageness of this fight could be imagined!

“Really, birds die for food and men die for wealth. These people all had bright futures ahead of them. Although it was impossible for most of them to think of reaching the Holy Lord realm, they could still reach the Divine Lord realm and have 100,000 years of life. But now, they have nothing left, not even their bodies.”

Lin Ming sighed. He knew that this present situation occurred because the four God Beast Clans had underestimated the strength of the Asura King. After all, the only information recorded in the ‘God Beast Mystic Realm Compendium’ was that the Asura King would be at its weakest state after crossing tribulation, and thus one could kill it then. And, in the history of the God Beast Clans, there had indeed been disciples that had killed Asura Kings, much less that there was also the added temptation of the supreme dragon bone now.

But, this Asura King was not an ordinary Asura King. It was no different from a spider that had cast out a web, waiting for prey to wander into their own doom.

And then, because of everyone that had arrived and the dispute over the division of the supreme dragon bone, Dragon One had suddenly launched an attack, involving everyone in a massive life or death battle. This was why so many casualties had appeared.

As these thoughts flashed through Lin Ming’s mind, in the sky, some of the Celestial Dragon Runes beneath the feet of the Dragon Clan’s 36 disciples suddenly disintegrated. The entire array wheel started to collapse!

As the entire array wheel ruptured, a total of 10 disciples vomited a mouthful of blood, their bodies flying away!

“Mm?” Lin Ming’s eyes brightened. The Ancient Dragon Clan’s array formation had finally been broken!

Chapter 1056 – Dragon Bone In Hand

Chapter 1056 – Dragon Bone In Hand

…

…

…

Although the disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan were formidable, their cultivations were too uneven. The highest among them were at the middle Divine Sea realm and the lowest among them were at the seventh stage Life Destruction realm.

The difference between a seventh or eighth stage Life Destruction martial artist and Dragon One was an entire large boundary and several small boundaries. This gap in strength was simply too great, and also meant that there were several weak points in the 36 Astral Heaven Formation. And, after having undergone multiple collisions, the formation finally began to collapse, starting from these weak points!

As for those seventh and eighth stage Life Destruction disciples, they had consumed nearly all of their true essence and had also lost consciousness. If they fell into the army of 100,000 mystic realm demons in such a situation, their fate could be imagined.

"This is bad!"

Dragon Eight and Dragon 12 watched as those 10 individuals with a less than ninth stage Life Destruction cultivation suffered grievous damage and they began to feel anxious in their hearts. A cold chill swept across their back. Once the array formation shattered, all that awaited them was death.

In this life or death situation, Dragon One's eyes flashed with a cold and inhuman light. He reached out with a hand and a blue beam of light shot out, wrapping around those 10 half-dead disciples before they could fly out beyond the range of the array formation. Then, he made a grasp at the void with his hand, and a massive vague dragon claw appeared, smashing down onto those 10 disciples.

“Dragon One – you!!”

Several Ancient Dragon Clan disciples cried out. However, it was too late. With a light popping sound, those low level disciples were all crushed into flesh and blood. Their blood essence was absorbed into the rune beneath Dragon One’s feet, causing it to become far more vibrant and vivid than before!

“This is our final strike! Get in formation!”

Dragon One’s voice was ice cold and without emotion. As his voice fell onto the ears of the other disciples, all of them were startled. It was like the Dragon One in front of them was no longer the senior-apprentice brother they were familiar with, but a cruel demon!

Those 10 disciples had completely exhausted their strength and had lost consciousness; the only fate they had left here was to die. No one else had any remaining strength to save them either. Even so, no one imagined they would end up in such a miserable state. This was because those 10 disciples had also fought by their side and helped struggle for the dragon bone.

In this sort of situation, Dragon One was still able to be so cold blooded and kill them in a single strike, extracting all of their blood essence to power up the final strike with the 36 Astral Heaven Formation.

Although this was an ugly and unsightly decision, it was the correct one. Otherwise, those 10 disciples’ blood essence might have been absorbed by the Asura King, making their survival even less likely. Even so, Dragon One could only be called merciless. He had personally killed fellow disciples of his own clan without hesitation, in a way that caused others to feel fear. He was truly an unscrupulous character who would resort to any diabolical act to advance in the future. If he survived this, it was likely he would become a demon lord of his era!

“What are the bunch of you doing? Do you also want to die here!?” Dragon One said in a freezing tone. The other disciples finally reacted. They quickly borrowed the power of those 10 dead disciples’ burning blood essence to reform the 36 Astral Heaven Formation.

Each one of them had already burnt 20% of their blood essence for this battle. This would cause them to lose tens of thousands of years of life once they stepped into the Divine Lord realm. It might even impact what final boundary they managed to reach. They could not waste such a sacrifice.

As for the notoriety coming from killing those of his own clan, all of that was done by Dragon One; it had nothing to do with them.

Hummm —

The seven-colored spinning wheel began to revolve once again. An immense aura surged out in all directions. Halos of light filled the air as a divine radiance blazed into the heavens.

“This brat is ruthless enough!” In front of Dragon One, the Asura King’s body was shaking as if all sorts of changes were occurring to it at the same time. Indeed, it had planned to absorb the blood essence of those 10 low level disciples, but Dragon One had been quicker on the draw. Before those 10 disciples managed to leave the protection of the array formation, their bodies were smashed apart and all of their blood essence was sucked out and supplied to the array formation.

Those 10 disciples had only burnt 20% of their blood essence to begin with. Now, the remaining 80% and the rest of their flesh and blood essence all turned into energy and completely fused into the array formation!

Because of this, the originally collapsing 36 Astral Heaven Formation reformed and solidified itself. And, the remaining Celestial Dragon runes became even brighter, their strength increasing by several times!

As the Asura King saw this, a trace of fear flashed across its features. It understood that this was the final strike of the remaining Ancient Dragon Clan disciples. If it resisted it, then it would win. If it failed, then it would perish in smoke and dust.

But the Asura King had also consumed a great deal of strength. As it felt the energy within that spinning wheel of light, it found himself lacking confidence.

“Hehehe, if you can sacrifice those from your clan, why can I not sacrifice my own subjects?”

The Asura King wildly howled. The defenseless Demon One beside it was grasped by the Asura King.

“My King...!”

Demon One’s phantasmal face flashed with panic. It had a cultivation of 30,000 years and had already obtained spiritual wisdom of its own.

It wanted to resist, but a thought shot out from between the Asura King’s eyebrows immediately disintegrated its mutinous sense of resistance. In the next moment, Demon One’s entire body exploded, turning into wisps of pure energy that were absorbed by the Asura King!

In that moment, the Asura king was like a great ancient beast that had awoken from a deep slumber, able to devour all and destroy all!

The two sides actually sacrificed their own people in order to launch their final killing strike!

In the skies, a crazy and violent energy gathered into a cloud of blood. This feeling was as if the sky itself was being torn apart, and the heavens were bleeding.

“Go die!”

Dragon One was the first to attack! A billowing sound wave like endless rolling thunderclaps shook the sky, blasting apart the cloud of blood and continuing to surge outwards in all directions. The swamp underneath was also smashed by a tremendous force, as if the armored first of a great divine god had punched down into the black swamp ground, creating a giant pit 100,000 feet deep and causing dark mud to soar into the sky! In that moment, countless millions of pounds of swamp water were cleanly evaporated and the black mud was scorched to nothing.

Lin Ming had been hidden in the swamp this entire time. Now, his eyes suddenly shone with a brilliant light; this was it!

Taking advantage of the moment of the explosion, and taking cover underneath the raging waves of energy, Lin Ming used the grandmist battle armor to protect himself and sent out his energy. His energy swept outwards around the supreme dragon bone and received it into his Extreme Violet Ring!

For a time, Lin Ming was also impacted by the shock wave attack!

This was the attack made by the Ancient Dragon Clan's 36 Astral Heaven Formation as well as being powered by the complete burnt blood essence of 10 of their disciples. The might behind it could be imagined. Even the aftermath shock waves alone were enough to instantly kill an ordinary Ninefall genius.

However, Lin Ming had the grandmist battle armor protecting him. It was able to decompose the power of all Laws. As the waves of energy madly crashed into the grandmist space, they were directly decomposed. Instead, the great destructive impact gave Lin Ming immense momentum, directly pushing his body far, far away!

"Heavens help me!"

All of Lin Ming's blood tumbled in his body and sweet blood swelled up to the back of his throat. He had suffered a minor wound from this. But, there was no time to care about any of this. All he cared about was the final result happening in the skies. After he snatched the supreme dragon bone, he fled away from the explosive shock waves at full speed!

The direction he chose to escape in was not through the skies, but through the ground!

Lin Ming was aware that once a mystic realm demon transformed into an Asura King, they would form a flesh and blood body. They wouldn't be incorporeal like those ordinary mystic realm demons and thus able to easily dive into the black swamp. If the Asura King wanted to do that, its only choice would be to abandon its body that had taken countless years of painstaking effort to form. However, that was also impossible, because if it did so then he would fail his demonic tribulation.

Thus, fleeing underground was absolutely the best choice.

As for the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Lin Ming could only wish them the best of luck in escaping. At this time, he could barely even fend for himself.

When Lin Ming was at Thundercrash Mountain and the Demon God Imperial Palace, he had competed with others for a massive lucky chance, dancing on the edge of life and death to do so. But, he had never directly confronted those powerful individuals that were far stronger than him. Instead, he had relied on planning and timing. It had never been like today when he directly seized the food from the tiger's mouth.

If he managed to escape then his harvests would be infinite. Otherwise, he would die!

The only pity about this was that half of the dragon marrow in the supreme dragon bone had been sucked out by the Asura King. If it wasn't for this, Lin Ming's harvests would be even greater.

However, people shouldn't be too greedy in how they lived. Lin Ming was already content with what he had. As for the half of the dragon marrow in the Asura King's body, he would leave that to Dragon One and the rest of them.

Well, that was all based on the premise that they could live through this.

Bang bang bang!

At the exact same time that Lin Ming stole away the supreme dragon bone, the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples had frenziedly collided with the Asura King. This was the best timing for Lin Ming!

Countless mystic realm demons were turned to smoke in the violent shock waves. A wave of black swamp mud rose up a thousand feet high. It surged forwards like a deadly tsunami. The wind changed all around, the heavens and earth lost their color!

Then, another 10 Ancient Dragon Clan disciples spat out a great mouthful of blood and flew backwards. They were likely doomed. At this point, the Ancient Dragon Clan only had 16 disciples left.

This battle was truly tragic! It had to be known that everyone that died here today was not some random dog or cat. They were the most outstanding geniuses of the four great God Beast Clans. Just raising a single one of them cost a titanic amount of resources!

“Mm? What!?”

In that violent flow of energy, although the Asura King had been seriously wounded and its entire body was soaked in blood, it could still feel the instant when the wisp of divine sense he left on the supreme dragon bone was destroyed!

The Asura King was shocked beyond belief!

It had only swallowed less than half of the essence energy within the supreme dragon bone. There was still 60% of the marrow essence energy remaining. And as for the dragon bone itself, that was truly a priceless treasure!

The Asura King had originally wanted to use the flesh and blood of the four God Beast Clans’ disciples to perfect his body. After all, it was impossible to form a body with just bone alone. He would only be able to condense a skeleton. Only after forming a complete flesh and blood body would all his dreams be possible.

But now, the dragon bone had been stolen away!

“Who dared to steal my dragon bone!?!? I will kill you!! Ahhhhh!”

The Asura King could not believe that in such a great battle, with 100,000 mystic realm demons surrounding the area, there was still someone that could steal away the dragon bone. This person must have been hiding near the dragon bone, waiting for the moment when the battle reached its most intense state, and then stole it away when no one was able to notice it!

Such planning left the Asura King incensed. It had lived for 100,000 years but now it had been made a fool!

“You won’t get away!”

Although this was the last moment in the life or death battle, the Asura King’s reaction speed was too fast. It had already caught the direction Lin Ming had escaped in! At this time, the Asura King no longer bothered with his battle against Dragon One and instead directly chased after Lin Ming!

Meanwhile, within Lin Ming’s Extreme Violet Ring, Yan Littlemoon had been sitting down, staring at the medicine garden in front of her in a daze. Then, a blue light shined from the sky. A massive bone dropped down from the clouds and stabbed into the ground!

“This… this is…”

Yan Littlemoon’s eyes widened like a pair of full moons!

Chapter 1057 – Crazy Dragon One

Chapter 1057 – Crazy Dragon One

…

…

…

After Yan Littlemoon was received into Lin Ming's Extreme Violet Ring, it felt as if every moment inside was as long as an eternity. This was because in the sealed space of the Extreme Violet Ring, she had no idea what was happening outside. All she knew was that in the moment when she was sucked into the Extreme Violet Ring, there had been 100,000 mystic realm demons surging towards her!

She could imagine just how intense and tragic such a battle would be!

Yan Littlemoon was well aware of her own abilities. If she was exposed to such a gruesome battlefield, there was only a single fate that awaited her.

That was to be eaten up without a skeleton, without even the slightest pieces left for a burial. And in that key moment, she had been taken in by Lin Ming and placed into his Extreme Violet Ring. But, this also meant that Lin Ming would have to shoulder the entire following battle himself!

Yan Littlemoon knew that Lin Ming was far stronger than she was, to a ridiculous degree. But in such a brutal battle, she didn't have full confidence that Lin Ming would be able to safely escape.

All she could do was wait as time slowly passed in the minor dimension. Soon, an hour passed and there still wasn't any news from outside of the Extreme Violet Ring. Yan Littlemoon began to feel a bit anxious.

She was afraid that Lin Ming would be severely wounded or even die in the chaos. She was afraid that at any moment, the Extreme Violet Ring would be destroyed and then countless mystic realm demons would rush in!

Although the scenery within the Extreme Violet Ring was beautiful to behold, Yan Littlemoon still felt like she was on pins and needles the entire time. There was nothing she could do now. It was also impossible for her to leave. Otherwise, she might add to the chaos if Lin Ming was in some critical moment.

She had been hoping that Lin Ming would quickly arrive, but she never expected that after some time, when there was finally a tiny spatial fluctuation above her, what appeared was not Lin Ming but rather a divine bone!

This 1000 foot divine bone was like a faintly blue tinted holy sword. It stood straight and tall within the Extreme Violet Ring, emitting an incomparably vast pressure.

There were countless complex and mystical runes on top of the dragon bone, each one symbolizing the Heavenly Dao itself. Every rune was 10 times more profound than the 100 Foot Royal Skyseal in Totem Tower, or even 100 times more profound! It was even no worse that the Huo Family's ultimate treasure, the Sacred Flame Testament!

But, there were nine blocks of the Sacred Flame Testament and each one wasn't too big. It was impossible to compare that to the 1000 foot dragon bone in front of her!

"Lin Ming, he… he…" Yan Littlemoon gulped over and over again. Her watery eyes filled with a fantastical light as if she couldn't believe her own sense.

She certainly recognized this divine bone. It was the Asura King's treasure and also what it relied on to evolve into an Asura King. It was the object that the Ancient Dragon Clan's 36 disciples and the numerous disciples of the other three clans had fought for with their lives on the line.

But now, it was actually obtained by Lin Ming?

Moreover…

It was his alone!

How was this possible!? Just how had he obtained the dragon bone!?

Did he wrest it away by force?

No matter how talented Lin Ming was, he was still limited by his cultivation. With his seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation, he didn't even have the ability to escape in front of someone like Dragon One. Moreover, there was also Jiang Bai, Argent Gale, and many other disciples that were able to gather into array formations together. So how could this have been possible!?

Was it with strategy?

No matter how smart Lin Ming was, the others weren't idiots. On the other hand, all those chosen prides of heaven were cruel and ruthless individuals of their generation. Their mentality and calculations were all extremely cutthroat and broad. As for the Asura King, that was a monster that had lived for 100,000 years. This should have been impossible!

All sorts of thoughts flashed through Yan Littlemoon's mind, but she still couldn't figure out anything. She thought that it would have already been good if Lin Ming managed to escape with his life intact, but not only was he still alive, he had even managed to pick up the largest peach from the tree.

Yan Littlemoon fervently wished to know what was occurring outside. But, she also knew that even if Lin Ming had managed to obtain the dragon bone for now, there would still be a battle following this. If she rushed out randomly, she would only bring hurt to Lin Ming.

Yan Littlemoon bit her lips. She looked at the supreme dragon bone, unable to move.

She couldn't help but walk over and trace her fingers across the surface of the divine bone. The rough texture was filled with a boundless and vigorous aura, making her feel an awe from deep within her soul.

This was the bone of a God Beast, one of the most precious treasures of the world!

Yan Littlemoon certainly didn't dare to absorb the dragon bone. But, she also couldn't bear to stand around and do nothing. She sat down and began to meditate on the Law runes carved onto the dragon bone. Every tiny bit of strength she could gain meant her chances of living through this were that much higher.

As Yan Littlemoon was meditating on the Laws, Lin Ming was facing a major life or death crisis!

He discovered that he had underestimated the Asura King. Even after such a savage and violent battle, it still had strength remaining to chase after him!

"Shatter!"

The Asura King thrust out its palm and the ground beneath the swamp collapsed. The Asura King chased straight down!

And behind the Asura King were the 16 remaining disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan. In that savage battle just now, they had lost over half of their fellow disciples. Now, their strength was far from what it used to be.

At this time, Dragon One's eyes were blood red. He never imagined that in their frigid battle with the Asura King that shook the heavens and earth, there would be someone sitting on the sidelines waiting to profit from their strife!

For this supreme dragon bone, he had burnt 20% of his blood essence and lost several tens of thousands of years of his life. He had consumed a massive amount of precious pills and now even had to bear the infamy of being a cruel demon that killed his own fellow clan disciples. Yet, all of his efforts had been made a gift to someone else!

How could he not loathe this!?

“Just who is it!? Who dared to plot against me!?” Dragon One was like a wild and injured animal. He knew that this mysterious person was not Xiao Ping, Jiang Bai, or Argent Gale!

For someone to quietly sneak in even through a swarm of 100,000 mystic realm demons, and also approach the supreme dragon bone and wait there for so much time, this person had to be a top master!

There was even a chance that this other party wasn’t human. After all, this was the God Beast Mystic Realm. There could be some unknown existence that had been eyeing the Asura King’s supreme dragon bone and had finally found their chance to take it.

One couldn’t blame Dragon One for thinking this. Lin Ming had used the grandmist space to conceal his aura, and in addition to the chaotic battle, even if Dragon One’s cultivation had been 10 times higher, he still wouldn’t have noticed Lin Ming’s aura. He wasn’t even able to ascertain if Lin Ming was human.

In addition, Dragon One didn’t know that Lin Ming’s combat strength was equal to that of a top extreme genius at the peak early Divine Sea realm. Moreover, in terms of lethality to the mystic realm demons, with his grandmist space and gold battle spirit combined together, Lin Ming surpassed even middle Divine Sea martial artists like Jiang Bai and Xiao Ping.

And, most importantly, he had used the grandmist space to conceal his aura as he moved underground. He hadn’t been detected by any mystic realm demons, thus he hadn’t encountered many of them at all.

In this situation where Dragon One had completely miscalculated Lin Ming’s combat efficiency, even if his imagination was 10 times richer, he still wouldn’t think that someone like Lin Ming would be able to snatch away the supreme dragon bone.

Now all he felt was a blazing fury in his heart, as well as the utter humiliation of being played for a fool!

No matter what, he still could not give up on this supreme dragon bone!

Although he knew the chances of defeating that unknown existence as well as the Asura King were incomparably slim, this was still a struggle between three parties after all. The situation was extremely complex and it was possible he could profit from the chaos. But, if he didn't chase after them then there really would be no hope at all.

"There are 16 of us left, we can still form the 16 Celestial Dragon Formation. Although it is inferior to the 36 Astral Heaven Formation, we can still fight. Moreover, the disciples that have died were all at the ninth stage of Life Destruction and below. The greater portion of our fighting strength still remains. Swallow down your Nine Revolving Dragon Pills and let's chase after them!"

Dragon One issued an order. But, among the 16 Dragon Clan disciples, there were many of them that had thoughts of retreating. They felt that Dragon One was a psychotic madman that had fallen over the edge.

After burning their blood essence, they weren't even at 10-20% of their peak strength. They were in an extremely miserable state!

Even if they swallowed down the Nine Revolving Dragon Pills that were supposed to be left for saving their lives, they could only restore 40% of their combat strength or so. Moreover, they wouldn't have enough time to absorb it and would waste most of the recovery efficacy.

But the key point of all this was even if they did all that, would they even still be able to obtain the supreme dragon bone?

With a captain like Dragon One, who was able to resort to any method to compete for the dragon bone, nobody felt safe. It had to be known that Dragon One had burnt all the blood essence of 10 disciples that were about to die, and he had done so without the least bit of hesitation.

What if they were the next ones to die?

A martial artist had to pursue lucky chances, even risking their life to do so. But, after weighing the pros and cons, and knowing that their chances of survival were slim and their chances of obtaining the dragon bone were even worse, it was understandable if they decided to give up.

As long as there was life there was hope. They would be able to struggle for more lucky chances in the future…

As long as they were alive.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Dragon One, I won’t go!”

“I won’t go either…”

Several Divine Sea martial artists declared, not fearing Dragon One. As for those ninth stage Life Destruction martial artists, although they feared Dragon One, their eyes were dodgy and evasive, obviously not intending to follow him.

“Mm!? You!!”

Dragon One’s eyes turned cold. At this time, he knew that his prestige had completely collapsed and these disciples that usually feared him and followed his orders had formed a united front against him. Like this, it was impossible for him to command these disciples around any longer. And most importantly, he no longer had time to establish his strength again.

“Fine! Then don’t regret your choices!”

Dragon One waved his hand and picked up the corpses of the dead Ancient Dragon Clan disciples. Then, he swallowed two Nine Revolving Dragon Pills and flew straight down into the black swamp! At this point he could no longer afford to waste time, otherwise he would lose track of the Asura King and that unknown existence!

As the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples saw Dragon One receive the corpses of their fellow comrades, all of them had extremely ugly expressions. Even so, none of them said anything.

It was clear that Dragon One took their corpses to make use of their blood essence. After burning their blood essence he would launch his attack. This method would make it so that those dead disciples wouldn't even have skeletons left over. This was truly a tragic and wretched way to die!

In front of the temptation of such great benefits, Dragon One had completely exposed his cruel and ferocious nature.

Although all of them were disgusted, none of them could stop him. They could only allow Dragon One to do as he wished.

The truth was that Dragon One's sole strength was definitely not enough. It was impossible for him to compete with the Asura King, whose strength compared favorably to a Divine Transformation martial artist.

But, he also had to take into account what that unknown existence might do. Dragon One could hide on the sidelines and launch an attack at a critical moment, finally obtaining everything for himself.

This couldn't be called anything but a crazy plan, and the chances of success were also low. But in Dragon One's opinion, if this unknown existence could do it, then why couldn't he?

He was truly unwilling to give up on this lucky chance. If he could succeed all by himself and take sole possession of the dragon bone, then he truly would have a chance of stepping onto the path of a World King in the future!

Woosh!

Dragon One’s body sank into the swamp. He restrained his aura and dove down. But, he only understood the Water Laws and not the Earth Laws, thus drilling down was extremely difficult. Luckily, the Asura King had led the way and blown up the swamp ground ahead of him. Like this, it was still possible for Dragon One to catch up to those people ahead of him.

Chapter 1058 – The Strong Asura King

Chapter 1058 – The Strong Asura King

…

…

…

After Dragon One and the Asura King left, the rush of mystic realm demons slowed down. Without the Asura King directing them, these mystic realm demons no longer attacked without regard for their lives. Although they desired flesh and blood, they also cared for their lives. Although the disciples of the four clans were exhausted and nearly depleted of energy, each of them would still be able to easily drag down a few hundred mystic realm demons with them. And, those Divine Sea realm powerhouses were even more fierce. If they burnt some blood essence, they could kill several hundred if not a thousand mystic realm demons each.

After a massive number of mystic realm demons were killed, some of them gave birth to the idea of retreating before they unconsciously wandered away. Although the mystic realm demons still sieged the disciples of the four clans, the pressure on them was reduced by a great deal.

At this time, the disciples of the four clans took this chance to escape. As for chasing after Lin Ming, that was simply a joke. Not everyone was as crazy as Dragon One.

"To think someone profited from our efforts. How laughable, even though we suffered so many casualties, we still became a joke!"

“There’s nothing we can do. This unknown existence is too good at hiding and their speed is extremely fast. Also, they can escape through the ground. If they can do that then this being must be some top master!”

In the end, the reason Lin Ming was able to profit from the chaos was the concealing effect of the grandmist space. Otherwise, if Lin Ming really decided to hurl himself into 100,000 mystic realm demon, the energy powering the grandmist space would slowly exhaust itself. Moreover, among those 100,000 mystic realm demons there were still 30,000 year old demons like Demon One and Demon Two. Each of those fellows was equal to someone like Xiao Ping.

“It’s over. Don’t think about it anymore. The greater a lucky chance, the greater the dangers that follow it. The dragon bone is not something that we can obtain. If we remain stubborn then we’ll simply lose our lives in vain. We might as well take inventory of our casualties and reorganize. We need to make use of the time we have left and look for some more harvests…”

An Ancient Phoenix Clan disciple quietly said. But, as soon as he mentioned counting the casualties, the mood suddenly became heavy. Of the eight core disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, there were only four left. As for those branch palace disciples that had been abandoned, they were likely to have suffered an unfortunate fate. In other words, the Ancient Phoenix Clan could already consider themselves lucky if they had five people remaining.

As for the other three clans, they didn’t have many people left over either. There had been 68 disciples that entered the God Beast Mystic Realm smelting trial, but now only 30 some were left alive. Most of them had died!

“I’m finished… I’m so finished… I fear that Yan Littlemoon and Lin Ming have already died…”

Huo Clearheart absentmindedly said as if he had lost his soul. The battle had been too intense. He was barely able to defend himself, much less find the strength to save Lin Ming.

And as he thought about it, Lin Ming only had a seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation. In such a brutal melee, his chances of surviving approached zero…

……….

At this time, deep within the swamp, Lin Ming was directly impacting downwards. He had already penetrated a thousand feet underground, but he could actually feel a powerful divine sense shroud over his body. The thick killing intent was like a beam of light shining down on his back!

The Asura King was hot in pursuit!

“This damned Asura King is really troublesome!”

Lin Ming frowned. He discovered that he had underestimated the Asura King. The Asura King was likely equal to an outstanding Divine Transformation martial artist. After swallowing up the essence energy of the supreme dragon bone, it was likely able to compare with a top class character like White Daohong. Even though it was at its weakest state because it had just crossed demonic tribulation and had also been injured in the massive array formed by the disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan, its strength was still not at a level that Lin Ming could contend with.

In the final analysis, Lin Ming’s cultivation was simply too low. He had been able to rely on the grandmist space to profit from the chaos, but now that he was exposed to the Asura King’s senses, the weakness that was his low cultivation had also been exposed.

2000 feet, 3000 feet… all the way to 10,000 feet!

Lin Ming had now penetrated 10,000 feet deep into the ground. At this time, he suddenly felt the resistance multiply. The pressure at such a depth was already immense, but now the soft swamp mud had finally come to an end.

The black swamp had gathered here for countless hundreds of millions of years, enough that the swamp was 10,000 deep. But past this, because of the tremendous pressure, the swamp was actually compressed to an extremely hard degree that was not softer than rock.

"This is bad!"

Lin Ming furrowed his eyebrows. He opened the Heretical God Force and used its strength to crazily stimulate the grandmist space to an even greater degree. The hard black earth constantly dissolved ahead of him even as it accumulated behind him. Although grandmist space was said to annihilate all Laws, one had to have enough true essence to support it.

Lin Ming's cultivation was only at the seventh stage of Life Destruction. As he drilled his way through this hard rock-like soil, his speed fell even further!

"He's nearing me more and more!"

Lin Ming could feel that thick killing intent slowly closing in!

This was underground. By relying on the grandmist space, Lin Ming had a massive superiority in terms of Laws. Even so, his speed was inferior to the Asura King's.

If this was on the surface, there was even less to say. Even if Lin Ming opened the Gate of Wonder, and also had Golden Roc Shattering the Void and Mystic Lightning Shade supporting him, he still wouldn't be able to escape if he had wings.

The difference in strength was just too great!

"You damned little beast, you won't escape from me!" A snarled voice sounded out from behind Lin Ming. It was the Asura King. As the Asura King's entire body was bathed in blood, it seemed like a monstrous ghost that crawled up from the pits of hell.

These wounds were created by Dragon One and the other disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan. With such heavy wounds, the Asura King had consumed 90% of its true essence and now its strength was only several percent of its peak state. Even so, it was this fierce. If it weren’t so unwilling to discard its physical body that it had painstakingly developed over tens of thousands of years then it would have been able to instantly catch up to Lin Ming. The main body of a mystic realm demon was a stream of energy, so physical matter like the earth simply wasn’t able to stop them.

“Energy Cage, circle and kill him!”

The Asura King bellowed out. It thrust his palms forwards and dozens of black energy streams plunged towards Lin Ming like snakes. The Asura King wasn’t willing to abandon its physical body, but that didn’t mean he couldn’t release energy attacks.

As Lin Ming saw these energy streams about to surround him and pen him in, he was alarmed!

In that life or death moment, Lin Ming’s eyes were as cool and calm as a glacier. He extracted the Phoenix Blood Spear from the Extreme Violet Ring and thrust it outwards. 999 small blood spears swept up into a storm around the spear edge. The black earth in front of Lin Ming was instantly torn apart. At the same time, the phoenix mark between his eyebrows began to dazzle with a brilliant light like a sun! A dark gold phoenix rushed out from Lin Ming’s body and a maddening power of fire swirled about, crashing into the black earth and melting it into magma.

Whoosh!

Lin Ming broke through this magma and avoided being caught by that dangerous black energy.

Bang!

A violent explosion sounded out from behind Lin Ming. But as for Lin Ming himself, he bolted forwards, unstoppable!

“Mm!? Fire Laws!”

Behind Lin Ming, the Asura King's eyes turned cold. Although it was chasing Lin Ming from behind, it wasn't able to tell if Lin Ming was a human or something else because of the dark grandmist armor that concealed him. But now that Lin Ming used the Fire Laws to break his way forwards, it was easier to tell that he was a human.

Of the four God Beast Clans, the only ones that excelled in the Fire Laws were the Fire Kirin Branch of the Kirin Clan, the Fire Dragon Branch of the Ancient Dragon Clan, and the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Although the gold phoenix was covered up by the swamp mud, the Asura King was still able to vaguely feel the aura of a God Beast. After all, it had absorbed part of the dragon bone, and this aura had a similar feel to it.

"A disciple of the four God Beast Clans! So it's those damned mousies again!!"

The Asura King was infuriated. It was much stronger than an ordinary Asura King, and thus it believed in its own strength and viewed the disciples of the four God Beast Clans as prey it could pinch to death at any moment. It had formed a net in order to attract all of them and use their flesh and blood to complete its perfect physical body. But, it never imagined that the Ancient Dragon Clan would be so powerful. They were even able to frontally engage it in a brutal conflict. And, Xiao Ping, Jiang Bai, and Argent Gale weren't weaklings either. Even under the attack of mystic realm demons with tens of thousands of years of cultivation, they were still able to escape. And then after that, this mouse in front of him had actually taken advantage of the time when it was distracted and stole away his dragon bone. This left the Asura King fuming with rage.

"You better not let me catch you, because if I do I will have you die in the most agonizing way possible! I will suck out your flesh and blood, lock your soul into my stomach and have you suffer there for a thousand years!"

The Asura King madly raved. It constantly thrust out black streams of energy to grasp at Lin Ming, but time after time Lin Ming was able to use his true essence to shatter the earth in front of him with the dual Fire Laws and Grandmist Laws. But, drilling down in such a method was extremely taxing on Lin Ming's energy.

"Damn!"

Lin Ming deeply frowned. He originally had a plan. That was for the Asura King to not be able to persist anymore with its injuries, and then it would discard his physical body to continue the chase. Then, if the Asura King tried to penetrate into his spiritual sea, this might possibly cause a counterattack from the Magic Cube. But now it looked like the Asura King simply wouldn't need to abandon its physical form. Lin Ming felt as if he would be the first one to give out.

Within Lin Ming's body, the blood of the Ancient Phoenix burned and the Heretical God Sprout whistled. The energy within his body was being rapidly depleted. After penetrating past 10,000 feet, every couple hundred feet after that was no different from a furious battle.

And now Lin Ming was only trying to attempt a war of attrition. If he could persist then there would be a turning point! He didn't believe that there was an endless amount of energy within the Asura King.

30,000 feet...

50,000 feet...

70,000 feet...

200,000 feet...

300,000 feet!

300,000 feet was only a few hundred miles deep underground. In ordinary conditions, Lin Ming would only need a few breaths of time to fly such a distance. But, he had to use a quarter hour to reach this far down. Moreover, he had consumed 60-70% of the energy in his body. Even with the Gate of Healing, he still couldn't continue like this!

Lin Ming's forehead and palms were wet with sweat. All the blood in his body was tumbling and he was panting like a dog!

And behind him, the Asura King was still hot in pursuit!

Lin Ming discovered that the temperature had gradually increased the entire time. Then, with a loud banging noise, Lin Ming broke through a sheet of hard rock and a billowing wave of wild heat rushed towards him.

This was underground magma!

“Magma!”

Lin Ming’s eyes brightened. If he entered the magma then he would have a much greater superiority with his Fire Laws!

However, just as this idea popped into Lin Ming’s mind, he heard a loud explosion right above him. The rock shattered apart and a man covered in blood rushed at him. His eyes were blood red, his hair was ruined, and the killing intent around him had condensed into essence. He was no different from a demon of the abyss.

Lin Ming’s mind chilled. He turned to throw himself into the magma, but the Asura King also grasped down with his fierce claws.

Chapter 1059 – Change In the Dragon Bone

Chapter 1059 – Change In the Dragon Bone

…

…

…

“Die for me!”

The Asura King shouted out, its voice thick with ice. As its claw grasped downwards, Lin Ming could feel the heaven and earth origin energy around him flee, and even the power of space seemed to freeze. There was nowhere for him to hide.

“How can it still be so strong!?”

Lin Ming grit his teeth. By relying on the Gate of Healing to support himself as well the grandmist battle armor that wrapped around his entire body, he had dove 300,000 feet underground, consuming 70% of his true essence to do so. But, before this, the Asura King had experienced its demonic tribulation and it had even engaged in a brutal battle with the Ancient Dragon Clan, receiving multiple wounds in the process. Even so, as the Asura King chased him all the way down here, not only had its speed not diminished, but its moves were still so powerful. It was like it had an immortal body!

Such formidable endurance and tolerance for pain was inconceivable!

Bang!

The claw reached down for Lin Ming, surging with killing intent and demonic flames. This was a strike from the Asura King. Even though the Asura King was in an extremely poor state, this attack was absolutely still equal to a strike from a normal Divine Transformation realm martial artist.

And, martial artists that could reach Divine Transformation were at Eightfall or above, the same level as someone like Yang Yun. In other words, Lin Ming was facing the all-out strike of a Divine Transformation realm Yang Yun!

In this moment of life or death, Lin Ming didn't dare to hold anything back. He burnt the Ancient Phoenix blood essence in his body. This was not the ordinary Ancient Phoenix blood, but that single drop of Ancient Phoenix blood essence!

Ancient Phoenix blood essence inherently contained the incomparably formidable essence of a God Beast. Moreover, as phoenix blood, it wouldn't reduce no matter how much he burned it.

In that moment, Lin Ming could feel his body surge with energy. Blue lotuses began to blossom beneath his feet as a countless amount of fire origin gathered by his side, condensing into flowers and birds, insects and beasts. This was impressively an understanding of Laws nearing small success of the fourth level Concept – Manifestation.

When Lin Ming was at the Revolving Core realm, he had been able to manipulate flames into all sorts of shapes. For instance, chains, clothing, and so forth. The items he formed from fire couldn't be distinguished from material objects in terms of appearance. But, that was not the Concept of Manifestation. That was only giving fire origin energy shape. But as for the Concept of Manifestation, that was to give life to fire, to give it intelligence of its own. The power of a flame with spirituality of its own was 10 times stronger than a flame without.

To burn the drop of Ancient Phoenix blood essence to serve as the foundation for manifesting fire, just how powerful was that? Moreover, in that moment, Lin Ming also summoned the Purple Lion Thunder Source that was slumbering in the Heretical God Sprout.

The power of thunder and fire instantly twined together!

By burning the Ancient Phoenix blood essence and releasing the power of thunder, this was absolutely Lin Ming's strongest strike yet!

The power of thunderfire clashed together with the demonic claws released by the Asura King. For a time, it was like a giant underground volcano had erupted!

Rumble rumble rumble!

The earth shook and magma billowed upwards. The world around Lin Ming completely collapsed!

The pressure of the collapsing earth 300,000 feet underground was extremely terrifying; even the Asura King's expression discolored.

As for Lin Ming, who had released such an earth-shaking strike, he was caught in the explosive shock waves. He felt a sweet and coppery taste in the back of his throat as he spat out a mouthful of blood. At the same time, he plummeted straight down into the roiling magma!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Countless rocks weighing thousands and tens of thousands of jins fell into the great river of magma. As magma wildly surged all around, it was like the scene of the apocalypse!

But even so, the Asura King still kept its sense locked onto Lin Ming, chasing straight after him!

In that collision just now, the Asura King hadn't been injured. Instead, its origin energy began to slowly recover.

"Today, there is no path to heaven and no gate to hell! I wonder just who will save you now!!"

Bang!

The Asura King also broke into the sea of magma!

As Lin Ming and the Asura King rushed all the way down, Dragon One chasing after them was in a much more miserable state. He was stronger than Lin Ming, but that was only in his peak condition. Currently, he wasn't much different from Lin Ming. And, the key problem was that he didn't understand the Earth Laws, nor did he have the grandmist martial intent to break through stone.

As the rocks collapsed below him, his body was squeezed by the pressure of the world 300,000 feet deep. He felt as if his entire body would be pinched into nothing! Luckily, as a disciple of the Ancient Dragon Clan, his body was extremely tough and formidable, thus he was able to withstand it. Unfortunately, the efficacy of the Nine Revolving Dragon Pill dissipated yet again because of this blow. Dragon One felt his old wounds reappearing and his true essence was in a tumultuous state. If he kept on chasing, then the chances of him catching up were extremely slim, much less for him to think about obtaining the supreme dragon bone.

Humiliation, unwillingness, endless hatred, all of this swelled up in Dragon One's heart!

He had burnt 20% of his blood essence, he had swallowed two Nine Revolving Dragon Pills, he had even personally killed many of his own junior-apprentice brothers, but in the end he wouldn't be able to obtain anything!

If he returned like this, not only would he be punished by the clan, he would also be ridiculed and criticized! There were those that were jealous of his status and hostile to him. They would not miss this chance to suppress him. It was likely that he would suffer a major penalty from the clan! After all, he was the one in charge of making decisions, leading to such heavy losses for the Ancient Dragon Clan.

If he had obtained the supreme dragon bone then none of that would have mattered. But if he couldn't then there would be countless people looking at him with spite that would all line up to savagely step on him!

He wanted to kill everyone. He wanted to tear apart the Asura King as well as that unknown existence that had stolen away the dragon bone. He wanted to pull out their souls and refine their marrow!

"Ahhhhhhhhhh!"

Dragon One roared out with unwilling rage, his entire body shaking with anger. "Supreme dragon bone! You are mine! I will obtain you! There is already no road left for me to retreat! I refuse to give up like this!"

………

At this time, deep within the ocean of magma, the Asura King was still chasing right behind Lin Ming!

The energy contained within this mysterious planet was extremely astonishing. The temperature of this underground magma was no worse than Fire Spirit Star's 18 Hells of Flame. Moreover, the deeper he went, the higher the temperature and the greater the pressure!

Lin Ming had the advantage in such an environment. After all, he had already become used to the 18 Hells of Flame. It didn't require too much true essence to pass through the molten magma and he was also able to supplement himself with the fire origin energy!

On the other hand, the Asura King wasn't too well off. It had to use its own energy to separate the magma, otherwise its physical body wouldn't be able to withstand it.

Even so, the distance between Lin Ming and the Asura King continued to lessen!

The Asura King repeatedly attacked Lin Ming. But not only did its strength not decline, it actually gradually recovered.

Even its wounds were slowly regenerating!

“How is this possible!?”

Lin Ming cast his sense on the Asura King to investigate it and was shocked by what he saw. In this ongoing fierce battle, not only was its true essence slowly restoring, but its wounds were regenerating. Just what sort of abnormal restorative ability was this!? This was above even the Divine Transformation realm! No wonder this Asura King was able to cross demonic tribulation and also resist the all-out attack of the Ancient Dragon Clan’s disciples at the same time, again and again!

“Mm? Ancient Dragon Clan… dragon race…”

Lin Ming was surprised and then he was hit with a sudden enlightenment.

Yes, that was right, dragons!

The Asura King had absorbed the supreme dragon bone!

Of the four different God Beast bloodlines, each had their own unique advantage. The Ancient Phoenix Clan bloodline allowed them to burn their phoenix blood without it reducing. As for the Ancient Dragon Clan bloodline, that advantage manifested in their powerful physical strength, amount of true essence, and restorative ability.

For instance, when Lin Ming had absorbed a drop of ancient Azure Dragon reverse scale blood, his true essence had obtained the attribute of endlessness. His true essence had become more resilient, endlessly growing, was able to reform after being scattered, and even recovered quickly!

And now, the Asura King chasing him also had all of these characteristics!

“So that’s what it is! The Asura King has absorbed the supreme dragon bone essence and now its body has obtained the attribute of endlessness! Thus, its blood vitality, recovery ability, and endurance have all reached freakish levels! For me to try to exhaust its true essence was simply a ridiculous dream! I don’t have the abnormal attack power of the Dragon Clan’s 36 disciples and their giant array formation, and the Asura King has already completed its demonic tribulation. Not only will it no longer need to consume its strength, but it will instead grow stronger over time. As for me, I am continuously wasting my energy and my true essence is almost depleted! Even though this magma is my home ground, I will still lose in the end if this continues!”

Lin Ming finally realized what was happening. Although he was in the burning hot magma, a cold chill still soared up his back. He never thought that death would be so close. When he recklessly went to steal away that dragon bone, he had truly underestimated the Asura King’s strength! This was an Asura King that had lived for 100,000 years! This was an Asura King that dared to challenge the many geniuses of the four God Beast Clans even as it went through its own demonic tribulation, making it have to fight in its weakest state! So how could he not have strength to back all of his actions up?

Lin Ming felt his grasp on the Phoenix Blood Spear become wet with sweat. But what he didn’t know was that at this moment, in the Extreme Violet Ring, an unimaginable change was occurring…

Since the supreme dragon bone fell into the Extreme Violet Ring, less than half an hour had passed. Yan Littlemoon sat down cross-legged before the supreme dragon bone, meditating on the Law runes on its surface.

These runes were far too profound, but Yan Littlemoon’s perception was also extremely high. Unknowingly, Yan Littlemoon had fallen into a contemplative state. But then, as she was in a meditating condition, she was suddenly startled and woken up from her ethereal state. To her astonishment, she saw that the 1000 foot dragon bone was trembling!

The trembling of the dragon bone had caused the space within the Extreme Violet Ring to oscillate!

The 1000 foot dragon bone was extremely dense. When it casually fell it had pierced 500-600 feet deep into the ground – this clearly proved just how sharp and heavy it was! If it weren't for the support of some minor array formations while it was in the black swamp, this supreme dragon bone would have sunk all the way to the bottom.

Every inch of dragon bone was heavier than a boulder. A 1000 foot dragon bone was as heavy as a mountain ridge. When such a dragon bone trembled, the vibration force could be imagined!

"What's going on here?"

Yan Littlemoon was stunned. She was afraid that her meditating on the dragon bone had caused some strange mutation to occur within it. If she had somehow damaged it then that would truly be bad. Lin Ming had rescued her. If she had then ruined this dragon bone, there really wasn't any way she could explain it to him.

Just as she wasn't sure what action to take, a scene occurred that left her bewildered. The dragon bone was wrapped up by some unknown force and slowly dragged upwards!

The rough dragon bone surface slowly revealed itself from the ground, causing countless bits of stone and dirt to fall down. Finally, the 1000 foot dragon bone that was as heavy as a mountain ridge floated in the skies, emitting a faint humming sound.

"Could… could it be that this dragon bone has its own spiritual wisdom and has stored a wisp of the Divine Dragon's soul, and is now awakening!?"

Yan Littlemoon paled. If it really were some Divine Dragon awakening, then everything would be thrown into chaos. Who knew if this Divine Dragon was an enemy or a friend?

And everyone, including Lin Ming, had been struggling for this dragon bone in order to obtain its strength. There was no way that any of them could have left a good impression on this Divine Dragon. If this Divine Dragon became angry, the consequences would be dire!

Chapter 1060 – White Light

Chapter 1060 – White Light

…

…

…

As Yan Littlemoon was panicking, to her astonishment, she saw a pale gray light emerge out of nowhere and cover the entire dragon bone.

Underneath this unknown energy, the strength of the dragon bone was rapidly pulled out!

The strength of the dragon bone was being pulled out?

Yan Littlemoon's large eyes widened. Was this Lin Ming? No… if it were Lin Ming, then he would first enter the space within the ring before he absorbed the dragon bone. Moreover, absorbing the strength of the dragon bone was easier said than done. One would have to calm and still the mind to an extreme and adjust oneself to a peak condition before slowly absorbing the dragon bone's strength, lest the body be unable to shoulder it.

Perhaps… could it be that it wasn't the strength of the dragon bone that was being pulled out, but that the consciousness of the dragon spirit within the dragon bone had awoken, and was gathering the strength within the dragon bone to form its own body…?

Dragon spirit…

As Yan Littlemoon thought of this, her heart began to race.

“Do I need to warn Lin Ming of this? Does Lin Ming know?” Yan Littlemoon’s thoughts raced. She wanted to inform Lin Ming but she also feared that Lin Ming was in some dangerous fight at the moment.

According to any common sense, if Lin Ming was indeed safe then his first action should be to enter the Extreme Violet Ring and look over the treasures he obtained. This was how human nature was after all. A supreme dragon bone was a treasure that could cause a World King to go crazy with envy.

If Lin Ming didn’t come, that was proof that he was still in danger!

Just as Yan Littlemoon was lost in her thoughts, a deluge of illusory motes of white light gathered in front of her. These white lights faintly trembled, like ripples on a lake, as if they were changing somehow.

Yan Littlemoon couldn’t help but take several steps back. As she saw that white light constantly shifting, it gradually formed into a transcendently beautiful face. Blurry facial features revealed an indifferent and sublime inclination.

“A human shadow? This white light is a woman? Is this a so-called dragon spirit?”

A dragon spirit was the soul of a Divine Dragon. In truth, a dragon spirit didn’t have much combat strength. Whether it was a human or a God Beast, they both depended on their mortal body to serve as the carrier of energy, and their soul was the ruler of this energy. Without the mortal body there was no energy. If only the soul existed then one’s killing potential would be extremely limited. When Lin Ming was at the Sky Spill Continent, this was also the reason why Demonshine’s combat strength was so utterly lacking.

As Yan Littlemoon remembered this, she finally calmed down. She gripped the top grade saint artifact sword in her hand, her mind completely focused and on guard. She was prepared to deal with an outbreak of battle at any given moment. She guessed that this woman’s shadow in front of her was a wisp of a dragon spirit. When this being was still alive, she was likely at least a million times more powerful than her! But now she had died and all that was left was a tiny wisp of remnant soul; she wasn't necessarily her match.

As Yan Littlemoon was thinking, a sudden change occurred!

That shadow woman hurtled towards Yan Littlemoon with near-unimaginable speed!

"Mm!?" Yan Littlemoon's pupils instantly shrunk to pinpoints. Without thinking, the top grade saint artifact sword pierced out like a viper towards that shadow's head. However, in the split second before her sword was about to hit, she suddenly felt her entire body stiffen. A massive, undeniable strength pressed down on her body, leaving her unable to move!

"What is this? How could this be? Is this will? Battle spirit!?"

When one's will reached a high enough boundary, it could change the hardness of matter, speed, sharpness, and so forth. But, if one's willpower was used to affect a martial artist's body, it would be greatly weakened. Yet now, this wisp of remnant soul was actually relying on just a projection of her world of will into reality to completely lock down Yan Littlemoon's every motion. Just what sort of terrifying strength was this!?

Yan Littlemoon could no longer produce another thought. That wisp of remnant soul had directly broken into her spiritual sea and completely suppressed her divine soul! In that moment, Yan Littlemoon felt herself falling into a deep sleep, never to wake again!

Seize… seizing the body!?

As Yan Littlemoon realized this, she felt her entire being plummet into the nine nether abyss, filled with nothing but despair and doom.

Once her body was seized, that would be the same as death. She was just over 20 years old and still had so much time in front of her… how could she be willing?

"Noo!"

Yan Littlemoon struggled with everything she had, but it was all for naught. Compared to this wisp of remnant soul, her entire divine soul was nothing more than a fading candle in front of a brilliant full moon. She couldn't even call herself a match. She felt her thoughts fading away, becoming increasingly weak, as if she were about to be sealed forever.

"I can't sleep. I can't sleep…" Yan Littlemoon repeated to herself, all the way until the last bit of clearness dimmed to nothing.

…………..

In the vast and bottomless magma, Lin Ming's speed soon increased to twice the speed of sound.

In truth, this magma was different from the 18 Hells of Flame. The 18 Hells of Flame was filled with only fire origin energy and heated astral winds. It wasn't like this thick and solid magma with its immense resistance.

Thus, in the 18 Hells of Flame, Lin Ming was able to increase his speed to several times that of sound. But here, just maintaining a speed of two times the speed of sound was extremely arduous!

Normally, if a martial artist flew at more than the speed of sound in the skies, it would produce terrifying sonic booms that would consume a massive amount of energy to resist, much less in this thick and dense magma.

At this time, Lin Ming had already penetrated a million feet deep into the earth. The temperature here and the wild fire origin energy was no weaker than at the fifth or sixth level of the Hells of Flame.

If he could persist a bit longer and reach a depth that was close to the seventh level of the Hells of Flame, he would have some ability to fight on more even ground. At least, he might manage to escape.

But at this moment, the Asura King shot out with another attack, more crazy and fierce than the last!

"I never imagined that you would only be a little disciple of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, and that your cultivation wouldn't even be at the Divine Sea, and yet you managed to trick me! You think that if you enter deeper into the magma, I can't do anything to you? Haha, indeed you would truly have the advantage there, but what a pity, you will never reach that far! I have nearly restored 10% of my strength! I will kill you with the Astral Quadra Dragon Formation!"

The Asura King's body burst out with endless beams of blue light. At the same time, it brought its hands together and formed hundreds and thousands of seals.

This Astral Quadra Dragon Formation was one of the Ancient Dragon Clan's Azure Dragon Faction's array formations. The Asura King had inherited its understanding of this array formation from the previous Ancient Dragon Clan disciples it had swallowed up in the past. As a mystic realm demon, it didn't yet have the ability to train in human cultivation methods. But, laying down array formations was possible. In particular, because of the massive amount of Azure Dragon essence within its body, learning this array formation was far easier.

This Astral Quadra Dragon Formation wasn't too high level an array formation. But, it had to be known that when the Asura King previously fought, it had nearly only relied on its own strength, without the use or support of array formations and martial skills. Even if this array formation only raised its combat strength by 30-40%, it was still enough to place Lin Ming in extreme danger.

In the magma, there were azure seals flying everywhere. In terms of energy alone, the Asura King had 10 times more than Lin Ming within him!

"Seal, kill him!"

The Asura King brought its hands together and these azure seals gathered in the air, forming a massive azure seal hundreds of feet large that pounded towards Lin Ming!

In that moment, Lin Ming felt all of the space around him being locked down; there was nowhere for him to run. His only choice was to forcefully resist this azure great seal's attack. But, this strike would be several times stronger than the Asura King's previous attacks. It was simply beyond Lin Ming's ability to defend against.

Even if Lin Ming was in his peak state, taking this strike would leave him severely wounded, much less now when he didn't have much strength left in him. It was also near-impossible for him to continue burning the Ancient Phoenix blood essence; there was no way he could block this attack!

At this critical moment, Lin Ming took out three purple beads from his spatial ring. He kept one in his hand and threw the other two at the azure great seal. At the same time, Lin Ming crushed a blue symbol paper in his hands, causing his entire body to erupt with a blazing blue light. His protective true essence instantly thickened to over 10 times what it had been!

This was Lin Ming's final life-saving card, he could only use it once. Before Lin Ming entered the God Beast Mystic Realm, Huo Violentstone had prepared some items for Lin Ming as a contingency measure. There were three god slaying beads and a single divine protective talisman.

These items didn't need any true essence to detonate. Even if a mortal used them there would be a similar effect. In other words, if a mortal used a god slaying bead, they could kill even a Divine Sea master. Of course, this was all based on the premise that it would successfully hit.

Treasures like this that didn't care about cultivation were extremely valuable. Lin Ming didn't want to use these treasures until the last life or death moment, and now was the time to do so.

Bang! Bang!

Two god slaying beads blew up together. A strength that was capable of turning even extreme Divine Sea geniuses into ashes erupted. The azure great seal suddenly trembled as a large gap was ripped into it!

As for the explosive shock waves, all of them were borne by Lin Ming's divine protective talisman, with none of it damaging him. But after undergoing such an impact, most of the thick blue layer of light surrounding Lin Ming disintegrated, with only three or four inches of it left.

The next attack would likely shatter the entire thing.

"Mm? This brat!"

The Asura King had been utterly confident that this strike would kill Lin Ming, but the damn brat had actually managed to block it. This young martial artist's life was simply tougher than a cockroach. Even with the absolute disparity in their cultivation and having been chased down for almost an hour, he still managed to hang onto his final breath.

"It seems you are a core disciple of the four God Beast Clans. Good! When I kill you, the treasures I obtain from you will also be considerable. You can avoid me now, but you can't avoid me forever! The only way is if your clan has some great expert coming to rescue you, otherwise you are destined to die here! But oh, that's right, this God Beast Mystic Realm is completely sealed up, it is impossible for anyone to come and save you! Hahahaha!"

The Asura King madly laughed. Although its words were rampant, they were all facts. Underneath the absolute suppression of their cultivation difference, Lin Ming was pushed to the point of death!

"Although killing you is as easy as catching a turtle in a jar, since this matter involves the supreme dragon bone, I will not give you any time to encounter some lucky chance and escape. To avoid problems popping up, I will completely finish you off here and now. You can forget about going any deeper into this magma!"

The maniacal face of the Asura King filled with bloodthirst.

“Flesh and blood sacrifice!”

The Asura King’s right hand trembled before exploding into a rain of blood! This ruptured flesh and blood twisted in the air as if it had a life of its own. It undulated about before submerging into the Asura King’s body.

The Asura King’s body suddenly turned a blood red, and his strength doubled! It had discarded a portion of its body that it had formed after so much painstaking effort, and then swallowed the flesh and blood essence, transforming that into energy and causing a brief eruption of strength!

Chapter 1061 – Revival After 50,000 Years

Chapter 1061 – Revival After 50,000 Years

…

…

…

The Asura King already had a 90% belief that it would be able to grasp Lin Ming. But, it worried that once it reached any deeper down, there would be some strange change that would occur. In order to guarantee absolute success, it discarded its hand. If it discarded its hand it would still be able to make up for it by swallowing more essence energy in the future, but if it lost the supreme dragon bone then it was over for it.

In that moment, Lin Ming felt death creeping ever closer to him. He only had a single god slaying bead left in his hand, and he had also consumed most of the divine protective talisman's effects. It was uncertain if he could defend against this strike of the Asura King and also penetrate deeper into the magma.

“Give me your life!”

The Asura King grasped down. Its entire body was covered in a thick fog of blood and it suddenly bulged out. Its face no longer had the appearance of a handsome man anymore; it now looked no different than a hideous and cruel demon.

Lin Ming wouldn't just stand there and wait for death to take him. He revolved his protective true essence to the limit and shot out the last god slaying bead in his hand!

Pa!

The god slaying bead was seized by those demonic claws and wrapped up in the surging blood fog.

Bang!

The god slaying bead exploded, blowing up a great section of the blood fog. But, it simply wasn't enough to stop the Asura King. After sacrificing its flesh and blood, the Asura King's strength was now at 20% of its peak state.

As Lin Ming saw this claw about to reach him, he punched his own chest. He was prepared to force out his own blood essence and burn it!

Phoenix blood essence could be burnt without diminishing, but if Lin Ming burnt his own blood essence there would be nothing left. After punching his chest, Lin Ming had forced out 30% of his blood essence. Once he burnt this, it would greatly reduce his lifespan and affect his future cultivation. But, there was nothing else he could do. As long as he had a single ray of hope to survive this hell, he had to grasp it with all he had.

But just as he was about to burn his blood essence, he was suddenly surprised. His Extreme Violet Ring slipped off his finger as it was grasped by some unknown force.

Mm?

Lin Ming was bewildered. Then, at that moment, a vast and indescribable strength poured forth from the Extreme Violet Ring, turning into an aurora of dim divine light that gathered in front of Lin Ming, blocking the monstrous bloody demon claws.

"This is..."

Lin Ming was incredulous as he looked at the young woman in front of him. From her clothes and from the shape of her back, she was clearly... Yan Littlemoon!!

Yan Littlemoon!?!?

How was this possible!?

This young woman who had appeared from the Extreme Violet Ring was completely similar in looks to Yan Littlemoon, but there was no way that Yan Littlemoon could ever possess the temperament and terrifying aura of this woman!

"You…"

Lin Ming pushed back down the blood essence that was roiling at the surface. Without enough time to say a single word, the woman had already stretched out a slender white hand towards the claws that were surging with demonic energy.

"Break."

The woman's red lips opened and a single word emerged, light and ethereal, echoing like the commands of heavenly tribulation. The demonic claws became like glass striking a boulder; they began to crack with a 'ka ka ka' sound!

"What!?"

Lin Ming was dumbfounded. As for the Asura King, its eyes were wide with disbelief as he stared at this woman that had suddenly appeared from nowhere.

"You… just who are you?"

The Asura King was disoriented. The God Beast Mystic Realm was completely sealed off, so where had this marvelous and astonishing woman come from? And looking at her cultivation, she was only at the peak of Sevenfall, moreover, she had deliberately suppressed her cultivation at this realm. Otherwise, she would have already broken into Eightfall. This was something that only extreme cultivation talents would do, so it didn't seem fake. In addition, this woman was so powerful that there was simply no need for her to fake her cultivation.

"Is she really at the seventh stage of Life Destruction? How can someone at the seventh stage of Life Destruction have such formidable combat strength! What is going on here!?"

The Asura King felt as if it had fallen into a dream. It hadn't even seen the woman do anything just now. Well, it was more accurate to say that he hadn't felt a single true essence fluctuation.

Yes, she didn't use any true essence at all. All she used was a single thought and a single word. But with just that alone it was like she wielded the Heavenly Dao, striking out with the power of heavenly retribution. With just that, she had shattered the attack that the Asura King had summoned at the coast of discarding his hand.

The woman simply didn't spare any attention for the Asura King. She faintly turned her head and glanced at Lin Ming.

As they met eyes, Lin Ming could finally see this woman's facial features. Her face was indeed Yan Littlemoon's: young, soft, beautiful, just like a 16-17 year old girl's.

But, her eyes were completely different.

Yan Littlemoon's eyes were clear and bright like a mountain spring, transparent enough to see the very bottom.

But this woman in front of him seemed to fuse together with the space around her. Her pupils seemed to contain the endless galaxies, unfathomable and unimaginable!

Lin Ming even felt as if he could see the Laws of the universe through these eyes. In these eyes, there were countless stars being born and destroyed at the same time.

"You… are… you are…" Lin Ming stammered out, subconsciously tracing the spot on his chest where the Magic Cube was. He didn't feel anything there. In fact, ever since the Magic Cube fused into his body, Lin Ming had never been able to feel its existence. If there was any change to the Magic Cube, Lin Ming would not have known either.

But, Lin Ming could faintly feel something from this woman, as if they had met somewhere before. This feeling was the same as that white ball of light in the space of the Magic Cube that had floated in the center of the countless star-like memory fragments!

When the Magic Cube absorbed blood essence, the truth was that it had been absorbed by that ball of light!

When Lin Ming was 15 years old, that was when the Magic Cube first invaded his spiritual sea. He had witnessed a dreamlike scene. He saw a woman, her body slender and clothed in white. She stood proud and alone on an endless field of snow, facing 10,000 masters of the Divine Realm!

And of these masters, the worst of them were on the same level as Fairy Feng and the Demon Emperor!

And the stronger ones among them had been at the Holy Lord level!

Not just that, but there were also those that had reached large success or even the peak of Holy Lord!

And there was even a black-clothed man leading them all. Although Lin Ming wasn't able to guess his cultivation, he could vaguely make out his strength from how everyone else treated him with utter respect. That black-clothed man was likely infinitely close if not at the World King realm!

And against such a group of powerhouses, a woman, borrowing the power of the Magic Cube, had slain them all with a single move!

All of their souls were twisted and shattered!

The Lin Ming at that time didn't know just how terrifying this scene was, nor did he understand the aura of that woman. But, as his strength constantly rose and he understood more and more, he began to realize just how terrifying a character that woman who sacrificed her own soul was!

And now, as Lin Ming met the eyes of Yan Littlemoon, he had a feeling that they had met somewhere, and the memory that Lin Ming recalled was of that white-clothed woman.

Was it her!?

Did she suddenly revive? And she had even occupied Yan Littlemoon's body!?

The woman only peered into Lin Ming's eyes for a moment. Then, without even saying a single word, she turned back to face the Asura King!

The Asura King was stunned at this time. It could feel a terrifying aura from this woman that made his scalp creep. It nearly turned around and fled, but with the supreme dragon bone still in Lin Ming's hand, it wasn't willing to give up!

"Just who are you? I wish to kill that God Beast Clan junior behind you. If you have nothing to do with this matter, then please move aside. I will thank you again in the future."

The Asura King cupped its hand across its chest and bowed in respect.

It could already tell that this newcomer likely wasn't good news. But, it also didn't believe that this dreadful woman was brought here by Lin Ming. This was because if a powerhouse wished to enter the God Beast Mystic Realm, they would be limited by the Laws of the world and would need to consume countless violet sun stones to do so. Also, if Lin Ming had prepared such a killing card beforehand, then why hadn't he used it earlier? Why would the Asura King have been able to chase him and cause him to fall into such a miserable state?

It was possible that this woman was some unknown existence in the God Beast Mystic Realm that, due to some unknown reasons, had been residing in some treasure. And, that treasure just happened to have been obtained by Lin Ming somewhere. Thus, the reason for what happened just now. Lin Ming clearly didn't know who this woman was, so it wasn't necessarily true that she would help him. It would be fine as long as he could hide the truth of the supreme dragon bone from her.

As the Asura King thought of this, another bolt of fear struck it. It was afraid that Lin Ming would reveal the existence of the supreme dragon bone.

As the woman heard the Asura King's words, she turned and looked at the Asura King. There was no change in her expression. She simply parted her cherry red lips again and spoke a single word.

"Die."

This voice sounded light and dreamy to Lin Ming, but as it fell onto the ears of the Asura King, it was actually like a thunderclap descended from the highest heavens. The Asura King felt as if the heavens themselves had fallen down on it, causing its entire body to shake and all of its organs to flip over!

The 'Die' word was not just a simple sound, but it contained the Laws themselves. This sound held an inerrable charm, an order that could not be disobeyed. With just a simple world, the Laws of heaven and earth were affected!

This woman's thoughts emitted with this word, combining into a sound that was holy and vast, breaking through everything, punishing all of existence, destroying all of creation, piercing into the body of the Asura King!

For a time, the Asura King felt as if countless beasts roared in its ears and endless rolling thunderclaps exploded in its mind. The world itself became a volcano that blew up within it and a terrifying buzz overwhelmed its senses, making it dizzy and blind with blood gushing out from its head!

"Ahhhhhhhhhh!"

The Asura King emitted a miserable cry as it was sent flying back. It could clearly feel that when that woman just attacked, she didn't use any energy at all. In other words, she didn't use even a tiny bit of the seventh stage Life Destruction true essence within her.

All she used was a sound attack with her battle spirit. And with the Laws contained within it, there was actually such a tremendous power behind it!

Just who was this!?

The Asura King was scared out of its wits. At this time it no longer wished to retake the dragon bone. It turned around and fled at full speed!

But behind it, the woman also reacted. In that brief moment after she attacked, she frowned, as if she weren't satisfied with the damage she had done.

"Harden."

Another word, another command that could only be obeyed. Each word she spoke was filled with her will and the Laws of the Great Dao. Her world of will projection overlapped with reality, wielding the Great Dao Laws like the power of heavenly retribution!

In that moment, all of the magma in front of the Asura King was filled with the will of the woman. The magma suddenly hardened into incomparably solid divine iron before smashing down at incredible speed!

Bang!

The Asura King crashed into that magma that had hardened to an unbelievable degree, completely beaten up! At this time it was no different from a mouse in a cage. It had no ability to resist; it could only allow itself to be ruined!

And behind the woman, Lin Ming was already left gaping at the scene before him. A battle spirit could be used like this? Without using any true essence and only relying on one's battle spirit and comprehension of Laws, there could actually be such terrifying combat strength?

Chapter 1062 – Mo Eversnow

Chapter 1062 – Mo Eversnow

…

…

…

“Just who are you, why are you doing this to me!?” The Asura King wildly ranted. It could feel that it was already completely covered in the woman’s world of will. In this world of will, every drop of magma could turn into an incomparably sharp killing weapon and also into an inescapable cage. There was truly no path to heaven nor gate to hell!

Puff!

The Asura King suddenly felt an agonizing pain. A surging flow of magma had turned into a large spear that thrust through its chest, causing it to vomit a mouthful of blood!

“Ahhhhh! Flesh and blood sacrifice!”

The Asura King raved, its eyes filled with an explosive color. This time, it exploded its complete right arm, using it as a sacrifice. This right arm burst apart into countless motes of flesh and blood essence energy that flew towards the Asura King. The Asura King intended to absorb this essence energy, transform it into usable energy and then convert that into a last desperate blow.

But at this moment, the Magic Cube Saintess spoke out another word. The flowing magma from all around gathered into a massive ball that smashed into the Asura King’s chest, causing its ribs to break in and blood to cover its entire body.

And after the Asura King's right arm exploded and turned into bits and pieces of flesh and blood, it was actually pulled away by the Magic Cube Saintess and turned into a blood bead that spun around in her palm.

The Asura King had sacrificed a part of its physical body that it had formed with bitter effort and attempted to use that flesh and blood to increase his strength. But, after it burst it apart, he wasn't even able to absorb it. Instead, it was stolen away by the Magic Cube Saintess!

Just what sort of grievance was that!

The Asura King's eyes turned blood red, nearly popping out from anger! It had already completely fallen into a maddened state, and now it flushed towards Lin Min and the Magic Cube Saintess like an injured animal that was cornered!

Puff puff puff!

The woman's eyes flashed and in that moment countless flows of magma turned into spears under her will and thrust through the Asura King's body, causing a shower of blood where they passed.

And as this blood rained down, all of it was taken away by the Magic Cube Saintess, without a single exception!

All of the blood formed into blood beads that floated over the slender fingertips of the Magic Cube Saintess. In addition with the previous blood bead formed by the Asura King exploding its right arm, there were now seven or eight of them spinning around.

Lin Ming was flabbergasted as he looked at the Saintess from behind. The Asura King was actually beaten into such a state. Its body's flesh and blood essence energy were actually turned into blood beads by the Magic Cube Saintess. These blood beads were wondrous treasures! They didn't even evaporate in the sea of magma a million feet underground!

And the Asura King had only formed its mortal body after absorbing almost half the dragon marrow in the supreme dragon bone. This meant that every inch of its body was a heavenly material. Originally, Lin Ming had only obtained the supreme dragon bone. As for the Asura King's flesh and blood as well as the incomparably pure mystic realm energy within its body, he could only look on with regret. He didn't even dare to think of killing it. But now, it seemed likely that the Asura King itself would be completely melted away and refined by the Magic Cube Saintess.

At this time, the Asura King was injured from top to bottom. But, its life force was still vibrant. This was clearly the vitality brought about by the Azure Dragon blood marrow; it was not something that Lin Ming's Gate of Healing could compare with!

As the Asura King looked at those seven or eight blood beads swirling above the Magic Cube Saintess' fingers, its face twitched and it began to maniacally laugh.

"Hahaha! I never imagined that a King like me would be beaten into the ground like this! I even cut off my own flesh to feed others! Since I am doomed to die here, you can give up any further thoughts of obtaining my essence energy!" The Asura King's eyes flashed with a ruthless and savage light. Then, it concentrated its thoughts, focusing everything on the core of its source energy in its body. At that moment, the Asura King burst out with a blinding black radiance!

"Shit! He's going to explode!"

Lin Ming was shocked. An existence like the Asura King was completely composed of energy. With a thought, it could blow itself up, and the speed of this was extremely quick. There wasn't even an instant to react; this was impossible to guard against!

But at this critical moment, the Magic Cube Saintess' eyes shined with a severe light. All around the Asura King, time began to wind down. Sound, energy, everything began stretching out to infinity.

Time Laws – Concept of Stagnation!

Under the control of the Magic Cube Saintess, for a short period of time she could display the Concept of Stagnation to the extreme, causing time to nearly come to a standstill!

"Cut."

The Magic Cube Saintess waved her hand and translucent white ripples appeared around her. At this moment, she finally used true essence. This true essence was not earth-shattering in any way; it was only the true essence of the seventh stage of Life Destruction, and also the limit of the energy contained within Yan Littlemoon's body. Regardless of how powerful the Magic Cube Saintess' divine soul was, how incredible her battle spirit was, or how profound her comprehension of the Laws was, she could only draw out true essence from the body she was possessing. This was because her own mortal body no longer existed and her soul could not contain heaven and earth origin energy. This was the reason that her strength was doomed to be greatly affected.

Puff puff puff!

Ripples of white energy slashed down on the Asura King's body, sending flesh and blood flying everywhere.

At the same time, the Magic Cube Saintess' battle spirit fused into the surrounding magma, turning it into countless swords that pierced through the Asura King's body. This was truly what one called torn to shreds by 10,000 swords!

In that moment, the Asura King's mortal body was like a ripped bag of blood. It continued to profusely bleed, and all of this blood was gathered up by the Magic Cube Saintess and turned into blood beads.

Due to the absolute suppression of Time Laws, the Asura King was unable to resist at all. In fact, even its thoughts were incomparably slow. It could only allow itself to be slaughtered on the chopping block.

The Asura King was also completely cut off from contacting its core of energy within its body by the Magic Cube Saintess. Thus, it was also impossible for it to explode.

The Magic Cube Saintess wiped her spatial ring and took out a top grade saint artifact furnace; this was Yan Littlemoon's Fire Pattern Furnace. After her body was possessed by the Magic Cube Saintess, everything in her possession could also be used by the Magic Cube Saintess.

"Receive."

The Magic Cube Saintess flung out her hand and the Fire Pattern Furnace spun outwards. The Asura King's body and all of the blood beads were completely sucked into the furnace.

Then, a vast amount of fire origin energy surged out from the surrounding magma, towards the Fire Pattern Furnace. For a time, great flames crested around the furnace!

"Ahhhh!"

Faintly, very faintly, Lin Ming could hear the pitiful cries emitted by the Asura King. After absorbing the Azure Dragon marrow, the Asura King's vitality was just far too powerful. At the same time that this brought it a greater combat strength, it also meant that it would have to suffer an even greater pain before dying.

Within the conflagration of flames, the screams became quieter and quieter before completely vanishing. The Asura King's physical body, and the flesh and blood essence it absorbed from the disciples of the four God Beast Clans, were completely melted away, leaving behind only the blood marrow of the supreme dragon bone. This blood marrow actually formed a small azure dragon within the Fire Pattern Furnace that flew around the flames, cute and lifelike.

Besides the dragon marrow essence, there was also a dark red bead within the Fire Pattern Furnace. This was the purest mystic energy left behind by the Asura King condensed into pill form!

Even an ordinary mystic realm demon had the unique Laws of the God Beast Mystic Realm inscribed into the mystic realm energy within its body. The first time that a genius like Yan Littlemoon had absorbed the energy of a mystic realm demon, it was equal to 10 days of meditating over the Laws. The older a mystic realm demon was, the more Laws it would have within it, much less something like the Asura King.

It wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that even if one completely disregarded the dragon marrow essence that the Asura King absorbed, just the mystic realm energy within the Asura King was already a priceless worldly treasure. This sort of mystic realm energy could not be found in the outside Divine Realm. But even though there were actually many Asura Kings that existed in the vast and boundless God Beast Mystic Realm, the problem was that only low level disciples were able to enter. It was simply far too difficult for them to stay alive in the presence of an Asura King, much less hunt one down.

In just one incense stick of time, the Magic Cube Saintess had completely finished her process of refining. The Fire Pattern Furnace shot open and a black red bead shot upwards, forming a sparkling rainbow hued cloud around it that caused even the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy to be stirred up. Only the birth of a transcendent divine pill would produce such a phenomenon. But in truth, what the Magic Cube Saintess refined was not a pill, but the condensed form of the Asura King's energy and the dragon marrow essence.

After putting away the Fire Pattern Furnace, the Magic Cube Saintess took this black red pill in her hand. The smooth pill was like jade to the touch. On the surface of the pill was the image of an Azure Dragon that wrapped around the entire circumference until the head and tail met again. This was due to the condensed supreme dragon marrow essence.

One couldn't judge this Azure Dragon by how faint it was. The truth was that the space within it was extremely mysterious. The total amount of dragon marrow essence that was compressed into this space had reached an absurdly terrifying degree!

The Magic Cube Saintess glanced over this pill for a moment and then tossed it backwards, throwing it directly towards Lin Ming.

"For you."

As the Saintess spoke these two simple words, they were completely different from her voice in the beginning. When the Magic Cube Saintess first spoke out, her words dripped with killing intent and her tone was callous and indifferent. It was similar to the Laws of the world that controlled heavenly retribution. Her words had given off a feeling like nature itself; unbiased, merciless, treating everything in this world as equal to ants.

But as she spoke these two words now, her voice was actually as pleasant as a mountain stream, pleasant and delectable to the ears.

Lin Ming quickly received the bead, feeling extremely flattered at the moment. Although he had always been together with this Saintess ever since he obtained the Magic Cube, he actually had no idea just how she viewed him. Towards this woman that knew all of his secrets and whose strength far surpassed his, he always felt a tinge of fear and awe.

"I have absorbed 80% of the remaining supreme dragon bone marrow blood in order to regain consciousness. As for this blood marrow pill, you may take it as compensation. The amount of blood marrow is around the same. As for the strength of the Asura King itself, you can consider it interest."

The Magic Cube Saintess had only absorbed the blood marrow within the supreme dragon bone; she hadn't absorbed the bone itself. It had no use to her anyway, thus she didn't bother with it. The dragon bone was left over to be fused into Lin Ming and used to strengthen his bones.

The Magic Cube Saintess was a soul form. Blood essence and blood energy were useful in helping her recover. Before this, whenever the Magic Cube absorbed the blood essence of masters, that was all because of the Magic Cube Saintess. In other words, the Magic Cube itself did not need blood essence. The Magic Cube Saintess had used this method to tell and encourage Lin Ming to go and seek the blood essence of powerhouses. Of course, when he was in the lower realms, even the blood essence of Yang Yun only had a tiny, imperceptible use to her. But now, in the God Beast Mystic Realm, after obtaining so much dragon marrow essence, the Magic Cube Saintess had finally regained consciousness.

“Lin Ming, right? This isn’t the first time that we’ve met. My name is Mo Eversnow. I am the Saintess of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands.” The woman lightly said as she suddenly looked towards Lin Ming.

Chapter 1063 – Another Dual Cultivator

Chapter 1063 – Another Dual Cultivator

…

…

…

“Mo Eversnow…”

Lin Ming was dazed for some time.

Ever since he had obtained the Magic Cube, there had been countless riddles he couldn’t figure out. He had sought the blood essence of increasingly powerful martial artists for the Magic Cube to swallow, in order to not just obtain the memory fragments within, but also because he subconsciously desired to know the secrets that surrounded the Magic Cube.

The Magic Cube was the most fundamental cause of Lin Ming’s rise!

Although, after reaching the Xiantian and Revolving Core realms, the Magic Cube in truth wasn’t too helpful to Lin Ming. A great portion of why Lin Ming had his current achievements was because of his own hard work, effort, and perseverance. But, it was undoubtedly true that if he didn’t have the Magic Cube, he would likely still be a small martial artist in the Sky Fortune Kingdom. His cultivation would at most be at the Pulse Condensation or Houtian realm; that would have been his limit.

It was the Magic Cube that had given Lin Ming the initial boost he needed to overcome the most difficult early times and also his lack of martial talent.

Lin Ming could confirm that the Magic Cube was one of the most priceless treasures of the universe. What he had been trying to answer all this time was what the Magic Cube was and also what other functions it had besides preserving memory fragments. Why had it attracted the attention of so many Divine Realm supreme elders to fight for it?

Many of these questions circled in Lin Ming's mind, but he didn't open his mouth to ask. This was because he didn't know what Mo Eversnow's plans were. Although she had borrowed his strength to restore her consciousness, he had no idea just what she would do now. Perhaps she would even just occupy Yan Littlemoon's body and take away the Magic Cube.

If this was what she planned to do then it would be stupid for Lin Ming to ask about the Magic Cube's origins. She might try to silence everyone that knew about the Magic Cube, and Lin Ming wouldn't be able to resist her. He wasn't even able to deal with the Asura King, much less Mo Eversnow.

Mo Eversnow seemed to see the fear and dread in Lin Ming's heart. She said in a soft and calming voice, "You do not need to be nervous. Although I have been slumbering in the Magic Cube for 50,000 years, my consciousness has still had a spark of wakefulness. I have already been aware since you first touched the Magic Cube. My divine soul has been grievously wounded, and I need the power of blood essence to restore myself. I can only hope that a powerhouse will help me seek blood essence to help restore the strength of my divine soul. Of course, if it is a powerhouse that I raised myself, then that would be the best. Only then would I be able to trust them. I have been satisfied in your actions and character so far. You move courageously and you can also kill decisively. You do not make mistakes, nor are you soft when you shouldn't be. At the same time, you aren't heartless either. You know to repay graciousness, and you have your own bottom line. And most importantly, your will is firm and you seek the peak of martial arts with your entire heart and soul. You're quite good!

"Originally I didn't have much hope in your talent. But, I never thought you would give me such a wonderful surprise in this aspect. For you to reach this step as a martial artist from the lower realms, that is simply a miracle."

As Mo Eversnow spoke, Lin Ming was able to glean a great deal of information from her words. Every time he entered the space within the Magic Cube to absorb a soul fragment, that had been because Mo Eversnow had led him in and guided him to the Magic Cube, as a way to have him search for the blood essence of masters.

"Now that Miss Mo has awoken, may I inquire as to your plans..." Lin Ming tentatively asked.

After he said these words, Mo Eversnow took a deep breath. In that moment, an icy chill spread out through the air, even stopping the magma around them as if the entire surrounding area would be sealed in ice.

"I will rebuild my flesh and blood body and completely restore myself. In addition, for all of those that dared to move against my Verdant Feather Holy Lands, I will kill every single one of them! And that Tian Mingzi! I will destroy his soul and scatter it to the wind!"

As Mo Eversnow spoke, her two beautiful pupils gleaned with thick killing intent.

Lin Ming felt his heart skip a beat. Although Mo Eversnow was ethereal and lofty, as if she had never been tainted by the world, the truth was that she was actually ruthless and decisive, a person who distinctly knew grudges and gratitude!

This was also an understandable matter. The past Verdant Feather Holy Lands was likely commanded by Mo Eversnow. Even if it wasn't, she was at least one of the high level figures there.

"Tian Mingzi, he... how strong is he?" Lin Ming couldn't help but ask. Without a doubt, Tian Mingzi was that black-clothed man that had led 10,000 Divine Realm supreme elders to assault the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. Finally, Mo Eversnow had been forced to sacrifice her own soul to make a final strike with the Magic Cube. One could see from this alone just how strong he was.

"Early World King!" Mo Eversnow slowly and clearly said. But as these words fell into Lin Ming's ears, he sucked in a deep breath in response. Although he had already faintly guessed this, he was still truly shocked at hearing Mo Eversnow's confirmation.

A World King powerhouse. Between a Holy Lord and a World King, there was a nearly impassable divide. Within the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan's 100 million years of history, there had never been a World King!

Of course, this was ultimately because the Ancient Phoenix Clan was only a human sect with the Ancient Phoenix bloodline transplanted within them; they were not true descendants of the phoenix. A true God Beast descendent… who knew how many of these characters existed in the entire Divine Realm? There weren't many God Beasts to begin with, and each one was an incomparably proud and haughty existence. How could they possibly deign to mate with a human? And if there truly was a child born from such a union, this sort of person could truly be called the most terrifying talent in the world.

This was because a God Beast symbolized the strongest physical body and compatibility with Laws. But humans had a deep and profound ability to learn and also the ability to study and train in martial arts. Such a person would have unimaginable achievements!

"That was his cultivation 50,000 years ago? If it's now, then shouldn't it be even higher?" Lin Ming subconsciously asked.

"Yes. But 50,000 years ago, Tian Mingzi didn't have his own great world. He only controlled a peripheral medium world. He could not be called a true Great World King, but should be called an ordinary World King."

As Mo Eversnow spoke, Lin Ming was surprised for a moment before immediately understanding. Although there were only 3000 Great World Kings in the Divine Realm, this was because there were only 3000 great worlds in the Divine Realm. In the vast Divine Realm, there were constantly new World Kings being born; they were almost always at a saturated state. But, a newly born World King wouldn't necessarily be able to obtain their own world. They would have to wait for an old World King to die, or perhaps even simply defeat them and take over their lands.

But wanting to defeat an old World King with a deep background was easier said than done. These World Kings had lifespans that were calculated using millions as the base unit. There were even some extremely powerful World Kings that could live for tens of millions of years!

The reason the Divine Realm had so many World Kings was not that World Kings were like cabbages that could be bought on the street. Rather, it was because the Divine Realm was simply too broad and endless. The total number of lives in the Divine Realm was incalculable. Moreover, these World Kings all lived incomparably long lives, lives that were millions or even tens of millions of years. After accumulating for such a long period of time, this was why there were so many of them.

“Then Miss Mo’s boundary is...” Lin Ming hesitated before asking this. He really did want to know this.

“In the past I was only a half-step World King. All considered, I was only a Holy Lord. I was stranded in that realm for a long time and not able to break through for a reason, and that was because...” As Mo Eversnow spoke to here she looked towards Lin Ming. Her following words left him dumbstruck.

“Because... I dual cultivated body and energy.”

“What? Dual... dual cultivated body and energy?” Lin Ming’s eyes widened and he gazed at Mo Eversnow with astonishment. She dual cultivated body and energy, just like him!

Of the Divine Realm geniuses, even if one was an extreme talent of their generation, there was an extremely small number that would fumble their way through dual body and energy cultivation. This was because after the rules of the heavens and earth changed, it was simply far too difficult to follow this path. For many people, the gains just weren’t equal to the losses. Even if one were the chosen amongst all chosen prides of heaven, they still weren't an exception!

Xiao Daoji, Crimson Strifecloud, Huo Burning Heaven, and even the Ancient Dragon Clan's two World Kings, none of them had dual cultivated body and energy!

In fact, a major reason Lin Ming had stepped onto this road of dual cultivation was because he didn't know just how difficult it would be at the start. By the time he began to realize it, it was already too late as he had begun to open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

However, it was impossible that Mo Eversnow didn't know this!

For those that knew just how difficult it was to dual cultivate in body and energy and still chose that route, there were only two possibilities.

The first possibility was that they were an idiot potato who had bitten off more than they could chew.

And the second possibility was… they were an unrivalled genius, with a talent so high that it was unbelievable!

Without a doubt, Mo Eversnow belonged to the latter. Otherwise, there was no way she could have become the Saintess of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. From the way she spoke, this Verdant Feather Holy Lands was also an extremely high Holy Land, possibly even a World King level Holy Land!

This was also reasonable. Otherwise, how could something like the Magic Cube fall into the hands of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands.

And, the reason Mo Eversnow hadn't become a World King before her physical body was destroyed was not that she lacked talent. but rather… it was because she was too young!

She was the Saintess of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, not the ruler. The Verdant Feather Holy Lands should have had someone older and higher ranked as a decision maker, possibly even some Highest Elder. And, Mo Eversnow could only be considered a junior compared to them. But even so, a junior like her was able to cultivate to the half-step World King realm… her talent could be imagined!

All of these thoughts flashed through Lin Ming's mind.

"I really wonder just what bloodline family background she originates from, or what type of special physique she had?" Lin Ming wondered. He didn't believe that an ordinary bloodline could reach such a degree of talent. Lin Ming was also constantly searching for ways to improve his own bloodline and body.

Mo Eversnow didn't seem to have any intention of speaking about her glorious and wondrous past. She said, "Lin Ming, I never thought that you would also step onto the road of dual body and energy cultivation. Moreover, you've also managed to come this far. This road you have chosen will be extremely difficult. I only want to ask you a question: do you still intend to continue walking down the path of dual body and energy cultivation?"

Lin Ming froze for a moment before firmly nodding. Giving up all of his previous efforts was not his style. Moreover, since Mo Eversnow had also chosen dual body and energy cultivation, that meant that this road was possible. And, the further one walked down this road, the more benefits there would be. The only problem was that it was an incomparably difficult path to take.

Since there had been someone else that could try it, then why couldn't he? Lin Ming wondered just what boundary Mo Eversnow's dual body and energy cultivation reached. Had she managed to open the legendary Nine Stars of the Dao Palace?

"Good! Then I will help you." Mo Eversnow said, short and to the point.

Help me?

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. These words of Mo Eversnow's clearly contained another meaning!

She didn’t plan to take away the Magic Cube. In other words, she actually planned to stay with him for a very long period of time! Otherwise, how could she possibly help Lin Ming complete his dual body and energy cultivation?

In addition, there was also another, more subtle meaning. The reason Mo Eversnow had helped Lin Ming in the past was to help restore her own consciousness. And now that she continued to help him, there was definitely some other intention.

Lin Ming’s eyes widened. “Are you planning to have me help you take revenge?”

Mo Eversnow was slightly stunned for a moment and then spared Lin Ming an appreciative look. “Smart boy. Good, you are correct. Do you have the courage to do so?”

Chapter 1064 – The Bad Luck Dragon One

Chapter 1064 – The Bad Luck Dragon One

…

…

…

In this world, there was no good that came for no reason and also no evil that came for no reason. Although today was the first time that Mo Eversnow and Lin Ming had spoken together, they were two individuals that had been aware of the other's existence for 15 years now, and were linked together through the Magic Cube. Their fates could be said to be inexorably linked together.

Without Mo Eversnow, Lin Ming would not have been able to use the Magic Cube even if he obtained it, and thus he wouldn't have his present achievements.

Without Lin Ming, it was unknown just when Mo Eversnow would have ever recovered her consciousness. If someone weak tried to help her, it would be impossible for them to find enough blood essence to bring her back. But if it were someone strong, they might try to delve into the secrets of the Magic Cube themselves and take it for their own. They could even lock down the defenseless Mu Eversnow and use her to refine a magic weapon or pill. After all, she was an unrivalled genius who had once been a half-step World King, and her divine soul was extremely valuable. Moreover, there were many special characteristics about her soul.

Only someone like Lin Ming, whom she had raised for all this time, had the possibility of helping her. Through these 15 years of observing him, she understood his behavior and personality. He was fair and courageous, and knew to repay debts. She could only trust in someone like him.

However, wanting to find someone like Lin Ming was easier said than done.

Thus, Mo Eversnow and Lin Ming's accidental encounter could be called Lin Ming's luck and also Mo Eversnow's luck.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then said, "Miss Mo, the reason I can come this far today is your kindness. Whether it is revenge or reforming your mortal body, I will do my best to help you. Much less, you are also directing me in my dual body and energy cultivation, so how could I possibly refuse you?"

As Lin Ming spoke, all of this was based on his own view of morality and justice; he simply didn't care about Tian Mingzi's boundary or just what background he had. It was as if he hadn't committed to taking revenge on a World King, but rather was speaking about some insignificant character.

"You're quite confident in yourself! However, you indeed have the capital to be confident. In the Magic Cube, I've already seen everything happening to you. With your current talent and also the supreme dragon bone, you now have the qualifications to aspire to the throne of a World King. But, even that isn't enough! This is because you are tens of thousands of years behind Tian Mingzi, and also… in terms of talent, the Tian Mingzi of the past also stood out amongst all chosen prides of heaven!

"As for me, before I reform my mortal body, my strength will be extremely limited. I cannot use true essence and can only rely on my battle spirit and Laws to fight. At most I can contend with the weakest of Divine Lord realm martial artists."

In the past, when Mo Eversnow was at her highest point she had only been a half-step World King. Moreover, a great portion of her strength originated from her dual body and energy cultivation. Now that she had no body and she was unable to channel true essence, she was only able to rely on her will and use of Laws to attack. With all of her losses, it was already extraordinary that she could compare with a Divine Lord powerhouse.

As for the reason why Mo Eversnow was able to easily kill the Asura King just now, that was because the Asura King's highest level of strength was only equal to a Divine Transformation genius. Then, the Asura King had also suffered serious injuries and was in its weakest state due to having crossed its demonic tribulation. When it died, its strength was only comparable to the most ordinary and weak of Divine Transformation martial artists, thus why Mo Eversnow was able to kill it with such ease.

Lin Ming nodded. He had an approximate idea of how the situation was. To restore Mo Eversnow's physical body was easier said than done. Seizing another person's body was naturally a bad idea. This was because if one's soul and body didn't match up, then it would be difficult to amount to anything. As for reforming her own flesh and blood, that was far more difficult.

Mo Eversnow said, "Your greatest advantage is that no one knows of you. Tian Mingzi likely thinks that I have died already. I will slowly help you complete the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and pull out your greatest strength and potential. When I trained in dual body and energy cultivation, I collected a great deal of knowledge and experience. Not just that, but before the Verdant Feather Holy Lands was destroyed, I left behind some resources and hid them very well. Only I can access these resources. I was originally planning to save them to attack the World King realm and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, but now I no longer have a need for them. I will give you these resources to help you impact the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. Then, once you reach the Divine Lord realm, your strength will be heaven-shaking!"

Mo Eversnow's words caused Lin Ming's heart to move. Resources left over from the Verdant Feather Holy Lands!

It was unknown just what sort of heavenly materials were included in that. Their value and preciousness could be imagined!

However, even Mo Eversnow hadn't been able to open the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace; one could see from this just how difficult it was. Fairy Feng and Huo Violentstone had both told him that after the Laws of the world changed, trying to reach the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was the same as completely defying the will of the heavens. And now, it seemed that such words were not an exaggeration. Wanting to dual cultivate in body and energy was just too difficult!

Someone like Mu Eversnow could truly be called a heaven-defying genius.

Lin Ming said, “Miss Mo, did you only complete the Eight Inner Hidden Gates?”

“I completed the Eight Inner Hidden Gates extremely early on. Then, I used 1000 years to accumulate the resources and strength I needed to impact the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. It should be said that I had already taken a step into the threshold of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. As long as I had another 100 years I would have been successful. But alas, I fell short!”

As Mo Eversnow spoke to here, she sighed. Lin Ming was left staring back, nonplussed.

He had no idea just what sort of monstrous genius Mo Eversnow had been in the past. Listening to the meaning behind her words, if it weren’t for the fact that she had to expend a massive amount of time and energy cultivating the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, she would have already become a World King!

If she had succeeded, then the war of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands 50,000 years ago might have been another scene altogether.

“Very well. Let us leave first. We can continue discussing these matters in the future.”

Mo Eversnow said as she prepared to leave the sea of magma. But, Lin Ming dithered for a bit before saying, “Miss Mo, I have been thinking about how today’s matters will end... the four great clans have lost far too many geniuses, and the dragon bone is also in my possession. If we leave the God Beast Mystic Realm, we will inevitably have to pass through the four God Beast Clans’ transmission array. It is definitely impossible to conceal the truth of the dragon bone....and there is also Yan Littlemoon...”

As Lin Ming saw Mo Eversnow appear with Yan Littlemoon’s body, he figured that she should be okay. But, he was still a bit unsure.

And there was also the supreme dragon bone. That was far too important. The four clans had sacrificed so many people for the supreme dragon bone, so how could they resign themselves to allowing Lin Ming to have sole possession of it? The Ancient Dragon Clan might even represent the other clans to force the Ancient Phoenix Clan with all sorts of reasons, and might even have some of their genius disciples accuse Lin Ming of doing unsavory things so that he would be forced to share the dragon bone.

And let alone the other three God Beast Clans, would the Ancient Phoenix Clan sit idly by and allow Lin Ming to keep the dragon bone by himself? Even if the Huo Family supported him, there was still the Xiao Family and the Huang Family. Both of those families had lost a great deal of people. With so many sacrifices, how could they allow Lin Ming to eat up all the advantages by himself?

As for Lin Ming absorbing the entire supreme dragon bone now, that was simply unrealistic. With Lin Ming's current cultivation, wanting to swallow up this supreme dragon bone was too difficult. In simpler terms – he couldn't absorb it; this was a 1000 foot dragon bone!

Even if he could absorb the entire dragon bone, he would be standing on top of the wave of attention after it was discovered when he left this mystic realm. There were many matters that he simply wasn't able to explain. If too many issues got involved and some of his secrets were exposed, then the consequences would be calamitous.

Mo Eversnow said, "Yan Littlemoon's divine soul has been sealed by me. As long as it is me occupying this body then no harm shall come to her. As for her memories, I can wipe away any portion I wish. I can make it so that she only remembers you fleeing the battlefield with her. As for the supreme dragon bone and the Asura King pill, that is even easier. Don't be in a hurry and absorb them now to prevent anyone from noticing anything. Then you can store them in the Magic Cube space. Not even a World King will be able to discover anything strange with you. Once you return to the Ancient Phoenix Clan, look for any chance you can to leave and go adventuring. At that time, you can absorb the supreme dragon bone and I can also lead you to find the resources I left behind in the past. I will have you reach the Divine

Sea in a single go. Then, after you reach the Divine Sea, you can hide your aura in your own minor dimension. It will be extremely difficult for anyone to probe into you.”

As Mo Eversnow spoke, Lin Ming was floored. “The Magic Cube space can store items?”

“Yes. The Magic Cube is unfathomable; it simply doesn’t seem like something that should exist in this universe. Its inner space is something that not even a World King can understand or see through.”

“That’s great.” Lin Ming let out a sigh of relief, overjoyed. Ever since he stole away the supreme dragon bone he had been worrying about how to bring it out with him, but now everything was resolved.

“Let’s go then.”

As Lin Ming just spoke, Mo Eversnow’s eyebrow pricked up. “Hmm? Hold on. Someone has come down here. Just a single person. It should be a disciple of the Ancient Dragon Clan…”

Mo Eversnow’s divine sense was remarkably powerful. Even in this sea of magma, with the countless waves of heat and energy causing disturbance to the senses, she could still easily investigate everything within the range of 1000 miles without any problems at all.

“Mm? Ancient Dragon Clan?” Lin Ming paused. If there was only one person, then it was likely Dragon One!

....

Lin Ming’s thoughts were correct. The one who came down here was indeed Dragon One.

Dragon One wasn’t adept in Earth Laws or Fire Laws. The only reason he had been able to come down this far was entirely due to his deep cultivation.

Originally, with the Asura King opening the road for him, he was able to save his strength. But just before he reached the magma sea, a terrifying explosion buried him alive. A massive pressure pushed down on him right afterwards. All the shattered rock and soil collapsing on him nearly caused him to vomit blood.

At that time, Dragon One nearly gave up. But, for this supreme dragon bone he had burnt 20% of his blood essence, consumed two Nine Revolving Dragon Pills, and had even personally slaughtered many of his junior-apprentice brothers. The price he paid was simply too great. If he couldn't obtain the dragon bone then his fate once he returned to the clan would be beyond miserable! Just the crime of killing his fellow clansmen was nearly unpardonable.

He no longer had a choice to retreat. He could only succeed; he could not be defeated here!

But whether it was the Asura King or the mysterious existence that stole away the dragon bone, Dragon One had to admit that he wasn't either of their matches. He only had one method of success, and that was to take advantage of the chaos and profit. When the Asura King and the unknown existence were mutually wounded in their battle, he would sneak in and steal away the supreme dragon bone.

Thus, Dragon One was extremely careful as he moved forwards. He concealed his entire aura. In the Ancient Dragon Clan, there was a branch called the Dragon Turtle Branch. The Dragon Turtle was also known as the Bixi, Lord of the Underground. It was one of the Nine Sons of the Dragon and had the head of a dragon and the body of a turtle. And, Dragon One just happened to have a massive amount of the Dragon Turtle God Beast's bloodline in his body. With this bloodline he was able to use a type of turtle hiding technique called the Turtle Shrinking Art. It was an extremely powerful cloaking-type martial skill. Even an ordinary Divine Lord realm powerhouse would have difficulty discovering Dragon One's location. As for the Asura King, it wasn't at the Divine Lord realm so it certainly couldn't discover him. This was also the greatest reason why Dragon One was willing to risk his life and come down here to steal away the dragon bone.

However, what he never imagined was that he would encounter Mo Eversnow, someone whose divine sense was hundreds, if not thousands of times sharper than a Divine Lord realm powerhouse's.

It could only be said that when people have a stroke of bad luck, they could scald themselves to death just by drinking cold water.

Chapter 1065 – The Wicked Cannot Be Saved From Their Sins

Chapter 1065 – The Wicked Cannot Be Saved From Their Sins

…

…

…

In the surging flows of magma, the passive Dragon One was like a tiny scurrying mouse. His protective true essence was lowered to the weakest state possible, and he didn't produce the slightest sound or energy fluctuation as he went forwards. Even the red light of the magma twisted around him, causing him to be hidden in a constant blind spot.

The Turtle Shrinking Art was truly the number one concealment technique of the Ancient Dragon Clan. It wasn't much worse than Lin Ming's own grandmist space.

"I felt some intense true essence fluctuations before now. That should be an indication that the fight was very intense, but not they've slowed down and nearly stopped. I have no idea what the situation is like right now. That unknown existence must be weaker than the Asura King, otherwise it wouldn't have hidden around waiting for its chance in the chaos. I estimate that its strength is much weaker than the combined strength of my Ancient Dragon Clan's 36 disciples, much less something like the Asura King! However, since it decided to escape downwards and drill into the ground, that must mean that it has some sort of advantage in this environment where it complements the Laws here better. Since this is its own battleground, it must have some chance of contending with the wounded Asura King. If both of them have managed to wound each other then that's my chance!"

All sorts of thoughts passed through Dragon One's mind. There were definitely certain parts of his analysis that were correct, but no matter how much he speculated, his guesses would never have wandered over to Lin Ming.

Dragon One grit his teeth and ruthlessly swallowed down the third Nine Revolving Dragon Pill. This pill was a wondrous miracle pill meant to save his life. However, it wasn't instant; it was a slow process that required time. If the healing process of the pill was interrupted, it would cause a great deal of the medicinal efficacy to fade away. When Dragon One had swallowed two of these pills, he had been injured afterwards, causing their effects to be majorly weakened.

"I've already restored about 60% of my strength. If I burn another 10% of my blood essence, I can restore myself to my peak condition and fight with everything I have! However, the Asura King has already absorbed the Azure Dragon divine bone marrow, so its resilience and recovery ability is beyond extraordinary. I must be extra careful… mm? What's that? Someone's here?"

Dragon One was shocked and he immediately focused all his strength on the Turtle Shrinking Art and hid himself. After hiding all of his aura fluctuations, he completely blended in with the magma around him.

However, Dragon One's immediate reaction fell into Mo Eversnow's pupils where it was reflected for Lin Ming to see. Lin Ming felt as if Dragon One was nothing but a little mouse that was acting slightly cautious; it was a bit funny.

"How do you want to deal with him?" Mo Eversnow asked. Although she had used the words 'deal with him', the truth was that the moment she spoke, the change in the air around her already indicated her intentions. Although Mo Eversnow was as lofty and high as a fairy from heaven, her heart was ruthless and decisive when it came to killing off any troubles that arose.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. Facing Dragon One this time, he certainly wouldn't speak of anything like kindness or benevolence.

Earlier, if it hadn't been for the disciples of the other God Beast Clans arriving, Dragon One would have already tried to kill Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon. Moreover, this person was too conniving and cruel. Although he seemed like an amiable and compassionate elder senior-apprentice brother on the surface, the truth was that he was sadistic and merciless, bold and with overly great ambitions. Dragon One was the type that would resort to any despicable method to achieve his own personal goals. This sort of person was the same as a rabid tiger and also a deadly viper; leaving him in this world would only mean disaster, and he might even try to bite Lin Ming in the future. After all, the past conflict had been remembered by Dragon One. Although Dragon One might say he wouldn't bear a grudge, he would likely wait for some prime opportunity in the future to enact his revenge.

Lin Ming had already learnt his lesson with Ouyang Boyan.

After combining all of these reasons, Lin Ming certainly didn't have any intentions of letting Dragon One go.

When cutting the weeds, he had to tear out the roots.

Lin Ming said, "I would like to ask Miss Mo to assist in killing him. My current condition is only 10% of my peak state. Even if Dragon One is exhausted, I am still not his match. Since I've already stepped on his face, I might as well crush him to death in the meantime!"

"Good, that's also my intent." Mo Eversnow waved her hand and a ray of bright light wrapped around Lin Ming. Both of them flew straight towards Dragon One.

………..

"Mm? They've discovered me!? That's impossible!!" Dragon One frowned. He had 120% confidence in his Turtle Shrinking Art. Unless one had a Divine Lord realm cultivation, it was impossible to discover him.

"Eh… it isn't the Asura King! Their true essence fluctuations are very weak… both of them are at the seventh stage of Life Destruction? Life Destruction realm… humans! They must be disciples of the other three clans, but how would they appear here? Were they also planning to try and profit in the chaos?”

As Dragon One realized this, he immediately became incensed. These bastards actually dared to come and steal food from the tiger’s mouth and pass his own bottom line! The supreme dragon bone was something he must possess at all costs. If these people tried to steal it away from him, that was the same as trying to take his own life!

“If you were Xiao Ping, Jiang Bai, or Argent Gale then I might fear you a bit because I would worry that you would alert the Asura King. But since it’s just you two seventh stage Life Destruction nobodies, I will just solve both of you right here lest you ruin my work.”

As Dragon One thought to here, a ferocious light flashed on his face. He didn’t retreat and instead flew straight towards Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow.

He soon discovered that there were only two people, a young man and woman, both wearing garb of the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

“Lin Ming! Yan Littlemoon! So it was you two!” Dragon One didn’t discover anything strange about ‘Yan Littlemoon’. This was because Mo Eversnow had completely adapted to Yan Littlemoon’s body and the terrifying aura she revealed before was no longer as evident. Moreover, Dragon One had already seen Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon travelling together. And now, seeing them appear together, no matter how rich his imagination was he wouldn’t ever think that the Yan Littlemoon in front of him was no longer the Yan Littlemoon of the past.

Dragon One no longer hid his appearance. He only hid his aura and appeared right in front of Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow. Even though Lin Ming could clearly see Dragon One in front of him, he still wasn’t able to find him with his divine sense! Lin Ming couldn’t help but praise this type of exquisite camouflage technique.

“I never thought I’d bump into the two of you here. You two really have some ability. Not only did you fellows manage to live through the chaos of that battle, but you even have the guts to chase me down here!” Dragon One’s eyes swept over Lin Ming before focusing on Yan Littlemoon. A sinister smile crept over his face. Before, he had been continually rolled over by the Asura King, now he got to experience rolling over others himself. “Hehe, since you’ve come, you two can forget about leaving. Yan Littlemoon, I really must thank you. You personally delivered to me your perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline and primordial yin! I will kindly accept your good intentions. Since ancient times, the union of a dragon and phoenix has always been an auspicious sign. Pillaging all of your energy will be a great benefit to me!”

In truth, Dragon One himself had a perfect Dragon Clan bloodline, but his primordial yang was long gone. Even if it wasn’t, the bloodline strength he gave away wouldn’t be too much. Moreover, Dragon One was the aggressor in this situation. As long as he locked in his own yang essence and used special techniques designed to ravage others and steal away their primordial yin, the advantages he obtained would be far greater than the negligible dragon bloodline he would lose.

As Lin Ming heard Dragon One speak, he shivered. His gaze on Dragon One became the same as if he were looking at a dead man walking. Although Dragon One’s words were aimed at Yan Littlemoon, Mo Eversnow was currently occupying her body. Dragon One’s words were the same as profaning Mo Eversnow.

Wasn’t that just asking to die?

“Really, the wicked cannot be saved from their sins.” Lin Ming whispered to himself. But at this time, Dragon One already moved.

“I’ll send you off first!” Dragon One shouted out and thrust his palm forwards. Behind him, the phantom of a dragon turtle appeared. This dragon turtle had four thick limbs and bore a stone tablet on its shell. It gave off an incomparably heavy and solemn feeling, as if it were shouldering the stars.

And in front of this dragon turtle was also a five-clawed golden dragon, its entire body shining with a golden light, making all who saw it be blinded by the brightness!

This Dragon One actually had a mixed bloodline. He had a dual bloodline strength originating from both the dragon turtle and the five-clawed golden dragon. This was also the reason why the Ancient Dragon Clan martial artists were so powerful. It was because the dragon race was great and varied, and thus there was more bloodline diversity. By mixing these together, the martial artists of the Ancient Dragon Clan were able to obtain greater strength and more advantages.

Dragon One punched out with his fists, causing the magma to roil around him. But at this time, Mo Eversnow's eyes flashed with a chilling light!

"Break."

Lightly speaking this word, Mo Eversnow's voice regained that feeling of coldhearted indifference, as heartless and emotionless as the Great Dao itself!

This sonic wave carried with it the power of Mo Eversnow's will. It smashed against Dragon One's fist light. Without a single sound, Dragon One's fist light seemed as if it were swallowed up into a black hole, vanishing without a trace!

"Mm?"

Shock and surprise flashed through Dragon One's face. "How...!"

He was floored in that moment. This aura, this feeling, this was absolutely not something that the seventh stage Life Destruction Yan Littlemoon could possess!

In that split second, Dragon One no longer had time to think about all this. All he saw was Yan Littlemoon raise her hand and flick a finger at him. Although she wasn't fast, her movements contained the profound mysteries of the Time Laws. In just this finger flick, time seemed to rapidly pass before his eyes; it was impossible for Dragon One to avoid it.

What Mo Eversnow used was still Yan Littlemoon's seventh stage Life Destruction true essence. But underneath the power of her battle spirit, it had condensed to an unimaginable degree. The lethality of this true essence had reached countless times what Yan Littlemoon could ever hope to accomplish.

A beam of light passed through the air, beautiful and radiant. But, Dragon One could feel a thick aura of death coming from it!

“This light will kill me!”

This idea suddenly appeared in Dragon One’s mind, making him feel as if his soul had crashed into an icy lake!

To an extreme talent like him, death was absolutely the most terrifying matter!

“Hahh!”

In that life or death moment, Dragon One shouted out and punched at the beam of light. However, with a light popping sound, Dragon One’s fist was directly penetrated by that light! That beam of light shot back out of his fist, bringing with it a rain of blood as it continued towards Dragon One’s head!

All of this happened in an extremely brief period. But as this scene fell into Dragon One’s eyes, this brief moment felt as if it had been extended to infinity. This was also the effect of Mo Eversnow’s Time Laws. For what seemed like countless years, Dragon One could clearly feel the god of death approach him a single step at a time. This sort of experience could drive anyone mad!

Su!

The shining beam of light pierced through the point between Dragon One’s eyes!

A fatal hole appeared in Dragon One’s head, gushing with blood. His eyes widened, filled with disbelief and unwillingness.

“You… aren’t… Yan…Littlemoon?”

Dragon One opened his mouth to say. But, with his brain twisted apart, his words came out completely distorted.

Mo Eversnow waved her jade-like finger and Dragon One’s body shook before exploding into a fog of blood. His blood essence was completely taken away by Mo Eversnow.

Woosh!

Dragon One’s spatial ring also flew out and fell into Lin Ming’s hand. As Lin Ming swept through it with his mind, he was impressed. The grade of this ring was no lower than that of the Extreme Violet Ring, and there were also countless resources piled up inside.

This was the spatial ring of the Ancient Dragon Clan’s top number one junior disciple!

Chapter 1066 – Treasures of the Dead

Chapter 1066 – Treasures of the Dead

…

…

…

Lin Ming hadn't had enough time to explore the specific inventory within the spatial ring when all of Dragon One's blood essence was formed into a blood bead underneath the towing of Mo Eversnow's thoughts.

Once a human martial artist absorbed the blood of a God Beast, it could no longer be purified and separated anymore. When a human absorbed the blood of a Dragon God Beast, it would directly fuse into that person's bloodline. As for that person's flesh and blood, it would be transformed, completely assimilating the dragon blood.

However, the dragon blood that the Asura King absorbed was different. The Asura King was a higher form of a mystic realm demon. The core of its existence was a being of pure energy. Thus, the quality of the dragon blood wouldn't be affected, nor would it assimilate the dragon blood.

In fact, the Asura King actually didn't absorb the dragon blood. And, after it died, its energy form could also be absorbed by a martial artist. If it had absorbed the dragon blood then that dragon blood would have melted and become one with the martial artist's blood vitality.

Dragon blood was a one-time use treasure for a martial artist. This was also reasonable. Otherwise, the bloodline strength within the four God Beast Clans could be recycled without end.

Although this was so, there were still some martial artists with a very deep cultivation, or some genius disciples with a perfect God Beast bloodline, that had an extremely pure blood essence. Their blood essence would contain the source strength of a God Beast and had a similar effect to a God Beast's blood.

For instance, when Lin Ming obtained the Phoenix Blood Spear from Saint Artifact Pavilion, he had obtained the source strength left behind by the old Palace Master. Although this source strength couldn't compare to the richness of the old Palace Master's bloodline when he was alive, it was still extremely precious to a lower level disciple

Dragon One had the perfect Dragon Clan bloodline. Thus, Mo Eversnow also conveniently took away his blood essence.

This blood essence finally fully condensed into a shimmering red blood bead that fell into Lin Ming's palm.

Lin Ming already had the supreme dragon bone, and there was still a portion of the bone marrow blood remaining. In addition, there was also the blood marrow left behind by the Asura King; there was a bit over half of the original total left over. That was countless times more valuable than this blood bead. Even so, Lin Ming still planned to absorb this blood bead. This was because the only dragon bloodline that Lin Ming had obtained came from the drop of reverse scale blood that he had wasted 99% of. What he needed now was some lower level dragon blood to build a foundation for him. That would allow him to absorb the dragon marrow blood with the greatest efficiency.

Moreover, what Lin Ming had obtained was the bone of an Azure Dragon. The bone of an Azure Dragon itself contained the Concept of Endlessness as well as an extremely powerful resilience and regenerative ability.

As for Dragon One's bloodline, that was the bloodline of a Dragon Turtle and a Five-clawed Golden Dragon. A Dragon Turtle excelled in its amazing defensive abilities, and the Five-clawed Golden Dragon was for fast and fierce attacks. Both of them had different Laws that followed them. It would always be best to fill in the blanks whenever possible.

Then, Lin Ming immersed his sense into Dragon One's spatial ring.

As Lin Ming searched through the spatial ring, he sighed in praise. This Dragon One clearly came from a distinguished noble family of the Ancient Dragon Clan. He was near-certain that it was a family like the Huo Family or Xiao Family. This was a super family of their clan, and the Ancient Dragon Clan was itself 10 times greater than the Ancient Phoenix Clan to begin with. A super family of the Ancient Dragon Clan should have a much deeper background than the Huo and Xiao Families.

As he opened Dragon One's belongings, first were the violet sun stones. There were around 90 million violet sun stones. Violet sun stones were a common energy stone used in the Divine Realm. They were required to activate and maintain arrays, drive spirit boats, stimulate powerful magic weapons, and had all sorts of other uses. Because of this, violet sun stones were one of the most common currencies of the Divine Realm. Although Lin Ming's net worth wasn't low, he didn't actually have many violet sun stones.

Besides violet sun stones, there was also a massive number of saint artifacts and pills. The worst of the saint artifacts were still high-grade saint artifacts. There were even two top grade saint artifacts. When combined with the ones that Dragon One had been wearing, there was a total of five!

These top grade saint artifacts were a pair of gloves, a vestment, a pill furnace, a necklace, and a pair of shoes.

Dragon One's combat method was extremely rare: he actually fought with his fists. An Ancient Dragon Clan disciple would normally use a spear. As they said, saber like tiger, spear like dragon; only a spear could display the greatest might of the Ancient Dragon Clan's cultivation methods.

However, Dragon One's weapon choice should have been related to his Dragon Turtle bloodline. A Dragon Turtle had an incomparably hard body and their strength was without limit. So, using fists in this situation wasn't a bad idea.

“A disciple of a distinguished family is indeed wealthy. Everything that Dragon One wore is a top grade saint artifact, and they are even top grade saint artifacts that approach the existence of transcendent saint artifacts!”

Of these saint artifacts, the one Lin Ming valued the most was the top grade saint artifact vestment, as well as the top grade saint artifact pill furnace.

“Dragonscale Robes! Eightsplit Heaven Furnace! Good heavens, these two items actually have the source strength of an old Elder from the Ancient Dragon Clan. Their quality is no lower than the Phoenix Blood Spear’s!”

Lin Ming’s robe and pill furnace were only ordinary high-grade saint artifacts he won from Huo Yanguang, so how could they compare with Dragon One’s! With this robe and pill furnace, Lin Ming’s defensive power and alchemical ability would increase by a great deal.

Mentioning alchemy technique, because Lin Ming had been busy cultivating, he actually hadn’t had time to train his alchemy skills, thus they had fallen behind. Luckily, now that Mo Eversnow had awakened she should be able to help him with his alchemy.

There was also that top grade saint artifact necklace. Although the quality was a bit lower, it was still a top grade saint artifact after all. And, an accessory-type saint artifact was much rarer than armor and weapon types.

“Mm… it’s mainly used to defend against soul and will attacks.” Lin Ming concluded after investigating the necklace a bit.

Generally speaking, accessory-type treasures had a much less extravagant effect than weapons, armors, and pill furnaces. But, their value was actually much higher, because the difficulty in making them was also that much higher.

Besides saint artifacts, there were also many pills that Lin Ming glanced over. Most of them were for healing wounds, recovery, or curing poisons.

“Mm? This is…”

Lin Ming pulled out a longan-sized pill from an exquisite wood spirit jade box. This pill was deep green like jade and had an incomparably rich medicinal fragrance to it. Lin Ming didn't know that this was the Nine Revolving Dragon Pill of the Ancient Dragon Clan. Dragon One had brought four with him, but now there was only one.

Mo Eversnow's thoughts stirred and she added in, "Lin Ming, this is an extremely wonderful healing pill. It will have the best effect when used on martial artists below the Divine Transformation realm. It can probably heal even someone on the verge of death back to 80-90% of their peak combat strength in a quarter hour.

"Oh?"

Lin Ming was startled. If even Mo Eversnow said this was an extremely good medicine, then its effects could be imagined.

After putting away all of the pills and saint artifacts, Lin Ming suddenly discovered that there were also several corpses in Dragon One's spatial ring. Looking at their clothes, they were clearly disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan, and they had also died under the hands of the Asura King.

Lin Ming didn't believe that Dragon One was so kind-hearted to gather up the bodies of his fellow disciples that had died to bury them later. The greatest possibility was that Dragon One had gathered their corpses in order to extract and burn their blood essence at some critical moment.

"This Dragon One is far too ruthless and cruel. Killing him is doing a favor for all the martial artists of the Divine Realm!"

Since Dragon One brought so many corpses with him, Lin Ming wouldn't be polite either. He took all of their spatial rings.

Like this, he gained many more saint artifacts, pills, as well as several bottles of dragon blood.

Lin Ming discovered that these Ancient Dragon Clan disciples all brought a great deal of dragon blood with them. There was ordinary dragon blood and even high quality dragon blood. Normally speaking, the disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan wouldn't save up dragon blood, they would absorb it if given the chance. But, these disciples that entered the God Beast Mystic Realm were faced with immense dangers from all sides. If they encountered something strange and were somehow deeply injured, then they would be able to use this dragon blood to quickly recover. Or, they might come across some great lucky chance and would need to immediately make a breakthrough. If they absorbed this dragon blood, it would make their breakthrough smoother and more thorough.

Thus, they were able to prepare for a number of exotic situations by gathering a massive amount of dragon blood. However, all of their efforts were taken in by Lin Ming.

"I have the supreme dragon bone as well as Dragon One's source blood essence. This other dragon blood can be left behind for Yan Littlemoon. Dragons and phoenixes together have always been a good sign. The dragon bloodline will be an enormous advantage for her. Moreover, this dragon blood won't leave behind any signs from Dragon One or the others. It won't be a problem for her to absorb it."

This time, Lin Ming had indeed obtained a heaven-shaking advantage, but Yan Littlemoon had only managed to obtain a few pieces of black coral; it was indeed a sad harvest. Then again, when Mo Eversnow had saved him, she had relied on using Yan Littlemoon's body to do so. From this alone, Yan Littlemoon had helped him a great deal. The dragon blood from the spatial rings of these people could be considered as her compensation.

"Alright. Let's leave now."

Lin Ming organized everything. With the technique that Mo Eversnow taught him, he put everything that he could into the Magic Cube space to avoid unnecessary trouble.

At this time, Mo Eversnow guided Lin Ming into the space of the Magic Cube. This was already the seventh time that Lin Ming had entered the Magic Cube space. He never imagined he would be re-entering under such circumstances.

In the past, when Lin Ming entered the Magic Cube space, besides the glittering memory fragments that shined like countless stars, everything else was covered in a thick gray fog, blocking his sight. But as he entered this time, that fog had actually dispersed. Now, he could see that behind that fog was actually a vast and boundless expanse of starry sky.

The space within the Magic Cube was as broad and vast as the universe itself.

Lin Ming sighed with emotion. Then, as he looked ahead he could see that the 1000 foot supreme dragon bone was quietly floating in space, emitting a vast sublime aura. Most of the remaining blood marrow in the dragon bone had been absorbed by Mo Eversnow. She had used that to regain consciousness.

However, the dragon bone itself hadn't been reduced at all. To Lin Ming, the dragon bone was even more precious than the blood marrow. It could be used to directly enhance his body and lay a solid foundation so that he could break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace in the future.

At this time, Mo Eversnow turned into a wisp of white light that departed Yan Littlemoon's body and shot into the Magic Cube space.

The soul form of Mo Eversnow that stood in front of Lin Ming was her true form.

She was dressed in pure white, and her clothes flowed down the contours of her body like streams of water. Her curved eyebrows, her snow-white skin, her slender and curvy figure, her proud and tall form… she actually wasn't much shorter than Lin Ming was.

Her body fused into the very space around her, and her enchanting eyes seemed to contain the light of galaxies within them. From her head to her toes, every inch of her being exuded an inviolable and sacred flavor, a goddess descended from the highest heavens, an enthralling messiah. Just by standing still, the space around her seemed to be purified.

This was Mo Eversnow's original appearance. She had an immaculate and sacrosanct air about her that Yan Littlemoon could never hope to attain, as if she were the manifestation of etherealness itself'.

Lin Ming stared at her in a stunned daze, nearly unable to stop his jaw from dropping. The Mo Eversnow that existed in reality was far more dazzling and appealing than anything he remembering seeing in his dreams. He stood there, speechless for some time.

Chapter 1067 – Leaving the Mystic Realm

Chapter 1067 – Leaving the Mystic Realm

…

…

…

“Yan Littlemoon’s memories of this have all been erased by me. We may leave now. If I don’t have a body to possess, then my combat strength will be much lower than it is now. You will have to rely on yourself in the future.”

Mo Eversnow softly said. In terms of the soul, she was absolutely a peak master. Otherwise, doing something as reckless as erasing someone’s memories or possessing their body might cause damage to their soul. But in Mo Eversnow’s hands, there was no danger of any of that happening.

“Mm, I understand.” Lin Ming also didn’t plan to rely on Mo Eversnow to help him fight. What he could truly rely on in the end was his own strength.

“That’s right, concerning your grandmist space and the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower, in the future I will teach you an auxiliary cultivation method. Not only will it increase your strength, but when you use martial skills, this cultivation method will activate and it will conceal special energy fluctuations. Even if someone has seen the grandmist space with their own eyes, it will be impossible for them to recognize it. Moreover, those that have seen the grandmist space are far too few. Those that have are either Empyreans or World Kings. And even amongst World Kings, only a truly small minority of them have been able to witness the grandmist space with their own eyes. In the past, Empyrean Primordius was an extremely secretive character.”

As Mo Eversnow spoke, Lin Ming was overjoyed. Lin Ming truly did have a great headache over the grandmist space. A great portion of his combat strength relied on the grandmist space, but on the other hand he was also afraid that some wondrous character would be able to discern clues from it. If that happened then he would truly be in danger. After all, there were too many variables when it came to something like a transcendent divine might.

Thus, when Lin Ming fought others, he wasn't able to utilize grandmist space in its purest form. If he had some special method to hide the grandmist space's energy fluctuations then he would be much better off. He wouldn't need to be so cautious and timid about his combat methods in the future.

Like this, Lin Ming brought Yan Littlemoon and left the sea of magma underneath the mystic realm. He deliberately chose another route to leave through. When Lin Ming finally emerged from the ground, he felt the pressure on him reduce by a great deal. He let out a deep breath, his tight nerves finally relaxing.

"It's over. This could be called a full harvest!"

Lin Ming said with zest. And at this time, he could feel that next to him, Yan Littlemoon's eyelids moved. She was finally regaining consciousness.

"No..."

Yan Littlemoon rubbed her own forehead, her mind a bit pained and fuzzy.

"Mm? Lin Ming..." Yan Littlemoon was stunned as she first opened her eyes and saw Lin Ming. Then, she twisted her eyebrows together as if she were trying strenuously to recall something. She remembered that after the 100,000 mystic realm demons attacked, Lin Ming had received her into his Extreme Violet Ring. But, she didn't know what happened after that which had left her unconscious.

"You've woken up. I ran into a 20,000 year cultivation mystic realm demon during the chaos and my ring was destroyed in the process. During the destructive space vortex, you were knocked unconscious by the mystic realm demon."

Lin Ming had already thought of the words to say. And, vague hints and conjured scenes were placed into Yan Littlemoon's mind by Mo Eversnow. As long as Lin Ming mentioned this, Yan Littlemoon would indeed have such an impression.

As for the Extreme Violet Ring, that had already been taken into the Magic Cube space by Lin Ming. Now he wore an ordinary spatial ring.

"I have to apologize… I've burdened you again."

Yan Littlemoon discovered that Lin Ming was in a bit of a pitiful state at the moment. Large holes had been burnt all over his clothes and he seemed exhausted. He had clearly fought through a violent battle just now.

As Yan Littlemoon realized that she would have been torn to shreds and eaten without even any bones left by that army of 100,000 mystic realm demons, she felt extremely grateful, but at the same time she also felt very guilty. She had done nothing to help, and had instead only added to his troubles. When the Extreme Violet Ring had broken, if it hadn't been for Lin Ming saving her from the space storm then he probably wouldn't look so miserable.

"Thank you…" Yan Littlemoon whispered.

Lin Ming shook his head and said, "It's no problem."

He continued, "Alright. We don't have much time until the God Beast Mystic Realm closes. Let's go and look a bit for some more lucky chances and prepare to leave."

"Mm, that sounds good." Yan Littlemoon quietly said.

After obtaining the supreme dragon bone, Lin Ming experienced several more situations. However, his harvests were much smaller. They were around the same as the black coral he had obtained before.

Like this, they continued all the way until the time within the mystic realm had run out. Each person was only allowed to stay within the God Beast Mystic Realm for 96 hours. Afterwards, they would all be transmitted away, regardless of where they were…

….

Ancient Dragon Clan – Celestial Dragon World.

On the small planet that the God Beast Mystic Realm transmission array was located at, many martial artists had gathered. Among these people were Elders of the four great clans and even Highest Elders.

These people had all come to greet and receive their returning disciples.

Normally, after the disciples of the four clans entered the God Beast Mystic Realm, they would return with some harvests. The best treasures amongst these would even tempt a Holy Lord. In this case, it was certainly safer to have an Elder come and escort them away.

And on the Ancient Phoenix Clan's side, the Elder who came was surprisingly Huo Violentstone.

"Haha, isn't that Elder Huo? Isn't this just a smelting trial for junior disciples? To think that even you would be bothered to personally come." On the Ancient Dragon Clan's side, a middle-aged man laughed as he spoke. Generally, this sort of trial wouldn't be enough to alarm someone on the level of a Highest Elder.

Huo Violentstone looked up at the man speaking and said, "There is a junior disciple that went in this time that I appreciate and am quite concerned about, so I thought that I would come and take a look since I'm free. Gold Evenmoon, didn't you personally come here too?"

"Hehe, is that disciple you're speaking of Lin Ming? I've already heard that in the Illusionary God Combat Array, he managed to complete the Thousand Slaughter, and even defeated Crimson Strifecloud in a vivid battle. Not bad. But what a pity, his cultivation is too low and there are many dangers in the God Beast Mystic Realm. I want to see just what sort of lucky chances Lin Ming managed to obtain this time, hahaha!"

Hearing Gold Evenmoon imply that Lin Ming would have encountered some catastrophic danger in the God Beast Mystic Realm, Huo Violentstone was a bit annoyed. He had never gotten along well with this Gold Evenmoon. This was also unavoidable. They came from different factions and certainly had to compete with each other. Moreover, Huo Violentstone had always been wild and hot-tempered in how he acted, so there were far too few people that were able to get along peacefully with him. "Humph, an extreme talent has a destiny that soars like a rainbow. Even if they encounter a calamitous situation filled with dangers, they can still manage to escape. It isn't easy for them to perish anywhere!"

"Haha, you may say that, but each one of those disciples that enter the God Beast Mystic Realm is an extreme genius of their era. Even so, there are still losses every time. This is an indisputable truth! Even though this is the first time for my Gold Family's top junior disciple Gold Skyedge to enter the God Beast Mystic Realm, he is still at the middle Divine Sea realm!" As Gold Evenmoon mentioned Gold Skyedge, he stroked his beard, a smug expression blooming on his face.

"Gold Skyedge…" Huo Violentstone echoed. Normally, geniuses of the Ancient Dragon Clan would be ranked on the Divine Fate List and then be called Dragon One, Dragon Two, or Dragon whatever, based on their corresponding rank. For him to suddenly hear this name, he really had no idea who it was. The four God Beast Clans had a new batch of junior disciples every 20 years or so anyway, and it was impossible for someone like Huo Violentstone to pay attention to all of them.

"It looks like you came this time for that little fellow called Gold Skyedge. I wonder what rank he is on the Divine Fate Decree?"

"Haha!" As Gold Evenmoon heard Huo Violentstone ask about Gold Skyedge of his own volition, he was extremely satisfied and proud. This was exactly what he hoped for. He said, "The first time that Skyedge participated in the Ancient Dragon smelting trial, he managed to take first place on the Divine Fate Decree. Luckily, he's managed to maintain that spot."

First place on the Divine Fate Decree? Huo Violentstone’s eyebrows arched up. That must be the so-called Dragon One then. This person must have quite the skill to be ranked that high. After all, there were just far too many competing disciples in the Ancient Dragon Clan.

Chapter 1068 – Marriage

Chapter 1068 – Marriage

…

…

…

As Huo Violentstone and Gold Evenmoon were speaking, the God Beast Mystic Realm's ancient transmission array began to violently oscillate. Ripples appeared on the surface, spreading out. It was finally time for the smelting trial disciples to return through the transmission array.

"It's time. I wonder just what the disciples who went in have managed to obtain." Gold Evenmoon smiled, and the other martial artists present also appeared expectant. Normally, no more than 10% of the smelting trial disciples that entered the God Beast Mystic Realm would perish. Compared to the harvests that could be obtained, this was a necessary sacrifice. After all, the four God Beast Clans had a new batch of junior disciples every 20 or so years. Although it was a massive loss for some to die, that wasn't enough to affect the destiny of their clans. Moreover, geniuses required life or death adventures in order to grow.

As the ripples became increasingly intense, the first wave of disciples appeared. These people all seemed glum and spiritless. Some disciples even had visible wounds. They had clearly had a hard time.

"Mm?"

Huo Violentstone's eyebrows shot up. An ominous premonition appeared in his heart. Gold Evenmoon also stood up.

Huo Violentstone asked, "Was there a change in the mystic realm?"

The Ancient Dragon Clan disciples looked over at Huo Violentstone with dazed eyes upon hearing this question. They looked at each other, clearly not knowing what to say.

"Was there a problem? Did several people die?"

All the Elders stood up, each of them deeply frowning. It was clear that some great event had occurred, otherwise it was impossible for so many people to be involved.

"Around 20 disciples died; we're not sure of the exact number." The Ancient Dragon Clan's Dragon Eight said in a stammering voice. Dragon Eight was a Divine Sea disciple and could also be considered a vice captain of the Ancient Dragon Clan squad that went in this time. Although Dragon One would receive the main punishment as the captain, Dragon One hadn't reappeared ever since he dove into the black swamp. They had sent an Iron Dragon Command but there still wasn't a reply. It was possible that Dragon One's fate was more perilous than they thought.

Thus, the responsibility of this debacle would be assumed by the several vice captains.

"20!"

Gold Evenmoon was immensely shocked. This was absolutely a great matter! Even Huo Violentstone became nervous. His eyes wandered over the crowd, looking for Lin Ming and Huo Clearheart. Especially Lin Ming – his cultivation was limited, so if something so massive happened, would he still be able to live?

"What happened in there?" Gold Evenmoon hurriedly asked.

"It was… an Asura King. We came across an Asura King as it was going through its demonic tribulation. But, the Asura King was just far too strong. All of the disciples gathered together to attack it, but we failed to kill it in the end. Instead, we suffered critical losses and it's likely that 60% of the disciples have died." Dragon 12 said with a dose of shame. He was also a vice captain of the squad, and this sort of defeat upon defeat was truly a loss of face. It proved just how incompetent the decision maker had been.

“What!? 60% of the disciples! Gold Skyedge!? Just what the hell kind of sickness came over him!? The clan gave him so many resources and treasures and had him take the lead, but he actually issued such a preposterous order!?”

Gold Evenmoon said in an apoplectic rage. The Gold Skyedge he referred to was naturally Dragon One. He didn’t think that anything would happen to Dragon One. Dragon One was the strongest out of all the disciples of the four clans who had gone in, so if anyone died it shouldn’t have been him.

“Dragon One, he…” As Dragon One was mentioned, Dragon Eight and Dragon 12 both had ugly complexions. They eyed each other, motioning for the other to speak. Finally, no one said anything at all.

Gold Evenmoon felt his heart thump in his chest. Dragon One was the greatest talent that his Gold Family had produced in the last 1000 years, and also the most outstanding disciple of the Ancient Dragon Clan for the last 200 years. Although Gold Evenmoon had been yelling at Dragon One just now, if there really had been something that happened to him, then the losses would be unimaginable!

Dragon Eight and Dragon 12 didn’t reply.

Then, a light flashed and more disciples were transmitted out.

Huo Violentstone swept an eye over the newcomers and simultaneously saw Lin Ming and Huo Clearheart arrive. In addition, even the weakest Yan Littlemoon was still perfectly safe. He finally let out a long breath of relief. Everything was okay!

“Coming back alive is great, it’s great!” Huo Violentstone said, his palms a bit sweaty. At this time, he didn’t care what harvests they had. It could be said that their coming back alive was the greatest harvest of all.

Gold Evenmoon also swept through the crowd. When he didn’t find Dragon One, his complexion became thoroughly gloomy. After several more breaths of time, a few more disciples were sent out. And at this time, the fluctuating ripples of the transmission array began to die down. This was proof that no more disciples would be passing through the transmission array.

In other words, Dragon One… had perished!

The most outstanding young genius that the Ancient Dragon Clan had produced in the last 200 years, who had high hopes of becoming a Holy Lord level character, whose cultivation reached the middle Divine Sea realm, whose strength far surpassed all others', and who also had multiple life saving methods, had actually died in the God Beast Mystic Realm!

This sort of matter had likely not occurred in the last 10,000 years!

"Who killed Dragon One!? Was it the Asura King!?"

Gold Evenmoon wildly growled, his eyes bloodshot. As he looked around he was like a wild beast. In his opinion, although Dragon One wasn't the Asura King's match, he should still have had the ability to escape, especially amongst so many other people. Could he have been tripped or stopped by someone, preventing him from escaping?

Lin Ming was watching from the side. He remained with an indifferent look on his face upon meeting Gold Evenmoon's bloodthirsty eyes. It was indeed far too difficult to find evidence of who killed who in the God Beast Mystic Realm, so he didn't fear anything at all. As for some special tracing mark being left on the killer, Lin Ming also asked Mo Eversnow to look over him and she assured him everything was okay. In this situation, as long as Lin Ming insisted it had nothing to do with him then everything would be okay.

Huo Violentstone also realized an accident had occurred to Dragon One. Normally, with his personality, he would have been gloating to Gold Evenmoon and even mocking him for several rounds, but with the Ancient Phoenix Clan also having lost several disciples, he wasn't in the mood to do so. He only lightly shook his head and turned to his disciples, saying, "What did you brats obtain?"

The remaining disciples all took out the treasures that they obtained in the mystic realm for Huo Violentstone to see. Yan Littlemoon and Lin Ming took out their black coral. The value of this treasure wasn't enough to make up for the cost of the violet sun stones for entering the God Beast Mystic Realm.

"Mm… your harvest is alright." Huo Violentstone nodded. He was satisfied enough that Lin Ming had emerged alive.

Xiao Ping, the one with the highest cultivation of the Ancient Phoenix Clan disciples, had actually found something quite valuable. It was a bit of phoenix guide grass. Phoenix guide grass was a type of spirit grass that grew alongside a phoenix. It was extremely valuable and was even useful for a Holy Lord.

By all reasoning, there hadn't been a God Beast in the God Beast Mystic Realm for countless hundreds of millions of years, so any phoenix guide grass should have already withered away. But, the phoenix guide grass that Xiao Ping found was actually sealed within a piece of wood spirit jade and preserved well, just like an insect in amber.

Xiao Ping's harvest was naturally praised by the Protectors behind Huo Violentstone. With their status, they had to flatter Xiao Ping. After all, Xiao Ping was destined to become a high level figure of the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

But Lin Ming looked on indifferently. This Xiao Ping was not any sort of good or righteous fellow. When the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan had been besieged by mystic realm demons and even some with 10,000 plus year cultivations, he had waited for the time when one of his teammates had died and then escaped by himself.

"Let's go. We're returning to the Ancient Phoenix Clan." Huo Violentstone lightly sighed. Although the losses were serious this time, this was also the fate of those that chose to walk down the road of martial arts. There was nothing else to say.

At this time, Lin Ming said with a true essence sound transmission, "Honorable Master, this disciple does not wish to return to the Phoenix Clan for the time being. I wish to go out and adventure a bit."

The supreme dragon bone could not be revealed, and absorbing it was also a very long and strenuous process. Lin Ming didn't plan on absorbing it within the clan. He wasn't even able to tell Huo Violentstone about it. After all, the supreme dragon bone was a type of treasure that even a World King would go mad with envy for. If Huo Violentstone found out, then even maintaining their current relationship would be more than he expected. It could be said that in some situations, not even the ties between a father and son could be trusted, much less the fact that he was not a direct descendant of the Huo Family to begin with.

"Mm? You want to go out and adventure?" Huo Violentstone frowned. There were indeed many disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan that went out adventuring to gain experience, but now wasn't a good time for Lin Ming to do so. "Lin Ming, you aren't even at the Divine Sea. Do you know how many masters exist in the Divine Realm? If you are not careful and stumble into some ordinary Divine Transformation realm martial artist, even they will be enough to kill you! Moreover, it is almost time for you to attack the eighth stage of Life Destruction. If you return to my Huo Family we can provide you with many resources to assist you, and there is even the Sacred Flame Testament which you can meditate over. There is even... well, I was planning on arranging a wedding for you. You two can be considered a young golden couple, perfectly suited for each other. A marriage like this is definitely a good thing!"

As Huo Violentstone spoke to here, he inadvertently glanced at Yan Littlemoon, who was standing beside Lin Ming. His eyes flashed with a barely traceable happiness. Although this happiness seemed simple, there was actually a mischievous and devilish meaning to it, as if he were up to no good.

Yan Littlemoon froze. From the start, she didn't know what those words meant, but as realization began to slowly dawn on her, her large eyes widened. She looked over to Huo Violentstone in disbelief. Could it be...

The so-called young golden couple, perfectly suited for each other... that was... that seemed... to be her and Lin Ming!

Within the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan, there were actually several women that had the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. But, besides herself, everyone else was a senior disciple or already married – they clearly didn't suit Lin Ming. In addition, there was also that look that Huo Violentstone shot at her just now. She already had a firm grasp that she was the subject of this marriage talk!

As Yan Littlemoon realized this point, she didn't know what to feel. For a woman with a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline, if a man was to take her primordial yin, that would have a tremendous effect on her own bloodline strength. After all, essence energy was the same as bloodline and double cultivation also meant to fuse a portion of her bloodline with the man's, so how could she not be affected?

Yan Littlemoon had made a vow to never marry until she became a Holy Lord, because she didn't want the power of her bloodline to be diluted. But now, if she married Lin Ming, then she...

As Yan Littlemoon imagined such a scene, she found this a bit difficult to accept, and yet not at the same time...

She couldn't help but sneak a glance at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming didn't seem to have any intention or interest in a marriage with anyone, thus he never even thought of it. He only looked at Huo Violentstone and said with all seriousness, "This disciple truly wishes to go out and adventure, I ask that Honorable Master approves!"

Chapter 1069 – Secret of the Magic Cube

Chapter 1069 – Secret of the Magic Cube

…

…

…

"You brat… why are you insisting on leaving?" Huo Violentstone huffed. But as he saw Lin Ming's earnest expression, he relented. He knew that when Lin Ming did things, he naturally had his own reasons for doing so. He wouldn't do something that he didn't have a full grasp of. Whether it was Huo Yanguang or seizing the drop of Ancient Phoenix blood essence, he had done so with full confidence.

Lin Ming hesitated. In truth, having to think of a reason wasn't too difficult. In fact, he could even come up with some ridiculous reasoning like he was being drawn in by the dark grip of destiny or something like that. After all, destiny was an illusory enough concept that he could attribute his reasons to that and there wasn't anyone that could doubt it.

However, just as Lin Ming was about to speak, Huo Violentstone waved his hand and said, "Well, whatever. It's fine as long as you know what you're doing. I trust in your judgment."

"Thank you Honorable Master for your approval." Lin Ming was glad. If possible, he didn't want to come up with some random lie to deceive Huo Violentstone.

Beside Lin Ming, Yan Littlemoon also relaxed. If Lin Ming didn't leave then Huo Violentstone would truly bring up the idea of marriage to her Yan Family, and then she would be stuck in a conundrum of having to make two difficult choices. On one hand, she couldn't help but admit that she held some good will towards Lin Ming. On the other hand, she had once made a vow to herself.

Everyone boarded the spirit ship and began to fly back to the Ancient Phoenix Clan. As for Lin Ming, he departed midway through the trip by himself. Just before leaving, Huo Violentstone gave him five million violet sun stones as well as his own spirit ship so that he could travel through space.

Lin Ming left the majority of the dragon blood to Yan Littlemoon. Most of this dragon blood was placed in a spatial ring. He only told her that this was a lucky chance he had obtained while she was unconscious and decided to divide a part of it to her, and also asked her not to leak out this secret.

When Lin Ming left, Yan Littlemoon finally searched the spatial ring. It was only then that she found over 1000 drops of dragon blood in the spatial ring, and this dragon blood was also of relatively high quality. This left her dumbfounded. She didn't think that Lin Ming would gift her something of such high value.

"Where did Lin Ming obtain so much dragon blood? Did he find a dragon blood pool in the God Beast Mystic Realm?" Yan Littlemoon mumbled to herself. In her opinion, if Lin Ming divided her this much dragon blood, then he must inevitably have kept far more with him.

"Could Lin Ming's lucky chance have been the same as the phoenix blood pond I found in the past?" As Yan Littlemoon put away the dragon blood, she looked out of the window of her room, gazing at the infinite void and countless stars of space. She felt an inexplicable sense of loss as she fell into a deep and pensive trance.

Yan Littlemoon never thought that Lin Ming would leave for years this time, and by the time he returned, she would already be at the Divine Sea realm…

………………

In the vastness of the endless space, a light gray spirit ship rapidly flew through. This spirit ship wasn't too big, and its gray surface seemed to fuse into the starry skies. In addition, there was a concealing array formation carved onto the surface of the spirit ship. If a master didn't carefully probe with their senses, it was impossible to discover.

The master of this spirit ship was naturally Lin Ming.

At this time, Lin Ming was sitting in the center of the spirit ship, studying the array formations that drove it. “Even for such a small spirit ship, passing through space with the great void shift just once costs 100,000 violet sun stones. It takes too many violet sun stones to pass through space… and, if one were to travel across the great worlds of the Divine Realm, one would also have to use transmission arrays, and that consumes even more violet sun stones. Poor martial artists can never afford interstellar travel…”

“That’s right. In the Divine Realm, very few people use violet sun stones for training. They are mainly used to drive a variety of array formations. Especially for a Holy Land level palace, they must consume a massive number of violet sun stones to be maintained. Violet sun stones are the most common power source in the Divine Realm.”

With a faint whimsical voice, Mo Eversnow appeared beside Lin Ming. She had been hiding in the Magic Cube during this, so it was impossible for anyone to detect her presence.

Lin Ming asked, “Miss Mo, I’ve had some questions that have been trapped in my heart for a long time. I wonder if it’s alright to ask you about them?”

“Ask away.” Mo Eversnow said.

Lin Ming paused for a brief moment, then asked, “Miss Mo, I want to know, just what is the Magic Cube? What rank treasure is it? Besides storing soul fragments, just what functions does it have? Why would it cause so many people to struggle for it in the past?”

Mo Eversnow gently shook her head. She said, “I have no idea just what the Magic Cube is. Perhaps it is the leftover crystallized soul of an existence beyond our understanding. It has the ability to crush apart the souls of all existence. However, with my strength, it is very difficult to meditate and perceive it, much less thoroughly control it.”

“Crush apart souls? Is it a soul attack type of treasure?” Lin Ming recalled that in his first dream of Mo Eversnow, he had seen her use her half-step World King strength to instantly annihilate 10,000 Divine Realm powerhouses. Many of them were at the late Divine Lord realm and even Holy Lord realm. She had even been able to severely wound the early World King, Tian Mingzi. One could see from this alone just how powerful the Magic Cube's soul attack function was.

Mo Eversnow said, "To attack the soul is only a single function of the Magic Cube. It has another effect that truly defies the will of the heavens. That is... after it crushes and absorbs a soul, it can erase that soul's spirit mark and turn it into ownerless memory fragments. If one swallows these memory fragments, they can completely obtain the memories of others. This includes cultivation methods, martial skills, auxiliary skills, array formation techniques, and everything else you can think of! In other words, if you can gain control of the Magic Cube, if you kill someone that has studied a transcendent divine might, you can kill them and swallow up their divine soul with the Magic Cube. Then, you can erase their spirit mark and absorb their memories. You will obtain that entire transcendent divine might without the least bit missing."

Mo Eversnow slowly nodded. To date, this was the most powerful function of the Magic Cube she had discovered.

It had to be known that in the martial world, the foundation of every sect was their inheritances.

But, these inheritance jade slips could only be carved by those who had an extremely high level of understanding of these inheritances, and it also required a massive amount of time and effort to do so. This caused the inheritance jade slips of these cultivation methods to be even more precious, because those that were able to let a martial artist study extremely powerful top level cultivation methods to large success were far too few in number. There were even many inheritance jade slips that were singular and unique, without another copy in existence.

Even if a normal disciple were to look at this jade slip and record it all in their mind, they still wouldn't have the ability to duplicate it. If they were killed by someone, that killer could use a soul searching technique, but all they would find would be incomplete fragments. It would simply be impossible to use this method to reproduce a full cultivation method.

In other words, as long as a sect preserved and kept their inheritance jade slips, they would never leak out their inheritances.

Similarly, array formation technique, alchemy technique, refining technique, all of this was the same.

In order to completely obtain someone's cultivation methods or array formation techniques, auxiliary skill memory, practice experience, and so forth, there was only a single way to go about that, and that was to directly fuse souls with the other party.

But all souls had a spirit mark. Once absorbed, the spirit marks would fuse together and one would begin to lose themselves – everything that made that person that person.

A spirit mark was thoroughly integrated into every piece of a soul. If one wanted to erase a spirit mark, that was actually very simple. One only needed to use a battle spirit to wipe out the spirit mark, but this action would also destroy the soul.

When comparing the brain to the soul, the spirit mark would be the same as every nerve and blood vessel that ran through the brain. It was impossible for a doctor, no matter how skilled they were, to remove those nerves and blood vessels without ruining the brain. Thus, when one erased a spirit mark, the soul would also not be able to withstand it. The soul would eventually completely break down into nothingness.

But the Magic Cube was different. It could perfectly remove all spirit marks. It allowed one to completely absorb all of an opponent's memories and experiences, no matter what top cultivation method or auxiliary skill it was.

Mo Eversnow's words didn't surprise Lin Ming; he had already been able to take advantage of this function. But, the memory fragments Lin Ming absorbed in the past were all of average quality and he had only been able to do so passively. If he could one day perfectly control the Magic Cube, then whenever he slayed a genius, he would be able to swallow their memories and take out whatever he found useful. This was the same as countless extreme geniuses helping to train Lin Ming. Once this began to accumulate, it would become increasingly terrifying. Lin Ming would be able to hold more and more information in his mind until it was limitless.

Lin Ming couldn't help but ask, "Miss Mo, from what I know, this Magic Cube is likely some legendary magic tool. How could it have fallen into the hands of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands? It seems as if the Verdant Feather Holy Lands is only..."

Mo Eversnow faintly smiled and said, "You're saying that the Verdant Feather Holy Lands was too weak to control the Magic Cube? In truth, the Verdant Feather Holy Lands was a World King level Holy Land, and the one with the highest cultivation was my grandfather, the Verdant Feather World King. And, my great nemesis Tian Mingzi was once the direct disciple of my grandfather. The Magic Cube was first accidentally obtained in a mystic realm by my grandfather, but at that time, he didn't know what it was, thus the reason that he was able to keep the Magic Cube for so long.

"At the time, my grandfather only felt as if the aura of the Magic Cube was extraordinary. He began to concentrate his time on slowly studying and unraveling it, but unfortunately, there was some mutation that happened later. Perhaps when my grandfather was meditating on the secrets of the Magic Cube he caused some massive backlash, but regardless of what happened, the end result was that my grandfather's soul was seriously wounded. During this time period, my grandfather's strength was severely lowered because of these soul injuries. If a World King level powerhouse's soul is seriously injured, wanting to restore it is extremely difficult! One would need an unimaginable level of heavenly materials. For instance, something like the supreme dragon bone. A supreme dragon bone is something incomparably difficult to find, even for a World King level Holy Land, thus my grandfather had no choice but to slowly recuperate.

"But coincidentally, Tian Mingzi had also managed to break through into the World King realm at that time. His strength rose dramatically and his original talent was also astonishingly high. The only thing greater was his ambition. When he learned of the Magic Cube, he took advantage of the period when my grandfather was injured to ambush him and try to steal the Magic Cube! The result was that he underestimated how strong my grandfather was. My grandfather had been a World King for many years and his background was incomparably deep. He paid a great price to force out Tian Mingzi. But then… more wounds were added to my grandfather's original soul wound, and he finally perished because of that…"

As Mo Eversnow spoke to here, her eyes flashed with sadness. Lin Ming also became aware. No wonder Mo Eversnow hated Tian Mingzi with every fiber of her body. He had been nothing but a rabid wolf. He was once the chief disciple of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, but he in turn wiped out the Verdant Feather Holy Lands! Such a person truly deserved to die!

Mo Eversnow continued, "Afterwards, the Magic Cube fell into my hands. But, because of what happened, a great schism appeared in the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. Some people decided to betray me and follow Tian Mingzi, later founding their own Netherworld Holy Land. You should already know what happened after that.

Chapter 1070 – Absorbing the Dragon Marrow

Chapter 1070 – Absorbing the Dragon Marrow

…

…

…

"Betray?"

Lin Ming's eyebrows jumped up. After Mo Eversnow's grandfather died, Tian Mingzi was actually able to tear apart the factions of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. This sort of plan had probably been percolating for a painstakingly long time, and he had likely even had the thought of revolting much earlier.

It was difficult to ascertain all the different interests and conflicts within a super sect. Although Tian Mingzi was the direct disciple of Mo Eversnow's grandfather, as time passed and his wings grew, he began to reveal greater ambitions. And, when Mo Eversnow's grandfather felt this, he began to guard against it. Tian Mingzi then in turn discovered that Mo Eversnow's grandfather was guarding against him and thus their conflicts would never be resolved.

With Tian Mingzi's strength and status, it was certainly easy for him to win over supporters. In the past, even though Mo Eversnow's talent was beyond belief, she was still too young. After the old World King died, it was far too hard for her to manage affairs. Thus, the World King level Verdant Feather Holy Lands had been destroyed because of all these circumstances gathering together. It was a truly sad and mournful time.

However, through Mo Eversnow's description, Lin Ming also developed some vigilance towards Tian Mingzi. This sort of person was extremely talented, moreover he was someone that was ungrateful and had no virtues. He was cruel, merciless, and would resort to any means necessary to achieve his goal. He was a character who had even subverted a World King level Holy Land. Although he had managed to do so because he grasped the perfect timing, this still wasn't something that an ordinary person could accomplish.

"Enough. Let's not mention the past for now. The reason we left is to help you absorb the supreme dragon bone. There is simply too much marrow in this dragon marrow, and it is also too pure. Normally, a general martial artist wouldn't be able to swallow all of it. Even someone like Dragon One would have to slowly absorb the dragon marrow over an extremely long period of time."

Let alone Dragon One, even the Asura King had used an exceedingly long time and only managed to absorb less than half of it. That was the same amount that Lin Ming was planning to absorb. Of course, that was the dragon marrow that was refined from the Asura King after it died.

Mo Eversnow changed the topic and said, "I actually want you to absorb all of it at once! First you will absorb the dragon marrow. As for the dragon bone, that is mostly related to your body transformation technique, so you can take your time with that. Because you are about to cross Life Destruction again, the more dragon marrow you have within your body, the greater the advantage will be, otherwise a great portion of its effects will be weakened. You dual cultivate body and energy so your meridians, flesh, and bones – all of it far exceeds an ordinary person in terms of tenacity. If you can't absorb the dragon marrow in a single breath then your dual body and energy cultivation can be considered wasted!"

Mo Eversnow sounded indifferent, but her words actually left Lin Ming speechless. Having grown so much, he had nearly surpassed all other geniuses he had encountered on his road, wherever and whenever. He had received countless praises from countless people, but now with Mo Eversnow here, her strict instructions left him flabbergasted. Lin Ming only thought that he could meet her requirements; wanting to go beyond them wouldn't be easy at all.

This was also reasonable. Mo Eversnow was someone that could have easily become a World King and she also chose to dual cultivate in body and energy; her talent had reached an unimaginably high level. The standards that she set for herself were naturally the standards she set for Lin Ming.

“Look for a place to absorb the dragon bone marrow first. Then I will lead you to find some more resources from the Verdant Feather Holy Lands in the past. And, although the Verdant Feather Holy Lands met great calamity in the past, they actually didn’t completely fall apart. There were still some factions that were left behind. This is also due to the planning of my grandfather; even Tian Mingzi doesn’t know if it. When my grandfather was on his deathbed, he revealed all of this to me. The majority of the wealth was taken away by my aunty so that she could integrate it into an influence somewhere. That influence should have slowly developed upwards by now. That influence should have completely cut off contact with the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, otherwise I fear that Tian Mingzi would have already eliminated them.”

As the saying went, even when a centipede was chopped up it could still move, much less a World King level Holy Land like the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. It wasn’t surprising that such a Holy Land saved up a great portion of its resources during its most glorious time so that they could have escape routes for the future.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment. He asked, “Is your aunty trustworthy? She might…”

“She is trustworthy!”

Mo Eversnow firmly nodded. “My parents died early on. Besides my grandfather, my aunty was the closest person to me.”

“Good. Then we’ll go look for your aunty. I hope that everything goes smoothly…”

……………

Half a month later, in the vast expanse of space, there was a common-looking planet. This planet was countless billions of miles away from the great primary worlds, and the planet was also a hundred thousand miles in diameter. In the great Divine Realm, there were countless planets like this.

And at this time, deep within the planet, there was a hidden cave dwelling that had just been formed. This cave dwelling was layered with all sorts of clever concealing array formations. Even a Divine Lord realm powerhouse would have difficulty seeing through it.

“This is good. Let’s have you absorb the dragon marrow here. I’ve scanned over the surrounding area and there are no martial artists that should be able to threaten you. In addition to my concealing array formations, nobody should be able to find you here. You should be safe.”

In the Divine Realm, one needed to be at least a Divine Sea powerhouse to go out and adventure. Otherwise, one could die countless times. This was because there were far too many Divine Transformation realm powerhouses in the Divine Realm. Even someone whose talent wasn’t all that great could still cultivate to the Divine Transformation realm. No matter how talented a Life Destruction genius was, if they ran into some garbage Divine Transformation martial artist, they would still be done for.

This was also the reason why Huo Violentstone didn’t want Lin Ming to go out adventuring. But with Mo Eversnow accompanying him, none of that was a problem.

“Okay.”

Lin Ming sat down on a stone bed and took out the Extreme Violet Ring, directly entering it. Within the Extreme Violet Ring, the 1000 foot supreme dragon bone rose high into the sky. And around the supreme dragon bone floated a black red pill. This pill was the size of a pigeon egg and it was smooth as if it were carved from black jade. And on the pill’s surface, there was the image of an Azure Dragon. This Azure Dragon was the condensed dragon marrow essence of the dragon bone. Although it was faint, it actually contained inherent Space Laws that Mo Eversnow had placed within it. The dragon marrow essence was compressed in this space and the total quantity was extremely terrifying!

Lin Ming took a deep breath but didn't move the dragon bone. He instead grabbed the pill. This was a pill formed from the marriage of the 100,000 year old Asura King's source energy and the supreme dragon bone's dragon marrow essence. Regardless of which one, both were precious treasures. In particular, the dragon marrow essence. That was something that would even cause the envious rampage of a World King level powerhouse.

As Lin Ming held the pill in his hand, he felt as if the pill itself was breathing, like there was a little living dragonling within it.

Lin Ming had already absorbed some dragon blood as well as the source strength left behind by Dragon One. All of that had allowed Lin Ming to lay down a foundation and had helped his body adapt to absorb more in the future. Now, it was time to absorb the dragon marrow.

Lin Ming directly swallowed the pill in his mouth. At that moment, he felt as if there was a tiny snake twisting around his tongue.

"What mysterious dragon marrow essence. The Azure Dragon that left behind this dragon bone has already been dead for countless hundreds of millions of years, and yet its blood marrow still has so much vitality!"

The ancient Azure Dragon, had a special characteristic, and that was that its energy had the attribute of endlessness. Its resiliency and vitality were powerful to an incredible degree. Thus, even though the Azure Dragon had been dead for so long, the dragon marrow it left behind still managed to maintain its vitality.

As the dragon marrow entered his body, Lin Ming felt a flow of tyrannical and brutal energy surge into him, flooding through his meridian channels, bloodline, acupoints, and impacting through his entire body!

Lin Ming had already expected this situation. After all, he was suddenly absorbing a great deal of dragon marrow, and the dragon marrow had an extreme amount of vitality left within it. After entering his body, the dragon marrow would definitely not be resigned to allowing itself to be assimilated. Thus it tried to resist, hence the beginning of the pain in his body.

Lin Ming felt his body becoming increasingly hot, as if he were placed into a giant pot of boiling water. Although this heat was far from being comparable to the eighth level in the 18 Hells of Flame, when Lin Ming was there he at least was able to keep the heat away from his body by using the power of the Fire Laws and also his protective true essence, thus the true temperature he faced wasn't high at all.

But now, the situation was completely different. The heat was directly swelling up within Lin Ming's body.

A martial artist's physical body didn't have too great an ability to resist high temperatures. Even though Lin Ming dual cultivated in body and energy, he wasn't that much different either. His entire body began to drip with sweat. Because of the blazing heat, even his thoughts became slow. Soon, his clothes began to burn until they were reduced to ash, leaving behind nothing but the top grade saint artifact Dragonscale Robe draped over his naked skin.

Lin Ming took great breaths of air, and every time he breathed out, fire would follow. All of the acupoints of his body expanded, and faint red steam flowed out from his body, nearly gushing out due to the amazing heat.

"Seal off your acupoints otherwise you will lose the power of the dragon marrow. That red steam escaping is the purest bloodline strength." Mo Eversnow said, standing beside Lin Ming. In the past, she had absorbed a great number of soul fragments, thus her experience was extraordinarily vast. She was able to guide Lin Ming so that he could absorb the dragon marrow to the greatest effect.

"Seal off the acupoints..."

Lin Ming shouldered the agonizing pain and forcefully moved his senses to seal off his acupoints. As he did so, he felt as if his entire body were about to explode. A brutal energy tore through all of his meridians and blood vessels. Even though he dual cultivated in body and energy and his meridians were far tougher than normal, they still couldn't withstand such an overbearing energy.

Puff puff puff!

Meridians and blood vessels all over Lin Ming's body burst apart from the energy. His skin ruptured, causing crimson streams of blood to flow out.

In this current situation, the pain of his skin cracking apart wasn't anything to Lin Ming at all. The true pain came from the dragon marrow that burned within his body. If Lin Ming's will hadn't been tempered for so long, if it wasn't incomparably tough, and if his battle spirit hadn't reached the gold level, his consciousness might have collapsed by now.

"Do not worry. The blood leaving your body is common blood! Even though you condensed a spirit body after crossing Life Destruction and your every cell was tempered by energy, your flesh and blood is still your original flesh and blood; you cannot yet be considered as having been reborn, only transformed. And afterwards, when you absorbed the drop of phoenix blood essence, that may have been an incomparably precious treasure, but that was still a mere single drop! That is far too little! Now, for you to absorb this dragon marrow is for you to truly be reborn, discard your old blood and your old marrow!"

Although Lin Ming looked like a fountain that was erupting with blood, Mo Eversnow was still calm as she watched this scene. She slowly explained the effects of the dragon marrow.

In truth, at this time, every single tiny change in Lin Ming's body was being covered by Mo Eversnow's senses and was under her complete control. As long as the tiniest unwelcome change appeared in Lin Ming's body, she could instantly respond and guarantee that his life wouldn't be in danger.

Chapter 1071 – Crossing Eightfall

Chapter 1071 – Crossing Eightfall

…

…

…

Time slowly passed. Lin Ming withstood the agonizing suffering for an entire hour. This pain simply couldn't be described with words. It was like every bit and piece of his flesh and blood was being grinded down by the dragon blood. This was even more painful than being roasted within the Hells of Flame; his body was directly burnt from the inside out.

And at this time, the dragon marrow began to show its miraculous effects. As a part of the dragon marrow fused with Lin Ming's body, it began to display its powerful regenerative abilities.

Some of Lin Ming's shattered meridians and torn organs began to slowly regenerate. As they did, he felt his entire body itch. But before these wounds could fully heal, they would tear right back open. This painful ripping along with the unbearable itching was a feeling that made one wish for death.

All of Lin Ming's blood and sweat was mixed together in a crimson pool on the ground. Lin Ming had lost over 80% of his blood. An ordinary person would have died to the point of not being able to die any more. Even if it were a martial artist, losing so much blood would begin to affect their life source. But, Lin Ming had dragon marrow in his body, and this dragon marrow was slowly fusing into Lin Ming's own marrow and beginning to replace it. Now, the blood that he produced was no longer ordinary blood, but blood that was close to being a dragon's blood!

This was truly washing the marrow and bringing in new blood. He was replacing his own blood with dragon blood!

In this sense, the dragon marrow contained within the supreme dragon bone had a fundamental difference from the dragon marrow blood that the Ancient Dragon Clan had. Dragon marrow blood was only the blood from a dragon's marrow. Once it was transplanted into a human's body, it could only transform their bloodline. That sort of transformation could not compare with the complete dragon marrow. With the transplantation of dragon marrow, that was truly transformation of the marrow. One's own marrow would change too, and that was the equivalent of altering the very basis of one's blood. It would make one's blood more similar to dragon blood.

Mo Eversnow continued to stand guard beside Lin Ming. Every single change within Lin Ming's body fell into her eyes. Whenever some phoenix blood leaked out with the ordinary blood, she would cast a seal and lock that phoenix blood into his body.

This was the so-called union of dragon and phoenix. The newly-absorbed dragon marrow did not conflict with the phoenix blood in Lin Ming's body at all. Rather, they fused together perfectly and even mutually benefited each other. In the scope of Mo Eversnow's senses, she could see that Lin Ming was being thoroughly transformed. The blood in Lin Ming's blood vessels began to shine with a bright light. If one took a drop of Lin Ming's blood into a completely dark room, they would be able to see his blood emit a light golden radiance, similar to a shining night pearl.

At this step, Mo Eversnow knew that Lin Ming's transformation was thoroughly completed. She also let out a light breath. For an entire hour, she had been combing her senses through every single inch of Lin Ming's flesh and blood, feeling every minute change happening. This wasn't an easy process at all.

"This is truly an extraordinary lucky chance… in the past, if my Verdant Feather Holy Lands had such dragon marrow then my grandfather's injuries would have been healed. If he was able to live longer then I would have been able to break into the World King realm. At that time, I would naturally have assumed the position of ruler of the Verdant Feather Holy

Lands. I might have even become the next World King of the Shifting Feather World and saved the Verdant Feather Holy Lands from falling apart."

Mo Eversnow sighed. She had never had such a lucky chance in the past, but now Lin Ming did. If this continued, then Lin Ming would begin to accumulate more and more superiorities. His future accomplishments would reach a terrifying degree.

At this time Lin Ming had fallen into a coma. Rather, it wasn't exactly a coma, but a dormant state where he had fallen completely unconscious. Every single cell in his body had also entered a dormant condition. In this state, Lin Ming's body, meridians, bones, organs, all of them were experiencing earth-shaking changes!

This was a change on the cellular level. Dragon blood now flowed through Lin Ming's veins, and blood was what carried energy to nourish the cells throughout the body. To have a body nourished with dragon blood and common blood, of course the effects were different!

Slowly, Lin Ming's cells became more dense and the connection between them more solid. Every single strand of Lin Ming's body could withstand a tearing force of a million jins!

As Lin Ming's body changed, even his nails fell off for new ones to appear. These new nails shined like crystal and seemed to be as soft and glossy as jade petals. They could even be called perfect.

A few hours later, Lin Ming's broken meridians began to slowly mend together. After washing his marrow and switching his blood, there were countless injuries littered through Lin Ming's body. But, underneath the new regenerative properties of Lin Ming's body, all of these wounds healed up. It would only be another one or two hours for Lin Ming to completely recover.

And at this moment, a sudden change occurred. All of the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy began surging towards Lin Ming. The energy within his body rapidly expanded, and the regenerated skin ruptured again. Deep and shocking fissures appeared through his body, causing his flesh to split apart and blood to rain down.

Following this, Lin Ming's meridians and blood vessels began to shatter. Immense amounts of energy swelled up within him as if he would explode at any moment.

Mo Eversnow wrinkled her eyebrows as she saw this sudden chance. "He's actually crossing Eightfall at such a time, mm... so he had been suppressing his cultivation all this time..."

In truth, Lin Ming had long been able to cross Eightfall, but he had been tamping down his own strength because he wished to better perceive the Laws. If he did so, then when he crossed Ninefall he would be able to have a greater baptism of the Heavenly Dao and obtain a much more significant advantage from that. But now, with his body having entered a dormant state and no consciousness lingering in his spiritual sea, he was naturally unable to suppress the energy in his body. Thus, he began to spontaneously cross the eighth stage of Life Destruction; this was caused by the Laws of the Heavenly Dao.

As Mo Eversnow saw the limited amount of energy within the Extreme Violet Ring be completely sucked dry by Lin Ming, she quickly formed several seals and slammed them into his body, unlocking the energy within the pill he swallowed.

When Mo Eversnow refined the Asura King, she had sealed all of the Asura King's source energy into the pill. As for the dragon marrow, that formed the Azure Dragon that wrapped around the bead.

From the very beginning when Lin Ming swallowed the pill, he had only absorbed the dragon marrow. The Asura King's source energy was still sealed away. This was because Mo Eversnow had considered the amount of energy Lin Ming could withstand. Absorbing that much dragon marrow was already at the edge of his limits. If he had absorbed the Asura King's source energy during that, then his body would have exploded into ashes.

But now that Lin Ming had completely fused the dragon marrow into his body and was starting to cross the eighth stage of Life Destruction, this was naturally the best time to unlock the energy within the pill.

“One lucky chance has just ended and now another lucky chance has come. This is the total source strength of the Asura King, but it is used for you to cross the eighth stage of Life Destruction.”

Although there were countless mystic realms scattered all throughout the Divine Realm, there were great energy barriers that blocked entry to many of them. The strong were unable to go, and the weak were definitely not the match of an opponent like the Asura King. The Asura King’s source energy contained the special Laws of the God Beast Mystic Realm, and it would be able to make up for Lin Ming’s comprehension of Laws to an extremely great degree.

In fact, the mystic realms of the Divine Realm were far larger than most people ever imagined. Every single mystic realm could be called its own separate universe. With the Divine Realm’s 3000 great worlds and the billion worlds of the lower realms, there were different Laws everywhere. Every single world contained infinite mysteries and countless different space-times. The God Beast Mystic Realm was only a single one of these.

Bang!

As the seal was undone, Lin Ming’s body shined as if a sun appeared within him. A pure mystic realm energy thoroughly erupted, savagely attacking his body.

In the moment that the energy erupted, Lin Ming’s physical body completely decomposed as his flesh collapsed!

At that moment, Lin Ming began to officially attack the eighth stage of Life Destruction!

In the past when Lin Ming was in the Sky Spill Continent, because of the limitations on one’s horizons due to insufficient resources and inheritances, Eightfall was the symbol of a top character that would be remembered throughout history. And now, Lin Ming had finally stepped into the eighth stage of Life Destruction.

The rays of light became increasingly bright. Lin Ming's skin, organs, muscles, everything began to break down into the tiniest particles. Even his dantian broke and his black hole revolving core split apart. Then, his soul also began to decompose.

At the seventh, eighth and ninth stages of Life Destruction, the human body would break down, the revolving core would shatter, and even the soul would dissolve. This was the so-called breaking and reforming of a martial artist's essence, energy, and divine.

Normally, an extremely talented character like Lin Ming would not experience any dangers upon crossing Eightfall. But, he cultivated dual body and energy, and thus his body was extremely tough. He would encounter multiple layers of resistance in crossing Eightfall.

But, Lin Ming's foundation was solid and he even had the source strength of the Asura King supporting him. In addition, with Mo Eversnow watching over him, there wasn't any problem at all. A normal dual body and energy martial artist would find crossing every single stage of Life Destruction to be a tremendous life or death hurdle. If their talent, resources, or lucky chances were lacking, they would instead directly perish during Life Destruction.

However, from the very start and up until now when he was crossing the eighth stage of Life Destruction, Lin Ming had consumed all sorts of heavenly materials, gathered all sorts of rare lucky chances, and had even borrowed the strength of special thunder and flames to arrive at this point. Just this alone would cause nearly all geniuses of the Divine Realm to shrink back in fear from ever choosing the path of dual body and energy cultivation. After all, a person had limited time and energy. If so, then maybe it would be more beneficial to spend all that time meditating on the Laws so that they could experience a greater baptism of Laws during Ninefall.

As Lin Ming's soul completely broke down and mixed into his primordial soup of life, his consciousness still faintly existed. He could feel a sea of special energy floating all around him. This energy was completely different from the energies currently present in the Divine Realm, and it also represented a different power of Laws: these were mystic realm Laws.

Lin Ming wandered through this sea of mystic realm energy and mystic realm Laws for an untold period of time. His soul broke again and again and again. He forgot the passing of time and even his sense of self.

During this period, Mo Eversnow continued to stand guard next to Lin Ming. As she looked at a nearby hourglass, she could see that 18 days had passed. Lin Ming's crossing of the eighth stage of Life Destruction was finally coming to an end.

The process of Lin Ming crossing Life Destruction this time was extremely slow. His body, dantian, and soul were far more thoroughly broken down. This was because of the mystic realm Laws. It could be said that Lin Ming's soul was experiencing a continued baptism.

And at this moment, Lin Ming's body began to truly reform. Above the hidden cave dwelling, with the clapping of thunder, all of the heaven and earth origin energy was stirred up. The heaven and earth origin energy for several hundred miles around was stirred up, forming a massive vortex!

A cloud slowly formed in the skies. This was Lin Ming's Eightfall origin energy cloud!

As Lin Ming crossed Eightfall, without any surprise at all, an origin energy cloud world phenomenon appeared once more!

Chapter 1072 – Display of Strength

Chapter 1072 – Display of Strength

…

…

…

As soon as Mo Eversnow sensed the appearance of the origin energy cloud, she perked up. Although there had been several layers of concealing array formations laid down, they were only to hide the cave dwelling. It was extremely difficult to hide this sort of turbulent heaven and earth origin energy. Luckily, there wasn't any sort of extremely powerful master on this planet. As long as no Divine Lord powerhouse appeared, Mo Eversnow would be able to kill them.

The origin energy cloud grew increasingly large. From three miles, to six miles, nine miles, 12 miles… all the way to 18 miles!

"Six Layered Heavens Life Destruction?"

Mo Eversnow's complexion changed as she sensed the size of the origin energy cloud outside of the cave dwelling. A Six Layered Heavens ninth stage Life Destruction couldn't be considered anything at all, but a Six Layered Heavens eighth stage Life Destruction was something else. When Lin Ming finally broke through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction, the size of the origin energy cloud he produced then would be on a horrifying scale.

At this moment, the particles of Lin Ming's flesh and blood turned into a red light that broke out of the cave dwelling, piercing straight into the origin energy clouds. The heavens and earth lost their color as winds and storms surged about!

The origin energy clouds contained both Mystic Realm Laws as well as Grandmist Laws. The simultaneous existence of both of these caused the clouds to alternate between a dark gray and dark red. This was a completely different scene from the origin energy clouds that appeared when an ordinary martial artist crossed Ninefall.

It would take some time for Lin Ming to finish his baptism of Laws in the origin energy clouds. Mo Eversnow cast out her divine sense as far as she could reach, keeping a tight guard over every minor change. If she encountered a middle or late Divine Lord realm powerhouse then she would rather interrupt Lin Ming's eighth stage Life Destruction and have him not fully complete it than risk his life.

Of course, the chances of this happening were extremely tiny. When Lin Ming left, his whereabouts were kept completely secret. Besides Huo Violentstone, Yan Littlemoon, and a few other people, no one even knew that Lin Ming had left the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Then, he had used the universal great void shift on the spirit ship and had long ago arrived at a different great world of the Divine Realm. He had even chosen a planet where the average martial artist's cultivation was extremely low. If he happened to run into a Divine Lord powerhouse that was simply travelling about, then it could only be said he was extremely unlucky.

"Mm? Some people have arrived."

Mo Eversnow turned and glanced in a distant direction. She was looking towards an island several thousand miles away. There was a large gang located on this island. The difference between a gang and a sect was that a sect had a core inheritance continually passed down, whereas a gang was nothing but a loose organization of martial artists gathered together for some purpose.

This was only a 'large gang' in the context of this planet. Of course, even saying that, the truth was that its strength was around equal to the Sky Spill Continent's Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. In the Divine Realm, there were numerous Holy Lands. As for small sects and small gangs like this, they had reached a terrifying number. There were more of them than there were drops of water in the endless sea. When adventuring in the outside world, one would usually encounter small sects and gangs like these. As for a larger influence like the Ancient Phoenix Clan, there couldn't be said to be too many of them on a great world of the Divine Realm, thus they were relatively rare.

"What is that?" An early Divine Sea martial artist discovered the changes happening in the distant heaven and earth origin energy, as well as the flashing gray and red lights.

"Is it a world phenomenon of a heavenly treasure being born? Or is it the Ninefall phenomenon listed in the ancient texts?"

"I doubt it is someone crossing Ninefall; it is different from what I've read. Then again, it's not like crossing Ninefall is so easy. On our continent such a situation hasn't appeared in several thousand years! Judging from how intense the heaven and earth origin energy fluctuations are, it is probably a rare treasure being born unto the world. This might be our great lucky chance. Let's go and take a look!"

The location that Mo Eversnow had chosen for this cave dwelling was the richest point of origin energy on this planet. Going into seclusion here would be extremely beneficial to Lin Ming. But, this place having the richest origin energy also meant that it had the most sects and gangs, and the competition between powerhouses here was also the most intense.

In fact, there were indeed a great number of heavenly materials here, thus many robbers and bandits had gathered here too.

And Lin Ming had stirred up too much heaven and earth origin energy in his crossing of Eightfall. Soon, the martial artists or three nearby gangs spotted him and began rushing over.

Among these people, there were only over a dozen Divine Sea realm martial artists, and the majority were Life Destruction realm martial artists along with several Revolving Core realm juniors out for adventuring. Even in the Divine Realm, most martial artists were still low level ones like these, especially on such a small planet.

"Mm? There's an energy field barrier blocking the way!"

"Is this an energy field formed by the treasure?"

"Attack it, destroy it!"

Before these martial artists arrived, Mo Eversnow had already used her world of will projection to lock out the surrounding space, not allowing anyone to approach or discover what was happening inside. For someone like Mo Eversnow, it was extremely easy for her to keep out this group of people. And at this time, Lin Ming's Life Destruction also began to come to an end. The origin energy clouds began to contract and shrink downwards.

Lin Ming's brain, bones, organs, muscles, blood, skin, hair, all of it began to form one after the other. This included even his soul. After being tempered with so much energy, the Law fragment runes had carved themselves into Lin Ming's very flesh and blood, and even into his marrow.

He had finally crossed the eighth stage of Life Destruction.

Lin Ming suddenly opened his eyes and lightning seemed to crackle in his pupils. Every breath he took seemed to inhale and exhale pure heaven and earth origin energy. From the seventh stage to the eighth stage of Life Destruction, although he had only crossed a small boundary, his strength had actually soared to another level. This sort of effect was far from what passing a small boundary could be described with.

If he had to fight against the Eightfall Crimson Strifecloud from the Illusionary God Combat Array, he could even roll right over him!

"Not bad." Mo Eversnow said some rare words of appreciation. "There are quite a few people that have gathered outside. Deal with them as you wish."

Mo Eversnow took back her own world of will projection and submerged into the Magic Cube.

As the energy field was removed, Lin Ming immediately fell into the encirclement of the martial artists from the three gangs.

Of these people, the ones leading were mostly at the late Divine Sea, and the strongest one even neared the Divine Transformation realm. That person wore a black medium-grade saint artifact armor and had an extremely large and robust build.

The black-armored large man looked through Lin Ming's cultivation and his eyes flashed with a cold light. He released and covered Lin Ming with his killing intent, trying to suppress Lin Ming with his own pressure. "Brat, are you the only one here? Which gang are you from?"

Every world in the Divine Realm had different customs and traditions. This planet had more gangs than they did sects. Martial artists that joined a gang did so through a combination of interests. They might join together to help complete various tasks given to them by their sects from different planets, or they might be organizing more people to explore mystic realms, or they might even be part-time robbers. In fact, many large gangs were nothing but roaming packs of robbers.

The black-armored large man didn't think Lin Ming travelled here from some other planet. For an eighth stage Life Destruction boy to engage in interstellar travel was a completely idiotic idea. And looking at Lin Ming's solid foundation, this boy seemed to have some talent.

"You fucker, our boss has asked you a question! Are you deaf!?" Seeing Lin Ming remain silent, several of the black-armored large fellow's underlings grew angry. Their group had over a dozen Divine Sea masters, and they were now threatening an eighth stage Life Destruction boy with their killing intent, however, the boy did not kneel and beg for mercy, nor was he scared shitless. How could any one of them feel comfortable about this?

It had to be known that these martial artists were all people that constantly danced on the edge of death. They were masters who had been tempered through countless bloody battles. They could tell at first glance that Lin Ming was likely one of those disciples of a distinguished family. These people had deep backgrounds, but they were in reality nothing more than flowers grown in a greenhouse; they simply couldn't withstand the wind and rain of the world.

“Fuck! This damned idiot, I think that he has already taken the treasure. Cut off his limbs and search his soul; we’re taking the treasure back!”

An early Divine Sea monkey-faced man unhappily said. He was originally a bandit to begin with, so doing this sort of thing came naturally to him.

He prepared to act as soon as he spoke. Lin Ming’s cultivation was simply too low for him to develop any sort of caution in his heart. But just as he was about to attack, Lin Ming was actually the first one to do so.

Lin Ming didn’t even use the Phoenix Blood Spear. He simply lifted two fingers. Using fingers as a spear, a spear light shot outwards. A shimmering blue beam of light crossed through the skies. No one was able to clearly make out the path of this beam of light. With just a light ‘puff’ sound, the monkey-faced man’s forehead was directly pierced through by the light. Blood splashed out from the back of his head as he died on the spot.

In that moment, everyone was stunned. No one had sensed Lin Ming’s killing intent. All they saw was a flash of blue light and then the monkey-faced man had died.

This was too strange. Some people even suspected whether or not that was Lin Ming who had just attacked.

“Everyone be careful. There is some sort of unknown offensive treasure on that brat’s body. It might even be what caused those heaven and earth origin energy fluctuations just now. Let’s attack together!”

As Lin Ming killed a person with a single strike, even the black-armored large fellow was alarmed by this. However, he didn’t panic. He didn’t believe that Lin Ming had this sort of strength to begin with; there must be some other secret to such a trick. If he ran away just because he didn’t understand something, and in the end it turned out that all his fears were due to his own idiocy, then he really wouldn’t have any face left. Then again, his cultivation neared the Divine Transformation realm, and he could also instantly kill that monkey-faced man. There was just no need for him to fear Lin Ming.

Over a dozen Divine Sea powerhouses attacked together as well as several eighth stage Life Destruction martial artists. As for Ninefall geniuses, they weren't cabbages even in the vast Divine Realm, so how could they possibly appear on such a small planet like this.

"It seems that all of you are used to being bandits. Your cultivation methods and understandings of Concepts are far too different from each other; truly a crowd of rabble, nothing more than the dregs of the Divine Realm. Today, I shall enforce justice on behalf of the heavens!"

Facing over a dozen Divine Sea powerhouses, Lin Ming's expression was calm and steady. He flicked out his fingers and dozens of spear lights instantly shot out. These spear lights were a deep azure color and they also contained the Concept of Endlessness. A single wisp of azure true essence could destroy a wisp of ordinary true essence several times stronger!

As for these Divine Sea powerhouses, their talent was even inferior to that of the worst Firebird Hall disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace. As for the strongest black-armored large fellow among them, he was about the same as Yang Yun.

In front of Lin Ming's attacks, their protective true essence was nothing more than rotten paper, easily pierced through.

Puff puff puff!

Blood rained down. Of those Divine Sea martial artists, over half of them immediately died, all of the eighth stage Life Destruction martial artists died, and the survivors were all left severely wounded. There were even some spear lights that stabbed through several people together!

"This… this is…"

"Monster!"

All of the surviving martial artists were petrified. The black-armored large fellow leading them turned paler than death, his entire body trembling. This time, he had been able to clearly see that Lin Ming hadn't used any type of saint artifact to attack; all he did was send out his true essence to kill his enemies. This was only possible because his control of his true essence had reached a terrifying degree. Thus, when he killed his enemies, he hadn't wasted even a bit of true essence!

As for why there had been no killing intent when Lin Ming had killed the monkey-faced man, this was because killing intent was originally a type of force field formed by one's desire to kill. If one were up against fundamentally insignificant opponents, for instance a man stepping on ants, then there would be no killing intent at all.

In other words, in front of Lin Ming, the monkey-faced man had been nothing more than an ant. It wasn't until now, when he faced several late Divine Sea martial artists, that Lin Ming revealed his killing intent.

Chapter 1073 – True Martial World

Chapter 1073 – True Martial World

…

…

…

“Run away! Quickly run away!”

“Everyone scatter!”

“Great master, I beg you not to kill me, foolish little me was confused. I had eyes and yet I still couldn’t see Mount Tai, and now I’ve offended great master. I beg that great master spare my life.”

As these murderers and robbers saw Lin Ming kill them so aggressively, all of them were scared witless. In just a split second, over half of all the Divine Sea martial artists had been killed. This sort of strength surpassed the scope of their understanding. And since they were nothing more than a gang that had gathered together casually, they began to surrender upon the sight of such a powerful enemy.

As Lin Ming saw the disgusting looks on these people’s faces, he sneered, “When you want to kill others you kill them, but when you find out you can’t, you decide to kneel and beg for mercy instead. Where is there such a wonderful deed in this world? Since you’ve already decided to murder someone, you should have come to terms with your own potential death.”

Chi chi chi!

A spear light flashed. Seven or eight martial artists were pierced through, instantly dying.

“Ahhh! Fight him to the death!”

As the martial artists saw that there was no path to survival left for them, they decided to desperately go all-out against Lin Ming. But, Lin Ming simply swept his hand out and a spear light crossed through the horizon, beheading all of them!

As he killed these people, some early Life Destruction and Revolving Core junior martial artists had already fled dozens of miles away by now. Lin Ming didn’t bother with them. He directly chased the black-armored large man.

The black-armored large man was the only peak late Divine Sea martial artist in the group and he had also reached the eighth stage of Life Destruction; Lin Ming would naturally focus on him.

He didn’t use his fingers as a spear anymore. He directly flourished the Phoenix Blood Spear.

999 small blood spears waved through the skies, forming a crimson storm.

Chasing Thunder!

Lin Ming’s speed reached the peak. The Phoenix Blood Spear thrust straight towards the black-armored large man’s back.

The black-armored large man crazily roared and then swiveled around. He took out his own high-grade saint artifact serrated sword and chopped down at Lin Ming. He knew that he wasn’t Lin Ming’s match, thus he used this suicidal type of attack. As long as Lin Ming stabbed him then he would definitely be able to tear apart Lin Ming!

If one was up against a much stronger opponent, this method was indeed a smart choice. Unfortunately, the one that the black-armored large man had bumped into was Lin Ming.

As the Phoenix Blood Spear was about to clash with the serrated sword, in that moment, Lin Ming's thoughts dove into his spiritual sea. The grandmist battle spirit broke out, forming a world of will projection!

Ca!

The black-armored large fellow felt his shoulders sink. He could only feel that his serrated sword suddenly seemed to be wrapped up in some invisible web. His speed plummeted!

At the same time, Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear rapidly accelerated. He let go of the spear and with the support of the grandmist battle spirit, the spear shot forwards with a shrill whistling sound, piercing through the black-armored large fellow's chest!

Peng!

With his heart torn apart, the black-armored large man looked down at the massive hole in his chest that blood gushed from. Even at the end, he still couldn't believe that he had been instantly killed by an eighth stage Life Destruction martial artist!

"Gold… gold battle spirit? Are… are you really a Life Destruction martial artist?"

The black-armored large man whispered. Soon, his eyes glazed over and he no longer spoke.

Lin Ming put away the Phoenix Blood Spear. Because he had been so fast, the spear edge hadn't even been wetted with blood. After this fight, those several Life Destruction and Revolving Core juniors that managed to luckily escape wouldn't believe that the one who slaughtered them had an eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation. They all thought that Lin Ming was hiding his true strength from them.

Lin Ming wasn't some demon who killed without rhyme or reason. Out of the dozens of martial artists that had gathered here, there were some who didn't have any killing intent. They were the ones who had come purely to seek treasures and without the intention of robbing other martial artists. He simply let those people run away.

As for the possibility of those people revealing his whereabouts because he let them go and thus drawing the attention of his enemies, that was simply impossible. The Divine Realm was just too vast. There were countless planets with countless strange and miraculous events occurring at all times. No matter how great an intelligence organization was, it would still be impossible to cover the entirety of the Divine Realm!

Moreover, Lin Ming was at a great world far away from Atlas Word. What happened just now was also a minor matter that simply didn't warrant anyone's concern.

Like this, Lin Ming left this small planet. His destination was… True Martial World!

True Martial World wasn't ranked among the largest of the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds, but it did have one of the most glorious reputations. This was because it was one of the busiest and most prosperous trade markets in the Divine Realm.

On True Martial World, countless great trade associations and auctions houses were converged. At any given moment there were limitless heavenly materials being bought and sold. It was said that in the marketplaces and auction houses here, there were even harvests for a World King level powerhouse.

Of course, Lin Ming didn't come here for True Martial World's bustling economic scene. Although he had many priceless treasures, most of them could not be revealed to the public and it was impossible for him to trade them for money.

As for the currency of the Divine Realm, that was violet sun stones. Besides the violet sun stones that Huo Violentstone gave Lin Ming, the rest of the ones he had were taken from the corpses of Dragon One and the other disciples of the Ancient Dragon Clan. However, although he was currently much wealthier than a martial artist at his level should be, compared to those people that came to True Martial World to bid on items, he was simply a joke.

The true reason that Lin Ming came to True Martial World was to seek out the chess piece that the Verdant Feather Holy Lands had arranged for in the past, as well as to obtain the resources that Mo Eversnow had left behind!

……………

In a great and endless red desert, every grain of sand was bright red like blood. Above the desert, wild winds raged about, stirring up massive tornados of sand and creating great crimson seas that reached the heavens!

These wild winds contained an extremely powerful disintegrative and smothering power. Any Xiantian realm martial artist that was sucked into these sandstorms would be blown into pieces and suffer a horrifying death!

And above this blood red desert, the skies were also a deep red.

This was a divergent world. In the Sky Spill Continent, when one referred to a divergent world they could be referring to the Holy Demon Continent or even the Divine Realm. But in the Divine Realm, a divergent world often held a simple meaning – that was a Divine Realm mystic realm!

These different worlds had different Laws compared to a primary world of the Divine Realm, and there was also a space barrier that separated them. These mystic realms came in multiple layers with endless distances; they could even be called another universe.

When Lin Ming entered the God Beast Mystic Realm, that was only one of the countless mystic realms of the Divine Realm.

Although there were countless mystic realms in the Divine Realm, only a small portion of them had known entrances that connected to the Divine Realm primary worlds. The other mystic realms were either sealed off or their entrances were unknown.

Without a doubt, a mystic realm meant exorbitantly rich resources and fortuitous encounters. Because these mystic realms were incomparably ancient, many of them had a history that was longer and more wondrous than many great worlds of the Divine Realm.

These mystic realms had continuously gathered heavenly materials over an immeasurable span of time. Moreover, they were rarely visited. Thus, the amount of wealth accumulated within them could be imagined.

The entrance to this mystic realm with the limitless red desert was located at the main continent of True Martial World. It was referred to by others as the Red Desolate Mystic Realm.

This mystic realm was jointly governed by several influences of True Martial World.

At this time, above the desert, a number of martial artists had gathered in the air. There were around 700-800 of them that were scattered in small groups all over the vast red desert. From high above the skies, they looked no different to ants.

The overwhelming majority of these martial artists were at the Revolving Core realm, and the remainder were at the Divine Sea realm. Of the Divine Sea powerhouses, the ones with the highest cultivation among them were at the middle Divine Sea. Even then there were only several of them. The rest were at the early Divine Sea realm.

These people all seemed to be searching the desert. Once they made a discovery they would begin to excavate it. At times, they would dig out something similar to black crystals, and sometimes they would dig out small pieces of beast bones, spirit medicines, and even spirit plants. It was obvious that these people were all gathering resources in the mystic realm. As for those Divine Sea martial artists, although they also helped in gathering resources, their main duties were to oversee the operation and to stand guard over everyone else.

These martial artists were all disciples of True Martial World’s Carefree Island.

“Everyone hurry up as much as you can. We have less than an hour left until we are automatically transported out of here by the Laws of the Mystic Realm. We have to take advantage of this time we have left to gather as many resources as we can. Our harvests this time cannot be low!” The one who spoke was a young blue-clothed martial artist. He was clearly leading this group of excavators. His cultivation was at the peak of the middle Divine Sea and he was just a little bit away from breaking into the late Divine Sea realm.

“Yes!” The martial artists below responded in unison. It was clear that this blue-clothed martial artist had a great deal of prestige here.

“Perk up your minds and keep guard all around you! This final stretch of time is always the most dangerous of all. Be careful that those fellows from Splintersoul Mountain or the Occult Bone Clan don’t try to come and steal our spoils at the last moment!”

“Don’t worry Elder Senior-apprentice Brother. If anyone dares to steal from us we’ll slaughter them until they run away with their tails between their legs!” Several Divine Sea disciples casually chatted. But, one could see that they were in fact very nervous and vigilant, not seeming relaxed at all!

To a martial artist, resources were life. In a mystic realm of a divergent world, there was wealth to be found everywhere. But, this wealth was often found at the edge of life or death. There were countless extreme talents in the Divine Realm that had perished in these divergent world mystic realms!

Just as that disciple’s voice was heard, the blue-clothed youth captain’s expression suddenly changed. He looked up into the distance, and he could see that faintly, between the endless grains of blood red sand, there was the appearance of people’s shadows!

These people were menacingly rushing over. Their intentions were clearly bad!

As everyone else saw this, their complexions also changed.

“Splintersoul Mountain! Occult Bone Clan! So many… there must be 60-70 of them!”

“Heavens! How could there be so many!”

The disciples of Carefree Island felt a chill crawl down their backs. In this divergent world mystic realm, sending a Revolving Core martial artist here cost an extremely low price. But, for a Divine Sea martial artist to arrive here, they actually had to pay a massive number of violet sun stones. As for sending 60-70 of those people, that was truly an astronomical figure!

“They’ve come to steal our resources.”

“Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao, what do we do!?” Several Divine Sea martial artists cried out in panic. Although they were outstanding geniuses among martial artists of their level, their opposition wasn’t poor either. And facing numbers several times their own, once they fought, the results could be imagined.

The blue-clothed youth called Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao grit his teeth and shouted, “Fight! Although they are here to steal our resources, that doesn’t mean they’ll let us live even if we surrender. Fight with everything you have! We have less than an hour left until we’re transmitted out of here! If we can last until the end then we win!”

“Fight!”

“Kill!”

The 10 plus Divine Sea disciples of Carefree Island shot into the sky. A tragic and cruel battle soon commenced…

…………

“I’m here. This is True Martial World.” Lin Ming floated high above a light yellow continent. Looking from high up, he could see no limit to its ends. The place that Lin Ming had arrived at was not a planet, but the central continent of True Martial World!

Chapter 1074 – Carefree Island

Chapter 1074 – Carefree Island

…

…

…

Every great world of the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds had a central continent called the primary world. This primary world was a landmass of nearly unimaginable breadth, and was also considered the core of a Divine Realm great world. The heaven and earth origin energy here was the richest and the resources bred here were also of the highest quality. The number of people living on a primary world reached an incalculable number, the average strength of the martial artists was higher, and the inheritances they studied were also much better.

Even the common people practiced martial arts. If one walked into the marketplace of mortal nations, they would see Altering Muscle and Bone Forging realm martial artists everywhere. Even Houtian and Xiantian martial artists were relatively common.

If the foundation of people was excellent, then there would naturally be more masters and the sects would also be larger. Almost 90% of the Holy Lands were located on primary worlds.

Far above the seas of True Martial World's primary world, looking down, one could see vast and surging waves of mist with countless islands scattered all throughout. These islands came in various sizes. The smaller ones were a few dozen miles wide, and the larger ones were tens of thousands of miles wide, no smaller than a continent.

There was a particularly large cluster of islands; this cluster of islands was a quasi-Holy Land sect called Carefree Island.

The main island of Carefree Island was tens of thousands of miles wide, and there were also 36 branch islands. In this regard, it was similar to the Ancient Phoenix Clan's 72 branch palaces.

However, Carefree Island's overall power was far worse than the Ancient Phoenix Clan's. One was a peak Holy Land whereas the other one was a quasi-Holy Land.

According to how sects were divided in the Sky Spill Continent, a Divine Realm Holy Land would be considered a ninth-grade sect. But, Carefree Island was only an eighth-grade sect.

In other words, Carefree Island was two grades higher than the Demon God Imperial Palace of the past. Demon God Imperial Palace had taken Divine Sea realm powerhouses as Elders, whereas Carefree Island took Divine Lord powerhouses as Elders. But in the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Divine Lord realm powerhouses could only serve as branch palace Elders.

At this time, on a branch island that was several thousand miles wide, many martial artists were gathered, loosely spread. The younger ones were in their teens and the older ones were 30-40 years old. They were all outstanding geniuses amongst their peers.

They were on a blue stone road that curved up a mountain, slowly walking towards the entrance of a grand palace. Each of them had excitement written all over their face. If one walked amid this crowd, they would often hear conversations beginning with, 'my blah blah cultivation method has reached a blah blah boundary' or 'my blah blah comprehension of Laws has reached an incredibly blah blah degree'. These words were spoken with vivid passion, and there was occasionally the sound of surprised acclaim.

These young disciples were all preparing to cross Carefree Island's entrance examination.

As a sect, Carefree Island had to accept talented disciples from all walks of life. If they were a martial family then they would often only accept their own descendants and disciples. As for the Ancient Phoenix Clan and Ancient Dragon Clan, they were situated in between. As long as one had their respective God Beast bloodline and their martial talent wasn't too poor, then they could join no matter what their last name was or where they came from.

And in this group of people, there was a blue-clothed youth, calmly and firmly walking forwards, climbing the mountain with the many other young disciples.

This blue-clothed youth was Lin Ming.

On the journey here, he had followed Mo Eversnow's directions and passed through several ultra long distance transmission arrays before finally arriving here – Carefree Island.

Along the way, with the cost of powering the spirit ship and paying transmission array expenses, it had cost several hundred thousand violet sun stones to come here. Interstellar travel like this really wasn't something that an ordinary martial artist could hope to withstand.

Upon arriving at Carefree Island, Lin Ming wasn't stupid enough to think he would be able to boldly saunter into their headquarters and take away whatever resources he needed. After all, these were the accumulated resources of a quasi-Holy Land level sect. How could they simply give everything away?

Moreover, how to find Mo Eversnow's aunt was another problem. According to Mo Eversnow, her aunt was the hidden Highest Elder of Carefree Island and she had never appeared in public.

Let alone the common disciples, even most Elders of Carefree Island didn't know that such a character existed. This was also a reasonable matter. Mo Eversnow's aunt was the daughter of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands' old Holy Lord; she was on the same rank as Tian Mingzi. The two of them might have even been fellow apprentices. It was impossible for Tian Mingzi not to recognize her. In this situation, Mo Eversnow's aunt would have to remain hidden away and she certainly couldn't reveal herself. Otherwise, if she were to be discovered by

Tian Mingzi, then even this entire quasi-Holy Land level Carefree Island would be instantly razed to the ground.

In fact, only an extremely small minority of high level figures at Carefree Island knew of Mo Eversnow's aunt. If Lin Ming wanted to reach her, he would naturally have to go through some detours. But, with his current eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation, it wasn't easy for him to see the current Elders of Carefree Island. The only way to do so was to stir up trouble at Carefree Island. However, if he really did that then even a Divine Transformation realm talent of a large sect would be able to capture him. If he were to ask to see an Elder at that time then his requests would definitely not be accepted.

Thus, Lin Ming had to remain a bit more low-key. He would honestly enter Carefree Island and then raise his reputation. If he did that then he naturally would be able to contact the high level figures of Carefree Island.

"Eh? Hey there friend, you seem to come from a scattered martial family, your foundation is very solid! For you to have such a foundation coming from a random martial family isn't easy at all!" A sixth stage Life Destruction martial artist gaily said as he looked over Lin Ming.

As Lin Ming glanced back at this person, he could see that this youth also came from a free roaming background. In this way, the Divine Realm was similar to the lower realms. If one didn't have the support of a large sect then it was nearly impossible to cultivate to a high boundary.

The people that had come to participate in Carefree Island's entrance examination all had tremendous differences in their cultivation. The lowest were at the Xiantian realm, and the higher ones were at the seventh or eighth stage of Life Destruction. There were even several that were at a half-step Divine Sea.

However, the scene was a bit unusual. The Xiantian realm youths were all in high spirits and were calling out to each other like long acquainted friends, their expressions filled with glee and elation.

But as for those high stage Life Destruction martial artists, they didn't seem happy at all. Some of them even glared at those Xiantian realm disciples with envy on their faces.

This was because these Xiantian realm disciples were mostly outstanding juniors from martial families. Thus, while they were in their teens they decided to try and enter into Carefree Island. By seeking the support of a large sect they would be able to learn a better inheritance and also have a brighter future.

As for those high stage Life Destruction and half-step Divine Sea martial artists, they were mostly wandering martial artists. They had participated in this type of large sect entrance examination in their youths but were eliminated. Then, they wandered and wandered and eventually wandered their way into the higher stages of Life Destruction and then decided to test out their luck once again. Although many sects weren't willing to raise martial artists with low natural martial talent, they didn't mind accepting these high stage Life Destruction martial artists into their sects; they had considerable war strength.

Lin Ming had restrained his aura at this moment and his cultivation was also at the eighth stage of Life Destruction, thus he was naturally thought of as a wandering martial artist. Otherwise, it would be impossible for him to enter a large sect at such a late cultivation.

Lin Ming smiled, cordially responding with a few words. He didn't speak much. He continued to follow the group towards the summit of the mountain where everyone had stopped before the entrance.

Lin Ming swept his eyes around and discovered that several divine senses had covered over the group. He followed them back to their source and discovered that they originated from a group of five or six Divine Sea martial artists that were standing around 10 miles away. These Divine Sea martial artists were observing the group and commenting on them.

"It's about time. The examination can start now. But the ones entering this time don't seem too spectacular. Besides some martial family juniors, there are a few wandering martial artists that are acceptable..."

“Mm… there’s nothing we can do about it. These are orders from above. We have to loosen restrictions this time and accept an additional 30% of disciples. Half a month ago, Senior-apprentice Brother Xiao was attacked in the divergent world mystic realm. Over a dozen fellow apprentices went there but only six managed to make it back alive. Moreover, they were all severely wounded. As for those Revolving Core realm martial artists that were responsible for gathering the materials, most of them died. Currently, many of the disciples are too afraid to enter the divergent world mystic realm. We have to search for some fresh meat.”

“Humph, those gutless cowards. When the island sends the resources, each of them has eyes redder than a rabbit. But when it’s time to risk their lives, all of them shrink back in fear. Where is there such a good deed in this world? Let’s go! Let’s test these disciples and see if there’s anyone here that gives us a pleasant surprise.”

As these Divine Sea realm disciples spoke, they flew towards the entrance.

Shua shua shua!

Six shadows fell in front of the crowd, giving the younger martial artists a good scare.

Looking at these six people, their cultivations were all at the middle Divine Sea realm. There were even several among them with a Ninefall Divine Sea cultivation!

For these wandering martial artists and martial family juniors, a Ninefall Divine Sea master was a shocking strength! This was also the symbol of a large sect. It had to be known that when Lin Ming entered the Divine Realm and joined Phoenix Cry Palace, even though there were several hundred million Ancient Phoenix Clan clansmen that served as a base, there were only 20 Ninefall martial artists that were below 100 years of age. Huo Yanguang and Huang Yuegong were both considered ordinary amongst Ninefall martial artists, but their status was exorbitantly high in Phoenix Cry Palace!

And that was Phoenix Cry Palace. There was no need to mention those sixth and seventh-grade martial families. To them, a Ninefall talent was something that occurred every several hundred or even thousand years.

Chapter 1075 – Entering the Sect

Chapter 1075 – Entering the Sect

…

…

…

"Welcome, everyone. I am the host for this entrance examination. My last name is White, so you may call me Senior-apprentice Brother White. All of you have waited for a long time already. I won't mince words. First, those of you below 20 years of age who have a recommendation letter from a sixth-grade martial family or above may directly go and stand over there; you have passed."

The blue-clothed youth surnamed White languidly said. As he finished speaking, several Xiantian realm martial artists glanced at each other, happily standing out. They were two men and two women, all of them in their teens. They also seemed a bit puerile.

These four were all at the early Xiantian and middle Xiantian realm. Their families were influences that were subordinate to Carefree Island and they had the qualifications to be recommended to join Carefree Island. Although they knew that crossing the threshold with their family's recommendation wouldn't be a problem, they were still happy to be given such preferential treatment.

As everyone looked at these four geniuses, everyone, especially those wandering martial artists, revealed looks of envy. They were young, they were talented, and they had now even joined a large sect; their future was limitless. In the future it wouldn't be any problem for them to step into the Divine Transformation realm. They even had hopes of reaching the Divine Lord realm. This was far from what the other examinees could compare with.

The blue-clothed youth turned to everyone else and continued to say, “Alright then. Everyone else, follow me to the martial field!”

The blue-clothed youth turned and walked away with everyone quietly following behind. Before long, they arrived at a large square area. This was the so-called martial field. There was a large arena here as well as a giant protective array formation that surrounded the arena so people didn’t have to be careful of their every move.

And on this side of the martial field, there was a black palace. The gates of this black palace were carved with all sorts of tiny and mysterious runes. It was unknown just what was inside.

“You may start the examination now. The content of the examination is simple. That is... to defeat a red desolate ogre puppet!”

“A red desolate ogre? What is that?” Some wandering cultivators were startled upon hearing this. A faint foreboding feeling filled their chests, but as for what this red desolate ogre was, none of them knew.

“Hehe, this red desolate ogre is one of the types of creatures that live within the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. Their nature is cruel and brutal and their strength is immense. They love to pick up humans and rip them apart, limb by limb. The Red Desolate Mystic Realm is considered a great portion of the source of my Carefree Island’s resources. Many of Carefree Island’s alchemy and refining materials come from there! Every time a disciple of my Carefree Island enters the Red Desolate Mystic Realm and kills a red desolate ogre, they bring back the corpse so that they can be made into red desolate ogre puppets! Their body is as hard as divine iron and they do not know exhaustion, fear, sadness, or pain. They are all bloody killers, bred for battle. When you fight them you had all best be careful. Although I will step in to save your lives if need be, sometimes I cannot act in time and you will be seriously wounded. Breaking an arm or a leg here is highly likely!”

The blue-clothed youth wasn't trying to needlessly scare people. During every entrance examination there would always be people who would be severely wounded. These examiners wouldn't save someone until the very last moment.

"Okay. We're going to start now. You fellows will come up one at a time. I will arrange a corresponding red desolate ogre puppet as your opponent according to your cultivation! If you can defeat it or persist for an incense stick of time then you pass. Otherwise, you fail!"

"You, come out to the martial field!"

The blue-clothed youth pointed to the martial artist closest to him. And behind the blue-clothed youth, another disciple pushed open the gates to the black palace. Inside was pitch black darkness. Then, a pair of bright red eyes lit up, like two red lanterns at night.

With a terrifying roar, a 10 foot tall red desolate ogre puppet rushed out. This puppet was wrapped up in chains and its muscles were as hard and tight as black rock. Its fangs were half a foot long and sharp claws glinted on its hands!

"Red Desolate Mystic Realm, red desolate ogre..." Lin Ming looked at the ogre puppet. Without a doubt, the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was a mystic realm similar to the God Beast Mystic Realm, but the beings living inside each of them were completely different. The mystic realm demons in the God Beast Mystic Realm were existences of energy, and these red desolate ogres clearly had physical bodies.

Rahh!

The ogre puppet rushed forwards like a bolt of lightning. In an instant, it rushed towards the martial artist in front.

Hu – !

That martial artist was indeed shocked at the start. But for him to grow to this point, he had experienced a number of life and death battles in his time. He regained his wits and grasped a thick saber. He slashed down and a brilliant saber light cut towards the ogre puppet!

Peng!

The ogre puppet suddenly brought down its claws, crushing the saber light. Then, without slowing down, it seemed to teleport behind the martial artist's body and thrust a palm out!

The speed was far too quick. The martial artist simply wasn't able to respond. With only a loud clapping sound, the martial artist's protective true essence was smashed apart and he was sent flying away vomiting blood.

"Fail!"

The blue-clothed youth expressionlessly said. Beside him, another Divine Sea martial artist rang a small bell and whispered a few incantations. The originally bloodthirsty ogre puppet that was chasing after the martial artist to rip him apart suddenly stopped. Its eyes glazed over as it returned to the black palace in complete obedience.

"Next!" The blue-clothed youth pointed towards a second person. He looked over this person's cultivation and then without further ado another ogre puppet came out from the black palace!

Although these ogre puppets followed a different cultivation from humans, Lin Ming could faintly feel that these ogre puppets were around three small boundaries higher than their human opponents. It wasn't any surprise that those martial artists found them so difficult to contend with.

Without any suspense, the second person failed!

Third person, fail!

Fourth person, fail!

Gradually, those martial artists that hadn't yet gone up began to pale. The visual impact these ogre puppets left behind on them was too shocking. They were incomparably cruel and savage, and every time they struck they would cause their opponents to vomit blood! The martial artists wavered, unnerved. They knew their own abilities and realized that lasting against these ogre puppets was extremely difficult.

Even those several Xiantian young men and women who had entered Carefree Island due to recommendations from their families began to look sick and pale. They secretly estimated the strength of these ogre puppets in their hearts and they discovered that it would be a great hurdle to last an incense stick of time against them, much less defeat them. Trying to defeat these monsters would simply be a joke.

After seeing so many people try and fail, a middle Divine Sea disciple said with a sound transmission, "Senior-apprentice Brother White, isn't this a bit too difficult? The ogre puppets you choose are around three small boundaries higher than the disciples themselves. Weren't we short on manpower to enter the divergent world mystic realm, and thus we were ordered from above to lower the standards and allow more disciples in?"

"Junior-apprentice Brother, that is because you don't understand how human nature works. If they pass then they will be the same as us Carefree Island disciples. If we then send them on dangerous missions, they will not be happy nor willing. However, if they fail this examination they will be disappointed in their hearts. As long as we tell them that they can become official disciples by going into a divergent world mystic realm to complete some gathering task then they will all scramble to go, even if there is a great chance that their lives will be in danger."

"So that's how it is! Indeed, that makes sense. But this sort of method… it seems a bit villainous." The previously speaking disciple said, looking a bit sorry.

The blue-clothed youth glared at the disciple and coldly said, "Our Carefree Island is not some charity house. There are no free lunches in this world. If they want harvests, they naturally must pay the price! Because the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain have been joining forces to suppress us these past years, the central island isn't much better off.

The reserves of resources have been dwindling. If this continues then it will be impossible to make ends meet!"

"Ah… Senior-apprentice Brother's teachings are correct. I spoke out of turn." The disciple quickly said. It was clear that this blue-clothed youth was greatly respected.

As these examiners spokes with true essence sound transmissions, several more martial artists were eliminated. But, there were those among these people that were able to last for over 10 breaths of time. The blue-clothed youth paid special attention to these people. After this examination was over, he would offer to bring them into the sect. Of course, the premise of that was if they were willing to go to the divergent world mystic realm.

"Eh? Isn't that the son of the peak sixth-grade martial family, the Zheng Family's Zheng Shuang? He wasn't recommended by the Zheng Family?"

When a white-clothed youth with a heroic aura stepped on the martial field with a sword in hand, there was immediately a disciple who recognized him.

"He probably has confidence in his own strength. He wants to undergo the examination himself. Zheng Shuang's fame has spread quite far. That sword in his hand, that's a high-grade saint artifact. A peak sixth-grade family is truly wealthy!"

As several disciples spoke, Zheng Shuang had already started fighting with the ogre puppet. Facing an enemy that was several small boundaries higher than him, Zheng Shuang decided to adopt an evasive and defensive type of swordplay. This choice wasn't bad, however the ogre puppet was not only strong, it was also quick.

The ogre puppet was like a fierce and violent beast. It instantly rushed to Zheng Shuang's side, smashing down with its chain-twined body!

Bang!

The ground of the martial field exploded. Zheng Shuang was sent flying back by the explosive shock waves. However, just as his protective true essence was on the verge of bursting apart, he abruptly changed angle in mid air and slashed out with his sword!

“Sword Setting Mountains and Rivers!”

The angle of this sword strike was extremely tricky. The ogre puppet failed to dodge and the sword strike cut through its shoulder. But in that moment, Zheng Shuang felt as if his sword was stuck in a block of divine iron. The sword entered three inches into the ogre puppet’s body before being stuck in the muscles, unable to move any further.

The ogre puppet howled with rage. It brought its claw crashing down.

Zheng Shuang was alarmed. He wanted to pull back his sword and retreat, but no matter how he pulled, the sword wouldn’t come out. His complexion changed and he abandoned his sword. But in that moment, his protective true essence and clothes tore apart, and five bloody gashes were left on his shoulder!

Without the high-grade saint artifact, Zheng Shuang definitely had no ability to directly contend with the ogre puppet. He switched to a medium-grade saint artifact sword and constantly flit around. Finally, although he was struck several more times, he managed to last for an incense stick of time.

“Time is over! Qualified!”

The blue-clothed youth wasn’t surprised. He had actually seen Zheng Shuang before and had expected this result. Although the examination was difficult, there couldn’t be not a single person who qualified. Otherwise it would just be too unsightly a result.

“This Zheng Shuang is quite good. But, among the wandering martial artists there’s also one that seems quite fierce. He should be able to qualify too.” The blue-clothed youth turned his eyes to Lin Ming. In his opinion, Lin Ming’s foundation was extremely solid!

“You, come up for the examination.”

The blue-clothed youth said to Lin Ming. Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. According to the ongoing order it would still be a while until it was his turn. He didn't think the examiner would suddenly jump to him.

Lin Ming was certainly glad to be able to go on ahead of time. He didn't go straight to the martial field. Instead, he turned to the blue-clothed youth and asked, "Senior-apprentice Brother, before this examination starts I have a matter I would like to ask you."

"Mm?" The blue-clothed youth said, frowning. "What is it? Speak quickly."

"I would like to ask, in Carefree Island, what rank disciple has the right to request an audience with the Island Master, and to become such a disciple, what sort of result do I need to achieve in this examination?"

Lin Ming slowly asked. But, the blue-clothed youth was actually shocked. This question was completely against his expectations.

Chapter 1076 – Riverbliss Jadeheart

Chapter 1076 – Riverbliss Jadeheart

…

…

…

Carefree Island was a quasi-Holy Land level sect. At the main continent of True Martial World, the Island Master of Carefree Island could be called someone that ruled over their own considerable dominion. In the eyes of Carefree Island's ordinary disciples, he was a mythical existence, how could anyone see him just because they wanted to?

The blue-clothed youth stared at Lin Ming, "Could it be you want to see the Island Master?"

Lin Ming nodded without hesitation. He might not be able to reveal that he was searching for Mo Eversnow's aunt, but there was no reason he had to hide that he wanted to see the Island Master.

As Lin Ming nodded, the Divine Sea disciples present were shocked. This boy had certainly taken the wrong medicine. Just who did he think he was? He had only just arrived at Carefree Island yet already wanted to see the Island Master? The Island Master had gone into seclusion for such a long time that not even these disciples had seen him before.

The blue-clothed youth looked Lin Ming up and down, frowning. "Not everyone can see the Island Master. Only those on the Council of Elders are allowed an audience with the Island Master. As for disciples, your only chance is if you become one of the top direct disciples. Only then will you have the qualifications to request an audience with the Island Master. You also must wait until the Island Master is out of seclusion."

"Direct disciple? If my results on this entrance examination are good, can I become a direct disciple?"

After being questioned by Lin Ming again, the blue-clothed youth became a bit annoyed. "We'll speak again after you cross the entrance examination first! Listening to your words, it's as if you don't place this entrance examination in your eyes?"

The blue-clothed youth was clearly unhappy. Lin Ming's tone was far too casual. In truth, the entrance examination they presided over was for outer court disciples. Only those with outstanding results could become an inner court disciple. As for a direct disciple, the blue-clothed youth was also a direct disciple, but he wasn't even at the higher ranks of direct disciples, how could he possibly have such authority?

"This brat, I want to see just what capital you have." The blue-clothed youth's thoughts moved and with a deep and bass roar, a wild ogre puppet rushed out from the black palace. This ogre puppet was half the size of the previous ones, and it held an axe in its hands instead of iron chains. Its entire body was covered with long hair and its killing intent was overwhelming!

Although a red desolate ogre's cultivation system didn't include Life Destruction or the Divine Sea realms, if this ogre puppet's strength was converted to a human's, it would be equal to an early Divine Sea powerhouse. This was much more than three small boundaries higher than Lin Ming. The blue-clothed youth obviously knew that Lin Ming was extremely strong and didn't appreciate his attitude either, so he wanted to have Lin Ming suffer a bit.

Seeing this ogre puppet rush towards him, Lin Ming slowly raised two fingers as a spear and thrust them at the ogre puppet's neck!

Xiu!

The spear light extended into a beam of light that shot towards the approaching ogre puppet's throat!

This wasn't a casual spot that Lin Ming chose to attack. He discovered earlier that this ogre puppet had a much stronger defensive ability than anticipated. If he used the Phoenix Blood Spear he could naturally kill it without any problems, but this was only a freehanded attack that used true essence to simulate spear light. If he wanted to pierce through the ogre puppet's forehead or solid chests muscles, it wouldn't be all that easy. Eventually he chose the throat in order to make this kill as fast as possible and with the least amount of strength.

Puff!

The spear light penetrated the ogre puppet's throat, bringing with it a loose spray of blood. The ogre puppet continued to barrel towards Lin Ming with its momentum but it was easily dodged. It was already dead!

Bang!

A 15 foot ogre crashed down on the ground, causing a cloud of smoke and dust to rise up. On the side, the blue-clothed youth was shocked to the core and even the other martial artists participating in this entrance examination were dumbfounded. They thought Lin Ming would have to struggle with this ogre puppet so they wanted to see if he could last an incense stick of time. They never imagined he would clearly eliminate it, as if the ogre puppet was no different from a paper figurine.

"Is that really an ogre puppet?"

"Is the examination disciple purposefully helping him?"

"How could that be? Did you not see how unhappy those senior-apprentice brother examiners were. I'm already surprised they didn't try to ruin him from behind."

Under the arena, many martial artists discussed. In fact, this ogre puppet's strength had far surpassed the standard which was the reason why the several presiding disciples were even more stunned.

“You! Are you really a wandering cultivator?” The blue-clothed youth stared at Lin Ming, a bit of dread in his eyes. He could absolutely confirm that Lin Ming would become a Ninefall master in the future, and not even a normal Ninefall at that. He had instantly killed a Divine Sea level ogre puppet while only being at the eighth stage of Life Destruction. If he became a direct disciple with this sort of talent, he would absolutely be one of the peak talents of Carefree Island.

Such a person… the blue-clothed youth could not believe that such a person was a wandering cultivator.

After entering the Divine Realm for so long, Lin Ming’s lower realm aura was already completely covered over. He didn’t answer the question but instead asked, “I would like to see the Island Master. This senior-apprentice brother, can I trouble you to inquire for me?”

The blue-clothed youth fell deep into thought for a moment. He gazed at Lin Ming and said, “I can only notify an inner court Elder and ask if he can report this matter to the Island Master. As for whether or not the Island Master will see you, I can make no guarantees.”

The blue-clothed youth could see that Lin Ming didn’t come to pass the entrance examination from the start. If this sort of person went to any large sect, even a Divine Realm Holy Land, he would be able to easily become a direct disciple. Why would he join an entrance examination of Carefree Island?

The blue-clothed youth understood this and the others present weren’t idiots either. They all looked at Lin Ming with incredulity in their eyes. They hadn’t imagined that such a powerful character would randomly come join an entrance examination. As for those genius disciples of sixth and seventh-grade martial families, they were nothing but jokes in front of such a true peak talent.

“He can definitely become a Divine Lord in the future…”

“Not just a Divine Lord. He might even have a faint chance of becoming the greatest character of Carefree Island!”

Lin Ming ignored the discussions of these disciples. He said, “Ah, there’s also one more matter. If I could trouble senior-apprentice brother, when you report about this matter can you also include the name of a keepsake, Riverbliss Jadeheart.”

“Keepsake? Well, alright...” The blue-clothed youth’s thoughts stirred. He guessed that Lin Ming must have some sort of unknown relation with the Island Master. He might be the descendant of someone the Island master cared for, and because there was some problem in his family, he decided to come here to seek an audience with the Island Master himself. As he thought of this, his attitude towards Lin Ming shifted a great deal. This sort of person was related to the Island Master and was also a monstrous genius himself. He certainly didn’t want to recklessly offend such a person.

“This junior-apprentice brother, the message has already been relayed. Perhaps you would like to step into the grand hall and wait there?” The blue-clothed youth said in a friendly manner. Lin Ming naturally understood why this youth’s manner towards him changed. He laughed and said, “Then I’ll have to trouble senior-apprentice brother.”

Underneath the envious gaze of the other martial artists, Lin Ming arrived in a grand hall with a Divine Sea disciple to await the summons of the Island Master.

The truth was that the Riverbliss Jadeheart was a token that Mo Eversnow’s aunt had left with her. This was so that her aunt could recognize her and any of her future descendants. But Mo Eversnow’s body had been destroyed afterwards and all of her personal possessions were naturally destroyed in the proces. With everything turned to ash, the Riverbliss Jadeheart naturally wouldn’t exist anymore.

Even Carefree Island’s Island Master didn’t know about the Riverbliss Jadeheart, the word Riverbliss was the given name of Mo Eversnow’s aunt, Mo Riverbliss. He should be able to make the association.

Lin Ming didn’t worry. As long as the message was passed to the right people, the Island Master would meet with him.

As they waited in the grand hall, Lin Ming could actually feel a trace of restless unease from Mo Eversnow's soul fluctuations.

In Lin Ming's impression, Mo Eversnow was a decisive woman and every step she took she did with absolute resolution. She was an extremely cold and detached person, as if nothing much mattered to her at all. This was the first time Lin Ming sensed such intertwining and contradicting emotions within her; those of anticipation, anxiety, unease, fear, hope, and all sorts of other emotions.

"Miss Mo?" Lin Ming gently called out. Indeed, seeing one's loved ones after 50,000 years and after so much had changed would cause one to be filled with emotion. Moreover, Mo Eversnow didn't even know if her aunty was still alive.

"I'm fine. I was just thinking back of some events that happened in the past when we parted ways. I also don't know where my little sister is..." Mo Eversnow's eyes seemed to glaze over. In that great catastrophe, she had sent her little sister away and had bid her to live well. Would her little sister have come here to look for their aunt and stay?

In all likelihood, her little sister didn't even know that her soul form was saved from that disaster.

As Mo Eversnow thought of this she shook her head, darkly sighing. It was hard to describe with words the feeling of meeting her loved ones again after such a long time. Even if her heart was as cold as a field of snow, it would still melt at this time.

"Apprentice Nephew Lin?" After Lin Ming waited for an hour, a gray-clothed old man appeared in the grand hall. He already knew Lin Ming's name.

"That is this junior."

"Haha, the Island Master has summoned you. Please follow me!" The gray-clothed old man sized up Lin Ming. He heard from the blue-clothed youth how great Lin Ming's talent was and also that he had some unknown relationship with the Island Master. He naturally had a curious interest towards him.

“Yes.”

Lin Ming was ecstatic. He rose up and followed the gray-clothed old man. The two of them passed through a transmission array and arrived at the main island of Carefree Island.

The total area of the main island was larger than the other 36 branch islands combined. Besides Carefree Palace, there were also a massive number of common mortals living on this island. These mortals were similar to Phoenix Cry Palace’s mortal disciples. They began training since childhood, and their training conditions were also quite good. The most excellent amongst them would be chosen to enter Carefree Palace.

The ash-clothed old man flew through the air with Lin Ming in tow. The old man looked back at Lin Ming and casually asked, “Apprentice Nephew Lin, are you a descendant of someone close to Island Master Xiao?”

Lin Ming responded, “This junior is a distant relative of Island Master Xiao. My family can be regarded as a collateral branch.”

This was the excuse he had come up with originally. He certainly couldn’t bring up Mo Riverbliss, so he decided to pose as the Island Master’s distant relative. Such an identity was reasonable while it also wouldn’t bring too much attention to him.

“Haha, as they say, heroes come from the young. The Island Master’s relative is astoundingly strong.” The gray-clothed old man praised. “Ah, we’ve arrived.”

The gray-clothed man pointed towards a massive floating palace in front of them. This palace was a deep blue crystal color, as if the entire structure had been carved from sapphire.

Looking from afar, Lin Ming discovered that the entire palace was a magic tool, and it was also at the spirit artifact rank. It was similar to Phoenix Cry Palace’s Saint Artifact Pavilion. With this sort of spirit artifact level palace in play, if an enemy attacked, those within would hold the complete advantage.

Chapter 1077 – Reunion

Chapter 1077 – Reunion

…

…

…

Lin Ming followed the gray-clothed man into Carefree Palace, all the way forwards. Lin Ming could feel the countless array formations layered upon every inch of Carefree Palace. There were numerous time and space tunnels leading to other zones and pathways just like an endless labyrinth. If these array formations were activated and managed by a powerhouse, even a late Divine Lord master would be instantly twisted to death.

The gray-clothed old man brought Lin Ming flying into Carefree Palace for some time before finally stopping at the entrance doors of a hall. He gestured forwards. This gray-clothed old man was only able to send him this far.

Lin Ming thanked the old man and then pushed the doors open, walking inside. As he looked behind these doors, he was surprised to find what seemed like another world through them, incomparably broad, as if it were a separate space and time. Lin Ming could even hear the roars of massive ancient vicious beasts in the distance. He didn't know whether these roars were sounds produced by the array formation or if they were true great beasts that were raised in this spirit artifact; it was truly shocking.

In this world, there was a green-clothed young woman already waiting. She faintly smiled as she saw Lin Ming and said, "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, I am a disciple of Carefree Island, Ye Rosewater. Please wait here. The Island Master will soon arrive."

The young woman formed a seal and sent it out with a sound transmitting talisman. This was clearly a message to the Island Master. Lin Ming looked over the green-clothed woman again. She had a late Divine Sea cultivation and her talent was also quite good. For her to appear in Carefree Palace and in this place, that was enough to prove she was an important figure of Carefree Island, and her status was higher than that gray-clothed old man that led him here.

Not long after the sound transmitting talisman was sent out, ripples began to appear in the space around them. A white-clothed youth with a long sword strapped to his waist languidly strolled out from the void.

This person wasn't tall and his aura was completely collected. His eyes were bright and profound, like a lake without a bottom.

Without a doubt, this young man was Carefree Island's Island Master. From his appearance alone he seemed to be less than 20 years old. Of course, for this person to reach the level of Carefree Island's Island Master, it was no longer possible to judge his age by his appearance.

As Lin Ming stood in front of Carefree Island's Island Master, he didn't feel any pressure from any kind of aura at all. Instead, he felt as though this young man were quite friendly and amiable. If Lin Ming didn't know of his status ahead of time, he might have even thought him to be a common mortal scholar.

"Rosewater, you may leave." The white-clothed youth said, waving his hand towards Ye Rosewater.

"Yes, Island Master."

Ye Rosewater bowed, excusing herself. In this world, there was only the white-clothed youth and Lin Ming left behind.

The white-clothed youth deeply glanced at Lin Ming. As their eyes met each other, the white-clothed youth's aura suddenly changed. His bright and deep eyes seemed to connect to the endless void of space, as if they were trying to suck Lin Ming in. In that moment, Lin Ming felt as if he had been completely seen through without any secrets remaining.

Lin Min was startled. His thoughts focused on his spiritual sea and his gold battle spirit shook, his mind stabilizing along with it. After experiencing the aura of Huo Violentstone, a Holy Lord level powerhouse, Lin Ming was just barely able to deal with the aura released by this white-clothed youth.

"Eh...?" The white-clothed youth was stunned. His eyes flashed with a trace of disbelief. "Your battle spirit actually reached such a boundary at such an age! Just who are you?"

"I am Lin Ming. I have a matter that I wish to speak to Senior Mo Riverbliss about."

"Mo Riverbliss!" Although the white-clothed youth already expected this from the start, his pupils still shrank upon hearing Lin Ming speak out this name. "The keepsake! Have you brought it?"

The keepsake that the white-clothed youth mentioned was naturally the Riverbliss Jadeheart, Mo Eversnow's Riverbliss Jadeheart. In truth, that keepsake had already been destroyed 50,000 years ago. Just as Lin Ming was wondering how to answer, a long sigh echoed through the vast space. "Skywhite, there is no need to ask any further, bring him to see me. I sense a familiar aura around him, it shouldn't be wrong."

As this voice sounded out, Lin Ming could clearly feel Mo Eversnow's divine soul in his body tremble. Without a doubt, the one who spoke was Mo Riverbliss.

"This... I understand." The white-clothed youth sent out a wave of light that covered Lin Ming. Lin Ming felt a bit dizzy before suddenly arriving at a spring paradise.

The scenery here was like a landscape painting, with majestic mountains and rivers drawn throughout. Spirit flowers bloomed everywhere. It looked like a fairy tale come to life. In this paradise, there was a green bamboo house. Although the bamboo had been cut down a long time ago, they were still clear and hard like exquisite jade. They seemed moist and vivid, with a light fragrance that gladdened the heart.

A white-clothed old woman stood before this bamboo house, holding onto a long peach walking stick that was as high as a man. Her eyes locked onto Lin Ming.

Before Lin Ming spoke, a beam of white light shot out from his body and turned into the silhouette of a woman. The image solidified, arriving before the old woman's body like the wind and bowing.

"Aunty..."

50,000 years had passed. The Verdant Feather Holy Lands had long ago turned to dust that was swept up by history. Upon seeing her dear family again, Mo Eversnow could feel the roiling emotions underneath her veneer slowly gush over. Her beautiful eyes trembled. Originally she had even steeled herself to learn that Mo Riverbliss had died. But now that she saw her aunty well and alive, her heart filled with a palpable excitement.

The white-clothed old woman had only felt a familiar aura from Lin Ming's body. She never imagined she would see Mo Eversnow, her niece that she thought had died long ago. But before she had time to bask in her happiness, she saw that Mo Eversnow had no mortal body, and all that was left of her was her divine soul!

For a time, countless conflicting emotions swelled up in Mo Riverbliss's heart.

50,000 years!

Although this numeral seemed distant and strange, one only had to look at how often a mortal dynasty changed to see how significant it was. A mortal dynasty changed every 500 years. 50,000 years was 100 dynasties. That was enough for a mortal civilization to rise and fall!

The passing of time, the tides of the years, things remain the same and yet people have already changed, everything seemed as if it happened a lifetime ago.

Tears silently fell down Mo Riverbliss's face. She stretched out her hand to touch Mo Eversnow's face, but as she reached her cheeks she actually couldn't touch anything at all.

Such a desolate and empty feeling caused a pang of pain in Mo Riverbliss's heart, as if someone had thrust a knife through her chest. She was unable to imagine what happened to Mo Eversnow and what she had experienced in order for her to turn into the current state, where she couldn't even touch her!

"Everything's fine now that you're back, everything's fine now," Mo Riverbliss said, choking on her tears. She could imagine just what misery, pain, and suffering Mo Eversnow had gone through all this time. Her physical body, her divine form that was the envy of countless geniuses, was not lost. But as she thought back to how her niece had been chased down by Tian Mingzi and so many other Divine Realm powerhouses, how could she not be content that her niece had managed to keep her complete divine soul?

"Brightmoon, what about Brightmoon?" Although all sorts of thoughts and feelings gushed out in Mo Eversnow's heart, she had no mortal body so she didn't have the ability to weep. She suddenly thought of her sister, Mo Brightmoon. In truth, when she saw Mo Riverbliss she didn't see Mo Brightmoon. Mo Eversnow had an ominous and disappointed feeling in her heart, but she still had to ask even if there was no hope.

"Brightmoon, she..." Mo Riverbliss shook her head, her eyes seeming bleak. "She last came back 30,000 years ago, and that was also the last time I saw her. She didn't believe that you died. She said that even if she had to search to the ends of the heavens or the edges of the seas, she would still find you."

Mo Eversnow felt her heart gripped upon hearing Mo Riverbliss's words. Her eyes flashed with a brief confusion. She hadn't come back for 30,000 years? Just where could she have gone to? Could she have experienced some kind of accident....?

With aunty and niece meeting once again, there were countless things that needed to be said. However, none of them knew where to begin.

Seeing this, the white-clothed youth sighed. He had also correctly guessed Mo Eversnow's identity. If that were so, there naturally wasn't any problem with Lin Ming himself.

The white-clothed youth turned to Lin Ming and said, “Let’s leave. Let the two of them catch up after all this time.”

Lin Ming nodded. In the next moment, a white light wrapped around him and the two of them returned to the hall of Carefree Palace where Ye Rosewater was waiting for them.

“Rosewater, go and help Lin Ming settle down. Prepare a long term residence for him at Carefree Pavilion.”

“Carefree Pavilion?”

Ye Rosewater was slightly startled as she heard the orders. She turned to Lin Ming and said, “Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, please follow me.”

As Ye Rosewater spoke she flew upwards, bringing Lin Ming to leave Carefree Palace. They passed through several mountain ranges before finally descending into a deep mountain valley.

A thick mist filled the mountain valley. As Lin Ming stepped down, he could feel that the heaven and earth energy was extremely pure and rich here. The reason for the fog was that the heaven and earth origin energy was far too rich so it naturally condensed into tiny droplets.

Compared to the wild and potent heaven and earth origin energy in most of the Divine Realm, the heaven and earth origin energy here was extremely calm and quiet.

In this hazy mist, he could faintly make out rows of peach wood pavilions. They were ancient, courtly, and incomparably refined.

“What a wonderful place. The land of Carefree Pavilion is where reclusive individuals would long to live for in their dreams.”

Ye Rosewater walked over to a peach wood pavilion. She turned and glanced over at Lin Ming, then said, “Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you will be staying here from now on. What do you think?”

Lin Ming glanced at the pavilion and said, “The heaven and earth origin energy here is extremely rich and vibrant. I fear that even in the entirety of Carefree Island this is one of the best places to live. I have no idea how many disciples would dream of staying here. I’m flattered I’m allowed to live here, so there is nothing that I am dissatisfied about.”

“Great.” Ye Rosewater chuckled. She raised her hand and the characters on the peach wood pavilion’s signboard changed. It had originally read ‘Free Jun Pavilion’, and now it read ‘Free Ming Pavilion’.

Lin Ming was startled. He didn’t think that Ye Rosewater would suddenly place his name onto the pavilion signboard. But as he thought about it some more, every pavilion they passed just now likely had their own corresponding name.

Ye Rosewater was clearly skilled in Wood Laws. Changing the characters on a signboard was a trivial task for her.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, please stay here for now. There will be special maids sent to bring you any daily necessities and meals. If you have any matter to discuss with me, feel free to look for me; I live just next door.” Ye Rosewater smiled. After Lin Ming nodded, she turned away. Her pale hands grasped each other, nearly touching her inky black hair that hung to her waist. She sashayed away at a brisk pace.

Lin Ming walked inside the newly crowned Free Ming Pavilion and found the interior to be extraordinary. There were over a dozen rooms, each one was elegant and unique in their own away. There was also a spirit spring in the rear courtyard, with flower petals floating on the water surface. Thick and rich spirit energy filled the senses. If one could bathe here every day, the advantages to one’s cultivation could be imagined.

“This Carefree Island is quite generous with me. Since Senior Mo Riverbliss was found here, Miss Mo will likely stay at Carefree Island for some time. Since I’ll have to stay here too, I should take advantage of this time and absorb the dragon bone.”

Chapter 1078 – His Skin Is Not of Ordinary Thickness

Chapter 1078 – His Skin Is Not of Ordinary Thickness

…

…

…

In the past when Lin Ming absorbed the dragon marrow and the Asura King's source energy, his body had reached the limit. It was impossible to eat heavenly materials without end; he would be unable to absorb them at some point. For the left over dragon bone, Lin Ming had to slowly fuse with it.

"The resources that Miss Mo left behind are divided into the body transformation system and the essence gathering system. The essence gathering system resources were collected at Carefree Island, and they are also what I need to break through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction," Lin Ming thought out loud.

Because he dual cultivated in body and energy, his body was incomparably solid and durable. It was far harder for him to make breakthroughs in Life Destruction than an ordinary martial artist. As for breaking through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction, that was at least a hundred times more difficult than it would be for others!

If he were to fuse the supreme dragon bone as well as open another one of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates before attempting to cross Ninefall, the difficulty would rise to an unbelievable degree!

Ultimately, the rules of the universe had changed some inestimable period of time ago, and now those that chose to dual cultivate in body and energy could be said to be defying the will of the heavens. How could this be empty talk? In the past, there were even top geniuses that were far too confident in their own talent and recklessly chose to embark on this dangerous path, only to be trapped in the Life Destruction realm. Finally, they had no choice but to cripple and break up their body transformation cultivation and continue cultivating the essence gathering system.

To be like Mo Eversnow and have a half-step World King cultivation as well as being close to opening the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, that was simply a miracle among miracles.

The further one went in the body transformation system, the harder it was to cross into Ninefall. With Lin Ming's current situation, once he opened the Gate of View, he'd have opened six of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, only missing the Gate of Life and the Gate of Death. As for the Gate of Life and the Gate of Death, they were called the true life and death threshold. The difficulty to open them was on a completely different level, and these two gates were much more powerful. They were each equal to half a large boundary in the body transformation system. If Lin Ming completely opened the first six gates, that was the same as completing a certain goal of the body transformation system; his bodily physique would experience a qualitative leap upwards, but at the same time it would also become far more difficult to break into the ninth stage of Life Destruction.

However, the more difficult it was to step into the ninth stage of Life Destruction, the greater the advantages would be. The body would be tempered much more thoroughly. Especially after fusing with the dragon bone; whether it was Lin Ming's body transformation system or essence gathering system, it would hold incalculable advantages to him.

For Ninefall, Lin Ming would need to have the support of a terrifying amount of resources. Otherwise, it would be impossible for him to succeed.

In the end, the current Lin Ming was going against the heavens!

Lin Ming submerged himself into the spirit spring in the rear courtyard and entered into a contemplative state. What he didn't know was that at this time, in Carefree Palace, there was actually a special meeting being assembled because of him. Those people participating in this meeting were either inner court Elders, peak direct disciples, the Highest Elders of Carefree Palace, the several Vice Island Masters, and even the Island Master himself, Xiao Skywhite.

"Island Master Skywhite? Are you playing a joke on us? You want to take Carefree Island's destiny stabilizing treasure, the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree and give it away to an outsider? The Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree is an incomparably supreme divine medicine! In this world, such a divine medicine is unique, singular!"

As Xiao Skywhite slowly laid out the reason for this meeting, the Council of Elders' Great Elder Xiao Haogan asked this question, his eyes wide as if he didn't dare to believe his own ears.

The Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree was Carefree Island's most precious divine object, without anything else even coming close. It was a treasure used to stabilize Carefree Palace's destiny. Moreover, the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree would produce ten fruits every 1000 years. These fruits would be plucked and made into wine using a special technique. This wine would be rewarded to the sect's most outstanding disciples. The Ten Severing Fruit Wine was extremely valuable. Without them, there might have been disciples that would never have broken into the Divine Lord realm.

Not just that, but Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan were already joining forces to suppress Carefree Island. If they actually handed out the divine treasure they used to stabilize the destiny of their sect, wasn't that the same as being told to roll over and die?

Xiao Skywhite frowned, not answering. But then, the Elders of the Council of Elders began to whisper among each other, all of them were panicked and confused and everything was in chaos. None of them could believe Xiao Skywhite's decision!

As for the core disciples, they were even more appalled. In the future, to make further progress, they would have to rely on the Ten Severing Fruit Wine!

“Everyone quiet!” Xiao Skywhite shouted. His voice contained true essence that spread through everyone like a strong breeze, immediately silencing all the Elders and core disciples.

Once the entire grand hall was calmed down and silent, Xiao Skywhite slowly spoke, “It seems that all of you have forgotten. When the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree was planted 50,000 years ago, my father told me that it did not belong to my Carefree Island. Rather, it was placed here by a benefactor. There would be a day when this benefactor would return for it. Did you all forget this? For these last tens of thousands of years since the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree was planted, we have been able to pluck the Ten Severing Dao Fruits. This has even faintly helped to improve the destiny of our sect. In all these years, geniuses have poured forth from our sect and now our sect is only a step away from becoming a Holy Land. The reason for this is that we have received the graciousness of that person. Did you all think the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree would always remain planted on Carefree Island?”

As Xiao Skywhite spoke, everyone froze for a moment before remembering this. Indeed, they knew of this. It was just that the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree was planted at Carefree Island such a long time ago that they nearly forgot that this divine tree never belonged to Carefree Island to begin with.

“So what’s the meaning of this? That person has come back to take away the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree?”

The Great Elder’s thoughts stirred. He suddenly recalled the report relayed to him by a disciple responsible for the entrance examinations. An extremely talented young man with an eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation had entered Carefree Island to request an audience with Xiao Skywhite. He also called himself a distant relative. This was most likely the person!

“Is it the youth with the eighth stage of Life Destruction? Is he the descendant of that mysterious person from the past?”

Xiao Skywhite remained silent, quietly acquiescing.

Realization stirred up the Great Elder. “It’s true that the Ten Severing Dao Fruit is not ours, but it has already been planted at my Carefree Island for the last 50,000 years. Does he think he can just take it away because he wants to?”

“That’s right! We have helped store it for them for 50,000 years and yet they want to just take it away. Where is the justice in that!?”

Another Elder echoed in agreement. However, more Elders stayed quiet. Although they definitely didn’t want the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to be taken away, their skin wasn’t so thick that they could raise their voices. Although they had helped ‘store’ the tree for 50,000 years, the truth was that they obtained massive benefits from it. For those benefits to now be suddenly taken away, they definitely didn’t want that to happen. Of course, this was also a completely natural matter.

To give a cup of rice was grace and to fight for a cup of rice was enmity. Once one obtained a benefit from others and was used to it, if that benefit disappeared, that kindness would turn to anger.

At this time, a purple-clothed youth asked, “Elders, may this disciple speak?”

The one who spoke was the top direct disciple. In truth, this purple-clothed youth’s status was even higher than a normal inner court Elder. It was only that he was a junior so by customs he wasn’t allowed to interrupt a meeting.

“Speak.” The Great Elder said. This purple-clothed youth was named White Mirrorjade and he was an extremely favored disciple. He would likely become one of the top figures of Carefree Island, and he even had a chance of becoming the next Island Master.

White Mirrorjade politely bowed as a junior did, then began to slowly speak, "This disciple believes that if the descendant of the mysterious person that left behind the Sovereign Dao Fruit Tree comes to our Carefree Island after 50,000 years to take it away, there must have been some sort of accident. Otherwise, it's impossible for such a long period to pass. As for that mysterious person, they have likely died by now. As for his descendant, they likely found some letter left behind by this mysterious person detailing the matter. It is likely that countless generations have already separated that mysterious person from his descendant. By depending on this alone, for this descendant to come to Carefree Island to demand the return of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit True, that is far too ridiculous."

"Since ancient times, those with strength and those with the destiny were able to take and occupy heavenly materials. But that junior called Lin Ming is only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction. No matter how great his talent is, how high can his combat strength really be? This disciple also believes that this Lin Ming doesn't have some supreme elder supporting him from behind. Otherwise, if he came here to do something so important as taking back the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, he surely would have brought a master for a display of shocking strength. If such a top character were to come demand the return of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, the process would be much smoother. One could see from this that there is no one supporting Lin Ming; there is only him."

"In this case, even if he obtains the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, it will be impossible for him to keep it. A man's wealth is also his ruin. He will surely bring upon himself a calamity because of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. He will be cursed to death by the divine tree. That is because his fate is too shallow, that is because he cannot withstand the destiny of the divine tree! If we do not return the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to him, in truth, we are helping him. This can also be considered as returning the kindness of that mysterious person from the past."

"As for my Carefree Island, we are thriving, and every single day we make more and more progress. Now we're just half a step away from becoming a true Holy Land level sect. With the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree supporting us, we'll become even more powerful, and our strength can also handle it. As for a lucky chance, for us to obtain the Ten Severing Dao Fruit

Tree 50,000 years ago and for the mysterious person who left it with us to die, that is our lucky chance. The heavens themselves have granted the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to my Carefree Island. If we do not accept the gift of the heavens, that will instead bring upon us misfortune. If we were to give away the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to a junior whose strength is negligible, causing him to die, that would be the most stupid sort of behavior. That is the same as cutting off the hope for our Carefree Island to become a Holy Land."

"Also, 50,000 years ago when the Ten Severing Dao Fruit was planted, we also had to use up a massive amount of celestial spirit water to nourish it. Only then did it begin to produce the Ten Severing Dao Fruits. How could we just give it away so easily after all that?"

White Mirrorjade's words were clearly eloquent enough to turn black to white and switch good to evil, but his words were even plausible and backed up with undeniable logic, as if keeping the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree would actually be the greatest kindness to Lin Ming. As the Elders heard this, all of them were stunned. When the Great Elder spoke, he obviously shed all face and pretense of cordiality in not wanting to give up the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, so no one spoke up. But now that White Mirrorjade spoke, there were some truths mixed into his words and he had even taken the side of justice and morality. He had come up with all sorts of reasons that the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree should stay here; really, it was enough to leave one gawking.

Ye Rosewater, the one who brought Lin Ming to Carefree Pavilion, was sitting beside White Mirrorjade. As she heard him speak, she was left stunned. She sighed and thought to herself, "This man, his skin is not of ordinary thickness."

Chapter 1079 – To Make Things Difficult

Chapter 1079 – To Make Things Difficult

…

…

…

“What Mirrorjade said makes a great deal of sense!” As the Great Elder heard White Mirrorjade’s words, he praised him without hesitation. “Good. Then, if we do not return the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, that is the same as protecting him! Also, we’ve paid no small price in order to defend the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree these past years. Although we’ve managed to block off all news of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree and keep it highly confidential, this news did leak out 10,000 years ago. Because of that, a powerful influence tried to move against our Carefree Island and steal away the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. The old Island Master paid a great price to invite a half-step World King master here to personally manage the array formations of Carefree Palace; only then were we able to repel that powerful influence. Without us, how could the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree still be safe!?”

The Great Elder suddenly recalled the great war that had been stirred up 10,000 years ago for the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree and found another reason to keep it.

From the start, Xiao Skywhite had been watching on from the sidelines with icy eyes. As he heard the Great Elder mention the war of 10,000 years ago, he sneered and said, “The truth is that there is a matter I’ve hidden from you all. 10,000 years ago, in the war of our sects, it wasn’t my father who hired a master to come and help us. Rather, that half-step World King was significantly related to the mysterious person who left behind the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree and that was the only reason they helped us. Really, did you all think it was so easy to invite a half-step World King powerhouse?”

“What?”

As Xiao Skywhite spoke, everyone was left shocked. The Great Elder’s eyes widened like he had swallowed down a pound of arsenic, staring on speechlessly with flummoxed eyes.

The Great Elder thought for a moment and said, “Impossible! That’s impossible! If that mysterious person really had the ability to take back the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, then why would he wait for such a long time? Just who would leave such a divine tree at some place without taking it back for 50,000 years and even help to protect it! I do not believe that someone would be kind-hearted to such an extent! Moreover, he actually sent an eighth stage Life Destruction junior to come and request to take back the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree! Isn’t that just a joke? Island Master Xiao, I know that the old Island Master is your father and you do not wish to violate the promises you made, but that doesn’t mean you have to come up with such baseless reasons like this! If you feel sorry then there are also other ways in which we can compensate that boy Lin Ming.”

After hearing Xiao Skywhite’s words, the Great Elder’s expression softened a bit but he clearly didn’t believe the given reasons.

At this point, White Mirrorjade seemed to nonchalantly say, “That Lin Ming is extremely talented. In the future, the boundary he reaches might be no less than mine. If we give him too many benefits and also allow him to leave Carefree Island, he might not remember our kindness nor understand that we are trying to protect him. On the contrary, he might bear a grudge for not being able to take back the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. After a thousand years, when he’s grown, he might return and…”

White Mirrorjade let his words trail off as he spoke. However, those present weren’t idiots; they naturally understood the meaning behind them. This move was truly ruthless. This man was merciless to the extreme!

Great Elder Xiao Haogan’s eyebrows jumped up. But, what White Mirrorjade said was true. If they gave Lin Ming some compensation and allowed him to leave then that was the same as releasing the tiger to the mountain. This would only bring trouble in the future. It would be good if he didn't manage to grow, but once he did he would surely bring a calamity back to them. This was what people meant when they said that a truly great man had to be ruthless and their actions also had to be decisive. They could not allow themselves to be shackled down by ideas of morality and justice, otherwise they would reap what they sowed!

"Island Master Xiao, how about this. If you want to follow the wishes of the old Island Master then you can return the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to that boy, and then you can be considered as having completed your father's will. Then, I will send some people to take back the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. Wouldn't that be perfect? The Divine Realm is a jungle where strength is the only law. Isn't people killing and robbing others something that happens all the time?"

As Xiao Skywhite saw Xiao Haogan and White Mirrorjade become increasingly cruel in their words, his eyebrows jumped up. Mo Riverbliss was also watching this meeting from Carefree Palace!

However, Mo Riverbliss had a special status; she couldn't appear before these people. In the war of 10,000 years ago, she had changed her appearance and risked herself to help when she had no other choice. But if she appeared again, and with the ruckus around the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree added on, then that would surely arouse a great deal of interest and make things that much more dangerous for her!

After all, Mo Riverbliss was a character who was just a bit away from becoming a World King. Even though the Divine Realm was immeasurably vast, this news would spread far.

Xiao Skywhite certainly didn't want Mo Riverbliss to appear, but he was not the only one in Carefree Island. It was difficult for him to handle all of these people. Even though there were many Elders that wouldn't outwardly oppose returning the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree because of their ideas of morality, they would still pull their support after being convinced by Xiao Haogan and White Mirrorjade.

Xiao Skywhite deeply glared at the Great Elder and White Mirrorjade. Then, he slowly said, "You want to kill someone and steal their wealth? I fear that before you can do that, you will have already died! Some matters are beyond the scope of your understanding. She will have scruples about some matters, but if you dare to touch her bottom line you will die without even having known how you died. Do not blame me for not having reminded you!"

Xiao Skywhite's words began to contain a clear killing content. The Great Elder shrank back, his back going cold, and even White Mirrorjade stiffened, fidgeting about. Xiao Skywhite's words seemed random, but they weren't lies meant to scare them.

Who was this 'she'?

If there really was such an existence, then why would she place the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree at Carefree Island for 50,000 years, and then send some junior to take it back when she wanted it returned?

After Xiao Skywhite spoke, he left in a fit of anger. The old Island Master was his father, but thousands of years ago he had gone wandering the universe to seek adventure and a turning point to break through to the next boundary. As for Xiao Skywhite, his records of qualifications and merits were lacking, thus he couldn't control the situation in the sect.

Moreover, Xiao Skywhite knew that behind Great Elder Xiao Haogan, there was actually the three Highest Elders supporting him. In other words, if he wanted to return the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree then he would have to suppress these three Highest Elders first. Each one of them was a cornerstone of Carefree Island.

"Senior Mo..."

As Xiao Skywhite returned to the mystic realm in Carefree Palace, he stood in front of the bamboo house and called out with a bit of shame.

"Mm... there's no need to say anything. I have an approximate understanding of the situation. In truth, when I agreed to place the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree in the keeping of Carefree Palace 50,000 years ago, I already expected that something like this would happen. But, I still did so because Carefree Island is the escape path for the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. In the future, if Eversnow wishes to reform the Verdant Feather Holy Lands she must take Carefree Island as the foundation. Thus, Carefree Island’s strength is naturally important.

“The Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree is Carefree Island’s dragon vein, its vital treasure. To take it away is the same as tearing out that dragon vein, and it will also have an enormous effect on Carefree Island’s destiny; it will even slow down Carefree Island on its path to becoming a Holy Land. I naturally wouldn’t make such a decision easily, and I definitely wouldn’t use brute strength to kill those factions that oppose it. This is because my decision is related to whether or not the Verdant Feather Holy Lands will be able to smoothly reconstruct itself in the future. I can’t be careless with the choices I make.”

Xiao Skywhite relaxed and let out a sigh of relief upon hearing Mo Riverbliss’ words. He had thought that Mo Riverbliss would support Mo Eversnow without reserve, but as he thought about it, to Mo Riverbliss, both Carefree Palace and Lin Ming were important; both were the meat of her palm. Even with Mo Eversnow here she wouldn’t immediately or easily give the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to Lin Ming. Rather, she needed to observe him to make sure that he had enough talent and strength to shoulder the great responsibility that was the future reformation of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. Only after doing that would she make her decision.

As for the meeting today, that was just to make sure that the Elders of the opposing factions were mentally prepared, lest there be confusion in the upper echelons of Carefree Island if the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree was suddenly taken away.

Xiao Skywhite felt much more at ease as he thought of this. At the minimum, he didn’t have to worry about some people enraging Mo Riverbliss and causing her to kill some of them in secret. This would place Carefree Palace, which was already experiencing troubles, in an even more tenuous position! Moreover, if high level powerhouses of Carefree Island were to suddenly die, this would surely cause panic. With the threat of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan constantly looming over them, if they weren’t careful this would even cause damage to Carefree Island’s very foundation.

Xiao Skywhite excused himself. Then, in that bamboo house, Mo Eversnow appeared in front of Mo Riverbliss, her soul form slowly floating in the air. With her slender feet peeking out of her long dress, she seemed like an immortal fairy fluttering through the wind, elegant and untainted by the world.

“Aunty… you seem like you don’t believe Lin Ming?” Mo Eversnow said in a soft tone. Although her face was calm, there was a trace of exasperation in her eyes, barely perceptible. She was clearly not too pleased with Mo Riverbliss’ methods.

As Mo Riverbliss caught sight of Mo Eversnow’s expression, she chuckled and serenely said, “I naturally trust Little Snow’s judgment. It’s just that… aunty is already old. I wouldn’t be able to withstand a mistake again, otherwise I fear that I won’t be able to see the day that the Verdant Feather Holy Lands will be reformed. In the past, your grandfather made a mistake, and that was that he didn’t kill Tian Mingzi upon discovering the seed of ambition that grew in his heart, finally ending with the worst result possible…”

As Mo Riverbliss spoke to here, she let out a deep sigh. Mo Eversnow also let out a sigh, no longer saying anything.

…………..

At this time, Lin Ming was still training at the spirit spring at Free Ming Pavilion, completely unaware of the matters occurring at Carefree Palace. He couldn’t be blamed for being dull-minded. He simply didn’t know that the resources Mo Eversnow spoke of were already being used by Carefree Palace, and that taking them away would affect Carefree Palace’s foundations.

Lin Ming had originally thought that these resources were kept solely by Mo Riverbliss and that the Elders of Carefree Palace didn’t know of them. Also, since Mo Riverbliss seemed to love her niece very much, she wouldn’t have much resistance in passing the resources to him.

As Lin Ming was training, a few miles away from Free Ming Pavilion, several core disciples of Carefree Island appeared. Ye Rosewater and White Mirrorjade were among them.

“Free Ming Palace? Haha, is that the boy Lin Ming’s residence? Did you change the signboard for him?”

The one who spoke was a disciple named Liu Yun. After arriving at Carefree Pavilion, he was the first one to spit out these words. He glanced at Ye Rosewater, a faint smile on his face as he spoke. He was also a direct disciple of Carefree Island and his talent was quite good, just a bit worse than Ye Rosewater and White Mirrorjade’s.

“Yes, I changed it.” Ye Rosewater frowned, not too comfortable with the sly look that Liu Yun was shooting her.

“Okay. Senior-apprentice Brother White, this is the boy you spoke of? He’s just an eighth stage Life Destruction nobody, someone whose existence is no different from an ant’s. And yet he actually came to my Carefree Island and he wants to take away the divine tree? That is just the funniest joke I’ve heard in my entire life. Come on, let’s go and take a look at just what sort of pure-hearted fool this boy is.”

Chapter 1080 – Simulation Mystic Realm

Chapter 1080 – Simulation Mystic Realm

…

…

…

Lin Ming wanted to take away the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. This more than affected the benefits of Carefree Island's disciples; it was the same as holding a saber to their chest. How could he not draw their hatred in such a situation?

If Lin Ming had the strength of a half-step World King, then although they might be dissatisfied, that was still a level of power that they could not question, thus they naturally wouldn't say anything. But, Lin Ming was only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction. The eighth stage of Life Destruction was far lower than most of the direct disciples' cultivations. For instance, Liu Yun himself was at the early Divine Sea. Now that everyone knew Lin Ming was only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction and was also coming to steal away their lifeblood, it was inevitable that there would be trouble stirring up around him.

White Mirrorjade faintly smiled as he saw Liu Yun's aggrieved and angry expression. He absolutely would not surrender the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. He had ambitions of becoming the next Island Master. In other words, the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree would be his in the future, so how could he give it up to some outsider?

But when Xiao Skywhite ended the Council of Elders, the final warning he gave had caused White Mirrorjade to feel some fear. Otherwise, he would have already united the three Great Elders together and killed Lin Ming before he had a chance to grow.

Currently, White Mirrorjade didn't believe Xiao Skywhite's words. He only thought that Xiao Skywhite was trying to threaten them with baseless lies.

But, he also didn't dare to put himself in danger. Thus, he tossed out a testing stone. This sort of testing stone was far too easy to find. As long as he described Lin Ming's cultivation and also mentioned his goal in coming to Carefree Island, White Mirrorjade wouldn't even need to act; there would be a mob of people picking up pitchforks to go after Lin Ming themselves.

For instance, this Liu Yun.

Ye Rosewater had participated in the Council of Elders and had also followed White Mirrorjade here. She certainly could see through his plans. But now that she saw Liu Yun's current agitated state, she knew that he wouldn't believe her no matter what warning she gave him, so she simply shook her head and remained silent.

"Fuck, isn't this just some descendant that is separated by countless generations from that mysterious person? That person has likely died already, otherwise why would they wait until now to send a little shit like this to take back the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree? Perhaps that brat wasn't even related from the start and he just happened to come by some sort of record that was left behind, then he thought to come to my Carefree Island and trick all of us. Does he think we're idiots or something?"

Liu Yun's words became uglier the further he spoke, but it was also what everyone else was thinking. Lin Ming's appearance here was far too strange. If one didn't know of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, they would inevitably be suspicious of Lin Ming's identity. Just coming back after 50,000 years to take back the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree didn't make any sense at all.

Ye Rosewater found it hard to continue watching, "Liu Yun, although I also don't wish for Carefree Island's benefits to be damaged, your words are far too disgusting. Lin Ming is not as simple as you think he is. His talent is high and there is surely some super influence supporting him from behind, otherwise it's impossible that such a genius could be trained."

“Haha! His talent is high? How high could it possibly be? Did you know that he simply underwent Carefree Island’s entrance examination? That is an examination prepared by outer court disciples, in other words, nothing more than a pack of nobodies. If I chose to participate in the entrance examination I could also sweep them all away like nothing!”

As Liu Yun spoke, he had already arrived in front of Free Ming Pavilion. At this time, Lin Ming was training in the hot springs in the back. He didn’t care what they were speaking of, but he could feel that these people had come looking for him.

Lin Ming languidly stepped out of the spirit spring. The spring water slowly rolled down his smooth skin. This was a result of his body’s boundary having reached a certain realm. After obtaining the perfect spirit body of legends, after bathing, the water simply wouldn’t wet the body, so one didn’t need to dry off at all.

With a wave of his hand, all of the remaining drops of water evaporated off of his body. Then, fire origin energy spontaneously gathered to form red clothes that draped and twisted around him.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin.” Ye Rosewater smiled as she saw Lin Ming appear. White Mirrorjade also smiled and nodded, hiding all of his hostility towards Lin Ming.

Only Liu Yun didn’t bother hiding his overbearing and arrogant expression. His eyes were filled with provocation as he glared at Lin Ming.

“Mm?” Lin Ming frowned. He didn’t seem to know this fellow, so how could he have randomly made another enemy?

“You’re Lin Ming?”

Liu Yun sized up Lin Ming, his eyes like an officer looking at a criminal, scrutinizing and filled with disdain.

He didn’t wait for Lin Ming to answer before jeering and saying, “I’m Liu Yun. I heard that your results at the entrance examination were quite good! At that time, you seemed to ask the examiner what the qualifications were to become a top direct disciple, right? It seems like you meant as if you could achieve such a point easily?"

As Lin Ming heard these words, he was left flummoxed. But what he did know now was that this Liu Yun was clearly looking for trouble.

Just when did he manage to annoy such a person? Ever since he arrived at Carefree Palace, he had stayed at his residence. Besides Mo Riverbliss, the Island Master, and a few others, he basically hadn't seen anyone at all. He had spent the majority of his time training in the spirit spring, and even so, he had managed to attract trouble. Really, he could be lying on the ground and still be hit by marrows.

At this time, Ye Rosewater's true essence sound transmission echoed in Lin Ming's ears, "Sorry… Junior-apprentice Brother Lin. Liu Yun has been striving to obtain some Ten Severing Dao Fruit for these past years so he's a little bitter towards you."

"Ten Severing Dao Fruit?" Lin Ming was startled. "What is a Ten Severing Dao Fruit?"

"Huh?" It was Ye Rosewater's turn to be surprised. "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, didn't you come to Carefree Island to take back the Ten Severing Do Fruit Tree?"

Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree…

Lin Ming pondered for a bit and vaguely recalled that he did read something about a Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree in one of the ancient texts he read. It was a type of heaven-step miracle medicine, and there was likely only one that existed in the world. Only when it died would another one be born.

The medicines of the Divine Realm were divided into four levels: heaven, earth, mystic, and mortal. Heaven-step medicines were the highest, but above heaven-step medicines, there actually existed transcendent miracle medicines. These types of transcendent miracle medicines were on the same level as a transcendent divine might, something that could even make a World King go crazy with desire. Those were legendary medicines that could grow to even a hundred million years old. That was not an existence that Lin Ming or even a Holy

Land level influence could grow. Only someone like Mo Eversnow's grandfather would be able to accidentally stumble upon such a treasure. As for others, they wouldn't know about nor would they understand it.

Lin Ming quickly understood what was happening. "So that's how it is. It seems I thought that things were simpler than they are. I thought that the resources Mo Eversnow left behind were all with Mo Riverbliss, and as long as I obtained Mo Riverbliss' approval and passed her tests then I could take them. I didn't actually think that those resources were currently being used by Carefree Island! If I want to take them now, the resistance would be tremendous!"

In Lin Ming's opinion, it was normal for Carefree Island to not want to return the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. Rather, he would find it strange if they smoothly gave it to him. This sounded shameless, but this was simply human nature. It was already an excellent result that Carefree Island didn't try to kill him. This was likely due to Mo Riverbliss acting as a deterrent.

"Brat, did you not hear what I said?" Liu Yun spat out angrily as he saw Lin Ming a bit distracted.

After understanding the key points of what was going on, Lin Ming faintly smiled at Liu Yun and said, "And just what is it that you want to say?"

Even a blind man could see what Liu Yun wanted. Liu Yun clearly wanted to make a show of his own power so that Lin Ming would back down. At the very least, Liu Yun would be able to vent some of his anger and feel better about himself.

As White Mirrorjade saw the tense atmosphere between Liu Yun and Lin Ming, he stepped out to mediate the situation. "Junior-apprentice Brother Liu, what sort of attitude is this? This isn't how my Carefree Island treats their guests. Junior-apprentice Brother Lin has just come to Carefree Island and he hasn't been anywhere yet. How about we change the scenery a bit?"

Lin Ming glanced at White Mirrorjade. He couldn't feel any hostility from his expression, but he was well aware that he was the focus of hate for all the disciples of Carefree Island at the moment. He certainly wouldn't believe that anyone would be treating him with kindness.

Liu Yun was surprised for a moment. He looked at White Mirrorjade, puzzled, and said with a true essence sound transmission, "Senior-apprentice Brother White, what is the meaning of this? Why are you being so polite to this Lin boy?"

In the end, Liu Yun didn't know if there was anyone supporting Lin Ming, and he also didn't know that Xiao Skywhite was fully supporting Lin Ming. This couldn't be blamed on him. There was simply no way for him to imagine all the convoluted connections between Carefree Island and the Verdant Feather Holy Lands from 50,000 years ago. This caused him to be confused and also careful, lest he stumble into some pit.

"What, did you want to fight with him right here?" White Mirrorjade countered.

Liu Yun was surprised, and then he deeply said, "Well, I actually do want to kick his ass right now and beat him into the ground. But, my cultivation is a large boundary higher than his. If I beat him up like this then others will say that my victory wasn't the martial path. Moreover… yes, this boy made such a ridiculous request and yet he can still stay at Carefree Pavilion. Is there someone in the sect supporting him?"

Liu Yun suddenly realized that something didn't seem right. White Mirrorjade said, "Mm… well, regardless of what it is, the old Island Master owes his graciousness to the mysterious person who left the divine tree here. We shouldn't push this too far."

"So it's like that. Humph, the martial world is about the survival of the fittest. Things like grace and kindness can only be discussed between people of similar strength. If the difference is too great then there is simply no meaning at all! I fear that this mysterious person has already died!"

As Liu Yun spoke, Lin Ming had been watching with bored eyes from the sidelines, obviously not caring too much about them. White M irrorjade thought little of this. He laughed and said, “Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, your talent and cultivation are both amazing. This is an excellent time for you to enter a divergent mystic realm and gain experience. Have you gone yet?”

“I have.” Lin Ming nodded. He had only been to the God Beast Mystic Realm.

“Haha, my Carefree Island just happens to preside over a divergent mystic realm. If Brother Lin has any time, feel free to go and have a look. You might be able to obtain some treasure there. Then again, there are always dangers when entering a divergent mystic realm. In order to reduce the casualties in such a divergent mystic realm, my Carefree Island has paid a great price to specifically create a simulation mystic realm. Brother Lin, do you have any interest in taking a look?”

“Simulation mystic realm?” Lin Ming’s mind stirred. He was actually somewhat interested.

At the side, Liu Yun’s eyes brightened. He obviously thought of something.

“That’s right, a simulation mystic realm. There are all sorts of dangers in a simulation mystic realm, but you’ll be able to safely leave. And, the shorter your time within, the greater the value of the simulation treasure you will obtain, and this will also prove that you are much stronger! If you experience a simulation mystic realm for long enough, then once you enter a true divergent mystic realm, you will be able to deal with unexpected situations much more easily.”

Chapter 1081 – Perish Together?

Chapter 1081 – Perish Together?

…

…

…

The simulation mystic realm that White Mirrorjade spoke of was less than 10 miles away from Carefree Pavilion. Carefree Island spent a great deal of energy and resources in constructing this simulation mystic realm. There were a massive number of array formations as well as aggressive puppets and vicious beasts. It was able to copy the situation inside the divergent mystic realm to the closest degree so that disciples could gain experience.

After all, it was no small cost to enter a divergent mystic realm just once. If someone went in and died, that would truly be a great price.

Lin Ming stood before the simulation mystic realm and investigated it with his senses. This simulation mystic realm covered an area of a hundred miles, but what was fascinating was that there were countless space folding array formations within. This meant that the space within was many times larger than expected. If one wanted to go in and obtain the simulation treasures, it truly wouldn't be easy.

"Haha, Lin Ming, do you have the guts to test yourself? I'll join you!"

Liu Yan chortled as he stood before the simulation mystic realm.

Lin Ming glanced at Liu Yan. At this time, Ye Rosewater said with a true essence sound transmission, "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, this simulation mystic realm is created with array formations, but after you enter you may be injured, especially if there are true battle puppets placed inside. In other words, there is a chance you will be severely wounded.”

There were countless risks and dangers within a divergent mystic realm and people often lost their lives exploring them; they weren’t games for kids. Carefree Island had done their best to reproduce a mystic realm to its greatest degree. But no matter how lifelike an array formation was, there would inevitably be differences between it and a true environment. Carefree Island had prepared true battle puppets for this reason.

“Thank you for the advice,” Lin Ming whispered back. This Liu Yan clearly wanted to kick him into a pit and have him suffer in this simulation mystic realm.

“What? Scared? Do you want to back out?” As Liu Yan spoke he already stood in front of the simulation mystic realm’s entrance. At this time there were already people being tested within.

Several disciples actually exited from the simulation mystic realm. From their appearances Lin Ming could tell they were wounded but also very excited. They had clearly passed the test.

“A 27th level difficulty completed in just 45 minutes! Senior-apprentice Brother Hua is fierce!”

“Haha, it’s okay. I haven’t made much progress since last time.” The youth called Senior-apprentice Brother Huo said with deliberately fake modesty. But he couldn’t conceal the smile on his face. He was clearly proud of his achievement.

“Eh? Isn’t that Senior-apprentice Brother Liu Yun? Mm? There’s also Senior-apprentice Brother White Mirrorjade and Senior-apprentice Sister Ye Rosewater!”

As these disciples saw who arrived, they were startled. These were the direct disciples of Carefree Island. Especially White Mirrorjade and Ye Rosewater; those two had an exceptional status. As these disciples saw them, they stared in awe.

“Oh? Who’s that boy? He isn’t someone from our Carefree Island.”

Everyone naturally noticed Lin Ming. They didn’t know about the matter of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, and Liu Yun naturally wouldn’t miss out on this opportunity to heap even more public hatred and anger on Lin Ming. He began to send out true essence sound transmissions to these people, telling them in vivid terms about Lin Ming and his goal for coming to Carefree Island.

“What? Senior-apprentice Brother Liu Yun, is what you said true?”

“What a joke! Do we have to return the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to him? He is only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction! How could a junior possibly handle such an important manner? This requires at least a Holy Lord level master!”

In the Divine Realm, Holy Lord was a title and also the name of a boundary. A Holy Lord level master wasn’t necessarily the Holy Lord of a Holy Land. Carefree Island was just half a step away from becoming a Holy Land, and the Highest Elders of Carefree Island were also Holy Lord level masters. For such an important matter, it naturally needed to be managed by a Holy Lord level master. To send an eighth stage Life Destruction junior was just taking things too lightly!

“How could anyone still think that? He probably doesn’t even have a Holy Lord level powerhouse supporting him. I guess that after his bloodline reached this generation, there is only this boy left!”

“Impossible, this boy is too naïve!”

“How interesting. This boy comes to Carefree Island to take the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, and he actually dares to stand here. He really isn’t afraid of being beaten to death by others.”

Several martial artists conversed with true essence sound transmissions, all of them looking at Lin Ming with a joking light in their eyes. This was because Liu Yun’s description of Lin Ming hadn’t been as detailed as White Mirrorjade’s. Liu Yun had deliberately mocked and belittled Lin Ming, so these disciples didn't know that the high level figures of Carefree Island already convened the Council of Elders to specifically discuss this matter, let alone that Xiao Skywhite himself supported Lin Ming.

None of them were worried at all that Lin Ming would walk away with the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. They didn't look at Lin Ming with fury or hate, but instead looked at him with a thoughtful and amused expression. To them, this was the same as a countryside bumpkin going up to the emperor and saying that he will take the emperor's throne.

"Haha, Lin Ming, I remember that you said that you would easily be able to become a top direct disciple of Carefree Island, right?" Liu Yun maliciously smiled, speaking out loud in front of everyone.

Humph, this father will mess with you until you're done with!

Indeed, these words were simply to create more anger. It had to be known that although these disciples were direct disciples, they were only in the middle reaches of direct disciples; they were far from being able to compare with peak characters like White Mirrorjade and Ye Rosewater. To become a top direct disciple was a goal all of them struggled toward. Although they put forth all of their effort, it was just far too difficult. But now that they heard Lin Ming said he'd be able to easily accomplish their goal, this was the same as ruthlessly stomping all over their dreams and then spitting on them.

Wasn't this the same as ridiculing all of their efforts from before? How could they not be angry!

"How interesting! It looks like you're quite confident in yourself! I heard your entrance examination results were quite good?" A disciple jeered.

"Haha, number one on the entrance examination! How fierce!" another disciple said in an exaggerated tone, his voice full of mocking irony.

“I think that those that are number one on the entrance examination can become an inner court disciple, right? I’m sorry, I forgot to ask my junior-apprentice brother who manages these sorts of things.”

As the several disciples were taking turns deriding him, Lin Ming smiled and said, “You all seem to be mistaken about the matter. I did not say it would be easy to become a top existence among your Carefree Island’s direct disciples. Although that isn’t considered anything to me at all, I don’t have such an interest. If I have to be blunt, I have no interest in joining Carefree Island now or in the future. You don’t have to try and feel good about yourselves. The reason I joined Carefree Island’s entrance examination is only because I wanted to see the Island Master.”

These words of Lin Ming were not just slapping them across the face, but taking a big pile of shit and smearing it all over them! The disciples were infuriated. This Lin Ming clearly didn’t place their Carefree Island in his eyes.

Liu Yun cracked his knuckles. “Brat, you’ve got guts! I want to see today just how crazy you are! If you have any courage at all, enter the simulation mystic realm with me! Junior-apprentice Brother Luo, open the 29th level of difficulty! And put forth the true slaughter puppets, if we’re going to play, let’s play for real!”

Liu Yun shouted out to a disciple named Luo, but that disciple seemed indifferent as he responded. “Senior-apprentice Brother Liu, there is no need to kill a chicken with a knife meant to kill an ox. I can deal with him myself.”

“No need. I’m more than enough to educate this idiot.” A ninth stage Life Destruction martial artist interjected.

When Lin Ming arrived, he had heard that someone called Senior-apprentice Brother Hua had passed the 27th level of difficulty. From this he was able to glean an approximate understanding of this simulation mystic realm’s difficulty.

In most cases, Lin Ming wouldn't be interested in fighting with others over things like his, but that didn't mean he feared them. Moreover, according to what Ye Rosewater told him and also thinking about Mo Riverbliss actions, he realized that for such an important matter as the Ten Severing Dao Tree, she would surely test him.

Perhaps everything that was happening right now was seen by Mo Riverbliss. She might be secretly observing him and seeing whether or not he could deal with the siege of these young disciples.

Once Lin Ming realized this, he naturally couldn't avoid the fight ahead. If he retreated to Free Ming Pavilion and hid there, he would only be considered easy to bully without any ability at all. How could he earn the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree like this?

He faintly smiled at the disciples and said, "Since you're interested in 'teaching' me, then how about you all come at me together? This mystic realm can hold more than one person."

"Haha, that's what I wanted to hear!"

"Since you want to die, let me help you!"

The smile on these disciples' faces became increasingly arrogant and reckless. "Thank you all for agreeing, but Liu Yun, since you put forth a 29th level difficulty, that should mean you've cleared it before. Don't you think that using a difficulty you've already cleared to deal with me is a bit boring?" Lin Ming said as he turned to Liu Yun.

Liu Yun frowned, "What do you mean?"

As for the other disciples, they were left in a daze. The majority of them had passed the 27-28th level of difficulty, and the 29th level would likely mean they would suffer an agonizing death and defeat. As for anything above that, that was simply a joke.

"What I mean is that we should increase the difficulty. Only then is there a challenge," Lin Ming spoke, a playful smile dancing on his face.

"What?"

"This brat is crazy!"

"What do you mean crazy, he's just an idiot! He's never entered the simulation mystic realm so he definitely doesn't know what the 29th level means. He just wants to die."

The surrounding disciples paled as they heard Lin Ming want to raise the difficulty. They couldn't even deal with the 29th level of difficulty.

"What about it? Weren't you all loudly speaking about teaching me a lesson? Are you all cowering back now?" Lin Ming's eyes swept over everyone. These people all had cultivations at the early Divine Sea realm or below, and their overall talent was far below the monstrous geniuses of the four God Beast Clans that had entered the God Beast Mystic Realm. The four God Beast Clans were each peak Holy Lands, and the Ancient Dragon Clan in particular was once a World King level influence.

"You!" The disciples all stiffened. They weren't afraid of the ruthless, but they were afraid of those that didn't care for their lives. Was this Lin Ming trying to perish together and bring them all down with him?

"I understand. He clearly understands his cultivation is too low and cannot defeat us, that's why he's trying to pull us all down with him!"

"What's there to be afraid of? This is only a simulation mystic realm! Although it is true battle, if we are severely wounded, we'll be kicked out by the array formations before we die. At worst, we'll just have to recuperate in bed for half a month. He only has an eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation. His wounds will definitely be worse than ours!"

"That's right. Who cares about some wounds? We can't back down and lose our pressure on him."

Several disciples spoke with true essence sound transmissions before coming to a unanimous agreement. As for Liu Yun, the corners of his lips twitched for a bit before he seemed to come to a great decision. He grit his teeth and said, “Fine! Open the 30th level and bring in the true battle puppets and vicious beasts! This is going to be a true fight!”

Chapter 1082 – Easily Passing

Chapter 1082 – Easily Passing

…

…

…

Liu Yun was aware of his own skills. He knew that it was impossible for him to pass the 30th level. As long as he wasn't too miserably injured and lasted until the end then he would be fine.

However, Lin Ming would be in a wretched state. He would inevitably be beaten until his bones were crushed and he might even be crippled. The simulation was extremely dangerous. Although the transmission array would save one's life at the end, changes in a battle still occurred within the blink of an eye. It was normal for the weak to lose an arm or a leg.

As Liu Yun thought of this he grinned, a sinister light flickering in his eyes.

When Ye Rosewater saw Liu Yun's smarmy smile, her eyes twitched. She didn't think that Lin Ming would lack all understanding of the simulation mystic realm and would dare to challenge the 30th level of difficulty so casually. She had wanted to give him some advice, but from Lin Ming's appearance he mostly wouldn't listen to her. She could only tell him, "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin… don't try to take the treasures, just wander around the edges, the pressure there is lesser too…"

Liu Yun said, "Senior-apprentice Sister Ye, what are you trying to speak to him for, he clearly won't listen to you. Open the array. You and Senior-apprentice Brother White can manage the array formation."

Ye Rosewater and White Mirrorjade were far stronger than the other direct disciples present. It was naturally appropriate for them to manage the array formation.

"Alright." Ye Rosewater glanced at Lin Ming one final time before opening the array formation.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The array formation opened. All of the disciples turned into beams of light that shot into the mystic realm. But, Lin Ming's speed actually surpassed everyone present.

"Nice speed! However, in the simulation mystic realm, what matters is your strength."

White Mirrorjade crossed his arms against his chest, a satisfied smile on his face. To him, the 30th level of difficulty wasn't anything at all.

Bang bang bang!

Sounds of fierce energy impacts were already sounding out from the simulation mystic realm. Lin Ming discovered that upon entering, he had been separated from everyone else. There were multiple parallel space layers in the simulation mystic realm; it was an incomparably complex area.

Woosh woosh woosh!

In front of Lin Ming, several dozen beams of light came shooting towards him. These were killing array beams. If he were hit by them, although it wouldn't injure him, it would still consume a great deal of his protective true essence.

Lin Ming's feet turned as he stepped on Golden Roc Shattering the Void. His figure instantly vanished and those beams of light naturally struck nothing but empty air. But in that moment, with a loud roar, over a dozen ogre puppets rushed towards him as well as various vicious beasts of the mystic realm. These vicious beasts had already died, but underneath the manipulation of the array formation they were able to reproduce a part of their strength from when they were still alive.

“Grandmist space!”

Lin Ming didn’t hold back. With the special arcane skill that Mo Eversnow taught him, he was now able to hide all the energy fluctuations from his martial skills and thus he could use the grandmist space without scruples anymore.

Hou!

The gray grandmist space expanded outwards, immediately shrouding over the dozen plus ogre puppets.

The Grandmist Laws with the power to annihilate all matter began to rapidly disintegrate their bodies and the energy within them. Even though they had an extremely high defensive power, it seemed as if they had fallen into a quagmire and their reactions had become dull and slow.

“Die!”

Lin Ming swept out the Phoenix Blood Spear, and fire energy with the strength of manifestation gleamed on the spear edge. Wherever this spear went, ogre puppets would completely explode. These shattered bits would then completely break apart in the grandmist space, becoming a miniscule amount of elementary grandmist energy.

Lin Ming killed over a dozen ogre puppets in a single move, each of them equal to an early Divine Sea martial artist. Yet, he didn’t feel as if he had used any energy at all. After absorbing the dragon marrow, his endurance had been enhanced to an unbelievable degree. Before this, he had trouble displaying the grandmist space for an extended period of time, but now he could definitely use it for a time long enough that it could be considered a passive skill.

Chasing Thunder!

Xiu!

A purple light flashed and two vicious beasts were seared into charcoal by the power of thunder. As for Lin Ming, he took advantage of Chasing Thunder’s extreme speed and rushed over a dozen miles away. Several divine killing lights of array formations flashed, but Lin Ming passed through the narrow gaps between them like a tiny fish in water!

However, what he didn’t expect was that after passing through the gap between the killing lights, several hundred knives would shoot out from hidden array formations. These knives were all scattered over a wide range, extremely accurate. They blocked every possible direction that Lin Ming could evade in!

“Mm? It can’t be dodged!”

Lin Ming was surprised. This tricky and precise attack trajectory was actually quite exquisite. Moreover, these knives were sharpened with the energy of the array formation. If these knives were to strike an ordinary martial artist’s protective true essence, they would tear through it like waste paper. No wonder those disciples had paled upon hearing the 30th level of difficulty.

But to Lin Ming, none of this was a problem. He had several methods to block these sharp knives.

Just as these hundreds of knives were about to strike Lin Ming, the gold battle spirit in his spiritual sea howled out. The gold battle spirit split into dozens of copies, each of them attaching to a knife and causing them all to come to an immediate stop!

Then, like an escaping rabbit, Lin Ming passed through the openings of these knives.

With the sound of metal crashing on metal, those knives were twisted into pieces after he passed them.

Lin Ming didn’t stop. He continued to hurtle forwards, sending out his senses at the same time to search his surroundings.

The treasure in the simulation mystic realm could appear anywhere. There was no fixed position and this position would also be hidden. This was to reproduce the situation within a divergent mystic realm. After all, when entering a mystic realm, nobody would be able to predict the locations of treasures.

After an incense stick of time, Lin Ming had thrust forth his spear countless times, each spear strike bringing down a puppet. In Carefree Island, even if there was a massive number of ogre corpses supplied from the mystic realm, an early Divine Sea puppet was still considerably valuable. It was impossible to always activate this sort of simulation smelting trial.

And at the same time, in a different parallel space, Liu Yun fell into a bitter struggle with the simulation mystic realm's ogre puppets. If one didn't kill these puppets quickly enough then more and more ogre puppets would be attracted to the fluctuations of energy from the battle. In the end, the trial challenger would fall into a complete siege of puppets and fail.

"Shit, only a quarter hour has passed, but this simulation mystic realm will last for a whole hour; that is four quarter hours! If I can't find the treasure during this time then that will be considered as a defeat. But, I've already given up on the idea of seeking the treasure. What I have to do is last for three quarter hours instead."

Liu Yun estimated the time he could last depending on the rate he was consuming energy, and his complexion became ugly. This was the first time that he had attempted the 30th level of difficulty and he discovered that he had underestimated it.

"Humph, the more difficult this is, the better it is. This is my test, a test to stimulate my physical strength to the limit. Moreover, that brat Lin Ming will surely be in a more miserable state than me!"

As Liu Yun thought of this, he brought forth more true essence and vigorously fought. After striking down a puppet, his eyes brightened; he discovered that there was a gap in the encirclement of ogre puppets.

"Chance!"

Liu Yun launched his movement technique and flushed through in a single go. In the process of breaking through, he could feel a puppet savagely slash at his back with sharp claws, causing blood to spill forth.

An agonizing pain spread out. Liu Yun stiffly coughed and forcefully left the siege of ogre puppets. But at this time, dozens of sharp knives shot out at Liu Yun from hidden array formations, blocking all of his escape paths.

"Fuck!"

Liu Yun had rushed through this simulation mystic realm countless times, so he certainly knew how dangerous these knives that cut at all angles were. They were simply impossible to pass through.

Liu Yun cried out and swung the heavy sword in his hand, knocking away seven or eight knives. Then, he lifted his hand and buried his head in his arms. He shrank his legs, found the area with the least amount of knives and then rushed through that spot.

Although he had a battle spirit, it was far from reaching the gold level so he simply wasn't able to form a world of will projection. It was no problem for him to pour his battle spirit into ownerless objects, but for him to control these extremely sharp energy knives was impossible.

Puff puff puff!

Blood shot out. Liu Yun's protective true essence was pierced through as three knives stabbed into his arm, thigh, and stomach. His face became paler than paper, but for better or worse, no vital points had been pierced. After making it through this difficult pass he did not turn back; through paying the price of being wounded in several places, he had to escape these puppets that were chasing after him.

And besides Liu Yun, the other disciples were in an even more pathetic state.

Their strength was far inferior to Liu Yun's. A disciple using a saber was struck by a vicious beast puppet in the chest. The beast's horn gored the disciple, breaking several of his ribs and causing him to vomit a great mouthful of blood. The disciple crashed into the ground, his eyes filling with stars.

But as he looked up, he could see the vicious beast lunging towards him.

The disciple immediately cursed, "Fuck, my wounds are bad so how come I haven't been transmitted out yet?!"

In Carefree Island's simulation mystic realm, one wasn't able to withdraw of their own initiative. Only when one was seriously injured or had lost the majority of their combat efficiency would they be sent out. This was to cut off all paths of retreat for the disciples and force them to their limits. After all, in a true divergent mystic realm, there was only life or death.

As the disciple saw the vicious beast rush at him, he began to panic in abject fear. He didn't know what degree of wounds he would suffer at the claws of this beast; in the simulation mystic realm, there was no danger of true death.

The disciple's thoughts stirred and just as the beast was about to pounce on him, he gave a loud shout and slashed out with his saber. However, this saber was not aimed at the vicious beast, but at himself. If he fought the beast and was severely wounded in some vital spot, he might have to recuperate for half a month in bed. But, if he injured himself, he had a much firmer grasp of being able to recover quicker.

Puff!

Blood flew out. In the next moment, a light flashed and the disciple was kicked out of the simulation mystic realm.

At this time, a quarter hour had passed. Just as Lin Ming pierced through another vicious beast puppet, he suddenly perked up. A trace of a smile curved up his lips. He had found the position of the treasure!

The treasure was hidden below a large, rolling hill. It seemed to be a type of earth-step miracle medicine.

“There are also array formations on the hill? But, that’s useless against me.”

Lin Ming’s thoughts touched upon the Heretical God Sprout. The power of thunder and fire erupted as he thrust his spear outwards.

Penetrating Rainbow!

Bang!

With a loud explosive sound, the hill completely blew apart. In the next moment, Lin Ming had already taken away the simulation treasure and had flown out of the flames and wreckage, headed straight towards the simulation mystic realm’s exit.

Chapter 1083 – The Sad Brother Liu

Chapter 1083 – The Sad Brother Liu

…

…

…

At this time, outside of the simulation mystic realm, White Mirrorjade and Ye Rosewater were both managing the array formation. Suddenly, the simulation mystic realm's array formation shuddered.

“Mm? Someone came out?” Ye Rosewater said.

Beside her, White Mirrorjade glanced at the time and faintly said, “There's no way it can be so fast. Someone ís probably severely wounded and sent out. There are many of them that can't pass through the 30th level; lasting for an hour is more than adequate.”

“Mm, that should be right.” Just as Ye Rosewater nodded, a light flashed and a bloodied Carefree Island disciple was sent out.

White Mirrorjade's senses swept over the disciple's body. This disciple hadn't been injured too greatly; he would only need to spend a few days in bed. In the simulation mystic realm, as long as one didn't surpass their own limits and run into a great deal of bad luck, there wouldn't be any life-threatening injuries.

“Here.” White Mirrorjade tossed out a recovery pill from his spatial ring and the disciple caught it with a great deal of shame before swallowing it down. After getting into this sort of quarrel where his boasting had gotten him into such a situation, he certainly didn't have any face remaining.

After this disciple appeared, the array formation continued to shake. Several more disciples were kicked out, all of them heavily injured. But to a high level martial artist, as long as one didn't lost an arm or a leg, they would be able to fully recover with enough medicine.

"Two quarter hours have passed. There's only four disciples that haven't been sent out yet. Lin Ming is in there, and besides him, everyone else is at the early Divine Sea realm," White Mirrorjade said, stroking his chin. His eyes flashed with a bright light, but there was also a faint imperceptible chill in this light. "This Lin Ming's talent is quite good. I wonder just how long he'll be able to last for. If he can last as long as Liu Yun, that means his eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation is similar to an early Divine Sea genius. This sort of talent is even slightly better than Junior-apprentice Sister Ye of the past."

As Ye Rosewater heard White Mirrorjade mention her, she didn't respond. She naturally remembered the speech that White Mirrorjade gave at the Council of Elders. Letting Lin Ming go here was the same as letting a tiger return to the mountain.

At this time, the simulation mystic realm's entrance rocked once more, and a youth shot out like an arrow before slowly falling to the ground.

"Mm?"

White Mirrorjade's eyes widened. From this person's speed and steady movements, it seemed he hadn't been injured at all.

In the simulation mystic realm, if one wasn't injured but also left before the allotted time, that meant they had completed their mission inside and had managed to obtain the simulation treasure.

"Lin Ming, you…"

Shock dawned on White Mirrorjade's face as he saw this youth's face. This youth was Lin Ming!

“Lin Ming, you completed the mission?”

Ye Rosewater was floored. She stared at Lin Ming in a daze. As for the martial artists that were recovering, they also stopped healing themselves and looked over at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming slowly traced his spatial ring and took out some medicinal herbs that overflowed with rich origin energy. But after leaving the simulation mystic realm, these ‘medicinal herbs’ began to rapidly lose their spirit energy before completely vanishing. The medicinal herbs also changed their appearance, turning into a single token with the word ‘mystic’ written on it.

This was truly the simulation treasure from the simulation mystic realm!

“He really completed it!”

Ye Rosewater’s eyes widened. Although she knew that it wasn’t impossible to finish the mission inside the simulation mystic realm and leave, as she saw Lin Ming pull out the simulation treasure with her own eyes, the shock was immense.

Behind Ye Rosewater, the heavily wounded disciples all glanced at each other. They looked at their completely bruised and bloodied appearances, and then looked at Lin Ming’s immaculate appearance. They felt as if they had been slapped again in front of everyone. They wished that they could turn into ants and sneak away into some dark, unseen corner.

They had risked their lives and crazily fought inside, but the result was that they were kicked out, not lasting very long. But not only was Lin Ming not wounded, he even completed the mission. As they recalled themselves laughing at Lin Ming, all of them wanted to smash their heads into a wall an die. They were simply too ashamed to be seen in such a situation, especially in front of Lin Ming.

Lin Ming casually left the token on a table and looked up at Ye Rosewater. “Senior-apprentice Sister Ye, I will return to my residence to train first.”

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you…” Ye Rosewater gulped, at a loss for words.

Like this, Lin Ming left. All of the injured disciples lowered their heads. It was only when Lin Ming completely left their sights did they let out a long sigh of relief. Because of their little argument from before, and the slight glance that Lin Ming had given them, all of them felt their faces burning red with shame. Now that he left, they finally began to relax.

As for White Mirrorjade, he continued to stare at Lin Ming's back until his figure faded away. His eyes flashed with an icy light.

"How is this possible, this sort of talent is several times greater than me when I was at his level! Is this even human!?"

White Mirrorjade slowly clenched his fists, his nails digging into his palm. He felt a great and impending crisis creep over him. Lin Ming was simply an enigma. The birth of a true genius not only depended on their naturally born will, perception, martial talent, or even the struggle of their destiny. There was also the struggle of resources, background, and inheritances. Otherwise, no matter how talented a genius was, they would still be wasted if they weren't cultivated. For Lin Ming to grow to this step, White Mirrorjade would not believe that there wasn't some great influence supporting him from behind!

But with such a great influence supporting him, why didn't they send a master to retrieve the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree? The only reasoning was…

White Mirrorjade's eyes shot up in realization. There was indeed some great influence behind Lin Ming, but that great influence must not know of the matter concerning the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. They simply weren't related to this whole debacle, and Lin Ming had come with his own private status to take back the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree.

After realizing this, White Mirrorjade became enlightened.

If this were true, he didn't need to fear Lin Ming as Lin Ming hadn't grown up yet. But this might not be true in the future!

"This brat, if he is allowed to live, he'll absolutely become Carefree Island's enemy! The only chance is if he is given the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, but that is impossible!"

White Mirrorjade thought, lost in his ideas. At this time, three quarter hours had already passed. There was only a quarter hour until the one hour time limit was over, and the three early Divine Sea martial artists were actually still persisting inside.

After a small period of time, when there was only an incense stick of time left until the end of the smelting trial, the simulation mystic realm shook once again and two bruised and bloodied figures were shot out in succession. Neither of these two were Liu Yun.

These two disciple had both reached their limits. Right after leaving the mystic realm, they fell into a half unconscious state. Ye Rosewater hurried up to help heal them.

These two were considered quite good; they had nearly lasted until the smelting trial ended. They didn't look around before starting to heal themselves. Before long, the sand in the hourglass completely flowed through, signaling the end of the smelting trial.

Hu – !

The last person, Liu Yun, was kicked out by the array formation!

His entire body was dyed in blood and his hair was ruined. He had consumed over 90% of his true essence and was only managing to support himself with a single breath. However, this sort of smelting trial where he had to walk on the thin edge of life or death was also greatly beneficial to him. He held himself up. Although his entire body was wracked in pain and he was exhausted to the extreme, he was still filled with joy and vigor.

“Haha! One hour! I finally made it to the end! Hahaha!”

Liu Yun was clearly the strongest of everyone present. When the other two martial artists came out, they didn't even have the strength to speak, but he was still able to stand and laugh out loud.

“Haha, a man's potential is truly squeezed out when they reach their limits. I relied on my own will to last until the end! This feels awesome!” Liu Yun bellowed, his voice spreading out far and wide. However, as he didn't hear the returning praise and exclaim, he felt something was off. He looked around and saw that the other disciples were all far more heavily injured than he was and they had also been sent out ahead of time; they clearly hadn't managed to make it to the end. Even so, they were all looking at him with a strange light in their eyes. Even White Mirrorjade and Ye Rosewater were doing so.

"Mm? What are you looking at? Where's Lin Ming? Why don't I see that brat here? I want to see just how miserable he was beat up after arrogantly challenging the 30th level, hehe!"

After looking around and not seeing Lin Ming, Liu Yun wasn't happy at all. In order for his success story to be complete, he naturally needed a beaten up Lin Ming to gloat over and serve as contrast. But Lin Ming actually wasn't here at all.

"He… already left." A recovering disciple couldn't help but say as he saw Liu Yun's happy appearance.

"Left? Were his wounds so great he had to be lifted away to be treated?" Liu Yun frowned. If Lin Ming had been carried away, how could he still show off?

"This…" The several injured disciples glanced at each other, none of them knowing what to say. They could be considered as being on Liu Yun's team, and now that they saw Liu Yun making a complete clown of himself, none of them had the heart to be cruel and tell him the truth.

At this time, Ye Rosewater glared at Liu Yun and snapped out, "Lin Ming wasn't injured. He completed the mission and decided not to wait for you, so he left ahead of time.

"Eh…?" Liu Yun froze where he was. After some time, he jumped up. "Wh-what?"

Liu Yun's eyes suddenly widened like two plates. "What sort of joke are you playing, how can that be possible!?"

"I have no interest in joking around with you. Look over there and see for yourself. Do you recognize that?" Ye Rosewater testily said and pointed to the token on the table after being questioned by Liu Yun. No longer bothering to speak, she turned and left.

As for White Mirrorjade, he let out a long sigh and patted Liu Yun's shoulder, no longer speaking. But it was clear what this shoulder pat meant.

This, this was impossible!

"Brother Liu, it's true." Several injured Life Destruction disciples said after White Mirrorjade left. All of them had morose expressions like their mothers and fathers had died.

"Lin Ming left after half an hour, not injured at all. He didn't seem as if he had used any energy at all. He laid the token on the table and left. We all saw it with our own eyes."

"Brother Liu, don't be sad."

Chapter 1084 – Resource Struggle

Chapter 1084 – Resource Struggle

…

…

…

Everything that occurred within the simulation mystic realm, all of the fighting and chaos, fell into Mo Riverbliss's eyes. When she saw Lin Ming form a force field space around him that was able to shield against all attacks and even twist apart the iron bodies of the puppets, she was startled. "What sort of force field is that, that could be so powerful?"

Mo Riverbliss was naturally referring to Lin Ming's grandmist space. There were an infinite number of force fields and a martial artist could even form their own unique force field, so not recognizing this one was normal. What Mo Riverbliss was surprised at was that the quality of Lin Ming's force field was extremely high.

Mo Eversnow hesitated for a moment and ultimately told everything that happened to Lin Ming in the Road of Emperor to Mo Riverbliss. Towards Mo Riverbliss that had watched over and taken care of her growing up, Mo Eversnow had complete trust.

"Mm? What did you say? Empyrean Primordius? Grandmist space!? What Lin Ming used just now was the Primordius martial intent!?" Mo Riverbliss was alarmed. If Mo Eversnow didn't tell her this, she would never have recognized it. Empyrean Primordius had disappeared 100,000 years ago, and at that time Mo Riverbliss wasn't even famous.

Even before Empyrean Primordius was missing, he had gone into a semi-reclusive state. The time when he shook the Divine Realm and conquered its heroes had been millions or even tens of millions of years ago. At that time, Mo Riverbliss hadn't even been born.

Thinking about it even further, even the old Holy Lord of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands hadn't been born yet back then.

Mo Riverbliss only ever heard stories and tales about a legendary figure like Empyrean Primordius. These stores only mentioned the grandmist space. As for what the grandmist space was, she had no idea. If Mo Eversnow didn't tell her, she would never have realized this.

Mo Eversnow said, "What Lin Ming comprehended is not the complete Primordius martial intent, but only a part of it – the Heavenly Demon martial intent."

"Only a part?" Mo Riverbliss's eyelids trembled. "The legends say that the complete Primordius martial intent is divided into three parts. They're the Heavenly Demon martial intent, Heavenly Mortal martial intent, and Heavenly God martial intent. Demon, Mortal, God, when all three are combined, that is the complete Primordius martial intent. This martial intent is considered an extremely high ranked ability even amongst all the different transcendent divine mights."

Mo Riverbliss stood up, revealing a thoughtful expression. She whispered, "Unbelievable, to think that Lin Ming obtained the inheritance of Empyrean Primordius is simply unbelievable!"

Mo Riverbliss's expression was complex. She was incomparably clear as to what an Empyrean was; that was an existence that truly stood at the very peak of the Divine Realm. Once one reached the boundary of an Empyrean, they no longer bothered with the general affairs of the Divine Realm. In their opinion, even if two great worlds of the Divine Realm were to wage war against each other, that would simply be nothing but a little squabble. What they wholeheartedly searched for was the Great Dao, and to find the clues to eternal, everlasting life. To the martial artists of the Divine Realm, they were the true divine gods that could not be touched.

If it weren't for Mo Eversnow telling her, Mo Riverbliss would never have known about the fight between Empyreans 100,000 ago. It was even more impossible to think that Empyreans would battle in some place like the lower realms and not the Divine Realm.

Between Empyreans, just why would they fight? And a life or death war at that?

It was hard to imagine what existed in this universe that was worth them desperately risking their lives for.

Was it a treasure on the level of the Magic Cube?

The old Holy Lord of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands was able to keep the Magic Cube because the existence of the Magic Cube was a secret to begin with. Very few people knew about it. Even the allies of Tian Mingzi only knew the name of the Magic Cube when they helped assault the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. As for what it was, they weren't sure.

Everything that Mo Riverbliss knew about the Magic Cube and how valuable it was had all been speculated by the old Holy Lord. But Mo Riverbliss was not able to fully confirm any of this. She had no choice but to wonder; could even something like the Magic Cube cause Empyrean level masters to fight in a life or death war?

Of course, a war between Empyreans was not something that Mo Riverbliss could imagine or even ask about. Perhaps only Empyrean Primordius and Empyrean Thunder Punishment, who had both participated in that war 100,000 years ago, would know these secrets.

However, if Lin Ming could obtain Empyrean Primordius' inheritance, in comparison, the Verdant Feather Holy Lands' inheritances were actually somewhat pale and weak.

After thinking of this, Mo Riverbliss's impression towards Lin Ming underwent a great change.

"Aunty, do you still plan on testing Lin Ming?" Mo Eversnow asked. She had thought for some time before revealing this matter to Mo Riverbliss. It wasn't that she didn't believe Mo Riverbliss was untrustworthy, but rather that this matter was far too significant and the less people that were aware of it the better. In the end, she told Mo Riverbliss because she wanted her aunt to trust Lin Ming more.

Mo Riverbliss was lost in thought for some time. She said, “Although you said that Lin Ming stumbled into Empyrean Primordius’ inheritance and obtained it in a mystic realm, for such a character like Empyrean Primordius, even if he perished, his inheritance is still not something the average person could ever hope of laying their hands on. It could be said that Lin Ming is the designated descendant of Empyrean Primordius. For him to obtain this inheritance, that might even be faintly part of the calculations that Empyrean Primordius made so long ago. Since Lin Ming is the descendant chosen by Empyrean Primordius, I truly do not have the qualifications to test him. Compared to an Empyrean, even our Verdant Feather Holy Lands is not worth mentioning.”

“Little Snow, don’t blame aunty for being so stingy. The issue is that the Ten Severing Dao Fruit True is equally significant to Carefree Island, so I had to carefully consider it. Moreover, Carefree Island is also experiencing extremely difficult troubles. The disciples of Carefree Island are being suppressed in the divergent mystic realm by the joint forces of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan. Now, the lifeline of our resources is in an increasingly tenuous position. If Carefree Island loses the Ten Severing Dao Fruit and Lin Ming cannot grow within the next 1000 years, Carefree Island will truly be in danger. Let alone becoming a Holy Land, even maintaining our current status will be dangerous. If I make any mistakes, the chess piece your grandfather placed down with so much effort will lose all of its value…”

“Occult Bone Clan? Splintersoul Mountain?” Mo Eversnow asked, surprised. “Who are they?”

“They are Carefree Island’s rivals and enemies. The sea area that our Carefree Island is located in is named the Red Desolate Sea. This name originates from the divergent mystic realm hidden beneath the seabed, the entrance to the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. As for Carefree Island, the Occult Bone Clan, and Splintersoul Mountain, they are the three great influences that exist in the Red Desolate Sea. In the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, there is all sorts of raw medicinal herbs, ores, and other types of resources. Although these resources aren't considered too precious, there's an extremely large quantity of them, so this divergent mystic realm is the greatest source of resources for our three sects.

"Tens of thousands of years ago, the three sects were small and weak. In order to maintain control over the Red Desolate Sea and the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, the three sects joined together to combat outside enemies. At that time, even though the relations between the sects were volatile, they were still relatively harmonious. But as the years progressed and the three sects developed, growing larger and larger, there inevitably appeared the ambition to rule over the entire Red Desolate Sea. If one sect could rule of the entire Red Desolate Sea and also absorb the other two sects, in another 10,000 years of growth, it is absolutely possible to become an upper level Holy Land."

"The relations between the three sects began to gradually worsen. Because Carefree Island has the support of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, our growth is the fastest of the three sects and now we are only a bit away from becoming a true Holy Land. The other two sects were threatened by this so they joined forces to suppress us. At the start they merely played their games behind the scenes, but now they have already blatantly revealed their intentions. This is especially true in the competition for resources in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. Every time rivers of blood flow through the mystic realm!"

Although Carefree Island's Red Desolate Mystic Realm and the four God Beast Clans' God Beast Mystic Realm were both places that supplied resources, they were extremely different.

In the God Beast Mystic Realm, there were extremely few resources. But once these resources were found, their value would inevitably be enormous. There were even some shocking heavenly materials that would move the heart of a World King. Correspondingly, the dangers in this mystic realm were extremely high and it was also suitable as a smelting trial location for disciples.

But the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was the complete opposite. There was an immeasurable amount of resources. Here were endless wilds with raw medicinal materials and large swathes of mineral resources. As long as one went in with the intention of gathering materials, they wouldn't even need to look. They could just turn around and gather up a massive amount of resources. However, the value of these resources was relatively low. An extreme talent wouldn't be interested in these resources but they were actually very important to a sect. Carefree Island had countless disciples and all of them required the support of resources. In a sense, the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was like a mine and the disciples that entered this mystic realm were the miners.

As long as the location was a divergent mystic realm, it would be separated from the Divine Realm by a space barrier. The higher cultivation a martial artist had, the more difficult it was for them to pass through. There weren't many dangers in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm to begin with, so one only needed to send out Revolving Core level disciples to gather resources and some Divine Sea realm martial artists to protect against the mystic realm ogres. However, because of the fighting between the three sects, Carefree Island had no choice but to send more and more Divine Sea disciples. At the start it had been purely about gathering resources, now it had become a proxy war.

However, in order to send a Divine Sea disciple, that required a massive amount of violet sun stones. As it stood, Carefree Island was now stuck in a very difficult position. Carefree Island's reserves of violet sun stones certainly couldn't keep up with the combined reserves of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain. Because of this, Carefree Island now held a tremendous disadvantage in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm.

On the other hand, it was impossible for a true war to break out between the three sects. If there was truly a war in which the sects tried to annihilate each other, the Red Desolate Sea might be swallowed up by some outside influence instead. Weakening Carefree Island's foundation through the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was the most effective way to handle things.

As Mo Eversnow understood this, she thought about it for a moment, then said, "So this is what aunty was worried about. I have a proposal. Next time, allow Lin Ming to escort the group in. His cultivation isn't high so it won't cost much to send him through. His combat strength is obscenely high!"

"Mm?"

Mo Riverbliss frowned, “Lin Ming is only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction. Although his strength surpasses an early Divine Sea genius, in the divergent mystic realm, when a true battle starts, even a late Divine Sea martial artist could appear. When an all-out slaughter breaks out, even characters like Ye Rosewater and White Mirrorjade will join the fray. Although these resources are important, an extreme talent has no price. If Lin Ming perishes because of this, the loss will be far too great.”

Mo Riverbliss certainly placed importance on the man that Mo Eversnow chose. She had only personally seen Lin Ming’s performance in the simulation mystic realm. It would be no problem at all for him to become a Holy Lord level character in the future. To send such a genius out into a divergent mystic realm was too risky.

But Mo Eversnow smiled and said, “Aunty, there is no need for you to worry. There is absolutely no problem. Moreover, to Lin Ming, this is a rare opportunity to temper himself.”

Chapter 1085 – Traitor

Chapter 1085 – Traitor

…

…

…

In the early morning of Carefree Pavilion, the heaven and earth origin energy was especially rich. The faint rising mist and the light of dawn flooded the mountain valley. The scenery was like a paradise on earth, with thick spirit energy that could extend the life of a mortal by a hundred years just by drinking it.

In Free Ming Pavilion, Lin Ming was completely immersed within the spirit spring, naked. Water flowed into his mouth and nose, throughout his entire body and out his pores, a faint trace of essence staying behind in his body.

Currently, Lin Ming's foundation had already reached an unbelievably solid degree. In truth, if he wanted to and decided to give up the path of dual body and energy cultivation and solely focus on the essence gathering system, he wouldn't need any heavenly materials to break into Ninefall. If he further decided to give up perceiving the Laws, he could easily rely on his own passive accumulation and break into the Divine Sea, Divine Transformation, and even Divine Lord realm with utter ease and speed. But this would also be where he stopped. He would encounter another bottleneck, one he wouldn't able to pass.

Lin Ming naturally wouldn't choose to do something like that. The path he chose was a difficult one full of pitfalls and traps. He needed to consume a massive amount of resources and time in order to continue on this road, but if he did, his future achievements would be endless.

“Lin Ming.”

As Lin Ming was bathing in the spirit spring, a pleasant voice sounded out in his ears. It was Mo Eversnow.

Lin Ming opened his eyes. With a wave of his hand, clothes wrapped around his body and he jumped up from the spirit spring. “Miss Mo.”

Light flashed and the white-clothed Mo Eversnow appeared in front of Lin Ming. For these past days, Mo Eversnow stayed at Carefree Palace.

“Lin Ming, aunty has already agreed to give you the Ten Sovereign Dao Fruit Tree. In addition, she will also give you 500 million violent sun stones. However, she only needs you to do a little favor for her first.”

In the Divine Realm, violet sun stones were one of the main types of currency. Besides acting as a power source, the other main reason was that they were used to open up transmission arrays for divergent mystic realms. Divergent mystic realms happened to be a great source of resources and status for many sects in the Divine Realm.

As long as one had enough violet sun stones, they could purchase many valuable things in all the various city squares and auction houses of the Divine Realm.

“Miss Mo, please feel free to speak.”

Mo Eversnow reiterated her conversation with Mo Riverbliss in Carefree Palace to him, and Lin Ming immediately agreed. In his mind, he felt nothing but grateful toward Mo Eversnow. Without Mo Eversnow helping him pass his difficult early days, Lin Ming would likely still be at the Sky Fortune Kingdom; he would never have seen or experienced such a vast world.

Of course, in return, Mo Eversnow was also grateful toward Lin Ming. Although the time that the two truly met was very short, the trust between them was actually very strong and reliable.

……

Two days later, in the Red Desolate Sea territory, news spread out of Carefree Island exchanging their spare resources for a massive amount of violet sun stones.

For a divergent mystic realm, the more disciples that were sent and the higher their cultivation was, the more violet sun stones needed to activate the transmission array.

If Carefree Island exchanged a great number of their sect's reserve resources for violet stun stones, that undoubtedly meant they were about to make a massive move.

At this time, in the Red Desolate Sea, there was a spirit island. In a beautiful mountain valley of this island, there was a gushing hot spring. The waters of this hot spring carried a faint hint of red that smelled like blood. But it was different from the viscous and coppery tang of blood. Rather, it tasted refreshing and smooth, just like a wonderfully aged wine.

Within this light red spirit spring, there were over a dozen young women wearing veils that were playfully frolicking about. Each one of them was slender with round waists and perfect bottoms, completely proportional to their heart. Not just that, but at the edges of their flirtatious crescent eyes, there was a thin layer of scales. It was clear they weren't pure blooded humans.

Between these young women, there were four tall and burly young men. Their bodies were wrapped in solid muscles and there was not a single hair on their bodies. They had strange runes carved onto their head and also a pair of small horns; they were young disciples of the Occult Bone Clan.

The Occult Bone Clan focused on the Laws of Life, and especially the Concept of Flesh and Blood. They primarily trained through double cultivation the disciples of their clan indulged in all the sensual pleasures of life. The men and women would slowly enlighten themselves on the mysteries of life through endless amounts of sex.

In addition, their natures were gluttonous. This sort of gluttony was not referring to sex, but to eating up all types of heavenly materials. They would even eat metal ores to further perfect their living bodies and perceive the Laws of Life.

As they said, “appetitive for food and sex was natural.” The most primal desires of life were to reproduce and eat, and the Occult Bone Clan believed that these two points were the most essential characteristics of life. Only by displaying these two sorts of desires to the extreme could one become aware of the source rules of life.

A young man hugged a pretty young girl that swam up to him to his chest and began to knead his arms all over her body. He said, “I heard that Carefree Island is exchanging for a massive amount of violet sun stones. Those fellows, are they planning to send out a large number of disciples to the Red Desolate Mystic Realm to rigorously gather materials?”

This young man’s name was Gongyang Bonesmash. The Occult Bone Clan had their own language, so their names sounded a bit crude and strange in the common language of the Divine Realm.

“Hehe, I think they are frightened by us so they’re now sending out more disciple to help guard the mining of resources. They don’t want us to kill them and steal everything again.”

Soon, another Occult Bone Clan disciple had the beautiful young woman in his chest quaking with moans of pleasure. Each one of their clansmen were considered masters in bed. Because they were skilled in the Laws of Life, they all had an intricate understanding in what actions to take. They could cause a woman to be far more sensitive and aroused. Not only was this pleasing them on a physical level, but also stimulating them on a spiritual level. They were even able to form true essence tentacles to directly stimulate a woman’s fires of life, making their desire and climax reach the peak of pleasure.

It had to be known that these women were all captives the Occult Bone Clan stole away from the Jadescale Clan Branch of the Fey race. There were even some women with a noble status, and some of them even had a faint hint of the royal bloodline. From the start, they had resisted with all of their will. However, due to the stimulating technique from the

Occult Bone Clan's disciples, their bodies and minds were slowly worn away before finally fading to nothing. These captives naturally turned into drones that lost nearly all of their personality, becoming nothing but slaves to their own sexual pleasures.

Because of this, the sects, clans, and families that had many beautiful women but were also not too strong avoided the Occult Bone Clan like a nest of vipers.

"I don't think that's necessarily true. Although the Red Desolate Mystic Realm is rich in resources, the amount one can gather in a single time is limited. Moreover, no matter what boundary the martial artists are at, there usually isn't too much of a difference in the amount of resources they can gather. Sending Revolving Core realm disciples into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm is the most cost-effective method; the harvests will be the highest. Low stage Life Destruction disciples that enter will barely be able to make up for their costs. As for high stage Life Destruction and Divine Sea realm disciples, their losses are great. If they send too many Divine Sea disciples and too few Revolving Core disciples, they'll be unable to recoup the costs. I think that Carefree Island is planning to gather a massive amount of resources in a single go. They will likely send out several thousand Revolving Core disciples and a hundred or so Divine Sea disciples, enough so that they will only need to go gather resources once. And, the more Divine Sea disciples they send, the more difficult it will be for us to attack them. They want to engage us in a war of resources."

"Haha! Carefree Island is wealthy, but our Occult Bone Clan isn't much worse. On top of that, we have an ally in Splintersoul Mountain. With two against one, there is no way they can win. Since they want to compete with us in resources, let's see just who can send out more and stronger Divine Sea disciples!"

"Well said! I also can't wait to start this battle! I'm interested in studying the flesh and blood of those geniuses! Hahaha!" Gongyang Bonesmash wantonly laughed and suddenly thrust up his pelvis, entering deep into the body of the woman on him and causing her to scream.

While the Occult Bone Clan was discussing the situation, something similar was also occurring at Splintersoul Mountain. But what was different was that an unexpected visitor had come to Splintersoul Mountain.

This stranger wore a demon mask. He was tall, with muscles wrapping around his body like the claws of a dragon. He stood on the ledge of a sea cliff. Below him, the tides beat against the reef, causing salt water to splash into the air.

In front of this demon-masked man, there were two youths wearing cloaks. Their cloaks were long and tattered and they floated in the air as though they didn't weigh anything at all. Because of the cover of their cloaks, one couldn't see their feet. Looking closely made one doubt that they even had feet.

These two youths were both as pale as death. One of the youth's lips lifted up. The expression was strange; it was hard to tell if this was a smile or a twitch. "So you're saying that Carefree Island really is planning on entering the Red Desolate Mystic Realm to gather reserve resources. If I understand this correctly, does this mean they are trying to stir up a war between the young disciples of our three sects?"

This youth's name was Soul Thousandmile. He was a core disciple of Splintersoul Mountain. His voice was thin and sharp and also grating to the ears.

"The war was provoked by you lot to begin with. A struggle of the three sects will only allow someone to profit from the chaos," the demon-masked man coldly said. His voice was hard to hear, and there was also some faint underlying meaning to his words. He turned toward Carefree Island.

"Hehe, did I hear wrong? The disciples of Carefree Island do have the right to say that, but you do not. If it weren't for this war, how would Xiao Yanyu, the one with the qualifications to struggle with you for the throne of the Island Master, have died in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm? At that time, we received some anonymous information, ah, I think it was a detailed lists of the Laws that Xiao Yanyu excelled in as well as his weaknesses. Thinking about it, weren't you the one that provided this information, Brother Mirrorjade?"

The demon-masked man suddenly froze. Because of the mask, one couldn't see his expression, but the temperature around him suddenly fell. His voice became extremely grim, "Don't speak such nonsense or you'll lose your life!"

"Hehe, consider it done. I was just casually speaking. So, what did you come for this time around? Don't tell me you came to deliver information that we already knew." Soul Thousandmile chuckled. Combined with his pallid face, this sort of humorous laugh left one feeling faintly scared.

It wasn't some great secret that Carefree Island was purchasing violet sun stones, and the use of violet sun stones was transparent. Although those from Splintersoul Mountain were only guessing, this guess was more or less correct. Moreover, when Carefree Island truly decided to enter the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, the other two sects would be able to feel the fluctuations coming from the portal of the divergent mystic realm. From these fluctuations, one would even be able to judge just how great the scale of people that Carefree Island was sending through was.

Chapter 1086 – The Eight Inner Hidden Gates, the Sixth Gate

Chapter 1086 – The Eight Inner Hidden Gates, the Sixth Gate

…

…

…

The demon-masked man was silent for a moment. He finally said, “I’ve come here today to inform you about a top genius of Carefree Island. The degree of his talent far surpasses even that of Ye Rosewater, but his cultivation is only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction. Without accident, in just several hundred years he will grow to a degree that can give Splintersoul Mountain a headache of problems. If he is allowed to grow for a thousand years, he will even be able to shake the foundations of Splintersoul Mountain. Here is information on him. This time he should also be participating during this entry of the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. You should all know what to do next.”

He flung a jade slip into Soul Thousandmile’s hand.

“Keke.” Soul Thousandmile licked his lips as he swept his sense through the jade slip. The first thing that caught his attention was an energy projection image of Li Ming. “Eighth stage Life Destruction? Is Carefree Island really so poor that they’re out of soldiers? They are even sending such a talented disciple with a low cultivation into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm and not waiting for him to grow up. Aren’t they afraid that he’ll die there?”

“Haha, it looks like Carefree Island is really desperate. They’re taking such drastic measures. It’s like they want to bring this fight to an end. It seems it’s do or die for them,” another Splintersoul Mountain disciple echoed.

At this time, the demon-masked man coldly humphed and said, “You think Carefree Island’s decision makers are fools? Although I’ve listed Lin Ming’s information, that is only the strength that he has shown. As for what the limits of his strength are, no one knows, not even me. I advise you all to not underestimate him, otherwise you will surely pay a steep price! The information is already written in the jade slip so you can pour through it yourself. I can only say that this person is my enemy, so you do not need to worry that this information is false!”

“Haha, don’t worry. We’re both clear about how ‘moral’ and ‘just’ Brother Mirrorjade’s character is!” Soul Thousandmile emphasized the words moral and just, clearly mocking White Mirrorjade. He wasn’t saying that White Mirrorjade was a righteous man that wouldn’t give wrong information, but that White Mirrorjade had too many ambitions and wouldn’t tolerate anyone to threaten his ambitions, so his information wouldn’t be wrong.

As he spoke up to here, Soul Thousandmile seemed to think of something else. A playful smile crossed his face. “You know Brother Mirrorjade, it seems as if you aren’t doing too well in Carefree Island. You seem to always be pushed aside and your status is constantly under threat. How about you join my Splintersoul Mountain instead? Our Splintersoul Mountain has extremely advanced studies into the soul. In fact, in that aspect alone we can be considered at the top of the True Martial Great World. If we pay a great enough price and help you increase the strength of your divine soul, your talent will absolutely rise.”

“You sure spout enough crap!” the demon-masked man icily said.

Soul Thousandmile stiffened, about to burst with anger, but at that moment the demon-masked man’s entire body combusted into flames. Before long, he turned into a giant conflagration. All of these flames came from the body of the masked man. Moreover, the temperature was extremely high; it easily burnt the demon-masked man to ashes.

As Soul Thousandmile looked at the remains of the demon-masked man, he shook his head, “He’s too careful. He never sends his main body here, and every time before leaving he will immolate himself and turn himself into ashes without clues left behind.”

The disciple beside Soul Thousandmile spoke up, “Of course he has to be careful. Not only does he have to guard against his identity being exposed to Carefree Island, but he even has to watch out for us ambushing him and capturing him. No one will believe this type of person.”

“Mm, even we aren’t exactly sure of his true identity. With the available information and his motives, I can approximate that he is White Mirrorjade. But as for evidence, we don’t have any.”

“Hehe, it should be more or less correct. Although he can hide his appearance, he can’t hide his motivations. Not just that, but the information he’s given us is so detailed; it’s not what the average disciple can provide. So who else could it be? This person really goes to extreme lengths to achieve his goals; he’s even willing to betray his own sect without an ounce of hesitation!”

“Humph, what does it matter if he betrays his sect? Even if Carefree Island is suffering setbacks in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, they will only be weakened and slowly diminish to an upper eighth-grade sect. It’s impossible for the likes of them to truly be exterminated. This simply doesn’t have any effect on White Mirrorjade. In any case, his only goal is to become Island Master. As for whether Carefree Island is a ninth-grade Holy Land or an eighth-grade sect, that’s not as important as him becoming Island Master. If you had to choose, would you rather become a minion of a peak sect? Or the Sovereign of a lower grade sect?” Soul Thousandmile rhetorically asked.

The disciple nodded, “That sounds about right. Being a Sovereign would feel much better!”

As the two Splintersoul Mountain disciples were discussing, on Carefree Island within a secret seclusion chamber, White Mirrorjade opened his eyes.

“Humph, those two fellows keep trying to use words to probe my status, as if they are already completely sure about who I am. Humph, what a waste of time! They want to find my weak spot and use it to threaten me, but what a pity, they will never find any evidence.

These puppets were made many years ago and also found by me in a secret depository deep underneath the seabed of the Red Desolate Sea. After I use them to pass on a message, I immediately destroy them. Even if these puppets are caught, there is no evidence on them to indicate they are related to me, because they simply don't come from Carefree Island and the method of manufacturing them isn't related to Carefree Island in any way."

White Mirrorjade thought to himself as he stood up, "Lin Ming, to think that you would refuse the road to heaven and rush through the gates of hell instead. If you are on Carefree Island, I wouldn't dare to move against you, but since you want to join in on the war between the three sects, you should also be aware that there no eyes in battle. Who can be blamed if you die in all the chaos?"

As White Mirrorjade thought of this, a sinister smile flashed across his face. He didn't leave his seclusion chamber but instead closed his eyes and continued to meditate. This war was likely to be spread over a wide area with rivers of blood flowing. He had to maintain his peak state, otherwise even he might perish in the mystic realm!

As for White Mirrorjade's information, in truth he hadn't betrayed Carefree Island. He had only pointed out Lin Ming so that his chances of living in the chaotic battle would be much smaller. Of course, if Splintersoul Mountain was really useless, White Mirrorjade wouldn't mind hiding in some secret place and helping them kill off Lin Ming.

Although he was one large boundary and another four small boundaries of cultivation above Lin Ming, he still wouldn't lower his guard. For Lin Ming to grow to such a degree, his life must inevitably be extremely tough. Those that plotted against Lin Ming might find their plans bouncing back on them instead. Moreover, the high level figures of Carefree Island had an extremely ambiguous attitude toward Lin Ming; this also caused White Mirrorjade to have all sorts of doubts.

As White Mirrorjade was training, Lin Ming was also in training. As for the area where he was training, that was in Carefree Palace's mystic realm space!

This entire space was like a boundless field of flowers, as if it were a sunny and breezy spring day. But high above him was actually a vast expanse of stars with distant celestial bodies. It was like he was in a field of green wilderness floating within the boundless universe.

In front of Lin Ming, a dragon bone floated, faintly glowing with an azure light. Although this dragon bone weighed more than a mountain range, this space had no gravity, so it easily floated where it was.

At this time, Lin Ming went into seclusion to open up the sixth of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates–the Gate of View!

The Gate of View was located in his back and was in charge of defense. After opening it, Lin Ming's defense would rise to another level. But the truth was that in comparison to the defensive power gained from opening the Gate of View, the defensive power that he gained from absorbing the dragon bone would actually be much greater.

Once he fused the dragon bone essence into his own skeleton, his bones would become tougher than a top grade saint artifact!

By absorbing the dragon bone, Lin Ming's ability to resist attacks would undergo a qualitative leap.

In addition to his terrifying endurance and regenerative ability, even if Lin Ming stood still and allowed martial artists at his boundary to attack him, in all likelihood, they wouldn't even be able to harm him.

Mo Eversnow stood next to the dragon bone like an otherworldly fairy. And beside her was another woman. This woman had white temples and her face was etched with the passing of the years. One could see from her appearance that she had also once been an outstanding beauty. This woman was Mo Eversnow's aunt, Mo Riverbliss.

Absorbing the dragon bone was an extremely long and vast project. In the God Beast Mystic Realm, the Asura King had obtained the dragon bone for a very long time already.

Even so, it had only managed to absorb half of the dragon marrow. As for the dragon bone itself, it wasn't able to do anything to it, because absorbing the dragon bone was simply too difficult.

The dragon bone was different from dragon marrow. For such a massive dragon bone, there was simply no way Lin Ming could swallow it. His only chance was to refine the dragon bone into its purest essence and fuse with it that way.

But the Ancient Azure Dragon was a God Beast of the primitive, archaic times. Even if its main body had died for countless hundreds of millions of years, its bones weren't something that an ordinary person could refine.

Wasn't wanting to refine its essence easier said than done?

This dragon bone also couldn't be exposed to the world. Lin Ming hadn't even dared to take it out in the Ancient Phoenix Clan. He wasn't able to show it to his master Huo Violentstone, much less others.

If he didn't have an expert like Huo Violentstone to help him, he could only rely on Mo Eversnow using the power of Laws to slowly refine the essence of the dragon bone. This was an extremely inefficient way of doing it. But now things were different; there was Mo Riverbliss. Her strength was at a half-step World King. She was stronger than Huo Violentstone, and even the current Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

Mo Riverbliss stood in front of the dragon bone and looked it over. She glanced at Lin Ming, a glorious light shining in her eyes once more. "I never imagined that such a great lucky chance would be found by you. In the past, if I had this dragon bone, my father's soul injuries would have been healed and the Verdant Feather Holy Lands would not have ended up in such a state..."

Lin Ming bowed. "I'll have to bother Senior Mo. I am very thankful for your help."

Lin Ming knew that refining the dragon bone essence was not a simple matter. It would consume a great deal of origin energy and strength. This was not a minor favor.

Mo Riverbliss dismissively waved her hands. “There’s no need to thank me. If it weren’t for you, Little Snow would still be sleeping in the Magic Cube. Perhaps I would have passed away without ever being able to see her again. I will certainly keep this graciousness in my mind! Compared to that, what can refining this piece of dragon bone be considered? If you can help rebuild my Verdant Feather Holy Lands in the future, you will truly become the great benefactor of my Mo Family. I fear I won’t be able to ever repay such a benevolence in my lifetime. But at that time, I also fear that you won’t need my favors anymore.”

As Mo Riverbliss spoke, she waved her hand and a three-legged furnace flew out from her spatial ring, growing larger and larger. The furnace sent out a strong suction force that covered the supreme dragon bone. On the other hand, the supreme dragon bone began to shrink, until it was finally completely sucked into the furnace.

Lin Ming looked on from the side. This was actually a spirit artifact level treasure, and was even a first-class existence amongst all spirit artifacts.

Chapter 1087 – Dragon Bone Relics

Chapter 1087 – Dragon Bone Relics

…

…

…

After Mo Riverbliss received the supreme dragon bone, she formed dozens of seals and sent them out. In the blink of an eye, the space around her and the spirit artifact furnace was isolated from the outside. A strange space barrier came falling down. On the walls of this space barrier, there were countless faint traces, as if they were made of water.

Lin Ming recognized that these were the traces of the Time Laws. Mo Riverbliss sectioned off a space around her using the power of the Time Laws, in order to speed up the passage of time. Looking at the fluctuations of energy coming from the patterns, he estimated that the time inside was a few dozen times faster.

In other words, one day outside would mean around one month inside.

From this, Lin Ming could see that refining the dragon bone essence was more difficult than he had imagined. Even with the assistance of Mo Riverbliss, it would still take a long time.

Accelerating time couldn't be considered some profound use of the Concept of Time. Geniuses of large sects didn't use this to train often; they would only occasionally use it for specific circumstances.

This was mainly because accelerating the time within wouldn't extend one's life. If ten years passed inside the isolated time space, one would age ten years. There wasn't much meaning in doing this. Another reason was that there would also be slight distortions in the

Laws due to the different flow of time, and meditating in there on the Laws would have minor errors. Doing this for a short period of time was okay, but meditating on these distorted Laws for an extended period of time wouldn't provide any benefits.

As Mo Riverbliss was refining the dragon bone, Mo Eversnow turned to Lin Ming and said, "Lin Ming, I've said that the essence gathering system and the body transformation system are two inherently contradictory cultivation systems. This is particularly true in the Life Destruction realm. To dual cultivate body and energy is to defy the will of the heavens. If you absorb half of this dragon bone and also open the sixth of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, the difficulties you will face in crossing Ninefall will rise to yet another level! You must be aware of this."

"I understand."

"Mm, also, this dragon bone is 1000 feet long and is as heavy as a mountain range. Even if the essence is refined from it, there's no way for you to fully absorb it. I estimate that absorbing a third of it will be your limit. As for the remaining two thirds, I will use that to create medicine for you to use as the foundation to open the last two of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. They are the most difficult gates to open–the Gate of Life, and the Gate of Death."

Lin Ming nodded. It felt extremely good to have someone teach him and not have to stumble through everything himself. In the past, when he first touched upon the body transformation system, if he had someone at his side informing him of the horrifying dangers he would experience in the Life Destruction stage, he might not have chosen to dual cultivate body and energy.

If no one was here to teach him, then although he might be able to strike luck once or twice, eventually he would definitely have to take a great deal of detours.

"Listen carefully. I will teach you the words to the Celestial Tyrant Manual. This is a completely new body transformation law formula. The Celestial Tyrant Manual details the three great boundaries of the body transformation system; the seven initial stages of body transformation with Tempering Marrow included, the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. But its greatest advantage manifests itself in the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. Compared to the Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians, it is several times better. This law formula is something that my grandfather found in a mystic realm along with the Magic Cube. The reason that I chose to dual cultivate in body and energy is also because I had this body transformation law formula as my foundation. However, in the past I wasn't able to fully complete the Celestial Tyrant Manual. Now, my mortal body has been destroyed and all of that has been lost. I currently do not have the ability to fully engrave a complete Celestial Tyrant Manual jade slip for you; I can only temporarily teach you a part of it. As for the rest, you will have to obtain the Celestial Tyrant Manual jade slip to learn it."

As Mo Eversnow spoke to here, Lin Ming was startled. The Celestial Tyrant Manual was actually discovered together with the Magic Cube? Mo Eversnow had said that the mystic realm where the Magic Cube was discovered was hidden in an extremely hard to find spot. Besides those from the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, no one knew of it. To think that this mystic realm had not only the Magic Cube but also the Celestial Tyrant Manual. Just how were the two related?

Lin Ming didn't have time to think about this. Mo Eversnow already started to repeat the words of the Celestial Tyrant Manual. In front of Mo Eversnow, heaven and earth origin energy currents began to gather up, swirling and forming into all sorts of strange runes under the control of her mind. These runes contained mysterious Laws, each marked with the energy revolution pathways of the body transformation system. A cultivation method's contents were extremely broad and profound; it wasn't something that could be covered with mere words. Rather, it was composed of all sorts of things. Engraving all of this onto a jade slip was far harder than perceiving it through meditation.

Lin Ming started to revolve the energy within his body according to Mo Eversnow's instructions. Like this, three and a half days passed. Lin Ming only glimpsed at the initial wonders of the Celestial Tyrant Law when the space barrier around Mo Riverbliss opened up.

An exhausted looking Mo Riverbliss walked out; she had clearly consumed a great deal of energy. Beside her, the spirit artifact level furnace slowly revolved, spilling forth with a dazzling golden light.

For a worldly existence like a God Beast, if it were living, even if it stood still and didn't resist, a half-step World King still wouldn't be able to kill it. Naturally, refining its remains was also difficult.

"It's done."

Mo Riverbliss whispered. She waved her hand and the spirit artifact furnace popped open. A string of jade-like spirit beads shot out from the furnace, floating in the air. These jade beads linked together in the sky. They were large and small and floated high and low, as if they naturally revolved according to the mysterious paths of the celestial bodies that floated in the universe.

There were a total of 108!

After carefully calculating it, Mo Riverbliss had entered into that separate time-space for a total of 108 days, refining a total of 108 spirit beads.

"These are dragon bone relics, also known as dragon pearls. When a top powerhouse or a powerful God Beast's bones are refined, it will form these sorts of bone relics. The more powerful the being was, the more bone relics that would be produced, and the higher the quality they would be too. From this dragon bone I was able to refine a total of 108 bone relics. Take then and use them well."

As Mo Riverbliss spoke, the 108 bone relics all flew toward Lin Ming and he received them. As he grasped the bone relics, he could feel incomparably hot heat surging within them. They appeared to be very smooth but they were also extremely dense. It was clear that they was a tremendous amount of essence concentrated within.

"Very well, Little Snow, aunty has done everything she can. I must go recuperate now. Everything else will be left to you."

As Mo Riverbliss spoke, she casually stepped out and passed through the separate time-space of the Carefree Palace and left this mystic realm space.

Mo Eversnow waved her jade-white hands and took 36 of the 108 dragon bone relics around Lin Ming. She said, “Lin Ming, revolve the Celestial Tyrant Manual according to what I taught you. I will fuse the dragon bone relics into your body.”

Mo Eversnow raised her palms flat and concentrated her battle spirit onto the dragon bone relics. In that moment, an incomparably powerful force erupted forth from the dragon bone relics. They shot forwards at a speed difficult to see with the eye, and their target was Lin Ming!

36 dragon bone relics all aimed at the 36 acupoints in his body!

If dragon bone relics were used to transform the body, the best method was not to swallow them but to directly thrust them into the skeleton!

These extremely heavy dragon bone relics also had Mo Eversnow’s battle spirit poured into them; their penetrating power could be imagined. Even if Lin Ming’s defensive power was top notch, it was still nothing to these dragon bone relics.

Puff puff puff!

Blood splashed out and Lin Ming miserably coughed. His body was struck by a massive impact force and sent hurtling backwards. 36 points of agonizing pain broke out all around his body as the dragon bone relics drilled through his skin, muscles, organs, and finally sank deep into his skeleton!

At that moment, Lin Ming’s entire body gushed red with blood. His acupoints were torn apart, his bones fractured, his joints torn, and his ligaments collapsed. He had lost all ability to move.

“…So this is the method to absorb them…you could’ve said something in advance…”

Lin Ming was left somewhat speechless by this. As he lay bleeding on the ground, he was unable to move. He could clearly feel the blood bubbling out from his wounds, but he was unable to lift so much as a single finger. It was obvious that Mo Eversnow had carefully chosen which 36 acupoints to strike at. Once she struck, all of Lin Ming's ligaments had been completely torn apart.

Mo Eversnow said, "You will need to lay down for some time. It won't be easy for you to absorb the dragon bone essence. Luckily, you have a foundation of dragon marrow blood within your body; you should be able to complete this in a month or two. I have only cut apart your ligaments, but your meridians are completely intact. You can now continue revolving the Celestial Tyrant Manual. Two months from now, after you have completely absorbed the dragon bone relics, you can take advantage of the momentum to break into the Gate of View."

As Mo Eversnow finished speaking, she used the Time Laws to form a separate time-space, enveloping Lin Ming within it. This was a 10:1 time flow difference. As long as 5-6 days passed, Lin Ming would be healed.

Lin Ming's entire body was wracked with pain. This pain not only came from the fact that his body had been pierced through by the dragon bone relics, but because the dragon bone relics that were inserted within him were struggling with his skeleton.

The dragon bone relics wanted to swallow Lin Ming's bones, but Lin Ming's bones also wanted to swallow the dragon bone relics. Such a battle was truly a pain as deep as the marrow; this time the battlefield was Lin Ming's own marrow. Fortunately, Lin Ming was already used to such torturous pain and his will was also extremely firm, otherwise he would not have been able to withstand this agony.

Lin Ming didn't stop bleeding. It was only when Mo Eversnow placed medicinal powder on his 36 wounds that they slowly stopped bleeding. However, the wounds didn't seem as if they would start regenerating at all. Rather, they seemed to become increasingly worse.

With Lin Ming's regenerative ability, even if he shattered his bones and tore his muscles, he would still be able to heal himself in 1-2 hours. But now, with the dragon bone relics within him swallowing his flesh and blood, he wasn't able to heal himself in a short time. He would heal a little, the dragon bone would swallow that, and then he would heal a little more again, the process ever repeating itself.

If the dragon bone was compared to mercury, then Lin Ming was using his own bloodline marrow to wear down this mercury, layer by layer. The difficulty of doing so could be imagined.

Whether it was absorbing dragon bone or absorbing dragon blood, they did not replace the human body. Rather, with the human bones and blood as a foundation, they fused together and the human body would gain characteristics of a dragon's body. This was definitely difficult.

Like this, one day passed, two days, three days…10 days, 20 days, 30 days…

Lin Ming continued to suffer the excruciating pain the entire time. At the start, the pain Lin Ming was in could already be called an exquisite torment. It was true that he was skilled at bearing pain, but to continuously bear such a pain for days and even weeks on end, even someone with a strong will would be close to collapse.

But later, as Lin Ming continued to revolve the Celestial Tyrant Manual, completely focusing his mentality on revolving the energy within him and revitalizing his wounds, he slowly began to feel that it wasn't as painful as before.

After 20 some days passed, Lin Ming began to feel that the pain of his wounds turned into a numbing feeling.

After 30 some days passed, even the numbness disappeared. His entire body felt comfortable, and his absorption of the dragon bone continued at a breakneck pace. If things continued like this, then forget one month, he wouldn't even need 10 days to finish.

Chapter 1088 – Six Gates Opened

Chapter 1088 – Six Gates Opened

…

..

..

As Lin Ming revolved the Celestial Tyrant Manual, he felt heat swell forth within his body as if he were soaking in a hot spring.

Currently, Lin Ming could feel all of his torn ligaments and muscles beginning to repair and regenerate themselves. His flesh and blood became even more tight and compact. On the fifth day, Lin Ming's entire body itched. As he slightly moved, his joints crackled, a strangely pleasing comfort.

He could also feel the muscles within his body changing. Now he could alter them however he liked, making them as soft and malleable as a rubber band or as hard as divine iron.

However, the 36 wounds on Lin Ming's body still hadn't completely healed. There were even some places without any feeling at all. It was obvious that the dragon bone relics hadn't been completely absorbed yet. Even so, Lin Ming didn't feel any pain at this time. In the end, pain was simply a response produced by the body. When one's body transformation technique reached an extremely high boundary, one was able to control their body and thus control the pain they felt.

On the 40th day, Lin Ming felt that all of his wounds were about healed. At this time, he felt that the energy within his body suddenly connected together, and the 36 wounds around his body seemed to resonate together, vibrating with a peculiar energy that united as one. Lin Ming couldn't help but release a clear shout.

"Attack the Gate of View!"

Even with Mo Eversnow's warning, Lin Ming was still able to realize that this was the perfect opportunity to break through the Gate of View.

Lin Ming's thoughts dove into his spiritual sea. He manipulated all of the energy in his body to rush towards the Gate of View.

In that moment, all of the meridians throughout his body completely linked together. His flesh and blood essence gathered together, surging towards the Gate of View like a massive tsunami.

Peng!

With a loud crack, the flesh on Lin Ming's back burst apart. The stone underneath Lin Ming's body blew apart, causing rubble to fall everywhere.

His entire body twisted, and the sounds of his joints popping were like the cries of dragons, reaching to the horizon.

This sort of comfortable feeling left Lin Ming drunk on pleasure.

The sixth of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, the Gate of View, had finally been opened!

Years since opening the Gate of Opening, which was able to enhance perception, Lin Ming had finally opened the sixth of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

The Gate of Healing, located between the collarbones, able to increase one's endurance and recovery ability.

The Gate of Limit, located at the spine, able to increase one's strength and explosive force.

The Gate of Wonder, located at the knees, able to increase one's speed.

The Gate of Pain, located at the fists, able to increase one's striking power.

The Gate of Opening, located in the brain, able to increase one's perception.

And finally, the last of the first six Eight Inner Hidden Gates, the Gate of View, located at the back of the body, able to increase one's defense.

The first six of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates had been completely opened!

And in the future, there was still the Gate of Life and the Gate of Death. Those two gates were called the true tests of life or death. Although they belonged to the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, they were actually equal to half a large boundary each. If one wished to rush through the Gates of Life and Death, that wasn't something that was able to be accomplished overnight.

In the Celestial Tyrant Manual, it was written that if one wished to attack the Gates of Life and Death, there needed to be two kinds of pills. To attack the Gate of Life, one required the Esoteric Immortality Pill, and to attack the Gate of Death, one required the Esoteric Mortality Pill.

After training to this step, Lin Ming once again realized how difficult dual body and energy cultivation was. Up until now, he had used countless resources, many of them extremely precious. In particular, the supreme dragon bone. The supreme dragon bone was something that would be considered incredibly luxurious even if he used it to break into the Divine Lord realm.

However, Lin Ming absorbed the supreme dragon bone not only to attack the next boundary, but also to improve his physical body, building a solid base for himself and building upon his foundations.

Even without the supreme dragon bone, Lin Ming would still have been able to use some body transformation medicines to open the Gate of View. In the future he would even be able to break into the Gates of Life and Death. However, his chances of breaking into the heaven-defying Nine Stars of the Dao Palace were actually uncertain. Even Mo Eversnow of the past had been stuck at that bottleneck and she hadn't been able to break through.

These were also the reasons why dual body and energy cultivation had nearly disappeared from the Divine Realm.

Mo Eversnow said, "Lin Ming, there is still a month or two until the foray into the divergent mystic realm. In such a short period of time, even if the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree were given to you, you could not break through to the ninth stage of Life Destruction. You haven't been at Eightfall long enough, and your accumulations are insufficient."

"Mm, I understand." Lin Ming nodded. In truth, if he wanted, he could attack Ninefall at this moment. But, in order to seek the true Ninefall, he had to experience the truths that existed at every stage of Life Destruction.

Every stage of Life Destruction corresponded to a different field of vision. A martial artist needed to enlighten themselves on the Laws of the world in each boundary, allowing their foundations to constantly consolidate.

Only like this could one truly become a dragon that soared to the heavens in Ninefall, and seek the Nine Divine Shifts.

Thus, to a genius, breaking through boundaries was not a problem. What they were concerned about was not just speed, but many other aspects.

After opening the Gate of View, Lin Ming felt weakness all throughout his body. After all, he had gone through dozens of days of having serious wounds all over his body, and his flesh and blood had been continuously regenerated and swallowed up. This was extremely taxing on Lin Ming. After opening the Gate of View, that also consumed the great deal of essence energy that Lin Ming had saved up within his body. Thus he didn't dive into training, but began to meditate for a few days instead.

With the support of the dragon marrow blood, Lin Ming's resiliency was amazing. His body soon returned to its peak condition.

In the darkness, Lin Ming's eyes shot open and his aura burst out. His eyes were like twin bolts of lightning that pierced through the void, making people unable to look into his eyes.

The lines of his muscles were far more perfect, flowing as smoothly and naturally as the mountains and rivers. Now, after taking a bath, Lin Ming didn't even need to wipe down his body or use fire-attribute true essence to dry himself; the water would naturally roll down the beautiful and exquisite hard curves of his naked body, without the least bit remaining, as if it were the purest of glass. As for an ordinary person, after taking a bath, their body would be covered with drops of water.

This was a high boundary found in the ancient texts – skin as fragrant as flowers, as pleasant as a lotus, untainted by water.

After a martial artist reached this boundary, only when their life was coming to an end and the fires of their life were nearly extinguished and their appearance started to decline would this sort of phenomenon gradually fade away. This also meant that their body was aging and they would no longer have a perfect spirit body.

For this time, Lin Ming continued to train in Carefree Palace.

Not only did the Celestial Tyrant Manual contain body transformation techniques, but it also contained a combat technique, called Celestial Tyrant's Hundred Layered Waves. It allowed a martial artist's strength to multiply when they fought, and could be used with fists, swords, sabers, and spears.

What Lin Ming naturally used was the spear.

As he was practicing the Celestial Tyrant Manual, he certainly wouldn't miss out on the specialty product of Carefree Island, the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Wine.

After drinking the fruit wine, his dantian was filled with a hot energy that shot straight through his head. Lin Ming's mind felt blurry as if he were drunk.

However, under this half-sober and half-drunk state, where he was almost unconscious, his mind didn't have a single distracting thought. It was a state similar to hypnosis, and all of the potential within his body that was normally suppressed was also released. This was the best time to practice martial arts.

The mortal world's 'drunken fist' also followed this principle.

Without knowing pain, without knowing fear, without knowing sorrow, although one seemed crazy, they were actually able to explode with an immense potential at a critical moment, displaying a strength and speed far surpassing normal times.

However, a martial artist was not suited for this type of boxing style. This was because a martial artist's mental strength and soul force were far too powerful – they weren't able to get drunk on one or two jars of mortal alcohol. But, this Ten Severing Dao Fruit Wine just happened to have such a wondrous effect.

In such a state, Lin Ming used his spear skills with the Celestial Tyrant Manual, not knowing the passing of time or exhaustion in his body. Everything he did was based on his instincts to attack. Blood surged in his body like waves crashing upon the rocky shores, over and over again.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Lin Ming's aura constantly gathered, his strength continuously rising. Suddenly, with a loud explosive sound, Lin Ming stepped forwards, his feet rupturing the ground, and a terrifying flux of energy burst out from the Phoenix Blood Spear, turning into a blazing beam of light that tore through the skies!

With a distant ringing sound, the beam of light smashed into the space barriers of Carefree Palace's dimensional realm, and this actually caused the skies to tremble. Following that, the entire dimensional realm shook. Deep cracks appeared in the ground and the rivers reversed their flow, as if an earthquake had happened.

“What an amazing power!”

Lin Ming looked at the Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands. That spear strike did not contain the Concepts of Thunder or Fire – it had been his physical strength alone!

In using the Celestial Tyrant’s Hundred Layered Waves, one’s strength could actually be superimposed, layered over and over on top of each other, constantly gathering until the last moment in a massive eruption!

Superimposing strength sounded easy, but it was actually extremely difficult. This was because a martial artist needed to start the second attack before the first had even ended. Even if a martial artist was able to slash out 100 sword energies in a split second, this was only because they were too fast so it formed an illusion to the eyes of others. If one were able to look past this illusion and see its origins, one could see that every move was sent only when the previous one ended.

Thus, wanting to superimpose one’s attacks was far too difficult.

However, the Celestial Tyrant Manual used the absolute control over the physical body that a body transformation martial artist had to complete this nearly impossible superimposition of attacks.

Just this point was enough to stun Lin Ming.

If one’s bodily strength could be superimposed, then when he used the Concepts of Thunder and Fire, could fire true essence or thunder true essence also be superimposed?

Lin Ming suddenly felt as if the Celestial Tyrant Manual had opened up a completely new mentality for himself.

It had to be known that this wasn't the true Celestial Tyrant Manual, but a portion reproduced from what Mo Eversnow had learnt herself. The true Celestial Tyrant Manual was naturally far more mysterious.

That's right, the Celestial Tyrant Manual was a body transformation law formula that was discovered together with the Magic Cube!

As Lin Ming thought of this, something popped into his mind. He turned and asked Mo Eversnow, "Miss Mo, what rank cultivation method is the Celestial Tyrant Manual?"

"I do not know." Mo Eversnow shook her head, "Besides the normal classifications for martial arts inheritances, the known transcendent divine mights are only focused on the essence gathering system; I do not know of a body transformation-based transcendent divine might. Thus, I cannot confirm what rank the Celestial Tyrant Manual is at. However, this body transformation law formula is truly incomparably mysterious. A great part of the reason that I decided to step onto the path of dual body and energy cultivation was that I was captivated by the Celestial Tyrant Manual. Unfortunately, the Celestial Tyrant Manual is also incomplete. It focuses mainly on the Eight Inner Hidden Gates without going too in-depth about the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace."

"So that's what it is!" Lin Ming sucked in a light breath. When Mo Eversnow had taught him the Celestial Tyrant Manual, she had done so in a very casual manner, so he hadn't realized just how precious the Celestial Tyrant Manual was at the start. But as he thought about it some more, this manual was found together with the Magic Cube, so how could it be ordinary?

During the following days, Lin Ming paid more and more attention to this cultivation method. Finally, the day to enter the Red Desolate Mystic Realm had arrived!

Carefree Island had prepared 20 billion violet sun stones for this reason!

To the geniuses of Carefree Island, entering the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was not about finding lucky chances, nor was it to hunt treasures. Rather, it was to engage in a life or death war that would be thick with the smell of blood.

Chapter 1089 – The Red Wilderness

Chapter 1089 – The Red Wilderness

…

…

…

At dawn, the sky above the Red Desolate Sea was already covered with a layer of morning mist. On Carefree Island, a large group of disciple had gathered, around 3000-4000 cultivators in total.

These 3000-4000 cultivators were the main force that was being sent into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm.

Of these people, 95% of them were Revolving Core disciples. Of true high stage Life Destruction and Divine Sea realm disciples, there were only about a hundred of them.

These Revolving Core disciples were basically the young disciples of Carefree Island. On average, their talent wasn't too great. There were some that came from distinguished martial arts families that were a bit better than the rest. But even so, upon arriving at Carefree Island, they all had to follow the rules. If they wanted to be vigorously trained by Carefree Island, they would have to show unparalleled talent or honestly carry out the missions assigned to them.

Of the over 3000 Revolving Core disciples, each one of them had a saint artifact level spatial ring. These were given to them to gather resources in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm.

As for the 100 plus high stage Life Destruction and Divine Sea realm disciples, they were the direct disciples of Carefree Island. Even peak direct disciples like Ye Rosewater and White Mirrorjade were among them.

This was a large transmission event that required 20 billion violet sun stones. As for the four God Beast Clans, it only cost them a few billion violet sun stones when they sent their disciples to the God Beast Mystic Realm smelting trial.

Of course, the four God Beast Clans only did so to help temper their disciples, giving them more experience, and allowing them to seek their own lucky chances in the God Beast Mystic Realm. To them, violet sun stones were only considered an investment into their junior disciples. The payoff would only be seen in the future.

As for Carefree Island, they went to gather resources for their sect; this mission involved the livelihood of their sect's future. It wasn't a mission to help train their junior disciples. Moreover, as long as they weren't robbed, then the greater their investment, the more profit there would be. The two instances naturally couldn't be compared.

Of the 20 billion violet sun stones, 80% of them was used to transmit the 100 plus direct disciples. As for the 3000-4000 Revolving Core disciples, they only cost the remaining 20% to send over.

Lin Ming was also in this massive troop of people. He stood by himself in a corner. All around him, the other disciples were casting glances his way. Some had fear in their eyes, some had curiosity, some had goodwill, and some were even hostile.

The news of Lin Ming entering the 30th level of the simulation mystic realm and taking the simulation treasure without a single wound had already spread to the ears of all the direct disciples.

"He's Lin Ming? He looks to be around 30 years old."

Some of the direct disciples began to speak to each other with true essence sound transmissions. Lin Ming was over 30 but still appeared to be around 20 years old; it was impossible to tell his true age from his appearance alone. Lin Ming was destined to break into the Divine Lord realm in the future. Once he did, he would be able to maintain this appearance for perpetuity. He wouldn't need to consume part of his cultivation to maintain his youthful good looks like many female martial artists chose to do.

"At this age, an eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation is quite the ruthless suppression. If it were an ordinary talent, this would be normal but for a genius like Lin Ming, the greater they suppress their cultivation the more it shows off their ability. This is because it is more difficult to perceive the Laws when one's cultivation is low, so the average martial artist simply can't afford to do this. Only those monstrous geniuses would forcibly suppress their cultivation so much to consolidate their foundation and perceive the Laws to a high degree at the lower realms."

"Don't look at his eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation. His true combat strength is far greater than an early Divine Sea powerhouse."

"Yeah, just look at that Liu Yun and what sort of fate he suffered."

The disciples discussed with each other. At this time, in front of Lin Ming, a white-clothed youth appeared, holding a folding fan in his hands. He had a light and courtly appearance, nothing suggesting he was about to head to a life or death battlefield. Rather, it looked like he was about to wander around and enjoy the scenery.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, I never imagined that you would be participating in this life or death war. Honorable Sect Master, he, seems a bit too willing." The youth who spoke was White Mirrorjade. At the same time he sighed again and said, "For such a talent like Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you should at least break into the Divine Sea before entering the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. If you did, you would surely be able to fight one against a hundred, overwhelming any and all. But now, it seems a bit dangerous. After all, there will be late Divine Sea powerhouses participating in the war within the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. If Junior-apprentice Brother Lin were to meet them, perhaps..."

White Mirrorjade faded off here, no longer speaking. But Lin Ming spoke up, "Senior-apprentice Brother White does not need to worry about me. I naturally have methods to save my own life."

“Haha, that would be for the best. If Junior-apprentice Brother Lin meets life threatening danger, remember that your life is the most important thing and to escape as soon as you can. Junior-apprentice Brother Lin is worth far more than any amount of resources,” White Mirrorjade advised.

He turned to the other disciples and began to caution them one at a time. Everything he said was just worthless chatter, but many of the disciples were moved. After all, White Mirrorjade’s status was far higher than these ordinary direct disciples.

“Everyone has arrived! Prepare to embark!” The one responsible for today’s operation was Carefree Island’s Great Elder. Of course, he was only directing the transmission; he wasn’t truly able to go to the Red Desolate Mystic Realm.

The Red Desolate Mystic Realm had three transmission array entrances, each belonging to the three different sects. They were all located underneath the seabed of the Red Desolate Sea.

Over 3000 disciples boarded a spirit ship. The spirit ship dove into the water, heading for the transmission array at the bottom of the sea. The Great Elder took out the 20 billion violet sun stones. In truth, these were not violet sun stones but violet sun crystals. Each violet sun crystal was worth 10,000 violet sun stones, so he didn’t take out 20 billion violet sun stones but 2 million violet sun crystals instead. With so many violet sun crystals piled up, they formed a massive crystal mountain. For a time, the brilliant purple light pierced through the 10,000 foot deep seawater, directly piercing through the skies.

A thousand miles away from Carefree Island, on a lonely and isolated mountain, there were several black cloaked martial artists secretly hiding deep beneath several layers of extremely hidden concealing array formations. They looked toward the purple light that shot up from the distance.

“The transmission array has opened. They didn’t even think of hiding the light of the violet sun stones.”

“Humph, hiding is useless. The three transmission arrays are connected to each other. Once one is activated, everyone else will know. Since they’ve gone in, so shall we! Mine the resources first and in 80 hours from now go and kill them all and take their resources. Give no quarter!”

“Haha, I can’t wait.”

The time to enter the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was 96 hours. After that, everyone would be transmitted out. 16 hours was enough for the final battle at the end. In order to maximize profits, it was best to allow everyone to gather resources for the first 80 hours.

……

“So this is the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. It feels a bit different from the God Beast Mystic Realm.”

Lin Ming looked at the endless red desert under his feet. His surroundings seemed barren and the heaven and earth origin energy here was also very sparse. It was hard to imagine that there was a nearly unlimited amount of resources buried beneath this sand. By all reasoning, where there were resources, the heaven and earth origin energy should be extremely rich; just like it was in the Temple of Marvels.

It wasn’t just Lin Ming, but many disciples entering the Red Desolate Mystic Realm for the first time had this question. White Mirrorjade seemed to guess their thoughts and slowly explained, “It isn’t anything strange. The sand of the Red Desolate Mystic Realm is not ordinary sand. It is able to isolate origin energy fluctuations and also makes it very difficult for senses to penetrate through. The spirit energy of the Red Desolate Mystic Realm is covered up by this endless red desert. To look for resources, we have no choice but to dig down and hope that we get lucky. Even a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse would be in the same situation. Basically, using your divine sense here is useless. Regardless of your cultivation, there isn’t too great a difference in the amount of resources you can dig out.”

As White Mirrorjade spoke, many of the disciples began experimenting themselves. Their divine sense wasn't able to penetrate more than several inches underground, but it was perfectly fine when investigating outwards.

"Alright, less banter and more work. We've paid a great price to enter this time to excavate resources, so let's begin. Everyone will be listening to me. Are there any objections?"

White Mirrorjade glanced over at Ye Rosewater. Out of everyone present, only Ye Rosewater was similar to him in cultivation and status.

Ye Rosewater didn't speak. She was clearly indicating that she had no objections at present.

White Mirrorjade faintly smiled. He pulled out a jade plate. Atop this jade plate was a vague three-dimensional image; this was a projection of this part of the red desert.

White Mirrorjade smiled as he saw this. "Hoh! Our luck isn't too bad. There just happens to be a slightly purple mountain range near us. According to what we've learnt in the past, these purple mountain ranges should be filled with violet sun stone ore. But this purple mountain range isn't too great. Several hundred people should be enough to excavate the area. To guarantee the highest efficiency, we'll divide everyone into two groups for gathering. A smaller group will go to the purple mountain and everyone else will search the desert."

As White Mirrorjade spoke, he pointed at the desert projection on the array disc. There really was a purple mountain range nearby.

After hearing this plan, Ye Rosewater frowned. "Split up? Our combined strength is much weaker than the joint forces of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, so why would we divide our forces?"

White Mirrorjade answered, "This is to ensure the highest degree of efficiency. This is the only way to do it, otherwise it will be very difficult to move around several thousand people.

Moreover, this is the intent of the Highest Elders. They didn't mention it before because they didn't want any information leaking out."

As White Mirrorjade spoke he flung out a jade slip token from his spatial ring toward Ye Rosewater.

Ye Rosewater caught the token and swept her senses through it. Indeed, there was mention of splitting up the forces so that more area could be covered. Although this meant improved efficiency, it was also much more dangerous.

"Junior-apprentice Sister Ye, you need to think about it some more. There simply isn't anything for you to worry about. We just entered the Red Desolate Mystic Realm and we haven't even had any time to gather resources. During this time, Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan aren't so idiotic as to immediately attack us. Otherwise they will just lose people without being able to steal anything at all. There is no way they would do something so thankless and without benefits. That purple mountain range is very safe. The sand and rock of the Red Desolate Mystic realm shield all senses and you'll even be mining in tunnels of the purple mountain. There will absolutely be no danger to anyone. Then again, even if you encounter danger, we can still hurry up to the location for support."

White Mirrorjade's words sounded fair and he also had the instructions of the Highest Elders on his side, so Ye Rosewater didn't complain.

"I'll divide the teams."

White Mirrorjade easily divided the main group into two. White Mirrorjade's own team had the vast majority of the group's strength, and also his cronies. Those like Liu Yun and the others were all in his team.

As for the smaller team, they were far, far weaker. That team contained all of Ye Rosewater's subordinates and there was even Lin Ming.

As for Ye Rosewater herself, she had been selected for White Mirrorjade's team.

Ye Rosewater was immediately dissatisfied with such a distribution. “White Mirrorjade, just what are you trying to do? The difference in strength is far too great!”

Chapter 1090 – Purple Mountain

Chapter 1090 – Purple Mountain

…

…

…

Of the two teams, the main team consisted of 90% of the original group's strength, while the secondary team consisted of only 10%. Both of the two great masters, Ye Rosewater and White Mirrorjade, were on the main team.

The strongest martial artists on the secondary team were two middle Divine Sea female disciples. Both of them were Ye Rosewater's trusted subordinates. Besides them, there was only Lin Ming. Lin Ming had an eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation, and his strength was able to suppress the early Divine Sea Liu Yun. But as to where the true limits of his strength lay, no one but Lin Ming himself actually knew.

Ye Rosewater was completely perturbed with such a distribution.

White Mirrorjade calmly said, "I've already said they will be going to a tunnel underground. There are layers of rocks that can shield them from the senses of others, and it will serve to hide their positions so they won't be in any danger. On the other hand, the main team will be wandering about the vast dessert. We have thousands of people and our goal is also much greater. As long as Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan aren't blind, they'll discover us. Did you want me to send the main force into the mining tunnels and leave the scattered rest of us to die in the desert? Not just that, but going into the tunnels is only temporary. No matter how rich the tunnels may be in resources, you'll have to return to us 80 hours from now and help fight in the following battle. In the last 16 hours in this mystic realm, Splinter Soul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan will definitely move against us!"

White Mirrorjade's excuses sounded reasonable. Ye Rosewater hesitated. In all fairness, the tunnels were truly much safer and didn't need much manpower. No matter who it was, no one wanted to be separated from those they trusted and they also didn't want their people to be sent to another team either. That was simply human nature.

Ye Rosewater thought for a moment, then said, "Fine. I agree. But I will go to the tunnels with them." Although Ye Rosewater had a naturally gentle personality, she wasn't someone that was resigned to mundane ordinariness. She had long ago decided to compete for the position of Island Master and had won over some female disciples to be her subordinates. Those that were sent to the tunnels were her people so she naturally had to accompany them.

"Mm?" White Mirrorjade frowned. "Junior-apprentice Sister Ye, I think you've mistaken something. I am leading this group on the orders of the Highest Elders. I am not discussing terms with you but am ordering you! If you insist on going to the tunnels, I can allow you to go, but only this once! If you still question my orders, I will deal with you as someone who violated the sect rules!"

White Mirrorjade's voice was sharp but Ye Rosewater didn't retreat nor flinch as she glared at him. Her status was originally on par with White Mirrorjade so she certainly didn't need to fear him.

"You stupid bitch, I originally allowed you a path to live because I only wanted to kill Lin Ming and weaken you a bit, but you actually decided to rush to your death. Don't blame me for your own decisions," White Mirrorjade thought as he turned around. In that split second that he turned, a fierce light sparked in his eyes. He certainly wasn't giving Ye Rosewater a chance to live because he felt some sort of pitiful affection for her or because he was drooling over her looks. Ye Rosewater was a beautiful woman with amazing talent, and he certainly wouldn't mind marrying her and allowing her to become the wife of the Island Master, but he also knew that although she often appeared quiet and gentle, she was actually arrogant to the bone. She refused to be under anyone, so how could she possibly submit to him? Moreover, she had long ago decided to struggle for the throne of Island Master, so they were destined to become enemies. Sooner or later, White Mirrorjade would have moved against Ye Rosewater!

No, the reason that he had originally decided not to kill Ye Rosewater on this trip into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was because he didn't expect the Occult Bone Clan or Splintersoul Mountain to show him any mercy just because he gave them information on Lin Ming. In the last 16 hours here, there would inevitably be a life or death war breaking out. If he was missing the strength of Ye Rosewater, that battle would be far more difficult.

"Forget it. I'll end you in this Red Desolate Mystic Realm and allow you to die with Lin Ming," White Mirrorjade thought. He turned to the disciples behind him and said, "Everyone on the main team come with me. The Revolving Core realm disciples are responsible for mining. The direct disciples do not need to help, they will be responsible for watching and securing the perimeter. In the first several dozen hours, although Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan aren't likely to show up, we also have to guard against the unexpected. After all, this Red Desolate Mystic Realm still has red desolate ogres!"

After White Mirrorjade issued his orders, he brought the disciples of the main team to leave. As for Ye Rosewater, she brought the secondary team disciples and set off toward the mine.

The projection jade plate White Mirrorjade used was extremely mysterious. Although it looked very small, the truth was that the cost to construct it was exorbitantly expensive. It was able to create a projection of the surrounding several hundred miles. Lin Ming, Ye Rosewater, and the others all walked several thousand feet in a direction and finally saw a faintly purple mountain range. There was a massive pit right beside it.

"Purple mountains, and there is even a pit with tunnels right there! We got lucky this time! Everyone put some more effort into it. Although we have to give the gathered resources to the sect, the sect will also reward us with resources according to our own merits. We'll keep resources equal to 2-3% of what we bring back!" Ye Rosewater said, trying to inspire morale in the team.

With the natural mining pit here, it meant that the violet sun stones in this purple mountain were absolutely high-grade. The so-called pit was actually due to the heaven and earth origin energy in the purple mountain being far too rich. It accumulated and then finally erupted, just like a volcano, creating a massive pit and rough tunnels inside.

"Everyone, maintain your guard. The direct disciples will go first to scout the area." After separating from White Mirrorjade, the late Divine Sea Ye Rosewater naturally became the leader of this squad.

This secondary squad had a total of 300 people. There were only a dozen or so direct disciples here. Besides Lin Ming, everyone else was a subordinate of Ye Rosewater.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, join Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao, Junior-apprentice Sister Zhou, and Junior-apprentice Brother Song to keep watch outside. I'll lead some people inside first to take a look.

In Ye Rosewater's opinion, besides herself, the strongest person in this squad was Lin Ming. With Lin Ming keeping guard outside, he would be able to deal with any unexpected incidents that cropped up.

"Mm, alright." Lin Ming indifferently nodded.

Exploring the tunnels of the mining pit was a bit more dangerous than staying outside. Although he didn't care much, he felt quite comfortable that Ye Rosewater left him outside. Ye Rosewater wasn't aware of Lin Ming's true strength; she only knew that he had completed the 30th level of the simulation mystic realm with ease.

Three people stayed with Lin Ming. Two of them were at the early Divine Sea realm and the other was at the ninth stage of Life Destruction. They were all Ye Rosewater's subordinates. In terms of influence, Ye Rosewater was much worse than White Mirrorjade by a considerable amount. After all, she was a woman, so most of the subordinates she won over were also women. In addition to her character, she was much worse than White Mirrorjade when it came to forming a faction.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, my name is Xiao Raingem.” Beside Lin Ming, a woman blinked at him. She had an overly buxom figure. Her chest was spilling over and her bottom thrust proudly outwards. She had all the sensual charm of a mature young woman seeped into her bones.

Of course, this was only her outer appearance. Xiao Raingem was actually 75 years old. In the future she would have tens of thousands of years of youth.

Beside Xiao Raingem, the young woman called Junior-apprentice Sister Zhou seemed extremely shy. She had a very naïve and waifish appearance. Out of the three direct disciples outside, she was the only one not at the Divine Sea realm. She was a ninth stage Life Destruction martial artist.

Even out of all the direct disciples of Carefree Island, Ninefall geniuses only formed 30-40% of them. Many disciples stepped into the Divine Sea after reaching Eightfall.

Based on this alone, this Junior-apprentice Sister Zhou was much better than the Junior-apprentice Brother Song. This Junior-apprentice Brother Song was only an Eightfall early Divine Sea martial artist. In terms of combat strength, the two were about equal.

As Lin Ming kept guard outside, he saw a cloud of light red dust forming in the distance. This red clouds became increasingly rich and dense, until it finally blotted out the skies and surged towards them.

Lin Ming could clearly see that this was a terrifying sandstorm that had been whipped up by the endless winds of the red desert. The sand storm rose thousands of feet high into the air. Listening to the tearing sounds of the winds, they were similar to knives cutting on glass. With such an incredible wind speed, if a martial artist with a low cultivation were to be caught up in that sand storm, they would be shredded to pieces and immediately die.

"That's a sand storm. It's a common occurrence in this Red Desolate Mystic Realm. Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, there's no need to be nervous," Xiao Raingem explained with a gentle smile. "Talking about it, those exploring mountain tunnels will be much more relaxed. Those out wandering in the desert will be far more miserable. They'll have to form shields of true essence to block the winds. That's going to take quite the toll on all of them."

As Xiao Raingem spoke, Ye Rosewater's voice sounded out from within the tunnel. "There's nothing dangerous in these tunnels. Everyone can enter."

The 200 some Revolving Core disciples immediately walked toward the tunnels. The great red sand storm in the distance was placing a great deal of mental pressure on them. Although they didn't need to fear this degree of sand storm with their cultivation, who knew if there were still other dangers in the sand storm?

After entering the tunnel, Lin Ming immediately felt as though he had had entered a purple world. There was bright and dazzling purple light sparkling from all over. Even the thick dust wasn't able to block it.

Many young martial artists widened their eyes in awe as they saw the copious amounts of violet sun stone ore. Most of them came from small family backgrounds, so they had never seen wealth of such a magnitude before.

"Start mining!" With Ye Rosewater's order, the Revolving Core disciples swarmed forwards. The rock purple mountain was no ordinary rock; it was as hard as metal essence. Otherwise, it would never have survived the erosive onslaught of the red sand storms over the past hundreds of millions of years. Even a Revolving Core martial artist had to use a great deal of strength to mine chunks of violet sun stone.

As the Carefree Island disciples were mining in full swing, thousands of miles away, there was also another group of people gathering resources in the red desert. These people were all tall and burly with small horns on their head. They were clansmen of the Occult Bone Clan.

“Mm, according to the signal we agreed on, that White Mirrorjade really did send us a message. Our prey is currently in a mountain tunnel 3000 miles away. There’s a dozen or so direct disciples as well as a few hundred garbage level miners. The only surprise is that Ye Rosewater is also with them.”

“Haha, Ye Rosewater? That little girl is quite good, but could this be a trap set by Carefree Island?”

“This information should be true. This isn’t the first time White Mirrorjade betrayed his comrades.”

“Hehe, there is that genius called Lin Ming as well as Ye Rosewater. Our gains are far too great this time. There’s no need to mention Ye Rosewater, but that Lin Ming fellow must have a massive amount of treasures on him. For someone to grow to such a level, it’s impossible that they haven’t experienced a great number of lucky chances.”

“Just gather some resources and rest up. We’ll set out soon. I can’t wait for this!”

Chapter 1091 – The Enemy Raid in the Storm

Chapter 1091 – The Enemy Raid in the Storm

…

…

…

In the purple mountain pit tunnels, Lin Ming casually struck the faint purple walls. With the faint rustling of powder stone falling down, a tiny black fragment dislodged and fell down.

Lin Ming reached out and grabbed this black fragment. Although the fragment appeared simple, when he sent his senses through it he could feel a strange chill around it.

"What is this?" Lin Ming wondered. He felt that this was a tiny fragment from some weapon. But it was hard to imagine that a weapon fragment would still have a tiny fluctuation of energy after all this time.

"It's a fragment of an extreme quality spirit artifact." Mo Eversnow's voice suddenly echoed out in Lin Ming's mind.

There was a space barrier that separated a divergent mystic realm and the Divine Realm, and the stronger one was, the more difficult it was to pierce through this veil. Even battle puppets and incarnations were no exception. However, the Magic Cube and the space within the Magic Cube were not subject to this restriction.

When Lin Ming first entered the God Beast Mystic Realm, the Magic Cube had entered unhindered too. Moreover, at the Sky Spill Continent, Empyrean Primordius had sealed away the entire planet of the Sky Spill Continent with his incredible supernatural powers. Besides native martial artists, any martial artist from the Divine Realm that surpassed the

Divine Sea realm was unable to enter. This was one of the protections Empyrean Primordius had left behind to guard his inheritance.

But the Magic Cube had still managed to pass through this barrier with Mo Eversnow's soul inside, where it was obtained by Lin Ming.

To this point, Lin Ming could only assume that the Magic Cube was not bound by the Laws of these divergent mystic realms.

Mo Eversnow investigated the fragment with her senses and said, "This fragment already exists for countless hundreds of millions of years. The only reason it was able to maintain its existence for so long is because of the violet sun stone mine here. The thick heaven and earth origin energy nourished it all this time, if not, it probably would have turned to dust by now."

"Extreme rank spirit artifact fragment. I wonder what sort of strength was needed to destroy it. Just what sort of events happened in this divergent mystic realm?"

"I have no idea what secrets divergent mystic realms hold. Perhaps they are worlds left behind by universes that were destroyed."

The existence of divergent mystic realms were an enigma to the martial artists of the Divine Realm. Even someone on the level of Mo Eversnow didn't know the truth behind them.

"What sort of use would this kind of fragment have?" Lin Ming asked.

"It's not too useful. If there was a top refining grandmaster, he would be able to make a top grade saint artifact, or perhaps an offensive talisman of some sort. For instance, that protective charm you took from Saint Artifact Pavilion in the past was a fragment of an ancient extreme rank spirit artifact. However, because it contained its master's source bloodline, I absorbed it."

As Mo Eversnow said this, Lin Ming recalled that when he first came to the Divine Realm, he had indeed taken two top grade saint artifacts from Phoenix Cry Palace's Saint Artifact Pavilion. One was the Phoenix Blood Spear, and the other was a talisman called Saint's Will. However, that talisman was later absorbed by the Magic Cube.

Now that he thought about it, that talisman should have served as some sort of support for Mo Eversnow's awakening. Otherwise, Mo Eversnow might not have had enough strength to pull out the dragon marrow essence from within the dragon bone.

Lin Ming tossed this extreme rank spirit artifact fragment to a Revolving Core disciple. Since Mo Eversnow had already thoroughly appraised it for him, he didn't care for it too much. After all, it wasn't like a refining grandmaster was easy to find.

To Lin Ming, there was nothing in these pit tunnels that were able to tempt him. In terms of violet sun stones, something had to be worth several hundred million or even billions of them to be useful.

Like this, 200-300 Revolving Core disciples continued mining in the tunnels non-stop. They dug out massive hunks of violet sun stones, which they stored into their spatial rings.

A martial artist wouldn't be tired if they didn't sleep for ten days and ten nights. However, gathering violet sun stones was still an energy consuming task. This was because the rock here was simply too hard. These Revolving Core disciples quickly used up their true essence reserves and would have no choice but to stop for a moment and take some pills.

As for the direct disciples, they didn't do any work at all. They saved up their strength, waiting for a battle that could erupt at any moment.

However, these pit tunnels were indeed very well hidden. These people worked on for days without being disturbed. Let alone an assault from Splintersoul Mountain or the Occult Bone Clan, there hadn't even been any red desolate ogres that appeared. Moreover, the red sand storms that constantly stirred up outside had no effect at all on the martial artists mining in the tunnels.

"Haha, I thought that we had too few people, so we would die if there were any dangers. But it seems as if our gains are immense We've been able to mine for nearly three full days without pause, and my spatial ring is already half full. Not only do I have violet sun stones but I even have the more valuable violet sun crystals. Although I'm more tired than a dog, I get excited thinking about the portion I'll receive in return when we leave."

In the pit tunnels, the Revolving Core disciples were all tired and soaked in their own sweat, but they were actually all in high spirits. When they listened to Ye Rosewater saying the sect would return 2-3% of the net harvests to them, they hadn't realized what sort of concept that was. But now, as they looked at the immense amount of violet sun stones in their spatial rings, they began to realize that this was a truly huge amount of wealth.

Everyone was able to gather around 60-70 million violet sun stones each so far. When they returned, they would be able to keep over a million violet sun stones. To a small family, this was a mind boggling amount of wealth.

"If everyone gathered 60-70 million violet sun stones, with several thousand disciples together, we'll have over 100 billion violet sun stones in total. Carefree Island only used 20 billion violent sun stones to send us here. That is a profit of 5-6 times what they paid! But there is also the hidden cost that will be the lives of the sect's direct disciples. That will come from the all-out war that's going to happen at the end of this."

As Lin Ming was thinking, his eyes suddenly flashed with a cold light. He turned his head to look outside the mining pit. There was a terrifying red sand storm that was blowing around, so it was impossible for ordinary martial artists to cast their divine senses out too far. This was because the Red Desolate Mystic Realm's blood sand was able to block senses. When this blood sand blew everywhere through the air, it limited the senses of an ordinary martial artist to a mere few miles.

Was this an enemy raid?

Lin Ming stood up. If there was an ambush in such bad weather, not even gods or ghosts would be aware of it. No one would be able to detect it. This was just like two armies in the mortal world trying to battle on a day when a thick fog made it so one couldn't even see their hands.

However, the crux of the issue was that in this sand storm, if they weren't able to discover the enemy, the enemy shouldn't be able to discover them either. How could the enemy possibly follow their trail here? Not just that, but they were even hidden in this giant pit that isolated senses!

"Was there a traitor!?" As Lin Ming thought of this, a grim expression crossed his face. He stood up, flew over to Ye Rosewater, and whispered a few words. He didn't use a true essence sound transmission. Martial artists had very sharp hearing to begin with; they were able to clearly hear all clanking sounds from the mining occurring around them.

Ye Rosewater and the several direct disciples near here were stunned for a moment.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, what did you say? The enemy is about to ambush us? Are you sure?" Ye Rosewater looked at Lin Ming with utter incredulity. She cast her own divine sense out of the pit but was only able to reach out for a few miles before being completely shut down by the massive amount of blood sand. In that blood sand she could only see endless red; there was nothing she could investigate!

"This..."

Ye Rosewater found this a bit hard to believe. She had a late Divine Sea cultivation and Lin Ming was only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction. How far a cultivator could sense completely depended on their soul force. Even though Lin Ming was an unprecedented genius, could his soul force still be stronger than her own?

Although Lin Ming had restrained his own soul force, Ye Rosewater could still vaguely feel it. When she looked at Li Ming, she could make out a sharpness in his eyes, like a bolt of lightning was dancing within them. However, this was a manifestation of Lin Ming's will and battle spirit, and a cultivator's senses had nothing to do with their battle spirit.

Taking 10,000 steps back and thinking about it, even if Lin Ming's soul force was stronger than hers, it was still useless. In order to discover an enemy raid in such horrible weather, his soul force would have to be 10 times, 20 times, or even many times more stronger than her own!

Ye Rosewater wasn't the only one with such doubts. The other direct disciples were also suspiciously looking at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming faintly frowned. If he were them, even he would find his own words hard to believe. But there was no way he could explain his reasoning. His soul force was indeed not any stronger than Ye Rosewater's, and he couldn't tell them that there was a strange hidden space within him with the soul of a half-step World King powerhouse living there. With Mo Eversnow's titanic soul force, she could even easily discover the enemy if they were hundreds of miles away in this red sand storm.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, how did you discover the enemy? You can't make a joke like this. If there is a mistake and our group goes out to hide, our position might be exposed even if there aren't any enemies outside. That will make things very troublesome." Behind Ye Rosewater, the Junior-apprentice Brother Song from before piped up.

"That's right. Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you should at least give us a reasoning for your thoughts. You can't say that you depended on just your own divine sense to discover the enemy," a female disciple echoed.

"I've already reminded you all. As for how I know, I'm sorry, but I cannot explain it to you. Don't forget that I am not a disciple of Carefree Island. I've done everything that I could already. If you don't believe me, there's nothing else I can do to convince you. I'll be on my way first. If we stay here in these pit tunnels, we'll be caged in by the enemy and completely annihilated." Lin Ming said, turning around to leave.

This incomparably hard mining pit was a potential death trap. If the enemy launched an assault here, the power of these attacks would multiply in this sealed environment. Once that happened, his fate could be imagined!

"Wait, wait! Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, I believe you!" Ye Rosewater suddenly called out. A genius like Lin Ming had far too many lucky chances. She could believe he had some special method that she couldn't understand. The other disciples hesitated but didn't object.

A disciple said, "Since Senior-apprentice Sister Ye agrees, we'll join you. We should hurry and retreat from here. We can communicate with Senior-apprentice Brother White using the Carefree Command and ask him to hurry here to support us. Hopefully, he won't laugh at us."

As the disciple spoke, he looked a bit ill as though he were imagining the scene of this humiliation. In his opinion, this was something that had a pretty high chance of happening.

Lin Ming sneered, "Support?"

The disciple wasn't too comfortable seeing Lin Ming's derisive sneer. He said, "You! What's so funny? Do you think we shouldn't do this? If the enemy dares to travel over such a long distance to attack us, their strength is surely much greater than ours. How can we fight them without support?"

Chapter 1092 – Entering the Sandstorm

Chapter 1092 – Entering the Sandstorm

…

…

…

The disciples of Carefree Island didn't have the confidence or spirit to face the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain together. Although Carefree Island was strong, their enemy was still the joint forces of the two other sects. In these past years, Carefree Island had mostly suffered disastrous defeats in the battles within the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. Moreover, there was only a very tiny number of disciples that came to this purple mountain to mine, and even fewer amongst them were direct disciples. Their cultivation levels were also much lower on average. Thus, when facing an enemy attack, it was natural to first think of retreating and finding support.

For many of the disciples, they would rather Lin Ming be wrong and be laughed at by everyone while desperately looking for the main team than face the villainous Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain.

The previously speaking disciple wasn't feeling too good about Lin Ming's sneer. The other disciples were also confused as to what he was hinting at. Even Ye Rosewater was frowning, as if she were deep in thought.

Lin Ming took out the Phoenix Blood Spear from his spatial ring, his aura also spreading out with it. In the dark mine, everyone could clearly see the faint purple arcs of electricity that glittered in Lin Ming's eyes, making everyone feel stifled.

“Our position is a secret and there is also a red sandstorm blowing outside. If you were the captain of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, would you choose to come out in this sort of weather and search for an enemy trail in a situation where you couldn’t even see more than five miles ahead of you?”

Lin Ming’s words shocked all of the disciples. Indeed, mining in this weather was already difficult, let alone looking for enemies to fight. And, what was even more incredible was that their position had been suddenly found. There was no way that this was a coincidence.

“You… what are you saying?”

“What am I saying? That’s simple…” Lin Ming shrugged his shoulders and casually waved his spear. “I believe that we have been betrayed.”

“What!?” Upon hearing this, everyone was alarmed.

“Who would betray us!?”

“Are you saying that the traitor is Senior-apprentice Brother White? That… that is impossible!” The previously speaking disciple’s eyes widened like full moons. He wasn’t an idiot. Lin Ming had stopped him from sending a message to the main team, and in addition to what he had said before, it was clear that he was referring to White Mirrorjade!

“Why would Senior-apprentice Brother White betray us!? Don’t speak such nonsense!”

“That’s right. What advantage is there in betraying us? That would only reduce Carefree Island’s war strength!”

As someone pointed out that Lin Ming suspected that White Mirrorjade was the traitor, everyone else began to panic!

None of them were willing to believe that White Mirrorjade had betrayed them. It wasn’t that they believed in White Mirrorjade’s moral character, but that he was their last ray of hope in this situation. If White Mirrorjade had truly abandoned them, then all of them were isolated from help and stuck in a fatal dead end!

In terms of strength, besides Ye Rosewater, only Lin Ming was passable. The other disciples all had limited combat strength. In this situation, not only had they been betrayed by White Mirrorjade but they also had to face the threat of the allied forces from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan. This meant that their chances of surviving were beyond slim!

No one was willing to cut off their own hope. Thus, subconsciously, no one was willing to believe that Lin Ming's speculations were true.

At this time, Lin Ming wasn't in the mood to take care of these disciples' fragile glass hearts. He only coldly said, "The enemy is less than 80 miles from here. In the sandstorm, their speed is a bit slower, but they should still reach us in less than half an incense stick of time. If they manage to ambush us here then we'll just be turtles in a jar. If you want to stay here then go ahead, but I'm not joining you."

As Lin Ming spoke, a rising hysteria began to swell up in the minds of the early Divine Sea disciples.

"What do we do? Do we send a request for support or not?"

"I don't know. I also don't believe that Senior-apprentice Brother White has betrayed us. Although what Lin Ming says makes sense, Senior-apprentice Brother White has been in Carefree Island for so many years and he is also a direct descendant disciple. As for Lin Ming, he just arrived and he's not even a disciple of our Carefree Island. If it were you, would you rather believe Lin Ming or Senior-apprentice Brother White?"

"What do you mean? Are you saying that Lin Ming was the one to betray us?"

"I'm not saying that..."

“What are you worrying about? Maybe the enemy isn’t coming at all. Didn’t you listen to what Lin Ming said just now? He said the enemy was 80 miles away! What sort of concept is 80 miles in this red sandstorm? Even if Lin Ming had some secret detection methods, it might not be accurate at such a range. He could be wrong.”

The dozen plus disciples were all stirred up in a panicked frenzy like ants in hot water. They were all discussing the situation with true essence sound transmissions. Although they spoke a lot, it only took several breaths of time to speak with true essence sound transmissions.

A disciple had already taken out a Carefree Command and was prepared to send out a call for help.

But at this time, a blue light suddenly flashed and the Carefree Command was snatched away from that disciple by a jade white hand.

“Se-senior-apprentice Sister Ye…” The disciple glanced at Ye Rosewater and gulped, confusion written all over his face.

“Don’t send it!” Ye Rosewater grimly said as she put away the Carefree Command. She recalled White Mirrorjade’s words during the Council of Elders – he had clearly wanted to send Lin Ming into a deathtrap. But, she never imagined that White Mirrorjade would be so crazy as to betray his own sect and collude with Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, even sending her and several other direct disciples to die here!

As she thought back to how he divided everyone, Ye Rosewater became increasingly sure of her own guess. “No wonder he kept me at the main team, it was because he thought I still had some use left. But my subordinates are actually people he has to get rid of. He sent those people here at the same time to avoid having any suspicions cast on him, otherwise, there would be no way to explain sending Lin Ming here by himself. White Mirrorjade, you are far too ruthless!”

As these thoughts flashed through Ye Rosewater's mind, she actually didn't voice them out loud. She only calmly faced the other disciples and said, "We're going with Lin Ming."

"Senior-apprentice Sister Ye, do you also suspect that Senior-apprentice Brother White has betrayed us?" A disciple asked, stunned. Whether it was from an emotional aspect, or because they didn't want their last ray of hope to be cut off here, no one wanted to believe that the man they all called their Elder Senior-apprentice Brother and who they also respected had been the one to deliver them to ruin.

"Cut the crap. If you don't want to die then hurry up!" Ye Rosewater's voice became increasingly desolate. Her beautiful eyes flashed with an ice cold killing intent!

After being betrayed by White Mirrorjade, Ye Rosewater didn't lose her cool, nor did she complain about how White Mirrorjade could betray her or the sect. Instead, all that came from her was a thick killing intent.

Lin Ming glanced at Ye Rosewater, a bit surprised. Without saying anything, he rushed towards the exit of the mining pit.

"Everyone listen! All Revolving Core disciples, enter my saint artifact spatial ring!"

Ye Rosewater issued an order to all of the Revolving Core disciples. In a fierce battle, these Revolving Core disciples could be called defenseless babies. Receiving all of them into her spatial ring was the best method of protecting them, but the premise of this was that she wouldn't die. Otherwise, if she died and her saint artifact spatial ring was destroyed, all of them would be cast out. With their Revolving Core cultivation, they should still be able to barely withstand the disintegrating space storm and escape, but then they would be severely wounded while facing the joint forces of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain. At that time, their fates could be imagined. After the three sects had fought to this degree, there was no more mercy to be found. No one was willing to allow their enemy's disciples to return to their sect and freely grow.

The Revolving Core disciples nervously entered Ye Rosewater's spatial ring, all of them filled with a great unease. They did not have the power to change fate; they could only accept the judgment of those stronger than them. Although they didn't have to fight after entering the saint artifact spatial ring, the truth was that this was a great torment and tremendous test on their mentality. They would have no idea what was happening outside and could only anxiously wait.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin... what do you plan on doing...?"

The one who asked this question was the curvy and full-figured Xiao Raingem. At this time, her normally suggestive face was actually pale white, making her seem a bit ill. To these disciples, not only had they been abandoned, but they were also surrounded by the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain. The pressure on them was just too great.

"We'll get out of here first. It shouldn't be hard to avoid their senses in this red sandstorm." In fact, with Mo Eversnow's divine sense, they could definitely borrow the red sandstorm as a shield to avoid the encirclement and smoothly escape.

However, the battle had to be fought sooner or later. The reason that Lin Ming had come to the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was to slaughter others, tempering his own Laws in the heat of battle and precipitating his cultivation. If he only played hide-and-seek with his enemy then there wasn't any meaning in coming here.

After all of the Revolving Core disciples entered the spatial ring, there were only a dozen or so people left over.

As they arrived at the entrance of the mining pit, the wild and fierce red sandstorm blew towards them, endless and overwhelming, blocking out the skies. This scene appeared as if it were the end of the world.

The red sand blowing through the air had already surpassed the speed of sound. Everyone could clearly hear the grating sonic blasts as it cut through the air.

The sounds of a billion trillion grains of sand blasting through the air were like countless knives cutting ice, grating and harsh.

“Everyone, take back your senses! You only need to send out a little wisp of your sense to lock onto my body.”

Lin Ming issued an order with a true essence sound transmission. If these people carelessly investigated their surroundings then they would be easily detected by the enemy. Although the enemy didn’t have Mo Eversnow’s ability, it was still possible for them to investigate an enemy’s divine sense without being sensed themselves.

“This…” These disciples all looked at each other, hesitation on their faces. In the sandstorm, their divine sense could still extend a few miles. But, if they relied on only their eyes then they wouldn’t be able to see more than 10 feet in front of them. That would really be walking blind. Wherever Lin Ming brought them was where they would go. Even if he brought them to a danger zone, they wouldn’t be able to detect it.

“Do it!” Ye Rosewater coldly shouted out. The disciples all obeyed.

“Follow me!” Lin Ming didn’t care too much. After all, he was an outsider so it was normal that they didn’t trust him. But, he was actually surprised that Ye Rosewater placed so much faith in him.

Lin Ming plunged into the limitless red sand. The countless grains of sand struck his protective true essence before shattering, causing a sound like crackling rice.

For the direct disciples present, it wasn’t difficult to pass through this red sandstorm, so they were able to easily follow Lin Ming.

Like this, the dozen plus people followed Lin Ming through the sandstorm, changing direction again and again.

Such a route left them all puzzled and also filled with doubt. But after coming to this step, their only choice was to rely on Lin Ming.

Chapter 1093 – Ambush

Chapter 1093 – Ambush

…

…

…

They walked for several breaths of time as Lin Ming led the disciples of Carefree Island to the back of a giant crag.

“Stay here and hide. Don’t move!”

“This is… what are we doing?”

Many disciples were confused. But they were used to obeying orders, and in this sandstorm, they were no different from being blind. It was simpler to do whatever Lin Ming asked of them.

“Do you guys know how to use attack array formations?” Lin Ming suddenly asked, remembering something.

When he was in the God Beast Mystic Realm, the battle formation the Ancient Dragon Clan used had left a deep impression on Lin Ming. If it weren’t for that terrifying combined combat strength that forcefully diverted the Asura King’s attention, there was no way Lin Ming could have obtained the supreme dragon bone and helped Mo Eversnow reawaken.

If the disciples of Carefree Island could form an array formation, their striking power could multiple by several times. That would be a great help in this situation!

After all, there were many enemies this time. In such a battle, the role of the individual was inevitably lessened.

“We do.” Ye Rosewater nodded. These disciples were her subordinates and they had trained in some offensive array formations together.

“Good. First wait here and restrain your senses. Wait for my order, and on my command, launch your array formation attack!”

“Okay!”

Like this, the Carefree Island direct disciples hid behind the rock crag, waiting in ambush. Lin Ming was clear that in such horrible weather, Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan wouldn’t randomly attack. Once the disciples of Carefree Island scattered in all directions to escape into the sandstorm, there would be no hope of chasing after all of them.

The enemy would definitely wait until the sandstorm stopped before they began their assault.

At this time, six or seven miles away from Lin Ming and the Carefree Island disciples, a group of black-cloaked martial artists were completely buried in the blood sands. They didn’t even need to dig their way down. The sand falling down from the storm was enough to bury them. These people were all disciples from Splintersoul Mountain.

Not too far away from them, the disciples from the Occult Bone Clan were also lying in wait. There were around 20 of them, and there was even a late Divine Sea master leading them.

“Hehe, that’s the pit. I can already smell the delicious scent of prey. Ye Rosewater, I’m really looking forwards to you!”

The Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain sent two late Divine Sea disciples to lead this expeditionary group to kill Lin Ming. The two late Divine Sea disciples were specifically to suppress Ye Rosewater. It would be two against one, and in a situation where they had the advantage due to a sneak attack, the result of the battle could be imagined.

“I have no idea if White Mirrorjade’s information is reliable. It might be a trap.”

“It shouldn’t be. I caught a sandworm around here and read its memories. There were truly only over a dozen direct disciples that walked towards the direction of the purple mountain. The intel shouldn’t be wrong. These disciples are nothing but fish on the chopping block, and White Mirrorjade’s main force is a thousand miles away, so how could he possibly ambush us?” the Occult Bone Clan captain said with a proud expression.

Those from Splintersoul Mountain couldn’t help but praise the special skills of the Occult Bone Clan. Because the Occult Bone Clan was skilled in the Laws of Life, they were even able to read the memories of sandworms. This method of detection was nearly impossible to guard against. Of course, this technique also had its limitations. One could only see places were the target had passed through, and if one really controlled a sandworm, a master would be able to discover the traces of divine sense left behind in the sandworm.

“Why won’t this sandstorm end already? I just can’t wait!” The late Divine Sea Occult Bone Clan martial artist greedily rubbed his hands together. The Occult Bone Clan focused on sexual obscenity and gluttony; through these two vices, they were able to perceive the Laws of Life. The women that were in the ranks of their enemies often ended up with a miserable fate. He especially wouldn’t miss out on such a top grade beauty like Ye Rosewater.

“Calm down. The sandstorms in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm appear in a very ordered fashion. They don’t last too long each time; this one should end soon,” the late Divine Sea Splintersoul Mountain disciple said with a true essence sound transmission. “Hehe, speaking of which, although we can kill Ye Rosewater, trying to capture her alive with her level of cultivation won’t be easy. I think you shouldn’t keep your hopes up. That is, unless you’re interested in her corpse.”

“Humph! My Occult Bone Clan is focused on perceiving the essence of life. A corpse has already lost all hints of life. Even if she is far more beautiful, I still wouldn’t be interested. Only you cultivators from Splintersoul Mountain are so interested in gross things like corpses and ghosts. You don’t need to worry about me, I already have a method to capture her alive. With so many people and surprise on our side, this should be absolutely easy. Moreover, I also have a final killing move!” the late Divine Sea Occult Bone Clan martial artist said with confidence.

“Hehe, I’m not interested in arguing with you. I don’t care what you do as long as you don’t take too long. Once the storm dies down, we’ll only have half an hour to attack! Afterwards, we have to hurry back and support the main force. They should have already started their assault against Carefree Island by then. With several thousand of Carefree Island’s disciples here, the harvests will be enormous.”

The main team White Mirrorjade brought with him was too large. There was no way to hide even if he tried.

As the two late Divine Sea martial artists were talking, the sandstorm gradually diminished. The endless amounts of red sand fell down from the sky, forming a terrifying deluge of sand, enough that it blocked out the heavens themselves. If a mortal were here, they would have been buried alive.

“Pay attention! The sandstorm is about to end!”

“Haha, it’s finally time! Everyone, listen up, prepare the array formation and ready yourselves to attack. We’re going to give it everything we’ve got!”

The eyes of the Occult Bone Clan martial artists began to shine. They sensed that there was a great deal of women in this small group of martial artists. The process in which they had sex with women was not called dual cultivation nor was it to steal their energy, but rather to ‘perceive’.

With extremely talented and beautiful women to help them 'perceive' the Laws of Life, they could further understand the mysteries of the essence of life.

The sand in the sky slowly dispersed, and the wind speed already dropped a great deal. They could make out the giant mining pit just 10 miles away!

In the sandstorm, 10 miles was a great enough distance that the disciples of Carefree Island wouldn't be able to sense them. But once the sandstorm stopped, to a martial artist, 10 miles simply wasn't anything to them at all. Their attacks could cross 10 miles in just the blink of an eye!

"Attack!"

The captains of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain shouted out together. In unison, nearly 40 martial artists emerged from the red sands, and the light from all sorts of attacks shot out together!

After gathering their attacks with an array formation, their combined striking power doubled. This was an attack they were preparing for some time already!

The first strike had to be the strongest. The greater their opponents were damaged, the easier it would be for them to win. They put forth everything they had, even overdrawing on their strength to attack.

Bang bang bang!

In that instant, the earth shook and the mountain trembled. All of the attacks crashed into the mining pit where they exploded together. In that confined space, the force of the detonation was even greater. Even though the purple mountain was hard to an unimaginable degree, it still began to collapse under the attacks of so many masters!

"This – !!"

Ye Rosewater and the other direct disciples' eyes shot open. The surprise attack of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain gave them a fright.

Chapter 1094 – Counterattack

Chapter 1094 – Counterattack

…

…

…

Rumble rumble rumble!

The purple mountain was smashed apart and countless pieces of shattered stone flew through the skies, scattering in all directions. A powerful shockwave rolled outwards, causing endless waves of red sand to shoot up into the sky, as though the apocalypse were unfolding. The disciples of Carefree Island never thought the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain were lying in ambush just 6-7 miles away, and they attacked as soon as the sand storm stopped!

They looked at the terrifying attack that was launched at the purple mountain. If they were still there, the consequences would have been unbelievable!

Even if they instantly reacted and summoned their protective true essence, there would inevitably be calamitous casualties. None of the Revolving Core realm disciples would have been able to live and most of the direct disciples would have died. The ones remaining would have been seriously wounded. In this situation they would have to face an enemy that was several times their own size. They would be nothing but fish in a barrel, completely suppressed!

Ye Rosewater glanced at Lin Ming, shocked speechless. In this sand storm, a martial artist's senses should have been limited to five miles at most, but Lin Ming was actually able to sense that the enemy was lying in ambush six or seven miles away, and even do so in an extremely accurate manner without the slightest mistake. What was even stranger was that he had accurately guessed their plans. The Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain were both waiting for the moment the sand storm ended to attack!

However, Lin Ming was also waiting for this moment!

“Attack! Give it everything you have!” Lin Ming coldly shouted out. In that moment, the many disciples of Carefree Island no longer hesitated. All of them overdrew their strength and combined their combat skills with an array formation to attack. Although they were far from being able to compare with their enemy, they had the initiative and also the mysterious Lin Ming on their side. Their confidence soared upwards, their momentum rising like a volcano!

In that moment, countless sword lights shot out. The disciples of Carefree Island studied the Wood Laws, so these sword lights were like a deluge of green beams that twisted through the air, lighting up the horizon!

As the disciples of Carefree Island attacked, Lin Ming’s aura also erupted. He opened the Heretical God Force to the limit, and at the same time a blazing gold light began to shine from between his eyebrows. He was burning all of the Ancient Phoenix blood within his body!

As he combusted the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, Lin Ming felt as if his bones were heating up like tempered metal. His blood and even his marrow began to boil over, and his joints issued endless crackling sounds that extended into a single loud explosive burst, as though a dragon was roaring into the vast skies.

The blood of the Azure Dragon was resonating with the blood of the Ancient Phoenix!

Dragon and phoenix, rejoicing together!

In that moment, a massive amount of origin energy gathered towards Lin Ming, as if a glorious blue lotus were slowly blooming around him!

This was an attack that combined three Concepts of Fire; Burning Heat, Annihilation, and Creation–the Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

This was Lin Ming's self-created attack which he had comprehended during the smelting trial at Fire Spirit Star. It was a fusion of the first three level Concepts of the Fire Laws!

Lin Ming had first used this move when he rushed to complete the Illusionary God Combat Array's Thousand Slaughter and fought Crimson Strifecloud. Now was the second time!

In Lin Ming's peak state, even Crimson Strifecloud had difficulty directly contending with the Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

A spear thrust forwards and a flaming light lit up the entire sky. A heaven-shaking dragon roar echoed through the world. As the Phoenix Blood Spear flashed through the air, the massive blue lotus phantom fully bloomed!

At this time, Ye Rosewater was completely dumbfounded as she saw Lin Ming's attack. Just what sort of attack was this!? The striking power was far too freakish! Just the sole power of this attack was far stronger than the combined attack of all the other disciples together!

……

"Haha, our attack was too brutal. Everyone inside should be dead." A Splintersoul Mountain disciple recklessly laughed as he saw the purple mountain collapse.

"What a pity. Those women were extremely good vessels to help perceive the Life Laws. If –" The Divine Sea Occult Bone Clan martial artist's words were caught in his throat. He suddenly twisted around to see terrifying beams of divine light tearing across the earth, shredding apart the wilderness as they hurtled towards them with an unstoppable momentum! Wherever this light went, endless red sand would turn into dust, forming a massive fissure!

"What!?"

"Enemy attack!"

The disciples of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain all paled. They never thought they would be the ones suffering a sneak attack at this time, and one so horrifying at that!

"Hurry and defend!" The late Divine Sea Occult Bone Clan captain shouted out. But as he quickly issued the command, all the other disciples were left panic-stricken. They wanted to defend, but they discovered they had exhausted all of their accumulated true essence in their own attack just now. They didn't have enough time to gather more strength!

The point right after a martial artist attacked was when they were at their weakest. Even though this time was short, it could bring a fatal disaster! When masters fought, they would always reserve 30% of their strength in their attacks. Only at the end would they go all-out in desperate attack. But at this time, even if they weren't able to kill their enemy, they could still cause enough trouble for them that they had enough time to gather their strength again.

If they completely used all of their strength to hit nothing and then had to face the enemy's own all-out attack without having their guard raised, the result of this could be imagined!

Bang!

Unstoppable beams of light fell down like a rain of meteors. Terrifying explosions swallowed up everything. In this moment it was as though the entire divergent mystic realm had been lit up!

The disciples of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain all howled out in pain and misery. Many early Divine Sea disciples were blown to pieces, and many middle Divine Sea martial artists were grievously wounded! It had to be know that this barrage of attacks contained the strength of two great masters in Lin Ming and Ye Rosewater!

"This is…"

The disciples of Carefree island were surprised to see their attack have such a wondrous effect. They only had a dozen plus people, but they caused the nearly 40 some disciples of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain to suffer serious losses!

"Attack together! Kill them all!" Lin Ming frostily commanded. At the same time, he opened the Gate of Wonder and activated the Mystic Lightning Shade, shooting to the front!

A six or seven mile distance was far too short a distance to Lin Ming!

Ye Rosewater followed close behind. She had no idea what method Lin Ming had used to investigate the situation, but in addition to that terrifying striking power he displayed just now, she was utterly convinced by him.

The other disciples all rushed forwards. At that time, even if an archaic great beast were lying in front of them, they would still attack without hesitation!

"You bastards!"

"What's going on here!?"

The two captains of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain had the lightest wounds. Even if they had all-out attacked, they were still able to rely on their solid foundation and multiple life-saving methods to block that attack. The attack just now barely affected their combat strength at all.

But their subordinates were off much worse. A third had immediately died. Of the nearly 40 people they brought here, only just over 20 were left remaining, and all of them were wounded.

The two captains simmered with a seething rage. As they saw a youth rush towards their front, their hatred and anger burst open like a roiling volcano!

"Only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction! You're looking to die!"

“Mm? Eighth stage Life Destruction! It’s that damned Lin Ming!”

The two captains instantly recalled Lin Ming’s name. Lin Ming was also their top priority for coming here.

“So you are Lin Ming. You came at just the right time! I’ll carve you up first to boost morale!” The Occult Bone Clan’s late Divine Sea captain gave a loud shout. Layers upon layers of bone armor burst out from his body, covering his entire self. He grasped a giant bone sword and cut towards Lin Ming.

At the same time, the captain of Splintersoul Mountain also attacked. The weapon in his hand was very unique. It was a ghost banner. As this ghost banner shot forwards, cold winds appeared in the air and the pained screams of ghosts echoed outwards. These ghosts melded together, forming into a giant demon claw that grasped towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming had to face the simultaneous attacks of two late Divine Sea powerhouses!

“Junior-apprentice Brother, be careful!”

Although Ye Rosewater admired Lin Ming to the extreme, she also worried that Lin Ming would be severely wounded by these attacks.

As the attacks of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain’s two captains fell down, behind Lin Ming, a blood red lotus began to bloom!

Prime Emperor Lotus Flower – grandmist space!

With the concealing technique Mo Eversnow taught him, Lin Ming could fully utilize the grandmist space. He no longer needed to worry about it.

As the grandmist space activated, it was like a desolate ancient beast that devoured all. It met the attacks of the two captains!

The Occult Bone Clan captain’s bone sword energy was continuously weakened by the grandmist space. Although the Occult Bone Claw’s Laws of Life were mysterious, in the formation of the universe, life only appeared at the latter stages. How could the Laws of Life possibly resist the annihilating strength of the Grandmist Laws? As for the countless ghost phantoms that were sent out by Splintersoul Mountain, they were all reduced to ashes underneath the power of the grandmist space!

By the time the two masters' attacks reached Lin Ming, they were already weakened by over half. Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and swept outwards!

Penetrating Rainbow!

Bang!

The power of thunder and fire furiously wove together in a deafening explosion, tearing apart the bone sword energy and the demon claw at the same time!

"What!?"

"How, how could this happen!?"

The two masters never expected their combined attack to be directly defeated by Lin Ming. Without time to think, Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear had already turned towards Splintersoul Mountain's captain.

Lin Ming could see that the Splintersoul Mountain captain had weaker defenses. Moreover, his attacks were based on the Laws of Soul; they were completely suppressed by Lin Ming's own abilities.

"Chasing Thunder!"

As the Splintersoul Mountain captain saw Lin Ming rushing towards him, a black energy surrounded his entire body as he waved his ghost banner. A black demon appeared from this black energy and plunged towards Lin Ming. While he used a physical attack, he also used a soul attack!

However, the power of ghosts were restrained by the power of thunder to begin with.

In front of Lin Ming, soul attacks were even more of a joke.

Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear thrust downwards without change.

A fierce explosion sounded out and waves of violent energy billowed outwards. The Splintersoul Mountain captain was directly smashed backwards by Lin Ming's spear! His protective true essence crazily trembled and his bamboo hat flew away, revealing an incomparably pale face. Flows of red blood flowed down from the corners of his mouth, trailing into the wind.

Chapter 1095 – Lure the Enemy

Chapter 1095 – Lure the Enemy

…

…

…

“You… how did your soul…”

The Splintersoul Mountain captain looked at Lin Ming with fear etched on his face. He wasn’t injured because of Lin Ming’s direct attack, but because he had suffered a backlash after sending out his soul attack. Lin Ming’s soul defense was so powerful that it left him horrified. In front of Lin Ming, the Laws of Soul and Life that he was so skilled in had become a joke.

“Lin Ming!”

Ye Rosewater rushed over to Lin Ming’s side. Because she had used up her immediate energy in her attack and because of her panic over Lin Ming being attacked, her face was flushed red and her chest was heaving up and down.

She glanced over at the two captains from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan. Of these people, one of them had been struck back by Lin Ming and the other had been wounded to the point of spitting blood. They were both direct disciples of their sects; ordinary late Divine Sea martial artists could not compare with them.

Behind Ye Rosewater, the other disciples of Carefree Island also rushed forwards. As they saw the Splintersoul Mountain captain with blood spilling out from his mouth, their eyes shined. Before, Lin Ming’s accurate discovery of the enemy had reassured them, but that was only discovering the enemy. In the world of martial artists, strength was placed above all else. Only strength could cause others to feel awe and admiration and give others confidence.

Lin Ming's strike had simultaneously forced back the two great masters from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan. Without a doubt, this caused their confidence to sharply rise upwards!

They could win this!

At this time, although Ye Rosewater was surprised, she naturally wouldn't exclaim in surprise or stare in marvel like some idiot. This was a battle between the two forces; not even a single blink of the eye could be wasted.

She loudly shouted, "I will stop the Occult Bone Clan's captain. Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, do your best and kill that captain of Splintersoul Mountain. All other disciples, surround the remainder and slaughter them all!"

"Great!"

"Kill!"

With a loud cry from Ye Rosewater, the disciples of Carefree Island moved forwards with surging momentum like light spilling forwards. As for the disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, they felt a tremendous pressure!

"Do you think I'm some dough that you can knead however you want!?" The Occult Bone Clan captain's eyes turned red. He madly roared, grasping the bone sword and rushing towards Ye Rosewater!

Ye Rosewater sneered. In a one-on-one fair battle, Ye Rosewater didn't fear anyone, not even White Mirrorjade!

If the Occult Bone Clan was by itself, the truth was that they would be weaker than Carefree Island, so how could she fear the Occult Bone Clan captain?

10,000 Wood Germination!

Ye Rosewater's attack contained the endless Wood Laws. The Wood Laws had a similarity with the blood of the Azure Dragon, and that was that they grew endlessly. Although the Wood Laws didn't have the sharpness of the Metal Laws or the explosive force of the Fire Laws, they had the characteristics of being tenacious and flexible. If one wanted to destroy Ye Rosewater's Wood Law origin energy, they would have to use up twice the energy.

Peng!

Ye Rosewater's wood-attribute sword energy clashed with the Occult Bone Clan captain's bone sword energy, destroying each other!

The two followed right after their sword energies. Their bodies twisted and blurred, each of them exchanging attacks in rapid succession. And on the other side, the disciples of Carefree Island were fighting with the disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan.

Carefree Island only had a dozen plus people and Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan had over 20, however, the disciples from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan had all been wounded and they were still dazed at the sudden shift. In particular, after seeing Lin Ming repel the two masters from their sects and also wound one of them, this had been a massive strike on their morale!

Their side's two strongest disciples had been repulsed by Lin Ming alone; could this battle still be won?

This idea inevitably appeared in the minds of the Splintersoul Mountain and Occult Bone Clan disciples. With the sudden shift, the fight suddenly became one-sided. The disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan were continuously forced to retreat again and again. In just several breaths of time, two severely wounded early Divine Sea disciples suddenly had their heads lopped off, their blood spraying onto the ground!

"Damn!"

The Splintersoul Mountain captain was flustered. The original agreement had been that their small team would attack as soon as the sandstorm stopped, and then the main team would attack Carefree Island's main forces half an hour later. They were supposed to rush back and support the main team, and trap Carefree Island in a pincer attack.

But now, forget about rushing back in half an hour, it was already uncertain if they could survive or not!

He no longer had time to think, and he didn't even have time to send out a sound transmitting talisman. Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear thrust out again, aiming at his vital points every time!

Through that brief collision just now, Lin Ming could confirm that although the Splintersoul Mountain captain was a late Divine Sea master, he was still a level weaker than the middle Divine Sea Dragon One. This person would be a top talent if placed in Splintersoul Mountain, but in front of a genius like Lin Ming, he was nothing but ordinary.

After Lin Ming absorbed the dragon marrow and dragon bone, he could almost frontally contend with Dragon One. Killing the Splintersoul Mountain captain was no problem at all!

Peng!

The demon claw that the Splintersoul Mountain captain sent out was torn in half by Lin Ming's spear. Alarmed, the captain bit down on his tongue and spat out blood essence onto the ghost banner. After the ghost banner absorbed this blood essence, the ghosts contained within began to howl with bloodthirst. This ghost banner was a top grade saint artifact forged by Splintersoul Mountain by killing 100 million mortals and refining their souls. Now that the Splintersoul Mountain captain used his own blood essence to direct these ghosts, the greatest power of the ghost banner could be displayed. 100 million ghosts poured outwards!

Rahh!

Lin Ming's spear light was swallowed up by these hideous ghosts. The ghosts continued shooting straight towards Lin Ming!

"Mm?"

Lin Ming was startled. A late Divine Sea disciple of a large sect really couldn't be underestimated – they had a number of hidden cards up their sleeves. With a thought, the grandmist space spread out even further. With the support of the dragon marrow blood and his own formidable foundation, once the grandmist space was used, even someone much stronger than Lin Ming wouldn't be able to break through it.

Regardless of what attack it was, everything that entered the grandmist space would be thoroughly weakened.

Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

Lin Ming gave a deep shout. The blood of the Ancient Phoenix burned in his body once more!

When Lin Ming was at the seventh stage of Life Destruction, burning the Ancient Phoenix blood just once would consume several tenths of his true essence; he simply wasn't able to keep it up for too long in battle. But now, with the dragon marrow supporting him, he could burn the Ancient Phoenix blood twice in a row without feeling too exhausted.

The blue lotus bloomed and the first three level Concepts of the Fire Laws fused as one. The 100 million ghosts were already weakened by over half by the grandmist space. Then they were scorched by the power of the blue lotus, and tens of million ghosts were suddenly burnt to nothing!

"Ahhh!"

The Splintersoul Mountain captain's eyes reddened with rage, his heart dripping with blood from the loss. But at this time, he could no longer worry about the ghost banner that he loved so much and continued to drive it towards Lin Ming. After all, there were far too many souls trapped within the ghost banner. Even if Lin Ming used the grandmist space and the Blue Lotus Flame Dance together, he was still unable to block all of it. There would always be fish that evaded the net.

Peng!

100,000 grieving spirits dove into Lin Ming's body. Lin Ming's Dragonscale Robes simply weren't able to block this sort of insubstantial soul attack. The shrill howls of countless ghosts began to cry out in Lin Ming's ears!

And under such an attack, Lin Min seemed to slow down. His face became overcast and his eyes dimmed down, as if his vision were glazing over.

"I got him!" The Splintersoul Mountain captain's eyes brightened. He had used up his own blood essence and even wasted tens of millions of souls from the ghost banner in order to create such an opportunity that allowed 100,000 grieving spirits to plunge into Lin Ming's body. Even if Lin Ming was stronger, he would still have to struggle for some time to rid himself of these spirits that spread through his body like locusts. And for this period of time, Lin Ming would not have complete control over his body. This was the captain's chance!

"Die!"

The Splintersoul Mountain captain's eyes shined with bloodlust. He wantonly hurtled into the grandmist space. The grandmist space constantly wore down the black energy around his body. However, the Splintersoul Mountain captain had bet everything on this single attack; he smashed the ghost banner down onto Lin Ming's head.

Victory!

The Splintersoul Mountain captain's heart raced. Just as the ghost banner was about to smash into Lin Ming's forehead, Lin Ming suddenly sneered. His originally dull eyes suddenly recovered, shining with absolute clarity!

To Lin Ming, a soul attack was nothing more than a joke. Not to mention his grandmist battle spirit and Samsara martial intent, but just the protection of the Magic Cube made him immune to all soul attacks that would try to seize his body!

The only reason he had faked being affected by the attack just now was in order to lure the Splintersoul Mountain captain into his grandmist space and then strike him down in a single attack. Otherwise, if a late Divine Sea genius used everything he had to escape, it would be a bit troublesome to catch him.

“What!?” As the Splintersoul Mountain captain saw Lin Ming’s sudden change in aura, he was horrified. He was extremely careful. He knew that if he entered the strange domain space that surrounded Lin Ming, his own combat strength would weaken by a great deal. Even so, facing Lin Ming, he had no choice but to desperately risk everything on this attack and finish him off.

Although he had attacked, he had still kept behind some of his strength. Now that he saw the trap Lin Ming had laid for him, he immediately drew back!

“Too late!” Lin Ming coldly jeered. He thrust out his spear and 999 small blood spears formed into a powerful tornado that howled outwards.

“This cunning brat!”

In this split instant, the Splintersoul Mountain captain didn’t even have time to burn his blood essence. He forcefully twisted his body to avoid Lin Ming’s Phoenix Blood Spear. But as he was changing direction, he suddenly felt as if layers upon layers of nets had fallen over his body, holding tightly onto him!

“This is – !”

The Splintersoul Mountain captain was shocked. “Is this a world of will projection, a net formed by a gold battle spirit!?”

Everything had happened too quickly. The Splintersoul Mountain captain didn't even have time to think of how a gold battle spirit had suddenly appeared, capable of binding his movements. His conditioned reflex was to erupt with energy to break out of the shackles of this net, but in this split instant, Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear had already pierced through his protective true essence and was thrusting straight towards his chest.

He couldn't block this!

"Ahh!"

With a miserable shout, the Splintersoul Mountain captain smashed his ghost banner onto the Phoenix Blood Spear's edge!

The ghost banner was not a weapon meant to directly engage in head on fights with the enemy. Rather, it was a weapon that was refined with souls and relied on these ghosts to attack. It was not a weapon made of divine metal, but rather 10,000 year yin peach wood and ghostly silk. A great portion of the ghost banner's 100 million ghosts had perished, and before he even had time to recover the dregs, his ghost banner now had to clash with the weapon known as the king of a hundred solders, the spear that was designed for total annihilation! The results of this collision could be imagined!

Ca!

The top grade saint artifact ghost banner was directly pierced through by Lin Ming's spear!

The Phoenix Blood Spear continued, its speed unabated. It thrust into the Splintersoul Mountain captain's chest, causing blood to splash everywhere!

Chapter 1096 – Cut Them Down

Chapter 1096 – Cut Them Down

…

…

…

With a twist of the Phoenix Blood Spear, the Splintersoul Mountain captain's ribs were completely broken apart. Fresh heart blood sprayed out over a dozen meters!

The Splintersoul Mountain captain was cut down together with his top grade saint artifact ghost banner. And, the sounds of his screaming spread out far and wide, causing all of the disciples to glance in his direction.

Everyone turned their heads to see the Splintersoul Mountain captain's blood pouring onto the ground. But this wasn't the end. With an explosive crackling sound, the Splintersoul Mountain captain's protective true essence shattered. With his body covered by the grandmist space and all of his protective true essence gone, he now directly faced the annihilating Laws of the grandmist space. His flesh and blood began to break down!

Haunting and painful groans issued from his tattered throat. An essence gathering system martial artist had a comparatively frail physical body to begin with, so without their protective true essence, how could they possibly resist the grandmist space and the invasion of that incomparably heavy elementary grandmist energy? With a popping sound, the Splintersoul Mountain captain's entire body exploded into a burst of blood rain. As this blood rain splattered into the air, it was directly swallowed up by the grandmist space. Then, it immediately turned into tiny red particles, and after a few more breaths of time it was completely annihilated!

Such a thorough method of dying caused a creepy feeling to crawl up the scalps of all the disciples from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan. This force field that annihilated all was simply too terrifying!

The disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan looked at each other, fear and retreat in their eyes. And at this moment, the Occult Bone Clan captain felt a cold air shoot straight up his back and into the heavens, as if his spirit had fled him. He already wasn't able to deal with a single Ye Rosewater, but the Splintersoul Mountain captain was even more incapable of dealing with Lin Ming. In just a dozen some breaths of time, he had been killed by Lin Ming!

That meant there was only about five breaths of time until Lin Ming joined the battle again!

"Run! Scatter and run!"

The Occult Bone Clan captain slashed a sword at Ye Rosewater and then drew backwards. The other disciples hesitated for a slight moment before also retreating. In the past excursions into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, when the disciples of Carefree Island found they couldn't continue, they also used such a method to escape. Those that were lucky enough to escape would survive.

"You want to run? Dream on!" Ye Rosewater said, truly angered. This Occult Bone Clan captain had wanted to capture her and use her as a living furnace. If it weren't for Lin Ming then their sneak attack would have succeeded, and she really would have ended up suffering a fate worse than death. How could she not avenge such hatred?

Now they had gained the advantage in the battle. Even if she had to sacrifice her cultivation, Ye Rosewater wouldn't allow him to escape!

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you go and chase down the other disciples! I will slow down the Occult Bone Clan captain!"

Ye Rosewater's response was extremely fast. Her body turned into an afterimage as she moved over a dozen miles in a single step. Then, she lifted her sword and used a martial skill known for its speed, the Thousand Mile Thread. Highly compressed green wood-attribute sword energy shot out, just like a curving jade belt. Although it didn't seem like sword energy, because it was such a highly compressed energy, it could still pierce through a hundred mile mountain top!

"You!!"

The Occult Bone Clan captain was both surprised and angry as he saw that Ye Rosewater's sword light was several times faster than his own escape speed. If he didn't turn around right now then he would be cut in half from the waist. He could only bitterly turn around and cut down with his sword at Ye Rosewater's approaching sword light!

"Don't force me!" The Occult Bone Clan captain savagely bit out.

"Force you? Didn't you plan on capturing me alive and using me as a furnace? I will kill you today and use your bones to make myself a set of bone armor!"

Although Ye Rosewater usually had a gentle personality, the truth was that she was a decisive and ruthless person. Especially towards those that intended to harm her and those underneath her – she would show those people no quarter or mercy.

The Occult Bone Clan captain's defensive ability and physical strength were just a tad greater than Ye Rosewater's. But in terms of his true essence intensity and true essence tenacity, he was far inferior to her. There was no way he could get rid of her!

"Ahh!"

The Occult Bone Clan captain loudly shouted and spat a mouthful of blood essence onto his bone armor. In this life or death moment, he had chosen to burn his own blood essence!

"Burning your blood essence is useless!"

A thick killing intent burst out from Ye Rosewater's eyes and her moves became increasingly dazzling. She had no intention of directly confronting the Occult Bone Clan captain. Instead, as her enemy was trying to escape, she would attack him from all angles, her sword striking towards his every vital spot like a viper attacking from the grass, sharp and threatening. Her true essence had a special characteristic of being especially tough; once it entered the body, it was extremely difficult to eliminate. Thus, even though the Occult Bone Clan captain burnt his blood essence, he was still unable to rid himself of Ye Rosewater. This left him feeling powerless.

Lin Ming hadn't even glanced in Ye Rosewater's direction, but his senses had already caught onto the entire process of her battle with the Occult Bone Clan captain. He couldn't help but admire her fighting method. After all, she was one of the strongest direct disciples in Carefree Island, so she naturally had to have her own methods and there was simply no need for him to worry about her.

At this time, Lin Ming had already begun to hunt down the other disciples from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan!

These people were all at the early and middle Divine Sea realm. With the level of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, if their early Divine Sea direct disciples gathered together to form a battle array formation then they might be able to pose a little threat to Lin Ming. But if they were facing Lin Ming one on one, then there was no choice but to be cut down in a second. Moreover, they were also injured!

"All of you, hold down an enemy with a similar strength and leave the rest to me!"

Lin Ming quickly said with a true essence sound transmission. His voice contained an irresistible momentum. At this time, Lin Ming's orders were much more useful than Ye Rosewater's.

"Okay!"

"Let's attack together! One for each of us! Don't let any of these sons of bitches get away!"

The disciples of Carefree Island shouted with gusto, their attacks becoming increasingly zealous as they fought. Although it wasn't possible for them to quickly slay their opponent, it wasn't difficult to drag down someone with a strength similar to their own. After all, they too trained in the Wood Laws, and their tenacity in battle was far greater than normal, especially when combined with their enemies' wounds.

There were a dozen plus disciples of Carefree Island, and they held down an equal number of disciples from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan. That left seven or eight disciples to run away.

In front of Lin Ming, these seven or eight early and middle Divine Sea disciples were nothing more than sheep to a tiger!

Gold battle spirit, will projection!

Lin Ming gave a fierce shout and the gold battle spirit radiated outwards with the world of will projection. A battle spirit tracing mark attached itself to each of the seven or eight martial artists.

Then, Lin Ming rushed forwards, passing several miles in a single step. He instantly appeared behind an early Divine Sea Splintersoul Mountain disciple.

That disciple had already fallen into despair. He cried out hysterically and cut with a saber towards Lin Ming's waist.

However, in the moment when the saber slashed out, Lin Ming had already retreated backwards, but his spear light was still shooting towards the Splintersoul Mountain martial artist's chest.

Peng!

The keen spear light passed through the disciple's protective true essence, directly penetrating past his heart. The force ripped through his organs and flesh, and a massive hole appeared on the disciple's back with flesh and blood spewing outwards.

And in that instant, Lin Ming had already appeared several miles away, behind an Occult Bone Clan disciple. As the Splintersoul Mountain disciple's vision dimmed, the last thing he saw was Lin Ming's spear falling down and the Occult Bone Clan disciple's body trembling. Then, a bright red splash of blood bloomed in the air like a flower, beautiful and glorious…

What a demon…

This was the Splintersoul Mountain disciple's last thought before he died.

With the deep true essence brought from the dragon marrow blood, and the extreme speed coming from the Gate of Wonder, Mystic Lightning Shade, and Golden Roc Shattering the Void, Lin Ming was no different from a god of death, killing his way through the battlefield. No one was able to maintain their life underneath the shadow of his spear!

Peng!

A fourth enemy disciple had his head pierced through by Lin Ming's spear. At the same time, he launched the grandmist space and wrapped it around a fifth disciple.

"Ahhh!" That disciple miserably screamed out, only feeling his strength rapidly leaving his body. And with a single step, Lin Ming arrived behind that person; the god of death had come for him!

"I'll die with you!"

In his panic, the Occult Bone Clan disciple began to speak in his unique language. However, these were his last words. When he thrust his bone lance at Lin Ming, he could feel a strange and invisible power wrap around his wrist, causing his strike trajectory to veer off course and pass by Lin Ming's neck. However, Lin Ming's spear actually continued straight on, piercing through the disciple's throat. This was the will projection formed by the gold battle spirit. It could be directly poured into the enemy's body to impact their movements. It was nearly impossible for someone to guard against, and the greater the difference in battle spirits, the more influential it would be.

Before long, the seven or eight disciples were completely cut down by Lin Ming. And after that, he turned towards the martial artists who were being held down by the disciples of Carefree Island. He was like the god of death, flitting through the night, mercilessly harvesting lives wherever he went, causing rivers of blood to follow his path.

The disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan were on the brink of despair. They couldn't continue fighting and yet they couldn't run away either.

Every four or five breaths of time, another disciple would die under Lin Ming's hand. With the grandmist space combined with a gold battle spirit's world of will projection, these early and middle Divine Sea martial artists had no ability to resist. Underneath the cover of Lin Ming's grandmist space, the combat strength of these enemy martial artists was reduced to 30% of their original strength. And this 30% strength was then bound down by the will tentacles of the gold battle spirit, causing all of their attacks to miss. The result of this battle could be imagined!

In just half an incense stick of time, the remaining 20 some martial artists of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain had all died. Four or five of them had died under the hands of the Carefree Island disciples, and the rest had been cut down by Lin Ming!

From the start, the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain were destined to fail once Lin Ming had accurately determined the sneak attack. And in this fight, from beginning to end, their loss had been because of Lin Ming. Whether it was a tactical defeat or a combat defeat, both were so!

On the side of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain, whether it was numbers or intelligence, they had occupied the advantage. Originally they had thought they would be able to ambush and then completely roll over the disciples of Carefree Island, but that scenario had been completely reversed. Instead, Carefree Island had been the one to roll over the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain. This unbelievable result was all because of Lin Ming!

Lin Ming stood on the battlefield with bits and pieces of meat scattered all throughout the area. The red sand was bright and shiny with fresh blood, and as he looked towards the captain of the Occult Bone Clan, his spearpoint slowly dripped with blood, the sound echoing through the air. And yet, Lin Ming's entire body was spotless, unstained by the tiniest bit of blood. His eyes were sharp like a bolt of purple lightning in the night, and his stare was enough to send cold chills down one's back, making one lose all courage to resist.

Facing Lin Ming, and in addition to being entangled by Ye Rosewater, the Occult Bone Clan captain's mind completely collapsed!

"I… I give up… don't kill me…"

Chapter 1097 – I'll Cut It Off

Chapter 1097 – I'll Cut It Off

…

…

…

How could Ye Rosewater listen to the useless chatter of the Occult Bone Clan captain? The long sword in her hand thrust towards his vital points.

The Occult Bone Clan captain let out a deep roar, but just as he did so, without any time to react, a massive pressure came falling down from the skies, completely enveloping him. His body shook and his strength began to rapidly fade away. At the same time, Ye Rosewater's sword chopped towards his waist.

"This damned force field!"

The Occult Bone Clan captain panicked. He wasn't Ye Rosewater's match to begin with, and now that he was covered in Lin Ming's grandmist space and world of will projection, he felt like he was a bug caught in a spider's web, unable to move at all.

Peng!

The bone sword and Ye Rosewater's blue sword collided. The Occult Bone Clan captain only felt a sinister true essence creep into his body like a viper, causing his entire body to be numbed.

And at this time he suddenly felt a chill crawl over him. He didn't need to turn around to see that Lin Ming was rushing towards him; it was like a cold blade was quickly approaching his chest. These two masters were already stronger than him to begin with, and now they had placed him within a pincer attack! In this situation, there was no reason to spare his life.

He desperately struggled for a final time, barely forcing back Ye Rosewater and at the same time bringing up his bone sword to meet Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear. However, how could his hastily summoned strength compare with Lin Ming? With a loud ringing sound, the bone sword was sent flying away by the Phoenix Blood Spear. The Occult Bone Clan captain's palm shattered and his right arm was torn apart by Ye Rosewater, leaving him seriously wounded.

As for Lin Ming, his spear had pierced through his shoulder. With just a single flick of the spear, the Occult Bone Clan captain would be ripped apart.

As the Occult Bone Clan captain was withstanding the pain from this attack, at this time, Ye Rosewater thrust out her sword several dozen more times in quick succession, accurately aiming at the Occult Bone Clan captain's acupoints. She didn't kill him, but instead used her sword energy to rip through his body and tear apart his meridians, making him lose all his strength.

Si –

Ye Rosewater's sword touched upon the Occult Bone Clan captain's throat. The icy cold sword edge opened his skin, causing a faint trace of blood to flow out.

"Speak. Who gave up our information?"

Ye Rosewater's voice was cold and indifferent. Although she already had an idea in her heart, she had to obtain confirmation. The reason she had left the Occult Bone Clan leader alive was for this alone.

The remaining Carefree Island disciples also surrounded the Occult Bone Clan captain. They pointed their weapons at him, waiting for his response.

“You – !” The Occult Bone Clan captain’s eyes flashed with all sorts of emotions. He didn’t want to die here. Their Occult Bone Clan focused on perceiving the Laws of Life, so he understood just how miraculous and wonderful life actually was.

“I’ll tell you, as long as you don’t kill me.”

“Do you really think you have any capital to bargain with us?” Ye Rosewater said, her words cutting like glass. She pushed the tip of her sword up a bit more, drawing more blood from his throat. Just a bit more and his entire windpipe would be cut open.

“Since you’re going to kill me, why should I speak!?” The Occult Bone Clan captain shut his eyes. Although he appeared as if he wasn’t afraid of death, his throat couldn’t help but keep spasming in fear. After arriving at the mercy of another’s blade, there were few people that would be able to keep their calm.

“Heh, Senior-apprentice Sister Ye, there’s no need to trade nonsense with this scumbag!” Xiao Raingem sneered and walked forwards. She raised the bloodstained sword in her hand and slowly brought it down to the lower half of the Occult Bone Clan captain. The Occult Bone Clan captain immediately felt his lower half turn cold as horror and panic filled his eyes. “You… what are you doing!?”

“Do you think we’re so naïve and stupid to release you just for a little bit of information? We’ve already guessed who it was that betrayed us and we only wanted you to confirm it. If you spoke, then you could have died a quick and peaceful death. Otherwise, I would have used up some strength and searched your soul. Of course, that isn’t something that I’m skilled at and I might end up turning you into a slobbering retard. But before you become a mindless sack of flesh, I will have you taste the feeling of becoming a eunuch! I heard that your Occult Bone Clan is full of sexually violent men who like to capture the outstanding women of other clans and make them their slaves, and your every day is filled with taking their happiness. Hehe, hey, what do you think it will feel like if I slice off your little brother down here a bit at a time?”

As Xiao Raingem spoke, the sword energy around her sword edge began to twist into a spiral like a meat grinder. If this sword was pressed down against the Occult Bone Clan captain's manhood, his fate could be imagined. As everyone saw this, the female disciples blushed red and the male disciples were actually overflowing with excitement. They raucously shouted, "Senior-apprentice Sister Xiao is awesome! Cut it off!"

"Tear it apart! Feed it to the dogs!"

The Occult Bone Clan captain suddenly paled. To a man, this sort of pressure couldn't be compared to a quick death. "I'll speak. I'll speak... it... it should be... White Mirrorjade. But that is only what we think... he is very careful, he never leaves behind any evidence."

"So it was him!" Hatred flashed in Xiao Raingem's eyes. A simple guess was enough. For both sides to have the same guess, how could it be a groundless claim?

Ye Rosewater glared at the Occult Bone Clan captain with disgust in her eyes and then finished him off with a final sword strike. She coldly said, "These people are only a small portion of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan's main force. Their main force should already be fighting with the rest of Carefree Island!"

These words immediately cooled down the Carefree Island disciples' jubilant happiness from their victory. After considering the time, there should be less than 20 hours left before they were transmitted out of the mystic realm. This was indeed the time when the war between the sects would erupt.

Although White Mirrorjade had betrayed them, the other disciples of Carefree Island had nothing to do with this matter. If too many of them died, then this would be no minor attack on Carefree Island, it would be a catastrophic failure during this expedition into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. Carefree Island had placed their hopes on this mission. If they lost not only 20 billion violet sun stones but also the lives of a massive amount of disciples, then although this wasn't something that Carefree Island wouldn't be able to recover from, it would thoroughly eliminate their chances of becoming a Holy Land.

On the other hand, if they quickly raced back, then with the two powerhouses of Ye Rosewater and Lin Ming, they would surely be able to play an enormous role in the war; they might even be able to reverse the tide.

And if they purposefully delayed then they would be subject to sanctions from the sect. In a battle of direct disciples, as long as both sides participated, then both sides would be punished regardless of the reason. The sect would not be lenient either. If Ye Rosewater saw that her fellow disciples were in danger and did nothing, then the sect would only see the results of what happened. Not just that, but White Mirrorjade betraying them was only speculation – there was no substantial evidence. As long as White Mirrorjade insisted that he was framed, no one would be able to drag him down. Instead, they would be pushed down by him.

Ye Rosewater was faced with a difficult conundrum. The other disciples also realized this and looked at her. As the captain, she was primarily responsible for all the decisions, thus the pressure on her was the greatest.

“What do you plan on doing?”

Lin Ming seemed as if he were casually asking, but in truth he had already decided that if Ye Rosewater was so stupid as to rush back and support White Mirrorjade, then he wouldn’t join in her crusade.

Ye Rosewater hesitated and said, “Although this trip into the mystic realm is important, if we go back now then White Mirrorjade is certain to use the command of the Highest Elders to take control. And if we do not obey him then he will punish us for disobeying orders. In the future, he will surely argue against us in the Council of Elders and push the responsibility of the defeat on us. If we quickly return, he will use us as meat shields and have us go wherever there is danger. He is likely to have us waste all our strength on Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, and after that he might even stab us in the back and have us perish along with them. If we return, then our casualties will be serious!”

As Ye Rosewater spoke, the other disciples also felt the same. If they went back at this time they would surely be used as fodder!

“But… Senior-apprentice Sister Ye, if we don’t return, then you…” Xiao Raingem said with some worry. If they didn’t go to support the main team, then they would still be transmitted back to the sect in 20 hours. At that time, if the main team had serious casualties and yet they weren’t injured at all, then there was just no way to explain that.

“There’s no need to worry. If the sect decides to punish us then I will bear all responsibility by myself.” Ye Rosewater decisively said. As she spoke, the surrounding disciples felt their hearts warm.

“Senior-apprentice Sister Ye, please rest assured. Let’s come up with a reason first. For instance, we were stuck in the mystic realm somewhere and we had no way to return to help the main team. Anyone that dares to sell out Senior-apprentice Sister Ye will be struck down by the heavens!”

“That’s right! We’ll all make the same confession!” The other disciples quickly agreed.

“That’s too far-fetched.” Ye Rosewater waved her hand. “There isn’t much danger in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm to begin with, so where would we possibly be stranded? I live righteously and stand righteously, and I won’t do something so ridiculous as making up excuses. If the sect decides to punish me then they can punish me. No matter how great my punishment is, they still won’t kill me. That villain White Mirrorjade, I will carve this into my bones! In the future I will return everything back to him twofold, otherwise there is no meaning to me cultivating the martial path!”

Ye Rosewater grit her teeth. She didn’t think that White Mirrorjade would die in this divergent mystic realm. He surely had some method to safely escape, otherwise he wouldn’t do something so crazy like betraying them.

“Senior-apprentice Sister Ye really knows debts of gratitude and debts of hate.” Lin Ming smiled. He appreciated Ye Rosewater’s personality. “But, why wait for the future to take revenge?”

“Mm?” Ye Rosewater was stunned. Did Lin Ming mean to do something in this divergent mystic realm? In front of so many disciples, if he murdered someone else without conclusive evidence, then at such a critical point that would truly warrant a death penalty.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, please don’t be irrational!”

“Senior-apprentice Sister Ye, you have no need to worry. I haven’t said what we should do yet. If we really stand by and don’t help those in need, then our enemy will truly grasp our weakness. Nothing will happen to me, but Senior-apprentice Sister Ye’s punishment will be serious. I estimate that the battle between the forces should have just started. How about we rest here first, and then we can go and ‘support’ them in another four to six hours. What does Senior-apprentice Sister Ye think about this?”

Lin Ming spoke in a very understated manner, but the word ‘support’ actually caused Ye Rosewater’s eyebrow to jump up. She didn’t think that Lin Ming was so soft that he would go and help whoever was in need. Was Lin Ming planning on taking advantage while they were all down and them stepping on them once again?

Chapter 1098 – Reap the Spoils From The Wearied

Chapter 1098 – Reap the Spoils From The Wearied

…

…

…

In that battle just now, only a small number of Carefree Island's disciples had received minor wounds. No one had died and none of them had been severely wounded. With a martial artist's ability to meditate and recover, they could restore themselves to full strength in just two to four hours.

And Lin Ming was even faster. With the dragon marrow blood supporting him, he simply hadn't even used up any energy or strength just now; he was near his peak condition from the get go.

"Let's move somewhere else." Lin Ming said after he saw the Carefree Island disciples healed up.

"Move somewhere else?" Ye Rosewater asked, a bit surprised. However, Lin Ming didn't offer an explanation and simply led everyone in another direction.

Imperceptibly, Lin Ming had already established himself in a position of absolute power in the team. Even if he issued an order without any reasoning given, no one would question him.

Lin Ming took up all the spatial rings and identification tokens of the Splintersoul Mountain and Occult Bone Clan disciples. Then, he led the Carefree Island disciples to an area several hundred feet away.

After a bit, Lin Ming stopped in an area thick with stone outcroppings and said, “We’ll stop here.”

“Why here?” Ye Rosewater looked around and found that besides the cover provided by the giant stone crags everywhere, there wasn’t anything too special about this place. And as for having cover, the mining pit from before was clearly better.

“No special reason. If I’m closer to the battlefield it’s easier to keep track of what’s happening.”

Lin Ming casually shrugged. The only reason he came here was to find a place that was closer and more comfortable, so he could observe the battle.

With Mo Eversnow’s soul force, she could easily probe out in a distance of a few hundred miles in the sandstorm. And in normal times, she was able to clearly see all things happening tens of thousands of miles away. To these direct disciples, this sort of observational distance was nothing but a myth.

“This...” Ye Rosewater gulped, speechless. The other disciples were also left dumbfounded. Even if Lin Ming had some sort of hidden detection method, this was just far too absurd. They were so far from the main battlefield that there weren’t even any fluctuations of energy that could be felt, and yet Lin Ming could sense the situation occurring there.

“Miss Mo, I’ll have to count on you.”

In the Magic Cube, Mo Eversnow was nothing more than a soul form. It was extremely difficult and troublesome for her to fight an enemy in this state. In order to truly display some level of combat strength, she would have to possess someone’s body. However, possessing someone’s body, even if it were for a temporary and short time, was a considerable burden on her soul. That sort of action would consume a great deal of her soul force. If she wanted to restore herself, she would need extremely precious blood essence.

Thus, it was best for Mo Eversnow to avoid any situations in which she had to directly help.

But, if it was merely investigating with her divine sense then there wasn't any problem at all; she could do so however much she wished. The tiny amount of soul force she consumed from doing so could definitely be easily restored.

Mo Eversnow's sense formed a straight line that radiated outwards. Soon, everything that happened within a radius of 5000-6000 miles began to reflect in Lin Ming's spiritual sea like dancing phantoms. Mo Eversnow was able to directly project these images into Lin Ming's mind because their spirits were connected. Otherwise, it would be impossible for her to do this.

At this time, the disciples of Carefree Island had already begun fighting with Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan. As Lin Ming saw this scene, he was slightly startled. White Mirrorjade was depending on just himself to suppress the two top late Divine Sea masters from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan!

Transmitting a late Divine Sea martial artist into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm consumed 10 times the resources of a middle Divine Sea martial artist! Thus, every sect tried to limit the number of late Divine Sea martial artists they sent to the lowest number possible. As for these two people, they must be peak talents, otherwise, the cost effectiveness would be too low!

White Mirrorjade and Ye Rosewater were the same.

Similarly, the late Divine Sea masters of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan were inevitably extraordinary.

And now, White Mirrorjade was fighting against both of them. From this point alone, one could see that his strength surpassed even Ye Rosewater!

“Mm? His strongest attack skills shouldn’t come from Carefree Island’s cultivation methods. This White Mirrorjade has quite a few secrets.”

Mo Eversnow’s voice sounded out in Lin Ming’s ear. She had a good understanding into the cultivation methods of Carefree Island, and what White Mirrorjade was using now was clearly not from Carefree Island.

“Mm? It isn’t Carefree Island’s cultivation methods?”

“It’s not too strange.” Mo Eversnow lackadaisically said. “Many geniuses have their own destiny. It’s possible that they found the relics and treasures of Divine Realm powerhouses in some mystic realm. There are far too many hidden powerhouses secluded all over the Divine Realm. After they die, they often won’t destroy their own inheritance but instead leave it behind for those fated successors to appear in the future. It seems that this White Mirrorjade had his own number of lucky chances. I think that the inheritance he found was left behind by some Holy Lord level powerhouse, and not an ordinary Holy Lord level powerhouse at that.”

Just as Mo Eversnow finished speaking, Lin Ming saw a brilliant flash of light. In that moment, right after White Mirrorjade collided with the two late Divine Sea masters from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, he took advantage of the moment to toss out seven shining crystal beads. These seven beads formed a seven-star pattern in the sky before exploding!

The power of these thunder pearls was terrifying. They were far stronger than the god slaying beads that Huo Violentstone had given Lin Ming in the God Beast Mystic Realm!

These sorts of treasure beads didn’t need any true essence to activate them. A mortal could use these beads to commit suicide together with a Divine Sea master. Of course, that was on the premise that they could strike. These beads were extremely difficult to create, and for White Mirrorjade to throw out so many of them in a single go, he undoubtedly must have inherited the legacy of some mysterious powerhouse.

When a master had briefly exhausted their strength and wasn't yet able to summon new strength, that was when they were at their weakest. White Mirrorjade used this time and exploded the thunder pearls. They immediately created a great deal of trouble for the two late Divine Sea powerhouses. And around them, three middle Divine Sea martial artists were caught up in the explosive shock waves and were blown into pieces!

Three middle Divine Sea powerhouses had been instantly slain!

As this all happened, all the martial artists were shocked. The morale of the Carefree Island disciples rapidly rose. Originally, when they faced the forces of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, they had lacked the courage to do so. After all, the enemy was twice their size!

But none of them imagined that the Elder Senior-apprentice Brother they so respected would actually turn out to be formidable beyond their imaginations. By himself, he had held off two late Divine Sea powerhouses and had even used his thunder pearls to wound them.

"Brothers, we can do it! Don't stop here! Dammit, where is Senior-apprentice Sister Ye and how come she hasn't caught up to us yet!?"

"Senior-apprentice Sister Ye? Humph! They probably fled already. They should have met with us over four hours ago and yet they haven't come!" Some people that had always been doubtful of Ye Rosewater said.

"Maybe there was an accident..."

"What kind of problem could there be? We're holding off the enemy's main force right now and their position is also so safe! Fuck! The more I think about it the sicker I feel!"

These disciples were mostly White Mirrorjade's subordinates. They had exhausted themselves and suffered searching the wild red desert, but Ye Rosewater and the others had actually taken shelter in the mining pit.

“Focus on the battle, do not split your attention or speculate on what others are doing. If Junior-apprentice Sister Ye can come, she will naturally arrive sooner or later.” White Mirrorjade said with a true essence sound transmission as his sword repelled the captain of the Occult Bone Clan, Gongyang Bonesmash.

The disciples quickly concentrated; they had already suffered too many casualties. “Senior-apprentice Brother White cares about others too much. Not only did us brothers suffer in the sandstorm, but we even have to bear the brunt of the enemy’s forces. As for them, they hide in the safest place possible and Senior-apprentice Brother White still speaks up for them.”

White Mirrorjade’s prestige was high to begin with, and now that he displayed absolute strength and also the moral character to not slander others behind their backs, his image became extremely tall in the eyes of others. Even if some of them were critical of him, they would still suppress this doubt and be willing to fight next to White Mirrorjade with all their heart.

Carefree Island battled with Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, each one using every possible tactic at their disposal, clashing again and again. The fight became increasingly intense. However, because of the defensive ability of their combined array formations, less than a fifth of the disciples had died. In terms of overall battle strength, Carefree Island was a bit inferior. But, with White Mirrorjade’s thunder pearls supporting them, they were actually able to persist.

“This White Mirrorjade, it seems he’s quite hard to kill.”

Lin Ming could clearly see that in this sort of situation, White Mirrorjade had the strength to save the lives of the Carefree Island disciples. And, if he tried to escape, no one would be able to stop him either. Even if those two squads that had tried to sneak attack Lin Ming returned on time to join the battle, they still wouldn’t have been able to stop White Mirrorjade. It was exactly because of White Mirrorjade’s absolute confidence in his abilities that he was willing to betray Ye Rosewater.

As for those thunder pearls, although they were precious, White Mirrorjade would soon break into the Divine Transformation realm. At that time, these thunder pearls that could slaughter a late Divine Sea martial artist at best would be much less useful to him. Thus, it wasn't too great a loss for him to use up the thunder pearls he had with him.

It could be said that White Mirrorjade would suffer no losses in this battle. And if he was able to win, his fame would soar and he would be able to set himself up as an undeniably valorous hero in the eyes of all the direct disciples, someone capable of turning the tide at even the darkest of moments. At that time, inheriting the future position of Island Master would be nearly guaranteed.

Stepping back 10,000 steps, even if White Mirrorjade was the only one to survive, it would be fine. It didn't take a genius to guess that all the resources that the Revolving Core disciples gathered had been left with White Mirrorjade. If he brought back this massive amount of resources to the sect, then he would still be considered a hero who performed a great merit!

"Junior-apprentice Lin, what's the battle like?" Ye Rosewater nervously asked. Although she said that she wouldn't go to help them, she was still anxious for the disciples of Carefree Island. She was afraid that they would suffer too grievous a loss and it would harm Carefree Island's foundation.

Lin Ming said, "I only have a general idea of what's happening. White Mirrorjade's hidden strength far surpasses what you've imagined!"

In truth, with Mo Eversnow's vision and clarity, Lin Ming was actually able to identify the exact number of people that died and the exact number of people that were injured. He estimated that if this battle continued on, in around half an hour the disciples of the three sects would soon exhaust their true essence reserves and no longer be able to maintain the array formation combat techniques they were using. At that time, the array formations would shatter and deaths would come even faster!

Even though only a fifth of the disciples had died so far, in an hour, at least half would perish. And in two hours, maybe not even a third of the disciples would be left alive, and those surviving would also be in a miserable condition!

"I've guessed about as much." Ye Rosewater wasn't surprised. If it weren't for today's battle, she simply wouldn't have understood White Mirrorjade, and she would have inevitably lost the struggle for the Island Master position in the future.

"Then when should we go and support them?" Xiao Raingem asked, approaching Lin Ming. The fragrant scent of a woman drifted over.

Lin Ming smiled. "There's no need to worry. Their battle is still in full swing, and the disciples of Carefree Island aren't in too great a danger right now. If we wait for another four hours or so then we should be good."

"Ah? Another four hours? Well... okay." Xiao Raingem nodded. At this time, she could only listen to Lin Ming.

Chapter 1099 – Sitting Back and Waiting

Chapter 1099 – Sitting Back and Waiting

…

…

…

Waiting four hours was quite comfortable for Lin Ming and the others. They all rested in meditation, restoring their strength to their peak condition.

As for Lin Ming, he also sifted through the spatial rings left behind by the Splintersoul Mountain and Occult Bone Clan disciples. Unfortunately, their spatial rings didn't have many resources. This group had only been a small one sent mainly to eliminate Lin Ming, and the majority of the gathered resources should be with the main team.

"Really too poor."

Lin Ming shook his head. For someone like him, who had seen so many rare heavenly materials, the wealth of these disciples couldn't be considered much. As for their cultivation method jade slips, they were also useless. Splintersoul Mountain practiced soul attack type cultivation methods and the Occult Bone Clan practiced sexual cultivation methods, where they meditated on the Laws of Life through sex.

As for cultivation methods, Lin Ming had no lack of them now. The Magic Cube had an immense number of soul fragments within it, containing a trove of memories. It was just that these people couldn't be considered as being at the peak for the current Lin Ming.

And, Lin Ming's spiritual sea had a limited holding capacity. If he had to absorb the memories of a top powerhouse, they would have to have a transcendent divine might, or at least a peak heaven-step cultivation method. As for those martial artists that couldn't even become Holy Lords, Lin Ming had no interest in their cultivation methods.

As Lin Ming and the others were resting, far away, the disciples of Carefree Island and White Mirrorjade had fallen into a bitter struggle!

Although battle arrays were able to provide protection for the weaker disciples, it was impossible to maintain them forever. After another half hour, the battle arrays began to break down.

Three quarters of an hour later, half of the disciples had died.

Two hours later, most of the disciples had died. Although White Mirrorjade had the thunder pearls, he didn't have an infinite supply of them. At this time, he had already used them all up.

However, White Mirrorjade was extremely strong to begin with, and the more he fought, the fiercer he became. After two hours of continuous combat, he still managed to maintain most of his strength. As for the Occult Bone Clan's Gongyang Bonesmash and Splintersoul Mountain's Soul Thousandmile, both of them were finding it difficult to continue!

"This brat, how can he be so strong!" Soul Thousandmile breathlessly said.

"Dammit! Where is the unit that was sent to the mountain and how come they haven't returned yet? Could there have been some accident?"

"Impossible. The sub team of Carefree Island disciples shouldn't be their match, and we also verified the information beforehand, so it shouldn't be wrong."

According to the plan, the other teams of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan should have completed their mission and rushed over here as soon as possible. But, the battle had continued to such a miserable degree and yet not even their shadows had appeared; there hadn't even been a single sound transmitting talisman sent their way.

“At this point in the battle we’ve already lost over half of our disciples. If we can’t obtain victory in the end then there won’t be any way we can make up for our losses. The sect will definitely punish us once we return! We have so many more people than Carefree Island and yet we still can’t win!”

Now, Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash had already gone past the point of no return. They didn’t think that White Mirrorjade would be so ruthless.

“Concentrate all of your strength! Kill White Mirrorjade first! Once we kill White Mirrorjade, the rest will fall!”

Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash both had such thoughts. But, White Mirrorjade was also thinking in a similar fashion. Every move he used placed Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash in a deathtrap.

Another quarter hour passed. Over 75% of the disciples had died!

Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash both had less than 20% of their true essence remaining; they weren’t able to continue for much longer.

Peng!

With a loud ringing sound, Soul Thousandmile trembled and spat out a mouthful of blood.

A cold light flashed in White Mirrorjade’s eyes, “Die!”

White Mirrorjade had also consumed a great deal of his energy. But compared to Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash, he was much better off. He had been biding his time and waiting for this chance. At this moment, he was finally ready to reveal his last trump card. Sealed within his sword blade was the source strength of an ancient supreme elder. This source blood essence was the same as the source blood essence of the old Palace Master sealed within Lin Ming’s Phoenix Blood Spear.

This source blood essence could be burned. However, because far too long of a time had passed and it wasn't White Mirrorjade's own strength to begin with, the power of it wouldn't be too great. But at a time when both sides were nearing exhaustion, this was enough to serve as the final strike to tip the balance.

In that moment, White Mirrorjade's sword light instantly doubled in intensity!

"What!?"

"This is bad!"

Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash were alarmed. At this time, they both chose to decisively burn their own blood essence. From the start, even though they were in a critical life or death battle, they didn't want to burn their own blood essence. However, they no longer had a choice.

The two masters burnt their blood essence. Their strength also immediately rose.

Bang!

A fierce explosion rocked the world. Soul Thousandmile's body was sent flying backwards and Gongyang Bonesmash was in an even more miserable condition; one of his arms had been sheared off.

However, White Mirrorjade wasn't much better. Facing two enemies who burnt their blood essence, he had been heavily wounded in return.

"We're retreating!"

Soul Thousandmile grit his teeth and decided as he saw Gongyang Bonesmash's ruined appearance. If they continued to fight then there really would be a chance of them dying here. He never imagined that this White Mirrorjade would be such a hard bone to chew.

"Che!"

Although the disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan couldn't finish off Carefree Island, they still occupied the advantage, so retreating wasn't a problem at all for them.

At this time, Carefree Island only had around 20 people left over. Originally, they had more than 100, and now four fifths of them had died and the rest were wounded.

Three quarters of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan's disciples had decided; now they had less than 40 people remaining.

As those from Carefree Island saw the disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan retreating, they had no way to stop them or chase them down, especially since their enemy's strength was greater.

White Mirrorjade let out a long breath and then took out a healing pill from his spatial ring and swallowed it. The thick killing intent in his eyes began to slowly dim down. "What a pity!"

He felt a bit regretful that he wasn't able to kill Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash. But, the truth was that this situation was already much better than what he expected it would be like. He originally thought that all of the direct disciples would die and he would have to flee by himself, but more than 20 of them had survived and there was also a great deal of resources that had been gathered. This was truly a great accomplishment!

"That's strange, Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan should have more than two peak late Divine Sea masters in Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash. They should still have one or two more, but how come they haven't shown up? Could it be that Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan don't have enough violet sun stones to support transmitting so many people?"

White Mirrorjade thought. He didn't know that Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan had split up their forces for a future pincer attack, and thus he also naturally wouldn't think that the troops that had been sent to kill Lin Ming and the others had been annihilated instead. There hadn't even been any news relayed back. This result was just too ridiculous.

At this time, a thousand miles away in an outcropping of rocks, Lin Ming suddenly stood up. He said to everyone around him, "Let's go!"

"Mm? Weren't we waiting for four hours? Well, this is fine too, I'm getting a bit restless here." Ye Rosewater looked at the time and discovered that just over two hours had passed. But, she was also feeling a bit uneasy sitting here. She was afraid that the disciples of Carefree Island would be completely wiped out.

Lin Ming smiled, "There's no need to wait any longer. Come with me, we're following the usual rules. Everyone restrain your senses so that you aren't discovered!"

Since the battle had ended earlier than he anticipated, he naturally wouldn't wait much longer.

Lin Ming brought the group quickly flying away. In the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, the sandstorms came in ordered intervals. After one ended, another wouldn't appear immediately afterwards. Thus, Mo Eversnow was able to completely see the situation happening a thousand miles away with complete clarity.

"Mm? Didn't Junior-apprentice Brother Lin say the battlefield was in that direction? How come we're headed somewhere else?"

Xiao Raingem couldn't help but ask Ye Rosewater when she noticed the direction Lin Ming was going in was a bit off. Ye Rosewater shook her head, not asking Lin Ming. She had already accepted Lin Ming as the de-facto captain of their group and she also had complete faith in him, thus there wasn't any need to question him.

After flying several hundred miles, the group arrived at another outcropping of rocks.

"Everyone restrain your aura. We're going to wait in ambush in these rocks. On my order, attack together!"

The rock outcropping that Lin Ming chose this time was much more hidden and crowded than the last one. With the divine sense isolating effects of the red sand and stone, if they were hiding here it would be extremely difficult for anyone to discover them.

“Okay.”

To Lin Ming’s order, although the disciples of Carefree Island were confused, they didn’t hesitate at all. Each one of them quickly followed his commands. They had spent some time restoring their strength and they were at their peak state. Not only did they not fear the forces of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain, but they were also itching to fight.

After a quarter hour passed, an extremely haggard and injured group of disciples flew towards this outcropping of rocks.

These people were the remnant forces of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan.

There were only 36-37 of them left and they were all in a terrible state.

Their path of retreat had been completely seen through by Lin Ming. Along their way they would definitely pass by this outcropping of rocks, thus he had chosen to lay in ambush here.

“Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, there are some rocks up front. Let’s go there and recover for a bit.”

Some people from the Occult Bone Clan group asked Gongyang Bonesmash.

At this time, Gongyang Bonesmash was carrying his severed arm and his face was incomparably pale. He truly needed to stop by somewhere and meditate to restore his wounds. But, as he looked at that outcropping of rocks, he shook his head.

“No! It’s too near the battlefield. White Mirrorjade might catch up to us. That boy has too many hidden secrets, we cannot be too careless against him. Let’s hurry up and continue onwards!”

“Elder Senior-apprentice Brother is being a bit too careful. Carefree Island is far inferior to us. They are already lucky enough that we retreated, so how could they even dare to chase after us?” Some disciples whispered. But honestly speaking, they really did think it was best if Gongyang Bonesmash went to that rock outcropping. His wounds were too horrible and he desperately needed to rest.

“Mm? They aren’t stopping?” Lin Ming was a bit surprised as he hid in the rocks. But none of this mattered; a sneak attack in the air was also the same.

When Lin Ming had killed the previous group, they hadn’t had many resources at all. It was clear that the majority of the resources had been left with the main force.

Lin Ming naturally couldn’t miss out on such wealth.

Chapter 1100 – Sweep Away the Fallen leaves

Chapter 1100 – Sweep Away the Fallen leaves

…

…

…

The resources excavated from the Red Desolate Mystic Realm were truly wealth that could be spent. Although violet sun stones weren't comparable to top heavenly treasures like a supreme dragon bone, they were still indispensable items for all martial artists. And, it was also impossible for Lin Ming to exchange the supreme dragon bone for money.

Before, Mo Eversnow had said that recorded within the Celestial Tyrant Manual, there were two pills that needed to be used in order to break through the last two gates of Life and Death of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. They were the Gate of Life's Esoteric Immortality Pill and the Gate of Death's Esoteric Mortality Pill. It would be impossible for Lin Ming to search for the ingredients to these pills himself. He would have to purchase them from a trading company or win them through an auction house. And to do all of this, he needed money.

As the many Carefree Island disciples hid among the rocks, they followed orders and restrained their divine sense and aura. At the same time, they were also gathering strength in their bodies, waiting to make a sudden strike like a bolt of thunder.

Hu – Hu –

The movement of Gongyang Bonesmash and Soul Thousandmile and their squads caused a sharp whistling sound as they passed through the air. They recklessly radiated energy from all over their bodies; the Carefree Island disciples that were hiding in the rocks were certainly able to feel this.

“People have come!”

“It’s… it’s the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain! Why would they appear here? Moreover… they’re injured!”

The Carefree Island disciples saw with their own eyes, just seven or eight miles away, there were nearly 40 Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain disciples headed their way. All of them were wounded, exhausted, and on the verge of collapse. It was clear that they had suffered a tragic battle just now!

This was the best chance to ambush them!

“Lin Ming, he…”

Ye Rosewater, Xiao Raingem, and the others all glanced over at Lin Ming, not sure what sort of expression to use. It was clear that Lin Ming had accurately grasped their enemy’s every move, and thus he was able to arrive here ahead of time to ambush them.

To have someone like Lin Ming as an enemy was too terrifying!

“Now!”

Lin Ming indifferently spat out this word, suddenly rousing the Carefree Island disciples from their daze.

“Attack!”

Over a dozen Carefree Island disciples formed a battle array formation, erupting with the entirety of their strength. Sword light howled through the skies as beams of blue light pierced through the heavens!

Lin Ming burnt all of the Ancient Phoenix blood in his body as he simultaneously opened the Heretical God Force.

Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

Seven or eight miles was far too short a distance. Gongyang Bonesmash and the others would never imagine that they would be ambushed right here. After all, their previous battle had been far too harsh. White Mirrorjade wouldn't divide a part of his forces to lie in ambush for them, and it was also impossible for him to know just what direction they would escape in.

"Be careful!"

"Shit!"

Gongyang Bonesmash and Soul Thousandmile both cried out at the same time. However, it was too late. Their disciples had exhausted far too much of their energy, so it was impossible for them to compare with Lin Ming and his group, who had gathered their complete strength. This strike was like a sudden bolt of lightning out of the blue!

Moreover, this strike contained the attacks of Lin Ming and Ye Rosewater, two great masters. In particular Lin Ming – his striking power was able to cut down a late Divine Sea master.

Bang bang bang!

A terrifying explosion lit up the sky. In an instant, around 10 disciples that were originally severely wounded were suddenly blown to pieces by the barrage!

"Attack!"

Lin Ming took the lead and rushed to the front! At this time, the opponents he faced were even weaker than the last bunch. He was like a ferocious tiger running into a pack of debilitated wolves; the result of this battle could be imagined.

With a sweep of the Phoenix Blood Spear, two martial artists were beheaded.

"Run!"

Gongyang Bonesmash decisively ordered. Right now his combat strength was less than 20% of his peak state and he had also lost an arm. Now, he had even fallen for the enemy's ambush. His opponents were clearly prepared for him. Trying to struggle with them would only result in death. This meant that the only slim chance of survival he had was to escape as quickly as possible.

"Dream on!"

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a brutal light. The first six of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates opened together and the power of blood within his body flooded forth as if a dam had been released, waves upon waves of surging energy gushing outwards.

Ka ka ka!

Lin Ming's entire body emitted explosive crackling sounds as his aura began to rapidly climb and his strength continuously increased. After his momentum reached the peak, Lin Ming stepped several miles forward in a single step, his Phoenix Blood Spear causing the space around it to tremble.

Celestial Tyrant Manual's Hundred Layered Waves!

Bang!

With the sound of the world collapsing, Lin Ming used the Hundred Layered Waves technique to strike out with surging true essence in his body, pounding towards Gongyang Bonesmash like an unstoppable tsunami!

"Ahhhh!"

In this life or death moment, Gongyang Bonesmash roared and thrust out his lance. However, his efforts were useless. He was directly struck by the violent Hundred Layered Waves in his right chest. The horrifying impact force completely crushed the right half of his body into nothing!

Gongyang Bonesmash had died in a single attack!

Although he had been injured, he had still been a late Divine Sea master. Even so, Lin Ming had slain him in the blink of an eye.

Then, Ye Rosewater and the others finally caught up to Lin Ming.

What a frightening attack!

If even the disciples of Carefree Island thought Lin Ming's attack was frightening, there was no need to mention what the disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan were thinking. Without the least bit of hesitation, all of them began escaping!

"Kill them all! Leave no one alive!"

Ye Rosewater didn't go to finish off the last late Divine Sea master. Instead, she began to cut down the next strongest powerhouses. Her moves were fast and she was also strong, and most importantly, she was in her peak state. It was impossible for anyone from Splintersoul Mountain or the Occult Bone Clan to be a threat to her.

And at this time, Lin Ming approached the second late Divine Sea master – Soul Thousandmile.

Soul Thousandmile's wounds were a bit better than Gongyang Bonesmash's, but the result was the same. In a futile effort he sent out a soul attack towards Lin Ming, hoping to stop him. However, what goes around comes around. Soul Thousandmile was struck by a backlash as his soul attack failed, and as his face was pale and his eyes dazed, Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear had already pierced through his throat like a viper.

The second late Divine Sea powerhouse had been smoothly eliminated!

Lin Ming waved his hand and Gongyang Bonesmash and Soul Thousandmile's spatial rings both flew into his waiting grasp.

As he investigated the inside with his divine sense, there was indeed a massive amount of resources. In addition, there were also the Revolving Core disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan.

Lin Ming planned to hand all of these people over to Carefree Island as prisoners. As for how Carefree Island dealt with them, it didn't matter to him at all.

To the side, Ye Rosewater and the others were winning with overwhelming momentum. Ye Rosewater naturally saw Lin Ming take up the spatial rings of Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash. She also guessed that there was a massive amount of wealth hidden within them.

However, Ye Rosewater was smart enough that she didn't say anything. She knew that without Lin Ming here, they would have already died without a burial ground, let alone obtaining any treasures.

The battle proceeded astonishingly smoothly. In less than an incense stick of time, all their enemies had been swept away like old autumn leaves.

All the disciples that had chased their enemies had already returned. 14-15 of them had died underneath Lin Ming's hand alone. As for the disciples of Carefree Island, none of them had died and only several of them had been severely wounded due to a desperately suicidal counterattack by their opponents. But, these severely wounded disciples would be fine as long as they ate some pills and rested for some time.

However, they weren't able to completely eliminate the wounded disciples of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain. There had been too many of them to begin with and they had all scattered in different directions; it would be too troublesome to chase after all of them.

In just several hours, they had won victory after victory against opponents who had outnumbered them. This caused their confidence to soar up into the sky.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, what should we do next?” Ye Rosewater asked Lin Ming. She had already decided to take Lin Ming as their de-facto captain, even if that meant blindly following. She admired him with her entire being.

“Nothing much. Let’s go and meet back up with the main force.” Lin Ming smiled as he spoke. If he delayed too long then White Mirrorjade would be able to recover from his wounds. Lin Ming naturally couldn’t allow that to happen.

Chapter 1101 – If I Were You, I'd Have Already Killed Myself

Chapter 1101 – If I Were You, I'd Have Already Killed Myself

…

…

…

"Senior-apprentice Brother White, you are truly wise and heroic! You've really opened our eyes!"

"Wow, I knew Senior-apprentice Brother White was strong, but I never imagined you would be such an indomitable warrior! Those two great masters, Gongyang Bonesmash and Soul Thousandmile, were both beaten silly by Senior-apprentice Brother White and sent running to the hills! It looks like Senior-apprentice Brother White becoming Island Master in the future is already a settled matter."

"Yah, yah! Since we'll be following Senior-apprentice Brother White in the future, our days will be awesome! Hahaha!"

All around White Mirrorjade, disciples were breathlessly flattering him. The results of this bitter fight had far exceeded their loftiest expectations. Moreover, their harvests in this mystic realm had been considerable. Those that lived would surely be given great rewards once they returned to the sect!

Not just that, but the strength White Mirrorjade had displayed had allowed them to see hope in the future. If they had fought alongside an impending Island Master, their future accomplishments could be imagined.

In the face of all these compliments, White Mirrorjade shook his head and said, “How could I be the Island Master? There are more direct disciples than me alone. Moreover, the Island Master is still in the prime years of his life; there will be an extremely long time before he abdicates his position and there will surely be many new disciples born during that time. Among all these future disciples there will surely be extraordinarily talented individuals.”

“Senior-apprentice Brother White is too humble. Senior-apprentice Brother White is considered the greatest number one talent to show up in the last several hundred years. I thought that Ye Rosewater would have been able to contend with Senior-apprentice Brother White, but now that I’ve seen Senior-apprentice Brother White’s true ability, Ye Rosewater isn’t anything at all. She’s nothing more than a weak woman!”

“That’s right. And that Ye Rosewater also crept away at such a critical time. When I return, I will definitely report her to the sect!”

“Yeah, and there is even that Lin Ming. I have no idea what the sect was thinking to send such a fellow to support us. I really think that the Island Master was confused somehow. No matter how talented Lin Ming is, his cultivation is only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction. He can’t even compare to a single hair from Senior-apprentice Brother White, so how could he possibly be sent to support us? It’s just too ridiculous!”

“What are you talking about? Comparing that Lin Ming to Senior-apprentice Brother White is simply a grave insult to Senior-apprentice Brother White. We’ve fought for so long and yet we haven’t seen anyone at all. We killed so many enemies and yet they hid away like turtles. How could such shameless scoundrels be compared with Senior-apprentice Brother White!?”

These people were all White Mirrorjade’s subordinates, so they naturally badmouthed Ye Rosewater and Lin Ming when they were mentioned. As for White Mirrorjade, he actually shook his head, keeping up an appearance as if he were disagreeing and saying, “Lin Ming and Junior-apprentice Sister Ye Rosewater both have their own outstanding strengths, it’s just that you don’t know of them. Since they didn’t come and support us, they surely must have fallen into some trouble. Let us restore our wounds first and then go search for them. After all, no matter what happened, we're still from the same sect.

White Mirrorjade casually said. A malicious and sinister light flashed in his eyes that no one was able to see.

"Lin Ming, Ye Rosewater, I didn't think that I would be able to eliminate both of you in a single move. This is what you both brought upon yourselves. One of you is someone that dares to covet the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree that will belong to me in the future, and the other is someone who believes that she can contend with me for the position of Island Master. Both of these actions are simply seeking death, so don't blame me for being ruthless. For me to allow you two to accompany each other to hell is already a kindness. In your next life, I hope that you smarten up a bit and know just who you can provoke and who you can't."

White Mirrorjade thought, a serene expression on his face. He didn't worry over such an impossibility that Lin Ming and Ye Rosewater would be able to escape. After all, they were two of the greatest geniuses from Carefree Island and they also had a massive amount of violet sun stone resources on them. How could the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain let off such a fat piece of meat?

Now, the only thing he was concerned about was why the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain had brought less masters than he expected. Could they have been lacking enough violet sun stones?

"Senior-apprentice Brother White is too kind. Why would we help look for someone like Ye Rosewater and those others? And especially that Lin Ming, he is just an outsider. I would rather he die in this Red Desolate Mystic Realm!" A disciple was just about to further curse Ye Rosewater and Lin Ming when his next words caught in his throat.

Everyone could feel fluctuations of energy coming from somewhere far away. As they looked up, they could see a group of black spots against the brilliant sky. It was clearly a group of people catching up to them with extraordinary speed.

"Someone's here!" White Mirrorjade suddenly stood up. At first, he was worried that it was more people from the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain, but as he looked more carefully he discovered it wasn't them. Rather, they were all wearing the clothing of Carefree Island disciples and the ones leading them were Ye Rosewater and Lin Ming!

"Ye Rosewater! Lin Ming!" White Mirrorjade's eyes widened like full moons. "How is this possible!?"

"What's wrong Senior-apprentice Brother White?" A nearby disciple anxiously asked. He didn't think that White Mirrorjade would have such an intense response.

"No... nothing... I'm just surprised that they aren't wounded." White Mirrorjade waved his hand. He rarely lost his composure like this, but he was truly shocked as he saw Ye Rosewater and Lin Ming in perfect condition. He could also feel a trace of unease coiling within his stomach.

How could they be alive and uninjured? White Mirrorjade didn't believe that the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain would let them go. The only possibility was that they had anticipated this ahead of time and had hidden away!

Of course, no matter how fantastical White Mirrorjade's imagination was, he would never have imagined that the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain's missing masters were related to Lin Ming. If they had really undergone a great battle, it would be impossible for them to remain calm. Even if Lin Ming was fiercer than he imagined, it was impossible for him to guarantee that some ninth stage Life Destruction and early Divine Sea realm disciples of Carefree Island wouldn't perish.

Hearing White Mirrorjade's explanation, the disciple behind him was suddenly enraged. "What is so surprising about them not being wounded? They don't even need to be asked... they definitely hid away in some secret spot and only decided to come out now. We have more people than they do and we've also been searching the desert for resources, so it was impossible for us to hide. They have far fewer people than we do, and if they were hidden away after collecting a few resources at the start, just how could anyone find them? This is far too shameless!"

"While we desperately fight and risk our lives, they are completely fine and happy! They are simply scum, nothing more than animals! When we return, all of them will be harshly dealt with by the sect's laws!"

These disciples all grit their teeth in hatred. At this time, Lin Ming and the others fell down from the sky.

"Oh? Who did you say will be dealt with by the sect?" Ye Rosewater mockingly smiled as she looked at the disciple who spoke.

It had to be said that Ye Rosewater was still the Elder Senior-apprentice Sister and she had a very high reputation and status. Even White Mirrorjade couldn't be rude to her and had to at least maintain a façade of respectfulness.

"I… I was…" The disciple suddenly withered underneath Ye Rosewater's gaze. But then, as he thought about it some more, he had White Mirrorjade supporting him so what was there to be scared of? White Mirrorjade was far fiercer than Ye Rosewater was! Moreover, Ye Rosewater had run away at a critical moment and she would definitely be severely punished by the sect for this in the future. Her reputation in the sect would be ruined from here on out, so just what could she do?

"I was speaking about you! You hid away and avoided the battle, only coming out when everything was over, you truly do not know what shame is! We have risked our lives and many of us have died miserable deaths, and we won this battle only by trading our lives in return! As for you lot, you still have the nerve to come back to bask in the victory. Your skin is truly invincible!"

The words this disciple spoke were extremely ugly. And beside him, White Mirrorjade also had a very gloomy expression. It was difficult to tell just what he was thinking. At this time, White Mirrorjade was trying to figure out just what had happened. Could Ye Rosewater and the others have really killed off the forces of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain that were sent to kill them, and had even remained completely intact after doing so? That was just too ridiculous!

“You shut your dog mouth!”

After being insulted, Lin Ming and Ye Rosewater didn’t respond. However, the disciples behind them began rapidly firing back.

Xiao Raingem had a derisive sneer on her face as she stepped forwards. “Haha! You think you have some ability just because you won the battle by trading your lives? You had more than 100 people, but now there’s only a fifth of you remaining. So many people died and yet you still think you can show off right now, how laughable is that!”

“What are you saying, you damned woman!” Those around White Mirrorjade began to seethe with rage, nearly launching an attack. But at this time, Xiao Raingem only flung her head and said, “Junior-apprentice Brother Song, take those things out so that these self-righteous fools can take a good look!”

Junior-apprentice Song smiled in a very happy and joking manner. He traced his saint artifact spatial ring, and with an overly embellished flourish, there was the sound of tinkling sounds as 60-70 tokens and spatial rings were tossed out.

Every disciple from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan had a corresponding token. After they killed these people, all of these tokens were collected by Lin Ming. However, these were useless to him so he passed them to Junior-apprentice Brother Song.

As for the spatial rings, Lin Ming only kept those from the late Divine Sea masters. There wasn’t anything valuable left in the others, so he passed those over to Xiao Raingem and the rest.

Each of the Occult Bone Clan’s spatial rings had a skull seal engraved upon it, and Splintersoul Mountain’s spatial rings had a black demon claw seal engraved upon them. They were extremely recognizable.

“This… this…”

The disciples behind White Mirrorjade suddenly widened their eyes. As for White Mirrorjade himself, his body shook and he clenched his fists. This… just what was going on!? He didn’t believe that Ye Rosewater would craft so many fake spatial rings, and those tokens were definitely real!

Several disciples rapidly ran over to the tokens and spatial rings and began to flip them over. Each of them listed the various names of Splintersoul Mountain and Occult Bone Clan disciples. As they saw the tokens of some extremely strong and ruthless individuals, all of them gulped. Then, as they lifted the tokens of the four late Divine Sea masters from the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain, there was a ringing sound as these disciples all dropped the tokens, their hands trembling all the while.

“Gongyang Bonesmash! Soul Thousandmile! Their tokens are also here! These… these aren’t fake!”

“What? How could Gongyang Bonesmash and Soul Thousandmile have been killed by you…”

These disciples’ pupils shrank. The expressions on their faces had already twisted into a macabre puzzle and they looked at Ye Rosewater and Xiao Raingem as if they had seen ghosts.

“I don’t believe this! You only have a dozen some people and none of you are injured! How could this be possible!?”

Xiao Raingem glanced at these disciples, not too happy in her heart. The other disciples had certainly been injured, but they had almost completely recovered so it wasn’t noticeable. However, Xiao Raingem wouldn’t mention something like that which would ruin their own prestige and momentum. “That’s why I said you were all stupid idiots! You had over 100 people and yet less than a fifth of you lived, and the ones still surviving look as if they are a bunch of crippled losers. If I were you, I would have already struck my head against a wall and killed myself!”

Chapter 1102 – Collect the Spoils of Battle

Chapter 1102 – Collect the Spoils of Battle

…

…

…

Ye Rosewater's group only had a dozen or so people and yet they had managed to slaughter the entire 60-70 strong force of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain while emerging completely unscathed.

As for the group led by White Mirrorjade, they originally had over 100 people, and White Mirrorjade also repeatedly used his trump card again and again, causing all the disciples to gape in awe at him. Yet, even in such a situation, while White Mirrorjade and the rest killed over a hundred people from the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain, they also lost four fifths of their original forces.

And what was even more bewildering was that White Mirrorjade's group hadn't killed any top masters at all. As for Ye Rosewater and the others, they had killed the four late Divine Sea martial artists from the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain!

This difference was simply too great.

How could anyone possibly be willing to believe this!?

"I don't believe this! You only have a dozen plus people, so how can you be so strong!? How come none of you have died?"

The disciples with White Mirrorjade were simply unable to accept such a massive disparity. This was tantamount to denying all of the hardships and bloody sacrifices they had made. So many of them had died, and yet they couldn't even compare to the tiny force led by Ye Rosewater.

"You idiot! How could we possibly lie about something like this? Paper cannot wrap fire; this sort of thing would be instantly exposed as a lie! Do you have the brains of a pig or something!?"

Xiao Raingem maliciously taunted. And beside her, Ye Rosewater was actually silent. Her eyes were always sweeping past White Mirrorjade. She knew that now was not the time for a showdown. Even if there was a 99% certainty that White Mirrorjade had betrayed them, there simply wasn't any evidence. If she tried to pin such a charge on White Mirrorjade, he would bite back instead.

Moreover, once White Mirrorjade managed to escape this situation, he would be on guard from then on. It would be impossibly difficult to catch his weakness after this.

As for this, Ye Rosewater simply didn't have any other action she could take. Although she hated White Mirrorjade to her bones, there was nothing she could do against him. Even if she killed White Mirrorjade, she would still suffer the punishment of the sect since she only had flimsy evidence to back up her claims. And according to the sect rules, a direct disciple killing a direct disciple without reason was a death penalty.

"Does this mean I must allow this villain to return to the sect alive?" Ye Rosewater grit her teeth, keeping up her calm appearance.

Xiao Raingem's insults caused all of the disciples around White Mirrorjade to stir up in a frothy anger. "What the fuck are you talking about! I don't believe that you have such an ability! Senior-apprentice Brother White is fierce and he risked his life alongside all us brothers and we finally managed to obtain a hard fought victory, and yet you casually killed all of them? Do you think I'm an idiot or something? If you have to prove it, then we can fight. If you win then I'll believe you!"

The disciple who spoke was at the middle Divine Sea realm. His injuries weren't too heavy so he didn't fear Xiao Raingem at all. The things that Xiao Raingem said were simply too ridiculous for anyone to believe.

"Shut up!"

White Mirrorjade suddenly shouted.

The disciple felt wronged as he was yelled at. "Senior-apprentice Brother White, I –"

"I told you to shut up!" White Mirrorjade coldly said. He walked over and began to lean down, looking over the tokens and spatial rings left behind by the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain disciples.

The Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain both had protections against forgeries. Although the tokens could be faked, one had to spend a massive amount of time and energy to do so. One didn't have to be a genius to see that it was impossible for Ye Rosewater to do something so wasteful and idiotic like that. There was no way she could bring a massive pile of fake tokens into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, especially since she couldn't determine just which disciples of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain would come.

After inspecting the tokens and spatial rings, White Mirrorjade discovered they were real. The spatial rings had a massive amount of sect cultivation methods, special weapons, unique pills, and other such things. This was all undeniable proof!

The sect status tokens and spatial rings were all extremely important objects to the disciples. If they had all fallen into the hands of Ye Rosewater and the others, there was only a single possibility why, and that was that they had all died!

Although Gongyang Bonesmash and Soul Thousandmile had been utterly exhausted when they retreated, a starving camel was still bigger than a horse. Even if they were severely wounded, they still had an extremely strong combat strength. They weren't people that Lin Ming and the others could easily deal with.

Could Ye Rosewater and the others have some sort of secret weapon that could display a miraculous strength at a critical moment? Or did those people from the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain encounter a tremendous stroke of bad luck, and Ye Rosewater took advantage of them during this time?

White Mirrorjade's thoughts raced. His eyes fell onto Lin Ming; could it have been him?

He immediately denied this thought. Even if Lin Ming was a bit stronger than he was, he didn't believe that he could kill so many people whilst ensuring that no other disciples died.

White Mirrorjade lifted his eyes and suddenly said, "It seems… that you took advantage of the fact that Gongyang Bonesmash and Soul Thousandmile were severely wounded by us, and then successfully ambushed them…"

"So what if it is." Xiao Raingem coldly said.

White Mirrorjade nonchalantly looked at Xiao Raingem and nodded, "Mm… well done. You have performed a great merit for the sect, and you will receive suitable rewards. Then… the spatial rings? Gongyang Bonesmash and Soul Thousandmile's spatial rings aren't here. There are also the other two late Divine Sea talents, Gudao Ming and Soul Wanshan. They are two late Divine Sea geniuses and yet their rings are not here. Could they be on one of you?"

The four spatial rings were naturally with Lin Ming. Gudao Ming and Soul Wanshan's spatial rings weren't much at all, but Gongyang Bonesmash and Soul Thousandmile had a massive amount of wealth in their spatial rings. It was an indispensable amount of money that Lin Ming needed to support his expenses in the future; he naturally couldn't hand them over.

"So what if they are?" Ye Rosewater coldly sneered, "What, do you want to take them?"

White Mirrorjade shook his head, "Junior-apprentice Sister Ye has misunderstood. It isn't that I want to take them, but that they are spoils of battle so they should belong to the sect. Everything that we obtain in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm must be delivered to Carefree

Island Headquarters, whereupon we will be rewarded according to our merits and contribution. Since I am the captain of this mission, I naturally need to take care of these matters. This is a completely reasonable way of handling things. Junior-apprentice Sister Ye should rest assured that when I process these things I will report the matter truthfully."

White Mirrorjade shrugged, calmly speaking as if everything he said should have been common knowledge.

White Mirrorjade was able to see that many of the spatial rings had fallen into Lin Ming's hand. He didn't know how Ye Rosewater and the others managed to kill so many people from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, but his intuition told him that Lin Ming had played an invaluable role in the battle. These treasures should have been held by Lin Ming at his behest. How could White Mirrorjade sit back and allow Lin Ming to carry off such a great part of the wealth?

In this sort of situation, White Mirrorjade would certainly give all of these treasures to the sect. Although they couldn't technically be considered his, he already thought of them as part of his treasures. In the future, he had the confidence that he would become the Island Master of Carefree Island. And beyond that, there were even many of the Highest Elders that supported him and they would allow him future use of these resources. For instance, if he needed to purchase rare pills or other treasures, the advantages gained from these would mostly belong to him.

"Hahahahaha!" As White Mirrorjade spoke, Lin Ming suddenly raucously laughed, uproariously and wildly.

White Mirrorjade frowned. Even though he had great self-control, his face still became gloomy after being ridiculed by Lin Ming in public. "What are you laughing at!"

"The things I obtain must be turned in to Carefree Island where we will be rewarded based on our merits? You think I should follow whatever your sect's rules are? What a joke! Am I someone from your sect? Why would I need you to reward me with anything?"

After being mocked by Lin Ming in front of everyone, White Mirrorjade's eyes flashed with a chilling light. "Lin Ming! You may not be from my Carefree Island, but do not forget that the only reason you entered the Red Desolate Mystic Realm is that of Carefree Island's violet sun stones. Moreover, since you joined this mission you are also under my jurisdiction. In this trip into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, I have repeatedly allowed you to do as you pleased. I hope that you understand what is right and what is wrong, and you do not try to test the limits of my patience! Otherwise, I will also use the rules of the sect to deal with you!"

"Oh? Deal with me?" Lin Ming's lips curved up in a smile. Ye Rosewater saw the situation deteriorating and hurriedly blocked Lin Ming. "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, don't be rash."

She impatiently said with a true essence sound transmission. "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, now is not the time to tear off all pretenses of face yet. White Mirrorjade has an extremely deep foundation in Carefree Island. It's impossible for us to drag him down with just some speculations. We have to plan this out and slowly gather evidence. If you kill White Mirrorjade here, then even if he dies we will still be punished by the sect after returning. According to sect rules, killing a direct disciple is a capital crime. Lin Ming, you are strong, but don't think you are stronger than Carefree Island's Highest Elders and Disciplinary Elder."

Ye Rosewater grabbed onto Lin Ming's sleeve. Lin Ming looked at her for some time. Then, as if he had suddenly realized something, he gently smiled and restrained his aura.

Ye Rosewater let out a long breath of relief. She was truly afraid that Lin Ming would do something impulsive and attack White Mirrorjade. If that happened then everything would spiral out of control.

White Mirrorjade smugly smiled as he saw this. He had already anticipated that Lin Ming would capitulate. He himself had Carefree Island supporting him while Lin Ming didn't have anyone at all, thus he naturally couldn't disobey him. It was only a pity that he couldn't kill Lin Ming right now. With everyone watching, he didn't dare to move against him just yet.

Moreover, Lin Ming's strength was filled with mysteries, making White Mirrorjade just a tad bit afraid.

White Mirrorjade sneered, an expression of victory crowing all over his face. He said in an educating tone, "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, sects naturally have sect rules. And, the reason that you were able to kill Gongyang Bonesmash and Soul Thousandmile is that I wounded them before. Did you think that everything was due to yourself?"

"Yah, that's right! Senior-apprentice Brother White has the most merits here! Without Senior-apprentice Brother White, how could you have possibly won against Gongyang Bonesmash and Soul Thousandmile?"

"No kidding. Gongyang Bonesmash's arm was cut off by Senior-apprentice Brother White. Senior-apprentice Brother White used up most of his strength, meaning that the Gongyang Bonesmash and Soul Thousandmile you faced weren't even at 20% of their peak condition! Moreover, Senior-apprentice Brother White also faced two against one. His strength is beyond what the likes of you could imagine. Hurry up and hand over those spatial rings!"

The disciples around White Mirrorjade suddenly found their own confidence. And in their opinion, they weren't wrong either. In killing Gongyang Bonesmash and Soul Thousandmile, White Mirrorjade had played the greatest role and he was also the strongest out of everyone present.

Chapter 1103 – Sudden Attack

Chapter 1103 – Sudden Attack

…

…

…

Under the commentary of White Mirrorjade and his subordinates, Ye Rosewater and the others all had affronted expressions on their faces. Lin Ming sneered. He took out Gongyang Bonesmash and Soul Thousandmile's spatial rings from his Extreme Violet Ring. Then, he took one back and said, "I can acknowledge that you played some part in everything. Since that's the case, fine, of the two spatial rings I will take one and the other I will give to you."

As Lin Ming spoke, the disciples around White Mirrorjade became enraged. "You simply don't know what's good for you. Senior-apprentice Brother White isn't haggling with you and yet you are trying to climb all over him! You want to take one? Even if the heavily wounded Soul Thousandmile and Gongyang Bonesmash were killed by you, you still relied on the team to kill them. What rights do you have to take one?"

"Senior-apprentice Brother White, this dastardly fellow simply doesn't know what death or danger is. You should just deal with him according to the sect rules. With Senior-apprentice Brother White's strength, doing so would be beyond easy! If one dares to defy orders in a mystic realm, that was originally a capital crime to begin with! The Council of Elders will not say anything about it."

Many disciples complained. As for White Mirrorjade, he gloomily looked at Lin Ming. He could indeed deal with Lin Ming by using the excuse that Lin Ming was disobeying a command, but now was not the time for infighting. For one, they hadn't completely escaped danger, and he also didn't know just what hidden strength Lin Ming had.

“Whatever. I’ll let you jump around for some hours and then after I leave the Red Desolate Mystic Realm I’ll have the support of a Highest Elder. I wonder just how you’ll jump then.”

White Mirrorjade thought like this as he reached out to take the spatial ring in Lin Ming’s hand. But, just as he was about to touch the spatial ring, a brilliant purple light suddenly flashed in Lin Ming’s eyes.

In that moment, Lin Ming became a human bomb. His aura suddenly erupted!

Eight Inner Hidden Gates, first six gates open!

Blood of the Ancient Phoenix, burn!

Heretical God Force, open!

Bang!

With an explosive sound, the several disciples around White Mirrorjade were sent soaring backwards by the terrifying shockwaves!

In just a split instant, Lin Ming had already thrust out the Phoenix Blood Spear he had prepared. The spear howled forth with 999 small blood spears flying outwards. An incomparably strong fire-attribute true essence flooded the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

This was a killing move right from the start, and this was also a surprise attack!

For someone like White Mirrorjade, Lin Ming’s first idea had been to kill him from the start. However, there were too many disciples around White Mirrorjade, and if he directly attacked then Ye Rosewater might not support him and might even try to stop him. Thus, he chose to kill him in a close range surprise attack. This was the quickest method to kill White Mirrorjade without giving him the smallest chance to run. This sort of person had inherited the legacy of an unknown powerhouse and likely had many life-saving methods, so this was the best method.

“You!” White Mirrorjade’s eyes widened. He never imagined Lin Ming would suddenly have the gall to do this. He wanted to kill him in front of everyone else? Was he insane!?

In such an important matter, even Ye Rosewater wouldn’t dare to conceal the truth.

In just a split-second, White Mirrorjade wasn’t able to think too much. He drew backwards, taking out his top-grade saint artifact sword from his spatial ring and meeting Lin Ming’s attack.

However, White Mirrorjade wasn’t stronger than Lin Ming to begin with and he had even consumed a great deal of his energy and was wounded all over. Moreover, he was unprepared for this. Facing Lin Ming’s surprise Blue Lotus Flame Dance, the results could be imagined!

Bang!

The sword light shattered and Lin Ming’s spear light continued onwards, unstoppable. White Mirrorjade stuffily coughed as his protective true essence shattered. He spat out a mouthful of blood and flew backwards.

White Mirrorjade’s clothes had been torn apart, revealing a top grade saint artifact vestment. However, this vestment had only been able to block 60-70% of the Phoenix Blood Spear’s strength. The remaining 30-40% roared into White Mirrorjade’s meridians and a blazing fire-attribute true essence mercilessly raced through him. White Mirrorjade’s entire body was in excruciating pain and his pupils contracted.

“Lin Ming, you are courting death!”

“The one to die will be you!”

Lin Ming coldly said. He opened the Gate of Wonder and activated the Mystic Lightning Shade. Immediately, his body turned into an afterimage as he shot straight towards White Mirrorjade, intending on dealing the killing blow!

Ye Rosewater, Xiao Raingem, and the others were all stunned. They never thought that Lin Ming would suddenly attack like this!

As for the disciples around White Mirrorjade, they were all left dumbfounded. Everything had happened so fast that they weren't able to clearly figure out just what happened.

In the previous moment, White Mirrorjade had been an invincible existence. But now, that invincible existence had been struck to the point of vomiting blood by Lin Ming, a mere eighth stage Life Destruction martial artist.

Although it was a surprise attack, to a top master with an extremely quick response time, a surprise attack didn't give too much of an advantage. This was because in order for Lin Ming to ensure his surprise attack was a success, he inevitably couldn't gather up his potential and use the strongest strike he could.

"Senior-apprentice Brother White!"

"Protect Senior-apprentice Brother White!"

Just as those disciples started to react, Lin Ming had already rushed towards White Mirrorjade for the second time. At this time, a tyrannical fire-attribute true essence was rampaging through White Mirrorjade's body. Lin Ming had managed to fuse three different level Concepts of Fire, and now the tenacity of his fire-attribute was extremely strengthened. Wasn't getting rid of it easier said than done?

"Lin Ming!" White Mirrorjade's eyes flashed with a dire light. "Do you want to perish with me!?"

"Don't be an idiot. Just you alone are unworthy!"

Lin Ming's spear came smashing down. His entire body emitted loud popping sounds; this was the strength of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates' first six gates!

Against this spear, White Mirrorjade forcefully withstood the fire-attribute true essence tearing through his body. He sent out several sword energies to ward off Lin Ming, but Lin Ming thought little of it. Lin Ming brought his spear down again and again, his speed reaching an inconceivable level, each spear stronger than the last!

White Mirrorjade's sword wasn't slow. It was just that every time he blocked Lin Ming's spear, it caused the blood to tumble in his body. There was just no time to fully suppress the fire-attribute true essence in his body.

"Damnit!"

White Mirrorjade was breathless with anger. Lin Ming seemed to have already calculated everything. He had caught the advantage with the first blow and had made it so that he couldn't recover! He had discovered that Lin Ming's spear strikes became increasingly strong, whereas he was finding it more and more difficult to resist!

"Fuck! Lin Ming, you are seeking death!"

At this time, White Mirrorjade's minions finally acted. Their condition wasn't much better and each one of them didn't even have 50% of their true essence remaining, and several of them were also wounded.

Lin Ming sneered. With a thought, a red lotus began to slowly bloom behind him.

Heavenly Demon force field – grandmist space!

Bang!

As all of the surrounding martial artists were covered in the grandmist space, they immediately felt their strength constantly being drained from their bodies.

At the same time, Lin Ming's gold battle spirit also howled forth, forming a world of will projection. His battle spirit formed substantialized spikes of willpower that shot towards White Mirrorjade's minions.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Blood shot through the air. Although Lin Ming didn't want to take their lives, he didn't show mercy in his attacks either. Every willpower thorn shattered their protective true essence and stabbed into their chest or stomach. Some people were even pierced through! However, to a martial artist, as long as their heart, throat, and brain weren't wounded then it wouldn't be fatal.

"Ahhh!"

These disciples emitted heart-rending cries of pain. It was only at this moment that they profoundly realized just how terrifying Lin Ming's strength was!

Lin Ming didn't bother with them any longer. As he released the grandmist space and world of will protection, he also viciously charged after White Mirrorjade. Not only did his onslaught of attacks not stop, but they even became stronger.

This was the advantage of a deep true essence base brought by the dragon marrow blood. It allowed him to continue releasing the extremely energy-consuming grandmist space as well as to display his full striking power. In other words, the true essence inherent within Lin Ming was like a vast and limitless void. At his boundary, it was difficult to ever use it up!

But as for White Mirrorjade, his situation became increasingly bad.

Peng peng peng peng peng!

At this time, Lin Ming had already struck out his spear 99 times; this was his 100th attack!

"Celestial Tyrant Manual's Hundred Layered Waves!"

Lin Ming's 99 spear strikes hadn't been arbitrary; he had been gathering strength with each attack. The goal was this last spear. Following the attack technique recorded within the 'Celestial Tyrant Manual', this strike completed the Hundred Layered Waves, increasing his striking power by several times!

As Lin Ming thrust out his spear, the compressed true essence within the Heretical God Sprout completely erupted. A terrifying true essence gushed out, overwhelming the world.

All of White Mirrorjade's minions were stopped by the battle spirit projection and the grandmist space. As for Ye Rosewater and those with her, they were all still watching in a daze. In this situation, they really had no idea what to do.

"Lin Ming! I'll kill you!"

White Mirrorjade's eyes turned blood red as his pupils shrank. In this life or death moment, he suddenly bit down on his tongue and spat out blood essence onto his sword. At the same time, he combusted the blood essence that the ancient supreme elder had left behind on this top grade saint artifact sword.

In a situation where he was in horrible shape, White Mirrorjade had paid the tremendous price of burning dual blood essences to instantly restore his strength to the peak state, and even some above that!

Facing this strike, Lin Ming didn't care at all. He directly rushed at White Mirrorjade's sword light, thrusting out with the Phoenix Blood Spear at the same time. This was a completely suicidal attack!

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, be careful!"

Ye Rosewater blurted out. At this time she had absolutely no idea what to do. These words were all subconsciously spoken.

As for White Mirrorjade's minions, all of them were panic-stricken. In the face of such a terrifying strike, all of them ignored their severe wounds and ran away. Because they had attacked Lin Ming just now, they were too close to the battlefield. At such a distance, they wouldn't be able to withstand the shockwaves.

"That's Lin Ming? Does he really have an eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation? How could he possibly send out such an attack?!"

“Too terrifying! He is a demon! A demon!”

All of these thoughts flashed through the minds of White Mirrorjade’s minions. However, before they could think further, the horrifying explosion swallowed them all, lighting up the endless horizons. The blood red land was sundered in half and the endless red sand surged outwards like giant tsunami waves.

Many of White Mirrorjade’s minions felt as if they had been struck by a massive iron ball. They were sent flying backwards, blood spurting out all over their bodies before being enveloped in the waves of red sand.

Ye Rosewater and the others were standing very far away. Even so, they were forced back again and again by the shockwaves and had no choice but to use their own attacks to block the terrifyingly powerful red sands.

After stabilizing herself with great difficulty and repelling the sand around her, Ye Rosewater looked forwards to see that on top of the battlefield, White Mirrorjade’s chest had been smashed in by Lin Ming’s spear. Nearly all of his ribs had been shattered and one of his arms was dangling uselessly, nearly crushed to a pulp. The Phoenix Blood Spear was deeply embedded into White Mirrorjade’s chest with blood spewing forth from the wound.

As for Lin Ming, his clothes were torn and his face was pale – he had clearly been struck by White Mirrorjade’s sword. It was just that with the Dragonscale Robe left by Dragon One, the supreme dragon bone essence within his body, and also the defensive ability granted by the Gate of View, he was able to completely withstand the attack. Thus, he emerged relatively unharmed while White Mirrorjade was completely ruined.

Chapter 1104 – What Do We Do?

Chapter 1104 – What Do We Do?

…

…

…

"This… this…"

All of the disciples present, including even Ye Rosewater, were staring with wide eyes. White Mirrorjade hadn't died, but the result was almost the same. Lin Ming's spear had crushed apart his organs!

Had Lin Ming gone insane?

As for White Mirrorjade's minions, all of them had frightened expressions on their faces as if they had seen a ghost.

"Senior-apprentice Brother White… Senior-apprentice Brother White… how could he…"

Throughout the entire fight, although Lin Ming had stabbed out 101 spear strikes, it had lasted less than ten breaths of time. In such a short period of time, White Mirrorjade had actually been wounded to near death!

Although White Mirrorjade's condition wasn't too good to begin with and he had also been surprise attacked by Lin Ming, after burning his own blood essence and the blood essence contained in the top grade saint artifact, his strength had still been no worse than it would be in his peak state. Even then, he had been defeated in a single move afterwards! How could that be possible?

"Senior-apprentice Brother White! Senior-apprentice Brother White!"

"Damnit, no matter what happened, this is a death sentence for Lin Ming!"

"What a heinous and unforgivable sinful man. Let's execute him now!"

As these minions saw their respected Elder Senior-apprentice Brother struck into such a state, all of them were angered. They rushed towards the battle first to examine White Mirrorjade's situation as well as to question Lin Ming.

However, just as they walked several steps, they touched upon the grandmist force field that still wrapped around Lin Ming. Their hearts thumped in their chests and a cold chill raced up their backs; they no longer dared to go forwards.

In that moment when they stepped into the range of the grandmist force field, it was the same feeling as stepping into an Asura hell. There was an oppressive feeling that suffocated them, making them desperately gasp for breath as all the strength from their bodies rapidly faded away. As for Lin Ming, who was standing in the focal center of that grandmist space, although he was only a few hundred feet away, this distance seemed to extend into infinity.

Lin Ming slowly turned around. He extracted the Phoenix Blood Spear from White Mirrorjade's body, pulling out a splash of blood as he did so.

Pi-ta! Pi-ta!

The drops of blood slowly dripping down from the edge of the Phoenix Blood Spear could be clearly heard by everyone.

All those minions that wanted to interrogate Lin Ming felt their courage flee their bodies. Their lips trembled and their bodies shook. As Lin Ming's demonic gaze fell upon them, a horrifying thought inexplicably appeared in their hearts.

Lin Ming, he… he shouldn't be trying to eliminate all witnesses, right?!

“No… don’t be afraid. He definitely won’t do that. If he kills us all and he is the only one who leaves, then there isn’t anything he can do to explain that.”

“That’s right! And once we scatter and run, there’s no way he can deal with us all!”

These disciples said that they weren’t afraid, but their faces and tone betrayed their true feelings. They all had ashen complexions and they constantly drew backwards. In truth, what they said wasn’t wrong. But, if Lin Ming had dared to openly kill White Mirrorjade like this, that clearly proved he was insane. Didn’t that mean he would do something else crazy and kill them next?

And there was also Lin Ming’s strength. Even those people that respected and worshipped White Mirrorjade wouldn’t imagine they would be able to defeat him, even if they surprise attacked him at a point when he was weak. Without a doubt, this was testament to just how strong Lin Ming was! Even if the two of them were in their peak states, Lin Ming would likely still be able to defeat White Mirrorjade.

In this situation, these disciples no longer cared that Lin Ming was only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction, nor did they hold out on the chance that they could join forces to defeat him. In fact, all of them were now thinking about immediately dispersing and fleeing as far as they could. With so many people, there would always be a few of them that managed to survive.

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you’ve gone mad!”

Ye Rosewater anxiously said, her slender white hands tightly clenched together, her fingers weaving into each other. Although she also wanted to eliminate White Mirrorjade, she hadn’t wanted the current situation to occur. She didn’t know why the Island Master of Carefree Island was doing everything in his power to protect Lin Ming, but that didn’t mean he would still tolerate him after Lin Ming killed White Mirrorjade in front of everyone. That would be the same as slapping his own face.

Before Lin Ming attacked, he hadn't even made a sound or given a hint. This clearly meant that he thought she would stop him, thus he decided to act now and deal with the consequences later! This was just far too rash!

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, he..." That Junior-apprentice Brother Song was also at a loss for words.

As for Xiao Raingem, who had been arguing with White Mirrorjade's subordinates, she was completely withered. She had only been trading banter and mocking words. If someone had told her to do as Lin Ming did and suddenly set someone up in such a deathtrap, she wouldn't be able to do so even with a hundred times the courage.

"We're finished. Senior-apprentice Sister Ye, what do we do?" Xiao Raingem's charming and lustful face now looked like a frostbitten eggplant.

"Lin Ming... you have guts... hahahaha... hahahaha!" Underneath the Phoenix Blood Spear, White Mirrorjade's entire body twitched. As he opened his mouth to speak, foamy blood gushed out from between his lips.

At this time he had lost over half the body in his blood. His chest had a gaping wound in it, exposing his insides. His right lung had been completely smashed into a pulp and there was not a single rib in his body that wasn't broken. The broken ribs had even shifted and pierced into his organs. His liver and spleen had burst open and blood was flowing from his chest cavity.

After being beaten into such a state, White Mirrorjade actually managed to maintain a fearless expression. He didn't beg for mercy nor did he fall into despair. "Lin Ming, if you have the guts then kill me! Hahaha! I want to see just what you'll do then! Do you think you can kill everyone here to eliminate all witnesses? The basis of that is if you can kill dozens of people as they are scattering in all directions! Or, perhaps you will convince Junior-apprentice Sister Ye to lead all these rebels and betray the sect?"

Even though White Mirrorjade's words lacked energy, he was still able to speak. By transferring true essence from his dantian, he was barely able to maintain his voice. In truth, his lungs were injured so badly that he couldn't speak anymore. In such a situation, he still summoned true essence from his dantian; this was clearly taxing on White Mirrorjade. It caused more and more blood to flow out from his body.

White Mirrorjade's words were intended to deliberately point out Ye Rosewater. He knew what sort of character Ye Rosewater had and knew that she absolutely wouldn't dare to shoulder the offense of betraying her sect. And even if she did dare to do so, the disciples under her wouldn't.

As for White Mirrorjade keeping up this confident appearance, although it seemed as if it were intended to anger Lin Ming, the truth was that it was intended to place a mental pressure on Lin Ming so that he would understand that he couldn't win and to calm him down.

Lin Ming sneered. He lifted the Phoenix Blood Spear. The spearpoint lifted up, slowly reaching towards White Mirrorjade's exposed and beating heart.

Just what sort of feeling was it to have a cold spearpoint touch one's heart? This sort of killing intent was simply indescribable!

As White Mirrorjade's heart beat, it was poked by the spearpoint, causing fresh blood to leak out. This was truly the feeling of taking a knife to the heart. Even if White Mirrorjade was maintaining his vibrant aura as much as possible, his complexion still paled and he trembled all over.

If Lin Ming gently pushed his hand forwards, or even if Lin Ming's grip on the Phoenix Blood Spear loosened, White Mirrorjade's heart would be pierced through!

"You!?" White Mirrorjade's eyes widened.

“You sure speak a lot of crap. You don’t seem to understand your present situation. You are now my prisoner. I just need to make a bit of effort to eliminate you!” As Lin Ming spoke, killing intent flowed out from his entire body. His eyes flashed with a purple light.

As White Mirrorjade met Lin Ming’s burning gaze, his heart nearly failed. A cold chill rushed through his entire body. He could feel that Lin Ming wasn’t joking at all – he could really kill him.

“You… you are insane!” White Mirrorjade shouted out, outwardly fierce even as he shook on the inside.

“Hehe, I’m insane? The insane one here is you! You colluded with Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, wanting to send me into a deathtrap, and you were even willing to sacrifice Ye Rosewater and her subordinates for this reason. You think I don’t know of all this?”

Lin Ming directly spoke out the main matter. But as White Mirrorjade heard Lin Ming’s reasoning, he didn’t seem panicked at all. Instead, he sneered and said, “Lin Ming, I have no idea what you are talking about!”

“This… argh!” Ye Rosewater sighed, not knowing what to say. She had wanted to quietly gather evidence, waiting until she had enough that she could topple White Mirrorjade from his lofty perch. But what use was that now? Without any evidence, there was nothing that could be done! One didn’t need to be a genius to know that White Mirrorjade would deny any such claims!

“Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you are too impatient. You…” Ye Rosewater whispered.

“Senior-apprentice Sister Ye, I know what your plan was, but did you really think that with your methods you could compete with White Mirrorjade’s cunning and find enough evidence to bring him down?” Lin Ming asked back with a true essence sound transmission.

Ye Rosewater was stunned, not immediately responding. Indeed, Lin Ming wasn’t wrong. In terms of machinations, she wasn’t White Mirrorjade’s match at all. Whether it was individual strength, mentality, background, or how ruthless and merciless one needed to be, she couldn’t compete with White Mirrorjade at all. And if it weren’t for Lin Ming saving her this time, she would have likely been abducted by the Occult Bone Clan to be used as a human furnace. Although she would live now, the chances of her finding enough evidence to bring down White Mirrorjade were next to zero. It was likely that she would be the one framed by White Mirrorjade instead, and she would ultimately die a tragic death after suffering endless abuse.

In fact, how could Ye Rosewater not be aware of this point? Even so, what could she do? If she tried to do as Lin Ming did and kill White Mirrorjade, that would only mean she would die faster.

“Lin Ming! How dare you slander the good names of others!”

“Lin Ming, you simply have the heart of a wolf, you depraved and cruel beast! When you were missing, Senior-apprentice Brother White always said that we had to look for you! Senior-apprentice Brother White has been the Elder Senior-apprentice Brother for so many years and he has also protected and cherished his fellow disciples, treating them with kindness and care! How could he possibly frame you! Moreover, in this mystic realm where we had to fight with the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain, framing you would only mean that our own strength would be weakened! Do you think that Senior-apprentice Brother White could be as cold and callous as you to plot against those from the same sect!?”

“Lin Ming, don’t you think these excuses you come up with are too ridiculous!? If you say that Senior-apprentice Brother White betrayed you, then where is the evidence? Bring out the evidence!”

White Mirrorjade didn’t even need to speak, his minions were suitably angry for him. At this time, they were so enraged that they even forgot how terrifying Lin Ming was.

In everyone’s heart, White Mirrorjade was a charming and cordial fellow who knew to repay kindness with kindness. He had the ways of a venerable Elder and he was also very wise and able to take center stage in all situations. In the eyes of the young disciples, White

Mirrorjade's fame and prestige far surpassed Ye Rosewater's. In other words, he was material naturally born to be the future Island Master. This was why White Mirrorjade had so many subordinates.

In this sort of situation, Lin Ming had said that White Mirrorjade had betrayed his sect. How could anyone else believe this?

Chapter 1105 – Aren't You The Best Evidence?

Chapter 1105 – Aren't You The Best Evidence?

…

…

…

White Mirrorjade sneered inwardly. He never imagined that Lin Ming would correctly guess that he was the one who had betrayed them. Nevertheless, his actions had been particularly discreet and he had never left behind any clues.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, I know that you wish to have sole possession of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain's resources, thus you tried to kill me. Greed is the inherent nature of all men, but don't you think the excuse you found is a bit too paltry? If you say that I was the one who betrayed you, do you have evidence?"

"Evidence?" Lin Ming's lips curved up in a taunting smile, "Aren't you the best evidence?"

As Lin Ming spoke, he suddenly moved once more, swinging out the Phoenix Blood Spear again and again. Cold light flashed in the air. In a brief moment, all of White Mirrorjade's ligaments and tendons in his arms and feet had been completely severed.

White Mirrorjade weakly coughed and his body shivered. Because of excessive blood loss, his blood pressure was too low. Even though his tendons and ligaments had been cut apart, he didn't bleed too much.

After seeing White Mirrorjade being butchered like a pig by Lin Ming, all of White Mirrorjade's subordinates began to tremble. Some of them were trembling from anger, but even more of them were trembling from fright.

Lin Ming put away the Phoenix Blood Spear and then struck his palm against White Mirrorjade!

Pulse Cutting Palm!

In that instant, Lin Ming’s strength broke into White Mirrorjade’s body, cutting off all of his meridians and shattering his dantian, destroying all of the martial arts White Mirrorjade had cultivated!

It had been a long time since Lin Ming had used this move. Although it wasn’t too useful in combat, it was extremely convenient in dealing with losers and making them unable to play any tricks.

Ye Rosewater could clearly see what happened in this strike. Her beautiful eyes widened like twin moons.

“Lin Ming, you have crippled White Mirrorjade!?”

Like this, there was no longer any possibility of mediation. Although Mirrorjade had been beaten into a pulp, as long as he had all sorts of good medicines and was able to peacefully recuperate for several months, he would be able to restore himself. At most it would leave behind some minor wounds and affect his future achievements a little. But now, Lin Ming had completely obliterated all of White Mirrorjade’s meridians and dantian; this was the same as thoroughly crippling White Mirrorjade. For a martial artist, once their cultivation was wasted, that was a fate worse than death.

“That’s right. This person has too many schemes up his sleeve. This is to prevent him from playing any tricks in the future.” Lin Ming shrugged. It was like he was holding a grasshopper and tearing off its wings to prevent it from flying away.

This tone actually caused all of White Mirrorjade’s minions to explode with rage.

“You bastard!”

“You madman! You are simply insane!”

If it weren’t for Lin Ming’s aura being too fierce, they would have already rushed towards Lin Ming.

In that moment, White Mirrorjade’s face was ashen like fading embers. He no longer maintained that lofty and arrogant attitude, like he would never be defeated. Now, his eyes were empty as he looked at the sky. It was like he had already died.

In the moment when White Mirrorjade realized his cultivation had been abandoned, he felt the entire world slip away from him, leaving nothing but the sound of his will and soul shattering all around. He couldn’t believe what was happening to him. His future, his ambitions, all of it had been turned to dust!

He fervently wished that this was a horrifying nightmare that he would soon awaken from.

“Lin Ming… you… will… die… with… me!”

Because White Mirrorjade’s true essence was rapidly passing away, his words also came intermittently.

Lin Ming chuckled. “I’m afraid you’ll be disappointed. You are destined to travel the lonely road to hell by yourself. I will make sure to seal up the true essence in your body so that you will live, and then offer you to the Council of Elders so that they can search your soul. I think that even though Carefree Island is considered a righteous orthodox sect, at least in the Disciplinary Hall, can there be no one who can use a soul searching technique? I also know that such a technique will cause irreversible damage to a person’s spiritual sea. Moreover, the greater the person’s strength, the more difficult it is to use this technique on them. If your future was still brilliant and you were at your peak, I wouldn’t have any evidence at all and no one would dare to use a soul searching technique on your body. I don’t even think a Highest Elder would agree to that.

"But now, you are simply a cripple with no strength left. Using the soul searching technique on you will be much, much simpler and there is also no chance for you to resist. Moreover, it's fine even if the soul searching technique turns you into an idiot. In order for the Elders to punish me and not allow me to take away the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, they will definitely not oppose this. Mm, this is also the reason I dealt with you like this. I decided to take action first and then explain later, otherwise my plan would never have worked."

As Lin Ming spoke, he shot out dozens of symbol runes to seal up White Mirrorjade's bodily functions. With a twist of his finger he also shot a pill into White Mirrorjade's mouth in order to maintain his life. Like this, White Mirrorjade couldn't move a finger and he also couldn't kill himself.

White Mirrorjade's words were filled with limitless hatred and animosity. "Lin Ming, I… will never… let you go… even… if I'm… a ghost!"

"Sorry, but I'm going to annihilate your soul so that you don't even have a chance of becoming a ghost." Lin Ming said. With that, he took off White Mirrorjade's spatial ring and then tossed him like a dead dog into the Extreme Violet Ring's minor dimension, imprisoning him.

After all of this was done, he turned to look at Ye Rosewater. Ye Rosewater was still pale like before. She didn't know what to say. She thought that White Mirrorjade was already ruthless enough, but she never imagined that Lin Ming was ruthless to yet another level. For better or worse, White Mirrorjade wouldn't attack in full view of the public; Lin Ming was completely unscrupulous in his actions.

Wasn't Lin Ming afraid that his guess would be wrong? Even those from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan weren't 100% sure. Although White Mirrorjade had the greatest motivations for doing what he did, there was no true evidence to indicate that he was the culprit. And, if it wasn't White Mirrorjade and instead was someone else, what would Lin Ming do?

Also, even if White Mirrorjade was the one to betray him, Lin Ming's violent and merciless methods would anger those Elders that supported White Mirrorjade. Perhaps they would still judge Lin Ming as guilty. Otherwise, in the future, if others decided to do the same and violently attack others who they suspected of crimes and then brought them up for a soul search, wouldn't that just bring the entire sect to chaos?

Of course, Ye Rosewater didn't know that Lin Ming had Mo Eversnow supporting him from behind. As long as Mo Eversnow was with him, Mo Riverbliss would never idly sit by and allow the Council of Elders to deal with him as they wished.

Drawing back 10,000 steps, even if he really had falsely accused White Mirrorjade, Lin Ming's life still wouldn't be in danger. However, it would be improbable that he would be able to take away the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. In order to break into Ninefall, he might need to go elsewhere to look for more heavenly materials.

"Miss Mo, I apologize that I must trouble you again. My extreme methods are the same as slapping the Council of Elders and those that support White Mirrorjade. I'm sure they will not let this go. At that time, I fear that I will need Senior Mo Riverbliss to shelter me."

Lin Ming said to Mo Eversnow in the Magic Cube. During this trip to Carefree Island, he had indeed created no small amount of trouble for Mo Riverbliss. Without mentioning the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, Mo Riverbliss had also consumed a great deal of her energy to refine the supreme dragon bone into 108 dragon bone relics. If she hadn't done that, then absorbing the 1000 foot long supreme dragon bone would have been an incomparably long project. He might not even have been able to finish absorbing it in the Divine Sea realm.

"Lin Ming, you have done well. You are the one that I chose to be the descendant of my Verdant Feather Holy Lands. I led you to Carefree Island to take the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree and not to be insulted or used as a scapegoat. My aunty may have tried testing you a bit, but she won't cause you trouble because of White Mirrorjade's death. In my Verdant Feather Holy Lands of 50,000 years ago, a person like White Mirrorjade would be a common character no different from an ant. If you wish to kill him then kill him. It doesn't matter at all."

As Lin Ming heard Mo Eversnow say such words, he felt a warm and cozy feeling in his heart. It wasn't wrong that he had helped Mo Eversnow, but he had received an even greater graciousness from her.

"Thank you Miss Mo."

"You do not need to thank me. I cannot give you too many resources and yet I will have you face Tian Mingzi. That in itself is a tremendous challenge. Tian Mingzi is a true extreme genius. This road is filled with thorns, and you naturally cannot show a single bit of mercy against any opponent that you run into. If you waver in your determination, then that will truly lead to chaos! in the past, when my grandfather found out about Tian Mingzi's ambitions, he didn't have any evidence that he was planning to harm the Verdant Feather Holy Lands and he also had the sentiment towards him of a master to his disciple. That is the reason that he finally ended up suffering a disastrous fate! A martial artist that cultivates the martial path must slaughter countless people on their road. On this road, there are those that have decided to step on the road to hell and there are even those who are innocent. Right or wrong, who can truly say they understand everything clearly?"

As Mo Eversnow spoke to here, she suddenly fell into a deep recollection. Lin Ming knew that she was recalling the tragic destruction of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands 50,000 years ago, as well as her missing younger sister. Smartly, he didn't say anything further.

After resolving White Mirrorjade, Lin Ming played with White Mirrorjade's spatial ring. This was a spatial ring that approached a transcendent saint artifact. Inside were 90% of the Revolving Core disciples that had come to the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, as well as a massive amount of wealth.

Lin Ming lifted the ring up and suddenly flicked it at Ye Rosewater. The ring drew an arc in the air before falling towards her.

"Take it!"

Lin Ming wasn't insatiably greedy. The wealth in this ring had been obtained at the cost of the lives of Carefree Island's disciples. He naturally didn't want it.

As for the harvest of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain, that was completely obtained by Lin Ming. He naturally wouldn't spit it back out.

Ye Rosewater grasped the spatial ring. She didn't know what to feel, but only whispered a single "Thank you."

Lin Ming self-mindedly sat on the ground and began to meditate. In truth, with the dragon marrow blood supporting him, he hadn't consumed much energy at all. This act of adjusting his condition was only closing his eyes and resting his mind.

Of the surrounding disciples, those with Ye Rosewater were much better off psychologically. Those that had followed White Mirrorjade subconsciously hid far off, even though they didn't leave the group around Lin Ming. With their current battered state, they were extremely vulnerable to any type of danger. If it wasn't for this, they wouldn't want to continue being here with Lin Ming; their hearts simply couldn't bear it.

At this time, it was only several hours away from the end of this trip into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. Of Carefree Island's disciples, including those led by Ye Rosewater, there were just around 40 people left remaining. Their casualties could be called serious.

Of course, even more of those from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan had died. All four of their late Divine Sea geniuses had been completely eliminated and they had less than 20 direct disciples remaining; everyone else had been annihilated. And, it would be impossible for them to make up for the massive amount of violet sun stones they used to transmit their disciples. All of those resources had been grasped in Lin Ming's hands.

Although Carefree Island had lost many direct disciples, their harvests were actually tremendous. In Ye Rosewater's two spatial rings, there were around 100 billion violet sun stones. If they returned these to the sect, this would absolutely be considered a great merit.

Chapter 1106 – Highest Elder

Chapter 1106 – Highest Elder

…

…

…

“Senior-apprentice Sister Ye, take a look, how much wealth is inside that ring?” Junior-apprentice Brother Song quietly whispered to Ye Rosewater as he looked at White Mirrorjade’s spatial ring.

Ye Rosewater turned towards that Junior-apprentice Brother Song and berated him, “Are you a heartless idiot? Now is not the time to be caring about things like wealth. Moreover, it doesn’t belong to you to begin with, so why do you care so much? Hurry up and record a jade slip report that covers everything that happened in this battle in detail. Make sure you highlight the several questionable points that happened to us in the sandstorm, and also make sure you emphasize Junior-apprentice Brother Lin’s role on the battlefield. Ah… just write it as truthfully as you can.”

Ye Rosewater sighed. “I hope that the merits recorded in the report can help Junior-apprentice Brother Lin. Otherwise, even if White Mirrorjade is found to be a traitor, those Elders that support him won’t give up…”

Junior-apprenticed Brother Song slowly nodded. Beside him, Xiao Raingem said, “Senior-apprentice Sister Ye shouldn’t worry too much. Although Junior-apprentice Brother Lin hasn’t accompanied us for too long, he’s always done things with full assurance and knowledge of his actions; this time shouldn’t be an exception either. Let’s take a quick inventory of the resources and write up a report for the Elders. Oh, and also, those Revolving Core disciples should be safe.”

“They’re okay.” Ye Rosewater shook her head. As long as they won the battle then the Revolving Core disciples would be alright. Otherwise, if they had lost then they would have all been annihilated.

Everyone waited for several hours. No more dangers appeared during this period. Soon, their time within the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was coming to an end…

……..

Meanwhile, deep in Carefree Palace, in a barren land, there was a rock mountain thousands of feet high. This rock mountain was constructed from some sort of unknown stone and it didn’t seem too special at first glance. However, it had a boundless and vast atmosphere to it, as if it had experienced the passing of countless years.

Above this space, a vast galaxy swirled around it. Rivers of stars flowed like threads of silk, continuing past the ends of heaven, glorious and magnificent!

This random deep space opened within Carefree Palace was even larger than a Divine Kingdom of the Sky Spill Continent.

At this time, scattered on top of this mountain, there was a group of powerhouses sitting around. These were Elders of Carefree Palace and there were even Highest Elders amongst them. This was a meeting of Carefree Palace’s Elders.

“Considering the time, this trip into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm should come to an end soon.” The one who spoke was a delicate and handsome youth; he was the Island Master of Carefree Island, Xiao Skywhite.

“That’s right… our Carefree Island invested an immense amount of resources into this trip to the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. Several thousand Revolving Core disciples, over 100 direct disciples, and also more than 20 billion violet sun stones. It isn’t an exaggeration to say that this is a war that concerns our sect’s destiny. If we can achieve total victory in this war then our Carefree Island will be able to take another step further towards becoming a Holy Land. But if we are defeated, then I fear we will fall into decline for some time. It will take time to recover from the loss of the Revolving Core disciples, direct disciples, and massive resources that we invested. We will slowly diminish until we reach a similar level to Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, therefore we absolutely cannot lose this battle!”

At one of the highest peaks of this rock mountain, an old man was speaking with a worried expression. His name was White Brook, and he was the second Highest Elder of Carefree Island. In a true comparison of strength, Carefree Island was naturally inferior to the combined forces of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan, so how could he not be worried?

“Haha, Honorable Master has truly considered this carefully.” On a slightly lower peak, a red-robed middle-aged man with long, hanging ears smoothly smiled. This person was the Great Elder of Carefree Island, Xiao Haogan. When there was a discussion about handing the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to Lin Ming, he had taken a completely different stance from Island Master Xiao Skywhite. They had engaged in a fierce dispute, and Island Master Xiao Skywhite had finally left in an angry huff.

However, Xiao Haogan simply didn’t fear Xiao Skywhite at all. He had the support of a Highest Elder. The second Highest Elder White Brook was Xiao Haogan’s master.

The Great Elder traced his beard and said with confidence, “For this mission I passed command over to White Mirrorjade. Even if we can’t obtain a total victory, our disciples should still be able to return safely and at least have caused Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan to suffer some losses. Honorable Master should remember that Mirrorjade has a calm temperament, the wisdom of a mighty general, and he is also superbly strong. He won’t commit to something that he doesn’t have full grasp of. Mirrorjade also has a great destiny upon his body. He has obtained the inheritance of a peerless powerhouse and has many secret abilities hidden away. In these past years, he has shown absolute superiority to all powerhouses of his age. With his life of a peerless emperor, even if he were to be besieged by three or four late Divine Sea masters, he would still be able to safely escape!”

“Mm, Mirrorjade is indeed outstanding. With the destiny he has, it won’t be easy for him to perish. The only reason that I agreed to this sort of bitter war with no retreat is that he would be the one to lead the mission. This is a gamble with over 20 billion violet sunstones on the line. If we lose, the very foundation of our sect will be influenced to some extent.” White Brook said and the other Elders nodded in agreement. White Mirrorjade had indeed obtained the inheritance of a Holy Lord level powerhouse.

This was a matter that White Brook was well aware of. A peerless talent needed the support of many lucky chances, and the lucky chance that White Mirrorjade had stumbled upon were much greater than those of a normal genius! This was why Xiao Haogan said that White Mirrorjade had the life of a peerless emperor.

In truth, concerning White Mirrorjade’s ability, even Island Master Xiao Skywhite had to praise him. Although White Mirrorjade was on the side of one of the Highest Elders, and one that he didn’t agree with too much, he had to acknowledge that White Mirrorjade was a much better choice for leading than Ye Rosewater. That was why he didn’t oppose the Great Elder passing over command to White Mirrorjade during this trip into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. He simply followed Mo Riverbliss’ wishes and placed Lin Ming in the group.

At this point, White Brook seemed to remember something. He said to Xiao Skywhite, “Island Master Skywhite, when I was deep in seclusion within a separate time and space in Carefree Palace, I remained unknowing to what was happening outside. But I heard recently that a junior arrived at my Carefree Island called Lin Ming, and he also claims to be a descendant of that mysterious person from 50,000 years ago. And you, because of this matter, had even decided to give the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to Lin Ming?”

White Brook’s voice was neither slow nor fast, and had a harmonic cadence to it. He sounded like an old countryside grandpa, someone unable to harm a human or fly.

But Xiao Skywhite would never believe this. When White Brook competed with Xiao Skywhite’s father for the position of Island Master in the past, he had been defeated at the last step. This was the only reason he had become a Highest Elder. Ever since, White Brook had also been suppressed by his father for such a long period of time. It was now no longer possible for White Brook to succeed the position of Island Master, but this did not mean that his thirst for power had ever abated.

Wherever there were people, there would also be struggles for authority. Carefree Island was no exception. This was because authority could be translated into tangible benefits. With power and authority in one's hands, one could find more resources and greater benefits.

Thus, whether it was because of struggles of authority, or the problems left behind by Xiao Skywhite's father leaving, this Highest Elder White Brook had never had amicable relations with Xiao Skywhite.

Chapter 1107 – Heroic Sacrifice

Chapter 1107 – Heroic Sacrifice

…

…

…

In most sects, it wasn't clear just who had a greater standing between the Highest Elders and the Sect Master. This would have to depend on one's prestige and strength. In Carefree Island, White Brook's prestige was much greater than Xiao Skywhite's. After all, there was the tremendous difference in their age.

In truth, one could also see this from how high each peak was that everyone was sitting at. The Highest Elders occupied the highest mountain peaks, and Xiao Skywhite's mountain peak was several degrees lower. As for the Great Elder and the inner court Elders, they sat at even lower spots.

"It is returned; not a gift." Xiao Skywhite corrected White Brook's words.

"Whether it is returning or giving, none of that matters." White Brook casually said. He completely ignored the fact that the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree didn't belong to Carefree Island to begin with.

"All that's important is who the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree will belong to in the end. Mirrorjade has a 60-70% chance of returning triumphantly. Even if most of the forces cannot return, as long as he returns safely, he will bring a profit of 70-80 billion or even 100 billion violet sun stones to the sect! He might even cause tremendous losses to the forces of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain! Of course, there is also a chance that the direct disciples of my Carefree Island will suffer great losses, but that is unimportant. After the tides wash away the sands, that is when the true gems will emerge. Those that live through this life or death battle will definitely soar into the heavens and become dragons in the future!

“With the support of a massive amount of resources coupled with victory in this war, this is the best opportunity for my Carefree Island to rise! And at this time, you actually want to bow and hand over the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree that has stabilized the destiny of my sect for such a long time? Have you gone daft? Without the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, Carefree Island will be an Azure Dragon with a broken horn. How can we possibly become a true Holy Land!?”

White Brook coldly humphed as he spoke to here.

Xiao Skywhite frowned, not saying anything. At this time, Xiao Haogan’s true essence sound transmission sounded out in White Brook’s ears. “Honorable Master does not need to worry about this. Lin Ming is currently participating in the mission into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm; it’s unknown whether or not he’ll suffer an accident or encounter some sort of misfortune. If Lin Ming heroically sacrifices himself for Carefree Island, we can only pay tribute to him and give him a suitable funeral.”

Xiao Haogan sinisterly smiled as he spoke. He could see that White Mirrorjade had the intention of killing Lin Ming, and this trip into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was the best chance to do so.

“Oh? You’ve made arrangements?” White Brook could understand the meaning behind Xiao Haogan’s words. Towards his disciple, White Brook didn’t need to have any scruples. Moreover, with his status as a Highest Elder, he also didn’t need to care about a junior.

“Although I didn’t arrange anything, Mirrorjade is an extremely intelligent boy. He doesn’t need me to point out what he needs to do this time. For this boy to dare enter the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, that is simply asking to die. Killing him in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm shouldn’t be too difficult. Once that boy is slain, we will be able to keep the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree!”

“Mm, you’ve done well in this. With Mirrorjade’s strength and methods, killing Lin Ming should be easy. Moreover, as the commander of this mission he might not even need to do anything himself…” White Brook slightly nodded. At this time, the world around them suddenly trembled and a portal appeared in the air. With a flash of white light, a thin old man appeared from a transmission array. This was Carefree Island’s Elder who was specifically tasked with passing information, Bairong. Everything that happened within the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was first reported to him.

The transmission array entrance into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm wasn’t too far away from Carefree Palace. After he obtained the information he immediately headed over to Carefree Palace.

The many Elders present suddenly stood up as they saw this old man. “Elder Bairong, have the disciples already been transmitted through?”

Although the Elders present were confident in White Mirrorjade, this war was far too important for them all. They couldn’t help but be worried that there would be some accident that occurred.

“Bairong, how many people survived? What is the situation like?”

Bairong said, “Reporting to the Highest Elder, they’ve managed to return in triumph. However… of the over 100 direct disciples that went, less than 40 returned…”

“Less than 40 people…” White Brook sighed. “They were all outstanding disciples raised by my Carefree Island. They originally had a bright and glorious future awaiting them, but now their bones are buried in the endless blood sands. What a pity, what a pity! However… this is already an extremely good result. It seems that this war was able to be smoothly concluded. Quickly order White Mirrorjade and Ye Rosewater to bring all the disciples who entered the Red Desolate Mystic Realm to Carefree Palace! These are heroes of Carefree Island and they must be generously rewarded!”

“This…” Bairong had a dim and somber expression on his face as he spoke.

“Mm? What’s wrong?” White Brook’s eyebrows shot up. And beside him, Xiao Skywhite also stood up straight, his eyes widened. He had an extremely unlucky premonition in his heart. “Have the peak disciples had an accident?”

“Yes…” Bairong nodded.

As Bairong spoke, not only did Great Elder Xiao Haogan not worry, but he instead confidently stroked his beard. He was well aware of just how strong White Mirrorjade was. Even the combined late Divine Sea geniuses of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan wouldn’t be able to stop him. Thus, he didn’t worry that White Mirrorjade would suffer an accident. That meant that if there was a peak disciple who died in combat, it could be imagined just who it was.

Xiao Haogan smugly glanced over at White Brook and said with a true essence sound transmission, “Honorable Master, how about it? I said that Mirrorjade would be able to deal with that boy secretly.”

“Mm, well done.” White Brook knowingly smiled as he sent a true essence sound transmission. “It indeed isn’t difficult for Mirrorjade to accomplish this. Your arrangements have done quite well this time. I will record this merit and later –”

However, before White Brook could finish speaking, Bairong’s next sentence caused him to swallow the rest of his words.

Bairong said, “Reporting to Island Master, after this trip into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, direct disciple White Mirrorjade has not emerged. He should… have heroically sacrificed himself.”

“What! What did you say!?” White Brook nearly bit down on his own tongue. He suddenly stood up, his eyes blazing at Bairong, “Say that again!”

Besides White Brook, Great Elder Xiao Haogan was also dumbfounded. White Mirrorjade should have been able to escape even if he was besieged by three or four late Divine Sea masters from the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain; he should even have been able to retreat against their complete forces. Out of all the junior powerhouses that Carefree Island sent in, White Mirrorjade was the strongest and also had the greatest chances of successfully fleeing. Yet, he had actually died in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm!

If nearly all of the disciples of Carefree Island were annihilated with less than 10 remaining, then Xiao Haogan would have thought that there was some tremendous accident in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. If White Mirrorjade had been a casualty then, Xiao Haogan would have been barely able to accept that fact. But now, with around 40 people surviving, White Mirrorjade had still died. This was simply unbelievable!

If it was anyone's turn to die, it still wouldn't be his turn. Could he have been plotted against by someone, or was there something else going on?

All of the other Elders were also immediately shocked before they all began to talk simultaneously. Even Island Master Xiao Skywhite didn't react for some time. White Mirrorjade had nearly been unanimously chosen as the candidate to be the next Island Master. Whether it was in terms of individual strength, talent, mentality, or even the lucky chances he experienced, he far surpassed his peers. The only other possibility of him not becoming an Island Master was if another genius appeared in the next several thousand years who surpassed White Mirrorjade. However, the chances of that happening weren't too great.

"Of the peak disciples, only White Mirrorjade died? What about Ye Rosewater? Lin Ming?" Xiao Skywhite anxiously asked. If White Mirrorjade died, then Ye Rosewater was the next greatest junior of the direct disciples; her importance could be imagined. As for Lin Ming, he was the successor that Mo Riverbliss had personally chosen for the Verdant Feather Holy Lands; he was even more important.

The losses would be serious if either of these two people died.

"They… are safe!" As Bairong spoke to here, he showed a happy expression. But as Great Elder Xiao Haogan saw this, he nearly dry heaved with madness.

"How is this possible!? How could Lin Ming possibly be safe!?"

He looked at White Brook and White Brook also looked at him. As the two stared at each other, Xiao Haogan could clearly see the anger burning in White Brook's eyes, making his heart skip a beat.

"Tell me what's going on here! Didn't you say that you had arranged everything? Why would Mirrorjade die but Lin Ming still be alive!?"

"I… I don't know." Xiao Haogan couldn't even cry at this time. The results were completely different from his expectations!

White Mirrorjade was from the same lineage as Highest Elder White Brook; both of them were from Carefree Island's White Family. The two were distantly related as nephew and uncle separated by many generations. Although the two weren't close, White Mirrorjade still offered the highest chance of someone from the White Family succeeding the position of Island Master. With so many benefits mixed up between White Brook and the White Family, White Mirrorjade's status was extremely important.

"Hurry up and summon Ye Rosewater to Carefree Palace! I must know just how Mirrorjade died!" White Brook's voice was gloomy, a volcano that could erupt at any moment. The genius that his family had raised with such care and effort had actually perished in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. His mood could be imagined.

"Reporting to Highest Elder, Ye Rosewater is already hurrying here." Bairong said, not daring to meet White Brook's heated gaze.

The Red Desolate Mystic Realm's transmission array was at the seabed close to Carefree Island. After making some slight adjustments, Ye Rosewater, Lin Ming, and the others soon caught up. Soon, the transmission array into the closed space and time within Carefree Palace began to light up.

The first to appear were Lin Ming and Ye Rosewater, followed by several of Ye Rosewater's most trusted subordinates. Under Ye Rosewater's arrangements, those disciples that bore a grudge against Lin Ming hadn't come.

The eyes of all the Elders fell onto Ye Rosewater.

"Ye Rosewater!" White Brook immediately flew down from the mountain peak he was on, floating just 30 feet away from Ye Rosewater.

"Disciple reporting."

"Tell me, just how did White Mirrorjade die and who killed him?" White Brook said, his eyes fierce and swift. He subtly emitted his aura, causing Ye Rosewater to feel an enormous pressure.

Lin Ming stood silently near Ye Rosewater. The truth was that the pressure he was withstanding was even greater than Ye Rosewater. White Brook's aura was aimed at him, and not only was there White Brook, but Great Elder Xiao Haogan was also aiming his eyes on Lin Ming, his vision sharp like sabers.

"Reporting to Highest Elder, about this battle, it is an extremely long story. This disciple has already written a combat report jade slip. I ask Highest Elder to please look over it."

As Ye Rosewater spoke, she shot out a jade slip towards each Elder. These were all written by Xiao Raingem.

Ye Rosewater understood that at this time, White Brook only wanted to know who killed White Mirrorjade. If she directly said that it was Lin Ming, then perhaps he might not listen to any sort of reasoning or explanation. If that happened, the result could be imagined. Thus, sending out these jade slips was the wisest choice.

Even so, as Ye Rosewater saw White Brook have such a great reaction, she also felt nervous for Lin Ming.

Chapter 1108 – Confrontation

Chapter 1108 – Confrontation

…

…

…

With a dozen plus jade slips passed out, Island Master Xiao Skywhite naturally had one in his hands. The combat report didn't begin with White Mirrorjade's death. Instead, it mentioned the successes of their mission.

As Xiao Skywhite read the list of successes, he was stunned. He looked up and saw that the other Elders were also completely shocked. Before this, they only knew that the disciples of Carefree Island had fought a hard battle and finally returned in triumph, bringing with them a massive amount of resources. But as to what the result of the battle had been and how many disciples of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain they had slain, they actually weren't sure. They assumed that both sides had suffered tremendous losses.

But now, as they read this combat report jade slip, all of them could hardly believe it.

"You say that nearly all of the disciples of the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain were annihilated? Even the four late Divine Sea geniuses, including Gudao Ming, Soul Wanshan, Gongyang Bonesmash, and Soul Thousandmile!?"

"Yes!" Xiao Raingem clearly said, a happy smile showing on her face.

"We managed to wipe out over 200 of our enemies. And moreover…" Ye Rosewater began to add in from the side, pointing at Lin Ming in the process, "The four late Divine Sea geniuses, Gudao Ming, Soul Wanshan, Gongyang Bonesmash, and Soul Thousandmile, all died at the hands of Junior-apprentice Brother Lin!"

“Are you joking with me?” Great Elder Xiao Haogan’s eyes widened and he nearly crushed the jade slip in his hands. In truth, he knew that since Ye Rosewater dared to say such words, they were likely true. Even if Lin Ming had some sort of special trick that he used to kill Gudao Ming, Soul Wanshan, Gongyang Bonesmash, and Soul Thousandmile, that was more than enough evidence to prove that he was a terrifying character. In that case, if White Mirrorjade wanted to kill Lin Ming, the chances were that he would be killed instead!

“There are no jokes in the army. Honorable Great Elder does not need to doubt me. This disciple will certainly not joke about such an important matter. If honorable Great Elder does not believe this disciple then the other disciples can verify my statements.”

Ye Rosewater looked at Xiao Haogan with confidence. Xiao Haogan grit his teeth and sat back down, continuing to read through that combat report jade slip. He wanted to see just what methods Lin Ming used to kill these late Divine Sea martial artists.

However, as he continued reading, Xiao Haogan’s eyes widened yet again. He thought that Lin Ming must have used some tricks, but the truth was that he had directly killed them in frontal combat!

Even if it was said that he had taken advantage of Gongyang Bonesmash and Soul Thousandmile, slaying them while they were in a tragically wounded condition, he had still faced Soul Wanshan and Gudao Ming in frontal battle. With him and Ye Rosewater combining their attacks, they had completely slaughtered those two!

“This…” Xiao Haogan looked over to Lin Ming, “You…”

He was at a loss for words. Lin Ming was only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction!

At this time, White Brook’s eyes also flashed with a grim light. Although this was hard to believe, this sort of matter was impossible to fake because it was simply too easy to expose.

As White Brook thought of this, he continued to look through the combat report jade slip that Xiao Raingem had recorded. In the violet sun stone mine, Xiao Raingem, Ye Rosewater, and the rest of their group had been ambushed by others in a sandstorm. They suspected that there was someone in their ranks who had betrayed them. Finally, they captured Gudao Ming alive and tortured the words out from him. According to Gudao Ming, the one who betrayed them was White Mirrorjade!

Gudao Ming hadn't been able to confirm with absolute conviction that White Mirrorjade had been the one to betray Ye Rosewater. But, Xiao Raingem purposefully ignored this point and skimmed past it. Thus, the feeling one had was that Gudao Ming had complete belief that White Mirrorjade was the traitor.

Such a method of writing was to help reduce the crimes of Lin Ming taking action first and dealing with the fallout later.

"What a bunch of crap!"

White Brook's aura suddenly erupted. He clenched his fists together, and with a slight cracking sound, the combat report jade slip in his hand was crushed into fine powder!

"Gudao Ming was simply a demonic wolf with dark ambitions. He knew that Mirrorjade's talent was the highest and that Mirrorjade also had the greatest chance of becoming the future successor to the Island Master position of my Carefree Island. Because he knew that this would harm his Occult Bone Clan, at the point of his death he decided to lash out one final time and frame Mirrorjade. I have looked after Mirrorjade since he was a child, so how could he possibly do such a thing!?"

White Brook's voice echoed out into the world, each syllable ringing like titanic bronze bells. Xiao Raingem shook and she paled. She was only average amongst the direct disciples, so when had she ever faced the anger of a Highest Elder? White Brook was also someone who nearly reached the Holy Lord realm. If Carefree Island was a Holy Land, he would have been granted the title of Holy Lord, although he would have ranked at the lowest and weakest among them.

Ye Rosewater firmly wrapped her hands around Xiao Raingem's and said, "Highest Elder, we are only reporting things as they happened. That is truly what Gudao Ming said."

“Humph, what ridiculous nonsense. Don’t record such a thing into a jade slip that you can tell is a lie just from hearing it!” White Brook flung out his hand and the jade slip powder shot out, smashing into the dense rock of the mountain and causing countless stones to fall. This movement also caused Xiao Raingem to tremble. She couldn’t help but think of what would have happened to her if that crushed jade slip powder had struck her instead…

“A lie just from hearing it? Why would Elder White say that?” Lin Ming calmly asked from beside Xiao Raingem, completely ignorant to White Brook’s aura.

This rhetorical question caused White Brook’s complexion to turn even gloomier. This was simply publicly doubting him!

Moreover, White Mirrorjade was a descendant of his White Family. If he really did collude with the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain, causing the deaths of so many geniuses of Carefree Island in these past years, that sort of charge was simply too dangerous! His White Family would not be able to withstand it!

How could White Brook possibly acknowledge this?

Lin Ming’s question wasn’t just questioning him, but also questioning White Mirrorjade and their entire White Family!

The White Family and the Xiao Family were the two most respected families of Carefree Island. Although the two were inextricably linked in countless ways, they also competed with each other. If the White Family truly had such a scandal, it would cause their reputation to come under an enormous impact!

“Just what are you? You dare to question me!?” As White Brook spoke, his vision nearly condensed into essence, turning into two sharp swords that thrust towards Lin Ming!

“Elder White, you – !” Xiao Skywhite didn’t think that White Brook would do something so suddenly. He was positioned behind White Brook, so he didn’t even have time to stop him!

As for the several Elders beside Lin Ming, all of them feared angering White Brook, thus they didn't move to help. Moreover, White Brook didn't use a truly substantive attack. This would only cause Lin Ming to suffer a bit. At most it would slightly injure his soul, but his life would be safe.

Xiu!

Lin Ming only felt as if two extremely two cold knives were pressed against his forehead. With just a slight move, these knives would penetrate through his mind.

This damned geezer!

Lin Ming fiercely grit his teeth. His mind sank into his spiritual sea. In the skies above his spiritual sea, the elementary gold grandmist battle spirit howled forth. At the same time, a substantialized battle spirit projection covered a 100 foot scope around Lin Ming, wrapping him with layers upon layers of armor.

Peng!

The world of will shattered, but White Brook's sharp vision knives also melted away. In truth, it was impossible for a martial artist's vision to become a true blade. White Brook's vision was only dangerous because he had perfused it with his will. And in a battle of wills, Lin Ming wouldn't even fear a Divine Lord level powerhouse.

"Mm? Gold battle spirit?"

All of the Elders present were highly knowledgeable and experienced masters; they easily recognized the world of will projection formed by a gold battle spirit.

White Brook's vision swords were also a substantialized projection of his will, only that it was condensed into the shape of swords. As for Lin Ming, his will projection formed layers of shields around him, resisting the attack of these two vision swords!

Only a gold battle spirit could form a will projection and manifest into a will sword, will shield, will spear, and other such shapes to be used to attack and defend. They could even be formed into will tentacles, will nets, will threads, and other such shapes to affect the movement of an opponent, causing them to slip up in their attacks.

This was something that a bronze or silver battle spirit could not achieve. A bronze or silver battle spirit could only be poured into weapons, arrows, leaves, rocks or air, causing them to be filled with lethal killing power.

What Lin Ming displayed now was undoubtedly a gold battle spirit.

"Elementary gold battle spirit and it also has some strange attribute to it; this attribute is of an extremely high quality."

"Lin Ming is only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction. I have no idea just how he managed to accomplish this."

A gold battle spirit was rare, and a gold battle spirit with a special attribute was even rarer. Lin Ming's battle spirit originally only contained the attribute of endlessness – it wasn't particularly sharp. But, after being tempered in the grandmist space and soaked and stained with true grandmist energy, this caused his battle spirit to become incomparably dense. A single faint wisp of grandmist energy was heavier than a star. If this was used to concentrate one's will, the effects could be imagined!

"Mm?" White Brook never thought that the will attack he wanted to use to cause Lin Ming a bit of suffering would actually be directly withstood by him. He didn't use his complete force just now because he only wanted to punish Lin Ming for his rudeness. But now, his attack had failed. And with his cultivation, he certainly couldn't raise his strength to attack Lin Ming again, or that would truly be shaming his status. "You've got guts!"

White Brook coldly said. Towards a junior like Lin Ming who was destined to be his enemy, the greater his talent was, the sooner he wished to finish him.

Lin Ming took several deep breaths and restored his faintly restless blood back to normal. He chuckled and said, “Elder White, you certainly don’t have to delve into what I am.”

These words were obviously filled with thorns. Ye Rosewater’s heart skipped a beat; she was beyond speechless.

Now that White Brook had crushed the jade slip, he wasn’t able to find out that Lin Ming was the one who attacked White Mirrorjade.

Ye Rosewater prayed, ‘Big brother, please don’t stimulate this old man any more!’

Xiao Raingem was winking at Lin Ming again and again, trying to catch his attention. But, Lin Ming didn’t seem to notice any of this at all. He said of his own volition, “Elder White, the sandstorm covered the skies and yet we were somehow ambushed in the mine. Do you think that this is a natural matter? If you insist that we do not have any evidence and that all we are saying is utter nonsense, is that because you have a guilty conscience and you fear that once these charges are verified, it will cause damage to the reputation of your White Family?”

“Impudent!” White Brook suddenly stepped forwards. The red mountain peak underneath him shook, nearly cracking in half. Lin Ming’s words had immediately aroused killing intent in White Brook’s heart.

But this time, Xiao Skywhite was already prepared. His body flashed and he appeared between Lin Ming and White Brook. “Elder White, please calm your anger. Lin Ming, be careful of your words!” Xiao Skywhite sternly said.

Chapter 1109 – Crazy White Brook

Chapter 1109 – Crazy White Brook

…

…

…

"My apologies, Island Master." Lin Ming sincerely said. He clearly knew that Xiao Skywhite reprimanded him in order to protect him in this situation.

However, White Brook refused to let go. "Xiao Skywhite, I have something to say today. This junior is not someone from my Carefree Island and he actually comes here to spout utter garbage, questioning me in front of everyone present and slandering the clean reputation of my White Family. If I were to let this go today, then what face would I have left!"

Someone like White Brook, who had occupied such a high and lofty position for all this time, was the same as someone who sat upon the imperial throne to mortals. He was like someone who had been an emperor for dozens of years already and was long used to all ministers and everyone else below him being utterly servile in his presence. But now, there was actually a boy who suddenly appeared out of nowhere and was daring to impugn his honor in front of everyone, and also question his words. From this alone, the results could be imagined.

"Elder White, may I ask why you would say that?" Lin Ming coldly asked, sneering inwardly.

"If you say that Mirrorjade betrayed you, then where is the evidence? Take out the evidence then! You blaspheme the dead and also destroy the innocent name of my White

Family. Since you dare to do so, you had better take out the evidence, otherwise don’t blame me for being rude!” White Brook slowly fell down from the red mountain peak he stood on, coming to a floating position in front of Lin Ming as he looked down at him with thick condescension.

“I have evidence, but I’m afraid that you don’t dare to examine it.”

“What?” Blue veins began to pop up on White Brook’s forehead. His anger had finally reached the extreme. “If you have evidence then of course I must examine it! If you cannot take out evidence then I want you to die as reparation!”

“Die as reparation? Hahaha, hahaha!” Lin Ming laughed as if he didn’t have a care in the world. “If I cannot bring out evidence then you want me to die as reparation? Your White Family is far too arrogant. Then let me ask you, what if I can take out evidence? Will you die instead?”

Lin Ming didn’t fear White Brook, thus he repeatedly poked and challenged him with words. This caused the many Elders present to feel horrified, as if their hearts were being tightly gripped. If he enraged White Brook there truly wouldn’t any good outcomes for him.

“What… did you say?” White Brook’s face became as gloomy as dark water. His words were slow and pronounced.

“I already spoke; could you not understand my words? The one who said White Mirrorjade was a traitor was Gudao Ming. I only repeated what he said. And yet, if I cannot take out further evidence, you want me to die?

“And in turn, if I can take out evidence, you actually won’t need to pay any price, but you will still remember this grudge and take revenge against me in the future? Is there such a truth in this world? If this isn’t overbearing then what is?”

“Hahahahaha!” White Brook laughed out loud. “Just who do you think you are? You think you can speak reason with me? You think you can speak what is fair to me? Do you think you have these qualifications!? In the world of martial artists, strength is supreme! Fairness and reasoning only apply to those that are similar in strength! You are nothing but a little Life Destruction ant. Even if you are extremely talented, that only makes you a slightly larger ant! If I wanted to deal with you, that would be no different from a common mortal stepping on an ant, and who can stop me? Who can stop me!? And you still think that you can talk about fairness with me? Just how stupid can you be!?

“If I kill you, that is because you have harmed the reputation of my White Family! The reputation of my White Family is thousands of times more precious than your life will ever be! Your death is still far from enough! And yet you want to threaten me and have me take out my life to accompany you? Just weigh how much your life is worth and realize how laughable you are!”

……..

As White Brook was yelling at Lin Ming, an inner court Elder carelessly turned over the combat report jade slip passed out by Xiao Raingem. “Hm? This jade slip is actually divided into two parts. If one doesn’t pay attention, they wouldn’t realise there is further information on the back. Isn’t this just deliberately looking for trouble?”

Normally, a martial artist could look over a jade slip extremely quickly; it only took a single sweep. But, Xiao Raingem’s combat report jade slip was deliberately divided into two, and the middle section was blank. This created a gap in the reading, just like in a notebook where there were only words recorded on the first few pages and the last few pages, with the entire center blank. Most people who saw the blank portion would naturally assume that there was nothing left, thus they wouldn’t continue.

Of course, for the martial artists present, as long as they wanted to, they could instantly read over the entire jade slip.

As this inner court Elder read the last portion of the jade slip, he nearly choked on himself and rolled down the mountain. He looked at Lin Ming with an incredulous expression, “Am I dreaming? White Mirrorjade actually died to this Lin Ming. This boy… is he insane? If White Brook finds out about this then… that would simply…”

Because White Brook and Lin Ming's dispute was too eye-catching, several Elders didn't finish reading the jade slip. Ye Rosewater was also worried about Lin Ming. Lin Ming was simply playing with fire here. Why would he offend Highest Elder White Brook just because he wanted to sass back?

Facing White Brook's horrifying pressure, Lin Ming seemed completely unaware of it all. He smiled and asked, "So, if my humble and lowly life can actually damage the reputation of the noble and glorious White Family, isn't that a reason for me to feel honored? Hahaha! But Elder White, you said that it was impossible for White Mirrorjade to be the traitor. Since you're so sure of yourself, why are you worried that I can produce evidence?"

"Lin Ming, if you can take out evidence then I will personally remove White Mirrorjade's name from my family tree! Otherwise, hehe…"

"Remove a name? Remove the name of a dead person? Is that the price that your White Family will pay? How valuable." Lin Ming mocked. But, he also knew that it was impossible to get White Brook to bet his life for any reason. With his status, he would never make such a bet with a junior.

"Elder White, you said that regardless of what the evidence is, you will investigate it yourself. Then, I will take out the evidence. If you don't dare to examine it then don't say that my evidence is wrong."

"Then take it out!" White Brook coldly said, his eyes filled with a thick killing intent. "As long as you don't try to play some tricks with this evidence then I can naturally verify it!"

"Good!" This was the effect that Lin Ming wanted. If he didn't anger White Brook and took out the half-dead White Mirrorjade, then White Brook would probably storm off from the scene. As for agreeing to search White Mirrorjade's soul, that was something he would never do.

“I apologize to all Elders here. Because of some reasons, there were some matters that I intentionally needed to hide from you all. In truth, White Mirrorjade wasn’t dead at the end of the Red Desolate Mystic Realm expedition. But, there’s not much of a difference now!”

Before Lin Ming left the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, he severed White Mirrorjade’s true essence, causing him to perch on the edge of death. A mystic art like the soul searching technique worked best when the party it was being done to was on the verge of death.

A martial artist had two kinds of death. There was the death of solely the human body, where the soul was still able to be preserved. If one suffered some sort of tremendous attack, it was likely they would die along with their soul. If that happened, their memories would also fade away and it would be impossible to use the soul searching technique.

As Lin Ming spoke, he threw out the nearly dead White Mirrorjade from his spatial ring. At this time, White Mirrorjade’s entire body was covered in pieces of flesh and blood, and he no longer seemed even human. His organs were all smashed apart and almost all of his blood had drained out. His chest cavity was open, filled with blood plasma. His exposed heart had nearly stopped beating; he would die soon.

White Brook didn’t even immediately recognize White Mirrorjade. It was only when he faintly felt a familiar aura coming from this ruined White Mirrorjade…

“Mirrorjade!”

White Brook’s eyes turned blood red. As he looked at Lin Ming, his killing intent had already reached infinite dimensions and his anger was erupting. “You turned him into this!?”

“Yes.” Lin Ming confidently acknowledged.

“Die then!”

White Brook suddenly attacked. As he lifted his hand, the power of his inner world came billowing outwards, forming a raging blue storm that rushed towards Lin Ming.

And at this time, Xiao Skywhite was already prepared. He gathered his hands together and countless grand runes appeared, aligning into mystical patterns behind him. These patterns forming a massive suction force that completely inhaled the surging blue storm that White Brook sent out.

The runes that Xiao Skywhite used were the supernatural power contained within Carefree Palace itself. It had to be known that the entire Carefree Palace was a titanic spirit artifact. It was a war fortress, and the only one with the authority and ability to control it was the Island Master!

Although Xiao Skywhite's strength was inferior to White Brook's, in Carefree Palace, White Brook was not Xiao Skywhite's match.

"Xiao Skywhite, you dare to stop me!?" White Brook vehemently sputtered.

"Elder White, please proceed according to the rules!! If you want to deal with Lin Ming, then you must have the truth on your side!" Xiao Skywhite's voice was cold. Because White Brook was his senior, Xiao Skywhite was respectful in the way he spoke to him. But, this did not mean that Xiao Skywhite feared White Brook. "It has already been stated that there is a chance that White Mirrorjade was the traitor. Lin Ming has already brought out the evidence to prove this point, and Elder White has also agreed to examine the evidence. If Lin Ming cannot take out true evidence then it won't be too late to kill him. If you recklessly attack him now, then you will be accused of killing a witness to cover up your own crimes."

As Xiao Skywhite spoke, more and more runes formed behind him, faintly forming an energy barrier that surrounded Lin Ming. This was clearly to protect Lin Ming.

"Xiao Skywhite! Good! Very good!" White Brook said the word 'good' twice, clearly angry to the extreme.

Then, he turned to Lin Ming, his eyes sharp as if he wanted to stab countless holes into Lin Ming, saying, "Where is the evidence!?"

Lin Ming shrugged. “Elder White, at this point, you should have already guessed it. The evidence is White Mirrorjade himself. Search his soul and investigate him. If you do not believe me then you can have the Disciplinary Elder, Island Master Xiao, or even yourself investigate him!”

“What did you say!?”

White Brook’s eyes turned blood red. The soul searching technique was originally an extremely dark and malicious demonic art. After searching someone’s soul, the subject would normally turn into an idiot. Although the soul searching technique was a cruel and sinister move, it was actually very easy to use. It was impossible to search out incomparably complex things like alchemy techniques, array formation techniques, or cultivation methods using this technique, but searching for just simple information was actually straightforward. Thus, even if one was an Elder of the righteous path, this was still doable.

“Elder White, you said that if I had evidence, you would investigate it yourself. Then, don’t blame me for this. Moreover, White Mirrorjade is already dead, so there is no meaning in you showing any sort of compassion to him.”

As Lin Ming spoke, White Mirrorjade seemed to confirm Lin Ming’s words. White Mirrorjade’s body twitched one last heart and then he lay completely motionless, with even the last puttering beats of his heart dying down.

Like this, the White Mirrorjade that had been considered by everyone as the best candidate to be the next Island Master had died.

Chapter 1110 – The World's Most Aggrieving Matter

Chapter 1110 – The World's Most Aggrieving Matter

…

…

…

Seeing White Mirrorjade looking like a piece of rotten meat in front of Lin Ming, all of the Elders present were stunned, their eyebrows jumping up. They could already approximate just what had happened. Lin Ming and Ye Rosewater were ambushed by Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan in a secret mining pit. Then, Lin Ming suspected that someone had betrayed them, and they obtained information on who had done it from an enemy combatant they captured. The enemy then revealed that it was White Mirrorjade.

Obviously, Lin Ming didn't manage to obtain any tangible evidence from this enemy. Only after searching White Mirrorjade's soul would the full truth be known. Of course, this sort of tyrannical and cruel move like the soul searching technique could destroy a person's spiritual sea; it was impossible to use twice, thus Lin Ming hadn't searched White Mirrorjade's soul.

Without searching White Mirrorjade's soul, Lin Ming wouldn't have absolute assurance that he was the traitor.

In this situation, he had still beaten up White Mirrorjade to this state, and then brought him to Carefree Palace on the brink of death, asking others to search his soul here.

This method caused the Elders present to feel a bit unwell. White Mirrorjade was still a disciple of Carefree Island after all, yet he had been killed without any real evidence by Lin Ming.

“This brat is too sadistic!”

“Truly vicious! With his talent and his character, it will be unbelievable once he has grown. He will be a demon even amongst those demonic realm cultivators!”

Forgetting Lin Ming’s ruthlessness, just his strength alone was enough for all the Elders to feel some fear. White Mirrorjade was a genius that could escape an encirclement of several late Divine Sea martial artists together, yet he was still captured alive and in this state by Lin Ming! This clear difference in strength was seen by everyone here!

“Lin Ming, you relied on just the words of a few Occult Bone Clan disciples to kill White Mirrorjade!? If I was Elder White, I would also be angry!”

“Indeed. This boy came to my Carefree Island for the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to begin with. He needs help from us and yet he dares be so arrogant.”

All of the Elders used true essence sound transmissions to discuss this. Lin Ming had come to their Carefree Island to take away the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, but now he had even killed White Mirrorjade. This caused all of the Elders present to have a poor opinion of Lin Ming.

“Lin Ming, so that’s what happened! You did not have true evidence and yet you attacked Mirrorjade! Just who gave you this authority!? Where is the Disciplinary Elder!” White Brook angrily shouted, and a tall dark-faced man stood up from another mountain peak.

“Elder White, subordinate is here.” This person’s voice didn’t seem to have any emotion to it at all. He had an impartial and stoic look; he was Carefree Island’s Disciplinary Elder.

“Lin Ming killed a direct disciple without permission in a situation where he didn’t have any tangible evidence at all. According to the laws of Carefree Island, what is the punishment for such a crime?”

“Reporting to Elder White, according to Carefree Island’s sect punishment laws, killing a direct disciple is worthy of the death penalty. Or, the guilty party’s martial arts will be completely wasted and they will be reduced to a mortal!”

“Hahahaha! Good! Well said!” White Brook laughed, his voice ringing throughout the entire mystic realm space.

He maliciously looked at Lin Ming. “Did you hear that? I can search White Mirrorjade’s soul, but first I must follow the sect’s punishment laws and waste all of your martial arts! You sure feel relieved that I will allow you to keep one final breath of life, so that you can die after learning the results of the soul search! Xiao Skywhite, did you hear the words of the Disciplinary Elder? You said that in front of the sect laws, everyone is equal! You are the Island Master, so how could you possibly look down on the laws of your own sect? Do you even know what you are doing? You are protecting an outsider who killed an outstanding genius of your own sect! It’s incredible that someone like you is the Island Master!”

Just what sort of strongman figure was White Brook that he could be led around by the nose by a junior like Lin Ming? Even if he was willing to use the soul search technique to verify the innocence of his own family, he still wouldn’t obediently accept Lin Ming’s arrangements. Otherwise, just what sort of face would he have left?

And facing Xiao Skywhite, who was protecting Lin Ming, White Brook laid down the gauntlet. Indeed, Xiao Skywhite frowned. In this case, there was a great deal of pressure on him for still protecting Lin Ming.

At this time, Great Elder Xiao Haogan stood up. He fakely smiled and said, “Island Master, what Elder White says is reasonable and true. Even if you will conduct a soul search, you must deal with Lin Ming first! But Island Master Xiao, it seems as if you are purposefully favoring Lin Ming. You are the Island Master and yet you disregard your own disciples to help an outsider, not even hesitating to use Carefree Palace's array formations to confront Elder White. Just what sort of reasoning is this?"

Xiao Haogan was from the Xiao Family. However, the reason that he became the Great Elder was that he had been defeated in the struggle to become the Island Master by Xiao Skywhite, thus the reason for him being biased towards his own master, White Brook. The relations between him and Xiao Skywhite had never been smooth.

In Carefree Island, the status of a Great Elder was second only to the Highest Elders' and the Island Master. Thus, this was why Xiao Haogan waited for a suitable time to speak. Not just that, but there were also several Elders present that weren't too pleased by Lin Ming's methods. They began to stand up and say, "Great Elder is right!"

"We should handle everything according to the rules first. Otherwise, what if someone tried to copy Lin Ming in the future and kill any disciple they suspected, then asking to search their soul later? Everything would fall into chaos!"

Xiao Skywhite took a deep breath, feeling as if he had hopped onto the tiger and could no longer back down. And at this time, Lin Ming began to speak from underneath the energy barrier Xiao Skywhite had created. "You want to waste all of my martial arts? How interesting. You say that I'm not a disciple of your Carefree Island and yet you still want to deal with me according to your sect rules?

"Could it be that if your White Family wants to kill me, I should stretch out my neck and let you do so, but if I kill White Mirrorjade instead, you want me to be handled by your sect rules and also waste all of my martial arts? What a strong sense of righteousness you have!"

White Brook laughed as he listened to Lin Ming's response, "Why do I use the rules of my Carefree Island to handle you? Do you still need to ask this? It is because I am stronger than you, it is because my cultivation is higher than yours! In my eyes, what can you even be considered as? If I kill you, that is no different from butchering a chicken or slaughtering a dog. With just a single thought I can kill you, and who here can stop me? Do you think you can resist even if you don't stretch out your neck? Whether it is Mirrorjade's life or the reputation of my White Family, both are thousands and tens of thousands of times more precious than your life! Now that you've killed Mirrorjade, I don't care what reason it is but you will be buried along with him! You want to speak of reasoning to me? That is simply ridiculous! How much do you think you are worth? Do you really think you have the capital to discuss anything with me!?"

As White Brook spoke to here, he began to step towards Lin Ming. Ye Rosewater and Xiao Raingem were both frightened. As for Xiao Skywhite, he deeply frowned. At this time, the situation had already spiraled out of his control.

"Senior Mo! Senior Mo!" Xiao Skywhite called out in his heart.

Then, a sigh resounded in the void, followed by a faint fluctuation in the mystic realm space.

"Who is it!?"

White Brook was suddenly shocked. He immediately turned, his eyes widened to their limit. He watched on blankly as the space in front of him distorted and a white-clothed woman emerged from nowhere. She sat on the void, her body floating in the midst of countless silks. Her entire being exuded an elegant and compelling aura. Her face was covered with a dim light, making it so that no one could fully make out her appearance.

She didn't come from outside but had rather been here the entire time. She had hidden in space, observing this Council of Elders. But, no one had been able to discover her at all!

"This… this is…"

White Brook drew a step backwards. He could feel a terrifying pressure from this woman. Her strength was unfathomable. She was absolutely a Holy Lord level character, and she was also more powerful than any Holy Lord White Brook had ever seen before. As for just how formidable she was, White Brook had no way of knowing. As for White Brook himself, even though he was Carefree Island's strongest powerhouse, he could only barely be considered a Holy Lord level powerhouse, and even then he was the weakest amongst them all!

It wasn't just White Brook, but all of the Elders present were dumbfounded. This mysterious woman was actually hiding in Carefree Palace just a short distance away from them, and yet none of them knew! From this alone, one could imagine just how great her strength was!

"You… who are you?"

Without knowing why, White Brook was able to feel a familiar breath from this woman in front of him. However he couldn't identify just where he had encountered her before.

This white-clothed woman was Mo Riverbliss. She stood up from her wreath of silks, her appearance still covered in a dim light, not allowing anyone to see her. She naturally couldn't expose her own appearance before these people. After all, she had to be careful of her Verdant Feather Holy Lands' greatest blood enemy, Tian Mingzi.

"I originally didn't want to appear in front of you all. But because some matters still aren't concluded yet and there are actually some here that think themselves so righteous and infallible, I had to suddenly appear because of such a minor matter… well, before anything else, search his soul first."

Mo Riverbliss calmly instructed. Out of all the high level Carefree Island figures present, only Xiao Skywhite knew of her. Even so, her commands were impossible to violate.

White Brook's eyelids jumped up. Facing this woman's terrifying pressure, he clenched his fists and said, "Minor matter? Search his soul? Humph! You think that just because you say to search his soul we will search his soul? Just who are you? This is my Carefree Island's territory and yet you barge in here. What gives you the right to order us around?" If it weren't for Mo Riverbliss' horrifying aura, White Brook would have already attacked her.

Mo Riverbliss turned her head and stared at White Brook, her vision sharp and dangerous. She unhurriedly said, "Why can I give you orders? Do you still need to ask this? It is because I am stronger than you, it is because my cultivation is higher than yours! In my eyes, what can you even be considered as? If I kill you, that is no different from butchering a chicken or slaughtering a dog. With just a single thought I can kill you, and who here can stop me? Do you think you can resist even if you don't want to follow my command?"

Mo Riverbliss' aura suddenly rose. The words that White Brook said to Lin Ming just now were completely tossed back into his face, causing his complexion to twist.

"You… you…!"

White Brook trembled with rage. One of the most aggrieving matters in this world was to have one's own words used in reverse and also have no way of refuting them.

Just now he had ruthlessly mocked Lin Ming, but now the roles had switched and he was the one being mocked instead. The words that he had been so proud of now caused his entire face to be swollen with shame! In particular, he was being mocked under the eyes of many of Carefree Island's juniors and Elders!

White Brook bit his lips and clenched his fists, his nails digging into the flesh of his palms. He was thinking of attack Mo Riverbliss right now. However, estimating it, he knew that his chances of victory were impossibly slim!

"Now search his soul. As for you… White Brook, whether you want to be the one to do so is up to you."

Mo Riverbliss coldly said. Under the suppression of absolute strength, no one dared to refute her.

Chapter 1111 – Face Even More Swollen

Chapter 1111 – Face Even More Swollen

…

…

…

The Disciplinary Elder and the Supervisory Elder glanced at each other and fell beside White Brook. One was responsible for enforcing laws and the other was responsible for supervising disciples. If someone here was needed to search souls, the task would naturally fall to them.

As for Island Master Xiao Skywhite, he was already standing beside the completely dead White Mirrorjade. His hands were up, ready to start at any time. If he waited too long then even White Mirrorjade's soul would scatter away.

The truth was that Xiao Skywhite wasn't proud or happy to have Mo Riverbliss appear. In truth, he actually felt as if he had failed. In the end, he had to summon Mo Riverbliss to clean up this mess. Without her, he simply wasn't able to stabilize this situation.

"Strength… my strength is not enough. If I had the strength of someone who steadily entered the Holy Lord realm, no one in this sect, high or low, would oppose me so greatly." Xiao Skywhite thought to himself, making a grim determination for his future.

He turned to White Brook and said, "Elder White, if you will. If you do not start then I shall. If you cannot find the information you want yourself then don't blame me."

At this time, White Brook was like a volcano ready to erupt at any moment. His entire body trembled with anger. "Good! Then I will search for you. Lin Ming dares to constantly impugn the honor of my White Family again and again, then I will show you today's proof!

In all these many years that Carefree Island has stood tall, my White Family has produced countless extraordinary talents! To betray Carefree Island and send the geniuses of my sect into a deathtrap is a crime that is utterly despised by all. My White Family would never disdain themselves to do such a deed!”

To a distinguished family from a sect that considered itself part of the righteous path, there wasn’t much worse than having one of their disciples collude with those of the demonic path and murder their own fellow disciples. This was a dastardly deed that would forever hang upon the family’s walls.

“Let’s get the ugly talk out of the way. If Mirrorjade is truly a traitor then I will turn his bones to ashes and wipe him away from my family tree forever. I will also apologize to everyone here. But, in turn, if you have all wronged Mirrorjade, then I want Lin Ming to die with him! Since ancient times, an eye for an eye, a life for a life, that has been a completely justified act within all of the heavens and earth!”

As White Brook spoke, he suddenly pointed at Lin Ming, his eyes containing infinite rage and hatred!

When White Brook’s vision touched Lin Ming, Lin Ming felt his scalp tingle. He was very familiar with these eyes, because he had encountered them many times before. This was a hatred that was endless, that would never give up come hell or high water. Because of Ouyang Boyan in the past, when Lin Ming ever saw these eyes again, he would always adopt whatever drastic measures needed to completely eradicate this danger by the roots.

Whether it was White Brook now or Ouyang Boyan of the past, Lin Ming hadn’t been able to immediately eliminate them. In particular White Brook; the difference in strength was far too great.

Mo Riverbliss listened to White Brook’s words and sneered, “You want Lin Ming to die too? In my eyes, Lin Ming’s life is thousands and tens of thousands of times more precious than White Mirrorjade’s life or your White Family’s reputation, and yet you want Lin Ming to die? How ridiculous! How much do you think you are worth? Do you have the qualifications to reason with me? Even if Lin Ming wrongly killed White Mirrorjade, then so what. If he killed him then he killed him. I will simply have Lin Ming apologize to everyone here."

White Brook now deeply realized what it meant to be caught in one's own trap. Everything he had said to Lin Ming was now being punted back to him by Mo Riverbliss!

White Brook had lived for tens of thousands of years but he had never encountered such an aggrieving situation like today, especially since it was in front of all these people from Carefree Island!

He was used to his own position being high and untouchable. He was the one always giving orders, so when did he ever have to endure such humiliation?

"Do you want to see how much I'm worth? Good! Then let me show you just what my qualifications are! If you have the ability then meet my blade!"

White Brook angrily shouted. He suddenly flourished a sharp blue sword from his spatial ring. This sword was simple and lusterless. The sword blade was humble, just like a large leaf. But once the sword was brought into the world, its aura was vast and boundless, overwhelming the world!

This was a spirit artifact blade!

Although White Brook was angry, he wasn't maddened to the point of losing all reasoning. He knew that there was a 99% chance he was not the opponent of this mysterious woman. Thus, he carefully spoke about exchanging a single sword strike with this woman, and directly at that. If this woman was goaded to move, then he would have the advantage. Moreover, this was a single strike. Even if he wasn't her match, he wouldn't suffer too much. At the same time, he could also probe just how strong this mysterious woman was. Currently he could only feel that this woman's aura was terrifying, but as for how overruling she actually was, he had no idea at all. If she was weaker than what he imagined, then he would engage her in a battle to the death even at the cost of his life!

He could not understand why such a mysterious person would appear at Carefree Palace, and why Xiao Skywhite seemed to clearly know of her.

“Sword Setting the Universe!”

White Brook shouted out loud and the power of the world contained within the great dimension in his dantian erupted forth. For a moment, the entire Carefree Palace trembled. As White Brook attacked, an incredible scene occurred. White Brook and Mo Riverbliss seemed to fall into a completely different space and time, thoroughly isolated from the outside world!

Lin Ming was surprised. He wasn’t sure if this was because of some sort of force field interaction or because these two people’s inner worlds were coming into conflict. At this time, their fight was equal to occurring in a separate dimension. Like this, no matter how terrifying the shock waves and explosions of their battle were, they wouldn’t affect the surroundings. Otherwise, if two Holy Lord level powerhouses fought, this mystic realm where the Council of Elders had convened would likely collapse and be destroyed.

An infinitely extending distortion instantly appeared in the space around them. Lin Ming saw that all around Mo Riverbliss, brilliant white light began to gather. Then, the heavens filled with endless fields of falling snow. Snow fluttered, drifting down in a radius of over 80,000 miles. The entire separate space-time was filled with a vast blinding whiteness!

Lin Ming’s eyes widened. From when he first chose the path of martial arts, this battle involved the highest level powerhouses fighting that he had yet to witness. If he could only understand a thousandth of their Concepts or techniques then the advantages would be tremendous.

Bang!

In that different space-time, an incomparably titanic amount of ice energy gathered into a single endless stretch, forming a river of stars that flowed forth for 10,000 miles, completely passing through White Brook’s azure sword light!

In that moment, countless cracks appeared in White Brook's world. Lin Ming could no longer see what was happening. All he saw was white, endless white flooding his field of vision, masking all, burying all.

Then, with a faint blasting sound, the white light suddenly gathered backwards, revealing a pale White Brook. White Brook fell onto his knees. His hair, beard, body, all of it was covered with ice crystals. These ice crystals cut into his skin, piercing through his body, making him tremble as if he were heaving.

"You... you..." White Brook's voice shivered. The ice energy had sunk into his body, making him feel as if he had been submerged into a freezing sea. In front of this woman, he felt as if he were a little baby facing an adult, without any strength to resist. If she wanted to, she could likely instantly kill him. The disparity was too great. It was far greater than what he had imagined it would be like!

All of the surrounding Elders were silenced. White Brook was the number one master of Carefree Island, and yet he had been so easily defeated. That meant that if this mysterious woman wanted to, she could kill everyone present!

"Someone like you should not appear in an influence on the level of Carefree Island. Just who are you?" White Brook couldn't see Mo Riverbliss' appearance. But, he could faintly feel that she was a peak Holy Lord level existence, or even someone that neared a World King. How could this sort of person appear in Carefree Island, a sect that hadn't even become a Holy Land yet?

Mo Riverbliss didn't even bother answering. The situation was now deadlocked. At this time, Xiao Skywhite gave White Brook an exit and said, "Elder White, search his soul. White Mirrorjade's soul is beginning to fade away."

"Search his soul..." White Brook's eyes blurred for a moment before regaining clarity. He deeply looked at Mo Riverbliss for a moment and then walked over to the Supervisory Elder and the Disciplinary Elder, facing White Mirrorjade's corpse that had been dead for less than half an incense stick of time.

As White Brook saw White Mirrorjade's gruesome corpse, he felt sadness seep into his heart. He looked up at Lin Ming, gritting his teeth and saying, "I am weaker than others. White Mirrorjade was killed by you and yet I cannot take revenge for him. But remember this. In this world there exists karma. Blood will have blood. You will eventually pay the price for your actions."

Lin Ming sneered, "Investigate first before you speak again."

Blood will have blood. To a martial artist, that was indeed an undeniable truth. The world of martial artists was constantly filled with slaughter. If you could kill others, then naturally a stronger person could kill you too. But, for things like karma, that was simply nonsense. In the world of martial artists, it was impossible for completely pure-hearted people to live for thousands of years. Lin Ming had killed many people, but he had also done so with reason, or because his enemies had chosen to walk the road of death to begin with. He did not touch himself with such karma. Even though he had killed countless people, he never worried about this.

White Brook coldly snorted as he saw Lin Ming's attitude. He resented Lin Ming, but there was nothing he could do.

He poured his soul force into the rapidly-cooling body of White Mirrorjade. At the same time, Xiao Skywhite, the Disciplinary Elder, and the Supervisory Elder also joined in. With the four of them investigating together, the accuracy of their results would be beyond doubt.

The soul searching technique was not some complex or profound ability. But at the same time, the information it could investigate was also on the vague side. As the four people rummaged through White Mirrorjade's memories, they soon found the memories related to geniuses of other sects.

These memories were filled with suspicion, filled with hate…

After that, they went even deeper. They saw White Mirrorjade obtain the inheritance of a dead Holy Lord, and also the puppets that this Holy Lord level character had left behind in a hidden cave dwelling. White Mirrorjade had used these puppets as tools to communicate with the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain. After every correspondence, the puppet would self-destruct, leaving behind no evidence.

He had joined forces with the Occult Bone Clan and Splintersoul Mountain to murder geniuses of his own sect. He had done this three times already. Of course, this also included his attempt on Lin Ming and Ye Rosewater.

“This… this…” As White Brook saw these memories, his entire body turned to stone. He stood there paralyzed, his hands faintly shaking.

White Mirrorjade had betrayed Carefree Island! This was without a doubt the truth!

When Lin Ming killed White Mirrorjade, he had fully occupied the moral position!

White Brook took a step back, his complexion becoming increasingly pale. His lips opened and closed, but no words came out.

Near him, Xiao Skywhite let out a long sigh and shook his head. As for the Disciplinary Elder and Supervisory Elder, they wisely remained silent.

However, their attitude and response already made the results clear.

All of the Elders present gulped, unable to speak.

Lin Ming’s speculations were true. White Mirrorjade had truly betrayed him and Ye Rosewater!

In the war within the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, Carefree Island could have been said to have burned their bridges and left no avenue for retreat. This was a mission that related to the destiny of Carefree Island as a sect. And yet, because of mere personal grudges and benefits, White Mirrorjade didn’t hesitate at all to betray Ye Rosewater, Lin Ming, and all the others, just to strengthen his own position!

Without a doubt, the reason White Mirrorjade dared to do so was that he relied on his outstanding strength. Even if he was encircled by a number of late Divine Sea geniuses, he would still be able to retreat with his life. But, the other disciples weren't the same!

Just what sort of evil and wicked act was this!

Chapter 1112 – The Power Behind The Throne

Chapter 1112 – The Power Behind The Throne

…

…

…

“The truth is now clear. I feel extremely regretful for everything that has occurred, but White Mirrorjade has already been punished for his actions. I will inform the entire sect of this matter and have it serve as a warning to the disciples!” Xiao Skywhite summarized. This sort of scandal would severely shame the White Family and ruin their reputation.

However, Xiao Skywhite wasn’t doing this to attack the White Family. Rather, the matter of Lin Ming killing White Mirrorjade was known by the direct disciples. Now, the disciples beneath them probably knew and there had to be an explanation for all of this.

White Brook’s lips twitched as he heard Xiao Skywhite. He remained silent throughout. Today was truly a living nightmare.

He turned and suddenly glanced at Mo Riverbliss. “You… who are you? Why would you appear in Carefree Palace?”

As White Brook spoke, everyone’s eyes turned to Mo Riverbliss. They too wished to know just who she was.

Mo Riverbliss stood atop a square of rainbow-colored silk, her entire body clothed in white. Her fingers linked together and sent out several seals. In the space and time within this mystic realm, large runes began to appear from all over, floating in the surrounding space.

Then, the high mountain peaks that these Elders were standing on began to rumble as they sank into the earth. Everyone fell onto the ground!

This scene caused all of the Elders to be shocked. Mo Riverbliss didn't depend on her own brute strength to flatten the mountain peaks into the earth, but had rather operated the array formations of Carefree Palace!

Carefree Palace itself was an extremely high grade spirit artifact. It was offensive and defensive; a natural war fortress that resisted the world. If the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree was related to the destiny of Carefree Island, then Carefree Palace was the foundation with which Carefree Island was able to remain a sect. If Carefree Island didn't have the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, they would only have less resources and would be hindered in their future development, making it hopeless for them to become a Holy Land. But without Carefree Palace, Carefree Island's defensive power would plummet to a far lower level. At this time, if Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan were to join forces and attack Carefree Island, then Carefree Island might even be totally obliterated!

Not just that, but the deep time-space locations within Carefree Palace were the best places to cultivate in all of Carefree Island. All of Carefree Island's Elders and their most amazing direct disciples would enter seclusion here. If they didn't have Carefree Palace, then the losses to Carefree Island would be even greater than losing the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree.

It was also because of this reason that since ancient times, only the Island Master's symbol was able to operate Carefree Palace. But now, this mysterious woman was also able to control Carefree Palace's array formations. How could the Elders present not be surprised?

"You… how can you control Carefree Palace!?" White Brook shouted, his expression that of someone who saw a ghost.

Mo Riverbliss lightly glanced at White Brook and said, "Carefree Palace is my spirit artifact to begin with. I placed it at Carefree Island to serve as the foundation for Carefree

Island to remain a sect. However, absolute dominion of Carefree Palace has always remained in my hands. All of the Island Masters have only been allowed to use it."

"What?" White Brook was completely bewildered. This mysterious woman actually controlled Carefree Palace!

It had to be known that these Elders usually cultivated deep within Carefree Palace. With this mysterious woman's terrifying strength, that meant that she controlled the lives of Carefree Island's Elders at all times, and also had the very fate of Carefree Island itself in her grasp!

Suddenly, White Brook remembered that 10,000 years ago, because information of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree had been revealed, it had caused a super influence to lead an invasion against Carefree Island in the hopes of capturing the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. At the end, when Carefree Island nearly couldn't continue to support itself, a mysterious person had appeared. This mysterious person had managed Carefree Palace with strength approaching a World King, and finally their enemies were all forced back.

After this, Carefree Island experienced thousands of years of peace, and their sect also rapidly expanded in both size and power. Slowly, Carefree Island gained the strength to stand firm in the world, and gained the qualifications of a sect that was able to defend themselves.

As White Brook thought of this now, he realized that the reason this mysterious woman's aura was familiar to him was because it was the same aura as that mysterious person's from 10,000 years ago!

"10,000 years ago, you moved to help manage Carefree Palace's array formations and force back the Seven Element Sect? And, the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree was also left here by you?"

White Brook suddenly thought. It was highly likely that the person supporting Lin Ming from behind was this mysterious woman.

“You can say that.” Mo Riverbliss said.

“So that’s how it was. No wonder, no wonder, hahaha! I was truly laughable!” White Brook shook his head, his face filled with self-deprecation.

“Since you’ve always been controlling the Carefree Palace spirit artifact, and also had such overwhelming strength, that is the same as all of Carefree Island never leaving your grasp. If that’s true, then why not directly take away the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree? None of us would be able to resist you.”

Mo Riverbliss said, “Why should I answer to you about the decisions I make?”

In the end, the reason that Mo Riverbliss had hidden in the shadows all these years and had others represent her in leading Carefree Island was because of how sensitive her status was. It was easy for her to attract the attention of others if she were to appear. After all, even in the entire Divine Realm, a half-step World King powerhouse wasn’t a cabbage that could be found anywhere. If one were to suddenly appear, then a few thousand years of secrecy was possible. But, if she had remained in public for 50,000 years then it was possible that Tian Mingzi would have realized it was her, and thus brought the fate of total annihilation upon Carefree Island.

In this sort of situation, patiently hiding and keeping the lowest profile possible was the best decision.

But once Mo Riverbliss truly appeared in front of everyone and began to personally control Carefree Island herself, that symbolized that the time for the true battle had begun. This meant that Mo Riverbliss would finally begin the earnest reconstruction of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands and also begin the plans to battle Tian Mingzi.

Lin Ming’s appearance was clearly the impetus that caused Mo Riverbliss to appear and finally wield power over Carefree Island. From the very start, Mo Riverbliss had only been observing Lin Ming. Finally, after all of this occurred, Mo Riverbliss approved of Lin Ming from the depths of her heart. Even if she had to discard all of Carefree Island’s benefits to raise up Lin Ming, she would still do so. She had faith that within several hundred years or a few thousand years, Lin Ming would have the ability to help her reform the Verdant Feather Holy Lands.

Mo Riverbliss said, “I know that my appearance here today has caused suspicions and rejection to appear in your minds. But, because of my strength and because I am the one who truly controls Carefree Palace, none of you will dare to disobey me. Even so, you will resist me in your hearts through all sorts of ways!”

As Mo Riverbliss spoke, her sharp and fierce eyes swept through everyone present. All of the Elders felt as if they were seen through and were unable to even look back at her.

Mo Riverbliss had allowed Carefree Island to freely grow for 50,000 years. Through all of the previous and current high level figures of Carefree Island, no one had ever known of Mo Riverbliss’ existence besides the Island Masters. Now that she suddenly appeared and announced that she was the true shadow master of Carefree Island, this certainly would cause the high level figures of Carefree Island to resist her. This sort of feeling was as if a mortal had carefully cultivated and raised a fruit tree, and just when the tree had borne edible fruits, the secret master of the orchard had suddenly appeared. This secret master could allow you to eat a fruit, but they could also take back the orchard and deny the tree. At this time, it was normal for someone to feel uncomfortable about this situation.

Mo Riverbliss said, “I can understand if you all have thoughts of resisting me. This is because you do not understand me, and also because you do not understand the history of Carefree Island. In your beliefs, if there is a day that Carefree Island could rise into a ninth-grade Holy Land, then that would be your greatest glory. And, a ninth-grade Holy Land is also the final goal that is in many of your hearts.

“But in my view, even if Carefree Island rises to become a ninth-grade Holy Land, Carefree Island will still be among the weakest of ninth-grade Holy Lands for a very long time. If this sort of Carefree Island were placed in the entire Divine Realm, it would be nothing but a tiny little insignificant sect. If Carefree Island were a ninth-grade Holy Land, then in every major world of the Divine Realm, there would be at least a hundred, if not far more sects of the same level. And, these do not include the hidden sects that are scattered all over. There are even the countless sects that exist in the medium worlds and small worlds. Placed among all of this, Carefree Island is just a drop of water in the ocean!

“If that is truly your final goal, then your achievements will also be limited to this! You can simply call all of yourselves short sighted.”

As Mo Riverbliss spoke, many of the Elders faintly frowned. What Mo Riverbliss said was true, but it was also common knowledge. There was no one present who didn’t know how terrifyingly broad and limitless the Divine Realm was.

They were well aware of the vast Divine Realm and just how scary the true top sects were. But, for Carefree Island to become such a sect was simply a dream. In Carefree Island, a Divine Lord powerhouse was an Elder. But in those bigger sects, a Holy Lord level powerhouse was an Elder.

Mo Riverbliss could naturally see what these Elders were thinking about. She slowly said, “You all probably think that what I speak is the foolish talk of an idiot, nothing more than an improbable fantasy that will never occur. But, what if I were to tell you that the predecessor of Carefree Island was a World King level Holy Land? Would you still think the same?”

Chapter 1113 – Mo Riverbliss's Ambitions

Chapter 1113 – Mo Riverbliss's Ambitions

…

…

…

"World King level Holy Land?"

As Mo Riverbliss spoke, all of the Elders present were stunned silent. Even if Carefree Island became a ninth-grade Holy Land, they would still be among the weakest of Holy Lands.

And within ninth-grade Holy Lands, the differences in strength between them were enormous. For instance, a peak Holy Land like the Ancient Phoenix Clan could completely exterminate over a dozen ordinary Holy Lands.

And above the Ancient Phoenix Clan was a World King level Holy Land.

In the strictest sense, a World King level Holy Land needed a World King level powerhouse assuming personal command. Even if they weren't a Great World King, they at least needed to be someone with strength equal to a World King.

But, the truth was that the birth of a World King was simply far too difficult. There were many times when a sect would produce a World King, but another one would not appear in the next generation. For instance, the Ancient Dragon Clan was like this. Even so, they were stronger than an ordinary peak Holy Land, and could barely be considered a World King level Holy Land.

Such an influence was simply a legendary existence. If a World King level Holy Land was a bustling major capital of a vast nation, then Carefree Island was nothing but a tiny town; there was simply no comparing them.

“Carefree Island’s predecessor was a World King level Holy Land?”

“How could that be?”

The Elders present didn’t dare to believe this. This was similar to a small countryside family suddenly learning one day that they were from the royal family and they also had the royal bloodline within them.

“What Senior says is true. Only the current and past Island Masters know the true history of Carefree Island.” Xiao Skywhite suddenly spoke up.

“Carefree Island indeed has an extremely deep and formidable background. You fear me and reject me because you are afraid that I will take away your resources and your authority. But that is all wrong. In fact, not only will I not take away anything that belongs to you, but I will bring you even greater wealth and treasures. If your gaze truly only lies at becoming a ninth-grade Holy Land, then I can only say that you are just too short-sighted.”

The one who spoke was Mo Riverbliss. However, besides a minority of Elders developing anticipation at her words, there were even more people who grew more skeptical.

The Supervisory Elder frowned and said, “Senior says that Carefree Island’s predecessor was a World King level Holy Land… but, I believe that this World King level Holy Land should have long since perished by now. Otherwise, why would we withdraw to this Red Desolate Sea, where we must compete with third-rate influences like Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan for resources?

“No matter how glorious and magnificent the past was, that is still history. Senior says that we are short-sighted, and I will admit that those words are true. However, I would like to ask a question. How does Senior plan on restoring Carefree Island to its splendid past? In truth, I don’t even need a plan to become a World King level Holy Land; if Carefree Island became just a peak ninth-grade Holy Land, I would already think that was a miracle among miracles. I wonder, just what plan does Senior have prepared?"

The question that the Supervisory Elder asked was what everyone else was thinking. These people were already skeptical. Even if their Carefree Island had the bloodline of the royal family, that royal family had already been overthrown and their royal bloodline wasn't worth a single damn anymore. If they couldn't manage things properly, then that royal bloodline might even draw in a fatal calamity upon them instead.

Mo Riverbliss had already expected all of these doubts. She gently smiled and said, "With Carefree Island's background, it is naturally impossible to rise in a short period of time. But, if there is an outside force helping Carefree Island, then everything becomes different. Imagine. If a true Great World King were to form his own sect, just what type of influence would he be able to create?"

"Great World King?"

As these Elders heard Mo Riverbliss's words, they subconsciously glanced at each other. The Divine Realm had a total of 3000 Great Worlds, and thus they had 3000 Great World Kings. All Great World Kings were existences that ranked in the upper echelons of World Kings. Their strength had reached unimaginable proportions. Their fame, prestige, and strength were truly horrifying. If they wanted to create their own sect, then saying that they would create an ordinary Holy Land was simply an insult. Forming a peak Holy Land was something they could do if they were simply lazing about. Only creating a World King level Holy Land would match their status.

Although it couldn't be done instantly, if one spent tens of thousands of years and also had control of enough resources, then doing all of this wouldn't be difficult at all.

When a person rose to glory, everyone with them would also flourish. Back when Lin Ming was at the Sky Spill Continent, after he became the highest under the heavens, Divine Phoenix Island had similarly received a tremendously great blessing. Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan had both become Divine Sea powerhouses because of Lin Ming, and they would also be outstanding individuals among Divine Sea powerhouses. Added with the massive amount of resources that Lin Ming left with Divine Phoenix Island, this allowed Divine Phoenix Island to quickly become a Holy Land. In the next couple hundred years, Divine Phoenix Island might even replace the Asura Divine Kingdom and become one of the four Divine Kingdoms!

A fourth-grade sect would suddenly become a Holy Land like that!

This sort of rising speed could not be compared to a sect that was developing on its own!

“That is only a Great World King. What if it were a top ten ranked Great World King? For a peak World King, it is difficult for anyone to compare to them underneath an Empyrean. If such a person were to create their own sect, what would that be like?

“Just setting up a sect would take a tremendous amount of time and energy. But, what if this person was able to use Carefree Island as a foundation and develop it into a top sect? You are all veteran Elders here, and some of you are old without much potential left. Even so, you can still obtain enormous advantages!”

Mo Riverbliss unhurriedly said. Yet, her calm words caused the hearts of the Elders present to start racing.

Indeed, if Carefree Island was able to leap upwards and become a World King level Holy Land, then as the veteran Elders, they would be able to obtain far greater benefits! That was a World King level Holy Land! The meat and soup they ate was all of a far higher quality than Carefree Island’s! If the soup of a World King level Holy Land was dragon marrow soup, then the meat that Carefree Island ate was nothing but low level vicious beast meat! How could they possibly be compared?

However, even though the situation that Mo Riverbliss described was tempting, it still seemed far too unlikely and impractical.

“Allow me to speak honestly. What Senior says is what many sect leaders say when they come to power. For instance, they will list out their goals for the next hundred years, thousand years, or even ten thousand years. Their steps and plans for the future would always be grand and farfetched. For instance, plans to have the sect double in strength within a thousand years, plans to become a middle ranked Holy Land, and so forth. But, in fact, these goals would all be forgotten over time. Just how many actually manage to achieve their goals?

“Senior says that a Great World King existence, or even one ranked in the top ten of all World Kings, would actually come help us increase the strength of our sect. If that happened, our sect could indeed rapidly rise in a short period of time. But where would we find such a Great World King? If there really was a Great World King, how could they possibly serve us?”

Another Elder raised an objection. When a sect leader came to power, they would often make some general outlines for the future in order to build up cohesiveness within the sect. There were some leaders that didn’t believe themselves, but there were also some leaders that were so confident in their own words that they even tricked themselves. But in the end, they would realize that everything they said had simply been boastful words.

“A Great World King certainly won’t help us. If we want a Great World King to help us, there is only a single possibility, and that is to raise our own!” Mo Riverbliss’s words floored everyone present. Some Elders subconsciously felt their jaws drop wide open, their throats and eyes twitching.

For an influence that hadn’t even become a Holy Land to produce their own Great World King?

That was just a joke!

Even a World King level Holy Land couldn’t guarantee that they would produce a World King in every generation!

This so-called ‘generation’ was not a single generation from parent to child, but a generation measured by the age of a World King.

A World King could often live for several millions of years.

Before the old World King died, if a new World King could be born that was the continuation of a dynasty. That was truly a matter worth celebrating with joy and festivity!

In other words, even for a World King level Holy Land that had top inheritances, an atmosphere with countless amazing geniuses competing with each other, endless resources, and also the guidance of powerful supreme elders, they would still be more than lucky if a World King were to be born every several million years! And that was only raising an ordinary World King, not a Great World King.

Let alone their Carefree Island producing a World King, they would already thank the heavens and earth if they could produce a true Holy Lord level character.

For instance, using Ye Rosewater and White Mirrorjade as examples, although they might have been individuals that disdained all other rivals and heroes of their generation, the chances of them becoming Holy Lords were still extremely slim.

“Raise our own World King? Senior, aren’t you simply joking with us? If we could produce a Great World King, then why would we still be here, spilling our blood in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm to look for resources worth tens of billions of violet sun stones?”

“Then again, looking at the wider picture, even if we had such resources and inheritances, we don’t have an adequate seedling…” As an Elder spoke to here, his eyes suddenly shifted towards Lin Ming. “Could… could it be… that Senior is saying…”

After this Elder spoke, everyone else unanimously turned their gazes to Lin Ming. Without a doubt, if this was truly Mo Riverbliss’s plan, then there was only a single seedling they could name. And, that was… Lin Ming! She wanted to raise Lin Ming into becoming a Great World King!

“Lin Ming… Senior, do you mean him?”

For the Elders present, it was like they were suddenly seeing Lin Ming for the first time again. They looked him over, sizing him up again and again.

“What, do you think it is impossible?”

“I don’t think it is impossible, but…” Several Elders glanced at each other before one tactfully said, “It’s just that the chances aren’t too high…”

The Divine Realm’s 3000 Great World Kings were accumulated over a period of millions upon millions of years. Thinking about the chances of such a character appearing really left one’s heart cold!

In the entire Divine Realm, on average, a Great World King would be born every 1000-2000 years.

This was throughout the entire Divine Realm. The endless, boundless Divine Realm included countless sects, Holy Lands, and numerous World King level families. And beyond the 3000 Great Worlds, there was also everyone from the countless medium worlds, minor worlds, hidden worlds, countless mystic realm spaces, and also those who ascended from the million boundless worlds of the lower realms!

In a thousand years, just how many lives would be born?

Even using a septillion to describe this number wasn’t enough!

This was already a probability that mortals could no longer comprehend.

And most importantly, this number also included the descendants of peak World Kings, and even the descendants of Empyrean level supreme elders!

Just what sort of concept was an Empyrean?

The chances of their descendants becoming a Great World King were naturally much higher. How could mere mortals contend with them?

Lin Ming was powerful, but it was difficult to summon the courage to confidently say he would become a Great World King in the future.

At this time, White Brook sneered and said, “I see, so this is what’s happening. I understand now. No wonder Senior said that Lin Ming’s life is countless times more precious than Mirrorjade’s and the reputation of my White Family. This is because Senior is intending to raise Lin Ming into a Great World King and then have him support Carefree Island and raise it into a World King level Holy Land. What a genius idea!”

Chapter 1114 – Ninefall Approaches

Chapter 1114 – Ninefall Approaches

…

…

…

White Brook's words held an obvious mocking meaning behind them. In fact, although no one dared to speak as loudly and visibly as White Brook, they all had similar idea in their hearts. No matter how they heard it, the plan of depending on a single extreme genius to help raise their sect didn't sound too good. Even in the entire Divine Realm, a World King only appeared every 1000 years. The probability was extremely low and there were countless variables involved.

Sometimes, one could look at the path and rise of a Life Destruction or Divine Sea genius to predict that they would become a Holy Lord level powerhouse in the future. But, there were very few individuals that would dare to make such a prediction for a World King powerhouse. Between a Holy Lord and a World King, the difference couldn't be described as even a moat.

"Listening to Senior's meaning, you intend on using the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree on Lin Ming? You want to bet Carefree Island's future on Lin Ming?"

White Brook's words had thorns to them. And, these words also had many Elders nodding along with him. To rely on Lin Ming alone to raise Carefree Island into a World King level Holy Land was far too uncertain a matter. But, there were clear advantages to the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. Once it was gone, their losses would be immediately seen!

“Yes! I hope that you can also understand something, and that is that both the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree and Carefree Palace were brought to Carefree Island by me. Since I brought them here, I can also take them away. Today, I am only informing you of my decision. It is not up for discussion!”

“Skywhite, I’ll leave you the responsibility of having them sign the curse contract. Lin Ming, you come with me!”

Mo Riverbliss took out a black scroll from her spatial ring. With a flick of her hand, the scroll flew towards Xiao Skywhite. At the same time, Mo Riverbliss sent out a beam of light that wrapped around Lin Ming and carried him off to another space-time.

As soon as Lin Ming and Mo Riverbliss left, all of the Elders burst into vivid discussion. Everything that happened today was too sudden for them and they were finding it hard to accept. An absolute overlord had suddenly appeared in Carefree Island, and she had actually held onto the highest authority and control of Carefree Island this entire time, yet none of them were aware of it.

She controlled the spirit artifact that was Carefree Palace while having strength approaching that of a World King. In just these two aspects alone, none of them had the ability to resist.

Moreover, Xiao Skywhite was clearly supporting Mo Riverbliss. To be more brutally honest, every Island Master had only been Mo Riverbliss’s puppet. They were only able to follow whatever orders she gave.

“Do we just completely obey that woman’s plans and do whatever she says to do?” The one to speak was Great Elder Xiao Haogan. In order to avoid Island Master Xiao Skywhite, he spoke to some of the dissatisfied Elders with a true essence sound transmission.

“What else can we do? Do you plan on resisting her?”

“Didn’t you hear what she said? We will bet everything along with our Carefree Island’s most precious resources and pour all of that into Lin Ming. Who knows how that boy will develop in the future? I admit that he will one day become a Holy Lord, but what use is a Holy Lord? Can that bring many benefits to us?” Xiao Haogan said, privately stirring up the rebellious spirits in these Elders’ hearts. Xiao Haogan was well aware that Lin Ming didn’t have even the tiniest good impression of him. Let alone him not believing that Lin Ming would become a Great World King, even if Lin Ming were able to smoothly step into the World King realm and allow Carefree Island to enter a flourishing period, that wouldn’t bring the least bit of an advantage to him. It was even possible that Lin Ming would remember this old grudge and then secretly retaliate against him. With Lin Ming’s strength, wouldn’t taking revenge against him be as simple as squashing an ant?

In this sort of situation, Xiao Haogan would rather have Carefree Island halt its progress where it was than see Lin Ming rise to power.

“Just shut it! Although I think that woman’s plans are a bit too fantastical, no one here can resist her. In any case, the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree was hers to begin with so she can give it to whoever she wishes.”

“What a pity… there are so many good things used on Lin Ming. It’s just like those mortal games where people take lottery drawings in hope of a reward. No matter how small the chance is, they think they can try their luck by putting in more and more money. I don’t oppose this, but for that woman to place such a great investment on such a slim chance of hitting the greatest prize, that is really…”

Many Elders shook their heads. Lin Ming was indeed talented. He was beyond extraordinary if placed within Carefree Island, but what if he were placed within the entire Divine Realm?

“In the future, Lin Ming will be able to reach the peak Holy Lord realm. With the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, any powerhouse can be raised to the peak of the Holy Lord realm. However, the gains aren’t equal to the losses…” Xiao Haogan said again, trying to instigate more people. The other Elders also had the same feeling. But, what could they say? What significance was there in complaining?

At this time, Island Master Xiao Skywhite unraveled the scroll that Mo Riverbliss left behind. Countless mystical runes covered this scroll and an ancient aura surged out from it.

This scroll was a spirit artifact!

Although it wasn't some high level spirit artifact, a spirit artifact was still a spirit artifact. All of the Elders present suddenly widened their eyes.

A spirit artifact scroll?

Xiao Skywhite said, "This is a lifesoul vow. Senior has already placed a drop of her blood essence on this scroll as a catalyst. Everyone here must leave behind a drop of blood and a wisp of their soul on this scroll, as well as make a vow that none of you will reveal even half a word about seeing Senior Mo today. Otherwise, you will suffer a backlash from this lifesoul vow and immediately die. The effects of this vow will continue for 300 years. Afterwards, the vow will automatically expire."

A lifesoul vow was a contract that high level martial artists signed with low level martial artists, using their own blood essence as the catalyst. The medium of this vow was a spirit artifact scroll. Of course, if a martial artist left their blood essence and soul wisp on this scroll, then once this contract expired or was canceled, they would be able to recover it. It couldn't be considered a loss.

Mo Riverbliss's identity was extremely sensitive. There were numerous World King level Holy Lands in the Divine Realm, but they also weren't too common. If one were to find out which World King level Holy Lands were destroyed in the past, then one could slowly infer Mo Riverbliss's identity. Regarding this, Mo Riverbliss certainly had to prevent it. She didn't have much trust towards these Elders.

"Also… for the upcoming period of time, please do not go out nor try to go out. What do you think?"

Xiao Skywhite smiled as he spoke. If Mo Riverbliss didn't appear then it would have been fine. But once she appeared in front of others, that would mean that Carefree Island would enter a highly vigilant state and that the plan to reconstruct the Verdant Feather Holy Lands would begin.

“This…” All of the Elders glanced at each other, dawning horror and alarm on their faces. If Mo Riverbliss hadn’t appeared in front of them until now, that was because her status needed to be kept a secret. It was likely that predecessor of Carefree Island would have to face some great blood enemy!

This caused all of them to feel bitter in their hearts. This was simply a ticking time bomb. Not only did this so called ‘royal bloodline’ not bring them any advantages, but it instead might bring them a bloody calamity.

Just what was going on?

The Elders present wanted to curse. But, cursing was cursing. They also knew that Mo Riverbliss was paying attention to everything that was happening here. They had no choice but to sign this contract and to do so immediately. They could only suppress the sorrow in their hearts and then walk in front of that spirit artifact scroll and begin to sign the lifesoul contract…

And at this time, in another dimension realm of Carefree Palace, Lin Ming was sitting on the side of a lotus throne. Blue energy surrounded him, blossoming like a blue lotus.

Mo Eversnow had already emerged from the Magic Cube space, her entire body emitting a faint ethereal glow. She was like an immortal fairy, untainted by the world.

Mo Riverbliss stood at the side of Mo Eversnow, quietly watching Lin Ming. She said, “Little Snow, aunty has done everything that you planned. Aiya… I really have no idea if this is the right or wrong path.”

Mo Riverbliss’s actions in front of the Council of Elders had all been at the bidding of Mo Eversnow. Mo Riverbliss didn’t originally believe that placing all hopes of reforming the Verdant Feather Holy Lands on Lin Ming was the wisest decision. After all, the hope of becoming a Great World King was far too slim.

But besides depending on Lin Ming, Mo Riverbliss didn't have any better method. Moreover, she also believed in Mo Eversnow and fully supported her, thus agreeing with her.

It had to be known that Mo Eversnow had created many miracles in the past, when the Verdant Feather Holy Lands still existed. For instance, when she decided to dual cultivate body and energy, everyone in the Mo Family, including the old Holy Lord, completely opposed her decision. However, she did as she wanted and decisively chose to cultivate the Celestial Tyrant Manual.

Finally, Mo Eversnow had truly slowed down her progress in reaching the World King realm because of the Celestial Tyrant Manual. But, Mo Eversnow had undoubtedly achieved tremendous results in her body transformation system technique. When Tian Mingzi had betrayed the Verdant Feather Holy Lands and started his rebellion, Mo Eversnow had only been a step away from opening the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

This was a simply unbelievable result.

Thus, Mo Riverbliss believed in Mo Eversnow's beliefs. This was why she decided to spare no effort to raise Lin Ming, whether it was consuming her cultivation to help him refine the supreme dragon bone, or now giving him the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree.

"Aunty, you don't seem to be too optimistic about my decision?" Mo Eversnow said with a faint smile.

"I truly don't feel too optimistic. But, there's nothing else I can do; what's done is done." Mo Riverbliss helplessly said, "We are facing Tian Mingzi, someone who long ago became a World King. Underneath his shadow, it is nearly impossible to reform the Verdant Feather Hold Lands. I have no other choice. The truth is that Lin Ming is indeed extraordinary, but wasn't Tian Mingzi of the past also the same? And, Lin Ming was also born several tens of thousands of years after Tian Mingzi. To have him struggle with Tian Mingzi… that is far too difficult."

Mo Eversnow also knew of this point. She confidently said, “Aunty, I believe in my own judgment. You just wait and see.”

“Aiya, that’s what I’ve been doing all this time. Since I’ve already started, I must follow this through to the end with all I have.”

Whether or not she could raise Lin Ming, this was the final great effort she could put in for the reconstruction of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. After all, she didn’t have too much lifespan remaining. If her efforts failed this time, she would no longer have any time and energy left to devise a new plan.

“I will go and prepare the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. Lin Ming can now… attack Ninefall.”

“Lin Ming’s accumulations are enough. He is 31 years old. To reach Ninefall at 31 years of age is already considered quite slow. For him to suppress his cultivation to this stage, his foundation can be no more solid than it is now. With so many heavenly materials supporting him, I have no idea what the scene will be when he breaks through to Ninefall.”

Mo Eversnow said with anticipation, her eyes full of hope. Lin Ming had experienced the war in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm and had used this long period to fuse all of the accumulated energy in his body. Now, he had completely absorbed the dragon marrow blood that was in his body.

This was the best timing for him to attack Ninefall.

Chapter 1115 – Ten Severing Dao

Chapter 1115 – Ten Severing Dao

…

…

…

“What? Lin Ming is about to cross Ninefall and he wants the 12 of us to serve as his Protectors, and also to seal up the sect?”

News of Lin Ming crossing Ninefall was spread out by Mo Riverbliss, with the arrangements being made by Xiao Skywhite. This was because Mo Riverbliss estimated that the momentum coming from Lin Ming’s Ninefall crossing wouldn’t be small at all. Moreover, this momentum would form origin energy clouds that would naturally condense the Heavenly Dao Laws. There were endless profound mysteries contained within these Laws and they were extremely difficult to conceal.

If the momentum was too great then it would be easy to attract attention from other influences. Whether it was people knowing that someone was crossing Ninefall, or whether they mistook it for some heavenly material being born, any situation that brought attention would be troublesome. After all, Carefree Island was a sect with an extremely shallow background and Mo Riverbliss didn’t want to draw too much attention to herself. Thus, the wisest choice was for Lin Ming to cross Ninefall in the most subdued way possible.

Concealing the Heavenly Dao Laws’ fluctuations wasn’t some trifling matter that could be easily done by herself. Thus, Mo Riverbliss had Xiao Skywhite gather 12 Elders to arrange a great concealing array formation to shield the origin energy fluctuations that would come from Lin Ming’s Ninefall. This was how his Ninefall would pass in the most muted way possible and how they would overcome this trial.

"Is this a joke? An Eightfall junior is attacking Ninefall and yet we have to seal up the sect for this? The 12 of us also have to serve as his Protectors to conceal the heaven and earth origin energy fluctuations? Isn't this making a big deal over nothing at all? If someone didn't have inside information and knew that he was crossing Ninefall, they would think he was attacking the Holy Lord realm! If he has such great momentum when crossing Ninefall, wouldn't the heavens shatter when he attacks the Divine Lord realm?"

"This is indeed a bit strange."

Great Elder Xiao Haogan drily said. He was among the 12 Elders that had been gathered together for this event.

There were many people of Carefree Island that weren't too satisfied with this sudden overlord Mo Riverbliss who had popped up out of nowhere. As soon as she appeared, her first words were a bunch of fantastical and improbable possibilities as she unfolded her so-called 'grand plan'. Then, she took away the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree and now even passed out such a bizarre order. She wanted 12 Divine Lord realm Elders to help serve as Protectors for an Eightfall junior attacking Ninefall.

How could they feel comfortable about this in their hearts?

Island Master Xiao Skywhite frowned. "You all had best be a bit more serious. Lin Ming's current strength is indeed nothing to you now, but the origin energy cloud fluctuations will come from the Heavenly Dao Laws. His strength is irrelevant to this. This will be equal to you concealing the worldly fluctuations of the Great Dao itself; it won't be easy!"

"Gee, this really does sound so kick ass. Are you saying that we'll have to resist the Heavenly Dao Laws?" Xiao Haogan mocked. When a martial artist crossed Ninefall, it was indeed true that they would summon the Heavenly Dao Laws. But, these Heavenly Dao Laws would only baptize a martial artist with some Law fragments, it wouldn't attack them at all. If one said they had to resist the Heavenly Dao Laws, that was truly strange.

Xiao Skywhite's face darkened. "These are Senior's commands! You all had best not screw this up, or the consequences will be dire!"

While Lin Ming was crossing Ninefall, Mo Riverbliss had to help him refine the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. As for Xiao Skywhite, he had to control Carefree Palace so that there was enough heaven and earth origin energy supplied to him. The mission of concealing the origin energy cloud fluctuations naturally fell on the shoulders of these Elders.

"That's right. The Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree has already been taken by Senior to where Lin Ming is closing up in Carefree Island. From now on, there will no longer be Ten Severing Dao Fruits. As for the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Wine, there will only be what remains in the sect treasure vaults, so do not use it as you please."

Xiao Skywhite's words suddenly startled Xiao Haogan. "What do you mean? The Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree was brought to where Lin Ming is in seclusion? Could that woman be planning on using the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to help Lin Ming cross Ninefall?"

As Xiao Haogan thought of this, his eyes widened to plates. He had originally thought that Mo Riverbliss was planning to keep the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to help Lin Ming cross the Divine Lord realm in the future, or perhaps even attack the Holy Lord realm. But, she was actually planning on using it to help Lin Ming cross Ninefall?

Even an absolute waste of nature's gifts couldn't describe this!

"Yes." Xiao Skywhite nodded.

"What!? What kind of joke is this!? That is a whole Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree! Even using it to attack the Divine Lord realm would be a waste, but to use it to cross Ninefall!? That is beyond careless!"

Xiao Skywhite looked at Xiao Haogan and said, "Lin Ming is a dual body and energy cultivator. It is already extremely difficult to cross Ninefall to begin with. Moreover... to seek Ninefall is to find the Nine Divine Shifts. The ninth stage of Life Destruction is one of the most important realms in a martial artist’s life. They will have to withstand the baptism of the Heavenly Dao Laws during this realm. Naturally, the more accumulations one has, the more potent it will be and the greater the advantages one will obtain. With Lin Ming’s strength, I have no idea what sort of materials or medicines will satisfy his requirements for crossing the Divine Lord realm in the future…”

“Dual body and energy cultivation?”

Xiao Haogan met the eyes of everyone around him, seeing incredible disbelief reflected in them all. “Lin Ming is a dual body and energy cultivator?”

The truth was that it wasn’t difficult to find out if one dual cultivated body and energy. It was just that they had never seen Lin Ming fight with their own eyes and they also didn’t especially use their divine sense to examine Lin Ming’s cultivation. Thus, they naturally had no idea that Lin Ming also dual cultivated in the body transformation system.

In the Divine Realm, there was a minority of martial artists that would practice the Eight Inner Hidden Gates in order to open the gate that increased perception, the Gate of Opening. But, that was only an extremely superficial attempt. They would stop after opening the Gate of Opening and only resume in their body transformation technique after completing the Life Destruction realm, all in order to create less trouble when crossing Ninefall.

In fact, if they could not perfectly open the Gate of Opening, then the perception they gained would also be limited. It could only be described as a weak effect.

In short, dual body and energy cultivating martial artists were extremely rare in the Divine Realm. Only a few peak geniuses of super Holy Lands would dare to tread such a path. For instance, the descendants of Empyreans or the most wonderful successors of Great World Kings were such people. Only when one had so much talent that they didn’t know what to do with it, and so many resources that they couldn’t even throw them away fast enough, would someone choose such an arduous and difficult path like dual body and energy cultivation. Every person that chose this path was a monstrous genius; they could only be described as abnormal freaks. And listening to Xiao Skywhite's words, it was clear that Lin Ming was this type of person!

"Insane! He's too insane! I believed that this mysterious woman's thoughts of training Lin Ming into a Great World King were nothing more than a fantasy, but he could at least become a powerful Holy Lord. Now, I finally know that Lin Ming is a dual body and energy cultivator. Does he think that his father is an Empyrean or something? Where is he going to get so many resources? And even if he has these resources, how can he guarantee that he will be successful in his cultivation?"

"That's right. This is truly a bottomless pit. Upon reaching the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, every step requires an increasingly great amount of resources. As for the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, that is simply a legendary realm, a realm that defies the will of the heavens!"

"Not to mention the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, but for a dual body and energy cultivator, crossing Ninefall itself is one of their most catastrophic moments! Ever since the Laws of the universe changed, the world no longer condones dual body and energy cultivators. To seek Ninefall is to focus on decomposing the body and completely transforming oneself into a spirit body. But, body transformation focuses on tempering the human body, awakening and altering the body so that one's flesh and blood is as hard and tough as metal essence. How could such tough flesh and blood completely decompose? These two cultivation systems are contradictory to begin with! The higher one's body transformation technique, the more difficult it is to cross Life Destruction!"

"If Lin Ming's body transformation technique realm is low, then that's fine. But if it's high, then I think that what we should be considering is not concealing the origin energy fluctuations from him crossing Ninefall, but rather if his Ninefall can succeed at all!"

An Elder suddenly said. Everyone present glanced at each other with blank dismay. If they used a Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree for a genius to fail Ninefall, then that sort of joke wouldn't be funny at all.

…………

At this time, in a separate time-space within Carefree Palace, Lin Ming sat down on a bed. A fluttering, mottled old tree stood in front of him.

When Lin Ming imagined the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, he imagined the divine thunder tree that existed in the Temple of Marvels. That divine thunder tree had stood straight and tall, piercing through the skies. It was so wide that not even dozens of people gathered together could hold hands and wrap all the way around it.

However, he didn't expect that this so-called Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree would only be seven feet high. Its highest branches and leaves just reached Lin Ming's shoulders.

The bark was cracked, with layers upon layers curled outwards just like the scales of a dragon. The trunk was covered with winding twists, and the tree was covered with holes and fissures. There were even some places where the trunk was exposed, revealing the heartwood of the tree.

Its branches were like twisting snakes that hovered in the air, circling around and around each other until they formed a dragon-tight grip, locked together in a knot that would exist forever.

Its leaves were all a faded yellow, and they were also very sparse. Every leaf seemed different. Just from looking at these leaves, one felt an inexplicably painful and desolate feeling in their heart, as if their souls were being deprived.

Between these leaves, there were fruits that hung sporadically. After counting all of them, there were ten fruits in total – no more, no less. These ten fruits came in all shapes and colors. There was a black one, a yellow one, a white one…

“This is the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree?” Lin Ming sucked in a light breath. He had no idea why, but looking at this tree made him feel as if his soul was being suppressed. It was hard to imagine that this was a magical treasure formed by the Great Dao itself.

“Correct. The reason that the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree has such a name is that there are ten fruits. After one is eaten, another will be born. When one eats these ten fruits they will experience ten different severings. That is to sever the heart, sever the lungs, sever the liver, sever the kidney, sever the spleen, sever the gallbladder, sever the bones, sever the blood, sever the flesh, and sever the intestines.

“If any of these ten fruits were to be eaten by a mortal, they would immediately die a miserable and violent death. The heart severing makes the face black, with no left wrist pulse. The lung severing makes the face red with no right wrist pulse. The liver severing makes the face white with no arterial pulse. The kidney severing makes the face yellow with no chi pulse. The spleen severing makes the face blue with no vein pulse…

“When these ten severings are gathered together, all life vitality will be severed from the body. One’s meridians would stop, the energy within them would stagnate, and it would be no different from death!

“But as the human body is in a deathly state, a person’s soul and mind would actually obtain the vitalizing strength of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, and they would reach a state of infinite emptiness. With their soul wandering the skies and their mind completely empty, they would be able to sense the Heavenly Dao Laws themselves. This is why this tree is called the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree!

“When an ordinary martial artist eats a fruit, their physical body isn’t able to withstand it. This is why Carefree Island takes the Ten Severing Dao Fruits and uses them to make wine. This is to dilute the medicinal efficacy to thousandths of a percent so that a martial artist can use it to perceive the Laws.

“But for you, it is different. You have opened the first six gates of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and you have also absorbed dragon marrow, phoenix essence, and even fused with the supreme dragon bone. It should be possible for you to withstand the full strength of the Ten Severing Dao Fruits. After withstanding these ten severings, you will be able to attack Ninefall in a single go and truly separate yourself from any sort of mortal mediocrity.”

“So that’s how it is…” As Lin Ming heard Mo Riverbliss’s explanation, he began to size up the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree all over again. He thought that the name of this heaven-step miracle medicine was a bit strange, but he never imagined it would contain such odd truths.

“Then… let us start. I will help you absorb the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree and attack Ninefall!”

Mo Riverbliss sat down in front of Lin Ming.

Chapter 1116 – Attacking Ninefall

Chapter 1116 – Attacking Ninefall

…

…

…

In a dimensional realm of Carefree Palace, moonlight fell over the world, sprinkling down like grains of silver sand. Between the vast dark blue endless skies, great rivers of stars flowed to the endless horizon, mysterious and silent.

Underneath this sky, Lin Ming was floating in the air in a cross-legged position. His long hair fluttered in the night wind. As he opened his eyes, his pupils were clearer than pure mountain spring pools. At this time, he was like an immortal god, bathing in endless starlight, proud and independent from the world.

Mo Riverbliss floated in front of Lin Ming. Her hands twisted together rapidly, spitting out thousands upon thousands of runes that covered the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. At this moment, the old and withered Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree was glowing with endless vitality. The originally twisted roots began to stretch outwards, and the yellowed leaves also began to produce new sprouts.

Mo Riverbliss was refining the very essence of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree and completely integrating all of that into Lin Ming's body. The ten fruits alone were able to allow an ordinary martial artist perceive the Dao. But, for someone like Lin Ming who had opened the first six gates of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and who had also absorbed the supreme dragon bone, making his entire bone structure as hard as divine metal, to help him completely decompose his physical body and shatter his dantian to help him cross Ninefall was not something that just perceiving the Dao could accomplish. It required a powerful energy and an incomparably vast amount of heaven and earth origin energy!

Otherwise, there was no way to struggle against the Heavenly Dao Laws that had changed in ancient times.

The ten fruits were completely turned into masses of origin energy light underneath the refining strength of Mo Riverbliss's true essence.

"Sever the heart!"

Mo Riverbliss flicked her finger and a black light shot out like an arrow, sinking into Lin Ming's body. At that moment, Lin Ming suddenly felt as if a 10,000 jin steel ball had smashed into his heart, causing his heartbeat to immediately stop and his blood flow to nearly reverse.

Lin Ming hadn't yet recovered from this strike to his heart when Mo Riverbliss flicked a second finger and a mass of red light shot towards him.

"Sever the lungs!"

Puff!

Lin Ming's body shook. He felt his chest fall deathly still, making it hard for him to breathe.

"Sever the bones!"

Mo Riverbliss continued to shoot out groups of floating light. Sever the gallbladder, sever the blood, sever the flesh, sever the intestines, sever the liver…

Lin Ming's entire body was filled with the aura and energy of death. If he hadn't absorbed the dragon marrow and phoenix blood essence, his blood would have long since dried up and he would have died.

Soon, Lin Ming could no longer feel the existence of his body. At this time, his soul had reached an unprecedented level of etherealness and tranquility.

The mortal body was shackles that held down the soul. The flesh carried with it too many desires and too much pain. The five desires: wealth, sex, food, drink, fame, and sleep. The six temptations: color, form, sound, smell, taste, texture. All of these factors affected a human's ability to comprehend the world and caused them to develop distracting thoughts.

But, the Ten Severing Dao Fruits were able to completely sever the relationship between a person's soul and body.

At the same time, the Ten Severing Dao Fruits had an extremely vitalizing effect on the soul. They allowed a martial artist's soul to approach the Heavenly Dao Laws themselves, even if only for a short moment.

Lin Ming felt as if he had arrived in an unknown space. This space contained innumerable truths. If he wanted to perceive them one at a time, it would take him an uncountable number of years.

Lin Ming had no idea how long he floated in this mystical space. He had lost all sense of the body, and time had lost all significance to him.

And in Carefree Palace's separate time-space, Mo Riverbliss was watching over Lin Ming's body. At this time, the Lin Ming in front of her had lost all vitality and the fires of his life had dimmed down; he was no different from a dead person.

"It's almost ready…" Mo Riverbliss whispered to herself. In order to cross Ninefall, Lin Ming had taken the Ten Severing Dao Fruits to ruin his mortal body to the limit. And then, he would detonate the energy within himself. This was the so-called breaking and reforging. He would be pushed into an end end and then be reborn through nirvana.

With this method, he would be able to break through the shackles of the Heavenly Dao Laws. It would allow someone like Lin Ming, who had opened six gates in the body transformation system and who had also swallowed the supreme dragon bone, to complete

Ninefall, achieving the fusion of essence, energy, and divine. That was the ultimate symbol of Ninefall.

"Heaven and earth origin energy, fuse!"

Mo Riverbliss instantly thrust out thousands of seals as well as her own cultivation into the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. She had to penetrate the essence of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree into Lin Ming's body, and have it serve as the final catalyst for him to cross Ninefall.

With Mo Riverbliss's movements, all of the heaven and earth origin energy in Carefree Palace began to fluctuate. It tumbled up and down like the waves of a sea, rolling endlessly outwards.

"It's finally begun..."

Xiao Skywhite could feel the strange heaven and earth origin energy fluctuations occurring throughout Carefree Palace. He stood up. Underneath him was an altar carved from pure white jade. The ground around this altar was carved with a pattern of countless lines. Some of these lines were as thin as a thread of silk, and some were as thick as a thigh, as if they were great pythons.

All of these lines exuded a dim shimmer. This white jade altar was the array eye of Carefree Palace.

Through it, one could control the Carefree Palace spirit artifact.

When Lin Ming crossed Ninefall, he needed Xiao Skywhite to control Carefree Palace to gather heaven and earth origin energy. And now was the time for him to act.

Xiao Skywhite poured his true essence into the white jade altar. The altar began to spin and all of Carefree Palace began to exude a faint sheen. Heaven and earth origin energy for thousands of miles outwards began to surge and tumble. At the start, it was like a gentle breeze. However, the fluctuations became stronger and stronger, and finally they formed a giant origin energy vortex that centered around Carefree Palace.

Currently, Carefree Palace had been thoroughly sealed up, and there was a giant concealing array formation arranged on the island. But, the disciples on the island could see the bizarre phenomenon occurring in the space outside.

That surging tide-like origin energy caused them all to feel shocked.

“Mm? What’s happening?”

“Carefree Palace suddenly started to suck in heaven and earth origin energy. What are they planning to do?”

The young disciples simply didn’t know that Lin Ming was crossing Ninefall. There were many disciples who were still stunned silly that White Mirrorjade had been a traitor.

The glorious image that White Mirrorjade created was far too deeply ingrained in the minds of these young disciples. White Mirrorjade was someone who was skilled in winning over the hearts of others. He always maintained the appearance of a kind and gentle Elder Senior-apprentice Brother. Even if a disciple that didn’t have much of a future approached him to ask a question, White Mirrorjade would still patiently help them.

There were many people who couldn’t believe that such a friendly and affable Elder Senior-apprentice Brother had been a traitor. There were even some that were hostile towards Lin Ming for killing White Mirrorjade and exposing his true nature.

“Is it one of the Highest Elders practicing martial arts? It might even be one of the Highest Elders making a breakthrough…”

The young disciples all glanced at each other, a bit excited at this prospect. If it really was one of the Highest Elders making a breakthrough, then this was cause for celebration. This meant that Carefree Island’s strength would rise to yet another level.

The world phenomenon continued to grow without end, becoming increasingly strong. Many disciples began to emerge from their seclusion chambers, all of them filled with expressions of excitement at the chance to witness such a marvelous event.

Chapter 1117 – Ninefall Realm

Chapter 1117 – Ninefall Realm

…

…

…

Rumble rumble!

The surging heaven and earth origin energy had already formed a giant rainbow-hued vortex that extended for several hundred miles outwards. The rainbow vortex's center dropped down to Carefree Palace, similar to a titanic funnel whose end connected to Carefree Palace.

Carefree Palace gathered more and more of the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy. This origin energy was so thick that it had condensed into mist. Most of this mist was sucked into Carefree Palace, but some still remained outside where it formed origin energy rain.

With such a massive amount of heaven and earth origin energy that had Carefree Palace at its epicenter, the richness of this origin energy could be imagined!

As for Lin Ming, his seclusion spot was right there.

The Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree had been completely refined by Mo Riverbliss. When this incomparably pure energy that inherently contained the Source Laws entered Lin Ming's body, his withered body began to emit a blindingly bright light.

At this time, Lin Ming's body seemed to be dried up without the least bit of vitality. But, this was a phenomenon caused by the Ten Severing Dao Fruits. If one used a saint artifact to slash at Lin Ming’s body, they would find that he was still as hard as divine iron. Although his flesh, skeleton, and organs seemed to have lost all their vitality, their degree of hardness never weakened at all.

To decompose Lin Ming’s body was extremely difficult!

This was also the greatest difficulty that body transformation martial artists had to face when crossing Ninefall – they were unable to decompose their bodies!

Mo Riverbliss watched as Lin Ming’s withered body emitted a light like a rising sun, her face calm all the while. Ninefall would be Lin Ming’s most difficult pass to cross for some time. It would be much harder than him entering the Divine Sea or Divine Transformation realm in the future. Now, she began to use the spirit essence of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree and the massive amount of heaven and earth origin energy gathered by Carefree Palace to start refining Lin Ming’s body.

Refining his body bit by bit so that his Ninefall would reach the limit.

This was an incomparably long process. Lin Ming’s body itself was like a chunk of divine iron and this immense amount of heaven and earth origin energy was like true fire. This was to use true fire to slowly melt divine iron until it was liquid metal, and then temper it.

During this process, Lin Ming would have to withstand a tremendous amount of pain from having his body be refined by energy. As for Mo Riverbliss, she also had to shoulder a frightening use of her own energy; she would even lose a bit of her cultivation.

Woosh woosh woosh!

Mo Riverbliss pointed towards the lotus flower throne and began to shoot out a stream of mystical runes. Under her control, the heaven and earth origin energy there began to combust in a dazzling light. Lin Ming’s physical body began to slowly melt away, starting from his hair, his hands, to his skin, flesh, and blood.

A bit at a time, incomparably slowly.

Until now, Lin Ming had crossed eight stages of Life Destruction. Because he cultivated the body transformation system, passing each stage was a difficult task. Even so, from the point when Lin Ming detonated the true essence in his dantian and decomposed his body, it usually happened in a very brief moment of time. It wasn't like today, when his body would start melting away through little pieces.

Indeed, he was melting.

During the past Life Destructions, Lin Ming's physical body, dantian, and soul would be crushed into the tiniest particles and then tempered by energy.

But this time, his body was melting into droplets. This was a true liquid form.

No matter how small the tiny particles that his body disintegrated to before were, they still wouldn't be smaller than liquid.

Correspondingly, if one were to temper the body in such a state, the baptism of energy they would receive would be much more thorough.

In this dim and vague state with his vitality cut off, Lin Ming withstood the intense amounts of heaven and earth origin energy melting his body...

After nine full days, only then did the melting of Lin Ming's physical body complete. His flesh and blood, bones, organs, all of that was turned into liquid. In the surging heaven and earth origin energy, faint traces of red light shined in the air. This was his body undergoing the tempering of heaven and earth origin energy.

Lin Ming's dantian was also completely disintegrated, and his soul shattered, turning into the purest soul force that mixed into this strange 'fog of life'.

Strange Laws of the universe allowed all of this to happen. And beside Lin Ming, Mo Riverbliss also remained highly vigilant, her mind constantly tense. In these past nine days, she hadn't rested even once. And now, Lin Ming had only completed the start of Ninefall and was beginning to temper his physical body. This process would still continue onwards for a very long time.

It would take much longer for Lin Ming to cross Ninefall in comparison to other martial artists. And the phenomenon occurring outside of Carefree Palace also continued all this time…

In the blink of an eye, a month passed.

Hu – !

Many Elders gathered in a meeting chamber, the fiery light of a sound transmitting talisman burning in front of them.

This was Island Master Xiao Skywhite’s Carefree Command.

“The Island Master has issued an order. He wants us to go out and start preparations. Lin Ming is nearing the crescendo of his Ninefall and he wants us to go and ready the concealing array formation.” Xiao Haogan said, a bit of resistance in his voice.

Lin Ming was breaking through Ninefall, and their mission was to conceal the heaven and earth origin energy fluctuations that would arise during that time.

In the skies above Carefree Island, the rainbow-hued vortex of origin energy didn’t diminish at all. Rather, it only grew larger over time.

Fortunately, Carefree Island was extremely broad, otherwise this origin energy vortex might have extended into the sea.

This vivid scene and rich origin energy vortex had actually continued for an entire month!

This heaven and earth origin energy was gathered at the beckoning of Carefree Palace’s array formation. But in order to activate Carefree Palace’s array formation, a massive amount of violet sun stones needed to be consumed!

Xiao Skywhite suspected that in this month he had already used up billions of violet sun stones.

This was an extreme amount of resources! The young disciples had to experience a bitter life or death battle in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm in order to gather these resources.

Even though Carefree Island had obtained a great harvest in the last mission into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, they still couldn't afford to use up resources at such a prodigious rate.

And this was just crossing Ninefall! If one didn't know, then one would think that one of Carefree Island's Highest Elders was truly stepping into the Holy Lord realm!

Such a rich heaven and earth origin energy even caused origin energy rain to frequently fall all over Carefree Island.

Xiao Haogan looked at the origin energy rain falling down from the sky and pouted, a bit depressed. He said with a true essence sound transmission, "This is breaking through Ninefall? The entirety of Carefree Palace's array formation is used for him, and all of the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy for thousands of miles is gathered up here. Isn't this just a bit too exaggerated? If he attacks the Divine Lord realm in the future, then wouldn't he need to eat up powers like Carefree Palace as if they were candy to succeed?"

In these past days, underneath Xiao Haogan's words, the Elders that were dissatisfied with Mo Riverbliss had gathered together. Of course, they used true essence sound transmissions to speak; none of them dared to utter a single word out loud.

Most of the Elders more or less disagreed with Mo Riverbliss. A minority of them were neutral and didn't express any particular view.

"That's enough. Lin Ming is a dual body and energy cultivator, thus him crossing Ninefall is something that violates the Laws of the world and is the same as defying the will of the heavens. That is the only reason there is such massive momentum occurring. It's best if we just do as we're told. Even if any of us are dissatisfied, you all should be aware that her status is sensitive and cannot be made known. If we don't manage the array formation well enough, then that might arouse interest in Carefree Island. If that happens, we might attract the attention of this unknown mysterious enemy and be buried along with everyone here!"

A neutral Elder said. All of them couldn't help but fear Mo Riverbliss's mysterious blood enemy. If this mysterious enemy ever tried to take revenge, Mo Riverbliss might not be able to kill him and Carefree Island would encounter a true calamity. Carefree Island's roots were deeply connected to that destroyed Holy Land of the past, and it would be impossible for this mysterious enemy to let Carefree Island go.

Xiao Haogan dismissively said, "You're making a fuss over nothing. Even if Lin Ming summons a Nine Layered Heavens or even a 12 Layered Heavens during his Ninefall, so what? I can hold it down alone."

In the martial world, Ninefall would bring about different ranks of origin energy clouds and they also had different names.

Every single Layered Heavens of Ninefall corresponded with three miles of origin energy clouds. The first three Layered Heavens were considered the most basic steps of Ninefall. That would produce an origin energy cloud that was up to nine miles wide, and was known as the inferior three levels.

When crossing Ninefall, nearly 99% of martial artists would stop at these first inferior three levels. Of them, the most common were the Two Layered Heavens and Three Layered Heavens.

In Ninefall, from Four Layered Heavens to Six Layered Heavens, that was considered the intermediate three levels. When White Mirrorjade and Ye Rosewater crossed Ninefall, they had achieved a Six Layered Heavens and were considered part of the intermediate three levels.

After that were the superior three levels. That corresponded to Seven Layered Heavens up to Nine Layered Heavens.

To achieve a superior three levels, that would be someone who ranked at the very peak of a Holy Land. For instance, in the Ancient Phoenix Clan that would be an outstanding genius like Xiao Ping.

To reach the superior three levels and a Nine Layered Heavens was considered a great watershed for most martial artists. To them, they took nine as the supreme number, and it was said that once one reached a Nine Layered Heavens, they could reverse the universe with but a snap of their fingers! This meant that if a martial artist could reach a Nine Layered Heavens during their Ninefall and receive the baptism of the Heavenly Dao Laws, then they would surely be able to become a Holy Lord in the future. If they became a Holy Lord, they would be able to reverse yin and yang and turn over the world.

However, above the completion of the superior three levels, there was a boundary even higher than Nine Layered Heavens. Above that were the extreme three levels. The extreme three levels extended up to 12 Layered Heavens during Ninefall. That was yet another boundary.

Among the juniors of the four God Beast Clans, there had only been a single one able to achieve an extreme three level Ninefall, and that was the Ancient Dragon Clan’s Dragon One. Even if the current Lin Ming were to fight with the middle Divine Sea Dragon One, he still wouldn’t have full assurance of defeating him and could only guarantee that he would be able to retreat with his life intact.

Above the extreme three levels was yet another boundary, the absolute three levels. But to the Elders of Carefree Island, this boundary was nothing but a legend.

The absolute three levels would only appear in a World King level Holy Land. For instance, it would have to be a monstrous genius like Crimson Strifecloud.

To the Elders of Carefree Island, a World King level Holy Land was simply an existence that they couldn’t touch. And, when the genius disciples of a World King level Holy Land crossed Ninefall, they would do so in a top secret location. Where would these Elders of Carefree Island ever have had the chance to see them?

Let alone the illusory absolute three levels, even a Seven Layered Heavens superior three levels was rarely seen by these Elders.

They were only vaguely aware that there existed boundaries such as the extreme three levels and absolute three levels in this world. Even in the absolute three levels, there were monstrous geniuses that surpassed the rest. As for what sort of phenomenon would occur when they crossed Life Destruction, none of them knew.

Thus, when the Elders present suddenly heard Xiao Haogan mention a 12 Layered Heavens extreme three levels, all of them were shocked.

“12 Layered Heavens, perfect extreme three levels? Great Elder, are you saying that Lin Ming can cross a 12 Layered Heavens Ninefall?” An Elder asked with disbelief in his voice. He had no idea what a 12 Layered Heavens 36 mile origin energy cloud would look like.

Chapter 1118 – Surging Origin Energy Clouds

Chapter 1118 – Surging Origin Energy Clouds

…

…

…

The Elders of Carefree Island were all Divine Lord realm powerhouses. In their opinion, for an inferior three levels Ninefall genius to become a Divine Lord master wasn't a problem. In terms of experience and knowledge, they were far inferior to Xiao Haogan.

Xiao Haogan humphed and said, "Humph, who cares about crossing a 12 Layered Heavens Ninefall. Do you think that a 12 Layered Heavens Ninefall is mind-bogglingly amazing or something? In fact, in the vast Divine Realm there are countless geniuses that achieve a 12 Layered Heavens Ninefall! I even saw with my own eyes a genius of a Holy Land crossing an extreme three levels 11 Layered Heavens!"

As Xiao Haogan spoke, many Elders oohed and aahed in exclaim. To witness an extreme three levels Life Destruction was also a small lucky chance. It was similar to a mortal being able to see a meteor shower. It was a rare occurrence that could arouse one's curiosity and give some minor inspirations.

"So Great Elder has already experienced an extreme three levels Ninefall."

"Mm! A Nine Layered Heavens Ninefall genius, if they don't die, will easily become a Holy Lord in the future. Then, above that is the 10 Layered Heavens to the 12 Layered Heavens. Those that can achieve this can smoothly and steadily enter the Holy Lord realm. Those martial artists will one day manage to achieve large success in the Holy Lord realm. The difference between an ordinary Holy Lord and a large success Holy Lord is immense! That woman has spent so many resources to raise Lin Ming, and then if that is added to his already decent talent, there's nothing strange about being able to raise a large success Holy Lord!"

Xiao Haogan sneered, speaking with disdain. Lin Ming was an incomparably monstrous talent, but from his mouth he had called Lin Ming a decent talent instead. As the Elders present heard this, their expressions became a bit strange. Xiao Haogan was apparently unwilling to toss Lin Ming any praise.

"It is said that a high level Ninefall will have a world phenomenon following it. Great Elder, do you think that a 12 Layered Heavens Ninefall would have any type of world phenomenon?"

Another Elder asked. According to the ancient texts, a high level Ninefall would always be accompanied by worldly phenomena. It was said all of these various phenomena would be animated differently according to that martial artist's experiences and strengths. For instance, there were world phenomena that followed a martial artist's cultivation methods, martial intents, battle spirit, and other such facets of their martial arts.

There were even some famous martial artists that would gain a future title from the world phenomenon produced during their Ninefall. For instance, the Great World King of True Martial Great World had a special title – the Conch World King.

The reason that he had such a strange title was that during his Ninefall, the origin energy clouds around him had naturally condensed into the form of a giant conch phantom. Then, that conch had emitted a terrifying sound that had passed out for over 800,000 miles. Its sound had been able to crack stone, a rumbling thunder that continued for infinity.

Through a radius of 800,000 miles, there was no barrier that could stop this sound.

This was also a reasonable matter. In the past, the Conch World King's cultivation had been at the ninth stage of Life Destruction. But, the penetrating power of that sound had been irrelevant to his cultivation, because the sound had come from the Heavenly Dao Laws.

How could any sort of ordinary sound barrier prevent the sound formed by the world Laws?

“World phenomenon? It’s not that simple at all! Do you think world phenomena are like cabbages you can buy from some street stall? The reason that phenomena are called phenomena is that very few of them appear! Let alone 10 Layered Heavens to Twelve Layers Heavens, even 13 Layered Heavens to 15 Layered Heavens wouldn’t produce a world phenomenon! A world phenomenon needs even higher Layered Heavens to appear!”

“How high is higher? What is above the absolute three levels?”

“That’s right, I’m also curious. Just how many Layered Heavens can Ninefall achieve?”

In the world of martial artists, all inheritances were kept under extremely strict control. Rare cultivation methods, array formation principles, alchemy skills, Heavenly Dao Laws, and even training experience, all of them were tightly controlled within a sect. It was impossible for a low level sect to know what was recorded in the ancient texts of a World King level Holy Land. Thus, to these Elders, the mysteries of higher level Ninefalls had always been a riddle.

Of course, Xiao Haogan didn’t know that much more than the Elders present. As they asked him this question, he was immediately stumped for an answer.

He opened his mouth before closing it, pausing for a moment and then vaguely saying, “There’s no meaning in the likes of us knowing these types of things. In any case, we can’t do anything with that information. But, during Lin Ming’s Ninefall process, we can at least understand the process of an extreme three levels Ninefall. I can only hope that Lin Ming won’t disappoint us too much. If he fails his Ninefall because his body transformation boundary is too high, that will simply be a joke.”

As Xiao Haogan spoke, a massive explosion rang outside. The heaven and earth origin energy around Carefree Island violently shook. In that moment, the heaven and earth origin energy vortex that was spinning around was vigorously stirred up, as if there was some change happening to it.

Xiao Haogan's eyes widened. "Mm? It looks like Lin Ming succeeded in his Life Destruction and he is about to reform his mortal body. Also, I suppose his body transformation boundary isn't too high. If it was too high then his body wouldn't have broken down enough and he would have failed in his Ninefall.

"Everyone man your stations. Although this is making a big fuss over nothing, it is still an order from that woman. We cannot disobey her, so we should at least put on some semblance of effort."

As Xiao Haogan spoke, the other 11 Elders flew to their positions. They began to control the array formations and strengthen them to conceal any strange occurrences.

At this time, deep in Carefree Palace, Lin Ming was in a completely liquid state of flesh, blood, and bone. After being tempered for over a month, he was indeed reaching the final act of his Ninefall.

And for a martial artist that was crossing Ninefall, this final moment was the most critical time throughout the entire process. That was because this point was when a martial artist was completely reforming their body from the basics, and truly stepping onto the road of god, where they would undergo the baptism of the Heavenly Dao Laws. This was the so called ritual of becoming god!

During the ritual of becoming god, the true origin energy clouds would form. This ritual would decide how many Layered Heavens a martial artist crossed. A martial artist would bathe in these origin energy clouds, directly fusing with the fragments of the world Laws. If they could thoroughly fuse with these Laws, the Great Dao runes would be carved into their very flesh and blood. The advantages this gave to one's future cultivation could be imagined!

"Begin!"

After continuing for a month without rest, Mo Riverbliss appeared a bit exhausted. She took a deep breath, her sharp eyesight seeming to pierce through Carefree Island and see the heaven and earth origin energy gathering outside.

She knew that this was the final stretch. This moment was the fruit of all her cumulative efforts!

This moment would tell her whether or not Mo Eversnow's judgment was correct, and whether or not it was worth her effort to exhaust herself for a month and use up the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree. This would tell her whether or not her painstaking effort of was worth it, and just what limits Lin Ming would be able to arrive to in the future. From this final Ninefall moment, from how many of the Heavenly Dao Laws Lin Ming would bathe in, one would be able to estimate his future potential!

To seek Ninefall and find the Nine Divine Shifts – the ninth stage of Life Destruction was the transitional point from when a mortal became divine. Before a martial artist became a Holy Lord, this would be their most important boundary. It could be called the foundation of them becoming divine!

If this foundation was solid, they could form a vast monument hundreds of thousands of feet high atop of it. If this foundation was shaky, it would be difficult to take even the tiniest step into the Divine Lord realm.

Hu hu hu – !

Winds surged between the heavens and earth. Heaven and earth origin energy tumbled about like endless waves. The origin energy cloud hadn't yet started to form, but a series of changes was already occurring in the skies above Carefree Island.

All around Carefree Palace, the Elders who managed the array formation watched this scene that seemed to discolor the world. An Elder whispered, "Great Elder, the origin energy cloud should be forming soon. Looking at this momentum, it shouldn't be minor at all…"

"Mm, it… it should be… quite large."

Xiao Haogan gulped, nodding. As for what this origin energy cloud would be like, he hadn’t the slightest idea in his heart.

Chapter 1119 – Where Lies the Limit?

Chapter 1119 – Where Lies the Limit?

…

…

…

High above the sea of clouds around Carefree Palace, the origin energy surged about. The winds became more and more turbulent, and the weather turned increasingly dark and stormy. Vaguely, one could make out an auspicious rainbow-hued divine halo of light surrounding all of Carefree Palace. This colorful light was created by all the different types of energy gathered around Carefree Palace.

Whoosh!

Two hazy lights shot out from Carefree Palace. One of them was Carefree Island's Island Master, Xiao Skywhite. As for the other, they were completely wrapped in a bright white light, making one unable to discern their appearance at all. This person seemed like a profound woman that had descended from the highest heavens.

Great Elder Xiao Haogan instantly recognized this woman. It was Mo Riverbliss herself!

"Those two fellows also came out…"

Xiao Haogan whispered. If Mo Riverbliss and Xiao Skywhite emerged, then that proved that Lin Ming's Ninefall was truly coming to an end. At this time, Mo Riverbliss had done everything she could do. The final stretch would all depend on Lin Ming himself.

Following that, a white-robed man slowly flew up from the skies above Carefree Pavilion. This person had a wizened appearance. He was the strongest master in Carefree Island outside of Mo Riverbliss, Highest Elder White Brook!

Behind White Brook were two other old men. They were also Highest Elders of Carefree Island. They had once been Vice Island Masters, but in terms of strength and status, they were worse than White Brook.

As the many disciples of Carefree Island saw these three people, all of them were shocked. It was naturally impossible for them to recognize Mo Riverbliss, who was shrouded in a bright white light, but there were enough disciples that were able to recognize White Brook and the other Highest Elders.

“Heavens! Isn’t that our Carefree Island’s three Highest Elders? Even Island Master Xiao is there!”

“Why would they all come out together? I thought that one of them was making a breakthrough, but now it seems that it’s someone else. Just who is in Carefree Palace?”

All of the disciples present were floored. As young disciples, they had never seen such a great scene as they had today. Naturally, they all thought that this sort of world phenomenon could only be produced by a late Divine Lord powerhouse.

At this point, a resonant cry resounded from the depths of Carefree Palace, shaking through the world, piercing into the heavens!

This sound was like the roar of a True Dragon awakening from a deep slumber, singing to the heavens!

After that, from the vault of Carefree Palace, a divine light lit up the world. A pure blood energy turned the clouds crimson. The red light penetrated through the skies, bathing everything in crimson, blinding everyone’s eyes.

Hu – hu – !

The condensed blood energy swirled about, manifesting into the shape of a red True Dragon. It rampaged through the skies, washing all of the clouds away. In the skies above Carefree Island for several hundred miles, there was only this blood energy dragon form dancing throughout, spurring the universe!

As this blood energy dragon rollicked in the air, a vast power of blood vitality surged outwards like an endless tsunami, crashing forwards without limit!

All of Carefree Island's disciples changed complexions. This blood energy dragon that roared out from Carefree Palace had such a rich and vivid blood vitality that it wasn't something a human could possess! This was no longer a question of cultivation. As an essence gathering system martial artist's cultivation increased, it would only increase their life force and allow them to live longer. However, their blood vitality would still be limited. Whether it was a Divine Lord, Holy Lord, or World King, they still shouldn't possess such a terrifyingly vast blood energy. This blood energy was so vast that it resembled a fathomless sea!

"Is it not a martial artist but an ancient great beast?"

All of the young disciples of Carefree Palace had this idea.

At this time, the heaven and earth origin energy finally began to condense. Countless Heavenly Dao Law Fragments gathered in the air, forming an origin energy cloud!

"The origin energy cloud has appeared!"

"It's finally here!"

Mo Riverbliss, Xiao Skywhite, and all the other Elders of Carefree Island were waiting for this moment. This was the most critical period of Ninefall – the forming of the origin energy cloud!

"Mm… this origin energy cloud…" Mo Riverbliss frowned. She looked up at the skies. Normally, a martial artist would produce an origin energy cloud that was very colorful and auspicious. Its color would symbolize the type of cultivation method that they practiced. For instance, many of Carefree Island's martial artists cultivated the Wood Laws, thus the clouds they formed were a deep emerald green. The Ancient Phoenix Clan cultivated the Fire Laws, thus their origin energy clouds were a vivid red. The Electric Violet Kirin Clan cultivated the Thunder Laws, thus their origin energy clouds were purple.

But, Lin Ming's origin energy clouds weren't red like fire or purple like thunder but a deep gray. This massive storm also contained a calamitous killing intent, as if it would swallow up the world!

As this origin energy cloud began to spread over Carefree Island, it was like the end of all times had come.

After it appeared it rapidly inflated. In just several breaths of time, it climbed to the inferior three levels, intermediate three levels, all the way to the superior three levels!

"A 24 mile origin energy cloud, that is an Eight Layered Heavens. If he continues upward then he will reach the extreme three levels!"

"From how this is developing, perhaps the extreme three levels might not be Lin Ming's limit. He might even reach the absolute three levels!"

"Maybe… if that's true, then Lin Ming will steadily reach large success Holy Lord and reach the peak of the Holy Lord realm in the future. But, for a half-step World King, an absolute three levels origin energy cloud might not be enough…" Xiao Haogan slowly said as the Elders began speaking to each other.

At this time, his complexion wasn't too good. He didn't know why, but as he faced this origin energy cloud that seethed with a terrible killing intent, he felt a great pressure pushing down on him.

He was a solemn and dignified late Divine Lord, and yet facing the origin energy cloud from a mere junior that was crossing Ninefall, he actually felt oppressed!

Of course, this sort of oppression didn't come from Lin Ming, but came from the Heavenly Dao Laws. It was like he was facing the entirety of the vast universe.

As these Elders spoke amongst themselves, the range of the cloud had already reached 27 miles; this was a Nine Layered Heavens!

The first nine Layered Heavens were respectively called the Divine Heavens, Blue Heavens, Teal Heavens, Core Heavens, Reverence Heavens, Shaking Heavens, Purple Heavens, and Overwhelming Heavens.

Upon reaching the Nine Layered Heavens, that was to hold the chaos of the universe between one's fingertips!

A Nine Layered Heavens Ninefall was an entirely new level!

One step back was mortality, one step forwards was sanctification.

Whether one could achieve a Nine Layered Heavens was the symbol of whether a genius could become a true Holy Lord in the future!

For the last 50,000 years of Carefree Island, a true Holy Lord had never appeared. Only the old Island Master and the current White Brook came infinitely close to becoming a true Holy Lord. Even so, they were always a single step off.

In the Divine Realm, a Holy Lord was an illustrious character even in a major world, so how could this boundary be so easy to reach? The only reason there were so many Divine Realm Holy Lords was simply because the Divine Realm was far too vast!

Of course, to Lin Ming, a Nine Layered Heavens was only a brief stop. Soon after, the origin energy cloud grew to 30 miles.

10 Layered Heavens!

Then…

11 Layered Heavens!

12 Layered Heavens!

The origin energy cloud was like a monster as it continued to expand. It broke through the 12 Layered Heavens without pause!

To reach 12 Layered Heavens was to reach perfection of the extreme three levels. Above the Nine Layered Heavens were the Primal Chaos Heavens, Zenith Heavens, and True Outer Heavens!

After 12 Layered Heavens were the absolute three levels of Ninefall!

“He actually reached the absolute three levels! Heavens! It’s said that those who reach the absolute three levels have hopes of becoming a peak Holy Lord!”

“I wonder if Lin Ming has a chance of breaking through the absolute three heavens. What could lie beyond that boundary?” Those Elders controlling the concealing array cried out. Some of them looked over to the ‘richly experienced’ Xiao Haogan for answers.

Xiao Haogan wryly smiled. He certainly had no idea what lay beyond the absolute three levels of Ninefall. This sort of matter had already surpassed his scope of knowledge.

“This brat’s luck is quite good. He managed to enter the absolute three levels. However, every level after that multiplies in difficulty…”

Xiao Haogan forcefully ‘explained’ as he attempted to maintain his face. But in truth, as for what lay beyond the absolute three levels, or how difficult it was to reach it, he didn’t have the slightest idea.

The origin energy cloud broke through 36 miles and reached 40 miles wide. At the same time, the origin energy cloud’s thick killing intent became increasingly heavy and dire!

In those clouds, all sorts of postcelestial dao diagrams began to form. These dao diagrams were both mysterious and profound. Some shined like suns, some were plain and simple, and some even exuded surging killing intent!

Those roiling origin energy clouds were like a fierce ancient monster, stretching out its body. It was gluttonous and insatiable, swallowing up all the heaven and earth origin energy around it without end!

The Divine Lord realm Elders were fine, but the junior disciples felt a tremendous pressure.

The mammoth blood energy, the dim and dire killing intent, the boundless breath of the Great Dao, all of this made this event difficult for them to withstand.

"What is happening? Is a True Dragon hatching within Carefree Palace?"

Although many of Carefree Island's junior disciples had seen the direct disciples break through Ninefall and withstand the baptism of world Laws, they were unable to reconcile those scenes with this Ninefall occurring before their eyes.

Of course, Ye Rosewater was already aware of Lin Ming crossing Ninefall. At this time, as Ye Rosewater looked at the origin energy clouds in the sky reaching a 14 Layered Heavens, she sucked in a breath of cold air. Was it still going to grow? Just where did Lin Ming's limits lie?

"Perhaps… when that mysterious senior said that Junior-apprentice Brother Lin would cultivate into a Great World King and then support Carefree Island in turn, all of that could truly become reality…"

As Ye Rosewater thought of this, all sorts of brilliant lights shined in her beautiful eyes.

16 Layered Heavens!

He had broken through the absolute three levels of Ninefall!

If this continued forwards, that was a domain none of them were knowledgeable about. Out of everyone present, besides Mo Riverbliss, none of them had ever experienced such a scene.

Only now did a faint trace of satisfaction appear on Mo Riverbliss's face.

In her opinion, after Lin Ming broke through the absolute three levels he still maintained enough momentum to continue forwards. He would at least be able to break through another five or six Layered Heavens. Only then would he reach the most basic requirements that Mo Riverbliss desired from him. If he couldn't even break through the absolute three levels of Ninefall, then all of her previous efforts would have been a joke.

"Little Snow, your judgement is quite good." Mo Riverbliss said to Mo Eversnow with a true essence sound transmission,

Mo Eversnow gently smiled. "Aunty, what you've seen is only the opening act. Lin Ming's talent is extremely good to begin with, and he has also used countless heavenly materials in the Life Destruction realm. There were some treasures that would even make a World King crazy with jealousy. All of those treasures were used to lay down his foundation and help train his dual body and energy cultivation. Now that he has broken through Ninefall, he is simply a dragon that has emerged from a pool and is ready to soar into the heavens. How could he possibly stop at 16 Layered Heavens? This is only the beginning. I've watched him grow up, so I know this clearly in my heart!"

"Oh? Little Snow, you think that Lin Ming could surpass the past you?"

"Yes!" Mo Eversnow decisively nodded, her eyes brimming with hope.

Chapter 1120 – Double Phenomenon

Chapter 1120 – Double Phenomenon

…

…

…

Tracing Lin Ming's many lucky chances, when he was still in the Pulse Condensation realm he had entered Divine Phoenix Island and then the Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm. There, he obtained a drop of Ancient Phoenix blood, top grade medicines, as well as solar origin spring water, finally reaching the Houtian realm during this trial. After that, he had entered the Demon God Imperial Palace during the Houtian Realm and had obtained the Nirvana Dragon Root that was highly beneficial to Life Destruction realm martial artists. Using that, he had reached the Xiantian realm and had also completed Tempering Marrow.

Then, Lin Ming had entered the Eternal Demon Abyss and accidentally stumbled into the grave of the ancient goddess. He obtained a heaven-step Demon God Bone and had broken into the Revolving Core realm. There was no need to even mention the Life Destruction realm. During this period, he had obtained the 12 dao fruits, the divine thunder of an Empyrean, the supreme dragon bone, Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, and all other sorts of various treasures. All of the treasures used by Lin Ming were things that even a Divine Lord powerhouse would find incomparably luxurious.

The reason for needing so many treasures was undoubtedly because Lin Ming dual cultivated in body and energy. Because of this, he had to expend so many resources, but this had also formed an extremely solid foundation for him.

It had to be known that for most martial artists, even if they had many resources, they still might not be able to use them. This was because there was a limit that their bodies could take and their potential was limited. For instance, it was impossible for most of them to use something like the supreme dragon bone or Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree during the Life Destruction realm. Even the Asura King had to take an extremely long period of time to absorb half the dragon marrow from the supreme dragon bone.

As for the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, after eating it, one's mortal body would be severed ten times. It wasn't something that the average human was able to withstand.

There were very few people that could be like Lin Ming, and essentially nearly become something similar to the fusion of a human and God Beast. The toughness of his body had reached an unbelievable degree, one that allowed him to shoulder the medicinal efficacy of any treasures!

Omm –

Howling gales tore through the skies. In the seas all around Carefree Island, raging currents appeared. The sea waves angrily splashed against the shores, splashing up hundreds of feet.

The tides surged more and more, finally forming waves upon endless waves of devastating tsunamis.

In the skies, the power of stars, the glory of the moon, the light of the sun, all of it gathered into that origin energy cloud, completely becoming a part of the Heavenly Dao Laws.

Lin Ming's mortal body had streamed out from Carefree Palace and completely merged into one with the origin energy cloud, fully undergoing a baptism of the Heavenly Dao Laws.

At this time, his body was nothing but a river of blood; he hadn't yet formed a physical body. But, if one were to wander about in this origin energy cloud, they would find that river of blood pulsating.

Bang! Bang!

Every pulsation was like a heartbeat. And, each heartbeat was similar to a divine drum that was formed from the skin of an ancient vicious beast, deafening and ringing!

Bang!

Bang!

The sound became increasingly thunderous!

"This isn't the sound of a heartbeat. His heart hasn't yet taken shape. This is the sound of his flesh and blood being tempered by the Heavenly Dao Laws. The advantages this gives him are unimaginable."

Mo Riverbliss whispered as she looked at the surging river of blood. The origin energy cloud could contain all the Laws of the universe. Of course, the richness and degree of depth differed from person to person. The greater the origin energy cloud, the more Laws were contained within.

Ho – !

The origin energy cloud suddenly expanded once more. 54 miles wide, 18 Layered Heavens!

18 Layered Heavens Ninefall. Above the absolute three levels... was the colored three heavens.

The word 'color' held the meaning of matter. The so-called colored Layered Heavens in truth meant the 18 material Layered Heavens.

The 18 Layered Heavens were derived from the Nine Layered Heavens. Here Layered Heavens gave birth to different types of energy, each forming two Layered Heavens. Thus, with two lives from one, the 18 Layered Heavens were born.

The 18 Layered Heavens were the Blind Nihility Heavens, Absolute Shade Heavens, Crimson Clear Yang Heavens, Profound Moon Reverence Heavens, Glorious Wave Heavens, Falling Family Sovereign Heavens, Illusory Court Heavens, Extreme Arbitrator Heavens, Mystic Happiness Heavens, Transcendent Pearlshine Heavens, Essence Ascending Heavens, Consummate Imperial Protection Heavens, Manifest Extreme Wind Heavens, Origin Emperor Light Heavens, Infinite Ancestor Heavens, Thoughtless River Heavens, Superior Prophet Heavens, Limitless Dismal Vow Heavens.

These so-called 'Heavens' didn't necessarily exist, but were rather a conceptual manifestation of humanity's martial arts civilization inheritances, and condensation of Laws.

18 Layered Heavens was also an entirely new watershed!

An ocean-like amount of heaven and earth origin energy flushed into Lin Ming's flesh and blood. That stream of blood became even more radiant and crystalline, sending out a dark golden brilliance!

This scene was like a god being born into the world!

At this time, Xiao Haogan's complexion couldn't get any uglier. The 18 Layered Heavens, colored three levels were already a domain that he was completely unable to think of.

"This brat, how could his achievements be so high… moreover, it's continuing to grow… 18 Layered Heavens… is the 18 Layered Heavens not his limit?

"What is above the 18 Layered Heavens?

"How many Layered Heavens can possibly appear in Ninefall?"

As Xiao Haogan was lost in thought, he suddenly felt the array formation tremble. The light barrier of the array formation appeared and faint cracks began to reveal themselves.

This change shocked Xiao Haogan. There were problems developing in the concealing array formation!

Before this, Xiao Haogan had thought that Mo Riverbliss was making a fuss over nothing. He thought that he alone would be able to control the concealing array formation, but Mo Riverbliss actually ordered 12 of them to help activate it. Xiao Haogan had scoffed at this order, but now, it seemed that this array formation was truly having difficulties withstanding the impact of the Heavenly Dao Laws!

“Elder Xiao, what are you doing?”

“Hurry up and revolve your true essence and pour it into the array formation!”

Xiao Haogan was stirred up from his stupor as the true essence sound transmissions of the other Elders resounded in his ears. He turned to see that the other Elders were all pouring their true essence into the array formation in order to resist the energy shockwaves from the world Laws.

If Lin Ming’s origin energy cloud continued to grow, it was unknown whether or not the 12 of them could still handle this.

This caused Xiao Haogan to turn angry from shame. However, he had no choice but to pour his own true essence into the array formation. With Mo Riverbliss here, even if he was extremely dissatisfied, there was no way he could possibly publicly disobey her orders.

Rumble rumble rumble –

The 12 Elders poured forth their complete effort, fully driving the concealing array formation to its greatest heights, caging in the energy fluctuations from Lin Ming’s Ninefall.

Then, 19 Layered Heavens, 20 Layered Heavens, 21 Layered Heavens!

21 Layered Heavens, the Nirvanic three levels!

At this time, the origin energy cloud had already become incomparably heavy, as if it was chaos itself. This origin energy cloud contained limitless killing intent. It continued to expand as if it didn’t know what the meaning of limits was!

Not too far away from Xiao Haogan, Highest Elder White Brook's lips turned blue. Fear and dread blossomed in his mind as his fingers began to tremble!

"21 Layered Heavens… can there even be 21 Layered Heavens in Ninefall?"

White Brook felt dizzy and his limbs turned cold. He had read over many ancient texts in the past that recorded instances of Ninefall. Within them, 18 Layered Heavens was already the derivation of the highest heavens. As for what lay above the 18 Layered Heavens, he had no idea. It was like a beggar imagining what secrets an imperial kitchen used to produce their delicacies. No matter what it was, the knowledge of those mysterious techniques and complex processing methods was completely useless to that beggar.

This was because he couldn't understand it!

"Look! What is that!?"

A young martial artist suddenly raised his hand and pointed out to the distance. Everyone followed his finger as far as their eyes could see.

In that origin energy cloud that seethed with chaos, a brilliant red light began to shine out.

That blazing red light grew like a tenacious weed. It became bigger and bigger, brighter and brighter!

Then, people were able to clearly see that it was a red lotus!

In that chaotic origin energy cloud, an incandescent red lotus was fully blooming!

This was a red lotus born within chaos!

This belonged to the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower. Once it bloomed, an endless pressure would surge outwards. And this, this was pressure from the Heavenly Dao Laws themselves. This pressure blotted out the skies, overwhelming, unstoppable!

As everyone looked at this red lotus, crimson light completely flooded their vision. The power of blood in their bodies tumbled and surged, as if it wanted to break out from their mortal shells!

“It’s a phenomenon!”

“A Ninefall phenomenon!”

Someone cried out in fear and alarm. Within the ancient texts, it was written that when someone achieved an extremely high level Layered Heavens during Ninefall, world phenomena would occur. Every extreme genius would experience different world phenomena during their Ninefall. These phenomena corresponded to that martial artist’s cultivation methods, martial intents, battle spirit, and all sorts of other aspects.

As everyone was speaking, all around this red lotus, the heaven and earth origin energy naturally formed an Azure Dragon and a Fire Phoenix.

This dragon and phoenix danced in the air, swirling around the red lotus. The dragon roared and the phoenix cried, their dual sounds echoing through the world! Finally, the dragon and phoenix turned into countless runes that fell onto the petals of the red lotus.

Almost no one understood what this meant. But, Mo Eversnow was well aware what this was in her heart.

The red lotus phenomenon was naturally a manifestation from the Primordius martial intent that Lin Ming cultivated.

It was the inheritance of Empyrean Primordius!

As for that dragon and phoenix, they came from the rich dragon marrow and phoenix essence within his body!

Even two divine beings like a dragon and phoenix had to revolve around the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower, dancing around it gently. It was obvious from this alone that in front of Empyrean Primordius, even God Beasts had to bow and submit!

As Mo Eversnow was lost in thought, seemingly because Lin Ming's origin energy cloud had produced the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower, it rapidly grew once again!

24 Layered Heavens!

At this step, the Elders of Carefree Palace seemed as if they would choke on themselves.

24 Layered Heavens – what concept was that?

It was difficult to imagine just how formidable the Heavenly Dao Laws contained within this origin energy cloud would be!

And at this time, above the origin energy cloud, another phenomenon was born!

Beside the dragon and phoenix red lotus, a deep azure divine light began to bloom. It was like a crystal and also like a seed.

After several breaths of time, a lush green sprout emitted from that dazzling azure light. Tender and verdant leaves slowly extended outwards.

This sprout had a total of six leaves, three representing fire and three representing thunder. All the leaves came in various shapes. The first leaf was like a crimson heart, the second leaf was like a thin and fierce sword, the third was a purple tripod, the fourth was a golden red heavy sword, the fifth was like a square imperial jade seal, and the sixth was like a blue lotus.

This was the Heretical God Sprout!

Like the Primordius martial intent, the Heretical God Force was similarly a transcendent divine might!

As for which was weaker between the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower and the Heretical God Sprout, Mo Eversnow was unable to say. But, the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower was incomplete; there was only a third of it. So in that sense, the Heretical God Sprout was superior!

Of course, all of the disciples and Elders of Carefree Island, including White Brook and Island Master Xiao Skywhite, were unable to recognize just what the phenomena of the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower and the Heretical God Sprout meant. Even Mo Riverbliss wouldn't have understood if Mo Eversnow hadn't explained this to her.

After the Heretical God Sprout appeared, surging waves of fire and sheets of raining thunder formed in that heaven and earth origin energy, both of them revolving around the Heretical God Sprout. A moment later, they condensed into two thunder and fire runes that fell onto the Heretical God Sprout.

Chapter 1121 – The Riddle of the Magic Cube

Chapter 1121 – The Riddle of the Magic Cube

…

…

…

In the origin energy cloud above Carefree Island's skies, the dragon and phoenix-engraved Prime Emperor Red Lotus bloomed alongside the fire and thunder rune-covered Heretical God Sprout!

Not only did a phenomenon appear during Lin Ming's Ninefall, but there were even two of them!

Two different transcendent divine mights each produced their own phenomenon!

At this time, Xiao Haogan felt as if his heart had withered away. As for the other 11 Elders responsible for managing the concealing array formation, all of them were pale. They were struggling to resist the Heavenly Dao Laws, but even the aftermath shockwaves of the Heavenly Dao Laws weren't something that Divine Lord powerhouses could withstand!

Originally, it was already difficult for them to withstand the red lotus phenomenon. But now, this unknown sprout that appeared out of nowhere left them miserable beyond compare. They were rapidly reaching their breaking point!

Mo Eversnow noticed this and said, "Aunty, those 12 Elders might not be able to last much longer, you'll need to send several more people. In the past, when the Conch World King crossed his Ninefall, a supreme conch phenomenon appeared and its sound spread out for 800,000 miles, and there was no barrier that could obstruct it. This no longer has anything to do with cultivation. These phenomena that are appearing around Lin Ming cannot be understood by any disciple of Carefree Island, but if we're unlucky and some old monster with an extremely rich experience sees it then that will mean trouble."

Although Mo Eversnow knew the chances were low, they still had to prepare for any unexpected variables.

"Okay."

Mo Riverbliss nodded, her face full of smiles. Lin Ming's current achievements had already surpassed all of her expectations. Her heart was filled with anticipation for his future.

Mo Riverbliss sent out another sound transmission and had Island Master Xiao Skywhite personally help to conceal the energy fluctuations of the world Laws.

"Little Snow, you were right. Lin Ming can really become a Great World King in the future!"

"Only become a Great World King...?" Mo Eversnow thought to herself, not responding. In truth, her ambitions for Lin Ming were much greater. A Great World King was formidable, but Mo Eversnow had already experienced a Great World King, and that was her grandfather!

As for Mo Eversnow herself, if she hadn't experienced such tragedy in the past then she too would have become a Great World King. There was also Tian Mingzi. With his martial talent and cunning, he also had similar hopes of becoming a Great World King!

What Mo Eversnow desired was to surpass a Great World King!

She thought that Lin Ming could break through the World King boundary in the future and become an Empyrean!

The fabled Empyreans were the true gods of the Divine Realm. Countless years would pass before a single one was born, and the most outstanding among them could produce their own transcendent divine might! Even God Beasts had to submit before the might of an Empyrean!

What sort of boundary was an Empyrean? In front of an Empyrean, even Holy Lords that controlled their own domain were nothing more than a gathering of ants!

When speaking of an Empyrean, all martial artists in the Divine Realm, and even the glorious World Kings, would also feel a deep reverence from their hearts. This was the same as a mortal being awed by a god.

These aspirations were truly too great. Even Mo Eversnow didn't have full confidence that she could help Lin Ming become an Empyrean.

She only had an idea of this, but she didn't say it out loud. This was because she knew such words would attract the ridicule of others. When talking to her aunty Mo Riverbliss, Mo Eversnow knew that she wouldn't be laughed at by her. At most, her aunty would urge her not to think of such unrealistic matters.

Thus, Mo Eversnow had chosen to stay silent about this and keep this idea snugly suppressed at the bottom of her mind.

"Lin Ming... I have no idea what boundary you will arrive at in the future, but my destiny has already been tied to yours, and there is no way we can be divided any longer... your future, will also be my future..."

Mo Eversnow whispered in her heart. At this time, the origin energy cloud above Carefree Island had expanded to 81 miles!

An 81 mile origin energy cloud, that was a 27 Layered Heavens Ninefall!

All of Carefree Island's Elders were daunted by this sight. The origin energy cloud was simply expanding too quickly. None of them knew just how to react to this.

Normally, when a genius crossed Ninefall, it was already extraordinary for them to produce more than One Layered Heavens.

Every single higher Layered Heavens up meant far more unfathomable advantages. It meant greater potential, and it also meant that one's cultivation would reach a far higher boundary in the future.

And for Lin Ming crossing Ninefall, the origin energy cloud was rapidly inflating. This wasn't rising by one Layered Heaven at a time, but rather by three Layered Heavens at a time! That meant that this origin energy cloud was expanding by nine miles each time!

Now, it had already reached a 27 Layered Heavens, an 81 mile origin energy cloud!

The number 81 came from nine times nine. Two nines together, this itself contained the principles of the Great Dao. But, this still wasn't the limit.

At this time, Xiao Haogan's face was ashen.

Although Xiao Haogan was aware that Lin Ming's combat strength far surpassed all other martial artists' at his level, he subconsciously believed that the only reason Lin Ming was able to do so was because of all the heavenly materials used on his body. If these heavenly materials were given to him instead, and he could form a solid foundation in his youth like Lin Ming did, then it wouldn't be a problem for him to reach an absolute three levels Ninefall and show disdain for all other rivals of his generation.

But now, as Xiao Haogan looked at that 81 mile origin energy cloud in the sky, his mind had gone utterly blank.

Even calling Lin Ming a monstrous genius didn't do him justice.

Not too far away from Xiao Haogan, White Brook's face was also fading like a dying fire. He couldn't imagine that Lin Ming would achieve such a scene underneath the Divine Sea. Once he stepped into the Divine Sea, just how dramatically would his combat strength rise?

And, when Lin Ming reached the middle Divine Transformation realm, Xiao Haogan feared that he would no longer be a match for him!

With Lin Ming's cultivation speed, it might only take a dozen or so years for him to reach the middle Divine Transformation realm!

In just a dozen some years, Lin Ming would have the ability to contend with him in frontal combat.

In 20 years, Lin Ming would be able to kill him.

In 30 years, Lin Ming would be able to instantly kill him like a tiny ant!

White Brook found such a gap hard to accept. After all, Lin Ming was only a junior. 30 years from now, he would only be 60 years old. To martial artists that lived for an incomparably long time, 60 years was only the beginning of their lives. They still had their excellent golden years awaiting them.

As for White Brook himself, he was already in his fading years. Towards Lin Ming, he felt nothing but absolute envy.

The origin energy cloud expanded yet again.

28 Layered Heavens!

29 Layered Heavens!

30 Layered Heavens!

At 30 Layered Heavens, a completely unexpected change occurred!

A massive phantom appeared in the origin energy cloud in the sky, covering the entire land!

"Phenomenon? Is this another phenomenon?"

“Heavens! This is the third phenomenon! In just crossing Ninefall, there will be three phenomena!”

The Elders and direct disciples of Carefree Island were speechless, no longer knowing what was happening. The reason that a phenomenon was called a phenomenon was that they were ridiculously rare. But with Lin Ming, these phenomena began to appear one after the other!

The phantoms of the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower and the Heretical God Sprout were completely covered inside this newly appeared phenomenon. The borders of this phenomenon gradually solidified until it seemed to become reality, forming a mysterious cube. This cube didn’t emit the least bit of light. It looked simple and common, but it exuded a mystical and boundless aura. All sorts of lines appeared on this phantom. Some lines were dim and hazy and some lines were clear. However, no matter how much one stared at these lines it was impossible to grasp their path. They were baffling and incredible.

As Mo Eversnow and Mo Riverbliss saw this cube phantom, both of them paled. This was a projection of the Magic Cube!

They suddenly felt their hearts tighten and skip a beat. The Magic Cube contained endless amounts of secrets that none of them were able to explore now. Besides Tian Mingzi, it was possible that none of the other Great World Kings or Empyreans knew of the existence of the Magic Cube. But, if they were to find out and also lock onto the position of the Magic Cube, then the consequences would be inconceivably dire!

The only silver lining was that none of the Elders or disciples of Carefree Island knew what the Magic Cube was. As they looked at this strange phenomenon that presented itself in the world, they seemed at a loss.

“I will be responsible for resolving this matter.” Mo Riverbliss took a deep breath, her voice solemn. She was overjoyed that she had decided to cover all of Carefree Island with a massive concealing array formation. Otherwise, if these images were to spread out then that would be dangerous!

Although the chances were extremely slim that images of the Magic Cube would reach Tian Mingzi, Mo Riverbliss would take all precautions. She had already decided to use another spirit artifact scroll and ensure that no one would leak out any secrets or pictures of Lin Ming crossing Ninefall today.

However, just as she spoke, she was stupefied.

Her eyes widened like full moons. She gazed helplessly on as the Magic Cube phantom began to shrink a little. But, beside the Magic Cube, a mysterious bead phantom appeared, existing side by side with the Magic Cube!

And this still wasn't over. Just as that round bead appeared, another phantom appeared that was in the shape of a card, yet again standing side by side with the Magic Cube!

There was a total of three objects!

All three of these objects emitted a similar aura, shrouded in a dim haze. After appearing for just a fleeting moment, these phantoms disappeared into the nether!

The many Elders and disciples of Carefree Palace were flabbergasted. They only thought that this was one of the strange phenomena that appeared during Lin Ming's Ninefall and didn't care too much for it. After all, every extreme genius would produce different phenomena when crossing Ninefall. And, it was also the first time that these people had seen a phenomenon appear during the crossing of Ninefall. It was normal if they couldn't understand what was happening.

But, Mo Eversnow and Mo Riverbliss were actually panic-stricken!

They had never been as stunned as they were today.

The Prime Emperor Lotus Flower and the Heretical God Seed, two sets of transcendent divine mights, were covered up by the Magic Cube. But, those two strange objects were able to stand side by side with the Magic Cube. Could it be that from the very start, the Magic Cube wasn't unique, but part of a set of three?

What were those other two things, and where would they be?

Could they be in the Divine Realm’s 3000 Great Worlds, or perhaps some different universe, or perhaps even in one of the countless divergent mystic realms scattered everywhere?

Just how were these three things created? And how were they related?

Mo Eversnow stared unblinkingly at the space in the origin energy cloud where those three objects had appeared. They had happened for far too short of a time. She had only been able to see a single glimpse with nothing left behind. Although those three objects had different shapes, they emitted a similar aura that allowed Mo Eversnow to ascertain that they came from the same source!

She pursed her lips together and tightly gripped her hands. To her, the Magic Cube held far too profound a significance!

In a way, the Magic Cube had caused the eventual annihilation of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. But afterwards, the only reason that Mo Eversnow had survived through certain death was that the Magic Cube had saved her. The reason that Lin Ming could also rise to his current level was the Magic Cube!

Originally, she thought that the Magic Cube was a soul crystal left behind from the death of an existence that surpassed an extreme Empyrean, a being that could be called a True Divinity.

But now, it seemed as if her speculations had been wrong. It was impossible for a soul crystal to simultaneously appear in these three strange shapes.

Just what was this?

Mo Eversnow asked, lost in her thoughts. But at this time, a miserable scream dragged her back to reality. She looked over and saw that Great Elder Xiao Haogan had spat out a mouthful of blood and was sent flying backwards. The array formation array disc underneath his feet suddenly shattered!

Xiao Haogan was the main driving character who managed the concealing array formation. At this time, he could no longer withstand the shockwaves of energy coming from the world Laws of Lin Ming's Ninefall, and was hurtled backwards.

Chapter 1122 – Perfect Spirit Body

Chapter 1122 – Perfect Spirit Body

…

…

…

Mo Riverbliss's complexion changed. If there was some accident with the array formation and the phenomena from Lin Ming's Ninefall were revealed to the world, that would not be good for Carefree Island, which needed to be inconspicuous in this period of time. This was particularly true since there were projections of two sets of transcendent divine mights involved.

Mo Riverbliss's figure flashed and she appeared at Xiao Haogan's original position. She formed runes in her hand, sending them out into the air again and again.

The other Elders had also reached their limit. Their true essence was in a miserable state. They had originally thought that it was overdoing it to have 12 Elders work together to stabilize the array formation, but now they knew that the 12 of them actually weren't enough!

Nobody thought that a mere junior crossing Ninefall would actually produce world Laws that were strong to such an extent! In that vast origin energy cloud, it was unimaginable how much energy and how many world Laws existed. None of them were able to resist it!

And Xiao Haogan had been acting as the eye of this array formation, thus he naturally bore the greatest brunt of the impact. Once the array formation had a problem, he would be the first one to be pushed out.

Mo Riverbliss was still at a half-step World King after all. Underneath her careful management, Lin Ming's Ninefall world phenomena were finally suppressed by the array formation.

And at this time, Lin Ming's Ninefall had reached 32 Layered Heavens!

At this stage, the speed at which the origin energy cloud was expanding had slowed. Even so, it still slowly spread out.

97 miles, 98 miles, all the way to 99 miles!

At this time, the origin energy cloud finally stopped growing.

33 Layered Heavens!

The 33 Layered Heavens were the 33 Akashic Heavens!

From the 18 Heavens that diverged from the Nine Firmaments, in addition to the Four Immaculate Heavens, the Six Heavens of Desire, the Four Buddhist Heavens, as well as the Highest Immortal Heavens, that was a total of 33 Heavens.

"33 Layered Heavens..." At this time, Mo Eversnow's entire being shook. Even she didn't understand just where the limits of Ninefall lay.

Stories and legends of the 33 Layered Heavens had existed for a long time, but Mo Eversnow had never noticed that the 33 Layered Heavens corresponded to a 99 mile origin energy cloud.

Nine through nine return to one, after 99, the first numeral was one, just like a cycle of samsara.

The number 99 in itself contained the highest truths of the Heavenly Dao.

Nine was the extreme of all numbers, and three was the beginning of all numbers!

It was said that the Divine Law gave birth to one, one gave life to two, two formed three, and after three came all of life. Life carried yin and held yang, filled with energy and thoughts.

The Divine Law gave birth to one meant that the Heavenly Dao was the one true existence. The Heavenly Dao was the source of all existence.

One gave birth to two meant that the Heavenly Dao evolved into yin and yang energies. Yin and yang energies were the source of all matter.

Two forming three meant the contradictions that existed between yin and yang energies. This was the so-called ‘charge’.

This ‘charge’ could be understood as the interaction of yin and yang particles. This was also the ubiquitous ‘power’ that existed in the universe.

The ‘three’ from ‘after three came all of life’ wasn’t just a random number. Rather, it was yin energy, yang energy, and charge. All three evolved together, forming the boundless universe!

The Divine Realm had 3000 great worlds, the lower realms contained triple thousand worlds, a thousand times a thousand times a thousand worlds, there were 33 Layered Heavens, and the origin energy cloud could grow to 99 miles!

In that moment, Mo Eversnow seemed to become aware of something in her heart. She could deeply feel the perfection that was the Heavenly Dao. Every tiny facet of the Heavenly Dao was filled with reasoning and truth!

Ninefall was the path a martial artist had to take to become divine. They had to accept the baptism of the Heavenly Dao which contained the greatest truths in the universe.

By being able to withstand the baptism of all Laws from the 33 Layered Heavens, the advantages Lin Ming would obtain could be imagined.

Even Mo Eversnow, who was simply watching, still obtained a certain awareness from witnessing the evolution of the Heavenly Dao. Although she couldn't use this awareness to directly increase her strength and cultivation, in the future, if she was able to reform her body, then she could use this experience to enhance her training.

Hu – !

In that instant, all of the power of blood within that sea-like origin energy cloud suddenly gathered together.

In that massive vortex, all of the world Law fragments in the origin energy cloud tumbled together, rolling up into the flesh and blood!

The highest truths of the Heavenly Dao formed lines that engraved themselves into the marrow. The Law fragments evolved into runes that buried themselves deep in the flesh and blood!

"This... the Laws are being swallowed... too quickly, too easily!"

As the Elders of Carefree Island saw the massive amount of Law fragments being swallowed up by Lin Ming like a whale drinking water, all of their eyes turned red with jealousy.

These were Law fragments from the 33 Layered Heavens, a perfect Ninefall. There were countless truths and comprehensions contained within them. They were something that innumerable Divine Lord powerhouses would never be able to perceive in their entire lives!

But, these Laws were rapidly absorbed into Lin Ming's body in just a short several breaths of time. Even if he couldn't comprehend them now, they would help him break into the Divine Sea in the future. Afterwards, his comprehension of the Laws would come at an astronomical speed! This was a great lucky chance that others would die for!

This was the most important role of Ninefall. The better a Ninefall, the better foundation a martial artist would have for breaking into higher boundaries in the future.

And Lin Ming's foundation was already as solid as the endless earth. Not to mention a 100,000 foot tall building, even a rolling green mountain a thousand miles wide could easily lay upon it!

At this time, Lin Ming was in a completely trance-like state, detached from the world around him. He constantly fused with the Laws and energy, withstanding this once in a lifetime lucky chance.

This process continued for an unknown period of time. In that chaotic origin energy cloud that contained infinite Law fragments, time seemed to lose all meaning.

Lin Ming felt as if thousands of years passed through his mind. But, all of that happened in just the blink of an eye. He had fully absorbed the world Law fragments.

Then, his flesh and blood finally began to slowly condense.

From a stream of blood, he slowly reformed his body.

First was the spiritual sea.

Lin Ming's consciousness gradually became clear and his senses began to return to him. At this time, he felt as if he could discern every minute change in the world around him.

He could feel everything outside of the origin energy cloud, grasping it all with utter clarity. He could sense the body of each disciple and Elder of Carefree Island, making out their metabolism, blood flow, heartbeat, breathing, everything fell into his senses.

Ants coming and going, flowers blooming, the breeze blowing, the rain falling, as long as Lin Ming wished, all of this would be clearly reflected in his mind.

Awareness of sense…

This boundary suddenly appeared in Lin Ming's mind.

He knew that his senses had undergone a heaven-shaking transformation. This naturally came from his soul reaching perfection after crossing Ninefall.

The seventh, eighth, and ninth stages of Life Destruction were to temper the soul. After Ninefall, he would leave behind his common body, his soul force would reach the peak, and his senses would also become extremely perceptive.

After this, if one reached yet a higher boundary, one would be able to clearly see the composition of a human's cells. And beyond that, for those Holy Lord and World King level powerhouses, they could even see the tiny particles that formed all matter.

And deeper, beyond even that, there was the boundary of legends, where one could clearly see the internal structure of these tiny particles and even gaze upon the changes of yin and yang energies themselves!

In the past when Lin Ming mediated on the chaos stones in Totem Tower, he had relied upon the Primordius martial intent to see the evolution of yin and yang energies, thus obtaining a tremendous advantage. If his senses became sharp enough, he could directly see the movements of yin and yang energy in matter itself. The benefits from this could be imagined.

As Lin Ming's consciousness was alive and freed, he began to watch his own dantian form.

First was the black hole revolving core.

Before a martial artist reached the Divine Sea, they would have a revolving core. In front of Lin Ming, energy began to collapse as a massive amount of Law fragments was sucked into the black hole revolving core, becoming a part of that glossy black crystal core. With this black hole revolving core as a foundation, Lin Ming's flesh and blood slowly condensed.

From organs, meridians, skeleton, fascia, muscles, limbs, skins, facial features, to hair.

Lin Ming's mortal body had completed its ninth reorganization, and also its last reorganization.

The origin energy cloud swirled. The power of the stars, moon, and sun all gathered up, swelling through Lin Ming and washing every inch of his flesh and blood. At this time, Lin Ming's entire body shined with a brilliant glassy radiance. There wasn't the slightest impurity within his body. His aura was like that of a divine immortal fallen down from the highest heavens, proud and aloof, living apart from all of the world.

The origin energy cloud naturally formed clothes that covered Lin Ming's body.

By now, Lin Ming's body had reached perfection!

"It's over… this is Lin Ming's Ninefall, 33 Layered Heavens, a 99 mile origin energy cloud…" Mo Riverbliss muttered to herself. She found this hard to believe, even after seeing it with her own eyes.

The 33 Layered Heavens should be the peak of Ninefall.

"I never thought that Lin Ming dual cultivated body and energy. Although he was hindered a bit in his Ninefall because of the conflicts between the body transformation system and the essence gathering system, he actually obtained a tremendous advantage instead. The more accumulations he has, the greater the eruption will be."

All around Carefree Island, many Elders and direct disciples were still dazed. Everything that happened had simply been too shocking for them.

In the opinion of Carefree Island's Elders, the absolute three levels was already the limit of Ninefall and everything beyond that was a legend of a legend. Even so, that was only 15-16 Layered Heavens. To them, being able to form a foundation of just a single Layered Heavens above that was an extraordinary accomplishment. But now, Lin Ming had flipped over everything they had known.

33 Layered Heavens!

The Akashic Heavens!

“Lin Ming can truly become a Great World King… to think I was able to witness the Ninefall of a Great World King. Moreover, I even experienced life or death dangers with him in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. This is truly unbelievable…” Ye Rosewater whispered. She found all of this hard to believe. In truth, although the mission into the Red Desolate Mystic Realm had been filled with dangers, she and her subordinates had escaped safe and unscathed because of Lin Ming. Nothing that happened had gone beyond Lin Ming’s control. Even White Mirrorjade’s betrayal didn’t faze him. At this time, the feelings in Ye Rosewater’s heart were far too complex.

“It’s finished?”

Lin Ming gripped his fists together, feeling his body filled with strength. His true essence had risen, his soul had become complete, and the Laws had been engraved within him. This experience had deeply carved into him an appreciation for Ninefall!

But now, he felt as if something was wrong, as if something was missing.

That’s right, what about the world seed?

After Ninefall, when a martial artist left their common mortal physique and began to develop a divine form, the symbol of this was that their dantian would open up into a world seed. In the future when this martial artist became a Divine Sea master, this world seed would sprout and become a minor dimension.

But now, Lin Ming didn’t feel a world seed within his body.

And at this time, Mo Eversnow looked up at that origin energy cloud. Her face was solemn and grim. “How is this… the Ninefall is over, so how come there is still so much energy left in those origin energy clouds, and how come they haven’t dispersed yet?”

Chapter 1123 – Five Element Grand Tribulation

Chapter 1123 – Five Element Grand Tribulation

…

…

…

In the skies, the origin energy cloud was still tumbling. But, no matter how much it condensed, it still wouldn't surpass 99 miles. And within it, changes were constantly occurring, as if the clouds were evolving.

Lin Ming absorbed a massive amount of the power of Laws within the origin energy cloud. But, there was still a part of it that wasn't absorbed by Lin Ming and had remained within the origin energy cloud.

Lin Ming's body was still soaking within the origin energy cloud, floating within it.

"Lin Ming finished his Ninefall. Why hasn't he come down yet?"

Carefree Island's Elders were unsure of what was happening. As for Mo Eversnow, her delicate eyebrows were pressed together. She too had no idea what would happen after a perfect 33 Layered Heavens Life Destruction.

Five-colored lightning sparked in the skies. Then, a melodic sound like a grand morning bell burst out into the sky, echoing without end.

This sort of sound was vast and ghostly, like a massive bronze bell ringing to the ends of the earth. As the disciples of Carefree Island heard this sound, they felt all of the blood within their bodies swell up. Their heartbeats drummed in rhythm to this divine sound, and a trace of enlightenment even occurred between every heartbeat.

“Mm? This sound is…”

“It’s the sound of the Great Dao. There are far too many Heavenly Dao Laws gathered in the origin energy clouds, thus they naturally formed the sound of the Great Dao. What we’ve heard is just a tiny bit and yet we can feel a portion of that enlightenment. As for Lin Ming himself, he directly withstood the baptism of the Heavenly Dao Laws. The advantages he obtained from this could be imagined.”

Several Elders marveled out loud, their hearts filled with envy. Then, at this time, the sound of the Great Dao suddenly changed. It was like a god was sitting atop a cloud, playing a zither. Waves after waves of mysterious sounds surged outwards. Sometimes it was pitched and daring, like soldiers in the battlefield, trudging through war and mud. Sometimes it was light and sprightly, like rivers and mountains, beads dripping down from a jade plate. At times it was soft and mild, like the thick autumn rain, flowers falling and fading…

Nobody was able to understand the meaning behind this mysterious sound. But, as everyone was immersed in it, the origin energy cloud began to rise again and again, and the energy inherent within it became increasingly intense.

Not just that, but the killing intent within that origin energy cloud became increasingly thick and heavy!

Normally, when a martial artist crossed Ninefall, the origin energy cloud they formed would come in bright auspicious colors, reflecting the cultivation method or other aspects of that martial artist. This made it so that crossing Ninefall was a vibrantly colorful time!

But Lin Ming was just the opposite. The origin energy cloud he summoned was extremely gray and solemn, like chaos itself. Moreover, the origin energy cloud he formed was far heavier than one formed by a normal martial artist. This origin energy cloud seemed as if it were condensed from elementary grandmist energy, and it itself contained an eminent killing intent. And now, this killing intent became so thick that it was substantializing, making everyone under it feel a great pressure.

After Lin Ming crossed Ninefall, not only did his origin energy clouds not scatter, but the energy within them only grew stronger!

“That is…”

The Elders of Carefree Island widened their eyes. They were only able to stare helplessly on as a bolt of dazzling gold lightning lit up that origin energy cloud!

This blazing light looked like a sun that was hidden in dark clouds!

Mo Riverbliss’s complexion immediately changed. She cried out in alarm, “That isn’t an origin energy cloud any longer! That is a catastrophic tribulation cloud!”

“What do you mean tribulation cloud?” Xiao Skywhite asked from beside Mo Riverbliss. At this time, he was working together with her to conceal the energy fluctuations from the world Laws.

“The origin energy cloud has evolved into a tribulation cloud! 33 Layered Heavens, 99 mile origin energy cloud, nine through nine returns to one, Lin Ming’s Ninefall has reached the peak of perfection. The Heavenly Dao will not abide his continued existence, thus a tribulation cloud was formed!”

Before Mo Riverbliss finished speaking, the golden light hidden with the clouds turned into a sharp gold sword that suddenly shot towards Lin Ming!

“Thunder tribulation!?” Xiao Skywhite yelled out, his eyes widened like moons.

“No! Metal tribulation!”

From the five elements of metal, wood, water, fire, and earth, metal was placed first. It was the firmest element and also the most severe!

This sword appeared hundreds of thousands of feet long. It was like the divine weapon of an Empyrean, chopping straight down at Lin Ming!

Kacha!

The golden sword cut down onto Lin Ming's body. his body suddenly shook, but the unforeseen sound of metal striking metal sounded out! Lin Ming's body burst out with heated and dazzling sparks, and underneath him, a fissure thousands of feet long was cut into the earth, forming an unfathomable abyss!

As the Elders and direct disciples of Carefree Island saw the terrifying abyss that this gold sword had formed in the earth, and then saw Lin Ming still floating in the skies, completely fine, all of them gulped, their throats twitching.

In resisting the metal tribulation, a thousand foot fissure had appeared in the earth, but Lin Ming himself was alright!

Was he even human?

Even a block of divine metal wasn't so hard!

After the first golden sword cut down from the skies, more and more blazing gold blades fell down from the tribulation cloud, completely enveloping Lin Ming in a rain of gold. Gold light shined everywhere, horrifying to the extreme!

Looking from afar, Lin Ming was extremely small compared to the infinite vastness of the world. He was swallowed up by that tide of golden energy.

"Crossing Ninefall and meeting a grand tribulation of the five elements, I've never heard of this before!"

Mo Riverbliss was panic-stricken. Whether it was thunder tribulation or five element tribulation, all of it was the power of heavenly tribulation. In this world, when something was born that surpassed the highest truths of the Heavenly Dao, that existence would draw heavenly tribulation upon itself. For instance, when a monster reached a point in its martial path where it would obtain enlightenment, or when a top divine weapon spirit artifact was forged, or when a transcendent divine pill was born, or even when a transcendent divine might was created, all of that could summon the wrath of heavenly tribulation to the world!

And now, Lin Ming had studied two transcendent divine mights!

In addition to that, he dual cultivated body and energy, a process that already violated the current Heavenly Dao Laws of the universe!

And there was the Magic Cube, an existence that defied the will of the heavens!

Moreover, Lin Ming's Ninefall had crossed a 33 Layered Heavens and produced a 99 mile origin energy cloud. In this situation, it was normal for him to stir up heavenly tribulation!

"Five element tribulation… Lin Ming, he…" Xiao Skywhite paled. This would be fine if it were ordinary thunder tribulation, but five element tribulation represented the five source energies that formed all life in the universe. How could heavenly tribulation using this sort of power possibly be crossed easily?

"If Lin Ming can pass this, it will also be another great lucky chance for him. Lin Ming is too monstrous a genius. There are four or five aspects of him that are able to spur heavenly tribulation. All of that added up means that Lin Ming's heavenly tribulation will be beyond terrifying!"

No one could help someone resist heavenly tribulation.

That person could only withstand the wrath of the Heavenly Dao themselves.

The powerful had the ability to resist a strong heavenly tribulation. But at the same time, their great strength would lead to an even more violent heavenly tribulation!

As Mo Riverbliss spoke, the blades of golden light that filled the world had already created a blindingly incandescent golden sea. Each blade of light had the strength to shear off a mountain top and sunder the earth!

Bang!

Lin Ming's body had to bear thousands of metal tribulations at the same time. His protective true essence directly exploded and the metal tribulation cut into his flesh and blood.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

After absorbing the dragon bone relics, Lin Ming's body had become as hard as divine iron. Even so, the gold tribulation of this heavenly tribulation was far too strong and there was far too much. The blades chopped through Lin Ming's flesh, causing blood to spill out.

Soon after, Lin Ming was completely swallowed up by that golden light!

Looking at just that terrifying power and momentum, one could imagine that massive calamity Lin Ming had to resist.

The five element heavenly tribulation represented the will of the Heavenly Dao. The power of heavenly tribulation was specifically designed to kill geniuses, to kill those that dared defy the will of the heavens.

In this case, how could it be easy for anyone to contend with it?

Massive gashes thousands of feet long covered the ground. The earth was torn full of holes! Ye Rosewater watched with her own eyes as a palace of Carefree Island was struck by one of those golden blades and immediately fell apart!

Ye Rosewater acknowledged that she could resist at most two or three of those metal tribulations. But to resist hundreds or thousands of these golden swords, how could a mere Life Destruction martial artist still live amongst them?

Everyone held their breath. At this time, Lin Ming's prestige in the hearts of Carefree Island's Elders had completely turned around. Beside characters like Xiao Haogan and White Brook, who had dark intentions in their minds, all of the other Elders hoped that Lin Ming could truly complete his Ninefall, becoming a Great World King in the future and bringing glory back to their Carefree Island!

Before the appearance of the 33 Layered Heavens, a Great World King was a legend. But, for Lin Ming to reach 33 Layered Heavens in his Ninefall, that was a legend among legends. It was extremely likely he would become a Great World King!

Determining which was more valuable between such a genius and a heaven-step treasure like the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, the Elders could clearly differentiate between them.

Just as Ye Rosewater was thinking, she actually saw that within that sea of golden light formed by countless golden blades, a deep red lotus began to sprout, recklessly blooming!

This red lotus was red to the point of being eye-catching, red to the point of being blindingly dazzling. The glorious aura that came out from this red lotus belonged to that of a great emperor, the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower!

Facing this terrifying metal tribulation, Lin Ming had decisively opened the grandmist space. In that instant, the world seemed to return to its most primordial time with a hazy grandmist energy floating about!

As the red lotus bloomed, the surging golden sea seemed to be split apart.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Lin Ming reappeared in everyone’s sight. His entire body was covered with blood!

Even with the grandmist space, the metal tribulation still rampantly cut down on his body, lacerating his skin and tearing his flesh. His protective true essence wasn’t able to block it at all!

And this was Lin Ming, someone who had fused with the supreme dragon bone. Any other martial artist would have long since been sliced to shreds and suffered a miserable death!

“My bones are alright, but too much of my skin and too many muscles have been torn…”

Lin Ming examined his body. Although an alarming amount of blood was flowing out, there weren't any injuries to his bones or organs. Lin Ming's strongest defense lay in his bones.

As long as his bones were safe, then Lin Ming could rely on the power of blood vitality he obtained after absorbing the Azure Dragon bone marrow to restore his wounds in several quarter hours.

However, the Heavenly Dao Laws would never give Lin Ming such a long time to recover. After the gold tribulation passed, a deep green light began to seethe within the tribulation clouds. The vast energy of the wilderness and nature surged outwards, condensing into light green rain that poured all over Carefree Island, like a summertime deluge!

Even the spirit plants in the medicinal fields began to rapidly grow as all plant life glowed with infinite vitality. Lingzhi, snow lotuses, ginseng, every precious herb began to grow like weeds as if thousands of years were passing with every single breath. If any of these common herbs were placed in the mortal world they would be priceless treasures, but here they grew like grass everywhere.

Lin Ming naturally wouldn't relax because of such a beautiful and vibrant spring scene. He was very clear in his heart that this was wood tribulation!

Bang!

The ground below Lin Ming suddenly exploded. Dozens, hundreds of giant roots rose into the sky, wrapping around him.

Lin Ming stayed vigilant, unmoving like a mountain. Grandmist space crazily radiated out from his body. After these roots flew into the grandmist space, they were rapidly melted away by the Laws. Even so, a massive number of roots fell onto Lin Ming, tying him up in countless layers.

Wood tribulation – roots of the world!

Chapter 1124 – Brutal

Chapter 1124 – Brutal

…

…

…

In the five elements, wood origin energy had the attribute of growing endlessly. As Lin Ming was wrapped in these world roots, he suddenly drew out the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Although his entire body was bathed in blood at this time, his combat strength was still in its peak state. Not only did his blood vitality not show the slightest hint of diminishing, it actually billowed forth like a rocket, hurtling through the endless skies!

Ca!

With a wave of the Phoenix Blood Spear, a massive amount of sharp wood-attribute world roots were cut off. However, more and more world roots shot up from the ground, coiling around Lin Ming's body like countless threads of twine.

Ka ka ka!

All of Lin Ming's joints emitted explosive crackling sounds. These world roots held unimaginable power within them; even a saint artifact would have been instantly twisted to scrap!

"Phoenix blood essence, burn for me!"

Lin Ming roared. From inside his body, the phoenix blood essence lit up. A blazing golden light burst out from between his eyebrows and a dark gold phoenix phantom appeared behind Lin Ming, spreading out its wings wide.

The first three level Concepts of Fire had been fused together into one. After Lin Ming absorbed a massive amount of Heavenly Dao Law Fragments from his Ninefall, even though he hadn't had time to thoroughly digest them, he had still unknowingly fused together the fourth level Concept of Fire.

The raging fire burnt through these world roots, scorching away their tenacity. At this time, Lin Ming opened all six gates, and with a sudden eruption of strength, all of these world roots were broken apart by Lin Ming.

"This… this is too terrifying! He is simply an ancient beast in human skin!"

"He's lost so much blood and is wounded all over, yet he doesn't seem affected at all. His blood vitality is still soaring to the heavens and his combat strength is still at its peak!"

"His endurance and recovery ability would leave anyone breathless with disbelief. There were hundreds of those metal tribulation swords, and now there are over a thousand of these world roots. Each metal tribulation blade and world root has the strength to massacre an early Divine Sea powerhouse, or even a middle Divine Sea genius. With 1000-2000 of these terrifying calamities headed his way, the strength of them added together is incredible. Yet, all of it was forcefully shouldered by Lin Ming! He must have consumed so much energy and yet his true essence doesn't seem to have reduced at all!"

As everyone was speaking, the heavenly tribulation changed once again. It no longer came one at a time, but now two of them arrived together! This was dual water and fire tribulation!

If it was just fire tribulation then Lin Ming wouldn't care. But now, water tribulation was added on! Water and fire dual tribulation!

Flames flew out from the clouds, forming a massive flame dragon that wildly soared through the air. It flowed from side to side, its body thicker than a water tank.

And on the other side was a blue water frost dragon. This water frost dragon had a terrifying impact force and corrosiveness, able to drown out all true essence.

The fire and water dragons issued deafening roars as they hurtled towards Lin Ming!

This was a completely overwhelming and bewildering attack!

By now, Lin Ming had experienced two great battles and he hadn't even had a moment to catch his breath. Suddenly, he was engulfed by the flames, His entire body became a man-shaped pillar of fire that was surrounded by the blue water frost dragon!

Two cold and hot energies simultaneously invaded Lin Ming's body. With Lin Ming's body as a battlefield, they began a brutal battle!

The metal tribulation and wood tribulation had attacked the exterior of Lin Ming's reformed body, but this fire tribulation and water tribulation had entered through his meridians, wanting to crush his dantian!

"Heretical God Sprout!"

Lin Ming's mind moved. The Heretical God Sprout began to emit layers upon layers of brilliant divine light. Compressed true essence howled out, and those three flame leaves burst into radiance, magnifying each other and suppressing the raging flames within him.

The Heretical God Sprout was truly worthy of being called a transcendent divine might. It was even able to suppress the power of heavenly retribution to a certain degree!

But that water tribulation was somewhat difficult for Lin Ming to withstand. The intense corrosive strength flooded through him, causing Lin Ming's flesh to wither. The pain from having his organs washed through with such acidic water could be imagined.

If it were a normal martial artist in his place then their bones would have long since melted from the acidic water and they would have turned into a puddle of bloody goo.

Even if it were Lin Ming, his entire body was still wracked with pain!

Not only did this water tribulation contain a deeply corrosive power, but it represented the most extreme polar cold, a cold that was colder than arctic ice. Lin Ming's blood began to freeze over and his wounds were frozen solid with layers of ice. With slicing sounds, thorns of ice formed from within his body, piercing through his skin and organs, making blood spill out!

Lin Ming once again burnt the blood of the Ancient Phoenix. The blazing and roiling phoenix blood forcefully expelled the water tribulation.

However, before the water tribulation left, the ground below Lin Ming once again began to tremble. From the ground that was riddled with fissures, even larger cracks began to appear with alarming speed. Massive stone golems began to crawl out from these cracks!

These stone golems were each the size of a hill. Although they didn't have any true essence, their physical strength had a force of tens of millions of jins. A single punch from them could collapse a mountain!

Before one wave ended, another wave had arrived.

This was earth tribulation!

As the Elders of Carefree Island saw this scene, all of them gasped. Who could still live through this?

Mo Riverbliss clenched her hands together. Seeing this scene, even she felt her palms turn wet with nervous sweat.

The existence of heavenly tribulation was not to temper and give lucky chances to those monstrous geniuses that had dared to violate the edicts of the Heavenly Dao.

Rather, it was the ultimate command to destroy them!

Heavenly tribulation was not easy to overcome!

Although it could be said to be an injustice to perish beneath heavenly tribulation, it wasn't uncommon at all!

"Lin Ming, you must persist." Mo Riverbliss said with bated breath. She was unable to calm her mood any longer. And beside her, although the usually tranquil Mo Eversnow had managed to maintain an appearance of calm, she was still wringing her hands together.

Now, Lin Ming could be said to be resisting three kinds of catastrophes!

He burnt the Ancient Phoenix blood, opened the Heretical God Force, and displayed the grandmist space. He had completely used all of his ultimate master moves!

Blood rained to the ground. His entire body was covered with horrifying wounds and vicious ice crystals pierced through his skin. Lin Ming's body was like a broken bag of blood; it was difficult to look straight at him.

He forcefully used the Heretical God Sprout to suppress the power of fire, and then used the power of fire to dissolve the ice crystals in his body. Finally, he flourished the Phoenix Blood Spear, and with his formidable physical strength alone he shot towards the stone golems!

At this time, his inner true essence had become mixed up into a completely chaotic mess; he was unable to summon even the tiniest bit of it. All he could depend on was his own physical strength!

"Celestial Tyrant Manual – Hundred Layered Waves!"

Lin Ming shouted out loud and blue veins bulged up on his forehead. He opened all six gates and revolved their strength to the limit!

These stone golems each had tens of millions of jins of strength. They hurtled towards Lin Ming with crushing brute force!

This was a head-on matchup of savagery!

Bang!

The first stone golem was smashed apart by Lin Ming's spear!

Although Lin Ming's physical strength amounted to a dozen plus million jins, by using the Celestial Tyrant Manual's Hundred Layered Waves, his strength could rise to an astonishing 30-50 million jins!

"This… this simply… this simply isn't human at all!"

This was the second time that this Carefree Island Elder had said these words. As he saw Lin Ming smash apart a stone golem with brute strength, he was simply floored.

The flow of true essence within Lin Ming's body had reversed, and his body simultaneously contained fire and water tribulations. He wasn't even able to suppress his wounds. All of an ordinary martial artist's meridians would have been torn and they would have died at this point, let alone continuing to fight. But as for Lin Ming, he forcefully resisted all this and shattered the earth tribulation stone golem.

As Lin Ming smashed apart the first stone golem, he could feel a great vibrating strength transmit up his arms, nearly causing the web of his palms to split open.

However, this agonizing pain actually caused Lin Ming to fall into an even greater fighting craze.

Smash! Smash! Smash!

The spear itself was a weapon meant for head-on battles. The only weapon that could sweep apart a battalion of a thousand soldiers was the spear!

A military general, no matter what circumstances in which they were fighting, would only use a spear, a lance, a great dragon crescent blade, or an overlord halberd!

This was because these weapons contained a great might and required immense strength. If one were to hold a spear and smash downwards, how could a mere single-handed sword block it?

In a situation of similar strength, one would only be able to avoid. This was because if a sword was used to resist such an attack, it wouldn’t be enough even if someone grasped the sword with both hands.

Kacha!

Kacha!

Stone golems were pulverized into pieces one at a time. Lin Ming’s blood vessels continued to tear apart even as the power of raging fire and freezing ice battled within his body. For him to still be able to display such a fierce combat strength in this situation was both thrilling and horrifying!

This savage and crazy fight lasted for almost half an incense stick of time. The 100 plus stone golems were completely demolished by Lin Ming, with nothing left behind but crushed stones. Underneath Lin Ming, a mountain of rocks was formed!

As for Lin Ming, he stood atop this rock mountain and supported himself with the Phoenix Blood Spear. The strong winds blew past him, sending strands of his hair fluttering in the wind. At this time, dyed crimson, he was like a war god of blood, causing those who saw him to shiver from their souls!

In this instant, everyone was astounded. It wasn’t solely Lin Ming’s strength, but his indomitable spirit, his tenacity for battle, and his will that seemed as if it could conquer the heavens!

The Elders of Carefree Island widened their eyes. Even someone like Xiao Haogan, who hated Lin Ming, couldn't help but acknowledge that the magnitude of Lin Ming's current achievements wasn't just because he had many lucky chances, but because his will far surpassed all common sense!

"The heavenly tribulation… is… is it over?"

Ye Rosewater looked at Lin Ming, her heart racing. Currently, there was not a single part of Lin Ming's body that was unharmed. He was dyed with blood and he looked like an Asura devil that had risen from hell.

If a mortal woman were to see Lin Ming now, they would blanch, possibly even fainting. But for Ye Rosewater, as Lin Ming's appearance fell into her eyes, she actually felt as if Lin Ming was filled with infinite charm, leaving a heart-palpitating experience in her mind that would never be erased!

A martial artist's looks could be altered using specific cultivation methods. One wouldn't even be able to sense their original appearance with divine sense. They could even restore their youthful appearance by consuming a part of their cultivation. Moreover, because a martial artist's body was tempered by energy again and again, there didn't exist many martial artists that were too ugly. Thus, ugliness and beauty were not what martial artists searched for when seeking a lifelong companion.

What they looked at was a person's will, their talent, experience, and all sorts of other intrinsic things.

Even though the current Lin Ming's appearance was ferocious without the tiniest bit of handsomeness to be found, his hot-blooded aura of invincibility, his tenacious and unyielding outline, all of that deeply imprinted itself into Ye Rosewater's heart.

And perhaps, it wasn't just Ye Rosewater who felt this way too…

"The heavenly tribulation is over?"

“Lin Ming’s life force is already extremely weak. Bearing the dual water and fire tribulations and also fighting the stone golems isn’t something that a human should be able to accomplish. Lin Ming has overdrawn his vitality; I’m afraid he’s in a dangerous situation!”

Lin Ming’s blood vitality was indeed weak; nearly all of his blood had been drained out!

And at this time, Lin Ming suddenly turned around. A brilliant light flashed in his pupils.

Within Lin Ming’s body, the dragon marrow began to quietly stir, creating fresh blood. All of the blood vitality within Lin Ming’s body began to slowly burn.

“This… what kind of freakish life vitality is this!? Even at the point when he’s a lamp without oil, he’s still able to recover!”

“Heavens! His injuries are restoring themselves! This… this is simply a miracle!

Chapter 1125 – Nine By Nine Life Destruction

Chapter 1125 – Nine By Nine Life Destruction

…

…

…

Starlight shined from the heavens. Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear, his long hair recklessly fluttering in the wind as blood vitality surged within him!

From all around, the Elders of Carefree Palace fell into a deep silence. Lin Ming had really crossed the five element grand tribulation. He had done so by relying on his powerful vitality as well as his enduring willpower!

Now, his blood and flesh began to regenerate as his wounds slowly healed over.

“He’s crossed the five element grand tribulation. Although Lin Ming was seriously injured, once he recovers his benefits will be enormous! This is truly incredible. For Lin Ming to arrive at this step is not just a perfect Ninefall, but something that exists even beyond Ninefall, giving him more and more benefits.”

Mo Riverbliss’s voice shivered as she spoke. This was just like an imperial civil service examination of the mortal world. Lin Ming had crossed Ninefall and had reached 33 Layered Heavens; this could be considered a perfect score. This was enough to become the number one scholar of the land. But, above a perfect score were additional subjects. The five element tribulation that Lin Ming passed could be considered equal to these additional subjects.

For Lin Ming to reach this step could be said to be serendipity. This was not something that a genius could do if they wished it. One needed countless lucky chances aligning together to produce this opportunity. It was not an event that could be repeated.

The Magic Cube, two sets of transcendent divine mights, and a dual body and energy cultivation with the first six of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates opened. Each step Lin Ming took could be called perfection. Only by having all of these together was he able to galvanize the heavenly tribulation against him.

From the time that Lin Ming was at the Houtian realm, the resources he had consumed were several boundaries above what the average martial artist at his realm should have needed. When he was at the Body Training boundary he used the Revolving Core realm's Shattered Demon Heart Crystal, when he was at the Houtian realm he used the Life Destruction realm's Nirvana Dragon Root, when he was at the Xiantian realm he used the Divine Sea realm's heaven-step Demon God Bone, when he was at the Revolving Core realm he used up a massive volume of resources that even a Divine Kingdom would find hard to withstand, and now at the Life Destruction realm, he used the phoenix blood essence and Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree that would move a Holy Lord, and there was also the supreme dragon bone that would drive a World King powerhouse insane with jealousy.

All of those lucky chances had accumulated along the way, and now they had all exploded together, leading to Lin Ming's current achievement!

"World seed, world seed..." Lin Ming closed his eyes, casting his sense through his body. He didn't find the world seed, but he did discover that in withstanding the five element tribulation, his willpower had risen to another level. Unknowingly, his elementary gold battle spirit seemed as if it would break through its shackles and reach the small success gold level.

"My world seed..." Lin Ming faintly frowned. Then, he looked up at the sky, seeming to realize something. Dark clouds surged above him, the energy still gathering as before.

"This is... it's still not over!?"

Lin Ming's mind shook. As he discovered this anomaly, so did Mo Riverbliss and Mo Eversnow. They looked up at that tribulation cloud and cried out in alarm, "The heavenly tribulation hasn't ended!"

“It’s not just the five element tribulation of metal, wood, water, fire, and earth, there is also wind and thunder! That tribulation cloud still contains the energies of wind and thunder!”

The five elements were considered to be metal, wood, water, fire, and earth, and often wind and thunder were placed among them. But, the truth was that wind and thunder didn’t belong to the five elements. Rather, they belonged to the eight trigrams.

The heavenly tribulation formed from these two energies was even fiercer than the five elements tribulation.

Especially thunder tribulation – that was the main form of heavenly tribulation. In the fables, thunder was the power of heavenly retribution wielded by the divine gods as they punished all who violated heaven’s will.

Mo Eversnow gazed at the tribulation cloud in the sky that was becoming increasingly thick and strong. She grimly said, “Metal, wood, water, fire, earth, five elements tribulation as well as tribulations of wind and thunder, for a total of seven different kinds. Perhaps seven different variations of tribulation isn’t the limit…

“Three represents the beginning and nine represents the limit. This is why Life Destruction takes three as a unit and nine as perfection. When some unparalleled great monsters cross tribulation, they often have to cross nine levels of heavenly tribulation. Perhaps what Lin Ming has to experience is not only wind and thunder, but two more tribulations after that, for a total of nine tribulations!”

“Two more tribulations… this is…” Mo Riverbliss was stunned. But, she also agreed with Mo Eversnow’s thoughts.

Throughout the whole and complete journey of a martial artist’s Life Destruction, they had to cross Life Destruction nine different times. Every three stages of Life Destruction was a division. The first three stages of Life Destruction were the division of ‘essence’. Essence was the flesh and blood, and also the formation of the mortal body. The second three stages of Life Destruction were the division of ‘energy’. Energy meant the reformation of the dantian. Finally, the last three stages of Life Destruction were the division of the ‘divine’. The divine meant the soul, and was also the reformation of the soul.

Each division took three as a unit for a total of nine. They were respectively the tempering of essence, energy, and divine, three different types.

As for the final ninth stage of Life Destruction, it also took ‘three’ as a unit. Each Layered Heavens was represented by three miles. The lowest Ninefall would produce a three mile origin energy cloud, and every rank upwards increased by another three miles.

After reaching the 33 layered Heavens, there would be a 99 mile origin energy cloud. This was the extreme of both three and nine, embodying the perfection of Heavenly Dao everywhere. Now that Lin Ming was crossing heavenly tribulation in an incomparably perfect situation, he wouldn’t stop at just seven variations of tribulation.

It should be a total of nine times!

As Mo Riverbliss saw each heavenly tribulation that Lin Ming faced become increasingly strong, she had no idea just how mighty the last two tribulations would be.

“What Lin Ming is crossing is not some normal Ninefall. Every heavenly tribulation he crosses is a baptism of his body, his true essence, his soul, and even his will! Every tribulation he crosses could be considered a minor stage of Life Destruction. Lin Ming’s Ninefall is not a simple ninth stage Life Destruction, but can be considered nine by nine Life Destruction!”

Life Destruction took nine as the peak; it was impossible for there to be 10 stages of Life Destruction because that would violate the rules of the Heavenly Dao. However, between nine and 10 also existed nine by nine numbers – this was also nine by nine Life Destruction, the limit of all limits!

Nine by nine Life Destruction, that was a completely different form of Life Destruction!

As Mo Riverbliss and Mo Eversnow were speaking, the great tribulations of wind and thunder had arrived!

Streams of tribulation wind rushed down, as black as ink. They were like vicious black flood dragons, growling and clawing all over. They emitted ghostly screams, as if countless miserable souls were contained within them! Such wind caused one’s scalp to tingle. This was more terrifying than the space storm experienced by someone ascending from the lower realms to the Divine Realm!

And following hot behind this wind tribulation was thunder tribulation!

This thunder tribulation was already difficult to describe. All that was visible was a vast purple sea with countless arcs of lightning flashing within it. This purple sea covered all of Carefree Palace. Between the heavens and earth, all that existed was this blinding and glorious purple light!

The tribulations of wind and thunder erupted at the same time!

Puff!

All around Carefree Palace, the Elders that were responsible for managing the array formation suddenly shook. The array discs beneath them exploded into powder and they vomited blood as they flew backwards.

Even Mo Riverbliss paled. She was forced back again and again!

The power of the Heavenly Dao cut apart all cages and shackles. No one was able to help Lin Ming cross his tribulation. Even if they were only trying to withstand the energy shockwaves of the Heavenly Dao, they could still suffer a gruesome backlash. This was not a matter of cultivation. The stronger a person was, the stronger the power of heavenly tribulation they would have to withstand!

However, the Heavenly Dao would not obliterate all existences that violated its rules with supreme and unstoppable power. As the saying went, the heavens would never cut off all exits. The Heavenly Dao would always leave behind the slimmest chance of survival!

These were the Heavenly Dao Laws, sacred and inviolable. Even so, the Heavenly Dao allowed challengers, and those with surpassing strength could even defy the will of the heavens. From this, one could see that the Heavenly Dao was filled with contradictions. It was impossible to speculate on the workings behind it!

"This is bad!"

As Mo Riverbliss was forced back, her thoughts linked to Carefree Palace. She used the power of Carefree Palace and opened up the island's great protective array!

By now, she finally understood that it was impossible to confine the Heavenly Dao energy from Lin Ming crossing Ninefall. If she tried, she would suffer a counterattack from the Heavenly Dao. All she could do now was activate the island's great protective array formation and conceal the entire area, having all of Carefree Island vanish for a period of time. She could only hope that no supreme elder happened to pass by the Red Desolate Sea, otherwise they would inevitably see the strangeness occurring at Carefree Island.

"This power… the power of the Heavenly Dao, this is not something that a human can contend with!"

As the Elders of Carefree Island saw even Mo Riverbliss receive a minor wound due to a backlash from the Heavenly Dao, all of them cried out in alarm. In their eyes, Mo Riverbliss was a god-like character.

They turned to that terrifying wind and thunder tribulation that blotted out the sky; it was like the end of times was arriving at their doorstep. Was this really something that a human could resist?

"Will Lin Ming perish here?"

Although everyone was perfectly aware that Lin Ming’s strength was extraordinary, none of the Elders could maintain their confidence in him as they gazed up at that terrifying heavenly tribulation. Before they could think further, Lin Ming was already swallowed up by that wind and thunder tribulation!

Underneath the vast might of heaven, Lin Ming was like a piece of cotton fluff caught up in a giant summer storm, unworthy and insignificant!

Blood of the Ancient Phoenix – combust!

Heretical God Force – erupt!

Lin Ming put forth his full effort. Behind him, the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower appeared, a deep red like it had just drunk its fill of blood. It began to bloom in vivid beauty!

This Prime Emperor Lotus Flower was similarly swallowed up by the wind and thunder tribulations!

The power of the Heavenly Dao was irresistible, unstoppable! Before the Heavenly Dao Laws, the strength of the living seemed far too weak and fragile!

“Hurry and retreat! Retreat!”

The Elders and direct disciples of Carefree Island all withdrew as they faced this thunder tribulation, lest they be touched by it!

This was heavenly tribulation brought about by that monstrous genius Lin Ming! Without needing to say it, those direct disciples knew that if they were even scratched by this power they would turn to dust!

As for the many Elders, none of them dared to allow the heavenly tribulation near their bodies. Although they far surpassed Lin Ming in strength, this heavenly tribulation was not any ordinary kind of energy. If they were to touch it and offend its glorious majesty, it would surely lead to a mutation in the heavenly tribulation and that backlash would fall upon them. The higher their cultivation was, the stronger the heavenly tribulation would become. This was why cultivation was useless in front of heavenly tribulation.

None of them believed that their talent could be compared with Lin Ming's in any way. The heavenly tribulation that he aroused could truly be described as an apocalyptic hell!

Carefree Island's main island had already been overturned by the heavenly tribulation. A massive number of palaces and pavilions were left in complete ruins by the wind and thunder tribulation. Carefree Palace's buildings and spirit trees, once swept by the black tribulation wind, would immediately turn to ash. As for that tribulation thunder, it would leave behind sundered and scorched earth wherever it went.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The earth trembled. Massive swathes of land turned into dust, completely disintegrated. Giant gaping chasms appeared in the ground, slowly filling with water and forming massive lakes.

Underneath this stifling dark purple apocalyptic scene, no one was able to use their divine sense to investigate what was happening within the wind and thunder tribulation. Even Mo Eversnow and Mo Riverbliss were no exception.

They waited for half an incense stick of time. Finally, the wind and thunder tribulation began to slowly die down until it completely faded away.

The energy between the heavens and earth gradually dissipated as everything returned to quiet. As for where Lin Ming was standing before, there was nothing left there but a fathomless hole.

Everyone couldn't help but look at that hole. "Lin Ming, he's still standing there!"

"Heavens! He… he… he…!"

All of Carefree Island's disciples cried out in horror. Even Ye Rosewater subconsciously covered her mouth, her lips and fingers shaking. Her heart was filled with both concern and chaos. Even someone with tough nerves like Ye Rosewater didn't dare look down.

Chapter 1126 – Boiling With Blood

Chapter 1126 – Boiling With Blood

…

…

…

At this time, Lin Ming was half buried in scorched earth and his body was charred black. His flesh body had withered away; this was the result of the black wind tribulation blowing over him. If this wind tribulation blew through a mountain peak, it would turn that mountain peak into powder. If it blew upon a normal martial artist, that martial artist would completely dry out, leaving nothing but a mummified husk behind.

Like this, that wind tribulation had poured into Lin Ming's body. His long hair had withered away and his skin had ruptured, scorched. Flakes of burnt skin floated into the wind, turning into dust that fell down.

The reason that Lin Ming ended up in such a situation was 90% because of the wind tribulation. With the twin wind and thunder tribulations, the majority of the thunder tribulation had been suppressed by the Heretical God Sprout. Otherwise, the situation would have been devastating.

The Heretical God Force was truly worthy of being called a transcendent divine might. A normal cultivation method followed the Heavenly Dao Laws to display a semblance of combat strength, and even a peak heaven-step cultivation method was only able to apply the Heavenly Dao Laws to the extreme.

However, only a transcendent divine might was able to control the Heavenly Dao to a certain degree; it was a cultivation method capable of altering the Heavenly Dao!

A cultivation method of this rank was in itself a violation of the universe and an existence that angered the Heavenly Dao. It was an ability that controlled the Heavenly Dao and used it as a tool, so how could a transcendent divine might not stir the rage of the Heavenly Dao?

Thus, when a transcendent divine might was born unto the world, it would also bring upon itself heavenly tribulation!

Only when the transcendent divine might survived the Heavenly Dao would it truly be considered alive.

The Heretical God Force was a transcendent divine might and thus able to change the Heavenly Dao to a certain extent. It was a cultivation method capable of suppressing heavenly tribulation. Its existence had already allowed Lin Ming to suppress the fire tribulation and thunder tribulation by 70-80%, otherwise Lin Ming would probably have died by now. This was because the fire tribulation and thunder tribulation had occurred at the same time as other tribulations, in the water and fire dual tribulations and the wind and thunder dual tribulations. With the Heretical God Sprout suppressing one side, this allowed Lin Ming to wholeheartedly deal with the other. Even so, Lin Ming had reached the limits of his strength!

“Is Lin Ming dying?” All around Lin Ming, the Elders of Carefree Island looked at each other with dawning horror. If Lin Ming died then that would truly be a joke. Such a genius with so many heavenly materials invested in him was finally cut down by heavenly tribulation. If that wasn’t a joke, then what was?

“He’s not dead, his body still contains a deep vitality! Moreover, it’s even slowly restoring itself. Heavens! A normal Life Destruction martial artist would have died long before becoming like this, yet Lin Ming is still living! What sort of life force is this!?”

The Elders of Carefree Island shouted out. From Lin Ming’s originally deathly body, they could feel a surge of blood energy. Although it was weak, it was truly there!

As time passed, his life force became increasingly strong, actually boosting the development of new flesh and blood.

“Lin Ming passed! Haha, he finally crossed this heavenly tribulation!” An Elder happily said.

“Not true. Look above, that tribulation cloud is still there. Perhaps there is still something else!”

“What? No… that’s impossible. If that’s true then Lin Ming will really die! For a monstrous genius like Lin Ming, the destiny gathered upon his body is unfathomable. He’s someone who will become a Great World King in the future, so how could he possibly die to heavenly tribulation?”

“Don’t underestimate heavenly tribulation, that is the power of the Heavenly Dao. In the legends, there were peerless geniuses and unsurpassed treasures that were destroyed by heavenly tribulation. The Heavenly Dao will not brook the existence of anything that is too perfect. If something is too perfect then they will possibly be able to reverse the Heavenly Dao in the future. Lin Ming is such an existence that surpasses perfection!”

These Elders fervently discussed. At this time, Mo Eversnow and Mo Riverbliss both held their breath, their beautiful eyes wide as they stared at the tribulation clouds.

At this time, they no longer assumed that they were going to get lucky. This was because the tribulation cloud did not disperse. Rather, it began saving energy!

It was certain that nine different heavenly tribulations would come! The key question was just when these final two disasters would fall!

Mo Eversnow gripped her hands together, her soul form shivering. Mo Riverbliss’s forehead was wet with beads of sweat, and yet she couldn’t bother to wipe them off.

At this time, no one could help Lin Ming. The tribulation cloud above his head was the life annihilating death god, the true arbiter of destruction!

“Could it be the Magic Cube…” Mo Eversnow thought to herself. Such a terrifying heavenly tribulation was not in any way, shape, or form a type of tempering to Lin Ming. Rather, the heavens truly wished to exterminate him. The last thread of hope that the heavens should have thrown to him was so faint that it couldn’t even be seen. Since ancient times there were truly many existences that were too perfect when they were born, thus they attracted heavenly tribulation. For instance, transcendent divine mights, transcendent divine pills, and monstrous Great World Kings. When these things were born, they would encounter heavenly tribulation and possibly fall from the sky. But, those that perished were in the minority. The heavens never sealed off all paths of hope. The Heavenly Dao was a completely contradictory concept. Even though it tried to destroy all those existences that dared to violate its Laws, it would also allow them a faint chance of survival.

However, if those extremely ancient super existences were to face a brutal heavenly tribulation that was the same rank as the one Lin Ming was facing, then Mo Eversnow estimated that most of them would have perished. Even if they were peerless beings or treasures, Mo Eversnow was confident that Lin Ming wouldn’t lose to any of them.

If Lin Ming died in this heavenly tribulation, then that meant they would have all died too!

Thus, a dual body and energy cultivation and two transcendent divine mights should have aroused a surprising heavenly tribulation, but it shouldn’t have been so fierce!

Then, if there was a reason to be found for all this, then the prime culprit would be the Magic Cube!

What was the Magic Cube? Could it truly be a harbinger of doom!?

It was no longer possible to trace the identity of the Magic Cube’s first master. But, one of its subsequent possessors had been Mo Eversnow’s grandfather, a Great World King. After obtaining the Magic Cube, he had suffered a grievous soul wound because of an accident. Afterwards, he was severely injured by Tian Mingzi and thus died!

Then Mo Eversnow had inherited the Magic Cube, and her mortal body had been annihilated.

Now the Magic Cube had fallen into Lin Ming's hands!

Everything that was known about the Magic Cube was information gathered and speculated on by Mo Eversnow's grandfather and herself. As for whether or not any of it was true, none of it was possible to verify!

Also, when Lin Ming had crossed the 33 Layered Heavens Ninefall, two other phenomena had appeared beside the Magic Cube. Just what had those phantoms been?

What were these three types of existences? Were they destined to bring upon the curse of the world?

"Heavenly tribulation… Heavenly Dao, please slow down, slow down! Give him some time to catch his breath…"

Mo Eversnow earnestly prayed in her heart. She didn't know what the final two levels of heavenly tribulation would be, but they would absolutely be far more terrifying than the first seven levels!

These final two heavenly tribulations might fall down together. Their might could be imagined!

If Lin Ming was still at his peak condition then he should have been able to resist it. But how could the current Lin Ming possibly defend against such an attack?

All she could hope was that there would be some time before the eighth and ninth levels of heavenly tribulation fell down, so that Lin Ming could restore himself as much as possible!

Time passed a breath at a time. The tribulation cloud in the sky still roiled together. The Laws that were limited to a 99 mile range began to manifest into all sorts of shapes, ferocious, diabolical, overflowing with killing intent!

To Mo Eversnow and Mo Riverbliss, each breath of time was incomparably long.

At this time, the Elders of Carefree Island gradually began to understand what was happening. Even if they couldn't understand what was happening in those tribulation clouds, they could still make out the nervous expressions of Xiao Skywhite and Mo Riverbliss. From that alone it was obvious that the Heavenly Tribulation had yet to end!

"Oh Heavens! How could this be!?"

"The Heavens must destroy Lin Ming? Is the destiny of my Carefree Island too shallow that we are doomed to never give rise to a World King?"

Everyone fixed their eyes on the tribulation cloud, praying for it to slow down. And at this time, the sky began to rumble. Mo Eversnow shivered, her hands gripping even tighter together.

But, her prayers and everyone's hopes no longer mattered.

The final heavenly tribulation had begun!

There was no time to catch a breath! The new disaster had arrived after just 20 some breaths of time. Even if Lin Ming had dragon marrow blood within him, he simply hadn't had enough time to recover.

Scorched completely black, Lin Ming heard the sound of billowing heavenly retribution above him. He lifted his head, opened his eyes, and looked at the brilliant tribulation cloud.

His eyes shined like stars, sparkling with a severe light.

Pa pa pa!

As Lin Ming moved, his body was caught by friction and cracked apart. A massive amount of old skin fell off, nearly turning into dust. Underneath this old skin was raw flesh, dripping with blood.

Being flayed alive was a torture method used in the world of mortals. Currently, Lin Ming had nearly been flayed alive.

He hadn't been skinned, but a great deal of his flesh had withered away. In truth, most of the flesh underneath Lin Ming's skin had been dried away, and now the old skin burst apart and red and yellow liquid leaked out from him. This was already much better than his previous state of being completely dried up like a lamp without oil, because his blood vitality had managed to restore him a bit.

Currently he was only at 10% of his peak strength. Without mentioning his flesh, even his organs were under tremendous attack. The true essence within his body had already become impossibly chaotic and the massive power of thunder tribulation and fire tribulation still rampaged within him. The Heretical God Sprout was nearly unable to suppress them, much less allow Lin Ming to use the Heretical God Force to fight.

With the aid of the dragon marrow he was still able to burn the Ancient Phoenix blood essence. But, Lin Ming's organs were now half-ruined by the black wind tribulation. It would be beyond difficult to bear combusting the Ancient Phoenix blood essence.

"Lin Ming…" As Ye Rosewater saw that tribulation cloud roiling up above with heavenly tribulation soon to descend, she couldn't bear to continue looking helplessly on. She subconsciously traced her spatial ring. However, a nearby Elder thrust out his hand and said, "Don't be reckless. Anything you do cannot help him. It's better if we don't do anything unnecessary that will cause a mutation in the heavenly tribulation!"

In fact, Ye Rosewater also knew this point. This was just a helpless and unconscious reaction from her. It was impossible to guess the motives and acts of the Heavenly Dao, and heavenly tribulation was also the same. To face heavenly tribulation was the same as a mortal facing a wild animal. They had to be careful with every action they took, and even taking a pill was nigh impossible lest they invoke the rage of their opponent, causing its attacks to become increasingly crazy!

Lin Ming glanced at the sky, his Phoenix Blood Spear still grasped in his hands. As he shook his spear, most of his skin had already sloughed off, causing viscous red and yellow fluid to stick onto the spear shaft and slowly slide down.

He was a person that could not be injured any further. But, his eyes contained a shining fighting spirit that made even the skies shiver.

A man, a spear, facing the endless Divine Realm!

A heart, a body boiling with blood, facing the boundless Heavenly Dao!

At this time, the heavenly tribulation finally fell. In the instant when the Heavenly Dao fell, all of the world came to a standstill. In this world, there was nothing left but black and white. Everything was swallowed up by these two extreme colors!

Black and white, incomparably distinct, incomparably radiant!

The eighth and ninth level heavenly tribulation – yin yang tribulation!

At the formation of the universe, the endless nothingness evolved into primal chaos, primal chaos divided into yin and yang, yin and yang formed the five elements, and the five elements gave birth to all living things.

The five elements were the source from which all things were formed, and yin and yang were the source from which the five elements were formed.

Yin and yang, in addition to metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, and thunder, these were a total of nine different kinds of essence energy. They were the origin of the universe from which all matter was formed, the beginning of all beings!

Chapter 1127 – Large Success Battle Spirit

Chapter 1127 – Large Success Battle Spirit

…

…

…

Yin yang was second only to the power of grandmist. What came right after grandmist was yin and yang.

Yin yang energy filled the skies, weaving together into lines filled with truths. An indescribable sense of chaos fell over everyone. Even the Elders and direct disciples of Carefree Island that were far away from the range of the heavenly tribulation felt as if they would die at any moment in the face of this yin yang tribulation!

This pure black and white that flooded the world, enveloping all of existence between the heavens and earth, left behind an incomparably suffocating feeling. Facing this, one felt as if their very soul would fade away! Some martial artists with an unsteady will and a weak battle spirit fell into despair, as if their lives had lost all meaning. They felt as if they could accept dying right here and right now.

This sort of feeling left all of them cold with sweat seeping out of their palms.

If they developed such suicidal thoughts just by gazing upon that yin yang tribulation, then if they had to face it head-on and be submerged within it, the despair they would feel could be imagined!

A normal martial artist might just sever their own meridians and kill themselves!

This yin yang tribulation was not just a catastrophe of the body, but also a disaster of energy and a scourge of the soul. Essence, energy, divine, it was impossible to escape this tribulation!

“This tribulation…” An Elder looked on, his wide eyes filling with regret. Although his talent couldn’t be considered too high, he had lived for a long time and he had a great breadth of experience. He could see just how terrifying this yin yang tribulation was.

“No, this shouldn’t be, this cannot be… this is forcing him past the edge. The heavens should never seal off all paths of survival… how could such a disaster occur? Just what secrets does Lin Ming have on him that could galvanize such a heavenly tribulation?”

“Lin Ming…” Mo Eversnow’s glowing body gently shivered. She was unwilling! She had waited 50,000 years for this chance, she had waited 50,000 years to meet Lin Ming!

She had put forth endless effort, countless endeavors with numerous lucky chances accumulated on him. She had poured all of her hope into him, so she didn’t believe that all her efforts would be in vain!

“Lin Ming! Withstand this trial! Up until now you’ve experienced countless hardships and endured them all, this time will not be an exception!”

Mo Eversnow shouted out in her heart. And at this time, Lin Ming’s bloodied body welcomed the yin yang great tribulation!

Ca ca ca!

The power of the Heavenly Dao formed runes of yin and yang, falling down upon Lin Ming’s body. It caused his already dilapidated body to collapse, with a massive amount of flesh and blood flying out! This was not just blood splashing out, but a torrent of blood caused by the disintegration of the body!

His meridians tore, his body shattered, only his skeleton was able to barely withstand the yin yang tribulation!

In that moment, Lin Ming felt a strong feeling of despair surge in his mind. This was despair brought about by the Heavenly Dao Laws. Lin Ming felt as if he had instantly arrived in the hell of the death god. There was nothing but gray around him. There was no life and nothing in this world but death and despair.

Death… only by dying would he reach his eternal destination.

A strange voice echoed in Lin Ming's ears, causing this idea to form in his mind. But, what was strange was that in the face of such a divine soul and will attack, the Magic Cube in Lin Ming's spiritual sea was completely silent, without a single response.

The Magic Cube didn't resist the Heavenly Dao Laws?

Could it not resist? Or did the Magic Cube itself represent the world Laws, thus it did not resist?

This thought flashed through Lin Ming's mind. But, even without the Magic Cube, Lin Ming never believed he would absolutely lose in a battle of divine soul and will.

If the Magic Cube represents the Heavenly Dao, then I will rely on myself!

No matter how high the Heavenly Dao is, I will still defy the heavens' will!

If the heavens must destroy me, then I shall dye the heavens red with blood!

Bang!

In that instant, Lin Ming's mind quaked as if something shattered. The grandmist battle spirit howled out from between his eyebrows!

The battle spirit trembled. It was like a wild dragon, roaring at the skies!

Immediately, the misty elementary grandmist energy around the battle spirit suddenly condensed onto its surface. The spear-shaped battle spirit rapidly grew, growing longer!

The elementary gold battle spirit stage was easily broken through. Then, gold small success, peak of small success, gold large success!

As Lin Ming's thoughts erupted, his battle spirit actually crossed the small realm of gold small success in a single go and leapt directly into gold large success!

The Heavenly Dao Laws squeezed upon Lin Ming's will. Not only did it increase the evolutionary rate of his battle spirit, but it was just like the Twinlife Thunder Crystal, digging out all of the potential of Lin Ming's battle spirit. This was not something that a normal battle spirit tempering technique could compare with. A tempering technique that could increase a battle spirit's potential could only be found through a stroke of fate!

"Gold large success! By the heavens!"

"I cannot believe that he achieved such a battle spirit!"

"Incredible, incredible! But… can just an explosion of a battle spirit resist the three tribulations of essence, energy, and divine? There is also his body and dantian; he might not be able to withstand this tribulation!"

Carefree Island's Elders sighed in lamentation. Lin Ming's strongest aspects were his will and divine soul. Moreover, the power of his will hadn't been used up too much so far. Thus, even when facing the last of the heavenly nine tribulations, Lin Ming was still able to break through the soul tribulation in a single fell swoop. But, there was still the tribulation of body and energy – that would truly take his life!

Lin Ming's body was already in tatters.

Hu –

Suddenly, a primal chaos diagram appeared beneath Lin Ming's feet. Lines of the Great Dao began to flow all over the primal chaos diagram.

Then, another primal chaos diagram appeared above Lin Ming's head. One yin, one yang, below him was yin, and above him was yang. When the world was first formed, a similar yin yang construction also took place.

Now, the yin yang tribulation had manifested into two primal chaos diagrams that represented the heavens and earth. They were like two massive milling stones as they began to grind and squeeze down on Lin Ming!

Ka ka ka!

Lin Ming's entire body emitted an unbelievable creaking sound as if he were about to snap apart from the massive impact. An unbelievable force shrouded down on Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's bones had fused with the supreme dragon bone relics and now they were as hard as divine iron. If this was before he had fused with the supreme dragon bone, then even though Lin Ming had completed 100% Tempering Marrow and opened the defensive Gate of View, his bones would have been pulverized by the power of the Heavenly Dao!

But now, he was forcefully resisting it!

However, even though his bones were able to withstand the force, his flesh wasn't able to. Lin Ming's flesh constantly broke down. If he had no flesh and only a skeleton left, then he would die either way!

As Lin Ming's mortal body continued to collapse, his life force grew increasingly weak.

"This brat's going to die..." In a secretive corner, Great Elder Xiao Haogan looked at Lin Ming, grinning all the while. After being sent flying back injured, he no longer needed to help manage the array formation. "He's finally going to die. Good... I won't have to worry about him anymore."

Although Xiao Haogan was perfectly aware that Lin Ming could bring endless benefits to Carefree Island if he rose in the future, none of those benefits would fall into his lap. The only way would be if Lin Ming was an idiot of idiots and decided to help his own enemy.

Of course, Lin Ming clearly wasn't, otherwise he never would have reached this step. He considered the future and decided that the more power and fame Lin Ming gained, the unluckier he would become.

"Just die! Just die so we can all be happy! Fuck, a mere Ninefall actually has as much pomp and show as a Holy Lord. He thought he was so kick ass and awesome but he actually dies at the end. He nearly scared me to death with his antics. Such a massive formation to help him and so many resources spent on him, and yet it all comes to nothing. He's nothing more than a fart in the wind. Whew, I think I'm going to laugh to death here."

Xiao Haogan coarsely cursed to White Brook with a true essence sound transmission. With his status, he had never spoken such vulgar words before. It was only because his extremely tense mood had finally unwound a bit, and the sudden change caused him to blurt out such words.

White Brook was standing near Xiao Haogan. The two of them were standing in a relatively hidden spot. White Brook was also in a good mood. As Lin Ming crossed Life Destruction, his heart had been caught in his throat the entire time. Good heavens, such a terrifying moment had occurred. If Lin Ming had managed to successfully cross his Ninefall, then he might have combat strength comparable to a Divine Transformation master!

Once he reached the Divine Sea, wouldn't that just be way too outrageous? Even a normal Divine Transformation powerhouse wouldn't be his opponent!

And when he reached the Divine Transformation realm in the future, there was not the least bit of doubt that he would be able to crush a middle Divine Lord powerhouse. As for Great Elder Xiao Haogan, he was at the late Divine Lord realm!

"At least the heavens have eyes. This sort of person should have died long ago. I was worried all this time. Let's look on at the good play and see the beautiful fireworks from this heavenly tribulation. This is a very rare opportunity, so we must enjoy it for as long as we can. I hope that Lin Ming can continue for a bit longer, haha." White Brook said, gloating in Lin Ming's troubles. The more pain Lin Ming was in, the happier he felt.

Kacha!

Lin Ming knelt on one knee. After opening six of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, even if he didn't use the Hundred Layered Waves, his physical strength still surpassed 10 million jins and reached 20 million jins. Even so, he wasn't able to shoulder this back-breaking pressure.

And worst of all, he was still suppressing the residual energy from the five elements tribulation, especially that of the wind and thunder tribulations. The immense pressure within Lin Ming's body made it impossibly difficult to summon up true essence!

Lin Ming set the Phoenix Blood Spear upright, using it to support the space between the yin yang diagrams. Faint cracking sounds began to emerge from the Phoenix Blood Spear.

The Phoenix Blood Spear emitted a keening cry as it was unable to withstand the pressure. Underneath the titanic pressure of the Heavenly Dao, it began to slowly bend, ready to break apart at any moment!

As Lin Ming saw the Phoenix Blood Spear nearly break, a decisive and unwilling light shined in his eyes.

He had left his wives and parents in the lower realms and arrived in the Divine Realm alone. The first weapon he obtained was the Phoenix Blood Spear. During all these years in the Divine Realm, all he had relied on was this spear in his hands! This spear was his comrade, his friend!

Now that he saw his spear about to break and yet he couldn't change anything at all, he found his heart filled with unwillingness. He waved his hand and changed the angle of the Phoenix Blood Spear. That spear that was bent over 90 degrees suddenly stretched back straight, then shot out!

"Go, my good brother."

Lin Ming quietly said these words in his heart. The Phoenix Blood Spear issued a sorrowful cry as it soared, a crimson beam of light.

Woosh!

Mo Riverbliss’s figure instantly vanished. She flash-stepped in front of the Phoenix Blood Spear and caught it, the spear shaft still trembling!

Hum~ Hum~

The Phoenix Blood Spear burned with a blazing light, constantly issuing a keening cry as if it were weeping in grief.

Mo Riverbliss’s heart was deeply touched. A saint artifact had wisdom. It could differentiate between emotions both warm and cold and also vaguely feel the intent of its master. If a martial artist prized and cared for their saint artifact, then that saint artifact would also loyally protect its master. On the other hand, if a martial artist regarded a saint artifact as worthless grass, then that saint artifact would begin to lose its glorious luster.

As Mo Riverbliss sighed, she felt the Phoenix Blood Spear vibrate faster and more frantically, as if it would turn into a red dragon and fly out from her hands!

“Mm? This… how could this…”

Mo Riverbliss was startled. She widened her eyes, unable to believe what she was seeing.

Chapter 1128 – Spirit Artifact Spear

Chapter 1128 – Spirit Artifact Spear

…

…

…

The Phoenix Blood Spear seemed to develop a mind of its own. It cried, rapidly oscillating as if it wanted to fly out. This was beyond what a normal top grade saint artifact could achieve!

Although a peak saint artifact had wisdom, that was only spiritual wisdom; it didn't possess true self-awareness, otherwise that would be a spirit artifact.

The core of a spirit artifact was the 'spirit'. It had a spiritual will of its own. It could move, it could fly away to escape, it could automatically attack the enemy, and for a spirit artifact that reached a high boundary, it could even draw array formations on its own and utilize the Heavenly Dao Laws.

A saint artifact did not possess such abilities. Even moving on its own was impossible. The only chance for that to happen was if its master had died and sealed a part of their fading will and soul into the saint artifact to control it. For instance, the Argent White Sword found in the 8000 Mile Black Swamp was such an example.

Now, the Phoenix Blood Spear in Mo Riverbliss's hand was clearly not the same situation as the Argent White Sword, otherwise that would mean Lin Ming had died.

"An intelligent saint artifact… is this a spirit artifact!? No, it's still a tiny step away from reaching such a boundary. It hasn't formed a complete artifact spirit; this could only be considered an elementary artifact spirit! But, becoming a true and complete spirit artifact is only a matter of when! Heavens! How could this be!?”

Mo Riverbliss was shaken. In that moment, the Phoenix Blood Spear had actually formed the source elementary artifact spirit and evolved into a spirit artifact!

In order to forge a saint artifact into a spirit artifact, one had to first have it achieve the material quality of a spirit artifact. And, if it lacked an artifact spirit, it could only be called a transcendent saint artifact.

A transcendent saint artifact was relatively easy to forge. As long as one used up enough valuable materials and there was a grandmaster refiner using high level techniques, they could always produce one. But, an artifact spirit was extremely hard to create, especially a source artifact spirit!

The so-called source artifact spirit was an artifact spirit bred from within the artifact itself; it was also called a true artifact spirit. The birth of a true artifact spirit required infinite effort, sacrifice, and even more resources. One needed hundreds of thousands of years or even millions of years to form one. A master had to unite their will with their weapon, fusing in their own true essence and bloodline, and also experience numerous lucky chances before forming one!

A true artifact spirit was far too difficult to create. Thus, many grandmaster refiners would choose another path and create a false artifact spirit. They would take the soul of a powerful vicious beast, demonic spirit, ghost, or even the soul of a martial artist, and then forcibly refine that soul into an artifact spirit and seal it into the artifact. This sort of artifact spirit was not completely compatible with a spirit artifact, thus it wouldn’t allow the spirit artifact to display its full might. Moreover, such an artifact spirit would contain resentment in its heart, and it wouldn’t put forth its full effort. If one didn’t sign some sort of contract with it, then there was even the possibility that this artifact spirit would rebel at a critical moment.

A true artifact spirit and a false artifact spirit were of completely different qualities.

Thus, this was why Mo Riverbliss was so shocked as she saw the Phoenix Blood Spear evolve!

Not only was an elementary artifact spirit born, but even the material quality of the Phoenix Blood Spear itself had leapt up to the degree of a spirit artifact!

This was all created by the heavenly tribulation!

Mo Riverbliss suddenly realized what had happened. The Phoenix Blood Spear had experienced the nine heavenly tribulations together. Whether it was the five elements tribulation, the wind and thunder tribulation, or even the current yin yang tribulation, Lin Ming had used the Phoenix Blood Spear to resist them all. As the nine heavenly tribulations fell, the quality of the Phoenix Blood Spear was incomparable to that of the past!

Especially this final tribulation. This could be called a calamity upon the Phoenix Blood Spear, but it was also a baptism. It had hastened the birth of an artifact spirit!

And in that final moment, Lin Ming's will had condensed, bringing with it an infinitely heated spirit and daring valor that seemed capable of resisting the Heavenly Dao. The Phoenix Blood Spear had also withstood being flooded by Lin Ming's will, and then, at the end when Lin Ming had given up the Phoenix Blood Spear to protect it, this had thoroughly awakened the elementary artifact spirit that had been formed within the heavenly tribulation!

This could be called a spirit artifact that was completely formed by Lin Ming. It was not forged by a grandmaster refiner, but had been created by Lin Ming. From the time when it was a saint artifact it had been nourished by Lin Ming's true essence and will, and at the end it had even experienced the nine levels of heavenly tribulation with him and had been doused in his flesh and blood. The Phoenix Blood Spear could now be considered his life's weapon!

Such a weapon could display combat strength that other weapons could not compare with. And more importantly, the Phoenix Blood Spear was psychically linked with Lin Ming, becoming one with him, thus there would never be a situation in which he couldn't use it.

And how could a normal Divine Sea realm genius use a spirit artifact? A top grade saint artifact or transcendent saint artifact was their limit!

Although every spirit artifact that formed its own source artifact spirit had experienced its own lucky chances, each one could only be produced through a stroke of fate. And something like the Phoenix Blood Spear was supremely unique, even rarer than a once in a billion situation! This sort of lucky chance could not be duplicated!

If Lin Ming could withstand this heavenly tribulation, then just the enhancement of the Phoenix Blood Spear would allow his strength to dramatically rise to another level. But, the question was, could he survive the final tribulation?

Mo Riverbliss prayed deep within her heart. So many lucky chances, so many great results, if he survived then he would inevitably become one of the Divine Realm's peak characters! If he failed, then all would turn to nothing!

Mo Riverbliss felt her heart racing. Lin Ming's Ninefall had brought with it an unfathomably great momentum. This sort of scene would be a truly unforgettable experience!

At this time, all of Lin Ming's flesh had broken, his organs were completely smashed apart, and his meridians and blood vessels were torn. Shining white bone revealed itself from his body. These bones dazzled with layers upon layers of dao patterns. These were the Heavenly Dao Laws that Lin Ming had absorbed and imprinted into his very body. Just his bones alone were precious heavenly treasures!

In addition, the energy from the yin yang primal chaos diagrams had broken into Lin Ming's body, savagely destroying his meridians. Lin Ming was already unable to revolve his energy to help, and this added an even greater injury atop all his other injuries. He was no longer able to suppress the massive amount of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation within the Heretical God Sprout!

There was no other Life Destruction martial artist that could look like Lin Ming and still be alive. Nearly all that was left of him was his bones and brain! He was completely supporting himself with his tenacious life vitality and willpower!

“This is too miserable, so miserable that it’s hard to look at. Lin Ming is barely supporting himself with his will.”

“This is his unyielding will. But even so, his life will be severed soon…”

“The heavens never seal off all roads, but… what can Lin Ming do in this state…”

Several Elders of Carefree Island felt that Lin Ming was too pitiful. But Xiao Haogan and White Brook were actually enjoying the show. When Lin Ming was full of spirit and strength they had both been restrained, but now they saw that Lin Ming’s current condition was extremely poor, they began to mock and make casual talk at his misfortune.

“This brat’s bones are quite hard, hah. They haven’t even been crushed by the heavenly tribulation, they should be valuable treasures!” Xiao Haogan said, noticing Lin Ming’s bones.

“Indeed. Look at those brilliant runes on his bones and those countless traces of dao patterns. Those bones are absolutely a treasure. Once he dies, we’ll take his bones and perceive the dao patterns from them, and then we can refine them into transcendent saint artifacts. That should be enough to make up for the loss of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree.” White Brook stroked his beard, speaking in a smug tone.

“Haha, Honorable Master’s ideas are truly great!” Xiao Haogan and White Brook’s eyes shined as they greedily stared at Lin Ming’s exposed bones.

At this time, Lin Ming’s fires of life were growing increasingly weak and nearly all of his blood had been drained out. His organs had stopped moving and even his dantian felt as if it would break soon. The power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation suppressed within the Heretical God Sprout was ready to erupt at any moment. Once it exploded, his body would completely burst apart and become a pile of scattered bones and flesh. Then, even his remains would be crushed into nothing by the primal chaos dao diagrams.

At that time, Lin Ming would be deader than dead!

Even so, he was unwilling to accept this fate! He would not give up!

At the precipice of death, Lin Ming felt as if time slowed to a crawl. Everything fell into his senses as he reached a state of incomparable clarity!

His heart was extremely tranquil! He still searched for a hope of survival. He knew that the heavens never sealed off all exits; there was only a faint chance to survive!

The Heavenly Dao was cruel and merciless. In front of the Heavenly Dao, whether it was common mortals, supreme elders, or even ants, everything was equal in its eyes.

In this world, there were very few existences that were able to defy the Heavenly Dao. There was only one exception, and that was those existences that were capable of surviving through heavenly tribulation!

For instance, a transcendent divine pill that was capable of defying the heavens and changing one's life, rewriting one's destiny, and resurrecting the dead!

For instance, a transcendent divine might that could control or even dominate the Heavenly Dao!

And also for instance, a peerless talent like Lin Ming, someone who had done all sorts of things that defied the will of the heavens, thus summoning heavenly tribulation. These sorts of geniuses were Great World Kings and even Empyreans!

Lin Ming did not have a transcendent divine pill that allowed him to defy the heavens and change his fate, nor did he have an unrivalled powerhouse capable of helping him cross heavenly tribulation.

He just had two transcendent divine mights, and was only able to use these two transcendent divine mights to resist the heavenly tribulation. But, he had already used the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower and the Heretical God Force. Now, the true essence within his body was in utter chaos and energy was running rampant within him. His body was ready to blow up at any moment, so it was simply impossible for him to use a transcendent divine might.

Then, what could he rely on? What had crossed heavenly tribulation without dying that he could use as his final card?

All sorts of thoughts blazed through Lin Ming's mind. Finally, he remembered something…

Dragon bone relics!

Mo Riverbliss had spent a portion of her cultivation, changing the flow of time to help Lin Ming refine that 1000 foot supreme dragon bone into 108 dragon bone relics. Lin Ming had swallowed a third of them to open the Gate of View, but he still had 72 left.

A True Dragon was a God Beast, and even ordinary dragons were considered part of the monster race. A powerful grown dragon was even mightier than a Great World King! In order for the monster race to transform, they had to undergo heavenly tribulation. And, a dragon was so powerful that they had no choice but to experience heavenly tribulation. As they grew up, they would have to experience multiple heavenly tribulations!

The God Beasts among the dragon race were even capable of resisting the Heavenly Dao Laws!

Yes, that was it! The dragon bone relics were refined from the supreme dragon bone and they existed outside of the Heavenly Dao. They were objects capable of changing the Heavenly Dao to a certain extent!

Lin Ming's mind shook as he recalled all of this. This was his final ray of hope!

Mo Eversnow had already said Lin Ming could only swallow 36 dragon bone relics before he reached the Divine Sea; his body wouldn’t be able to withstand more. But then, Mo Eversnow didn’t imagine that Lin Ming’s Ninefall could reach such a degree. And beyond even that, if he didn’t swallow the dragon bone relics he would die, but if he did swallow them he would have a faint chance of surviving, so how could he not try?

“Dragon bone relics!”

Lin Ming’s hands had been completely torn apart and his meridians were surging with a tyrannical and uncontrollable energy. The bones of his arms were entirely exposed; it was impossible for him to take out the dragon bone relics with them. But luckily, Lin Ming still had his battle spirit. His large success gold battle spirit was nearly undamaged.

If a battle spirit was poured into a leaf, that leaf could be used to kill others. If it could change the position of objects, it could naturally take things out of a spatial ring. Lin Ming had never used a battle spirit to take objects out of his spatial ring so he wasn’t skilled at this task. Moreover, he was also in a hurry at this time. Thus, he took out all the round bead-shaped objects that resembled a dragon bone relic.

72 dragon bone relics. Mm… 73… there was one more? This was…

Lin Ming looked at that last black bead that resembled a dragon bone relic, immediately stunned.

Chapter 1129 – If The God Of Death Desires Me, I Shall Cut Down The God Of Death

Chapter 1129 – If The God Of Death Desires Me, I Shall Cut Down The God Of Death

…

…

…

Of the 73 beads, Lin Ming's attention was completely concentrated on that black spherical object that had tumbled out with everything else. It seemed to be made of wood and yet not, and made of stone and yet not. There were numerous strange demonic runes carved onto its surface, and it exuded a bizarre and strange aura.

Through all these years, Lin Ming had obtained countless treasures and pills. There were far too many things in the Extreme Violet Ring to count. Even so, as a martial artist, Lin Ming's memory was extremely acute; he was able to remember the origin of where everything came from. Lin Ming was able to recognize that this black mystery bead came from his second trip to the Holy Demon Continent's Blood Slaughter Steppes. He had killed the Steppes Master and obtained this black bead from his treasury.

At that time, he had also obtained a massive amount of demon god bones, blood demon crystals, and heaven-step treasures. Those things were all left at Divine Phoenix Island to assist them in becoming a Divine Kingdom in the future.

All that he kept was this black mystery bead. It was small and yet exceptionally heavy. When Lin Ming had obtained it, it had been placed atop a special treasure rank base, otherwise it would have already crushed through the ground.

Not only was it extremely heavy, but it also had a faint trace of life as if it were a living object.

From the start, Lin Ming had thought it was the egg of some ancient vicious beast. For instance, a flood dragon egg, sea serpent egg, or the egg of some other similar beast. But, it was simply far too small; trying to call it a vicious beast egg was a bit forced. Lin Ming had investigated it with his senses but he hadn't been able to identify what it was. He could only determine that it had originated from the Eternal Demon Abyss.

What kind of place was the Eternal Demon Abyss? It was a massive crater left behind by an Empyrean level powerhouse whose strike had pierced straight through the massive planet that held the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent!

It had to be known that the Sky Spill Continent's planet was over a billion miles in diameter! A common small planet, for instance the planet that Phoenix Cry Palace was located on, was only around 100,000 miles in diameter. This was a difference in volume of over a trillion times!

Sealed within the Eternal Demon Abyss were countless terrifying existences. These existences were unable to escape from the shroud of the force field that Empyrean Primordius had laid down. Only some tiny insignificant weaklings were able to pass through in these 100,000 years through a lucky aligning of coincidences. For instance, the Ancient Devil that had inhabited Yang Yun had likely come from some area deep within the Eternal Demon Abyss and had emerged from the other side at the Sea of Miracles.

In addition, there were also a number of treasures in the Eternal Demon Abyss. When the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted, a small amount of these treasures would be shot out by a tremendous black current. There were many trial challengers and High Lords that would roam the periphery of the Eternal Demon Abyss to search for these treasures. The Steppes Master had likely obtained this black mystery bead using such a method.

The Eternal Demon Abyss was a ruin left behind from a battle between several Empyreans. Even something minor they left behind could not be underestimated!

If there was something in there that surpassed a supreme dragon bone, or even a complete dragon skeleton, Lin Ming wouldn't be surprised. In fact, he wouldn't even be surprised if there was a true God Beast living within the Eternal Demon Abyss. This was because in front of an Empyrean, even God Beasts had to prostrate themselves!

The current Lin Ming was at the edge of death, so it was impossible for him to ruminate over the origins of the black mystery bead. Moreover, he didn't have the capital to investigate it to begin with. In short, this black mystery bead should be some extraordinary object. Especially now that Lin Ming had crossed Ninefall and accepted the baptism of the Heavenly Dao Law fragments, he was able to faintly feel the aura coming from this black mystery bead, and it left him shocked!

"I'll swallow it!"

Lin Ming couldn't give a care for particulars anymore. He grasped half of the supreme dragon bone relics and also that incomparably heavy black mystery bead and stuffed them all down his mouth!

If he didn't have his life then he wouldn't be able to consider any consequences anyways!

"Mm? What did that boy eat?" Xiao Haogan said, shocked. He naturally saw Lin Ming's actions.

"It should be some type of high level medicine. He's nothing but a sick patient that's gone crazy so he's trying to eat any medicine he can to help himself, but it doesn't matter because anything he does will invoke the rage of the heavenly tribulation. This has the same effect as asking someone to help him cross heavenly tribulation, the idiot!" White Brook sneered. He naturally didn't know about the dragon bone relics or that black mystery bead. As long as it wasn't a transcendent divine pill then there was a high chance what Lin Ming did would cause a mutation in the heavenly tribulation. Ordinary pills, before heavenly tribulation, had to follow the Heavenly Dao. Using them to cross heavenly tribulation would only result in a counterattack!

As for those transcendent divine pills that had crossed tribulation and were able to change one's fate and even resurrect the dead, completely disregarding the Heavenly Dao, those types of pills were absolute treasures passed down in World King level Holy Lands for generations. They were treasures that could cause even a World King to go mad with jealousy and attack others for, so how could Lin Ming possibly have one?

And on the side, Mo Eversnow and Mo Riverbliss were bewildered. Lin Ming had actually swallowed down so many dragon bone relics!

The two looked at each other, seeing worry and nervousness reflected in each other's eyes. But, there was also hope.

Dragon bone relics had their own life force; once swallowed they would erode and absorb Lin Ming's own flesh and blood. Normally, when a martial artist swallowed dragon bone relics, it was possible to in turn be absorbed by them instead! Even though Lin Ming had opened the Gate of View, when he was at his peak state he had still nearly died after eating the dragon bone relics. Before reaching the Divine Sea, 36 dragon bone relics should be his furthest limit.

Now, his body was ruined and his cultivation was also lacking. To swallow so many dragon bone relics at such a time was simply seeking death. Even so, this was the only capital he had to struggle against the fate of certain death!

This was because they were the only treasure on Lin Ming's body that had crossed heavenly tribulation and was able to resist the Heavenly Dao!

However, Lin Ming seemed as if he had also swallowed some sort of black bead. Just what was that? Mo Eversnow had extremely sharp eyes. Even though that black bead was mixed up with the rest of the dragon bone relics and had a similar appearance to them, she could still recognize it. That black bead had a completely different aura, one that left the heart racing!

At this time, she no longer had time to ponder it. The 36 bone relics entered Lin Ming's pulpy and ravaged body, mixing into him. With the current state of his body it would be extremely difficult to absorb the dragon bone relics, but that didn't mean it was impossible. And, he also had a massive amount of the power of heavenly tribulation within his body!

Most of this was thunder tribulation, fire tribulation, as well as the yin yang tribulation!

Dragon bone relics were objects that had crossed heavenly tribulation several times in the past. They were existences that violated the Heavenly Dao to begin with. Now that they collided with the power of four different kinds of heavenly tribulation, the result could be imagined!

Without the need for Lin Ming's body to melt the dragon bone relics, the power of heavenly tribulation had already started to melt them away. And at this time, the energy contained within the dragon bone relics thoroughly erupted!

The power of heavenly tribulation violently clashed with the dragon bone relics, and the battlefield was Lin Ming's body!

Peng!

Lin Ming's body shook, falling onto the yin yang primal chaos diagrams. At this time, there was no more blood left to flow out, and the energy within his body had already run completely wild, beyond his ability to control. There was not a single complete muscle or ligament in his body, and he wasn't able to move at all. He completely relied on the hardness of his bones to withstand the crushing force of the two primal chaos diagrams.

Lin Ming had lost all strength, energy, and physical function. He was even weaker than a three year old mortal child; there was nothing he could do!

No… there was still one thing he could do, and only one!

That was… to grit his teeth, endure the pain, support his bones, and keep on living with his unyielding will and undying spirit!

If he could last until the end, then at the time when the power of heavenly tribulation was destroyed and the dragon bone relics were also melted away, he would be the final one standing!

He could go on living and also obtain a massive lucky chance!

What sort of immeasurable willpower was needed to shoulder this? The yin yang tribulation brought about an aura of despair that left one drowning in anguish. In order to never give up no matter how much despair there was, one needed a resolute will as firm as divine iron!

Ka ka ka!

Even Lin Ming’s kneecaps were crushed apart. This agonizing pain left his vision blurry. He bit down on his tongue, pouring the power of his life into his gold large success grandmist battle spirit to support his weak fires of life that swayed precariously in this storm of energy.

If the heavens wish to annihilate me then I will annihilate the heavens!

If the god of death desires me then I shall cut down the god of death!

“He’s still alive! He’s still alive! Can… can he really live? Will such a terrifying heavenly tribulation be defeated by him?”

Ye Rosewater covered her mouth, her breath caught in her throat. She felt her nose sting as an unbidden emotion swelled up from deep within her. She had lived for dozens of years already and had a late Divine Sea cultivation, so she would never be like a little girl and burst out into tears because of overwhelming feelings. The reason that her eyes were wet at this moment was completely because she had been infected by Lin Ming’s tenacious will. In a situation where there wasn’t even a faint ray of hope, he had still managed to support himself until now. He was like a proud snow pine, staunch and unfolding!

However, most people didn’t favor Lin Ming’s chances too much. His fires of life were already on the brink of extinguishing. Even if he could continue on, just how long would he last?

Dragon bone relics and the power of the four different kinds of heavenly tribulation were all incomparably violent and tyrannical energies. It wasn’t wrong for Lin Ming to take this risk and wrestle with death, but the chances of him succeeding approached zero! This was because his ruined body couldn’t even qualify to be their battlefield.

This was just like two Divine Sea level powerhouses fighting on a mortal martial field. The martial field would not be able to withstand the energy shockwaves and would be torn apart!

“Fuck, he still hasn’t died!?” Xiao Haogan cursed.

“Don’t be so anxious. It’s just a matter of time. Don’t you feel that his painful expressions are very much enjoyable?” White Brook slowly said.

“Haha, Honorable Master is right.”

As everyone had all sorts of ideas popping up in their minds and were discussing the situation with true essence sound transmissions, no one knew that within that crazy power of heavenly tribulation and those melting supreme dragon bone relics, there was also a black divine bead. In the waves of energy, this black divine bead slowly revolved. This bead was originally a living existence. Although it was incomparably heavy, it was still formed from flesh and blood, and thus alive.

Underneath the stimulation of the two clashing energies, suddenly this black divine bead fiercely trembled. An incomparable life force began rushing out like an endless tide!

This life force was pure and wild. It was so potent and vibrant that even the life force of a great True Dragon would be mediocre in front of it!

All of this life force poured into Lin Ming’s body. It was like a land that had been dry and barren for a thousand years suddenly welcoming a sweet deluge of spring rain!

Roar – !

A resonant cry echoed through the heavens. It was like the roar of a dragon directly impacting through the distant horizon.

“W-what?!”

As Xiao Haogan and White Brook were happily speaking with true essence sound transmissions, their eyes suddenly widened. They thought that they had heard wrongly just now. How could Lin Ming’s body still have the strength to make such a clear and resplendent sound?

“His body… how could this be, his body is reviving! How could this be!? Where is this strength coming from!? This is impossible!”

Xiao Haogan’s eyeballs nearly popped out. Lin Ming’s ruined flesh and blood was rapidly regenerating!

Chapter 1130 – Refining Heavenly Tribulation

Chapter 1130 – Refining Heavenly Tribulation

…

…

…

Originally, all of Lin Ming's flesh had cracked apart, and the glistening white bones of his arms, legs, and chest were revealed. One could even count his ribs. There were also bones that were dislocated from the pressure. Even though Lin Ming's bones were tough, they still couldn't resist the continued grinding from the two primal chaos diagrams!

After his flesh reached such an appearance, his meridians and blood vessels also became tattered. His organs were almost squashed into mush, becoming a pile of messy goo.

The only complete body part he had was his brain. Within the protection of his skull, his spiritual sea hadn't been damaged at all. Even so, for a person devolved to such a miserable state, there wasn't any meaning left in having a complete brain.

This sort of condition could have been described as undoubtable death!

If a normal martial artist were to look like Lin Ming now then they would have already completely died! A Life Destruction martial artist had a stronger life force than a common mortal, but if their heart was pierced, their head was cut off, and their blood had all drained away, they would still die. This was the Heavenly Dao Laws.

Only during the crossing of Life Destruction when one's body disintegrated could a martial artist preserve their life. That was also because this process was supported by the Heavenly Dao Laws, thus they wouldn't die.

In this sort of situation, it was impossible for Lin Ming to live without some sort of transcendent divine pill, much less rely on his own regenerative ability to recover.

But now, a miracle was occurring in front of everyone present!

They watched on helplessly as Lin Ming's flesh and blood began to grow back!

The dazzling white bones were covered again with a layer of fascia. Then, the blood vessels moved over them like glistening red vines, spreading everywhere. Afterwards, the meridians reformed, the organs repaired themselves, and the muscles were completely reborn, their lines even stronger and more perfect than before.

Then, his wounds began to stitch back together, with fresh flesh rapidly regenerating at a rate visible to the eye. His flesh glistened and shined, like translucent red crystal!

Even his withered hair fell off, and new hair grew out from the old, passing down over his ears. These hairs, after being tempered in energy, sparkled with a lustrous sheen. Their silk-like texture even contained the profound mysteries of the Laws. If Lin Ming's hair grew long enough, it could even be plucked out and used as a material for a saint artifact divine bow's bowstring! This was proof of just how tough it was!

At this time, Lin Ming seemed as if he had almost achieved the boundary of the legendary diamond Vajra body, an immaculate and immortal body!

"Impossible! This is impossible! He should have absolutely died, just how is such a heaven-defying turn of events possible!?"

"What happened!? This can't be!"

White Brook and Xiao Haogan had expressions as if their fathers had died as they watched Lin Ming's body be reborn anew.

Looking at the present situation, there was an extremely high chance Lin Ming would be able to cross the heavenly tribulation. At that time, with Lin Ming's terrifying talent, it shouldn’t be a problem at all for him to become a Great World King. The two of them would be in an extremely miserable position!

“What do we do? What can we do?” Xiao Haogan asked, at a complete loss.

“How the hell would I know! At this time there is nothing we can do to change the past. If Lin Ming dies then that would be perfect, but even after being pushed to the brink of death and looking like he did, he still didn’t die. His life is far too tough! Chances are that he won’t die this time. We must not make enemies with him anymore, especially on the surface!”

White Brook wasn’t an idiot. Now that Lin Ming had crossed Ninefall, his status in Carefree Island would be like the sun in the sky. With Mo Riverbliss supporting him, even a Highest Elder like him would be a joke in front of Lin Ming. If he tried to make enemies with Lin Ming, wasn’t that just asking to die?

The yin yang dao diagrams still spun as before, pressing down on Lin Ming. In that instant, Lin Ming’s eyes flashed open. His vision was like two divine lights piercing through the endless night, shining through the vast space.

His strength had returned!

Lin Ming suddenly clenched his fists together. With every movement, his joints seemed to explode with loud crackling sounds. He could feel a surge of energy rushing through his body. The power of thunder, fire, yin, and yang heavenly tribulations, as well as the tremendous power of the melted dragon bone relics rampaged within him. But, he forcefully suppressed them all!

This feeling as if his entire body was filled with energy caused Lin Ming’s blood to boil over. He concentrated his energy into his dantian, letting out a long and loud cry!

Hah – !

A terrifying sound wave burst out in all directions. With a deafening rumble, countless sheets of earth and stone were raised up by this sound wave. The clouds for several hundreds of miles were washed away, and even the tribulation clouds seemed to be affected as they faintly trembled.

Happy! Awesome!

Lin Ming laughed out loud, his bellows ringing through the skies!

He had never imagined he would feel such an explosive strength in his body as today. He was like a volcano on the brink of eruption, every step he took shattered the earth!

“Good young man! How did he do this!?” The Elders of Carefree Island looked on in utter shock. This sudden reversal was simply like a dream.

“Is this because of those beads he swallowed? Although I couldn’t see just what those beads were, they shouldn’t have been a transcendent divine medicine. Those beads contained a power that was far too tyrannical; they should have been some rare and fierce heavenly treasure. If Lin Ming swallowed such medicine at his peak state he might blow up from the energy, much less now.”

“I thought that Lin Ming’s body would burst apart after swallowed those beads, but such a change actually occurred. Just what secrets does he have on him?”

There was not a single Elder of Carefree Island that could understand what happened to Lin Ming’s body. Let alone them, even Mo Eversnow and Mo Riverbliss were looking on, dumbfounded. They too had no idea what was happening!

“This is absolutely not an effect of the dragon bone relics. The dragon bone relics are a violent and wild energy, and it is already extremely difficult for Lin Ming to withstand them with his body, much less for them to help regenerate his flesh. Could it... could it be... that black mystery bead?” Mo Eversnow suddenly thought. This was the only possible explanation. But just what was that black mystery bead? It actually had the strength to defy the power of heavenly tribulation! Even a top transcendent divine pill would pale in comparison!

At this time, the heavenly tribulation was continuing around Lin Ming!

Yin yang tribulation was truly worthy of being called the strongest level of the nine heavenly tribulations. It was a calamity of essence, energy, and the divine. Lin Ming had crossed the tribulation of the soul, of his flesh and blood, and now all that was left over was the tribulation of his dantian!

And at this time, Lin Ming's body had been restored to almost its peak state. How hard could it be to survive one more tribulation?

In the sky, the dual yin and yang energies twisted together, forming dao runes and streams that constantly flushed into Lin Ming's meridians, fusing together with the sealed thunder and fire tribulation within Lin Ming's body!

The thunder tribulation became increasingly wild, the fire tribulation became that much more fierce!

These two energies had been suppressed by the Heretical God Sprout from the very start, but that was only a temporary suppression. As for refining them, that was not simple at all. Especially after Lin Ming had encountered catastrophe after catastrophe; just when did he have the chance to refine them?

But now was different!

"Thunder and fire tribulation, I hope you had your fill of hurting me. This time, I'll be the one to refine you!"

Lin Ming shouted out loud and the Heretical God Force erupted. The energy of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation, together with the yin yang tribulation, was all completely suppressed by the Heretical God Sprout!

"Be refined by me!"

The Heretical God Force was a transcendent divine might!

Only a transcendent divine might could refine the power of heavenly tribulation. If an ordinary martial artist's cultivation method was used to refine heavenly tribulation, all that would happen would be a tremendous counterattack!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Within Lin Ming's dantian, energy boiled like magma, erupting like a volcano!

Such an impact placed a great pressure on Lin Ming's dantian. But Lin Ming steeled his mind; he would thoroughly refine this yin yang tribulation and thunder and fire tribulation!

It had to be known that the power of heavenly tribulation contained immense benefits!

Lin Ming had crossed eight levels of heavenly tribulation and also over half of the ninth level of heavenly tribulation. The advantage this had to his flesh, blood, and bones was unfathomable.

His battle spirit had also broken through the elementary gold level, jumping straight over gold small success and reaching gold large success!

Even the Phoenix Blood Spear had transformed from a saint artifact to a spirit artifact after breeding its own source artifact spirit. This was something that a supreme elder might not be able to accomplish even in 100,000 years!

In this situation, Lin Ming still wasn't satisfied with withstanding the baptism of heavenly tribulation. He wanted to refine the power of heavenly tribulation and use it for himself!

"Lin Ming, he... he is... heavens! He is refining heavenly tribulation!"

"This... refining heavenly tribulation!? He... he is far too crazy!!!"

Heavenly tribulation was not some trifling matter. When an extreme genius martial artist similar to Lin Ming crossed heavenly tribulation, they would be absolutely cautious lest they enrage the heavenly tribulation and cause a mutation to occur. Once heavenly tribulation arrived, all they could do was silently withstand it, allowing their body, dantian, revolving core or inner world, and soul to accept the baptism of heavenly tribulation. They had to use their own true essence to disperse the power of heavenly tribulation.

Who would dare to directly refine heavenly tribulation?

That was simply suicidal!

But now, Lin Ming was doing exactly this!

If the Heavenly Dao wishes to destroy me then I shall control the Heavenly Dao and make it my army of a million soldiers! I will have it ride through the endless space with me, battling through the rivers of stars!

The road of martial arts was originally defying the will of the heavens. And Lin Ming had the heart and soul to reverse the heavens themselves!

Chapter 1131 – Perfectly Crossing Tribulation

Chapter 1131 – Perfectly Crossing Tribulation

…

…

…

The power of four different kinds of heavenly tribulation raged through Lin Ming's body. And, the power of the dragon bone relics also rampaged through him!

Lin Ming's thoughts sank into his dantian. A torrential vortex appeared at the Heretical God Sprout inside. The power of the thunder and fire tribulation was completely sucked in by the Heretical God Sprout!

Compress! Compress again!

Blue veins bulged out on Lin Ming's forehead. Even though his body had been reborn, he still felt as if his dantian would explode from withstanding this pressure!

"Lin Ming, divert all the power of the dragon bone relics and the other unnecessary energy into the threshold of life and death! Revolve the Celestial Tyrant Manual!"

Mo Eversnow's voice suddenly sounded out in Lin Ming's ear.

As Lin Ming heard her, a sharp light flashed in his eyes.

That was right! The threshold of life and death!

The method to cultivate the Eight Inner Hidden Gates that was recorded within the Celestial Tyrant Manual was slightly different to the method within the Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians.

The Eight Inner Hidden Gates was a large boundary, but in truth it could also be divided into two boundaries instead. The first boundary included the first six of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, and the second boundary included the last two of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. The last two gates were called the gates that stood upon the threshold of life and death, the Gate of Life and the Gate of Death!

The threshold of life and death was one of the most difficult barriers of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates to pass. In order to break through the threshold of life and death, one had to build a foundation and then pile up a massive amount of resources before making a breakthrough in a single go. In the Eight Inner Hidden Gates of body transformation, every step was more difficult than the last. As for the final Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, that was even more difficult than rising to the heavens!

“Open!”

Lin Ming shouted out. The power of yin yang tribulation along with the power of the dragon bone relics rushed into his meridians. They rushed through his eight pulse points, impacting the threshold of life and death!

With a loud banging sound, Lin Ming’s body shook as he spat out a mouthful of blood!

As Lin Ming vomited this blood, his complexion paled. He grit his teeth and revolved the energy within him once more.

At this time, behind Lin Ming, a deep red Prime Emperor Lotus Flower slowly bloomed. The grandmist space radiated outwards.

Heavenly Demon force field!

This was one of the Primordius martial intent’s three great force fields –

Heavenly Demon! Heavenly Mortal! Heavenly God!

Although it was only a third of a complete transcendent divine might, just what kind of existence was Empyrean Primordius? He was a peak character even amongst Empyreans. His Primordius martial intent was not some ordinary transcendent divine might. The chaos grandmist was the source of the universe.

Underneath the enveloping of this grandmist space, whether it was the energy from the dragon bone relics or the power of heavenly tribulation, everything was forced to submit, and the impact was even greater!

Bang!

The second impact!

The life and death threshold within Lin Ming's body was like a divine drum made from the skin of an archaic vicious beast's skin. With every impact of energy, it would release a terrifying sound.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Every sound was like a bell from the heavens, pure and clear, echoing through the heavens and earth, deafening all who heard it!

The drumming grew increasingly loud and more vibrant. All of the blood within Lin Ming's body boiled with excitement. The power of his blood vitality was so strong that it could be seen with the naked eye. It was like a monstrous pillar of flame that rocketed to the heavens, flying straight through the skies and piercing through the tribulation cloud!

This vast scene caused everyone to feel bewildered.

"Lin Ming is really controlling the power of heavenly tribulation! He has basically crossed heavenly tribulation!"

"Yes! If there isn't an accident then he won't be in any further danger. With such a deep blessing from the world itself, how could any accident happen to him?"

"Unbelievable, we witnessed the birth of a Great World King!"

Everyone held their breaths. Every scene passing in front of them meant that Lin Ming would soon cross heavenly tribulation, and complete the ninth stage of Life Destruction!

The yin yang tribulation and the power contained within the dragon bone relics constantly weakened. But, the barrier of the life and death threshold was also being worn away.

Without knowing just how many ringing impacts had occurred, there was finally an explosive sound like rolling thunder that caused everyone's ears to tingle with numbness!

The life and death threshold had finally been broken through! All of Lin Ming's meridians were cleared. Most of the yin yang tribulation's power had been used up. As for the dragon bone relics' essence, the remainder gradually precipitated into Lin Ming's flesh and blood.

This strength was far from being able to open either the Gate of Life or Gate of Death. But to Lin Ming, breaking through the life and death threshold was more than enough.

Breaking through the threshold of life and death was the first step to opening the Gate of Life and Gate of Death. This was the equivalent to opening one of the many locks that bound the Gate of Life and Gate of Death.

At this point, Lin Ming had thoroughly crossed the yin yang tribulation!

All that remained within his body were the remnants of the thunder and fire tribulations. At this time, Lin Ming's body was in its peak state. The surviving power of thunder and fire within him couldn't threaten him anymore.

"Heretical God Sprout, compress again!"

The vortex formed by the Heretical God Sprout became increasingly violent. The massive amount of thunder and fire tribulation was forcefully sucked in. As the power of thunder and fire flowed into the Heretical God Sprout, it began to glow with an incandescent divine light!

For a time, the six leaves of the Heretical God Sprout seemed to turn to molten gold. Purple and red runes began to form atop the surface of the leaves. These dao patterns came in all sorts of different shapes. Some were like small tripods and some were like golden swords. The runes all fell onto the Heretical God Sprout, and finally, a bizarre change began to occur!

The Heretical God Sprout grew taller and taller, and finally it distorted and twigs began to bud out!

In just a few breaths of time, the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation was rapidly consumed. By the time the Heretical God Sprout stopped growing, over 90% of the power of thunder and fire tribulation had been used up.

The Heretical God Sprout had actually absorbed the power of heavenly tribulation as nourishment for its own growth. This ability was truly worthy of being called a transcendent divine might; it was even able to control the Heavenly Dao and use it!

The current Heretical God Sprout had doubled in height. In the past if it was a sprout, then now it was a seedling.

A pair of fresh new leaves emerged from the crown of the seedling, one red and one purple.

These two leaves were of the same shape: both resembled small primal chaos diagrams. There were numerous profound dao patterns crawling over the surface of these leaves. Without a doubt, these were leaves that evolved from the thunder and fire heavenly tribulation!

The power of heavenly tribulation had ended up becoming a part of the Heretical God Seedling!

“Mm? This is…”

Lin Ming’s thoughts sank within himself and he summoned the Heretical God Force of the Heretical God Seedling. Flames came from his left hand and thunder from his right. The two energies actually exuded an aura similar to the Heavenly Dao.

This was the power of heavenly tribulation!

Lin Ming deeply gasped. A transcendent divine might was indeed a transcendent divine might; it was even able to wield the power of the Heavenly Dao for itself. After the Heretical God Sprout absorbed the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation, that power was then integrated into the Heretical God Force. In the future, as long as Lin Ming used the Heretical God Force, he would be able to control the power of heavenly tribulation to a certain degree. Although it was weak, this was still strength that represented the Heavenly Dao! How could anyone dare to underestimate it?

“Hahaha! Great!”

Lin Ming faced the heavens and laughed, his voice echoing through the world. In that instant, he was like a butterfly that had broken out from its cocoon. His essence, energy, and divine had all risen beyond expectations!

The power of his blood vitality was like that of an ancient vicious beast. His mortal body nearly resembled an indestructible diamond Vajra body. His endurance had long since reached an unbelievable boundary. His true essence was as deep as a vast sea! Every time he moved, every time he raised his hand or stepped forwards, he would exude the aura of the Laws, forming faint lights around him. These were the Law runes that had been carved into his body. They thoroughly fused into his flesh and blood, engraving themselves into his marrow!

Now, Lin Ming had finally crossed heavenly tribulation! At this time, Lin Ming could be called an existence that surpassed the Heavenly Dao! Crossing heavenly tribulation and stepping beyond the Heavenly Dao meant that one's strength could even resist the Heavenly Dao Laws in the future!

This sort of person's fate was no longer controlled by the Heavenly Dao. This sort of person could truly say…

My life is controlled not by the heavens but by me!

"He's done it! He's reached the ninth stage of Life Destruction! This is the true ninth stage of Life Destruction, one that far surpasses all other ordinary geniuses!"

"After crossing these nine heavenly tribulations, his strength must be far from comparable to how it was in the past. The advantages he obtained from this are unimaginable!"

The Elders of Carefree Island began to cry out in horror and awe.

33 Layered Heavens, 99 mile origin energy cloud, nine heavenly tribulations of nine by nine Life Destruction!

This was likely the limit of the ninth stage of Life Destruction! It was simply incredible!

"This child's achievements will know no limit in the future. If it were a normal genius, then even if they were like Lin Ming and had enough lucky chances accumulated to undergo that sort of heavenly tribulation just now, they would have absolutely died!" An Elder cried out, his voice thick with emotion. Such a heaven-shaking lucky chance was not something that just anyone could handle. This sort of massive lucky chance could also be considered a great calamity!

A peak genius was said to have a destiny like a ray of light and the life of an emperor. But, the truth was that sometimes, this was not because they were lucky, but because they could take all catastrophes that fell upon their head and turn them into lucky chances!

Destiny was not equal to luck.

The so-called luck meant that if one were lucky, they could casually walk outside and find a treasure. Someone lucky would often find the cave dwellings and inheritances of ancient supreme elders.

But, to have a great destiny was completely different. That was the ability to turn the tables. If one went into a mystic realm where there were nine chances of death and one chance of survival, someone with a great destiny would have the ability to return. Even in a brutal life or death competition with countless powerhouses embroiled within it, someone with a great destiny would be able to grasp that fleeting chance of hope and gain victory!

Their destiny came from their own self-confidence, strength, talent, and ability to remain calm even under the threat of death, never falling into despair and never giving up!

And Lin Ming was one of these people.

From the time he was at the Pulse Condensation realm when he went to the Divine Phoenix Realm, or the times afterwards when he went to the Demon God Imperial Palace, Eternal Demon Abyss, Road of Emperor, and other such places, he didn’t discover these places because of his good luck. Rather, these places were known by many people. Numerous individuals entered and yet only Lin Ming was able to obtain the greatest benefit from within.

This was a manifestation of his destiny!

These nine levels of heavenly tribulation were also the same. These nine levels of heavenly tribulation had been horrifying to an unbelievable degree; even Lin Ming had nearly died!

If Lin Ming wasn’t strong and his foundation deep, with a combat strength that far surpassed other martial artists’ at his level, as well as his dual body and energy cultivation and his extremely tough body, then he would have already been turned to ash by the second stage of heavenly tribulation that had come.

The reason that Lin Ming had been able to survive was completely because he never gave up, because his will had supported him throughout. If there was ever a moment when his heart had wavered then he would have been annihilated in a puff of smoke! But finally, in a despairing situation, Lin Ming had still searched for that final thread of hope. At the precipice of death, he thought to use the supreme dragon bone relics to resist the power of heavenly tribulation. He had risked everything on that final bet, never giving up, and finally he was able to create a miracle.

With all of these various factors combined together, it was simply impossible to recreate such an event.

“Lin Ming… he really did it. Although I placed great hopes on Lin Ming, I never did expect him to kill Tian Mingzi, because that was originally an impossible mission to begin with. But now, I can finally see, I can see that perhaps it really might be possible…” Mo Riverbliss murmured to Mo Eversnow. Although she had great confidence in Lin Ming from the start, Tian Mingzi had also been an extreme talent that was able to become a Great World King. As for Lin Ming, who didn’t have much support, it was simply too trying to have him contend with Tian Mingzi, who was tens of thousands of years older than he was and also had the support of a Holy Land behind him. It was far too difficult to do that. Even if Lin Ming became a Great World King, he might not necessarily be able to compete with Tian Mingzi.

Mo Eversnow took a deep breath. As she stared at Lin Ming, a strange and complex light was in her eyes. How could she not know how difficult it was to accomplish those things that she had asked from Lin Ming? Even so, Lin Ming had been able to blaze his own trail through the heavens and earth, defying all odds again and again!

“Lin Ming, your spear!” Mo Riverbliss flung out her hand. The Phoenix Blood Spear issued an excited cry, turning into a beam of light as it flew towards Lin Ming.

In that moment, the spear light was beautifully blinding.

Chapter 1132 – Mystery of the Black Bead

Chapter 1132 – Mystery of the Black Bead

…

…

…

Pa!

Lin Ming’s right hand reached out and grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear.

In Lin Ming’s hand, the Phoenix Blood Spear emitted an excited cry. He could clearly sense a connected feeling coming from the Phoenix Blood Spear as if they shared the same flesh and blood. At this moment, the Phoenix Blood Spear seemed to be an extension of his own body.

Wisps of light began to spin above the shaft of the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Everything in this world had its own extreme habitat. Birds flew in the skies, tigers stalked through the forests, dragons ruled over the seas, and the extreme of the Phoenix Blood Spear happened to be Lin Ming’s hand, the place where it could display its greatest combat strength!

“Good! Very good! I never thought that even you would obtain the tempering of heavenly tribulation and rise into a spirit artifact. From now on, you will be my comrade as we wander through and surmount the world!”

As Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear, in that instant his valor and heroic spirit seemed to rise 100,000 feet into the heavens!

In comparison to martial artists who had lived for such a long time, Lin Ming was far too young. Even if he were several thousand years old, if he was converted to mortal years he would still only have been in his teens. Lin Ming had plenty of time to attack the next boundary and ascend to the peak of martial arts. Even so, he was so young when he had crossed a 33 Layered Heavens, nine by nine Life Destruction. He had crossed heavenly tribulation and also successfully dual cultivated body and energy. His future was limitless!

The Elders of Carefree Island naturally realized this point and the way they looked at Lin Ming changed. Before, if they were dissatisfied and a bit critical of him, now all of that had turned into utter awe. Lin Ming was someone who would be able to affect their future fates, allowing them to rise to never before seen heights!

“Amazing, I never imagined that my Carefree Island would someday be able to befriend a World King level powerhouse.”

“Horrifying, that is a true Great World King… an existence born from a trillion trillion lives. Only one appears every thousand years or so, and this is not something that can be achieved through just talent. For our True Martial World’s Great World King, let alone seeing him, even his disciples have a higher status than our Island Master. This sort of character is impossible to imagine…”

To the Elders of Carefree Island, a Great World King was similar to an emperor in the mortal world, and they were nothing but commoners. The difference was simply too great.

Once the dust had settled, Lin Ming had perfectly crossed his Ninefall!

At this time, Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and floated in the ruins above Carefree Island, handsome and elegant like a divine being.

At this level, Lin Ming could be called the extreme of all geniuses. He was the true favored of heaven, someone with a thousand destinies gathered on his body.

Mo Riverbliss floated into the sky and said with a true essence sound transmission, “All Elders, follow me to Carefree Palace for a meeting!”

As Mo Riverbliss spoke, the Elders of Carefree Island understood that she was going to give them orders. But, after Lin Ming's Ninefall had reached such a terrifying and awe-inspiring degree, no one continued to object to her previous decision of giving Lin Ming the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree.

As Mo Riverbliss finished speaking, she flew towards Carefree Palace. In that instant when she moved, she glanced at Xiao Haogan. That brief glance left Xiao Haogan panic-stricken. He said to White Brook with a true essence sound transmission, "This Lin Ming… our future days won't be much better…"

"Stop panicking and let's go. She cannot directly move against us."

Xiao Haogan and White Brook also flew towards Carefree Place. Since ancient times, regardless of whether it was the world of mortals or the world of martial artists, struggles over power and authority had always been cruel and brutal. To sympathize with the enemy was a completely stupid idea.

….

"Lin Ming, come with me." Mo Eversnow's voice resounded in Lin Ming's ears. Lin Ming nodded and followed Mo Eversnow to Carefree Palace.

"Lin Ming, do you know what that black bead you swallowed is?" Mo Eversnow cut straight to the point.

"I don't. I obtained it from the Blood Slaughter Steppes and was only able to approximately ascertain its origin."

Lin Ming detailed all of his thoughts of the black bead to Mo Eversnow, from beginning to end.

The truth was that at that time Mo Eversnow had been deeply sleeping within the Magic Cube. She had been watching Lin Ming's journeys and experiences from the side of her vision, but as for something like digging out the treasure chambers of the Steppes Master, she naturally wouldn't care about such a minor matter. It simply wasn't worth her paying attention to, so she didn't.

"So it's like that..." Mo Eversnow mumbled to herself, lost in her thoughts. If that bead was something from the Eternal Demon Abyss, then that was much easier to understand. It was likely related to Empyrean Primordius, and anything related to Empyrean Primordius was no trivial matter!

In fact, she had a guess in mind. Now that she learned of the black bead's origins, she was much more certain of her own speculations. "Lin Ming, when you crossed Life Destruction your body turned into pure blood energy and submerged into that origin energy cloud. You may have noticed that above the origin energy cloud, three types of phenomena appeared. The first two belonged to two different types of transcendent divine mights – the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower and the Heretical God Sprout. The third phenomenon included the Magic Cube but also two other objects. One of them was a round bead, similar to the one you swallowed down. Do you think that these two beads are the same?"

Mo Eversnow's thoughts were what anyone would think. Mo Riverbliss also had this sort of suspicion. As for other people of Carefree Island, they didn't know of the Magic Cube, much less what those three objects represented. Thus, they would never have thought of this. Then again, the black bead was mixed in with all the dragon bone relics, and many of them didn't even know of the dragon bone relics, so how could they notice the strange black bead?

"If that black bead is something that can exist side-by-side with the Magic Cube and also originates from the same place, then there are many things that can be explained! From this we can make some speculations. 100,000 years ago, when that black bead first appeared, Empyrean Primordius, Empyrean Thunder Punishment, and also several other unknown Empyreans must have brutally fought each other in a life or death war for this black bead! They must have discovered that this black bead had some sort of special function that was equal to the Magic Cube, or perhaps they even understood its true origin. But as for why they chose to fight at the Sky Spill Continent's world, I do not know. But at the end of that war, Empyrean Primordius died in battle and the other Empyreans died for some unknown reasons. Or, they might have even been severely wounded and fallen into a deep recuperating coma. There is no way we can confirm any of this, but what we can extrapolate is that they didn't succeed and they weren't able to break through the force field that Empyrean Primordius left behind after his death. This is also the reason why the Eternal Demon Abyss contains so many deep and profound secrets.

"And that black bead had been kept in the Eternal Demon Abyss!

"Then, 50,000 years ago… I brought away the Magic Cube and fled from the destruction of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, but I was eventually unable to escape from Tian Mingzi's clutches. I burnt my own soul to activate the power of the Magic Cube, annihilating 10,000 powerhouses of the Divine Realm, including a massive number of Holy Lords. After that, the Magic Cube broke through space and left the Divine Realm. With the summoning of some mysterious strength, it flew through the vast and endless turbulence of space for an incomparably long time before landing on the planet of the Sky Spill Continent. The reason it landed there was that it was seeking a similar existence – the black bead!

"If this is true, then many things can be explained. As it happens, my grandfather obtained the Magic Cube over 100,000 years ago, the same time that the black bead appeared. It could even be that the two of them were born together! However, the calamitous waves raised by the Magic Cube were much smaller than those of the black bead. Luckily no higher level beings knew of its existence, otherwise it simply wouldn't be something that my Verdant Feather Holy Lands would have been able to control.

"But the black bead was just the opposite of the Magic Cube. The black bead stirred up far too much interest and even set off a great war between Empyreans! Empyrean Primordius died because of this black bead and his plans of forming his own Samsara Heavenly Dao also failed, coming to nothing. The Magic Cube arrived at the Sky Spill Continent's world because of the black bead, and afterwards it was accidentally obtained by you. Even though us supporting each other in this journey might seem to be a coincidence, the truth is that this is all a part of karma!

"This is because the karma and samsara between you and me was already settled 100,000 years ago when my grandfather obtained the Magic Cube!"

Mo Eversnow slowly spoke her own speculations, causing Lin Ming to be surprised. When he was wholeheartedly crossing heavenly tribulation there had been no time for him to think of these matters. But now it seemed that everything Mo Eversnow said had a high chance of being true. Otherwise, why would the Magic Cube break through the space barrier that divided the Divine Realm and lower realms, finally arriving at Lin Ming's world? This space barrier wasn't easy to break at all, moreover there were over a billion boundless worlds just like the Sky Spill Continent's world, so why would it choose that one specifically?

In fact, it was reasonable to say that with a billion boundless worlds, the chances of the Magic Cube choosing any one of them was one in a billion. But, this was not a coincidence. This was because the world that the Magic Cube chose possessed the Eternal Demon Abyss, Empyrean Primordius, and the corpse of the goddess. These were things that should not be found at a world of the lower realms.

There must have been some unknown relations between all of this. But, most of what Mo Eversnow said should have been right.

The current question was what were these three objects? How did they appear? And why did they appear?

As Lin Ming was thinking this, Mo Eversnow said, "Lin Ming, I also have another speculation. Think about it. Although the Magic Cube has a strange origin and we do not know its exact functions, we can confirm that it is a treasure related to the soul. As for that black bead, according to what you said, it was a flesh and blood existence that seemed to have its own life. It should be a flesh and blood related treasure.

"We can also see this point from Empyrean Primordius. Although I can't say for certain whether or not Empyrean Primordius dual cultivated in body and energy, if he only cultivated the essence gathering system then the strength of his mortal body would be limited even if he was an extreme Empyrean. But, the mortal body of Empyrean Primordius was strong to an incredible degree. His body was so powerful that he could rip out his heart and place it in the body of the goddess where it would continue beating on for 100,000 years without end, perfectly maintaining her youthful vitality. Just this is strong evidence that the black bead is a flesh and blood treasure!

"There is also you! At the final heavenly tribulation when you were about to be crushed to death, you relied on this black bead to instantly regenerate your flesh and blood. This sort of miraculous effect is something that not even a transcendent divine pill could accomplish!

"Then, the Magic Cube is the soul, which is the 'divine' of essence, energy, and divine. As for that black bead, that is the flesh and blood, which is also the 'essence' of essence, energy, and divine. Then, that third card-like object should be 'energy' of essence, energy, and divine. It should be a treasure that controls energy!"

Lin Ming couldn't help but admire Mo Eversnow's sharp mind. She had extrapolated all of these guesses from the little bits of information available to her. Moreover, 80-90% of these guesses were likely true.

Lin Ming calmed his mind and thought for a moment. He swept his mind through his body, trying to investigate the existence of that black bead. But after sweeping through his body, he was a bit dazed. He said, "Miss Mo, what you said indeed sounds real. But, you might be a bit mistaken about that black bead."

Lin Ming shook his head. Although that black bead was incomparably precious, it still wasn't something similar to the Magic Cube. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for him to suck away a third of its power.

Chapter 1133 – Divide

Chapter 1133 – Divide

…

…

…

At this time, the Magic Cube had shifted to Lin Ming's dantian. After crossing Ninefall, there was clearly some tremendous change that occurred in his dantian.

His dantian had become larger and the revolving core crystal nucleus became smaller. All around the revolving core crystal nucleus there was slight spatial warping, and a light fog floated around it. This fog was a bit similar to elementary grandmist energy.

Strictly speaking, his was no longer a revolving core crystal nucleus but a world seed.

At the formation of the universe, what happened was that all of the grandmist energy gathered into a singularity. This singularity constantly absorbed energy, compressing it over and over again, and when that energy reached the limit it would erupt!

After erupting, the energy would cool down, forming space, time, yin and yang, the five elements, and finally evolving into all of life.

This was the so-called great eruption of the universe. The Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds and the lower realm's billion boundless worlds, all of these were formed after this explosion. And before this explosion, neither time nor space existed.

And a martial artist's cultivation process was similar to this great eruption.

The human body was a small universe!

The evolution of the human body could be reflected in the great universe.

From the start, a martial artist constantly accumulated energy in their dantian. From the Pulse Condensation realm, that process symbolized the true beginning of the essence gathering system. At that time, a martial artist's true essence would flow through their meridians and into their dantian. Afterwards, true essence would gather in their dantian and form streams there; this was the Houtian realm.

Then, true essence would condense into a cyclone, bringing with it the rules of revolution; this was the Xiantian realm. At the Revolving Core realm, true essence would finally compress into a revolving core crystal nucleus. This crystal nucleus would continually grow, compress, and then grow… again and again, energy would converge, just like the energy that gathered before the eruption of the universe.

A martial artist with a deep foundation could even form a black hole revolving core that was similar to the singularity that erupted into the universe.

Afterwards, the revolving core crystal nucleus would have to undergo nine baptisms of Life Destruction, preparing the martial artist's body for the final Nine Divine Shifts.

After Ninefall, the revolving core crystal nucleus would evolve into a world seed. In the future, this world seed would explode and form the inner world.

Lin Ming's current dantian was a bit dissimilar from other martial artists'. Not only was there the world seed but there was also the Heretical God Seedling as well as a square black crystal that floated there; this was the Magic Cube.

This was the first time that the Magic Cube had condensed into a physical form. Before now, Lin Ming had only been able to sense the Magic Cube with Mo Eversnow's help. He only knew that it had become a seal that fell onto his heart. But now, it had shifted to his dantian and condensed a physical form, even pushing aside the Heretical God Seedling.

That black bead that had been swallowed up by him was now located within the Magic Cube space.

When Lin Ming investigated the black bead, he discovered that there were some significant changes to it.

“Miss Mo, this black bead is definitely not a treasure similar to the Magic Cube. This is because… I found it within the Magic Cube space and a third of its strength has been absorbed by me already. Whether it is its weight or aura, it’s weakened a great deal…”

Lin Ming felt some regret. He certainly hoped that he could acquire another treasure on the same level as the Magic Cube. After all, that was a divine object that even an Empyrean would risk their life for.

But only like this was such a treasure rare!

For him to obtain the Magic Cube could already be considered a favor from heaven. If he obtained a similar treasure without going through many more twists and turns, suffering great difficulties along the way, then the chances were somewhat slim.

“Mm?” Mo Eversnow frowned. Were her speculations wrong?

Lin Ming continued to speak. “But, I don’t think that Miss Mo’s guesses were wrong, otherwise there are far too many things that could not be explained. For instance, why the Magic Cube would choose to land at the Sky Spill Continent and also why Empyrean Primordius would choose to go to the Sky Spill Continent, a world of the lower realms. Also, just why were so many peak existences of the Divine Realm attracted there?

“If all of these are coincidences then that is too forced. It might be that the reason Empyrean Primordius perished was that black bead, and his body was also so formidable because of that black bead. But as for that black bead I swallowed…”

As Lin Ming spoke he turned his hand, directly taking out the black bead into his palm. It really was as Lin Ming said; the black bead had reduced by a third in volume and weight.

“If we call that black bead the Demon Bead, then this black bead in my hand can be considered a replica of the Demon Bead. It might even be something made from the Demon

Bead… but, the true Demon Bead might still be within the Sky Spill Continent's Eternal Demon Abyss! It's likely located at the bottom of Empyrean Primordius's force field protections!"

As Lin Ming spoke, Mo Eversnow's heart was stirred. She even thought of immediately returning to the Eternal Demon Abyss and investigating what was inside. However, she tamped down that thought just as quickly. The Eternal Demon Abyss was an ancient ruin left behind by an Empyrean. Even if Lin Ming was powerful, entering the Eternal Demon Abyss was a true disaster. It had to be known that it was an absolute life forbidden zone that contained a force field left behind by an Empyrean.

After Empyrean Primordius fell in the past, he certainly wouldn't hope that his inheritances would fall into the hands of his enemies. The arrangements he laid down in the past were likely no trifling matter. If she still had her mortal body then she might have gone, but now she likely wouldn't be able to do anything at all.

"It looks like… it won't be too long until we return to the Sky Spill Continent once more." Mo Eversnow thoughtfully said.

"Mm…" Lin Ming nodded. Even if the Demon Bead wasn't there, he would still want to go back. That was where his wives and parents were.

"Lin Ming, come with me to say goodbye to Aunty. Then we'll go to the True Martial Great World to pick up a few things…"

"What things?"

"The jade slip for the Celestial Tyrant Manual as well as some wealth left behind by the Verdant Feather Hold Lands. But unfortunately, when the Verdant Feather Holy Lands was destroyed, the incomplete ruined half of the transcendent divine might possessed by the Verdant Feather Holy Lands was stolen by Tian Mingzi! Although I also cultivated it, now that my body is destroyed I can no longer reproduce its mysteries. In truth, even if I still had my body I still wouldn't be able to engrave that transcendent divine might. A transcendent divine might is something that surpasses the Heavenly Dao; no one ordinary can produce a copy.”

In the past the Verdant Feather Holy Lands was a World King Level Holy Land. And, the old Holy Lord was also a Great World King. It was reasonable that they would possess an incomplete transcendent divine might.

A full and complete transcendent divine might was extremely rare. This was because a transcendent divine might jade slip was basically only able to be produced by an Empyrean. If their descendants didn’t reach a boundary nearing an Empyrean then they would not be able to make a duplicate of that jade slip. This was why transcendent divine mights were so rare; they were basically unique treasures. After one was born, it would exist onwards for hundreds of millions or even billions of years. During this time, these jade slips could fan the endless flames of war, causing endless struggles, spilled blood, and slaughter all in their name.

To obtain a complete transcendent divine might was beyond difficult. For a World King level Holy Land like the Verdant Feather Holy Lands to possess half a transcendent divine might was already very rare!

Transcendent divine might…

Lin Ming took a light breath. In all these years of fighting and growth, and also in crossing that heavenly tribulation, he was able to deeply feel just how great a role a transcendent divine might played!

The Heretical God Force and Heavenly Demon force field were two sets of transcendent divine mights. They had brought far too many advantages to Lin Ming. There was no need to mention the Heretical God Force; Lin Ming’s main strength came from the fire and thunder that was originally gifted to him by the Heretical God Force. As for the Heavenly Demon force field, that was Lin Ming’s greatest master ability in combat.

At Lin Ming's current boundary, ordinary cultivation methods no longer held an attraction to him. He had already perused through the memories of normal Divine Realm powerhouses from the Magic Cube, and had too many things he didn't need. What he needed now were transcendent divine mights!

The longer this type of cultivation method was practiced for, the greater the advantages were! The more one could control the power of the Heavenly Dao, the stronger they would become!

Unconsciously, after crossing Ninefall and surviving heavenly tribulation, Lin Ming no longer simply referenced and borrowed the power of the Heavenly Dao. What he did now was to manipulate it and control it!

"If I want to obtain this incomplete transcendent divine might then I can only do so by defeating Tian Mingzi!" Lin Ming clenched his fists. Tian Mingzi was the first truly powerful opponent he would encounter since entering the Divine Realm. Tian Mingzi was so powerful that it was almost impossible to look up to him, as if he were some kind of unreachable peak. But, Lin Ming's road of martial arts involved conquering peak after peak after peak!

………

As Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow were talking, a special Council of Elders was being held in Carefree Palace.

The reason this Council of Elders was so unique was because the way it was held surpassed everyone's expectations.

At this time, outside of a minor dimension's space barrier, six or seven Elders were gathered. White Brook and Xiao Haogan were among them, and their faces were particularly ugly!

They had already guessed that Mo Riverbliss was planning to aim at them during this Council of Elders, but they weren't afraid. The only problems they had with Mo Riverbliss were normal conflicts of authority and struggles over power. Although everyone knew what they were thinking, they had never violated sect rules nor had they randomly killed or caused chaos. If Mo Riverbliss wanted to deal with them then she would find it difficult to convince others.

But, they never imagined that Mo Riverbliss would take on such a way to hold a council.

They were all divided into groups and then summoned in one at a time!

If this was a normal meeting, then everyone would be together in the same place, and everyone would also be cautious about their words. But now, no matter what one said, the only other person who would know would be Mo Riverbliss!

In this way, everyone would worry about what others said about them. If one said something weird, wouldn't that leave a bad impression of them on Mo Riverbliss?

It had to be known that at the very start, Mo Riverbliss was only an outsider in the hearts of these Elders. Even if she controlled Carefree Palace and had overwhelming strength, everybody was dissatisfied with her in their hearts. If Mo Riverbliss called them in one at a time and asked them for their secrets, no one would speak of them.

But now was different.

Lin Ming had crossed 33 Layered Heavens and a nine by nine Life Destruction. There was an extremely high possibility that he would become a Great World King in the future. It could even be said that Carefree Island's very destiny and existence were now closely tied to Lin Ming's future achievements. If he succeeded, they could even become a World King level Holy Land! If they were able to catch a ride on this invincible juggernaut, then even eating just a little bit of the soup would bring infinite benefits.

And someone like Lin Ming was clearly obsessed with cultivation and training and didn't care too much about political wrangling. Thus, the truth was that the real control of Carefree Island was held by Mo Riverbliss!

If they could curry favor with Mo Riverbliss then their future would know no limit. But if they offended Mo Riverbliss, their future would be sad indeed.

Without noticing it, Mo Riverbliss had used a little method to split up all those Elders that had been in step with each other. How could White Brook still feel at ease with all this?

Chapter 1134 – Clearing the Snakes

Chapter 1134 – Clearing the Snakes

…

…

…

"Elder Liu, you are a veteran senior of Carefree Island. Of the three Highest Elders, you are the oldest. For these last tens of thousands of years, although I haven't publicly appeared, I still stayed deep in Carefree Palace. I've been watching many things that you've done and I believe I have a deep understanding of your character. Before this, I spoke with Elder Zhou and he revealed some matters to me. As far as I know, in these last days, you, Elder Zhou, and Elder White have all been very close to each other, right?"

Mo Riverbliss's light question caused Elder Liu's heart to skip a beat as it fell onto his ear!

The Elder Zhou that Mo Riverbliss mentioned was the last of the three Highest Elders. When Mo Riverbliss wanted to give the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree to Lin Ming to help him break through his Ninefall, everyone in the sect had opposed this action. And White Brook, being the one that was so adamantly against it, had united many of the Elders together to resist Mo Riverbliss's orders.

And in fact, the other two Highest Elders didn't welcome Mo Riverbliss. No one wished that there would be another overlord hovering over their heads and stealing their authority.

In this sort of situation, they had tended to favor White Brook from the beginning.

But afterwards, Lin Ming had perfectly crossed his heavenly tribulation and achieved a complete nine by nine Life Destruction and then their thoughts had made a complete 180 change. Lin Ming's performance had been far too magnificent and splendid. If Lin Ming could truly become a Great World King then Carefree Island would be able to ascend to a World King level Holy Land. And as their senior Elder, even sharing just a tiny bit of the soup would be an unbelievable advantage! This was absolutely not something that a single top heaven-step treasure like the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree could compare with.

Thus, they had begun to favor Mo Riverbliss instead. Now that they heard Mo Riverbliss suddenly mentioning old accounts and especially in a situation where she was dividing the Elders and talking to them one at a time, no one knew what anyone else would say, so all of their hearts were rife with fear and trepidation.

Once someone else confessed all of their matters, if they continued to be silly and help White Brook out then that would cause Mo Riverbliss to have an extremely bad impression of them. Then, even if Carefree Island rapidly ascended in the future they still wouldn't be able to share in the profit and would only be regarded as an outsider who would be continually marginalized.

Ever since ancient times, there had been no right or wrong in struggles of power. Those self-proclaimed righteous and stubborn men of integrity would often die in the most miserable manner. Whether they were good or evil didn't matter. All that existed in struggles of power were a few simple words – submit to me and prosper or oppose me and perish!

Elder Liu could already see that this woman, Mo Riverbliss, was not easy to deal with. Before now, she had quietly stayed in Carefree Palace because she didn't want her status to be revealed. But now that she had, she would exert full and complete control so that when Carefree Island became a World King level Holy Land in the future, her authority would be smoother. What she wanted was for her voice to be the only one that mattered within the island.

As for White Brook and Xiao Haogan, they already stood opposite to Mo Riverbliss. Even if they sensed the winds and tried to switch sides, it was far too late. For those rulers with absolute control, what they had least was trust in others. And history had repeatedly proven that those rulers who easily trusted others and gave power to others would suffer tragic fates! In particular, trusting the enemy even once was the most stupid of behaviors!

It was obvious that Mo Riverbliss planned on being the only voice in the Council of Elders. Moreover, she wanted to establish her prestige. White Brook and Xiao Haogan would thus be punished as a warning to all others who dared to stand against her.

"Senior, I have something I must confess to you."

After Elder Liu understood all of this, his choice became immediately clear. Mo Riverbliss did not lack ambitions, nor did she lack the means to accomplish them. Following her would be much better than following White Brook and his mixed band of supporters.

………

As time slowly passed, all of the Elders, besides White Brook and Xiao Haogan, had talked alone with Mo Riverbliss.

This caused Xiao Haogan to feel increasingly uneasy. Although he seemed relatively calm on the surface, the truth was that his heart was rapidly racing in nervousness, as if he were standing on pins and needles.

"What are you so panicked about? Mo Riverbliss hasn't even done anything and yet you feel so pressured. Don't be confused about your own position and stop shaking your legs. If she really did anything then you can't just stretch out your neck and accept it."

White Brook chided Xiao Haogan with a true essence sound transmission. Xiao Haogan forced a smile and nodded. He certainly knew what White Brook was trying to say, but could he feel that way in front of someone like Mo Riverbliss, where he didn't even have the faintest bit of superiority? After Mo Riverbliss had borrowed the momentum of Lin Ming crossing his heavenly tribulation and split up the Elders, now, whether it was her own strength or her position in the hearts of the Elders, she surpassed White Brook in every aspect.

At this time, the minor dimension in front of Xiao Haogan trembled and then a white-clothed Mo Riverbliss appeared in front of everyone.

“Elder White, Elder Xiao, come with me…” Mo Riverbliss faintly said.

White Brook’s heart tightened. As he looked at the minor dimensional gate behind Mo Riverbliss, he felt as if he didn’t have the courage to step in at all.

This Carefree Palace was under the control of Mo Riverbliss to begin with. Not just that, but Mo Riverbliss’s strength surpassed theirs by several times. Who knew what would happen once they entered that minor dimension!

Xiao Haogan also thought of this. His complexion became increasingly ugly.

White Brook forced a smile and said, “Fairy Mo, if there is any matter then you can speak it right here!”

As White Brook spoke, all of the other Elders began to feel a bit of pity for him. In truth, everything that White Brook had done was a normal response for someone who was accustomed to holding great power. It was human nature for a person to not wish to cup their hands across their chest and hand over whatever authority they had. Moreover, because of White Mirrorjade’s situation, White Brook had wanted to kill Lin Ming. To a Highest Elder, killing a simple junior disciple to set an example wasn’t a problem at all. Unfortunately, he had messed with the wrong young man and had ended up kicking himself in the face.

Now, Mo Riverbliss was clearly looking to push White Brook over the cliff. At the very least he would lose his current high status. And most of the other Elders of Carefree Island had likely betrayed White Brook by now, especially those that had been close to him. They all rushed to privately contact Mo Riverbliss to display their utmost loyalty to her.

After all, they weren’t sure if anyone else had betrayed White Brook and revealed what all the other Elders had done. If those people had confessed all of their wrongdoings while they tried to hide what they knew, that would be the actions of an idiot.

On the other hand, if they clearly revealed all that they knew then that would be a sign of their loyalty; there would be no loss for them.

It could only be said that humans were inconsistent and fickle beings, quickly tempted towards extremes. Now that they faced White Brook, they all felt a bit guilty in their hearts. This sort of feeling didn't feel too good. If one felt guilty for too long then this guilt would turn to hate. This was the subtlety of human psychology.

'If you make me feel guilty and fearful, then I will no longer wish to see you or even talk to you!'

Thus, imperceptibly, White Brook and Xiao Haogan had already been isolated from the others.

"Oh? We can speak here too." Mo Riverbliss spoke as if she were in a very jolly mood. She faintly smiled at the other Elders and said, "Then, may all the other Elders besides Elder Xiao and Elder White wait outside."

Mo Riverbliss's words left Xiao Haogan and White Brook startled. As they looked at everyone, they discovered that they were all evading their eyes.

Island Master Xiao Skywhite was the first to leave. Then, everyone began to scatter without a single one remaining. There were even some people that were much faster than the others in fear that they would leave a bad impression on Mo Riverbliss.

As the other Elders departed, the space where Mo Riverbliss, White Brook, and Xiao Haogan were was completely sealed up.

When White Brook saw this, he mirthlessly smiled, "Hahaha! I never thought this would be! The world of martial artists is truly a reflection of human nature! To think that I, White Brook, would one day suffer a fate like this and become no different from a plague. Everyone who sees me fears me and everyone wishes to cut apart all relations they had with me! Your methods are truly wonderful!"

White Brook grit his teeth as he looked at Mo Riverbliss. And behind him, Xiao Haogan was already shaking in his boots. Facing Mo Riverbliss, he felt an unbelievably strong pressure. This woman could take their lives whenever she wished.

"My methods aren't much at all. It's just that after Lin Ming crossed a nine by nine Life Destruction, whether it be in strength or prestige, I now occupy the absolute superiority. You are no longer my match. I could have let you go, it's only that... I will no longer leave behind even the smallest chance for my current enemies or my potential enemies in the future. This is the lesson that my father paid a deep price to carve into my heart! I will no longer abide a snake that is looking at me from behind. Even if you do not have the strength to threaten me, it is possible that you will betray my information to my blood enemy in the future, or you may even sell out Lin Ming. Or in the future when I have troubles, you may even kick me when I'm down! You already have a festering hatred of me in your heart. Since we cannot resolve our issues, why should I allow you any chance to seek revenge?"

The annihilation of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands had left a lifelong lesson in Mo Riverbliss's heart. It was because the old Holy Lord of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands didn't act against Tian Mingzi ahead of time that they all suffered such a fate.

How could Mo Riverbliss allow the same mistake to occur again? Once White Brook realized that her hated enemy was Tian Mingzi, then even the spirit artifact scroll she had all the Elders sign might be useless. Tian Mingzi possibly had his own ways to remove such a curse. At that time, Tian Mingzi would find out about her as well as about the existence of Mo Eversnow and Lin Ming. The consequences of this could be imagined!

"Good! You are ruthless enough! I acknowledge that I deserve this punishment. So, let me see just how you'll dispose of me!"

White Brook coldly said as he flung his sleeves open. In his opinion, Mo Riverbliss was merely relieving him of his duties. At most she would imprison him, not kill him. Otherwise, if a senior Elder died because of a power struggle then there would inevitably be fissures. Although no one would dare to do anything to her, she still had to be cautious of the effects her actions on public opinion!

If her killing sins were too great, it would be easy to lose the will of the people.

Mo Riverbliss seemed to see through White Brook's thoughts. She cunningly smiled. "You seem to think you're safe? As if you have nothing to fear? What a pity... your speculations are all wrong..."

"Mm!?" White Brook's heart shook as he suddenly stepped backwards. He reached out to trace his own spatial ring, but at this time all he felt was a blinding haze before him; Mo Riverbliss had already arrived right in front of him!

Bang!

White Brook couldn't see how Mo Riverbliss had acted. In only an instant, all he felt was a dizzying pain in his head. It was as if he had fallen into some unknown space with ice and snow falling all around him, enveloping the world.

White Brook wanted to shatter this world, but he felt his body become increasingly powerless. His consciousness and divine sense seemed to leave his body. This feeling was like a mortal being placed in front of the vastness of nature; there was no chance of resisting...

The difference was too great!

....

Three days later, everyone saw Xiao Haogan and White Brook in Carefree Palace. They followed behind Mo Riverbliss. There didn't seem to be anything different about them, except that they displayed absolute loyalty towards Mo Riverbliss. Moreover, there was also a deep sense of awe and fear shining from their eyes!

This sort of look was like someone who had their mind controlled and had a slave seal planted within them. Of course, no one dared to question Mo Riverbliss. They could only suppress their own suspicious and pretend to not notice anything. Everyone began to increasingly dread this woman known as Mo Riverbliss. Without a doubt, she was not some bleeding heart individual. For whoever disobeyed her, their fate would truly be tragic! Xiao Haogan and White Brook were the perfect examples of this!

No matter what Mo Riverbliss did to Xiao Haogan and White Brook, at least they hadn't died. As for the ordinary disciples of Carefree Island, none of them knew about this situation to begin with, thus changes in public opinion never occurred. Like this, Mo Riverbliss calmly controlled all of Carefree Island while removing all of her enemies. Not only were there no negative effects, but her authority instead rose to an unprecedented level.

Chapter 1135 – Immemorial Imperial City

Chapter 1135 – Immemorial Imperial City

…

…

…

The True Martial World in which Carefree Island was located was extremely vast, even a level greater than Atlas World, the world where Phoenix Cry Palace was located!

Of the great worlds of the Divine Realm, what decided which was larger and smaller was not their mass or area. Rather, it was the number of powerhouses as well as their quality.

And in a great world, over 90% of the powerhouses would be located on the main continent. Each main continent of a Divine Realm great world had an incalculable area to it.

Although Carefree Island was also considered to be on the main continent of True Martial World, it was at the farthest edges of the sea – the Red Desolate Sea. The truly large top sects, such as those Holy Lands, peak Holy Lands, and even World King level Holy Lands were located near the greater central areas of these main continents.

This region had an incomparably rich stock of resources. There was also an extremely high number of mystic realms, and even the middle ranked of these mystic realms was much more bountiful than the Red Desolate Mystic Realm.

However, although these mystic realms were rich in resources, what they produced was only violet sun stones, violet sun crystals, or some other basic low level materials. The best point about them was that the quantity of resources was very high, but the quality wasn't so. They weren't like the God Beast Mystic Realm that had high level heavenly materials such as a supreme dragon bone. A supreme dragon bone was something that even a World King level powerhouse would fight to the death for. As for 10 billion violet sun stones, a World King level powerhouse wouldn't have any interest in that at all.

This was the difference in level. Although True Martial Great World's mystic realms were extremely rich, and could even be counted as having some of the richest of the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds' mystic realms, they weren't able to produce top grade heavenly materials, thus they weren't too tempting to powerhouses. And, a great deal of the wealth was due to the commercial businesses there. Every year there was an inestimable amount of wealth traded in True Martial World.

Immemorial Imperial City was the largest city of True Martial Great World and also the most ancient. After Lin Ming bid his farewells to Mo Riverbliss, his destination was Immemorial Imperial City. The reason he came here was to take back the wealth that the Verdant Feather Holy Lands had left, among them the jade slip to the 'Celestial Tyrant Manual' that Mo Eversnow had left behind.

According to Mo Eversnow, Immemorial Imperial City was already several hundred millions of years old.

A hundred million was a terrifying number, in particular when used to refer to time. A mortal lived for a billion breaths, and a single breath was an extremely short period of time. If these breaths of time were changed into years, the amount of time would be unimaginable!

This was a city that had constantly developed over a span of several hundred million years; it was easy to imagine how terrifying it was!

Although Lin Ming had mentally prepared himself, he was still shocked when he truly saw Immemorial Imperial City with his own eyes.

"This is Immemorial Imperial City?"

Lin Ming gazed at the massive metropolis in front of him. Rather, it was better to call it a floating continent!

In the skies above True Martial Great World, a super continent floated by itself. This massive chunk of land was tens of thousands of miles long and wide.

Immemorial Imperial City was surrounded by a city wall that was thousands of feet high and hundreds of feet thick, as if a mountain range were surrounding it. For all these hundreds of millions of years, countless array formations and mind-boggling amounts of energy were used to support this city wall, and thus the city wall exuded a simple and boundless aura.

Although this city wall was vast and tough, there were still scars left behind by all sorts of attacks. There were even some areas where the gashes were particularly deep and dreadful. It was obvious that in the history of Immemorial Imperial City, it had encountered the endless flames of war. To fight in a city like this, it was possible that it was a war between World King level Holy Lands.

The truth was that martial artists could fly, and no ordinary wall could stop them no matter how high it was. But, this city wall formed a massive energy barrier in the sky that covered the entire city sky; the number of violet sun stones consumed each year could be imagined.

Beyond the covering of the energy barrier, there were countless saint beasts and massive spirit boats and spirit shoats that shuttled about. These saint beasts and spirit vessels had to descend as they came close to Immemorial Imperial City and the martial artist who rode them had to then walk into the city.

At the front gates of this city, there was a squadron of guards in golden armor. These guards were all at the Divine Transformation realm, and there was a divine war chariot next to them. These divine war chariots were crafted by grandmaster refiners. As long as one placed enough violet sun stones in them, they would be able to display an incredible destructive power.

“Immemorial Imperial City… this is where the Celestial Tyrant Manual and some other treasure are hidden?” Lin Ming came here this time with Mo Eversnow in order to take the

Celestial Tyrant Manual jade slip as well as the other hidden wealth. He thought that these treasures should be buried in some wild and barren mountain range or hill, or perhaps even somewhere in a divergent mystic realm where they would be covered under the protection of numerous array formations. But, he never imagined they had been hidden in the largest and most prosperous city of True Martial Great World!

Lin Ming thoughts this was strange. How could there be treasure hidden in such a place?

"That's right, they're hidden right here. The situation in the past was complicated. Some treasures were stored in different areas. I kept some, my little sister took some, and even my aunty took part of it away. And a part was also left in Immemorial Imperial City's Starbind Bank. The power that is behind Starbind Bank is the True Martial Holy Lands. True Martial Holy Lands is exactly what you think it is: it is the top Holy Land of True Martial World! It is also the Holy Land established by the Great World King of True Martial World! Only such a Holy Land would dare to use the name of a great world for themselves. Starbind Bank is an extremely safe place to deposit treasures. There are many supreme elders of the Divine Realm that would choose to place their treasures here, and this has led to Starbind Bank having a very good reputation. They will not privately steal the treasures of their guests. Of course, this is on the premise that there are no treasures deposited that would cause a Great World King to go mad for them..."

As Mo Eversnow explained this, Lin Ming suddenly became aware. A bank that was supported by a Great World King was truly a safe place to store treasures. The only exception would be if the True Martial Holy Lands was exterminated, otherwise those things that were deposited in Starbind Bank would be safe.

"You're saying that the jade slip and wealth have been stored here for 50,000 years?" Lin Ming found this hard to wrap his mind around. He had only lived for a total of 30 some years. But to a World King level powerhouse, 50,000 years wasn't anything at all.

"Yes, 50,000 years!"

“I never thought that the Divine Realm would have such a method to store treasures. A bank… isn’t too different from how it’s done in the mortal world.”

“Of course, this Immemorial Imperial City doesn’t have just banks, they also have pawn shops, houses, and all sorts of other businesses that sell countless kinds of treasures. There are saint artifacts and even spirit artifacts that are sold. There are even pill pavilions that sell earth-step and heaven-step pills, but these sorts of things can only be dreamt of – they are far too difficult to purchase. I even heard that in the past, there was a transcendent divine pill auctioned off at Immemorial Imperial City. That auction gathered together over a hundred World King level powerhouses from the Divine Realm as well as the rulers of countless Holy Lands. There were even said to be 20 Great World Kings among them! Finally, this transcendent divine pill was purchased by a Great World King, but the price he paid was kept secret so that no one knew.”

“What?” Lin Ming was stunned. A transcendent divine pill was something on the same rank as a transcendent divine might. Because these pills were one-time use treasures, they weren’t as valuable as a transcendent divine might jade slip. But, these were pills that could potentially save the life of a Great World King, so they were truly priceless treasures!

“Even a transcendent divine pill was sold! This… that is something that would need to be refined by an Empyrean!”

“No, there are many Empyreans that do not practice alchemy. On the contrary, there are some peak Great World Kings that have extraordinary accomplishments in alchemy and thus have the ability to refine transcendent divine pills. True Martial Great World is the most bustling trading hub of the Divine Realm’s 3000 great worlds. There is a massive amount of martial artists from all over the Divine Realm that come here to sell and trade their goods, and this includes even Great World Kings!”

As the two spoke, they arrived at Immemorial Imperial City’s gates.

The two city gates were thousands of feet high, and the aura they exuded was grand and towering. There was a massive stream of people pouring through the gates. A great number of them were at the Divine Sea realm, Divine Transformation realm, and even Divine Lord realm.

This was a city of martial artists!

“Mm?” Lin Ming was faintly startled. He didn’t find it strange that there were so many powerhouses here, but as he entered, he discovered that there were many young people. Moreover, each one of them had a solid foundation and amazing talent!

These people would all be at least direct disciples of an ordinary Holy Land. And yet there were so many of them here…

Were these the disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands?

Lin Ming didn’t dwell on this too much as he paid the fee to enter. In Immemorial Imperial City, one had to pay 10,000 violet sun stones to enter if they didn’t possess a permanent residence inside. This sort of wealth would cause the vast majority of Divine Sea realm martial artists to shrink back in fear and not dare to approach this city! It had to be known that in the past, when Lin Ming was at Phoenix Cry Palace and had entered Saint Artifact Pavilion to choose a treasure, he was able to do so by paying an equivalent of several thousand violet sun stones. And, this was an amount of wealth that many Life Destruction and Divine Sea disciples had to save up diligently for.

Of course, this wealth was only a fine drizzle to Lin Ming. Not to mention the treasures that Mo Eversnow left in Starbind Bank, but just the wealth he had obtained after killing the genius disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan came to a total of 150 billion violet sun stones. This sort of wealth had been comprised of violet sun stones, violet sun crystals, and other materials. Mo Riverbliss had helped Lin Ming change all of this to violet sun crystals using her connections.

Now, the current Lin Ming was ridiculously wealthy.

“Starbind Bank is here!”

Lin Ming stopped in front of a magnificent building. On the top of this building was a signboard with the words ‘Starbind Bank’ written in large golden red characters. Each of these words contained faint fluctuations of the Metal Laws.

Upon stepping into Starbind Bank, one would enter into a different space. The space inside was dozens of times larger than the exterior and one could even fly!

This was also a reasonable matter. After all, Immemorial Imperial City was the headquarters for two World King level Holy Lands. In addition, there were also many peak and upper level Holy Lands that had set up a base here. This caused Immemorial Imperial City to have a ridiculously inflated cost for property. Thus, there were many buildings here that would have their own minor dimension built within to expand the building and make the most of the limited space.

As soon as Lin Ming entered Starbind Bank, he saw a group of young martial artists. These people had middle and late Divine Sea cultivations and they appeared to be around 30-40 years old. They were all excited and in high spirits.

And behind them were several old men that acted as stewards. These old men were each at the late Divine Lord realm. Such a powerhouse could be a Great Elder in Carefree Palace. But following behind these youths, they were only stewards.

“So many outstanding characters. I’ve walked just this distance and yet I’ve encountered countless geniuses. This Immemorial Imperial City is truly lively!”

Chapter 1136 – Taking the Treasures

Chapter 1136 – Taking the Treasures

…

…

…

As Lin Ming entered the grand hall of Starbind Bank, several young martial artists caught notice of him.

"That person… did you see him?" A youth said with a true essence sound transmission.

"Eh? His aura isn't bad. This sort of feeling should come from some specially raised genius from a large sect or noble family." A white-clothed youth leisurely said, swinging a fan as he did so. He noticed Lin Ming had a ninth stage Life Destruction cultivation and he was also an outstanding one amongst them. Such a person likely came from a widely renowned sect or family.

"Mm? He went in. The inner temple of Starbind Bank is only for three-star guests to deposit and withdraw violet sun crystals. That young man really must come from some wonderful influence.

"Haha, Young River is too humble. Besides some major influences, there aren't many others that can compare with your River Family. As for a three-star guest, Young River has long since become one…"

These people jollily laughed as they spoke. Although they spoke with true essence sound transmissions, they didn't hide their eyes and expressions. Lin Ming naturally noticed that they were talking about him.

After Lin Ming entered Starbind Bank, he intentionally exuded the aura of a powerhouse. This Immemorial Imperial City was a place where everyone was a rising dragon. If he showed off some of his strength and background then he would be able to avoid some unnecessary troubles and smoothen things out.

For instance, the inner temple of Starbind Bank was one such case. If an ordinary-looking person wanted to enter, they would be immediately blocked until they were able to show proof of their financial resources or records of their accounts. Otherwise, they wouldn't be able to go in. However, those that looked like extremely talented young geniuses would be able to directly enter without a hitch.

"Young Sir, would you like to use your true martial rune to withdraw violet sun stores or crimson sun pills? Or perhaps you've come to manage the property you have held here?"

Just as Lin Ming entered Starbind Bank, a pretty young woman came out to greet him. She wore the uniform of Starbind Bank and exuded a very warm and sensual flavor.

In the Divine Realm, there were several types of common resources used as money. The two most common types were violet sun stones and pills.

There was no need to expound on the uses of violet sun stones. They were used to power array formations, spirit ships, and were also necessary to enter divergent mystic realms. As for pills, they were essential to raising disciples of large sects.

Crimson sun pills were an extremely common type of pill. They were worth the equivalent of a violet sun crystal, which was the same as 10,000 violet sun stones.

For the purpose of facilitating easier and simpler transactions and calculations, many large banks would reduce violet sun stones or crimson sun pills to a standard currency unit. For instance, Starbind Bank's true martial runes.

"I've come to take out something I left here." Lin Ming calmly said.

"What does Young Sir wish to take out? What is the account number? I will immediately bring it out." The young woman charmingly smiled.

Lin Ming gave the account number. This long account number included various types of information, including the date the account was opened on. As the young woman heard this she was a bit surprised. This account had already been here for 50,000 years.

Even to those old monsters, saving something for 50,000 years was an extremely long time. They would often only store something for several thousand years before taking it out.

"Please follow me."

The young woman took out an array disc. After fiddling with some runes on the array disc, it emitted a brilliant light that wrapped around the woman and Lin Ming, bringing both of them to a separate minor dimension. Within this minor dimension was a giant sealing array formation. When Mo Eversnow had deposited her treasures here in the past, she had done so within this this minor dimension's sealing array formation. Starbind Bank's sealing array formation was laid down by a World King level powerhouse. Even if a peak Holy Lord level martial artist came to this minor dimension, he still wouldn't be able to break it open.

"Please enter the rune password."

The young woman pointed towards the array disc on top of the sealing array formation. There were all sorts of complex symbols and lines traced over the array disc. In just runes alone, there were thousands of them, and a single password could consist of 20 lines of rune symbols. Thus, the possible combinations were nearly infinite. If one didn't know the correct password it was impossible to open.

Lin Ming chose the 22 rune symbols according to the password that Mo Eversnow had told him and then aligned them in a specific order. Afterwards, there was a light clicking sound as a common-looking spatial ring was shot out, falling into Lin Ming's hands.

This was the wealth that Mo Eversnow had deposited in Starbind Bank in the past.

As Lin Ming swept his sense through the spatial ring, a blood red jade slip immediately entered his sight. This jade slip was extremely special. Although it was called a jade slip, it wasn't carved from any type of red jade. Rather, it was sculpted from a blood red bone and the red patterns and textures on this jade slip were similar to bloodlines and meridians.

Without a doubt, this was the Celestial Tyrant Manual jade slip!

Lin Ming had only touched his sense upon it but he felt as if he shared some sort of bloodline connection with it. This was because he had already practiced a part of the Celestial Tyrant Manual.

Besides this jade slip there were also several boxes in the spatial ring. As he opened these boxes, he found neat piles of crystal cards located within them. Each crystal card had a pattern of runes and lines carved on top of it, each card symbolizing 10,000 true martial rune symbols. If he brought one to Starbind Bank, he could instantly exchange it for 100 thousand violet sun stones or 10,000 crimson sun pills.

Lin Ming roughly estimated that there were around 3600-3700 of these cards in total, which was the equivalent of 360-370 billion violet sun stones. In addition to the wealth he had obtained before, Lin Ming's total wealth had reached 500 billion violet sun stones.

"Mm? A bit over half of the wealth is missing..." Mo Eversnow was startled as she inventoried the crystal cards. She seemed to recall something and let out a long sigh.

"It should be Little Moon who took half the wealth away. Only she would know the password to bypass the sealing array formation. But why would she be in such a hurry to use this wealth? Is it because she needed to make a breakthrough in her boundary?"

Mo Eversnow found it difficult to remain calm. No matter when, she was always concerned for her little sister. If she couldn't find her then she would always feel a faint emptiness in her heart. Besides her aunty, her little sister was Mo Eversnow's only remaining family.

"I wonder where she is or what she's doing right now..."

Lin Ming said, “Miss Mo, you do not need to worry. Although the Divine Realm is vast, if the day comes when we can reestablish the Verdant Feather Holy Lands and even kill Tian Mingzi, then the name of our new Verdant Feather Holy Lands will ring through the Divine Realm. I’m sure that Miss Mo’s little sister will naturally come to look for us then.”

“Mm… I hope so.” Mo Eversnow nodded. She didn’t know why, but she couldn’t rid herself of a faint uneasiness in her heart.

“Lin Ming, take everything. Since we’ve arrived at Immemorial Imperial City, we shall begin to make the final preparations for you to attack the Divine Sea realm. If possible, before you reach the Divine Sea I would like you to open another gate – the Gate of Life. After you step into the Divine Sea you can attempt to open the Gate of Death. And after that is the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. If you can truly manage to break through into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, you will have created a miracle!”

“Open another gate before the Divine Sea?” Lin Ming was startled. According to the Celestial Tyrant Manual, even in ancient times when the Laws of the Divine Realm hadn’t yet changed and dual cultivating body and energy was still feasible for many, wanting to open the seventh gate before the Divine Sea still wouldn’t be easy.

“Mm… originally it would have been impossible. However, when you crossed your Ninefall heavenly tribulation, you borrowed the power of heavenly tribulation to break past the life and death threshold. There is also that mysterious black bead that regenerated and improved your body as well as a massive amount of the dragon bone relics’ strength still remaining in you. This altogether is what causes me to believe that you can attempt to break through the Gate of Life!

“For most martial artists, Ninefall is considered the most important boundary that they will have to cross. This is because the process of Ninefall plants a world seed in your body. The quality of this seed will play a great role in determining your future achievements. Although it is only a seed and it has also been planted, how you raise it is extremely important. If you can further solidify your foundation before you reach the Divine Sea, then once your world seed sprouts and forms your inner world, your world will be far larger, stronger, and tougher than an ordinary martial artist's!"

"Miss Mo is planning to refine the Esoteric Immortality Pill?" Lin Ming remembered Mo Eversnow's original plan. In the Celestial Tyrant Manual, it was recorded that there were two kinds of pills needed in the method to open the Gate of Life and Gate of Death. In order to attack the Gate of Life, one needed the Esoteric Immortality Pill. In order to attack the Gate of Death, one needed the Esoteric Mortality Pill.

The techniques to refine the pills were recorded in the Celestial Tyrant Manual. But, regardless of whether it was the Esoteric Immortality Pill or Esoteric Mortality Pill, both were not pills that a Life Destruction martial artist should be able to withstand.

Of course, Lin Ming was unique in that regard. His body had been continuously tempered through heavenly tribulation and he had also been transformed by the black bead and the dragon bone relics. The toughness of his body had reached an unbelievable boundary. Although he was still far from being comparable to a God Beast, sweeping away random ancient vicious beasts wasn't a problem.

As Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow were speaking, they bumped into those young heroic elites that had entered Starbind Bank. The old men following behind them were late Divine Lord realm stewards, specially sent to watch over them.

A youth waving a fan smiled at Lin Ming. "Friend, may I know your name? What influence do you come from, and what family are you from? Would I, River Feather, know of you?"

This young fellow called River Feather was able to see that Lin Ming's status was extremely mysterious. His talent and wealth far surpassed other genius youths', thus River Feather wanted to become friends with him.

To a disciple of a distinguished family, developing one's own strength was extremely important. This was because it involved the future succession battles to become the family head. Having another friend on your side would always be better.

Lin Ming originally wanted to refuse River Feather's good intentions, but he changed his mind upon thinking about it some more. He had just arrived at Immemorial Imperial City and was unfamiliar with the people and locations here. It wouldn't be easy if he wanted to purchase the materials necessary to refine the Esoteric Immortality Pill. If he was acquainted with a disciple from a distinguished family, there were many matters that would become much easier.

Thus, Lin Ming cupped his fists together across his chest and said, "My name is Lin Ming."

"Lin Ming..." River Feather rapidly wracked his mind for an association, but couldn't recall any distinguished family in Immemorial Imperial City that used the Lin surname. It seemed that this Lin Ming was likely from some distinguished family far away and had come to Immemorial Imperial City to adventure.

As the two exchanged some words, they finally touched upon the subject of Lin Ming's origin. Lin Ming declined to answer, only speaking in dire tones. River Feather could see that Lin Ming didn't wish to reveal too much information about his own status, thus he didn't ask. Instead, he straightforwardly and with great gusto spoke of his own family – Immemorial Imperial City's River Family.

The River Family was a super family that had existed for millions of years. If they were counted as a sect, they would be considered a peak Holy Land. Their family had peak Holy Lord powerhouses assuming command, and their strength was not something that a sect like Carefree Island could compare with.

As a super family clan whose main headquarters were located at True Martial Great World, the River Family would naturally have many channels to do business through. This left Lin Ming quite interested indeed. He cut straight to the point and said, "So it's the young master of the River Family. I just happen to have a list of materials that I wish to purchase in Immemorial Imperial City. Brother River, do you think that you can help me out with this?”

Chapter 1137 – Private Trading Fair

Chapter 1137 – Private Trading Fair

…

…

…

“Oh? What sort of materials? Sir Lin, you have stumbled into the right person! My River Family has over 100 stores in Immemorial Imperial City. If there are any of these materials then I can help purchase them for you and also give you a 10% discount.”

As River Feather spoke, Lin Ming was pleasantly surprised. He reiterated the materials that Mo Eversnow said were needed to refine the Esoteric Immortality Pill. The Celestial Tyrant Manual was originally a body transformation law formula found together with the Magic Cube. No one knew of it, thus there wasn’t any problem in handing out this list of materials.

The truth was that even if they knew, a body transformation cultivation method wasn’t enough to arouse anyone’s interest, thus Lin Ming didn’t have any worries when sharing this list.

River Feather took the list of materials and swept over it. He was immediately puzzled. The materials that Lin Ming wanted were far stranger than what he expected and many of them were extremely valuable and precious commodities.

These materials… just what sort of pill would they be used for?

River Feather had an extremely keen understanding towards alchemy and was also familiar with the properties of all sorts of materials needed to refine pills. Even if he wasn’t familiar with a pill, he could still approximate its uses from the list of materials.

But now as he looked at this strange and curious list of pill materials, he was left perplexed. Just what sort of pill was this used for?

Originally, he had thought of speculating on what type of cultivation method Lin Ming trained in from this list of materials, or at least roughly guess his origin. But now, all of that was thrown into more confusion.

“The materials that Sir Lin wishes to find… are not commonly used. In order to search for all of this, it will take a bit of time. In particular, there are some things like this violet sun stone embryo that even I must admit I have never learnt or heard of.”

The Celestial Tyrant Manual was an ancient manual from countless eons ago. The ingredients recorded within may have completely different names in the current Divine Realm. If it weren’t for Mo Eversnow having researched numerous ancient texts in the past in order to refine the Esoteric Immortality Pill, it would have been impossible to gather these materials. Even now, there were still some things that were far too bizarre, strange to the point that River Feather had never heard of them.

Lin Ming said, “That is how the material is called in my great world, but it might be a bit different in yours. There are some types of spirit woods and divine stones that can absorb the essence of the world over endless years and have a small chance of breeding a spirit embryo. This sort of spirit embryo is bred at the nexus of all sorts of coincidences gathered together. For instance, it might have to be struck by lightning or even withstand a baptism from the power of heavenly tribulation, and experience many other things beyond that before it would be born. As for this violet sun stone embryo, that is a stone embryo bred within violet sun stones. It is an extremely rare material.”

As Lin Ming explained, the several youths around River Feather looked at each other in dismay. They had heard about some divine stones and spirit woods breeding a spirit embryo before. And, once these kinds of spirit embryos were found, they would often be taken away by masters to be used in creating avatars or puppets. As for a stone embryo bred within violet sun stones, that was the first time they had heard of such a thing.

River Feather said, “Brother Lin, looking for these things will not be easy. And many of these materials will not be cheap.”

Lin Ming said, “If they can be found then that would be best, but it doesn’t matter if they can’t be found either.”

According to Mo Eversnow, it would be wonderful if Lin Ming could open the Gate of Life before entering the Divine Sea. But, it wouldn’t matter too much if he didn’t. He would be able to gather the materials for the Esoteric Immortality Pill sooner or later so there wasn’t a great hurry for that day.

River Feather said, “How about this. Brother Lin, I can help you find most of the materials you listed. But for this violet sun stone embryo, there is a private trade fair being held in a few days. This trade fair has all sorts of strange treasures that will be sold. If Brother Lin comes with me then perhaps you’ll be able to obtain some harvests.”

“Great. Then I’ll have to thank you.” Lin Ming thought for a moment before agreeing. These people were clearly young masters from noble families, but besides revealing a bit of his talent, he had remained relatively low-key. Not even the young lady from Starbind Bank knew that he now had a wealth of 500 billion violet sun stones. In this case, Lin Ming didn’t believe that River Feather and the others would aim at him.

After leaving behind his sound transmission mark, Lin Ming bid his farewells to River Feather and left Starbind Bank.

Immemorial Imperial City was truly a land with countless masters! Just by walking down the street, one could see Divine Sea, Divine Transformation, and even Divine Lord powerhouses everywhere. Moreover, each of these people had a background superior to other martial artists of the same boundary. This was also within reason. If just entering this city cost 10,000 violet sun stones, then it would be impossible for a low cultivation martial artist with a shoddy foundation to even pass the city gates.

Those that were able to walk the streets of Immemorial Imperial City were either great masters or geniuses, with the worst of them being young wealthy juniors of distinguished families.

Lin Ming found an inn to stay at, also intending to acquire some information about River Feather. The River Family was a family that had existed for tens of millions of years in Immemorial Imperial City; it was extremely easy to find information on it.

“Their family head is a peak Holy Lord level powerhouse… they are a superior Holy Land Family. They are far from being able to compare with the Ancient Phoenix Clan…” Lin Ming quickly evaluated the River Family. It seemed that River Feather had been exaggerating the accomplishments of his family when he introduced himself.

“It seems like that River Feather is trying to win you over, thus he’s showing such goodwill to you on his own initiative. The competition between the juniors of these families can be intense.” Mo Eversnow said with a true essence sound transmission.

“Mm… it’s good if he has a motive like this. If I couldn’t see his motive then I would have to guard against him.” Lin Ming casually replied, not thinking of it much further. He sat down in his room and began to meditate.

Three days later, a flame lit up in front of Lin Ming. It was River Feather’s sound transmission talisman; the private trade fair was about to begin.

According to River Feather, the private trade fair was attended by youths with status, and the one managing the trade fair was an underground influence of Immemorial Imperial City. They were similar to gangs or triads of the mortal world. They were always engaged in some behaviors that ran counter to the rules and regulations of Immemorial Imperial City.

Lin Ming arrived at the place that River Feather described. There was already a young and beautiful girl there waiting for him. This girl was at the Xiantian realm and she was extremely sensual.

“Sir Lin? I have been waiting for you. Sir, please follow me.”

The woman led Lin Ming past a broad square before arriving at a stone house. As they entered the house and went to the basement, they came upon a painting-covered door coated with runes. The woman walked up to the door and began touching the runes, causing it to shine with a bright white light.

The girl waved at Lin Ming. Lin Ming could see that sealed behind this door was a minor dimension.

Lin Ming raised his senses, keeping alert of his surroundings. He carefully walked in. After he passed through, the stone door behind him closed. Lin Ming arrived at a spacious hall that had a massive circular stone table in the center. At this time, there were already many people sitting around this stone table.

Lin Ming saw River Feather and several of his friends sitting at the stone table.

Not just that, but there were also several other youths with a Divine Sea cultivation. It was just like River Feather had said: they were extraordinary individuals of their generation.

“Brother Lin, over here!”

River Feather smiled at Lin Ming in greeting and Lin Ming nodded in return. After Lin Ming sat down, a group of Xiantian realm girls walked in, setting down snacks and tea for everyone. These girls all had extremely loose and sparse clothing, revealing all the forbidden parts of their bodies.

Several of the young girls, after setting down the refreshments, were about to leave when they were suddenly grabbed and pulled into the embraces of some guests.

Although these girls were surprised, they didn’t resist. They obeyed those guests, allowing them to stroke or touch them as they wished.

It was clear that this was something that often happened in this type of underground trade fair. Those guests were frequent patrons, so Lin Ming wasn’t surprised by this. This was truly an underground influence; it was naturally easy for a person to unleash their primitive and lustful nature here. Those several youths had extremely abundant amounts of yang energy in their bodies and likely trained in some sort of sexual cultivation method that required great deals of yin energy to neutralize their own imbalance.

After this group of young girls walked in, a man and woman soon followed.

The man was at the early Divine Transformation realm. He was dressed in black and his complexion was extremely pale, even seeming a bit sinister and depraved.

And the woman was at the late Divine Sea realm. She had a busty figure with a charming face. She wore a red dress that followed the curves of her body, with long slits that revealed snowy white thighs. In fact, this dress was so tightly stretched that it seemed as if it would burst apart at any moment.

These two people clearly belonged to the underground influence that ran this trade fair.

“Everyone has been waiting for a long time!”

As the woman spoke, her voice was very clear and lustful, as if she were constantly moaning in ecstasy. It made one’s heart itch a bit listening to her.

“Haha, Madam Luo, hurry up and begin! I’ve waited for too long! I heard that you brought many good things this time!”

A young man with a girl hugged to his chest said, happily laughing as he saw the woman called Madam Luo step up.

“Haha, Young Master Sun is too impatient. This trade fair truly has many good things, but the rules will still be the same. Besides what we sell, if any fellow guests here have things they wish to sell, you may also exchange them as you wish. Now, let us begin.”

Madam Luo clapped her hands. A beautiful maid appeared, holding a box. Madam Luo opened it, revealing a group of tiny white objects that looked like stacked pearls. They were insect eggs.

“Whitejade spirit silkworm eggs, 20 of them. If anyone wishes to purchase these, they can barter a price with other goods, or even trade with true martial rune symbols.”

As Madam Luo finished speaking, the early Divine Transformation realm man beside her took out some other things. Lin Ming wasn’t able to recognize any of these treasures at all.

There was a gruesome-looking bone shard. This bone shard had strange letters written on it, but as for what these letters meant, Lin Ming hadn’t even seen this language before. This bone shard exuded a hoary aura; it had clearly come from a time long gone. It didn’t seem fake, but Lin Ming simply didn’t know of its true function or value.

And beside this bone shard was a white rubbery-looking object. Lin Ming didn’t recognize this either. The man had just taken out a few treasures, but Lin Ming was completely unable to recognize the use or value of two of them. This aroused a bit of interest in Lin Ming towards this trade fair.

Indeed, it was just like River Feather had said. There were some strange and curious things that appeared at this trade fair. Perhaps he really would have some harvests here.

It had to be known that even though Lin Ming’s experience wasn’t too good, Mo Eversnow’s sight and experience were beyond ordinary!

Chapter 1138 – The Little Girl Who Eats Violet Sun Crystals

Chapter 1138 – The Little Girl Who Eats Violet Sun Crystals

…

…

…

The treasures that the early Divine Transformation man took out immediately attracted everyone's eyes.

The specialty of this trade fair that attracted so many people was its strange and uncommon treasures.

"How interesting. Let me take a look."

A tall, thin youth with a forked beard took that bone shard and investigated it.

Another youth took that white rubber object and also studied it.

"Miss Mo, what do you think those two objects are?" Lin Ming asked Mo Eversnow with a true essence sound transmission.

Mo Eversnow thought for a moment and then said, "That bone shard has a language written on it that stems from an extremely ancient era of the Divine Realm. It should be the language once used by the Saint race… that is already billions of years, even a matter of 10 billion years ago. At that time, the Laws of this world hadn't yet changed and body transformation techniques were quite mainstream in the world of martial artists. That incomplete bone shard should be similar to a jade slip, or rather, it’s best to call it a bone slip. There should be some type of records located within it.”

As Mo Eversnow spoke, these objects were passed to Lin Ming. Lin Ming investigated them for a moment. As Mo Eversnow had said, the bone slip really did contain many types of records. The textures and lines were extremely mystical; Lin Ming wasn’t able to understand them at all.

“Miss Mo, can you understand the writing within this?”

Mo Eversnow replied, “Only a small part of it. In the past when I was studying the Celestial Tyrant Manual, I found that it deviated towards the language of the ancient Divine Realm eras. Thus, I referenced many ancient Divine Realm texts. Gradually, I was able to read a little bit of it. This bone slip should record some type of cultivation method, but if you really wish to unravel its meaning then that will require a period of time.”

Besides the bone slip there was also that rubber-like object. Lin Ming looked at it and found that it really did look like rubber. It was only when he tried to pinch it a bit did he discover that it was actually very hard and also very heavy. Even though it was a very small object, it weighed dozens of jins.

Mo Eversnow said, “I cannot tell what the origin of this is, but it’s probably some magic weapon fragment or array disc fragment. Although there are some mysteries in it, far too long of a time has passed and it is too incomplete to be of use or value. However, buying it as part of a collection would be quite nice.”

Mo Eversnow roughly guessed what the two objects were, more or less correctly.

Although the others didn’t have Mo Eversnow’s vision, they also investigated the objects and were able to approximate that they were ancient fragments of some sort. The chance of comprehending anything useful from such fragmented and incomplete ancient treasures like this wasn’t too likely, although they were interested in collecting them. However, these wealthy young masters weren't idiots. If the price was too high then they wouldn't buy them.

"Mister Luo, how much is that bone shard?"

The fork-bearded youth was the first to ask a question. He reclined in a comfortable position, vigorously rubbing the breasts of the young woman in his arms.

"3 million violet sun stones." The Divine Transformation man referred to as Mister Luo smiled. This wasn't a strange price.

"3 million violet sun stones isn't too bad. I can buy this to play around with a bit. I'll pay the price." The fork-bearded youth gaily said, his eyes sweeping over the martial artists behind him.

It was impossible for anyone to contend with this fork-bearded youth for a bone shard that none of them could comprehend anything from. The youth himself was at the middle Divine Sea and he was extremely talented. His background was also good and he held a position of great status in this group.

The lack of reaction satisfied the fork-bearded youth. Just as he thought he had the deal, a voice of disagreement rang out, "I'll pay 3.5 million violet sun stones. This fellow, how about passing over this bone shard to me? I'm quite interested in collecting artifacts like this."

"Mm?" The youth frowned. In truth, he also discovered that there were some records contained within the bone slip and one of his Elders just happened to be a researcher on ancient languages. This youth had some hopes that this Elder would be able to discover some useful things from this bone shard.

The youth turned around and swept over Lin Ming's cultivation, coldly saying, "Sorry, but I'm not in the habit of passing over things I like. 4.5 Million."

"5 million."

Lin Ming calmly raised the price. All of the youths present were from Holy Land level sects or families. Moreover, they were outstanding individuals of their generation. But even so, the wealth they brought with them was limited, likely to 100 million. This would be the wealth they specifically brought to partake in this trade fair.

Originating from a Holy Land didn't mean that they were able to control the entirety of that Holy Land's wealth.

Compared to Lin Ming, their wealth was simply trivial.

Lin Ming's wealth came from the complete treasures that Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan had found in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, and that was also a mission that they had paid a deep price to enter. In addition to the wealth that Mo Eversnow had left behind in the past, this was a giant sum of 500 billion violet sun stones!

When the quasi-Holy Land Carefree Island had put forth 10-20 billion violet sun stones, that was already nearly a complete gamble with most of their resources on the line. As for 500 billion violet sun stones, that was an amount that even an upper ranking Holy Land would have trouble collecting. And, a great deal of a Holy Land's wealth came from fixed assets like its properties that couldn't be easily converted into currency.

If Lin Ming wanted to roll over this fork-bearded youth with his wealth, that would be easy. But, that would make others curious about his motives for obtaining the bone slip.

In the blink of an eye, the price rose to 8.5 million. The youth's complexion became increasingly ugly. 8.5 million was not a minor amount of the wealth he brought. Moreover, this price vastly surpassed what he was psychologically willing to pay.

He wasn't even sure if he could learn anything from this bone shard.

He took a deep breath and suppressed his impulse to offer a higher price. Face was important, but it still couldn't compare with his wealth.

“This brat… look up what background he has!” He said to one of his lackeys with a true essence sound transmission.

The lackey said, “That person was brought by Young Master River; his background shouldn’t be too bad.”

The fork-bearded youth simply didn’t place Lin Ming’s Ninefall cultivation in his eyes. What he worried about was Lin Ming’s background – this was what he had to be careful about. If this fellow could so casually toss out 8.5 million violet sun stones to buy an incomplete bone shard then that meant he came from a disgustingly wealthy and opulent background.

After Lin Ming’s purchase, those Whitejade spirit silkworm eggs were bought by someone for 4 million violet sun stones. As for the other things, no one cared about them.

In such a trade fair there was a limited number of guests and often many objects that no one would want to purchase. Thus, they would be put back.

Mister Luo laughed and put away the treasure no one wanted. It wasn’t a big deal if they didn’t sell it. And at this time, Madame Luo next to him deliberately raised her voice and said with a beguiling tone, “Those were only some little gadgets. Next up are some more… interesting things.”

Madame Luo clapped.

Two men in uniforms pushed in three carts. These carts were covered with red curtains. Madame Luo walked towards then and then tore off the curtains, revealing three iron cages that were as tall as a person. And, in these cages were three living people. One was a 20 year old young girl, one was a 11-12 year old little girl, and another was a seven or eight year old boy.

As these three people appeared, almost everyone’s eyes turned to that young girl’s body. She had elegant and soft features and a tender, watery expression. With her Revolving Core realm cultivation, her appearance easily aroused the pity of others.

"Chaotic yin body!"

The fork-bearded youth immediately recognized this young girl's special physique.

Madame Luo chuckled, saying with great satisfaction, "Young Master Sun has good eyes. This is exactly the chaotic yin body! From birth, a woman with this type of body has extreme yin energy within their body. If they cannot find sufficient yang energy to bring their body into balance, it will be impossible for them to take even a tiny step forwards in their cultivation. If they try to force it, the yin energy within their body will turn to chaos, their meridians will reverse, and then they will fall into depravity!

"But what Young Master Sun trains in is a cultivation method that fills you with overflowing yang energy. What you just happen to need is yin energy to neutralize it. How about it, is Young Master Sun satisfied with this? This young woman is an extremely good cultivation furnace for you. As long as Young Master Sun is willing to spend some resources, you can easily bring this young woman to the Divine Sea realm in her thirties. At that time, she will be able to display an even better effect for you!"

Madame Luo's words truly did tempt the fork-bearded youth. "Is there any problem with her background?"

This sort of special physique came with an extremely high level of talent for cultivation. It normally wouldn't appear in the common people. There was a high chance that this young woman came from some large sect, thus he had to ask if there were any problems with her background.

"Rest assured. She is from a family that was annihilated in a war. She fled from that catastrophe and was rescued by us. Then, she also agreed with the conditions that we proposed to her. For her to follow Young Master Sun is a blessing to her."

As Madame Luo spoke, the chaotic yin physique woman sighed, as if she were lamenting her own destiny. But, she also had no other choice. With the decline of her own family, she was desperate to find a turn in her fate. If she wanted to continue cultivating, her only choice was to attach herself to a powerhouse, otherwise there was no way she would be able to obtain resources. But, as she thought about herself being brought here for sale, she felt saddened.

“Good! Good!” This Young Master Sun was also very satisfied.

His eyes then moved over to that 11-12 year old little girl. He rubbed his chin and said, “Does this little girl also have some sort of special physique?”

If she did, then he could raise her for several years and use her all the same.

As the little girl was noticed by others, she immediately became nervous. She huddled in a corner of the cage, her tiny hands clinging to her shoulders as she trembled.

“Yes, and it is also a very special physique.” Mister Luo said with a smile.

“Oh? What kind of physique?” Many people leaned forward in interest. Even if they didn’t practice dual cultivation methods, they were still interested in what sort of special physique this little girl had. If her talent was good they could bring her back to the sect and raise her as a talented disciple.

“Well…” As Madame Luo and Mister Luo were asked this question, they looked at each other, not knowing what to say.

“We’ve referenced countless texts and sources to search for what exact type of physique she has, but we haven’t managed to determine it. All we know is that her physique is special. After she came here, she didn’t eat food but ate violet sun stones and violet sun crystals. If there are also energy stones available she will eat them. Every day she will eat five violet sun crystals…”

“What?”

As Mister Luo spoke, all of the heroic young elites present were shocked. There was also this type of physique? This was the first time they had heard of such a thing!

This great and wide world truly possessed every possible strange thing!

Chapter 1139 – News of the Violet Sun Stone Embryo

Chapter 1139 – News of the Violet Sun Stone Embryo

…

…

…

“Interesting, how interesting!” River Feather rubbed his chin. If one had this sort of physique and was able to eat violet sun stones and transform that into their cultivation, then one’s martial talent would truly defy the heavens. He looked at the little girl’s dantian, wanting to see what her cultivation was, but as he looked, he frowned. This little girl’s dantian was completely void, without even a hint of true essence. She had not cultivated at all.

“Mm? She hasn’t cultivated yet?”

“This…” A flash of embarrassment passed over Mister Luo’s face. “She cannot cultivate.”

Madame Luo laughed. She said, “She cannot cultivate, but that is only because we have temporarily been unable to figure out how she cultivates. If she eats up so many violet sun crystals, how can she not be able to cultivate? We have searched through countless texts, all the way from the ancient era to contemporary times, and yet we still haven’t been able to figure out just what sort of variation physique she possesses. The little girl is singularly unique. Moreover, the price we ask isn’t too high, only 2 million violet sun stones and then you can take her away. If you are then able to discover how to make use of her physique then your profits will be tremendous.”

Madame Luo’s words were tricky and misleading, but Young Master Sun still remained unmoved. To eat up violet sun crystals? A single violet sun crystal was worth 10,000 violet sun stones. Who knew how many violet sun crystals would be required to help her cultivate. If he were to put forth so much wealth in order to train her without results, then he would end up wasting a colossal amount of violet sun stones. The damages would be huge.

For a time, no one offered a price for this girl. Lin Ming hesitated for a moment but also remained silent. This little girl in front of him was very lovable and cute. She was 11 years old and had a very naïve and cherubic face.

Her eyes were as bright as spring water, and her nose was tiny, with rich lips and red cheeks that seemed as if water would come out if they were pinched.

However, regardless of whether or not this little girl could cultivate, the key problem was that Lin Ming was traveling far and wide, and it was inconvenient for him to bring a little girl around with him.

It was best if this little girl entered some large sect that was interested in training her. That would be her good fortune. If she stayed with him, that would only delay her and him.

“Miss Mo, have you heard about this sort of special physique before?” Lin Ming asked with a true essence sound transmission.

Mo Eversnow shook her head. “I’ve never heard of this type of physique before. But, for some reason I feel inexplicably touched by this little girl. It’s just that we have many matters that we have to handle right now and we’re wandering about, so leading this little girl will only cause trouble for all of us. Let’s not complicate matters even more.

As Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow were speaking, Mister Luo introduced the last boy. He also had a special type of physique.

If this sort of child was bought by a large sect and trained as a core disciple, he would definitely have great achievements in the future.

“Very well, we will first begin bidding with this young woman with a chaotic yin body. The base price is 30 million!” Madame Luo chuckled as she spoke, tracing the young woman’s face. The young woman forced a smile. Although this was a destiny that she chose herself, now that she was being sold here publicly, she actually felt somewhat humiliated.

“40 million!” The fork-bearded youth was the first to call out a price. His face was filled with excitement. He was happy that he wasn’t too impulsive just now and didn’t struggle with Lin Ming for that bone slip. This chaotic yin woman’s body was extremely valuable. If he trained her then it would be highly beneficial to his own cultivation.

“50 million!” Another person bid. Young Master Sun wasn’t the only one who cultivated demonic path cultivation methods.

“55 million!” The fork-bearded youth’s lips twitched as he rose the price yet again. He shot a glance at Lin Ming in the meantime, his eyes containing a warning. It was clear that he was telling Lin Ming to back off from this chaotic yin girl.

Lin Ming didn’t bother paying attention to him. There wasn’t any meaning to purchasing this girl, and Lin Ming didn’t train in dual cultivation methods so this woman wouldn’t be willing to go with him to begin with.

The price soon jumped to 65 million. And at this time, a surprising voice came ringing from outside –

“I’ll buy her, 100 million!”

This voice contained an overbearing intent. As the words still echoed through the hall, the Space Laws fluctuated and a space door appeared in front of everyone. A tall and muscular youth in red armor strode out.

This young man was tall and brawny. His thickly corded muscles seemed as if they would burst out from his armor.

As the young elites saw this person appear, all of them paused for a moment. It was clear that they were afraid of this young man.

As for that fork-bearded youth who was just now thinking of obtaining the chaotic yin woman at all costs, he opened his mouth several times but didn't speak. He shook his head, a bitter expression on his face. He acknowledged his own bad luck.

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes, sizing this person up. This youth was only at the early Divine Sea realm.

"Who's that?" Lin Ming asked River Feather with a true essence sound transmission.

"That's Yue Ironrock. He's a direct descendant of the Yue Family, the third greatest influence of Immemorial Imperial City, second only to the two Great World King level Holy Lands that have bases here. Don't look at his early Divine Sea realm cultivation; his combat strength is ridiculously powerful. We are simply not his match at all. Moreover..." As River Feather spoke to here, he took a deep breath and said, "He dual cultivates in body and energy."

"Oh?" Lin Ming was a bit startled at hearing this. There was an extremely small number of martial artists in the Divine Realm who chose to dual cultivate body and energy. Those who dared to do so were naturally some of the proudest and greatest geniuses of their generation!

Of course, most of those that chose dual cultivating body and energy wouldn't be like Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow, taking the opening of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace as their true goal. These martial artists would mostly attempt to open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. After all, they liked their own bodies being tough.

"This fellow is a monstrous genius. He was born over 100 years ago, but he stayed in an accelerated space-time distortion for over 60 years and just recently came out. The result of that is that he's only 30 some years old, and now he just manages to bump into our generation, so we are being suppressed to death by him. Brother Lin, it's best if you don't come into conflict with him. If he likes something then allow him to have it. Otherwise, those who offend him will end up miserable. Their fate… aiya, this is truly bad luck. I can't believe he would also come to this trade fair."

River Feather said, his voice thick with unhappiness. Lin Ming was startled. He had stayed in an accelerated space-time distortion for over 60 years?

If the flow of time could be slowed down, it could naturally be sped up. Ordinarily, a person would enter a time enchantment to cultivate and extend their time within. But, this Yue Ironrock actually did the opposite and compressed time instead. Was there some special meaning in doing so?

Lin Ming couldn't help but wonder this. He used a true essence sound transmission to ask Mo Eversnow this question.

Mo Eversnow said, "It should be because he was waiting for some matter. There are times when people will be aiming at a grand event meant for geniuses. For instance, the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial you participated in in the past limits participants by age. It seems that in Immemorial Imperial City or the Yue Family, there will be something occurring soon…"

"I see…" Lin Ming didn't care any further. River Feather's estimation was also correct. As Yue Ironrock quoted a price, all of those martial artists that were budding with excitement remained silent.

Whether it was in wealth or background, all of them were inferior to Yue Ironrock. In strength and talent, they simply didn't have the qualifications to struggle with Yue Ironrock. To these young elites, talent was often the core factor for their confidence.

"Hahahaha, Young Master Yue is truly magnanimous!"

Madame Luo brightly smiled. 100 million far surpassed her original estimates. As for that little girl who ate violet sun crystals that no one offered a price for, she no longer cared about her either.

Then, up next was that little boy with the special physique. He was bought by someone else for 10 million.

After that, it was only the little girl remaining. She remained huddled in her corner of the cage, her arms clasped around her knees as she curled up into a ball. Her eyes were filled with fear and timidity as she scanned the crowd. Confusion marred her face, making those who saw her take pity on her.

As someone that didn't have any talent for cultivation, or at least had an unclear talent for cultivation, regardless of how lovable or cute this little girl was, she wasn't of any use to a martial artist. If one was only lusting for beauty then a martial artist could easily establish a harem of 3000 women. A single violet sun stone could purchase a hundred mortal women.

Then, Madame Luo and Mister Luo took out several more treasures. However, they weren't able to sell anything for the high price of 100 million anymore.

After putting away the things that no one cared about, Madame Luo chuckled and softly said, "Alright, that is the end of our gang's goods being sold. If any of our guests have anything valuable or something that they are seeking then feel free to speak, we will try to satisfy you to the greatest extent.

"Oh, everyone may also privately speak and exchange items."

As Madame Luo and Mister Luo spoke, many people, including that fork-bearded youth, were frustrated. As they saw the chaotic yin girl that was most suited for them being scooped up by someone else, they didn't like the taste of that at all.

They could only take out some goods they didn't want and put them forth on the table, waiting to see if any of the other young elites wanted to exchange with them.

At this time, Lin Ming stood up and cupped his fists across his chest. "Everyone, I have something I would like to purchase, If you have it then the price is not a problem."

As Lin Ming spoke, everyone’s eyes gathered onto him. The scene of him bidding 8.5 million violet sun stones for that incomplete bone slip was still vivid in their memories. If Lin Ming said that price wasn’t a problem, that naturally meant that he was extremely wealthy.

“What sort of thing?” Yue Ironrock lazily asked as he stroked his chin.

“What I am searching for is a violet sun stone embryo!” Lin Ming feared that these people wouldn’t know about it, thus he described the special characteristics of the violet sun stone embryo again. This left all of the martial artists at a loss. This was obviously the first time they had heard of such a thing. Even Madame Luo and Mister Luo shook their heads, never having heard of any news about such a treasure.

As Lin Ming saw this scene, even though he hadn’t entertained much hope from the start, he was slightly disappointed. It seemed that wanting to obtain a violet sun stone embryo would be very difficult, even in Immemorial Imperial City.

Lin Ming sighed and shook his head before sitting back down. But for better or worse he had still obtained a bone slip from this trade fair, so it wasn’t a complete waste of his time.

And just as Lin Ming’s hopes had fallen, the voice of that young girl sounded out from her little corner in the cage. “That… that thing… I… I might… know about it…”

As she spoke, Lin Ming’s eyes immediately fell into the corner of the hall where the little girl was curled up in her cage.

Chapter 1140 – The Mysterious Little Girl

Chapter 1140 – The Mysterious Little Girl

…

…

…

It wasn't just Lin Ming, but everyone's eyes turned to the little girl. Upon being looked at by so many powerhouses, especially since many of them had sharp eyes, the little girl was immediately frightened. She gulped and then hesitated for a moment, a bit of fear in her expression as she nodded and said, "I… I… I do have some impressions…"

"Where?" Lin Ming had some doubts. How could such a little girl that didn't even have the strength to grab a chicken know about such a rare object when even people like Mister Luo and Madame Luo didn't?

Moreover, could she really tell just from the description of the violet sun stone embryo he gave? How much worldly experience could a 11-12 year old little girl possibly have?

This simply wasn't explainable at all.

When Lin Ming thought of this, the other guests also did too. Mister Luo narrowed his eyes at the little girl, his fingers gently drumming against the table as he asked, "How could you possibly know?"

"Hehe, good little children should be nice and obedient and also not lie!" Madame Luo laughed. Although her expression was soft, her tone contained a chilling taste that aroused fear. This woman's late Divine Sea cultivation was simply too oppressive to this little girl. Moreover, this little girl clearly feared Madame Luo a great deal. As she heard Madame Luo speak, the little girl shrunk her neck back, not daring to speak anymore.

Lin Ming stood up, “There’s no need to be afraid. It doesn’t matter if what you say is wrong.”

Lin Ming tried to make his tone as comforting and soft as possible, but this was an aspect of his life that he truly lacked talent in. The little girl still appeared very nervous.

“I… I…” The little girl looked at Lin Ming and tightly grasped her little fists together, as if she were making a great and courageous decision. She bit her lips, saying, “I… I have a request I would like to ask of this big brother…”

“Mm, speak. I can promise you anything within my power.”

“I hope that…” The little girl’s voice trembled as she spoke to here. She seemed somewhat afraid, but also excited. She looked towards Madame Luo and Mister Luo with dread in her eyes and her complexion paled. She gripped her fists for several breaths of time, gathering her strength before finally saying loud and clear, “I hope that big brother can bring me out of here, and I will tell big brother where that thing is!”

Speaking these words seemed to exhaust all of the little girl’s strength. She was panting and there wasn’t the least bit of redness remaining in her round face.

And as these words came out, Mister Luo’s complexion darkened. As for Madame Luo, she was still gently smiling, but as this smile fell into the eyes of that little girl, it made her terrified.

“What are you trying to say Fishy, isn’t big sister here always so kind to you?”

Madame Luo’s words were tactful, but Lin Ming frowned. It seemed that this little girl called Fishy, and that young boy who was also sold, hadn’t experienced many good days in this underground gang influence. It seemed that his previous thoughts had been too simple.

In fact, it was also unknown how those who bought them would treat them in the future. This was the sorrow of the weak. They could only allow themselves to be caught in the ebb and flow of fate.

As Madame Luo asked this question, the little girl was clearly jittery. However, she seemed to be a bit stubborn. She bit her lips, not speaking.

It was clear what was happening. An 11-12 year old little girl was one of the purest and most naïve characters you could find. They would be willing to follow whoever treated them with kindness and respect. If this little Fishy had experienced good days in this underground influence then she wouldn't have had the courage to risk the danger of being beaten and ask Lin Ming to take her away.

Moreover, the little girl clearly feared Mister Luo and Madame Luo. This also proved just how tragic her situation must have been. It seemed that this gentle and beautiful Madame Luo was actually a cruel-hearted snake in disguise. Before, this little girl must have found it distressing that no one was willing to buy her!

"Lin Ming, bring her away." Mo Eversnow suddenly said. For some inexplicable reason, she originally had warm feelings towards this little girl, and now that she knew her situation, even if this little girl didn't know of the violet sun stone embryo, she would still want Lin Ming to take her away.

"Mm, even if you didn't tell me, that's also what I was planning on doing." Lin Ming said. He didn't ask how that little girl knew the location of a violet sun stone embryo. Instead, he turned to that Mister Luo and said, "Mister Luo, before you said that you would sell this little girl for 2 million violet sun stones? How about this, I will directly buy her for 20 million."

20 million. That was an immediate 10x increase in price.

Madame Luo and Mister Luo's eyes widened. They looked at each other, a sheen in their eyes.

"This little brother is surnamed Lin, right… haha, Brother Lin, I would want to sell her to you, but… that was then and this is now! I was just thinking about how special this Fishy's physique was. If she could eat violet sun stones to live, then wouldn't she really know where a violet sun stone embryo could be found? Or perhaps… could it be that she herself is a violet sun stone embryo?”

As Mister Luo spoke, all of the heroic young elites present perked up. They immediately began talking. It seems that what this Mister Luo said was truly reasonable!

But as for that little girl, she instantly paled to a shade whiter than death. Her fingers trembled and her voice shivered, “I… I… I’m not…”

“Hahaha!” Mister Luo laughed out loud. Madame Luo also had a very happy expression. “Who would have thought this was possible? This little girl was originally a useless little piece of garbage that couldn’t do anything but eat violet sun stones, yet now she turns out to be a treasure. Is anyone interested in bidding on her?”

As Madame Luo spoke, she looked at all the other heroic young elites present, charmingly smiling at all of them.

Lin Ming’s complexion turned dreary. He gripped his fists but held himself down. As a newcomer to Immemorial Imperial City, he would try to hold back as much as he could.

“Interesting! How interesting! If she is truly a violet sun stone embryo then she’ll be excellent if used for alchemy!” Yue Ironrock shouted as he rubbed his chin. He recklessly sized up little Fishy as she was huddled up in the corner of her cage. Fishy was scared so badly that her entire body shook and tears streamed down her cheeks. She sobbed, “I’m not… I’m not…”

“Hehe, who knows whether or not you are, once I buy you and investigate I’ll find out! 30 million!” Yue Ironrock stretched out three fingers and casually tossed out this price. Listening to his tone, it was evident that 30 million was just chump change to him. He could easily increase the price by several times.

As the other heroic young elites heard Yue Ironrock put out a bid, all of them gave up any thoughts of bidding against him.

The Yue Family was famous for being disgustingly rich.

Moreover, Yue Ironrock's talent was simply far too splendid. Not to mention his dual body and energy cultivation, but as an early Divine Sea martial artist he could easily sweep away any mid and late Divine Sea masters present, and all of them were also outstanding juniors of their generation.

Since Yue Ironrock wanted to buy this little girl, all of them could only look on helplessly.

"40 million!" Lin Ming coldly said.

Yue Ironrock was slightly startled. He looked at Lin Ming with some interest and said, "Yo! You're a rich fat cow, right? Heh, you want to compare wealth with me? It's like you want to debate with a World King about the Heavenly Dao. I'm about to laugh to death here! I want to see just how far you can follow me, hahaha!"

"Double the price, 80 million!" Yue Ironrock proudly said.

As Mister Luo and Madame Luo saw Lin Ming and Yue Ironrock caught up in a bidding war, both of them were happier than blooming flowers.

That fork-bearded youth who was outbid on the bone shard by Lin Ming also laughed. Young fellow, you rolled over me with resources before, now I want to see just how you'll suffer!

In truth, Yue Ironrock had also rolled over the fork-bearded youth before this. But in the opinion of the fork-bearded youth, Yue Ironrock was a junior in Immemorial Imperial City who was only inferior to the core disciples of the two Great World King level Holy Lands. Thus, being oppressed by him was what should happen. After all, he himself had oppressed many other of his peers.

He could be crushed by Yue Ironrock and not lose face. But if he were beaten by Lin Ming, he wouldn't be able to come to terms with that. This was simply the psychology of these people.

He was eager to stir up chaos and said, “Lin Ming, I’m rooting for you. Kick the price up a few times, haha.”

“I have no need for you to worry about me.” Lin Ming coldly glanced at the fork-bearded youth, simply disinclined to deal with such a character. He looked back at Yue Ironrock and chillingly said, “Double the price, 160 million!”

Lin Ming’s words were cold and steady to the point that there wasn’t a single fluctuation at all. He calmly tossed out a figure of 160 million violet sun stones as if it were trash.

These words caused Yue Ironrock to flush red with anger!

He originally had a mental limit of 150 million for this little girl; he wasn’t willing to put forth much more. After all, his interest was only piqued when Mister Luo said that this little girl might be a violet sun stone embryo. As for what that actually was, he had no idea.

Once he returned with her, the chances of finding nothing special at all were also very high!

Although he originally put on an overweening and insufferably arrogant act, the truth was that he wasn’t an idiot that tossed out money like water. But, as he saw Lin Ming want to bid against him, he wanted to crush Lin Ming’s mindset and momentum, thus he put on an appearance that he didn’t care about violet sun stones so that Lin Ming would give up wanting to struggle with him.

But now Lin Ming had called out a bid of 160 million. This surpassed Yue Ironrock’s original mental limit by 10 million!

This caused Yue Ironrock to feel regretful. But now he had already tossed out his ruthless words and he naturally couldn’t admit that he was in the wrong. Otherwise, how could he still mix in any of the circles of Immemorial Imperial City in the future? If news of this spread out then others would laugh at him and his reputation would also suffer.

“200 million!”

Yue Ironrock grit his teeth, spitting out his bottom limit. He had just put forth 100 million to buy that chaotic yin physique girl, and now he had to put forth another 200 million. How could he remain calm?

"Double the price, 400 million."

Lin Ming nearly instantly responded to Yue Ironrock's offer without batting an eyelid. Moreover, he used Yue Ironrock's own words to counterattack him!

Yue Ironrock's face turned blue. Let alone doubling 400 million, he couldn't even double 160 million!

Mister Luo and Madame Luo were naturally extremely overjoyed by the sudden turn of events. Mister Luo never imagined that randomly speaking some guesses in order to enhance the price of the little girl would have such a wondrous effect.

That was 300 million! And it seemed as if it would rise even further!

Yue Ironrock wouldn't be able to withstand this!

Although the Yue Family was indeed wealthy, they were also similar to the Ancient Phoenix Clan. During the trip into the God Beast Mystic Realm, the Ancient Phoenix Clan had made a large investment of one billion violet sun stones, and that was an investment from the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters. As for Yue Ironrock, he was just a junior of the Yue Family.

Chapter 1141 – To Strike A Stone With An Egg

Chapter 1141 – To Strike A Stone With An Egg

…

…

…

The situation had reached a deadlock. Yue Ironrock was unable to step down and matters could explode at any moment. One didn't need eyes to see that Yue Ironrock had already been ruined. In terms of wealth, he had been oppressed by Lin Ming!

"This brat, could he have had some fortuitous encounter and picked up some massive treasure?"

Yue Ironrock's thoughts raced. And at this time, a true essence sound transmission sounded out in his ears, coming from Mister Luo.

"Young Master Yue, it looks like we really ran into an idiot this time. That boy clearly wants that little girl no matter what. Whether he is some fool who is overcome by sympathy or because he really desires that violet sun stone embryo, this is an extremely rare opportunity to meet such a dumb and rich brat. How about we knock him down a notch? What do you say?"

"Mm?" Yue Ironrock was startled and then immediately understood. That Mister Luo wanted him to join forces and put out a fake price.

Putting out a false price wasn't easy. Moreover, this was a matter that involved his face. If Lin Ming put out an incredibly high price then he could easily withdraw and then taunt Lin Ming with several words, letting him know that he was only playing him. If this happened, then not only would he regain any face he lost, but he would also be able to maliciously kick Lin Ming into a trap. This was something that he would love to do.

“Fine! However, I want 30% of the extra money.”

“Well… okay.” Mister Luo hesitated for a moment before agreeing.

“Young Master Luo, I think that this brat’s limit should be 700-800 million. This is a once in a thousand year chance. Young Master Luo should try to raise the price as high as possible. If we don’t kick him down then that would truly be an injustice to him.”

Mister Luo and Yue Ironrock spoke extremely quickly with true essence sound transmissions. Although Mo Eversnow was watching all of this from within the Magic Cube, it was impossible for her to hear true essence sound transmissions. But, ever since becoming a soul force, her soul sense had become extremely sharp. Although she could faintly see fluctuations of true essence, that was only a slight awareness that she couldn’t confirm.

At this time, Yue Ironrock said, “Lin Ming, since you want to fight with me then so be it! I will show you today just how wealthy my Yue Family is!”

“350 million!”

It was already bizarre for the price to reach this level. This type of wealth was not something that a junior disciple should possess, much less for a little girl who didn’t have any known practical use or value yet.

Lin Ming’s eyes turned cold. He desolately said, “400 million!”

Yue Ironrock seemed to hesitate for a moment then sneered, “How brave. Let me see just how far you can follow me! 500 million!”

Lin Ming’s eyebrow arched upwards. He was originally intending to call out 600, million but he didn’t say anything. He had certainly seen the sudden change in Yue Ironrock’s attitude. If he thought about it there was definitely some problem here.

“Lin Ming, they’re joining together to play you.” Mo Eversnow said to Lin Ming.

“I felt it.”

Lin Ming slowly gripped his fists together. After all, this was the strange and unfamiliar Immemorial Imperial City and he had repeatedly shown forbearance. He had put forth a price of 300 million but now these people tried to take him as a fool and bully him around. If he allowed himself to be freely butchered like this then he really would be a fool!

“How is it? Can’t follow me? How weak! Hahaha! Weren’t you so rampant just now and doubled the price twice? How come you don’t have the guts to double the price again? If you dared to do that I would immediately give her to you, but… do you have this courage? Hehe, since you dare to show off in front of me then you might as well admit defeat, tuck your tail between your legs and scurry off back to the hole you came from!”

Yue Ironrock saw that Lin Ming was hesitating in putting forth a higher bid and tried to goad him to bid once more. He had already decided that no matter what price Lin Ming put forth, he would withdraw from this bidding war and have Lin Ming be played.

Lin Ming sneered upon hearing Yue Ironrock’s words. His eyes revealed contempt as he said, “How shameless, to think someone as shameless as you exists! 500 million? As if you could take that out? You want to gather together to play me, treating me like a fool!”

Lin Ming directly cut to the point and touched his spatial ring.

Yue Ironrock’s complexion changed as anger swelled within him. However, he was stopped by Mister Luo. Mister Luo said to him with a true essence sound transmission, “Young Master Yue, don’t be angry! Remember, harmony brings wealth!”

Mister Luo then turned to Lin Ming and said, “Lin Ming, you can eat whatever you want but you can’t say whatever you wish. Our gang has always been upright and honorable in our business dealings! Just what do you intend by slandering us?”

As he spoke to here, he shot a glance at the spatial ring on Lin Ming's right hand. He sneered, "What, did you want to fight? You can try! But I guarantee you that you will not be able to leave here! This is my domain and I uphold the rules here. In this trade fair, the prices are always high! If you want to buy something then you must call out the price. Young Master Yue has already bid 500 million. If you have money then you can add on another 100 million and perhaps this little girl will be yours."

Mister Luo had already discovered that the violet sun stone embryo was extremely important to Lin Ming and had seized on this weakness. He didn't believe that Lin Ming would be able to do anything to him. After all, this was his territory and Lin Ming only had a Ninefall cultivation. No matter how great his background was, it was impossible for a strong dragon to suppress a snake in its haunt; powerful outsiders simply couldn't suppress local gangsters, so what could Lin Ming do? No matter where people were, they would always suppress outsiders. Moreover, this matter involved Yue Ironrock and that meant he would have the support of the Yue Family, so this Mister Luo didn't fear Lin Ming at all.

At this time, Lin Ming revealed a cold smile. His words contained a thick killing intent as he said, "Since that's the case, let me fulfill your hopes!"

Lin Ming suddenly swiped his spatial ring; the Phoenix Blood Spear flourished in the air!

Bang!

With a loud explosion, the chair behind Lin Ming was crushed by a current of true essence!

Xiu!

Lin Ming's spear thrust out, stabbing towards Mister Luo's forehead!

"You blind and reckless brat! You are seeking your own death!"

Mister Luo was originally a bit cautious of the Holy Land level influence that might exist behind Lin Ming, but he never thought that Lin Ming would suddenly attack him here. If he dared to attack an early Divine Transformation martial artist then there really wouldn't be anyone who could save him! This was because once Lin Ming attacked, they would occupy the moral superiority. Even if Lin Ming had the full support of a Holy Land behind him, it was impossible for them to pursue this matter.

"Haha, if you want to then no one can save you!" Yue Ironrock laughed. His right foot stepped forwards and the ground beneath him exploded. He had already acted ahead of this Mister Luo and punched out towards Lin Ming!

After being crushed by Lin Ming in terms of wealth, he had already suppressed the raging fires in his heart until now. Although he had put up a fake price to regain some face later, there were still some sharp and discerning people that were able to see through the little show he and Mister Luo had put on. If they really compared wealth then he was far inferior to Lin Ming. Just what sort of arrogant person was Yue Ironrock? It was impossible for him to remain happy after being suppressed by an outsider like this. He was hoping to find some sort of turning point to regain his momentum, and now Lin Ming had pulled out his spear, an action he was all too happy to see.

Yue Ironrock didn't even use a weapon. He relied on just his physical body to punch out. At the same time,he opened the first four of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, causing his physical strength to shoot up. When combined with his inner true essence, he was like a wild tiger from a mountain, seething with killing intent!

With a series of banging sounds, all of the furniture in the hall was completely crushed by Yue Ironrock's fist wind!

As Lin Ming stabbed at Mister Luo, Yue Ironrock had actually attacked him from the right side. Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light. Not only did he not stop his spear attack, but he also released a hand and punched out at Yue Ironrock!

At the same time that he attacked Mister Luo, he also dared to divide his focus and attack Yue Ironrock!

This shocked all of the martial artists present. Lin Ming only had a ninth stage Life Destruction cultivation and Yue Ironrock was a top early Divine Sea genius. Although that Mister Luo was not some peerless genius, for better or worse he was still an early Divine Transformation master. He surpassed Lin Ming by an entire boundary!

In this case, Lin Ming simultaneously attacked two people! What sort of bravado was this!

Moreover, the way he attacked Yue Ironrock was… fist to fist!

He didn't use a weapon but only relied on his physical body to meet Yue Ironrock in a head-on contest of strength. But everyone present knew that Yue Ironrock was a dual cultivation system master; his body was incomparably hard!

Yue Ironrock demonically grinned, "A little firefly dares to compete against the splendor of the moon. Let me crush you into paste! Fist Ruling the World!"

What Yue Ironrock used was a martial skill that combined both body and energy. His fist became bright like a shining sun, glowing with endless golden light!

At this time, Lin Ming roared out. All six gates opened within him, the Heretical God Force erupted, and the blood of the Ancient Phoenix combusted!

Celestial Tyrant Manual – Hundred Layered Waves!

Ka ka ka!

Lin Ming's fist began to emit explosive crackling sounds. His skeleton had 72 dragon bone relics fused into it! It was harder than divine metal!

In a fist to fist collision, Lin Ming's fist smashed into Yue Ironrock's like this!

With a loud cracking sound, a completely unexpected event occurred. Yue Ironrock's fist, wrist, and all the bones within them were directly pulverized by Lin Ming's fist!

For ordinary human bones to compete with Lin Ming's dragon bone relic-infused bones – the results could be imagined! Moreover, this person still lacked two gates compared to Lin Ming, the Gate of Opening and the Gate of View!

As for Lin Ming's fist smashing into Yue Ironrock's fist, it was like an iron hammer pounding against a tomato!

Half shattered bones stabbed out from Yue Ironrock's torn skin. His fist had become a pile of mush. Shock filled his face. And, as Lin Ming crushed past Yue Ironrock's fist, his fist wind continued forwards and struck Yue Ironrock's chest. The nearly 20 million jin eruption of strength had increased by several times through the support of the Hundred Layered Waves!

In that instant, Yue Ironrock felt as if a mountain had crashed into his chest. He emitted a miserable cry and flew backwards, crashing against the far wall. The stone building that was supported by an array formation began to collapse!

And at this time, Lin Ming's attack still hadn't finished. His Phoenix Blood Spear pierced towards Mister Luo as before!

The sudden change had completely surpassed everyone's expectations. All of the young elites present were dumbfounded!

Yue Ironrock, someone who trained in the body transformation technique and had a body as tough as steel, actually suffered such a miserable fate after meeting Lin Ming in a head-on battle of toughness. In front of Lin Ming, Yue Ironrock's body transformation technique was nothing at all. It was like using an egg to strike a stone!

"This... how could this happen? Does Lin Ming also dual cultivate in body and energy? Moreover, his dual body and energy cultivation is impossibly fierce!"

The many young elites present didn’t have time to think much on this, because at this time, Lin Ming’s Phoenix Blood Spear had already pierced towards that Mister Luo!

Chapter 1142 – Intimidating All Present

Chapter 1142 – Intimidating All Present

…

…

…

This Mister Luo was at the Divine Transformation realm!

Lin Ming was only at the ninth stage of Life Destruction!

From Divine Transformation to the ninth stage of Life Destruction, that was a disparity of over a large boundary! Even if Mister Luo wasn't some earth-shaking genius, his strength still surpassed some of those lesser known Divine Transformation martial artists from small sects. It was already astonishing that Lin Ming's fist had managed to severely wound Yue Ironrock, but compared to that, Lin Ming attacking Mister Luo was absolutely mind-boggling.

This was a Ninefall war god transformation!

"Brat, do you really think you are invincible!?" Mister Luo spat out as he clenched his jaws. Even so, he didn't dare to look down on Lin Ming at all. Lin Ming had managed to severely wound Yue Ironrock. Although this was partly because Yue Ironrock had underestimated Lin Ming, Lin Ming was also attacking two of them at the same time and that counterattack had merely been a casual punch.

The difference in strength was clear!

Mister Luo drew backwards and took out a five foot long saber from his spatial ring. At the same time, his entire body began to blaze with black flames. These black flames condensed behind Mister Luo, forming the phantom of a hydra.

This hydra was thicker than a water barrel and every head was fierce and lifelike. The scales that covered the hydra heads were the size of bowls and its long poisonous teeth shined with a sharp and cold light, surging with reckless killing intent.

It was clear that this Mister Luo was part of the Hydra Clan. In using the power of his bloodline, he was already giving this his everything!

Hissss –

After this hydra appeared, all nine of its heads hurtled towards Lin Ming!

At this time, what Lin Ming faced didn't seem like a phantom formed from energy, but a true and living ancient great hydra!

"Hydra bloodline? This bloodline is really too cheap!" Lin Ming sneered. When Lin Ming was at the Sky Spill Continent, before he had killed Yang Yun, his path had crossed with Whitedemon's. Whitedemon had come from the Divine Realm and had been suppressed and locked within the Sea of Miracles. He too had the Hydra bloodline. It seemed that this Hydra bloodline was quite common in the Divine Realm.

"A mere nine-headed worm wants to contend with the glory of a True Dragon?"

Lin Ming cried out, his entire body emitting crackling noises. These popping sounds gathered together, echoing, resonating until they formed the keening cry of a dragon, directly impacting through the world. And behind Lin Ming, the phantom of an Azure Dragon formed!

The Azure Dragon was much smaller than the hydra behind Mister Luo, but the pressure it gave off was unbelievable, a completely different level!

Lin Ming had purposefully revealed the power of his dragon blood. After absorbing the dragon marrow, although Lin Ming didn't possess a perfect Ancient Dragon bloodline, this was only because his bloodline was lacking in quantity. In terms of quality, the power of Lin Ming's bloodline far surpassed the Ancient Dragon Clan's Dragon One!

A true God Beast, an ancient Azure Dragon, was inherently suppressive to those of the Hydra bloodline. Moreover, as Lin Ming released the power of the Azure Dragon bloodline he also released the grandmist space. As the two strengths superimposed on each other, the hydra phantom that hurtled towards Lin Ming rapidly weakened!

Lin Ming opened the Heretical God Force. True essence surged from his body, flowing into the Phoenix Blood Spear. At that moment, the Phoenix Blood Spear released an ear-piercing screech as the artifact spirit slumbering within it was awakened!

Although this was an incomplete elementary artifact spirit, it was still an incomparably rare and precious source artifact spirit. It wasn't something that a normal false artifact spirit could compare with!

Even if the Phoenix Blood Spear had just grown into a spirit artifact, it was already an existence that surpassed a peak low-grade spirit artifact!

Lin Ming's full force attack was combined with the spirit artifact level Phoenix Blood Spear! In that instant, Lin Ming's striking power rose dramatically. Wherever the spear light went, space would tremble. The minor dimension that this trade fair was located in wasn't able to withstand the sharp energy of the Phoenix Blood Spear. After all, an artificial minor dimension was less stable than the space of the Divine Realm.

Hiss – !

The gigantic hydra phantom was twisted apart by the Phoenix Blood Spear. The hydra wailed in pain and horror. Lin Ming's spear light continued forth with unstoppable strength, completely annihilating that hydra phantom and continuing to stab towards Mister Luo!

Mister Luo's complexion completely changed. He opened his mouth and spat out a foot long black snake, as thick as a thumb. After that, Mister Luo spat out black flames that enveloped him, even as black scales wrapped around his cheeks and body.

Mister Luo was still a Divine Transformation powerhouse and thus much stronger than Yue Ironrock. By using his bloodline power as a catalyst, the power of the black flames he emitted was no joke. In the legends, every head of a hydra could spit out a different substance, such as demonic flames, freezing ice, venom, and so forth. This caused the Hydra Clan to divide into nine branches and this Mister Luo just happened to be part of the Demonic Flame Branch.

These black demonic flames were able to scorch away even true essence. At that time when the Phoenix Blood Spear thrust into the black demonic flames, the black demonic flames seemed to pervasively penetrate the spear light as if it possessed a mind of its own, seeking every possible weakness.

Chi chi chi!

The spear light and black flames smashed into each other, emitting a harsh grating sound!

"That... is that... a spirit artifact!?"

It wasn't known just who cried out in alarm in the crowd. The biggest difference between a spirit artifact and a saint artifact was that a spirit artifact had an intelligence of its own. Ordinarily a saint artifact would only be controlled by the martial artist; the weapon itself didn't have the ability to control energy. But, a spirit artifact could fight in tandem with the martial artist to attack. This was just like the difference between a person and a puppet, and a person with a live partner. This was especially true if a martial artist was able to become one with their spirit artifact and achieve a heart-to-heart thread of communication. At that time they would be no different from allies in battle, fighting side-by-side.

“Spirit artifact!? That is a weapon that only a Divine Lord or at least a middle or late Divine Transformation genius can use. How could Lin Ming control one at the Life Destruction realm?”

To galvanize a spirit artifact, one needed the power of a world. In other words, one needed to be a Divine Lord realm powerhouse! But, there were also a small number of Divine Transformation realm masters that could use spirit artifacts, and all of them were bound to be top geniuses!

Just as that man cried out in alarm, his voice was immediately drowned out by the maddening explosion!

Bang!

A brilliant light flashed throughout the entire hall. The black flames were forcefully torn apart and the spear light also faded away. Mister Luo’s forehead was covered in sweat. He quickly tried to summon true essence for another attack, but Lin Ming’s second attack had already arrived!

“Phoenix Blood Spear – Blue Lotus Flame Dance!”

In that moment, a brilliant and captivating blue lotus bloomed behind Lin Ming – this was the Blue Lotus Domain. With every step Lin Ming took, a lotus flower would blossom beneath his foot. This was the fusion of the first three level Concepts of the Fire Laws, and with even the fourth level Concept fused in too.

With the Blue Lotus Flame Dance displayed through the spirit artifact level Phoenix Blood Spear, the power of this attack increased by yet another level!

“You bastard!”

In a rush, Mister Luo chopped down with his saber. But just as he did, he felt as if his hands were bound by something strange, like invisible ropes were tied around his wrists.

‘This is… a world of will! A battle spirit projection!’

Mister Luo suddenly released his divine sense and ‘saw’ that there were countless strands of gold light binding his hands together!

“Large success gold level battle spirit!?”

Mister Luo was shocked, nearly losing his composure. He tried to force open the will tentacles, but in that brief moment of delay, he no longer had time to evade Lin Ming’s Phoenix Blood Spear. He could only withstand it with his black flames.

Peng!

The black fire burst apart. Before the unstoppable spear light, the demonic flames only lasted for a few blinks of an eye before collapsing. Lin Ming’s spear pierced the right side of Mister Luo’s chest, running straight through!

“Ahhh!”

Mister Luo pitifully cried out as blood splashed into the air!

“This… this…”

All of the other martial artists were left bewildered with sweaty palms. What kind of ridiculously fierce combat strength was this? This was simply a monstrous talent!

In particular, River Feather, who had brought Lin Ming here, had his mouth hanging open. He was simply unable to gather himself. He had originally thought of winning Lin Ming over to his side to help him compete for the position of successor to the River Family’s house head, but now he felt as if all his ideas had simply been laughable.

Lin Ming’s combat strength was not something that an ordinary Holy Land level family could produce! Even a top Holy Land wouldn’t be able to accomplish this. Lin Ming was a genius that only a World King level Holy Land could produce!

Ninefall war god transformation – what sort of concept was that? It was simply unimaginable!

River Feather looked at Lin Ming's weapon, the Phoenix Blood Spear, once more. That was an extremely high quality spirit artifact!

It had to be known that to these peak geniuses, a spirit artifact was precious but not impossible to obtain. As long as they cultivated to the late Divine Transformation realm, their families would be able to forge or hand down a low-grade spirit artifact for them. But, Lin Ming's spirit artifact was clearly different!

In order to stimulate a spirit artifact to movement, one needed the world power that was bred within a martial artist's inner world. By just depending on true essence alone, it was extremely difficult to do this. This was because world power was in simpler terms all the power that could exist in a world. There was true essence, the power of life, pure heaven and earth origin energy, and the faith energy of all living beings!

Only by combining all these various types of power was one able to activate a spirit weapon. But Lin Ming was just a Ninefall martial artist who had only formed a world seed, so how could he possibly produce world power?

If he could control the Phoenix Blood Spear, that only left one possibility, and that was that Lin Ming was interlinked with his Phoenix Blood Spear in their minds and hearts and it willingly allowed Lin Ming to use it.

The artifact spirit of this spirit artifact had an extremely high chance of being a source artifact spirit. That meant that it was an artifact spirit bred by the weapon itself!

The growth of the artifact spirit would also enhance the quality of the spirit artifact. In truth, for the physical body of a spirit artifact alone, as long as one fused in various types of rare and heavenly materials, it was possible to increase the physical quality. The only extremely difficult part was growing the artifact spirit itself!

A spirit artifact that could constantly grow and be enhanced was far different from other spirit artifacts that were set in rank once they were forged. There was no way of comparing them at all.

To match a junior disciple with a spirit artifact that had its own source artifact spirit, just what kind of extravagant luxury was that! Even an ordinary World King level Holy Land wouldn't have the courage to do so!

When River Feather combined this with the scene of Lin Ming tossing out several hundred million violet sun stones to purchase that little girl, he was finally aware that he had far underestimated Lin Ming's background!

If he was just rich, then it was possible that he might have stumbled across some great lucky chance and unearthed some treasure.

But, a true spirit artifact with its own source artifact spirit that could communicate as one was impossible to obtain through lucky chances alone. This was because a spirit artifact must be picked up from someone else, thus it was impossible to have a high fusion compatibility, so it should have been impossible for Lin Ming to use it. The only reasonable explanation was if the sect master of a large and grand sect helped Lin Ming personally forge such a weapon with countless heavenly materials!

And finally, there was also Lin Ming's terrifying strength and horrifying talent. It was impossible for such a character to appear from a small family. The background behind him must be dreadful to the extreme!

Chapter 1143 – Oppression

Chapter 1143 – Oppression

…

…

…

If River Feather could think of this then so could the others. Even Yue Ironrock, who was lying on the ground in a puddle of blood, also felt his heart skip a beat in nervousness.

Lin Ming's background had placed a great pressure on all of them.

Mister Luo struggled to support his body and get up. He bitterly smiled. Today, he had kicked a piece of iron. This boy Lin Ming was not some fat sheep that was free to be butchered, but rather a vicious wolf!

He barely managed to crawl onto his feet. Blood kept gushing out of the hole in the right side of his chest. As he looked at Lin Ming, his eyes were filled with fear and dread.

"Now, we will continue discussing the price!"

Lin Ming waved his hand and a red light flashed as the Phoenix Blood Spear was stashed away. He casually sat back down on the only remaining half-broken stone chair in the hall. He put down his hands and calmly stared at that Mister Luo.

This caused Mister Luo's heart to shrink. Lin Ming obviously feared nothing. Even though this was his territory, this boy Lin Ming didn't care at all.

In truth, Lin Ming was already being discrete and proportional in his actions. He had severely wounded Yue Ironrock and Mister Luo but didn't kill them. In this environment, whether it was Lin Ming, Yue Ironrock, or even Mister Luo, none of them would go to the extremes of killing anyone else. After all, they also weren't aware of Lin Ming's true status. If they rashly killed him without understanding his background then it was possible that they would bring a calamity down upon their heads.

In Lin Ming's case this was also true. Where there was light there would always be shadows. For these people to establish an underground influence in Immemorial Imperial City proved that they naturally had their own specialty. Although they weren't weak, there was definitely the shadow of some high master standing behind them. This was the case in the world of mortals too. There were many underground influences in capital cities that seemed like small fries, but they actually had the shelter of high level figures. These high level figures had formed these underground influences in order to have them perform matters that weren't too convenient for them to do themselves.

In this situation, Lin Ming definitely had to be cautious. Although it seemed as if his actions were ruthless and cruel, causing his opponents to suffer, the truth was that their wounds would be healed by taking some medicines and resting for some time.

All of the young elites lacked courage to face Lin Ming. As for Yue Ironrock, even his expression began to change. As he saw that Lin Ming had nothing to fear even in this territory that should have been his, he began to feel a twinge of fear.

He didn't know just how deep Lin Ming's background went. Although that Mister Luo was not Lin Ming's match, this underground influence had several Divine Lord realm powerhouses that were personally standing guard. With a Divine Lord realm master's strength, dealing with Lin Ming was no problem at all.

By now, these Divine Lord powerhouses should also have been noticing this situation and yet none of them were moving against Lin Ming. They were being cautious because they were deathly afraid of whatever strange and great influence might be standing behind Lin Ming.

If they killed Lin Ming, this news would inevitably spread out. After all, it was impossible to eliminate all of the young elites in this hall. Let alone killing them, they wouldn't even be able to deal with the fallout from harming one of them. Thus, whatever happened here would easily pass outwards.

In this situation, if what stood behind Lin Ming was truly a Great World King influence, then the consequences would be unbelievably dire. The great figure behind them would also eliminate all ties with them in fear of drawing disaster to himself, and kick them forward as a blood sacrifice!

At that time, they would be lucky if they were just incinerated into a pile of ashes. If they were unlucky, their souls would be pulled out and tortured for a thousand years.

But, if it were to spread that an underworld gang like theirs with renowned fame and reputation were beaten up and kicked in the face by a mere Ninefall junior, just how could they still mix in with the world?

Their gang would lose any shred of dignity they had and would be mocked by all the other underworld influences. In future struggles for territory, they would even be at a disadvantage!

The atmosphere immediately reached a standstill. The powerhouses of this underworld influence hadn't yet appeared, but they were actually paying attention to the situation. If they placed themselves on the top of the wave before ascertaining the exact situation, then not only would their gang lose face but everyone from their gang would also lose face.

"What background does this boy have!?"

"I have no idea. If we're tricked by him then we will be the laughingstock of Immemorial Imperial City!"

In a separate minor dimension, two old men were speaking with a true essence sound transmission. They locked their eyes on Lin Ming as if they were able to see through him.

But Lin Ming steadily sat in his half-broken chair, not startled at all.

"We can't let things end like this. Even if we can't kill him, we have to make him suffer a bit!"

"Yes, we can't kill him but we can't let him leave either! Let me test him first to see if he really does have nothing to fear."

As the old man spoke, he silently revolved his energy.

A pressure suddenly fell down over Lin Ming.

This was the same as telling Lin Ming that there was a Divine Lord realm powerhouse that was watching everything happening here.

Lin Ming's eyebrows arched up as he felt the aura of a Divine Lord realm powerhouse. He sneered, "It seems that… you don't plan on discussing the price!"

His voice contained a faint killing intent as if he simply didn't realize or care that there was a Divine Lord realm powerhouse exerting pressure on him.

The truth was that with Lin Ming's status, he wasn't a fake tiger trying to show off. His background was indeed a peak Holy Land. The Ancient Phoenix Clan was equal to the Yue Family in terms of wealth, and was actually quite a bit stronger in scale and strength.

However, Mister Luo and the others were thinking a bit differently, that Lin Ming had come here as part of some smelting trial or to gain experience. The Divine Realm was so vast that they might not know of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. If Lin Ming really died here then it was possible that the Ancient Phoenix Clan wouldn't be able to find out.

At this time, many of the young elites present were quietly waiting. They could feel that someone was aiming at Lin Ming, and it was likely this person was a Divine Lord realm powerhouse. Even so, Lin Ming didn't seem affected at all; his expression remained steady as before.

“This brat, how could this be!” The Divine Lord realm old man hidden in the minor dimension frowned. He was pouring his pressure onto Lin Ming but there wasn’t any response at all.

Pressure came from the soul. Lin Ming was withstanding this soul pressure from someone who was at least 10 times stronger than he was!

Bang!

With a loud explosive sound, the stone chair beneath Lin Ming shattered. However, Lin Ming simply stood up and said, “What cowards. Two Divine Lord powerhouses facing a mere junior and yet you don’t even dare to appear!”

These few words caused the two Divine Lord old men hidden in the minor dimension to be shocked. “Wh-what? How did he know that there were two of us?”

Just now, only one of the old men had done anything. The other old man had been completely silent, so how did Lin Ming realize there were two of them?

But at this moment, the two old men suddenly felt an unbelievably terrifying pressure shroud over them, causing them both to blanch!

This soul pressure was vast and mysterious, causing one’s soul to tremble!

It wasn’t just the two old men in the minor dimension, but everyone in the hall was also enveloped in this soul pressure!

Soul pressure was essentially a type of force field formed by the soul. Although it couldn’t kill others, it could make others feel as if their soul was being ruthlessly trampled over and savaged.

The severely wounded Mister Luo paled. He began to find it hard to breathe. His face was pale and blood continued to pump out of his chest.

And beside him, Madame Luo was also shaking. Her buxom chest heaved up and down.

Let alone them, all of the other young elites weren’t even deliberately targeted and yet they felt as if they had been turned into mortals without martial arts, stripped naked and tossed into a world of ice and snow. This sort of icy soul-rending pressure was agonizingly unbearable.

Who was this? Who was here?

This pressure was absolutely not from Lin Ming. Lin Ming did not have such an ability!

“The degree of this soul force is not that of a Divine Lord… it isn’t even a normal Holy Lord but a peak Holy Lord… no, it… it might be a half-step World King!”

The two Divine Lord old men in the minor dimension cried out in alarm as they felt a cold chill zip up their backs. As for Mister Luo, he turned completely ashen. Was there a half-step World King secretly looking over Lin Ming? No wonder Lin Ming had made such a splendid appearance at this trade fair, and had even started a fight here, severely injuring two people!

With a half-step World King protecting him in secret, just how could he not be strong and overbearing?

But, this also proved that Lin Ming absolutely stemmed from a World King level Holy Land! Moreover, it was highly possible that it was a super Great World King level Holy Land, and that he was also the greatest and most talented genius of that Holy Land. Otherwise, it was impossible to have such a formidable powerhouse protecting him!

There was even the likelihood that he was the direct descendant of a Great World King.

How could small friends like them offend such a character? Even Immemorial Imperial City’s City Lord wouldn’t necessarily be able to offend him!

As Mister Luo thought of this, his heart trembled. As for Yue Ironrock, he wanted to run into a wall and kill himself. He truly had been too blind and naïve. He could only count his lucky stars that it was Lin Ming who attacked him and not he who attacked Lin Ming. If that mysterious powerhouse had acted then his fate would have been far more miserable! He slowly began to dig himself into the rubble around him, not intending to come out at all.

“I originally planned on paying you 20 million, but now since you don’t want it, you can forget about even obtaining a single violet sun stone!”

Lin Ming slowly said, his voice strong and overbearing. He was indeed acting like a fake tiger, but at this time, the less his act was seen through, the safer he would be. On the other hand, if he weakened his own momentum, he would be placing himself in a more dangerous situation.

As Lin Ming spoke, the tremendous pressure pushing down on everyone diminished. The terrifying pressure that had been crushing everyone present was suddenly removed. It was hard for an ordinary person’s soul to resist such a rapid change in pressure.

Mister Luo, Madame Luo, as well as the two old Elders in the hidden minor dimension flushed red with blood. Mister Luo was originally in an extremely poor state, and now even his soul had been damaged!

However, he didn’t dare to utter a single sound. He was only relieved that this mysterious master had removed the pressure on him.

This pressure was naturally released by Mo Eversnow. Mo Eversnow didn’t have a physical body and only had her soul form left. Even so, her soul was still that of a true half-step World King powerhouse, and even a peak existence amongst them!

However, her soul had suffered tremendous injuries 50,000 years ago and she hadn’t fully recovered yet. Even though she was releasing her soul pressure to deter those Divine Lord realm powerhouses just now, this was no small consumption of soul force for her and she wasn’t able to continue it for too long. If it really came down to fighting those two Divine Lord realm powerhouses, then even if she took possession of Lin Ming’s body, the chances were that they would lose. Even if they won a difficult victory at the end, Mo Eversnow would likely fall into a deep sleep once again because of overdrawing her soul force. The gains simply weren't equal to the losses!

Moreover, there were undoubtedly more than two Divine Lord powerhouses in this underworld gang. If they began to truly fight here, Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow would eventually suffer a tragic defeat. But in this case they had been able to use layers of illusions to deter everyone present!

Chapter 1144 – Yan Littlefish

Chapter 1144 – Yan Littlefish

…

…

…

Lin Ming ignored that Mister Luo and moved towards the iron cage that was pushed away to the corner of the hall. Although the fight just now had been a bit violent, Lin Ming had intentionally tried to avoid harming the little girl. Even so, the wild and crazy explosions had caused her to pale.

Lin Ming grasped two of the metal rails and pulled, easily pulling apart the finger-thick metal bars.

"Come with me." Lin Ming stretched out his hand towards the little girl, a warm and inviting smile on his face.

The little girl bit her lips and grabbed onto Lin Ming's hand.

Like this, Lin Ming brought the girl with him and left the hall. His steps were slow and steady, with a vague and deep pressure exuding from him that echoed in the hall, making anyone not dare to do anything.

Mister Luo gulped, not speaking. Madame Luo's beautiful face also paled. She retreated to a corner of the hall lest she attract Lin Ming's ire.

Lin Ming and the little girl left the trading fair hall with no one stopping them.

After Lin Ming left, Mister Luo finally relaxed. He grit his teeth, taking out several pills from his spatial ring and swallowing them down.

Today he acknowledged that he got what he deserved!

Although he had lost face, for better or worse the truth was that the tremendous pressure that came shrouding down was from a half-step World King powerhouse who was secretly observing everything happening here. If it was said that their gang was overwhelmed by a half-step World King supreme elder, then that wouldn't be too shameful.

The other young elites glanced at each other in shocked dismay. This trade fair had completely broadened their horizons. Indeed, in the vast Divine Realm there truly was no limit to the universe; there would always be a higher peak and a stronger person. They were all outstanding juniors of their generation, but compared to Lin Ming they weren't anything at all.

"This Lin Ming… is he really a genius that could be raised by a Holy Land? Would it be a Great World King level Holy Land?"

River Feather mumbled to himself. Although he knew that there were countless young elites in the Divine Realm that were far more formidable than him, this was the first time that he had felt so deeply powerless and frustrated. Against such a seemingly omnipotent strength, he wasn't able to summon any courage to chase after him.

"Perhaps it might be a Great World King level Holy Land. Moreover, Lin Ming's talent would be amazing even within a Great World King level Holy Land! And don't forget, above a Great World King is an Empyrean. If it was a genius trained by an Empyrean, just how high would their talent be?"

"Empyrean…"

River Feather ruefully smiled upon hearing this word. If it were the descendant of an Empyrean, just how ridiculous would that be?

Without mentioning the resources or inheritances that an Empyrean could provide, just the level of talent that a descendant of an Empyrean would possess was far too dreadful to imagine. If the Empyrean's spouse was also a super powerhouse and their child inherited both of their parents' talents, that would simply be unbelievable!

Compared to that, they were nothing more than ants!

River Feather sighed. Then, a true essence sound transmission sounded out in his ears. It was Lin Ming's voice, "I ask that Brother River continue to collect the materials that I requested. Without a doubt I will return within a year and pay you back the full price for them."

As Lin Ming finished speaking he quickly dashed away, leaving River Feather in a daze. He could faintly feel that Lin Ming would shine with glory in the future Divine Realm. As for him, he would continue to strive to become the successor to his Holy Land Family, even if those hopes were slim.

The difference in status between the two could be imagined.

"If… if I can remain on good terms with Lin Ming in the future, then the benefits I obtain will be many. At the very least, I will be able to smoothly inherit the position of Patriarch in the future…"

River Feather whispered to himself. As he thought of this, he secretly solidified his determination. He had to seize this chance and help Lin Ming as splendidly and smoothly as he could.

……

At this time, Lin Ming had already left Immemorial Imperial City and had arrived at the distant outskirts. His speed wasn't fast and he appeared extremely calm, but within the Magic Cube space, Mo Eversnow was releasing her divine sense, maintaining absolute vigilance.

Lin Ming's breathing was even, as if he were taking a casual stroll. But, his nerves were taut; he was ready to deal with dangers that might erupt at any given moment.

He couldn't help but be cautious. Although he had seemed to overawe everyone and smoothly walk out, the truth was that he had just escaped the jaws of death!

That underworld trade fair was no different from a danger zone to Lin Ming.

The reason that Lin Ming would brandish his weapon and start a fight at the trade fair was that he had no choice left.

If he was able to melt away disasters with some wealth then he wouldn't have chosen to fight. But, that Mister Luo was insatiably greedy, and his attempt at extortion became increasingly ruthless. If Lin Ming pinched his nose and pretended he didn't notice this, then that Mister Luo might even have the idea to inflate the price to unbelievable heights. At the end, he might have even developed thoughts of killing Lin Ming to steal his wealth!

After all, if Lin Ming wasn't able to show that there was some great influence behind him and kept bearing all of the abuse, then others would think he was someone easy to bully. In this case where Lin Ming was carrying a large amount of wealth, they would think he was just some nobody that stumbled into a massive treasure trove.

Immemorial Imperial City was a place where both good and evil were mixed up. If others believed he was no different from a fat lamb that was free to be butchered, his fate could be imagined. He might even be eaten up by someone without any dregs remaining!

In order to combat these types of snakes, one could only be even more ruthless and thoroughly suppress them so that all they knew was fear.

"No one is chasing after us. There were several senses that were following you for a distance but they eventually returned." Mo Eversnow said from within the Magic Cube space.

"Got it." Lin Ming slowed down flying, a fearless look in his eyes. He didn't hide his whereabouts nor did he purposefully change directions. It was only until he flew another thousand miles away and Mo Eversnow confirmed again that there was no one following him that he rapidly accelerated. He instantly blew past 10,000 miles in a single go, crossing through several mountains and valleys and switching directions several times. Finally, he stopped by a quiet forest where no one was living.

He was finally out of danger!

Lin Ming let out a long breath. This period just now had been an extreme test on his mentality. Although he appeared completely confident, the truth was that he was extremely anxious with nerves tighter than wires.

Mo Eversnow faintly smiled, "Your acting skills aren't bad."

Lin Ming chuckled, shaking his head. "Miss Mo was much calmer than me. When you put that pressure out, there wasn't the faintest feeling that you lacked any energy at all. It was truly the aura of a top master who controlled the lives of all present, as if they could all be killed with a single wave of the hand. As for me, I was just putting on a child's play."

As Lin Ming spoke, his thoughts moved and his figure appeared within the Extreme Violet Ring. At this time, Mo Eversnow also turned into a stream of light that entered into the Extreme Violet Ring's world.

Here, a little girl was sitting down near the medicine garden, holding both of her knees. She stared at the wondrous sight in front of her – 20 mountains of purple crystals!

Each crystal mountain was formed by a massive amount of piled up violet sun stones and violet sun crystals.

Lin Ming had exchanged the wealth he took from Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan at Carefree Island for violet sun stones and received over 100 billion. And, he had also inherited over 300 billion from the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. He had already exchanged the latter for crystal cards, around 3600-3700 of them. Each crystal card was worth 100 million. These crystal cards could be exchanged at any major bank of the great worlds for violet sun stones or different kinds of pills.

And now, these 20 purple crystal mountains had formed a tremendous visual impact on this little girl!

During her time at Immemorial Imperial City's underworld influence, she had never had enough to eat. From the start, their only desire had been to study her special physique and ascertain just what it was. Thus, they had supplied her with many violet sun crystals. But in the end, this had come to nothing and they were only able to sell her for a price of 2 million. Afterwards, while she had been waiting to be sold, this little girl nearly never had anything to eat, and she had been in a starving state for a long time.

In fact, even when she had violet sun crystals to eat at the start, she only ate 20 some per day. That was equal to 200 thousand some violet sun stones, so when had she seen such a massive violet sun crystal mountain?

The little girl couldn't help but lick her lips. She was unbearably hungry, but since she didn't have Lin Ming's permission she could only look on.

As she saw Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow arrive, she was startled and quickly stood up.

"Eat as much as you want." Lin Ming casually said.

The little girl knew that Lin Ming had seen her hungry appearance and blushed, a bit embarrassed. She didn't have the courage to directly start eating the violet sun crystals, but looked at Mo Eversnow with a confused look on her face instead, "You are… that big sister in the hall?"

The little girl suddenly asked, startling Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow.

The two of them glanced at each other and then turned to that little girl in disbelief.

"How did you know?"

"A feeling… I had a feeling that this big sister's aura is the same as the big sister's aura in the hall…" The little girl said, shrinking her neck back.

After Lin Ming listened to her, he looked at the little girl with a bit of surprise in his eyes. She clearly didn't have the least bit of cultivation and Mo Eversnow had been purposefully avoiding placing any soul pressure on her. Even so, she was able to remember Mo Eversnow's soul fluctuations, and even now when Mo Eversnow was restraining her soul aura, she had still been able to recognize her!

This was something that not even a martial artist skilled in the aspect of soul would be able to achieve!

"What's your name?" Mo Eversnow asked.

"I… I am called Yan Littlefish, but you can just call me Fishy…" The little girl whispered in a clear voice.

"Yan Littlefish, that's a very beautiful name. May I ask you a few questions?"

"You can ask me, Big Sister." Fishy said, without the least bit of wariness towards Mo Eversnow.

"Mm… I want to know what your background is. Who are your parents? How could you only eat violet sun stones? And how do you know where the violet sun stone embryo is?"

Hearing Mo Eversnow's questions, Yan Littlefish thought very hard for a time before shaking her head. She said, "I don't remember where I came from… all I remember is that I have always been alone around Immemorial Imperial City, and I don't have any parents…"

"You're alone? Then how did you live when you were a little child? Where did you obtain violet sun stones from?" After hearing Fishy's words, Lin Ming was surprised. It was simply impossible for a lonely and defenseless little girl to live near Immemorial Imperial City for all this time. Moreover, Fishy didn't eat normal types of food; she only ate violet sun stones and violet sun crystals, so where would she have obtained them?

Yan Littlefish hesitated for a moment before finally saying, “The truth is that… I can see violet sun stones buried underground. I can even see them when they are super super far away. It’s just that I am very weak so I can’t dig them out, but… I can sometimes dig out some small pieces and eat them…”

Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow were dumbfounded. There was actually such a mystical ability??

Chapter 1145 – Marvelous Ability

Chapter 1145 – Marvelous Ability

…

…

…

"You can see the location of violet sun stones? Those people that captured you didn't know this?" Lin Ming found this surprising. Violet sun stones and violet sun crystals were often buried deep underground, isolated by thick layers of soil. In addition, these layers of soil were often like the purple mountain in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm and had certain properties that could isolate divine sense. They were extremely difficult to discover. If Yan Littlefish had this ability, then just this point alone would cause countless underworld influences to compete for her.

Fishy shook her head. She clenched her small fists and said, "They were bad guys so I didn't tell them. If I did, then it would have been really sad for me. I would have to rush every day to help them mine stuff, but the truth is if I look for things for too long then my head hurts and I will feel dizzy and sick."

As Fishy spoke, Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow felt their hearts touched. Although Fishy was young and she didn't have much courage, she was quite smart. A rhino would often die because of their horn and elephants were hunted for their pure white ivory tusks. It wasn't easy for an 11-12 year old child to understand this and hide their own abilities.

It also seemed that Fishy revealing that she knew the whereabouts of the violet sun stone embryo was because she had no choice. Since she didn't have any cultivation, she couldn't use a true essence sound transmission to tell Lin Ming this; she could only speak it out loud. Luckily, Fish didn't continue to hide her ability, otherwise Lin Ming wouldn't have a clue to find the violet sun stone embryo and Fishy wouldn't have been able to leap out of her sea of suffering.

"How did they treat you?" Mo Eversnow sighed as she remembered how Fishy had fear in her eyes when she saw that Mister Luo and Madame Luo.

Fishy said, "They let me eat at the start, but they also forced me to train a lot. They didn't let me sleep or even rest, and afterwards that Madame Luo kept calling me useless trash and yelled at me, hit me, and finally locked me up. They didn't let me eat anymore and only wanted to sell me away. They had wanted to sell me to a terrible witch for alchemy, but that witch thought I was too expensive and didn't buy me. I was afraid of what would happen if I stayed there. I knew if I did, I would die sooner or later. That's why I couldn't help but call out for Big Brother…"

Yan Littlefish guiltily looked at Lin Ming. She hadn't thought that her calling out to him would cause him so much trouble.

"These underworld gangs are truly heartless…" Lin Ming said, but, he understood that this was simply how it was in the world of martial artists. These underworld gang influences didn't need to worry about what the public thought of them, thus they were able to seek profits at any cost, no matter how horrible it made them. The reason that they gave Fishy violet sun stones to eat at the start was only that they wanted to train her so when she matured they could sell her for a higher price. Thus, this was why they rigorously trained an 11-12 year old girl. Afterwards when they discovered that their training had no effect, they thought of simply selling her instead. As for what her fate would be and whether she would live or die, none of them cared.

"Big Brother and Big Sister are fierce! Those bad guys were all beaten up!" Fishy said, excited, as she thought of how Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow had shown off in such great glory.

Mo Eversnow smiled and shook her head, “We’re not as fierce as you think we are.” As she spoke, she couldn’t help but lift her hand and rub Fishy’s cheeks. She could rely on energy to simulate touch, a touch that felt like water.

“Big Sister, your hands are very cold.” Fishy said. She didn’t avoid Mo Eversnow but only looked at her strangely.

Mo Eversnow faintly smiled. Being called a big sister by such a little child was quite strange to her. She said, “You can call me aunty from now on. I’ve always had such a cold body.”

“Aunty...” Fishy tilted her head, thinking about it. She said, “But I like to call you big sister more! And Big Sister doesn’t seem to be much older than Fishy.”

“A bit.” Mo Eversnow chuckled, thinking it was funny. The time whilst she slept in the Magic Cube had been extremely strange. It hadn’t dimmed her fires of life at all, and they were still as vivid as they were 50,000 years ago. It was like time had stopped and only restarted when she had awakened with Lin Ming.

As she stood together with Lin Ming, they were like mortal youths in their prime, brimming with vitality. This was one of the most fascinating aspects of following the martial path, in that one could extend their youth.

Those that cultivated martial arts were not willing to resign themselves to the ebb of time. As years passed, their life force and strength would be slowly sucked away. Even though they had the ability to move mountains and sunder seas, they finally couldn’t escape the slow changes of destiny.

Often, a martial artist would constantly seek out lucky chances, passing through layers upon layers of dangers to climb to a higher peak of martial arts. What drove them was not just peeping at the wonders of the Heavenly Dao Laws, but also to obtain longer youth and longer life.

Even an Empyrean was unable to achieve that faint and illusory immortality that existed in legends. As for whether one could even achieve immortality through the martial path and surpass the scope of the Heavenly Dao, that had always been an enigma.

"Alright, eat something, you look hungry." Lin Ming took out several high quality violet sun crystals from the purple crystal mountain and passed them to Fishy.

As Fishy saw this violet sun crystal and the incomparably rich energy within it, she bit her lips and said, "This is very expensive… Big Brother Lin Ming's crystals are much better than ordinary ones."

This large fragment of violet sun crystal that Lin Ming took out was worth several hundred thousand violet sun stones. That underground influence would definitely not be willing to give Fishy such a luxurious item to eat. But to him, who had 500 billion violet sun stones, several hundred thousand was just a drop of water in the ocean.

"Eat." Mo Eversnow smiled, "There's much more where that came from, you won't be able to finish it all."

Fishy took the big violet sun crystal, a bit embarrassedly, and bit down on it.

As Fishy ate the violet sun crystal, Lin Ming was paying particularly special attention to the changes in it. Violet sun crystals were extremely hard; not even an iron hammer would be able to break them and they could easily chip teeth. But as Yan Littlefish bit down on that violet sun crystal, part of the crystal's energies mysteriously dissolved, just like she was biting a candied fruit instead. The violet sun crystal was simply eaten like that.

"This…" Lin Ming glanced at Mo Eversnow, finding this incredible. Just what sort of principle was this? Fishy clearly didn't have any energy fluctuations coming from her body. She was a true and thorough mortal little girl.

"Yummy! I've never eaten something so delicious before." Fishy seemed shy as she spoke but continued to eat. The more she ate, the quicker she ate and the more lively she ate, just like an ordinary little girl eating candy.

“I’ve never heard of this type of physique before.” Mo Eversnow sighed. In the vast Divine Realm, every strange and fantastical thing was possible. Mo Eversnow considered herself well-read and experienced but she had still never seen any type of record that pertained to such a physique. Violet sun stones were the condensation of heaven and earth origin energy. Martial artists could use them to cultivate, but because large sects of the Divine Realm often had training locations with extremely rich energy, there wasn’t too great a demand on violet sun crystals for cultivation. Normally, violet sun crystals would only be used to activate array formations and drive the movement of spirit ships, or even galvanize large-scale spirit artifacts. They were even used to open divergent mystic realms.

But to directly eat up a violet sun crystal… that was something she had never heard of.

In just half an incense stick of time, the large violet sun crystal chunk was directly eaten up by Fishy.

Fishy patted her full belly and accidentally let out a burp. Her face blushed red and she lowered her head in embarrassment, slowly saying, “I… I’m full. That was very delicious.”

Lin Ming looked at Fishy, a puzzled light in his eyes. In his opinion, energy in the Divine Realm was conserved. It wouldn’t come from nowhere, nor would it randomly disappear. A mortal could work labor because they ate food, and a martial artist could move seas because they absorbed heaven and earth origin energy.

Then, Fishy ate up so much pure violet sun crystal energy, so where did that energy go?

A little mortal girl had a limit to the amount of energy they could expend in their entire life. It probably wouldn’t even be equal to a thousandth of that violet sun crystal just now.

Lin Ming used his senses to investigate Fishy’s body. Following the movement of the violet sun crystal after Fishy ate it, he discovered that the energy simply vanished without a trace. It was like there was a bottomless pit in Fishy’s body and she swallowed it all without end.

Lin Ming glanced at Mo Eversnow, but Mo Eversnow only shook her head. She said, “I also cannot understand this. Fishy’s body is truly incomprehensible. She violates the conservation of energy contained within the Heavenly Dao Laws. Then again, perhaps this energy was hidden using some sort of special method, or maybe it was simply transferred somewhere else…”

Even though Mo Eversnow’s soul force was on the level of a half-step World King, she still couldn’t discover what was happening in Yan Littlefish’s body.

“Well, let’s consider it finished. We’ll slowly unravel whatever her physique is in the future.” Lin Ming didn’t think that it would be easy to understand Fishy’s physique. Otherwise, that underworld influence of Immemorial Imperial City would have already done so.

“Fishy, you said that you knew the location of the violet sun stone embryo. Did you find it when you were looking for something to eat?”

“I’m not too sure…” Fishy shook her head. “That place is very strange… when I saw that place, I felt very… uncomfortable, and I didn’t know why… I can lead Big Brother Lin Ming to go there now.”

“Alright. You point the way and we’ll go together. But, we’re not in a hurry so let’s rest a bit first.”

Lin Ming turned into a stream of light that shot out from the Extreme Violet Ring. Then, his thoughts stirred and his body began to emit great snapping and crackling noises. His body began to change. His figure became much larger, his muscles thicker, and his handsome looks more ordinary. In a short while, he became a completely different person. It was impossible to find even the faintest shadow of Lin Ming in his body.

Then, Lin Ming revolved the special martial skill Mo Eversnow taught him to conceal the energy fluctuations of grandmist space, using that to completely change his own aura. At this time, even an early Divine Lord realm powerhouse might not be able to recognize him.

And why would an ordinary Divine Lord powerhouse have the spare time to investigate everyone they came across to see if they had changed their appearance?

Like this, they stayed until nightfall. Under the cover of night, Lin Ming quietly moved towards Immemorial Imperial City. With Fishy's guidance, he soon found the location where Fishy said the violet sun stone embryo was. But as he saw this place, he was actually shocked.

How… how could it be here?

Chapter 1146 – Mysterious Land

Chapter 1146 – Mysterious Land

…

…

…

“This is where you sensed the violet sun stone embryo was? Are you sure?” Lin Ming asked Fishy, a bit incredulously.

Fishy nodded, “It’s here. I’ve seen it many times before.”

“But… here is…” Lin Ming pointed towards the massive towering city that floated high in the skies. That was clearly Immemorial Imperial City!

Lin Ming originally imagined that the violet sun stone embryo would be hidden in some distant and desolate mountain range, or perhaps in some inaccessible valley where no one lived. Even if Fishy said it was near Immemorial Imperial City, that ‘near’ should be at least thousands of miles away. If so, then perhaps it might not have been discovered even after all this time. But he never imagined that the place Fishy would indicate was Immemorial Imperial City!

“You’re saying that the violet sun stone embryo is in Immemorial Imperial City?” Lin Ming asked, stunned.

“It’s underneath the ground.” Fishy’s round face flushed red as she spoke with certainty.

“Underground… this is…” Lin Ming found it hard to believe. Was there a violet sun stone mine beneath Immemorial Imperial City? When the city was first being built, wouldn’t the numerous supreme elders have discovered it already? This was simply too unbelievable.

“Lin Ming, I also think it is unbelievable, but I know that Fishy isn’t lying to you. Take a look. Even if there isn’t a violet sun stone embryo underneath Immemorial Imperial City, there is still something suspicious happening here. I just wonder if the many powerhouses living in the city know of the situation underground.”

“Alright.” Lin Ming chose a mountainous region several hundred miles away from Immemorial Imperial City and began to drill his way into the earth. If he cut an angle towards Immemorial Imperial City then others wouldn’t notice him.

Normally, unless a martial artist cultivated the Earth laws, it wasn’t easy for them to dig into the earth. Passing underground consumed a great deal of energy, an amount tens of thousands of times greater than flying through the air. Moreover, this energy would be more rapidly consumed the deeper one went.

Thus, even a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse would find it impossible to drill over 1000-2000 miles underground. And if there was some sort of collapse, the massive pressure would crush them half-dead. Wanting to emerge from that sort of situation would consume an even greater amount of energy.

Although Lin Ming didn’t cultivate in the Earth laws, he had the grandmist space that was able to annihilate all Laws. The power of earth and stone belonged to the five elements, thus it was naturally decomposed by the Grandmist Laws and destroyed. With this, when Lin Ming displayed the grandmist space and drilled into the earth, all of the soil and rock parted before him as it rapidly melted away. Like this, he was able to able move underground unimpeded.

Lin Ming had dragon marrow blood in his body and his true essence had reached the peak of thickness for his level. He immediately passed through several hundred miles and still continued onwards!

During this, the soil texture around Lin Ming changed several times. Many layers of soil were similar to the rocks of the Red Desolate Mystic Realm and were able to isolate divine sense. Like this, even a Holy Lord or World King couldn’t see through these layers.

He continued forwards. 900 miles down, the temperature had become extremely high and the pressure had become terrifying. This was a horrendous environment; he had to use up a great deal of energy just to stay here.

“The rock is becoming more and more hard.”

Lin Ming took a deep breath. Normally, depths underground were measured in units of 10 feet. If it were measured in miles instead, then that would truly be terrifying. Everything was completely dark and the soil was placing intense pressure on every inch underground. Even the heat was becoming increasingly intense, as if he were traveling through half-melted metal. Every time he moved forwards he would have to consume more and more strength.

“Mm? This is vast sky stone that is used by large sects to build palaces. It is heavier than gold and extremely hard. Even if it is placed in an environment that is several dozen times hotter than magma, it still won’t soften.”

Lin Ming frowned. He estimated that he was already a thousand and several hundred miles underneath the ground. Just what sort of concept was this distance? If a mortal rapidly marched, they could cross a hundred miles in a day, and these thousand some miles were equal to a mortal walking for over a dozen days. However, this was not the flat earth, but underground!

How could a little mortal girl like Fishy see so deep underground?

Yet Lin Ming didn’t suspect Fishy’s words at all. This trust was purely intuitive.

2000 miles!

Lin Ming passed through the pure vast sky stone for a thousand miles. This thousand miles was extremely consuming of Lin Ming’s true essence. Even if he had the grandmist space that was able to melt away the vast sky stone, it was still extremely strenuous and difficult on his body! This thousand miles used up at least five times the energy of the first thousand miles!

“I’ve absorbed 72 dragon bone relics, dragon marrow blood, and I’ve even withstood the nine levels of heavenly tribulation. My endurance has reached an unprecedented level, but even I’m using up most of my energy passing this far down. This place is truly not something that the average person could reach.”

Lin Ming swallowed down some pills and pulled out several violet sun stones, absorbing their energy. He continued forwards once again. Downwards was also pure vast sky stone. The temperature had already risen past a hundred times the temperature of magma. This was nearly the same as Fire Spirit Star’s 18 Hells of Flame.

Whether it was a large celestial body or a main continent of a Divine Realm’s great world, the deeper one went, the hotter it would be. Luckily, Lin Ming had a thorough understanding of the Fire Laws so this level of heat wasn’t anything to him at all. Otherwise, he wouldn’t be able to take a single step forwards here.

At 2500 miles deep, the vast sky stone began to soften and finally melt into magma!

Vast sky stone was originally as white as the purest jade without any impurities at all. The magma it melted into was also white, like thick and creamy milk.

Of course, although this crystal clear milky magma seemed cool and harmless, the truth was that it was incomparably hot. Even a saint artifact would melt if soaked in it.

At this depth, the pressure had reached an incredible degree. The burning hot milky white liquid swished around in all directions. Although this was liquid, underneath the massive pressure it was very thick. To move in this magma that was thicker than mercury, the amount of energy one needed to expend was tremendous.

“The environment here is…” Lin Ming took a deep breath. A layer of vast sky stone 1500 miles thick floated above a creamy milk-colored sea of magma. He never imagined that such a scene would appear below Immemorial Imperial City.

Mo Eversnow said, “The vast sky stone magma here can also isolate divine sense. Even my own sense cannot penetrate over 100 feet from before being swallowed up by the magma.

Even if a true World King level powerhouse were to come here, they also wouldn't be able to sense anything over 200 feet outwards. Moreover, even if they used energy to create light, it wouldn't pierce through this vast sky stone magma. That is simply the same as being blind."

Here, Lin Ming was blind even with his eyes wide open. If it wasn't for Fishy guiding him, he would have no idea where to go. If Lin Ming wanted to find treasure here himself then that would simply be a joke. A violet sun stone embryo was only the height of a person. If this stone were buried at the bottom of a vast and boundless sea of magma that couldn't be seen through with divine sense or the eyes, then if he had to find what he wanted by tracing everything with his hands, he could search until the world collapsed and he still wouldn't find it!

"There… continue ahead…"

Lin Ming's consciousness was linked with the Extreme Violet Ring, so he could communicate with Fishy at all times. He didn't know how far her eyesight extended. To her, violet sun stones were probably like a lighthouse beacon in the absolute dark. She didn't need to use divine sense nor did she need her eyes; she only needed to follow the natural instincts of her mind to identify which direction to go in. This was an ability that shouldn't be possible, even for a martial artist.

Lin Ming didn't think too much. He continued onwards according to the direction of Fishy.

And the direction that Fishy pointed out was extremely strange. It wasn't a strange line but a curve. After continuing onwards for a while, Lin Ming suddenly felt as if he had passed through some barrier. The environment around him suddenly changed and the temperature also dramatically fell. Even the layer of vast sky stone magma disappeared. He had arrived deep underground but in a completely different time-space.

"Mm… was that just now… a transmission array?"

"It was a space node." Mo Eversnow suddenly said. A space node was similar to a transmission array in that both were entrances that touched upon a different space. It was only that transmission arrays were man-made and required violet sun stones to activate, whereas space nodes formed naturally and didn't need energy to continue on in perpetuity.

"A space node… I see, no wonder the route here was so twisty. There was a space node here all along." Lin Ming took a deep breath. He never imagined that a space node would be hidden deep under Immemorial Imperial City. This space node was extremely small and buried nearly 5000 miles underground. Just what sort of concept was 5000 miles? An ordinary planet was around 10,000 miles in diameter. That meant that this 5000 mile underground depth was the same as the midpoint of a common planet!

This depth, added along with this vast and boundless area, in a place where divine sense was useless and so was eyesight, and moreover where the Space Laws were distorted around the space node, wanting to find this space node that was hidden with space-time distortions was nearly impossible. If it weren't for Fishy's special homing beacon ability, finding this would have been nothing but a dream.

Besides, who would be so bored that they would spend so much energy to dig 5000 miles underground? It was likely that not even the numerous supreme elders at Immemorial Imperial City knew that there was such a tiny hidden space node deep under their city.

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that if Lin Ming left and came back down, even if his memory was extremely accurate, wanting to find this space node in this sense-isolating sea of magma was impossible.

"Just what place is this…" Lin Ming whispered, surprised. There was a space node hidden underneath Immemorial Imperial City… could this just be a coincidence, or was there some secret hidden here?

"What rich heaven and earth origin energy fluctuations. There must be an energy source nearby. And also… mm? The Space Laws are distorted here, and this distortion isn't naturally produced. It comes from an array formation!"

Mo Eversnow's achievements in the Space Laws and Time Laws cast off Lin Ming by countless miles. This was why she could sense the energy fluctuations created by a spatial array formation here.

"Spatial array formation? Was that one created by someone?" Lin Ming was incredulous. If there was an array formation here, that was proof that all of this was laid down by someone else!

Before he could think for too long, Mo Eversnow said, "Senses can be used here again."

As Lin Ming heard Mo Eversnow's words, he attempted to investigate with his senses again. Although it was a tad suppressed, he could make out a 10 mile scope around him.

And after finding out just what was around him, he was left dumbfounded.

Chapter 1147 – Divine Seal Art

Chapter 1147 – Divine Seal Art

…

…

…

"This… this is… am I imagining things!?"

Lin Ming investigated a 10 mile radius around him with his sense. He couldn't believe his eyes!

"How could there be such a massive violet sun crystal mine? No… that isn't a violet sun crystal mine but an incomparably massive and pure violet sun crystal!"

Normally, violet sun crystals would come from violet sun stone mines. The violet sun stone mine that was located in the purple mountain within the Red Desolate Mystic Realm was already considered to contain top high-grade ores. But, the violet sun stones within were only tiny chunks that were sporadically located within the purple mountain. If one wished to dig them out, they needed to be constantly screened and purified.

This was the only method to obtain violet sun stones.

As for violet sun crystals, they were extremely rare crystallizations of energy located within violet sun stones mines. They were just like diamonds found within volcanic ash; they were very rare.

In the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, over a hundred Revolving Core martial artists had worked non-stop for several days to mine the purple mountain. They managed to mine several million violet sun stones, but only several tens of thousands of violet sun crystals. Piled together, that formed a tiny hill.

But compared to this massive violet sun crystal mountain that lay before Lin Ming, it simply wasn't worth mentioning at all.

"Can there actually exist such a massive violet sun crystal in this world? Is this naturally formed? Or is it man-made?"

Lin Ming found this unbelievable. Just how much wealth was this? It was simply incalculable.

If it were natural, it was impossible to imagine just what sort of Laws and powers of nature needed to collide to produce such a mystical and massive violet sun crystal!

But if it were man-made, Lin Ming couldn't think of just who had such great ability. Perhaps only an Empyrean would have such skill and resources available to do this. Even so, why would that Empyrean leave behind such a massive violet sun crystal in this hidden underground space dimension? Wasn't it just a waste?

Could it be that this violet sun crystal was the wealth left behind by some ancient Empyrean, waiting for some predestined person to unearth it? If that were such, then perhaps not even a top Holy Land would be able to use it up!

If he could obtain it then wouldn't he be able to freely spend resources as he wished in the future? Besides those things that couldn't be purchased with violet sun stones, such as supreme God Beast bones or transcendent divine mights, anything else could be purchased!

However, if this was truly the inheritance of an Empyrean, then inheriting it wouldn't be easy. As Lin Ming was lost in his thoughts, Mo Eversnow suddenly said, "This violet sun crystal forms a character…"

Mo Eversnow's divine sense was much stronger than Lin Ming's. Lin Ming could sense an area of 10 miles, but Mo Eversnow could see for hundreds of miles around. She could easily make out a total view of this giant violet sun crystal.

"Character?"

Lin Ming's mind connected with Mo Eversnow and he was able to see from her point of view. As he overlooked this mysterious place, he finally saw the entire scene of the violet sun crystal.

The massive violet sun crystal formed a strange character. Every stroke was as thick as a mountain range, as if it were dividing this world in half.

This character exuded a boundless and ancient aura, as if it had been sleeping here for countless eons!

But, Lin Ming simply didn't know what this character was.

"This is probably… the ancient language of the Divine Realm?" Lin Ming recalled the bone slip that he bought at the trade fair. The characters had some similarities so they should have come from the same system.

"This is indeed the ancient language of the Divine Realm, and I also recognize this character." Mo Eversnow said. In the past, in order to understand the ancient Celestial Tyrant Manual jade slip, she had specifically studied every possible ancient language of the Divine Realm that was possible. In terms of studying the ancient language, she could be called a top first-class master within the Divine Realm.

"What character is it?" Lin Ming curiously asked.

"This character is… seal!"

"Seal?" Lin Ming's mind shook. He looked at this character and felt as if there really was a world sealed within it, hidden from all!

“A sealing array formation? Heavens! Just what is it that would need such a massive violet sun crystal to form the seal? And just what cultivation did the person who laid down this sealing array formation have?”

Lin Ming was utterly shocked. This mysterious character had actually used a massive violet sun crystal that rose and curved like mountains and rivers to form a single ‘seal’ character. Someone with this ability had to be at least an extreme Empyrean!

And whatever was sealed here was likely a super existence on the level of an Empyrean. It was at least a God Beast!

“This is… Miss Mo, do you know how long this sealing array has been here? Who laid it down? In Immemorial Imperial City was there another war between Empyrean level characters?”

Lin Ming asked as he took a deep breath.

Mo Eversnow shook her head. “I cannot estimate this at all. It could be hundreds of millions of years or even billions of years. It might even be longer than that. This has existed for far, far longer than the Sky Spill Planet’s Eternal Demon Abyss. And this ‘seal’ character, if I’m not wrong, was likely created by a type of transcendent divine might – the Divine Seal Art…”

The Divine Seal Art was a transcendent divine might that Mo Eversnow had only heard of in the past. But as for what it actually entailed, she had never experienced it before. She had only seen some descriptions in the ancient texts that seemed similar to this massive ‘seal’ character in front of her.

“Transcendent divine might!”

Lin Ming forcefully gulped. Up until now, the number of transcendent divine mights he had heard of could be counted on a single hand.

Of them, he had only learned the Heavenly Demon martial intent and Heretical God Force. The former was an incomplete third, and as for the latter, Lin Ming wasn't able to confirm whether or not it was complete.

There was simply nothing that could be done about this. A transcendent divine might jade slip was often a unique and singular existence, something that was inherited over hundreds of millions of years. These jade slips would often experience countless battles and looting over them and the chances that they were incomplete was high.

Every single transcendent divine might was incomparably precious. Even Crimson Strifecloud's father, a Great World King, only had a fragment of a transcendent divine might jade slip. A fragment couldn't even be called an incomplete transcendent divine might.

With only a fragment of a transcendent divine might, it was simply impossible to cultivate it. At most one could perceive some martial skills from it.

"An Empyrean used the Divine Seal Art to lay down this sealing formation? Hundreds of millions or even billions of years passed, so could this existence that was suppressed still live? Perhaps even that Empyrean who created this sealing formation has turned to dust by now!"

Lin Ming looked at the massive violet sun crystal mountain in front of him and found it hard to calm himself. Although he didn't know whether or not the existence that had been sealed was alive or dead, what he did know was that even thinking of taking this violet sun crystal would not be easy. If this was laid down by an Empyrean, then even if billions of years passed, wanting to move it would still be impossible!

"Fishy, could the violet sun stone embryo you mentioned be bred in this violet sun crystal mountain?" Lin Ming asked Fishy, who was hidden in the Extreme Violet Ring.

"Yes... it's in there..."

"This is..." Lin Ming didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. Before this, he had in truth been afraid that Fishy would turn out to be a violet sun stone embryo that had developed its own consciousness and taken human form. If that had happened, then all of those bizarre matters like eating violet sun stones as food and being able to feel out the location of violet sun stones could be explained. Even remembering this position could be understood then. But if that were true, it would also be extremely troublesome because Lin Ming would never sacrifice Fishy to use her in alchemy.

Now that he knew Fishy was not a violet sun stone embryo, he relaxed a great deal. But, the position of the violet sun stone embryo actually caused him to have a bitter taste in his heart. How could he possibly obtain the violet sun stone embryo that was within an Empyrean's sealing array?

Lin Ming asked, “Fishy, are you sure? This area is 5000 miles beneath the ground and also hidden away in a space node. The violet sun crystal mountain is extremely large so it wouldn't be surprising if you could see it, but… the violet sun stone embryo is so small, so how are you sure that it has been bred within this violet sun crystal mountain?”

Lin Ming found this difficult to explain, but Fishy tilted her head and said, “Yes… that is because… there are a lot of them…”

As Fishy spoke, Lin Ming froze for a moment. Mo Eversnow suddenly said, “Fishy is right, there are indeed many of them…”

As Mo Eversnow spoke, she projected the image of her divine sense into Lin Ming's mind. Then, Lin Ming was also able to see the image within the violet sun crystal mountain. As he saw this, his mouth fell open and he found it difficult to close.

With Mo Eversnow's senses piercing into the violet sun crystal mountain, he could see that there was another world contained within. He didn't know if this was a world formed from energy or if it were real. Sealed inside were lakes, forests, rolling fields, majestic palaces, and grand heavenly temples. He had never seen such a scene or imagined such an ability.

And deep within this world, there were also living beings!

There were people as well as other living beings. These other living beings had blurry shapes, as if they weren't fully complete yet.

"This is..." Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. Today, he had really opened his eyes and broadened his horizons. This feeling was similar to the time he had first seen the Eternal Demon Abyss. Everything he saw here had gone beyond his understanding.

All things had a spirit. In the legends, all of this world's plants, creatures, even stones, once having experienced countless years and unimaginable coincidences, could gain wisdom and turn into a monster.

And all of these spiritual beings that Lin Ming saw were clearly bred from violet sun crystals!

Mo Eversnow said, "In order to be bred, a violet sun stone embryo requires a massive amount of energy and the purest violet sun stone crystal as a foundation. It would have to experience heavenly retribution and the baptism of the Heavenly Dao, absorbing nearly limitless world essence and passing through endless years before being formed! It is already extremely rare if a violet sun crystal can form a violet sun stone embryo, but for so many to appear here, it is better to say that this violet sun crystal mountain is not breeding life, but breeding a world!"

The quality and amount of energy within this massive violet sun crystal left behind by an Empyrean could be imagined. After being refined by a transcendent divine might and becoming an existence that surpassed the Heavenly Dao, it had passed through perhaps billions of years, absorbing infinite world essence during this period. If this happened, how could there only be a violet sun stone embryo bred here?

Now Mo Eversnow and Lin Ming could see that what was bred was a world!

Not only was there life, there were mountains, rivers, insects, plants, and all sorts of wonders!

Mo Eversnow took a deep breath. She said, “In the Heavenly Dao Laws, the driving force for creating all life is energy. Even our universe was bred within an infinitely hot blazing mass of energy. From this energy came plants, mountains, rivers, seas, and following that came spiritual matter from which all life was formed. Now, the world bred within this violet sun crystal mountain has similarly wonderful principles driving it just as our universe does.

“In the legends, those supreme elders that reached the peak of the road of martial arts could open up their own boundless true world. Still, I never imagined that we would find a world bred within a violet sun crystal while looking for the violet sun stone embryo.”

Chapter 1148 – Ancient Spirit

Chapter 1148 – Ancient Spirit

…

…

…

The discovery of this strange space left Lin Ming shocked. There were far too many secrets hidden within the Divine Realm. Who knew just how many world-shattering battles had occurred before this mysterious ancient ruin was left behind?

An Empyrean was someone that held life and death in their hands. For them to display such an amazing technique and lay down this sealing array formation, just what reason could it have been for?

Lin Ming couldn't help but glance at Fishy. He felt that if Fishy could find this place, there was no way she was a simple little mortal girl. Moreover, why would this place be secretly hidden deep beneath Immemorial Imperial City?

Could that Empyrean who laid down this massive sealing array be related to Immemorial Imperial City? Or, was it possible that Immemorial Imperial City was founded by that person to serve as the eye for this Divine Seal Array?

Far too many thoughts flashed through Lin Ming's mind. "Fishy, is this the first time you've seen this place, or is it because you have some impressions of this area that you found it?"

Lin Ming's question startled Mo Eversnow. She said with a true essence sound transmission, "Lin Ming, are you suspecting that Fishy is somehow related to these ancient ruins?"

“I have no idea… I’m just randomly asking.” Even Lin Ming found his own thoughts a bit too fantastical. After all, these ancient ruins had already existed here for hundreds of millions or even billions of years. There should be no life that was able to live that long. Whether it was someone deeply sleeping or even someone reincarnating, crossing billions of years shouldn’t be possible.

Fishy tilted her head, a confused look on her face. She clearly didn’t understand what Lin Ming was wanting to ask.

“It’s fine, pretend I didn’t say anything.” Lin Ming shook his head. He continued walking through this land and reached that place where the spiritual lives were being sealed up by violet sun stones.

He had already found a violet sun stone embryo that was buried in a very shallow area. It hadn’t yet formed its own intelligence and was shaped just like a monkey.

But, how to take it out was another problem altogether.

The most direct method was to destroy this violet sun crystal seal and then take out the violet sun stone embryo. But, Lin Ming was well aware of his own abilities. How could an array formation laid down by an Empyrean be easily broken by him?

Lin Ming stretched out a hand. According to what he could sense within the violet sun crystal mountain, the violet sun stone embryo was a mere three feet away from him. However, these three feet had become an insurmountable moat.

“Grandmist space!”

Lin Ming’s thoughts concentrated and a lush red Prime Emperor Lotus Flower bloomed behind him. Grandmist space was able to decompose all matter and Laws. Lin Ming wanted to cover up this area with the grandmist space to see if it could do anything, but he was soon disappointed.

Around the violet sun crystal mountain was an invisible force field that isolated all infiltration of energy.

The energy that Lin Ming released struck this force field and it was the same as a slight gust of wind striking a towering oak; there was simply no response at all.

“Lin Ming, it’s impossible for you to break this seal. Let alone you, even if my aunty were here she still wouldn’t be able to do anything. This is an array formation laid down by an Empyrean powerhouse. It has formed its own independent world and has even crossed through billions of years. It is not something that the average person could hope to unravel.”

Mo Eversnow’s voice echoed within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea. How could Lin Ming not know this? Even so, he couldn’t stand idly by and just return empty-handed!

At this time, Lin Ming suddenly thought of something. “Fishy, could you help me with something?”

“Mm, alright Big Brother Lin Ming.” Fishy’s voice echoed back.

Lin Ming used his true essence to form an enchantment, isolating the high temperature and pressure in this deep underground world. Then, he traced his spatial ring and a gentle energy wrapped around Fishy, bringing her out in front of Lin Ming.

After eating some violet sun crystals, Fishy had already restored her rosy color and liveliness. Her cute and round cheeks were just like red apples.

“Wow, what a big purple stone! It’s much larger than what I imagined!”

Fishy looked up at the massive violet sun crystal mountain in front of her, her dark eyes going wide. Her pupils filled with a radiant light. This was just like a little girl who loved eating sweets coming face to face with a massive mountain-sized cake.

Although Fishy had ‘seen’ this area, she had never personally been here herself. The visual impact of this massive violet sun crystal mountain was far too great.

“Fishy, do you think… um, well… do you think you could try taking a bite out of this violet sun crystal?”

As Lin Ming said this, a strange and awkward color came over his face. Even he felt that his own words were ridiculous. Even he couldn’t do anything against this Empyrean level seal, much less a little girl who couldn’t even defeather a chicken. Moreover, she would have to use her teeth to do it. This was just far too ridiculous.

However, there were too many strange things occurring within Fishy’s body. When she was in the Extreme Violet Ring’s space, Lin Ming was able to see Fishy eat violet sun crystals like they were delicious cookies. And, the hardness of a violet sun crystal far surpassed that of diamonds found in the mortal world.

This Empyrean seal was essentially a massive violet sun crystal. If so, then Yan Littlefish might have a small chance of being able to bite it apart. There were far too many strange Laws within Fishy that Lin Ming couldn’t understand. Many of the most fundamental and basic rules of the Heavenly Dao didn’t apply to Fishy.

Mo Eversnow was speechless. Lin Ming’s attempt might have seemed absurd, but it wasn’t necessarily impossible. Fishy being able to find this place was already an unbelievable matter.

“Bite it…” Fishy looked at that incomparably massive violet sun crystal mountain and licked her lips. Her two eyes shined and she drooled a bit, like she was becoming more and more hungry.

“Mm, be careful though. If anything strange happens then we’re leaving immediately.” Lin Ming cautioned. He used his sense to surround Fishy’s body. If anything happened he would immediately take her back into the Extreme Violet Ring.

Fishy rubbed her small belly and then dropped down onto the violet sun crystal mountain like a tiny kitten, taking a sudden bite.

Crunch!

With a loud crisp sound, a strange occurrence happened where Fishy bit down. The indescribable energy structure began to unravel, dissolving into pure energy underneath Mo Eversnow and Lin Ming's astonished gaze!

"Um… it's very hard…"

Fishy mumbled as she had something between her lips. She made a visible effort to bite down harder, just like she was chewing on a frozen steamed bun. Then, bit off that piece of violet sun crystal.

"This… this…!" Lin Ming took a deep breath and glanced at Mo Eversnow, a deep awe in both of their eyes.

This child… was too sturdy!

Lin Ming also hadn't expected anything to come from this; he had only wanted to give it a try. But, the result was that it actually worked! This Divine Seal Array was laid down by some ancient Empyrean. What would that Empyrean do if they realized that this array formation they laid down with so much effort was eaten up by a little girl as if it were food?

"It's very hard… my teeth hurt…" Fishy held her hands up to her small cheeks and gently rubbed them. That piece of violet sun crystal was still between in her lips; she hadn't been able to eat it.

Mo Eversnow looked at Fishy and gently smiled. She said, "Violet sun stones and crystals are originally a condensation of energy. It seems that Fishy's body can decompose energy and then absorb it. This is truly incredible. Even a violet sun crystal used by an Empyrean to lay down an array formation can be eaten up by you."

When this ancient Empyrean laid down this array formation, they had clearly refined and transformed the energy within the violet sun crystal. It was just that it still wasn't able to surpass the strange Laws contained within Fishy's body, thus such a result occurred. But, to depend on Fishy to eat up this entire massive seal was simply impossible. Even a hundred million years wouldn't be enough time for her to finish it off.

Let alone eating this giant seal, even biting through the violet sun crystal barrier and taking out that violet sun stone embryo was a vast and time-consuming project to Fishy.

As Mo Eversnow and Lin Ming were thinking, the entire underground world began to violently tremble. With a loud rumbling sound, rocks began to fall down from all around the enchantment. Startled, Lin Ming directly received Fishy back into the Extreme Violet Ring, maintaining complete vigilance of his surroundings.

“This is…”

Lin Ming held his breath. He could feel abnormally great energy fluctuations all around him, as if some slumbering ancient beast was awakening.

Mo Eversnow was also alarmed. She had specifically used her sense to investigate this underground world but hadn’t been able to find any other living life forms here. As for that giant seal, there was no way that it could have been broken just because Fishy took a tiny little bite from it.

At this moment, a potent and ancient voice containing an ice cold killing intent echoed throughout the entire world. “Who is it? Who dares to disturb my slumber!”

“Slumber!?”

Lin Ming was beyond shocked. This underground world that had passed through billions of years actually had some sort of existence living here!

Just how long had it slept for? Was it possible for anything to live this long!?

And from the pressure and aura surging out from that voice, this existence’s strength had reached a terrifying boundary. Even if it weren’t an Empyrean, it was still an existence whose strength reigned near the peak! Such a being was not something that Lin Ming could deal with.

Mo Eversnow was panic-stricken. She sent out her divine sense, and this time she was finally able to sense this other existence. Hidden deep within the violet sun crystal mountain was an incomparably powerful soul!

It was… the same as her, a soul form!

Soul? Could it be an Empyrean's soul?

Mo Eversnow sucked in a deep breath. From this other's aura she could sense a deep killing intent. If it were truly the soul of an ancient Empyrean, then even if they only had their soul remaining, that was still countless times more than enough to kill them all without a chance of resisting!

"Since you dare to disturb my slumber, then compensate… with your lives!" The ancient voice said, cold and heartless, without the least bit of emotion.

This voice was the same as the uncaring Heavenly Dao. The Heavenly Dao was unbiased and ruthless, seeing all of life as nothing at all. In front of the Heavenly Dao, humans were no different from ants, everything was equal!

"Senior, please wait a moment!" As Lin Ming felt this killing intent he could feel sweat seeping out all over his body. If he died here then that really would be too great of an injustice. He didn't know who this ancient slumbering existence was, but its attitude was extremely bad. Just because they had disturbed its slumber, it was actually planning to kill them in return.

Lin Ming revolved his true essence to the limit and the Phoenix Blood Spear leapt to his hands. The Heretical God Force completely opened and the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower also bloomed behind him. In that instant, Lin Ming had used his complete strength.

It was impossible for him to just sit here and wait for death to come to him. His only choice left was to desperately struggle for his life!

Chapter 1149 – Horrifying Power

Chapter 1149 – Horrifying Power

…

…

…

"Lin Ming, hurry up and retreat!" Mo Eversnow's voice rapidly sounded out in Lin Ming's mind. At this time, the disparity between Lin Ming's strength and the strength of that terrifying soul couldn't even be described as a firefly against the full moon!

In this moment of life or death, Lin Ming waved the Phoenix Blood Spear. Suddenly, a brilliant gold light blazed from between his eyes as he burned the blood of the Ancient Phoenix!

The power of thunder and fire within the Heretical God Seedling flooded out and wrapped around the Phoenix Blood Spear. With a thrust forwards, the power of thunderfire twisted around a blue lotus that hurtled straight towards the ancient soul!

The power of thunder was the nemesis of soul forms. Lin Ming pouring the power of thunder into the Blue Lotus Flame Dance was already using his complete strength!

He wanted to use the momentum from this attack to run away.

After all, this ancient soul might be the existence suppressed underneath the Divine Seal Array. If this were true, then even if it were incomparably powerful, it still had to be restricted by the sealing array formation. There was a chance that he could escape from here!

"Mm?"

As the ancient soul saw the deep red Prime Emperor Lotus Flower bloom from behind Lin Ming and emit a soft trill, it was faintly surprised. But, this was only a little bit. At this time, the thunderfire-twisted blue lotus spear light was already shooting towards it at incredible speeds. The ancient soul didn't seem to care at all. With a mere thought, a rustling sound filled the air as its battle spirit surged outwards, overwhelming the world!

Like an undefeatable enemy, the battle spirit filled the entire space. The thunderfire blue lotus that Lin Ming shot out was swallowed up by this world of will projection, as if a black hole had formed, swallowed everything!

"It vanished!?"

Lin Ming's hands and feet instantly turned ice cold. It wasn't just his thunderfire blue lotus, but even the grandmist space around it seemed as if it was swallowed up by that world of will projection!

This was a power of Laws that he was completely unable to understand. His opponent was only a soul form, but it was actually able to rely on just its battle spirit to achieve such a terrifying combat strength!

"Your martial skill is quite good. Is this a force field? The rank is very high!" The old voice echoed out. The ancient soul was obviously referring to the Primordius martial intent's grandmist space.

Although this ancient soul's experience was amazing, it actually wasn't able to recognize just where this grandmist space came from. This wasn't because Lin Ming used a martial skill to conceal the energy fluctuations of the grandmist space, but because Empyrean Primordius was at most born a few dozen million years ago. In other words, this ancient soul had been quietly slumbering here far before Empyrean Primordius had even been born. The ancient soul didn't know of Empyrean Primordius, thus it also didn't recognize this grandmist space.

“Such a powerful martial skill and yet you can’t use its full strength. What a waste of heaven’s gifts, heh, you might as well give it to me!”

The ancient soul sneered. Its world of will projection blocked out all of the surrounding space. Lin Ming could see countless battle spirit tentacles stretching out endlessly like an infinitely large spider web, sealing off all the space for several hundred miles. And Lin Ming was a bug caught in that spider web; it was impossible for him to escape!

Lin Ming’s thoughts sank. Was this truly the existence suppressed by this seal? If so, how could it casually display such horrifying supernatural powers?

Or, perhaps the seal had already weakened and it was able to use a greater portion of its strength.

In this sort of situation, Lin Ming tightly gripped onto the Phoenix Blood Spear, his mind tighter than a steel wire. Facing such a life or death crisis, he had to remain calm at all costs, otherwise he would never find a chance to escape.

Lin Ming’s palms were already slick with sweat, but his eyes still remained as calm and placid as before.

In all these years growing up and walking down the road of martial arts, he had experienced countless life or death situations. Although this wasn’t the most dangerous one, this opponent was the most powerful he had ever faced!

“If you kill me then you’ll never obtain my cultivation methods or martial skills. My body does not have any cultivation method jade slips!”

Lin Ming gloomily said. One of the unique aspects of a transcendent divine might was that it was nearly impossible to duplicate. The only way was to obtain a transcendent divine might jade slip, or be like Lin Ming and have the ability to transform another’s soul into pure memories. If one tried this using another method, they would inevitably be influenced by the other’s spirit mark.

“Then that’s a pity. But… you will still die here!”

The ancient soul’s voice contained a light killing intent. Its world of will protection still enveloped all of the surrounding space, removing any chance of Lin Ming being able to escape.

“Senior, may I ask you for a reason why you wish to kill me? I did not mean to offend you, but because I only disturbed your rest you wish to kill me?” Lin Ming was clear that these ancient monsters had extremely eccentric and paranoid personalities. They were reckless and did whatever they desired, and wanting to use reason to persuade them was simply an impossible hope. Moreover, the existence sealed here might be a bloodthirsty and vicious demon to begin with. Still, Lin Ming hoped that he could avoid this battle where his chances of winning approached zero.

“That’s right! And what if I do? In order to allow my soul to withstand the endless tides of time, I used the Destruction Sundering Art, meaning that every time I had to awaken, it would cause great harm to my life! In order to not be bothered by pests, I purposefully established this hidden land so that I could rest here. I never imagined that someone like you would be able to find this place. If I let you leave and you spread the news of my slumber here, and also reveal the giant violet sun crystal mountain that exists here, then who knows how many self-serving powerhouses will come here, thinking themselves indestructible because of their greed, or how many so-called geniuses would come thinking their luck and destiny would protect them. Although I don’t fear any of them, my peaceful days would be numbered!”

As that ancient soul spoke, there was only a faint humming noise like ghosts and spirits crying and screaming. The space all around began to violently vibrate, and underneath Lin Ming, the ground began to collapse. The massive violet sun crystal mountain trembled as a hazy shadow appeared on it, gradually forming the face of a person.

This face was hundreds of feet high and a gray-green color. Its face was expressionless but its eyes were cold and sharp, like a divine god overlooking the world.

This was clearly the main form of the ancient soul!

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. Facing this ancient soul, the pressure he felt was like facing the endless heavens themselves. Was this the soul of an Empyrean?

With things having devolved to this point, Lin Ming knew that any promise he made to keep what he learnt a secret would be just a joke. Fighting was inevitable!

At this time, a voice suddenly resounded in his mind. It was Mo Eversnow's true essence sound transmission. "Lin Ming, it's clear that the only path we have left is to fight. If… if I fall into a deep sleep once more, you'll have to rely on yourself from now on."

"Miss Mo!" Lin Ming anxious said, startled.

"There is no need for needless words! If I fall into a deep sleep again then there will always remain the chance that you can awaken me once more, and perhaps one day when you are stronger you can even reform my mortal body. But if you were to die here, everything we've done so far would come to nothing!"

As Mo Eversnow spoke, her soul force began to penetrate into Lin Ming's spiritual sea. She wasn't attempting to seize his body, but was trying to fuse with his soul for a short duration and wield dual control of Lin Ming's body. Like this, the two of them could display their strongest combat strength. After Lin Ming crossed heavenly tribulation, his combat strength could not be underestimated.

At this time, there was a whistling sound as a brilliant light flashed and an incomparably keen sword shot out from between the ancient soul's eyebrows.

This sword was forged by both soul force and battle spirit. As it appeared, it sliced apart the Divine Realm space!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. In this face of this peerless power, he and Mo Eversnow both poured their complete soul and will into the Magic Cube!

"Awaken, Magic Cube, lend me your strength!"

Mo Eversnow's cold and clear voice echoed out as she began to burn her soul force.

Of everything Lin Ming had, the only thing with the strength to resist this ancient soul was the Magic Cube!

The Magic Cube was a divine instrument of the soul, and this ancient existence was also a soul form. This was the only reason why Mo Eversnow had a faint hope that they could defeat this great enemy.

With Lin Ming's current strength, it was still far from enough for being able to galvanize the Magic Cube. To Lin Ming, the Magic Cube was only a soul treasure that passively defended him.

It could only remain defensive and not attack.

The exception was if a situation occurred like before, when he had fought Yang Yun at the Temple of Marvels. At that time, the Ancient Devil's soul had rushed into Lin Ming's spiritual sea and wanted to seize his body. But, because of the passive defensive powers of the Magic Cube, the Ancient Devil had suffered serious damage to its soul. This was the only way that this ancient soul could be defeated. Otherwise, this ancient soul would branch off a tiny portion of its soul and will to attack Lin Ming. Lin Ming could rely on the Magic Cube to defend, but it was impossible for him to harm his opponent; at most he would swallow up the tiny portion of soul that attacked him.

In order to defeat this ancient soul, the only method was to drive the Magic Cube to attack on its own initiative. But with Mo Eversnow's current condition, the price for this would be tremendous! There would only be a single chance!

Hum- Hum- Hum-

The Magic Cube slumbering within Lin Ming's spiritual sea began to rapidly spin, forming an ash gray soul storm. After this soul storm was formed, it grew increasingly intense, like a black hole that would swallow all of existence.

Kacha!

With a harsh cracking sound, the sword of soul and will that the ancient soul sent out chopped down onto that black hole formed by the Magic Cube. Then, it suddenly disappeared without the slightest hint that it ever existed!

As the ancient soul saw this, its expression suddenly changed. "This aura, could it be… just how…"

The tiny soul force that was swallowed up by the Magic Cube had completely disappeared, but the ancient soul was clearly unharmed. It was clear that this wisp of soul was a less than insignificant loss.

It narrowed its eyes, carefully sensing just where its soul wisp had gone to. Finally, it discovered that after its soul wisp had been parted from its body, even the spirit mark contained within it was completely erased. This sort of feeling was like its soul wisp had fallen into a true black hole and was isolated in a completely different space-time.

"It's really that object! You have that thing on your body!?" The ancient soul said, suddenly excited. Its originally emotionless face began to experience all sorts of changes.

Lin Ming's mind shook as he heard this. Without a doubt, the object that this ancient soul referred to was the Magic Cube!

Magic Cube!

This was Lin Ming's first time hearing that anyone knew of the Magic Cube beyond the Verdant Feather Holy Lands!

He went on full alert. If this ancient soul knew of the Magic Cube, then it naturally knew of the Magic Cube’s value too. There was a chance that it would compete for it with everything it had!

Lin Ming gathered his strength, preparing for an all-out strike. Then, at this time, the ancient voice suddenly said, “Alright, alright, consider this over. If you stop now then the damage won’t be too great on you. Otherwise, if you use this treasure with your strength then even you might end up as a sacrifice!”

Chapter 1150 – World Calamity

Chapter 1150 – World Calamity

…

…

…

Lin Ming continued to revolve all the energy in his body. It was impossible for him to stop just because of some words, but if he really did continue to attack then he would need to burn Mo Eversnow’s soul force. Thus, Lin Ming wasn’t willing to recklessly send out such a strike. He didn’t dare to confirm whether or not Mo Eversnow would experience permanent damage to her soul after falling into a deep slumber twice. At that time, perhaps even using dragon marrow blood wouldn’t be enough to awaken her.

Lin Ming’s nerves were taut, fully alert of his surroundings to prevent any surprise attack from the ancient soul.

“Hehe, it’s like you don’t believe me. If I said you can stop then I naturally won’t attack you again, otherwise, do you think that in a situation where I am prepared, you could rely on yourself and that other soul force within you to use that tool and kill me?” The ancient soul sneered.

The ancient soul had seen through Mo Eversnow’s existence. This was also reasonable. Mo Eversnow had originally been hiding in the Magic Cube space, so the ancient soul hadn’t been able to sense her. But afterwards, Mo Eversnow had released her soul force and began to gather up energy for an attack. The ancient soul’s soul force was much more powerful than Mo Eversnow’s so it was naturally able to discover her!

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment and then temporarily cut off the connection between his spiritual sea and the Magic Cube. Otherwise, if the Magic Cube continued to spin, it would consume more and more of Mo Eversnow's soul force.

Although the Magic Cube had stopped spinning, Mo Eversnow's soul was still momentarily joined with Lin Ming's. The two of them could activate the Magic Cube to counterattack at any moment.

"Where did you get that?" The ancient soul suddenly asked.

Lin Ming remained silent, not replying. The ancient soul chuckled, as if it didn't care if Lin Ming answered or not, "In truth, this question doesn't matter! No matter what you say, you obtaining this object is your good fortune! I never thought that after 3.6 billion years, that object would appear in this world once more. It seems that the great calamity of this world is approaching once more."

The ancient soul whispered. But, these words dumbfounded Lin Ming.

3.6 billion years!?

This soul had lived for 3.6 billion years!?

Just what sort of concept was 3.6 billion years? The evolution of life on a planet often only happened for several hundred million years. 3.6 billion years was enough for a star to be born and then perish!

This was an unimaginable amount of time. Even an Empyrean could not live this long!

Let alone 3.6 billion years, there was no one that was capable of living for 100 million years. 100 million years seemed to be one of the limits that the Laws of the world placed on a martial artist's life. 100 million years could be called its own era within the Divine Realm, and no one was able to live past an era. Although an Empyrean could control the world Laws to a certain degree, it wasn't absolute control, nor could they couldn't control every Law. There were certain Laws that even they had to submit to, just like everyone else.

For instance, the ebb and flow of time!

“Hehe, you seem to be very surprised? Then I might as well tell you that the reason I am able to live this long is because I am not a human, but… an artifact spirit!”

Lin Ming was surprised yet again.

Artifact spirit!?

Heavens! If an artifact spirit was powerful to this degree, just what rank of spirit artifact did it occupy?

An artifact spirit was a type of life, however it was not one with a flesh and blood body, but an energy life form. In the past, when Lin Ming had met the temple spirit from Divine Phoenix Island’s mystic realm, that had been a similar existence. Their lives were much longer than humans’ and even vicious beasts’. It wasn’t strange for them to sleep for 100,000 years at a time. According to that temple spirit, their lives lasted as long as rocks!

So, surviving for several hundred million years wasn’t strange. Moreover, Lin Ming had heard this ancient spirit say that it had used some special technique called the Destruction Sundering Art. Although he didn’t know what it was, he could guess that it was some special technique that could extend one’s life through placing oneself into a deep sleep.

Seeing that this ancient existence before him was an old monster that had lived for 3.6 billion years, Lin Ming felt as if all of this were unreal.

“Great calamity… what do you mean by great calamity?” Lin Ming asked, his voice low.

“That is the great calamity of the world! In this world, there is nothing that could exist in perpetuity, forever and eternal. Nothing can resist the withering of time. Empyreans cannot, God Beasts cannot, artifacts spirits cannot, this independent world cannot, and even the boundless universe cannot! This world will always encounter a great calamity. And if this calamity is too great, then even this universe may collapse and be forever destroyed! As for what this eventual disaster is, not even I can foretell!”

Hearing the ancient soul's words, Lin Ming was stricken, "Destruction of the universe?"

Did that mean that not only the billion worlds of the lower realms, but also the 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm, including all life that dwelled within them would be completed exterminated!?

In front of such a world-shattering storm, even an Empyrean would be as weak as an ant!

"Yes! However, that is something that may occur every several hundred million years or dozens of billions of years. As for this great calamity, the universe may not necessarily be destroyed."

"So are you saying that 3.6 billion years ago, there was such a great calamity?" Lin Ming could feel that what this ancient soul said was true. Could it mean that this Magic Cube which appeared during these great calamities was actually an ominous object?

"Yes, that disaster caused the world Laws to change. Because of that, body transformation Laws were no longer suitable for humans, and that is when the essence gathering system began to flourish throughout all civilizations."

"This…" Lin Ming was suddenly enlightened. He had heard that the rules of the world had changed, and thus dual body and energy cultivation had become something that defied the heavens' will. But as for why or when that happened, even Mo Eversnow wasn't able to answer him. Only today did he learn the reason why!

A calamity that could change the very Laws of this world; what kind of terrifying storm had the universe passed through?

"Hehe, I feel that you also dual cultivate body and energy. Really, you've got guts and talent, and you're not too weak either. You have found many lucky chances and you even practice transcendent divine mights. If you can truly walk further down the road of dual body and energy cultivation and break through the shackles that bind you, there is a faint chance that you will become an Empyrean in the future!"

The ancient soul evaluated. This was already an extremely high estimate of Lin Ming. Since ancient times, no matter how talented a genius was, they would never have 100% confidence of becoming an Empyrean. For someone to have even a faint ray of hope already meant that they were an extraordinary genius of their generation!

As the ancient soul spoke to here, it suddenly grinned. It playfully said, "Hehe, that little girl in your body is still standing guard against me. Aren't you afraid that her soul will suffer tremendous damage once again?"

A cyan light suddenly shot out from between the ancient soul's eyebrows, straight into Lin Ming!

Lin Ming was startled, nearly subconsciously counterattacking. However, he immediately realized that this cyan light didn't have any hostility to it at all. Rather, it was a soft, gentle strength.

He didn't stop it. As this cyan light covered his body, a cool feeling spread throughout him as if all the pores in his body were opening.

Lin Ming's mind stirred. He knew that the light this ancient soul released was helping to soothe and heal Mo Eversnow's soul injuries.

Mo Eversnow had briefly combusted her soul just now to activate the Magic Cube. Although she hadn't sent out a true attack, she still had to consume a tremendous amount of soul force all this time. This caused more wounds to stack up on top of her previous injuries.

The soul energy that this ancient soul sent out was able to supplement Mo Eversnow's damaged soul force. At least, it would help her so that her hidden wounds wouldn't suddenly erupt.

Woosh!

Mo Eversnow and Lin Ming's souls separated. She didn't form a soul projection but remained in Lin Ming's spiritual sea. Clothed in pure white, her face was pale and wan. Briefly activating the Magic Cube just now had greatly consumed her energy.

"Lin Ming, that artifact spirit..." Mo Eversnow never imagined that this ancient artifact spirit would actually help heal her wounds.

The ancient soul had undergone a complete change in personality from before discovering the Magic Cube to after discovering the Magic Cube. Mo Eversnow thought this was somewhat strange. She didn't think that this ancient soul was some kind-hearted savior. Everything must have been because of the Magic Cube.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then said, "I deeply thank Senior for helping my friend. Could Senior have some sort of fate with the Magic Cube? Could it be that..." As Lin Ming spoke, an inexplicable idea suddenly popped up in his mind. "Could Senior be an artifact spirit of a treasure similar to the Magic Cube?"

There were two treasures similar to the Magic Cube. Could this ancient soul be an artifact spirit of one of those treasures?

"Magic Cube... hehe, that name is quite suitable." The ancient soul casually said, "Not only do you possess the Magic Cube but you also know that there are two other similar objects. Quite interesting, you two are. However, I am not an artifact spirit of those treasures."

The ancient soul shook its head, "Those three objects do not seem to have ever had an artifact spirit. If they did, then if an artifact spirit was able to activate the power of those three tools themselves, the power of that would be unimaginable!

"I am the life transcendent spirit treasure forged by Empyrean Divine Sea himself – the Ancient Elysium Seal. In fact, you have already seen my true form. That is the violet sun crystal mountain in front of you!"

As the ancient soul spoke, Lin Ming was shocked. It turned out that this giant violet sun crystal mountain was actually a transcendent spirit treasure, the Ancient Elysium Seal!

“This is…” Lin Ming was at a loss for words. When Fishy had bitten into the crystal, what she had been biting into was a transcendent spirit treasure. And, strangest of all was that she had actually managed to bite off a piece. That was simply too ridiculous!

A transcendent spirit treasure was an existence on the same level as a transcendent divine might. This sort of thing surpassed the reach of the Heavenly Dao and could control the world Laws to a certain degree. It was an existence that the Heavenly Dao would not abide. Once one was born, it would have to undergo heavenly tribulation!

Fishy had actually bitten off a piece of a transcendent spirit treasure?

The ancient soul seemed to know what Lin Ming was thinking. It laughed and said, “The violet sun crystal mountain that that little girl bit into is only a manifestation of my body. The core of my being, the true Ancient Elysium Seal, is still stabilizing the eye of this Divine Seal Array. Although that little girl is special, she hasn’t yet grown. Causing some insignificant damage to an Empyrean’s array formation is already her limit. If she wanted to destroy it, or even me, the transcendent spirit treasure guarding it, that would simply be impossible.”

As the ancient soul spoke, an idea popped up in Lin Ming’s mind. In the past, Empyrean Divine Sea had gone to every extreme, sparing no expense to lay down this array formation and had even used his own life transcendent spirit to do it. So, just what was sealed underneath this Divine Seal Array Formation? It had actually been sealed away for 3.6 billion years!

Chapter 1151 – Refining the Stone Embryo

Chapter 1151 – Refining the Stone Embryo

…

…

…

Lin Ming hesitated for a bit. If he really asked what was suppressed beneath the Ancient Elysium Seal then that would be unavoidably rude and offensive. This was definitely something that the Ancient Elysium Seal's artifact spirit wouldn't be willing to reveal.

Thinking like this, Lin Ming said, "Senior, junior would like to ask you a question. How come you decided not to kill me when you saw the Magic Cube?"

Lin Ming felt this was a bit strange. This ancient soul clearly knew the value of the Magic Cube but it had no intention of fighting Lin Ming for it. This seemed a bit contrary to common sense.

The ancient artifact spirit laughed as it heard Lin Ming's question. Its gruff voice sounded a bit lonely and desolate. "Every person and every treasure has their own time and era. My era ended with Empyrean Divine Seal 3.6 billion years ago. That bygone and splendid era had belonged to us, but now I will no longer fight for anything. It is impossible for me to make another breakthrough in my path. The reason that I used the Destruction Sundering Art was to extend my own life, because the only reason I have left for existing is to protect this Divine Seal Array Formation!

"And when the true heavenly tribulation arrives, it will need heroes of that era to step forwards and lead the charge to battle against destruction. There will need to be a protagonist that can rise above all, and I clearly cannot be that person. Even if this Divine

Seal Array Formation no longer needed my protection and I was capable of leaving this land, the most I could accomplish would be to play a supporting role. As for you, you do have a faint chance of becoming that leading hero that this era needs. Of course, whether or not you can accomplish this is actually an unknown."

The ancient artifact spirit said. Rather than believing in Lin Ming, what it believed in was the Magic Cube.

Those that obtained the Magic Cube didn't necessarily have the destiny to withstand possessing it. In the past, Mo Eversnow's grandfather was a Great World King and Mo Eversnow herself was a peerless genius. They had found the Magic Cube, but not only did they not become the hero of their era, but they had instead suffered catastrophe.

If Lin Ming perished, there would be someone else who would inherit his destiny. This cycle would continue on and on until the Magic Cube would fall into the hands of the true protagonist!

Just how long was a hundred million years? Even if the Magic Cube only changed masters every 10,000 years, it could still switch between the hands of 10,000 masters. Among these people, there was bound to be an unrivalled hero.

"Senior… are you saying that for these last 3.6 billion years, you've been… protecting this Divine Seal Array Formation?"

"Yes. Are you curious as to what is suppressed underneath the Divine Seal Array Formation? I advise you to put away your curiosity. This thing far surpasses your wildest imaginations. It is something related to the great world calamity from 3.6 billion years ago! If you learn what it is, not only will it bring no benefits to you, but it may even draw a disaster upon your head."

As Lin Ming heard the ancient soul's words, his mind turned numb.

3.6 billion years… no matter what kind of blood and flesh life form it was, it should have been turned to dust by now!

The only possibility was if it was an energy life form like an artifact spirit. But, whatever it was actually needed such a grand and mighty array formation to suppress it? Could it be…

Lin Ming thought of the demon bead and purple card that appeared beside the Magic Cube's phantom. If it were those items, they would truly need to be suppressed like this!

But thinking about this further, Lin Ming shook his head. This ancient soul had said these three objects did not possess artifact spirits. A treasure without an artifact spirit shouldn't have any intelligence of its own and wouldn't need to be suppressed by this seal. Moreover… if they really did possess artifact spirits, then perhaps even the Ancient Elysium Seal wouldn't be able to suppress them.

Lin Ming didn't think about it any further. The day that he grew strong enough, he would inevitably find out what was suppressed here. There was even the possibility that… he would have to face it!

But for now it was just like the Ancient Elysium Seal said. With his weak strength, knowing such a heaven-shaking secret would only bring disaster upon him.

"Senior, junior has one last question. About Yan Littlefish, she is the little girl that this junior brought here. Would you know what secrets her life has?"

The ancient soul was silent for a moment. It said, "About her, I only have some faint speculations. I have been sleeping here for far too long and there are many matters that happened outside which I cannot guess. Fate is illusory and unpredictable. Even an Empyrean cannot grasp the winding roads of fate that we all walk down, and the future will always be shrouded in mist. But, at the appropriate time, you will find out the truth."

The ancient soul slowly said, its voice bringing with it a dim bleakness. Lin Ming heard it and remained silent. Even an Empyrean was unable to control fate. In truth, things like destiny, lucky chances, and karma, when all of these were combined together, they formed something that could be called a road that existed separate to and above the Heavenly Dao. It was whimsical, unpredictable, and impossible to determine.

“Junior, you and that little soul form girl within you are extreme geniuses of your generations. Even that little child that eats violet sun crystals is not ordinary. You came here to where I slumber and wanted to break off a piece of this grand array. Just what do you seek here?”

“Junior came for a violet sun stone embryo.” Lin Ming directly said.

“Violet sun stone embryo… a spirit body bred within a violet sun crystal? That’s easy. My manifested body has many such things sealed within it. I will bestow you one. But after this, you will have to walk down your own road. I will wait 10,000 years for you and see whether you fade into ashes or become a truly supreme character of the Divine Realm! Hahaha!”

The ancient soul guffawed. Then, a wave of purple light surged towards Lin Ming, sweeping over him. Lin Ming felt the space in front of him suddenly distort as energy wrapped around him and he was shifted outside of the spatial node. But at this time, right beside Lin Ming, a human-sized violet sun crystal also appeared, slowly floating in air. Sealed inside this violet sun crystal was a purple stone monkey. Although it was a stone monkey, it looked completely lifelike. It had black crystal eyes and every detail on its body was utterly perfect, down to every single hair.

This was the violet sun stone embryo.

Lin Ming waved his hand and directly received the violet sun stone embryo into the Extreme Violet Ring.

Mo Eversnow turned into a stream of light and entered the Extreme Violet Ring. As she saw the stone monkey in front of her, she took a light breath. “This is a violet sun stone embryo that has formed for hundreds of millions of years. Empyrean Divine Seal was truly amazing. He was able to take the massive violet sun crystal mountain as a derivative body of the Ancient Elysium Seal and constantly nourish it with energy fathered from the array formation, sealing it all away for 3.6 billion years in a single try and even creating a world that forms violet sun stone embryos. Just any one of these is a top quality treasure amongst all top quality treasures!”

Mo Eversnow sighed as she deeply felt the difference between her strength and the strength of an Empyrean. When she had been at her peak state, she had only been a half-step World King.

“Indeed, perhaps in the past Empyrean Divine Seal was the hero who led the forces of this universe to resist the great calamity… and even now, the Divine Seal Array Formation is still suppressing something related to the great calamity. I wonder just what it is…

“Lin Ming, we’ve smoothly succeeded in obtaining the violet sun stone embryo, but it’s likely that River Feather hasn’t yet gathered the other materials required for refining the Esoteric Immortality Pill. Instead of returning to Immemorial Imperial City now and wasting our time, we might as well stay underground here. I will refine the essence of the violet sun stone embryo and you can cultivate. With your level of spirit body, there is no bottleneck for you between Ninefall and the Divine Sea. You only need to absorb enough origin energy and have your world seed germinate.”

“Okay!”

During Lin Ming’s Ninefall, he had absorbed a massive amount of world Law fragments. However, he hadn’t yet found the time to perceive them. To slowly digest and comprehend these Laws was an extremely slow process.

Lin Ming rose up until he was only 3000 miles underground and began to close up in training here. Deep underground, although the level of heat wasn’t like that of the 18 Hells of Flame, which contained different types of Laws, it was still able to play a role in enhancing his comprehension of the Concept of Fire.

As for Mo Eversnow, after she completely refined the violet sun stone embryo, she took out the bone slip that Lin Ming purchased from the underworld trade fair and began to skim through its contents. This was a bone slip from ancient times. Although it was just a fragment, there were likely many things recorded within that were valuable.

Fishy spent these days happy and comfortable. Eating then sleeping, then waking up to eat again.

After the violet sun stone embryo was refined by Mo Eversnow, all that was left over was the violent sun crystal skin. This was also graciously eaten by Fishy.

This violet sun crystal skin was of a far higher quality than ordinary violet sun crystals.

The violet sun crystals mined from within violet sun stone mines would absorb heaven and earth origin energy from the world, even as it slowly emitted energy. Finally, this energy would achieve a balance, and the energy contained within these crystals would not increase or diminish.

But, the Divine Seal Array Formation's massive violet sun crystal mountain was different. Because of the barrier formed from the array formation, it would only absorb energy without any escaping. This violet sun crystal skin had formed over 2 billion years, gathering energy all the while. The purity and degree of energy contained within it could not be compared to those violet sun crystals mined from violet sun stone mines. The difference between them was like wine that had just been brewed versus wine that had been stored in a cellar for a millennium.

After Fishy ate this violet sun crystal skin, her round face blushed red with a sunset glow, as if she had become drunk on wine. Her steps were unsteady and she finally plopped to the ground where she fell straight asleep.

In these days, Fishy had eaten up many valuable violet sun crystals worth tens of millions of violet sun stones. This didn't even include the incomparably precious violet sun crystal skin. Her cheeks became more and more shiny and red and seemed as if one could pinch them and find water. They were like two round happy peaches.

Fishy rested for seven days and seven nights. After waking up, she was unexpectedly still hungry.

Mo Eversnow investigated Fishy's body with her sense. Although she couldn't find any condensation of true essence, she could faintly feel as if something had changed.

This result didn't disappoint Mo Eversnow. If even the Ancient Elysium Seal said that Fishy's physique was extremely special, then it was impossible to awaken her bloodline just by eating a few dozen million violet sun stones.

After waking up, Fishy was able to eat more and more. Even so, her body didn't change at all. It was unknown just where the massive amount of heaven and earth origin energy disappeared to.

Like this, over half a year passed. Deep in meditation, Lin Ming's body suddenly shook and he opened his eyes. Within his dantian, the world seed there had become smaller. But around the world seed there were violent space distortions, as if the whole thing were about to tear apart. This was the symbol that the world seed would soon erupt.

Lin Ming was just a step away from reaching the Divine Sea. If he wanted to, he could force it and even make a breakthrough now. Of course, the best way was to suppress his cultivation to the limit until he naturally made a breakthrough.

"Miss Mo, it's time. Let's return to Immemorial Imperial City."

Chapter 1152 – Sacred Martial Mansion

Chapter 1152 – Sacred Martial Mansion

…

…

…

Illuminated by the rising sun, Immemorial Imperial City seemed like an incomparably massive monster that floated in the skies. It blocked all sunlight for tens of thousands of miles, casting an enormous shadow on True Martial Mainland.

At any moment there were countless spirit ships and mounts shuttling back and forth around Immemorial Imperial City. The smallest of these were like horses, but the larger ones were bigger than mountains. They were like a swarm of locusts that extended to the distant horizon, endless.

Walking through Immemorial Imperial City, there were very few Revolving Core martial artists. If some were seen, they were often young elites that still hadn't grown. As for ordinary martial artists, it was impossible for them to pay the fee to enter the city.

"This second time I've come to Immemorial Imperial City, it seems as if it's much livelier than it was eight months ago." Lin Ming rubbed his chin. The last time he came to Immemorial Imperial City he had felt that there were many young heroic elites, and now there were even more of them. For every 10 people he saw on the street, no more than three or four of them would be over 50 years of age.

As Lin Ming arrived at a corner of the city, he lit up a sound transmitting talisman. This was the sound transmitting mark that River Feather gave to him.

After just 10 breaths of time, Lin Ming received a reply. River Feather was already on his way.

Ever since the last trading fair where Lin Ming had displayed a strength that far surpassed a genius of a World King level Holy Land, River Feather had wholeheartedly wanted to pull closer his relationship with Lin Ming. River Feather would naturally do his best with the task Lin Ming had given him.

"Brother Lin!" In less than an hour, a white-clothed River Feather appeared in Lin Ming's sight, a bright and excited smile on his face. "Haha, lady luck was smiling on me this time; I didn't humiliate myself. I have already prepared all of the materials you wanted!"

"Thank you Brother River." Lin Ming cupped his hands across his chest. It wasn't easy to find the materials required to refine the Esoteric Immortality Pill. Many of the materials were strange and unorthodox ingredients. River Feather's family had a large number of channels and contacts throughout Immemorial Imperial City. With his help, Lin Ming was able to save himself a great deal of time.

"In terms of price, I will make sure to pay you more than enough. I won't let Brother River suffer a loss here."

River Feather was startled. He quickly said, "Brother Lin, what kind of words are these? I was only helping you with some minor matters, and even if you paid me at the normal price my River Family would still turn a profit."

Compared to a favor from Lin Ming, violet sun stones weren't worth mentioning at all.

"That's right, Brother River, I just returned to Immemorial Imperial City and discovered that there are many more young geniuses than there were before. What's going on? Is there some important event that happened recently?"

Lin Ming was only casually asking, but after River Feather heard this, his face glowed with excitement. He enthusiastically said, "These young geniuses are all here to participate in the Sacred Martial Grand Tournament! The Sacred Martial Grand Tournament is a competition between geniuses of the younger generation. There are countless masters and the prizes are extremely rich. But what a pity, the tournament is already half over. Brother Lin missed out this time!"

River Feather shook his head in regret, "They've already begun the knockout rounds. If Brother Lin had come several months ago and signed up, you surely could have won the championship and dazzled everyone!"

"Oh? Sacred Martial Grand Tournament?" Lin Ming's eyebrows arched up. He didn't feel bad that he missed out on the Saint Martial Grand Tournament. This sort of tournament was only a battle between the geniuses in Immemorial Imperial City. No matter how large a city was, there were still limits. It didn't matter if he missed it or not.

"That's right! I have no idea why, but recently True Martial Great World has been holding many tournaments so that juniors can compete with each other. As for my Immemorial Imperial City, this Sacred Martial Grand Tournament is being held by the second World King level influence here – the Sacred Martial Mansion!"

In Immemorial Imperial City, there were two World King level holy lands that had bases. The first was True Martial Holy Lands. That was a Holy Land built by the Great World King of True Martial World and was also the top Holy Land of True Martial World. As for the second World King level Holy Land, that was Saint Martial Mansion.

The two World King level Holy Lands only had a part of their forces based in Immemorial Imperial City; their main headquarters weren't here. But, this was simply how things were. It was already amazing enough that two World King level Holy Lands were based in the same city. Even throughout the entire Divine Realm, this city could be considered somewhat famous.

"It's still a bit early. I'll have my subordinates gather up all the materials for Brother Lin. Brother Lin, if you're free, how about following me to the venue of the Sacred Martial Grand Tournament and taking a look at these geniuses as they fight? The Sacred Martial Grand Tournament is nearing its latter stages, so the ones stepping on stage are all peak talents of

Immemorial Imperial City. There are even extraordinary geniuses from the two World King level Holy Lands! The battles are sure to be amazing!"

As Lin Ming heard River Feather's exuberant tone, he was indeed somewhat tempted. Up until now, the only World King level Holy Land he had experienced was the Ancient Dragon Clan. However, the Ancient Dragon Clan didn't have a World King level martial artist in their ranks at the moment. Lin Ming didn't know just what degree of strength an ordinary World King level Holy Land genius had.

"Okay, let's go take a look."

Lin Ming followed River Feather all the way to the Sacred Martial Grand Tournament's venue. The closer they were, the more outstanding young elites they saw on their way. Many of these people were even more talented than someone like White Daohong.

These martial artists had come from all over True Martial Great World, crossing over countless miles to come here. They hoped to show off their skills in Immemorial Imperial City and gain glory and riches!

"What are the prizes for this Sacred Martial Grand Tournament?" Lin Ming asked.

This question caused River Feather to bubble with even more excitement. He fanatically explained, "The prizes are amazing! The reward for the number one champion is a Nine Divine Shifts Pill! This is a high-grade heaven-step pill that a late Divine Sea powerhouse uses to help attack the Divine Transformation realm. Through taking it, one can help develop their own inner world. If they take this pill, then during the early Divine Transformation realm, the size of their inner world would surpass even the inner worlds of middle Divine Transformation martial artists!"

"The prize can only be used for Divine Sea martial artists to attack the Divine Transformation realm?" Lin Ming traced his chin. It would be a long time until he could use something like this.

“Mm… normally in this sort of competition between geniuses, only Divine Sea realm martial artists will participate, many of them Ninefall geniuses. Life Destruction realm martial artists are busy accumulating energy and perceiving the Laws. Many of them are desperately suppressing their own cultivation as much as possible until they break through to Ninefall and amaze the world with their momentum! If they can reach Ninefall, they can even overturn the heavens! By reaching Ninefall, they will have the luck of having experienced a baptism of a massive amount of Laws!

“To seek Ninefall and find the Nine Divine Shifts, the most important of these 18 boundaries is Ninefall. That is a completely different watershed from the other realms. If a genius can reach Ninefall, the further they go the greater the disparity will become! This is why Ninefall has such significance to Divine Sea geniuses!”

Lin Ming nodded. Indeed, the future achievements of a genius and their degree of talent were most visible and accurately seen during the Divine Sea realm. If a genius couldn’t even form a Ninefall foundation, then there was no way they could ever become a Holy Lord unless they were able to stumble upon a heaven-shaking lucky chance.

As the two spoke, they arrived at a massive palatial construction that spanned hundreds of miles. Without needing River Feather to tell him, Lin Ming could already discern that this was the arena for the Sacred Martial Grand Tournament. The surrounding martial artists had already grouped up into a seething torrent of people. From those that came in and out from countless different entrances, most of them were part of the audience.

“This is spectacular!” Lin Ming praised. Even though this was just a tournament between geniuses in a city, it had still reached such an incredible scale.

“Haha, of course! My Immemorial Imperial City is one of the largest cities of True Martial Great World, and Sacred Martial House is also a true World King level Holy Land. The tournament of geniuses they hold is only inferior to those held by the True Martial Holy Lands!” River Feather said, satisfied by Lin Ming’s acclaim.

But just as River Feather revealed a happy smile, that smile froze on his face. In front of River Feather, a blue-clothed youth strolled into view, clasping a beautiful young woman at his side. This blue-clothed youth had a joking smile as he looked at River Feather.

The blue-clothed youth had a refined and collected energy to him. One could tell that he was a master just from a glance, someone far stronger than River Feather!

This youth didn't pay attention to Lin Ming. He only looked at River Feather and said with a smile, "Isn't that my dear little brother? How are you? The last I heard, you were eliminated in the preliminary matches, right? Why did you come to the main arena? Are you here to watch me compete?" The blue-clothed youth chuckled, his voice grating on River Feather's ears.

Lin Ming remained quiet. He was able to discern the situation with just a glance. This blue-clothed youth was River Feather's older brother. In the mortal world, brothers were as close as they could be, mutually supporting each other. But in these distinguished martial families, especially between half-brothers, there were often struggles in the race to be chosen as the next successor of the family. These struggles could even turn tragic, and the relationship of these brothers was as volatile as water and fire. Thus, mocking each other upon meeting was also normal.

"Hehe, River Feather, if you're smart then I advise you not to struggle with me. Whether it is strength or how many people are under my control, you are inferior to me. In the Sacred Martial Grand Tournament, I am also the only one in the family who made it past the preliminary matches and am able to participate in the finals! In this competition, those who can step on stage are mostly geniuses of World King level Holy Lands. If I can defeat just a single one of them, my status in the family will reach all new heights!"

Chapter 1153 – Grandest Event of All Ages

Chapter 1153 – Grandest Event of All Ages

…

…

…

“He’s your big brother?”

Lin Ming casually asked after the blue-clothed youth left.

River Feather revealed an embarrassed expression, “Brother Lin must think it funny, but he is really my brother. He was born a few years before me so his strength is naturally higher than mine.”

“Mm… he said that he was the only one of your River Family that was able to participate in the finals?”

“That’s right…” River Feather wryly smiled. “The finals have around 200 people that were chosen, and around 80 of them are disciples of Sacred Martial Mansion. The remaining 120 are divided amongst the other influences… the competition is intense, and there is also the True Martial Holy Lands to worry over. They only sent a very small number of disciples to attend, but they still account for over a dozen participants.”

Since this Sacred Martial Grand Tournament was held by Sacred Martial Mansion, the prizes were also distributed by them. And, the most valuable of these prizes would likely be obtained by disciples of Sacred Martial Mansion in the end. It would be difficult for any outsiders to have a chance. As for the True Martial Holy Lands, they had merely sent some stronger disciples to join in on the fun; they couldn’t be considered as having sent their peak disciples, or else that would have been a slap to Sacred Martial Mansion’s face.

After paying an entrance fee of some violet sun stones, Lin Ming and River Feather entered the martial field. Luckily, Lin Ming had already known that this grand finals arena would be gargantuan. Even so, as he entered the arena he was startled. This arena actually held its own dimension realm inside, and extended for 800 miles!

800 miles. If Lin Ming was running at full strength, it wouldn't take long to cross. But, if this size were reflected in just a single building, then that was terrifying!

At this time, the stands in the arena were over a thousand feet high and already filled with people. Looking from afar, the spectators resembled a swarm of ants. Further away, they merged into a dark mass, and even the entire arena appeared solid with people!

The arena stage was divided into a hundred martial fields, and every martial field had its own battle playing out. All sorts of energy explosions recklessly struck against the protections of array formations with dazzling sparks shooting off into the sky. Giant ringing sounds of energy detonations filled the air. When these sounds combined with the raucous cheers of the audience, they seemed to overwhelm the world!

This massive building over 800 miles wide and over 1000 feet high could easily fit a hundred million people!

And in the sky, there were massive array discs floating about. These were battle array discs, similar to the battle array discs Lin Ming had once seen at Skysplit Tower that recorded the battles of the Eightfall War Emperor. However, these battle array discs were much more exquisite and high quality. They were able to gather up the world Laws to form massive phantom projections in the air, reflecting everything happening in the battlefields below them!

At this time, one of the array discs was displaying one of the many battles occurring on stage. Two youths were fighting in the center of a martial stage, their momentum irresistible.

Their phantoms were enlarged by thousands of times until their images were tens thousands of feet tall. Their projections were reflected in the skies above the martial field. In the 800 mile large arena, they were like two giants battling in the air. Even a mortal with poor vision could still see them from a hundred miles away. Of course, there were no mortals present in the audience so they were able to see even more clearly, as if the fight were happening right in front of their eyes!

“What a wonderful atmosphere!”

Lin Ming praised. This sort of martial field really had a magnificent aura to it. The arena was able to hold a hundred million spectators and 100 matches were occurring at the same time. And, the key matches were projected into the skies, allow martial artists from every corner of the arena to see what was happening there!

Just a single Immemorial Imperial City could hold a tournament with such momentum. This was far from what any influence in the lower realms could hope to achieve. As Lin Ming recalled the tournaments that were once held at the Seven Profound Valleys, the difference between the two couldn’t even be described as a firefly to the moon.

As the two youths fought, they sent out energy shockwaves. Sword light, spear light, battle spirit projections, and every other aspect of their battle was amplified to epic proportions for all to see!

This was a truly three-dimensional image. When a massive sword light was sent out, it shot towards the audience, even cutting down upon them!

When this phantom sword light passed through their bodies, those affected really did faintly feel as if they had been spiritually struck. This oppressive feeling was truly lifelike!

Watching such a shocking and stupefying battle, even if one knew that this was only a light projection, it still thrilled the heart!

Especially since these people were all martial artists. As they saw a fight like this, they all began to roar out together!

As martial artists, and especially genius martial artists, the pressure placed on them was intense!

The pressure of competition, the pressure of life or death risks, the pressure of cultivation – when all of these pressures were combined together, they really required an outlet to be released. Now that they could howl out like this, all of them were happy and ecstatic!

“This is crazy!”

Lin Ming took a light breath. In the mortal world, there were all sorts of sports that attracted many people. For instance, kickball competitions and other such movements. These sorts of competitions were able to attract a massive number of fans and spectators, all of whom would cheer during the competition, causing the atmosphere to turn crazy with elation.

But no matter how crazy they were, they could never be even a thousandth as crazy as martial artists watching a battle between powerhouses!

In the world of martial artists, there was no one who didn’t practice martial arts. This was the absolute competition that everyone shared between them. The road of martial arts was everything to a martial artist. In this case with such a spectacular fight occurring right in front of their eyes, the impact could be imagined!

When these martial artists all gathered together, the atmosphere was enough to make their blood boil over!

Many of those in the audience were friends or relatives of the competing martial artists. They were senior-apprentice brothers, junior-apprentice sisters, good brothers, and so forth. As they all shouted out together, their voices were collapsing mountains, spreading over the world like an endless tsunami!

“Oh? Isn’t that Yue Ironrock?” Lin Ming discovered that in a corner of the arena there was a towering young man. That was Yue Ironrock.

"When Yue Ironrock stayed in the enchantment that hastened the flow of time, that was all for this Sacred Martial Grand Tournament?"

As Lin Ming thought about this, he looked over at Yue Ironrock. Currently, Yue Ironrock's complexion was extremely poor. The opponent he faced was a red-haired youth with sharp eyebrows that slanted upwards, bright eyes, and a square face that looked as if it had been hewed from stone with a very sharp axe. This person's aura seemed to light up with red flames. His aura was wild and reckless, as capricious as a demon!

"That is really Yue Ironrock. His luck is poor enough. The opponent he's facing is one of the leading juniors of Sacred Martial Mansion. He's called the Little Sovereign of Sacred Martial Mansion, Sacred Yueping!"

River Feather shook his head. Before he finished speaking, his words were drowned out in a roar of cheers –

"Little Sovereign is invincible! Little Sovereign will win!"

Waves over waves of momentum completely overwhelmed all other sounds on the martial field. As for Yue Ironrock, as Sacred Yueping's match, the pressure on him could be imagined!

Without needing to think, one could already tell that the reason this battle was projected into the skies with a battle array disc was not because of Yue Ironrock but because of Sacred Yueping.

"You are not my match!" Before the battle had begun, Sacred Yueping had already issued a declaration of victory.

Yue Ironrock angrily said, "If you want to defeat me you will still have to pay the price!"

Yue Ironrock roared and extracted a giant halberd from his spatial ring, chopping down at Sacred Yueping. When Yue Ironrock had fought Lin Ming, he hadn't used a weapon at all.

When he fought Lin Ming he had underestimated him. But now fighting this Sacred Yueping, one of the leading juniors of Sacred Martial Mansion, he naturally put forth 120% of his strength!

Whoosh!

The return strike from Sacred Yueping was a blood red spear light. This spear light was like a dragon swimming through the oceans, wildly delving into Yue Ironrock's attack.

With a loud rumbling sound, Yue Ironrock's giant halberd was struck down by the spear light. Before he could even use a second move, his protective true essence was pierced through by Sacred Yueping. He was sent flying backwards, blood splashing out from his body!

"Sacred Yueping, victory!"

After being enhanced by an array formation, the voice of the announcer spread throughout the entire martial field, causing the atmosphere to grow even crazier!

Although this result was well within everyone's expectations, when it truly happened, the fans and supporters of Sacred Yueping still issued out deafening cheers that seemed capable of washing the clouds away.

As for the disciples of Sacred Martial Mansion, they were much calmer. Defeating a mere Holy Land level genius wasn't anything to cheer for.

"Sacred Yueping is too strong. He's one of the strongest disciples of Sacred Martial Mansion and one of the leaders of the younger generation! In my Immemorial Imperial City, he can be considered the number one junior master of the spear!" River Feather praised from his heart as he watched this battle. He was filled with envy of Sacred Yueping's talent and strength. They could both be considered outstanding individuals of their generation, but if he were to be compared with Sacred Yueping, the difference would be like cloud and mud.

“He really makes others jealous. He’s strong, has tremendous momentum, has the worship and adoration of countless women, and Sacred Martial Mansion will also vigorously train him. In the future, it won’t be any problem at all for him to become a Holy Lord level powerhouse!”

In the Divine Realm, if one wanted to become a World King – even the worst of World Kings – that was still something that was as difficult as ascending to heaven. Thus in most cases, describing a genius as someone that would become a Holy Lord was already a very high evaluation.

Lin Ming didn’t respond, only silently watching the tournament. The central battle array disc was naturally used to project the battle of Sacred Martial Mansion’s strongest talent. As for the smaller battles happening at the sides, Lin Ming didn’t miss them either. As he continued to watch them, he gained an approximate understanding of the average level of strength that the young elites in Immemorial Imperial City possessed.

There were truly a great number of heroic young elites here!

This wasn’t just Holy Lands and quasi-Holy lands, but also included the geniuses of hidden martial families as well as the disciples of some roaming old eccentric martial artists. These martial artists would often accept a person as their disciple to inherit their legacy. When all of these were added together, there were simply far too many!

Among these people, there were sometimes dark horses that appeared from time to time. Lin Ming observed a few of them. They were hiding away in various areas of the arena, conserving their strength for the future matches.

As the tournament grew increasingly intense and the battles more brilliant and splendid, these hidden masters would begin to emerge one after another! However, Sacred Martial Mansion still suppressed them all. Their three leading figures, Sacred Yueping, Sacred Tianhao, and Sacred Yanran, all seemed invincible!

All of the martial artists in this tournament seemed strong. But when facing these three, they couldn't even last three moves!

"Heavens! They're too strong! They only have a middle Divine Sea cultivation, but even a late Divine Sea genius of a Holy Land can't even last for 10 breaths of time in front of them. Is there anyone in the junior generation that can possibly be an opponent to them?"

"That's right, and they haven't even revealed their complete strength! This junior generation of Sacred Martial Mansion is truly strong! I fear that even the geniuses of the True Martial Holy Lands are equal to them. Even in the entire Divine Realm, these three outstanding geniuses of Sacred Martial Mansion truly have the capital to be famous!"

"Famous throughout the Divine Realm? What sort of domineering confidence is that? Hahaha!"

As these martial artists were speaking, the atmosphere became increasingly heated.

But at this moment, a sudden change occurred throughout the entire arena!

An indescribable force field came crashing down from the skies, swallowing up all sound and all light!

The horrifying pressure of this force field caused every fight happening in the arena to stop. None of them were able to summon any strength in the face of this power. In that instant, everyone felt as if they had lost their breath, suffocated, locked into a separate space-time where they could only hear their own heartbeat.

Heavens! Just what kind of force field was this!?

Lin Ming was shocked. This force field was able to cover such a terrifying scope!

This force field wasn't even aimed at him, but just by being caught in it, Lin Ming felt as if he faced the endless universe, unable to resist at all.

At this time, a boundless and potent voice reverberated through the endless space…

“Three months from now, the First Martial Meeting of the Divine Realm’s 3000 great worlds will be held in the Divine Dream World, held jointly by Empyrean Vast Universe and Empyrean Divine Dream! All heroic young elites of the Divine Realm may participate!”

This great voice echoed in space for a long time, resounding again and again.

Lin Ming was completely stunned. The First Martial Meeting of the Divine Realm, and it would be conducted by Empyreans? This was actually Empyreans!

This was a grand tournament that covered the entire Divine Realm and also included every single young elite of the Divine Realm!?

The Divine Realm’s 3000 great worlds held numerous World King level influences, countless Holy Land level influences, and all sorts of hidden families and descendants of roaming masters. This unimaginable quantity of people would be completely gathered at the Divine Dream World!

Among these people were even descendants of Empyreans!

What kind of scene would that be!? That would be the grandest event of all ages!

Chapter 1154 – The Yan Littlemoon of Years Gone By

Chapter 1154 – The Yan Littlemoon of Years Gone By

…

…

…

As the vast voice vanished, the force field also retreated like a receding tide!

Everyone in the giant arena was still immersed in a moment of shock. The tournament had paused and didn't continue yet.

"The First Martial Meeting of the Divine Realm, hahaha! The news that we heard was correct! Empyrean Divine Dream and Empyrean Vast Universe! Two great Empyreans, conducting the First Martial Meeting that well sweep over the entire Divine Realm! I'm looking forwards to this so much! In comparison to that, this Sacred Martial Grand Tournament is just an appetizer; it cannot show our true strengths!" On the martial field, Sacred Yueping wildly laughed, his red hair blowing in the wind.

"It's impossible to know when this sort of martial meeting will truly be held. But, as the date of this martial meeting approached, all of the great influences had received some type of rumor on the wind, and because of this many geniuses were raised by these large influences. This is the greatest martial meeting beneath the heavens! Many great influences, including even our Sacred Martial Mansion, have been hurriedly training their geniuses to prepare for this once in a lifetime event! I thought it was just a rumor, but it turned out to be completely true!"

Sacred Tianhao avidly said from beside Sacred Yueping, his expression clearly excited!

Recently, great tournaments had been held at Immemorial Imperial City again and again, all in order to prepare for this upcoming Divine Realm First Martial Meeting.

The First Martial Meeting was a chance which all geniuses of the Divine Realm could participate in. Among the young geniuses produced from the great influences, all of them were arrogant talents of their generation and none of them were willing to admit that they were worse than others. They all looked forwards to competing against other geniuses at their age and being able to shine in glory at this Divine Realm First Martial Meeting!

“The Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. Miss Mo, do you know about this?” Lin Ming asked. He was also filled with anticipation towards this Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. He had heard again and again how vast and broad the Divine Realm was and how many powerhouses there were, but as for how great it was and how many powerhouses there were, Lin Ming hadn’t truly experienced it.

And this time was the best opportunity for him to do so! Only competing on this incomparably grand stage could cause his blood to boil over with passion!

“I do. The First Martial Meeting can only be initiated by an Empyrean. Normally, there are different Empyreans that take turns hosting this event.

“Not every generation of geniuses can encounter the First Martial Meeting. This is because every time the First Martial Meeting is held, the momentum of the event grows far too huge. The consumption of resources and energy is tremendous, thus oftentimes there can be 2000-3000 years between each First Martial Meeting! There are even some great influences that will have their young geniuses enter into time-changing enchantments if they feel that the time for the First Martial Meeting will begin soon. They will have their geniuses come out only when the date for the First Martial Meeting arrives. However… I didn’t do this in the past, nor did I participate in the First Martial Meeting!”

“Miss Mo, you didn’t participate?” Lin Ming asked, stunned. He felt it somewhat a pity. Mo Eversnow was the most talented person he had ever encountered to date. If she had participated in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, she would have inevitably blossomed in glory.

Mo Eversnow said, “Even if I did participate in the martial meeting, there is no saying how I would do. The Divine Realm is filled with crouching tigers and hidden dragons; there are far too many powerhouses, more than you could ever imagine. And especially in this First Martial Meeting. It will have gathered the greatest extreme talents of the past several generations. Even for you, I can’t say how well you would do when competing against all the young geniuses of the Divine Realm.

“The key point is that you are too young. You’re just over 30 years old, but the requirement for the First Martial Meeting is only that all heroic young elites must be at the late Divine Sea realm and below. This is mainly a test of Laws, perception, battle spirit, foundation, and other such factors. There are many people that will pause at the late Divine Sea realm even until they are in their fifties so that they can participate. These types of people will have over 20 more years of practice and experience than you!”

“I understand.” Lin Ming thought little of it. Instead, his fighting spirit rose, bubbling with excitement. For a genius to grow, they needed a greater stage. Before this, the Ancient Phoenix Clan that Lin Ming had gone to, and even Carefree Island, could only be considered Holy Land and quasi-Holy Land level sects. As for World King level influences, he hadn’t yet experienced them, much less something far greater like an Empyrean level influence.

This Divine Realm First Martial Meeting was an amazing chance for him to temper himself and gain experience!

………

Before, the great voice that echoed throughout the Sacred Martial Grand Tournament wasn’t limited to just the True Martial Great World. It also reverberated through all the great worlds of the Divine Realm, including all the dimension realms and minor dimensions. This voice passed through all barriers, entering the ears of all.

At this time, at the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters in a deep crimson space, three old men were standing before a blood pond. And in front of them were seven or eight youths. One of them was an elegant and beautiful young woman with a wonderful aura about her. She was Yan Littlemoon.

After several years had passed, Yan Littlemoon had become slimmer and more graceful than before. She had lost a bit of her past naiveté and gained a heroic and daring air to her. The energy from her body was faster and sharper, and she exuded a feeling as if she were a honed long sword.

“You should all know that the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting will be held three months from now!”

An old man slowly said in front of these youths. His voice was potent and filled with a boisterous energy, every syllable vibrating to the bone. This person was one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s Highest Elders, the peak Holy Lord Huo Violentstone.

“Understood.” The several youths nodded, taking deep breaths. Their hearts were still beating faster than before. They had the chance to participate in this martial meeting and face all the young geniuses that existed in the entire Divine Realm, so how could they not be excited?

“Mm, I won’t speak any crap. My only requirement for you lot is that at least one of you pass through the qualifying round and enter into the top 100,000 rankings!”

“Pass the qualifying round and enter into the top 100,000 rankings?” The several youths looked at each other, a bit confused.

“Ha! It sounds a bit sad when you say it like that, but this is the truth. Our Ancient Phoenix Clan has one of the most extraordinary bloodlines throughout the entire Divine Realm, but we have a singular and fatal weakness, and that is that we are not true descendants of a phoenix. We are only mortals that have the phoenix bloodline transplanted into our bodies. In this aspect, the Ancient Dragon Clan, Kirin Clan, and Roc Clan are all the same as us, And, there are some unorthodox bloodlines, for instance the Hydra bloodline, that are far below us in quality. But, there are some in their ranks that truly had a hydra as their ancestor! Those hydras are great monsters that crossed through heavenly tribulation and gained the ability to take human form!

“Not only do their descendants possess their bloodline, but they also possess the flesh, organs, and fascia of a hydra. Our Ancient Phoenix Clan simply cannot compare with them in this aspect. It is extremely difficult for a phoenix to give birth to a descendant, much less copulate and produce children with a human. Thus, the Hydra Clan is also a peak Holy Land!

“Throughout the entire Divine Realm, every great world has 100-200 Holy Lands, and the 3000 great worlds together possess between 40,000-50,000 Holy Lands. In addition, there are also the countless medium and small worlds that existed around and between the 3000 great worlds. There are all sorts of martial families, hidden masters, and secret influences that exist in all corners of the universe. This is why the number of geniuses is at least double what you would expect!

“As for our Ancient Phoenix Clan, we can still be considered at the peak of these influences. But above us there are also World King level Holy Lands and Empyrean level Holy Lands! To achieve a rank of 100,000 is already a wonderful result. Since ancient times, the highest result that our Ancient Phoenix Clan has ever obtained is still over 8000…”

As Huo Violentstone spoke, all of the heroic young elites present gulped, feeling shocked. This great tournament between geniuses that would sweep through the entire Divine Realm was much more terrifying than what they imagined.

It had to be known that in the history of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, there had been extreme characters such as Xiao Daoji and Huo Burning Heaven. However, the highest anyone had reached was still a ranking in the 8000s!

Huo Violentstone suddenly turned to Yan Littlemoon. He said, “Littlemoon, your progress in these past years has been outstanding. When you crossed Ninefall you reached the peak of the absolute three levels. I have great expectations for you in this grand martial meeting. Still, you are only at the early Divine Sea realm so your cultivation is a bit low. In these next three months, you will enter a time altering enchantment and raise your cultivation to the middle Divine Sea realm. I will personally direct you in this matter.”

Yan Littlemoon vigorously shouted, “Yes, Elder!”

“Mm…” Huo Violentstone nodded. He seemed to suddenly remember something as he shook his head, “That brat Lin Ming, I wonder just where he went to go adventuring. He’s definitely not the type that would miss out on this sort of grand martial meeting. Thinking of the time, his cultivation should be at the early Divine Sea realm by now. I wonder just how many Layered Heavens that brat managed to experience.”

Beside Huo Violentstone, another Elder heard these words and shook his head, “When Lin Ming crossed Ninefall, his momentum should surely have been more amazing than Yan Littlemoon’s. He would have surpassed the absolute three levels, or he might have even surpassed 18 Layered Heavens and reached an even higher boundary!

“Unfortunately, he is still too young. An early Divine Sea cultivation is a bit low, but he still has three months remaining. Even if he entered into a time altering enchantment, the distorted Laws within would impede his training. If this Divine Realm First Martial Meeting had happened 20 some years from now then that would have been great. If so, Lin Ming would have definitely been able to dazzle the world. But now… perhaps he might only be able to enter into the top 10,000 ranks…”

“Only 10,000…” Huo Violentstone quietly repeated.

Even as one of Lin Ming’s masters, Huo Violentstone didn’t know much about his disciple. He didn’t know about Mo Eversnow, he didn’t know of the Magic Cube, he didn’t know of the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree, he didn’t know that Lin Ming had stolen the supreme dragon bone in the God Beast Mystic Realm, and he didn’t know many other things.

However, he could feel that Lin Ming held many secrets on his body. Thus, he was still looking forwards to Lin Ming being able to create a miracle at this First Martial Meeting.

“I believe that he won’t stop at just being ranked around 10,000…” Huo Violentstone silently said to himself.

……………

In True Martial Great World, within a massive floating palace, there was a black-cloaked martial artist standing in the main hall. His back was broad and he seemed to stand as high as a mountain peak. Around him, all sorts of Laws constantly changed and transformed. There was even heaven and earth origin energy that twisted about, forming into all sorts of magical creatures. These creatures all bowed down to this person. This was a symbol of one having achieved an extremely high degree of comprehension in the Laws.

Behind him, over 1000 youths were bent down to their knees. Each youth had their right hand placed across their chest and their heads were bowed, nearly touching the floor. At this time, these youths all had reverential expressions on their faces.

The large man in front of them was no other than True Martial Great World’s World King. He was the one who controlled the entire True Martial Holy Lands, and was also one of the Great World Kings of the Divine Realm’s 3000 great worlds, the True Martial World King!

“It’s begun, it’s finally begun! I won’t speak about just how meaningful this First Martial Meeting will be to all of us. According to the past rewards, if nothing has changed, then the top three challengers will have the chance to study a complete transcendent divine might! Although they won’t give the transcendent divine might jade slip to you, this is still a mind-boggling stroke of good fortune!

“Of course, achieving top three is impossible for you all. But, there are still incomparably rich rewards for ranking in the top 1000 or even top 10,000. The reason that I spent so much time and resources to train you was all for this moment. In three months, you must blossom on stage and dazzle the world! Do not disappoint me!

“For the one who performs the best in this First Martial Meeting and also manages to enter into the top 1000 rankings, I… will train him as my direct successor!”

Chapter 1155 – Boundless World Pill

Chapter 1155 – Boundless World Pill

…

…

…

A successor of the True Martial Holy Lands' Holy Lord, the True Martial World King, just what sort of great honor was that? One could directly enjoy the most precious resources of the True Martial Holy Lands!

Of course, even if one could become a successor of the True Martial World King, the chances of becoming a World King in the future were still incomparably slim. In fact, there actually existed many True Martial World King successors. After all, the True Martial World King had already lived for millions of years. In these millions of years, even if there was only a single successor chosen every couple tens of thousands of years, there would still be over a hundred of them. In this group of successors, it was already extraordinary if an ordinary World King could be produced amongst them. If a Great World King could be born, that would be a festive occasion celebrated throughout the entire Holy Land. But, the chances of this happening weren't too great.

Even so, for the True Martial World King to promise a single chance of becoming a successor was already a massive lucky chance to these juniors. As long as they were raised as a successor, their future achievements would not be lacking. They could enter into the highest echelons of the True Martial Holy Lands and become a peak Holy Lord level character.

It wasn't just the True Martial Holy Land's Holy Lord that was making such a promise, but the Holy Lords of the many other World King level Holy Lands were also promising large rewards!

Once one entered into the top 1000 or even top 10,000, not only would they obtain the rewards of an Empyrean but they would also obtain rewards from the leader of their sect or family. This was simply ascending to heaven in a single leap!

Three days later, the detailed list of rewards for the First Martial Meeting was handed out to all the major intelligence organizations. Even though they published this list in near-infinite quantities, it still fell far short of demand.

The Divine Realm First Martial Meeting would reward a total of 18,000 martial artists. Outside of the top 3000, one would only receive a symbolic participation prize. The reward for that was 10 million violet sun stones and a violet sun crystal medal.

From 900 to 3000, the reward was 20 million violet sun stones and a medal corresponding to their ranking.

Above that was 50 million violet sun stones. Moreover, there were also many other types of rewards such as spirit artifacts, pills, cultivation method jade slips, and so forth.

The most attractive rewards were in the top 10. From tenth to sixth place, the reward was 30 billion violet sun stones!

From fifth to fourth, the reward was 100 billion violet sun stones!

From third to second, the reward was 300 million violet sun stones!

And the first place reward was 500 billion violet sun stones!

If one could obtain first place, that was equal to gaining Lin Ming's current wealth.

But, this massive number of violet sun stones could only be considered a tiny reward.

What drew the most attention was that the top 10 genius disciples could enter into Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, the influence established by Empyrean Vast Universe, and accept the guidance of Empyrean Vast Universe's chief disciple.

The top three could obtain the chance to perceive a transcendent divine might. From fourth to tenth place, one could enter into Vast Universe Heavenly Palace and choose to study any top technique beneath a transcendent divine might.

These sorts of top techniques were all personally created by Empyrean Vast Universe. Although they weren't as wonderful as an incredible transcendent divine might, they were still far superior to a Great World King's martial arts! They surpassed the inheritance of a World King level Holy Land!

"Guidance from Empyrean Vast Universe's chief disciple..." Lin Ming's mind stirred, but he didn't know what the cultivation of Empyrean Vast Universe's chief disciple was like. It seemed that even if one obtained first place in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, it was still impossible to obtain the personal direction of an Empyrean level character.

Mo Eversnow guessed Lin Ming's thoughts and said, "Lin Ming, the chief disciple of an Empyrean has already reached a level of strength that is difficult to imagine. Although they aren't Great World Kings, the truth is that the top several ranked subordinates of an Empyrean surpass most Great World Kings in status and strength! Think about it, they come from an Empyrean level influence and some of them might even be descendants of an Empyrean! The talent they inherited from their parents is simply unbelievable, and what they study are transcendent divine mights. There is no need to also mention the resources that they can enjoy. These kinds of people all have a starting baseline that is much higher than even a Great World King. There are many Great World Kings that don't have the chance to study a transcendent divine might!"

Although an Empyrean might not be able to create their own transcendent divine might, every Empyrean still possessed their own. This was because they didn't create their own, but derived them from ancient texts and other legacies from the past.

As for extreme characters like Empyrean Primordius and Empyrean Divine Seal that were able to create their own transcendent divine might, they were truly outstanding individuals amongst all Empyreans. As for World Kings, most of them didn't have a transcendent divine might. In fact, it was already incredible if a Great World King possessed an incomplete transcendent divine might.

"Also, an Empyrean can live for tens of millions or even hundreds of millions of years. In the Holy Land that they establish themselves, I imagine that most of the disciples haven't even seen the Empyrean. As for the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, although it is a gathering of all the young geniuses in the Divine Realm, it is still something that occurs every several thousand years. Compared to the long life of an Empyrean, this is far too short a time."

As Lin Ming thought of this, he also gained a deeper understanding into just how high the status of an Empyrean was. To them, even a Holy Lord level powerhouse was nothing more than an ant. The chief disciple of an Empyrean was also an extraordinary person. Even a Great World King had to politely greet them and treat them with the utmost respect!

"Lin Ming, you do not have to think about an Empyrean guiding you, or even their chief disciple guiding you. To the current you, they are an existence that you cannot yet get close to. What you need to do now is increase your own strength as much as possible and enter into the top 10 rankings of the First Martial Meeting! If possible, you need to enter into the top three and obtain a transcendent divine might!

"There is still three months remaining. If I create a time enchantment for you then you can steadily enter into the early Divine Sea or even reach the peak of the early Divine Sea. But, a higher cultivation is impossible. The Laws within a time enchantment are distorted and mediating within them for too long is a waste of time."

As Mo Eversnow spoke, Lin Ming nodded. As he crossed Life Destruction, he had ruthlessly suppressed his cultivation to the limit. This allowed him to complete a 33 Layered Heavens 99 mile origin energy cloud when he broke into Ninefall. But, this also made his cultivation speed much slower than that of other geniuses.

Back when Lin Ming was at the Sky Spill Continent, even the likes of Yang Yun had broken through to the Divine Sea in his forties. And right now, Lin Ming was just over 30 years old but still at the ninth stage of Life Destruction!

If his cultivation was too low and he was still so young, he would definitely be at a disadvantage in this First Martial Meeting!

Just as Lin Ming was preparing to look for a place and set up a time enchantment area to train, at this time, a flame lit up in front of him. It was the light of a sound transmitting talisman.

River Feather's voice immediately sounded in his ears, "Brother Lin, three days from now Immemorial Imperial City will be holding a grand auction that will encompass all of Imperial City! The trade associations will be bringing out rare items to sell, and many of these treasures will be extremely suitable for young elites such as ourselves. There will be many treasures that can increase one's strength, such as pills, weapons, heavenly materials, and so many other things. Brother Lin, you definitely can't miss out on this!"

River Feather's true essence sound transmission caused Lin Ming's heart to stir. Imperial City Auction!

That was it!

Because there had been competition after competition recently, a massive number of young elites had gathered at Immemorial Imperial City. And, these young elites all came from influential sects, martial families, or even as secret disciples of hidden supreme experts. All of them were superbly wealthy!

And now, since the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting was going to be held soon, in this situation where every sword needed to be sharpened to the extreme, time had become the most important factor of all. These geniuses needed to enhance their own strength as quickly as possible!

As one of the busiest and liveliest places in the Divine Realm, how could Immemorial Imperial City miss such a grand chance to do business?

This auction was deliberately aimed at these young elites. The heated fervor with which these youths would struggle for these treasures could be imagined! There were many rare treasures that could greatly enhance one's strength and cause countless young geniuses to fight for them!

And among these great influences, there were many direct disciples and descendants who would have been given a great deal of capital so that they could obtain better results in the Divine Realm First Marital Meeting. At the very least, they could go just a bit higher and be tempered that much more!

"Imperial City Auction, I wonder just what my 500 billion will be able to buy."

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He knew that 500 billion was a great deal of wealth, but if those great sects and families really did put forth their full capital, it truly wouldn't be enough!

Whether it was Carefree Island or the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, 99% of their wealth was actually in fixed assets that couldn't easily be moved. For instance, immortal palaces, array formations, spirit artifacts, medicine gardens, all sorts of heavenly materials, and so forth. These influences didn't have much liquid capital. For instance, taking Carefree Island as an example, the Carefree Palace that Mo Riverbliss had left behind accounted for 80-90% of the entire sect's wealth!

If these influences wished to sell these fixed assets for violet sun stones and crimson sun pills, they would be able to gather a monumental amount of wealth in a relatively short period of time.

Moreover, before the Verdant Feather Holy Lands had been destroyed in the past, Mo Eversnow had only carried off with her a tiny portion of the wealth, and most that was Mo Eversnow's own collection to begin with. If this 500 billion was compared with the total wealth of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands in the past, it would simply be a drop of water in a vast ocean!

If Lin Ming really wished to struggle in an auction with these geniuses of World King level Holy Lands, 500 billion was far from enough! It had to be known that in the trading fair from before, Yue Ironrock had taken out a few hundred million, and that had only been casually. If Yue Ironrock had time to exchange all of his assets into pure liquid currency, he would be able to gather billions in currency!

And Yue Ironrock was only a disciple of a stronger Holy Land. Compared to influences like Sacred Martial Mansion and others, they still fell far short.

Lin Ming felt a great pressure on him. As he thought of his own possessions, there really weren't many things he could sell off. For instance, he definitely wouldn't sell the Phoenix Blood Spear. There were some things like the dragon bone relics that could sell for a good price, but Lin Ming wasn't willing to sell such precious objects. Moreover, it might cause a disturbance and bring trouble upon himself if he took them out.

As Lin Ming was thinking, he took out a sound transmitting talisman and sent it to River Feather, asking if he could borrow some wealth from him. Of course, this was only a thoughtless question. He didn't expect to borrow much from River Feather.

River Feather's family wasn't a top influence to begin with and he was also one in a long line of potential successors. Among these successors, he didn't have the highest status and the wealth he had was limited.

However, what surprised Lin Ming was that River Feather invited him to a branch division of his family to lend Lin Ming a part of his wealth.

News of the auction soon spread throughout the entire Immemorial Imperial City like an unstoppable tide. Currently, the number of young geniuses in the city was measured in units of a hundred million. The explosiveness of the auction happening three days from now could be imagined.

And in just half a day, another piece of news crashed into the city like a meteor. This was because in the auction, there would be a pill that neared a transcendent divine pill in quality, called the Boundless World Pill!

As the name suggested, this pill would have unimaginable benefits in forming and developing a Divine Sea powerhouse’s inner world. Its value surpassed even Carefree Island’s Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree!

Chapter 1156 – The Source of Wealth

Chapter 1156 – The Source of Wealth

…

…

…

"Boundless World Pill!"

Lin Ming also quickly learnt this news, that the Boundless World Pill would be one of the final closing treasures of the auction. It was something that was greatly beneficial to a Divine Sea martial artist and even a Divine Transformation martial artist.

"Lin Ming, if you can obtain this Boundless World Pill then that will be phenomenal!" Mo Eversnow's voice resounded in Lin Ming's mind.

"Boundless World Pill… the rumors about the auction house stated that its rank approached a transcendent divine pill?"

Transcendent divine pill, transcendent divine might, transcendent divine weapon, all of these were Empyrean level treasures, because they were existences that surpassed the Heavenly Dao. When they were born, they would summon heavenly tribulation. Although the Boundless World Pill was only a quasi-transcendent divine pill, the value of this pill was still extraordinary.

Mo Eversnow said, "In order to refine the Boundless World Pill, one needs to use the Realmheart stone of a boundless world. The so-called Realmheart stone is the very cornerstone that supports that world. The degree of toughness could be imagined! To destroy this Realmheart stone is the same as destroying that entire boundless world!

"But, although a boundless world is stable, it is not eternal. When an Empyrean or World King grows old, their senses and beauty will fade away and their inner boundless world will also begin to perish, meeting calamity upon calamity. Their entire world will lose vitality and the heaven and earth origin energy will gradually disperse until all life decays to nothing, finally collapsing and being completely destroyed! At this time, the Realmheart stone might be destroyed with the collapse of this boundless world and fragments will be obtained by others. Although they are still incomparably firm, it is far inferior to the complete Realmheart stone. If a Great World King level alchemist can obtain a fragment and consume a massive amount of time and energy, they can refine that fragment, fusing all sorts of other heavenly materials to form a Boundless World Pill!

"When a martial artist crosses into the Divine Sea realm, their world seed will erupt and form their inner world. Although a human's body is like a miniature universe and the evolution of the dantian follows the endless flow of time and change of the universe, there are still differences. Their inner world will never be as firm as a true world, but by taking the Boundless World Pill, one can fuse the power of a true world into their inner world, fusing characteristics of a true boundless world into their inner world!"

As Mo Eversnow spoke, Lin Ming's heart raced with excitement.

Divine Sea. Divine Transformation. Divine Lord. The deeper a martial artist's foundation was, the greater their inner world would be and the stabler it would be. This was because for a martial artist of the Nine Divine Shifts, the origin of their strength was the power of the world within their inner world.

If one could truly fuse the strength of a true boundless world into their body, then their inner world would be just as stable as a true world. The benefits of this could be imagined!

"Lin Ming, this Boundless World Pill will be immensely beneficial to you. Although you can break through to the Divine Sea with your own training and cultivation, if you have the Boundless World Pill it can help mold your inner world. When your inner world is born, it will then have characteristics of a true world. Moreover, your foundation is already incomparably solid to begin with. That will cause your inner world to be large and stable beyond belief and your strength will also soar into the skies. If you have the Boundless World Pill, you can definitely enter into the top 10 of this First Martial Meeting, and you even have hopes of entering into the top three! No matter what, this will greatly help you, otherwise it will be much more difficult!"

"Understood." Lin Ming took a deep breath. In truth he didn't need Mo Eversnow to say this, but a Boundless World Pill was useful not only to him, but was also greatly advantageous to all other Divine Sea realm geniuses. No one disliked their own inner world being too stable and they certainly wouldn't give up on something this great. If he had to rely on just his own 500 billion violet sun stones to struggle with them, then perhaps this was simply a useless battle!

"I have to figure out some way to obtain this Boundless World Pill so that my strength can rapidly rise! Otherwise, I won't have any great advantage in this Divine Realm First Martial Meeting three months from now!"

To enter the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting was to face every young genius in the entire Divine Realm. Lin Ming wasn't blindly confident in himself. Sometimes, there would be others that underestimated him, but that was because they didn't understand his strength. But, Mo Eversnow was the singular person in this world who understood just how strong he was. Since she said it would be extremely difficult, she naturally wouldn't be exaggerating her claims.

It wasn't wrong that Lin Ming possessed transcendent divine mights, but those geniuses of Empyrean level influences did too!

Lin Ming had consumed a massive amount of resources growing up, but there were also many geniuses in the Divine Realm who had a destiny that soared through the heavens, and there were even talents that were raised by super influences who enjoyed no fewer resources than he did.

Lin Ming's advantage lay in his dual body and energy cultivation, his large success gold battle spirit, as well as his 33 Layered Heavens nine by nine Life Destruction that had come from the combination of the Magic Cube, transcendent divine mights, and cultivation systems he practiced.

On the other hand, his cultivation was lower. In conclusion, it was hard to say whether or not Lin Ming could enter the top 10.

The Divine Realm was simply too large. It was likely that many other top monstrous geniuses like Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow would appear to contest him.

In order to increase his chances as much as possible, Lin Ming had to obtain the Boundless World Pill no matter the cost!

………..

“Brother Lin, you’ve arrived!”

When Lin Ming met up with River Feather, he was surprised to discover that the place they would meet up at was Starbind Bank, where Mo Eversnow had once deposited her violet sun stones.

“This place is…” Lin Ming looked up at the signboard of Starbind Bank.

River Feather appeared a bit embarrassed as he said, “Brother Lin, I must be honest with you. Even if I used every single connection and favor I had, I wouldn’t be able to borrow more than 3 billion from my family! That is nothing more than a drop in the bucket! Moreover, my big brother has used many methods to suppress my ability to loan any sort of funds. He deliberately wants me to not be able to buy anything at the grand auction. As for himself, he went through layers upon layers of connections to borrow 6 billion from the family!”

Lin Ming nodded, clearly hearing the grievance in River Feather’s voice. It seemed that a family like the River Family, whether it be the grand auction or the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting three months from now, was only a small ripple that wouldn’t be able to draw any attention. If the River Family wanted to struggle for some minor accomplishments, they had to pour all of their effort into training a single feather. In this aspect, River Feather's big brother was clearly the superior choice.

"Then we have come here for…" Lin Ming thought this was strange. If River Feather didn't have the support of his family, where would he have gotten any money?

River Feather hesitated for a moment. Then, he clenched his teeth and said, "I called Brother Lin here today because I truly think that Brother Lin is a friend of mine. One of Starbind Bank's services is pawning items. One can pawn treasures and receive wealth in exchange! I have a secret, and that is that I was originally an ordinary disciple of the River Feather Family with average martial talent. If I died, no one would have even noticed. But in a mystic realm, I went through many dangers and stumbled upon a great lucky chance, thus producing the current me that can even struggle for the position of the future family head with my older brother. But now, I have pawned my secret for wealth to lend to Brother Lin! I want to help Brother Lin compete in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, break into the top 3000 rankings and soar into fame!"

As River Feather spoke, Lin Ming was aghast. He looked at River Feather with incredulity in his eyes, not believing his own ears. According to River Feather, he had some incomparably important treasure that was responsible for all of his current achievements. But, he had actually pawned this treasure in exchange for wealth to lend to him.

Let alone the fact that he and River Feather were merely acquaintances, even if they were good brothers, there were very few people that could lend out the entirety of their life's savings without batting an eye!

"Brother River… aren't you afraid that I will forget this favor in the future and not acknowledge you…?" Lin Ming was at a loss. This behavior, if said nicely, would be called loyalty. If one was a bit coarse, it would be called being taken advantage of.

"Brother Lin, let's get straight to the point and not put up any more fake pretenses. Although my cultivating talent is mediocre, I have some skills at discerning the character of others. When you were at the underworld trade fair, you were willing to part with hundreds of millions of violet sun stones to buy a little girl. I can see that the reason you were willing to buy her was not only because she said she knew the location of the violet sun stone embryo, but also because you sympathized with her plight. A person like you will not be an ungrateful man with no grace or virtue.

“This time I really have burned away all my bridges. It’s true; you can make me a fool, but even if there is a 30% chance, I am still willing to struggle! This is because I know my own worth and I know that it will be impossibly difficult for me to match my older brother’s achievements in the future. And because of my previous conflicts with my brother, if he becomes the family head then my fate will be extremely miserable in the future! At the start I had nothing to begin with. With just my cheap life, I fought for over 30 years to claw my way up to where I am now. I do not want to lose, thus I can only make a bet and hope that I can form a friendship with someone like you who may become a World King in the future!

“I do not need a contract. This is because even if I had one, I know that with your skills and ability, you could easily find some great expert to dissolve it. Thus, what I will believe in is Brother Lin’s upright and moral character to return this money!”

Lin Ming looked at River Feather with surprise. He didn’t expect that such an ordinary-looking youth would be so daring and so ruthless to himself. He actually dared to make such a final gamble, even ridding himself of the lucky chance he found in the past. Such a person would either meet a tragic death or find great achievements in the future. And looking at River Feather now, he seemed to be someone who had the blessing of destiny on his side.

Lin Ming thought for a moment, then said, “Thank you Brother River for trusting me. I will remember this favor. Although I have means of dissolving a contract, I will still form one with you and I will also be responsible for paying you back with interest. Brother River, how much can you lend me?”

“Around 100-200 billion.” As River Feather spoke out this number he carefully observed Lin Ming’s response. When he didn’t see Lin Ming with any sort of overly happy expression, he immediately understood that this number wasn’t able to move him. Lin Ming’s background must be truly terrifying. His goal in this auction must be immeasurably high. Could it be one of the items that served as the closing act to this grand auction?

River Feather's eyebrows shot up. It seemed that it really was difficult to form good relations with Lin Ming. The disparity was too great.

As River Feather was imagining all sorts of things, Lin Ming was deep in thought. 100-200 billion was equal to the total wealth that the disciples of Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan had obtained from the Red Desolate Mystic Realm. It seemed that River Feather's lucky chance was really something else.

Even with this money added on, Lin Ming's wealth was still lacking. He asked, "Brother River, how does this pawning service work? Can I hide my status?"

"Of course you can. Brother Lin can have full faith in Starbind Bank's reputation. Starbind Bank has already been in operation for several million years." River Feather immediately understood that Lin Ming wanted to personally pawn some treasures for wealth, but just what did he have to pawn? His first thought was actually to hide his identity!

Chapter 1157 – Necklace of the Goddess

Chapter 1157 – Necklace of the Goddess

…

…

…

“Lin Ming, could it be that you want to pawn the dragon bone relics?” Mo Eversnow asked from within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea. Currently, the most valuable objects Lin Ming had that he was willing to pawn right now were the dragon bone relics.

The 1000 foot long supreme dragon bone was a treasure that could make a World King go mad with envy. If Lin Ming had this sort of thing, it was certainly impossible to take out.

However, compared to the original 1000 foot supreme dragon bone, pure dragon bone relics were much lower in value.

Dragon bone relics already had their dragon marrow pulled out. To an essence gathering system martial artist, dragon marrow was much more valuable. It could improve one’s meridians and bloodlines, but the dragon bone itself could only be used to transform the organs and bones, something much more suited to a body transformation martial artist.

Moreover, Mo Riverbliss had refined the 1000 foot long supreme dragon bone into 108 dragon bone relics. Each dragon bone relic was equal to 1/108 of the original dragon bone’s value. If he could hide his status and just pawn several dragon bone relics, there wouldn’t be too much trouble in that.

“Lin Ming, the materials for the Esoteric Immortality Pill are already prepared. I will finish refining it before these three months are over. There are only 36 dragon bone relics left. Even if we consider the remaining dragon strength within your body, in order to process the Esoteric Immortality Pill, I will still need to use up at least 30 of them. You can pawn at most six!"

"Six…"

Lin Ming faintly frowned. Six dragon bone relics might not be enough!

"How much could a dragon bone relic be pawned for?"

"It's hard to say. That will depend on what the appraiser of Starbind Bank offers, and they often quote a price lower than market value. I estimate that it will be no more than 60 billion."

60 billion times six was 360 billion. In addition with River Feather's 100 billion, Lin Ming's total wealth was still lower than one trillion.

This amount of wealth was probably far from being enough to purchase the Boundless World Pill!

"Lin Ming, the Esoteric Immortality Pill must be refined. We have gone through much to obtain the violet sun stone embryo, and the other materials have already been gathered to refine it. I can guarantee that you will be able to open the Gate of Life before you participate in the First Martial Meeting! And, that Boundless World Pill is no less significant to your progress!"

"I understand."

Lin Ming worried. He could deeply feel just how profoundly poor he was! Extremely poor!

If he wanted to gather a great deal of wealth then the only way was to ask the Ancient Elysium Seal. But as he thought about it some more, the body of the Ancient Elysium Seal was arranged with a painstaking cost by Empyrean Divine Seal and it had also been tempered with energy for 3.6 billion years. If it were broken down into normal violet sun crystals then that would truly be a waste.

“Fishy, besides those treasures buried 500 miles underground, do you see any other violet sun stones buried nearby?” Lin Ming suddenly asked with a bit of hope in his voice as he remembered Fishy’s ability.

At this time, Fishy had just woken up. She rubbed her sleep-tired eyes and tilted her head for a bit before responding, “Big Brother Lin Ming wants to look for some buried treasure? There are some violet stones in some places outside the city and they are buried very deeply. Can those be considered buried treasure?”

“Buried deeply? How many are there?”

“Mm… it depends. Some are as big as a fat pig and some are as small as my fist…”

“I see…” Lin Ming shook his head. He hadn’t held out much hope for this route to begin with. In Fishy’s life, it seemed as if she hadn’t left the range of Immemorial Imperial City. It was already a surprise that there would be such a great treasure hidden right underground, but it was impossible for there to be a second.

As Lin Ming was thinking about what to do, a flash of light suddenly popped up in his head as he recalled something.

“Miss Mo, I suddenly thought of something that could give us a pleasant surprise. I’ve forgotten about it all this time!”

“What is it?”

Lin Ming said, “It’s a string necklace! In the past when I visited the ancient goddess’ grave in the Eternal Demon Abyss, I obtained a string necklace as well as a jade pendant from her. That jade pendant seemed to be a keepsake of some sort, but as for that necklace, I have no idea what it is. Because I’ve never brought it out in these 10 plus years, I’d nearly forgotten about it.”

“The goddess’ necklace and jade pendant?”

Mo Eversnow's thoughts stirred. When she had been deeply sleeping in the Magic Cube, she had only been able to faintly sense what Lin Ming experienced. As for the concrete details, she wasn't sure. For instance, she hadn't known that Lin Ming had obtained a replica of the Demon Bead in the Steppes Master's treasure chambers.

"Let's take a look."

Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow entered into the Extreme Violet Ring together. Lin Ming looked for a moment inside the ring before finding the goddess' jade pendant and necklace. The goddess' jade pendant was similar to the pendant that the young girl Jue of the Forsaken God Clan had been wearing. At the time, because of this jade pendant, Lin Ming had rescued Jue from her slavery at his wedding banquet, and this subsequently brought him together with the Forsaken God Clan. After that, Lin Ming, under their protection, had safely stepped into Life Destruction and escaped the chasing down of the Asura Divine Kingdom.

Because of this, Lin Ming guessed that the goddess' jade pendant was a keepsake from the Forsaken God Clan.

But the necklace was different. It was special, with strange energy waves around it. These fluctuations of ancient Laws showed just how unique it was.

The necklace of the goddess had links as thick as a pinky finger and there was a palm-sized metal piece at the end of the chain. This metal plate was less than an inch thick and had a square-shaped hole in the center. There might have been some gem inlaid in this hole in the past, but that gem had already disappeared.

This necklace wasn't soft or elegant. It lacked all grace that a young woman's necklace would normally possess. Instead, it was humble and heavy, with a solemn aura to it. Wearing this chain would have felt like wearing a lock.

As for the jade pendant, it was a deep azure color all around and icy cold to the touch. The center of the jade pendant was carved with totem images of birds, looking quite common.

Mo Eversnow looked at them for a moment. Then, she put away the jade pendant and focused her vision on the necklace.

“Miss Mo, what do you see?” Lin Ming asked from the side.

Mo Eversnow pressed her eyebrows together, not speaking for a long time. Underneath the control of her battle spirit and will, the necklace steadily floated in the air. This process continued for a full hour. Then, Mo Eversnow turned into a ray of light and directly sank into the necklace!

After the necklace lost the support of her battle spirit, it fell to the ground. Lin Ming subconsciously thrust out his hand to grab it.

“Miss Mo!” Lin Ming was immediately worried. He instantly contacted Mo Eversnow’s mind and could sense that the state of her soul was very steady without any problems.

He was finally able to relax. Like this, another hour passed. Mo Eversnow finally emerged from the goddess’ necklace. She said, “Lin Ming, if I’m not wrong, this should be a spirit treasure that Empyrean Primordius himself personally forged!”

Mo Eversnow’s voice was filled with amazement. Lin Ming was also startled. Although this result wasn’t too surprising, as he saw something that was truly crafted by an Empyrean, he was still shocked.

“Something that Empyrean Primordius made himself? Is this a transcendent spirit treasure!?”

“No…” Mo Eversnow shook her head. “A transcendent spirit treasure isn’t easy to create. Even for an Empyrean, they could only craft a single transcendent spirit treasure in their lifetime. The value of one would be inestimable and not inferior to a transcendent divine might jade slip in value. As for other things created by an Empyrean, although they might not be a transcendent spirit treasure, they would still be extremely valuable! If I’m not wrong, this should be a defensive spirit treasure. But, unfortunately… the artifact spirit has already died.”

“Mm?” Lin Ming asked, dazed, “The artifact spirit died?”

The goddess of the Eternal Demon Abyss should have withstood some sort of extremely powerful attack, causing this defensive spirit treasure to be mostly broken. As a result, the artifact spirit was destroyed and the value of this spirit treasure was also greatly diminished. It was probably impossible to restore the functions that it had in the past!

“This is…” Lin Ming glanced at the necklace. He never imagined that such a simple and plain necklace would be something that Empyrean Primordius created himself. But what a pity, even if it was something created by an Empyrean, it was still incomplete.

“If its value was reduced so greatly, how much could it be pawned for?” Lin Ming asked, unsure.

Mo Eversnow saw Lin Ming’s worried expression and chuckled. “That is something that you do not need to worry about. What kind of character is an Empyrean? Even a Holy Lord is nothing but an ant in front of an Empyrean. This First Martial Meeting may be held by Empyreans but the truth is that only the disciples of the Empyreans are managing affairs. How could an Empyrean possibly bother themselves with such things? Even the rewards for the top 10 are with the direction of Empyrean Vast Universe’s chief disciple. Even if one managed to achieve first place in this First Martial Meeting, they still wouldn’t have the chance to meet an Empyrean. Let alone an incomplete spirit artifact, even if there was only a tiny fragment left over, there would still be a massive number of martial artists chasing after it like a flock of ducks. Even if that fragment had no more function, there would always be people wishing to collect it. Moreover, this necklace also has fluctuations of Laws carved within it. They contain the principles of the refiner and can be used as a reference by World King level refining masters. It is extremely valuable!”

As Mo Eversnow spoke, Lin Ming nodded in agreement. To an Empyrean that lived for tens or even hundreds of millions of years, it would be hard to arouse their interest with this Divine Realm First Martial Meeting that occurred every several thousand years. They had simply seen far too many First Martial Meetings!

“How much can this necklace be pawned for?”

“I cannot say.” Mo Eversnow shook her head. “Even with Empyreans, there are divisions of high and low. For instance, there is Empyrean Primordius, and also Empyrean Divine Dream who is conducting this First Martial Meeting, both of them are outstanding existences even among Empyreans. I do not understand the world of Empyreans, but whatever Empyrean Primordius made should be much higher in value than a normal Empyrean’s treasure. Moreover, there seems to be a seal in this necklace. However, I fear that no one besides Empyrean Primordius is capable of unraveling this seal. I have no idea just what could be inside…”

Lin Ming thought for a moment and asked, “Could this necklace tempt World King level powerhouses?”

“It shouldn’t. There are some Great World King life weapons that can compare favorably to an Empyrean spirit treasure. Moreover, this necklace only has an incomplete artifact spirit. Starbind Bank has done business for millions of years. They shouldn’t do something that would destroy their hard-earned reputation by coveting this necklace, or even a transcendent divine might jade slip.”

“Okay, then we’ll pawn this. I wonder just how much wealth we can get for it!” Lin Ming put away the goddess’ necklace and flew out from the Extreme Violet Ring. Really, where hills bent and the streams and roads seemed to end, there existed flowers that bloomed past the dark willows. This was the sudden glimpse of hope that he needed at this moment. He never imagined that the necklace he obtained from the ancient goddess’ grave in the past would play such an important role now.

Chapter 1158 – Sky High Pawn Price

Chapter 1158 – Sky High Pawn Price

…

…

…

Starbind Bank's interior had different dimensional worlds located within it. And, its pawn store was in the shape of a six floored pagoda that floated high in the sky.

Many masters arrived at the pagoda and turned into a beam of lightning, flying directly within.

Lin Ming rubbed his chin. He bid farewell to River Feather and flew in alone.

At this time, a light blue hazy mist covered his body, and one was barely able to make out the contours of his features. One couldn't clearly see his appearance nor clearly make out his age. This was a protection that Starbind Bank arranged for those people that weren't willing to disclose their identity. Of course, if one really wished to look through this concealment it would be easy. But in this aspect, Starbind Bank's credibility had stood up to the most rigorous tests of time. It had operated for so many years and yet there had never been a single time when they tried to steal the belongings of their guests, nor had they ever secretly investigated the appearance of their guests or violated their privacy.

After Lin Ming entered the pagoda, he went to the first level. The space here was a thousand miles long and wide, with a large crowd of talkative guests that were here to pawn treasures.

Lin Ming moved straight to the second floor. According to what River Feather told him, expensive treasures had to be pawned on the second floor.

Just as Lin Ming arrived at the second floor, a beautiful young woman dressed in white with a late Divine Sea cultivation stopped Lin Ming, saying with a smile, “Young Sir, please hold on. Do you have a VIP card?” Although she was technically refusing him entry, her tone and expression were actually quite comfortable.

“No.”

“My apologies. If you do not have a VIP card, you will have to have the appraiser on the first level appraise your treasure first. If the value is high enough, you may enter the second floor.” As the young woman spoke to here, her voice caught in her throat. She felt a deep pressure suddenly enveloping her.

Under this pressure, even her soul began to tremble.

“Peak Holy Lord master? No... half-step World King!?”

The white-clothed woman’s eyes flashed with a startled light as she took a step backwards. With her late Divine Sea cultivation, she could judge Lin Ming’s relative strength according to the pressure he released. This was not a level of perception that an ordinary Divine Sea master could possess. It was clear that many great masters often came to Starbind Bank’s second floor.

Even so, peak Holy Lord and even half-step World King powerhouses were very rare. These were distinguished guests. The only level above them was World Kings, and it had to be known that one of Starbind Bank’s secret owners was the True Martial Great World King.

The white-clothed woman’s voice immediately attracted everyone’s eyes. They all glanced at Lin Ming, “Half-step World King? Is it some super master from a Holy Land level influence? To think that they would personally come here... I wonder just what they are pawning!”

“This is a half-step World King powerhouse... that’s the first time I’ve ever seen one, just incredible... even a half-step World King has come out. The grand auction three days from now will surely be worth watching.”

"Senior may certainly enter a higher level. Please." The white-clothed woman motioned with her hand, inviting Lin Ming upstairs.

Like this, Lin Ming stepped onto the stairs leading to the second floor underneath the envious gaze of others. But, he didn't stop at the second floor and went straight to the fourth.

As he entered the fourth floor, a middle-aged scholar welcomed him. Together with the woman, they guided Lin Ming to an inner room.

At this time, Lin Ming had already restrained his aura. Soul pressure itself was a kind of force field, and to use it required soul force. Since Mo Eversnow's soul was still damaged, she wasn't able to release this soul pressure for too long a time.

He had disguised himself as a half-step World King master in order to increase his number of chips and ensure that this transaction would be absolutely safe.

"Senior, are you here to pawn treasures for the auction three days from now? May I ask what Senior would like to pawn?" The middle-aged scholar said with anticipation. If the treasures pawned were valuable enough, the yearly interest would be quite considerable.

"Correct. Take a look at these and tell me what their value is." Lin Ming raised a hand and tossed out six dragon bone relics.

30 dragon bone relics were enough to refine the Esoteric Immortality Pill. These six remaining dragon bone relics were to be pawned to ensure that his chances in the auction would be better.

"This is..."

As the middle-aged scholar saw these six black crystal beads, his eyes shined. "God beast bones?"

The middle-aged scholar was able to instantly discern the value of these dragon bone relics at first sight. Lin Ming praised this man inwardly. This middle-aged scholar was indeed a professional, able to tell whether something was a common treasure or a top treasure with just a single glance.

The middle-aged scholar revealed a solemn look. He clapped his hands and the curtains outside moved. A robust and vibrant old man with a long beard walked in. This person only had an early Divine Lord realm cultivation, but his eyes shined exceptionally bright. It was clear that he was an appraisal master.

The old man appraised the dragon bone relics for a moment. Then, with a slight movement of his lips, he sent a true essence sound transmission to the middle-aged scholar containing his appraisal results. The middle-aged scholar praised, “These are dragon bone relics refined from the bone of an Azure Dragon, they are truly wonderful items! But what a pity, the dragon marrow has already been taken out and there is only the pure skeleton left behind. Because of this, the value is reduced by 70-80%. Even so, these dragon bone relics are much more precious than a drop of dragon horn blood! For these six dragon bone relics, I am willing to pawn 350 billion violet sun stones for Senior! What does Senior think about this?”

Lin Ming nodded. This was about the price he expected. The price for pawning something was only 50-60% of the selling price. This was the only way that the pawn store could make a profit once the original master decided they didn’t want the item anymore.

“Haha, Senior truly is great. Does Senior have any more items that you wish to pawn?” The middle-aged scholar personally poured a cup of tea for Lin Ming. “This is nine fog tea formed from 10,000 year camellia flowers. They are infused with high quality spirit spring water. Senior, please have a taste.”

Lin Ming received the teacup and took a sip. Really, this tea was quite fragrant. There was even a light feeling of having his soul revitalized. Compared to the chaotic crowd downstairs, the treatment on the fourth floor was worlds apart. This was the difference power and wealth brought.

Lin Ming drank the tea and then took out the goddess' necklace from his spatial ring, placing it in front of the middle-aged scholar.

"This is..." A doubtful expression crossed the middle-aged scholar's face. As he looked at this necklace, he didn't notice anything special about it.

The middle-aged scholar picked up the necklace. It was quite heavy and ice cold to the touch. Moreover, there were some faint Law fluctuations exuding from it.

"This is a spirit artifact... however, it seems to lack an artifact spirit... no, that's not right. This is..."

The long-bearded old man was the first to respond, startled. He looked at Lin Ming with incredulity in his eyes and then began to rapidly whisper to the middle-aged scholar.

After the middle-aged scholar listened to him, he suddenly shot up from his chair. "Are you serious!?"

The old man nodded. The middle-aged scholar was completely floored. He investigated the necklace again, but was more or less assured in the old man's opinion.

Although the old man didn't have a high cultivation, he was actually the chief appraisal master of this pawn store. If there was something that caught his interest like this, he certainly wouldn't make a mistake, especially if it was so valuable. If he didn't have absolute assurance in his guess, he wouldn't have said anything.

"This is... a spirit treasure created by an Empyrean!? Senior actually has such a treasure..." The middle-aged scholar sucked in a deep breath and looked at Lin Ming with awe in his eyes!

An Empyrean spirit treasure was something that normally only Great World King level powerhouses possessed. For instance, when direct disciples of Empyreans grew up they were on the same level as Great World Kings. The weapons they used would often be Empyrean spirit treasures.

Of course, this spirit treasure that Lin Ming presented was broken and could no longer be used. Even so, the value was tremendous! If the inherent refining techniques and Law fluctuations within this necklace were obtained by someone, the comprehensions they could gain would be a truly serendipitous lucky chance!

As the middle-aged scholar saw this necklace, he found it hard to remain calm even though he had come across many treasures. For someone who worked in a pawn store, the most exciting matter was to come across extremely rare heavenly treasures like this.

“Senior, do you plan on selling this necklace? We will pay you a full and satisfying price!” The middle-aged scholar politely said as he rubbed his hands together. If it weren’t for a special time like right now, normally others wouldn’t bring out such a treasure to sell. They would only trade it for something equally precious.

But Lin Ming firmly shook his head and said, “I am not selling, only pawning. I will return to redeem it within five years.”

Lin Ming certainly couldn’t sell something that Empyrean Primordius had left behind. Even if it had no value to him, he would still redeem it. This was his respect to Empyrean Primordius. After all, Empyrean Primordius had been his teacher.

“What a pity.” The middle-aged scholar secretly shook his head. If this was sold, he could even present it to the True Martial Great World King. Although the True Martial Great World King already had a complete Empyrean spirit treasure, just the Laws within this necklace would be enough to tempt him.

As the middle-aged scholar and Lin Ming spoke, the curtains around them lifted once more and two additional appraisal masters walked in. One was a white-haired old woman and another was a skinny man. These two didn’t even speak to the long-bearded old man. Instead, all three of them were completely engrossed in appraising this Empyrean spirit treasure, their eyes shining with obvious excitement.

They constantly moved around, changing their perspective and speaking with true essence sound transmissions. It was only after an hour that they finished appraising the goddess' necklace. The long-bearded old man told the middle-aged scholar the appraisal result. Even in the end, the three appraisal masters weren't able to discern which Empyrean had crafted this necklace.

This was also within reason. The world of Empyreans was incomparably mysterious. Even with the long-bearded old man's experience, he still wasn't able to touch upon such a high realm. He was only able to determine that this was an Empyrean spirit treasure, a vague estimation of its quality, and an approximate price. For someone to be able to do this was already extremely rare.

The middle-aged scholar hesitated for a moment and then waved his hand, tossing out a sound transmitting talisman. A moment later, he received a sound transmitting talisman in reply. After several exchanges, he made a final decision. Only after this was finalized again did he stretch out his two hands and stick out six fingers. He calmly and clearly enunciated, "6 trillion!"

Lin Ming's eyebrows jumped up. Silently, he began to rapidly converse with Mo Eversnow in his spiritual sea. "Okay, it's a deal at 6 trillion!"

The following matters were much simpler. Lin Ming left behind a password array formation symbol. Then, he took away a total of 63,600 violet sun stone crystal cards from Starbind Bank and left. When this was added to his original wealth as well as the thousand some crystal cards that River Feather had given him, he had a total of 60,000 crystal cards. This was a total of 7 trillion!

And at this time, the auction for the Boundless World Pill had finally begun!

Chapter 1159 – The Grand Auction

Chapter 1159 – The Grand Auction

…

…

…

True Martial World was originally one of the liveliest and most prosperous trading hubs of the Divine Realm. Immemorial Imperial City was the largest city on True Martial World, with the most citizens living within. And now, borrowing the great wind of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting to boost everyone's spirit, the grand auction that was being held could be said to be the grandest event for the last several thousands of years!

Before this grand Imperial City Auction was held, Immemorial Imperial City had already held many smaller auctions. But compared to the precious items at the Imperial City Auction, everything else was simply left in the dust.

This auction would continue for three days and would include thousands of treasures. In addition, there were also 100,000 pieces that would only be bid on in private.

Although these weren't items that would be put up for public auction, the truth was that they were very precious. For instance, items such as peak top grade saint artifacts would be privately sold. In the past, even most direct disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace wouldn't have such a treasure, but here they wouldn't even see the light of day.

"Two sirs, here are your seat numbers."

Lin Ming and River Feather each took a jade slip. They looked through them and saw that their numbers were over 200,000. This was proof that just at this moment there were already over 200,000 guests at the auction site. And these 200,000 people all had to have shown proof of certain financial prowess or they wouldn't have been able to take a single step inside.

One could only say that the Divine Realm was far too great!

The two moved towards their seats. Lin Ming hadn't chosen to alter his appearance. He retained his original appearance as well as his original name.

It was easy to hide his appearance in Starbind Bank because Starbind Bank protected the privacy of their customers. Even if there were powerhouses in the bank, they still wouldn't do something so rude as investigate Lin Ming's true appearance in front of everyone.

But at this auction, many visitors were Holy Lords, peak Holy Lords, or even half-step World Kings. It was impossible for Lin Ming to use his appearance changing technique in front of them with any hope of success. Instead, if he remained secretive yet possessed a massive amount of wealth, that would only attract more eyes to him, and Lin Ming wouldn't be able to do anything against this type of probing.

So, he might as well use his true appearance and enter the stage. It didn't matter if anyone noticed him. He had already rented out the best cultivation area he could at Immemorial Imperial City. As soon as this auction was finished, he could train in there for three months in absolute safety.

After he joined the First Martial Meeting, he would be even more secure.

This auction site was similar to the arena of the Sacred Martial Grand Tournament. However, it was a bit smaller. The venue was only a five mile wide square, and the seating areas were much taller at up to 10 miles. Like this, they could accommodate more guests.

At first glance, the countless seats were just like little grains of sand in the desert.

At the center of the auction venue there was also a battle array disc floating in the sky. It would project an image of the auction goods so that everyone could clearly see them.

Lin Ming followed River Feather into the auction venue until they reached the area that the River Family had been assigned. Here, they couldn't help but meet River Feather's older brother – River Wind.

River Wind looked at River Feather and Lin Ming with a smile on his face. He directly ignored Lin Ming and only looked to River Feather, "Dear little brother, I never imagined that you would manage to scrounge up enough money to come and bid on the trashiest items here. Did you borrow it from your pack of loser friends? Are you counting on buying a few top grade saint artifacts here and giving the First Martial Meeting a shot? Do you want to gain some experience or something?"

River Wind's words were clearly mocking. He had suppressed River Feather's ability to borrow violet sun stones from his family and had expected that River Feather wouldn't have any money to come here. Being able to buy a few top grade saint artifacts was already better than what he had expected. As for River Feather making any sort of progress in the First Martial Meeting, that was simply a joke. Let alone River Feather, that was impossible even for Yue Ironrock.

River Feather sneered. He said, "The reason I came to this auction is to accompany my friend to participate. As for the First Martial Meeting three months from now, Big Brother doesn't need to waste energy and worry about me."

"Friend?" River Wind shot Lin Ming a glance and then heartily laughed, not even bothering to toss out any cruel words. After all, he didn't have any hatred or conflict with Lin Ming, and he wasn't stupid enough to randomly create a new enemy. Moreover, Lin Ming only had a ninth stage Life Destruction cultivation; River Wind simply didn't place him in his heart.

Lin Ming didn't look at River Wind. This sort of lowly and trivial character didn't even enter his eyes. At this time, his only competition was the heroic young elites of the World King level Holy Lands!

And these people were all seated at the uppermost, reserved seats.

"No one from the True Martial Holy Lands has come... it does make sense though. The True Martial Holy Lands' Holy Lord is the True Martial Great World King. This person has managed True Martial Great World and Starbind Bank for so many years that he must have accumulated an incalculable amount of wealth and resources. These resources should be more than enough to supply the disciples of his Holy Land with everything they need. In just this aspect alone, an ordinary World King level Holy Land like the Sacred Martial Mansion simply cannot compare..."

As Lin Ming was thinking, he looked over the young elites sitting in the reserved section. Not only were there people from Sacred Martial Mansion, but there were also disciples of other super influences. These disciples had come from outside of Immemorial Imperial City. If they could sit in the highest levels, the level of the influences they came from must be no worse than the Ancient Dragon Clan!

All around Lin Ming, 90% of the martial artists present were heroic young elites. They had all come for this auction and also the First Martial Meeting three months from now. They were constantly discussing all of the exciting events that were recently occurring.

Lin Ming sat with his eyes closed in meditation, ignoring all the conversation around him. This auction would be similar to a battlefield. If he couldn't win here then it would be difficult for him to rapidly increase his strength in these next three months. It would greatly affect his performance in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting! If he wanted to advance into the top 10 then, it would be far too difficult!

"Esteemed guests, you have waited for a long time! The Imperial City Auction will begin now!"

At this time, at the very center of the auction site, a charming and flirtatious voice echoed out, easily spreading over a dozen miles.

Lin Ming opened his eyes. He could see that at the center of the auction site, there was a red-clothed woman standing there. She was delicate and naively beautiful, with icy white skin and a body that seemed molded from water. She had a playful look with eyes that promised 10,000 different dreams. Overall, she was incredibly beautiful. Moreover, what was strange was that she had a long, winter-white fox tail.

“That is the Wintry Fox Clan’s Princess Honeylush. I didn’t think that this auction would be managed by her.” River Feather commented from the side. Lin Ming was from one of the four God Beast Clans, but even though they were called God Beast Clans, they only had the bloodline of a God Beast transplanted into their bodies. As for the Wintry Fox Clan, they clearly had a true wintry fox ancestor. They were descendants of a human and a wintry fox that had lived long enough to manifest a human form. They were considered half-monsters, thus they had certain characteristics like a fox tail! As for the four God Beast Clan juniors, although they could use some secret skills to take on the shape or characteristics of God Beasts, they weren’t true body parts.

“This is… wow, I heard that Princess Honeylush’s talent is extremely high, not inferior to the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion. There are countless suitors chasing after her. With her presiding over this auction, those countless young elites will crazily kick up the price in their feverish desire to please her!”

Lin Ming thought little of it. “It doesn’t matter. Princess Honeylush will at most be able to affect the prices of some ordinary goods. As for those true final closing treasures that involve a massive amount of money, no one will carelessly increase the price just for a smile from a random beauty.”

Lin Ming sat down, keeping his heart and mind calm and clear. At this time, the first auction item was placed on stage.

For every auction, the best items would naturally be placed at the end. But, the very first item would be of high quality too, with value no lower than those that would come at the end. This was to rouse the good mood of the guests and to bring a grand opening to the event.

Princess Honeylush patted the box near her and sweetly smiled. She said in a clear and coy tone, “Thank you distinguished guests for your support. In this Imperial City Auction, there are over 300,000 guests present. This is the first auction item for this grand and momentous event! What could it possibly be? Not even I know!"

Princess Honeylush's voice was just as sweet as honey, causing those who heard her to feel their hearts twitch. She was skilled at galvanizing the mood of heroic young elites. Many people shouted, asking her to immediately open the box and start the auction.

"The first item up for auction is..." As Princess Honeylush spoke to here, she slowly opened the box, revealing a piece of flawless crystal. This crystal was in the shape of a baby, only half a foot high. Through the projection of a battle array disc, one could clearly make out every single inch and texture of the crystal. What was strange was that this 'baby' had nine holes in its body. Coincidentally, these nine holes all corresponded to vital acupoints on a human body. They were naturally formed and not carved, a miracle of nature.

And beside this crystal was a card. Princess Honeylush picked up the card and looked over it. She laughed and said, "The first item for auction is a nine aperture spirit crystal! Hehe, so it was this sort of thing! I think that many guests present will be joining the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting in three months. If you lose to an opponent in strength, then there is nothing left to say. However, if you lose to an opponent not because of your strength but because of a weapon, then that would truly be regretful!

"This nine orifice spirit crystal can be used to nourish a spirit artifact's artifact spirit! I think that there is no need for me to mention just how useful an artifact spirit is to a spirit artifact and what benefits a stronger artifact spirit would bring. In order to perform well, the necessary tools are required. With a superior weapon, the battle is already half won! This nine orifice spirit crystal has a base price of 4 billion violet sun stones, and the minimum bid increase each time is 500 million violet sun stones. And now, it is time to begin the auction!"

Nine orifice spirit crystal!

Many of the young elites present gulped. The first auction item was actually aimed at a spirit artifact! One couldn't forget that this auction was aimed at Divine Sea martial artists. A Divine Sea martial artist using a spirit artifact? Just what kind of luxury was that! This sort of spirit artifact required a top supreme elder to expend a great deal of time and energy so that a young elite could be attuned to it. Besides juniors of super influences, no other Divine Sea martial artists could possibly be so extravagant.

From this alone, one could see just how magnificent and lofty this auction was! Some poorer young elites felt their hearts ache. They had collected the lowest amount possible to hopefully join this auction as a foil, but they couldn't even afford a fifth of the starting bidding price!

"Nine orifice spirit crystal, not bad!"

Lin Ming thought to himself. The first auction item was something that would actually be extremely useful to him. This was a very good sign but also well within reason. Everything in this auction was aimed at top Divine Sea geniuses!

"5 billion!" In the audience, a youth called out, suddenly attracting the envy and admiration of many others. This proved that this youth had a spirit artifact as a weapon. His background could be imagined!

This youth faintly smiled as if this wasn't something worth mentioning. But in the next breath of time, another person raised the price.

"5.5 billion!"

"6 billion!"

The price climbed higher and higher but Lin Ming remained unmoved for now. He knew that the starting price was only a tentative exploration. The true buyers still hadn't yet shown themselves!

Chapter 1160 – Zhong Wenshu

Chapter 1160 – Zhong Wenshu

…

…

…

“A guest has bid 7.5 billion, is there another guest that is willing to bid a higher price?” Princess Honeylush asked on the auction stage with a flirtatious tone, a tone that caused many young elites to bubble over with heated blood. But, as they thought of this 7.5 billion cost, they were all discouraged. This price was simply too high.

“7.5 billion, huh, whoever bids this high must be rich!”

A young disciple sighed enviously from beside Lin Ming. For many present, their total usage of resources growing up until now didn’t surpass 7.5 billion. But, this cost was actually used to bid on a nine aperture spirit crystal to nourish a spirit artifact. There was simply no way to describe this gap.

“It’s impossible to withstand the world of the wealthy.”

As some were discussing, in the higher level reserved seats, someone suddenly called out, “10 billion!”

The one who spoke was a young man who looked to be 15-16 years old. He was handsome with clear eyes and shining teeth, and also had an early Divine Sea cultivation. Although he only appeared to be 15-16 years old, for him to have reached a Divine Sea cultivation, his natural age had to be over 30.

“That is Dual Polarity Palace’s Zhong Wenshu. Dual Polarity Palace is also a World King Holy Land! They’re on a similar level to Sacred Martial Mansion and one of their branch divisions is located in White Sun City. White Sun City is only slightly inferior to Immemorial Imperial City in terms of trade. There must be an auction held over there, but these fellows actually decided to cross tens of millions of miles to come to our Immemorial Imperial City and steal our meat!”

In True Martial World, the highest ranked World King level Holy Land influence was naturally True Martial Holy Lands. As for Sacred Martial Mansion and Dual Polarity Palace, they could only be considered as being on the lower end of the spectrum of World King level Holy Lands. This was simply how things were. Even so, they weren’t something that the Yue Family or the River Family could compare with. They had tens of millions of years of accumulation and just a tiny hair from them was thicker than some of these distinguished families’ thighs.

“Humph, these World King Holy Lands are too widely distributed and there are far too many young disciples. Even Sacred Martial Mansion has a massive amount of their power distributed outside of Immemorial Imperial City. It is impossible for them to fully hedge on a single city auction. With the First Martial Meeting approaching, they have to spread their net out as much as possible and buy as many goods as they can. This Immemorial Imperial City auction is a battlefield that many World King Holy Lands are gambling on. We shouldn’t think of being able to partake in any of the good treasures. Just eating a bit of the soup should be enough.”

Disciples of ordinary Holy Lands and small families understood their own worth. It was impossible for them to purchase any of the major items, but they had hopes of buying some of the smaller goods.

At this time, beside them, a youth suddenly raised a jade slip in his hands. “10.5 billion!”

The youth who called out this bid sat in the lower seats of the auditorium where the disciples of the ordinary families were. To call out this bid from that seating position, this action immediately attracted everyone’s eyes!

“Who is he? What sort of background does he have?”

All of the young elites couldn’t help but wonder this.

Lin Ming remained calm. He was already prepared to be noticed by others in this auction. The true war of wealth was still to come!

“This brat, could he be randomly shouting?”

“What a joke. In this auction there are very serious consequences for maliciously bidding without meaning it! Moreover, the 200 million violet sun stones we put out to come here won’t be returned either!”

For a disciple of an ordinary family, having to give up 200 million violet sun stones would absolutely ruin them. No one was so crazy that they would waste all of their hard-earned wealth to do some grandstanding, much less risk the danger of being executed later.

Beside Lin Ming, River Feather wasn’t surprised at all. He already knew that Lin Ming had a spirit artifact spear, and an extremely high quality one at that!

But River Feather’s older brother, River Wind, was left completely dumbfounded. He looked at Lin Ming and gulped. 10.5 billion to buy a spirit crystal to enhance a weapon? Moreover, this was proof that Lin Ming had a spirit artifact as a weapon! How could his little brother possibly know such a person?

Zhong Wenshu looked at Lin Ming with some surprise before revealing a playful smile. He simply hadn’t placed Lin Ming’s competing bid in his heart. He adjusted his seat to a more comfortable position and then lazily lifted the jade slip in his hand, calling out another bid, “12 billion!”

“12.5 billion!” Lin Ming said before a single breath of time passed. This second bid he shouted was as if he were tossing out a pile of rocks instead of violet sun stones.

“How interesting!” Zhong Wenshu humphed. “13 billion!”

"13.5 billion!" Every time Lin Ming put in a higher bid, it was 500 million more. It was succinct and the same no matter what the other party called. This was a reflection of his rich property and his determination to purchase the nine aperture spirit crystal. Against this sort of momentum, it was easy for others to give birth to fear in their hearts, a feeling that it was impossible to win a bidding war against Lin Ming.

Zhong Wenshu frowned. He sat up, his expression serious.

"15 billion!"

"15.5 billion!"

"This brat!" Zhong Wenshu's handsome face flashed with a trace of impatience. As he looked at Lin Ming, his eyes were a bit cold.

He had his own spirit artifact. Although his family had spent a great deal of wealth to refine it for him and help train him to use it, if he really sold it then he would only be able to receive 80-90 billion. If he had to buy this nine aperture spirit crystal to enhance his spirit artifact's artifact spirit, that would be nearly a sixth of the entire value. It would be an overall loss for him.

If it weren't for Lin Ming, he definitely wouldn't spend so much.

"16.5 billion!" Zhong Wenshu shouted out as he raised his jade slip again. This nine aperture spirit crystal was extremely valuable to him. If he missed out on it this time, there was a chance that he would lose to his opponent in the First Martial Meeting due to the difference in weapons. Nine aperture spirit crystals were extremely rare; it wasn't possible to buy one whenever he wanted to. Thus, as he looked at Lin Ming, his eyes became increasingly cold.

"17 billion!" Lin Ming calmly said, raising the bid by another 500 million. He definitely had to obtain the nine aperture spirit crystal. This was because his Phoenix Blood Spear was much more valuable than the weapons that these other young elites used!

There was no other reason than the fact that the Phoenix Blood Spear was personally raised by Lin Ming. For the other young elites, no matter how wondrous or magnificent their backgrounds were, their weapons were still granted to them by their Elders. This was because no matter what sort of heaven-defying lucky chances they had experienced in their 30-40 years of life, it was impossible for them to form their own source artifact spirit.

Lin Ming was able to become one with the Phoenix Blood Spear, thus the Phoenix Blood Spear was not a spirit artifact that the weapons of other geniuses could compare with. So, the Phoenix Blood Spear was worth Lin Ming spending a great deal of money to buy the nine aperture spirit crystal, so that he could raise the Phoenix Blood Spear to become his own life weapon in the future.

In the higher reserved seats, some peak disciples of World King Holy Lands looked down at Lin Ming and Zhong Wenshu competing in their bidding war. Some revealed a bemused expression, but some were frowning. They also wanted the nine aperture spirit crystal, but because of Lin Ming and Zhong Wenshu's competition, they didn't have the chance to enter into this bidding war. And by this point, the bid had already surpassed the original value of the nine aperture spirit crystal by a great deal. There wasn't much meaning to shouting out another price. Moreover, Lin Ming appeared as if he were willing to obtain the nine aperture spirit crystal no matter the cost. This caused them to immediately lose interest in competing with him.

"Let them struggle and buy the nine aperture spirit crystal at a higher price so that they can use up their resources. That youth sitting down below probably isn't planning on bidding on the closing treasures, so he's bidding so unscrupulously now. As for us, we have to focus on those last few treasures. Even if it is only 10 billion or 5 billion, every amount is precious. A tiny straw can be the weight that crushes the camel. That tiny bit of wealth can decide our victory in the final auction bids!"

If the nine aperture spirit crystal was said to raise a martial artist's strength by a single point, then the Boundless World Pill could increase a martial artist's strength by dozens of points. Moreover, one was aimed at an external object and the other was aimed at the martial artist themselves. Their values naturally couldn't be compared.

What these young elites were thinking was also what Zhong Wenshu was thinking. Zhong Wenshu deeply looked at Lin Ming as if he were carving Lin Ming's looks into his mind. "Second Uncle, did that boy change his appearance?"

Zhong Wenshu asked an old man meditating beside him. This old man was a peak Holy Lord level powerhouse.

The old man opened his macerated eyes and looked at Lin Ming for a few breaths of time before expressionlessly saying, "No."

"He's sitting in the seating area of the commoners and still doesn't understand how to restrain himself. Instead, he swaggers around trying to struggle with the disciples of World King Holy Lands. It's as if he wants to die! Find someone to thoroughly investigate his origin and just what family he comes from!"

Zhong Wenshu sneered. Since Lin Ming wasn't sitting in the reserved section, that meant he likely didn't have a World King Holy Land background. Even so, it was best to be careful and investigate Lin Ming's background lest he be forced to kick himself later.

Of course, it was impossible for him to do anything in Immemorial Imperia City – that would be a blatant violation of the rules. If anyone dared to provoke the sanctuary of the True Martial Holy Lands, their future might not be so safe.

This wasn't a particular grievance that Zhong Wenshu was looking to take revenge on, but a natural process of the world of martial arts. In the world of martial arts, the law of the jungle was all that mattered and the strong ate the weak. Besides in some super cities and other areas, there weren't any legal constraints at all. Killing someone and stealing their possessions was common. This was because the strong did not need to reason with the weak. Strength was the only reasoning required!

Thus, if one only had a minor background and managed to stumble into a great deal of wealth and come to this auction to play around, then that was completely suicidal behavior!

“17 billion. Is there anyone that would like to place a higher bid?” Princess Honeylush gently smiled on the auction stage, her eyes on Zhong Wenshu. She had already glanced over the young elites from the other World King Holy Lands, and he was the only one who seemed willing to raise the bid.

One had to admit that Princess Honeylush’s warm and watery eyes seemed to speak volumes. Her vision seemed to contain 10,000 temptations, causing one to lose concentration as if they were lost in freefall.

Zhong Wenshu coldly coughed and sat back down in his chair. He said in a cold and clear voice, “Little girl, there’s no need for you to try to stir me up with your eyes. It doesn’t matter to me how you keep batting your eyes at me. What is 17 billion? Much less 17 billion, if I were in a better mood, even 170 billion would be nothing at all! However, the reason for me coming here today is for the Boundless World Pill, so I can’t be bothered to haggle with those little mice sitting down below. This nine aperture spirit crystal, what’s the big deal if I grant it to you?”

Zhong Wenshu’s words were filled with energy as they spread throughout the entire audience. This sort of appearance made it seem as if Lin Ming didn’t win the bidding for the nine aperture spirit crystal, but rather that Zhong Wenshu bestowed it to Lin Ming.

Moreover, when he said ‘those little mice sitting down below’, that was clearly mocking all of the young elites from ordinary family backgrounds. This caused those ordinary young elites to immediately be enraged. Yet, they had no words to refute him.

Zhong Wenshu was absolutely not someone they could provoke.

Chapter 1161 – Auctioning the Boundless World Pill

Chapter 1161 – Auctioning the Boundless World Pill

…

…

…

"Fuck, who the hell does he think he is? He clearly lost so why is he pretending to be so amazing at losing!" River Feather cursed. "It's as if he thinks that he's donating to us or something. Everyone clearly knows he lost the bid and yet he thinks he won it!"

Lin Ming thought little of it. He said, "That type of person has an arrogant personality with a mouth that keeps running off on its own. Even if he lost he would tell others that it wasn't because he was weak but because he couldn't be bothered to put his full force into fighting. These geniuses from somewhat influential backgrounds are born with a sense of superiority, so being idiotically arrogant like this is also normal."

As for Princess Honeylush, she looked at Zhong Wenshu without the least bit of embarrassment. As the auctioneer for this event, it was common knowledge that she would be able to keep a small percentage of the profits for herself. Even so, any normal person would have been humiliated after being publicly scolded by Zhong Wenshu.

But Princess Honeylush only smiled. She said, "What Sir Zhong said about me, I will surely remember. I hope that once the final several items of this auction come out, Sir Zhong will be able to put forth a splendid performance!

"If no one wishes to bid again, then I will begin the countdown!"

As Princess Honeylush spoke, Lin Ming was a bit surprised. This young woman wasn't simple at all. She was actually able to remain so calm and composed in the face of Zhong Wenshu's ridicule. It might really be true that she had a talent that approached the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion.

"17 billion, going once…"

Princess Honeylush slowly spoke. As she finished the countdown, no one bid again.

"Congratulations to this guest for obtaining the nine aperture spirit crystal!"

Princess Honeylush smiled at Lin Ming. As for those young elites around Lin Ming, all of them were looking at him with strange expressions on their faces. They never imagined that this youth they were sitting with would actually be so special and wealthy.

"Does anyone know what his background is!?"

"Not sure. If he comes from a World King Holy Land then he should have revealed his status. If his status was certified, he should have been able to sit in the VIP seats as an honored guest. Since this youth didn't, he might be the descendant of some expert. If that expert is amazing enough, then his status might not be too different from that of an upper level Holy Land. Otherwise, if he's just some nobody that obtained a massive lucky chance by accident, then he will be in danger."

All of the young elites began discussing Lin Ming's status with true essence sound transmissions, curious as to just who he was and where he came from.

"Honored guest, would you like to switch seats?" Princess Honeylush kindly said to Lin Ming. She clearly wanted to swap Lin Ming's seat for one in the upper levels.

Lin Ming shook his head, "No need."

"Very well, please do as you please. Now, it is time for the next auction!" As Princess Honeylush spoke, she had already opened the second box.

This was a five foot long wooden chest. After opening it, a sword with a four foot long blade was revealed. The blade edge was sharp and chilling!

This was… a transcendent saint artifact!

A spirit artifact without an artifact spirit was a transcendent saint artifact. It was weaker than a true spirit artifact but far superior to a top grade saint artifact.

And most importantly, this sort of weapon could be used by an extreme Divine Sea genius. By relying on the weak world power within themselves, they could move this weapon. It wasn’t like a spirit artifact that required a Divine Transformation realm genius to use it.

“What a wonderful treasure, haha!”

“I just happen to use a sword! Although I can’t compare to those rich fellows that use spirit artifacts, a transcendent saint artifact isn’t too bad either. At least in terms of weapon hardness and durability, I won’t lose to others!”

At the ordinary lower level seats, many young elites were itching to put up a struggle for treasures. After the first auction, the quality of the items dramatically fell, otherwise they would never have been able to afford anything here.

The base price of this transcendent saint artifact sword was 80 million. The disciples of ordinary families bid on it until it was finally won at 160 million.

Following that, item after item was auctioned. However, the price normally wouldn’t exceed 200 million. The audience for these items was ordinary young elites. Of course, these so called ‘ordinary young elites’ were still top disciples of Holy Land level sects and distinguished martial families.

To Lin Ming and others, these things had little to no use.

Lin Ming didn’t call out another bid. As for those other World King Holy Land geniuses, they were all saving their strength for the true bidding.

As item after item was sold, the auction finally began to approach its end.

Princess Honeylush stepped on stage again. She said with a lively and spirited voice, “This auction has continued for three days. Several thousands of items have been auctioned, and now, it is finally time for the grand finale. The first of the final items is also the most precious of them all, as well as what so many of you have come here for. It is… the Boundless World Pill! Now, let us begin the auction!”

There were a total of 10 final items. The most precious, the Boundless World Pill, was the first and not the last. This was so that the young elites present would compete for it without holding back. Otherwise, if they all held their hands waiting for it, they would bid lower on the other items, thinking to save as much as possible for the Boundless World Pill.

Once the Boundless World Pill appeared, everyone would still be in the situation where they had the most funds available to them. They could wholeheartedly compete for it with everything they had! If they couldn’t win the bidding then they could at least forget about it.

At that time, they would be able to bid on other items. They would have already cut off all other paths so they would have no choice but to purchase something else, otherwise they would have to leave empty-handed without anything to show for their efforts.

This arrangement was to maximize the auction value of all items. It was also to ensure that the bidding competition between these young elites would be fair.

“Let’s begin, the true act is here!”

“Haha, I’ve waited three days for this. The Boundless World Pill is finally appearing. I must obtain it before I can go to sleep!”

In the higher reserved seats, every disciple of the World King level Holy Lands was gearing up to bid. Beside them were also many of their Elders that were here to back them up. Many of them were peak Holy Lord masters.

On Sacred Martial Mansion's side, a tall and burly youth rubbed his spatial ring, caressing it like he would his most treasured lover. Without a doubt, there was a great deal of wealth contained within this spatial ring.

This tall and burly youth was Sacred Tianhao, one of the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion. Beside him, the red-haired Sacred Yueping drawled, "Big Brother, there is no need for there to be a fight between us brothers. Let's join together to purchase this Boundless World Pill and then we can discuss how to split it up later."

As geniuses of Sacred Martial Mansion, although their relationship wasn't usually harmonious, they naturally fell in sync with each other at this time.

"That's a good idea. It's not just us, but we also have to join together with Third Sister. We have to win this Boundless World Pill at all costs. This is going to be a tough battle for all of us."

In truth, even if several of them joined together, the force standing behind the three prodigies was only a World King level Holy Land. Their advantage here wasn't too great.

And in front of them were several geniuses of World King Holy Lands. For instance… Zhong Wenshu.

At this time, Zhong Wenshu had completely put away his previous cynical and contemptuous manner. He was staring at the jade box in front of Princess Honeylush, eyeing it like a viper eyeing its prey!

Zhong Wenshu had an early Divine Sea cultivation. If he could obtain the Boundless World Pill and close up in training for three months within a time altering array formation, then it would be guaranteed for him to step into the middle Divine Sea realm. Moreover, his inner world would become much more stable and he would be able to have a more amazing result in the First Martial Meeting. With a great result, the advantages he would obtain from the sect would be indispensable for his future achievements.

"This Boundless World Pill is mine no matter what!"

Zhong Wenshu cried out in his mind.

As for those disciples of ordinary sects and families, they could only watch the play unfolding in front of them. This would be a bloodbath of those with true wealth. Although they couldn't participate, they were still filled with anticipation in being able to watch. They all wanted to see just how astronomically high the price would rise.

A Boundless World Pill used a Realmheart cornerstone as the main material in refining it. As for a Realmheart cornerstone, that could only be obtained after a boundless world reached its natural end-time and collapsed. The preciousness of such a treasure could be imagined.

Moreover, wanting to refine such a pill wasn't easy either. Only a Great World King level alchemist would have the ability and power required to refine such a pill. Even then, in normal times this pill couldn't be bought with mere wealth. And now that the First Martial Meeting was approaching, the value of the Boundless World Pill was impossible to calculate!

Many people had a similar mentality in that even if they couldn't afford a high-priced treasure, and even if it was impossible for them to even dream of owning such an item, they would still want to see just how high of a price it could sell for. In the future, they could gossip about this and even boast about how they were present.

"I wonder just what it will sell for!"

"I have no idea. The price will surely be unimaginable!"

Before the auction for the Boundless World Pill began, Princess Honeylush waited for a full half incense stick of time. Finally, she slowly opened the jade box containing the Boundless World Pill. As the jade box opened, a perfectly spherical pill shot up into the air. The pill was surrounded by a clear jade green haze and the main body was translucent. Sealed within the centre of the pill seemed to be some kind of spirit. This spirit struggled within, as if it had a life of its own!

However, there was a special array formation on top of the jade box. As soon as the pill rushed out, it crashed into the array formation. There was a golden flash of light and the pill was bounced back, emitting hissing sounds all the while. As it floated in the air, brilliant beams of energy shot out like rays of the sun, beautiful and wonderful!

"It really is the Boundless World Pill!" Mo Eversnow exclaimed from within Lin Ming's spiritual sea. She had clearly seen this pill before.

As for the others present, even if they were the young elites of World King Holy Lands, this was still the first time they had seen such a pill.

"So that's the Boundless World Pill."

"It seems alive, how incredible."

"As expected of a top grade pill approaching the rank of a transcendent divine pill. If one could take this pill then the advantages could be imagined!"

Princess Honeylush lifted up the jade box and placed it within the array disc projection, expanding the image to tens of thousands of times its original size so that everyone could clearly see it. "Everyone, can you see that little life within the pill? That is a world spirit! In the legends it is said that there is a world soul, but… that is only a legend. Still, this Boundless World Pill was refined with a Realmheart cornerstone, so it wouldn't be surprising if a world soul could truly be bred within. What does everyone think about this item? Hohoho… this pill, if taken by someone at the Divine Sea or Divine Transformation realm, will grant tremendous benefits to their inner world! Now, let us start the bidding!"

"The starting price…"

Princess Honeylush trailed off as she spoke to here, and then said, "The starting price… is zero!"

"Zero?"

Many of the young elites were stunned. They looked at each other, not thinking that the starting price would be zero.

But, no matter what the starting price was, it didn’t matter. In this bidding war, the final price for the Boundless World Pill would surely rise to unbelievable heights!

Chapter 1162 – The Rise

Chapter 1162 – The Rise

…

…

…

"With a starting price of zero there is no standard to measure the auction with. The first bid will be even more exaggerated!"

A World King Holy Land Elder said from the higher reserved seats. Because there were so few Boundless World Pills and they were rarely traded, their price was difficult to estimate. Moreover, there were vastly different prices in each transaction without any standard at all. Thus, no one could say just what the price of the Boundless World Pill should be.

In this sort of situation, if the auction house were to put forth a starting price then others would subconsciously think that this was the ordinary reserve price of the Boundless World Pill.

If this auction finally produced a price several times that of the starting price then there would be people who thought that they spent too much money and would think this was a great injustice!

This would cause some people to feel uncomfortable with their purchase and might even affect the final transaction price.

But on the other hand, if the starting price was too high then many people would develop fear at the start and wouldn't dare to bid. This would lead to the auction being deserted and wouldn't allow the bidding price of the item to reach its highest peak.

Thus, the starting price had simply been set as zero!

A starting price of zero even meant that some not-so-wealthy geniuses of peak Holy Lands felt eager to dip their hands into the game. Although they knew it was impossible for them to win in the end, they still felt fired up enough to bid a single time. Then, in the future, for better or worse, they could say that they had joined in on competing for the Boundless World Pill.

As several young elites opened their mouths to shout out a price, in the lower common seats, a red bamboo hat woman who had yet to speak a single word spoke up.

“100 billion!”

100 billion! That bid immediately broke past the limits of what most people were able to bid. Even if these young elites were to put forth their entire wealth, they still wouldn’t be able to match a tenth of that price! Moreover, this young woman was sitting in the lower common seats so chances were that she wasn’t a disciple of a World King Holy Land. Just where had she come from?

“Good heavens! The starting price is 100 billion!” River Feather wiped dripping sweat from his neck. He already knew that Lin Ming had raised an astronomical amount of funds in order to compete for the final items, but as for how much he had prepared, River Feather actually had no idea. And now the first bid was 100 billion. The final bidding price might even be 10-20 times higher than that! Could Lin Ming have possibly managed to scrounge up so much money?

Lin Ming glanced at the bamboo hat woman. Her voice wasn’t gentle or elegant at all. Rather, she sounded a bit hoarse. The bamboo hat was covered with a fine red gauze, but although it was just a little bit of fabric, there was actually a strange energy covering it that made others unable to see her appearance.

Where had this woman come from?

“200 billion!” On Sacred Martial Mansion’s side, Sacred Yueping suddenly stretched out the jade slip in his hand. His bright red hair was particularly radiant in the audience.

“250 billion!”

“300 billion!”

“360 billion!”

The bidding price continued to rise without end. Before a voice even faded, another person would place a bid!

This left the young elites present dazed. For them, it was already difficult to imagine just how much money this actually was.

At this time, a voice shouted, “One trillion!”

As this voice echoed forth, all of the heroic young geniuses of ordinary families were left completely panic-stricken. One trillion! This was one trillion! Just what kind of insane number was that? This was a number usually used to describe populations!

However, a bidding price of a trillion didn’t dampen the excitement of these Holy Land geniuses.

Zhong Wenshu stood up. He glanced at Princess Honeylush and then at Lin Ming, revealing a playful smile. He raised the jade slip in his hands and said, “2 trillion!”

By the heavens! This was double the last bid!

River Feather gulped. As he thought of the 150 billion violet sun stones that he had lent Lin Ming, that could barely be considered a rounding error! That amount had already been his complete wealth. He had thought that he had an incredible destiny after stumbling into a great lucky chance, but compared to these truly wealthy individuals, everything he had in his life was now a joke.

River Feather glanced over at Lin Ming and discovered that he was still sitting there with a placid expression, not hurried at all. This startled River Feather. How could Lin Ming remain so calm? This was 2 trillion! Did he still have the confidence to continue bidding later?

“2.3 trillion!” Sacred Martial Mansion’s Sacred Tianhao shouted out as he raised the jade slip in his hand, rising past Zhong Wenshu’s bid.

“Mm?” Zhong Wenshu frowned. He coldly looked over in the direction of this new bid and met the eyes of Sacred Tianhao. Both of them came from World King level Holy Lands so neither of them feared the other.

“Good, then let’s have a little battle! 2.5 trillion!” Zhong Wenshu shouted out another bid. Towards those like Sacred Tianhao and Sacred Yueping, who had a formidable power backing them from behind, he didn’t bother mocking. He could only contend with them in a battle of wealth.

“2.5 trillion! Is there a higher bid?” Princess Honeylush passionately said from the auction stage. She was extremely excited to be able to preside over such an auction!

And at this time, Lin Ming finally stood up. Besides the bamboo hat woman, he was the only one in the lower common seats that was able to compete with these World King Holy Land geniuses.

Because of the ruckus caused by Lin Ming competing for the nine aperture spirit crystal, many people were able to recognize him. As soon as Lin Ming stood up, he immediately attracted everyone’s eyes to him. As for Zhong Wenshu, he suddenly rose to a sitting position. He looked towards Lin Ming, a cold light flashing in his eyes.

“3 trillion!”

Lin Ming said, slowly and confidently. Then, he sat down. The new bidding price that he shouted out immediately shocked all of the young elites present, including River Feather!

It was already astonishing to them that Lin Ming had spent 17 billion to purchase the nine aperture spirit crystal. But now, something completely unbelievable had occurred. He had bid an entire 3 trillion!

If Lin Ming truly came from a World King level Holy Land then why wasn't he sitting in the reserved VIP seats? If he was able to bring out a token that indicated he was from a World King level Holy Land then he would have been able to sit at the higher reserved levels. This would have helped him avoid a great number of troubles. Otherwise, it was simply too ostentatious for him to sit amongst the common young elites and call out such a high price. Once he left Immemorial Imperial City in the future, he would be targeted by countless people!

Just what was going on here?

Regardless of what happened, Lin Ming was now the center of all attention! A youth who others suspected of having an ordinary background actually put forth a bid of 3 trillion!

"This brat!" Zhong Wenshu's lips twitched. He had thought that Lin Ming only had enough to win that single item at the start. He never imagined that this young man would actually have the ability to contend for the final treasures, and the most precious one at that. In addition, the first time he had entered a bidding war against Lin Ming he had lost. That had been the same as ruthlessly slapping his face.

"There must be some secret on that brat. We must investigate his identity in as much depth as we can!" Zhong Wenshu said to the old man behind him.

It wasn't just Zhong Wenshu, but the three extraordinary geniuses of Sacred Martial Mansion also noticed Lin Ming. However, in the vast Divine Realm, it wasn't easy to thoroughly vet someone's background.

Just as Zhong Wenshu was about to shout out another bid, the bamboo hat woman that sat with Lin Ming in the lower common section actually stood up. She said in her coarse and deep voice, "3.3 trillion!"

"What!?"

This new bid left the audience bewildered. Lin Ming was already a surprise, but this bamboo hat woman also had trillions in wealth!

Just what was going on here!?

Everyone looked at that bamboo hat woman. Because of some special array formation in the red gauze that covered her face, it was impossible to clearly discern her appearance.

"Humph, covering up your face is nothing but a joke in front of me!"

Several Holy Lord level old monsters rudely released their senses. They wanted to directly pierce through the bamboo hat woman's veil and see just what sort of person she was.

But at this time, a sharp light flashed in the eyes of an old woman sitting beside her. An unimaginable aura erupted from her, and the divine sense of these old men crashed into this aura, immediately repelled. This feeling was just like a mortal running at full speed into a brick wall. It was enough to cause them to almost vomit blood!

The several old men who tried to investigate the woman's appearance paled as the blood drained from their faces. Their bodies shook and they nearly tumbled out of their chairs.

These old geezers were all stupefied. They knew now that they had kicked iron!

That person was…

Lin Ming's mind chilled as he looked towards the old woman. The old woman was wizened and haggard, with a face that was dried up like a walnut. Her hair was sparse and stringy and her body was bent with rickets. Her entire body was swathed in gray robes and her breathing was deep. It was hard to imagine that she was someone capable of defeating a crowd of peak Holy Lord masters.

All this indicated that she was… a World King!

Everyone present glanced at each other in dismay and shock. The appearance of this old man caused them all to be even more acutely aware that this auction was truly a den of crouching tigers and hidden dragons!

There were some people that didn't come from World King level Holy Lands, but standing behind them were still unfathomably deep existences. Because these existences were hidden, they were mostly unknown to anyone else. However, their strength far surpassed one's imagination. And for this Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, they had personally sent out their disciples to temper themselves in the upcoming battles!

"That old woman is too terrifying!"

Many young elites spoke to each other with true essence sound transmissions. Looking at this old woman, their eyes filled with dread and awe. For this old woman to be able to reflect the divine sense of several Holy Lord level masters with just a thought, then even if her strength wasn't that of a World King, she was infinitely close to one!

"Miss Mo, is that old woman a World King?"

Mo Eversnow shook her head. "She emits a very strange feeling. Her soul force is not inferior to that of an ordinary World King, but her true essence fluctuations are actually inferior to mine from 50,000 years ago! She should… not be a World King! But, she is someone approaching a World King, a peak half-step World King character! I am even more inclined to believe that she was once a World King. However, because of some injury she received in the past, she dropped out from the World King realm!"

Mo Eversnow inferred the likeliest situation from the little bits of clues and information she knew.

"I see… even someone that dropped from the World King realm is so frightening. She was able to casually defeat several Holy Lord level powerhouses and there were even peak Holy Lord level masters within that group. If what you said is true, then that bamboo hat young woman might be that old woman’s last disciple. In this auction, every opponent I face is stronger than the last. I only have 7 trillion… I wonder if that’s enough…”

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. As he traced his spatial ring, his expression was solemn.

Chapter 1163 – Crazy

Chapter 1163 – Crazy

…

…

…

"Miss Mo, how much property would a World King level powerhouse and a World King level Holy Land have?" Lin Ming asked Mo Eversnow, a bit unsure of himself.

Mo Eversnow said, "Property is divided into fixed assets and liquid assets. Whether it is a World King powerhouse or World King Holy Land, over 99.9% of their total wealth will be locked down in array formations, palaces, transmission arrays, training locations, pills, treasures, and so forth. They wouldn't have many liquid assets available. For them, having too much money is useless. It's best to invest everything into training disciples and exchanging for resources. In the past, my Verdant Feather Holy Lands only kept around 4-5 trillion in liquid capital, and the Verdant Feather Holy Lands was also a Great World King level Holy Land. It was much wealthier than these ordinary World King Holy Lands like Sacred Martial Mansion or Dual Polarity Palace. I estimate that they have a total of 1-2 trillion in liquid assets!"

Lin Ming nodded. This was a reasonable amount. When the Verdant Feather Holy Lands had been destroyed, Mo Eversnow had quickly snuck away some of the wealth, but that was only a small amount of the total, around a trillion in all. And then later, most of that had been taken away by Mo Eversnow's little sister, leaving less than 400 billion at Starbind Bank.

As for an ordinary World King Holy Land, even though their liquid capital was normally around 1-2 trillion, they could sell a small amount of their fixed assets in exchange for violet sun stones. The true value of their property was definitely above his own!

Fortunately, a World King Holy Land was far too large. There was more than one peak disciple and there was much more to do than attending a single auction. This meant that the wealth of that Holy Land would be scattered about all over. This was his only chance!

As Lin Ming was thinking about his own wealth, the bidding price had already dramatically risen to 3.8 trillion. The one who cast this bid was actually Sacred Yueping!

3.8 trillion was equal to the total liquid capital a normal upper World King Holy Land would have during normal times. But, this amount was actually tossed out in a single breath in order to buy just one Boundless World Pill that helped solidify one's inner world. Once this pill was used it would be no more!

From this, one could see just how much money was required to raise an extreme genius!

"The wealth required to walk down the martial path surpasses my original expectations. No wonder it's impossible for a top genius to appear amongst the wandering martial artists, and it's no wonder that even a Great World King level Holy Land would find it difficult to produce another World King successor after hundreds of thousands or even millions of years. This is why so many World King Holy Lands like the Ancient Dragon Clan lack successors!"

Lin Ming thought to himself. He thought about the True Martial Holy Lands. Starbind Bank had already been operating for millions of years, and there were also the many trade associations within Immemorial Imperial City that fell underneath the control of the True Martial Holy Lands. Just how much wealth had these businesses earned during this time? Perhaps not even the True Martial World King was sure!

But it was impossible for this wealth to be saved. It had to be spent at ridiculous speeds to help raise the future generations!

However, up until now, the True Martial Holy Lands had yet to produce a second World King! They had only produced over a hundred ‘successors’ to the True Martial World King. In this Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, the True Martial World King had even promised a position of successor for any disciple that obtained certain achievements.

And to grow each of these ‘successors’ cost a massive amount of wealth! Even so, the chances of them becoming a World King in the future weren’t high at all!

Of course, the True Martial World King was still in the prime of his life. It was no problem for him to live for another million years or so. He still had hopes that he would be able to produce a World King before his eventual death.

If he could guarantee raising a World King, then let alone several trillion, the True Martial World King wouldn’t hesitate to spend even dozens or hundreds of trillions!

“It seems that the reason the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Kirin Clan, and Roc Clan haven’t raised a World King in all these years is that they are too… poor!”

Lin Ming recalled the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s Xiao Daoji and Huo Burning Heaven. They were both extreme characters of their generation. The totem stones they left behind had filled Lin Ming with inspiration and wisdom. But even then, such characters had been stopped at the half-step World King realm. They hadn’t managed to take that last step forwards!

At that time, Lin Ming had thought this was unbelievable. But now that he thought about it some more, the reason they couldn’t take that last step was not because their talent was too poor and not because the foundation they built during Ninefall and the Nine Divine Shifts was too shaky, but because the Ancient Phoenix Clan simply wasn’t able to afford it!

The basis of the Ancient Phoenix Clan was that they had obtained the secret to finding out where the Ancient Phoenix underwent nirvana and thus were able to obtain the blood of the Ancient Phoenix. However, the Ancient Phoenix Clan didn’t even have enough of this blood to use, let alone trading it away for resources.

As for the Ancient Phoenix Clan's resource sites, the most valuable one was the God Beast Mystic Realm. But, while the God Beast Mystic Realm was excellent for tempering geniuses and allowing them to find great lucky chances, its ability to produce wealth was still below that of Carefree Island's Red Desolate Mystic Realm.

Of the four God Beast clans, only the Ancient Dragon Clan had been able to rely on its superior numbers and vastly greater wealth to raise two World Kings in the span of a hundred million years!

Lin Ming could only sigh with emotion as he understood all of this. For a genius, if they couldn't grow because of their lack of talent, then that was their own problem. They had no right to complain!

But if they were extremely talented individuals like Xiao Daoji or Huo Burning Heaven, and yet failed to break past their boundaries because of insufficient resources, then that was truly sad.

In the entire Divine Realm, there were many people that possessed the talent to become a World King, but lacked the resources to do so.

As Lin Ming thought of this, he unconsciously clenched the arm of his seat. No matter what, he would not allow himself to become one of them! This Boundless World Pill had to be his at all costs!

"3.9 trillion! Is there a higher bid?" Princess Honeylush excitedly said from atop the auction stage. Her clear voice easily spread throughout the entire arena.

Zhong Wenshu adjusted his position in the higher seats. He was the one to call out a bid of 3.9 trillion just now. At this time, with such a huge amount of wealth on the line, even someone as arrogant and proud as him found it hard to remain calm.

Suddenly, Lin Ming stood up. He shouted out, "5 trillion!"

"What!?"

Zhong Wenshu glared at Lin Ming, fires nearly spouting out from his eyes.

The three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion, Sacred Yueping, Sacred Tianhao, and Sacred Yanran, all looked towards Lin Ming. At this time, most of the World King Holy Land disciples that were here had withdrawn from bidding. The only ones left competing were Lin Ming, the red bamboo hat woman, the three elites of Sacred Martial Mansion, as well as Zhong Wenshu! These were four different parties!

“To raise the price to 5 trillion in a single breath, that brat must be ridiculously rich. Does he really have the ability to obtain the Boundless World Pill? Or perhaps he’s throwing out his total worth in hopes of scaring everyone away?”

Zhong Wenshu grasped his chair’s armrest, his fist constantly clenching and unclenching. His palms were already wet with sweat!

5 trillion began to approach his total wealth!

Within Dual Polarity Palace, Zhong Wenshu wasn’t the only peak disciple. There were a total of four, and each of them had a talent similar to the rest, and all four of them needed resources. In a situation where Dual Polarity Palace couldn’t guarantee that one of these disciples could become a World King, they wouldn’t be willing to spend everything they had regardless of how steep the price was. It simply wouldn’t be worth it! This was why they had to carefully consider just how much they should invest in their young geniuses.

Thus, although Dual Polarity Palace had mobilized a massive amount of wealth by going through various channels and even selling some of the Palace Master’s own treasures, Zhong Wenshu himself had only been able to obtain 5 trillion. Then, after selling everything he possessed and taking as many loans as he could, he was still only at 5.5 trillion.

In fact, in normal circumstances, Dual Polarity Palace wouldn’t be willing to support their disciples in purchasing such expensive treasures. If every genius required the best resources on every step of their road of martial arts, Dual Polarity Palace simply wouldn’t be able to keep up!

"5.5 trillion!" Zhong Wenshu grit his teeth and called out his bid. He had tossed out his complete wealth!

At this time, he was no longer able to raise the price a little at a time. If he raised the price by 100-200 billion at a time then his opponent might immediately surpass 5.5 trillion instead. If that happened then there would be no way for him to raise the price yet again. He could only bet everything on this last desperate gamble and hope that it would work!

After he called out this bidding price, he glared at Lin Ming, his eyes filling with a deep cold killing intent!

"Brat, I advise you not to go too far! If I'm not wrong then you do not have a fierce backer supporting you. Do you know what fate you will suffer after obtaining the Boundless World Pill? Many people will chase you to the ends of the world to kill you and take it! You will die without a burial! If you have a life to buy it then you won't have a life to use it! Even if you did, you would die later regardless of what happened!"

Lin Ming had intended to stand up and place another bid when he suddenly heard Zhong Wenshu's threat. He sneered, "How interesting! I've already attracted enough attention today, so what's the point in grabbing a bit more? This auction site has hundreds of thousands of people present. With such a great number of people, there are innumerable individuals that already have dark intentions towards me. If that's true, I might as well go all in and use this Boundless World Pill to strengthen myself as much as possible and obtain a good result in the First Martial Meeting. At that time, just who would still think of killing me?"

"Hahahahaha! What did you say? Unless I'm wrong, you only have a ninth stage Life Destruction cultivation and yet you still want to carve a little space for yourself in the First Martial Meeting. Who do you think you are? A young Empyrean or something? Keep on daydreaming, I'm about to die from laughter!"

Zhong Wenshu recklessly laughed. "If you stop now then I can protect you. But if you wish to continue fighting with me then I will have you suffer a fate worse than death!"

As Lin Ming heard Zhong Wenshu's words, he looked towards him with an unbelievable expression, as if he were watching a clown making of fool of himself. "This is the first time in my life hearing such imbecilic and dimwitted words. Seek your protection? Are you expecting me to deliver a piece of meat to you or something?"

As Lin Ming sent out this true essence sound transmission, he decisively stood up again. He locked his eyes onto Zhong Wenshu's murderous gaze and raised his jade slip, clearly shouting, "6 trillion!"

These words left the entire audience in an uproar!

6 trillion! That was simply insane! Such a crazy bidding scene left everyone thrilled and aghast! Just what background did this youth have!?

Lin Ming's words smashed into Zhong Wenshu like a wrecking ball. He felt his chest ache as he nearly vomited blood in anger!

He no longer had a chance!

"Good! Very good! Since that's the case, then you… can wait to be surrounded and killed by others!"

Zhong Wenshu threatened Lin Ming. But, the truth was that this wasn't a threat. Everything he said was a fact!

At this time, many great influences were ready to thoroughly investigate Lin Ming's status. If Lin Ming didn't have a background then he would undoubtedly become the target of everyone here. For him to speak such a price was simply far too flashy. Moreover, Lin Ming wasn't like the red bamboo hat woman; he didn't have the protection of a quasi-World King master.

"6 trillion! Is there anyone willing to bid higher?" Princess Honeylush said, her words coming out in panting gasps. Such a sum of money would even cripple a World King level

Holy Land for some time! It was incredible to imagine that this amount would actually come from the hands of an unknown youth!

Chapter 1164 – Divine Pill In Hand

Chapter 1164 – Divine Pill In Hand

…

…

…

“Grandma!” In the lower seats, the red bamboo hat woman began to speak to the old woman beside her with a true essence sound transmission, her voice a bit hurried.

The withered old woman deeply looked at Lin Ming and said, “This price is too high! If grandma is willing to go all in then I can still purchase it, but you are only at the Divine Sea realm; the road before you is still very long and you have far to grow. If you use resources of this level the entire time then grandma simply will not be able to support it. The money I have has to be spent as frugally as possible to buy the most cost effective goods, rather than such luxurious treasures… although the Boundless World Pill is good, the effects compared to the price are simply too low. This auction still has other final act items coming up. We… should give this one up!”

The old woman let out a long and deep sigh. At this time, she no longer had a source of income and was only relying on the wealth she had saved up in the past. Even so, it still wasn’t enough.

“I understand. Grandma, rest assured that even without the Boundless World Pill, I will definitely have a dazzling result in the First Martial Meeting.” The red bamboo woman looked at Lin Ming with discomfort in her eyes. “This person only has a ninth stage Life Destruction cultivation. For him to use the Boundless World Pill is truly a waste!”

The old woman shook her head. “Don’t underestimate anyone. Aiya, grandma is useless, I simply can’t help you during your young years…” As the old woman spoke, her back seemed to bend even more, emphasizing her age.

After this massive jump in the bidding price, the red bamboo hat woman and Zhong Wenshu both withdrew from the bidding.

Now, there was only a single influence competing against Lin Ming: the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion!

Sacred Yueping stood up, holding the jade slip in his hand. However, he didn’t put in a new bid. His lips moved and he said to Zhong Wenshu with a true essence sound transmission, “Brother Wenshu, an enemy of an enemy is a friend. If Brother Wenshu has already given up on this auction, how about lending us the money instead?”

Zhong Wenshu turned to glare at Sacred Yueping. He sneered, “Dream on! You might as well lend me your money instead so that I can continue to compete against Lin Ming!”

This sort of matter clearly seemed like a joke. How could Zhong Wenshu willingly lend his wealth to someone like Sacred Yueping? Moreover, even if he couldn’t buy the Boundless World Pill, he could still save his funds and purchase the next best item in this auction.

Sacred Yueping grit his teeth, saying, “We naturally won’t let Brother Wenshu suffer a loss here. If Brother Wenshu lends us the funds, we are willing to pay you back with interest double that of Starbind Bank’s loaning rate! Not only that, but we will also gift Brother Wenshu a square inch of nine heavens aged gold. I heard that Brother Wenshu cultivates the Metal Laws, so after absorbing this nine heavens aged gold, your cultivation will surely rise to another level. Even if Brother Wenshu cannot purchase the next best item in this auction because of lending us the funds, you still won’t suffer a loss!”

As Sacred Yueping spoke, Zhong Wenshu was truly tempted. “You really have nine heavens aged gold?”

This sort of thing was extremely rare, but also extremely useful to Zhong Wenshu.

“Of course. I normally wouldn’t be willing to part with this because I was waiting to perceive a second element of Laws once I broke through to the Divine Transformation realm. At the start I thought that the funds I had would be enough, but I never imagined I would bump into such a madman! Now I have no other choice but to cut off my flesh to get over this hurdle. I am already determined to fight to the end!”

Zhong Wenshu thought for a moment before saying, “Fine! However, I want three times the interest, and when borrowing you will need to sign an insurance guarantee with Starbind Bank. Also, the insurance premium will be paid by you!”

Sacred Yueping’s lips twitched as he heard the words insurance premium. The insurance guarantee service that Starbind Bank provided prevented loans from being casually forgotten or ignored. In fact, this was an extremely common matter in the world of martial artists. With Starbind Bank’s guarantee, if there was a problem with the loan then Starbind Bank would be responsible for recovering the loan. And, if Starbind Bank couldn’t find the other party, they would pay for the damages. This service required an extremely high insurance premium, and the higher the amount was, the higher the insurance premium went!

After Zhong Wenshu put forth these conditions, the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion looked ill. But after being forced to the wall by Lin Ming, this was all they could do!

“Deal!” Sacred Yueping clenched his teeth, feeling blood dripping from his heart. But with Zhong Wenshu helping him, he believed that he could win!

“6 trillion going twice… is there anyone willing to offer a higher bidding price? If not, then this Boundless World Pill will belong to that young sir!” Princess Honeylush clearly said from the auction stage. Sacred Yueping’s conversation with Zhong Wenshu had only lasted for several breaths of time.

As Princess Honeylush was about to count down a third time, Sacred Yueping suddenly raised the jade slip in his hand and said, “6.3 trillion!”

Sacred Yueping's bid immediately caught everyone's attention. Heavens! 6.3 trillion!

At the final stretch, it wasn't the arrogant and haughty Wenshu or the mysterious red bamboo hat woman that remained, but the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion!

Lin Ming's eyebrows jumped up. The blood vessels around his temples faintly bulged. 6.3 trillion was far too close to his limit of 7 trillion!

"Miss Mo, to refine the Esoteric Immortality Pill, what is the absolute minimum number of dragon bone relics required?" Lin Ming began to fear that his own funds were insufficient.

"27, it cannot be any less than that!"

"27… then I can also pawn another three. If I didn't pawn them but sold them, I could probably obtain a few hundred billion more…" Lin Ming rapidly calculated in his mind. If he pawned an item he would only receive around 50-60% of the value. If he sold them, he could obtain a much higher price. It was only that Lin Ming was a bit reluctant to sell the dragon bone relics.

"6.5 trillion!" Lin Ming raised the bid once more. His voice was grim and dignified! Currently, the bidding price had far surpassed the usual price for a Boundless World Pill.

"You brat, you are ruthless enough!" As Sacred Yueping looked at Lin Ming, his eyes were incomparably gloomy. "6.5 trillion!"

At this point, the rate of increase in the bidding price had dramatically dropped. No one would raise the price by several hundred billion now, only a hundred billion or less at a time instead. Adding even 50 billion at this time was a great mental burden on Lin Ming and Sacred Yueping. This was because this money wasn't theirs, but money that they had borrowed from others!

Moreover, there was also interest!

"6.6 trillion!" Lin Ming lifted his hand once more. Now, it wasn't just Sacred Yueping looking at him with hatred in his eyes, but Lin Ming himself was also glaring at Sacred Yueping with an icy expression. If it weren't for Sacred Yueping then he could have won the Boundless World Pill at 6 trillion. If his debt was reduced by a trillion, then he could be much more relaxed.

"6.65 trillion!" Sacred Yueping stubbornly said, refusing to give up.

As the bidding war reached this stage, all that was left over were two sides in Lin Ming and Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies. The price rose slowly, a bit at a time. This was a great war where not even a single drop of blood would be spilled. Sometimes, the market was more brutal than the battlefield.

Lin Ming's eyes suddenly shined with a sharp light. He raised the jade slip in his hand once more, took a deep breath and shouted out loud, "7 trillion!"

7 trillion!

He had increased the bid by 350 billion in a single breath!

This sudden bid left the several hundred thousand people in the auction venue completely dumbfounded!

Beside Lin Ming, even River Feather was gawking at him with disbelief. He couldn't understand just what Lin Ming had pawned. All of the ordinary Holy Land disciples were also staring at Lin Ming, unsure of what expression to make.

In this final moment, the reason that Lin Ming had raised the bid by so much at once was because he wanted to completely rout Sacred Yueping's confidence in a single strike! If Sacred Yueping raised the price once more then Lin Ming would have to sell the three dragon bone relics as well as the six dragon relics he pawned before. At that time he would have another 400-500 billion. Not just that, but Lin Ming also had some thunder dao fruits. Although they were far inferior to the dragon bone relics in value, even the weight of a straw was noticeable at this point.

As long as Sacred Yueping increased the price once more, Lin Ming would shout out a bid of 7.5 trillion and desperately risk everything. If he couldn't defeat Sacred Yueping then, Lin Ming could only give up.

"7 trillion! 7 trillion! Is there a higher bid?" Princess Honeylush fervently said.

Sacred Yueping's forehead was dripping wet with sweat. He was constantly reevaluating his own wealth in his mind. This was 7 trillion!

If he really added up all of Zhong Wenshu's wealth, then their combined funds would absolutely surpass Lin Ming's. Sacred Yueping didn't doubt this at all.

But, this money was all borrowed. In particular, for the 2 trillion he borrowed from Zhong Wenshu, not only would he have to pay it back with a sky high interest rate and nine heavens aged gold, but just the insurance premium meant that he would have to pay Starbind Bank another 200 billion! Being a martial artist was an extremely high risk career. Perhaps a few years later the borrowers might be dead. Thus, for guarantee, with such high risks, the charges were appropriately high!

Moreover, in order to continue bidding to this point, he had done so with the support of Sacred Tianhao and Sacred Yanran. He still had to pay them back! Where would Sacred Yueping obtain that much wealth?

Also, Lin Ming might even put forth a higher bid. Even if he could win with a 7.05 trillion bid, he would have far too many problems in the future. There was no way he could make ends meet! And with the price having gone this high, it was now a question whether or not the Boundless World Pill was worth it.

In the end, this sort of top luxury item should be used by someone like a peak disciple from an Empyrean level influence. As a disciple of an ordinary World King Holy Land, he couldn't afford to take the Boundless World Pill!

This was just like a poor mortal commoner borrowing some silver to eat steamed pork buns. This was already a luxury. But, if that commoner instead borrowed silver to eat shark fin and bird nest soup, then while they could still eat it, it would be extremely stupid behavior.

Sacred Yueping fidgeted, wanting to raise the jade slip in his hand again. But in the end, he kept it down.

Princess Honeylush's voice echoed in his ears, seeming incomparably distant...

“7 trillion, going once! Is there anyone that would like to put in a higher bid... 7 trillion going twice! If no one bids then this Boundless World Pill will belong to that young sir over there... 7 trillion going thrice... deal!”

“Congratulations sir, with a bid of 7 trillion you have won the Boundless World Pill!” Princess Honeylush looked at Lin Ming, a brilliant light pouring out of her eyes. This youth was truly filled with mysteries. She wondered; just how would he resolve all the troubles that would follow the approaching storm after this auction?

In the massive venue of several hundreds of thousands of people, no one applauded, as if a pall of silence had fallen over everyone. Lin Ming sat straight in his chair, his body stiff and rigid. His palms were slightly wet with sweat.

At least... he didn't have to throw out his last desperate bid. This reduced the burden on Lin Ming by a great deal. Bidding 7 trillion was still a reasonably acceptable result to him.

“B-b-brother Lin... do you really have that much money?” River Feather gulped as he looked at Lin Ming. He felt as if he had just woken up from a dream.

Chapter 1165 – Crazy Cultivation

Chapter 1165 – Crazy Cultivation

…

…

…

“The auction for the Boundless World Pill has already ended, but everyone need not feel regret. This is because there are a total of 10 items in our auction finale, and each one of them is a rare and precious treasure! There is always another chance! Now, we shall begin the auction for the second item!”

On the auction stage, Princess Honeylush spoke with gusto. However, not many people agreed with her words. For the last nine items of the auction finale, many people had gone through their networks of information and learned what they were. Besides the last item perhaps having a final bid of a trillion, the other items likely wouldn’t surpass 300 billion.

A hundred billion violet sun stones was already an extremely exaggerated number.

And at this time, Lin Ming didn’t plan on staying and watching the rest of the auction. He stood up and directly walked to the back of the stage. According to the rules, one could pay as soon as their auction ended. Lin Ming intended to take the Boundless World Pill as soon as possible and leave the auction venue. The other items remaining had nothing to do with him.

Lin Ming’s departure caught the attention of many people. There were several icy cold gazes on him, as sharp and bright as shining blades. Lin Ming could feel these eyes piercing through his back like razor sharp arrows. He didn’t need to turn his head to know just who was looking at him – Sacred Martial Mansion’s three prodigies, Zhong Wenshu, and even that red bamboo hat woman. All of them were looking at him with utter antipathy.

The market was like a battlefield. If you stabbed someone on the battlefield with a sword, how could you not draw the envy and hatred of others?

“Lin Ming, I want to see just what result you’ll have in the First Martial Meeting after eating up the Boundless World Pill. I hope that you aren’t eliminated early. The qualifying martial artists of Immemorial Imperial City should all be assigned to the same area, hehe! At that time I’ll play with you until you’re crippled and begging on the ground!”

“Just wait until you get kicked out from the First Martial Meeting. Those who chase after you will blot out the skies!”

Sacred Yueping and Zhong Wenshu’s voices resounded in Lin Ming’s ears. Lin Ming didn’t even bother with them, instead moving straight to the exit. As Lin Ming left, there were even some people that intentionally or unintentionally followed him.

“Lin Ming, there are some people following you.” River Feather said from beside Lin Ming, his heart racing. He could feel that these fellows following from behind clearly didn’t have good intentions.

Lin Ming maintained his composure. He sneered, saying, “These people are only clowns. They are waiting for me to leave Immemorial Imperial City, but even if I left Immemorial Imperial City, these people would barely qualify as cannon fodder. And they think they can divide the soup? How ridiculous!”

Lin Ming ignored them. He had already rented out a training room in Immemorial Imperial City. This training room was located at the Imperial City Auction House and was one of their many services.

Lin Ming only had a general idea of Imperial City Auction House’s background. Part of it was owned by the True Martial Holy Lands. As for the rest, Lin Ming wasn’t too sure. It was possibly some reclusive great expert or disciple of some Empyrean.

In short, this was an organization that no one in True Martial World dared to move against. He would have absolute safety inside.

“Guest No. 235187, please show your identification jade slip, as well as – 7 trillion violet sun stones or 700 million violet sun crystals. If you are currently lacking the funds, you can pawn some treasures.”

Lin Ming waved his hand and over 60,000 violet sun crystal cards left his spatial ring. These were the highest currency crystal cards that Starbind Bank had. Every crystal card was worth 100 million and could be exchanged for violet sun crystals or pills.

Afterwards, Lin Ming waved his hand again and pile after pile of purple crystal mountains appeared. All of these purple crystal mountains were formed from violet sun stones and violet sun crystals. Luckily, the minor dimension of this auction room was large enough and could easily hold these several giant crystal mountains.

However, the truth was that even though these crystal mountains seemed terrifying, they were only worth about 150 billion violet sun stones. These were the wealth left behind by Splintersoul Mountain and the Occult Bone Clan.

As River Feather looked at this amount of wealth, he was stunned. Just where had Lin Ming obtained so much money? Actually, up until now, he still hadn’t been able to determine if Lin Ming came from some secretive great background or if he had simply stumbled upon some ridiculous lucky chance.

“Count it.” Lin Ming said. To count 7 trillion violet sun stones, even a martial artist with an extremely fast soul perception would have trouble taking full inventory in a short time. And, it was even more difficult to calculate the value of those material violet sun stones. The auction house sent out 10 treasury managers that used a full hour to count before they finished.

“Here is your Boundless World Pill!”

A middle-aged man with a bright smile plastered on his face presented a jade box to Lin Ming.

After opening it, the Boundless World Pill flew up and danced in the air. A rainbow glow of light filled the air, shooting into the distance!

“This is it!” Mo Eversnow said to Lin Ming. Although she believed in the reputation of the auction house, she still investigated it thoroughly.

Lin Ming waved his hand and the Boundless World Pill was placed into the Extreme Violet Ring.

“I previously reserved the Skyclass Training Chamber with a 1:10 time flow change at the auction house. Could you lead me there?” Lin Ming politely asked. The Skyclass Training Chamber was one of the most expensive cultivation rooms in the auction house. The time there was slowed to a rate of 1:10. If he trained there for three months, it would be two and a half years.

“Of course!”

The middle-aged man faintly smiled as he extended his hand, “Sir, if you will.”

The middle-aged man brought Lin Ming to a long corridor. On both sides of this corridor were a number of stone doors. Every door was carved with all sorts of mysterious and strange runes. This was a time array formation that changed the flow of time in every training chamber.

“This is the room. Please enter!” The middle-aged man nodded towards a training chamber with a red and purple door and extended his hand in invitation.

Lin Ming turned towards River Feather, “Thank you Brother River for accompanying me here. I would like to suggest that Brother River also finds a chamber here to train in. If they cannot find me, there might be a chance that they do something to you instead. Although you have the protection of your family, many of these people probably won't take that into consideration…"

Compared to these World King level influences, the ordinary Holy Land level River Family was just far too small and weak.

"Okay."

This was River Feather's plan to begin with.

Then, Lin Ming entered the training chamber alone. The reason he chose this training chamber was because it was a training ground for thunder and fire!

After entering the training chamber, the scenery suddenly changed. Lin Ming arrived in a different space with lava flowing all around him. As for himself, he was standing at the summit of a giant mountain. Dark crimson chains wrapped around the mountain peak, each link as thick as a grown man's thigh. One end of the dark crimson chains wrapped around the mountain peak and the other extended hundreds of thousands of feet into the sky, sinking into the clouds for an unknowable distance.

Below the mountain peak, volcanos erupted all over the land, gushing forth fresh heated lava. And high above Lin Ming's head, dark clouds surged with purple thunder roiling within them.

In front of Lin Ming, just 10 miles away, a massive bronze furnace floated in the air. This furnace was the size of a palace, and as countless bolts of thunder struck against it, sparks of divine light and earth-shaking rumbles filled the heavens. The flames beneath were also sucked up by this furnace, constantly flowing into it. After being burnt for countless years, this furnace had been seared fire red!

This was a spirit artifact treasure furnace. It was also masterless. Every training chamber of this rank was generally provided with a furnace like this. The reason that Lin Ming had chosen the Skyclass Training Chamber was in no small part because he had taken notice of this alchemy furnace.

With Mo Eversnow's strength and her power of Laws, she could certainly activate the powers of the spirit artifact alchemy furnace. Of course, this would inevitably consume a portion of Mo Eversnow's soul force. Luckily, Lin Ming had won the bidding for the nine aperture spirit crystal before this. The nine aperture spirit crystal was a type of soul medicine that could nourish spirits.

If the nine aperture spirit crystal could nourish artifact spirits then it could also revitalize a person's soul to a certain degree. If one's soul force was weakened, they could recover by eating a tiny piece of the nine aperture spirit crystal.

"This is the training chamber of thunder and fire. The dual thunder and fire origin energies here are indeed extremely rich. This is truly worthy of being called the Skyclass Training Chamber!"

In truth, the stone door that Lin Ming had passed through earlier was a transmission array. The transmission array had led to this different world. This different world was not a divergent mystic realm nor was it a man-made dimensional realm. Rather, it was one of the countless tiny worlds that were located in the gaps between the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds.

This tiny world had been explored and refined by the Imperial Capital Auction House, becoming an absolute separate world space. It was completely safe to train here!

Such a place suited Lin Ming the most!

"Great. Now we can begin… the crazy cultivation!"

Facing the vast and boundless force of nature in this training place, Lin Ming felt his blood begin to seethe with excitement, his heroic and daring spirit soaring into the heavens! For the First Martial Meeting happening three months from now, he had absolute confidence in himself!

Woosh!

All of the alchemy materials were taking out from the Extreme Violet Ring by Mo Eversnow. These materials floated in the air and included the violet sun stone embryo as well as the 30 dragon bone relics!

"Lin Ming, I will first refine the Esoteric Immortality Pill. It will probably take around two months for me to finish. In the meantime, you can train here as you wish and gather your strength. You must cultivate your world seed to prepare for breaking into the Divine Sea." Mo Eversnow floated in the skies. Her white dress danced around her pale and bare feet and her long hair was whipped up in the wind. Combined with the apocalyptic scenery around her, she looked like a lost immortal fairy, ready to return to the winds at any moment.

"Alright!"

Lin Ming didn't waste time speaking and left everything in Mo Eversnow's hands. He shot outwards, turning into a beam of light moving through the rich thunder and fire origin energy of this world.

Within this vast land of heaven and earth origin energy, the Heretical God Seedling greedily absorbed all of the available energy around it. Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and wildly twisted around. With himself and his spear, it was like he was fighting against the world itself.

After Lin Ming reached Ninefall, there were far too many Laws within him that he needed to meditate on and also far too much energy that he needed to thoroughly master. As long as he had a place to train and improve himself, then given time, his strength would increase by leaps and bounds!

"Blue Lotus Flame Dance!"

Lin Ming thrust his spear outwards and an incredible scene followed it. Deep in the rivers of fire below, waves of lava tumbled into the area and began swirling up into a giant whirlpool. And within the center of this whirlpool, a blue lotus flower was born, slowly blooming within the monstrous flames!

"I have to fuse the fourth Concept of Fire into the first three Concepts of Fire. Although the altered time flow here will create some obstacles in perceiving the Concepts, I can still overcome them!"

Lin Ming constantly thrust out his spear. The blue lotus flower soon grew to be hundreds of feet tall, as if this lotus flower were holding up the heavens!

And in the skies, the white-dressed Mo Eversnow floated in the wind. All of the materials for refining the Esoteric Immortality Pill had been placed into the spirit artifact furnace by her. She began the long process of refining.

This giant bronze furnace could gather the limitless power of fire sealed within the world. The flames were incomparably hot, blazing without end! Besides the violet sun stone embryo and dragon bone relics, everything that entered instantly turned into liquid before being absorbed by the violet sun stone embryo!

Chapter 1166 – Opening the Gate of Life

Chapter 1166 – Opening the Gate of Life

…

…

…

Time marched on.

If three days went by outside, one month would have passed for Lin Ming.

Imperceptibly, half a month passed.

In the spirit artifact alchemy furnace, the violet sun stone embryo had completely melted. The dragon bone relics fused into it, forming a golden liquid that spilled out light in all directions.

At the start, this ball of fluid was over a foot in diameter. Then, as it was slowly roasted by flames, the ball of liquid became increasingly small and concentrated.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The furnace shook. All around the body of the furnace, strange and ancient patterns lit up as if they were coming to life. These patterns took the likeness of wild great animals with long fangs, sharp claws, and one could even faintly make out the sound of horrendous roars coming from the furnace.

"This furnace is like a living creature…" Lin Ming turned his head in surprise as he heard the roaring from the furnace become increasingly clear. Then, he immediately relaxed. As a spirit artifact, this furnace naturally had an artifact spirit within it. Although this was not a true source artifact spirit but a false artifact spirit, often a false artifact spirit wasn't any worse than a true one. The greatest shortcoming of a false artifact spirit was that it couldn't grow on its own. The only way was if one fused in a rare heavenly material like a nine aperture spirit crystal to forcefully enhance it.

And in terms of true quality, many false artifact spirits were of an extremely high rank. This was because when these artifact spirits were sealed into the spirit artifact, they were already extremely powerful! This was a reasonable matter. If a supreme elder were refining their life spirit artifact, why would they not choose some powerful mystic creature as its source?

If an Empyrean level supreme elder were to capture a God Beast's soul and transform it into an artifact spirit, then it was even possible to refine a transcendent spirit treasure!

This spirit artifact furnace's artifact spirit was created by a supreme elder who had killed an ancient blue-eyed crystal beast and used its soul. The fierce patterns along the furnace were also formed by the blue-eyed crystal beast. This caused the furnace to have an extremely tyrannical and savage aura after it was completed. The blazing flames it produced were incomparably hot, burning away the heavens!

The impurities were constantly melted away as the essence of the mixture became increasingly concentrated. Day by day, the originally foot wide ball of golden liquid slowly shrank to three inches. During this time, the nine aperture spirit crystal floated by the top of Mo Eversnow's head. Faint lines of refreshing energy and mist fell down from the nine aperture spirit crystal, slowly fusing into Mo Eversnow's soul form. The faint light revitalized her body the entire time.

Without the nine aperture spirit crystal, even though Mo Eversnow would have been able to finish the refinement of the pill, it would have been an enormous drain on the power of her divine soul. After all, she was unable to use true essence and had to move materials around with her soul force. Alchemy was already exhausting work, but she had to pay a cost several times that of an ordinary martial artist.

In these past days, the nine aperture spirit crystal's volume shrank by a tenth.

Mo Eversnow lifted her hand and tossed several 100,000 year old medicinal herbs into the furnace. These were medicinal herbs that Lin Ming had found in the Extreme Violet Ring when he had been exploring the Temple of Marvels.

Now, Mo Eversnow used the essence of these herbs to nourish the Esoteric Immortality Pill. A top grade pill had a certain wisdom of its own. It could eat food by absorbing the essence of medicinal herbs.

What Mo Eversnow was doing now was using the essence of these medicinal herbs to feed the Esoteric Immortality Pill.

Underneath the scorching heat, these 100,000 year old herbs rapidly dried up. As they withered away, the liquid essence gushed out of them, constantly merging into the violet sun stone embryo's golden liquid.

Soon, the multicolored essence of these medicinal herbs had been completely absorbed!

After the ball of golden liquid absorbed this essence, it became even more dazzling and more concentrated, shrinking down to the size of a small egg.

The ball of liquid gradually transitioned to a half-solid state. The divine pill was almost formed!

....

Time passed a day at a time. Lin Ming had already been in the training area for nearly two months.

Whoosh!

A beam of purple light suddenly cut across the skies. At that moment, all of the power of thunder within the skies seemed to gather in a single spot. Mountains and rivers split apart and a massive fissure was cracked open in the earth, causing lava to spew out into the world!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Volcanos erupted. Endless amounts of lava flooded outwards like countless galloping horses, causing even the earth to shake!

In such an apocalyptic environment, Lin Ming flew high in the air. The spear strike just now had crossed a hundred miles, causing even the space around it to tremble. Beneath him, the rock that was harder than mortal steel was torn apart like cloth, causing a 100 mile long valley to form.

Chi-la!

Thunder tumbled, dancing around like manic purple snakes. Thick arcs of electricity twined around Lin Ming, moving up and down his body. At this moment, Lin Ming seemed like a god of thunder!

Lin Ming looked at the long spear in his hands, feeling his body filling with strength. The source of the power he felt flowing through his body now was completely different from before.

In the past, Lin Ming's strength had come from constantly perceiving the Laws, and then using his own true essence to spur the power of Laws, transforming heaven and earth origin energy into his own weapon to fight. During this process, Lin Ming had always felt that his own strength was far too miniscule and weak. As for the world Laws, they were incomparably massive, causing all who stood before them to kneel in awe.

But this time was completely different.

Lin Ming felt that the power of Laws he used just now had not come from him meditating on them, but from his own body. In that moment, Lin Ming could feel his own body become one with the world. The world Laws naturally flowed out from his flesh, blood, and organs. It was like his body had been condensed from the Laws!

And when he used these Laws to control heaven and earth origin energy, he didn't feel the jerky feeling he did before. Now everything seemed to flow smoothly and perfectly.

Such a feeling was far too wonderful!

"To think I touched upon the threshold of fusing the Thunder Laws' first three Concepts of Thunder so quickly. Although my Thunder Laws are inferior to my Fire Laws, they are still slowly evening out. Moreover, I can faintly feel a new power brewing within me."

At the Sky Spill Continent, Lin Ming had once trained for years before fighting Yang Yun. He had studied the Thunder Concept jade slip that the Electric Violet Kirin Clan's Jiang Ziji had left behind and had perceived the first three concepts of the Thunder Laws from them – the Power of Death, the Power of Life, and the Concept of Extreme Speed.

However, Lin Ming's understandings towards these three concepts weren't particularly deep, and he had been unbelievably far from ever hoping to fuse them together. But now, he had already traced the threshold of fusing them.

These last two months of training were equal to nearly a year within Fire Spirit Star!

Of course, this didn't mean that Imperial City Auction House's training areas were of a higher quality that Fire Spirit Star. Rather, when Lin Ming had broken into Ninefall, a massive amount of the world Laws had been integrated into his body. Now, all he had to do was sense them in order to rapidly master them.

"Lin Ming, you've done well! Your Ninefall crossed 33 Layered Heavens, and the nine by nine Life Destruction you experienced has brought you unimaginable benefits. This is the combined contribution of the Magic Cube, two transcendent divine mights, gold grandmist battle spirit, and also that transcendent divine pill demon bead replica. Only by combining all of these factors together were you able to achieve what you have now! I would venture a guess that even a descendant of an Empyrean would not have a more perfect Life Destruction than you! Your Ninefall is singular and unique, allowing you to experience heavenly tribulation nine times. Moreover, because you managed to cross heavenly tribulation, to a certain degree you have become someone that lives partially outside the rules of the Heavenly Dao and controls your own destiny. In fact, you should be able to control the Heavenly Dao Laws to a certain extent. Of course, your cultivation is far, far too low. Even if you did, it would be nothing worth mentioning at all."

Mo Eversnow said, suddenly appearing in front of Lin Ming. She hadn't said a single exaggerated word. Lin Ming's current body, in terms of Laws, could even be compared with a God Beast!

A God Beast was the beloved of the natural Laws. Their bones were carved with the Laws and their flesh and blood were fused with Law runes. Their organs were able to commune with the world, forming a five element grand array. Their bodies were not what human bodies could compare with. They were like amalgamations of the Heavenly Dao, capable of directly accessing and using the power of the world!

If a God Beast's strength didn't mainly rely on their talent while their ability to learn was extremely poor, then they would have even surpassed human Empyreans.

And now, Lin Ming had a perception equal to a monstrous genius and he also had a body that could compare with a God Beast in the aspect of Laws. If Lin Ming continued cultivating body transformation in the future and was capable of enhancing his body until it was just as powerful as a God Beast's body, then he would become like a humanoid God Beast that was also skilled at learning and cultivating.

"Miss Mo, have you finished refining the pill?" Lin Ming was startled to see Mo Eversnow. In these past months, Mo Eversnow had sealed her senses and isolated herself from the world. Now that she suddenly appeared again, presumably the pill should be finished or almost finished.

"Yes."

Mo Eversnow pointed a finger. Lin Ming turned and saw the alchemy furnace still floating between the heavens and earth as before. Endless amounts of fire still gathered towards it.

The bottom was roasted red even as countless bolts of lightning smashed into it from the sky, recklessly baptizing it with thunder and fire.

This sort of feeling was similar to heavenly tribulation. Of course, Lin Ming knew that the Esoteric Immortality Pill was impossibly far from quickening its own heavenly tribulation. Only when a transcendent divine pill appeared would such a phenomenon occur.

Let alone a transcendent divine pill, the Esoteric Immortality Pill was far inferior to the Boundless World Pill.

Flames burned, thunder swelled. The furnace gathered more and more strength. Finally, it reached a critical point and erupted!

The lid of the furnace popped off and a pigeon egg-sized golden red pill flew out, as if it wanted to escape from the world.

Lin Ming was already prepared. His body moved and his extreme speed erupted. He instantly appeared in front of the Esoteric Immortality Pill and caught it!

He had succeeded in obtaining this divine pill!

In his hands, this pill was boiling hot and extremely heavy. Lin Ming felt like what he caught wasn’t a pill, but the reduced essence of a blazing fire star.

“Lin Ming, you already have the jade slip of the Celestial Tyrant Manual and you should have improved your understandings of it in these past days. Now, follow the method of revolving the energy within your body according to the Celestial Tyrant Manual. Have it flow through the threshold of life and death and attack the Gate of Life! With your current foundation, there shouldn’t be any problems at all!

“In addition, I perceived that fragmented bone slip from before. I discovered that there was an outline to an ancient body transformation technique within it. Although it was far too incomplete, I was able to glean a new discovery from it!”

“Mm? What discovery?” Lin Ming asked, surprised. If Mo Eversnow’s voice and expression were so serious then this harvest shouldn’t be small at all.

Chapter 1167 – Divine Spear Like Dragon

Chapter 1167 – Divine Spear Like Dragon

…

…

…

Mo Eversnow used her mind to control the small bone slip, bringing it floating out into the air.

This bone slip fragment didn't appear to be special at all. If it had been placed in a street stall and not auctioned off at a trade fair then it would have been difficult for Lin Ming to discover anything strange about it.

Mo Eversnow said, "This bone slip has a cultivation method recorded within it. It includes the six early stages of body transformation, the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. The details about the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace are called the Nine Star Art. According to this bone slip, after one practices the Nine Star Art and truly opens of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, a martial artist can commune with the world around them, just like an essence gathering martial artist can. They can galvanize a type of energy using the world Laws. This energy is called astral essence!"

"Astral essence?" Lin Ming asked, startled. This was the first time he had ever heard of this sort of energy.

"Astral essence and true essence are two sides of energy, similar to how grandmist energy divided into yin and yang energies. I have a faint premonition that the secrets of astral essence are related to how to open the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace."

“The secrets to opening the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace…” Lin Ming thought for a moment. It was a pity that this bone slip was far too incomplete. If he wanted to understand all of these secrets then he would have to rely on his own efforts to do so.

The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was an extremely distant matter. Currently, Lin Ming hadn’t even fully opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. And the final two of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates were extraordinary; they were equal to half a large boundary in body transformation.

The first six gates of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates could enhance various attributes of the human body. But in terms of increasing one’s comprehensive combat strength, they were inferior to the Gate of Life and the Gate of Death.

The Gate of Life was located at the heart and controlled the power of life.

After opening the Gate of Life, a martial artist’s fires of life would be incomparably vibrant and vivid. Their flesh, blood, organs, all of it would be able to regenerate at incredible rates. Even one’s blood vitality and fires of life, as long as they didn’t suffer some injury past 50%, could still be slowly restored.

This sounded like a gate that could increase a martial artist’s defensive and recovery abilities, but it wasn’t so. The most vital role of the Gate of Life lay in its attack potential!

To be able to regenerate one’s blood vitality and fires of life was an absolutely monstrous ability!

For a martial artist, their life source was extremely fragile. Once their fires of life weakened or they lost their blood essence, that often meant that their life force would diminish, their bodies would wither, and they would become increasingly feeble until they even dropped realms. To think of advancing further in the future in such a state was an absolute impossibility.

There were many wounds that could do this. For instance, the master of that red bamboo hat woman that Lin Ming had seen at the Imperial City Auction was one such case. She had likely reached the World King realm, but because of some grievous injury she suffered, she had dropped boundaries.

But after Lin Ming opened the Gate of Life, as long as he didn't lose over half of his blood vitality or fires of life then he could slowly restore himself. This allowed him to use a singular move in future battles, an overwhelming one that others rarely used.

That was…

To combust one's blood essence!

Once a martial artist combusted their blood essence, they could use their life force as a source of strength and instantly increase their combat strength to another level. In a time of crisis, if a martial artist burnt 30-40% of their blood essence, they could completely turn the tide of battle.

Lin Ming sat down on a nameless mountain peak. The pigeon egg-sized Esoteric Immortality Pill was grasped in his hands and the Phoenix Blood Spear was stabbed into a deep red rock in front of him. On top of the Phoenix Blood Spear there was a baby-shaped spirit crystal; this was the Nine Aperture Spirit Crystal.

After Mo Eversnow used the nine aperture spirit crystal, it had shrunk to an eighth of its original size. Now the rest would be used to nourish the Phoenix Blood Spear's artifact spirit.

Woosh!

Lin Ming suddenly extracted the Phoenix Blood Spear and without flinching, violently thrust it at his chest!

The sharp Phoenix Blood Spear pierced through his body, cutting through his ribs and finally tearing into his heart. Blood splashed out into the air!

Without a moment's hesitation, Lin Ming drew out the Phoenix Blood Spear. With his other hand, he thrust the Esoteric Immortality Pill into the gaping wound, directly into the opening he had cut in his heart. He submerged the pill into his heart and allowed it to fuse with him!

According to the records contained within the Celestial Tyrant Manual, the Esoteric Immortality Pill had to be sealed within the heart.

The Gate of Life was located in the heart. Once the Esoteric Immortality Pill was sealed into the heart, the medicinal potency within would be washed out using the flow of blood. The energy within it would be activated, allowing him to flush through the Gate of Life in a single go!

The pain of a pierced heart wasn't much to Lin Ming in comparison to all he had experienced so far. But as the power of the Esoteric Immortality Pill erupted, Lin Ming felt his body shake. It was like a heavy hammer smashed into his heart, nearly causing his heart to stop beating.

A massive amount of energy had exploded in Lin Ming's heart. This sort of impact force could be imagined.

However, up until now, Lin Ming had experienced the impact of many brutal and tyrannical pills. In addition, after swallowing the dragon marrow, absorbing the supreme dragon bone, and opening the sixth of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, his body had nearly reached an imperishable diamond state. If a normal essence gathering system martial artist were to allow the power within the Esoteric Immortality Pill to erupt in their heart, their heart would have exploded into pieces.

And at this time, in front of Lin Ming, Mo Eversnow used her battle spirit to activate the nine aperture spirit crystal. She drew out fire from the spirit artifact furnace to ignite the spirit crystal.

The nine aperture spirit crystal began to slowly soften.

Mo Eversnow flicked her fingers and three dragon bone relics flew into the nine aperture spirit crystal. Everything was being heated up together.

These dragon bone relics were the remainders left over after she had finished refining the Esoteric Immortality Pill. In order to refine the Esoteric Immortality Pill, 27 dragon bone relics was enough. Mo Eversnow didn't waste any extra. With these three leftover dragon bone relics, she began to refine their essence within the flames to fuse them into the Phoenix Blood Spear!

The artifact spirit within the Phoenix Blood Spear had been personally formed by Lin Ming. Moreover, this artifact spirit had gone through the baptism of heavenly tribulation together with Lin Ming. The quality of it was extremely high. Once it grew in the future, it would definitely be capable of being Lin Ming's life spirit treasure.

The three dragon bone relics had already been slowly melted for two months in the fires of the furnace. Now they were quickly fused into the Phoenix Blood Spear without the least bit of resistance.

Sword like jade, saber like tiger, spear like dragon.

Once a spear gained its own mind and wisdom it would be like an Azure Dragon soaring out of the ocean, roaming into the highest heavens, unstoppable!

The characteristics of the dragon bone relics just happened to perfectly suit a spear. To fuse them into a spear spirit was the best use of them.

In addition, the Phoenix Blood Spear also contained phoenix blood. This fused well with dragon bone. Dragon and phoenix soaring together, complementing each other's strength!

Thus this fusion had gone smoothly, beyond any expectations.

Roar – !

A resounding dragon's cry savagely impacted into the horizon. The Phoenix Blood Spear violently trembled and then the entire spear shot into the sky, diving into the dark clouds. For a time, countless purple arcs of thunder smashed into the Phoenix Blood Spear, dancing around it like a flurry of purple snakes.

Roar – !

The resonant dragon’s cry emerged once more, echoing between the heavens and the earth. Within the world, the faint image of an azure dragon phantom appeared. One could see flashing blue dragon scales, dragon horn, and dragon claws, all of it overflowing with a lifelike chill!

After fusing with the three dragon bone relics and the nine aperture spirit crystal, the Phoenix Blood Spear had undergone another evolution.

Woosh!

The Phoenix Blood Spear shot down from the highest heavens, crashing towards the earth like a raging meteor. The extreme speed caused friction with the air and a tail of blazing flames followed the descent of the spear. With a rumbling sound, the Phoenix Blood Spear broke through a mountain peak, thrusting deep underground and causing lava and flames to spew forth.

“What a wonderful spear!”

Even the hard-to-impress Mo Eversnow couldn’t help but cry out in praise.

The truth was that all in all, the rank of the Phoenix Blood Spear could only be considered a medium-grade spirit artifact. This was because the materials used to forge the body of the Phoenix Blood Spear weren’t too good and the spear spirit hadn’t fully grown.

But, with the Phoenix Blood Spear having undergone tempering through heavenly tribulation, a great deal of the power of heavenly tribulation had been retained within the spear shaft. Also, the source spear spirit was not what other spirit artifacts’ artifact spirits could compare with. As Lin Ming grew, the Phoenix Blood Spear would also grow. It was hard to estimate just how much it could continue growing.

Mo Eversnow no longer paid attention to the Phoenix Blood Spear. She turned to look at Lin Ming. At this time, Lin Ming's entire body was covered in hazy golden light. He seemed like a golden Buddha, making it hard for one to look straight towards him.

Opening the Gate of Life wasn't easy. There were enormous risks associated with taking the Esoteric Immortality Pill.

In the past, Mo Eversnow herself had taken this pill, so she was well aware of just what its effects were like. Or course, the foundation of Lin Ming's mortal body was better than hers in the past. Thus, Mo Eversnow never worried that Lin Ming would experience some accident in opening the Gate of Life. And looking at him now, the situation was much better than she expected.

Mo Eversnow's vision pierced through Lin Ming. She could see the inner workings of his body, his flesh and his blood. She could see the fires of life burning within him like a raging conflagration, a flaming mountain so great and high it seemed that it would scorch the skies.

As Mo Eversnow saw this, a rare smile crossed her face. Lin Ming's talent was much better than she had estimated.

"Perhaps... he really might be able to open the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, achieving the peak in both the essence gathering and body transformation systems! I have no idea just what state he will be able to reach in the future..." Mo Eversnow whispered to herself. Her eyes grew increasingly bright. Her goal was to have Lin Ming become an Empyrean in the future!

This ambition was incredibly enormous, even impossible. If others were to learn of it, they would certainly scoff at her hubris.

Without mentioning anything else, even someone who became the champion of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting would only have a suffocatingly slim hope of becoming an Empyrean in the future. And in Mo Eversnow's opinion, it was hard to tell what result Lin Ming would obtain, whether that was top 10, top five, or even higher.

Of course, this was also because Lin Ming was far too young. Compared to the average age of the young elites entering the First Martial Meeting, he would be around 10 years younger.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Lin Ming's heartbeat reverberated through the world. The sound became increasingly loud and increasingly strong. At the start it was like a heavy drum, but then it slowly transformed into a rolling thunderclap. Finally, every beat of Lin Ming's heart caused the earth to shake and lava to gush forth.

The mountain peak that Lin Ming sat on began to crack. Countless bits of rock tumbled down the mountain as a cloud of dust rose.

Every time blood passed through his heart, it would wash out a massive amount of energy. This energy nourished the entirety of Lin Ming's body. This state continued for several hours. Slowly, the energy within Lin Ming reached the limit. The pigeon egg-sized Esoteric Immortality Pill had shrunk to the size of a fingernail.

At this time, the rest of the Esoteric Immortality Pill cracked apart. With an explosive ringing sound, energy erupted from all over. The mountain peak that Lin Ming sat on collapsed!

Lin Ming let out a loud and happy cry, his howls reaching through the skies and washing away all the clouds.

At this moment, he had opened the seventh of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, the Gate of Life!

Chapter 1168 – Elementary Transcendent Divine Might

Chapter 1168 – Elementary Transcendent Divine Might

…

…

…

“Great! Awesome! Hahaha!” Lin Ming boisterously laughed out loud. At this moment, he felt an explosive power filling his body. His blood boiled within him, like a rushing river from an unleashed damn, surging with unlimited vitality!

To compare a thin and slender blood vessel to a river seemed exaggerated, but in truth it wasn’t at all. In the common folktales, when the greatest god of all underwent nirvana and remade the new universe, his body turned into all of life. His eyes became the sun and the moon, and the blood that flowed within him turned into rivers and oceans. Although this was only a legend, it wasn’t completely baseless. This was because if someone could obtain Lin Ming’s blood vessels now and refine them, they could create a river of flowing blood gushing forwards endlessly!

It could be said that Lin Ming’s entire body was now a treasure!

The supreme dragon bone had been fused into his bones, engraving runes onto the surface that recorded the Heavenly Dao Laws. His flesh was integrated with Law runes that contained the highest truths of the world. His blood and marrow were filled with phoenix essence, allowing him to communicate with heaven and earth origin energy with ease. His organs and fascia had already been tempered continuously with energy, making them as firm as divine iron!

When Lin Ming was born, his martial talent had only been subpar at best. Now, his current body's martial talent had reached the levels of a monstrous genius!

"Phoenix Blood Spear!"

Lin Ming gave a loud shout and the Phoenix Blood Spear shot out from the ruptured earth, turning into a beam of red light that fell into his hand!

With the spear in his hand, Lin Ming immediately felt a close and comforting feeling, as if his own flesh and blood were with him. In this moment, the Phoenix Blood Spear was no longer a weapon but a part of his body, an extension of his arm!

Hum –

The Phoenix Blood Spear trembled in excitement, emitting whistling sounds. Lin Ming felt the strength within his body reach the peak, as if he would explode if he didn't let it loose!

Strength – surging like a tsunami!

Blood – boiling like lava!

Lin Ming bit down on the tip of his tongue and forced out blood essence, spurting it on top of the Phoenix Blood Spear. In this instant, he had burnt 20% of his blood essence!

A powerful strength gained at the cost of burning his blood essence was completely poured into Lin Ming's body. In that instant, his strength suddenly soared. The Heretical God Force also erupted. He had now reached a level of strength countless times the limit of Life Destruction. The world seed within Lin Ming's dantian trembled as if it would break apart and become a world of its own!

All of his strength was poured into the Phoenix Blood Spear. Then, a thrust!

Xiu!

Spear light cut through space, issuing forth a horrifying tearing sound. Thunder crashed down from the skies and plumes of flame rose from the ground. All of this energy was swept up by the spear, forming a massive red and purple vortex!

Underneath the Heavenly Dao Laws, the power of thunderfire within this spear was no longer the pure five elements, but had changed to… heavenly tribulation!

At this moment, within Lin Ming's body, the Heretical God Seedling emitted a glorious light. When Lin Ming crossed Ninefall, the thunder and fire tribulations he experienced hadn't vanished but had been absorbed and refined by the Heretical God Seedling. The Laws within the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation had also been absorbed by the Heretical God Seedling!

Now, as Lin Ming burnt his own blood essence, he had unexpectedly called out the Heavenly Dao Laws sleeping deep within his body, reproducing the power of heavenly tribulation!

Rumble rumble rumble!

The strength of a powerful heavenly tribulation erupted and the vast sky turned endless shades of red and purple. As Lin Ming swung his spear, a 100,000 foot tall mountain a hundred miles away was smashed into fragments by him. Even the massive lake of lava around it completely evaporated. The energy contained within this strike had even evaporated magma! And from the area that Lin Ming had struck out with his spear from to the place where that mountain had been destroyed, a massive fissure had formed in the ground as if a Divine Dragon had crushed the world. This terrifying destructive power even left Lin Ming stunned.

This move was…

Lin Ming had only planned to simultaneously fuse the first three Concepts of Fire with the first three Concepts of Thunder. He didn't think that there would be such an effect.

“The power of heavenly tribulation!” Mo Eversnow gasped as she saw the scene before her, as if the final days of the world had arrived.

“What?” Lin Ming asked, surprised.

Mo Eversnow solemnly said, “Lin Ming, when you crossed Ninefall, not only was there a massive amount of the Heavenly Dao Laws fused into your body, but you also crossed heavenly tribulation and became someone that exists outside the Heavenly Dao. In the future, you might even become someone that can control the Heavenly Dao. Of course, you are currently too weak so that is impossible, but… just now, when you revolved your energy to the limit just now, you summoned the power of thunder and fire tribulation that had been absorbed and carved into the Heretical God Seedling, reproducing the majesty of heavenly tribulation!”

“Heavenly tribulation! Then my move just now… was equal to heavenly tribulation?” Lin Ming was stunned. He himself had deeply experienced just how mighty heavenly tribulation was!

Every single level of heavenly tribulation was incomparably terrifying. At that time, Lin Ming had just crossed Ninefall and his body had been in its peak state. Even so, he had nearly died a gruesome death as he was being attacked by heavenly tribulation. If it weren’t for him swallowing down that demon bead divine replica then he would have likely died then and there.

If he could manifest heavenly tribulation in his moves, then even if he couldn’t reproduce the most powerful yin yang tribulation and could only use thunder and fire tribulation, that would already make him someone that defied the will of the heavens!

To wield the power of heavenly tribulation in his hands sounded completely unbelievable.

“Lin Ming, since ancient times, supreme elders have always created their own cultivation methods. Just now, you also created your own style! Before now, you mastered various cultivation methods and produced your own skills, Chasing Sun, Chasing Thunder, Penetrating Rainbow, and Burying the Heavens. However, these are different. They can at best only be considered mediocre filler. The only reason they are decent is because you created them and they are best suited for your own combat style. But if they stood by themselves as an inheritance, then they really wouldn't be anything to look at at all. But, the move you created just now was different. In terms of the Laws, it stands at an extremely high level, approaching even the Heavenly Dao. In the future as your strength increases and you constantly improve yourself, this style of yours may even surpass the Heavenly Dao! And, all techniques that transcend the Heavenly Dao are called transcendent divine mights! Your move just now can be taken as the elementary form of a future transcendent divine might!

"You have already crossed through nine levels of heavenly tribulation so you can definitely achieve this. When that happens, you will have a transcendent divine might that belongs to you alone!"

Mo Eversnow found it hard to maintain her calm as she spoke to here. Even she felt this was incredible. Lin Ming with his mere perfect Ninefall had actually touched upon the domain of a transcendent divine might. This had definitely been in large part due to the nine by nine Life Destruction he experienced, as well as the nine levels of heavenly tribulation and the countless Law fragments fused into his body.

"You're saying that this is the elementary form of a transcendent divine might!?" Lin Ming asked, surprised. He felt as if this was a dream and found it hard to speak for a while.

A transcendent divine might could only be created by someone extraordinary like an Empyrean. Up until now, Lin Ming had learnt two different transcendent divine mights. And even then, the principles of the Great Dao inherent within them had Lin Ming uttering praises endlessly over just how exquisite they were!

Their common characteristic was that they had nearly formed a system of Laws themselves. They were simply not subject to the constraints of the Heavenly Dao. They were existences that truly defied the heavens.

Although Lin Ming had never been arrogant, he believed that in many aspects, his talent had nearly reached the peak within the Divine Realm. But upon mentioning a transcendent divine might, Lin Ming actually felt a bit helpless and frustrated. He always felt that the moves he created himself were garbage compared to a transcendent divine might. Lin Ming had confidence in his cultivation and strength and also believed he could become an Empyrean in the future. But in terms of self-created moves, Lin Ming actually doubted himself. Would he be able to create his own transcendent divine might upon reaching the Empyrean realm?

He never expected that what he just used now was the elementary form of a transcendent divine might!

“Don’t be complacent. I only said that this move of yours can develop into a transcendent divine might in the future. It is still incomparably far from becoming a true transcendent divine might. You will need to slowly work towards that goal. Every complete transcendent divine might has its own perfect and independent Law system. It could even be said that creating a transcendent divine might is equal to recreating part of the Heavenly Dao. With it as a foundation, then with enough grandmist energy, you could even breed a true world. And the Empyrean who created that transcendent divine might would be the god who created that world!

“Every transcendent divine might is the total sum of everything that an Empyrean had learnt in their life. Thus, no matter how extreme an Empyrean is, they can only produce a single one! Although only an Empyrean can create a transcendent divine might, when the inkling and traces of that transcendent divine might first appear, that Empyrean might be at a very low boundary. For instance, the current you…” Mo Eversnow said this to prevent Lin Ming from being overly content with himself. Even so, she couldn’t help but praise him. To touch upon the elementary form of a transcendent divine might at the ninth stage Life Destruction was far, far too early.

“A transcendent divine might is equal to the Heavenly Dao in this world?”

Lin Ming was startled. This was the first time he had heard of such a thing and it left him shaken. If an Empyrean had enough grandmist energy, couldn't they even create their own miniature universe?

"Lin Ming, you have harvested far too much. Far, far too much. Although it only manifests in enhancing your strength now, in the future the benefits you will experience will be more and more. This harvest is even greater than what you gained from opening the Gate of Life! Since you created this technique, you should give it a name so that once you master it, it can be an inheritance that you pass down."

"Okay..." Once Lin Ming recovered from his thoughts, he began to think aloud, "Since this technique was bred within heavenly tribulation and belongs to the power of heavenly retribution, let's call it Heavenly Dao Judgment!"

Since this was a technique with unlimited potential for growth in the future, calling it Heavenly Dao Judgment was a worthy name. Otherwise, if it was some garbage technique that dared to proclaim itself Heavenly Dao anything, then others would truly laugh at it to death.

"Heavenly Dao Judgment? That's quite the imposing name. I hope that in the future you will be able to give this name the reputation it deserves!"

As Mo Eversnow spoke, Lin Ming clenched his fists and said, "I will."

"Mm. We don't have much time left. You train for another three months. Once you've gathered enough strength, it will be time to attack the Divine Sea! Afterwards, you will consolidate your cultivation and then we shall leave seclusion to join the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting!"

"Alright!" Lin Ming shouted, his heroic spirit rising 100,000 feet into the heavens!

The Divine Realm First Martial Meeting would be the gathering of the most ultimate extreme young geniuses within the Divine Realm. Lin Ming wanted to take a good look at these young elites and see just how he compared to them!

Chapter 1169 – Finally Stepping Into the Divine Sea

Chapter 1169 – Finally Stepping Into the Divine Sea

…

…

…

Training passed without sense of time. Unknowingly, three months went by.

Because Lin Ming displayed Heavenly Dao Judgment, there was a deficit of blood energy within his body. However, he had restored this half a month ago. According to the Celestial Tyrant Manual, the less blood essence one consumed, the faster it would regenerate. If one consumed a great deal such as 50%, then it might even take over half a year to recover. If one consumed over 50%, then not even the Gate of Life's powerful life force restoring abilities would be able to completely restore it.

After three months, Lin Ming's essence, energy, and divine had reached the limit. The inner world seed within him had shrunk to the size of a grain of rice and was verging on the edge of eruption.

The more concentrated the world seed was, the greater the explosive force would be once it erupted.

Hu hu hu –

In the dimensional realm, strong winds stirred. Endless heaven and earth origin energy gathered, forming a massive whirlpool-shaped origin energy cloud in the sky. The central focal point of this origin energy cloud was a 100,000 foot high crimson mountain peak. Lin Ming sat at the very summit of this peak, deep in meditation.

100,000 feet was nearly 50 miles. If this were the Sky Spill Continent, this altitude would have long since pierced through the primal chaos heavens.

But in this sealed world, this height only just touched the infinite thunder clouds in the sky, bringing them in reach of one's fingertips.

"It's time."

Lin Ming slowly opened his eyes from meditation. He stood up, the strong winds surging past him. Lin Ming's white clothes violently fluttered in the air as his long hair whipped about him. Beside him, 12 thick iron chains were like 12 dragons, one end wrapped around the mountain peak with the other end extending into the vast and boundless skies.

Three months of accumulation… no, it should be 10 years of accumulation. Lin Ming had first crossed Life Destruction at 22 years of age. Now, nearly 10 years had passed. Everything so far had been for this final moment!

And the nine stages of Life Destruction had taken Lin Ming 10 years of time. He had nearly crossed a stage each year! Solid, step-by-step, steady and without a single shortcut taken.

This speed was considered relatively slow for a Divine Realm genius. However, such a patient and steady cultivation speed had brought tremendous benefits to Lin Ming. It had formed the foundation for him to hurtle into the future, overcoming all!

Today, Lin Ming would finally break into the Divine Sea.

Divine Sea, Divine Transformation, Divine Lord, these three large boundaries and nine small boundaries were collectively called the Nine Divine Shifts, similar to the nine stages of Life Destruction. Ninefall was to overcome mortality and the Divine Sea was to transform into the divine. After reaching the Divine Sea, Lin Ming would have completed his transformation from mortality and began stepping into the realm of god.

Hu –

Hu –

The strong winds became increasingly violent! The center of the origin energy cloud turned into a funnel that came extending downwards. In the skies, dark clouds extended for 10,000 miles, with countless flashing arcs of thunder shining from within as if an immortal god of thunder swelled in there. And beneath the mountain peak, an inexhaustible sea of lava and flames surged about. Volcanic explosions continued without end, sending molten lava tumbling into the skies!

Lin Ming took out the Boundless World Pill from his spatial ring. All of the energy within his body was gathered in his dantian, rushing into his world seed without a care for the consequences. The Heretical God Force opened, the blood of the Ancient Phoenix combusted. Together with the endless origin energy in the clouds above him, Lin Ming crazily absorbed it all!

As energy constantly entered him, the world seed within Lin Ming's dantian began to radiate a blinding light. The world seed continued to shrink, going from the size of a grain of rice to the size of a needle's eye, and still condensing even beyond that!

In the legends, when the universe first formed, it had begun from an infinitesimally small point. All of the grandmist energy in creation had been concentrated in that tiny dot, finally exploding outwards and creating the endless universe.

Now, the formation of Lin Ming's inner world followed the same principles as the eruption of the universe.

"Boundless World Pill!"

Lin Ming already felt that his inner world had been compressed to the limit. Then, he crumbled the Boundless World Pill in his hands.

As the pill shattered, the world spirit sealed within the center of the pill turned into an incomparably pure world power that flew into Lin Ming's body, all of it absorbed by him.

This pill that had been won with 7 trillion violet sun stones was the most valuable peak quality pill that a Divine Sea martial artist could use. Even the top genius of a Great World King Holy Land would find it difficult to use!

Now, this world spirit completely fused into Lin Ming's world seed. At this time, his world seed finally exploded into pieces!

Countless tiny cracks appeared on this world seed that was smaller than a needle's eye. An endless amount of energy erupted and Lin Ming's dantian instantly collapsed!

Bang!

Energy transformed into an incomparably terrifying storm, rushing outwards with utter brutality. All of the clouds for thousands of miles around were completely washed away by the shockwaves!

And after the raging storm of energy dissipated, Lin Ming's body had actually vanished.

On this 100,000 foot high mountain peak where one could touch the skies, a completely sealed space distortion appeared in the air. The power of time, the power of space, everything was completely twisted up in here. Even light was affected, unable to maintain a straight line.

Lin Ming's body was sealed up within this space distortion.

This was a cocoon formed from a space distortion!

And Lin Ming was sealed within this cocoon, undergoing his transformation from Life Destruction to the Divine Sea.

The wind had already stopped. The surging thunder and the billowing lava had died down. The endless amount of heaven and earth origin energy no longer formed violent and dangerous fluctuations of energy. Rather, it turned into fist-sized balls of glowing light. These balls of glowing light were mostly red and purple, but there was also yellow, blue, black, green, white, and every other possible color imaginable.

More and more of these glowing balls of light appeared. From tens of thousands to hundreds of thousands to millions and even more, until it seemed like an infinite sea of lights. From a few dozen miles, it rapidly expanded to a thousand miles, filling the entire world with a beautiful glow. Looking from afar, it seemed like a single infinite rainbow had appeared, beautiful and charming, stretching to infinity.

Mo Eversnow slowly floated in the skies, looking at these endless beautiful balls of light as well as the giant cocoon floating within them. Strange and mysterious Law runes emerged from the cocoon and wrapped around it, as fantastical and amazing as a dream.

World seed shattered and dantian transformed into a minor dimension – this was the symbol of the Divine Sea.

And after reaching the Divine Sea, the Laws that a martial artist comprehended would become a part of their system and also become the Heavenly Dao Laws of this minor dimension.

The massive cocoon floating in the air was a projection of the Laws from Lin Ming’s inner world.

At this point, one could only wait. Lin Ming’s body, soul, his everything was being transformed within this cocoon. This process might take one to two months of time.

However, that didn’t mean there were no risks during this period. When Lin Ming truly began stepping into the realm of god, he would have to experience and overcome his heart demons. Because his consciousness had already entered a completely different space-time realization, Lin Ming’s dreams of his heart demons might continue for far longer than a month or two.

All martial artists would have to experience their heart demons when they crossed into the Divine Sea. There were very few people that would die because they couldn't overcome their heart demons. But, if they were influenced by their heart demons, this would cause the evolution of their soul to be incomplete, making their divine foundation unsteady.

All of this would depend on Lin Ming himself. Mo Eversnow simply meditated in front of the giant cocoon, resting her soul form.

In the cocoon, Lin Ming was like a baby that hadn't been born. His arms were wrapped around his knees and his body was rolled up. His entire body was naked, no different from a baby. While a baby would soak in amniotic fluid, what Lin Ming rested in was a sea of Laws.

Law runes appeared periodically on Lin Ming's body before fading away. Lin Ming's eyes were closed, unaware of all this.

Deep in sleep, Lin Ming's face was sharp and clear. His long hair hung down, covering his strong back. His tough and long legs were filled with an explosive power. Every inch of his flesh, every fiber of his muscles, it was all a work of perfect art. In this cocoon, his body, his soul, everything he was began to subtly change.

In a dim haze, Lin Ming seemed to return to his childhood, and countless memories of it rushed back into his mind. All of them were strange, confusing, and unable to be discerned clearly.

Then, everything rapidly changed.

He was chased down by Tian Mingzi. Mo Eversnow was destroyed, her soul fading into ashes. He himself was severely wounded. His boundary dropped and he would never be able to advance again in his life.

Then, the secret of the Magic Cube was exposed. Every martial artist under the heavens began to hunt him down. Finally, Lin Ming died without a burial ground and even his homeland, the Sky Spill Continent, was exterminated by Tian Mingzi's underlings.

All of these scenes were images that suited the weakness in Lin Ming's heart.

This was a heart demon, all-pervasive and perpetual. As long as a human held desires or fear, they would inevitably have heart demons. The evolution of the soul was followed by the manifestation of these heart demons. If one wasn't able to overcome them then their divine foundation would be damaged.

Fortunately, Lin Ming's will was incomparably powerful. He soon discovered the shadows of these fears and completely crushed his heart demons!

He saw himself killing Tian Mingzi, becoming an Empyrean, helping Mo Eversnow reforge her body, rebuilding the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, and then climbing to the peak of martial arts. There, he surpassed the boundary of Empyrean, becoming immortal and everlasting, an existence that would last for eternity. Like this, tens of thousands and hundreds of thousands of years passed. He held the world in his hands, controlled the samsara of life and death, and dominated the Heavenly Dao Laws. This feeling was incomparably realistic and wonderful.

This sort of heart demon was a manifestation of Lin Ming's desire to reach the peak of martial arts!

Even if Lin Ming's will was strong, when facing such a heart demon, the effect of his willpower would be greatly diminished. This was because Lin Ming's will and determination to chase after the peak of martial arts was very strong, and correspondingly this heart demon was also strong, much mightier than anything an ordinary martial artist could dream of.

Lin Ming wandered about this illusionary dream. He seemed to awaken and also fall asleep, again and again. He experienced lifetimes of great sadness and also lifetimes of great joy. Then, his mind suddenly shook. It was like he had seen the ends of the heavens.

There, a phantom of the Magic Cube, Demon Bead, and Purple Card appeared. An icy feeling rushed through his body and Lin Ming suddenly awoke!

As Lin Ming examined his body, he found that his dantian had already disappeared, replaced by a minor dimension!

The world power of the Boundless World Pill had already fused into this minor dimension. The evolution of his world had come to an end.

At this time, outside of the massive cocoon, the endless rainbow origin energy light that extended for thousands of miles suddenly gathered together, forming millions of phoenixes and fire birds that flew towards the center, all of them submerging into the giant cocoon. For a time, a blinding light filled the world, illuminating the heavens with shimmering multicolored lights.

Mo Eversnow's eyes suddenly shot open. She knew that at this moment, Lin Ming had stepped into the Divine Sea!

Chapter 1170 – Leaving Seclusion

Chapter 1170 – Leaving Seclusion

…

…

…

Ka ka ka!

Within the dimensional realm, the giant cocoon shattered and Lin Ming emerged, standing on the wind. He was already wearing white clothes formed from energy, as white as snow and as untouchable as the heavens.

After breaking through to the Divine Sea, Lin Ming's aura became even more concealed and a sharp light slowly gathered in his eyes, making him seem softer and gentler. If Lin Ming was a spear before, then right now he was a spear that was placed into a spear chest. Although he seemed ordinary, the truth was that his vast aura was hidden. Once it erupted, the earth would shake and the heavens would tremble.

"Lin Ming, enter your minor dimension!"

Mo Eversnow turned into a beam of light and sank into Lin Ming's body. Lin Ming followed her, entering the minor dimension that had been opened within himself.

The scenery changed. The minor dimension that the two entered was barren with only the ground spread before them and calm skies above them. Within this world, all sorts of heaven and earth origin energy gathered together, wandering about and forming dazzling patterns in the sky.

This heaven and earth origin energy came from the countless balls of origin energy light that Lin Ming had absorbed when he reached the Divine Sea. These origin energy lights were now gathered in Lin Ming's world, becoming a part of the power of the world within him. If he fought in the future, he would be able to use a part of this energy.

This was the reason why a Divine Sea powerhouse was far stronger than a Life Destruction martial artist. Because when they fought, a Divine Sea martial artist could draw support from their own inner world for strength. Now that Lin Ming had broken through into the Divine Sea, his strength had risen astronomically!

Moreover, because of the Boundless World Pill, after Lin Ming broke into the Divine Sea he had steadily entered into the early Divine Sea realm, just a tiny bit away from reaching the peak of the early Divine Sea realm. The speed of this improvement was much quicker than a normal martial artist's.

Mo Eversnow's divine sense spread out, looking through Lin Ming's entire minor dimension. She revealed a satisfied smile and then said to Lin Ming, "Lin Ming, your inner minor dimension has reached a diameter of 800 miles just after you entered the Divine Sea realm. Your inner world is even larger than that of some weak late Divine Sea martial artists!"

"Only larger than the inner worlds of weak late Divine Sea martial artists?" Lin Ming asked, surprised, seeming unsatisfied with this appraisal. With his solid cultivation, steady foundation, and the Boundless World Pill added on top, then if his inner world didn't far surpass those of ordinary martial artists then he might as well kill himself. But now as he listened to Mo Eversnow, his inner world only surpassed weak late Divine Sea martial artists. He was certainly dissatisfied with this.

Mo Eversnow faintly smiled, "So what would you like instead? The size of your inner world is determined by how strong or weak a martial artist's true essence foundation is. The size of your inner world has already surpassed that of a weak late Divine Sea martial artist. In other words, disregarding all other aspects, just your cultivation is in no way inferior to that of a weak late Divine Sea martial artist. Then, with your Laws, battle spirit, transcendent divine mights, dual body and energy cultivation, extremely thick true essence, and all sorts of other factors added in, they are no different from ants compared to you.”

“I see…”

Lin Ming whispered as it dawned on him. If the area of his inner world reached that of a weak late Divine Sea martial artist, then that meant his cultivation was equal to theirs!

Cultivation had always been Lin Ming’s greatest weak point. If his cultivation matched them, then killing these people wouldn’t be much more difficult than stepping on an ant.

Moreover, Lin Ming’s inner world was far more stable than the inner world of most other Divine Sea martial artists. This was because of the Boundless World Pill. Due to him having taken the Boundless World Pill, his inner world had taken on characteristics of a true world. From this alone, even if the size of their inner worlds was the same, Lin Ming’s inner world could hold far more world strength!

“Lin Ming, it’s time for us to leave!”

Mo Eversnow suddenly said.

“Leave now? Do I not need to train for another month or two to stabilize my cultivation?” Lin Ming asked, startled. There was still plenty of time for him to train here.

“No need. Let’s leave now. There is still some time until the First Martial Meeting begins. Even if you stabilize your foundation on the road, that will be more than enough. Training for too long in an altered flow of time will have negative effects on your comprehension of Laws. Since we have no need to stay here, we might as well leave now!”

“Okay!”

Lin Ming nodded. In the next moment his body turned into a beam of light that shot straight towards the exit of this training area.

After training for so long, it was finally time for Lin Ming to face the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting!

………

"Young Hero Lin, you've come out so early! You still have two and a half months left in your reserved training chamber." In the corridor of Imperial City Auction House, a beautiful woman politely spoke to Lin Ming as he appeared.

The young receptionists of Imperial City Auction House were mostly at the Revolving Core or Life Destruction realm. Although their talent wasn't too amazing, all of them were extraordinarily beautiful with amazing temperaments. Some of them with good luck might even be looked upon favorably by some great person and taken in as concubines.

"I understand. Could you help settle the bill?" Lin Ming casually said. Then, his mind stirred and he asked, "Do you know if there's any special news regarding the First Martial Meeting?"

As Lin Ming spoke, he flicked his hand and a small bottle of pills useful for a Life Destruction martial artist flew into the hands of the young receptionist.

The young woman took the bottle by reflex. Although she couldn't see what sorts of pills were inside, she had done enough work in the auction house that she was able to judge the general value of a bottle of pills by its fragrance. As she took the bottle in hand she was immediately overjoyed. Her eyes became much more gentle and pleasing as she looking at Lin Ming, "Reporting to Young Hero Lin, registration for the First Martial Meeting has recently begun. The currently held Divine Realm First Martial Meeting has extremely loose limits for registration. It is completely different from the last several First Martial Meetings…"

"Oh? How is it different?" Lin Ming casually asked.

The young woman sweetly grinned and said, "In the past First Martial meetings, besides the limits of age and cultivation, there were also requirements for one's background. For instance, one had to be a disciple of a Holy Land, a junior of a ninth-grade family, or the descendant of a Holy Lord level powerhouse. Before every martial meeting, a quota of people would be given to every Holy Land in the Divine Realm. There were many higher eighth-grade sects that couldn't obtain a quota of people unless they had the recommendation of a Holy Lord level powerhouse or above. Thus, many wandering martial artists weren't able to participate either."

As Lin Ming heard the young woman speak, he was surprised for a bit before immediately understanding it. Although it sounded unfair to refuse most wandering martial artists and even those from weaker sects, this was also reasonable. If there was no defined threshold to register and every martial artist participated, then the number of martial artists joining in would probably be counted using trillions as the smallest number. With so many people, how could a tournament possibly be arranged?

Thus, only sects with enough strength were able to recommend their strongest direct disciples. The strength of these chosen individuals was far higher than what an average wandering martial artist could hope to compare with.

In fact, in all fairness, if one didn't have a sect or a Holy Lord level master behind them, it was impossible for a wandering martial artist to hope to show good results in the First Martial meeting. Even a monstrous freak like Lin Ming also had a Holy Land background.

Lin Ming soon understood all of this. He asked, "So, you're saying that the rules for registration have changed?"

"Yes... this First Martial Meeting only has limits on age and cultivation. There is no limit on one's background and also quota of people given. All geniuses that meet the required age and cultivation can participate.

"Mm?" Lin Ming was stunned. If conditions for registration were so loose then wouldn't the number of people registering be unimaginable? In such a grand and wondrous event, even if some weaker young elites clearly knew that they wouldn't have any results in participating, they would still all be rushing to personally experience just how awesome this was!

After all, this was an event that happened only every several thousands of years. If they just happened to be of the age and cultivation to enter, how could they not participate?

“How many people have registered already?” Lin Ming asked.

The young woman thought for a moment before saying, “It is said that within the entire True Martial World, there are already 1.5 trillion geniuses that have registered. But, there is still two months remaining. The closer the deadline approaches, the more people there will be registering. At the end, I estimate that the total number will increase by several times what it is now.”

“This is...” Lin Ming sucked in a cold breath of air. He was already mentally prepared, but upon hearing the true number of participants he was still shocked.

Currently, just a great world of the Divine Realm had 1.5 trillion registered participants so far, and there were 3000 great worlds in the Divine Realm in total. If this were added up assuming that the others were the same, then that would be 4.5 quadrillion geniuses. In addition, there were still the countless other worlds, hidden worlds, hidden dimensions, and all sorts of other people. This number was far too terrifying!

Moreover, this was only half a month of registration!

Once the First Martial Meeting truly started, there would at least be 10-20 quadrillion young elites participating. With so many people, arranging them to compete was simply far too difficult! Not to mention a higher number, just gathering 10 quadrillion young elites together was a monumental undertaking. One would need at least 10 billion spirit ships! No matter how wealthy Empyrean Divine Dream and Empyrean Vast Universe were or how much manpower they had on their side, it was still unimaginable that they could organize a First Martial Meeting on such a giant scale.

Even if they could organize such an event, where would they find the venue for it? This was 10 quadrillion people! Not even a massive super planet would be able to hold so many people.

If he didn't guess wrong, then there should be qualifying tournaments, each of them in their own area. For instance, Immemorial Imperial City would be such a division with its qualifying tournament. A winner would be chosen here to go on to the next round, repeated ad nauseam. Who knew how many rounds one would have to go through to experience the true competition? Moreover, it was impossible to be completely fair in this. There were some qualifying areas that were doomed to have far too many masters, and other qualifying areas that wouldn't have any stronger individuals. Deciding how to allocate the number of chosen participants would be a major problem.

As Lin Ming thought this, he asked, "Will the tournament be divided into sub-divisions? If so, then will those that register at Immemorial Imperial City be competing at Immemorial Imperial City?"

The beautiful young receptionist shook her head. "It doesn't seem so. I've heard that everyone that registered will be competing together."

"Competing together? How is that even possible?" Lin Ming found this all too unbelievable. No matter how resourceful or powerful two Empyreans were, it should still be impossible to do this.

"This is what everyone is saying so it shouldn't be wrong. Moreover, the site of the competition is extremely special… it is the Divine Dream World." The young woman confidently said.

Lin Ming still couldn't understand. Three months ago, when that voice resounded through all of Immemorial Imperial City, they had said –

“Three months from now, the First Martial Meeting of the Divine Realm’s 3000 great worlds will be held in the Divine Dream World, held jointly by Empyrean Vast Universe and Empyrean Divine Dream! All heroic young elites of the Divine Realm may participate!”

The Divine Dream World, wouldn’t that be the domain of Empyrean Divine Dream? But how was it possible to organize 10 quadrillion geniuses to compete there?

As Lin Ming was pondering this, Mo Eversnow said, “Lin Ming, I suspect that the Divine Dream World is not the Divine Dream World of the Divine Realm’s 3000 great worlds, but a special world that Empyrean Divine Dream established herself using a transcendent divine might as the Laws – the true Divine Dream World!”

“Mm? A world established by the Laws of a transcendent divine might?” Lin Ming asked, dumbfounded.

Chapter 1171 – Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan

Chapter 1171 – Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan

…

…

…

"It's only a guess of mine; I don't know for sure. I should have told you this, but Empyrean Divine Dream is an outstanding individual even amongst Empyreans. She is extremely mysterious and even the Empyrean level influence she created, Divine Dream Palace, is just as mysterious as she is. It is said that Divine Dream Palace only allows female cultivators to join, and there are only several hundred people there in total. Each of them is either superbly strong or superbly talented! Even if a Great World King were to go to Divine Dream Palace, they would still have to respectfully greet any individual there. They wouldn't even dare to offend a junior!"

"Only several hundred people…" Lin Ming echoed, surprised. After ascending to the Divine Realm, he began to understand just how great and massive the sects of the Divine Realm were. The scales they were built to were enormous. Even the Ancient Phoenix Clan had a hundred billion clansmen, and the Ancient Dragon Clan even had a trillion clansmen!

Immemorial Imperial City's Sacred Martial Mansion and True Martial Holy Lands were ridiculously huge presences here, and yet only a tiny part of their sects were located at Immemorial Imperial City.

And now, Mo Eversnow had said that Divine Dream Palace, an Empyrean level influence, only had a mere several hundred people. How could this not lead Lin Ming to be shocked? Although this number was likely inaccurate because of how mysterious Divine Dream Palace was, he could still infer that Divine Dream Palace had an extremely small number of people.

Divine Dream Palace only had several hundred or even a thousand people and yet it could be ranked at the highest echelons of Empyrean level Holy Lands. Besides Empyrean Divine Dream sitting in command, all other disciples of Divine Dream Palace had to be monstrous geniuses. The most amazing of them likely exceeded even Great World Kings!

Mo Eversnow said, “For this Empyrean Divine Dream to manage the First Martial Meeting herself, that is what I am surprised about. This is because Empyrean Divine Dream acts in a very low-key and muted manner, and she rarely appears. Yet, for her to manage the First Martial Meeting, I think there is a possibility that… Empyrean Divine Dream’s descendant is soon to be born…”

“Empyrean Divine Dream’s… descendant!” Lin Ming sucked in a cold breath of air. Whoever this person might be, their talent must be at unbelievable levels!

This person must possess transcendent divine mights. At the very least, they would know the self-created transcendent divine might that Empyrean Divine Dream herself created!

Moreover, growing up, this descendant must have used the absolute best of all resources. Compared with Lin Ming, besides the Magic Cube that he still wasn’t able to activate on his own, she would be no worse than he was in any other aspect.

As for having a monstrous talent and perception, there was no need to mention these things. These were the most basic advantages that an Empyrean descendant would possess.

With all of this concentrated together, an abnormal singularity would be born.

Mo Eversnow pressed her eyebrows together. She said, “If you and she were of the same age, then you naturally wouldn’t need to fear her. But, if she was older than you by even five years…”

Mo Eversnow’s words trailed off. In the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, the greatest unfairness lay in the problem of age. The older participants would definitely have an advantage; this was inevitable.

Not to mention anyone else, but five years from now, just what sort of combat strength would Lin Ming have? How strong would he be 10 years from now? It was hard to imagine.

In terms of talent, Lin Ming had firm belief in himself; he wouldn't fear anyone!

But because he had practiced martial arts for too short a time, it was hard for him to say what rank he would place in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting without first meeting his opponents. There was no way he could randomly boast about such things.

"Empyrean Divine Dream… I wonder how she compares with Empyrean Primordius. Of the two of them, which one would be weaker?" Lin Ming thought aloud. But for this sort of matter, perhaps only Empyrean Divine Dream and Empyrean Primordius would know.

As he thought about it, he could barely be considered a half-descendant of Empyrean Primordius. Of course, the true legacy of Empyrean Primordius was still within the Eternal Demon Abyss where he had yet to obtain it.

Although he could feel just how terrifying his opponents were, Lin Ming could also feel his warm blood boiling over with excitement. If everyone at the First Martial Meeting was on the same level as the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion, then there wouldn't be any reason for participating at all.

Ridiculously fearful opponents, an unknown result – only this type of battle could cause Lin Ming to seethe with fighting spirit!

Lin Ming's final goal for participating in the Divine Realm Martial Meeting was not only to learn another transcendent divine might, but also to test himself against the young elites that stood at the pinnacle of the Divine Realm. Only by fighting against these top masters would he be able to temper himself!

"Come on, let's go and register!"

Lin Ming strode out of Imperial City Auction House. As soon as he left the auction house, he didn't need Mo Eversnow's reminder to feel that several divine senses had locked onto him. To be so easily discovered by Lin Ming, the cultivations of these people had to be at the Divine Transformation realm.

"One, two, three, four… four Divine Transformation trashes actually thought to monitor me. These people are really patient. They've waited outside Imperial City Auction House all this time for me to come out."

These people all had an early Divine Transformation cultivation. For a task as thankless and boring as monitoring someone, a Divine Lord powerhouse naturally wouldn't be sent out.

The Divine Transformation realm was the boundary one needed to wander the vast Divine Realm by themselves with some semblance of safety. On a faraway tiny planet they could act as an overlord. As for a Divine Lord powerhouse, that was different. They could seek a position in a Holy Land. For instance, in an eighth-grade sect like Carefree Island, they could mix in and become an Elder.

Lin Ming sneered. When he just reached Ninefall he was already able to defeat a weak Divine Transformation martial artist. Now that he had opened the Gate of Life and also stepped into the Divine Sea, these people were even less worthy of mentioning.

Mo Eversnow said, "There's no need to bother with these people. Let's go and register."

"Mm." Lin Ming nodded. Whether these people were toads that didn't know the vastness of the heavens and earth, or whether they were the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion, or whether they were even Zhong Wenshu's underlings, he was disinclined to care about them at all. And if Immemorial Imperial City didn't have a blanket prohibition against fighting, then he wouldn't have minded teaching these four pieces of a garbage a lesson they would never forget.

As Lin Ming moved, these four people silently followed. None of them were aware that Lin Ming had already discovered them. Besides a few people like Yue Ironrock and River Feather, no one knew just how strong Lin Ming was. They only knew that Lin Ming was ridiculously wealthy and that he likely didn't have any great background, otherwise there was no way he would have been sitting in the commoner section. To do that was simply seeking trouble.

Lin Ming didn't even need to ask for directions; he only needed to follow the massive swelling tide of people to find the registration area.

In the several thousand mile wide Immemorial Imperial City, there were already over a thousand registration points set up!

And this was only Immemorial Imperial City. In the other great cities of True Martial World, the other planets and stars and hidden realms, there were also countless registration spots set up. As long as one met the defined requirements of age and cultivation, one could freely register!

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that in the last several million years of history, this would be the most intense First Martial Meeting, with the highest number of people competing!

Moreover, the appearance of Empyrean Divine Dream added a layer of mystery and intrigue to this First Martial Meeting.

In every First Martial Meeting, there would be the birth of an Empyrean descendant.

Or, it was more accurate to say that only when an Empyrean descendant was born would that Empyrean decide to take advantage of the momentum and hold a Divine Realm First Martial Meeting.

And an Empyrean descendant, without accident, would easily become someone as strong as a Great World King!

The truth was that the fame and glory brought about by being the champion of a Divine Realm First Martial Meeting was even greater than that of being a Great World King!

The Divine Realm's 3000 Great World Kings had accumulated over millions of years. A new one would appear every 1000-2000 years. As for a Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, that would only be held every 4000-5000 years. Of course, this also meant that there were many geniuses who couldn't participate in the First Martial Meeting because of the time when they were born.

However, in every First Martial Meeting, there would be the appearance of an Empyrean descendant, or even several of them. In the future, these Empyrean descendants would reach the level of a Great World King but wouldn't be considered as part of the Divine Realm's 3000 Great World Kings.

"Here to register?"

Lin Ming waited in line for a long time. Then, when it was finally his turn, he stepped up and stood in a strange array formation. This array formation sent out a faint blue light that covered him.

"This is to determine your skeletal age." Mo Eversnow's voice sounded out in Lin Ming's ears. A person's skeletal age was closely tied to their life. This linked to one of the Heavenly Dao Laws, the so-called passage of time, karma and samsara, life and death, the fading of beauty…

This was a Law that not even an Empyrean could control. In 100 million years, all would become dust.

"Yes."

"Please record your name, cultivation, as well as the sect or family you come from. Also, please leave behind a true essence fluctuation." The registration attendant was a tall and thin old man. This old man passed Lin Ming a jade slip so that he could record his information and true essence fluctuation within it. This sort of thing was similar to a person's fingerprint. When it was recorded within, then combined with one's name, age, and other such information, it could be used to determine and lock down a person.

Lin Ming recorded his name and cultivation in the jade slip. Then, when he was filling in the name of his sect, he recorded the Ancient Phoenix Clan. He knew that in participating in this Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, it was inevitable that he would shine with glory. Not to mention the top three or even top 10, but even ranking in the top 10,000 would bring endless attention from the entire Divine Realm and also arouse the interest of countless influences. The sect that he wrote down would also receive immense glory and praise. This favor was naturally given to the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

After all, whether it was the Ancient Phoenix Clan's Fairy Feng or Huo Violentstone, both of them had treated him with graciousness. Lin Ming also had a very good impression of the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

Even in Phoenix Cry Palace, when White Daohong had faced Lin Ming, who far surpassed him in talent, not only did White Daohong not feel jealousy and try to push him away, but he even gave suitable help and assistance.

As for others who showed him graciousness, there was also Carefree Island's Mo Riverbliss. However, Mo Riverbliss couldn't appear publicly and it also wouldn't be a good idea to arouse too much interest in Carefree Island. Thus, he naturally couldn't record their name.

The tall and thin old man received the jade slip and checked the information within it. After verifying the age and cultivation, he slowly said, "Next."

Lin Ming's status wasn't great enough to arouse any interest. As a Holy Land disciple with an early Divine Sea cultivation, he was only one in the midst of countless trillions.

As Lin Ming was registering, he could never have imagined what was occurring countless quadrillions of miles away from True Martial Great World at another great world of the Divine Realm – Good Fortune World.

In this world, there was an eighth-grade sect called the Unbroken Cult. Currently living in this sect were two women that held an inestimable importance to Lin Ming…

They were Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan!

After many years, these two women had already reached a Divine Sea realm cultivation. Of course, the reason they reached the Divine Sea so quickly was because Old Man Good Fortune had arranged a time enchantment that sped up the flow of time by a factor of 10. Qin Xingxuan's time in training had been even longer.

Not just that, but the two women didn't need to consider questions of combat strength and accumulation. When Lin Ming had ascended, Fairy Feng used three years of her cultivation to bury a flame seed condensed from Ancient Phoenix blood into the bodies of Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu. This flame seed also contained fragments of the Fire Laws, allowing them to smoothly break through to the eighth stage of Life Destruction and reach the Divine Sea.

And after the two women reached the Divine Sea, they were received by Old Man Good Fortune and ascended into the Divine Realm...

Chapter 1172 – The Burden of an Outer Court Disciple

Chapter 1172 – The Burden of an Outer Court Disciple

…

…

…

Old Man Good Fortune was a disciple of Good Fortune World's Unbroken Cult. The reason that his nickname was Old Man Good Fortune was because of the world that he had come from.

As someone who led people to the Divine Realm, those he led naturally went to the Unbroken Cult and became their outer court disciples.

After Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan ascended to the Divine Realm, they had a faint feeling that it wouldn't be easy finding Lin Ming in such a vast world. But when they truly reached the Unbroken Cult, they discovered that they had far underestimated the difficulty of their mission!

Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan had seen Fairy Feng, thus they were naturally aware that Lin Ming had been received into the Ancient Phoenix Clan as a disciple. This was the only clue they had to look for Lin Ming in the Divine Realm.

They had thought that as long as they found the Ancient Phoenix Clan, they would be able to find Lin Ming. But after entering the Unbroken Cult, they asked around and looked through a great deal of material, finally finding out that the Ancient Phoenix Clan was divided into 72 palaces, scattered all over the Divine Realm. And they didn't even know which palace Lin Ming was located at.

Not just that, but to travel between great worlds – once the expenses and consumption of spirit ship energy were accounted for – required at least a million violet sun stones. As for Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan, the monthly expenses they received from the Unbroken Cult was only 10 violet sun stones. If they gathered them in this way, they would die before they could save the necessary amount.

Moreover, to travel between great worlds required one to be at least a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse. This was because the spaces between the great worlds and within the great worlds were filled with robbers and killers. Murdering someone and stealing all of their possessions was a frequent occurrence. And if one were a beautiful woman, their fate would be extremely miserable. It was likely they would either be sold as a slave whore or used to cultivate and have all of their life essence sucked up.

In this sort of situation, it was simply far too difficult for Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan to find Lin Ming.

“Big Sister Mu, we've already been in the Divine Realm for half a year, but... if this continues, how will we still look for Brother Lin?” Qin Xingxuan asked. She was standing in a field that the Unbroken Cult used to raise valuable treasure beasts. She wore a simple blue gown without any frills, and her face was fresh with an untouched beauty. Her supple black hair was tied back with a blue scarf and her sleeves were pulled up. Beads of fresh water dripped down her forehead, making her look like a simple yet utterly beautiful mortal village girl.

At this time, Qin Xingxuan was holding a stack of spirit grass in her hand, feeding a spirit beast that looked like a white horse. This spirit beast had a beautiful white horn coming from its head and its body was as white as snow.

In the Divine Realm, a Divine Sea realm martial artist would only be raised with effort if they were a genius. For instance, within the Unbroken Cult, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan were both only outer court disciples. It was impossible to wholeheartedly raise outer court disciples like direct disciples and for all of them to enjoy amazing resources. Outer court disciples thus had to engage in burdensome chores.

The Unbroken Cult was a relatively poor sect. They weren't like Carefree Island that had the extremely resource rich Red Desolate Mystic Realm. Because of this, the disciples of the Unbroken Cult needed to perform different labors. For instance, tending to medicinal fields, feeding spirit beasts, and so on. All of these tasks were to create more income for the sect in order to provide more resources for the sect Elders and many direct disciples.

"There's nothing we can do for now. With our cultivation, if we tried to travel by ourselves, I fear we'd be eaten up without even our bones remaining. We can only diligently cultivate until… we reach the Divine Transformation realm. Then, once we have enough wealth saved up we can go find Lin Ming."

Mu Qianyu said as she spoke. She weighed various spirit grasses and then mixed them with some different kinds of vicious beast meats, creating feed.

Feeding spirit beasts was not an easy nor relaxed task. One had to wake up five hours before dawn, boil the spirit grass soup, mix the feed, clean the beast pens, and feed the spirit beasts before the sun rose.

Following this, the two women also had to tend to the medicinal field. This medicinal field was filled with extremely precious medicinal herbs. One had to use special spirit techniques to feed and also deworm the plants. To tend to a small medicinal field would take the entire morning.

In the afternoon, the two women would return to the beast pens and feed the spirit beasts a second time. Finally, only in the evening were the two allowed to freely cultivate.

And in the Unbroken Cult, if one wished to borrow various cultivation method jade slips or listen to the teaching of Elders, one required sect contribution points. The Unbroken Cult had tens of thousands of outer court disciples but only 20 some Elder professors. Naturally, not every outer court disciple could attend the teachings whenever they wished.

With Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan's strength, it was impossible for them to participate in the combat missions of the sect. The only way they could earn contribution points was to engage in the more menial labor tasks. Thus, the two women did much more work than the common female disciple.

For the two of them, every 10 days they were able to listen to one of the teachings and browse through the mortal-step cultivation methods once. As for learning the core inheritances of the Unbroken Cult, that was impossible for them.

Even so, the two of them studied and trained late into the day, discussing and sparring with each other. If they had questions they would ask their senior-apprentice brothers and sisters. Of course, this sort of help wasn't free and also required a small number of contribution points.

Such a way of training seemed extremely troublesome and arduous, but it was actually a much faster cultivation speed than in the lower realms. This was because the heaven and earth origin energy within the Divine Realm was incomparable with that of the lower realms. Moreover, the Sky Spill Continent's planet had been blocked off by Empyrean Primordius so wanting to break into the Divine Transformation realm there was nearly impossible. But in the Divine Realm, although Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan's martial talents weren't particularly good, they still had high chances of breaking into the Divine Transformation realm. Once they did, they would be able to stand out and at least become sect deacons. Their monthly expenses would increase by a tremendous amount and they could also participate in combat missions. For them, this was the only way to find Lin Ming in the future.

"I wonder how Lin Ming is doing in the Ancient Phoenix Clan… with his talent, he should be able to become a core disciple…"

Every time Mu Qianyu remembered Lin Ming, she would worry in her heart. If she hadn't come to the Divine Realm then she would never have imagined just how vast it truly was. Now, she was able to experience its size for herself. Just the Unbroken Cult had over 30 Divine Lord powerhouses, several thousand Divine Transformation masters, and 70,000-80,000 Divine Sea disciples.

And placed within the Good Fortune World, the Unbroken Cult was nothing more than a tiny sect. Even Good Fortune World itself was just one of the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds.

Once one looked at the entire Divine Realm, there were truly more Ninefall masters than there were dogs, with Divine Lord masters everywhere.

Thus even though when Lin Ming was at the Sky Spill Continent and his talent there had defied the will of the heavens, Mu Qianyu was still worried for him now. There were far too many geniuses in the Divine Realm. Lin Ming wouldn't necessarily be able to become an overlord of his own domain as he did in the past. Moreover, Lin Ming entered a much a larger sect so the competition he faced would also be much more brutal and wild. How did Lin Ming's days pass in the Ancient Phoenix Clan? Was he pushed aside by others because of his status as someone who came from the lower realms?

If she and Qin Xingxuan found him, would that give him trouble instead?

This last point was what Mu Qianyu worried about the most.

"Xingxuan, let's not think of anything but training diligently for now. When we truly go to the Ancient Phoenix Clan, we cannot become a burden for Lin Ming."

"Mm." Qin Xingxuan vigorously nodded.

At this time, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan heard the sound of a bell ringing out from the palace behind the medicinal field. This was the convening sign for all outer court disciples who tended the medicinal fields.

“That’s the medicinal field we’re responsible for!” Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan quickly put down their work and ran over. The Unbroken Cult had extremely strict rules. If they were late, they would lose contribution points if their penalty was light. If their penalty was heavy then they would even be confined. No matter what the punishment was, it wasn’t something that Mu Qianyu or Qin Xingxuan could afford.

“Did something happen to the medicinal materials?”

Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan were both disturbed. If there was a problem with the medicinal field then that would be a great responsibility they couldn’t shoulder!

As they rushed to the medicinal field, Mu Qianyu could see that seven or eight female disciples were already standing in the open. They were all outer court disciples. Normally, handling the medicinal field was a chore that mostly female disciples did.

And standing in front of these seven or eight female disciples was a red-clothed woman with phoenix eyes. She was an inner court disciple with a very prominent status and was also the manager of this medicinal field.

As the red-clothed woman saw Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan hastily arrive, her eyebrows twisted together. She rudely said, “Slow hands and slow feet. No wonder the medicinal field is in such a mess!”

“A mess?” Mu Qianyu’s breath caught in her throat and her heart raced. She had thought that there had been some accident with the medicinal field, but as she looked over to the one she was in charge of, she glanced over every strand of spirit grass and didn’t see any major problems with them…

She felt slightly better, but as she glanced at the other female disciples she found that they were all gloomy and silent. It was apparent that they had just been berated.

In order to obtain contribution points, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan were meticulous in their handling of the medicinal field. Otherwise, if they made some mistake and killed or wounded some medicinal plants, their entire month of work would have been in vain.

"There is no need for you to look!" The red-clothed woman coldly coughed, her thin eyebrows rising up in anger, "Do you think that it's fine just because the medicinal plants haven't died? I want the medicinal plants to vibrantly blossom! But looking at the medicinal herbs that all of you have raised, they appear diseased and sick. How could anyone possibly use them!? Today, the Great Elder of Spirit Pill Pavilion along with three other great inner court Elders have to gather 36,000 spirit herbs to help refine a pill. They are attempting to use nine flavor divine grass to refine a Nine Flavor Recoil Pill, a medium-grade heaven-step pill! This is all for Senior-apprentice Brother Yu Youming to wash his marrow so that he can take another step forwards!

"Do you know how important this is? Do you know what a medium-grade heaven-step pill is? Any pill or spirit herb with the 'heaven' in its name must be extraordinary! If you delayed the refining of this pill, then even killing you 100 times over wouldn't be enough to make up for it! I don't care how any of you worked in the past. From this day forth, all of you no longer have free time. All of you have to place your energy into tending the medicinal fields every day! Every medicinal herb must be treated with absolute care!"

"No free time..." Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan glanced at each other, able to see a faint bitter light in the other's eyes. The truth was that a Divine Sea martial artist would be energized enough for the day after meditating for an hour, so they didn't need much time to rest. However, if they didn't have any free time, how would they continue training?

As for the other outer court disciples, they weren't any happier upon hearing this news. To them, a medium-grade heaven-step pill was an extremely distant matter. As for Senior-apprentice Brother Yu Youming's name, that was something that struck them like a bolt of thunder. He was the top direct disciple and the chosen pride of heaven that the sect had spent a great deal of effort to raise. To ordinary outer court disciples, he was simply the same as a divine god.

"The Great Elder of Spirit Pill Pavilion along with three inner court Elders are actually spending such a great price to refine a pill to help Senior-apprentice Brother Yu Youming wash his marrow..." A young female disciple muttered to herself, feeling envy in her heart.

Both of them were Divine Sea disciples, so how could the difference in their fates be so great?

"Humph, there is no need for you to be surprised. I might as well tell you that a grand event that only occurs every four or five thousand years in the Divine Realm is occurring soon, and that is the First Martial Meeting! It will encompass all geniuses of the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds! Senior-apprentice Brother Yu Youming is the most talented disciple of our Unbroken Cult and the only chance we have of gaining glory! If any hitches occur, I absolutely won't forgive the culprit!"

"Divine Realm First Martial Meeting?" Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan said at the same time.

Qin Xingxuan's thoughts stirred. She said to Mu Qianyu, "Big Sister Mu, do you think that Lin Ming might participate also?"

Chapter 1173 – Divine Dream World

Chapter 1173 – Divine Dream World

…

…

…

Mu Qianyu was startled upon hearing Qin Xingxuan's words. Could Lin Ming be entering the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting?

There was really that possibility!

In Mu Qianyu's eyes, with Lin Ming's talent and tenacity, even if the Divine Realm had countless geniuses and Lin Ming was in the giant Ancient Phoenix Clan, he would still gradually bloom into splendor, becoming someone amazing. Then, there would really be a high chance that Lin Ming would participate in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting on behalf of the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

If Lin Ming participated in the First Martial Meeting, would they be able to find him? After all, the Unbroken Cult's Senior-apprentice Brother Yu Youming would also be entering the First Martial Meeting. Although he might be said to be going alone, the truth was that there would be a large retinue of people following him to dominate the scene. For such a grand event the sect would surely send some outer court disciples to handle miscellaneous matters.

"Xingxuan, no matter what, we still have to manage the medicinal field for these next few months. Senior-apprentice Sister Feng is harsh and likes to find problems where there aren't any. If we make any mistakes we will be targeted, and if there is any negligence then we will even be punished miserable! Only by perfectly performing all matters will we have a chance of going to the First Martial Meeting. I fear that no one will want to miss out on this sort of grand occasion. Even if it's just going to perform labor, there will still be many people struggling for those spots!"

"Mm… I understand." Qin Xingxuan nodded.

…………

Time slowly passed. The day of the First Martial Meeting approached nearer and nearer. As for Lin Ming, he stayed in Immemorial Imperial City, still not having heard any news about a trip to the 'Divine Dream World'.

Before this, Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow had hypothesized that this 'Divine Dream World' was a separate space that Empyrean Divine Dream created herself. As for how great this space was, it was difficult to imagine. In any case, it was enough to hold at least 10 quadrillion geniuses.

The truth was that it wasn't strange for an Empyrean-created space to be large enough to hold 10 quadrillion geniuses. But, what Lin Ming thought was strange was just how would all of these geniuses gather at the 'Divine Dream World'?

It had to be known that the distances between the great worlds were incomparably vast. To journey from one great world to another required a spirit ship that could undergo great void shifts through space. Even then, one would have to pass through multiple transmission arrays. These transmission arrays required a massive amount of violet sun stones to activate. If one travelled like this, they would have to spend hundreds of thousands or even millions of violet sun stones. Unless one came from a wealthy background, it was impossible for others to afford this amount of money.

And if Empyrean Divine Dream and Empyrean Vast Universe were organizing this matter themselves, they would have to send out 10 billion spirit ships and create countless transmission arrays in the 'Divine Dream World'. This was naturally even more impossible.

Also, there was only half a month remaining until the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting began. In such a short period of time, it might not be possible for one to travel through space to another great world.

Lin Ming was puzzled. After he trained, he went and inquired about the situation of how many people had registered for the First Martial Meeting. This inquiry left him flabbergasted. Currently, there were still 10 days left until the deadline for the registration arrived. But in just the True Martial Great World itself, there were already 2.2 trillion individuals that had registered. This was over 2 trillion people just in one great world! If all of the participants throughout the entire Divine Realm were added together, it was a simply incalculable number. With so many people competing together, just how would everyone be screened out?

No matter how resourceful or powerful an Empyrean was, it would still be far too difficult to manage such a vast event.

Mo Eversnow said, “I also think this is unbelievable. But… when grandfather was alive, he mentioned several times just how powerful Empyrean Divine Dream and Divine Dream Palace were. Since this First Martial Meeting is under the management of Empyrean Divine Dream, there should be no need for you to worry.”

Lin Ming said, “I also don’t think that Empyrean Divine Dream and Empyrean Vast Universe would manage the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting in a messy manner so that others would think it was a joke. I only think it’s confusing how the competition will be held… however, I was a bit surprised when Miss Mo said that Empyrean Divine Dream could equally compare with Empyrean Primordius… because the Chaos Laws were the most source energy present at the forming of the universe. If Empyrean Primordius managed to perceive the Chaos Grandmist Laws then I feel that these Laws are of the highest rank in existence and his attainments in this aspect already reached the peak. Within his world of will space, there is true grandmist energy. I have no idea what Laws Empyrean Divine Dream comprehended that she is able to compare with Empyrean Primordius…”

Mo Eversnow said, “That is only my guess so I wouldn’t say it’s accurate. As for who is stronger and weaker amongst the Empyreans, I also have no way of knowing…”

As Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow were speaking, in the distant horizon, a brilliant light blazed in the skies. Then, a massive pillar of divine light soared up and passed the clouds, seeming to support the heavens themselves!

Lin Ming was shocked. Looking as far as he could, he estimated that this pillar of light was tens of thousands of miles away. Even so, from this distance this beam of light was still as thick as an arm. If he really arrived at the beam of light, he would have no idea just how wide it was.

Just by looking at the beam of light, Lin Ming could feel his entire body shaking, as if a massive pressure were pushing down on him and making it hard to breathe!

It wasn’t just Lin Ming, but everyone in Immemorial Imperial City, even those at the center and everyone for millions of miles around saw this incomparably massive pillar of light!

This pillar of light made one want to fall to their knees and worship, as if it were a divine being. In front of this pillar of light, even breathing became difficult, leaving everyone panting for breath.

As this beam of light appeared, that boundless and infinite voice he heard at the Sacred Martial Grand Tournament’s arena sounded out once more –

“Empyrean Divine Dream has cast down pillars of Divine Dream Light over all 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm. All participants of the First Martial Meeting must go within 10,000 miles of the nearest Divine Dream Light. There, you will insert your true essence and soul force into the Divine Dream Light. Your bodies will fall into slumber but your consciousness will enter into the greatest dreamland space – the Divine Dream World!

“Half a month from now, the First Martial Meeting will officially begin in the Divine Dream World!

“Besides participants of the First Martial Meeting, no one may enter within 10,000 miles of the Divine Dream Light. If anyone dares to violate this order, then their souls will be sucked up by the Divine Dream Light and they will perish for eternity!”

This grand and boundless voice echoed for a long time throughout the Divine Realm. It was filled with a masculine vigor. If one didn’t guess wrongly then one could sense it was Empyrean Vast Universe’s voice!

This voice repeated itself three times before slowly vanishing. As this voice vanished, Lin Ming finally recovered from his completely shocked stated. He felt a thin layer of sweat covering his entire body. Beside him, he could see some people that were unable to withstand the pressure and were kneeling on the ground.

As he remembered Empyrean Vast Universe’s words, Lin Ming felt all of this to be too unbelievable. Approach the Divine Dream Light and insert his true essence and soul force into it. Then, his body would fall asleep and his consciousness would enter into a dreamland space – the Divine Dream World?

This Divine Dream World wasn’t a true world, but a so-called dream world?

The body of all these geniuses would fall asleep as their minds entered into this dreamland world, and this was also where the First Martial Meeting would be carried out?

This was Empyrean Divine Dream’s ability? Moreover, she had managed to lay down countless Divine Dream Lights in all 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm, having 10 quadrillion geniuses all sleeping at the same time and dreaming the same dream?

This was far too terrifying an ability!

Mo Eversnow sucked in a breath of cold air. She said, “So it’s like this. This is the meaning of the ‘Divine Dream World’. If I’m not wrong, then this is a world created by Empyrean Divine Dream herself and she uses her dream related transcendent divine might to form the foundation of the world Laws within this dreamland – this is her divine dream space. Not only can it hold 10 quadrillion geniuses, but there is no need to gather them all together.

Moreover, by fighting in the dreamland space, there are far less resources required. This is really… this sort of method is really too incredible to believe…"

"Empyrean Divine Dream's transcendent divine might…" Lin Ming whispered. Every Empyrean was an extraordinary individual with heaven-shaking methods of their own. Empyrean Divine Dream's descendant would study the transcendent divine might of Empyrean Divine Dream. Her strength from this alone could be imagined.

Lin Ming wondered just what sort of fighting style she would use…

As Lin Ming thought this, his heart burned with an even greater fighting spirit. This Divine Realm First Martial Meeting was far more magnificent than what he had imagined, and the final results where a complete unknown.

"Let's go and enter that divine dream space. I want to see just what sort of scene is within it…"

……….

It wasn't just Lin Ming, but countless geniuses of Immemorial Imperial City also set out towards that massive Divine Dream Light.

Soon, within Immemorial Imperial City, a river of people converged onto the road towards that giant pillar of light. Some people flew on their own, some flew in groups, some rode on mounts, but gathered together, they were an overwhelming mass of people that blotted out the heavens, as dense as a plague of locusts.

As Lin Ming stepped within 10,000 miles of the Divine Dream Light, he felt the world Laws around him change, as if he had entered a completely separate space and time.

"This is an enchantment." Mo Eversnow said, "There is a force field surrounding the 10,000 mile radius of this Divine Dream Light. I believe that only participants who have recorded their true essence fluctuations are able to enter. Those who try to forcefully break their way in will suffer a fate as Empyrean Vast Universe described. Their souls will be swallowed up by the Divine Dream Light. All of this is to ensure the safety of the participants. Otherwise, if you were to fall unconscious here while your mind was in the divine dream space, then it would be bad if someone tried to do something to your body."

"That should be it." Lin Ming nodded, entering in deeper.

After entering the enchantment, everyone was cautious at the start and prepared against all others. No one dared to pour their true essence and soul force into the Divine Dream Light, lest they fall into a deep slumber and then be looted while they were unconscious.

However, this worry soon evaporated. They realized that once someone made a connection to the Divine Dream Light, they would fall asleep and a force field would surround their body, protecting them.

This force field was similar to the force field that surrounded the 10,000 mile boundary of the Divine Dream Light. It seemed that if someone tried to start a fight within 10,000 miles of the Divine Dream Light then their fate would truly be miserable!

Chapter 1174 – Miraculous Dream Laws

Chapter 1174 – Miraculous Dream Laws

…

…

…

As Lin Ming entered the enchantment world, he began to glance over all of the other participants around him. He discovered that most of them weren't peak talents. In fact, most of the participants were eighth stage Life Destruction Divine Sea martial artists.

This was because Empyrean Divine Dream and Empyrean Vast Universe hadn't laid down any rules stipulating that a participant had to have achieved a ninth stage Life Destruction to participate. As long as one was at a certain age and also at the Divine Sea then they could enter.

However, although there were many Eightfall Divine Sea masters, those that had the confidence to participate in this event were all the most extraordinary of the Eightfall Divine Sea martial artists.

In fact, in a large sect of the Divine Realm, a great portion of the disciples would have an eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation. In just one of the 72 branch palaces of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Phoenix Cry Palace, they were able to choose disciples from a planet with over a billion people. Many Firebird Hall disciples – equal to outer court disciples – had an eighth stage Life Destruction cultivation.

But within eighth stage Life Destruction martial artists, because of various factors, the difference in strength was enormous. The weakest eighth stage Life Destruction martial artists could only be outer court disciples, but the peak geniuses amongst the eighth stage

Life Destruction martial artists could even enter Phoenix Hall and become direct disciples. These people would have a combat strength superior to that of a weak Ninefall genius.

This was just like the ninth stage Life Destruction Lin Ming being able to kill any One Layered Heavens Ninefall martial artist with nothing but a thought. The difference between him and weak Ninefall martial artists couldn't even be described as the difference between clouds and mud.

Of course, no matter how powerful these Eightfall participants were, it was impossible for them to make any significant progress in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. They were also aware of this point, but they still came to experience the wonders and grandness of the First Martial Meeting.

Beside Lin Ming, many people had already entered the divine dream space in advance. Lin Ming also touched his true essence into the massive pillar that was the Divine Dream Light. Then, he felt his own true essence fluctuations being verified by some strange Laws within the Divine Dream Light. After this verification process was over, Lin Ming felt a massive and irresistible pulling force suck him in. His consciousness and his soul were completely pulled into the Divine Dream Light, causing everything around him to turn dim!

When Lin Ming opened his eyes, he discovered that he had arrived in a city.

Giant buildings, great city walls, wide and spacious streets…

This city was…

Lin Ming felt as if he had been struck by lightning. Wasn't this city Immemorial Imperial City!?

Lin Ming had stayed in Immemorial Imperial City long enough that he wouldn't mistake the city walls and buildings for something else. Moreover, this place was near the center of the Imperial City urban district. He could even see the hanging sign of the Imperial City Auction House from here!

What happened? Was there a problem in entering the divine dream space which caused him to be teleported outwards?

Lin Ming was left speechless. But soon, he realized that something wasn’t right. The originally bustling and boisterous crowds of Immemorial Imperial City had disappeared, leaving open streets everywhere. Even the always busy Imperial City Auction House was empty and desolate!

Could this be…

Lin Ming suddenly thought of a possibility. He cast out his senses and as he found what he was looking for, he sucked in a breath of cold air!

Gathered near the Imperial City Auction House were many heroic young elites. And, all of them were participants of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting!

Not just that, but there were constantly people being transmitted here.

In other words, this was not Immemorial Imperial City but the true Divine Dream World!

The appearance of the Divine Dream World was actually the same as Immemorial Imperial City?

…No, that was wrong!

It would be better to say the Divine Dream World was a complete and faithful projection of the real world. This was the only reason why a replica of Immemorial Imperial City would appear here.

Lin Ming quickly realized all of this. If he entered the Divine Dream World near Immemorial Imperial City and saw a projection of Immemorial Imperial City, then if he entered near Carefree Island, wouldn’t he see a projection of Carefree Island!?

Could it be that… the Divine Dream World was a projection of the entire Divine Realm that was cast into a dreamland? If so… then wouldn't the Divine Dream World be as broad and boundless as the Divine Realm?

As Lin Ming realized this, he sucked in a breath of cold air.

Empyrean Divine Dream – just what sort of character was that!

"That's right, I should check my things!"

Lin Ming quickly investigated the Extreme Violet Ring. To his amazement, he discovered that the Phoenix Blood Spear, his pills, cultivation method jade slips, medicinal fields, random items, and everything else was still there.

This included the Magic Cube and the Heretical God Seedling!

His body, Ancient Phoenix blood, dragon marrow blood, dragon bone relics, Eight Inner Hidden Gates, everything was no different from in reality!

It was just that… Mo Eversnow and Fishy had disappeared.

If the Magic Cube were here then why wouldn't Mo Eversnow and Fishy be here? Lin Ming felt his heart tighten with worry. The two of them had been staying in the Magic Cube space. Fishy had gone in there in order to keep her safer and also to keep Mo Eversnow company. And now, even though the Magic Cube was here, the two of them had disappeared.

However, Lin Ming only had a brief moment of panic before figuring everything out. He felt silly for having overreacted. The Magic Cube within him was only a dreamland projection of the true Magic Cube. The true Magic Cube was still safely hidden within his body that was deep in slumber. Mo Eversnow and Fishy were naturally there too.

Lin Ming kept a great number of violet sun stones in the Magic Cube. Although he had spent 7 trillion violet sun stones on a single auction, he still had more than enough for Fishy to live on. If the two of them were in the Magic Cube space they would have absolute safety. The Magic Cube space had its own independent Laws. Whether it was the great barrier blockade that Empyrean Primordius had set up over the Sky Spill Continent or this current barrier that Empyrean Divine Dream had set up around the Divine Dream Light, neither of them were able to stop people within the Magic Cube from entering.

"This is really all too real. Everything is the same as in reality. My strength, my cultivation methods, my body, even my transcendent divine mights have formed a perfect projection here. This is a truly unbelievable supernatural ability!"

Lin Ming sighed. Then, he suddenly heard a loud shout.

"Heavens! Top grade saint artifacts are placed here with no one managing them??

"There are even top grade pills! These are high-grade earth-step pills! What an amazing find!

"Saint artifacts! Pills! This is Immemorial Imperial City's Hundred Treasure Pavilion that specializes in selling all sorts of things. Hahaha, we're rich! I couldn't even pass through the gate of this place before, now I can take anything I want!"

A tall and bearded Eightfall late Divine Sea youth laughed. In the past, not even the Four Layered Heavens Huo Yanguang had a top grade saint artifact. To an Eightfall martial artist, not to mention a top grade saint artifact, even a high-grade saint artifact was a great luxury!

These weapons were treasures they could only dream of obtaining. Even if they sold all of their possessions they still wouldn't be able to afford one!

"Haha, worth it, worth it! I thought that it would be fun to join the First Martial Meeting because I barely qualified, but I never imagined that I would be able to use a top grade saint artifact! Awesome!"

"This one's mine!"

“I’m taking this one!”

At this time, young elites from all sorts of random backgrounds began to loot everything. But then, they suddenly thought of something. Loot the Hundred Treasures Pavilion? If they were going to loot something, they might as well loot the Imperial City Auction House!

In the Imperial City Auction House were spirit artifacts and heaven-step pills!

“Brothers, let’s go to the Imperial City Auction House!”

A group of bandit origin Eightfall Divine Sea powerhouses immediately rushed over to the Imperial City Auction House. Although the Divine Realm was vast, wanting to find 10 quadrillion peak geniuses was actually impossible. Most of those participating were ordinary geniuses. If they were placed within small regions of the Divine Realm, they would surely stand out. But placed within Immemorial Imperial City, they weren’t anything at all. These people were originally like countryside beggars coming to Immemorial Imperial City, and now that they realized they could snatch anything they wanted to, how could they not be ecstatic with joy?

Lin Ming’s mind stirred. He also sped up and moved towards the Imperial City Auction House.

Although he believed that it was impossible for heaven-step pills and spirit artifacts to appear in the Divine Dream World in a situation where they could be casually used, he wasn’t absolutely sure of this. This Divine Dream World was clearly a reflection of the Divine Realm, so it wouldn’t necessarily not have such things. Moreover, the Divine Dream World was completely similar to the real world. These heaven-step pills and spirit artifacts would likely be able to display a similar effect as in the real world!

So he might as well go and take a look. If there really were heaven-step pills and spirit artifacts everywhere, then he had to find a chance to grab some resources for himself to use at this First Martial Meeting.

However, just as Lin Ming walked into the Imperial City Auction House, he felt a huge strength erupt in front of him. He was fine, but several Eightfall Divine Sea powerhouses running in front of him were blown backwards.

"Out of my way!"

An overbearing voice came echoing out. Four middle Divine Sea realm guards swept out the ragtag group of martial artists. For a time, those martial artists complained as they were sent packing.

This difference in strength was not minor at all.

"Four Ninefall Divine Sea martial artists are only guards. Who is their master?" As Lin Ming was thinking, a 15-16 year old-looking youth with bright eyes walked up and casually went through the selection of treasures within the Imperial City Auction House.

This individual was Zhong Wenshu, the one who had competed for the Boundless World Pill with Lin Ming!

This was really enemies bumping into each other on a narrow road. However, this was also within reason. If one truly was able to freely select whatever resources they wanted to, Zhong Wenshu naturally wouldn't miss out on the fat piece of meat that was the Imperial City Auction House.

"Humph, what a load of garbage! I said that there was no such good thing in this world! If I was able to casually take whatever heaven-step pills I wanted to in the Imperial City Auction House then I might as well take seven or eight Boundless Worlds Pills and eat them all up! And after that I would take a transmission array to an Empyrean level Holy Land and snatch their transcendent divine might. If my resources and inheritances were the same as theirs, then an Empyrean disciple wouldn't be anything at all! I would still be able to fight evenly against them!"

Zhong Wenshu boasted. The reason that an Empyrean disciple felt so out of reach was not only because of their talent, but also because the resources and inheritances they enjoyed were incomparable to those of ordinary geniuses.

With an Empyrean level influence's resources, buying an extremely luxurious pill like the Boundless World Pill wasn't difficult at all. As for inheritances, they had transcendent divine mights.

"Haha, Brother Zhong is still brooding over the Boundless World Pill!" With a hearty laugh, a side door was shoved open and two men and a one woman casually walked in. One of them was a red-haired youth, followed behind by a thick and strong man and a charming young woman. They were the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion – Sacred Yueping, Sacred Tianhao, and Sacred Yanran.

"We've already looked over this side. The highest level weapon here is a top grade spirit artifact and there are no pills that surpass the heaven-step. They might be valuable to the disciples of some ordinary families or small sects, but for us they aren't anything at all!" Sacred Yueping slowly said. He had arrived in the divine dream space just a few steps earlier than Zhong Wenshu, thus he had reached the auction house first.

Chapter 1175 – True Martial Holy Land

Chapter 1175 – True Martial Holy Land

…

…

…

"Humph, as if the bunch of you aren't also brooding over the fact that the Boundless World Pill was taken away!" Zhong Wenshu bluntly responded as he heard Sacred Yueping's mocking tone.

At the Imperial City Auction, nearly all of the World King Holy Land disciples had come for the Boundless World Pill, but the end result was that all of them had been completely defeated in their bids. They lost to a mere boy and they weren't even sure what sort of ordinary sect he came from; at best he would have originated from an average Holy Land.

In the end they had no choice but to bid for the following last nine items in the auction. But, none of them had been able to compare to the Boundless World Pill at all. How could they possibly endure such a slight? It had to be said that if it weren't for the winds of the First Martial Meeting pushing everyone to the extremes, then there was no way they would be able to enjoy such an exorbitant treasure like the Boundless World Pill as disciples of ordinary World King Holy Lands.

"You're right if you say I'm bearing a grudge. The Boundless World Pill was obtained by some little bastard who managed to stumble over a great treasure trove of wealth. It is simply wasted on him! Moreover, that little bastard retreated into the training rooms of Imperial City Auction House right after he won the bid and didn't come out until the end. There is nothing we can do about him!"

As Sacred Yueping spoke, he said the last several words with a true essence sound transmission. He naturally wouldn't blatantly say something that implied he was going to murder and steal from someone.

He had already arranged sufficient manpower. After the First Martial Meeting concluded and Lin Ming was eliminated, he would move against him.

Zhong Wenshu demonically grinned. He said with a true essence sound transmission, "Brother Yueping, it seems you've already arranged for some people to deal with Lin Ming, hehe, but the truth is that I have too. At that time, let's see just who'll be able to obtain the treasures on him. However… it might not be just us two that are interested in him!"

After Lin Ming won the bid for the Boundless World Pill, he had retreated into seclusion for all this time. This proved that Lin Ming's background wasn't anything at all. At least, he wasn't from a World King level Holy Land, otherwise he wouldn't do things in such a manner.

In this sort of situation, Lin Ming was also able to bring out 7 trillion violet sun stones to buy a Boundless World Pill. This was proof that he had experienced some lucky chance that defied the will of the heavens. It was the temptation of this lucky chance that drove people to assassinate Lin Ming so that they could divide the loot from his body.

As Zhong Wenshu was speaking to Sacred Yueping, his eyebrows suddenly shot up. He felt a faint disturbance in his heart. He turned around, looking into the crowd.

Far off in that direction, Lin Ming was standing there with his hands crossed behind his back!

And the reason that Zhong Wenshu had suddenly felt something was because Lin Ming's eyes were boring into him.

"Lin Ming!"

Zhong Wenshu had long since learned Lin Ming's name. His eyes turned cold and he sneered, "Good! Very good! I already knew that you would come to participate in the First Martial Meeting, but I never thought you would come here to meet your end so soon!"

Zhong Wenshu revealed a thick killing intent. When Lin Ming was training in Imperial City Auction House's chambers, he naturally couldn't do anything to him. But now, he could crush Lin Ming as he pleased.

"He's already stepped into the Divine Sea!"

Sacred Yanran suddenly said. She was the only woman of Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies. Although she appeared beautiful, there was still an ugly sneer crossing her face. In terms of personality, she was no different from Sacred Yueping or Zhong Wenshu.

With Lin Ming's martial talent, if he were to enter a training zone with an increased time flow, then stepping into the Divine Sea would be easy. But, this also meant that he had eaten the Boundless World Pill!

"Damnit!" Sacred Yueping and Zhong Wenshu's expressions turned gloomy. "Really, this is what they mean by feeding delicacies to dogs and pouring the best wine on the grass. Trash like you is not worthy of the Boundless World Pill! How could I possibly allow you to eat it! Hurry and spit it back out!"

Although he knew that Lin Ming would inevitably take the Boundless World Pill as soon as he obtained it, now that Zhong Wenshu was able to fully confirm that the Boundless World Pill was gone, he was filled with anger, hatred, and unwillingness! If Lin Ming had spent so much wealth on buying the Boundless World Pill and then was killed by him and he was able to obtain the Boundless World Pill without any cost at all, then that would have been perfect!

"Spit? You want me to give my spit to you?" Lin Ming coldly smiled, his hand already tracing the Extreme Violet Ring.

"You are courting death!"

Zhong Wenshu spat out these vicious words. Then, right after, there was a crashing sound as several martial artists surrounded Lin Ming. These were all World King Holy Land disciples. They had joined the First Martial Meeting to act as servants and guards, and many of them were attached to various young elites that were obscenely wealthy. In other words, they were also known as underlings. Although they were only here as servants, Zhong Wenshu and the others still had extremely high standards. For these people to be taken in as guards and servants, they would have to be Ninefall Divine Sea martial artists. If they were placed in an ordinary Holy Land, they would be considered upper ranking core disciples.

As the people around Lin Ming saw this occurring, all of them paled and began to hastily move backwards, lest they be caught up in this brewing disaster.

In that moment, Lin Ming faced over a dozen opponents. All of them were at the Ninefall Divine Sea realm, and there were even World King Holy Land peak geniuses like Zhong Wenshu.

Zhong Wenshu grinned. He looked at Lin Ming as if he were looking at a fish on a chopping board.

“Hahaha, you little garbage, it’s really true when they say that enemies will often cross paths. You can consider it your own bad luck for falling into my hands! It seems that you do not have the good fortune of being able to participate in the First Martial Meeting any longer. Let me send you on your way to the afterlife. I also want to know what happens if you die in this dream space. Will your soul be damaged? Would you be disqualified? Or perhaps you might even just die?

“I’m really looking forward to chopping off your hands and feet and slicing off your nose and ears! I will torture you however I want! I will make sure you suffer for as long as possible. Whichever one of you can make this brat scream out the loudest and in the most miserable way, I will grant you extra rewards!”

Zhong Wenshu commanded. Although he wanted to personally destroy Lin Ming, he didn’t actually recklessly rush in. This was because he wasn’t sure about what the rules in this dreamland space were. Having his underlings attack for him was the best and most foolproof idea. Even if attacking others before the tournament began was in violation of the rules, that would be a punishment that his followers endured instead.

“Yes! Young Master, please rest assured!” As these people heard the order to torture and beat up Lin Ming, all of them were quite happy about it. They were all at the middle or late Divine Sea realm, while Lin Ming was only at the early Divine Sea realm.

As for violating rules before the tournament began, the Empyreans had never mentioned anything, so there likely wouldn’t be a heavy punishment. At most they would lose their qualifications to participate. However, these people hadn’t planned on making any progress here to begin with. They had only come here to help their young master perform some tasks and also deal with all the small fries.

“Humph!” Lin Ming’s eyes turned cold. He never thought that by coming to look for treasures in this auction house, he would bump into these rabid dogs. He didn’t need to wait until the start of the tournament to fight; he could do so now. He had practiced for a long time within the Imperial City Auction House training chamber and had broken through to the Divine Sea and also opened the Gate of Life. His body was now brimming with energy. Having a good fight was just what he wanted!

As for whatever the rules were, since these people were being aggressive towards him and were also the first to attack, then even if the rules forbid it, the punishment wouldn’t be too harsh on him. Otherwise, these rules would simply be too idiotic.

With a flash of red light, the Phoenix Blood Spear appeared!

Meanwhile, the servants of Zhong Wenshu and Sacred Martial Mansion laughed as they threw themselves towards Lin Ming.

But just as they were about to use their true essence to attack Lin Ming, their complexions suddenly changed. They felt the strength within their bodies being rapidly sucked out.

Lin Ming also felt his own strength quickly pass away. Startled, he immediately pulled back his hand.

Pah! Pah!

The dozen plus servants fell onto the floor, completely limp and exhausted as if all the bones had been pulled out from their bodies.

“What?”

The young elites present were all shocked. Zhong Wenshu also frowned before immediately grasping the situation. This must be because of the Divine Dream World’s rules. Before the competition began, no one was able to attack anyone else. At most one could use their aura to oppress others. But, if one truly had killing intent, then all of their strength would be sucked out.

Lin Ming also realized this. It seemed that it was impossible to fight for the time being. This also made sense. With over 10 quadrillion heroic young elites gathering in the Divine Dream World, every gathering point must have millions upon millions of geniuses. These geniuses all had naturally haughty and arrogant dispositions, and fighting because of minor conflicts was far too normal. There would even be the occurrence of large-scale gang battles. If this happened before the First Martial Meeting officially began, then far too many people would be wounded or disabled and it would be impossible to start to the competition.

“Little bastard, consider your luck good!” Sacred Yueping and Zhong Wenshu angrily spat out.

“That’s also what I was thinking.” Lin Ming put away the Phoenix Blood Spear.

“Ho! This little brother, you are far too confident. You are at most a disciple from an ordinary Holy Land and yet you dare to be so rampant. Just wait until the First Martial Meeting truly begins and this big sister here will take very, very good care of you!” Sacred Yanran teased with a cruel and mocking smile.

As Sacred Yueping and the others were angrily speaking, another soft voice came echoing out. “Aren’t these people from Sacred Martial Mansion and Dual Polarity Palace? My my, it sure seems lively here.”

This voice caused everyone to be surprised for a moment before they all turned around. At a corner of the auction house, a young man and woman had suddenly appeared without anyone noticing.

This young man and woman were slender and symmetrical, with skin the color of wheat. There was a strange rune branded between their eyebrows. Looking closely, one could make out that it was a strangely drawn ‘true’ character.

As Zhong Wenshu and the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion saw this rune, all of their expressions changed.

“True Martial Holy Lands!”

Their expressions and words clearly held a deep fear and reverence towards the True Martial Holy Lands.

The True Martial Holy Lands was the true master of the True Martial World. The master of Starbind Bank as well the owner of a sizable portion of Imperial City Auction House’s shares was the True Martial Holy Lands.

As a super influence established by a Great World King, even the normally rampant Zhong Wenshu and the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion had to reign in their arrogance. After all, they were all from ordinary World King influences. In the future, there was a high chance that they wouldn’t have a true World King successor and then devolve into a peak Holy Land.

Just thinking about it, when the Imperial City Auction was being held, not a single one of True Martial Holy Lands’ disciples had appeared. Was it because they weren’t interested in anything at the auction? That likely wasn’t so!

The most likely reason was that the True Martial Holy Lands had accumulated far too much wealth from Starbind Bank as well as the various businesses and properties they controlled. They were simply far too rich. Thus, for the True Martial World King to take out some of the heavenly materials he had stocked up and pass them to certain disciples for this First Martial Meeting was also normal!

Facing this young man and woman, even the proud Sacred Yueping felt a faint dread in his heart.

Lin Ming remained quiet. He had already noticed the very first moment when this man and woman appeared. However, he was still surprised by their speed and methods. Someone from a Great World King background truly couldn't be underestimated.

Chapter 1176 – Change of the Magic Cube

Chapter 1176 – Change of the Magic Cube

…

…

…

True Martial Great World did not have an Empyrean level influence. Thus, the True Martial Holy Lands was the number one top influence of this great world, and those young disciples that came from the True Martial Holy Lands naturally left others feeling a sense of awe.

“Haha, you fellow martial cultivators from the True Martial Holy Lands must find this funny. It’s just some minor grudges.”

“I have heard that… the Boundless World Pill was taken away by some unknown youth with the last name Lin… so it was you…” The wheat-colored youth from the True Martial Holy Lands said as he smiled at Lin Ming. His every action and movement seemed to embody nobility, as if he were a prince. This sort of nobility was something that one was naturally born with.

Lin Ming remained quiet. Then, the wheat-colored youth slowly said, “Ancient Phoenix Clan’s… Lin Ming, if I’m not wrong.”

Lin Ming was surprised as this youth called out his background. In these past days, many people had tried to investigate and look up his background to no avail. The Divine Realm was simply too broad; wanting to investigate someone was easier said than done, even if he came from a Holy Land to begin with.

It was nearly impossible to use his name to search too. This was because in the Divine Realm there were far too many people that shared similar names.

It was even impossible to investigate someone using their appearance. This was because even in a population of 10 quadrillion geniuses, too many of them would appear similar. If this was expanded to the entire Divine Realm, the magnitude of such an investigation would be unimaginable.

“You… obtained my information from the First Martial Meeting?” Lin Ming asked, tacitly acknowledging his own background. Since he was participating in the First Martial Meeting, he had already written down his name and background when he registered.

The young woman chuckled and pulled the wheat-skinned man towards her. She said in a dulcet tone, “Information pertaining to participants of the First Martial Meeting can be looked up by the public as soon as the tournament starts. Before that, even our Great World King level Holy Land cannot look through it. The reason we know of you is because our True Martial Holy Lands collects information on all the rising geniuses from various Holy Lands. Although the geniuses of ordinary Holy Lands aren’t any threat to us, having an understanding of them is still good, thus we were able to find you.”

As the woman spoke, all of the young elites were startled. It had to be known that there were simply far too many Holy Land level influences in the Divine Realm and they were all separated by extreme distances. If one wanted to keep tabs on these Holy Lands, then not to mention anything else, but the cost of transmitting information from all these places was simply overwhelming, leaving one flabbergasted at the thought. To transmit information between great worlds required a massive number of violet sun stones. If the True Martial Holy Lands possessed information on the geniuses from other Holy Lands, it was likely they had established an intelligence network. The costs to maintain this intelligence network every year must be staggering.

“This brat really is from an ordinary Holy Land. Good, we don’t have to hold back anymore.” Zhong Wenshu sneered. Although the Ancient Phoenix Clan was a peak existence amongst the ordinary Holy Lands, it was still far from being comparable to a World King

Holy Land. This was because the difference in strength between a Holy Lord and a World King was simply too great. If an ordinary Holy Land suffered some injustice from a World King level Holy Land, it would be nearly impossible to ask for justice.

“Hehe, this First Martial Meeting is a place where the peak disciples of World King Holy Lands and Empyrean descendants are all competing for supremacy. The Empyrean descendants will likely take the top five. As for the other positions, those will be grabbed by the peak geniuses of World King level Holy Lands. The disciples of ordinary Holy Lands, they are nothing more than stepping stones for others! As for the disciples of eighth-grade sects and also those wandering martial artists, all of them are cannon fodder!”

Sacred Yueping arrogantly said. Most of the young disciples present came from small sects and martial families. Let alone an eighth-grade sect, some of them weren’t even from seventh-grade sects. As they heard Sacred Yueping’s words, all of them grimaced.

“Your mouth is quite fierce. Do you really think that you World King Holy Land disciples are invincible in this world? You are looking down on this world’s heroes too much! Let me tell you all that there are many masters amongst the common folk. They are people that have experienced lucky chances that defy all common sense, lucky chances that you would never be able to imagine. There is no need for you to spout such ridiculous boastful talk!”

A short youth who clearly came from a wandering background said. There were many wandering geniuses that stumbled into great lucky chances and were also very arrogant. Even when facing a World King level influence, they still wouldn’t retreat. This short youth was clearly a person who had experienced a massive lucky chance.

“Nothing but a frog in a well, a true idiot!” Zhong Wenshu sneered. He reached out his hand and his body exploded with popping sounds. His aura suddenly erupted. In that instant, it was like he had become a giant ancient beast, causing everyone around him to shudder.

All the young elites present felt as if their neck had been held down by the vicious beast. Their entire body dripped with sweat.

Then, with a faint sound, the short youth stuffily coughed as he was sent flying backwards, crashing into a wall.

“How is this possible!?”

The young elites from the small sects were shocked. Wasn’t fighting disallowed before the competition began?

The short youth wasn’t injured. He climbed back up to his feet, embarrassed and pale. His eyes were filled with incredulity as he glared at Zhong Wenshu. Just what had happened here? Was that not an attack?

“It’s aura!”

Someone in the crowd suddenly shouted out. Before, when the ragtag mob of martial artists first entered the auction house, they were swept out by the aura of four Ninefall martial artist guards. This dreamland space forbade true life or death battle and also killing intent. However, it didn’t stop one’s aura.

Zhong Wenshu had clearly discovered this point, thus he used this method without reserve. This was the reason why the short youth was sent flying backwards from his aura alone.

Those that dared to speak up here clearly had confidence in themselves, and this confidence should have stemmed from some considerable lucky chance. Even so, facing Zhong Wenshu, none of them were able to withstand him.

This sent a chill down the spines of many young elites present. They were originally brimming with confidence and had dashing and glorious dreams as they thought of joining the First Martial Meeting. They wanted to use the geniuses from the large sects as stepping stones on their martial path. It had to be said that most of these people had experienced some sort of fortuitous event in their lives, and many of them believed that they had the life of an emperor. They didn’t think that they were worse than any of these World King Holy Land disciples, but now that they saw Zhong Wenshu’s tremendous strength with their own eyes, all of the confidence they had begun to fade away. A peak genius of the Divine Realm was far stronger than they had imagined!

Zhong Wenshu sneered with disdain and no longer bothered with the short youth. He turned to Lin Ming and faintly smiled, licking his lips as he said, “You are a slightly stronger idiot. I will wait for you. I really can’t wait for the competition to begin!”

“I also cannot wait.” Lin Ming smiled. As this smile fell into the eyes of all present, it caused their hearts to skip a beat.

This brat, how could he say such brave words even after seeing how formidable Zhong Wenshu was?

Was he really powerful? Or was he just faking it?

Leaving these people to discuss amongst themselves, Lin Ming left the auction house and went to find a temporary dwelling of his own. In Immemorial Imperial City, there were simply far too many empty houses. Lin Ming took out some simple array formations from his spatial ring and laid down arrays around his dwelling. In a situation where one couldn’t use true essence offensively, a simple array formation would be able to stop any peak genius from entering, because it was impossible to break through such a defensive array with just their aura.

With a month remaining, Lin Ming wouldn’t waste this time. Instead, he chose to cultivate here.

What he very much wanted to know was if this dreamland world was the same as the real world, would improvements of his cultivation here be reflected in his own true body?

Lin Ming thought. Like this, he began to train. He sat down on a stone bed, closed his eyes, and had his mind enter into the ethereal martial intent state. Everything around him turned lucid.

This dreamland space contained complete Laws that Empyrean Divine Dream had established herself. These Laws held endless mysteries and were also independent from the Laws of the Divine Realm. Cultivating in here might have different results from cultivating outside.

Lin Ming didn't start senselessly cultivating without direction. First, he tried to analyze the dreamland Laws. Of course, with his current ability, it was impossible for him to perceive the mysteries of this dreamland world's laws. What he wanted to find out was which one of his cultivation methods was best suited to this dreamland space and which one would be the fastest.

First was the Ancient Phoenix Code, Celestial Tyrant Manual, Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians, and even the Great Desolate Halberd Art. As he experimented with these one at a time, the final results weren't too poor.

Then, Lin Ming moved onto the two transcendent divine mights: the Heretical God Force and the Heavenly Demon martial intent!

These two transcendent divine mights were also unable to reveal any good effects.

Although these two transcendent divine mights were on the same rank as Empyrean Divine Dream's dreamland Laws, the degree to which he was proficient in them was naturally inferior to Empyrean Divine Dream.

A transcendent divine might was the total accumulated wisdom and knowledge of an Empyrean level powerhouse. If one wanted to practice it, it naturally wasn't simple. To reach the peak level in a transcendent divine might was extremely difficult.

After cultivating the Heretical God Force for such a long time, Lin Ming had only been able to breed a Heretical God Seedling. Along the way, he had experienced many lucky chances and had absorbed a massive amount of the power of thunder and fire. Even thunder and fire heavenly tribulation had been absorbed by him in order to reach his current achievements.

As for Lin Ming's Heavenly Demon martial intent, that was only the tip of the iceberg that was the true Primordius martial intent.

Because of this, Lin Ming's transcendent divine mights were equally suppressed by the dreamland Laws.

"Even transcendent divine mights don't work… I don't have any stronger cultivation methods…" Lin Ming mumbled to himself. Then, his mind suddenly stirred. In his dantian, he could feel the Magic Cube faintly trembling!

"Mm?"

Lin Ming was surprised – the Magic Cube!

Why would the Magic Cube have energy vibrations? Up until now, Lin Ming still hadn't been able to activate the power of the Magic Cube on his own. In the past, when Mo Eversnow had used the Magic Cube, she had the strength of a half-step World King!

As Lin Ming investigated his body, he discovered that there were slight distortions in the dreamland space around the Magic Cube. Glimmers of crystalline strands of light appeared, constantly moving around the surface of the Magic Cube, like rainbows that blurred fantasy and reality.

These lines of light were unpredictable and gorgeous, as if they contained endless mysteries.

"Strange. Why would a change occur in the Magic Cube here? Isn't it still resting within my sleeping body? Or, is this dreamland space so perfect and complete that it can even form a true projection of a divine object like the Magic Cube?"

As Lin Ming was thinking, he soon figured out the situation. His soul could be said to be in the dreamland space, but the truth was that his soul was still within his sleeping body. Since the Magic Cube was in his body, they could definitely connect to each other.

Moreover, the phenomena that appeared during his Ninefall had included the Demon Bead, Purple Card, and Magic Cube. They were divine tools that respectively involved ‘essence, energy, and the divine’. As for the Magic Cube, that was a supreme instrument that represented the ‘divine’, in other words, the soul. As for the Divine Dream World that Empyrean Divine Dream created, that was a world formed from the foundation of the divine soul. It was clearly unable to keep out the Magic Cube, because the Magic Cube was the highest ancestor of all soul-related phenomena in this world.

Chapter 1177 – Divine Dream Law

Chapter 1177 – Divine Dream Law

…

…

…

After understanding this, Lin Ming began to carefully observe the Magic Cube.

The seven-colored lights around the Magic Cube became increasingly brilliant, changing an infinite number of times between every breath of time. They were like a beautiful dream, ever-changing and ephemeral.

"These lines are…" Lin Ming's mind suddenly shook. He recalled the mystical lines that were engraved into the chaos stones; these two types of lines actually shared a great number of similarities!

In truth, these lines represented the various paths that the source energy of the universe travelled in. In other words, if one wished to look at these in another way, they would be called Laws!

As Lin Ming realized this, he sucked in a breath of cold air.

"The seven-colored lines represent the Divine Dream Law that Empyrean Divine Dream established!"

Why were the chaos stones so precious? It was because they had the source Laws carved into them at the very forming of the universe. If one meditated and perceived them, that was equal to perceiving the Laws of the universe. Usually, those universe Laws had already fused into stars, space, time, and all living beings everywhere. Wanting to filter out those

Laws and perceive them was easier said than done. One needed top cultivation methods and also an incredibly high level of perception.

And now, the Laws of this dreamland space were actually decomposed by the Magic Cube! Lin Ming's transcendent divine mights had been unable to even twist the Laws of the divine dream space, but the Magic Cube had easily broken them down as if it weren't difficult at all.

"This is truly a divine instrument of the soul. Even the Laws established by an Empyrean were easily solved!"

Lin Ming looked at these fantastical lines and felt incomparably excited. In truth, these lines were simple to construct. But as they moved, they might spin, they might cross, or they might even coil around, forming countless complex diagrams and images, all of them containing a multitude of mysteries.

This sort of union between simplicity and complexity revealed a harmonic beauty at every turn, leaving one yearning for more.

"If I'm able to perceive these things, will I be able to glance into the secret of the Divine Dream Law?" Lin Ming suddenly became excited as he realized this.

What was the Divine Dream Law? It was a transcendent divine might!

Moreover, they weren't even an ordinary transcendent divine might!

This was the total lifetime wisdom and knowledge of Empyrean Divine Dream. It was extremely likely that it was… a transcendent divine might on the same level as the Primordius martial intent created by Empyrean Primordius!

Without the personal teaching of an Empyrean or a jade slip that had the Divine Dream Law recorded within, one wouldn't be able to perceive anything within the divine dream space. But now, what Lin Ming saw was the very fundamental essence of the Divine Dream World's source Laws. This was undoubtedly a great lucky chance for him.

Lin Ming’s eyes shone as he thought of this, his vision turning increasingly fiery as he looked at these mysterious lines.

Perhaps not even Empyrean Divine Dream’s descendant would be able to obtain such an opportunity. They would have to arduously perceive with diligence, constantly comprehending and studying in order to learn Empyrean Divine Dream’s transcendent divine art.

Of course, Empyrean Divine Dream’s descendant had the complete transcendent divine might. This was not something that Lin Ming could compare with.

“If I can obtain a top 10 result in this Divine Realm First Martial Meeting and gain the opportunity to look over a complete transcendent divine might once, would I have the chance to… choose Empyrean Divine Dream’s transcendent divine might?”

As Lin Ming thought of this, he shook his head. The likelihood of that happening wasn’t too high. According to what the public knew, the top 10 of the First Martial Meeting would be able to go to Empyrean Vast Universe’s Divine Palace and receive the guidance of Empyrean Vast Universe’s chief disciple. And, the transcendent divine might there would likely be the inheritance of Vast Universe Divine Palace.

For the top 10 to receive a chance to look at a transcendent divine might was already a generous reward. Asking for more was too unrealistic. And since Divine Dream Palace was so mysterious, it was unlikely they would share their inheritance so easily.

Lin Ming sighed with some regret. Since he wouldn’t have the chance to learn, he had to take advantage of the opportunities in front of him and perceive as much as he could! Although perceiving the entire transcendent divine might was the talk of an idiot, being able to comprehend some of the Divine Dream Law wasn’t difficult at all.

The Divine Dream Law was the essence of Empyrean Divine Dream’s accumulated knowledge!

Lin Ming sat down and sank his energy into his body’s minor dimension. He entered the ethereal martial intent state and began to train.

After perfectly opening the Gate of Opening, Lin Ming’s perception had become top class. He wasn’t any much worse than the top geniuses of the Divine Realm!

Even so, although the Magic Cube had already broken down the Divine Dream Law, wanting to understand their mysteries was extremely difficult.

“How mysterious; it is like a new world, a new domain, a completely different Law that is separate from the Divine Realm. When I withstood the baptism of the Heavenly Dao Laws from my Ninefall, there wasn’t the least bit of anything related to the Divine Dream Law!”

Although the Divine Dream Law had the word ‘dream’ within it, it was fundamentally different from things like ghosts and illusions. The Divine Dream Law was the totality of Empyrean Divine Dream’s learning. She had perceived another world and constructed the system of Laws here.

As Lin Ming was lost in meditation, the colored lights around the Magic Cube began to move more and more and also quicker and quicker.

Within the Divine Realm, when the Law lines interacted on the chaos stones, they were a dark gray. Some were heavy, some were simple, and some where faint. There were even places where the lines had broken or were twisted around.

But the Divine Dream Law lines were like an amalgamation of color, mixing together in a dreamlike state. The lines were lively and wonderful as if they had a life of their own. They constantly transformed, making it impossible to predict them.

Thinking about it some more, the lines on the chaos stones could be called a manifestation of grandmist energy.

But the lines of the Divine Dream Law seemed as whimsical and bewitching as a daydream of multi-colored lights.

Lin Ming was soon lost in the charm of these Laws. Training continued without a sense of time. In what seemed like a moment, half a month had already passed.

After half a month, the day had come for the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting to officially start. As for the cut off for registering, that had already been a month ago. Nearly every young heroic elite that had signed up had entered the Divine Dream World by now!

Everyone was ready!

On this day, within the Divine Realm's 300 great worlds, all the residents of every great city, the disciples of every large sect, martial arts masters, hidden supreme experts, everyone gathered at the location of this grand tournament, all of them waiting for the First Martial Meeting to officially begin.

These people were masters of participants, relatives, friends, fellow apprentices, acquaintances, and so on.

"It's beginning! It's about to begin!"

In one of Crimson Light World's tournament locations, Huo Violentstone stood before the massive pillar of divine light. The most outstanding young elites of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, including Yan Littlemoon and Xiao Ping, were embezzled within that divine dreamland light.

"Lin Ming should also have joined in on the First Martial Meeting. I wonder just where he is…" Huo Violentstone whispered to himself. At this time, the massive pillar of divine light suddenly converged together, forming a giant ball of light that was over 10,000 miles wide. Every single participant in that location was wrapped up in this ball of light.

And at the same time, in the skies above the 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm, a giant golden scroll appeared.

Just the width of this scroll was 400,000-500,000 miles!

This looked like a universe map that seemed to contain the heavens and earth. The scroll slowly unraveled.

Just from looking at this scroll, everyone felt a massive pressure shroud over them, as if they were facing the glory of the heavens.

“Hurry and look! There are words on the scroll!” Someone shouted. Everyone looked up to see that on the scroll, there were golden letters with names written among them.

And listed after these names were their sect or master and age. It was clear that these were the participants of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting.

The scroll continued to unravel, becoming longer and longer and filling with more and more names. First were the disciples that came from a sect, and then there were also many disciples that had supreme elders as their masters. Besides having their master’s name behind their own, they had no sect listed since they were wandering martial artists. In other words, it was blank.

The scroll continued to fall down at an ever faster pace. Finally, it stretched to a length of several million miles!

500,000 miles wide, several million miles long, this scroll was visible from nearly any point of a major world’s mainland. As long as one looked up they could see this scroll, or at least the light emitting from it.

And as one approached within 100 miles of this scroll, they could see countless numerous lines written on the scroll. If one approached, they could see that these names were listed in a three foot square. The letters were indeed extremely large.

“It isn’t just our Crimson Light World. I can also make out some other names. For instance, there are some people from the Sun Glory Holy Land. That is a Holy Land located at Atlas World.” A disciple of the Ancient Phoenix Clan said.

“That’s right, in the 3000 great worlds and 10 quadrillion geniuses, every single one of their names is written on that scroll! The amount of information on that scroll is terrifying. This is truly the work of an Empyrean!” Huo Violentstone narrowed his eyes as he looked up. He estimated that since this scroll appeared in his great world, it should also appear at every other great world in the Divine Realm!

On each scroll, there were at least 100 quadrillion characters. If one didn’t use supernatural powers beyond imagination to write this down, then it was impossible to finish writing all of these names even in 100,000 years!

………

At this time, at an unknown small world of the Divine Realm, on a desolate tiny planet that seemed to lack life, an old man looked up into the stars. He was lost in thought, looking like a plank of wood stuck in the ground.

After a long time, he began to mutter, “The Divine Dream Law has finally projected the official proclamation… Divine Dream, you chose to have the First Martial Meeting take place in the Divine Dream World and also gather 10 quadrillion geniuses to do so, not even forgetting those wandering martial artists. You even used the Divine Dream Law to outline such a compelling announcement. To use so much effort to do all of this, is it because you have a faint premonition that the great calamity is approaching…?”

The old man said as he leaned on his walking stick. His back was curved with age. He seemed like a kind elderly old man in the last years of his life.

“This era is already yours. You should have a good idea of what it is you are doing…” The old man said, as if he were talking to Empyrean Divine Dream herself and also to himself. As he spoke to here, he violently coughed. His hair was withered, like dry weeds in summer. And his eyes were depressed deep into their sockets. His skin was gray and mottled and even his clothing was dirty, sending out a faint stench.

This was the symbol of the five fadings of death.

When an ordinary person died, they would do so from the prime of their life, slowly aging as their fires of life weakened. Finally, their life would come to an end and they would die. This process might occupy a third of their lifespan.

But for a top supreme elder of the Divine Realm, if they were able to live for 10 million years, they would be glowing with vitality for 9.99 million of those years. Only at the final stages of their death would they experience the five fadings of death. These five fadings were: soiled clothes, sweat pouring from armpits, withering of the crown, stench of the body, loss of awareness.

If one experienced the five fadings of death, that meant their fires of life were rapidly waning and the end of their life was soon approaching.

"The passing of time... is truly a terrifying opponent, invincible and unstoppable. Since ancient times, there once appeared someone that managed to escape the erosion of time, but his fate also turned against him... in the end, everyone loses..."

The old man sighed, then turned around, stepping back into his simple cabin.

Chapter 1178 – The Slaughter Begins

Chapter 1178 – The Slaughter Begins

…

…

…

As the Divine Dream Light formed an enchantment that sent everyone to the divine dream space, and as a gold scroll blocked the endless blue skies, throughout the entire Divine Realm and throughout the entire Divine Dream World, the boundless and great voice of Empyrean Vast Universe echoed once more. It resounded like a great bell, ringing like divine drums, reverberating between the heavens and the earth, stirring the hearts of all.

"To the 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm, the First Martial Meeting shall now commence!"

"It's starting, it's finally starting!" When the audience throughout the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds heard this voice, all of them were filled with excitement. However, within the Divine Dream World, all of the participants felt their nerves tighten. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that this First Martial Meeting would be one of the most important events of their lives!

Lin Ming also heard this voice. He shook his head in regret. "It has finally begun. My comprehension of the Divine Dream Law has just started and is still improving. If I could have a few more months then that would be great!"

As the other participants were intensely preparing for this moment, Lin Ming was actually trying to unravel Empyrean Divine Dream's transcendent divine might. If this was said out loud, anyone’s jaw would drop. What others would find impossibly difficult to do was actually slowly being understood by Lin Ming.

“Now, I shall announce the rules!” Empyrean Vast Universe’s voice rang out once again, cracking upon everyone’s eardrums.

“All participants, you shall experience absolute safety in the Divine Dream World. But, once you leave the city, you will encounter… nightmares! These nightmares are condensed from the energy of the Divine Dream World, and they come in all sorts of macabre and strange forms. Some more humanoid, some more like ancient beasts, and some are even energy life forms. They can use Laws, they can control energy, and there are even creatures that are as intelligent as humans. Slay them, and you will gain merit points. Finally, these merit points will be used to decide your results and rank! Three months from now, the first round of eliminations will begin. The elimination rate will be… 99%! In every great world, only those that possess the top 1% of merit points will be able to pass. Six months later, from the 1% of participants that have passed, the second round of eliminations will begin. The elimination rate is 99.9%! In every great world, only one out of every 100,000 of the starting participants shall remain! Nine months later, the third round of eliminations will begin. Of the remaining participants, 99.99% of them shall be eliminated! In every great world, only one out of every billion original participants shall remain!”

As this strong and vibrant voice announced the rules, all of the young elites sucked in a breath of cold air. This rate of elimination was far too abnormal!

Three rounds of elimination, from 1% to .1% to .01%, finally only one in a billion participants would be chosen!

This was what a true cruel and brutal competition was!

Lin Ming began to deeply feel how terrifying just the first round of the First Martial Meeting was. But, this was also normal. In the entire Divine Realm, there were 10-20 quadrillion participants. With such a massive base number, then even if only one out of every billion people were chosen, there would still be over 10 million remaining!

That was still a terrifying number of participants.

“Only an intense and brutal competition is interesting.”

Lin Ming whispered to himself. Empyrean Divine Dream’s voice sounded out once more, “In the city there are various weapons, medicines, violet sun crystals, and all other kinds of treasures that can be freely used to restore your energy lost in battle. If you kill nightmares, you can also absorb the energy within them, or even directly obtain weapons and supplies from a nightmare’s body.

“At the same time, if the nightmares kill participants, they shall evolve and become stronger and stronger. The merit points of these nightmares will also become higher!

“In addition, as long as you leave the city, participants may hunt and kill each other!

“If you kill someone you may obtain 60% of the dreamland treasures on their body as well as 0 to 60% of their merit points! After dying, you will be restored after one day and retain 40% of your dreamland treasures and merit points. The number of chances to return to the dreamland battlefield is unlimited.”

At these words, all of the participants were shocked. Participants could hunt and kill other participants! That meant that as soon as one left the safety of the city, not only would they have to face the threat from the nightmares but they would also have to face the threat from other participants. And, the threat from other participants was probably the most important factor!

After all, if one killed a nightmare they would only be able to obtain the merit points from that nightmare. But, if one killed another participant, they would be able to obtain at much as 60% of the merit points they had accumulated. This number would be much higher than just killing nightmares!

However, why was it from 0 to 60%? Was it not a fixed number? Did the proportion of merit points that one would obtain depend on luck?

This was a question that many participants were wondering.

Lin Ming faintly frowned. This sort of rule would benefit those who brought along other participants to the First Martial Meeting. For instance, Zhong Wenshu and his groupies.

He could let his underlings kill the nightmares and then their points would belong to him. Like this, one could accumulate merit points at a ridiculous rate.

Zhong Wenshu was a disciple of an ordinary World King Holy Land, so he didn't have many underlings and they weren't too strong either. But, there were definitely individuals in the First Martial Meeting that would have dozens or even a hundred subordinates. The speed at which they killed nightmares would be quite considerable too!

In addition, there would be some extremely wealthy individuals that could use money to buy over some poorer wandering martial artists. Originally, at least half the martial artists here had come to participate in the fun. If these people were asked, they could easily be won over with the promise of several hundred violet sun stones.

Once this began to happen, the competition itself would lose all significance.

As Lin Ming was thinking, Empyrean Vast Universe continued to speak, "Upon killing another participant, the merit points and treasures you gain will depend on the difference in merit points between the killer and the slain. If the killer has fewer merit points, then they will obtain the full 60%. If the killer has more merit points, then the merit points they receive will be reduced by half if they have two times the merit points of the slain, and continue to be reduced by half beyond that! And after being killed, regardless of what your merit points were, you will lose 60% of your merit points and dreamland treasures!"

"I see..." Lin Ming was suddenly aware. Such a rule was also quite severe. If one's merit point total was three times higher then they would only be able to obtain 15% of the merit points from whoever they killed. If their merit points were four times higher, this would drop to 7.5%. As for having merit points that were five times or 10 times higher than someone, killing them would be negligible.

If one had merit points several times higher than someone, killing them would give only a few percent of their measly merit points. In that case, going out and killing a few nightmare beasts might be a better use of time instead.

Thus, even if someone brought in many subordinates, these underlings also wouldn't be useful in gathering points. This was because, generally speaking, the strength of these underlings was far weaker than their master and their merit points would soon be far outpaced by their master's. Even if their master was killing them, the amount of merit points gained wouldn't matter.

Moreover, once these underlings were killed, they would lose a fixed 60% of their own merit points no matter what their master gained. If these underlings died one or two times, they would soon be eliminated in the first round. If they were forced to leave like this, the role they would play would be zero.

This was an extremely fair killing field!

The result would all depend on one's own strength!

"How interesting!" Sacred Yueping licked his lips. With his proud and arrogant nature, he hadn't been planning on using such a cheating method to begin with.

"Hehe, then, grudges will be finished and hatred resolved. The feeling of controlling the life and death of others in your palm is truly tantalizing!" Zhong Wenshu excitedly smiled. Although he couldn't fight in Immemorial City, everyone he found displeasing to the eyes could be dealt with outside!

"Now, the first round of the First Martial Meeting officially begins! The first eliminations will begin in three months!"

As Empyrean Vast Universe's voice spoke to here, it completely disappeared. At the same time, at an extremely great distance from Immemorial Imperial City, an earth-shaking roar flooded outwards without end, like the roars of countless ancient giant beasts.

“It’s the nightmares!”

“Haha, brothers, what are we waiting for! Let’s go in and happily kill them!”

A crowd of Eightfall Divine Sea participants enthusiastically cheered. Each of these people appeared to be a vicious and savage individual. In fact, their previous job was consistent with their looks. They were a group of interstellar pirates that specifically murdered and robbed martial artists that were making long journeys across the stars. For them to work as robbers at only the late Divine Sea, this was proof that they had some ability. This group of pirates naturally only allowed the most extraordinary of individuals to join their group. By working together, as long as their target didn’t surpass the Divine Transformation realm, then it was simply impossible to escape. Thus, they joined the First Martial Meeting in order to test out their skills and try to make a claim to fame.

“Haha, what boss said is right! We just obtained some top grade saint artifacts and now I really want to try out this saber! Really, as soon as I wanted to sleep someone sent me a pillow!”

“Good, then let us brothers compete and see just who can kill the most!”

The crowd of interstellar pirates took various kinds of weapons and rushed out of the city. These weapons were all top grade saint artifacts taken from the weapon shops around Immemorial Imperial City. To these pirates, these were rare and valuable treasures.

This group of pirates mingled in with the many other participants, rushing out of the city like a swarm of locusts.

“I’ve found it! That is a nightmare beast! Ah, I’ve been frustrated for too long!” A pirate pointed towards a crowd of dark creatures in a canyon. They looked to be some sort of goat-like creature. Their aura was weak and they didn’t seem to pose any threat at all.

“Those should be low level nightmare beasts, good for a starting snack. Brothers, let’s kill them and then go kill some high level nightmare beasts!”

At the boss’ orders, the other pirates all hurtled forwards.

But at this moment, those dozen plus goat-like nightmare beasts seemed to discover the pirates. Their hooves bent and struck out, suddenly causing the rock beneath them to explode. The goats turned into black beams of lights that rushed out at an unbelievable speed, crashing into the pirates!

“Ahhhh!”

On the scene, there were seven or eight pirates that were broken apart by the collision, their flesh and blood flying through the air!

“What!?”

The few surviving pirates were left bewildered. How could these goats be so powerful!?

“Everyone be careful! Form the array!” The boss wanted to gather his remaining brothers in a bid to turn this hopeless situation into a victory, but at this time another bunch of miserable cries echoed in the skies. Another round of attacks occurred and the rest of the boss’ little brothers all instantly died!

Then, the black goats all rushed towards the pirate boss!

The pirate boss was utterly horrified.

“What the fuck situation is this…”

With these last few words, the pirate boss was torn apart by a black light. His body was torn apart as he turned into a mass of pure soul energy that flew back towards Immemorial Imperial City to be reborn.

As for these goat-like nightmare beasts, after killing the pirates, their bodies began to emit crackling popping sounds. Bone spikes began to appear over their bodies, their eyes turned bright red, and their auras deepened. They were evolving.

This same situation was happening in places all over. The great strength of these nightmare beasts has surpassed everyone's imaginations!

Chapter 1179 – Merit Points

Chapter 1179 – Merit Points

…

…

…

“Mm? The souls of many people are flying back…”

As Lin Ming sat in meditation, he didn’t even need to open his eyes to feel the soul energy that represented martial artists flying back to the city. This was the result of having perceived the Laws of the Divine Dream World these past days. Otherwise, as a common participant, there was no way he could see the trajectories of these souls.

“Many people have died. It seems these nightmare beasts aren’t easy to deal with…”

Lin Ming wasn’t surprised. This Divine Realm First Martial Meeting was specifically aimed at the peak geniuses of the Divine Realm. Those who couldn’t even reach Ninefall were doomed to be eliminated at the end of the first round.

Although this Divine Realm First Martial Meeting involved over 10 quadrillion individuals, it was actually extremely fair. There would be no case in which a powerhouse would be eliminated because they managed to get themselves thrust into a death group. There also wouldn’t be any weaklings that managed to pass because of some heaven-defying form of luck.

Occurrences of fraud wouldn’t occur either. Whether one was a peak genius of a World King Holy Land or a common wandering martial artist, no matter which of the 3000 great worlds they came from, everyone started at the same line. Those with strength would inevitably pass through this qualification round.

This also caused Lin Ming to sigh at Empyrean Divine Dream's supernatural powers. He thought that gathering 10 quadrillion geniuses in any location of the Divine Realm was an impossible task to begin with, but Empyrean Divine Dream had done so with absolute ease. Moreover, the method of competition she devised was more than fair!

"The nightmare beasts that kill martial artists will evolve, and the merit points obtained from killing them will be higher. At the same time, Ninefall martial artist that can kill nightmare beasts will accumulate more and more merit points. In other words, the efficiency of doing anything at the start will be very low. The true gap will form after one or two months."

Lin Ming realized this and wasn't anxious. These three months of time were very precious to him. Being able to perceive Empyrean Divine Dream's transcendent divine might was much more important than whatever result he obtained. As for merit points or whatever else he needed, he was satisfied as long as he crossed the elimination hurdle.

Near Immemorial Imperial City, battlefields of slaughter were occurring everywhere. It wasn't just Eightfall Divine Sea participants, but even Ninefall Divine Sea participants saw their lives equally threatened.

There were many nightmare beasts that became disgustingly fierce after evolving just once!

In order to survive, many participants had no choice but to join forces and kill nightmare beasts together. But in doing this, the number of merit points they received dwindled as they were divided amongst everyone else. An ordinary nightmare beast gave just over 10 merit points. If 4-5 people joined together, everyone could only obtain a sad 2 or so merit points. Without needing to be told, these people knew they would be inevitably eliminated after three months passed.

"This is too difficult! How can anyone deal with such freakish nightmare beasts!" several participants cursed out as they finally killed a nightmare beast with grueling effort.

“This sort of test is not something a normal person can handle! Even if they are strong, they would still be devastated if they ran into a pack of nightmare beasts! All of their previous efforts will have been for naught! The luck factor in this competition is simply too great,” the captain of this team of martial artists said.

“Boss, there’s something happening up ahead.” A martial artist suddenly spoke up. As everyone turned to look, they felt a tingling sensation crawl up their scalps. Not too far away, in the forest, there were dozens of nightmare beasts rushing towards them!

After battling through a violent life or death battle for the entire day, this team of martial artists were well aware of what it meant for dozens of nightmare beasts to come rampaging towards them. They would be instantly slain!

Although they were only soul forms that existed in the Divine Dream World, and would also be reincarnated if they died here, it was still mentally hard to withstand the pressure of imminent death!

“Hide your aura and escape!”

The head martial artist restrained his aura as he spoke with a true essence sound transmission.

In this critical situation, everyone carefully restrained their aura and began slowly moving backwards, a step at a time. They didn’t want all those points they worked so hard for to shrink by over half.

At this moment, they only heard a sharp whistle pass by their ears. There was a blur as a red shadow shot into the forest.

The speed of this red shadow was far too fast; no one was able to clearly see it. They also saw the red shadow crash into place the dozens of nightmare beasts were at, arousing the angry roars and reactions of those nightmare beasts.

That red shadow was a participant, and from the shape of their back, it was a woman!

“This crazy woman!”

“Shit! Does she want to die and bring us down with her!?”

As these martial artists saw the red shadow anger the nightmare beasts, all of them were scared silly. Once those nightmare beasts killed that rabid woman, they would die from bearing the anger of those nightmare beasts!

Just as everyone was about to escape, a burst of loud explosive sounds filled the air. Countless large trees imploded and 4 or 5 nightmare beasts emitted pitiful cries as they burst like a balloon of meat and blood. That red shadow was like a wisp of light smoke, shuttling within the pack of nightmare beasts. Two flywheels were in her hands, glowing with a cold light. Wherever she went, nightmare beasts would erupt into a puddle of bloody goo. She was no different from a death god that was harvesting lives!

“Ho-how is this possible!?”

Everyone was shocked. They had to join forces in order to barely take down a single nightmare beast with their coordinated efforts, and yet this woman was killing an entire pack of them as if she were slaughtering chickens and cows. The difference between them was simply too great! Although these martial artists knew the Divine Realm was unimaginably vast and there was always a higher peak and a stronger martial artist, they always subconsciously thought that their strength was equal to the peak geniuses from Holy Lands. At least the difference shouldn’t be too great. But now, with this red-clothed woman in front of them, all of the confidence they built up was completely shattered.

In just a short 10 breaths of time, the dozens of nightmare beasts were slaughtered by that red-clothed woman!

She calmly stood among the wreckage of corpses, her body stained red with blood.

Her figure was slender and she wore a bamboo hat on her head. It was impossible to discern her appearance. One could only see she was incomparably mysterious.

“35 nightmare beasts. With the 70 I killed before, I’ve already killed over a hundred. This is over 1000 merit points! I wonder just how Zhong Wenshu and the three prodigies from Sacred Martial Mansion are doing. There is also that boy who bought the Boundless World Pill… Humph, I will prove to everyone that just having resources and talent is meaningless! Although my background is inferior and my wealth is inferior, I am not weaker than any of you! I will be the one who takes first place in Immemorial Imperial City!”

The bamboo hat woman thought out loud. As she spoke, her words carried with it a faint hoarse and gravelly tone, causing her voice to lose all its charm.

Meanwhile, somewhere else, Zhong Wenshu and the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion were also engaged in a frigid slaughtering.

“None of you need to fight. If you do anything you will just take a part of my merit points. All that you need to do is to guide the nightmare beasts over here, the more the better! Evolved nightmare beasts are the best!” Zhong Wenshu said as he crushed the skull of a nightmare beast beneath his boot. A confident smile hung on his face. “My cultivation method excels in group battles. I want to see just who in all of Immemorial Imperial City can obtain merit points faster than I can!”

“That’s right, I had you investigate the whereabouts of that little bastard who bought the Boundless World Pill. Haven’t you found him yet? Looking for him is a top priority. I want to have as much fun with him as I can! It’s perfect we can revive in this Divine Dream World. I will wait until he resurrects and kill him again! I want to kill him until he is dirt poor and shits his pants whenever he sees me!”

As Zhong Wenshu cruelly smiled, the minion beside him said, “Young Master, that garbage Lin Ming withdrew from the city and has yet to emerge!”

“Mm?” Zhong Wenshu frowned. “That little bastard. He clearly knows I’m looking for him, so he doesn’t dare to come out and face me?”

“That should be it!”

“Ugh, how pathetic! I was hoping to kill him and take away his merit points, but now killing him doesn’t even seem worth the time.”

To Zhong Wenshu, the best way to get revenge would have been to kill Lin Ming and also take away all of his efforts. But now, since that wouldn’t work, the enjoyment he received from taking revenge against Lin Ming would be severely diminished.

“Humph, I don’t believe he won’t come out and hunt for nightmare beasts and then let himself be eliminated in the first round. Although that little bastard is nothing compared to me, he should still be able to enter the second round with his qualifications. I can’t believe he is willing to simply resign himself to being eliminated. I will wait. As long as he leaves the city, I will instantly kill him. I want to chop him into 70 to 80 pieces and let him experience true suffering!”

“Haha, what Young Master says will be done! Rest assured, we have already bribed several participants to stand guard outside the city. As soon as that boy appears, we will inform Young Master. At that time, Young Master can deal with Lin Ming and enjoy him to your heart’s content!”

“Good! Well done!” Now, go and quickly look for nightmare beasts. I have to guarantee that my merit points will be the number one rank of Immemorial Imperial City! Not only will I win this qualification round, but I must also struggle for the top five ranks of the True Martial Great World!

Zhong Wenshu had great ambitions. Although he was currently the greatest genius of Dual Polarity Palace’s young generation, the sect still wasn’t willing to train him regardless of cost. For instance, it was impossible for him to enjoy medicines like the Boundless World Pill. He had to prove to everyone he had value, and perhaps even the potential to become a World King! Only by reaching the top five rankings of the True Martial Great World would he have enough qualifications to gain the attention of Dual Polarity Palace’s upper level figures. In the future, during the finals of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, if he could enter the top 10,000 or the top 8000, he would become the best disciple within Dual Polarity Palace for the last tens of thousands of years!

……………

As endless slaughtering was occurring within the Divine Dream World like a raging fire that spread without end, outside of the Divine Dream World, the near infinite audience was all gazing at the massive golden scroll in the sky, captivated. They soon discovered that on the scroll, the positions of the participants names were constantly shifting and changing.

"Look! There's numbers appearing behind people's names! 1027, what number is that?" Everyone discovered that as the positions of names changed on the scrolls, there were also many names that had numbers attached to them. From the start it was only a few, but slowly, more and more names were given a number.

"1130, 1150. The numbers are increasing. Look, someone even has 2000!"

"That's not 2000, that's 2500! It's even about to break 3000! Moreover, I saw that some numbers even vanished altogether!"

"What do these numbers mean?" Many people asked, puzzled.

"They should be merit points! These numbers represent the merit points they have!" When Empyrean Vast Universe used his great supernatural power to speak, his sound transmission passed through the entire Divine Realm and the audience also heard the rules of the competition. To say these numbers were the merit points the participants had was the most reasonable explanation.

Chapter 1180 – Ranking

Chapter 1180 – Ranking

…

…

…

“So they were merit points. That makes sense. But why do only a small number of people have numbers behind their names, and most martial artists do not?”

Although the golden scroll had many names with numbers behind them, this was because the scroll was simply too large. The names were densely packed together and seemingly endless. If one counted them, the number of people with merit point values behind their names were not even in the thousands.

“It should be that only those with at least a thousand merit points are displayed. Even for an Empyrean, wanting to constantly update the merit points of over 10 quadrillion geniuses wouldn’t be easy! Those with numbers but then vanished were likely people that crossed over 1000 before being killed by other participants or nightmare beasts. Finally, their merit points fell and they fell down the list.”

It was naturally impossible for Empyrean Divine Dream to constantly update the merit points of every single participant with her soul force. No matter how powerful her soul force was, wanting to simultaneously monitor and change the merit points of over 10 quadrillion geniuses was impossible.

What she relied on were the heaven and earth Laws of the Divine Dream World.

Everything within the dreamland was supported by the Divine Dream Laws as a foundation, and the Divine Dream World would complete the statistics of everyone there itself. Empyrean Divine Dream would only need to provide a little bit of energy to display everyone's scores.

"So that's what is happening. Those with their scores on the golden scroll are all outstanding cultivators! They are likely to pass the first round of eliminations and possibly even the second round!"

"Yes! Perhaps they will even be noticed by the various large influence, especially those whose merit points rise the quickest!"

In all corners of the Divine Realm, there were countless people holding such discussions.

However, they soon discovered that although they could see the merit points of all the participants in the Divine Realm, it was far too difficult to find specific people.

The golden scroll was simply far too large. It was hundreds of thousands of miles wide and several million miles long. Even a Holy Lord didn't have the ability to cover the entire golden scroll with their divine sense. And if they did, with the near endless names on the golden scroll, they would overdraw their divine soul before they found who they were looking for.

"I wonder how Wenshu is doing."

Several old men from Dual Polarity Palace frowned. They all had a half-step Holy Lord cultivation and were important characters of the Zhong Family bloodline. Even with their combined abilities, wanting to find Zhong Wenshu's name on such a massive list was far too great an undertaking for them.

Of course, Dual Polarity Palace's Palace Master had the ability to find Zhong Wenshu. However, a World King didn't have such leisurely time to spend an extremely long time observing the preliminaries. What they cared about were only the finals.

As the several Elders were worrying, a golden carriage soared across the sky. The chariot stopped and a middle-aged man with a jade crown stepped out. He wore a long embroidered golden robe tied together with a purple gold belt. He had a bright smile on his face, and the aura he emitted was one of wealth and extravagance.

“Mm? It’s Imperial City Auction House’s Vice Director!”

The Elders of Dual Polarity Palace quickly recognized the middle-aged man.

“Everyone!” As the middle-aged man stood atop the golden divine carriage floating in the skies, dazzling arcs of golden light shot out into the world, capturing everyone’s attention. As for his voice, it easily spread over an area of 100,000 miles. His cultivation was at the half-step World king!

A half-step World King powerhouse. Within an area of 100,000 miles, that was a peak existence among hundreds of millions of watching people.

Everyone looked at the middle-aged man, not sure what he was about to say.

The middle-aged man faintly smiled and said, “My Imperial City Auction House has been granted authorization by Empyrean Divine Dream to come here and sell inquiry jade slips. You may use these jade slips to search for the ranking of specific participants. If you know the name and sect of a martial artist you may search them to find out how many merit points they have. The number of times you can use this jade slip is unlimited. The price of each jade slip is 10 million violet sun stones. The quantity is limited, so the price is quite high.” The middle-aged man took out a deep green jade slip as he spoke.

This small jade slip only had a simple array formation carved into it that could connect to the golden scroll dreamland projection of the Divine Dream World. Even so, the cost was 10 million violet sun stones!

For some time, all of the wandering martial artists and martial artists of small families and sects were left speechless. This price was simply a killing move. Moreover, it was just to look at the results. It was simply far too luxurious an item.

However, those from distinguished families didn't care at all. An Elder from Dual Polarity Palace laughed and said, "Sage Shi, you have come at just the right time. I was worried that I wouldn't be able to find the results of my family's juniors. Allow me to buy an inquiry jade slip."

"Alright!" Sage Shi tossed out a jade slip toward the Dual Polarity Palace Elder. At the same time, a spatial ring with violet sun stones contained within it was sent flying to Sage Shi.

Of the 10 million violet sun stones per jade slip, Imperial City Auction House was only able to take in 10% of the profits; the rest was to be given to Empyrean Divine Dream. In fact, these jade slips were created by the disciples of Divine Dream Palace. Although the process of creating them was simple, they contained a faint touch of the Divine Dream Laws, so anyone else could forget about thinking of duplicating them.

Empyrean Divine Dream was managing the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. Just creating these massive Divine Dream Lights, continuing everything occurring within the Divine Dream Realm, and summoning those massive golden scrolls on all 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm required an incomparably terrifying amount of energy.

Even if Empyrean Divine Dream was ridiculously rich, she still wasn't able to use up resources like this, so she also needed a method to earn back some money.

A similar sale was occurring all throughout the golden scrolls of the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds. The ones responsible for carrying out these sales were the several peak trade associations of each great world. As for those that were able to afford jade slips, they were also great influences.

"I found it! Dual Polarity Palace – Zhong Wenshu, 5300 merit points! Haha, Wenshu has not let us down! Amazing!"

After the Dual Polarity Palace Elder obtained the jade slip he immediately began searching for Zhong Wenshu's name. Of course, just looking for the name of Zhong Wenshu alone wasn’t enough; there were many people with duplicate names. But with Dual Polarity Palace added on, it was much easier.

“However, Wenshu is not the highest. The True Martial Holy Lands have some people that are even higher. Their top participant already has 6000 merit points.

“That’s already quite good! Let’s go and report this happy news to the family head! But the current ranking is a bit inaccurate. Only later when the points stabilize will we be able to see the true results!”

Meanwhile, Sacred Martial Mansion also bought a divine dream jade slip. This jade slip was enough to display over a dozen names. The three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion were among them. Their merit points were around 5000 each.

This was a result that satisfied the many Elders of Sacred Martial Mansion.

At this time, at Good Fortune World, a massive scroll similarly floated in the skies. Underneath this massive scroll, a beautiful woman was also selling divine dream jade slips.

“10 million violet sun stones is far too expensive!”

An Unbroken Cult Elder frowned. They were only an eighth-grade sect. Although they could afford a price of 10 million violet sun stones, it was hard for them to pay such a price only to find out the results a few months ahead of time. But their sect had spent a great deal of wealth and effort to cultivate Yu Youming. They were anxious in discovering just what his results would be like.

“Let’s join together with some other eighth-grade sects to buy one. Buying one alone is a bit too luxurious for us. Our Unbroken Cult’s wealth comes from the hard work of our disciples. We don’t have so much to spare.”

“Right, let’s buy it with others.”

The Elders of the Unbroken Cult devised this new plan and contacted some other eighth-grade sects they were on good terms with. Together, they bought a divine dream jade slip.

They quickly searched for Yu Youming's results.

"3150 points. This result ranking is between the top one and two million of Good Fortune World!"

Currently, only those in the top 10,000 ranks would show their specific results. The rest only showed a general range.

"A rank between one and two million..." The disciples of the Unbroken Cult discussed amongst each other, not knowing just what concept this rank was.

"It seems that passing through the preliminaries will be impossible," an Elder said. This was only the ranking of Good Fortune World. If this rank spread through to the entire Divine Realm it had to be multiplied by a factor of 3000. But through the preliminary qualifiers, only 10 million or so people would pass. If one wanted to pass in a great world, one needed to rank in the top 300,000. This would be extremely difficult for Yu Youming.

Even so, these Elders were quite satisfied with this result. They were only an eighth-grade sect, but there were also many geniuses of countless Holy Lands that were unable to pass the qualifiers. Those that were able to advance were at least the geniuses of peak Holy Lands that approached a World King Holy Land in strength.

The other sects that bought the divine dream jade slip with the Unbroken Cult took their turns to look up the disciples they sent. The result was that all of their disciples were ranked below 3 million. One could see the disparity as soon as they compared disciples. It was clear that Yu Youming led them all.

This caused the Elders of the Unbroken Cult to be in a much happier mood. The Vice Sect Master stroked his beard in satisfaction and said, "That Youming child is quite good. It seems we haven't trained him in vain!"

“Yes! In the future he might even be able to become a half-step Holy Lord!”

The Elders of the Unbroken Cult were all overjoyed with their successes. Moreover, the Elders of the other eighth-grade sects also sourly sent their congratulations. The disciples of the Unbroken Cult that accompanied them here were soon celebrating.

Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan were also amongst these accompanying disciples.

“Big sister, that jade slip is...” Qin Xingxuan whispered.

“I know.”

Mu Qianyu’s heart was also tangled with conflicting feelings. If she was able to search that jade slip she could look for Lin Ming. She didn’t care about Lin Ming’s results; she only wanted to know whether or not Lin Ming joined the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. If she knew he was participating, she could find out which great world he lived in. She could also confirm which branch palace he was accepted into. At that time, looking for Lin Ming would be far easier.

Her status as an outer court disciple was simply far too low. She and Qin Xingxuan had put in their greatest effort in their tasks and helped to perfectly refine the heaven-step pill. Finally, they managed to obtain two spots that were reserved for janitorial disciples so they could come watch the First Martial Meeting.

To directly speak to an Elder, she didn’t have these qualifications at all.

Mu Qianyu clenched her teeth. She took a brave step forwards and said, “Elder, this disciple has a request to ask of you.”

“Mm?” The Unbroken Cult Elder turned to Mu Qianyu. It was very sudden and surprising for Mu Qianyu to stand out from among the outer court disciples.

Yu Feng, who was responsible for managing the outer court disciples was angered. Her thin eyebrows shot up and she fiercely said, “Mu Qianyu, hurry up and step back if you don’t know customs!”

The rules of the Unbroken Cult were severe and strict. If Mu Qianyu aroused the annoyance of an Elder, as the one in charge of handling these disciples, she would leave a bad impression on the Elders.

However, due to Yu Youming’s results, the Unbroken Cult Elder was in a very good mood. He didn’t bother with Mu Qianyu’s rudeness but instead waved his hand. “What does she want? Let her speak.”

Chapter 1181 – Lin Ming's Whereabouts

Chapter 1181 – Lin Ming's Whereabouts

…

…

…

"Thank you, Elder!" Mu Qianyu hurriedly bowed.

Yu Feng grit her teeth, maliciously glaring at Mu Qianyu. She commanded, "Hurry up and say what you want!"

She spoke with a true essence sound transmission toward Mu Qianyu, "Once we return I'll deal with you. You are becoming more and more impolite. Not even an inner court disciple can speak so rudely with the Elder. Luckily, Senior-apprentice Brother Yu's results have put the Great Elder in a good mood. Consider yourself lucky, or you would have dragged me into your bad luck!"

Yu Feng's words weren't exaggerated at all. This was similar to many mortal countries, where a commoner was struck with 50 lashes if they dared to protest a case against a higher authority. Even if they won, they would still be exiled 2000 miles.

The world of martial artists was even stricter between low and high statuses. For an outer court disciple to request a favor from an Elder during such a serious occasion, that was a truly impolite form of behavior.

Mu Qianyu ignored Yu Feng's threat. She clearly said to the Unbroken Cult's Great Elder, "Reporting to Great Elder, this disciple's husband may be participating in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. I hope I can use this chance to find my husband. I humbly request for Great Elder's help!"

Mu Qianyu’s expression and tone as she spoke were very sincere. The Great Elder’s eyebrows arched up. He asked with a bit of surprise, “Oh? Your husband has also entered the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting? How many stages of Life Destruction has he reached?”

The First Martial Meeting only set requirements on one’s age and cultivation. If one could satisfy both of these requirements, that would actually mean their cultivation speed was considered at the upper echelons among those of their age. This sort of person would not have average talent. In fact, even the weakest participants of the First Martial Meeting, if they were to be placed in the Unbroken Cult, could be considered a peak inner court disciple or even a core disciple.

Because of Yu Youming’s rise, the high level figures of the Unbroken Cult were all smug and complacent. If they could gain another core disciple, that was certainly a good thing. With this in mind, the Great Elder had ideas of bringing Lin Ming into the Unbroken Cult.

“Reporting to Great Elder, when I separated with my husband, he was only at the fifth stage of Life Destruction. But my husband’s talent is extremely high, he definitely would have smoothly crossed the ninth stage of Life Destruction!”

Mu Qianyu wasn’t too clear on what sort of concept a ninth stage Life Destruction was. But she knew that among core disciple of the Unbroken Cult there were 20 ninth stage Life Destruction disciples. Lin Ming shouldn’t be worse than any of them.

“Ninefall?” The Great Elder only smiled, clearly not believing Mu Qianyu’s speculations. Mu Qianyu was only someone that ascended from the lower realms, so how could she possibly know about the gap between an Eightfall and Ninefall martial artist? Moreover, a woman would always believe her husband was always stronger than he really was.

The Great Elder said without hesitation, “Since that’s the case, I shall help you look for him. If we find him, he may also join the Unbroken Cult so that you may reunite with your husband.”

“That is… My husband has already joined another sect,” Mu Qianyu awkwardly said.

As she spoke, Yu Feng was immediately angered. “Mu Qianyu, how could you say such words! Great Elder is showing such kindness to you and yet not only do you not thank him but you are completely unappreciative!”

“It doesn’t matter.” The Great Elder waved his hand, interrupting Yu Feng. Bringing Lin Ming into the Unbroken Cult was just a casual suggestion. If Lin Ming could join their ranks that would naturally be good, but if he couldn’t, that wasn’t a loss either. “Since your husband has joined another sect, tell me what sect he is from as well as his name. I will look him up for you.”

“He is... My husband is in the Ancient Phoenix Clan, his name is Lin Ming!”

“Ancient Phoenix Clan?” The Great Elder nearly choked upon hearing Mu Qianyu’s words. As for Yu Feng, she paused for a moment before suddenly recalling something. Her eyes became a bit uneasy and strange as she glared at Mu Qianyu.

The peak Holy Lands of the Divine Realm’s 3000 great worlds were all quite famous. A martial artist had an extremely good memory. As long as it was a peak Holy Land, they would have a faint understanding of it. Compared to their Unbroken Cult, the Ancient Phoenix Clan was hundreds and thousands of times more powerful!

“He is a disciple of the Ancient Phoenix Clan? Moreover, he has even joined the First Martial Meeting!” The Great Elder sized up Mu Qianyu. A peak Holy Land would normally be extremely selective about which outstanding disciples they chose to send to the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. They wouldn’t send out random disciples just to increase their numbers. If what Mu Qianyu said was true, perhaps her husband was doing quite well in the Ancient Phoenix Clan. That would indeed be extraordinary.

Although he didn’t believe this, his eyes became much more gentle as he looked at Mu Qianyu and his expression was much more temperate. “Are you sure he joined the First Martial Meeting!”

“Well, that is only my guess.” Mu Qianyu couldn’t confirm this. However, she believed that if the Ancient Phoenix Clan had chosen disciples to enter into the First Martial Meeting, Lin Ming would definitely be among them!

“Mm… You have been separated for far too many years, so you probably do not understand.” The Great Elder shook his head, thinking back to his previous assumptions. Perhaps Mu Qianyu’s husband was only an outer court disciple of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. If that were true, he wouldn’t be considered anything at all.

“Yes. We’ve been separated for many years.” Mu Qianyu’s words lacked energy behind them.

The Great Elder didn’t think much of it. He began to search the divine dream jade for the ‘Ancient Phoenix Clan – Lin Ming’.

At this moment, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan were both tense. Their eyes were completely focused on the divine dream jade slip in the Great Elder’s hands. They really did fear that they would be unable to find Lin Ming. There were two possibilities for this to happen. The first was that Lin Ming’s talent was insufficient to rank among the higher level disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, so he wasn’t able to participate. However, Mu Qianyu didn’t think this possibility was too high. To her, Lin Ming was the most extraordinary person she ever met.

That left a second possibility. Lin Ming had encountered some accident!

The Divine Realm was filled with endless horrendous risks and dangers. There were countless masters everywhere, many of them ruthless and willing to kill for the tiniest bit of profit. As for Lin Ming, he was only at the fifth stage of Life Destruction when he first ascended to the Divine Realm. Placed within the Divine Realm, such a cultivation was less than an ant. Moreover, the growth of a genius was brutal and tough, and one needed to undergo countless life or death situations too find their own lucky chances. If Lin Ming had encountered an accident, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan simply weren’t able to imagine the consequences.

None of them dared to think of this possibility, but that didn't mean they didn't worry in their hearts. This was just like in the mortal world when a husband would go off to sea and the wife would worry over him. Although the chances of dying in the great oceans was very small, the wife would still stay up late at night, their hearts filled with fear and trepidation.

It was also this worry that caused Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan to ascend to the Divine Realm to search for Lin Ming. However, they had underestimated the difficulty in finding him.

That tiny divine dream jade slip had become the only object that existed within Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan's gazes. It seemed as if time had stopped around them.

"Mm? I actually found him!" As the divine dream jade slip flashed with a blue light, the Great Elder was a bit surprised.

Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan were immediately overjoyed.

Lin Ming was really participating in the First Martial Meeting! And most importantly, this meant that Lin Ming was safe!

Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan felt their noses burn and nearly fell into a bout of tears. If they counted the time they spent in a time enchantment, they were already separated from Lin Ming for dozens of years. At this point, what they cared about was not Lin Ming's results or how he ranked amongst the young elites of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, but about his safety and wellbeing. Even if they couldn't see Lin Ming, they were more than satisfied knowing he was alive and well.

"Oh, he's really there? How many merit points does he have?" The Vice Sect Master casually asked from the side. Although he knew what was occurring, he hadn't been paying much attention.

"It doesn't say; it should be less than a thousand merit points," The Great Elder said. A feeling of superiority appeared in his heart. Of their Unbroken Cult, besides Yu Youming who was blossoming in glory, there were also 2 other core disciples that managed to gather more than a 1000 merit points each. As for the Ancient Phoenix Clan's disciples, it seemed they were only so-so. One of them actually wasn't able to achieve over a thousand merit points.

"I never thought the peak Holy Land, the Ancient Phoenix Clan, would actually send out disciples to boost numbers." The Vice Sect Master faintly smiled, his mood much better than before. He didn't lower his voice, letting all the other eighth-grade sect Elders hear him. But they didn't speak up either. Currently, the Unbroken Cult was brimming with success. Anything they said would be useless.

"But something is a bit strange. The disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan should be participating from Atlas World, Crimson Light World, or at least somewhere in that area. How come Lin Ming is at the True Martial Great World?"

"Well, I'm not too sure about that." The Great Elder shook his head, no longer bothering with such minor matters and no longer paying attention to Mu Qianyu. For this sort of tiny interlude, he naturally didn't place such a low level character in his heart.

At this time, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan didn't care about Lin Ming's results. If it weren't for the current situation, the two of them would have been joyously hugging each other and jumping in glee. But now, they merely tightly held their hands together, transmitting their feelings and strength to each other.

As Yu Feng saw Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan's slightly wet eyes, she sneered and said with a true essence sound transmission, "Why are you two so happy? Looking at your expressions, it's as if you think your husband has managed to rank in the top one million! Look at him, he doesn't even have any visible merit points yet! What kind of result could he possibly have? Moreover, your husband is in the True Martial Great World and you are in the Good Fortune World. You are separated by countless trillions of miles, traversing this distance is impossibly difficult. Even if you could, with the seas of people there, how could you possibly find him? I think you will never find him for the rest of your lives. You might as well consider marrying someone else and consider your relationship over!"

Yu Feng unhappily mocked the disciples under her command. For Mu Qianyu to speak up to an Elder in this sort of situation had affected her image, and she was also jealous that Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan were able to marry someone that could join the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. At the very least, this proved that in the Unbroken Cult, this Lin Ming would have qualified to be a core disciple. Now, as she cynically berated Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan, this caused their hearts to sink and they subconsciously released their hands.

Yes. He was lost within a vast ocean of people and there was also an endless expanse of stars separating them. Wasn't finding Lin Ming easier said than done!? After this First Martial Meeting was over, they would lose any news of Lin Ming once more. Their chances of finding Lin Ming would be no different from finding a single grain of sand within the entire universe.

"Little Sister Xingxuan, do not be discouraged. We already knew things would be hard before ascending to the Divine Realm, and we have already made plans. If we cannot find Lin Ming here, we shall diligently cultivate until we reach the middle or late Divine Transformation realm. We can rely on Senior Fairy Feng to help us. There is also the accumulation that Lin Ming has left with us in the past. If we try harder, there will always be hope. We also have the ability to return to the Sky Spill Continent. We can enjoy a longer youth and wait for him there."

To return to the lower realms, the amount of wealth required to do so was similar to travelling between great worlds. However, they would just about be able to do this if they reached the middle or late Divine Transformation realm. Moreover, in the Sky Spill Continent's world, the great enchantment barrier that Empyrean Primordius had left behind didn't hinder those who came from that world. This was what Fairy Feng had speculated. Otherwise, the Sorcerer of the Southern Wilderness would never have been able to return to the Sky Spill Continent to establish the 72 Sorcerer Pagodas.

Chapter 1182 – Lin Ming Makes His Move

Chapter 1182 – Lin Ming Makes His Move

…

…

…

Within the Divine Dream World, Lin Ming sat on the stone bed, unmoving. For the last 65 days, he had been perceiving the Divine Dream Law.

At the start, the Law lines would only appear within a small space around the Magic Cube. But as Lin Ming slowly continued to deepen his understandings of the Divine Dream Law, these colored lines slowly expanded to a space of three feet around Lin Ming.

If someone stepped into this room, they would see countless fantastical beams of light fluttering around him, like beautiful translucent seven-colored fish.

At this time, Lin Ming opened his eyes. In that moment, a brilliant light flashed from between his eyebrows. This sort of light was the light of the soul. A person who didn't thoroughly understand the Laws of the soul couldn't see it. But even if then, their soul would still be burnt by the light from this soul flash. If their soul force wasn't strong enough, their souls would directly be vaporized to nothingness!

"Receive!"

Lin Ming gave a deep shout and the seven colored strands of light in front of him suddenly seemed to be grasped by some powerful strength. They were dragged toward Lin Ming by this strange power before slowly sinking in between his eyebrows, forming a faint dreamlike mark. This mark constantly shifted and transformed before finally entering Lin Ming's body and completely vanishing.

These seven colored lights were already sucked into Lin Ming's spiritual sea. An unbelievable scene occurred. As the last strands of light fell onto Lin Ming's soul, it formed a diamond shaped mark. This diamond mark was surrounded by a faint haze of light and rainbow-colored feathers, beautiful and entrancing.

"The second rune. I've finally established the second divine dream rune! The Divine Dream Law is truly extraordinary. When I broke through Ninefall and underwent a baptism of the Heavenly Dao laws, I was baptized by all the Laws that exist in this universe. But even so, those Law runes only fell onto my bones and formed bone runes or they buried themselves into my flesh. None of them could mark my soul. This is the first time this has happened!"

Lin Ming looked at the shining rune that sparkled on his soul and had such a feeling. The Divine Dream Law had an essential difference from spiritual or soul attack Laws; the basis of them were on completely different levels. He had never heard of Laws that were able to leave behind marks on his soul.

"65 days and yet I've only managed to form two rune marks. With the support of the Magic Cube I am able to see the path of movement for these energy Laws, yet I'm still having so much difficulty cultivating it. If I didn't have the Magic Cube, wanting to perceive anything here would simply be the talk of a moron. This Divine Dream Law is beyond difficult to comprehend. Moreover, another important question is: I have no idea how to apply these Laws in combat..."

After perceiving the rules of Laws, one wasn't necessarily able to immediately transform these comprehensions into combat strength. One needed a method in order to do so. These so-called 'methods' were cultivation methods, martial skills, and so forth. Although Lin Ming had the Magic Cube, he still didn't know just what the Divine Dream Law transcendent divine might was. He would have to research it on his own.

Lin Ming had a creeping suspicion that the reason Divine Dream Heavenly Palace had so few people was because of how difficult the Divine Dream Law was too understand. If one wanted to study the Divine Dream Law, they first had to be taught the Divine Dream Law by a supreme elder skilled in it. Even the descendant of Empyrean Divine Dream had to be personally guided by Empyrean Divine Dream. In order to study the Divine Dream Law, the requests of perception were unbelievably harsh.

“I have 25 days remaining. It’s not enough time to carve the third soul mark. I should go out and earn some merit points. What a pity, three months is just too short.

Lin Ming hopped down from the stone bed. 25 days was more than enough time to gather merit points. Although he had been training all this time, he could feel the massive amount of soul energy flowing through the skies all day long. Every day at every hour, there was a massive number of deaths! These people had either died underneath the claws and fangs of some nightmare beasts or they were slain by other participants. By this time, many participants should have already realized there was no chance of them passing the first round of eliminations. Even so, they would likely want to go out adventuring and gain some experiences. This would cause the ranks of the nightmare beasts to swell with increasingly powerful monsters and not only that, but the merit points of the martial artists would grow increasingly high.

“As long as I can slay some higher level nightmare beasts or kill a few participants with high merit points, I’ll be able to pass the first round of eliminations easily.” As Lin Ming thought like this, he left Immemorial Imperial City. This was the first time in two months he was leaving the absolute safety net of the city.

Lin Ming stepped outside, breathing in the fresh air of nature; there was really no difference between the real world and this dreamland. He once again sighed with praise at just how wonderful Empyrean Divine Dream’s methods were.

“That brat has appeared!”

Outside of Immemorial Imperial City, Lin Ming’s appearance instantly attracted the attention of two martial artists. These two both had a cultivation at the Eightfall middle Divine Sea realm, and they knew perfectly well they would be eliminated in the first round of the preliminaries. With that in mind, they didn’t bother with hunting nightmare beasts and instead accepted the bribe of Zhong Wenshu, guarding the city gates and acting as his eyes and ears.

As soon as Lin Ming appeared, they were the first to find out.

“Haha, this is too wonderful! We’ve been standing guard here for two months and our efforts have finally borne fruit. The brat has come out!”

“We’ve both earned 50,000 violet sun stones now. Although we didn’t gain any other harvest in participating in this First Martial Meeting, it’s still good that we earned 50,000 violet sun stones. But we should still be careful that we aren’t discovered by him. He is much fiercer than us!”

“Don’t worry about that. Remember, when we explored those ancient ruins in the past, we came across an extremely valuable martial skill called the ‘Traceless Shadow’. That name isn’t for nothing. It can be used for tracking, surveillance, and all sorts of other covert operations. If it weren’t for this ability, we would never have gotten into this business to begin with!”

The two quickly spoke with a true essence sound transmission and didn’t even glance toward Lin Ming. Their surveillance method was also used according to the ‘Traceless Shadow’, so they both assumed they were very well hidden.

Even so, Lin Ming was the first to discover them. The difference in strength was simply too great, while Lin Ming also understood a small portion of the Divine Dream Law.

Lin Ming traced his chin and a playful smile formed on his face. He had been wondering where to obtain merit points from, but now it seemed that some people had come over to give him a hand.

He didn’t bother with the two small minions. Lin Ming launched his movement technique and disappeared like a wisp of black smoke, flying straight towards a distant jungle.

Although Lin Ming's speed was very slow, the two minions nearly fell over trying to follow him.

"How could that brat be so fast! He instantly caught onto our 'Traceless Shadow'!"

"Nonsense, he must have known other people want to kill him so he just randomly dashed out as soon as he left the city. Moreover, he is strong, so his speed is certainly fast. Look over there. He just entered that jungle. There are many nightmare beasts within, so he'll definitely be caught there for some time."

As the two of them saw Lin Ming enter the jungle they were immediately overjoyed. They hurried to send news of Lin Ming leaving the safety of the city.

At this time, within the jungle, Lin Ming was facing off against three nightmare beasts.

These nightmare beasts had the shape of leopards. They assumed a triangular position around Lin Ming, while roaring at him.

Within Lin Ming's eyes, these were no longer nightmare beasts. Rather, they had been simplified into countless lines.

These gray lines had no shine at all. Compared to the Divine Dream Law lin Ming had perceived before, they were much darker.

But as Lin Ming looked at these lines, he realized something.

"So these are nightmare beasts! In the Divine Dream World, nightmare beasts are formed from the energy within this dreamland. They were originally forms of energy wandering around the Divine Dream World that were gathered together by the power of Laws, and turned into these aggressive monsters. If I were to call these energies something else, they would be heaven and earth origin energy!" Lin Ming realized.

The nightmare beasts of the Divine Dream World were consistent with the heaven and earth origin energy in the real world. However, the heaven and earth energy there didn't have any aggressive nature and these nightmare beasts were actually able to kill people.

In the real world, one could absorb heaven and earth origin energy to cultivate.

Within the Divine Dream World, if one killed these nightmare beasts and absorbed their energy, one could cultivate all the same!

But the premise of all this was that one understood the Divine Dream Law transcendent divine might.

Lin Ming's perception was extremely high now. With the help of the Magic Cube, he had managed to faintly decipher some inklings of Empyrean Divine Dream's transcendent divine might.

In other words, within the Divine Dream World, one could kill the nightmare beasts and absorb their energy using this transcendent divine might to strengthen themselves!

If this speculation were true, Empyrean Divine Dream had done the same as creating a completely new cultivation method different from everything else. Every transcendent divine might was truly wonderful and varied!

The Heretical God Force, Primordius martial intent, Divine Dream Law, each one of them was incomparably mysterious!

As Lin Ming realized this, he increasingly desired the contents of the Divine Dream Law. If he could become aware of the fantastical mysteries within, it was possible for him to increase his own strength while he competed in the Divine Dream World.

The other participants could only gain combat experience, while he could enhance multiple aspects of himself!

At this time, Lin Ming suddenly heard the three black leopards in front of him roar out again before hurtling towards him.

Lin Ming didn’t bat an eye. He simply said, “You cats can become my test experiment.”

He flicked his fingers and three beams of light flashed over. These true essence arrows had his gold battle spirit poured into them, instantly piercing through the heads of the three nightmare beasts. The nightmare beasts shook and cried out before all falling to the ground.

The three nightmare beasts disappeared, turning into bits of energy that faded into the skies. In Lin Ming’s eyes, the energy was formed from countless gray lines.

These gray lines were much more basic than the seven colored lights the Magic Cube had decomposed.

“You’re mine.”

Lin Ming thrust out his hand. Underneath the attraction of the dreamland Laws, the lines of energy obediently sank into Lin Ming’s body. They entered his soul and vitalized his two soul marks.

The soul marks became increasingly dazzling!

If Lin Ming absorbed these energies according to what he knew of the Divine Dream Law, then although he couldn’t utilize too much of it, he could already confirm he could use it to increase his own cultivation. It was similar to absorbing heaven and earth origin energy in the real world, but the speed was much faster.

This was only from slaying low level nightmare beasts. What would it be like if he hunted down top class nightmare beasts? The cultivation speed would be even faster!

As Lin Ming was thinking this, several hundred miles away in a deep canyon, Zhong Wenshu’s sword had just come falling down, slicing apart the head of a nightmare beast.

Blood shot out in all directions. In hunting down these high level nightmare beasts, Zhong Wenshu was a tad serious.

At this time, one of Zhong Wenshu's minions ran over. "Young master, the scouts have sent a message. That little bastard who bought the Boundless World Pill finally appeared!"

Chapter 1183 – Combat At Last

Chapter 1183 – Combat At Last

…

…

…

“What did you say? That little turtle Lin Ming who bought the Boundless World Pill has finally stuck his head out from his shell?” Zhong Wenshu smiled as he heard this news.

“Yes! Young master, the two people I found aren’t too strong, but in terms of surveillance they are absolutely some of the best! That little turtle has started hunting nightmare beasts in the jungle near the city!”

“Good! Well done!” Zhong Wenshu shouted out as his mood improved greatly. “It’s about time. Over two months have passed and that little turtle finally couldn’t hold it any longer and left the city. Hehe, the first round of eliminations is approaching soon. If he continued to hide in the city, he could only resign himself to being kicked out!”

“Since he came out, we might as well go and kill that turtle a few times. Although killing him won’t give any merit points, it’ll feel so good to do it!” Zhong Wenshu grinned. These days, all he did was hunt nightmare beasts. A month ago, he killed a few other trial challengers for fun and also because the merit points they gave were more than from killing nightmare beasts. What felt better than plundering all the hard earned efforts of others?

But as Zhong Wenshu gained more and more merit points, killing other ordinary participants was no longer of use. As for the stronger participants, he somewhat dreaded them or was at least afraid that both parties would leave injured.

He resigned only killing nightmare beasts. When killing them, one would gain the same amount of merit points no matter what.

But this was simply too grueling. After killing them for over two months, even Zhong Wenshu felt weeds growing out of his head.

In order to rank as high as he could in True Martial World, Zhong Wenshu had been diligently working, without slacking off even a bit. He had already rushed his way into the top 19 ranks of this great world! Although he was still a great distance from reaching the top five, the truth was that this result was already very good. This was because the True Martial Holy World had several World King level Holy Lands, and there were also the descendants of many hidden families as well as disciples of peak hidden masters. Beyond all that, there was the giant in the corner – The True Martial Holy lands.

Being able to reach rank 19 of a great world was a result that could grab the attention of the entire Divine Realm. If a wandering martial artist had obtained this result, they would have attracted the attention of countless influences. Even some World King Holy Lands would work their best to win this person over.

In fact, at this time, underneath that massive golden scroll, the Elders of Dual Polarity Palace, especially those that were part of the Zhong Family, and the Zhong Family Head, were all smiles. Zhong Wenshu was the pride of their Zhong Family. If he was able to maintain this result until the end of the preliminaries, he would be in the top 20 rankings. Such a result would allow him to participate in the finals and allow him to blossom in splendor.

“Wenshu’s future is brilliant. There is even a chance he will become a World King in the future, haha!” A middle-aged man in a loose robe said.

“Brother Zhang, you are flattering me too much! Although becoming a World King may be too difficult a task for Wenshu, becoming a peak Holy Lord or even a half-step World King is possible!” Although the Zhong Family Head knew these words were merely flattery, he was still very happy.

At this time, in the jungles near Immemorial City, Lin Ming was rushing through the woods like a lithe cheetah. The layers upon layers of dense shrubs and foliage blurred around him as he moved forwards.

Whoosh!

A light beam of true essence fused with his battle spirit shot out. A tiger-shaped nightmare beast was instantly beheaded by Lin Ming and killed on the spot, neat and clean.

The tiger-shaped nightmare beast immediately turned into pure energy that flowed into Lin Ming. Lin Ming thrust out a hand and tiny light sparkled on his fingers like dark stars in the night. The energy of the tiger-shaped nightmare beast turned into a faint yellow line that was directly absorbed by Lin Ming.

These faint yellow lines entered Lin Ming's spiritual sea. Underneath the direction of the dreamland Laws, they began to nourish the two divine dream marks in his soul.

"This tiger-shaped nightmare beast has five times the energy of the leopard-shaped nightmare beasts, and also five times the amount of merit points. This tiger-shaped nightmare beast was worth around 100 merit points but those leopard-shaped nightmare beasts were only worth 20 merit points. It seems the essence of these merit points is the amount of divine dream energy that comprise them."

Lin Ming quickly understood what was happening. In truth, the nature of the preliminaries was to see who could defeat the most opponents and accumulate the most dreamland energy. The more dreamland energy one accumulated, the more merit points they would gain. All of this happened due to the Laws of this dreamland space. There was no need for Empyrean Divine Dream to do any of the complex calculations here. This was truly a wonderful and exquisite method of saving time and effort.

But those that did not understand the Divine Dream Law could only allow the dreamland energy to gather within their bodies; they simply had no means to make use of it. This could be explained as entering a treasure-filled mountain and still leaving empty-handed; it was truly regrettable.

As Lin Ming thought of this, he was truly thankful for the Magic Cube. If he didn't have the Magic Cube, wanting to perceive Empyrean Divine Dream's transcendent divine might would have been nothing but the talk of a moron, let alone having such a great lucky chance thrust into his lap.

"The Magic Cube is truly spectacular. What a pity, I am currently unable to control it. If I want to use the Magic Cube now, I will have to ask Miss Mo to do so, but Miss Mo only has her soul form left..." Lin Ming thought out loud.

Lin Ming sank his consciousness into his spiritual sea. Because he was absorbing the divine dream energy, his own strength was truly rising, and the speed at which it was rising was much faster than in the outside world. This was also a reasonable matter. After all, this was a transcendent divine might.

"Currently, I only have 960 merit points. If I kill another one or two nightmare beasts I should be able to break past 1000..."

As Lin Ming was thinking such thoughts, he suddenly sensed another tiger-shaped nightmare beast not too far away. He rushed through the jungle like an arrow and before the tiger-shaped nightmare beast could respond, his hand came smashing down. With a faint cracking sound, Lin Ming easily twisted apart the neck of this tiger-shaped nightmare beast.

His merit points broke past 1000!

At this time, Lin Ming felt something rush into his spiritual sea. With his current understanding of the dreamland Laws, he could instantly drive it out, but after sensing that it didn't have any dark intentions, he allowed it to enter his spiritual sea where it turned into a projection.

"Mm, I can check my own ranking?" Lin Ming was a bit surprised. It seemed that after one's merit points broke past a thousand, one was able to find out what rank they were. Like this, a participant could know if they were on the verge of elimination.

The information shown on that projection was – 'Ancient Phoenix Clan, Lin Ming, merit points 1060. Rank is beyond 100 million, so cannot be calculated. Current rank has not reached the top 1%, so cannot pass through the first round of eliminations."

As Lin Ming saw this ranking, he ruefully smiled. "This ranking is a bit sad."

It seemed that there was no ranking given for those past 100 million. But this was how things were. There were over a trillion participants from the True Martial Great World alone. Only one out of every 10,000 was able enter into the top 100 million; wasn't that easier said than done?

He never imagined that the Divine Dream World would show a person whether or not they would be eliminated in the first round. To allow a participant to keep such a number in their minds was actually an extremely useful and convenient rule.

At this time, underneath the golden scroll on Crimson Light World, there was a massive floating palace. This palace was a giant spirit artifact. Because the preliminary round of the First Martial Meeting would continue for nine months and because the higher level figures of great influences certainly wouldn't be caught living outdoors, they had put forth these spirit artifact palaces to rest inside.

There were many older individuals, all of whom were great figures. They were top level characters from peak Holy Lands and even important personages of World King level Holy Lands. Of course, the strongest person here only had a half-step World King cultivation. A true World King wouldn't come now; only the finals of the First Martial Meeting were enough to attract such a mighty character.

Among these people was one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's Highest Elders, Huo Violentstone.

"Elder Huo, Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, Junior-apprentice Brother Lin's merit points have finally moved!" The Ancient Phoenix Clan purchased two divine dream jade slips. One was in Huo Violentstone's hands and the other was being watched over 24 hours a day by a disciple of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. This disciple monitored the changes of every single participant from the Ancient Phoenix Clan and their rankings. Lin Ming's name was naturally included in this surveillance.

At the start, Huo Violentstone was very happy that he was able to lookup Lin Ming in this First Martial Meeting. Seeing the Ancient Phoenix Clan fixed in front of Lin Ming's name left him especially satisfied. He was looking forward to seeing Lin Ming gain face for the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

But the result was that after the first round of the preliminaries begin, after an hour passed, everyone else gained 2000 to 3000 merit points, but Lin Ming hadn't shown any movement at all.

Huo Violentstone originally thought that Lin Ming was hunting for something specific and didn't want to bother with the weaker nightmare beasts. He presumed Lin Ming wanted to slay some powerful nightmare beast and soar into the heavens with a single feat.

Huo Violentstone patiently waited ever since. After Lin Ming leapt onto the heavens and amazed the world, he would then go out drinking with some friends where he could brag about the disciple he took in.

The result was that he had waited all up until this day!

Huo Violentstone had waited so long that his face had nearly turned blue, and yet Lin Ming's merit points hadn't moved at all. There was still no display of his merit points!

Just what was that little brat doing!

Huo Violentstone didn't know that Lin Ming had obtained the supreme dragon bone, didn't know that Lin Ming had crossed a nine by nine Life Destruction and withstood nine levels of heavenly tribulation. He also didn't known that Lin Ming purchased the Boundless World Pill and opened the Gate of Life.

Even if he didn't know all these things, he only needed to recall Lin Ming completing the Thousand Slaughter in the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial to know that passing the preliminaries was already a guaranteed for Lin Ming. His talent far surpassed that of Yan Littlemoon. It was impossible for him not to do anything this entire time!

Huo Violentstone was furious. He would periodically check up on Lin Ming's results and now after two whole months, Lin Ming was still like a dead man with no response at all.

On this day and this moment, there was finally change.

"You damned dead lazy brat finally did something. Do you want to play this old man to death!?" Huo Violentstone cursed out. He checked the divine dream jade slip and…

1060…

Huo Violentstone's face nearly turned black.

Good! The absolute bare minimum!

Huo Violentstone finally erupted.

"This little bastard! What tricks is he trying to play with me! I don't believe he would spend two months and show me this kind of result!" Huo Violentstone found this incomprehensible. If Lin Ming wasn't leaving the city to slaughter enemies, just what was he doing? That was dreamland space, not the real world! He didn't even have a true physical body in there. He couldn't have been doing something so ridiculous as cultivating in the dreamland space, right?

What if he wasn't cultivating? Did he know he couldn't pass and was purposefully doing this?

Huo Violentstone couldn't understand, so he felt that this little brat Lin Ming was increasingly damnable. It had to be known that with Huo Violentstone's temperament as long as he went outside, he would always mention to outsiders about how awesome and amazing his family was, second to none.

Before this competition had begun, Huo Violentstone boasted on and on about how amazing Lin Ming's results would be. But the result was that Lin Ming hadn't done anything at all, and his friends had shamelessly beaten him up with their words.

Chapter 1184 – Who Gave You This Courage?

Chapter 1184 – Who Gave You This Courage?

…

…

…

"How is it? Brother Huo, Nephew Lin's ranking has finally moved?" A cyan robed old man with a pair of dragon horns and a long beard slowly spoke, a smile spreading on his face. He was an Elder from the Ancient Dragon Clan, and Huo Violentstone had a nickname for him – Laughing Dragon.

When the four God Beast Clans joined up, and when fully united, they surpassed even an ordinary World King Holy Land. But between the four clans was also an extremely fierce competition, each one hoping that their own people would tower over the other three clans. However, for so many years, every time the four clans competed, the one that always held the upper hand was the Ancient Dragon Clan.

When Huo Violentstone saw Lin Ming join the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, as well as Xiao Ping and Yan Littlemoon, old man Huo was proud and elated. He felt the time for the Ancient Phoenix Clan's true rising moment of glory had arrived. He even begun to brag and boast in front of Laughing Dragon with great gusto.

But the result was that there was nothing to brag about, at all.

As Huo Violentstone burst into anger, Laughing Dragon was all smiles. He looked at Lin Ming's score, his words clearly containing ridicule in them.

He had also guessed Lin Ming didn't move at the start because of some reasons. But the result was this great difference that had opened up between him and everyone else. To say it in other words, if one fell down at the start, it would be far more difficult to catch up. One would need to put in a greater amount of effort and their ranking would also be lower. It would be very difficult to compare with the Ancient Dragon Clan's new Dragon One. As for this new Dragon One, after the old Dragon One had died, Dragon Two naturally moved into his spot.

Now, of the four God Beast Clans, the Ancient Dragon Clan took first place with Dragon One at the top. Dragon One was ranked 72nd on the Crimson Light World and Yan Littlemoon was ranked next, at rank 97 of the Crimson Light World.

Huo Violentstone immediately put away the divine dream jade slip. He didn't even bother looking at Laughing Dragon as he furiously said, "Lin Ming's results have just started, what are you speaking so soon for!?"

"Haha, there's no need to be in a hurry. There's still over half a month left. Nephew Lin is truly patient; what a peaceful heart. But with Nephew Lin's talent, no matter how far off he is, he can still easily pass the first round of eliminations. However, compared with Dragon One, he is very far off!"

Laughing Dragon smirked as he laughed out loud. Before this, Huo Violentstone had boasted that Lin Ming would sweep away Dragon One as if he was an adult playing with little children, so Laughing Dragon certainly wanted to retaliate. He slowly took out a divine dream jade slip from his spatial ring, ignoring the gloomy and simmering stare of Huo Violentstone, and began to check up on Lin Ming's results.

……….

Divine Dream World –

Whoosh!

A bright ray of light flashed through the jungle. Another nightmare beast had its head chopped off by Lin Ming.

"I've killed dozens of these beasts, yet the merit points are so little. My ranking still hasn't advanced into the top 1%!"

In such a short period of time, even if Lin Ming could cut down nightmare beasts at a ridiculous pace, it was still slower than how others had accumulated for over two months.

"There are far too few nightmare beasts in this jungle and the level is also very low. It's not a suitable place for me. How come those merit point party sacks still haven't arrived? I've been waiting for them in this low level jungle for so long." Lin Ming frowned. At this time, he cast out his divine sense again and felt the fluctuation of energy he was waiting for. His lips curved up into a smile; they had finally arrived.

He had made so many enemies within Immemorial Imperial City; just which ones had come for him?

"Sir Zhong, he is right over there. We shouldn't be wrong, us brothers have been following him all this time."

"Haha, that garbage didn't know he was being tracked all this time!"

Two small martial artists suddenly jumped out from the jungle brush, large cloaks wrapped around their bodies. Behind them was a grinning Zhong Wenshu as well as 7 or 8 of Zhong Wenshu's minions.

The two cloaked martial artists laughed as they looked at Lin Ming. "Stupid boy, you never imagined we were following you, right? Hahaha!"

"To be fooled by us two brothers is not an injustice!"

"Accept your fate. When us brothers are eyeing someone, they can't escape even if they're 10 times stronger!"

Lin Ming looked at the two idiotic tracking clowns that jumped out from the bush. He sighed and said, "Who gave you two the courage to act so daringly?"

The two small martial artists were shocked. How come this Lin Ming brat wasn't surprised and scared silly? Why was he so calm?

Lin Ming didn't bother with them. He looked at Zhong Wenshu and said, "So it's you. I thought I would only get some tiny minions; I didn't expect I would be able to reel in such a big fish."

Zhong Wenshu was a bit startled. He traced his chin and thoughtfully looked at Lin Ming, "Are you saying you've already discovered that you were being tracked, and deliberately waited for me here?"

Lin Ming didn't answer. He merely drew out the Phoenix Blood Spear; his intent was clear.

The two tiny fellows' faces turned red. They quickly said, "Sir Zhong, this boy clearly know he's reached the end of the road! He's just trying to make up some random arguments. If he already knew he was being tracked, why wouldn't he run?"

"Yeah! Against us brothers, only middle or late Divine Transformation powerhouses can see through our tracking; otherwise, it's impossible to discover us!"

Zhong Wenshu was disinclined to pay attention to these two nothings. He looked at Lin Ming with zest in his eyes. "It seems you really did discover them and decided to wait for me here. You have quite the confidence in yourself, enough that it surpasses my imagination. You aren't thinking that I came here like a loot bag to deliver merit points to you, right?"

Lin Ming's lips curved up into a sly smile. He chuckled. "I thought you were stupid, but it seems you have some sense of self-awareness. Your last few words are correct. But you shouldn't say 'thinking that', because the reason you are here is to give me your merit points. I wonder just how many merit points you'll be able to give me?"

"Humph!" Zhong Wenshu's eyes turned icy cold.

Zhong Wenshu's minions were immediately angered. "You really have no idea of danger or death, you damned brat! To think you can still laugh in this sort of situation, you must have some kind of mental illness! Young Master, don't bother with his nonsense, he is nothing but an idiot!"

"Brothers, let's chop off his hands and feet and see if he can still act so arrogant!"

These minions were all Ninefall Divine Sea martial artists. If they were placed in a peak Holy Land, even though they couldn't be a top disciple, they could still be a core disciple. Moreover, there were eight of them and they were all at the middle and late Divine Sea.

Eight middle and late Divine Sea martial artists to deal with Lin Ming, an early Divine Sea martial artist. Even if they could see that Lin Ming's foundation was solid and his aura was imposing, this was still a bit unreasonable.

"Move into the formation!"

They didn't underestimate their opponent. They immediately set up an array on the battlefield as they were fighting against Lin Ming together!

The eight martial artists each stood on one of the eight corners of an eight trigrams, forming a yin yang array. For a time, energy erupted forth. The power of the eight people gathered together as they ruthlessly attacked Lin Ming!

Woosh woosh woosh!

The lights of eight weapons gathered together, forming a torrent of energy that impacted toward Li Ming!

"This is fine too. I'll take your merit points first. You lot should have quite a bit!" Lin Ming temperately smiled. These people, although they were far from being able to compare with their lord, should still have the ability to pass the first round of eliminations. This meant they would have a reasonable amount of merit points on them.

With a thought touching the Heretical God Seedling, the power of thunder and fire swelled forth. A purple and red twin-colored light began to twine over the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Penetrating Rainbow!

Thunder and fire origin energy roiled forth, emitting a brilliant divine light. A terrifying shockwave rumbled forth. Lin Ming had originally created this as a finishing move, but now it was nothing more than a normal attack.

Bang!

With a terrifying explosion, a purple red spear light thrust forwards into the wave of energy formed by the eight weapons. That wave of energy was instantly torn apart as the purple red spear light continued shooting into the array formation formed by Zhong Wenshu's minions.

"What!?"

The eight people all paled. They stimulated the energy in their bodies to the limit, wanting to keep off Lin Ming's spear light. However, it was useless. The battlefield was torn apart by the spear light. As Zong Wenshu saw his eight minions about to be torn to pieces, a bright light shined in his eyes. He stepped forwards, wanting to use his sword to block the spear light to save his minions.

At this moment, Lin Ming smiled. He growled, "Explode!"

Bang!

Thunder and fire twisted together. A violent and chaotic energy suddenly burst forth with a horrifying strength.

The explosion area was too great. Even Zhong Wenshu was unable to instantly form a barrier that was able to block the explosive shockwaves. As he slashed out with his sword light, it only cut off less than half of the energy wave. He was able to protect his own body, but his minions were in a much more miserable state. In a situation where they had lost the protection of their array formation, waves of energy smashed into their bodies. Their protective true essence shattered and their flesh and blood blew up as howls of agony filled the skies.

Hu – hu – hu –

Five minions were ripped to shreds. They vanished in puffs of smokes that rapidly flew back to Immemorial Imperial City to be reformed.

As for the other three, their bodies had blown up and they were suffocating on their own blood-filled gasps.

Lin Ming's strike had easily shattered the array formation that the eight martial artists had formed, killing five of them and completely ruining the other three people, causing them to lose all combat strength. Moreover, this was in a situation where Zhong Wenshu had helped to resist. Otherwise, the three alive would also have died.

As the two trackers responsible for following Lin Ming saw all of this occur in front of them, their eyes filled with shock and panic. They recalled the words they said and the way they said it in. They subconsciously stepped backwards, their legs shaking.

It had to be known that conflicts that occurred in this dreamland world could be resolved in the real world! In this dream world, Lin Ming wouldn't be able to truly kill them. But in the real world, if Lin Ming revealed a strength equal to what he did just now, killing them would be as simply as waving a hand.

On the other side, Zhong Wenshu's complexion had become gloomier than stormy clouds!

Just now, he had tried to save his minions but he was outmaneuvered by Lin Ming!

Lin Ming had donated the power of thunderfire, causing a massive explosion that Zhong Wenshu wasn't able to prevent. He could only look on helplessly as his minions were killed or ruined by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming had not won by virtue of strength, but by the cunningness of his actions.

Although this was the case, when others saw it they would only see successes and failures, and what just happened would make him seem inferior to Lin Ming. How could he not be flaming with rage?

"You little bastard, I'll destroy you!" Zhong Wenshu gnashed out from between his teeth.

Lin Ming sneered. With a casual wave of his hand, he absorbed the five dead minion's dreamland energy into his own soul, nourishing the two soul marks.

Lin Ming's guess was correct. After killing either a nightmare beast or participant, their dreamland energy could be used by him.

He checked the merit points ranking within his spiritual sea. With a smile, he said to Zhong Wenshu, "It seems your minions weren't too bad. They managed to give me around 20,000 merit points and now my ranking has advanced into the top 1%. However, they were only an opening appetizer – it's about time to dig into the main course."

Chapter 1185 – Yin Yang Twin Swords

Chapter 1185 – Yin Yang Twin Swords

…

…

…

“Main course? Hahahahaha!”

Zhong Wenshu howled with laughter. “In all my, Zhong Wenshu’s years of wandering the True Martial Great World, this is the first time I’ve been treated as a dish! You are truly crazy! Do you think just because you have the ability to kill my subordinates, that also means you have the strength to pressure me?”

Zhong Wenshu’s anger had already reached the limit. He wanted to tear apart Lin Ming with his bare hands.

“Lin Ming, although I cannot kill you in this dreamland space, when this grand tournament ends, I will mobilize every single force I have at my Dual Polarity Palace to slay you. You are a nobody with so many precious treasures on you, just like a child holding a ingot of gold on the busy streets. Did you know there’s countless people that want to kill you? Even if you come from a Holy Land, your Holy Land is far away in the Crimson Light World, so how can they possibly help you here at the True Martial Great World? As long as there isn’t any evidence, the Ancient Phoenix Clan will have no choice but to stuff their grievances in their mouths. Even if they object, what could they possibly do to my Dual Polarity Place? Hahahaha!”

As Zhong Wenshu spoke, he took out two swords from his spatial ring. These two swords were spirit artifact level treasures swords. Although their quality was far inferior to Lin

Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear, they were clearly a pair. A spirit artifact that could be used by a Divine Sea martial artist was already extremely expensive. If it was a pair of spirit artifacts, that was even rarer.

Of this pair of swords, one was black and the other white!

Zhong Wenshu crossed his hands, a cold sword light intertwining. The sword in his left hand began to blaze with a flaming white light, and the sword in his right hand turned pitch black without the least bit of shine. However, faint spots of glowing light seemed to float around the black sword before being sucked in. The black sword seemed like a black hole, constantly swallowing up all the energy around it.

"My white sword is named Sunpiercer and my black sword is named Darkstone. For me to bring out these two swords, you should feel proud of yourself.

"Black and white twin sword? Yin Yang Laws?"

Lin Ming was a bit startled. He could clearly feel fluctuations of the Yin Yang Laws surrounding Zhong Wenshu's twin swords. Moreover, Zhong Wenshu seemed to have reached the fourth level Concept of the Yin Yang Laws.

The Yin Yang Laws could be considered relatively high level Laws within the universe. Although they were inferior to the Grandmist Laws, they were still above the Five Element Laws.

Zhong Wenshu was in the end someone that came from a World King level Holy Land. A World King's descendant, even an ordinary World King's descendant, had the ability to rank in the top 10 of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting and perhaps, even the top 5. They were existences that were only inferior to Empyrean descendants. There were even certain individuals among them that could defeat Empyrean descendants. After all, not every Empyrean descendant was able to grow up with limitless talent and luck!

For such a heaven-gifted genius, their ability to perceive the Laws really couldn't be underestimated.

Lin Ming also became a bit more serious. But this was only a little bit serious.

If he couldn't even kill someone like Zhong Wenshu, he might as well give up trying to struggle for the top five spots of the First Martial Meeting, or even the top three.

"Die!"

Zhong Wenshu shouted out. His body suddenly turned into a phantom as he flash-stepped in front of Lin Ming, thrusting the Sunpiercer straight towards his throat.

With this incredible speed, Lin Ming's chest was pierced through. After the sword light penetrated through Lin Ming's body, it fell onto the jungle behind him. Behind Lin Ming, the jungle was completely swept away. Countless towering trees were uprooted and destroyed, vaporized in a blaze of dazzling white light and reduced to ashes!

A massive clearing appeared in the jungle.

"Ahh!"

The two trackers that had followed Lin Ming here emitted cries of alarm. Was that amazing Lin Ming killed just now by that sword strike?

Before they had the time to fully analyze just what happened, a voiced sounded out from behind them. "Your speed is decent, but your eyesight is quite bad."

This voice belonged to Lin Ming.

The two small trackers hopped up in fright. All the hairs on their body stood up and their legs turned wobbly. Lin Ming appeared just three feet behind them.

In that attack just now, Lin Ming had dodged Zhong Wenshu's sword and managed to arrive behind them without them even noticing.

The two trackers fell to the ground. They crawled away using their hands and feet, fearing they'd be caught up in the aftermath of the battle.

“What shameless boasting. You won’t be so lucky this time!”

Zhong Wenshu’s face darkened. He switched to his right hand to attack. In this hand, a black vortex began to gather around the Darkstone sword. Even the tiny amount of light in the jungle seemed to be sucked in by the black sword. For a moment, there seemed to be nothing left in this world before it came slashing down at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming felt his own body being drawn in by a strange power, making it difficult to display his own speed. This was the Concept of Swallowing from the Darkness Laws. It was able to distort space and hinder his movements.

Lin Ming didn’t panic. He pointed the Phoenix Blood Spear at the ground and faced Zhong Wenshu’s sword light. “If you could combine the powers of yin and yang together, you might have been able to create some problems for me. But since you can only handle one sword at a time, everything you do is meaningless!”

A brilliant light shined in Lin Ming’s eyes. The Heretical God Force opened and a raging flame erupted from the Heretical God seedling, turning into flames that burnt the skies, lighting up the darkness. On top of the Phoenix Blood Spear, a blue lotus slowly began to bloom. Within the heart of the blue lotus, a flash of red light shot up into the sky, tearing through the darkness.

Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

Lin Ming fused together the first four levels of the Fire Laws even as he poured the power of thunder into his attack. The Phoenix Blood Spear shot forth with unstoppable momentum, sundering the earth and leaving a massive canyon in the jungle. Countless trees were burnt to ashes in the conflagration!

Bang!

Zhong Wenshu and Lin Ming’s attacks crashed into each other. For a time, the black vortex minced apart the surrounding jungle. But within that black vortex, a blue lotus stood tall!

The violent impact smashed into Zhong Wenshu's chest, causing a sweet taste to swell up in his throat as blood spilled out from the sides of his mouth.

"This brat!"

Zhong Wenshu raged. When he saw Lin Ming instantly kill five of his men, he understood that dealing with Lin Ming would be tricky. But only now that he actually fought Lin Ming did he discover that the difficulty of defeating him was far higher than what he ever imagined.

That Darkstone sword attack he used just now wasn't his strongest attack, but it was nearly there. Even so, it only had this result.

"That attack just now must've exhausted a great deal of his energy. I have to take this chance and gamble my life against his!"

With flames scorching the sky, Zhong Wenshu switched directions and forcefully summoned his true essence. He dashed outwards into the blazing sea of flames. He felt that the thickness of his own true essence was inferior to Lin Ming's, so he could only take advantage of the aftermath's shockwaves to sneak attack him in order to turn this possible defeat into victory.

Peng peng peng!

Energy recklessly struck Zhong Wenshu's protective true essence, causing the blood vitality within his body to be even more chaotic. But he couldn't care about that at this moment.

"Sword Swallowing Sun and Moon!"

Zhong Wenshu disregarded his own injuries and decisively used the Darkstone sword once again, tearing away the raging flames around him. This was his strongest attack. Upon comprehending the deepest mysteries of the Darkstone sword, it could swallow all energies, flesh and blood, souls, and it was even said to be able to eat the stars themselves. Although he was far from being able to achieve this state now, with the Sword Swallowing Sun and Moon strike, he was nearly invincible amongst his boundary.

Hu – hu – hu –

Zhong Wenshu's Darkstone dagger nearly transformed into a black hole. A massive amount of energy shockwaves were swallowed up by this black hole, becoming a part of Zhong Wenshu's attack!

The energy aftershocks were broken apart. As the chaotic energy parted, all that was revealed was the cold and callous face of Lin Ming!

"You're done for!" Zhong Wenshu savagely said. He thrust out the Darkstone sword!

After using Sword Swallowing Sun and Moon, Zhong Wenshu's body couldn't withstand the burden. On his arm, his forehead, and all over his body, blood vessels began to explode from the pressure. Zhong Wenshu severely wounded himself in order to strike out with his strongest attack!

This energy black hole was shot toward Lin Ming.

"Swallow everything! Swallow his flesh and blood!" Zhong Wenshu screamed out in his heart. However, just as the black hole was about to touch Lin Ming's body, from behind Lin Ming, a blood red lotus began to bloom.

Prime Emperor Lotus Flower – grandmist space!

Rumble rumble rumble rumble!

As the black hole fell into the grandmist space, a collision of fierce energy occurred. Expressionless, Lin Ming thrust forth the Phoenix Blood Spear, stabbing out at the center of the black hole.

"You retard! If you attack my Swallowing Laws, you will only be swallowed even faster!

Zhong Wenshu's entire body was covered in blood. He held the Sunpiercer sword in his left hand, ready to summon up his final dregs of true essence for a last attack to ensure victory.

But at this moment, a completely dumbfounding scene occurred.

The black hole he shot out was actually twisted apart by Lin Ming's spear strike. Even the viscous black energy was swallowed up by some invisible power!

This sword strike that was said to swallow even the stars was instead being swallowed up by other Laws!

Chaos gave birth to yin and yang, and yin and yang diverged into the five elements. Although the Yin Yang Laws stood above the Five Element Laws, they were still below the Grandmist Laws. Even if it were a true black hole, at the destruction of the universe and the creation of a new cosmos, it would still be swallowed up by the Grandmist Laws!

Moreover, Zhong Wenshu's sword strike was far from being able to achieve the boundary of a real black hole. It was nothing more than a fake!

"How is this possible!? What ability is this!?"

Zhong Wenshu found this unbelievable. He wanted to attack with his Sunpiercer sword, but held his hand. If even the Darkstone sword's strongest attack couldn't harm Lin Ming, just what use would his Sunpiercer sword be?

In that instant, Lin Ming already arrived in front of Zhong Wenshu. The Phoenix Blood Spear appeared three feet above Zhong Wenshu's head as it came cutting down!

The cold light of the Phoenix Blood Spear reflected in Zhong Wenshu's pupils. A feeling of despair surged within his heart. He lifted his sword to meet this attack but it was useless.

Ca!

The Phoenix Blood Spear tore through Zhong Wenshu's left shoulder and cut straight through his ribs at an angle. Blood showered the skies. Zhong Wenshu's body was cut in half by Lin Ming!

As Zhong Wenshu's body was split apart, his eyes were still filled with disbelief and unwillingness. The merit points he had accumulated with two months of hard work and the dreams he had of reaching the top 20 ranks of the True Martial Great World were popped like a bubble, evaporating into nothing. All of his efforts had been made into a gift for others!

This sort of feeling left Zhong Wenshu wanting to die from sorrow and anger!

However, these were his final thoughts. In the next moment, his head was pierced through with the Phoenix Blood Spear. The remaining half of Zhong Wenshu's bod struggled for a moment before slumping onto the ground where he instantly died!

Zhong Wenshu turned into a mass of light that dissipated into the air.

Chapter 1186 – Rising Ranking

Chapter 1186 – Rising Ranking

…

…

…

As Zhong Wenshu and Lin Ming were locked in combat, within the Crimson Light World, representatives of the four God Beast Clans were gathered together in a floating palace beneath the giant golden scroll. Several peak eighth-grade vassal sect influences accompanied them. They were conversing about the amazing festivity that was the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting.

At some time, beside Huo Violentstone, the Ancient Phoenix Clan disciple that was responsible for keeping track of the divine dream jade slip suddenly stirred, his eyes brightening. He quickly reported to Huo Violentstone, “Elder Huo, Junior-apprentice Brother Lin’s results have rapidly risen to 20,000. He is now ranked in the top 1% of the True Martial Great World.”

“Mm? 20,000?” Huo Violentstone mumbled. This brat was finally beginning to put in some effort. But, 20,000 merit points was still lacking.

In fact, after Lin Ming finally emerged from seclusion there was a massive number of high level nightmare beasts and participants with a high number of merit point he could kill. His merit points should have quickly risen at the start. After killing Zhong Wenshu’s several little minions, his merit points had instantly risen to 20,000.

But the further he went, the slower this would go. The key question here was just how high Lin Ming could rise. Huo Violentstone feared that Lin Ming would be disinclined to continue hunting once he earned enough merit points to pass the first round of eliminations. If his merit points stayed at the bare minimum, that would truly make Huo Violentstone's old face swollen with shame.

"Nephew Lin just reached 20,000 merit points and seems to have managed to pass the first round of eliminations. This is truly an occasion worth celebrating."

The Ancient Dragon Clan's Laughing Dragon chuckled as he traced his dragon horns.

Although they were congratulatory words, an extreme genius should be able to pass the first round of eliminations, so there was no reason to boast about it. These congratulations contained a clearly mocking taste.

After Huo Violentstone heard these words, his complexion turned ugly. He loathed this old man who didn't even fight anymore but still insisted on manifesting a pair of dragon horns. The Ancient Dragon Clan, like the Ancient Phoenix Clan, weren't descendants of true God Beasts. Rather, they were mortals that had transplanted the God Beast bloodlines within them. This Laughing Dragon's true mortal body had no natural dragon horns. The dragon horns he showed now were formed from energy. In other words, they were nothing more than fakes.

"What are you so happy about? This is just the start! There's still over 20 days left. It's hard to say just what his results will be!" Huo Violentstone grumpily responded.

"Haha! What Brother Huo said is true. I'm also looking forward to it!" Laughing Dragon slowly said as he stroked his beard. "Nephew Lin should have killed some trial challenger just now and obtained a portion of their merit points, which is why his merit points rose so dramatically. But for these kinds of merit points, it will be more and more difficult to increase the further he goes. This is because if his merit points are higher, the merit points he'll receive for killing others will naturally be less. For example, my clan's Dragon One managed to obtain 1.3 million merit points a month ago, but now after the second month has passed, he only has 1.6 million!"

Laughing Dragon shook his head, a regretful expression on his face. However, his bragging words were clearly to show off the contrast between Lin Ming and Dragon One. Huo Violentstone nearly smacked him in the face.

However, what Laughing Dragon said was reality. The further one went, the harder it was to increase one's merit points. Moreover, the disparity between merit points would become increasingly large. With 20,000 merit points, one was ranked around 100 million. With 1.6 million merit points, one was ranked 72 in a great world. The disparity between these numbers could be imagined.

Normally, after accumulating merit points for a long time, the number of them would finally equalize with that individual's approximate strength level. The ranking wouldn't change much after that.

Huo Violentstone was disinclined to bother with Laughing Dragon. He kept an eye on the divine dream jade slip, looking forward to another change in Lin Ming's merit points.

As the next 20 some breaths of time passed, Lin Ming's merit points remained still. But at this moment, the divine dream jade slip suddenly shined with a brilliant blue light. Lin Ming's named flashed and the numbers behind it began to jump up by a maddening amount!

The figure rapidly rose by tens of thousands, immediately breaking past 100,000. It rose by hundreds of thousands, 600,000, 700,000, 800,000, 900,000, one million!

"Heavens!"

The disciple responsible for keeping track of the divine dream jade slip cried out in alarm, nearly dropping the jade slip. Lin Ming's merit point value rose to one million but it didn't end there. It rapidly broke past 1.5 million and rose straight to 2 million!

"What!?"

Huo Violentstone's eyes widened. He kept his eyes and senses locked onto the divine dream jade slip.

As Laughing Dragon heard the two people cry out in shock, he immediately stood up. As he looked toward the jade slip in the Ancient Phoenix Clan disciple's hands, he saw a number projected in the air, rapidly rising, dazzling, enough to make him dizzy.

"How..." Laughing Dragon was dazed. "Lin Ming, he... What has he done?"

Huo Violentstone kept his complete concentration focused on the divine dream jade slip and maintained total silence.

The barrier of 2 million was instantly broken through!

This number immediately flung Dragon One's 1.6 million far behind it.

Lin Ming's number began to rise in units of 100,000, then by units of 1 million.

After 2 million, the number jumped by another million, reaching 3 million!

3.1 million!

3.2 million!

3.3 million!

Finally, the figure stopped at 3.36 million.

In a single breath, Li Ming rose from 20,000 to 3.36 million!

This number of merit points took him from the 100 million rankings and put him straight into the top 28 ranking of True Martial Great World!

Not to mention Laughing Dragon being shocked, but even Huo Violentstone was left bewildered. In truth, Huo Violentstone didn't have too great a grasp on Lin Ming's strength. Lin Ming had too many secrets on him Huo Violentstone didn't know about. He also didn't know that after leaving the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Lin Ming's strength had risen by a terrifying degree.

Huo Violentstone's original expectations were to raise Lin Ming into a first-class figure like Xiao Daoji or Huo Burning Heaven, someone that could become a half-step World King in the future. From there, he could restore the Ancient Phoenix Clan's honor and lead them to a brighter, more prosperous future.

In this First Martial Meeting, Huo Violentstone didn't have high expectations of Lin Ming to begin with. He only wanted Lin Ming to pass through the preliminaries and obtain a good result in the semi-finals, hopefully entering the top 100,000 rankings of the Divine Realm. As for entering the true finals, Huo Violentstone felt this was a hopeless dream. This was because of the time spent training and the fact that Lin Ming only had an early Divine Sea cultivation. In terms of cultivation and time in training, Lin Ming was at far too great a disadvantage!

But he never imagined Lin Ming would give him such a pleasant surprise!

Only several hours had passed before Lin Ming finally started to move, and yet he immediately rose to the top 28 rankings of the True Martial Great World. If he could continue this momentum, he might even have a chance of reaching the top 10 or even the top 5 rankings of a great world!

Lin Ming's surprise ranking immediately caught the attention of everyone in the palace. Everyone looked over at Huo Violentstone, including Elders of the Kirin Clan and Roc Clan, as well as high level figures from many peak eighth-grade sects. These eighth-grade sects were mostly related through marriage.

Everyone looked at the divine dream jade slip in Huo Violentstone's hands. The long number that was projected in the air left everyone dizzy.

At this time, the originally shocked Huo Violentstone responded. He began to laugh, guffawing loudly, showing off his satisfaction without holding back.

"Hahahahahahahahahaha! Yes! Well done! I said that with Lin Ming's strength, sweeping away those little baby dragonlings should be nothing more than child's play, and it seems I was right! Only several hours have passed and yet his score has already reached 3.36 million! What was that baby dragon's score again? I think it was 1.6 million or something low like that, haha, Lin Ming's score is over twice that!"

Huo Violentstone's voice was originally of the extremely loud variety, where not even sound insulation could stop it. At this time, he was only afraid no one would hear just how loud he was laughing. Even people outside heard his loud bellows of happiness. As for those wandering the palace halls, their ears were left shaking in numbness.

Laughing Dragon's face turned gloomy. He wasn't an idiot. If Lin Ming's ranking leapt up so much, there was only a single possibility. That was, he had killed an extreme genius of a World King level Holy Land; otherwise, it was impossible to achieve such a ranking!

Such a strength was something that Dragon One absolutely could not compare with. Let alone the current Dragon One, not even the gifted Dragon One who died in the God Beast Mystic Realm could obtain such a score.

Moreover, according to the projections of time, Lin Ming hadn't taken long to finish this fight. Such strength was truly terrifying.

If Laughing Dragon was able to think of this, the Elders of the other Holy Lands and eighth-grade sects could also come to this conclusion.

For a time, all sorts of praises and congratulations filled the air.

"Congratulations Elder Huo!"

"Haha, what a celebratory occasion. The Ancient Phoenix Clan has picked up a gem this time!"

"With Nephew Lin's talent, becoming a half-step World King in the future is already 90% guaranteed!"

As the Elders in the hall began congratulating Huo Violentstone, he received them all, whether they were true or not. He heartily laughed, saying, “This old man’s judgment when looking at others is never wrong. This Lin Ming completed the Ancient Phoenix smelting trial’s Thousand Slaughter, then left to adventure and gain experiences. Now it seems his achievements are even greater than they were before! However, ahem, his personality is a bit too casual and lazy. He probably isn’t even taking these preliminaries seriously!”

Huo Violentstone spoke in a very flat tone, causing Laughing Dragon’s lips to pull down in a straight grimace. This damned old man, give him a few rays of sunlight and he could illuminate an entire planet. It seemed he couldn’t hold his head up high today.

………

Divine Dream World –

Lin Ming stood amidst the razed jungle. In his vision, the mass of energy Zhong Wenshu had dissipated into after dying had broken down into lines of red and yellow light. Although these red and yellow lights were far from comparable to the brilliant and fantastical lines of the Divine Dream Law he absorbed using the Magic Cube, they were still many times brighter than the energy lines he absorbed from the nightmare beasts, and the energy inherent within them was tens of thousands of times greater.

Lin Ming allowed this mass of energy to float towards him. He slowly reached out his hand and thrust it into the energy lights. For a time, the red and yellow lines turned chaotic, turning into countless streams of light that submerged into Lin Ming’s body.

The icy cold dreamland energy spread through Lin Ming’s body like clear spring water. The energy finally converged at his soul, nourishing the two soul marks there. These two marks shined with brilliant light. They were filled with something close to perfection.

Following that, Lin Ming could feel as if his own soul was being pulled upwards by some invisible power. This sort of feeling was like a mortal climbing up a tower, a level at a time, never dropping until they finally reached the top. At the summit, that feeling of wonder and victory would spread through the body as though they became immortal.

This light and floating feeling made one feel as if they dominated the world and looked over all with the eyes of a divine god. Such a feeling even seemed as if it purified the soul.

Lin Ming could see his soul form within his spiritual sea shining. In that moment, he underwent a holy baptism where his soul seemed to be transformed.

Above his spiritual sea, his battle spirit was also vitalized, faintly approaching gold perfection.

This was the effects of the Divine Dream Law transcendent divine might. After Lin Ming perceived it for two whole months and also underwent a baptism of dreamland energy he was finally seeing a harvest from his efforts.

Chapter 1187 – Goal: Nightmare Canyon

Chapter 1187 – Goal: Nightmare Canyon

…

…

…

"If this continues, maybe I can use these nine months in the Divine Dream World to rise to the middle Divine Sea realm. Moreover, the benefits to my soul and battle spirit I'll gain here will be much greater!"

As Lin Ming realized this, he became overjoyed. With his current strength and cultivation level, he didn't have any confidence in competing with an Empyrean descendant. Once he met a late Divine Sea Empyrean descendant, his chances of victory were even slimmer.

But if he could cultivate to the middle Divine Sea realm, that would give him a tiny fraction of hope.

But to do so he had to train and accumulate more and more divine dream energy. Lin Ming discovered that after he killed Zhong Wenshu and absorbed a massive amount of divine dream energy, he wa unable to use all of it. He could only make use of a tiny fraction of it; most of it dissipated.

"I wonder just what Empyrean Divine Dream's complete transcendent divine might is like. If I could learn it, with the Magic Cube supporting me, my own strength and cultivation speed will rise dramatically." Lin Ming thought to himself.

At this moment, he discovered that the two small tracker fellows were still alive. It was with a great stroke of luck the two of them had managed to dodge the explosive shockwaves. But they were already scared silly. To them, escaping here was impossible. The difference in strength was simply too great. With Lin Ming's divine sense tracking them, it was impossible to run away.

As for staying here, the pressure made every second feel like a year, a suffering worse than death.

As they saw Lin Ming look at them, their souls, scared to their very cores, nearly vanished to dust.

Dying in the Divine Dream World wasn't actually too scary. What they feared was the implications outside. They personally learned that Lin Ming was even more ruthless than Zhong Wenshu. After offending such a character, it would be impossible for them to sleep or eat with peace in the future.

"Great Hero Lin, I beg for your forgiveness. We have eyes but we couldn't see Mount Tai. A great lord like yourself shouldn't remember idiots like us. Just treat us like a fart and forget about us."

Lin Ming coldly smiled. To him, these two were nothing more that insects. Killing them was simply, but doing so didn't hold any meaning.

"You two, tell me information about Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies."

"Sa-Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies?" The two tiny trackers gulped. They subconsciously thought that Lin Ming wanted them to monitor Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies. If they did something like that, their fates would probably even be more miserable than offending Lin Ming. After all, they still had to live in the True Martial Great World.

"I don't need you to monitor Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies, you two likely don't have that ability to begin with. I only need you to tell me where they usually go hunting as well as some places nearby Immemorial Imperial City that have the highest rank nightmare beasts to hunt!"

Lin Ming believed that Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies wouldn't deliberately avoid him, and they might even look for him instead. Wanting to find these three should be extremely easy.

"Yes, yes." The two small martial artists nodded, their faces looking as if they had been stuffed full of garlic. They quickly iterated what they knew about the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion, "Great Hero Lin, Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies frequently go to Nightmare Canyon. The nightmare beasts there are very high ranked and there's even some monsters that Zhong Wenshu and the others do not dare to provoke. Besides Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies, there is also a red bamboo hat woman. That woman is particularly ruthless. She will kill any others without even batting an eye. Zhong Wenshu as well as Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies all dread encountering her," the two small martial artists rapidly said.

This information was actually quite useful to Lin Ming. "Nightmare Canyon. That should be a name the martial artists have given this location within the Divine Dream World. Also that red bamboo hat woman, that should be the woman who fought for the Boundless World Pill against me. She is the final disciple of a World King level powerhouse who fell from that boundary."

Lin Ming wasn't too worried. "Where is Nightmare Canyon?"

"Reporting to Great Hero Lin. Nightmare Canyon is 3000 miles southeast of Immemorial Imperial City. Nearly all the top masters of Immemorial Imperial City are gathered there."

"Mm..." Lin Ming thought for a moment, then suddenly smiled, "Although I'm not worried you will disclose news of me to Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies, it will be a bit troublesome if they hide from me or set up some kind of trap. You may both take a brief sleep. Rest assured, I won't trouble you in the real world."

Lin Ming lifted his hand as he spoke. The two small martial artists jumped up in fright before immediately responding, "Thank you Great Hero Lin for forgiving us. We do not need Great Hero Lin to do anything, us brothers will finish this ourselves."

The two small martial artists looked at each other, then took out weapons from their spatial ring. They aimed it at each other's hearts, grit their teeth, clenched their eyes, and savagely stabbed it in!

Puff! Puff!

Blood shot out. The two small trackers actually committed suicide. Lin Ming looked at them, a bit surprised. These two fellows were sufficiently ruthless.

Although this was only a dreamland space, the feeling of a weapon digging into their hearts was the exact same as it was in the real world. Not everyone would have the courage to commit suicide like this.

The two tracker martial artists soon turned into soul wisps that flew back to Immemorial Imperial City. They would have to wait until the next day to be reincarnated. The two of them already decided their next course of actions. After reviving, they would stay within the safety of the city. The time for the first round of eliminations was fast approaching and they both would definitely be eliminated. They wanted to gather their things and quickly leave, lest they be caught up in a stormy battle between these giants again. If they were a bit careless, they might even lose their lives in the real world.

Lin Ming glanced over at Zhong Wenshu's three remaining minions. These three were already finished. Lin Ming shot out three true essence energy arrows and instantly ended their lives.

Although the three of them had some merit points, their difference with Lin Ming's current merit point value was too great. Added together, the three of them didn't even give him ten points each. This amount couldn't even be considered a rounding error.

He checked up on his own merit point ranking; he was only rank 28. This ranking couldn't be considered too high.

"I've obtained 60% of Zhong Wenshu's merit points but that only brought me up to rank 28. I estimate that Zhong Wenshu should have been around rank 20. Sacred Martial

Mansion's three prodigies definitely won't surpass Zhong Wenshu in ranking. In other words, within the True Martial Great World, there's at least a dozen plus people I don't know of that are all ranked above Zhong Wenshu. These people should mostly originate from the True Martial Holy Lands, and their number of merit points should be increasingly high the higher their rank."

When he had several thousand merit points, adding on several more thousand would have brought him to the top million rankings. But once he reached the top 10 rankings, perhaps not even another million merit points could bring him up another rank.

Thinking this far, Lin Ming didn't immediately go to Nightmare Canyon. Rather, he sat down in the jungle, meditating for the moment as he digested the dreamland energy Zhong Wenshu left behind after his death.

The more Lin Ming perceived this dreamland energy, the more entranced he was by the Divine Dream law.

Lin Ming truly wanted to learn this transcendent divine might.

As Lin Ming was perceiving the transcendent divine might, Zhong Wenshu was waiting for his revival. Within the dreamland space, the process of resurrection required a full day.

Zhong Wenshu slowly percolated in the dreamland as it started to reform. His consciousness had returned two hours ago and he could check up on his current merit points ranking.

"2.24 million merit points, True Martial Great World ranked 46!"

As Zhong Wenshu saw this ranking, he nearly went mad with rage. All of his efforts, his never-ending slaughter of two months, all vanished in one go!

From rank 46 to the top 20, the amount of additional effort required to reach that high was ridiculously arduous. But his merit points all became a gift to someone else!

Lin Ming sat still for two months before he moved. In just several hours, he savagely ripped apart all of his achievements. Lin Ming had leapt into the top 30, but as for Zhong Wenshu, he dropped down to rank 46!

How could he not hate Lin Ming!?

“Lin Ming, only one of us can exist in this world!”

Zhong Wenshu gnashed his teeth. And at this time, underneath the giant gold scroll of the True Martial Great World, the Elder of Dual Polarity Palace saw Zhong Wenshu’s ranking suddenly plummet.

“What is going on here!?”

“Wenshu has dropped down to rank 46! His merit points have dropped from 5.6 million to 2.24 million; 60% of his merit points have been erased! He was clearly killed by someone!” Dual Polarity Palace’s Zhong Family Head clenched his teeth as he spoke, nearly crumbling apart the divine dream jade slip in his hands.

“Who did it? Was it a participant or a nightmare beast?”

“It’s unlikely to be a nightmare beast. Wenshu has already been adventuring in the Divine Dream World for two months, it’s impossible for him to not understand the limits of his own strength in comparison to the nightmare bests there. No, he shouldn’t have died to the claws of a nightmare beasts. There is a 90% chance he was killed by another participant. However, I have no idea who it could be,” a Dual Polarity Palace Elder gloomily said.

This was a tournament that involved the fame and glory of a sect, even the future achievements of everyone participating. If someone killed someone else, they would naturally become enemies. Between the World King level Holy Lands, there was a tacit understanding that they would co-exist in peace with each other. It was impossible for the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion to attack Zhong Wenshu, and for Zhong Wenshu to do the same to them.

“We can’t find it out now. We don’t know who the participants might be and whose position rapidly rose just now.”

“We can only wait until Wenshu comes out to learn of the truth.”

Dual Polarity Palace had no choice but to endure this humiliation and rage for now. If it were the True Martial Holy Lands that had done this, they had no choice but to bear this shame and swallow their pride. After all, this was originally a slaughter game between the participants. However, if it was a sect that was inferior to Dual Polarity Palace, they would do everything in their power to take back what was taken, with interest included.

At this time within the Divine Dream World, 16 hours of time had passed. Lin Ming opened his eyes. Within the dreamland space, Zhong Wenshu had nearly reformed himself too.

Lin Ming said to himself, “There’s still 8 hours until a full day ends. Zhong Wenshu and his minions should have nearly revived by now. If they were to inform Sacred Martial Mansion’s three prodigies about me, that might be a bit troublesome for me.”

Lin Ming didn’t fear that Zhong Wenshu would search for Sacred Martial Mansion’s three prodigies and join forces against him. He only feared that they would go into hiding once they found out he was coming. Of course, the chances of this happening weren’t all that great. The three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion had extremely proud and arrogant dispositions, so they wouldn’t hide even if they knew he was coming. Moreover, Zhong Wenshu would definitely want to see their three rankings drop so that he could pass them on the rankings.

Lin Ming stood up. His figure flashed as he flew straight toward Nightmare Canyon.

To fly straight through the skies of the Divine Dream World was an extremely reckless and daring behavior; it would cause many nightmare beasts to notice whoever was flying.

As it was, many nightmare beasts that flew in the sky saw Lin Ming and began to plunge toward him.

Lin Ming merely flicked out his fingers, shooting out true essence energy arrows that he poured his battle spirit into, easily killing these flying beasts.

“The merit points are low and their defensive power is quite strong. No wonder there’s so few participants that choose to kill these flying nightmare beasts.”

3000 miles wasn’t much to Lin Ming. Soon, a massive mystical canyon appeared on the horizon. This was undoubtedly Nightmare Canyon.

Chapter 1188 – Declaration of War

Chapter 1188 – Declaration of War

…

…

….

Hu –

Lin Ming fell from the sky, officially stepping into Nightmare Canyon.

In this canyon, besides massive mushrooms that rose up like giant umbrellas into the sky, there was no vegetation. These mushrooms were vividly colored and emitted a touch of faint light. They seemed to be extremely toxic.

Walking through this mushroom jungle, one could see hard black rocks all around. Many of these rocks were cracked apart and stained red with blood.

After the nightmare beasts died, their corpses would vanish. Only a fraction of their blood would be left over. These blood stains were actually condensed from dreamland energy and didn't have enough time to dissipate yet.

As Lin Ming travelled deeper into the canyon, there began to appear signs of slaughter. The signs became increasingly bloody and intense.

Massive fissures, crushed rocks, shattered mountains, and all sorts of broken saint artifacts were stabled into hard stone, shocking and alarming.

The rocks of Nightmare Canyon were over a hundred times harder than steel. Only like this could the terrain barely hold its shape in the intense explosions of true essence. Otherwise, Nightmare Canyon likely wouldn't even exist anymore.

The howling wind in the canyon was as sharp as knives. It became increasingly violent, rushing over Lin Ming's flapping clothing.

The light was dim and monochromatic. Only a faint star light trickling down from above illuminated the canyon floor. But for a martial artist, the amount of light didn't matter!

Roar! Roar! Roar!

In the darkness, the cries of nightmare beasts came surging out, shaking the earth like rolling thunder claps. Just from listening to these roars, one could sense that these nightmare beasts were extraordinary.

"Mm?"

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He suddenly felt several deep killing intents locking onto him. He maintained his composure as he traced his spatial ring, spreading his senses throughout the darkness. He could see that 100 feet away, hidden within a outcrop of black rocks, four people were hiding. They were only waiting for someone to cross their path to start their ambush.

At this time, these four people were talking to each other. "A fresh face! I have no idea who it is!"

"It should be a newbie. Dinner has finally arrived, boys!"

These people rapidly spoke with true essence sound transmissions. After staying in Nightmare Canyon for long enough, they knew who they could provoke and who they had to evade. In Nightmare Canyon, disputes weren't randomly created. As for World King Holy Land peak geniuses like Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies, they inevitably stood at the peak of the food chain here. No one dared to have any ideas of messing with them.

At the same time, the World King Holy Land geniuses wouldn't go and kill other participants. This was because their merit points were far higher than everyone else here, and with the rules in place, killing other people wasn't too meaningful. For most situations, the many participants in Nightmare Canyon could maintain a tenuous balance.

The area one had for hunting was divided by strength. The stronger one was, the greater their hunting grounds were and the higher its quality.

But once a newbie arrived, this tenuous balance would shatter momentarily. There would always be people that took these newcomers as delicious delicacies.

"Hide your aura. Once he approaches us, we'll ambush him!"

"Okay. There's four of us against one of him; we should be able to instantly kill him. I wonder how many merit points he has. If it's less than 100,000, that'd be boring. After being reduced by the rules, the four of us won't gain much at all."

"For someone to dare come to Nightmare Canyon, they should have some skill. I just hope they aren't some random idiot that stumbled into here."

As the four martial artists were waiting to ambush Lin Ming, their complexions suddenly changed. A horrifying killing intent overwhelmed the world and came crashing down on them. A deep red spear cut through the darkness like a hidden snake, aiming straight at their throats!

"Be careful!"

The four martial artists fell into a perilous situation. They realized they had made a grave mistake!

Their opponent had discovered their ambush ahead of time and even instantly launched such a savage and crazy attack.

“Attack!” the leader of the four martial artists shouted out at once. However, their joined efforts were useless. They felt the energy within their bodies rapidly fade away, leaving them unable to summon any strength. A brilliant red light flashed past their vision as an icy cold feeling cut across their necks, leaving blood splashing onto the ground.

They suddenly felt their consciousnesses being pulled away.

They had already felt this sensation of death more than once before.

In fact, in the life or death slaughter field of Nightmare Canyon, most people had already died several times.

Lin Ming pulled back the Phoenix Blood Spear. He had only used a single spear strike just now, clean and neat!

There was still a martial artist that hadn’t yet died. He groaned in pain, never thinking that this newbie would actually be so fierce. They all had a faint understanding of the ridiculously terrifying people near Immemorial Imperial City, but they had never heard of this young man! Did he come from another city? Their luck was truly shitty!

But with their merit points, even if they were killed several times over they could still make it through the first round of eliminations. There was always hope for more chances in the future.

“Killing these people doesn’t even give much merit points. The suppression of the rules is truly ruthless,” Lin Ming thought out loud. He didn’t even bother using the dreamland energy of these martial artists.

“Oh, one hasn’t died yet.” Lin Ming walked up and squatted down, asking this person who was choking on his own blood, “Tell me, are the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion deeper inside?”

“You… idiot… looking for… Sacred Martial Mansion’s three prodigies… is looking for death, hehe…” As the martial artist spoke, blood constantly bubbled out from between his lips. He hadn't attended Immemorial Imperial City's auction, so he didn't recognize Lin Ming. He only thought that Lin Ming was a participant from another city that had come to challenge Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies.

"You don't have to worry about me. If you aren't going to speak, make sure you never leave the city. If I see you, I'll kill you." Lin Ming put a foot down on the martial artist's chest and pushed down. The martial artist hasped, his entire body twitching as more blood gushed out from his mouth.

"They… are… inside…"

"Good… oh, and I have one more question. Why did you try and ambush me? Do you think you can just ambush every participant that enters Nightmare Canyon?" Although Lin Ming didn't hear the true essence sound transmissions the four martial artists exchanged, his soul perception was extremely sharp, becoming even more and more profound as his understandings into the Divine Dream Law deepened. There was no way he would mistake the killing intent those four had.

"It's because… you're a fresh face…"

"I see."

Lin Ming loosened his foot.

A fresh face meant a fat sheep? Well, that was understandable. It seemed that if he wanted to travel deeper into Nightmare Canyon, he would have to spend a really long time doing so. Not only would he need to fight nightmare beasts, but he also had to face the ambush of all the participants along the way. Although Lin Ming didn't fear these people, fighting all of them would take up his time.

His time was extremely precious!

Currently, Lin Ming's merit point ranking was only secondary to him. The main reason he wanted to kill people was to wrest away their dreamland energy, allowing him to continue perceiving the Divine Dream Law.

With a transcendent divine might placed right in front of him, he had to grasp this chance no matter what the situation was like. In order to maximize the amount of time he could perceive it, he would need to make full use of every breath of time in the Divine Dream World.

Lin Ming kicked the half dead trial challenger out of the way. He peered deep into the dark depths of Nightmare Canyon and summoned a burst of true essence.

He shouted out as loud as he could, "Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies! Come out!"

After he poured his energy into his voice, it produced a riotous shockwave that crashed deep into the canyon. Wherever this sonic blast passed, rocks would shatter.

"Come out!"

"Come out!"

"Come out!"

The titanic voice echoed through Nightmare Canyon. It was especially resounding as it reflected against the rocky walls.

In that moment, nearly every participant in Nightmare Canyon heard this shout.

They were all left in a startled daze. Who was this person that dared to be so arrogant!?

"Someone is challenging Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies!"

"Is it Zhong Wenshu? Is it that bamboo hat woman?"

“Are you an idiot? That is clearly a man’s voice, and how could it possibly be Zhong Wenshu? If he faced off against any of Sacred Martial Mansion’s three prodigies in a one versus one, he might have the advantage. But if he were to face off against all three, his only choice would be too escape. Don’t forget that those three all come from a World King Holy Land. You don’t have to be a genius to know that they can definitely form an array on the battlefield!”

“That’s right, a battle array!”

Once those three formed a battle array, their strength wouldn’t be as simple as adding them up together. Instead, their strength would multiply!

Perhaps even a master from the True Martial Holy Lands would dread them!

If someone knew this but still dared to challenge them, they had to be either a retard or a truly ferocious individual.

“Perhaps it isn’t just one person challenging Sacred Martial Mansion’s three prodigies, but a group?”

“Maybe. Let’s go and have a look. It might be someone from another city. After all, True Martial Great World has more than just Immemorial Imperial City!”

Many participants were interested in watching this battle. They all began to make their way toward the direction of the voice. Among these people, there was a red-clothed woman.

Her figure was slender and shapely, and she wore a wide bamboo hat on her head. Her appearance was completely covered up, but her voice was harsh and gravelly. “How interesting. If I’m not wrong, it’s that man’s voice. Ten days from now I planned on challenging all of you one at a time to prove I’m the strongest one here, but I never thought you would be the first to issue this challenge. This is also fine. I want to take a good look and see just what qualifications you have to be so confident and dare to face Sacred Martial Mansion’s three prodigies.”

The red-clothed bamboo hat woman was extremely fast. She hurtled toward the opening of Nightmare Canyon like a straight white beam of light.

“Big Brother, did you hear that? Someone came here to challenge us!”

As the flame-haired Sacred Yueping heard Lin Ming’s voice, he chuckled, “How amusing. We’ve been in the Divine Dream World for so long and yet this is the first time someone has challenged us!”

“Listening to that voice, he sounds like that little fellow who bought the Boundless World Pill. How humorous. After he entered the Divine Dream World, he holed himself up in Immemorial Imperial City for over two months and when he finally decided to come out of his shell, the first thing he does is look for us. What confidence!” Sacred Yanran softly said from the side. Her beautiful face was filled with all sorts of devilish expressions.

“Come, let’s go and meet him! He came at just the right time. But we shouldn’t underestimate him. This boy likely stumbled on some great lucky chance,” Sacred Tianhao said, rubbing his chin.

“Humph, for those that have entered the First Martial Meeting, just who hasn’t encountered their own lucky chance? To have a lucky chance or two isn’t strange at all. The key point is one’s own talent. Come, let’s go and meet that crazy brat. If he didn’t look for me, I would’ve looked for him. I’m still waiting to get back at him for that insult at the Imperial City Auction,” Sacred Yueping said with loathing in his voice. He was still simmering over that disastrous defeat he suffered at the Imperial City Auction.

The three martial artists put away their weapons and flew straight toward the entrance of Nightmare Canyon.

Chapter 1189 – Fighting the Three Prodigies

Chapter 1189 – Fighting the Three Prodigies

…

…

…

Roar! Roar!

Several fierce nightmare beasts rushed out from deep within the canyon, jumping towards Lin Ming!

Lin Ming's declaration of war not only attracted the many martial artists in Nightmare Canyon, but it also attracted many nightmare beasts. These nightmare beasts came covered in cruel looking barbs and their aura was sinister. These nightmare beasts were many times more wild and dangerous than the ones he encountered in the jungle.

Lin Ming remained motionless. The Phoenix Blood Spear struck out like a viper, easily piercing through these nightmare beasts' foreheads.

Puff! Puff!

Several nightmare beasts crashed to the ground in their wild sprint, tumbling into a ball that smashed into a wall, causing blood to splash out.

The rock that was over a hundred times harder than steel was ripped to shreds.

"How fierce that person is!"

Many people commented as they saw how easily Lin Ming killed the nightmare beasts. This wasn't something most of them could hope to accomplish.

"I know him. He's that young man who bought the Boundless World Pill at the Imperial City Auction."

"That's right! He's the person who bought the Boundless World Pill with 7 trillion violet sun stones. That price is simply insane!"

Many martial artists had already caught up to the scene. From these people, a good number of them had attended the Imperial City Auction. They had an extremely profound impression of Lin Ming.

Most of them thought that for anyone to dare challenge the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion, it had to be a squad of martial artists that perhaps came from a nearby city. But they never imagined it was only a single person. Lin Ming!

"Good heavens! That boy made enemies with several World King Holy Land geniuses during that debacle at the Imperial City Auction House. Now he actually dares to come and challenge them! This mortal hatred must be higher than the heavens!"

"You idiot, these people have already ripped apart any semblance of civility. If that boy didn't go looking for Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies, they would have gone looking for him. But for him to challenge them alone, isn't that a bit too forced?"

"I also think it's ridiculous. Sacred Martial Mansion will fight together; it is impossible for him to split them apart. If he could actually win, that would mean his strength was on par with a peak genius of the True Martial Holy Lands!"

More and more martial artists caught up and most of them doubted Lin Ming's actions. If there was a person that had strength equal to the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion combined, that person's strength would probably rank in the top five of the True martial Great World. Everyone found it hard to believe that this non-descript youth had the ability to rank amongst the top five junior martial artists of the True Martial Great World.

As some people joined in on this discussion, they mockingly said, "I heard ever since this boy entered the Divine Dream World, he's been holed up in the Immemorial Imperial City and hasn’t taken even half a step out. Now the first time he comes out, he actually challenges the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion. I think he might have some mental issues.

It had to be known that this was only a dreamland space, a place where the souls and consciousness co-existed with others. Cultivating here did not improve their true bodies, so no one could imagine just what Lin Ming had been doing wasting his time away at Immemorial Imperial City.

Not just that, but Lin Ming had done nothing in these two months. What left others speechless the most was that as soon as he came out of the city, he challenged the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion before doing anything else. This sort of behavior was definitely not that of a normal person.

At this time, a red-clothed bamboo hat woman rushed through Nightmare Canyon. Her figure was light and vivid, like a butterfly fluttering through the dark. As she dodged through the massive toxic mushrooms, she didn’t even emit the least bit of sound.

As soon as the woman landed on the ground, many other people around her began to tremble, subconsciously retreating from this bamboo hat woman.

From the moment that people arrived at Nightmare Canyon to hunt nightmare beasts, in order to obtain more merit points, it was common for participants to kill other participants.

This red bamboo hat woman was all alone. As someone that didn’t originate from a World King Holy Land background, she was an extremely attractive target for others. Many martial artists tried to kill her. They came in squads, using frontal attacks, sneak attacks, and even tricks and traps, but the result was that all of them were slain by this red bamboo hat woman. Moreover, she was extremely ruthless and decisive. The dead would often have their bellies sheared open and their limbs cut off.

Over time, no one dared to confront this red bamboo hat woman again. Whenever someone saw her, they would turn around and flee.

This red bamboo hat woman eventually came to occupy a very high quality and large hunting region in Nightmare Canyon, second only to the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion.

Of course, even in the eyes of others, even this red bamboo hat woman was inferior to the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion. After all, there were three of them and each one of them was a peak master. If they teamed up, they should be strongest force in Immemorial Imperial City.

The red bamboo hat woman looked at Lin Ming, and Lin Ming also looked at her. The two of them didn't speak, but they could both feel a faint fighting spirit through each other's eyes.

At this time, a uproarious laughter filled the air, "Hahaha! What did I say? I was wondering just who was so arrogant to challenge us, and it turns out it really was you!"

A man with wild-red hair rushed out from the depths of Nightmare Canyon. His face was square and edged as if it were hewed by a saber, and his entire body was burning with a flaming red aura, making him seem like a demon.

He was the second brother of Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies – Sacred Yueping.

Although Sacred Yueping was not the oldest brother, because of his reckless personality, he was even more renowned than Sacred Tianhao.

After landing on the ground, Sacred Yueping flourished a red spear from his spatial ring. His weapon was also a spear. Moreover, it appeared extremely similar to the Phoenix Blood Spear.

After Sacred Yueping arrived, Sacred Tianhao and Sacred Yanran followed close behind. Sacred Tianhao was colossal at nine feet tall – he was over two heads taller than an average person. Sacred Tianhao's weapon was a black heavy sword, half a foot wide and as tall as an adult male.

Compared to Sacred Tianhao, Sacred Yanran was cute and petite. She sat on Sacred Tianhao's broad shoulders. Her weapons were unique; they were a pair of green rings that looked like a disk formed by a rounded snake. It was easily wide enough to fit over her waist.

The three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion each had their own unique talents and abilities that complemented each other's forms of combat.

Eldest brother Sacred Tianhao excelled in strength and violent attacks. Youngest sister Sacred Yanran specialized in speed and the ability to sneak attack from any direction. As for Sacred Yueping, his attacks were wild and fierce, and he was all around superb.

If these three joined forces, they were able to display an even greater combat strength. This was the reason why they often stayed together and were referred to as a unit.

With the Phoenix Blood Spear, Lin Ming drew a crescent moon on the ground. This battle could erupt at any moment!

Everyone drew back a little bit, waiting to see the great battle commence. This could be a wonderful and marvelous battle, but it could also be a joke. It wouldn't be a surprise to anyone present if Lin Ming instantly died. After all, no one here had seen Lin Ming exchange moves with a true top genius

As Sacred Yueping saw Lin Ming's weapon, he sneered and said, "A spear, how amusing. I also use a spear, and I'm often referred to as the number one spear master of Immemorial Imperial City's younger generation. This time, let me have a good look at just how your spear compare to mine! Big brother, third sister, you do not need to fight. Me alone is more than enough to deal with the likes of him!"

As Sacred Yueping spoke, he casually lifted his spear and pointed it straight toward Lin Ming, the provocation clear in his actions.

Sacred Tianhao faintly frowned but didn't stop Sacred Yueping, allowing him to face Lin Ming one on one. Although Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies often joined forces to fight an enemy, that was when they were facing older powerhouses or their senior-apprentice brothers and sisters that were over a hundred years older than them. If they joined forces to fight against a peer, that was truly a bit shameful.

“Are you ready? Take my first spear attack!”

Before Sacred Yueping attacked Lin Ming, he actually gave a warning. This was proof that he was confident in his own abilities. Lin Ming only faintly smiled, keeping his spear pointed toward the ground as before.

At this time, Sacred Yueping finally moved. The dense black rock beneath him exploded as Sacred Yueping vanished in an afterimage, instantly arriving in front of Lin Ming with his spear cutting down!

The momentum of this attack was overwhelming, like a falling meteor. But what was extremely strange was that as this spear came slashing down, the speed of it seemed to rapidly slow. This spear seemed to move at a mortal speed, slow and simple without anything special to it.

Even so, it gave off an extremely confusing and profound feeling.

“What a slow spear. Is he underestimating Lin Ming and intentionally provoking him?”

“You idiot, those are the Time Laws! Moreover, they’re Time Laws that have formed their own time enchantment. The boundary of this attack is extremely high! If this spear struck you, you would die over a hundred times!”

All of the martial artists rapidly spoke with true essence sound transmissions. And during this time, Sacred Yueping’s spear still hadn’t fallen!

Lin Ming lifted the Phoenix Blood Spear to block this attack, but discovered that his speed was even slower than Sacred Yueping’s. His body was sluggish and mired, simply unable to defend!

Time Laws – Concept of Stagnation!

As a peak disciple of a World King Holy Land, Sacred Yueping naturally had some skill. His comprehension of the Time Laws had reached an extremely high boundary. Lin Ming, who had learned about the Time and Space Laws from Old Man Good Fortune, simply couldn't compare. As long as he was caught in Sacred Yueping's time distorting enchantment, Lin Ming would be suppressed from all directions!

As Lin Ming saw Sacred Yueping's spear nearly reaching his heart, he shouted out loud. Popping sounds crackled out from within his body. Within this time enchantment, these sounds extended out, seeming incomparably strange.

Gate of Wonder – open!

Golden Roc Shattering the Void!

Mystic Lightning Shade!

Lin Ming instantly displayed the limit of his speed. This time enchantment merely slowed down the flow of time. If Lin Ming's speed was overwhelmingly fast, even if he were slowed down to 1%, he still might have the advantage.

"Hah!"

Lin Ming drew backwards, thrusting the Phoenix Blood Spear in front of him and blocking the attack!

On one side was a hasty defense, on the other an attack with crushing momentum. As Lin Ming blocked this strike, he was pushed hundreds of feet backwards until he reached a black rock. He turned the Phoenix Blood Spear and fiercely stabbed it into the rock, stabilizing himself.

Zhii –

The Phoenix Blood Spear curved into an arc from the impact force.

“Hey, nice speed!” Sacred Yueping merrily said, his voice full of mirth. “I wonder just how long your luck will last.”

“Mm?” As Lin Ming felt the slightly restless blood vitality within his body, he discovered that the true essence Sacred Yueping struck out with was extremely tricky. After penetrating into his body, it began to rampage around, and it was also extremely tenacious. But this was not a problem to Lin Ming. He had absorbed phoenix blood essence, dragon bone marrow, and had even opened the Gate of Life. The toughness of his body was far from what this strange essence could possibly hope to affect, much less destroy. With just a thought, all of this true essence was wiped out.

With this strike, Sacred Yueping clearly held the advantage. As for Lin Ming, he seemed to suffer a loss.

Chapter 1190 – Fighting the Three Prodigies (B)

Chapter 1190 – Fighting the Three Prodigies (B)

…

…

…

“He blocked it! This boy actually blocked such a strange and mysterious Concept of Time attack, it seems he has some skills.”

“He barely managed to block it. He is probably internally injured because he was struck by Sacred Yueping’s tenacious true essence. He won’t be so lucky next time. Sacred Yueping’s time enchantment will only grow stronger!”

“That boy is already quite skilled. Sacred Yueping is a peak genius of the True Martial Great World, I fear he is ranked in the top 30 geniuses of this great world! This battle proves that this boy is a worthy opponent to a peak genius of a World King Holy Land. I really have no idea just where he came from!”

The power within Sacred Yueping’s spear strike just now was obvious to all who saw it. In fact, in front of so many people, Sacred Yueping wanted to instantly establish his own prestige with a single spear strike, but Lin Ming had managed to successfully defend. From this alone, everyone could feel that Lin Ming wasn’t some simpleton. At least, he wasn’t someone they could joke about.

“I don’t think we need to do anything; Second Brother can deal with him alone,” the tall Sacred Tianhao said. He folded his hands over his chest, thoughtfully observing the scene.

Sacred Yueping smiled and said, “Just now I only slowed down the flow of time by a factor of 100. But now, it won’t be so little. Prepare yourself for my second attack!” Sacred Yueping warned. This arrogant method of fighting really caused one’s eyebrows to rise.

Lin Ming sneered, not thinking much of it. He kept his spear pointed at the ground and said, “You sure like to blabber on, right? Why don’t you shut up and hurry up; my time is valuable.”

“You are courting death!” Sacred Yueping angrily shouted. His body rushed forwards again, but this time even his movements utilized the Concept of Time. To everyone watching, his speed seemed to be extremely slow; it was as if it took him a long time to reach Lin Ming, but also just the blink of an eye.

His spear thrust straight for Lin Ming’s head!

The Concept of Stagnation of the Time Laws slowed down oneself, but slowed down the opponent even more. This not only included movements, but also thoughts, senses, response times, and more. Everything crawled to a halt.

As Lin Ming saw this spear coming towards him, he didn’t open the Gate of Wonder. He knew that even if he was faster than before, he still wouldn’t be able to dodge Sacred Yueping’s spear.

He originally wanted to struggle with Sacred Yueping by utilizing the limits of his own understandings of the Time Laws. But after a single attempt, he realized he was far from being comparable to Sacred Yueping in that aspect. At this time, he was only able to return to a familiar domain and roll over these Time Laws with absolute strength!

Lin Ming’s thoughts focused. Between his eyebrows, the blazing blood of the Ancient Phoenix combusted and a terrifying energy welled up from within his body.

At that moment, a blood red lotus began to slowly bloom behind Lin Ming.

Heavenly Demon martial intent – grandmist space!

Hu – !

A profound and majestic force beyond description overwhelmed the world, covering the skies and falling down over the entire area.

This time enchantment was in essence a force field. By using a powerful energy, it could distort the flow of time within a certain area. Anyone that stepped into this enchantment would have no choice but to be caught under its spell.

Lin Ming's grandmist space was the same. However, the Grandmist Laws existed above the Time Laws. This was because before the universe formed, when there was nothing but chaos, all time and all space was compressed within the coagulum of grandmist energy, unable to separate.

The grandmist space smashed into the time enchantment. The two force fields pushed against each other, like two orbs that were being pressed together. One side was a deep gray and the other side was completely transparent. Dazzling beams of light burst out from where they met, entrancing and blinding.

Rumble rumble rumble!

In that moment, an explosive sound filled the air like endless thunderclaps rolling across the battlefield. Not only did it not stop, but it became increasingly savage and dangerous. If an ordinary Life Destruction martial artist were to hear this sound, their heartbeat would accelerate, their meridians would be injured, and perhaps even their hearts would stop beating as their blood vessels all ruptured in a gory death!

Sacred Yueping felt as if he had crashed into a mountain. This light barrier around his enchantment began to crack apart before it exploded like an eggshell. Sacred Yueping trembled, nearly vomiting up a mouthful of blood.

Afterwards, his entire body seemed to fall into a swamp. His strength rapidly drained from his body and even his true essence was being drawn out at an alarming rate. Within this strange space, he couldn't even summon 50% of his strength!

At this moment, Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and hurtled straight toward him!

“Shit!”

All of Sacred Yueping’s hairs stood up on end. Beside Sacred Yueping, Sacred Tianhao and Sacred Yanran’s complexions also instantly changed.

“Second brother is in danger, let’s go!”

Before Sacred Tianhao could instruct her, Sacred Yanran had already sprung down from Sacred Tianhao’s shoulder as she leapt toward Sacred Yueping.

“Grandmist space, erupt!”

A sharp light blazed in Lin Ming’s eyes. Although he didn’t fear the combined attack of Sacred Martial Mansion’s three prodigies, it would still be much easier for him if he cut down one of them first. He decisively opened the Heretical God Force and erupted the grandmist space, displaying an even greater strength.

Peng!

Sacred Yanran’s double rings cut into the grandmist space enchantment but failed to break it open. At this time, Lin Ming had already arrived in front of Sacred Yueping.

Sacred Yueping was shocked out of his mind!

“Celestial Tyrant Manual’s Hundred Layered Waves!”

Without gathering his strength, Lin Ming directly attacked with the last spear of the Hundred Layered Waves. Although this was the last spear, the truth was that it was composed of several other attacks. With all of this strength combined together, it could burst out with a nearly unparalleled might!

Suppressed within the grandmist space, Sacred Yueping found it difficult to even lift the spirit artifact spear in his hands. Even if he wanted to block the spear strike, it was nearly impossible to do so. The difference in strength between Lin Ming's first and second attack were to freakishly abnormal; he simply couldn't react to it!

The Hundred Layered Waves easily crushed apart Sacred Yueping's spear light and continued shooting straight towards his head!

At this time, a brown true essence rushed forth like a tsunami and covered Sacred Yueping, crashing into Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear. This strange brown power was deep and robust, just like the endless earth!

Lin Ming's spear collided with this power, causing a series of violent explosions to ring out.

As for Sacred Yueping, he bore the brunt of this impact and was sent flying backwards.

"Mm?"

Lin Ming's eyes instantly locked onto one of Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies, Sacred Tianhao.

That brown wave of energy was sent out by him. That power had a strange shifting and penetrative characteristic to it. Not only could it pierce through the grandmist space, but even after being weakened it could still display such an effect. It was a somewhat special ability.

Earth Laws?

Lin Ming suddenly realized. This Sacred Tianhao should be a master who trained in the Earth laws.

Sacred Martial Mansion was truly worthy of being called a World King Holy Land. They trained in all sorts of Laws, and one could randomly choose one and still find someone that had cultivated it to an extremely high boundary.

Bang!

Sacred Yueping crashed into a black boulder, crushing that boulder to pieces as he spat up a mouthful of blood. With Sacred Tianhao's help, his wounds weren't too heavy, but this was still an extremely distressing and embarrassing situation for him!

As everyone else looked at Sacred Yueping's appearance, all of them were shocked. This battle had shifted far too quickly, rapidly exceedingly all of their imaginations.

Lin Ming's strike just now at first sight seemed to be at a disadvantage, but the tables had instantly turned. He turned disaster into victory and nearly killed Sacred Yueping in the process. Finally, it was only with the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion joining together were they able to guarantee Sacred Yueping's life.

How could this be?

Within the crowd, the red bamboo hat woman looked at Lin Ming with a deep meaning in her eyes. Not only was there appreciation as she looked at him, but also a deep solemnity. She saw that from the start, Lin Ming only explored Sacred Yueping's Time Laws and tried to unravel them with his own understandings into the Time laws. This was his weakness and his opponent's strength, and still he dared to do something so reckless. For him to dare to do something like that was a testament toward the confidence he had in his own strength and overwhelming power. But he still failed and had suffered a loss during the first strike. Afterwards, he altered his plans and suppressed Sacred Yueping with absolute strength instead. He crushed apart Sacred Yueping's time enchantment, and this was the result.

"This boy who bought the Boundless World Pill, his absolute strength is too terrifying! That cunning energy that Sacred Yueping left in his body didn't do anything at all! What a truly terrifying power!” The red bamboo hat woman thought to herself, constantly contrasting her own strength with Lin Ming’s.

Woosh!

Sacred Yanran’s figure flashed as she instantly appeared next to Sacred Yueping. She asked with some worry, “Second brother, are you okay?”

“Fuck!”

Sacred Yueping crawled up from the ground, dirty and raging with shame. He wanted to rip apart Lin Ming with his bare hands.

On the other side, Sacred Tianhao was keeping his eyes locked onto Lin Ming, like a hunter staring at a wild tiger.

“It seems that Sacred Tiaohao is the strongest of Sacred Martial Mansion’s three prodigies, and he cultivates in the Earth Laws,” Lin Ming thought to himself. As part of the Five Element Laws, the Earth Laws were certainly lower ranked than the Space and Time Laws. But in truth, not even an Empyrean could study every Law to the limit. The Space and Time Laws were extremely high level Laws, but if one’s comprehension of them wasn’t deep enough, it would still be broken apart by the Five Element Laws.

“I’ve underestimated you,” Sacred Tianhao gloomily said. He knew this was far more than underestimating Lin Ming. Lin Ming’s strength was far greater than any one of them alone!

Lin Ming faintly smiled. He casually said, “You seem to have some skill. As for your little brother, he barely manages to pass in the aspect of Time Laws. As for his other aspects, he is simply far too disappointing. In terms of comprehensive combat strength, he isn’t even half as good as Zhong Wenshu.”

Lin Ming had simply spoken a few bantering words, but these words fell onto everyone’s ears like a bomb! From Lin Ming’s words, it was clear he had already fought with Zhong Wenshu!

With such a relaxed expression and the fact that Lin Ming was safely standing here, could that mean that Zhong Wenshu had already been…

“Zhong Wenshu was killed?”

“Impossible…”

The participants watching this battle glanced at each other, seeing awe and horror dawning in each other’s eyes. Zhong Wenshu was known as the top number one genius at Immemorial Imperial City. The True Martial Holy Lands originally had several disciples stationed at Immemorial Imperial City, but they left at some time afterwards. Zhong Wenshu was ranked number one here.

But now, Zhong Wenshu was killed by Lin Ming.

This also meant that Lin Ming’s ranking had far surpassed theirs. He simply wasn’t a character that any of them could compare with.

“How terrifying!”

“Where is that young man from?” Everyone looked at Lin Ming with fear in their eyes. If Lin Ming could obtain the advantage even when facing off against Sacred Martial Mansion’s three prodigies, it was highly possible that he had killed Zhong Wenshu!

“Could it be that even the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion will fall at his hand?”

Chapter 1191 – Strength Surpassing a 100 Million

Chapter 1191 – Strength Surpassing a 100 Million

…

…

….

Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies cornered Lin Ming from multiple angles. Sacred Yueping was flushed with anger, wishing that he could tear apart Lin Ming on the spot. As for Sacred Tianhao who was standing beside Sacred Yueping, he had a gloomy complexion as if he were dreading something.

"Lin Ming, right? That's what those people from the True Martial Holy Lands called you," Sacred Tianhao said, his words calm and even. He hadn't exchanged words with Lin Ming before.

Lin Ming remained silent, tacitly agreeing.

"I heard you come from a Holy Land level influence and that your guardians are all on the Crimson Light World. You should understand the situation you're in and what it means to your future in the True Martial Great World if you continue to oppose my Sacred Martial Mansion," Sacred Tianhao threatened.

But as his words fell onto the ears of those present, this proved to them that Sacred Tianhao was afraid. Otherwise, why would he use his background to threaten Lin Ming instead of just killing him?

The three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion were gathered here, yet they were afraid of Lin Ming. Although that previous collision had a surprising result, everyone was still surprised to hear these words tumble out from between Sacred Tianhao's lips. This Lin Ming should be extremely abnormal!

"What are you trying to say?" Lin Ming chuckled.

"As people, we should allow a lifeline for each other. If we really fought, I would not fear you. But I do not want to suffer any losses here. Since our merit points have already grown to such a degree, regardless if you die or if I die, both of us will have to pay a deep price for just a single kill. With your strength, you can easily pass the preliminaries. As for us, all we want is to obtain a higher ranking," Sacred Tianhao honestly said.

Although the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion were labelled the most fantastic three geniuses of the younger generation, Sacred Martial Mansion itself was by no means a monolithic mass of viewpoints. If they wanted to enjoy resources, they also had to constantly bear tests and trials. They needed a dazzling result in the First Martial Meeting to silence all of their opponents at Sacred Martial Mansion, otherwise it would create a great burden on their families.

If killing Lin Ming had been easy, they would have just killed him and gotten it over with. But now, in Sacred Tianhao's mind, Lin Ming had an unfathomable flavor to him that he just couldn't place his finger on. Even Zhong Wenshu was killed by his hand. If the three of them fought Lin Ming, there would inevitably be deaths, and they might even lose. In this sort of situation, coming into conflict with Lin Ming simply wasn't a wise move.

Lin Ming smiled. "Your plan is quite well thought out. You wanted to step on me like an ant, but now you've realized that isn't possible, you're asking for a truce? Do you think there is such a good matter in this world?" As Lin Ming spoke, he raised the Phoenix Blood Spear and pointed it at Sacred Tianhao's head.

Sacred Yueping exploded with rage. "Big brother, why are you bothering with his crap! If the three of us join together, there is no way we can lose to him!"

Sacred Tianhao's complexion became thoroughly grim. "It seems you would rather do things the hard way. After this First Martial Meeting, prepare yourself for the anger of Sacred Martial Mansion! Fight!" Sacred Tianhao shouted out and the three of them began to attack.

Sacred Tianhao stood still, but as for Sacred Yueping and Sacred Yanran, they charged Lin Ming from two different directions!

"Deep Earth Force Field!"

A brown energy rushed out from Sacred Tianhao's body as the Deep Earth Force Field came falling down with overwhelming force. The three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion each had their own domain force fields. Since Sacred Yueping's time enchantment didn't work on Lin Ming, so Sacred Tianhao instead sent out his Deep Earth Force Field.

This force field used the Earth Laws as its foundation. As long as one was placed within this force field, they would have to bear the crushing pressure of the mountains and earth. If one's cultivation was insufficient, they would directly be pulverized into mush. If one's cultivation was sufficient, they would still be restrained. The domain would even damage their organs.

As the Deep Earth Force Field came down, all of the surrounding martial artists felt a stuffiness in their chest. They all rapidly began to move away. At this time, they were already very far from Sacred Tianhao, and they weren't bearing the brunt of his attack. Even so, they felt as if someone had dropped a mountain on their backs, making it difficult to even breathe. The power of this force field could be imagined.

At this time, Sacred Yanran cried out and turned into a red afterimage as she hurtled toward Lin Ming. One of her twin wheels was aimed at Lin Ming's throat and the other was aimed between his legs; this was a violent and sinister attack!

The instant that Sacred Yanran attacked, Sacred Yueping also fused the Concept of Haste from his Time Laws into her body. Because of the grandmist space, he couldn't slow down

Lin Ming's speed with the Time Laws, but speeding up Sacred Yanran was actually simple and easy, and the effect was nearly the same.

The three joined forces to attack together. This tacit understanding and battle coordination originated from years of training and fighting together. Now that they displayed it, it was extremely fierce and swift!

These attacks left the surrounding martial artists breathless with wonder. Even the red bamboo hat woman was a bit startled. She didn't fear any one of Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies; she would be able to defeat any of them in a one versus one. But when the three of them attacked together, their combat strength actually increased by several times. This was something even she felt a bit of dread toward.

Facing the Deep Earth Force Field that overwhelmed the world, facing the ruthless attack of Sacred Yanran combined with Sacred Yueping's enhancements, Lin Ming suddenly bellowed out, all of the joints in his body releasing explosive crackling sounds.

Eight Inner Hidden Gates – seven gates all open!

Ang -!

A dragon's roar directly impacted through the heavens, washing away the clouds. This dragon roar came from the explosive sounds of Lin Ming's bones.

After opening seven gates, Lin Ming's strength instantly rose to 40 million jins, and a titanic Azure Dragon phantom appeared behind him.

40 million jins of strength supported by his dragon bone fused skeleton that was harder than divine iron, just what sort of strength would erupt!?

Bang!

Sacred Tianhao who was renowned for his strength was actually shaken and sent stumbling backwards by Lin Ming's terrifying explosion of pure strength. His true essence became chaotic and his organs were injured. At the same time, Lin Ming thrust out his spear, meeting Sacred Yanran with his extreme speed.

Sacred Yanran's complexion instantly paled!

"Die!"

Lin Ming showed neither pity nor compassion. The Phoenix Blood Spear came pounding down mercilessly with a terrifying strength behind it. Sacred Yanran's hand shook and the green ring spirit artifact in her hand was sent flying away with even her wrist bones fracturing.

Sacred Yanran screamed as the Phoenix Blood Spear smashed into her. Her true protective true essence exploded as she was sent crashing away! The speed at which she was sent back was even faster than her speed rushing forwards, leaving all the surrounding martial artists unable to even muster a response.

"Third sister!"

Sacred Yueping wanted to save Sacred Yanran with the Time Laws' Concept of Stagnation, but at this time, he felt a boundless and potent strength covering him; this was the grandmist space.

He turned his head and was met with the blazing radiance of thunder and fire sparkling in front of him. The violent energy had reached him and was about to explode.

He had no time to bother with Sacred Yanran!

Peng!

Sacred Yanran smashed into a rock wall like a falling meteor. This rock wall was a hundred times harder than steel and yet she was struck 700-800 feet into this rock wall, forming a human-shaped hole. Sacred Yanran vomited out a mouthful of blood as her bones shattered.

At the same time, the power of thunder and fire from the Heretical God Seedling exploded around Sacred Yueping and Sacred Tianhao!

Bang!

A terrifying explosion erupted as true essence shockwaves manically surged outwards. Massive block rocks were blown into fragments and all the surrounding martial artists were forced back again and again.

At this time, Lin Ming rushed into the rampaging shockwaves, the Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands crashing down at Sacred Tianhao!

Sacred Tianhao's complexion completely changed. As he saw the Phoenix Blood Spear falling down on him, he didn't dare to use his heavy sword to meet it. The disparity in strength was too great!

"Lin Ming, Sacred Martial Mansion will make you pay a deep price for this!"

Sacred Tianhao was well aware it was impossible for him to avoid Lin Ming with his speed. He grasped his heavy sword and swung it toward Lin Ming's head, hoping that they would both perish here together.

But Lin Ming only sneered.

Gold battle spirit – will projection!

The gold large success grandmist battle spirit howled out from between Lin Ming's eyebrows. The space 10 feet around Lin Ming came under the control of his will. Countless will tentacles wrapped around Sacred Tianhao, binding his every movement!

Sacred Tianhao felt as slow as an insect trapped in a spiderweb. Although he himself had a silver large success battle spirit, the difference was simply too great against Lin Ming. His battle spirit couldn't play a role.

With a burst of strength, he forcefully broke free from the battle spirits. Although Sacred Tianhao near instantly freed himself from the shackles of the will tentacles, it was already far too late!

The Phoenix Blood Spear's edge approached Sacred Tianhao's heart; it wasn't even possible for him to bring Lin Ming down with him anymore.

"Earth Shield!"

Sacred Tianhao wildly cried out. A thick brown barrier formed all around his body s a sandy brown layer of earth crawled up his body, forming an armor of earth. The Earth Laws represented the pinnacle of defense amongst the five elements. Sacred Tianhao wanted to use the power of absolute defense to defend against the Phoenix Blood Spear.

But Lin Ming ignored it all and continued to thrust his spear forwards.

Peng!

The Phoenix Blood Spear stabbed into Sacred Tianhao's earth essence armor. The spiritual energy seemed to have a mind of its own, pervasively digging into every crack and weak point of Sacred Tianhao's defense. This was one of the abilities of a spirit artifact.

However, Sacred Tianhao's earth armor kept it all at bay.

Lin Ming wasn't perturbed at all. He thrust out his spear once more!

Spear after spear, Lin Ming's striking speed had reached a nearly unimaginable degree. Every spear was faster and stronger than the last. The power of these spear strikes began to add together, multiplying, like a surging tide with wave upon wave behind it.

Ka ka ka!

With a light sound, a crack appeared in Sacred Tianhao's earth armor. A cold sweat began to pour down his head.

He finally realized that the reason Lin Ming struck out so many times with his spear was because he was superimposing their strength together!

But it was already too late!

After Lin Ming stabbed his spear out 99 times, with the 100th spear, all of that strength erupted at once!

“Celestial Tyrant Manual – Hundred Layered Waves!”

Only by thrusting out his spear 99 times before and saving all of that strength would the final eruption display its true strength. This was far stronger than a hastily sent out version of the Hundred Layered Waves!

40 million jins of strength was displayed again and again with the Hundred Layered Waves, adding up again and again. In that final moment, Lin Ming’s strength broke through 100 million jins!

This was the complete Hundred Layered Waves spear strike!

Bang!

With this strike, Sacred Tianhao’s earth essence barrier shattered, fully disintegrating, and even his earth essence armor completely broke apart. Sacred Tianhao’s chest was torn open by the Phoenix Blood Spear. His ribs were crushed and his heart and lungs blew apart. He vomited a mouthful of blood and was sent flying backwards like a broken ragdoll, all sensation and strength rapidly fleeing from his body.

The strongest Sacred Tianhao of Sacred Martial Mansion’s three prodigies had been defeated by Lin Ming’s spear strike. In addition with the grievously wounded and dying Sacred Yanran, this meant that Lin Ming had thoroughly won this battle!

Chapter 1192 – Soaring Merit Points

Chapter 1192 – Soaring Merit Points

…

…

…

Out of Sacred Martial Mansion’s three prodigies, in an instant, the only one left standing was Sacred Yueping.

From the get-go, the fight had been extremely fierce and intense. But the entire process occurred within a very brief window of time. Every time Lin Ming fought with the three people, there was a violent and savage collision between them. Yet he had done so ruthlessly and without hesitation and the thickness of his true essence was mind boggling.

“H-he won?”

“The battle is over?”

The many participants present couldn’t believe their eyes. Although they expected Lin Ming’s strength might possibly faintly surpass the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion, they never imagined it would surpass them to this degree. They weren’t even on the same level. From start to finish, Lin Ming had simply rolled over them!

Sacred Yueping’s Time Laws were overwhelmed by Lin Ming’s higher level Laws, and Sacred Tianhao’s formidable defensive ability and Deep Earth Force Field were broken through with absolute strength. Sacred Yanran was fast, but she still wasn’t able to escape Lin Ming’s striking speed!

All the way until now, Lin Ming's various combat aspects could be called perfect. It was like he had no weakness, only advantages!

The red bamboo hat woman sucked in a deep breath. "This man is..."

She shook her head. Such an opponent was already beyond her level. Maybe she had the ability to face the joint attacks of Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies, but wanting to defeat them would be far too difficult. As for completely suppressing them like Lin Ming had done, that was impossible.

Lin Ming looked at Sacred Yueping. At this time, Sacred Yueping's face was ugly beyond description. "Lin Ming, don't push things too far. You won't stay in this dreamland space forever. After this First Martial Meeting ends, you will pay the highest price!"

Lin Ming laughed. "I don't care what price I'll have to pay in the future, but you, you will have to pay the price now."

Lin Ming suddenly rushed forwards, turning into a phantom as he hurtled toward Sacred Yueping!

"Ahhhh!" Sacred Yueping wildly shouted out. The blood red spear in his hands thrust toward Lin Ming, but he knew his resistance was nothing but a futile effort.

The grandmist space came crashing down. All of Sacred Yueping's strength rapidly left his body. At the same time, Lin Ming shot out his spear.

Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

The first four Concepts of the Fire Laws fused together and a massive blue lotus began to bloom. A raging column of flames shot into the skies, swallowing everything.

Sacred Yueping wildly screamed as his body disintegrated into ashes within the flames.

Sacred Yueping had died!

After he died, his body turned into pure dreamland energy that shifted into various shapes in the air.

Lin Ming put out his hand, taking all of this energy in.

The energy sunk into his body through his fingertips, nourishing the divine dream mark on his soul. During this process, Lin Ming also observed the reaction of all the martial artists around him. As he expected, besides him, no one could perceive this dreamland energy.

This dreamland energy was an extremely special and unique form of energy. Although it seemed similar to things like the soul and mind, it was fundamentally different. This was not something that was as simple as energies used in divine soul attacks, but something on a completely different level.

“Is this dreamland energy created by Empyrean Divine Dream? Or did she establish a completely new cultivation system based on the Divine Dream Law she discovered?” Lin Ming mumbled to himself, filled with an even greater curiosity towards Empyrean Divine Dream. It seemed that what Mo Eversnow said was true; Empyrean Divine Dream’s status was in no way inferior to Empyrean Primordius. She was someone who stood at the very peak of the entire Divine Realm.

After absorbing Sacred Yueping’s energy, Lin Ming looked at his own merit points. The number had risen yet again!

Lin Ming’s merit points had originally been 3.36 million. But after killing Sacred Yueping, the number had increased by 2.97 million, jumping straight to 6.33 million!

And now, Lin Ming’s ranking had leapt to 17th of the True Martial Great World!

However, this still wasn’t the end. Lin Ming looked at the disabled Sacred Tianhao, and Sacred Tianhao also looked back at Lin Ming.

Sacred Tianhao’s lungs had been torn apart and his heart was nearly ripped to shreds; he was relying on his powerful vitality to hang onto his last dying breath.

He could no longer speak, but the icy cold intent in his eyes was vicious.

Lin Ming smiled, not caring at all. He raised his spear and pierced through Sacred Tianhao's throat, ending his life!

Sacred Tianhao's body turned into dreamland energy that was absorbed by Lin Ming.

His merit points wildly rose yet again!

However, this growth was half that of what he received from killing Sacred Yueping. This was because his merit points had already surpassed Sacred Tianhao's and he was only able to obtain 30% of his merit points.

"7.81 million, ranked 14th of the True Martial Great World!"

"There's still one last person."

Lin Ming looked at the leftover Sacred Yanran. At this time, her body was covered in blood and her beautiful face was pale and waxy. Looking at her aroused the sympathy of any ordinary man. But Lin Ming's emotions didn't change. Without hesitation, he thrust out his spear and pierced through Sacred Yanran's chest.

"You are ruthless," Sacred Yanran clutched at her chest as she spat out these final words. Finally, she could not change her destiny of being turned into energy which was absorbed by Lin Ming.

Like this, Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies had all died!

Lin Ming's merit points had reached a dramatic number of 9.11 million. He was ranked 12th in the True Martial Great World!

"9 million but still not in the top 10… It seems that to enter the top 10 I'll need at least 10 million merit points."

Zhong Wenshu had been ranked 19th when he had 5.6 million merit points. If he doubled that and reached 11 million, he would have been able to reach the top 10. With that reasoning, it seemed that entering the top 5 required 20-30 million merit points. The top three would require an even more terrifying number. As for being number one, it was unknown just how many merit points were required to reach that high.

"That must be a crazy amount!" Lin Ming said. He glanced over at the other participants.

As Lin Ming looked at these people, all of them felt their hearts stop beating for a moment. They subconsciously stepped away. But as they thought about it, there wasn't any reason for Lin Ming to kill them. Their merit points were too low so there was no point in killing them.

As they realized this they calmed down a bit. Still, their eyes held a hint of fear as they looked at Lin Ming.

"This Lin Ming is too crazy. It feels great killing them now, but how will he handle Sacred Martial Mansion's revenge in the future?"

"Who knows, maybe he'll join a formidable influence. Since Lin Ming is so strong, there is a chance that he'll be placed in the top 3000 rankings of the entire Divine Realm in the future. There will undoubtedly be countless World King level influences trying to grab him up into their ranks.

"Top 3000 is a bit too exaggerated. Top 3000 means that he has the strength to rank number one in a great world. That is the top junior martial artist of a great world!"

A great world had trillions of participants, and everyone who dared to participate was a genius of their generation. Out of these trillions of geniuses, just what did it mean to rank first? Even the top disciple of the True Martial Holy Lands wasn't arrogant enough to say he was ranked first in the True Martial Great World. He would only say that he led everyone else by a significant margin.

“After killing the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion, the dreamland energy within my body has already reached an over-saturated level. It’s enough for me to go meditate on the dreamland Laws. Moreover, if I want to gain even more merit points, I’ll have to leave Immemorial City and hunt down the top masters of other cities. To me, that is just a waste of time. It’s better if I just return to the city to train for now,” Lin Ming thought to himself. His body turned into a beam of light as he streaked back toward Immemorial Imperial City.

As Lin Ming’s figure vanished from the horizon, only then did the many participants still present relax. This evil star had finally left.

If a mortal stood in the same grounds as a tiger, even if that tiger had eaten their fill of meat, they would still inevitably feel fear and caution.

“We can’t stay here anymore. In particular, those that have over a million merit points should go and hide.”

“Yes, we have to hide or stay in the city, otherwise we will be killed by Sacred Martial Mansion’s three prodigies.”

The martial artists of Nightmare Canyon all conversed with each other using true essence sound transmissions. In the span of a single day, Zhong Wenshu and the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion had all died and they had lost most of their merit points. For the next period of time, they would definitely be hunting down other participants to absorb their merit points. If they stayed in Nightmare Canyon, it was possible they would become the hunted.

....

Crimson Light World, in a divine palace underneath the giant floating scroll –

Huo Violentstone held a glazed teapot in his hand, drinking some tea even as he boasted loudly to everyone around him. At this time, his face was flushed red with success. He could be said to be enjoying his success.

“I already said it, when I judge someone, when have I ever been wrong? I said that Lin Ming would amaze the world in this First Martial Meeting, and what do you know, he already has over 3 million merit points! He’s rank 28 now, and in just a few more days, he’ll likely rush into the top 20. If this continues, he’ll even rush into the top 5 ranks of the True Martial Great World before the preliminaries end, hahaha!”

Huo Violentstone wildly bragged. In truth, he wasn’t sure just what heights Lin Ming could reach. After all, he didn’t understand just what secrets Lin Ming held and what happened at Carefree Palace. Personally, he felt that reaching the top 10 rankings of a great world was already giving Lin Ming plenty of praise. When Lin Mings’ ranking dramatically rose, that was clearly because he killed an ordinary World King Holy Land genius. To do that, he should have the strength to enter the top 10. But even he felt that it was a bit exaggerated to speak about entering the top 5.

“Old Man Huo, be careful or the wind will cut your tongue! I remember when this first started you said Lin Ming would only reach the top 50 rankings and sweep away us other three clans, but now you’ve suddenly changed your opinion and say that he’ll enter the top 5? I think your words are all over the place!”

“Hahaha, Old Man Huo, you grow more and more boastful every year. I think you simply don’t understand Lin Ming’s situation so you’re just randomly saying stuff.”

“Where am I randomly speaking?!” Huo Violentstone’s eyes widened, his beard blowing around.

“Lin Ming already left the Ancient Phoenix Clan several years ago to go adventuring. You just don’t have any idea what rank Lin Ming reached from the start. You saying that he’ll reach the top 5 is just nonsense to begin with.”

The old men from the other God Beast Clans already subconsciously agreed that Lin Ming was terrifying, but they still joked about with Huo Violentstone.

Just as Huo Violentstone was about to say something, the Ancient Phoenix Clan disciple responsible for watching over the divine dream jade slip suddenly cried out in fright, "El-Elder Huo!"

"What is it? Stop making such a fuss over nothing."

Huo Violentstone turned around to look.

The disciple gulped. He slowly said, "Junior-apprentice Brother Lin's merit points have suddenly reached 9.11 million just now. He's now ranked 12th of a great world."

"What!?"

It wasn't just Huo Violentstone that was shocked, but all of the other Elders present were too. Lin Ming's merit points had only been 3.36 million, so how could they suddenly rise to 9.11 million!?

Chapter 1193 – The Heaven Defying Divine Dream Law

Chapter 1193 – The Heaven Defying Divine Dream Law

…

…

…

“9.11 million, he instantly surged up nearly 6 million merit points. Does this mean he killed a top 10 ranked master of a great world?”

Many Elders had such thoughts. If Lin Ming now had 9.11 million merit points and ranked 12th of a great world, that meant he should have killed someone in the top 10 rankings. If he killed one of them, that would increase his merit points by around 6 million.

This also meant that Lin Ming had the ability to kill a top 10 ranked master of a great world. Not just defeat, but kill.

Like this, Huo Violentstone’s prediction that Lin Ming would enter the top five rankings of the True Martial Great World before the preliminaries ended became highly probable!

Perhaps the top five might not even be Lin Ming’s limit.

Everyone looked at Huo Violentstone. But Huo Violentstone didn’t laugh raucously like before. Instead, he was stunned for a moment before thinking to himself, “Amazing, I was just jokingly speaking but it seems he really might pull it off.”

…………….

At this time, within the dreamland space, Lin Ming had already returned to his own residence in Immemorial Imperial City where he immediately closed up to train.

After cultivating to this point, whenever Lin Ming used the Magic Cube to unravel the Divine Dream Law, every step required him to use up dreamland energy. This was also the reason why he went out to hunt down Zhong Wenshu and Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies.

"The divine dream marks are already saturated and can't absorb any more dreamland energy. Does this mean I can open the third divine dream mark now?" Lin Ming thought to himself.

When he poured the dreamland energies of Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies into his soul marks, he found that the two soul marks had reached an energy saturation point and couldn't grow any further.

Lin Ming focused his mind and began to unravel the colored lines around the Magic Cube. He planned on forming the third divine dream mark.

The rainbow-colored light slowly poured into Lin Ming's body. After passing through his meridians, the energy gathered in his soul. Slowly, Lin Ming could feel power rise within his body, as if there was some indescribable change happening to his soul force, causing it to slowly grow. This strange energy surged through Lin Ming's meridians, gushing out from his acupoints and pores, dissipating into the air where it turned into rippling rainbow lights.

If someone were to rush into his chambers and also have a thorough understanding of the Divine Dream Law, they would see Lin Ming surrounded by countless rippled lights, each one of them a different color, all of them fantastical and beautiful like a dream!

The Divine Dream Law had the word 'divine' because every time it was used, it would be like the descend of a true immortal, with auspicious signs appearing everywhere.

This sort of feeling was amazing!

“My strength is increasing, but my cultivation isn’t following much; I still can’t break through to the middle Divine Sea realm. But my strength is increasing. Where could this extra strength be coming from? Could it be…?” Lin Ming thought to himself. Finally, he realized just how he was becoming stronger.

A martial artist’s body could hold only a limited amount of true essence and energy.

For a Houtian and Xiantian Realm martial artist, they could only store true essence in their dantian. For a Revolving Core martial artist, their revolving core crystal nucleus could compress true essence, so they naturally surpassed Houtian and Xiantian Realm martial artists. As for Life Destruction martial artists, their entire body would transform into a spirit physique that would allow them to store true essence all throughout their bodies. After reaching the Divine Sea, one could open their own inner world and store true essence within that world as well as gather the power of a world from within themselves.

Every boundary was distinct in its unique characteristics.

But regardless of how one cultivated, there was a common point between all of them. That was that the body was used to store this energy. Once one lost their body, they would also lose the ability to move true essence as well as the power of the world. For instance, even though Mo Eversnow once was a heaven-gifted genius who had been at the half-step World King boundary, after she perished and all that was left over was her soul form, it became impossible for her to move true essence. She could only rely on her understandings of Laws and her battle spirit to fight.

To an essence gathering system martial artist, the power of the world and the power of true essence were their everything. Once they lost the ability to move energy, it was the same as a bird having lots its wings. Their combat strength would only be the tiniest fraction of what it once was. Currently, Mo Eversnow was only able to deal with the weakest of Divine Lord realm powerhouses.

Now, as Lin Ming cultivated this transcendent divine might that was created by Empyrean Divine Dream, he discovered that as he trained in it, he could actually use his soul to store true essence!

The true essence stored within his soul was transformed from the divine dream energy within this dreamland.

In the real world, a martial artist could absorb heaven and earth origin energy and transform that into true essence.

But in this Divine Dream World, a martial artist could absorb divine dream energy and transform that into true essence!

These divine dream marks were the manifestation of this condensed energy.

If true essence was no longer restricted to the body but had an even wider space to utilize, the benefits could be imagined.

In this way, a martial artist could increase the total amount of true essence they could store within themselves. For instance, although Lin Ming was growing stronger, he still couldn't break through to the middle Divine Sea. This was the same as gaining extra strength.

In another way, if true essence was fused into the soul, this would make the soul even tougher and far more tenacious. If one were to encounter a situation like Mo Eversnow's where she lost her physical body and only had her soul form, they could still display a far greater than normal combat strength by relying on their soul.

Lin Ming didn't doubt that even if Empyrean Divine Dream didn't use her mortal body and had her soul leave her body, she could still easily kill a Holy Lord, and even easily kill a Great World King!

It was on this day, after perceiving the Divine Dream Law for almost three months with the Magic Cube, that Lin Ming could see the practical advantages of the Divine Dream Law.

Although he had many comprehensions at the start, he hadn't been able to see just how the Divine Dream Law could be used in actual combat. But now, that all changed!

"If I could somehow enable Miss Mo to study this transcendent divine might, with her talent in addition to the Magic Cube's help, she can still cultivate and even greatly increase her combat strength. There won't be a situation where she might fall into a deep slumber if she ever tried to help me. Moreover, this transcendent divine might can even help strengthen her soul force and make it easier to reform her mortal body in the future. After reforming her body, she will even be far more formidable than she was in the past!"

Lin Ming was overjoyed when he thought of this. After co-existing for so many years, Lin Ming's interests were inseparable from Mo Eversnow. He also held an extremely special and unique sentiment toward her. If he could somehow help her out even if it didn't benefit him, he would be sincerely happy.

He wanted more and more to learn this transcendent divine might. For him, this transcendent divine might was no less significant than the Heretical God Force or the grandmist space.

Of course, it was unknown whether or not he could obtain this transcendent divine might. Everything would depend on Empyrean Divine Dream herself. Lin Ming suspected that the complete transcendent divine might that was being rewarded in this First Martial Meeting was likely not the self-created transcendent divine mights of Empyrean Divine Dream or Empyrean Vast Universe. Rather, it might be the inheritance of a long gone Empyrean that the two Empyreans obtained in some ancient ruins.

Although such a transcendent divine might was extremely precious, it still wasn't what Lin Ming desired most.

"Whether or not I can obtain Empyrean Divine Dream's transcendent divine might, I will need to make use of every second I have here to perceive the Divine Dream Law. If I can obtain the Empyrean Divine Dream's transcendent divine might in the future, I can use this as a foundation to further my understandings. But if I cannot, I'll need to focus my efforts on perceiving it myself."

"The divine dream energy I obtained from hunting down Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies should be enough to form the third divine dream mark. After this, I'll have to search for more prey to accumulate more divine dream energy. Although I'll probably end up offending some people and sects, there's nothing I can do about that."

Lin Ming didn't fear offending anyone anymore. As long as he could obtain a top ten result within the entire Divine Realm of this First Martial Meeting, at that time, the attention of everyone would be on him. He would obtain the tutelage of Empyrean Vast Universe's chief disciple and just what World King Holy Land would dare touch him then? It had to be known that Empyrean Vast Universe's chief disciple, whether it was status, strength, or any other qualification, completely surpassed an ordinary Great World King in every aspect. Then again, killing in this dreamland space was completely permitted within the rules. Since it didn't cause any true casualties, those that were offended could only live with it.

As Lin Ming thought like this he continued his training.

During this time, the three month long deadline finally arrived.

The first round of preliminary eliminations had begun!

Elimination rate: 99%!

This was an extra number that caused all ordinary participants to wallow in despair. After the first round of eliminations was over, all martial artists that had come to boost numbers would be wiped out, without a single exception.

Many martial artists waited for the fate of their upcoming judgment. Around noon, the entire sky filled with endless swathes of brilliant light. Whether it was in the cities or jungles, everyone could see the luminescent lights illuminating the skies above them.

Those around them, or even themselves, would suddenly collapse. Their bodies turned into sparkling motes of light that vanished into the endless nothing.

Some martial artists cried out in alarm as their bodies crumbled, but some martial artists already remained serene and calm. There was no pain as their bodies disintegrated. They only felt their consciousness blur, then their worlds turned dark.

In Immemorial Imperial City, more and more martial artists turned into motes of light that fluttered away. There were even streets where every single martial disappeared without a single one left!

In the Good Fortune World, out of 3 trillion participants, 2.97 trillion were eliminated, leaving behind only 30 billion participants.

A martial artist would dissolve into millions of lights. With almost 3 trillion martial artists melting away, this created countless sparkling lights that floated into the heavens like an endless wave of fireflies. As these lights flew into the skies, they formed river of stars that lit up the entire great world!

This scene was far too magnificent!

After a participant was eliminated their soul would be kicked out from the divine dream space. They would suddenly awaken, and without even the time to bat an eye, they would only feel further dizziness as their bodies were transported 10,000 miles away from the scope of the Divine Dream Light.

“Senior-apprentice Sister Yu! Are you alright!?”

In the Unbroken Cult, 3-4 core disciples that participated in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting were shot out. They all only had Eightfall Divine Sea cultivations. For those that joined the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, if one didn’t have a Ninefall cultivation, it was nearly impossible to pass the first round of eliminations.

“I’m fine.” Senior-apprentice Sister Yu waved her hand, her face wan and clammy.

“What’s the situation inside!” The Unbroken Cult’s Great Elder hurriedly asked.

“There’s far too many geniuses!” Senior-apprentice Sister Yu said with some lingering fear in her voice. “There’s countless masters. Even Senior-apprentice Brother Yu had to be careful inside, lest he be casually killed. There’s far too many people that can kill Senior-apprentice Brother Yu in there!”

As the disciples of the Unbroken Cult heard this, all of them were left dumbfounded. To them, Senior-apprentice Brother Yu Youming was no different from a living god. But in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, such a person was nothing but a trivial person.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Yu can probably pass the second round of eliminations. As for the third round, that might be a bit too difficult for him,” Senior-apprentice Sister Yu said.

Suddenly, within the skies, a massive change began occurring to that several million mile long golden scroll.

“Mm?”

Everyone couldn’t help but look up into the skies. Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan also looked into the skies. They held onto a nearly infinitesimal hope that they could find that person they had been dreaming and yearning for all this time…

Chapter 1194 – Divine Seal Decree

Chapter 1194 – Divine Seal Decree

…

…

…

At this time, high up in the sky, the golden scroll began to contract.

The names on the scroll also began disappearing, one at a time!

It didn't need to be said that these names that disappeared were all the eliminated participants.

Within the vast seething sea of 10 quadrillion geniuses, even if 99% were eliminated, that would still leave behind 100 trillion peak talents. If one wanted to find the single name of Lin Ming from such a massive list, it was no different from searching for a needle in the ocean.

"Big Sister Qianyu, do you think that Brother Lin was eliminated?" Qin Xingxuan said with some worry in her voice as she saw all the rapidly vanishing names from the scroll.

Before Lin Ming ascended, he was only at the fifth stage of Life Destruction. That was a very low cultivation and his other aspects hadn't reached the peak yet. Compared with the extreme geniuses of the Divine Realm, he didn't hold any advantage. Qin Xingxuan was worried for him.

In truth, she wasn't worried about Lin Ming's results in the First Martial Meeting. In fact, to Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu, Lin Ming's strength and talent were inconsequential. What mattered to them was if they could see Lin Ming again one day. However, if Lin Ming was eliminated, that meant there only clue to finding Lin Ming would also disappear. It would be near impossible to find Lin Ming again after that.

“No, that’s impossible! If our husband didn’t surpass 1000 merit points before this, he must have his reasons. He is so amazing, I don’t believe he won’t pass through the first round of eliminations. I don’t believe Lin Ming is inferior to any core disciple of the Unbroken Cult,” Mu Qianyu said from between clenched teeth. But the truth was that she also lacked confidence in her heart.

It had to be known that although several disciples of the Unbroken Cult were eliminated, there were several more disciples that had passed the first round of eliminations and were still in the divine dream space as before.

In Mu Qianyu’s heart, Lin Ming was a glorious and towering existence. How could he possibly be inferior to a core disciple of the Unbroken Cult?

“What should we do? We can’t ask the Great Elder to look up his name again,” Qin Xingxuan nervously said, her eyes rapidly scanning the vanishing names on the giant golden scroll.

Before this, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan had requested the Great Elder to search for Lin Ming’s name in the divine dream slip in order to find out whether or not he had joined the First Martial Meeting. For the Great Elder to search for Lin Ming once was already a great show of benevolence to them. It was impossible for them to ask the Great Elder a second time. The divine dream jade slip was an important tool that several sects had pooled together their wealth for to buy. It naturally had to be used to check up on the changing situations of the top disciples of these various sects, so how could they ask them to track Lin Ming? Any tracking record of Lin Ming’s name had already vanished from the jade slip. Besides Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan, there was no one else here that placed Lin Ming in their hearts.

Qin Xingxuan couldn’t help but glance over at the divine dream jade slip in the Great Elder’s hands. She wanted to ask to borrow it once more. Just a second would be fine.

But as she revealed these pleading eyes, an icy cold voice suddenly struck her ears. “What are you looking at? It’s as if you don’t understand the rules here!”

Qin Xingxuan was frightened. She quickly looked up to see Yu Feng glaring at her with her eyebrows nearly slanted straight up. She was the one that used a true essence sound transmission to reprimand Qin Xingxuan just now.

According to the rules of the Unbroken Cult, in this sort of solemn situation in which many sect Elders were present, as an outer court disciple, she had to maintain a ritual of politeness and etiquette. She had to stand tall and straight, keep quiet and look straight ahead. She couldn’t even scratch an itch.

It was similar to maids in a mortal palace. If they spoke a few accidental words, they might be punished, whipped, and perhaps even killed.

Of course, an outer court disciple of the Unbroken Cult was in a much better situation than a palace maid; they weren’t subject to such strict rules. However, glancing around when so many Elders of other sects were also present would leave a very poor impression, and even Yu Feng who managed them would be called lax in her teaching of others.

“You two, once we return I’ll deal with you both!” Yu Feng savagely said. She worriedly looked over at the Great Elder. Luckily, the Great Elder hadn’t bothered noticing them.

At this time, the Unbroken Cult’s Great Elder was cordially speaking to the core disciples who had been eliminated in the first round, his face full of smiles.

He was certainly happy. The Unbroken Sect had sent 20 of their most outstanding disciples to the First Martial Meeting, and only five of them were eliminated in the first round. This meant that there were still 15 who entered the second round. Only 25% of their disciples had been eliminated; this was far better than the other eighth-grade sects they were on good terms with. Moreover, there was still Yu Youming, who was ranked between 250,000-400,000 of a great world. With such a result, it didn’t seem as if there would be a problem in passing the second round of eliminations. Of course, passing the third round didn't seem to likely.

For the disciple of an eighth-grade sect to have such a result was already something they could be proud of. It had to be known that Good Fortune World had a massive number of Holy Land level influences, and many of them were in no way inferior to the Ancient Phoenix Clan in size or strength with a hundred billion disciples each. In addition, all the martial artists from the small and medium worlds around Good Fortune World had rushed over to participate in the First Martial Meeting.

"Haha, Elder Yu, it seems Youming is truly trying his best to make you proud!"

"It's an event worthy of celebration. After you rise up, make sure you don't forget your old friends!"

"You must treat us, you have to! You have that 10,000 year spirit rhino wine that I've been wanting to taste for the longest time!"

The Elders of other sects were jealous of such results, but they could only express some compliments. The Great Elder brightly smiled and generously said, "Old Man Liu, your words are quite ruthless. My 10,000 year spirit rhino wine has to be made with a top ranked spirit rhino horn, then aged for 10,000 years. It's value is no less than a million violet sun stones! But fine, I suppose I'll bring it out this time to have a hearty drink with my old friends, haha!"

The Great Elder laughed. But as Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan heard these words they could only sigh inwardly. Someone with status could drink wine that cost a million violet sun stones, but as for them, they actually needed a million violet sun stones to travel between great worlds. This was truly sorrowful. In an entire month, they only received 10 violet sun stones and 200 contribution points. Even if they didn't cultivate their martial arts and changed all of those contribution points into violet sun stones, that would still only net them 210.

As the two women felt burdened with a heavy emotion, they saw that in the distant horizon, a divine light began to bloom underneath the massive golden scroll.

This divine light continued growing down to the earth, taking the shape of a cylinder. After this massive cylinder connected to the ground, it actually started to unravel outwards, becoming increasingly long. This was also a scroll. But, it wasn't gold, but purple gold!

The very front of the scroll had three large words written on it – Divine Seal Decree!

These three words each contained an indomitable aura as if they held up the heavens. They were massive, with each stroke exuding a daring vigor as if they were living dragons. Just looking at these words made one's soul tremble.

"Divine Seal Decree!?"

"This name is..."

The countless spectators from all over Good Fortune Great World glanced at each other, awe and wonder on their faces. In the Good Fortune World, there were countless ranking lists that judged the strength of martial artists. For instance, the Hidden Dragon Proclamation, the Sky Martial Declaration, and so forth. Of those, the most authoritative list of them all was the Good Fortune Decree. But there was not a single list that dared to claim the title of Divine Seal Decree.

"There's also another word – primaries!"

"Divine Sea Decree, primaries!"

It was obvious this list would experience another round of eliminations.

As the purple gold scroll unfolded, it formed a massive arc that wrapped up many spectators within it.

Finally, the two ends of the scroll connected back to each other, forming a massive circle that could even surround a planet.

At this time, names began to appear on the scroll.

These names were tens of thousands of time larger than the words on the golden scroll. Every single character was like a purple mountain!

As these names appeared, for a time it seemed as if several thousand names were written on this list.

“This is a ranking list! It starts from first place!”

“There are several hundred thousand names on this ranking list. Is this the ranking of our Good Fortune Great World?”

Looking at these names, starting from the first, they extended all the way around. All of the martial artists watching were excited beyond belief. Of the martial artists present, most of them couldn’t afford a divine dream jade slip, so they couldn’t look at the rankings. Even if they could purchase a divine dream jade slip, that would only let them track those that they knew the name of, and find out their ranking. It was impossible for them to form a complete ranking list using that. But now, a complete list had appeared before them!

“There’s several hundred thousand names! Since Senior-apprentice Brother Yu Youming is ranked between 250,000-400,000 of the Good Fortune Great World, perhaps he might appear on this list!”

“Right, that’s highly possible!”

It was unknown just which Unbroken Cult disciple said this, but the entire Unbroken Cult was sent into frothing excitement. This was the ultimate ranking list formed by two Empyreans!

Even if these were only the primaries and there were still many eliminations to come, just being able to appear on this ranking list for a brief period of time was the highest of the highest honors!

As fellow disciples who came from the same sect that appeared behind that martial artist's name, this was a matter they would gain great fame and honor for; especially since this was not a boast but a fact that would be well documented by countless great sects. When the disciples of the Unbroken Cult went out in the future, they could casually mention this story and draw admiration and awe from everyone. After all, to most people, those martial artists that appeared on the list were all legendary figures.

"Quickly look and see if Senior-apprentice Brother Yu is there!"

"Split up and search!"

Many Unbroken Cult disciples said, flushed with excitement. The Elders were also beaming with joy. This was a chance to bring glory to their Unbroken Cult, because if Yu Youming were to be found on that list, the name of the Unbroken Cult would appear with his name!

"All inner and outer court disciples go and help search. The first one to find Yu Youming's name will be rewarded 30,000 violet sun stones and 30,000 contribution points!" an Elder said to all the inner court and outer court disciples.

For a martial artist with a formidable divine sense, sweeping through hundreds of thousands of names wouldn't take long at all, even if one was very far away. As for granting a reward for finding Yu Youming's name, that was because the Unbroken Cult Elder was in a very good mood.

Of course, the basis of all this was that Yu Youming's name would appear on that scroll.

Hearing such a rich reward, all outer and inner court disciples were overjoyed, their eyes shining with desire. They quickly began to search through the names on the massive scroll. This was a fleeting opportunity. With so many martial artists searching a scroll with only several hundred thousand names, wanting to find a name was too easy.

As for Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan, they joined the numerous outer court disciples to search the Divine Seal Decree. If they could obtain 30,000 violet sun stones and 30,000 contribution points, they could reach the Divine Transformation realm much faster!

Once they reached the Divine Transformation realm, the amount of violet sun stones and contribution points they would receive was not comparable to what they were allotted as Divine Sea martial artists. This was an unbelievable opportunity!

However, just as they started to search, they soon discovered that the names of the martial artists that appeared were followed by the names of World King Holy Lands and even Great World King Holy Lands. For instance, the Sky Tower Holy Land, Light Keep Holy Land, and so forth!

This Divine Seal Decree was not a ranking list that included just the Good Fortune World, but a ranking list that included all 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm!

Chapter 1195 – Lin Ming's Ranking

Chapter 1195 – Lin Ming's Ranking

…

…

…

Everyone realized what was happening. That's right, according to how the competition was being held so far in the preliminaries, everyone had their own corresponding merit points. If so, this merit point ranking system could be expanded to the entire Divine Realm!

The previous ranking had been held within each great world, but now there was a ranking that encompassed the entire Divine Realm!

Of the 3000 great worlds, there were only several hundred thousand participants that were chosen to be on this ranking list.

To put it more accurately, there were only 300,000 people on this list!

On average, that meant that every great world had 100 people represented on this ranking list!

As the martial artists searching the Divine Seal Decree rankings realized this, they were all startled. A deep feeling of awe swelled up from within their hearts.

This ranking list was born from the 10 quadrillion geniuses of the entire Divine Realm!

What sort of overwhelming momentum was this!

No wonder it was called the Divine Seal Decree!

In truth, these people had already passed the preliminaries ahead of time. This was because 10 million people would make it through at the end of the preliminaries and yet there were only 300,000 geniuses ranked on the Divine Seal Decree.

Moreover, these 300,000 were only chosen for the primaries. But even in the primaries, as long as one was listed on this ranking list, they would be considered a chosen pride of heaven amongst all chosen prides of heaven. In the future, they could become late Holy Lords, peak Holy Lands, and for those ranked near the top, they could even become half-step World Kings!

It had to be known that these were all top 100 ranked existences of a great world!

“Amazing! Amazing!”

“What amazing grandeur. The Divine Realm First Martial Meeting held by Empyrean Divine Dream may be the most glorious occasion for the last several million years. There is even a total ranking list that includes all the participating geniuses of the Divine Realm. This is truly an unprecedented magnificence.”

“There’s nothing that can be done about it. Besides Empyrean Divine Dream, there is no other Empyrean that has such ability. In the last Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, 100 trillion geniuses were gathered together in a grand tournament, which cost an incalculable amount of resources. Wanting to create a total ranking list for 10 quadrillion people should be an impossible matter. Even 100 trillion people would be extremely difficult to fairly judge.”

The Elders of the Unbroken Cult and other sects sighed with emotion. As it stood, it was impossible for Yu Youming to be ranked on such a list of participants. He was ranked between 250,000 and 400,000 of the Good Fortune Great World. But if this were spread to the entire Divine Realm, he would likely be ranked from 800 million to a billion.

At a ranking of a billion, how could he possibly be included in a ranking list of the top 300,000?

“Ah, what a pity…”

The Unbroken Cult Great Elder shook his head, secretly wondering why there wasn’t a ranking list that included just the Good Fortune Great World.

As he sighed again, he suddenly heard a cry of alarm.

“Ah!”

“Mm?”

The Great Elder frowned. In front of so many Elders from other sects, shouting out and making a fuss was extremely improper behavior.

He turned around to see that the disciple who cried out in alarm was the inner court disciple Yu Feng.

The Great Elder had some impressions toward this disciple. Although her cultivation talent wasn’t too good, she was skilled in handling interpersonal relationships and other miscellaneous matters. She was skilled in management and disciplined her subordinates severely. If she was given a chore or a mission, she would accomplish it in time without making a mistake. The Great Elder had originally had some thoughts about promoting her to an internal affairs manager, but how could she be so disrespectful today?

“Yu Feng, what are you doing?”

The Great Elder grunted out, his complexion cold.

Yu Feng was so scared she jumped and forgot to immediately apologize. With one hand covering her mouth and another hand waving at the empty air, she haltingly said, “Great Elder, I… over there! I-I…”

She couldn’t believe her eyes. She really couldn’t believe her eyes!

She didn't want to speak because it was something even she didn't dare to believe. However, at this time, the Great Elder's complexion became increasingly gloomy. What was she trying to hide? She was actually acting like this in front of so many honored guests. Acting like this would naturally leave a bad impression, and if she continued to hide whatever it was, she would only make things worse.

"What is it, stop hesitating and being impolite! Hurry up and say what it is!"

This was already an extremely severe criticism. If it weren't for the guests present, Yu Feng would have been directly punished by the Great Elder.

Yu Feng's face paled. She could only truthfully say, "Over there. The name on the Divine Seal Decree is..."

Yu Feng pointed her finger in a direction of the Divine Seal Decree. Everyone looked over, and even the Great Elder frowned and turned.

The general direction that Yu Feng pointed toward was very far away. Because of this distance, every character seemed to cover the heavens and earth, exuding a daring and indomitable spirit. There were many names grouped together, but a martial artist could easily identify them with their sharpened eyesight.

An unbelievable name popped out in front of the Great Elder and the many disciples.

Ancient Phoenix Clan – Lin Ming!

Merit points: 9,918,670!

Divine Seal Decree – ranked 29,876!

"Ancient Phoenix Clan, Lin Ming!?"

How could it be this name!?

The Great Elder was stunned. Next to him, a disciple who had heard Mu Qianyu make her request in the past and also many other Elders stared with wide eyes, their mouths falling open and not closing for a long time.

For them, although they hadn't placed Lin Ming's name in their hearts from the start, a martial artist still had extraordinary memory. It was naturally impossible to forget a name they heard just a little while ago.

What was going on here?

If it were just the name by itself, there could be said to be duplicates. But when the Ancient Phoenix Clan background was added on, it was nearly impossible for it to be a duplicate. Moreover, the most important factor was that the Great Elder had already searched for the Ancient Phoenix Clan's Lin Ming and obtained only one result. This was undoubtedly Lin Ming!

Lin Ming, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan's husband!

Mu Qianyu? Qin Xingxuan?

The Unbroken Cult Great Elder looked at the two women and nearly bit on his tongue.

As for Yu Feng who was in charge of Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan, her legs softened, wobbling. As she thought of her actions to them in the past, she trembled.

This was the Divine Seal Decree! Moreover, this ranking wasn't in the hundreds of thousands, but in the top 30,000!

What sort of concept was that? That meant that Lin Ming should be someone ranked in the top 10 of a great world. This meant there were countless geniuses of World King Holy Lands that were trampled underneath his feet!

If such a person grew up in the future, it was highly likely they would become a half-step World King, an existence that could cause an ordinary Holy Land to feel immense fear. They would become someone that a World King Holy Land would try everything for to win over.

As for the Unbroken Cult, they were only an eighth-grade sect. In their sect, the most powerful person was a Divine Lord powerhouse. They didn't even have a half-step Holy Lord. For such a top character, the entire Unbroken Cult was nothing more than a speck of dirt.

The Great Elder blankly looked toward Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu. The other Elders of the Unbroken Cult, the Elders of the other sects, Yu Feng, the Unbroken Cult core disciples, inner court disciples, outer court disciples, everyone looked at Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan.

These two women had such a husband?

At this time, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan also recovered from their shocked states. Lin Ming's name had appeared on the top 30,000 ranks of the Divine Seal Decree. This meant that he already passed the preliminaries ahead of time. It was more accurate to say that to Lin Ming, these preliminaries no longer mattered. All he had to focus on was just how high his final result would be in the First Martial Meeting.

"Our husband is actually ranked in the top 10 of a great world?" Mu Qianyu murmured in disbelief. The Yu Youming that she thought was very strong was only ranked between 250,000 and 400,000 of a great world. The difference between him and Lin Ming could be seen from this!

Although Mu Qianyu had always said she believed in Lin Ming and believed that he would establish his own fame in the Divine Realm, she never imagined his fame would be so great!

"Big Sister Qianyu, we… we…" Qin Xingxuan couldn't find the words to speak. Her mood was incomparably complex and also incomparably excited. Although she said she didn't care about Lin Ming's result and only cared about his safety, with his true results being so extraordinary, she was actually extremely proud of him. This was her husband! The man most intimate to her and also the most important man in her life. In particular for Qin Xingxuan; she could be said to have grown up with Lin Ming.

For the Unbroken Cult, their Elders were already smiling from ear to ear if one of their disciples reached the top several hundred thousand rankings of a great world. But her husband actually ranked in the top 10! How could she not be proud of him?

“Little Sister Xingxuan, we can see him, we can definitely see him!” Mu Qianyu couldn’t help but weep. She was excited and thrilled, but her mind was still clear.

A mother’s honor rose with her son, and a wife’s honor rose with her husband. With Lin Ming’s status being so high now, it was likely the Unbroken Cult would send someone to escort them directly to see Lin Ming.

Moreover, with Lin Ming’s results being so prominent, even in the vast sea of people that was the First Martial Meeting, wanting to find him would be extremely easy. If so, all troubles they thought they would have in searching for him were no more!

To see Lin Ming once more, how could Mu Qianyu not be sobbing with happiness?

As Mu Qianyu realized this, she turned back to look at the Unbroken Cult Great Elder. At this time, as the Great Elder saw Mu Qianyu look at him, his expression was extremely wonderful.

Chapter 1196 – True Martial City

Chapter 1196 – True Martial City

…

…

…

As the Unbroken Cult Great Elder was looked at by Mu Qianyu, he had no idea what expression to make or what words to say. He was in an extremely complex mood at this moment.

For such a top class character like Lin Ming, how could his wives be found in a little sect like his? This was simply inconceivable.

"Well… two misses, you…"

The Great Elder discovered that he didn't even know Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan's names. But, calling his own disciples 'misses' was a bit strange.

Luckily, Mu Qianyu was extremely understanding. She said, "Disciple's name is Mu Qianyu, and this is my sister, Qin Xingxuan."

"Oh…" The Great Elder awkwardly said, "You ascended from the lower realms?"

These words were spoken because the Great Elder had no idea what else to say. When a martial artist arrived from the lower realms, they still carried extremely obvious characteristics with them to the Divine Realm.

"Yes." Mu Qianyu nodded.

“Ah… well… it isn’t easy to ascend from the mortal realms. For you to be able to cultivate to an Eightfall Divine Sea realm in a place barren of resources like the lower realms already proves you have excellent martial talent.

In the blink of an eye, martial artists from the lower realms that were normally mocked and discriminated against were suddenly transformed into excellent talents. The other Elders could only ruefully smile at each other as they heard this sort of transformation in tone.

They soon understood the situation. It seemed that Lin Ming, Mu Qianyu, and Qin Xingxuan were all martial artists that originated from the lower realms. If true, everything was easily explainable. Lin Ming had ascended first, and then his wives had come to the Divine Realm to search for him.

The result was that as the two women arrived at the Divine Realm, they realized that their strength was lacking and they also didn’t know that their husband was so powerful, so they had encountered many problems. And, there was a portion of these problems that had been created by the Unbroken Cult.

As the Elders of the Unbroken Cult thought of this, all of them felt pained in their hearts. Although the Unbroken Cult’s actions were understandable and not wrong, this was simply a stroke of bad luck. If they had known Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan’s husband was so magnificent then they would have assisted them as much as they could. That would have been a great favor that they would have earned!

But now, they could only ask that Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan didn’t hold a grudge against them.

Several Elders glanced at each other. Finally, the Great Elder spoke up. He was very happy that he didn’t refuse Mu Qianyu’s request to look for Lin Ming, otherwise the consequences would have been dire.

“So your husband also ascended from the lower realms?” The Great Elder asked.

"Yes."

After obtaining Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan's affirmation, the several Elders glanced at each other in dismay. For a martial artist who ascended from the lower realms to increase their strength to such a degree, just what kind of monstrous genius was that! Lin Ming's future achievements would likely be even greater!

"Two misses' husband is truly worthy of praise. I fear that even in the one billion worlds of the lower realms, an extreme genius like your husband wouldn't appear even in 10,000 years. Really, this truly makes old me feel ashamed.

"In addition, well..." As the Great Elder spoke to here, his face revealed an embarrassed color. "I know that two misses were wronged before this. While I am fully aware of the labors that are required of outer court disciples, that is also something that the vast majority of sects in the Divine Realm must do in order to survive. There is nothing else that can be done about it. If a white dragon were to become a fish, even they could be captured by fishermen and birds. I can only explain this to two misses in hopes that we can dissolve any past animosities between us."

If a white dragon were to transform into a fish and delve into the water, it was possible that they would be caught by fishermen or hunted by birds. This wasn't to say that the fishermen or birds were in the wrong. In fact, 99% of sects in the Divine Realm required outer court disciples to do chores and other tasks. For instance, Carefree Island required outer court disciples to risk their lives in mining resources. Even the Ancient Phoenix Clan was the same.

A sect was just like a trade association in the mortal world. There had to be workers that could produce wealth, otherwise where would resources come from? This was the rule of survival that one had to follow in the Divine Realm. Sects were not charities that helped whomever needed it. For a Divine Sea martial artist in the Divine Realm with mediocre talent, their life would be hard.

Mu Qianyu was also very clear of this. She said, “Great Elder, there is no need to speak too seriously about this matter. I must thank the Unbroken Cult for attending to and assisting us for this last half year.”

Mu Qianyu didn’t hate the Unbroken Cult. In fact, before Old Man Good Fortune brought them to the Divine Realm, he had already explained that his status in the Unbroken Cult wasn’t high at all. After one was accepted into the Unbroken Cult, they would be given resources and tasks according to their talent.

Also, Mu Qianyu still hadn’t seen Lin Ming. Bluffing and boasting would be extremely stupid. After all, she still had to find Lin Ming and she had to rely on the Unbroken Cult to do so.

“Good…good…” The Unbroken Cult Great Elder breathed out in relief. “Come then, I shall bring you to the honored guest palace so that you two can rest. Yu Feng, you will be responsible for attending to the daily needs of the two misses. If there is even a single mistake then I shall hold you responsible!”

The Great Elder’s last few words were extremely harsh, enough that they scared Yu Feng. Yu Feng was also aware that such an arrangement was deliberate. By transforming her role into one who served Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan, that would help dissolve any resentment in their hearts.

Although her status had suddenly turned from a master into a servant, Yu Feng still brightly smiled and humbly bowed to the two women.

The Unbroken Cult Great Elder took out a transcendent saint artifact level floating palace, and indicated for Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan to enter. He said, “Two misses, rest assured, when the preliminaries for the First Martial Meeting end, I shall personally escort you to the semi-finals to see your husband. I will make sure that you are absolutely safe the entire trip.”

The Great Elder bumped his chest in guarantee. After Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan heard him, they were both overjoyed. Especially Qin Xingxuan. Her nose burned and tears nearly fell from her eyes. She had worked for this day and dreamed about it. Now, she would finally be able to see Lin Ming again.

………

And at this time, within the Divine Dream World, the second round of the preliminaries was finally beginning.

In his dwelling in Immemorial Imperial City, Lin Ming could hear the endless roars of nightmare beasts coming from outside the city.

Lin Ming studied the Divine Dream Law. With his understanding of it, he could feel that after the second round of eliminations began, the collective sounds of the nightmare beasts evolved!

This meant that the merit points one obtained from hunting these nightmare beasts would be much higher. At the same time, the risks were that much greater!

To these martial artists, higher merit points from nightmare beasts meant opportunity. But, if they faced these more formidable nightmare beasts, that meant they could easily lose their lives!

In general, the second round of eliminations in the preliminaries would be much harsher than the first. This was because the percentage of eliminations would increase by 10 times from the first round. Now, 999 out of every 1000 would be eliminated!

Ho – !

Ho – !

The first group of souls flew through the skies, returning to Immemorial Imperial City where they were reborn again.

The image of these souls soaring through the skies fell into Lin Ming's eyes. Just a few hours after the second round began, large numbers of martial artists had already died!

The savagery of these battles could be imagined!

In these battles that were far more brutal than in the past, the number of merit points would also skyrocket. Those with more would obtain far more, and those with less would lose even more. At the same time, because there were nightmare beasts that killed more and more powerhouses, they would evolve to unimaginable degrees.

All of this caused Lin Ming to burn with excitement!

If he didn’t find it more important to perceive the Divine Dream Law then he would have already rushed out of the city and joined in with the slaughter.

“After my Divine Dream Law has formed two more soul marks, I can leave and battle. At the same time, I can plunder more dreamland energy to temper my soul even more!”

Thinking like this, Lin Ming constantly formed seals with his hands, the speed becoming increasingly fast. Rays of seven-colored lights constantly converged within Lin Ming’s body. The seals carved into his soul gradually forming the third soul mark.

And at this time, outside Immemorial Imperial City –

Four peak masters were gathered together. These four people were Zhong Wenshu as well as the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion.

“Haha, running into Brother Wenshu here is quite a coincidence. That’s right, we’ve decided to change locations. Would Brother Wenshu like to join us?” Sacred Martial Mansion’s three prodigies bumped into Zhong Wenshu by chance. The four people had suffered together, and their backgrounds were also similar. Although they had all been killed by Lin Ming once, after another month of constant killing they had managed to recover a portion of their merit points. Now, Zhong Wenshu was ranked 25th in the True Martial Great World and the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion were ranked around 30.

Zhong Wenshu's complexion was extremely poor. He knew that the reason Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies were 'changing locations' was because they were afraid to bump into Lin Ming again during this second round of eliminations.

"You can go where you wish. I'm fine by myself!"

Zhong Wenshu said between clenched teeth. With his proud personality, he naturally wasn't willing to admit defeat like this, even though he knew that defeating Lin Ming was a near-impossible wish.

"Heh, Brother Wenshu, don't be in such a rush to refuse. Listen to our plan first. We're planning on heading to True Martial City a hundred million miles away. That is the supreme headquarters of the True Martial Holy Lands as well as the greatest city of the True Martial Great World. There are far more geniuses there than there are in Immemorial Imperial City! Brother Wenshu, the four of us have to take care of each other, otherwise we'll be hunted like small fry at True Martial City."

Zhong Wenshu remained silent.

Immemorial Imperial City was one of the largest cities of the True Martial Great World. But, the magnificence of Immemorial Imperial City was mainly manifested in its bustling trade and commercial business. With more commercial development, that meant there would be a far larger city population.

In terms of the number of masters, Immemorial Imperial City was far inferior to True Martial City. True Martial City was the martial heart of the True Martial Great World. This was because it was the city under the direct control of the True Martial Holy Lands! But in the real world, there were extremely strict requirements that a martial artist had to meet in order to enter True Martial City, thus the flow of trade there was restricted.

But now, within this dreamland space, everything was different. Anyone could enter and leave True Martial City as they wished. This meant that True Martial City would undoubtedly become the city with the highest number of masters within the True Martial Great World.

When Zhong Wenshu had just entered the Divine Dream World, he had seen two geniuses from the True Martial Holy Lands at the Imperial City Auction House. This was because they had stayed to help govern Starbind Bank and decided to enter the First Martial Meeting from Immemorial Imperial City. But, once they truly entered the Divine Dream World, they didn't stay at Immemorial Imperial City. Instead, they switched their battlefield to True Martial City.

Immemorial Imperial City could be called the second greatest city of the True Martial Great World. But, the difference to True Martial City was not minor at all. Besides Lin Ming, the other 19 of the top 20 ranked participants were all located at True Martial City.

Zhong Wenshu grit his teeth. He finally said, "Fine, let's go to True Martial City. This Immemorial Imperial City no longer holds a future for any of us. This city was fine for passing the first round of eliminations, but staying here will only hinder me from gaining more merit points in the second round."

"Haha, great! Let's get on our way now!"

Chapter 1197 – Empyrean Descendant

Chapter 1197 – Empyrean Descendant

…

…

…

The Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds each had a corresponding great world in the Divine Dream World. Within these great worlds, endless slaughter was occurring every second.

During the second round of eliminations, the rankings were pulled even further apart!

And, within that grand Divine Seal Decree, the ranked 30,000 or so Lin Ming naturally wasn't the most noticeable. Rather, it was the 10 kings of the ranking list!

The many spectators of the Divine Realm 3000 great worlds were all staring at these magnificent names. To them, these names all represented legends.

Especially the first name. That was the most radiant of all. The writing style of this name was written exactly the same as the Divine Sea Decree title, and the names of these characters were also of the same size. They were over twice the size of the other names!

Demondawn Heavenly Palace – Xiao Moxian!

Merit points: 116,507,820!

Divine Seal Decree ranking: one!

This was the only person whose merit points had surpassed a hundred million. Moreover, it was a great deal more than the second place!

The name of Xiao Moxian was very strange. It was a name that meant little demon fairy. In truth, this name seemed more like a nickname, and also the name of a woman.

The prefix of Demondawn Heavenly Palace meant that this woman didn't originate from Divine Dream Palace. In fact, no one from Divine Dream Palace participated in the preliminaries. They directly passed through the preliminaries.

At this time, within Lightmend World, four martial artists were violently battling a massive snake, weapons held in each of their arms.

This snake had a body as thick as a tree as well as three giant heads. Each head spat out a different colored cloud of gas. When any plant life was touched by these gas clouds, it would immediately decay and wither into nothing. Even the swamp would melt away when touched by these gas clouds.

If Lin Ming was here, he would estimate that after killing this python he would be able to receive several thousand merit points. This was absolutely a vicious beast that would cause geniuses of ordinary Holy Lands to flee as far as they could.

However, these four martial artists were able to battle this giant snake. It was clear that their strength was quite formidable.

The snake and the four men had been in a brutal melee for some time already. A scholarly-looking man found an opening and chopped his blade deep into a weak point. The snake stiffened for a moment and then the other martial artists closed in and finished it off.

"Haha! After the second round of eliminations began, the merit points of these nightmare beasts have increased so much!"

"Yes, this big snake actually gave us 5000 merit points, that means that each of us can receive over a thousand merit points. Before this, the highest value nightmare beast only gave us 1800 merit points. This also means that martial artists will accumulate an increasing amount of merit points! It's possible that the top 50 rankings can be completely changed too! This is our chance to rise."

“That’s right, us brothers must try harder and crash into the top 50 rankings to give our father some face!”

As the four martial artists were speaking, they were suddenly stunned. With a surprised expression, they all looked to the side and saw that in this swamp, a young woman wearing all black had appeared. She had the appearance of a 15-16 year old girl, and her hair hung down past her shoulders like a waterfall of black ink. Her eyes were dark yet bright, and her forehead was crowned with neatly-trimmed bangs. As she appeared here, she was like a fantastical night spirit.

The young girl carefully patted down her skirt as if she were afraid she would dirty herself with the mud of the swamp, and then began to slowly walk towards the four martial artists.

The four men glanced at each other, a bit dumbfounded. Just who was this girl? If a martial artist was afraid of dirtying themselves in the swamp, they could fly in the air. A martial artist could fly at the Xiantian realm. Was this girl not even a Xiantian realm martial artist?

The scholarly-looking youth of the four men was extremely suspicious. Then, he discovered that this girl was stepping on small leaves that had fallen on the ground. She would rely on just these fallen leaves to support her body, briskly hopping over them.

If she could accomplish this then she could certainly fly. But, why would she be using such a bothersome and tedious method to walk? She was like an innocent girl that was stirring up trouble and thought it amusing to step on these fallen leaves to move forwards.

“Who is this girl? I’ve never seen her before.”

The location that the four men killed nightmare beasts at was the highest quality hunting grounds near their city. In order to hunt here, one needed a certain amount of skill. If this black-clothed girl had been able to come here before, they should have had some impression of her, especially since she had such a unique appearance.

At this time, the black-clothed girl suddenly looked up at the four men. She brightly smiled, but that smile also seemed to have a faint taste of malicious playfulness.

She had a beautiful and charmingly lovable face, but that smile of hers actually revealed a sharp pair of incisors just like a little devil.

“Little girl, what are you smiling at! Who are you, did you come from some nearby city?”

A big fellow from the four martial artists suddenly asked, anger in his voice. If someone appeared here and they didn’t recognize them, this likely meant that they came from some nearby city to harvest merit points.

The black-clothed young girl seemed to not hear a word he said. She only chuckled, her voice like soft tinkling silver bells.

“You bitch, what are you smiling for!? Once I’m done with you, let’s see how you’ll still smile!” The big fellow boorishly said. The scholarly youth frowned, “Third Brother, it might be a bad idea to provoke this girl.”

“So what? She’s just someone from a nearby city that I haven’t seen before. What can a girl like her do to me?”

The big fellow indifferently said.

But at this time, the black-clothed girl giggled and said, “You stupid fool. I don’t come from a nearby city but a nearby great world. I come from Demon God World and all the powerful people there have already been killed by me. I thought it was a bit boring so I came here to play. How many merit points can the lot of you give me?”

“Points? Merit points?” The big fellow’s eyes widened. He immediately responded, “What did you say? You’re from the nearby great world, Demon God World?”

But soon he reacted once more. Why would he believe someone just because they said something? He sneered and said, “What a boastful idiot, it’s like you’re not scared of having your lies seen through. And to think you said you came from a nearby great world, as if you're so amazing! In this Divine Dream World, how could you possibly travel the vast distance between great worlds? Looking at your soft and fair skin, you're nothing but a little baby. For a great man like me, you're not even enough for an appetizer!"

The big fellow laughed, his voice travelling for half a mile. But then, he stopped.

His entire body was paralyzed. With great effort, he bent his head down and saw that there was blood leaking out from his throat and chest. It was like something had pierced through his body and wormed its way in. With his wounds as the center, he could feel the meridians within his body suddenly go cold, freezing over. His consciousness gradually blurred, dimming down as his strength rapidly left his body. This was the feeling of death, and this wasn't the first time that this big fellow had experienced this.

"I… how did I die?"

This was the big fellow's last thought before he toppled over.

The other three were all shocked senseless.

"Third Brother!"

The scholarly youth cried out in alarm. But at this time, any sort of reasoning told him that wanting to take revenge for his third brother was impossible. This girl was simply terrifying to the point that those present couldn't even believe their eyes. She had to be a top ranked martial artist of a great world. As for them, they were only martial artists ranked between 60 and 70.

Just now they hadn't even seen how their third brother had died!

"Scatter and escape!"

The scholarly youth decisively shouted this command. The other two also sensed the direness of the situation. They used their fastest movement techniques and escaped in different directions.

The little girl was faintly startled. Then, she chuckled and said, “Smart move. I’ll give you all five breaths of time as a reward.”

The little girl shut her eyes and began to count, without any nervousness at all. She was just like someone playing hide and seek.

After counting to five, the young girl suddenly opened her eyes. She smiled and said, “I’m going to chase you now.”

As she spoke, she vanished, her body disappearing into motes of light. In a moment she seemed to have teleported 10 miles away. Then with another flash, she flash-stepped another 20 miles.

It had to be known that the Divine Dream World and the Divine Realm were nearly the same. The space here was extremely stable, and if one wished to pass through space by flash-stepping a short distance, that was extremely difficult to accomplish. This required one to have an extremely high understanding into the Space Laws.

Finally, no one was able to escape from the hands of this young girl.

Their throats all gushed out with blood. As their corpses vanished, a small and thin golden leaf fluttered to the ground. This was clearly what killed them.

“Their merit points are too few; my total score doesn’t seem to have moved at all. I have to look for a top three ranking martial artist in this Lightmend World. I’ll only be able to increase my score by killing them.”

The black-clothed young girl whispered to herself. Her body vanished in motes of light and soon completely disappeared.

……………

At this time, within an exquisitely carved jade tower, a blue-clothed youth had a cyan sword hanging over his shoulders as he looked at the distant Divine Seal Decree in the horizon.

This youth had a slender and handsome appearance, as if his looks were molded from the purest jade. A pill hung between his eyebrows, looking like a third eye.

"Junior-apprentice Sister Frost Dream, Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao Moxian has indeed managed to obtain first rank. It seems she'll become extremely famous now. She has surpassed the second ranked martial artist by nearly 30 million merit points. I think that those Great World King Holy Land geniuses of Demon God World are really too pitiful. They don't even have anyone that is ranked in the top 5000 of the Divine Seal Decree. I estimate that all of them were killed by Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao Moxian. Even the neighboring great worlds might be in for a stroke of bad luck this time. Junior-apprentice Sister's personality has been well known ever since she was young. She simply loves playing around far too much. She could have directly attended the finals, but in the end she decided to join in the preliminaries to bully everyone instead! This is simply giving no face at all. I think that the Great World King of Demon God World is probably feeling extremely ill!"

Beside this blue-clothed youth was a young girl wearing an icy blue dress. She was obviously the Junior-apprentice Frost Dream that the blue-clothed youth spoke to.

This young girl appeared to be 16-17 years old. Her stature was slender and fluid like an ice sculpture, her fingers were thin and long, and a faint haze covered her entire body. Every single movement of hers caused a bit of ephemeral starlight to sprinkle down, seeming holy and inviolable.

Her looks were also covered in this strange mist so it was impossible to see her face. But, one could vaguely feel that she had perfectly contoured features and eyes like deep spring pools.

The young girl lightly nodded, not responding. She continued to look at the Divine Seal Decree in the far off distance.

The feeling she exuded was like an immortal fairy of frost and rime that lived in the highest heavens: beautiful, charming, and untainted by the sins of the world.

The blue-clothed youth didn't seem unhappy at all at the young girl's cold response. Instead, he continued to enthusiastically speak, "And then there's Junior-apprentice Brother White Yao who is much more collected and reasonable. Although he is also an Empyrean disciple, he is only ranked tenth. He's not as devilish as Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao Moxian, killing all those Great World King Holy Land geniuses until they are rolling around in their own misery."

The blue-clothed youth casually said. But, the truth was that in his opinion, this Divine Realm First Martial Meeting was basically a competition between Empyrean descendants. For anyone else to break into their circle was impossible.

Chapter 1198 – The Mysterious Monster

Chapter 1198 – The Mysterious Monster

…

…

…

True Martial Great World – dreamland space –

3000 miles southwest of True Martial City, there was a long and winding mountain range called the Demon Sealing Ridge. On Demon Sealing Ridge, the trees towered high into the skies and vicious beasts roamed everywhere. In the real world, the Demon Sealing Ridge was a training ground of normal Divine Sea powerhouses. But in the dreamland space, Demon Sealing Ridge became dozens of times more dangerous. If a normal Divine Sea powerhouse was here then they would die instantly. Even a weak Divine Transformation powerhouse would find their life threatened.

Thus, in this dreamland space, those that came to adventure here were the top 200 ranked masters of the entire True Martial Great World.

Even so, there were still deaths.

Rumble rumble rumble rumble!

A terrifying explosion sounded through the mountains with countless shock waves surging outwards. A group of 10 people were sent soaring backwards, tossed into the air like a handful of straw.

In such an intense explosion, a hideous-looking nightmare beast with its entire body covered with spikes slowly fell to the ground, utterly dead.

This sort of violent hunting scene was a common occurrence on Demon Sealing Ridge. Those people that were capable of killing these vicious nightmare beasts were usually top 100 ranked masters of their great world.

“Huh? What’s this?”

After the martial artists slayed the vicious beast, they discovered that there was a palm-sized purple crystal left behind after the vicious beast’s body disappeared. If one looked carefully, they could see something sealed within the crystal that looked like a tiny green sword. It rushed about within the purple crystal, seeming as if it would break out at any moment.

The martial artists were all shocked. Although they had killed countless nightmare beasts, this was the first time they had seen something like this.

A martial artist hesitated and then carefully picked up the purple crystal. An incomparably cold feeling seemed to dig through his body, sinking through his flesh and blood and even permeating through his soul. He felt as if his entire body was filled with a faintly spiritual feeling, and Laws that he found hard to understand in the past were slowly being perceived...

This sort of dim enlightenment was like a mortal being confounded by a problem, and then finally having a dream and waking up with a blurry solution.

This martial artist suddenly had the strange desire to directly swallow down this purple crystal. This was because he could feel a faint wisdom coming from this purple crystal, and had a premonition that he would obtain great benefits after eating it.

However, he restrained his thoughts and decided to study it first. For some reason, he believed that this purple crystal was condensed with energy completely different from the energy that formed their weapons and clothes. Although all of that was virtual goods that belonged to this dreamland world, this purple crystal gave off an incomparably genuine feeling, as if it were a treasure that belonged in the real world. These fantastical thoughts were something he felt from the moment he touched the purple crystal.

“Ba Dao, what is that?”

The several surrounding martial artists casually asked. Although they felt that this purple crystal was quite extraordinary, they didn’t care too much. After all, this was dreamland space and not the real world. If this was the real world, there was a possibility that it would be an extremely precious heavenly treasure. If so, they would study it, and then divide it equally after estimating its value. And even then, if it was far more precious than what they imagined, they might even fight to the death for it.

But in this dreamland space, all treasures were nothing but dreams that would vanish once they awakened, without leaving a single trace behind. Thus, they didn’t care about this purple crystal too much. Then again, it might not be anything too valuable anyways.

“Nothing. I think it’s just some strange treasure that this nightmare beast swallowed before. I think it’s a bit interesting so I’m going to keep it.”

The martial artist called Ba Dao said as he indifferently tossed the purple crystal into his spatial ring.

Most of his companions didn’t care too much, but there were one or two people that frowned. They felt that Ba Dao’s explanation was a bit too forced. A strange object that the nightmare beast swallowed? Was there something like that?

Moreover, Ba Dao’s words were clearly meant to play down this matter even as he calmly took the purple crystal for himself.

“I think… you should wait a minute.”

Someone suddenly said.

Ba Dao felt his heart drop. He maintained his composure and asked as if he didn't care too much, "What is it?"

The person who spoke hesitated for a moment, then said, "Friend, things that are found should be examined by everyone here so that we can check if there is any danger… you should know that in this dreamland space, there are countless dangers everywhere. If you take something with you that you find like that, it might be dangerous. It might even be a powerful baby nightmare beast in egg form. If so, then we'll be in danger!"

This person's words were quite thoughtful. He didn't immediately say words that cast a suspicious light on Ba Dao for stealing a treasure, but said something reasonable that no one would be able to reject.

These nightmare beasts were extremely strange existences. No one knew just what they were like before they were born. This purple crystal was bizarre, and even seemed as if there was some living creature sealed within it. There was the possibility that this was the larval form of a nightmare beast.

"That sounds fine. Ba Dao, take out that crystal so that we can take a look. It's better to be safe than sorry." Someone echoed.

Ba Dao awkwardly smiled, slowly tracing his spatial ring. He knew that if he didn't take it out, he would definitely fall under suspicions.

In that moment, he hesitated in his heart. Was it better to just flee from here? But then again, perhaps everything he felt before was nothing but a dream. After all, this sort of matter was itself unbelievable.

"If I made a mistake or thought too much of it then I would be a fool, but… that brief enlightenment on the Laws I felt was indeed real. Just what is this thing?"

Ba Dao thought as he spoke. His movements in taking out the purple crystal were very slow.

"If it really is some wonderful treasure, then being killed in this dreamland space isn't a problem. At worst I'll lose some points and my ranking will fall, but I can still catch up. But, before these preliminaries started, Empyrean Vast Universe said that if a participant was killed, they would lose 60% of their virtual treasures. Would this thing disappear? What should I do? Should I make a desperate bet?"

Ba Dao thought. His palms were wet with sweat. His fingers had already touched on his spatial ring for two breaths of time. As this time grew, even some of Ba Dao's friends felt that something was wrong. In particular, those two people who were suspicious at the start. Their thoughts became grim and they clenched the weapons in their hands.

The atmosphere became increasingly tense. At this moment, a sharp howl suddenly washed over everyone. At the first moment it was in the far off distance, but in just an instant it was right near their ears!

Ba Dao felt his back turn cold as an icy chill thrust into his heart. This freezing killing intent nearly caused his soul to rupture.

Danger!

Ba Dao was greatly shocked. He wanted to throw himself forwards but... it was already too late!

He felt his entire body turn cold as the world became dark around him. His mind blurred and his consciousness rapidly faded as he lost all his senses.

As for his companions, they only saw a brief red light flash in front of them as Ba Dao's body was completely ripped apart!

"How did he die!? Who killed him!?"

No one had been able to clearly see what happened. They were all stunned. They tightly gripped their weapons and maintained full vigilance of their surroundings.

Then, they discovered that Ba Dao's spatial ring was crushed by that red shadow just now. As that spatial ring burst apart, nearly everything there was left intact – it was only the purple crystal that vanished!

"Everyone be careful! Keep your backs to each other! We have run into some master, but do not panic, otherwise we will die even faster!"

The leader of the several martial artists shouted out, trying to stabilize the morale of those still standing.

However, his efforts were useless. The disparity was far too great!

As the several martial artists moved closer to each other, that red light flashed once more. Two more people had their corpses split apart as their heads flew into the air. Blood erupted like a fountain from their falling corpses!

"Big Brother!"

Everyone felt an extreme fear rising in their minds. Although this was only a dreamland space, they still felt an immense pressure in the face of such an abnormal opponent!

"Run away!"

The leader crazily shouted. But, he realized that the decision of running away was also meaningless. Everyone here would die without a doubt!

Pu! Pu!

"Ahhhhhh!"

In the instant when the leader turned to flee, he heard the screams of those behind him. He could hear the muffled thumps of their bodies hitting the ground and also the bubbling sound of their blood gushing out from their bodies.

"They all died?"

This thought flashed through the team leader’s mind before he felt his head suddenly lighten. The world spun around him as he saw his headless body from a distance. Then, his body was grasped by an incomparably sharp red-furred claw.

As soon as the claw grasped his body, an unbelievable sight occurred. As his world spun, he could see that his headless corpse suddenly shrank to the size of a tiny ball. His flesh and blood essence, his bones, his organs, everything was sucked away in an instant, leaving nothing behind but his skin and clothes falling to the ground.

He widened his eyes as far as he could, trying to search for the master of that red claw as his vision blurred even more, but all he could see was a faint outline. This figure was as tall as a person and also had a humanoid shape, walking tall on two feet just like a person. And in its claws, it had the purple crystal that Ba Dao had found, seeming as if it would swallow it at any moment.

However, before this martial artist could make out whether this monster was a human or a beast, because of the angle of his spinning head, all he could see was the sky and ground.

“Just… what… is that…”

This was the martial artist’s last thought before his head fell to the ground with a bloody plop.

“Roar! Roar! Roar! Awooo!”

That sharp howl resounded in the world once more, echoing throughout Demon Sealing Ridge as it became further and further away.

This brief battle on Demon Sealing Ridge was not noticed by anyone. This was simply because Demon Sealing Ridge was far too large. Even if that howl was heard by others, it still wouldn’t arouse their suspicion. After all, there were countless roars and howls that filled Demon Sealing Ridge every second of every day.

But slowly, over time, several masters began dying in rapid succession. These masters who died were all top 100 ranked masters of a great world, all of them ruthless and cunning individuals!

And several days later, this news finally spread out!

This was because those people that died were resurrected a day later. For various reasons, they didn’t disclose news of Demon Sealing Ridge’s monster at the start. But, as more and more people died, they were no longer able to conceal what happened.

Everyone was now aware that a red-furred monster had appeared at Demon Sealing Ridge, a bloodthirsty beast with unbelievable strength and speed. Of those that met it, no one had ever managed to survive. Moreover, they couldn’t even confirm whether this red-furred monster was a participant or a vicious beast.

Chapter 1199 – Towards True Martial City

Chapter 1199 – Towards True Martial City

…

…

…

The slaughter within True Martial Great World became increasingly intense as more and more martial artists gathered near True Martial City. Compared to Immemorial Imperial City, True Martial City had far broader grounds for hunting and killing. Just Demon Sealing Ridge itself was nearly a thousand miles long and wide.

Although Demon Sealing Ridge was the highest level hunting ground near True Martial City, not every martial artist chose to go there. For instance, Zhong Wenshu and Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies chose to go to a nameless canyon nearby Demon Spirit Ridge. This canyon was winding and deep and also very well hidden. The level of the nightmare beasts within also wasn't low.

The reason they had chosen this place was mainly for safety.

Whether it was Lin Ming or certain masters of True Martial City, it was possible they could be hunted down and slain.

"Did you hear the stories? It seems that some strange red-furred monster has appeared at Demon Sealing Ridge that especially hunts down top masters. Even masters ranked similarly to us have been killed." Sacred Tianhao solemnly said.

"That is a matter that only the top 10 ranked masters need to deal with; we do not have to worry about it. It also shouldn't affect our place, so we're much safer here. Moreover, five months have already passed. The second round of eliminations approaches. There should be only a month left. During the second round of eliminations, the number of participants eliminated will be even more exaggerated than in the last round. I think that Lin Ming will start to move."

"I wonder what the little bastard is doing so sneakily that he only comes out at the end. Whatever, we just have to avoid him and we're fine."

As Lin Ming was mentioned, Sacred Yueping grit his teeth. When the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion fought Lin Ming, the disparity between them had been an unsurpassable moat. It was a vivid memory that would never be erased from his mind, the shame of his life.

Sacred Yueping's guess wasn't wrong. Ever since Lin Ming killed Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies, he had continued to be closed up and didn't even go out to hunt once. His ranking rapidly fell.

As the second round of eliminations began, the merit value of nightmare beasts suddenly experienced a massive rise. The many participants rapidly accumulated merit points. With Lin Ming not doing anything at all, his ranking naturally fell as his merit points remained stagnant.

On the first day, he fell from around rank 30,000 to rank 33,000 on the Divine Seal Decree. Afterwards, he fell around 2000-3000 ranks every day. In just one month, he fell off the top 100,000 ranks of the Divine Sea Decree.

And the further he fell, the faster he fell. Currently, Lin Ming was ranked around 280,000.

As for the Divine Seal Decree, it only ranked the top 300,000 martial artists of the entire Divine Realm. In other words, Lin Ming would soon fall off the Divine Seal Decree!

In Good Fortune Great World, Lin Ming's change in ranking naturally was noticed by the countless disciples and Elders of the Unbroken Cult.

“That Lin Ming, isn’t he Junior-apprentice Sister’s husband? How come his ranking is falling straight down?”

“Yeah, wasn’t he very fierce?”

“It seems that he’s going to fall off the Divine Seal Decree soon.”

After some time, many disciples of the Unbroken Cult couldn’t help but discuss this in low whispers. But then, a gruff voice rang out. “Lin Ming’s drop in ranking is only because he hasn’t moved for these last two months. Then again, if we ignore that reason and just look at his 280,000 ranking, he will still become a late Holy Lord character in the future. He is a martial artist that ascended from the lower realms and yet he was able to achieve such success. But as for all of you, you are all martial artists born in the Divine Realm, and have done nothing with your lives at all! So, before you speak of others, make sure you have the qualifications to do so!”

The Unbroken Cult’s Great Elder callously berated them. These disciples were immediately embarrassed by their own words.

The Great Elder fiercely swept his eyes over all the disciples. The reason he said this was because when Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan asked him to help search for Lin Ming’s name, Lin Ming still hadn’t been able to surpass 1000 merit points, and this continued for a long time. From this it could be seen that for some unknown reason, Lin Ming hadn’t done anything at all. For the second round of eliminations, this was likely the same possibility.

“This Lin Ming… he really is able to stay still. There is still another month left in the second round of eliminations… he should be able to rush back into the top 30,000.”

The Unbroken Cult Great Elder thought out loud. But in truth, even he wasn’t too sure of what would happen. Before this, during the first round of eliminations, he hadn’t noticed Lin Ming’s ranking rising at all. He had only seen his extraordinary final result.

But this time, he was carefully observing from start to finish.

Within the Unbroken Cult's floating palace, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan were also staring at the Divine Seal Decree.

Although the two of them had correctly guessed why Lin Ming's ranking had dropped, seeing such a steep drop still made them feel nervous. Qin Xingxuan was especially restless. She feared that some accident might have happened to Lin Ming. It wasn't because she was concerned about how strong Lin Ming was, but because if Lin Ming couldn't obtain a stellar result on the Divine Seal Decree, then the Unbroken Cult might not escort them to see Lin Ming.

As Mu Qianyu saw Qin Xingxuan's uneasy appearance, she said in a gentle voice, "Little Sister Xingxuan, don't be so nervous. There is absolutely no need to worry about Lin Ming's strength. Even if he runs into a stronger powerhouse during this tournament and is defeated, he'll quickly catch up and achieve at least a similar result to the last time."

"Mm... I understand." Qin Xingxuan nodded.

And at this time, within the dreamland True Martial Great World, Immemorial Imperial City –

Lin Ming was sitting on a stone bed. Suddenly, his eyes flashed open. Seven-colored rainbow-hued lights appeared around him. He greedily absorbed them all like a whale swallowing water. Soon after, these energies entered his soul, carving the fourth divine dream mark into his being.

The four divine dream marks were all different. The first two divine dream marks were much brighter than the last two. As for the newest two, they were much more bleak and dim. It was clear that this was because they hadn't been nourished with enough divine dream energy.

From the time that Lin Ming entered the divine dream space with his five months of cultivation, he discovered that he had obtained a tremendous benefit in the aspect of his soul. His cultivation also gradually rose, nearing the middle Divine Sea realm with every passing day.

As for his battle spirit, it also approached gold perfection. If his battle spirit reached the perfect gold level, then the next boundary would be a blue soul battle spirit. At that time, the power and intensity of his battle spirit would take a qualitative leap upwards.

Lin Ming closed his eyes briefly, thinking out loud to himself, "My soul force is over twice as strong than before I trained in the Divine Dream Law! This sort of increase is far too terrifying. Empyrean Divine Dream is truly a remarkable heaven-gifted genius. In the domain of the soul, she was actually able to establish her own method to temper the soul and allow true essence to fuse into it..."

Lin Ming sighed. His own soul, if compared to that of someone who hadn't trained in the Divine Dream Law, was just like the difference between a martial artist's body and the body of someone who only had brute physical strength. The difference between these two was clear.

When one's soul was powerful, there were all sorts of benefits. For instance, one's divine sense, alchemical ability, refining ability – all of this was related to one's soul. In the future, he also wouldn't encounter a bottleneck in his cultivation due to the insufficient strength of his soul.

Of course, the most direct advantage now was his increased soul force. Lin Ming could also sense an area over twice as large as what he could in the past.

Moreover, the clarity of his divine sense had also doubled!

This was especially true to his sensitivity to divine dream energy. As Lin Ming understood the Divine Dream Law more and more, his sensitivity to this miraculous energy was 10 times what it was before.

Now, as Lin Min closed his eyes, he could clearly feel all of the masses of divine dream energy lights in a scope of a hundred miles around him. These lights came in different colors and shades. Some were darker, some were brighter, some were smaller, and some were bigger. All of them represented varying concentrations of divine dream energy.

And these concentrations of energy formed in two situations: one was a participant, and one was a nightmare beast.

Lin Ming also discovered that the divine dream energy within nightmare beasts was different from that carried within participants. The divine dream energy within nightmare beasts was often single masses of light that came in one color.

As for the divine dream energy of the participants, that was much more mixed. After all, these participants killed a massive number of nightmare beasts and also gathered all of those different energies into their bodies.

“I should go out and start hunting now. I need to kill some participants or nightmare beasts so I can gather more dreamland energy to nourish my divine dream marks.”

Lin Ming thought. Then, he left his training chambers and moved toward Nightmare Canyon, a thousand miles away from Immemorial Imperial City.

However, along the way he discovered that there weren’t many masters at all. With his sense he was able to easily search a range of a hundred miles for dense gatherings of divine dream energy. Yet, in this extremely broad hunting zone, he wasn’t able to find any highly ranked masters at all.

If there were few martial artists then the nightmare beasts would evolve at an extremely slow rate. The nightmare beasts would have a correspondingly low merit point value.

“Where did all the masters go? Could they have gone to another city?” Lin Ming frowned. After the first round of eliminations, only 1% of the participants on True Martial Great World remained. For such a small number of participants, they could only gain more merit points by gathering together. It seemed that the martial artists of Immemorial Imperial City had migrated somewhere else.

Lin Ming captured the most powerful nearby martial artist to confirm his own guess.

"True Martial City… it seems that the masters of Immemorial Imperial City have all gone to True Martial City…"

Chapter 1200 – Rescue

Chapter 1200 – Rescue

…

…

…

“This is True Martial City…”

Lin Ming looked at the giant city before him. Compared to the broad and bustling Immemorial Imperial City, True Martial City seemed much smaller. But, the aura that this city emitted was actually far more suppressing than that of Immemorial Imperial City. Just the city walls of True Martial City were completely forged with saint artifact level metal, and with the massive arrays that powered it, it could be called indestructible!

Lin Ming spread out his divine sense. He discovered that there weren’t many masters around him. This was also quite normal. In most situations, the masters would be gathered at hunting grounds near the city with high level nightmare beasts. Or, they would be within the city itself. Currently, Lin Ming was still several hundred miles away from True Martial City, so there weren’t many martial artists nearby.

“At present, I should be ranked around 100-200 in this great world. After the second round of eliminations began, all of the nightmare beasts evolved and the merit points of the participants should also be increasing.”

Lin Ming thought out loud. He set forwards, deciding to enter the city and look for a residence to settle himself in before heading out again to hunt. But then, at this moment, he suddenly heard a violent explosion nearby. This explosion was deafening and rapid; it was clear that there was an intense collision of energy.

Lin Ming cast out his senses, searching for the collision point of energy in the sensory map of his mind. Five groups of lights appeared before him. Two groups of lights were a glossy gray, indicating nightmare beasts, and the other three masses of lights were mixed, indicating martial artists.

However, this situation was not one where martial artists were chasing down nightmare beasts, but where the nightmare beasts were chasing down the martial artists.

Of these three martial artists, there was one man and two women. They all wore similar long robes and held similar-looking top grade saint artifact long swords in their hands. One could see that they originated from the same sect. As for those martial artists who could bring a top grade saint artifact to participate in the First Martial Meeting, those were usually upper geniuses of Holy Land level influences. Their strength was passable.

These three martial artists were being chased down by two vulture-like nightmare beasts. The nightmare beasts were covered in black feathers and each had three heads. Each head had a massive protrusion of flesh on top and long beaks like sabers. Their necks had no feathers, exposing their sickly mottled yellow skin. They were extremely ugly creatures.

“Senior-apprentice Brother, we have to split up and escape!”

A yellow-robed junior-apprentice sister said, her face pale as she looked back towards the hideous nightmare beasts chasing after them. She was well aware in her heart that compared to these giant vulture beasts, the difference in their combined strength was simply too far from them. Those vulture beasts would only need to gently peck her to split apart her waist and cause all of her organs to fall out.

Although she knew she wouldn’t truly die, such a scene was simply the same as a living nightmare, because the feeling of dying was far too real. Moreover, in these past many days, they had gathered a great amount of merit points. If they died here, most of their merit points would be lost. And with their strength, passing through the brutal second round of eliminations was unlikely. If they died just one more time, they basically wouldn’t have any chance of passing anymore.

“Don’t split up. With two nightmare beasts, even if we split up at least two of us will die. And, the area around True Martial City is far too dangerous right now. If we split up then we’ll die even faster! We have to hurry up and fly towards True Martial City as fast as we can. As long as we can reach the city, the spells protecting it will drive away these two abominable nightmare beasts.”

As the yellow-clothed senior-apprentice brother spoke, he flew at an increasingly desperate speed. But at this moment, he discovered that not too far away, a blue-clothed youth was flying in his direction. His movements were light and unhurried and he seemed to be flying towards them.

This blue-clothed youth was Lin Ming.

“Someone’s here!”

The yellow-clothed youth was overjoyed as he saw Lin Ming speeding towards him. He didn’t think that Lin Ming could kill those horrendous nightmare beasts chasing them. This was because if those two nightmare beasts were changed into ranking participants of the True Martial Great World, they would be ranked between 10,000 and 100,000. They were extremely fierce creatures, and this was not a high level hunting field near True Martial City, so the chances of them meeting a master here weren’t high. The chances of them bumping into a top 10,000 ranked master here were simply impossibly slim.

However, if someone new arrived, there was always a chance to turn the tables. Even in a worst case situation, this new person should be able to divert the attention of the nightmare beasts.

“Friend, help! We are disciples of Five Flower Mountain! If you can rescue our lives, we will surely thank you again after this First Martial Meeting is over!”

As Lin Ming heard this man shouting towards him, he thought this was quite funny. In truth, within the Divine Dream World, it was already good enough if a participant didn’t kick another participant while they were down and take advantage of them, let alone going out of their way to save them. Everyone here was competing against each other, so wouldn't it be foolish to save someone else? Of course, to Lin Ming, this man couldn't be considered competition at all.

Lin Ming looked calm as he came to a halt. As the man saw Lin Ming's posture, he was afraid that Lin Ming was underestimating these nightmare beasts and would be immediately killed. He frantically said, "Be careful! These two nightmare beasts came from Demon Sealing Ridge! They are extremely difficult to deal with! If you join forces with us, then we might be able to coordinate… and…"

Before the man could speak another word, a brilliant divine light tore through the horizon, so bright that it nearly blinded him.

That divine light blazed past his body at an incredible speed, nearly touching him. At the moment that this divine light came close to him, the man could feel every hair on his body stand up, making him feel incomparably cold as if he had fallen into the nine nether abyss.

A similar feeling also swelled up within the two yellow-clothed junior-apprentice sisters. The two of them were shocked as their entire bodies became slick with a nervous sweat.

But before they could even respond, two miserable screeches filled the air.

As the three people looked back, they were completely shocked. Behind them, the two vulture beasts had their six heads completely cut off. The wounds were simple and clean, without the least bit of waste in movement.

Peng! Peng!

The two nightmare beasts died. Their bodies fell down, disintegrating in midair and becoming pure dreamland energy that was absorbed by Lin Ming.

After seeing those two fierce and repugnant nightmare beasts instantly slain by Lin Ming, the youth gulped. He turned and looked towards Lin Ming with disbelief in his eyes. The two yellow-clothed girls' jaws dropped and they were unable to react for some time.

They had actually struck the jackpot. The person they encountered was unexpectedly a top master. He was probably not ranked in the top 100,000 or even 10,000, but ranked in the top 1000. That meant he was someone who had an extremely high chance of passing the preliminaries.

"Thank you for the help, friend!"

The youth quickly cupped his hands together and bowed in respect. He had the happy expression of someone that had just survived a great catastrophe, as well a tint of embarrassment. He suddenly remembered that when he called out his background to this blue-clothed youth, that youth had probably thought he was a joke.

The two yellow-clothed girls also hurried to bow, showing their absolute respect to Lin Ming. This was to thank him for his help and also because they feared that Lin Ming would be displeased and kill them. Within the divine dream space, murder between participants was a common occurrence.

"Just a minor effort. I have some matters I would like to ask you though." The reason that Lin Ming rescued these people was mainly because he wanted to gain some information on True Martial City. He had just arrived here so he had no understanding of the surrounding situation. For instance, how many masters were at True Martial City as well as where the hunting grounds with high level nightmare beasts were.

"Friend, please ask. I will try to answer as best as I can."

"Mm. Let me ask you, how come two nightmare beasts of that rank were chasing you down near True Martial City?"

Lin Ming thought that this was strange. He was extremely close to True Martial City and yet such powerful nightmare beasts had appeared here. Out of 10,000 martial artists, 9999 of them might not be their match.

The youth ruefully smiled. He said, "It's not as you think. We are at the eastern outskirts of True Martial City. Normally, there shouldn't be any high level nightmare beasts gathered here. Thus, top masters rarely appear here. The nightmare beasts are extremely low level here, but they are more than enough for us three brothers and sisters to deal with. However, a few days ago, there was some change in Demon Sealing Ridge. A red-furred monster suddenly appeared. This red-furred monster is extremely strange but also unbelievably powerful. Not only does it kill participants but it also kills nightmare beasts. I heard that it wrested away a purple crystal from someone and evolved, but I'm not too sure what truly happened. But, in short, that mysterious red-furred monster exudes an aura that causes the high level nightmare beasts to dread it and run away. Because of the chaos over there, some high level nightmare beasts fled. Some of those high level nightmare beasts ran away to the lower level hunting grounds, and because of that, us insignificant martial artists are experiencing true misery."

"Demon Sealing Ridge?"

"Yes… friend, you seem new to this area so you probably don't know of Demon Sealing Ridge. Demon Sealing Ridge is 3000 miles southwest of True Martial City. It's a long mountain range covered with towering trees and canyons and glens everywhere. There is also an extremely high concentration of high level nightmare beasts there. That is the hunting grounds that the top masters of True Martial City like the most. But now, because of that strange red-furred monster, there aren't as many high level nightmare beasts in Demon Sealing Ridge. In addition to that, because of the threat that the red-furred monster poses, many masters have left Demon Sealing Ridge and have started hunting in the lower level areas."

"I see…" Lin Ming said. He suddenly had an extremely strong interest in this Demon Sealing Ridge.

The yellow-clothed youth already guessed that Lin Ming would have this response. He warned with good intentions, "Friend, I know that you are extremely strong, but I urge you to reconsider it if you are planning to go to Demon Sealing Ridge. Right now, if you aren't ranked in the top 100 of True Martial Great World, it will be hard for you to stay at Demon Sealing Ridge. And even if you are in the top 100, you will be instantly killed if you run into that red-furred monster. I estimate that only a top 10 ranked martial artist has the ability to preserve their life in front of that ruthless red-furred monster.”

To the yellow-clothed youth, a top 10 ranked character of a great world was simply a legend. Although Lin Ming had instantly killed those two nightmare beasts, that sort of action was still far from qualifying one as a top 10 ranked master of a great world.

Lin Ming faintly smiled, not explaining anything. He definitely wanted to go to Demon Sealing Ridge more and more.

The yellow-clothed youth saw that Lin Ming had no intention of heeding his advice, but there wasn’t anything else he could say. After all, they had only met by chance here. He cupped his fists together and said, “Friend, are you planning on entering the city? How about we go together?”

“Mm, I plan on finding a residence before heading back out to hunt.” Lin Ming casually said. The two girls were ecstatic upon hearing this. If Lin Ming was with them, this meant that they would be safe on their return trip. They had already changed their plans. Once they returned to the city, they would then trade locations for an even lower level hunting ground. The surrounding areas near here were becoming far too terrifying for them.

Chapter 1201 – Murder

Chapter 1201 – Murder

…

…

…

With the direction of Five Flower Mountain's three disciples, Lin Ming found a very good residence at True Martial City. And, as the several people walked along, he was able to glean a general situation of True Martial City's masters through their conversations together.

And of the strongest characters, because they hadn't yet formally fought each other, it was impossible to say just who was stronger or weaker. One was only able to obtain a general feeling.

Most people believed that Dragon Fang was the number one master of the True Martial Great World. Dragon Fang was only a nickname; no one knew his true name. Within the Divine Dream World, many people used a nickname.

Dragon Fang's weapon was the Dragon Fang Blade. His origin was a mystery. He didn't come from the True Martial Holy Lands, and it was possible that he didn't come from a World King level Holy Land. As for where he truly came from, no one knew.

But, what everyone knew for certain was that Dragon Fang's merit points ranking was not number one, but ranked in the top five.

The number one ranking belonged to the top genius of the True Martial Holy Lands – Wu Finalcloud.

Wu Finalcloud was also undoubtedly one of the strongest participants within the True Martial Great World.

After Lin Ming learnt all this, he suspiciously asked, “If Wu Finalcloud is ranked first, then why are there more people that think Dragon Fang is stronger?”

The yellow-clothed youth said, “You can probably already make a guess from what I’ve said, and that is that people from the True Martial Holy Lands give Dragon Fang a wide berth if they see him. Dragon Fang claimed a hunting area and no one from the True Martial Holy Lands is able to take it away from him. No one else is afforded this sort of treatment. The True Martial Holy Lands is the massive titan of True Martial City. Normally, anyone that sees them should be quaking with fear!”

“Oh?” Lin Ming asked, an eyebrow shooting up. Within Immemorial Imperial City, this sort of situation didn’t exist. Besides one’s family background indicating their relative strength, there was no other advantage. It wasn’t like True Martial City, where one could directly suppress all others with their background of the True Martial Holy Lands.

The yellow-clothed youth continued to say, “If you think about it some more, you’ll understand the reasons. In True Martial City, the True Martial Holy Lands has the most geniuses as well as the strongest geniuses. No one dares to provoke them. Even if your strength is equal to theirs, no one is able to summon the courage to oppose them. All of the best nearby hunting grounds have been claimed by them, and there are very few areas that are divided to others. Moreover, if you were to meet them in the wild, all you could do is allow them to kill you. Escaping alive would be the best situation possible. And even then, it is impossible to take revenge against them; your only choice is to endure the shame. If you were to kill them, then once they revive the next day there will simply be stronger martial artists chasing after you. And if you kill them, stronger people will follow behind them. This is simply like the gangs of the mortal world. Even if you killed some unimportant figure of that gang, that is equal to slapping that gang in the face. They might use all of their forces to chase you down in order to retaliate.

“The only exception would be… if you were stronger than everyone from the True Martial Holy Lands!

“And Dragon Fang has managed to accomplish this!”

The yellow-clothed youth’s face was filled with admiration as he spoke to here. It was clear that he was filled with awe and reverence towards Dragon Fang, someone who was able to face off against the entire True Martial Holy Lands with just their strength alone.

Lin Ming also felt a great deal of admiration towards Dragon Fang as he heard this. He let out a light sigh. It seemed that even if Empyrean Divine Dream was managing this First Martial Meeting, it was still impossible for her to form a completely fair tournament between 10 quadrillion geniuses. A genius from a great background had much more support and help than someone who came from a humble origin. For someone from a top sect, it was much easier to gain merit points.

However, for Empyrean Divine Dream to do what she had done already could be called perfection. As the tournament continued forwards, it would become increasingly fair.

“Has Dragon Fang fought with Wu Finalcloud yet?” Lin Ming asked.

“I’ve only heard some rumors. It’s said that the two of them fought for the briefest moment just once. A high ranked character from the True Martial Holy Lands wanted to kill Dragon Fang and steal away his merit points to increase their own ranking, but the result was that they were easily killed off by Dragon Fang instead.

“Then, after this person revived, he crawled over to his Elder senior-apprentice Brother Wu Finalcloud and asked him to deal with Dragon Fang in order to help him take revenge. Then, it was said that Wu Finalcloud encountered Dragon Fang at Demon Sealing Ridge. The two of them fought for just a single move, and Wu Finalcloud was the one that was forced back by Dragon Fang’s sword. Then, Wu Finalcloud brought his several junior-apprentice brothers away without saying a single word further. Those several junior-apprentice brothers he brought with him were also highly ranked martial artists of the True Martial

Holy Lands. But even several of them together weren't able to do anything to Dragon Fang. From that day on, no one from the True Martial Holy Lands dared to move against Dragon Fang again. Whenever they see Dragon Fang, all of them scurry away with their tails between their legs.

"I don't know if Dragon Fang really fought with Wu Finalcloud, but everyone can see that the disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands all fear Dragon Fang and avoid him as much as possible. Thus, many people took this as a sign that Dragon Fang is the top master of the True Martial Great World. And, merit point rankings also don't represent everything. There are some masters that don't care about fame and only wish to challenge stronger masters."

The yellow-clothed youth spoke in a rush. After hearing this, Lin Ming was also quite interested in this Dragon Fang character.

"Wu Finalcloud… Dragon Fang… this Dragon Fang's background is quite the mystery. He isn't from the True Martial Holy Lands and yet he's so powerful. The Divine Realm is incomparably broad, so there must be people that stumble upon heaven-defying lucky chances and also those with talent that surpasses all belief. For someone like him to appear isn't unusual at all…"

The geniuses of Great World King Holy Lands were strong, but a Great World King Holy Land was limited in the number of people they had. A Great World King Holy Land might have a trillion some people in their ranks. But, when the geniuses of these Great World King Holy Lands were compared to all the rare extraordinary people that appeared within the trillion trillion people of the Divine Realm, it was unknown just who was stronger!

"I'll have to go to Demon Sealing Ridge first…"

Lin Ming made this plan. Then, he left True Martial City, launched his movement technique and flew straight towards Demon Sealing Ridge.

For Lin Ming, a 3000 mile distance only took an incense stick of time to traverse.

As Lin Ming approached Demon Sealing Ridge, he released his senses. He could see countless massive and brilliant divine dream lights appearing in his mind's eye. Many of these masses of lights were even brighter than Lin Ming himself.

Of course, this was because Lin Ming's ranking had precipitously dropped and he had fallen out of the top 100 rankings of the True Martial Great World.

"There are many powerful nightmare beasts over there. If I kill them, I'll be able to obtain a good number of merit points."

Underneath the gaze of Lin Ming's divine sense, there was no powerful nightmare beast that was able to escape his eyes. In terms of killing nightmare beasts, there was no one as fast or effective as Lin Ming.

Lin Ming had just started to fly towards those several nightmare beasts when a grim voice sounded out, dripping with killing intent. "Friend! These are our hunting grounds, don't you understand the rules!?"

Lin Ming frowned. He turned around to see that not too far away, six martial artists had gathered. They were all of different sizes but the clothes they wore all had the same patterns. They had a strange symbol embroidered on their right chest area, that seemed to resemble an abstract 'True' character.

Lin Ming had seen this symbol many times in Immemorial Imperial City before. When he first arrived at the Divine Dream World, he had also seen two geniuses of the True Martial Holy Lands that had this symbol on their foreheads. It was clear that these people were all from the True Martial Holy Lands.

"Heh, it seems that those three people from Five Flower Mountain were correct. These people from the True Martial Holy Lands are simply a domineering bunch that have occupied the best hunting areas around True Martial City. Martial artists from smaller sects are only able to share in the leftovers."

As Lin Ming was thinking this, one of those six people said, “Big Brother, why are you speaking so kindly to the likes of him? He’s clearly a newbie to this area. We might as well just kill him here and get it over him. I just wonder if this idiot has any merit points we can share in.”

This person spoke in an extremely loud voice, clearly wanting Lin Ming to hear him. Beside him was someone that seemed to be the captain of their group. This was the person who had first warned Lin Ming. He had dark skin and was extremely tall. His eyes were sharp and his face was angular.

This dark-skinned man narrowed his eyes and examined Lin Ming’s cultivation. He felt as if there was something a bit strange about Lin Ming.

He wouldn’t recklessly attack those that he didn’t understand. But, this didn’t mean he was afraid. Within the entirety of True Martial City, besides a select few people, there was no one that dared to attack him.

“I’ll say it one last time. Leave here. This is our hunting area.” His words didn’t seem rude nor overly disrespectful. But, the truth was that a hidden undercurrent of killing intent and threat lay beneath his words, menacing and aggressive.

“Didn’t you hear him? If you don’t want to die then hurry up and fuck off! You can consider yourself lucky this time!” The dark-skinned man’s little brother shouted out once more. In truth, this little brother of his wasn’t someone from the True Martial Holy Lands, but merely an underling. Many times, a dog would eagerly bark out loud, even if their master remained quiet.

Lin Ming laughed. His lips curved up in a smile as he spoke and he looked at this underling like he was looking at an idiotic clown. “In all my years I’ve walked where I wanted to using my own two legs. What do you mean fuck off? How about you demonstrate that for me?”

“You are courting death!”

That little brother said, enraged. He was the first to attack. And as he attacked, the other five people behind him also moved. Although the dark-skinned man felt a bit of caution towards Lin Ming, this was only because he didn't completely understand Lin Ming's limit and background, not because he feared Lin Ming himself.

Woosh! Woosh!

Two swords turned into beams of light that thrust towards Lin Ming's heart and throat. At the same time, someone arrived behind Lin Ming in a flash of smoke, a thick saber in their hands chopping downwards towards Lin Ming's head.

All of this happened in just a split-second.

However, just as these people thought they were about to succeed, Lin Ming also moved.

At an unbelievable speed approaching fantasy, a speed that none of the six were able to react to, Lin Ming's body suddenly shot forwards, leaving behind nothing but an afterimage. The attacks of the six people all missed!

Woosh!

The Phoenix Blood Spear came whistling out. Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and the cold spearpoint drew a crescent moon in the air. With a flash of red light, without a martial skill and only a single overwhelming move, three disciples of the True Martial Great World were instantly sheared in half at the waist, blood raining down.

Three people were instantly killed, leaving three behind.

These three people included the dark-skinned captain as well as his loud underling.

“What!?”

The three remaining participants looked down to the ground and saw the three corpses still gushing blood. This sudden change caused all of them to be shocked. They knew that they had absolutely kicked their foot against a brick wall this time. The difference in strength was simply too great; there was no chance of them escaping.

Although they had really stumbled into a pile of crap, the dark-skinned youth still kept his calm. This was because he knew he had someone backing him from behind.

The dark-skinned youth's heart shrank as he saw Lin Ming's expressionless face and blood-stained spear. "Stop! Friend, I apologize if you were offended just now, but this is all a grave misunderstanding. We are disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands, so you should give us some face. You killed those three people just now, but you also didn't know who they were. I can help you resolve this issue and take responsibility for this matter so that no one will try to retaliate against you."

The dark-skinned youth hurriedly said, afraid that Lin Ming wouldn't know he was from the True Martial Holy Lands.

Chapter 1202 – Cultivating Essence, Energy, and Divine

Chapter 1202 – Cultivating Essence, Energy, and Divine

…

…

…

After Lin Ming listened to this dark-skinned youth's words, he laughed, and in a very reckless manner.

As that rampant underling from before saw Lin Ming's smiling face, he was horrified. Even so, he mustered up his courage and put on a brave face, saying, "Is it funny? What are you laughing about?" Then, he pointed at the symbol on his robes. "This is the True Martial symbol, it is something that is impossible to fake. In this dreamland space, everything is the same as in reality and you can even look it up yourself. As long as you pour your true essence into it, you'll know that it is real!"

Lin Ming chuckled. "I'm laughing at all the idiotic nonsense you're spouting. Do you think I don't know you're from the True Martial Holy Lands?"

"You…" The dark-skinned youth stiffened. He gloomily said, "The True Martial Holy Lands is the influence that is currently in control of True Martial City. If you kill a disciple of the True Martial Holy Lands, you will be the one killed in the future! Do you really think that you can face the entirety of the True Martial Holy Lands by yourself!? Our lives are not valuable at all. Even if we die, we won't lose too many merit points. But you are different. Your merit points are enough to rank you in the top 50 masters of True Martial Great World!"

The dark-skinned youth bit out, the threat evident in his words.

"Face the entirety of the True Martial Holy Lands?" Lin Ming rubbed his chin. "If you didn't say that, I wouldn't have thought of this. But now that you mention it, that's quite a good idea. I'm missing some merit points right now, so if you people are planning on delivering some snacks to me then go ahead, I'll welcome all of you."

"You!"

The dark-skinned youth's complexion sank. He suddenly said, "You have no idea of death or danger!"

"Attack together!" The dark-skinned youth shouted. After stumbling into such a lunatic, he had no hopes of still living after this. The final counterattack of these three people was fierce, but in front of Lin Ming it was nothing at all.

The Phoenix Blood Spear swept out; all of their attacks were completely crushed!

"You will pay for this!"

The dark-skinned youth shouted. His saber cut towards Lin Ming's throat, but the Phoenix Blood Spear was already a step ahead; it passed right through his heart.

Soon after, a blazing spear light flashed out and the other two people were cut apart, their blood splashing out into the skies!

"I will… remember… you…"

The dark-skinned youth glared at Lin Ming as his body fell down.

In just 10 short breaths of time, the six martial artists had been completely wiped out. Their bodies turned into pure dreamland energy that fused into Lin Ming's body, where it was absorbed by the divine dream marks on his soul.

"Six people altogether gave me a total of a million merit points. Not bad."

Lin Ming looked up his own merit points and saw that he had finally broken through 10 million. He guessed that these people were ranked around 200 at True Martial Great World. As for that dark-skinned youth, he contributed the most points to Lin Ming at around 500 thousand. The other five people contributed the other 500 thousand. Compared to the first round of eliminations, although these participants were in similar positions, the number of merit points had increased by far too much. Otherwise, if Lin Ming killed participants of this level, the rise in his merit points shouldn't be so high.

"My divine dream marks are even more complete… but, these newest two divine dream marks have an even greater need for dreamland energy than the first two. It seems that every time I form another divine dream mark, I'll need more and more dreamland energy… I wonder just what it will be like the further I cultivate them? I do not have Empyrean Divine Dream's transcendent divine might and can only rely on the Magic Cube to help me perceive the method to this miraculous ability. Even if the Magic Cube is a heaven-defying tool, it still isn't enough. It might be able to help me at the start, but the further I go, the less useful it will be."

As Lin Ming understood the Divine Dream Law more and more, his admiration towards Empyrean Divine Dream increased by leaps and bounds. He simply had no idea how Empyrean Divine Dream had managed to create such a brilliant transcendent divine might.

Lin Ming gradually realized that the Divine Dream Law was not just its own independent system of Laws, but also something that could be an independent cultivation system!

Currently, Lin Ming trained in two types of cultivation systems. One was the body transformation system and one was the essence gathering system.

As he thought about it, body transformation trained the mortal body. In terms of essence, energy, and divine, this would be called flesh and blood 'essence'. Body transformation was to refine the flesh and blood and temper one's essence. Finally, one's body would be similar to a God Beast, a being with incomparably powerful defensive power. With just a single step, one could sunder the earth.

As for the essence gathering system, that was to cultivate the dantian and to grow one's inner world, constantly gathering energy within it. In essence, energy, and divine, this represented energy. Heaven and earth origin energy was this 'energy', and essence gathering was to cultivate a breathing technique that could gather the spiritual energy of the world, becoming more and more in tune with the power of nature.

But whether it was training the body or training one's dantian, there was something that was impossible to cultivate: that was the divine soul.

Normally, a martial artist would increase their soul force by studying a few supporting skills, such as alchemy, refining, array formations, and so forth. The further one studied these skills, the more they could increase their soul force.

There were even some sects that developed a number of arcane skills that trained the divine soul. For instance, the Overbearing Soul Tactic that Lin Ming had first practiced a long time ago was one such technique. But this technique didn't fuse true essence into the soul, it simply enhanced one's soul force.

There was an overwhelming difference between the Overbearing Soul Tactic and the Divine Dream Law. For comparison, the Overbearing Soul Tactic could be considered the exercise techniques of a mortal. If they jogged every day, lifted weights, and trained their body, then after a long time their body would become stronger and they would naturally have an advantage in fights.

As for the Divine Dream Law, that was the true training of a sect's martial artists. One could train, enhancing their cultivation and rising in boundaries and accomplish miraculous things. They could split apart oceans and shatter mountains. The difference between these two techniques could be imagined.

So, if one continued with this train of thought, then if one were able to cultivate the Divine Dream Law to perfection, one could learn a completely new cultivation system – the soul cultivation system!

Body transformation, essence gathering, divine refining, if one could practice all three of these systems, they could completely train in essence, energy, and divine!

If a martial artist could cultivate all three systems, what boundary would they be able to reach in the future?

As Lin Ming thought of this, his mind bubbled with anticipation.

To a martial artist, essence, energy, and divine were all indispensable. If one solely cultivated body transformation or essence gathering, then they would always have a weakness.

An essence gathering martial artist had a weak body. They had to constantly create shields of protective true essence around themselves. And once this protective true essence shattered, their mortal body would easily be torn apart.

For instance, if Lin Ming killed someone now, even if they were a Divine Sea master, if he were to rip out their heart or tear off their head, then they would die, no matter how strong they were.

But if one was solely a body transformation martial artist, then even if their body was powerful, they would be lacking in flexibility. Without the support of the essence gathering system, they would not be able to display their speed, striking power, or explosive force to the limit.

But even if a martial artist cultivated body and energy, there were still flaws.

For instance, Mo Eversnow. She was a rare heaven-gifted genius who would have become a Great World King character in the future. Even though she dual cultivated in body and energy, she still managed to reach a half-step World King cultivation at an extremely young age. She had even nearly stepped into the legendary Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. But even for someone as gifted as her, once her body disintegrated and her inner world was shattered, leaving nothing behind but her divine soul, she became extremely weak. Her combat strength had fallen to that of the weakest early Divine Lord martial artist. Moreover, if she used too much energy, her soul would suffer damage and she might fall into a deep slumber.

In the end, this was caused by the fragility of Mo Eversnow's soul. If she had been able to cultivate her soul to an extremely high boundary and allow her soul to directly move energy, then she would never have ended up in such a state. Even if a Holy Lord level powerhouse faced Mo Eversnow's remnant soul form, they would still be instantly killed!

If there could really be called a peak of martial arts in this world, then the person who could climb to that peak could be called a True Divinity, a being whose lifespan surpassed the sun and the moon and even the boundless universe. Such a person might be skilled in all three aspects of essence, energy, and soul, someone who reached the peak of all existence!

If one cultivated essence, energy, and divine to the limit, would there be a qualitative change?

As Lin Ming thought of this, he could only sigh with emotion. He hadn't even managed to fully dual cultivate body and energy, and now he had to add another cultivation system – soul cultivation!

If he cultivated all three systems to perfection, then Lin Ming might become the most terrifying martial artist to ever exist since ancient times.

However, if he failed to fully cultivate all three systems to perfection then he would have wasted his energy and also his time.

Of course, there was no need for Lin Ming to consider what cultivation paths to take. With his character, he was destined to never let go of any opportunity that walked across his path. He would cultivate essence, energy, and divine.

Especially since Lin Ming possessed the heaven-defying cheat tool called the Magic Cube!

For an entire day, Lin Ming constantly cut down nightmare beasts in Demon Sealing Ridge as well as familiarized himself with the surrounding environment. With his powerful soul force supporting him as well as his current understandings of the Divine Dream Law, he was able to sense all powerful nightmare beasts and participants within 100-200 miles. None of them were able to escape Lin Ming's sense. Lin Ming was able to sense them, but they weren't able to sense him. This gave Lin Ming a tremendous superiority.

As Lin Ming hunted more and more, he continually gathered dreamland energy within his body, becoming more and more powerful.

And at the end of the day, the six True Martial Holy Land martial artists that were killed by Lin Ming finally revived…

In the deep dark, the dark-skinned youth's eyes flashed open, hatred and anger shining in them. "Brat, you are dead!"

Chapter 1203 – Highdragon

Chapter 1203 – Highdragon

…

…

…

Bang!

The dark-skinned youth angrily rushed out of his dwelling, his long hair recklessly flying behind him, his face like that of a starving wolf. Closely behind him were his several fellow junior-apprentices and his underling.

These people were all seething with rage.

“Big Brother! That man actually dared to…!”

“There’s no need to say anything further. We will look for Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon and have him pay for what he did!” The dark-skinned youth angrily said from between clenched teeth.

“Good, hehe, Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon is ranked in the top 10 of this great world. This time we’ll be the ones to kill him!” The dark-skinned youth’s underling diabolically said.

“Humph! How can my True Martial Holy Lands be so easily bullied? His only option is to never leave the city, otherwise we’ll kill him every time we see him until he’s begging for mercy! Only then will I consider forgiving him.”

“Haha, what Big Brother said is right. We have to make sure he doesn’t move and obediently lets us all kill him to make up for our lost merit points.”

“That’s right!”

The several other martial artists echoed together. The dark-skinned youth traced his spatial ring and the light of a sound transmitting talisman shot through the skies. Within the Divine Dream World, one could use sound transmitting talismans just like in the real world.

The several people soon received a response.

“We’re in luck. Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon hasn’t left to hunt but is still in the city. Let’s go see him!”

“Great!”

Everyone followed the dark-skinned youth and in several blinks of an eye, they arrived at their Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon’s residence.

The dark-skinned youth respectfully stood in front of the door and said, “Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon, True Martial Holy Lands’ White Martial Hall disciple Dong Xiao requests an audience!”

The dark-skinned youth said as he maintained his respectful pose. After some time, an indifferent voice came out from the room, “Enter.”

“Yes.”

The dark-skinned youth cautiously opened the door. The room was extremely simple with only a single stone bed in the center. A white-haired youth sat cross-legged on the stone bed. A large red snake was wrapped around him. This red snake had a single horn on its head. It was a high level contract beast known as a unicorn dragon. As for Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon’s nickname, it was because of this giant snake.

"I greet Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon."

The dark-skinned youth bowed. Highdragon nodded and said, "What is it?"

"Reporting to Senior-apprentice Brother, us White Martial Hall disciples have been hunting nightmare beasts in the third area grounds at Demon Sealing Ridge. But yesterday, an obnoxious boy completely unaware of the rules rushed into our hunting grounds. Not only did he ignore our advice, but he suddenly attacked us and killed us all!"

The dark-skinned youth's voice was filled with outraged indignation. The five others with him also echoed him, as if they had suffered some great injustice.

Highdragon sneered and said, "I have no idea what you fellows have done, but you likely thought your opponent was easy to bully, thus you provoked him. Finally, you ended up kicking iron and were all killed instead. But no matter the reason, it is still unallowable for anyone to kill disciples of my True Martial Holy Lands. I will help you this one time."

Being seen through by Highdragon, the dark-skinned youth was a bit embarrassed. But, as the dark-skinned youth heard that Highdragon would only help once, he was a bit unwilling as he said, "Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon, killing him just one time is going too easy on him. We did think that he was the type that we could bully, but afterwards, when us brothers argued with him and said that we came from the True Martial Holy Lands, that boy only responded with a few words. He said, in his exact words, 'I'm missing some merit points right now, so if you people are planning on delivering some snacks to me then go ahead, I'll welcome all of you'. I can make an oath on my heart of martial arts that he said these words. I'm not exaggerating at all!"

"Mm?"

Highdragon frowned, his face darkening. "He said that he wants the disciples of my True Martial Holy Lands to deliver merit points to him?"

"It's completely true! The way he acted was far too arrogant, he simply doesn't place our True Martial Holy Lands in his eyes!" The dark-skinned youth hurriedly said.

“I see.” Highdragon stood up, his eyes narrowing. But from within the slits of his eyes, one could make out a faint trace of icy cold killing intent.

The dark-skinned youth was overjoyed as he saw Highdragon’s new expression. He knew that Highdragon had finally been moved to a killing anger. This Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon was usually a quiet man of few words, but once he was angered, the consequences were dire.

“Where is he?” Highdragon tersely asked.

“He should still be at Demon Sealing Ridge…”

Highdragon no longer spoke. He casually stepped forwards and left the room, flying straight towards Demon Sealing Ridge.

“This is great! Let’s go and follow him!”

The dark-skinned youth said to the several martial artists behind him, pleased as a peach.

“You damned brat, now you’re dead. If you originally only killed us then it wouldn’t have caused such serious consequences. With your cheap mouth, you’ve managed to provoke the anger of Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon, haha!”

The dark-skinned youth wildly laughed. Then, he flew with the five other people towards Demon Sealing Ridge.

…………..

At this time, within the Good Fortune Great World, in the Unbroken Cult’s floating palace –

Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, as well as the Elders of the Unbroken Cult were gathered in a grand hall. From a window of this grand hall, one could see the distant horizon.

In the far off distance, one could see the incomparably massive Divine Seal Decree that seemed as if it connected the heavens and the earth together.

"Big Sister Qianyu, it seems that Brother Lin's ranking has finally risen!" Qin Xingxuan happily said, "He suddenly rose 8000 ranks all of a sudden! Although he has slowed down, he is still steadily rising. It's only rising, not falling at all!"

Lin Ming's position had originally fallen down to around rank 296,000; he had been about to fall off the Divine Seal Decree altogether. Qin Xingxuan had been worried for him, but now his ranking had risen to 280,000.

This left Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu overjoyed. Mu Qianyu had also been the one to assure Qin Xingxuan that Lin Ming's ranking would undoubtedly rise. The higher Lin Ming's results were, the greater importance the Unbroken Cult would place on him and the easier it would be for them to meet Lin Ming again.

Mu Qianyu said, "When Lin Ming's ranking rose by 8000, that should be because he killed some participants. But now that the speed of his rising has slowed down, that should be because he is killing nightmare beasts instead! If this continues, then Lin Ming will slowly return to the top 30,000 rankings."

When Lin Ming killed the dark-skinned youth and his five companions, he had obtained over a million merit points from them. But, the dark-skinned youth and the others weren't ranked on the Divine Sea Decree and their merit points weren't very high to begin with. Thus, even though Lin Ming had killed six of them, he still didn't rise by much.

In fact, in these past two months, there were many higher ranked participants who had an absurdly high number of merit points. The difference between them and Lin Ming was simply ridiculous.

"Hahaha! I said that with Young Hero Lin's ability, he absolutely would not continue falling. I don't know why, but for some strange reason Young Hero Lin waits until the final moments to move. But, as long as he moves he is amazing! Once Young Hero Lin puts in a bit more effort, his position will definitely rise. We just spoke a little bit and yet Young Hero Lin's ranking has risen by over a dozen. According to this speed, he'll be able to rise by 10,000-20,000 every day. With another month remaining, he will definitely rise back to the top 30,000 rankings. He might even rise to the top 20,000 rankings, haha!"

The Unbroken Cult's Elder heartily laughed. "Two misses, there is no need to worry. Once the preliminaries end, Young Hero Lin will be brought over to where the semifinals will be held. At that time, I will personally escort you two to meet Young Hero Lin. The semifinals only have 10 million people participating. With Young Hero Lin's results, finding him will definitely be easy."

"Thank you, Great Elder. Us disciples, as well as our husband, will surely remember this graciousness." Mu Qianyu sincerely said. She was well aware that the reason the Great Elder was doing all of this was because of Lin Ming. Thus, she mentioned Lin Ming to reassure the Great Elder.

As the Great Elder heard Mu Qianyu speak, he stroked his beard, a wide smile crossing his face.

....

Divine Dream World, Demon Sealing Ridge –

On a black mountain hundreds of times harder than steel, massive cracks dotted the landscape as if some giant beast had taken bites out of the mountain. Countless corpses of nightmare beasts fell from the sky, littering the land. They slowly dissipated, vanishing into pure energy that was absorbed by Lin Ming. There was nothing left behind but the rancid smell of blood that couldn't seem to be washed away. A coppery tang filled the air.

"The energy of these ordinary nightmare beasts really isn't enough. The only choice I have is to kill a few powerful monsters or find some top ranked participants with a great deal of merit points. If I continue obtaining dreamland energy like this, then who knows how long it will take to cultivate the third and fourth divine dream marks to perfection."

Lin Ming thought out loud. He closed his eyes and all the powerful nightmare beasts and participants for a hundred miles appeared within his mind. He chose the direction with the highest concentration of energy and then his body flashed as he flew over.

Woosh!

A blue beam of light cut through the skies. In just several breaths of time, Lin Ming fell down, landing on a giant rock.

“Who is it!?”

As Lin Ming landed on the rock, several martial artists looked over to him. One of them began circulating his true essence, his entire body vigilant as he turned his weapons towards him.

They all wore the uniform sect clothing of the True Martial Holy Lands. The symbol of the True Martial Holy Lands was stitched onto their robes. But, as these martial artists saw Lin Ming appear, all of them looked ill.

“It’s that spear master that has been popping up everywhere lately!”

“Yes! That red spear is unmistakable!”

For the last two or three days, Lin Ming had been killing strong nightmare beasts in Demon Sealing Ridge. There were some martial artists that didn’t place Lin Ming in their eyes and wanted to deal with him, but the end result was that all of them were cleanly killed off by him instead. Some of Lin Ming’s battles were naturally seen by other martial artists.

Between the different participants, different cliques would form, and they would also share information between each other. Thus, in Demon Sealing Ridge, a powerful person would easily become infamous. Although there would be some idiots recklessly attacking these people from the start, once these strong individuals repeatedly revealed their formidable strength, everyone would slowly begin to hide from them instead.

Lin Ming was currently in such a situation.

If a normal martial artist appeared in the domain of the True Martial Holy Lands, then they would have already been driven away. But Lin Ming was different: the disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands feared him instead.

“Friend, do you plan on stealing this place away?” Out of the several True Martial Holy Land disciples, a black-haired youth grimly spoke up.

Lin Ming faintly smiled, “In the preliminaries, the Divine Dream World is a place where all participants may freely hunt as they wish. All hunting grounds here are ownerless, so how can I possibly steal anything away from you?”

“You...!” The black-haired youth’s face darkened, but he didn’t dare to attack. He knew that he wasn’t Lin Ming’s match, but he couldn’t bear the shame and anger of retreating like this.

As he was stuck in this conundrum, he suddenly heard an uproarious laughter fill the air. He turned around to see a blurry shadow flying towards him.

“That is... Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon? Haha, Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon has arrived... wonderful!”

Chapter 1204 – Life Laws

Chapter 1204 – Life Laws

…

…

…

"Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon?"

As the other martial artists heard the black-haired youth's words, all of them looked up into the sky. They saw a white-haired man flying towards them. Although he didn't seem to be flying too fast, his movements caused a whistling friction with the air, indicating that no one was able to judge his true speed.

In just several blinks of an eye, the white-haired man flew all the way from the distant horizon towards them. He fell down in a beam, landing on a large black boulder and causing it to crack in half, crushed stone flying into the air! Just his aura alone left everyone shocked.

After this white-haired youth stood tall, he looked at Lin Ming. Strong winds howled around him and his clothes fluttered in the wind, his hair dancing behind him.

His pupils were a light iron gray. And, what was strange was that the shape of his pupils were vertical slits, just like those of a snake.

A giant red snake was also coiled around his shoulders. This large snake had a horn protruding from its head, and its thick body writhed around the white-haired youth. The snake's head was settled right beside the white-haired youth and it glared at Lin Ming, sharp fangs revealed.

As the several True Martial Holy Lands disciples saw that horned snake, all of them were overjoyed. “It really is Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon!”

“Hah! Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon is a top 10 ranked master of the True Martial Great World! We’re saved!”

“Humph, you know nothing. Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon’s strength can rank above tenth place, he can be ranked at least seventh or sixth. It’s simply that Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon doesn’t like to flaunt his skills.”

The sudden arrival of Highdragon drew praise and acclaim from all of the True Martial Holy Lands’ disciples. But, Highdragon clearly didn’t like this sort of praise. He faintly frowned, glancing over at the disciples and immediately silencing them. Then, those disciples switched to speaking about Lin Ming’s sins.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon, you have to help us junior-apprentice brothers! This spear-using fellow not only wanted to drive us out of our hard fought hunting grounds but he even attacked us!”

“Yeah, in these past two days this person has already killed many disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands. Moreover, he is strong so we can only allow ourselves to be bullied; we can’t even run away! He completely ignores the prestige of our True Martial Holy Lands!”

“He is far too arrogant! He doesn’t place our True Martial Holy Lands in his eyes!”

As these people spoke, several more beams of light fell down from the sky as more martial artists landed. These were the six martial artists that Lin Ming first killed upon arriving at Demon Sealing Ridge.

When enemies met, grudges would flare up once more. As the dark-skinned youth saw Lin Ming, he savagely laughed, saying, “Brat, we’ve spent a day and a half searching for you, and here you are. I knew that you were in Demon Sealing Ridge! You are too rampant for your own good, hahaha! Now let me see just how rampant you can be. You dare to say that our True Martial Holy Lands’ disciples are to deliver merit points to you, it’s as if you really want to die! From this point on, every time you step out of the city, our True Martial Holy Lands will hunt you down until you have zero merit points!”

“Hehe, Big Brother is right. Brat, if you know your limits then you’d better crawl on your knees and beg for mercy. We might decide to forgive you after killing you a few times.” The dark-skinned youth’s underling echoed.

But their words actually aroused Highdragon’s disgust. He coldly looked at those two, immediately shutting them up. The dark-skinned youth and his underling awkwardly laughed twice and then no longer spoke.

Highdragon turned to look at Lin Ming, and then slowly and coldly said, “You said that… you wish for the True Martial Holy Lands to look for you, and also that the disciples of my True Martial Holy Lands are to deliver merit points to you… right?”

Although Highdragon’s words were slow, they contained a deep pressure. If a martial artist with a weaker cultivation were to hear his question, they would find it difficult to withstand his pressure.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. “You came for that? Well, you’re right, I said that. Your True Martial Holy Lands is nothing but a bully that takes away the best hunting grounds. In this Demon Sealing Ridge, the best hunting places were all occupied by you fellows. Others are only able to share in a bit of the leftovers. If anyone comes close to you then they will be threatened or even killed. And, it’s only you killing others and not others killing you. How could there be such a truth in this world? Since some idiots dare to attack me and say that they want to kill me until my merit points are zero, I’ll do the same. I’ll stand right here and wait for you. If one of you comes then I’ll kill one of you. If two of you come then I’ll kill two of you.”

Lin Ming didn’t fear the pressure from Highdragon’s aura. In fact, he didn’t even feel it at all.

Highdragon remained silent. His eyes narrowed, but the light that burst out from his eyes contained an endless killing intent.

“I don’t care about what the reason is, and I also don’t care about how the disciples of my True Martial Holy Lands act. They are they, and I am I. If you had only killed the disciples of my True Martial Holy Lands, then I wouldn’t care about you at all. But since you dare to look down at my True Martial Holy Lands, your fate will be nothing but death!”

As Highdragon spoke, a sword appeared in his hand. This sword appeared extremely abruptly and no one was able to see just how it appeared. It was as if this sword had been in his hand from the start.

This sword was a spirit artifact.

The sword blade was crimson, a red as thick and lush as blood. It was thin, like a cicada’s wing and less than an inch wide. It appeared soft, as if it would naturally bend on its own, just like a blood jade belt.

Lin Ming looked at this sword, a bit startled. The stranger a weapon was, the more difficult it would be to deal with, because one wasn’t familiar in how to do so.

Of the present Highdragon, whether it was his weapon or that horned snake that wrapped around his body, everything about him was strange. If Highdragon met an opponent that was evenly matched or even slightly stronger, that person might feel some dread facing him. If they were not careful, they might be ruined by Highdragon’s strange abilities.

Lin Ming flourished the Phoenix Blood Spear. He shook his hand and the spear shaft suddenly trembled, emitting a faint buzzing sound.

Highdragon’s expression was blank. At this moment, the large snake around his shoulders suddenly emitted a brilliant red light. As this intense red light flashed, an unbelievable sight occurred. The body of that large snake seemed to melt down, all of it fusing into Highdragon’s body.

Lin Ming's eyes widened. What was this? Was this the ability of a contract beast?

At this time, Highdragon moved. His movements were silent but his speed was phenomenal. In just an instant he had arrived right in front of Lin Ming, the soft sword in his hand thrusting straight towards him!

Highdragon's movements were too fast. This was the same as snapping out a rope. The rope would be lax at the start, but as it continued onwards, the final snapped motion would exceed the initial speed as it struck the enemy. This sort of weapon was less like a sword and more like a whip!

Woosh!

With a light sound the red soft sword suddenly stretched forwards. The sword point was like a viper's tongue, thrusting straight towards Lin Ming's head.

As this soft sword approached him, Lin Ming felt the blood boil within his body. It was like the power of blood within his body was being pulled back by some strange force, ready to burst out from his body!

"Blood Laws?"

Lin Ming's pupils widened. He revolved his true essence and relied on his powerful body transformation technique to suppress the restless blood energy within him. His body moved, turning into an afterimage as he drew backwards.

Xiu!

The sword light shot over Lin Ming's shoulder, straight into the skies. Although it didn't pierce Lin Ming, it still caused the blood energy within his body to tumble about.

Lin Ming's sense followed the bright red sword light as it passed behind him. He saw the sword light flying through the skies and passing near a flying nightmare beast. Although the sword light was several hundred feet away from the nightmare beast, what was incredible was that as that sword light passed by the nightmare beast, the nightmare beast suddenly shook and its entire body burst apart like a broken bag of blood!

Bits of ruined flesh flew in all directions, causing a shower of blood!

In the blink of an eye that flying nightmare beast had been reduced to nothing but crushed meat and blood. Moreover, it hadn't even been struck by Highdragon's sword light. Its blood energy had simply been excited by that sword light.

This was one of the Concepts of the Blood Laws; it was capable of galvanizing the blood energy within an opponent and causing all of that blood energy to erupt. It was even able to draw out all of the flesh and blood essence from an opponent, causing their body to blow up.

As long as this sword light approached someone, such would be their fate!

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. This Highdragon's methods of combat were far too ruthless and cunning. If a normal martial artist thought that they had dodged Highdragon's sword light, they would have already died!

Even Lin Ming had been impacted a bit. He had absorbed the dragon marrow and phoenix blood so the power of blood within his body was extremely stable and strong. But on the other hand, the power of blood within his body was far more formidable than that of a normal martial artist. If his blood was pulled about by the Blood Laws, the energy that erupted would be that much greater.

"Mm? Body transformation martial artist!"

Highdragon had an extremely keen sensitivity towards the power of blood. He was able to see that Lin Ming was a body transformation martial artist, and his achievements in that aspect were very high.

"Blood Laws?" Lin Ming asked Highdragon, his eyes filled with excitement and surprise. He was very interested in Highdragon's combat abilities and tactics. In fact, one of the reasons Lin Ming joined the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting was to experience a much broader stage. He wanted to experience all the peak talents throughout the entirety of the Divine Realm. These geniuses would have endless variations of abilities and tactics, and their comprehension of Laws would be just as varied and strange. The more Lin Ming experienced, the broader his horizons would be.

These people might not be Lin Ming's match, but their combat techniques could help increase Lin Ming's combat insight. If he were to run into a similar enemy in the future, he wouldn't suffer a loss because of his opponent's strange techniques.

Highdragon's face was expressionless as he quietly said, "This is not the Blood Laws, but… the Life Laws!"

Before his voice fell, Highdragon rushed out once more. That thin and strange sword pierced towards Lin Ming again. Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up and he quickly drew back. Just as he was about to avoid Highdragon's sword, another strange sight occurred. Highdragon's body became extremely stretchy and flexible as if there wasn't a single bone in his body. He stretched out his arm like a piece of dough, extending it hundreds of feet as his hand chased after Lin Ming!

A sword thrust towards Lin Ming's chest!

This is…

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. Could a person's body really change like this?

Lin Ming brought up the Phoenix Blood Spear and thrust it out, wanting to block the sword. However, just as the weapons were about to collide, that soft sword snuck up the Phoenix Blood Spear's shaft, spiraling around it again and again as it lithely stabbed towards Lin Ming's chest!

Chapter 1205 – Suppression of Absolute Strength

Chapter 1205 – Suppression of Absolute Strength

…

…

…

“What!?”

Lin Ming was shocked. This white-haired youth’s arm struck out like a python; it was even able to curl around, wrapping around weapons like a spiritual snake!

This was an extremely strange tactic. If he wasn’t familiar with his opponent then he would definitely suffer a loss on the first exchange of attacks.

As the disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands saw this, their eyes brightened.

“This is Senior-apprentice Brother’s specialty – the Life Laws!”

“He can change any part of his body as he wishes, including his muscles, skeleton, organs, even his arms can stretch hundreds of feet to overtake his enemies. This technique is flexible; no one can avoid it! This boy is over, haha!”

The True Martial Holy Lands’ disciples were all confident in Highdragon. Disregarding his talent, just Highdragon’s cultivation had already reached the late Divine Sea, and Lin Ming was only at the early Divine Sea. They didn’t believe that Lin Ming could win in a situation where he was two small boundaries below Highdragon.

As Lin Ming saw this soft sword pierce towards his chest and his Phoenix Blood Spear wrapped up in that weapon, he knew that it was impossible to avoid this attack. His mind suddenly focused into his inner world and energy erupted from his body.

Primordius martial intent – grandmist space!

Peng!

Lin Ming’s protective true essence was suddenly pierced through by that snake-like sword! Lin Ming’s protective true essence was extremely thick, but that soft sword was actually able to break through the surface and tear it open!

But at this moment, the blood red Prime Emperor Lotus Flower slowly bloomed behind Lin Ming. The incomparably vast and ancient grandmist space came falling down, similar to a million jin mountain peak falling down on that red soft sword, ruthlessly suppressing it!

Chi!

The soft sword lost a great deal of its spiritual sense, but it still continued stabbing towards Lin Ming.

Eight Inner Hidden Gates – Gate of View!

Power of dragon bone – fuse!

With the Phoenix Blood Spear entangled, Lin Ming opened the Gate of View, the gate that precipitated a greater defensive power. The power of the supreme dragon bone within his body erupted, and the joints in his right hand began to emit explosive crackling sounds. In that instant, his entire right hand was covered in a celestial azure light. His right hand became as firm as divine iron. Without need of the Phoenix Blood Spear, he gripped the red soft sword!

This action left all of the martial artists panic-stricken. Lin Ming actually dared to grasp a spirit artifact soft sword with his own flesh – did he not want his hand anymore?

Without time for anyone else to respond, Lin Ming's right hand had already grasped the top half of the soft sword, just as if he had grasped the weak point of a snake!

"Power of thunder!"

Lin Ming cried out. The Purple Lion Thunder Source percolating within the Heretical God Seedling and the wild power of thunder heavenly tribulation swelled within his right hand. The soft sword's blade was completely covered by a sheen of blazing purple light, and one could even hear a faint cry coming from the soft sword!

Because of the soft sword's struggles, Lin Ming's right hand constantly bled. But, this was nothing to him at all. No matter how the soft sword twisted, it still couldn't escape his grasp.

"How… this… how is this possible!?"

"He grasped the spirit artifact soft sword with his bare hand!?"

All of the surrounding True Martial Holy Lands disciples were mind boggled, their eyes wide with shock. Highdragon himself was bewildered, a brilliant light bursting out from his eyes. Lin Ming had actually managed to block the Snake Blood Soft Sword with his bare hand?

Blood of the Ancient Phoenix – combust!

In that moment, a dazzling phoenix mark burst out from between his eyebrows, illuminating the world with a blinding golden light. The Heretical God Force within his body also completely opened and the grandmist space expanded to its limits. To his amazement, Highdragon discovered that he was nearly about to lose mental contact with his own spirit artifact soft sword!

"What an inconceivable body transformation technique… bones and muscles that are tough to the point of being horrifying, and that strange and unique force field that can even suppress the energy of the Snake Blood Soft Sword… this man is a terrifying opponent!"

Highdragon quickly analyzed what was happening. He couldn't allow the Snake Blood Soft Sword to be lost like this, otherwise this wouldn't even be a fight anymore.

His figure flashed; Highdragon directly crashed into the grandmist space!

Lin Ming sneered. He gripped the Snake Blood Soft Sword in one hand and thrust the Phoenix Blood Spear towards Highdragon with his other hand!

Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

A conflagration of flames burst into existence. A towering blue lotus began to bloom on the Phoenix Blood Spear and a blazing column of flames shot straight into the heavens!

Just as Lin Ming was about to stab his spear into Highdragon's stomach, Highdragon's pupils shrank as he deeply shouted, "Poison Dragon!"

Woosh!

A single-horned giant snake broke through Highdragon's chest and shot out, bringing with it a shower of blood as it bit down at Lin Ming's throat.

Highdragon was actually able to fuse the snake into himself and have it emerge from nearly anywhere. This was an attack that was nearly impossible to guard against!

This sort of combat method was based on Highdragon's profound understanding into the Laws of Life, and this was also a fighting method that Lin Ming had never encountered before.

What a fantastical method of fighting!

Lin Ming's eyes burned with a thick fighting spirit. After experiencing so many different techniques, he was thrilled with elation.

As Lin Ming saw this massive snake rush towards him, he laughed and said, “What wonderful Laws you have mastered. But underneath the suppression of absolute strength, any Laws, no matter how mysterious they are, have lost all meaning!”

Lin Ming gave a loud shout, opening the Heretical God Force to the limit as he displayed the Blue Lotus Flame Dance once more. The power of thunder within the Heretical God Force broke free like a shattered dam, all of that energy flooding into the blue lotus.

Thunder and fire twisted together – a terrifying energy erupted!

Bang!

The wild explosion rolled out for hundreds of miles, decimating the entire area. Countless black boulders were completely broken apart by these shockwaves of energy, turning into tiny fragments!

As for those seven or eight disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands, they were all sent flying backwards by this massive wave of energy. For a time, their miserable shouts filled the air.

The horned snake that emerged from Highdragon’s chest withstood the brunt of Lin Ming’s attack. Its giant snake head was covered with blood!

Highdragon’s protective true essence had completely exploded. But, the skin all over his body was covered by a layer of fist-sized snake scales. These scales blocked the explosive energy, leaving his entire body stained with blood.

“He blocked it?”

Lin Ming was a bit startled. Although this spear strike wasn’t his strongest attack, he had still combusted the phoenix blood and also opened the Heretical God Force. This was the strongest attack that Lin Ming had sent out in the five months he had spent in the First Martial Meeting preliminaries so far. Even though Highdragon’s body was bloodied and he was grievously wounded, he had still been able to block it.

“What amazing defensive power. The Laws of Life are able to change your bodily structure and form snake scales over your body. This is achieving similar results to the body transformation technique through completely different methods!”

The body transformation technique and the Life Laws both focused on developing the mortal body and one’s blood energy.

The body transformation technique tempered the mortal body, increasingly strengthening the body and using it as the foundation for powerful combat techniques like the Hundred Layered Waves, Flow like Silk, and others.

But, the Life Laws only focused on changing one’s bodily structure. This allowed one to adapt their body to different combat situations. However, it was unable to be used to temper and toughen the body.

To put it plainly, the body transformation technique was a complete set of martial arts. It had its own cultivation methods, martial skills, and other such skills.

But the Life Laws were a singular type of ability. The disparity between these two was naturally immense.

Of course, the body transformation technique that Lin Ming had cultivated so far was extremely limited; he was only able to use a few combat skills from it.

“If I could cultivate the body transformation technique as a foundation and also perceive the Life Laws and allow myself to change my body at will, then the increase in my strength wouldn’t be as simple as adding them together.”

As Lin Ming was thinking, Highdragon was standing where he was, completely stock still. He was looking at Lin Ming with an incredulous light in his eyes.

“You are only at the early Divine Sea, but your true essence is actually so thick…”

Highdragon was unable to believe this. He had a late Divine Sea cultivation and his true essence was several times thicker than that of other geniuses at his boundary.

But now, in terms of the thickness of his true essence, he had lost to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming remained calm and indifferent. The strength of his true essence indeed surpassed Highdragon's. Not to mention his ability to burn the Ancient Phoenix blood and open the Heretical God Force, just by taking the Boundless World Pill, that had allowed his inner world to reach a diameter of 800 miles, a size larger than a weak late Divine Sea martial artist's inner world.

It wasn't just that Lin Ming's inner world was huge, but also because his true essence was extremely dense. Because of this, his inner world was able to hold even more strength. With both of these factors added together, the thickness of Lin Ming's true essence could be imagined.

"You have lost." Lin Ming coolly said, even as his right hand kept its grasp on Highdragon's Snake Blood Soft Sword. This Snake Blood Soft Sword twisted around, struggling to free itself. But no matter what it did, it couldn't escape Lin Ming's grip. Lin Ming's right hand was covered with blood and one could even see bones through his wounds, but to someone like him who had opened the Gate of Life, absorbed the supreme dragon bone, and even had the support of the Ancient Phoenix blood, such a small wound wasn't worth mentioning at all.

This Snake Blood Soft Sword was about to be completely disconnected from Highdragon. In other words, his weapon would be taken away.

With the battle having reached this point, he wouldn't even have a weapon. Just what sort of difference in strength was this!

Highdragon humorlessly laughed.

Through the suppression of absolute strength, Highdragon's strange attack methods were rendered useless. In fact, if it weren't for Lin Ming wanting to experience Highdragon's strange combat techniques, then Lin Ming could have definitely defeated him in five breaths of time.

“I didn’t lose to you in skills or Laws, but I lost to you in… absolute strength!”

Highdragon unwillingly said.

“Skills? Laws?” Lin Ming chuckled. “That is only because you aren’t strong enough to force out my skills or Laws.”

When Lin Ming had crossed a nine by nine Life Destruction, countless Law fragments had gathered within his body. Although he hadn’t yet been able to completely perceive these Law fragments, they still formed an immeasurably solid foundation for Lin Ming’s comprehension of Laws.

“Now die.”

Lin Ming’s eyes turned icy cold; the Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands thrust out.

He naturally couldn’t allow Highdragon to leave here alive; he needed Highdragon’s merit points.

As Highdragon saw Lin Ming about to kill him, he shouted out loud as his body emitted explosive cracking sounds. His body fused together with the snake and the phantom of a massive red python appeared behind him.

This was his last desperate attack with his life on the life!

Pa pa pa!

Highdragon’s body burst apart. All the bones seemed to disappear as his body stretched out again and again, overlapping with the massive red python phantom behind him. Then, he hurtled towards Lin Ming.

But now having lost his weapon, this was the same as using his flesh to clash with the Phoenix Blood Spear.

The Life Laws that he studied were unable to give him the powerful mortal body that Lin Ming possessed!

“Celestial Tyrant Manual – Hundred Layered Waves!”

Lin Ming opened all seven of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates together and his strength rapidly rose by millions of jins. With the enhanced power of the Hundred Layered Waves, his strength doubled again, reaching the 100 million jin threshold once more!

With this attack gathered onto the Phoenix Blood Spear, the might of this strike was incomparably terrifying!

At the start of this exchange, the truth was that the result was already preordained. With Highdragon having lost his weapon, he was only able to fight with his flesh and blood body. Even if he risked his life, he absolutely wasn’t Lin Ming’s match.

The disparity was simply too great.

Peng!

With a loud explosive sound, Highdragon’s body as well as that giant red python phantom were torn apart by Lin Ming’s spear, sending bits and pieces of flesh and blood everywhere. Highdragon’s entire body had nearly turned into a fog of blood!

Chapter 1206 – Highdragon's Death

Chapter 1206 – Highdragon's Death

…

…

…

In this battle, Highdragon – had died!

As for Lin Ming, from start to finish, besides some minor injuries on his right hand, he was completely uninjured.

As for those wounds on his right hand, those were completely avoidable. Even if he gave up the grandmist space and the Eight Inner Hidden Gates to suppress the Snake Blood Soft Sword, he still would have killed Highdragon; it was just that he didn't choose to do so.

From the moment that Lin Ming attacked, he had used absolute strength to completely suppress Highdragon. Highdragon hadn't even had the ability to display full use of his Laws.

The disparity was obvious!

The scene of Highdragon's defeat fell into the eyes of the disciples from the True Martial Holy Lands standing not too far away.

They were in a stunned condition; they were finding this hard to believe.

Their Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon had… died!

In a situation where Lin Ming's cultivation was two small boundaries lower, he had still killed Highdragon. Moreover, he had been calm the entire time. The difference in their strength was unbelievable.

As those disciples saw blood raining down to the ground, all of them looked towards Lin Ming with fear and panic in their eyes.

"How is this possible!?"

"Just where is he from?"

"He surpassed two small boundaries to kill a Great World King Holy Land disciple. This is probably the level of an Empyrean descendant!"

These True Martial Holy Land disciples naturally didn't understand the true strength of an Empyrean descendant, but they couldn't think of a more monstrous kind of genius to describe Lin Ming as.

A random youth that they encountered in True Martial City's Demon Sealing Ridge was actually a monstrous genius comparable to an Empyrean descendant?

This caused them to feel horrified in disbelief!

Lin Ming turned around, looking at these people. His eyes were calm and indifferent, like a person looking at a group of ants.

But this gaze actually caused those True Martial Holy Land disciples to shrink back, their hearts racing and their souls seeming to freeze solid. It was like Lin Ming's gaze had substantialized into two sharp spear lights, directly piercing through them all and making it hard for them to breathe.

"Run!"

These True Martial Holy Land disciples suddenly seemed to wake from their daze. All of them scattered in all directions!

"None of you will escape. All of you will die!"

Lin Ming's figure flashed and he immediately appeared in the area where the fleeing True Martial Holy Land disciples were. With just a wave of his Phoenix Blood Spear, countless tiny blood spears shot out in all directions.

These tiny blood spears were extremely fast. They rapidly overtook those fleeing disciples, and with a few light sounds, all of those people were struck through by those numerous tiny blood spears. All of them let out miserable cries as they died one after another!

In just three breaths of time, eight or nine disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands had died. All of them had been cleanly killed by Lin Ming with utter ease.

Of these people, the strongest was the dark-skinned youth. Even after being pierced through with seven or eight tiny blood spears, he still had a single breath of life remaining. However, he was already choking on his blood.

"Demon… simply a demon…"

The dark-skinned youth whispered. He only had a few breaths of time left in his life.

In just two and a half days, the dark-skinned youth had died to Lin Ming twice. He only had 16% of his original merit points left.

This was a serious loss!

"As you said… either you die or I die."

Lin Ming indifferently said, his voice resounding in the dark-skinned youth's ears. If that dark-skinned youth didn't think that Lin Ming was easy to bully, and had simply realized he made a mistake after dying the first time and didn't try to seek revenge, then he wouldn't have died a second time.

Puff!

A tiny blood spear punctured the dark-skinned youth's head. Blood gushed out from his forehead; he had died!

“They’re all dead… but, the merit points of these people aren’t anything at all.”

Lin Ming shook his head, not even bothering to refine their energy. Rather, he focused on the dead Highdragon. That was the true main event.

Underneath the power of the dreamland Laws, Highdragon’s body quickly turned into pure dreamland energy that slowly floated towards Lin Ming.

In Lin Ming’s field of vision, this multi-colored mass of light was the strongest and brightest group of energy he had seen ever since he joined the First Martial Meeting preliminaries!

If he could continue to absorb dreamland energy like this, Lin Ming would be able to fully bring his third and fourth divine dream marks to perfection.

“Those True Martial Holy Land disciples also said that Highdragon is a top 10 ranked master of the True Martial Great World. I wonder just how many merit points he’ll give me…”

Lin Ming stretched out his hand. This multi-colored energy slowly flowed into his body.

For a time, Lin Ming felt as if his entire body was filled with a deep awareness. The warm and gentle dreamland energy spread through his entire body before converging on his soul, nourishing it, expanding it, growing it.

Lin Ming felt as if he had returned to the time when he had first obtained the Magic Cube as a teenager. When he was 15-16 years old, that was when he first entered the world of martial arts. That feeling when he rapidly grew was just like this feeling now.

This was a truly wonderful feeling!

Lin Ming looked for a well-hidden valley without a single person present. He sat down and began to meditate, tempering his divine dream marks.

……………

At this time – Good Fortune Great World, within the Unbroken Cult's floating palace.

Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, and many Elders of the Unbroken Hall were seated in a grand hall.

There was a specialized Unbroken Cult disciple whose sole purpose was to keep track of Lin Ming's merit points and ranking on the Divine Seal Decree.

In these past days, Lin Ming's merit points ranking had been steadily rising. From 290,000, it slowly rose to 260,000.

According to this speed Lin Ming would soon re-enter the top 30,000 rankings before the second round of eliminations began.

As evening approached, the fading sunlight peeked through the massive rolling clouds in the sky. It illuminated the incomparably vast golden Divine Seal Scroll, making its golden light even more dazzling. That golden scroll that seemed as broad as golden mountains and rivers appeared incomparably grand.

And at this time, Lin Ming's name suddenly changed on the Divine Seal Decree. It flashed several times before suddenly disappearing. This meant that Lin Ming's ranking had changed and his position naturally changed with it.

"Young Hero Lin's ranking has changed!"

Several Unbroken Cult disciples realized this and began to search for Lin Ming's new ranking. In these past few days, Lin Ming's ranking had jumped several times but it was usually only dozens or hundreds of rankings. Wanting to search for his new position was a very simple matter.

But this time, the several Unbroken Cult disciples swept their eyes over several thousand names yet couldn't find Lin Ming.

“Great Elder, Young Hero Lin’s name has disappeared!” The several Unbroken Cult disciples reported to the Great Elder after not finding Lin Ming’s position.

“Mm?”

The Great Elder opened his eyes from meditation.

“We looked upwards several tens of thousands of names but we couldn’t find Young Hero Lin’s name. It couldn’t be that…”

The several disciples trailed off. If one’s name disappeared so suddenly like this, besides a sharp rise, there was also another possibility, and that was that they had been killed.

There was no limit in the universe. There was always a higher mountain and a stronger person. Within a great world of the Divine Realm, there were countless masters about. To the Unbroken Cult’s disciples, the True Martial Holy Lands’ Highdragon would be a legendary genius, but he had still been killed by Lin Ming. It wasn’t that Highdragon was weak but that his luck was bad, and he had simply kicked himself in the face by challenging Lin Ming.

The Great Elder thought for a moment, then ordered, “Search separately. Two of you search ahead and two of you search behind…”

Before the Great Elder finished speaking, he suddenly recalled that he had the divine dream jade slip. Because Lin Ming’s position had appeared on the Divine Seal Decree, there simply wasn’t any need to use the divine dream jade slip, thus he had forgotten about it for a moment.

“No need. I will search for him with the divine dream jade slip!”

As the Great Elder spoke, he took out the divine dream jade slip. Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan looked towards him. Qin Xingxuan appeared extremely nervous, and her heart was chaotically beating. She was afraid that Lin Ming had been killed by some master. After all, even if Lin Ming was extremely strong, he might have run into some overwhelming powerhouse.

Mu Qianyu took a deep breath. She silently kept her eyes on the Great Elder as he searched for Lin Ming.

Soon, Lin Ming's name appeared above the jade slip.

Ancient Phoenix Clan – Lin Ming!

And behind Lin Ming's name, his merit points were continually changing. Or rather, it was better to say that they were crazily growing!

The first number that appeared was already 21 million! And it began to increase by a million at a time!

In just a brief moment, it reached 28 million and then broke right through 30 million!

31 million…

33 million…

35 million…

As the Great Elder saw this insane growth, he sucked in a breath of cold air. This Lin Ming, just what sort of powerhouse had he killed!?

Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan also widened their eyes. Their eyes shined as they looked at the divine dream jade slip.

Lin Ming's merit points easily broke through 40 million, quickly rising towards 50 million!

43 million…

44 million…

45 million…

Finally, Lin Ming’s merit points stopped at 46 million.

From 15.6 million to 46 million, that was a sudden rise of 30 million! This meant that Highdragon’s merit points had originally been around 50 million!

As for Lin Ming’s ranking, he was now ranked 15th of the True Martial Great World!

When the Unbroken Cult Great Elder had first seen Lin Ming’s ranking, that had been after the first round of eliminations when his ranking had stabilized. He wasn’t like Huo Violentstone, who had kept track of Lin Ming’s ranking the entire time. So in his opinion, wanting to increase his ranking so suddenly was extremely difficult.

For him to suddenly rise up to rank 15, that meant that Lin Ming had killed a top 10 ranked master of the True Martial Great World. For Lin Ming to be able to kill such a character, that meant that his strength was ranked at least sixth to seventh on a great world, and could be considered among the highest peak geniuses of a Great World King Holy Land!

To the Unbroken Cult, this sort of talent was simply a myth.

“Great Elder, we have found Young Hero Lin on the Divine Seal Decree. He is ranked 30,862!”

After learning Lin Ming’s ranking, it was easy to find his position. This was because the True Martial Great World was a very lively and bustling great world with many masters. If one was ranked 15th, then they would be ranked around 30,000 out of the entire Divine Realm.

“30,000… from 260,000, he suddenly rose to 30,000… I thought that it would take a month to do so…”

The Unbroken Cult Great Elder whispered. This meant that Lin Ming’s strength was far greater than what he originally thought. It was hard to imagine just what achievements Lin Ming would accomplish in the future.

Chapter 1207 – Wu Finalcloud

Chapter 1207 – Wu Finalcloud

…

…

…

At this time, floating at the center of True Martial City was the grandest and most magnificent palace of the entire city. The palace was a dark gray all over and it exuded a solemn and dignified aura. Just by approaching it, one could feel a vast and boundless energy, making one feel a sense of fear in their heart.

This palace, within the real world Divine Realm, was the central headquarters of the True Martial Holy Lands at True Martial City.

The main sect location of the True Martial Holy Lands was True Martial Mountain. True Martial Mountain was a separate spatial dimension that the True Martial World King had created using his tremendous supernatural powers. The size of True Martial Mountain was equal to a massive planet.

As for their True Martial City headquarters, that was only an outer headquarters of the True Martial Holy Lands, something that belonged to the secular world. But even so, these headquarters were the most sacred grounds of the real world's True Martial City. Usually, no one was allowed to come close to it.

And in the divine dream space, the situation was almost the same as in the real world.

No disciples that weren't from the True Martial Holy Lands were allowed to enter the space around this gray floating palace. And even then, only direct disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands were able to enter.

This was the most dignified symbol of the True Martial Holy Lands.

At this time, within the gray palace, a youth in white robes was sitting on a grandiose throne, his eyes closed in meditation.

There was a blood red diamond mark between this man's eyebrows. His eyebrows were like swords, his looks were a bit above ordinary, his shoulders were broad, his fingers slender, and beside him were layers of runes dancing in the air.

And at this moment, there was a light humming sound as a sound transmitting talisman lit up in front of this youth, blazing and brilliant.

"Mm?"

The white-robed youth opened his eyes.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Highdragon has died! Who dares?"

The white-robed youth stood up. His body turned into a stream of light as he flew out of the gray palace. He stood atop the dome of the palace, his white clothes fluttering in the wind.

A moment later, a man and a woman wearing the sect clothing of the True Martial Holy Lands flew before him.

The True Martial Holy Lands symbol on their clothes was larger than that of an ordinary disciple.

These were the third and seventh ranked martial artists of the True Martial Great World. Within the True Martial Great World, the True Martial Holy Lands occupied almost 60% of the top 20 rankings!

The percentage was quite terrifying.

"Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, Junior-apprentice Brother Highdragon has died!"

The man said. Out of all the True Martial Holy Land disciples, for there to be someone that wasn't referred to by their surname and also without any changes to their name, and instead called Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, there was only one. That was the number one disciple of the True Martial Holy Lands – Wu Finalcloud!

This white-clothed youth was Wu Finalcloud!

The man continued to say, "Two hours ago, ranked 11 Junior-apprentice Brother Dong Lian discovered that his rank rose by one. However, his merit points hadn't changed. He suspected that one of the top 10 participants died, but out of the top 10 rankings, our True Martial Holy Lands occupy six of the spots. Junior-apprentice Brother Dong Lian was worried that something happened to us so he used a sound transmitting talisman to contact us. In the end, only Junior-apprentice Brother Highdragon didn't respond. Moreover, all of the participants behind Junior-apprentice Brother Highdragon rose by one rank, and all of the participants ahead of him stayed the same. This is proof that Junior-apprentice Brother Highdragon died."

"Do we know how he died? Was it a nightmare beast or a participant?" Wu Finalcloud grimly said. With Highdragon's strength, it was impossible for ordinary nightmare beasts to kill him. But, there were always some strange and exceptional variation existences within the nightmare beasts that had the possibility to threaten a top 10 ranked master of a great world. For instance, that red-furred monster.

"It should be a participant!" The man firmly said.

Wu Finalcloud's complexion darkened. A month ago when Dragon Fang had challenged the majesty of the True Martial Holy Lands, that incident had caused him to lose face and caused many thorns to appear in his heart. And now, he never imagined that a disciple of the True Martial Holy Lands would be killed, and a peak disciple at that.

"Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, I've already investigated the matter behind this. It seems that Junior-apprentice Brother Highdragon went to Demon Sealing Ridge to search for someone. Two days ago, Junior-apprentice Brother Highdragon borrowed the intelligence network of the True Martial Holy Lands to seek out a martial artist that used a red spear. We have already found out who that man is. That red spear martial artist is called Lin Ming. He was the one who bought the Boundless World Pill at the Imperial City Auction! This is something that Junior-apprentice Sister Rainbow knows of.”

As the man spoke, the woman behind him nodded. She was a slender woman with wheat-colored skin. She looked healthy, fit, and wild, like someone who lived out in the desolate countryside. If Lin Ming was here he would recognize that this woman was one the True Martial Holy Land geniuses he saw when he first arrived at the Divine Dream World.

She faintly smiled and said, “Mm, I saw him when I first arrived in the Divine Dream World. I originally didn’t place him in my eyes, but now it seems that his strength has far exceeded my expectations…”

“Oh?” The white-robed youth’s eyebrows moved. “How did he exceed your expectations?”

“According to what I know, the several top masters of Immemorial Imperial City, otherwise known as Sacred Martial Mansion’s three prodigies Sacred Tianhao, Sacred Yueping, Sacred Yanran, and also Dual Polarity Palace’s Zhong Wenshu, were all killed by Lin Ming. After that incident, all of them came to True Martial City.”

“Humph!” Wu Finalcloud coldly snorted. “What kind of Sacred Martial Mansion three prodigies? Sacred Martial Mansion’s World King is only someone that stumbled across some lucky chance and reluctantly managed to break into the World King realm. He established his own influence several tens of thousands of years ago and could be considered as having ability, but to think that he actually dares to call himself the Sacred Martial World King!”

Wu Finalcloud was clearly filled with disdain towards the Sacred Martial World King. His sect was called the True Martial Holy Lands, thus the Sacred Martial World King had only been able to come up with the name of ‘Sacred Martial’. If it weren’t for the True Martial World King having a calm demeanor and being indifferent to such matters, then he would simply have needed to use some methods and Sacred Martial Mansion would either have to obediently change their name or cease to exist.

“This boy called Lin Ming, if he was able to buy the Boundless World Pill at the Imperial City Auction, he should also have stumbled across some great lucky chance. Otherwise, it’s impossible for him to have the financial resources to purchase such a pill. Even for my True Martial Holy Lands, while we have Starbind Bank, the Imperial City Auction House, as well as the many trading companies and other industries on the True Martial Great World, although we have gathered resources for a million years, we rarely provide such top class luxurious pills like the Boundless World Pill to direct disciples! Only when they have made enough contributions to the sect, or their talent defies the will of the heavens, are they provided a single one!”

“That’s right. This Lin Ming definitely stumbled across some massive lucky chance. His background seems to be extremely ordinary. After we investigated him, we found out that his background is only a peak Holy Land sect, the Ancient Phoenix Clan.”

“Peak Holy Land? That is even worse than Sacred Martial Mansion!” Wu Finalcloud casually said. With his status, he simply didn’t even bother with Holy Land level influences.

“Yes, but this Lin Ming’s talent is beyond extraordinary and he has encountered his own great lucky chances. He simply cannot be considered to be on the same level as a disciple from an ordinary Holy Land. His character is ruthless and decisive too. When he first arrived at True Martial City he killed many people at Demon Sealing Ridge, and even stole the hunting grounds that the low level disciples of my True Martial Holy Lands were using. If anyone dares to resist him even a little bit, he will instantly kill them off.”

As the woman spoke to here, Wu Finalcloud’s eyes turned cold. “He dares to kill the disciples of my True Martial Holy Lands… even Dragon Fang didn’t have such gall…”

True Martial City’s Dragon Fang was considered the top master of the True Martial Great World. There was no one from the True Martial Holy Lands that dared to provoke Dragon Fang. And in return, Dragon Fang didn’t attack disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands. The two sides were able to coexist peacefully.

As for Lin Ming, not even mentioning the top 10 ranked Highdragon, he had already killed dozens of other disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands. In Wu Finalcloud's eyes, these low level disciples weren't able to provide many merit points to Lin Ming. But, Lin Ming still killed them. This was the same as brutally slapping their True Martial Holy Lands in the face.

The wheat-skinned woman laughed, "Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, do you plan on dealing with Lin Ming?"

"I must kill him. He's even more arrogant than Dragon Fang was and has ridden on the back of our True Martial Holy Lands. If I do not kill him, then others will think that my True Martial Holy Lands is easy to bully. In the future, there will be more and more people that challenge our authority. These people participating in the First Martial Meeting are all top level geniuses of their influences. In the future, they will be leaders and rulers. If we allow them to think that our True Martial Holy Lands is easy to bully, then the reputation of our True Martial Holy Lands in the Divine Dream World will begin to affect the real world. If that happens, future transactions in some of our businesses may become more difficult."

In Wu Finalcloud's opinion, if a sect was rampant and domineering, then that would cause others to secretly denunciate them. But, they would also be afraid of that sect, and would fear offending them. On the other hand, if that sect was weak instead, people would not fear that sect and would even think of taking endless advantages from them.

This was simply the nature of humans.

Thus, the reason that Wu Finalcloud displayed such strength in the First Martial Meeting was first to achieve a better result for the True Martial Holy Lands but also to inform all the future decision makers of these other great influences just how powerful the potential of their True Martial Holy Lands was. This was to make it so that when these great influences ever had any transactions with them in the future, they would not think of playing tricks with them.

"I have had our disciples seek out Lin Ming's position. With his wild and widely known actions, we can find out where he is in just several hours. Do you want to go to Demon Sealing Ridge now?"

"No. I will wait for him at the city gates. Have him come here!"

Wu Finalcloud imperiously said. He was a very lofty character. For him to fly 3000 miles to Demon Sealing Ridge in order to challenge an unknown boy that was a disciple of an ordinary Holy Land, that was truly an action not worthy of his identity.

The man beside Wu Finalcloud laughed and said, "That's right, Lin Ming should come to us. With Elder Senior-apprentice Brother's status, how could we possibly look for him? I only fear that the boy won't have the courage to come to us."

"Humph! If he's so arrogant then he shouldn't be scared to battle me!"

"Okay. I'll immediately go then."

As the man spoke, he ignited a sound transmitting talisman and sent out a message.

For these past months, the True Martial Holy Lands had disciples especially responsible for moving information. This message was quickly transmitted to the disciples at Demon Sealing Ridge.

"Elder Senior-apprentice Brother is finally taking action, haha!" A True Martial Holy Lands inner court disciple said with delight as he obtained this message.

To them, their Elder Senior-apprentice Brother was a god-like existence. They couldn't even believe that Dragon Fang surpassed their Elder Senior-apprentice Brother in strength.

"Awesome, that brat's days are numbered! He's been rampaging across Demon Sealing Ridge for so many days and bullying us into such a horrible situation. It's like he thinks that our True Martial Holy Lands has no one to stop him!"

“Elder Senior-apprentice Brother wants us to find that boy as fast as possible and have him go to the gates of True Martial City to die. Let’s split up and look for him!” A disciple said, launching his movement technique to look for Lin Ming.

Another disciple laughed out loud, “Looking for Lin Ming isn’t easy. Instead of looking for him, I think we should…”

That disciple flew into the skies. He concentrated energy into his dantian, his body swelling up like a frog before he shouted out as loud as he could, “Lin Ming! Your death is here! My True Martial Holy Lands’ Elder Senior-apprentice Brother is waiting for you at True Martial City for a grand battle! Hurry up and meet your death! Hahahaha!”

With a special technique, this disciple was able to fuse true essence into his sound waves. His voice easily covered over a thousand miles, spreading to half of Demon Sealing Ridge.

Chapter 1208 – Peak Battle of the True Martial Great World

Chapter 1208 – Peak Battle of the True Martial Great World

…

…

…

Throughout the broad Demon Sealing Ridge, there were many hidden glens and valleys. These valleys were deep and secretive. If one entered in and sealed up the entrances with array formations, it would become a relatively safe place to train.

At this time, Lin Ming had sealed up a valley and was meditating within.

With the dreamland energy he absorbed from Highdragon, Lin Ming nourished the third divine dream mark. This divine dream mark was now glowing with a brilliant light, just a hint away from reaching perfection.

"A human body's essence, energy, and divine, each one corresponds to a different cultivation system… similarly, the Magic Cube, Demon Bead, and Purple Card each correspond to one aspect of essence, energy and divine. This shouldn't be a coincidence, but one of the truths that originally existed in this universe. For these countless years, these three cultivation systems had constantly grown and been developed, but because of the current rules of the universe, cultivating the essence gathering system was the most practical.

"If I'm not wrong, the Magic Cube, Demon Bead, and Purple Card are the three highest divine tools that assist in soul cultivation, body transformation, and essence gathering, three different types of cultivation system. With them in hand, one can cultivate the corresponding system with twice the results and half the effort. When Empyrean Primordius fought with Empyrean Thunder Punishment in the past, the reason was 90% because of the Demon Bead. Empyrean Primordius should have also trained in dual body and energy cultivation. And with his Empyrean realm cultivation as well as the support of the Demon Bead, he finally stepped into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!"

Lin Ming could feel that his understandings of these ancient secrets were becoming increasingly clear. For the Verdant Feather Holy Lands to be able to obtain the Magic Cube was a complete stroke of luck. Countless hundreds of millions of years ago when the Magic Cube first appeared, it was likely also obtained by some martial artist as a massive lucky chance and likely even set off a bloody catastrophe.

"If I can obtain the Magic Cube, Demon Bead, and Purple Card together, and then cultivate essence, energy, and divine, I wonder just what boundary my strength will reach..."

Lin Ming was unable to imagine how high such a boundary would be.

Empyrean Primordius and Empyrean Divine Dream had reasons for being known as the most formidable existences amongst Empyreans. This was because while they trained in the essence gathering system, they also trained in another system and had extremely high attainments in that too. This was something that other Empyreans could not compare with.

"I'm focusing on essence gathering and body transformation now, but if I could obtain the Purple Card and Demon Bead then that would be great."

Lin Ming realized that in truth, the Magic Cube was the least valuable of the three divine tools to him. This was because his achievements in soul cultivation were the lowest.

"Once I'm strong enough, I definitely have to return to the Eternal Demon Abyss... I'll look around and see what secrets are within. Perhaps the Demon Bead might really be inside..."

As Lin Ming thought this, he suddenly heard a faint and fuzzy voice shouting from the distance. Because these shouts echoed through the forests and valleys and layers of clouds, they had connected together in a stretch of sound that made it hard to distinguish between the syllables.

Within this blurry stretch of sound, Lin Ming heard his own name.

“Mm?”

Lin Ming’s eyebrows arched up. His figure moved and in the next moment he had left the valley.

After flooding his ears with true essence, Lin Ming was finally able to clearly hear these shouts.

“Lin Ming, your death has come! Hurry up and accept your death!

“Lin Ming, my True Martial Holy Lands’ Elder Senior-apprentice Brother is waiting for you at the city gates, do you dare to fight him!?

“Lin Ming, you damned turtle, are you too scared!?”

With multiple disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands continuously shouting with true essence in their voices, they were able to cover the entire scope of Demon Sealing Ridge.

“True Martial Holy Land’s Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, is that Wu Finalcloud?”

Lin Ming remembered the name that the disciples of Five Flower Mountain had told him about. He was ranked first in merit points within the entire True Martial Great World!

His strength was considered inferior to that of Dragon Fang, but he should still be the second strongest master in the entirety of the True Martial Great World.

“Wu Finalcloud is awaiting my challenge at the gates to True Martial City?”

Lin Ming rubbed his chin, a thoughtful smile on his face. “How interesting. I was originally planning to look for you, but you’re the one who looks for me instead. Moreover, you’re declaring a challenge against me in such an arrogant manner. If I didn’t go, wouldn’t that just be unfair to you?”

Fighting Wu Finalcloud was one of Lin Ming’s most fervent desires right now. Out of all the disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands, he was the one with the highest number of merit points. If Lin Ming killed him then he would be able to obtain a considerable amount of dreamland energy, enough to bring his fourth divine dream mark to near perfection.

As the many disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands shouted in the skies, it wasn’t just Lin Ming who heard them, but also all of the other participants hunting in Demon Sealing Ridge.

“Who is Lin Ming? He’s actually someone that Wu Finalcloud deems worthy to challenge? Is he that fellow that has been repeatedly attacking disciples from the True Martial Holy Lands for these past days in Demon Sealing Ridge?”

“Yes, that’s him! I came from Immemorial Imperial City so I know of him. At the Imperial City Auction, Lin Ming is the one who bought the Boundless World Pill with 7 trillion violet sun stones.”

“What? 7 trillion? Violet sun stones!?”

As this figure of 7 trillion violet sun stones was spoke, many participants were dumbfounded. Most of them came from ordinary Holy Land level influences, so to them 7 trillion was an astronomical figure.

“It was definitely violet sun stones. This Lin Ming is extremely powerful. He killed many masters and he doesn’t keep his profile low either. Now, because he kept bullying those low level disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands… I think that the True Martial Holy Lands are finally mobilizing against him…”

"The True Martial Holy Lands are used to being the strongest and most domineering force around, and they don't allow others to challenge their dignity. I don't know whether or not he'll accept this challenge, but let's go to the city gates to have a look anyways."

"Mm, I'm also thinking the same thing."

The many martial artists of Demon Sealing Ridge, after hearing the challenge of the True Martial Holy Lands, rushed towards True Martial City.

In this rush of people were also many of Lin Ming's enemies – Sacred Martial Mansion's three prodigies as well as Zhong Wenshu.

"This Lin Ming, he really brought about his own death. To think that he dared to provoke the True Martial Holy Lands! Hahaha!" Zhong Wenshu gloated, taking pleasure in Lin Ming's troubles.

"Although I can't kill him myself, seeing him die will make me feel much better." Sacred Yueping echoed.

However, Sacred Martial Mansion's Sacred Tianhao remained silent, lost in thought. He had a profound memory of Lin Ming's great strength. Moreover, there was that unfathomably deep feeling that he felt from Lin Ming. Even if it was Wu Finalcloud, whether he could kill Lin Ming was still an unknown.

"Let's go! We're going to return to the city and enjoy this play!" Sacred Yueping excitedly said.

…………..

Soon, many participants were gathered at the majestic True Martial City. The skies above the city were a zone that forbade fighting. Many martial artists gathered in this safety zone so they could watch the fight in peace.

At this time, at the gates of True Martial City, seven or eight disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands were standing side by side. These seven or eight people were all core disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands.

And in front of them was a dragon throne cast from metal. The back of this throne was engraved with images of dragons and phoenixes. Wu Finalcloud sat on this dragon throne. He wore white clothes and he reclined imperiously, his chest resting against a raised fist in a languid posture.

"Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, this boy might be too scared to show up. If he doesn't come then we'll have waited in vain." Several True Martial Holy Land disciples said.

Wu Finalcloud faintly smiled. He said, "There is no need to worry. He is coming… and he will appear right now."

"Mm?"

Several people looked towards the horizon. In that direction, they could make out the vague shadow of someone's figure. It was a blue-clothed youth and he was racing towards them at an incredible speed. In just a breath of time, he had appeared in front of them from the distant horizon.

"It's really him!"

"He actually came, he's quite the brave one!"

Ho – !

Lin Ming steadily fell onto the giant square in front of True Martial City. His arrival attracted the eyes of all present.

Those that hadn't seen Lin Ming before all rushed forwards to see just who this fellow was. They wanted to see just what kind of freak would dare to openly provoke the True Martial Holy Lands and even cause Wu Finalcloud to take action.

"He's Lin Ming!"

"He doesn't seem like anything special."

As these people first saw Lin Ming, they didn't notice anything special about him. They only saw that his true essence was thicker than usual and his eyes were far brighter and keener than expected. But just by depending on these two things it was extremely difficult to judge his strength.

"Lin Ming?" Wu Finalcloud directly asked, sitting up from his dragon throne.

"Wu Finalcloud?" Lin Ming didn't answer, instead asking another question. As he spoke, his lips curved up in a sly smile, a tint of excitement coloring his face.

"How interesting!" Wu Finalcloud stood up. "It seems that you're confident in yourself. It's as if you think you won't lose this fight…"

"And you're the same." Lin Ming slowly took out the Phoenix Blood Spear from the Extreme Violet Ring. His right hand grasped the spear shaft and he drew an icy cold arc in the air. Then, he pointed it towards Wu Finalcloud, the provocation evident in his eyes.

"It seems we are both confident in our strength!"

Wu Finalcloud sneered. He took out a spirit artifact sword from his spatial ring. Nearly everyone from the True Martial Holy Lands used swords.

"Words are useless. Let's fight!"

With those words, Lin Ming's aura suddenly surged. In that moment, he was like an unassailable mountain peak, leaving one unable to see his limits.

Chapter 1209 – Strength Beyond Strength

Chapter 1209 – Strength Beyond Strength

…

…

…

Chi chi chi!

Lin Ming’s aura seemed to substantialize into essence, becoming as sharp as a spear edge and tearing through the air, thrusting towards Wu Finalcloud and grating against this protective true essence.

Wu Finalcloud remained indifferent. He calmly said, “What a wonderful aura! You indeed have some skills, but let’s see if you can withstand my aura!”

Wu Finalcloud shouted and his aura surged out like an endless ocean. This aura gathered together into a massive wave that hurtled into the horizon, washing away the clouds. All of the nearby participants were forced back again and again by this aura.

This was a truly powerful man, able to look down at the world with utter disdain!

“Haha! Elder Senior-apprentice Brother is too fierce!”

“Just by the power of his aura alone, Elder Senior-apprentice Brother is definitely the top powerhouse of the True Martial Great World. He even closes in on the power of an Empyrean descendant. If he sees a god he will kill a god. If he sees a Buddha he will kill a Buddha!”

“Who dared to say that Dragon Fang was fiercer than Elder Senior-apprentice Brother? If Elder Senior-apprentice Brother was to release his full strength, who could possibly stop him? Let alone this Lin Ming with his mere early Divine Sea cultivation! If he could truly defeat Elder Senior-apprentice Brother then his talent would be equal to that of an Empyrean descendant!”

Lin Ming was at the peak of the early Divine Sea. For him, the disparity between his cultivation and Wu Finalcloud’s wasn’t that significant. Lin Ming jumped ranks to fight masters like others ate meals and drank water. But, to a peak talent, the closer they reached to the limit, the greater an influencing factor their cultivation would become. If he were to jump two small boundaries to defeat someone as talented as Wu Finalcloud, then that would truly be unbelievable!

As Wu Finalcloud displayed his invincible grandeur, all of the surrounding True Martial Holy Land disciples stared with wide eyes. They closely looked at the battlefield lest they miss a single detail.

Kacha!

Wu Finalcloud stepped forth and the rocks beneath his feet cracked apart. This step seemed to step upon the hearts of everyone present, making their hearts skip a beat.

“Let me take a good look and see whether or not you have the ability to have me use my transcendent divine might!”

As Wu Finalcloud spoke these words, while the disciples from the True Marital Holy Lands weren’t surprised, all the other participants were all shocked.

Transcendent divine might!

These three words, to them, were absolutely legendary words!

“Wu Finalcloud actually knows a transcendent divine might?”

“Heavens, transcendent divine might! That is a top martial art created by an Empyrean!”

These disciples from ordinary Holy Lands and martial families were all shocked speechless, but their expressions were full of envy. A transcendent divine might was something that they couldn’t even look up to.

As for the disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands, a sense of pride rose within their hearts as they saw these people’s responses. Even if they didn’t qualify to learn a transcendent divine might, they were still proud that their own Holy Land could possess one.

The True Martial Holy Lands’ transcendent divine might was obtained by the True Martial World King during his youth when he adventured through the Divine Realm. In fact, the reason that a Great World King Holy Land could obtain a transcendent divine might was that their Great World King was far too strong. When these Great World Kings were in their youth, they could easily obtain a top three ranking if they joined a First Martial Meeting. Such a person had a monstrous destiny, so obtaining a transcendent divine might wasn’t too strange.

However, even if a Holy Land possessed a transcendent divine might, only the number one disciple of every generation would have the qualifications to study it at the True Martial Divine Palace. This was because there was only a single jade slip and it was also incomplete.

For a single jade slip, only a single person was allowed to perceive it. The True Martial Holy Lands had many people, and besides the current top geniuses there were also the high level figures that had to train in it. How could they ever allow an ordinary disciple to take a turn perceiving?

Moreover, because it was incomplete, if a young disciple wished to practice it then they would need the guidance of a top master. This was an even greater cost of learning. Besides a disciple like Wu Finalcloud, other disciples like Highdragon weren’t able to enjoy such treatment.

“Humph, our True Martial Holy Lands already had this transcendent divine might when our sect was founded. It isn’t anything strange at all if Senior-apprentice Brother Wu Finalcloud knows a transcendent divine might.”

A True Martial Holy Lands disciple said with a matter-of-course expression and tone. But in his heart, he was actually extremely satisfied.

“This is the legacy of a World King Holy Land. Although the True Martial Great World has Dual Polarity Palace, Sacred Martial Mansion, and many other World King Holy Lands, these other World King Holy Lands, whether it be in inheritances, qualifications, merits, wealth, number of geniuses – none of them are able to compare with our True Martial Holy Lands at all!”

As this True Martial Holy Lands disciple saw all of these geniuses from ordinary Holy Lands and martial families look at him, his heart was overjoyed. This was the same as a nobleman arriving in the countryside and seeing all the wealthy villagers looking at him with awe in their eyes. This would naturally form an inherent sense of superiority in their background.

They wouldn’t help but think, “These are nothing but beetles that haven’t seen the world.”

“You people can be considered as having broadened your horizons this time. For you to be able to experience someone who knows a transcendent divine might, you should be thanking that dumb brat Lin Ming. Otherwise, none of you would have the qualifications to see Senior-apprentice Brother Wu Finalcloud…”

A disciple though in his heart. But, he also wished that Lin Ming could last a bit longer, because he too hadn’t seen Wu Finalcloud use his transcendent divine might before.

At this time, within the center of the battlefield, Lin Ming was looking at Wu Finalcloud with indifference.

Transcendent divine might…

What was the True Martial Holy Lands' transcendent divine might?

In the past, when Lin Ming had fought the Crimson Light Holy Lands' Crimson Strifecloud, what Crimson Strifecloud practiced wasn't a true transcendent divine might, but a cultivation method that the Crimson Light World King had perceived through a shattered jade slip. Ultimately, it could only be considered the Crimson Light World King's self-created technique.

The self-created cultivation method of the Crimson Strife World King versus the original cultivation method of an Empyrean – the two were obviously incomparable.

From this, one could see an obvious disparity. Although Crimson the Light Holy Lands were also a Great World King Holy Land, they were clearly inferior to the True Martial Holy Lands.

At this time Wu Finalcloud finally attacked. His sword released a 10,000 foot beam of golden light. The vorpal sword energy cut through all barriers.

"Blade Light Illuminating the World!"

The sword slashed out and that 10,000 foot long beam of light split through the skies and sundered the earth. The sword energy tore through the ground, leaving a gaping hole in the world.

In the face of such an aggressive sword strike, Lin Ming remained calm. He opened the Heretical God Force and raised the Phoenix Blood Spear high above his head before bringing it crashing down. With an indomitable momentum, it crashed into the ground. With a loud explosive sound, a massive shockwave even greater than Wu Finalcloud's spread outwards, rolling up into the heavens. Where it went, countless rocks shattered and bits of stone soared into the skies.

The spear light and sword light collided. For a time, all the sound between the heavens and the earth was swallowed up by this strike. The terrifying impact formed a monstrous shockwave that savagely erupted!

Countless boulders collapsed and even nearby mountains cracked. All of the surrounding martial artists cried out in alarm and pushed their protective true essence to the limit, retreating again and again. Some people were sent flying backwards and were vomiting mouthfuls of blood. Although these were all genius disciples that stood thousands of feet away to watch the fight, they were still wounded by the shockwaves.

From this the momentum of the two martial artists' battle could be seen.

At this time, Lin Ming stepped forwards. His body turned into a vague blue blur. He opened all seven gates and his strength instantly rose to millions upon millions of jins. The current Lin Ming could be called a vicious beast in human form!

“Use your transcendent divine might!”

Celestial Tyrant Manual – Hundred Layered Waves!

Bang!

A supernatural strength that surpassed a hundred million jins erupted, completely pouring into the Phoenix Blood Spear. Such a focused explosive power was something that a sword could not block.

Wu Finalcloud's pupils contracted. He could see that it was impossible for him to block Lin Ming's spear strike so his body suddenly blurred.

As the highest top junior master of the True Martial Holy Lands, Wu Finalcloud was no ordinary man. While he had extremely high attainments in striking power, his movements were equally extraordinary. As his figure blurred, he split apart into 108 afterimages, all of them completely indiscernible from each other.

“What bold words. Who cares how strong your spear strike is? If it cannot touch the enemy then it is useless. My movement technique may not be a transcendent divine might but it is still a top movement technique that was created by the True Martial World King!”

Wu Finalcloud recklessly laughed. Although a spear was stronger than a sword, as long as his movement technique was formidable enough, he would be able to avoid it.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. His energy focused within his inner world. The Heretical God Force opened, the Heavenly Demon martial intent erupted!

Ho – !

As a blood red lotus bloomed in the world, a vast and boundless energy enveloped the entire region.

Grandmist space – open!

Wu Finalcloud's movement technique was originally part of the Concept of Speed. However, underneath the shroud of the grandmist space, 107 of the 108 afterimages suddenly vanished, leaving only Wu Finalcloud's true form. Even Wu Finalcloud felt his body being affected by the grandmist space. His strength dropped by a tremendous scale and he found it increasingly difficult to move true essence within his body.

What sort of force field was this!?

As Wu Finalcloud was stunned in surprise, Lin Ming had already rushed in front of him!

The Phoenix Blood Spear in his hand came crashing down!

Wu Finalcloud's eyes widened. He slashed out with his sword, cutting down at Lin Ming.

Kacha!

Underneath the strength of 100 million jins, Wu Finalcloud's sword light was easily torn apart. The Phoenix Blood Spear continued onwards, crashing onto Wu Finalcloud's head!

Wu Finalcloud's complexion changed. "True Martial Body Barrier Art!"

As Wu Finalcloud saw the Phoenix Blood Spear about to strike him, he shouted out loud and a thick golden barrier appeared around his body. This was the Metal Laws.

The True Martial Holy Lands included masters of countless mystic arts. Every disciple could find a Law and cultivation method that suited themselves the most.

Lin Ming disregarded this new development and continued smashing his spear downwards. As his spear struck the golden barrier, there was a loud crackling sound as myriad cracks appeared in the barrier before it completely broke open!

However, because of the slight delay offered by this golden barrier, Wu Finalcloud was able to bring back his spirit artifact sword and send out a second sword strike!

Kacha!

The brilliant sword light collided with the Phoenix Blood Spear. Wu Finalcloud was sent hurtling backwards as if he had been struck by a mountain.

This tremendous amount of strength had not been completely diverted. A great part of it passed into Wu Finalcloud's body, causing the blood within to tumble.

Only after flying back several miles was he able to stop himself and stand tall.

In this single exchange, Wu Finalcloud had suffered a serious loss. He forcefully calmed the roiling blood within his body and glared at Lin Ming, his complexion ugly.

"You..." Wu Finalcloud was unable to believe just how terrifying the explosive force in Lin Ming's attack had been. Was he really only at the early Divine Sea!?

"What force field is that!?!?"

Lin Ming didn't answer. He only faintly said, "Use your transcendent divine might."

Chapter 1210 – Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art

Chapter 1210 – Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art

…

…

…

Seeing Wu Finalcloud sent hurtling backwards by Lin Ming's spear strike, all of the disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands were left panic-stricken. The invincible Elder Senior-apprentice Brother in their minds had actually been struck back by Lin Ming?

How was that possible?

"Elder Senior-apprentice Brother!"

"Elder Senior-apprentice Brother is fine!" Some disciples cried out with concern thick in their voices.

"How could Elder Senior-apprentice Brother possibly have anything go wrong. Elder Senior-apprentice Brother simply didn't use his complete strength just now; he didn't even use his transcendent divine might." A disciple that worshipped Wu Finalcloud said. Even if his idol wasn't as strong as he thought, he still wouldn't admit it, because recognizing this was the same as denying everything he knew. Moreover, Wu Finalcloud hadn't even used his transcendent divine might yet.

The ordinary disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands didn't understand Wu Finalcloud's real strength, they had simply run wild with their imaginations. But, the several top ranked masters of the True Martial Holy Lands were absolutely clear as to what Wu Finalcloud's trump cards were. Once Wu Finalcloud used all of his abilities, his combat strength would multiply from before and there wouldn't be any comparison between that and his previous self.

"Elder Senior-apprentice Brother has met a worthy match!"

"That Lin Ming is truly unfathomable. To think that even Elder Senior-apprentice Brother's Cloud Dimming Blade isn't enough. He will need to bring out his second sword – the Great Blood Sword."

Wu Finalcloud had two swords!

"This brat, how could he possibly suppress Wu Finalcloud!?"

Zhong Wenshu muttered as he hid in the crowd, staring at Lin Ming with hatred in his eyes. He couldn't accept the reality of what was happening before him.

Originally, Zhong Wenshu thought he would be able to see something good by coming here. He thought he would see Lin Ming be utterly suppressed and killed, but he never imagined that Lin Ming would be so brutal that he could even force back Wu Finalcloud with his spear!

"The battle hasn't ended yet. Wu Finalcloud still has his transcendent divine might. It's unknown just who the winner will be!" Sacred Yueping gloomily said. Although this battle had been one-sided so far, it wasn't strange for the losing side in a battle to use some miraculous move and turn the tables on the aggressor. Moreover, Wu Finalcloud still hadn't used his true transcendent divine might.

To a disciple of an ordinary World King Holy Land, a transcendent divine might was a completely unreachable cultivation method.

"Transcendent divine might..." Sacred Tianhao hesitated. He had a faint premonition in his heart that even if Wu Finalcloud were to use his transcendent divine might, his victory or defeat would still be an unknown.

He had always felt that Lin Ming was too mysterious, too powerful, a being that surpassed all common reasoning.

Facing Lin Ming, even if you thought you were stronger, he would still easily suppress you. You would never know just where the limits of his strength lay.

Sacred Tianhao found it unbelievable that such a youth was only at the early Divine Sea.

“Wu Finalcloud is finally going to use his transcendent divine might!”

“I wonder just what sort of cultivation method that transcendent divine might is! I really want to see!”

Many surrounding martial artists said, some even rubbing their eyes.

The truth was that these people simply didn’t know what level of existence a transcendent divine might was. They had never even seen one, much less understood it. It was impossible for them to distinguish whether or not a cultivation method was a transcendent divine might based on how strong it was. Let alone these juniors, even Holy Lords and World Kings might not be able to do so, because most transcendent divine mights were secret existences that no one knew of.

“Just who are you!?”

Wu Finalcloud’s eyes burned as he gazed at Lin Ming, his complexion incomparably ugly. He could not believe that a disciple from a mere peak Holy Land could actually achieve such a mind-boggling level of talent. Perhaps even an Empyrean descendant would not be his match at the early Divine Sea realm!

“Haven’t you already investigated me?” Lin Ming asked back.

“Humph!” Wu Finalcloud coldly coughed. “Your talent is indeed unimaginably high, but, what will decide the ultimate outcome of this victory is strength, absolute strength! You wanted to experience my transcendent divine might, right? Then… let me fulfill your wish!”

As Wu Finalcloud spoke, his aura became increasingly powerful. His joints exploded, his body began to grow, and an endless, boundless energy gushed forth from his inner world. Tiny scales began to form all over his body, making him look like a demon.

This transcendent divine might even had the ability to change Wu Finalcloud's body.

"The energy within his body is strengthening." Lin Ming narrowed his eyes. He could feel the energy within Wu Finalcloud climbing to ever higher peaks. Without a doubt, this transcendent divine might was one that enhanced his striking power.

Up until now, Lin Ming had learned two transcendent divine mights. The Heretical God Force was an arcane skill whose main role was to help in cultivation and also help in comprehending Laws. Lin Ming's power of thunder and power of fire were endowed unto him by the Heretical God Force.

As for the grandmist space, that was an auxiliary transcendent divine might.

Up until now, Lin Ming had never seen a direct attack-type transcendent divine might.

"This transcendent divine might is called the Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art! It is a transcendent divine might that changes the body. Once one displays the Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art, they will be able to obtain the power of a fiend demon, and their body will turn into that of a demon. Their speed, striking power, defensive power, even their comprehension of Laws, everything will double. Although my Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art is incomplete, its might when displayed underneath my hand is unimaginable! Now meet my strike!"

Wu Finalcloud wildly laughed. He put the long sword away in his spatial ring and took out a heavy sword!

Wu Finalcloud had two swords – one light and one heavy. The light sword was called the Cloud Dimming Blade and was used in coordination with his extraordinary speed. It was to help in displaying Metal Laws, Wind Laws, and the Concept of Speed.

And this crimson heavy sword was called… the Great Blood Sword. It was the sword Wu Finalcloud used when he was at his highest level of strength.

“Mm? Two swords?”

Lin Ming was a bit surprised. Up until now, he had seen several martial artists who used two swords. For instance, the Seven Profound Valleys’ Jiang Baoyun used two swords.

Dual Polarity Palace’s Zhong Wenshu was the same. He used twin black and white swords in order to display his distinctive Yin Yang Laws. This was also the reason for Dual Polarity Palace’s name. Yin and Yang, representing extreme polar opposites.

A double sword type martial artist often didn’t use both swords together. Rather, each sword had its own unique uses. A long sword was fast, tricky, and could change myriad times, but its striking power was lacking. When facing a crazy and savage frontal attack like Lin Ming’s Hundred Layered Waves, the sword light of a long sword would be far weaker in comparison and it would be extremely difficult to block such heavy-handed attacks.

Thus, they would bring out a second sword.

Although the Great Blood Sword had the shape of a sword, it wasn’t used for stabbing or slashing. Rather, it was used to violently smash onto others.

This was another extreme of swordsmanship – the edgeless heavy sword!

Now, with Wu Finalcloud’s energy having increased by several times thanks to the Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art, his strength and striking power had risen to a ridiculous level. It was incomparable from the past!

“Hehe, let me give you a warning. This Great Blood Sword is forged from crimson blood metal and is 1.2 million jins heavy. When I am in the condition of the Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art, my Great Blood Sword can display its greatest strength!”

It was impossible for an essence gathering system martial artist to have the bodily strength of a body transformation system martial artist. But, if they poured enough true essence into their weapon, they could also similarly stimulate the movement of their weapon, no matter how heavy it was. The only disadvantage would be that they would lack the flexibility of a body transformation martial artist.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. “So you want to meet me in a head-on melee?”

“Let’s go!”

Wu Finalcloud roared and sprang upwards!

With such a massive counterweight, the rocks beneath his feet shattered into tiny fragments.

Bang!

Wu Finalcloud’s sword came smashing down. But at this time, Lin Ming’s entire body was boiling over with excitement. This sort of fulfilling and wild battle was what he wished for!

All seven of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates opened! The power of the supreme dragon bone completely erupted!

Hah – !

A deafening dragon roar filled the air, as if a True Dragon were awakening within Lin Ming’s body!

All of the martial artists present heard this resounding dragon roar. They felt the blood energy within their body restlessly moving, gushing, tumbling about, even affecting their heartbeats.

This strength was…!?

Everyone was left horrified. Within the body transformation technique, the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was the highest legend. Besides Empyrean Primordius, it was possible that no one had managed to step into that mystical boundary.

As for the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, although they weren't considered to be a myth, the last two gates were still fabled existences. There was basically no one that had opened them, thus none of the martial artists present had seen it before.

After opening seven gates, Lin Ming's pupils contracted. The muscles on his body popped up as he grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear, aimed it at Wu Finalcloud's sword, and brought it crashing down!

Kacha!

The Great Blood Sword collided with the Phoenix Blood Spear. With these two people at the center, a massive nova of energy erupted outwards. Countless black rocks filled the air, completely shattering. A giant series of fissures cracked through the earth, spreading out like an infinite spiderweb!

In such a terrifying strike, even a top grade saint artifact would instantly break apart. But Lin Ming and Wu Finalcloud's weapons were spirit artifacts and extremely high rank ones at that. Even after such an intense strike, they still weren't damaged.

Ka ka ka!

The Phoenix Blood Spear curved into a crescent arc.

Lin Ming's feet both sank underground. The rock beneath him broke apart again and again, nearly becoming dust!

“You!” Wu Finalcloud grasped his sword in both hands, his eyes colored with disbelief at the sight of Lin Ming. ”How could you be so strong? How is this possible!?”

Kacha!

Wu Finalcloud’s sword cut out once more!

Lin Ming swept out his spear once again!

Spear and sword crossed, the sound of metal grating on metal pierced through the world!

Clang! Clang! Clang!

The two collided again! This was a brutal melee, a fight to the death to see who was stronger, who was faster!

As the two fought, all of the surrounding land was blasted away to nothing as countless fragments of stone rained down from the heavens. Every collision was like the ringing of a divine bell, a ruinous sound that echoed between the heavens and earth. Each ringing of this divine bell seemed to knock on the hearts of everyone present, causing their blood to tumble and surge within them!

The martial artists with weaker cultivations all paled, finding it impossible to stay nearby. Even if they wanted to stay close, they had no choice but to withdraw again and again. Otherwise, if they stayed, their organs would shatter and blood would leak from their heads until they died!

This was because as the two people fought, there was a massive amount of energy contained within the sound waves. A weaker martial artist would be shaken until they exploded to death!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Mountains and rivers shook. The earth trembled as countless black boulders tumbled down from nearby mountains, as if an earthquake was passing all throughout True Martial City!

This battle scene was incredible, unimaginable!

No one ever thought that a showdown between two peak masters of the True Martial Great World would evolve into such a scene.

Normally, when essence gathering system martial artists fought, they would display gorgeous and beautiful martial skills as they exchanged more and more moves. It would never be like the fight between these two, the most barbaric and savage method of directly struggling with strength!

Chapter 1211 – Killing Wu Finalcloud

Chapter 1211 – Killing Wu Finalcloud

…

…

…

“There can actually be such a form of combat!”

To the disciples of ordinary Holy Lands, this sort of fighting was something they had never heard of before.

“By just relying on one’s body, is it actually possible to erupt with such a terrifying combat strength?”

Many people thought this was unbelievable. In their opinion, true essence reigned above all and even most Laws that martial artists comprehended were related to true essence and energy. Only true essence could possibly pair with Laws. As for a person’s bodily strength, Laws were incompatible with it. This was said to be because the rules of the Heavenly Dao changed a long time ago and now the body transformation technique cultivation system was far too difficult to cultivate.

Thus, it was publicly recognized that bodily strength was inferior to true essence.

“No, this is wrong…” A top 10 ranked participant shook his head. “What Lin Ming is relying on is his physical strength to fight, but Wu Finalcloud is using his true essence to fight. His transcendent divine might gives him an explosive strength, enough to reach this current state. But, it is by no means his own bodily strength.”

If a martial artist used true essence to drive the movement of a weapon, they could erupt with an equally terrifying strength as someone that used their immense physicality to do so. For instance, if someone were to pour their true essence into a steel ball and throw it, it would crash down as hard as a meteor. This was the same effect as a body transformation martial artist hurling a steel ball with all their might.

"This fellow Lin Ming cultivates in dual body and energy, and he has simultaneously reached incredibly high achievements in both the essence gathering system and the body transformation system. I really have no idea how he could possibly have reached his current boundary in body transformation. He is truly a monstrous genius!"

As everyone was talking, Lin Ming and Wu Finalcloud had already exchanged a hundred moves!

The two people were like meteors in the sky, flinging back and forth, intensely colliding with each other, separating, smashing into each other once again, and then splitting apart once more!

Every collision produced an earth-shattering shockwave that pierced through the heavens!

Bang!

Wu Finalcloud's sword slashed down. Lin Ming's figure faded, turning into a shadow that completely avoided the strike. This sword strike fell upon a black mountain, shearing a 10,000 section and creating a massive sloping cliff. Trees fell down, rocks cracked apart, and the earth trembled.

And following that, Lin Ming attacked. Wu Finalcloud avoided this spear strike, but this attack continued forwards with unstoppable might, piercing through that 10,000 foot slope and creating a massive hole that penetrated all the way through, causing the cliff to collapse!

Such an intense battle left all the participants speechless. These two were simply beasts in human form.

However, in this savage battle, the more Wu Finalcloud fought, the more shocked he became!

He originally thought that after using the Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art, even if he couldn't defeat Lin Ming, he could still rapidly build an advantage and seal his victory with that. But, he never imagined he would be engaged in such a white-hot battle instead!

Lin Ming's strength, tenacity, endurance, everything had surpassed his imaginations!

Now they had already fought for a hundred moves, and every move required a terrifying amount of energy to be consumed. Lin Ming didn't seem tired at all. Instead, he continued his onslaught with ease. But as for Wu Finalcloud, he was barely managing to keep up; his strength had long begun to weaken!

"Impossible! How could this be possible!? If he's using up so much energy, what sort of arcane skill is he using to support himself? Is his body a bottomless pit? Can it hold endless amounts of true essence!?"

Wu Finalcloud found this incomprehensible. Lin Ming seemed like a tireless mechanical puppet. No matter how much he fought, his strength didn't weaken in the slightest.

No – it could even be said to be growing stronger over time!

Wu Finalcloud had already consumed over half the true essence within his body. He was relying on his will to continue; he had already overdrawn his bodily strength and true essence.

If this continued, it would be hard to maintain his combat strength.

"Is this boy gritting his teeth and deliberately trying to show an appearance of ease, or is his endurance really powerful to such a degree?"

Wu Finalcloud began to panic. If this continued then he would undoubtedly lose. His only chance was to risk his life!

Bang!

With a loud explosion, the two martial artists collided once more. The Phoenix Blood Spear slightly bent as their weapons crossed and locked in place. Lin Ming grinned as he looked at Wu Finalcloud. Only fighting like this with his physical strength would cause his fighting spirit to burn, his blood to boil over, and this amazing refreshed feeling to wash over him!

However… it seemed that Wu Finalcloud wouldn't be able to accompany him much longer.

"Is this it for you?"

"You!" Wu Finalcloud clenched his teeth. He could feel that with his overconsumption of true essence, it was becoming nearly impossible to continue resisting Lin Ming's strength!

Lin Ming suddenly shouted out, the muscles on his arms bulging and blue veins twisting under his skin. Loud crackling sounds emitted from all over his body. He bent his legs, coiling his body, and with his body that was fused with the supreme dragon bone and the increased strength from the Gate of Limit, he used all of his strength to push forwards!

Peng!

The rocks underneath Lin Ming's feet completely cracked apart and Wu Finalcloud only felt a great strength pass through his body. He was sent hurtling backwards by Lin Ming like a leaf in a storm.

Bang!

Wu Finalcloud crashed into a shattered mountain peak, causing a countless amount of rubble to tumble to the ground. The blood energy within Wu Finalcloud's body tumbled, his appearance in a very pitiful state. Although he had managed to save himself from injury thanks to his protective true essence, the fact that he had been thrown backwards was proof that he was on the losing end.

“Wu Finalcloud is going to be defeated?”

“His physical strength isn’t enough…? Unbelievable. Even in such a fierce melee, Lin Ming hasn’t seemed stressed at all from beginning to end, as if his physical strength hasn’t been consumed in the least, like he hasn’t been fighting all this time. How is this possible!?”

The many martial artists looked at Lin Ming, confusion and fear in their eyes. Just by looking at the ruined outskirts of True Marital City that had been changed beyond all recognition, one could imagine the massive quantities of energy involved in this battle. However, Lin Ming didn’t seem affected in the least. Was he even human?

Lin Ming pointed his spear straight at Wu Finalcloud, stating, “You have lost!”

Endurance and toughness were Lin Ming’s greatest advantages. After Lin Ming absorbed the Azure Dragon marrow and fused with the supreme dragon bone, and in addition to the Gate of Healing as well as the portion of power he absorbed from the Demon Bead replica, his blood vitality had reached an incredible degree. He was absolutely able to rely on his restorative abilities to continue this battle without consuming much or any of his strength at all.

“We still don’t know who will be the winner!”

Wu Finalcloud spat out. Veins stuck out on his forehead as his grip on the Great Blood Sword tightened. All of his remaining strength swelled up from within his body, surging within him without reserve.

This was his final desperate attack.

Ka ka ka!

All of the blood vessels in his body stuck upwards. His skin began to rupture as blood splashed out from his body.

Facing Wu Finalcloud's final attack, Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear, pointing it to the ground, his eyes incomparably calm.

"Sword Shattering the Universe!"

Wu Finalcloud cried out loud. He leapt upwards. With all of his strength poured into this strike, he cut straight towards Lin Ming's head!

As Lin Ming saw this sword strike heading towards him, he concentrated his thoughts into his inner world. The Heretical God Force opened and all seven of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates were released, combining together into an explosive strength.

"Celestial Tyrant Manual – Hundred Layered Waves!"

All of Lin Ming's strength gathered together, surging forth like a tide, wave after wave superimposing on each other. All of this strength finally fully concentrated as one before chopping down at Wu Finalcloud.

One side was a desperate final attack and the other side was an all-out attack of gathered potential. With the fight having gone on until now, these were the strongest strikes that the two used!

Bang!

Like a meteor crashing into the earth, the world seemed to lose all color. Countless stones rose into the skies as a massive amount of energy erupted outwards. The heavy sword in Wu Finalcloud's hand was sent soaring away as his protective true essence cracked open like an eggshell. Wu Finalcloud was directly struck by the Phoenix Blood Spear. All of his organs were torn apart and all of his bones broken to pieces. His body was like a pile of scrap meat.

Peng!

Wu Finalcloud's ruined corpse struck the ground. His skull was already shattered and rivers of blood flowed out from his head. As he looked at the sky, a fading vacant disbelief filled his eyes. He opened his mouth as if he wanted to say something, but he finally didn't even say a single word. His consciousness rapidly faded away before turning to darkness.

Wu Finalcloud had died in this battle!

Everyone looked at the dead Wu Finalcloud that was leaking blood on the ground, they looked at the sundered earth that spread out for hundreds of miles, and they looked at Lin Ming, standing triumphantly with his spear raised high.

The entire audience of martial artists was left dumbfounded.

Wu Finalcloud had died to Lin Ming's hands!

Even through a difference of two small boundaries of cultivation, Wu Finalcloud had been killed by Lin Ming! This was a completely unbelievable result. This meant that in the future, Lin Ming was extremely likely to become a World King!

All of those disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands that worshipped Wu Finalcloud were left stricken. They could not accept the reality of what had happened. In their minds, Wu Finalcloud was a god-like existence, undefeatable!

But, this god-like existence had lost to Lin Ming!

As for those martial artists that had come to watch a good play and see Lin Ming be ruined, they were all stunned silent.

Zhong Wenshu and Sacred Yueping felt a cold chill crawl down their backs. They simply weren't able to find the words to describe what they were feeling. They had originally thought of taking revenge against Lin Ming once they all left the Divine Dream World, but now, everything had changed. In the future, if Lin Ming didn't become a Great World King, he would still become an ordinary World King. And, their Dual Polarity Palace and Sacred Martial Mansion were also ruled by an ordinary World King. How could they possibly offend him!

And someone like Lin Ming was highly likely to arouse the interest and desire of countless super influences. In front of these super influences, their Dual Polarity Palace and Sacred Martial Mansion were nothing at all.

Sacred Tianhao let out a long sigh before whispering, “From this day forth, we shall avoid Lin Ming’s path. After we leave this dream world, we will immediately prepare a generous gift and personally deliver it to the Ancient Phoenix Clan. This should be able to resolve the conflicts between us… between us and Lin Ming, we weren’t life or death enemies to begin with… we can only hope that he doesn’t bear a grudge against us. As for killing him, we cannot do that. For someone like him, who will become a World King in the future, their destinies are terrifying. Not to mention sheltering him, but those super influences who want to be on good terms with him will definitely intervene on his behalf. And even if no one decides to shelter him, killing him will be a near-impossible task. And if we cannot kill him, then in the future the ones to die will be us!”

Sacred Tianhao shook his head. He had originally felt that Lin Ming was an unfathomably deep character, but he never imagined he would be strong to such a degree. Even in his battle against Wu Finalcloud, it was still unknown whether or not he used his full strength!

It wasn’t even possible to describe Lin Ming as just a monstrous genius anymore.

Sacred Yueping felt his own confidence ruthlessly savaged by Lin Ming, crushed to bits until nothing was left. Even so, he could only swallow his complaints and deal with it. Although he was arrogant, he knew that what Sacred Tianhao said was their only chance of surviving.

And at this time, above the ruined earth, Wu Finalcloud’s corpse slowly vanished, turning into pure dreamland energy that slowly floated towards Lin Ming. Within Lin Ming’s vision, this energy was composed of countless beams of colorful light. The lights were incomparably radiant; this was the strongest mass of dreamland energy he had seen yet!

Chapter 1212 – Merit Points Over a Hundred Million

Chapter 1212 – Merit Points Over a Hundred Million

…

…

…

“Wu Finalcloud… how much dreamland energy will you give me?”

The reason that Lin Ming hunted down masters and killed them was so that he could obtain their dreamland energy. To him, nourishing his divine dream mark and cultivating the soul training system was something he was obsessed with.

At the beginning of learning a new domain of martial arts, the speed of enhancement was always the fastest.

Lin Ming stretched out a hand and absorbed all of the dreamland energy. An unprecedented feeling of bliss swept through his body. This was just like a lost man wandering through the desert for a long time, dazed with hunger and thirst, and finally finding a lush oasis where he could obtain sustenance and even bathe himself in cool spring water.

Lin Ming also wanted to thank Wu Finalcloud. If it weren’t for Wu Finalcloud gathering the entirety of the True Martial Holy Lands’ intelligence network and accumulating a massive amount of merit points through his domineering rampage across the land, he would not have gathered so many points.

This was 60% of the all the dreamland energy that Wu Finalcloud had painstakingly gathered for these last five months!

As Lin Ming glanced at his merit points, he could see them soaring at a ridiculous rate. The speed at which they climbed was even several times higher than before!

Lin Ming was originally ranked 15th on the True Martial Great World, but now, with unstoppable momentum, he broke through the top 10, turned towards the top five, and zoomed straight to the top three!

At this time, at the Good Fortune Great World, there was a special disciple from the Unbroken Cult whose sole purpose was to monitor Lin Ming's ranking 24 hours a day. The divine dream jade slip was now being used to purposefully track Lin Ming's progress.

And in the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Lin Ming was also receiving similar treatment. Every time that his ranking changed, including that of his merit points, was studiously recorded.

They also saw that Lin Ming's merit points were rapidly rising.

This rate of increase could be called maddening. It was running by millions upon millions. The merit points value suddenly broke through 50 million, 60 million, and then 70 million!

Lin Ming's merit points left one feeling panicked dread and at a complete loss for words. It was like these numbers had already lost their original significance.

"80 million… almost 90 million! Young Hero Lin should have killed a top three ranked master of a great world!" The Unbroken Cult Great Elder exclaimed, his voice shivering.

As for Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan, they were holding their breath in awe. If Lin Ming broke into the top 15 of the great world, he would hold far more than enough gravitas in the Unbroken Cult. If Lin Ming were to come to the Unbroken Cult, then all of the high level and low level figures would have to gather. This included the Founder, the Vice Founder, the Highest Elders, the Great Elder, and every other disciple and Elder would have to come greet him and bow when they saw him.

And now, Lin Ming's achievements had actually continued far past the top 15 of a great world. He had broken past the top 10 and would soon reach the top five! If he continued onwards then that would truly be incredible!

Even now, the rate at which Lin Ming's merit points were rising didn't slow down at all. They immediately broke through 90 million with unstoppable momentum!

Then, 93 million, 96 million, 99 million...

Break through 100 million!

Lin Ming's merit points had broken through that critical point of 100 million!

Within a great floating palace on Crimson Light World, Huo Violentstone boisterously laughed. He said, "Heh, what did I say! I knew this was coming! I already said that during Lin Ming's second round of eliminations in this tournament he would definitely break past a hundred million! Now that I look again, this boy can definitely reach at least 150 million! Without thinking of it, Lin Ming has definitely killed the top number one master of the True Martial Great World. What is the number one master of a great world? Just another nobody for Lin Ming!"

Huo Violentstone spoke so loudly that his beard flared up. His cheeks were ruddy with light as his eyes lit up with high spirited excitement!

It was as if Lin Ming were about to immediately tussle with that Saintess from the Divine Dream Palace, or kick away the descendant of Empyrean Divine Universe.

As for the other three God Beast Clans, all of them had a strange taste in their hearts as they looked at Huo Violentstone's happy reaction.

Everyone here was a member of a God Beast Clan, so how could the disparity between disciples be so great?

As for the Ancient Dragon Clan's Laughing Dragon, when he saw Lin Ming's ranking he found it hard to laugh again. The Ancient Dragon Clan had always led the four great God Beast Clans, and the Ancient Phoenix Clan could be considered second or third place only. But now, their Ancient Dragon Clan had paid such a massive price to raise Dragon One, and yet Dragon One was only in the top 50 ranks of a great world; there was no hope of him going any further. As for the Ancient Phoenix Clan, they had a disciple that broke through to the first five, and it seemed that continuing into the top three wasn't any problem at all.

Top three to top 50, one couldn't even describe this difference with clouds and mud.

After breaking through 100 million, that still wasn't Lin Ming's limit. The final number stopped at 143 million. By killing Wu Finalcloud, Lin Ming had earned 96 million merit points!

As for his ranking, he had leapt into second place of the True Martial Great World!

Killing the number one ranked Wu Finalcloud didn't mean that Lin Ming would leap into first place. In fact, the difference between Wu Finalcloud's merit points and the second ranked participant was only 10-20 million. When Lin Ming obtained 60% of Wu Finalcloud's merit points in addition to his original number, he was still a tiny bit away from reaching first place, thus he ended at second.

Lin Ming's change in ranking was no longer limited to the attention of Mu Qianyu, Huo Violentstone, and a few others. Now, his change in ranking was reflected on the Divine Seal Decree that showed all 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm. And this Divine Seal Decree was under the gaze of every great influence in the Divine Realm!

After Lin Ming killed Wu Finalcloud, his name on the Divine Seal suddenly vanished from its position around 30,000. It rushed forwards with extreme speed, rushing straight towards rank 3670!

The Divine Seal Decree was a list that included the entirety of the Divine Realm. Just from the words Divine Sea, one could understand just how illustrious it was.

If one could rank in the top 3000 of the Divine Seal Decree, that would mean that on average, they would be the top ranked master of a great world!

Now Lin Ming was only several hundred ranks away from the top 3000. That was already more than enough to arouse the interest of the entire Divine Realm.

Martial artists of the Divine Realm had an extremely good memory. In these past days, they had remembered nearly all 5000 top names on the Divine Seal Decree. These were future leaders and helmsmen of the Divine Realm, among which even World Kings would be born from their ranks.

As for the ones remaining, although they might not become World Kings, it wouldn't be a problem to become a half-step World King. Although a half-step World King was far from being comparable with a true World King, they were still characters that many great influences would go all-out to win over. Many ordinary World King Holy Lands, besides their own World King, wouldn't even have a half-step World King in their ranks. If a new unaffiliated half-step World King were to appear, all of these ordinary World King Holy Lands would do everything in their power to win them over.

Within Atlas World, underneath the golden scroll and surrounded by the Divine Seal Decree, countless martial artists were noticing the change in rankings.

Phoenix Cry Palace had been Lin Ming's first stopping point after ascending to the Divine Realm. One of the 72 palaces of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Phoenix Cry Palace had been Lin Ming's starting point in his adventures through the Divine Realm.

The disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace were also paying attention to the Divine Seal Decree. Fairy Feng, White Daohong, and all other important persons of Phoenix Cry Palace were present.

Besides Phoenix Cry Palace's Lin Ming, there was also Charming Phoenix Palace's Yan Littlemoon who was being watched. The Elder Senior-apprentice Sister Lu Xiaoyun was leading a group of beautiful young female disciples, all of them chatting together. They had originally come to look for Yan Littlemoon. As one of the most outstanding disciples to ever appear in Charming Phoenix Palace, Yan Littlemoon had already been taken to headquarters. These disciples came here because they were interested in Yan Littlemoon's results and wanted to see if she could enter the Divine Seal Decree.

But now, those from Phoenix Cry Palace and Charming Phoenix Palace could all see an incomparably radiant name that blazed near the front of the Divine Seal Decree – Ancient Phoenix Clan, Lin Ming!

He was a character that swept away the many geniuses of a Great World King Holy Land, becoming the true king of a great world! Even Xiao Daoji and Huo Burning Heaven of the past hadn't been able to accomplish this!

“Lin Ming… is he really only someone from the lower realms…?” Fairy Feng whispered to herself. She still remembered the first time that she saw Lin Ming at Timeworn Phoenix City, during the king level smelting trial at the lower realms. At that time, she only believed that Lin Ming would be able to become a late Divine Lord master in the future and also an important figure of Phoenix Cry Palace. Because she saw this potential in him, Fairy Feng personally guided Lin Ming to ascend to the Divine Realm and also led him to Phoenix Cry Palace.

At that time, she never would have imagined that such a humble and amiable young man would achieve such incredible results!

And nearby the disciples of Phoenix Cry Palace, the disciples of Charming Phoenix Palace, in particular many of them who had participated in Fire Spirit Star's smelting trial with Lin Ming, were all watching his name glowing on the Divine Seal Decree, deep emotions surging in their hearts. There were many among them that had seen Lin Ming with their own eyes at Fire Spirit Star.

When Lin Ming was at Fire Spirit Star, he had completed the Thousand Slaughter and obtained a single drop of Ancient Phoenix blood essence. Even though he accomplished such a miracle, they never thought he would achieve the heights he did today.

Thinking about Lin Ming's dashing and wild fight with Crimson Strifecloud and the scenes of him sweeping away all opponents in the Illusionary God Combat Array, some young girls from Charming Phoenix Palace felt their beautiful faces blush red with infatuation and their minds shake with newfound emotions as they fell deep into Linmania.

In the world of martial artists, a person's strength, talent, and moral character were the most attractive charms to the opposite sex. Lin Ming possessed all of that in abundance. Not just that, but his handsome looks, his temperament, all of him was truly outstanding.

Thus, he naturally attracted the yearning hearts of these girls.

Chapter 1213 – Spirit Source

Chapter 1213 – Spirit Source

…

…

…

Lin Ming didn't know that his ranking was manifested on the 3000 great worlds' Divine Seal Decree, nor did he care about this. All of his concentration was focused on practicing the Divine Dream Law. After he absorbed Wu Finalcloud's dreamland energy, he flew straight towards True Martial City so he could close up and begin nourishing the divine dream mark.

And all around True Martial City, the disciples began to give a wide berth to Lin Ming.

It was only when Lin Ming left did they stop withdrawing. They stood there, dazed, unable to believe what had just happened.

If someone with an early Divine Sea cultivation was able to have such combat strength, it was simply unimaginable just what degree of power Lin Ming would obtain once he became a Divine Lord or Holy Lord.

But no matter what, from this day forth, the name of Lin Ming was destined to spread throughout the True Martial Great World!

Lin Ming returned to his dwelling chamber and sat down on his stone bed. He didn't immediately start cultivating, but instead closed his eyes, thinking about the fight he had experienced and reliving it in the arena of his mind.

The most profound impression that the battle had left on Lin Ming was the transcendent divine might that Wu Finalcloud had used – the Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art.

According to Wu Finalcloud, this was a body transforming type transcendent divine might. It summoned the power of a demon god, transforming one's own body into that of a demon god. It was a transcendent divine might of the demonic path.

This transcendent divine might was extremely incomplete, to a ridiculous level. The complete Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art could massively increase a martial artist's speed, explosive power, defensive power, and so forth, multiplying their comprehensive combat strength by several times. But, the version that Wu Finalcloud practiced mainly manifested in increasing his explosive power, increasing his explosive strength by several times. With that alone, he was able to use his true essence to struggle with Lin Ming's 100 million jins of strength.

"If I can obtain the Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art then my Celestial Tyrant Manual will advance to another level. If I were to use the Hundred Layered Waves in such a state, the power would be unimaginable!"

Lin Ming couldn't help but have such an idea. As he thought of this he could only wryly shake his head.

All the transcendent divine mights that he had experienced so far would be a tremendous benefit to him.

He wanted them all.

It could only be said that a transcendent divine might was far too heaven-defying. As the comprehensive summary of an Empyrean's lifetime of knowledge, it had to be this strong.

At this time, southeast of True Martial City somewhere, underneath a seven-colored tree with tall rainbow-hued flowers blooming all around him, a black-clothed youth was sitting on a lush patch of grass, his back resting against the tree. His hands were wrapped with bandages, his right knee was bent up and his left leg was straight. He was casually resting his arm on his knee, in a very comfortable posture.

It seemed as if he had been sitting here a long time. His shoulders were dusted with flower petals. A butterfly landed on his fingertip, gently fluttering its wings in an incomparably tranquil scene.

“He died… hmm, this Lin Ming is actually able to kill Wu Finalcloud. Seems like an interesting match.”

The black-clothed youth thought out loud. His pitch-black eyes were bright and lively and his inky hair fell down to his ears. He was a very clean-cut and handsome young man.

It was only that his face was surprisingly pale. One could even clearly see blue veins underneath his skin, as if he were at the beginning of some terminal illness.

His fingertip moved and the butterfly flew off from it, fluttering back towards the sea of flowers around him.

As the black-clothed youth saw this, he smiled with understanding. At this time, his thoughts stirred and he looked towards the distant canopy of flowers and trees.

“Come out, I’ve already discovered you!”

With a rustling sound, the flowers separated and a monster with red fur and red scales slowly walked out. It looked like a red monkey and its four limbs reached the ground. It had an extremely fierce appearance.

As the black-clothed youth saw this red-furred monster, he rubbed his forehead, revealing an expression like he had a headache, “I can’t seem to get rid of you no matter what. You’ve chased me for seven days and seven nights already; do you really want this thing?”

The black-clothed youth was still comfortably sitting as before. As he spoke, a purple crystal appeared in his raised palm.

This was an extremely beautiful purple crystal, only the size of a baby's first. In the center of the purple crystal was a blue line that wriggled about like a tiny snake.

The black-clothed youth gently tossed the purple crystal. It jumped up and down in his hand, mesmerizing.

As the red-furred monster saw this purple crystal, its ghostly blue eyes flashed with a greedy light.

But, it didn't immediately attack. It was clear that it was cautious against this black-clothed youth.

The black-clothed youth slowly stood up, saying, "You've chased me this far because you want this thing, right? Can you tell me what this is? And you… what are you? Don't tell me you are a nightmare beast. I know that you are different from them, but as for how, I can't really say."

The red-furred monster remained silent, only staring at the purple crystal in the black-clothed youth's hand.

"I know that you can understand my words. Every time I speak I can see your face change. You definitely have a consciousness of your own. Allow me to introduce myself. My name is Fang, a single word, a single syllable. I am a wanderer that travels through the stars. I have no home and no place to tie me down. In this True Martial Great World, people call me Dragon Fang, and you can call me that too… that is, if you can speak."

The red-furred monster didn't respond as before. Dragon Fang seemed particularly patient. He began speaking to himself, "I feel that there is something strange about the Divine Dream World. Ever since I entered the Divine Dream World I have had this feeling. This world is all too real, everything seems just like it is in reality, as if everything here truly exists and isn't created. I can feel that there is some secret in this world, but as for what it is, I do not know. Even this purple crystal has a secret. I can feel that it is strange, but I don't know how it is strange. I can't say I like this feeling much at all.

“So tell me, what is this purple crystal, and what are you? Since you can understand my words, there should be some way to pass information between us. Even if you can’t speak, can you at least use some sort of energy sound transmission?”

As Dragon Fang spoke to here, the red-furred monster roared out loud and rushed forwards. Dragon Fang’s pupils contracted and he brought a sword slashing downwards onto the body of the red-furred monster. However, that red-furred monster’s body was as hard as astral diamonds. After cutting down on it, the sword light simply exploded with a grating metal sound. Even with Dragon Fang’s formidable aura and strength that could sunder a mountain, he was still only able to cut off a few bits of hair!

“Great!”

Dragon Fang wasn’t startled at all, instead laughing out loud. He slashed out his sword once more, even swifter and more powerful than the last strike. A 10 foot thick beam of golden sword light turned into a dazzling arrow of light that smashed into the red-furred monster’s body.

Pang!

With a loud ringing sound, the red-furred monster was sent flying back by this strike. However, it was still uninjured as before.

And Dragon Fang was like an eagle as he suddenly drew hundreds of feet backwards. He stared at the red-furred monster, licking his lips and muttering, “Che, it’s quite tricky.”

Dragon Fang chuckled. His eyes blazed with a brilliant fighting spirit, happy to find a worthy match.

Very few geniuses did not crave the excitement of battle. Only a battle with an opponent of similar strength would arouse their fighting spirit, causing their blood to boil with excitement.

“If you won’t speak, then I’ll hit you until you do!”

Dragon Fang shouted out loud and attacked once more. The long sword in his hand came chopping down!

Sword after sword, the endless sword light was incomparably keen and fast!

For a time, the red-furred monster withstood the barrage of sword strikes, emitting roars of angry pain. All of its fur began to stick out like steel needles.

Dragon Fang smiled. “Since your body is so tough, let me see whether or not you can withstand the power of my Laws. In this world… the sharpest weapon is not a blade but broken space. When space cracks down, everything within it will break down too. Now show me just whether you can withstand this or not!”

Dragon Fang raised his sword. Around him, space began to twist, a distortion visible to the eye. Within this distorted space, even his sword seemed to bend.

As for that red-furred monster, it felt a grave threat and issued a vicious growl.

Xiu!

Dragon Fang’s sword slashed out. The sword light cut across the world as a dazzling divine light soared into the clouds!

The red-furred monster uttered a deafening roar, its voice cracking mountains and washing away clouds!

The intense battle between the two could be witnessed from a thousand miles away. One could clearly feel the earth trembling from the violent fluctuations of energy!

“What is going on!?”

“Over there! Someone’s fighting over there!”

“What a fierce battle. Even from such a distance I feel my heart shaking. Heavens, just who could be fighting?”

“The intensity of this battle is no less than that of the battle between Lin Ming and Wu Finalcloud. Now that Wu Finalcloud has died and Lin Ming has returned to the city, I really have no idea which two participants are capable of erupting in such a terrifying battle.”

“It might be Dragon Fang, but who is his opponent?”

“Let’s go over and take a look.”

Several hundred martial artists restrained their aura and flew towards scene of the battle.

Martial artists from other regions also caught up.

The divine light soared into the heavens as if it would split apart the world. The echoing sounds of battle could still be heard!

However, as everyone was approaching, that explosive sound rapidly diminished until it completely vanished!

As everyone arrived at the scene of the battle, they could see that all of the mountains and rivers and land for hundreds of miles was completely razed, absolutely sundered with ruptured cracks running everywhere. There was a massive fathomless fissure that cut through the entire battlefield – this was clearly caused by sword energy!

“There’s blood here.”

“Whose blood could it be?”

“This is… red fur! It’s that red-furred monster!” Some people discovered bloodstains as well as red fur left on the ground. It was clearly from that monster.

“Yes, it should have been Dragon Fang fighting against that red-furred monster. I have no idea who won or lost, but that red-furred monster shouldn’t have died… maybe it ran away… how terrifying. Whether it is Dragon Fang or that red-furred monster, neither are existences that we can deal with. If we run into that red-furred monster we have no chance but to run!”

"I wonder how Lin Ming would compare with them?"

These martial artists were all startled as they felt the fading true essence fluctuations in the air. In the True Martial Great World, hidden powerhouses were emerging one after another. The number one genius of the True Martial Holy Lands actually wasn't the strongest person here. Now, it seemed that even that red-furred monster was stronger than Wu Finalcloud.

"There really is no limit in this universe. There is always a higher mountain and a stronger person… the Divine Realm is far vaster than we could imagine. It seems that… we underestimated these wandering martial artists and smaller sect martial artists too much." A core disciple of the True Martial Holy Lands said as he sighed.

"Indeed… they simply come from far too large a number of people. There will always be that one person who stumbles upon a lucky chance and defies the heavens, or that one genius whose talent defies all logic or reason. Out of a trillion trillion trillion lives, those that can emerge are all peerless individuals, many of whom are even more terrifying than geniuses of Great World King Holy Lands. Even Senior-apprentice Brother Highdragon and Elder Senior-apprentice Brother have been defeated. The road before us is still long…"

For many core disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands, this Divine Realm First Martial Meeting had left an incomparably deep impression on them.

………………

At this time, within the vast galaxies of stars, there was a beautiful and magnificent palace carved from the purest spirit jade. On a terrace of this jade palace, a white-clothed youth was leaning against the railing.

This white-clothed youth had an extraordinary temperament. There was a little bead between his eyebrows. Combined with his handsome looks, he had a devilishly exotic appearance to him.

In front of this white-clothed youth was a large blue crystal mirror. The images reflected in this crystal mirror were the peak showdowns being held on all 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm. Within this mirror of the Divine Dream Palace, one could see scenes all throughout the Divine Dream World. However, this mirror had its limitations. In the 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm, there were countless epic battles occurring all the time. The images that were reflected in this crystal mirror weren't even a drop in the ocean.

At this time, within the crystal mirror, there was the image of a purple crystal. Within this purple crystal, there was some strange energy swimming as if it wanted to break free.

"Junior-apprentice Sister Frost Dream, is this a spirit source?" The white-clothed youth asked, pointing at the purple crystal reflected in the mirror. "Could High Master Divine Dream have put spirit source in the Divine Dream World? As a reward?"

The white-clothed youth asked with disbelief thick in his voice. Standing beside the white-clothed youth was a girl in an icy blue dress. Her skin was as pure and white as snow and her every breath exuded charm and beauty. She was the direct disciple of Empyrean Divine Dream – Frost Dream.

The truth was that even the title of direct disciple was insufficient to describe her status in Divine Dream Palace.

She was the Saintess of Divine Dream Palace, the chosen successor of Empyrean Divine Dream.

The blue-clothed girl gently shook her head. She said, "It is only the elementary form of spirit source... they are personally refined by Honorable Master."

As the blue-clothed girl spoke, the white-clothed youth was silently dumbfounded. "Spirit source is an existence on the same level as grandmist energy! Grandmist energy is the source of all matter, but spirit source is the universe's 'divine', as well as the foundation for the Divine Dream Law. If grandmist energy can be created, then it seems spirit source can also be created. If High Master Divine Dream personally refined spirit source, then even if it is spirit source in its elementary form, it is still extraordinary. High Master Divine Dream is truly generous!"

The blue-clothed girl faintly said, "Everything is up to fate. If one wishes to obtain one, it won't be that easy…"

"That's right, obtaining it is difficult and absorbing it is even more difficult. If one's soul isn't powerful enough, or their perception is lacking by even a little bit, then they will suffer absolute failure. Even if it were me, I would have to put everything into absorbing one. If I was just the least bit careless then I would simply fail. However, if I could even fuse the tiniest wisp within me, then the benefits to my soul would be unimaginable. I have to say I'm really jealous. If I knew this earlier then I would have also participated in the preliminaries."

The white-clothed youth said. Grandmist energy and spirit source were two existences that had nearly vanished from the universe; they were simply impossible to find.

They only existed in far-off hidden corners of the universe, or they were collected and refined by certain extreme characters. For instance, Empyrean Primordius refined grandmist energy, and as for spirit source, that was refined by Empyrean Divine Dream.

Chapter 1214 – The Last Round

Chapter 1214 – The Last Round

…

…

…

Time passed a day at a time. Five and a half months after the First Martial Meeting began, a new change occurred with the Divine Seal Decree.

As the ranking list that all the great influences of the Divine Realm were closely paying attention to, whenever there was the slightest disturbance in the Divine Seal Decree, this change would be instantly reported to the high level figures of all these influences. During this time, any unknown geniuses were slowly blooming into glory, entering the sights of these Divine Realm influences.

And the name that appeared this time was… 'Fang'.

As a martial artist that also entered through the True Martial Great World, Fang had no known background. He was known as the king of all wandering martial artists.

Either way, he was either truly a wandering martial artist, or he came from a family that wanted to keep its status a secret, or he was one of the hidden disciples of a top supreme elder.

Fang was someone similar to Lin Ming, who had just risen into the spotlight. He was a dark horse that had surpassed everyone's expectations.

Moreover, this dark horse was even darker than Lin Ming. In a single breath he had broken into the top 1000 ranks of the Divine Seal Decree and ended up at rank 997. He was undoubtedly the number one master of the True Martial Great World!

Fang's appearance had completely overshadowed Lin Ming's limelight.

At this time, Lin Ming's highest rank was only around 3000. Compared to Fang's top 1000 ranking, it was far worse. After all, the higher one went, the more difficult it was to rise in rank.

The top 1000 ranks of the Divine Seal Decree was a completely new boundary. After stepping into the top 1000 ranks, every character there was an incredible existence. Each of them was a peerless genius of their generation. If they went to a Holy Land, even the Holy Lord of that Holy Land would have to bow.

"This damned brat, he just came out of nowhere!"

As Huo Violentstone saw Fang overshadow Lin Ming on the True Martial Great World, he felt extremely unwell. Not only had Lin Ming's ranking not increased lately, it was actually falling straight down, and had now fallen to lower than rank 8000 on the Divine Seal Decree.

This caused Huo Violentstone to feel even more ill. "That damned brat Lin Ming, is he spending his time taking a piss or something? Just what has he been doing all this time!?"

After Lin Ming killed Wu Finalcloud he didn't go out to hunt for more dreamland energy, instead peacefully closing up in True Martial City. The dreamland energy that Wu Finalcloud had given him was far too rich. After Lin Ming brought the third divine dream mark to perfection, he refined the fourth divine dream mark until it was just a step away from perfection also.

"Recently… more and more people have died."

Lin Ming looked up, seeing the souls constantly flying over his head and returning to True Martial City where they would be revived. More and more strong people began to die, many of them able to rank in the top 1000 martial artists of a great world. Of course, even after these people were killed several times they would still be able to easily pass through the elimination round and not be kicked out.

"There seem to be some changes in the outside world these days… I wonder just what is happening."

Lin Ming thought out loud. He didn't know that while he trained, the nightmare beasts outside the city had become increasingly brutal and monstrous. There were even mutated nightmare beasts that began appearing. After killing these nightmare beasts, one could obtain several million merit points. The martial artists whose merit points rapidly rose were mostly from killing these mutated nightmare beasts.

Of course, the strength of these mutated nightmare beasts had reached an unbelievable level. Even the top 20 ranked martial artists of a great world would die to these mutated nightmare beasts' claws if they weren't careful.

Although there were no permanent deaths in the dreamland space, the feeling of having their bodies shredded apart still left a lingering fear in the hearts of these participants!

Besides the mutated nightmare beasts, the red-furred monster that appeared at Demon Sealing Ridge and fought with Dragon Fang also appeared once more.

This monster had nearly infinite strength and its body was as hard as divine metal. Although it had vanished for over a dozen days, it had now reappeared. It killed multiple peak disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands, including the ranked seventh master, Wu Zhanfeng.

As this red-furred monster killed more and more participants, it grew increasingly strong. Just speaking of it caused one to pale in fear that they would go out and encounter it.

If one ran into a formidable participant, that person might not kill you. This was because participants with low merit points simply weren't worth bothering. But, the red-furred monster was different. Anyone that ran into it would die. Even the rank seven master of a great world couldn’t escape from its claws after expending the entire arsenal of his martial arts, let alone anyone else.

The slaughter all over became increasingly fierce. And at this time, the six month deadline was drawing to an end. The third and final round of preliminary eliminations was finally approaching…

Elimination proportion: 999 out of every 1000 participants!

This number didn’t include the 99% elimination ratio of the first round of eliminations.

In the first two rounds of eliminations, there was only a single martial artist remaining from every 100,000.

To be able to stand out from 100,000 martial artists, the person able to do so was undoubtedly a genius amongst geniuses.

“My ranking had become fourth?”

After the six month deadline arrived, Lin Ming looked at his own ranking. He had already fallen to fourth place. However, he didn’t care too much about this. No matter what, he could still pass this screening round even if he sat here and closed his eyes.

“That Wu Finalcloud has likely caught back up already. Out of the two people that passed me, one should be Wu Finalcloud. With his strength, surpassing my merit points again shouldn’t be a problem. As for that other person… I wonder who he is? Perhaps it might be that Dragon Fang…”

In the Divine Dream World, one’s strength basically corresponded to one’s ranking. After one reached an appropriate ranking for their strength, it was extremely difficult to improve it any further.

At this time, in the skies of the Divine Dream World, a blinding light and a limitless energy fell down from the heavens, bringing with it a breathtaking pressure.

Many martial artists, once covered by this pressure, felt their bodies suddenly explode. They turned into countless spots of starlight before vanishing.

More and more martial artists blew up. All of the surrounding space was flooded with endless starlight. As for True Martial City, where most martial artists were gathered, the starlight filled the streets, making it seem as if a river of stars had fallen down unto the world.

After this second round of eliminations, out of the over 2 trillion plus participants of the First Martial Meeting that signed up in the True Martial Great World, only 20 million remained.

In the first and second rounds of eliminations, there would be many martial artists with low merit points that other martial artists wouldn't even bother to kill. But when the third round of eliminations started, all those with low merit points would have been eliminated, and those remaining would have a considerable number of merit points. This would cause the ferocity and brutal nature of this tournament to rise to another level, because those remaining would have millions of merit points. Killing another participant would give quite a large number of merit points.

Carnage, blood, cruelty, the entire True Martial Great World was destined to become an Asura battlefield with endless slaughter.

After two hours' time, the second round of eliminations finally ended. All participants that lacked merit points turned into starlight that faded away to nothing. These people were all returned to the real world, ejected to a place 10,000 miles away from the Divine Dream Light.

And at this time, a voice like billowing thunder spread through all 3000 great worlds of the Divine Dream World. This was the voice of Empyrean Vast Universe; only an Empyrean was able to project a sound transmission to the entire Divine Realm.

“The third round, and the final round of the preliminaries, will now begin. As long as you can pass through this third round of eliminations, you shall pass the preliminaries! From this point on, the rules have changed. Slaughter is no longer forbidden within the city limits. Now, all of you… enjoy this grand slaughterfest to your heart’s content!”

Empyrean Vast Universe’s words were brief and succinct. However, they left an enormous mental impact upon the countless remaining participants.

During this third round of eliminations, the cities would no longer be safe!

For the last three months, everyone knew that the slaughter between participants and the slaughter between participants and nightmare beasts would rise to a horrendous level. But now, everyone also learned that not even the boundaries of the cities would be safe. There would be no place for the weak to take shelter! In every great world, the entire great world would be completely turned into a battlefield!

“If the city isn’t safe then where can we go to rest?”

“In the open wild? But the wild has nightmare beasts, and one doesn’t need to be a genius to know that after the third round begins, these nightmare beasts will be several times more formidable than before. I fear that we will die and die again until we can’t even become ghosts…”

As the martial artists who barely squeezed into the third round of eliminations heard this new change, they felt the mood become extremely heavy and their hearts thick with tension.

Even if this wasn’t true death, having to die every day for three months wasn’t something to be happy about.

However, those martial artists that were confident in their own strength were left hopping with excitement.

“How interesting!”

“Hahaha! I want to see how all those people that offended me and ran to hide in the city will continue to hide!”

“Kill! Kill! Kill until pleasure overtakes us!”

During this third round of eliminations, the incredibly brutal competition caused the blood of many powerhouses to bubble over with elation.

As soon as Empyrean Vast Universe’s voice faded away, countless violent fluctuations of energy erupted from all over True Martial City. These loud rumbling sounds were mixed in with the screams and cries of martial artists. It was clear that there was a number of people that had already begun fighting!

At the same time, there were martial artists that began fleeing from True Martial City. While there were nightmare beasts in the wild, looking for a discrete valley to hide in was much safer than staying in True Martial City.

Lin Ming stood up from his stone bed and walked out of his seclusion chambers. He could feel the air sweet with the scent of blood and thick with killing intent. As he looked into the skies, he could see that the endless starlight had disappeared. Stacks of dark clouds filled the skies and a strong desolate wind howled through the city.

After Lin Ming appeared, many participants noticed him. Upon recognizing him they all began to run in droves, in fear of being casually killed off by him.

Lin Ming had no interest in these small fries. He released his sense and used his understanding of the Divine Dream Law to search for all nearby powerful dreamland energy. After practicing the Divine Dream Law for some more time, Lin Ming’s sense could already cover a 500 mile radius.

But as soon as Lin Ming investigated the nearby situation, his complexion changed. Within the sensory field of his mind, besides those rainbow-hued groups of energy scattered throughout True Martial City that symbolized other participants, he could also sense that several hundred miles outwards, all around him, there was an inexhaustible amount of dreamland energy gathering together.

This dreamland energy was like a vast tsunami that was rushing forwards with an incredible speed, hurtling towards True Martial City. This tsunami of dreamland energy covered the skies, masking the world, endless and infinite; it was unknown just how much there was!

Were these nightmare beasts!?!?

Lin Ming was suddenly shocked. From their color, the massive amount of dreamland energy had to represent nightmare beasts, but how could there be so many?

Lin Ming flew into the skies, looking out as far as he could see. As he saw the sight around him he sucked in a breath of cold air. On the distant horizon, he could make out a black sea that was surging towards him: an endless black sea of nightmare beasts. This black sea spread out for thousands upon thousands of miles; there were hundreds of millions of nightmare beasts!

These nightmare beasts were all rushing towards True Martial City!

Chapter 1215 – Nightmare Beast Tide

Chapter 1215 – Nightmare Beast Tide

…

…

…

The 100 million large nightmare beast tide surged forwards like a rolling tsunami. Once it arrived, it would likely even submerge the entirety of True Martial City. Even for Lin Ming, if he were to be caught in this endless beast tide, he would die without any hope of living. It had to be known that within this beast tide there were extremely powerful mutated nightmare beasts, equal to top 20-30 ranked masters of a great world.

It wasn't a problem for Lin Ming to kill four or five of these super mutated nightmare beasts. But, if he were to face hundreds or even thousands of them, then it would be extremely difficult to escape. There was no need to mention other martial artists.

"This First Martial Meeting is extremely brutal, especially this last round of eliminations."

Lin Ming only explored the distribution of the beast tide for a brief moment. Then, without much hesitation, he immediately turned and fled. Staying here would only mean death.

The beast tide rolled forwards at an incredible speed. In just the blink of an eye it was 200-300 miles away from True Martial City. With the keen eyesight of a martial artist, they could already make out just what these surging dark clouds were.

Endless and infinite blood birds, flying pythons, four-clawed griffin beasts, winged black tigers, metal armored rhinos, raging mammoths, monstrous wolves, the variety and number of nightmare beasts was near impossible to count.

“Heavens! What is that!?”

“Nightmare beasts! A tide of nightmare beasts!”

As the many martial artists of True Martial City saw this terrifying beast tide, all of them were shocked.

How could any human even hope to defend against such a beast tide?

In the first two rounds of eliminations it had been participants hunting and killing nightmare beasts. But now, it seemed that the nightmare beasts would counterattack the city, swallowing up every participant they could.

“Flee!”

“This is madness! Will all of True Martial City be destroyed!?”

Facing the siege of such a beast tide, there was not a single martial artist who thought of staying. Even the core disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands immediately fled.

If they stayed here, there would be death awaiting them.

The majority of the beast tide came surging forth from the south, east, and west. The only path that the martial artists of the city could escape to was the north. Thus, every single martial artist instantly turned to the north and flew as fast as they could.

And the area north of True Martial City wasn’t safe either; there was a massive number of strange birds and flying lizards that blanketed the skies.

“It seems as if Empyrean Divine Dream wants to simulate an extremely harsh and dangerous living environment. Is this to temper the powerhouses here?”

Lin Ming looked at the mass of flying nightmare beasts in front of him. The leader of these nightmare beasts was extremely powerful, equal to a peak genius from an ordinary Holy

Land. With these nightmare beasts grouped together, Lin Ming felt that not even one out of every thousand martial artists would be able to break out of here.

In this way, the third round of the preliminaries was especially prepared for the highest level of participants. Ordinary martial artists that couldn’t pass through the eliminations wouldn’t even have the strength to survive in this world. Only those that had the qualifications to pass the preliminaries would be able to live in the face of such a monstrous surge.

“Law of Annihilation, Chain of Stars!”

Lin Ming swept out his spear. The Fire Laws and Space Laws fused together and countless star fragments shot forwards like innumerable knives. The dozens of nightmare beasts in front of Lin Ming were ripped apart by these knives, completely torn to pieces. Blood and flesh rained to the ground even as it turned to dreamland energy that was absorbed by Lin Ming.

These nightmare beasts had more merit points than the nightmare beasts of the second round of eliminations. However, a weaker martial artist would barely be able to remain alive in the face of such a nightmare beast, much less think of taking its merit points.

All of these thoughts raced through Lin Ming’s mind. The spear in his hand danced like a swimming snake. Wherever it went, nightmare beasts would burst apart in gory deaths.

“That person… he killed over a hundred nightmare beasts with three spear strikes!”

“Too fierce, who is he… mm? That’s Lin Ming! He’s the monstrous genius that defeated Wu Finalcloud!”

“Let’s follow him!”

Within the fleeing crowd, many people recognized Lin Ming and began moving closer towards him.

Lin Ming didn't mind these people following him, but he wouldn't bother saving them either. He was flying at an extremely fast pace. As to whether or not they could keep up with him, that all depended on them.

With the Phoenix Blood Spear leading the way, massive numbers of nightmare beast corpses would fall down all around Lin Ming. As these corpses fell halfway to the ground, they turned into dreamland energy that flowed into Lin Ming.

Even though Lin Ming was fighting as he flew, his speed still far surpassed that of an ordinary martial artist. Many people were unable to follow him. Once they fell behind, they were swallowed up by the waves of flying nightmare beasts!

Their miserable screams lingered in the air!

As the participants looked at the massive number of casualties occurring around them as well as the endless black tide that submerged the entirety of True Martial City behind them, all of them felt their hearts turn cold. If True Martial City was now swamped underneath a sea of nightmare beasts, then how would they revive once they died? Would it be in some strange place outside of True Martial City?

But there was no longer time to think about such things. The painful screams echoing out from behind them reminded them all that if they were only a single step slow, all that would be waiting for them was death and despair.

Lin Ming madly rushed a thousand miles north, killing thousands of nightmare beasts on the way. In just this time alone he had gathered more than a million merit points. Behind him, several hundred masters were following closely. There were many individuals in this group that were extremely strong and they cut down all the nightmare beasts in their way. Although they were far weaker than Lin Ming, with this group added together, the number of nightmare beasts they killed surpassed Lin Ming.

And at this moment, in the distant skies, mixed within a flock of blood birds, a group of three purple monster birds shot towards Lin Ming.

These monster birds had a human face, four arms, and wings like a bat.

“Shit! Those are mutated nightmare beasts!”

Several martial artists cried out. Mutated nightmare beasts were extremely difficult to deal with. Although these human-faced bats in front of them were only the weakest of mutated nightmare beasts, it was still difficult to withstand the pressure of three of them suddenly appearing together. Especially with a beast tide chasing them from behind, if they were delayed just a little bit then they would be sucked into that roiling beast tide!

“Be careful!” Some martial artists cried out. But, as Lin Ming saw these three mutated nightmare beasts he didn’t care at all. His spear came sweeping out the same as before.

Chi-la!

An electric purple light cut through the skies. These three mutated nightmare beasts were split in half by Lin Ming’s spear light, their torn flesh and shattered bones falling down from the skies.

“This is…”

Several martial artists felt their mouths fall open. Although they knew that Lin Ming was extremely strong, they hadn’t personally experienced how freakishly strong he actually was. Although they had seen Lin Ming fight Wu Finalcloud and defeat him, they had no idea just how strong Wu Finalcloud had been either.

But now, they had personally experienced mutated nightmare beasts like these before them. In order to take down a mutated nightmare beast they would often need to band together in a group and lay an ambush in advance. They would have to combine various array formations, join their attacks together, and perfectly act in unison to kill one. And yet, Lin Ming had used a single spear strike to kill three of these monstrous birds. This sort of disparity in strength was simply indescribable.

“They were all killed like that… too strong!”

"It's hard to imagine he is only at the early Divine Sea realm."

The several martial artists didn't have any time to think of this further. All of them followed Lin Ming as closely as they could. If they fell behind, they were dead.

And at this time, the crowds of nightmare beasts slowly became sparser. They arrived at a strange and quiet canyon. In the Divine Realm, there were far too many of these remote canyons and mountain ranges.

"3000 miles north of True Martial City is the White Crag Mountain Range. We should be somewhere near there." A martial artist that was familiar with the environment around True Martial City said.

It wasn't just them, but many other surviving martial artists had arrived here. They came in groups of participants that were led by a top powerhouse, otherwise the casualties would have been even more serious.

"We need to hurry up and rest. Who knows when that tide of nightmare beasts will reach here!"

"Yes, and any place where martial artists are gathered is also not safe. This White Crag Mountain Range has an extremely complex terrain; it's likely that someone will decide to start killing others here."

Several martial artists said. Then, dozens of miles away from them, screams suddenly rang out in the air, followed by the sounds of energy explosions, as if purposefully confirming their suspicions.

A fierce and wild roar resounded through the world. This terrifying sound caused one's scalp to tingle and their heart to skip a beat.

"What is that!?"

All of the martial artists were nervous. Even Lin Ming's eyes began to shine with a somber light.

Bang!

With a loud rumbling sound, the stretch of mountain range in front of these people completely exploded!

The earth ruptured and countless towering trees were instantly burnt to ash!

In the horrifying shockwave of energy, a red-furred monster leapt high into the air. And in front of it, four martial artists were caught on its long crimson-scaled tail. Three of these martial artists were pierced through the heart by the sharp tail, with blood spraying into the air. As for the last martial artist, he was using a saber to block the deadly tail, wanting to break free from its grip.

At this time, the red-furred monster slashed out. Its sharp claws struck the head of that martial artist. The martial artist's body shook and then his skull blew up into pieces, bits of brain and fluid raining down. Then, the red-furred monster waved its claw again and again; the other four martial artists were all split in half!

It had only taken an instant to kill four people!

"H-h-h-heavens!"

Beside Lin Ming, a participant looked up at this scene playing out in the skies, his eyes filled with panic and dread.

"That martial artist with the saber is Dong Bishu, a core disciple of the True Martial Holy Lands. He is a ruthless character ranked 12 or 13 on the True Martial Great World. But even someone like him was slaughtered like a dog or chicken!"

It was a well-known rumor that the red-furred monster had killed Wu Zhanfeng, the seventh ranked master of the True Martial Great World. But in most people's minds, the red-furred monster should have killed Wu Zhanfeng after an extremely fierce and arduous battle. The difference in strength between the two shouldn't have been too ridiculous.

But now, as they saw the red-furred monster kill the highly ranked Dong Bishu the same as it did the other three martial artists, all of them felt their hairs stand on end. This red-furred demon – just what kind of existence was it?

"While the red-furred monster's attention isn't on us let's hurry up and run!" A martial artist hurriedly said with a true essence sound transmission.

"There's no way we can escape! The moment we start to flee it will definitely notice us. With its speed, even if we all run in separate directions it will still kill all of us. Our only choice is to restrain our auras as much as we can and move a few dozen miles away from here. Perhaps it might ignore us then. That's the best chance we have!"

Fleeing meant certain death and not fleeing meant they might somehow wriggle their way out of this. But the reality was that they were in a hopeless situation. They simply had no other choice.

At this time, Lin Ming was staring at the red-furred monster, his eyes shining.

In the field of his divine dream vision, Lin Ming could see that this red-furred monster was completely composed of rainbow-like lights, and there was something quite special about it. This dreamland energy in its body wasn't considered too great, but it was vigorous and boundless; Lin Ming wanted to obtain it from the depths of his heart.

"What secrets does this monster have on its body?" Lin Ming thought to himself, one hand tracing the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Chapter 1216 – Red-furred Monster's Evolution

Chapter 1216 – Red-furred Monster's Evolution

…

…

…

Lin Ming's eyes locked onto the red-furred monster. This red-furred monster was around 10 feet tall and the hairs all over its body were as sharp and shiny as steel needles. Its chest, neck, and back were completely covered with thick black scales. Its body was grandiose, its claws sharp and fierce, and there was a thin and long tail that extended from its back. This tail seemed to have joints in it just like an iron whip, and on the end of this tail there was a long spike. This spike shined with a cold light. Just a moment ago, this spike had pierced through the hearts of three martial artists.

At this time, Lin Ming saw the red-furred monster stretch out its claw and take a purple crystal from Dong Bishu's tattered corpse. This crystal had something like a small red snake sealed within it. The tiny red snake fluttered about, twisting within the purple crystal just like a living creature.

As Lin Ming saw this purple crystal, his eyes grew even brighter. This was…

Lin Ming's eyes shot open. Although this was the first time he had seen this crystal, he felt a very special connection to it… as if this crystal was a part of his soul.

Lin Ming released his senses and locked onto that crystal. In the sensor map of his mind, he could see all the surrounding dreamland energy turn into countless masses of colored light. The dreamland Laws were able to divide into seven-colored lines, and as for that purple crystal, its energy signature looked just like a little purple baby. It had clear facial features, smooth and soft skin, and looked extremely cute and lovable.

"This purple crystal seems to have a life of its own..."

Lin Ming immediately thought. With his current understanding into the dreamland Laws, he was able to see that there was something beyond extraordinary within this purple crystal.

He had a faint feeling that if he could obtain this purple crystal, it would be an immeasurable advantage to his cultivation of the Divine Dream Law.

And as Lin Ming was thinking this, that red-furred monster actually swallowed up the purple crystal at a speed that no one could respond to.

After the purple crystal entered the red-furred monster's body, it completely melted down, fusing into its soul. The red-furred monster growled a comfortable roar and its body began to emit crackling sounds. The armored bone scales on its body grew thicker and stronger, its tail elongated, and its muscles bulged outwards. Afterwards, two meat sacks began to pop up from its back

The red-furred monster cried out, writhing as if it were withstanding a tremendous amount of pain. It gathered all of its strength and emitted a guttural roar. Then, those two meat sacks on its back burst apart in a shower of green goo, and from this green goo a pair of meat-covered bones shot out. The bones then spread apart, revealing a wide set of blood-red wings, just like the wings of a vampire bat.

This red-furred monster had actually formed wings. It was clear that the reason was that it had eaten that purple crystal, thus the red-furred monster had evolved!

As Lin Ming saw this, he gripped the Phoenix Blood Spear and began to circulate the true essence within him. That purple crystal definitely had an inestimable advantage to his cultivation of the Divine Dream Law, and that red-furred monster had eaten it.

The red-furred monster had some slight differences from ordinary nightmare beasts, but in the end it was merely a monster formed within the divine dream space. If he were to kill it, he could obtain its dreamland energy, and that purple crystal's energy would also be contained within this dreamland energy.

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes. With his own sense and ability to feel the Divine Dream Law, he analyzed the dreamland energy and dreamland Laws within that red-furred monster. He could feel that this red-furred monster had swallowed more than one purple crystal. As the participants were slaughtering each other for merit points, this red-furred monster had silently and unknowingly collected purple crystals, swallowing each and every one it could find.

As Lin Ming thought of this, he felt it a bit incredible. What was this red-furred monster? Was it some creature made by Empyrean Divine Dream? How come he could feel that this red-furred monster seemed to have its own thoughts and will?

He was nearly about to attack, when at this moment there was a loud ringing explosion from the distance. A blazing gold light shot through the skies and a white-robed youth shot through the horizon like a fiery meteor.

This youth was not some nobody, but the number one disciple of the True Martial Holy Lands, Wu Finalcloud.

Woosh! Woosh!

Following close behind Wu Finalcloud were two core disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands. They were both top 10 ranked characters of the True Martial Holy Lands and their strength was in no way weaker than Highdragon's.

As Wu Finalcloud saw this red-furred beast, a thick killing intent glinted in his eyes. "I've finally caught you! You damned monster! You killed my True Martial Holy Lands' core disciple Wu Zhanfeng, and now you've even killed my Junior-apprentice Brother Dong Bishu! You've run wild and out of control for all this time, and now today I will have you pay the price for all that you’ve done! Killing you is also considered as cleansing evil from this True Martial Great World!”

Wu Finalcloud took out the Great Blood Sword from his spatial ring. He certainly knew just how terrifying this red-furred monster was. Facing this beast, Wu Finalcloud had no intentions of starting off slow; he immediately took out his greatest weapon from the start.

And at this moment, the red-furred monster let out a diabolical roar as it launched its thin and transparent blood-soaked wings and hurtled straight towards Wu Finalcloud!

This red-furred monster originally had a terrifying strength and horrifying degree of defensive power. And now after having swallowed that purple crystal, its speed had risen to the limit!

Too fast! So fast that no one was able to react!

Wu Finalcloud’s pupils shrank. He instantly began revolving his transcendent divine might – the Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art!

With his strength crazily rising by several times, Wu Finalcloud shouted out loud and smashed his Great Blood Sword at that red-furred monster!

Dang!

With a ringing explosion, Wu Finalcloud’s Great Blood Sword was caught single-handedly within the claw of that red-furred monster! The thick sword edge was caught in its claw, unmovable, just like it was stuck in divine iron.

Wu Finalcloud’s complexion changed. How could this thing be so strong!? In that strike just now, he felt a strong jolt of pain shoot up his arm and his hand nearly went numb with paralysis!

This monster’s strength was even higher than that of Lin Ming!

And as for speed, it was no worse than Dragon Fang.

What in the world was this red-furred monster? Was it a nightmare beast? How could Empyrean Divine Dream think of creating such a powerful nightmare beast? If even he couldn't defeat it, how many people were able to kill it?

Nightmare beasts were originally formed for participants to kill so they could gather merit points. If there was a nightmare beast that no one could kill, and that would instead kill everyone on sight, then wouldn't these preliminaries simply lose all significance?

All of these thoughts flashed through Wu Finalcloud's mind. At this time, he felt himself being pushed backwards, constantly being forced to retreat as he nearly lost control of the Great Blood Sword.

And at this time, from behind Wu Finalcloud, the two core disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands jointly attacked the red-furred monster from both sides!

Of the two martial artists, one used a long sword and the other used a thick saber. As they saw Wu Finalcloud being pushed back, both of them responded with a counterattack.

"Be careful!"

Wu Finalcloud shouted out. But, it was too late. The red-furred monster roared and its tail slashed forth like a sentient whip!

Xiu!

A sharp sound filled the air, as if space was being torn apart.

"Attack together!"

"Cut apart its tail!"

These two people were not idiots; they could also feel how terrifying the red-furred monster was. With sword and saber, they cut down on this iron tail.

Ding!

The two weapons intersected with the hard tail. The two martial artists felt their hands go numb as they nearly lost control of the weapons in their hands. The frailer sword let out a keening cry, as if it would snap apart if the force was any greater.

As for that iron tail, not only was it not injured at all by the sword and saber, but because of its absurdly fast speed, the end of the tail flew past the two weapons and shot directly towards one of the disciples' hearts.

That disciple's pupils contracted. He stormed backwards, wanting to avoid this strike.

However, the speed of that tail was far too fast!

That disciple barely managed to avoid having his heart pierced through. That sharp thorn pierced through the disciple's protective true essence like it was paper and then penetrated through his body, passing right through his shoulder!

The disciple stuffily coughed. Before he even had time to respond, there was another light sound as the tail retracted. That disciple's entire left shoulder, included his collar bone and muscles, was all twisted off by that tail!

With half his body covered in blood, the disciple cried out in pain, his face turning bone white!

"Fourth Junior-apprentice Brother!"

A raging anger blew up in Wu Finalcloud's heart. He shouted out loud as all the joints in his body emitted great exploding sounds. His body grew and his muscles popped outwards as he activated the Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art to the limit!

Peng!

Wu Finalcloud used all of his strength and forcefully pulled out his sword from the grip of the red-furred monster. Then, he cut down on its head!

"Sword Shattering the Universe!"

This was Wu Finalcloud's strongest attack.

However, this red-furred monster didn't seem to care at all. It thrust out its claws, one claw towards Wu Finalcloud's heavy sword and the other claw reaching towards his throat!

As Wu Finalcloud saw the brutal and savage counterattack of the red-furred monster, his complexion became beastly. He put forth his full force and continued cutting down with his sword as before.

Clang!

The great sword smashed into the claw of the red-furred monster and a loud ringing sound filled the air, as if that great sword had struck a metal rock. The red-furred monsters scales were chopped to pieces by the force, but at this time, that red-furred monster's other claw approached Wu Finalcloud!

This claw came swinging out!

It was no longer possible for Wu Finalcloud to retreat. At this time, a thick golden barrier suddenly appeared around him. This was the Metal Laws that Wu Finalcloud had comprehended – the True Martial Body Barrier Art.

When he fought with Lin Ming, he had used the brief instant when the shield shattered to barely defend against Lin Ming's Hundred Layered Waves. And now, this attack coming at him was clearly stronger.

Kacha!

The red-furred monster's claw bluntly crashed into the golden barrier. The incomparably solid golden barrier shook for an instant before it was immediately ripped apart by the red-furred monster!

Puff!

After this claw tore through the barrier, it ruthlessly slashed Wu Finalcloud's left shoulder. Wu Finalcloud's body shook as he was sent flying backwards. His left shoulder had nearly been torn off!

"How could this thing be so strong!?"

Wu Finalcloud's lips trembled. His arm was hanging uselessly at his side, it was simply impossible to use any strength with it.

As for the martial artists around the White Crag Mountain Range, all of them sucked in a breath of cold air. Although Wu Finalcloud had lost to Lin Ming and it was rumored that his strength was inferior to Dragon Fang's, he was still an undoubtedly strong top master. Even so, he had been defeated in just a few moves?

Just what was that red-furred monster?

Chapter 1217 – Soul Life

Chapter 1217 – Soul Life

…

…

…

After the red-furred monster heavily injured Wu Finalcloud, it roared and continued rushing towards him. It raised its sharp claws; as long as these claws struck him, Wu Finalcloud would likely be split in half!

In this crucial moment, Wu Finalcloud completely tore off his right arm. He forcefully pinched it and the entire arm exploded into a shower of blood.

“Demon Body Mutilation!”

Wu Finalcloud’s face was fierce and grim. His body absorbed all of this blood rain and the blood-colored scales began to appear over his body.

In this instant, Wu Finalcloud’s aura suddenly shot upwards. His strength also doubled from before. He was even more powerful than the time when he had fought Lin Ming!

“What ability is this? He can actually absorb his own flesh and blood to enhance his strength to the limit!?”

“It’s definitely a demonic path cultivation method. The Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art is also from the demonic path. The True Martial World King should have obtained the inheritance of some ancient demonic supreme elder!”

“This move will consume a considerable amount of blood vitality. When Wu Finalcloud battled Lin Ming he didn’t use this move from the start, and after he used up too much energy in the protracted battle it was already too late to do so. If Wu Finalcloud had used this technique from the beginning of when he fought Lin Ming, then perhaps that battle might have turned out differently.”

All of the surrounding martial artists rapidly discussed with true essence sound transmissions. This was Wu Finalcloud’s ultimate move – to explode a part of his body and overdraw the absolute limits of his combat potential. This was not something that he would use in a normal martial arts battle. Otherwise even if he won he would suffer lasting effects and it would be shameful to do so.

As Wu Finalcloud saw this red-furred monster approach him with his own eyes, he shouted out loud, grasped the Great Blood Sword and then violently chopped down!

Kacha!

The Great Blood Sword violently collided with the red-furred monster’s two claws. The red-furred monster finally cried out in pain as its body was smashed backwards by the Great Blood Sword. As for Wu Finalcloud, he was also sent hurtling backwards like a meteor.

The brutal collision had caused all the bones in his sole remaining arm to completely shatter and even the Great Blood Sword was sent spinning away. Wu Finalcloud coughed up gobs and gobs of blood. He had completely exhausted all of his strength!

Every single technique in his arsenal had been used!

As for that red-furred monster, although it had been forced back, its claws bloodied, and its skin split open, for a creature with such a powerful life force, these were only small wounds.

Its defensive power was terrifying to the point of leaving one gasping in despair. It was able to use its bare hands to block a medium-grade spirit artifact. Moreover, this medium-grade spirit artifact was the one used by the number one genius of a Great World King Holy Land.

Even though Wu Finalcloud had used the entirety of his strength, even burning his blood essence to fight, he still wasn't able to harm the red-furred monster in any significant manner!

As the martial artists saw this, all of them had determined that Wu Finalcloud would lose. They didn't want to be affected by his calamity and were all preparing to escape. The landscape around the White Crag Mountain Range was extremely complex, with hidden roads everywhere. With tens of thousands of martial artists all fleeing in separate directions, the red-furred monster wouldn't be able to kill them all no matter how powerful it was.

The red-furred monster quickly stabilized itself as it came to a screeching halt. It turned towards Wu Finalcloud, wanting to thoroughly kill off this human martial artist that had dared to challenge its dignity, when at this time it's mind began to ring with overwhelmingly loud warning signals!

It turned its head to see that just several miles away, a blue-clothed youth was hurtling towards it, a red spear in his hands!

This blue-clothed youth had a red mark shining from between his eyebrows. His entire body was covered in layers of flames and arcs of thunder, his speed faster than a falling meteor!

In all the hidden valleys and caves and fields around the White Crag Mountain Range, every martial artist saw this blue-clothed youth.

"It's Lin Ming!"

Someone cried out in alarm. This red-furred monster's strength was already clear to all present. Taking a look at the entirety of the True Martial Great World, only Lin Ming would dare to attack at this time!

"He's mad!"

"The strong are bold!"

Even if it was Lin Ming, the martial artists present still didn't favor him winning. No one knew just where the true limits of the red-furred monster's strength lay. But even disregarding that, just the strength that the red-furred monster had revealed so far was enough to leave them all despondent. In everyone's opinion, when Lin Ming and Wu Finalcloud fought, the difference between them wasn't too great. If he wanted to defeat the red-furred monster… the chances weren't too high.

Lin Ming flew forth at an increasingly fast speed. He opened all seven of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, released the Heretical God Force, and even burnt the blood of the Ancient Phoenix. With spear and man as one, he split through the skies like a divine messenger, all of his terrifying strength completely erupting together!

Celestial Tyrant Manual – Hundred Layered Waves!

The red-furred monster roared out again. It didn't change its tactics; it stretched out its claws and slashed at Lin Ming!

Even though this attack seemed extremely simple, no one thought it was simple at all. Even a top 10 ranked master of a great world would be instantly killed by such a strike.

The same attack had been used against Wu Finalcloud before, but now it had changed to Lin Ming.

Everyone's eyes widened until they were as round as full moons.

Kacha!

The Phoenix Blood Spear crashed into the red-furred monster's claws. In that moment, Lin Ming felt his hands shake as a fierce shaking strength transmitted up the Phoenix Blood

Spear and spread into his organs, his limbs, and his bones, causing his blood vitality to tumble and all the energy to chaotically rage around within him.

Lin Ming knew that although this seemed like a simple claw attack, the truth was that it contained the power of Laws within it. The reason that those masters were all killed or sent flying back by this claw attack was not just because of the impact force but because of the Laws contained within it.

However, Lin Ming's Hundred Layered Waves wasn't simple either. 100 million jins of strength were completely poured into the Phoenix Blood Spear; the striking power of his attack had reached unimaginable levels. Moreover, such an attack was like the endless tides of the sea, coming in wave after wave, stretching to infinity!

Bang!

Energy detonated. In this brief collision, Lin Ming and the red-furred monster were both forced backwards. Lin Ming felt blood tumble within his body and his hand went slightly numb. As for that red-furred monster, its skin had broken and it was oozing thick red blood.

As Lin Ming saw this red-furred monster's bleeding wounds, his eyes sharpened.

What a freakishly high defensive power!

Out of all the opponents Lin Ming had faced so far, this red-furred monster had the highest and most terrifying defensive power he had seen. Its defensive power was even far greater than Lin Ming's; it was like a child God Beast!

"This monster is quite troublesome!"

Lin Ming's eyes shined with a solemn light. In a situation where he had used the Hundred Layered Waves in his peak state, he still hadn't been able to seriously injure it.

"Lin Ming's attack didn't have any effect at all! That attack just now was the one that Lin Ming used to defeat Wu Finalcloud, but now he couldn't even seriously injure the red-furred monster! Moreover, that monster only hastily counterattacked just now and didn't truly collide with Lin Ming. If the two engage in a brutal melee, he most likely won't be able to bear it!"

"I'm afraid that even Lin Ming… is hopeless here."

"Dragon Fang? Where is Dragon Fang? If Lin Ming joined together with Dragon Fang, then perhaps the two of them might be able to do it!"

In this situation, the numerous martial artists scattered throughout the White Crag Mountain Range naturally thought of Dragon Fang. Dragon Fang was an extremely mysterious individual. His background was an enigma and so was his strength. But recently, Lin Ming was able to slowly deduce that the number one merit point ranked master of the True Martial Great World was Dragon Fang. Thus, most people imagined that Dragon Fang and Lin Ming were close in strength.

In the skies, Lin Ming looked at the red-furred monster and the red-furred monster also looked at Lin Ming. Its ghostly green eyes glimmered with light, its pupils as tiny as needle tips and its vision sharp enough to pierce through someone.

And several miles away, Wu Finalcloud was lying in a heap of rubble, his entire body drenched with blood. With his left arm shattered and his right arm torn off, he had lost all combat strength.

As Wu Finalcloud looked at Lin Ming hovering high in the sky, his look was extremely complex.

The truth was that the reason Wu Finalcloud attacked the red-furred beast was because the red-furred beast had killed his junior-apprentice brother in front of everyone. With so many other True Martial Holy Land disciples present, and also as their Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, it was impossible for him not to make an appearance. Thus, he recklessly rushed forwards even though he knew that the red-furred monster was extremely difficult to deal with.

But Lin Ming was different. He could have fled this area, but he didn't. Instead, he showed up like a bolt of lightning out of the blue, all for the thrill of the battle.

"He actually dares to rush toward such a ridiculously powerful monster? What a lunatic! If he used the limit of his strength when he fought with me then he'll lose!"

Wu Finalcloud thought to himself. He took out a pill from his spatial ring and swallowed it.

At this time, besides the True Martial Great World, on every other great world in the Divine Realm, monsters that were just as powerful as the red-furred monster had appeared. In front of them, even the top ranked master of that great world would find themselves hard-pressed to survive! As for other ordinary martial artists, they were even less worthy of mentioning; they would be killed in an instant.

Such a monster already far surpassed the level of a descendant from a Great World King Holy Land. Their existences were not meant for the preliminaries, but aimed at the peak talents of the entire Divine Realm.

"High Master Divine Dream's methods are truly wonderful. First are the beast tides to attack the cities and then the appearance of these monsters, all in order to simulate a brutal and cruel world. For those weaker participants, even living a single day is a luxury."

In Divine Dream Palace, a white-clothed youth with a sword over his shoulder casually commented.

From his side, Frost Dream calmly said, "Only such a brutal environment can temper a person…"

"That's right, this is how we grow. Many common people or martial artists of ordinary Holy Lands think that us Empyrean descendants enjoy incomparably wonderful and superior conditions when we are born. They think our lives are easy because we can study the best inheritances and also easily become World Kings in the future. But, the truth they don't know is that on our road as we grow up, we have to face incomparably ruthless and dangerous experiences. In the adventures that we undertake, dying is a common matter. And in those adventures, even core disciples of World King Holy Lands would easily perish."

A lingering fear remained in the white-clothed youth's voice as he recalled all of the trials and tribulations he had experienced to get where he was.

"Oh, that's right! Junior-apprentice Sister Frost Dream, what are these special monsters that have appeared in the great worlds? I feel that they aren't ordinary nightmare beasts!"

Frost Dream slowly nodded. She said, "They are soul lives that Honorable Master captured long ago. They are living beings and not energy forms created from the Laws."

"Soul lives?" The white-clothed youth was faintly startled. If they were called soul lives then they naturally had to be different from the souls of humans. "Could there really be existences that aren't born with a body but just their soul? Where did High Master Divine Dream capture so many soul lives? Is there really such a land in the Divine Realm?"

The white-clothed youth asked, curious. But, Frost Dream remained quiet, clearly having no intention of speaking any further.

The white-clothed youth understood Frost Dream's character. If she didn't want to talk about something, asking her any further was useless. He could only give up on his thoughts.

Looking through any of the 3000 great worlds, there were some great worlds where even the number one ranked master had been killed. As for those that hadn't been killed, that was only because they hadn't encountered these horrendous monsters yet.

As the white-clothed youth saw this, he couldn't help but shake his head and say, "Although High Master Divine Dream kept elementary spirit source in the Divine Dream World as a reward, I think that besides Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao Moxian, there is no one that will be able to obtain them… the difficulty is simply too great."

Chapter 1218 – Fighting the Red-furred Monster

Chapter 1218 – Fighting the Red-furred Monster

…

…

…

In the skies, robed in blue clothes and grasping a red spear, Lin Ming stood straight and tall, like a heroic challenger!

And in front of him, the red-furred monster was curled up like a crouching tiger, waiting for the opportune moment to strike. Facing this red-furred creature, no matter who it was, they would feel a tremendous pressure.

The several core disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands had already retreated a good distance away. Even the other martial artists scattered all around the White Crag Mountain Range drew back dozens of miles more from the battlefield. There were very few people that believed Lin Ming had any hopes of winning. And once Lin Ming was defeated, regardless of whether he escaped afterwards or died in the conflict, everyone else remaining would be stuck in dire straits. It was possible that the remaining participants would be drawn into a deadly bloodbath. At that time, when they all scattered to escape, having a bit more distance between them and that red-furred monster would increase their chances.

And at this time, the red-furred monster moved. It launched its red and blood-covered bony wings and rushed towards Lin Ming. Its speed reached an incredible level. Without any special move at all, it merely stretched out its claws and grasped towards Lin Ming's throat!

This was the first time that the red-furred monster had officially attacked Lin Ming; the time before had merely been a hastily summoned counterattack.

When the red-furred monster had fought Wu Finalcloud, it had also used this simple-looking strike to attack Wu Finalcloud in a state where he had released the Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art and also the Demon Body Mutilation technique. In the end, after using every skill available to him, Wu Finalcloud had been the one to be severely wounded.

This was a terrifying strike!

If Ln Ming could defend against this strike then he would just about meet the qualifications to struggle with this red-furred monster. If he didn't then he would be instantly killed!

Everyone watched this with their eyes wide open.

As Lin Ming saw this red-furred monster hurtling towards him, his pupils shrank. Explosive popping noises sounded out from all the joints in his body as the power of the supreme dragon bone and phoenix blood began to surge forth. From behind Lin Ming, the phantoms of an Azure Dragon and golden phoenix appeared.

A deafening dragon roar accompanied with a melodious phoenix cry split through the skies, echoing to the ends of the world. Lin Ming's arms tightened and he rapidly thrust out the Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands. In that instant, he had shot out his spear 100 times.

These 100 spears gathered together, merging into a 10 foot thick azure spear light that shot towards the red-furred monster!

In this strike, Lin Ming had used the limit of his bodily strength. It could be called the strongest attack of his body transformation technique!

Bang!

Stormy shockwaves shook the world. Lin Ming's spear crashed into the red-furred monster's claws, causing energy to erupt and space to tremble.

The scales on the red-furred monster's claws broke apart, but at the same time, that powerful vibrating force also passed into Lin Ming's body through the Phoenix Blood Spear.

This vibrating force was like a titanic earthquake, vast and seemingly endless. Lin Ming's protective true essence was swept over by these waves of power, instantly bursting apart!

The power of vibration subsequently broke into his body, passing into all the meridians, organs, and bones within him. In that moment, his blood tumbled and the energy within him became chaotic. There were even some meridians, muscles, and tendons that were damaged, nearly snapping apart!

If it weren't for the fact that there was the supreme dragon bone fused into Lin Ming's body and also that he had opened the Gate of View, this strike alone would have burst apart his organs and shattered all the bones in his body. His fate wouldn't have been much better than Wu Finalcloud's.

"What a formidable vibrating power. Is this… the Earth Laws? No wonder this red-furred monster defeated Wu Finalcloud even in his strongest state!"

Lin Ming's eyes began to shine with a quiet and earnest light. The reason that this red-furred monster was so powerful was that every single one of its strikes was supported by the power of Laws. That crazy and brutal power of vibration would spread into the bodies of its opponents.

Lin Ming's protective true essence was considered deep and formidable. Even so, in the face of this red-furred monster, his protective true essence had still instantly shattered without any chance of resisting it!

Fortunately, Lin Ming's bodily defense was extremely formidable. Even so, he had still been damaged in this attack.

"He withstood it… Lin Ming actually withstood the attack of the red-furred monster! Heavens! His protective true essence shattered and yet he was still able to withstand it? Was it by relying on his bodily defensive power? He's a monster himself!"

“It’s impossible to completely block it. If his protective true essence shattered then the shockwaves of that attack would definitely have rushed into Lin Ming’s body. Even if he cultivates the body transformation technique and his mortal body’s defensive power is formidable because of that, that attack must have injured him and left behind hidden wounds. If those hidden wounds accumulate then it will put his life in danger. Look at his arm! It’s bleeding!”

Lin Ming’s arm was indeed bleeding. When he withstood that tremendous impact force just now, his web of his palm had split apart and even some small blood vessels in his arm had ruptured, causing blood to flow down Lin Ming’s hand. As this blood dripped onto the Phoenix Blood Spear, it was incomparably bright red.

“It’s not as simple as you think. Look at that red-furred monster. Both of its arms have also burst open with blood.” Someone said with a true essence sound transmission.

“Don’t compare people with that monster. How could a human’s body possibly compare with the physique of that monster? Even if Lin Ming is a monstrous genius, I have a feeling that the monster’s regenerative ability and tenacity far surpass anyone’s imaginations. As for Lin Ming, if he continues to fight then those hidden wounds will continue to gather until he is finally defeated.”

As the martial artist just finished speaking, that red-furred monster seemed to deliberately confirm his words. The muscles of the red-furred monster twisted around, wriggling about until the flowing blood stopped and even its scales seemed to slowly regrow and repair themselves.

After colliding with Wu Finalcloud and Lin Ming several times and being wounded, that red-furred monster’s arms regenerated in several breaths of time!

As the participants all around the White Crag Mountain Range saw this, they sucked in a breath of cold air.

It had taken a great deal of effort to slightly injure it. This was particularly true for Wu Finalcloud. He had even desperately staked his life in order to injure that red-furred monster, but just now, it had nearly completely regenerated!

This sort of phenomenon would definitely instantly rout the confidence of any martial artist that hoped to defeat it.

With such an abnormal regenerative ability, just how could a human hope to fight against such a monster?

No matter who it was, in front of a being with such terrifying speed and strength, nearly invincible defensive power, ridiculous endurance and incredible recovery abilities, this sort of opponent left one wallowing in abject despair!

“It’s over. No one can hope to win against that!”

“I fear that even if Lin Ming and Dragon Fang joined together they still wouldn’t be able to do it!”

“Its recovery ability is too monstrous. It is like a child God Beast!”

As people were speaking, Lin Ming’s arm slowly began to stop bleeding. His flesh and blood moved, stitching themselves together as his wounds healed. His shattered skin and muscles also seemed to be reborn anew. A moment later, Lin Ming’s arm was completely healed to its original state. Even his broken meridians and blood vessels were slowly regenerating; all of his hidden wounds had been eliminated!

As everyone saw Lin Ming regenerate, all of their eyes popped open, their gazes filled with incredible disbelief.

“No way! Can Lin Ming also regenerate!?”

“I’m certain that he hasn’t taken a pill. And even if he did, there are far too few pills that have such a powerful regenerative effect that can be taken in the heat of battle!”

“How can a human’s body have the same restorative ability that a vicious beast has? Is this the Life Laws?”

Some people suddenly thought. If one practiced the Life Laws to a high boundary they could truly control the replication of their cells to a certain degree. They could even completely repair some non-vital organs; that is, everything besides the heart, brain, and spinal cord. Moreover, regenerating all of this came at the cost of a massive amount of true essence – it couldn’t be used too often.

“If this is the Life Laws then it is still useless. Lin Ming will soon exhaust all of his energy.”

“A person simply cannot compare to a vicious beast in endurance, especially since Lin Ming encountered such a freakish beast!”

The red-furred monster’s great strength had struck a chord of fear within all the martial artists present. Just by looking at it, they could feel their aura diminish.

At this time, the red-furred monster’s ghostly green eyes were blazing as it stared at Lin Ming. It hadn’t imagined that its own full-powered attack would be withstood by Lin Ming, and then Lin Ming would also be able to follow it in regenerating its body.

It issued a deep growl and slowly twisted its claws and neck, creaking its bones. Lin Ming also cracked his knuckles and hands together. Facing the red-furred monster, his eyes were sharp and fierce.

Rahh!

With a loud roar, the red-furred monster launched itself forwards once more!

This was a battle of savage head-on collisions! The red spear and red claws smashed into each other. Each time they struck, there was a loud thunderous pulse that split the air!

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The attacks all had a force behind them that surpassed 100 million jins of strength. Mountain shelves cracked, causing clouds of crushed stone to billow into the air. Just the shockwaves of this battle between man and beast were able to level this mountain range!

The red-furred monster's formidable strength had exceeded Lin Ming's expectations. In every attack, a powerful vibrating strength would spread into his body. His protective true essence shattered every time!

These powerful attacks were several times stronger than Wu Finalcloud's final attack! If it were anyone else, they would have instantly died in the face of such a barrage.

Luckily, Lin Ming had dragon marrow and phoenix blood fused into his body, thus his regenerative ability and defensive strength had reached an unbelievable degree. Even so, in the face of such a brutally ruthless melee, he felt all the blood tumble within his body and energy wildly rush through his meridians, nearly causing them to break.

However, as Lin Ming withstood these extreme attacks each and every time, the red-furred monster wasn't much better off.

The red-furred monster's strength and explosive force were several times greater than Wu Finalcloud's, but it had a serious weakness in its inferior combat skills. Every time it collided with Lin Ming, it had to resist at least two of Lin Ming's attacks.

The Phoenix Blood Spear was an extremely high ranked spirit artifact, and its sharpness was without doubt. After Lin Ming poured his gold battle spirit into it, even if the red-furred monster had a body as hard as divine iron, the Phoenix Blood Spear would still leave trails of blood etched into its body.

As these trails of blood accumulated again and again, they gathered into a heavy wound.

The red-furred monster's muscles wriggled, repairing all of these wounds. The phoenix blood and dragon marrow within Lin Ming raced through him, also repairing all of his wounds.

This was a battle of attrition, a match between their endurance and their restorative abilities!

This violent fight continued for several dozen breaths of time. Man and beast had collided over a hundred times already!

Every collision was like two planets bumping into each other. Each strike caused the mountains to shake, the rivers to vibrate, and the earth itself to tremble. Every explosive sound echoed in the hearts of the numerous martial artists scattered throughout the White Crag Mountain Range, like a steel ball smashing into their chests, causing their blood to restlessly move and even their heartbeats to be affected.

In such an intense fight, Lin Ming didn't slowly exhaust his true essence and weaken as everyone had imagined he would. Rather, from beginning until now, he didn't reveal any signs of burning out at all. He still remained incomparably aggressive and ruthless as before, like a vicious beast in human form.

All of the participants around the White Crag Mountain Range were stunned. Heavens! This was an absurdly terrifying endurance!

In his battle against Wu Finalcloud, although Lin Ming had also revealed his great strength, that battle contrasted to this one could only be considered a slap fight between babies. Only this homicidal collision between Lin Ming and the red-furred monster could truly be called a blood on blood melee! Every single time they crashed into each other they would both undoubtedly be injured! Not only did they have to withstand a huge consumption of energy, they also had to stimulate the energy within their bodies to restore themselves. To continue this fight to this point, the amount of energy they used was unimaginable!

Chapter 1219 – Thunder Tribulation

Chapter 1219 – Thunder Tribulation

…

…

…

"That's crazy… Lin Ming's body actually isn't any worse than the red-furred monster's!"

"They must have struck each other at least 120 times by now. Lin Ming's body has to withstand the tremendous impact of the energy shockwaves every time which will inevitably injure him, yet he's able to recover after every strike. Is he even human?"

The participants scattered around the White Crag Mountain Range were all left speechless as they stared at this fierce battle taking place in the skies.

As for the True Martial Holy Lands, Wu Finalcloud had taken some medicine and had restored some of his origin energy. He also looked at Lin Ming battling in the sky, a strange color on his face.

It was clear that when he had used the Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art to battle Lin Ming, it was simply a useless and suicidal action on his part.

When he fought with Lin Ming, even if the peak of his strength had lasted 10 times longer he would still have lost. The difference between them was that great!

As everyone was discussing this, Lin Ming had already exchanged 200 attacks with the red-furred monster. The red-furred monster's two claws were covered with blood, the flesh on its chest had cracked, its scales had been torn off, and blood was leaking from its mouth.

Even so, its body was constantly regenerating, but, the rate at which it was regenerating was slowing down at a visible rate.

As it looked at Lin Ming, its ghostly green eyes were shining with an inexplicable light.

In contrast, Lin Ming had consumed a great deal of energy too. But, this was a form of combat that he favored. This strong vibrating power, this feeling of true pain seeping through his body, this truly made his blood seethe with excitement.

Lin Ming wiped away the bloodstains from the corners of his lips, a cheery smile on his face. "You seem to have an intelligence of your own; you're different from those other ordinary nightmare beasts. Can you understand my words?"

Lin Ming said with a true essence sound transmission. As he did, a strange look passed over the red-furred monster's face.

"It seems that you understand me... then tell me, what is that purple crystal?"

Lin Ming had extremely little understanding into the mysteries of the divine dream space; he wanted to obtain more information about this world.

At this time, the red-furred monster released a deep roar and launched its bony wings once more. Its blood vitality suddenly rocketed up into the skies, billowing upwards like a volcano. With the support of this powerful blood vitality, its body began rapidly regenerating once again!

As everyone thought that the red-furred monster was about to attack again, an unexpected change occurred. The red-furred monster swiveled around and flew off in the other direction!

It was extremely fast. In the blink of an eye it swiftly flew dozens of miles away, nearly seeming as if it were teleporting. The speed of its flight caused a sharp grating sound to fill the air.

“What!?”

The martial artists around the White Crag Mountain Range were all shocked.

“Lin Ming forced away that monster!”

“This… this is… this is too fierce! That monster was actually forced back!”

“This Lin Ming is even more monstrous than that monster!”

Everyone was so shocked that they didn’t know what expression to make. This was the first time they had seen that nightmare beast running away.

As everyone thought that the battle had ended like this, Lin Ming’s figure flashed. He turned into a beam of light and chased right after the nightmare beast!

With the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and the Mystic Lightning Shade rapidly revolving and also with the speed from the Gate of Wonder, Lin Ming’s speed had reached an unbelievable level. He was even a bit faster than that red-furred monster!

Lin Ming’s figure turned into a series of afterimages as he vanished into the horizon.

“He’s chasing it! He’s really chasing it!”

Everyone was bewildered to see both man and monster rush away with incredible speed.

Lin Ming had forced back that nightmare beast and had even decided to pursue it! This was far too fierce!

“A desperate enemy shouldn’t be pushed too far. Moreover, that nightmare beast didn’t seem much weaker than Lin Ming to begin with. If he rashly chases it, I fear that he will encounter danger instead.”

“The beast tide is everywhere now. As long as that red-furred monster hides itself in the swelling beast tide, then Lin Ming can only be forced to give up. On the other hand, if Lin

Ming isn't careful and he's sucked into the beast tide instead and forced to face off against hundreds and thousands of mutated nightmare beasts, he will certainly perish."

"That's right. Defeating and killing are two completely different concepts. That red-furred monster is just too fast. If it decides to escape then it's impossible to cut it down. The only method is if someone's strength far surpasses it, otherwise chasing it is far too audacious an action."

In everyone's view, Lin Ming's endurance and formidable strength were without question. And just now when Lin Ming and that red-furred monster had flown away, that red-furred monster hadn't fallen into a great disadvantage and didn't seem much weaker than Lin Ming. Perhaps it only escaped because it feared that it would consume too much of its energy and then be open to sneak attacks from the surrounding masters.

In this sort of situation, no one thought that there was any meaning to Lin Ming chasing after it. Instead, chasing that monster might cause Lin Ming to wind up dead in the midst of the beast tide.

And at this time, Lin Ming had already chased that red-furred beast for several hundreds of miles.

Lin Ming frowned. If those participants could think of such scenarios, then he could too. He knew that chasing this red-furred monster was extremely dangerous.

But there were far too many secrets on that red-furred monster, even ones that were related to his cultivation of the Divine Dream Law. He had no choice but to chase after it.

What Lin Ming feared the most was that the red-furred monster would submerge itself into the all-encompassing tide of nightmare beasts. If that were to happen then he would have no choice but to give up his chase.

However, what happened surprised Lin Ming. The central beast tide was located at True Martial City still and this red-furred monster was flying in a direction that clearly wasn't towards True Martial City.

"How strange… this monster has an intelligence of its own so why isn't it luring me to True Martial City instead? If that happened then it would be in an invincible situation. Could it be that there is an even more dangerous area that it wants to bring me to?"

Lin Ming grit his teeth as this thought flashed through his mind. He revolved his energy and accelerated his speed.

With his speed, travelling a hundred miles only took several breaths of time!

And this speed was actually only a bit faster than the red-furred monster. If he wanted to overtake the red-furred monster he would have to chase after it for some time. During this time, they could have flown back and forth to True Martial City several times.

"How troublesome!"

Lin Ming didn't worry that the red-furred monster was leading him to some special danger zone because he had his own methods of saving his life. Taking a step back, even if he died it wouldn't really matter. In this divine dream space, true and final death did not exist. And as for his ranking dropping, Lin Ming didn't care about trivial things like that.

The special energy within this red-furred monster was what Lin Ming valued the most.

The chase continued for some time. Before long, both man and monster had flown 8000-9000 miles. Their speed was so fast that the ordinary nightmare beasts they encountered along the way were unable to react at all.

They even had to pass through a small group of nightmare beasts.

And at this time, a change occurred. As the red-furred monster passed through this small group of nightmare beasts, a purple iron-winged dragon suddenly hurtled towards the red-furred monster!

It was impossible for an ordinary nightmare beast to follow the red-furred monster's speed. But, this iron-winged dragon was a mutated nightmare beast and also one that excelled in speed. It wasn't a problem at all for it to chase after the red-furred monster.

"Mm?" Lin Ming's eyes brightened. The nightmare beasts would actually attack the red-furred monster?

No wonder! This red-furred monster wasn't a nightmare beast to begin with, so it wasn't strange that it was being attacked. This was also why it didn't choose to escape towards True Martial City.

Then, just what was this red-furred monster?

These thoughts instantly raced through Lin Ming's mind. At that moment, the red-furred monster roared like a rolling cloud of thunder. It reached out its claws and tore off the head of that iron-winged dragon!

This mutated iron-winged dragon was equal to a top 40-50 ranked master of a great world. But in front of this red-furred monster, it was slaughtered like a chicken.

However, killing the iron-winged dragon caused the red-furred monster a moment of delay. During this brief moment, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a severe light. "This is my opportunity!"

Lin Ming revolved his energy to the limit. As he rapidly consumed his energy he instantly erupted with his strongest level of strength. In a single breath of time he rushed to just a mile behind that red-furred monster. To him, a mile away wasn't anything at all!

"I only have one move left. Although it's not fully complete yet, there's nothing else stronger!"

At this time, Lin Ming had no more intentions of holding back. In the previous battle, because he wanted to fight with his body transformation technique in order to feel the thrill of a melee battle in his bones, and also because he didn't want to reveal his cards too early, he didn't use this move in front of everyone. But now was different. If he missed this chance he might not get another one. If so, he naturally had to use all of his techniques to their fullest.

"Heavenly Demon martial intent – grandmist space!"

The Prime Emperor Lotus Flower slowly bloomed from behind Lin Ming. The grandmist space instantly covered the red-furred monster. Underneath the grandmist space that suppressed all Laws, the red-furred monster's speed suddenly dropped. And taking advantage of this chance, Lin Ming rushed right towards the back of that red-furred monster!

In this instant, the power within Lin Ming's body rapidly ascended. The blood of the Ancient Phoenix, the Heretical God Force, all of this power came surging outwards without end. All of this power, after converging with Lin Ming's inner world, fused into the Phoenix Blood Spear and then erupted outwards!

Chi chi chi!

Endless bolts of thunder suddenly appeared in the skies, rushing to gather onto Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear. His spear light cut through space, emitting a terrifying sharp whistling sound. All of the thunder was swept up in Lin Ming's spear strike, forming a massive purple vortex that spanned between the heavens and the earth.

It was like the world itself was about to break apart!

Heavenly Dao Judgment – heavenly thunder tribulation!

Lin Ming roared out loud. From within Lin Ming's inner world, the power of thunder tribulation that had been absorbed by the Heretical God Seedling from his nine by nine Ninefall suddenly exploded outwards.

The power of thunder tribulation that stood above the Heavenly Dao Laws cut straight towards the red-furred monster!

This was also Lin Ming's self-created elementary transcendent divine might!

Chi-la!

The Phoenix Blood Spear cut across the sky with endless arcs of thunder spinning around it. Space trembled, and the entirety of the surrounding skies for hundreds or even a thousand miles turned into a roiling purple thunder dominion!

From that small group of nightmare beasts, half of the nightmare beasts were caught up in this strike, instantly turning to ash!

The red-furred monster cried out in pain and agony. Placed within the grandmist space, its speed had dropped a lot from before. Lin Ming's spear was now equal to heavenly tribulation. Underneath the absolute suppression of Laws, no one was able to avoid heavenly tribulation; they could only resist it!

Roar!

The red-furred monster roared in suffering. It stretched out its claws and grasped down at that thunder spear light!

Bang!

A blazing divine might lit up the heavens and a blinding light filled the world, seeming to swallow up everything in existence. For the surrounding hundreds of miles, all of the mountains and rivers and valleys completely collapsed due to the terrifying strength of this strike. Everything was razed to the ground. Lakes instantly evaporated and countless towering great trees were burnt to cinders.

The red-furred monster's two arms were also charred black by this terrifying strength before instantly blowing into pieces.

Lin Ming's long spear continued unabated, stabbing into the red-furred monster's chest!

Puff!

The Phoenix Blood Spear penetrated right through the red-furred monster and emerged from its back. Blood shot out before being instantly evaporated by the turbulent energy shockwaves. Its fur, its scales, everything was completely scorched black by the power of thunder tribulation!

A thick and terrifying purple pillar of light shot into the skies!

Chapter 1220 – Eyes Blinded by Lightning

Chapter 1220 – Eyes Blinded by Lightning

…

…

…

A terrifying explosion swept through the skies for several hundreds of miles. The violet shockwaves sundered the earth, shattering all barriers. In that moment, it was like a purple sun had dropped onto the earth!

Even from 10,000 miles away, this divine light was clearly visible!

“Awoooo!”

The red-furred monster roared out in pain. A massive half-foot-sized hole had been burnt through its body. Half its heart had been scorched and nearly all the blood in its body had been burnt away!

It furiously stretched out its claws, wanting to use its dying breath to grasp at Lin Ming’s head!

Lin Ming sneered. The Phoenix Blood Spear in his hand was pulled out!

Puff!

The scorched half of the red-furred monster’s body was ripped off; bits of flesh and blood rained out!

However, the life force of this monster had reached a nearly unimaginable level. It dragged its grievously wounded body and threw itself towards Lin Ming.

Without any expression, Lin Ming thrust out his spear again. The violent and wild power of thunder pierced into the red-furred monster’s head.

With a stab and a thrust, the red-furred monster’s head exploded like a watermelon. Its strong and sturdy body twitched for several moments, then, it finally died!

“I’ve killed it at last.”

Lin Ming let out a long breath. And at this time, because of that strike just now, the skies above him were covered by thick rolling thunder clouds. These thunder clouds gathered together into a massive vortex with waves of purple thunder glittering everywhere. With this strike, he had actually recreated a temporary thunder dominion. From the far off distance, one could make out the endless purple light sizzling within this thunder dominion.

And at the White Crag Mountain Range, many of the participants hadn’t yet left; they were busy planning their future paths after having lost the safety of True Martial City.

And at this moment, in the distant horizon they could see a massive purple pillar of light shoot into the skies!

“Look over there! What is that!?”

It wasn’t known just who shouted that, but everyone turned to look. They could see that in the distant skies, the world had turned purple. Countless arcs of lightning fell like torrents onto the world!

“Is this divine light borne from thunder?”

“That is definitely the Thunder Laws. Even from so far I can sense its immense strength. Heavens, I wonder just who is fighting?”

Watching from the White Crag Mountain Range, this pillar of light was narrow. But, the impact it caused was unimaginable. Because of this purple pillar of light, dark clouds shrouded the skies, blanketing the lands for hundreds and hundreds of miles. All of the martial artists could feel the terrifying energy contained within these clouds. Even from 10,000 miles away, this feeling still caused their minds to shake with fear!

“That direction… isn’t that the direction that Lin Ming and the red-furred monster flew in?”

“Yes, that’s it, that’s the direction! Could it be that it is Lin Ming fighting the red-furred monster?”

“Heavens! Just what sort of ability, what sort of fighting method is this? Is it Lin Ming’s attack or that red-furred monster’s attack?”

Someone shouted in panic, a sense of awe and dread in their voice. Everyone looked at each other, bewildered, disbelief written all over their faces. This strength was simply far too terrifying!

At this time, a top 20 great world ranked core disciple of the True Martial Holy Lands hesitated for a moment before saying, “It shouldn’t be…”

“If that red-furred monster had such strength then it wouldn’t have needed to flee. As for Lin Ming, I feel that his strongest aspect lies in his body transformation technique. In terms of the essence gathering system and his comprehension and use of Laws, he’s a bit lacking. The two of them shouldn’t be able to send out such an attack.”

“Then who could it possibly be? Is there an even more powerful existence on the True Martial Great World? Is it a super monster even greater than the red-furred monster, something like a sovereign of nightmare beasts?”

Someone whimsically asked, lost in his own daydreams. In the Divine Dream World, if a variation monster like this red-furred monster could be born, then it wouldn’t be strange if a nightmare beast sovereign could appear too.

If there really was such a monster, then Lin Ming would truly be in dire straits!

“There’s a possibility… if so, I fear that Lin Ming would have already died by now. Don’t push a cornered enemy too far; the sayings of the ancients aren’t wrong. Lin Ming was too reckless.”

“It’s just that the beast tide was too fierce right after the third round of eliminations started, otherwise something like this wouldn’t have happened to Lin Ming. But, even if Lin Ming was foolish this time, with his strength he will still be able to jump back into the top three ranks of this great world.”

Everyone shared their speculations. However, no one dared to go 10,000 miles to take a look at the real situation.

With their strength, let alone that red-furred monster or that possible nightmare beast sovereign, if they were to encounter a small group of nightmare beasts then they would be completely swallowed up as food until there weren’t even bones left of them!

“If a nightmare beast sovereign has truly appeared, then our chances of survival have gotten even worse. To confirm this, could our top 10 ranked senior-apprentice brothers look and see if their rankings have changed?”

A True Martial Holy Lands disciple suddenly said.

It was easy for them to discern the rankings of the top 10 on the True Martial Great World because they occupied most of the positions. They would only need to verify their own rankings to find out.

Lin Ming was originally ranked fourth on the True Martial Great World. If he were killed, he should fall to or around the tenth place. The fifth to tenth place martial artists could see if he fell by checking if their own rankings had jumped by one.

When the beast tide first erupted, the core disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands had immediately gathered together when they fled and there were even several top 10 ranked masters amongst them. These martial artists all checked their rankings before frowning and saying, “My ranking hasn’t changed.”

“Mine hasn’t changed either.”

“Mm? It hasn’t changed? Does that mean Lin Ming hasn’t died?”

At this time, a core disciple of the True Martial Holy Lands seemed to realize something. He looked up his own ranking and sucked in a cold breath as he saw it.

He was originally the third ranked martial artist of the True Martial Great World. But now, his ranking had dropped to fourth place!

If his ranking dropped and those from fifth to tenth place didn’t, then that could only mean that he swapped places with whoever had been ranked fourth!

And that person had been Lin Ming!

“Lin-Lin Ming’s merit points have suddenly surpassed mine!”

In the top five rankings of a great world, there was a difference of at least 10 million merit points between two people. In a normal situation, the only way that Lin Ming could have leapt ranks was if he killed a top 10 ranked master of a great world, otherwise it would have been impossible for him to jump up ranks so fast. And now, Lin Ming had been chasing that red-furred monster so it was impossible for him to kill other masters.

That only left a single possibility… Lin Ming had killed that red-furred monster and obtained a massive number of merit points!

The martial artists present weren’t idiots. As the ex-third ranked disciple said that Lin Ming’s ranking had changed, everyone realized just what might have happened!

And at this time, the still not recovered Wu Finalcloud examined his own ranking. As he did, his fingers faintly trembled…

Lin Ming’s merit points had surpassed his own!

“Elder Senior-apprentice Brother…”

A number of people also thought of Wu Finalcloud and turned to look at him. As they saw the strange expression on his face, a foreboding premonition appeared in their hearts.

This is…

Wu Finalcloud bitterly smiled and shook his head, “He’s passed me… Lin Ming’s merit points have passed my own. I have dropped to third place…”

Wu Finalcloud’s words confirmed everyone’s guesses. To suddenly jump up over 20-30 million merit points in a single go, there was only a single possibility – and that was that Lin Ming had killed the red-furred monster.

To defeat someone was a completely different concept from killing them. As everyone recalled the red-furred monster’s terrifying speed, horrifying defense, and also despair-inducing endurance, wasn’t wanting to overtake it and kill it easier said than done? Perhaps even four or five martial artists that had a similar strength to it wouldn’t be able to keep it from escaping!

But now, it had actually died to Lin Ming’s hands!

Moreover, Lin Ming had chased the red-furred monster through the endless beast tide that surrounded them from all over. He had not only done that but had overtaken it and killed it!

Just how was this possible!?

Everyone looked up towards the pillar of purple light that shot into the skies once more. That pillar of light… could it have been sent out by Lin Ming?

As everyone realized this, they felt their jaws drop down. That roiling thunder dominion that encompassed the skies 10,000 miles away was still lingering there, scorching the world!

The feeling that Lin Ming gave off to everyone had always been that he was a martial artist who focused primarily on the body transformation technique. When he defeated Wu

Finalcloud, and even with the red-furred monster, he had relied on his body transformation technique to contend with them. In terms of the essence gathering system and especially in the comprehension of Laws, Lin Ming didn't seem too extraordinary at all.

But as they saw that terrifyingly titanic thunder dominion that was caused by the Thunder Laws, all of them were left speechless. This level of the Thunder Laws… just what sort of ridiculous power was this!?

Could it have been that Lin Ming's greatest strength lay in his Laws, but from the beginning until now, no one had been able to force him to use them?

"This is… too unbelievable!"

"What a monster… he is invincible in the body transformation technique, invincible in endurance and recovery, and even his essence gathering system and comprehension of Laws have reached such a level… with such a terrifying explosion of power, just what sort of technique could have caused it? The difference between him and us is just too great…"

Chapter 1221 – First in a Great World

Chapter 1221 – First in a Great World

…

…

…

The purple clouds of thunder continued to roil through the skies. The thunder dominion carried on, as if it would last until the end of time.

Facing this thunder dominion, all of the core disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands felt powerless and weak.

And at this time, 10,000 miles away, the red-furred monster's corpse dissolved into pure dreamland energy. This dreamland energy was larger than any mass of dreamland energy that Lin Ming had ever seen before. It was bright and radiant, blinding to the eyes.

This sort of feeling was like the difference between a violet sun stone and a violet sun crystal.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. He didn't rush to absorb the dreamland energy. Instead, he dragged this dreamland energy into a hidden valley and concealed his own position using layers of array formations. Currently, the entire divine dream space was being flooded with tides of nightmare beasts. If he wanted to absorb this dreamland energy he would need to find a safe place to do so.

After finishing all of this, Lin Ming then focused his thoughts on the dreamland energy. The dreamland energy exploded, turning into countless motes of starlight that fused into his body.

This powerful and pure energy turned into streams that submerged into Lin Ming's soul. The fourth divine dream mark emitted a blazing light as it climbed towards perfection at unimaginable speeds.

Not just that, but there was still a tremendous amount of divine dream energy remaining.

After Lin Ming checked his own merit points, he was slightly surprised. In a single go, his merit points had suddenly risen to 238 million. From his fourth place position, he had now become first!

After killing the red-furred monster, he had obtained almost a hundred million merit points in a single fell swoop!

Lin Ming's change in ranking was also reflected in the Divine Seal Decree.

Within the entire Divine Realm, besides the Unbroken Cult and the Ancient Phoenix Clan, there were also many other great influences paying attention to Lin Ming's ranking. Before this, only the top 10,000 participants had the qualifications to be checked up on all 24 hours of the day by the various Great World King Holy Lands, and Lin Ming's previous best ranking had been just less than 3000.

Now, Lin Ming's ranking suddenly vanished from its spot around 8000 on the Divine Seal Decree. It immediately jumped up past 1000 and stopped at 890. With this, he had surpassed Dragon Fang!

The top 1000 rankings were a completely new level. After rising to this boundary, with some luck, one could become an ordinary World King!

And if one was a World King, then even if they weren't a Great World King they could still be an overlord of their own domain!

On average, the achievement of an Empyrean descendant was also to become a World King.

As for the future achievements of Great World King descendants, they would become Holy Lords and the stronger ones amongst them would become half-step World Kings.

The future boundary of a descendant was often a level lower than their master. Even for the True Martial Holy Lands with their deeply accumulated resources for several millions of years, while the True Martial World King had trained over a hundred descendants there hadn't even been an ordinary World King born from them. From this one could see just how difficult it was to produce a World King.

At this time, in a remote great world, within the outskirts of a great city, 10,000 martial artists were gathered together, all of them wearing similar-looking red clothes. Their cultivations were all at the Life Destruction realm.

"Look! There's been a great chance in Senior-apprentice Brother Lin's ranking!"

"Rank 890 on the Divine Seal Decree. He has surpassed Dragon Fang as first on his great world! He's finally reached first place! Awesome!"

These red-clothed martial artists were all disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. The Ancient Phoenix Clan was broadly distributed all over the Divine Realm and they were found on multiple great worlds.

Now, even in these remote branch palaces, as well as the many disciples that had gone out adventuring, all of them knew of Lin Ming.

They knew that an extraordinary genius had appeared from within the ranks of their Ancient Phoenix Clan!

As fellow disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, all of their hearts were filled with pride and joy.

First place on a great world, and even in the top 1000 rankings of the entire Divine Realm!

This achievement was enough to be recorded in the annals of their clan's history!

And in Crimson Light World, in a magnificent tower of gold and jade, a towering middle-aged man with a full head of crimson red hair was sitting grandly on a wooden seat. In front of him was a table with bronze cups and a pot of wine.

The crimson-haired man narrowed his eyes as he looked at the Divine Seal Decree. He muttered to himself, “This Lin Ming is the one that completed the Thousand Slaughter and cut down the wisp of divine sense that I had left behind in the Illusionary God Combat Array… I didn’t think that I would see him ranked in the top 1000 positions of the Divine Seal Decree.”

This man was the Crimson Light World’s Crimson Dragon Envoy – Crimson Strifecloud.

Crimson Strifecloud let out a deep and long sigh. The current him was no longer the insolent and brash youth that he was in the past, all those tens of thousands of years ago. This was because he was now well aware of how difficult every step was after becoming a Holy Lord. He had already been stuck behind the hurdle that prevented him from becoming a World King for 15,000 years by now. Without some heaven-defying lucky chance, there simply wasn’t any possibility for him to make another breakthrough in his life. And now, it seemed that this Lin Ming’s talent had already far surpassed his own.

“The Ancient Phoenix Clan has truly risen from the past… I thought that Lin Ming would become a character like Xiao Daoji or Huo Burning Heaven in the future, but now it seems that I underestimated him! Really, the waves come and the waves go; the new must replace the old.” Crimson Strifecloud shook his head, draining a cup of wine in front of him.

…………

At this time, within the Divine Dream World, Lin Ming felt as if his own soul had left his body. His entire body was floating on nothing without any weight at all. His soul form arrived in a world filled with endless color, with countless lines of infinite hues twisting and changing around him without end.

And between these lines was a floating purple crystal. This purple crystal was in the shape of a six-sided prism, and there were three fine lines sealed within it.

Of these three lines, each was a different color: blue, red, and purple. These thin lines constantly twisted, moving about just like living creatures.

“This purple crystal… is different from the one that the red-furred monster swallowed. That purple crystal only had a single thin line within it, but this one actually has three… if I’m right then that red-furred monster must have swallowed down similar crystals before and each of the living lines within those crystals must have gathered together to form this final purple crystal.

“Then, the truth is that the secret of the purple crystals lies within these thin lines!”

Lin Ming could faintly feel that these strange purple crystals were in fact only used as a carrier to seal in these fine lines. The lines were the key to the puzzle.

Lin Ming stared at these fine lines for some time. He didn’t know why, but as he looked at them he felt a faint sense of apprehension and dread creep over him.

“How can I perceive the secrets within these lines? Should I swallow them?”

Lin Ming thought out loud. The method the red-furred monster had used was to swallow them up.

After hesitating for a moment, Lin Ming finally came to a decision. He slowly reached out and guided these fine lines to his fingertips.

When the lines touched Lin Ming’s skin, they suddenly started moving like spirit snakes and drilled into his body.

Lin Ming felt an incomparably cold energy spread up through his arms and into his soul.

At that time, Lin Ming felt his spiritual sea shake and a fierce aching pain wrack his body. It felt like countless vipers were biting into his body. With a stuffy cough he nearly tumbled to the ground.

When this agonizing pain struck him, it felt as if something was going all-out in trying to drill into his brain. This feeling was similar to when Lin Ming first opened the Magic Cube and absorbed that ownerless soul fragment.

When Lin Ming had first opened the Magic Cube, the power of his soul and will had been tiny and weak; his past state was incomparable to how he was now. But correspondingly, this mysterious energy was tens of thousands of times more powerful than those ownerless soul fragments of the past!

Lin Ming staunchly defended his mind, wanting to use his willpower to resist the harrowing soul pain. However, as he was doing so he felt an immense strength impact into his soul form. Underneath the force of this terrifying strength he lost all control over his body.

In that instant, a dreadful icy cold spread all throughout Lin Ming's body, invading every inch of him. This feeling was just as if he had been turned back into a mortal and was tossed stark naked into an endless field of snow and ice. Lin Ming's body was soon covered in a thick layer of frost and ice.

The layer of ice became increasingly thick. With his soul frozen, Lin Ming was completely unable to move. He didn't even have the motor abilities to blink his eyes. After the ice gathered for some time, cracks began to appear in the layers of ice.

Ka ka ka!

The cracks continued to spread. Lin Ming's body also began to disintegrate with this cracking ice!

At this sudden change, even if Lin Ming's will was amazingly strong, a hint of panic and fear began to appear in his mind. In this colorful rainbow-hued world, the truth was that his body represented his soul. If his soul disintegrated, how could he still live?

Lin Ming's mind raced. He tried everything he could, but whether it was trying to summon his battle spirit or guarding his mind, everything he tried was useless!

As he saw cracks appear all throughout his soul form, Lin Ming could only pin his hopes on the strange Laws that governed the Divine Dream World. With the existence of these Laws, even if his soul disintegrated he still wouldn't die. It was the same principle as reforming his soul after crossing Life Destruction.

As his body was disintegrating, a soul-tearing pain swept through his entire body!

This sort of pain that came directly from the soul was at least 10 times, a hundred times more tortuous than one's mortal body being torn apart. Lin Ming watched with his own eyes as more and more cracks spread over his body. His soul form had already reached the limit of its endurance.

At the end, Lin Ming's body completely burst apart, turning into countless motes of soul lights that scattered in all directions.

The degree to which his soul had disintegrated was even more thorough than the last three stages of Life Destruction that Lin Ming had crossed.

Lin Ming felt his consciousness turn fuzzy and his thoughts become muddled. The power that fractured his soul into countless bits was far too strong, to a degree that he couldn't summon any resistance to it.

In a haze, Lin Ming could sense those three wisps of purple, red, and blue energy that had been sealed within the purple crystal slowly gather together before fusing into the floating soul lights.

Then, with these three wisps of energy as the core, the countless motes of soul lights began to converge as one; Lin Ming's soul was being slowly restored.

His body, his limbs, his face, everything reformed. His consciousness also gradually became clear again. A moment later, Lin Ming's soul had completely recovered and those three wisps of energy had disappeared.

"This is… what's going on here?" Lin Ming looked down and examined his reformed hands, his eyes filled with disbelief. "My soul force has become stronger, and it's actually become several times stronger!"

As Lin Ming felt the change in his soul force, he sucked in a breath of cold air.

Chapter 1222 – Perfect Gold Battle Spirit

Chapter 1222 – Perfect Gold Battle Spirit

…

…

…

“These three strange wisps of energy are actually able to shatter my soul and reform it using themselves as the center. This process is similar to the wonders of Ninefall soul reformation and with an entirely similar result!

“My soul force has become three times stronger. Whatever it is I absorbed, the effects are just too strong!”

Lin Ming found it hard to believe that such incomparably thin lines of energy were able to achieve such a heaven-defying effect.

As he sank his mind into his spiritual sea, he suddenly noticed some differences.

“This is…”

Lin Ming closed his eyes. Vague images, obscure and ancient languages, many things suddenly passed through his mind.

For a time, Lin Ming wasn’t able to understand just what these strange and mysterious images were. It was only when a crowd of creatures similar to the red-furred monster appeared in his mind that he realized these were the memories of that red-furred monster!

“After absorbing the dreamland energy left behind by the red-furred monster, I’ve actually obtained some of its memories? Is this because of the Magic Cube?”

Lin Ming recalled that the feeling of absorbing that dreamland energy was the same as swallowing an ownerless soul fragment from the Magic Cube for the first time when he was 15 years old.

But Lin Ming couldn't bother with figuring out why he could see these memories. He wanted to hastily search these memories for anything related to the Magic Cube. There were simply far too many secrets on the red-furred monster.

He focused his mind and sat down on the ground, trying to fully digest these memories. Perhaps because of the different natures of the monster's soul and his human soul, Lin Ming found it extremely difficult to fuse with these memories. Even for the strange writing, Lin Ming had a great deal of difficulty understanding any of it. He had to comb through the memories for corresponding hints in order to make out some meaning from the words.

These memories were incredibly incomplete. Only after searching for a long time did he find some clues.

"Elementary spirit source… those three wisps of soul energy I absorbed are actually wisps of elementary spirit source! If the elementary form is so powerful, what sort of degree would true spirit source be like? And just what is spirit source to begin with?"

Lin Ming was familiar with the term elementary. Grandmist energy also had a so-called elementary grandmist energy form.

"This spirit source… is it something similar to grandmist energy?"

Lin Ming couldn't help but think this. He continued searching through these memories for more information.

"Mmm… this is…" Lin Ming's mind shook. As he looked further and dug out more information, he was inexplicably shocked.

"Grandmist energy… genesis energy… spirit source!"

“Three types of source energy!”

Originally, Lin Ming thought that grandmist was the foundation of the universe and the earliest, most source existence. But now, he discovered that the source of the universe was comprised of not just grandmist energy but also two other kinds.

Grandmist energy – the source of matter.

Genesis energy – the source of energies.

Spirit source – the source of soul.

The universe had a soul. Not only did the universe have a soul, but planets and stars also had souls, called star souls.

As for the soul of the universe, if that were to be called a different name, then that would be… the Heavenly Dao!

The Heavenly Dao was omnipotent and omnipresent. When a martial artist cultivated the Laws, they would comprehend the Heavenly Dao and follow its rules to display their skills.

Cultivation methods, martial skills, every Concept, everything was through methods defined by the Heavenly Dao.

If one wanted to surpass the Heavenly Dao then one had to withstand the punishment of the Heavenly Dao.

This was also known as heavenly tribulation. By crossing heavenly tribulation, one could gain the right to surpass the Heavenly Dao and perhaps even form their own rules. If a human could achieve such a boundary then they were called an Empyrean!

Empyrean, a word that meant the heavens. The inherent meaning within this title was that the person this title was bestowed upon had a status on par with the Heavenly Dao.

Empyrean, a word that also meant respect. In total, to be an Empyrean meant to be respected just as much as the heavens!

This was the meaning of an Empyrean!

From the very start, Lin Ming never understood just what the Heavenly Dao was. He only knew that it was an extremely abstract existence. But at the same time, the Heavenly Dao seemed to have a thought and will of its own, punishing anyone that dared to violate its edicts.

And now, Lin Ming was finally aware. The Heavenly Dao – that was the soul of the universe!

And this so-called spirit source was present at the forming of the universe, a source energy that eventually became the Heavenly Dao.

The soul of the universe. Out of the three aspects of essence, energy, and divine, it could be called the 'divine'.

As the universe had a soul, at the same time it also had a body!

Every star, every moon, every planet, all the vast galaxies and boundless worlds, everything was the body of the universe!

Even humans, plants, vicious beasts, all lives that existed were also a part of the universe's body.

Grandmist energy formed all matter within the world, and was also the source of the universe's body.

Of essence, energy, and divine, the body of the universe could also be represented by 'essence'.

Finally… there was genesis energy.

The source of all energy, all origin energies, all true essence – all the various forms of energy were evolved from genesis energy.

Of essence, energy, and divine, this was the ‘energy’ of the universe.

Humans possessed essence, energy, and divine. Correspondingly, the universe also had its own essence, energy, and divine.

Grandmist energy corresponded with ‘essence’, genesis energy corresponded with ‘energy’, and spirit source corresponded with the ‘divine’.

There just happened to be three of these source energies. This was also what the myths meant by three creating all of myriad existence!

As Lin Ming understood these truths, he felt his spiritual sea suddenly shake. It was like a thin layer of membrane had been pierced through, in that that moment, many truths and Laws were immediately comprehended by him. In that instant Lin Ming could feel his own strength crazily rise and his soul force was again strengthening at a terrifying speed.

Lin Ming’s first four Concepts of Thunder and Fire completely fused together. And in his spiritual sea, his battle spirit also violently trembled. As it trembled, all of its power constantly gathered onto itself, becoming more and more solid and more and more sharp. With this sort of change, Lin Ming’s battle spirit had broken through gold large success to gold perfection.

Now he was only a single step away from a blue soul battle spirit.

And after achieving a blue soul battle spirit, that would be a completely different situation!

Lin Ming sank his thoughts into his body. He discovered that the countless Law fragments that had buried themselves into his flesh during his Ninefall had begun to slowly fuse into his flesh. As for his Thunder and Fire Laws, in that moment just now they had instantly reached perfection of the first four Concepts. Lin Ming could even faintly feel himself touching upon the fifth level Concepts.

In just a few breaths of time, Lin Ming had obtained an immeasurable advantage. Although he had yet to break through a cultivation boundary, his practical strength had substantially increased. This was mainly manifested in the comprehension and use of his Laws as well as his battle spirit.

If Lin Ming were to use his Heavenly Dao Judgment now, it would be even mightier than before.

Even if he were to use the most basic Penetrating Rainbow, Chasing Thunder, Chasing Sun, or Bury the Heavens, just a single strike would be able to easily kill a top 10 ranked core disciple of a Great World King Holy Land.

Lin Ming was overjoyed as he sensed the changes in his body. Unfortunately, his true mortal body wasn't in the Divine Dream World, otherwise he would have likely broken through to the middle Divine Sea.

However, now that his soul had made a breakthrough, his inner world was brimming with energy. If he left the divine dream space then he wouldn't need much effort to break into the middle Divine Sea realm. It could be called an inevitable event.

"I see… so the Magic Cube, Demon Bead, and Purple Card in truth represent spirit source, grandmist energy, and genesis energy. They are divine tools somehow condensed from the essence, energy, and divine of the universe."

Lin Ming became increasingly aware of the origin and use of the three divine tools.

"When Empyrean Primordius obtained the Demon Bead, that was also the universe's 'essence', thus he was able to dual cultivate in body and energy, reaching a boundary at which he could rip out his heart and it would still beat onwards for 100,000 years. This was likely thanks to the support of the Demon Bead. As for the grandmist energy he cultivated, that is the source of the universe’s ‘body’. No wonder Empyrean Primordius was such a remarkable person that could achieve such heights in the Grandmist Laws.”

Lin Ming unraveled more of the secrets of Empyrean Primordius and the Eternal Demon Abyss, and most of his guesses were likely true. It seemed that if he obtained the Demon Bead in the future, it would play a critical role in him cultivating the Grandmist Laws.

The Grandmist Laws were in truth the Laws of the universe’s ‘essence’. There might even be true grandmist energy within the Demon Bead.

“Empyrean Primordius cultivated dual body and energy, but Empyrean Divine Dream cultivates spirit source, thus she is likely a dual energy and soul cultivator. This is why she was able to form the Divine Dream World and also leave behind these elementary spirit sources within it. These elementary spirit sources were likely rewards for the trial challengers here, but there are probably far too few people that could hope to obtain them.”

Lin Ming thought out loud. With the red-furred monster’s titanic strength, the ordinary geniuses of a great world simply wouldn’t be able to kill it.

However, this was also well within reason. Elementary spirit source was an incomparably precious treasure. It was impossible for Empyrean Divine Dream to reward it too freely, thus she would only allow the most peak geniuses to obtain it.

Chapter 1223 – Tian Mingzi

Chapter 1223 – Tian Mingzi

…

…

…

Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds, Vast Universe World –

Although the 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm were grouped together, the truth was that they vastly differed in size and number of masters present.

Vast Universe World was one of the top 10 ranked great worlds. In terms of area, it was over 20 times larger than the Crimson Light World that the Ancient Phoenix Headquarters was located on. Compared to the True Martial World, it was still seven or eight times larger. The number of masters present was incomparable with the lower ranked great worlds.

The highest ranked great worlds all had a title, and that was a first-order world. Out of the 3000 great worlds, only 100 of them were considered first-order worlds.

A world like the True Martial World was a great world only inferior to first-order worlds. They were called second-order worlds and there were several hundred of them.

As for the Crimson Light World and Atlas World, they were considered third-order worlds. There was the greatest number of third-order worlds, over 2000 of them.

Not only were the first-order worlds larger but there were far more masters present on them. Moreover, many first-order worlds were occupied by Empyreans! This was one of the implicit assessment marks of a first-order world.

On the Divine Seal Decree, the highest ranked participants were mostly from these first-order worlds.

The most sacred land of the Vast Universe World was also where Empyrean Vast Universe's Holy Palace was located – the center of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace.

At this time, within a grand hall of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, there was a group of people gathered. These people all had an unfathomably deep cultivation. But at this time, within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, all of them were restraining their aura as much as possible, resembling nothing but ordinary people.

Within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, unless one was an Empyrean, all other characters, no matter how famous or honorable they were, had to humble themselves.

In this group of people, there was a tall and sturdy man wearing a spacious robe with a square face and round ears. He sat in the seat of honor and was lifting a cup of wine. He laughed as he said, "The several top ranked participants are really all Empyrean descendants. However, Grand Universe World King, your Grand Universe Holy Land is doing quite well. Since the Empyrean descendants aren't counted, one of the top ranked participants comes from your Grand Universe Holy Land."

The Grand Universe World King was the Great World King of Vast Universe World. However, because of the unstated taboo of having a name similar to Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, they certainly couldn't name themselves the Vast Universe Holy Lands. Thus, their name instead was the Grand Universe Holy Lands. Correspondingly, the Great World King of Vast Universe World was also called the Grand Universe World King.

"Haha, Lord Envoy, I truly cannot withstand such high praise. My Grand Universe Holy Lands only has a single person that has barely managed to reach rank 12 on the Divine Seal Decree. Even if the Empyrean descendants aren't considered, Bo'er is just chasing the tail of the top 10 rankings. All of my other disciples have met defeat!"

At a seat just to the side of the tall and sturdy man, a hearty-looking blue-clothed old man stroked his beard as he spoke in a modest tone. Even so, he couldn't conceal the smile in his words. It was clear that he was satisfied that one of the disciples from his Grand Universe Holy Lands was almost in the top 10 ranks.

"Virtuous Nephew Yuwen Bo has considerable hopes of entering the top 10 ranks of the First Martial Meeting. If he does, then he'll likely come to Vast Universe Heavenly Palace." The tall and sturdy man chuckled.

"Haha, I don't dare to hope for him to enter the top 10. But, if there really is such hope, then I humbly request that Lord Envoy looks after him at that time."

As the blue-clothed old man spoke to here, he respectfully cupped his hands across his chest.

This tall and sturdy robed man was Empyrean Vast Universe's chief disciple and the first lord envoy of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. His name was Vast Cosmos.

To be able to be named after Vast Universe Heavenly Palace and also be named Cosmos, one could infer his status.

The so-called chief disciple of Empyrean Vast Universe was not like Wu Finalcloud, who was merely a chief disciple of a single generation. Rather, Vast Cosmos was the disciple that had attained the highest achievements ever since the founding of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace.

In fact, Vast Cosmos had long since reached the boundary of a half-step Empyrean!

Although a half-step Empyrean was extremely far from being comparable with a true Empyrean, it was still a boundary vastly superior to a Great World King.

In addition, Vast Cosmos had the special distinction of being able to personally represent Empyrean Vast Universe. Vast Cosmos's status far surpassed that of a Great World King.

Even if it were the Great World King of a first-order world, they would still have to be respectful towards him.

And in this First Martial Meeting, the top 10 ranking disciples would obtain a special reward – to enter Vast Universe Heavenly Palace and also be able to receive the personal guidance of Empyrean Vast Universe's chief disciple.

This chief disciple was naturally Vast Cosmos.

Vast Cosmos laughed and said, "Grand Universe World King is too modest. Although it was said that the top 10 may enter Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, the true Empyrean descendants, even if they were in the top 10, definitely wouldn't take a liking to a humble and common teacher like myself, and they certainly wouldn't come to Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. At that time, if Nephew Yuwen can achieve a position near the top 10 he can certainly enter Vast Universe Heavenly Palace."

Hearing Vast Cosmos say this, the Grand Universe World King was overjoyed and repeatedly expressed his thanks. If one could enter Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, then even if they couldn't learn a transcendent divine might they could still learn the self-created martial arts of Empyrean Vast Universe. If those martial arts were placed in the Grand Universe Holy Lands, they would definitely be the highest level of martial arts.

"This First Martial Meeting is unprecedented in its magnificence and grandeur. It is far more marvelous and ambitious than the last several dozens of First Martial Meetings. This time, it could truly be said that there are countless talents gushing forth. Also, Tian Mingzi, your Skydark Holy Lands has a disciple that has reached rank 15 on the Divine Seal Decree. Is that little fellow your direct descendant? If I remember, his name was Nether Limitless, right?"

Vast Cosmos asked a black-clothed man who was sitting on another side of the hall.

This black-clothed man was handsome and elegant, looking no more than 20 years old. His arms were laid calmly on his knees. His palms were clear and fair, his 10 fingers were slender and beautiful, and his eyes had blood red pupils, making him seem a bit fiendish.

This man was Mo Eversnow's absolutely irreconcilable blood enemy and also the chief culprit that caused the destruction of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands – Tian Mingzi.

In the past when Tian Mingzi annihilated the Verdant Feather Holy Lands he had been a World King. Now, 50,000 years later, his cultivation had reached an even more terrifying boundary.

The black-clothed man faintly smiled and eloquently said, "I didn't expect Lord Envoy to remember Limitless's name. I must thank Lord Envoy for the wonderful praise."

"Haha, Tian Mingzi, there is no need to be so polite. Haven't you just passed 100,000 years in age? You became a World King only tens of thousands of years ago and now you are already a Great World King. Moreover, you preside over the first-order world of Demondawn Great World. In the future it wouldn't be strange if you were to become a half-step Empyrean. This sort of talent is truly deserving of envy."

Vast Cosmos bluntly said as he laughed.

As he spoke, this roused a round of discussion amongst everyone else in the hall.

"That's right, Skydark World King only established the Skydark Holy Lands 50,000 years ago and yet you have progress that one can truly be proud of. Old me can only be ashamed of my own inferiority. My Grand Universe Holy Lands have existence for over 7 million years and now you've nearly reached the same level!"

The Grand Universe World King smiled as he tossed out some more praise.

"That's right, Skydark World King is the youngest among us yet his strength has faintly risen above ours. I think he will surely become a half-step Empyrean in the future."

"Haha, even Tian Mingzi's direct descendant Nephew Nether Limitless is also extraordinary. I think there is an extremely high possibility that he will become a World King in the future!"

Of those sitting in this hall, the ones with the lowest status were ordinary World Kings and there were even many Great World Kings of second-order and first-order worlds. These were all characters with extremely lofty statuses, and yet all of them were praising Tian Mingzi. From this alone, one could see just how prominent his reputation was.

For the last 100,000 years, out of all those that had become Great World Kings, he was the youngest.

From the time he founded the Skydark Holy Lands, it had only taken him 50,000 years to develop it to such a giant scale. Moreover, rumors said that he had obtained the appreciation of Demondawn Great World's true overlord – Empyrean Demondawn. If such a character favored him then Tian Mingzi's future prospects could be imagined.

He even had a slight ray of hope of becoming an Empyrean in the future. Just what sort of concept was an Empyrean? In the entire Divine Realm, an Empyrean was born only every million years or so. This was a level of existence that a World King could never compare with.

To this sort of character, even if they couldn't form good relations with him, they at least shouldn't offend him.

Tian Mingzi smiled as he said, "Everyone, I can hardly accept all this praise. I am merely a junior in this prestigious gathering, and I still have a long road ahead of me in the future. I will have to ask all the seniors here to look after me. As for Limitless, he has only made a tiny bit of progress, nothing worthy of complimenting at all. Compared to Fairy Maiden Xiao Moxian from Demondawn Heavenly Palace, there simply isn't any comparison at all."

Tian Mingzi's great world was exactly Demondawn Great World. The Holy Land he established naturally couldn't have the name of Demondawn, thus he came up with his own name for it.

…….

As all of this was happening in Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming was still in the Divine Dream World, sifting through the memories of the red-furred monster. He had been doing this for the last three days.

The new information he discovered left him incomparably shocked.

The memories of the red-furred monster were filled with all sorts of strange and mystical images. As these images combined together, Lin Ming was able to extrapolate that the red-furred monster came from a different realm. This different realm was called Soul World by the red-furred monster.

In Soul World, all lives there were soul life forms!

As for the red-furred monster, it was also a soul life form. Its appearance within the Divine Dream World was its soul form.

Soul World was not one of the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds. Soul World was broad, boundless, nearly infinite in its area, far greater than any great world of the Divine Realm! It seemed as if it were a completely independent dimension outside of the Divine Realm!

"There is actually such a place in this universe? Is it a divergent mystic realm?"

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath, feeling greatly shocked. He originally thought that the Divine Realm was the entirety of the universe, but now it seemed as if this might not be true.

If Soul World was a divergent mystic realm, then the vastness of these divergent mystic realms far surpassed Lin Ming's imagination.

In the red-furred monster's memory, Lin Ming saw that Empyrean Divine Dream had once been to Soul World!

This matter was already from an extremely long time ago. At that time, Empyrean Divine Dream's cultivation had been very low.

The red-furred monster, as well as numerous other soul beasts from Soul World, had tried to attack Empyrean Divine Dream. However, she had ended up completely demolishing all of them.

But Empyrean Divine Dream did not kill them. Rather, she locked them all into the Divine Dream World, and the Divine Dream World had become their prison.

As Lin Ming learned all of this, he was lost in thought for some time. He guessed that Soul World was a divergent mystic realm of some sort, and when Empyrean Divine Dream's cultivation was extremely low in the past, she likely entered this divergent mystic realm to adventure and seek her own lucky chances. Finally, she had stumbled across some heaven-defying lucky chance and learned the secrets of Soul World. With this, she established the Divine Dream Law and completed her own transcendent divine might!

Chapter 1224 – The Final Result of the Preliminaries

Chapter 1224 – The Final Result of the Preliminaries

…

…

…

The red-furred monster had given Lin Ming a great deal of useful information.

Besides the existence of Soul World, Lin Ming also found some memories of cultivation methods from Soul World, in other words, soul system cultivation methods.

However, because the red-furred monster wasn’t a human, or perhaps because of the difference in Laws, Lin Ming was unable to directly train in these types of cultivation methods. Instead, he could only use his comprehension of these cultivation methods combined with his understandings of the Divine Dream Law to glean some useful things.

For several days, Lin Ming was closed up in this distant valley. Several small beast tides passed over the skies of Lin Ming’s hidden seclusion spot, but none of them were able to see past his concealing array formations.

After digesting the red-furred monster’s cultivation methods, Lin Ming still didn’t leave. Instead, he continued to perceive the Divine Dream Law and form the fifth divine dream mark.

There was still a great deal of divine dream energy left within his body.

Like this, time slowly passed, day after day. Within the Divine Dream World's 3000 great worlds, constant slaughtering and massacring was taking place without end.

Never ending waves of beast tides, all cities trampled over, and participants being eaten up as food by the countless nightmare beasts…

Participants not only fought nightmare beasts but they also had to fight each other. At every second of the day, countless people were being killed.

For the first two rounds, the participants would revive in the city. But now, they would randomly revive in some location in the wilds. If their luck was bad, they might even directly revive into the midst of a beast tide and immediately die again.

Thus, the price of death was extremely high!

There was no space for the weak to live. It was kill or be killed.

And these so-called weak participants were in truth extraordinary elites of ordinary Holy Lands. But there, they didn't even have the strength to resist their doom.

Chi!

A blue light cut through the skies, seeming to rip apart space. A black-clothed youth grasped the Dragon Fang Blade, his shoulders stained with blood.

Behind him, a 20 foot tall humanoid vicious beast toppled to the ground with a loud thud, its blood pooling all around it.

This vicious beast was a sovereign of Lightmend World's mutated nightmare beasts. Even the third ranked master of Lightmend World had died to this beast.

And now, this beast was instead slain by the black-clothed youth.

This black-clothed youth was Dragon Fang.

Before the second round of eliminations ended he had cut down a super mutated nightmare beast at the True Martial Great World and obtained a transmission token from its body. He discovered that with this transmission token, he was actually able to travel to other great worlds!

Without a doubt, all of the peak disciples of the various great worlds throughout the Divine Realm had obtained such a token, otherwise it was impossible for them to gather such a high number of merit points.

Only by constantly travelling between these 3000 great worlds and slaying the top existences of those worlds could one obtain so many merit points. This even included cutting down the top 100 ranked monstrous geniuses of the Divine Seal Decree.

Thus, when the third round of eliminations began, Dragon Fang had already left True Martial World to go to other great worlds, looking to battle other peak masters.

What Dragon Fang cared about was not merit points but a worthy opponent that he could fight to the death.

Battle – this was the reason for Dragon Fang's existence. The reason he joined the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting was to search for stronger opponents and raise his own strength.

After obtaining this transmission token, Dragon Fang's merit points grew at a ridiculous pace.

Just after the third round of eliminations began he had been briefly surpassed by Lin Ming. But afterwards, his merit points quickly returned to the number one position of the True Martial Great World and continued to climb further and further ahead.

Within a month, he had killed his way into the top 500 rankings of the Divine Seal Decree. Then the top 300, the top 200, all the way until the top 100!

When Dragon Fang entered the top 100 rankings, this caused the entire True Martial World to bubble over with excitement!

True Martial World was only a second-order world: it was far from being comparable to a first-order world. But even so, there was now someone from True Martial World that was able to enter the top 100 rankings. This was truly a legend!

The top 1000 rankings was a completely new boundary, but at the same time the top 100 rankings were also a new boundary.

After entering the top 1000 rankings, it was nearly assured that one would become a half-step World King.

But by entering the top 100 rankings, there was a ray of hope that one would become a true World King!

As long as one could meet another lucky chance in the Divine Transformation realm, becoming a World King wasn't a dream!

Dragon Fang's ranking was one of the focal points of the entire Divine Realm. Even Vast Universe Heavenly Palace's chief disciple, Vast Cosmos, had noticed Dragon Fang. This was because Dragon Fang did not list his own background. To be in the top 100 rankings of the Divine Seal Decree without a known origin, that was an extremely rare occurrence.

"Dragon Fang has already reached rank 97, a double digit ranking! How terrifying! When did such a peak genius appear from my True Martial Great World? Hurry up and investigate just where this Dragon Fang came from!"

Within the True Martial Holy Lands, the True Martial World King personally issued an order. He felt that Dragon Fang's true strength had not yet reached its limit!

Dragon Fang's appearance overshadowed all other geniuses of True Martial World, including even Lin Ming.

In fact, besides Lin Ming making a brief appearance in the top 1000 rankings of the Divine Seal Decree just when the third round of eliminations began, he hadn't done much at all. His ranking soon began to drop down.

During the third round of eliminations, the merit points of the nightmare beasts increased once more. After Lin Ming entered seclusion, his ranking naturally started to drop.

Dragon Fang and Wu Finalcloud eventually both surpassed him.

He had fallen back to being the fourth ranked participant of True Martial World, and his position also fell down to 8000-9000 on the Divine Seal Decree.

Although many people were well aware that Lin Ming's true strength was far beyond this, Lin Ming's best result was still a far cry from Dragon Fang's rank 97.

With Dragon Fang, Lin Ming's limelight naturally dimmed down a great deal.

And besides Dragon Fang, there were also some dazzling existences on the Divine Seal Decree.

One of which was Skydark Holy Lands' Nether Limitless.

This youth wore black clothes and his face was pallid. Just casually glancing at him, he appeared a bit weak and frail. But, the truth was that his strength was incomparably horrifying.

His weapon was a long and slender katana. It was four feet long and very thin.

In this half year, the number of participants and nightmare beasts that had died underneath this blade was countless.

Nether Limitless also had a token that allowed him to travel between great worlds. Many masters of various great worlds had died underneath his blade, becoming a stepping stone for his ascension!

"I have no idea how far I am from my true goal, the top 10..." Nether Limitless quietly wiped off blood from his katana. The participants in the Divine Dream World could only look up their own ranking within the great world they had registered on, and weren't able to look up the total ranking of the Divine Realm.

Nether Limitless put away his katana. Scattered all around him were corpses of dozens of participants. The corpses were neatly sliced apart several times. Underneath his blade, no one was able to keep their body intact.

These corpses soon vanished, turning into dreamland energy that was represented by merit points which then entered his body.

These had all been disciples of this great world's Great World King Holy Land. But now, all of them had been cut down by Nether Limitless.

"These fellows have far too few merit points."

Nether Limitless shook his head, stepping over the pools of blood on the ground to leave.

"I have to kill even stronger powerhouses. Only with their corpses can I pave the road to becoming a king. This First Martial Meeting is my greatest chance. I have to display the height of my potential to grab the attention of Empyrean Demondawn."

Before Nether Limitless joined the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, Tian Mingzi had warned him not to hold back anything in this First Martial Meeting. He had to put forth his full and complete effort and try to rise as high as he could so that Empyrean Demondawn might notice him. If he could grab the attention of Empyrean Demondawn, there was a chance that he would be allowed to enter Demondawn Heavenly Palace and inherit the transcendent divine might there.

This was Nether Limitless's greatest opportunity. He wanted to become a Great World King in the future. With the support of an Empyrean level influence, then even if he didn't have the guidance of an Empyrean, just the guidance of an Empyrean's disciple would make his road that much easier.

Nether Limitless's ranking on the Divine Seal Decree was still 18 as before. If the Empyrean descendants weren't considered in the rankings, he would be at rank 15.

As for the top master of the Divine Seal Decree, that was still Xiao Moxian. After eight months of time, her merit points had finally broken past a billion!

And behind her, the second ranked participant's merit points were only at 890 million.

Without a doubt, Xiao Moxian was the most dazzling existence of this Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, second to none!

There was no one able to approach her glory.

This situation continued all the way to the ninth month. The third and final round of eliminations for the First Martial Meeting preliminaries was rapidly approaching!

In the final several days, the slaughter became even wilder and crazier. The participants seemed to turn insane, rushing into the seas of nightmare beasts without fear of death.

The hunting between participants also became rabid and savage.

Everyone wished to pass these preliminaries and soar into the heavens!

If one could pass the preliminaries and was a genius from a Holy Land, their achievements would bring great glory and pride to their sect. Once they returned, they would receive generous rewards.

And if it were a wandering martial artist, there was no need to mention how they would benefit. Through these preliminaries they would enter into the eyes of the countless influences paying attention to the First Martial Meeting and they would all be fought over. They would be able to enjoy many resources and their cultivation roads would become smooth and easy!

However, no matter how they slaughtered, for the vast majority of them their efforts came to nothing. They were simply unable to change their fates. This was because in the last round of eliminations, the number of people being eliminated was far too terrifying.

Only one out of every 10,000 would make it!

That meant that in a great world, there would only be several thousand people remaining!

From a beginning of several trillion participants in a great world, they were constantly eliminated until only several thousand people were left over. In the preliminaries, only one out of every billion would pass. This was an elimination rate that sent one to the brink of despair.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

In the cities, in the wild, at the moment that the preliminaries ended, countless martial artists in the Divine Dream World exploded into motes of starlight that faded away.

In the various great worlds of the Divine Realm, there were some smaller cities that didn’t have a single passing participant; no one managed to qualify past the preliminaries! Only in the largest cities of these great worlds would one find a good number of martial artists that had passed.

For a first-order world like Vast Universe World, because of the pure number of participants, there were nearly 10,000 martial artists that had passed.

But as for third-order words like Atlas World and Crimson Light World, they only had 1000-2000 martial artists passing.

Even for peak Holy Lands like the Ancient Phoenix Clan and the Ancient Dragon Clan, they only had single digits of disciples that passed the preliminaries.

This was considered quite a good result. There were many lower level Holy Lands that had to bow their heads in shame.

Woosh!

After Yan Littlemoon passed the preliminaries, she was shot out from the Divine Dream World. Her final ranking was 96th of Crimson Light World. She had just managed to enter the top 100 rankings of a great world.

However, Yan Littlemoon was still dissatisfied with this ranking.

“Haha, Littlemoon, you’ve come out, good job!” Huo Violentstone walked up to receive her, his face full of smiles.

Yan Littlemoon froze for a moment. This Highest Elder was always very strict towards her and had very high requirements. How come his mood was so good today?

Chapter 1225 – Fated Encounter

Chapter 1225 – Fated Encounter

…

…

…

“Honorable Master.”

Yan Littlemoon bowed towards Huo Violentstone. During the period of time after Lin Ming left the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Yan Littlemoon had officially taken Huo Violentstone as her master.

Huo Violentstone guffawed. “Good! You’ve done a good job! Xiao Ping, well, he also did good.”

Xiao Ping was once the number one disciple of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, but now he was overshadowed by Yan Littlemoon. During the preliminaries, Xiao Ping had only achieved around rank 150 in his great world, a much worse result than Yan Littlemoon.

“I thank Highest Elder for the generous praise.”

Xiao Ping ruefully smiled, a strange taste in his heart. To be beaten by a young girl who was eight or nine years younger and also had a lower cultivation than him, to him that was a great loss of face.

“Alright, clean yourselves up and prepare to go to the semifinals. Our Ancient Phoenix Clan will have four disciples entering the semifinals this time, it’s truly a good harvest.”

“Four disciples?”

Yan Littlemoon and Xiao Ping were both startled. As fellow disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, they helped each other in the Divine Dream World and also had a general understanding of all the other disciples' merit points and were thus able to guess just who was capable of passing the preliminaries and who wasn't. This time, there should have only been three disciples that passed. Besides Yan Littlemoon and Xiao Ping there was also a core disciple that was ranked around 1800 of a great world. He just barely managed to pass.

Then just who was the fourth person?

Huo Violentstone already expected that Yan Littlemoon and Xiao Ping would ask this. He mysteriously said, "You two should also be able to guess who this fourth person is..."

"Is... is it Senior-apprentice Brother Lin Ming?" Yan Littlemoon suddenly recalled that several years ago, Lin Ming had left the Ancient Phoenix Clan to go out adventuring. Considering the time that passed so far, he should have managed to reach the early or middle Divine Sea realm by now. With Lin Ming's talent, he naturally wouldn't miss such a grand event!

"Yes, it's exactly Lin Ming!" Huo Violentstone said, happily stroking his beard. He couldn't conceal his wide grin.

Yan Littlemoon suddenly realized just why Huo Violentstone was in such a good mood. So the reason must have been because Lin Ming also joined the First Martial Meeting. With Lin Ming's talent, he naturally would bring honor to the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

As Yan Littlemoon thought of Lin Ming, a strange color washed over her face. Towards Lin Ming, she felt something that she couldn't yet explain.

"Are Senior-apprentice Brother Lin's results much better than ours?" Yan Littlemoon asked.

"Haha, Lin Ming gave us all a pleasant surprise. At his highest ranking, he managed to kill his way into the top 1000 rankings of the Divine Seal Decree and became first ranked in the True Martial Great World. But afterwards... that brat was just too lazy, far too lazy, and because of that his ranking fell. He finally ended as fourth place on the True Martial Great World, but he still managed to keep in the top 10,000 rankings of the Divine Realm.”

Even though Yan Littlemoon and Xiao Ping were already prepared, they still sucked in a cold breath upon hearing this. To become the first ranked martial artist of the True Martial Great World! And the True Martial Great World was also a second-order word. This result was simply too freakish.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, he really…” Yan Littlemoon sighed. For all these years, she didn’t dare to laze around for even half a minute. Moreover, she had displayed the power and potential of her bloodline to the limit. She had hoped that she would be able to slowly overtake Lin Ming’s footsteps, or even if she couldn’t she would still be able to see his back. But now, she realized that the difference between them was only becoming increasingly wide.

As for Xiao Ping, his mouth dropped open again and again, at a complete loss for words. He felt incomparable envy and jealousy simmering in his heart. He suspected that during their trip into the God Beast Mystic Realm, perhaps the supreme dragon bone had been stolen away by Lin Ming.

When the supreme dragon bone had suddenly vanished, no one knew just where Lin Ming was. He had thought that Lin Ming had died but in the end Lin Ming had also been transmitted out of the God Beast Mystic Realm. Because Lin Ming’s cultivation was just far too low at the time and his strength also wasn’t worth mentioning, Xiao Ping hadn’t been suspicious of him. But with things as they were now, Xiao Ping felt doubtful of his past judgment.

There was likely some heaven-defying secret on that boy’s body!

But now, even if he was 100% sure that Lin Ming had taken the supreme dragon bone, there wasn’t anything he could do about it. With Lin Ming’s current status, let alone taking back that supreme dragon bone, the Ancient Phoenix Clan might instead bestow several drops of phoenix blood essence to him!

That was phoenix blood essence! This was something that Xiao Ping yearned for in his every dream. For his entire life, without some massive lucky chance, there wasn't any way he would ever obtain even a single drop.

"Where will the semifinals be held? What are the rules?"

Yan Littlemoon asked Huo Violentstone. In the preliminaries, the elimination rate had reached a despairing percentage; only one out of every billion participants had managed to make it through. Even so, the original number of participating martial artists in this First Martial Meeting was far too great. Although the elimination rate was astoundingly high, there were still around 10 million martial artists throughout the entire Divine Realm that had made it through the preliminaries. It wouldn't be easy to screen out these people at all.

Huo Violentstone said, "The rules have already been passed out. Out of the 3000 great worlds, every 100 great worlds will be divided into a group and that group will compete in a small world. In every group of 100 great worlds, there are many participants from first-order worlds and second-order worlds. Every group will have over 300,000 participants, but only 300 people will make it out of every group in the semifinals."

"Only... 3... 300 people?" Xiao Ping's mouth fell open again. This elimination ratio was far too exaggerated. In 100 great worlds, in which many first-order and second-order worlds were included, only 300 people would make it through.

This meant that if one wished to make it through they would need to be one of the top three ranked masters of a great world. And, since their Crimson Light World was a third-order world, the top three ranked masters were a bit less worthy than the top three masters of other great worlds. In order to pass, one would need to be in the top two rankings or perhaps even the number one ranking!

In other words, no matter how hard he and Yan Littlemoon tried, it was impossible for them to pass the semifinals.

Their journey here would both end in the semifinals.

To bid farewell to the grand stage of the First Martial Meeting like this, Xiao Ping felt a bit melancholic. Although he knew that powerhouses existed all over the Divine Realm like clouds and he simply wasn't worthy of mentioning, Xiao Ping always held a faint hope close to his heart that he would be able to amaze the world with a magnificent feat. But now, he wouldn't even be able to pass the semifinals. Not just that, but he would fall far short.

Yan Littlemoon was also well aware that she wouldn't pass the semifinals and this was a completely hopeless wish. That meant that in the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan, only Lin Ming had a chance of passing.

She asked, "What is the competition method like?"

"No idea." Huo Violentstone responded, shaking his head. "Lin Ming is at the True Martial Great World. That great world isn't too far from ours. We should be able to run into him during the semifinals!"

"Is that so..." Yan Littlemoon took a deep breath, not sure of what she was feeling.

'Lin Ming, so many years have passed, what are you like now?'

....

At this time, the True Martial Great World, the martial field of the First Martial Meeting preliminaries –

Hu – !

Lin Ming's soul form was ejected from the Divine Dream World. Consciousness was restored to his body.

He clenched his fists and stood up. He could see that for 10 miles around him, there were fellow participants scattered all over who had passed the preliminaries just like him.

At the start of the First Martial Meeting when everyone first entered the Divine Dream World, this entire field had been occupied by martial artists. The surrounding area for miles had been tightly packed with participants. But now, the participants remaining were all scattered around loosely.

“Lin Ming.”

At the moment Lin Ming regained consciousness, a warm and familiar voice resounded in his mind. This voice came from Mo Eversnow.

“Miss Mo.”

With a thought, Lin Ming’s mind entered the Magic Cube space.

Here, he saw Mo Eversnow as well as Fishy.

Fishy was currently sleeping. This little girl’s appetite was becoming increasingly large, to a ridiculous rate. Lin Ming had left 8-9 million violet sun stones in the Magic Cube space but most of them had been eaten up by her already.

The current Lin Ming could be described as a broke man cleaned out of all wealth. After buying the Boundless World Pill, the leftover change had been nearly entirely eaten up by Fishy. Not just that, but he still owed a debt of 6 trillion!

As Lin Ming thought of this debt, he fell somewhat silent.

After Lin Ming entered the Magic Cube space, Fishy seemed to sense him and suddenly woke up. She rubbed her large and sleepy eyes. After seeing Lin Ming, she perked up and excitedly smiled.

“Big Brother Lin Ming!”

“Fishy.” Lin Ming held Fishy’s hands. Although her real age was unknown, she had the appearance of a little 11-12 year old girl. In Lin Ming’s eyes she was a cute little child.

For these nine months, Fishy had basically eaten and slept again and again. She had been living a fun and carefree life.

“We have to immediately go to the semifinals. It seems that the semifinals won’t be held in the Divine Dream World. We’ll have to ride a spirit ship to a designated location.”

Lin Ming said. Then, his thoughts suddenly stirred. “Oh, there’s a message.”

His consciousness left the Magic Cube space just as the flames of a sound transmitting talisman lit up right in front of him.

This was information sent from Immemorial Imperial City’s River Feather.

When Lin Ming had first bought the Boundless World Pill, River Feather had lent Lin Ming 100 billion violet stun stones even though he didn’t completely understand his situation. Although this didn’t seem like much, Lin Ming had indeed made good use of River Feather’s loan. Lin Ming held a very good impression towards him.

“Brother Lin, congratulations!”

River Feather used a sound transmitting talisman to determine Lin Ming’s position and then rushed to catch up. As he was shouting out from afar, his voice could be described as filled with joy and delight. Lin Ming’s results had far surpassed anything he had hoped for. Even the disciples of the True Martial Holy Lands were inferior to Lin Ming. River Feather realized that he had truly stumbled into a great person this time!

As long as he could continue solidifying his relationship with Lin Ming, his status in his family would rise straight up into the skies.

“Brother Lin, the name list of those competing in the semifinals has been passed out. I’ve already bought a jade slip. Come, take a look.”

As River Feather spoke, he offered up a jade slip.

Lin Ming took the jade slip and swept his sense through it. This jade slip listed 100 great worlds of the Divine Realm.

These Divine Realm great worlds came in varying sizes. The larger ones had over 10,000 participants and the smaller ones had 1000-2000 participants. There were over three million participants in total.

The name of the Crimson Light World caught Lin Ming's attention: this was where the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters were located.

Just as he was about to search for the Ancient Phoenix Clan for any familiar names, he suddenly felt a disturbance in his spiritual sea. Mo Eversnow's consciousness was intensely fluctuating.

"Miss Mo, is something wrong?"

Lin Ming was slightly stunned. In his mind, Mo Eversnow was someone that was always calm, neither happy nor angry. She rarely lost her composure.

Mo Eversnow took a deep breath. She closed her eyes, her long eyelashes faintly trembling. After some time, she opened her eyes once more, an icy cold light flashing within them.

She slowly said, enunciating every word,, "Tian Mingzi's descendant is inside!"

"Mm?"

Lin Ming was shocked.

Tian Mingzi!

This was a name that he had heard many times before. But today was his first time actually coming into contact with it!

Tian Mingzi's descendant. Who knew that Tian Mingzi's descendant would actually be in the semifinals too? This could truly be called a fated encounter.

Chapter 1226 – Lin Ming, Dragon Fang

Chapter 1226 – Lin Ming, Dragon Fang

…

…

…

Lin Ming quickly looked through the jade slip. He saw an influence that might have been founded by Tian Mingzi, the Skydark Holy Lands.

"Miss Mo is speaking about… the Skydark Holy Lands?"

"Yes! I am speaking of the Skydark Holy Lands. Tian Mingzi's original surname was Nether, and the influence he originally founded was called the Netherworld Holy Lands. Afterwards, he changed the name to the Skydark Holy Lands. Nether Limitless is Tian Mingzi's descendant!" Mo Eversnow coldly said.

Having her sect exterminated, having her mortal body destroyed, having her soul sent into a deep slumber for 50,000 years, having all of her remaining family members separated, having her countless followers killed off, this hatred, this animus, this grudge was absolutely irreconcilable; the two of them would never be able to live under the same heaven!

Mo Eversnow wished to tear Tian Mingzi to pieces with her own hands, char his bones to ashes, and torture his soul for eternity!

"I understand." Lin Ming looked at Nether Limitless's ranking. Divine Seal Decree ranked 18!

To be ranked 18th in the entire Divine Realm, this was truly an extremely exaggerated result!

"You must defeat him in these semifinals. If we cannot even defeat Tian Mingzi's descendant, then it will be stupid to continue discussing killing Tian Mingzi!"

Mo Eversnow said that if Tian Mingzi was young and joined the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, his results would be no worse than those of an Empyrean descendant.

"I will." Lin Ming nodded.

At this time, the skies above Lin Ming suddenly twisted, forming space ripples. Then, a massive spirit ship came zooming out of these space ripples, its massive body casting a shadow over the entire horizon.

This spirit ship was dozens of miles long and 10 miles wide. The entire spirit ship exuded powerful fluctuations of energy; it was clearly a spirit artifact.

The spirit ship steadily came to a stop. A middle-aged man in white clothes shot out from the spirit ship and floated high in the air.

This person was seven feet tall. As he stood in the air, faint halos of light formed behind him. His every action and movement seemed to spur fluctuations of Laws.

"This person is..."

Lin Ming looked up. All the participants who had passed the preliminaries also looked towards this person.

"Everyone!"

The white-clothed man began to speak, his voice loud and sonorous, easily spreading over a thousand miles. Everyone in this range was able to clearly hear him.

"I am the 76th disciple of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. Under the bidding of Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, I have come to pick you up and bring you to Gravemoon Star. That is also where the semifinals will be held. This journey will last for three months. All of you may prepare and then we shall leave."

With the white-clothed man's words, everyone was secretly shocked.

An Empyrean level influence had countless disciples. However, if there was a disciple that had their own ranking, then that could only be a direct disciple of an Empyrean.

An Empyrean could live for nearly a hundred million years, and thus they would take several hundred direct disciples over the years. On average, they would take in a disciple every few hundred thousand years.

Of these people, the most amazing of them would become half-step Empyreans and the others would become Great World Kings or ordinary World Kings.

Of course, there would occasionally be a peak monstrous genius that would become another Empyrean. In recorded history, there were records of Empyrean level influences that had two Empyreans. The power of these influences reached a terrifying degree!

And this white-clothed man in front of everyone was an ordinary World King powerhouse!

"A World King was actually sent to come pick us up?"

Lin Ming was a bit stunned. This was a tad too grandiose and luxurious. With 30 semifinal areas, that meant there were at least 30 World Kings that were sent out.

Mo Eversnow spoke up from within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, "This person is only a wisp of an incarnation. A top powerhouse can form myriad incarnations with a thought to handle multiple matters."

"I see..." Lin Ming was filled with praise. This white-clothed person's incarnation was far too lifelike – he couldn't even figure out how it was different from that person's true self.

Lin Ming didn't have matters he needed to finish. He directly flew onto the spirit ship.

Within the spirit ship there were many different dimensions. There were lush grasslands, vibrant forests, fields with spring flowers, and much more, everything filled with vitality.

Dozens of beautiful women were already waiting on the spirit ship. They were responsible for leading the many participants to their own rooms.

Every individual had their own roomy independent dimensional space that they could rest in.

As Lin Ming arrived at his resting area, he felt that this place was the perfect cave dwelling.

There was a special cultivation room, there was a martial field to practice on, there was an alchemy room, a refining room, and even a medicine garden filled with spirit herbs that were all free to use.

“Just the heaven and earth origin energy in this spirit ship is better than the best cultivation area of an ordinary Holy Land. It’s about the same as the best training rooms at Imperial City Auction House.”

Lin Ming said with wonder. This was only a spirit ship and its main use was to shuttle martial artists around. If this were Vast Universe Heavenly Palace instead, then the conditions that one could cultivate in would truly be unimaginable. This was the background of an Empyrean level influence.

Mo Eversnow said, “This spirit ship itself is a high-grade spirit artifact. It is equipped with array formations that are specialized to gather heaven and earth origin energy. The value of this entire spirit ship is similar to Carefree Island’s Carefree Palace.

A spirit ship used to pick up and shuttle martial artists was actually comparable to Carefree Palace, the spirit artifact that Carefree Island used to stabilize its own destiny. From this alone one could infer the difference between an Empyrean level influence and an eighth-grade sect.

“Young Hero Lin, if there is anything that you desire to eat then please select it on a jade slip and place it in the transmission array. We will immediately send you anything you wish.”

The young woman that guided Lin Ming respectfully said as she pointed to a table.

Lin Ming glanced over to see that there were 10 jade slips set on the table. He casually picked up a jade slip and looked through it. Recorded on this jade slip were several hundred different types of dishes and drinks, all of varying styles. With 10 jade slips, there were thousands upon thousands of different types of food.

These dishes and drinks were all cooked with various heavenly materials, spirit Lingzhi, and spirit herbs. They were all truly worthy of being called top class delicacies. Although the materials weren't as precious as dragon bones and phoenix marrow, it was still food that would cause geniuses of Holy Lands to feel pain in eating.

Even so, these were only ordinary meals provided to participants of the semifinals.

Lin Ming picked up an empty white jade slip and randomly selected some dishes and recorded them on it. Then, he placed it on the transmission array. Before even an incense stick of time had passed, a box reappeared, wrapped in jade petals. After opening it, the thick and fragrant smell of medicines and food mixed together wafted up to his nostrils.

"Smells delicious."

Lin Ming acclaimed. He bluntly took out the food and set it down. But, just as he was about to eat it, his thoughts suddenly stirred. He placed down his chopsticks and walked out of his own cave dwelling. He could see that standing just outside the entrance of the cave dwelling was a black-clothed youth.

This black-clothed youth was handsome and thin. His eyes were dark and bright and he had short hair, neatly trimmed, that hung down to his ears. His skin was amazingly pale and one could even make out the blue veins that crawled beneath his skin. His hands were covered with bandages and the bandages were even wet with blood. He wore a strangely-shaped ring on his hand.

By just standing there, this youth was like a treasure sword sheathed in its scabbard: sharp but restrained.

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. He instantly recalled a name. in the entire True Martial Great World, only this person should be able to give him such a deep feeling.

"Dragon Fang?"

"Lin Ming?"

The two young men nearly spoke out at the same time. Then, they both laughed at the same time, their eyes shining with a blazing fighting intent!

This was a feeling that only occurred when two peerless heroes of an era encountered each other. While they longed to defeat the other, they also clearly understood each other.

"It's a pity that I couldn't meet you during the preliminaries. I wanted to duel you but you didn't emerge often to hunt. I missed you the several times that you were out, and when the third round of eliminations began I had already left True Martial World!" Dragon Fang said.

"Same here. Your whereabouts were mysterious and unknown so I never managed to run into you."

The both of them were peak geniuses of their generation and they both also regarded the heat of battle as one of the most important aspects of their lives. To be rivals of the same age in the same era, only a battle between such top geniuses could cause one's blood to boil with excitement.

"Our battle will come sooner or later. I feel that you didn't display your true strength in the preliminaries. You should be an interesting opponent." Dragon Fang said as he looked into Lin Ming's eyes.

"That makes two of us."

Lin Ming faintly smiled. Facing Dragon Fang, he could clearly feel the great strength of this young man. This feeling did not come from reading the other person's cultivation, foundation, Laws, and judging their comprehensive strength. Rather, it was a feeling completely based on one's intuition. This was the intuition Lin Ming had developed from engaging in countless battles and defeating innumerable peak talents of his level.

"I will wait for you!"

"As will I!"

....

As Lin Ming rode the spirit ship to Gravemoon Star, in the Good Fortune Great World, the Unbroken Cult was preparing for their own journey.

The strongest disciple of the Unbroken Cult, Yu Youming, had finally ended his adventure in the First Martial meeting. His final result was far from being able to pass the preliminaries, thus he was eliminated.

At this time, people from the Unbroken Cult had boarded a spirit ship and were preparing to go to Gravemoon Star.

The Cult Master, who hadn't even come out to watch the First Martial Meeting, specifically left seclusion in the Unbroken Cult and planned to meet them midway.

This lineup was the grandest and most dignified gesture that the Unbroken Cult made to pay a visit to someone.

At this time, within the spirit ship, Yu Youming was looking at Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan, a strange look on his face. He found it impossible to believe that their husband had actually managed to reach the top 1000 rankings of the Divine Seal Decree and ranked first on the True Martial Great World.

It had to be known that Yu Youming's final ranking was less than 200,000 on the Good Fortune Great World. In the third round of eliminations he had been one of the weak martial artists that simply wasn't able to survive at all. He had been brutalized and killed by the nightmare beasts countless times.

Only by personally experiencing the third round of the First Martial Meeting preliminaries was he able to understand just how abnormal and monstrous the peak participants were. In Yu Youming's eyes, they weren't even human!

Once, he had been chased from heaven to hell by 20 some nightmare beasts. Any one of these nightmare beasts could have killed dozens of him. However, they weren't good in speed and thus he had been able to temporarily preserve his life.

And after he had been fleeing for a quarter hour, he ran into a martial artist. This martial artist only used a single sword strike to cut down all of those 20 some nightmare beasts.

Afterwards, Yu Youming learned that the martial artist who did this was ranked around 70 on the Good Fortune Great World.

A 70 some place ranking to the first place ranking, just what sort of disparity was that?

Yu Youming felt that the difference between him and Lin Ming had reached an unimaginable degree. He even doubted whether or not the husband of these two women was truly Lin Ming, who had once been ranked first on the True Martial Great World. Perhaps there might have been a mistake.

Chapter 1227 – Creating Techniques, Virtual Fire

Chapter 1227 – Creating Techniques, Virtual Fire

…

…

…

"You think that there's been a mistake?" The Great Elder asked Yu Youming.

Yu Youming had quietly voiced his suspicions to the Great Elder. He was afraid that Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan might have made a mistake.

Yu Youming said, "I am not questioning the character of those two junior-apprentice sisters. I know that in such an important matter, there is no way that they would lie about such things because there isn't an advantage for them in doing so. But, what I'm worried about is that there might be some people in the Ancient Phoenix Clan with a similar name to their husband. I checked before and know that there are 100 billion clansmen in the Ancient Phoenix Clan. In these 100 billion clansmen, it wouldn't be strange if there were several thousand people with the name Lin Ming…"

"This…" The Great Elder was a bit startled. Indeed, this was a possibility. When Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan had described their husband, the age they listed was just one or two years off from the Lin Ming described on the Divine Seal Decree. However, geniuses often entered time enchantments, causing their physical age to be higher than what it was in reality. This was a very common matter.

Afterwards, Lin Ming's ranking had dramatically risen, to a ridiculous point where he even became rank one of a great world. The Great Elder, along with everyone else, were still feeling the aftershocks of this event and thus he had forgotten to consider matters like what Yu Youming had just said.

The Great Elder said, "There is indeed a chance that there are people with similar names... but there is also a possibility that he is also the husband of those two girls. In their opinion, their husband was an extraordinary existence in the lower realms..."

Yu Youming said, "There isn't much meaning in being outstanding in the lower realms. I entered the First Martial Meeting myself so I understand just how terrifying those characters are that have the ability to pass the preliminaries. Moreover, it's a bit too exaggerated for their specific Lin Ming to obtain first rank on a great world. To be honest, even I can't believe that a martial artist from the lower realms, what we often refer to as savages, can achieve such heights. If we find this powerhouse called Lin Ming and finally discover that we have made a mistake then that would be far too embarrassing for all of us."

Yu Youming clearly stated his worries.

The Great Elder thought about it some more. If they were to randomly approach a top genius with two wives that had popped out of nowhere, and also say that they had travelled countless trillions of miles in space to reunite them, and they finally ended up being wrong... the Great Elder's complexion instantly turned ugly.

Wouldn't that be a speechless scene?

If that Lin Ming's temperament wasn't good or his true wife was present, then it would be difficult to withdraw.

"Moreover... most geniuses place their entire hearts in chasing after the peak of martial arts. Towards women, they might not feel much familial love. There are many martial artists that after reaching the Divine Realm, suddenly feel much paler relations to their families they left in the lower realms."

Yu Youming slowly said. This didn't mean that all martial artists were callous and indifferent. But, there were many extreme geniuses, even if they only ever managed to reach the Holy Lord boundary, that would live for hundreds of thousands or even a million years. During such a long period of time, their wives and families would have already died. In their long, long lives, these wives and families would only account for a tiny portion of their experiences. This was especially true for families they founded in the lower realms, especially after countless generations had passed by!

For instance, tens of thousands of years ago, the Sorcerer of the Southern Wilderness had wanted to enter a final life or death closed door seclusion. In order to resolve the worries and obsessions in his heart, he had gone back to the lower realms to see the Divine Kingdom he had founded. But upon his return, he discovered that the Divine Kingdom he founded so long ago had actually been destroyed! Thus, the Sorcerer of the Southern Wilderness had left behind the 72 Sorcerer Pagodas as a lucky chance for his future descendants, finishing all his karmic ties.

Yu Youming spoke out this second worry. The Great Elder frowned for a moment before saying, "No matter what it is, we have to go and verify the situation first. Moreover, go to those two ladies and tell them about your doubts so that they can be prepared. If there really was an accident, we don't want to provoke that powerhouse… well, whatever, I'll go and personally speak to them myself."

"Mm."

Yu Youming nodded.

The Great Elder immediately found Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan together. He tactfully shared his own speculations and worries.

Although he was speaking in a very respectful and roundabout tone, how could Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan not know what he was trying to say? The two young women instantly felt a drop in their own confidence.

They didn't worry that Lin Ming's feelings towards them would fade. Rather, they were worried that the 'Lin Ming' on the Divine Seal Decree wasn't actually their husband.

No matter how confident they were in him, to achieve first rank on a great world was simply far too exaggerated an achievement!

In these days they also gained some understandings of the various levels of influences throughout the Divine Realm.

In the past, Lin Ming had been received by a high-level figure from one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's palaces. But, the core forces of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were located at their headquarters. Randomly selecting any of the 72 branch palaces, each one was equal to a peak eighth-grade sect, similar to Carefree Island. Still, they were a little worse than a true Holy Land.

Even if Lin Ming was the most outstanding disciple of that branch palace, the gap was still far too great from becoming first rank of a great world.

Generally speaking, only the number one top talent of a Great World King Holy Land would be the first ranked participant of a great world.

The Great Elder comforted them, saying, "Miss Mu, Miss Qin, I'm not saying that I suspect you, I merely hope that you two are psychologically prepared for any event. But, two misses please feel relieved. Even if the situation is not what we thought it was, I will still fulfill my promise and lead you two to Gravemoon Star."

Although the hope wasn't too great, the Great Elder still had to form good relations with these two young women. This sort of graciousness was much more important than helping them after confirming Lin Ming's identity.

"I… I thank you Great Elder." Mu Qianyu reluctantly smiled, her voice filled with worry.

If the Lin Ming on the Divine Seal Decree wasn't their husband, then they would once again be far from being able to meet Lin Ming.

……………

Time quickly passed. One month… two months…

Lin Ming rode the spirit ship, constantly shuttling through the endless void.

Their destination was Gravemoon Star, a small world. This small world was one of the countless small words located between the boundless gaps that existed between the great worlds of the Divine Realm. The diameter of Gravemoon Star was only a billionth of the size of the True Martial Great World.

During this travel period, besides the time when Lin Ming saw Dragon Fang at the start, he had spent the rest of his time in training.

As he was enlightening himself from the elementary spirit source that he had swallowed in the Divine Dream Realm, he had obtained further comprehension of the Laws.

For the current Lin Ming, if he wanted to perceive the Laws, he didn’t need Law jade slips or the collected Concept jade slips of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Not even totem stones left behind by characters like Xiao Daoji or Huo Burning Heaven would be very useful to him.

This was because Lin Ming’s own body was the best totem stone.

His flesh, his blood, his organs, his bones, and even his soul were engraved with countless Law runes!

These Law runes were absorbed from the heavenly tribulation that he experienced as he was crossing his nine by nine Life Destruction.

The nine levels of heavenly tribulation, the nine by nine Life Destruction, that had been an extremely great lucky chance that not even an Empyrean descendant had the fortune of experiencing!

Because Lin Ming had the Magic Cube and also experienced so many other lucky chances, only then was he able to experience a nine by nine Life Destruction and nine levels of heavenly tribulation. He could be called the only one in the entire Divine Realm to do so!

With these Laws, as long as Lin Ming closed up in seclusion he would be able to slowly comprehend them. Moreover, because these Laws had fused into his body, he was able to comprehend them with twice the results and half the effort.

Not just that, but these Laws were naturally formed from the heaven and earth origin energy of the universe. They were completely flawless and without limitation. Everything he comprehended was the highest distilled essence of the Laws. Thus, the Laws he comprehended were far superior to what others comprehended from things like totem stones.

During Lin Ming's period in the divine dream space, because his soul force had greatly increased and he had also absorbed elementary spirit source, his speed of comprehending the Laws had reached an incomparably terrifying degree. In terms of perception only, Lin Ming could absolutely be listed amongst the highest standards of all geniuses in the Divine Realm!

"The Fire Laws… fifth level Concept… this is the fifth level Concept of the Fire Laws…"

Of the Concepts of the five elements, all of them shared the same fourth level Concept: the Concept of Manifestation. This was to have elemental origin energy possess its own spirituality. With this, the power of elemental origin energy would be enhanced by several times.

As for the fifth level Concept, that was a completely new boundary. The first four levels were considered the foundation, and the difficulty of the fifth level would rise by a dramatic amount. To comprehend a fifth level Concept was extremely difficult. And currently, Lin Ming had finally touched upon it.

Lin Ming's eyes suddenly flashed open. In his pure black pupils, a flame flashed. This was not an illusion, but true fire.

The fifth level Concept of the Fire Laws – Virtual Fire!

Fire. Fire included not just the burning flames of the real world, but also the flames of anger, blazing hatred, simmering jealousy, erupting rage, all of these fires were virtual fire.

Once virtual fire was burnt, it was extremely terrifying. If a martial artist used the Concept of Fire to burn their virtual fire and fuse it into true fire, then once those two types of fire fused together, the lethality would soar to yet another level.

If one was struck by the Concept of Virtual Fire, their mood would come under its influence. At this time, if their will became unstable and they lost their temper, the power of this virtual fire would only increase and they would find it almost impossible to withstand. In the end, this virtual fire would burn them out from within, even scorching their soul to ashes.

"A union of real and unreal, the boundary of virtual fire!"

Lin Ming thought out loud. The Phoenix Blood Spear jumped into his hands as if it had a soul of its own. In that instant, his body began to burn with flickering flames, and the color of these flames was purple.

This was fire that had burst out from his heart. There were even flames burning in his eyes.

Lin Ming thrust out his spear. All of the flames around his body converged onto the Phoenix Blood Spear. At that time, the entire Phoenix Blood Spear began to flow with a red and purple light.

Red was real life, purple was virtual fire!

With the abstract and reality joined together, this simple spear didn’t cause any spatial fluctuations nor did it cause violent explosions of origin energy. To the common eye it didn’t seem special at all. But, Lin Ming knew that if this spear were to pierce someone, then those with a weaker cultivation would be burnt by real flames from the outside even as virtual fire exploded from within them. The flames would echo from within and without, instantly burning all to ashes!

“A wonderful technique!”

Mo Eversnow’s voice resounded from within Lin Ming’s mind. During these days, Mo Eversnow had also been perceiving the Laws. She had been perceiving the incomplete bone shard that Lin Ming had bought from Immemorial Imperial City. During this time, she had comprehended many valuable things from it.

“This attack is cunning and difficult to guard against. If one is not careful it will be easy to suffer a loss.” Mo Eversnow said.

Lin Ming nodded. In these years, he had created a number of moves. But, as his boundary continued to rise, he began to use his old moves less and less because of their lack of power.

This move was something he created after comprehending the fifth level Concept of the Fire Laws. It symbolized a new beginning for him.

Lin Ming said, “Since this is an attack created from the Concept of Virtual Fire, let’s call it Virtual Disintegration.”

Chapter 1228 – Divine Seal Altar

Chapter 1228 – Divine Seal Altar

…

…

…

"We will soon arrive at Gravemoon Star. All participants, please tidy up your belongings and prepare to depart the spirit ship. 10 days from now, the semifinals will officially begin!"

After three months passed, an indifferent voice echoed throughout the entire spirit ship.

All the participants of the True Martial Great World had finally arrived at the location of the First Martial Meeting semifinals.

"We've finally arrived…"

Lin Ming stood atop the deck. From atop the vast and endless starry skies, he could make out the sky blue planet beneath him.

This planet was a hundred million miles in diameter and 70% of the surface was water.

This was one of Empyrean Vast Universe's private planets. Although the planet was vibrant and filled with life, there wasn't a single human present on it. It had always been in an idling state, but now it was being used as one of the 30 locations where the First Martial Meeting semifinals would be held.

The spirit ship passed through this last distance of space and descended directly onto Gravemoon Star.

"All participants, please depart the spirit ship. The semifinals will begin 10 days from now."

The unfeeling voice resounded out once more. As Lin Ming flew down from the spirit ship, he saw that there were dozens of spirit ships parked high in the skies.

The participants of over 100 great worlds were gathered at Gravemoon Star. Every great world had an envoy and a spirit ship that was specifically sent to pick up the participants.

Now, the many spirit ships were parked in the skies, gathered over each other like a mountain. Hundreds of thousands of disciples flew down from these spirit ships. From afar, they looked like a crowd of ants falling from the skies.

"300,000 people have gathered here. I wonder just how we'll compete." Lin Ming said to himself. They clearly weren't planning on using the Divine Dream World, and with so many people here, wanting everyone to compete on an equal playing field would be difficult.

"Mm... what's that?"

Lin Ming suddenly discovered that in front of the many spirit ships, there were vast and endless plains, flat and even. On these broad plains was a massive purple and gold divine altar that extended for hundreds of thousands or even millions of feet upwards! This divine altar was so great that it seemed to stretch to infinity, almost impossible to measure with the human eye. A giant spirit ship revolved around this divine altar. Although this could have been called a titanic spirit ship, in front of this divine altar, that massive spirit ship appeared the same as a tiny fly.

"That is far too big. Is that an altar of some sort?"

Lin Ming was shocked. If he compared this altar to a mountain, then this would be the grandest and largest mountain he had ever seen!

This divine altar had dozens of steps. Every step was 100,000 feet high and 100,000 feet wide. Each step seemed as if it were its own separate world.

And what bewildered Lin Ming the most was that on this divine altar, the heaven and earth origin energy was so thick that it turned into essence, gathering into countless bubbles that flowed into rivers of water. At the highest step of the altar, the streams of essence gathered more and more until they began falling down the steps like a waterfall!

These rivers and waterfalls were all formed of liquid heaven and earth origin energy; it was an inestimable amount. This heaven and earth origin energy did not come from Gravemoon Star, but was stored within the divine altar. If all of this heaven and earth origin energy was completely converted to true essence and then used to attack, then the striking power could be imagined!

In the skies, the many martial artists also discovered the magnificent and strange divine altar.

Some martial artists were curious and wished to fly over and take a better look. But, before they could even get close, an indescribably terrifying pressure enveloped them. These peerless geniuses were like insects that had their wings clipped. They desperately urged all of their energy to fly away, but their speed slowly decreased until they finally fell from the skies!

Luckily, these martial artists were all extremely strong and had thick shields of protective true essence, otherwise they would have been seriously wounded.

“What is going on here?”

“There’s a horrifying pressure coming from that divine altar!”

The countless proud heaven-gifted elites all looked up towards this magnificent purple gold divine altar.

This divine altar was made from some strange and unknown stone. This stone wasn’t smooth, rather, it was covered with lines and seemed extremely rough, as if every inch had been violently hewed from the ground. But upon further inspection, one could see that these lines weren't random at all. Each line seemed to contain its own secrets, just like the lines on the chaos stones!

Each step had different-looking lines. Carefully counting, from the bottom to the top this massive divine altar had a total of 33 steps!

A 33 step divine altar, symbolizing the 33 Layered Heavens!

Upon seeing this number, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He had crossed a 33 Layered Heavens Ninefall, and this divine altar also had 33 steps.

"I've heard in the myths that the heavens have 33 layers, but just what does the 33 Layered Heavens mean? In the Sky Spill Continent, it was said that there were six layers in heaven, and when I flew into the skies I indeed found six layers of heaven. The lowest level was the Calmstream Heavens, followed by the Primal Chaos Heavens. Every different level had different scenery, but, the Sky Spill Planet is merely a tiny insignificant planet amongst the billion words of the lower realms. Just what significance could the heavens there have in comparison to the 33 Layered Heavens of the Divine Realm? Is it some special place?"

Lin Ming had long been puzzled about this. There were even countless opinions concerning the 33 Layered Heavens, but there was no definitive viewpoint.

At this time, from within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, Mo Eversnow said, "Debates about the 33 Layered Heavens and just what it is have been around for a long time, and even I don't know exactly what it is. As for this divine altar in front of us, I feel that there is something a bit strange about it. The material used to refine this altar is one of the three wondrous stone types of the Divine Realm, timeless god stone! That is a material capable of forging a weapon worthy of the Heavenly Dao!"

"Mm? Timeless god stone?"

Lin Min was a bit startled upon learning this. At this time, a great voice spread throughout the entirety of Gravemoon Star.

“The semifinals of the First Martial Meeting will be upon the grand altar you see before you – the Divine Seal Altar! The Divine Seal Altar is a divine instrument refined by a top Empyrean in the distant ancient era! It is said that anyone who can step onto the precipice of this altar can become a god!”

Those that can climb to the top of this altar could become a god! Just what kind of words were those!? Out of the hundreds of thousands of participants, all who heard this were left staggering back in shock.

“But, that divine instrument has long been lost. The Divine Seal Altar you see in front of you was refined by my Honorable Master – Empyrean Vast Universe! With 100,000 years of time, he perceived the Heavenly Dao and thoroughly researched the ancient Divine Seal Altar to create his own Empyrean spirit treasure.

“This Empyrean spirit treasure uses a planet as its main materials. By slowly forming it over 10,000 years, it was made with timeless god stone as well as 33 types of precious heavenly materials before finally being created!”

The person who spoke was Empyrean Vast Universe’s 76th direct disciple. He was the World King powerhouse who had sent an incarnation to pick up Lin Ming and the others to bring them to Gravemoon Star!

But this time, the one on Gravemoon Star was not an incarnation but his true self!

The one personally presiding over the semifinals at Gravemoon Star was Empyrean Vast Universe’s 76th disciple!

For a World King powerhouse to personally preside over semifinals was a magnificent enough scene.

“To think that an entire planet was refined as the main form of an Empyrean spirit treasure, an Empyrean’s skill is truly awe-inspiring! However, from what I hear it seems that this Empyrean spirit treasure was based on the ancient Divine Seal Altar. In other words, this divine altar is a replica, but it is also an Empyrean level spirit treasure replica.

"A replica is already so amazing, then how formidable would the true Divine Seal Altar be? It's even said that whoever can reach the top of this altar can become a god! And… this name of Divine Seal… could the ancient Divine Seal Altar have been refined by Empyrean Divine Seal?"

Lin Ming theorized. His first thought was of Empyrean Divine Seal!

Empyrean Divine Seal was undoubtedly an incomparably powerful Empyrean. He was at least on the same rank as Empyrean Primordius, or, he might even surpass Empyrean Primordius!

This was because Lin Ming had journeyed underneath Immemorial Imperial City and encountered the ancient relic that still existed there – the Ancient Elysium Seal. From there, he learned that Empyrean Divine Seal was greatly related to the world calamity 3.6 billion years ago – he might have even been the heroic protagonist of that era!

"The true Divine Seal Altar is actually a divine instrument. The true Divine Seal Altar likely surpasses even an Empyrean level spirit treasure!"

When Lin Ming was in the Eternal Demon Abyss and walked through the Road of Emperor, he had encountered the Demon Emperor's remnant will. From his lips, Lin Ming learned that the reason Empyrean Primordius had created the Road of Emperor in the past was all in order to successfully refine a divine instrument.

However, in the end he had failed and had even perished. As for the many secrets of the Empyreans, the Demon Emperor didn't know about any of it.

From this, it could be seen that a divine instrument far surpassed an Empyrean level spirit treasure. Otherwise, with Empyrean Primordius's skill, it shouldn't have been so difficult to refine an Empyrean spirit treasure and still finally be defeated at the end.

As Lin Ming was thinking about this, the great booming voice of Empyrean Vast Universe's 76th disciple rang out once more. "I shall now announce the competition rules for the semifinals!"

Competition rules?

All of the participating martial artists were startled and immediately pricked up their ears, respectfully listening. This was something that directly related to their results in the First Martial Meeting and even their future achievements afterwards. They naturally had to listen well!

“I am the presiding moderator of the semifinals held here. I am the 76th disciple of Empyrean Vast Universe. As for the lot of you, you may refer to me as Xiao Daochild!”

“The semifinals shall be held atop the Divine Seal Altar. The Divine Seal Altar contains the pressure of an Empyrean. Even though the vast majority of that pressure has been restrained, it will still be supremely suppressive on martial artists. In order to contend with this pressure, not only will you need a deep cultivation but you will also need determination, will, talent, all of that will be indispensable! The Divine Seal Altar is a comprehensive test that will push you to the limit in every aspect. If you cannot withstand the pressure then let alone climbing the Divine Seal Altar, even standing tall upon it will be impossible.

“Moreover, with every step you advance on the Divine Seal Altar, you will need to defeat a powerful opponent! Array formations have already been prepared on the first 21 steps of the Divine Seal Altar. These array formations will produce simulation spirit bodies of varying strength. Only by defeating them will you be able to climb to the next step. If you lose, you lose all qualifications to advance!

“As for the last 12 steps, you will not fight spirit bodies but other participants. Only by defeating your opponent will you be able to advance to the next step. If you are defeated, you will be sent back down one step. You are allowed to be defeated five times. Once you are defeated for a sixth time, you will lose the qualification to advance!”

As Xiao Daochild spoke, all of the present martial artists were dumbfounded. They would have to withstand a tremendous pressure just standing on the Divine Seal Altar. If they were to fight in this situation, the consumption of energy in their bodies could be imagined!

The first 21 steps were much easier; one would only need to fight simulation spirit bodies formed by array formations. As for the last 12 steps, one would need to fight other geniuses. However, if a participant could reach that step, they would also be an extreme genius of their generation. That would be where the true battles took place!

As for a limit of being able to be defeated five times, that was a measure to prevent bad luck. If one was strong enough to pass but actually ran into a ridiculous powerhouse, they wouldn't be immediately eliminated before being able to take several more steps upwards.

"In this competition, you may not kill your opponent. After your opponent admits defeat, you are forbidden to attack them. Finally, I wish you all the best in reaching the summit, even though the hopes of that are extremely slim."

Xiao Daochild's last words aroused the rebellious fighting spirit within all the geniuses present. All of them were chosen amongst the chosen prides of heaven. If someone told them not to reach towards the top, they would climb even harder!

Chapter 1229 – Hard To Find Tickets

Chapter 1229 – Hard To Find Tickets

…

…

…

“Xiao Daochild actually thinks that none of us will be able to reach the top. It’s like he thinks we’re all worthless or something.”

A robed martial artist with a long sword over his shoulders said.

“Hehe, Senior Xiao Daochild naturally has phenomenal experience. If he thinks that none of us can reach him then perhaps the difficulty is… a bit too great.” Another participant said, disagreeing.

His words immediately drew the ire and glares of many others. “Don’t judge the rest of us with your own limited standards. Our Elder Senior-apprentice Brother is the number one ranked master of New Paradise World! Moreover, he is also the most amazing genius to appear in our New Paradise Holy Lands for the last million years! During the preliminaries, our Elder Senior-apprentice Brother kept most of his strength in reserve and yet easily obtained first place in a great world. Although Elder Senior-apprentice Brother killed countless individuals in the preliminaries, his sword was not stained with a single drop of blood. He is called Bloodless Sword, the Sword to New Paradise, what the hell would you understand?!”

Another martial artist said from behind. He was standing with others, all of them wearing the same robes. It was clear that they were all core disciples of the New Paradise Holy Lands, and also junior-apprentice brothers of this so called Bloodless Sword. There was a martial artist standing amongst them that particularly stood out; that was certainly Bloodless Sword. For a Great World King Holy Land, it wasn't strange if several hundred of their disciples passed the preliminaries.

"A million year genius of a Great World King Holy Land!"

The martial artists that were speaking before froze. If this wasn't an empty boast then that was truly amazing. "If it really is a million year genius, then he might have a chance of becoming an ordinary World King in the future!"

Several martial artists all had awe in their eyes as they looked at this Bloodless Sword.

"A chance of becoming an ordinary World King?" Bloodless Sword's eyebrows arched up. He chuckled, disdainfully saying, "A swallow will never understand the ambitions of a swan..."

At this time, within Gravemoon Star, of the hundreds of thousands of participants, there were countless young elites that were as equally confident as Bloodless Sword.

Out of so many people, there were many who had bad luck in the preliminaries and weren't able to obtain a transmission token allowing them to travel between great worlds. Because of that, their merit points were limited.

There were also some people that were deliberately hiding their strength. Now, they were all hyped up to fight. All of them wanted to rush up this Divine Seal Altar!

Geniuses were always proud and arrogant. From birth to adulthood, they had grown under the halo of being known as the top number one talent of a Great World King Holy Land. They were all confident in themselves; no one was willing to believe they were inferior to anyone else.

On a black mountain peak, a black-clothed martial artist stood high against the wind, a hundred miles away from the Divine Seal Altar. His skin was pale, his pupils blood red, and a ghostly aura exuded from his body. He was Tian Mingzi's descendant, Nether Limitless.

"No one can reach the top? How interesting! I am not afraid that I will find a challenge too difficult, only afraid that the difficulty will be too low! Grandfather, just you wait. Watch as I shock the universe, soar into the heavens and grab the attention of Empyrean Demondawn!"

Nether Limitless caressed the katana in his hands. He sat back down on that black mountain peak and quickly entered a meditative state. This was how an extreme martial arts talent was different from those ordinary characters: they would never waste any time and would always be cultivating to their limit.

At this time, Lin Ming was silent as he gazed on at the Divine Seal Altar. His thoughts suddenly stirred. He turned around to look through the countless crowds of people to see a black-clothed youth floating high in the skies – this person was Dragon Fang.

The two people stared at each other. Although they were separated by such a great distance, they could clearly sense the brilliant fighting intent in each other's eyes.

"If I can climb to the 32nd step, I wonder if there will be anyone capable of being my match…" Dragon Fang's voice spread through the dozens of miles into Lin Ming's ears.

"If there is no opponent, I wonder just what will happen… perhaps there might be some simulation spirit body that appears."

Lin Ming smiled. In order to climb up the Divine Seal Altar, one also had to withstand the pressure of an Empyrean.

But, the Empyrean pressure was only to test one's will, talent, and foundation. In order to see just how much potential a genius truly had, one had to test them in actual combat!

Thus, the rules of the semifinals required that not only did one need to withstand the pressure of the Divine Seal Altar, but in order to advance, they would also have to defeat an opponent every step of the way!

But like this, the further one went, the higher the chance became that one wouldn't be able to find an opponent. If no one was able to withstand the pressure to climb up to that step then there would be no one to fight.

10 days was a very short period of time to a martial artist. During these 10 days, nearly everyone returned to the spirit ship to close up and continue cultivating.

Lin Ming was no exception either.

The Divine Seal Altar was a long lasting war of attrition. One could not fly; they had to climb up those millions of feet with their own hands and legs, one step at a time!

This meant that this competition might continue for several days!

In such a battle, all participants were quietly saving their strength and adjusting themselves to their best condition.

And in these 10 days, there were actually countless people converging from all over the Divine Realm to watch this competition.

There were constantly spirit ships shuttling through space and flying towards Gravemoon Star.

And at the same time, on Vast Universe Heavenly Palace's side, Xiao Daoji gathered together a few core disciples who were skilled in the Earth Laws to form an incomparably massive arena around the Divine Seal Altar!

This arena towered into the heavens, passing through the clouds. The main form of the arena was completely made from roughly hewn mountains that hadn't been smoothed at all. There were not yet seats, only general positions.

Just a single mountain shelf was able to hold tens of thousands of people. Every single seating area was over a thousand miles wide and high, in total they were able to easily hold billions of people!

The admissions tickets were all sold by Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. Wanting to buy one was extremely difficult!

Several billions of tickets sounded like a great deal of tickets, but there were the participants of a hundred Divine Realm great worlds gathered here. Not just that, but there were countless medium worlds, small worlds, and hidden mystic realms. Even the great worlds were only able to be sold 10-20 million tickets.

There were tickets that had to be given to the various World King Holy Lands, the great martial arts families, the famous Elders of the martial world, and also again to the relatives and friends of the participants.

Thus, the number of tickets that were publicly sold in each great world came out to only 10 million or so, and third-order worlds would have several million.

And in a Divine Realm great world there were countless people – it was simply impossible to estimate. It had to be known that even in the First Martial Meeting, every great world had trillions of geniuses that participated!

There were countless times more people that wanted to watch the First Martial Meeting semifinals. Of these, the various great Holy Lands were the main buyers of these tickets. For instance, a colossus like the Ancient Dragon Clan had 800 branch palaces, and each palace had their own regime of high level figures. Moreover, the Ancient Dragon Clan Headquarters had even more masters and many more core disciples! If they wanted tickets, they would need at least several tens of thousands to ensure the high level figures could go. But, this was clearly impossible.

Thus, Vast Universe Heavenly Palace placed extremely strict requirements on purchasing a ticket. Not only did one need massive amounts of wealth, but one needed status or background, or a cultivation base at least at the Holy Lord realm.

There were many wealthy business owners that wished to buy a ticket but found it impossible.

Moreover, once an admission ticket was sold, one had to place a spirit mark on it that would make it unsellable. Thus, being able to obtain a ticket was a symbol of both status and power!

“Great Elder, we cannot purchase a ticket!”

An Unbroken Cult disciple hurriedly rushed back to report.

“I understand.”

The Great Elder took a deep breath, feeling helpless. Their Unbroken Cult couldn’t even be considered a top eighth-grade sect. In the Divine Realm there were countless eighth-grade influences, they were merely a drop in the ocean. The most splendid genius their sect had ever produced, Yu Youming, had only been able to barely rank in the top several hundred thousand ranks of a great world. In the past, it was already good if they could have a disciple that ranked in the millions.

If this was their own domain then they could rule over the land and people however they wished. But once they arrived at Gravemoon Star where countless great influences had converged, they couldn’t even buy an admission ticket.

If their sect had a Holy Lord realm powerhouse then they wouldn’t be in such a miserable state.

“It’s fine. I heard that the entire semifinals will be recorded on battle array discs that they will sell later to the public. I suppose we can only wait until that time. There’s no other way. Wanting to directly enter the spirit ship of the True Martial Great World is an even more impossible matter.”

As the Great Elder spoke, Mu Qianyu also felt a bit at a loss. It was simply impossible for them to see Lin Ming right now. The area of 100 miles around every great world spirit ship was a forbidden zone that no one was allowed to enter. Not even the high level figures of the participants’ various influences were an exception.

But this was just how things were. With hundreds of thousands of participants, there must be tens of millions of friends and relatives. If all of these people flew back and forth between the spirit ships then even the entrances would burst apart.

“That’s right, if we cannot see our husband then we can first look for the Ancient Phoenix Clan to directly confirm the matter. If the name on the Divine Seal Decree is truly our husband then it might be possible to obtain an admission ticket from the Ancient Phoenix Clan.”

Mu Qianyu gloomily sighed, her heart in chaos. The Ancient Phoenix Clan was a peak Holy Land and had many Holy Lord level powerhouses, so them obtaining tickets should be easy. Moreover, the Ancient Phoenix Clan had disciples participating in the semifinals, so they should be able to obtain a higher share of admission tickets.

As Mu Qianyu suggested this idea, the Great Elder’s eyes suddenly brightened. “Do you know someone from the Ancient Phoenix Clan?”

“This disciple only knows one. That is a high level Palace Elder who came to pick up our husband to bring him to the Divine Realm. She should also have come to watch the semifinals.”

Fairy Feng was an important figure of Phoenix Cry Palace and also the one who led Lin Ming to the Divine Realm and assisted in settling him into the Ancient Phoenix Clan. There was no reason that she shouldn’t be watching the competition.

“Mm. We should be able to see a high level figure from the Ancient Phoenix Clan.”

The Great Elder nodded. But beside him, Yu Youming seemed a bit worried. He wanted to say something but eventually shook his head. Since they came to this step, it was impossible to return. They had to see this through to the end.

....

“Mm? Someone wishes to see me?” Within the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s spirit ship, Fairy Feng was a bit startled as she obtained this message. “Who is it?”

“They’ve come in a party of four. The ones that wish to see Fairy Maiden are two women. They claim to have once met Fairy Maiden in a lower realms world called the Sky Spill Continent.”

“Sky Spill Continent… two women… could it be…” Fairy Feng’s thoughts stirred. “Quickly invite them in. Also, go to Highest Elder Huo Violentstone’s hall and have Elder Huo personally come to meet them!”

Fairy Feng had already guessed who these two women were. Since Lin Ming was likely to become a World King in the future, she naturally had to treat his lower realm wives to a grand and courteous reception!

“Yes!”

The messenger disciple excused himself and left. Before long, Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, Yu Youming, and the Unbroken Cult Great Elder entered the main hall of the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s spirit ship.

There were already three people waiting in this main hall: Huo Violentstone, Phoenix Cry Palace’s Palace Master, and Fairy Feng.

Chapter 1230 – The Semifinals Begin

Chapter 1230 – The Semifinals Begin

…

…

…

Of the three people from the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Huo Violentstone was a peak Holy Lord, Phoenix Cry Palace's Palace Master was an ordinary Holy Lord, and Fairy Feng was a half-step Holy Lord.

With these three people standing together, the Unbroken Cult Great Elder immediately felt a considerable pressure on him. He was merely a late Divine Lord; compared to these three people, he fell far, far short.

This was the background of a peak Holy Land.

Yu Youming was only feeling nervous. He was worried that there might have been a mistake and what would happen afterwards.

But before Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan were about to bow, Fairy Feng had already stepped forwards to welcome the two of them. "Two misses, please dispense with the formalities. Come, sit down."

Fairy Feng waved her hand and several chairs flew into the hall.

"Senior Fairy Feng, the reason we came here today is…" Before confirming what was truly happening, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan had been feeling constant unease.

“To see Lin Ming.” Fairy Feng faintly smiled. “Lin Ming is currently closed up in True Martial Great World’s spirit ship. Let alone you two, not even we can see him.”

Fairy Feng’s words were the same as confirming that the Lin Ming on the Divine Seal Decree was Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan’s husband!

Feeling this great weight lifted from their shoulders, the two young women felt as if they were about to burst into tears of joy. This wasn’t because Lin Ming had made such wonderful progress in the First Martial Meeting, but because they could finally see him. As long as the semifinals began, they could see him with their own eyes!

Thinking about their reunion, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan felt their noses burn.

As for Yu Youming and the Unbroken Cult Great Elder, both of them violently gulped, their mouths somewhat dry.

It really was their husband!

The two of them looked at each other and were able to see the shock in the other’s eyes. Joy and disbelief mixed together.

The Great Elder certainly had matters to rejoice about. Even though there had been some doubts in his heart, he had consistently treated them two women courteously and with respect. He had indeed made the right bet this time!

“Hahahaha!” At this time, Huo Violentstone began to heartily laugh. He looked at the two women, tracing his beard as he said, “Wonderful, wonderful! For you two to come from the lower realms, you must have experienced untold hardships and trials. Really, what a shining example of the love between husbands and wives. I see that you two cultivate the Fire Laws, and you also seem to have a light Phoenix Clan bloodline within you. How about you two stay at my Ancient Phoenix Clan? I will find some experts to guide you.”

Huo Violentstone's voice was so loud and booming that it caused one's ears to tingle. Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan were startled for a moment before turning towards the Unbroken Cult Great Elder.

The Unbroken Cult Great Elder was stunned for a moment before rapidly saying with a true essence sound transmission, "Two misses can feel free to stay at the Ancient Phoenix Clan. There is no need to worry about us."

What a joke, for the wives of a top 1000 ranked genius of the Divine Realm, how could a tiny temple like their Unbroken Cult possibly dare to keep them?

"Thank you Senior!" The two women bowed towards Huo Violentstone.

Huo Violentstone generously received them. This was nearly equivalent to the ceremony of taking them on as disciples. In the future, he could also direct the cultivation of the two women.

"There is still another day until the semifinals begin. Because of Lin Ming, our Ancient Phoenix Clan has been given an extra 500 admission tickets. You two should also come and watch so you can see with your own eyes your husband's achievements."

Huo Violentstone casually said. With 500 extra admission tickets, it was easy to spare a few.

"Thank you Senior." The two women happily thanked once more.

As Yu Youming listened from the side, he visibly gulped. He also wanted an admission ticket to watch the semifinals. To be able to watch a competition between the greatest geniuses of the Divine Realm would help broaden his horizons. It would be an inestimable advantage to his future achievements!

Huo Violentstone glanced over at Yu Youming and the Unbroken Cult Great Elder. From Mu Qianyu's questioning look just then, he was able to determine that they had some relationship with Mu Qianyu. It was likely that she and Qin Xingxuan were able to reach Gravemoon Star because of their help.

Thus, he smiled and said, “You two, if you would like to watch then come along too!”

As the two people heard this they were overjoyed. They quickly expressed their thanks.

This was a truly generous gift. By being able to directly watch the competition, they would also been able to faintly feel the pressure of the Divine Seal Altar and also see the Law lines engraved onto every step. To them, this was a truly great lucky chance!

....

The tenth day quickly approached. The semifinals would soon begin!

On the ninth day, seats were finally carved into the massive arena. Because martial artists could fly, they directly leapt into their own seats. Otherwise, with billions of people arriving, it would be impossible for them to all fit through the gates in a reasonable time.

Like this, an entire day was used to fully arrange and prepare the massive arena.

Billions of people gathered together, what sort of scene was that? Looking all around, every area of the arena was bustling with vibrant crowds. From above, the endless sea of people wrapped all around without end.

In the skies, the masses of people flying around were like a swarm of locusts!

Moreover, those that could sit here were all honored and revered characters. These were all people who ruled over their own region and were able to control the lives of millions in their palms. Even so, all of these people were nothing more than ordinary members of an audience.

“There are so many people.”

The Unbroken Cult Great Elder sighed. It wasn't easy for him and Yu Youming to sit here. Everyone here far surpassed them in status.

And, with Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan's luck, they managed to grab some good seats. From this area, they could simultaneously see two sides of the Divine Seal Altar.

The Divine Seal Altar was shaped like a square. There were only two sides that the participants would climb up: the east and the south. This was also the area where the audience was gathered, and there were some places in the arena where the audience members were only able to see one side.

At this time, from the 100 spirit ships in the skies, 300,000 geniuses flew down!

Their appearance indicated that the semifinals had finally begun!

"Look! The participants have come out!"

"There are so many of them! Any of them is a peak genius!"

"Those are the extraordinary elites of 100 great worlds! This semifinal will be incomparably grand!"

As the numerous geniuses flew down from the sky, the entire arena was filled with terrifyingly raucous cheers. With so many people cheering together, the sound was deafening. Even the clouds were washed away!

"Everyone, all honored guests that have come from the Divine Realm's 100 great worlds as well as the countless small and medium worlds!"

At this time, from the southeast corner of the Divine Seal Altar, a pair of beautiful women appeared. Their voices passed through a special array formation and into the entire audience.

Everyone looked over. They discovered that these two beauties were actually twins. These sisters were disciples of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace.

“The semifinals will immediately begin. On the Divine Seal Altar, not even Holy Lords are capable of flying. Thus, if one wishes to ascend the Divine Seal Altar, they have no choice but to climb up themselves!

“If one defeats an opponent they are able to ascend a step. If they lose, they must drop down a step. If they are unable to continue or are defeated five times then they will be swept out from the Divine Seal Altar. The final results will be determined by who has climbed to the highest steps. As for those that have made the same level of progress, they will be evaluated by the number of defeats they experienced. In the end, only 300 participants will pass!

“In the competition, no one is allowed to kill others. Once two people fight, no one is allowed to interfere, otherwise they will lose all qualifications to continue!”

300,000 geniuses landed onto the base of the Divine Seal Altar. The Divine Seal Altar was 3.3 million feet high. Every step was equal to a 100,000 foot high cliff. Not just that, but there was an Empyrean pressure that covered the entirety of the Divine Seal Altar. If one wished to climb up, it was easier said than done!

“It’s so high!”

Lin Ming looked up into the skies; he couldn’t even see the top of this 100,000 foot high cliff.

Atop the first step of the titanic Divine Seal Altar, pure heaven and earth origin energy condensed into torrents that poured down in a gushing waterfall. When this waterfall fell down to the last level of the Divine Seal Altar it was reabsorbed and circulated again and again in perpetuity.

“We haven’t even begun to climb up but the pressure on us already isn’t weak. Even a first class character like Phoenix Cry Palace’s Huo Yanguang wouldn’t be able to withstand this. But these people currently all around me can do so with ease. Those that are able to pass the preliminaries are indeed extreme characters.”

Lin Ming swept his eyes over everyone, taking in the image of 300,000 geniuses gathered together. These people were the completely gathered monstrous geniuses of 100 great worlds!

"Brother Lin… I see Brother Lin!"

With their sense, a martial artist was able to sweep over several hundred thousand people in a short period of time. Moreover, Qin Xingxuan was incomparably familiar with Lin Ming. The first time she saw a young man dressed in blue, she only needed to see his strong back looking up at the majestic Divine Seal Altar to tell that it was him.

Mu Qianyu tightly gripped Qin Xingxuan's hand, her nose burning. After so many hardships and trials, she was finally able to see Lin Ming, so how could she not be wanting to sob with joy? She took several deep breaths, restoring her composure before she said, "Don't shout to him. Let him compete in peace. We must not divert his attention."

"I know…" Qin Xingxuan giddily whispered.

All the participants lined up in rows as they stood underneath the Divine Seal Altar. At this time, the voices of the twins from Vast Universe Heavenly Palace sounded out –

"Everyone! The competition starts now!"

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Just as the voices of the two women faded, the numerous geniuses leapt upwards, diving into those waterfalls of heaven and earth origin energy like fish through the dragon gate!

The Divine Seal Altar suppressed flying, but jumping was possible. Some participants were able to summon true essence and jump up even under the tremendous pressure enveloping them. Every jump was at least a thousand feet high!

Hundreds of thousands of geniuses passed in and out of the waterfall. Their hands grasped the rough stone walls of the Divine Seal Altar, summoning their strength and leaping upwards again and again!

Their speed was extremely fast, as if they were flying upwards without pause!

“Even under this Empyrean pressure they can still have such a magnificent performance. The young are truly worthy of praise!” Countless powerhouses from the arena seats all shouted out in acclaim.

“Yes, but there are some differences. Some people will soon reach the first step but others have only crawled 30% of the way.”

Of the hundreds of thousands of geniuses, there were several people that were soon about to reach the first step of the Divine Seal Altar. Among these people was Nether Limitless!

Within Nether Limitless’s blood red pupils, a blazing light flashed.

And behind him, just a thousand some feet underneath, was a martial artist with a long sword strapped over his back. This was the top disciple of the New Paradise Holy Lands – Bloodless Sword.

“Heh, you’re quite fast, but speed isn’t everything here. In the end, this struggle on the Divine Seal Altar will look at your strength. First place is already mine!”

Chapter 1231 – What is Pride

Chapter 1231 – What is Pride

…

…

…

As several hundred thousand martial artists climbed up the steep cliffs of the Divine Seal Altar, this sight was incomparably grand.

Lin Ming’s speed was not fast, but every step he took was steady. In fact, Lin Ming was not deliberately being slow. Rather, as he climbed the Divine Seal Altar, the aura around him, the pressure, the touch and feel of the stones underneath his hands, the flow of heaven and earth origin energy, everything around him gathered together bringing an indescribable feeling.

“The stone cliffs of the Divine Seal Altar are rough, imposing, and ancient. Gripping the traces on this stone is like holding onto the endless flow of time.” Lin Ming was able to inexplicably sense this in his heart. As he climbed the Divine Seal Altar, he discovered that there were many strange Concepts engraved into the step. While he wanted to stop and slowly enlighten himself on them, there simply wasn’t time.

These semifinals would continue for only several days. Even if Lin Ming wanted to study the Divine Seal Altar, he wouldn’t be able to learn much in this short period of time.

“The Divine Seal Altar. In the legends it is called an ancient divine instrument, an existence that even surpasses an Empyrean spirit treasure. If one can reach the precipice they can reach divinity, thus it is called the Divine Seal Altar!

“That shouldn’t be empty talk. Although the Divine Seal Altar that Empyrean Vast Universe made is only a replica, it still contains the Concept of the ancient Divine Seal Altar. If I could enlighten myself on this, then that would be of great benefit to me.

“Someday, if I am fated to encounter the true ancient Divine Seal Altar and am able to climb to the peak of those 33 steps, I wonder just what sort of scene that would be!”

Lin Ming sighed with emotion. He continued his steady pace upwards, slowly feeling the Concepts contained within the Divine Seal Altar.

Nether Limitless, Bloodless Sword, and many others were rushing upwards as fast as they could in order to be the first. And at this time, beneath them, Lin Ming was slowly making his way up as if he were savoring a cup of fresh tea. He was slowly enlightening himself on everything around him. Even if he couldn’t comprehend anything, this was still broadening his state of mind.

Lin Ming looked up. A small number of people were already about to reach the first step. As for Dragon Fang, he had started at the other side of the Divine Seal Altar so he didn’t seem him right now.

At this time, out of the several hundred thousand martial artists, someone finally leapt onto the first step of the Divine Seal Altar!

“Someone has mounted the first step! The first person to mount the first step of the Divine Seal Altar… comes from the Demondawn Great World, Nether Limitless!”

At the base of the Divine Seal Altar, the twin girls shouted out. Their voices were amplified through an array formation and spread through the entire audience.

“Nether Limitless!”

“Nether Limitless!’

“Nether Limitless!”

"Senior-apprentice Brother Nether, you can do it!"

As the twins called out Nether Limitless's name, a group of young people stood up and crazily cheered out loud!

Without a doubt, they came from the same Holy Land as Nether Limitless. They were core disciples from the Skydark Holy Lands.

"Nether Limitless's results in the preliminaries reached rank 18 on the Divine Seal Decree. He came second in the Demondawn Great World, second only to the top master of the Demondawn Great World Empyrean Demondawn's descendant, Xiao Moxian!"

As the twin girls shouted out Xiao Moxian's name, a great number of people in the audience cried out in alarm.

This name cracked through everyone's ears like a bolt of thunder! From the very start of the preliminaries and even when the Divine Seal Decree had first appeared, Xiao Moxian had been ranked first. There had never been a time when anyone had surpassed her and she had led everyone by a considerable amount!

Xiao Moxian did not need to participate in the semifinals; she was able to directly pass into the finals. In fact, she didn't even need to participate in the preliminaries. The only reason she had joined was to show off, and now that she had enough limelight, she didn't have any interest in riding a spirit ship for three months and travelling trillions of miles to a small backwater planet like Gravemoon star. Thus, Xiao Moxian was absent from the semifinals on Gravemoon Star.

None of the participants had any objections to the Empyrean descendants being directly passed into the finals. This was simply a natural matter.

"Who is Nether Limitless? I didn't expect someone so fierce to appear."

"You idiot, he is the number one disciple of the Skydark Holy Lands. In the future there is a great chance that he will become an ordinary World King or even a Great World King!"

There were some martial artists that had joined the First Martial Meeting but had been eliminated at the end of the preliminaries, thus they weren't able to see the Divine Seal Decree and also didn't know of Nether Limitless's fame. If they were participants all the way until the end of the preliminaries, they naturally wouldn't know of the Divine Seal Decree ranked 18th master Nether Limitless.

Many Elders of the Skydark Holy Lands smiled as they heard these discussions. They were very satisfied in this junior disciple Limitless.

Woosh!

A simulation spirit body appeared in front of Nether Limitless: this was his opponent for this step.

Just as the spirit body appeared, Nether Limitless moved.

Draw the sword! Attack!

With this single action, many people only saw Nether Limitless's body move a bit. They didn't even see the sword point before the blade had returned to its sheath!

The spirit body's neck bent and its entire body burst apart.

"Instant kill! Nether Limitless can now ascend to the second step!"

The twin girls shouted, their voices clearly spreading through the entire audience.

"Amazing!"

"Is it over like that? That's too fierce!"

Many of the core disciples in the audience widened their eyes. Many of the famous Elders were also startled. They didn't think that this semifinal was too easy, only that Nether Limitless was too abnormal.

"Haha, Limitless really hasn't disappointed, he's actually first so far."

In Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, Vast Cosmos said with a smile.

Vast Cosmos, as well as many other Great World Kings, were still sitting in Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. From here they were able to simultaneously see the scene of the arenas in all 30 semifinals.

At their level, what they cared about was not a single area but the performance of all the geniuses in the entire Divine Realm.

With 30 semifinal arenas, every arena used a different method of competing. But generally speaking, every method used was as fair as possible. There would not be any geniuses that were eliminated early.

Tian Mingzi smiled. He humbly said, "He's only temporarily in first place. This child Limitless really likes to show off. There should be a good number of people that have yet to reveal their true strength."

"Haha, Brother Skydark is too modest. Who could possibly be Limitless's opponent?"

"That's right, in the Gravemoon Star competition area, the highest ranking person is Limitless at rank 18. He is far ahead of everyone else there."

Many World Kings praised in abundance.

Tian Mingzi smiled, not saying much in response.

He looked at Nether Limitless on the Divine Seal Altar and silently said, "The semifinals are far from being able to capture the attention of Empyrean Demondawn. Only the finals, where you will compete with Empyrean descendants, will be a grand enough stage!"

After Nether Limitless reached the first step, Bloodless Sword and the others also reached the first level. Their battles were clean and passed in just the blink of an eye; they were able to instantly kill the spirit bodies! This was a killing speed equal to Nether Limitless!

When the opponent was too weak, it was impossible to use them to separate the differences between top masters.

“Bloodless Sword!”

“Bloodless Sword!”

When Bloodless Sword instantly killed the spirit body and started to climb the Divine Seal Altar a second time, all of the disciples from New Paradise Holy Land began crying out, cheering as loud as they could. There were even many young female disciples that clearly worshipped Bloodless Sword; their cheers were especially loud.

“He has a lot of supporters.”

“It’s crazy enough. But this Bloodless Sword is indeed terrifying.”

Many martial artists were discussing amongst themselves in the audience. Yu Youming sat between these people, his fists tightly gripped together. From any of those several hundred thousand geniuses on the Divine Seal Altar, any single one of them was able to give him a great mental impact.

Today, he had truly broadened his horizons. He could also deeply feel just how ridiculously terrifying these geniuses were!

Luckily, he was able to attend this semifinal and enter this arena. Otherwise, he would never have had the chance to experience these monstrous geniuses that soared into the skies. He would have been nothing but a frog in a well!

As the first and second group of people began climbing to the second step of the Divine Seal Altar, the third group of people, in which Lin Ming was also included, finally mounted the first step.

“Lin Ming has fallen a bit behind…”

Fairy Feng said out loud. In truth, the third group was still considered amongst the upper middle reaches of geniuses. However, Fairy Feng believed that Lin Ming should be able to do better than this. After all, he had once reached the top 1000 rankings of the Divine Seal Decree.

Of the 30 semifinal martial fields, every martial field would have between 300-400 people passing. Altogether, there would be around 10,000 people entering the finals. According to the previous top rankings, Lin Ming should definitely be able to pass the semifinals.

Beside Fairy Feng, Huo Violentstone traced his beard and laughed, “Don’t worry, the semifinals have only just begun. You should know that when mortals hold long distance racing competitions, they will run slowly at the start until sprinting with all their strength at the end. Only by saving your strength at the start and using it at the opportune moment will one be able to obtain their best result.”

“That is… haha…” Fairy Feng chuckled as she heard this analogy. She also believed that Lin Ming’s results would rapidly rise towards the end. In the preliminaries, Lin Ming’s results would rise dramatically before coming to a standstill and then repeating once again. That had clearly been because Lin Ming had been saving his strength.

But, the question was, just how much strength was Lin Ming saving?

“Is this a spirit body created by the array formations?”

As Lin Ming reached the first level, he immediately faced a simulation spirit body. There were many people around him who had already begun violently fighting with these spirit bodies.

As Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan saw this they felt their hearts tighten. This was Lin Ming’s first battle. Although they both believed Lin Ming would win, they still found their hearts in chaos as they didn’t know what would happen in the fight.

Yu Youming and the Unbroken Cult Great Elder also watched with wide eyes lest they miss anything.

Lin Ming only glanced over the spirit body. His sharp eyes seemed to see through every inch of his opponent.

"This spirit body has a powerful energy signal, but the Law fluctuations are very weak. It's simply an empty shell. It might be difficult for an ordinary Divine Sea powerhouse, but for me it isn't anything at all…"

Lin Ming didn't even bring out his Phoenix Blood Spear. He simply rushed towards the spirit body and brought up two fingers, slashing out with a brilliant spear light that pierced through its head.

Peng!

The spirit body exploded!

This was an instant kill!

"This is…" Yu Youming gulped. It was over like this?

Lin Ming's killing speed was the same as Nether Limitless's!

"Too… too fierce!"

The Unbroken Cult Great Elder was left speechless. He suspected that after another dozen or so years, Lin Ming would be able to instantly kill him just like that spirit body.

This was a junior? He was simply a monster.

"Look at that person, that person also instantly killed the simulation spirit body!"

With the gazes of several billion people locked onto the Divine Seal Altar, many people naturally noticed Lin Ming. This sort of killing speed was no less than that of the first and second group!

“This semifinal truly has countless masters all around. None of them can be underestimated!”

“Haha, do you see that? That person who instantly killed the simulation spirit body is a disciple of my Ancient Phoenix Clan!”

At this time, all of the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were bursting with pride!

Lin Ming was a part of their Ancient Phoenix Clan. The Ancient Phoenix Clan itself was only a peak Holy Land level influence. Their resources were low and their inheritances were inferior to others’.

But, they were still able to produce a top extreme genius that could overshadow the talents of a Great World King Holy Land!

What is pride?

This is pride!

“Lin Ming!”

“Lin Ming!”

“Lin Ming!”

“Lin Ming!”

The disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan all began to desperately cheer out, their voices booming through the skies!

Chapter 1232 – Brutal Competition

Chapter 1232 – Brutal Competition

…

…

…

“Lin Ming!”

“Lin Ming!”

“Lin Ming!”

These loud and clarion cries echoed through the clouds!

The disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan cried out with all of their strength. How could they not be excited!

In the Divine Realm, strength was everything.

With strength, one would be respected, whether it was an individual or a sect.

The weak could only bow their heads to others. Tens of thousands of years ago, the Ancient Phoenix Clan had to marry their little princess off to the Crimson Light Holy Lands. This was because the Crimson Light Holy Lands was a Great World King level influence and their Ancient Phoenix Clan was only a peak Holy Land.

And now, the geniuses of the Crimson Light Holy Lands had all been overshadowed by Lin Ming!

The disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were all proud and ecstatic with joy!

This moment was the glory of their Ancient Phoenix Clan!

“Good! Shout louder! Shout harder! Shout until your shouts cover everyone else! You damned brat, it’s time for you to show off!”

Huo Violentstone didn’t seem like a respected elder at all. His face was flushed red as he shouted from the audience, his hands slapping his thighs. With the several billion people in the audience, there were more than just those calling out Lin Ming’s name. With all of the participants competing, their friends and relatives were also competing to see who could shout louder.

All of the audience members that were able to arrive at the semifinals were extraordinary geniuses of their generation. With each one flooding their voices with true essence, this was a truly terrifying scene! Even the mountains and rivers for hundreds of miles were shaking, massive boulders tumbling to the ground!

“This is really crazy, even I want to shout out.”

Fairy Feng laughed from beside Huo Violentstone.

By being present in the arena, it was easy to catch the excitement in the air. It was a completely different feeling from watching a battle array disc.

Even in the mortal worlds, when there were kickball competitions, even a small country could arouse crazy shouting, much less this First Martial Meeting that included the entire Divine Realm!

“Haha, if I knew this earlier I would have brought some louder disciples. They could fuse true essence into their voices until their shouts blasted through the entire audience!” Huo Violentstone laughed out loud, his face tomato red.

And not too far away, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan were tightly grasping their hands together.

At this time, the two women had extremely complex thoughts.

On one hand, they were proud and overjoyed for Lin Ming. On the Divine Seal Altar, that young man whose name was being shouted out loud by so many people was their husband.

But at the same time, because of Lin Ming's rapid growth, they felt a restlessness in their hearts. They were too far away from him, nearly losing sight of his back.

"Our husband… he's really fierce…"

Qin Xingxuan whispered in a low voice.

Mu Qianyu knew what Qin Xingxuan was thinking. She gently shook Qin Xingxuan's hand, reassuring her. These two young women had spent all these years together and had also overcome many hardships together. Their thoughts and sentiments were interlinked, just like sisters.

…………..

At this time, Lin Ming was already beginning to climb to the second step of the Divine Seal Altar.

Lin Ming discovered that although an Empyrean pressure covered the entirety of the Divine Seal Altar, the pressure was lowest at the base and increased as one climbed up.

This pressure fell onto them from above like an endless waterfall.

If one's foundation was deep, they could sit down on the altar, taking a short break and restoring some origin energy before continuing to climb. Those that climbed up much faster would be able to slow down and restore some of their strength.

"The second level of the Divine Seal Altar… the stone walls here have faintly different Law traces than those of the first level… I wonder just what sort of different truths are contained within them…"

As the Empyrean pressure fell down from the Divine Seal Altar, Lin Ming wasn't too affected. He was much more interested in observing the differences between the stone walls of every level.

The Divine Realm's 33 Heavens had always been a myth. Not even Mo Eversnow knew if the 33 Heavens truly existed or not. But in ancient times, there was indeed some unrivalled powerhouse that had created the Divine Seal Altar, forging it into 33 levels that corresponded with the 33 Heavens. As Lin Ming thought of this, he also recalled that when he crossed Ninefall, he had experienced a nine by nine Life Destruction and crossed 33 Layered Heavens. From this, he could confirm that the 33 Heavens contained some sort of truth of the Great Dao. However, Lin Ming didn't know just what that was right now.

"Maybe, on the Divine Seal Altar's 33 levels of stone walls, the different traces of Laws on each level correspond to different rules of the 33 Heavens?" A thought suddenly flashed through Lin Ming's mind. But, this sort of matter would likely only be known by an Empyrean or the artifact spirit of the Divine Seal Altar.

The Divine Seal Altar naturally had an artifact spirit. Any spirit artifact treasure had its own artifact spirit. Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear had an artifact spirit that hadn't yet grown up, but as for an Empyrean spirit treasure, its artifact spirit was likely similar to some old and grizzled veteran.

For instance, the artifact spirit of the Ancient Elysium Seal had lived for 3.6 billion years. Its power, knowledge, and experience were hard to estimate.

"This artifact spirit should be watching the semifinals too. But, only someone that displays a heaven-defying talent will be able to grab its attention, otherwise it wouldn't care at all."

In climbing the Divine Seal Altar, Lin Ming didn't feel any joy from his own extraordinary progress. Rather, he felt that there were more and more things that he didn't understand.

Empyrean Divine Dream's soul cultivation system, her exploration of Soul World, and even Empyrean Vast Universe's 33 Heavens Divine Seal Altar were all important questions and objectives to Lin Ming.

"Anyone that can become an Empyrean is truly a marvelous and unique character. I still have a long road ahead of me!"

Lin Ming suddenly thought. The Empyreans of the Divine Realm had been accumulated over a period of 100 million years. Each of them had their own mystical and singular methods!

At this time, more and more participants began reaching the first step of the Divine Seal Altar. These crowds of geniuses were all characters that had managed to pass the preliminaries; they were simply packs of monstrous freaks. Even so, when facing the terrifying pressure of the Divine Seal Altar, none of them were able to withstand it and all of them were forced to slowly climb their way up.

"What a group of monstrous geniuses… compared to them… I am far too lacking!"

Yu Youming sighed from within the audience. As he looked at these people battle the spirit bodies, he could feel that if he compared their attainments in cultivation and comprehension of Laws to his own, the difference would be like the heavens and earth.

And facing their opponents on the first step, none of the participants lost. After a vigorous battle they would eventually defeat their opponent. The only difference between them was how fast they did so.

All of the participants began climbing up to the second level.

The second step of the Divine Seal Altar had an Empyrean pressure much stronger than that of the level before. Many people were finding it hard to withstand!

And at this time, the first group had already mounted the second level of the Divine Seal Altar and were beginning to battle the spirit bodies.

“Nether Limitless! Nether Limitless is again the first one to reach the second level of the Divine Seal Altar! He has begun to fight with the spirit body!”

The two twin girls shouted out.

And these words, in addition to the wild cheers from the audience, were also another form of pressure on the participants!

This was especially true to the participants of the last group. They had spent a great deal of effort and only just defeated the simulation spirit bodies on the first step when they heard that the leading participants had reached the second floor.

“That Nether Limitless and all those other people are soon about to reach the third level… how could they possibly be so fast!?” Some participants thought to themselves. After reaching the second level and feeling the pressure here, they realized that it was nearly an impossible task for them to withstand this pressure and still climb up the 100,000 feet.

But now some people had already completed it.

This was pressure!

All of them felt a great pressure. Of these participants, they all had extremely strong wills and steady mentalities. Even so, they found it difficult to remain composed under the gazes of the billions of audience members, the gazes of their friends and relatives and also the Elders of their sect that had been invited to watch. All of them invited all these people so that they could show off their own abilities, but if the result was that they were in last place out of all these hundreds of thousands of participants, how could they not feel pressure?

To be able to attend the semifinals was supposed to be a great honor to them all. But now, all they felt was shame and disgrace!

These martial artists grit their teeth and continued forth. But after climbing only a few thousand more feet, they had reached their limit.

“I can’t climb anymore... the pressure is becoming too great, my legs and hands feel like they are filled with lead... can that Nether Limitless really climb to the top of the Divine Seal Altar?”

“How could this be? From several hundred thousands of people, I am actually the worst out of all of them?”

A red-clothed martial artist thought to himself, finding it nearly impossible to continue resisting the pressure. His vision was blurred, beads of sweat rolling down his forehead, and his fingers were already chafed red with blood, blood that stained the stone walls of the Divine Seal Altar red. But soon enough, the blood was washed away by the endless torrents of liquid heaven and earth origin energy.

“From my childhood to adulthood, I have always been the most outstanding existence of my sect. Even Master has said that I am the number one talent to appear in the last 10,000 years of the sect. In my sect, tens of thousands of junior-apprentice brothers take me as their shining role model and countless junior-apprentice sisters idolize me, all of them hoping to marry me, even willing to wait on me as a concubine. It is also because of me that they are able to obtain enough admission tickets to watch these semifinals. They all came in the hopes that they could see me create a miracle, but the result is that I will actually be the first one eliminated!

“Are these 300,000 people all stronger than me!? Is my so-called title as the greatest 10,000 year genius to appear in the sect nothing but a joke?

“How could this be possible!?

“I won’t accept this! I won’t believe this!”

The red-clothed martial artist cried out from within his heart. But at this time, the twin girls at the base of the Divine Seal Altar spoke out once more, their voices passing through an amplifying array formation and spreading out over the entire audience.

“Nether Limitless has defeated the simulation spirit body of the second step and has started to climb to the third level! Heavens, this is indeed a terrifying speed! Let us all cheer for him, and hope that he can continue fighting his way up to the very top!”

As the twin girls spoke out once more, their words caused the audience to surge in a frothing frenzy.

Even many people that weren’t from the Skydark Holy Lands began shouting out Nether Limitless’s name!

“Nether Limitless!”

“Nether Limitless!”

“Nether Limitless!”

Every syllable was like a steel weight smashing into the innermost feelings of the red-clothed martial artist. In comparison to Nether Limitless’s endless momentum and attention, he was finding it hard to continue any further.

In that moment, he wished with all of his heart that he would be the strongest powerhouse that would reach the summit. Even if he had to trade half his life for this glory, he was still willing to do so.

“Ahhh!”

The red-clothed martial artist cried out once more. His right hand was finally unable to withstand the tremendous pressure and he began to slide down from the stone walls. His hand left behind five long traces of blood and torn meat, and his miserable screams echoed throughout the 100,000 foot high cliff.

Just as the red-clothed martial artist was about to crash into the first step of the Divine Seal Altar, an invisible force caught him and shot him out.

In some dark space within the Divine Seal Altar, a gray-clothed old man surrounded in a dim haze shook his head. He was the one who had just rescued that red-clothed martial artist.

In this great competition that covered 100 great worlds, those that had once been called geniuses were no longer geniuses here. This was the brutality of everyone that walked down the road of martial arts.

And in the audience, in a certain area, a group of young girls had long been shivering with worry. There were even a few younger girls that felt their eyes turn wet as they heard the fading unwilling cries of that red-clothed martial artist.

The Elder Senior-apprentice Brother they respected from the depths of their hearts had been defeated like this.

Out of the 300,000 participants, he was the first one to be eliminated!

Chapter 1233 – The Great Road Before Us

Chapter 1233 – The Great Road Before Us

…

…

…

After the red-clothed martial artist was eliminated, more and more people began to fall.

In fact, many people had already reached their limit. They were putting forth all of their strength and forcefully persisting because none of them wanted to be the first loser.

Now that someone had already fallen and been eliminated, it was much easier to admit defeat.

Thus, just a bit later, these people all began to follow in falling down from the 100,000 foot cliff.

At the moment before they hit the ground, an invisible energy wrapped around them and ejected them from the Divine Seal Altar.

Soon, several hundred martial artists were eliminated. But compared to the several hundred thousand martial artists competing, this was only a very small number.

99.99% of the martial artists were able to make it up the second step of the Divine Seal Altar.

And at this time, Lin Ming had reached the second step.

The air around him distorted and a martial artist in loose yellow robes appeared in front of him. This person had blurry facial features and grasped a long sword. From their true essence fluctuations, one could sense they were at the late Divine Sea realm.

Of course, this spirit body's strength was far more formidable than an ordinary late Divine Sea martial artist's.

This was Lin Ming's second battle!

Lin Ming's eyes were calm and serene. To him, this wasn't a challenge at all. He flicked 10 fingers and 10 spear lights shot out, piercing through 10 vital areas of the yellow-clothed martial artist. With a light ringing sound, the yellow-clothed martial artist exploded in a shower of light.

The spear light had been too fast; the spirit body didn't have any time to respond!

"Another instant kill!"

"Too fierce! Lin Ming hasn't even brought out his weapon yet. He's only using his fingers to lash out with spear lights and that's more than enough to instantly kill these spirit bodies."

"Lin Ming is too strong. He can sweep away 99% of the Great World King Holy Land geniuses! I wonder just where his limit is."

More and more people were noticing Lin Ming.

And at the base of the Divine Seal Altar, the twin girls also turned to Lin Ming.

"The third group's Lin Ming was also able to instantly kill the spirit body of the second step. Although his climbing speed isn't too quick, his combat strength is in no way weaker than that of the martial artists of the first group. Lin Ming can potentially be a great contender! He is a great dark horse! And, what is most mysterious is that his background is only a peak Holy Land – the Ancient Phoenix Clan. He is far from coming from a Great World King Holy Land!"

The twin girls' voices echoed through the entire audience. To be specifically introduced out of the hundreds of thousands of geniuses, that was truly a magnificent glory!

This was especially true for the Ancient Phoenix Clan. To be able to be mentioned in association, this sort of great honor was mostly reserved for the Great World King Holy Lands. Yet, their Ancient Phoenix Clan had been able to accomplish the same!

The disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were all boiling with pride!

They cheered with everything they had. They cheered for Lin Ming, they cheered for the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

At this time, the martial artists of the Ancient Dragon Clan, Kirin Clan, and Roc Clan, all felt their hearts twist with envy. They were also God Beast Clans but the disparity was too obvious.

"Haha, today we have truly earned enough face! Yan Fengxian, you have done a wonderful merit in bringing Lin Ming from the lower realms!" Huo Violentstone said to Fairy Feng. Yan Fengxian was Fairy Feng's original name; Fairy Feng was merely a nickname she adopted in the past. With Huo Violentstone's status, he was naturally able to refer to her with her full name.

Fairy Feng smiled and said, "When I received Lin Ming and brought him to the Divine Realm, even I didn't imagine that he would have such results as he does now. I first saw Lin Ming at Timeworn Phoenix City when he was participating in the king level smelting trial. At that time, his talent was far from being comparable to what it is now. No one could have imagined that his future accomplishments would be so marvelous. His growth is truly mind-boggling."

"Indeed. I never would have expected that my Phoenix Cry Palace would be able to receive such a prodigious talent."

A red-clothed old man spoke up from beside Huo Violentstone. He was the Palace Master of Phoenix Cry Palace, Lian Zhen. As an older Palace Master, Lian Zhen had been closed up in seclusion for these past years. He was hoping he could make another martial arts breakthrough before his life ended.

Lian Zhen stroked his beard, a happy smile on his face. Although Lin Ming wasn't related to him in any special way and today was also the first time he saw Lin Ming, no matter what anyone else said, Lin Ming still came from his Phoenix Cry Palace.

"Haha, well, regardless of how it is, Yan Fengxian you have truly made great contributions! That's right, Lian Zhen, after another 180 years or so you should retire."

Huo Violentstone suddenly said to Lian Zhen.

Lian Zhen immediately understood Huo Violentstone's intentions. As for Fairy Feng, she felt her heart tighten. She realized just what Huo Violentstone was implying. This caused her hands to tighten against her legs and her breaths to become shallow.

Had the moment she had been waiting for finally arrived?

"Mm, that sounds right. I still have about 10,000 years of life left. Although the chances aren't too great, I want to struggle as much as I can to reach the middle Holy Lord realm. Once I retire, I will enter my last life or death closed door seclusion..."

Lian Zhen sighed. He looked towards all the geniuses on the Divine Seal Altar. In the future, nearly all of those juniors climbing up would have greater achievements than he would ever hope to have.

Even those that had already been eliminated were likely to become Holy Lords.

But as for him, his life was already on the decline. This was an inevitable truth that caused a dim feeling in his heart.

Huo Violentstone wasn't young. As he heard Lian Zhen's thoughts, he too felt empathy in his heart. He said, "Us martial arts cultivators must struggle with the heavens every day of our lives. Although we have power to control the world, we cannot resist the passing of time. Once our time is over, we too will turn to ashes and all of our life's cultivation will turn to nothing. No one is willing to accept this, but this is the choice that we made during our youth. We risk our lives, blazing our trail on the road of martial arts, uncovering new mysteries and new worlds – this is what drives us! Life or death closed door seclusion is also a good choice. If you wholeheartedly devote your life to your cultivation then you might be able to make another breakthrough."

As Huo Violentstone mentioned the predestined death that all martial artists would meet sooner or later, even he felt a bit heavy. This was the burden of the old.

"Even if I make another breakthrough I'll only be able to live out a sorry existence for several more years." Lian Zhen ruefully smiled. He was much older than Huo Violentstone.

"Elder Huo, are you mentioning this because you wish to inquire about the next candidate to become Palace Master of Phoenix Cry Palace?" Lian Zhen asked without any hesitation.

"Yes." Huo Violentstone nodded. With his position as Highest Elder, he indeed had the authority to decide who the successor to become Palace Master would be. However, he also had to respect Lian Zhen's opinions. Although Lian Zhen's status was much lower than his, he was still at a very high ranking position. From this alone, he had to at least discuss this with him.

"I wish to choose Yan Fengxian." Huo Violentstone directly stated.

Even though Fairy Feng had already prepared herself for this, she still found it difficult to maintain her composure upon hearing it. She was a woman with high ambitions. Otherwise, with her origin as a humble commoner, she would never have struggled with Xiao Jiuyang, who was deeply ingrained in the politics of Phoenix Cry Palace, for the position of Palace Master successor.

Once one became Palace Master, they could control all resources of a branch palace. There was no comparison in the treatment between a Palace Master and Vice Palace Master; it would be greatly beneficial to her future cultivation.

However, Fairy Feng knew that her chances of succeeding were extremely slim. This was because not only did Xiao Jiuyang have the support of one of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's three great families, the Xiao Family, he also had the support of countless figures in Phoenix Cry Palace. Moreover, even his strength was faintly beyond her own!

In this situation, it was extremely difficult for Fairy Feng to win!

But, she never imagined that this day would truly arrive. With Huo Violentstone speaking on her behalf, her success was assured!

It had to be known that she herself was a half-step Holy Lord, just a bit away from stepping into the true Holy Lord realm. The difference was only a single step away. If she was cemented as the successor to become Palace Master, then the Ancient Phoenix Clan would naturally approve more resources for her and she would easily be able to break into the Holy Lord realm. This was because the rules of the Ancient Phoenix Clan stated that all Palace Masters of the 72 branch palaces needed to be at the early Holy Lord realm!

Lian Zhen laughed. "Fengxian is so young and yet she's already a half-step Holy Lord. She is likely to become a Holy Lord within the next 100 years! As long as she can break through into the Holy Lord realm, then with all reason Fengxian can naturally become my successor. With Elder Huo speaking for her, her position is guaranteed. It's just that... Elder Huo, Jiuyang is also a good boy. I hope that Elder Huo can find a suitable position for him."

Xiao Jiuyang was an important figure of the Xiao Family. Lian Zhen was intelligent, he naturally wasn't willing to offend the Xiao Family.

Huo Violentstone said, "I will also help arrange Xiao Jiuyang in a similar position. That's right, Yan Fengxian, you can also come to the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters if you wish. If you are willing, headquarters will make sure to give you a position that is in no way inferior to Palace Master of Phoenix Cry Palace.”

“This junior would like to stay at Phoenix Cry Palace.”

Fairy Feng didn’t hesitate for long before she replied. Phoenix Cry Palace was her roots, her very foundation. She also had many disciples and supporters there, so how could she leave so easily?

Moreover, becoming the Palace Master of Phoenix Cry Palace had been a long-cherished wish of hers; she naturally couldn’t give up.

“Good, then this matter has been decided. Yan Fengxian, you must train hard. If the deadline for succession arrives and you still haven’t stepped into the Holy Lord realm then even I won’t be able to do anything. However, headquarters will support your cultivation as much as they can!”

Huo Violentstone’s word was the same as a royal decree. Although Huo Violentstone’s temper and character were well known by all, he was a trustworthy character that was good to his word. If he said something, few would doubt him.

“Thank you Elder Huo.” Fairy Feng said. Originally even without the support of the sect she still wouldn’t have needed a hundred years to become a Holy Lord. But now there definitely wasn’t a problem.

At this time, Fairy Feng’s mood was extremely complex. She never would have thought that all of this would happen one day. When she brought Lin Ming up to the Divine Realm and received him as her disciple, she only thought that she was training a useful supporter. She thought that she would need to train him for a hundred years before he would be of help to her. But now, just after several years, because of Lin Ming alone, she was directly recommended by a Highest Elder to become the Palace Master of Phoenix Cry Palace!

Destiny was truly far too marvelous.

……….

Lin Ming began climbing up to the third level of the Divine Seal Altar. The pace he climbed at was steady and stable, as if nothing could stop him.

And at this time, the two twin girls at the base of the Divine Seal Altar shouted out, “A top 100 ranked master of the Divine Seal Decree, the black-clothed youth that wields a mighty sword, the man named Fang, has now instantly struck down the spirit body of the second level! There are truly far too many masters at these semifinals!

“Fang is the same as Lin Ming. Their climbing speed isn’t too great but their combat strength is extraordinary. The two of them are simply the exact same. Moreover, they both come from the True Martial Great World, what an amazing coincidence. I think that they might even be good friends!”

The two twin girls said. They alternated in speaking between words, making their words seem extremely interesting to listen to.

“Fang’s background is also confusing, even stranger than Lin Ming’s! He is a free martial artist, in other words a wandering martial artist! Heavens! A wandering martial artist! That is simply unbelievable. I guess that he should have a powerful master backing him up that doesn’t wish to be known, otherwise it’s simply impossible for someone to arrive at this level!”

Only the south and east sides of the Divine Seal Altar had martial artists climbing to the top. Dragon Fang was on a different side of the Divine Seal Altar, thus he and Lin Ming naturally didn’t see each other.

As the two of them heard the words of the twin girls, they both faintly smiled. Even though the two competed against each other, they could also clearly understand each other. The two twin girls were indeed correct: this Divine Realm First Martial Meeting was filled with countless masters all around. Even Lin Ming didn’t dare to guess just how far he would be able to go. Just Dragon Fang alone was an unfathomable opponent. Moreover, behind him were several Empyrean descendants.

But, the more intense the competition was, the more heated Lin Ming became!

Chapter 1234 – Divine Seal Altar Artifact Spirit

Chapter 1234 – Divine Seal Altar Artifact Spirit

…

…

…

The Divine Seal Altar was a protracted war!

With 33 steps, the further one climbed, the more difficult it became! Luckily, the pressure on the flat plains of the steps was slightly lesser, thus one could take some reprieve there.

But as one went higher, the pressure would increase to incredible proportions. Resting would not be easy. One would need to crawl all the way up in a single go!

And at this time, the semifinals had already been going on for four hours.

The first group, including Nether Limitless, had already climbed to the eighth level!

As for Lin Ming, he had reached the sixth level.

Beneath him, there were still some martial artists crawling to the fourth level. Many of them were already exhausted and reaching their limit, but they still clenched their teeth and persisted.

Many of them knew that they had no chance of stepping onto the fourth step, but they still continued their attempt, trying to surpass their limits. To them, being able to withstand the baptism of this Empyrean pressure and climb up the Divine Seal Altar was a rare lucky chance.

If the ancient Divine Seal Altar dared to be called such a name, and dared to claim that those who ascended to its top could reach divinity, then that must be because by ascending these 33 steps and withstanding the baptism of the Divine Seal Altar, one could dig out all of their potential and break past their limits.

Although the Divine Seal Altar replica that Empyrean Vast Universe created was far from being able to compare with the true ancient Divine Seal Altar, it was still able to display a similar effect.

Strong wind whistled. The rivers of water formed from heaven and earth origin energy unceasingly fell from every step of the altar. The over 200 thousand participants were all desperately struggling with the Divine Seal Altar.

At the base of the altar, the two hosts were passionately and fervently shouting out every important happening in these semifinals.

Gradually, the sun set over the horizon and stars filled the skies.

For those in the audience, spending a few days to watch a competition wasn't anything at all. They usually meditated for a far longer time.

As Lin Ming walked over the sixth level, his steps were slow but steady.

Generally, when a martial artist climbed up the steep cliffs their speed would be slow, but when they reached the flat step they would launch their movement ability and race forwards so that they didn't waste any time on the flat area. But, Lin Ming didn't care at all. He slowly stepped forwards, enlightening himself about this altar.

The streams of heaven and earth origin energy washed over Lin Ming's feet, rushing past him like a crystal clear brook.

"33 Layered Heavens correspond to the 33 levels of the Divine Seal Altar. Every level had a completely different feeling…"

Lin Ming thought to himself. Out of everyone present, he was the first to understand the strangeness of the Divine Seal Altar from the very beginning. And, the further he climbed, the stronger this feeling became.

As for others, including even Nether Limitless, they didn't feel anything profound from the Divine Seal Altar.

This was not because Lin Ming's perception or divine sense far surpassed Nether Limitless's, but because of out these hundreds of thousands of people, he was the one most closely intertwined with the 33 Heavens.

Only he, and he alone, had crossed a perfect 33 Layered Heavens nine by nine Life Destruction.

Lin Ming was increasingly sure that the true Divine Seal Altar was created by Empyrean Divine Seal. These sorts of ancient divine tools were often named after their creator.

"Who is Empyrean Divine Seal? How is he related to the great calamity from 3.6 billion years ago? Out of all the heroes in the past, just what role did he play? What is suppressed underneath the eye of the Ancient Elysium Seal? For what reasons would the Ancient Elysium Seal's artifact spirit spend 3.6 billion years suppressing some unknown existence, to the point that it must use an arcane ability to fall into slumber so that its lifespan can extend to the distant future?

"In this world, what existence can live longer than an artifact spirit, and also in a situation where it was sealed?"

Lin Ming had all of these questions percolating in his mind. He also clearly remembered that the Ancient Elysium Seal had mentioned a great world calamity.

This was because in that catastrophe 3.6 billion years ago, even the rules that governed the heavens and earth had changed!

After that time, body transformation techniques were no longer suitable for humans. From that point on, the essence gathering system rose to glory, overshadowing all other methods.

From this alone it could be seen just how terrifying that calamity had been. Lin Ming found it hard to imagine just what sort of disaster had swept through the entire Divine Realm and not even all the Empyreans of the past had been able to resist it!

As Lin Ming was thinking, what he didn't know was that at this time, there was someone secretly watching him.

This person was shrouded in mist. Although his form appeared to be that of an old man, he wasn't human at all; he was an artifact spirit.

Deep within the Divine Seal Altar, this artifact spirit had a panoramic view of every single genius as they were competing.

Its responsibility here was to protect these participants. Once they encountered a life-threatening situation, the artifact spirit would then move to save them.

"This little fellow is a bit special; how interesting! I thought that young fellow Vast Universe was lazy and was just dragging me along to help look after these babies, but I never thought I'd meet such an interesting little fellow here. It's as if he can feel the faint Concepts contained within the 33 steps of the Divine Seal Altar. These Concepts belong to the 33 Layered Heavens. Although it's impossible for him to comprehend anything in such a short time with his cultivation, he still shouldn't be able to feel this! I wonder just what sort of lucky chances this boy has had."

The old man thought to himself. Then, he laughed and said, "Hehe, that kid is quite funny. He's not revealing his strength at all, and in fact he isn't even using any of his strength. It's like he's taking a vacation and strolling through the countryside. Since I noticed him, I certainly can't let him be so comfortable. Let's test out his ability a bit and see just how he's so special. If he's any good, I'll recommend him to that young boy Vast Universe."

The old man's lips curved up in a sly smile. In the next moment, a tiny wisp of light shot out and quietly sank into the stone walls of the Divine Seal Altar.

"Mm... I shouldn't be so enthusiastic at the start. Everything needs to be done gradually for it to be interesting... I hope that this little boy doesn't disappoint me."

The old man chuckled, his eyes filled with anticipation at Lin Ming's performance.

....

As Lin Ming was thinking, he felt space distort around him. This was a familiar feeling that he had sensed countless times before. This was the feeling of when an array formation was activating and a simulation spirit body was soon to appear.

The sixth spirit body couldn't arouse Lin Ming's interest at all. One could see this just by looking at how the other participants were able to easily clear this level.

As long as Lin Ming wanted to, he could instantly kill this spirit body without even taking out his weapon.

This spirit body was only a hundred feet away from Lin Ming!

The spirit body wore a tightly-fitted battle robe and held a red long spear in its hands, somewhat resembling Lin Ming's own Phoenix Blood Spear.

"A spear? How refreshing."

Lin Ming still didn't bring out the Phoenix Blood Spear. From the start until now, he had only been using his fingers as a spear.

Woosh!

The spirit body moved, reaching an incredible speed. The long spear in its hand thrust out like a viper at an extremely tricky angle.

With a thrust of its spear, lightning quickened. This was the Laws of Thunder. Moreover, this spirit body had already reached the fourth level Concept of the Thunder Laws – Manifestation!

“The sixth step’s spirit body has capable attainments in techniques and Laws!”

Lin Ming drew back, easily dodging the spear attack of the spirit body. His right hand’s fingers flicked out once more.

Xiu!

A spear light shot straight towards the spirit body’s forehead!

However, that spirit body had extremely fast reflexes. It whipped its head to the side and dodged Lin Ming’s attack.

“Eh?”

Lin Ming was a bit startled. He changed methods, waving his hand and emitting a blazing purple light.

He also used the fourth level Concept of the Thunder Laws – Manifestation.

Manifested thunder had its own consciousness and spirituality. In comparison to mindless energy, it was several times stronger.

Moreover, elemental energy with its own intelligence was not easy to dodge!

Lin Ming flicked his 10 fingers once again.

Peng!

The spirit body's spear light was crushed apart. Lin Ming thought this battle was over, but at this moment the spirit body sinisterly grinned. In the next moment, it shook its long spear and smashed apart Lin Ming's spear lights!

"Mm!?"

Lin Ming was stunned for a moment. In his estimation, the spirit body of the sixth level absolutely shouldn't have the ability to crush apart his spear light, otherwise the other participants would never have crossed this level so easily.

"Something's strange!"

Lin Ming rapidly reacted.

With something so unusual occurring, Lin Ming certainly wouldn't be careless as to avoid any surprises. And, he also clearly remembered that strange grin that appeared on this spirit body's face. How could a mindless spirit body created by an array formation produce such a human expression?

"That Lin Ming from the Ancient Phoenix Clan still hasn't brought out his weapon. But now that he's facing the sixth match, his opponent is far more formidable than what he has faced so far! Lin Ming wasn't able to instantly kill it and has also seemed to run into some trouble. Is he still planning on not using his weapon? What a bold man, confident in his own skills!"

The two twin hosts shouted out. There were only a dozen or so participants that they were focusing on.

Lin Ming was one of them. As for what the tricks that the Divine Seal Altar's artifact spirit was playing, they simply weren't able to see through it. Much less them, but not even an ordinary World King could see through. Even Lin Ming, who was personally experiencing it, only felt that something was strange, but he still wasn't able to place his finger on just what was happening.

“Lin Ming should use his spear. If he doesn’t use his spear then he might meet with unexpected failure!”

“That’s right, he needs to be more careful. If he fights the other participants then he can be defeated five times, but if he loses to a spirit body just once then he will be eliminated!”

Many martial artists from the Crimson Light World began to discuss amongst themselves, clearly worried for Lin Ming.

They didn’t come from the Ancient Phoenix Clan, but they still supported Lin Ming.

They were some lower level Holy Lands of the Crimson Light World. They originally had some of their geniuses participating in the semifinals, but those geniuses had been defeated in the first few steps. Without anyone to support, they transferred their energy to support Lin Ming instead. After all, since the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters was located at the Crimson Light World, they could always at least form relations with them a little bit.

There was always competition between the different great worlds. If a martial artist were to appear in a great world that had more powerhouses than they had clouds, then they would be emboldened as they left to explore the Divine Realm.

On the other hand, if someone came from a desolate great world that didn’t produce many powerhouses, they would be despised upon adventuring through the Divine Realm, labeled as a backwater genius.

If the Crimson Light World was able to produce an Empyrean and that Empyrean chose to establish their own sect at the Crimson Light World, the Crimson Light World would directly rise into the ranks of a second-order great world! The energy and momentum of an Empyrean was truly terrifying. Just their presence alone was enough to affect the overall ranking of a great world!

The spirit body thrust its spear out once more. Lin Ming used 30% of his true essence this time. He didn’t use his spear and he definitely didn’t use the Heretical God Force or the Eight

Inner Hidden Gates. Even so, his speed and strength was able to fully suppress the spirit body.

But this spirit body was extremely tough. At a critical moment it was able to shatter apart Lin Ming's killing blow.

"Now this is fun!"

Lin Ming was a bit interested and a bit more serious. He dodged the spirit body's spear light and then shot out five thunder-fused spear lights.

The spirit body wanted to use its old move to crush these five spear lights.

But this time, Lin Ming faintly smiled. He sprung the fingers of his other hand and shot out five fire-fused spear lights.

Thunder and fire intersected, directly exploding!

Bang!

The spirit body broke apart into countless motes of dust before vanishing.

Chapter 1235 – Without Weapons

Chapter 1235 – Without Weapons

…

…

…

“Eh? This little baby understands the Concept of Fire, and moreover it’s dual Concepts of Thunder and Fire. His comprehension is extremely high, and with the way he is utilizing these concepts, it seems that he’s reached the threshold of the fifth level!”

The old man traced his chin, revealing an extremely interested expression.

The fifth level Concept of the Five Element Laws was separated from the fourth level Concepts by an extremely large gap. There were many powerhouses that would never manage to cross this moat in their lifetimes!

Even some weaker Divine Lord powerhouses wouldn’t be able to cross this step.

In other words, Lin Ming’s comprehensions of Laws now surpassed many Divine Lord powerhouses!

“I’ll have to slowly test your abilities. Young man, you shouldn’t have any problems with this. For this old man to test you is your good luck. Others can’t even ask me for such a favor, hahaha!”

The Divine Seal Artifact’s artifact spirit chuckled. He wanted to know just what secrets Lin Ming had that allowed him to touch upon the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens that not even World King powerhouses could sense.

This was not an exaggeration either. Even Mo Eversnow did not understand the 33 Layered Heavens. In the past, when Mo Eversnow was at the height of her power, if she had come to the Divine Seal Altar she still wouldn't have been able to sense anything.

....

"Ladies and gentleman, in the end Lin Ming did not need to use a weapon. Although he fiercely fought for some time, he has still emerged victorious!

"The seventh and eighth levels might not be so easy. The power of the spirit bodies will become increasingly strong. In a fight with the spirit bodies, a single defeat will spell elimination. If a participant isn't careful and underestimates the enemy, all of their hard work might come to nothing."

After Lin Ming killed the sixth level spirit body, the voices of the twin hosts rang out in the air.

"That's right, it's better to be safe than sorry!"

"It's much better to advance steadily!"

Many martial artists of the Crimson Light World discussed.

The disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan also began standing up, "Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, be careful!"

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, don't underestimate your enemy!"

Numerous young disciples shouted out together. In truth, Lin Ming was much younger than most of the disciples here, and his merits and qualifications were also low so far. But, because he was so strong, many of them simply called him their senior-apprentice brother; this was the standard of the martial arts sects. The top genius of a Great World King Holy Land was also called a specific name, such as Elder Senior-apprentice Brother or Elder Senior-apprentice Sister.

It had been extremely difficult for the Ancient Phoenix Clan to produce a talent that was able to enter the top 1000 or even potentially top 500 rankings of the First Martial Meeting. If Lin Ming were to lose because of some accident, that would truly be an injustice.

As everyone was shouting, the twin hosts suddenly cried out. They looked towards the eighth level of the Divine Seal Altar and nearly choked on their own words. They had just warned everyone to be careful, but on the Divine Seal Altar's eighth step, Nether Limitless had actually put away his katana as he faced his spirit body opponent.

"Nether Limitless actually put away his weapon!"

"Is he planning on fighting the enemy unarmed?"

The twin hosts' words immediately attracted everyone's attention.

Everyone looked towards the eighth level to see Nether Limitless standing there, facing a tall and sturdy fellow that used a sledgehammer.

This majestic spirit body gave off an extremely strong pressure!

"What a tall and burly fellow, it's simply like a mountain of meat. Is Nether Limitless planning on dealing with the fellow without any weapons?"

"Lin Ming didn't use his weapon on the sixth step and Nether Limitless doesn't need to on the eighth step! These geniuses are truly arrogant!"

"How can you even compare them? Nether Limitless was ranked 15th on the Divine Seal Decree, and he's now the fastest one to climb out of these 300,000 people. Don't try to equate Nether Limitless to those that ranked in the hundreds or thousands. Out of everyone here, besides Nether Limitless, only Fang and Bloodless Sword have managed to enter the top 100 rankings of the Divine Seal Decree!"

Within the audience, disciples of Demondawn Great World began to speak with contempt thick in their voices.

The Divine Realm First Martial Meeting semifinals were separated into 30 locations. On average each location had three participants that were in the top 100 rankings of the Divine Seal Decree.

As everyone was discussing, Nether Limitless had already begun fighting with that tall sledgehammer fellow!

With a great roar, the tall sledgehammer spirit body brought the hammer crashing straight down!

Nether Limitless simply sneered. His figure turned into a series of afterimages as he instantly arrived in front of the tall spirit body, directly facing the massive hammer that came smashing down.

If this giant weight were to crash down, then the explosive force would even cause a mountain to collapse!

Everyone in the audience cried out in alarm.

But, Nether Limitless didn’t have any expression at all. He simply thrust his palm out. This palm seemed slow and without any strength, but it instantly passed through space, passing through that big fellow’s giant hammer and striking its chest.

In that moment, time seemed to come to a standstill.

That tall and burly fellow suddenly stiffened. The giant hammer in its hands came to a complete stop in midair, seeming to violate the laws of physics.

Then, an unbelievable sight occurred.

With a crackling sound, cracks began to appear through the big fellow’s body as if he were a glass sculpture. Then, the spirit body suddenly shattered, exploding to pieces!

“Heavens! What sort of technique is this?!”

That formidable big fellow had suddenly shattered to pieces; this was a truly inconceivable attack.

“This is the Ice Laws, Space Laws, Time Laws, and Concept of Vibration, an attack with three Laws and a Concept combined together. That is simply unbelievable. To fuse so many Concepts and Laws together is far too amazing.”

“Nether Limitless is indeed an extreme genius of his era. For an ordinary martial artist, fusing two Laws together is extraordinary.”

Laws and Concepts were simply a generalization that everyone used; there wasn’t a true difference between them. But, if there was a difference, then that would be that Laws encompassed a great domain while Concepts were more concrete and specific.

For instance, Burning Heat was the first level Concept of the Fire Laws. But, all nine level Concepts of Fire could simply be referred to as the Fire Laws.

“Nether Limitless!”

“Nether Limitless!”

After Nether Limitless won, all of the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands began to crazily shout out.

On the eighth step, without using a weapon and only using a single palm strike that fused together four different Concepts and Laws, this technique was enough to shock the audience.

“Too strong!”

“Haha, our Senior-apprentice Brother Nether is first! On the first several steps the spirit bodies were too weak so they were all instantly killed without seeing a difference, but now those differences are obvious!”

“That’s right, at the eighth level and above, everyone that can still instantly kill their opponents are all extreme characters! For the first several steps, even those nobody martial artists could instantly kill the spirit bodies. They simply aren’t any good at all!”

“Not wrong. Who cares if that Lin Ming doesn’t need to use a weapon? If he really was capable then he would instantly kill those spirit bodies even without weapons!”

“Nobody can compete with our Senior-apprentice Brother Nether!”

The disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands were all bursting with pride. Their Holy Lands originally came from the first-order world, the Demondawn Great World. Now, whether it was in strength or speed, they were number one!

“Motherfucker, how could he be so fierce!”

Huo Violentstone’s eyes bugged out. He couldn’t help but acknowledge that this Nether Limitless was simply too abnormal.

As Huo Violentstone and the numerous other people in the audience were shocked by Nether Limitless’s performance, deep within the Divine Seal Altar’s inner world, the artifact spirit actually didn’t even spare him a glance.

A technique of this level simply wasn’t able to arouse the artifact spirit’s interest. The artifact spirit still watched Lin Ming as before, saying, “Little kid, you’ll soon reach the seventh step. At the seventh step this old man will test you once more. Don’t be worried, hahaha.”

Chapter 1236 – 20th Step

Chapter 1236 – 20th Step

…

…

…

All the way forwards, Nether Limitless was still in the lead as before, his momentum nearly unstoppable.

Close behind Nether Limitless was Bloodless Sword. Bloodless Sword also easily defeated his opponent on the eighth level, but he had to use his weapon unlike Nether Limitless. For some contestants that didn't use weapons, they didn't care much for Bloodless Sword so they didn't follow him in this.

With a sword cutting down a spirit body, Bloodless Sword continued his climb to the ninth floor.

"Haha, Elder Senior-apprentice Brother is very steady."

"As a swordsman, there's no point in not using your sword."

"Right, there's no point at all! In truth, Elder Senior-apprentice Brother doesn't even need to use his sword because he has already reached the sword of the heart boundary. In his hands, there is no difference whether he is wielding a sword or not."

In the audience, Fairy Feng heard the cheers of everyone around her and the hosts casting the situation on the altar. She shook her head and said, "Lin Ming likely didn't use his weapon because he simply didn't think it was necessary. I never imagined that such a little thing like this would cause such comparisons."

Huo Violentstone said, “It’s not strange. In this semifinal, the geniuses that climb the Divine Seal Altar aren’t competing in just speed but also how calmly they can cut down the spirit bodies. Many people are becoming famous because of this!

“Those martial artists that have a shallow background hope to become famous so that they can be taken in by some great influence.

“As for those martial artists with a great background and who also come from a great influence, they hope to become famous in order to bring glory to their Holy Lands and possibly even garner the attention of an Empyrean!”

When an Empyrean chose a descendant, their pool of candidates was every single genius of every great influence in the Divine Realm. The First Martial Meetings of the past had all been good places for an Empyrean to choose their descendant.

An Empyrean could live for nearly a hundred million years. Even so, most would receive several hundred descendants or even less than a 100.

Of these people, the weakest amongst them were ordinary World Kings.

Rather, it would be more accurate to say that these ordinary World King descendants were Empyrean descendants that had exhausted all of their potential before growing up.

As for those who were able to develop, they were able to become Great World Kings or even half-step Empyreans. There were even those select few that could grow into new Empyreans!

With this, if a disciple of a Great World King Holy Land was chosen by an Emyprean, that would absolutely be the greatest honor of all.

That Great World King Holy Land disciple, if they were to receive such an honor, would invite all the guests they knew and hold a grand feast filled with heroes, a great celebration that would continue for several days.

This sort of feeling was the same as the mortal world where the daughter of a wealthy family would be married into the imperial palace as a royal concubine.

Although the family wouldn't have many more opportunities to see their daughter again, that daughter would still grow up and live a good life in the palace, and would also be able to bring a great advantage to her family.

The relationship between a Holy Land and an Empyrean Heaven Palace was similar to this.

Now, Nether Limitless and Bloodless Sword wanted to use this First Martial Meeting to their advantage; their ultimate goal was to become an Empyrean descendant.

And the one presiding over these semifinals was also the direct disciple of an Empyrean. If their performance was exceptional, they might be noticed by an Empyrean!

They weren't afraid of showing off, only that they wouldn't show off enough!

"I must reach the top, that is my only goal! Xiao Daochild said that the chances of us reaching the summit are slim, but I must do it so that everyone can see me!"

Nether Limitless's blood boiled over. After another quarter hour he defeated the spirit body of the ninth step.

In defeating his opponent he didn't use a weapon as before. Facing the spirit bodies of the ninth step or even the spirit bodies of higher steps, there really wasn't a difference to Nether Limitless in how difficult it was.

And at this time, Lin Ming was now facing his opponent on the seventh step.

His opponent was a white-clothed woman with long hair. Her facial features were blurred.

These simulation spirit bodies all had different appearances, techniques, and cultivation methods. Lin Ming guessed that the different spirit bodies formed by the array formations on the Divine Seal Altar were similar to the Ancient Phoenix Clan's own Illusionary God

Combat Array. That was, they were able to use array formations to record a martial artist's specific techniques and styles, and use this data to recreate a simulation spirit body.

These simulated spirit bodies were nearly the same as the real person. Whatever weaknesses the real person had, these spirit bodies would also have.

The weapon that this woman used was a soft sword. With just a glance, Lin Ming was able to feel the special characteristics of her true essence fluctuations, her use of weapons, her steps, and with this information he was able to guess that she was a martial artist that excelled in speed.

If he could suppress her in the aspect she excelled in the most, then he could instantly defeat her.

Chasing Thunder!

Lin Ming's vision sharpened as he immediately opened Mystic Lightning Shade. His feet stepped on Golden Roc Shattering the Void and he attacked with his fastest move – Chasing Thunder!

Xiu!

A brilliant electric purple light shout out, cutting through the air and directly striking the white-clothed woman!

She was fast, but her speed was still far from being able to compare with Lin Ming.

Chi chi chi!

An electric light flashed out. But, at this time, something that left Lin Ming extremely surprised took place. The attack he sent out was one that even an ordinary Divine Transformation realm powerhouse wouldn't be able to withstand. But, this white-clothed woman was actually completely uninjured. Her protective true essence was totally immune to Lin Ming's Thunder Laws!

“Mm? She’s becoming stronger instead? She can absorb the power of my Thunder Laws for herself and convert it to her own strength? How is that even possible?”

Lin Ming was so startled that he was left speechless… this woman’s protective true essence was able to absorb his own thunder attack and transform his strength into her own!

This sort of ability was only possessed by certain ancient vicious beasts and God Beasts. There were some ancient vicious beasts that had achieved a certain degree in their compatibility with the Laws and were completely immune to certain Law-based attacks.

For instance, there was the mythical Thunder Dragon. If one were to use thunder-based attacks against one then that was the same as delivering a nourishing tonic to it. The only method to overcome this was if one’s own power of thunder had reached a boundary where it was able to disregard the Laws of the world. For instance, Empyrean Thunder Punishment was this sort of top powerhouse.

Those beings that had this ability were either God Beasts or existences close to God Beasts. Lin Ming had never heard of a human that possessed this type of ability.

Lin Ming had the Heretical God Force which was itself a transcendent divine might. Even so, it could only absorb the power of thunder and fire that didn’t surpass his own boundary. If a thunder or fire attack that far surpassed Lin Ming’s limits were to strike him, it would still severely wound him.

“How strange! Why would this sort of opponent appear at only the seventh level!”

Lin Ming was puzzled. But, he didn’t pause in his movements. If the power of thunder didn’t work, he would switch to flames!

Chasing Sun shot out, smashing into the white-clothed woman. Then, something even more unbelievable occurred. This white-clothed woman was also immune to fire-based attacks!

“She’s immune to the Fire Laws? Immunity to thunder, immunity to fire, it’s as if this opponent was specifically targeted at me!”

Lin Ming thought something was strange. Starting from the sixth level, something unusual had been occurring. The opponents he faced were clearly far more formidable than the others!

“Did I hit the jackpot? Did I accidentally stumble into some hidden difficulty level? Or are there people purposefully trying to play tricks on me? But that doesn’t make sense… I have no idea what enemy I might have made that would be going against me here.”

Out of all the enemies Lin Ming had provoked, the strongest ones were the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion, Zhong Wenshu, and Wu Finalcloud. However, they were all from World King and Great World King level Holy Lands, so it was impossible for them to affect the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting.

“If thunder and fire don’t work, then I will defeat you with absolute strength!”

Lin Ming couldn’t bother with getting to the bottom of what was happening right now. He directly took out the Phoenix Blood Spear and opened the first four of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. The power of the Gate of Pain erupted, multiplying Lin Ming’s striking power by several times.

A spear thrust out, the speed reaching the limit. The power of 8-9 million jins of strength blew up. With a loud explosive sound, the white-clothed woman exploded into countless motes of light!

“He really is a dual body and energy cultivator.”

Within the inner world of the Divine Seal Altar, the gray-clothed man’s eyebrows shot up. He was the one deliberately causing trouble for Lin Ming in order to probe his strength by forcing him to use new moves.

“He dual cultivates in body and energy, and his body transformation technique has already opened the fourth gate… the Gate of Pain! Those geniuses that choose to walk the paths of dual body and energy cultivation have nearly disappeared. Among the Empyreans, nearly none of them do this. There are only some geniuses of small sects that are too full of themselves who believe they can walk down the road of dual body and energy cultivation.

“That young kid Vast Universe is resolutely opposed to dual cultivating body and energy. After all, not everyone can be like Empyrean Primordius and experience such heaven-shaking lucky chances! And without those lucky chances and under the current restrictions of the Heavenly Dao Laws, the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace become a demonic curse that can never be broken through. In truth, disregarding the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, barely anyone in this universe can hope to break past the life and death threshold of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.”

The old man traced his beard. The road of martial artists was broad and profound. By just walking down one cultivation system to the limit, one could become an Empyrean. But out of a trillion trillion lives, how many people were able to become an Empyrean?

If one couldn’t even bring one cultivation system to the limit and yet tried to split their attention with another, that was simply far too ambitious. Not just that, but the body transformation technique system was currently prohibited by the Heavenly Dao Laws.

The gray-clothed man also didn’t believe in dual cultivating body and energy.

“This boy actually chose to dual cultivate body and energy. Is it because he is overconfident in himself or is it because his master is an idiot? Or, perhaps he has some other cards in hand? His skeletal age is just over 30 years. With his essence gathering system cultivation at this level, his body transformation technique has at most four gates opened… that’s also quite good. If he continues on this road then I suspect it will harm him. In the next step, I must take a good look at how he fares in other aspects…”

The gray-clothed old man thought out loud. He didn’t have much faith in Lin Ming’s body transformation technique.

“Something seems strange with Senior-apprentice Brother Lin.”

“In the last two steps, he won with some difficulty. He even had to bring out his weapon on the seventh step. And in the future, the further he goes up the harder his opponents will be.”

“He’s in a bit of danger…”

From the Ancient Phoenix Clan as well as from the Crimson Light World, there were many people that were worried for Lin Ming. Just how strong was the Divine Seal Altar’s artifact spirit? If it did something, there were very few people that could see through it.

“Humph, what are you worried about? Senior-apprentice Brother Lin clearly hasn’t shown his true abilities. He’s clearly saving his strength for the future. The truly magnificent battles are still coming up! Not just that, but there are 300 people that can pass these semifinals. If Lin Ming can be in the top 300 then he’ll be fine. It’s his win as long as he can attend the finals.”

As this disciple spoke, he seemed to lose confidence in his own words.

Although their words and tone didn’t admit defeat, the truth was that if things continued like this, then even they couldn’t tell just how Lin Ming’s final results would be.

As for the twin girl hosts at the base of the Divine Seal Altar, they no longer spoke about Lin Ming. They only paid attention to the powerhouses at the top, shifting their attention to the several martial artists in the first group. They were currently the most dazzling characters in the semifinals.

The battle between Nether Limitless and Bloodless Sword was the focus of attention for nearly everyone in the audience.

Like this, the over 200,000 participants continued their struggle climbing upwards!

Tenth step, eleventh step, twelfth step, thirteenth step, fourteenth step…

Every step was harder than the last!

More and more participants were eliminated.

Nether Limitless already reached the 20th step. Once he ascended another step then he would no longer be fighting spirit bodies.

He would have to defeat other participants!

Chapter 1237 – The Battle Begins

Chapter 1237 – The Battle Begins

…

…

…

On the first 21 steps of the Divine Seal Altar, one would fight simulation spirit bodies produced by array formations. Starting from the 22nd step and upwards, one would no longer fight simulation spirit bodies but would have to fight and defeat other participants on the same step!

This produced another problem. That was that the first group which was in the lead was stronger overall, thus the opponents they faced were also more powerful.

Thus, if they wished to maintain their status of being in the vanguard, they would have to pay a certain price.

If they were too weak they would be defeated and their ranking here would drop.

A participant was only able to lose five times before they were eliminated; they naturally didn't wish to waste these chances.

As some people realized this, they began to slow down their pace. If they instantly rushed to the 22nd step and had to directly face Nether Limitless, then that truly wouldn't be fun.

In fact, only a very small minority of people were able to climb up to the 22nd step.

After such a long time with people continually being eliminated, out of the original 300,000 participants, there was not even a hundred thousand left. But, out of these remaining participants, the overwhelming majority would find it impossible to reach the 22nd step; they would be eliminated before then.

There was no doubt that if one could not reach the 22nd step then they would not pass the semifinals.

The sun fell down over the horizon and the curtain of night rose high up into the skies. The semifinals had now been going on for two days!

Two days, 48 hours, this time period was an extremely great test on every participant's mental state, physical strength, and endurance.

A massive number of participants weren't able to withstand the Empyrean pressure, or they weren't able to defeat the spirit bodies, or they might have even exhausted themselves. But no matter what, if any of these happened, the participant was eliminated.

The disparity grew despairingly large!

The hundred thousand plus participants were like ants crawling up a hill, sparsely distributed all over two sides of the Divine Seal Altar.

As some people were still struggling to reach the 11th step, Nether Limitless had already defeated the spirit body of the 21st step and was beginning to climb to the 22nd level!

Nether Limitless had defeated all spirit bodies of the first 21 steps with relative ease.

No one was surprised by these results. This entire way he had killed all the spirit bodies with unstoppable momentum.

The disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands became increasingly wild and crazy as they shouted out Nether Limitless's name. The entire arena seemed to echo with the name of 'Nether Limitless'.

And on the Ancient Phoenix Clan's side, the disciples were relatively muted.

The Ancient Phoenix Clan wasn't in too good of a situation.

The Ancient Phoenix Clan, with Lin Ming included, had a total of four disciples entering the semifinals. The weakest of them had already been eliminated.

Xiao Ping's situation wasn't looking too good.

Whether he could reach the 22nd step was questionable.

As for those that would likely reach the 22nd step, they were Lin Ming and Yan Littlemoon. But, the truly brutal part of this competition would finally begin upon stepping onto the 22nd step, because at that time, they would have to duel and defeat other participants. That was the true test of strength.

From the 21st step to the 22nd step, Nether Limitless's climbing speed wasn't slow.

Without accident, he was the first one to reach the 22nd step!

After mounting the 22nd step, Nether Limitless stood proudly on the flat plains, waiting for other participants to reach him.

He held his katana as he stood against the wind, the aura of a ruler wreathing him.

In that moment, because of Nether Limitless's existence, many of the other martial artists felt a great pressure on them. They faintly didn't dare to climb up, because climbing up to the 22nd step was the same as facing Nether Limitless.

"Nether Limitless has already stepped upon the 22nd step, he alone is deterring all other participants... oh! Someone else has climbed up! That is Bloodless Sword!"

The twin hosts loudly shouted. Because the current position of the competition was too high up on the Divine Seal Altar, they had ridden a spirit boat up so that the entire audience could clearly see them.

Bloodless Sword was only a bit behind Nether Limitless. After Nether Limitless reached the 22nd step, Bloodless Sword was right behind him.

The two stood a thousand feet apart, in sharp contrast to each other, neither of them willing to give an inch!

The entire audience felt their breath catch in their throats!

Would it be a battle between kings at the very start! This was simply too amazing!

However, after some time passed, the two still didn't fight. They simply stood there, waiting.

"It seems... they aren't planning on fighting so early. The two of them aren't idiots. Even if Nether Limitless can defeat Bloodless Sword, he will have to pay a great price to do so. It will affect how far he can go afterwards."

"Yes. The 22nd step should not be the stage of their battle."

It was clear that Nether Limitless and Bloodless Sword took each other as strong rivals in these semifinals. If the two fought, it would have to be at the 30th step or above.

Thus, a third person finally reached the 22nd step.

This person was a purple-clothed swordsman; his nickname was Purple Blade. He was ranked in the top 300 of the Divine Seal Decree and also first on his own great world!

To be able to be the third to climb to the Divine Seal Altar's 22nd step, that was enough to prove his strength.

With Purple Blade's arrival, Bloodless Sword and Nether Limitless still remained unmoving.

They continued to wait.

Slowly, over time, the others gained courage and more and more people climbed up to the 22nd step.

However, there was a 1000 foot null zone around Bloodless Sword and Nether Limitless that no one dared to stand in, lest they find themselves targeted as opponents.

In this way, six hours passed. Several thousand participants had already reached the 22nd level.

Still, no one fought!

All of the powerhouses stopped here, seeming to unanimously agree to restore their strength on the 22nd level.

They waited for more people and weaker people to climb up.

The 22nd level was where the strong would hunt the weak.

And at this time, Lin Ming also climbed towards the 22nd step.

Mixed within the martial artists here, no one would notice him.

The truth was that starting from the tenth step, Lin Ming was able to confirm that someone was targeting him. However, this mysterious existence didn't push things too far. These spirit bodies always excelled in some area and were able to create a bit of trouble for him. However, truly slaying these spirit bodies didn't consume too much of Lin Ming's strength.

Generally speaking, these weren't deliberate obstacles but rather probing moves.

To probe his bottom line. To probe his talent.

This caused Lin Ming to be increasingly confused. Just what great expert would target him here?

From the start until now, his performance had been only satisfactory at best. Whoever this mysterious figure was, they should have been watching Nether Limitless instead.

Lin Ming's pace was steady, neither fast nor slow. He finally stepped onto the 22nd step with the third group.

"There are quite a number of people here."

As Lin Ming climbed up to the 22nd step he hadn't been able to see what was happening on the step itself. But now that he looked around, he saw around 4000-5000 people. Casually choosing any of them, one could see they were peak powerhouses. Many of them were near the same level as Wu Finalcloud.

There were truly countless masters all around. Those that could climb up to the 22nd step were extreme elites that could close their eyes and become Holy Lord level characters in the future.

These people had carefully chosen where they would stand. Basically, nearly no one stood around those that felt strong in fear of bringing disaster upon themselves. As for those that felt weak, there were many people crowded near them. Everyone was thinking of pinching these weak persimmon-like people to pieces.

When Lin Ming stood on the 22nd step, three people calmly and quietly walked towards him, discreetly surrounding him. Among them, a tall martial artist shaped like a bamboo pole smiled at Lin Ming. However, his smile harbored ill intent.

They judged whether or not someone was weak with two criteria. First was how they felt about this person, and second was how long it took them to climb up to the 22nd level. The later one climbed up, the weaker one was assumed to be.

Although this type of judgment wasn't necessarily accurate, it was still better than randomly guessing.

After all, nearly all the martial artists present had extremely solid foundations and the Law fluctuations around them were vivid. Moreover, many of these people were hiding their aura so it was difficult for others to judge them based on that alone.

“Brother Long, Brother Fei, it’s quite rare for a little early Divine Sea brat to appear here. How about you let me handle him?” The thin martial artist who was smiling at Lin Ming said to the other two people around him with a true essence sound transmission.

“Hehe, even if he’s at the early Divine Sea, he might not be weak!”

“I certainly understand this, but in equal conditions, wouldn’t it always be easier to deal with someone with a low cultivation than a higher cultivation? Brother Long, Brother Fei, you’re both so strong and this little brother here is so weak. Now that there is actually an opponent who showed up that climbed so slowly and also has a low cultivation, won’t you look after this little brother of yours?”

In order for the thin martial artist to be the one to challenge Lin Ming, he flattered again and again. He simply didn’t know who Lin Ming was. Although the twin hosts had introduced Lin Ming, the participants had all been busy crawling up the Divine Seal Altar at the time. Although they heard of him, they didn’t have an image of him in mind. Even Nether Limitless and Bloodless Sword didn’t know who Lin Ming was.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Lin is being targeted.”

The Ancient Phoenix Clan’s disciples were all watching Lin Ming. Currently, Lin Ming was the only person of the Ancient Phoenix Clan who had reached the 22nd step.

As for Yan Littlemoon and Xiao Ping, they were still hard at work climbing up the 20th step.

“Humph, they actually think that our Senior-apprentice Brother Lin is easy to bully! I wonder just how strong he is…”

Of the participants that were able to reach the 22nd step, none of them could be underestimated.

“These people think I’m some fat sheep or something.” Lin Ming faintly smiled. “My climbing is relatively slow and my cultivation is also at the early Divine Sea; it’s not strange that I’m being targeted. My cultivation is the lowest of the participants here. This is also good. I was worried that I would have to spend some time looking for an opponent, but now someone delivered themselves straight to me.”

Lin Ming grinned.

As the thin martial artist saw Lin Ming’s happy expression, he frowned. Why was this boy smiling?

Just as he was thinking this, the sound of exploding energy erupted from the far off distance, following by a pitiful scream. Some people had already begun fighting!

The first one to attack was Nether Limitless!

Using the Space Laws, Nether Limitless instantly crossed 100,000 feet, actually arriving right in front of the person furthest from him! With his personality, he instead decided to fight the one furthest from him!

That person was immediately frightened out of his mind.

Just as that person was about to raise his weapon, Nether Limitless’s katana had already cut out, slashing through his protective true essence.

Peng!

That person’s protective true essence shattered and he was sent flying backwards, vomiting blood!

Nether Limitless had kept his hand. This was the real world and those that died would not revive somewhere else. However, the rules of this grand competition forbid intentional murder.

The martial artist who was struck backwards was wrapped up in a layer of purple energy before he even landed.

This purple energy rapidly healed the martial artist’s wounds. At the same time, it also brought him hurtling downwards to the 21st level!

If one lost, they would have to fall down one step!

Nether Limitless’s attack had become a signal. At this time, a massive number of participants struck out with their attacks.

The battle had begun!

Chapter 1238 – The One Who Should Be Sorry Is Me

Chapter 1238 – The One Who Should Be Sorry Is Me

…

…

…

"Let the battles begin!"

"War has broken out!"

The two twin hosts spiritedly shouted.

At that moment, most of the participants on the 22nd step began to battle each other!

Even though they were all participants that had reached the 22nd step, the disparity in strength between them was enormous!

The strong would only need several breaths of time to kill the weak!

And from the very start, the powerhouses had already chosen their targets. As soon as the battle began, they rushed towards their chosen opponents.

This was basically a battlefield where the strong slaughtered the weak!

Of course, there were some people that misjudged the strength of others. Once they made this fatal mistake, they might find victory difficult or even have kicked a wall and be defeated instead. Although one was strong, with some bad luck, they might encounter someone stronger. They could only embrace their own defeat.

The accuracy of one's eyesight was also another important standard that dictated whether or not one would be able to pass the 22nd step.

If one had poor eyesight, it was impossible to blame others.

Once the battle began, all of the martial artists in the arena were roused to the extreme.

There was no need to mention martial artists who had fellow disciples of the same sect competing on the Divine Seal Altar. They went all out in shouting.

As for those martial artists that didn't have any fellow disciples competing or their fellow disciples had already been eliminated, they still shouted as loudly as they could, cheering for the martial artists that originated from their great world.

In short, with these billions of people present and watching these hundred thousand plus geniuses compete, a wild and manic atmosphere spread through the crowd, turning everyone crazy!

For a martial artist that walked down the road of martial arts, they had to encounter all sorts of dangers, slaughtering, arduous and high-intensity training, risking their lives, playing the games of intrigue and betrayal, every martial artist lived under a tremendous pressure. They needed a way to vent!

"Senior-apprentice Brother Dragon One, you can do it!"

Of the four great God Beast Clans, besides Lin Ming, only Dragon One had reached the 22nd step to become one of the 4000-5000 martial artists there.

To be ranked 4000-5000 out of the participants of 1000 great worlds was already an extremely impressive result!

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin is being targeted!"

"Senior Apprentice Brother Lin, be careful!"

The disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were completely focused on Lin Ming. At this time, on the 22nd step of the Divine Seal Altar, the thin martial artist grasped a long staff as he walked towards Lin Ming. The 22nd step included participants of varying levels; it was possible to bump into some powerful genius!

Qin Xingxuan clenched her fists together. Mu Qianyu held onto her hands; she could also feel the nervousness coming from Qin Xingxuan. This was a battle in the real world. It was possible that one could be severely wounded.

Explosions of energy, horrified screams, whistling winds, muffled sounds, violent shockwaves, all sorts of brutal battle scenes were occurring all over. At the same time, the thin martial artist pointed his staff at Lin Ming's head, challenge in his eyes!

"Brat, I must say I'm sorry. This is a battlefield where the strong prey on the weak. Weaklings like you are doomed to be stepping stones for masters like me. Because of the rules, I'll be a bit gentler. For you to fall underneath my hands is also your good luck. At the very least, I won't severely injure you to the point where it affects your next match."

The thin martial artist chuckled. Then, he flourished the staff in his hands, his killing intent locked onto Lin Ming. In that instant, he was like a spider hunting an insect caught in his web.

Lin Ming smiled. "The one that should be sorry is me. But, you're quite lucky that I am your opponent. I also know how things are. I'll be gentle with you."

"Brat, you are courting death!" The thin martial artist's eyes widened. An early Divine Sea boy actually dared to be so arrogant in front of him!

"I've changed my mind. In this battle I will break all your bones!"

The thin martial artist shouted out loud and smashed his staff at Lin Ming.

His speed was quick. As his staff came pounding down, it contained the solemn weight of the Earth Laws.

This staff strike was like a falling mountain. Not only was it terrifyingly powerful, but it was nearly impossible to dodge!

All of those that could step onto the 22nd step were top 50 ranked characters of their great world. They were chosen prides of heaven that were coddled since birth. Their moves were naturally unordinary!

Even if the thin martial artist judged himself superior to Lin Ming, he still put his full strength behind this attack. On the 22nd step, there was no truly weak individual, only those that were relatively weaker. If one underestimated their enemy, they would truly suffer a miserable loss.

Within Lin Ming's pupils, each and every movement of the thin martial artist was clearly reflected.

"Earth Laws, four level Concepts, moreover he has fused them perfectly together. This is the same as before I comprehended the fifth level Concept of Thunder and Fire!"

Lin Ming could instantly see through the strength of this thin martial artist. "Since I'm facing other participants now and not simulation spirit bodies, there shouldn't be any other tricks played on me."

Lin Ming languidly brought up the Phoenix Blood Spear and swept it out. He only used the Fire Laws, with the first four level Concepts fused together – Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

Hu hu hu –

Flames burned. As Lin Ming thrust out his spear, a blue lotus bloomed atop it.

Lin Ming's spear was extremely fast. The brown true essence that the thin martial artist sent out was instantly seared away. All he saw was a beautiful blue lotus appear in front of him before a wave of blue flames rushed towards him.

"What!?"

The thin martial artist was shocked.

He suddenly realized that his opponent was far more formidable than he had guessed!

“Is there a mistake here!? An early Divine Sea martial artist I casually found is actually so strong! His striking power actually surpasses my own!”

The thin man drew backwards. At the same time, a thick brown-colored barrier appeared around him.

Earth Protection Shield!

The Earth Laws were weak in attacking but excelled in defense.

The thin martial artist had absolute confidence in his own Earth Protection Shield!

“What shit luck! I was completely mistaken and actually ran into a master of the Fire Laws! I can only defensively counterattack and try some roundabout tactics. I must withstand the first several waves of his attacks and look for a chance to defeat him. If I don’t save as much energy as possible then I’ll be in danger once I reach the 24th or 25th step!”

The thin martial artist’s thoughts raced. As a martial artist skilled in the Earth Laws, defensively counterattacking was the field he excelled in the most.

However, just as Lin Ming’s blue flames enveloped the thin martial artist’s Earth Protection Shield, an unbelievable scene occurred.

The fire true essence was pervasive, digging through every single weakness it could find. Moreover, it also contained the attribute of endlessness, causing the thin martial artist’s Earth Protection Shield to rapidly disintegrate!

At this speed, the Earth Protection Shield would be completely burnt through in just several breaths of time!

"How is this possible? He clearly only understands the fourth level Concept of the Fire Laws, so how can he burn through my shield!?"

The thin martial artist didn't even have the time to ponder this. At this time, Lin Ming stepped forwards and appeared right in front of him.

Eight Inner Hidden Gates – four gates open!

The power of several million jins erupted. Lin Ming's spear came smashing down onto that brown barrier.

Kacha!

It was like a several million jin heavy hammer crashed into a bronze bell. With a terrifying eruption, cracks began appearing in the thin martial artist's Earth Protection Shield.

"Crack… it cracked!?"

The thin martial artist originally thought that his shield would be able to persist for several more breaths of time, giving him some time to change his methods. But, the shield had already completely collapsed.

Lin Ming took advantage of this opportunity and brought the Phoenix Blood Spear pounding down on the thin martial artist.

The thin martial artist was frightened to the point that his soul nearly evaporated. He wanted to take out a magic tool from his spatial ring but he no longer had enough time.

The Phoenix Blood Spear heavily crashed onto the thin martial artist's protective true essence.

If even his Earth Protection Shield couldn't block this attack, then his protective true essence would be even more useless.

With a loud explosive sound, the thin martial artist stuffily humphed as he was sent soaring backwards while coughing out a mouthful of blood.

And in his right hand he had just taken out a golden shield. This golden shield was half the height of a human and shining with a dazzling light; it was a low-grade spirit artifact. However, there was no time to use it.

Lin Ming's attack had been too fast and too fierce, bringing with it an unstoppable momentum. The thin martial artist simply didn't have enough time to defend against it. By the time he brought out his shield, he had been sent flying back!

"Fuck this… aren't you too strong…?"

The thin martial artist opened his mouth to speak but all that came out was gurgled blood. And at this time, a purple energy wrapped around him.

As this purple energy healed his wounds, it also brought him back down to the 21st step.

This meant that he would have to climb up to the 22nd step again. If he climbed up once more, it would consume even more of his strength.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin won!"

"So fierce! He won so easily!"

Seeing Lin Ming win so easily, the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were left in a bit of a daze. They originally thought that even if Lin Ming won, he would still take some time to do so.

"Too amazing! He hasn't met those abnormal freaks yet. That staff-wielding martial artist looks like a frail stick; how could he ever compare with our Senior-apprentice Brother Lin?"

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin is awesome! Too fierce!"

The disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were all overjoyed. They naturally didn't think that they would be weaker than others. No one wanted to destroy their own hopes and ambitions, because their power was correlated with their own faith. Even if they had such thoughts, they would never voice them out loud.

"Brother! Damnit!"

Not too far from Lin Ming, those two fellows that had surrounded Lin Ming with the thin fellow were glaring at him. They had clearly been his companions.

One of them had already finished his battle. If he was able to finish his battle so quickly, he naturally wasn't one of the weaker participants.

That martial artist stared at Lin Ming, fear flashing in his eyes.

Lin Ming thought little of it. If this fellow wanted to fight then he would welcome it, but it seemed that he lacked the courage to do so.

That person finally didn't say anything more. He instead began climbing up to the 23rd step.

At this time, on the 22nd step, there were still many others ferociously fighting. In a one on one battle, no one was allowed to interfere.

Many of the people fighting didn't have too great of a strength disparity with their opponents. If they fought like this, it was extremely taxing. Even if they won they would have to consume an immense amount of strength. They would have to stay on the 22nd step for some time to restore themselves.

The truth was that the competition taking place on the Divine Seal Altar did not forbid the use of recovery pills. But, the medicinal efficacy contained within recovery pills was not completely consistent with a martial artist's own true essence. Using three or four was fine, but if one used too many then that would cause their true essence to become impure and also affect their combat strength.

Many people were like Lin Ming and ended their battles early. They leapt onto the cliff and began to climb to the 23rd step. The further they went, the stronger their opponents would be.

Lin Ming leapt. His body flew up like a bird, crossing hundreds of feet at a time.

On the 23rd level, the pressure increased once more. But, those people that were able to conclude their battles early were masters amongst masters. Even in the face of this pressure, the speed at which they climbed was still fast.

Chapter 1239 – Crimson Strifecloud's Daughter

Chapter 1239 – Crimson Strifecloud's Daughter

…

…

…

As Lin Ming started to climb up to the 23rd step, the Ancient Dragon Clan's Dragon One was defeated!

The one who defeated Dragon One was a small and ordinary young man with nothing special about him. But, in front of him, Dragon One still suffered a miserable loss.

It could only be said that there were far too many masters in the semifinals.

With Dragon One sent back to the 21st step, the result was that he had fallen behind Yan Littlemoon.

"The Dragon Clan's Dragon One was defeated!"

Fairy Feng said from beside Huo Violentstone.

"Mm… I saw." Huo Violentstone said. He nonchalantly turned his head to look at the person responsible for the Ancient Dragon Clan disciples here, Laughing Dragon.

At this time, Laughing Dragon couldn't laugh at all.

As for Huo Violentstone, he didn't gloat over this. And he definitely didn't let Lin Ming's success go to his head. This was because the intensity of the semifinals was far higher than the preliminaries'. The difficult stages were still to come. There was no way for Huo Violentstone to feel relaxed.

As Laughing Dragon felt Huo Violentstone's gaze on him, he said, "Hehe, Old Huo, it looks like the four God Beast Clans only have your Ancient Phoenix Clan's Lin Ming remaining. It seems Dragon One will at most be able to climb to the 23rd or 24th step before he is defeated. It's impossible for him to go any further. As for your Yan Littlemoon, she's in the same position. Dragon Two, Dragon Three, Xiao Ping, and also the disciples of the Kirin Clan and Roc Clan will be much worse. None of them should be able to pass these semifinals."

To pass the semifinals was the same as entering the top 10,000 ranks of the Divine Realm. This was truly far too difficult a task for Dragon One, Yan Littlemoon, and the others.

"Lin Ming will definitely enter the finals!" Huo Violentstone confidently said.

"Haha, I hope so. Although I have to admit that I'm feeling a bit sour over this, I still hope that the four God Beast Clans will do well."

The four God Beast Clans competed and plotted against each other in peaceful times. But when facing a mutual enemy, they still banded together to protect their interests.

No matter which clan it was, it was a wonderful occasion to produce a strong powerhouse. Of course, having this powerhouse appear in their own clan was always the best.

Huo Violentstone didn't say anything else. Instead, he looked towards the Divine Seal Altar and Lin Ming. His normally loud and boisterous manner was completely restrained and his expression was a bit solemn.

In these semifinals, one step could lead to life and one step could lead to death!

This was because the disparity in strength of the martial artists could be extremely great. In this competition, if someone were to easily defeat someone on one step, they could themselves be easily defeated on the next step!

Thus, each fight was not easy at all.

And at this time, more and more martial artists climbed up to the 23rd step.

This was the same situation as before. The martial artists that climbed to the 23rd step waited for some more martial artists to ascend.

Those martial artists that first mounted the 23rd step had a great advantage over the others.

This was because they were able to meditate on the Divine Seal Altar, eliminating the pill impurities within their bodies as they restored themselves to a better combat state.

Soon, 3000 people gathered on the 23rd step.

At this time, it was no longer Nether Limitless signaling the start of the battle. Rather, anyone that decided on who they wanted to fight would instantly begin.

Someone began running towards Lin Ming.

This person was a tall and explosive young woman. Her steps were lithe and she was as dexterous as a cat.

She had deep crimson red hair, and her skin was not white like jade, but rather a healthy and sexual wheat color. She wore tight-fitting leather armor. It was unknown what vicious beast this leather came from, the beautiful patterns were naturally engraved into it. Although the vicious beast had died a long time ago, these patterns still emitted faint fluctuations of the Laws. This was an indication that the vicious beast had been of a very high level.

The tight leather armor was extremely short, revealing her smooth and flat belly and intoxicating navel. It also served to accentuate and bring out her tall and busty twin peaks.

On the lower half of her body, she wore a very tight skirt that was made of similar leather. This tight skirt completely followed the curves of her round thighs.

Her weapon was a sickle blade. The blade edge shined with a cold light, perfectly fusing together with the deadly and exaggerated curvature of the weapon.

The young woman smiled as she looked at Lin Ming, bringing up the sickle blade in her hands.

"This woman..." Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. The feeling she gave off was that of a wild leopard: beautiful, vigorous, and yet filled with an explosive force and exotic danger.

This woman was far fiercer than the last martial artist he had faced.

In the arena, the martial artists of the Ancient Phoenix Clan also noticed her.

"That woman... seems a bit familiar." Palace Master Lian Zhen said from beside Huo Violentstone.

Huo Violentstone was stunned for some time. Then, he ruefully smiled and said, "If I'm not wrong then she is the daughter of Crimson Strifecloud, the current Crimson Dragon Envoy of the Crimson Light Holy Lands. Her mother should be the daughter of our Ancient Phoenix Clan's last patriarch, the little princess that had a perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. In the past, there were countless pursuers that chased after her, but in the end she was married off to Crimson Strifecloud."

As Huo Violentstone spoke to here, he deeply sighed. Once upon a time, he too had been one of the little princess' suitors.

In truth, although the Ancient Phoenix Clan had married the little princess off to Crimson Strifecloud because of political reasons, it was by no means wronging or harming her. Crimson Strifecloud had been an extraordinary character. With the little princess' background, her beauty, her phoenix bloodline, and her primordial yin, Crimson Strifecloud would not have treated her coldly.

Even so, Huo Violentstone had always kept this matter in his heart. In his opinion, marrying someone off in exchange for benefits was the sorrow of the weak.

"No wonder. She really does look like her mother. It's just that her skin color and hair color are different. That coloring should have been inherited from her father!" Lian Zhen nodded, his expression complex. He didn't think that one day, Lin Ming would battle the daughter of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's little princess!

"Not only is her coloring that of her father, but her disposition is also her father's. I can see none of her mother's virtuous grace and gentleness on her."

The past Crimson Strifecloud had bronze skin and a full head of red hair. His character was well known to all.

And now, his daughter was also the same.

"You're the one called Lin Ming? I know you!" The red-haired woman said. She actually knew who Lin Ming was.

"And you are?" Lin Ming was a bit startled. He wasn't like Nether Limitless, who had rushed straight up to the top 20 ranks of the Divine Seal Decree, causing everyone in the Divine Realm to know of him. Rather, he had finished the preliminaries ranked around 10,000 on the Divine Seal Decree. That shouldn't be a level where everyone would know of him.

"My father is Crimson Strifecloud. I heard Father say that you defeated the spirit body he left behind in the Ancient Phoenix Clan's Illusionary God Combat Array. Is that right?"

Lin Ming froze for a moment; this was actually Crimson Strifecloud's daughter!

Wasn't this a bit too theatrical?

He had defeated Crimson Strifecloud and now his daughter had appeared!

From the sound of it, this woman had deliberately come here for him?

He carefully looked at this young woman in front of him. He could feel the aura of the Ancient Phoenix Clan from her, and could also feel that she had the Ancient Phoenix bloodline. Of course, her bloodline density was much lighter than Yan Littlemoon's. This was the shortcoming of transplanting the Ancient Phoenix bloodline. As long as one continued reproducing down generations, the bloodline would become increasingly pale, slowly fading until it finally disappeared.

“Your mother is the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s little princess?” When Lin Ming was at Fire Spirit Star, he had also heard the stories.

“That’s right. But my mother is a weak woman. Luckily, I am not like her.”

As the red-haired woman spoke, she stroked the edge of her sickle blade with a single finger before stretching out her tongue and licking the blade. This was an extremely wild and barbaric action, one filled with sex appeal.

Lin Ming frowned. He didn’t like listening to this woman’s words, as if she were disparaging and looking down upon her own mother. “You and I can be considered as having come from the same roots. Are you planning on being my enemy?”

In Lin Ming’s opinion, if this red-haired woman dared to challenge him, she naturally had the confidence that she could win. Her goal was to use him as a stepping stone to reach the 24th step. For two geniuses who came from the same roots to step on each other to reach the next step, this was a bit too dramatic.

The red-haired young woman laughed. “Same roots? You wish. I come from the Crimson Light Holy Lands, a Great World King level influence. As for you, you are only from the Ancient Phoenix Clan, a mere ordinary Holy Land. How could you say we come from the same roots?

“The reason I will fight is not because I think highly of you, but because you managed to defeat the spirit body phantom that my father left behind within the Illusionary God Combat Array during his youth. Although you defeated that phantom spirit body, the truth is that it was simply unable to reproduce the true strength of my father during his youth. Moreover, that matter leaves me very uncomfortable. Aren’t you just a common martial artist? How could my father possibly lose to you? Thus, I must defeat you.”

The red-haired woman said as if this was all a matter of course. Her words carried with them an arrogant tone. This was a natural feeling of superiority that one was born with. In fact, many people of Great World King Holy Lands looked down at those from ordinary Holy Lands. In particular, someone like Lin Ming was even more of a commoner than the rest. He was simply the weed amongst the grass.

“I see.” Lin Ming said, thinking this whole situation a bit funny.

“To think that you can still smile, how interesting. It’s as if you don’t realize what sort of situation you’re in. Soon, you won’t be able to smile anymore. Before our battle begins, let me tell you something. My talent is the greatest of my father’s 100 children, and I am far stronger than he was in his youth! Finally, let me tell you my name so that you may carve it down in your mind. My name is Crimson Wishjade.”

For Crimson Wishjade to encounter Lin Ming here, it couldn’t be called a stroke of fate. Rather, for a peak influence like the Crimson Light Holy Lands, they naturally wouldn’t allow their most outstanding disciples to miss out on the First Martial Meeting. Crimson Wishjade was originally born too early to enter the First Martial Meeting. However, she entered a time enchantment and by adjusting the flow of time, she was able to pass several hundred years in just several years.

“If that’s the case, then let me teach you a lesson on behalf of your mother!” Lin Ming extracted the Phoenix Blood Spear. He had always felt a trace of sympathy towards the little princess who was forced to marry into the Crimson Light Holy Lands because of her clan’s politics. And now, the little princess’ daughter actually took the Crimson Light Holy Lands as her honor and the Ancient Phoenix Clan as her shame. This left him with a bad taste in his mouth.

“Teach me? Heh! It seems you want to die.”

Crimson Wishjade revealed a thick murderous intent. And in the audience, a tall middle-aged man with a full head of red hair was watching this battle.

He was Crimson Strifecloud.

“Little Jade, you really are giving me a headache here. Your character will cause you to suffer a loss sooner or later… I already warned you that Lin Ming isn’t simple at all, and I can’t even tell how this battle will end up. I don’t think that your chances of winning are even 50% and yet you are actually so full of confidence…” Crimson Strifecloud sighed.

Currently, Lin Ming was countless times more powerful than he was in the past when he had rushed through the Illusionary God Combat Array.

However, Lin Ming’s opponent was also powerful. In the past, the Crimson Strifecloud within the Illusionary God Combat Array was only at the eighth stage of Life Destruction, but the current Crimson Wishjade was at the late Divine Sea realm. This was also the reason that she was so confident. If a late Divine Sea martial artist couldn’t defeat an early Divine Sea martial artist, then that was truly shameful!

Chapter 1240 – Absolute Suppression

Chapter 1240 – Absolute Suppression

…

…

…

"Although you are only from an ordinary Holy Land background, I will fight you with everything I have from the start. I will carve into your heart the glory of the Crimson Light Holy Lands. I will defeat you with my greatest strength so that you can understand the disparity between us!"

As Crimson Wishjade spoke, red scales began to appear on her face. Her hair grew longer and even her body grew taller.

Her long and slender legs filled with strength. Once this strength erupted, even a piece of divine iron that could forge a spirit artifact would be easily kicked in half.

"This is the Crimson Light Family's unique bloodline – Scorching Blood!" Huo Violentstone grimly said from within the audience.

In the Divine Realm, there were many families that had their own bloodline inheritances.

The Scorching Blood bloodline, capable of making one's blood burn like fire. Although it was inferior to the Ancient Phoenix bloodline in quality, it won in density. The Scorching Blood bloodline could be inherited even without reducing the density. Through screening over numerous generations, their bloodline became stronger. This was a seal carved into their very genetics that could not be changed!

As for the Ancient Phoenix Clan, their phoenix bloodline was only transplanted after birth. The degree of their hereditary transmission was much lower and the amount of phoenix blood they could transplant was also lower, because high quality phoenix blood was simply far too precious.

Hu – !

Crimson Wishjade's body ignited with monstrous waves of flames. The Crimson Light World King Family also focused on fire-based abilities. This was the reason Crimson Strifecloud married the Ancient Phoenix Clan's little princess in the past.

"Little Jade… although her words are a bit too arrogant, she does have the capabilities to fight him. At least she isn't blindly underestimating him. Maybe she can win…" In the audience, Crimson Strifecloud whispered to himself. He was aware of Crimson Wishjade's complete strength. But, as for where the limits of Lin Ming's strength lay, he didn't know at all. Victory or defeat would depend on how much Lin Ming's strength surpassed his imagination.

At this time, on the 23rd step of the Divine Seal Altar, Lin Ming was facing Crimson Wishjade, who was fully displaying her Scorching Blood bloodline. He faintly smiled and said, "You want me to understand the disparity between us, but… I fear that you may be mistaken in just who is weaker and who is stronger."

"What shameless boasting! A disciple of an ordinary Holy Land is actually so arrogant! I will show you just what happens to people like you!"

Omm –

Crimson Wishjade raised her sickle blade up high. At this time, the phantom of an immortal firelord appeared behind her. The power of scorching blood swelled up as a conflagration of flames rose upwards, galloping forwards like a rushing army. Raging flames spread throughout the surrounding area!

On the relatively quiet 23rd step, such an explosive battle was extremely eye-catching!

It had to be known that the entire 23rd step was covered with an immense Empyrean pressure. The weaker martial artists weren't even able to display 30% of their full strength; it was impossible for them to release such a massive attack!

"Crimson Flame Domain! This is the Crimson Flame Domain!"

There were many types of fire domains. The one that Crimson Wishjade used now was the Crimson Flame Domain. It was much stronger than the Blue Lotus Domain. This sort of domain was intrinsically fused into the Scorching Blood bloodline of the Crimson Light Family.

As monstrous flames burned into the skies, the entire audience and all the martial artists on the 23rd step turned towards them.

This was a battle between two great powerhouses!

"Mm? Someone is using the Crimson Flame Domain, and it's a woman too… I think she should be the extreme genius being raised in the Crimson Light Holy Lands and also the peak master of the Crimson Light World. Her opponent is… eh? Her opponent is Lin Ming!"

On the spirit boat floating in front of the Divine Seal Altar, the two hosts shouted out with gusto. They had looked over the information of all the participants here, thus they knew most of the geniuses and where they came from.

They had originally no longer bothered with Lin Ming, but now, Lin Ming caught their attention once again. Many of those in the audience also noticed them.

Then, Crimson Wishjade attacked. Her sickle blade slashed down!

In that moment, Crimson Wishjade seemed to fuse with the phantom firelord behind her. The Crimson Flame Domain expanded outwards, enveloping the entire battlefield.

Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and swept it outwards!

Blue Lotus Flame Dance!

In a battle of Fire Laws against Fire Laws, a towering blue lotus rose into the air. A brilliant blue beam of fire shot straight out!

However, as this beam of fire hurtled towards Crimson Wishjade's blade light, the beam of fire suddenly slowed down as if there was a tremendous amount of resistance!

On the other hand, Crimson Wishjade's sickle blade seemed to speed up with overwhelming momentum, making one's heart race.

"My Crimson Flame Domain can gather all fire element heaven and earth origin energy without needing to use any true essence. It is capable of ruling over all flames in this world. For you to use the Fire Laws to battle with me is simply seeking your own death."

Crimson Wishjade coldly sneered. Her saber light suddenly split into thousands of little wisps. Every wisp of saber light was like a petal of a red lotus. For a time, the entire sky was flooded with countless red lotus petals; it was an incomparably gorgeous scene!

"Since that's what you think, I will use the Fire Laws to defeat you!"

Lin Ming smiled. In terms of the Fire Laws, regardless of comprehension or utilization, he had never felt weak, especially against his peers. Against them, he was fully confident that he was king!

Crimson Wishjade had the Crimson Flame Domain, but as for him, he had a transcendent divine might!

Moreover, Lin Ming had already comprehended the fifth level Concept of the Fire Laws – Virtual Fire! This was a boundary that ordinary geniuses could never hope to match.

As Crimson Wishjade rushed towards him, from within Lin Ming's inner world, the Heretical God Seedling indignantly spread out. The power of fire rushed out like a tide; the Heretical God Force opened to the limit!

In that instant, on top of Lin Ming's spear light, the phantom of a divine tree seemed to appear. This phantom only appeared for a brief instant, but in this instant, Lin Ming's spear light became several times sharper!

Even the Fire Laws between the heavens and earth seemed to be influenced by this and twist around. The fire origin energy around Crimson Wishjade that rushed towards him like a surging tide was suddenly cut apart and controlled by Lin Ming!

Peng peng peng!

In the split moment when the divine tree phantom appeared, those thousands of red lotus petals that fluttered in the skies were all destroyed as if they had been scorched to nothing!

Within the Crimson Flame Domain, all of the wild fire origin energy there was controlled by Lin Ming!

What?

Crimson Wishjade was shocked. She had never encountered such a scene before!

In a battle of martial artists that used the same Laws, the one that was able to use their comprehension of Laws to control the heaven and earth origin energy could directly suppress the other.

Crimson Wishjade's perception was extremely high to begin with, and she had also inherited the Crimson Light Family's Burning Blood bloodline as well as phoenix bloodline from her mother who possessed the perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline. To her, the Ancient Phoenix bloodline was the finishing touch upon her own bloodline. After comprehending the Crimson Flame Domain, she was even more confident that no one could challenge her in the aspect of Fire Laws!

But now, she was the one being suppressed by Lin Ming.

"Crimson Flame Domain, completely open!"

In that instant, brilliant golden rays of light shot out from all over Crimson Wishjade's body. The skin of her body turned a deep fiery red.

She had activated her Scorching Blood bloodline to the limit.

As Lin Ming faced Crimson Wishjade giving her all, he merely swept his spear out.

Crack!

Lin Ming shouted out loud. All of the surrounding fire origin energy was swept up by Lin Ming's spear. A giant tear formed in Crimson Wishjade's Crimson Flame Domain!

Lin Ming strode into the Crimson Flame Domain. At this time, he was like a war god descended to the world, unstoppable and indestructible. As he walked forwards, every single bit of fire origin energy gathered to him. There was even some fire origin energy that manifested into spiritual flame beings. There were fire crows, fire kirins, fire wolves, and so forth. All of these beings surrounded Lin Ming, bowing to him, worshipping him! This was a phenomenon that occurred when one comprehended the Fire Laws to an exceedingly high degree, capable of ruling over the world!

Faintly, behind Lin Ming, the phantom of a divine tree appeared. It took root in the endless inferno of flames. It rose higher and higher, growing into a towering tree!

Within this sea of flames, a divine tree was born!

This phenomenon was seen by all present, but no one knew what it meant.

"This is..."

Within the Divine Seal Altar, the gray-robed old man was watching all of this happen. He paid particular attention to this divine tree.

The gray-robed old man was extremely interested in Lin Ming. He didn't think it was strange if Lin Ming knew a transcendent divine might, but the key point was that he didn't know of the Heretical God Force.

The Divine Realm had existed for countless billions of years. Before ancient times, there were even more ancient times, continuing all the way back until the creation of the universe!

In all this time, there was an untold number of Empyreans that had appeared. And among these Empyreans, many of them had created their own transcendent divine might.

Of these transcendent divine mights, 90% of them had been lost to time. But, there was a small number that had been preserved. These were located all over the Divine Realm or in some unknown ancient mystic realms.

Sometimes, these mystic realms weren’t dangerous at all. After all, far too long a time had passed. Any powerful array formation would have weakened or even vanished, and any formidable guardian beast would have exhausted its lifespan and died.

To obtain the transcendent divine mights located in these mystic realms, it depended on one’s luck and not strength.

The gray-robed old man had an extraordinary degree of experience, but even he didn’t know every single transcendent divine might.

There was no one that could accomplish such a feat.

Moreover, many transcendent divine mights had special peculiarities. For instance, the Heretical God Force was not an offensive transcendent divine might but an auxiliary arcane skill. Even if one saw the towering divine tree that rose in the boundless sea of fire behind Lin Ming, it was impossible for them to judge whether or not this phenomenon originated from an arcane skill, cultivation method, special physique, or bloodline.

“How interesting. I wonder just where this young boy comes from.”

The gray-robed old man muttered to himself. “This little baby girl can’t even force out his true strength. Luckily, there are some other nice talented brats ahead of her. If they fight Lin Ming, I should be able to see some more.”

At this time, on the 23rd step of the Divine Seal Altar, Lin Ming had already rushed towards the front of Crimson Wishjade. All of the surrounding fire origin energy was swept up around him, all of it under his control.

"You!"

Crimson Wishjade's pupils shrank. Her Crimson Flame Domain had actually been ripped open! Not just that, but within her own domain, he was actually able to grasp complete control of the Fire Laws and suppress her!

"Lin Ming is actually this strong!?"

In the audience, Huo Violentstone was extremely shocked. Even though Crimson Wishjade had such immense talent, she was still completely surpassed in a battle against Lin Ming. This was something he had never imagined from the start. After all, they hadn't seen Lin Ming's performance in the preliminaries, they had only seen the change in his merit points.

One's merit points and one's true combat strength were two different matters. Otherwise, the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting would have been simply settled with a ranking of merit points.

Lin Ming ignored this all. From between his eyebrows, the blood of the Ancient Phoenix burnt, emitting a flaming golden light!

Since he said he would use the Fire Laws to defeat Crimson Wishjade, he naturally wouldn't use his body transformation technique or the Thunder Laws. In Lin Ming's view, Crimson Wishjade was merely a peak talent of a Great World King Holy Land. As for the Crimson Light Holy Lands, they were only from a third-order world. Crimson Wishjade likely couldn't even compare with Wu Finalcloud, who came from the True Martial Great World, a second-order world.

Chapter 1241 – Too Shameless

Chapter 1241 – Too Shameless

…

…

…

Hu – !

A spear swept out.

The Crimson Flame Domain was ripped apart like a flimsy piece of paper. Lin Ming's spear swept towards Crimson Wishjade's waist.

Clang!

Crimson Wishjade pulled up her sickle blade, wanting to block this spear. The sickle blade was known for being a strange and tricky weapon that was hard to defend against. In terms of meeting other weapons in a head on collision though, it was inferior to the sword!

If this were a direct melee then Crimson Wishjade would naturally suffer a loss. She felt her arms shake, her hands turn numb, and her entire body was thrown backwards.

Lin Ming stepped forwards, using Golden Roc Shattering the Void to instantly close the distance between them.

His spear came pounding down once more!

Clang! Clang! Clang!

With another violent and fierce impact, Crimson Wishjade's arm went numb and her hand turned red with blood. However, Lin Ming's attacks came in a ruthless and aggressive barrage, simply not giving her any chance to counterattack!

Her high comprehension of the Fire Laws had been completely suppressed by the Heretical God Seedling!

Her Crimson Flame Domain was torn open by Lin Ming!

Her tricky and unpredictable sickle skills were forced down by Lin Ming's melee assault, rendering her incapable of displaying her abilities!

This was omnidirectional suppression!

As everyone looked at this battle they were left speechless. According to the hosts, this Crimson Wishjade was likely the peak genius of a great world, so how could she be suppressed so miserably?

"Is Lin Ming actually this strong? His opponent is a peak character of the Crimson Light World. Didn't I hear that Lin Ming was ranked around 10,000 on the Divine Seal Decree?"

"Even around 10,000 is extremely fierce. Moreover, the Divine Seal Decree rankings don't represent one's true strength."

"This is far too fierce. He's able to maintain such a brutal onslaught of attacks on the Divine Seal Altar's 23rd step, as if he isn't being suppressed at all."

Everyone could see that the Lin Ming in front of them was far more formidable than Crimson Wishjade. As for where his true strength lay, it was difficult to say.

"Lin Ming… how could he grow so quickly!?" Crimson Strifecloud grimly said, finding this unbelievable. Back in the past, when Lin Ming had defeated his eighth stage Life Destruction avatar with a seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation, his talent hadn't been much greater. His daughter Crimson Wishjade also had a similar level of talent. But now, the disparity was far too great.

On the center of the battlefield, Crimson Wishjade was crazily shouting, “Remember me! One day I will burn you to ash!”

Crimson Wishjade screamed. This was not so much a threat but an expression of her shame and anger!

Her arrogance had been foisted upon her since she was a child, growing all this time. Her father was a high level figure of the Crimson Light Holy Lands, and she also possessed the Ancient Phoenix bloodline and the Scorching Blood bloodline. Her talent was amazing, thus she had always had the right to be proud and rampant.

“If your strength matched how arrogant you were, then I would let you burn me as you wish. But what a pity, you don’t have this ability.”

Lin Ming’s spear swept out once more, breaking through Crimson Wishjade’s sickle blade light and continuing to sweep towards her!

In the semifinals, killing another participant was prohibited. Lin Ming simply avoided Crimson Wishjade’s vital points and instead swept his spear up to her butt!

The flames were overwhelming, unstoppable.

Crimson Wishjade’s face flushed red. She brought her sickle blade cutting down, but even if her hand wasn’t injured as it was, she still wouldn’t be able to block Lin Ming’s spear light.

Peng!

Her protective true essence stopped the Phoenix Blood Spear for the briefest moment before collapsing to nothing.

Lin Ming’s spear continued onwards and smacked onto her butt.

By not using the spear edge and only using the spear shaft, the spear was not dissimilar to a large stick. Crimson Wishjade miserably screamed. She felt a burning pain on her ass as flames burnt up her skirt!

As the flames burned up her body, Crimson Wishjade began to panic. The fabric of her skirt was made from the hide of a 10,000 year fire rhino; its durability was equal to a top grade saint artifact's. Even so, it wouldn't be able to withstand Lin Ming's continued attacks. With just a few strikes it would definitely be damaged. At that time, once her skirt was torn apart, it would be unimaginable for her naked buttocks to be exposed to the world.

In the audience, everyone was shocked. Crimson Wishjade's skirt had a clear black mark on it. A dignified genius of the Crimson Light Holy Lands, a proud daughter of heaven, had actually been spanked on the butt by someone else!

"I-I'll kill you!"

Crimson Wishjade turned absolutely crazy.

This was simply the shame of her life. In front of billions of people, her butt had been struck by a man!

This was only a scene that would occur when a parent was punishing a child. Moreover, she was a child that had always been coddled; since when had she ever been treated like this, especially under the gazes of so many people?

She recalled Lin Ming's words; she remembered that he said he would teach her a lesson on behalf of her mother.

In that instant, a raging fire erupted in Crimson Wishjade's heart.

She was crazy with anger! Today's matters would certainly spread out and become a great joke to everyone. Even if she were to become a master of the Crimson Light Holy Lands in the future, today's events would still be privately spoken about. Even her opponents would use these events to mock her. This was a shame she would never be able to wash herself of!

“I will rip you to shreds!” Crimson Wishjade plunged towards Lin Ming like a wild cat. However, it was impossible to overcome the absolute disparity in strength between them.

Lin Ming’s spear crushed through her sickle blade light and continued smashing towards her butt.

As Crimson Wishjade saw this brilliant spear light, she cried out in alarm!

Peng!

This strike was even heavier than the last!

With a scream, she was sent flying backwards!

But Lin Ming continued chasing after her.

The truth was that as soon as Crimson Wishjade admitted defeat, this fight would be over. But, she stubbornly didn’t open her mouth to speak these words, because admitting defeat of her own volition was also shameful!

Lin Ming instantly arrived in front of Crimson Wishjade, about to bring his long spear down on her once more. But at this time, a trace of pleading appeared in Crimson Wishjade’s angry eyes. She was frightened. If Lin Ming were to hit her again, then her skirt would really be torn apart. Even if she were to use fire energy to form a skirt, that skirt wouldn’t be as tough as the fire rhino leather skirt. It was impossible for her to block the naked image that everyone would see.

At this time, an angry and vigorous voice rang out, “Enough!”

In that instant, a red shadow flew up from the audience, flying straight towards the Divine Seal Altar, A massive wave of energy came crashing down. Lin Ming found it impossible to raise his Phoenix Blood Spear, as if he had been stuck in a block of iron!

“Mm?”

Lin Ming frowned. He turned to see a tall red-haired middle-aged man floating a few hundred thousand feet away. This person had a similar aura to the Crimson Strifecloud in the Illusionary God Combat Array. It was clearly the true Crimson Strifecloud.

At this time, Crimson Strifecloud's face was gloomy. Although he also hoped that Crimson Wishjade would suffer a small loss, it was definitely not in this manner. No father wanted their daughter to receive such humiliation.

"Daddy!"

Crimson Wishjade's nose stung. She vented all of the anger and sorrow in her heart, "Daddy, kill him for me! Turn him into ash! Burn him! Kill him!"

"Enough!" Crimson Strifecloud angrily shouted, "Haven't you embarrassed yourself enough with your loss!?

"If you are weaker than others, then what else can you say by being insulted like this! I already warned you: do not be arrogant! Do not be conceited!"

Just as Crimson Strifecloud's voice fell, a figure emerged from thin air in front of Crimson Strifecloud. This person's aura was even more formidable than Crimson Strifecloud's, his strength like a constant weight atop Crimson Strifecloud's head!

This person floated high in the air, overlooking Crimson Strifecloud. He said without any feeling in his voice, "This is the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. All non-related personnel are prohibited from entering the martial field, otherwise, do not blame me for being rude!"

This person was the direct disciple of Empyrean Vast Universe – Xiao Daochild!

As a World King powerhouse and also an Empyrean descendant, even if the Crimson Light World King were to come here himself, Xiao Daochild wouldn't care for him at all, much less a mere Crimson Strifecloud.

Whether it was status or strength, Crimson Strifecloud was far inferior to Xiao Daochild.

“I apologize, Senior Xiao Daochild. This junior will immediately withdraw.”

Facing Xiao Daochild, Crimson Strifecloud was extremely humble. Even the Crimson Light Holy Lands was only the Holy Lands of a third-order world. In front of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, they weren’t anything at all.

“Daddy, I…”

Crimson Wishjade nearly fell into a bout of tears. She didn’t want to stay on this Divine Seal Altar anymore; she had lost far too much face!

Crimson Strifecloud’s expression was ice cold as he said, “Compete honestly and fairly for me. With your strength, you should be able to pass. If you cannot pass through these semifinals then I will punish you with a hundred years of confinement! As for today’s matters, consider this your lesson. And also…”

Crimson Strifecloud turned to Lin Ming, “Boy, you remember what happened today!”

Crimson Strifecloud said these words and then flew away. In truth, his last few words were only to maintain his own face. He simply couldn’t do anything to Lin Ming at all. With Lin Ming’s strength, he would surely blossom into splendor in this First Martial Meeting. There would be no way he could move against him.

In the audience, the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were all shocked speechless as they saw this.

“This boy is too shameless!” Huo Violentstone gulped. Then, he suddenly guffawed, “But… I like it!

“Those two strikes were well done! I’ve long disliked the Crimson Light Holy Lands. As for that little harlot, mercilessly beating her ass in public is what she deserves!”

These words were privately spoken to all around him. As Fairy Feng and Lian Zhen heard him, they were left utterly dumbfounded.

Chapter 1242 – Rapid Drop In Numbers

Chapter 1242 – Rapid Drop In Numbers

…

…

…

Lin Ming and Crimson Wishjade's battle was the most intense fight to erupt on the Divine Seal Altar so far, and also the highest level showdown. Everyone was watching it.

As for Nether Limitless and Bloodless Sword, after they defeated their opponents they didn't immediately climb up to the 24th step. Instead, they stopped for a moment to look at Lin Ming's battle.

"Interesting." Nether Limitless smiled. Then, he turned and began to climb up.

Bloodless Sword also began climbing up to the 24th step. In their eyes, Lin Ming was only worth paying some attention too, but he wasn't a great worry.

As for the other participants, they weren't able to remain so calm. The pressure that Lin Ming placed on them was far too great.

"What a terrifying fellow!"

"He's impossible to defeat!"

"Originally just characters like Nether Limitless, Bloodless Sword, and Dragon Fang were able to leave us gasping for breath, but now this dark horse Lin Ming has come from nowhere. How can we still live? If any of us aren't careful then we'll be ruined!"

Of the martial artists present, 99% of them didn't have any confidence in facing Lin Ming!

“This fellow is quite skilled. Isn’t he a participant from your True Martial World? He doesn’t seem like a disciple from your True Martial Holy Lands.”

Near Wu Finalcloud, a black-clothed swordsman with vibrant green hair said.

“He isn’t.” Wu Finalcloud frowned. He didn’t like to speak about Lin Ming; to him, Lin Ming was his shame.

“Indeed. Well, if such a person existed in your True Martial Holy Lands I would have known about him already. Brother Finalcloud, aren’t you the big brother of the True Martial World? While that Dragon Fang is a character that can’t be provoked, it seems even this Lin Ming is going to outshine you soon. Do you plan on doing anything?”

In the eyes of that green-haired youth, Crimson Wishjade was simply a martial artist from a third-order world; she was naturally weaker than Wu Finalcloud. Wu Finalcloud and Lin Ming should be able to fight for some time.

But, what he didn’t know was that Wu Finalcloud had already been defeated by Lin Ming. This battle had occurred in the Divine Dream World and it couldn’t be seen by outsiders.

“Who cares? If someone overshadows me, then I’m supposed to challenge them? Do I look like an idiot to you?” Wu Finalcloud responded.

The green-haired martial artist thought that this response didn’t suit the normally haughty and arrogant Wu Finalcloud. “Are you admitting that you aren’t his match?”

The green-haired martial artist thought something was a bit strange. In his opinion, it was natural for Wu Finalcloud to avoid Dragon Fang. As for Lin Ming, although he was able to defeat Crimson Wishjade, they should still be on par with each other. But now that he listened to Wu Finalcloud’s words, it seemed that he may have lost to Lin Ming before!

“I don’t need you to worry about me. You do what you want; it’s not my problem.”

Wu Finalcloud no longer spoke. He turned around to climb up the 24th step. He wasn't an idiot. If he knew that he would be suppressed by Lin Ming, why would he bother making such jokes? He believed that in that fight just now, Lin Ming hadn't even displayed half of his strength.

Wu Finalcloud even had a creeping suspicion that if Lin Ming were to fight with Dragon Fang, Bloodless Sword, or so on, it was still a mystery who was weaker and who was stronger.

Against such a freak, anyone that encountered him would be in for a bout of bad luck. He couldn't avoid him fast enough.

As for the green-haired swordsman that just spoke, Wu Finalcloud hoped that he would bump into Lin Ming and experience some suffering himself. This was simply how people were. After suffering a loss and also knowing that he wouldn't be able to win in the future, he also hoped that others would do what he did and eat defeat.

Wu Finalcloud climbed towards the 24th level. With his strength, as long as he didn't encounter the freakish powerhouses here and steadily continued upwards then it wouldn't be a problem for him to pass the semifinals.

"Amazing! After being low-key for such a long time, Lin Ming actually defeated Crimson Wishjade in a single fell swoop! Crimson Wishjade is amongst the greatest geniuses to appear in the Crimson Light Holy Lands! Moreover, he also easily defeated her! It seems that Lin Ming had been intentionally saving his strength!"

The two twin hosts shouted from above a spirit boat. They certainly didn't know that Lin Ming was being deliberately probed by someone as he fought the spirit bodies.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin has defeated the highest ranking martial artist from the Crimson Light Holy Lands? Moreover… he did it so easily?"

On the 21st step, Yan Littlemoon was shocked as she heard this. Because of where she was, she hadn't been able to see Lin Ming's battle at all.

The Crimson Light Holy Lands was the ruling power of the Crimson Light World, the great world where the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters were located. To the Ancient Phoenix Clan, that untouchable mountain known as the Crimson Light Holy Lands had actually been defeated by Lin Ming.

Yan Littlemoon felt this was a bit unbelievable. All of the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan began loudly cheering in unison.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Lin is too dashing!”

“Haha! Well fought! This feels great!”

“Our Ancient Phoenix Clan can finally hold our heads up with pride!”

The disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were all extremely excited. The Crimson Light Holy Lands had always been a pressure on them, and none of them had ever even thought about pushing back. But now, Lin Ming had done so, and he had done so amazingly.

He had truly and honestly swept away the Crimson Light Holy Lands! How could they not feel amazing about such domineering aggression?

On the 24th step, the number of martial artists in the first group had been reduced by over half again. Now there were only around 1600 people.

Even after meditating and resting for two hours, only another 200-300 more people climbed up.

From the start, those that won in the first group were able to climb up to the 24th step. But, these waves of participants behind them, even if they won their matches, weren’t necessarily able to climb up to the 24th step.

After being defeated by powerhouses on the 23rd step, some people simply weren’t able to continue. Although the Divine Seal Altar’s artifact spirit had healed their wounds, they still weren’t able to restore their exhausted energy.

Even though one could be defeated four times, just a single defeat would have a very great influence on their following results.

On the 24th step, Lin Ming sat down. The area a thousand feet around him had actually become empty!

The people nearby were all staring at him with some fear in their eyes.

This was a type of treatment that only universally acknowledged monstrous geniuses like Dragon Fang and Bloodless Sword received!

Now, with the strength Lin Ming had displayed so far, he had been recognized as a top 10 master of these semifinals.

"Hahaha! No one is daring to approach Senior-apprentice Brother Lin!"

"All those losers that were stupid enough to think of stirring up some trouble with Senior-apprentice Brother Lin Ming are now hiding from him! How fierce!"

"Too fierce! There are only 10 people in total that can enjoy such treatment! But among them, Senior-apprentice Brother Lin has the lowest cultivation!"

To sit alone on the Divine Seal Altar and have everyone give him a thousand foot berth, that was indeed the loneliness of a top master.

The disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan all began to cheer out loud for Lin Ming. The battles of the 24th step were about to begin!

There were now just under 1900 martial artists on the 24th step. The ones that were still down under basically wouldn't be able to climb up anymore.

Once these 1900 people fought, less than half of them would be able to climb to the 25th step!

Lin Ming stood up. The martial artists around him immediately tensed, their minds tightening as if they stood on needles. There were even some martial artists that began stepping backwards. And at this time, Lin Ming moved. His speed was extremely fast. With a single step, he arrived in front of a small martial artist.

This martial artist only came up to Lin Ming's chest. Compared to a normal man, he was a bit shorter. There was some fur on his face, making him seem like a short-furred monkey. This was clearly the manifestation of some special bloodline trait.

As this monkey-like martial artist saw Lin Ming, he nearly bit his tongue in surprise.

"Shit, how can my luck be so bad!?"

He had been so far away and yet this evil star had eyed him!

He had wanted to run further away. The problem was that there was even more freakish monsters that occupied this step and he would eventually have to bump into one or two of them. Especially that Nether Limitless. That fellow completely didn't read the mood, instead randomly fighting someone far or near with a seemingly random pattern.

If one was chosen by those dozen plus peak powerhouses, they could only blame their bad luck.

"Hold on! Great hero, stay your hand!"

Just as Lin Ming rushed forwards, that little fellow shouted out. His voice was sharp and extremely grating, similar to the howling of a monkey.

"Mm?" Lin Ming slowed down.

The little fellow sadly laughed for a moment before saying, "You don't need to do anything. I'll make my own exit out of here."

The little fellow immediately turned around and ran to the cliff of the 24th step. Without further ado, he jumped straight down.

As Lin Ming saw this, he was left speechless.

Was this okay?

The truth was that admitting defeat of one's own volition was much better than being beaten up and defeated.

The Divine Seal Altar was a protracted war. Regardless of it being climbing to the next step or battling other participants, all of this consumed a massive amount of strength.

Moreover, this exhaustion would accumulate over time at a perpetually increasing rate!

There were many people that were mainly eliminated not because they were defeated five times or because they couldn't withstand the Empyrean pressure. Rather, they squandered their strength, and after exhausting their strength, they took pills to recover. Because this caused the true essence within their bodies to become chaotic and mixed up, they weren't able to display even half of their strength. They were thus naturally eliminated due to this.

So, on the 24th step, Lin Ming won by default!

On the 25th step, his opponent admitted defeat once more!

The ones that admitted defeat were not just Lin Ming's opponents, but also Nether Limitless, Bloodless Sword, and Dragon Fang's opponents!

The number of participants decreased again. On the 26th step, there were less than 500 people remaining!

Of the original 300,000 people only this many were left over!

However, not all of these 500 people were able to pass.

In the semifinal region where Lin Ming was located, only 300 people would be able to finally pass the semifinals.

These 300 people would be selected from whomever was able to climb the highest. Those that reached a similar level would be prioritized based on how much time they took. Thus, for many participants, even though they knew they might step on some mine if they followed the first group, they still grit their teeth and continued upwards with them, all in order to save time.

For ones like Yan Littlemoon and Dragon One, although they hadn't yet been eliminated, it was impossible for them to pass the semifinals.

Without a doubt, 99% of those that passed these semifinals would originate from these 500 people. As for the others, they might have encountered a storm of bad luck that made them bump into monstrous geniuses again and again. Even so, they would continue climbing later until they reached the top 300.

On the 26th step, the pressure rose once again.

The rivers of heaven and earth origin energy had become much thinner on the 26th step. But, the Empyrean pressure had increased to the point that it was like a continuous waterfall crashing down on them!

Moreover, the higher one went, the stronger the pressure was.

"How… how… how is this possible, I… I can't climb up any more!?"

Half-way to the 26th step, a martial artist had reached his limit. Every step he took was extremely difficult.

"All this time, I've defeated every opponent, and I've also maintained my position in the first group, but I… I actually can't climb up any more…"

The martial artist grit his teeth and desperately struggled to stay on. However, the massive pressure continued to crash into him. Finally, his hands slipped and he fell from that massive cliff.

This was the first time that someone from the first group who had maintained complete victory over his opponents had dropped down because they couldn’t withstand the Empyrean pressure!

This meant that after every step, more than half of them would be eliminated!

For over half of the remaining participants to be eliminated with every step, this rate of elimination was far too terrifying. Before long, the number of people remaining on the Divine Seal Altar would be able to be counted with one’s hands.

At that time, only a few powerhouses such as Lin Ming, Nether Limitless, Bloodless Sword, and Dragon Fang would be remaining!

That would be the true battle of the Divine Seal Altar; it was unavoidable!

Chapter 1243 – Loose Tongues Lead To Trouble

Chapter 1243 – Loose Tongues Lead To Trouble

…

…

…

“Someone from the first group has fallen down!”

“This is too terrifying! These are all top five ranked people of their own great world, extraordinary geniuses amongst extraordinary geniuses. Even so, they weren’t able to withstand the pressure of the 26th step!”

When Lin Ming fought Crimson Wishjade, there were around 1900 people competing, each equal to around the top 20 of a great world. Now, with just around 500 participants left, they were all the top five ranked geniuses of a great world.

If someone from the top five couldn’t climb up to the 26th step then the others could forget about it.

“At the 26th step! And it will become more and more difficult the further they climb! At the last several steps, the difficulty will surely soar to an unimaginable level!”

“Senior Xiao Daochild wasn’t joking when he said that it was infinitely hopeless that any of the participants would be able to reach the top. I thought it was an exaggeration, but now it seems that there really isn’t anyone that will be capable of mounting the summit!”

In the audience, there were some people that recalled Xiao Daochild’s words.

“Infinitely hopeless… is even Nether Limitless no good?” A martial artist from the Demondawn Great World asked. In his opinion, Nether Limitless was simply far too fierce.

“Nether Limitless? Hehe… it looks like you don’t know anything at all. Nether Limitless won’t be able to reach even the 32nd step!”

Within the audience, an old man with thinning white hair spoke up. His words caused some people to glower at him. Just who was this old man to speak as he wished?

“You ignorant juniors! What do you think the Divine Seal Altar is? When Xiao Daochild said that it was infinitely hopeless to reach the top, he was simply being polite. In truth, no one can reach the top! This is not the first time that the Divine Seal Altar has been used in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting.”

As the old man spoke, the young elites around him immediately perked up, interested. “Are you saying this isn’t the first time the Divine Seal Altar has been used in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting? When was it used in the past?”

Suddenly, everyone wanted to hear just how the geniuses of the past First Martial Meetings performed on the Divine Seal Altar.

“The Divine Seal Altar was used once 100,000 years ago, and the geniuses from hundreds of great worlds competed on it. I also know that back then, let alone reaching the 33rd step, there wasn’t even anyone capable of reaching the 32nd step! At that time, the rules of the competition were that it would only end once all martial artists were swept off the Divine Seal Altar. In other words, no one was able to crawl up!

“So it’s like that…”

“There wasn’t even anyone able to reach the 32nd step; isn’t that a bit too abnormal?”

Everyone suddenly realized that if this were true, then it was impossible to reach the summit of the Divine Seal Altar.

At this time, Xiao Daochild was floating atop the Divine Seal Altar, his eyes closed deep in meditation.

None of the discussion from the audience was able to affect him.

“The geniuses of this era are far better than I expected… only at the 26th step did someone from the first group fall down because they couldn’t withstand the Empyrean pressure of the Divine Seal Altar. Perhaps there really might be someone that can reach the 32nd step.”

Xiao Daochild thought to himself. Everything occurring on the Divine Seal Altar was caught within his sense.

From the first group, after the first person fell down because they weren’t able to resist the pressure of the Divine Seal Altar, in just half an hour, there were several more people that fell down from the 26th step of the Divine Seal Altar!

Finally, 478 martial artists were able to climb up the 26th step.

As they sat down and adjusted their condition for two to four hours, several more martial artists reached the top, with Crimson Wishjade included. These people were originally quite strong, but their luck was bad and they encountered extremely strong opponents and thus lost.

After Crimson Wishjade reached the 26th step, she didn’t speak at all. Rather, she found a secluded location where no one was and hid as far away from Lin Ming as she could.

After these several martial artists joined, no one else was able to reach the 26th step.

From the four God Beast Clans, Yan Littlemoon and Dragon One were also eliminated. Although there were still people struggling on the lower steps, it was impossible for them to pass the semifinals.

In other words, the 300 participants that would enter the finals would originate from these 490 some people. After winning here, it was possible that they would pass and enter the finals!

But once they lost, not only would they fall a level, but they would fall to the 25th step and struggle to return to the 26th step. Even after that, they would have to battle the martial artists that were eliminated from the 27th step to continue advancing. To lose here would mean a bitter struggle.

As the battle was about to break out, many participants had dignified expressions on their faces; this was a battle that would affect their future achievements.

"I choose… you, you will be my opponent."

Lin Ming arrived in front of a martial artist. This martial artist was Wu Finalcloud's 'friend', the green-haired swordsman who had prodded Wu Finalcloud into challenging Lin Ming.

After receiving Lin Ming's challenge, the green-haired swordsman had an extremely peculiar expression.

Beside him, Wu Finalcloud was watching all this with a happy heart, gloating over it. Although they considered each other as 'friends', this was simply friendly on the surface.

"You deserve what you get!" Wu Finalcloud thought in this heart, "All you do is swagger around like an idiot, but let's see just how you'll be arrogant now. You should just sit down and take the beating. If you can win, I'll walk backwards from now on."

The green-haired swordsman's face darkened. He suspected that Lin Ming somehow knew what he discussed with Wu Finalcloud, otherwise how could this be such a coincidence?

"Loose tongues lead to trouble, shit, I really stepped in it this time." The green-haired swordsman thought, filled with so much regret that his intestines were turning green. He had a sneaking suspicion that Wu Finalcloud had already lost to Lin Ming. If so, then obtaining victory here was impossible, because his own strength was faintly inferior to Wu Finalcloud's.

"Brother Finalcloud, could you tell me whether or not you fought with Lin Ming before?" The green-haired swordsman asked with a true essence sound transmission. He regretted not thoroughly investigating some information on Lin Ming before this. The main reason was because Lin Ming's ending ranking in the preliminaries wasn't too high, thus he didn't care about him. Otherwise, if he inquired about the participants of the True Martial Great World, it wouldn't be difficult to find out that Wu Finalcloud had lost to Lin Ming.

If Wu Finalcloud had really lost, then there was no need for him to run face on into a wall. He might as well just admit defeat and conserve his strength.

Wu Finalcloud scoffed at the green-haired swordsman's question. He suppressed his gloating expression from showing on his face and asked instead, "Zhou Hong, didn't you also try to provoke me to challenge Lin Ming before this? My strength is similar to yours, so if Lin Ming is coming to challenge you now, why would you just admit defeat like this?"

Hearing this, the green-haired swordsman's complexion turned increasingly ugly. Wu Finalcloud simply wasn't going to reveal anything.

Regardless of what happened between Wu Finalcloud and Lin Ming, the green-haired swordsman still found himself unwilling to just admit defeat like this. The green-haired swordsman was also the top ranked master of a second-order great world!

Moreover, even if he lost to Lin Ming he was still confident that he could pass the semifinals.

"Just because you don't say anything, don't think I'm too afraid to fight him!" The green-haired swordsman coldly coughed and then turned towards Lin Ming.

He grit his teeth and said, "Others may fear you, but I do not! Do you think I'm some noodle that you can just pinch around as you please? I will have you regret the choice you made in choosing me!"

The green-haired swordsman suddenly extracted his sword and pointed it towards Lin Ming. From the audience, disciples from his sect suddenly burst into cheers.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Zhou, you can do it!"

"You can win!"

"You have to win!"

"Senior-apprentice Brother Zhou's sword can rule the world!"

This green-haired swordsman clearly came from a Great World King Holy Land, and the number of relatives and friends and fellow disciples he had was enormous; there were several thousand people in attendance. Even a peak Holy Land like the Ancient Phoenix Clan wasn't able to obtain so many admission tickets.

With the green-haired swordsman facing such a dangerous enemy, he stepped forwards and released all of his sword potential, creating a sword domain.

A sharp energy cut through the air, whistling. This sort of sword domain was completely galvanized by a martial artist's own sword potential, allowing one's sword potential to naturally form sword energies. If a martial artist with insufficient cultivation were to be enveloped in this sword domain, they would be instantly killed by the chaotic and wild sword energy. Even stronger opponents would be influenced; they would have no choice but to divert their attention into defense.

"That's the sword domain! Senior-apprentice Brother Zhou immediately used his sword domain!"

"Senior-apprentice Brother Zhou is serious this time. This is going to be a fierce battle between two rivals! That Lin Ming is indeed fierce, but I believe in Senior-apprentice Brother Zhou!"

People only knew of their own things. These weaker core disciples with less talent found it hard to distinguish who was weaker and stronger amongst these peak geniuses. They simply didn't know where the limit of Zhou Hong's strength lay, they only knew that their Senior-apprentice Brother Zhou was fierce.

As these disciples saw the sword domain they were all inexplicably excited.

Then, they only heard a loud explosive sound as an incomparably dense spear light cut through the skies and ripped apart that sword domain!

Their cheers were immediately dampened by over half.

That vaunted sword domain was broken just like that?

In the audience, all of Zhou Hong's friends and relatives and fellow disciples weren't able to react at all. At this time, Lin Ming has already grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and rushed into the sword domain. His spear light covered his body, tearing apart all of that massive amount of sword energy.

The long spear swept out. The green-haired martial artist shouted out loud and all of that sword light fell downwards like a river of stars, overwhelming and dazzling.

As a top master of a great world this green-haired swordsman was indeed talented.

Rumble rumble rumble!

In that wild and savage collision, Lin Ming and the green-haired swordsman exchanged seven or eight moves Although the scene was intense, the truth was that Lin Ming steadily gained the upper hand. Every single spear light he sent out would crush apart three or four of the green-haired swordsman's sword lights!

"Heart of the Sword!"

After being suppressed to the limit by Lin Ming's spear light, the green-haired swordsman brought back his sword and then suddenly stabbed it outwards. The sword light formed a thin line that thrust straight towards Lin Ming's chest.

This sort of highly compressed sword light was not just extremely sharp but also ridiculously quick; it was almost impossible to guard against. If one's strength was lacking, they would be instantly defeated by this sword light.

However, no matter how sharp the green-haired swordsman's sword light was, Lin Ming's spear light was far too turbulent and fierce. He opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and the Heretical God Force and then thrust out his spear.

With a loud ringing sound, the Heart of the Sword that the green-haired swordsman shot out collapsed. Lin Ming's spear light continued downwards like a falling mountain.

Bang!

The Phoenix Blood Spear heavily crashed into the Divine Seal Altar!

This was an Empyrean spirit treasure, thus it was unmarred. If this was a mountain or river then this spear strike would have caused a massive avalanche and the earth itself to give way.

The green-haired swordsman was sent flying backwards by the violent shockwave.

Before he could stabilize himself, an alarm went off in his mind. He suddenly shifted to the side.

However, it was too late. A wisp of spear light scratched past his shoulder, tearing through his protective true essence and causing blood to rain down!

"You still want to play around?"

Lin Ming stared at the green-haired swordsman.

“You are ruthless!” The green-haired swordsman looked at Lin Ming and then gnashed out several words. “I… I admit defeat!”

“Well fought.” Lin Ming said, putting away his spear.

Chapter 1244 – 15 People

Chapter 1244 – 15 People

…

…

…

“Wu Finalcloud, I’ll remember this!” The green-haired swordsman cast one last indignant look at Wu Finalcloud before he leapt off the 26th step.

As for Wu Finalcloud, he remained calm. He didn’t fear this Zhou Hong; his background was even slightly superior to Zhou Hong’s. After all, although the True Martial Holy Lands came from a second-order world, they were still an extremely wealthy Holy Land. He even thought that Lin Ming had been too light-handed.

As for those that had been cheering for the green-haired swordsman, all of them looked as if they had collapsed. The entire area of his supporters, the several thousands of disciples, had all fallen into a deep and gloomy silence.

On the other hand, the Ancient Phoenix Clan erupted with cheers like a rushing tide, serving as a sharp contrast to them.

In these semifinals, the Ancient Phoenix Clan was nearly one of the loudest cheerers. In addition to them, the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands shouted loudly enough that their voices quaked the heavens.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Lin is too strong!”

“He’s invincible!”

In the midst of these thronging cheers, Lin Ming began to climb up to the 27th step!

He was part of the first group to climb up to the 27th step. In front of him was only a small group of people, with Nether Limitless and Bloodless Sword included.

The 27th step was close to the summit of the Divine Seal Altar. Lin Ming also wanted to know just what step he would be able to reach.

It was said that to step onto the summit of the Divine Seal Altar was to step onto the road to divinity. If this was true then the Divine Seal Altar certainly had its own peculiarities.

Although Lin Ming was only climbing onto a replica of the true ancient Divine Seal Altar, he would still be able to take a little sneak glance through some of its mysteries.

At the 27th step, the pressure rose once more.

The further one ascended the Divine Seal Altar, the greater the pressure was.

When Lin Ming had climbed 50,000 feet high, the martial artists still remaining behind also began climbing up the 27th step. Among these people were some that Lin Ming was familiar with.

The one in the front was the red-clothed bamboo hat woman. She was the woman with the hoarse voice that he had seen several times in the True Martial Great World.

Her master was a World King and her own talent was amazing. She had defeated her opponents all the way here, but upon climbing to the 27th step, it also seemed as if she couldn’t continue going further.

“Even she can’t continue upwards. It will already be quite good if 200 people can reach the 27th step.”

Lin Ming immediately thought. This meant that as long as one could climb up to the 27th step, they would be able to pass the semifinals.

If one couldn't climb to the top of the 27th step, that meant they would have to compete with the martial artists remaining on the 26th step, and those still climbing up from the 25th step, for the remaining quota of around a hundred people.

There would be several hundred people competing for these spots. Their battles would truly be cold and ruthless.

The pressure increased, becoming stronger and stronger at an ever-growing rate. To climb up 100,000 feet in a single go was easier said than done.

More and more participants continued to drop!

On the 26th step, there were nearly 250 people that had defeated their opponents and earned the qualifications to climb up the 27th step. But, halfway up, there were only 210 participants left. At the end, there were only 202 people that managed to reach the summit of the 27th step.

Just climbing up to the 27th step had eliminated nearly a fifth of the victors from the last step!

"Damn, I've finally made it up!"

Wu Finalcloud let out a long breath. This Divine Seal Altar was just too freakish! Even with his strength, he found it difficult to climb up.

Wu Finalcloud took several great heaving breaths. Then, his face suddenly twisted and his throat spasmed.

He looked up to see a pale black-clothed youth with blood red pupils slowly walking towards him.

This black-clothed youth was Nether Limitless.

Wu Finalcloud savagely gulped. Wasn't this luck just too horrible!?

He hoped that Nether Limitless would pass by him, but he saw that his eyes were clearly locked onto him.

"I-if… can you, can you give… give me some face, I… it took a lot for me to climb up here…"

Wu Finalcloud stammered out, his voice lacking energy.

Nether Limitless's complexion was cold as he lightly said, "Are you going down, or shall I deliver you down myself?"

"I…" Wu Finalcloud's face twisted like a withered pear. He had climbed up with such painstaking effort and now he was being informed that he would have to climb up once more. Was there anything more depressing than this?

"I… I'll go down immediately."

At this time, Wu Finalcloud looked at the 100,000 foot cliff behind him and nearly wanted to die. This was the first time he realized just how weak he was, so weak that he didn't even have the courage to resist after being pushed down like this.

This was the pity of the poor.

It wasn't just Wu Finalcloud, but the opponent that Lin Ming chose also admitted defeat. Even these top ranked geniuses of great worlds didn't have the ability to contend with Lin Ming.

As Nether Limitless saw this, his lips curved up, his smile a bit fiendish. "Lin Ming, was it?"

Lin Ming turned to look at Nether Limitless.

"You've caught my interest. One Fang, one Bloodless Sword, and you, you three are able to have me be a bit serious. There's also that Purple Blade who's quite good! On the 31st or 32nd step, I'm looking forwards to fighting you. That is, if you can climb up that high."

Lin Ming grinned. “Even if you didn’t say anything I would still fight you sooner or later.”

In these semifinals, defeating Nether Limitless was one of his goals. Defeating Nether Limitless was his start to defeating Tian Mingzi in the future.

“Amusing. I hope that you won’t disappoint me then.” Nether Limitless turned to climb up the 28th step!

Lin Ming also began his climb upwards.

Against this terrifying Empyrean pressure, the two people still remained as calm as before.

Only 202 people had managed to ascend to the summit of the 27th step. It was destined that less than 100 people would make it up the 28th step. On average, there wouldn’t even be one martial artist from each great world. There were many great worlds that were completely out of contention already.

“Those two monstrous geniuses have begun to climb up the 28th step!”

“Dragon Fang and Bloodless Sword have begun their climb up. There’s also that Purple Blade.”

“I wonder who is the strongest amongst them. According to the Divine Seal Decree rankings, the strongest should be Nether Limitless!”

“The Divine Seal Decree rankings do not represent one’s true strength. For instance, just look at that Lin Ming. He was ranked around 10,000 on the Divine Seal Decree, but his performance here clearly doesn’t reflect that. There are also many people that haven’t displayed their true strength. But, that Nether Limitless is indeed fierce. I’ve heard some rumors that he has an extremely high chance of becoming a World King in the future, and he even has aspirations of becoming a Great World King!”

A Great World King – the overlord of a great world. Because of the existence of Empyrean descendants, their fame was slightly lower, but not by much.

It was also because of this reason that even geniuses bred from Great World King Holy Lands of first-order worlds found it far too difficult to become Great World Kings. There were only some peak geniuses like Nether Limitless from the Skydark Holy Lands or Yuwen Bo of the Wide Universe Holy Lands that had some chances of becoming a Great World King if they encountered a massive lucky chance during the Divine Transformation or Divine Lord realm.

28th step!

Finally, only 80 people managed to make it here!

After a violent round of combat, over half of them were eliminated on the sojourn to the 29th step!

At the 29th step, there were only 30 people left!

Out of 100 great words, only 30 people were able to make it this far. This was a truly exaggerated and ridiculous elimination rate!

At this time, Lin Ming finally saw Dragon Fang. Dragon Fang had started climbing on another side of the Divine Seal Altar, thus the two of them hadn't seen each other yet.

But on the 29th step, with only 30 people left, there were far too few participants here. Moreover, after climbing up this high, the surface area of the Divine Seal Altar had narrowed down a great deal. The martial artists that were on the south and east sides naturally gathered together.

"You've really made it up here." Dragon Fang said as he looked towards Lin Ming. He had already anticipated that Lin Ming would arrive here.

"And you too."

"It is impossible to climb to the top of the Divine Seal Altar. My goal is to stand on the 32nd step. I will wait for you there. And if you can reach where I will stand..."

Dragon Fang calmly said as he faced the strong astral winds that blew 2.9 million feet high in the skies. His clothes flapped around him. His figure was slender, his appearance delicate, and he seemed to encompass the brash spirit of a 17-18 year old youth. Even so, his aura and his manner of speaking were extremely restrained, making one feel very comfortable just speaking to him.

"Impossible to climb?" Lin Ming was startled. Dragon Fang's goal was only the 32nd step? "It seems you know much about the Divine Seal Altar."

"I've heard some stories. This is Empyrean Vast Universe's proudest creation. Ever since he created this replica of the true Divine Seal Altar, deep within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, over 100 descendants of Empyrean Vast Universe have climbed up it. This is one of the ways that they are tempered there. However, there has never been a Divine Sea realm descendant, even a late Divine Sea realm descendant, that has managed to mount the summit!"

"Is that so?"

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. So that's how it was. No wonder Xiao Daochild had been so confident in his assertions that out of 300,000 geniuses, no one would be able to reach the top. It seemed that this was an extremely logical viewpoint.

However, Dragon Fang actually knew about the internal matters of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace; it seemed that his own background wasn't ordinary at all. Lin Ming didn't think this was strange. For a wandering cultivator, if they wanted to grow to this degree, they would need the support of a powerful master no matter what, otherwise it was impossible!

Lin Ming could be considered as having many lucky chances, but he also had many teachers and masters. From the start, it had been the soul fragments in the Magic Cube, followed by others, included Demonshine, who had given him many pointers, Mo Eversnow, and even Empyrean Primordius could be considered as Lin Ming's half-master. If just Lin Ming was like this, there was no need to mention others.

On the 29th step, there were only 30 people left. No one here would admit defeat of their own volition any longer.

At this height, even if they lost they would pass. Moreover, all of the people here were extremely proud and haughty geniuses of their generation, all of them brimming with confidence in their own abilities. None of them believed they were any worse. Even if they encountered Lin Ming, they would still fight with all their strength!

And facing these people, Lin Ming wouldn't be able to easily defeat them like he did Crimson Wishjade or Zhou Hong. He would have to use a considerable portion of his strength to battle them for some time before winning.

The opponent Lin Ming chose was a red-clothed saber wielder. This person's saber emanated a field of electricity, and there was also a saber domain that formed around him.

"In this part of the semifinals, domains and force fields aren't anything at all. They seem far too cheap; nearly everyone has one!"

Lin Ming deeply sighed. There were even people that had two domains.

Moreover, it seemed that a low-level domain like his Blue Lotus Domain was useless here.

The red-clothed saber martial artist's fighting spirit soared to the skies. He fiercely battled Lin Ming for a few dozen rounds. Finally, Lin Ming simultaneously opened the Heretical God Force, burnt the Ancient Phoenix blood, and used the power of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates to defeat him!

At the end, only 15 people earned the qualifications to climb up the 30th step!

It was here that one could finally make out a vague outline of the Divine Seal Altar's summit.

“There are only 15 people that have the qualifications to climb up. I wonder how many of them will make it?”

In the audience, Huo Violentstone mumbled to himself. These 15 people, no matter how bad they were, would at least become a half-step World King in the future! Such a white-hot competition between them would truly be blood stirring!

Chapter 1245 – Variation Pupils

Chapter 1245 – Variation Pupils

…

…

..

Vast Universe Great World, Vast Universe Heavenly Palace –

Two dozen plus top masters of the Divine Realm were gathered here. Through 30 massive crystal mirrors, they were able to see everything happening within all 30 martial fields of the semifinals.

The 30 semifinal locations all used different methods to hold the competition. Ten of the arenas had already concluded and had chosen 300 people to enter the finals.

“Juggernaut, Sable Rain, Dirong, Yuwen Bo… these four people are truly rare geniuses. This Divine Realm First Martial Meeting has a wonderful crop of talents!”

Vast Cosmos laughed. These people had all achieved first place in their own semifinals area. There was a very high chance that they would reach the top 20 rankings of the finals.

“Haha, they still can’t compare to the Empyrean descendants.” Wide Universe World King smiled. Yuwen Bo was a disciple of his Wide Universe Holy Lands.

“They are already quite good. In particular, there are several people who have strength similar to an Empyrean descendant, if not a bit weaker. If they are weaker, that is because their resources, inheritances, and talent are inferior.” Vast Cosmos evaluated. This was already a very high degree of praise. The resources that an Empyrean descendant used were far too luxurious. For instance, they would use Boundless World Pills during the Divine Sea realm, something that would cause even Great World King Holy Lands to feel pain. But, to an Empyrean descendant, these were simply common goods.

“This time, I will suggest to Empyrean Vast Universe that he increase the quota of people allowed into Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. Juggernaut, Yuwen Bo, and the others should all have some chances of entering.”

As Vast Cosmos spoke, the several Great World Kings present were overjoyed. Adding extra people always meant that a massive amount of additional resources would be used up. Even though an Empyrean was wealthy, they wouldn’t freely squander the resources they had accumulated.

It had to be known that the treatment one received within an Empyrean Heavenly Palace was something that no Great World King Holy Land would ever be able to compare with. This was an immense benefit to the growth of geniuses. They all hoped that they could send disciples from their own sect to gain experience in an Empyrean Heavenly Palace, even if just for a brief period of time.

“Mm, that’s right, how is your Skydark Holy Land’s Nether Limitless doing now?”

Vast Cosmos suddenly asked Tian Mingzi.

“Limitless hasn’t finished competing yet...” Tian Mingzi replied. “There are a couple of dark horses that have appeared on that martial field. Their strength and potential are quite good.”

“Oh?”

Vast Cosmos said, interested. Tian Mingzi’s talent was originally extremely high, even faintly surpassing Vast Cosmos himself. If Tian Mingzi said some participants were ‘quite good’, then they naturally had to be outstanding individuals.

Not only was Vast Cosmos interested, but the other World Kings present looked towards the semifinal martial field of Gravemoon Star. Gravemoon Star's competition was considered slow compared to the others so far. Even so, they were still nearing the finale.

"Oh! There are 10 participants that actually managed to mount the 30th step! Not bad! Very good! Perhaps there might be someone that can climb towards the 32nd step. But, to actually reach the top of the 32nd step is far too difficult."

Vast Cosmos said, satisfied. As someone who came from Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, he was well aware of just how difficult the Divine Seal Altar was. He originally estimated that even four or five people reaching the 30th step would be an extremely good result.

"Tian Mingzi, who are these dark horses?"

"There are two: a black-clothed youth who wields a spear called Lin Ming, as well as a pale youth with a sword called Fang."

As Tian Mingzi spoke, Lin Ming and Dragon Fang were both engaged in fierce combat. Their opponents were top 300 ranked masters of the Divine Seal Decree or some people below who hadn't displayed their full strength in the preliminaries.

Before this, climbing from the 29th step to the 30th step, with 15 people at the start, only 10 had managed to reach the 30th step. A third of the participants had been eliminated during the climb upwards.

The violent battles were like a raging fire in full swing.

The entire 30th step was covered by a powerful and heavy Empyrean pressure. If an ordinary genius were placed here, they would find it difficult to stand, let alone fight. Because of the suppression of the atmosphere, they wouldn't even be able to use 10% of their strength.

But currently, when the power and potential of these 10 geniuses gathered together, they formed dazzling beams of light that shot into the skies!

"Haha, within the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds with its quadrillion trillion lives, there are truly far too many geniuses! However, Nephew Limitless is truly unique. I believe that Nephew Limitless has a chance of reaching the 32nd step! Of the others, three or four should be able to reach the 31st step. To reach the 31st step is already a heaven-defying accomplishment."

Wide Universe World King acclaimed. But, Tian Mingzi only faintly smiled, not responding.

At this time, on the Divine Seal Altar, the intense battles had concluded, with five people emerging as the victors. Lin Ming, Dragon Fang, Nether Limitless, and Bloodless Sword had made it through, as well as Purple Blade, whose performance in the preliminaries had been impressive.

Of these five people, all of them were potential victors.

But, the key point was that even though these five people had reached the 30th step, there were still three more steps above them!

If this was the same elimination ratio as before, then perhaps there would be no one that would be able to reach the 33rd step. Perhaps even the 32nd step would be far too difficult.

"What Xiao Daochild said was right. There is no human that can reach the 33rd step."

"No one should be able to reach the top, not even Nether Limitless."

At this time, people in the audience were discussing amongst themselves with true essence sound transmissions. With the semifinals having reached this point, the billions of people in the arena were focused and quiet, patiently waiting for the final battles to come. When these people reached the 31st step, regardless of who battled who, it would truly be a magnificent duel!

At this time, floating above the Divine Seal Altar, Xiao Daochild finally opened his eyes. A faint voice spread throughout the entire arena.

"If there is an odd number of people that reach the 31st step, then the person with the best results in the preliminaries, Nether Limitless, may avoid battle and directly ascend to the 32nd step. The rest will continue fighting and the victor will climb to the 32nd step.

"If an odd number reaches the 31st step then Nether Limitless doesn't need to fight?"

"This is far too great an advantage. In the last several steps, even if one didn't fight they still couldn't save much strength. But now, on the 31st step, the advantages of being able to avoid a battle are just far too great!"

"That's right. These five people are all peak masters so it's likely they can all climb to the 31st step. If Nether Limitless can avoid battling them here, he can climb even higher!"

All the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, the New Paradise Holy Lands where Bloodless Sword came from, as well as the sect that Purple Blade originated from, thought that this was extremely unfair.

But, the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands were actually cheering as loudly as they could!

"Haha, too awesome! Senior-apprentice Brother Nether can avoid a battle, but this is also something that Senior-apprentice Brother Nether earned because his results were the best."

"If so, then Senior-apprentice Brother Nether might have some chances of reaching the 32nd step or even the 33rd step!"

"Heh, in fact, even if Senior-apprentice Brother doesn't avoid a battle, he could still easily win anyways!"

On the Divine Seal Altar, Nether Limitless maintained a calm appearance. He clenched his fists and thought, "Good! These rules are good for me."

Even though Nether Limitless was exceedingly proud of himself, even he lacked the energy and confidence when facing the titanic Divine Seal Altar. If he could save some of his strength then the benefits would be gigantic.

“If I can really avoid a battle then I will be able to obtain an even better result here. My chances of catching Empyrean Demondawn’s attention will be that much greater!”

Nether Limitless was brimming with confidence!

“Begin the climb!” Xiao Daochild closed his eyes again and returned to his meditation in the air.

Five participants that were screened out from all the peak masters of 100 great worlds immediately jumped up onto the walls of the Divine Seal Altar in unison.

At the moment when Lin Ming touched the stone walls, he felt a great pressure on him.

“What a formidable pressure… moreover, this isn’t just pressure of the body and true essence, but also the soul…”

Lin Ming could feel that as soon as he began climbing up to the 31st step of the Divine Seal Altar, a wild and savage power rushed into his spiritual sea.

“This sort of soul pressure isn’t anything to me. But to the others, this should be a great test.”

After Lin Ming tempered his soul in the Divine Dream World, his soul force was far more formidable than other martial artists’ of his level. A soul pressure of this degree was something he could easily withstand.

With steady steps, he began to climb up the towering and roughly hewn stone walls of the Divine Seal Altar.

The closer he reached the top, the more vividly Lin Ming could feel the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens from the Divine Seal Altar.

As for the others, it was actually impossible for them to climb up as calmly as Lin Ming was doing.

As they climbed up the Divine Seal Altar, all sorts of illusions crashed into them!

Fight! Crusade! Slaughter! Heart Demons!

Dragon Fang felt as if he was climbing onto a blood-drenched Asura battlefield. Within his ears, all he heard were the echoes and screams of hateful spirits and doomed souls!

The beating drum of war reverberated in his ears. A deep sword energy washed over his body, making him feel as if he would be torn apart at any moment.

"The Divine Seal Altar truly lives up to its reputation. How intriguing!!"

Dragon Fang closed his eyes and then opened them up once more. When he did, his pupils had changed. They became as narrow as a needle. And around these needle-like pupils formed a series of strange patterns.

His eyes seemed wrapped in a shroud of unfathomable mysteries, making others not dare to look at him. Those who did would feel as if their very souls would be sucked out.

After these variation pupils appeared, all illusions were instantly swept away by Dragon Fang, unable to affect his mind at all.

He began to steadily rise up once again. And, because he was facing the Divine Seal Altar, no one was able to see the differences in his eyes.

As for Nether Limitless and Bloodless Sword, they were finding this much harder.

"The 31st step is truly terrifying!"

Bloodless Sword twisted his eyebrows together.

"Slaughter Sword Intent, erupt!"

At that instant, a deep crimson divine light blazed out from between Bloodless Sword's eyebrows. The killing intent that emitted from his body reached the peak. With his own killing intent, he resisted the countless waves of illusions.

As Bloodless Sword climbed up, his forehead became drenched with sweat and every movement he made was difficult. He clearly wasn't able to remain as relaxed as Dragon Fang.

As for Nether Limitless, he was also in a similar situation with Bloodless Sword. By relying on his deep strength and cultivation he was able to forcefully resist these illusions. To him, climbing up the 31st step was an extremely great test!

And of these five people, Purple Blade was at the end. His face was wan, his fingers trembled, and every step he took was slower than the last. He seemed to be trapped in a swamp, his movements becoming increasingly slow.

"These are illusions! Illusions! They can't affect me! They can't affect me! They can't affect me!"

Purple Blade cried out in his heart, wanting to rid himself of all these chaotic illusions in his mind. However, his current physical state was already extremely poor and he had consumed most of his energy. No, facing this dual pressure from the Divine Seal Altar on his body and soul, he was finding it impossible to resist.

This was the power of illusions. Even though he knew they were illusions, he would still be affected by them.

"I… I am the last! Am I… am I the worst!?"

Illusion and reality constantly shifted back and forth. Purple Blade could feel his own strength rapidly fading away from his body. In between these rapidly alternating scenes, he could see that Lin Ming, Dragon Fang, and the others had already pulled ahead by a considerable distance.

He was like a severely wounded mortal that had fallen into a deep ravine. Although he could see the top of the cliff, wanting to climb up it was simply a despairing matter.

Chapter 1246 – Lin Ming VS Nether Limitless

Chapter 1246 – Lin Ming VS Nether Limitless

…

…

…

"Is something wrong with Purple Blade?"

"He's randomly climbing about; he's not going in a straight line at all!"

In the audience, many people noticed something strange happening with Purple Blade. He had already been left far behind by the other four people.

"Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, you can do it, put your back into it!"

"Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, don't give up!"

The disciples from Purple Blade's Holy Lands were all cheering for him. However, he wasn't able to hear their cheers at all.

His sweat had already covered his eyes and his consciousness had gone completely blurry.

"Blood… my hands are holding blood? Am I crawling in a sea of blood… the end, I cannot see the end…" Every time Purple Blade took a step up, he felt as if he were grasping a mountain of swords. His palms and legs ached with a cutting pain.

His exhaustion had reached the limit. He felt as if he weighed 10,000 jins, and the pain was so intense he thought he would die at any moment.

With his final fading will, he forcefully grasped what he could. But, he no longer had the strength to take another step up.

Purple Blade had already lost consciousness. At the moment when the flow of energy within his body stopped, he was no longer able to withstand the pressure on the 31st step. The body of an essence gathering system martial artist was frail to begin with, and without the protection of energy around him, he simply wasn't able to withstand the impact.

Blood rained down and Purple Blade fell from the cliff.

An aura of energy caught him, cradling him; he had been defeated!

"Purple Blade has lost! He was the third to reach the 22nd step, and yet he actually wasn't able to reach the 30th step!"

"Heavens, this is far too difficult! Will there even be anyone capable of reaching the 32nd or 33rd step?"

Originally, many people thought that Purple Blade was inferior to Nether Limitless, but close in strength to Dragon Fang and Lin Ming. Now, they all realized just how great the disparity was.

"The other four are already nearing the top!"

"Lin Ming, Dragon Fang, and Nether Limitless are in the lead. Bloodless Sword has fallen behind them just a bit. Does this represent the difference in their strengths?"

"That might not be true. To find the actual difference in their strength, they have to undergo true combat. The Divine Seal Altar is merely a platform used to test the comprehensive fusion of one's cultivation and talent."

"It seems that all four of them will be able to reach the top. If so, they will have to fight!"

"I'm really looking forwards to it. Regardless of who fights who, it will surely be a clash of rivals!"

“These two fellows!” Nether Limitless looked at Lin Ming and Dragon Fang with disbelief in his eyes. “What are those two doing that they are climbing up so quickly? I have to give my everything in order to just barely keep up with their speed!

“Is it possible that the two of them have some sort of special immunity to soul pressure?”

Thinking about it, Xiao Daochild had said that the Divine Seal Altar was not just a test of one’s cultivation and thickness of true essence. It was also a test of one’s will, potential, and all sorts of other factors combined together. Nether Limitless thought all of this was a bit grating to his ears.

He was confident that his own strength and depth of true essence were far above that of Lin Ming and Dragon Fang. Could it be that his potential was inferior to theirs, thus they equalized each other and all three were able to maintain a similar speed?

“Can my potential truly be inferior to those two?”

Nether Limitless found this hard to accept.

In the way he viewed the world, he could accept it if an Empyrean descendant was superior to him. After all, someone that came from a Great World King Holy Land background simply couldn’t compare to the talent, inheritance, and resources of an Empyrean Heavenly Palace.

But, for small influences, even if they were dark horses that rushed out from the endless masses, he could not accept that they were on par with him!

It had to be known that in Nether Limitless’s nearly 40 year years of life, he had consumed a massive amount of resources. With all these resources gathered together, their value was no longer estimated in violet sun stones, but nine sun jades.

Nine sun jades were refined by half-step Empyreans and above by combining violet sun crystals with nine different types of yang energies. A single nine sun jade was equal to nearly 100 million violet sun crystals, or a trillion violet sun stones.

Nether Limitless had used so many resources and also practiced a transcendent divine might. Even so, he wasn't much superior to two common martial artists. How could Nether Limitless accept this? It made him feel as if all those resources used on him had been wasted, as if they had been used on a dog.

"It's impossible that they are better than me. I will not believe this. They must have some special arcane skill capable of resisting soul pressure, or their own soul force is astoundingly formidable, thus they are able to reach this speed…"

Nether Limitless speculated. In truth, his guesses were half right.

Lin Ming and Dragon Fang both had an extremely strong resistance to soul pressure. One cultivated the soul and the other had a special variation soul body.

An hour later, Dragon Fang was the first one to reach the 31st step of the Divine Seal Altar.

And behind Dragon Fang, just after 20 breaths of time, Nether Limitless arrived at nearly the same time as Lin Ming.

At this time, Dragon Fang's pupils had returned to normal. His face was a bit paler than before, and he seemed extremely fragile. It was hard to imagine that a terrifying strength slumbered within him.

"These two people haven't exhausted themselves too much… they must have some special technique to resist soul pressure." As Nether Limitless saw Lin Ming and Dragon Fang's appearance, he was increasingly sure of his own speculations. "If that's the case, I will simply use my absolute strength to defeat all of you!"

After another quarter hour passed, Bloodless Sword finally crawled up the cliff of the 31st step with great difficulty.

The four of them had all successfully climbed up. Without a doubt, besides the four of them, there wouldn't be another person that could make it up this high.

A decisive battle would soon erupt between these four people!

“This is too intense! The four of them are all peak masters; who will battle who?”

“I feel that Bloodless Sword is the weakest, Lin Ming and Dragon Fang are both similar, and Nether Limitless is the strongest!”

Based on their performance since the 21st step, Bloodless Sword was a bit worse and the other three were the same. But in the eyes of the audience, Nether Limitless was at the late Divine Sea, thus his cultivation and true essence were the deepest of the four. Lin Ming and Dragon Fang should surpass him in potential, but if they truly fought, Nether Limitless was likely stronger.

“This Lin Ming is truly a freak. He’s only at the peak of the early Divine Sea realm, yet he’s this strong. I really have no idea just how he has trained.”

....

At this time, several hundred miles away from the Divine Seal Altar, a spirit ship floated high in the skies.

In the spirit ship, a tall man in black robes was sitting in a grand black stone throne, looking through a window at the far off Divine Seal Altar. Even though he was this far away, he was able to clearly see everything happening on the Divine Seal Altar in crystal clear detail.

“Of those four people, two of them registered to enter the First Martial Meeting at my True Martial Word. But, the truth is that they aren’t from my True Martial World, nor do they belong to my True Martial Holy Lands. One is a wandering cultivator that just happened to be passing by, and the identity of his master is a mystery. As for the other, he is a disciple of a mere peak Holy Land. Even so, the two of them are able to stand on the 31st step! But, the disciple that I carefully raised up for all this time was actually eliminated on the 27th step! I used my portion of the income from Starbind Bank and the Imperial Auction House as the foundation for your resources, and even gave you an incomplete transcendent divine might as an inheritance. Even though I did all of this, this is the trash result that you gave me!”

This black-robed man was fuming with anger. He was the Great World King of True Martial World. In truth, True Martial World was only a sect from a second-order world, so it was normal that they wouldn’t have any disciples able to reach the 30th step. But now, four people had appeared that were able to step on the 31st step, and although two of them had even registered at the True Martial World, they actually weren’t from there. This was truly a matter that made one lose all face.

As the black-robed man spoke, the martial artists in front of him were all kneeling on the floor, trembling in fear. No one dared to speak up.

The black-robed man heaved a heavy sigh. “It has been over a million years and I have used up countless resources, and yet… if another million years pass and my True Martial Holy Lands still aren’t able to raise another World King, then that is simply the hand of fate. There will be nothing else I can do…”

The black-robed man shook his head, no longer speaking. He alone was the pillar that propped up the entire True Martial Holy Lands, but he would be unable to do so forever…

At this time on the Divine Seal Altar, the four participants still hadn’t fought. Rather, they rested for a moment. This brief period of rest was most beneficial to Bloodless Sword because he had exhausted the most energy of the four.

The pressure on the 31st step was extremely suppressive. Even though it was completely flat ground, Bloodless Sword still felt his own strength suppressed to no more than 40%.

“These damned fellows have actually climbed up faster than me. This weird Divine Seal Altar simply doesn’t allow me to display my sword skills to their full potential. In terms of total combat strength, with my sword in hand, I don’t believe that I will lose to an early Divine Sea or middle Divine Sea brat!”

The truth was that a Great World King Holy Land would deliberately train core disciples to participate in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. To guarantee the greatest chance of victory, they would make sure all disciples that entered were at the late Divine Sea realm. By entering a time enchantment it was easy to accomplish this.

Thus, Crimson Wishjade, Wu Finalcloud, Nether Limitless, Bloodless Sword, and the rest were all late Divine Sea martial artists.

If one wasn't at the late Divine Sea realm, it was easy to suffer a great loss. Only those scattered smaller sects would send a group of early or middle Divine Sea realm disciples to participate as cannon fodder. In any case, for them, attaining any kind of good result was impossible to begin with.

"Choose your opponent!" Xiao Daochild indifferently said, his face like a 10,000 year glacier. No matter how amazing the participants on the Divine Seal Altar were, he didn't have any expression at all, as if everything that happened was natural. To Xiao Daochild, the 31st step wasn't anything at all!

As Xiao Daochild spoke these words, the billions of people in the audience held their breath.

And on the 31st step of the Divine Seal Altar, Lin Ming, Nether Limitless, Dragon Fang, and Bloodless Sword all glanced at each other, a fierce and vivid fighting spirit blazing in their eyes, nearly causing the air to burn.

"The two of you have quite wonderful soul support arcane skills, hm? To think that you would do something so cheap as using them to climb up here." Nether Limitless was the first to speak.

"Oh? What are you trying to say?" Lin Ming asked, an eyebrow arching up.

"Even if you don't want to admit it, you cannot hide from my eyes. But from now, it will be a battle of strength, something that will depend on your true ability. Do you want to choose first, or shall I choose first?" Nether Limitless had an extremely confident expression, as if he were the top master of the four people here.

Dragon Fang was silent, but Lin Ming grinned and then laughed. "Since you let me choose first, then I won't be rude. I choose… you!"

Lin Ming pointed his spear towards Nether Limitless!

This movement caused a great commotion!

Of the four martial artists, no matter how one looked at it, Bloodless Sword should be the weakest. Thus, if one was allowed to choose first, choosing Bloodless Sword was the most appropriate choice. But, Lin Ming had actually chosen the supposed strongest Nether Limitless!

"This Lin Ming is too crazy!"

"What a badass!"

As Nether Limitless saw Lin Ming's icy spear pointed towards him, a thick killing intent flashed in his eyes, "You've got guts!"

Chapter 1247 Heroic Youth

Chapter 1247 – Heroic Youth

…

…

…

After Lin Ming pointed his spear at Nether Limitless, all of the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands went rabid with anger, their eyes turning red. In the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting semifinals on Gravemoon Star, their Senior-apprentice Brother Nether had been in first place from start until now. How could they tolerate someone provoking him like this!

“This boy doesn’t know the heights of the heavens or the depths of the earth!”

“He is crazy! He actually dares to challenge Senior-apprentice Brother Nether, just who does he think he is!?”

“He wants to become famous, and he thinks that he can step on Senior-apprentice Brother Nether to do so. Hehe, but he has chosen the wrong person.”

“Just wait until Senior-apprentice Brother Nether beats his ass until it's red.”

No one was willing to destroy their own power and prestige. These people had been spirited for such a long time, and they also saw that Nether Limitless’s performance so far had been the best. As Nether Limitless’s supporters, the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands all scoffed at Lin Ming’s insolent tactics.

Even the Ancient Phoenix Clan was lacking in confidence.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Lin is too aggressive. To think that he would choose to fight Nether Limitless as soon as he climbed up and not Bloodless Sword…”

“What are you worried about? Senior-apprentice Brother Lin surely has some secret strength that he has yet to bring out. Moreover, someone like Senior-apprentice Brother Lin lives for the thrill of battle. If he challenges someone, he will challenge the strongest there is.”

“That’s right, victory or defeat doesn’t matter. What’s most important is that he doesn’t weaken his own fighting spirit! What is Bloodless Sword? He is simply nothing at all. If there is someone to fight, it must be the strongest there is!”

“That’s right, Senior-apprentice Brother Lin pointing his spear at Nether Limitless is truly fearless!”

The female disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan all stared at Lin Ming as he challenged Nether Limitless with his spear. His valiant and heroic figure cut a handsome line, causing all of them to go crazy with desire.

At this time, Lin Ming’s black-clothed figure was as hard and straight as a spear. His clothing flapped in the wind and his long hair danced in the air. His eyes blazed as he stared at Nether Limitless, the edges of his face hard and his forehead as keen as a sword. His eyes were more electric than lightning!

A single young man, underneath the gaze of billions of people, dared to jump ranks to challenge the number one genius of a hundred great worlds – that was a character that had a chance of becoming a Great World King in the future! An extreme genius amongst geniuses!

Every time had its own peak, and the peak of this moment belonged to Lin Ming.

A heroic youth in the glory of his prime!

Such a character had a limitless future. With his incomparably sharp temperament and his outstanding physique, it was natural that countless young girls would fall for him.

“Haha, how interesting. Tian Mingzi, that dark horse you favored actually challenged the number one disciple of your Skydark Holy Lands.”

In Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, Vast Cosmos was extremely interested in this match. In these semifinals, it was difficult for anyone to catch the attention of a character like him.

Tian Mingzi laughed, not having much of a response.

Wide Universe World King said, “He is fierce, but in the end he isn’t the match of Nephew Limitless. Nephew Limitless is someone that has a chance of reaching the top 10 ranks of the First Martial Meeting’s Earth Proclamation!”

The Divine Realm First Martial Meeting would eventually produce two rankings. One was the Heaven Proclamation. That was the total rankings that included the disciples of the Empyrean Heavenly Palaces as well as all the geniuses of the 3000 great worlds.

The word ‘heaven’ implied the meaning of an Empyrean.

With the Heaven Proclamation, there was also a corresponding Earth Proclamation. The Earth Proclamation was a ranking list that excluded the Empyrean descendants and other disciples of the Empyrean Heavenly Palaces. It was a ranking list that included only the geniuses of the 3000 great worlds.

After all, it was unfair to compare ordinary geniuses to the lofty heights of Empyrean disciples.

Thus, being able to rank on the top 10 of the Earth Proclamation was already an extremely fierce accomplishment.

When Empyrean Vast Universe had stated that the top three ranking martial artists of the First Martial Meeting could learn a transcendent divine might, and the top 10 could enter Vast Universe Heavenly Palace and accept the guidance of Vast Cosmos, this was basically aimed at the Earth Proclamation.

This was also a reasonable matter. For instance, someone like Xiao Moxian originally came from Demondawn Heavenly Palace. Demondawn Heavenly Palace was in no way worse than Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, so how would she possibly ever desire the resources at Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. If Vast Universe Heavenly Palace had those resources, then Demondawn Heavenly Palace would also have them.

As Wide Universe World King spoke up, another World King echoed him, “If Nephew Limitless has a good performance, then he will inevitably enter an Empyrean Heavenly Palace.”

“Maybe someone from Demondawn Heavenly Palace will come to snatch away Limitless instead, haha!”

The present World Kings all laughed out loud. First, they really did favor Nether Limitless’s chances, and secondly, they wanted to form good relations with Tian Mingzi. After all, out of the many World Kings present, Tian Mingzi had the brightest future. It was possible that his future achievements would be even better than Vast Cosmos’s!

Moreover, Tian Mingzi had extremely good relations with Demondawn Heavenly Palace and had obtained the recognition of Empyrean Demondawn. The reason for this was that tens of thousands of years ago, Tian Mingzi had once entered Demondawn Heavenly Palace and tempered himself in there for a long time.

This was similar to the current disciples being selected to enter Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. This layer of relations was truly important!

....

At this time, on the Divine Seal Altar, Mo Eversnow’s voice was echoing in Lin Ming’s ears. “Lin Ming, Tian Mingzi’s original background is the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, and the Verdant Feather Holy Lands is a sect that focuses on the Ice Laws as well as the Space and Time Laws. Tian Mingzi could have been said to have reached the pinnacle of achievements in these three Laws! As his descendant, Nether Limitless should also excel in these three Laws.”

“I understand.” When Lin Ming had seen Nether Limitless fight the spirit bodies, Nether Limitless’s casual palm strike was able to contain three or four Concepts. “Miss Mo, since the Verdant Feather Holy Lands’ transcendent divine might jade slip fell into Tian Mingzi’s hands, would Nether Limitless also have trained in it?”

Upon mentioning this transcendent divine might, a flash of hatred appeared in Mo Eversnow’s eyes. “Yes, the Verdant Feather Holy Lands’ transcendent divine might is far more complete than the True Martial Holy Lands’ Heavenly Demon Metamorphic Art. But, that transcendent divine might is an auxiliary arcane skill; its role in true combat is minor so you can more or less ignore it.”

“Oh?” Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred. In truth, he felt that auxiliary arcane skills were more precious than offensive transcendent divine mights. They were abilities that could affect one’s future achievements. Offensive-based transcendent divine mights were more focused on enhancing one’s strength.

For instance, the Heretical God Force was an auxiliary arcane skill. Without it, Lin Ming would never have obtained his current prowess in the Laws of Thunder and Fire. He might not have even managed to cross heavenly tribulation.

“I’ve got it. One day, I will take back the Verdant Feather Holy Lands’ transcendent divine might!”

As Lin Ming spoke, the aura of Nether Limitless suddenly erupted!

On the Divine Seal Altar, the black-clothed Nether Limitless seemed to become the only remaining person between the heavens and earth. Even the distant audience members were influenced by Nether Limitless’s aura. This feeling was as if someone had pointed a dagger at their heads, making them feel cold all over!

This was Nether Limitless's sword potential! A thick killing intent as pure and black as the endless night swept over the entire audience.

"What a terrifying potential. To be able to utilize his sword potential to such a degree, he can kill others with this alone!"

"This is indeed horrifying. And, the key point is that this is the sword potential that he is releasing under the suppression of the Divine Seal Altar's 31st step. Although the pressure on the flat steps is far lower than the pressure on the vertical cliffs, one's true essence will still be greatly suppressed. To be able to display this level of skill underneath this pressure, one can only remain in awe of the young…"

Even Huo Violentstone, who always believed that his own people were the most amazing and wonderful, had a solemn expression on his face. His eyes were full of praise and shock. He couldn't help but acknowledge Nether Limitless's strength.

As for the Skydark Holy Lands, their numerous disciples were cheering louder than ever.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Nether is invincible!"

"Senior-apprentice Brother Nether will win!"

"Haha! This is the majesty of a true king!"

At this time, Nether Limitless finally took out his blade. It was a four foot long katana, thin, with a foot long hilt. This was a medium-grade spirit artifact that was used with both hands. In terms of quality, it was inferior to the Phoenix Blood Spear. But, the current Phoenix Blood Spear had yet to fully grow. The power that this katana could display was in truth above that of the Phoenix Blood Spear!

With a thrust, the sword whistled through the air!

In that instant, space seemed to distort around Nether Limitless. Nether Limitless was hidden within this space distortion, sword and body having become one.

Clear ripples formed around the edges of space around the sword, cutting apart all!

As Lin Ming saw this sword strike, his pupils shrank. Once, a supreme elder who thoroughly understood the Space Laws stated that the sharpest weapon in the world was not any material object forged by a refining grandmaster, but space itself. When the skies broke apart and space collapsed, that force was able to tear apart all of reality!

Although Nether Limitless couldn't tear open the incomparably stable space of the Divine Realm, he could actually form spatial ripples around his sword to greatly enhance its cutting ability!

Just this casual sword strike was already so powerful.

How would Lin Ming block this strike?

Everyone's eyes widened. The heroic young elites able to sit in this arena were all heaven-gifted talents of their area. Even so, if they were the ones facing Nether Limitless, they would be horrified to find that they might not even be able to withstand this attack! Moreover, this was only Nether Limitless's first sword strike. It was nothing but a probing strike with the fierce attacks yet to come!

"What a powerful strike! Lin Ming is in danger!"

Facing this sword strike, Lin Ming shifted to the side and wielded the Phoenix Blood Spear. The long spear cried out as an azure spear light shot out like a brilliant flood dragon, smashing into Nether Limitless's sword light.

Chi chi chi!

The sword light and spear light fiercely collided. An incomparably harsh grating sound spread out. The spatial ripples around the sword light continuously melted away, and the azure spear light also constantly broke apart, and at an even faster rate.

Nether Limitless grinned. Space was known as the sharpest weapon. Its reputation as being able to cut through all was well warranted!

But, just as Lin Ming's spear light was about to be swallowed up by the sword light, a mysterious scene occurred. After the broken spear light broke apart, it reformed, reborn once more!

"Endless growth?"

Nether Limitless's eyebrows shot up. This spear light actually had the attribute of endlessness.

Endlessness was an extremely special type of Concept. Once this Concept was evolved to the peak, it would become the Concept of Immortality!

After Lin Ming absorbed the supreme ancient azure dragon bone, the endlessly growing attribute of his true essence had clearly increased.

Peng!

As the spatial ripples were melted away, the spear light and sword light both burst apart, turning into black and azure lights that rained down.

In the first exchange of moves, both were evenly matched!

"He blocked it?"

"I thought that Lin Ming would suffer a loss."

"Fierce!"

In a single exchange between masters, even if it was just a probing strike, one could see many things from it. Although the two were casually striking each other, their moves contained the mysteries of numerous Laws, worthy of praise!

“Not bad. You are worthy of me being a little serious, but that is only being serious!”

Nether Limitless laughed. His body turned into a beam of light as he hurtled towards Lin Ming!

Chapter 1248 – Violent Collision

Chapter 1248 – Violent Collision

…

…

…

1000 feet was nothing but a faint twinkle in the eye. In a mere moment, Nether Limitless appeared in front of Lin Ming!

This was not space transmission. With Nether Limitless's understandings of the Space Laws, he wasn't yet able to reach teleportation in the Divine Realm. But, the speed that he could erupt with in this short distance actually seemed no different from teleportation.

Nether Limitless had shown the limit of his speed! His hand had already disappeared; all that was left was a black katana that roused a storm of sword light!

This was the same as 10 peak martial artists flourishing their swords all together. And, their sword lights had all gathered in front of Lin Ming, each one able to cause spatial ripples!

Such sword techniques caused one to gasp in praise!

"The might of these sword lights cannot compare to Nether Limitless's first strike, but they still contained 30-40% of the original's power and they also contained the Space Laws, able to form spatial ripples. These sword strikes are fast, but they are also extremely cunning and tricky; it is nearly impossible to block them all! With so many sword lights gathered together, their might could be imagined. Altogether, they were at least 10 times more powerful than the first strike!"

In the audience, even those martial artists that were confident in themselves felt helpless in the face of such an attack. It was like being a frail leaf in a mighty storm; they would have no strength to resist!

“The speeds of these sword strikes are fast, much faster than a spear. Let’s see just how Lin Ming deals with it!”

Lin Ming’s eyes sharpened. Facing Nether Limitless, there was no room to be lax.

In contrast with Nether Limitless’s dazzling sword lights, Lin Ming’s attack was calm and steady!

Like mountains and rivers, like the boundless earth!

He stood strong and tall, an indomitable wall!

Lin Ming’s spear light was far from being comparable to Nether Limitless’s strike in terms of speed. But, the brilliant azure light on his spear formed a halo, becoming one.

Every single spear strike Lin Ming thrust out carried with it the stability of the vast lands, like a surging tide stretching to the ends of the earth. A single spear strike was able to counter several of Nether Limitless’s sword strikes!

Lin Ming had already opened seven of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, and the Heretical God Force was revolving to the limit.

Spear after spear, each stronger than the last!

Ding ding ding ding ding ding!

The collision of sword and spear had long become a continuous sound, like a rolling thundercloud, like the roar of a dragon, echoing through the world!

On the Divine Seal Altar, with these two people as the center, turbulent air waves blew wildly about, incomparably violent. If this wasn't the Divine Seal Altar, then just these air currents alone would have the strength to shear off mountain peaks.

"Overturn the mountains, sunder the seas – Myriad Water Sword Arts!"

Nether Limitless's swords sharpened. His sword light became chaotic and wild, like splashing water, completely enveloping Lin Ming!

This was the Verdant Feather Holy Lands' Water Laws. The Laws of Water and the Laws of Ice originally came from the same source. The Verdant Feather Holy Lands was a Holy Lands that displayed the might of the water elements to their peak!

Now, what Nether Limitless used was a fusion of the Water Laws and Space Laws. Every sword light caused deep and vibrant spatial ripples, just like ripples in water!

Water, soft and formless, it could splash against stone and metal without being affected.

But, the power of water far surpassed metal and stone in many aspects.

No matter how hard stone and metal were, they could still be crushed if struck with an even harder material. As for water, it was like a never-ending sword, a flowing blade without end.

This was the Concept of Water, lingering and constant, able to erode away all material. Even a single drop of water, day after day, could slowly pierce through the hardest rock.

As Nether Limitless used the Myriad Water Sword Arts, the Concept of Space that surrounded his sword lights instantly rose to a dramatic new level!

Water and space fused together. In that instant, water ripples and spatial ripples superimposed on each other, their oscillating frequencies resonating! This was causing two fundamentally different Laws to vibrate on the same frequency. Even many Divine Lord powerhouses present felt inferior as they saw this!

“Is this really a battle between juniors?”

“We are old, far too old! The rivers will wash away the past and bring in the future. Even I cannot achieve such a magnificent fusion of Laws.”

The Unbroken Cult Great Elder said with feeling in his voice. His strength was far above Nether Limitless’s, but that was because of his cultivation. In terms of comprehension of Laws, the truth was that he also surpassed Nether Limitless. Even so, he wasn’t able to reproduce such an exquisite fusion of the Laws. This made him feel as if the 10,000 years of his life had all been nothing but a waste.

Geniuses truly did not need explanations. There were some things that people couldn’t comprehend for a lifetime, but that geniuses could actually understand after a single try!

“He is truly blessed by the heavens; I simply cannot compare.” Beside the Unbroken Cult Great Elder, Yu Youming sighed with longing. The difference between them was far too great.

The Myriad Water Sword Arts and Lin Ming’s spear light collided! At the start, Lin Ming’s spear lights grew continuously, a single spear light breaking through several of Nether Limitless’s sword lights.

But now, Nether Limitless’s sword light also contained the attribute of endlessness. But, his perpetual endless was brought about by the Water Laws. Although it was inferior to Lin Ming’s own technique, it still achieved similar results from different methods.

“Endlessness? I can do that too!”

In that instant, Lin Ming was covered up by Nether Limitless’s sword light. All of his spear powers were completely suppressed.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, be careful!”

“Brother Lin!”

The disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan all held their breath. As for Qin Xingxuan, her forehead was wet with a nervous sweat. In her eyes, all she could see was that Lin Ming had been completely enveloped by Nether Limitless's sword light.

In that dense sword light, even divine iron would be turned into powder. If a flesh and blood body was placed in that sword light, just what would happen?

Mu Qianyu's palms were also wet with sweat. This was reality; this was not the divine dream space!

Although the rules stated that one could not kill others, in a battle between peak masters, having accidents occur was an extremely likely matter! As for Xiao Daochild, he may be the one supervising this competition and his strength was also formidable, but he was several miles away. Moreover, Xiao Daochild had a very distant temperament. He hadn't meddled in anything so far, so it was hard to say what would happen if there really was an accident!

"What formidable Water Laws; it nearly traces upon the threshold of the fifth level Concept." Lin Ming's face was cold and solemn underneath the sword light. If Nether Limitless could rank near the top of the Divine Seal Decree, he naturally had aspects that he excelled at. The Space and Time Laws that he perceived were among the most difficult Laws to comprehend, and even as he mastered them, he even managed to perceive the Water Laws to this degree. This was not something that the average person could hope to achieve.

Even for Lin Ming, if he hadn't entered the Divine Dream World and swallowed an elementary spirit source, his comprehension of Laws would be far inferior to Nether Limitless's.

"If this is the limit of your techniques, then you have already lost! Sea Splitting Sword!" Nether Limitless shouted out, putting forth his killing move. The name of Sea Splitting Sword was no exaggeration, this sword strike could truly split a sea in half! With such a formidable sword potential and such overwhelming momentum, the might of this attack could be imagined!

A terrifying aura swept through the entire audience, causing everyone to stare on with bated breath. Their eyes all focused on Lin Ming, waiting to see just how Lin Ming would withstand this sword strike.

In that instant, Lin Ming's aura erupted to the limit. All of those spear strikes gathered together, condensing into one. All of those spear strikes from before had not been random attacks, but preparing for this moment, this final spear strike.

Celestial Tyrant Manual – Hundred Layered Waves!

To use Hundred Layered Waves to counter the Sea Splitting Sword, Lin Ming's technique was not based upon the Concept of Water, but with the constant spear potentials superimposed upon each other, this was achieving the same effects as the Sea Splitting Sword!

Hundred Layered Waves against the Sea Splitting Sword!

Bang!

The spear light and sword light exploded simultaneously. At that time, it was like two tsunamis a hundred miles high crashed into each other, causing the world to tremble and massive shockwaves to surge outwards.

Everyone saw the phantom of a vast and raging sea appear in the skies above the Divine Seal Altar. The waves roiled about, splashing into the deep blue heavens!

Lin Ming and Nether Limitless were both fighting in this turbulent sea, like two flood dragons striving to be king!

"He blocked it!"

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, well fought!"

"Just that spear strike alone is enough for Senior-apprentice Brother Lin's fame to rise! His name will be praised among all martial artists of a hundred great worlds!

The disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were all delirious with excitement. The semifinals of Gravemoon Star were far from being able to sweep through the entire Divine Realm. After all, each area had its own corresponding semifinals. But, out of the 100 great worlds participating in the semifinals on Gravemoon Star, Lin Ming was a name that no one could avoid. Without a doubt, Lin Ming was one of the greatest powerhouses from these 100 great worlds!

Being one of the strongest wasn't the most alarming matter. What was most astounding was that Lin Ming only had an early Divine Sea cultivation, and he was just over 30 years old. For a martial artist that lived for several million years or even 10 million years, 30 years of age couldn't even be considered the end of their beginning.

By just this alone, Lin Ming's talent was enough to sweep across everyone from these 100 great worlds! It was possible that he would even obtain the attention of an Empyrean!

Obtaining the attention of an Empyrean was different from reaching the top 10 rankings of the Earth Proclamation and then being chosen to enter Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. This was because even if one were to enter Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, they wouldn't be able to see Empyrean Vast Universe and would only be able to receive the guidance of his direct disciple, Vast Cosmos. What sort of character was an Empyrean? In their almost 100 million years of life, they would see countless extreme talents. To them, being in the top 10 ranks of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting's Earth Proclamation wasn't anything at all.

Thus, how could the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan not be brimming with pride!

Nether Limitless also realized this. In a sense, his limelight had already been swept away by Lin Ming. "No wonder you have the confidence to challenge me! You indeed have the capital to be proud of yourself! Your talent can be considered at the peak of these 100 great worlds, and, if your talent was a bit better, you could even barely compare with those Empyrean descendants! But, talent is only talent. In true battle, all that matters is strength! And in strength, you are inferior to me!"

A sharp light flashed in Nether Limitless's eyes. Although he didn't want to admit it, Lin Ming's talent had indeed surpassed his own! Even though he was two small boundaries higher, even though he was almost 10 years older, he still wasn't able to quickly defeat Lin Ming. This was simply his life's shame!

He had already lost to Lin Ming in talent, but he absolutely would not lose to Lin Ming in battle!

Even if he had to risk using every forbidden technique in his arsenal, Nether Limitless had to defeat Lin Ming, no matter the cost. Otherwise, this loss would become a stain that he would never wipe away in his life. As for obtaining the attention of Empyrean Demondawn, that would turn into a joke!

"Oh?" Lin Ming faintly smiled. "I will teach you that not only is your talent inferior to mine, but your strength is too!"

Chapter 1249 – The Defeated Nether Limitless

Chapter 1249 – The Defeated Nether Limitless

…

…

…

“My talent is inferior to yours, and even my strength is inferior?” Nether Limitless laughed wildly as he heard Lin Ming’s words, extremely wildly!

“Hahahahahahaha! I didn’t say that your talent is truly the best amongst 100 great worlds, only that your talent can match the peak standard! Are you really so deluded that your think your talent is unparalleled? Do you believe that not only is your talent unrivalled, but also your strength? You want to teach me? Really, if I gave you a ladder you would think you could climb to the top!”

Nether Limitless fused true essence into his voice, having it spread through the arena!

As the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands heard this, all of them rose up in anger. The entire Skydark Holy Lands area was roiled up in a chaotic mob.

“This brat is too arrogant!”

“Senior-apprentice Brother Nether, kick his ass until even his mom doesn’t recognize him!”

“Beat up that brat! Throw him off the Divine Seal Altar! Beat him into a pulp!”

It had to be known that the Skydark Holy Lands had an extraordinary status. With Nether Limitless added on, there were over 10,000 martial artists from the Skydark Holy Lands present, of which 8000-9000 were juniors.

The First Martial Meeting was a wild scene that caused everyone to go crazy with emotion. Let alone these martial artists that often resorted to violence to solve all of their problems, even in mortal nations, there was likely to be riots after kickball matches. Once the fans of these kickball matches rose up, it wasn't strange if dozens or hundreds of people were trampled to death.

The 8000-9000 junior disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands were roused into a frothing rage. Even the other martial artists from the Demondawn Great World were going mad. They originally had disciples attending the semifinals, but now that they had all been eliminated, Nether Limitless was the only one to come from their great world. Since they had the closest relations with them, they naturally had to support Nether Limitless.

Xiao Daochild slightly opened his eyes, faintly frowning. His figure moved and he flew over the chaotic part of the arena. A great pressure suddenly came crashing down from the skies, and all of those mad spectators were forced down by this pressure, immediately subdued. Otherwise, with billions of people in the audience and all of them formidable geniuses of their era, once a riot occurred, let alone Xiao Daochild, not even a Great World King would be able to suppress them. Perhaps only an Empyrean could do so.

As the Ancient Phoenix Clan saw those from the Skydark Holy Lands go crazy, they also started to cry out. The Ancient Phoenix Clan only had several hundred disciples present, but every disciple was shouting as loudly as they could!

"Lin Ming will win!"

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin is unstoppable!"

Whether or not they believed Lin Ming could win at this time, none of them would weaken their momentum!

And in fact, with this sort of scene at the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting that involved the very honor of a sect, it was easy for others to be infected with the atmosphere. At this time, they simply didn't care if Lin Ming would win. Rather, they would all do their best to maintain the honor of their sect. Making sure that their own side had the greatest momentum was the most important matter right now!

"Nether Limitless isn't willing to admit that his own talent is inferior to Lin Ming's, but the truth is already placed right in front of him. But, what he said is also correct. Lin Ming's current strength is lacking and he might not be able to win. But, after one or two years have passed, Lin Ming will likely surpass Nether Limitless. Out of the four people, Lin Ming is the youngest and his future is also the brightest!"

A clear-headed spectator commented. There were many Elders and juniors that weren't related to either Lin Ming or Nether Limitless, and they were calmly discussing the situation.

"Heh, Nether Limitless absolutely cannot lose this match. He already loses in talent. If he loses in strength also, then he won't be able to even lift his head up high!"

Currently, Nether Limitless should be the victor of this battle. If he couldn't win, then his face would sweep the ground.

On the Divine Seal Altar, Nether Limitless slowly walked towards Lin Ming. Suddenly, something strange occurred. Every three steps that Nether Limitless walked forwards, he would leave behind a shadow. This shadow was a complete copy of Nether Limitless; all of them held a katana in their hands and all of them had an extremely dangerous aura. This was not an afterimage left behind by moving too fast. Rather, Nether Limitless was moving at an extremely slow speed, just like a normal mortal walking. Even so, he left behind three remnant shadows, making it seem as if there were four of him.

"Avatar technique?"

"No, that is the Space Laws!"

Nether Limitless had extremely high attainments in the Space and Time Laws. And, once one perceived the Space Laws to a certain degree, they could create spatial mirror projections.

These mirror images were different from illusions – they had true striking power. According to one's understanding of the Space Laws, their striking power could vary between 10% to 100% of the main body!

If one could reach 100% reproduction, then that was a perfect mirror image. If one could reach the peak in this aspect, their mirror images would even inherit the Laws, martial skills, combat experience, and memories of the original. That was a truly incomprehensible boundary.

Moreover, an important factor was that these mirror images did not fear attacks. Shattering a mirror image wasn't difficult, but doing so cost true essence, and these mirror images could even be reformed afterwards!

"It's actually spatial mirror images. By perfectly fusing the first four level Concepts of the Space Laws together and tracing the threshold of the fifth level Concept, he can actually form spatial mirror images!"

"Lin Ming is a monstrous genius, but so is Nether Limitless. The Space and Time Laws are known as second amongst the most difficult Laws to comprehend. He is so young and yet he has managed to perceive them to such a degree. This really makes us older generation martial artists feel useless!"

On the Divine Seal Altar, Lin Ming now had to battle four opponents!

Four Nether Limitlesses simultaneously attacked!

Four swords slashed out together. In the skies, dark clouds began to gather as snow fluttered to the ground, filling the world!

"Drifting Snow of 8000 Miles!"

At the same time he created spatial mirror images using the Space Laws, Nether Limitless also displayed his Ice Law killing move. His ability to fuse Laws together was truly praiseworthy!

In just this Drifting Snow of 8000 Miles, every single snowflake contained Laws and Concepts. If these snowflakes touched someone, they could even freeze a Life Destruction martial artist to death. With millions and billions of snowflakes falling down, it could kill all living creatures for thousands of miles!

To Nether Limitless, this was his ultimate killing move. He had originally planned to use it at the finals of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, but now he was forced by Lin Ming to show his hand here.

Facing this strike, Lin Ming pointed his long spear to the ground. Behind him, the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower began to quietly bloom.

Facing Nether Limitless's all-out attack, Lin Ming directly opened the grandmist space! An ancient and boundless power erupted. As those endless snowflakes fell into the grandmist space, all of them began to melt away!

Using the grandmist space was something that Lin Ming had already consulted with Mo Eversnow about and decided on before the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting had begun.

Facing these countless masters of the Divine Realm, as well as the unfathomably deep Empyrean descendants, he would need to use the grandmist space sooner or later. Otherwise, there was no chance that Lin Ming would win. After all, he was only at the early Divine Sea realm.

If he failed to blossom in the First Martial Meeting, he wouldn't be able to enter Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, let alone study the Divine Dream Law from Empyrean Divine Dream. To study the Divine Dream Law was something that Lin Ming desperately wished for.

After the grandmist space was camouflaged with Mo Eversnow's technique, even a World King wouldn't be able to see through it. The only chance was if they had seen Empyrean Primordius use the grandmist space with their own eyes in the past. But, Empyrean Primordius was someone with a similar status to Empyrean Divine Dream. And just how mysterious was Empyrean Divine Dream? Even if one became the champion of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting and reached first place on the Heaven Proclamation, they still wouldn't be able to see her!

Even an ordinary World King or Great World King did not have the chance to see her! And wanting to see Empyrean Divine Dream display her full strength was an even greater impossibility. Only a similar Empyrean level character would be able to see her strength with their own eyes!

In other words, unless one was an Empyrean level existence similar to Empyrean Primordius, then even an Empyrean chief disciple like Vast Cosmos wouldn't be able to recognize the camouflaged grandmist space.

Perhaps the grandmist space being recognized by an Empyrean was an inevitability. But, Lin Ming believed that these characters would certainly know of the great war 100,000 years ago, when Empyrean Primordius had waged a cataclysmic war with Empyrean Thunder Punishment and other peerless powerhouses.

This war had involved countless masters of the Divine Realm, and had likely even included God Beasts. It was even likely that Empyrean Primordius or Empyrean Thunder Punishment had perished because of this!

How could such a great matter not be known by other Empyreans?

They should also have guessed that Empyrean Primordius had left his inheritance within the Sky Spill Continent.

But, the reason that they turned a blind eye to all this definitely wasn't simple at all.

In other words, those that could recognize the grandmist space would also know about Empyrean Primordius's inheritance. As for those that couldn't recognize the grandmist space, they wouldn't know anything at all, so letting them see the grandmist space wasn't a big deal.

Drawing back 10,000 steps, even if someone coveted the transcendent divine might known as the Primordius martial intent, it was still impossible for them to take it away from Lin Ming, because Lin Ming didn't have a jade slip at all. Even if they caught Lin Ming and searched his soul they would still find nothing.

There was indeed danger, but Lin Ming had to make a desperate gamble no matter what. If he could truly blossom in splendor at this First Martial Meeting, then no one would be able to move against him.

The resources of an Empyrean Heavenly Palace, the Divine Dream Law, these were chances that he absolutely could not let go of!

In the instant that he released the grandmist space, within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, all the supreme elders there were able to see that the Drifting Snow of 8000 Miles was being rapidly melted away by some bizarre force field!

"Mm? This is..."

"It is a domain ability, an extremely powerful force field. Could it be a transcendent divine might?" Several Great World King powerhouses could all see shock reflected in each other's eyes.

"It should be an ability on the level of a transcendent divine might! Moreover, it is quite complete... it could be 20-30% complete. This Lin Ming truly had great lucky chances. It is impossible for an influence like the Ancient Phoenix Clan to possess a transcendent divine might."

"That is also reasonable. Without a great fortuitous encounter, how could he possibly grow to this degree and stand on the 31st step of the Divine Seal Altar? Even that Dragon Fang must have encountered some heaven-shaking lucky chance!"

These World Kings were a little surprised that Lin Ming possessed a transcendent divine might, but they had already guessed this long ago.

To be able to stand at this height, who wouldn't possess a transcendent divine might? These Great Holy Lands, if they didn't possess a complete transcendent divine might, they would at least possess an incomplete one. As for the Empyrean descendants, they certainly had at least one complete transcendent divine might!

However, at the center of the grand hall, there was one person, Vast Cosmos, who had a strange expression on his face. "This force field seems like..."

Vast Cosmos seemed to make some vague associations in his mind. But, before he could think about it further, in less than the blink of an eye, Lin Ming had already attacked Nether Limitless!

In this moment, Lin Ming's entire body was burning with deep red flames. From deep in his heart, purple fire erupted. Even his gaze seemed to hold an inferno.

He opened the Heretical God Force to the limit and completely burnt the phoenix blood within him. On the Phoenix Blood Spear, two divine lights of red and purple began to shine!

Purple was virtual fire! Red was true fire!

The divine lights intertwined, fusing together. This spear strike was the peak utilization of Lin Ming's Fire Laws!

Nether Limitless comprehended the first four level Concepts of the Space Laws and Water Laws, even tracing the threshold of the fifth level Concept. This achievement was enough to earn him endless praise.

But as for Lin Ming, he had already stepped past the threshold of the fifth level Concept of the Fire Laws. He had achieved the boundary of truly summoning virtual fire!

This fifth level Concept was a completely new level. Stepping into a threshold and tracing it were two completely different boundaries. This was the greatest harvest that Lin Ming had gained after entering the Divine Dream World and swallowing up the spirit source!

“Concept of Virtual Fire – Virtual Disintegration!”

Lin Ming poured all of the flames that wreathed his body into the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Purple and red flames twisted together on the Phoenix Blood Spear. Facing the four Nether Limitlesses and the endless dominion of snow around them, his attack seemed common and weak. But, in that instant, the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower wrapped around Lin Ming. He burst forwards, his speed reaching the limit as he directly tore apart that curtain of endless snow!

Underneath Nether Limitless’s control, the millions of snowflakes swirled together, gathering into a massive white tornado that swept towards Lin Ming.

But, Lin Ming remained unstoppable, breaking through everything!

With the grandmist space, he had wiped away the increased striking power from Nether Limitless’s Space Laws.

Then, with his Concept of Virtual Fire that he comprehended by truly stepping into the fifth level of the Fire Laws, he completely nullified Nether Limitless’s Drifting Snow of 8000 Miles!

With both of them being elemental Laws, when the fifth level Concept of Fire was compared to the fourth level Concept of Water, it was obvious which was stronger and which was weaker!

Lin Ming’s spear broke through Nether Limitless’s pervasive sword light, immediately reaching his front!

With four Nether Limitlesses present, an ordinary martial artist would be hard-pressed to differentiate them. But, to Lin Ming this was not a problem at all. When the grandmist space came shrouding down, the energy of the spatial mirror images had been suppressed, and even seemed on the verge of dissipating. Although he wasn’t able to cause the mirror images to completely collapse, it was still enough for Lin Ming to separate out Nether Limitless’s true body!

The Phoenix Blood Spear aimed straight towards the true Nether Limitless’s chest. In that moment, Nether Limitless was greatly shocked!

He cut down with his sword towards Lin Ming. But, he had just used all his strength and hadn’t been able to summon any new strength. Moreover, this was only a hasty counterattack – how could he possibly block Lin Ming?

The Phoenix Blood Spear broke past Nether Limitless’s final sword light and pierced through his protective true essence!

Bang!

Nether Limitless’s protective true essence completely burst apart. The power of virtual fire flushed into Nether Limitless’s body. In that moment, Nether Limitless’s heart filled with endless anger and jealousy!

Hate!

Unwillingness!

Envy!

He hated Lin Ming's talent, he envied Lin Ming's talent, he was unwilling to believe that Lin Ming's talent was superior to his own. He seethed with fury that he would lose under the gaze of all present, becoming nothing but a miserable loser!

The flames of envy and anger were all types of virtual fire. As Lin Ming's strike hit Nether Limitless, it caused all of the anger and jealousy within him to expand to the limit, becoming increasingly wild and intense, as if Nether Limitless's body would soon burn away!

His eyes turned blood red; his body would explode at any moment!

"You've lost!"

Underneath the rules of this competition and with Xiao Daochild watching from the side, it was impossible for Lin Ming to kill. He simply swept out the Phoenix Blood Spear and struck Nether Limitless with the spear shaft.

At this time, Nether Limitless's protective true essence had already broken. When the spear shaft struck him, he spat out a mouthful of blood as he was sent flying backwards!

In that instant, the insufferably arrogant Nether Limitless spun in the air before coming crashing back down on the Divnie Seal Altar with blood splashing everywhere!

Nether Limitless had been defeated!

Lin Ming took a deep breath and adjusted his chaotic true essence. He put away the Phoenix Blood Spear. With the pressure of the 31st step pressing down on him, using Virtual Disintegration had consumed a good deal of energy.

The martial arts arena had fallen into complete silence. Even the faint and elusive Xiao Daochild had opened his eyes and was staring straight at Lin Ming.

Chapter 1250 – Lin Ming, King!

Chapter 1250 – Lin Ming, King!

…

…

…

As a disciple of Empyrean Vast Universe, Xiao Daochild had constantly gone in and out of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. In his million plus years of life, he had seen countless proud sons of heaven, and all of these geniuses were at the level of Empyrean descendants!

Empyrean Vast Universe himself had several hundred direct disciples. As for the other Empyreans, Xiao Daochild had seen even more of their disciples!

With this level of experience, it was hard for this small semifinal occurring on the Divine Seal Altar to arouse Xiao Daochild's interest. Thus, he floated high in the air, cross-legged, his eyes shut in meditation and seemingly extremely detached. Even Nether Limitless wasn't able to enter Xiao Daochild's eyes.

But now, Lin Ming's performance had been enough to startle Xiao Daochild to attention.

What he was shocked about was not Lin Ming's strength. In his opinion, Lin Ming's strength was within reasonable bounds. No, what he was surprised about was Lin Ming's talent.

Just over 30 years of age, the early Divine Sea Lin Ming had been able to defeat the late Divine Sea Nether Limitless. This talent was high enough to stand evenly with an Empyrean descendant! Moreover, Lin Ming had not grown up in an Empyrean Heavenly Palace. Without the resources, inheritances, and teachers available at an Empyrean Heavenly

Palace, he was at an enormous disadvantage, yet he had managed to accomplish what he did. This was truly terrifying!

"This child is… unbelievable!"

Xiao Daochild's single phrase of disbelief was already an extremely high appraisal. As for the audience, they no longer knew what expression to make.

At the Skydark Holy Lands' area, all of those wild and raucous young disciples looked as if a bucket of water had been poured on their heads. All of their fires were completely doused!

The invincible Elder Senior-apprentice Brother in their eyes, that undefeatable existence, had been completely crushed. He had lost in talent, lost in strength, left in ruins!

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin is… too fierce!"

Yan Littlemoon whispered in the audience. Her journey in the competition had long since ended and she had made to the arena stands in time to watch Lin Ming defeat Nether Limitless.

The disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were all dumbfounded, their jaws dropped. To them, although their Senior-apprentice Brother Lin was the strongest character, they never really imagined that Lin Ming would be so overwhelming that he would defeat even Nether Limitless!

In particular, the fact that Lin Ming had indeed comprehended the fifth level Concept of the Fire Laws.

At just over 30 years of age, he had stepped foot into the true temple of high level Concepts. He had completed a breakthrough that many senior martial artists were unable to do in their entire lives!

Nether Limitless was considered talented in the aspect of Laws, but even he wasn't able to fully comprehend a fifth level Concept!

"Lin Ming! King!"

Some people from the audience began to shout out!

And with this shouting, a wave of shouts burst out.

"Lin Ming! King!"

"Lin Ming! King!"

At first it was only the Ancient Phoenix Clan cheering, but now the entire arena was ringing with shouts, the entire audience of billions roaring in jubilation!

The billions of people formed a terrifying sound wave that resounded for 100,000 miles, washing away the clouds, echoing through the heavens!

In the semifinals, for a talent to be born that was equal to an Empyrean descendant was beyond rare!

From all the martial artists present, even if they came from Great World King Holy Land backgrounds, all of them were nothing but weeds compared to Empyrean Heavenly Palaces. But, Lin Ming used his true strength to inform each and every one of them that regardless of how poor their background, their resources, their masters, or their inheritances were, they too could still reach the standard of an Empyrean descendant!

In that moment, Lin Ming seemed to be the only existence on the Divine Seal Altar, a hero that ruled over the world, standing arrogantly amongst society!

"Lin Ming actually won… he comprehended a fifth level Law Concept, and also has a transcendent divine might…"

Within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, Vast Cosmos was lost in thought for a moment. He took a light breath, observing everything happening around him. Then, he discovered that out of the many World Kings present, a black-clothed man was looking at him.

This man's eyes were deep and ghostly, his pupils red. He had a faint smile on his face, but for some reason, when he looked at Vast Cosmos, Vast Cosmos felt his mind jump. "Tian Mingzi, what is it?"

"Nothing much, haha..."

Tian Mingzi remained smiling as before, as if nothing was able to disturb his congenial mood. His descendant Nether Limitless had been suppressed by Lin Ming in terms of both talent and strength. Even so, in the face of such a situation, his ability to remain serene and smiling was not something that an ordinary World King would possess.

For many World Kings, the older they became, the more they cared about honor and face. They had nothing left to fight for, and it was nearly impossible for them to change who was already ranked weaker and stronger. Thus, they would place their energy on the struggles of the junior disciples. This was how things were. When neighbors met, they would often compete with their children's achievements.

Normally, if the descendant of a World King were to be completely rolled over by someone else, they would be angrier than Huo Violentstone. But Tian Mingzi wasn't moved at all. He still talked and happily laughed with those around him as before.

"Mm..." Vast Cosmos's eyebrows jumped up. "Did Tian Mingzi realize something strange with the force field that Lin Ming used just now? Or was he trying to find some clue from my expression?"

All of these suspicions flashed through Vast Cosmos's heart. For those at his level of strength, it was easy to figure out many things from how they reacted.

"The force field that Lin Ming used reminds me of someone... although I have never encountered him before, I have actually listened to Honorable Master speak of him. Honorable Master holds an extremely high admiration towards this person. According to Honorable Mater's description, the force field that Lin Ming used has some similarities to that person's own unique ability!

"I must report this matter to Honorable Master and have him decide for himself."

All of these thoughts rapidly passed through Vast Cosmos's mind. Even so, he maintained a stony expression, not allowing anyone to know what he was thinking.

"What a pity! Nephew Limitless was so close; he lost by a single move." Wide Universe World King stroked his beard, a regretful look in his eyes as if Nether Limitless had been his own disciple.

"Mm… Nephew Limitless has simultaneously obtained high comprehensions in the Space and Time Laws as well as the Water Laws. By spreading his energy between three Laws, he can't compare to Lin Ming focusing on a single Law. Otherwise, with Nephew Limitless's talent, he should have been able to enter the fifth level Concept. If that happened, then this would be a completely different scene altogether. It would be hard to tell just who the winner would have been."

Another World King powerhouse echoed, clearly looking for another reason to explain Nether Limitless's defeat.

In fact, in their opinion, who cared if Lin Ming's talent reached that of an Empyrean descendant? The current Tian Mingzi had a talent that surpassed most Empyrean descendants!

His future achievements would truly be incomparably terrifying, so what was the loss of a single Nether Limitless to Tian Mingzi? Thus, all of these World Kings praised and flattered Tian Mingzi in order to form better relations with him.

Tian Mingzi thought little of it. He only said, "Everyone, you all simply think too highly of Limitless. This descendant of mine is just a useless good-for-nothing. There have been so many resources used to raise him, and yet his achievements have been barely passable. As for that Lin Ming, he only comes from a peak Holy Land and yet he has such wonderful results. His talent is truly astounding. It is not an injustice that Limitless lost to him."

"Haha! Brother Nether is so open-minded, it really makes us feel ashamed!"

"That's right. Juniors have their own ways of doing things. If we try to force our own desires and wishes onto them, that will only increase the pressure on them and cause their future achievements to suffer."

"Brother Nether's carefree and relaxed attitude is truly worthy of praise."

As everyone was praising Tian Mingzi, no one brought up the transcendent divine might that Lin Ming had used. To them, this was a lucky chance that only Lin Ming could have experienced. For a character like Lin Ming, experiencing such lucky chances was well within reason.

If it were an ordinary genius, obtaining this sort of lucky chance would have instead been a recipe for disaster.

But Lin Ming's talent was comparable to an Empyrean descendant's. With that sort of status, he was truly worthy of such a lucky chance, thus he wouldn't draw the covetous eyes of others.

Although Vast Cosmos knew that this lucky chance was beyond extraordinary!

At the First Martial Meeting semifinals arena at Gravemoon Star, the tide of cheers continued for a full incense stick of time before they died down.

Nether Limitless had been eliminated. Lin Ming sat down on the 31st step of the Divine Altar and began to meditate, restoring his strength and stabilizing his breath.

And on another side, Dragon Fang and Bloodless Sword had yet to fight.

They had both been watching Lin Ming's battle.

Lin Ming glanced over at Dragon Fang, returning his gaze.

Dragon Fang faintly smiled, simply saying, "You fought well."

This evaluation meant that even though Dragon Fang had witnessed the strength Lin Ming had revealed, he had only appreciated it, and was not afraid of it nor ashamed of himself.

Only such an opponent could cause Lin Ming to be filled with anticipation, seething with fighting spirit.

As for Bloodless Sword, his expression was grim and dignified. He was well aware that if he had to face Lin Ming, he would undoubtedly lose!

“This brat, how could he be so abnormal!?”

Bloodless Sword gripped the sword in his hand, a feeling of helplessness swelling up within him. Lin Ming was too strong!

And at this time, Dragon Fang turned to Bloodless Sword. He said, “Friend, it’s our turn.”

Dragon Fang looked extremely calm. But, as this look fell in Bloodless Sword’s eyes, he felt that it was nothing more than a pretentious act, as if he hadn’t cared about that battle just now at all!

Otherwise, how could he be so calm in the face of such a significant battle?

“This boy, does he really think I’m a soft persimmon or something? Does he really think he is on Lin Ming’s level? Does he think he can just pinch me to death as he pleases?”

Bloodless Sword suppressed the anger in his heart. He wanted to prove to everyone watching that although he couldn’t compare to Lin Ming, he was also a top class character! Although the current Dragon Fang seemed far too cool and lofty, he probably wasn’t any stronger than he himself was!

Woosh!

Bloodless Sword wielded his sword!

Bloodless Sword was a nickname, not his true name. He was the blade to a new paradise, the Bloodless Sword. Because the speed of his sword was so fast, his blade would never be stained with blood. This was how he had acquired his nickname!

In this way, Bloodless Sword's sword naturally reached the limit of speed!

Sword energies filled the air, like endless arctic winds howling through the world, blowing towards Dragon Fang.

What Bloodless Sword comprehended was the Concept of Wind. At this moment, Bloodless Sword's sword energies had fused into the wind. The wind became his sword, his sword became the wind! From the start his sword blade was nearly invisible; all that could be seen was his sword light. But now, even his sword light had completely vanished!

Even Nether Limitless's own sword skills were far inferior to Bloodless Sword's in terms of speed! This sword was as fast as a gale, dazzling, impossible to see; just how could one defend against it?

At this time, Dragon Fang also extracted his own weapon. This was a weapon that resembled a sword and a saber. Its hilt was straight, and the blade was too but curved at the end, seeming like a saber. The edges were sharp and the center had sharp ridges.

In terms of shape, it resembled a curved fang, thus it was called the Dragon Fang Blade. Dragon Fang's nickname had also originated from his sword!

"The speed is adequate, but the striking power is lacking."

Dragon Fang slashed out his sword. A brilliant sword energy swept through the world, causing space to tremble. In that instant, Bloodless Sword's endless sword light was twisted up and broken by Dragon Fang's attack!

With absolute strength, Dragon Fang had directly suppressed Bloodless Sword's sword energy!

Brute force to break through 10,000 moves. When the difference in strength had reached an absolute, no amount of techniques or skills could make up for it.

“What amazing striking power.”

A sharp light flashed through Lin Ming’s eyes. Dragon Fang’s striking power was too abnormal. It had to be known that this was only a casual strike – he hadn’t even used one of his stronger attacks.

“It looks like this fight will end immediately. The difference between Bloodless Sword and Dragon Fang is too great!”

Chapter 1251 – To Climb the Peak

Chapter 1251 – To Climb the Peak

…

…

…

“He has fused the Space Laws into his sword. Using the vibrations of space, he broke through my Concept of Wind!”

After Bloodless Sword’s attack failed, he drew backwards. Dragon Fang’s attack had horrified him. With his attack just now, he had used a boundless sword energy to mix up the air currents, causing all the sword energy within the area to turn violent, forming something similar to a sword domain.

This sword technique was far, far away from being able to cause space to tremble with sword energy; it was only creating a faintly similar phenomenon. But, this was already amazing enough. Bloodless Sword had defeated countless opponents with this move.

But now, Dragon Fang’s sword strike had truly disrupted space and easily broke apart Bloodless Sword’s attack. His comprehension of the Space Laws was actually formidable to such a ridiculous degree.

“Too terrifying!” Bloodless Sword tightly gripped his sword hilt. He realized that this Dragon Fang standing on front of him, among his contemporaries, was the most powerful opponent he had ever faced!

At this moment, Dragon Fang raised his sword.

As his sword flashed, Dragon Fang's star-bright pupils changed, condensing together into a single point. All around his pupils, countless mysterious patterns appeared. These eyes seemed filled with unfathomable mysteries, shrouded in darkness, causing everyone to be unable to fully look at his eyes!

"This is!?"

As Bloodless Sword saw these pupils, he felt his entire body go ice cold. At this time, Dragon Fang finally slashed out with his sword!

As this sword cut outwards, Dragon Fang's figure divided into eight, attacking Bloodless Sword from eight directions!

"What!?"

Bloodless Sword was left in a complete panic!

Spatial mirror images, divided into eight. This was someone that had truly stepped into the fifth level Concept of the Space Laws!

The fifth level of the Space Laws was far more difficult to reach than the elemental Laws. Even an extremely talented character like Nether Limitless had only managed to trace the threshold of the fifth level Law Concept. To be able to divide into four spatial mirror images was something that had shocked everyone present, but now Dragon Fang had truly comprehended the fifth level Concept of Space!

How was this possible…

Bloodless Sword felt his entire body freeze. At the moment when Dragon Fang displayed such ridiculous power, it had nearly broken apart his sword heart, making him lose all courage to resist.

The difference was too great!

Resistance, any resistance, was useless!

"Absolute Star Sword!"

Bloodless Sword clenched his teeth and spurred the power of stars, striking out with his most powerful move. At this time, all the starlight in the skies seemed to gather together in a river of sparkling light, falling down in an incomparably gorgeous manner.

However, when the sword light that Bloodless Sword sent out collided with Dragon Fang's attack, it was instantly exterminated by the combined attack of the eight spatial mirror images!

Woosh!

Eight figures gathered as one. Dragon Fang appeared behind Bloodless Sword like ghosts and demons. The curved Dragon Fang Blade touched against Bloodless Sword's back.

"You have lost."

Dragon Fang lightly said.

At that moment, Bloodless Sword's entire body was stiff. His palms and his back were already dripping with sweat.

Terrifying!

This was an indescribable feeling. At the moment Dragon Fang rushed towards him, he had seen Dragon Fang's pupils, and those eyes made Bloodless Sword feel as if he had died.

There was no possibility of resisting!

Drip drip!

Drops of sweat fell to the ground, rolling down from Bloodless Sword's fingertips. The energy that still percolated in the air was broken down by the invisible Empyrean pressure, turning into fog before vanishing.

Bloodless Sword was frozen, resembling a statue.

The billions of people in the area were left in complete silence!

What a horrifying Dragon Fang!

In the skies, at some unknown time, Xiao Daochild had risen up. As he looked at Dragon Fang, there was stark shock in his face.

“This is only the semifinals, and yet a peerless genius has appeared. This Dragon Fang’s talent is terrifying beyond description!” Xiao Daochild took a deep breath. This was something completely beyond his expectations.

“I must report this matter to Senior-apprentice Brother Vast Cosmos, but… Senior-apprentice Brother Vast Cosmos is likely already paying attention to here…”

After the arena was silenced for several breaths of time, there was an eruption of loud discussion.

“Dragon Fang is too strong! Although Bloodless Sword is inferior to Nether Limitless, these are still top masters of 100 great worlds. The New Paradise Holy Lands is a Great World King Holy Land of a first-order world, but even so, Bloodless Sword didn’t even have the confidence to continue fighting Dragon Fang!”

“Bloodless Sword cannot be blamed. That is truly impossible to resist. When Dragon Fang divided into eight spatial mirror images, that is over double what Nether Limitless was capable of! At such a young age, he managed to comprehend the fifth level Concept of the Space Laws. That is simply the talent of a monstrous genius!”

“The Space Laws are far more difficult to comprehend than the five elemental Laws. But once understood, they are far more formidable! It’s hard to imagine just what Dragon Fang’s achievements will be in the future. Even an ordinary Empyrean descendant cannot compare!”

“This Dragon Fang is far stronger than Lin Ming!”

“There is no limit in this universe – there is always a higher mountain and a stronger master, so this isn’t strange at all! If this were extended to the quadrillion trillion lives of the entire Divine Realm, the number of geniuses that emerge from that number would be unimaginable. This gathering, this Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, is truly magnificent!”

There were simply far too many geniuses!

Dragon Fang, Xiao Moxian, Fairy Frost Dream, White King, Lin Ming…

Compared to them, Nether Limitless had been completely overshadowed. Because of Lin Ming’s age, he also appeared a bit too immature.

At this time, Nether Limitless was still standing on the altar steps, and he had witnessed the complete process of Dragon Fang and Bloodless Sword’s battle. A miserable and mirthless smile flashed across his face.

He knew that Dragon Fang was several years younger than he was! And not just that, but Dragon Fang had taken the domain he was most proud of, the Space Laws, and had thoroughly defeated him!

One of the greatest attacks on one’s mentality was to be completely surpassed in the domain that they excelled at. This competition on the Divine Seal Altar was a tremendous blow to Nether Limitless’s confidence!

At this time, the heated and zealous cheers of billions echoed through the arena!

They were all cheering Dragon Fang’s name. The entire arena was roused into an incomparably wild frenzy!

“Too strong! Perhaps during this Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, Dragon Fang can compete with the likes of Xiao Moxian and all the others!”

“That’s right, in these semifinals on Gravemoon Star, Dragon Fang is the strongest! Just now he displayed the fifth level Concept of Space and easily defeated Bloodless Sword. He has yet to reveal his true strength. Who dares to say that he doesn’t have his own transcendent divine might?!”

“Speaking of transcendent divine mights, the top three of the Earth Proclamation are able to study a transcendent divine might, and Dragon Fang will surely be one of them! However, it is still unknown whether or not he can defeat Empyrean descendants on the level of Xiao Moxian; we still have no understanding of how strong they are. As for Lin Ming, although his talent is extremely high, his strength is still lacking that final bit. It shouldn’t be a problem for him to reach the top 10 rankings of the Earth Proclamation. But, reaching the top 10 rankings of the Heaven Proclamation would be too difficult!”

“In the future, Dragon Fang and Lin Ming are sure to become Great World Kings. Two Great World Kings have gathered here, just how abnormal is that!?”

The billions of people were all frantically speaking amongst themselves. On the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s side, Fairy Feng felt her heart rapidly beat. These juniors were scarily fierce!

“He really is strong.” Lin Ming thought to himself as he looked on at Dragon Fang. Although he held back his strength in his battle against Nether Limitless, who knew how much Dragon Fang had held back?

Bloodless Sword simply didn’t have the qualifications to make Dragon Fang reveal his true strength.

In Lin Ming’s opinion, Dragon Fang could only be described as unfathomably deep. He was a truly terrifying opponent!

He was curious as to just what fortuitous encounter Dragon Fang had.

………………

“Those pupils…”

In Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, Vast Cosmos rubbed his forehead, sifting through his memories, deep in thought.

The many World Kings had been shaken by Dragon Fang's last attack. Lin Ming had shocked them, but Dragon Fang even frightened them a little.

None of them realized how strange Dragon Fang's pupils were. Or, it was more correct to say that although they noticed it, they didn't pay much attention to it. In the Divine Realm, there were far too many special bloodlines and physiques. It wasn't uncommon at all for someone with strange pupils to appear.

Vast Cosmos pondered for a long time. Then, he quietly formed some seals with his hands. He completely recorded Lin Ming's transcendent divine might and Dragon Fang's special pupils in these seals, directly sending this notification to his Honorable Master – Empyrean Vast Universe!

……………

At this time, on Gravemoon Star's Divine Seal Altar, cheers rushed through the arena like surging ocean waves, continuing for a quarter hour before gradually dying down.

The supervisor of this semifinal, Xiao Daochild, floated high in the skies above the Divine Seal Altar, looking down at Lin Ming and Dragon Fang.

"You two... are very good! This is not the first time that I have presided over the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. But in the last several hundred thousand years, less than 10 people have ever managed to earn such praise from me. But in these semifinals alone, there are actually two of you!

"In my life, I have witnessed countless geniuses, many of them extreme unrivalled talents of their era. But you two have left a deep impression on me, and the reason for this is...your backgrounds!

“The Divine Seal Altar is laid out before you. The 32nd step! The 33rd step! Climb as high as you can and push out the limit of your potential! Let me see just how high your hands can reach!”

Xiao Daochild rarely spoke so many words. Ever since the start of the semifinals, besides announcing the rules, all of the other words he spoke combined together didn’t add up to what he just said.

Even so, Xiao Daochild had only said ‘let me see how high your hands can reach’, instead of ‘let me see if you can mount the summit’.

In other words, Xiao Daochild believed that even though Lin Ming and Dragon Fang had reached this level of talent and strength, they still didn’t possess the ability to ascend to the top.

Although this Divine Seal Altar was only a replica, it was still a treasure personally refined by Empyrean Vast Universe, an Empyrean spirit treasure.

Wanting to reach the top during the Divine Sea realm, wasn’t that easier said than done!?

“It’s finally begun!”

“This is the final battle! I thought that it would be between Nether Limitless and Bloodless Sword, but I never imagined it would be a battle between these two dark horses! This is far more exciting than anything that could happen between Nether Limitless and Bloodless Sword. I wonder just how far they can climb up the last two steps of the Divine Seal Altar?”

“I think that Dragon Fang can climb up higher. As for Lin Ming, although he won’t be able to climb higher than Dragon Fang, he should still be able to reach the 32nd step!”

In the legends, the last several times the Divine Seal Altar had been used in the First Martial Meeting, no one had been able to climb to the 32nd step, let alone the 33rd step.

“Now, let’s go!”

Lin Ming and Dragon Fang looked at each other, both able to feel a soaring fighting spirit blazing from each other's eyes. The two of them both jumped up onto the cliffs of the Divine Seal Altar's 32nd step!

The 100,000 thousand foot cliff stood tall, towering into the skies, piercing through the heavens!

The pressure on the 32nd step was far higher than the pressure on the 31st step. Lin Ming instantly felt this change in pressure.

"What a powerful pressure. Since it's going to be like this, then let this Empyrean pressure be even stronger!"

Chapter 1252 – Dragon Fang's Identity

Chapter 1252 – Dragon Fang's Identity

…

…

…

Among a vast and endless sea of clouds, countless celestial mountains floated in the skies. These celestial mountains were tens of thousands of feet high, lush with verdant plants and vibrant flowers. Waterfalls fell down from the peaks of these mountains, flowing like countless bolts of snow white silk that was hundreds of thousands of feet long, sprinkling into the clouds before fading from sight.

Among these numerous celestial mountains was a separate spatial dimension. This space was filled with a great lake that sparkled like fields of diamonds. Fishes leapt through the pristine lake and water lotuses bloomed. All sorts of spirit birds flew back and forth, filling the air with a rainbow of beautiful and auspicious colors.

In front of this immortal lake was a lush bamboo house. This bamboo house appeared very common, and one could even smell the fragrant scent of fresh bamboo.

Warm sunlight sprinkled down, illuminating the bamboo house. At this time, the door to the house was pushed open and a woman dressed in pure white slowly stepped out. She appeared to be just over 20 years of age, and she carried a watering pot in her hands. Although she appeared like a mortal woman, from her head to her toes she exuded a holy and utterly divine aura.

As she casually walked through the flowers, ten thousand faint ribbons of shimmering silk seemed to hang from her body. Her appearance was covered in a faint haze of fog, making one unable to clearly see her. She seemed to be passing through the endless years of time; although one could see her, it was impossible to target where she was.

As she gently walked by, all the flowers seemed to bend towards her. Birds gathered around her, dancing in the air, singing with their light chirping voices.

The white-clothed woman arrived before a row of flowers. She tilted the pot in her hands, watering the flowers.

The water in this pot was beyond ordinary; it was immortal spring nectar. To a Holy Lord level alchemist, just a single drop was an incomparably wonderful treasure for refining pills.

But in the hands of this white-clothed woman, it was only used to water flowers.

These flowers that she was watering were not ordinary either, but were heavenly treasures that even a World King would grow jealous over. But here, these heavenly treasures were not used for alchemy, but merely for viewing. These wonders of heaven and earth were naturally incomparably beautiful.

At this time, two small and cute red fish leapt out of the water of the lake, transforming into two beautiful young girls in the air.

These two girls looked no older than 16-17 years old. Their bodies were wrapped in a sheath of flowing water, their twin peaks were in full bud, and their perfect thighs were round and slender.

The two young girls released an infinitely youthful atmosphere, their beauty and grace incomparable to a mortal.

They were from the monster race. The fish in this immortal lake were also not ordinary fish, but rather extremely high cultivation fish monsters that could transform into humans. If any one of them were to enter a great world, they would be proud daughters of heaven that could shock the world.

However, here, they were only fish playing in the lake. They led a diligent and simple cultivating life, happy and innocent.

“Fairy Maiden, Empyrean Vast Universe would like to see you.”

The two young girls said.

“Mm…”

The white-clothed woman faintly responded as she straightened herself.

The two young girls turned back into red fish that swam back and forth between the leaves of the water lotuses. At this time, the surrounding space trembled and a six-sided prismatic crystal appeared in the air, floating in this dimension.

Two sharp points of the prismatic crystal emitted a dim black light, forming an image half the size of a person. The entire universe seemed to be sealed within this dim black light. If an ordinary person were to face this black light, they would want to fall to their knees in worship.

“Divine Dream!”

The prismatic crystal formed a metallic face in the air, its voice full of energy.

In the vast and boundless Divine Realm, it was rare for Empyreans to see each other. Many of them were closed up in seclusion or had returned to their native lands. Once one reached their boundary, there was little in the world that could affect their mindset.

To the countless junior martial artists of the Divine Realm, all of them were itching to fight in the First Martial Meeting that had swept through the entire Divine Realm, signaling the height of a golden age. All these juniors thought to blossom in glory in the First Martial Meeting. But, to an Empyrean, the First Martial Meeting wasn’t anything at all.

In the entire Divine Realm, how many tens of thousands of years had to pass before an Empyrean was born? Even if one was ranked first on the First Martial Meeting's Heaven Proclamation, their chances of becoming an Empyrean were far too small!

If one could not become an Empyrean, then they would only be a Great World King. That was a level that couldn't rouse the interest of an Empyrean at all.

Thus, the First Martial Meeting had basically been conducted by their disciples. As for Empyrean Vast Universe, he had only taken responsibility for sending out the sound transmission.

This was something performed by Empyrean Vast Universe, the reason being that his disciples didn't have the capabilities to send a sound transmission to the quadrillion trillion lives of the entire Divine Realm. Otherwise, Empyrean Vast Universe wouldn't have appeared at all.

In this situation, Empyrean Vast Universe had still cast a divine sense projection into the resting lands of Empyrean Divine Dream. There naturally had to be something extraordinary that occurred.

The white-clothed woman laid down her watering pot and looked towards Empyrean Vast Universe's divine sense projection, waiting for his explanation in coming here. Her skin was soft and supple like liquid jade. Although her current situation seemed different from her actual station, one could still sense an ethereal aura coming from her.

"Divine Dream, if I'm not mistaken then... Three Lives Old Man's descendant has appeared."

Empyrean Vast Universe spoke straight to the point.

"Three Lives Old Man..."

The white-clothed woman was lost in thought as she thought of this elderly person. That old man was the senior of both her and Vast Universe. In the past, when she first stepped onto the road of martial arts, Three Lives Old Man had already been an Empyrean!

"300 million years..." The white-clothed woman whispered, as if she were opening the ancient tome of history. 300 million years, just how long an expanse of time was that!

"Yes, 300 million years! I fear that Senior Three Lives has remained in stasis within a time enchantment for at least 200 million years! Since Senior Three Lives has awakened and also found his successor, I believe that he has had a premonition of the future..."

As that black crystal image spoke, the image it projected suddenly blurred and shifted. The metallic face disappeared, replaced by the projection of a black-clothed youth. This black-clothed youth carried the Dragon Fang Blade over his shoulders – he was Dragon Fang!

"This is him?"

"Yes! This person has a single name, Fang, but his nickname is Dragon Fang. I have had my disciples examine his history. At the very start of the preliminaries, he didn't display anything too extraordinary. Perhaps he was biding his time and saving his strength, or, he might have found some lucky chance in the Divine Dream World. For instance... he found an elementary spirit source and then awakened the Three Lives Pupils! Thus, because of that, his strength has risen astronomically!"

"Three Lives Pupils!"

The white-clothed woman's expression finally changed. Three Lives Pupils was the transcendent divine might of Three Lives Old Man.

This was an extremely special and singular type of transcendent divine might. In order to study it, one needed not just the inheritance of Three Lives Old Man, but also a very unique physique.

This was a special physique that would appear only within a single family line in the Divine Realm, passing down one generation at a time to only a single person. Studying this transcendent divine might was beyond difficult. Moreover, one needed Three Lives Old Man's personal instruction; just a jade slip was not enough.

From studying the Three Lives Pupils at the start, if one wasn't able to open them, then that person's strength would be suppressed instead, making them seem like a common genius of their era. But, if they did manage to open them, their might would rise to horrific levels!

In this world, there were far too few things that could cause this white-clothed woman's expression to change. The Three Lives Pupils were one of them.

"From what I know, Fang has a skeletal age of 36 and his cultivation is at the middle Divine Sea realm. To open the Three Lives Pupils as 36 years of age is truly impressive. I am sure that he will have his own special place in this First Martial Meeting! But, it's a pity that he only just opened his Three Lives Pupils, so he is far from being able to display its full strength. I fear it is impossible for him to surpass Frost Dream and the others.

Empyrean Vast Universe sighed. Compared to Fang's immeasurably long life that lay in front of him, 36 years was nothing but a brief blink of the eyes.

As he spoke, the white-clothed woman noticed another black-clothed youth standing next to Fang. This youth gave the white-clothed woman some strange and inexplicable feeling.

"He is..."

"Mm, this boy is also special. He is someone that ascended from the lower realms. He knows the transcendent divine might left behind by Primordius – the Primordius martial intent!"

"Primordius martial intent? Is he Primordius's successor?" The white-clothed woman was surprised. To her, the name Empyrean Primordius held far too much meaning. He, Divine

Dream, and Vast Universe had all been characters of the same era, peerless talents of their time!

“No. He has only learnt a portion of the Primordius martial intent. My guess is that he stumbled upon some lucky chance and discovered the inheritance that Primordius left behind. However, he hasn’t passed the test that Primordius left behind, thus he has yet to obtain Primordius’s true inheritance. I cannot call him Primordius’s successor, only a lucky fellow. His strength is worse than Fang’s, and his potential is far, far worse.”

Empyrean Vast Universe only speculated this from the grandmist space that Lin Ming had revealed.

And indeed, Lin Ming had not obtained Empyrean Primordius’s true inheritance, only a very small portion of it.

In fact, when Lin Ming walked down the Road of Emperor in the past, he was nothing but a martial artist of the lower realms and his cultivation hadn’t even been at the Life Destruction realm. His potential back then was far inferior to what it was now. At that time, if Lin Ming hadn’t passed Empyrean Primordius’s test then that would have been reasonable. It was just that Lin Ming had been far superior compared to those other people on the Sky Spill Planet back then.

“Before this brat completely passes Empyrean Primordius’s test, he cannot be considered Primordius’s successor. How can Primordius’s test be so easy to pass? We can only wait and see just what this boy’s future will be like.

“The one we should be concerned about now is Fang. His strength is a bit worse off than what it could be, but for him to open the Three Lives Pupils at age 36, that is proof of just how terrifying his potential is. In the future, when the great world calamity approaches, Fang will surely become one of the heroes of that time. As for Lin Ming, if he grows well and encounters some more lucky chances, he will also be able to become an important supporting character.”

In an era, there would be several leading protagonists, and even more supporting roles. Back in the far off ancient past, Empyrean Divine Seal had not been the only hero.

The white-clothed woman didn't respond to Empyrean Vast Universe's words. She simply waved a hand, and the entire dimension around her vanished, instantly turning into an exact replica of Gravemoon Star's semifinals area.

The vast sea of people, the billions of spectators present, all of them cheered in excited jubilation. The endless crowd cheered and cheered as they watched Lin Ming and Dragon Fang climb up the Divine Seal Altar!

The white-clothed woman floated quietly in the sky, standing beside Empyrean Vast Universe's divine sense projection as they both watched Dragon Fang and Lin Ming climb up the Divine Seal Altar in full, crystal clear view.

Empyrean Vast Universe faintly smiled. "Your ability is quite useful. You can instantly form a divine dream projection to recreate reality. Good, then let us have a look at what this so-called junior named Fang, the successor of Three Lives Old Man, is like! I want to see just how far he will be able to climb up the Divine Seal Altar that I personally refined!"

Chapter 1253 – Comprehending the Concepts

Chapter 1253 – Comprehending the Concepts

…

…

…

“Dragon Fang!”

“Dragon Fang!”

“Lin Ming!”

“Lin Ming!”

Billions of people crazily shouted out. At this time, no one was divided any longer by divisions of great worlds. The Ancient Phoenix Clan cheered out, the Crimson Light Great World’s people cheered out, the True Martial Great World’s people cheered, and even Demondawn Great World’s people cheered.

The scene was filled with an incomparable craziness. Everyone was hoping that these two people on the altar could create a miracle, a miracle that belonged to all martial artists!

In particular, everyone’s attention was focused Dragon Fang, the strongest martial artist from the 100 great worlds that had gathered at Gravemoon Star. It was extremely likely he would break apart the legends left behind at an Empyrean Heavenly Palace.

At this time, on the Divine Seal Altar, Lin Ming and Dragon Fang had already climbed up a tenth of the 32nd step; that was also 10,000 feet!

In the last several Divine Realm First Martial Meetings in which the Divine Seal Altar had been used, no one had been able to climb up to the 32nd step. One could see just how difficult it was from this alone!

....

"This is really a grand occasion of Gravemoon Star's competition area. It's something that wouldn't be seen in even a million years!"

In the arena filled with billions of people, the highest class reserved area was a place specially prepared for the certain guests. This area formed its own separate minor dimension, and all those that sat here were old people, each and every one of them an important character of the 100 great worlds.

Among them, most were peak Holy Lords and there were even some half-step World Kings. However, there were no true World Kings.

World King powerhouses, especially Great Worlds Kings with high status like Tian Mingzi, could gather at Empyrean Heavenly Palaces and personally watch the competition with Empyrean disciples through massive crystal mirrors. Worlds Kings with slightly lower statuses, such as the True Martial Great World King, could ride their spirit ship and watch the competition from the skies. This was a privilege that only World Kings had. No one else was allowed to fly in the skies, otherwise the skies above the semifinals field would have already been filled with people.

Besides World Kings, the high level figures of the great worlds could only sit in the arena and watch from private reserved seats.

These characters were all haughty existences, rulers of their own domains. But now, as they saw Dragon Fang and Lin Ming, they were all filled with a deep emotion. The tides of time would eventually wash out the old and bring in the new; every new generation would succeed and surpass the last. The future achievements of these two youths were hard to imagine.

“Unbelievable. These two are definitely proud elites of their generation. I wonder just which one is better!”

“Mm, Dragon Fang is great, but Lin Ming is also outstanding. With his early Divine Sea cultivation, he was actually able to follow Dragon Fang this far. That isn’t simple at all!”

Everyone thought that Lin Ming was being slowly left behind by Dragon Fang. But, Lin Ming continued to climb up 10,000 feet, not falling a single bit behind Dragon Fang.

....

Wind howled.

The cheers were deafening.

The 3.3 million feet Divine Sea Altar stood proud and tall in the world. Climbing it, Lin Ming and Dragon Fang seemed extremely common and humble. But in actuality, in the future… they would be pillars that supported the entire Divine Realm!

10,000 feet…

20,000 feet…

30,000 feet…

Lin Ming climbed higher and higher, keeping pace with Dragon Fang!

The higher they climbed, the fiercer and more suppressive the pressure became!

“What a marvelous Divine Seal Altar. Every trace on the stone contained the aura of the Great Dao Laws.”

Lin Ming caught his breath. Every breath he took was long and deep. He inhaled like a snake and exhaled like an arrow, every breath equal to a hundred breaths of an ordinary person.

Moreover, an ordinary person inhaled air, but what Lin Ming breathed in was heaven and earth origin energy.

Pressure flooded down like a waterfall. It wasn't just the Empyrean pressure, but Lin Ming also felt that his surroundings were filled with the power of chaotic Laws.

This power of Laws was not uniform and without rules; it was even different from the Laws that Lin Ming had comprehended.

If he didn't revolve his own Laws to resist them, this chaotic power would have torn him down.

Every step he took up was filled with difficulties.

On one step, Lin Ming felt as if he had stepped onto the precipice of a falling cliff. On another step, he felt as if he had fallen into mud. On the next step, he felt as if he was being drowned in water.

Sometimes, a sudden swell of immense gravity would rush towards him, making it feel as if his arms would be ripped off. If it weren't Lin Ming but some ordinary martial artist that didn't possess his powerful mortal body and thick true essence, these gravitational waves would have pulled him off the cliff.

And sometimes, there would be a sudden impact of chaotic energy that directly attacked Lin Ming's true essence. This chaotic energy was no less than the all-out attack of a late Divine Sea powerhouse. If this were usual times, then Lin Ming would have shrugged off the attack of an ordinary late Divine Sea powerhouse. But now, as he climbed the Divine Seal Altar and with him having consumed a great deal of strength, he found it difficult to withstand these strikes.

Hu – !

Lin Ming let out a long breath. He had only climbed up 30 thousand some feet; there was still 60 thousand some feet awaiting him!

According to this trend, Lin Ming sensed that it wouldn't be a problem at all to reach the 32nd step. But, just the 32nd step was not Lin Ming's ultimate goal!

He wanted to reach the 33rd step. But now, with his current ability, he would only be able to crawl several thousand feet up the 33rd step before being pushed off!

The Divine Seal Altar was known as a test where a Divine Sea realm martial artist could reach the summit. Empyrean Vast Universe had created this Divine Seal Altar so many years ago and yet he hadn't had a single disciple that had ever managed to crawl up to the top during the Divine Sea realm. This was naturally not fake boastful talk.

Moreover, when the disciples of Empyrean Vast Universe had tried to climb up, nearly all of them had been at the late Divine Sea realm during their attempt. As for Lin Ming, he was only at the early Divine Sea realm.

Lin Ming didn't expect to reach the top of the 33rd step. Want he wanted to do was to climb the 33rd step as far as he could, digging out all of his potential and pushing his limits to their extreme!

Lin Ming turned to look at Dragon Fang. Dragon Fang wasn't too far away from Lin Ming; they were both climbing at around the same speed.

At this time, Dragon Fang's pupils had turned into needle-like dots, with countless mysterious and profound patterns surrounding them.

"Those pupils..."

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. This wasn't the first time he had seen Dragon Fang's strange pupils.

Although he didn't understand what mysteries were behind it, what he was certain about was that Dragon Fang had a higher awareness of the surrounding chaotic Laws because of these pupils. Thus, the amount of chaotic power Dragon Fang had to withstand was less than what Lin Ming had to withstand.

Dragon Fang sensed Lin Ming's gaze and turned towards him. His variation pupils were incomparably sharp, as if they could see through one's heart.

Dragon Fang smiled and continued to climb.

But at this time, Lin Ming actually slowed down. He took a deep breath and concentrated his thoughts.

Eyes closed in meditation!

From the very moment that Lin Ming touched the Divine Seal Altar, he had felt a vague Concept from it – the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens!

This Concept filled every nook and corner of the Divine Seal Altar. Others could not sense it, but Lin Ming could clearly feel it.

Just what were the 33 Layered Heavens?

Lin Ming was unable to clearly say what it was, but he knew it wasn't just myths and empty talk.

Because Lin Ming had crossed a 33 Layered Heavens Ninefall which contained the Laws of the Great Dao.

"Lin Ming isn't moving!"

Everyone in the audience saw Lin Ming suddenly stop moving. Lin Ming had been able to follow Dragon Fang's speed, but now that he remained motionless, he had been cast off by Dragon Fang.

"Is he resting because he exhausted his strength?"

On the Divine Seal Altar, martial artists were not allowed to fly, nor could they. In this situation, they were like mortals climbing a cliff. Sometimes they would stop on a ledge to restore their strength.

"Taking a rest is a good idea, otherwise he'll exhaust his true essence and be swept off the Divine Seal Altar."

"It looks like Dragon Fang will be able to smoothly mount the 32nd step. Lin Ming might find it difficult to reach that far though. But, even if he was swept away now, that would also be very good. Don't forget that he is only at the early Divine Sea realm!"

Lin Ming was currently 35,000 feet high on the 32nd step. At this height, even if he were to be immediately defeated, no one would ever look down on him, because none of them would have the qualifications to do so!

In the past, when the Divine Seal Altar was used in the semifinals of the First Martial Meeting, there were countless unrivalled late Divine Sea geniuses that were all swept down before mounting the 32nd step.

"He's done well. At the early Divine Sea he defeated Nether Limitless and also climbed 35,000 feet up the Divine Seal Altar's 32nd step. If he can rest here and then climb up a few tens of thousands of feet more, he can take pride in his accomplishments!"

At this time, Dragon Fang had already climbed 45,000 feet up the 32nd step. As for Lin Ming, he was stuck at 35,000 feet up.

On the 32nd step, even Dragon Fang had to slowly climb up. It took him nearly half an hour to climb up these 10,000 feet.

Lin Ming had been lost in meditation for this half hour.

"Is he still resting? Even if he doesn't move on the cliff, he still has to withstand the pressure. Can he not move his arms?"

"Could he have already lost consciousness, and is relying on his final breath to hold on…?"

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, hold on!"

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, don't give up!"

All of the young Ancient Phoenix Clan disciples were crying and cheering for Lin Ming.

As they shouted, there was a loud explosive sound as the chaotic power broke through, causing Lin Ming's protective true essence to burst apart. Even so, Lin Ming remained completely unaware of all this.

His forehead was matted with blood.

Even though Lin Ming had opened the Gate of View and fused with the supreme dragon bone, causing his bodily defensive power to reach incredible degrees, this was still a situation where he had consumed a great deal of his energy and also didn't stimulate the true essence and dragon bone power within his body. In this meditative state, even a late Divine Sea powerhouse would be injured.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin!"

The disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were horrified. After Lin Ming's protective true essence shattered, he didn't summon any new protective true essence!

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, be careful!"

The martial artists of the Ancient Phoenix Clan all cried out. But, despite their shouts, that chaotic energy still hurtled towards Lin Ming's back!

Without any protective true essence, he would have to directly withstand the impact of this energy!

Peng!

Lin Ming's body suddenly shook. The clothes on his back tore apart and his skin was torn, dripping blood.

"Brother Lin!"

Qin Xingxuan cried out in alarm and fear as she saw this.

From the start, whether it was Lin Ming or Dragon Fang, both of them had fully galvanized their protective true essence to block the chaotic energy the 32nd step. The shockwaves afterwards were withstood by their bodies or flexible armor.

But now, Lin Ming's protective true essence had been shattered and he would withstand this chaotic energy with his body alone. If an ordinary martial artist were to be struck by this, their body would be torn apart.

"Lin Ming is really unconscious!"

"There must be a mistake. How could he be so fierce if he's unconscious? He withstood two hits and didn't fall down?"

In the eyes of the audience, if Lin Ming was really unconscious, he should have instantly tumbled down once struck.

Chapter 1254 – Power of Divinity

Chapter 1254 – Power of Divinity

…

…

…

"This brat Lin Ming, just what tricks is he up to this time?" Huo Violentstone was burning with anxiousness. If that chaotic energy struck several more types, Lin Ming might find it hard to even guarantee his life.

Xiao Daochild also stood up, hesitating on whether or not he should act to save Lin Ming.

He had originally planned to directly end Lin Ming's participation in the semifinals and prevent him from being seriously wounded by the chaotic energy currents. However, after closely investigating his situation, he discovered that Lin Ming's consciousness had entered a strange state, as if he were half-awake. This condition was similar to sudden enlightenment.

Upon seeing this, Xiao Daochild hesitated even further.

This boy, did he enter sudden enlightenment at such an inopportune time?

The state of sudden enlightenment could only be found with a stroke of serendipity; he naturally wouldn't break it. But in this case, if he didn't, there might be a corpse instead.

It wasn't just Xiao Daochild, but within Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Empyrean Vast Universe and Empyrean Divine Dream had also seen Lin Ming's strange state.

"At this time, he is perceiving the Laws? It's as if… he has discovered the special Concept inherently contained within the Divine Seal Altar?"

Empyrean Vast Universe was astonished. The special Concept of the Divine Seal Altar was the Concept of the 33 Layered Heaves. This Concept was one left behind in the ancient Divine Seal Altar, in the far off distance past. He had found a fragment of the ancient Divine Seal Altar's artifact spirit and with a long period of time spent understanding it, he had finally created this Divine Seal Altar.

"He can actually feel the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens. To think that I underestimated him. But what a pity, his boundary is far too low. Although he can feel it, it doesn't mean he can comprehend it. Even Dragon Fang with his heaven-gifted talent and also the Three Lives Pupils that are said to see through all Laws cannot do that."

The Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens was extremely difficult to sense, because in the current Divine Realm, ever since the Heavenly Dao rules changed 3.6 billion years ago, the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens had been cut off.

Although he had been the one to create Gravemoon Star's Divine Seal Altar in the past, the truth was that in terms of understanding the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens, he could not compare to the gray-clothed old man that was secretly watching the competition from within the Divine Seal Altar. He was the artifact spirit of the Divine Seal Altar.

The Divine Seal Altar's artifact spirit had been created by Empyrean Vast Universe using a fragment of the true Divine Seal Altar's artifact spirit and then fusing it together with the shattered remnant soul of a God Beast. Empyrean Vast Universe also had some understandings into the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens; this was his greatest harvest from creating the Divine Seal Altar. However, there was no other option but to use this roundabout way of comprehending things. After all, Empyrean Vast Universe did not have the Magic Cube. After obtaining a fragment of the ancient artifact spirit, he couldn't directly swallow it up like Lin Ming could and comprehend the artifact spirit's Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens.

"Really, the newborn calf does not fear a tiger. This child can feel the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens that permeates the Divine Seal Altar; that is an extremely rare accomplishment. He must have something special about him."

As Empyrean Vast Universe spoke, the white-clothed woman only continued looking at Lin Ming, her bright eyes shimmering with a thoughtful look.

“Divine Dream, what are you thinking of?”

The white-clothed woman faintly smiled. “What I find strange is that this young man’s body has the aura of the Divine Dream Law…”

“The Divine Dream Law? How is that possible? Isn’t that your unique Law? Oh, yes, he did go to the Divine Dream World, so it’s possible he had a great lucky chance and captured an elementary spirit source, thus he has a faint aura of the Divine Dream Law on his body.”

Empyrean Vast Universe suddenly thought of this. But, the white-clothed woman didn’t reply. She knew that the aura of the Divine Dream Law coming from Lin Ming wasn’t that simple.

At this time, two streams of chaotic energy impacted towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming’s shoulder blades nearly broke; his shoulders were stained with blood.

Then, his right arm was also struck. His forearm was also covered in blood.

In a situation where a massive Empyrean pressure was falling down on him, with his arm and shoulders injured, that was nearly the same as sentencing Lin Ming to the end of this competition. This was because a martial artist completely relied on the arms and legs to resist the Empyrean pressure that fell on them atop the Divine Seal Altar.

“It’s over. I have no idea what Lin Ming is doing, but his right arm is already injured. It’s impossible for him to continue climbing!”

“I fear that he has already… lost consciousness!”

Lin Ming was completely unaware of all the shouting from the audience. He was completely absorbed in his state of sudden enlightenment.

From the moment that Lin Ming began climbing up the Divine Seal Altar's 32nd step, he had used his protective true essence to resist the bombardment of chaotic energy coming from the Divine Seal Altar.

With his true essence, cultivation, solid foundation, and comprehension of Laws, withstanding this chaotic energy and reaching the 32nd step wasn't a problem at all for him.

But, that would have been his limit.

Thinking about it, he discovered that using his protective true essence to withstand this chaotic energy was a completely wrong method!

This was similar to mortals trying to alter rivers to stop floods. If they only contained the river waters, it would eventually burst apart in violent and dangerous floods.

Only by unblocking the rivers, expanding them, and building reservoirs could one control floods.

Currently, Lin Ming was in this sort of situation. He no longer used his protective true essence to block the chaotic energy, but withstood it directly with his mortal body so that he could receive this energy into his very meridians and become more aware of it, refining it. This process was extremely risky and also agonizingly painful. His meridians were torn apart and he endured injuries all over.

But once Lin Ming grasped how to refine this strange energy, he would be able to control it to an extent and make it his own. Not only would he be able to climb to the top of the Divine Seal Altar, but it would also bring him great advantages!

The energies of the 33 Layered Heavens were incomparably mysterious. If an ordinary martial artist wanted to absorb it, that was simply the ramblings of a fool.

But Lin Ming had broken through a 33 Layered Heavens Ninefall and crossed heavenly tribulation. For him, there was a possibility of success!

As everyone was speaking, another surge of chaotic energy, far greater than all the ones before, came crashing down towards Lin Ming's head!

If this surge struck him, then he would absolutely be severely wounded!

But even so, Lin Ming remained unmoving as before, completely unaware!

Xiao Daochild's vision sharpened, nearly about to move. But at this time, a sound resounded in his mind. "Do not move!"

Xiao Daochild instantly froze. This voice belonged to the Divine Seal Altar's artifact spirit, the gray-clothed old man that was secretly managing everything.

This gray-clothed old man was someone that even his master Empyrean Vast Universe would treat with respect as someone from the same generation and call him Old Seal. There was no need to mention how Xiao Daochild needed to respect him.

Thus, Xiao Daochild didn't move. He could only watch as this strike crashed into Lin Ming's forehead!

Peng!

A flash of red, and Lin Ming's forehead was covered with blood!

"Brother Lin!"

Qin Xingxuan cried out as she saw that horrifyingly bloody wound. Her fingers and her voice trembled.

"How come they haven't ended the competition?"

"What is Senior Xiao Daochild doing? If he doesn't end the competition then Senior-apprentice Brother Lin Ming will die!"

"Master, you have to rescue Senior-apprentice Brother Lin Ming!"

Several young female disciples started to beg their masters.

The Ancient Phoenix Clan disciples were all shocked and stirred up. It was extremely difficult for such a genius to appear in their Ancient Phoenix Clan. If anything were to happen to him, wasn't that just cutting off their lifeline?

"All of you shut up!"

Huo Violentstone roared. He poured his energy into his voice, suppressing all of the surrounding disciples.

Although he was also nervous, he knew that Xiao Daochild had to have his reasons for not taking action.

"Do you think your judgment is better than Senior Xiao Daochild's? Just shut up and sit down!"

As Huo Violentstone spoke, all of these disciples sat down in their seats.

Qin Xingxuan's eyes were wet with tears. She tightly gripped onto Mu Qianyu.

Nearby, even Yan Littlemoon was tightly clenching her hands together, anxiously looking towards Lin Ming on the Divine Seal Altar.

With every impact of chaotic energy, all of it was withstood by Lin Ming's body.

His entire body was wet with blood, as if someone had poured buckets of red paint on him. Let alone Qin Xingxuan, Mu Qianyu, and the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, even disciples from other great words were all looking on in fearful apprehension.

"Just what is Lin Ming doing?"

"That's right, why isn't he coming down now? He shouldn't take his life as a joke!"

"His wounds are too heavy; he'll die soon if this continues!"

Some disciples were worried for Lin Ming. Of course, many others were happy to see him in such a state.

There would always be humans with a jealous heart. They would hope that all those stronger than them would die, and this was especially true for the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands that Lin Ming had thoroughly shamed. They all wished that Lin Ming would suffer a worse fate.

“Haha, that fool Lin Ming, I think he will die here.”

“I have no idea what is attacking Lin Ming, but he’s actually resisting it with his body. Hehe, hit his head, hit his head some more, strike him harder!”

In truth, the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands couldn’t see the energies of the 33 Layered Heavens. They could only see that Lin Ming was being struck into an extremely miserable state by some strange force. Even so, they didn’t dare to yell too loudly. They only spoke in low voices, their words submerged in the shouts of billions.

By this time, Nether Limitless had already stepped off of the Divine Seal Altar. As he looked at the wounded and beaten up Lin Ming, his eyes flashed with a cruel and malicious light. “Although I don’t know what Lin Ming is doing, he is indeed in a very dangerous position. Even Xiao Daochild should be nervous. I have no idea why he isn’t taking action yet, but if there is some accident, this boy might die here. If he dies though, that will be much cleaner…”

Nether Limitless’s crimson pupils shined with a savage light. At this time, an even stronger flow of chaotic energy began gathering behind Lin Ming. This flow of energy was several times stronger than before, and the direction of its attack was towards Lin Ming’s head!

On the Divine Seal Altar, Xiao Daochild saw all of this happen. His concentration was in complete focus and he was ready to move at any moment.

But at this time, an unbelievable scene occurred!

As this energy shot towards Lin Ming, it actually divided into two. There was a large portion that accounted for 90% of it; this part suddenly changed direction and veered off to the side. But the smaller part flew towards Lin Ming and sank into his head, not causing him any damage at all. It disappeared without a trace!

“What!?”

Xiao Daochild was floored. That scene just now was as if Lin Ming had absorbed that chaotic energy!

In the audience, no one knew just what had happened now. Only the gray-clothed artifact spirit, Xiao Daochild, and Empyrean Vast Universe and Empyrean Divine Dream watching from Divine Dream Heavenly Palace knew what had just happened.

That chaotic energy that Lin Ming had just absorbed on the Divine Seal Altar had its own unique name – the power of divinity!

Chapter 1255 – Straight to the Top

Chapter 1255 – Straight to the Top

…

…

…

"He can absorb the power of divinity?"

Empyrean Vast Universe revealed a shocked expression. This was no longer a problem of perception. No matter how high one's perception was, it was impossible to perceive the power of divinity if their cultivation was lacking, much less in such a short time. This was just like bringing an extremely talented three year old child to the imperial palace as the royal mathematician. No matter how talented that three year old was, they still wouldn't be able to make complex calculations.

"Divine Dream, what is happening here?"

Empyrean Vast Universe looked over to Divine Dream. Empyrean Vast Universe's strength wasn't considered outstanding amongst all the Empyreans, but Empyrean Divine Dream was actually one of the few peak Empyrean existences.

Empyrean Divine Dream said in a quiet voice, "I have some speculations, but I must see more to make sure…" Her voice was faint and dreamy, as if she hadn't said anything at all.

At this time, on the Divine Seal Altar, Lin Ming was now thoroughly enlightened.

The energy of the 33 Layered Heavens on the Divine Seal Altar, the reason why it gave off a chaotic feeling and the reason why it was nearly impossible to absorb, was because it was a completely mixed and comprehensive type of energy!

Of all the energies in the world, some were suited to the Divine Realm’s Heavenly Dao rules, but there were also some that weren’t.

The most common type of energy in the Divine Realm was true essence. But, the energy of the 33 Layered Heavens on the Divine Seal Altar actually included true essence within it, among 33 kinds of different energies!

Besides true essence, there was also two different kinds of energies that Lin Ming was familiar with. One was astral essence that was used in the body transformation cultivation system, and the other was soul energy used to cultivate the Divine Dream Law; Lin Ming called that spirit essence.

Lin Ming only realized now that when he cultivated his soul in the Divine Dream World and found that strange divine dream energy that permeated the entire Divine Dream World and was even able to form nightmare beasts, that was called spirit essence.

“True essence, astral essence, spirit essence, these are the three types of energy most suited to the Heavenly Dao rules. Then, I can call these the three powers of the Heavenly Dao. Besides these three, there are actually 30 other kinds of energies. Just how many secrets are there hidden on the road of martial arts?”

Lin Ming thought to himself. He could absorb these three types of energies that he was familiar with, but the others he couldn’t; he could only divert them.

This was why the current scene had occurred. After the chaotic energy rushed towards Lin Ming, it divided into two. 90% had been repelled by Lin Ming, but the remaining 10% that comprised of true essence, spirit essence, and astral essence, had been absorbed by him.

At this time, the martial artists in the area still didn’t know what changes were occurring within Lin Ming.

The disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands were enjoying watching his suffering.

“That brat really likes being beaten up.”

"Haha, it's good if he's beaten up; we can enjoy this play a bit more."

"That's right, it's fun watching this. I hope he gets wounded more and more maliciously."

As these disciples spoke, Lin Ming suddenly opened his eyes!

As if he had some special feeling, his gaze suddenly swept over the direction of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, as well as the Skydark Holy Lands.

"What!?"

Seeing Lin Ming's burning eyes, the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands were all dumbfounded; Lin Ming had awoken!

As for the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, all of them were crazy with joy. Their Senior-apprentice Brother Lin had finally awoken!

"Damn, he actually woke up?"

"This is only the final radiance before the sun sets. After being wounded so heavily and losing so much blood, who cares if he wakes up. He might as well give up now."

"How unfortunate. I was hoping we could enjoy this good play a bit longer."

The disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands muttered. At this time, Lin Ming's entire body emitted crackling sounds. All of his wounds began to twist and wriggle, regenerating at a speed visible to the eyes!

Blood stopped leaking from his body. His meridians healed, and even his shattered bones were mended anew.

"What?!"

Everyone in the audience was shocked. The disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands were thoroughly bewildered. Just what sort of resiliency was this? He had been heavily wounded and hadn’t even taken a pill, but now his body was rapidly regenerating?

Before people had time to think about what was happening, Lin Ming moved up!

He began to climb up the Divine Seal Altar!

As Lin Ming climbed, he simultaneously absorbed the chaotic energy of the Divine Seal Altar. Although his climbing speed wasn’t fast, every time he moved upwards he travelled nearly 10 feet!

Ten feet was more than the height of a person. In other words, Lin Ming appeared to be jumping up the Divine Seal Altar! It wasn’t like he was a mortal human climbing, but an ape springing up a large oak tree.

Seeing this sudden change, the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands nearly had their eyes pop out of their heads.

“How is this possible!?”

“What happened just now? He had clearly reached his limit!”

Everyone found this hard to believe. Not only did he regenerate his heavy wounds with such amazing speed, but he could actually climb up the Divine Seal Altar’s 32nd step with ease?

“Good young fellow!” The gray-clothed old man within the Divine Seal Altar’s inner space also saw this and sighed with praise. Originally, he had thought it was impressive that Lin Ming had been able to sense the Concept of the 33 Layard Heavens as soon as he stepped onto the Divine Seal Altar, but now it seemed that he had underestimated Lin Ming.

Lin Ming shot straight up to the clouds.

100 feet, 500 feet, 1000 feet, 2000 feet, 3000 feet!

His speed became faster. His steps were steady and calm!

On the Ancient Phoenix Clan's side, all of the disciples there were jubilant and excited!

Some disciples even stood up and shouted out with all they had, nearly wanting to rush up the Divine Seal Altar themselves.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, you can do it!"

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin, rush to the top!"

Seeing Lin Ming's aura soar like a rising rainbow, all of the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan turned crazy with excitement. Some female disciples were so moved that they began crying with joy!

Lin Ming was the pride of their Ancient Phoenix Clan!

Ever since their Ancient Phoenix Clan had been founded, there had never been a day like today, where they stood atop the grand stage of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, capturing the attention of the entire Divine Realm.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin is too fierce!"

"I have no idea what happened just now, but Senior-apprentice Brother Lin must have found some rules of the Divine Seal Altar. In such a short period of time, he discovered the rules of the Divine Seal Altar. His perception surpasses any monstrous genius'; he is the true favored of heaven!"

How could they spectators on Gravemoon Star's martial field know about the Divine Seal Altar's Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens? And, they didn't know that this was something that couldn't be comprehended with perception alone.

They only thought that Lin Ming's perception surpassed the will of the heavens, and he had been able to see through the Laws of the Divine Seal Altar.

"How high do you think Senior-apprentice Brother Lin will be able to reach?"

"Who knows? It shouldn't be a problem for him to reach the 32nd step, and he should also be able to climb up a part of the 33rd step. Perhaps… perhaps Senior-apprentice Brother Lin can surpass Dragon Fang!"

As people spoke about surpassing Dragon Fang, the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan became increasingly animated. Dragon Fang was someone that could favorably compare with an Empyrean descendant powerhouse.

The Divine Seal Altar was a test of a martial artist's cultivation and potential. The greater one's cultivation and the greater one's potential, the higher they could climb!

If Lin Ming could surpass Dragon Fang, in a way, that was equal to surpassing an Empyrean descendant!

"This Lin Ming really did it. It seems I was mistaken about him!"

In Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, Empyrean Vast Universe took a deep breath.

He stood up, and with a single step he trod into the void, passing through the endless surging flows of space. His speed reached unimaginable degrees. This was the void shifting technique that a Divine Lord boundary powerhouse could use, but underneath Empyrean Vast Universe's control, it was countless times more powerful than anything a Divine Lord realm powerhouse could hope for.

With a single step, he could cross a Divine Realm great world!

Empyrean Vast Universe slowly walked through the void. It seemed as if he was taking a casual stroll through a park, but the truth was that he was crossing hundreds of great worlds. Finally, he stopped in space. In front of him lay a floating palace. The numerous towers were built with the purest white jade, making everything seem like a beautiful dreamy illusion.

This was Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. Before, Empyrean Vast Universe had only sent a divine sense projection to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, manifesting it into his face. But now, he had personally come to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace!

Empyrean Vast Universe wore a long yellow robe. His face was square and his looks were dignified. His facial features seemed as if they had been cast from metal.

He was extremely tall. In front of an ordinary person, he was no different from a giant.

Lin Ming's appearance had caused Empyrean Vast Universe to truly arrive at Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. From this it could be seen just how much Empyrean Vast Universe valued Lin Ming.

"Divine Dream…"

Empyrean Vast Universe silently called out in his heart. At this moment, a faintly recognizable voice echoed in his ears, "Enter."

Empyrean Vast Universe took a single step forwards. In the next moment, he arrived in a secluded area within Divine Dream Heavenly Palace where Empyrean Divine Dream lived.

Between the lush flowers and vibrant trees, Empyrean Divine Dream stood tall and calm, wearing a long white dress. Her figure was outstanding, the definition of perfection. Her legs were slender and her face was indifferent. A pure and holy aura emitted from her; she seemed wise beyond human possibility.

Just looking at Empyrean Divine Dream's appearance, it was hard to imagine that she was an unrivalled powerhouse that had lived for over 10 million years. One would only think she was a young woman in the prime of her youth, smart and beautiful, pure and untainted by the world.

As Empyrean Vast Universe saw Empyrean Divine Dream, he sighed in his heart. All sorts of thoughts and memories swelled up in his mind. He wanted to say many things, but eventually only said several words. "It's been… a million years since we've seen each other."

As Empyrean Vast Universe spoke, the black crystal that floated in the air entered his body and his original wisp of divine sense fused back into him. “Time truly passes too fast. You and I live such long lives, and yet we cannot withstand the passage of millions upon millions of years.” Empyrean Vast Universe sighed.

The white-clothed woman gently shook her head, indifferently saying, “Even the Heavenly Dao has its own samsara. Moreover, even if we may live for a hundred million years, in my opinion, that is nothing more than a great and wonderful dream. The passing clouds, the awakening dreams, everything is nothing but fleeting ripples in water.”

Empyrean Vast Universe smiled, “You’re still the same as usual, ethereal and untouchable, a bright mirror that will never lose its dustless sheen. There is nothing in this world that can arouse ripples in your heart. To you, everything is a dream. I simply cannot compare with your state of mind.”

Empyrean Vast Universe continued, “The reason I came here today is to speak to you about Dragon Fang and Lin Ming. Thinking about it, I must say I was ridiculous. A solemn Empyrean like myself was actually mistaken about a junior! I never imagined that there would be so many special aspects around Lin Ming. Even though he wasn’t able to receive the full inheritance of Empyrean Primordius, he still managed to comprehend the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens!

“Lin Ming, Dragon Fang, Xiao Moxian, Frost Dream, White King… not just them, but there are also the outstanding disciples of other Empyreans. With so many peerless proud children of heaven being born, I fear that this is a sign that the grand world calamity approaches.”

Chapter 1256 – Climbing to the 33rd Step

Chapter 1256 – Climbing to the 33rd Step

…

…

…

“The great calamity approaches…” Empyrean Divine Dream said to herself, as if she were immersed in the rivers of endless history.

Of course, even if one were to say that this great calamity of the Heavenly Dao was approaching soon, that could mean tens of thousands or even millions of years.

In truth, no one could say just when it would happen.

During this tumultuous period, old Empyreans would fall and new Empyreans would rise.

At this time, Empyrean Vast Universe’s thoughts stirred and he looked towards the Divine Seal Altar.

“Dragon Fang has also begun to display his strength… the Three Lives Pupils truly lives up to its name!”

Empyrean Vast Universe was more confident in Dragon Fang because his Three Lives Pupils was a complete transcendent divine might. It was also known as a heaven-defying physical state, one that could peer through all Laws. Even among all transcendent divine mights, it was still considered an outstanding example!

Even with transcendent divine mights, there were great disparities between them.

At this time, on the Divine Seal Altar's 32nd step, Lin Ming had already climbed up to the 50,000 foot mark. His speed still didn't slow down, as if there was nothing that could stop his advance.

However, at the time Lin Ming started moving again, Dragon Fang had already climbed up 80,000 feet.

Dragon Fang lowered his head and looked at Lin Ming. In his eyes, where his pupils were surrounded by numerous complex and wonderful patterns, it was impossible to make out what shined there.

"He has comprehended the special Laws on the Divine Seal Altar?" Dragon Fang suddenly thought. He couldn't perceive the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens, but he knew that there was some special Law that permeated the entire Divine Seal Altar.

"With an hour, he actually managed to perceive the special Laws of the Divine Seal Altar while clinging onto the cliff. This is truly amazing! I can also understand some things about the Divine Seal Altar, but that is all depending on the Three Lives Pupils, something that Lin Ming does not possess."

Dragon Fang had heartfelt admiration towards Lin Ming. In truth, the further Dragon Fang climbed up the Divine Seal Altar's 32nd step, the easier it became for him. Just what sort of genius was he? He wasn't the type to use brute force to resist the impact from the power of divinity that contained 33 different energies of the Heavenly Dao. Rather, as he climbed up, he would also ponder the rules of the power of divinity.

Of course, it was impossible for Dragon Fang to perceive the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens like Lin Ming did. After all, he did not cross a 33 Layered Heavens Ninefall. Even so, Dragon Fang had a special trump card in his hands, the Three Lives Pupils that were known to see through all Laws!

In front of the Three Lives Pupils, there were no Laws that could hide!

The reason that Dragon Fang could comprehend the fifth level Concept of the Space Laws at a mere 36 years of age was all due to the Three Lives Pupils.

Originally, Dragon Fang's Space Laws had been stranded at the fourth level Concept. But, after he opened the Three Lives Pupils, in the short three months he spent on the spirit ship travelling to Gravemoon Star, his Space Laws had stepped into the fifth level. After several more months, his Time Laws would also break into the fifth level. This was the heaven-defying power of the Three Lives Pupils!

By relying on the Three Lives Pupils, Dragon Fang was able to see the movement path of the power of divinity. Although he couldn't directly absorb the power of divinity like Lin Ming, he could still slowly make out the paths that it would move along. By following these rules and adjusting the route he climbed up, he could avoid the powerful impact areas of the power of divinity, and instead climb up the areas where the power of divinity was at its weakest point.

In this way, Lin Ming rapidly climbed up the Divine Seal Altar because he was going in a straight line. As for Dragon Fang, his trajectory would suddenly twist. He would move about, turning left before switching back to the right!

The surges of the power of divinity passed by Dragon Fang like waves, simply not touching his body at all. Thus, Dragon Fang only had to withstand a very small impact, causing his speed to rise significantly!

From the start, he had merely moved left and right as he climbed up. But later, on the cliffs of the Divine Seal Altar, he simply jumped upwards. Every time he jumped up he would dodge seven or eight strikes of the power of divinity!

"Look how fast Dragon Fang is climbing!"

"Heavens! What sort of route is he taking?"

The current Dragon Fang was like a spirit monkey, constantly jumping about. He began to climb up faster and faster.

“Too fierce! Although I don’t know what Dragon Fang has comprehended, there is definitely a special meaning to the way he is climbing up. He must have figured out how to conform to the Laws of the Divine Seal Altar!”

“A chosen pride of heaven! Truly a chosen pride of heaven! Lin Ming is already a monstrous genius, but Dragon Fang can still suppress him this time. Lin Ming has comprehended the Laws of the Divine Seal Altar, and Dragon Fang has also done the same! But, Dragon Fang comprehended these Laws in a much more relaxed manner! Lin Ming had to stop and pay a great price in injuries become becoming aware of these Laws, but Dragon Fang was able to do so as he climbed up.”

How could the spectators on Gravemoon Star understand the essential difference in how Lin Ming and Dragon Fang understood the Laws of the Divine Seal Altar? They didn’t know that Lin Ming had truly comprehended the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens and was absorbing a tenth of the power of divinity to use for himself.

As for Dragon Fang, he merely used the Three Lives Pupils to understand the movement path of the power of divinity and was jumping through the weakest points. This could be considered a trick he was using.

However, in their opinion, Dragon Fang’s climb up seemed extremely relaxed, as if he were doing flips and jumps on the cliff!

As for Lin Ming, he was much calmer. He climbed in a straight line upwards without making any big motions at all.

Half an hour later, Lin Ming crawled 60,000 feet high, but Dragon Fang had already mounted the flat plains of the Divine Seal Altar’s 32nd step!

Dragon Fang was the first to mount the 32nd step!

“Dragon Fang!”

“Dragon Fang!”

"Amazing!"

"King!!"

The entire audience cheered like a surging tidal wave. Even the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan cheered for Dragon Fang.

This level of talent was truly impressive.

Normally, when a genius fought Lin Ming, that opponent would suffer a defeat once he revealed his advantages and the hidden cards in his hands. Or, at least they would begin to gradually be worn down.

While Lin Ming was breaking through his own limits, only someone like Dragon Fang could similarly erupt with his own potential, obtaining new comprehensions and rising to even greater heights!

This was the difference between an ordinary genius and an unrivalled talent!

Thus, for those watching, Dragon Fang had never been suppressed by Lin Ming. On the contrary, he had been the one to faintly suppress Lin Ming.

After several quarter hours of time passed, Lin Ming also reached the top of the 32nd step without any further problems.

The two peerless geniuses both met on the 32nd step!

It had to be known that in the last several Divine Realm First Martial Meetings in which the Divine Seal Altar had been used, there had not been a single person to reach the 32nd step. But now, there were two people all of a sudden!

This was a battle of kings!

The audience issued deafening cheers. Everyone was looking forward to this explosive moment, crazy with anticipation.

And on the Divine Seal Altar, Lin Ming and Dragon Fang were standing 500 feet apart. The two were of similar height and build. However, Lin Ming was more handsome with sharp and distinct facial features, a healthy outstanding young man in the prime of his youth. As for Dragon Fang, he looked more delicate, with pale white skin.

“Lin Ming, you are indeed a rival that I appreciate.” Dragon Fang said. The faint movements of his body seemed relaxed, as if he could easily withstand the pressure on the 32nd step without needing to worry about the impact from the power of divinity.

“You too. In all these years that I have practiced martial arts, you are the most talented contemporary that I have seen. Most of the time it is others that underestimate me, but when I thought I could defeat you, you still managed to make another breakthrough!”

As Lin Ming spoke, he traced his spatial ring. According to the rules of this competition, in order to earn the qualifications to climb up the next step, they had to defeat an opponent on the current step. And, the only two people on the 32nd step were the two of them! That meant that their opponents were each other!

Dragon Fang looked at Lin Ming’s movements. “Are you planning to fight me now?”

“Those are the rules.” Lin Ming said. In truth, he didn’t want to fight Dragon Fang at this time. In all fairness, he had to admit that he didn’t have any confidence in facing Dragon Fang. He didn’t know just where Dragon Fang’s limits were.

Dragon Fang smiled. “Rules are only rules. I also don’t wish to fight with you now. The reason for this is simple. Although I have the confidence to win, I will not be able to do so with any degree of ease. I know I will be severely wounded and will use up at least 80-90% of my true essence. In this situation, even if I were to rest on the 32nd step for a long period of time, I wouldn’t be able to restore myself. My wish of mounting the 33rd step of the Divine Seal Altar would become nothing more than a hopeless impossibility. What do you think?”

Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred. In truth, he was also well aware of this point. Once he fought with Dragon Fang, he would no longer have the strength to climb up the Divine Seal Altar.

And Lin Ming very much wanted to climb up the 33rd step of the Divine Seal Altar. Although this Divine Seal Altar was only a replica Empyrean spirit treasure created by Empyrean Vast Universe, and in no ways the true ancient Divine Seal Altar, it still truly contained the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens. If he were able to comprehend this Concept more, that would be an immense benefit to Lin Ming. He definitely didn't wish to miss out on this lucky chance.

Lin Ming looked towards Dragon Fang and let go of his spatial ring.

Dragon Fang faintly smiled, returning Lin Ming's soft gaze.

Following this, the two of them looked towards Xiao Daochild – the one who presided over the First Martial Meeting semifinals on Gravemoon Star.

Whether or not they could skip this battle and climb directly to the 33rd step all depended on him.

Xiao Daochild chuckled. "Good. You two have the ambition and boldness to climb up the 33rd step of the Divine Seal Altar; that is something I appreciate very much! The 33rd step of the Divine Seal Altar is a legend. It is said that no one below the Divine Transformation realm could ever hope to reach it. Of course, those are only legends, and these legends are in truth limited to Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. This is because besides those moments when the Divine Seal Altar is moved out to be used in the semifinals of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, it has only been placed at Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, so that the disciples there could gain experience from it! The other Empyrean disciples each have their own methods of tempering themselves and gaining experience, thus they do not climb up the Divine Seal Altar.

"When my Honorable Master was 8.6 million years of age, he created this Divine Seal Altar. Up until now, over 2 million years have passed. For all those underneath the Divine Transformation realm, even if they are direct disciples of Honorable Master, none of them have been able to reach the summit! There has been a disciple that reached 70,000 feet up the 33rd step, but even at that distance, there is still 30,000 feet remaining! And, at that time, the disciple had a late Divine Sea realm cultivation!

“Today, of the two of you, one has a middle Divine Sea cultivation and the other has an early Divine Sea cultivation. You can both be more than proud that you have reached this step. You no longer need to fight, but can directly continue climbing up the Divine Seal Altar!”

As those in the arena heard Xiao Daochild’s announcement, most of them were crestfallen. They had wanted to see the epic showdown between these two kings of their generation.

But at the same time, they could also witness Lin Ming and Dragon Fang climb up the 33rd step of the Divine Seal Altar when both were at their peak condition. This was truly an eternally grand event!

“This is too exciting!”

“These are kings of the younger generation. I wonder just how high they can climb? Perhaps they can even reach the top!”

“Reach the top? Haha, you are far too naïve. Mounting the summit is impossible, but crawling several tens of thousands of feet is no problem at all. Dragon Fang might even reach the record set by that senior disciple from Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. As for Lin Ming, he should be a bit worse. He should be able to climb 30,000-40,000 feet high!”

Chapter 1257 – Tricks

Chapter 1257 – Tricks

…

…

…

Lin Ming and Dragon Fang both stood beneath the precipice of the final step. As they looked up, they could see the 100,000 foot high divine cliff thrust straight into the clouds!

As Lin Ming looked at the last step of the Divine Seal Altar, his heart surged with a heroic and daring spirit!

Someday, in the far off future, perhaps he could even seek out the true Divine Seal Altar and experience the phantasmal Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens there.

Lin Ming could feel that the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens contained some secret of the world's Great Dao. If he wanted to reach the peak of all martial artists, he would have to thoroughly comprehend the highest truths of the Great Dao, otherwise there wouldn't be the least bit of hope for him.

At this time, Dragon Fang opened his Three Lives Pupils. In his pupils, the pathways of all the chaotic energy on the Divine Seal Altar was clearly reflected within them.

He soon identified the area with the mildest flow of chaotic energy and leapt through!

In the air, Dragon Fang constantly shifted, changing his direction multiple times as he found the area with the least amount of chaotic energy to jump through.

He was like a swallow flitting through a storm. Even though that storm was filled with violent winds and thick lightning, he could still easily shuttle through.

Pa!

Dragon Fang seized the Divine Seal Altar. This jump was 100 feet high!

“Fierce! Even though this is the Divine Seal Altar’s 33rd step, he still jumped 100 feet high!”

At the start, jumping up from the flat step, one could rise the highest. It would become increasingly difficult the further one went. Even so, to be able to leap 100 feet high even at the 33rd step was something that was praiseworthy.

“He’s too strong. Just look, the strange way he jumped through the air was not in a straight line but he twisted and turned several times on the way. He must have found some way to fit into the Laws of the Divine Seal Altar. Although these movements look like they are useless, the truth is that they contain all sorts of mysteries.”

“How strange. The Divine Seal Altar forbids flight, so how come Dragon Fang is able to switch direction in midair?”

Everyone discussed amongst themselves. They couldn’t see the power of divinity, thus they didn’t know just what Dragon Fang was attempting to do. But in the skies above the Divine Seal Altar, Xiao Daochild could see all of this clearly. The reason that Dragon Fang could change direction in the air was that he could see the circulating paths of the power of divinity, and then using his own origin energy, he would attack those flows of the power of divinity and then use the repulsive force to change directions.

In order to reach this step, one needed extremely accurate judgment and the ability to instantly seize the most fleeting of moments. Otherwise, it was possible to outthink yourself and receive a backlash from the power of divinity.

“This Dragon Fang seems as if he can see through everything; he is truly a monstrous genius!”

Without a doubt, Dragon Fang’s original perception originally stood at the highest level. But now, with the Three Lives Pupils added on top of that, the achievements in Laws that Dragon Fang would reach in the future would be unbelievable!

At this time, everyone’s eyes were gathered on Lin Ming’s body.

How high could Lin Ming jump?

Lin Ming looked up at the cliffs of the 33rd step. He took a deep breath and said to himself, “The Divine Seal Altar’s 33 steps. One day, if I am to step onto the peak of martial arts, then let this be the beginning of my journey!”

At that time, a brilliant light burst out from between Lin Ming’s eyebrows. He suddenly opened the Eight Inner hidden Gates, all the strength within his body rapidly rising!

He squatted down, looked up at the sky, and then jumped upwards! His strength erupted at that moment. If it had been divine iron underneath Lin Ming’s feet, then that metal would have completely cracked apart!

Lin Ming leapt up with 10 times the power of Dragon Fang. But this was only a simple jump, reaching right into the impact of the power of divinity!

If Dragon Fang was a swallow flitting through a storm, avoiding the turbulent winds and thunder, then Lin Ming was a fish swimming up against the waterfall. He did not need any skills and only broke through with his absolute strength!

30 feet, 50 feet, 70 feet, 90 feet!

Even if Lin Ming had comprehended a portion of the power of divinity, underneath the wild impact his speed still sharply fell.

Pa!

Lin Ming gripped an outcropping of the Divine Seal Altar’s walls. His first jump was also 100 feet!

A terrifying pressure continued to smash into Lin Ming’s body. But, Lin Ming’s body tightly held onto the stone ledge with an iron grip.

“Mm? He also jumped up 100 feet! Lin Ming is amazing too, his momentum is no worse than Dragon Fang’s!”

“Hehe, the 33rd step is a protracted war of attrition. We won’t be able to see anything at the start, but the longer it goes on, the more they will pull apart from each other.”

The entire audience was looking at every single change on the Divine Seal Altar with total concentration. Lin Ming and Dragon Fang continued to climb up together!

“What a strong pressure, what a formidable power of divinity. This is already several times stronger than anything I experienced on the 32nd step. If just the start is like this, then the intensity of the forces ahead could be imagined! No wonder Senior Xiao Daochild said that even though numerous direct disciples of Empyrean Vast Universe had climbed up the Divine Seal Altar, none of them had managed to mount the summit in over 2 million years. For these 2 million years, even if Empyrean Vast Universe accepted a direct disciple every several hundred thousand years, he should still have had dozens of them.”

Surges of strong power of divinity rushed towards Lin Ming. Each one divided in two, 90% of the energies being diverted away while 10% was absorbed by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming felt as if his body was a sponge that endlessly absorbed energy. However, the energies contained within this power of divinity were simply too wild and crazy. Absorbing it made his inner organs feel as if they were burning in an inferno, and there were even crackling sounds emitting from his meridians as if they couldn’t withstand this brutal baptism of energy.

As for Dragon Fang, he was relying on his Three Lives Pupils to see through the path of the energy flow and avoid the areas with the strongest power of divinity.

One was avoiding and one was resisting; Dragon Fang naturally had a much easier time than Lin Ming.

“Dragon Fang is using some tricks.”

In Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Empyrean Vast Universe commented. The ability of the Three Lives Pupils to completely see through the circulation of all Laws was too heaven-defying.

“Although Lin Ming’s method is rarer, in terms of just results, Lin Ming is at a disadvantage. He can only absorb a small portion of the power of divinity and has to shunt away the rest. This will rapidly consume his strength. I have no idea just what step Lin Ming will be able to insist until.”

Empyrean Vast Universe was the one who had created this Divine Seal Altar, thus he was the one most aware of just how difficult the last several tens of thousands of feet were to climb. That height was abnormally difficult. It would be impossible for Lin Ming or Dragon Fang to climb up that high.

To the side of Empyrean Vast Universe, Empyrean Divine Dream exhaled a light breath. She softly said, “These tricky methods are only unorthodox methods. He can temporarily find a shortcut, but it will be impossible for him to continue doing so.”

“Of course.” Empyrean Vast Universe chuckled. “This Divine Seal Altar replica has 10% of the true ancient Divine Seal Altar’s charm. Although it is only 10%, it is still not something that a Divine Sea realm martial artist can climb. Dragon Fang can use these little tricks now, but he cannot do so forever. There is a chance that he can climb up 70,000-80,000 feet, and Lin Ming is also the same. But for him to resist the power of divinity in this manner is impossible for the final several tens of thousands of feet. The only possibility would be if he made another breakthrough at that time. Still, I cannot imagine why Lin Ming can sense the 33 Layered Heavens Laws. I even suspect that Lin Ming might have obtained a Concept inheritance related to the 33 Layered Heavens ancient Divine Seal Altar. If that’s true then he really is a lucky child.”

Empyrean Vast Universe knew that with Lin Min’s cultivation, wanting to feel the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens was impossible. The only possibility was if he had a heaven-seizing lucky chance, because this was no longer a question of perception.

Empyrean Divine Dream looked thoughtful, not speaking further.

Slowly, Dragon Fang took the lead.

At the start, Dragon Fang only led by several dozen feet, but later, this extended to hundreds of feet.

Lin Ming didn’t blindly try to compete with speed. He only steadily grasped onto the rough traces of the Divine Seal Altar, simultaneously withstanding a baptism from the power of divinity and also enlightening himself on the Concepts. As the power of divinity flowed past him, he could feel something like the endless years of time passing him by.

The Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens was all-encompassing. Lin Ming even suspected that maybe the so-called 33 Layered Heavens referred to 33 different kinds of energies.

“Dragon Fang’s foundation is much deeper. I am afraid that the further up they go, the greater the disparity will be between them.”

“That’s reasonable. Dragon Fang also climbed up the 32nd step ahead of Lin Ming.”

“Although that is true, don’t forget that Lin Ming is only at the early Divine Sea realm. With the Divine Sea Altar competition having reached this point, don’t forget that there is no longer a loser here. Putting aside their strength, the potential of these two even surpasses direct disciples of Empyrean Vast Universe!”

By this time, two hours had slowly passed by!

The Divine Seal Altar’s 33rd step was beyond extraordinary. Even though two hours had passed, Lin Ming and Dragon Fang had only climbed up around 25,000 feet!

At this time, Dragon Fang was leading Lin Ming by 2000 feet. He looked down to see Lin Ming advancing steadily and a flash of awe and praise appeared in his eyes.

“Lin Ming’s methods are completely different from mine, and he must consume a greater amount of strength than I do. Even so, he still has plenty of energy left. His endurance and restorative ability are truly inconceivable.”

As Dragon Fang was thinking this, his complexion suddenly changed. He could feel that at this time, the power of divinity ahead of him suddenly became chaotic and dense.

At the start, Dragon Fang had relied upon the Three Lives Pupils to see through the chaotic energy and identify the path of the power of divinity.

But now, that was no longer possible.

The gap between the flows of the power of divinity were too small; he couldn’t avoid them!

In Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Empyrean Vast Universe looked at Dragon Fang. It was impossible to climb the final parts of the Divine Seal Altar using these tricky methods. He wanted to see just how Dragon Fang would overcome this pass.

Dragon Fang paused here for a moment. Then, within his needle-point like pupils, a complete panoramic view of the power of divinity was suddenly reflected within them.

“Fifth level Concept of the Space Laws – Spatial Genesis!”

Dragon Fang’s eyes flashed with a cold light. At this moment, the spatial energy around him suddenly twisted. That originally impossibly small gap through the surges of the power of divinity that Dragon Fang couldn’t pass through, after being changed by the Space Laws, was suddenly able to be passed through.

“He used Spatial Genesis to shrink the space around him so that he could pass through that impossibly small gap. This Dragon Fang is truly giving me more and more pleasant surprises! In the past, after I created the Divine Seal Altar, even my most outstanding disciple since then, Vast Void, was only able to climb 70,000 feet up the 33rd step. But at that time, he had been at the late Divine Sea realm. Dragon Fang has hopes of breaking the record he left behind."

Empyrean Vast Universe favored Dragon Fang. Amongst the Empyreans, his strength was considered average at best. Compared to Empyrean Divine Dream, Empyrean Primordius, and Three Lives Old Man, there was a very great disparity between them.

And Dragon Fang was Three Lives Old Man's disciple, and his only disciple!

In these last 300 million years, Three Lives Old Man had only trained a single successor. If Dragon Fang was able to sweep away all the disciples that Empyrean Vast Universe had ever accepted at just the middle Divine Sea realm, then he could accept that. He wouldn't be shocked at all. Rather, he would even think that was completely reasonable.

"Dragon Fang should be able to break that record. But, it's only this Lin Ming I cannot understand. There are far too many puzzles in his body."

Chapter 1258 – Heavenly Tribulation

Chapter 1258 – Heavenly Tribulation

…

…

…

Empyrean Vast Universe thought out loud, his eyes gathering onto Lin Ming. At this time, Lin Ming had also climbed up to the region that was densely filled with the power of divinity.

Lin Ming marched upwards with steady steps. The crazy and chaotic power of divinity smashed into him. Because of their difference in technique, Lin Ming climbed into the dense power of divinity the same as before, the only difference being that he had to consume more physical strength.

At every moment, Lin Ming was rapidly consuming true essence in his body. At the same time, the wild power of divinity within his body constantly increased.

Divine Seal Altar's 33 steps; the higher one went, the greater the pressure.

Lin Ming felt like a single lonely boat tumbling in the rough seas. Every step he climbed upwards was made with a great deal of effort.

"This is only 40,000 feet up… the Divine Seal Altar truly lives up to its name. Even though I have managed to sense the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens, climbing up so high is still so difficult! I have no idea just how the descendants of Empyrean Vast Universe crawled up higher than this."

The direct disciples that Empyrean Vast Universe received were all abnormal geniuses of their generations. Each one had special abilities and extremely high perception. They might have special bodies or be astounding and versatile in several aspects.

As they climbed up the Divine Seal Altar, it could be seen as each one doing their own thing trying to outshine the other. Each one displayed their own special power, unlike Lin Ming who had to sense the power of divinity and absorb it. Rather, they would use different methods like Dragon Fang.

By avoiding all of the power of divinity and only withstanding the Empyrean pressure, it was naturally much easier. In Empyrean Vast Universe's words, these were nothing but little tricks.

But, playing these tricks on the Divine Seal Altar was restricted to the first 50,000 feet.

After 50,000 feet, the power of divinity would become unbelievably wild and dangerous.

At this time, the area around the Divine Seal Altar was like a roaring turbulent sea. The power of divinity gathered in mighty waves, crashing forwards with unbelievable fury!

"Mm?"

Dragon Fang's expression changed. The power of divinity was really too terrifying, even the space created by Spatial Genesis was about to tear apart soon!

The Concept of Space's Spatial Genesis was able to compress a large space into a small space. Dragon Fang had created a space enchantment around him, and used the Concept of Spatial Genesis to fit through the gaps in the power of divinity.

However, after 50,000 feet, the power of divinity had become too wild and fierce; his enchantment was about to be broken through.

"Too fierce. If this continues then I won't be able to continue much longer. Once the spatial enchantment breaks, the chaotic energy will directly crash into my protective true essence. With the current intensity of this energy, just three strikes will be enough to severely wound me or even kill me!"

Dragon Fang's complexion fell. At this moment, a brilliant flame blazed in his eyes. A dim blood red light was emitted from his pupils, and all the meridian channels around his eyes shined, becoming incomparably fierce.

Three Lives Pupils – All Existence To Void.

All Existence to Void was a single state of the Three Lives Pupils transcendent divine might. The Three Lives Pupils was a transcendent divine might similar to the Eight Inner Hidden Gates: one could open multiple states, each one corresponding to a different function. At the same time, each and every one of these states was much harder to open than the last!

In the past, Three Lives Old Man could open seven or eight states together. In this condition, Three Lives Old Man was nearly the same as a god!

All Existence to Void was the first state of the Three Lives Pupils and also the simplest.

Dragon Fang had comprehended the Three Lives Pupils several months ago and was barely able to display All Existence to Void. Doing so rapidly consumed his strength and he was unable to maintain this state for a long time. It would even create a tremendous burden on his body.

"All Existence to Void… good young fellow!" Empyrean Vast Universe's gaze sharpened. "36 years old and already able to open All Existence to Void. After another thousand years he should be able to open three or four states. His future accomplishments will truly be endless."

Under the state of All Existence to Void, Dragon Fang was able to see every wisp of the power of divinity with absolute clarity, and the strength of his Concept of Space rose to an even higher level.

Visible flames ignited on his body. In truth, these flames were the power of the Three Lives Pupils taken form.

As this scene fell into the audience’s eyes, all of them cried out in alarm.

They didn’t know what the Three Lives Pupils transcendent divine might was. Let alone them, not even Xiao Daochild knew. After all, Xiao Daochild had only lived a million years so far; the time period 300 million years ago when Three Lives Old Man was at the height of his fame was far too distant.

“He’s already at 50,000 feet; he’s passed most disciples of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace in the past. When I was at their age, I only climbed up 30,000 feet. I am far inferior to these two.”

Xiao Daochild couldn’t help but admire them. These were two peerless monstrous geniuses. One was at the middle Divine Sea realm, the other was at the early Divine Sea realm, and yet both were able to sweep away most Empyrean descendants of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. They had even far surpassed the young him in talent.

At this time, in a far off galaxy of the Divine Realm, in a strange unknown time-space dimension, an old man was dully standing on a desolate world.

This was a lifeless little planet a mere thousand miles wide. On the planet, besides a humble little cabin near the old man, there weren’t any other buildings. It seemed like an extremely lonely and deserted world.

The old man was leaning on a wooden walking stick. His back was bent with rickets, his figure was haggard, and the skin on his face was wrinkled up. The sockets of his eyes were deep, his hair was thinning, and many of his teeth had fallen out. His clothes were covered with stains and released a faint stench. This stench seemed like… the smell of the dead!

These were the five symbols of fading. When a supreme elder was nearing their inevitable death, they would experience stained clothes, the odor of death, balding of the head, sweat from the body, and loss of awareness.

All powerhouses of the Divine Realm had to undergo such a state, because their lives were finite. No matter how heaven-shaking he was in the past or how many countless powerhouses worshipped and prostrated him, he was currently nothing but an old man knocking on death's door.

"All Existence to Void… Fang, you have truly not disappointed me. I have walked through countless star systems and you are the only successor that I have ever found. The future is yours! With you here, then there is a chance that this world will be able to cross the great calamity. If so, I can rest in peace…"

The old man whispered. His eyes were completely black without the least bit of white sclera at all. But, these eyes seemed to understand the infinite mysteries of space and time, as if he could understand all the secrets in the world!

"In my life, I have seen all Laws and seen through all illusions. Even so, I cannot see through my own destiny! A martial artist may cultivate and become the greatest master to exist, but even they cannot rid themselves of the shackles of destiny and samsara. No one can defeat the eventual passage of time. An Empyrean is known as an existence that can surpass the Heavenly Dao, but the truth is that… they cannot completely surpass it…"

The old man deeply sighed and then violently coughed.

At this time, on Gravemoon Star's Divine Seal Altar, Dragon Fang had already climbed up 53,000 feet. Lin Ming was at 49,000 feet, soon about to reach the area with the most violent surging power of divinity.

Currently, purple flames shrouded Dragon Fang. Every step up challenged the limits of his strength. The power of divinity collided with the Space Laws that Dragon Fang propped up with his strength, causing brilliant purple beams of light to shoot out like a mesmerizing dream!

At the start, the billions of people in the audience couldn't make out the flowing power of divinity. They could also imagine Dragon Fang and Lin Ming withstanding the tribulation as they climbed up the 33rd step of the Divine Seal Altar.

But it wasn't much fun just imagining all of this.

However, now that the power of the Space Laws that Dragon Fang released was directly colliding with the power of divinity, they could see the fierce combat. This left them bouncing with excitement!

"Too fierce! Dragon Fang didn't use his hidden cards until this moment. It's hard to imagine where his limit is!"

"Dragon Fang has completely erupted with all his strength at 50,000 feet. It's clear that from 50,000 feet upwards, the difficulty rises dramatically yet again. Lin Ming has currently climbed up less than 50,000 feet; I wonder if he will be able to pass that height?"

"It's just too difficult. It's already very good that Lin Ming has managed to support himself until now, but didn't you hear what Senior Xiao Daochild said? According to him, out of Empyrean Vast Universe's numerous disciples, the highest record that any one of them ever set was 70,000 feet, and that record was set by a late Divine Sea realm martial artist. The more they continue, the harder it will become. Dragon Fang has a chance of breaking this record, but Lin Ming will likely be stopped at 50,000-60,000 feet!"

As the audience was discussing, there was a sudden change in the skies above the Divine Seal Altar. With a loud rumbling sound, dark clouds began to gather.

With the billions of people present, their thundering shouts had washed away the clouds for thousands of miles. But now there were actually layers of clouds gathering?

"It's clouding over. What is going on here?"

"Clouds… these aren't ordinary clouds, these are origin energy clouds!"

"No, these aren't ordinary origin energy clouds either."

When heaven and earth origin energy condensed into clouds, the time that most people saw this phenomenon was during Ninefall!

But now, the energy gathering in these thick and roiling clouds was different from normal heaven and earth origin energy. Rather, the energy was savage and chaotic, completely all-encompassing!

Although the martial artists present couldn't feel the power of divinity, they could clearly sense the energies within these origin energy clouds. They were absolutely sure these were not ordinary origin energy clouds!

The clouds became thicker and thicker, stronger and stronger. They were no longer black, but had a crimson blood red sheen. Gradually, every drop of energy for tens of thousands of miles gathered here, forming a massive red vortex!

And the 33rd step of the Divine Seal Altar was the focal point of this blood red vortex!

"Heavens, what is going on here!?"

"Is this a world phenomenon? Because Dragon Fang is about to reach 60,000 feet, that will galvanize a world phenomenon?"

World phenomena would appear when an extreme monstrous genius was making a breakthrough, a remarkable supernatural power was being completed, a divine pill was being refined, or a divine weapon was being forged. Only then would world phenomena be quickened; they were no trifling matter!

Rumble rumble rumble!

In the layers of clouds, lightning flashed!

In truth, this was not ordinary elemental thunder, but sparks of excessive energy caused by high-speed energy friction.

Xiao Daochild looked up at the sky, a solemn expression on his face. He actually knew that this wasn't just a normal world phenomenon, but the most difficult and abnormal pass in climbing up the Divine Seal Altar – heavenly tribulation. This was the heavenly tribulation that one had to experience when climbing up the last several tens of thousands of feet of the 33rd step!

After 60,000 feet, heavenly tribulation would run through the remaining distance of the 33rd step!

This was a deadly barrier that no Divine Sea realm martial artist could hope to pass! In the past, even Vast Void was stopped by this heavenly tribulation!

Now, whether it was Dragon Fang or Lin Ming, both of them would also be stopped in the last several tens of thousands of feet by this heavenly tribulation!

Of course, the basis of this was that Lin Ming could reach the height of heavenly tribulation. If Lin Ming could arrive at this point, then he would have broken the record of any early Divine Sea martial artist. The record left behind in Vast Universe Heavenly Palace by an early Divine Sea martial artist was 50,000 feet high.

"Heavenly tribulation has finally arrived. This is the final test of the Divine Seal Altar, and also one that no one can pass." In Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Empyrean Vast Universe's eyes shined. He wanted to see just what sort of performance Lin Ming and Dragon Fang would show in this heavenly tribulation.

Chapter 1259 – Absolute Slaughter Thunder Sources

Chapter 1259 – Absolute Slaughter Thunder Sources

…

…

…

Kacha!

The bolt of purple thunder came crashing down, winding about like a swimming dragon!

This divine thunder was dozens of feet thick. It struck the Divine Seal Altar with unstoppable momentum, randomly crawling around and turning the entire upper 33,000 feet height of the Divine Seal Altar into a purple sea.

Even though the audience was extremely far away, they were still panic-stricken as they saw this. Without a doubt, if any of the outstanding young elites in the audience were to be placed in that purple sea, they would all be fried into ash!

“That is heavenly tribulation! Heavens, those are tribulation clouds!”

“Heavenly tribulation has covered the last 30,000 some feet. In climbing up the last section of the Divine Seal Altar, one actually has to withstand heavenly tribulation!? This difficulty is far too ridiculous! No wonder for the last 2 million years of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, even though there were dozens or hundreds of chosen prides of heaven, not a single one of them has been able to mount the summit of the Divine Seal Altar!”

“Even for Dragon Fang it is impossible to create a miracle. Wanting to withstand this heavenly tribulation like he’s been doing so far is an act of futility. If I’m not wrong, the heavenly tribulation will become fierce the further up one goes. Perhaps Dragon Fang will be stopped at 70,000 feet!”

Out of the billions of people watching, very few of them believed in Dragon Fang. Heavenly tribulation was not a trifling joke. Even if Dragon Fang was on flat ground and also in his most flourishing condition, he would still have to carefully prepare himself to have just a small chance of passing this. But now, he was currently climbing up the Divine Seal Altar and he had exhausted a great deal of his strength in coming up so far.

“Heavenly tribulation…”

Dragon Fang’s eyes burned with purple flames. He placed the Dragon Fang Blade between his lips, the shark blade edge reflecting his snow white teeth, cold and sharp.

“In the past, Honorable Master once listed seven divine artifacts to me, and the ancient Divine Seal was listed third amongst them. But, that has already disappeared for an extremely long time by now. The Divine Seal Altar that Empyrean Vast Universe created was refined by drawing support from a wisp of the ancient Divine Seal Altar’s artifact spirit. Even so, Honorable Master said that this replica Divine Seal Altar is not something I can climb all the way. Now that heavenly tribulation has arrived, let me see just what step my Three Lives Pupils will help me reach!”

In the face of this endless roiling purple sea, the average person would have lost all their courage to continue. But for Dragon Fang, this challenge caused his fighting spirit to boil over!

He bit down on the Dragon Fang Blade and slowly climbed up towards that purple sea!

From 50,000 feet to the purple thunder dominion, there was still 17,000 feet. For Dragon Fang to climb this distance still took some time. By the time he climbed up to 65,000 feet, Dragon Fang's entire body was dripping with sweat and blue veins were popping out on his forehead!

Maintaining the state of All Existence to Void created a tremendous burden on his body!

At 65,000 feet, he was still 2000 feet from reaching that turbulent purple sea. But even so, at this time, the purple strip of thunder left that purple sea and shot downwards!

Kacha!

A terrifying explosion rang out like the roar of gods! Dragon Fang's body shook and the spatial enchantment around him began to shatter like a broken eggshell!

"The spatial enchantment is breaking!"

As the audience saw this, all of them held their breath. In that brief instant there simply wasn't enough time to respond. The purple thunder burst apart that spatial enchantment and thrust down at Dragon Fang.

But at this moment, another spatial enchantment flashed into existence around Dragon Fang, blocking this thunder.

"Double layered spatial enchantment!?"

No one thought that after the first level spatial enchantment shattered, there would also be a second one that wrapped around Dragon Fang. This second layer enchantment had blocked the thunder attack!

And Dragon Fang had escaped this without a single wound!

"He blocked it! Wonderful!"

"He's comprehended the Space Laws enough to create a multi-layered spatial enchantment. To reach this degree at 36 years of age is unbelievable!"

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Beams of savage thunder crashed down, crashing onto the spatial enchantments around Dragon Fang.

As a ray of thunder chopped apart a spatial enchantment, another new layer would appear around Dragon Fang's body forming a completely balanced system.

Like this, Dragon Fang shouldered the arcs of thunder and climbed up towards the purple thunder dominion!

67,000 feet high was still 33,000 feet away from the summit of the Divine Seal Altar!

Here was where the thunder dominion was.

At this point, Dragon Fang could feel the terrifying energy contained with that purple thunder dominion.

"He's entering the thunder dominion!"

"67,000 feet, he's only 3000 feet away from the 70,000 foot record left behind by Empyrean Vast Universe's disciple. In other words, any one of Empyrean Vast Universe's disciples would be instantly defeated as soon as they entered the Thunder Dominion!"

The audience watched with unblinking eyes. Dragon Fang grit his teeth and broke into the thunder dominion!

As soon as he entered the thunder dominion, the power of thunder rushed towards him like an endless stream of time, seeming to pierce through space itself! Within this vast purple sea, any martial artist was nothing but a dinky boat drifting in the swelling waves, incomparably small, able to overturn at any moment!

Purple light filled every inch of space. The rolling thunderclaps were deafening, endless. The double layered spatial enchantments around Dragon Fang rapidly melted away like ice underneath the noon sun!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Like the apocalypse, everything in the world seemed as if it were being destroyed.

Dragon Fang's entire body was wreathed in flickering purple flames. As the baptism of thunder crashed onto him, it was impossible to imagine what kind of tribulation he was experiencing.

The spatial enchantments around him constantly shattered and reformed. Although Dragon Fang's restorative ability was inferior to Lin Ming's, it was still extremely amazing. Even though he was consuming energy at a rapid pace, he was still able to continue on.

68,000 feet! 69,000 feet!

He was only a thousand feet away from reaching the record left behind by Vast Void!

At this time, Dragon Fang's entire body was bulging with blue veins and all the blood vessels beneath his skin were visible in clear detail. It was no longer possible to see his eyes; one could only see brilliantly combusting purple flames!

"He's going to break the record!"

"Dragon Fang, you can do it!"

"Dragon Fang!"

"Dragon Fang!"

Many people cheered out for Dragon Fang. There were many young girls that screamed out his name!

The record was right in front of him. The Divine Seal Altar was a comprehensive test of one's cultivation and potential. But, in a situation where one's cultivation wasn't high enough to resist the heavenly tribulation, then that only left… one's potential!

As long as Dragon Fang could draw with this record, it would prove that his potential easily swept away every single disciple of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace.

If Dragon Fang, a middle Divine Sea realm martial artist, could climb up 70,000 feet on the 33rd step of the Divine Seal Altar, then he would create a legend!

Rumble rumble rumble!

The heavenly tribulation became increasingly wild. Dragon Fang’s skin began to crack as blood poured down from these wounds. There was even blood dripping from the corners of his lips!

However, he still steadily climbed up as before.

Finally, he had passed a 70,000 foot height and had broken Vast Void’s record!

In that instant, the entire arena, the billions of spectators there, were all cheering out as loudly as they could!

This was a miracle wrought by Dragon Fang!

After reaching 70,000 feet, there was suddenly a drastic change in the thunder dominion. Within the thunder dominion, the endless thunder gathered together, forming savage vicious beasts!

Of these beasts, some seemed like massive pythons, some were enormous lizards, some were tigers, and there were even some like flood dragons. All of them clawed their way towards Dragon Fang!

“Heavens! What is that!?”

“Those are spirit bodies formed by the power of thunder, Thunder Souls! No… no, those are Thunder Sources!”

Thunder Sources were energy life forms created by the essence of thunder. The Purple Lion Thunder Source that Lin Ming absorbed was also a Thunder Source.

In order for a Thunder Source to be born, it had to be at the center of countless coincidences for tens of millions or even hundreds of millions of years.

And now, on the 33rd step of the Divine Seal Altar, there were suddenly over 20 Thunder Sources!

All of these Thunder Sources hurtled towards Dragon Fang!

Each Thunder Source had the ability to kill an early Divine Sea powerhouse!

An ordinary Divine Sea martial artist would be instantly killed. Even a master would find them extremely difficult to deal with, much less in these endless purple thunder dominion.

Dragon Fang took out the Dragon Fang Blade from his mouth. Space rippled around the blade as he slashed out!

“Tremble, space!”

With this slash, all of the space around the Dragon Fang Blade began to vibrate at high speeds! A weapon that was vibrating at high speed was much sharper than normal. Moreover, what Dragon Fang did was cause space to tremble and not his weapon. Space was known as the sharpest weapon in the world!

Peng peng peng peng!

Four Thunder Sources were blocked by Dragon Fang!

But, the other Thunder Sources followed right after, Dragon Fang didn’t have time to redraw his sword!

As Dragon Fang saw those numerous Thunder Sources rush towards him, in this critical moment, he shouted out –

"Mirror Image Avatar!"

Woosh woosh woosh woosh woosh woosh woosh!

Seven figures flashed out from Dragon Fang. These spatial mirror image projections were what Dragon Fang used to defeat Bloodless Sword. It was able to allow him to divide into eight!

These seven mirror images all attacked, each one blocking three Thunder Sources, instantly stopping 21 of them. However, two final Thunder Sources evaded Dragon Fang's defenses, rapidly rushing towards his body!

Rumble rumble rumble!

One Thunder Source shattered Dragon Fang's spatial enchantment, and the second Thunder Source solidly smashed into Dragon Fang's protective true essence.

An energy life form created by the power of thunder, just how terrifyingly strong were they? It was far more formidable than any previous thunderbolt!

Dragon Fang's protective true essence instantly exploded and the savage power of thunder crashed into his body!

The audience cried out in alarm. Some young girls that had a secret crush on Dragon Fang closed their eyes, too afraid to look.

But at this time, brilliant purple flames suddenly erupted, gushing out from Dragon Fang's body. These purple flames intertwined with the thunder light, casting the entire surrounding area in endless deep purple, shining and radiant, blinding to the eye!

Everyone subconsciously looked away before turning back.

"What happened!?"

"He crossed it!"

“He crossed it… but, his eye…”

“Dragon Fang overdrew his strength and received heavy damage to his eye. If this continues then he’ll crawl at most to 80,000 feet or so.”

At this time, on the Divine Seal Altar, the corner of Dragon Fang’s right eye had torn open. The blood vessels had been ripped apart and blood was flowing out.

The purple flames in the right eye had nearly been extinguished.

Practicing the Three Lives Pupils gave one greatly increased self-recovery abilities of the eyes. If the eyes were wounded, they could quickly restore give enough time. But now, this injured eye meant that Dragon Fang wouldn’t be able to continue for much longer.

“This is too horrifying. This is a killing formation of 27 Thunder Sources, and yet Dragon Fang was able to cross it. But, the price he paid was one of his eyes. He’s already 77,000 feet high up; he has high hopes of reaching 80,000 feet.”

In the skies above the Divine Seal Altar, Xiao Daochild was full of praise. He was well aware of just how terrifying the 27 Thunder Source killing formation was. At this time, Xiao Daochild’s thoughts moved and he looked downwards. He saw that 10,000 feet behind Dragon Fang, Lin Ming had also climbed into the purple thunder dominion.

“Mm, Lin Ming has also climbed up to the level of heavenly tribulation. Great!”

Chapter 1260 – Dragon Fang, Defeated

Chapter 1260 – Dragon Fang, Defeated

…

…

…

On the Divine Seal Altar's 33rd step, Dragon Fang could be said as having grabbed the attention from the entire world. As for Lin Ming, he climbed up much slower so there were far less people paying attention to him. In this situation, people would usually be looking towards the first place person.

Now, Lin Ming also neared the purple thunder dominion, causing many people to turn back to him.

"Lin Ming can actually crawl up this high!"

"Fierce! I thought that 50,000 feet was his limit, but I never imagined he would also reach the 67,000 foot height. I wonder just how long Lin Ming can withstand the 33,000 feet of the thunder dominion?"

"The 33,000 foot thunder dominion? Hehe, Lin Ming is only at the early Divine Sea realm; he might fall before he can fully climb into the thunder dominion. Don't forget, he has to withstand the attacks of heavenly tribulation as he approaches the thunder dominion."

"Lin Ming is definitely inferior to Dragon Fang. His talent is already heaven-defying if he can truly climb into the thunder dominion. But, it is impossible for him to go any further than that, let alone cross the 27 Thunder Source killing formation at 70,000 feet."

People didn't place many expectations on Lin Ming. After all, Lin Ming's cultivation was inferior to Dragon Fang's.

As the people were discussing, there was a sparkling explosive sound as a snake-like beam of thunder separated from the purple sea and hurtled towards Lin Ming.

"It's here! The first bolt of thunder!"

"Dragon Fang relied on his double layered spatial enchantment to block this. I wonder just how Lin Ming will defend against it this time! If he cannot block these arcs of thunder then he won't be able to enter into the 33,000 foot thunder dominion!"

Everyone's eyes widened, waiting to see what technique Lin Ming would use to deal with this onslaught! On the Divine Seal Altar, one's body had to withstand the Empyrean pressure so they were unable to fly. Wanting to avoid the attack of thunder was impossible, they could only defend against it!

But, wanting to defend against this crazy and maniacal thunder was easier said than done. In the audience, none of the young elites sitting there had the confidence to do so.

Lin Ming looked up. At this time, the bolt of thunder had separated from the purple sea, and that incomparably wild and violent energy was hurtling towards him!

Lin Ming's eyes sharpened. He opened the Gate of View that functioned in defense and also revolved the power of the supreme dragon bone. At that same time, he revolved his true essence to the limit and allowed that purple thunder to crash into his body!

At this moment, the entire audience was dumbfounded!

"He's forcefully resisting the thunder tribulation!?"

"He's too crazy! How can he withstand that and still live!?"

Lin Ming wasn't Dragon Fang, who had spatial barriers set up around him to protect his body. Just the spatial enchantments were enough to block the majority of the attacks aimed at Dragon Fang. But Lin Ming used his protective true essence to do so, so the impact he had to withstand was countless times greater.

Bang!

As thunder washed over his body, Lin Ming suddenly shook. His protective true essence withstood half of the power of thunder before directly bursting apart. The power of thunder flushed into Lin Ming's meridians where 90% of it was absorbed by the Heretical God Seedling.

As for the remaining power of thunder, it fizzled away within Lin Ming's meridians. Lin Ming's meridians had been tempered with the power of thunder multiple times in his life; this power of thunder simply couldn't affect his body at all.

His body only trembled for the briefest moment before he continued climbing upwards.

"This is… am I seeing things?!"

"It's over like that? Did that bolt of thunder really hit Lin Ming or did it veer away?"

Many martial artists glanced at each other in confusion, a bit bewildered. How could Lin Ming possibly resist this thunder tribulation in such a relaxed manner? After being struck by the thunder tribulation, his body only shook for a brief moment before he continued to climb upwards as if nothing had happened at all! This was far too abnormal!

They all suspected that they were seeing something, but as more bolts of thunder struck Lin Ming, his body shook several times before he continued upwards, still unaffected as before.

"The hell!?"

"This is too forceful!"

The entire audience was shocked. At this point in time, although they didn't think that Lin Ming had completely exhausted himself like a lamp without oil, he should also have been nearing his limit. None of them thought he would be able to resist this thunder tribulation so easily.

But, what they didn't know was that within Lin Ming's inner world, the Heretical God Seedling there had crossed Ninefall and absorbed the power of heavenly tribulation.

That had been true heavenly tribulation – a tribulation of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, thunder, wind, yin, and yang. Nine different tribulations gathered as one, representing nine different source energies of the universe, uniting together to represent the Heavenly Dao!

Disregarding the annihilating strength of heavenly tribulation, just in terms of quality, the heavenly tribulation that Lin Ming crossed during his Ninefall was on a much higher level than this thunder dominion thunder tribulation on the Divine Seal Altar. After all, this Divine Seal Altar was only a replica created by Empyrean Vast Universe relying on a fragment of the ancient Divine Seal Altar's artifact spirit. The inherent Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens within was extremely pale and incomplete.

"What method did Lin Ming use? It's really unbelievable. All of these geniuses have endless amounts of methods that can leave one startled."

"He might be using some rare treasure. I don't believe that an early Divine Sea martial artist can use his body alone to resist thunder tribulation. He definitely has some tricky method that he is using. After this he will have to enter the purple sea and we'll see whether or not he can reach 70,000 feet. Once he reaches that height, he will have to withstand the combined attacks of 27 Thunder sources. At that time, any tricks he uses will be meaningless."

As everyone was speaking, Lin Ming officially entered the 33,000 foot thunder dominion!

Rumble rumble rumble!

The sound of thunder shook the heavens, piercing through the ears!

Within this world, there was nothing but boundless purple all around. Lin Ming was completely submerged within this purple thunder dominion!

“Thunder dominion… this is similar to the skies above the Sea of Miracles’ 8000 Miles Black Swamp. I wonder just what this heavenly tribulation is. If it’s simply limited to thunder tribulation, then that is nothing at all to me.”

A blazing thunder light filled the field of his vision. But, Lin Ming ignored all of this and continued climbing straight up the cliffs!

Chi chi chi!

An endless waterfall of thunder baptized Lin Ming’s body. Within Lin Ming’s inner world, within his meridians, everything was flooded with thunder!

“This brat, how is he doing this? Does have a thunder spirit body? Or perhaps he has a Thunder Laws-based transcendent divine might?”

Within Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Empyrean Vast Universe had a startled expression. Lin Ming’s performance so far had exceeded his expectations.

However, he immediately shot down these guesses.

“No, that’s wrong. The power of thunder tribulation represents the will of the Heavenly Dao. It is fundamentally different from ordinary elemental lightning. No matter how wonderful a thunder-attribute cultivation method he practiced, it is impossible for him to absorb thunder tribulation to use for himself. That completely violates all common sense.”

Empyrean Vast Universe muttered. No matter how he thought about it, he couldn’t see just how Lin Ming accomplished what he did.

Even Empyrean Vast Universe was unable to think that Lin Ming had crossed heavenly tribulation. Moreover, the thunder tribulation from a 33 Layered Heavens Ninefall was beyond rare, ever since the most ancient of times.

Empyrean Vast Universe hadn't crossed a 33 Layered Heavens Ninefall, thus he simply didn't know what sort of change would happen in a Ninefall of that level.

And at this time, Dragon Fang had already climbed 80,000 feet up the Divine Seal Altar. He had broken past the boundary of 80,000 feet!

Just how exaggerated a result was climbing up 80,000 feet on the Divine Seal Altar's 33rd step. Even Empyrean Vast Universe had to praise such an achievement.

"The successor of Three Lives Old Man is truly fierce. He is far more formidable and talented than all the disciples I have received in my millions of years of life! In terms of potential alone, I fear that even if he can't compare with Frost Dream, he isn't too far off."

Empyrean Vast Universe looked at Empyrean Divine Dream. From the meaning of his words, it was clear he believed that Dragon Fang's talent was worse than Frost Dream's!

Frost Dream was the successor to Empyrean Divine Dream and also the current Saintess of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. In the future there was an extremely high chance she would become an Empyrean!

Three Lives Old Man and Empyrean Divine Dream were characters of two completely different eras. When Empyrean Divine Dream's strength grew and she arrived at the peak of the Divine Realm, Three Lives Old Man was already far too old. Thus, the two of them had never dueled to decide who was stronger and who was weaker.

But in Empyrean Vast Universe's eyes, Empyrean Divine Dream was an unfathomable existence. He even suspected that she was far more formidable than Three Lives Old Man had been in his prime.

And Empyrean Divine Dream's disciple, Fairy Maiden Frost Dream, was also immeasurably deep!

As Empyrean Vast Universe was thinking, at this moment, 80,000 feet up on the Divine Seal Altar's 33rd step, countless Law runes began to shimmer into existence around Dragon Fang.

These multi-colored runes were different from the Laws that currently existed in the Divine Realm. No one was able to discern what they meant. After these Law runes appeared, they gathered together, forming stone tablets!

"These are… tablets condensed from the Laws!"

Everyone watched with shock and amazement as 80,000 feet up, the Law runes gathered together, forming 33 Law stone tablets!

Since ancient times, countless supreme elders of the Divine Realm, before their death, would spend a great deal of time and energy to carve their life's comprehension of Law Concepts onto these stone tablets, forming totem tablets for their descendants to meditate on.

And now, the Great Dao in the heavens had gathered into 33 Dao tablets. This left everyone panic-stricken. If the world Laws formed Dao tablets, then wouldn't these be tablets on the same level as chaos stones?

After climbing this far up the Divine Altar's 33rd step, it was no longer only thunder tribulation, but Law tablets formed from runes of the heavens and earth. One would be directly bombarded by these tablets!

On the Divine Seal Altar, Dragon Fang watched as these 33 Dao tablets formed. He extracted the Dragon Fang Blade once more. His right hand was already stained red with blood, and trickles of blood flowed down the edge of the Dragon Fang Blade. The icy cold reflection and the crimson shine were gorgeous beyond compare!

He had lost vision in his right eye. But, his left eye still blazed with purple flames as brightly as before!

“33 Dao tablets! Even if I must be stopped here, I will fight with everything I have!”

At this time, Dragon Fang had already consumed over 60% of his true essence, but his fighting spirit had not dimmed in the least!

Woosh!

The first Dao tablet shot towards Dragon Fang!

This was a blood red Dao tablet. Dragon Fang thrust out his sword, “Space-time Vorpal Vibration Sword!”

Fusing the vibrating power of space into his sword, Dragon Fang’s sword pierced through the tablet, causing the tablet to explode. Dragon Fang’s body shook, his hand cracking even as he spat out a mouthful of blood!

“So strong!”

All of the blood vitality within Dragon Fang’s body tumbled over. In that strike just now, he had managed to block it but he still received an internal injury.

And at this time, the other 32 Dao tablets began to rush at him.

Dragon Fang’s pupils shrank. “Mirror Image Avatar!”

Dragon Fang divided into eight: one true self, seven avatars. Every avatar attacked a Dao tablet, crashing into them and being annihilated together!

However, there were still over 20 Dao tablets left!

“A Sword to Shatter the Void!”

Dragon Fang grit his teeth and slashed out with his sword once more. At once, three Dao tablets were cut in half. But, he was unable to resist the remaining Dao tablets. They all struck his body!

Rumble rumble rumble!

The Dao tablets exploded. Dragon Fang’s protective true essence exploded, his chest collapsed, and he wildly vomited blood.

In that final moment, the gray-clothed old man watching from deep within the Divine Seal Altar finally moved, rescuing the nearly unconscious Dragon Fang.

Thus, Dragon Fang was defeated!

Chapter 1261 – Lin Ming’s Heavenly Tribulation

Chapter 1261 – Lin Ming’s Heavenly Tribulation

…

…

…

“Dragon Fang was defeated. It really is impossible for a Divine Sea martial artist to climb up this Divine Seal Altar that Empyrean Vast Universe created!”

“Even Dragon Fang was defeated, but he was able to crawl up 80,000 feet. That beats the top record of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, it’s amazing!”

As the billions of people in the audience saw Dragon Fang wrapped in energy and slowly brought down from the Divine Seal Altar, all of them were shocked. This was truly a rare semifinals seen once every million years! To witness an unrivalled genius climb up the Divine Seal Altar was a truly unique experience. To the young geniuses present, this experience could broaden their world and even affect their future achievements to a certain extent.

“We still fall far too short.”

“There is no limit in this universe. There is always a higher mountain and a stronger person. I originally thought Bloodless Sword and Nether Limitless were fierce, but I never imagined that they would be nothing compared to Dragon Fang.”

“We have to work harder. After all, Dragon Fang and Lin Ming’s backgrounds aren’t that outstanding!”

None of them knew that in truth, Dragon Fang was the successor of an Empyrean.

“Don’t be so hasty in your assumptions. It’s possible that Dragon Fang has an extremely strong master behind him that we cannot understand. As for that Lin Ming, I really have no idea what sort of heaven-defying lucky chances he has experienced. It is impossible for a genius to accidentally grow to this level.”

As everyone was speaking, their eyes naturally gathered onto Lin Ming.

Now, on the entire Divine Seal Altar, there was only Lin Ming left.

Lin Ming was now 68,000 feet high. He had just entered the thunder dominion and would have to experience two great tribulations before reaching the 80,000 foot height that Dragon Fang had climbed to.

“It’s already a surprise that Lin Ming can arrive at this height!”

“No kidding. Out of all the geniuses on the Divine Seal Altar, his cultivation was the lowest. I never imagined he would be the one to last the longest, but he is still worse than Dragon Fang. Perhaps the Thunder Source killing formation at 70,000 feet will end his journey!”

In everyone’s eyes, although Lin Ming was inferior to Dragon Fang, he was also an extreme genius. He was a character with unlimited future prospects.

Billions of people watched Lin Ming. His speed wasn’t fast, but every step he took was steady.

Endless waves of thunder crashed onto Lin Ming, baptizing him in reckless streams of electricity. Even from afar, this was still a creepy and heart-stopping scene.

The numerous young elites present found this hard to imagine. If they were placed in that thunder dominion, they knew what fate they would suffer.

69,000 feet.

69,500 feet.

70,000 feet!

Lin Ming had finally climbed up to the great tribulation of Thunder Sources.

A great tribulation of 27 Thunder Sources; even Dragon Fang hadn't been able to completely withstand it. He had to completely overdraw his strength and even then he has lost his right eye. This has caused Dragon Fang's strength to greatly drop, and the consequence of this was his immediate defeat at 80,000 feet!

"A great tribulation of 27 Thunder Sources! Before, these Thunder Sources were all dispersed by Dragon Fang. Will Lin Ming still encounter them?"

"I have no idea. If Lin Ming can avoid this tribulation of Thunder Sources, then that will be his luck!"

"If so, then Lin Ming's results will be much better on the 33rd step."

Although it was said that Thunder Sources and Fire Elementals were nearly impossible to annihilate, once they were scattered they still required some time to reform. Everyone was guessing that Lin Ming would take advantage of this brief period to bypass the test at 70,000 feet.

As everyone was thinking this, there were suddenly loud rumbling sounds echoing from the purple sea above the Divine Seal Altar's 33rd step. An infinite power of thunder gathered, forming numerous phantom figures!

These phantoms had the appearances of all sorts of strange and unusual vicious beasts; they were the 27 Thunder Sources!

"They're here! The great tribulation of Thunder Sources! Moreover, they haven't weakened even a bit from Dragon Fang's time! The Divine Seal Altar isn't ordinary at all. One cannot rely on any type of opportunistic trick to climb past it."

"Let's see how Lin Ming will cross this!"

When Dragon Fang had faced the tribulation of 27 Thunder Sources, he had used his true body to destroy several Thunder Sources and then released seven mirror image avatars to destroy 21 more Thunder Sources. The remaining Thunder Sources had been forcefully withstood using his spatial enchantments.

In order to cross that tribulation of 27 Thunder Sources, Dragon Fang had used every method at his disposal. In the end he had paid with the price of his right eye.

As for Lin Ming, his comprehensions of the Space Laws wasn't at the point where he could form mirror image avatars. In this situation, how could he rely on just his true self to withstand the simultaneous attack of 27 Thunder Sources?

The audience watched with eyes wide open. The disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan all held their breath, their hearts catching in their throats. Even Xiao Daochild was at full alert, ready to rescue Lin Ming at any moment so that he wouldn't be severely injured or even killed by those Thunder Sources. If an extreme genius like him died while climbing up the Divine Seal Altar, then his Vast Universe Heavenly Palace would become the joke of the entire Divine Realm.

Xiao Daochild had even specially prepared a temporary time-stop technique. In this critical moment where everything would happen nearly instantly, only this temporary time-stop would earn enough time for Xiao Daochild to save Lin Ming.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Thunder howled, the purple sea tumbled about. 27 Thunder Sources rushed towards Lin Ming!

On the Divine Seal Altar, as soon as Lin Ming saw these 27 Thunder Sources form, he circulated all the true essence in his body. The energy within his inner world surged!

Before this, he had seen how Dragon Fang crossed this tribulation of Thunder Sources, so he had an approximate grasp of this situation.

These Thunder Sources had all received the blessing and will of the Heavenly Dao. They were no longer ordinary Thunder Sources, but heavenly tribulations that stood above the elemental Thunder Laws, standing on a similar level to the Heavenly Dao Laws.

It was impossible for any thunder-attribute cultivation method to control this power of heavenly tribulation.

But, Lin Ming was the exception.

“It’s here!”

Lin Ming raised his right hand and the Phoenix Blood Spear jumped into his grasp. The endless sea of purple was reflected in his bright eyes! This was a world of incomparably blazing thunder!

“Heretical God Force – open to the limit!”

Lin Ming shouted out loud, and the power of thunder surged outwards from the Heretical God Seedling in his inner world. This power of thunder originated from his Ninefall heavenly tribulation’s thunder tribulation. It was of an even higher quality than the purple Thunder Sources above the Divine Sea Altar!

“What!?”

“He’s also forcefully withstanding this!?”

As everyone saw Lin Ming wield a spear as he was about to collide with the 27 Thunder Sources, all of them were shocked speechless.

Even Empyrean Vast Universe and Xiao Daochild were dumbstruck. They had originally thought it was strange enough that Lin Ming had resisted thunder tribulation the way he had, but now he was forcefully withstanding these 27 Thunder Sources!

If this terrifying energy exploded at a close distance, then even a top master would turn to ash!

This was madness!

In the instant that those 27 Thunder Sources touched the Phoenix Blood Spear, behind Lin Ming, a great divine tree began to rapidly grow!

Infinite branches and leaves spread out, crazily absorbing the power of thunder. The crown of the tree towered high, overshadowing all!

In just a moment, the phantom of a divine tree tens of thousands of feet high took root on the Divine Seal Altar, like a pillar that held up the heavens!

All around the divine tree, the inexhaustible power of thunder was controlled by it, rushing towards it like a tide! In that moment, a purple light seemed to swallow up the skies and the earth, leaving this single color shining out in the world.

“Heavens! What is that!?”

Many people cried out in shock and awe. As they thought that Lin Ming was about to be defeated, a divine tree had appeared, splitting the heavens and earth, demanding the worship and obedience of all thunder!

“A world phenomenon! What sort of world phenomenon is that?!”

This reversal was too surprising! Compared to when Dragon Fang used his seven mirror image avatars and spatial enchantments to block the Thunder Sources, this was thousands of times more shocking!

Of course, even if Lin Ming had summoned the phantom of the Heretical God Tree to absorb a massive amount of the thunder tribulation, the baptism of Thunder Sources that his body had to withstand was beyond extraordinary!

A terrifying energy flooded throughout Lin Ming’s organs, his meridians, his blood vessels, swelling up like a tide of rampaging horses, permeating every inch of his body.

In that moment, Lin Ming's skin ruptured and countless blood vessels broke on his body. His clothing was stained with blood and he was left with a horrible appearance.

Although his appearance was in tatters and he had suffered great losses, Lin Ming's momentum had reached its highest peak!

Suddenly, energy erupted from Lin Ming's body. The power of blood burst out from him like a raging inferno, impacting through the skies. From afar, the audience could see that Lin Ming's life force was like an inexhaustible torch, burning to the ends of time, causing them to avert their eyes from this dazzling brilliance!

"Heavens! Is he even human!?"

"He was directly struck by thunder and there isn't even a single unmarred point on his body. But even so, not only did he not fold, he instead erupted with an even greater aura than before. He is simply like an immortal phoenix. A phoenix can be reborn through bathing in a sea of fire, but Lin Ming's potential erupted in a sea of thunder."

No one knew that at this moment, deep within Lin Ming's inner world, an earth-shaking and heaven-shifting change was occurring. After the Heretical God Seedling absorbed a massive amount of heavenly tribulation, it began to undergo a new round of evolution!

The Heretical God Seedling that originally only had several leaves began to grow at a visible speed. The young and lush branches grew longer and longer, producing different leaves that all looked different. Some resembled small tripods, some resembled vicious beasts, some resembled swords, and all sorts of other shapes. The twisting and vibrant roots grew longer and longer, digging deep into the foundation of Lin Ming's inner world. At this moment, the Heretical God Tree had truly taken root!

If someone were to enter Lin Ming's inner world now, they would see this young and vibrant tree. Although it was only the height of a child, its branches and leaves were sturdy, filled with energy and vitality.

Lin Ming was aware that even though this young tree looked common and humble, in the future, it would one day grow into a 100,000 foot divine tree, becoming a true incarnation of thunder and flame.

The moment that the Heretical God Tree's evolution was completed, Lin Ming's eyes flashed open. All around him, the Thunder Laws began to distort, faintly gathering onto him.

For a time, Lin Ming's aura surged upwards, climbing and climbing until it reached unprecedented heights!

As the billions of people saw Lin Ming, all of them were left speechless. Even the presider of this competition, Xiao Daochild, was left utterly dumbfounded. Although he had prepared a time-stop spell in his hands, he hadn't needed to use it at all.

This was far too abnormal.

Dragon Fang had used all of his techniques, using layers upon layers of abilities to just barely cross the tribulation of 27 Thunder Sources. Even so, during that process he had lost an eye and the majority of his strength.

As for Lin Ming, he had directly withstood the tribulation of 27 Thunder Sources!

Even using this crazy method he had successfully crossed the tribulation of Thunder Sources. Moreover, although his body was bathed in blood after crossing this tribulation, his aura hadn't diminished in the least. Instead, it rose and rose, his blood vitality and daring fighting spirit soaring to the heavens.

Just how was this possible!?

"Could Lin Ming have been using that thunder tribulation to temper his body? If he really was, then he's simply insane!"

“That might be what happened, otherwise how could it be explained that he became even stronger? I can’t imagine just how he trained his mortal body!”

Everyone couldn’t help but be horrified. Lin Ming’s flesh and blood body was too terrifying. If an ordinary martial artist were struck by such thunder, they would have turned to ash. But as for Lin Ming, he used this thunder to temper himself.

Chapter 1262 – Slaughter of the Dao Tablets

Chapter 1262 – Slaughter of the Dao Tablets

…

…

…

To use heavenly tribulation to temper the body, that was simply unimaginable!

Heavenly tribulation was originally the power of heavenly retribution, able to annihilate all of existence. Even using various means to block it wouldn't be enough, much less directly withstanding it with the body.

For instance, take Dragon Fang. Dragon Fang was already a genius at the limits of potential. But, let alone tempering his body with heavenly tribulation, just three or four explosive strikes by the Thunder Sources would have shattered his spatial enchantments.

It was also because of this reason that many people thought it was impossible for Lin Ming to be so abnormal. Moreover, the performance that Dragon Fang had displayed so far had surpassed Lin Ming's. Taking a step back, even if Dragon Fang was inferior to Lin Ming, the difference couldn't be that great.

So, how could one direct the heavenly tribulation to temper their body whilst the other was beaten up so ruthlessly?

"I don't think this is Lin Ming's own ability. Dragon Fang climbed up higher than Lin Ming, and he also climbed up in a much calmer fashion. But, upon entering the 33,000 foot thunder dominion and then encountering the Thunder Sources, Dragon Fang was suddenly inferior to Lin Ming. I think this is because Lin Ming must have some special type of shield or rare treasure that can absorb thunder!"

In the crowd, many people agreed with this view.

The timeless history of the Divine Realm was untraceable. Since ancient times, there were countless heaven-defying characters that had refined powerful treasures. It was possible that there were those capable of shielding against the thunder tribulation atop the Divine Seal Altar.

“Yes, that’s also what I am suspecting. Lin Ming resisted those 27 Thunder Sources far too easily, as if his body wasn’t attacked by thunder at all. Moreover, he cultivated the Thunder and Fire Laws from the start, so it wouldn’t be strange if he had some rare thunder-attribute treasure.”

“Treasure is a part of one’s strength but it is still an external force. If Lin Ming were to arrive at this step using a treasure, then even though that’s wonderful of him, it cannot be considered a miracle.”

“If it’s like that then it’s only Lin Ming’s luck that is better. The Divine Seal Altar’s test just happens to suit him.”

“Heh, luck is also part of one’s strength. Dragon Fang’s luck is just far too poor.”

As everyone was speaking, this opinion soon spread through the arena. Everyone could find this more acceptable if Lin Ming had some amazing treasure.

And at this time, Lin Ming had already crawled up another 1000 feet, nearing the 80,000 foot mark!

From 70,000 to 80,000 feet, the purple sea became even wilder and more violent. Thick arcs of thunder howled through the world like purple dragons. Thunder split the skies, revealing an endless and dangerous energy.

At this time, Lin Ming’s entire body was wrapped in thunder. From his head to his toes, he displayed the endless glory of thunder!

Lin Ming's state seemed to confirm everyone's guesses. Otherwise, how could he turn a blind eye to so much thunder?

"This boy! Just how many secrets does he have on him?"

In Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Empyrean Vast Universe was muttering to himself. Upon discovering that Lin Ming was able to perceive the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens, Empyrean Vast Universe was sure that there was some secret on Lin Ming's body, otherwise it was impossible for him to comprehend this sort of Concept.

And now, Lin Ming had broken through the 27 Thunder Source killing formation with an unstoppable momentum, even absorbing a portion of those Thunder Sources' strength to use for himself. That had left Empyrean Vast Universe completely speechless. The power of heavenly tribulation was completely different from the power of ordinary elemental thunder, so how could Lin Ming refine it?

Suddenly, from his side, Empyrean Divine Dream quietly spoke. "Vast Universe, you seem to believe that Lin Ming had found some heaven-defying treasure, or perhaps he stumbled into some lucky chance, relying on some external force to advance to this point."

"Didn't he?" Empyrean Vast Universe turned to look at the white-clothed woman beside him. He didn't think that a Divine Sea martial artist could rely on their strength alone to reach such a boundary.

As for strange treasures, there were all kinds. The Divine Realm was too broad and boundless and had existed for far too long. It was normal for there to be treasures that Empyrean Vast Universe wouldn't be able to sense. Just speaking of the Magic Cube alone, there were only several people in the entire Divine Realm that knew of it. The Ancient Elysium Seal's artifact spirit also knew of it, but the only reason that it had discovered the Magic Cube within Lin Ming's body was because Lin Ming had displayed it when the artifact spirit was trying to destroy him.

The white-clothed woman faintly smiled. “Lucky chances, treasures, these are things that Lin Ming has in abundance. And as you think, they are definitely heaven-shaking. But, the reason he can absorb the power of heavenly tribulation and use it for himself isn’t necessarily because he is relying on some external force, but due to his own abilities…”

“Own abilities?” Empyrean Vast Universe knit his eyebrows together. “A thunder-attribute cultivation method on the level of a transcendent divine might can only stand on par with thunder tribulation in terms of the Laws, so even that can’t truly utilize thunder tribulation. Lin Ming is only at the early Divine Sea realm, but you think he used his own strength to refine that heavenly tribulation?”

Empyrean Vast Universe couldn’t think of any way this was possible. But then Empyrean Divine Dream said, “If Lin Ming were to have experienced heavenly tribulation himself… then from that basis, Lin Ming would be considered as having surpassed the Heavenly Dao Laws. If that is true, then if this were to be coordinated with a supernatural power of the thunder attribute, then there might be that possibility…”

As Empyrean Divine Dream spoke, Empyrean Vast Universe was shocked.

“Experienced heavenly tribulation!? You think he somehow managed to galvanize heavenly tribulation at the Divine Sea realm? How is that even possible?”

Heavenly tribulation was the punishment of the Heavenly Dao. When there was something that tried to surpass the constraints of the Heavenly Dao, the Heavenly Dao would summon heavenly tribulation against that existence in order to exterminate it.

Up to this point, Empyrean Vast Universe had withstood three heavenly tribulations.

The first time was when he had become an Empyrean. His first time experiencing heavenly tribulation had also been the most terrifying time.

The second and third times had been brought down when Empyrean Vast Universe created an Empyrean spirit treasure. The treasure itself had to withstand heavenly tribulation, not Empyrean Vast Universe.

For the first of the two treasure heavenly tribulations, because the quality of that treasure was insufficient, it had been destroyed and failed to come to completion. The second time the treasure was successfully refined, and the finished product of that had been the current Divine Seal Altar replica.

Besides creating an Empyrean spirit treasure, composing a transcendent divine might would also summon heavenly tribulation. Empyrean Vast Universe's transcendent divine might was only half complete, thus it wasn't yet able to summon heavenly tribulation.

As the saying went, the heavens would never seal off all roads. Heavenly tribulation always allowed a chance for survival, no matter how slim it was. Once one crossed heavenly tribulation, the benefits were tremendous!

There were many martial arts geniuses whose strength far surpassed those at their level, many with a Holy Lord or World King cultivation, who thought to arouse heavenly tribulation to temper their bodies and use this method to surpass the Heavenly Dao. But, they did not have the ability to offend the Heavenly Dao. So how could Lin Ming, who was only at the early Divine Sea realm, possibly accomplish something like that?

Empyrean Vast Universe felt that this was unimaginable. Even a child God Beast, equal to a human with a Divine Sea cultivation, would not be able to quicken heavenly tribulation.

Empyrean Divine Dream didn't speak further. Instead, she silently watched as Lin Ming continued climbing up the Divine Seal Altar.

Empyrean Vast Universe also remained silent. He was well aware that if Divine Dream were to say something, she naturally had faith in her own words.

If all of this was true, then that youth known as Lin Ming was far too terrifying. His potential would be far superior to Dragon Fang's, someone who had successfully cultivated the Three Lives Pupils.

At this time, the unconscious Dragon Fang finally woke up. He had been directly sent into a spirit ship from Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. Through the spirit ship's portholes, he had a direct view of the competition. Moreover, because he had a superior position and view, he could see everything much more clearly than the audience did.

He immediately spotted Lin Ming.

“This height is…”

Dragon Fang took a deep breath. He original believed that with his own strength, if he were to fight Lin Ming, there was an extremely high chance that he would win. But now, Lin Ming had actually crawled 77,000 feet up the 33rd step, only 3000 feet from his record.

And by the time Dragon Fang had reached that height, he had consumed over half his true essence and his bodily condition had been at its worst.

In contrast, Lin Ming’s entire body sparkled with sheets of thunder, as if his body had become liquid lightning. His blood vitality soared to the heavens, far stronger than his own.

“How is he doing this?”

Dragon Fang was confused and consternated. Lin Ming’s strength should be less than his own, and he also didn’t have the Three Lives Pupils.

When Lin Ming climbed up the Divine Seal Altar, the method he used was far more difficult than the method Dragon Fang had used. He climbed with far less ease than Dragon Fang.

And now, by the time Lin Ming climbed where he was, he was in his greatest state and had nearly reached the area where Dragon Fang had failed.

Dragon Fang, no matter how hard he thought, couldn’t figure out just what was happening.

“I wasn’t able to clearly see how you crossed that Thunder Source tribulation at 70,000 feet, but once you encounter the tribulation of Dao tablets at 80,000 feet, I will take a good look at just how you cross that.”

With things having arrived at this point, Dragon Fang believed that Lin Ming could reach 80,000 feet.

Time slowly passed. Lin Ming's body roared, explosive crackling sounds coming from every joint in his body. Even his soul was flooded with an endless power of thunder.

And at this time, Lin Ming finally reached the 80,000 foot height. Once he crossed this height, he would have to resist the bombardment of 33 Dao tablets!

The 33 tablets were no longer just the power of thunder, but formed from the world Laws. They represented the will of the Heavenly Dao and were far more formidable than those Thunder Sources from before.

When Dragon Fang formed his spatial mirror images, each one was able to cut down three Thunder Sources. But against these Dao tablets, his spatial mirror images were only able to cut down one. The disparity between them could be imagined.

The audience watched everything with bated breath.

"80,000 feet! He finally reached 80,000 feet!"

"Hehe, I've been waiting for this moment. Lin Ming will soon have to withstand the tribulation of those 33 Dao tablets. Before, I suspected that Lin Ming was using some sort of special thunder-attribute treasure to block those Thunder Sources. If this is so, then now that he is facing these 33 tablets he will have to reveal his true strength."

"It's suspicious but the truth. Besides that, there is no other possible explanation. Lin Ming is strong, but his strength absolutely cannot reach such a degree. Now, the 33 Dao tablet tribulation he must withstand is different from the power of thunder. These Dao tablets are truly formed from the Laws themselves. If Lin Ming has any treasure, that treasure will be useless from now on. It will be impossible for him to pull any more tricks."

As everyone spoke, at this time, countless Law runes began to appear around Lin Ming. These Law runes had multi-hued colors, each color representing different Laws. Moreover, the strangest thing was that these Laws were immensely different from the Laws currently existing in the Divine Realm.

Lin Ming looked at those ever-changing Law runes around him, a thoughtful look on his face. “These Law runes, they each represent the Laws of the 33 Layered Heavens. Among these are Laws of the essence gathering system, Laws from the body transformation technique, and even Laws from the Divine Dream Law… this could be called all-encompassing!”

Lin Ming still didn’t understand what the 33 Layered Heavens were. But now, he had an extremely faint idea. The 33 Layered Heavens represented every single energy system in the universe, and also the fusion of every martial path’s Great Dao!

If so, then only by perceiving the 33 Layered Heavens would he be able to walk down his road of martial arts and reach the peak!

Chapter 1263 – Three Essences Gathered as One

Chapter 1263 – Three Essences Gathered as One

…

…

…

Colorful Law runes gathered together, condensing into 33 Dao tablets.

Each of these Dao tablets revolved within a brilliant divine light, exuding a vast and ancient aura!

As these Dao tablets appeared, even the sea of thunder hid away.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The tablets struck each other, resonating through the world like a divine bell.

This titanic sound struck the minds of everyone present, causing their heartbeat to accelerate.

The great tribulation of Dao tablets; this was where Dragon Fang had suffered defeat.

Everyone thought that this step would also be where Lin Ming was defeated.

In truth, the audience's guess that Lin Ming had some thunder-attribute protective treasure, although wrong, was correct in a sense. Lin Ming did have an extraordinary resistance to heavenly tribulation of the Thunder Laws. Their speculations were wrong, but the result was more or less the same.

Now that there was no longer thunder heavenly tribulation, it had truly become a great test to Lin Ming.

Everyone, including Dragon Fang, looked up at Lin Ming. It was impossible for him to play any tricks here.

Woosh!

33 Dao tablets hurtled towards Lin Ming!

Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear. In this moment, he opened all seven of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. Within Lin Ming's inner world, the Heretical God Tree erupted with a tide of energy. All of this energy came from the thunder tribulation he had absorbed!

"Thunder tribulation!"

Lin Ming thrust out his spear! The wild and frantic power of thunder tribulation struck the 33 Dao tablets, forming a net of electricity around them! As the 33 Dao tablets were struck by the thunder tribulation, although they didn't explode, their speed rapidly dropped and their light dimmed down!

"Mm? He can absorb thunder tribulation and use it to counterattack the Dao tablets?"

Xiao Daochild was floating not too far away from Lin Ming and he was able to see all of this in clear detail. In his opinion, this was nearly impossible. Even the entire audience was stunned. Lin Ming's attack had exceeded all their expectations; he was even able to use heavenly tribulation!?

There was no time to think. Suddenly, there was a change in the formation of the 33 Dao tablets. With three Dao tablets as the center, the other 30 Dao tablets encircled them, each of their positions containing innumerable mysteries. This was actually a great array formation!

"Heavens, the 33 Dao tablets formed an array formation!"

"How terrifying, this is something that not even Dragon Fang experienced! The scattered attacks of these Dao tablets are already so fierce, what will happen once they form a grand array formation!?"

After forming the great array formation, even if it was the most basic variety, their striking power would at least double. Much less, one didn't need to be a genius to know that the stone tablets of the Divine Altar's 33rd step symbolized the might of heavenly tribulation. Just how high did the Laws of heavenly tribulation exist at? Could the average person even begin to understand them?

A great array formation naturally formed by the Heavenly Dao Laws would have an incomparable degree of exquisiteness and strength. If these 33 Dao tablets shot down like this, their might would reach ridiculously terrifying levels!

"Lin Ming's luck is too bad. He wasn't able to crush a Dao tablet at the start, much less now that they have formed an array formation. If he has an accident during this Dao tablet tribulation then even his life might be in danger!"

"This grand array formation contains infinite mysteries and secrets. I suspect that even a middle Divine Lord powerhouse wouldn't be able to live through it!"

An old man with a half-step World King cultivation said. This old man was an array formation grandmaster. As an array master, he was well aware of just how terrifying this 33 Dao tablet array formation was!

"What? Isn't that just too exaggerated!? Then who could ever mount the Divine Seal Altar!?"

Just what sort of concept was a middle Divine Lord powerhouse? No matter how heaven-defying Lin Ming was, he was still only an early Divine Sea martial artist. In terms of strength, he could battle a late Divine Transformation powerhouse. But, if he were to run into a Divine Lord martial artist he would absolutely lose.

Now, facing these 33 Dao tablets that not even a Divine Lord powerhouse could resist, the pressure could be imagined. It was an attack that absolutely could not be blocked.

This level of difficulty had surpassed the boundary of the Divine Sea.

“Won’t Senior Xiao Daochild stop the competition!?”

“Yah! Senior-apprentice Brother Lin is already in the top two of the semifinals. There is no longer the need for him to take any more risks!”

The Ancient Phoenix Clan disciples were all worried. Even Huo Violentstone had sweat dripping down his forehead as he steadily looked on at the Divine Seal Altar.

Qin Xingxuan’s complexion was pale, and her beautiful apricot eyes were filled with tears.

Huo Violentstone clenched his teeth, saying, “This is no longer a question of ranking. Lin Ming wants to withstand this heavenly tribulation and challenge his limits on the Divine Seal Altar!”

Huo Violentstone could feel Lin Ming’s blazing fighting spirit. It was impossible to stop him. He could only hope that Xiao Daochild would protect Lin Ming at the end.

At this time, even the usually calm and leisurely Xiao Daochild was panicking. If Lin Ming truly chose to collide with these Dao tablets, then the eruption of energy in that moment might directly kill Lin Ming. Even if Xiao Daochild were to act then, even if he were to temporarily stop time, he still wouldn’t make it!

But he still couldn’t end the competition early and save Lin Ming just because he was worried. Thus, he had no choice but to call upon the artifact spirit of the Divine Seal Altar. Otherwise, if an unrivalled genius like Lin Ming were to die here, let alone his Vast Universe Heavenly Palace becoming a joke, that would be an unbelievably great loss to the Divine Realm’s martial world.

That was a charge that Xiao Daochild could not carry.

"Don't move – leave everything to me!"

The Divine Seal Altar's artifact spirit replied. At this time, the gray-clothed old man's concentration and eyes were completely honed in on Lin Ming, on guard against all dangers in this grave situation.

The heavenly tribulation atop the Divine Seal Altar could not be controlled. This was the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens inherently contained within the Divine Seal Altar. If one wished to conquer the Divine Seal Altar and mount the top, they naturally had to withstand this heavenly tribulation.

In Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Empyrean Vast Universe chuckled as he saw Xiao Daochild and the gray-clothed old man on full alert. "This 80,000 foot Dao tablet suppression slaughter has even Old Seal and Xiao Daochild frantically dancing around nervously. They are prepared to act at any given moment. Fine. Then I'll just sit back and enjoy the show, and see just what methods this Lin Ming has."

After mistakenly speaking several times, Empyrean Vast Universe no longer casually speculated about Lin Ming. It was best to leave an exit for himself, otherwise he would lose all face.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The 33 Dao tablets revolved, pressing down on Lin Ming like a massive spinning grinding pan.

Three Dao tablets served as the array heart, nine Dao tablets spun around them, and 21 more Dao tablets served as the outer ring!

As Lin Ming saw these Dao tablets rush towards him, he could faintly feel that this Dao tablet array formation was the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens. At the same time, he knew that it was impossible for him to forcefully resist this array formation. If it were to strike him, he would die a miserable death!

“The central three Dao tablets have different Laws: they are the representatives of essence, energy, and divine. They symbolize body transformation, essence gathering, and soul forging, three different cultivation systems!

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a sharp light. It was impossible for him to comprehend the entire Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens, but, he had crossed a 33 Layered Heavens Ninefall with essence, energy, and soul cultivation! In the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens, those three central Dao tablets were the ones he could break!

And those three Dao tablets were the core of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens!

“Then… I’ll bet everything on this!”

At that moment, Lin Ming used his complete strength.

Body transformation system – he opened all seven of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, revolving the power of the supreme dragon bone!

Essence gathering system – the Heretical God Force erupted, the blood of the Ancient Phoenix combusted!

Soul forging system – All of the divine dream energy that Lin Ming absorbed in the Divine Dream World, as well as his perfect gold grandmist battle spirit, was completely poured into his soul!

In this moment, Lin Ming had reached an unprecedented level of power!

Three essences assembled together! Essence, energy, and divine, gathered as one!

The Phoenix Blood Spear suddenly swung out. The spear light aimed at the center of the 33 Layered Heavens Dao tablet array formation, hurtling towards it!

In that instant, this blinding beam of light became the only color between the heavens and earth. That unstoppable spear light pierced through the 33 Layered Heavens array formation!

Bang!

Lin Ming felt his arm shake and the web of his palm crack open. The Phoenix Blood Spear violently trembled. The Law runes and divine dream marks that were buried within Lin Ming's flesh and blood, buried within his inner world, carved onto his bones and into his soul, began to release a dazzling brilliance!

This brilliance began to shine together with the Laws on the three Dao tablets. This was because the Law runes on those Dao tablets came from the same source as the Law runes buried within Lin Ming's body!

Ka ka ka!

In this incandescent divine light, massive golden cracks appeared on the three Dao tablets that served as the core; they were soon about to shatter!

"Broken!?"

"What?! The Heavenly Dao tablets are about to break!"

Amidst the cries of alarm, the three core Dao tablets of the 33 Layered Heavens array formation loudly burst apart, turning into countless Law fragments that scattered in the world!

The moment those three Dao tablets shattered, the 33 Layered Heavens array formation was also broken. The other 30 Dao tablets dimmed down, losing their luster before exploding.

A terrifying wave of energy erupted outwards. In the end, Lin Ming had only destroyed the three central Dao tablets. Although they served as the core and the eye of the array formation, the other 30 Dao tablets could not be underestimated. With the energy system having collapsed, a savage and brutal energy shock wave swept out towards Lin Ming!

Peng!

Lin Ming's protective true essence shattered and a terrifying energy dove into his body; he had to resist this with his mortal body alone!

For a time, Lin Ming's skin ruptured all over, blood covering his entire body!

He had been seriously wounded. Even if Lin Ming cultivated essence, energy, and divine, and had gathered three essences in that final moment to block the energy shockwaves, he had still been severely injured.

However, at this moment, what the billions of people spectating cared about was not Lin Ming's serious wounds, but the fact that a 33 Layered Heavens array formation that even a Divine Lord powerhouse couldn't resist was actually broken by him!

How was this possible!?

The audience went crazy!!

"Could Lin Ming's strength actually have reached the boundary of a middle or late Divine Lord powerhouse? For an early Divine Sea youth to battle a middle or late Divine Lord powerhouse, that is an accomplishment that would even throw away young Empyreans by 108,000 miles!"

"That... cannot be, that is impossible! No one can ignore two large boundaries of the Divine Transformation and Divine Lord realms to defeat their opponent! This is something that already surpasses the Heavenly Dao Laws. Lin Ming absolutely cannot have the strength of a Divine Lord powerhouse! My guess is that in the moment that Dao tablet array formation was about to strike him, he managed to perceive the mysteries of that array formation and then broke through it. With his knowledge, he used a clever method and broke past the enemy lines!"

"Ignorant little child, what do you know!?" As the array formation grandmaster heard these young elites discussing amongst themselves, he was stirred into a raging anger. "Break apart that Dao tablet array formation? Do you know how many mysteries or countless Law runes were contained with that array formation? I have simply never seen anything on that level before! If one wished to perceive its mysteries, let alone the likes of me, even a Great World King array master might not understand it if they spent a great deal of time! Do you think that Lin Ming actually comprehended it!?”

Speaking of array formations, many array formation grandmasters were incomparably excited and frazzled. Just now, they couldn’t even understand a little bit of that array formation. If Lin Ming were able to comprehend and break through it in such a short period of time, then what meaning was there for them to keep on living?

Chapter 1264 – Absorbing the Law Runes

Chapter 1264 – Absorbing the Law Runes

…

…

…

The spectators were all furiously arguing with each other. Most of them thought that it was impossible for Lin Ming's strength to reach the Divine Lord realm and that he must have comprehended the mysteries behind the Dao tablet array formation and then broken through using some trick.

But there was a small group, mainly comprised of array masters, that refused to acknowledge the possibility that Lin Ming had broken through that array formation. As for how Lin Ming had passed this test, they didn't know, they only knew that it was impossible for him to break past that array formation.

How old was Lin Ming? How high was his cultivation? Even these professional array masters could not instantly find the method to break through that unfathomable array formation. To think that was simply an insult to their life's profession.

Even in their dreams they would never have imagined that of the Law runes engraved onto those 33 Dao tablets, a considerable part of them resonated with Lin Ming's 33 Layered Heavens Ninefall. The Heavenly Dao Laws had already buried themselves in Lin Ming's flesh, blood, and marrow, becoming a part of his being.

"Lin Ming seems like he's… heavily wounded!"

As everyone was arguing with each other, some people noticed Lin Ming's current condition.

He was indeed heavily injured.

The bone of his right arm had fractured and it was now hanging uselessly by his side. His entire body was bathed in blood and there was not an unmarred area on him. He had also consumed a great deal of his true essence.

Lin Ming was now relying on just his left hand to grab onto the stone cliff of the Divine Seal Altar. He slowly breathed in and out, catching his breath.

But, on the Divine Seal Altar, a powerful Empyrean pressure enveloped the entire area, and the chaotic power of divinity could attack from anywhere at any time; wanting to rest in this situation was easier said than done.

Lin Ming took a deep breath, circulating the power of the supreme dragon bone. His right arm emitted light crackling sounds as it adjusted and began joining back together.

This was a terrifying regenerative ability! Even those that had seen it before were still startled.

But, the wounds this time were different from ordinary wounds. These were wounds created by the Heavenly Dao. No matter how amazing Lin Ming's life force was, it was still impossible for him to recover in a short period of time.

Lin Ming waved his hand, causing heaven and earth origin energy to surge. The torn clothes hanging off of him instantly changed. Lin Ming's clothes were basically formed from energy right now, it was much more convenient.

Wearing snow-white clothes, Lin Ming lightly flicked his finger and took out a pill from his spatial ring, swallowing it.

"Lin Ming took a pill!"

"Is this his first time taking a pill?"

“Yes, this is the first time. This monstrous genius has persisted all the way until now before he finally took his first pill. It’s really unimaginable just what sort of strength he has.”

“That’s good. At least we know this boy is still human. He actually has a point when he can’t keep going and has to take a pill.”

Some young disciples joked around. That previous scene of Lin Ming breaking through the Dao tablet tribulation was far too shocking; he didn’t seem human at all.

After eating the pill, Lin Ming felt some trouble in suppressing the injuries within his body. Even the process of revolving his true essence had been affected.

“There is a trace of ill toxins, but it’s within a bearable range.”

Lin Ming thought to himself. It wasn’t forbidden to take pills on the Divine Seal Altar, but although taking pills could restore one’s strength and cure wounds, it would actually bring with it pill toxins. If a martial artist relied on pills to restore themselves, they wouldn’t be able to return to their peak condition.

“The Law attacks of the 33 Layered Heavens are truly unusual; the wounds left in my body are extremely difficult to heal.”

Lin Ming faintly frowned. Climbing to the summit of the Divine Seal Altar was something he might not be able to accomplish even in his peak state. If he was injured then it would be even more difficult.

“Mm? This is…” Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred and he suddenly looked around him.

After he defeated the 33 Dao tablets, the Dao tablets had shattered into countless Law runes. Now, these Law runes were all floating around Lin Ming.

Each and every one of the multi-hued Law runes was incomparably mysterious. These were treasures of the Heavenly Dao that had long been cut off from the Divine Realm. They lightly resonated with the Law runes hidden deep within Lin Ming's body.

"These are Law fragments of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens. These will be greatly beneficial to me."

Lin Ming suddenly thought. At the same time, he simultaneously revolved the power of essence, energy, and divine. The scattered power of divinity around Lin Ming began to move, forming a vortex around him.

As for those Law fragments, they were caught in this vortex. They slowly fluttered towards Lin Ming where he greedily absorbed them all!

After these Law fragments entered Lin Ming's body, they branded themselves onto his flesh and blood, marking his organs and bones. They even entered Lin Ming's inner world, becoming world runes, or penetrated into Lin Ming's soul, becoming soul marks.

A massive amount of Law fragments began to resonate and corroborate with the Laws already existing in Lin Ming's body. In that instant, he obtained a great deal of comprehensions. The Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens became much clear, and the path of essence, energy, and divine cultivation became that much clearer!

"Lin Ming absorbed the Law fragments!"

"This... he can even absorb the Law fragments of the 33 Layered Heavens?"

As this scene fell into everyone's eyes, all of them were dumbfounded, especially Dragon Fang. He had climbed up to the same height as Lin Ming and had personally experienced the explosive killing strike of those 33 Dao tablets. Thus, he was extremely clear about how strange these Laws were. Even though Dragon Fang possessed the Three Lives Pupils and could clearly see the circulatory path of the Laws, he still couldn't break through them.

Wanting to absorb them was impossible.

“How did Lin Ming accomplish this?” Dragon Fang couldn’t understand just what was happening. In the aspect of Laws, with the Three Lives Pupils, he was able to look down at all his peers. But now, in terms of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens, he was actually utterly inferior to Lin Ming.

After the 33 Dao tablets exploded, those Law runes had scattered everywhere like an endlessly sparkling cloud of stars. Lin Ming created a vortex of the power of divinity, using a full hour to fully absorb all of these Law fragments!

Although no one knew just how Lin Ming did what he did, what they could confirm was that he had just gained inestimable benefits!

Even if those advantages couldn’t immediately be converted to combat strength, it would be greatly useful to his future growth!

Normally, when a genius climbed up the 33 steps of the Divine Seal Altar, they had to withstand layers upon layers of trials and tribulations, endless suffering and torment. But when Lin Ming climbed up the Divine Seal Altar, he was actually gaining great benefits again and again. This caused everyone to feel a deep sense of envy.

A true genius was always growing. The so-called specter of destiny was that when all conditions were the same, those things that others couldn’t use could actually be used by the destiny-blessed. Those things that couldn’t be obtained by others could actually be obtained. When others died in the dangers of mystic realms, a true genius gifted by destiny would be able to overcome all obstacles, using their methods to turn danger into glory. They would be able to escape to the heavens and even capture treasures in return.

This was destiny. It was a fundamentally different concept from luck.

After absorbing the numerous Law fragments, Lin Ming felt the wounds in his body slightly restore themselves. Still, his body was in a bad condition and his true essence was only at 70% of its peak. Without two or three days of peaceful rest, it would be extremely difficult to recover.

"Kuh!"

Lin Ming coughed out a mouthful of blood. The white clothes he transformed from energy were dyed a bright red, brilliant and dazzling!

Lin Ming's wounds were indeed heavy. However, he simply wiped the blood from his mouth and continued forwards!

Everyone could see that Lin Ming was already heavily wounded and his body was still wet with blood. That combusting inferno of blood vitality that reached into the heavens had also weakened a great deal by now. If he wanted to truly reach the top of the Divine Seal Altar's 33rd step, that might be impossibly difficult. Even so, Lin Ming didn't reveal the least bit of hesitation or thought of retreat. Instead, he marched forwards with daring courage and unstoppable momentum!

This spirit, this indomitable will, left everyone startled.

Even Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu, who had always been worried for Lin Ming, were cheering for him, hoping that he would climb up as high as he could.

"This brat, he actually cultivates essence, energy, and divine!" Empyrean Vast Universe sucked in a deep breath, no longer knowing what to say. When Lin Ming broke through the array formation, he had clearly seen the entire process. Others might not recognize the gathering of three essences, but how could Empyrean Vast Universe not see it? "There's no need to speak of the essence gathering system and body transformation system, but where did he learn the Divine Dream Law? Isn't the Divine Dream Law something that only those from your Divine Dream Heavenly Palace know of?"

Empyrean Vast Universe looked towards Empyrean Divine Dream. Empyrean Divine Dream shook her head, "The world is broad and boundless. The Divine Dream Law might not be an inheritance that only my Divine Dream Heavenly Palace possesses. Currently, in the entire Divine Realm, only my Divine Dream Heavenly Palace has the Divine Dream Law, but in ancient times, who can be sure that no others thoroughly comprehended the soul forging system? If Lin Ming found the inheritance of some unrivalled powerhouse who cultivated the soul forging system, then it wouldn't be strange if he understood the Divine Dream Law."

"But..." Empyrean Vast Universe frowned. Although Empyrean Divine Dream's suggestion was reasonable, it was still something hard to accept.

In Empyrean Vast Universe's view, if all this were true, then Lin Ming's destiny and talent were far too heaven-defying. First he had found the inheritance of Empyrean Primordius and had dual cultivated in body and energy, and then he also found the inheritance of an ancient soul forging supreme elder, finally learning to triple cultivate in essence, energy, and divine.

And not just that, but Lin Ming also came into contact with the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens somewhere.

Time slowly passed. At this point, Lin Ming had already spent a bit over half a day climbing up the last step of the Divine Seal Altar; that was around 12-14 hours.

Above the 80,000 foot height of the Divine Seal Altar, the sea of thunder had parted and dispersed. Now, there was only an increasingly chaotic power of divinity.

This power of divinity was wild and raging, recklessly washing over Lin Ming's body!

Of the power of divinity 80,000 feet high, while Lin Ming could absorb a small part of it, a great deal still crashed into his protective true essence. Sometimes it would even shatter his true essence with an explosive bang and leave behind a wound. Slowly, these wounds began to gather. The new clothes Lin Ming formed were torn apart once more.

As Lin Ming climbed up, his skin and flesh would crack apart. And then, underneath the powerful support of his restorative ability, it would regenerate once more, before splitting apart, regenerating, and continuing like this over and over again. It was unknown how many wounds Lin Ming received or how much blood he lost, but every time he changed his clothes they would be immediately stained with blood!

Everyone even suspected that Lin Ming's blood was soon about to dry up. It was hard to imagine how much he was suffering.

In this state, Lin Ming still climbed up one step at a time. He finally reached 90,000 feet high!

Because Lin Ming was constantly stimulating his true essence to support his protective true essence and also to activate the dragon bone to ceaselessly regenerate his body, he only had 60% of his true essence left.

At this time, changes appeared around Lin Ming once more!

A surging power of divinity roared into the skies. As the streams of the power of divinity struck each other, they gathered together, condensing and forming faint phantoms of powerhouses. These phantoms had fuzzy facial features and they were as tall as an ordinary person. They each held different weapons in their hands. These were actually life forms created by energy.

"It's here again..." Lin Ming took a deep breath, steadying himself. His current state was very poor!

The audience also noticed this. Lin Ming was approaching his limit. With only 60% of his true essence left, the combat strength he could display was limited. A person's power was not limitless after all. Could Lin Ming pass this trial?

Chapter 1265 – Tribulation of Essence, Energy, Divine

Chapter 1265 – Tribulation of Essence, Energy, Divine

…

….

…

At 80,000 feet, Lin Ming had been able to create a miracle. But now, he had exhausted a great deal of his strength and was no longer able to display the same power as before. If he wanted to continue past this, that might be far too difficult.

Everyone looked at Lin Ming; this might be his last battle. But, for an early Divine Sea martial artist to reach 90,000 feet, that was already an accomplishment great enough to be recorded in the annals of history.

The power of divinity in the sky constantly gathered, forming new phantoms, for a total of 33 figures!

These 33 life forms formed by power of divinity were the great tribulation of 90,000 feet!

Lin Ming swept his eyes over all these phantoms and discovered that every single one of them was releasing a different aura. Among them, Lin Ming could sense the core three people released a distinct aura completely similar to essence gathering, body transformation, and soul forging.

The essence gathering phantom martial artist had an early Divine Transformation cultivation.

The body transformation phantom martial artist had already opened the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

As for the final soul forging phantom martial artist, Lin Ming couldn't see just what boundary he had reached.

These phantoms all practiced a single type of cultivation system, for a total of 33 people!

"These are all geniuses formed by the Heavenly Dao. I have to defeat all 33 of them?"

Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear. If he wanted to deal with all 33 phantoms, the difficulty could be imagined!

"The Divine Seal Altar is truly abnormally difficult!"

"It's normal if he loses here, and a miracle if he wins. Rather, it would be a miracle of miracles."

As everyone was speaking, there was a loud explosive sound as a deep killing intent erupted, flooding out like a vast ocean, sweeping through the world!

From the three core figures of those 33 phantoms, a phantom holding a golden scepter rushed towards Lin Ming. This phantom was tall and sturdy. Although it was nothing more than an energy phantom, Lin Ming could still feel its crazy blood vitality, shooting straight into the stars!

This was a body transformation system master. It had already connected the threshold of life and death and had opened all Eight Inner Hidden Gates. The next step would have been the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. A vast sea of energy poured into that golden scepter, causing it to release a brilliant radiance like a rising sun, as if it would sanctify the world!

"This is astral essence!?"

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. According to the ancient texts that Mo Eversnow had translated from the incomplete bone shard he had bought before, astral essence was the energy used in the body transformation system. It corresponded to true essence in the essence gathering system and spirit essence in the soul forging system.

"Astral essence… then let me see just what sort of power there is after cultivating it!"

Lin Ming collided with the golden phantom. He was no longer in his best state and could not hold back any strength; he had to give his everything from the start and take initiative in battle. He needed to kill several of these phantoms or he would definitely lose soon after.

Heretical God Force!

Eight Inner Hidden Gates!

Divine dream marks!

Lin Ming immediately summoned all three systems of essence, energy, and divine, bringing them to their peak!

Three essences gathered as one!

A spear shot out, bringing together the crazy and wild power of divinity in the surroundings and containing the invincible might of the Heavenly Dao. The current Lin Ming, by relying on his understandings of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens, and in addition to the numerous Law runes he had absorbed, was able to control the power of divinity to a certain degree.

The Phoenix Blood Spear struck the golden scepter!

The expected collision did not happen. Instead, that golden phantom crashed into Lin Ming's body and exploded!

A brilliant light swallowed up the entire area. Underneath this blazing golden light, Lin Ming's body burned, his entire body bathed in blood.

“These are not true martial artists, but forms created by heavenly tribulation. I am not meant to battle them – I can only withstand the impact of their energy!”

Originally, Lin Ming thought that he would have to fight against these phantom martial artists. But, he never thought he would have to bear the brunt of their impact just like thunder tribulation.

Only now, these phantom martial artists formed from the power of divinity and condensed Laws were many times more powerful than the previous thunder tribulation!

Hu – !

Lin Ming felt his own blood sizzling, his flesh cracking apart as his skin was scorched black. Even his organs were tumbling around underneath this violent attack. That golden phantom had been an amalgamation of the body transformation Laws, thus its attack was a tribulation of the body!

The phantom that held the golden scepter had made a connection between the threshold of life and death, and had opened the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates. Its attainments in body transformation were much higher than Lin Ming’s. If Lin Ming couldn’t withstand this attack then he would be burnt to smoke and ash. And even if he did withstand it, he would be too heavily injured. The following 32 tribulations would be impossible for him to cross.

At this moment, there was the resonant roar of a dragon. Behind Lin Ming, the phantom of an Azure Dragon appeared. All of his bones began to emit explosive popping sounds. His blood vitality soared to the heavens, immediately washing away all of that golden energy!

Although Lin Ming’s body transformation boundary was a level lower than the golden scepter phantom martial artist’s, he had still absorbed the supreme dragon bone. This had caused his body to take on attributes of a God Beast, just barely allowing him to cross this tribulation.

Puff!

Lin Ming coughed out a mouthful of blood. His body wavered as he kept himself up with his will.

Lin Ming had to climb up the Divine Seal Altar. He could already feel that this Divine Seal Altar was a great lucky chance. It was highly likely that the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens was a secret related to the peak of martial arts. If he couldn't take advantage of this opportunity laid out in front of him and expand his comprehension, then he might not have such a lucky chance in the future.

"He withstood it!"

"He's simply like a God Beast in human form, it's far too abnormal! If an ordinary martial artist had to withstand such a tribulation they would have died long ago!"

"It's too bizarre. Just then, the phantom of an Azure Dragon appeared behind him. I fear that his body has already fused with a portion of a God Beast's body! But, there are still 32 heavenly tribulations coming, and this is at 90,000 feet; just how will he continue onwards?"

And, on the side of the Ancient Phoenix Clan and Ancient Dragon Clan, as they saw that Azure Dragon phantom appear behind Lin Ming, they inevitably suspected that during the trip into the God Beast Mystic Realm, the missing supreme dragon bone had likely been obtained by Lin Ming!

"This boy, how did he do it?"

Huo Violentstone could not even begin to imagine what had happened. At that time, numerous geniuses had entered the God Beast Mystic Realm, and Lin Ming's strength had been on the weaker end of them. The Ancient Dragon Clan especially had sent out many disciples that were led by the previous Dragon One. Compared to the current Dragon One, the past Dragon One was at least two times more formidable. If Lin Ming had been placed in front of him at that time, there was no way he would have been able to run. So how could he have actually obtained the supreme dragon bone?

Huo Violentstone was puzzled, and the Ancient Dragon Clan could only stomach this grievance. Lin Ming was currently at the height of his glory. With his performance so far, not even a Great World King Holy Land would dare to move against him, much less their Ancient Dragon Clan. As for Dragon One's death, they couldn't be sure that event was related to Lin Ming. At that time, Lin Ming had simply been far too weak and he didn't possess the strength to kill Dragon One. It might have been that Dragon One died under the onslaught of the mystic realm demons.

Hanging onto the cliffs of the Divine Seal Altar, Lin Ming looked up. At this time he could see the second heavenly tribulation phantom rushing towards him!

This phantom had the vague shape of a woman. Its attack became a beautiful beam of purple light, surrounded by countless mysterious runes. This was a soul forging martial artist!

A Law phantom of the soul forging system – what it aimed at was the soul!

A divine light covered Lin Ming and his entire body was bathed in a purple brilliance. His entire divine soul was placed in this heavenly tribulation, undergoing a brutal baptism!

The pain of a burning soul was 100 times more intense than the rupturing of the body. Lin Ming paled as his pupils widened.

He felt as if his head would explode at any moment. The pain of his soul being torn and burnt was utterly agonizing!

"Grandmist battle spirit!"

Lin Ming shouted out. At this time, a dark golden stream of light shot out from between his eyebrows, piercing through the skies like a divine sword!

The purple sea of light was split in half by this divine sword!

As everyone saw this they were all incomparably shocked.

“That is… a perfect gold battle spirit!”

“Not only is it a perfect gold battle spirit, but it also possesses an extremely mysterious attribute!”

“Terrifying! This battle spirit is something that not even a Divine Lord realm powerhouse might have!”

“To use a sword of will to split apart that purple sea; just what kind of colossal power is that!?”

A battle spirit was the manifestation of a martial artist’s will. The moment that the grandmist spirit howled out, the second heavenly tribulation, the purple-clothed woman condensed from the Laws of the soul forging system, was defeated by Lin Ming.

Although Lin Ming’s head was in debilitating pain, his soul had safely crossed this tribulation.

But before he could catch his breath, the third phantom, the Divine Transformation realm martial artist that represented the essence gathering system came flying down!

This was a blue phantom. It carried a savage sword in its hand. As it hurtled towards Lin Ming, a wave of killing intent surged forth with it like a tide!

The third tribulation!

Bang!

The blue-clothed phantom broke into Lin Ming’s inner world!

A tribulation of the essence gathering system. If this had occurred to someone before the Divine Sea realm, this tribulation would have entered their dantian and shattered their revolving core.

But after reaching the Divine Sea, this tribulation would instead explode into a martial artist's inner world and cause the entire world to collapse!

Facing this great tribulation within his inner world, Lin Ming revolved his true essence to the limit, flooding it all without reservation into the Heretical God Tree.

"Grow for me, Heretical God Tree!"

Even if Lin Ming's entire body was dripping with blood, his flesh and skin were cracked to pieces, and even his soul and divine sense had suffered a dangerous attack, he still didn't give up. Within his inner world, the Heretical God Tree that stabilized that world began to crazily grow. Countless branches and leaves extended outwards, welcoming the impact of this blue light!

Puff puff puff!

The blue light was completely wrapped up by the Heretical God Tree, and the branches of the Heretical God Tree were in turn broken by the incomparably sharp and violent energy. However, these broken branches did not wither away. Instead, they returned to the Heretical God Tree where they grew out once more!

Lin Ming's entire body was enveloped within the phantom of this divine tree. The energy within his body seemed like a vast ocean, endless and turbulent!

The blue energy was constantly swallowed up and melted away. Even though Lin Ming's ruined body no longer seemed human at all, the fires of life continued to blaze like an inferno.

Bang!

The blue light vanished; the third tribulation had been defeated by Lin Ming!

"He withstood it!"

“The Azure Dragon phantom, the perfect gold battle spirit with a strange attribute, and even that final divine tree phantom; each one of these phenomena represents a secret on Lin Ming’s body. Just how did he grow to this level!?”

“His body has fused with the body of God Beast, he has an incomparably formidable will, and he even has some incomprehensibly mysterious inheritance! With this all added up, it’s completely within reason for him to climb up 90,000 feet!”

“This is a genius of the Divine Realm encountered only once every million years. He has a high chance of becoming an Empyrean in the future!”

Many high level figures were discussing this in the reserved seats. Lin Ming wasn’t like Dragon Fang, suddenly exposing a certain aspect of his talent and shocking the world.

Instead, as time passed, he slowly exposed various aspects of his ability. His talent left everyone bewildered. With these factors added up together, his potential now even surpassed Dragon Fang’s!

Chapter 1266 – Middle Divine Sea Realm

Chapter 1266 – Middle Divine Sea Realm

…

…

…

After Lin Ming withstood these three heavenly tribulations, the remaining phantoms rushed towards him!

Nine phantoms, each one condensed from the Laws!

If these phantoms were alone, then each one would be inferior to those three phantoms from before. But with nine of them added together, their strength was three times greater than the three phantoms from before. The tribulation that Lin Ming would have to withstand was far more terrifying.

The Heretical God Tree crazily grew. The Azure Dragon roared out into the heavens. The sword of will formed from the grandmist battle spirit recklessly slashed out!

As each heavenly tribulation fell, Lin Ming's number of wounds increased. His body, his will, and his inner world far surpassed those of martial artists of the same level, but in the process of withstanding such an impact, even he felt as if he would collapse soon!

Xiao Daochild floating in the skies and the gray-clothed old man in the Divine Seal Altar were both on edge, prepared to save Lin Ming the moment he broke. However, although Lin Ming was teetering on the edges of his limit, he still struggled to fight.

Within Lin Ming's body, the powers of essence, energy, and divine constantly gathered. With each strike, unconsciously, the three energies actually had a faint trend of fusing together.

The Laws of the 33 Layered Heavens all evolved from the foundation of essence, energy, and divine; they were the basis.

As Lin Ming climbed up the Divine Seal Altar, he absorbed a massive amount of the power of divinity. And, the power of divinity he absorbed was the three energies fused together. Others couldn't use it, but Lin Ming actually could.

When Lin Ming had shattered the 33 Dao tablets and absorbed the Law fragments of the 33 Layered Heavens, at that time he also began to slowly fuse with the triple fused energy he had absorbed.

Body transformation runes fused into his flesh and blood.

Soul forging runes fused into his soul.

Essence gathering runes fused into his inner world.

The different Law runes he absorbed began to go to their respective domains. Even the Law runes he absorbed during Ninefall began to truly integrate into his body.

By absorbing the power of divinity, Law runes, and the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens, within the tattered Lin Ming, his body, soul, and inner world were being imperceptibly transformed!

This was a qualitative change that no one was able to detect.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The power of the nine heavenly tribulations gathered together, violently exploding!

In that instant, an endless divine light swallowed up the world, blinding everyone's eyes.

Lin Ming’s body was submerged within, a wisp of light in the blaze of the sun, instantly lost.

The earth trembled. Giant fissures appeared in the great mountains that held the audience, and even the void seemed to break down!

“Too terrifying!”

“Who can still live through such an explosion?”

The divine light persisted for 10 breaths of time before slowly fading away, and the Divine Seal Altar calmed down once again. Everyone frantically focused their eyes. At this time, Lin Ming’s situation was poor to the extreme.

Lin Ming’s body had originally been soaked with blood, but now even that wet blood had been cooked dry and his body was black and withered as if he had been burned on the pyre. There were many deep wounds on his body that exposed bone, and even those originally-shining white bones had been burnt black by the dazzling divine light.

Even Lin Ming’s soul had dimmed down and his life force seemed to have faded away.

“Lin Ming died?”

“Died?! That’s impossible!”

“That is utter nonsense. How could such an extraordinary genius die here in a competition? That would simply be the greatest joke of all time!”

No one could accept that. Lin Ming had created miracles again and again, and even if his strength was lacking, there was still Xiao Daochild here. so how could Lin Ming die?

“Lin Ming!”

Qin Xingxuan nearly fainted.

“Little Sister, don’t panic. Look at Senior Xiao Daochild, he still hasn’t moved!” Mu Qianyu was also extremely worried at this time and she was barely keeping calm. From time to time she would sweep her eyes over Xiao Daochild.

Although Xiao Daochild had an extremely dignified expression at this moment and he appeared to have almost moved several times, he finally didn’t take action.

This proved that the situation was still within his control and that Lin Ming was still living!

Time seemed to come to a standstill. Everyone that cared about Lin Ming felt their hearts jump into their throats. As for those that hated him, such as Nether Limitless and the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands, they all hoped Lin Ming would die here.

Ka ka ka!

With a crisp snapping sound, cracks began to appear all over Lin Ming’s body. The coal-like skin and flesh fell down, revealing a new layer of jade-like crystal clear flesh.

Lin Ming’s eyes snapped open. In that moment, the entire universe seemed to be reflected his dark bright pupils and his gaze seemed to pierce through the veil of the world as if he could see through all Laws!

Lin Ming was alive!

“Lin Ming!”

Qin Xingxuan’s eyes were wet with tears.

“This damned brat, does he want to scare me to death!?” Huo Violentstone shouted out, finally relaxing. In fact, just a moment ago, he had felt that Lin Ming’s life force had hidden deep within his body as if it were experiencing some hibernating state, going through some sort of transformation. But now that Lin Ming was truly awake, Huo Violentstone was relieved.

“He didn’t die even after nine levels of heavenly tribulation exploded on him?”

“Forget about him dying, haven’t you discovered that his flesh and blood, and even his bones and hair have received an all new life? How is that even possible!?”

A human’s regenerative ability was limited. Even if a body transformation martial artist reached an extremely high boundary and the power of their blood energy was incomparably formidable, it was still impossible for them to instantly restore their wounds.

For someone like Lin Ming, who had such heavy wounds, no matter how strong his restorative abilities were, it would still take a day or two to fully heal. Moreover, in the recovery process he would have to consume a great deal of precious medicinal herbs and a massive amount of energy. The current situation in front of them had gone beyond any sort of common sense.

“That’s right! How could he obtain new life? It’s like his body was reforged.”

“This sort of situation would only appear if he swallowed up a transcendent divine might!”

Everyone felt this was unbelievable. But at this time, some people discovered something different about Lin Ming. As for how he was different, they actually couldn’t say.

“Lin Ming’s aura has changed! What is going on here?”

“He… he broke through to the middle Divine Sea realm!”

“Mm? Middle Divine Sea realm!?”

Everyone swept their senses through Lin Ming’s inner world, and to their shock they discovered that he had reached the middle Divine Sea realm. The middle Divine Sea realm, the same as Dragon Fang! The difference was that Dragon Fang was at the peak of the middle Divine Sea realm and Lin Ming had just entered it. But, with Lin Ming’s foundation, he would rapidly consolidate his cultivation; it wouldn't be long before he also reached the peak of the middle Divine Sea realm.

If it was said that Lin Ming had suffered a great disadvantage during the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting because of his cultivation, then now he had made up a great part of that disparity!

Even the Empyrean descendant, Xiao Moxian, was also at the middle Divine Sea realm.

The moment that those nine heavenly tribulations had crashed down, all of the Law fragments within Lin Ming completely fused into his body. The Heretical God Tree absorbed a great deal of energy and also helped to expand Lin Ming's inner world. In addition to all his previous accumulations, he had successfully stepped into the middle Divine Sea realm.

However, what people didn't know was that the benefits Lin Ming had obtained just now weren't simply limited to just entering the middle Divine Sea realm!

In that baptism of heavenly tribulation, the three energies of essence, energy, and divine within Lin Ming's body had begun to faintly fuse together. After the Law runes buried themselves into his soul, body, and inner world, Lin Ming's aura and physique were completely different from how they were before.

If Lin Ming had only been aware of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens before, then now he had truly stepped through the great gates of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens!

Lin Ming's current aura, if described with mortal words, was the aura of a god. However, this was still extremely light, nearly completely negligible.

It was impossible for the audience, who didn't understand the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens, to understand all that had just happened.

Even the Divine Seal Altar's artifact spirit couldn't see through all this. After all, the gray-clothed old man was formed from a soul fragment of a God Beast and a fragment of the true ancient Divine Seal Altar artifact spirit. It was not the complete ancient Divine Seal Altar artifact spirit, thus there were great inherent flaws and missing sections in its understanding of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens.

If Lin Ming were to display all of his secrets in front of the gray-clothed old man, then he could naturally detect all of this. But, Lin Ming certainly wouldn't do something like that.

"Lin Ming made a breakthrough at the most critical moment!"

"Now Lin Ming and Dragon Fang have the same cultivation!"

"He really might climb past 90,000 feet! That is too terrifying!"

Of the 33 heavenly tribulations of 90,000 feet, first time would come three, second time would come nine, and third time would come all remaining 21.

These 21 heavenly tribulation phantoms spread out around Lin Ming, rushing towards him together!

Space shook, the overwhelming momentum was awe-inspiring. Even from a great distance away, the audience could still feel the terrifying strength contained within this attack.

The nine heavenly tribulations were already so formidable, but now it was 21 of them together!

Everyone kept their eyes glues onto Lin Ming. Lin Ming had just made a breakthrough in his cultivation, like a phoenix rebirthing through the flames of nirvana. At the precipice of death, he had found the path to survival!

In this situation, Lin Ming was undoubtedly even more formidable.

Now, all of them wanted to see just how strong Lin Ming had become. They wanted to see with their own eyes how Lin Ming would withstand these final 21 heavenly tribulations!

“It’s here… this Divine Seal Altar is really my lucky chance. When I crossed a 33 Layered Heavens Ninefall, that corresponded to the Laws of the 33 Layered Heavens.”

Facing the bombardment of these 21 heavenly tribulations, Lin Ming did not wield his spear. Instead, he pushed the three energies within his body to the limit, directly withstanding the impact of these 21 heavenly tribulation phantoms!

“Good heavens! He’s forcefully resisting it!”

“There’s no other way to do it. Although these phantoms are in the shape of human martial artists, after they make their attack they completely dissipate into explosive energies. These attacks cannot be blocked!”

Energy swept out; a divine light lit up the heavens.

21 heavenly tribulations completely crashed into Lin Ming, rumbling into his body!

His soul, body, and inner world were forced to withstand a baptism of heavenly tribulation once more. Of essence, energy, and divine, there were seven heavenly tribulations aimed at each!

Despite Lin Ming having broken through into the middle Divine Sea, becoming much stronger, it was not easy for him to withstand this heavenly tribulation at all.

Behind Lin Ming, the phantom of the Azure Dragon and Heretical God Tree appeared once more. The sword of will came slashing down.

The intense battle continued for several dozen breaths of time. Finally, the divine light gradually dissipated and the world was restored to serenity.

Lin Ming’s crystal clear reformed flesh was ruined once more and his entire body was again stained with blood. Even though almost all of his bones were broken, he was still brightly smiling.

He had finally crossed the great tribulation of 90,000 feet!

Originally he was doomed to be defeated. But at the most critical moment he had made a breakthrough in his cultivation and stepped into the middle Divine Sea realm. Through this tribulation, not only did that happen, but Lin Ming also obtained other great benefits. Through a baptism of heavenly tribulation, the three energies within his body began to fuse together.

During the semifinals on the Divine Seal Altar, although the lucky chance Lin Ming found here was inferior to him crossing his 33 Layered Heavens Ninefall, the difference wasn't too great!

Chapter 1267 – The Final Stretch

Chapter 1267 – The Final Stretch

…

…

…

"He finally crossed 90,00 feet!"

"He's truly unstoppable. Lin Ming might really mount the summit!"

At this time, if Lin Ming could truly reach the summit, then although many people would be shocked, they would no longer be surprised. Lin Ming hadn't yet broken through the middle Divine Sea realm when he passed the tribulation at 80,000 feet. But now that he had also made a breakthrough in his cultivation and broke through 90,000 feet, it wouldn't be strange for him to reach the top.

"I have no idea. Who can say what will happen after 90,000 feet?"

"All legends will be broken by him. Although this is only a possibility, what follows now will be recorded down in history."

At this time, the atmosphere in the martial field was extremely heated. Many people were wildly discussing amongst themselves.

The Ancient Phoenix Clan's disciples were all zealously excited. They never imagined that there would be a day that someone from their clan would break apart the myths left behind by an Empyrean Heavenly Palace.

On the Divine Seal Altar, Lin Ming was actually deaf to the waves of cheers erupting around him like an endless tide. He hung onto the jagged stone cliffs 90,000 feet high and slowly adjusted his breathing.

One of his arms gently swayed by his side. With a light crackling sound, his arm that had been shattered by heavenly tribulation slowly restored itself to its original state.

His body also slowly regenerated. Now, Lin Ming's wounds weren't considered too heavy. After several more quarter hours he would be able to restore himself to a reasonable state.

"After experiencing this heavenly tribulation, my battle spirit is nearing the blue soul boundary. After my mortal body was baptized, even if my body didn't have the supreme dragon bone or phoenix blood, my martial talent would still far surpass an ordinary genius'! Moreover, my body's defensive power has also risen to another level."

Lin Ming examined his entire body. The benefits in climbing the Divine Seal Altar were reflected in every aspect of Lin Ming. To others, climbing the Divine Seal Altar was a grueling and miserable trial, filled with pain and suffering. But Lin Ming was verifying the Laws gained during his Ninefall. To him, this entire journey was an extreme lucky chance.

Now, his only goal was to reach the top! To climb up without hesitating, putting forth the final dregs of his strength and reaching the peak of the 33rd step!

It was said that if one climbed the ancient Divine Seal Altar, they would be able to take a step into divinity. That was by no means empty talk. By reaching the summit, the triple baptism would bring immeasurable benefits to one's soul, body, and inner world, helping to fuse together that person's essence, energy, and divine.

Lin Ming's current foundation was too shallow. Even if the true ancient Divine Seal Altar were placed right in front of him, he would not be able to climb up it at the level he was at now.

As for this replica Divine Seal Altar, it was far simpler. It had a wisp of the true Divine Seal Altar's Concepts. This replica was one that completely suited him. How could he not grasp this opportunity laid out before him?

Step by step, trudging forwards, constantly climbing up, Lin Ming's path was steady and solid!

After 90,000 feet, there was no longer heavenly tribulation, nor was there the power of divinity. All that was here was a strange and phantasmal kind of power.

As Lin Ming climbed up, he felt as if he had been isolated from the world where he had entered a completely different time-space.

In this space, the entire area was flooded with a strange energy. It was something Lin Ming had never felt before.

As Lin Ming climbed up here, he didn't feel any pressure at all. This caused him to feel extremely strange; by all reasoning, it should become more difficult the higher it was.

"Could it be that this strange space is only an illusion? Did I fall into the maze of an illusory enchantment?" Lin Ming suddenly thought this, but he immediately felt it was improbable.

From the start until now, the tests of the Divine Seal Altar had been permeated with the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens. A martial artist's essence, energy, and divine were the three aspects being tested.

As for something like an illusionary magic array, that was something a bit too unorthodox. It was too far off from the source Laws and shouldn't appear on the 33rd step.

As Lin Ming was thinking that all this was strange, the audience was also confused.

"Isn't Lin Ming climbing up a bit too easily? It doesn't look like he's having any troubles." A martial artist whispered.

“Don’t be an idiot. Whatever tribulation Lin Ming is experiencing is beyond our imaginations, it’s just that you can’t see it. If you were to stand at his height, you would instantly die a horrible death!”

“That’s right, you think it looks simple, but the dangers are inconceivable. And this is Lin Ming. If it were anyone else, they wouldn’t be able to stay there for a single breath of time.”

Many young disciples were rapidly discussing with each other, their words filled with awe and respect. When Lin Ming passed through the tribulations at 80,000 feet and 90,000 feet, it had filled many of these young disciples with admiration towards Lin Ming, taking him as their shining idol.

It was indeed easy for Lin Ming to win the hearts and minds of these young martial artists. This was because Lin Ming’s background was the most ordinary out of all these geniuses; he didn’t even come from a World King Holy Land. In terms of potential, he completely outclassed all Empyrean descendants of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace for the last 2 million years. He was truly an inspiration to everyone present.

As these young Linmaniacs stared at Lin Ming, they knew that even if their own background wasn’t the best, there was still the opportunity that they could one day stand on the highest stage of the Divine Realm and become a peak master. Lin Ming was the prime example of this.

“What is at the final 10,000 feet of the Divine Seal Altar?”

Some people asked from the reserved seating section. These high level figures were filled with curiosity towards the mysteries of the final 10,000 feet.

However, the Divine Seal Altar was mostly kept deep within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace and was only occasionally taken out for the First Martial Meeting. And even then, the highest the participants of the First Martial Meeting had ever climbed to was the 32nd step. Thus, no one knew just what lay within the final 10,000 feet, not even the World Kings present.

“I know a bit.” A dark-clothed old man suddenly said, attracting the eyes of everyone in the hall.

“Oh? Elder Zhou, you know?”

“Mm, I’m originally from Vast Universe World and also a disciple of the Wide Universe Holy Lands. Tens of thousands of years ago, my senior-apprentice brother was fortunately chosen to enter into Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. He was also given the chance to climb the Divine Seal Altar, and although he didn’t reach the 33rd step, he still has a good understanding of what happens in the last tens of thousands of feet of the Divine Seal Altar.”

In some great worlds that an Empyrean was located at, there would be some disciples of that world’s Great World King Holy Lands who would have a chance of being chosen to enter the Empyrean Heavenly Palace. Nether Limitless had these thoughts and hoped to enter Demondawn Heavenly Palace. But, after his miserable defeat on the Divine Seal Altar, it was unlikely he would have such a chance. Empyrean Demondawn was a powerful and ruthless Empyrean, and his standards for disciples entering Demondawn Heavenly Palace were much higher than Vast Universe Heavenly Palace’s.

The old man said, “In Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, there are indeed disciples that can climb up the last 10,000 feet. Of course, these disciples are all at the Divine Transformation realm and above. What they experience in the last 10,000 feet is different from person to person, and each one’s experiences are unique. According to what my senior-apprentice brother told me, there are two people that have experienced the same things.”

“Oh? There’s something like that?”

As everyone listened to the old man, their interest was immediately aroused.

“Empyrean Vast Universe may have created this Divine Seal Altar, but there are many situations of the Divine Seal Altar that have surpassed his control. Even Empyrean Vast Universe found this situation strange. He finally speculated that whatever events happen in the last 10,000 feet are dependent on a martial artist’s cultivation methods, lucky chances, experiences, foundation, physique, will, talent, bloodline, perception, and all sorts of other factors combined together, thus the reason why all sorts of unusual and unpredictable things can occur that are impossible to predict. These strange situations are sometimes even accompanied with the emergence of phenomena."

"Phenomenon!?" Everyone was startled. As long as a phenomenon was involved, it was truly something extraordinary.

"Yes. Moreover, the more potential and talent one has, and the more mysterious and powerful their cultivation methods are, then the more difficult it will be to predict just what will happen when that person climbs the last 10,000 feet of the Divine Seal Altar. Sometimes, there are monstrous geniuses with unprecedented talent who will climb up the Divine Seal Altar's final 10,000 feet and galvanize the appearance of phenomenon. When Vast Cosmos climbed up the Divine Seal Altar during the Divine Sea realm, he created a record at 70,000 feet. Later, at the Divine Transformation realm, he climbed up the final 10,000 feet of the Divine Seal Altar and caused the appearance of a phenomenon!"

"So that's how it is… the Divine Seal Altar is truly unfathomable!" Some people couldn't help but exclaim.

"Yes, it is something that follows the Laws of the world; it already far surpasses our understanding."

As everyone was speaking, Lin Ming had already climbed up 91,000 feet, but there still weren't any strange changes around him.

He was extremely cautious. Although there was barely any pressure on him, he still climbed up at a slow and steady speed.

He was well aware that some catastrophe would come sooner or later, and it wouldn't change whether he climbed slow or fast.

92,000 feet… 93,000 feet!

Gradually, he rose up with steady steps.

Finally, there was only 7,000 feet left. Once he reached the top of the Divine Seal Altar, that would be a baptism and rebirth of his life!

Suddenly, Lin Ming's mind shook. He could feel a terrifying will wash towards him like a roaring tide.

This will contained endless killing intent, tumbling around like a boiling tsunami!

"It's here? What is it!?"

Lin Ming was completely focused. This terrifying will became increasingly strong.

The entire sky was swallowed up by this sea of killing intent; even the world lost its color!

"This is..." Lin Ming's mind tightened. This killing intent was far too horrible. It was the most savage and otherworldly killing intent that Lin Ming had ever faced in his life, a completely incomprehensible aura.

In that moment, Lin Ming felt completely cut off from the world. Even the Divine Seal Altar around him vanished. He suddenly appeared in a vast and starry space, wide and limitless.

In the far off distance, Lin Ming could see a mass of figures flying towards him.

Lin Ming's eyesight was extremely sharp. Soon, he was able to see what it was. And when he saw just what was flying towards him, his eyes popped wide open.

"That is... heavens!!!!"

Lin Ming's heart rapidly beat and his pupils contracted.

That was a dragon, a True Dragon!

Not only was there a dragon, but also God Beasts of all kinds.

There was an Ice Phoenix, Fire Phoenix, and even a Dark Phoenix that Lin Ming had never heard about.

Other legendary creatures appeared. A Suan Ni, White Marsh, Kirin…

There were over 200 of these mythical creatures!

These God Beasts constantly grew larger as they came closer and closer. In Lin Ming's vision, they began as the size of a palm, then became the size of a person, the size of mountains and rivers, and finally several hundred miles large, thousands of miles large, tens of thousands of miles large, nearly as large as a small planet!

Standing on these God Beasts were groups of people. Or rather, it was more accurate to call them an army. They were all standing in orderly formations, wearing gleaming gold armor.

And in front of them were commanders.

On top of each God Beast, there was a commander as well as an army of tens of thousands.

The soldiers in this army all exuded an incomparably terrifying aura. Lin Ming was startled to discover that he was not the match of any single one of these soldiers.

"They are… Divine Lords? No… they are Holy Lords!"

Holy Lords as soldiers!? Several million Holy Lords!?

As Lin Ming clearly saw all of this, he was inexplicably shocked. Many of these soldiers had heads of white hair and their faces were wrinkled with age: they were obviously old. In Lin Ming's impression, these people were all top figures, masters of their sects, but now, they were all soldiers!

Lin Ming looked at these soldiers standing in front of him with incredulous eyes. As he faced them, it felt as if he were facing the entire universe. There was an indescribable sense of awe that washed over him.

“Empyrean!”

This thought immediately flashed through Lin Ming’s mind. Holy Lords as soldiers, and an Empyrean as the general!

What sort of army was this? He feared that this would require the total gathered strength of the Divine Realm to form. Just what matter could cause all of the masters in the Divine Realm to come out? Could it be…

The great calamity!?

Lin Ming’s mind immediately recalled the great world calamity that the Ancient Elysium Seal spoke of. For some time, he couldn’t say a word at all…

Chapter 1268 – Empyrean Phantom

Chapter 1268 – Empyrean Phantom

…

…

…

Was the ancient calamity a great war that swept through the entire Divine Realm?

This thought instantly passed through Lin Ming's mind. The scale of this war must have reached unimaginable proportions; even the Heavenly Dao Laws had been changed.

Just what sort of terrifying war was this, that it could even alter the Heavenly Dao Laws?

At this time, Lin Ming saw a massive purple gold divine altar appear in the void. A tall and dashing man stood atop this divine altar, wearing pure white robes.

His right hand grasped a golden scepter and his left hand grasped an ancient and solemn-looking seal. At this moment, standing atop this altar, he seemed to be the only existence in the world.

Standing alone, he faced the army comprised of over 200 Empyreans and several million Holy Lords.

"That is Empyrean Divine Seal?"

Lin Ming immediately thought.

Empyrean Divine Seal was the leader of the Divine Realm 3.6 billion years ago!

Although he was extremely far away, in the instant that Lin Ming saw Empyrean Divine Seal, his mind shook. Facing such an existence, it was like he was facing the universe and all the ancient stars within.

Afterwards, the terrifying pressure crashed down upon him like a waterfall. Endless killing intent poured past him. Caught within this pressure, Lin Ming felt like a leaf in the water, about to be swallowed up at any time.

"Is this an Empyrean will? The memories of the Divine Seal Altar?"

Lin Ming was panic-stricken. Without a doubt, he could now confirm that the ancient Divine Seal Altar was Empyrean Divine Seal's divine tool. And, the great seal in that Empyrean Divine Seal's hand was the Ancient Elysium Seal.

3.6 billion years ago, Empyrean Divine Seal had led the masters of the ancient Divine Realm to withstand the great tribulation. He stood atop the Divine Seal Altar, leading all the troops!

After the great tribulation passed, the ancient Divine Seal Altar went missing. In truth, it might have even been struck by some immeasurable force and been extremely damaged, otherwise it was impossible for Empyrean Vast Universe to have obtained a wisp of the ancient Divine Seal Altar's artifact spirit to refine the Divine Seal Altar replica.

As for the Ancient Elysium Seal, it was used by Empyrean Divine Seal to suppress some unknown existence. This suppression had continued for 3.6 billion years. It was hard to imagine just what was suppressed beneath the Ancient Elysium Seal that could survive for such a long time!

Lin Ming had all these suspicions but no time to ponder on them. The pressure atop the Divine Seal Altar was too terrifying. The surging pressure ruthlessly crashed into Lin Ming. His body, soul, and inner world all simultaneously withstood the baptism of this horrifying pressure.

His divine sense seemed as if it would tear apart and his inner world was on the verge of collapse. This was the pressure that Empyrean Divine Seal left behind in the past when he once stood atop the Divine Seal Altar.

This was a pressure created by the martial arts will and thoughts of hundreds of Empyreans and millions of Holy Lord and World King powerhouses, controlling all of existence!

Even though 3.6 billion years had passed, even though this was only a dream of a wisp from the ancient Divine Seal Altar's artifact spirit that Empyrean Divine Seal had created, Lin Ming still found this nearly impossible to withstand!

Under this pressure, Lin Ming's entire forehead was dripping with sweat and the veins on his arm bulged up like worms.

Within Empyrean Divine Seal's hand, that solemn and thick Ancient Elysium Seal slowly floated into the air. From that seal, 100,000 foot beams of silver radiance spread out, recklessly flying through the air. A divine might spread out, passing through the universe.

Millions of Divine Realm masters gathered, all of them solemn and grim. None of them made a single sound. Strong astral winds roared through the air, sweeping through everything. At this time, their thoughts gathered into a terrifying vortex, breaking through space itself!

Space and time collapsed, all living beings trembled!

Lin Ming struggled to continue onwards. Nearly all the blood vessels in his body were crushed but he still pressed forwards, a step at a time.

This was incomparably strenuous. Underneath this pressure, his will seemed as if it were being hammered down by a divine hammer.

“What is Lin Ming experiencing?”

“What is it? I can’t see!”

Many people discovered something strange with Lin Ming; it was apparent he was withstanding some great tribulation. In the tribulations of 70,000 feet, 80,000 feet, and 90,000 feet, they had been able to clearly see what was happening. But now, none of them were aware of just what Lin Ming was experiencing.

“In the final 10,000 feet of the Divine Seal Altar, everyone experiences something different. But since ancient times, there has never been a Divine Sea powerhouse that has managed to climb up this last 10,000 feet. It is hard to predict what Lin Ming could possibly be experiencing right now.”

“Although we can’t see, for it to be this hard for Lin Ming, it should be some sort of tribulation that we cannot hope to imagine!”

Let alone the ordinary spectators, even the high level figures in the reserved area, and even the World King Xiao Daochild himself didn’t know what Lin Ming was experiencing at this time.

Time seemed to slow down to a near standstill. Lin Ming saw a great war sweep across the heavens and earth. He saw countless trillions of lives perish. He saw ancient stars explode into nothing and worlds collapse to pieces. He saw phoenixes rise from nirvana, he saw the corpses of Azure Dragons litter the ground, and he even saw the blood of God Beasts form rivers of blood flowing to the ends of the world. Even Empyreans fell from the sky here. As for Holy Lords, their lives were as frail as dust, vanishing at every turn.

Such a scene was boundless, vigorous, bleak, tragic!

Although he was faintly aware of all these scenes, he couldn’t see it clearly happening. But, that terrifying killing intent, that gathered will, still attacked Lin Ming’s mind, nearly causing his divine sense to collapse!

“Grandmist battle spirit!”

Lin Ming shouted out loud. He displayed his grandmist battle spirit, using his sword of will to open a path in his mind!

The dark gold sword of will struck that sea of killing intent!

Peng!

As that normally unstoppable sword of will struck the sea of killing intent, Lin Ming felt his spiritual sea violently shake. A soul-tearing pain ripped through him. However, he didn’t give up. He endured this torturous pain, continuing to open a path outwards with his sword of will. Otherwise, underneath this pressure, it would be impossible for him to climb up.

Time slowly passed. A quarter hour, one hour, two hours, four hours…

Lin Ming forcefully relied on his solid unyielding will to crawl to 99,000 feet up the last step of the Divine Seal Altar!

At this time, his face was paper white and his entire body was soaked with sweat. He had overdrawn his true essence and his sword of will had dimmed to almost nothing at all. It was hard to imagine just what sort of tribulation he had experienced on his journey here.

Even though Lin Ming’s foundation was extremely deep, he had finally reached his limit. He was relying on his will alone to reach this far and continue struggling upwards.

His fingers were worn away, and he had bitten his lips so hard they were bleeding. Sweat blurred his eyes, and all sounds faded away from Lin Ming’s ears. He simply clenched his teeth, continuing forwards, unstoppable!

99,500 feet…

99,600 feet…

He would soon reach the top!

At this moment, the entire audience was roused into a frenzy.

"Is Lin Ming really going to reach the top!?"

"It's hard to say. At the final moment he might even experience an even more terrifying tribulation! Just like the tribulations at 70,000 feet, 80,000 feet, and 90,000 feet!"

"I have no idea just what a tribulation at 100,000 feet would be like. No one can tell whether or not Lin Ming can cross that."

Although no one knew just what Lin Ming had experienced, they could all see that he was relying on his dogged and stubborn will to climb up this far. He had already long surpassed his limits!

If he were to experience another tribulation at 100,000 feet, it would likely be even more terrifying than the one at 90,000 feet. For Lin Ming in his current state, it would be impossible for him to cross it.

At 90,000 feet, Lin Ming had relied on breaking through to the middle Divine Sea to create a miracle. Now, Lin Ming's only hope was to break through to the late Divine Sea realm, otherwise there was nothing left for him but defeat.

But after just breaking through to the middle Divine Sea realm, it was clearly impossible for him to break through to the late Divine Sea realm right after.

"99,900 feet!"

"This is the final stretch!"

Everyone held their breath.

And at this time, the heaven and earth origin energy around the Divine Seal Altar suddenly began to swell up in chaos. A terrifying eruption of energy broke out. The massive Divine Seal Altar trembled, as if a True Dragon were awakening from deep within.

"Is there really another tribulation?"

“If there is, just who can withstand it?”

Everyone was feeling sorry for Lin Ming at this time. If there really was a tribulation at 100,000 feet, then this Divine Seal Altar was simply too abnormal. It was impossible for a human to climb up it.

“What is that!?”

Someone suddenly pointed to the highest precipice of the Divine Seal Altar.

“On the edge of the 33rd step, there’s a figure there!”

Everyone was incomparably shocked and horrified. At the highest peak of the Divine Seal Altar, there was the phantom of a tall man in white clothes. He held his hands together, as if he were standing alone in the endless flow of time, looking at the future and the past, becoming one with the boundless world.

Although this was only a phantom, the moment that he appeared, the world seemed to fall under his control, the master of the heavens and the earth, the ruler of existence. The billions of people present all had a deep impulse to fall to their knees in prostration, worshipping him.

Even Xiao Daochild, floating in the skies, was sucked in by this power, unable to continue flying!

Xiao Daochild was shocked. He rapidly formed some seals, dropping down hundreds of thousands of feet before stabilizing himself. He slowly fell down and finally landed on the ground.

Flying was prohibited above the Divine Seal Altar. But, that was only for young disciples. Xiao Daochild was a World King, thus he had the ability to fly. Yet in front of this phantom, he couldn’t even fly at all. How could he not be shocked!?

“This person is…”

Xiao Daochild's mind raced. Even though this was only a phantom, his aura and his momentum were far more formidable than the average Empyrean's! Xiao Daochild could not imagine just who would have such divine might!

This was also an inevitable matter. This ancient Empyrean was a figure from 3.6 billion years ago. Let alone Xiao Daochild, not even Empyrean Vast Universe knew who it was. If it weren't for Lin Ming finding the Ancient Elysium Seal deep underneath Immemorial Imperial City, then he would never have known of the name of Empyrean Divine Seal.

"Who is he? What a terrifying and alarming aura! Facing him is like facing the endless ancient stars!"

"Just a phantom is like this. What would his true self be like?"

"I have no idea! Is this Empyrean Vast Universe?"

"It absolutely isn't Empyrean Vast Universe. I wonder just which ancient king this is!"

As everyone was discussing, on the Divine Seal Altar, the nearly unconscious Lin Ming also saw this phantom.

Others might not know, but Lin Ming was well aware of who this was – Empyrean Divine Seal!

Empyrean Divine Seal's phantom stood right in front of him. There was only a 100 foot distance separating them!

"Em...pyrean....Di...vine....Seal...."

Lin Ming's lips moved, but no sound came out. At this time, he could only look at Empyrean Divine Seal, the corners of his mouth overflowing with blood.

The white-clothed phantom slowly walked forwards to the edge of the Divine Seal Altar. Lin Ming looked up but couldn't clearly make out his appearance. All he could feel was that this phantom exuded a vast and ancient aura, as if he had stepped through the solemn and endless flow of time, bridging the gap of 3.6 billion years between then and now!

The phantom of Empyrean Divine Seal lowered his head to look down at Lin Ming. His eyes were as deep and profound as the void, impossible to see through.

Although Lin Ming didn't understand Empyrean Divine Seal, he still felt sincere admiration towards him. This was because he shouldered the history of the Divine Realm 3.6 billion years ago!

Lin Ming wanted to open his mouth and respectfully call out senior, but he couldn't make a single sound.

Then, at this time, Empyrean Divine Seal indifferently raised a hand and began to slowly draw something in the void…

Chapter 1269 – The Summit

Chapter 1269 – The Summit

…

…

…

Empyrean Divine Seal’s finger cut through the void, leaving behind a purple golden path of shimmering light. These lights gathered together, forming a strange golden purple rune.

Lin Ming froze for a moment. This purple golden rune seemed to exude some strange magical charm, making him fall into it.

This is…

His heart wildly shook!

Empyrean Divine Seal’s finger did not stop. After drawing up the first rune, he continued to draw up a second, a third, a fourth…

Every time he drew a new rune he did so slowly. The path of light he carved into the air was simple and profound, as if it contained the highest truths of this world.

The entire process was soundless, without a single word spoken.

At this time, the world had faded away from around Lin Ming’s eyes, leaving nothing behind but these mysterious runes.

In truth, he didn’t understand just what Empyrean Divine Seal was drawing. But, he could faintly feel that these runes he drew were incomparably precious treasures, containing the mysteries of the Great Dao within them!

Lin Ming entered a complete ethereal state. Besides Empyrean Divine Seal, everyone lost all meaning.

In the audience, the billions of spectators also saw this scene.

“Who is that phantom? What is he doing?”

“That could be a divine soul mark that an ancient supreme elder once left behind in the Divine Seal Altar. After hundreds of millions and even billions of years it still remains in existence, continuing onwards in perpetuity! What is disturbed because of Lin Ming? Heavens, that is unbelievable!”

“It is said that when an unrivalled genius climbs up the final stretch of the Divine Seal Altar, they will arouse a world phenomenon. Vast Universe Heavenly Palace’s Vast Cosmos climbed up the last 10,000 feet of the Divine Seal Altar during the Divine Transformation realm and also triggered the appearance of a phenomenon. This ancient phantom is likely the world phenomenon Lin Ming caused by climbing up the Divine Seal Altar!”

“Inconceivable. He has actually alarmed an ancient supreme elder! And he seems to be writing something in the air!”

“He is indeed writing something, but I can’t see what it is. It’s like my vision has been blocked by some strange power!”

Although the audience couldn’t clearly see these runes being drawn, they could see that the phantom was drawing them. But, in the process of drawing them, distortions appeared in the surrounding power of the Heavenly Dao Laws, causing all of them to be unable to clearly see what was happening.

“Are those words? Runes? Can anyone see what is being written?”

Many people widened their eyes as best they could, deploying any mystical sight skill in their arsenal to see just what this Empyrean phantom was writing. But, the more they tried to look, the dimmer their vision became, until they couldn't even see the finger of that Empyrean phantom.

"What a pity!"

"I can't see!"

Everyone was able to guess that this Empyrean phantom was likely some outstanding existence amongst all Empyreans. Otherwise, it was impossible for a phantom to leave behind such a terrifying pressure.

The words, the runes he carved might contain the truths of the Great Dao. If they could remember them then their benefits would be endless!

"If we can't see, can Lin Ming see them?"

"That phantom seems to be deliberately drawing these characters. Is it doing so for Lin Ming to see?"

As everyone was discussing, their hearts were beating with fear and also envy.

A purple gold divine light came shrouding down like tens of thousands of fluttering silk ribbons. Lin Ming and that Empyrean phantom were covered within this light, and no one could clearly see what was happening on the Divine Seal Altar's 33rd step.

And within this brilliant blazing light, Lin Ming felt his entire body become weightless. He was only able to watch blankly as these mysterious runes flew into his body. Some buried themselves into his flesh and blood, some fell into his soul force, and some flew into his inner world.

"What is this? Laws? Information? Or both?"

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath.

In that moment, the light vanished and the phantom of Empyrean Divine Seal also disappeared along with it. There was nothing left but a dim shimmering purple gold light that quietly scattered away like endless flower petals…

In that final moment, Lin Ming felt a strong will from this fading light, unyielding and indomitable…

Empyrean Divine Seal…

Lin Ming's thoughts were extremely complex. When Empyrean Divine Seal vanished, the overwhelming pressure from the sky completely disappeared and everyone was restored to tranquility.

"What happened just now?"

"The ancient supreme elder's phantom has disappeared, and the runes he carved have vanished also."

No one had been able to see those purple gold runes submerge into Lin Ming's body, thus no one knew what happened. The final 10,000 feet of the Divine Seal Altar was completely different from their expectations.

They thought that Lin Ming would have to withstand some terrifying heavenly tribulation, and perhaps he would even be defeated, but they never thought this would be the result.

Lin Ming breathed in, grabbing the extremely rough walls of the Divine Seal Altar once more, then began to climb upwards, one step at a time!

100 feet… 90 feet… 80 feet… 70 feet… 60 feet… 50 feet…

Lin Ming was only a few moments away. But, he did not hurry himself. Every step he took was as stable and steady as the rivers and mountains.

The billions of spectators all held their breath, each and every one of them with their eyes glued onto Lin Ming.

At this final moment, time seemed to slow to molasses.

Lin Ming firmly reached out his right hand and grasped the precipice of the Divine Seal Altar's 33rd step.

Pulling his right hand, he seemed to conjure up every last shred of strength in his body as he slowly pulled himself up.

His arms were the first to reach flat ground. Then his chest, his waist, and then his legs. Lin Ming half knelt on top of the Divine Seal Altar's 33rd step before slowly standing up.

The Divine Seal Altar's 33rd step – he had made it!

In that moment, Lin Ming felt as if his entire life had been baptized. He stood 3.3 million feet in the air, overlooking the endless rolling lands, peering into the vast galaxy!

At this time, his body, his soul, his inner world, everything seemed to transform, becoming purer, slowly fusing together.

"He did it, he finally reached the top!"

"It's a miracle!"

The billions of spectators didn't cheer at the start. They were all still lost in their shock, unable to utter a single word

But after a silence that lasted for several breaths of time, the entire area burst out with deafening cheers!

"He mounted the Divine Seal Altar! This is like a dream! Lin Ming is the peerless proud son of heaven of the Divine Realm that only appears once every million years!"

"His talent and potential are incalculable. In the future there are high hopes he will become an Empyrean."

"He surpasses an Empyrean descendant!"

When the numerous spectators said that Lin Ming surpassed an Empyrean descendant, they referred to his potential. When Lin Ming climbed up the Divine Seal Altar to reach the top, the truth was that it wasn't because of his strength, but because he alone had crossed a 33 Layered Heavens Ninefall and experienced a nine by nine heavenly tribulation. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for him to mount the summit of the Divine Seal Altar.

In Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Empyrean Vast Universe looked down at Lin Ming as he stood on the Divine Seal Altar's 33rd step. He blinked several times, opening his mouth but finally not saying anything.

After several dozen breaths of time in silence, he then slowly said, "Divine Dream, that final phantom… was that Empyrean Divine Seal?"

Empyrean Divine Dream nodded. She said in a soft voice, "I have never seen him before, but I could feel his aura. I shouldn't be mistaken."

"Mm. I could also feel it a little. Really, that was quite shocking. I used a fragment of the ancient Divine Seal Altar, as well as countless timeless god stones, in order to refine the current Divine Seal Altar. Even so, for the Divine Seal Altar to be able to project Senior Divine Seal's phantom, his strength must have reached an unfathomable boundary. Perhaps the word Empyrean alone is insufficient to describe his strength. I wonder what Senior Divine Seal finally wrote in the air?"

Empyrean Vast Universe sighed with deep emotion. Although they were both called Empyreans, the truth was that he couldn't compare in the slightest with Empyrean Divine Seal. In truth, Empyrean Divine Seal already surpassed the limits of an Empyrean.

Empyrean Divine Dream said, “I only saw a tiny portion of Senior Divine Seal’s handwriting. It should be the highest Laws of the 33 Layered Heavens and possibly some information too, describing the great war that happened 3.6 billion years ago.”

3.6 billion years ago was an incomparably glorious era from ages past. Although there were Empyreans that could live for 100 million years, there were still many things that were lost in the endless river of history.

This was just like a mortal that could live for a hundred years. How could they know what happened 36,000 years ago? Moreover, after that great calamity, many masters perished from the skies, and even the martial arts world had been struck back down to its fundamentals. Many things had to be redeveloped from the beginning.

Some secrets would have disappeared in the infinite flow of time, and only some peak characters of the Divine Realm would know of them.

As Empyrean Divine Dream mentioned the 33 Layered Heavens, Empyrean Vast Universe frowned and said, “I am still not sure just what lucky chance Lin Ming encountered that allowed him to access the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens. Because the Heavenly Dao Laws changed long ago, that is something that should have been cut off from the Divine Realm. These Laws are almost impossible to comprehend now.”

Empyrean Vast Universe realized that Lin Ming had come into contact with the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens before he had climbed up the Divine Seal Altar. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for him to become aware of it.

Empyrean Divine Dream spookily said, “Lin Ming indeed must have comprehended the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens before he started climbing the Divine Seal Altar. But, that is not necessarily because of some lucky chance, but perhaps because he himself was thoroughly enlightened about it.”

Empyrean Vast Universe was shocked. “He thoroughly enlightened himself on it? How could that be possible? Underneath the limits of the Divine Realm’s Heavenly Dao Laws, it is impossible to access the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens.”

“There is always a possibility. For instance… if Lin Ming were to break through a 33 Layered Heavens Ninefall and withstand a baptism of the Heavenly Dao Laws, he would come into contact with the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens. At that time, he might have even withstood the power of heavenly tribulation. If that is true, then it can also be explained how Lin Ming was able to use heavenly tribulation…”

As one of the leaders of all Empyreans within the Divine Realm, Empyrean Divine Dream’s understandings of a 33 Layered Heavens Ninefall were far greater than Empyrean Vast Universe’s.

After Empyrean Vast Universe listened to this, he looked at her with amazement. “33 Layered Heavens… Ninefall!?”

When Empyrean Vast Universe crossed Ninefall himself, he had stopped at a 30 Layered Heavens Ninefall, a 90 mile origin energy cloud.

Thus, he was not clear on what it meant to cross a 33 Layered Heavens Ninefall.

If it were really as Empyrean Divine Dream said, then Lin Ming’s future achievements would be hard to imagine!

Of course, Lin Ming still fell far short of being on the same level as those ancient supreme elders. After all, the achievements of these characters were not based on just how many Layered Heavens they crossed during Ninefall.

This was because Ninefall was merely the beginning of a martial cultivator’s road. There were many boundaries afterwards, and in order to take a solid step forwards within these boundaries, one needed to pile up countless lucky chances and resources before they could hope to be successful.

Since ancient times, for the birth of an Empyrean, talent, destiny, resources, and inheritances were all indispensable.

“Since Lin Ming disturbed the phantom of Empyrean Divine Seal, then in a sense he obtained the recognition of Empyrean Divine Seal. If I’m not wrong, that must be because of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens. If this were 3.6 billion years ago, Lin Ming might have even be received as a disciple of Empyrean Divine Seal.” Empyrean Divine Dream suddenly said.

Empyrean Divine Seal was a peak existence who cultivated essence, energy, and divine.

Chapter 1270 – Bustling Like A City

Chapter 1270 – Bustling Like A City

…

…

…

In reaching the summit of the Divine Seal Altar, this had been the most exhausting battle Lin Ming had gone through so far. From start to finish, it had taken him seven days and seven nights.

In these seven days and seven nights, besides a pill that he had taken, he had completely relied upon his own natural restorative abilities.

After exhausting himself over seven days, at the final moment he was like a lamp without oil. At the last 100,000 foot pass, if it were any casual test and not the phantom of Empyrean Divine Seal, then Lin Ming would have lost.

Lin Ming didn’t remember how or when he came down from the Divine Seal Altar. All he knew was that he slumped over and instantly fell into a state of deep sleep.

And outside, billions of people were wildly screaming! News about this competition on the Divine Seal Altar spread like a snowstorm throughout the entire Divine Realm.

The billions of spectators present had come from 100 great worlds as well as countless small worlds and hidden worlds. They were all high level figures, either sect Elders, reclusive sages, or outstanding young elites.

Their ability to spread news far surpassed the ordinary person's. For a time, the name of Lin Ming and Dragon Fang were extremely dazzling. In particular Lin Ming; his fame resounded through the world!

Of course, to many people, they had no idea just what sort of concept mounting the summit of the Divine Seal Altar was. This was because the Divine Seal Altar wasn't very famous to begin with.

An Empyrean was synonymous with mystery. People didn't know all the Empyreans in existence, moreover there was quite a large number of Empyrean Heavenly Palaces in the Divine Realm. In terms of Heavenly Palaces alone, there were 100-200 that were well known by most, not including those Empyreans living in deep seclusion like Three Lives Old Man.

With so many Empyreans, how many people would know about a random Empyrean spirit treasure?

Although the Divine Seal Altar had been revealed to the public before, that was 100,000 years ago, or even several hundred thousand years ago. People had already forgotten about such a distant matter.

Let alone the disciples of ordinary Holy Lands, even Nether Limitless didn't know how difficult it was to reach the top of the Divine Seal Altar.

Many people only knew that Lin Ming was the top participant from the semifinals at Gravemoon Star. As for what degree he had reached, it was hard for them to imagine.

……

Far away, there was an independent greater dimension. This dimension was a great world that was forcefully opened up by an extreme character using their titanic supernatural powers. It was billions of miles long and wide, far larger than the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent combined!

It was already astounding for a martial artist to open up their own dimensional realm, much less a greater dimension.

In this separate world, there was a palace built from white jade. This palace was filled with flowers and trees as if the inside was endless grasslands. Immortal cranes flew above lotuses and white monkeys danced among the fruit trees. Beautiful spirit springs sprung up all over. These springs were not formed from ordinary water, but wine nectar. If a mortal were to drink this, they would be able to extend their lifespan by several times.

In this heavenly fairyland, there was a group of lightly dressed women. Amidst enchanting music, they gracefully danced. Each one had alluring looks and perfectly built bodies made for obsession.

These women all had a cultivation at the Divine Sea realm. Moreover, their talent was very good. However, they were just singing and dancing maids, serving the guests of their master, who were a dozen or so young men and women.

These dozen plus people all had extraordinary auras; they were clearly outstanding individuals.

“I hear that the semifinals are finally over.” A red-haired youth smiled, carrying a wine cup in his hands.

“Oh? How is it? Are there any interesting opponents?” Beside the red-haired youth, a man in silver battle armor lazily asked as he ate some grapes.

To dare speak with this sort of tone, to refer to the martial artists of the Divine Realm’s 3000 great worlds who had been selected through trial after trial as ‘interesting’, their status was easily guessed – they were Empyrean descendants!

Empyrean descendants were all divided between high and low. There were strong and weak Empyreans, just like the difference between ordinary World Kings and Great Worlds Kings. In addition, even between the disciples of Empyreans, there were number one ranked disciples and also last ranked disciples.

According to the customs of the First Martial Meeting, when a new number one disciple was about to appear to an Empyrean, that Empyrean would also step forwards to hold the First Martial Meeting. Of these Empyreans that held the First Martial Meeting, their strength on average was extremely high. Even the weakest among them would be at the same level as Empyrean Vast Universe.

The weaker Empyreans would not hold the First Martial Meeting. Rather, their descendants would join the First Martial Meeting held by other Empyreans.

These dozen plus people were mostly in this situation. As Empyrean descendants, they didn't need to undergo the preliminaries and semifinals, and could go straight to the finals.

"There are indeed some interesting matches that have appeared. On Whitelight Star's martial field, the first ranked participant – Blood Carnage. On Yellow Net Star's martial field, the first and second ranked participants – Hong Yu and Chao Guang. And of course, the ones with the greatest limelight so far are the first and second ranked participants of Gravemoon Star's martial field – Lin Ming and Dragon Fang. Especially that Lin Ming. It's said that he even surpasses us Empyrean descendants."

"Surpasses us?"

Many of those present chuckled. "It's just the ramblings of people who have never seen the wider world. They haven't even seen the side of a Heavenly Palace and yet they dare to do something so ridiculous like comparing someone to us Empyrean descendants. How laughable!"

"There's no need to care about those common mortals. In the Divine Realm First Martial Meetings, it has always been Empyrean descendants that have ruled the rankings. The so-called geniuses of the great worlds can struggle as much as they want for the Earth Proclamation, but there is no room for them to stand on the Heaven Proclamation."

Empyrean descendants were all proud and lofty individuals. They naturally wouldn't be willing to believe that some common person was able to surpass them.

However, the youth who spoke up before added again, “It’s different this time. That Lin Ming is extremely fierce. I heard that he climbed up to the 33rd step of the Divine Seal Altar and created a miracle.”

As this youth finished speaking, another person who was sitting amongst the group nearly spat out the wine he was drinking.

“Shore Feather, what do you think?”

“Is the Divine Seal Altar’s 33rd step really that exaggerated?”

“That’s right, the Divine Seal Altar is Empyrean Vast Universe’s spirit treasure, right? Aren’t you from Vast Universe Heavenly Palace?”

The young man called Shore Feather opened his mouth, his complexion pale. If one didn’t come from Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, even if they knew that it was difficult to climb up the Divine Seal Altar, they wouldn’t truly understand until they witnessed it with their own eyes. But as a disciple of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, Shore Feather was profoundly aware of just how ridiculously abnormal it was for a Divine Sea realm martial artist to climb up the Divine Seal Altar!

“Ex-exaggerated? It’s more than exaggerated!” Shore Feather shouted out in his heart. Since Lin Ming had joined the First Martial Meeting, then he definitely was at the Divine Sea realm!

He grit his teeth and said, “You can all continue eating. I’ll be returning first.”

Shore Feather’s reaction was to put down his wine cup and return. He wanted to confirm whether this matter was true or false.

As for the others, they glanced at each other, puzzlement in their eyes. Wasn’t Shore Feather’s response just blown out of proportion?

“This Lin Ming can have him respond in such a ridiculous manner?”

“About the Divine Seal Altar, I have heard some things. The Divine Seal Altar is mainly a test of one’s potential. Can this Lin Ming’s potential surpass our own?”

“As if I’d believe that. In any case, the finals will soon begin. I’ll see for myself just what sort of freak this Lin Ming is.”

“That’s right. We’ll know sooner or later. Come, let us continue drinking.”

………..

Crimson Light World, Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters.

The Ancient Phoenix Clan was originally a highly ranked influence based on the Crimson Light World. The Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters were usually bustling with people. The skies would be flooded with powerful mounts, glorious spirit boats, divine carriages, and countless Divine Lords and even Holy Lords.

But in these past days, over a hundred times more martial artists had come to visit the Ancient Phoenix Clan!

The entire sky was occupied by various mounts and spirit boats.

And the martial artists that came all had an above average strength.

Originally, it was mostly Divine Lords and some Holy Lords. But now, it was mostly Holy Lords, half-step World Kings, and even World King level powerhouses!

There were even some weaker Holy Lords that were ashamed to enter the gates as they saw all these peak Holy Lord powerhouses and even World King Holy Land spirit ships shuttling through the skies.

Without a doubt, all of these people had come for Lin Ming.

Most of the Holy Lord level characters had simply come to befriend and establish connections with the Ancient Phoenix Clan. They were also well aware of their status. What sort of character was Lin Ming now that they could easily see him?

And amidst this crowd, there was a small group of extremely low cultivation individuals, with the strongest amongst them being at the late Divine Lord realm. Even so, these people still had a place to stand in the Ancient Phoenix Clan and they were also treated courteously.

These were people from the Good Fortune Great World's Unbroken Cult.

"Aiya, thanks to the blessings of those two female disciples, we've become honored guests here."

The black-clothed man leading the group commented. He was the Founder of the Unbroken Cult. Normally, he would be considered someone with some degree of status, but here in the current Ancient Phoenix Clan he wasn't even worth a fart. Each of these other visitors were more amazing than the last. Let alone these people's subordinates, the Unbroken Cult Founder couldn't even contend with their followers.

However, these great people couldn't even see Lin Ming; they might not even have the chance to see the high level figures of the Ancient Phoenix Clan! They could only greet the Internal Affairs Envoy, the Disciplinary Elder, the Merit Elder, and so forth.

"Truly, this scene is a bit too ridiculous."

"We really are the frogs in a well. This time can be regarded as us gaining a great deal of experience."

Several Elders sighed with emotion. And beside them, Yu Youming was also silent, his mood extremely complex. Not too long ago, he was considered a chosen pride of heaven. From birth until adulthood, he had been shrouded in the halo of being called a genius. He had enjoyed the worship of countless others, but now, he was just a joke compared to Lin Ming.

"I must practice as hard as I can. Although I might not reach his level, one day, I too will have the Unbroken Cult be so lively because of me!"

Yu Youming gripped his fists together, setting down this vow in his heart. However, the truth was that in the Divine Realm there were countless young martial artists that made similar pledges. But, only an extremely small proportion of them were able to succeed in their dreams. Many of them perished, their wishes and hopes unfulfilled.

The road of martial arts was incomparably brutal.

The Ancient Phoenix Clan could be considered as being at the height of their glory at this moment. Several Highest Elders, including even the current Patriarch, were growing tired from greeting the endless stream of guests. Although they were only here to curry favor with the Ancient Phoenix Clan, each and every one of them was a powerful figure, thus they naturally couldn't be treated coldly.

However, as they greeted these guests, they were also a bit worried, because since Lin Ming returned he still hadn't awoken.

Up until now, over 10 days had passed.

Huo Violentstone was especially worried. Lin Ming had slept for too long and the reason for it was also unknown.

In these days he had been investigating the reason for Lin Ming's sleep, but nothing came of it.

Even Xiao Daochild made a trip here, but he couldn't figure out the reason either. If the reason was fatigue, that would be easy to understand. But with Lin Ming's recovery abilities, that was simply impossible.

Chapter 1271 – Finally Meeting

Chapter 1271 – Finally Meeting

…

…

…

“Elder Huo, there are many people waiting outside to see Lin Ming. What a headache, aiya…”

The Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s Xiao Family said to Huo Violentstone.

“Declare that Lin Ming has entered into seclusion because he is meditating on some Concepts he comprehended from the Divine Seal Altar, and he is seeing no one. Just let them wait as they wish!”

The Ancient Phoenix Clan didn’t want to spread the news that Lin Ming had fallen into a deep slumber. That would create an extremely bad influence. Lin Ming was exceedingly outstanding, to the point that there were many whose eyes were red with jealousy.

These people might not have any abilities, but they were actually skilled in spreading lies and rumors. Even if Lin Ming was in truth all right, these people would blabber on, wanting their Ancient Phoenix Clan to become a joke.

“There are some people that… believe we are using Lin Ming going into seclusion as an excuse. Although they haven’t yet publicly said it, it’s placing some pressure on us.”

“Deal with them. Aren’t they just some Holy Lords and half-step World Kings? Who cares about them? Just handle them as they come!”

Huo Violentstone was disinclined to bother with these people. He would only have the patience to come up with an explanation to a true World King powerhouse.

"This damned brat Lin Ming, just what he is doing!"

Huo Violentstone said, breathless. In truth, he was very worried for Lin Ming. He wasn't worried that Lin Ming's slumber would delay their traveling schedule to the location where the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting finals would be held, but was afraid that Lin Ming had actually received some hidden wounds on the Divine Seal Altar.

The Divine Seal Altar was incomparably mysterious. If there was some damage to his spiritual sea or divine soul that no one was able to detect, then that wouldn't be too strange.

Another 20 days passed.

Lin Ming was still in his deep sleep. His dream seemed endless. He dreamed that he returned to the era of 3.6 billion years ago. He fought with ancient clans and races, defeated countless powerful enemies, slaughtered endlessly, and even became an unrivalled hero of his generation.

During this time, he sought out mystic realms, making repeated breakthroughs in his strength. He swore brotherhood with his life and death friends, establishing a sect that dominated the world, living at the prime of his glory.

Finally, his cultivation reached large success. He stepped towards the peak of martial arts, creating his own transcendent divine might, and then even resisting the great world calamity…

That great war startled the heavens, shook the earth, and moved demons and gods.

Every scene was incomparably real. Lin Ming didn't know how many years he lived in silence, but suddenly he awoke. He discovered that he was lying on a large bed and his entire body was soaked with sweat.

Beside him were two gentle and elegant women. They looked up at him with surprise.

Lin Ming was very familiar with these two beautiful women's faces; they were Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan.

"Yu'er? Xingxuan?" Lin Ming was startled, his mind still in chaos. "You're here?"

For a time, everything was tumbling over in confusion. His thoughts were in tumult, disoriented, and he found it hard to distinguish between illusion and reality. It was all because that long dream he just had was far too real.

"Lin Ming, you're finally awake."

"Brother Lin."

Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan began sobbing with happiness. Lin Ming had already been sleeping for over a month. During this time period, many high level figures of the Divine Realm had looked over Lin Ming, including Xiao Daochild. Even so, none of them knew what was happening. Xiao Daochild only sensed that Lin Ming's spiritual sea was extremely active, but there shouldn't have been any great problem with him.

For Lin Ming to not have any problem but still be unable to wake up, how could Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan not be worried? They stood guard by Lin Ming's side, all the way until he finally woke up.

"Where am I?"

"This is the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters! Brother Lin, after you were taken down from the Divine Seal Altar's 33rd step, you fell into a deep sleep, and now you've slept for over a month!"

"More than a month?" Lin Ming rubbed his forehead. To think he had already rested for over a month. "Yu'er, Xingxuan, you came to the Divine Realm?"

After sleeping for a month and suddenly awakening, and then being able to see these two beautiful and familiar figures standing guard beside him, an inexplicable warmth and tenderness suddenly filled Lin Ming's heart.

This was something that he hadn't felt for quite some time, the so-called warmth and happiness.

Ever since Lin Ming stepped onto the road of martial arts, he hadn't experienced these feeling often. Year after year he experienced battle and slaughter, going on journeys, passing through danger after danger, risking his life at every turn!

Although Lin Ming was someone who loved to fight and go on risky adventures, after such a long time, this inevitably placed a great pressure on him!

Now that he awoke from his deep sleep and saw these two women standing beside him and also being able to smell their fragrant scent, he felt long hidden emotions rising within him and needed to release them. He held Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu, pulling them into his chest, gently hugging and kissing.

He softly said, "I'm glad that I can see you two here."

Without any extraneous words or sweetly honeyed love poems, Lin Ming's words were straightforward and honest. Even so, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan felt their noses burn as tears tumbled down their cheeks.

Even if they didn't want to acknowledge it, they knew that in their hearts Lin Ming was becoming more and more distant.

This was a feeling of unattainability. In this situation, when the two women saw Lin Ming, they would inevitably be a little cautious because of their lack of security that Lin Ming still viewed them the same. But, as Lin Ming hugged them, this caused the barrier around their hearts to melt away like white snow underneath the blazing summer sun.

"Yu'er, Xingxuan, how did you two come to the Divine Realm?"

After embracing for a long time, the three of them separated and Lin Ming began asking them questions.

After hearing this question, Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu looked extremely sad. The two of them had already been in the Divine Realm for over a year. They had experienced many hardships, but through the twisting roads of fate, they finally managed to see Lin Ming without any troubles at all. Otherwise, if circumstances were different, they had no idea how long it would have been until they met again.

Mu Qianyu said, "The situation in the lower realms has been settled. With Old Man Good Fortune's help, the Ancient Phoenix Clan has stabilized and replaced the Asura Divine Kingdom as one of the four Divine Kingdoms. In truth, the sect no longer needs us to be there and we also didn't want to waste our time in the lower realms.

After Mu Qianyu spoke, Lin Ming could make out their thoughts from their eyes.

They didn't want the distance between them and Lin Ming to grow any more. If Lin Ming was in the Divine Realm and they remained in the lower realms, the disparity between the three of them would only grow greater and greater, whether this was strength, cultivation, lifespan, or distance.

The martial artists of the Sky Spill Continent were limited to the late Divine Sea realm. But, a late Divine Sea realm martial artist lived at most for 10,000 years. As for Lin Ming, his future lifespan might even be measured in the hundreds of millions of years.

Not just that, but ever since Lin Ming ascended to the Divine Realm, they had obtained no news about him. They didn't know whether he was dead or alive, so how could they ever feel at ease? After all, from what they knew, within the Divine Realm a Divine Sea martial artist was nothing at all. One only had the strength to defend themselves at the Divine Transformation realm. But, when Lin Ming ascended to the Divine Realm, he was only at the fifth stage of Life Destruction. No matter how talented Lin Ming was, it would only take the blink of an eye for a powerful master to kill him.

After all of this combined together, they finally made the decision to ascend to the Divine Realm and search for Lin Ming. Although they didn't describe the process, Lin Ming could also imagine that they experience all sorts of suffering and hardships.

"It's been rough for you two." Lin Ming sighed.

He was someone whose heart was focused on the road of martial arts. He was indeed lost when it came to feelings and emotions.

But in truth, Lin Ming was better than most. There were many peerless geniuses and masters whose feelings of affection and love were clearer than water.

These martial arts masters often lived for millions or even over 10 million years. If they came from great backgrounds and their parents were also peerless powerhouses, then they would be a bit better. But, if they came from a humble common background, then even if they used all sorts of methods and pills to extend the lives of their parents, their parents would live at most for tens of thousands or a hundred thousand years. In the end, they would die.

As for their wives, this was also true. These people would often have different wives in different times. This was because their speed of growth was too fast and no one was able to keep up with them.

The woman they married during their youth would slowly age and eventually die. The only exception would be if they married some proud daughter of heaven like Xiao Moxian. But, for a genius of humble birth, they were often nothing more than weeds and grass during their youth, so where would they encounter such a woman?

Besides love, their emotions towards their children were also extremely faint. A peerless master would have many children, hundreds of them. Moreover, it would be hard for these children to outlive their parents. The reason that mortals doted on and loved their children was because of their short lifespans. To them, their children were a continuation of their lives. But to a peak genius, this situation didn't exist at all.

Gradually, martial artists would often diverge into two extremes. They would either wholeheartedly invest everything into pursuing the road of martial arts and remain pure in heart and mind, or they would have harems of concubines and gaggles of children.

Lin Ming embraced the two women in silence before separating from them. He traced his hands over Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan's soft hair and said in a gentle voice, "Do you plan on staying in the Ancient Phoenix Clan in the future? I can have the Highest Elder make arrangements for you."

The resources of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were far more than enough to train Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan. If they didn't seek out higher combat strength and only chose to increase their cultivation, then it wouldn't be difficult for them to reach the Divine Lord realm.

"Lin Ming, there are many people outside waiting to see you." Mu Qianyu said to Lin Ming as she suddenly thought of this matter.

"Who is it?"

"It's mostly Holy Land level influences from the Crimson Light World and other nearby great worlds. There are even some World King influences that have sent people.

"I don't want to see them." Lin Ming shook his head. He had already made a decision. The time of the finals was getting closer and closer. He had to train as much as he could; every minute of his time was valuable.

Chapter 1272 – Ancient Phoenix Blood Essence

Chapter 1272 – Ancient Phoenix Blood Essence

…

…

…

Lin Ming, Qin Xingxuan, and Mu Qianyu left the room hand in hand. At this time, Huo Violentstone had already obtained news of Lin Ming's awakening and had hurried over.

"You damned boy, you finally woke up! You had me worried to death these past days!"

Huo Violentstone slapped Lin Ming's shoulder. If Lin Ming were a normal essence gathering system martial artist that didn't use any protective true essence, this slap would have fractured his bones.

Lin Ming and Huo Violentstone were related as master and disciple. The two people had spent a great time together in the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters as well as during the time at the Fire Spirit Star smelting trial. They were extremely familiar with each other, to the point where Huo Violentstone didn't feel like Lin Ming's master, but a good friend who occasionally met up with him.

"Lin Ming greets Elder Huo. When this disciple climbed up the Divine Seal Altar, I simply exhausted myself a bit too much, thus I rested for so long. I apologize for worrying you."

"It's fine, I'm glad everything is over. What have you been experiencing during your sleep these last days?"

This was what Huo Violentstone was concerned about. Xiao Daochild had said that Lin Ming's spiritual sea was extremely active, but as for what he was experiencing, no one knew.

Lin Ming said, "I lived through an extremely long dream, experiencing many chaotic scenes. During it, I felt that my divine soul, body, and inner world were experiencing some strange baptism in this dream, as if my perception of some Laws have become deeper."

Now that Lin Ming recalled his dream, it was like he had lived through a completely different life. He travelled back 3.6 billion years, formed his own Heavenly Palace, ruled the world, resisted the great calamity, passing through the ages, everlasting and immortal.

Every scene was magnificent, glorious, and very lifelike. Lin Ming suspected that these scenes were part of Empyrean Divine Seal's memories from 3.6 billion years ago.

Empyrean Divine Seal had planted mysterious runes in Lin Ming's body, soul, and inner world. Besides the Laws of the 33 Layered Heavens, these runes also carried with them a part of Empyrean Divine Seal's memories, and these memories were what Lin Ming had experienced in his dream.

In the dream, Lin Ming thought he was Empyrean Divine Seal, thus he had passed through the ancient events from 3.6 billion years ago. This was the most reasonable explanation.

Because of the great world calamity, Empyrean Divine Seal, the ancient Divine Seal Altar, many other matters were extremely important and involved in many great secrets. Thus Lin Ming did not elaborate in detail to Huo Violentstone and instead referred to these dreams as somewhat trivial matters.

"Boy, you have truly brought honor to our Ancient Phoenix Clan now. You struggled to reach the top of the Divine Seal Altar's 33 steps and even proved that that boy Dragon Fang is inferior to you. Oh, that's right. I've heard some rumors about that Dragon Fang. It's confirmed that he is the last disciple of some secluded great expert, but as for whom that is, I'm not sure at all."

To an ordinary martial artist, an Empyrean was an extremely mysterious existence. For those Empyreans that formed their own Heavenly Palaces and ruled the world, others would know of them. But, for those that were deep in seclusion, normal martial artists wouldn't know their names at all.

Moreover, Three Lives Old Man was someone who was at the height of his fame 300 million years ago. Let alone Huo Violentstone, even Great World Kings wouldn't know of him.

Lin Ming nodded. In truth he already made this guess a long time ago. If there was no teacher and no resources, while it couldn't be said that a martial artist without a background would never grow up to be anything significant, the chances were so low they could be ignored.

"Haha, if this continues then you, brat, will be the greatest dark horse! You don't have a decent master at all but you've already obtained such great results, that's truly impressive!" Huo Violentstone said, patting Lin Ming's shoulder again. "That's right; come with me, the old Patriarch would like to see you."

"Old Patriarch?"

Lin Ming froze for a moment. In the Ancient Phoenix Clan, the current Patriarch was younger than Huo Violentstone. But above the current Ancient Phoenix Clan Patriarch were several other older Patriarchs. These Patriarchs had stepped down from their positions tens and hundreds of thousands of years ago, and were all characters that were deep in seclusion. They were considered the true foundation of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, and their strength was far greater than Huo Violentstone's.

Lin Ming followed Huo Violentstone and flew over countless great jade palaces. He flew up a 100,000 foot high celestial mountain and finally touched foot on the summit.

On the summit, there were fire flowers and parasol trees planted everywhere. There were even some spirit birds in the shape of phoenixes that were flying back and forth through the forest of parasol trees. At the end of this forest was a grand palace the color of deep crimson. This was where the old Patriarchs were deep in seclusion.

Standing within this parasol tree forest, even the loud and boisterous Huo Violentstone had restrained himself. He respectfully bowed, facing the grand palace as he loudly said, “Disciple Huo Violentstone has brought Lin Ming here.”

“Mm! Enter!”

An elderly voice responded. Lin Ming and Huo Violentstone both walked into the palace.

Inside the grand hall, with glittering fire red jade shining all around them, a man and a woman sat in two thrones. The man was thin with silver hair. The woman had a gentle smile and she wore a long red dress. Although she was old now, one could see from the outline of her face and features that she must have been a beauty in her youth.

“Haha, Lin Ming! Sit down!” The silver-haired old man waved his hand, a welcoming smile on his face.

“Lin Ming, the reason I called you here is because I wished to see with my own eyes the great genius that came from my Ancient Phoenix Clan. Secondly, and a bit more importantly, the Ancient Phoenix Clan has something to give you.”

The silver-haired old man took out a jade box from his spatial ring. He gently caressed it; this movement was just like a man stroking his wife. It was obvious that this silver-haired old man treasured this jade box very much.

“Could that be…” Huo Violentstone’s eyes widened. He already had a guess in his mind. Now that Lin Ming had grown to this level, the Ancient Phoenix Clan could only support him with their most precious treasures. And, there might be only one thing at that level…

The silver-haired old man stroked the jade box for some time, and then let out a long breath and opened it. He pulled out a bright green jade bottle from the jade box. This jade bottle was less than half full, filled with deep red blood. Looking at the amount, there was likely over 20 drops.

“That is Ancient Phoenix blood essence!” Even though Huo Violentstone already guessed this, he was still shocked upon seeing so much Ancient Phoenix blood essence. In his life, he had seen Ancient Phoenix blood essence an extremely small number of times, and that was only one drop at a time. Just when did he have the chance to see so much Ancient Phoenix blood essence at once?

Ancient Phoenix blood essence was incomparably precious to the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Besides the line of Patriarchs, even the Vice Patriarchs or Highest Elders might not have the chance to obtain a single drop!

Now, this silver-haired old man was actually planning on gifting this much to Lin Ming. It was likely over half the reserves that the Ancient Phoenix Clan had!

“This is...” Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. This gift was far too heavy.

This was the ultimate bottom line treasure of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. If this was given to him, then the resources available for raising future geniuses would be much more intense.

The silver-haired old man saw Lin Ming’s doubts and said, “Rest assured. This is only 60% of the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s stock of Ancient Phoenix blood essence. We’ve kept 40% which is still over a dozen drops, more than enough to use in the future. As for this amount, you must accept it. It will help stabilize your middle Divine Sea cultivation so that you can fight for a small space on the First Martial Meeting’s Heaven Proclamation!”

The Divine Seal Altar mainly tested one’s potential and Lin Ming had relied on his understanding of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens to climb up the Divine Seal Altar. If it were true combat, then it was unknown just how far he could have made it up the Divine Seal Altar. This was also the reason for the rules that one had to fight an opponent in the latter steps of the Divine Seal Altar, so that testing one’s potential wasn’t the only criteria.

Thus, the silver-haired old man wasn’t sure how close Lin Ming could reach to the Heaven Proclamation.

But regardless of that, it shouldn't be a problem for Lin Ming to enter the top three ranks of the Earth Proclamation and attain a complete transcendent divine might. The reason that the silver-haired old man took out this blood essence was to help Lin Ming grow further and to also have him display a greater result in the finals.

"Why aren't you hurrying up and receiving it? This is wonderful!"

Huo Violentstone saw Lin Ming's hesitation and slapped his back.

Lin Ming walked forwards, respectfully receiving the phoenix blood essence.

This phoenix blood essence was indeed useful to him. After absorbing the supreme dragon bone, Lin Ming's dragon bloodline density had surpassed his phoenix bloodline density. If he had this phoenix blood essence to make up for that, he would be able to display a much stronger power.

The jade vial only contained 20 some drops of phoenix blood essence but it was extremely heavy. The weight of phoenix blood essence was greater than that of ordinary blood by dozens of millions of time.

"Thank you old Patriarch. I, Lin Ming, will carve this graciousness in my heart."

Lin Ming didn't say much, only speaking this simple vow. The silver-haired old man was more than satisfied with this.

The silver-haired old man knew that for someone like Lin Ming with such a firm heart of martial arts, the pledges he made were worth more than money.

The reason he had put out 60% of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's stock of phoenix blood essence was because he hoped that their Ancient Phoenix Clan could become a World King Holy Land in the future and evolve into something much stronger.

"Good, you can go now. There are still two months until the finals begin. I will have Huo Violentstone follow you. He will create a time enchantment that will help you absorb the

Ancient Phoenix blood essence, and then you will embark towards the finals. Lin Ming, you have brought the greatest honor for me, rather, I should say that this honor is too great, great to the point that my Ancient Phoenix Clan might not be able to withstand it. To you, the Ancient Phoenix Clan might already be far too small. But, I only want to say one thing. That is no matter where you are in the future, do not forget that you have a home here."

The silver-haired old man gently smiled. His words were sincere and gave off a very sympathetic feeling. Lin Ming deeply nodded and said, "This disciple will never forget!"

"Mm, good. I believe your battlefield is to struggle on the Heaven Proclamation. For you, the Earth Proclamation is no longer difficult. You will inevitably earn the qualifications to enter an Empyrean Heavenly Palace, and you must make sure that you grasp this chance well. If you can make progress in the Heavenly Palace, then that will also be the glory of my Ancient Phoenix Clan."

"Understood!" Lin Ming succinctly said.

"Very well, you may leave. Huo Violentstone will accompany you to absorb the Ancient Phoenix blood essence. As for your wives, the Ancient Phoenix Clan will look after them. You need not worry. With the Ancient Phoenix Clan's resources, there will be no problem having them enter the Divine Lord realm. At that time, once your life has stabilized, I fear you will have already stepped into the World King realm, and even become someone outstanding amongst World Kings. With you training them yourself at that time, it will be much easier.

The silver-haired old man's words instantly erased many of Lin Ming's worries.

Lin Ming couldn't bring his wives everywhere with him. The Ancient Phoenix Clan looking after them would be the best choice.

Chapter 1273 – Middle Divine Sea Realm, Large Success

Chapter 1273 – Middle Divine Sea Realm, Large Success

…

…

…

This was an extremely vast and broad continent. Dark seething red magma flowed all over the world and the skies were filled with desolate stars. These stars had surfaces covered with craters, devastating to the eyes.

Lin Ming stood on a tall cliff. The air was filled with the heavy tang of sulfur and flame. The fire origin energy here was rich to an extreme degree, as if the air would start burning up at any moment.

This was the Ancient Phoenix Clan's best training grounds – the Land of Nirvana.

"How about it? This place is great, right!" Huo Violentstone chuckled from beside Lin Ming.

"It's a great place." Lin Ming nodded. This cultivation area was a precious treasure of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Normally it was reserved for past Patriarchs and Highest Elders; young disciples didn't have many chances to enter.

"There is a space-time enchantment here. After entering, time slows to a 12:1 rate, so one month outside will be equal to around a year in here. If you cultivate here for 10 days, that will be around four months. Afterwards, we will set off to Vast Universe Great World where the martial field of the finals will be. The timing will be just right."

"I've troubled Elder Huo." Lin Ming said.

"There's no need to mention anything useless. Time is of the essence; let's start now!"

Huo Violentstone took out the small jade bottle of Ancient Phoenix blood essence. Looking at this Ancient Phoenix blood essence, even Huo Violentstone felt greedy. He had never enjoyed such treatment, but Lin Ming was now absorbing over 20 drops at once!

The younger one was, the better they would absorb the Ancient Phoenix blood essence since it was particularly useful when one was stabilizing their foundation. But for an old man like Huo Violentstone, absorbing this Ancient Phoenix blood essence wouldn't be very useful to him.

"Truly luxurious! But, I guess that since a boy like you has managed to grow this far, you should have come across many lucky chances that were far more extravagant than this."

Huo Violentstone didn't need to be a genius to know that Lin Ming had found countless incomparably precious heavenly materials and had secretly used them.

Lin Ming only smiled, not replying. Huo Violentstone was right. Not to mention anything else, but just the supreme dragon bone was far more precious than Ancient Phoenix blood essence.

Huo Violentstone flicked his finger and the small jade bottle exploded. A bead-sized ball of blood slowly floated forwards – this was the condensed form of 20 plus drops of Ancient Phoenix blood essence.

As the Ancient Phoenix blood essence appeared, the surrounding fire origin energy was suddenly stirred up!

This fire origin energy was attracted to that phoenix blood essence, forming a swirling deep red vortex. As this vortex spun into the skies, it created true fire in space.

“What a formidable power of Laws.” Lin Ming exclaimed. This was not the first time he had absorbed Ancient Phoenix blood essence, but last time he had absorbed only a single drop. Now that he was about to absorb over 20 drops, the feeling was completely different.

He could even see that around every blood cell of the Ancient Phoenix blood essence, slight distortions in space appeared. This was the mighty power of Laws contained within the Ancient Phoenix blood essence!

The power of these Laws originated from the Great Dao Laws that were carved into the very being of a Phoenix God Beast. A God Beast and a human were two completely different life forms. When a human was born, their comprehension of Laws was at nothing, and they would have to completely rely on meditation and their own hard-earned comprehension after birth to perceive the Laws. As for a God Beast, once they were born, the Laws would be engraved into their flesh, their blood, and their bones, becoming an inextricable part of their body. Thus, every single inch of a God Beast was an incomparably precious treasure, especially this phoenix blood essence that contained the condensed life force of the phoenix!

“Prepare yourself. If an ordinary Divine Sea realm martial artist were to withstand over 20 drops of Ancient Phoenix blood essence, they would be scorched to ashes by the terrifying fire energy within. But, this shouldn’t be a problem with your foundation. Even still, it will hurt.”

As Huo Violentstone spoke, he suddenly struck out at Lin Ming. His index finger nail became incomparably sharp as he thrust it towards Lin Ming, piercing through his protective true essence and right into his heart!

Even if Lin Ming was a dual body and energy cultivator and his defensive abilities were amazing, he was nothing but wet paper in front of Huo Violentstone; this was the disparity brought about by the massive difference in cultivation.

“Ready? I will transplant the phoenix blood essence directly into your heart where it will spread through your body via your blood vessels. This is the most thorough way to do so, but it will also cause your heart to be under a tremendous load, because this phoenix blood essence is very heavy!”

A single drop of phoenix blood essence was as heavy as a lake! To move over 20 drops of phoenix blood essence in one’s bloodstream required an incomparably powerful heart.

“I’m ready.” Lin Ming nodded. He had complete confidence in his body.

“Yes!”

Huo Violentstone flicked his finger and the ball of phoenix blood essence turned into a crimson beam of light that instantly sank into Lin Ming’s body. The blood essence flew into his heart where it instantly blazed up like a roaring inferno.

In that moment, Lin Ming felt the immense load brought about by the incomparably heavy blood essence; it nearly caused his heart to stop beating.

“Eight Inner Hidden Gates – Gate of Life, open!”

The Gate of Life was located at the heart; it could directly withstand the power of the phoenix blood essence.

In the instant that Lin Ming opened the Gate of Life, energy erupted from his body. His blood vitality soared to the heavens, and faintly, the phantom of a phoenix and azure dragon appeared behind Lin Ming. His heart began to slowly and heavily beat.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

A heavy heartbeat echoed through the world, like the incessant ringing of a divine drum.

Huo Violentstone looked on from the side, no worry at all on his face. He knew that a monstrous abnormality like Lin Ming would have no problems absorbing 20 plus drops of phoenix blood essence. At most he would be startled, but there would be no life-threatening dangers. Lin Ming’s mortal body had reached incredible degrees of tempering.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Lin Ming’s heartbeat became increasingly powerful and resonant, but it remained just as slow as before. There was one or two breaths of time between every heartbeat, but every heartbeat sent a massive amount of fresh blood through his body.

Hu hu hu – !

Heaven and earth origin energy howled. A massive amount of fire energy was attracted to Lin Ming, spinning around him in a tornado of fire origin energy.

Phoenix blood essence constantly pumped out into his blood vessels from his heart, fusing into his body in a sublime matter, as if fire itself was circulating through Lin Ming.

A fierce and wild will followed it, shrouding over Lin Ming. In that moment, everything around him disappeared, leaving him in a vast and endless space. He saw a Phoenix God Beast atop a divine tree, burning in an inferno of flames.

This was an indescribably titanic tree!

The tree stood 10,000 miles tall. The branches were ancient and humble, stretching out to infinity, able to hold up even asteroids. Every leaf that fell into the water below turned into a giant island. Its roots penetrated through the entire planet, piercing deep into the burning magma at the center of the world and absorbing energy there!

This was a massive divine parasol tree. A divine parasol tree that was able to suck dry all the burning heat within a planet that was hundreds of millions of miles wide!

A 1000 mile wide phoenix perched atop this massive divine parasol tree.

This thousand mile long phoenix landed atop this divine parasol tree, bathing in the fires of nirvana!

In that moment, a dreadful wave of flames swept through the entire planet, turning the entire world into a sea of fire.

This was an apocalyptic scene. Lin Ming also knew that these were the memories of the Phoenix God Beast contained within the 20 plus drops of blood essence he had absorbed.

In these memories were also comprehensions of the Laws.

As Lin Ming was immersed in these memories, he seemed to become the incarnation of a phoenix, looking down from its perspective over all existences in the world. Within the boundless sea of fire, he saw the flowing fire origin energy, the circulation of the Fire Laws, and even the tiniest atomic structures where the two yin and yang particles interacted to produce all five elements…

This strange and mystical scene continued for an unknown amount of time. Suddenly, Lin Ming awoke from this chaotic state of mind. In the instant his eyes popped open, one could clearly see bright flames reflected within them.

His Fire Laws, during this period of enlightenment, had steadily entered the boundary of Virtual Fire and were approaching large success of Virtual Fire.

To have such attainments in the Laws at just over 30 years of age was extremely rare. Of course, someone like Dragon Fang with a cheat-like method of perception was not included in this; his comprehension of the Laws was far higher than Lin Ming's.

"Three days! This period of enlightenment has taken three days. It seems you've made some good comprehensions. Your cultivation is also at large success of the middle Divine Sea realm. As long as you use a bit more time to accumulate then you will reach the peak of the middle Divine Sea!"

As Lin Ming was undergoing enlightenment, Huo Violentstone had been sitting beside him the entire time.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and the air he inhaled gathered into two streams that danced in the air. In terms of his inner world, it had expanded once more. Lin Ming's cultivation was currently rapidly developing; his previous accumulations had been far too deep.

“Okay, I’ll train to the peak of the middle Divine Sea realm and then attend the finals of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting!”

At this time, Lin Ming was burning with excitement! He was impatient to battle powerful enemies on the martial field and experience their strength. In these past days, he realized that Empyrean Vast Universe’s disciples weren’t considered too outstanding. The far stronger Frost Dream and Xiao Moxian were disciples of other Empyreans.

Chapter 1274 – Vast Universe World Finals

Chapter 1274 – Vast Universe World Finals

…

…

…

To martial artists that lived such long lives, they simply didn't understand the concept of time while training. Like this, four months passed in the blink of an eye!

"Lin Ming, it's time to go!"

Huo Violentstone's voice echoed in Lin Ming's ear. Lin Ming opened his eyes. As he stood atop a high cliff, a casual movement from him was able to arouse the resonance of the Laws. Countless flames swirled around him, forming all sorts of spiritual fire-attribute creatures that prostrated towards him in worship.

Lin Ming's Fire Laws had already reached large success of the fifth level Concept and his cultivation had reached the peak of the middle Divine Sea realm!

If Lin Ming had entered a 1:100 time enchantment, he could have trained for two or three years and broken through to the late Divine Sea realm without a problem. However, doing so would have created instabilities in his foundation.

Only his cultivation would have increased and his other aspects wouldn't have followed. That would have been a waste of Lin Ming's potential.

The process of a genius's growth wasn't something accomplished with only seclusion. There were only extremely old martial artists that were stuck at a boundary for tens of thousands of years and would then go into deep closed-door seclusion, either making a breakthrough or dying in the process.

Of course, these people would have no progress in the future.

“Good! Very good!” Huo Violentstone said with satisfaction as he looked at Lin Ming.

The current Lin Ming’s entire body was filled with power, and his combat strength had reached the highest it had ever been.

During these four months, Lin Ming’s strength had stabilized a great deal; he was impatiently itching for a fight.

He wanted to face the 10,000 geniuses of the Divine Realm that had been screened multiple times. From these 10,000 geniuses, any casual one would be a top three ranked character of a great world. They were the true chosen prides amongst all chosen prides of heaven! Every single one of them had countless worshippers and were characters that countless great influences would desire to bring into their fold.

But now, with so many of them gathered together, it would truly be a sight to behold.

Of these people, most of them had already touched upon the fifth level Concept of their respective Laws. Of course, there were actually very few that stood within the true gates of the fifth level Concepts.

In addition, their foundation and true essence were exceedingly deep; they were far from what ordinary geniuses could hope to compare with.

Only opponents like this could arouse Lin Ming’s fighting spirit. If Lin Ming were to meet the Dragon Fang of 40 days ago, then he had sufficient confidence to defeat him!

Of course, that was only the Dragon Fang of 40 days ago.

At that time, Dragon Fang had just opened the Three Lives Pupils and his strength hadn't rapidly risen. And in these days, if Dragon Fang were to have gone deep into seclusion, his strength was sure to have grown fast.

However, this only made Lin Ming seethe with an even greater fighting spirit.

…………

At the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters, outside of Lin Ming's dwelling, Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu were waiting for him. There was also the Ancient Phoenix Clan's Patriarch, the several Highest Elders, and even Yan Littlemoon and Xiao Ping were all going to Vast Universe World to experience the finals.

The tickets for the finals were over a hundred times rarer than the tickets for the semifinals at Gravemoon Star! Just a semifinals ticket alone was enough to cause an eighth-grade sect like the Unbroken Cult to feel powerless and frustrated. As for the finals, if it weren't for Lin Ming, then the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan would only have been given a mere two or three tickets. There were some weaker Holy Lands that wouldn't even be given a single ticket.

"Let's go!"

Huo Violentstone waved his hand and everyone flew towards the spirit ship. This trip would continue for nearly two months…

…….

In an unknown space of the Divine Realm, on a bleak and desolate planet.

A black-clothed youth with a curved sword on his back was kneeling down towards the back of a haggard-looking old man. This old man looked towards the vast and starry skies, his back lonely and solemn.

This black-clothed youth was Dragon Fang. As for this old man in front of him, that was his master – Three Lives Old Man.

“300 million years. In my years, I have walked through the 3000 great worlds and explored the myriad galaxies, and you are the most splendid genius that I have ever found. Most importantly, you are suited for learning my Three Lives Pupils. I have already taught you the entirety of my life’s work. As for that loss on the Divine Seal Altar, you need not take that to heart. You lost not because Lin Ming’s strength surpassed your own, but because he already understood the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens, thus he had a tremendous superiority to you in climbing up the Divine Seal Altar…

“In a sense, you using the Three Lives Pupils to climb the Divine Seal Altar could be considered a trick, but Lin Ming was even trickier than you! Thus, of the two of you, one could climb up 80,000 feet and the other could reach the top, both of you breaking the records set by Vast Universe Heavenly Palace!

“That junior Vast Universe, because of some lucky chance he stumbled into he was able to refine the Divine Seal Altar. Of the disciples in his Heavenly Palace, none of them were able to find any tricks of their own, thus in front of the Divine Seal Altar they were nothing more than motes of dust.

“Go. Go to the incomparably broad stage of the Divine Realm and struggle for a top three position on the Heaven Proclamation.”

Three Lives Old Man was dreary and lonesome, like a cold and forsaken winter wind.

“Yes, Master!”

Dragon Fang stood up, his eyes changing to different colors as if they contained all the truths in the world.

In these one to two months, Dragon Fang had undergone an enormous change!

His cultivation had reached the late Divine Sea realm!

Dragon Fang had already spent a great deal of time at the peak of the middle Divine Sea realm. With these accumulations, he easily broke through to the late Divine Sea realm.

In addition, his Law Concepts had drawn close to perfection of the fifth level Concept, and even faintly traced upon the gate of the sixth level Concept!

If this matter was spread out, it would truly be shocking to anyone who heard it!

“Fang, you must be cautious of Divine Dream’s disciples. Divine Dream is a magnificent woman. Compared to me in my youth… she is much stronger!”

“Stronger than Master?” Dragon Fang was startled. In his opinion, even though he was at the last fading years of his life, he still had the potent strength to move stars and planets. When he was young, his strength had been unimaginable, and even Dragon Fang had seen a glimpse of this. If any Empyreans of this era were to see his master, they would also need to be respectful.

In this situation, Empyrean Divine Dream was actually stronger than his master?

“Divine Dream is only 10 million years old. She is far younger than your old master and her future has no limits. And this time, Frost Dream in particular is a disciple that Divine Dream cherishes and loves beyond all others. With her faint and elusive personality, Divine Dream was actually moved to the point that she utilized the Divine Dream World for this First Martial Meeting. Perhaps this is a smelting trial that she set down for Frost Dream. In these 10 million years, this is the first time that Divine Dream has ever held a First Martial Meeting. In other words, this Frost Dream might be the most outstanding disciple she has raised in these 10 million years. You can see just what sort of ability Frost Dream must have from this alone. If you were able to open the Three Lives Pupils three years earlier, then you might have had the strength to contend with her. But for now…”

Three Lives Old Man shook his head and Dragon Fang silently clenched his fists. He knew that his master wouldn’t speak nonsense. His master’s Three Lives Pupils were known as the eyes that could see through all of existence. Not just Laws, but he could even faintly see a blurry image of the future and sense the outline of the endless flow of time.

“There is also that Lin Ming. He will be your greatest opponent. I have a premonition that he has made great progress in these past days. Moreover, there is an incredibly great destiny enveloping him. You and him are a pair of dragons that have met each other through the hands of fate. In this era, all geniuses will rise together. This is your good fortune!”

“Disciple understands!”

“Now go. Go to Vast Universe World and participate in the finals…”

“Yes, Master!”

Chapter 1275 – Law Test

Chapter 1275 – Law Test

…

…

…

Vast Universe World was an independent world opened up by an extreme powerhouse using their tremendous supernatural powers.

Here, there existed a massive arena. This arena was completely formed from thundercrush steel as well as timeless god stones. It was so tough that even a Divine Lord master couldn't leave the shallowest of marks.

All around this arena, there were massive stands able to hold hundreds of millions of people. Just these stands alone extended 10 miles into the skies. But, these stands were still much smaller than the temporary stands created by Xiao Daochild at Gravemoon Star. This was also one of the reasons why the admission tickets were so rare.

A hundred miles away from this arena, there were groups of palaces. Each palace stretched out for an extremely long distance, and each one was the epitome of luxury and grace, with fine carvings and beautiful finishings. This was also where the geniuses of the 3000 great worlds would be located.

After a month and a half and several great void shifts, Lin Ming finally arrived at Vast Universe World, where the finals would be held.

"This is Vast Universe World!"

Lin Ming flew down from the spirit ship and discovered that the heaven and earth origin energy on Vast Universe World was much more chaotic and strong than the heaven and earth origin energy on Atlas World or True Martial World!

For a genius like Lin Ming, having a special training area wouldn't have too great of an effect right now. But, there were some more basic martial artists that could only train outside, and thus they were greatly influenced by their surroundings.

If one was to cultivate in Vast Universe World, wanting to control the circulation of origin energy was much more difficult. But, if one continued to train here, their achievements would also be greater.

Before Huo Violentstone arrived here, he had already contacted one of the organizers from Vast Universe Heavenly Palace to determine where their temporary residence would be; it was the 52nd palace.

According to the arrangements of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, the first 30 palaces were for Empyrean descendants to prepare themselves. In other words, the direct disciples of Empyreans.

Follow that, palace 31 to palace 60 were for the first place contestants of the various semifinals areas.

From palace 61 to palace 1000, they were for various disciples of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. These people weren't Empyrean descendants but core disciples as well as the disciples of the older Empyrean descendants. As for the other participants and core disciples, they were housed in even lower ranked palaces.

Many Empyrean descendants were millions of years old or even 10 million years old. Among them, the weakest were comparable to ordinary World Kings and many of them were stronger than Great World Kings. There were even some that were half-step Empyreans!

There were a great number of these people, and their top disciple was often more talented than the top disciple of a Great World King Holy Land.

An Empyrean Heavenly Palace had a truly terrifying population. An Empyrean had their descendants, and these Empyrean descendants had their own disciples, and then these disciples also had their disciples. The population would grow over the years at an exponential rate, and the total number of people easily broke past a trillion. Of course, most of these people were staff and they simply didn't possess the qualifications to contact the core of the Empyrean Heavenly Palace.

With 30 semifinals areas and each area screening out for 300 people, there were a total of 9000 participants. In addition to the 970 Heavenly Palace core disciples and the 30 Empyrean direct disciples, that was just about 10,000 individuals.

"Lin Ming, in front is the residential area for the contestants. We can't enter there, so we'll separate here for now. There are still around 10 days until the finals of the First Martial Meeting begins. You shouldn't spend this time training; it's fine as long as you adjust your mentality and prepare yourself. You should relax and also get to know the geniuses from the other great worlds."

Lin Ming's current strength had reached a bottleneck. It was impossible for him to make any significant changes in just 10 days of time. If he wanted to steadily break into the late Divine Sea realm, it would take at least several years.

"Okay."

Lin Ming also wanted to get to know the geniuses of other great worlds more.

After Huo Violentstone and the others left, Lin Ming went into the residential area by himself. He discovered that there was an enormous square in the center of this palace, with all sorts of buildings. There were restaurants, martial fields, pill shops, and weapon stores.

Upon casually entering a store, everything inside was extremely expensive, but the items were all of high quality. The worst weapons from the weapon stores were spirit artifacts.

Although these spirit artifacts didn't have much potential for growth, they were still equal to dozens or hundreds of top grade saint artifacts.

This was also a reasonable matter. The 10,000 martial artists that were able to come here were famous individuals with strength ranked in the top three of their great world. Besides those few scattered wandering martial artists, the ones with the worst background still came from Great World King Holy Lands. How could they care about a normal top grade saint artifact?

Numerous heroic young elites walked back and forth on the streets. Even a character like Bloodless Sword seemed ordinary here.

Lin Ming glanced over them, sighing. It truly was a spectacular sight to see all the Divine Sea geniuses of the Divine Realm gathered here. These people were all monstrous freaks, but even so, most of these people weren't worth Lin Ming paying attention to. The ones Lin Ming saw to be a real threat were only several people. For instance, Dragon Fang, but also Frost Dream…

"Lin Ming!"

Lin Ming suddenly stopped as he heard someone call out to him. He turned around to see a martial artist in purple clothes running towards him. He had some impressions of this fellow: he was the martial artist known as Purple Blade in the semifinals at Gravemoon Star. He had finally lost when he failed to climb up the 31st step of the Divine Seal Altar. His strength had been ranked fifth at Gravemoon Star's semifinals, inferior to Nether Limitless and Bloodless Sword.

"Purple Blade!"

"Right, haha, Brother Lin has arrived really early, but I came even earlier, about a month ago. Brother Lin, it seems you've been training quite well these days. I have to say that I envy your strength."

Purple Blade was already at the peak of the late Divine Sea realm. The next step for him was to enter the Divine Transformation realm. Thus, there was no way for him to increase his strength by raising his cultivation, so he could only enlighten himself on the Laws. But in just a few months' time, how much could he possibly perceive?

"Brother Lin just arrived, so you're probably not familiar with this place yet. Come, I'll bring you to some interesting places. There are some ruthless individuals that haunt those places. I imagine Brother Lin would be like to take a look, as only those geniuses can be Brother Lin's competition."

Purple Blade had been arrogant and proud since birth, but after witnessing Lin Ming mounting the Divine Seal Altar, he felt nothing but a deep sense of admiration towards him, and wanted to be friends with him. In the future, Purple Blade would be the leader of a great influence. There would be no harm and only gain if he were to befriend a top master.

"Alright." Lin Ming readily agreed. He was also interested in this.

Purple Blade brought Lin Ming through several streets and past a group of palaces. Finally, he came to a large square where many people had gathered.

This square had several hundred elites in it, with both men and women. In the center, there was a massive crystal platform, and this platform shined with a variety of colors.

"What is that?"

"It is used to test one's Laws. I've also seen these at my World King Palace, and they test the degree to which a trial challenger can comprehend the Laws. But, this one is several times greater than any I've seen before."

Purple Blade explained. This was clearly one of the interesting locations he had mentioned.

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. There were magic tools that could test one's comprehension of Laws?

“Come on, let’s go take a look.”

Lin Ming followed Purple Blade forwards. The crystal platform was divided into nine colored layers: red, orange, yellow, green, cyan, blue, violet, black, and white, each color corresponding to a different set of Law Concepts.

As Lin Ming walked forwards, he saw a martial artist just coming down from the crystal platform. The first four levels of the crystal platform had lit up with a blazing light, but the fifth only dimly shined for an instant before dying down.

“The fourth level Laws are his limit, and he’s just barely managed to become aware of the fifth level Concept. Not bad.”

Many of those present had already practiced the fourth level Laws to the peak. The difference was whether or not they had comprehended the fifth level Concept and just how deep their awareness was.

Above the fifth level, every little bit of progress was extraordinary.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Song is great. Haha, your results are no worse than those of that Heavenly Palace core disciple who just stepped up!”

“Are you saying that we’re worse than them? Their master is a Great World King, but so is ours! Just thinking about how the palaces are ranked by position angers me. The Empyrean descendants are arranged in the top 30 palaces, the top master of each semifinals location is arranged in the 31st to 60th palace, and then that is followed by the Empyrean Heavenly Palace core disciples and finally us. It’s like they think we are all worthless.”

“Yah! It’s not like those Empyrean Heavenly Palace core disciples are Empyrean descendants. They are only disciples of Empyrean direct disciples, so how come they are arranged in front of us!”

"We'll see how they do in the finals. Just because of their empty status as a Heavenly Palace disciple, they don't place us in their eyes at all! In truth, they can't even see the Empyreans. They are nothing but foxes pretending to be tigers."

At the edges of the crowd, Lin Ming heard such discussions going on.

Geniuses were all extremely arrogant. From the way that Vast Universe Heavenly Palace had arranged the residences of the participants, it could be seen just how they viewed the difference between Empyrean disciples and the disciples from ordinary influences.

It was originally difficult for the disciples of Empyrean Heavenly Palaces and the disciples of World King Holy Lands to live peacefully together. This was because the disciples from Empyrean Heavenly Palaces always had a sense of superiority, and the disciples of the Great World King Holy Lands would naturally envy them. Now, because of how the palace living arrangements were done, this had aroused the bitterness and criticism of others.

"Heh… talk about a crowd of country bumpkins that have yet to see the greater world. Just because you managed to stumble into some good results you're all so overly pleased with yourselves. What a bunch of idiots."

In the crowd, a cold voice suddenly spoke up, attracting everyone's angry glares. As everyone looked over, they saw a white-clothed youth speaking. He had the emblem of a starry sky embroidered on the chest of his robes. This was the symbol of a disciple from Vast Universe Heavenly Palace.

"Vast Universe Heavenly Palace disciple!"

"Core disciple? Direct disciple?"

These geniuses who were originally mocking and cursing those Empyrean Palace disciples were all extremely angry. But in the face of this Vast Universe Heavenly Palace disciple, they actually felt lacking in courage and energy. This was because this fellow's aura was simply too strong, and all of them felt as if they couldn't begin to compare with him.

“What are you being so arrogant about? If you have the ability then go up and test yourself. Don’t just stand here and talk big!” A World King Holy Land disciple shouted, not too convincingly.

“Haha, I already knew that you would have doubts. Since that’s the case, let me broaden your horizons.”

As that disciple spoke, he walked into the middle of the crowd and lazily brought up a hand. Then, with a simple gesture, he thrust his palm out. Faint fluctuations of the Space Laws appeared in the air, and the first four levels of the crystal platform immediately lit up. The fifth level also dimly shined, continuing for several breaths of time before dying down.

This was proof that his comprehension of Concepts was not just being faintly aware, but truly touching upon the fifth level threshold. Compared to Nether Limitless, he was about the same!

And Nether Limitless was himself a peak master of a great world. If it weren’t for the monstrous freaks known as Lin Ming and Dragon Fang, he would have been first in the semifinals at Gravemoon Star. He was stronger than 99% of those present!

Chapter 1276 – Frost Dream, Xiao Moxian

Chapter 1276 – Frost Dream, Xiao Moxian

…

…

…

Any casual disciple from Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, even if they weren't an Empyrean direct disciple, still nearly reached the standard of a first ranked master from a semifinals area. This caused many of the young elites present to be left speechless.

"Who… who is he?"

The several Holy Land disciples speaking before felt their faces flush red with embarrassment.

They weren't able to ascertain his status before they saw that person switch hands. This time, a golden red light covered his hand as he slapped his palm onto the crystal platform.

The last time was the Space Laws, but now it was the Metal Laws!

The crystal platform shimmered with a dazzling light once more. Without needing to mention the first four levels, even the fifth level blazed for one to two breaths of time. Although his Metal Laws were slightly worse than his Space Laws, he could still be considered as having touched upon the threshold of the fifth level Concept.

He cultivated two different Laws and yet he had reached perfection of the fourth level Concept and was soon to break through the boundary of the fifth level Concept. This disparity was obvious to all present, and it caused many of them to lose all the bluster they had before.

That disciple from Vast Universe Heavenly Palace swept his eyes through the entire audience and tipped his head upwards in victory. As for the person that had challenged him, his face had gone deep red as he was left speechless. Under the gaze of everyone present, he had disgracefully shamed himself.

These people were all geniuses of their various great worlds. When they came to the First Martial Meeting, although they didn't imagine they would be able to shock the world with a brilliant feat of talent, they believed they could at least shine in glory. But now, before the finals had even begun, they had been brutally attacked.

"I am Zhao Ji and my Honorable Master is Vast Cosmos. Remember that."

The Vast Universe Heavenly Palace disciple said with a smug smile on his face. Vast Cosmos was the chief disciple of Empyrean Vast Universe, and also had a half-step Empyrean cultivation. Not just that, but with the support of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace's resources, the strength of the disciples he taught could be imagined. To be able to touch upon the fifth level Concepts of two different Laws wasn't strange at all.

Many people clenched their jaws, but they were pressured so badly they couldn't even lift their heads. The already couldn't compare with Empyrean direct disciples, but now these Heavenly Palace core disciples were pushing them down.

"Hehe, to tell the truth, having the number one ranked participants of the semifinals be arranged in front of us is already doing you a favor; you should be content with what you have!" Zhao Ji sneered.

Purple Blade frowned. "Brother Lin, this cocky fellow really thinks his tail reaches the skies. He's even mocking you."

Lin Ming was the first ranked participant of the Gravemoon Star semifinals and was arranged in the first 60 palaces. As Zhao Ji spoke, his words naturally disparaged Lin Ming.

Lin Ming said, "Let him do as he pleases. There's no reason to quarrel over something like this. No matter how great his results are on that platform, it won't affect the overall result of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. Moreover, a genuine master wouldn't do something so ridiculous."

Lin Ming was well aware that there were many martial artists in this First Martial Meeting, as well as Empyrean descendants, that had thoroughly comprehended the fifth level Concept. That was something that wasn't as simple as touching upon the threshold!

But these people actually hadn't moved.

Lin Ming and Purple Blade's conversation wasn't hidden, thus Zhao Ji naturally heard them. He sneered and said, "You talk like you're so amazing. How about you come on stage and give it a try, so we can see just how much weight you have. You really are a shameless boaster!"

Zhao Ji provokingly said. Everyone immediately turned to Lin Ming. Out of the hundreds of people present, there were naturally some from Gravemoon Star's semifinals, thus they recognized Lin Ming.

"Isn't that Lin Ming?"

"Yes, that's Lin Ming. He's the first ranked participant of Gravemoon Star!"

"The first ranked participant was Lin Ming and the second ranked participant was Dragon Fang! Both are extreme geniuses!"

Many disciples from the Gravemoon Star semifinals started to call out Lin Ming's name after seeing him.

As for the people from other semifinal areas, they didn't think much of Lin Ming. To them, there were far too many first ranked participants from the different semifinal areas.

"First ranked of Gravemoon Star? That's him?"

"I guess he's around the same as our semifinals' first ranked participant, Blood Carnage."

As everyone was speaking, near the crystal platform, Zhao Ji stiffened, his face red, the exact same as the disciple from the World King Holy Land that he had embarrassed.

“You… you are… Lin Ming?”

Zhao Ji gulped, his words coming out a bit slurred.

If one wasn’t a disciple of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, it would be hard to imagine just how difficult it was to climb up the Divine Seal Altar’s 33 steps.

When the disciples from other semifinal areas heard that Lin Ming had mounted the peak of the Divine Seal Altar, they only knew that he was fierce. As for how fierce he was, they weren’t sure. But, as a disciple of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, Zhao Ji had personally witnessed an incomparably powerful direct disciple of Empyrean Vast Universe climb up the Divine Seal Altar in the past. However, that disciple hadn’t even been able to climb 10,000 feet up the 33rd step. In this situation, if Lin Ming could reach the top, just how strong was he?

At the beginning, when Zhao Ji first heard this news, he simply couldn’t believe it. But, after verifying this with his master, he had learnt beyond a shadow of a doubt that this news was true, despairingly so.

Even if Lin Ming were using some tricks, shortcuts, or had some treasure to climb up, there was no doubting his potential. Zhao Ji knew that he absolutely couldn’t compare to such a person, because he himself couldn’t even climb up to the 32nd step.

The great disparity between them could be imagined!

“Yes, he is Lin Ming.” Purple Blade said, his lips curving upwards. He already guessed that the name of Lin Ming had some significant mental impact to this disciple of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace.

“Lin Ming…” Zhao Ji’s complexion was very uncomfortable. In front of Lin Ming, he didn’t have any confidence at all. But even so, he couldn’t back down and lose like this here.

"My senior-apprentice brother has wanted to challenge you. Your results in climbing up the Divine Seal Altar were truly heaven-defying, but you did so using nothing but tricks!"

Lin Ming faintly smiled. "The Divine Seal Altar is a test of your comprehension of Laws. Whether or not you can find tricks to climb up all depends on your own ability. The methods are already there. Whether you can find them is your own problem."

Zhao Ji was left speechless by Ling Ming's words.

He was well aware that no matter how Lin Ming climbed up the Divine Seal Altar's 33 steps, him trying to challenge Lin Ming was only bringing about his own destruction.

So he simply walked down the crystal platform. He had spoken too arrogantly just now and had ended up slapping his own face. Zhao Ji didn't even have the shame to lift his own face up.

At this time, a pall of silence fell over the entire square.

Some people began to look towards one direction. As for others, they seemed to feel something special and also looked over.

They saw a 15-16 year old-looking young girl. She wore a long black skirt and as she walked over she resembled a devilish nocturnal temptress.

Her long hair was jet black, hanging down to her waist like a waterfall of ink. Her eyes were as wide as a baby's, incomparably bright.

Even with several hundred people present, it was possible to hear the sound of a pin drop.

"Xiao Moxian!"

"Direct disciple of Demondawn Heavenly Palace and also a direct bloodline descendant of Empyrean Demondawn – Xiao Moxian!"

And what was most breathtaking was that beside Xiao Moxian was a young woman in a long pure white dress. Her figure was tall and outstanding, and her entire body exuded a sacred and sacrosanct atmosphere, making anyone near her feel inferior.

She appeared together with Xiao Moxian and she herself was a perfect and formidable young woman. Her name was heart-stopping; she was Fairy Frost Dream!

Chapter 1277 – Child of the Dark Phoenix

Chapter 1277 – Child of the Dark Phoenix

…

…

…

Xiao Moxian and Frost Dream were two peerless women. Standing side by side, they were two women that made all surrounding martial artists feel less than dirt. These two women, whether it be in status or strength, made everyone feel incomparably distant. Even that World King Holy Land disciple who was criticizing the arrangement of the palace residences didn't complain that the Empyrean direct disciples were placed in the first 30 palaces. This was because the disparity was far too obvious.

There was no need to mention Frost Dream; it was said she was the disciple that Empyrean Divine Dream was most proud and satisfied of for these last 10 million years.

Empyrean Divine Dream was already one of the few peak characters of the entire Divine Realm. The strength of her most outstanding disciple could be imagined.

However, Fairy Frost Dream was an extremely low-key and subdued individual. The techniques she used, the Laws she cultivated, all of that was a mystery.

As for Xiao Moxian, her character was widely known as a naughty trickster that loved to play all the time. Even so, her strength was also a mystery.

During the preliminaries, Xiao Moxian's terrifying strength had struck fear into the hearts of everyone. In the Divine Dream World's 3000 great worlds, Xiao Moxian had swept through all opponents, unstoppable.

But even that was not her full strength. It was hard to imagine where the limits of her strength lay.

“They are Xiao Moxian and Frost Dream…”

Lin Ming looked at these two women, his eyes extremely sharp.

Xiao Moxian was actually only at the middle Divine Sea realm, the same as himself.

As for Fairy Frost Dream, Lin Ming couldn’t clearly see through her cultivation.

Her inner world was covered in a dense layer of fog, blurry. Let alone her inner world, even her facial features seemed to be shrouded in a dream-like layer of illusions, making all unable to clearly see her.

Beside Lin Ming, Purple Blade said to him, “Brother Lin, Fairy Frost Dream is an extremely mysterious character. Whenever she appears in public she is always concealed with the Divine Dream Laws. It’s impossible for anyone to get a clear look at her.

“As for Xiao Moxian, I’ve heard a bit of her situation. Although it isn’t some secret, not everyone knows of it… after I learned this information, I lost all confidence to face her… her talent has truly reached a boundary that mortals like us cannot imagine.”

As Purple Blade spoke, he saw Lin Ming’s not too concerned expression and continued to say, “Brother Lin, I’m not trying to scare you. In my opinion, your talent is already heaven-defying amongst all heaven-defying geniuses. But, if compared to Xiao Moxian, I’m afraid that even you are far inferior…”

“Oh?” Lin Ming looked at Purple Blade with amazement in his eyes. In Purple Blade’s opinion, Xiao Moxian’s talent was far greater than his own?

The Divine Seal Altar was mainly a test of one’s potential. When Lin Ming climbed up the Divine Seal Altar, although he had relied on some shortcuts, the undeniable truth was that his potential swept away the dozens of Empyrean disciples of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace for the last 2 million years.

Because Purple Blade didn't understand him, Lin Ming wouldn't think it was strange that Purple Blade thought he was worse than Xiao Moxian. But, Purple Blade had said that Lin Ming was far worse than Xiao Moxian.

This surprised Lin Ming. It was clear that Xiao Moxian was quite special.

"Let's hear it."

Purple Blade said, "Brother Lin, I know that you are hiding some secrets and also have many other cards you have yet to reveal. Your future achievements are something I cannot imagine, but even so, I fear that you are too far off from Xiao Moxian. She is truly a monster amongst all monstrous geniuses. Let me say this first: Xiao Moxian is younger than you. She is only 26 years old right now."

"26 years old!?"

As Lin Ming heard this age he was truly horrified. A 26 year old middle Divine Sea realm master!? This age combined with this cultivation was ridiculously shocking!

An extreme genius, even if they didn't cultivate the Laws, ignoring their foundation and cultivation methods, merely seeking to increase their strength, even if they ignored all consequences to take all sorts of medicines, they still might not be able to reach the middle Divine Sea realm at 26 years of age.

And Xiao Moxian was clearly not in this situation. There was no mistaking her strength. Whether it was in comprehension of Laws or foundation, she far surpassed all her peers!

Lin Ming couldn't begin to imagine just how she did so much in so little time.

Purple Blade was already expecting this response from Lin Ming. He said, “The reason Xiao Moxian has her current achievements is because she has a special bloodline. Her mother is not a human…”

As Purple Blade said this, Lin Ming was stunned. “Her mother isn’t a human? Is she from the demon race?”

In the Divine Realm, besides humans, there were a small number of other races. For instance, the demon races’ ogre race and imp race. Even so, all of them combined together were only a small number. Their population was nothing in comparison to the humans’.

In Lin Ming’s impressions, since Empyrean Demondawn was known as Demondawn, the Dawn of all Demons, then it wouldn’t be strange if Xiao Moxian’s mother was also from the demon race.

Purple Blade shook his head, “It isn’t the demons but the monsters. If I say this it might scare you a bit, but the rumors say that Xiao Moxian’s mother is a Dark Phoenix…”

As Purple Blade said this, Lin Ming was truly scared silly. “Dark Phoenix? A God Beast!?”

According to what Lin Ming knew, the most common phoenix was a Fire Phoenix, with a small number being Ice Phoenixes. As for Dark Phoenixes, Lin Ming had once seen one in Empyrean Divine Seal’s dream-like memories. But now, in the current Divine Realm, these types of phoenixes had disappeared long ago.

However, that was not the most critical point. A human Empyrean was originally an existence comparable to a God Beast, and their strength might even surpass a God Beast. In Empyrean Demondawn’s Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming wouldn’t be startled if there was a God Beast there, or even a primordial God Beast. No, what Lin Ming thought was inconceivable was that even though a God Beast could change into human form, no matter how much sex they had with a human it should be impossible for a child to be born from them!

Let alone a God Beast with a human, even a God Beast mating with another God Beast would find having a child incomparably difficult. The more powerful a species was, the more difficult it was to bear descendants. This was part of the laws of nature that balanced the universe. Otherwise, there would be hundreds of millions of God Beasts and it would be beyond simple for them to sweep through and rule the Divine Realm.

In this sort of situation, how could there be a child between a God Beast and a human?

Lin Ming finally knew why Purple Blade thought that his talent was far inferior to Xiao Moxian's.

A God Beast was originally the beloved darling of the world Laws. Their entire body was a treasure and their bones and organs and flesh were all engraved with the most mystical and profound Law runes. When a God Beast was born, they would not need any training at all to possess strength only inferior to that of an Empyrean after growing up.

Of course, correspondingly, there were many shortcomings. This was that the Laws they possessed were more or less finalized at their birth. No matter how much they trained, this wouldn't change much. Also, their ability to learn was far worse than humans'.

But, if a God Beast and a human could mate together, the child they produced would inherit the learning capabilities of a human but also the heaven-defying talent of a God Beast. It was hard to imagine just how terrifying such an existence would be!

Moreover, since this Xiao Moxian was the direct bloodline descendant of Empyrean Demondawn, then her father must naturally also be an extreme character. Otherwise, how could he possibly obtain the favor and lust of a God Beast taken human shape?

Her father was an extreme character, her mother was a God Beast, and her grandfather was an outstanding Empyrean!

This sort of background was high to the point that it couldn't be any higher!

It wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that Xiao Moxian was the proudest daughter of heaven within the entire Divine Realm!

“Ancient Phoenix Clan… in front of Xiao Moxian, there simply isn’t any comparison at all…”

Lin Ming sighed with emotion. The Ancient Phoenix Clan, no matter how much Ancient Phoenix blood they transplanted, could not compare with Xiao Moxian. Xiao Moxian had the true body of a phoenix child. Every drop of her blood, every bone, every muscle, and even her soul was marked with the characteristics of a God Beast.

“No wonder that Xiao Moxian can reach the middle Divine Sea realm at 26 years of age but also comprehend the Laws to this level. That is because those Laws have already been engraved within her body from her birth…”

Lin Ming felt a bit relieved. Xiao Moxian didn’t need to do as other geniuses did and assiduously perceive the Laws. She already had the Laws within her body and merely needed to slowly digest them. Such a disparity was truly frustrating.

“Yes. When the resources and inheritances of Demondawn Heavenly Palace are added on top, we truly can’t compare.”

Purple Blade spoke with sincere envy. In front of Xiao Moxian, he really was nothing more than an ant. The difference between them was too great.

“Big Sister, there are so many people here, it’s really lively!” Xiao Moxian giggled as she saw all the people gathered around the crystal platform. As she smiled, she revealed a pair of sharp canines.

“They are testing their comprehension of Laws.” Fairy Frost Dream said. Her voice was similar to immortal tunes flowing down a 100,000 foot tall snow-capped mountain.

“Eh, is there something so fun?” Xiao Moxian had just arrived at Vast Universe World so she had yet to take a walk around. “I also want to play a bit. Would Big Sister Frost Dream like to try it too?”

Xiao Moxian casually asked. Frost Dream faintly smiled and said in a soft voice, “No need.”

“Then I’ll give it a try.”

Xiao Moxian walked into the crowd and everyone spontaneously drew away from her.

Although Xiao Moxian seemed extremely casual as if she were just playing around, everyone else’s eyes widened. They held their breath, waiting to see Xiao Moxian’s performance.

Among the young generation, she was someone who truly stood at the peak!

Standing before the crystal platform, Xiao Moxian simply didn’t ready anything at all. She just lightly thrust out her palm, and in that moment a black flame burnt in Xiao Moxian’s palm. Although this black flame appeared inconspicuous, the moment it lit up, the entire crystal platform began to light up. The first five levels blazed with a shining light and even the sixth level began to glimmer with a bright light!

She had reached perfection in the fifth level Laws, and even touched upon the sixth level Concept!

As everyone saw this they were shocked speechless, panic-stricken. A normal genius was already considered amazing if they could touch upon the fifth level Concept, but Xiao Moxian had already touched upon the sixth level Concept. Her comprehension of Laws was truly monstrous.

“Too strong!” Purple Blade sighed from beside Lin Ming. In terms of the comprehension of Laws, Xiao Moxian had flung him impossibly far away. He had only reached large success in the fifth level Concept.

“Xiao Moxian is only playing around and yet she’s managed to reach such a level. She’s definitely not trying her best. In terms of Laws, I am truly far inferior to her.” Lin Ming shook his head. His comprehension of Laws was already considered outstanding, but it was far too difficult for him to compare with Xiao Moxian, who had the Laws engraved into her body as a true God Beast did.

Xiao Moxian didn’t have any reaction to her result. She simply chuckled and said, “Big Sister Frost Dream, are you sure you don’t want to try?”

She looked completely like a young girl who only came to play about and have some fun. To other geniuses, they were here in a ruthless battle to decide superiority and gain glory. But to Xiao Moxian, this was only an amusing toy.

Frost Dream smiled, shaking her head again and saying, “No.”

“Okay. Big Sister Frost Dream you are just too boring. Let’s leave this place and go shopping over there.”

Chapter 1278 – The Finals Begin

Chapter 1278 – The Finals Begin

…

…

…

"Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao Moxian is fierce, truly fierce! Wonderful! I'm filled with admiration!"

As Xiao Moxian was about to leave, Vast Cosmos's disciple, Zhao Ji, walked towards her with a face full of smiles. "I am Zhao Ji. Junior-apprentice Sister, it is truly my lucky chance to meet you here."

"Who are you?"

Xiao Moxian glanced over at Zhao Ji, clearly not interested in bothering with him.

"I am a disciple of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace's Vast Cosmos."

Zhao Ji put forth his master's name, but his status wasn't able to arouse any interest from Xiao Moxian. Xiao Moxian singly gave a light, "Oh," before pulling Fairy Frost Dream's arm and leading her away from the crystal platform.

Zhao Ji was left behind by himself, his hands cupped against his chest. This caused him to feel extremely awkward.

In truth, from start to finish, Xiao Moxian hadn't even bothered to glance at the surrounding martial artists. From this, Lin Ming could faintly feel that even though Xiao Moxian had a lively and childlike innocent demeanor, her playfulness only extended to those she was familiar with. Strangers, and in particular those strangers that were ordinary in talent, were treated the exact opposite. After all, arrogance was something bred into her bones.

Xiao Moxian had tested herself just now because she thought it was amusing. She didn't do so to demonstrate her ability like the other martial artists here, because doing so had no significance. This was just like how a human felt superior to a pack of ants. They weren't even on the same playing field.

"Let's go."

Lin Ming said to Purple Blade. As they were about to leave, he suddenly saw a black-clothed martial artist with a strangely curved sword on his back, walking towards the crystal platform. This person was Dragon Fang.

"Dragon Fang, he also wants to test himself?"

Lin Ming just had this thought when he saw Dragon Pang's palm thrust out. This palm actually had the feeling as if the flow of time were shifted around it. Suddenly, the crystal platform lit up. The first four levels shined with a dazzling light and even the fifth level shimmered, shining for several dozen breaths of time before slowly dying down.

"That's Dragon Fang! For him to have the fifth level of the crystal platform shine for so long, his Laws must have reached the fifth level Concept!"

"Compared to Xiao Moxian, his result is far worse, but that's still amazing."

"This person came in second place at the Gravemoon Star semifinals, only inferior to Lin Ming! Rather, it should be said that his potential is worse than Lin Ming's. As for his strength, no one knows."

Those that could recognize Dragon Fang also came from Gravemoon Star's contest arena. Although Dragon Fang had been completely beaten by Lin Ming, he had still left a profound impression on everyone.

To be more accurate, Dragon Fang and Lin Ming were already on a completely different level.

“Large success of a fifth level Law; I fear that is the strongest result you’ll find under the Empyrean descendants!”

“There are even some weaker Empyrean descendants that are weaker than him! How come those from the Gravemoon Star semifinals are so strong. Isn’t there still Lin Ming, who is even stronger?”

The participants of the other contest areas discussed. As those from Gravemoon Star heard about this, they felt a certain sense of pride. They already knew that Lin Ming and Dragon Fang were fierce, and now those that had suspected them had actually seen them with their own eyes.

Several hundred feet away, Lin Ming witnessed the entire scene.

“Dragon Fang… he actually used the Time Laws on that crystal platform.”

Lin Ming took a deep breath. Before now, he only knew that Dragon Fang’s most outstanding ability was his mastery of the Space Laws. Nether Limitless had been able to create four spatial mirror images, but Dragon Fang had been able to use eight of them. The disparity between someone who just touched upon the fifth level Concept and someone who steadily entered the fifth level Concept could be seen from this.

And now, Dragon Fang’s Time Laws had already reached the fifth level. It was unknown just what boundary his Space Laws had reached!

The Time Laws and Space Laws were two of the most difficult Laws to comprehend. Correspondingly, they were also two of the strongest Laws. Of these two, the Time Laws were far more abstract and elusive, and faintly superior to the Space Laws.

“Dragon Fang… he’s a terrifying opponent! In these past months his comprehension of the Laws has reached an even higher level and his cultivation has entered into the late

Divine Sea realm. I still have no idea what cards he's holding back. In terms of comprehending the Laws, I can't compare with him at all."

In terms of Laws, Lin Ming was indeed inferior to Dragon Fang and far more inferior to Xiao Moxian. But, true combat didn't depend on just one's comprehension of the Laws; there were many other aspects that influenced one's comprehensive combat strength.

....

10 days passed in the blink of an eye. Besides the unfathomably deep Frost Dream and Xiao Moxian, Lin Ming saw several strong Empyrean descendants.

As the sun rose on the 11th day, Lin Ming was sitting in meditation in his palace. He suddenly heard a voice spread through his mind.

"All participants of the finals, gather in the square. The finals of the First Martial Meeting shall begin today!"

A solemn voice spread through every palace. Lin Ming opened his eyes. Today, the beginning of the finals had come at last.

The entire martial field was filled with 10,000 young elites. All of them had come from their respective palaces and were gathered at the central square.

Here, dozens of World King powerhouses had gathered. They were all the presiders of the various semifinal contest areas, and even Xiao Daochild was included amongst them. With several dozen World King powerhouses gathered together, the might of their aura could be imagined!

10,000 geniuses stood quietly, waiting for the finals to arrive.

"Everyone!"

After everyone had gathered, a strong and tall man in white robes descended from the skies. His figure was tremendous and his aura was pressuring. His entire body emitted a breathtaking pressure.

"I am Empyrean Vast Universe's direct chief disciple, Vast Cosmos. I represent Vast Universe Heavenly Palace in welcoming you all here. You are all truly outstanding!"

"Vast Cosmos?"

"He is Vast Cosmos? If we can enter the top 10 ranks of the Earth Proclamation we can enter Vast Universe Heavenly Palace and also obtain his tutelage?"

"Senior Vast Cosmos has a half-step Empyrean cultivation. He is more than qualified to guide us. Even the Great World King of a first-order world has to pay deep respects to Senior Vast Cosmos."

The young geniuses present secretly discussed with true essence sound transmissions. For many of them, Vast Cosmos was the fiercest character they had yet to see in their lives.

"Now, I shall announce the rules. The lot of you have already been divided into groups for elimination."

As Vast Cosmos spoke, he flourished his hands and a massive curtain of light appeared in front of everyone. This curtain of light was 1000 feet wide and had 10,000 names displayed on it. Each name had a number following it – these were the palace numbers that everyone had lived at.

Of 10,000 people, they were divided into 10 groups with 1000 people each.

"1000 people? How do we fight? Could it be an elimination trial like the Divine Seal Altar?"

Lin Ming immediately thought. If they carried out a round-robin tournament to ensure absolute fairness, then everyone would have to fight 999 other people. This seemed too troublesome.

But at this time, he also discovered that each group of 1000 people was also divided into two parts. The first part had 30 people written in red, and the second part had 970 people written in white.

Lin Ming's name was red, and many of the Heavenly Palace core disciples were white.

In the skies, Vast Cosmos said, "Every great group is divided into two smaller groups depending on your results in the semifinals as well as the strength you've displayed so far. The first group has 30 people and the second group has 970 people. For those in the second group, they have three chances to challenge someone from the first group. If they can win in any single one of these battles, they may swap positions with their opponent. Otherwise, if you are defeated in all three challenges then you will be directly eliminated! As for those that are defeated and replaced in the first group, they also have three chances to challenge someone from the first group again. If they lose all three challenges, they too will be eliminated! This will continue until all those from the second group have lost their qualifications!"

Upon hearing these rules, those that were selected to enter the second group felt uncomfortable. To put it in other words, Vast Universe Heavenly Palace did not believe those from the second group had any chances of winning and wanted to directly eliminate them from the tournament. This round of eliminations was developed as their final chance.

"They really think we're useless trash."

"Although we can't enter the top 10 of the Earth Proclamation, we still shouldn't be directly placed in the elimination group!"

Out of the 10,000 participants, there were only 300 people in the first groups. 200 of them were Empyrean descendants and Heavenly Palace core disciples, and the other 100 were the young elites chosen from the 30 semifinal contest areas.

This caused many of the third and fourth ranked participants of the semifinals to be placed in the second group.

There were even some contest areas with bad luck that had their second ranked participant placed into the second group.

This caused them all to immediately fume with anger.

“What is the meaning of this? I came in second in my semifinals contest area, so why am I in the second group? There are some people that were ranked fifth in their contest area that are still in the first group!”

“These grouping rules are too random!”

These people were referring to Gravemoon Star’s contest area. The fifth placed Purple Blade was placed in the first group, much less Lin Ming and Dragon Fang.

Chapter 1279 – Slaughter City

Chapter 1279 – Slaughter City

…

…

…

“These grouping rules are too unfair. Why are some people that were ranked second in their contest area still placed into the second group, and yet the fifth of another contest area can be placed into the first group!”

“Yes! This is unfair! I would like to ask what the basis of this grouping is. Is it only subjective judgment?”

The geniuses present were very proud. After being viewed as worthless by others and also being treated unfairly, they certainly weren’t convinced.

“Silence!”

Vast Cosmos didn’t need to speak at all. Beside him, several World Kings shouted out, their voices fierce. These World Kings, once they released their pressure, were not something that these juniors could withstand. Many of them immediately began to stream a cold sweat.

“Rules are rules. You may only follow and cannot resist. As for the reasoning behind how these rules are established, I have no need to explain to the likes of you.”

Vast Cosmos’s voice was indifferent, as if he couldn’t be bothered to speak at all.

To someone at his level, this group in front of him was nothing more than a pack of children. Although they were chosen prides of heaven, the road of a martial artist was long and difficult, filled with dangers. Whether or not any of them could grow was unknown. Out of these 10,000 geniuses present, only a very small number of them would reach the World King realm. As for the rest, they would only be Holy Lords.

They simply weren't worth Vast Cosmos paying attention to.

"This bunch of idiots, it's as if they think they are so fierce. Out of these 10,000 people, only 300 are chosen. In truth even I'm surprised that I've been chosen. Even I have to think that I'm a bit worse than the required standard."

Beside Lin Ming, Purple Blade shook his head. Before coming to the finals area, Lin Ming, Dragon Fang, and some others had all been training. But, Purple Blade had already cultivated as much as he could and three months was far from enough for allowing him to become any stronger. Thus, he used this time to study his opponents.

Out of these 10,000 people, he had gathered the materials of the entire 1000 people in his group. After carefully analyzing it, there were over hundred people stronger than he was.

"Brother Lin, I must thank you and Dragon Fang. You and Dragon Fang are too strong, so I believe that Gravemoon Star's ranking simply didn't apply to you. In that case, Nether Limitless should have been considered first and I should have been considered third. That's why there are five people from our area.

Purple Blade was extremely self-aware of his own strength. After researching all the information of those here, he knew that many people were stronger than he was.

"Everyone, follow me!"

Vast Cosmos loudly said. At this time, with a great rumbling sound not too far away from the crowd, the ground began to cave in for dozens and dozens of miles. And in the center of the collapsing earth was a metal city that slowly began to rise up into the air. This city looked fierce and barbaric, with harsh and bewildering angles. It was red all over and emitted a vast and ancient aura. It was unknown just what type of metal was used to make this.

As soon as this metal city appeared, many of the young elites present felt their hearts shake. Facing this city, they felt all the hairs rise up on their body. It was difficult to summon any courage or confidence in the presence of this crimson city.

“This is Slaughter City! It is my Honorable Master Vast Universe’s Empyrean spirit treasure! He brought it up from a 100 million year blood pond in a slaughter hell, and it carries with it a terrible slaughter energy! The main battlefield of the semifinals will be Slaughter City. If you cannot even pass its gates then you have already lost all qualifications to compete.”

As Vast Cosmos spoke, all of the young elites present glanced at each other in shock and dismay. So there was another elimination event. Before the finals truly began, there would first be a massive round of eliminations. This was a way to simplify the competition without affecting the fairness of it, so that the number of matches was reduced as much as possible.

“Slaughter hell, 100 million year blood pond… I wonder just what sort of place this is that you can actually fish up an Empyrean spirit treasure.”

In Empyrean Vast Universe’s 10 million years of life, he had only created two Empyrean spirit treasures himself. But in truth, he actually had many more Empyrean spirit treasures. Most of them were lucky chances he found, left behind by ancient Empyreans.

“There is this slaughter hell, but there is also that Soul World that Empyrean Divine Dream went to before. I’ve never heard about such strange places before.”

Lin Ming sighed deeply. The Divine Realm was far too broad. There were so many mystic realms that it was impossible to count them, and he didn’t even know the names of the overwhelmingly vast majority of them.

“You may enter now.”

Vast Cosmos indifferently said.

"Slaughter City, great! I must enter Slaughter City in a much more relaxed manner than the others. I will show them that they were mistaken in including me in the elimination group."

"This is my time to shine! Although it's impossible for me to compare favorably with the monstrous freaks here, as long as I can do better than 70-80 of the people then that will be enough for me to be praised throughout the entire Divine Realm!"

Many young elites were brimming with fighting spirit as they saw Slaughter City, especially those martial artists who believed they should have been placed in the first group. As the peak geniuses of their various great worlds, most of them were prideful individuals who did not fear challenges. Now that they were looked down on so much, they naturally simmered with rage.

The slaughter fields within the city were over 20 miles wide and long. From the square that everyone was on to the city gates, there was a three mile wide abyss. As one peered down, the sight was enough to make their hearts skip a beat. Within this abyss was a river of blood that emitted an extremely strong coppery stench! Sad and mournful cries faintly wafted upwards, as if countless tortured souls were sealed within the blood river.

"This isn't an illusion; this is a real river of blood. Moreover, this isn't ordinary blood. This blood should be related to that so-called 100 million year blood pond." As Lin Ming was thinking this, several dozen disciples had already flown up from the square, heading towards Slaughter City.

"Go!"

"Although it's impossible for me to take first place in this First Martial Meeting, I still want to be the first to enter the city!"

Many masters hadn't moved, but some people had the desire to be the first to enter Slaughter City. If they did, they at least would have something to boast about once they left.

“So this is pressure created from killing intent and the pressure of resentful spirits. Although it’s a bit troublesome, it’s not enough to stop me!”

Several dozen people instantly flew one or two miles forwards. As they saw their goal in sight, many of them revealed joyous expressions. But at this time, several massive blood hands emerged from the abyssal blood river, smashing down their palms at these geniuses.

“Break!”

Many geniuses attacked these blood hands, but their attacks vanished completely, disappearing into the blood hands.

“No!”

Many people cried out in misery. They were instantly swallowed up by these blood hands and disappeared without a trace.

Only two people managed to avoid the blood hands after a series of desperate maneuvers in the air, shakily managing to mount the gates of Slaughter City.

As everyone saw this, they sucked in a breath of cold air.

Of the dozens of people, only two of them managed to pass. Although those that tried were from the second group and they weren’t too strong either, this elimination rate was too amazing. From the looks of it, there wouldn’t be many people left over in the second group after this.

“This is difficult. It’s impossible to defend against those blood hands; we have to avoid them.”

Many people quickly reached this conclusion. Then, several dozen more people flew towards the gates of Slaughter City. The killing intent and resentful energy enveloped them. When the blood hands rose up, these people all tried every method possible to dodge, but over 90% of them failed. Finally, only three or four people managed to reach the city gates.

Compared to the first try, this wasn’t much better.

“This is far too difficult!”

Many people suddenly had different expressions, their complexions paling.

And at this moment, a tall and powerfully built man in white clothes laughed as he shot towards the city gates. He didn’t follow the others, instead going by himself. As a giant blood hand reached up towards him, he didn’t dodge or evade. Instead, he took out a long staff from his spatial ring and smashed it against the blood hand, immediately scattering most of it!

Blood fog drifted about as the man easily reached the gates of Slaughter City.

“Who is that person? He’s formidable!”

“His name is Shiku. I don’t know where he comes from but he is a complete dark horse. He is the first ranked participant from our contest area and uses a simple long staff. He’s far too strong.”

Here, the first ranked participants of their semifinals areas were generally known by everyone else, and others also had a general understanding.

“That boy with the staff is decent. I heard his name is Shiku. It seems he was hiding his strength at the semifinals.”

“It isn’t that he was hiding his strength but that no one could force him to use his true strength to begin with. I wonder which great expert’s disciple he is.”

The present World Kings discussed with true essence sound transmissions. They were clearly surprised that Shiku could use his staff to forcefully scatter the blood hands.

After Shiku was a pale-faced martial artist – Nether Limitless. He wanted to copy Shiku and scatter the blood hands, but after two continual attacks he wasn’t able to do anything to them at all. Instead, he was nearly grasped by the blood hands, and was forced to use the Concept of Space to narrowly dodge them and mount the city gates.

Nether Limitless's expression was extremely ugly. He couldn't compare to Empyrean descendants, and it was even fine if he couldn't compare to Lin Ming or Dragon Fang, but now there was some random fellow that popped out of nowhere who was much stronger than he was!

However, on the great stage of the Divine Realm, Nether Limitless was only able to play a minor supporting role; there weren't many people paying attention to him. Those that could mount the city gates were already astounding individuals; who cared whether or not he was able to scatter these blood hands?

After Nether Limitless was Dragon Fang. Dragon Fang slashed out his sword and sheared a blood hand in half, easily mounting the city gates.

"Another one cut through the blood hands!"

"So fierce! I attacked the blood hands too but it was like a gust of wind hitting a towering tree. Isn't this Dragon Fang second from his contest area? I wonder just how freakish that Lin Ming is?"

As everyone was talking, Lin Ming also moved.

He lightly flew through the air. The killing intent and resentful aura of the blood pond wasn't able to affect him at all. At this time, a blood hand reached towards him.

Lin Ming swept out his spear, directly breaking that blood hand off from the middle!

Looking at Lin Ming's calm and unmoved appearance, everyone's mouths were left ajar.

"He really is a freak! Gravemoon Star has produced two monstrous abnormalities. If that Dragon Fang were to go to another contest area, he could easily be first. But there is always someone stronger than the strong. In the end he was only placed second."

After mounting the city gates, Lin Ming looked over at Shiku. He could feel that this burly and hearty martial artist was very strong. For him to be able to scatter the blood hands so easily must mean that his strength was terrifying.

"He's also a dual body and energy cultivator!"

Lin Ming was immediately able to see that this fellow trained in the body transformation technique, and that his cultivation of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates was no worse than his own!

"How did he train to that level?"

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a sharp light. This Divine Realm First Martial Meeting was truly a hidden dragon and crouching tiger of talents, filled with countless masters. There was actually someone that had managed to reach such attainments in the body transformation technique. He must have had some heaven-defying lucky chance.

Chapter 1280 – Unchallenged

Chapter 1280 – Unchallenged

…

…

…

After Dragon Fang and Lin Ming mounted the city gates, many others followed.

Even the Empyrean descendants no longer bothered posturing.

"That is White King! Empyrean Vast Universe's direct disciple!"

White King had a very low-key personality. Although he had joined the preliminaries, he didn't reveal his true abilities and he rarely came out to the contestant area, so many people didn't know about him.

Without any problem, White King easily defeated the blood hands and stepped onto the city gates.

After White King, Xiao Moxian also flew up. She even engaged the blood hands in a little tussle before scattering them. The other martial artists were afraid of the blood hands and vigorously tried to avoid their attacks, but this was actually amusing to Xiao Moxian.

Then, it was time for Fairy Frost Dream.

Frost Dream gently lifted her hand, covering her entire body with a shroud of scattered light. This dream-like scattered light slowly revolved around Frost Dream, seeming like countless gorgeous flower petals that fell around her. Then, she simply vanished.

In the next moment she appeared above the city gates. A hazy halo of light appeared, shining with dazzling colors like spring cherry blossoms. Frost Dream appeared within these flower petals, proud and tall, like a goddess fallen down from the highest heavens. Her entire body exuded a holy and sanctified aura. Even though she had entered Slaughter City, she wasn't stained with even the tiniest scent of blood.

Like this, Frost Dream had inexplicably appeared within Slaughter City, as if those flower petals had led her there. From start to finish, no one had been able see how she moved or what Laws she utilized.

"Is that teleportation?"

"Impossible! The power of space around Slaughter City is extremely solid and there is also that resentful energy that is hindering us all. It's already difficult for us to fly, so how could she possibly teleport?"

"Too horrifying. I don't know what Laws she used to accomplish what she just did. Who could possibly be her match?"

Everyone looked at Fairy Frost Dream with awe in their eyes. Xiao Moxian was a heaven-gifted eternally rare genius, but she was still only 26 years old. Being so young, her strength would naturally lag behind her senior.

Moreover, after understanding Xiao Moxian's information, although one still couldn't hold a candle to her, at least one could clearly see her strength. She wasn't like Fairy Frost Dream, who had always been a mystery. Even now, no one had the faintest clue about her.

"These aren't the Space Laws. This Frost Dream is too terrifying…"

Dragon Fang thought to himself. As someone with an extreme understanding of the Space Laws and who also touched upon the sixth level Concept, he could easily distinguish whether or not Fairy Frost Dream had used the Space Laws just now.

There was no limit in this universe. There was always a higher mountain and a stronger person!

Many martial artists sighed with emotion. Frost Dream was already so horrifying and yet no one knew where the limits of her strength lay.

After Frost Dream, the other remaining participants were all overshadowed. Even if they could defeat the blood hands, that wasn't anything special at all.

Soon, all 10,000 people had tried to enter Slaughter City, with only 890 succeeding!

"10,000 people and now 90% were suddenly eliminated!"

"This is just too abnormal. I thought that after entering the finals I would be able to earn a ranking, but I never imagined there would be so many people that wouldn't even have the chance to enter the arena!"

"There are too many geniuses. This competition is the definition of brutal!"

Even those that successfully entered Slaughter City thought this.

As for those martial artists that were overly confident in themselves, they also restrained the contempt and envy in their hearts. The difference was laid out in front of them. Many of them had managed to barely bypass those hands to enter Slaughter City, whilst some easily defeated the blood hands to enter. There was even someone like Fairy Frost Dream who had entered using some inconceivable means.

"Let the battle begin!"

One of the World Kings managing the tournament suddenly announced.

In the 10 great divisions, those that were eliminated were in the second group. Everyone in the first group would be considered has having passed.

Lin Ming was in the third division. In his division, there were 62 individuals remaining in the second group. They had to challenge those 30 martial artists in the first group.

“Dragon Fang?”

Lin Ming was surprised. He hadn’t noticed before, but he and Dragon Fang were placed in the same division. In addition, Purple Blade was also here.

“Choose your opponent. Each of you has three chances.”

The one managing this division was a thin old man. He wore blue clothes and had an extraordinary and ethereal-like temperament to him.

The 62 individuals chose their opponents. Neither Lin Ming nor Dragon Fang was selected.

This was also a reasonable matter. As one of the few people in their division capable of defeating those blood hands, wasn’t challenging someone as strong as they were just asking to die?

Beside Lin Ming, several other people weren’t chosen either. These were Empyrean descendants, Heavenly Palace core disciples, or the original first ranked martial artists of their contest areas.

Everyone else had three or four opponents. There were even some with poor performances as they entered Slaughter City, like Purple Blade, who were simultaneously chosen by seven or eight people.

“So that’s how it is. The elimination round in entering Slaughter City helps to reduce the number of participants but it is also to help those in the second group have an approximate understanding of the strength of the others. They can learn who is weak and who is strong so they don’t randomly waste their time.”

As Lin Ming was thinking, he suddenly felt someone's eyes fall onto his body. He saw a white-clothed youth looking at him. This youth was shaved bald with a nine ringed scar on his head. He wore straw sandals and a loose robe, the very image of a solemn monk.

"Monk…"

Lin Ming's eyebrows arched up.

"Benefactor Lin, I'm blessed to meet you. I am a disciple of Mount Potala, Hang Chi."

"Mount Potala…" Lin Ming was startled. He had never heard the name of Mount Potala before.

As Lin Ming was trying to recall anything about Mount Potala, Purple Blade's true essence sound transmission suddenly rang in his hears.

"Brother Lin, Mount Potala is an Empyrean Heavenly Palace level influence. They have an incomparably low profile most of the time, but they are one of the longest-lived sects with the most glorious history, and it is even rumored that they have two Empyreans in their sect!"

"Two Empyreans?" Lin Ming asked, startled. A sect with two Empyreans!

"There are extremely few double Empyrean influences. In the future, Divine Dream Heavenly Palace and Demondawn Heavenly Palace will be the same. Fairy Frost Dream and Xiao Moxian could be called young Empyreans. But, whether it is Divine Dream Heavenly Palace or Demondawn Heavenly Palace, they cannot compare with Mount Potala. This is the difference in background. I heard that Mount Potala has already existed for 3.6 billion years…"

"3.6 billion years!"

Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. For an influence to survive for 3.6 billion years, that was a truly terrifying number!

"In these 3.6 billion years of history, would there always be an Empyrean standing guard within their ranks? Wouldn't that mean they had several dozen Empyreans born from their sect?"

"I am not too clear about that. Mount Potala is extremely mysterious. The only reason I understand a little about them is because I was investigating information about everyone who is participating in the First Martial Meeting finals."

Lin Ming deeply looked at Hang Chi. This monk exuded an aura as deep as the sea. He was clearly an extreme master.

"There are really too many masters here. This is a den of crouching tigers and hidden dragons!" Lin Ming thought to himself again. He cupped his hands and greeted Hang Chi in return.

"It's fortunate to meet you too."

Since this fellow was polite, Lin Ming naturally had to return the politeness.

And at this time, the fierce battling of the elimination series began. Every large division had several battles continuing on at the same time. In nearly all of them, the participants from the second group were defeated.

After battles and more battles, there would be someone eliminated every now and then. But this intense combat had no influence on Lin Ming at all. When the sun set and the elimination round was over, out of the 10,000 people at the start, only 300 people were remaining, with each division having 30 people.

Purple Blade was unlucky; he had been eliminated.

There wasn't much he could do about this. He was someone who just barely managed to enter into the first group. On Gravemoon Star's side, there was only Lin Ming, Dragon Fang, Nether Limitless, and Bloodless Sword left.

To a martial artist, there was no difference whether they fought in the morning or night. After several hours of rest, the group matches would begin.

And at this time, it was still around midnight.

“Things are happening so fast!”

Lin Ming thought to himself. There wasn’t even time for a day’s rest!

Lin Ming glanced over the name list. In each group of 30 people, every person only needed to fight 15 times. Lin Ming’s matches were mostly against Heavenly Palace core disciples or top three ranked participants from their contest areas. He wouldn’t be running into true Empyrean descendants or Dragon Fang yet. It seemed that everyone who was considered an extreme master was seeded into different groups to stagger them apart from each other.

“First martial field! Lin Ming against Cang Liang! Dragon Fang against Wuju! Hang Chi against Heng Yin!”

In the individual martial fields of the divisions, a referee loudly announced that the first one to go on stage was Lin Ming. This was also reasonable. Lin Ming hadn’t even fought in the elimination series so he naturally had to fight first.

His opponent, Cang Liang, was a Heavenly Palace core disciple, and he stayed at Palace 90. From this number, his strength could be imagined to a certain extent.

Chapter 1281 – Difference in Strength

Chapter 1281 – Difference in Strength

…

…

…

The Cang Liang who walked on the martial stage was a silver-haired martial artist who used a black spear, the same weapon type as Lin Ming.

Lin Ming also silently took out his Phoenix Blood Spear from his spatial ring.

“Spear? How interesting!”

Cang Liang faintly smiled. “I have some impressions of you. You were the first ranked participant from Gravemoon Star, and many people know of you. They believe you can easily enter the top three of the Earth Proclamation, and perhaps even bloom in splendor during this First Martial Meeting and reach the top 10 ranks of the Heaven Proclamation.”

According to the rules of the First Martial Meeting, the Empyrean direct disciples and Heavenly Palace core disciples were considered within the Heaven Proclamation, but the Earth Proclamation removed all of them. Basically, those that would rule the Earth Proclamation would be disciples of Great World King Holy Lands.

In the past First Martial Meetings, the top three placed participants on the Earth Proclamation would only have an average ranking on the Heaven Proclamation. Without mentioning Empyrean descendants, many Heavenly Palace core disciples, which were also in the second group, were often better than disciples of Great World King Holy Lands.

This was because these Heavenly Palace core disciples often had half-step Empyrean masters, and their inheritances and resources were often much better. Many times they were even able to study transcendent divine mights. It was extremely difficult for disciples of Great World King Holy Lands to compare with them.

Cang Liang was this type of Heavenly Palace core disciple. As a Heavenly Palace core disciple, he was naturally arrogant. But no matter how arrogant Cang Liang was, he didn’t think for half a second that he could enter the top 10 rankings of the Heaven Proclamation. This was because the momentum and grandeur of this First Martial Meeting was far too vast. As the First Martial Meeting was held, more and more Empyrean direct disciples began to join in. At the start there were less than 10, but now as the finals were about to begin, there were already 30 of them.

This was an extremely rare situation, even when considering all the past First Martial Meetings. For instance, the last First Martial Meeting only had seven Empyrean descendants participating. Looking even further back, it was rare to find a First Martial Meeting that had more than 10 Empyrean descendants.

This caused the minimum ability required to enter the top 10 rankings of the Heaven Proclamation to be very high. If one wished to enter the top 10 they would have to engage in an absolutely blood-drenched round of combat!

The 30 Empyrean descendants came from over 20 Heavenly Palaces, and each one was an unbelievably monstrous genius. Moreover, nearly every one of them had a late Divine Sea cultivation. Facing any single one of them, Cang Liang didn’t have any confidence at all. Even so, in this situation, there were still many people that believed Lin Ming, a mere middle Divine Sea martial artist, had a chance of entering the top 10 of the Heaven Proclamation. Didn’t this mean that Lin Ming could easily defeat him?

Cang Liang certainly wasn’t convinced of this.

“Lin Ming has an extremely high chance of entering the top 10 of the Heaven Proclamation? Who said that?”

All around the arena stage, many of the viewers were also participants. This was the first time they had heard that Lin Ming had high hopes of entering the top 10 of the Heaven Proclamation.

“No idea. I only heard that he was the first ranked participant from Gravemoon Star’s contest area, and his potential even exceeds that of Dragon Fang. His comprehensive strength isn’t bad either. And that Dragon Fang is also a peak master.”

“Dragon Fang? Isn’t he just a common mortal martial artist…?” A Heavenly Palace disciple mindlessly commented. His eyes drifted towards another arena, where Dragon Fang was to face off against Wuju. Wuju was also a Heavenly Palace disciple in the second group. His palace number was 130, just slightly worse than Cang Liang.

After Lin Ming heard Cang Liang’s words, he faintly smiled. “Do I have a chance of entering the Heaven Proclamation’s top 10? That’s probably an appraisal given to me by the disciples of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace.”

All the disciples of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace believed that Lin Ming had used some trick to mount the Divine Seal Altar. Even so, that was still far too amazing. From that alone they believed that Lin Ming’s potential was limitless. It was only a pity that Lin Ming was far too young. He was five or six years younger than most of the other Empyrean descendants, thus they believed that Lin Ming would only rank in the top 10 of the Heaven Proclamation. This appraisal already directly overshadowed most other Empyrean descendants and implied they would be defeated by a genius five or six years younger than them. To the Empyrean descendants, this was absolutely a great shame. Just thinking about what sort of strength Lin Ming could achieve in five or six years, one could imagine what sort of disparity these five or six years were.

“I am a disciple of Empyrean Ash Moon’s chief disciple, Moonchild. I’ve stepped on this stage because I want to use this battle to teach you something. I will teach you just how great the disparity is between the Heaven Proclamation and the Earth Proclamation. Even if we are not Empyrean direct disciples, we still have transcendent divine mights that we can cultivate!”

Cang Liang didn't say that he would defeat Lin Ming. He didn't believe that all rumors were baseless, but he also didn't believe that Lin Ming could tear his way through so many powerful enemies to reach the top 10.

"This Cang Liang is really stupid."

Underneath the arena stage, Zhao Ji was gloating in pleasure. In a stroke of fate, he was also placed into the same division as Lin Ming. And, as a disciple of Vast Universe Heavenly Place, he was well aware of just how horrific Lin Ming was. Cang Liang could only blame his own bad luck.

"Lucky for him he didn't say that he could defeat Lin Ming, otherwise his face would be swollen with shame later." Another Vast Universe Heavenly Palace disciple said from beside Zhao Ji. Even if their Vast Universe Heavenly Palace disciples were inferior to Lin Ming, they were still glad to see the disciples of other Heavenly Palaces eat dirt.

As Cang Liang was about to say several more words, he suddenly heard a loud muffled sound from behind him, as if someone had forcefully struck the protective light barrier around the arenas.

He turned around and was immediately surprised. In another arena where Wuju was facing Dragon Fang, Wuju's protective true essence had completely shattered. He spat out a mouthful of blood as he slumped to the ground. As for Dragon Fang, he stood in the center of the arena, casually grasping his curved sword as if he hadn't expended any energy at all.

This fight was over in just a few breaths of time!

"This… what happened?"

Cang Liang's eyes widened. He was somewhat familiar with Wuji. Although Wuju was inferior to himself, he still had the strength to compete for the top 100 rankings of the Heaven Proclamation, and yet he was quickly defeated by Dragon Fang!

"Fierce! He used a double spatial mirror image to defeat him in one move!"

“A double spatial mirror image isn’t considered too skillful at all. Dragon Fang’s limit surely continues past two images. I wonder just what boundary he has achieved!”

“No wonder some people said that Dragon Fang has a chance of entering the top 10 of the Heaven Proclamation. Now, it seems that these rumors might have been a bit exaggerated, but not necessarily inaccurate.”

All around Dragon Fang’s arena, many people had been watching that match just now. In just a spark of light the outcome had been decided!

Cang Liang’s face became immeasurably grim. In Gravemoon Star’s contest area, Dragon Fang had only come in second. Lin Ming had come in first place!

“And you were saying? Let’s start now, that side has already finished fighting.”

Lin Ming’s expression was very casual, but his words were grating on Cang Liang’s ears. Lin Ming simply didn’t consider him a decent opponent, and his words implied that this battle would be over soon.

“What a hateful man. Ash Moon in the Skies!”

Cang Liang shouted out loud and a watery lunar halo enveloped him. Behind Cang Liang, a brilliant moon appeared, slowly rising. This round moon gave off a magnificent and ancient atmosphere, making it hard for one to look directly at it.

As everyone saw this scene, their eyes began to light up.

“This is a transcendent divine might, the transcendent divine might of Ash Moon Heavenly Palace – Ancient Ash Moon!”

In truth, Ancient Ash Moon was not a complete transcendent divine might. Many Empyreans used their entire life’s energy to create a transcendent divine might. They might have to spend tens of millions of years to complete only half, and they might even die before they finished. This was the reason there were so many incomplete transcendent divine mights.

Ancient Ash Moon was one of these transcendent divine mights.

“A starving camel is still bigger than a horse. Even if a Heavenly Palace Core disciple is weak, they still have a supernatural divine might backing them. Just now, Wuju underestimated his enemy and didn’t even use his transcendent divine might. Cang Liang learnt from that lesson and now he’s immediately starting with everything he has.”

“Cang Liang might be able to create some trouble for Lin Ming. After all, he is stronger than Wuju.”

In this situation, even if Cang Liang were to show his transcendent divine might, very few people thought that he could defeat Lin Ming. If Lin Ming was on the same level as Dragon Fang, then the disparity between him and Cang Liang would be too great.

But, if he relied on his transcendent divine might to engage in a prolonged battle, he should be able to use up some of Lin Ming’s energy.

“Transcendent divine might? What a pity, you’ve only scratched the surface.”

Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and swept outwards. With a flash of spear light, that ancient ash moon spear light in front of Cang Liang was pierced through. Although it didn’t shatter, the light dimmed down to almost nothing.

‘Mm? This attack contains the Concept of Timelessness? No wonder this ability gives off such an ancient and boundless feeling. Really, any kind of transcendent divine might isn’t simple at all! Unfortunately, Cang Liang’s comprehension of it is too shallow. Although an Empyrean Heavenly Palace often has more than one transcendent divine might as an inheritance, there are far too many people that wish to study them. The amount of time that a disciple is able to study it for is limited. If one wishes to study it in detail, they would need to be at least an Empyrean descendant.’

Lin Ming's spear light twisted and an endless flood of thunder surged out, directly breaking apart that round ancient ash moon.

"He broke it so easily?"

That was a transcendent divine might. Even if Cang Liang wasn't able to study it in detail, it still shouldn't have been so easily broken.

Lin Ming began to walk towards Cang Liang, one step at a time.

"You've gone too far! You've forced my hand!" Cang Liang shouted, "Ancient Ash Moon second style – Moon Shimmering Through the Heavens and Earth!"

As Cang Liang attacked for a second type, true essence erupted to the limit. All the veins in his body bulged out as he clearly overdrew his own strength.

However, facing Cang Liang's desperate attack, Lin Ming simply thrust his spear out. Flame and thunder flashed out and the ancient ash moon strike was directly split in half by Lin Ming's spear.

Peng!

Cang Liang's protective true essence shattered. He flew backwards and crashed down onto the arena stage.

Lin Ming easily achieved victory. The gap was far larger than everyone else imagined.

"I already knew it would be like this. Cang Liang and Lin Ming simply aren't on the same level at all. We already said that Lin Ming would be able to advance into the top 10, but not many people believed us." Underneath the arena stage, a Vast Universe Heavenly Palace disciple spoke with sneering disdain. Was their Vast Universe Heavenly Palace's Divine Seal Altar so easy to climb? Even if one resorted to tricks, it definitely wasn't easy to climb. Even with any amount of shortcuts, it was as difficult as reaching the heavens.

“There’s nothing that can be done. People only believe their own eyes, not the rumors they hear with their ears. Moreover, there were too many First Martial Meeting semifinal areas, and many of those that were first ranked in their areas were blown out of proportion.” Zhao Ji said. Although he wasn’t too happy with Lin Ming, he couldn’t help but acknowledge his strength.

“After this, Lin Ming might not need to fight again. Many people will simply admit defeat instead of having to face him in battle. In each group, everyone will have to fight 15 people after all. If they admit defeat they can save their strength for the next fight.”

The disciples of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace had guessed correctly. After Cang Liang was defeated, Lin Ming’s second opponent simply admitted defeat.

The third, fourth, and fifth matches were also the same.

Lin Ming easily obtained a five match winning streak, and Dragon Fang was also the same. In the eyes of everyone else, a genius like Lin Ming was simply sparring in this brief interlude. Their real strength would be revealed in the true finals.

Chapter 1282 – Easily Passing Qualification

Chapter 1282 – Easily Passing Qualification

…

…

…

In the group stage, because the masters were seeded into different groups, Lin Ming was victorious all the way to 10 wins without a single hiccup.

Dragon Fang also had a 10 win winning streak. Not just that, but Hang Chi and two other Empyrean direct disciples easily obtained a 10 win winning streak.

Although these were group matches, one could see many things. There were always interested parties that soon summarized the top 50 people of all the divisions. Lin Ming and Dragon Fang were arranged within these rankings. The 30 Empyrean direct disciples were naturally included too, as there wasn't a weak Empyrean direct disciple. After all, the weak did not possess the qualifications to become Empyrean descendants.

Another matter worth mentioning was Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. Besides the Heavenly Palace Saintess, Fairy Frost Dream, there were also three core disciples. None of these core disciples were weak, and they were all placed into this list of 50 names.

The three of them were collectively referred to as the Three Fairies of the Divine Dream. Their names were – Frost Charm, Frost Cloud, and Frost Moon.

In Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, all disciples of Frost Dream's generation had the surname Frost, but, only the top disciple had the qualifications to be called 'Dream'.

This was where Frost Dream's name originated from.

“Divine Dream Heavenly Palace… is truly formidable.” In the group that the three fairies were located in, Lin Ming silently watched them fight.

The one on the arena stage was Frost Moon. She simply stared at her opponent, and without a single move, victory and defeated had already been decided.

Her opponent slumped to his knees, all strength fleeing his body.

And this person was a second ranked genius from his semifinals area. A genius that was ranked second out of 100 great worlds actually had no ability to resist in front of Frost Moon!

“Frost Moon wins!”

The World King managing this arena area announced without expression. This result was something he already expected.

Although the three fairies were formidable, there were actually very few that forfeited when they fought them. This was because as disciples of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, their statuses were special. They were mysterious and mystical, the definition of perfection. Even if the other geniuses knew they couldn’t defeat them, they still fought. At least, when they left the First Martial Meeting, they would be able to boast that they fought with the fairies of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. Even if they were horribly defeated they could still speak with pride about this.

Losing to one of the fairies from Divine Dream Heavenly Palace was not a shameful matter. Rather, it was something to show off to others.

“Divine Dream Heavenly Palace is truly a strange and mystical influence. The other Heavenly Palaces often have trillions of disciples, but Divine Dream Heavenly Palace only has several hundred. Each one of them must be an outstanding individual amongst all outstanding elites!” Lin Ming thought. But at this time, a voice suddenly echoed out in his mind. He was startled and then happily said, “Miss Mo, you’ve finished your seclusion?”

Within the Magic Cube space, even an Empyrean didn't have the ability to sense Mo Eversnow. Of course, it wouldn't matter even if they did.

"Mm, I've also realized something from that incomplete bone shard. I've been verifying it with the Celestial Tyrant Manual, one truth at a time, and now I've understood things that I didn't before. The Celestial Tyrant Manual's Hundred Layered Waves can go another step further."

"How is Fishy?"

Lin Ming hadn't looked into the Magic Cube space for some time now, and Mo Eversnow and Fishy had lived inside as they pleased.

"Fishy has been sleeping more and more these days. Although she has eaten up a great number of violet sun crystals, there still hasn't been any change within her body."

Mo Eversnow shook her head. She guessed that Fishy had some special background and was certainly unique in some way, but up until now she still hadn't seen just how this specialness manifested within Fishy's body.

Moreover, Fishy's growth was much slower than that of other little girls. Through these years, she still retained the appearance of an 11-12 year old little girl.

Of the 50 people, besides the Three Fairies of the Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, another person also caught Lin Ming's attention.

He called himself Jun Bluemoon and he was dressed all in white. From his head to his toes, he emitted the aura of a sad and melancholic scholar. A pot of wine hung from his waist and he used a long sword. What was strange was that this sword seemed rusty. From all appearances it looked like a common mortal sword that was stained with blood and rust.

"This weapon is..."

As Lin Ming saw this sword, he felt something indescribable in his heart. This was absolutely not an ordinary sword. The sword blade emitted a light pressure and Lin Ming still wasn't able to see what rank weapon it was. He wasn't able to judge whether it was a spirit artifact or not.

"This is…"

Lin Ming deeply looked at that sword. If it was truly an unrivalled treasure sword, why would it be rusted? Those were clearly true rust stains that covered the blade and not some deliberate camouflage.

"I also cannot see the mysteries behind that sword." Mo Eversnow said from within the Magic Cube, shaking her head. She could not see through that weapon at all. "It could be Jun Bluemoon's lucky chance, just like your Magic Cube."

"Maybe." Lin Ming sighed. In the 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm and the quadrillion trillion lives that existed within it, there were bound to be far too many people that came across a heaven-defying lucky chance. There was the dual body and energy cultivator Shiku, Dragon Fang with his Three Lives Pupils, and now this Jun Bluemoon. All of these people unveiled an unfathomable feeling.

Time passed quickly. It was the second day, with evening soon approaching. At this point, the continuous battles had gone on for two days and one night.

Some matches were extremely bitter and intense, and some matches revealed an absolute disparity in strength.

At his final 15th match, Lin Ming finally met an opponent that fought him with everything they had. This person came from Vast Universe Heavenly Palace.

"You are strong, but I won't give up just because of this. I want to know just how you climbed up the Divine Seal Altar!"

As a disciple of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, the Divine Seal Altar was a legend to them. And, the one who broke this legend was not a disciple of their Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, but Lin Ming. This caused some disciples to be unable to let this go. They hoped to fight Lin Ming to confirm just what sort of strength he had.

As soon as this martial artist faced Lin Ming, his entire body shook as his joints crackled and popped. He stayed at Palace 72 and out of the 14 matches so far, he had only lost a single one, which was against the disciple from Mount Potala, Hang Chi. This was also a reasonable defeat. Hang Chi was an Empyrean descendant. Moreover, he came from the Heavenly Palace with the deepest background in the entire Divine Realm. It was simply impossible for this martial artist to defeat him.

“Take my move! Savage Dragon Crossing the River!”

As soon as this martial artist attacked, it was with his ultimate final killing blow. His saber came slashing towards Lin Ming with overwhelming momentum. In that moment, all of the space around Lin Ming seemed to be locked in place. This Vast Universe Heavenly Palace disciple actually used the Concept of Space, moreover, his attainments weren’t low; he had steadily entered into the fourth level Concept.

“Blue Lotus Flame Dance!”

Without expression, Lin Ming swept his spear out. The Fire Laws fused together and a wild and savage spear light gathered into a shimmering beam that instantly broke through his opponent’s saber light!

Compared to Lin Ming the difference was simply too great. With the suppression of Laws and also absolute strength, there was no way for him to resist.

“What!?”

The Vast Universe Heavenly Palace disciple stared with wide eyes. Even though he knew he wasn’t Lin Ming’s match, it was only now when he faced him that he discovered how great the disparity was.

Woosh!

Lin Ming shot out his second spear strike. This spear strike ripped open his opponent’s protective true essence and sent him flying backwards.

“Lin Ming, victory!”

The World King powerhouse managing this arena said without any surprise. Thus, with this, Lin Ming won 15 matches and successfully passed the pre-finals.

Lin Ming had now entered the true finals.

Chapter 1283 – Empyrean Demondawn

Chapter 1283 – Empyrean Demondawn

…

…

…

Early in the morning, in the great dimensional world opened within Vast Universe World, the sun had yet to rise. The skies were still covered with a misty blue haze, and in the great dimensional world, countless people had already gathered.

On the ground, innumerable people gathered like masses of ants. In the skies, people were as concentrated as seas of locusts. These people were all rushing towards the tournament martial field.

Before, in Slaughter City, the elimination round and the qualifying round for the finals hadn't been made public. But, several hundreds of millions of people were able to come to the martial field. As long as they had an admission ticket they could watch the tournament.

The admission tickets for the finals were incomparably rare. With several hundred million admission tickets, this amount was divided amongst the 100-200 Empyrean Heavenly Palaces, 3000 great worlds, and countless medium worlds, small worlds, and hidden dimensions. On average, a great world only had 30,000-50,000 or so tickets.

The Holy Lords of various Holy Lands, the Elders and chief disciples of World King Holy Lands, the royalty and high level figures of World King level Divine Kingdoms, and even true World King powerhouses had gathered here. With several hundred million people gathered in the massive arena, any casually chosen person was someone who ruled over their own domain and was the god of trillions of people. But now, the members of this audience were nothing but ordinary spectators. There were even many people that couldn't obtain a good seat.

In the previous qualifying matches for the finals, only the total top 50 ranked martial artists of the first groups would be able to make it to the true finals.

Besides these 50 people, everyone else had to undergo a brutal series of eliminations to compete for the remaining rankings. Finally, there would be 300 individuals left and in the end these people would be divided into two lists – the Heaven Proclamation and Earth Proclamation.

"There are only 50 people in the first group and Empyrean descendants take up 30 of those positions, leaving behind only 20 spots. This competition is too intense."

"This round of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting is truly the most glorious time for the last several hundred thousand years. This is because Empyrean Divine Dream used the Divine Dream World to gather up all the geniuses of the Divine Realm, leading to these unprecedented times!"

"That's right, to be able to be alive during these prosperous times is truly our luck. I heard that there are even many Great World Kings who are rushing over to watch the tournament."

As everyone was speaking, a horrifying roar spread through the skies as an indescribable pressure came shrouding down over them all. A loud explosion echoed through the world, resounding between the heavens and earth as if space itself would shatter!

"Heavens, what sound is that!?"

"It feels like my soul is breaking!"

Facing this unknown sound, many people felt as if their eardrums were pierced through and even their divine soul seemed on the verge of breaking and scattering away to nothingness.

At this time, a truly shocking sight occurred. In the skies, a massive void was ripped open. A terrifying flow of energy passed through this void as a massive head a hundred miles long emerged from within the darkness. This head had a vicious lone horn sticking out from its center and it had massive scales as black as ink, as dark as night. This was a black dragon head!

“That is… a dragon!?”

“That is a Black Dragon, a God Beast! A true God Beast!”

Many people in the audience cried out in alarm. Over 99% of the people here had never seen a God Beast before, and without some great accident, most of them would never see one again in the rest of their lives either.

In the Divine Realm, a God Beast was an existence nearly on par with an Empyrean.

“Dragon… it’s really a true dragon…”

The Ancient Dragon Clan’s Great Elder stiffened where he sat. This was truly a tragedy. Even though he was the Great Elder of the Ancient Dragon Clan, he had actually never seen a living true dragon before.

“This is a dragon…” Lin Ming saw this scene from the contestant waiting area. Facing this God Beast, he could feel a vast pressure pushing down on him.

“To think that a dragon would come here. Does this mean that an Empyrean has arrived?”

Many people suddenly thought of this. They knew that only a powerful Empyrean could use a God Beast as a mount.

“Black Dragon… then it is probably… Empyrean Demondawn!”

In the audience there would always be some high level figures who had some understandings towards the Empyreans. A Black Dragon was the mount that Empyrean Demondawn rode.

"Empyrean Demondawn!"

As many people heard this name, they all paled. Empyrean Demondawn was known as one of the highest Empyreans. Originally he had been known as a demonic fiend. On his path to becoming an Empyrean, the number of people he killed simply couldn't be counted.

In the past, when he was still a half-step World King powerhouse, because he had recklessly killed too many people, he had aroused the anger of the world. Some great influences banded together to exterminate him, but the result was that they failed. Afterwards, Empyrean Demondawn broke through to the World King realm and instead exterminated those that tried to kill him, slaughtering everyone until not even dogs or chickens remained.

In that war, the number of casualties used trillions as a measurement.

This sort of demonic fiend had caused panic wherever he went. It was only when he became an Empyrean that he slowly cooled down and began to retreat from the known world. However, when the older generation of martial artists heard his name, they still felt their hearts tremble.

"Empyrean Demondawn personally came?"

"Is he here to watch Xiao Moxian?"

"An Empyrean came in person to watch the First Martial Meeting?" Someone cried out in shock.

In the last several First Martial Meetings, there simply hadn't been any Empyreans present. This was because an Empyrean was born every million years while the First Martial Meeting was held every 4000-5000 years. The champion of the First Martial Meeting simply wasn't comparable to an Empyrean. Only a martial artist with potential on par with an Empyrean was worthy to grasp the attention of one.

“Haha, so it’s Brother Demondawn making a personal appearance. Come, let me invite you!”

A full and vigorous voice suddenly echoed in the air. Lin Ming could clearly hear that this voice belonged to Empyrean Vast Universe.

After Empyrean Demondawn appeared, Empyrean Vast Universe naturally had to make a show.

Empyrean Vast Universe and Empyrean Demondawn were both simultaneously watching this First Martial Meeting. It was possible that even Empyrean Divine Dream was watching this event. This was truly a golden age of martial arts!

After Empyrean Demondawn appeared, the atmosphere in the martial field was much more heated. Although they didn’t see Empyrean Demondawn with their own eyes, knowing that they were watching the same tournament as an Empyrean level character was truly a thrilling matter.

“Even Empyreans have come. There are simply too many masters in this First Martial Meeting. If Senior-apprentice Brother Lin were to be compared with them then...” In the Ancient Phoenix Clan’s area, Yan Littlemoon was a bit worried. Although she knew that Lin Ming was strong, she had also previewed the information of the various geniuses before this, and each one was more terrifying than the last. Any one of them was an unfathomable existence to her.

“Everyone! I welcome you all here on behalf of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. I am the host of the First Martial Meeting’s finals – Vast Cosmos!”

High in the skies above the arena, a tall and burly man floated in the air. His figure was enlarged by an illusory magic array, allowing the several hundred million spectators to clearly see him.

“Now I shall announce the rules of the finals. There will be a total of 50 martial artists participating in the finals. The finals shall be divided into two stages. In the first stage, each person shall fight 18 battles. According to their performance in these 18 battles, the 50 martial artists shall be divided into two tiers. The first tier will consist of 10 people and the second tier will consist of 40 people. The finale of this tournament shall be played out with those 10 people in the first tier, and the top 10 list will be decided from them.

“For those in the second tier, the following 40 rankings will undergo a round robin tournament. The first three ranked in the second tier will gain the qualifications to challenge those in the first tier. If they win, they can take their spots.”

The rules of the finals weren’t complicated. One didn’t need to fight every other martial artist in the finals. As long as one could enter the first tier of martial artists, they would in fact only need to fight around 27 matches.

“The first 18 matches shouldn’t be difficult. But in the following nine matches, every opponent will be a top 10 master. Every battle then shall truly be splendid.”

After Lin Ming heard these rules, his heart flashed with this thought. But at this time, above the central arena Vast Cosmos loudly shouted out, “The first match shall begin – Frost Dream against Ling Feng!”

The first match would be Frost Dream’s debut!

This was also reasonable. Frost Dream was the most popular candidate to win the First Martial Meeting. Although Xiao Moxian wasn’t weak, she was simply too young. No matter how great her talent was, it was impossible to make up for the absolute disparity brought by age.

“Frost Dream!”

“Fairy Frost Dream!”

As the audience saw Frost Dream step up for the first match, many people, in particular the heroic young men, began to loudly cry out her name.

Many people didn't know of Dragon Fang or Lin Ming and they definitely didn't know of White King or Hang Chi. But, there was no one that didn't know of Frost Dream and Xiao Moxian. Frost Dream was synonymous with icy cold perfection, a profound and untouchable woman. In the Divine Realm, she was the dream lover of countless young elites.

Now that they saw Frost Dream step on stage, how could they not be excited?

Frost Dream's opponent was Ling Feng. Ling Feng was also a core disciple of an Empyrean Heavenly Palace. In the previous group matches he had achieved total victory. His performance had been immaculate the entire time; he was absolutely not weak.

"Who is that? Why bother fighting, just hurry up and give up!"

"That's right! You unlucky loser just hurry up and admit defeat or you'll bring trouble upon yourself!"

Ling Feng truly had bad luck. This was his first time stepping on the finals' arena stage and he had to encounter Frost Dream. Moreover, he had to face the relentless assault of her countless adoring fans.

Ling Feng's complexion was ugly, "These people, it's as if they think I'm useless."

He certainly didn't believe that he was Frost Dream's match. But, as a peak genius himself, he had absolute confidence in his skills. Or, at the very least he didn't believe he would fold under the first strike. He should at least be able to fight a little battle with Frost Dream.

He didn't plan on admitting defeat here.

"Let the match begin!"

Vast Cosmos loudly announced. At the same time, Ling Feng rushed towards Frost Dream. He held a great heavy sword in his hands as he slashed down at Frost Dream. His strike was like a tiger descending from a mountain, unstoppable.

But, Frost Dream didn't move at all. With a gentle wave of her hand, it was like a light spring breeze wafted past her. In the next moment, as Ling Feng was hurtling through the air, all of his protective true essence completely shattered. His entire body twisted like a broken kite line as he fell to the ground.

In the entire process, no one was able to clearly see what Frost Dream did. The match had just begun and Frost Dream didn't even move at all.

"Frost Dream, victory."

Vast Cosmos expressionlessly announced. As for the several hundred million people present, including even Frost Dream's fans, all of them looked as if they were lost in a daze.

"Was that an illusion attack?"

"No! Ling Feng's protective true essence was clearly shattered by something. How could an illusion attack possibly have such an effect!"

Frost Dream was strong, but what truly terrified everyone was that they didn't know just where her strengths lay.

Her techniques, her Laws, all of them resembled some illusionary phantom attack, but the truth wasn't so simple. It was impossible to imagine just what her skills were.

"Too terrifying. If one were to meet Frost Dream, they might not even know how they lost!"

Many of the genius participants had awe in their eyes as they looked at Frost Dream. As for the several hundreds of millions of people present, there was a brief lull of silence before the entire arena burst into raucous cheers.

"Frost Dream! Frost Dream!" The frenzied shouts continued for several dozen breaths of time before slowly quieting down.

Chapter 1284 – Lin Ming VS Frost Moon

Chapter 1284 – Lin Ming VS Frost Moon

…

…

…

“The disciples of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace are too fierce. Not only is there Frost Dream but there is also the Three Fairies of the Divine Dream, and each one of them is extremely strong. They are even more formidable than weaker Empyrean descendants!”

“Yeah, Divine Dream Heavenly Palace simply has far too few disciples. It is said that there are 10 true descendants of Empyrean Divine Dream, and once the core disciples are counted, Divine Dream Heavenly Palace only has a few hundred disciples in total. The Divine Dream Three Fairies are in no way inferior to ordinary Empyrean descendants.”

It had to be known that an Empyrean often had 100-200 descendants. For instance, Empyrean Vast Universe was like this. But, if all the disciples of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace were added together, they only matched the number of Empyrean descendants for other Heavenly Palaces.

“That’s right. Although the Three Fairies of the Divine Dream aren’t Empyrean descendants, one still has to consider them on the same level as Empyrean descendants. Moreover, their techniques are strange and the Laws they use are extremely special. For an opponent, it would probably be better to face an ordinary Empyrean descendant than to face them.”

“The second match. Hang Chi against Yehe!”

The person to step up for the second match was Mount Potala’s Hang Chi.

“Mount Potala… I never imagined that Mount Potala would produce a descendant at such a time…”

Mo Eversnow whispered from within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea.

“Miss Mo, you know of Mount Potala?”

“Mm, I understand a little. My grandfather once told me that Mount Potala is the most ancient sect in the entire Divine Realm. Their history extends 3.6 billion years back. If the Ancient Elysium Seal’s words about the great world calamity occurring 3.6 billion years ago were true, then after the universe crossed that calamity, Mount Potala appeared and slowly developed to the scale it is at today!”

“Mm? Then would it be likely that Mount Potala understands what happened in that ancient great calamity?”

“I’m not sure about that. I’m afraid that in the great calamity so long ago, many martial arts civilizations were destroyed, resulting in great stretches of history being lost. 3.6 billion years is simply far too long ago, and many things have been buried in the rivers of time. If all those masters that participated in the great calamity had died, then history would be even more confusing. It would be hard to say just what role Mount Potala played in the great calamity.

“But no matter what, the truth is that Mount Potala’s background is truly terrifying. Within the entire Divine Realm, their sect possesses the highest number of transcendent divine mights! Since 3.6 billion years ago, they have likely produced Empyreans in the double digits!”

Double digits of Empyreans, just how amazing was that? Even if they only produced 10 Empyreans and half of those Empyreans created their own transcendent divine might, then that would mean Mount Potala possessed at least five transcendent divine mights.

How could other sects possibly compare?

This level of inheritance could truly be called defying the will of the heavens!

"Mount Potala has always been low-key. Now that a descendant has appeared, it might really be related to the so-called great calamity."

Mo Eversnow slowly said. Lin Ming sighed with emotion. There were really far too many geniuses in the finals, all of them extraordinary characters of this era. Even so, only a single champion would appear from them all. This Hang Chi was truly unfathomable; even Lin Ming couldn't say who was weaker between him and Frost Dream. Not just them, but there was also Xiao Moxian, Dragon Fang, and other dark horses that had yet to reveal their deep hidden strengths. For instance, Lin Ming was also in that final situation.

These were numerous heroes vying for supremacy!

Even so, only a single King could appear!

To be number one was far too difficult, no matter who it was!

As Lin Ming was thinking this, he discovered that Hang Chi's number plate – that is, his palace number – was two.

Fairy Frost Dream was the Saintess of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace and her status was unique. Moreover, as the host, it was reasonable that she was in palace number one. But following her, the one in palace two was not Xiao Moxian or the disciple of Empyrean Vast Universe, White King, but Hang Chi instead!

From this minor detail, one could see just how special Mount Potala's status was.

Hang Chi's match was Yehe, who was also first place in his semifinal contest area. Moreover, he was not an ordinary first place martial artist. His strength was clear for all to see, obvious from the fact that he was able to stand in the top 50.

"This Yehe is an amazing person amongst the Great World King Holy Lands. But let alone rushing into the top 10 of the Heaven Proclamation, even reaching the top 40 will be difficult for him. This is because this First Martial Meeting is in far too special a situation, thus even Great World King Holy Land level geniuses will be hard-pressed to find a place here.”

“That’s right. Nether Limitless was said to be strong but he couldn’t even enter the top 50. As the finals approached, far too many Empyrean descendants joined in.”

In Hang Chi and Yehe’s match, no one favored Yehe. Even those from his sect thought this; the disparity was simply too great.

And by the conclusion of this match, no miracle occurred. Hang Chi’s technique was not as illusive and confusing as Fairy Frost Dream’s was. He simply used a Buddhist palm technique and easily won. From start to finish he did not display a transcendent divine might. Although his performance so far seemed simple and ordinary, everyone believed that Hang Chi was anything but ordinary.

After Hang Chi, the next one to step on stage was Xiao Moxian. Only then did Lin Ming realize that Xiao Moxian’s number plate was three.

“In a sense, it seems that the number plates correspond to the strength of the various Heavenly Palaces. From this placement, Demondawn Heavenly Palace seems to be ranked third amongst the Heavenly Palaces! With Mount Potala ranked second, does that mean Divine Dream Heavenly Palace is beyond them?”

Lin Ming secretly thought. The Heavenly Palaces were far too mysterious. With the information he had so far about Mount Potala and Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, it was hard for Lin Ming to deduce just who was the stronger of the two.

The matches continued one at a time. The Empyrean descendants won the vast majority of the matches. Those geniuses of World King Holy Lands that managed to reach the top 50 were nearly completely swept away, almost annihilated from the start.

Lin Ming’s number plate was near the end, thus his match was also much later than the others. It wasn’t until the 18th match that Vast Cosmos called out his name.

“18th match, Lin Ming against Frost Moon!”

“Mm? Fighting Frost Moon?” Lin Ming was startled. Frost Moon was one of the Three Fairies of the Divine Dream. Although the three of them weren’t direct disciples of Empyrean Divine Dream, that didn’t mean they were weak. Rather, Empyrean Divine Dream accepted far too few direct disciples. In these last 10 million years, she had accepted a mere 10 of them.

In this sort of situation, the other disciples of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace were no weaker than the Empyrean descendants of other Heavenly Palaces.

“This is… Senior-apprentice Brother Lin’s luck is too horrible. He has to face off against such a strong opponent in his first match.”

In the arena stands, Yan Littlemoon was nervously speaking, her voice filled with worry. Huo Violentstone shook his head, “That’s not true. Rather, it should be said that in those 50 people, none of them are weak. It’s not surprising for him to encounter one of the Three Fairies of the Divine Dream now.

“We need to place our faith in Lin Ming and believe he can reach the final top 10 of the total rankings. Although Frost Moon is troublesome, she still shouldn’t be his match.” Huo Violentstone said. Although those were his words, the truth was that he didn’t have any idea just how strong Lin Ming was. Lin Ming had hidden his cards far too deep and Huo Violentstone simply didn’t know what his limits were.

Lin Ming stepped onto the arena stage. In front of him was a young woman in white tights. Her body was slender and tall. She had the looks of a 17-18 year old. Her hair was cut short but neat and clean.

As Frost Moon saw Lin Ming enter the arena stage, she lightly smiled, “I am Divine Dream Heavenly Palace’s Frost Moon. I ask for your advice.”

Her voice was sweet and honeyed and her words were polite and curt. She didn’t have the otherworldly indifference of Frost Dream, but rather gave off a solemn and dignified feeling.

“Please advise me.” Lin Ming respectfully responded in return.

And at this time, from the audience, many boos sounded out.

“Who the hell is that? Don’t bother fighting and just admit defeat!”

“What an eyesore! Why don’t you scurry off stage!”

There were many fans of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace and all of them were rabid and loud. When Fairy Frost Dream fought on stage in the first match against Ling Feng, her fans yelled at him the same way.

Many young elites of the Divine Realm took the disciples of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace as the goddesses of their heart. Their strength was great, their talent was astronomical, and their status was high. They were holy and inviolable characters, nearly reaching perfection in all categories.

Many people dreamt of marrying a disciple from Divine Dream Heavenly Palace and becoming intimate with them. But what a pity, there had never been a single disciple of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace that had ever married in their life. In this situation, these fans could only sweetly caress them in their imaginations as their paths would never cross.

And now, there was actually a man with greater talent and higher strength than these fans, who could fight on the same stage against these goddesses of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. These fans envied Lin Ming and certainly didn’t think well of him.

Lin Ming turned a deaf ear to these loud boos. He silently extracted the Phoenix Blood Spear.

“Match, start!”

Vast Cosmos loudly shouted.

In that moment when the voice signaled the beginning of the match, a dim halo of light shone from Frost Moon’s entire body.

Lin Ming only felt his surroundings transform around him. He arrived in a battlefield, a war between mortals. He himself had reverted to a 30 year old middle-aged man, and his martial arts cultivation was now next to nothing.

Battle, slaughter, the chaos and turmoil of destruction.

But Lin Ming's strength was low and he had nothing amazing about him at all. In such a war, he had a wife, he had a child, and suffered during each and every battle. He could die at any time and there wasn't anything he could do about it.

"I did not find the Magic Cube...

"Without the initial support from the Magic Cube, I would never have crossed the most difficult years of my life. As a result, I was secretly plotted against by others and received hidden wounds, causing me to never be able to practice martial arts in my life. Then, I was forced to lead a life without a single ray of hope. This is a parallel world, this is..."

Lin Ming was crystal clear; he knew that these were all illusions. Within his mind, the grandmist battle spirit brightly sparkled, protecting his thoughts.

"This is indeed an illusion attack, aimed at the weakest point of my mind. In my life, what do I fear the most? Besides losing those I love, what I fear most is losing my life's cultivation. And this illusion is to have me return to a mortal life and face endless suffering and misery...

"Frost Moon's illusion skills aren't equal to Frost Dream's, but I can still make out some of the Divine Dream Law's mysteries from this."

Lin Ming's goal was Frost Dream. But before that, he needed to understand the Laws she cultivated, and Frost Moon was a prime subject for this. Thus, he wasn't in a rush to tear through this illusion.

"Is that an illusion attack? Was Lin Ming struck by an illusion attack?"

During the previous qualifying rounds, nearly every opponent that the Three Fairies of the Divine Dream faced were all instantly defeated. Lin Ming was now standing stock-still where he was and it was impossible to see what sort of situation he was in.

“Mm?”

On the arena stage, Frost Moon frowned. She could feel that her illusions had not been able to invade Lin Ming’s spiritual sea but were isolated outside.

“This person’s will is great. It will be impossible to use an illusion to defeat him.”

“Frost Moon has met a true opponent. His will defense is watertight.” On the side of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Frost Charm and Frost Cloud were both watching Frost Moon compete.

“There’s nothing she can do. It looks like Frost Moon will have to give this her everything and use the Ruling Spirit Art.”

Chapter 1285 – Ruling Spirit Art

Chapter 1285 – Ruling Spirit Art

…

…

…

The entire martial stage was filled with a kaleidoscopic purple light. As Lin Ming was shrouded in this purple light, he fell into a strange spiritual space.

Everyone didn't know just what Lin Ming was experiencing in this world. All they knew was that Divine Dream Heavenly Palace's illusion attacks were terrifying. All the previous opponents only needed a single glance to be defeated! From this, the great disparity between them could be imagined.

In this confusing battle scene, Frost Moon extracted a strangely-shaped weapon from her spatial ring. This sword resembled a sickle and the blade was shaped like a crescent moon. The hilt was short, even shorter than a fist, and hard to firmly hold.

To many martial artists, this type of sword seemed flashy and useless. But, no one believed that Divine Dream Heavenly Palace would use a flashy and useless weapon. This sword certainly had its strengths.

"That is the crescent moon sword, Divine Dream Heavenly Palace's unique weapon. Its attack form is very special. I've heard of it before, but this is my first time seeing it in person. Before now, no one has been able to force them to use it."

In the audience, there were some more experienced martial artists that began to recount what they knew about the origin of this weapon.

As everyone heard that this weapon had a special attack method, they all opened their eyes wide, waiting to see just what was so special about the crescent moon sword.

The crescent moon sword was only three feet long. As Frost Moon held it in her hands it shined with a cold light. Suddenly, Frost Moon moved, her speed rapidly shooting up to an incredible velocity as she left behind a series of afterimages, barreling straight towards Lin Ming!

“Mm? She’s using a physical attack at the same time as an illusion attack!”

Originally, an illusion attack was to have an opponent fall into a fantasy dreamland and lose the ability to defend themselves. At this time, most geniuses would no longer be able to resist and would have lost.

Even though there were some individuals with an extremely strong will that were able to resist this illusion attack, they would have to struggle to do so and they would inevitably come under tremendous influence.

At this time, if the disciples of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace were to attack again, it would be as easy as cutting a melon. This was because those that had fallen into an illusion had no ability to defend themselves!

As this cold crescent blade shot towards Lin Ming’s throat, many people in the audience cried out in alarm.

At this critical moment, Lin Ming’s eyes flashed open. His will energy erupted and the illusion world he was covered in suddenly shattered.

The Phoenix Blood Spear suddenly rose up, thrusting straight towards Frost Moon’s head!

The change had occurred too quickly; no one was able to respond in time. Lin Ming had instantly broken through that illusion world and had counterattacked at the same time.

In that moment, Frost Moon's eyes widened. In the air, her body strangely twisted. Just before the crescent moon blade was about to touch the Phoenix Blood Spear, an incredible scene occurred. The crescent moon sword suddenly split apart in the air. A single sword divided into seven thin crescent moons, each one able to be used as a separate weapon.

This crescent moon blade was actually formed from seven different blades.

"Ruling Spirit Art!"

Frost Moon shouted out. A pale gold sword of will howled out from between her eyebrows; this was an elementary gold battle spirit.

This battle spirit divided into seven wisps, each wisp entering the seven curved blades. Sword light whistled as the seven crescent blades danced in the air, each one shooting towards Lin Ming!

"This is..."

Lin Ming's mind jumped. This was the second time he had seen such a fighting method. The seven crescent blades turned into seven brilliant blue beams of light, each one reaching unimaginable degrees of speed that were impossible to track.

Each crescent blade attacked one of Lin Ming's vital points!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. Even with his speed, wanting to ward off seven different blades that each cut in from cunning angles and could change direction and speed whenever they wished was simply impossible.

"Grandmist space!"

Lin Ming suddenly erupted with energy. Behind him, the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower bloomed. The ancient and boundless grandmist space suddenly covered the entire martial stage.

The grandmist space was able to annihilate all Laws. As the seven crescent blades were enveloped in this space, their speed rapidly dropped.

At the same time, Lin Ming opened all seven of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. The strength of his mortal body erupted to the limit. Phoenix Blood Spear – Total Annihilation!

Ding! Ding! Ding! Ding! Ding! Ding! Ding!

With a clear explosive sound, the seven crescent blades were struck back by Lin Ming!

“What!?”

Frost Moon’s complexion changed. This variation of the Ruling Spirit Art was an extremely formidable cultivation method within Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. One was able to use their battle spirit and sword to kill someone from a thousand miles away. They were called surprise attacks that were nearly impossible to guard against. Even a slightly stronger martial artist might fall to this technique. Even so, Lin Ming had broken through her attack!

Lin Ming took a step forwards, his Phoenix Blood Spear pounding outwards. Heaven and earth origin energy swept up into a violent vortex of spinning flames.

“Blue Lotus Flame Dance!”

A red beam of spear light as thick as a barrel shot outwards, smashing into Frost Moon’s protective true essence.

With a loud ringing sound, Frost Moon’s protective true essence immediately collapsed. She flew backwards, her clothes stained red with blood.

“Lin Ming, victory!”

Vast Cosmos peered deeply at Lin Ming as he made this announcement.

As for the arena, it had fallen into utter silence. At the start, the battle had been one within a world of illusions. But suddenly, a violent outbreak occurred. The tide of battle had rapidly turned, becoming extremely intense, so fast that no one was able to prepare for it. Even though everyone was closely watching, some weaker martial artists couldn't even see the attack trajectories of those crescent blades. All they saw were flashes of gorgeous light filling the air.

"What's going on? What happened?" Some people asked, confused.

"Lin Ming won!"

"What nonsense, you should die for saying that. That brat simply stepped in some dog shit good luck!" Many people present were fans and ardent supporters of Frost Moon, and took her as the goddess of their heart. As they saw Frost Moon injured by Lin Ming to the point of spitting blood, how could they still feel comfortable?

But let alone 'nonsense', what Frost Moon had used right now was Divine Dream Heavenly Palace's version of the Ruling Spirit Art, a technique where one controlled the movement and attack paths of weapons with their battle spirit. The more formidable one's battle spirit was, the fiercer the attack would be. Not just that, but one could change the speed and angle of the attack in midair, making it nearly impossible to defend against. Moreover, on average, the disciples of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace possessed a battle spirit far more formidable than other geniuses'. One could see just now that Frost Moon's battle spirit had already reached the elementary gold level. When this was combined with the Ruling Spirit Art, the might that could be displayed was hard to imagine. Even so, she had been instantly defeated by Lin Ming. Frost Moon simply wasn't his opponent at all. Or, it should be said that an ordinary Empyrean descendant was unable to best Lin Ming.

Many people had dignified expressions. Lin Ming's final eruption of the grandmist space had left a profound impression on everyone. Of course, they couldn't recognize the origin of the grandmist space. Even a Great World King powerhouse didn't have the chance to see a top character like Empyrean Primordius fight.

"This young brat Lin Ming, I haven't seen him for a few months but he's become stronger." In an independent space within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, Empyrean Vast Universe had this thought as he watched Lin Ming's match.

And sitting nearby Empyrean Vast Universe was another man. This man's entire body was wrapped in black fog. His body was tall and strong, his shoulders were broad, and his forehead was covered with black smiles. His face was grim and fierce and he emitted a cruel and savage killing intent, causing all who looked at him to tremble.

This man was Empyrean Demondawn. After seeing the last battle, Empyrean Demondawn was silent for a moment before gloomily saying, "What this brat used just now was the Primordius martial intent? It is that fellow Primordius's transcendent divine might?"

His voice was as grating as metal, making cold shivers crawl down one's spine. While others couldn't recognize the grandmist space, Empyrean Demondawn certainly could.

As Empyrean Vast Universe heard Demondawn's words, he frowned. He knew that Demondawn acted upon whatever whims he had at the moment and he didn't consider the proper rules and customs of the world. As long as he took a liking to something, he would make a grab for it. "It is indeed the inheritance left behind by Primordius. Demondawn, I advise you not to have any thoughts of taking Primordius's inheritance. It might not suit you and you already have your own transcendent divine might. The transcendent divine mights that others create will never be as good as your own. As for wealth, you do not lack for it. Moreover, where Primordius left his inheritance, he certainly also left behind other contingencies. Even if you personally take a trip there you might not return with anything."

Before Empyrean Primordius died, he had left behind a powerful array formation that blocked off the entire planet that the Sky Spill Continent was on. Any Divine Realm martial artist that was above the Divine Sea realm could not enter it.

Empyrean Demondawn coldly smiled. "Who knows whether that Primordius fellow is still alive or dead? Even if he left behind a wisp of his consciousness it's probably already withered away to nothing. In his most flourishing times, it's true that I was inferior to him, but now that he has died and such a long time has passed, how could any array or trap he set down possibly stop me?”

As Empyrean Demondawn said this, Empyrean Vast Universe frowned even more. Demondawn never had a good relationship with Primordius to begin with, and now that it was believed Primordius had died, if Demondawn wished to dig up his grave and steal his treasures then that would truly be a disaster for the inheritances that Empyrean Primordius left behind. Without a doubt, Primordius’s inheritance would not be able to develop well within Demondawn Heavenly Palace. It would simply be another inheritance and source of wealth for Demondawn, nothing more than a waste of a treasure.

As Empyrean Vast Universe didn’t know what to say, at his side, Empyrean Divine Dream faintly said, “The arrangements that Primordius left behind certainly have their own significance. Demondawn, do not meddle in his affairs.”

Her faint voice didn’t have the slightest fluctuation of emotion, but her words carried with them an undeniable majesty. This majesty formed a light pressure, just like a mortal king handing down an imperial decree. It was impossible to resist.

Empyrean Demondawn frowned. He fell into a deep silence for a long time before grimly saying, “I understand.”

In just several words, Empyrean Demondawn had been suppressed. Empyrean Vast Universe looked over at Empyrean Divine Dream with some surprise. He could feel that in these last several million years, he understood Divine Dream less and less. He had no idea just where the limits of her strength were now.

“Demondawn fears Divine Dream to this degree… could they have fought before?” Empyrean Vast Universe suddenly thought.

……….

At this time, Lin Ming walked down from the arena stage. In that battle just now, what surprised Lin Ming the most was the Ruling Spirit Art.

“A battle spirit could be used in such a manner too?”

Lin Ming’s battle spirit was strong, but he hadn’t used it often these past days, only using it to support his own attacks or influence the movements of his opponents. He had never used the greatest power of a battle spirit.

Now that he saw Frost Moon’s technique, his own thoughts were inspired. “Frost Moon is already so fierce when she uses the Ruling Spirit Art. If I were to learn this Ruling Spirit Art, then if that were combined with my grandmist battle spirit, just what degree of combat strength would I reach?”

Chapter 1286 – Three Swords

Chapter 1286 – Three Swords

…

…

…

"19th match, Dragon Fang against Yuwen Bo!"

Vast Cosmos loudly announced from above the martial stage. Dragon Fang had come from the same Gravemoon Star contest area as Lin Ming. Their strength was similar, thus the two of them had their first matches at similar times. After Lin Ming was Dragon Fang.

Dragon Fang's opponent was Yuwen Bo. Yuwen Bo came from the Vast Universe World and was the direct bloodline descendant of Vast Universe World's Great World King, the Wide Universe World King. During the pre-finals rankings, he was someone who far surpassed Nether Limitless.

Dragon Fang's tremendous strength was clear to everyone who could see. And now, after Lin Ming defeated Frost Moon, very few people believed that Yuwen Bo would win. Even so, the moment Yuwen Bo entered the stage, he immediately aroused cheers from the audience. Since Vast Universe World was the host world of the First Martial Meeting finals and this land was where Yuwen Bo came from, he naturally had many supporters.

"Please advise." Dragon Fang bowed.

Facing Dragon Fang, Yuwen Bo's complexion was grim.

As soon as the match started with Vast Cosmos's announcement, Yuwen Bo struck out with his entire strength. He knew that his chances of defeating Dragon Fang were extremely small; if he didn't start with everything he had then there wouldn't be any chance at all for him.

"Thousand Mile Blade!"

Yuwen Bo's sword slashed and the sword light gathered into a beam that was compressed to the limit. All around the sword light, space began to distort and the sword light itself was nearly invisible, as if it was hidden in the twisted space.

With this extreme speed and nearly imperceptible attack trajectory, it was nearly impossible to avoid.

However, it was a pity that his opponent was Dragon Fang.

As that Thousand Mile Blade neared Dragon Fang, the flow of time around Dragon Fang rapidly slowed to a crawl. Correspondingly, Yuwen Bo's sword light also slowed down.

Dragon Fang calmly avoided that sword light as his own sword light slashed down at Yuwen Bo's chest.

Humm –

Energy whistled. Yuwen Bo's pupils contracted as he rapidly drew backwards.

But at the same time, Dragon Fang's body split into four copies as he attacked Yuwen Bo from four directions. Spatial mirror images were not illusions but true avatars that contained a portion of the true body's striking power.

Four swords gathered as one. Yuwen Bo shouted out, revolving his true essence to the limit to resist this strike, but the difference in strength was simply far too great.

Peng!

The sword light exploded and Yuwen Bo's body flew backwards. He had suffered a fast and easy defeat.

“Dragon Fang, victory!”

Vast Cosmos cast a deep look at Dragon Fang. This result was already within his expectations. During the first rounds of the finals, before the first tier of 10 people was chosen, the true peak geniuses would obtain victory without any difficulties.

“This Dragon Fang is too strong! Those two fellows that came from Gravemoon Star, Lin Ming and Dragon Fang, are both freaks!”

“I heard that Dragon Fang has some strange eyes. Once he releases them, his combat strength will multiply. But he didn’t even activate them. His disparity with Yuwen Bo was too great; he didn’t need to use them at all.”

People didn’t understand the Three Lives Pupils, but they could sense that there was something formidable about Dragon Fang’s Laws.

“20th match, Lan Ling against Jun Bluemoon!”

Vast Cosmos announced once again.

Lan Ling was a disciple of Empyrean Freespirit!

In terms of status and strength, Empyrean Freespirit was considered in the upper reaches amongst the Empyreans. In the previous First Martial Meetings, the disciples of Freespirit Heavenly Place had attained superbly wonderful results.

Lan Ling confidently stepped onto the arena stage. And across from him, Jun Bluemoon still had his sword strung across his shoulders, a pot of wine hanging from his waist. He held a cute and lovable little bunny in his hands.

“Little Bunny, stay here for a short while. I will be back as soon as possible.”

As Jun Bluemoon spoke, he placed the small bunny onto his chair. He lovingly traced the body of the small bunny and then grasped his sword as he moved towards the arena stage.

As Lan Ling saw this his mouth curved up in a joking smile, ”At this time, you’re still in the mood to raise a bunny?”

Jun Bluemoon didn’t reply.

Lan Ling was immediately angered after being ignored like this. “Why don’t you admit defeat?”

“Admit defeat? Why would I admit defeat? I believe that to defeat you, three sword strikes should be enough.”

The entire audience was shocked by Jun Bluemoon’s words.

“Three swords!?”

Lan Ling wasn’t someone on the same level as Yuwen Bo. He was a true and blue Empyrean descendant, moreover, his strength wasn’t weak amongst the Empyrean descendants either. There were even some people who believed that he had the qualifications to struggle for a spot in the top 10. In this situation, just how arrogant was Jun Bluemoon to say those words?

“What background does this boy have? Is he insane?”

“Three swords to defeat Lan Ling? Only someone like Xiao Moxian would dare to speak such words!”

“This is too crazy!”

Many spectators widened their eyes until the whites showed. Before, besides being first in his semifinals contest, Jun Bluemoon hadn’t shown any amazing performance at all. And, being first in his semifinals division didn’t mean anything at all. Many people didn’t even think he would enter the top 50.

“Hahaha!”

Lan Ling wildly laughed. “Interesting, how interesting! I don’t remember how long it’s been since someone has spoken such arrogant words to me! Defeat me in three swords? Good! Great! Then show me just how you’ll defeat me!”

Qing!

Lan Ling drew out a saber. Although he was smiling, his smiling expression was icy cold and a killing intent exuded from his entire body. From this point, one could see that he wasn’t really smiling at all, but rather filled with murderous intent from Jun Bluemoon’s mockery of him!

Jun Bluemoon quietly flourished his sword. His sword was four feet long and the edge did not shine with a glimmering sheen but was completely stained with dust-colored rust. These rust stains made it look like a common mortal sword that was stained by blood for a long time and ended up being dyed in it.

Jun Bluemoon grasped his sword and stood proudly on the arena stage. His clothes were as white as snow. His looks were handsome and delicate, as if he were a lonely and melancholic scholar. If it weren’t for the sword in his hands, then if he were found in a mortal nation, it would be easy to imagine him as someone participating in a test for national office. In truth, even though he had a sword in hand he still didn’t seem to resemble a martial artist because that sword was far too shabby. Even if one were to throw it out in the street no one would pick it up.

“You think that sword can defeat me? I think you’re the insane one here.” Lan Ling sneered as he looked at that sword.

From appearances alone, that sword seemed like common metal. But, Lin Ming could actually faintly feel that it contained some special divine power, an indescribable feeling that was even similar to the Divine Seal Altar.

“That sword…” Lin Ming frowned, “Just what background does Jun Bluemoon come from?”

"The first sword! Light!"

At this time, Jun Bluemoon finally moved. With a wave of his sword, light began to be swallowed up. All of the surrounding rays of light were completely twisted up by this sword, gathering onto it. In that instant, the entire space in a 10 mile radius around Jun Bluemoon had become a jet black world!

"This is…" Lan Ling suddenly paused, startled. Without enough time to react, Jun Bluemoon's sword edge began to emit a flaming brilliance. This light starkly contrasted with the world of absolute darkness, blinding to the eye. This light was not ordinary at all. Even if a martial artist didn't look at it they would still be burnt by this radiance.

Even Lin Ming couldn't help but close his eyes in this situation. And not too far away from him, Dragon Fang's pupils had shrunk, becoming as small as the tip of a needle. He had opened the Three Lives Pupils.

"Light manipulation?"

A martial artist cried out in awe.

"No, those are the Yin Yang Laws!" Lin Ming's pupils shrank. He had experienced heavenly tribulation and the last two levels had been a simultaneous yin and yang tribulation. He certainly knew how strong the Yin Yang Laws were.

Within the Divine Realm, the Space and Time Laws were considered some of the strongest and most difficult Laws to practice, but they were only two of them; they were not the true kings of the Laws. There were some Laws that could absolutely stand on equal footing with them. For instance, the Yin Yang Laws!

Yin yang energies were the foundation of all existence. In fact, there were even less people that cultivated the Yin Yang Laws than those that cultivated the Time and Space Laws.

"Free Spirited King!"

As this dual yin yang divine light seemed to swallow everything, Lan Ling roared out. A red saber light split through the skies like a pillar that held up the heavens, nearly cutting the skies in half. As many martial artists saw this saber light they felt their hearts rapidly racing in their chests.

“Transcendent divine might! That is a transcendent divine might!”

“That’s right, this is Empyrean Freespirit’s own transcendent divine might, the Free Spirited King! Although this transcendent divine might isn’t yet complete, it is still a transcendent divine might. There are few that can match it in power!”

Lan Ling used his transcendent divine might in order to break through Jun Bluemoon as well as his Yin Yang Laws! But, this was also proof that Jun Bluemoon was too strong, leaving no choice but for Lan Ling to fight with everything he had.

For a martial artist of common origin to reach this step was already an accomplishment to be proud of.

“The second sword! Cut!”

Jun Bluemoon aimed at that blazing red saber light and slashed out with his sword. It was unknown what move he used but the world trembled as if the sun and moon had disappeared, as if this sword had discolored the world, leaving nothing but absolute black and absolute white. The saber light that Lan Ling shot out was torn apart by Jun Bluemoon’s sword light, completely disintegrating!

But at the same time, Jun Bluemoon’s sword light also melted away. The sword light and saber light mutually cancelled each other out, both attacks simultaneously disappearing.

“The third sword! Defeat!”

And unimaginably, after Jun Bluemoon struck out with two nearly unrivalled sword strikes, he actually slashed out for a third time in less than a split second!

This third sword strike was even stronger than the first and second attacks combined!

As for Lan Ling, after using the incomplete transcendent divine might that Empyrean Freespirit had created, he had used up his strength and wasn't able to summon up any new strength yet. He could only watch helplessly on as Jun Bluemoon's sword came cutting down at him!

"How could this be possible?"

Lan Ling's face was filled with disbelief. He couldn't believe that Jun Bluemoon would have such powerful strength that he was able to launch three terrifying sword strikes in rapid succession. Did he hold inexhaustible world power within him?

But there was no longer time to think about such things. Jun Bluemoon's last sword strike easily ripped through his saber light and broke through his protective true essence.

With the faint sound of an explosion, Lan Ling's protective true essence collapsed and he was sent flying backwards like a broken ragdoll.

Lan Ling spat out a great mouthful of blood, heavily crashing into the ground, completely defeated.

The entire audience was shocked.

After saying he would defeat Lan Ling in three swords, Jun Bluemoon had not used one strike too many or one strike too few. He had defeated his opponent exactly as he said he would.

Moreover, his opponent was a true Empyrean descendant. Even amongst Empyrean descendants, Lan Ling hadn't been that weak, but he had still lost miserably.

Just what sort of background did Jun Bluemoon have?

Even Lin Ming who had long since noticed Jun Bluemoon was surprised. Lan Ling was indeed strong, but his strength only served to further contrast the freakish strength of Jun Bluemoon.

Lin Ming even began to wonder, between Dragon Fang and Jun Bluemoon, just who was stronger?

"This Jun Bluemoon… I heard that he is a common martial artist. How is that possible?"

It was known before that Dragon Fang came from a common origin, but in truth he was also an Empyrean descendant. Now it was said that Jun Bluemoon also came from a mortal background, but how could a martial artist of such a humble background reach this boundary?

Chapter 1287 – Divine Seal 12 Children

Chapter 1287 – Divine Seal 12 Children

…

…

…

“That sword is suspicious…” Mo Eversnow’s voice suddenly sounded out from within Lin Ming’s mind.

That strange sword was clearly stained with rust, and yet it contained a mysterious strength.

“I also think it is strange, but I cannot understand it at all. Perhaps that sword was his lucky chance.”

When Lin Ming first rose in strength he had relied on the Magic Cube to do so. Of course, afterwards, most of his growth had been because of his own strength as he walked down his road of martial arts one step at a time. His firm heart of martial arts, his will, his destiny, all of that was indispensable.

If someone were to obtain a heaven-defying magic tool and also possess a great will and destiny, it wasn’t strange if they could grow to the point of defeating an Empyrean descendant in three moves.

Jun Bluemoon had the chance of being such a person. If so, then he was absolutely a grass-roots martial artist, an extremely rare exception that might appear once in a trillion trillion people.

As Lin Ming was thinking this, Jun Bluemoon had already returned to his seat. He held that small white bunny, gently stroking its fur as he meditated.

Everything happening around him, including the cheers of the audience as well as the dread and curiosity in the eyes of the other participants, none of it seemed to have any effect on him, as if he were indifferent to everything else in the world.

As for that small white bunny, it wasn't agitated at all in this battlefield soaked with killing intent and blood. Rather, it serenely sat on Jun Bluemoon's leg, its red eyes closed in peace as if it were enjoying Jun Bluemoon's petting very much.

"Lin Ming, that bunny… is strange."

"Mm?" Lin Ming was startled, "How is it strange?"

"It isn't a bunny at all. Rather, it is something borrowing the form of a bunny. There is a mysterious soul inside that is using the bunny as a temporary body."

"Mysterious soul? Could it be Jun Bluemoon's master?" Lin Ming blurted out. In his opinion, if someone wanted to grow to Jun Bluemoon's level, they definitely needed some teacher guiding them in secret.

"Maybe not…" Mo Eversnow shook her head. "That soul gives off a very delicate feeling. It seems to be the soul of an ordinary girl… it's impossible to explain. From start to finish, this Jun Bluemoon has been filled with secrets."

A melancholic and wistful scholarly youth, he carried a white bunny with him at all times and a pot of wine was always at his waist. He used a sword that seemed to be coated with rust, and even though he seemed so nondescript and unnoticeable, he was actually able to erupt with such a terrifying combat strength!

It could only be said that the Divine Realm was far too large and there were far too many geniuses.

At this time, within Vast Universe Heavenly Place, Empyrean Vast Universe was also looking at that sword in Jun Bluemoon's hands. "That sword… could it be a divine artifact?"

Even Empyrean Vast Universe couldn't see through that sword. Or, to better describe it, he could feel that the sword was an Empyrean spirit treasure, but how could a Divine Sea realm martial artist possibly drive the movement of an Empyrean spirit treasure and also cause it to release so many unknown strengths?

Near Empyrean Vast Universe, Empyrean Divine Dream shook her head, saying, "It isn't a divine tool but something that surpasses one… it was indeed only an Empyrean spirit treasure to begin with, and a peak Empyrean spirit treasure at that. But, the question appears on the bloodstains that cover the blade."

"Bloodstains!?"

Empyrean Vast Universe was stunned. "Are you saying that those aren't rust stains but bloodstains?"

Those rust stains looked just like bloodstains on mortal swords that were never cleaned off, causing the blood to rust on the sword. And now, from Empyrean Divine Dream's meaning, it appeared that was true.

However… if those were truly rusty bloodstains on an Empyrean spirit artifact, whose blood could it be?

An Empyrean spirit treasure was refined by an Empyrean, and if an Empyrean level master used all of their strength they could also destroy one. But, for an Empyrean spirit treasure to rust just because of a few drops of blood, just what sort of concept was that?

Empyrean Divine Dream suddenly eerily said, "Spirit treasures have a spirit and they can choose their own master. On Lin Ming's body, he also has a spirit treasure. Dragon Fang is the chosen descendant of Three Lives Old Man. As the impending great calamity approaches, many ancient spiritual objects will sense this. Their reappearance is no coincidence at all…

thus the reason for so many unprecedented geniuses rising together in this First Martial Meeting. Perhaps, the next First Martial Meeting will also be the same…”

As Empyrean Divine Dream said this, Empyrean Vast Universe felt a great weight push down on his heart. He was well aware that to countless people, his status was an unattainable mountain. But, when he truly had to face the great calamity, he would be nothing more than a small spray of water in a raging ocean, able to scatter apart like a dying flower in winter.

“I hope that these juniors can fully grow before the great calamity arrives.”

Empyrean Vast Universe quietly said. This was for him, but also for the Divine Realm.

And near Empyrean Vast Universe, a strange light flashed in Empyrean Demondawn’s eyes. No one could tell just what he was thinking.

On the arena stage, after Jun Bluemoon, it was time for the dual body and energy cultivator Shiku to step on stage. In this battle, Shiku also revealed an abnormal combat strength, arousing the surprise of many.

And after Shiku, another aberrant genius appeared. This person was not a human, but a Prince of the monster race. His title and attitude were beyond arrogant and he called himself Lord Monster, one born with the bloodline of a king. The one he fought was also an Empyrean descendant, but he had been beaten up horribly. It was a completely one-sided battle. One could even say that the Monster Prince was playing around, just like a cat playing with a mouse.

“Lord Monster?”

Lin Ming noticed this youth. “A Monster Prince actually came to attend the First Martial Meeting of humanity? Is that allowed?”

Lin Ming's eyes locked onto this monster youth's body. This fellow who referred to himself as Lord Monster was ridiculously cocky and high-handed in his mannerisms, but he was indeed very strong.

"How disappointing. Are these the Empyrean descendants that represent the highest level of talent in the human race?"

The monster youth disdainfully said. His words immediately attracted the glares of many human geniuses.

"What are you all looking at? If you have the guts then come over and defeat me. But do you have that strength…? Hahahaha!"

The monster youth recklessly and wildly laughed, his laughs spreading out far and wide. But, the many heroic young elites present simply didn't have the energy to face him. They couldn't even defeat the Empyrean descendant that this monster youth had brutally beaten to a pulp.

"All of you make way for me!"

The monster youth roared. His voice had a strange penetrating power, making one's ears shake with numbness. Many geniuses couldn't help but move out of his way. The monster youth swaggered over to his chair and plopped himself down, his legs spread wide as he postured like a bored ruler, swollen with an overweening arrogance as if no one could rival him.

Lin Ming didn't bother with him too much and looked away.

Soon, the 25th match and also the last match of the first round began.

The two that entered the stage both had similar levels of strength. One of them was Blood Carnage, a martial artist from a Great World King Holy Land. After a grueling match he defeated his opponent, and thus, out of the disciples from the Divine Realm's 3000 Great

World King Holy Lands, the only one to defeat their opponent in the first round was Blood Carnage.

Besides him, the rest had been defeated!

Although the first round of the competition was the most relaxed round, one could still make out many things from the results.

By just judging the strengths that the various participants had revealed so far, some people had already begun to calculate and determine the final top 10 rankings of the First Martial Meeting. There was even a gambling house that was opened.

Out of the several hundred million people present, each person was a peak character of the Divine Realm with unimaginable wealth and power at their beck and call. If all of them casually made a bet, the figures involved would be astronomical.

"Have you heard? There are some people that have named the Divine Seal 12 Children." Within the contestant area, some martial artists were discussing amongst themselves.

"Mm? Divine Seal 12 Children?"

"Yes, 12 people, each with a chance to become divine in the future."

Divine Seal, to become divine, was an extremely vague idea. In general terms, it implied that one had colossal potential and their future achievements would be limitless. But, as for what boundary they would reach in the future, that was hard to say.

This outlook naturally originated from Empyrean Divine Dream's Divine Seal Decree.

Now that the finals were underway, the two words of Divine Seal could be compressed into 12 people. These were the Divine Seal 12 Children.

"Who are the Divine Seal 12 Children?"

“The first are three characters that will absolutely become gods in the future: Frost Dream, Xiao Moxian, and Hang Chi. Frost Dream is first, and as for who is weaker between Xiao Moxian and Hang Chi, it is hard to say. However, in terms of potential alone, Xiao Moxian might sweep away everyone present.

“After that is Jun Bluemoon and the Monster Prince; they can be ranked fourth and fifth. The rankings after that are a bit difficult to say, and there are too many differing opinions on them. Lin Ming, Dragon Fang, White King, Shiku, Ram Saber, Hua Xuan… we don’t have enough information on these people so it is impossible to evaluate their strength.”

The discussions of these people naturally passed into Lin Ming’s ears.

“Divine Seal 12 Children?” Lin Ming faintly smiled, “Although these rankings aren’t necessarily accurate, the several people I have noticed are all on this list. Without an accident, the final 10 will appear from those 12 people.”

Lin Ming didn’t think that Dragon Fang was weaker than Jun Bluemoon. Many people didn’t understand Dragon Fang’s strength, thus they didn’t know how to rank him. But, the top three was likely true. Hang Chi gave off an unfathomably deep feeling. In truth, even though he hadn’t displayed even a hint of his true strength yet, there was no need for him to do so. Just the reputation of being a descendant of Mount Potala was enough to arouse the awe of countless people.

Chapter 1288 – Battle of the 12 Children

Chapter 1288 – Battle of the 12 Children

…

…

…

The finals had 50 participants. In the first part, everyone would have to fight 18 matches, and the final 10 people would be chosen from this.

The order of the matches in the first part was all dependent on the arrangement of the host, Vast Cosmos. He would try to separate the powerhouses as far away from each other as possible.

After Lin Ming defeated his opponent in the first round of matches, he continued to earn a series of wins. The following opponents he fought were all weaker than Frost Moon.

"I admit defeat."

Facing Lin Ming, Blood Carnage wasn't able to summon the least bit of courage to fight. If it was an opponent that was stronger than him, but not by too much, then Blood Carnage would still fight. Although he would be defeated, it would still be a glorious defeat that tempered himself.

But facing this freak like Lin Ming who was included in the Divine Seal 12 Children, Blood Carnage was well aware that he would be defeated within two attacks if he fought. In front of several hundred million people, what reason was there to bring shame and trouble upon himself? If he was going to lose like that then it would be better to preserve his own strength to deal with the following matches, because no matter how bad his results were he still needed to fight the full 18 matches. No one hoped to lose all 18 matches in a miserable manner. He would at least need to win another one or two so that it didn't look too ugly.

Soon, Lin Ming obtained a 17 win winning streak. Only his last match remained.

There were many people who had a 17 win winning streak. However, the first tier of people that formed after the first rounds in the finals would only consist of 10 people. Because of this, it wasn't strange for some of these people to bump into each other, especially the Divine Seal 12 Children.

At this time, Lin Ming's opponent was one of the Divine Seal 12 Children – Ram Saber.

This match would determine who would enter the final top 10.

At the same time, Dragon Fang, Shiku, White King, and even Jun Bluemoon all met opponents who had won all 17 of their matches so far.

The last battle would be far more intense than the previous matches.

Lin Ming hefted the Phoenix Blood Spear and stepped onto the arena stage. His opponent was a thin young man carrying a thick saber on his back. He wasn't tall and his skin was swarthy, serving as a direct contrast to the tremendous saber he carried that was nearly as wide as his body.

"You are Lin Ming?"

The thin youth coldly looked at Lin Ming, his eyes giving off an impression as if he were a wild beast staring at its prey. His gaze held no contempt nor did it carry arrogance. Rather, there was only an extremely fierce ruthlessness.

This sort of person was absolutely strong. They had experienced countless battles and gone through numerous dangerous and risky situations. Their fighting intuition had been honed to a terrifying state and no matter the situation, they could remain completely calm and crazy at the same time.

When someone faced this youth, it was like facing a wild desolate beast.

Naturally, those that were included in the Divine Seal 12 Children weren't common geniuses of their era.

Vast Cosmos's voice suddenly rang out.

"Ram Saber, the descendant of Saber Sovereign. Senior Saber Sovereign is a hidden Empyrean that has long been in seclusion. He rose to fame 50 million years ago, and his skills with a saber are fantastic and unrivalled!"

Vast Cosmos did something he rarely did and introduced Ram Saber. This was mostly because besides some peak high level figures here, no one, not even ordinary World King powerhouses, knew of the Saber Sovereign. That old man's era had been far too long ago. In the past he had been known as the number one saber artist in the world, and in these past many years he had been living in seclusion. Nowadays there were very few people who knew of him.

Hidden Empyreans did not create their own Heavenly Palaces and their wealth was naturally less than ordinary Empyreans'. At the same time, they wouldn't receive too many direct disciples either. A hidden Empyrean would often receive around 20 disciples, about an average of one every few million years. These Empyreans had extremely harsh and stringent qualifications for who they accepted, so the average quality of their disciples far surpassed the Empyrean descendants of most Empyrean Heavenly Palaces!

"To be specifically introduced by Vast Cosmos, this Saber Sovereign is no laughing matter!"

"Ram Saber is ruthless, but Lin Ming is ruthless too! With two freaks bumping into each other, I wonder just who is fiercer." Lin Ming's victory over Frost Moon was still fresh in everyone's mind. No one thought that Lin Ming was weak any longer.

"I've also seen their matches. From what I can tell, Ram Saber's style is extremely vicious and cruel, whereas Lin Ming is more versatile, skilled in Laws, speed, and strength. If Lin

Ming can draw Ram Saber into an extended battle then he should be able to win with a slight superiority!”

As everyone was speaking, Ram Saber suddenly extracted the saber on his back. He slowly stroked the saber edge and said, “I have always followed my master and journeyed through the world. My master has taken 22 disciples in his life so far, but now only two remain; all of the others have died adventuring. This is my first time participating in the First Martial Meeting to gain experience, and you are an extremely wonderful saber whetting stone for me.”

Ram Saber’s words shocked the entire audience. 22 disciples and yet 19 had died? Wasn’t that just being cruel to one’s own disciples? Those disciples that Saber Sovereign chose must have been outstanding talents of their era, and yet over 90% of them had died in their adventures! This Saber Sovereign was truly heartless.

“That is simply Saber Sovereign’s character. It was rumored that when he was young, he was captured by an assassin organization and trained as the ultimate killer. He was in a troop of 10,000 assassins, and they were slowly whittled down using the most brutal methods until only he was left remaining. Without being tempered through blood and pain it is impossible to train a master. When Saber Sovereign receives a disciple, he will always give them a choice and explain to them clearly what lays in their future if they choose to follow. If they fear death they can refuse him.” In the honored guest area, an old man with some knowledge of the Saber Sovereign explained.

The audience was left dumbfounded. In all the various great influences, just who didn’t regard their top disciples as treasures that needed to be protected? When they went out on adventures, these top disciples were usually left with all sorts of contingency treasures to protect them from true death.

But Saber Sovereign let them die as they did.

And for Ram Saber to live through the deaths of nearly all his fellow apprentices, his strength could be imagined!

“You think I’m a saber whetting stone? I’m only afraid that your saber will wear itself down and break…” Lin Ming said. He pointed the Phoenix Blood Spear to the ground and drew a full arc.

Hoh – !

On the arena stage, Ram Saber suddenly turned into a burst of wind as he rushed towards Lin Ming. The saber in his hands came slashing down. All around his body, saber energies gathered, spinning like a tornado. These saber energies fused with each other, rapidly flowing. Upon looking closer, one could see that these saber lights connected from head to toe, overlapping continuously. This was not only a sharp offensive move but it also had strong defensive characteristics.

“That is Saber King Domain, one of Senior Saber Sovereign’s unique techniques!”

For a peak genius like Ram Saber, having a domain skill was nothing strange at all. Once the Saber King Domain was revealed, the complete defensive and offensive system was difficult to deal with. Even if 10,000 martial artists attacked him, all of them launching a barrage of supernatural abilities, they would still find it hard to pierce through that saber light. If an enemy were to enter that domain they would instantly be torn apart by the wild saber light within.

Ram Saber roared out loud and explosive popping noises came from his body. The muscles on his thin body suddenly bulged out as he soared up in height and size.

“Blood Pond Hell!”

Ram Saber suddenly slashed down with his saber. A saber light tore out like an electric python, bringing with it waves of killing intent that were beyond horrifying. This sort of killing intent was gathered by Ram Saber through countless life or death slaughters, finally substantializing into true ghostly demons.

In that moment, behind Ram Saber, the phantom of a blood red demon king appeared. Facing this saber, many people felt as if they had fallen into an Asura hell and were sucked deep down into an infinite blood pond, living on the border of life and death as they suffered for all of eternity!

"This saber attack!" Lin Ming's pupil's shrank. Ram Saber's attack was not flashy or gorgeous like the techniques of other geniuses, rather, it was the meaning of absolute death and wild destruction. It was like facing an ancient desolate vicious beast; if words were to describe it then it would be called fierce to the extreme.

Ram Saber's saber potential was indomitable. During the last 17 matches, none of his opponents were able to defend against it head-on. The audience stared at Lin Ming with wide eyes, waiting to see how he dealt with this!

Lin Ming took a step backwards, his knees sinking down and his spear coming down across his body. He opened all seven of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and released the Heretical God Force.

The Phoenix Blood Spear smashed outwards, so fast that it curved like a crescent moon to greet Ram Saber's strike!

Peng!

Saber and spear collided and a terrifying energy recklessly erupted. The powerful impact forced the ground underneath Lin Ming to blow up, revealing the thundercrush steel and timeless god stone below. Only that sort of foundation was solid enough that it could withstand the tremendous force that tore through Lin Ming.

Like this, Lin Ming's arms were steady above his head as he forcefully blocked Ram Saber's strike with the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Ram Saber's eyes flashed with a trace of surprise. "You can actually block my saber in a frontal strike? Out of all my peers I have fought, you are the first!"

Ram Saber was not exaggerating. His saber strike was indeed fierce. The entire audience also knew this to be true. Even though they were separated by a great distance, they could still feel that saber light crawl up their back, making them shiver.

“The first?” Lin Ming chuckled, “I think you will soon discover that there will be a second and a third, moreover… I’m not just blocking your saber.”

Lin Ming summoned his strength, rising up with power flowing through his waist. He swept out his spear, shaking Ram Saber away.

He took a sudden step forwards and shot towards Ram Saber, “Blue Lotus Flame Dance!”

His body exploded with tens of millions of jins of strength. The strength of his mortal body and the power of the Fire Laws combined together as Lin Ming heavily struck out at Ram Saber!

Ka ka ka!

The Saber King Domain’s saber energies were directly ripped open by brute force. Countless saber energies collapsed as if they were nothing more than threads of silk!

Lin Ming’s spear came crashing down; flames howled!

In a similar frontal attack, Lin Ming had just blocked Ram Saber. Now, it was Ram Saber’s turn to block Lin Ming!

Bang!

With a terrifying explosion, Ram Saber was forced backwards and then sent flying away!

The audience didn’t even have time to shout out. At this time, Lin Ming took another step forwards as the Phoenix Blood Spear came pounding down once more!

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Spear after spear, each spear stronger than the last. The spear lights were like surging waves, howling in the air. Ram Saber was sent staggering back time and time again, his arms slowly going numb, even as Lin Ming grew increasingly strong and his strikes became increasingly brutal!

This was full frontal suppression!

Before this, many people weren't sure who was stronger between Lin Ming and Ram Saber. In their opinion, it didn't matter who won and who lost. But, they never imagined that Lin Ming would be pressing down Ram Saber in the frontal combat that he excelled in the most.

Every strike he made came with overwhelming momentum, not allowing his opponent a single chance to turn the tables!

What sort of strength was this?

Monster!

Soon, Lin Ming and Ram Saber had exchanged 100 moves! In this moment, Lin Ming shouted out loud and those 100 spear strikes from before gathered together, erupting with an incomparably terrifying might like a wild dragon soaring down a mountain, unparalleled!

"Celestial Tyrant Manual – Hundred Layered Waves!"

This spear heavily crashed onto Ram Saber's saber point.

Peng!

Ram Saber only felt his palm shake and his entire arm go numb. The saber point was pushed to his own chest and his entire body flew a thousand feet. The tiles underneath him ruptured as his clothes tore apart and all the blood vitality within his body tumbled up and down.

Chapter 1289 – The Final Battles Begin

Chapter 1289 – The Final Battles Begin

…

…

…

"That Lin Ming, he sent Ram Saber flying back with a single spear!"

The audience was bewildered; Lin Ming was too fierce. In speed, Laws, and everything else he was an outstanding genius, and even his frontal combat skills were terrifying. He was a versatile martial artist with seemingly no weakness at all.

"It seems Lin Ming's speculated ranking will rise."

"You're very powerful." Ram Saber said. He suddenly stood up and ripped off his tattered clothes with his hands, revealing a dark and thickly muscled body that seemed forged from metal. It was unknown just what special physique he had, but after his bloodline was activated, his originally skinny body grew to epic proportions. His muscles bulged out and his strength rose to a ridiculous level.

Ram Saber was like a wild beast as he stared at Lin Ming and wiped the leaking blood from the edges of his lips.

"Mm? You can still stand?" Lin Ming was surprised. That strike was nearly his complete physical strength just now, but it seemed that Ram Saber's resilience and defensive capabilities had surpassed his imagination. To be able to be included in the Divine Seal 12 Children, this Ram Saber was truly extraordinary.

He could already imagine that the fights from now on would be much more difficult! Dragon Fang, Xiao Moxian, Frost Dream, Hang Chi, none of those powerhouses were easy to deal with.

“In truth, I have already lost this battle. Master was right; there is no limit in this universe. There is always a higher heaven and a stronger person. My cultivation is still not enough. But, I will not allow myself to quit like this. I still have one final strike. If you can receive it then I will admit defeat!”

Originally, for matches on the arena stage, they were not meant to be overdone. After being defeated by one move, in the strictest sense that was already a loss.

Ram Saber lifted his arms, his hands suspended high above his head. As he did this, his aura suddenly changed, becoming far more bloodthirsty and maniacal, just like a demon. His eyes revealed a look of utter bloodlust.

“Blood Prison Saber Sutra, the first move – Demon Slayer!”

Ram Saber spoke out each word of his technique as clearly as possible because of the respect he held towards his master. The Blood Prison Saber Sutra was the transcendent divine might created by his master!

“This junior Ram Saber actually managed to cultivate the Blood Prison Saber Sutra. This transcendent divine might is the total knowledge of Saber Sovereign’s saber dao. There are numerous techniques contained within it and even more Laws. However, the Blood Prison Saber Sutra is different from most transcendent divine mights – the threshold to train in it is absurdly high. I never imagined that Ram Saber would be able to successfully learn the first move.”

On the honored seating area, a blue-clothed old man slowly spoke. Every transcendent divine might was extremely comprehensive and the contents contained within them were rich beyond description. After all, they were the life summaries of everything an Empyrean had learned.

At this time, Ram Saber moved. His body faded into a red shadow as the thick saber in his hands slashed straight down. This saber seemed to cut apart the world, swallowing all!

As this saber chopped down, a trace of longing flashed in Ram Saber's pupils. For that moment, between the heavens and earth, it seemed as if only this saber existed. Even though the audience was dozens of miles away, they still felt an illusion as if they were cut by this saber. They were affected by the saber light and felt their blood energy tumble in chaos.

Lin Ming, who had to bear the brunt of this attack, suddenly felt as if all the blood vessels in his body were about to explode and like the flow of his blood was reversing. He was finding it hard to withstand.

These were the Blood Laws. By using the Laws, one could direct a person's blood flow. If this saber strike were to cut down at a million man army, it could cause all of their blood to rush out from their blood vessels and rain down into the air. Their bodies would be reduced to nothing but ruined flesh and rivers of blood would form, gathering together into a true blood pond hell!

The name of Blood Prison Saber Sutra partially came from this. In the past, Saber Sovereign had relied on this sword technique to kill countless people!

"Die!"

Ram Saber shouted out. A crimson saber light as thick as a python chopped down heavily!

In that moment, Lin Ming opened all seven of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates in his body. The Heretical God Force erupted and the blood of the Ancient Phoenix combusted, his fighting strength reaching the limit.

Lin Ming thrust out his spear. From behind him, the phantom of a giant divine tree appeared, the crown towering into the heavens. Underneath the shroud of this divine tree phantom, Lin Ming's power of blood suddenly stabilized. No matter how crazy or fierce the Blood Prison Saber Sutra was, Lin Ming remained as solid and steady as Mount Tai.

"Explode!"

Thunder and fire crossed together and a powerful strength burst out. Lin Ming's strike smashed into Ram Saber's crimson saber light, causing the saber light to explode into countless fragments that fell down like endless rose petals, even pulverizing the stone floor into pieces!

Puff!

Ram Saber spat out a mouthful of blood, his body shaking as his complexion turned paper white.

"I have lost, convincingly and fully!"

Ram Saber used his thick saber to support himself, barely managing to stand up. That strike just now had created too great of a burden on his body and he had also been struck by Lin Ming's counterattack, making his injuries even worse! For him to still be standing here was completely because of his special bloodline and formidable body.

"Without standing on the stage of the entire Divine Realm, I would never have imagined that so many extreme characters exist. What Master says is right: the road ahead of me is still long."

Ram Saber closed his eyes, thinking to himself. Before he came, the Saber Sovereign had already warned Ram Saber that he would only be coming here to gain experience and temper himself; it would be impossible for him to obtain first place.

Ram Saber had originally refused to accept this, but now it seemed that his master was correct!

He had been one of the Saber Sovereign's 22 disciples, and after undergoing countless life or death tribulations, he had emerged as one of the only two surviving. His body had a special bloodline and his physique was comparable to that of an ancient vicious beast. Not just that, but his perception was extremely high, allowing him to practice the Blood Prison

Saber Sutra's first move at only the late Divine Sea realm. And with the Saber Sovereign personally teaching him, he lacked neither resources nor inheritances. But even in such a situation, he had completely lost. He wouldn't even be able to enter the top 10!

It could only be said that there were too many geniuses in the Divine Realm. There were those extreme characters with a great destiny gathered upon their body, a destiny that would bring them to an unimaginable future.

As Ram Saber suffered his sad defeat, the audience fell into a deep silence, many of them not expecting such a result. Although Ram Saber's last strike had been extremely strong, it had still been blocked by Lin Ming. Lin Ming was like a great mountain, steady and unshakeable!

To this point, the performances Lin Ming had revealed so far had been inferior to Jun Bluemoon and the Monster Prince. Even so, he had never been defeated. This caused many people to be unable to determine just where his limits were.

"Divine Seal 12 Children... no, it should be called the Divine Seal 10 Children now. This Lin Ming might be able to rank in the top six."

"What do you know? Don't just blindly guess with what you see in your eyes. You'll be like everyone else that is reaching conclusions based upon a tiny amount of incomplete information. Lin Ming definitely didn't give his all just now. However, Jun Bluemoon isn't an exception – he is also hiding his strength. It is impossible to truly tell who is stronger and weaker so far. And as the finals continue, Frost Dream and Xiao Moxian will likely have an unshakeable status. As for Hang Chi, he has yet to reveal his true strength, but each of the rumors swirling around him is more terrifying than the last."

"There is no need to doubt Hang Chi's strength. He has always kept a low profile and has never revealed anything unnecessary. As for his strength, there are several high level figures that can guarantee he is extremely strong. You can't judge him so far based upon his current performance in the First Martial Meeting."

The final ranking results of the Heaven Proclamation were impossibly confusing. No one could say whether there would be an even darker horse to appear from amongst the 10 final people. As for those several Empyrean descendants with the greatest limelight on them, it was hard to judge who was stronger and weaker.

“Lin Ming, victory!”

Vast Cosmos solemnly declared. As the finals continued on, even Vast Cosmos was finding it hard to maintain his calm. This round of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting had far surpassed all other times in the past. The several top ranked characters here would all have high chances of becoming Empyreans in the future.

In the past First Martial Meetings, the first ranked Empyrean descendant on the Heaven Proclamation would at most become a half-step Emyprean in the future. As for the first ranked Great World King disciple on the Earth Proclamation, they would usually become a Great World King in the future.

Only in a single First Martial Meeting every million years or so would a true future Empyrean be born.

But in this current First Martial Meeting, three young Empyreans had already appeared. Moreover, once these people became Empyreans, they would not be ordinary Empyreans either. Among them, Xiao Moxian had the greatest potential. In the future, there was a high chance that she would become someone outstanding even amongst the many Empyreans. Although she might not be able to stand on par with Empyrean Divine Dream, she should at least be able to stand evenly with Empyrean Demondawn! This was an unthinkable event.

As Vast Cosmos saw so many young Empyreans appear before him, how could he maintain a tranquil mood? “Heroes rise in turbulent times. With so many geniuses appearing, is this a sign that the great calamity approaches?”

In the last round of the qualifying finals, there were many winners who obtained an unbroken winning streak, all of them glorious!

After Lin Ming finished his match, White King, Dragon Fang, Jun Bluemoon, and the rest also smoothly defeated their opponents, directly joining the final battle list!

Lin Ming wasn't surprised by this at all.

At the end, Shiku defeated the last person of the Divine Seal 12 Children and smoothly entered the next stage.

Thus, for the final deciding battles, the 10 people were –

Frost Dream, Xiao Moxian, Hang Chi, Lin Ming, White King, Dragon Fang, Jun Bluemoon, the Monster Prince, Shiku, Hua Xuan.

Although one couldn't exactly determine the final ranking results, one could still make guesses based on what they knew. According to these speculations, Vast Universe Heavenly Palace opened a gambling house.

In the past it was only some World King influences making some small bets, and this time it was a gambling house directly managed by an Empyrean influence. With Vast Universe Heavenly Palace conducting this event, it was naturally their right to do so.

The compensation rates were –

Frost Dream's odds to be first place were 1 to 1.5.

Xiao Moxian and Hang Chi's odds were 1 to 2.

Jun Bluemoon's first place odds were 1 to 6.5. His odds to reach the top three were 1 to 2.

Lin Ming and the Monster Prince's first place odds were 1 to 7. Their odds to reach the top three were 1 to 3.

Dragon Fang's first place odds were 1 to 8. His odds to reach the top three were 1 to 4.

Shiku's odds to reach the top three were 1 to 10.

Hua Xuan's odds to reach the top three were 1 to 15.

Finally, for White King, as a disciple of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, he was excluded from the gambling house and his odds for ranking in the top few also weren't included. This was to prevent others from gossiping. Although an Empyrean influence wouldn't do something as ridiculous as throwing a match for profit, it was still best to immediately put an end to anyone who would try to use that as a pretext for speaking ill of them.

As these compensation rates came out, it immediately caused a furor.

Frost Dream, Xiao Moxian, and Hang Chi did not have any odds to reach the top three because it was already widely recognized that their chances of reaching the top three were a near guarantee. As for Shiku and Hua Xuan, they didn't have any odds of winning first place because it was universally agreed to be impossible for them.

This caused Hua Xuan and Shiku to both feel very depressed. "These people from Vast Universe Heavenly Palace really consider us worthless."

"They only have Lin Ming and Jun Bluemoon in their eyes. They look down their noses at us far too much!"

Hua Xuan and Shiku didn't publicly complain; they could only rely on their own results to earn back their honor.

However, there were so people that were definitely not happy.

"How come my odds are only 1 to 7?" The Monster Prince laughed as he saw these gambling house odds, "Who was the mentally ill retard that arranged these odds? And who the hell is this Lin Ming to think that he can compare with the likes of me? And that Jun Bluemoon too; his odds are actually above my own!"

The Monster Prince's voice was loud and brash. Both Lin Ming and Jun Bluemoon could hear him.

Jun Bluemoon ignored him, simply continuing to hug and pet the little bunny in his hands. But, Lin Ming's eyes turned icy cold as he looked at the Monster Prince.

Chapter 1290 – Do You Accept Credit?

Chapter 1290 – Do You Accept Credit?

…

…

…

It was naturally impossible for Empyrean Vast Universe to come up with these compensation rates; he simply didn’t have the mood or temperament to do so. Rather, these odds were arranged by a World King powerhouse within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace who was responsible for managing the sect’s internal affairs. Vast Universe Heavenly Palace had a trillion disciples and the amount of resources they consumed was astronomical. They certainly had to look for chances to gain resources when possible.

The Monster Prince simply wouldn’t respect an ordinary World King powerhouse, because in the future, his achievements would certainly surpass becoming a World King powerhouse. In addition, he had much stronger World King powerhouses in his background. Even on this journey here, he had Great World King powerhouses of the monster race accompanying him.

Thus he spoke bluntly, even mocking Lin Ming and Jun Bluemoon.

One of the disciples helping to manage Vast Universe Heavenly Palace’s gambling house heard the Monster Prince call their compensation rates mentally ill and coldly said, “You need to speak in a far more polite and humble manner! The odds that our Vast Universe Heavenly Palace have arranged are not for the likes of you to question!”

The disciple himself was a Divine Transformation powerhouse. Since he was a disciple of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, he certainly wasn't an ordinary Divine Transformation realm powerhouse, but an outstanding young elite.

But facing this person, the Monster Prince didn't fear him at all. He laughed and said, "What a crowd of inexperienced nobodies that have never seen the great world. To think that you all would actually put me on par with a low and debased human! I can't be bothered to talk nonsense with you humans. I will bet 30 nine sun jades on myself to win!"

As the Monster Prince spoke he tossed out 30 fist-sized nine sun jades. He was an extremely arrogant individual. If others were going to put him at such low odds then he would simply bet on himself to win.

Nine sun jades were objects that were refined by a half-step Empyrean or above. They took the essence of a violet sun crystal and then fused together nine different kinds of yang energy, finally refining this specialized energy stone. A nine sun jade was equal to 100 million violet sun crystals, or a trillion violet sun stones.

When Lin Ming had won a Boundless World Pill at an auction, he spent a total of 7 trillion violet sun stones to do so, the same as seven nine sun jades. But this Monster Prince had easily tossed out 30 nine sun jades in a single go to bet on himself.

It could only be said that the disparity in influences was too great. Lin Ming had originally participated in the auction with ordinary World King Holy Lands. To put it in other words, he had competed for the Boundless World Pill against disciples of ordinary World King Holy Lands.

The geniuses disciples of ordinary World King Holy Lands, such as Zhong Wenshu, the three prodigies of Sacred Martial Mansion, and others, fell far short of being comparable to Wu Finalcloud. To them, transferring 7 trillion violet sun stones was past their limit. How could those types of characters possibly compare with the Monster Prince, someone who came from an Empyrean level influence?

If this Monster Prince randomly took out a hair, it would be thicker than Zhong Wenshu's thigh. It could be imagined that something like a Boundless World Pill was far too luxurious to the likes of Zhong Wenshu, but also unworthy of being mentioned for someone like the Monster Prince. It was likely he had even better resources.

"Do as you will, we do not forbid participants from joining in on the gambling house bets. But, that is provided you have the ability to follow up with what you believe in! If you want to deliver us your nine sun jades then we can't be happy enough." The Vast Universe Heavenly Palace disciple sneered.

"Hehe! Are you humans always so confident? You seem to have forgotten that the disciple of your Vast Universe Heavenly Palace was miserably beaten up by me! If you want to lose out so badly then I'll put 15 nine sun jades on me taking first place and the other 15 nine sun jades on me reaching the top three!"

Although the Monster Prince was arrogant, he wasn't stupid enough to kill himself with his own words. His odds were the same as Lin Ming's; his odds of being first place were 1 to 7 and his odds of being in the top three were 1 to 3. In other words, as long as he could rank in the top 3 then he would still bring back 60 nine sun jades for a net profit.

The Monster Prince was confident he could reach the top three. In this case, making this bet would earn him face but also win him some nine sun jades.

"Really, this is what they mean when they say that you can escape an untoward act of heaven, but you cannot escape the evil of your own sins." Lin Ming coldly sneered. While he didn't know what the limits of the Monster Prince's strength were, he knew that Dragon Fang and Jun Bluemoon were being seriously underestimated, as well as himself! While one could see another's cultivation and foundation, it was impossible to determine another person's hidden cards as well as the limits of their true strength. Even the Empyreans couldn't do that. All of these 10 geniuses were masters, each of them crouching tigers and hidden dragons!

Even if Lin Ming didn't favor Shiku, he wouldn't underestimate him either. This person dual cultivated in body and energy and had to have had some massive lucky chance. It was likely he would be some dark horse.

"What did you say?" The Monster Prince's eyes were icy as he gave Lin Ming a deathly glare.

"I said, you cannot escape the evil of your own sins." Lin Ming calmly repeated himself. Before, the Monster Prince had clearly ignored polite protocol and had mocked Lin Ming, treated him with complete disdain. Lin Ming naturally wouldn't allow himself to be bullied and swallow such an insult.

"Just who the hell do you think you are that you can insult someone like me!?" The Monster Prince traced his spatial ring as if he wanted to fight.

"Fighting is forbidden in the contestant area. If you do, you will lose all qualifications to continue in the tournament. If you wish to fight each other then do so on the arena stage!"

The Vast Universe Heavenly Palace disciple coldly said. The Monster Prince's face darkened, "Humph! With your weak human bodies, if it weren't for the fact that there were so many of you then how would the likes of you have ever suppressed our monster race? Mice can rule the world, but only a lion can be called a king! As for you, you are nothing more than a slightly larger mouse amongst a pack of them!"

The Monster Prince said as he pointed at Lin Ming. As a monster that possessed the royal bloodline, the Monster Prince certainly thought highly of himself. In terms of bloodline alone, out of everyone present, only Xiao Moxian was on a higher level. However, Xiao Moxian was not considered a full human, thus the reason why the Monster Prince was so boastful with his words.

Lin Ming looked at that Monster Prince like he was a clown and ignored his words. Instead, he turned towards that Vast Universe Heavenly Palace disciple and said, "This fellow senior-apprentice brother, I would like to bet 20 or so nine sun jades on myself to win."

"Of course you can." Towards Lin Ming, the Vast Universe Heavenly Palace treated him with the utmost respect. It wasn't a joke at all. Lin Ming was someone that had climbed up the Divine Seal Altar's 33 steps. Although the Elders of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace had already proven that Lin Ming had climbed up the Divine Seal Altar using some special method, that was still amazing enough to prove that Lin Ming had infinite potential.

Moreover, Lin Ming wasn't rampant at all. This entire time, his behavior had been polite and orderly, and the Vast Universe Heavenly Palace disciple had a very good impression of Lin Ming. He also felt that Lin Ming's strength was far greater than what he had revealed so far.

After being ignored by Lin Ming, the Monster Prince's eyes turned cold as he revealed a thick killing intent.

But even so, Lin Ming still didn't bother paying attention to him. He asked that Heavenly Palace disciple, "I would like to ask… does your gambling house accept credit?"

"Um… credit?"

The Vast Universe Heavenly Palace disciple was startled, nearly thinking he had heard wrongly.

He looked at Lin Ming again with a strange expression on his face. In his opinion, Lin Ming was an unrivalled genius of his era. While he might not be as rich as an established World King, he should still have more resources available to him than an ordinary great influence. But now, he actually needed to ask for credit from the gambling house to make a bet of 20 some nine sun jades. This seemed… a bit too shabby.

Of course, there was no way that he knew Lin Ming already had a loan of seven nine sun jades. Even if Lin Ming were to clean himself of things he could pawn, he still wouldn't be able to raise enough money.

Lin Ming could only place his hope on winning some money on a gambling house bet to pay back the debt he owed from buying the Boundless World Pill.

"Hahahahaha!" The Monster Prince raucously laughed. "I think you are crazy from being so poor! To borrow money to participate in the gambling house, you're no better than those pathetic and addicted loser gamblers. A beggar like you actually has the same odds as someone like me, that is simply my life's shame!"

Lin Ming coldly glanced at the Monster Prince and slowly said, "To be matched with a monster like you is also my life's shame. You have no need to shout, we'll fight sooner or later."

"What!?" The Monster Prince shouted, enraged. Monster energy erupted from his entire body, "You are courting death!"

"Stop! If you fight here then you will lose all qualifications!" The Vast Universe Heavenly Palace disciple loudly shouted out.

The Monster Prince forcefully calmed himself down as he glared daggers at Lin Ming.

The Vast Universe Heavenly Palace disciple sent a sound transmitting talisman to inquire to the Office of Internal Affairs about Lin Ming's request. Finally, their reply was that Lin Ming was allowed to make bets on credit in the gambling house.

This was also considered doing Lin Ming a favor. If Lin Ming could win, then that would be due to his own ability, and such an extreme genius was worth winning over. If Lin Ming couldn't win, then Vast Universe Heavenly Palace still didn't lose anything.

After reaching this step, Lin Ming was worth far more than something as simple as dozens of nine sun jades!

Allowing him to make bets on credit wasn't anything at all.

"Alright. Then I would like to bet 15 nine sun jades on me reaching the top three."

Lin Ming didn't paint himself into a corner with his words; he had simply bet on being in the first three. He still didn't know where the limits of Hang Chi, Frost Dream, and Xiao Moxian lay. If he wanted to struggle for first place, the pressure was indeed far too great.

"Of course!"

The Vast Universe Heavenly Palace disciple wrote down Lin Ming's bet. And at this time, the final battles began!

Each person would have to fight nine matches. The one with the highest number of wins would be first place on the Heaven Proclamation!

Vast Cosmos stood on the center of the arena stage as he announced the beginning of the final tournament. The first match was impressively the Monster Prince stepping on stage. His opponent was not Lin Ming but Hua Xuan. This was also reasonable. Lin Ming and the Monster Prince were ranked higher in the front, thus they wouldn't meet in the first round of matches.

As Hua Xuan stepped on stage, the Monster Prince glared at him with disdain. "What garbage. I don't want to bother fighting the likes of you. I want to fight Lin Ming! Bring Lin Ming on stage!"

The Monster Prince fervently wished to fight Lin Ming. He wanted to cruelly and ruthlessly beat Lin Ming into the ground. He wanted to use the results of that battle to inform Vast Universe Heavenly Palace's Office of Internal Affairs that placing him on the same level was the stupidest thing they had ever done!

After being held in such contempt by the Monster Prince, Hua Xuan's face was mottled with rage, "You go too far! If you have the ability then defeat me before you continue speaking!"

"Humph, you garbage. Even if I only use ordinary moves I can still defeat you within five moves. If you don't want to bring about your own destruction then hurry up and admit defeat. I'll allow you to keep whatever pitiful face you have left."

Even a clay figure still had three points of earth, and Hua Xuan was also an extreme genius himself. He originally wasn't too confident in this battle, but after being so humiliated, a raging fire burst out in his heart. With a clear ringing sound he drew his weapon, "Let's fight!"

The Monster Prince simply didn't care at all. He looked over at Vast Cosmos.

Vast Cosmos frowned. This fellow was so rampant that it was truly annoying. But, this was an inborn trait of the monster race. Their characters were always well known to all around them. They were vicious, gentle and honest, brutal and crazy, or however else they were born. Their characters were just like those of a wild beast. They didn't conceal their thoughts and emotions as humans did, hiding their true personality.

The character of this Monster Prince was that of an extremely arrogant and wildly brash individual.

"If you wish to battle Lin Ming, then you can do so in your next match. But, you must finish this match first." Vast Cosmos didn't mind adjusting the order of the matches, but since both opponents had stepped on stage, this match had to be finished first.

"Good! Hehe!" The Monster Prince licked his lips as he looked at Hua Xuan. "Consider this your bad luck. I'll instantly beat you down first and then I'll finish off Lin Ming!"

Chapter 1291 – Fighting the Monster Prince

Chapter 1291 – Fighting the Monster Prince

…

…

…

“You sure speak a lot of crap. Aren’t you afraid that the wind will cut your tongue? I want to take a good look today at just how you’ll instantly defeat me!” Hua Xuan was filled with a righteous anger. After being derided and belittled again and again by someone else, anyone would have gone berserk.

At the start of the battle, Hua Xuan laid down a thick origin energy shield around his body.

Hua Xuan was also an Empyrean descendant. He cultivated the Space Laws and the Metal Laws. The attacks of the Metal Laws were sharp and keen and its defensive power was considered nearly invincible, thick and powerful, not in any way weaker than the Earth Laws.

A golden barrier completely shielded Hua Xuan. He had already revealed his stance and planned on engaging in a battle of defense. Although the Monster Prince was arrogant, his strength was obvious. Before now, the strength he revealed had been similar to Jun Bluemoon and Lin Ming. Although Hua Xuan was also confident in himself, he didn’t believe that his chances of winning were very high. Moreover, since the Monster Prince was still so full of himself, there were inevitably many cards that he had yet to reveal.

His opponent had already spoken far too much; losing would not be a shame. All he needed to do was hold on for some time.

"Have you finished preparing your turtle shell?"

The Monster Prince crossed his arms together, a lazy smile on his face.

"Stop acting like you're so amazing. I don't need you to wait for me, come at me whenever you want!" Hua Xuan angrily shouted.

"Okay. Then let me test out just how hard your turtle shell is."

As the Monster Prince laughed he drew out his weapon. It was a 10 foot long war halberd!

The cold halberd blade exuded a thick killing intent. The tip of the halberd was a sharp blade. It could pierce and also behead!

With such a heavy weapon, one needed an immense amount of strength and energy to display its unstoppable explosive force.

The mortal body of a monster martial artist was originally far superior to the body of a human. Their bloodline was strong and there were Laws engraved into their bodies. Moreover, the royal family had even stronger bloodlines and Laws within them.

A considerable portion of their strength would naturally emerge as they grew older. Cultivation was only able to affect a minor part of their strength.

Thus, a monster martial artist's talent was extremely important. Once a monster was born, over half of their future achievements could be determined by their bloodline and talent.

The Monster Prince was naturally an outstanding genius of the monster race.

"Then take my strike! Halberd Shattering the Universe!"

The Monster Prince's body erupted with energy. The power that gushed out from him was no less than that of a human body transformation martial artist. When combined with the erupting monster energy, this strike split through space, the halberd light like a wild dragon crossing the river, unstoppable!

Bang!

The halberd light smashed into Hua Xuan’s metallic origin energy shield. It was like a massive copper pillar striking a giant bronze bell; a massive noise filled the skies!

A violent sonic boom spread out for thousands of miles. Hua Xuan shook and all the blood within his body tumbled. Although his metal-attribute barrier was able to barely withstand this strike, there were already faint cracks that began appearing within it.

“Damnit!”

Hua Xuan grit his teeth, pouring all of his true essence into his barrier. His Metal Laws had also stepped past the threshold of the fifth level Concept. If he gave up on the offensive and solely defended, then his barrier was extremely difficult to break through!

“How interesting!”

The Monster Prince pounded down with his halberd once more!

“Rule the World!”

As this halberd came sweeping out, Hua Xuan felt all of the power of space around him become chaotic. An invisible force controlled that power of space, squeezing Hua Xuan within it!

The power of space was used to crush Hua Xuan’s metal-attribute barrier!

The Monster Prince had extremely high attainments in manipulating the Space Laws; he had firmly stepped into the fifth level Concept! This was not because he learned and comprehended it by himself, but because most of those Laws were already engraved into his body. As he grew, he only needed the light guidance of a teacher to master them.

Hua Xuan had already reached his limit by resisting this squeezing power of space.

More and more cracks appeared in his barrier!

Hua Xuan bit down so hard that his teeth were stained with blood. Even so, he was barely able to withstand this attack!

“Your little turtle shell is quite hard. Then, let my third move deliver you to your end!

“Void Collapse!”

The Monster Prince swept out his halberd a third time. Suddenly, the power of space that was squeezing around Hua Xuan exploded!

Ka ka ka!

Space violently twisted as if it would break down. At high levels, Void Collapse was able to destroy the stable space of the Divine Realm. Once this stable space exploded, the power of space that erupted could tear apart any martial artist to the tiniest of pieces.

The Monster Prince was still far from reaching this boundary. But, causing the power of space to tremble and leak over to strangle someone to death was already a terrifying power.

It was the belief of many Supreme Elders that the sharpest thing in the world was not forged weapons, but space!

In the Monster Prince’s third strike, his use of the Laws had reached a horrifying height. Hua Xuan was no longer able to persist in defending. His metal-attribute barrier completely disintegrated and he flew backwards, vomiting out a mouthful of blood.

In this battle, Hua Xuan had been completely defeated. The disparity was far too evident.

“He lost! The disparity was too great! Hua Xuan tried his best, but he was still suppressed from the start!”

“Mm… in truth, Hua Xuan is very strong, but the reason he entered the top 10 has a high luck component to it. In terms of strength, he should be weaker than Ram Saber.”

The final 10 of the first tier were all decided by the last matches they fought in the first round, which had been arranged by Vast Cosmos. If they won they would advance to the first tier, and if they lost they would advance to the second tier. Vast Cosmos wasn’t an omniscient god and it was still difficult for him to distinguish which genius was stronger and weaker. Thus, it wasn’t strange for lopsided situations like this to appear.

However, the top participants of the second tier could challenge the lower ranked participants of the first tier. At the end of the First Martial Meeting when the final rankings were determined, the top 10 might not all be from the current first tier.

Kuh!

Hua Xuan half-knelt on the ground, supporting himself with his sword. He was still coughing blood; it was obvious that he was heavily wounded.

“Humph! To be able to withstand three of my attacks, you’re not too garbage. As far as humans are concerned, you’re so-so.”

The Monster Prince said with deep disdain. His words naturally aroused the anger of the audience.

“This idiot, he is too arrogant!”

“Does he really think his monster race is so amazing?”

“A complete retard!”

The Monster Prince’s gall was greater than the heavens, and he was arrogant to the extreme. With so many people in the audience cursing him, they obviously wanted to enrage him.

All of the young elites present originated from great influences. Which one of them was not arrogant themselves?

However, the Monster Prince didn't care at all.

He thought, 'Yes, I'm arrogant, but what can you do about it!?'

"My skeletal age is 31 years old. All of you useless and pathetic barking humans in the audience, if you have a skeletal age of 50 or lower and you also aren't convinced, then feel free to fight with me!"

The Monster Prince's words were filled with monster energy, making them loud enough that they easily spread through the entire audience.

And after hearing these words, all of the martial artists who had been wildly shouting suddenly deflated.

"31 year skeletal age!?"

"This freak!"

A 31 year skeletal age was far too young! The martial artists that participated in the First Martial Meeting were 40 years old on average. Even Dragon Fang was 36 years old and that was considered quite young. Many of the young elites present were 40-50 years old, but even if their strength increased 10 times over they still wouldn't be a match for the Monster Prince. Thus, they could only choke on their own rage without the energy to refute him. This was because the difference was far too great!

"Have Xiao Moxian go on stage! She'll definitely beat him to a pulp!" Many martial artists shouted, unable to swallow this anger. A Monster Prince had actually come to their territory and beaten up their geniuses. After that he had even loudly mocked all of them. Even so, there wasn't a single person who was able to stand up to him, so how could their thoughts ever remain smooth after this?

However, they knew that they were not a match for the Monster Prince so they could only pin their hopes on these other extreme characters competing in the finals. They needed one of the other participants to surpass the Monster Prince in both strength and talent.

"Xiao Moxian is extremely young. I've heard that she is still in her twenties. Even so, she cannot be considered someone that is fully human.

Xiao Moxian's talent far surpassed the Monster Prince's. However, half of her bloodline came from a Dark Phoenix, so she could be considered a half monster.

To have Xiao Moxian defeat the Monster Prince didn't have any meaning at all. That was equal to a monster defeating a monster.

Even though the Monster Prince was arrogant he didn't deny Xiao Moxian's talent. But besides her, the Monster Prince despised everyone else, including even Frost Dream. He believed that Frost Dream's talent was no higher than his own. As for Hang Chi, he was even more useless.

"That human called Lin Ming, aren't you going to come up for a battle?"

The Monster Prince chuckled as he looked over in Lin Ming's direction, his eyes filled with a provocative light. He wanted to see Lin Ming's frightened and confused face, but he was disappointed. "This brat has some guts. Humph, I'll see just how long you can maintain that calm demeanor of yours."

Lin Ming looked at Vast Cosmos. Vast Cosmos said, "If the both of you agree and are willing to compete ahead of time then I will not oppose that!"

The order of fights in the tournament didn't matter much, and even Vast Cosmos was slowly becoming sick of hearing this Monster Prince shout again and again. But, he had to admit that this Monster Prince was indeed powerful!

Lin Ming's potential and the Monster Prince's potential were on two different levels. Vast Cosmos knew that the reason Lin Ming was able to climb up the 33 steps of the Divine Seal

Altar was because he had comprehended a very special type of Laws. His future achievements would be without limit. But, before Lin Ming could successfully transform these Laws into true combat strength, it would be very difficult for him to defeat the Monster Prince.

This was because the Monster Prince's talent perfectly manifested with his growth. With every second that passed, he fused with the Laws in his body more and more, becoming increasingly strong.

This was the superiority of the monster race!

If Lin Ming was defeated then not only did that mean a loss for him, but also a deep shame for the entirety of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. This was because all the disciples of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace were inferior to Lin Ming.

To all of this, Vast Cosmos couldn't help but consider the situation. At his level, face was very important to him.

Vast Cosmos deeply looked at Lin Ming, then said, "You must be careful. He is very strong!"

"I thank Senior for the reminder. I will make sure to remember that."

"Mm... good."

As the two quickly spoke with a true essence sound transmission, Lin Ming stepped forwards, grasping his long spear as he stood before the Monster Prince.

Long spear against a wild halberd!

Lin Ming didn't immediately attack. Instead, he pointed his spear at the Monster Prince and coldly said, "You having a 31 year skeletal age is a wonderful coincidence. I am also not yet 32 years old and that makes us the same age! I have rarely met a match that is my age."

As Lin Ming spoke these words, the audience was shocked. Lin Ming was also 31 years old!?

Although the audience was now noticing Lin Ming, they didn't know just how old he was. After all, this was the first time that most of them had heard of him, and yet he was actually the same age as the Monster Prince!

That meant that this battle would be an absolutely fair match!

Chapter 1292 – Might of the Heretical God

Chapter 1292 – Might of the Heretical God

…

…

…

“Lin Ming is also 31 years old? He’s the same as that stupid monster boy!”

“Incredible! This will be interesting to watch!”

Before, the Monster Prince had bragged about his talent, stating he had a 31 year skeletal age and that any heroic elite present that was 50 years or younger could challenge him. However, even saying so, it wouldn’t be glorious if someone with a 50 year skeletal age truly defeated him.

In order to suppress him, it needed to be a genius of the same age. The audience didn’t expect that Lin Ming was also of the same age. This battle truly caused one’s blood to boil over.

“Lin Ming is really a monstrous genius. At 31 years of age he’s able to reach such heights. I have no idea just what will he will accomplish in the future.”

“But if he were compared to that Monster Prince…”

The audience certainly hoped that Lin Ming could defeat the Monster Prince, but his opponent was truly strong. It was hard to say whether or not Lin Ming could triumph in the end.

“Lin Ming! Lin Ming!”

Many heroic elites shouted out loud.

“Destroy him!”

“Slaughter him! Slaughter him!”

Let alone the current heroic young elites present, even some young girl martial artists were cheering for Lin Ming. All of them hoped that Lin Ming could win. This was because this Monster Prince was far too hateful.

The Monster Prince looked at Lin Ming pointing a spear at him and sneered, saying, “It’s been a long time since anyone has dared to point their weapon at me. Very well then. I shall break apart every bone in your body!”

To point a spear at another person was in itself a sign of provocation. In the past, Lin Ming had rarely done so. He had only declared a challenge towards someone at spear point twice. Once was during his youth, when he had pointed his spear at Zhu Yan; that was a fight for himself. The second time was on the Divine Seal Altar when he had pointed his spear at Nether Limitless; that was for the glory of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands.

The Monster Prince grasped his desolate blood halberd and pointed it straight back at Lin Ming in reply.

A powerful collision; this was a battle between peak geniuses of humanity and the monster race!

“His Highness the Prince loves to show off his talent.” In the audience, two white-clothed old men used a true essence sound transmission to communicate with each other. Both of them were powerhouses of the monster race. One was a Great World King and the other was an ordinary World King.

To walk in the human world, a World King powerhouse was more than enough to deal with most situations. It was impossible for an Empyrean to act out on behalf of the Monster

Prince, otherwise that would be the same as setting off a battle between humanity and the monsters.

"Showing off one's abilities is also an important factor in establishing one's absolute strength. It isn't necessarily a bad thing." Another old man quietly said. He was confident in the Monster Prince's strength.

Monsters were different from humans. The Empyreans of humanity ruled their own domains, scattered across the various great worlds. But, the monster race had a singular Empyrean ruler, the Monster Emperor, that stood above all others. The entire monster race had to submit to this person. In truth, there were very few monster Empyreans; their numbers could not compare to the humans' at all. As for this Monster Prince, he was the grandson of the current Monster Emperor, and these two World Kings were the Monster Emperor's officials.

In the arena, the Monster Prince laughed. "In my future, I am destined to become a Monster Empyrean. The road of a Monster Empyrean has to be paved with the blood of countless geniuses. As for you, you will help form my road!"

The Monster Prince was arrogant to the extreme. Lin Ming finally understood that when the Monster Prince referred to himself as Lord Monster, he was saying that he would become a Monster Empyrean in the future.

The Monster Prince only had a Divine Sea cultivation but he dared to call himself a future Monster Empyrean. That was the same concept as the current Lin Ming calling himself Empyrean Heretical God or Empyrean Azure Dragon. Although he was confident in himself, he definitely wasn't worthy of these titles yet.

But, the Monster Prince actually did this; just how presumptuous was that?

"Fuck, this idiot is a madman." Some people said from within the audience.

"He is crazy. An Empyrean descendant, even if they were at a half-step Empyrean cultivation, wouldn't dare to call themselves a true Empyrean. A half-step Empyrean will always be a half-step Empyrean."

As everyone was speaking, there was a sudden humming sound; the Monster Prince had moved. The great halberd in his hands came cutting down at Lin Ming!

The Monster Prince's speed approached an unimaginable level. The limit of speed, the explosiveness of his mortal body, and in addition to the power of his halberd, the might of this attack could be imagined.

A normal human martial artist wouldn't dare to frontally collide with him at all.

However, Lin Ming had never feared frontal combat!

Grasping the Phoenix Blood Spear, Lin Ming took a step back, solidly touching the ground. The Blue Lotus Flame Dance shot straight out at the Monster Prince!

Hu – !

In the skies, endless flames filled the air as a blue lotus towered within.

Kacha!

As if thunder was exploding, a wild wave of energy rushed out like surging tidal waves. The top layer of the arena ground rose up before flying away in giant chunks, swept away like autumn leaves.

The two people simultaneously drew back. Where they stopped, the stone ground was turned into powder for miles around. This terrifying collision was more intense than a desperate battle between normal Divine Transformation powerhouses. However, the audience knew that this was only an exploratory attack! Whether it was Lin Ming or the Monster Prince, this had only been a casual strike that didn't reveal their true ability.

“This Monster Prince is a ruthless frontal combat master, but Lin Ming is also the same. Even Ram Saber was suppressed by him. Both of them are utter freaks. It’s hard to imagine how intense this battle will become.”

Rumble rumble rumble!

In a blink of an eye, Lin Ming and the Monster Prince fought for several moves, each more vicious and brutal than the last!

Lin Ming opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. As for the Monster Prince, he had a special physique, one comparable to an ancient vicious beast.

“Rule the World!”

The Monster Prince waved his halberd, an attack that contained the fifth level Space Laws. In that instant, Lin Ming felt the surrounding power of space instantly become chaotic, turning into an invisible cage that squeezed him within. All of his movements and his ability to counterattack was completely locked down.

“Die!”

The Monster Prince gave a loud shout as he pounded his halberd down at Lin Ming.

The Space Laws were diverse with endless changes and variations. Dragon Fang was skilled at creating spatial mirror images and his attacks were strange and ghostly. But the Monster Prince was skilled in locking down his opponents with the power of space and then overcoming them with utter violence.

The fierce halberd was filled with unstoppable momentum.

The entire audience’s eyes widened. They couldn’t help but acknowledge that in terms of Laws, Lin Ming was at a major disadvantage!

Lin Ming had comprehended the Thunder and Fire Laws, but when compared to Time and Space Laws of similar boundary, they were slightly weaker.

Within the prison of space, if Lin Ming's Space Laws were lacking then it would be difficult to break free.

As Lin Ming saw the Monster Prince's attack crashing down at him, his entire body erupted with strength. The Heretical God Force was released to the limit. Between his eyebrows, the blood of the Ancient Phoenix began to burn. In that instant he stabbed out 100 spear strikes. When these 100 spear strikes fused together, they erupted with a terrifying might.

"Celestial Tyrant Manual – Hundred Layered Waves!"

The Phoenix Blood Spear smashed into the space cage, tearing apart that chaotic power of space. By using absolute strength, Lin Ming had broken through the space cage!

Peng!

After breaking through the power of space, Lin Ming had dodged the Monster Prince's attack in that critical moment. Otherwise, no matter how powerful Lin Ming's defensive abilities were, if he was struck by that wild halberd his flesh and blood would still have exploded into pieces and he would have been defeated!

"Mm? You can use strength alone to break through my space cage?" The Monster Prince had a surprised look on his face. No one was more clear than he was on how powerful Rule the World was, but Lin Ming had still been able to free himself.

"You're good, but next time you won't be so lucky!" The Monster Prince sneered and a series of popping sounds ran through his body as he began to change. Scales appeared on his face. On his back, a pair of fleshy wings burst out from behind him, stretching out in the air. He had transformed into a half-monster half-human body!

The monster race had many ancient bloodlines. Rather than being similar to humans, they were far more similar to ancient desolate beasts. Many members of the monster race were able to completely transform their bodies.

Once they transformed, their bodies would draw closer to those of vicious beasts. They would be able to better fuse with the Laws within their bodies and their attacks would be even more formidable. At the same time, their explosive force and speed would rise by a substantial degree.

“That madman changed his body!”

“This is going to be troublesome. Lin Ming should have some hidden strength, but now that the Monster Prince has changed his body, his Laws will be even more formidable. His Space Laws were originally extremely strong and they were able to suppress the Thunder and Fire Laws. If Lin Ming decides to fight using the Thunder and Fire Laws then he will suffer a great loss. And using brute force to break free isn’t the righteous way to win.”

As the audience was speaking, the Monster Prince attacked once more.

“Rule the World!”

With another wave of his halberd, the power of space around Lin Ming became chaotic once more, completely trapping him within it.

“Void Collapse! Be destroyed together with space!”

The Monster Prince recklessly laughed. All around Lin Ming, the power of space began to collapse. The power of space wildly flooded around, violently rolling around Lin Ming.

He deliberately wanted to use the Laws to suppress Lin Ming.

Facing this fierce strike, Lin Ming cried out. From his inner world, the Heretical God Tree was summoned, forming a divine tree phantom behind him. Above the crown of that divine tree, an Azure Dragon and Fire Phoenix circled about!

The phantoms of a divine tree, dragon and phoenix rejoicing in unison!

“Do you really believe that your Space Laws can suppress me in terms of the Laws?”

Lin Ming sneered. With a wave of his spear, a fierce and wild thunder and fire connected in the sky, bursting out with unimaginable power. In that moment, endless divine light lit up the sky, as if a sun had been born in the air! This divine light was like countless sharp swords as it tore apart the vortex created by the power of space!

The Thunder and Fire Laws were indeed inferior to the Time and Space Laws. But, Lin Ming's Thunder and Fire Laws were beyond ordinary. With the Heretical God Tree leading them, they surpassed the Heavenly Dao Laws and also contained the tribulations of thunder and fire. They stood at a completely different height from ordinary Thunder and Fire Laws!

By summoning the Heretical God Tree phantom, Lin Ming was able to display the mightiest strength of his Thunder and Fire Laws!

When Lin Ming had faced the Monster Prince's first Rule the World, he had broken through with strength.

But now, after the Monster Prince changed his body and used the same move, he decided to use the Thunder and Fire Laws! As these dual Laws erupted with their strength, they were more than enough to tear apart the space cage.

"What!?" The Monster Prince's complexion completely changed. He could clearly see that Lin Ming's Fire Laws were at the fifth level Concept and his Thunder Laws were a bit lower. When both were combined together, it was on par with his own Space Laws. Even so, it should have then been decided by the different ranks of the Laws. His Space Laws should have been able to suppress the Thunder and Fire Laws! However, an unexpected situation had occurred; Lin Ming had used the power of thunder and fire to tear apart his space cage. How could he not be shocked by this?

It wasn't just the Monster Prince that was shocked, but the audience was too. They never imagined that Lin Ming was so cruel and vicious that he could use Thunder and Fire Laws of the same level to break apart the Space Laws.

"Virtual Disintegration!"

Lin Ming didn’t give the Monster Prince any time to recover. He revolved his spear potential, fusing together the first four level Concepts of Fire and then attaching the fifth level Concept onto the Phoenix Blood Spear, thrusting it straight towards the Monster Prince!

Chapter 1293 – Enraging the Monster Race

Chapter 1293 – Enraging the Monster Race

…

…

…

Virtual Disintegration was Lin Ming's self-created skill. Using virtual fire to attack an opponent's mind, all of their anger, hatred, and jealousy would become Lin Ming's weapon. He could use it to burn down his opponents and swallow them alive!

And, the Monster Prince was someone who was incomparably arrogant and easily lost his temper. If the Monster Prince's flames of anger and jealousy were used to attack him, then the power of Virtual Disintegration would multiply!

Hu – !

Virtual flames burned. Lin Ming's spear was like a homing missile, unable to be dodged!

The Monster Prince's pupils shrank. He only felt as if all the anger in his body was being ignited by this spear, attacking his mind!

Virtual Fire!

The Monster Prince had an extraordinary level of experience and naturally recognized this type of fire. It was the fifth level Concept of Fire – Virtual Fire. The Monster Prince was also well aware of his own weaknesses and shortcomings. If he was struck by this spear, victory and defeat would be instantly settled!

From the point when Lin Ming had used the Heretical God fire and thunder to tear open the space cage and attack the Monster Prince with Virtual Disintegration, his series of attacks had been so fast that it was nearly impossible to react to.

As the Monster Prince saw this spear coming at him, his eyes sharpened. His entire body erupted with energy!

“10,000 Monster Domain!”

The Monster Prince roared. In that moment, countless horrifying sounds filled the air! These sounds were like the cry of a dragon, the roars of a tiger, a long and endless sonic wave that spread past the horizon!

Awhoo – !

From within the Monster Prince’s body, countless monster phantoms rushed out!

These great monsters were as tall as a hundred feet and as small as a palm. Their shapes also came in all sorts of strange and macabre styles. Some looked like lions, ghosts and zombies, some had vicious horns and spikes, and some were dripping with tentacles of blood!

In that instant, 9999 monster spirits rushed out from the Monster Prince’s body, covering a scope of several miles around the Monster Prince!

Lin Ming’s virtual fire that he sent out was torn to pieces by those monster spirits and swallowed up!

“Mm? This is…” Lin Ming was startled. After he joined in on the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, not only did he encounter all sorts of unimaginable geniuses, but he witnessed all kinds of mysteries techniques. This ability in front of him seemed like a type of domain, there was actually this sort of domain!

“Haha, how do you like my 10,000 Monster Domain? I want to see just how you break through it!”

The Monster Prince crazily laughed!

“10,000 Monster Domain, I never imagined that this Monster Prince would be able to use the 10,000 Monster Domain…” In the honored seating section, an extraordinarily experienced person spoke out. He had a great deal of understanding into the monster race’s cultivation methods.

“Genius martial artists of the monster race, because of the royal bloodline within their bodies, have the ability to attract the worship of monster spirits, forming a monster spirit domain. There are different levels, from the 100 Monster Domain, 1000 Monster Domain, 10,000 Monster Domain, and even the legendary 100,000 Monster Domain. The last stage is only a legend, and the 10,000 Monster Domain can be called the top of all monster domains.”

A white-clothed old man spookily said. Beside him, another thin middle-aged man nodded his head, saying, “With 9999 monster spirits as well as the Monster Prince himself, that is a total of 10,000 monster spirits, forming a perfect 10,000 Monster Domain. It is known as an unbreakable domain! Not only does it have immense striking power, but at the same time, any person that steps into the 10,000 Monster Domain will be swallowed up within it. Once the 10,000 Monster Domain is used, that is the same as having to deal with 10,000 monster spirits. This sort of offensive and defensive ability is far more profound than Ram Saber’s Saber King Domain.

“But even if Lin Ming’s momentum is destroyed here, it still won’t extinguish the glory and fame he’s gained so far. Lin Ming is amazing. He is able to use Thunder and Fire Laws to tear apart Space Laws of the same level. No matter how this battle ends, there is no loser. This generation of juniors is truly far too strong.”

The monster race’s 10,000 Monster Domain was the pride of the royal bloodline. In a chaotic battle of armies, if a monster of the royal family were to open their 10,000 Monster Domain and rush into the midst of an army, they could have their 10,000 monsters swallow up their enemies' flesh and blood, becoming unstoppable. Moreover, the more flesh and blood these monster spirits ate, the more brutal and vicious they would become. In the end, even an army of a million could be completely killed off by a single person!

The Monster Prince coldly sneered at Lin Ming, "Hehe, my 10,000 Monster Domain can annihilate all life in the world. You, human, are nothing but a fat mouse, barely enough for a bite! Now die!"

As the Monster Prince spoke, he grasped his halberd and rushed at Lin Ming.

"Halberd Shattering the Universe!"

The Monster Prince's falling halberd came down like a collapsing mountain. At the same time, all of the monster spirits around the Monster Prince also hurtled towards Lin Ming!

Together with the Monster Prince, that was 10,000 monster spirits. In addition to that vicious and desolate halberd, this terrifying attack even caused the audience that was dozens of miles away to shake with fear and awe. If they were placed within that 10,000 Monster Domain, they might be instantly eaten up until nothing was left remaining!

A single person to fight 10,000 monsters, how could one possibly continue fighting!?

In that instant, facing the aggressive threat of the Monster Prince, Lin Ming's expression still didn't change. He held his Phoenix Blood Spear straight, all of his true essence and world power erupting from his inner world!

As 10,000 monster spirits howled, Lin Ming stood tall and proud, his body straight like a spear!

"Bloom in splendor – Prime Emperor Lotus Flower!"

In that moment, a blood red lotus flower slowly bloomed behind Lin Ming, so red and lush it seemed as if it would drip blood!

This was the Primordius martial intent!

The thick and vast grandmist space erupted, rolling outwards like a spreading storm. The boundless aura turned into a mighty tsunami that flushed towards those 10,000 monster spirits!

Grandmist space was able to annihilate everything. Flesh and blood, Laws, souls, not even monster spirits were an exception!

This was nearly the highest level domain in the Divine Realm, the domain that stood at the greatest heights. Even the 10,000 Monster Domain was suppressed!

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

Underneath the shroud of the grandmist space, monster spirits began to emit pitiful and miserable screams before they collapsed into ash, gone forever!

The massive numbers of monster spirits that were destroyed turned into elementary grandmist energy!

“What!?”

The Monster Prince was shocked. His 10,000 Monster Domain had been broken! Not only was he astonished, but the entire audience was dumbstruck. Lin Ming’s domain was actually so fierce! Just how many techniques did he have in the end?

“My monster spirits!” The Monster Prince’s eyes were bloodshot with rage. If his monster spirits died he could still create more, but he had to use enough flesh and blood to do so. It was extremely troublesome.

“You are courting death!”

As the Monster Prince saw the countless monster spirits that he had raised himself being killed off by Lin Ming, he grasped his desolate halberd and smashed it down at Lin Ming’s head!

But after entering the grandmist space, the Monster Prince found his strength rapidly fading away. An incomparably thick atmosphere made him pay several times the strength in order to complete a single movement.

“This damned domain!”

The Monster Prince was surprised. He felt as if he had fallen into a thick swamp as his speed rapidly dropped.

At the same time, Lin Ming rushed towards the Monster Prince.

“Just die. Virtual Disintegration!”

Lin Ming thrust out his spear. Underneath the suppression of the grandmist space, the Phoenix Blood Spear’s spear light shot right towards the Monster Prince!

“You small fry!”

The Monster Prince was utterly enraged. His body emitted more crackling sounds as a crimson color washed over his entire body. It seemed that he had used some sort of arcane skill!

He forcefully cast off the shackles of the grandmist space and smashed his halberd out at the Phoenix Blood Spear!

Peng!

Spear and halberd crossed. A terrifying force swept outwards!

In that instant, the Monster Prince felt strange flames drill into his body like a viper!

These flames looked ordinary, but once they rushed into his body, they caused his mind to fall into illusion.

Hu – !

His anger exploded into an inferno, completely subsuming his rational mind. The Monster Prince's eyes turned blood red and blood vessels popped out from his entire body as if he would explode at any moment.

This was the might of virtual fire. Moreover, Lin Ming's virtual fire came from the Heretical God Tree; it was far above ordinary.

"You're done!"

Lin Ming coolly said. The spear in his hands came smashing down!

Peng!

The heavy shaft of the Phoenix Blood Spear struck the Monster Prince's body. The Monster Prince's protective true essence instantly collapsed like an eggshell!

"Stop!"

An old voice suddenly echoed through the arena.

However, Lin Ming ignored this voice. He pulled back his spear and struck the Monster Prince's chest, causing his ribs to break apart and sending him soaring away.

Peng!

The Monster Prince fell onto the floor like a pile of hashed meat. His body skidded back on the ground for several tens of thousands of feet, causing countless tiles to shatter until he finally fell off the side of the arena stage.

The entire audience was left silent. Lin Ming was far too fierce, He had broken through the Space Laws using Thunder and Fire Laws of the same level. Moreover, he had a strange domain of his own that broke through the 10,000 Monster Domain, and now he had defeated the Monster Prince. As he stood there, his momentum was like a rainbow, unstoppable!

"Young Master!"

Two old monster race men rushed over to the Monster Prince’s side, quickly inspecting his wounds.

The truth was that with the monster race’s royal bloodline, the Monster Prince’s regenerative abilities were no weaker than Lin Ming’s. Even if all of his ribs had shattered it still wouldn’t take too long to recover. If there were superb medicines used, the effects would be even better.

“You!” A monster race World King suddenly stood up, eyeing Lin Ming like a poisonous snake. “Human, I ordered you to stop, are you deaf!?”

The monster race old man was extremely overbearing, even reprimanding Lin Ming right here.

As Lin Ming heard this monster race old man’s words, he was startled. He had seen overbearing before, but never to this extent. Although his natural character was to remain low-profile and he didn’t like to needlessly quarrel with anybody, as he faced this ridiculous monster race old man, he simply angrily smiled and said, “Who the hell are you? Why should I listen to you? I think an old bag of bones like you has gone insane.”

Hearing Lin Ming’s words, the monster race old man’s eyes suddenly flashed with killing intent, “You are courting death!”

As he spoke, he prepared to rush up onto the arena. The people of the monster race, especially the royal family, were all incomparably arrogant and conceited. In their minds, everyone needed to respect them and everyone needed to submit to them. All that refused should be put to death.

However, just as the monster race old man stepped onto the arena stage, he felt a terrifying strength crash into him. This strength was extremely formidable; there was no way for him to resist it. The monster race old man suddenly shook as he was sent soaring backwards, smashing into the arena wall and coughing up a mouthful of blood.

“Who!?”

Although the monster race old man looked miserable, the truth was that he wasn't seriously injured at all. Coughing up some blood wasn't anything to the likes of him.

Vast Cosmos slowly walked over, looking at the monster race old man as he would a fool. He coldly said, "Me! Without permission, no one can rush onto the arena stage of the finals. Consider this a light warning."

Vast Cosmos had a half-step Empyrean cultivation. Compared to an ordinary World King, the disparity was immense!

Chapter 1294 – Seeing Through the Laws

Chapter 1294 – Seeing Through the Laws

…

…

…

“Vast Cosmos, you actually dare to attack me. Do you really want to take on the burden of being the one to instigate a war between humans and the monster race?”

The two monster race old men only had World King cultivations, but they didn’t fear the heavens or the earth. In fact, there were many kings of the monster race that were like this. They wouldn’t endure insults nor would they fear powerhouses. They were a crazy and wild race. In the past, there were people that abducted children with the royal bloodline in order to refine pills. Finally, the monster race completely exterminated the influence that person came from as well as their entire planet.

Many people knew that the monster race was crazy. Within their bones was buried the nature of a beast. They were like mad dogs; once someone provoked them they would crazily retaliate until their body perished.

However, Vast Cosmos didn’t fear any of this at all. He calmly said, “Both of your lives aren’t as valuable as you think. Be careful with your words or I’ll break all of your bones before I kick you back to the monster race. In my territory, you best be more respectful!”

Many humans couldn’t acclimatize to seeing the monster race, demon race, or the other different races. In history, there were also wars that exploded between humanity and other races. But in order to truly exterminate the enemy, one had to pay an enormous price. It was simply impossible to do.

Thus, in the Divine Realm, there were several races that still coexisted side by side. In the Sky Spill Continent, the giant demons, imps, and goliaths were all offshoot branches of the demon race. As for the fey, they were faintly related to the monster race, but the truth was that they were much closer to the human bloodline. The Sky Spill Continent had simply been isolated for far too long. After their bloodlines multiplied and spread out for tens and hundreds of thousands of years, they began to slowly dilute themselves.

The two monster race Elders' faces were filled with a cruel light. They looked at Vast Cosmos and then towards Lin Ming, their eyes shining with killing intent.

"We're going!"

The two monster race Elders brought down the Monster Prince but didn't leave just because of this. The monster race's arrogance also didn't allow them to do something which would weaken their own momentum like that.

They would continue to participate in the matches. Fighting and killing was one of the ways in which they lived.

"Lin Ming, victory!"

Vast Cosmos loudly announced. He looked towards Lin Ming, his eyes filled with appreciation. When Lin Ming had mounted the summit of the Divine Seal Altar, he had been opportunistic, using some shortcuts, thus Vast Cosmos wasn't panicked at all. But now, Lin Ming, at the middle Divine Sea realm and with a 31 year skeletal age, had defeated the Monster Prince. After reaching this step, he could be called a million year rare genius of the Divine Realm. If it weren't for the fact that he was born in an era when countless unrivalled geniuses were rising up, then Lin Ming's light might have overshadowed everyone by far!

"Lin Ming is too strong! Heh, what a good fight, that felt so great! I wonder just how that crazy monster kid will continue fighting."

"This is incredible. If this continues then Lin Ming might have a chance of reaching the top three!"

"Top three? That would be struggling for the championship against the likes of Xiao Moxian, Hang Chi, and Frost Dream. Just look at the three of them. Which one do you think Lin Ming could possibly replace?"

Xiao Moxian, Frost Dream, and Hang Chi had all pierced through the hearts and minds of those present, giving off an unsurpassable feeling.

"We have no idea how strong Hang Chi is, and although it is said that Xiao Moxian is extremely fierce, we have never seen her strength with our own eyes. But, we can clearly see Lin Ming! That Monster Prince isn't weak at all but he was still equally destroyed by Lin Ming."

Lin Ming proved his strength again and again. He didn't rely on rumors and gossip, nor did he rely on some influence behind him that raised him up. Rather, he had convinced people through his sheer victories in combat, convincing them without leaving a single doubt behind.

Moreover, Lin Ming came from a minor influence, which earned him an extremely favorable impression from many young elites of World King influences and ordinary Hold Lands. Originally, the Empyrean descendants were a great mountain that pressed down on the disciples of the World King and Holy Land influences. Whether it was in talent, resources, or inheritances, all of them couldn't help but develop thoughts of inferiority, making them feel as if it were impossible to fight against them. But now, Lin Ming had used his strength to tell everyone in the arena that even someone from a small influence could equally become an extreme genius.

This was truly inspiring!

Of course, while some people worshipped Lin Ming, there were also many people that envied him. No matter what happened, Lin Ming stood on the greatest stage of the entire Divine Realm. Throughout every great influence of the Divine Realm, there was no one who didn't know of him.

Lin Ming walked down from the stage and began to meditate. The Monster Prince wasn't weak at all. Although Lin Ming had still kept back some moves, victory hadn't come easily.

"Lin Ming, take a good rest. In the first round you will take a victory, but in the next round you will be the first one on stage after two battles. Frost Dream, Xiao Moxian, and Hang Chi have all taken a bye for this round. After the first round finishes there will be a one hour rest. Do you have any problems with that?"

Vast Cosmos's true essence sound transmission echoed in Lin Ming's ears.

Lin Ming and the Monster Prince's match just now had been temporarily inserted into the schedule. Because Lin Ming hadn't yet fought in the first round, this caused there to be a change in the match order. Because the Monster Prince fought in two matches, this caused there to be an odd number of remaining contestants so it was not possible to finish the games. Thus, Vast Universe Heavenly Palace had simply allowed Frost Dream, Xiao Moxian, and Hang Chi to all draw byes.

Of course, this method was to ensure fairness. Three of them had undeniable strength and whoever bumped into them would likely suffer a loss. Even though Vast Cosmos believed that Lin Ming had the capabilities of fighting against them, he would still have to use every card in his hands, which would cause him to suffer a disadvantage in the later fights. In this situation, allowing the three of them a bye was the best method.

"I have no problems. May I ask who my next match is?" Lin Ming asked Vast Cosmos. Lin Ming's restorative ability far surpassed what Vast Cosmos imagined. He simply hadn't used a significant amount of energy in fighting against the Monster Prince.

"Your opponent is... Dragon Fang!"

Vat Cosmos said, stretching out his words. As Lin Ming heard the name of his next opponent he felt his heart quicken.

Dragon Fang!

He would finally battle Dragon Fang. He and Dragon Fang could be considered fated to meet. Both of them had grown together in the preliminaries, and because Dragon Fang had opened the Three Lives Pupils there, the range of his growth had been even greater than Lin Ming's.

Whether it was in the preliminaries or the semifinals, the two of them hadn't fought for a variety of reasons. But now, the time for their battle had finally approached.

This would likely be an extremely tough battle! It was also because of this reason that Vast Cosmos had advised Lin Ming to rest well.

"I understand."

Lin Ming cupped his fists together, feeling a bit impatient.

The third battle of the first round was between Dragon Fang and Shiku.

There was an extremely small number of people that believed in Shiku, even though Shiku was also an impressive person.

"Shiku... a dual body and energy cultivator to fight against Dragon Fang's Three Lives Pupils. This is going to be interesting. This brat Shiku has come across some fortuitous encounters, otherwise it would be impossible for him to cultivate dual body and energy to this level."

Vast Cosmos thought with a smile. Lin Ming was also paying attention to Shiku.

As Dragon Fang and Shiku stepped on stage, a wave of cheers washed over the entire arena. Most of them were shouting Dragon Fang's name and only a small number of people were cheering for Shiku.

Dragon Fang was handsome and delicate with extremely pale skin. As for Shiku, he was tall and burly-looking, like a roughly hewn stone. Because of this, Dragon Fang won the hearts of most young female disciples, not to mention that the strength he had revealed so far had surpassed Shiku.

“These fellows really think I’m worthless or something. I don’t believe I can’t defeat this pale little dandy boy!”

Shiku thought to himself. He wouldn’t underestimate Dragon Fang. Dragon Fang’s strength was truly amazing, but he was also confident in himself.

“Hah!”

Shiku shouted out loud and his aura erupted to endless levels. In that instant, he was like a mountain that stood atop the arena stage! He cultivated the Earth Laws, and his Earth Laws had reached large success of the fifth level Concept.

“Sky Mountain Seal!”

Shiku grasped a staff and took the initiative to attack. This strike utilized the Earth Laws he comprehended to the max. As this attack came out, it was like a falling mountain, able to sunder the world!

Dragon Fang held the Dragon Fang Blade in his hands, an indifferent expression across his face. His pupils had already turned into the shape of needle tips – this was the Three Lives Pupils.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Endless earth origin energy gathered together, forming a mass of brown light in the sky that became a 100,000 foot mountain that began to fall down at Dragon Fang!

As the audience saw this they cried out in alarm. The weight of a 100,000 foot tall mountain was nearly inestimable. With the infusion of endless amounts of earth energy crashing down together, the earth would collapse! How could a martial artist possibly defend against this?

This attack was unmatched!

Everyone looked towards Dragon Fang. Dragon Fang still looked as calm as before. Within his eyes, he could clearly make out the circulation of Shiku's Earth Laws.

In that instant, Dragon Fang attacked. Without using any Laws at all, he simply poured true essence into his blade and then lightly thrust towards that 100,000 foot tall mountain.

"What!?"

"He wants to use that four foot long sword to resist Shiku's 100,000 foot tall mountain!?"

"He's too crazy! Shiku's Earth Laws have long reached the boundary of substantializing his origin energy. This mountain is not a phantom but a true mountain of origin energy. If this attack connects, then Dragon Fang's arms will be torn off!"

As everyone was speaking, Dragon Fang thrust his sword into an exact point of that mountain. In that moment, everything seemed to fall silent as if time itself had stopped.

Dragon Fang's energy completely poured into that giant mountain. It was much weaker and smaller than the energy Shiku had erupted with, but at this time an incredible scene occurred.

From the point where Dragon Fang had stabbed his sword, a crack appeared in the giant mountain. Then, countless cracks began to climb all around the massive mountain like a never-ending spider web.

Rumble rumble rumble!

With the sound of collapsing mountains and rivers, the entire origin energy mountain turned into endless crushed stone as it completely disintegrated!

"What!?"

"How did he do that?"

“A single sword strike to crush a 100,000 foot mountain!”

The entire audience was shocked, and even Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. If Dragon Fang had suppressed Shiku using absolute strength then he would have thought that was reasonable. But, a single casual sword strike had completely shattered Shiku’s attack.

“Those eyes…” Lin Ming noticed Dragon Fang’s pupils, “Those eyes can see through the Laws. In front of Dragon Fang’s eyes, there is no place for Shiku’s Laws to hide!”

Lin Ming didn’t know where Dragon Fang’s eyes originated from, but he could guess some of their abilities. Many of the powerhouses in the audience were also able to do the same.

“This Dragon Fang is able to see through the Laws, thus he instantly found a weakness in Shiku’s attack and was able to crush that origin energy mountain that he had formed. If all Laws are seen through by Dragon Fang, how could you still fight? That is a nearly invincible position!”

“I also heard that this Dragon Fang has practiced the Laws of Space and Time to an extremely high level. He can see through the Laws of his opponents and then attack with his own Space and Time Laws. What a terrifying young man!”

“I thought that Lin Ming could reach the top three or even the top four, but now I’ve changed my mind. These dark horses are each darker than the last! I have no idea just who is stronger and weaker between Lin Ming and Dragon Fang.”

Chapter 1295 – Impossible to Unravel

Chapter 1295 – Impossible to Unravel

…

…

…

Dragon Fang’s two pupils were chilling to the bone. All moves and all Laws were seen through by him, making one unable to summon any courage to face him.

As Shiku saw his finishing blow, the Sky Mountain Seal, be defeated like that, his complexion turned extremely ugly.

“You are fierce, but my strength is more than just the Earth Laws. By depending on those eyes alone, you cannot defeat me.”

Shiku shouted out loud and popping sounds emitted from his entire body. He directly opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and a giant turtle phantom appeared behind him.

This turtle had a massive snaking dragon head and its shell was round like a dome. Its four legs were like those of an elephant and its body was larger than a mountain.

“That’s a Dragon Turtle phantom!”

Of the nine sons of the Heavenly Dragon, the Dragon Turtle was one.

“Shiku has opened seven of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, the same as me. Moreover, he can summon the phantom of a Dragon Turtle. I fear he obtained a lucky chance related to the Dragon Turtle.” Lin Ming thought.

Shiku suddenly laughed, “Ten years ago I explored a divergent mystic realm. Deep within that mystic realm, I found a deeply slumbering Dragon Turtle egg. Using a special technique, I slowly ate up that Dragon Turtle egg. Ignoring the Laws I’ve comprehended, just my bodily strength has reached the highest pinnacle!”

As Shiku spoke, the entire audience was shocked. Shiku’s luck was too good!

A Dragon Turtle egg was more valuable and precious than the supreme dragon bone that Lin Ming had obtained. Although the bloodline of the Dragon Turtle was inferior to the Azure Dragon, Shiku had still obtained a Dragon Turtle egg that was filled with the life vitality of a dragon. Compared to the bone of an Azure Dragon that had been dead for countless years, it was far more precious!

If a Dragon Turtle egg were to appear, even Great World King powerhouses would crazily fight for it.

“So that’s how it is… no wonder Shiku was able to open the first seven of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.” Lin Ming silently thought. Underneath the current rules of the Heavenly Dao, it was impossible to open up the Eight Inner Hidden Gates to such a degree without a lucky chance.

In truth, the advantages the Dragon Turtle egg gave to Shiku were far more than helping him open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. The Dragon Turtle was originally an earth-attribute God Beast, and thus it complemented Shiku’s Laws, allowing him to instantly leap into the ranks of the top masters.

Shiku originally thought that he could rank in the top three of the First Martial Meeting, but now he realized that experts here were like clouds in the sky. Any one of these people he had to face would force him to use his complete strength.

As Shiku spoke, he glanced over at Lin Ming, a faintly superior feeling in his eyes.

Lin Ming was startled, but immediately understood his meaning.

When Lin Ming fought he had summoned the phantom of an Azure Dragon, and that scene had naturally fallen into Shiku's eyes. Shiku had swallowed the Dragon Turtle egg and this allowed him to faintly feel the intensity of the Azure Dragon bloodline within Lin Ming. He guessed that Lin Ming had obtained something like a dragon bone or dragon blood, and in terms of lucky chances, the Dragon Turtle egg he found naturally surpassed Lin Ming.

All body transformation martial artists needed lucky chances to open the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. Thus, Shiku naturally compared himself with Lin Ming's lucky chances. Since Lin Ming was inferior in this regard, Shiku naturally felt superior by having a greater destiny on him.

Even though his strength couldn't be compared to Lin Ming's, his lucky chance was still better than his, thus the reason he glanced at Lin Ming with that expression just now.

"So it's like that. But… so what?" Dragon Fang calmly asked Shiku.

Shiku frowned as he saw Dragon Fang's response, "Humph, stop posturing!"

Dragon Fang quietly wiped the edge of the Dragon Fang Blade, coolly saying, "Lucky chances and destiny are indeed a component of one's talent, but they do not account for everything. If you believe that just because you stumbled across a great lucky chance, that will allow you to become an extreme master of the Divine Realm, then you are sorely mistaken."

In Dragon Fang's opinion, those like Lin Ming and Jun Bluemoon that had come from common mortal backgrounds must have come across heaven-shaking lucky chances to stand where they were now. But, they did not reach this boundary through just the quality and quantity of lucky chances they found. With so many lives in the Divine Realm, there were countless individuals that found lucky chances, but out of all those people, only a few geniuses were able to stand here.

At present, Shiku was one such person who had come across a great lucky chance. But, when compared to Lin Ming and Jun Bluemoon, he lacked many things.

“You sure speak a lot of crap. Make your move. With my body transformation technique, I simply have no need to rely on my Laws. I want to know just how you’ll see through my weaknesses!”

Shiku’s body suddenly bulged out, making him look like an ancient beast as he hurtled towards Dragon Fang!

At that instant, Dragon Fang’s mind was like a lake without ripples. He gently traced the hilt of the Dragon Fang Blade and quietly said, “If you won’t use the Laws, then I will.”

Just as Shiku’s staff was about to strike Dragon Fang’s body, time suddenly slowed down! The power of time around Shiku was twisted by Dragon Fang!

Shiku rapidly responded. Popping sounds burst out from his body as tens of millions of jins of strength erupted. He wanted to use brute force to break free from the shackles of the Time Laws!

Ka ka ka!

Shiku’s muscles rose and his blood vessels stuck out as he broke through the power of time. However, at that moment, he felt himself plunging into a vortex of time. There was no past, no future, and even the present had come to a near halt. Dragon Fang’s attainments in the Time Laws had far surpassed Shiku’s imagination.

If it were a normal martial artist with weaker Time Laws, then Shiku would have easily broken through it with his strength. However, Dragon Fang was far too strong. Whether it was the intensity of true essence or Laws, he was on a higher level than Shiku. It was impossible for Shiku to contend with him.

Woosh!

Dragon Fang’s figure flashed as he struck at Shiku. The Dragon Fang Blade ripped apart Shiku’s protective true essence, leaving behind a thin line of blood on his neck.

Shiku stiffened, his entire body going ice cold. In that instant, he felt as if he had died. When Dragon Fang's sword cut towards him, it was like the coming of the death god!

And what scared Shiku the most was that even if his speed was inferior to Dragon Fang's, he still had his protective true essence and his body transformation technique to protect his body. But in front of Dragon Fang, all of that had been as fragile as paper. Dragon Fang's sword silently tore through Shiku's protective true essence along with the surface defense of his body. If that sword had cut forwards three more inches then Shiku's head would have been cut off!

"How… how is this possible…" Shiku's eyes widened, his entire body dripping with a cold sweat. "How can my defense not resist you at all."

Silence fell over the entire audience. Dragon Fang's attack was far too sharp. Even though they were so far away, they still felt a cold chill crawl up their backs!

This was Dragon Fang's true strength?

"What a dangerous attack!" Lin Ming's pupils shrank. Dragon Fang's attack was far too sharp. Even with Lin Ming's defensive capabilities, he didn't believe he had the confidence to withstand such an attack. In other words, if he were to fight Dragon Fang, he couldn't allow himself to be cut or he would receive a severe wound!

Dragon Fang put away his sword. He lightly glanced at Shiku and coldly said, "What cut apart your defense was not my blade, but space."

From the start, Dragon Fang's sword had never touched Shiku's skin. Rather, he used the power of space to cut apart Shiku's defense.

After reaching Dragon Fang's boundary, by utilizing the Space Laws he didn't need to use his sword to kill others. With the power of space he could kill people from a hundred steps away. Space was invisible and formless; wanting to dodge it was extremely difficult!

A martial artist skilled in the Space Laws was terrifying, but a swordsman skilled in the Space Laws was even more terrifying. This was because space was sharper than a sword edge!

“Is this Dragon Fang… human?”

‘Shiku is absolutely not weak, but compared to Dragon Fang, the disparity is too great!”

Nobody believed that Shiku was weak. He himself was an Empyrean descendant, and although he came from one of the weaker Empyrean palaces, he had a heaven-defying talent and even swallowed a Dragon Turtle egg. Just how many people in the universe would ever have such a lucky chance? And this Shiku was actually defeated in such a miserable manner by Dragon Fang!

“He’s too much of a freak! With that strength, he might even be stronger than Lin Ming!”

When Lin Ming fought the Monster Prince they had fought for some time. Although Shiku was likely weaker than the Monster Prince, he had been thoroughly defeated without the tiniest ability to resist.

“Dragon Fang might have the strength to compete for the top three rankings… I have nothing to say. Even I can’t say who will be in the top three now.”

At the beginning. Everyone thought that Xiao Moxian, Hang Chi, and Frost Dream were guaranteed to be in the top three rankings. But now, Lin Ming and Dragon Fang each gave more and more formidable performances, as if they were invincible. Like this, with so many variables, it was impossible to unravel what the final rankings of the tournament would be.

“Don’t forget that there is also Jun Bluemoon. Just look at him. From the start until now he’s simply been holding that bunny. Even though there were so many intense fights and those freaks Lin Ming and Dragon Fang both stepped on stage, his expression didn’t change at all. Do you suppose he is weak?”

Jun Bluemoon had defeated an Empyrean descendant within three moves, and that Empyrean descendant hadn't been a nobody either. After being defeated by Jun Bluemoon, that Empyrean descendant had emerged victorious in his next 17 matches, and his results in the second tier were also at the top. There was even a chance that he and Ram Saber would fight to determine who had the qualifications to challenge the first tier. With that, it was unlikely that Hua Xuan would be able to maintain his position.

Such a ruthless person had been pitifully defeated by Jun Bluemoon. From the beginning until now, Jun Bluemoon had maintained a faint and uncaring expression, as if nothing mattered to him at all. Even the provocations of the Monster Prince and his opponents hadn't affected him in the least. And, what was most strange was that he had always held onto a little bunny, slowly stroking that little bunny's fur. This was something that normally only little girls would do. Wasn't this Jun Bluemoon a bit too much like a young girl?

Or was there something special about this bunny?

"This First Martial Meeting has already reached unprecedented levels of intensity."

"I can't wait! I really want to see them fight!"

As everyone spoke, Vast Cosmos stepped onto the arena stage once more. He loudly announced, "Fourth match, Jun Bluemoon against White King!"

These words caused the entire audience to bubble over with excitement!

This was another battle of heavyweights. There was no need to mention the accomplishments of White King. He was the most outstanding disciples to appear in Vast Universe Heavenly Palace for the last several hundred thousands of years. One of the great reasons that Empyrean Vast Universe stepped forward to help manage the First Martial Meeting was because of White King.

As the one representing the glory of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, White King's strength was naturally amazing.

Moreover, the gambling house hadn't listed the odds for White King. This caused many others to look forwards to seeing just how strong White King was.

"White King, will you be okay?"

Before White King stepped on stage, several of his senior-apprentice brothers spoke to him. Although they were confident in White King, this Jun Bluemoon was far too abnormal. Wanting to defeat him wouldn't be easy.

"I'm fine." White King took a deep breath.

"Mm, it's fine as long as you try your best. This Jun Bluemoon is not easy to deal with. Just the strength he's exposed so far is no trifling matter."

"I understand."

White King slowly picked up his hand strap and shouldered his sword as he stepped onto the arena stage.

In this battle, the pressure on him was not small at all!

Chapter 1296 – Duel of Two Stars

Chapter 1296 – Duel of Two Stars

…

…

…

"White King, please advise!"

White King stood above the arena stage, a heavy sword grasped in his hands as he faced Jun Bluemoon. Jun Bluemoon had an indifferent expression on his face, still holding the rust-stained sword as before.

"White King! White King!"

The entire audience erupted with heated cheers. This was the home ground of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, thus they naturally cheered for White King.

White King calmed his mind. This battle was not one he could afford to lose, otherwise he would lose all of his momentum. After that, he would lose to Lin Ming, Dragon Fang, and the others. There was no need to mention the three terrifying characters that were Frost Dream, Xiao Moxian, and Hang Chi.

This could only be called White King's bad luck. White King was already very strong. In the past, White King would have been able to struggle for the top three ranks of the Heaven Proclamation, but now three dark horses had suddenly galloped up behind him, each one darker than the last. One of them had defeated an Empyrean descendant in three moves, one had savagely beaten the Monster Prince, and the other was the disciple of Three Lives Old Man, and Three Lives Old Man was an ancient supreme elder that even Empyrean Divine

Dream respected. Those Three Lives Pupils were able to see through all Laws; how could anyone deal with that?

How could he not feel the pressure?

After all, he was part of the hosting sect. if he were to lose to common mortal martial artists then that would be very ugly. Unfortunately for him, his opponent Jun Bluemoon was such a person. He was extremely strong and yet he didn't have any background at all.

"Make your move." Jun Bluemoon said.

White King didn't hesitate; he immediately attacked.

"Vast Universe Supernatural Art!"

White King immediately used the transcendent divine might of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. In that instant, White King's aura exploded, rapidly rising. It doubled and continued rising until it was three times what it was originally.

Not only was his aura three times greater, but his true essence and the power of the world within him were also three times what they were.

"Mm? Vast Universe Supernatural Art?"

Lin Ming was startled. This was a cultivation method capable of rapidly increasing one's aura, similar to the Heretical God Force. But, the range was greater than the Heretical God Force, and while the Heretical God Force was a momentary explosion, the Vast Universe Supernatural Art seemed to persist longer. From that point alone, the Vast Universe Supernatural Art was much stronger. But, the key point of the Heretical God Force lay in the Heretical God Tree and its ability to control the power of thunder that surpassed the Heavenly Dao Laws. In this point, the Vast Universe Supernatural Art could not compare.

"I never imagined that White King would have already practiced the Vast Universe Supernatural Art to the second stage."

“White King’s talent is mind-boggling. On the Divine Seal Altar, White King managed to climb 65,000 feet up the last step. Although he is worse than Lin Ming and Dragon Fang in that regard, that is because White King’s methods were lacking. The Divine Seal Altar cannot explain all strengths. With so many peak geniuses converging at this First Martial Meeting, I hope that White King can create a miracle.”

Vast Universe Supernatural Art was an auxiliary transcendent divine might. Its most basic principle was to open a second world within one’s body, and even a third, fourth, fifth, and even more worlds. Currently, White King had only opened up his third inner world and was constantly improving upon it.

Every single transcendent divine might was a heaven-defying ability. And those Empyreans that could create a transcendent divine might were outstanding amongst their generation.

With the support of the Vast Universe Supernatural Art, White King finally attacked. “Gold Light Instant Kill Sword!”

What White King practiced was the Metal Laws. With the support of the Vast Universe Supernatural Art, this sword strike was in no way inferior to an all-out attack from a late Divine Transformation powerhouse!

Facing this attack, Jun Bluemoon took a step backwards, one of his hands drawing a diagram in the air. Yin yang energies fused together, forming a yin yang primal chaos diagram in the air. The primal chaos diagram spun in the air, containing innumerable mysteries. As White King’s sword light pierced into this primal chaos diagram, a strange scene occurred. The sword light submerged into that diagram and completely disappeared!

“What!?”

White King was shocked. Because he had cared too much about this battle, he had immediately revolved the Vast Universe Supernatural Art as soon as he stepped on stage. He had used this all-out attack and yet it was nothing but a fist that struck a load of cotton. He simply wasn't able to reveal his strength at all.

"What's going on here?"

Before White King had enough time to think, Jun Bluemoon had already pierced his sword out.

The rust-stained sword was covered in the dazzling light of yin and yang, thrusting straight towards White King's chest! In that moment, within this world, everyone turned stark black or white; this was an incomparably strange attack!

"Metallic Luster Slash!"

White King grit his teeth and chopped down with his sword, striking Jun Bluemoon's sword light. The two sword lights were both destroyed at the same time but there was no eruption of energy. Rather, the sword light, true essence, and power of the world seemed to be swallowed up by some invisible power until nothing was left in the world, leaving behind nothing but an eerily calm peace.

This feeling of absolute silence left White King's heart tightened. Jun Bluemoon's techniques were too strange. Fighting him gave off an incomparably suppressive feeling.

Xiu!

Jun Bluemoon thrust out another sword. This was also the Yin Yang Laws, but the power behind it was greater than the last strike. The speed was also faster, making it nearly impossible to read its trajectory.

The yin yang diagram spun, as if the entire world would be swallowed within it.

There was no gap between these two sword strikes. It was as if Jun Bluemoon's true essence was endless.

White King was startled. Fortunately, he had the Vast Universe Supernatural Art backing him up. With three inner worlds, the world power within his body was enough to continue fighting. By relying on this strength, White King and Jun Bluemoon began a fierce melee.

One sword, two swords, three swords... five swords... 10 swords, Jun Bluemoon's sword strikes became increasingly fast and increasingly potent. After his sword light collided with White King's techniques, they constantly died out, vanishing into nothing without a single trace remaining.

Even though this was an extremely violent battle, there were no violent explosions of energy. This left the audience feeling extremely repressed. This feeling of the unknown was very uncomfortable.

Soon, Jun Bluemoon had cast out 63 sword strikes.

Even so, White King was just barely managing to deal with this barrage. Although he was distressed, he was able to shoulder this with his true essence that was three times deeper than that of an ordinary genius!

In truth, the intensity of White King's true essence surpassed Jun Bluemoon's. But, it was only in the aspect of Laws that Jun Bluemoon occupied an overwhelming advantage. White King's sword light was inexplicably swallowed and not even White King knew how Jun Bluemoon was doing this.

This was White King, with the support of the Vast Universe Supernatural Art behind him. If it were an ordinary Empyrean descendant, they would have already been defeated.

“Just what sort of cultivation method did this Jun Bluemoon train in that his techniques surpass Senior-apprentice Brother White King in ferocity!?”

“Senior-apprentice Brother White's greatest superiority lies in the depth of his true essence. If he's also suppressed in this aspect by Jun Bluemoon then he's in danger.”

"Why are you trying to tear down others to make yourself seem better? Senior-apprentice Brother White does have an advantage – that is his endurance! Our Heavenly Palace's Vast Universe Supernatural Art is a transcendent divine might that is the best in prolonged battles! As long as Senior-apprentice Brother White can draw Jun Bluemoon into a war of attrition then he'll win!"

White King had three separate inner worlds within his body; It was nearly impossible to measure the total amount of true essence he had. He could even use two worlds to fight and then use the third to restore his strength. If that happened then this battle would continue for a long time. If he fought Jun Bluemoon for a long time he wouldn't consume too much energy and he would still be able to fight.

And at this time, after Jun Bluemoon struck out with 63 sword strikes, his movements suddenly slowed for a breath of time until he slashed out with his 64th sword!

As Jun Bluemoon attacked with his 64th sword strike, a sudden change occurred!

Around Jun Bluemoon and White King, dozens of yin yang primal chaos charts appeared. Counting them, there were 63 in total!

The positions of these yin yang primal chaos charts were exactly where Jun Bluemoon and White King exchanged 63 attacks just now. Each time they fought, their sword lights had disappeared, making it seem as if they had vanished. But that was wrong. The energy had hidden, turning into yin yang primal chaos charts!

Now, with Jun Bluemoon's 64th sword, all of those primal chaos charts were summoned together. With the final primal chaos chart that was summoned with the 64th sword strike, there were 64 in total!

As the legends said, the endless void gave birth to primal chaos, primal chaos gave birth to two complementary forces, two complementary forces generated four aggregates, four aggregates generated eight trigrams, and eight trigrams formed 64 diagrams!

What Jun Bluemoon used was exactly 64 yin yang swords!

In that moment, 64 yin yang diagrams joined together, blocking all the space around White King. White King felt as if he had fallen into a separate space-time, as if he were blocked by an array diagram, leaving him no space to dodge!

Peng peng peng peng peng peng peng peng!

Eight diagrams exploded together. In that instant, White King's protective true essence exploded and he flew backwards, his entire body stained red with blood.

Peng!

White King crashed into the ground. Jun Bluemoon had stayed his hand at the last moment, otherwise White King would have been severely wounded. He stood up and looked over at Jun Bluemoon. With a rueful smile on his face he said, "I've lost."

So those 64 sword strikes that Jun Bluemoon used was a single sword technique. The first 63 sword strikes paved the way for the final blade. It was only that White King wasn't able to see through the profound principles behind it. The difference was simply far too great.

"Jun Bluemoon, victory!"

Vast Cosmos announced from the stage, a strange taste in his heart. In truth, the reason that White King wasn't given odds in the gambling house was to not only avoid suspicions of throwing games for profit but also to retain the face of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. According to Vast Cosmos's original estimations, White King's odds should have been worse than Lin Ming's, Jun Bluemoon's, Dragon Fang's, and even the Monster Prince's. It was just a bit too ugly.

There was no miracle in White King and Jun Bluemoon's battle. The disparity was simply too great.

"It seems the background of our Vast Universe Heavenly Palace is still lacking…" Vast Cosmos sighed. The most outstanding disciple that had appeared in their Heavenly Palace for the last several hundred thousands of years was actually defeated in such a miserable manner. Of course, this was related to White King's bad luck.

"Well fought."

Jun Bluemoon faintly said. He stepped off the arena and sat back down on his chair. After he put away his sword, he held his little white bunny in his hands and closed his eyes in meditation.

As the several hundred million people in the audience saw this, all of them were left speechless. Wasn't this fellow just a wonderful piece of work?

He was so strong and yet his behaviors were so strange.

After White King was defeated by Jun Bluemoon, the first round of the finals officially concluded. There would be an hour of rest time before the second round began.

The first match of the second round was – Lin Ming against Dragon Fang!

As Vast Cosmos announced this match, the entire arena boiled over with excitement.

Lin Ming against Dragon Fang.

This was a battle between two superstars!

Dragon Fang's battle against Shiku had left far too deep an impression on the audience. Not only did he possess eyes that could see through all Laws, but he even had the strongest Space and Time Laws behind him. With all of that together, Dragon Fang was a nearly invincible opponent.

However, the scene of Lin Ming brutally defeating the Monster Prince had also left a deep impression on everyone. It seemed as if he had infinite potential.

If these two abnormalities were to bump into each other, that would be a battle for the ages!

Everyone wanted to know who would win!

Lin Ming and Dragon Fang stepped on stage. And at this time, even Jun Bluemoon who was deep in meditation opened his eyes, ready to watch Lin Ming and Dragon Fang’s battle.

Chapter 1297 – In a Spark of Time

Chapter 1297 – In a Spark of Time

…

…

…

Dragon Fang stood on the arena stage, his black clothes fluttering around him. His hands were wrapped in white bandages and as he stood there with the Dragon Fang Blade in his hand. His complexion was still pale and delicate like before, and his eyes seemed as bright as the stars.

Lin Ming stood across from him, dressed in blue. He grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear, his body straight like a spear.

"You've caught my attention for a long time." Dragon Fang suddenly said.

Lin Ming smiled, "Same here."

"I've always wanted to fight with you, but on the Divine Seal Altar we both weren't in our peak conditions and in order to climb up the 33rd step, we both had to save our strength. The result is that I've waited until now. I've been looking forwards to this battle for a long time and I will put my best into this battle."

"As will I."

Their conversation revealed just how much Lin Ming and Dragon Fang valued each other.

"Lin Ming!"

"Lin Ming!"

"Dragon Fang!"

"Dragon Fang!"

Before the match had begun, the audience was already cheering at the top of their lungs. Those that shouted these two names were all young elites of different great influences. They were certainly crazy because of this fight. A battle of this level might not happen for even 10,000 years! To them, it was a lucky chance if they were able to observe and emulate these young heroes. They could study their techniques, their abilities, and broaden their horizons.

"It's so lively!" In the contestant area, a bright voice like silver bells echoed out. Everyone turned to see a black-clothed girl emerge out of thin air like a ghost. No one had seen where she had come from, as if she had always been there from the start.

"Xiao Moxian!"

Many people instantly recognized this young girl. She was the direct bloodline descendant of Empyrean Demondawn as well as someone who possessed half the inherited bloodline of a phoenix. In terms of potential, she could be called number one within the entire Divine Realm!

And beside Xiao Moxian was another young woman dressed in white and clad in a dreamy illusion, her entire body exuding a holy aura. Without needing to mention it, everyone knew she was Frost Dream.

Frost Dream's face was blurred, as if a layer of fog perpetually shrouded her.

And not too far away from these two women there was a tall and thin bald youth. He wore straw sandals and loosely hanging cloth robes. There were nine Buddhist scars that marked his head; this youth was Hang Chi.

Frost Dream, Hang Chi, Xiao Moxian – the three great masters had all come out to watch Lin Ming and Dragon Fang's battle. From this point alone, one could see just how extraordinary this battle would be!

“Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao Moxian!” As White King saw these three people, he walked forwards to greet them. They were all old acquaintances.

“Senior-apprentice Brother White King, you lost a bit too miserably.”

Xiao Moxian loved to poke at one’s wounds. White King awkwardly traced his nose, saying, “If my skill is inferior to others’ then I have lost fair and square. Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao Moxian, do you have the confidence to face Lin Ming, Dragon Fang, and Jun Bluemoon?”

“Hehehe…” Xiao Moxian clucked her tongue, playfully saying, “Guess!”

“Eh…” White King’s voice stalled in his throat before helplessly shaking his head. Although he had known Xiao Moxian for some time now, he didn’t know just how far she had grown. In his opinion, although Lin Ming, Dragon Fang, and Jun Bluemoon were all formidable existences, it wouldn’t be easy for them to defeat Xiao Moxian at all. The growth of Xiao Moxian’s strength was astronomical. She was someone who would grow stronger just by eating and sleeping, and even her Laws would rise to a higher level without her doing anything at all. Just who could compare to the likes of her?

It was a pity that Xiao Moxian never seemed to grow up and always had a playful mentality. Otherwise, if she was diligent in training like Hang Chi was, then she would be much stronger than she was now!

On the arena stage, Vast Cosmos slowly announced, “Match, begin!”

In that instant, Dragon Fang moved.

His speed was extremely high. To cross the distance between him and Lin Ming, he only needed a tenth of the blink of an eye.

Woosh!

As Dragon Fang flew forwards, his figure divided into four!

Spatial mirror images!

Four Dragon Fangs each cut down with the Dragon Fang Blade. For a time, every location for Lin Ming to dodge to had been sealed off!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. He knew that back on the Divine Seal Altar, Dragon Fang already had the ability to transform into eight spatial mirror images. But now he had only formed four; it was clear that he was just testing the waters with an exploratory attack. But this tentative attack was also incomparably swift and violent. Compared to several months ago when Dragon Fang had summoned eight spatial mirror images to defeat Bloodless Sword, the difference was like the heavens and the earth!

Those four crimson lights shot forwards at incredible speeds, all of them piercing through Lin Ming's body at once.

Ca!

As the sword lights penetrated through Lin Ming's body, they thrust into the ground behind him, causing the ground to shatter. The audience cried out in alarm. They didn't believe that the match would end like this. However, this sense of shock was too strong. Although they had correctly guessed it was an afterimage, Lin Ming's speed was too fast. No one could tell whether it was an afterimage or not!

"Your speed has indeed not disappointed me." Dragon Fang said with a dignified tone. Rather, to be more accurate, it was four Dragon Fangs speaking up at once. Their expressions were completely identical and they spoke with one voice.

As Dragon Fang continued speaking, Lin Ming's afterimages began to slowly fade away.

Several hundred million people watched the four Dragon Fangs on stage. The young martial artists simply weren't able to tell which ones were fake and which one was real. This was because the four Dragon Fangs were spatial mirror images and not illusions. Like a person reflected in the mirror, their movements and expressions were all the same.

The eyes of the four Dragon Fangs began to transform at the same time. Their pupils condensed, condensed, and condensed more until they were the size of needle tips. Their eyes were covered with mysterious patterns and even the blood vessels in the sclera began to bulge.

He had opened the Three Lives Pupils.

As Lin Ming saw these eyes, his expression was also solemn. In this condition, Dragon Fang was at his most terrifying state.

"My cultivation is known as the Three Lives Pupils!" Dragon Fang suddenly said, "This is the strongest secret ability that my Honorably Master taught me. With the Three Lives Pupils activated, I can display my Space and Time Laws to their greatest degree of strength. Now, I will make my attack!"

Before Dragon Fang made his move he had actually warned Lin Ming. This was the epitome of his confidence!

Of course, this was also to ensure the fairest battle. Only by utilizing their abilities to the limit could they engage in the greatest of showdowns!

The entire audience's eyes popped wide open, unblinking, lest they miss any movement at all. Dragon Fang's techniques involved the Space and Time Laws, and Dragon Fang was also a freak who had cultivated both the Space and Time Laws to the fifth level Concept. If these two Laws joined together, it was unknown how strong they would be!

Many people were sweating nervously for Lin Ming, because what Lin Ming had exposed so far was only the fifth level Concept of the Fire Laws.

At this time, Dragon Fang began to slowly move forwards. His steps were strange, both slow and fast, without a determined direction as if he were walking through a space maze. The four Dragon Fangs began to slowly separate as they moved forwards, each one dividing into two, four of them dividing into eight!

Dragon Fang had created eight spatial mirror images.

The might of eight spatial mirror images was over two times stronger than four spatial mirror images!

Ca!

At this time, a dark gray light shimmered above the blood red edges of the eight Dragon Fang Swords – this was the substantialized power of space!

Hum hum hum –

Space trembled as Dragon Fang attacked!

With eight swords, each one transformed into thousands and tens of thousands of sword lights!

For a time, shadows of the Dragon Fang Swords filled the air. These sword shadows were not illusions but spatial mirror images!

To use space to project sword lights, this was an omnipresent attack.

The several hundreds of millions of people in the arena gasped as they saw this. This was tens of thousands of sword lights, blocking off every possible route to dodge. Moreover, each sword light had a faint touch of the Time Laws. It was simply impossible to judge their trajectory. No matter how quick one was, they could not be avoided!

As for defending against them, that was an even greater joke. If these sword lights fused as one, even a mountain made of divine stone would be turned to ash!

How could one block this!?

At this critical moment, in Ming suddenly erupted with the Heretical God Force, releasing it to the limit, even as he opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and burnt the Blood of the Ancient Phoenix. Facing Dragon Fang as his opponent, he had to go all-out!

"In full bloom, Prime Emperor Lotus Flower!"

With a resonant dragon roar, the phantom of an Azure Dragon appeared. Behind Lin Ming, a deep blood red Prime Emperor Lotus Flower slowly blossomed. Grandmist space exploded outwards, crashing into those endless sword lights!

Chi chi chi chi chi chi!

As the sword lights pierced into the grandmist space, they violently collided with the elementary grandmist energy!

The elementary grandmist energy that was as heavy as a mountain was twisted apart by the sword lights. But at the same time, the sword lights were also destroyed, vanishing into nothing.

Grandmist space was a complete offensive, defensive, and suppressive ability. Even though Lin Ming had only obtained a third of the inheritance, it still possessed an incomparably terrifying might!

Peng!

An explosive force surged outwards. Out of Dragon Fang's tens of thousands of sword lights, over 99% of them collapsed as they entered the grandmist space!

As the remaining sword lights rushed around Lin Ming, Lin Ming simply swept out his spear. Like the tail whip of a divine dragon, the spear point drew an arc in space, and with a series of explosive sounds, all of those sword lights were crushed to nothing by Lin Ming!

All returned to nihility!

The countless young geniuses watching this were dumbstruck.

"Heavens! He can actually defend against that!"

Under everyone's gaze, that nearly unstoppable sure-kill move was actually broken through by Lin Ming! The all-annihilating grandmist space was indeed one of Lin Ming's strongest techniques. Once he used it, it was hard for anyone of his level to match it.

In that instant, Lin Ming suddenly stepped forwards. The grandmist space spread forwards, completely covering Dragon Fang!

And Dragon Fang had just attacked so his old strength was used and he hadn't caught himself yet. His front was wide open!

Lin Ming certainly wouldn't miss out on such an opportunity. His speed rose to the extreme as he hurtled forwards, his spear thrusting outwards!

Hu – !

As the grandmist space enveloped Dragon Fang, Dragon Fang's strength began rapidly fading from his body. True essence was decomposed by the grandmist space, and even those spatial mirror images began to blur.

Lin Ming only needed a thousandth of the blink of an eye to determine which was Dragon Fang's true body!

"Chasing Thunder!"

A thrust of the spear, a flash of electric light!

Lin Ming didn't use a move with a stronger striking power like Virtual Disintegration or Blue Lotus Flame Dance, but the fastest attack in his arsenal, Chasing Thunder. Every fleeting moment of battle was different from one to the next. What he needed now was speed!

The speed was so fast that it surpassed the ability of everyone to react. Dragon Fang's eyes flashed with a sharp light as they immediately turned cold.

"Fantastic, but what a pity..."

In that moment, the eight Dragon Fangs combined together. His sword suddenly reversed as he slashed back at an unbelievable angle...

Chapter 1298 – The Greatest Battle

Chapter 1298 – The Greatest Battle

…

…

…

Dragon Fang's attack path was extremely strange. He didn't attack Lin Ming nor did he attack Lin Ming's sword light; what he attacked was the void!

As his sword thrust out, a sharp light flashed in Dragon Fang's pupils!

In that instant, every circulating flow of energy within the grandmist space was reflected in Dragon Fang's Three Lives Pupils.

Power of space!

The power of space attached to the Dragon Fang Blade suddenly erupted. With a loud cracking sound, several strands of elementary grandmist energy were cut apart by Dragon Fang. In that instant, the pressure on Dragon Fang rapidly fell. With a quick movement of his feet, his figure flashed at unimaginable speeds!

Peng!

Dragon Fang broke through the grandmist space and flew away. At the same time, Lin Ming's spear struck empty space as it crashed into the ground.

The surface stone of the arena stage was shorn off; crushed rubble flew into the skies!

"Mm? He broke through my grandmist space!"

Lin Ming looked at Dragon Fang with surprise in his eyes. In truth, Lin Ming's grandmist space was not unbreakable. The closer the grandmist space was to Lin Ming, the more intense it was. The further away the grandmist space was, the weaker it was. It wasn't strange that Dragon Fang could break free from the shackles of Lin Ming's grandmist space with absolute strength.

But, what Dragon Fang used just now to break through the grandmist space was not absolute strength. Rather, he used the Three Lives Pupils to see through the circulation of the energy within the grandmist space and then cut it apart. That was truly an incredible feat.

"My grandmist space... I'm not fully proficient in it yet. Or, I should say that I haven't completely learned it at all!"

Lin Ming thought to himself. He didn't believe that the grandmist space was inferior to the Three Lives Pupils. Even Empyrean Primordius himself was someone who was in no way inferior to a ruthless master like Empyrean Divine Dream. There was no questioning his strength. The transcendent divine might that he created would undoubtedly be terrifyingly powerful.

But, the problem was that Lin Ming wasn't considered a full descendant of Empyrean Primordius. When he had entered the Eternal Demon Abyss and ventured into the Road of Emperor, it was unknown whether Empyrean Primordius was still alive and all that was left over was some inheritances and ancient relics.

At that time, Lin Ming didn't possess the ability to pass Empyrean Primordius's tests. His cultivation was too low and his talent was lacking; it was natural for him to fail.

Thus, Lin Ming had only scratched the surface of the Primordius martial intent.

On the other hand, Dragon Fang was the sole disciple that Three Lives Old Man had accepted in 300 million years. With Three Lives Old Man personally teaching him, there was nothing that wasn't explained. Every cultivation ability was revealed in absolute clarity and all sorts of precious resources that Three Lives Old Man had gathered in his life were freely spent on Dragon Fang.

There was simply no comparing them!

Because of this, it wasn't strange for the Three Lives Pupils to see through the grandmist space!

"I can easily pass through your domain. The Three Lives Pupils is the king of 10,000 Laws. Underneath the gaze of my eyes, there are no Laws that can hide!"

Dragon Fang confidently said, his blood red sword firmly grasped in his hand.

As Lin Ming heard Dragon Fang's words, he faintly smiled. "Is that so? Unfortunately, I am also confident in my Laws. Why don't we give it a try!"

Lin Ming's astonishing words left the entire audience stunned for a moment.

Dragon Fang had just said that the Three Lives Pupils was the king of 10,000 Laws. Although many people found this hard to accept, they didn't have the means to question it. After all, the facts were placed in front of them. Whoever fought with Dragon Fang would lose all confidence. If your techniques were broken through, how could you possibly continue fighting?

And this Lin Ming actually said he was confident in his Laws?

It was well known by all that Lin Ming's weakness lay in the Laws.

Lin Ming had reached large success in the fifth level Fire Laws, and his Thunder Laws were slightly worse. Compared to Dragon Fang and Jun Bluemoon, who were exceptionally skilled in the Space and Time Laws and the Yin Yang Laws, he was a bit lacking. In truth, it wasn't that Lin Ming was weak, but that everyone else was too freakish!

It was truly difficult to judge Lin Ming and Dragon Fang's strength. But after thinking about it carefully, Lin Ming was a versatile genius skilled in all aspects. Whether it was endurance, defense, Laws, striking power, mortal body, soul, will domains, everything he possessed was approaching the highest levels.

But that was only approaching the highest levels, not the true peak. This made everyone feel that Lin Ming didn’t have a true ‘strength’. Although he was skilled in various aspects, he wasn’t invincible with them.

And Dragon Fang possessed the Three Lives Pupils. In the aspect of Laws, he was invincible.

No one would want to use their Laws to fight with Dragon Fang, otherwise they would be seen through! But if a martial artist didn’t use their Laws, how could they fight?

Moreover, Dragon Fang had mind-boggling accomplishments in the Space and Time Laws. If you were to fight with Dragon Fang, and he were to use the Laws while you couldn’t, wasn’t that just standing there waiting to be beaten up?

Now, Lin Ming’s strongest grandmist space was also seen through by Dragon Fang. Many people were fearfully sweating for Lin Ming, feeling that he was in a very bad spot.

“Is that right? Then let me experience your Laws.”

Dragon Fang gripped his sword and split into eight forms. The seven spatial images seemed to emerge from Dragon Fang’s body. After his Space Laws had reached this boundary, he was already able to freely use the spatial mirror images with skill and ease.

Lin Ming spun the Phoenix Blood Spear. True essence converged into his inner world as the Heretical God Tree crazily grew.

Behind Lin Ming, the phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared!

This 100,000 foot tall divine tree pierced into the heavens!

The audience didn’t know what sort of transcendent divine might the Heretical God Force was, but they still had an extremely deep impression of it. When Lin Ming had summoned this Heretical God Tree, he had used the Thunder and Fire Laws to break through the Monster Prince's space cage.

At the same level, the Fire Laws had broken through the Space Laws. What sort of concept was that? It was no minor matter at all! And now, Lin Ming was using this Heretical God Tree to deal with Dragon Fang.

"Virtual Disintegration!"

Lin Ming thrust his spear out, summoning virtual fire to coat the Phoenix Blood Spear. Purple and red beating flames danced on the spear as it thrust towards Dragon Fang.

These were flames that faintly surpassed the Heavenly Dao; they were beyond ordinary. Facing these monstrous flames, Dragon Fang's expression didn't change. His needle-like pupils swept over Lin Ming, seeing through all!

"What!?" Dragon Fang was startled. He discovered that the path of this virtual fire was only faintly recognizable, and it was extremely difficult to see. Even with the Three Lives Pupils, he could feel the heat of the flames burning into him, causing a needle-like pain to stab into his mind!

"Flames of virtual fire? Lin Ming's Fire Laws are truly different from an ordinary martial artist's, even his Laws are at a higher degree. Even my Three Lives Pupils were nearly unable to see through them. However..."

Three Lives Pupils – All Existence to Void!

Dragon Fang had opened All Existence to Void! On the Divine Seal Altar, Dragon Fang had done this once before. All Existence to Void was a single state of the Three Lives Pupils transcendent divine might. The Three Lives Pupils had many different states and they could even be opened in tandem. When one cultivated the Three Lives Pupils to the limit and all states were opened together, even the Heavenly Dao Laws would fall silent.

Although Dragon Fang was far from reaching this boundary, just the state of All Existence to Void was able to increase his ability to see through the Laws several times over!

"I can see it!"

Within Dragon Fang's field of vision, the energy circulation path of the virtual fire was clearly seen through by him!

"Break apart!"

The eight Dragon Fangs simultaneously slashed their swords. The eight Dragon Fang Blades erupted with a tremendous power of space as all of this energy rushed towards Lin Ming as if it had a mind of its own!

The power of space was the sharpest weapon. It was omnipresent, able to cut apart all!

And underneath Dragon Fang's control, this power of space completely stabbed into the weakest points of the virtual fire!

After these monstrous purple flames were pierced through by this power of space, they suddenly shivered before exploding with a loud bang!

Purple flames dimmed as endless purple lights shot out. Lin Ming's Virtual Disintegration was also broken through!

Hu – !

Dragon Fang let out a long and deep breath, a stabbing pain throbbing in his eyes. Even some meridian channels in the corners of his eyes had ruptured and were leaking deep red blood. Even though Dragon Fang was at the late Divine Sea realm, he was still barely able to use All Existence to Void. Not only did it consume a great deal of true essence and world power, it also created a tremendous burden on his eyes. As long as he activated it, the pressure on his eyes would be unbelievable. The blood vessels in his eyes would blow up over time and even cause him to gradually lose his eyesight.

Thus, Dragon Fang was only able to maintain this state for a very short time.

Dragon Fang grasped the long sword in his hands. At this time, his eyes were burning with flames, like two suns were contained within them. And all around his eyes, meridian channels bulged upwards, seeming just like sunlight.

The current Dragon Fang exuded a savage aura.

As he looked at Lin Ming, he grimly said, “Lin Ming, your virtual fire is truly amazing. I now understand that it is a transcendent divine might, otherwise you could never have reached such heights!”

The Heretical God Force was a transcendent divine might and was more complete than the Primordius martial intent.

But, Lin Ming didn’t expect it to be complete. Those transcendent divine mights that were dug up in ancient ruins were often incomplete. It was only that Lin Ming hadn’t cultivated it to a high enough boundary so he was unable to determine whether or not it was complete. Also, practicing the Heretical God Force was not easy. He needed to constantly absorb divine flames and thunder in the world in order to nourish the constant growth of the Heretical God Force.

Just as it was, the Heretical God Force’s exquisite profoundness in the Laws was extremely exaggerated. It wasn’t even easy for Dragon Fang to see through it.

Dragon Fang said, “You have forced me to open All Existence to Void, and with that, this battle will approach its finale. This is because in this state, I can only maintain myself for half an incense stick of time.”

As the eight Dragon Fangs spoke, they slowly stepped forwards. But as they stepped forwards, another mind-boggling scene occurred.

The bodies of the Dragon Fangs split apart once more, each dividing into two, eight of them dividing into 16!

16 Dragon Fangs had appeared in front of Lin Ming!

“What!?”

The entire audience was completely bewildered. Even those Holy Lords and World Kings were utterly shocked. 16 spatial mirror images meant that Dragon Fang had touched upon the sixth level Concept of the Space Laws!

Although he had only touched the sixth level Concept, he was still many steps away from reaching it. Even so, this accomplishment left one trembling in fear!

“These juniors are too terrifying!”

“An ordinary half-step Holy Lord would have reached this level! In terms of the comprehension of Laws alone, Dragon Fang has reached the standard of a half-step Holy Lord!”

“Old, we are far too old. The geniuses of this era have already surpassed our understanding.”

To touch upon the sixth level Concept at just 36 years of age, that was simply unimaginable. The Space Laws that Dragon Fang practiced were famed for being difficult. This left the heroic young elites present feeling far too inferior. This disparity was too great!

“The match is over. In this state, I can only attack one final time. But, that will be enough.”

The 16 Dragon Fangs looked towards Lin Ming, all of them indifferently speaking as they raised their Dragon Fang Blades.

Chapter 1299 – Heavenly Dao Judgment

Chapter 1299 – Heavenly Dao Judgment

…

…

…

This was Dragon Fang's final strike and also his strongest strike.

The joint attack of eight Dragon Fangs was already so terrifying, and now he had divided into 16 spatial mirror images and had also opened the Three Lives Pupils state of All Existence to Void. The might of this attack could be imagined!

On the other hand, even Lin Ming's fifth level Concept of Fire that was supported by the Heretical God Tree – Virtual Disintegration – was broken through by Dragon Fang. Any and all Laws would be seen through by Dragon Fang. As long as one attacked Dragon Fang with the Laws then they would be restrained!

The impression that others had of the Thunder and Fire Laws was always weaker than the Space and Time Laws. Moreover, Dragon Fang had also opened the Three Lives Pupils. As a complete transcendent divine might, and even a peak existence amongst all transcendent divine mights, its power could be imagined.

"This is my last attack. Prepare yourself."

Dragon Fang cautioned Lin Ming once more. This was how confident he was in himself!

Facing Dragon Fang's last strike, Lin Ming's face was cold and determined. If he couldn't use the Laws then there was no way he could battle Dragon Fang.

With things having come to this step, he only had one final move remaining to him. This was the only Law attack that might not be seen through by Dragon Fang. In terms of Laws, it was a technique that stood beyond the Heavenly Dao.

In that instant, energy erupted from Lin Ming's body, rising to the limit. Behind him, the phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared once more.

"This is the divine tree phantom again? Useless. The Fire and Thunder Laws that this divine tree releases are mysterious, but I can still see through them all the same!"

Dragon Fang was not boasting. The virtual fire of before had already been seen through by him.

As the martial artists of the Ancient Phoenix Clan saw Lin Ming about to use the same move for his last strike, all of them were worried for him. The power of thunder and fire? Was this technique still any good?

"Take my sword – Void Annihilation!" The 16 Dragon Fangs slashed out with their swords together and 16 sword lights came hurtling out.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The void trembled, time twisted. The power of this sword strike had reached the peak of any Divine Sea martial artist!

And at the same time, Lin Ming also shot out his spear.

The entirety of his will, his battle spirit, his world power, his true essence, his energies, all of it was poured into his spear. In that moment, Lin Ming's strength detonated like a volcano, rapidly climbing up without end. The Law fragments that fused into his body during his ninth stage Life Destruction also activated.

Lin Ming's strength grew higher and higher, quickly surpassing Dragon Fang and still climbing!

Dragon Fang shouted out loud and all of the sword light gathered into a single beam of light. All of the power of space and time around it was swept up into it!

And suddenly, from within Lin Ming's inner world, thunder and fire heavenly tribulation that was absorbed by the Heretical God Tree began to rush forth, swelling out in infinite waves. In the skies behind Lin Ming, a terrifying boom blasted across the world. The power of endless thunder erupted, turning the skies into a roiling sea of purple thunder!

And within that sea of thunder, flames madly howled, concentrating into a river of magma that dashed forwards!

Thunder!

Fire!

Two wild and violent energies wove together in the sky. This inexhaustible strength caused the world to shudder!

Heavenly Dao Judgment – Thunderfire Tribulation!

Lin Ming had used his strongest attack, and also the strongest cultivation method he had created.

"…This is!?"

Deep within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, Empyrean Vast Universe's eyes popped wide open.

"The power of heavenly tribulation? This is equivalent to the height of the Heavenly Dao Laws? Lin Ming is summoning heavenly tribulation?"

Even Empyrean Divine Dream's appearance changed. A cultivation method equal to the Heavenly Dao… that was a transcendent divine might!

When an ordinary Empyrean created a transcendent divine might, that would truly reach the level of controlling the Heavenly Dao Laws to an extent. However, they also needed to cultivate that skill to the highest limits. It was not something that a Divine Sea martial artist could ever hope to accomplish.

This was because when an Empyrean created a transcendent divine might, their cultivation had already reached an exceedingly high boundary. If one wished to thoroughly comprehend and cultivate this transcendent divine might, then that person would need to be at a similar boundary to the one who had created it.

For instance, if Dragon Fang wanted to cultivate the Three Lives Pupils to its highest degree then he would need at least an Empyrean cultivation!

And because of this, Dragon Fang was only able to display the tiniest portion of the Three Lives Pupils' true strength.

But Lin Ming's Heavenly Dao Judgment was completely different. This ability was established during the Divine Sea realm, thus he absolutely was able to display its full power during the Divine Sea realm!

This was a cultivation method that belonged to Lin Ming alone! And also the cultivation method that suited him the best!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Thunder roared, flames howled. The entire sky turned into an endless ocean of red and purple.

Lin Ming's spear shot towards Dragon Fang!

A sharp light flashed in Dragon Fang's eyes. He wanted to use All Existence to Void to see through this Heavenly Dao Judgment, but no matter where or how he looked, all he felt was a stabbing pain in his eyes and an endless sea of red and purple roiling before him. It was simply impossible for him to see through the energy composition of this thunderfire heavenly tribulation!

“What!?” Dragon Fang was shocked beyond belief. Even though he had opened All Existence to void, he still wasn’t able to see through Lin Mings attack!

As he was left dumbstruck, he immediately understood what was happening. It wasn’t that Heavenly Dao Judgment was stronger than his Three Lives Pupils, but because the degree to which he had trained in the Three Lives Pupils was lacking.

These were two different cultivation methods. For example, suppose the height of Laws in Three Lives Pupils was at 100 and the height of Laws for Heavenly Dao Judgment was 10, a person who practiced only 1% of the Three Lives Pupils cultivation method would be inferior to someone who had cultivated Heavenly Dao Judgment to 100%.

This was where the disparity lay. Facing the power of heavenly tribulation that stood beyond the Heavenly Dao, Dragon Fang wasn’t able to see through it at all.

If he couldn’t see through these Laws, then Dragon Fang could only bet everything he had in a direct frontal collision with Lin Ming!

However, Lin Ming’s original true essence intensity added on to the erupting power of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates had surpassed Dragon Fang, not to mention that he was also utilizing the might of heavenly tribulation!

Bang!

The spear light and sword like struck each other and a wave of wild energy swept through the entire arena stage, lifting off the top layers of stone and leaving nothing behind but the hard timeless god stone foundation beneath. This was a truly apocalyptic scene!

Ping! Ping! Ping! Ping! Ping!

Besides Dragon Fang's true self, the 15 spatial mirror images he created completely exploded!

And Dragon Fang himself was also surrounded by endless thunder and fire. He used the Dragon Fang Blade to resist Lin Ming's spear light, but his body was still sent flying backwards from the impact.

Peng!

The space enchantments protecting Dragon Fang exploded apart, one after another!

Ka ka ka ka ka!

As the space enchantments collapsed, the power of thunder and fire also melted away. Blood leaked through Dragon Fang's lips and his palms were completely cracked apart. This damage was the result of the tremendous impact force rushing through him.

Peng!

At that time, Dragon Fang's protective true essence was no longer able to withstand the impact; it also shattered!

In this critical moment, Dragon Fang shouted out loud, overdrawing all the strength within his body. He gathered a massive amount of the power of space, causing that spear light to explode!

Blood vessels in Dragon Fang's eyes burst open and blood flew out. He spat out a mouthful of blood and staggered back dozens of steps before barely coming to a stop with the Dragon Fang Blade supporting him.

Dragon Fang looked up, his bloodstained eyes staring at Lin Ming. Flames still flickered around his pupils and it was impossible to see his expression.

"You, you can actually create such a technique? Even my Three Lives Pupils cannot see through it."

As Dragon Fang spoke, more and more blood dripped from the corners of his mouth.

Lin Ming was astonished. Heavenly Dao Judgment could be considered his strongest attack. In a situation where his Laws weren't suppressed and its strength had completely covered Dragon Fang, Dragon Fang had actually been able to persist through it, not even vomiting blood and falling to the ground.

This Dragon Fang was strong to the point of being a freak. The reason he could persist until now was because his Space Laws were far too powerful, whether it was in attack or defense. Otherwise, he would have long been spitting out blood and would have fallen unconscious with severe wounds.

But, even if Dragon Fang didn't collapse to the ground, that didn't mean he still had the ability to continue fighting with Lin Ming. Opening the state of All Existence to Void just then had placed a tremendous burden on his body. At the same time he had overdrawn his potential and completely used up his strength. The flames in his eyes gradually diminished until they fully dissipated away, turning back into ordinary pupils. Even his complexion paled more than usual. He only had 30-40% of his true essence remaining.

And, what was most important was that the blood vessels in Dragon Fang's eyes had exploded because the burden was too great. He would be unable to open the Three Lives Pupils again for some time.

This battle had been decided!

Dragon Fang's attainments in the Laws were extremely high, but he had a weakness, and that was that his endurance was far inferior to Lin Ming's. Moreover, his physical bodily strength and defensive ability were completely flung away by Lin Ming.

If Lin Ming were the one to take such damage, then he would have been able to maintain his combat strength and keep fighting.

But with Dragon Fang being the one to take so much damage, it was no longer possible for him to continue.

"I admit defeat."

Dragon Fang quietly said as he wiped away the blood from his mouth.

As these three words spread through the arena, the several hundred million spectators fell into a silent lull.

In this battle –

Lin Ming, victorious!

Dragon Fang, defeated!

The results weren't too shocking. After all, Lin Ming was extremely strong and people didn't know who was stronger between him and Dragon Fang. However, the entire fight had been far too shocking.

"Lin Ming is too strong! I really think he might make the top three rankings!"

"I really have no idea what would happen if he were to fight with Xiao Moxian and Frost Dream."

"What was Lin Ming's final move just now? It's as if I was facing the vastness of the heavens and earth."

Many of the martial artists present hadn't experienced heavenly tribulation, but they were all dragons and phoenixes of their generation, outstanding geniuses of their era. They all had a faint sense of understanding towards the Heavenly Dao.

"I'm not too sure, but I also feel the same way. I think that Lin Ming's move was similar to some extreme powerhouses when they use their transcendent divine might…"

"I have no idea if this is his limit. It would be fine if this was it, but if he can continue past this then that would be too horrifying!"

Within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, Empyrean Vast Universe and Empyrean Divine Dream were both silent as they witnessed this victory.

After a long period of silence, Empyrean Divine Dream eerily said, “That is an elementary transcendent divine might.”

Elementary transcendent divine might!

Empyrean Vast Universe let out a long breath. He had also been able to see that.

Lin Ming’s transcendent divine might was extremely weak; it could not be compared at all to complete transcendent divine mights created by the likes of Empyrean Divine Dream or Three Lives Old Man. Even when compared to those eternally incomplete transcendent divine mights created by weaker Empyreans, it was still far inferior.

But, Lin Ming was only 31 years old.

He had far too much time ahead of him as well as a future without limits. As Lin Ming grew, this elementary transcendent divine might would continue to develop and improve again and again until it reached perfection, becoming a truly all-encompassing ability. At that time, the endless variations of Laws contained within it would reach incredible heights, and would even be comparable to the Divine Dream Law that Empyrean Divine Dream created or the Primordius martial intent that Empyrean Primordius created!

Chapter 1300 – Heaven Swallowng Demon Art

Chapter 1300 – Heaven Swallowng Demon Art

…

…

…

Dragon Fang put away his sword. He deeply looked at Lin Ming, saying, “I have convincingly lost this battle, but next time I shall be the victor!”

Lin Ming replied, “I’ve heard those words far too many times before, but up until now, no one has ever managed to fulfill them.”

As Lin Ming spoke, the entire audience was secretly dumbfounded.

These words were a bit too arrogant…

“Dragon Fang is crazy, but Lin Ming is even crazier!”

“You’re wrong. It isn’t that they are arrogant, but only a truthful reflection of their history. When we listen to it, it seems exaggerated thus we think they are arrogant, but in truth the two of them have similar personalities. They are both characters that will patiently wait, but when they attack, what they do will often be fatal!”

Dragon Fang didn’t answer again. He only turned around and left the stage.

Lin Ming looked at his back as he departed. He was well aware that Dragon Fang’s potential far surpassed that of any genius he had ever defeated before.

Dragon Fang had just opened the Three Lives Pupils and his strength was just at the beginning of the period where it would rapidly rise. He hadn’t had time to fully realize his potential yet. In the future, he would inevitably become an extreme character of the Divine Realm.

Of course, even though Lin Ming believed that Dragon Fang would rapidly grow, he himself would also quickly grow. On the Divine Seal Altar's 33 steps he had comprehended the Concept of the 33 Heavens. This was a Concept that no one else possessed.

"Lin Ming, in this battle you nearly used everything at your disposal, but there are still several unfathomable geniuses waiting for you. If you fight them, victory won't come easily.

Mo Eversnow's voice resounded in Lin Ming's mind.

Originally, Mo Eversnow didn't believe that Lin Ming would be able to rise into the top three rankings, but afterwards Lin Ming's strength had far surpassed her calculations. Even so, at the same time, the strength of Lin Ming's opponents also exceeded her anticipation.

Now, facing the one or two peak characters of the Divine Seal 10 Children, Lin Ming still didn't have confidence he could win.

"Dragon Fang is strong. If I didn't use Heavenly Dao Judgment then I wouldn't have been able to defeat him."

Ever since Lin Ming joined the First Martial Meeting, this was the first time he had used Heavenly Dao Judgment under the public gaze. It was simply impossible for him to continue holding back.

"I wonder just who my next opponent will be... I shouldn't face Xiao Moxian, Hang Chi, or Frost Dream yet, but Jun Bluemoon might be a possibility."

Of the Divine Seal 10 Children, after deducting Shiku and Hua Xuan, it was impossible to tell who was stronger or weaker amongst the several top characters. They would only be able to find out after fighting.

If he really had to fight Jun Bluemoon then Lin Ming would need to give it his everything. Jun Bluemoon's 64 eight-trigrams sword where he fused together all of that strength was far too terrifying.

"The second match of the second round – Xiao Moxian against Lord Monster!"

The name that the Monster Prince signed up with was Lord Monster, thus Vast Cosmos deferred to the registered name to announce the match. The original intent behind Lord Monster was to imply a lord of all monsters, in other words a Monster Empyrean.

Luckily, the Monster Prince had the vigorous bloodline of his race. Even after being brutally beaten up by Lin Ming, he only needed several hours and some valuable medicines to restore himself to peak condition where he was bursting with energy.

His figure flashed as he seemed to teleport on stage. And in front of him, countless black feathers emerged from thin air. A halo of dim light shimmered and Xiao Moxian appeared in the arena like a dark fairy. This beautiful entrance scene left the audience mesmerized and crying out in acclaim.

Xiao Moxian was the dream lover of far too many heroic young elites.

Frost Dream and Xiao Moxian were the two unquestionable goddesses of the Divine Realm. Frost Dream was mysterious and holy while Xiao Moxian was cute and lovable. There were countless young elites that yearned for them from the bottom of their hearts. Moreover, Xiao Moxian possessed the Dark Phoenix bloodline – the true bloodline of a Dark Phoenix! If one could obtain her primordial yin then the benefits would be unimaginable.

Not only could someone greatly improve their physique but their talent would rise to new levels. Moreover, they could directly engrave runes of the Darkfire Laws into their body. In the future, even if they were eating or sleeping, their strength would still be rising!

Who would not desire such benefits?

Not just that, but Xiao Moxian herself was as beautiful as an immortal fairy and her grandfather was Empyrean Demondawn. If one could marry Xiao Moxian then they could ascend to heaven in a single step!

The Monster Prince laughed, “Xiao Moxian, heh, you are truly a beauty! Let me tell you something. The reason that someone like me would join such a boring First Martial Meeting is all in order to see you. I have admired you for a long time!”

As the Monster Prince spoke, the many young elites in the audience suddenly widened their eyes.

The Monster Prince’s face was really thicker than the walls of a city. If he had won all of his matches and then called this First Martial Meeting boring then no one would have said anything. But, he had been beaten up so badly by Lin Ming that not even his mother would recognize him and yet he still dared to say that the First Martial Meeting was boring?

This was simply the same as him stretching his face out and saying ‘I am cheap, slap me, slap me!’

“This idiot, I have never heard anyone so stupid before in my life!”

“To be honest, if I were him, I would find myself hard-pressed to do anything after being beaten up so miserably by Lin Ming. Even standing on stage right now is a type of courage. I have to say I admire how thick his skin is!”

“Don’t try to use your own logic upon those from the monster race or you’ll go crazy. For them, the strong win and the weak lose; all they care about is the law of the jungle. Anything they do is based on their own whims. To them, the concept of face doesn’t exist at all.”

The audience noisily discussed. No matter how arrogant one was or how thick their face was, they would still lose in this regard to the Monster Prince.

Xiao Moxian tapped her chin as she looked at the Monster Prince with interest in her eyes. Her expression was just like a little imp looking at their favorite toy.

"Are you saying that I should be honored?"

"Haha, far from that. I am only hoping that you can understand the depth of my feelings towards you within my heart. You are also considered a part of our monster race. If you continue mixing with these riffraff humans all the time then that will dilute your bloodline and cause your future descendants to become increasingly weak. Rather, wouldn't it be better to return to the monster race with me? In the future, once I become the Monster Emperor, you will be the Empress."

"Fuck off!"

In the audience, someone had already stormed away in a rage.

"I can't stand this! Gods, please save me!"

"Someone hurry up and sweep this idiot away!"

The Monster Prince had actually dared to proposition Xiao Moxian and wanted to marry her and bring her back to the monster race. In front of everyone, he was actually trying to dig in their corner. This fellow was simply out of his mind! And, most importantly, he actually dared to say such things after being beaten up so miserably by Lin Ming. All the young elites present felt as if they were going to collapse from second-hand embarrassment.

As Xiao Moxian heard that the Monster Prince wanted to marry her, she wasn't angry at all. Instead, she teasingly smiled and said, "Okay. But… my future husband has to be able to defeat me. Moreover, he has to be the top genius of the Divine Realm! If you defeat me then I will marry you! However… if you lose to me, will you be my slave for life?"

This Xiao Moxian was not easy to deal with. To lose was to be her slave – who would agree to that?

Even if the Monster Prince was beyond arrogant, he still wasn't dumb enough to agree to something like that. His voice turned gloomy as he said, "My royal bloodline has yet to awaken. But once it does, my cultivation will rise 10,000 miles every day. My current achievements do not represent my future limits. One day, I will become the strongest Monster Emperor that our monster race has ever seen!"

"Hehehe, then I'll wait for you… but now, how about you withstand three of my strikes before you continue speaking."

As Xiao Moxian spoke she suddenly attacked.

With a resonant phoenix cry, a massive Dark Phoenix phantom appeared behind Xiao Moxian. Black feathers, black flames, soaring into the sky!

At that moment, a vast and hallowed aura covered the entire martial field!

"What an amazing phoenix race aura. Even my bloodline is resonating with it!"

Lin Ming was surprised. He could feel a burning heat on his forehead. The Ancient Phoenix mark on his forehead began to shimmer, beating in tandem with that sublime aura. Both of their bloodlines came from a similar origin, but in terms of bloodline density, Lin Ming was far from being able to compare with Xiao Moxian. This caused the bloodline within his body to be suppressed by Xiao Moxian.

And this was occurring to Lin Ming even though he had absorbed a massive amount of Ancient Phoenix blood essence. The other powerhouses of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were likely feeling an even greater suppression.

Facing Xiao Moxian in such a state, the Monster Prince didn't dare to hold back. In truth, he was well aware that he wasn't Xiao Moxian's match.

The desolate halberd in his hand thrust out. The power of space revolved.

"Rule the World!"

Kacha!

The power of space came shrouding down. The Monster Prince wanted to use the power of space to bind that Dark Phoenix, but the difference in strength was far too great. The Dark Phoenix spread its wings, ripping apart all of the surrounding power of space!

“Halberd Shattering the Universe!”

The Monster Prince thrust out his halberd once more. Xiao Moxian chuckled as she took out a thin black whip from her spatial ring. This whip was 30 feet long and was completely pitch black all over, without a single hint of luster, as if all light was absorbed by it.

“Dragon Tendon Whip!”

In the honored seating area, an old man couldn’t help but cry out in alarm.

Many weapons were crowned with the title of dragon, for instance, Dragon Tendon Whip and Dragon Hair Whip. But, those were only exaggerated examples to highlight the strength of the whip; they weren’t truly related to a dragon.

But Xiao Moxian’s whip was an exception: it was truly crafted and refined from a dragon tendon! It was naturally indestructible, and after being struck by this whip, not only could it easily break through one’s true essence but the force would pass through one’s bones, even injuring their soul. This was a truly terrifying weapon.

Ping!

The Dragon Tendon Whip struck the Monster Prince’s desolate halberd. The whip bypassed the halberd shaft and slashed towards the Monster Prince.

The Monster Prince was shocked. His entire body erupted with energy as he hastily withdrew.

However, this whip was like a viper. It chased straight after him at an unimaginable speed, instantly reaching the front of the Monster Prince!

“Hah!”

The Monster Prince shouted out loud. He wanted to use his halberd to defend himself but it was too late.

Xiao Moxian's figure flashed. She pumped her thin arms and the long whip in her hand instantly tore through the Monster Prince's protective true essence and struck his body!

Puff!

The whip tail slashed across the Monster Prince's shoulder, causing blood to rain down!

To the monster race, this level of injury wasn't anything at all. However, Xiao Moxian devilishly smiled. She reversed her true essence and the whip wrapped around the Monster Prince as if it had a mind of its own.

"Heaven Swallowing Demon Art!"

In that moment, for hundreds of miles around, all of the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy gathered towards Xiao Moxian. From the Monster Prince's body, his true essence, blood vitality, and even the Law fragments embedded within him were sucked towards Xiao Moxian by the Heaven Swallowing Demon Art, rolling towards her like a storm!

As these energies gathered within Xiao Moxian's body, the Monster Prince was suddenly horrified!

"What!??!"

He felt his strength rapidly fading away. This was not a temporary fading, but a permanent loss!

Xiao Moxian was sucking up all his true essence and world power!

This Heaven Swallowing Demon Art was the transcendent divine might created by Empyrean Demondawn. It could permanently absorb an opponent's true essence for herself, and it could even reduce an opponent's cultivation, all of this permanent!

Everyone thought that Xiao Moxian was a cute and lovable young woman, but they forgot that she was also the granddaughter of Empyrean Demondawn. She was a true sorceress!

The Monster Prince had dared to offend Xiao Moxian with his words, and now this was his fate!

Chapter 1301 – Hang Chi

Chapter 1301 – Hang Chi

…

…

…

“Little witch, you dare!?”

As the two World Kings from the monster race heard the Monster Prince scream in pain, it was only then that they realized what was happening. They simply didn’t recognize the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art from the start.

The two World Kings moved at the same time.

But at this moment, Vast Cosmos’s figure flashed as he arrived between them and Xiao Moxian. With a wave of his sleeves, the two monster race World Kings were swept away by a surge of wind.

At the same time, Vast Cosmos turned around and struck out his palm. A fierce and strong palm wind shut down the energy connection between Xiao Moxian and the Monster Prince.

As the referee of this match he naturally couldn’t sit around idly and allow this sort of matter to continue. Xiao Moxian absorbing the Monster Prince’s energy and blood vitality was simply going too far.

Xiu xiu xiu!

The Dragon Tendon Whip instantly withdrew. With a loud thud, the Monster Prince fell to the ground.

Xiao Moxian fluttered backwards like a black butterfly, lightly landing on the ground. She looked at the pale Monster Prince and a diabolical smile bloomed on her beautiful face, revealing a pair of cute white canines.

As the audience saw this, all of the martial artists felt a chill crawl down their spines. This Xiao Moxian was definitely not easy to deal with. She was sufficiently cruel in her actions. Just because the Monster Prince had harassed her with some words, she used the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art to deal with him.

Moreover, from the very start, there wasn't the least bit of anger or killing intent coming from Xiao Moxian. All she did was smile as if this were all an enjoyable little game to her.

Even some heroic young elites who took Xiao Moxian as their heart's love shrank their necks backwards. They began to wonder whether or not their cheap lives were enough for Xiao Moxian to toss about like that.

Without sufficient ability, if anyone dared to provoke this sorceress then they would have no idea how they would die.

"You little witch, you – !" The two monster race World Kings fumed with anger.

"What did I do wrong?" Xiao Moxian coquettishly blinked her large black eyes, her face one of pure innocence.

"What did you do wrong? You know just what good deeds you have committed! This matter will absolutely not end like this!" The two monster race World Kings had already examined the Monster Prince. He had lost 15% of his total true essence in that attack just now.

This was permanent loss. Even his inner world and the Laws he had comprehended had been swallowed up by the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art. If he were to make up for this loss it would take one or two years of hard work and effort.

This loss was far too great for a genius! It would delay their growth!

Xiao Moxian pointed at the pale-faced and nearly unconscious Monster Prince. She began to speak as if she were the one being wronged, “How can you blame me for this? Didn’t you hear him brag about how fierce he was just now? He said he was more powerful than the top master in the Divine Realm and he would become the Monster Emperor in the future. Moreover, he even refers to himself as Lord Monster, an Empyrean of the monster race! I’m just a weak little girl, I was very nervous going on stage!

“I was scared that I wouldn’t be able to beat him so I had to go all-out… my most powerful move is the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art, and I thought that someone like him would be able to easily block it, but who knew that this would be the result…”

Xiao Moxian shrugged, her cute mouth curved upwards. Her night-black eyes seemed to speak the truth, appearing innocent to the extreme. Just looking at her made one feel as if she was really telling the truth, and that because she was far too naïve to the world she hadn’t been able to determine the Monster Prince’s true strength thus her attacks had been too heavy-handed.

The two monster race World Kings almost choked on themselves as they heard Xiao Moxian’s explanation.

As for the heroic young elites present, they were dazed for a moment before suddenly bursting into laughter.

Although they were all aware that this Xiao Moxian was a cruel and ruthless little witch, her cute appearance and coy words combined with her movements made everyone feel she was extremely lovable.

Even Fairy Frost Dream was smiling. This Xiao Moxian was absolutely a little imp who loved to court disaster. But with Empyrean Demondawn standing behind her, no one would dare to move against her no matter what she did.

“You… very well, this old man doesn’t care whether what you say is true or false. Now hurry up and return the true essence you stole from our young master!” One of the two World Kings roared.

“I can’t give it back.” Xiao Moxian shook her head. “I also want to return it but I just don’t have that ability. Once I absorb someone’s energy, it will press into a specific location of my inner world and become my own demonic energy that others cannot use.”

The Heaven Absorbing Demon Art could swallow the cultivation of others in order to strengthen oneself. But, it couldn’t increase one’s power infinitely. Within the inner world of a martial artist that cultivated the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art, their world power was separated from the world power of others. This was to ensure stability in their foundation.

The two World Kings found it hard to give up like this. But at this time, Vast Cosmos’s icy cold true essence sound transmission echoed in their ears, “I advise you both to stop where you are. Xiao Moxian’s grandfather, Empyrean Demondawn, is also watching everything that is happening from deep within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. That senior has a fickle temperament that can change at a whim and the number of people he has killed is countless. As for whatever war between humans and the monsters, you can simply forget about trying to use something like that to scare him, because he doesn’t care at all. If you both wish to return alive, then you had best know when to give up.”

Vast Cosmos’s words were like a bucket of cold water that poured over the two World Kings, immediately sobering them.

They were used to being arrogant, but today they had really kicked a wall.

This Xiao Moxian’s background was extremely tough!

“That monster is nothing but an idiot, nothing but a toad wanting to eat swan meat. He needs to tuck his tail between his legs and scurry back to where he came from!”

“Hahaha, this is awesome! First Lin Ming beat that idiot to a pulp and now Xiao Moxian has sucked away his strength. This feels too great!”

All of the young heroic elites were ecstatic. They were long sick of seeing this Monster Prince. Since the First Martial Meeting finals started, this was the most enjoyable battle by far.

"Xiao Moxian's strength is terrifying..."

During this battle, what Lin Ming cared about was not how Xiao Moxian happily ruined the Monster Prince, but how strong she was.

The Heaven Absorbing Demon Art that Xiao Moxian had used had the ability to absorb the Monster Prince's true essence and blood vitality. That was already terrifying enough, but the true strength of the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art was clearly not limited to this alone. The absorbed strength was not wasted, but stored in a certain part of Xian Moxian's body. It was likely that this strength could be used. It might even be able to be used to directly attack an opponent – that would probably be the strongest attack of the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art.

Then, the third match of the second round began.

Jun Bluemoon against Hua Xuan.

This was a match without tension. Hua Xuan simply came up on stage and admitted defeat.

The fourth match: White King against Frost Dream.

White King didn't hesitate either. He also came up and admitted defeat.

The two matches had far too great a disparity. There wasn't really any reason to right.

The audience members that wanted to see Frost Dream fight were disappointed.

Before this, Frost Dream had never met a worthy opponent thus she hadn't revealed any of her strength. No one in the audience knew what Frost Dream's Laws were or what techniques she used.

Even though Jun Bluemoon and Lin Ming also gave off an unfathomable feeling, at least their general abilities were known.

Those that hoped that White King would be able to force Frost Dream to display some of her abilities were disappointed. The battle didn't even occur.

"This White King's luck is really poor…"

Mo Eversnow commented from within Lin Ming's spiritual sea. This should have been the year that Vast Universe Heavenly Palace was able to blossom into wondrous glory. Vast Universe Heavenly Palace wasn't considered to be amongst the top Empyrean influences, and it was extremely difficult for them to produce a genius like White King. The reason that Empyrean Vast Universe stepped forwards to help conduct the First Martial Meeting was likely because he thought his Heavenly Palace could obtain the limelight.

But now, far too many geniuses had appeared. Every time White King went on stage he would lose. Moreover, it was likely that he would continue losing. Chances were he would even lose to the Monster Prince.

After losing so much on his own home grounds, even though White King had a good mentality and a positive outlook, he would likely feel somewhat embarrassed.

The second round, last match: Hang Chi against Shiku!

This Shiku was a man of much character; he wasn't willing to admit defeat.

"Hang Chi! Everyone says you are strong, but I believe that I am also strong. Admitting defeat without fighting it out isn't my style at all!"

Shiku extracted his staff and aimed it towards Hang Chi.

Hang Chi's 10 fingers and two palms were touching in prayer. He respectfully bowed and slowly said, "Benefactor must be joking. Although Mount Potala's inheritance is deep, my skeletal age is less than 40 years. The amount I have learned is still limited."

As Hang Chi said this, many people in the audience also felt this was true. Mount Potala had inheritances gathered over 3.6 billion years, and the number of cultivation methods and rare techniques had long been countless. However, having many cultivation methods didn't mean that one's descendants would be strong. Even though there were endless cultivation methods to choose from, one would still only choose a few. Where would they have the time to study more?

Hang Chi said, "Mount Potala possesses six transcendent divine mights and 108 extraordinary skills. I began studying martial arts when I was six years old, but my martial talent is low and I am dull-minded. Until now, I've only learnt a tiny bit of a transcendent divine might and of the 108 extraordinary skills, I have only practiced two to a barely adequate level – Backboxing Fist and Leopard Climbing the Wall."

As Hang Chi said these words, Shiku was a bit dumbfounded. Even the audience was left speechless.

The names of these cultivation methods were… too basic!

No matter how one listened to it, it seemed like the most low level martial arts of the mortal world. It didn't seem at all similar to the mainstream cultivation methods of the Divine Realm.

For instance, hearing about Xiao Moxian's Heaven Absorbing Demon Art or Dragon Fang's Three Lives Pupils, they had extremely domineering and mysterious names, as if they were packed with world-shaking powers.

Compared to them, Backboxing Fist seemed as if it would fall apart at any moment.

"Backboxing Fist? Good! Then let me experience it!"

As Shiku spoke he immediately attacked, instantly opening all seven of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and combining that with Earth Laws, bringing about his peak combat state. Facing Hang Chi, he simply didn't dare to underestimate him.

Facing the menacing threat of Shiku, Hang Chi unfolded his arms as his entire body emitted crackling sounds.

"Universe Staff!"

Shiku smashed out with his staff as the phantom of a Dragon Turtle appeared behind him.

But facing this staff, Hang Chi only used his bare hands.

His moves were electric, not giving enough time for anyone to react. His hand simply grabbed Shiku's staff and spun it around. Although this move seemed simple and plain, it actually touched upon one of the staff's greatest weaknesses.

This staff was pushed away by Hang Chi!

...What?

Shiku was shocked. But before he could respond, Hang Chi had already punched out a fist, smashing into Shiku's protective earth essence barrier.

Ka ka ka!

Shiku's earth essence barrier began to crack apart after a single fist from Hang Chi!

Shiku began to panic and fear at the same time. The way his battle unfolded with Hang Chi had completely surpassed his imagination!

Shiku swept out his staff towards Hang Chi's waist, but Hang Chi suddenly floated away like a piece of cotton, as if he were blown away by the wind around Shiku's staff. He moved like ghosts and gods as he appeared right behind Shiku, his fist pounding out once more.

Peng!

Shiku's protective earth essence barrier completely shattered! Then, one of Hang Chi's fingers gently poked a spot on Shiku's back.

This single poke caused Shiku's entire body to go numb. Even the staff in his hands fell to the ground!

"You let me win."

Hang Chi's figure flashed and he returned to the point where he stood at the start, as if he had never moved to begin with.

Chapter 1302 – Lin Ming VS Xiao Moxian

Chapter 1302 – Lin Ming VS Xiao Moxian

…

…

…

“Hang Chi, victory!”

Vast Cosmos loudly announced. Even so, the audience still hadn’t recovered from their shock.

Hang Chi hadn’t used any Laws from the start to the end. He hadn’t even used any true essence. It was hard to imagine how he had defeated Shiku.

“This Hang Chi, did he rely on just his movements to win?”

Lin Ming felt this was unbelievable. Hang Chi’s actions attacked the weakest point of Shiku’s martial skill. He had used a simple attack to overcome him, not wasting a single ounce of strength or even using his Laws. It was simply incredible.

And Hang Chi had done all of this easily. The reason he had been able to easily expose his opponent’s flaws and counter was all because of his movement skill – Leopard Climbing the Wall.

In the legends, the agile leopards could fall down from an extremely high pagoda and not die. Hang Chi’s movement technique was known as Leopard Climbing the Wall. Although this sounded very low-class, the truth was that it was simple and straightforward. It was a movement technique that utilized the simplest and most direct movements to the greatest effect. An unrivalled movement technique in truth did not need some magnificent name to prove itself. This Leopard Climbing the Wall was even superior to Lin Ming's Golden Roc Shattering the Void.

"I wonder which senior from Mount Potala created this set of martial arts and gave it such a casual name…" Lin Ming wondered as he sighed with emotion.

At this time, Mo Eversnow suddenly responded, "The disciples of Mount Potala consider themselves austere ascetics. The seniors of Mount Potala spend their entire lives diligently praying and cultivating, studying Buddhist texts and cultivation methods. Each and every one of them is considered a martial arts grandmaster, and after creating a set of martial arts, they simply do not care too much about the name, only coming up with something on their whims. This is how the martial artists of Mount Potala pursuit their road of martial arts. Even if the martial arts they create are brought to fame by their descendants, they wouldn't care about this at all. Most of them don't even leave behind their names on the cultivation method jade slips."

"I see… no wonder why Mount Potala has managed to continue on for such a long time. They are a low key sect and their background is so deep. Even the martial artists in their sects spend all their efforts cultivating without caring for external conflicts. Who would dare to provoke such an influence?"

Lin Ming suddenly realized. A vicious and crazy sect who wildly provoked others could arouse fear, but after a long time passed they could also fade away. In this world, there would always be another influence that was even more ruthless. But, a low profile sect like Mount Potala never provoked others and was also strong themselves; this type of sect was the most likely to last.

"Hang Chi is also a terrifying opponent, and he didn't even use Laws in his moves just now. I wonder what level his Laws have reached?"

Lin Ming thought to himself. If he were to fight Hang Chi, he simply couldn't say what the results would be.

At this time, the second round of the finals came to an end.

Vast Cosmos stepped onto the arena stage, loudly proclaiming, “The second round has come to an end, and now we shall give special notice to the first match of the third round. Vast Universe Heavenly Palace has specifically opened up a separate gambling bet for this match. Everyone may place bets, and these bets will not affect the previous bets placed.”

As Vast Cosmos spoke, everyone in the audience was suddenly excited. If this was a match worth opening up a separate bet for then it was naturally going to be a battle of heavyweights.

“The match for the separate bet is... Lin Ming against Xiao Moxian!”

As Vast Cosmos said this, the entire audience was stirred up in a frenzy!

This match was truly worth looking forwards to!

Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming.

One was the number one genius girl of the Divine Realm. Her cultivation methods were cruel and callous, and she was a sorceress capable of eating someone up without leaving behind any bones.

As for the other, he had a mysterious history. Since the First Martial Meeting began, he had yet to be defeated. No matter how strong his opponents were, he rose to the challenge to strike them down. Especially in the last battle. After defeating Dragon Fang and his Three Lives Pupils, his fame had risen to unprecedented heights.

The two of them exuded an unfathomable and invincible aura. But if one invincible person were to fight another invincible person, there would inevitably be someone that died.

As Lin Ming heard Vast Cosmos’s words, he turned to glance at Xiao Moxian. He just happened to meet Xiao Moxian’s own gaze. She playfully smiled at him.

“I didn’t think I would need to fight Xiao Moxian so soon. I thought my next match would be Jun Bluemoon.”

In the third round, he would have to fight one of the top three seeded players!

This battle was basically a battle for the top three!

Vast Cosmos said, “The odds for this match have been set. Xiao Moxian’s victory has a 1 to 1.4 compensation rate! Lin Ming’s victory has a 1 to 2.9 compensation rate!”

Gambling on the outcome of an unknown battle was extremely electrifying. Moreover, the compensation rates that Vast Universe Heavenly Palace put out were very fair. If one were to bet 100 million violet sun stones on Xiao Moxian and another 50 million on Lin Ming then no matter who won the losses wouldn’t be too great.

This naturally motivated people to bet even more.

“From the compensation rates, it seems that Vast Universe Heavenly Palace favors Xiao Moxian’s victory more! However, even if Lin Ming loses he still might be able to rank in the top four.”

“It seems more likely that Xiao Moxian will win, but Lin Ming cannot be underestimated either. No matter who he fought he still won. He might be able to score an upset against Xiao Moxian.”

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were both undefeated. Of course, if one had to choose sides, Xiao Moxian seemed the superior choice. She was the granddaughter of Empyrean Demondawn and her mother was a true God Beast. The descendant of a person and a God Beast was an existence that might not be seen even in 100 million years. It could be called a miracle of life!

“Hehe… Lin Ming!” Xiao Moxian chuckled at Lin Ming, taking the initiative to greet him, “I hope you’ll show me some mercy on stage!”

Xiao Moxian playfully smiled. Lin Ming also laughed, “I would also like to show you mercy, but I’m afraid I don’t have the qualifications to do so.”

“Haha, I know you still have some cards you haven’t used. Why don’t you give me a little clue?”

Hearing Xiao Moxian’s words, Lin Ming was left a tad speechless. She actually directly asked someone else what cards they still had hidden. “I have almost nothing left. Dragon Fang was very strong. It was impossible for me to hold back against him.”

“How stingy. I knew that you weren’t going to say anything.” Xiao Moxian rolled her eyes before swiveling around.

After having this conversation, Lin Ming didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry.

“Lin Ming, how confident are you in this battle?” Mo Eversnow asked from within his spiritual sea.

“I have no idea. There is no way I can estimate the limit of Xiao Moxian’s strength. She is at the middle Divine Sea realm and I am at the middle Divine Sea realm. If I lose to her then I have truly lost, there is no excuse or reason to give!”

Growing up until now, this was the first time that Lin Ming hadn’t had full confidence in being able to defeat someone that was at his cultivation level. Moreover, Xiao Moxian was even younger than Lin Ming by a great deal, so her talent could be seen from this alone.

“Don’t look down on yourself, Xiao Moxian has had a much better environment to grow up in. She was born in one of the greatest influences within the Divine Realm and her talent is truly too formidable. As for you, you wasted an immense time with your life starting at the Sky Fortune Kingdom. For instance, at 15 years of age, most Empyrean descendants would have been exploring the Divine Realm. They would have already reached the Xiantian realm, perceived the Laws, and even trained in transcendent divine mights. As for you, you had to diligently train in the Seven Profound Martial House as a student, and your growth afterwards was filled with countless trials and tribulations. You obtained the Nirvana

Dragon Root at the Demon God Imperial Palace by risking your life to struggle with Xuan Wuji and the others who were countless times stronger than you at the time. But even so, to these Empyrean descendants, a medicine of the level of a Nirvana Dragon Root is nothing but a joke. You spent a great deal of wealth to purchase the Boundless World Pill, but to Xiao Moxian and the others, that is merely a common pill.”

Mo Eversnow’s words defined how difficult it was for a common martial artist or a martial artist from the lower realms. For any one of them to grow to the degree at which they could battle an Empyrean descendant was already a miracle! This sort of probability was so negligibly low that it could basically be ignored. Only by adding the incalculable number of lives in the Divine Realm and lower realms combined together could such a singularity appear.

“Miss Mo, the tribulations I experienced in the lower realms, they may have been difficult and I may have wasted a great deal of time there, but they are still a precious wealth of mine. If I didn’t begin in the lower realms then I would never have obtained the Magic Cube, I wouldn’t have obtained the inheritance of Empyrean Primordius, nor would I have been able to temper my will. A person’s destiny, their karma, all of their causes and effects cannot be forced or faked. If I didn’t originate from the lower realms and was born into an Empyrean influence of the Divine Realm, then my current achievements would have been far from what they are now. I would only be an Empyrean descendant, someone similar to Hua Xuan, and even that might have been exceptional.”

Lin Ming’s words were his philosophy of living. Mo Eversnow also nodded, “You’re right. As long as you can maintain your path then you can definitely create an even greater miracle. Especially now that you have comprehended the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens. In the future, there is a slim hope that just maybe you will be able to reach the boundary of Empyrean Divine Seal!”

“Empyrean Divine Seal…” Lin Ming took a deep breath. He found it hard to imagine just what the world was like 3.6 billion years ago, but he knew that Empyrean Divine Seal was the most terrifying Empyrean that he knew of, even more horrifying than Empyrean Divine Dream or Empyrean Primordius!

He might have even surpassed the boundary of an Empyrean altogether.

Of course, these matters were still too distant for Lin Ming; there was no need to think of them. He closed his eyes and began to meditate, preparing himself for the upcoming match.

The noise of the audience and their discussions could not affect him at all.

One hour later, Lin Ming's eyes flashed open. The time for his decisive battle had arrived!

Many high level figures of the Divine Realm were paying attention to this match. Even Empyrean Divine Dream, Empyrean Vast Universe, and Empyrean Demondawn were the same.

The audience was even more zealous. Before this, a massive number of people in the audience joined in on the gambling bet between Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian. With several hundred million people present, even if only 10% of them participated and each person only bet 10 billion or so, that was still hundreds of thousands of trillions of wealth. That was hundreds of thousands of nine sun jades. And to the disciples of these great sects, 10 billion was nothing at all.

This massive gambling bet was something that only an Empyrean level influence was able to handle. There was no smaller influence that would dare to host this sort of bet, because if they lost, then they would really be finished.

Lin Ming stepped onto the arena stage, grasping the Phoenix Blood Spear. Xiao Moxian stood a thousand feet across from him.

Xiao Moxian playfully smiled as before. No one knew what cards she had hidden or what the limit of her strength was. She seemed completely confident in her abilities.

"Match, begin!"

Chapter 1303 – Clash of Dragon and Phoenix

Chapter 1303 – Clash of Dragon and Phoenix

…

…

…

On the arena stage, the auras of the two people were extremely powerful. On one side was Lin Ming, his aura swift and fierce, piercing through all. On the other side was Xiao Moxian, her aura like a blazing inferno, scorching down the skies.

At this time, Xiao Moxian suddenly attacked. She slashed her whip, and with a howling sound, the space around her seemed to be cut down. Even if a mountain were placed in front of her, that mountain would be shattered by her whip!

A soft whip was an extremely difficult weapon to create and also an extremely difficult type of weapon to train in. However, once one mastered it, its trajectory was easily changeable and very difficult to defend against!

Lin Ming swept out his spear. A swift and powerful spear light met this whip, and with a crackling explosion, the whip light and spear light struck each other, producing a sound like rolling thunder.

Within Xiao Moxian’s pupils, black flames suddenly shimmered. Her entire body was enveloped in roiling black flames as her speed rose to a dramatic new level!

A Dark Phoenix was a divine bird of the skies; its speed was not any worse than a Golden-winged Roc’s.

"Hahahahaha!" Xiao Moxian happily chuckled. "When I have fought other juniors of my generation, none of them have been able to keep up with my speed. If you can't keep up with me, there's no way for you to fight me!"

Xiao Moxian's voice was like the clarion cry of a phoenix. As she spoke, she pumped her whip at Lin Ming. This whip transformed into 10,000 whip shadows in the air, filling the skies, completely covering Lin Ming!

Whether it was in attack speed or her movement speed, Xiao Moxian was unparalleled. She could only be called a young girl that was blessed by the heavens themselves. In the aspect of talent, no one was able to keep up with her!

Golden Roc Shattering the Void! Mystic Lightning Shade!

Lin Ming revolved two movement techniques at the same time. Even as he did so, he also opened the Gate of Wonder, erupting with his highest level of speed.

Woosh woosh woosh!

Lin Ming instantly avoided hundreds of whip shadows. His speed was extremely fast, forming dozens of afterimages as he soared through the air.

However, there were simply far too many whip shadows and they were far too fast. Just as his afterimages formed, they were nearly instantly slashed apart by these whip shadows, turning into nothing!

Even if Lin Ming's movements were nimble and agile and he was able to avoid more and more whip shadows, he was eventually being corralled into a dead end!

"Lin Ming's movement martial skills are too low level!"

In the honored seating section, an old World King suddenly spoke out. At their cultivation, besides judging transcendent divine mights, they could determine how weak or strong other cultivation methods were.

"That is a problem of inheritance. Lin Ming's background has placed tremendous limits on him! Otherwise, having an Empyrean level movement technique is the most basic foundation of all."

Golden Roc Shattering the Void and Mystic Lightning Shade were not martial skills created by an Empyrean. Within the lower realms, these skills were certainly enough to shock and awe everyone, but in the Divine Realm, these skills seemed quite shabby when compared to those of geniuses from Empyrean influences.

If it weren't for Lin Ming supporting everything with the Gate of Wonder and forcefully upping his movement speed, then these whip shadows might have immediately defeated him.

"I'll force you into a dead end and see just what you'll do then."

Xiao Moxian grinned. At this moment, Lin Ming was covered with endless whip shadows with nowhere else to go.

"Prime Emperor Lotus Flower – grandmist space!"

Behind Lin Ming, the phantom of an Azure Dragon suddenly appeared and a blood red lotus slowly bloomed. The vast and boundless grandmist space erupted, surging outwards, swallowing up all the whip shadows!

Pa pa pa pa!

A terrifying explosive sound filled the air. Many of the whip shadows that were swallowed up by the grandmist space blew up. However, Xiao Moxian's attacks were too violent and fierce. A great deal of origin energy still penetrated through the grandmist space and drilled through Lin Ming's protective true essence.

With a crackling sound, Lin Ming's protective true essence issued a series of bursting sounds. Power broke into his body, causing wanton chaos!

"Gate of View!"

Lin Ming opened the Gate of View and simultaneously activated the power of the dragon bone. His defensive abilities suddenly rose to a dramatic new level. Never ending world power erupted from Lin Ming's inner world, forcefully suppressing the chaotic true essence within him.

Hu -!

Lin Ming fell onto the arena, his face flushed red as blood tumbled in his body. Xiao Moxian's speed was indeed terrifying. Her attacks were tricky and swift, just like a deadly viper.

"Eh? You blocked it?"

Xiao Moxian's eyes flashed with a bit of surprise. "Your domain is really amazing. It was actually able to swallow up my attacks… it seems that my striking power was insufficient just now. But that was only once. Now I will be serious. I advise you to show me your complete strength, otherwise you're going to lose in an extremely ugly fashion!"

As Xiao Moxian spoke, she spread out her arms. In that instant, for several hundred miles all around, all of the power of fire gathered to her, forming a massive origin energy vortex. Her aura climbed up without stopping and behind her the shade of a Dark Phoenix began to gradually form. This didn't look like a phantom, but was vivid and real, just like a true Dark Phoenix!

As this Dark Phoenix appeared, the pressure of a God Beast fell onto the entire audience!

The Dark Phoenix faced the heavens and released a long cry. Its voice pierced through the clouds and cracked apart mountains.

Suddenly, behind Xiao Moxian, a pair of voluminous black wings stretched out!

These wings were large, expanding 15 feet out in each direction. Combined together, they could easily wrap around Xiao Moxian's small body, completely folding her within them.

These were phoenix wings!

These wings were not transformed from energy, but were wings of true flesh and blood!

These wings were a part of Xiao Moxian's body; they were the symbol of a phoenix's true descendant!

With a gentle flap of her wings, Xiao Moxian rose into the air. At this time, she was like a dark angel, mysterious and beautiful, but also containing a terrifying power.

"Let me caution you. When I reveal my Dark Phoenix wings, that is when my attacks can display their highest level of power! Moreover, my mortal body defense is extremely strong. A normal attack cannot break through my defense!"

Xiao Moxian tittered. This was the powerful body she inherited from her mother. Even if she didn't cultivate, her bodily strength would far surpass that of almost all body transformation martial artists.

As the audience looked at the flying Xiao Moxian, they were completely stunned. After transforming, Xiao Moxian with her Dark Phoenix wings was like a goddess of night. Her atmosphere and strength were as different as night and day from before. Her entire body exuded a sacred aura.

"How terrifying! This is the descendant of a God Beast and a person! In the entire Divine Realm, that is a miracle of life that might not appear in a hundred million years. Her strength is mind-boggling!"

"It's more than just a hundred million years. I fear that in these last 3.6 billion years, the number of monstrous geniuses like Xiao Moxian can be countered on a single hand! It might be possible that she is unique, the only one to have existed!"

The child of a human and a God Beast might have appeared somewhere along the river of history. But, 3.6 billion years was simply far too long a span of time. No one was able to trace back this entire span of time and determine if there were such precedents in ancient times.

“We have underestimated Xiao Moxian’s strength! I thought that she would be the weakest among the three top Empyrean descendants because she was limited by her age. But now, it seems that might not be true. Don’t forget, she still hasn’t used her Heaven Absorbing Demon Art or the power of her nearly sixth level Laws!”

“Lin Ming might lose this battle.”

“It’s not a shame even if he loses. Lin Ming is already extremely good. For him to reach this step even though he comes from a mere peak Holy Land and also has a humble mortal background, that in itself is enough for him to be proud of.”

Within the raging winds, Lin Ming stood tall upon the arena stage. His body was straight and tall, just like a spear.

As he saw Xiao Moxian unleash her Dark Phoenix wings, he knew that this would be a grueling battle. Xiao Moxian was absolutely not an opponent he could defeat in one move, because her defensive capabilities were also phenomenal.

Roar!

Behind Lin Ming, the Azure Dragon phantom appeared once more. The power of the dragon bone revolved to the limit. Dragon and Phoenix, two extreme geniuses clashing together!

“You have absorbed the blood of the Azure Dragon, right? Interesting. However, your bloodline density will never compare to mine!” Xiao Moxian laughed, her words coming from her absolute confidence. Amongst humanity, any genius’ bloodline was nothing to her!

“Take this!”

Xiao Moxian’s arms flashed. She hurtled forwards even as she slashed her whip at Lin Ming!

This whip strike was several times stronger than the one before. The tail of the whip was also alight with black flames. Xiao Moxian was using her Laws in this attack! After transforming into her phoenix form, even her Fire Laws had become incomparably fierce and wild!

Heretical God Tree!

Lin Ming didn’t hold back. He poured all of his strength into his inner world and summoned the phantom of the Heretical God Tree. The Heretical God Force opened to the limit. As he thrust out his spear, a towering blue lotus smashed into that brutal black whip!

To use the Heretical God Tree to suppress Xiao Moxian’s Darkfire Laws!

In that moment, the entire Heretical God Tree seemed to shine with a flaming light. In the skies, the phantoms of the Azure Dragon and Dark Phoenix crashed together, violently struggling!

Chapter 1304 – Forcing Back Xiao Moxian

Chapter 1304 – Forcing Back Xiao Moxian

…

…

…

“Lin Ming has manifested that divine tree phantom again!”

Someone in the audience shouted as they saw that Heretical God Tree phantom. Before, in the battle against the Monster Prince, this Heretical God Tree phantom had broken apart his Space Laws. To crush the Space Laws with the Fire Laws, that was something that left a deep impression on everyone present. Although they didn’t know just what this divine tree phantom was, they knew that as long as this divine tree phantom appeared, Lin Ming’s combat strength would multiply!

Xiao Moxian looked at that Heretical God Tree phantom that was emitting a blazing light. She could immediately see that this divine tree phantom was something formed from the Fire Laws.

“Hahahaha!”

Xiao Moxian laughed out loud, her voice like beautiful silver bells. “Lin Ming! You are strong, but to think you would actually use such a move. Do you plan on dealing with me using the Fire Laws?”

As the child of a Dark Phoenix, she was the ancestor of Fire Laws. If someone tried to fight her using the Fire Laws, how could she not laugh at that?

"Within the entire Divine Realm, the phoenix is known as the spirit of fire and stands upon the pinnacle of all Fire Laws! I am an incarnation of the Dark Phoenix, the queen of fire! I want to see just how you'll use those Fire Laws of yours to deal with me! I will burn that little tree of yours into ash!"

Xiao Moxian cried out and her black wings covered the skies. Behind her, a fiery phoenix shot up into the heavens, diving into her flames. Then, the terrifying black flames expanded into an endless sea of fire, turning everything in the skies a shimmering black!

It was like a hellish apocalyptic scene. The audience began to cry out in exclamation. Even though they were dozens of miles away, they still felt as if they were being burnt alive by these flames. Many young elites pushed their protective true essence to the limit in order to resist the might of Xiao Moxian's turbulent flames!

Then, the pressure of having to directly withstand the attack of Xiao Moxian's flames could be imagined!

Facing Xiao Moxian's all-out attack, Lin Ming opened the Heretical God Force to the limit as he burnt the blood of the Ancient Phoenix!

His eyes shined as he looked at Xiao Moxian, slowly saying, "If you are the queen of fire then I am the king of fire! Let's see just whose flames are stronger!"

Lin Ming's voice rolled over the audience like a billowing thundercloud!

As the martial artists present heard this they were stunned. Queen of fire, king of fire, wasn't that just a pair? Although Lin Ming might have another meaning, just how arrogant was someone like Xiao Moxian? That was the same as touching upon her reverse scale; one had to make sure they could pay the price of doing so. One only had to look at the Monster Prince to see what the fate of someone who provoked her was.

"King of fire? Hahahaha! Then let me see what makes you the king of fire!" Xiao Moxian laughed, her voice impacting in the clouds. On her face and her arms, countless profound runes appeared. These runes were the Law runes that were engraved into the body of a Dark

Phoenix. In other words, these runes were the miracle of Laws that were carved into the flesh of a Dark Phoenix upon their birth!

Xiao Moxian's 10 fingers linked together, moving at a high speed as she cast out hundreds of seals. These seals submerged into the flames. At that moment, those monstrous flames burned even brighter, as if a black sun had appeared in the world!

The Xiao Moxian who was using her Law runes was going all-out. This was proof that she was moved to anger.

"How terrifying! The power of those flames that Xiao Moxian released is far too terrifying!"

"How can this be blocked. In terms of the Fire Laws, Lin Ming's attainments seem worse than Xiao Moxian's!"

Very few people believed Lin Ming could win. Xiao Moxian had already reached perfection of the fifth level Fire Laws and she had even glanced upon the boundary of the sixth level Fire Laws.

As for Lin Ming, if he hadn't hidden anything, then he had only reached large success in the fifth level Fire Laws!

Moreover, Xiao Moxian also possessed a Dark Phoenix body. This caused the might of her Laws to be even greater. Lin Ming only had his own mortal human body, so how could his fire fusion compatibility catch up to a phoenix?

Against this killing strike that came from the suppression of levels in Laws, Lin Ming suddenly bit down on his tongue and spat out a red mist of blood essence. This blood mist covered the phantom of the Heretical God Tree, fusing into it!

"Combusting his blood essence?"

“No, that is the ability gained from the seventh gate of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. Martial artist that have opened the Gate of Life possess greatly strengthened regenerative abilities and blood vitality. Even if their fires of life weaken, they can still restore it. They can burn their blood essence in times of need to display their greatest power!”

Many martial artists present had an understanding of the body transformation technique. When an essence gathering system martial artist burned their blood essence, that was a sign of their desperation. In a martial arts tournament that wasn’t a life or death struggle, they would never burn their blood essence. Otherwise, they would only destroy their enemy by ruining themselves.

But a martial artist that opened the Gate of Life could actually combust their blood essence. This was a commonly used ability that they had. For them, burning their blood essence in a martial arts tournament wasn’t strange.

Combusting his blood essence with the support of the Gate of Life – this was one of Lin Ming’s final abilities!

In that moment, the Heretical God Tree released a dazzling light as it welcomed Xiao Moxian’s surging black flames!

Bang!

The Heretical God Tree took root in that sea of endless flames, wildly absorbing the energy!

And that turbulent sea of flames seemed as if it would swallow up the Heretical God Tree! Savage tendrils of flame swept over the divine tree, setting it aflame, surrounding it with raging black flames!

This was similar to when Lin Ming had swallowed the Ancient Phoenix blood essence and had seen the phoenix undergoing nirvana. The 1000 mile long phoenix perched atop a 10,000 mile tall sacred flame parasol tree, and that sacred flame parasol tree planted itself on a blazing fire star, all of its roots piercing deep into the core of that star!

What Lin Ming saw before him was such a scene. The Heretical God Tree was that sacred flame parasol tree, and the black flames that Xiao Moxian released were like a pitch black sun!

This was a battle between a young king and queen of the Fire Laws!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Waves of fire swallowed up the heavens, and the entire world seemed to change color. Even the void was burnt through!

“Heavens, is this the Fire Laws!?”

“Too terrifying. The Fire Laws can also reach such a boundary?”

In the impressions of a normal martial artist, the Fire Laws belonged to the five element Laws and were considered relatively simple Laws of average power. They simply couldn’t compare with the power of the Time and Space Laws or the Yin Yang Laws.

But now, as these flames burnt the void, the Fire Laws that Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian displayed were truly horrifying!

This was the difference in the height of Laws. Xiao Moxian’s flames were the true flames of a phoenix. When a phoenix used the Fire Laws, their ability was no worse than an Empyrean’s. In other word, these flames were on the same level as a transcendent divine might!

As for Lin Ming’s Heretical God Tree phantom, that was something that came from ancient ruins and it was impossible to determine its origin. Even so, since it possessed the ability to control even heavenly tribulation, its might was without doubt. It was an extremely high level transcendent divine might!

Whose Laws were higher and whose were lower? They could only find out through battle!

“You blocked my attack? How is that possible!?”

Xiao Moxian was extremely shocked. She had thought that after launching her Dark Phoenix wings, activating the Dark Phoenix bloodline with her, and also attacking Lin Ming with the perfect fifth level Fire Laws, victory would already be hers.

When Lin Ming had summoned the Heretical God Tree and decided to challenger her, she believed she would easily win this battle. This was because she knew that Lin Ming's Fire Laws were worse than her own. Moreover, within this world, as long as it was fire then everything would be controlled by her.

In this situation there should exist no possibility for her to lose. But now, Lin Ming's divine tree had far surpassed her imagination. He was matching her equally!

"I won't believe this. Even if he can withstand me for now, I will still be the winner. I have the body of a phoenix and no mortal man can compare to my endurance. And, he has also burnt his blood essence. Even if he has the Gate of Life supporting him, he cannot last forever!"

"Flames Burning the Starry Skies!"

Xiao Moxian formed more and more seals. The sea of black flames roared into the heavens, sweeping through the stars!

Lin Ming's Heretical God Tree was faintly suppressed!

And even though the Heretical God Tree was being suppressed by those raging flames, it still remained as tenacious and indomitable as before. The Heretical God Tree was even slightly absorbing Xiao Moxian's demonic flames!

Although it was extremely slow, those demonic flames were truly being absorbed!

Lin Ming's cultivation in the Laws was inferior to Xiao Moxian's. By burning his blood essence, he was able to make up for this deficit. In other words, the two were nearly equal in their cultivation of the Laws. But, in terms of the height of the Laws and their quality, Lin Ming faintly suppressed Xiao Moxian!

This was not only because the Heretical God Force cultivation method itself was extremely powerful, but because Lin Ming's Heretical God Tree had... crossed heavenly tribulation!

A phoenix was truly formidable, but Xiao Moxian was still too young – it was impossible for her to display the true glory of the phoenix flames. And not just that, but she had never experienced heavenly tribulation!

"Impossible!"

Xiao Moxian couldn't accept this. The domain she was most proud of actually wasn't able to defeat her opponent?

She was a phoenix!

Xiao Moxian cried out loud as energy swelled up within her body. Her entire body lit up with countless Law runes as she attacked Lin Ming with everything she had.

In that moment, the pressure on Lin Ming doubled. And in this raging sea of flames, Lin Ming focused his mind. Strength erupted from his body!

"Heavenly Dao Judgment – fire tribulation!"

Lin Ming released the power of fire tribulation locked within the Heretical God Tree. A power that surpassed the Heavenly Dao Laws hurtled towards Xiao Moxian!

Heavenly Dao Judgment, the power of fire tribulation, as well as burning his blood essence with the Gate of Life, Lin Ming was placing everything into this strike.

Flames more wild and more brutal than before gathered around the Heretical God Tree. Space trembled, the earth shook, and the entire world seemed engulfed by these maddening flames.

Even the surrounding timeless god stones that paved the arena nearly melted!

In the heights of Laws, the power of Heavenly Dao Judgment's fire tribulation was the true elementary transcendent divine might that Lin Ming had created. To approach the heights of the Heavenly Dao at just the Divine Sea realm, this was the most extreme limit.

As for Xiao Moxian's phoenix flames, she had to arrive at the Divine Lord, Holy Lord, or Empyrean realm before they would be unrivalled. Although her potential was great, at present she was still being suppressed by Lin Ming!

In a sense, the dual thunder and fire tribulations contained within Heavenly Dao Judgment was not something as simple as Lin Ming's self-created elementary transcendent divine might. Rather, it was an evolved fusion of a transcendent divine might that was created after the Heretical God Force underwent heavenly tribulation.

The Heretical God Tree finally overshadowed the terrifying waves of fire sent forth by Xiao Moxian. Then, it directly struck down at her!

At that moment, Xiao Moxian's beautiful complexion changed.

In that critical moment, she brought in her wings. Her voluminous wings wrapped tightly around her body.

The wings of a Dark Phoenix did not fear being burnt by flames. But in that wild explosion, Xiao Moxian was still struck hard.

She cried out in alarm. Her body was wrapped in flames as she fell down from the skies like a flaming meteor.

Bang!

Xiao Moxian crashed onto the arena stage. The terrifying impact sent countless crushed stones flying away, even striking parts of the arena. If it weren't for the many Holy Lord powerhouses protecting the juniors, there would have been many casualties from this impact alone.

Chapter 1305 – Surpassing an Empyrean

Chapter 1305 – Surpassing an Empyrean

…

…

…

The audience of several hundred million was cast into a deep silence. A massive pit of flames burned, and even the surrounding stone was melted into magma. A terrifying heat wave flowed outwards, causing the temperature in a radius of dozens of miles to be hotter than a stove.

Xiao Moxian had fallen into this pit. Her entire body was covered with magma and it was impossible to see her.

Lin Ming's strength had surpassed all expectations. At the cost of burning his own blood essence, he forcefully overcame Xiao Moxian in the aspect of the Fire Laws.

"Xiao Moxian lost?"

"She hasn't lost, she was only injured in that last strike!"

"Xiao Moxian is also stronger than we thought she was, but Lin Ming is even more freakish! In this situation he was actually able to suppress her!"

As everyone was speaking, that pit of tumbling lava suddenly exploded. Xiao Moxian launched her wings, soaring upwards!

At the moment when Lin Ming attacked, she had folded her wings around herself. With her protective true essence supporting her, she withstood his attack!

The wings of a true adult Dark Phoenix surpassed even an Empyrean spirit treasure in durability. In terms of offense, they could shear a world in half. In terms of defense, they could withstand the all-out attack of an Empyrean!

Xiao Moxian was still young, thus she naturally didn't possess this ability. Even so, her wings had reached the level of a high-grade spirit artifact. This was Xiao Moxian's hidden weapon. It could be used to attack and also to retreat!

At this time, Xiao Moxian's wings were stained with blood. Her clothes were also slightly torn. Her beautiful face was pale, making it seem heartbreaking to look at her.

Although she had withstood Lin Ming's attack, she had been heavily wounded.

As Lin Ming saw Xiao Moxian emerge from that pit of magma, he sucked in a deep breath. The body of a God Beast was truly abnormal!

The benefits that the Dark Phoenix bloodline gave Xiao Moxian were not just her comprehension and compatibility with the Fire Laws, but also her powerful mortal body. Her physical defense was no worse than Lin Ming's. To defeat her with just a single strike was impossible.

A strong gust of wind blew across the stage. Xiao Moxian's clothes began to float as her black hair danced about. With her slightly damaged clothes, not only did she not seem distressed at all, but she even had a certain beauty to her.

Xiao Moxian looked at Lin Ming, saying, “Of all martial artists at my level, you are the first one to ever wound me.”

Xiao Moxian's voice was clear, spreading across the entire arena. No one thought that her words were a boast. Within her cultivation level, Xiao Moxian could be called unrivalled.

But Lin Ming was also the same!

"Of all martial artists at my level, you are also the first one to force me back to this degree."

Lin Ming couldn't help but admire Xiao Moxian's talent. In that strike just now, he indeed had a slight upper hand. But, it couldn't be forgotten that Xiao Moxian was only 26 years old!

If she were to grow for another five years and reach Lin Ming's age then her strength would be unimaginable.

In the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, the one with the highest talent and the best future achievements might not be Frost Dream or Hang Chi, but Xiao Moxian.

Unless Lin Ming continued to comprehend the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens and stepped onto the road of Empyrean Divine Seal, then in terms of talent, he would also be inferior to Xiao Moxian.

Xiao Moxian looked at Lin Ming. Then, behind her, a swirling black vortex emerged from nothing. This vortex was like the vast galaxy, slowly spinning.

This was… the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art!

The audience cried out in alarm. The Heaven Absorbing Demon Art was the transcendent divine might created by Empyrean Demondawn. It was an utterly cruel, evil, and merciless cultivation method. If Empyrean Demondawn were to use this ability, he could instantly suck dry the life force and blood vitality of a hundred million people!

Because of this cultivation method, Empyrean Demondawn was dreaded and feared by the world. In the past, when he was at the Holy Lord realm, he had already established the elementary form of the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art. At that time, not even World King influences had dared to move against him.

"Xiao Moxian is going to use the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art. I wonder how Lin Ming will block it."

“It’s a bit muddled. Although Lin Ming had the upper hand a moment ago, it’s hard to say just who is in a better state right now. If I had to choose, I would say that Xiao Moxian’s background is a bit better!”

Xiao Moxian had indeed been injured just now, but the body of a God Beast possessed unbelievable endurance. The wounds that she had would not affect her combat strength at all.

And although Lin Ming had occupied the upper hand in that last strike, he had burnt his blood essence.

The Gate of Life could restore a martial artist’s strength and blood vitality, but, that was a process that required time. He wouldn’t be able to continually burn his blood essence. In other words, it was impossible for Lin Ming to maintain the previous state from before.

Hu – Hu – Hu –

The black vortex began to spin faster and faster. Within the strong gales, Xiao Moxian’s black hair drifted upwards, making her look like a blooming black rose!

“Lin Ming, my Dark Phoenix body has yet to complete its transformation. But once it does, defeating you will be easy!”

In the legends, a phoenix had to experience nine renewals of the divine phoenix, in other words nine nirvanas. Each nirvana was a rebirth through a bath of flames!

After being reborn from a sea of flames, a phoenix would become even more powerful. However, the number of phoenixes that truly managed to complete nine revolutions of nirvana was extremely small! A phoenix with six or seven transformations already possessed heaven-defying strength!

As for Xiao Moxian, she had yet to complete her first transformation.

If she completed her first transformation, she would also experience heavenly tribulation. Her flesh and blood would burn in a sea of fire, causing her strength to dramatically rise, and she would even obtain the ability to combust her blood essence.

The Xiao Moxian at that time would be ridiculously terrifying.

“My goal is to surpass the boundary of an Empyrean. I will not let you hinder my road to Divinity!”

Xiao Moxian’s words were bewildering. As the audience heard her words, they were all left panic-stricken.

Surpass the boundary of an Empyrean!?

Normally, for an extreme talent, making a resolution to become a Great World King was already an extremely lofty and ambitious goal. If they were determined to become an Empyrean instead, then they would be turned into a joke by others. Even White King didn’t have the courage to say such words.

But now, Xiao Moxian actually said she wanted to surpass an Empyrean! How could this not shock everyone present? Many people also couldn’t help but think: there was also another realm above an Empyrean?

Since ancient times, the Empyrean boundary had been incomparably mysterious. Could the realm above an Empyrean be that legendary peak of martial arts?

“This Xiao Moxian is too crazy! I have no idea just what exists above an Empyrean! I fear that since ancient times, no one has ever managed to reach such heights!”

“Don’t rush to conclusions. The history of the Divine Realm is long beyond all of our imaginations. How can we know if there has ever existed someone that has surpassed the realm of an Empyrean? I heard that in ancient times, 3.6 billion years ago, there was once a peerless powerhouse who was suspected to have surpassed the boundary of an Empyrean.

And that Xiao Moxian is definitely the top genius to appear in the last 100 million years. There might be a chance she could surpass the boundary of an Empyrean."

"That's right, if Xiao Moxian says she will surpass the boundary of an Empyrean in this situation, then there really might exist a realm above an Empyrean!"

To those in the audience, an Empyrean was a distant and illusory concept. They could not begin to fathom what existed beyond that.

At this time, behind Xiao Moxian, the power of the swirling black vortex had reached the peak.

"Lin Ming, let me give you a word of warning. The Heaven Absorbing Demon Art is a cruel and overbearing cultivation method that absorbs all true essence. Although your Fire Laws are powerful, they cannot restrain the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art. And beyond that, I cannot fully control the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art. Once I use it, I may cause permanent damage to your inner world. There is still time if you wish to admit defeat now."

As Xiao Moxian spoke, she slowly stepped back into the swirling black vortex, merging into one with it.

"Words are useless. Come, make your move."

Lin Ming's entire body seethed with fighting spirit. Ever since he arrived at the Divine Realm, this was his most hearty battle, with everything placed out in the open.

"Then don't blame me!

"Heaven – Swallowing – Demon – Art!"

In that moment, all of the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy for a hundred miles swept up towards Xiao Moxian. A terrifying power covered Lin Ming, recklessly plundering his body's true essence!

"This absorption force!"

Lin Ming gathered all of his true essence, stabilizing his inner world with the Heretical God Tree. Even so, he felt that the very foundations of his inner world were coming loose!

“This Heaven Absorbing Demon Art is truly overbearing!”

Lin Ming was well aware that once he couldn’t manage to continue stabilizing his inner world, it would collapse, causing permanent damage to himself!

“Even the Heretical God Tree cannot suppress it?”

Lin Ming was shocked. The Heretical God Tree had a nearly imperceptible effect in stabilizing his inner world!

The cultivation methods of the universe were varied and wondrous. There were cultivation methods that mutually restrained each other, but there was no single cultivation method that was invincible.

Lin Ming was able to use the Heretical God Tree to suppress Xiao Moxian’s phoenix true form and perfect fifth level Fire Laws, because the Heretical God Tree itself was the lord of fire; it could restrain all flames.

But now, in front of the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art, the Heretical God Tree was useless.

This was because the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art did not relate to the Fire Laws or Thunder Laws, but to the all-swallowing Darkness Laws.

“If you still want to admit defeat, it’s not too late!”

Although Lin Ming’s words had provoked Xiao Moxian before, she still admired his talent and even felt a twinge of empathy for him. For her to remind him again at this step was also showing just how tolerant she was.

“Humph, you thick-headed idiot, then don’t blame me for this!”

Xiao Moxian's figure flashed as she formed hundreds of black seals. These seals flew into that black vortex, fusing into it. Then, that black vortex began to press down upon Lin Ming.

At that moment, Lin Ming gripped his Phoenix Blood Spear, true essence constantly leaking out from his inner world. If this continued, then in just 10 more breaths of time all of his strength would be drained. After that, he would directly lose his life's true essence and blood vitality.

That was permanent loss – he would not be able to recover it!

"I can only risk everything I have for one final strike. If I can't defeat her with that then it will be my loss."

At this time, Lin Ming could only burn his blood essence and then use Heavenly Dao Judgment to send out his strongest strike. He would bombard that black vortex with everything he had and defeat the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art!

Just as he was about to do this, a mysterious energy poured out from his soul, into his inner world, fusing with the true essence there.

"This is..." Lin Ming was startled. This was spirit essence from the soul forging system!

Before he could think about it, the body transformation energy that flowed in his blood and percolated in his flesh also merged into his inner world!

This was the body transformation system's astral essence.

In that instant, spirit essence, astral essence, and true essence fused together in Lin Ming's inner world.

Before now, although Lin Ming had been able to fuse those three energies for a moment, it had never been like today where the other two types of energies were injected into his inner world! This was because the inner world was the domain of true essence; there was no exchange at all.

Bang!

Three types of energies joined together. In that instant, Lin Ming’s inner world was stabilized!

Chapter 1306 – Might of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens

Chapter 1306 – Might of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens

…

…

…

The three types of energies were like three massive seals, forcefully stabilizing Lin Ming's inner world. No matter what sort of fierce or violent waves the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art stirred up, his inner world remained unshaken.

For this situation to occur was also because of the difference in the heights of the Laws.

The Heaven Absorbing Demon Art, no matter how high level it was, was still a cultivation method of the essence gathering system. What it absorbed was true essence.

But within Lin Ming's inner world, true essence, spirit essence, and astral essence had fused together, turning into the Laws of the 33 Layered Heavens' power of divinity, and surpassing the boundary of true essence. Because of this, the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art was unable to absorb it.

"Mm!?"

Within the black vortex, Xiao Moxian was startled. Facing Lin Ming, another strange situation had occurred!

"How could you be immune to my Heaven Absorbing Demon Art!?"

Xiao Moxian couldn't understand what was happening. Even if a Divine Lord realm powerhouse were standing in front of her, even they couldn't say that they wouldn't be affected by her Heaven Absorbing Demon Art.

After seeing her own Heaven Absorbing Demon Art fail so suddenly, Xiao Moxian wanted to change techniques, but Lin Ming was already rushing towards her!

"Three Essences As One!"

Spirit essence, true essence, and astral essence fused together. Lin Ming thrust out his spear, pouring all of his power into it. Besides Heavenly Dao Judgment, Three Essences As One was also one of his strongest techniques.

On the Divine Seal Altar's 33rd step, Lin Ming had once displayed this ability to resist the tribulation of dao tablets 80,000 feet up, and relied on this to overcome it. As for Dragon Fang, who had also been climbing up the Divine Seal Altar, he had been defeated by the tribulation of dao tablets.

And now, Lin Ming wasn't just using Three Essences As One, but also fusing in the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation!

This was nearly equal to using the power of divinity as the foundation to stimulate Heavenly Dao Judgment!

In that instant, behind Lin Ming, the towering Heretical God Tree shimmered into existence.

Within Lin Ming's body, deeply buried in his flesh and blood, inner world, and soul, the Law runes of the 33 Layered Heavens began to emit a brilliant light!

All around Lin Ming, the phantoms of the 33 Heavenly Dao stone tablets appeared!

Deep within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, as Empyrean Vast Universe saw these phantoms, he was immensely surprised.

These 33 stone tablets were the great tribulation that existed 80,000 feet up the Divine Seal Altar's 33rd step! Lin Ming's technique was actually able to show a faint charm of the dao tablet tribulation!

This was a phenomenon that appeared in Lin Ming's technique after he comprehended the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens.

The Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens was not some useless comprehension. It would enhance Lin Ming's Laws and combat ability, and as time passed, this enhancement would become increasingly potent.

This was also the true capital that Lin Ming possessed to resist these extreme talents of the Divine Realm.

As Xiao Moxian saw the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art fail and Lin Ming hurtle towards her, she immediately reversed her true essence. Behind her, the black vortex began to spin in reverse.

"Counterforce – Heaven Absorbing Demon Art!"

The Heaven Absorbing Demon Art was able to swallow energy; it could naturally emit energy too.

Counterforce Heaven Absorbing Demon Art – that was to release the energy held within Xiao Moxian's body and use it to exterminate the enemy!

The massive black vortex began to compress, shrinking down.

That swirling black vortex fell into Xiao Moxian's hand, and then was shot out by her!

It formed a dao diagram, colliding with Lin Ming's Three Essences As One!

In that moment, a terrifyingly bright light shot out into the heavens, covering the world!

Bang!

Lin Ming’s arms shook and his palms cracked apart. As the Phoenix Blood Spear struck the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art dao diagram, it bent into a crescent moon. The phantoms of the 33 dao tablets along with the power of thunder and fire crashed down.

Ka ka ka!

Cracks began to appear all over the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art! Then, it completely collapsed!

“What!?”

Xiao Moxian’s beautiful expression changed colors. She cried out in alarm. Her Counterforce Heaven Absorbing Demon Art had actually been broken!

In this crucial moment, Xiao Moxian closed up her wings once more, forcefully withstanding Lin Ming’s attack!

Peng!

Xiao Moxian was sent flying back once more. This time, her wings were nearly pierced through by the spear light. Her body crashed into the ground as countless stones were sent flying away.

The terrifying energy gradually subsided.

Lin Ming spat out a mouthful of blood. His right arm had been fractured and his chest was also covered with blood!

These were injuries created by the impact and shaking force from resisting the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art.

Xiao Moxian’s great strength has completely surpassed Lin Ming’s imagination. He originally thought that even though he might not take first place, he should still be able to advance into the top three rankings. But, if he had known that Xiao Moxian was so strong beforehand then he wouldn’t have thought such.

As the dust settled and wild energy dissipated, Lin Ming fell onto the ground, supporting himself with the Phoenix Blood Spear. His organs were broken in many places and he was heavily wounded.

As the audience saw the result of this battle, they didn't know what words to say to express their feelings.

This was an unbelievable battle in which both parties were ridiculously strong.

"Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao Moxian has grown far too fast. I haven't seen her in just a year and this is where she is at. Her talent is truly frightening."

In the contestant waiting area, White King sighed with emotion. He and Xiao Moxian could be considered friends. Just a year ago, Xiao Moxian was only at the early Divine Sea realm. At that time, he didn't think that Xiao Moxian was much stronger than he was.

Now after a year passed, White King had made some progress, but Xiao Moxian had leapt into the skies, reaching unimaginable levels.

If she had several more years to grow, just what would happen then?

And what was even more frightening was Lin Ming. In this battle he had resorted to several trump cards and had forcefully suppressed Xiao Moxian. This was a truly hard fought victory! With his mortal body and middle Divine Sea realm cultivation, he had defeated Xiao Moxian with her God Beast bloodline. That was a truly incredible feat!

"For him to climb up the Divine Seal Altar's 33 steps is truly extraordinary. His techniques have the Concept of the Divine Seal Altar's 33 steps integrated into them. It's hard to imagine just what boundary his Laws have reached."

As White King was thinking, Xiao Moxian rose up from the deep pit she had crashed into once more.

But now, her black wings were covered with blood and the wing bones had been pierced through by a spear light. Her beautiful face was also wan, making one feel as if she were feeble and sick.

“She still hasn’t fallen…”

Lin Ming’s eyelids jumped up. His current state was extremely poor. He had fused together true essence, astral essence, and spirit essence, utilizing Three Essences As One and also using the power of heavenly tribulation. Just then he had surpassed the limits of his body. That strike was his extreme peak, and his soul, body, and inner world found themselves hard-pressed to withstand the burden. All of his blood vitality was in chaos; it would be impossible for him to fight like that again.

But even so, he hadn’t managed to thoroughly defeat Xiao Moxian. One could see just how formidable the body of a God Beast was from this!

“I originally thought that Xiao Moxian’s bodily defensive abilities were about the same as mine, but now it seems that those wings of hers far surpass my defensive capabilities.”

As Lin Ming was thinking this, Xiao Moxian suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood. The wings on her back began to slowly fold in and contract, and the runes on her body also began to fade away.

After several breaths of time, Xiao Moxian completely resumed her human form. She was nearly unable to stand steadily. It was impossible for her to continue maintaining her true phoenix form.

Lin Ming couldn’t burn his blood essence forever, and Xiao Moxian also couldn’t display her phoenix true form in perpetuity. At least, this was her limit before she experienced her first nirvana rebirth and heavenly tribulation.

“You…”

Xiao Moxian ground her teeth together. Her condition was worse than Lin Ming's and she wasn't able to use her phoenix true form right now. She was nearly like a delicate woman, extremely weak. However, her hand still held the Dragon Tendon Whip; she clearly wasn't willing to concede.

"That's enough, Little Sister, you've lost."

At this time, a light voice echoed out. Fairy Frost Dream was like a goddess falling from the highest heavens as she floated down to the stage. As she arrived, all of the raging waves of heat and flame, and even the Fire Laws completely retreated, as if they were blown away by a winter breeze.

Fairy Frost Dream lightly stepped forwards as if she were walking on lotuses until she stopped beside Xiao Moxian, gently helping her up. Then, she looked at Lin Ming, her eyes pausing on him for several breaths of time. She said in a low voice, "You're very special."

Her simple words contained an intriguing meaning.

This battle –

Xiao Moxian, defeated! Lin Ming, victorious!

The audience still hadn't regained their composure. They were all shocked, as if they were watching a dream.

"Lin Ming actually won… how much longer will he continue winning for?"

"I really have no idea. But, in this battle, he's used everything he has."

"At a similar boundary he defeated Xiao Moxian with her God Beast body. Even a young Empyrean isn't enough to describe him.

A young Empyrean was the most glorious title to describe young geniuses in the Divine Realm. And in this First Martial Meeting, there were actually six people that were worthy of such a name.

But if words were used to describe Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, young Empyrean was clearly not enough.

Chapter 1307 – White Hot

Chapter 1307 – White Hot

…

…

…

“This boy Lin Ming…”

Deep within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, Empyrean Vast Universe gazed at Lin Ming for a long time. Lin Ming had created a miracle by climbing up the 33 steps of the Divine Seal Altar, and through this he knew that Lin Ming must have experienced some sort of special lucky chance that allowed him to come into contact with the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens ahead of time.

Moreover, although the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens was related to Empyrean Divine Seal and its might was unimaginable, it was still an ancient Concept, one that belonged to a different era. Beyond that, the inheritances of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens had already been cut off. It was unknown whether or not Lin Ming would be able to display its power in the future.

On just this point alone, it was impossible to place Lin Ming on par with Xiao Moxian, Frost Dream, and others of their level.

But just now in his moves, Lin Ming had actually reformed the phantoms of the dao tablets from the Divine Seal Altar’s 33rd step, ultimately overcoming all obstacles to defeat Xiao Moxian. How could Empyrean Vast Universe not be startled by this.

At the same boundary, he was able to suppress someone with the body of a God Beast; that was far too shocking!

"I really have no idea just what achievements Lin Ming will have in the future!" Empyrean Vast Universe muttered to himself.

And at this time, from beside him, Empyrean Divine Dream dimly said, "3.6 billion years, a single samsara. 3.6 billion years ago, a peerless powerhouse appeared within the Divine Realm who managed to surpass the boundaries of an Empyrean. And perhaps now, that cycle will continue once more..."

"What?" Empyrean Vast Universe turned his head and looked at Empyrean Divine Dream with incredulity sketched on his face. "Are you saying that Lin Ming has the possibility of surpassing the realm of an Empyrean!?"

To Empyrean Vast Universe, an Empyrean was an existence near the peak of martial arts. Although he also knew that the legends said there existed a boundary above an Empyrean, legends were only legends. When Xiao Moxian declared she would surpass an Empyrean in the future, Vast Universe hadn't taken her seriously.

To surpass an Empyrean... wasn't that easier said than done!?

And now, Empyrean Divine Dream actually spoke these words, causing him to pause. He knew that with Divine Dream's character, she would never speak nonsense or needless words. Moreover, she was an incomparably mysterious character with a foresight far higher than all others'. Her cultivation had also reached a realm that he was unable to comprehend.

In fact, even if Empyrean Vast Universe learnt that Empyrean Divine Dream had seen the road that lay beyond an Empyrean, he would not be amazed, just a bit shocked.

Empyrean Divine Dream said, "For someone to surpass an Empyrean, that is not only a question of destiny or talent. There also needs to be an era created just for them. Now, this fated era approaches, and there indeed may be extreme characters that are born who possess the possibility of doing so, but whether or not that person who surpasses an Empyrean will be Lin Ming is still unknown. It can only be said that he has a minor chance to do so.

"There is Xiao Moxian and Frost Dream...

"Xiao Moxian also has a small chance. As for Frost Dream, she has her own road, a road that is lonely and separate from all else. Besides me and her, no one can speculate or interfere with her future."

"Mm?" Empyrean Vast Universe froze for a moment. Was there something special about Frost Dream's background or life experiences?

He wanted to ask, but he could tell that Divine Dream wasn't about to speak any further on this topic. He could only suppress the questions in his heart.

At this time, in the massive tournament arena, the hundreds of millions of spectators were all cheering and busily discussing as before. Waves upon waves of excited shouts echoed through the air, not calming down for an extremely long time!

Even though many people had lost a great deal of violet sun crystals because of Lin Ming, most of them were still filled with praise towards him. In truth, for the heroic young elites that were able to attend these finals, a few hundred million in wealth was a number they could easily afford.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian's battle was far too shocking. What happened had far exceeded their understandings and imaginations!

Moreover, to those martial artists that were able to watch the battle, this was a lucky chance!

Let alone normal juniors or young elites of sects, even Holy Lord powerhouses or half-step World King masters were able to obtain some inspirations!

This was not an exaggeration. Holy Lord powerhouses and ordinary World Kings possessed a cultivation and strength that far exceeded Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian. But in terms of the heights of Laws, they only studied common Laws that were subordinate the rule of the Heavenly Dao.

As for Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, Lin Ming had a self-created elementary transcendent divine might and had also comprehended the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens. He was able to manifest the Heretical God Tree and release dual thunder and fire tribulations. Lin Ming's moves possessed the charm of the Heavenly Dao! It wasn't too excessive to call Lin Ming a weaker and younger version of an Empyrean.

As for Xiao Moxian, there was even less to say. Once a God Beast grew up, that would be the same level existence as an Empyrean. Xiao Moxian's phoenix true flames also possessed the charm of an Empyrean.

The two both cultivated the Fire Laws, but the Fire Laws they used were able to reach heights that ordinary Space Laws and Time Laws couldn't match.

For the heroic young elites spectating their battle, this level of Laws was nearly impossible for them to understand. One needed to be a Divine Lord, Holy Lord, or half-step World King to see the power within their moves and obtain comprehensions from them.

In a battle between two middle Divine Sea martial artists, even a Holy Lord had to study their moves. Just how amazing was that!

For Lin Ming to win this battle was truly mind-boggling. He had stepped into the highest ranks of all junior geniuses. He had surpassed Dragon Fang and was able to compete with the likes of Frost Dream.

The match had already ended, but Xiao Moxian still stood on the arena stage, grasping the Dragon Tendon Whip. She didn't seem to be leaving just yet.

"Lin Ming, I admit that I lost this fight, but I won't give up here nor am I convinced. Half a year from now, I wish to fight with you again!"

Xiao Moxian bit down with her little jade-like tiger canines, clenching her fists tightly. She was someone who was proud at heart. This was the first time she had ever lost to someone at her own boundary!

Of course she couldn’t accept this!

“Half a year…”

Lin Ming’s eyebrows flew up. Half a year, that was enough time for Xiao Moxian’s strength to grow to an even greater degree. And, most importantly, it was said that Xiao Moxian’s natural temperament was that of a playful girl who loved to mess around all the time. She possessed a childlike innocence, completely disparate from someone like Hang Chi who trained diligently. If she was frustrated because of this loss and decided to try her best to catch up, then half a year from now, it would be difficult to estimate just how strong she would grow.

And, if her phoenix divine body were to experience its first nirvana, then that would be even more unimaginable.

Even Lin Ming could feel the pressure!

Xiao Moxian’s declaration was even far more compelling than Dragon Fang’s.

“I will wait for you.”

Lin Ming slowly and clearly said. His current talent was indeed lacking. The reason he defeated Xiao Moxian now was due to his superiority in age; this was not the victory Lin Ming wished for. If he couldn’t suppress Xiao Moxian at the same age, then how could he possibly reach the peak of all martial arts?

Only if their ages were closer together and they were also at the same boundary would Lin Ming truly have won after defeating Xiao Moxian.

This fantastical match had come to a conclusion. Vast Universe Heavenly Palace had also earned a great profit – most people had bet on Xiao Moxian to win.

At this time, Vast Cosmos stepped onto the arena stage, loudly announcing, “To all those here, after the referees have discussed this matter, in order to save time and increase the excitement of the tournament, the 10 individuals in the finals will be further split into two groups. The first group will have six people and the second group will have four people. Those from the first and second groups will no longer battle each other.”

“The first six placings in the tournament will be decided through continued round robin matches between the six people in the first group. Seventh through tenth place will be decided by the four people in the second group. At the end, the highest ranked individual of the second group may challenge the lowest ranked individual of the first group. The winner will either stay or move to the first group and will take sixth place!”

As Vast Cosmos spoke, the audience paused for a moment. Dividing into groups?

“The first group of six people are the default choices for the final top six rankings of the tournament. I wonder just who they are?”

“There’s no need to ask. It’s clear that the finalists have already diverged into two groups themselves. The strong are ridiculously strong and the weak have too great a gap separating them. Although the first place of the second group has the qualifications to challenge the last place of the first group, the chances are that they will lose. It’s simply a formality, there’s no need to think about it!”

“Well… fighting like this is better. We can get straight to the interesting matches and won’t have to face situations where the outcome is already evident at the start. But as it stands, this means the tournament has entered the white hot heated stage. Every battle will be a strong collision!”

Vast Cosmos’s decision gained the approval and satisfaction of many in the audience. Like this, the tournament would be much more compact and wouldn’t be needlessly dragged out.

“Now I will announce the names of the six individuals in the first group. The six people in the first group are – Frost Dream! Hang Chi! Xiao Moxian! Lin Ming! Jun Bluemoon! Dragon Fang!”

“Then, for the names of the four individuals in the second group. The four people in the second group are – Lord Monster, White King, Shiku, and Hua Xuan.”

These two lists were well within everyone’s expectations. Even though the Monster Prince was incomparably arrogant, he still couldn’t oppose these choices. He could only clench his fists and grind his teeth together. To him, this First Martial Meeting was the greatest of all shames!

He couldn’t even enter the first group; he had to fight in the second.

Even if he obtained total victory in the second group he would still be disgraced! After he returned to the monster race, all of his brothers would laugh at him and mock him. Although he had loudly bragged that he would become the Monster Emperor in the future, the truth was that he faced stiff competition from countless strong competitors. His brothers and sisters were all powerful individuals who stood against him. Whether or not he would actually succeed in becoming the Monster Emperor was unknown.

“Xiao Moxian, Lin Ming, you best remember me!”

The Monster Prince shifted all of his hatred onto Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian. It was these two that had miserably beaten him up, shaming him. In particular, Xiao Moxian. She was the one who had absorbed his life’s true essence, leaving him without any face left and even greatly damaging his cultivation.

………

After the groups were announced, there was a six hour break time for contestants to restore their strength.

This was also for Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming to recover. The two of them had consumed the greatest amount of energy.

Six hours later, Vast Cosmos announced the next matches.

Everyone in the audience was bubbling with excitement to hear this!

Of those in the first group, there was not a weak person amongst them. No matter who fought who, it would truly be a battle between two similar opponents, filled with wondrous expectations!

"Honored audience! Now, the matches for the new groupings will soon begin. The first round of matches will be – Frost Dream against Dragon Fang! Lin Ming against Jun Bluemoon! Hang Chi against Xiao Moxian!

"Vast Universe Heavenly Palace has opened a special gambling bet for the match between Hang Chi and Xiao Moxian. Hang Chi's victory has a compensation rate of 1.6, and Xiao Moxian's victory has a compensation rate of 2.1."

In every round of matches, Vast Universe Heavenly Palace would open up a separate gambling bet aimed at the most tense and suspenseful match which would also receive the most attention.

Hang Chi was an extremely low profile and mysterious character. But in his fight with Xiao Moxian, he was sure to reveal his full strength. Everyone would finally be able to see his true abilities. As for Lin Ming against Jun Bluemoon, that would also be a fantastic showdown. Although Lin Ming's chances were slightly higher, Jun Bluemoon had remained incomparably mysterious this entire time. There was a possibility that there would be an expected winner.

"My match is Jun Bluemoon."

Lin Ming looked at Jun Bluemoon sitting not too far away in the contestant seating area. He wore all white clothes and held the rust-stained sword in his hands, his hair as white as snow.

Towards an unknown and mysterious opponent, Lin Ming would never underestimate them.

And at this time, Frost Dream and Dragon Fang stepped into the arena. Without a doubt, Frost Dream was powerful. But Dragon Fang wasn't weak either. Many people were looking forwards to this match, waiting to see just what abilities Frost Dream would display.

Chapter 1307B – Divine Dream Space

Chapter 1307B – Divine Dream Space

…

…

…

On the arena stage, Frost Dream wore a simple and elegant dress that fluttered about her. She floated half a foot off the ground, her toes dangling downwards as her entire body was covered in a thick fog, making it impossible to discern her appearance.

500 feet in front of her was the black-clothed Dragon Fang. His hands were still wrapped in white bandages and his eyes were solemn. He had already had a premonition about how strong Frost Dream was. The degree of intensity that this Divine Realm First Martial Meeting had followed so far had gone beyond his master's expectations.

"Fairy Frost Dream, I can finally see just what strengths you possess."

Lin Ming looked at Frost Dream, who was on the arena stage. Before now, Frost Dream was easily guaranteed to enter the finals. Even so, she had yet to encounter anyone that could oppose her.

This was not because the referees of the First Martial Meeting favored Frost Dream, but because Frost Dream was too strong. Any seeded player who had bumped into her so far had suffered a loss without being able to display any moves at all. None of them had been able to force out a single card from her hand. If they tried, not only would they fail but they would also wear down their mentality and waste their strength.

In this sort of situation, no one was willing to fight Frost Dream. Frost Dream's opponents so far had basically been participants who were brought in to increase the numbers, thus Lin Ming hadn't been able to discover what her techniques or Laws were like.

"Match, start!"

As Vast Cosmos spoke, a cold wind surged atop the arena stage. Then, a snow white lotus appeared beneath Frost Dream's feet. This ice lotus shimmered, crystal clear, just as if it were made of glass.

As Lin Ming saw this ice lotus, he was stunned for a moment. He could clearly feel that this ice lotus contained the aura of mysterious Laws.

These Laws were similar to the divine dream marks that Lin Ming had comprehended in the Divine Dream World. In other words, they were the most mystical Laws of the soul forging system. And, they were far more profound and intricate than anything Lin Ming learned in the divine dream space, making one feel unable to look up to it.

"This aura… could it be engraved by Empyrean Divine Dream?"

Lin Ming couldn't help but think this. As the Saintess of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace and also one of the most splendid direct disciples to ever appear there, it wouldn't be strange if Empyrean Divine Dream were to somehow assist Fairy Frost Dream.

This ice lotus seemed ordinary, but it was in truth anything but that. This lotus was Frost Dream's weapon.

Empyrean Divine Dream was an existence who could easily craft Empyrean spirit treasures. If she forged a weapon for her own disciple, its might could be imagined.

"A lotus-shaped weapon?" Dragon Fang looked at the ice lotus beneath Frost Dream's feet, not daring to be negligent in the least. He had already opened the Three Lives Pupils.

"Spatial mirror images!"

Dragon Fang's figure blurred. One divided to two, two divided to four, four divided to eight, and eight divided into 16.

Facing Frost Dream, he didn't hold back at all. He formed 16 mirror images at the start.

16 mirror images struck out together. For a time, all of the power of space around Dragon Fang turned chaotic. The power of space was attracted to the sword wind, becoming part of the sword wind's killing intent.

Moreover, time also began to become mixed up. Although Dragon Fang's sword appeared to be slow, the truth was that it was extremely fast and its speed constantly shifted, causing one to be unable to follow it with their eyes. This was an extremely uncomfortable feeling. If someone were to face Dragon Fang's attack on this arena stage, it would be impossible to dodge it.

Facing these 16 mirror images, the ice lotus underneath Frost Dream floated upwards before splitting into several petals.

These flower petals were composed of seven ice crystals. There were larger and smaller ice crystals, each one of them seeming as if it were carved from crystal, cold and luminescent.

In that instant, the ice lotus turned into countless ice crystals.

"Ruling Spirit Art."

Frost Dream's cherry red lips slightly parted. From between her eyebrows, a gold lotus mark appeared; this was her battle spirit.

Frost Dream's battle spirit had reached gold perfection!

The battle spirit fused into those ice crystals. Suddenly, all of those ice crystals recklessly shot forwards, gathering together and forming sharp ice swords in the air. Each part of the swords contained its own independent Laws. In just an instant, half of Dragon Fang's 16 mirror images were crushed by the ice crystals!

"Three Lives Pupils – All Existence to Void!"

Flames ignited within Dragon Fang's eyes. The meridians and blood vessels around his pupils bulged out. Within his field of vision, the pathing of those ice crystals had become clear to him!

The remaining eight spatial mirror images fused together. Dragon Fang slashed out his sword. Although this sword strike seemed simple, as it struck those ice crystal swords, there was a crisp crackling sound as all the ice crystals shattered!

All of the blood within Dragon Fang tumbled and he drew backwards. At the same time, a twinkle of surprise flashed in Fairy Frost Dream's eyes. Dragon Fang's Three Lives Pupils were no trifling matter; they were actually able to pinpoint the weakness in her Ruling Spirit Art ice crystal swords.

Divine Dream Heavenly Palace's Ruling Spirit Art was a variation martial skill created by Empyrean Divine Dream. Although it wasn't a transcendent divine might, it was still an extremely high level skill that had tremendously demanding requirements on one's battle spirit.

Of course, the reason that her Ruling Spirit Art was seen through by Dragon Fang was not because there were too many holes in it, but because her proficiency in this skill was lacking, especially when compared to Dragon Fang's Three Lives Pupils.

In this brief exchange that was in a mere blink of the eye, Dragon Fang hadn't yet suffered a defeat.

The audience sighed in amazement. But after Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming's battle serving as an appetizer before this, they were already mentally prepared and didn't react too wildly.

"Frost Dream is only at the late Divine Sea realm, but she actually managed to form a perfect gold battle spirit. That is truly incredible."

“Yes, the disciples of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace cultivate in energy and soul and also have the divine dream space to help temper their primordial spirit. Whether it is their soul or battle spirit, both are extremely formidable. Among all juniors in the Divine Realm, Frost Dream’s battle spirit is the absolute number one. There is no one who could hope to compare with her.”

“The most amazing here is Dragon Fang. I thought he would just be directly defeated but I never imagined he could see through Frost Dream’s Ruling Spirit Art.”

It wasn’t wrong that Dragon Fang was powerful, but after being defeated by Lin Ming, his aura of invincibility had been shattered. Many people believed he would be quickly defeated by Frost Dream.

“Ruling Spirit Art…”

Under the arena stage, Lin Ming recalled Frost Dream’s attack just now. By pouring one’s battle spirit into weapons, these weapons could be controlled to kill someone from afar. This type of cultivation method was not just variations of the Ruling Spirit Art. Rather, they could be classified into a separate system, which were battle spirit arcane skills.

These sorts of arcane skills seemed simple but the truth was that they were varied and extremely tricky to learn. A normal martial artist was limited to controlling two or three weapons, but Frost Dream was actually able to manipulate so many ice crystals, even superimposing them together for a much greater effect.

This was also reasonable. This variation of the Ruling Spirit Art martial skill was established by Empyrean Divine Dream; it was far from what other battle spirit arcane skills could hope to compete with. Its requirements towards one’s battle spirit were much higher, but so was its strength.

“My battle spirit can only play a supporting role right now. It has miraculous effects for my soul and will, but in terms of actual combat, all it does is increase my striking power. If I can learn this Ruling Spirit Art then it will increase my versatility in combat.”

As Lin Ming was thinking this, on the arena stage, Dragon Fang divided into 16 mirror images once more.

He continued to maintain the state of All Existence to Void.

Dragon Fang was crystal clear that the longer this fight dragged on, the further he would fall behind.

“Void Extermination!”

16 Dragon Fangs struck out together and the 16 sword lights combined as one. This was one of Dragon Fang’s strongest attacks. When he fought with Lin Ming, he relied on this move to force out Lin Ming’s Heavenly Dao Judgment.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The void trembled and the power of space was wildly stirred up. Even the power of time began to twist. This sword strike contained the large success fifth level Laws of Space and Time; its might could be imaged.

And at this moment, Dragon Fang suddenly felt the scenery around Frost Dream rapidly change. An unspeakably desolate feeling spread out from her, making him feel as if he had arrived within a separate space-time.

This is…

From the endless void, Frost Dream stood at the center of space and time. Her two pupils shimmered and her icy blue hair danced wildly in the air. From all around her, fantastical and dreamy starlight fell onto her, bringing out her ethereal and holy aura.

“Divine. Dream. Space.”

As Frost Dream spoke these three words, time seemed to come to a standstill.

Then, from within the space around her, numerous vicious beasts began to emerge from thin air. Each vicious beast was incomparably brutal and fierce. Their aura was breathtaking and their appearances were savage. They wildly howled out, their terrifying roars gathering together to echo through the clouds.

Upon seeing these vicious beasts, Lin Ming was greatly shocked, “These are… nightmare beasts!”

These vicious beasts were the same nightmare beasts that Lin Ming had encountered in the Divine Dream World. In fact, they were far more formidable. Their standard reached that of the red-furred monster which Lin Ming had killed in the Divine Dream World!

The red-furred monster was already exorbitantly difficult to deal with, but now, dozens of these beasts had appeared beside Frost Dream!

Dozens of nightmare beasts hurtled themselves towards Dragon Fang.

The audience was panic-stricken.

Just what kind of cultivation method was this?

“Is this a summoning technique? An illusion technique?”

“Just what kind of domain is the divine dream space? There is a domain that can summon vicious beasts?”

The audience could not understand what was happening at all. But underneath the arena stage, Lin Ming could, because he had many understandings towards the Divine Dream Law.

“Divine Dream Domain… so this is what it is. This is a space that belongs to Frost Dream. If this space is a ‘dream’, then Frost Dream is the ‘dreamer’. Within this space, everything falls under her control. If she wants light, then there will be light. If she wants darkness, there will be darkness. If she wants to summon soul beasts, there will be soul beasts. Within her dream, she is god. As long as anyone enters this separate space of hers, all must bow to her will!

"This is a zone… an absolute space! Within that space, she is invincible!"

The divine dream space was an absolutely terrifying domain. Compared to this domain, those little illusion tricks that Frost Moon, Frost Charm and the other disciples of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace displayed were insignificant.

It could be imagined that this was a core secret technique of Empyrean Divine Dream's dream-type martial arts. Non-direct disciples like Frost Charm and Frost Moon simply didn't have the chance to learn the divine dream space.

Or, perhaps they didn't have the ability to do so.

After displaying the divine dream space, Frost Dream was at her most horrifying. As Dragon Fang's sword lights hurtled into the Divine Dream Domain, all of them were blocked by the dozens of nightmare beasts.

Peng peng peng peng peng!

Those nightmare beasts were torn apart by those sword lights, blood raining down. But at the same time, Dragon Fang's sword lights also dissipated.

Then, dozens of nightmare beasts rushed at Dragon Fang.

Dragon Fang's eyes widened. He wanted to retreat, but at this time, Frost Dream reached out one finger and a cage of divine dream energy appeared behind Dragon Fang, locking him within!

Dragon Fang was shocked. He wanted to use the Three Lives Pupils to tear apart this cage, but Frost Dream's attacks were too quick. Dozens of nightmare beasts smashed into Dragon Fang, causing him to soar backwards as he spat out a mouthful of blood.

Chapter 1308 – Lin Ming VS Jun Bluemoon

Chapter 1308 – Lin Ming VS Jun Bluemoon

…

…

…

In Frost Dream and Dragon Fang's battle, Dragon Fang had been defeated and Frost Dream had emerged victorious!

"Frost Dream's abilities are terrifying!"

"Yes, she might even be stronger than that! There are likely many moves she has yet to use."

"Frost Dream should be able to easily take first place this time. I think that Hang Chi won't be her match."

Frost Dream was originally the popular choice to take the championship in this tournament. The only one who was believed to have the capability of threatening her position was Hang Chi. As for Xiao Moxian, not many people favored her; she was simply too young.

It was only during her battle with Lin Ming that the audience realized just how powerful she was. The true body of a God Beast was far too ridiculous. Whether it was in defensive abilities or compatibility with Laws, she had reached an inconceivable boundary.

People once thought that Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian weren't much worse than Frost Dream, but now, Fairy Frost Dream had revealed a strength that had left everyone breathless. Dragon Fang wasn’t weak; he hadn’t been far worse than Lin Ming. But now, he had been easily defeated by Frost Dream.

“Dragon Fang wasn’t able to display the Laws of his Three Lives Pupils at the last moment. If he was able to display their true strength, there might have been a small chance he would have been able to see through the divine dream space.”

Lin Ming silently speculated. It was still unknown whether or not Dragon Fang could see through the divine dream space. Even if he was able to, he still needed to use his Three Lives Pupils to do that, and Frost Dream clearly wasn’t going to give him that time. This had led to Dragon Fang’s ultimate defeat.

At this time, at an unknown space countless trillions of miles away from the martial field of the First Martial Meeting…

On a deserted, desolate little planet, an old man hunched over a walking stick quietly watched everything happening on the arena stage. Although his body looked old and decrepit, his eyes seemed omniscient, shimmering, occasionally flashing with marks of the Great Dao Laws.

This was another state of the Three Lives Pupils. By relying on this state, this old man could clearly see what was happening in any corner of the universe. His sight was even far clearer than that of anyone who was personally there.

“Fairy Frost Dream… I finally understand now…”

The old man slowly said. His eyes seemed to completely see through the mystical fog that surrounded Frost Dream’s face.

“I thought it was strange. Divine Dream, with your detached and aloof temperament, I wondered why you place so much energy on a little baby like Frost Dream, not even hesitating at all to spend your spirit source to increase her strength. Now, I understand…”

Three Lives Old Man heaved a deep sigh, as if he had become even older.

“The young are fearful, truly fearful. You should have already seen that final step ahead of you. You wish to draw upon this great era and take that final step forwards, and Frost Dream is the key for this last step. No wonder Dragon Fang lost so miserably…

“To use the trillion quadrillion lives of the Divine Realm as your game pieces and the 33 Layered Heavens as your chess board, your courage and boldness is more than enough. Is this Divine Realm First Martial Meeting the start of your great game? In just 10 million years you have already reached this level. Perhaps, you may even succeed. As for me, I am already far too old. In my mind, all I hoped for was to find a descendant to inherit my legacy, but as for you, you were always thinking about how to cross the great calamity and allow the world to continue flowing forwards. I am far inferior to you…”

The old man whispered to himself, closing his wrinkled eyes. 10 million years ago, Empyrean Divine Dream was nothing more than a young and naïve girl. But now, she had already reached an unbelievable boundary. She had even touched upon the threshold for that ‘final step’.

In other words, to surpass the boundary of an Empyrean.

However, even if one surpassed an Empyrean, that still didn’t mean they would succeed in resisting the great calamity.

This was because 3.6 billion years ago, Empyrean Divine Seal possessed a talent far surpassing Empyrean Divine Dream and even he had perished in that calamity.

Three Lives Old Man truly hoped that Divine Dream could lead the countless lives in this universe to overcome the great calamity. But, that was simply far too difficult.

As Frost Dream walked off the stage, all of the contestants present felt a tremendous pressure. Frost Dream gave off a halo of invincibility.

And at this time, Vast Cosmos loudly announced, “The second match, Lin Ming against Jun Bluemoon. The two of you please step on stage!”

“Fighting Jun Bluemoon…”

Lin Ming turned to glance at Jun Bluemoon. Jun Bluemoon had been sitting on his stone chair, wiping down his sword. Every wipe was done carefully and with earnest effort. As his long white hair scattered upon the blade, he gave off a very sad and melancholic feeling.

Sword like ice, hair like snow.

Lin Ming stepped onto the arena stage. As for Jun Bluemoon, he vigorously finished the last round of cleaning on his sword and then flew upwards, landing on the arena stage like a light feather.

The two of them looked at each other, fighting spirit flashing in their eyes.

“Please advise.” Lin Ming respectfully said. At the same time, he took out the Phoenix Blood Spear. A cold light shimmered on the spear point.

Xiu!

Lin Ming suddenly thrust out his spear, the first four level Concepts of the Fire Laws fusing together. Dreadful waves of fire instantly rolled up all around for several miles, creating a giant blooming blue lotus.

And at this time, atop the blue lotus, a sword light flashed like a cold and distant star. At some unknown time, Jun Bluemoon had already drifted upwards from his original position. He grasped that strange sword and slashed out.

This sword strike carried with it an incomparable momentum but at the same time there wasn’t the least bit of killing intent. Instead, it was elegant and refined like a picturesque drawing of spring, making it unpredictable and wonderful.

In this strange sword strike, Lin Ming couldn’t make out any of the Laws contained within. It only felt harmonious and balanced. Whether it was from an offensive angle or the circulation of energy, it was impeccable!

“Power of thunder!”

Seeing Jun Bluemoon’s sword thrust towards him, Lin Ming injected the power of thunder into the Blue Flame Lotus. As fire and thunder crossed together, there was a loud explosion and the entire blue lotus exploded.

Jun Bluemoon’s sword potential was completely broken apart by this rampant energy!

At the same time, Lin Ming waved his spear. This spear carried with it the might of the fifth level Concept of Thunder and Fire, sweeping away all!

Xiu! Xiu!

Two terrifying energies of thunder and fire shot towards Jun Bluemoon, intersecting in front of him. As long as these two types of energies met, they would erupt with an unbelievable explosive force. Unless someone possessed a God Beast true form like Xiao Moxian that gave them heaven-defying defensive abilities, they would be injured!

Fu – Fu –

Within the raging thunder and flames, Jun Bluemoon was already surrounded!

At this time, an incredible scene occurred.

Jun Bluemoon welcomed Lin Ming’s thunder and flames. The moment that his hands touched these two energies, the two extremely wild and brutal energies suddenly calmed down, flowing along Jun Bluemoon’s hands as if they were being pulled about by some unknown force.

Jun Bluemoon flew backwards, drawing a primal chaos diagram with his hands as he did so.

The two energies circulated in the air, forming a two-colored vortex. These two colors condensed more and more, eventually turning into a yin yang primal chaos diagram. Lin

Ming's power of thunder and fire was actually transformed into a round yin yang primal chaos diagram by Jun Bluemoon!

"This is!"

Lin Ming was shocked.

The audience was also amazed. Just what sort of cultivation method was this?

Jun Bluemoon had fully contained and controlled his opponent's energies, transforming them into a calm and harmonious primal chaos array diagram!

"What a terrifying Concept!"

Lin Ming looked at Jun Bluemoon, a glint of admiration in his eyes. Jun Bluemoon's achievements in th Law Concepts were incredible. That casual sword strike just now gave off an immaculate feeling.

And, what was most terrifying was that he could absorb his opponent's energies and control them with the Yin Yang Laws. It was simply unbelievable.

Jun Bluemoon's hands slowly came to a stop. The round thunderfire primal chaos diagram floated in the air, slowly spinning. Lin Ming could feel that he had completely lost contact with his energies.

Jun Bluemoon slowly said, "Everything in this world, whether it is energy, matter, or life, contains the dual principles of yin and yang. Negative is yin, positive is yang, and your power of thunder and fire is no exception either. As long as I can control the power of yin and yang within them then they will be controlled by me."

As Jun Bluemoon spoke, the audience was dumbstruck.

There were such freakish Laws?

Normally, when martial artists fought, their energies would collide and lead to explosions. But, Jun Bluemoon was different.

When Empyrean Vast Universe's direct disciple White King had fought Jun Bluemoon, Jun Bluemoon had struck out with 63 sword strikes. Every time their sword lights had collided, there was strangely no eruption of energy. Rather, they had transformed into yin yang diagrams. These yin yang diagrams had contained both White King and Jun Bluemoon's strength.

At the end, Jun Bluemoon had thrust out his 64th strike. When those 64 yin yang diagrams joined together, it became an attack far from what White King could block. The most terrifying aspect of Jun Bluemoon lay in his ability to borrow his opponent's energy for his own use.

This was the highest boundary of yin and yang. If this principle could be summed up, then it would be called harmony.

Yin and yang in harmony, man and heaven as one.

"Jun Bluemoon's techniques are too bizarre!"

"Fighting against him, you wouldn't even know how you lost!"

"If he can borrow your energy, how can you defeat him?"

To the young elites present, the way in which Jun Bluemoon utilized the Laws had already completely surpassed their scope of understanding.

"I see, so that's what it is. I think I understand now." Lin Ming looked at the yin yang diagram in the skies. "Those two energies already belong to you and have become your primal chaos diagram. The more primal chaos diagrams you gather, the stronger your attack will be, right?"

"Yes!" Jun Bluemoon said, slashing his sword out once more.

This simple and humble sword strike contained the Yin Yang Laws. They harmonized as one, becoming immaculate and impregnable!

Sword after sword, every strike left a primal chaos diagram.

Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear, retreating again and again. He had already opened the Heretical God Force to the limit, unleashing all seven of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and even burning the blood of the Ancient Phoenix.

“Jun Bluemoon, do you want to do this until the 64th sword strike?” As Lin Ming spoke, his aura began to climb upwards. In that instant, he was like a 100,000 foot high mountain, irreproachable.

“Your Laws are strong, but they are still suppressed in the face of absolute strength! For perfect yin yang harmony, both sides have to be close in strength to begin with. But, if my attack is far stronger than yours, how will you maintain that delicate balance?”

In that moment, behind Lin Ming, the phantom of the Heretical God Tree slowly appeared. The glory of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation wildly flowed out. The power of thunder and fire was boundless and potent, containing the majesty of the Great Dao!

“Heavenly Dao Judgment!”

The moment that Lin Ming used Heavenly Dao Judgment, everything between the heavens and earth turned into an endless sea of red and purple. Heavenly thunder roared and flames howled. In the skies, Lin Ming had almost formed a world tribulation cloud!

The power of the Heavenly Dao was utterly heartless. This terrifying strength came crashing down on Jun Bluemoon.

Jun Bluemoon’s Laws were indeed strange and uncanny. Lin Ming had chosen to suppress him with absolute strength!

Chapter 1309 – Another Victory

Chapter 1309 – Another Victory

…

…

…

“It’s that move again, Heavenly Dao Judgment!”

Some people shouted out from the audience.

“Lin Ming has already used this move three times. Even if Xiao Moxian were to face it, she would still be heavily injured!”

Heavenly Dao Judgment was Lin Ming’s self-created transcendent divine might. Although he had used it many times, there still hadn’t been anyone who had truly broken it.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The might of thunder tribulation and fire tribulation recklessly crashed down. Jun Bluemoon’s expression was earnest. Both of his hands began to draw a primal chaos diagram. For a time, all that existed in the world was black and white, with no other colors.

Beneath Jun Bluemoon’s feet, a massive yin yang diagram several miles wide appeared. Within this yin yang diagram, the rust-stained sword began to emit a soft light. Although this light was weak, it still pierced straight into the hearts of those watching, giving off an unspeakable feeling.

“Yin Yang Soul Sword, Three Realms to Void!”

Jun Bluemoon thrust out his sword. In that instant, his sword seemed to come to life. Each and every rust stain on that sword began to emit dazzling Law runes.

According to Empyrean Divine Dream's speculations, these rust stains were not ordinary at all; they were the blood of a true divine being!

What was a divine being? Perhaps only an existence that surpassed an Empyrean was worthy of this title.

With a slash of the sword, that raging purple and red sea was pulled over, turning into a vortex of Laws.

Jun Bluemoon had used his strongest strike!

Jun Bluemoon's great strength lay not just in his Yin Yang Laws, but also the sword in his hands. This was a divine sword that even Empyrean Divine Dream was paying attention to.

When Jun Bluemoon galvanized the might of this divine sword, that was when he could display his strongest combat strength.

In that moment, the several hundred millions of people present saw a massive yin yang diagram rise towards the endless sea of flame and thunder in the skies.

As the two forces crashed together, a terrifying explosive sound echoed out.

"Mm?"

Lin Ming was shocked. He discovered that his dual fire and thunder tribulations were being sucked in by that yin yang diagram.

Jun Bluemoon wanted to use his yin yang diagram to swallow his Heavenly Dao Judgment?

Lin Ming didn't doubt that with Jun Bluemoon's ability to utilize the Laws, once he swallowed that Heavenly Dao Judgment he would also be able to use that as the foundation to form another yin yang diagram. Then, once all the yin yang diagrams combined together, Jun Bluemoon's final strike would reach unimaginable levels. Lin Ming might even be instantly defeated by that. In other words, he would be defeated by his own strength!

"That is amazing, but..."

Lin Ming suddenly switched his spear potential. Within his body, astral essence, spirit essence, and true essence completely gathered in his inner world, fully fusing together.

"Three Essences as One!"

Lin Ming gathered the three energies to form the power of divinity, pouring that into the Phoenix Blood Spear. At that moment, Lin Ming's strength crazily rose yet again.

Astral essence, spirit essence and true essence were three energies that formed the power of divinity; it was of a different quality to pure true essence. The wild power of divinity rushed towards the Heavenly Dao Judgment. All around Lin Ming, the phantoms of 33 dao tablets began to appear!

These 33 dao tablets contained the charm of the Divine Seal Altar and symbolized the Concept of the 33 heavens. At this time, they hurtled forwards, falling into that primal chaos yin yang diagram!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Dao tablets cracked, shattering into pieces. And as each dao tablet exploded, the yin yang primal chaos chart also shook, with cracks appearing all over the surface.

When all the dao tablets had blown up, the yin yang primal chaos chart also fully disintegrated.

Bang – !

A terrifying detonation rang out. Countless black and white lights covered the entire arena stage. Everyone in the audience held their breath, feeling constrained by this immense aura.

It was only when the energy dissipated that everyone was able to see the arena stage. Lin Ming and Jun Bluemoon were still standing a thousand feet away from each other. They had consumed a great deal of energy and their attacks had broken down at the same time. It could only be said that their collision had been evenly matched so far.

“Lin Ming used Heavenly Dao Judgment and still wasn’t able to defeat Jun Bluemoon?”

“How can this be?”

“This Jun Bluemoon is also too terrifying!”

Heavenly Dao Judgment had left far too deep an impression on everyone present. As an elementary transcendent divine might, it naturally deserved such fame. In Lin Ming’s last two fights, he had used Heavenly Dao Judgment to defeat Dragon Fang and then frustrate Xiao Moxian. Its might was incomparable!

Many people thought that when Lin Ming used Heavenly Dao Judgment, it would be impossible for Jun Bluemoon to block it. In particular this enhanced version of Heavenly Dao Judgment; even Xiao Moxian had been defeated.

But the result went beyond everyone’s expectations. No one knew what he had done, but Jun Bluemoon’s primal chaos diagram was actually so formidable that it was able to counterbalance the Heavenly Dao Judgment.

“How could it be so strong!”

Lin Ming was bewildered. He had originally believed he would win, because he felt that even though Jun Bluemoon’s Laws were profound and exquisite, he still had a weakness, and that was that his strength and intensity of his energy were far inferior to that of himself and Xiao Moxian.

Thus, Lin Ming planned to use Heavenly Dao Judgment to break apart the harmony of the yin yang diagram and achieve victory in a single go!

If he had used Three Essences as One to display Heavenly Dao Judgment and even that had failed, then there was only a single move left – to burn his blood essence with the Gate of Life and reach his strongest state to display a final attack. However, if he did this and wounded Jun Bluemoon, his own consumption of energy would be tremendous. After this match there was still Hang Chi and Frost Dream. If Lin Ming burnt his blood essence this time then he wouldn't have the ability to contend with those two powerhouses later.

Although Lin Ming was shocked, so was Jun Bluemoon. At this time, Jun Bluemoon's face was pale and his white hair was in a chaotic mess. He looked at Lin Ming with incredulity and said, "You broke through my Yin Yang Soul Sword?"

Yin Yang Soul Sword was Jun Bluemoon's greatest trump card as well as what he was relying on the most to defeat Lin Ming.

"And what if I did? Didn't you also break through my Heavenly Dao Judgment? Even my strongest strike wasn't able to injure you." Lin Ming felt that he should be the one to be more startled here. He no longer thought his odds of winning were high.

Jun Bluemoon shook his head, "It's different. This match, I will admit defeat!"

Jun Bluemoon turned around and began to walk off stage. Lin Ming was shocked, and even the several hundred million spectators and the referees were stunned for a moment.

Admit defeat?

It was obvious that this battle was evenly matched, and yet Jun Bluemoon admitted defeat?

"Why?"

Lin Ming couldn't understand.

Jun Bluemoon turned around. His faint true essence sound transmission floated to Lin Ming's ears.

"In that attack just now, what I used was not my own strength but the strength inherent within my Yin Yang Soul Sword. This is a divine blade with infinite strength, but the amount of power I can borrow is extremely limited... even though I drew on the support of the Yin Yang Soul Sword, I actually came to a draw with you. Thus, there's no longer a need for us to fight. I am sincerely convinced of my loss. If we continue this fight, it will not be you fighting me, but you fighting my sword."

"The strength of the Yin Yang Soul Sword?" Lin Ming was amazed. No wonder... Jun Bluemoon didn't seem too strong but the combat strength he displayed was beyond imagination.

"The strength of a weapon is originally a part of a martial artist's strength. There is no need for you to divide them so thoroughly. All the previous First Martial Meetings have also approved this, otherwise there would be assigned service weapons."

Weapons and magic tools were all a part of a martial artist's strength; this was a widely believed rule in the martial arts world. Although using superiority of weapons to defeat an opponent wasn't the orthodox path, it was still an undeniable truth.

"My sword... is different." Jun Bluemoon shook his head, not saying anything else.

"Lin Ming, you and I are both martial artists that ascended from the lower realms, so let me give you some advice. Do not think of surpassing Frost Dream. She is different from us."

"Mm? You are a martial artist from the lower realms!?"

Lin Ming was shocked. Jun Bluemoon also ascended from the lower realms?

After ascending into the Divine Realm, it only took several years for one's inner true essence to assimilate with the true essence of the Divine Realm so that it would be impossible to tell the difference. If Jun Bluemoon hadn't mentioned this matter of his own initiative, then Lin Ming would never have known that he too came from the lower realms.

For a martial artist from the lower realms to reach such a degree, that could be called defying the will of the heavens!

It was clear that Jun Bluemoon's sword had played a major role in this.

"Your destiny truly goes against the heavens."

"As does yours..." Jun Bluemoon sighed as he spoke to here, his tone becoming a bit desolate and dreary.

Lin Ming felt that Jun Bluemoon had his own story, but that was something he couldn't simply ask about.

"From what you said, do you know something about Frost Dream's situation?" Lin Ming could feel something special about Frost Dream, but he wasn't sure in what way she was. Frost Dream was an extremely mysterious character to begin with, and besides some figures in Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, not even those from Vast Universe Heavenly Palace would know of her secrets, so how could Jun Bluemoon possibly have learnt them?

"My sword told me."

As Jun Bluemoon said this he didn't speak further, and stepped down from the arena stage.

Lin Ming was still left dumbfounded. His sword had told him?

From this, it could be seen that Jun Bluemoon's sword inevitably possessed a powerful artifact spirit. In other words, a sword spirit!

And this sword spirit had already lived through countless years, accumulating an incomparably rich wealth of knowledge. One could see this from how the sword was able to see past the mysteries around Frost Dream.

“This sword spirit is likely Jun Bluemoon’s master.”

Lin Ming suddenly thought. If so, then it could be explained how Jun Bluemoon was so formidable. Perhaps the sword spirit could even compare favorably with the Ancient Elysium Seal’s artifact spirit. With such a master, how could his progress not be ridiculously fast? Otherwise, how else could a martial artist from the lower realms reach this step?

“In this match, Lin Ming, victory!”

Vast Cosmos loudly announced.

Lin Ming had won yet again! At this point, there were only three people that had an unbroken winning streak – Lin Ming, Frost Dream, and Hang Chi!

“He won! How could Jun Bluemoon just admit defeat out of nowhere? Could he have been throwing the match?”

“Don’t be an idiot, how could these people be throwing matches at a time like this. Jun Bluemoon overdrew his strength in that last move, and he might have been able to only use that move one time. Lin Ming can use Heavenly Dao Judgment more than once. When he faced Xiao Moxian, he used it twice. Thus, Jun Bluemoon likely knew it was impossible to win, so he admitted defeat early in order to retain his strength so that he can fight Dragon Fang and Xiao Moxian. After all, he still has some chance of defeating Xiao Moxian.”

“I don’t think so. When Lin Ming fought Xiao Moxian he had to burn his blood essence, but he didn’t do so against Jun Bluemoon!”

Imperceptibly, without noticing it, Lin Ming had become a standard upon which others were judged. Besides Frost Dream and Hang Chi, he had already fought with everyone else.

And in that battle just now, even Holy Lord realm masters and above found it difficult to see through the intricacies of the Laws and energies exchanged. As for the energy circulation of the Yin Yang Soul Sword, even World King powerhouses wasn’t able to see through it.

Chapter 1310 – The Wheel of Samsara

Chapter 1310 – The Wheel of Samsara

…

…

…

“This Jun Bluemoon isn’t simple at all!”

Mo Eversnow commented from within Lin Ming’s inner world. “There is a terrifying slumbering soul within that sword of his. It might be an artifact spirit, and it also might be the remnant soul of an Empyrean. It likely isn’t that of an ordinary Empyrean.”

“Mm… I guessed about the same. If that remnant soul were to personally attack me then killing me would only take an instant.”

Lin Ming didn’t doubt the strength of that remnant soul. No matter how tattered it was, it was still horrifically strong.

That remnant soul had already merged together as one with the Yin Yang Soul Sword, subsuming the sword as its body. With it, that remnant soul could display a terrifying strength. If Jun Bluemoon dared to take out this divine sword in front of so many people, he naturally had something he could rely on.

Empyrean Divine Dream and Empyrean Vast Universe wouldn’t covet Jun Bluemoon’s sword. And in the future, even if Jun Bluemoon went out adventuring alone, there might not be any World King powerhouses that would secretly move against him. After all, that sword had an artifact spirit made from the remnant soul of an Empyrean level powerhouse. With that protecting him, no one could hope to kill Jun Bluemoon. And even if they did, it would be impossible for them to subdue that sword.

“This Jun Bluemoon has a great destiny about him. Since the divine sword chose him, he certainly has some extraordinary aspects to him. Moreover, his personality is impeccable. He is collected, deep, and an honest person…”

Lin Ming looked at Jun Bluemoon, who was now hugging a little bunny.

After losing to Lin Ming, Jun Bluemoon didn’t have any qualms with that at all. With this sort of martial arts nature, he would be able to walk far in the future without developing any heart demons.

Lin Ming could predict that in the future, Jun Bluemoon would certainly become an unrivalled powerhouse of his generation. Although he might not be the leading hero of the future, he would inevitably play an extremely important supporting role.

“Lin Ming, you still have two matches left. One against Hang Chi, and one against Frost Dream! You have some hopes of contending with Hang Chi, but against Frost Dream, your chances are nearly non-existent.”

Mo Eversnow speculated. When Dragon Fang fought with Frost Dream, Frost Dream had not displayed her full strength at all. According to this, the difference between Lin Ming and Frost Dream was not small. This was because Lin Ming was only a few points stronger than Dragon Fang.

Also, this point had been affirmed by the Yin Yang Soul Sword. That old spirit that had lived for countless hundreds of millions of years wouldn’t say nonsensical words.

“I know. Let alone Frost Dream, even my chances of defeating Hang Chi are a bit low! However, I’m still looking forwards to it!”

Lin Ming wasn’t blindly arrogant. He was younger than Hang Chi and his boundary was also a level lower.

Hang Chi was an ascetic monk who originated from Mount Potala. From birth, there were all sorts of arcane abilities used to temper his body. As he began to cultivate, he assiduously dedicated his being to wholehearted training, leading a lonely and diligent life. Now, he had been doing this for almost 40 years. How could his strength be belittled?

As Hang Chi was thinking this, he had already stepped onto the arena stage.

His opponent was… Xiao Moxian!

This was the match that was receiving the most attention in the second round.

To fight against Xiao Moxian, Hang Chi was no longer unarmed. Instead, he pulled out a weapon – a nine foot long staff that was plain and simple. The only decoration of the staff was its natural earthy wooden texture.

This staff gave off a very light and springy feeling, but it was also very flexible. It was unknown just which divine tree this staff was crafted from.

Xiao Moxian took out her Dragon Tendon Whip. She looked at Hang Chi, grinning as she said, “Big Brother Baldy, are you planning on letting me get a free hit?”

Hang Chi raised a palm in front of his chest and held the staff with his other hand. He began to recite some Buddhist incantations. “Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao Moxian jokes too much. My martial talent is low and I can only rely on diligently cultivating over time to stand here. Humility is all I can show here.”

“This Hang Chi is too modest.”

“That’s right, but this is the inheritance of Mount Potala. They live truly modest and pious lives. Even though they don’t speak much, every word they speak is true.”

A genius like Hang Chi had actually said that his martial talent was low. If it were anyone else, that would have really roused the hatred of other young elites to spit on them. But when these words were spoken by Hang Chi, they didn’t seem false at all. Rather, he seemed open-minded and humble.

Xiao Moxian felt that an old-fashioned stick in the mud like Hang Chi was very fun to play with. She laughed, “If your martial talent is low, how can anyone still live?”

Hang Chi said, “Although a poor monk like me has low martial talent, my heart is open to the Great Dao. In front of the Great Dao, all living beings are nothing but ants. There is really nothing worthy of showing off.”

“Haha, such serious monk words are really boring. Okay, let’s start!” As Xiao Moxian spoke she suddenly extended her two Dark Phoenix wings from her back. Law runes also began to shimmer on her face. She was displaying her phoenix true form once again.

Those two wings that had been pierced through by Lin Ming had already been completely healed. From this, it could be seen that the great regenerative ability of the phoenix true form far surpassed Lin Ming’s.

“Phoenix true feathers – 9900 swords!”

Xiao Moxian suddenly shouted out loud. From all around her, killing intent surged out. Feathers continuously shot out from her two black wings, turning into an infinite forest of swords!

Each black feather was about 10 feet long, black and shining with a cold light.

The feathers of her wings had all transformed into swords! A cold light reflected off of them, thrusting straight into the hearts of others!

“What a strong killing intent! Xiao Moxian has never used this attack before!”

“When Xiao Moxian fought with Lin Ming, their battle reached such heights and yet she held back… no, it’s not that she held back, but that she didn’t have enough time to use all her different techniques!”

"Phoenix feathers are originally superb materials for crafting weapons. Xiao Moxian transformed her own feathers into weapons instead. This attack is extremely strong; it is definitely one of her killing moves!"

Xiao Moxian's talent was at the pinnacle of geniuses and she had far too many moves she could use. Her comprehension of Laws was also extremely rich and varied. When she fought with Lin Ming, she didn't use a great number of her techniques. After just several collisions, she had been defeated.

Of course, even if she used these moves, Xiao Moxian still wouldn't have won. Lin Ming's power had come from the suppression of higher Laws.

Woosh woosh woosh!

9900 phoenix feather swords pierced towards Hang Chi. Facing this dense forest of blades, Hang Chi didn't bat an eye. His figure moved as he sprinted forwards like an agile leopard – this was his movement technique, Leopard Climbing the Wall.

Although this movement technique had an extremely simple name, it was in fact very high quality. When used by Hang Chi, it showed a breathtaking effect. All of those laser-like sword lights were completely dodged by him.

"Arhat Staff!"

The staff in Hang Chi's hands transformed into endless staff shadows. All of those phoenix feather sword lights were completely shattered by him.

Hang Chi's movements were simple and concise, but also contained a feeling like passing clouds or trickling rivers. It gave off an extremely harmonious feeling. Watching Hang Chi in action was simply an enjoyable pleasure.

But at this time, Xiao Moxian switched styles. In the skies, roiling fire clouds appeared. Endless black torrents of flame fell down, attacking Hang Chi with those 9900 phoenix feathers.

The phoenix feather swords ignited with black flames, filling the world with a ghastly killing intent.

By fusing the phoenix true fire and phoenix feathers together, the Laws of Xiao Moxian's attacks immediately shot up towards the level of the Heavenly Dao.

Facing this strike, Hang Chi could no longer rely on the Arhat Staff or Backboxing Fist to resist.

A solemn light appeared on Hang Chi's face. His loose monk robes began to rise up as he extended his arms out horizontally. All around him, golden Buddhist runes began to appear, circulating about, spilling forth with a dazzling radiance!

Faintly, from somewhere far away, the sounds of Buddhist chants seemed to echo through the air. Hang Chi had finally shown his true ability – this was one of Mount Potala's transcendent divine mights.

"Wheel of Samsara!"

Hang Chi grasped the staff in his hands and drew an arc in the skies, leaving behind a golden light in its path. This golden light finally composed a Buddhist chart. This Buddhist chart contained six round golden circles. Within these golden circles were illusory images. There were blood demons, hungry ghosts, beasts, ghost slaves, humans, and even heavenly gods.

As Lin Ming saw this Buddhist chart, he was stunned. He had seen this Buddhist chart somewhere before!

Before Lin Ming could think further about this, Hang Chi and Xiao Moxian's attacks had already collided. The 9900 swords pierced into the Buddhist chart as both exploded together!

Xiao Moxian cried out in alarm as she was sent flying backwards. Those 9900 swords as well as her phoenix true fire had been sucked up by that Wheel of Samsara and disappeared!

At the same time, Hang Chi's Wheel of Samsara also faded away after that strike. In this brief collision he had come out evenly matched with Xiao Moxian. However, Xiao Moxian's true essence was in chaos, as if she had overdrawn herself. As for Hang Chi, his breathing was calm and his aura was like a mountain, steady and unshakable.

It was clear from this that Hang Chi's foundation was much deeper than Xiao Moxian's.

This was the accumulated efforts and bitter cultivation of almost 40 years; how could it be nothing?

Underneath the arena stage, Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. His eyes stared unblinkingly at Hang Chi as a faint guess began to appear in his heart.

And at this time, Xiao Moxian launched another attack. She poured all of the Phoenix Law runes within her body into the flames. Black flames surged forwards, sweeping out to the horizon!

Flames howled. At the same time, behind Xiao Moxian, a wild amount of heaven and earth origin energy began to spin around, forming a massive black vortex.

"Heaven Absorbing Demon Art!"

While Xiao Moxian used the phoenix true flames she also displayed the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art. This was her all-out attack!

And at this time, from behind Hang Chi, another vortex also appeared.

This was an origin energy vortex completely different from Xiao Moxian's. This vortex seemed to contain infinite suffering and tribulations. Looking into this vortex made one feel as if they had experienced an endless cycle of samsara, nearly losing their ego.

This spinning black vortex finally fell into Hang Chi's eyes. His eyes seemed as if they could swallow all of existence!

"Samsara Domain, sink into the sea of suffering, surpass all living beings!"

As Hang Chi slowly spoke, a separate space formed around him, seeming as if it were flooded with the countless suffering souls.

As Lin Ming saw this domain, he let out a cold breath. Hang Chi's Samsara Domain came from the same origin as his Samsara martial intent!

As for those six golden circles in the Buddhist chart, the reason Lin Ming felt that it was familiar was because he had experienced something similar in the past, when he adventured in the Southern Wilderness and entered the Sorcerer Pagoda. Starting from the first level and rushing upwards, the trials he had to pass corresponded with the six revolutions of samsara. There were blood demons, hungry ghosts, beasts, a witch slave, humans, and a heavenly god. These levels all corresponded with Hang Chi's Buddhist chart.

"Was the Sorcerer of the Southern Wilderness an outer disciple of Mount Potala?"

This idea suddenly flashed through Lin Ming's mind. He guessed that the Sorcerer of the Southern Wilderness should have reached the Divine Lord realm, and the requirements to become an outer disciple of Mount Potala shouldn't be too high. Even if the Sorcerer of the Southern Wilderness wasn't able to enter Mount Potala, he still should have joined a sect with a deep connection to Mount Potala.

Chapter 1311 – Against Hang Chi

Chapter 1311 – Against Hang Chi

…

…

…

The six paths of samsara were an idea of the Buddhist belief. It was reasonable that Lin Ming's Samsara martial intent originated from the Buddhist belief. When Lin Ming first stepped onto the road of martial arts, the Samsara martial intent had played an extremely important role. However, afterwards, Lin Ming had used it less and less. This was because the Samsara martial intent was unable to follow his rapid rise in strength.

After all, the Sorcerer of the Southern Wilderness was only an ordinary powerhouse of the Divine Realm. The martial arts inheritances they left behind were naturally eliminated.

And now, from Hang Chi, Lin Ming could see an even deeper level of the Samsara martial intent. In fact, it might even be a small portion of this transcendent divine might, the Wheel of Samsara!

If this were true then there was a tremendous amount of space for the Samsara martial intent to improve. Domain type skills were already extremely rare, and the Samsara martial intent was also related in many ways to the soul forging system. If Lin Ming could combine the two together, his soul forging system cultivation could reach a new level.

As Lin Ming was thinking this, on the arena stage, Xiao Moxian and Hang Chi's battle had already reached a superheated phase.

To use the Samsara Domain to contend against the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art!

In the skies, two massive vortexes tore at each other, energy recklessly surging outwards. The images of a gilded golden Buddha and a dark flaming phoenix appeared, dividing the world, struggling against each other! This fight was even more intense than the battle between Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian!

Xiao Moxian's Heaven Absorbing Demon Art failed to shake Hang Chi's foundation in the end.

Not to mention that Hang Chi had the Wheel of Samsara stabilizing his inner world, his thoughts and mind were extremely steadfast and unwavering. His body also had a certain zen aura, making him seem as steady and calm as the endless earth!

His body and his spirit were firm and unyielding, tempered through endless trials, invincible!

Bang!

The vortexes exploded and a crazy amount of energy swept wildly outwards. Xiao Moxian switched her technique yet again.

"Counterforce Heaven Absorbing Demon Art!"

A massive amount of dark energy spewed forth. Hang Chi sat cross-legged in the void, his hands bent up in prayer, as motionless as the world.

This Hang Chi gave off an undefeatable feeling. His foundation was simply too solid. It was hard for an attack to pose a threat to him.

Bang!

The brilliant lights died down. Xiao Moxian paled as she drew back several hundred feet.

She wasn't injured. From start to finish, Hang Chi had never attacked her. He had only countered Xiao Moxian's attacks.

Of course, in such an intense collision of attacks, it was inevitable that there would be a backlash.

“I don’t want to fight, I don’t want to fight anymore!” Xiao Moxian released her phoenix true form and pursed her mouth, saying, “If you aren’t going to let me hit you then at least pretend to be injured!”

Hang Chi faintly smiled. He folded his hands together, saying, “Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao Moxian’s moves are simply too strong. This poor monk is older than junior-apprentice sister by 12 years and is just around half over your age. Even so, my strength only barely surpasses yours. If I don’t try my best in battle and pretend to be injured, then I fear that I won’t be able to control it well enough and I will be severely beaten to the point of spitting out blood. I will really have failed then.”

“What a liar. Haven’t you already cultivated your incorruptible diamond Vajra body? How can I possibly wound you with one strike?” Xiao Moxian curled her lips, as if all of this was too funny.

But as the audience heard this exchange, all of them were shocked. Xiao Moxian had just admitted defeat like this.

Although the fight had been intense, the truth was that Hang Chi had maintained the upper hand from the start. It could be said that even though he was going easy on Xiao Moxian, he never used any of his true attack techniques.

Moreover, listening to Xiao Moxian’s meaning, Hang Chi’s defensive capabilities were also terrifying.

That diamond Vajra body must be some sort of secret Buddhist technique.

“I’m speechless. He is too abnormal! His Laws are strong, his body is strong, his foundation is solid, and even his defense is amazing. Just who can defeat him?”

"Even the might of Hang Chi's attacks are horrible. From beginning to end he never truly attacked Xiao Moxian."

"Maybe only Frost Dream has a chance of defeating Hang Chi. It's possible that Hang Chi might not be any worse than Frost Dream!"

"It looks like the first three rankings have already been settled. First and second place should belong to Frost Dream and Hang Chi. As for Lin Ming, he's third! After that, I think that Xiao Moxian should be forth. As for fifth and sixth place, it will depend on the victor between Dragon Fang and Jun Bluemoon."

"Hang Chi is 38 years old! While he was cultivating for 38 years, do you really think he just wasted his time? Just look at Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian for instance and imagine what degree they'll reach once they are 38 years old!"

The First Martial Meeting was not absolutely fair. Age was an extremely influential factor.

"Lin Ming, this Hang Chi is too fierce."

Mo Eversnow sincerely said from within the Magic Cube space. Besides the unknown factor of Frost Dream, out of all the heroic young elites present, Hang Chi didn't have the greatest talent but he was the strongest. Even someone as fierce as Xiao Moxian had been suppressed by him!

"I understand… two years from now, Dragon Fang will likely be the same as Hang Chi. If I did not train for two years and fought Dragon Fang again, then I would lose without a doubt." In terms of talent within this First Martial Meeting, Xiao Moxian was the undisputed number one. Because Lin Ming had displayed the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens, he had been listed as second. Frost Dream was an unknown, and Hang Chi, Jun Bluemoon, and Dragon Fang all had talent listed around third to sixth place.

Mo Eversnow said, "There's no need to hurry, you still have time. You can display the breadth of your potential bit by bit."

“Mm.” Lin Ming nodded. To be first place on the Earth Proclamation was already a result to be proud of. He could only try his best for the Heaven Proclamation.

After this round of matches concluded, Vast Cosmos announced the next round.

The first match was – Lin Ming against Hang Chi!

The second match was Xiao Moxian against Frost Dream.

The third match was Jun Bluemoon against Dragon Fang.

This time, the most tense match was between Jun Bluemoon and Dragon Fang. Vast Universe Heavenly Palace had specifically opened up a separate gambling bet for this match.

As for Lin Ming against Hang Chi, or Xiao Moxian against Frost Dream, there was no separate bet set up for these two matches because there simply wasn’t anything worth gambling for. Although there was a slight chance that someone would cause an upset, the hope of that happening was too small. Even if Hang Chi’s compensation rates were extremely low, most people would likely still bet on him and Vast Universe Heavenly Palace would suffer a great loss.

“It seems I really am fighting Hang Chi.”

Lin Ming took a deep breath. Without a doubt, this would be a difficult battle.

Four hours of resting time later, the new round of matches officially began.

Lin Ming opened his eyes from meditation and stepped onto the arena stage. As he walked on, he could see a young, bald monk wearing linen robes and straw sandals already standing on stage, smiling at him. Hang Chi had already been waiting on the arena stage for the last two hours, where he had been deep in meditation.

As Hang Chi saw Lin Ming walk on stage, he began to walk forwards until he was 1000 feet away.

“Benefactor Lin, this poor monk greets you.” Hang Chi pressed his palms together and bowed.

Lin Ming greeted him back with common martial arts courtesy. His impression towards Hang Chi wasn’t bad at all. This young monk held no earthly desires and was pure in heart and mind, only wishing to wholeheartedly cultivate. This sort of person wouldn’t have a poor moral character.

As the audience saw the two people on the arena stage, all of them widened their eyes lest they miss the least bit of action.

Many people believed that Hang Chi had the capability of fighting with Frost Dream. As for Lin Ming, his strength was evident to all. Although Lin Ming was inferior to Hang Chi, he should still be able to force out some of Hang Chi’s cards. This would surely be an intense battle!

“Match, begin!”

Vast Cosmos loudly proclaimed.

With Vast Cosmos’s announcement, Hang Chi took out a long staff. As he did so, his aura changed.

At the start, Hang Chi had seemed like a gentle and naïve young monk. But now, his aura was solemn and dignified, deep and profound, his entire body containing a dreadful slumbering strength, just like a mountain.

His monk robes fluttered about him. With any simple movement, there wasn’t the slightest flaw in his stance. He was impregnable.

“Benefactor Lin, make your move!”

No matter who Hang Chi fought, he would always allow his opponent to attack first. Lin Ming wasn’t polite – he immediately thrust out his spear. On the Phoenix Blood Spear, purple flames lit up. The first four level Concepts of Fire fused together, fusing onto the spear shaft along with the fifth level Concept.

Virtual Disintegration!

Lin Ming used the fifth level Laws from the start. He was well aware that an attack on the level of the Blue Lotus Flame Dance didn't even have the qualifications to probe his moves, let alone break through his defense.

"Concept of Virtual Fire?"

Hang Chi's complexion changed. He brought his staff smashing down. With a brilliant light, the phantom of a bright Buddha appeared behind Hang Chi!

In fighting Lin Ming, Hang Chi didn't use the Arhat Staff or other simple techniques like Leopard Climbing the Wall. He immediately summoned his Laws and Buddhist strength.

However, those simple techniques weren't useless at all, because they were already deeply ingrained into Hang Chi's bones!

Every single motion and movement of Hang Chi's stemmed from the myriad 10 million senior supreme elders of Mount Potala; they were the total summary of their life experiences, all of them containing exquisite truths! In truth, the direct disciples of Mount Potala, from the very time they began to cultivate, whether it was using their fists, staffs, practicing movement techniques, or even drawing water, sweeping the floor, walking, eating, sleeping – every single thing they did had the mystery of martial skills fused within it.

These simple moves couldn't create an Empyrean, but when fighting someone at the same level, they would always give an advantage.

Hang Chi was in such a situation. He had accumulated all this training over time, and these movements had already fused into his very being, becoming habits that were a part of his life.

Peng!

The purple flames of Lin Ming's Virtual Disintegration were broken apart by Hang Chi's staff shadows!

Hang Chi did not possess the Three Lives Pupils, but his strike was still accurate, directly striking the weak point of Virtual Disintegration. This stemmed from a natural martial arts intuition.

The explosive purple flame shockwaves that rushed out were unable to pose any threat to Hang Chi. As someone that followed the Buddhist principles, Hang Chi had long severed himself from worldly sins and emotions like jealousy and hate, thus this virtual fire had nearly no influence on him.

"Benefactor Lin's age is so low and yet your attainments in the Laws have reached such heights. Moreover, this seems like a self-created technique. Your perception is truly amazing… then, this humble monk will now make his move."

As Hang Chi spoke, a strong gray energy began to gather behind him. A breathtaking aura that left one gasping for breath fell down, covering all.

This was the first time that Hang Chi attacked on his own initiative. When he fought with Xiao Moxian, he had primarily been defending himself, but now he was actively attacking!

"Wheel of Samsara!"

Hang Chi grasped his staff, drawing an arc through the air. Then, from behind him, a round and exquisite Buddhist chart appeared. This Buddhist chart was all-encompassing, as if the countless lives in the universe were contained within it.

This was Mount Potala's transcendent divine might!

Chapter 1312 – Samsara To Samsara

Chapter 1312 – Samsara To Samsara

…

…

…

"That's the Wheel of Samsara! Even Xiao Moxian lost to that move!"

The entire audience had an extremely profound impression of the Wheel of Samsara phantom that appeared behind Hang Chi. The Wheel of Samsara was too strong. Even Xiao Moxian with her phoenix true form wasn't able to break past it.

"I wonder how Lin Ming will block this!"

Rumble rumble rumble!

The golden Wheel of Samsara came pressing down. Hang Chi stood within the center of the Wheel of Samsara, his monk robes still and plain, just like a godly Buddha.

Before the Wheel of Samsara arrived, Lin Ming could already feel the terrifying pressure contained within it. Although this was clearly a gold and holy Buddhist cultivation method, the truth was that this Wheel of Samsara contained a sharp, icy energy, making it seem as if needles were digging into Lin Ming's body, making him feel an incomparable pain.

This cold energy was the power of samsara contained within the Wheel of Samsara.

Although Buddhist cultivation methods were filled with a gentle brilliance, often focusing on mercy and compassion, they also didn't lack the path of slaughter, the grip of grudges, spells of resentment, blood pond hells, asura battlefields, and all other sorts of evil methods.

Where there was light, there was shadow. Where there was good, there was evil. Good and evil were dependent on each other; they were indivisible concepts.

Without evil, without murder, without suffering, without illness, aging, and death, without asura hells, if all of society lived in perpetual bliss and blind happiness, how could there be the Buddhist path?

If so, no one would believe in Buddhism in this world. The sins of humanity were an essential part of Buddhism.

In the six paths of samsara within the precepts of Buddhism, only the paths of divinity and humanity were the pure moral ways. The path of asura was neither good nor evil, and as for the last three paths, each was worse than the last!

Facing the Wheel of Samsara, it was impossible for Lin Ming to hold back, otherwise he would suffer instant defeat here.

He didn’t doubt that Hang Chi’s techniques were far more formidable than Xiao Moxian’s.

Lin Ming released the Heretical God Force to the limit, combusting the blood of the Ancient Phoenix, as well as fusing the three energies within him!

Three Essences as One, Heavenly Dao Judgment!

The phantom of the Heretical God Tree crazily grew from behind Lin Ming. With Heavenly Dao Judgment, he resisted the Wheel of Samsara!

In that instant, dark clouds billowed in the skies. A terrifying power began to gather together, forming a sword of thunderfire heavenly tribulation that thrust straight towards the Wheel of Samsara!

Kacha!

The sword of heavenly tribulation crashed into the Wheel of Samsara. A terrifying wave of energy rushed outwards. Lin Ming's sword of heavenly tribulation broke apart again and again, but the Wheel of Samsara continued its push downwards!

Rumble rumble rumble!

The massive Wheel of Samsara was like a horrifyingly large grinding pan, grinding apart all, continuing to fall!

Hang Chi stood on the Wheel of Samsara, a brilliant divine light shining forth from his body. It was as if all rules in this world were crushed beneath his feet!

The Wheel of Samsara continued to sink. No one doubted that once this Wheel of Samsara pressed down, even a 100,000 foot mountain would be pulverized to power!

Lin Ming's expression was solemn. His entire body emitted explosive popping sounds as the power of the dragon bone was released from his body!

Terrifying waves of strength rippled through Lin Ming's body. He opened all seven gates, his mortal bodily strength instantly achieving a level of 100 million jins!

"Hahh!"

Lin Ming's muscles bulged outwards. Blue veins bulged and several blood vessels exploded. He poured all of his strength into the Phoenix Blood Spear as the broken sword of heavenly retribution appeared once more!

Ka ka ka!

A mind-shaking sound spread through the world. The sword of heavenly retribution cut down once more on the Wheel of Samsara. Then, the Wheel of Samsara suddenly trembled as a golden crack appeared in its center!

As the crack appeared, the Wheel of Samsara's radiance dimmed down and it stopped falling!

And the sword of heavenly retribution that Lin Ming formed by combining the power of thunder tribulation and fire tribulation cracked and reformed again and again. Lin Ming continued to revolve his energy to the limit. This dreadful consumption of energy had already surpassed the limits of an ordinary martial artist. If they were to try this their inner world would have already collapsed.

But Lin Ming relied on his solid foundation to forcefully withstand this burden.

Although he had just barely managed to do so, he had truly withstood the impact of the Wheel of Samsara!

More and more golden cracks appeared on the Wheel of Samsara, as if it would disintegrate soon!

"He blocked it! Lin Ming has blocked Hang Chi's frontal attack!"

Hang Chi gave off an unfathomable feeling to all present, as if there was no one that could rival him. Most people believed that the difference in strength between Hang Chi and Lin Ming was far too large. If Hang Chi didn't hold back then Lin Ming would have quickly lost.

But now, Hang Chi had attacked Lin Ming with his transcendent divine might, the Wheel of Samsara, yet that attack had been blocked by Lin Ming. This left everyone watching dumbfounded.

With Lin Ming's age, he should already have been proud of the fact that he was able to stand on the same stage as Hang Chi. As for warding off this strike, that was truly an unmatched honor!

"Eh?"

Hang Chi revealed a startled color on his face, surprised that Lin Ming was able to crush his Wheel of Samsara. This attack was one that was almost at his full strength.

As Hang Chi saw more and more cracks appear on the Wheel of Samsara, his expression became much more solemn. He said, “Benefactor Lin’s talent is truly amazing. Perhaps in three more years, this poor monk might not be able to suppress you anymore. But now, although Benefactor Lin’s Heavenly Dao Judgment is high in the Laws, it still lacks a bit of accumulation and foundation. It seems that Benefactor Lin hasn’t comprehended this move long enough ago…”

Not only was Hang Chi astonishingly powerful, but he immersed himself all year round in martial arts, and thus his eyesight was spectacularly sharp. He was able to quickly understand the weaknesses in his opponent’s moves.

Lin Ming’s Heavenly Dao Judgment was comprehended just before the First Martial Meeting began. Up until now, he had only used it a few times, and he truly was lacking in practice. These flaws were all laid bare by Hang Chi.

As Hang Chi spoke, there was a rumbling sound and the Wheel of Samsara beneath his feet was broken apart by Lin Ming!

Heavenly Dao Judgment cut straight towards Hang Chi!

Facing Lin Ming’s attack, Hang Chi began to speak Buddhist sutras, his body glowing with a golden radiance.

“Samsara Domain, Eight Sectioned Stupa!”

Hang Chi spoke these words in a soft voice. Then, the shattered pieces of the Wheel of Samsara dissolved into the power of samsara where it was wildly absorbed by him, circling around his body and forming the Samsara Domain.

Then, with a loud bang, a titanic golden pagoda fell over Hang Chi. This divine pagoda glowed with a circulating golden divine light, filling the air with the breath of the Great Dao. This divine pagoda had eight floors, each floor possessing its own god.

Of these gods, some were gentle and solemn, some were fierce and overflowing with killing intent, some were as calm as a Buddha, and some were like an asura.

A stupa. In other words, a Buddhist pagoda!

Hang Chi summoned the Eight Sectioned Stupa, with eight gods stabilizing it. For a time, the entire space for a thousand feet around Hang Chi was suppressed by this pagoda, forming a sacred realm which could not be shaken!

Bang!

Lin Ming's Heavenly Dao Judgment crashed into this Eight Sectioned Stupa; the power of thunder and fire erupted!

The divine pagoda violently shook and its light dimmed down, but within this divine pagoda, Hang Chi wasn't injured at all. Or, it would be easier to say that he hadn't felt any impact at all.

As the audience saw this, they immediately sucked in a breath of cold air.

Hang Chi's defense was too terrifying!

Whether it was the Wheel of Samsara or the Eight Sectioned Stupa, they gave off an unshakable feeling.

Moreover, what was most dreadful was that according to Xiao Moxian's words, Hang Chi still possessed an incorruptible diamond Vajra body. Even that arrogant Xiao Moxian didn't believe that she could break through Hang Chi's formidable defense!

"Lin Ming's attack was very strong, but Hang Chi is ridiculous. Just the moves and defensive abilities he has displayed so far are mind-boggling, much less the fact that he has more secret arcane abilities to defend himself. I have no idea just how strong his body is!"

“That’s right, even after breaking through Hang Chi’s defensive technique with so much effort, they would still find that they cannot injure a single hair of his main body at all. How despairing is that!”

“He really is invincible. Just by virtue of his terrifying defense, Hang Chi is already in an invincible position! Lin Ming will lose… Heavenly Dao Judgment is his strongest attack. If that doesn’t work then there is nothing more he can do.”

As the audience spoke, in the skies, the light of Heavenly Dao Judgment detonated, turning the entire world into a sea of purple and red.

Lin Ming looked at Hang Chi, his complexion dignified. Up until now, Hang Chi was the most horrifying opponent he had ever faced. Perhaps he might not possess Xiao Moxian’s compatibility with the Laws or her God Beast body’s ability to withstand attacks, but just by relying on his deep foundation and all those various techniques at his disposal, he was nearly undefeatable at his step.

“Benefactor Lin, let me give you a warning. This poor monk’s Eight Sectioned Stupa is supported with the strength of eight gods from the Buddhist principles. It is a harmonic balance of Laws that is an offensive and defensive ability. Unless your strength far surpasses my own, it is impossible for you to break through my Eight Sectioned Stupa from the outside. When I am placed within the Eight Sectioned Stupa, it is impossible for ordinary attacks to reach me. However, my Eight Sectioned Stupa uses the power of the Wheel of Samsara as the foundation. In the end, it can be called a derivative technique of my transcendent divine might, the Wheel of Samsara. If you can see through this poor monk’s Samsara Domain then you will be able to break through this move from its very foundations.”

During this fierce battle, Hang Chi actually told his opponent how to break through his abilities. The way in which the disciples of Mount Potala competed in martial arts contests was truly unique.

As the audience heard this, they were all left speechless. “Hang Chi is really crazy. He’s actually telling his opponent the weaknesses in his own technique and waiting for him to try and break through it.”

“Don’t be an idiot. How can that possibly be called a weakness? See through his Samsara Domain? That’s just a joke and a half!”

Out of all the contestants, only Dragon Fang and his Three Lives Pupils had the chance of seeing through Hang Chi’s Samsara Domain. As for the others, it was no longer a question of how great their perception was; it simply wasn’t something a human could accomplish.

“Samsara Domain…”

Within Lin Ming’s mind, he recalled the 72 Sorcerer Pagodas that the Sorcerer of the Southern Wilderness left behind. In the Sorcerer Pagoda, Lin Ming had experienced 100 samsaras and had gained a profound understanding of the Samsara martial intent.

Now that Lin Ming faced Hang Chi’s Samsara Domain, he wondered. With his understandings of the Samsara martial intent, could he possibly see a hint of the mysteries within the Samsara Domain?

If he had to say, the hopes of this were very slim.

Even though Lin Ming’s perception was extremely high, the Sorcerer of the Southern Wildness had likely never come into contact with the core inheritances of the Wheel of Samsara. In all likelihood he had been an outer disciple of Mount Potala. How could an outer disciple’s cultivation methods possibly compare to those of an Empyrean direct disciple?

Although he knew it was impossible, Lin Ming still intended to give it a try. Even if he didn’t plan on succeeding and this attempt failed, it would still temper and further develop his Samsara martial intent. This type of powerful cultivation method certainly couldn’t be abandoned, but had to be developed whenever he had the chance.

Lin Ming held the Phoenix Blood Spear downwards. He took a deep breath. Then, his aura changed.

From behind him, the power of samsara constantly gathered. His two pupils turned into whirling black vortexes.

Lin Ming had displayed the Samsara martial intent. As the audience saw this, they were all taken aback with shock!

Chapter 1313 – Minor Samsara Path

Chapter 1313 – Minor Samsara Path

…

…

…

“What is that behind Lin Ming? Is that also the Wheel of Samsara?”

“No, how could Lin Ming possibly know the Wheel of Samsara? Isn’t that a top secret inheritance of Mount Potala?”

All of the heroic young elites were incomparably shocked as they saw the black vortexes behind Lin Ming’s eyes. The power of samsara was constantly gathering within them.

This feeling was actually somewhat similar to Hang Chi!

But, the Wheel of Samsara was a transcendent divine might that belonged to Mount Potala. There was an extremely small number of truly complete jade slips. There weren’t enough for core disciples to study, so how could it possibly be taught to disciples from outside sects?

Moreover, even a supremely benevolent and kind Buddhist sect would not do something as stupid as publicly sharing their transcendent divine mights.

“How could Lin Ming possibly know Buddhist cultivation methods?”

“Look at Lin Ming’s eyes. I feel as if I fell into a deep fog, where a single misstep means I would fall into an illusion.”

In everyone's minds, Lin Ming was already extremely strange. Ignoring the aspect of cultivation, Lin Ming wasn't weak in any other area. If he was actually able to display a Buddhist transcendent divine might, how could anyone else still live?

At this time, an old man at the Holy Lord realm shook his head and said, "No… that is not the Wheel of Samsara. The Wheel of Samsara possesses a great aura and momentum as if all living creatures before it have to withstand the Heavenly Dao of Samsara. What Lin Ming is using is far from reaching that level. This should only be the Minor Samsara Path…"

"That's right, the Wheel of Samsara is a transcendent divine might and an ultimate secret technique of Mount Potala. Only core disciples and Empyrean direct disciples should have the chance to study it. It's impossible for Lin Ming to have done so. As for the Minor Samsara Path he is using, that is much more common. Many Buddhist sects possess this skill and wanting to learn it isn't too difficult."

"This child is truly terrifying. The Minor Samsara Path is a cultivation method that isn't considered too profound; you could even call it a weak ability. It's something that was created by a World King powerhouse, and afterwards many people managed to cultivate it to large success and thus there were many jade slip copies that were created. It spread out and many Holy Lord and Divine Lord powerhouses studied it. However, Lin Ming was able to comprehend it to such a degree that it can display a certain charm of the Wheel of Samsara. That is truly incredible!"

"It is indeed incredible. I was nearly confused at the start too."

Once a person trained in a cultivation method to the highest level, that person would be able to carve the complete cultivation method in a jade slip. Even transcendent divine mights were no exception. However, it was a pity that it was simply far too difficult to cultivate a transcendent divine might to the limit. Even an Empyrean might not be able to do so. After all, the transcendent divine mights created by others might not suit them perfectly.

In this sort of situation, although the Minor Samsara Path wasn't an extremely popular ability, it was still easy enough for a World King level Buddhist sect to obtain it. Naturally, this sort of cultivation method wasn't too strong.

Of all those present, the ones most surprised were the disciples of Mount Potala.

In the seating area of Mount Potala, there were all sorts of monks sitting there. Some were wearing plain linen robes, some were in yellow monk garbs, some wore sandals, some were barefoot, but every single one of them possessed an unimaginable degree of strength. Even so, no matter where they went, their clothing would be extremely simple.

"This child Lin Ming, his wisdom is extremely high, and there is also a special strength in his soul. If it weren't for this strength then he wouldn't have been able to cultivate the Minor Samsara Path to such a degree.

A white-browed old monk said. His voice was soft and melodic, comforting to the ears.

And near this old man, a tall and thin youth with his hands folded together in prayer said, "This disciple is ashamed. I also studied the Minor Samsara Path during my youth and I even had a zen master guiding me, but even so, I cannot compare to half of Benefactor Lin's skill. It seems that I gave up far too soon."

To the disciples of Mount Potala, the Minor Samsara Path was only a basic introductory cultivation method, just like how the Foundation Spear Technique or Foundation Sword Technique were basic introduction cultivation methods for ordinary sects. They only studied them for a brief period of time before moving onto higher level Buddhist cultivation methods.

The tall and thin youth was Yan Chi. He was also an Empyrean direct disciple of Mount Potala. In terms of strength and talent, he was worse than Hang Chi, but slightly better than White King. He was not some weak person.

“Lin Ming’s wisdom is high but his heart is too heavy with attachments and burdens and his killing aura is too strong. He’s not someone that is necessarily suited for the path of Buddhism…”

The old monk shook his head, seeming as if he were really moved to an appreciative sincerity. In truth, he was also well aware that after this First Martial Meeting, it would be far too simple for Lin Ming to join an Empyrean influence. Of course, this excluded Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, because Divine Dream Heavenly Palace never accepted male disciples. As for other Heavenly Palaces, he had nearly free reign in which one he wished to choose.

And in terms of background, Mount Potala was even above Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. They were even the direct opposite of them in one regard – they did not receive female disciples. They would naturally be the best choice.

At this time, on the arena stage, the might of the Samsara martial intent surprised even Lin Ming.

It had been a long time since he had last used the Samsara martial intent. The Samsara martial intent was a cultivation method that focused on soul attacks. As his strength rose, it simply wasn’t able to keep pace with him.

Now that he used it, it seemed as if the Samsara martial intent had made great progress because he had practiced the Divine Dream Law. Of course, if this was compared to final master moves likes Heavenly Dao Judgment or Three Essences as One, it was still far from comparable. The most it could do was increase the number of Lin Ming’s techniques and give him more flexibility.

“Benefactor Lin, this poor monk is truly surprised by your abilities. For you to have trained in the Minor Samsara Path to such a degree, I can only feel ashamed of my own inferiority. If Benefactor Lin were to have joined Mount Potala as a child, you would likely have been a preeminent monk of this era. I fear that your strength would have already far surpassed this poor monk’s.”

Lin Ming faintly smiled. “So this cultivation method was called the Minor Samsara Path? Unfortunately, I don’t have much interest in leaving behind my past and becoming a monk. I can only say that I don’t have the good fortune to listen to the Buddhist scriptures. Words are useless, let’s fight!”

As Lin Ming spoke the final word ‘fight’, his aura suddenly rose. In truth, Lin Ming was also well aware that using the Minor Samsara Path alone to contend with Hang Chi was impossible. His only hope was to use the Minor Samsara Path as a key to open up the secrets of Hang Chi’s Samsara Domain and break through his Eight Sectioned Stupa.

“Then this poor monk will be impolite. To suppress Benefactor Lin through the rank of cultivation methods is not the true martial path, but my martial talent is lacking and if I were to use the Minor Samsara Path to contend with Benefactor Lin, that would surely lead to my loss. Thus, this is all I can do.”

Hang Chi’s words seemed modest, but when he said ‘not the true martial path’, that was subtly hinting that even if Lin Ming used the Minor Samsara Path, making it seem as if there might be some change in this battle, the one to finally win would still be him. If even someone as cautious as Hang Chi were to say this, then this battle definitely wouldn’t change.

The reason that Lin Ming’s Minor Samsara Path was so surprising was because he was able to display a shabby cultivation method to such a high degree – it wasn’t because it was extremely powerful. As for seeing through the Samsara Domain, that was nearly impossible. How could a transcendent divine might level cultivation method be so easily seen through?

“Lin Ming is at too great a disadvantage.”

“Yes, to use an ordinary World King level cultivation method to contend with a transcendent divine might is too difficult. Moreover, in terms of cultivation and foundation, Lin Ming is also inferior to Hang Chi. He cannot win this battle with talent alone.”

"It's a pity that he is too young. If even Heavenly Dao Judgment has been broken, there isn't anything else he can use."

As everyone was speaking, the Eight Sectioned Stupa that covered Hang Chi began to revolve. The gods on each floor of this divine pagoda seemed to come to life!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Even the void seemed to shatter. The Eight Section Stupa came pressing down on Lin Ming.

In that instant, Lin Ming felt as if a powerful suppressive aura had locked him down, making him unable to move.

"Buddhist transcendent divine mights are indeed powerful. But, whether or not this is a hopeless battle, I will still give it everything I have!" Lin Ming stimulated the Samsara martial intent to the limit. At the same time, he opened the Heretical God Force and even burnt his life blood essence!

Burning his blood essence for a second time was already Lin Ming's limit. Even if he had the Gate of Life to restore himself, he couldn't burn his blood essence again and again.

Grandmist space!

Lin Ming cried out. From behind him, a blood red Prime Emperor Lotus Flower began to bloom!

Grandmist space, that could be called the king of domains!

"Hah!"

By using the power of his burning blood essence, Lin Ming pushed the grandmist space to the limit. Grandmist space burst out, covering a surrounding area of 10 miles and directly colliding with Hang Chi's Samsara Domain!

To use the grandmist space to resist the Samsara Domain!

Two transcendent divine mights collided, domain against domain!

Peng peng peng!

The heavy grandmist energy crashed into the countless suffering souls within the Samsara Domain! Endless suffering souls exploded, but at the same time, the grandmist space was also being cut off!

This was a horrifyingly violent collision!

“Mm?”

Hang Chi was surprised. He originally thought that Lin Ming would use the Minor Samsara Path to contend with the Eight Sectioned Stupa. If he did this, he would most certainly have lost, and comprehending even a tiny portion of the Samsara Domain would have been impossible.

But now, Lin Ming had made other plans. He would first use the grandmist space to weaken the Samsara Domain and then he would use his own Minor Samsara Path to cut into it!

Just what kind of character was Hang Chi? His martial arts knowledge and experience had already reached the pinnacle of juniors. He immediately saw through Lin Ming’s plans!

Ka ka ka ka!

The Samsara Domain was constantly being eroded away by the grandmist space!

“What!?”

No one expected that Lin Ming, whose defeat seemed certain, would be able to use a move that could suppress Hang Chi! The power of the grandmist space had far surpassed everyone’s expectations!

Although the grandmist space wasn't complete, it was an exclusive domain ability. As for the Wheel of Samsara, that was a very complex and varied transcendent divine might that included the Surpassing of All Life, Eight Sectioned Stupa, Sea of Suffering, and many other such skills. The Samsara Domain was only a single one of these skills, thus it was naturally surpassed!

"Break!"

Lin Ming shouted out loud. He grasped his spear and thrust it forwards. With a loud ripping sound, he broke through the Samsara Domain!

For a time, all sorts of hellish spirits and suffering souls threw themselves at Lin Ming!

In that instant, Lin Ming's mind nearly fell into illusion. He felt as if he had fallen into an endless sea of bitterness, becoming one of the innumerable resentful souls. In the confusion, he seemed to experience samsara, nearly losing himself.

"Wake up!"

Lin Ming fiercely bit down on his tongue. He revolved the Samsara martial intent, black vortexes appearing behind his eyes as he twisted apart all of these resentful souls!

His divine sense was restored to absolute clarity!

"This is the Samsara Domain!"

Lin Ming's eyes widened, seeming to swallow all light. He wanted to see through this Samsara Domain.

But at this moment, Hang Chi's voice resounded in Lin Ming's ears. "Benefactor Lin is truly outstanding. Your combat methods are filled with courage and vigor, but unfortunately, this poor monk will not allow you to succeed..."

Chapter 1314 – Divine Seal Within Samsara

Chapter 1314 – Divine Seal Within Samsara

…

…

…

"Benefactor Lin is truly outstanding. Your combat methods are filled with courage and vigor, but unfortunately, this poor monk will not allow you to succeed…"

Hang Chi's voice was long and calm, accompanied by the vast echoing sounds of Buddha. And like the will of Buddha, it would not be defied!

Hang Chi placed his hands together, pinching them together in a lotus seal. Behind him, a golden circle appeared.

From within Hang Chi's body, Buddhist symbols floated out, landing atop the Samsara Domain.

"Wheel of Samsara, Lotus Heart Bodhi."

As Hang Chi faintly spoke these words, a luminous gold light appeared from between his eyebrows. Then, a round relic shot forth from this shining light!

As this relic appeared, it flashed with a golden light, piercing through all shrouds. This light was like a materialized sword, cutting through all!

"It's the Lotus Heart Bodhi! Hang Chi actually has the Lotus Heart Bodhi within him! No wonder he's so fierce!"

In the honored seating section, there were several old men who immediately recognized this golden relic – the Lotus Heart Bodhi.

“Amazing! Amazing! In the myths the Lotus Heart Bodhi is the reincarnated martyr soul of a Buddha. Every appearance is the new birth of a living Buddha! No wonder the low profile Mount Potala would actually send a direct disciple to join the First Martial Meeting this time. They likely wish to have Hang Chi gain more experience so that he can become the third Empyrean of Mount Potala in the future!”

“This is incredible. One has a phoenix true form, one has the Lotus Heart Bodhi, one is the Saintess of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. Moreover, there are also three more individuals that come from non-Empyrean backgrounds and yet they are all youths with monstrous talent. Of those six, any one of them could be a hero that dominates their era, but now all of them have gathered here!”

“Lin Ming doesn’t have a chance. Hang Chi’s talent isn’t much worse, not to mention he’s also cultivated for a longer time.”

This so-called Buddha martyr soul was a legend spread down in the Buddhist faith. Some people speculated that there was an individual of the Buddhist faith who had reached levels of strength surpassing an Empyrean. Later, when he died in repose, his bones condensed into multiple relics. These relics were the Lotus Heart Bodhi.

These relics were incomparably mysterious. They would accompany some Buddhist disciples with extraordinarily high wisdom from birth, following them as they came out of their mother’s womb.

Each Buddhist disciple that possessed a Lotus Heart Buddha was considered the reincarnation of a Buddha. As these disciples grew up, they could refine these relics into their very bodies to stabilize their inner world.

Those Buddhist disciples that possessed the Lotus Heart Bodhi might only appear every 10 million years or tens of millions of years; they were incomparably rare. Unless these people perished on their road, they would become eminent monks of their generation, Empyrean level powerhouses!

Hang Chi possessed the Lotus Heart Bodhi and he was also diligent and hardworking. It was no surprise that his strength was at this level!

Out of all the juniors, besides Frost Dream, there was no one able to challenge him!

"Benefactor Lin, you have forced this poor monk to put forth the Lotus Heart Bodhi. That is already this poor monk's last resort. With the Lotus Heart Bodhi stabilizing the Samsara Domain, the might of the Samsara Domain will increase several times. I fear that Benefactor Lin will no longer have the chance to see through it."

As Hang Chi spoke, the Lotus Heart Bodhi flew out from between his eyebrows and into the Eight Sectioned Stupa, mounting itself at the top of the pagoda.

In that instant, the Eight Sectioned Stupa's eight gods began to release a flaming brilliance. The Eight Sectioned Stupa began pushing down on Lin Ming!

Ka ka ka!

The Eight Sectioned Stupa crashed into the grandmist space. The grandmist space emitted overwhelming explosive sounds as all the blood within Lin Ming's chest began to tumble. Even though he was facing Hang Chi with everything he had, he was still inferior.

Bang!

With a detonating sound, the grandmist space was shattered by the Eight Sectioned Stupa!

However, the grandmist space was still a top transcendent divine might. As the Eight Sectioned Stupa broke into the grandmist space, its own light dimmed down at the same time.

"Samsara Domain – open to the limit!"

The massive Wheel of Samsara spun behind Hang Chi. Without the shelter of the grandmist space, Lin Ming was placed directly within the Samsara Domain, force to withstand the power of samsara!

A tremendous amount of the power of samsara as well as endless grudges rushed into Lin Ming's spiritual sea. His body shook as a tearing pain distorted his spiritual sea, nearly making him faint.

"Awaken!"

Lin Ming grit his teeth. Within his spiritual sea, a swirling black vortex appeared; this was the Samsara martial intent.

To use the Minor Samsara Path to resist Hang Chi's transcendent divine might!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, the Wheel of Samsara appeared, pushing down on that black vortex!

The Wheel of Samsara was over 10 times larger than Lin Ming's Samsara martial intent! Within the center of the Wheel of Samsara stood Hang Chi's will phantom.

"Break."

Hang Chi said in a soft voice. The Wheel of Samsara slammed into the black vortex within Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

A completely disproportionate collision occurred, giving a feeling of near imminent collapse.

But at this moment, several Law runes began to appear from within Lin Ming's spiritual sea. These Law runes were the divine dream marks!

The divine dream marks landed on the black vortex, forcefully propping it up.

“Mm!?”

Hang Chi was startled. He originally thought he would win here, but he never imagined that Lin Ming’s soul would be so tenacious. It was harder to suppress him than he thought.

Chi-la!

Within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, the Wheel of Samsara and the black vortex struck each other, causing endless thunder to appear!

Hang Chi began to pray with Buddhist sutras. From between his eyebrows, the Lotus Heart Bodhi shined with a brilliant light. The Eight Sectioned Stupa came crashing down again. The Samsara vortex was at its breaking point!

Of Lin Ming’s three cultivation systems of essence, energy, and divine, his soul forging Laws were the weakest. He had only practiced it for several months of time, and now he was being forced to use the Minor Samsara Path to resist the Wheel of Samsara; it was naturally lacking. Moreover, Hang Chi had also resorted to using the Lotus Heart Bodhi!

Lin Ming held on with all his strength. He felt an excruciating pain in his soul, and even the will form he manifested in his spiritual sea began to distort. It was clear that he was withstanding a tremendous amount of pressure!

Underneath this pressure, all sorts of illusions appeared in Lin Ming’s mind.

At one moment he returned to his times as a common mortal. He was back with his parents. He married the princess of Sky Fortune Kingdom, he performed countless merits on the battlefield, and he was the idol of the people.

At another time, he had reached the Divine Realm, and because of the secret of the Magic Cube, he was hunted down by innumerable powerhouses. With no way out, he was placed in a despairing situation!

There was even a time when his martial arts had been crippled by others. He was captured by his enemies and forced to endure endless tortures.

Each potential false lifetime rapidly passed through Lin Ming's consciousness. Although he knew these were all illusions, it was still difficult for him to wake up.

This was the Wheel of Samsara's 100 Cycles of Samsara. In each samsara, every life was different. It was nearly impossible to separate reality and fantasy.

Lin Ming was lost within this confusing flow of life. It was as if time had lost all meaning. He had fallen into a long dream of samsara. Although he could maintain his ego, he wasn't able to wake himself up from this dream.

But among all these dreams, there was one that shocked Lin Ming.

In this dream, he had returned to the glorious epoch of the Divine Realm 3.6 billion years ago. He created his own Heavenly Palace, ruled the world, and resisted the great calamity to bring about an everlasting future.

He had seen this somewhere before!

When Lin Ming climbed up the 33rd step of the Divine Seal Altar, he had experienced a dream. Because of this dream, he had been sent into a deep sleep for over a month. The disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, as well as Huo Violentstone, Qin Xingxuan, and Mu Qianyu, had all been scared for him.

But now, that dream had reappeared! And compared to before, it was even more lifelike!

Lin Ming became increasingly convinced that these were the runes that Empyrean Divine Seal had planted into his body, soul, and inner world. These runes contained Empyrean Divine Seal's memories as well as some comprehensions of Laws.

While Lin Ming was experiencing 100 samsaras, these dream memories turned into one of his lives.

Among the haze, Lin Ming arrived at a vast and boundless wild continent.

This land exuded a horrifying aura; it was completely different from any central mainland of the Divine Realm. By just standing here, one could feel a faint pressure. This pressure didn't come from any powerhouses, but from the world itself.

This was a world that possessed its own pressure.

A tall man dressed in white robes stood above the wilderness. He looked up at the skies, his entire body exuding the aura of the Great Dao. This aura gathered together, turning into Dao patterns that floated all around him.

As Lin Ming saw these Dao patterns, he felt something familiar, as if he had seen them before.

This is…

Lin Ming's heart shook. These were the Dao patterns that Empyrean Divine Seal had written down into his body when he climbed up the Divine Seal Altar's 33rd step!

This series of Dao patterns gradually became clear in Lin Ming's mind. Inexplicably, all sorts of comprehensions emerged within Lin Ming's mind. These comprehensions were not his own, but belonged to Empyrean Divine Seal.

As Lin Ming experienced Empyrean Divine Seal's life, he also experienced his comprehension of the Laws!

On the Divine Seal Altar's 33rd step, these Dao patterns and runes were the most precious gifts that Empyrean Divine Seal had granted him!

As these Dao patterns appeared, the power of space and the power of time around this tall white-clothed man began to twist.

These were… Empyrean Divine Seal's Laws of Space and Time!

In that moment, Lin Ming felt as if he had become Empyrean Divine Seal, watching the circulation of Laws. This sort of experience and realization was extremely mystical.

“These Laws, these comprehensions, are they what Senior Divine Seal left to me?”

Before, after experiencing that dreamland on the Divine Seal Altar, Lin Ming had been utterly exhausted, with his essence, energy, and divine having been completely overdrawn. Because of that he wasn’t able to comprehend these Laws. But now, his mind was alive and awake, and he was able to clearly see them.

These were the Law runes that Empyrean Divine Seal had left in his body!

Where was the superiority of an Empyrean descendant?

It wasn’t just resources and talent. The most important factor was that they had great teachers!

An Empyrean teacher had comprehensions of the Laws that surpassed the Heavenly Dao. With such skilled teachers guiding them, how could Empyrean descendants’ progress not be quick?

But before now, Lin Ming had never had a truly formidable master. Mo Eversnow was fierce, but her strength lay in her talent. In terms of cultivation, even during her peak state she still hadn’t reached the World King realm.

And now, Lin Ming had finally obtained the direction of a true supreme elder. Moreover, this person’s strength had reached an unbelievable boundary. It was possible that he was the greatest powerhouse the Divine Realm had seen for the last 3.6 billion years.

Not just that, but those Empyrean descendants were only taught through oral lessons and jade slips. There were none among them who had a teacher who was willing to consume a portion of their soul in order to implant their life’s Law runes into their body.

Chapter 1315 – Divine Seal's Soul

Chapter 1315 – Divine Seal's Soul

…

…

…

"Lin Ming isn't moving… was he defeated?"

"Hang Chi's Samsara Domain is too strong. Losing to him is also reasonable…"

On the arena stage, Hang Chi was standing atop the Wheel of Samsara, floating high in the air. As for Lin Ming, he was wantonly covered in the power of samsara within the Samsara Domain, with strange dao patterns spinning around him. As for what these dao patterns meant, no one knew.

From the look of things, Lin Ming had already lost consciousness.

Was it over?

Did Lin Ming's myth finally end here?

Ever since the First Martial Meeting began, besides not achieving first place in the preliminaries, Lin Ming had been undefeated.

No matter how strong his opponents were or how undefeatable they seemed, he had used incredible methods to erupt with an even greater power and terrifying endurance to defeat them!

Xiao Moxian, Jun Bluemoon, and Dragon Fang were all defeated by him.

Although many people knew that Hang Chi's strength far surpassed Lin Ming's, they still subconsciously thought that Lin Ming's defeat was impossible.

"He already defies the heavens more than enough. For a disciple from an ordinary Holy Land background to reach this step is already amazing."

"Hang Chi is too strong. He hasn't wasted almost 40 years of his life in vain."

As everyone was speaking, Hang Chi remained silent on the arena stage. As the one controlling the Wheel of Samsara, Hang Chi could feel that from start to finish, his Wheel of Samsara had never thoroughly defeated Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's soul was tenacious beyond imagination, and those strange divine dream marks had allows his Minor Samsara Path to forcefully resist the Wheel of Samsara. Even though Hang Chi had used the Lotus Heart Bodhi, he had only been able to suppress Lin Ming; he hadn't been able to utterly rout him.

Although Lin Ming had fallen into the 100 Cycles of Samsara, his consciousness had remained clear throughout. This sort of feeling was like a strong wind blowing through the tough summer grass. Although the wind could blow the grass down, it couldn't break it.

By just missing this point, Hang Chi didn't believe he had truly won. Rather, during their intense battle, Lin Ming had voluntarily given up his consciousness and fallen into the illusions of samsara.

As if he had given up all resistance.

Hang Chi silently looked at Lin Ming within the Samsara domain. There were Law runes floating all around him, none of which he could understand.

At this time, Vast Cosmos stepped onto the arena stage. He looked over Lin Ming carefully and then said to Hang Chi, "The match has ended..."

Hang Chi shook his head, “Senior Vast Cosmos, this junior’s techniques haven’t completely defeated Benefactor Lin’s defenses. Rather, for some unknown reason, Benefactor Lin instead chose to surrender his soul defenses and fall into the Samsara Domain to withstand the power of samsara…”

“No matter what the reasoning is, the fact is that you have won.”

After falling into the endless samsaras, Lin Ming didn’t have any ability to defend himself. If Hang Chi wanted to claim victory, it would be extremely easy.

“Then let us wait a moment. I feel that Benefactor Lin may be making an unexpected breakthrough.” Hang Chi said. As a disciple of Mount Potala, Hang Chi’s natural character was one of kindness and gentle mercy. He didn’t wish to win through something that wasn’t the true martial path.

Vast Cosmos hesitated for a moment and then nodded, “Very well. We shall wait for an incense stick of time. Little Master Hang Chi’s moral character is truly praiseworthy.”

Then, a strange scene occurred on the First Martial Meeting’s arena stage. Hang Chi dismissed the Wheel of Samsara and stood on the center of the stage, his fingers gathered together in prayer. As for Lin Ming, he was floating in the air, wrapped in a faint power of samsara, with lightly glowing runes all around him.

A disciple of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace lit a stick of incense.

The incense stick slowly burned, gray smoke curling in the air.

“Why are they waiting? Isn’t the battle over?”

“I have no idea what’s happening. It seems as if Lin Ming has encountered some strange condition so they are waiting for him to wake up…”

“He was struck by Hang Chi’s Wheel of Samsara, so it’s likely difficult for him to wake up. His soul might have received some serious damage.”

The Wheel of Samsara was an offensive and defensive system, When Hang Chi fought Xiao Moxian, he hadn't brought out the attack capabilities of the Wheel of Samsara. It was a completely different situation from now.

Lin Ming had endured the attack of the Wheel of Samsara. Everyone was able to see just how terrifying the Wheel of Samsara's attacks were.

Even someone as strong as Lin Ming, with a freakishly strong soul defense and mortal body, still lost consciousness with a single strike.

The incense stick burnt down shorter and shorter. But, Lin Ming was still wrapped in a deep sleep, without any hint that he was regaining consciousness.

Finally, the incense stick burnt all the way down.

Vast Cosmos stepped onto the arena stage and announced the result of this match.

In the audience, the young elites of Crimson Light World were all filled with regret. They were well aware that it was unavoidable for Lin Ming to lose to Hang Chi; the difference was simply too great. But after arriving at such a step, they all still hoped that a miracle would occur. But in the end, there was no miracle at all.

And on the Ancient Phoenix Clan's side, Huo Violentstone, Qin Xingxuan, Mu Qianyu, and the others were all worried for Lin Ming's safety. Lin Ming's restorative ability was extremely strong, so how come he didn't wake up after an incense stick of time?

Vast Cosmos looked at Hang Chi and loudly proclaimed, "Hang Chi, victory!"

This loud and clear sound spread through the entire arena. This also signaled the end of this match.

Lin Ming had been defeated by Hang Chi.

"Benefactor Lin seems to have encountered some accident. I ask Senior to look after him." Hang Chi said as he recited some Buddhist chants.

Vast Cosmos nodded. He raised his hand and Lin Ming's body came flying over.

Vast Cosmos placed his palm on Lin Ming's forehead, wanting to investigate the current damage to his spiritual sea. But as he inspected Lin Ming, he frowned.

Lin Ming's spiritual sea was covered with a dim white light. It was impossible to see through it.

"How strange."

Vast Cosmos couldn't believe this. With his half-step Empyrean cultivation, he wasn't able to investigate the spiritual sea of a junior?

What was going on here?

"Bring Lin Ming out of here and deliver him to a quiet room where he can rest. Look for Xin Shenzi to see to him until I come over."

Vast Universe Heavenly Palace's Xin Shenzi had much higher attainments in the aspect of souls and spiritual seas than Vast Cosmos did.

Several disciples of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace lifted up Lin Ming and brought him away. In this situation, many spectators could see that something was wrong.

Lin Ming might have been seriously wounded!

Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan both felt their hearts tighten. They were certainly worried about him, but they weren't able to go to the contestant area.

"Brother Lin Ming should be fine, right? How could that monk be so heavy-handed with his moves?"

"Don't blame others. Our husband might have encountered some special circumstances. Don't forget, Lin Ming fell into a deep sleep for over a month after the Divine Seal Altar…"

As Mu Qianyu spoke, the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were even more worried. If he really fell into a deep sleep like last time then that wasn't a good sign at all.

If he fell into a deep sleep again and again, that really might mean he had some particular soul damage.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Lin wouldn't fall into a deep sleep more and more after this, right...? What if he sleeps for longer and longer each time..." A disciple whispered.

"Don't speak nonsense."

Huo Violentstone angrily said. His complexion was also somewhat solemn.

After Lin Ming's loss, the tournament continued on!

Xiao Moxian against Frost Dream!

This was a long-awaited showdown. Even though there wasn't any suspense in the result, it was still a battle between the two most outstanding young girls in the entire Divine Realm. Both of these girls had their own unique flavor and were also the dream lovers of countless young elites. How could they not be heated for this battle?

Many youths shouted until their throats were hoarse. However, the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan had a perpetual malaise covering all of their hearts.

"That fellow, he's as fierce as a farm animal, so how could he be injured?" Before stepping on stage, Xiao Moxian tilted her head, gazing on as Lin Ming was carried away to Vast Universe Heavenly Palace...

....

At this time, in a resting room of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, an old man with a long beard and a floppy hat was probing Lin Ming's spiritual sea, his eyebrows wrinkled.

“Senior Xin Shenzi, what’s the situation?” A youth asked. He was Vast Cosmos’s apprentice and a core disciple of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace.

“I cannot be sure. There are some strange runes and lines covering Lin Ming’s spiritual sea. This old man is too unlearned and ignorant; I have never seen anything like it before.”

“What do we do? Should we report this to Master Ancestor?”

The Master Ancestor that this youth referred to was naturally Empyrean Vast Universe.

Xin Shenzi said, “I simply can’t find any clues; it seems we can only trouble Honorable Master. Lin Ming’s talent is enough to alarm even Honorable Master and have him take action. We cannot make any mistakes, the consequences are simply too great.”

In the past Divine Realm First Martial Meetings, the champion didn’t often have the talent to become an Empyrean in the future. And someone that wasn’t an Empyrean level talent simply didn’t possess the qualifications to rouse an Empyrean powerhouse. This was the same as a mortal not bothering to help treat ants.

As Xin Shenzi was thinking about this further and preparing to personally approach Empyrean Vast Universe, a flame lit up in front of him.

From that flame, Empyrean Vast Universe’s voice echoed out.

“You do not have to pay attention to Lin Ming. Allow him to rest.”

As Empyrean Vast Universe spoke, Xin Shenzi and the others naturally wouldn’t do something as stupid as disobeying him. Xin Shenzi left a few disciples in the resting room and allowed Lin Ming to rest.

On the arena stage, the battle was in full swing, raging like an inferno.

As for Lin Ming, he was lost in a long dream. He dreamt that he was Empyrean Divine Seal.

He saw the world from the viewpoint of Empyrean Divine Seal, and also pondered the same questions he did.

When Empyrean Divine Seal trained, so did Lin Ming.

When Empyrean Divine Seal meditated on the Laws, Lin Ming also meditated on the Laws.

When Empyrean Divine Seal fought with powerhouses, Lin Ming also experienced these brutal battles.

These dreamy and illusive sentiments and thoughts imprinted themselves on Lin Ming's heart. These feelings weren't too deep and these were also comprehensions that belonged to Empyrean Divine Seal. After all, these weren't Lin Ming's comprehensions and didn't necessarily suit him. In fact, he didn't even understand the majority of them.

But these still brought a great number of inspirations to Lin Ming. To be able to see the world through the eyes of an Empyrean and also study the Laws at that height, to immediately rise to the level of an Empyrean, just who had that chance?

Or, it was more accurate to say that Empyrean Divine Seal even surpassed the boundary of an Empyrean.

There was no concept of time in these dreams. Lin Ming experienced countless years, and among these memories, he soon forgot them even as they rapidly flowed past him. Finally, there were not many runes that engraved themselves in Lin Ming's mind.

Without knowing it, Lin Ming's Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens was improving, evolving. His body, essence, energy, and soul all began to fuse together. This was no longer just a fusion of energy, but a true fusion of essence, energy, and divine.

His soul fused together into his flesh and blood, his flesh and blood combined with his inner world, and his inner world linked together with his spiritual sea.

Slowly, a transcendent divine might appeared in Lin Ming's mind. Its name was… the Divine Seal Art.

Like this, Lin Ming finally understood just what runes Empyrean Divine Seal left in his body. This wasn't just Law runes and dao patterns, but also a masterless soul fragment from Empyrean Divine Seal. This was similar to the masterless soul fragments in the Magic Cube, but millions and billions of times more valuable!

This was the masterless soul fragment of a supreme elder that surpassed an Empyrean!

Chapter 1316 – Dream Cultivation

Chapter 1316 – Dream Cultivation

…

…

…

Empyrean Divine Seal's lifetime of knowledge and abilities were all written in the Divine Seal Art. This was a comprehensive cultivation method, not just a single move.

It included the countless Laws of the Divine Realm, including the five elemental Laws, the Life Laws, Yin Yang Laws, and so forth.

But, the main focus of the Divine Seal Art was the Space Laws and Time Laws.

These two Laws were the Laws that Empyrean Divine Seal was most skilled in.

When Lin Ming had discovered the Ancient Elysium Seal deep beneath Immemorial Imperial City, he found that Empyrean Divine Seal had used the Ancient Elysium Seal as an array eye to suppress an unknown existence. The sealing technique he used was recorded within the Divine Seal Art.

Lin Ming found it hard to imagine just what type of existence was suppressed by Empyrean Divine Seal's Divine Seal Art for 3.6 billion years and still hadn't died.

Even though Lin Ming had now inherited a tiny incomplete soul fragment of Empyrean Divine Seal, he still didn't have any memories of this.

Like this, Lin Ming was lost in a deep sleep, constantly experiencing the memories left behind by Empyrean Divine Seal.

And on the arena stage, the battles were carrying on.

In Xiao Moxian and Frost Dream's match, Frost Dream had defeated Xiao Moxian without any problems. At this point, only Frost Dream and Hang Chi still had unbroken winning streaks.

The third match of the second round was Jun Bluemoon against Dragon Fang.

Many people were looking forwards to this battle. Although the two of them had lost to Lin Ming, the disparity wasn't too great, especially with Jun Bluemoon, who had withstood Lin Ming's Heavenly Dao Judgment without suffering any injuries.

As soon as Jun Bluemoon stepped on stage he used his Yin Yang Laws. However, these Laws were seen through by Dragon Fang's Three Lives Pupils.

Then, Dragon Fang suppressed Jun Bluemoon. Even Jun Bluemoon's finishing move, the 64 Yin Yang Trigrams Sword was seen through by Dragon Fang's All Existence to Void.

However, Jun Bluemoon was extremely tough. Although he was suppressed, he still wasn't defeated.

The two brutally fought for an hour, exchanging over a thousand moves and wounding each other again and again. They slowly began to reach their limits, but in the end, Jun Bluemoon's endurance proved to be superior. With a small advantage, Jun Bluemoon took the lead and won a hard-earned victory against Dragon Fang.

This difficult victory showed that the two youths were individually matched. Who won or who lost, luck and their current condition played an extremely large role.

Thus, the second round in the first group of six people ended like this. Even so, Lin Ming still hadn't woken up.

Vast Cosmos announced the beginning of the third round.

This round should have been where Lin Ming and Frost Dream battled, but because Lin Ming had fallen into a deep sleep, Frost Dream drew a bye. This left behind Hang Chi, Dragon Fang, Xiao Moxian, and Jun Bluemoon still competing. In truth, among these four people, most of them had already fought, thus there weren't many matches left.

The two matches for this round were Hang Chi against Jun Bluemoon and Dragon Fang against Xiao Moxian.

Compared to the last matches, these were much less anticipated.

"Frost Dream hasn't gone on stage... I wanted to watch Frost Dream fight Lin Ming!" Some audience members knew that Frost Dream had drawn a bye and were somewhat dissatisfied.

Frost Dream was the dream lover of many heroic young elites. They all wanted to see Frost Dream in action. Even if there wasn't any suspense in the match between Frost Dream and Lin Ming, they still wished to see her roll over her opponents with absolute strength.

It could only be said that Frost Dream was too popular.

Compared to Frost Dream and Xiao Moxian, Lin Ming simply didn't have much support.

"It doesn't matter if Frost Dream fights Lin Ming or not; it's just a small interlude, Frost Dream will win no matter what. The only one who can truly compete with Frost Dream here is Hang Chi. But, I think that Hang Chi has higher chances of losing. Just look at when Frost Dream fought Dragon Fang. She defeated him without much effort."

"Speaking about it... what's going on with Lin Ming? Are his injuries really that heavy? An Empyrean Heavenly Palace shouldn't be lacking in medicines, right? With all sorts of wonderful medicines at his use, he still didn't immediately recover?"

"It must be a soul injury. Hang Chi is a kind and merciful person so he should know what his limits are. However, Lin Ming wanted to show off his strength, and even though he knew he wasn't Hang Chi's match, he still used that World King level Minor Samsara Path to struggle with Hang Chi's transcendent divine might, the Wheel of Samsara. How could a World King level cultivation method possibly triumph over a transcendent divine might? There is a gap in cultivation methods and also a gap in cultivation realms; the result of the match was already decided from the beginning. Even so, Lin Ming wanted to fight and the aura he displayed was so powerful that it made others feel he wasn't much weaker at all. Finally, all of that caused him to be injured too heavily. This is just a martial arts contest but he was so reckless…"

An old man shook his head, his voice filled with regret. A soul injury was not easy to cure. If a martial artist's soul was injured, that was definitely bad news.

Luckily, this had happened in Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. There were many precious soul recovery medicines here so Lin Ming should be in a much better position.

But even so, in this case, if Lin Ming still remained unconscious and missed the third round of matches and allowed Frost Dream to draw a bye, this would be proof that his injuries were extremely heavy!

This sort of wound was likely to leave permanent damage behind!

To a genius, this was undoubtedly a tremendous loss! It might even affect his future achievements.

"If he really is heavily injured then Lin Ming's losses will be great. Isn't Vast Cosmos the referee? How come he didn't stop the match?"

"How could it be so easy? All of these geniuses are difficult to measure with common sense. Even for a half-step Empyrean, it's impossible for them to determine who is weaker or stronger before they fight. There are bound to be unexpected surprises. This time Lin Ming truly didn't consider the situation. These young ones are far too spirited."

As Lin Ming was unconscious, news of his situation spread through the arena. As people heard this, they began to think that Lin Ming had tried too hard to show off in front of Hang

Chi, and had suffered a soul wound because of it. Not even Vast Cosmos was able to cure him.

This was the heart of human jealousy, something everyone possessed. As the audience saw Lin Ming suffer, some of them were sorry for him but some were also gloating at his suffering. For instance, the Skydark Holy Lands' Nether Limitless was extremely happy to hear this. The deeper Lin Ming's wounds were, the better it was.

At this time, deep within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, Empyrean Vast Universe said to Empyrean Divine Dream, "What is wrong with Lin Ming? I don't feel as if his soul has been injured, so why hasn't he awoken after such a long time?"

Let alone Empyrean Vast Universe, not even Empyrean Divine Dream was able to see through the divine soul mark that Empyrean Divine Seal left behind.

Empyrean Divine Dream shook her head, saying, "It's hard to say. Perhaps it might have something to do with the time he climbed up the Divine Seal Altar's 33rd step."

"If he continues to stay asleep then the tournament will end. He still has a match left with Frost Dream. Do you plan on sentencing Lin Ming to a loss?"

Although Empyrean Vast Universe didn't think that Lin Ming had a chance of winning, it was still too careless to so easily decide someone's defeat.

Divine Dream said, "Have Lin Ming placed into a time enchantment… a 1:100 time flow. He should be able to wake up. Characters like him will not fall from the altar so easily and he still has a long road awaiting him. He will surely pass this trial."

As Divine Dream spoke, Empyrean Vast Universe could only concur. He sent an order to Xin Shenzi to have Lin Ming placed into a 1:100 time flow enchantment.

Xin Shenzi himself was a Great World King master so it was easy for him to lay down such an enchantment. After he set down Lin Ming in a good position, he reached out and waved his hands. Four jade bunnies leapt out from his spirit beast chart, transforming into four beautiful young girls within the enchantment.

These four young girls all originated from the monster race and their cultivations were equal to a late Revolving Core realm human's. They were only a single step away from making a breakthrough. The jade bunny clan of the monster race had a naturally docile and gentle temperament. They had fallen into dire straits and were rescued by Xin Shenzi. At the time, Xin Shenzi just happened to have a spirit beast chart magic tool, so he accepted them as his secret disciples.

"The four of you will be responsible for looking after Lin Ming. Do not allow the slightest error to occur. Until he wakes up, immediately report to me any changes that occur."

"Yes."

Following that, within the time enchantment, the four Revolving Core young girls of the monster race spent every second of the day watching and caring for Lin Ming. Their actions were orderly and meticulous.

However, when these four young girls entered the enchantment to care for Lin Ming, they never imagined it would be for such a long time.

Soon, half a year passed and Lin Ming still remained asleep as before!

For such a long time, these four young girls constantly stared at the face of a single young man and their lives were naturally boring. Luckily, Lin Ming had an extraordinarily handsome face with an excellent and dashing temperament. Looking at him all day was a comfortable experience.

This continued to eight months, nine months…

Lin Ming still didn't wake up.

If an ordinary person slept for such a long time, their body would have become smelly and covered with sores. However, Lin Ming remained clean and free of dust the entire time. He exuded a hint of masculinity that was pleasant to smell. Thus, these four young girls didn't have to do something so embarrassing like wiping down his body or helping him bathe.

Slowly, one year passed…

During this year, Lin Ming constantly comprehended within the samsara world. Immersed in a sea of Laws, he forgot time, and forgot all else.

He even forgot the memory that he had been struck by the Wheel of Samsara and was experiencing a long dream. Rather, he thought that this was his life, that this was reality.

Every day was spent in non-stop pondering and meditation. Sometimes Lin Ming was like a rock, sitting still for an entire month. Within this dream, his body was surrounded with countless dao patterns and Law fragments, These dao patterns ran over him like trickling water before flowing into his body and then slowly leaking out from his pores. Everything seemed harmonious, like a perfect cycle.

What sort of character was Empyrean Divine Seal? The runes he left behind contained not only comprehensions of Laws but also fragments of memories. How could this be comprehended in several days or even several months?

Even with Lin Ming's perception, wanting to thoroughly comprehend these things and reform the Divine Seal Art was extremely difficult!

In a year of time, Lin Ming had comprehended only a tenth of the Laws that Empyrean Divine Seal had left behind. He had just barely managed to cross into the threshold of the Divine Seal Art.

Beyond that, there were also many Laws. However, Lin Ming wasn't able to comprehend them because his boundary was simply far too shallow.

Empyrean Divine Seal’s boundary was just far too high. Just this tiny insignificant soul fragment was enough for Lin Ming to enjoy for a hundred years, allowing him to meditate on it for two or three large boundaries.

The truth was that this was something that only Lin Ming could do. If someone else were here, then even if they were a top extreme character like Hang Chi or Jun Bluemoon, they would still be powerless when facing Empyrean Divine Seal’s Laws.

This was because they had yet to comprehend the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens. It was also because of this point that Lin Ming was able to obtain Empyrean Divine Seal’s inheritance.

Chapter 1317 – Cultivating the Divine Seal Art

Chapter 1317 – Cultivating the Divine Seal Art

…

…

…

Another year and another month passed. Deep in meditation, Lin Ming suddenly opened his eyes.

He was sitting down cross-legged in a vast and unknown space of the universe, filled with endless mist and dust. With just a glance, everything around him was wrapped in a dim haze. The surrounding space was filled with the chaotic power of space and time. Space twisted, making it impossible to identify just what direction was which, and even the flow of time was in complete upheaval. Deep within this area, even one's normal breathing and heart rate were affected.

"I've arrived at this space again…" Lin Ming whispered to himself, his eyes bright and shining. He had named this space the divine seal space.

Every time he entered the divine seal space, Lin Ming was able to become aware of many things.

He closed his eyes and silently sensed the rich Space and Time Laws here. This place was like the primordial soup before the universe was formed, and the Laws here were still in their most primitive state. Wanting to become aware of these Laws was extremely easy.

During this year, Lin Ming had already comprehended the Time and Space Laws to large success of the fifth level.

It had to be known that before this, Lin Ming's attainments in the Time and Space Laws weren't high at all. He had only been comparable to a genius from an ordinary Holy Land, far from reaching the level of an Empyrean descendant like Dragon Fang. He wasn't even able to compare with someone like the Monster Prince.

Lin Ming's understandings into these two Laws were so poor that he couldn't even display them in actual combat, otherwise he wouldn't have needed to summon the Heretical God Tree phantom when he fought the Monster Prince. He had done so because ordinary Thunder and Fire Laws did not possess the ability to resist the Monster Prince's Space and Time Laws.

In just a year, Lin Ming had been able to reach large success of the fifth level Concepts in the extremely difficult to study Time and Space Laws. He had surpassed the Monster Prince and was only slightly inferior to Dragon Fang. This speed of improvement was horrifying.

Moreover, although the boundary of Lin Ming's Space and Time Laws was inferior to Dragon Fang's, the Time and Space Laws that Empyrean Divine Seal comprehended were of an exorbitantly high level; they were far from what ordinary Space and Time Laws could hope to compare with.

As Lin Ming was enlightening himself on the Space and Time Laws here, at this moment, the endless dust in this space began to converge together at a single point. The mist and dust seemed thin, but there was an endless volume. In terms of weight, it could easily surpass a million trillion jins.

Lin Ming could see this swirling vortex of dust rapidly grow. A swallowing force latched onto him, making him feel as if he were being sucked into this whirlpool.

Lin Ming's mind chilled as he rapidly retreated. He watched with his own eyes as this vortex grew increasingly large, finally condensing into a star!

Dust and mist forming a star?

Lin Ming was stunned, "Is this the forming process of a star?"

As Lin Ming was thinking over this, that massive star began to burn. An incomparably horrifying light erupted from within it. The total amount of energy in this eruption was so great that the all-out strike of an Empyrean was completely overshadowed.

Lin Ming recalled the time when he had absorbed the blood essence of the Ancient Phoenix. In that dream world, he had seen the scene of the phoenix undergoing nirvana. That phoenix had been bathing within the blazing hot core of a star, its body in the process of being reborn.

Without a doubt, this was a sun!

“Am I witnessing the formation of a sun?” Lin Ming thought. He could feel the fire origin energy around him being stirred up, becoming more and more hot. Because of the amount of heat that this sun was releasing, the surrounding temperature was so high that even metal essence would instantly turn to steam. If a giant meteor were to fall into this sun, it would quickly be melted away, vanishing into nothing.

Lin Ming didn’t retreat. As he faced this sun, he began to slowly realize the Fire Laws.

His Fire Laws had been stranded at the fifth level Concept for an extremely long time; he hadn’t yet been able to trace the threshold to the sixth level Concept. This also caused Lin Ming’s Laws to be at a much lower height than those of Dragon Fang and the others.

And Lin Ming was well aware that the sixth level Concept was Yang Flames – in other words, the fires of a sun!

The first four levels of the Fire Laws, whether it was Burning Heat, Annihilation, Creation, or Manifestation, these were fires of the mortal world. As for the fifth level Fire Laws, that was Virtual Fire. The flames of jealousy, boiling anger, overflowing rage, heated hatred, all of these were flames transformed from the human mind. They could be called spiritual fires.

Then, upon arriving at the sixth level Laws, it was the fires of the sun. The fires of the sun had an essential difference from fires of the mortal world.

The fires of the mortal world produced flames from burning materials, but as for the fires of the sun, that was similar to releasing energy and flames from completely annihilated matter. This sort of absolute annihilation produced a power thousands of times greater.

A phoenix's nirvana meant to undergo nirvana within the center of a sun. A grown-up phoenix would choose to undergo nirvana in the center of a blazing star. The more powerful the phoenix was, the more terrifying the star they chose.

Only when facing a true sun could one comprehend the real sixth level Concept of the Fire Laws – Yang Flames!

But now, with the current Lin Ming's cultivation, it was still far too early for him to thoroughly comprehend Yang Flames; it was simply impossible. Even so, if he managed to trace upon the threshold of the Concept of Yang Flames and add a bit of that power to his Fire Laws, then there would be no comparison between his moves before and after!

The sun became increasingly bright and blazing. Lin Ming felt his entire body burning, even as he was constantly enlightening himself on everything happening. At this time, the sun rapidly grew as if it would explode at any moment.

Lin Ming was bewildered. He could feel that this sun was about to collapse so he rapidly drew backwards.

In this illusory virtual space, his speed was extraordinarily quick. He soon retreated a million miles back. And at this time, the sun suddenly detonated with an incomparably terrifying divine light, seeming as if the entire universe would be swallowed up. With an explosion of sound, dreadful waves of heat destroyed everything and even the void was shaken to the point of collapse!

In that moment, Lin Ming thought he had died. It was impossible for a human to resist such a horrifying explosion.

Hu – hu – hu –

Terrifying flames swept over Lin Ming.

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He was certain that if this weren't a virtual space, he would have already turned to ash just now, even if he were another million miles farther away.

The flames gradually dissipated. The sun was already destroyed. It began to gradually collapse, its volume rapidly becoming smaller. It eventually shrank a trillion times smaller. All of that matter, light, space, and time, everything was sucked into it.

Slowly, the sun evolved into a star of absolute darkness.

Lin Ming knew that this star, according to Empyrean Divine Seal's viewpoint, was called a black hole.

Every black hole had a very small radius of space around it that formed an 'absolute horizon'.

Within the Divine Seal Art, this space was called the black hole horizon. It was impossible for any matter that fell into the black hole horizon to emerge again. This was an absolute enchantment of time and space. Even if an Empyrean were to fall into it, they wouldn't be an exception.

The black hole horizon destroyed all matter, space, and time. It was the end point of all Space and Time Laws!

As for Empyrean Divine Seal, he had cultivated the Space and Time Laws to the boundary of a black hole. He was able to have space and time form a black hole!

This was also one of the moves within the Divine Seal Art when it was cultivated to an extremely high boundary.

By creating a black hole and using the absolute Space and Time Laws to seal away all, even a divine god would be permanently sealed, unable to escape!

Divine Seal, Seal the Divine!

This was where Empyrean Divine Seal and the Divine Seal Art's name originated from. There was no exaggeration in these names either. In the past, Empyrean Divine Seal truly did possess the ability to seal away gods. This was because he was an existence that had surpassed an Empyrean.

That was…

The realm of True Divinity!

It was naturally impossible for Lin Ming to practice to this boundary, but if it was just reproducing a tiny bit of the black hole horizon's charm, he was still able to barely accomplish that.

Witnessing the creation of a black hole with his own eyes had the greatest benefits to Lin Ming's comprehension of the Divine Seal Art.

Lin Ming sat down before this black hole, recalling everything that had just happened, "To seal off the space, everything that enters will not be able to break through that cage. To seal off time, everything that falls into the black hole horizon will fall into an eternally timeless moment, locked into a single moment of forever. Their body will stop for all time. With all of this combined together, with matter, time, and space compressed to the limit, that is what it means to truly seal something."

As Lin Ming spoke, all sorts of changes occurred within his inner world.

In his body's inner world, all of the world power and all of the energy gathered together, slowly forming a whirlpool. Lin Ming was using the energy within himself to simulate the formation of a sun.

In cultivating the Divine Seal Art, the symbol of truly beginning training in it was to form a miniature black hole in one's inner world. All future practice would center around this miniature black hole.

However, forming this miniature black hole was extremely risky. If one's foundation was lacking, not only would that miniature black hole not form, but their inner world would directly collapse because it wouldn't be able to withstand the sudden changes in energy.

Although Lin Ming was now sleeping, the process of forming a miniature black hole was truly occurring in reality. The real world was in sync with the dream world. If there was a single mistake, then Lin Ming's inner world would crack apart and he really would die.

This process was not hurried at all. Just like the birth, growth, and death of a sun, for the formation of the miniature black hole in the body, that process needed the accumulation of time and continuous evolution!

And at this time, 400 days had already passed. That was four days in the outside world.

The First Martial Meeting tournament had basically ended two days ago. There were only two matches that had yet to be fought.

One was Frost Dream against Hang Chi, and the other was Frost Dream against Lin Ming!

Now there had been a pause for two days. The audience had long been impatient with waiting.

"What's going on? How come Hang Chi and Frost Dream's showdown hasn't begun yet? Are they fighting today? They couldn't be playing with us, right?"

The several hundred million spectators present were all anticipating watching Hang Chi and Frost Dream's battle. That would surely be the most splendid battle of the First Martial Meeting!

"I heard that the organizers originally intended for Frost Dream to first fight Lin Ming before the battle between Frost Dream and Hang Chi. But since Lin Ming was severely wounded and hasn't awoken yet, the competition was delayed for a few days."

Of these two matches, Hang Chi against Frost Dream should have been at the very end. It was the prime showdown of the First Martial Meeting and should have been the last battle where the champion was decided. However, because Lin Ming's soul was grievously wounded and he had fallen into a deep sleep, the battle between Lin Ming and Frost Dream had been delayed.

Chapter 1318 – The Climactic Battle

Chapter 1318 – The Climactic Battle

…

…

…

“They are waiting for Lin Ming to wake up and compete with Frost Dream before they continue with the final battle? There must be some mistake!”

As many spectators heard this, they were immediately roused to anger. Many of them had come to the First Martial Meeting specifically to watch Frost Dream, not Lin Ming. What did it matter to them if Lin Ming finished his matches or not? Moreover, Lin Ming had injured himself because he was trying to show off. If he missed his matches because of his wounds, how could anyone but himself be blamed?

“The referees must have gone senile! If Lin Ming doesn’t wake up for a month, does that mean we have to wait for a month? If he doesn’t wake up for two months, do we have to wait for two months? Also, does anyone even think that Lin Ming can defeat Frost Dream? Frost Dream is someone who is said to far surpass Hang Chi, and Lin Ming lost miserably to Hang Chi, even suffering severe soul wounds in the meantime, so how could he possibly battle Frost Dream? They want us to take such a long break just to wait for him to fight a little teaser match?”

“This is the intent handed down by the two great Empyreans. If you have complaints about how this First Martial Meeting is being conducted then why don’t you go and bring it up with them?”

As someone said this, the heroic young elite who was speaking before suddenly shut up. Go and complain to an Empyrean? He wouldn't do that if he had 100 times the courage. Why would an Empyrean bother with the ideas of someone so unimportant. They wouldn't even bother glancing in his direction.

"I heard that Lin Ming was placed in a time enchantment. One day out here is numerous days inside. He should wake up soon.

"Time enchantment? Is that okay? If he hasn't woken up even after spending several months inside, then what's going on? Is he dead?"

Many people were dissatisfied with the current situation but there was nothing they could do.

Then, like this, five days passed!

From the moment when Lin Ming entered the time enchantment, one year and three months had passed.

"It's almost been 500 days. How come Lin Ming still hasn't awakened?"

Deep within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, Empyrean Vast Universe frowned. It was clear that Lin Ming was suffering some sort of extremely complex situation, but his time deep in slumber had surpassed Empyrean Vast Universe's estimations. "Divine Dream, could there have been something that happened to Lin Ming that damaged his spiritual sea and caused him to not be able to wake up?"

Divine Dream was silent for a moment before slowly saying, "Have your disciple adjust the rate of the time enchantment to 1:150. Also, there is no need for Hang Chi and Frost Dream's competition to drag on for such a long time. Once Lin Ming wakes up he can compete with Frost Dream."

Divine Dream's words affirmed that Lin Ming would definitely wake up. Empyrean Vast Universe could only nod his head.

The reason that Divine Dream stepped forwards to conduct this First Martial Meeting was to a large extent because of Frost Dream. She also insisted that Frost Dream fight each and every great battle. And towards Lin Ming, Divine Dream had a faint premonition that his deep slumber was related to the Divine Seal Altar and wasn't as simple as it seemed from the outside.

Like this, Lin Ming would surely become a good match for Frost Dream.

After Xin Shenzi obtained the orders from above, he sped up the flow of time in the enchantment to 150 times.

Within a time enchantment, the more exaggerated the flow of time was, the more unstable the Laws within would be. In a time enchantment that ran 150 times faster than normal, it was hard to enlighten oneself on the Laws of the universe because they were simply too chaotic.

However, in his deep sleep, Lin Ming was absorbing the Laws that Empyrean Divine Seal had left behind. Because these Laws weren't related to the outside, there weren't any problems.

The four young jade bunny race girls attended to Lin Ming with utter care. As Lin Ming was sleeping, his face was determined and dashing, but his aura was also gentle and soft. From his appearance, it was hard to imagine the great dangers he was experiencing in his dream.

In the dreamland space, the sphere of energy within Lin Ming's inner world had expanded to the limit; it was ready to erupt at any given moment!

Once it erupted, the impact on Lin Ming's body would be unimaginable. If he couldn't withstand it then his inner world would completely collapse and he would die.

If he was able to withstand it, then after that true essence exploded, he could condense it into a black hole seed and thus begin the first crucial step to cultivating the Divine Seal Art!

Lin Ming had already condensed the energy sphere for an entire month. Now, he was still adjusting himself, waiting, optimizing the energy to most the accurate proportion. This was an extremely risky step. Without certain assurances, Lin Ming wouldn't play around with his own life.

As Lin Ming was cultivating without end, on the arena stage, Hang Chi and Frost Dream's climactic battle was soon about to start!

This battle certainly had its own gambling bet. Vast Universe Heavenly Palace had already revealed their compensation rate. Frost Dream's victory had a compensation rate of 1.3 and Hang Chi's victory had a compensation rate of 2.7.

Most people favored Frost Dream but there were also many people that favored Hang Chi. After all, Hang Chi was a very low profile individual, and in every match he fought so far he had always held back and never won in an excessive manner. Thus, it was hard to tell just where the limits of Hang Chi's strength lay.

Moreover, when Hang Chi had fought Lin Ming and given him a severe soul wound, making him fall unconscious until even now, this matter had caused many people to hold Hang Chi in even higher regard.

Lin Ming was a freak of nature after all; even Xiao Moxian had lost to him. For Hang Chi to defeat Lin Ming to such a degree was enough to prove how strong Hang Chi was.

Also, Frost Dream's compensation rate was simply far too low to have any fun. Even if one put down one billion they would only win 300 million; there simply wasn't any meaning to this. Thus, many people bet on Hang Chi.

"Junior-apprentice Sister Frost Dream, this poor monk greets you."

Hang Chi stood on the arena stage, bowing respectfully.

Frost Dream’s eyes were calm and cold, her clothes floating around her. Even facing Hang Chi in what could be called the most important battle of the First Martial Meeting, her mood didn’t change at all. It was as if nothing in this world was able to change that look of hers.

“Match, begin!”

As Vast Cosmos announced this, the several hundred million spectators in the arena all began to wildly cheer.

Hang Chi took several steps back as a massive golden Buddha chart appeared behind him. A golden spinning halo of light also appeared beneath his feet. This was the Wheel of Samsara!

From the very start, Hang Chi displayed the Wheel of Samsara. One could see from this just how highly he thought of Frost Dream.

“This poor monk has heard of Fairy Frost Dream’s renowned name for a long time. But, I have yet to have the good fortune of sparring with Junior-apprentice Frost Dream. This time can be considered as a wish fulfilled.”

In Hang Chi’s eyes, a rare tint of fighting spirit shined.

As an ascetic, Hang Chi usually lived a modest and pious life. He had a naturally low profile temperament that avoided disputes and grudges. But, he too was a young heroic elite. To meet a similar opponent, that was something to feel excited over. This was what it meant to find a perfect rival; there was nothing better than that.

Frost Dream’s entire body flowed with dreamy streams of water. She was using her divine dream space!

Up until now, Frost Dream had only used three moves to remain undefeated in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. One was illusions, the second was the Ruling Spirit Art, and the third was the divine dream space!

To deal with weaklings, Frost Dream only needed to glance at them to have them be lost in illusions and achieve instant victory.

But to deal with powerhouses like Xiao Moxian and Dragon Fang, she merely needed to envelop them in the divine dream space to win.

Hu – !

A cold air began to lift upwards. The entire timeless god stone arena was covered with a shimmering layer of condensed frost.

Frost Dream's body floated in the air. Her feet were bare and her icy blue hair danced around her. The divine dream space had covered the entire arena!

As long as one stepped in this space, that was the same as stepping into Frost Dream's 'dream'. Within this dream, Frost Dream was god. All within it had to withstand the judgment of her will!

Xiu xiu xiu!

Vicious nightmare beasts began to appear within the divine dream space, one after another, all of them madly roaring towards Hang Chi!

Hang Chi gathered his palms together, a smile on his face, "The divine dream space is truly magnificent. Then, this poor monk will make his move!"

As Hang Chi spoke, the Wheel of Samsara beneath his feet shot outwards, turning into a massive Dharmic wheel that hurtled into the sky towards Frost Dream.

Ka ka ka!

The Dharmic wheel rapidly spun. As it flew forwards, all of the nightmare beasts it passed were cut apart, their blood sprinkling down!

If any of these nightmare beasts were chosen, any one of them had the ability to enter the top 20 rankings of the First Martial Meeting. But in front of Hang Chi's Wheel of Samsara, they were nothing more than golems of mud, easily cut down!

In an instant, the Wheel of Samsara had arrived in front of Frost Dream!

The Wheel of Samsara was both a material attack and soul attack. But, Hang Chi was well aware that soul attacks would have no effect on Frost Dream. He could only rely on a material attack.

As the audience saw the Wheel of Samsara about to cut Frost Dream in half, many of her supporters, even though they knew that she had yet to reveal her true strength, cried out in sheer horror and alarm. This was still a transcendent divine might, and after being sent out by Hang Chi, its strength could be imagined.

In this critical situation, Frost Dream simply stretched out her slender right hand. "Infinite dreams, manifest a stone wall."

In that instant, endless starlight gathered into Frost Dream's hand and a common-looking stone wall rose straight from the ground!

From the start when there was nothing on the ground, it only took a thousandth of an instant for a 100,000 foot high wall to rise into the world!

In that moment, a 100,000 foot high cliff had appeared in front of Frost Dream!

This stone wall was impossibly high and dreadful. It emitted a vast and boundless aura. Atop this stone wall was a massive ghostly head that looked incomparably fierce. It looked down at the world and grinned demonically.

Compared to this terrifying stone wall, the Wheel of Samsara looked like nothing but a tiny glass plate in front of a solid oak door. It was simply unworthy of mentioning.

Bang!

The Wheel of Samsara cut into the stone wall. The Dharmic wheel spun around, crushing stone and sending shards of rubble flying everything, causing a tooth-aching sound to echo outwards. Finally, as the Dharmic wheel cut in just over halfway, it lost all power and thoroughly disintegrated!

As the audience saw this they were all shocked.

Just what kind of force was this!

The power of Hang Chi's Wheel of Samsara was evident to all. Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had both lost to this move! But in front of Frost Dream, it was so easily broken.

"Frost Dream is too terrifying. Within her divine dream space, she is invincible. That divine wall was instantly created by her using the Divine Dream Laws. If she can make a divine wall, she can also make divine swords, divine spears, and anything else she wishes. Whether it is attack or defense, she has reached the limit in all aspects! If I hadn't seen that Wheel of Samsara before, I would never have known how powerful it was. Even so, it is still useless in front of Frost Dream!"

"Yes, the divine dream space is far too heaven-defying. Anyone that dares to fight Frost Dream within it is sure to lose. Hang Chi should have other methods, but I think that whatever he does is likely to be useless..."

In just the first exchange, Frost Dream had suppressed Hang Chi's transcendent divine might. As she did this, she had revealed the great strength of the divine dream space. It was simply a perfect offensive and defensive system!

Chapter 1319 – Dreamsoul Immortal Melody

Chapter 1319 – Dreamsoul Immortal Melody

…

…

…

Domain-type martial skills were extremely rare for martial artists. To obtain just a single one could raise a martial artist's strength a great deal.

However, to those extreme geniuses that were able to stand on the stage of the First Martial Meeting, having a single domain wasn't unusual at all. There was Hang Chi's Samsara Domain, Ram Saber's Saber King Domain, Lin Ming's grandmist space, and so forth.

But until now, the undisputed number one domain was Frost Dream's divine dream space. Just seeing it made one feel as if there was no way to rival it.

This was also reasonable. Ignoring the fact that Frost Dream had the deepest cultivation, in terms of ranks of transcendent divine mights, only Lin Ming's grandmist space was able to compare with the divine dream space.

However, Lin Ming's grandmist space was incomplete and Frost Dream's divine dream space was complete. From this alone, one could see the clear difference between the two.

And Frost Dream wasn't old either. She was still three years younger than Hang Chi. This left everyone confused. Just what sort of unique lucky chance did she encounter or what sort of singular physique did she possess that allowed her to reach this step?

Within the divine dream space, that 100,000 foot divine wall had already disappeared. Hang Chi looked at Frost Dream and said with admiration, “The Divine Dream Domain truly lives up to its reputation. This poor monk can only try his best and use the Lotus Heart Bodhi.”

As Hang Chi spoke, his hands formed a lotus sign. From between his eyebrows, a golden relic slowly appeared, finally solidifying with a sparkling light.

As the Lotus Heart Bodhi appeared, Hang Chi’s aura changed. His body began to rise upwards. Behind his head, eight golden rings appeared. When combined with the brilliant golden light between his eyebrows, it was like Buddha had descended to the world.

Rumble rumble rumble!

A golden shining pagoda fell down from the clouds, firmly suppressing the area around Hang Chi. Even the divine dream space fiercely trembled as if it would burst apart at any moment.

This was Hang Chi’s Eight Sectioned Stupa.

Eight deities rushed out from the divine pagoda and a powerful domain space formed around Hang Chi. This was the Samsara Domain.

However, the Samsara Domain was too low in rank. It was suppressed by the Divine Dream Domain and limited in scope.

From the audience’s viewpoint, even if Hang Chi used the Eight Sectioned Stupa, he was still worse than Frost Dream. It would be extremely difficult for him to win!

Hang Chi waved his staff and the massive golden pagoda came pressing down towards Frost Dream. Like before, Frost Dream simply stretched out a slender hand. In that moment when the Eight Sectioned Stupa came crashing down, a faint blue haze appeared above Frost Dream’s head. This blue light rapidly expanded, nearly instantly transforming into an extremely large icy blue divine hand.

This hand was over a dozen miles tall. As it floated above the arena stage, it could be called a hand to cover the heavens!

Bang!

The Eight Sectioned Stupa heavily crashed into the divine hand. But, that hand steadily cradled the Eight Sectioned Stupa!

As the audience saw this they all let out cries of shock. In the legends, it was said that a pagoda-carrying Empyrean existed, carrying a pagoda in a single hand. His supernatural might had been unrivalled! And now, Frost Dream's massive hand formed from the divine dream space was just like that pagoda-wielding Empyrean, with seemingly equal force!

The Eight Sectioned Stupa was blocked by Frost Dream's giant hand. Even so, Hang Chi didn't panic. He began to murmur Buddhist sutras as the point between his eyebrows started to shine with a bright light. Buddhist symbols flew out from his body, recklessly dancing about in the air.

These Buddhist seals did not fly towards Frost Dream, but towards the area around the giant hand. They settled down in the air like little flags, forming a great sealing array formation.

"What is Hang Chi doing?"

"I don't know!"

The heroic young elites present simply weren't able to understand what was happening. Even those older masters weren't sure. Although their strength far surpassed Hang Chi's, in terms of perception and skill in observation, they weren't necessarily any better than an eternally talented youth like Hang Chi.

Hang Chi linked his fingers together, instantly forming dozens of seals. These seals submerged into the void, and in that moment, the giant hand in the sky began to dim down.

“Eight Sectioned Stupa, Eight Gates Golden Lock!”

Hang Chi shouted out loud. Then, those eight deities on the Eight Sectioned Stupa flew out, surrounding Frost Dream and turning into runic locks that sealed her within.

For a time, the divine dream space violently trembled as if it was about to be torn apart. There was even a fissure that ran down the giant hand, seeming as if it would burst apart at any moment.

As Frost Dream saw this, her normally indifferent complexion finally changed just the tiniest bit. A trace of surprise appeared in her eyes.

“You… have seen through my divine dream space?”

Frost Dream’s voice was tranquil and calm, beautiful to the senses. Her face was surrounded by a hazy mist, similar to clouds that covered the night moon. It was an ethereal and breath-stealing sight.

“Junior-apprentice Sister Frost Dream is too exaggerated. This poor monk does not possess the ability to see through the divine dream space. However, this poor monk believes that even though this Divine Dream Domain is the dreamland of Junior-apprentice Sister Frost Dream, and although Junior-apprentice Sister Frost Dream is like a god within this space, it is still impossible for you to create anything you wish or manipulate the Laws as you please. Otherwise, you simply would have needed to imagine an Empyrean and this little monk would have instantly lost!

“Thus, this little monk carefully observed Fairy Maiden and discovered that whether it was nightmare beasts that were created, or divine walls, or massive hands, the truth is that these things do not come from thin air… rather, you have used a special type of energy that exists within the divine dream space to form them. It seems this is called divine dream energy? And everything that surpasses the upper limits of this energy cannot be created.

“So, this poor monk used the Eight Sectioned Stupa to force Fairy Maiden to use over 90% of the divine dream energy available to resist it, gathering it in a single location within the divine dream space. Then, by locking it with these eight golden chains, the circulation of the divine dream energy has been sealed off. If so, this sealed off divine dream space has lost all significance."

Hang Chi's words were calm and unhurried. But after hearing this, the audience was completely dumbfounded. In just a few moves, Hang Chi had seen through the weakness of the divine dream space. The Eight Sectioned Stupa he sent out just now was not meant to attack Frost Dream, because he had already expected that an attack of this degree would be useless. Rather, his goal was to force Frost Dream to gather that divine dream energy within the divine dream space and then lock it with those eight golden chains!

If so, Frost Dream would be like a bird without wings, posing no threat at all.

This seemed simple, but if one didn't possess the powerful abilities and sealing arrays of Hang Chi, then even if they knew the weakness of the divine dream space they still wouldn't have been able to do anything about it.

Everyone praised Hang Chi's calm and keen fighting sense. This ability came from over 30 years of hard work and training!

"So that's how it is. Senior-apprentice Hang Chi's eyesight is indeed amazing. Even I have to admire your methods. However... my divine dream space is not limited to just this..."

As Frost Dream spoke, a lotus flower appeared beneath her feet. At the same time, she took out an icy blue zither from her spatial ring.

This zither was crystal clear, shimmering with a faint light as if it were carved from the purest ice. This zither had 18 strings and was also decorated with the carved image of a goddess.

This was clearly Frost Dream's magic tool. Before now, Frost Dream had only used a lotus flower weapon; she had never taken out this zither.

Frost Dream gently held the zither and sat down atop the lotus. Her slender fingers lightly caressed the zither strings.

A divine zither sound appeared, rushing like rivers and lakes, like a song from the highest heavens, leaving one lost in dreams.

“This song is called the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody. If I finish this song, I fear that Senior-apprentice Brother Hang Chi will have no chance of winning. That is, unless you can end my song.”

Frost Dream was also a very low-key individual. If she dared to say that Hang Chi would lose once this song was finished, then she naturally had full confidence in it.

Hang Chi smiled, “Junior-apprentice Sister Frost Dream’s zither skills are truly a wonder of the heavens. This poor monk would love to sit in repose and appreciate it, but if what Junior-apprentice Sister Frost Dream says is true and I will lose once this song is finished, then I can only make the first move. I apologize for trying to destroy such a beautiful song.”

Hang Chi summoned the Wheel of Samsara once more. The golden light between his eyebrows burned even brighter. This Wheel of Samsara was 10,000 feet in diameter, able to block the skies.

“Downfall of the Six Paths!”

Hang Chi formed a lotus sign with his hands. The relic between his eyebrows floated into the Wheel of Samsara. In that moment, six figures appeared within the Wheel of Samsara.

These six figures were all different.

Among them, there was one who was covered completely in blood. Their body was broken and torn and they revealed bloodstained bones in several places, as if they had crawled up from the depths of hell. There was one that had a fierce expression with three heads and six arms, the arms carrying a vicious halberd, large ax, copper hammer, iron needle, and other such cruel instruments of destruction and torture. There was even one whose body shined with a golden light and had a great golden circle floating behind them, just like a living Buddha.

These six figures came from the path of hell, the path of hungry ghosts, the path of beasts, the path of asura, the path of humanity, and the path of heaven. These were the six paths of samsara.

As these six figures appeared, they all hurtled towards Frost Dream. Frost Dream’s appearance was calm and unperturbed. Her hand stroked the zither and her fingers nimbly plucked at the strings. All sorts of incomparably marvelous and gorgeous sounds came into existence. These sounds gathered around Frost Dream, transforming into an extremely beautiful drawing.

This was a lush, verdant forest. Snow-capped mountains appeared in the distance. It was the beginning of spring, and with the melting of snow and ice, streams of bubbling water flowed down into springs. At this time it was already night. A round full moon hung high in the skies, sprinkling the world with a cold and alluring moonlight, wrapping the universe in strands of mercurial silver.

This beautiful scene was mesmerizing to the eyes, leaving one besotted. It was unimaginable that such a beautiful scene could be used to kill others.

“This is the Immortal Melody Pure Lands!”

Someone cried out from off the arena stage. In the mortal world, there were extremely skilled zither musicians who could use their songs to express the complex feelings and scenery of stories. They could use their music to depict beautiful images, making others feel fully immersed.

But in the world of martial arts, a musician with a deep cultivation could truly possess the ability to transform that zither song into the most beautiful scenery.

No longer was the imagination of the audience required. Rather, this scene clearly appeared. The zither music formed a domain, manifesting all the emotions and beauty of that song. This was the Immortal Melody Pure Lands!

"It's not that simple... this isn't just the Immortal Melody Pure Lands. Rather, Frost Dream has used the divine dream space and superimposed that with the Immortal Melody Pure Lands, creating a whole new domain, a domain that has a might which far surpasses the original divine dream space! This is a truly terrifying domain! Now, what Frost Dream is playing is not the sounds of the zither but sounds of the Dao!"

Among the spectators, there were many extremely experienced old masters. An old man sighed with emotion. The Divine Dream Domain was originally a dreamland domain skill, except that it was able to substantialize those dreams into reality.

As for the Immortal Melody Pure Lands, it was also the same. It was able to substantialize illusions.

With both complementing each other, once combined, their strength was hard to imagine.

Of course, wanting to fully fuse them together was extremely difficult. Unless one was extremely gifted, it was impossible to combine domain skills.

Chapter 1320 – The Final Pass

Chapter 1320 – The Final Pass

…

…

…

For Frost Dream to possess such talent was simply unbelievable. The hundreds of millions of people present had no idea how Frost Dream was so powerful. If a normal extreme genius was born in Divine Dream Heavenly Palace and was personally guided by Empyrean Divine Dream, they still wouldn't be able to grow to such a degree.

Frost Dream was far too mysterious; no one knew just what secrets she was relying on to grow.

Standing deep within the Immortal Melody Pure Lands, Frost Dream seemed as if she was in a completely different space and time. Even though she was standing there, it was like she was separated by the vast river of time, simply unable to be touched.

When Hang Chi's six phantoms broke into the Immortal Melody Pure Lands, water splashed into the skies. The phantoms from the three evil paths, the path of hell, the path of hungry ghosts, and the path of beasts, were all purified by these waters, their bodies instantly vanishing into nothing. As for the asura phantom that was neither good nor evil, it completely paused. Its once wild eyes lost all their light.

The phantoms of the path of heaven and path of mortals still rushed towards Frost Dream. As for Frost Dream, she simply switched her tune and a completely different sound emerged, turning into a brutal Buddha-slaying song, filled with murderous intent that rushed forth, splitting apart the earth and heavens!

A terrifying killing intent filled this music, as wild and crazy as a rabid wolf!

Even though the spectating young elites were dozens of miles away, in the face of this murder-filled sound, all of them found it hard to withstand this pressure. It was like their bodies could collapse and their organs break apart at any moment.

After the phantom from the path of mortals entered the Immortal Melody Pure Lands, it emitted a sound like shattering glass as it was forcefully shattered by that savage dirge!

As for the phantom from the path of heaven, it was clearly much stronger. It forcefully resisted that tremendous killing intent and shot towards Frost Dream!

Frost Dream’s expression was indifferent. As the phantom from the path of heaven rushed at Frost Dream, her hand swiped across the strings. Then, 18 strings shot out, and with a popping sound the phantom was pierced through 18 times! It emitted a painful growl before disintegrating with a loud explosion.

Like this, the six phantoms were all killed off by Frost Dream!

The entire process appeared easy and simple, as if there hadn’t been any difficulties at all. Moreover, when this was accompanied by the beautiful picturesque scene of the Immortal Melody Pure Lands, it was like Frost Dream wasn’t killing these phantoms, but purifying evil.

As all of this was done, Frost Dream’s expression was calm. She still quietly played her zither as before. All of her energy was placed into playing her zither, as if nothing around her was able to influence her.

She had played two-thirds of the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody. After the final third, the song would be completed!

Frost Dream said that as long as the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody was completed, Hang Chi would absolutely be defeated. Many people in the audience wanted to know; just what would happen once the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody reached its end?

“Does Hang Chi have some other method to stop the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody?”

Many people looked at Hang Chi, waiting to see if he had another final last resort.

“He shouldn’t. During Hang Chi’s battle with Lin Ming, he also used the Lotus Heart Bodhi. At that time, he could be described as going all-out against Lin Ming. Now, he even used the Six Paths of Samsara, a technique that is unique to the Lotus Heart Bodhi. I fear that even if Hang Chi uses another move, he still won’t be Frost Dream’s match.”

“I want to know just what will happen when the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody is finished. Frost Dream said that once the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody was over, Hang Chi would definitely be defeated.”

It had to be said that when the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody wasn’t filled with a Buddha-slaying killing intent, it was extremely pleasant to listen to, just like blissful sounds from heaven. Moreover, the Immortal Melody Pure Lands that were created were as beautiful as a poem. Just looking at it was intoxicating to the senses.

Everyone wanted to experience the complete Immortal Melody Pure Lands. However, Hang Chi might not be able to persist until the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody ended.

A thousand feet away, Hang Chi’s complexion was pale. In a situation where he used the Lotus Heart Bodhi along with Downfall of the Six Paths, that created a tremendous pressure on him.

After watching with his own eyes as Frost Dream’s Dreamsoul Immortal Melody began percolating with its final crescendo of killing intent, Hang Chi smiled, “I admit defeat.”

These words were not loud, but they spread through the entire audience.

The audience, although they had long expected this result, were still somewhat disappointed as they listened to Hang Chi. To not be able to listen to the complete Dreamsoul Immortal Melody and see just what phenomenon would occur at the end was truly regrettable.

“Frost Dream is too terrifying. Hang Chi actually couldn’t persist until Frost Dream finished the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody.”

“Frost Dream’s strength has already far surpassed those of her generation by an unbelievable degree. I really have no idea how she managed to cultivate to this state. I hear she is only 35 years old.”

35 years. Compared to the hundred million years of life that an Empyrean lived, that was a timespan unworthy of mentioning. If it were converted to mortal terms, that wouldn’t even be a baby that was an hour old. Her future was limitless!

In the contestant area, Jun Bluemoon quietly looked at Frost Dream, deep in thought. When he and Frost Dream fought, he had also been defeated!

At this time, an old voice sounded out in Jun Bluemoon’s mind. “Bluemoon, Frost Dream is no mortal. I fear that within the younger generation, there is no one that possesses the ability to defeat her. You do not need to think about it too much. Work hard and surpass Lin Ming and Hang Chi; that is the orthodox path. Those two are people you should still be able to overtake. As for Xiao Moxian, she will be extremely difficult to overcome. She is someone who is loved by destiny and her talent has also reached an incredibly high degree!

“Even that Dragon Fang isn’t someone you can underestimate. He may have lost to you this time, but that is because he has comprehended the Three Lives Pupils far too recently and is only able to open the state of All Existence to Void. Given enough time, even he may surpass you.”

This old man apparently understood a great deal about every situation. He even knew about the Three Lives Pupils.

“I understand, Old Sword.” Jun Bluemoon nodded. For him to refer to someone as Old Sword, it was clearly the artifact spirit in his divine sword.

Like this, the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting had basically ended. There was only a single match left in the tournament – that was Frost Dream against Lin Ming.

However, most of the audience didn’t care for this match. After all, to them this was nothing more than a passing match for formality’s sake, not to mention that Lin Ming might not even wake up.

Of course, there were also many people hoping that this match could be fought for several moves. These people were Frost Dream’s diehard fans. They were willing to watch all of Frost Dream’s matches, even if it was a match against Lin Ming that held no suspense at all.

After Frost Dream defeated Hang Chi, her fame had finally reached its peak!

Her mysteriousness, her holiness, her beauty, as well as her formidable strength, all of that together caused the countless young elites to go berserk for her.

Of course, all of these young disciples, no matter what background they came from, could only secretly yearn for and admire Frost Dream from afar. No one was truly stupid enough to imagine they could one day obtain her favor. Frost Dream was an untouchable goddess in their hearts. They were all well aware that even if they were 10 times stronger or their background was 10 times deeper, it would still be impossible to match up to Frost Dream. The difference was simply too great.

“Big Sister Frost Dream, have you seen? They’re going crazy outside!”

In the resting room of Vast Universe Empyrean Palace, Xiao Moxian spoke with exaggerated gestures. The First Martial Meeting finals had ended but people still hadn’t left Vast Universe World, in particular Frost Dream’s fanatical fans. They gathered around the resting area hoping to see her beauty once more.

Frost Dream only gently smiled. Towards all of these fans that were rabidly chasing after her, she had no feeling at all. She suddenly asked Xiao Moxian, “Little Sister, how is Lin Ming doing?”

“Lin Ming?” Xiao Moxian was startled. She had no idea why Frost Dream suddenly cared about Lin Ming so much. “I’m not too sure. He seems to be heavily wounded; he still hasn’t woken up in the time enchantment. Big Sister, how come you're worried about him so much?"

"No reason." Frost Dream lightly shook her head. The reason she asked about Lin Ming was only because her master Divine Dream had said to her that she must fight Lin Ming during this First Martial Meeting.

And at this time, within the time enchantment, Lin Ming had already reached the final stage of his training. He had stayed here for 500 days, nearly a year and a half in total.

When Lin Ming entered the time enchantment he was under 32 years of age. Now that a year and a half had passed, he was 33 years old.

Whether it was an unintentional coincidence or the hand of fate at work, the age of 33 years just happened to match with the number of the 33 Layered Heavens.

One year for one Layered Heavens!

"Let's begin..."

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He had now completed all of his preparations. The only step remaining was the final pass.

Within his mind, he had already deduced the Divine Seal Art again and again. He was revolving all of his energy according to the Divine Seal Art. The sphere of energy within his body formed from his true essence and world power began to rapidly inflate.

"Heretical God Tree!"

Hu – !

The phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared within Ming's inner world. The power of thunder and fire flashed atop the crown of the tree!

"Thunder heavenly tribulation, fire heavenly tribulation!"

Lin Ming had used two types of heavenly tribulation at once, plunging them both into that sphere of energy!

The power of thunder and fire were the wildest two of the five elements. Moreover, this was thunder heavenly tribulation and fire heavenly tribulation!

The sphere of energy was already extremely unstable. With the massive amount of energy contained within, if Lin Ming couldn't control it, then his inner world would be instantly destroyed. At that time, his fate could be imagined!

But now, Lin Ming still wasn't satisfied with the amount of energy before that explosion occurred. He even added thunder and fire heavenly tribulation to the mix!

Without a doubt, the explosion would be even fiercer. But, Lin Ming had seen the formation of a black hole, and he knew that the more energy and matter contained within that star before it erupted, the more violent the explosion would be, but at the same time, after that explosion, the gravitational suction force of the black hole that formed would be even more terrifying!

A black hole could swallow even a sun!

After the power of thunder and fire was absorbed by that sphere of energy, it became increasingly unstable, as if it were about to go crazy and explode at any moment.

"Still not enough!"

Lin Ming's eyes sharpened. All of his muscles were pulled tight and great drops of sweat were running down his forehead.

At this stage, even the smallest error would bring him beyond redemption!

The Divine Seal Art was a cultivation method created by Empyrean Divine Seal, so how could it be easy? If even someone with Lin Ming's talent was having so much trouble, then anyone else that attempted this would simply be committing suicide.

The energy became increasingly brutal. The sphere of energy was about to lose control at any moment!

“Three Essences as One!”

In one breath, Lin Ming poured his astral essence and spirit essence into his inner world. Three energies gathered as one, barely neutralizing the rampant energy and forming a delicate balance. This was already the final stage and this balance would only persist for a few breaths of time. But to Lin Ming, this was more than enough.

He took a deep breath, his eyes shining like stars burning in the deep dark night. “Bloom in full, beautiful flower…”

Chapter 1321 – Cultivation Great Success

Chapter 1321 – Cultivation Great Success

…

…

…

As Lin Ming was thinking this, he released complete control of the energy sphere, allowing it to erupt!

For a time, Lin Ming’s dark inner world was filled with an endlessly dazzling brilliance, like countless golden divine swords tearing apart all!

Rumble rumble rumble!

A terrifying energy rolled out like turbulent waves, rushing towards the edges of Lin Ming’s inner world!

For a time, Lin Ming’s inner world was forced to withstand an unimaginably great impact, nearly cracking in the process.

Ka ka ka ka ka!

Massive fragments of space were torn open. Lin Ming’s inner world was brutally torn asunder by this energy, expanding outwards. An unspeakable pain spread through his body. In that moment, he felt as if he were dying!

These changes were directly reflected on Lin Ming’s sleeping body. His main body suddenly shook as he spat out a mouthful of blood!

Bang!

The stone bed beneath Lin Ming collapsed, unable to withstand this power. Pieces of stone flew into the air!

Within the time enchantment, the four young jade bunny girls were frightened.

As they saw Lin Ming's face whiten, his body shake, and blood seep out of his mouth and nostrils, they were all panic-stricken.

Lin Ming had originally been severely injured and had been sleeping for the last year and a half. And now, if anyone saw this they would think he was on the verge of death.

Lin Ming's situation became increasingly bad. His face had turned deep purple and now blood was streaming from his ears and eyes!

The four jade bunny girls were scared silly. "Hu-hurry and report this to Senior Xin Shenzi! Lin Ming is about to die!"

A young girl said. She nervously fumbled with a sound transmitting talisman and lit it. Young girls of the jade bunny race were naturally good-hearted and gentle individuals. They had been watching over Lin Ming for the last year and a half, and now that they saw him have such an accident, they were certainly worried about him.

Just as the light of the sound transmitting talisman was extinguished, Lin Ming's body wildly shook. Because his clothes couldn't withstand the impact of his exploding inner world, they were all torn apart! These were top-grade saint artifacts! But under such an impact there was no possibility for these clothes to remain intact.

As Xin Shenzi heard this news he was shocked. He resolutely reported this to Empyrean Vast Universe and raced towards the time enchantment as fast as he could. Lin Ming's current status was very special. If something were to happen to him, that would be a loss to the entire martial world.

Deep within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, the light of a sound transmitting talisman flashed in front of Empyrean Vast Universe.

“Mm? Lin Ming is severely wounded and vomiting blood? His life is in critical danger?”

Empyrean Vast Universe thought that this message would be about Lin Ming awakening, but he never imagined this would happen.

“Divine Dream.” Empyrean Vast Universe turned to Divine Dream. Divine Dream faintly pressed her eyebrows together before saying, “Let us go and take a look.”

“That’s all we can do.” Empyrean Vast Universe nodded. Lin Ming’s situation was extremely complicated. It was hard to imagine just what was happening to him.

The two Empyreans flashed and in the next moment they had arrived in the time enchantment. They saw Lin Ming’s entire body colored a deep purple with blood leaking from his head. The stone bed underneath him had completely collapsed.

“Greetings, Honorable Master! And greetings, Senior Divine Dream!”

Xin Shenzi bowed towards Empyrean Vast Universe and Empyrean Divine Dream. As for the four jade bunny girls behind him, they all cried out in alarm at these words. How could they have expected that these two people that suddenly appeared in front of them would be two legendary Empyreans!

Two Empyreans had come to personally see Lin Ming, and they even came together?

The four young girls immediately kneeled on the ground, deeply bowing. The difference between an Empyrean and a Revolving Core or Divine Sea martial artist was even greater than the difference between an emperor and a commoner. It was reasonable for them to deeply bow like this.

“What’s wrong?” Empyrean Vast Universe frowned as he looked towards Xin Shenzi.

Xin Shenzi said, “This disciple has just probed Lin Ming. His inner world is completely chaotic right now, and even seems as if it will collapse. This disciple is useless and does not know what is happening. Although this disciple can forcefully stop this change, I believe that would be the incorrect decision. Thus, I quickly enveloped Lin Ming in another time enchantment to delay the changes in his inner world as much as possible before Honorable Master was able to arrive.”

If a time enchantment could accelerate time, it could also decelerate time. Just as Empyrean Vast Universe was about to step forwards to check himself, Empyrean Divine Dream flicked a single finger and melted away Xin Shenzi’s time enchantment.

“Divine Dream?”

Empyrean Vast Universe was surprised. However, he also knew that Divine Dream had her own reasons for doing things.

Empyrean Divine Dream shook her head, saying, “There is no need to panic. He should be fine…”

“Mm?” Empyrean Vast Universe was startled. He probed Lin Ming’s inner world with his senses and only felt that there were some unknown changes occurring within him.

His inner world had become unfathomably deep, even faintly seeming as if it would swallow his own senses.

Although this attractive force was very weak on Empyrean Vast Universe, it was still enough for him to draw back his senses. This was also because Empyrean Vast Universe’s divine sense was too strong. If it were a martial artist with a lower cultivation, then perhaps their divine sense really would be sucked in by this absorbing force.

“This inner world is…”

Empyrean Vast Universe was startled. Many martial artists had special bloodlines or physiques. For instance, Xiao Moxian’s phoenix true form or Hang Chi’s reincarnated Buddha.

And every so often, there would be those with strange inner worlds and souls. These variation souls and variation inner worlds weren't too rare. Empyrean Vast Universe suspected that Lin Ming was also in this sort of situation.

"Inner world variation?"

This thought instantly raced through Empyrean Vast Universe's mind. If so, then Lin Ming really was too heaven-defying. If a talent like him also had a variation inner world, how could other geniuses still live?

At this time, within the samsara dreamland, Lin Ming was still meditating in that vast and boundless space of nothingness. His complexion became increasingly pale but his halted breathing had subsided.

His inner world had been swept over by a wild storm with everything left in a chaotic mess. Besides the Heretical God Tree, all of the mountains and rivers and lakes and plains were all utterly destroyed!

However, above this region, there was an invisible anomaly in space. As light passed near a certain point in the void, it curved, bending around it. Unless one was skilled in the Space Laws it would be impossible to see this, because this point was hidden in the void, twisting all light around it.

This spot was the black hole seed that Lin Ming had condensed with the Divine Seal Art!

A black hole was the most terrifying celestial body in the universe. There was almost nothing that could destroy a black hole. If a black hole fell into a sun, it would eventually swallow that sun, ultimately causing an unimaginable explosion!

Lin Ming had simulated the explosion of a fire star with his true essence and then finally condensed it into a black hole seed. Although it was far from truly achieving the level of an actual black hole, as Lin Ming's cultivation rose, the total energy within that black hole seed would become higher and higher and the traction force would become increasingly terrifying until the moment when all space and time would be sucked into it, finally evolving into an end point of all space and time!

The moment that Lin Ming's black hole seed had truly formed, he seemed to have opened wide a great and mystical door before him.

As this door opened, the aura of the Great Dao blew towards him with indescribable glory!

This aura of the Great Dao had an essential difference from the baptism of the Heavenly Dao Laws one experienced during the crossing of Ninefall. This aura contained the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens and stood at almost the highest point of all Laws.

The aura of the endless Great Dao surged into Lin Ming's inner world. Then, his inner world that was reduced to rubble and ruins by the explosion of true essence and energy began to glow with reborn vitality.

The explosion of that sphere of energy had been far too terrifying. Even though Lin Ming's foundation was extremely solid, there were still all sorts of ruptured areas within his inner world.

Now, all of these damaged places were being repaired by this strength.

The fragmented rubble fused into the earth. New mountains rose and new rivers began to flow. An incomparably rich world power condensed, forming origin energy clouds in the skies. Because these clouds were too thick and heavy, they began to rain down with drops of origin energy.

This origin energy rain gathered into the dry streams and channels as it fell, turning into fresh and wonderful currents.

As the land was watered, plants began to sprout and colorful spirit flowers started to bloom.

In that moment, Lin Ming's strength rapidly climbed, reaching unprecedented heights!

Hu – !

Afterwards, that vast aura swept out from Lin Ming's body, recklessly spinning around him like heavy mercury!

As Empyrean Vast Universe felt this boundless aura, he was startled. This was clearly the aura of the 33 Layered Heavens' Great Dao. Empyrean Vast Universe had obtained the remnant soul of the ancient Divine Seal Altar's artifact spirit. It was impossible for him to misidentify this aura.

The two Empyreans as well as Xin Shenzi were naturally unaffected by this aura; at most, they were slightly amazed by the vast glory of it. But behind these three masters, the four young jade bunny girls that were kneeling were baptized by this aura. They fell into a trance, feeling reborn.

In just several breaths of time, they had greatly benefited. They even faintly felt as if they would break through to the next boundary.

"This… this is…"

The four young girls flushed red. This was a tremendous lucky chance. It was no longer a question of helping them break through to the next realm, but instead caused the Laws within their bodies to change on a qualitative level. This meant that in the future, their martial arts achievements would reach even further heights.

They were all excited to the point of wanting to hop around, but with the presence of two Empyreans here, they stilled themselves.

Xin Shenzi smiled in understanding, "These last 500 days have been hard on you. This can be considered payment in kind, the cause and effects of this world."

Xin Shenzi didn't know what happened to Lin Ming, but what he could be certain about was that Lin Ming had undoubtedly experienced a massive lucky chance. His strength had rapidly risen by leaps and bounds!

This sort of lucky chance was bewildering. Just a faint aura from Lin Ming's breakthrough alone was enough to greatly benefit these four young jade bunny girls and increase their potential.

Xin Shenzi looked towards Empyrean Vast Universe, but Empyrean Vast Universe was actually looking at Divine Dream. He had no idea what was happening within Lin Ming.

"Is this because of the Divine Seal Altar?"

Empyrean Vast Universe always had this guess in his mind. He had refined a replica of the ancient Divine Seal Altar using a fragment of its artifact spirit, and this replica also contained the mystical charm of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens.

Now, it appeared that the comprehensions Lin Ming gained from mounting the Divine Seal Altar finally began to transform into true strength today!

Chapter 1322 – Awakening And Exiting

Chapter 1322 – Awakening And Exiting

…

…

…

Empyrean Divine Dream gently nodded, saying, “When Lin Ming climbed up the Divine Seal Altar’s 33 steps, he withstood the baptism of the ancient Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens contained within it. This baptism greatly affected him, but because the time was too short, the influence from the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens had to manifest. As time passed, this advantage will become increasingly obvious.”

Empyrean Vast Universe shook his head as he heard Divine Dream’s confirmation. He said, “This is the flow of destiny. I am far from being able to compare to Lin Ming. Although I have luck, I lack destiny. The result is that my work was given as a gift to this junior Lin Ming…”

As Empyrean Vast Universe spoke of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens, he couldn’t help but deeply sigh. At the start, he really had been able to obtain a fragment of the ancient Divine Seal Altar. In terms of luck, Empyrean Vast Universe was not bad at all.

However, even though Empyrean Vast Universe meditated on the Divine Seal Altar fragment for many years afterwards, he was only able to touch upon the threshold of the 33 Layered Heavens’ Laws, and wasn’t able to transform that into his own strength. As for the Divine Seal Altar fragment, he had later taken that as a foundation to create an Empyrean spirit treasure.

This harvest was not worthy of mentioning in comparison to Lin Ming.

If one entered a treasure mountain and returned empty-handed, that was not because one's luck was bad but because one's destiny was lacking.

Luck was only a part of destiny. Talent, will, perception, mentality, soul – all of those were equally important parts of destiny.

Luck only provided opportunities. Whether one could grasp those opportunities depended on themselves.

Empyrean Divine Dream slowly said, "Lin Ming's destiny is truly amazing. If this was in the past, then Lin Ming would eventually develop into a leader amongst Empyreans. And now, in this great world, Lin Ming even has the smallest of chances of surpassing the boundary of an Empyrean and becoming a True Divinity!"

"True Divinity!? That's too exaggerated!"

Empyrean Vast Universe had a great response as he heard this. Although he knew that Lin Ming possessed heaven-defying talent, the realm of True Divinity was something that existed only in myths. Empyrean Vast Universe didn't even believe that someone like Xiao Moxian had the chance of becoming a True Divinity in the future.

Even if Empyrean Divine Dream said 'smallest of chances', Empyrean Vast Universe still couldn't accept this. Was becoming a True Divinity really that easy?

"Throughout the endless epochs, how many Empyreans have failed to become a True Divinity? Divine Dream, even you, someone who has achieved the peak in every aspect, aren't you also unable to take that final step into True Divinity? Your praise of Lin Ming seems rather too high. Even for someone as talented as Lin Ming, I do not believe that in the past billion years, amongst the infinite lives born in the Divine Realm and the lower realms, there hasn't been someone similar to him. Aren't Xiao Moxian and Frost Dream also similar in comparison?

"Let alone the last billion years, even for the last 3 billion years there has never been a True Divinity supreme being that has appeared. There have only been stories, and these stories are far too exaggerated, without any credibility at all."

Empyrean Vast Universe was clearly very sensitive to the term True Divinity. This was also reasonable. In the legends, it was said that those that stepped into True Divinity could refine stars, crush planets, and there were even fables that said that True Divinities could live as one with the world, living in everlasting immortality!

The former wasn't considered much. Although the increase in strength seemed wonderful, it was still within the realm of acceptability. After all, a powerful Empyrean could already crush planets. Of course, that was only crushing planets. If they wanted to crush suns that were tens of thousands of times larger than a planet, even an Empyrean was far lacking.

To chase after a stronger strength was the wish and drive of all martial artists. But, what truly enticed an Empyrean was the promise that they could live in perpetuity!

This attraction was simply too great to an Empyrean.

When one cultivated to the realm of an Empyrean, they truly held control of a world and dominated the lives of trillions upon trillions of people. With all of these before them, how could they willingly accept the end of their own mortality and turn into dust?

The path of martial arts was to struggle with the heavens. Every time one made a breakthrough, their lifespan would increase several times over. This was a tremendous lure to many martial artists, driving them to painstakingly cultivate and also one of the greatest motivations that caused them to constantly risk their lives in the most dire of dangers.

Divine Dream said, "In the past, there indeed might not have been this possibility. But now, in this universe, there truly exists this hope. Not only does Lin Ming have this hope, but so does Xiao Moxian; one could even say her hopes are much greater."

As Divine Dream spoke like this, Empyrean Vast Universe seemed as if he wanted to say something, but eventually didn't. Even though he was an Empyrean, he always felt that speaking in terms of the universe seemed far too remote. A True Divinity… was that something that could truly be reached in this world?

Empyrean Vast Universe was silent for some time before saying, "According to what you say, do you happen to think that Lin Ming might be able to defeat Frost Dream?"

Empyrean Vast Universe also felt the mysterious and exceptional presence around Frost Dream. To every heroic young elite, defeating Frost Dream was a near-impossibility.

Divine Dream slowly said, "Frost Dream surpasses the younger generation by far too much. To compare Lin Ming to Frost Dream is unfair to begin with…"

She only spoke to here before not speaking again. Frost Dream was personally raised by Divine Dream. As for what Frost Dream's limits were, only Divine Dream would know.

Frost Dream had already surpassed the concept of 'young elites'.

At this time, on the ruined stone bed, Lin Ming violently coughed. Every cough was followed by fresh blood.

Divine Dream glanced at Lin Ming and flicked a finger, tossing out a crystalline pill. This pill was glittering and transparent, exuding a cold air that made it seem as if it were carved from ice.

The pill slowly flew in front of the four young jade bunny girls. Without any emotion in her voice, Divine Dream said, "Feed this pill to Lin Ming. Tell him that two hours from now, his match with Frost Dream will officially begin.

"Remember, he only has two hours." As Divine Dream spoke, she floated away. Empyrean Vast Universe also stepped forwards and disappeared.

At this time, Lin Ming slowly opened his eyes. The first image to enter his eyes was those four curious jade bunny girls…

During his 500 days of sleep, Lin Ming had a hazy understanding of what was happening outside. He hadn't fallen into the 100 Cycles of Samsara without being able to extract himself. Although Lin Ming hadn't been able to compare with Hang Chi, the difference hadn't been too great. He had the ability to resist the Wheel of Samsara, and although he had fallen unconscious, the truth was that he had voluntarily allowed himself to fall into such a state. Thus, Lin Ming knew that these four young girls had looked after him for these past 500 days.

"Thank you."

Lin Ming softly said. Young girls of the jade bunny race were docile and gentle, with a timid personality. As Lin Ming spoke to them, they were a bit nervous. What sort of character was Lin Ming? The difference between them was like the heavens and earth!

They simply weren't able to accept this thanks.

"S-senior-apprentice Brother Lin, please don't say that, you will scare us to death." A young jade bunny girl said, flustered, "Yes… yes, that's right, Senior Divine Dream left you a message just now… you need to swallow this pill and… two hours from now… you must go to the arena stage and fight with Senior-apprentice Sister Frost Dream!"

"Fight with Frost Dream…"

Lin Ming rubbed his forehead. During that long dream, he felt as if he had lived a lifetime of tens of thousands of years. As he recalled it, even the First Martial Meeting seemed a bit distant in his mind.

"Mm… that's right. I still haven't fought with Frost Dream yet…"

Lin Ming clenched his fists together. He could feel that his own fists were wet with his sweat and blood, sticky and viscous. He could also feel that he had never been as strong as he was now!

…….

When Lin Ming woke up, a considerable amount of time had already passed since the conclusion of Frost Dream and Hang Chi's battle. Over 90% of the audience was still there, not yet having left Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. However, just under 10% of the audience had begun to leave, either having ridden their spirit ships or were preparing to leave Vast Universe World.

And at this time, Vast Universe Heavenly Palace sent out news of Frost Dream's upcoming match…

"What!? Frost Dream is coming on stage to compete once more?"

On a spirit ship that had taken off, some people heard this message passed down from Vast Universe Heavenly Palace.

"That's too great! Let's return and watch the match before we leave."

Many of Frost Dream's fans were crazily excited as they heard that Frost Dream was about to come back on stage. After Frost Dream and Hang Chi's battle, she had entered the palace and had yet to emerge. This left many of her fans that were crowding around the contestant palaces disappointed. But now that they learned they had the chance to see her again, they were definitely delighted.

"Who is she fighting?" A middle-aged man lazily asked. He was the Elder leading these young disciples.

"She's fighting against Lin Ming!" The young elite from before said.

"Lin Ming? He's finally woken up? I heard that he's been in a deep sleep for over a year. If he wakes up now, then it won't be easy…" The middle-aged man said, a joking tone in his voice.

No one doubted Lin Ming's talent. But in joining the First Martial Meeting, he had damaged his soul because he was trying to show off. He had been unconscious for over a year now and almost didn't wake up. This caused everyone to feel that it was quite funny.

If one were to describe this behavior in a pleasant manner, then they would say he didn't fear the strong and never gave up.

If one were to describe this behavior in a coarse manner, then that would be forced to the edge by their own behavior and lacking in foresight.

He had nearly died in a martial arts contest; was there any genius so stupid? Luckily he hadn't died, otherwise that would really have been the greatest joke of all.

Although Lin Ming had woken up, many people guessed that there were still some hidden wounds left over. Even with all the precious soul recovery medicines available at an Empyrean Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming had still slept for over a year. How could his soul wounds be light?

"He's just an impulsive little baby boy, and he also just started recovering from a severe injury. I think that Frost Dream should fight with someone from the older generation instead. If that happened… that might be worth watching."

Hang Chi was much stronger than Lin Ming but he had still lost to Frost Dream. He hadn't even been able to last until the end of Frost Dream's Dreamsoul Immortal Melody before admitting defeat, let alone someone like Lin Ming. Lin Ming likely wouldn't even be able to block a few moves from Frost Dream in his peak state, and he was wounded now too.

In the eyes of most people present, this battle would likely end before it started. This caused many of them to lose interest in seeing this fight. As for Frost Dream's fans, they went to see her, not the fight itself.

The youth laughed, saying, “In any case, I’m going to look at Frost Dream, not her match. Then again, whoever Frost Dream competes with, it will still be the same. Who can possibly defeat her? I must say that I should thank Lin Ming. If he didn’t wake up on time then we wouldn’t be able to see her fight again!”

Chapter 1323 – Frost Dream's Identity

Chapter 1323 – Frost Dream's Identity

…

…

…

News of Lin Ming and Frost Dream's upcoming match spread like wildfire. Many heroic youths that worshipped Frost Dream immediately rushed back to the martial arena in droves, hoping to see Frost Dream's figure once more. They would be satisfied with just a glance.

Most of these people were young men; very few were women or seniors. The latter people weren't in a hurry to return to the martial arena at all. They assumed that it would be a complete wreck. If a fight couldn't even last for three breaths of time, then there really wasn't any meaning at all.

There were even some people that went to ride their spirit ships to return home. In their opinion, the First Martial Meeting had ended, and this last match was only going through the moves. It could even be said that this final match would ruin the overall prestige of the tournament. Hang Chi's battle against Frost Dream had already been spectacular enough. After watching something like that, if they were to watch someone get immediately rolled over by Frost Dream then that would leave a horrible aftertaste.

Finally, only around a quarter of the people, around 100 million, were left in the arena. A great deal of the audience stands were empty.

"Lin Ming has finally awakened…"

Not too far from the stage, Jun Bluemoon looked at Lin Ming. He had felt it was strange and unexplainable that Lin Ming's soul had been damaged. His intuition told him that perhaps what happened Lin Ming's soul wasn't something as simple as an injury. There was likely some secret to his soul.

"His aura is different."

Jun Bluemoon was extremely sensitive to changes. Even if Lin Ming was hiding his strength, like a dust-laden divine spear not revealing the faintest glint of its sharp edge, Jun Bluemoon could still feel the difference in Lin Ming's body.

He could even feel that Lin Ming's body was like a miniature universe, giving off a profound feeling beyond comprehension.

"That boy called Lin Ming is quite good. In this last year and a half, his body has truly changed. It seems he's managed to turn his misfortune into a blessing… but… against that little girl Frost Dream, anything he does is useless."

From within Jun Bluemoon's mind, the voice of an old man echoed out, his words full of whimsy.

"Old Sword, are you sure?"

"Of course! Who do you think that Frost Dream is? Do you think any ordinary genius can reach Frost Dream's level of strength at the late Divine Sea realm? Is Hang Chi not strong? He comes from Mount Potala, a sect with an inheritance greater than Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. In fact, you can even call it the strongest background of all. Moreover, he possesses the golden body of the reincarnated Buddha, something that appears only every several tens or even hundreds of millions of years. He has cultivated an unbreakable diamond Vajra body and even possesses the Lotus Heart Bodhi, the relic of Buddha. From his birth, he began training with all sorts of secret skills and his body was washed and transformed with all sorts of precious medicines. In his 30 years of torturous cultivation, he abstained from sin and worldly desires and possesses a pure body. His temperament, his talent, his perception – there is nothing that isn't perfect. He can be considered at the peak of all geniuses, and yet against Frost Dream, he lost all the same."

As the old man spoke to here, he curled his lips as if he wasn't feeling too well about something.

"Frost Dream is truly powerful. I am far from being comparable to her." Jun Bluemoon said. In the face of facts, he had to confess that the difference between him and Frost Dream was far too great.

"Humph, don't look down on yourself so much. As the apprentice of this old man, your future accomplishments will be at least at the peak Empyrean boundary. I even hope that you can borrow this tumultuous era to attack the realm of True Divinity! Although it is hard, it is not impossible. Of the First Martial Meeting's top six, only Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian just faintly surpass you in talent. As for everyone else, including even Hang Chi, you don't need to fear them at all. And for Frost Dream… well, if I'm not wrong, she is simply the same as Empyrean Divine Dream. In order to surpass her boundaries, Divine Dream took the sharpest blade and forcefully sundered her divine soul in half, allowing that half to reincarnate and thus producing Frost Dream! She wants to train Frost Dream to the peak Empyrean realm, and then the two of them can fuse back together. With the deep cultivations of two peak Empyreans condensed as one, she wishes to take that momentum and break through the boundary of True Divinity in a single go! That woman is truly ambitious and courageous!"

As Old Sword said this, Jun Bluemoon's mind shook. "Mm? Old Sword, are you saying that Frost Dream is the reincarnated half of Divine Dream's divine soul?"

"Highly likely. Their soul fluctuations are nearly the exact same! However, unless Divine Dream is in front of me, I cannot confirm this. I was only able to sense her aura from behind a great enchantment. My current injuries are simply too heavy. Otherwise, if I still had the strength of my heydays, I wouldn't need to fear her at all. But, if my guesses are wrong, how can Frost Dream be so strong? She is simply a replica of Divine Dream during her youth.

Moreover, because she had to take far less detours, her strength should even be greater than what Divine Dream was like during the same time of her youth!”

As Old Sword said this, Jun Bluemoon finally recalled that there were many people who said that Frost Dream was far too similar to Empyrean Divine Dream.

The same temperament, the same mystical aura that surrounded them, the same perfection, and even their same formidable strength!

If Frost Dream were to stand side-by-side with Divine Dream, then if one ignored the difference in their cultivations, they would seem like a pair of twin sisters.

“So that’s how it is. If Frost Dream is a young Divine Dream and even possesses all of Divine Dream’s memories, then no one can compare with her! In terms of just understanding the path of martial arts and the height in Laws, she has already surpassed all boundaries of logic.”

“Heh, if she had the memories then she would be greater than this.” Old Sword shook his head, “That reincarnation technique that Divine Dream used is a double-edged sword. When Frost Dream reincarnated, she had to experience the confusion of rebirth, and thus her previous memories were forgotten, like treasure deeply buried in her mind. She will have to slowly restore these memories over time.

“Even so, Frost Dream’s strength will increase like she’s cheating, all the way up in a straight line! For a junior to contend wither? That is difficult! Difficult! Difficult!”

Old Man said difficult three times in a row. He wasn’t a humble person, but even he didn’t believe that his own apprentice, Jun Bluemoon, had even the slightest chance of defeating Frost Dream. At least, before Jun Bluemoon became an Empyrean.

Rather, it should be said that Jun Bluemoon could only compete with her once he reached the peak Empyrean realm. Only then would he possess the ability to surpass Frost Dream. Of course, Frost Dream might even have fused back together with Divine Dream at that point, immediately stepping into the realm of True Divinity!

“So that’s how it is. It seems this battle between Lin Ming and Frost Dream wasn’t fair to begin with. I can’t imagine that any sort of miracle will occur.” Jun Bluemoon said, regretfully. If Lin Ming and Hang Chi fought again, then Lin Ming might be able to defeat Hang Chi. But to defeat Frost Dream? That was far too difficult.

Old Sword sneered, “If breaking through to the Divine Transformation realm is equal to a mortal’s ceremony of adulthood, then this tournament itself is nothing but a gift that Divine Dream prepared for Frost Dream for her to become an adult. Frost Dream was destined to become the leading heroine of the First Martial Meeting from the start, and you are only a supporting actor to make her shine even brighter.”

There was still an hour until the match began. For this final match, Vast Universe Heavenly Palace opened one final gambling bet.

Frost Dream’s victory had a compensation rate of 1.01, and Lin Ming’s victory had a compensation rate of 80.

This compensation rate wasn’t an exaggeration!

If one bet on Frost Dream, they would only earn 1% of their bettings if they were correct. This was truly a speechless and paltry rate. Moreover, there was also a limit on this gambling bet so one couldn’t raise it to an unlimited degree.

But that was how things were. Nearly everyone bet on Frost Dream to win. Although they wouldn’t earn much, something was better than nothing.

“Returning only 1%? Isn’t this just the welfare of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace? It seems that they won far too much wealth during this First Martial Meeting!”

“That’s right. Because of Lin Ming I already lost a great deal of violet sun stones. That fellow’s fight with Xiao Moxian truly ruined many people’s pockets! However, hehe, even if it’s only 1% profit this time, I will still bet on Frost Dream.”

In the view of many people, this gamble was in truth just Vast Universe Heavenly Palace giving back some of the incalculable wealth they had earned. This could also be considered a tiny gift given back to the spectators at the conclusion of the First Martial Meeting.

“1:80? That seems a bit too exaggerated to me.” Lin Ming traced his chin, a self-deprecating smile on his face. Before this, he had already bet a great deal that he would end up in the top three rankings. This time, he didn’t mind having a little fun with a few more nine sun jades.

Lin Ming finally put down two nine sun jades on his own victory. Even he didn’t have full faith he could defeat Frost Dream. Two nine sun jades was enough for a lucky bet. If he lost then he lost, it wouldn’t be much at all.

The full two hours soon passed. Lin Ming stood on the arena stage, his breath steady, his hands gently caressing the Phoenix Blood Spear, and his mind as calm as a placid lake.

Not too far away from him stood Frost Dream. She was only casually standing there, but her entire body seemed wreathed in a cold smoke. Her temperament was ethereal and otherworldly, beautiful without flaw. She was like a lotus of ice floating in the fog. Just looking at her, one could feel a cold energy rush towards them.

“Lin Ming, you can do it!”

“That’s right! Lin Ming, you’ve got to try your best! Try and continue for at least three moves! If you lost immediately then that would be too boring!”

Many of Frost Dream’s fans were shouting out words of encouragement towards Lin Ming. They hoped that Lin Ming could fight longer so they could see Frost Dream more.

Lin Ming ignored all of these cheers. He only lightly bowed to Frost Dream in accordance with the conventions of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. Then, he raised his spear.

Frost Dream’s expression was serene. Beneath her feet, countless ice crystals gathered together, forming an illusory ice lotus. This ice lotus slowly revolved.

As Lin Ming looked at this ice lotus, he felt as if his thoughts were been sucked into its gentle spinning. This ice lotus was personally created by Empyrean Divine Dream!

Ruling Spirit Art!

As Vast Cosmos announced the start of the match, the ice lotus beneath Frost Dream's feet instantly scattered. Every petal was composed of seven ice crystals, each as thin as a cicada's wing. However, they shined with a cold light, overflowing with a thick killing intent!

This was Divine Dream Heavenly Palace's battle spirit technique. By manipulating objects with one's battle spirit, one could attack from afar with weapons.

Woosh!

Countless ice lotus crystals joined together in the air, forming three divine swords that chopped towards Lin Ming!

Although this was only a casual attack from Frost Dream, it contained a terrifying might. It was weaker than Hang Chi's Wheel of Samsara, but it wasn't that much worse. It wasn't easy to defend against at all.

Everyone thought that Lin Ming would begin to summon the phantom of the Heretical God Tree or would use Heavenly Dao Judgment. Only like that would he be able to suppress Frost Dream's Ruling Spirit Art. But at this time, Lin Ming simply took a step backwards as a brilliant flame lit up on the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Fire Laws?

No one thought that Lin Ming would use just his Fire Laws alone to resist Frost Dream's Ruling Spirit Art. That was too brazen a move!

At the moment the ice crystal swords arrived, Lin Ming thrust out his spear. The first five levels of the Fire Laws completely fused together. This attack even contained a hint of yang flames!

The sixth level Concept of the Fire Laws – Yang Flames. Even if Lin Ming had barely traced upon this threshold and was still incomparably far from truly stepping into it, this still allowed the might of his strike to reach near-infinite proportions!

Bang!

With an explosive sound, the spear light exploded. But, Frost Dream's ice crystal swords were also destroyed!

"He blocked it!?"

The audience was incredibly astonished. It wasn't strange for Lin Ming to block those ice crystal swords, but what was amazing was that he had done this by just relying on just the Fire Laws.

"If I'm not wrong, then... Lin Ming's Fire Laws... have touched upon the sixth level Concept! How is this possible!?!?"

Chapter 1324 – Two Unrivalled Geniuses

Chapter 1324 – Two Unrivalled Geniuses

…

…

…

When Lin Ming fought with the Monster Prince and Dragon Fang, his Fire Laws had reached large success of the fifth level Concept.

In terms of Laws, Lin Ming was inferior to Dragon Fang. In fact, if it weren’t for the existence of the Heretical God Tree, his Laws would be even worse than the Monster Prince’s. After all, what he comprehended were the strong Space and Time Laws.

Now, after just several days of time and a deep slumber of a year and a half, Lin Ming’s Laws had reached perfection of the fifth level and he had also traced upon the threshold of the sixth level Laws.

This was a simply inconceivable accomplishment. Moreover, he had been sleeping within a time enchantment where the Laws were all in chaos. In this situation, how could he even comprehend the Laws?

The large success of the fifth level Concept was only a single step away from reaching perfection, there were countless Divine Lord powerhouses who had failed to cross this step in their lifetimes.

“What happened to Lin Ming? Was he hiding his strength before?”

“He lost to Hang Chi so miserably, so how could he possibly have hidden his strength? He must have rapidly improved in this short period of time.”

"That's impossible. His soul was injured before this and he had even fallen into a deep slumber, so how could he still cultivate?"

Many people found this hard to believe. Lin Ming's talent had already aroused the envy of many heroic young elites. When Lin Ming had fought Hang Chi, many of these people believed that he was trying to show off, thus he received a deep injury which caused him to sleep for a year and a half and even possibly left behind hidden wounds. Because Lin Ming did something too stupid, these envious young elites all looked at him in a joking light.

After a year and a half, Lin Ming appeared on the arena stage and he had even made a breakthrough in the Laws. How could any of those who envied him accept this?

Someone suddenly said, "Lin Ming's Laws might have been close to reaching perfection in the fifth level to begin with. With so many top tier geniuses in the First Martial Meeting, his comprehension of Laws was among the most disappointing. Now that he finally managed to catch up to everyone else, this isn't strange at all.

Although these words were said with a sour taste, the facts were laid before them all. Lin Ming had indeed been weak in the aspect of Laws, but now his Laws were comparable to Dragon Fang's.

"Just wait and see. His Laws have improved but it won't change the result of this battle. Lin Ming's disparity with Frost Dream is too great! Let alone perfection of the fifth level Laws, even if he reached perfection of the sixth level Laws he still wouldn't be able to make up for their difference."

Besides a few Empyreans of the highest levels, no one else knew of Frost Dream's identity. But of those people that came to watch the First Martial Meeting, there were always those old fellows with an immeasurably deep vision and judgment. Although they didn't know that Frost Dream was the reincarnated half of Divine Dream's primordial spirit, they could confirm that Frost Dream had some unique secret. She was an invincible enigma.

In this battle, no one believed in Lin Ming. Even Jun Bluemoon's master Old Sword, Vast Universe, or even Lin Ming himself, didn't have full faith that he could win.

On the arena stage, Frost Dream's eyes flashed with slight surprise. Although she knew that Lin Ming's recent deep sleep was not as simple as it seemed, she never imagined that his strength would suddenly rise to such a degree.

"You have been cultivating for this last year and a half?"

An ephemeral true essence sound transmission spread to Lin Ming's ears, like a clarion hosanna sung from an immortal paradise.

"Yes." Lin Ming confidently replied.

"Cultivating in a 1:100 time flow time enchantment?"

Frost Dream was thoughtful for a moment. If one cultivated in a time enchantment, there wouldn't be a problem if they gathered true essence to make a breakthrough. However, there would be distortions in the Laws they comprehended. This was the difference from cultivating outside. Moreover, one's age would increase all the same within the time enchantment and the person would use up their life. Unless there was a unique circumstance, geniuses would not cultivate in a time enchantment.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin is truly special. Allow me to experience the achievements of your cultivation." Frost Dream said. Then, she lifted her hand. From her palm, a rippling wave surged out, changing the world. Countless ice lotuses seemed to bloom all around Frost Dream.

The arena vanished. Lin Ming and Frost Dream arrived above a beautiful paradise.

This was the divine dream space.

After her first probing move, Frost Dream displayed her signature domain – the divine dream space!

Within the divine dream space, who could fight with her?

Within this space, Frost Dream held absolute control!

“Frost Dream is finally being serious!”

Everyone looked at Lin Ming. They didn’t think Frost Dream would use this move so early but would hold back for the first several moves against Lin Ming. But now, after just a single probing attack, Frost Dream had released the divine dream space.

Perhaps this even signaled that the match would end soon.

“This is the divine dream space… I see, so the feeling of standing within the divine dream space is like this.”

Although Lin Ming had seen the divine dream space in action before, this was his first time experiencing it himself.

After standing in the divine dream space, Lin Ming felt illusions grow thick in his mind. With just the slightest thought, what he feared the most or what he longed for the most could appear at any moment.

If a sexual deviant were to stand here, they would fall into an incomparably romantic dream, unable to ever escape.

If a miser were to stand here, they would see endless mountains of treasure, all of it belonging to them.

If a person with an unsteady will was to face Frost Dream here, Frost Dream wouldn’t even need to form anything in the divine dream space – they would simply be directly defeated.

Roar! Roar! Roar!

With a loud growling roar, that empty dreamland energy condensed together, forming into nightmare beasts within the divine dream space that barreled towards Lin Ming.

At the same time, Frost Dream gathered her hands together, forming a purple cage around Lin Ming that completely trapped him within. This cage was also formed from divine dream energy; it would not be torn apart easily.

Frost Dream caged Lin Ming in with divine dream energy so that he wouldn’t be able to dodge the attack of these nightmare beasts! These nightmare beasts were incomparably fierce. Even someone on the level of Ram Saber would have trouble dealing with several of these nightmare beasts, much less dozens of them.

Facing this attack of the divine dream space, Lin Ming poured all of his energy into his inner world. At that moment, an enchanting blood red lotus slowly bloomed behind him.

This was the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower!

The Prime Emperor Lotus Flower released the vast and boundless breath of the Great Dao that recklessly struck the divine dream space. In that instant, for a radius of 100 feet around Lin Ming, all of those blooming ice lotuses rapidly shattered, turning into countless shards. Even the cage around Lin Ming wildly trembled as if it would break apart at any moment.

With his strength, Lin Ming had shoved open a space within the divine dream space!

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Dozens of nightmare beasts broke into the grandmist space. Within the domain of the all-annihilating Grandmist Laws they began to rapidly weaken. Some smaller nightmare beasts even let out miserable cries.

Nightmare beasts were strong, and even Lin Ming would find it hard to deal with dozens of them. But, as long as these nightmare beasts left the divine dream space and entered the grandmist space, they were weakened to a near negligible level to Lin Ming.

At this time, Lin Ming took a step forwards. The Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands swept out. In that moment, the Phoenix Blood Spear was like a red dragon wildly raging around. Spear light shot out, and with several popping sounds, dozens of nightmare beasts were all killed by Lin Ming, their blood splashing all around!

After killing all of these nightmare beasts, Lin Ming's long spear returned.

Chi-la!

The divine dream energy cage around Lin Ming was also torn apart by him!

The grandmist space constantly radiated outwards, forcibly pushing away all of the Divine Dream Laws within 100 feet of him. Although this was only a radius of 100 feet, this was still amazing enough.

The audience was shocked as they saw this. With his own domain, Lin Ming had stiffly opened up his own dominion within the divine dream space.

From start until end, the divine dream space had been the top domain of the First Martial Meeting. No one had been able to contend with it, not even Hang Chi.

Now, Lin Ming was using the grandmist space to resist the divine dream space. Although the grandmist space was clearly suppressed, this was still an exceedingly rare event! At least before now, this situation had never appeared.

"How is this happening?"

"Why did Lin Ming's strength increase so much?"

At this time, no one thought that the reason Lin Ming and Frost Dream's battle had reached this stage was because of his luck. Perhaps his strength truly had rapidly risen!

"Wasn't he unconscious in a deep sleep? Who was the one who said his soul was injured? If his soul was injured, causing him to fall unconscious for a year and a half, how could his strength have grown so much?"

When Lin Ming was ‘wounded’ and in a deep sleep, many people had laughed at him and called him a fool who only knew how to show off and didn’t know just how deep he could go. But now, everything indicated that what happened to Lin Ming wasn’t some simple soul wound. Rather, he had experienced some unimaginable transformation.

He might have even experienced a sudden enlightenment or made a breakthrough!

Those people that called Lin Ming a fool were the ones who felt like fools now.

And in the honored seating section, some Holy Lord and World King level old men had already realized that a change had occurred within Lin Ming’s body. From the moment he appeared, his aura had been different.

“This Lin Ming isn’t simple at all. There were some people before this who said that if it weren’t for Frost Dream, his talent would only be inferior to Xiao Moxian’s and even comparable to Hang Chi’s. But now it seems that they all underestimated him!”

“Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, those are truly the two unrivalled geniuses of this generation!”

“Yes, but what a pity… Frost Dream is simply too strong. She may have displayed the divine dream space, but this isn’t her true strength. Frost Dream isn’t someone that you can apply common sense to.”

Even if Lin Ming displayed an even greater strength, it would be nothing but an illusion in front of Frost Dream!

On the arena stage, Frost Dream looked towards Lin Ming. No matter how much she pushed the divine dream space, she was only able to suppress Lin Ming’s grandmist space; she wasn’t able to fully crush it.

Frost Dream slowly raised her right hand. Beneath her, more and more ice lotuses condensed, blooming in full glory. They spread out, covering the entire arena stage with endless flowers of ice, just like some fantastical dream.

These ice lotuses were difficult to destroy and even slowly permeated Lin Ming's grandmist space. Lin Ming's eyebrows show up. He could feel that in this instant, Frost Dream's aura had risen once again.

She was truly worthy of being called the number one genius amongst the junior generation. She was an unfathomable existence!

In that moment, mystical dreamland energy gathered in front of Frost Dream, condensing together into a thick tome.

As she gently opened this tome, Frost Dream clearly said, "Dream Interpretation Scripture!"

Dreams represented a person's desires. The power of divine dream was in truth a type of the power of faith. When the power of faith of all living beings came together, this power would be terrifying.

Chapter 1325 – Dream Interpretation Scripture

Chapter 1325 – Dream Interpretation Scripture

…

…

…

In that instant, an incomparably powerful strength of the Divine Dream Law enveloped Frost Dream. Divine dream marks flew out from her body, spinning around, wildly dancing in the air.

Frost Dream floated in the skies, the Dream Interpretation Scripture in her hands. An unbelievable strength wildly surged outwards, flooding the entire martial field. Many of the spectators couldn't help but be affected by this strength. The older masters were somewhat better off. With their deep cultivation, the effects weren't too great on them. But for those juniors with weaker cultivations, as they heard the sounds of the Dream Interpretation Scripture, all of them developed infinite admiration and trust towards Frost Dream in their hearts. At this moment, to them, Frost Dream seemed like a true god living in the world.

Many of those young elites at the early Divine Sea realm and below fell to their knees, lying prostrate in worship towards Frost Dream. Those that were able to step foot in this arena were mostly geniuses from World King Level Holy Lands. But when facing Frost Dream's Dream Interpretation Scripture, they had no strength to resist at all. In their hearts, deep within their spiritual sea, there was a thread that was resonating with Frost Dream. This power of their thoughts emerged from their bodies, gathering towards Frost Dream.

This was the power of hope and also the power of faith.

When people believed in an existence without reservation, they would devote their power of faith to it. Even a mortal's power of faith could not be underestimated. Several mortals gathered together naturally weren't worthy of mentioning, but with trillions of mortals gathered together, their collective power of faith was no less than that of a Holy Lord or World King.

Many people were willing to bow and worship Frost Dream, offering their own faith power to her. Endless amounts of faith power began to gather towards Frost Dream. This faith power came not just from the heroic young elites present, but also from the countless lives from different planes and worlds, all of them drawn in and catering to Frost Dream's voice.

"Dreams – are your thoughts. What you experience in your dreams is something that you will never forget in your life.

"Dreams – are your desires. What you experience in your dreams is the bitter outcomes you chased in your previous incarnations.

"At this time, on this day, I shall borrow this power of faith from all living beings. And on the day that I step into the realm of god, then I shall interpret your dream for you!"

As Frost Dream spoke, all of the power of faith gathered completely into her hands.

At this moment, many of the Holy Lords and World Kings present paled!

Frost Dream was actually using the dreamland Laws to gather the power of faith from all living beings, all of them willing to worship at her feet and devote their life's energies to her. For a single person to command the devotion of all beings, just how terrifying an ability was this!

Frost Dream was at the late Divine Sea realm and she was able to affect all young elites at the early Divine Sea realm and below. Then, what about Divine Dream? She was a peak Empyrean. Did that mean that all powerhouses at an early Empyrean cultivation and below would be affected by her? In other words, everyone present here would come under Divine Dream's influence. This caused all of them to fear Empyrean Divine Dream even more!

"Divine Dream Heavenly Palace is too terrifying!"

"What is terrifying is the Divine Dream Law, a Law just like an enigma! This Law is the sole possession of Empyrean Divine Dream. With just what has been revealed so far about the Divine Dream Law, we've seen the divine dream space, the Dream Interpretation Scripture, and the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody, three incomparably powerful abilities. No one here ever knew that such techniques could exist!"

Divine Dream Heavenly Palace was incomparably mysterious, with an unfathomable background. No just that, but there were very few disciples within Divine Dream Heavenly Palace and they were often hidden in their own worlds. At this First Martial Meeting, there were many World King powerhouses who were experiencing the Divine Dream Law for the first time.

A tremendous power of faith gathered together into a phantom in front of Frost Dream. This phantom had faintly similar features to Frost Dream, exuding a holy aura from all over just like a profound immortal goddess from the highest heavens, looking down at the world with contempt.

This was a spiritual god formed from the power of hope from all living creatures, condensed from their very thoughts!

Ka ka ka!

As this spiritual god of thoughts and faith stepped forwards, Lin Ming felt his grandmist space violently tremble. Cracks began to appear within the grandmist space, rapidly spreading outwards. The grandmist space would soon break apart!

At this time, the grandmist space was not just suppressed, but disintegrating!

Lin Ming was using the incomplete Primordius martial intent to resist the complete Divine Dream Law. He was finding it difficult to resist!

Bang!

This spiritual god stepped into the grandmist space, creating a crack in the dome of the grandmist space. Lin Ming's body shook as he was forced backwards, his face wan.

"This is a spiritual god formed from the power of thoughts! It carries with it a terrifying will. Ordinary Laws and domains simply cannot resist the force of it!"

"Yes, and Frost Dream hasn't even used the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody. When she fought Hang Chi, she hadn't completed the Dreamsoul Melody. If she can play it to completion, it should be far more terrifying than the Dream Interpretation Scripture!"

"Frost Dream's methods are endless; she is simply invincible. There is no junior that can hope to compare with her. The only difference among them is who can last longer before capitulating."

Many masters present didn't understand the Divine Dream Law. But, when Frost Dream had truly used the Divine Dream Law, they were all able to see just how powerful it was.

Hang Chi pressed his palms together, sighing deeply with emotion. Their Buddhist faith had countless followers and a Buddhist Empyrean could also gather the power of faith from all living creatures, displaying a truly heaven-shaking force.

But, those in the Buddhist faith that could do this were all Empyreans!

An ordinary Divine Sea or Divine Transformation powerhouse could at most add the power of faith to their techniques. The combat strength they could display with this was extremely limited. It was far from being able to compare with someone like Frost Dream. It was unimaginable that she could reach this boundary at just the late Divine Sea realm.

The spiritual god formed from faith power took another step forwards. More and more cracks appeared in the grandmist space; it had reached its limit.

In that moment, Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and poured all of his energy into his inner world. Within his inner world, the energy spun around the black hole seed, forming a nebulous vortex of stars. All sorts of mystical runes flowed out, attaching to this vortex.

In an instant, Lin Ming formed thousands of seals. These seals spread through all space in an area of 10 miles.

Divine Seal Art – God Forbidding Seal!

With a loud shout from Lin Ming, all of those divine seals flew towards that spiritual faith god. Lin Ming actually wanted to use his own strength to seal away the spiritual faith god!

However, just what sort of existence was a spiritual god formed from the power of faith? This was the power of faith that Frost Dream gathered from all living beings in numerous planes and worlds. By creating this spiritual god with the Divine Dream Law and her own supreme cultivation, how could it be sealed away so easily?

As for those divine seals that Lin Ming shot out, all of them seemed dim without any terrifying fluctuations of energy at all. In fact, they looked rather plain and common.

Right now, no one believed that Lin Ming’s God Forbidding Seals would be able to do anything to that spiritual faith god. This included Frost Dream herself, Hang Chi, Jun Bluemoon, and even Old Sword.

Bang!

The spiritual faith god took a third step, thoroughly stepping into Lin Ming’s grandmist space.

At this time, Lin Ming had already severed contact with the grandmist space to prevent a backlash injuring him. And at the same time, those God Forbidding Seals he sent out fell onto that spiritual faith god.

There were a total of 3600 seals. As they fell onto that spiritual faith god, they completely submerged into that shimmering being, vanishing out of sight.

That spiritual faith god didn't seem to have been affected at all. It took a fourth step. Now, it was within reach of Lin Ming!

Shua!

From within its body, that spiritual faith god extracted a divine sword. Just as it was about to cut down at Lin Ming, its body suddenly shook as it violently trembled.

Within its body, those 3600 God Forbidding Seals that had sank into it began to change!

Those seals looked common and simple, but after they sank into the spiritual faith god, they were like a pack of ravenous animals, recklessly eating up the power of faith.

The seals seemed as if they could swallow all of existence. Even the power of faith from all creatures was no exception.

3600 points formed 3600 energy black holes, wantonly swallowing everything nearby. As for the energy they swallowed, it passed through some invisible channels that completely converged within Lin Ming's body, gathering into that black hole seed!

The Divine Seal Art represented the Laws of Sealing as well as the Laws of Swallowing. It would swallow all into that black hole and then thoroughly seal it away!

Under the gazes of all, one could only see innumerable lines of energy forming between Lin Ming and that spiritual faith god. All of that power of faith was being swallowed up by Lin Ming!

As the audience of over a hundred million saw this, all of them didn't dare to believe their own eyes.

"What sort of cultivation method is this?"

"How can this be? He can actually absorb the faith power of all creatures? How is he doing this?"

"The faith of all creatures cannot be subdued. Unless they believe in you, you will only experience a backlash from this power!"

Some of the wizened old men present had some understandings into the power of faith. The reason that people were willing to devote and offer their power of faith was because they believed in that indistinct spiritual god in their hearts. But against an evil god that dared to try and kill the spiritual god they believed in, they would naturally resist it, rather dying than surrendering.

"Is this the power of the faith of all creatures?"

At that moment, Lin Ming could feel the energy within his black hole seed rapidly increasing. The strength of the black hole seed also rose!

However, this was the power of faith. After leaving that spiritual faith god, this energy immediately became incredibly wild and violent as if it wanted to strike back at him.

Rumble rumble rumble!

A great deal of the power of faith exploded within Lin Ming's inner world, wishing to perish with him. But Lin Ming simply coldly snorted. The black hole vortex spun at a crazy rate, swallowing all!

No matter how wild or tyrannical this power of faith was, all of it was sucked into the black hole vortex and thoroughly crushed. The black hole was the end point of all space and time, and also the end point of all matter and energy!

Although the power of faith was strong, it was still a type of energy in the end. It couldn't resist the terminal end of energy that was this black hole seed.

After swallowing a massive amount of the power of faith, not only did Lin Ming's aura not fade, but it grew without the slightest hint of backlash. This caused many people in the audience to be shocked speechless.

He could swallow the power of faith without any backlash at all? That was far too abnormal! None of them could imagine just how Lin Ming was able to accomplish this.

On the arena stage, the spiritual faith god roared out louder and louder. However, no matter how much it struggled, it was sealed tighter and tighter away by Lin Ming's God Forbidding Seals.

"You can actually seal away and refine the faith power of all living creatures?" Frost Dream looked deeply at Lin Ming, a look of surprise on her face. She thought that once she brought out the Dream Interpretation Scripture, this battle would be finished. She never imagined that Lin Ming would use some inconceivable cultivation method to seal away that massive faith power.

However, even though the Dream Interpretation Scripture was suppressed by Lin Ming, Frost Dream didn't seem panicked at all. She still had that indifferent expression on her face as if nothing in this world was able to move her. She flicked a single finger and that spiritual faith god scattered away, turning into countless lines of faith power.

Since the black vortex was recklessly swallowing and sealing away the power of faith, then Frost Dream would separate all of that energy and bombard Lin Ming with it instead!

At this time, 90% of that faith power had been sealed away by the Divine Seal Art. But, the remaining 10% still gathered in a mighty surging wave that rushed towards Lin Ming!

In that instant, because Lin Ming had used the God Forbidding Seal, he had yet to recover himself. Now that he saw such a sudden change occur, he sank his thoughts into his spiritual sea.

“Grandmist battle spirit!”

Woosh!

With a clarion cry, a dark gold grandmist battle spirit rushed out from Lin Ming! After Lin Ming’s deep sleep for the last year and a half, the grandmist battle spirit had already faintly touched upon the threshold of becoming a blue soul battle spirit. Within that dark golden hue was a faint touch of the deepest blue.

Although this blue color was extremely faint, it still added an inerrable charm to the grandmist battle spirit!

The grandmist battle spirit formed a sword of will, welcoming the power of faith!

Both sides were forces formed from the power of will. On one side was Lin Ming’s will, and on the other side was the power of faith from all living creates. Both strengths brutally crashed together.

Kacha!

For a time, the brilliance of will spread through the void, with the power of faith being crushed into nothing. At the same time, Lin Ming’s sword of will also broke apart! During this intense collision of wills, a powerful spiritual storm was stirred up. All of those young elites that offered up their power of faith felt as if they were drowning in a trance within this wild storm.

As for those stronger martial artists, even they were stunned.

“Perfect gold battle spirit! Lin Ming also has a perfect gold battle spirit!?”

“It isn’t just a perfect gold battle spirit. It’s more accurate to say that this battle spirit is making great progress into entering the blue soul boundary. Before too long, he should be able to make a breakthrough! How terrifying! This battle spirit is even superior to Frost Dream’s!”

Frost Dream's battle spirit was at gold perfection. But compared to Lin Ming, it was still lacking the charm of a blue soul battle spirit.

It had to be known that Frost Dream originated from Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. Those from Divine Dream Heavenly Palace originally surpassed all others in the aspect of soul and will. It was normal for their battle spirits to be outrageously strong.

As for Lin Ming, he only came from an ordinary Holy Land background and he had no fierce master that anyone was aware of. Even so, he managed to train his battle spirit to such a boundary; just what the hell was going on here?

His battle spirit was strong, his perception was strong, his defense was strong, his endurance was strong, he possessed a powerful domain, had reached perfection in the fifth level Fire Laws, his foundation had reached the peak of stability, and his cultivation method was strong to the point that it was even able to refine the power of faith. With so many strengths together, how could other geniuses still live?

Lin Ming's existence was something that many people couldn't summon the courage to chase after.

"What secrets does Lin Ming have on him? His battle spirit is able to reach such a degree and he also has such a terrifying sealing technique. That sealing technique is definitely at the level of a transcendent divine might, even at the peak of all transcendent divine mights, otherwise it is impossible for it to seal away the power of faith!"

"Yes! That sealing technique that Lin Ming used just now was not used during his battle with Hang Chi. If he knew it, he would definitely have used it then. In this last year and a half while his soul was injured, was he actually cultivating instead?"

"His soul was injured? Does anyone here still believe that Lin Ming's soul was injured? How ridiculous! Just think about it. If Lin Ming was truly in a deep sleep because his soul was injured, how could his strength rise so quickly?"

It wasn’t known which old man said this, but everyone couldn’t help but gulp. If Lin Ming’s soul wasn’t injured for this last year and a half, then just what was he doing during his sleep for all that time?

Chapter 1326 – Eternal Darkness

Chapter 1326 – Eternal Darkness

…

…

…

“When Lin Ming fought Hang Chi, not only was his soul not injured, but when facing the Wheel of Samsara he made a breakthrough and gained new comprehensions. During his sleep in the time enchantment, he was digesting all of these new understands!”

This was only the old man’s guess, but it was very close to the truth. However, the martial artists present found that hard to believe.

“What you’re saying is impossible. What sort of comprehensions could Lin Ming have gained that allowed his strength to reach this degree in just a year and a half? This is just far too exaggerated. Moreover, in a time enchantment you can only increase your cultivation, not your understanding of Laws. Lin Ming’s current cultivation has only risen by an extremely small amount and he’s still at the middle Divine Sea, but his Laws and techniques are completely different!” Another old man said, unable to accept the previous point.

But the first old man said, “What you’re saying is reasonable. But, if Lin Ming entered sudden enlightenment, the truth is that it’s possible for his strength to have rapidly risen in the time enchantment!”

Everyone was shocked by this old man’s astonishing words. “Sudden enlightenment!?”

The state of sudden enlightenment was something that could only be discovered through a stroke of serendipity. But even so, geniuses with decent martial talent would experience this state several times in their long lives, so entering into sudden enlightenment wasn’t strange at all. However, when one entered into sudden enlightenment, that was usually for several quarter hours or several hours at most. To enter into sudden enlightenment for a year and a half was simply unheard of! All of these young elites had complex feelings as they heard this. Because of Lin Ming's injuries, many of them had been gloating over his misfortune. There were even many of them that thought their disparity with Lin Ming wasn't too great. Only now did they realize that all their previous assumptions were simply laughable jokes.

Under the arena stage, Hang Chi was watching Lin Ming and Frost Dream's fight. His palms were pressed together as he recited Buddhist chants. Hang Chi originally thought that something strange had occurred in his battle with Lin Ming. He felt that Lin Ming shouldn't have been severely wounded by him. Only now did he realize that not only was Lin Ming's soul not injured, but he had instead been cultivating during this deep sleep of a year and a half. He was biding his strength, like a divine spear waiting for the right time to appear.

On the arena stage, Frost Dream looked at the scattered light of wills in the skies, a strange color flashing in her bright eyes.

She used a true essence sound transmission to say to Lin Ming, "Before I came on stage, Honorable Master already warned me that I must pay attention to this battle, because this battle will temper my will. I had thought otherwise, but now I know that what my master said is true. I have indeed underestimated you. That mysterious cultivation method you showed is in no way inferior to my Divine Dream Law."

The Divine Dream Law was the transcendent divine might of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. But what Frost Dream didn't know was that the Divine Seal Art that Lin Ming used was in fact incomplete.

This was because the Divine Seal Altar that Lin Ming mounted was only a replica created by Empyrean Vast Universe. Empyrean Vast Universe had obtained a fragment of the ancient Divine Seal Altar in the past and not the complete inheritance of Empyrean Divine Seal.

After Lin Ming climbed up the 33rd step of the Divine Seal Altar, he had obtained a tiny fragment of Empyrean Divine Seal's soul. The Divine Seal Art was also incomplete because of this. If it were the complete Divine Seal Art, then the level of it would surpass the boundaries of an Empyrean cultivation method.

After Frost Dream spoke these words, she quietly took out an ice blue zither from her spatial ring.

The shimmering translucent zither seemed as if it were carved from the purest crystal. 18 strings were tightened on the zither, gleaming with a cold light.

This zither exuded a mysterious and unspeakable aura, as if the soul of a sleeping goddess were hidden within it.

"My zither is called Dreamsoul, and this song is called the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody."

Frost Dream's words were clear and calm. But as the audience heard this, all of them sucked in a breath of cold air. Frost Dream was finally going to use the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody!

"Hurry... hurry and inform Senior Master and the others. This is a peak battle that has to be seen! Hurry and tell them to return as soon as possible!"

"Hurry up and pass a message to High Master! If they miss this match then that will be too unfortunate!"

Only a quarter of the entire martial field was seated. Most of them were youths that were Frost Dream's fans. As for the others, they thought that this match would finish almost immediately, thus they weren't excited to see it. Since there was no value in watching this match, they simply didn't come.

At this time, on board a spirit ship, a middle-aged man was looking at a flame that lit up in front of him. This was the light of a sound transmitting talisman.

“Mm? Frost Dream’s match against Lin Ming has reached a white-hot stage and there isn’t a sure winner or loser? And Frost Dream has taken out her Dreamsoul Zither?”

After obtaining this news, the middle-aged man was amazed.

“What did you say?”

Other people on the ship were shocked. If the person delivering this message wasn’t one of their juniors who had no reason to trick them, then they simply wouldn’t believe that the message of this sound transmitting talisman was real.

“No matter what happened let’s go back and take a look. According to the sound transmitting talisman, Lin Ming wasn’t injured at all. Instead, his deep sleep was a state of sudden enlightenment, and this state also continued for a very long time!”

Previously, news had come from Vast Universe Heavenly Palace that Lin Ming had entered a 1:100 time flow time enchantment. If Lin Ming had really been in a state of sudden enlightenment for this entire time then that was far too terrifying!

As more and more people received this message, the skies above the martial field were filled with countless masters flying back at a breakneck speed. From dozens of miles away, these hundreds of thousands and millions of martial artists looked like a mass of spots against the sun, just like a rapidly approaching swarm of locusts.

The seats were rapidly being filled. For a hundred miles around the massive arena stage, a million people could seat themselves in just a single breath of time.

There were also many people who had already left on their spirit ships that turned around, quickly trying to return. As for whether or not they could return in time, that was still uncertain.

On the martial field, a melodious song reverberated through the air. The Dreamsoul Immortal Melody was being played!

All around Frost Dream, a picturesque landscape had appeared, just like the most beautiful drawing. This was the Immortal Melody Pure Lands.

Meanwhile, the divine dream space came shrouding down once more, directly enveloping Lin Ming. As Frost Dream displayed the Immortal Melody Pure Lands, she also used the divine dream space!

At this moment, the Immortal Melody Pure Lands and the divine dream space fused together as one. From above the arena, one could only see an unending number of flower petals sprinkling down. A fresh fragrance greeted the senses. As for Frost Dream, within this domain, she sat cross-legged high in the skies, her light blue clothes fluttered in the wind as the Dreamsoul Zither lay across her legs. At this time, she was like an immortal goddess from the highest heavens exiled to the mortal world.

Her zither tunes were pleasing and symphonious. As she parted her cherry red lips, the sound of a long-desired wish seemed to come from her mouth, echoing through the arena like the arriving ring of destiny.

“I wish to become an Empyrean. The day I become an Empyrean, the myriad paths of the Great Dao shall be revealed before me. In the 3000 great worlds, all living beings, my every follower, all shall seek my great power, pursuing the road of immortal perpetuity.”

“I wish to become a True Divinity. The day I become a True Divinity, the Heavenly Dao Laws shall be grasped in my hands. Underneath the 33 Heavens, all spirits and all existences shall speak my name. All shall realize their dreams, all shall break apart the shackles of their destiny and tear free from the cycle of samsara!”

As Frost Dream’s voice echoed in the arena –

In her words-

She wanted to become an Empyrean!

She wanted to become a True Divinity!

For her to become an Empyrean, no one doubted that. Frost Dream was destined to become an Empyrean, and an outstanding one at that.

As for becoming a True Divinity, that was something that had not happened for billions of years.

But now that these words came from Frost Dream’s lips, they seemed to be filled with an unquestionable momentum, as if this were not a long-cherished wish she desired, but her future fate!

Her zither tune turned and a Buddha-killing melody filled the air, causing the void to tremble, filling the world with a thick killing intent. Those songs from the Dreamsoul Zither were not normal sounds, but the true sound of the Great Dao. If a normal martial artist were to hear these sounds, their hearts would shatter and all of their life’s cultivation would be destroyed.

The everlasting sound of the Dao plunged towards Lin Ming like a surging tide.

Lin Ming closed his eyes, energy erupting from his body. His long hair recklessly flew in the wind as his clothes flapped about him.

In that instant, a black crystal floated out from within his body. This crystal was only the size of a bean, but when it appeared, from that point in the void, the space around it was directly torn apart!

This was truly tearing apart the void! Tearing apart the space of the Divine Realm!

This was no longer twisting or shaking, this was truly ripping it asunder!

As the audience saw this, all of them were shocked speechless.

It had to be known that the Divine Realm’s space was stable!

Many geniuses could cause space to shake and leak out power with space distortions. This wasn't strange at all. But to truly tear open the void of the Divine Realm, that was incredible.

And Lin Ming had managed to do so at the Divine Sea realm!

"What is that black crystal?!"

"I don't know! I've never seen anything like it!"

The black crystal Lin Ming summoned forth was the black hole seed that he had created through his torturous cultivation!

Empyrean Divine Seal was someone that had existed 3.6 billion years ago. The Divine Seal Art was also an ultimate martial art long lost to time. Disregarding Holy Lords and World Kings, as well as even Empyrean level masters, such as the richly experienced Old Sword or Three Lives Old Man, none of them knew about the Divine Seal Art.

"This is..." Deep within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, the normally calm and indifferent Empyrean Divine Dream's complexion slightly changed. Even she didn't know just what sort of cultivation method Lin Ming was using.

....

As the black hole seed appeared, in that instant, all of the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy in the world flew towards it at a dizzying speed. The energy within the divine dream space was no exception, and even the Immortal Melody Pure Lands was swept up by this maniacal strength. Flower petals withered and waned as the pure lands began to collapse, the earth disintegrating.

"If you wish to become a True Divinity, then I shall seal away your divinity. Swallow all power, swallow all matter, fall into an infinite abyss of time, within this cage of space you shall never emerge, sink forever, perish through the sands of history! Divine Seal Art, swallow all of existence – Eternal Darkness!"

To use the black hole seed to simulate a true black hole of the universe – this was truly swallowing everything!

Even the sound of the Great Dao was swallowed up by Lin Ming’s black hole seed. However, using this move placed a tremendous burden on his body. His blood vessels stuck out and blue veins popped up all over him as if they would erupt at any moment.

With Lin Ming’s cultivation he was just barely able to display the Divine Seal Art’s God Forbidding Seal. But, using Eternal Darkness actually surpassed his limits.

Ka ka ka ka!

The Immortal Melody Pure Lands were constantly torn apart. The sounds of the Dreamsoul Zither struggled to free themselves from this swallowing force. Frost Dream’s Dreamsoul Immortal Melody would soon be broken!

“It’s breaking! Can Lin Ming actually break the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody!?”

“I can’t believe this, is Lin Ming going to win!? To win against Frost Dream? She is known as being an unrivalled character amongst all juniors!”

“This cultivation method…” Frost Dream looked at Lin Ming’s black hole seed and was unable to maintain her previous calm and indifferent expression. “Your techniques have surpassed my imagination… then, all I can do is play the final chapter of the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody. Let me warn you, I cannot control the strength of this final chapter. Even I am unable to fully grasp its might!”

Chapter 1327 – Final Chapter of the Dreamsoul

Chapter 1327 – Final Chapter of the Dreamsoul

…

…

…

The final chapter of the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody!

After hearing Frost Dream's words, all of the heroic young elites present held their breaths. When Frost Dream fought with Hang Chi, she had said that once she completed the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody, he would lose without a doubt. That meant that the final chapter of the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody must contain some indescribably powerful force!

"The final chapter of the Dreamsoul can eliminate all Laws of this world and wash away even the Great Dao. Try your best to withstand this."

Frost Dream was unable to fully grasp the might of the Dreamsoul's final chapter. Lin Ming might be able to defend against this move, but he might even be severely wounded. Perhaps he could even die here. With the fighting having reached this stage, it was impossible for Frost Dream to tell Lin Ming to give up. They could only fight this out.

At this time, deep within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, Empyrean Divine Dream's expression stirred. She seemed as if she wanted to stop Frost Dream, but after hesitating for several breaths of time, she finally shook her head. No matter how Frost Dream and Lin Ming's battle went, she believed that Lin Ming's destiny was so great and dreadful that he wouldn't die here in such a simple manner. And as her reincarnation, Frost Dream was also the same.

The zither melody changed once more. That Buddha-killing harmony with its profound killing intent once more returned to a peaceful tune. No one imagined that the final chapter of the Dreamsoul, with its vast and boundless momentum that seemed to look down at the world with disdain, would actually return to such a gentle quietness. For a time, within the Immortal Melody Pure Lands, countless crystal clear flower petals fell from the air, lightly landing on Frost Dream's long hair, shoulders, and even her icy blue dress. As she sat down in the Immortal Melody Pure Lands, her image seemed carved into eternity.

At this time, a mysterious black crystal began to emerge behind Frost Dream, becoming larger and larger. Within the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody's final chapter, a black crystal finally gathered. This black crystal was shaped like a cube with six even sides. It looked common, and even slightly plain, but as Lin Ming saw it his mind violently shook!

This was… the Magic Cube!

In this final moment, Frost Dream had summoned the phantom of the Magic Cube!

On this black cube was carved countless dark inscriptions. Lin Ming had seen these markings before; he had a profound impression of them!

In the past when he first obtained the Magic Cube, the Magic Cube had these black traces carved on it, each one different and unique. Even now, Lin Ming still didn't know what they meant.

Lin Ming never thought that in Frost Dream's final chapter of the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody, she would actually use her own energy to condense a phantom of the Magic Cube!

"Is the Magic Cube not in my body?"

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. His thoughts immediately touched upon the Magic Cube space within his body; he found that Mo Eversnow and Fishy were both safely dwelling there.

The Magic Cube was still in his body – he could not be wrong about this.

“I understand. Frost Dream’s Magic Cube phantom has the aura of the Magic Cube, but it is still far from being able to compare to the true Magic Cube!”

The Magic Cube was a divine tool of the soul; it complemented Divine Dream Heavenly Palace’s Divine Dream Law perfectly. If so, then Divine Dream Heavenly Palace must have some inheritance related to the Magic Cube!

“Could they… possess a replica of the Magic Cube?”

This thought immediately flashed through Lin Ming’s mind. Although the Magic Cube phantom that Frost Dream summoned had a completely similar appearance to the true Magic Cube, its aura was far lacking. If it was said that Divine Dream Heavenly Palace had a replica of the Magic Cube, that was highly possible.

For a time, Lin Ming felt the Magic Cube within his body restlessly stirring, as if it wanted to swallow the black cube above Frost Dream.

Lin Ming wasn’t able to summon the Magic Cube on his own initiative yet, but if the Magic Cube began to move by itself, Lin Ming could use his own energy to move it and have it launch an attack. If this happened then the Magic Cube would undoubtedly attack Frost Dream!

Once the Magic Cube attacked her, that would be the true Magic Cube against the phantom Magic Cube formed by Frost Dream’s own energy. The result of that match up could be imagined.

The Magic Cube was a divine tool. Or, to better put it, it was a supreme spiritual object that surpassed the limits of a divine tool. From the universe’s essence, energy, and divine, this was a spiritual object produced by the ‘divine’ of the universe.

The Magic Cube was deeply sleeping within Lin Ming and no one was able to discover its existence. Even when Lin Ming traveled deep underneath Immemorial Imperial City and met the artifact spirit of the Ancient Elysium Seal with its 3.6 billion years of experience, even that artifact spirit didn't know of the Magic Cube's existence. Only when Lin Ming summoned it did it find out.

As long as the Magic Cube was within Lin Ming's body then he would be safe.

But, once he took out the Magic Cube to launch an attack, its existence would be revealed to the hundreds of millions of people present!

Most people didn't know what the Magic Cube was, but it was impossible for Empyrean Divine Dream to not know. Moreover, the hidden Tian Mingzi would inevitably recognize the Magic Cube. If he were to reveal the existence of the Magic Cube then he would be locked down and hunted by Tian Mingzi.

This was something that Lin Ming couldn't help but consider.

Even if it was Empyrean Divine Dream, Lin Ming still didn't fully trust her.

Empyrean Divine Dream was someone that dual cultivated energy and soul. She also possessed a replica of the Magic Cube. If he exposed Empyrean Primordius's inheritance in front of her then she wouldn't care. Empyrean Divine Dream and Empyrean Primordius were both characters at similar levels. There was no way she would give up her own Laws to inherit Empyrean Primordius's legacy.

But the Magic Cube was different!

It was an extremely precious treasure, especially to someone like Empyrean Divine Dream!

The Ancient Elysium Seal's artifact spirit was not a human. It also had a mission to fulfill and its eventual death was arriving soon. If it obtained the Magic Cube then it wouldn't find it of much use. But Empyrean Divine Dream was different. If she obtained the Magic Cube, she might even have methods to use it to directly become a True Divinity.

Lin Ming didn't dare to risk such a danger.

At the very least, using the Magic Cube to attack Frost Dream wasn't his own true strength.

Frost Dream had played the Dreamsoul's final chapter and condensed the Magic Cube replica phantom with her own energy, displaying the absolute limits of her strength. But, if Lin Ming were to counterattack with the Magic Cube, this simply wouldn't be meaningful to him.

Jun Bluemoon was also in a similar situation with the Yin Yang Soul Sword. When Jun Bluemoon fought Lin Ming, because he had used the power of the Yin Yang Soul Sword instead of his own, he had admitted defeat on his own initiative. Otherwise, both Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian wouldn't have been his match.

Jun Bluemoon didn't do so, and Lin Ming also made the same choice.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and poured all of his energy into the black hole seed.

By exceeding the limits of his body to revolve the Divine Seal Art to the limit, the blood vessels on Lin Ming's arms seemed ready to burst open.

Lin Ming was well aware of just how strong Frost Dream's final attack was. Even after he used Eternal Darkness, she had still begun playing the final chapter of the Dreamsoul. This proved that Frost Dream was confident she could break through the Eternal Darkness.

"Heretical God Tree!"

Lin Ming shouted out loud. Behind him, the phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared.

In that instant, the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation contained within the Heretical God Tree completely erupted forth, weaving together into a sea of red and purple energy around Lin Ming!

Heavenly Dao Judgment!

Lin Ming suddenly thrust out his spear. The power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation gathered together, wrapping around the black hole seed in a nebula as it hurtled towards Frost Dream!

Puff puff puff!

The blood vessels on Lin Ming's arms exploded, spilling forth blood. Many of his meridians tore apart and even his organs broke in multiple places. This was Lin Ming's strongest attack, and also an attack that exceeded the bearing capacity of his body!

With this strike, Lin Ming's attack violently collided with the Magic Cube phantom produced by Dreamsoul's final chapter.

In that instant, the space within an area of several miles of the Divine Realm was completely torn apart. This was no longer shaking, but true tearing.

A blinding divine brilliance flooded the entire arena, causing everyone to shield their eyes.

A brutal and terrifying energy wildly surged outwards. Vast Cosmos personally took action and used his own domain to melt away the violent fluctuations of energy and avoid disaster in the spectator stands. Otherwise, those young elites with weaker cultivations simply wouldn't be able to withstand this.

"This is too terrifying!"

"It's unimaginable. I can't believe Lin Ming is powerful to such a degree!"

"Just who won in the end?"

Everyone peered towards the center of the martial stage. But above the arena, the eruption of the dark black hole had formed a special dark void area that isolated everyone's sight. It was impossible to know what the situation was like.

Within that void of darkness, Lin Ming knelt on the ground, supporting himself with the Phoenix Blood Spear. His clothes were already dyed red with blood and blood was dripping down both of his arms. His meridians and organs were broken in several places and he had lost nearly all of his combat strength.

And in front of Lin Ming, Frost Dream had already lost support of her body. Although she was still floating in the air and hadn't yet fallen down, she was also severely wounded. From the start of the First Martial Meeting until now, this was Frost Dream's first injury, and it was a heavy one too.

Because of her severe injuries, the mist that concealed her expression had dispersed, revealing an unrivalled appearance as beautiful as the moon.

Her snow white skin seemed like perfection formed by the heavens, like a newly budded ice lotus on top of a snow-capped mountain, without the slightest hint of the mortal world. But now, her enchanting complexion was slightly pale and her icy blue hair was also scattered down about her. Blood spilled out from the corners of her lips, giving her a point of pity and tenderness that moved the heart.

"You..."

Frost Dream wanted to use an illusion technique to conceal her appearance once more, but because the backlash from the Dreamsoul's final chapter was too great, the energy movement within her caused her injuries to erupt again and the blood dripping from her lips to be an even deeper red.

Changing methods, Frost Dream covered up her face with a sheet of fine gauze.

Her eyebrows were furrowed. Her beauty was lovely and moving, even during her weakness.

Chapter 1328 – The Final Result

Chapter 1328 – The Final Result

…

…

…

The enchantment of darkness created by the black hole seed lasted for a long time. In truth, the reason light was isolated outside was because of the chaotic space and time distortions.

It was only after several dozen breaths of time that people were able to clearly see what was happening on the arena stage.

Lin Ming was propping himself up with the Phoenix Blood Spear. His body was wet with blood; it was clear that he was heavily injured. But in front of Lin Ming, Frost Dream had a veil of gauze covering her face, her long hair wildly dashed about. Her breathing was also weak; it was clear that she too had been injured.

"Frost Dream was injured by Lin Ming!"

"From the start until now, this is the first time that Frost Dream has been injured!

Whether it was the Dreamsoul's final chapter that Frost Dream played or Lin Ming's Eternal Darkness, both were moves that overdrew their strength by summoning the limits of their energy. Even so, the collision between the two had been evenly matched, and both of them had suffered a deep backlash. Their true essence was in chaos and their meridians were torn in several places. It would be difficult for them to continue fighting.

If this were a true life or death battle then this would not be the end. They would be able to sacrifice the very foundation of their bodies as the price to continue fighting.

But this was just a martial arts tournament; there was no need to harm their own cultivation and fires of life just to obtain victory.

"I cannot defeat you."

Frost Dream gently shook her head, putting away her Dreamsoul Zither.

"Same here… in fact, my wounds are heavier than yours."

Lin Ming's injuries were indeed heavier than Frost Dream's; one could see this from the amount of blood that covered his body. Lin Ming's bones were broken all throughout his body and his organs were torn in many places.

In truth, Lin Ming's defensive abilities were much stronger, but his wounds were heavier than Frost Dream's. This meant that in that final collision, Lin Ming's moves were faintly suppressed by the Dreamsoul's final chapter.

Although that was so, being suppressed was one matter and obtaining final victory was another. This was because Lin Ming's endurance and ability to resist attacks were far greater than Frost Dream's. If he received this level of injuries he could still withstand it, but if Frost Dream were to suffer his injuries, she would collapse.

"You have opened the Gate of Life. If this were a true life or death slaughter, then perhaps you would be the one to persist until the end… let us end this match."

"I also have this intent."

Lin Ming had fused together Heavenly Dao Judgment and Eternal Darkness to release the strongest attack possible to him. Even so, he had been faintly suppressed by the Dreamsoul's final chapter. Lin Ming knew that it was impossible for him to defeat Frost Dream if his strongest attack didn't work. Although he still hadn't burnt his blood essence with the Gate of Life, he had already exhausted everything else available to him. If he were to burn the Gate of Life's blood essence in this situation then he feared his body would collapse.

His strongest strike couldn't obtain victory and he had also suffered tremendous injuries. Fighting was no longer necessary.

As the audience saw that Frost Dream and Lin Ming no longer planned to continue fighting, they all looked at each other in dismay, not knowing what to say.

"This is… a draw?"

The last match of the First Martial Meeting, the ultimate peak showdown, actually resulted in a draw.

At this time, many sect Elders and Holy Lord level characters finally returned from their spirit ships. As they flew back to the arena stage and saw the result of the match, all of them were surprised.

"What!? It's over!?"

"The fight is over!? Is this a joke! I just came back!"

Many Holy Lord level characters were incomparably sad and depressed. These people were characters with fame and glory in their own domains, and some were even overlords of their own worlds. But after obtaining the news of what was happening in the match and hurrying back as soon as possible, they still missed out on all the action!

There were even many others who had ridden spirit ships and left the main continent of Vast Universe World. Even if they were able to tear through space and used void shuttling they still wouldn't be able to return in time.

"A draw? It's actually a draw? Lin Ming was able to fight Frost Dream to a draw?"

As these Holy Lords heard that the result was a draw, all of them drowned in regret. If the battle had been a draw, that definitely meant it would have been impossibly intense and fierce. Both sides were geniuses that rarely appeared even in hundreds of millions of years, and yet two of them were fighting here in the same era. Moreover, to see them battle on the same stage was something that one could only come across with luck.

To be able to watch this match was an eternally great honor and joy. And yet, these people had managed to miss this battle that happened just underneath their noses. It was unlikely that they would ever have the opportunity to see such a battle in the future. Wasn’t this just a pity?

As these great figures realized this point, all of them had increasingly ugly complexions! And what was worse was that they had to listen to everyone else in the arena fervently discuss Frost Dream and Lin Ming’s match; this really left them all sad and down in the dumps.

“Someone tell me just what the hell happened! How can Lin Ming suddenly be so fierce?”

“If I knew this earlier I would have just waited in the arena!”

Who would have thought that after sleeping for a year and a half, Lin Ming’s strength could actually increase by such ridiculous proportions? Even in his battle with Frost Dream there was no clear distinction of who was stronger or weaker.

“Battle array discs, are there battle array discs that recorded the match? Take them out so we can see!”

The First Martial Meeting tournament had every match recorded with battle array discs. But, it was impossible for the battle array disc recordings to perfectly capture and reproduce the fluctuations of Laws. Looking through these battle array discs didn’t feel as good as watching the match in person, but it was still better than nothing.

……….

“It’s over.”

Vast Cosmos stepped on the arena stage. As he looked at Lin Ming, his heart was filled with an endless complication of emotions. This young man's future was incalculable. Without a doubt, Lin Ming would surpass him and even surpass his master.

"Lin Ming, my master has bid you to enter Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. Two hours from now, you may go."

"Mm."

Lin Ming wasn't surprised to be summoned by an Empyrean. When the First Martial Meeting started, it was stated that the top three of the Earth Proclamation would be able to enter Vast Universe Heavenly Palace and obtain the guidance of Vast Cosmos. But now, it was clear that Vast Cosmos was lacking in qualifications. The most he could do was offer direction to geniuses of some Great World King Holy Lands.

The First Martial Meeting had thus thoroughly ended. Even so, the audience was still bubbling with excitement and didn't leave. Rather, they stayed in the arena, fiercely discussing the match.

There were almost 300 million people still milling about the arena. Those that had been waiting since the beginning were rejoicing from their hearts. As for those that appeared during the middle of the battle, they didn't regret too much. It was only those that arrived after the match had ended that were wallowing in sadness.

The last round of gambling bets was declared null. All bets for that match were returned.

One hour later.

The final rankings of the First Martial Meeting came out.

Tenth – Ram Saber. This person had reached first place in the second tier and defeated Hua Xuan, who only managed to enter into the first tier due to luck. By defeating Hua Xuan, he successfully entered the top 10.

Ninth – Shiku. He narrowly defeated Ram Saber, saving his spot in ninth place.

Eighth – White King, the Monster Prince – seventh. White King lost to the Monster Prince in battle. Although White King was defeated, this was well within the expectations of everyone else. As for the Monster Prince, he wasn't weak, but the people in front of him were simply too strong. In this First Martial Meeting, he could only rank seventh.

Sixth – Dragon Fang, Fifth – Jun Bluemoon. The two of them were similar in strength. As for who emerged victorious during their battle, luck had been a major factor.

Fourth – Xiao Moxian. For a young girl with a skeletal age of 26 to stand at this position, in terms of talent only, Xiao Moxian was high enough to look down at the world with disdain!

There were no problems in sorting fourth to tenth place. It was only in the top three that some questions appeared.

If this were according to the rules of the tournament, then Hang Chi, who lost one match and won all others, would have been placed second. As for Lin Ming, he lost one match and tied in another, thus he should have been placed third.

However, if Hang Chi was truly ranked in front of Lin Ming because of the tournament rules, that couldn't be justified at all. Hang Chi wasn't willing to accept this either. He was well aware that his victory over Lin Ming in truth shouldn't have counted.

Hang Chi's strength had indeed surpassed Lin Ming's before his deep sleep. But against Lin Ming after his deep sleep, it was clear who was weaker and who was stronger.

Thus, Hang Chi was ranked third.

As for Frost Dream and Lin Ming, both were similar in strength. In the last match, it was impossible to determine victory and defeat. Thus, the results deferred to the tournament rules. Since Frost Dream had one more victory than Lin Ming, she took first place. As for Lin Ming, he took second.

“Patriarch, Lin Ming’s ranking has been passed down. He is second place!”

The Ancient Phoenix Clan had specifically been given battle array discs that recorded all of Lin Ming’s battles as well as a jade slip with all of his results.

To reach second place in the First Martial Meeting was simply a myth, especially in this First Martial Meeting where powerful rivals rose from all over. This First Martial Meeting had far surpassed all previous versions.

Upon hearing about such an exaggerated result, even Huo Violentstone, who was known for being loud and boisterous, wasn’t able to laugh.

He held a jade slip in his hands, unable to regain his composure. It was like everything that happened so far was a dream.

This was the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, a tournament that gathered all geniuses of the Divine Realm. In the past, the Ancient Phoenix Clan had participated in this event countless times, but let alone second place, they didn’t even dare to have such wild hopes like entering the finals.

The best result of the Ancient Phoenix Clan had been around rank 8000. Even for geniuses like Yan Littlemoon and the others, he had only asked them to try their best to enter the top 100,000 rankings. But compared to second place, that difference was greater than the heavens and earth!

In truth, before the preliminaries started, let alone Huo Violentstone, even Mo Eversnow who had an extremely profound understanding into Lin Ming’s strength still didn’t think he could reach this step.

At that time, Lin Ming indeed didn’t have the capital to stand on the stage of the finals.

When the First Martial Meeting began, Lin Ming had only been at the early Divine Sea realm and he had only reached perfection of the fourth level Fire Laws. He didn’t train in the soul forging system and he certainly didn't know how to fuse together his essence, energy, and divine.

In this situation, even if Lin Ming were to attend the finals, it would be far too difficult for him to enter the top 10.

However, as he went through the preliminaries, semifinals, and even the finals, Lin Ming made breakthroughs during every stage of the tournament, his strength constantly increasing! Finally, after deeply sleeping for 500 days, he managed to fight Frost Dream to a draw!

Soon, Lin Ming and Frost Dream's battle was spread out and glorified by the hundreds of millions of people and countless attending influences. In just several days, descriptions of their battle filled the entire Divine Realm.

Now, unless one lived on a desolate planet where there weren't even any Divine Transformation powerhouses, then even if they were in a small dimension or world, they would still know of Lin Ming's name.

The battle arrays disc containing Lin Ming and Frost Dream's battle were also reproduced billions upon billions of times over. If one was a reasonably large influence they could purchase their own copy.

And in the arena of the First Martial Meeting, Vast Universe Heavenly Palace replayed Lin Ming and Frost Dream's match again. For many people present, this was not their first time watching this replay. And for those that had missed the match, they could only watch these reproductions.

Of course, all of these were events that happened later. At this time, deep within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming was guided by Vast Cosmos until they reached Empyrean Divine Dream and Empyrean Vast Universe.

Facing a junior like Lin Ming, the two Empyreans restrained their pressure. Even so, Lin Ming could feel a terrifying aura from them that caused his heart to race.

“Lin Ming, do you have any questions you wish to ask me?”

The first to speak was a white-clothed woman. Lin Ming didn’t doubt that she was Empyrean Divine Dream.

There were certainly many questions he wanted to ask. He wanted to ask if he could enter Divine Dream Heavenly Palace to study their transcendent divine might. He wanted to ask what the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago was. And he also wanted to ask what happened 100,000 years ago, why Empyrean Primordius would be at the Sky Spill Planet and why he would wage war with Empyrean Thunder Punishment and finally fall from the skies.

Chapter 1329 – Secret of the Great Calamity

Chapter 1329 – Secret of the Great Calamity

…

…

…

"Junior Lin Ming greets Senior Empyrean Divine Dream and Senior Empyrean Vast Universe."

Lin Ming first respectfully bowed. Then, he said, "If seniors allow, this junior has some matters that he hopes two seniors can provide guidance with."

"Speak." Divine Dream casually waved her hand and the surroundings rapidly changed. The three of them immediately arrived in a charming spring prairie with fragrant flowers and trees all about. Springs trickled, beautiful to the eyes.

This was an enchantment that Empyrean Divine Dream laid down. Within this enchantment, it was impossible for anyone else to spy on their conversation.

"Seniors, this junior would like to ask about a previous matter first. As long as this junior has been able to enter the top three of the Earth Proclamation then I should have gained the rights to enter an Empyrean Heavenly Palace and study a transcendent divine might. This junior would like to inquire whether or not I have the option to choose."

"Oh?" Empyrean Divine Dream faintly smiled, "What do you want to choose?"

"What this junior wishes to choose is the Divine Dream Law created by Senior!"

Empyrean Divine Dream was not surprised by Lin Ming's honest words, but Empyrean Vast Universe smiled. He heartily laughed, "Young man, it seems that you don't have a liking for my Vast Universe Heavenly Palace's transcendent divine might!"

"Senior, this junior certainly does not mean that. The transcendent divine might that Senior Vast Universe established is wonderful, able to open multiple inner worlds and allow a martial artist to have an amount of true essence far surpassing all others of their level. This junior also wishes to study it, but it's only that relatively speaking, the Divine Dream Law is more useful to this junior."

"Hehe, according to what I can see, you have quite a few transcendent divine mights on you!" Empyrean Vast Universe suddenly said. Ignoring the elementary transcendent divine might that Lin Ming had created as well as the tiny bit of the Divine Dream Law that he had comprehended earlier, he had three different sets of transcendent divine mights. He possessed the Heretical God Force, Primordius martial intent, and also the extremely high level but very incomplete Divine Seal Art.

Lin Ming replied, "This junior's luck has been good, thus I have been able to acquire the inheritances of some seniors thanks to some accidental opportunities."

"Mm… you have a good number of transcendent divine mights. If you study too many then you won't be able to bring them to a high enough level. Choosing to develop one or two of them is the wisest choice."

Every transcendent divine might was enough for a genius to cultivate all the way to the Empyrean realm. If one studied too many, although one could comprehend more Laws and enhance their strength, they might lack too much time and energy.

For instance, Hang Chi had in fact only learnt a single transcendent divine might. From the time he stepped onto the road of martial arts he had been thoroughly studying the Wheel of Samsara all the way until now.

Although Lin Ming knew this, he would still walk the path he had chosen. This was just like how he chose to dual cultivate in body and energy, and then chose to triple cultivate in essence, energy, and divine.

“The Divine Dream Law… you may learn it, but I shall not accept you as a disciple.”

As Empyrean Divine Dream spoke, Empyrean Vast Universe was a bit surprised on the side. Lin Ming was such a good apprentice and he also delivered himself to their gates, so why wouldn’t she accept him?

“Divine Dream, are you not accepting Lin Ming because it is the custom of your Divine Dream Heavenly Palace to not accept male disciples? I don’t know when you decided on these rules, but isn’t Lin Ming worth breaking them for, at least once?”

Empyrean Vast Universe directly said. In his opinion, Lin Ming’s potential future achievements were limitless. If he joined Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, then with Frost Dream also there, who could still hope to compete with them?

The only thing worth considering would be the fact that Lin Ming and Frost Dream were two absolutely proud geniuses of heaven. If they were to stay together for a long time then they might form feelings between each other that would multiply. The resulting consequences might violate Divine Dream’s ultimate taboo.

The truth was that Empyrean Vast Universe also had a faint guess regarding Frost Dream’s status. If Frost Dream was truly the reincarnated half of Divine Dream’s primordial spirit then the previous matter would truly be a grave issue.

Of course, he couldn’t directly speak about this.

Empyrean Divine Dream shook her said, saying, “I have a different reason for not accepting Lin Ming as my disciple. In addition, there is another matter that I will be honest about. Lin Ming, you are not suited to study the Divine Dream Law because… you do not possess spirit source. Think about your decision carefully.”

“Spirit source?”

Lin Ming was startled. He had also heard this term before, but as for what spirit source truly was, he still wasn’t sure.

Empyrean Divine Dream said, “A human has essence, energy and divine, and the universe also possesses essence, energy and divine. The essence of the universe is all the matter that exists, the energy of the universe is all the myriad energies that exist, and the divine is represented by the Heavenly Dao Laws. All three of these aspects have a source which represents their very beginning. Do you know of grandmist energy?”

Lin Ming nodded. He was familiar with grandmist energy; it was the foundation of his grandmist space.

“Yes, a great part of the reason that Empyrean Primordius was able to wield the Grandmist Laws was because he possessed a tremendous amount of grandmist energy. Grandmist energy is the source of all matter.

“Besides grandmist energy, there are also two other kinds of sources in this world. They are genesis energy and spirit source. The two of them correspond to ‘energy’ and ‘divine’ respectively. The reason that I could create the Divine Dream Law was by relying on spirit source!

“My Divine Dream Heavenly Palace has a very small number of people, only several hundred disciples. As for the disciples I have personally accepted, for all these millions of years, there have only been 10. The reason is because of a limitation in my requirements. All of my disciples must possess spirit source. However, you do not, thus you are destined to make no progress in the Divine Dream Law.”

As Empyrean Divine Dream explained this, Lin Ming was suddenly enlightened. No wonder there were so few people in Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

Grandmist energy, genesis energy, spirit source, these were the three foundations that represented the essence, energy, and divine of the universe. This was the first time Lin Ming had heard of this.

“Now, are you still determined to study the Divine Dream Law?” Empyrean Divine Dream slowly said as she looked at Lin Ming.

“I am.” Lin Ming replied without hesitation. The triple cultivation of essence, energy, and divine was related to the Laws of the 33 Layered Heavens, he certainly couldn’t give up on it.

“Very well…” Empyrean Divine Dream no longer opposed. “Since you insist, I will not refuse you. I only hope that you do not waste your time.”

As the one who founded the Divine Dream Law, Empyrean Divine Dream could confirm that it was impossible to cultivate it without spirit source. However, she also didn’t wish to meddle in Lin Ming’s growth. She believed that Lin Ming had his own wonderful destiny to follow, and if he were subject to the intervention of others, he would never have reached this step.

“I thank Senior Divine Dream for the help.” Lin Ming happily said. He only wished to learn the Divine Dream Law; he didn’t care whether or not he formed any good relations with Divine Dream’s disciples.

“Senior Divine Dream, this junior has a question concerning the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago. This junior would like to ask – just what is the great calamity?”

On the Divine Seal Altar, Lin Ming had seen some remnant scenes of the great calamity.

Empyrean Divine Seal had stood atop the Divine Seal Altar. With Empyreans as generals and Holy Lords as soldiers, the God Beasts that soared through the universe had blocked out the heavens like massive celestial bodies. This scene had left a tremendous impact on him!

“The great calamity…” Upon mentioning this term, there was an ethereal tone to Empyrean Divine Dream’s tone.

“Countless years have passed since the birth of the universe; no one knows just how old this world is. It could be a trillion years or even a quadrillion years or more. And during this time, martial arts civilization has been destroyed many, many times, with countless worlds being destroyed and reborn. If this universe was truly destroyed then even a True Divinity would not be able to escape. If one looks back through the trillion plus years of the universe’s history, there have been many instances of this so-called ‘great calamity’. Facing the vast universe, even Empyreans are nothing more than ants.”

Empyrean Divine Dream suddenly emitted a deep feeling. Lin Ming was silent, respectfully listening to her.

“Now, the great calamity of 3.6 billion years ago should be referring to the fading of the barriers of the 33 Layered Heavens.” Empyrean Divine Dream softly said. But as Lin Ming heard this, he felt a chill run up his spine. “Barriers of the 33 Layered Heavens? What is that?”

The Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens was part of the Laws that Lin Ming cultivated. But as to what the 33 Layered Heavens truly were, he had no idea even now.

Empyrean Divine Dream said, “You should know that there are countless divergent mystic realms in the Divine Realm, right?”

Lin Ming nodded. He had gone to two divergent mystic realms before. One was the God Beast Mystic Realm governed by the four God Beast Clans, and the other was the Red Desolate Mystic Realm governed by Carefree Island.

In these two mystic realms, Lin Ming had harvested a supreme dragon bone one time and obtained a massive wealth the second time.

“The barriers that Senior refers to, are these the barriers that separate the divergent mystic realms?” Lin Ming suddenly asked as he recalled something.

Within the Divine Realm there were countless divergent mystic realms, each with tremendous amounts of wealth. However, wanting to enter them was difficult. This was because there existed barriers between the Divine Realm and these divergent mystic realms.

In order to pass through this barrier, one had to go through specialized transmission arrays and also consume a massive amount of violet sun stones. Also, the person transmitted couldn't have too high a cultivation. The higher the cultivation, the more energy was required to transmit that person.

It was also because of this reason that no matter if it were the four God Beast Clans entering the God Beast Mystic Realm or Carefree Island entering the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, they had to consume a considerable amount of resources each time.

"Yes, the barriers of these divergent mystic realms are in truth the barriers that divide the 33 Layered Heavens. The Divine Realm's endless divergent mystic realms are in truth the gaps between the Divine Realm and these other realms. There are 33 Layered Heavens and the Divine Realm is only one of them; its name is the Divine Shifting Heavens.

Empyrean Divine Dream's words were slow and calm, but when she spoke them they struck Lin Ming's mind like a titanic steel ball!

The heavens had 33 layers, and the Divine Realm was only one of them!?

This was…!?

Lin Ming was completely mind-boggled. He had already felt that the Divine Realm was vast to the point of being incomparably terrifying, but now he learned that the Divine Realm was only one realm of these 33 realms?

He never knew just what the legends of the 33 Layered Heavens meant. But now he knew just what the 33 Layered Heavens were. The 'heavens' meant other realms altogether, not the skies above.

Empyrean Divine Dream continued, “There are barrier walls that separate the 33 Layered Heavens. These barrier walls can separate all existences. The more powerful an existence is, the more difficult it is to cross. However, periodically, like the tide, these barrier walls will weaken to the point that they vanish altogether. The great calamity of 3.6 billion years ago was also because these barrier walls vanished.

“Beyond the Divine Realm there are alien races that are the mortal enemies of humanity. Moreover, they covet the resources of the Divine Realm beyond all reasoning. This leads to great wars between the different races. In the past, a bloody war swept through the entire Divine Realm, and nearly all martial arts masters died because of it! The leader of the martial arts world at that time – Empyrean Divine Seal, also perished because of this…”

As Empyrean Divine Dream spoke, Lin Ming could feel various emotions surging within him. “Alien races?”

“Yes, these alien races possess different Laws and cultivation methods from humanity. In truth, the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens that you practice is said to be amongst the highest of Concepts because it is suitable for all worlds within the 33 Layered Heavens; this means that it is also suitable for the alien races.”

Empyrean Divine Dream’s words were astonishing. As Lin Ming heard this he was incomparably shocked. So that’s how it was! This was the true face of the 33 Layered Heavens Laws, and what Empyrean Divine Seal cultivated in the past were these 33 Layered Heavens Laws.

Chapter 1330 – The Mysteries of Empyrean Primordius

Chapter 1330 – The Mysteries of Empyrean Primordius

…

…

…

"Senior Divine Dream, when this junior participated in the First Martial Meeting preliminaries, I once killed a red-furred monster and saw some of the images in its mind. It seemed to have come from a 'Soul World'?"

Within the Divine Dream World, Lin Ming had killed a red-furred monster and absorbed the elementary spirit source in its body. Along with this spirit source, he had also absorbed some of the red-furred monster's memories and knew that it was a soul life form imprisoned by Divine Dream.

At that time, Lin Ming had felt that all of this was strange. The Soul World didn't seem like a part of the Divine Realm at all.

"Yes, the Soul World is one of the 33 Layered Heavens. As for that nightmare beast, it belongs to the spiritas, the soul race.

"Within the 33 Layered Heavens, the three races with the most individuals are – the human race, saint race, and soul race. Among them, humanity primarily cultivates the essence gathering system, the saints primarily cultivate the body transformation system, and the spiritas primarily cultivate the soul forging system.

“These three races have existed for a long time. In the endless years of the past, each race has had their own golden era where they shined the brightest. The human race also prospered once, flourishing in brilliant splendor and even occupying half the territories within the 33 Layered Heavens. However, for the last 10 billion years, humanity has been growing increasingly weak and our domains have been constantly encroached upon by the other two races. Now, several heaven domains that belonged to humanity have been occupied. Our fellow humans that live there have been slaughtered or turned into slaves. It’s even possible that the only heaven domain still belonging to humanity is our current Divine Realm. Thus, the great war of 3.6 billion years ago concerned the survival of humanity itself. Even though there are differences between the various Empyreans, they are all able to lay down their prejudices and conflicts at the critical moment when their race is in danger and unite together against an external threat.”

Divine Dream calmly stated the history of 3.6 billion years ago. As Lin Ming listened, he felt emotions surge in his heart. He found it hard to imagine just how tragic that great war was, and as the leader of humanity, just what strange experiences did Empyrean Divine Seal go through?

“Senior Divine Dream, this junior also has one more question concerning Empyrean Primordius. This junior would like to know just what happened 100,000 years ago. Why would he go to the Sky Spill Planet?”

If it was said that Empyrean Primordius and Empyrean Thunder Punishment’s brutal war was waged because of the Demon Bead, Lin Ming could understand that. But, what he couldn’t understand was why they chose to fight on the Sky Spill Continent. In the Divine Realm, that was nothing but a world of the lower realms unworthy of mentioning.

Empyrean Divine Dream said, “The reason that Primordius chose the Sky Spill Continent is because he himself was a martial artist that ascended from the lower realms. As for the Sky Spill Planet, that was his home, the world he originated from.”

“What?”

Lin Ming was shocked speechless. Empyrean Primordius was actually a martial artist that ascended from the lower realms, and he even came from the Sky Spill Planet!

“I am not too clear as to what Primordius’ situation was like. What I know is that 8 million years ago, he ascended from the lower realms and rose like a comet. His growth was incredibly fast, and he became an Empyrean soon after, even becoming one of the several strongest peak Empyreans of the Divine Realm.

“After that, he returned to the Sky Spill Planet to establish his own Samsara Path. Primordius controlled grandmist energy and by practicing it to the peak, he was able to directly draw upon the strength of the celestial bodies in the universe. As for the Sky Spill Planet, it was Primordius’ homeland and he held a marvelous connection to that planet. By using the Sky Spill Planet, Primordius was able to fuse his aura with it and greatly increase his own combat strength.”

“So that’s how it was.” Lin Ming said, suddenly aware. Grandmist energy was the source of all matter from before the formation of the universe. All of the celestial bodies in the universe, whether it was a fire star, planet, meteor, nebula, or anything else, all of it was evolved from grandmist energy. Since Empyrean Primordius had cultivated the Grandmist Laws to the extreme, it was well within reason that he was able to borrow the power of celestial bodies to fight.

Lin Ming guessed that the reason Empyrean Primordius’ strength rose so rapidly was likely due to the Demon Bead. After that, the reason that the Magic Cube passed through a space-time storm and landed on the Sky Spill Continent was likely because there was some unknown attraction between the Demon Bead and Magic Cube.

Thus, this was the reason why Lin Ming was able to obtain the Magic Cube, the reason why he met Mo Eversnow, and also the reason why he rose.

As for Lin Ming’s rise, it just happened to coincide with the upcoming calamity that was finally arriving once more after 3.6 billion years, allowing him the possibility of becoming one of the leading actors in this era. Although all of these events seemed like coincidences, it also seemed like the hand of fate at work somewhere.

In this great era, it was destined that numerous heroes would rise up together and countless spirit treasures would be born. This also signaled that the great calamity would be arriving like a torrential storm, washing away all.

After figuring out all of these things, some of the puzzles Lin Ming had in his mind ever since he was at the Eternal Demon Abyss finally disappeared. But at the same time, Lin Ming also had new questions.

Lin Ming said, "Senior Divine Dream, this junior has a point that he is confused about. In the past, Empyrean Primordius was already an extreme Empyrean. You said that with the support of the Sky Spill Planet, his strength was even greater. In this sort of situation, who would dare to attack him? And this person seemed to be Empyrean Thunder Punishment? Was he also an extreme Empyrean?"

In Lin Ming's opinion, even if everyone under the heavens knew that Empyrean Primordius possessed the Demon Bead and they also knew just how valuable it was, there would still be no one that would have the courage to move against Empyrean Primordius. However, the reality was different from what Lin Ming expected. Not only were there people that fought Empyrean Primordius, but they even succeeded in their mission. Lin Ming didn't know whether or not Empyrean Primordius had truly perished, but even if he hadn't, he would have surely paid a deep price for his loss, such as falling into an eternally deep sleep.

Divine Dream said, "I am not too sure about those events in the past. There are still many mysteries surrounding the disappearance of Empyrean Primordius. Thunder Punishment was indeed one of the people that attacked Empyrean Primordius in the past, but he was only one of them. In terms of strength, Thunder Punishment was naturally inferior to Primordius. However, what happened had gone beyond my expectations. I suspect that in that great war, there were some dark powers participating from the shadows and manipulating events. For instance… alien races of the 33 Heavens!"

Lin Ming was stunned. “Alien races of the 33 Heavens? If the barrier walls that separate the heavens haven’t been broken, do they still have the ability to enter the Divine Realm?”

“This is only my speculation. But, even if they did possess the ability to do so they would surely have to pay a deep price for it. This is proof that Empyrean Primordius had something on his body worth them paying such a grievous price...”

“I understand.”

Lin Ming took a deep breath, his mood somewhat heavy and gloomy.

Although there were many details still unclear about this matter, he had his own guesses. If he wasn’t wrong then the reason the alien races did all of this was because of the Demon Bead.

Even an extremely powerful supreme elder like Empyrean Primordius had drawn a fatal disaster upon himself because of the Demon Bead. Then, if someone like Lin Ming, who was nothing but an ant in front of an Empyrean, was to expose the secret of the Magic Cube, then the results would be disastrous!

Lin Ming was increasingly happy that he had suppressed the movements of the Magic Cube during his fight with Frost Dream. Otherwise, Lin Ming could only have passed the Magic Cube to Divine Dream. He simply wouldn’t have been able to handle the consequences of possessing it.

“Lin Ming, if you have truly made the decision to return with me to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace then I will not be able to guide you during your stay there. After I return, Frost Dream will break into the Divine Transformation realm and I must close up with her.”

Frost Dream was the reincarnated half of Divine Dream’s primordial spirit. Each time she made a breakthrough was extremely important to Divine Dream because it concerned whether or not she could become a True Divinity in the future. For Frost Dream, Divine Dream would certainly go all-out.

“Yes. This junior does not require Senior Divine Dream’s personal guidance; having a copy of the Divine Dream Law jade slip is more than enough.”

“You wish to study on your own? Studying the Divine Dream Law by yourself is… very difficult. Moreover, you do not possess your own spirit source so it will be even more difficult for you. I hope that you won’t make too many detours on your path. Let me ask you one last time – is this your final decision?”

“Yes!”

Lin Ming said without hesitation. Divine Dream lightly sighed and said, “If you insist, then let it be so. I shall give you three days to bid farewell to your family and friends. Afterwards, you will return to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace with me.”

……………

Like this, the First Martial Meeting had ended. Within Vast Universe Heavenly Palace, there were still many spectators that didn’t seem ready to depart just yet.

In the contestant area, Jun Bluemoon was holding a little white bunny and softly stroking it. He whispered, “What a pity. It’s about time for us to go.”

The road of martial arts was an endless journey. He still had a long path laid out before him.

“Benefactor Jun, please wait.”

Just as Jun Bluemoon was about to leave, Hang Chi called out to him. Hang Chi was dressed in loose white burlap robes, his palms pressed together in prayer. “May I inquire as to what plans Benefactor Jun has for the future?”

“I will wander the endless world, seeking my road of martial arts.”

“Benefactor Jun is indeed suited for living such a dashing and carefree life. However, walking alone, the resources you can obtain will always be limited. I wonder if Benefactor

Jun has any interest in coming to Mount Potala and becoming a layman disciple of my Mount Potala?”

“Enter a Buddhist sect?”

Jun Bluemoon’s heart moved as he heard Hang Chi’s words. He had lived an extraordinary life filled with wonders, but his life had also been filled with absolute sadness and tragedy. The dark events that shaped his life had made him give up all earthly desires and wishes, and even formed his current silent and melancholic personality. Perhaps the Buddhist faith was a good destination for him to go to.

“Let me… consider it.”

“Of course. The great gates of Mount Potala will remain wide open for Benefactor Jun.” Hang Chi bowed with a smile. In the top six individuals of the First Martial Meeting, Lin Ming and Dragon Fang did not suit Mount Potala. Only someone like Jun Bluemoon with his personality was perfectly suited for the Buddhist faith. Thus, the Buddha of Mount Potala had thoughts of receiving him as a disciple.

After Jun Bluemoon left, Dragon Fang also departed Vast Universe Heavenly Palace.

He carried the Dragon Fang Blade on his back, the setting sun sprinkling the last dying rays of light on his back, casting a long shadow behind him. At this time, Dragon Fang’s back seemed incomparably desolate and lonely.

He refused the invitations of all Empyrean influences. He was like a lone wolf, embarking on his path by himself.

A lonely road, wandering the galaxies seeking greater battles – that was his everything.

“Have you made your decision?”

An old voice resounded in Dragon Fang's ears. This voice came from Three Lives Old Man. Dragon Fang's master was Three Lives Old Man. In terms of inheritances and resources, Dragon Fang was no worse than any other Empyrean descendant.

Dragon Fang said, "I have. My strength is far from enough. If I do not risk everything I have then it is impossible for me to stand tall in these chaotic times."

The old man sighed. "To step onto the Asura Road is to die nine times and live once. It is a place that does not belong to the Divine Realm. I can deliver you there, but I cannot bring you back. There are many alien races there that will kill humans if they see them. There are also other alien races that are hundreds of times more powerful than you. If you wish to survive, you need not only strength but also luck and destiny. Are you sure you won't change your decision?"

"Yes!"

"Good… since that is the case, I will not stop you. In the last 300 million years, you are the only disciple that I have accepted. I do not believe that my legacy will end with you. Try your best to live."

Chapter 1331 – Holy Land of Women

Chapter 1331 – Holy Land of Women

…

…

…

Divine Dream gave Lin Ming three days to reunite with his family and friends. During these days, the Ancient Phoenix Clan lived in Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. In front of their palace, countless visitors came each day. Spirit boats, spirit ships, all of them hovered in the skies above, blocking out the sun.

Without a doubt, they were all here to see Lin Ming.

In the inner courtyard of the palace, Lin Ming was together with Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan. He was about to leave soon, and this time he simply didn't know how long he would be gone for. He naturally wouldn't waste his time entertaining those people outside who he didn't know.

Of course, these people also knew that if Lin Ming didn't perish in the future he would certainly become an Empyrean. Treating them a bit coldly was normal.

They didn't need to see Lin Ming in person. Rather, greeting the high level figures of the Ancient Phoenix Clan and leaving behind some congratulatory gifts was more than enough.

During this period, the bank president of True Martial Great World's Starbind Bank also came to visit. He directly waived Lin Ming's debt of 7 trillion violet sun stones and even returned the dragon bone relics that he had pawned.

This person was the only one Lin Ming received. After all, when Lin Ming had borrowed violet sun stone crystals from Starbind Bank, that had allowed him to buy the Boundless World Pill. In turn, that had saved Lin Ming a great deal of trouble. Seeing the bank president was also a sign of thanks.

In truth, Lin Ming wasn't short of money anymore. With dozens of nine sun jades in his hands, buying another Boundless World Pill wasn't anything at all.

These three days rapidly passed. Lin Ming soon bid his farewells to everyone and left Vast Universe Heavenly Palace by himself, going to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace with Empyrean Divine Dream.

……….

Although Lin Ming had seen many stunning immortal paradises during his years in the Divine Realm, he was still shocked upon seeing Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

Between the boundless sea of clouds floated countless celestial mountains. These celestial mountains were covered with all sorts of beautiful spirit trees and spirit flowers, each one of them treasures of the heavens and earth. Innumerable springs gushed out from these floating celestial mountains, sprinkling between the clouds like endless threads of infinitely long white silk.

The illusive Divine Dream Heavenly Palace was located within these celestial mountains. It was like a mirage, a sight so beautiful and tempting that it could be a dream.

Entering into Divine Dream Heavenly Palace was like stepping into a different world. Here, rays of shimmering light flowed about, illuminating countless heavenly materials.

These mountain streams were not water but immortal spring nectar. A single drop could prolong the life of a mortal for hundreds of years. Even the soil here was perfect for breeding treasures. If weeds of the mortal world were planted in just a handful of this soil, they could eventually grow into wonderful materials to refine pills from.

Divine Dream Heavenly Palace didn’t seem too large from the outside, but the truth was that the size within was no smaller than a greater dimension!

Every disciple of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace possessed their own area that was thousands of miles wide, as large as a mortal nation. As for direct disciples and Heavenly Palace Elders, the areas they occupied were even larger.

These independent worlds were all rich with flowers, with spiritual plants growing everywhere. The heaven and earth origin energy here formed a fog that eventually turned into clouds that ended up raining down over the world. Eventually, it formed the lakes and rivers of these worlds, each filled with its own spiritual energy.

Every separate world had its own palace; these were the palaces of the disciples from Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

The style and design of these palaces were all arranged according to the preferences of the disciples. They were luxurious and carved from the purest jade, each one of them dozens and hundreds of times greater than mortal imperial palaces. Countless pavilions dotted the palaces, with winding rock gardens all around.

Those that preferred simpler settings could have a few small bamboo houses, each one of them fragrant and infinitely fresh.

This was Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, a true immortal paradise. Although there were only several hundred disciples, each one of them was an extraordinary being, able to compare to normal Empyrean descendants. Correspondingly, each disciple of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace was able to use a quantity and quality of resources that would leave others dumbfounded. These resources were dozens or hundreds of times greater than what a genius from a World King Holy Land could ever hope to afford!

“Haha, Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, you are the only male to enter Divine Dream Heavenly Palace in the last several tens of thousands of years.”

The senior-apprentice sister leading Lin Ming was named Frost Dew. She was several years older than Lin Ming but still retained a fresh and beautiful aura. Her milky white bosoms were full and plentiful and her round buttocks were thick and upturned, just like a ripe peach.

Divine Dream Heavenly Palace could be called a holy land of women. Although there were only several hundred true disciples and Elders, there were also several thousands of maids that took care of these disciples. Moreover, within Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, there were some spirit flowers, immortal plants, or spirit birds that could take on human form, all of them women. This caused there to be even more women in Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

It was said that a person was raised by the soil and water. In exquisite locales of the mortal world there would be beautiful women born, much less an immortal paradise like Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. The women here breathed the purest heaven and earth origin energy, drank immortal nectar and spirit spring water, and ate precious plants. All of this gradually and naturally removed all impurities from their bodies, causing their skin to be pure and flawless. Their appearances were enchanting and each woman here also had a wonderful degree of talent. They were able to practice all sorts of cultivation methods. Each woman here had an otherworldly temperament just like a goddess descended from the heavens.

This holy land of women rarely had a man enter every tens of thousands of years. Now that Lin Ming suddenly arrived, it naturally attracted the curious gazes of many young women.

As Lin Ming was walking past an immortal fairy pond, two beautiful little red fish suddenly leapt out of the water, turning into two attractive young girls with the appearances of 16-17 year olds. Their bodies were wrapped in a layer of fine gauze that seemed formed from flowing moonlight. Underneath this gauze was revealed perfectly round and slender pale thighs. Because of the thin gauze, the breasts of these two mischievous and cute girls loomed right in the eyes.

These two girls were part of the monster race. In their lives, they had never seen a man before. They usually wore this type of clothing in Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. As they played with each other, this thin gauze was often lifted by the wind or even pulled down by their naughty friends, revealing a beautiful spring scene.

They were as innocent as the clearest crystal. They simply didn't know that it was a loss to be seen by a man like this.

The two young girls looked at Lin Ming with curiosity. Their dark eyes shined with a bright light, blinking like a newborn baby.

This simply confused Lin Ming to the point of being embarrassed. He didn't know where to direct his eyes.

He never thought that after Empyrean Divine Dream ordered Senior-apprentice Sister Frost Dew to guide him to choose a dwelling place he would encounter such a scene.

"Aiya! Ling Hong, Ling Yu, you two must want to die!"

Frost Dew didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. She was responsible for some of the internal affairs of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. It had to be known that Divine Dream Heavenly Palace had their own industries, and a great number of them at that. These were sources of wealth that Empyrean influences had to manage, otherwise there simply wouldn't be anything to eat. Thus, Frost Dew often left Divine Dream Heavenly Palace to go outside and deal with mundane business matters. With her experience, she wasn't like these two monster race girls that were purer than white paper who didn't even know of the matters between men and women.

The two young girls still stared at Lin Ming with their large bright eyes. As they looked over Lin Ming, they tittered, just like extremely excited little children seeing something new and strange.

To them, a young man was truly far too strange an existence.

"You two, I just have no idea what to say to you!"

Frost Dew simply didn't know what to say, instead quickly shooing the two young girls away. However, the two young girls naturally didn't feel as if they had suffered a loss by being seen in this way by Lin Ming. Instead, Ling Yu chuckled and said to Lin Ming with a smile, "My name is Ling Yu and this is my big sister Ling Hong. Our family lives in this pond. If you have any free time, come and play with us!"

After saying this, the two young girls were forced back into fish form by Frost Dew, returning to the water. They naughtily jumped in the clear spring water, slapping their tails on the surface and splashing silver beads of water in the air. These water drops even splashed on Lin Ming as if they wanted to play with him.

"This is... I'm really embarrassed by this. These young children have never gone outside thus they have never seen a man before."

As Frost Dew said this, his complexion became increasingly awkward. He traced his nose and said, "The one who should be embarrassed is me. I presumptuously entered into the residences of two fairy maidens and caused offense to them..."

Seeing Lin Ming have such a reaction, Frost Dew smiled and said, "The truth is that they probably thought you were new and fun. I'm sure they didn't mind at all. What I meant to say just now was that there hasn't been a man entering Divine Dream Heavenly Palace for the last several tens of thousands of years. Even then, they would only go to the main hall to greet Honorable Master or an Elder before leaving. There has never been a man who was permitted to live in an inner palace of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

"There was once a young man with outstanding talent who wished to do obeisance to Honorable Master and take her as his master. But, Honorable Master did not accept him as a disciple. From this alone, one can see that Junior-apprentice Brother Lin is truly an exception amongst exceptions. It is clear that Honorable Master sees you in a different light!"

Frost Dew said with some envy. To be treated like such by Empyrean Divine Dream was truly a stroke of good fortune.

The truth was that in Empyrean Divine Dream's eyes, Lin Ming would likely become one of the leading characters in the upcoming great calamity; he might even be an important figure concerning the survival of the human race. Divine Dream would naturally treat such a character with special care and satisfy his requests as much as possible. She would want Lin Ming to grow as much as he could so that he could raise his strength as high as possible.

Compared to the great calamity of 3.6 billion years ago and the survival of humanity, Lin Ming entering Divine Dream Heavenly Palace and seeing the naked spring scenes of all these young girls was truly a minor matter not worth mentioning.

In fact, when Divine Dream allowed Lin Ming to enter Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, she hadn't even warned him to not form relationships with any of the disciples here. In a sense, this was Empyrean Divine Dream's way of tacitly consenting for Lin Ming to develop emotions for the young disciples here. At the very least, she wasn't too opposed to this matter.

As Lin Ming thought of this, he felt somewhat helpless. In truth, if a normal hot-blooded male were placed in such a holy land of women, surrounded by so many young girls, all of them beautiful and incomparably pure and also having no emotional or physical guards... that was truly a titanic test of one's self control.

"Senior-apprentice Sister Frost Dew, I heard that Divine Dream Heavenly Palace does not allow their disciples to become married and they must maintain their purity for their entire lives. Is there such a matter?" Lin Ming suddenly asked. In truth, he felt that this rule was a bit too harsh. Although it wasn't ruinous to these women, it definitely wasn't the most humane stipulation.

He didn't understood just why Empyrean Divine Dream would have such rules. There were probably young women born in Divine Dream Heavenly Palace who had never seen a man before. As he imagined it, if a boy was born in a world of man and reached old age without ever seeing a woman, that would truly be a tragedy.

Chapter 1332 – Lin Ming's Decision

Chapter 1332 – Lin Ming's Decision

…

…

…

"The rule that the disciples of Divine Dream Palace are unable to marry, in fact, has an extremely long history…"

As Frost Dew spoke of this rule, she had an indifferent expression as if she didn't mind at all. "In the past, Honorable Master Divine Dream came from a Great World King level influence, Illusion Palace, where they studied illusion techniques. The disciples of Illusion Palace were also mostly women. At that time, the rules were that core disciples could not marry. If an outer court disciple were to form a relationship with a core female disciple, then the consequences would be serious.

"Afterward, Honorable Master Divine Dream surpassed all others, evolving the illusion arts to the limit. At the same time, she also established the Divine Dream Law, and by using that as a foundation, she became an Empyrean. With the original Illusion Palace as the basis, she founded Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

"But, the rule that core disciples could not marry continued onwards. This was because for studying the Divine Dream Law, maintaining one's primordial yin allows for the best cultivation state. At the same time, since the disciples of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace had some degree of spirit source, if they were to have sex with a man then their spirit source would be drained away along with their primordial yin, even causing their cultivation to suffer. This is the reason that the rule has continued.

“If a disciple truly insists on marrying, then that isn’t impossible. But, they must leave Divine Dream Heavenly Palace…”

“So it’s like that.” Lin Ming nodded. There were many cultivation methods that required one to maintain their primordial yin or primordial yang. In the martial world, there were those who never touched upon the relations between men and women because they pursued the road of martial arts with their everything.

Although it sounded inhumane for a woman to never be married or experience romance with men, there were many sects in the Divine Realm that were similar. For instance, Mount Potala only accepted male disciples and they were also disallowed from touching women. They had to maintain their pure virgin bodies.

As Lin Ming was led through by Frost Dew, he ran into several thinly clad girls. All of them looked at Lin Ming with blatant curiosity, making him feel a bit awkward.

At this time, an old voice sounded out, “All of you, how can you be so improper in front of an outsider!”

With this loud voice, several young girls were scared silly. It was clear that they feared this voice.

Lin Ming turned around to see an old woman with a walking stick slowly walking towards him. She was thin and her steps were steady. Her entire body exuded a strangely angry momentum, making anyone feel weaker when facing her.

As for all those young girls that were happily talking to Lin Ming just now, all of them hid their bright smiles, each one of them remaining silent.

“You are all young and this is exactly the best time for you to cultivate. Stop diverting your attention to some nonsensical matters. All of you return to your training areas and close up for a year!”

As the old woman said this, all of the young girls looked like smashed eggplants. Several of the young girls also had extremely heavy hearts upon hearing this. To go into seclusion for a whole year and not be able to play, that was truly a sad and lonely life.

“Are you Lin Ming?”

The skinny old woman asked Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission as she coldly looked him up and down. Beside him, Frost Dew hastily explained, “This is Granny Mirage. In the past she was the Great World King of Illusion Palace, but now she has reached a half-step Empyrean cultivation and is a Highest Elder of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.”

In order to prevent Lin Ming from offending this person, Frost Dew immediately informed him of the old woman’s identity.

If this old granny was the past Great World King of Illusion Palace, then she was likely over 10 million years old. She probably didn’t have much longer to live. As for breaking through into the Empyrean realm, that was obviously impossible for her.

When a martial artist reached the fading years of their lives and were unable to make breakthroughs, with their lifespan also reaching its limit, they often developed strange personalities and were subject to rapidly shifting moods.

Lin Ming naturally wouldn’t go out of his way to offend such a person. He bowed and said, “Junior Lin Ming greets High Master.”

“Mm. Come with me. Frost Dew, draw back.”

As the old woman spoke she waved her sleeves. In the next moment, she and Lin Ming had arrived in a separate space.

This space didn’t replicate other independent realms with wonderful world treasures everywhere, but was rather a bit desolate and bleak.

Granny Mirage turned around, her old and gray eyes shining as she stared at Lin Ming. "You don't seem to possess spirit source?"

"Yes."

Granny Mirage faintly frowned. "You do not possess spirit source and you still wish to study the Divine Dream Law?"

In her opinion, Lin Ming was doomed to be unable to study the Divine Dream Law. Thus, if he had come to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, his motivations for doing so naturally had to be impure. For instance, there were many men who regarded Divine Dream Heavenly Palace as a paradise with beautiful women floating about like clouds.

Moreover, taking the primordial yin of a disciple here could also assist in the growth of a man's cultivation – it was a tremendous benefit. Granny Mirage hated men like this; if she saw one she would kill one.

Of course, Lin Ming was different. Even if he came here for such reasons there was nothing she could do to him, because he was someone that had the support of Empyrean Divine Dream. In fact, Granny Mirage herself had no desire nor need to flatter Lin Ming. She didn't have many years to live remaining and it was also impossible for her to break through to the next boundary. By the time Lin Ming became an Empyrean, she would have long been buried.

Lin Ming crossed his eyebrows as he saw the open hostility in Granny Mirage's eyes. What he relied on to study the Divine Dream Art was not spirit source but the Magic Cube. It wasn't a problem for him to study it.

"This junior has already been given permission by Senior Divine Dream to study the Divine Dream Law." Lin Ming didn't want this old woman to create any obstacles for him so he directly invoked Empyrean Divine Dream's name.

"Humph, you don't need to take out Divine Dream's name to pressure me. I don't know why she agreed to your request and even allowed you to enter Divine Dream Heavenly

Palace, which is supposed to forbid all men, but since she agreed to this, there is nothing else for me to say. Starting today, you will practice in this independent world. I will give you the first level jade slip of the Divine Dream Law to study. Moreover, I must also remind you that Divine Dream Heavenly Palace is filled with women. So, besides the main hall and martial field, don't randomly burst into other places. If you wish to go to the Library Pavilion then you may inform me and I will have a disciple deliver to you any texts that you need. Also, you should be aware of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace's rules. 10 million years ago when Divine Dream Heavenly Palace was still known as Illusion Palace, there was once a male disciple and core female disciple who developed feelings for each other. If the punishment is light, then that is expulsion from the sect. If the punishment is heavy, then your cultivation will be destroyed. If there was sex involved, then there is only one fate awaiting you, and that is castration. Of course… these rules have been loosened a great deal over time, and since you aren't a disciple of my Divine Dream Heavenly Palace I naturally cannot punish you as I please. Even so, I hope that you take care of yourself and mind these rules."

Granny Mirage's words were filled with the meaning of warning. Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up as he heard this. Although he wasn't like some high Buddhist monk that was pure in heart and body, he could still maintain restraint when faced with women. Even here in Divine Dream Heavenly Palace where beautiful women were like clouds, he could still retain his sanity.

"Granny Mirage. I do not intend to stay at Divine Dream Heavenly Palace and train. As long as I can remember the full contents of the Divine Dream Law jade slip then I can leave and practice on my own."

What Lin Ming said was also a decision he had been thinking over for the last several days.

He had one matter that he wanted to attend to now, and that was returning to the Sky Spill Planet and entering the Eternal Demon Abyss.

As for cultivating the Divine Dream Law, Lin Ming wasn't in a hurry; he could take his time in doing so. Moreover, with Divine Dream closed up together with Frost Dream, she naturally couldn't guide him. If so, then staying at Divine Dream Heavenly Palace wasn't too important to him.

Moreover, Lin Ming also had the Magic Cube in his possession. If he stayed at Divine Dream Heavenly Palace then there might be some clues that appeared about it. He didn't want to take this unnecessary risk.

Because of all these reasons, Lin Ming decided to memorize the entire Divine Dream Law and then leave Divine Dream Heavenly Palace to go to the Eternal Demon Abyss.

"Mm?" Granny Mirage looked at Lin Ming with some surprise. "You don't have any spirit source and you still wish to train on your own. Do you think that the Divine Dream Law is so easy to cultivate? Moreover, to cultivate a transcendent divine might without the jade slip in hand is making difficult matters even more difficult."

Facing Granny Mirage's suspicions yet again, Lin Ming started to become a tad annoyed. "All I need is Empyrean Divine Dream's Divine Dream Law jade slip. After I memorize the contents I will naturally leave of my own volition."

"Then do as you like!" Granny Mirage sneered. "Three days from now I will have someone come to you with the Divine Dream Law jade slip. You will have 100 days to remember it!"

As Granny Mirage finished, she turned around and left in a huff. Still, she was true to her word. Three days later, a direct disciple of Divine Dream delivered the Divine Dream Law jade slip to Lin Ming.

The complete set of the Divine Dream Law jade slip actually consisted of three separate jade slips. These three jade slips were placed in a jade chest, seeming as if they were locked away in a different space-time. Layers of Law runes shimmered on the jade slips.

These were the Divine Dream Law jade slips. They were personally recorded by Empyrean Divine Dream in the past. These jade slips were forged with all sorts of rare materials and were also supported and bound together by the Laws. Even a World King powerhouse would find it impossibly difficult to destroy them.

These jade slips possessed the complete accumulated knowledge and experience of Empyrean Divine Dream's Laws.

"Lin Ming, since you plan to leave Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, do you intend to go back to the Sky Spill Planet?"

"Mm..." Lin Ming nodded. "The enchantment that Empyrean Primordius left behind in the past is able to lock out all martial artists above the Divine Sea realm. If so, then perhaps entering the Eternal Demon Abyss at the Divine Sea realm is my best chance to do so. If I go in now, my abilities should be enough. After all, whether it is Empyrean Primordius' inheritance or the riddle of the Demon Bead, both are amazingly significant to me."

Chapter 1333 – 100 Days Insight

Chapter 1333 – 100 Days Insight

…

…

…

Lin Ming sank his thoughts into the Divine Dream jade slip. He felt a slight aching pain in his spiritual sea as if he were being stabbed by needles. This feeling was because the thoughts contained within the Divine Dream jade slip were far too fierce.

Lin Ming didn't doubt that even if one didn't cultivate the Divine Dream Law, just reading through this Divine Dream jade slip would be greatly beneficial exercise to the divine soul. The energy within the Divine Dream jade slip was similar to a tiny shock that prodded the growth of one's soul. If one read over this jade slip for a long time, it would help boost one's soul and will.

The Divine Dream jade slip was divided into many sections.

The first section was mostly related to illusions arts.

These illusions ranged from attacks to concealment skills to even illusory magic arrays; it included all topics.

Among them was a concealment skill called the Bodily Rebirth Technique. If a Divine Lord realm martial artist were to use this ability, not even a Great World King would be able to recognize him.

In fact, this was no longer solely an illusion. Rather, it was combined with all sorts of changes of the body and soul. This appearance changing technique didn't have any striking power, but it was still very practical.

Then, there was the Ruling Spirit Art, divine dream space, Dreamsoul Immortal Melody, Dream Interpretation, and all sorts of other top cultivation methods that Frost Dream had displayed during the First Martial Meeting. All of them were recorded in clear detail on the Divine Dream jade slip. It could be said that this jade slip was a compilation of the top core inheritances of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

In this aspect, even if Granny Mirage didn't do anything, she still didn't plan on hiding anything from Lin Ming. This was because Granny Mirage knew that Lin Ming wouldn't be able to learn much, if anything at all, during the 100 days he was given.

The Divine Dream jade slip was comprehensive, involving all sorts of incomparably complex Laws and runes. If one didn't have a certain level of understanding already, it would be extremely difficult to remember all of this. Even a Divine Sea realm martial artist with photographic memory wouldn't be able to do so.

This was just like a mortal chess master being able to clearly note and remember every move he made. He would be able to recall every movement and location of the chess pieces, reproducing them all in his mind. But, someone who didn't understand chess would find this impossible. Even if they were to see it over 10,000 times they would still find it impossible to recall.

"This Divine Dream jade slip is truly profound and all-encompassing. Although I can remember the contents in 100 days, I will be destined to have many things that I am confused about..."

Lin Ming was very grateful to Empyrean Divine Dream. She didn't mind allowing Lin Ming to read through the complete core inheritance she had passed down. This was not a small favor.

Perceiving the Laws was a very boring process. However, Lin Ming wholeheartedly sank his mind into the process, rapidly enlightening himself on the Laws. In terms of diligence in torturous cultivation, Lin Ming was no worse than Hang Chi. A true martial artist needed an essential morality and ability to resist loneliness. After all, even a mortal couldn't withstand going into seclusion for several years or even dozens of years.

Like this, Lin Ming sat down and pondered. From time to time he would wander back and forth, and sometimes he would even draw imagines in the air. Slowly, the Divine Dream Law in Lin Ming's mind became increasingly clear.

"I see... so the divine dream space is an enchantment created by a martial artist, flooded with divine dream energy, and then controlled with spirit source."

Lin Ming touched the soul marks in his spiritual sea. He could sense the dreamland energy he absorbed from within the divine dream space come scattering outwards. Underneath Lin Ming's control, all sorts of changes occurred.

Because of the existence of the Magic Cube, Lin Ming could clearly see the circulation path of divine dream energy. In fact, his sight was even clearer than that of the disciples of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

The Magic Cube itself was a world treasure of the highest level condensed from the 'divine' of the universe's essence, energy, and divine. If one had the ability to truly move the Magic Cube to kill others, then even an Empyrean might be instantly killed. But as he was, Lin Ming could only use a small portion of its strength. Even so, using it to train was greatly beneficial to one's divine soul.

Unconsciously, a layer of enchantment began to appear around Lin Ming. As for Lin Ming, he fell into a deep trace, ignoring all, thoroughly entering into a sea of the Divine Dream Law.

He was like a dry seabed, greedily absorbing the rain.

Time passed; training had no time or rhythm. When Lin Ming forgot time, 100 days was far too short.

“It’s been 100 days!”

As Lin Ming was deep in contemplation, the voice of an old woman suddenly resounded in his ears. This voice was a bit crude as well as a bit overbearing.

Lin Ming opened his eyes. In front of him, streams of light gathered together, eventually forming into an old woman drowning in voluminous robes. Her skinny figure was completely mismatched with the clothes that draped all over her.

She was Granny Mirage.

“Have you finishing looking through it?” Granny Mirage said with a ridiculing smile. She didn’t think that Lin Ming could have truly seen through and remembered the contents of the Divine Dream jade slip in this time.

The reasons were twofold. First, Lin Ming didn’t possess spirit source and second, he didn’t have a teacher to guide him. In this situation, if Lin Ming was able to learn the Divine Dream Law then he truly was bizarre. Let alone learning it, it would be impossible for him to remember the contents of the Divine Dream jade slip. This was because the things inside were simply far too complex. If one didn’t under the Laws governing it, how could they possibly remember all of these extremely complex Law runes?

Lin Ming shook his head, honestly saying, “I haven’t.”

100 days was enough for Lin Ming to glance over the entirety of the Divine Dream jade slip. But to unconsciously comprehend the Laws within and deduce them to perfect levels in his mind, 100 days was far from sufficient.

“Hehe.” Granny Mirage sneered loudly, with an expression on her face saying that she already expected this.

Granny Mirage believed that Lin Ming had nefarious reasons for coming to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. She believed that he wanted to capture the young women here. After all, every girl here was an outstanding individual. If he could take their primordial yin, that would be greatly beneficial to him. If this wasn't what he was doing here, then why would he choose to study the Divine Dream Law, something he couldn't possibly hope to understand?

She couldn't figure out just why Divine Dream had agreed to this young boy's request. But, since Divine Dream had agreed, she couldn't oppose her decision. After all, Divine Dream was the true master of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

"Good, then I shall give you 100 more days. This is also the final 100 days. The Divine Dream jade slips are extremely limited in Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. There are three sets, two of them copies and one of them the original. It is impossible for me to let you hold onto it forever."

This point was not Granny Mirage trying to make things difficult for Lin Ming. The situation was the same in any sect. The inheritances of transcendent divine mights were extremely precious and every disciple was given a very limited time to study them.

Lin Ming was disinclined to bother with Granny Mirage's rude attitude. He said, "I'm not in a hurry to perceive the Divine Dream jade slip. I have many areas I am still confused about. For the next 100 days I would like to borrow the texts in Library Pavilion."

Before, Granny Mirage had said that if Lin Ming wished to read something from Library Pavilion, he could send for someone to deliver the books to him. However, only he knew what he truly wanted to read, thus it was more convenient for him to go himself.

Granny Mirage frowned. She originally wanted to refuse this, but upon thinking of something, she mockingly said, "If you wish to go to Library Pavilion, you may."

Chapter 1334 – Soul Shifting Art

Chapter 1334 – Soul Shifting Art

…

…

…

Divine Dream Heavenly Palace’s Library Pavilion was located in a separate world within Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. There was a giant signboard written with the two words of ‘Library Pavilion’ in the language of the ancient Divine Realm. This signboard exuded the charm of long lost years.

After Lin Ming arrived at Library Pavilion, he felt a faint divine sense washing over him. If it weren’t for the senses of his divine soul becoming increasingly sharp after cultivating the Divine Dream Law, he simply wouldn’t have been able to sense this.

He knew that there were some people secretly spying on him.

Lin Ming didn’t bother with this. He walked into Library Pavilion and looked around. There were rows upon rows of bookshelves, carefully lined with countless jade slips. If any one of these jade slips were picked up, there would be a tremendous amount of information contained within. Not only did they included all the various arcane skills of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, but they also recorded the history of the entire Divine Realm, geography, customs, and regional situations of the 3000 great worlds. There was also information on every influence that occupied these lands.

As Lin Ming was casually looking through the jade slips, his footsteps suddenly paused.

“Mm?”

Lin Ming discovered that when he wanted to enter deeper into Library Pavilion, there was actually an invisible enchantment blocking him. This layer of enchantment was similar to Frost Dream's divine dream space, but there were also some differences.

The enchantment in Library Pavilion was countless times stronger than Frost Dream's divine dream space. However, it had no killing intent or offensive capability at all. Its sole purpose was to prevent Lin Ming from continuing forwards.

"So that's how it is. There's something this strange in Library Pavilion?"

Lin Ming recalled Granny Mirage's cunning smile and finally understood just what she felt was so amusing. This Library Pavilion was not easy to enter. If one couldn't unravel this enchantment then it was impossible to go deeper.

It wasn't strange for this type of situation to occur. In any other sect, core inheritances could not be casually taught to whoever wished to learn them. Moreover, the higher a disciple's cultivation, the greater authority they had.

But to Lin Ming, this enchantment wasn't anything at all. As long as one understood the Divine Dream Law they could easily part this chaotic divine dream energy and walk in unimpeded.

With just a thought, the divine dream energy around Lin Ming parted like a current of water around a rock. He strode deeper into Library Pavilion.

"Mm? He went in?"

Granny Mirage, who had been secretly observing Lin Ming this entire time, was surprised. If one wished to enter this enchantment, they had to rely upon their ability to utilize the Divine Dream Law. Otherwise, if one were to use brute force to rush in, they would receive a counterattack from the enchantment. She thought that Lin Ming would rely on his deep foundation and formidable strength to hurl himself deep into Library Pavilion. If he did so, he would be ruthlessly ejected backwards by Library Pavilion's array formation.

But, she never imagined that Lin Ming would revolve the Divine Dream Law and easily enter deeper into Library Pavilion.

For 100 days, Lin Ming had studied the Divine Dream jade slip by himself. Without a teacher to guide him and without any spirit source, he was actually able to understand some of the intricate mysteries of the Divine Dream Law?

Granny Mirage felt this was unbelievable. Were there people in this world that had talent of such a degree?

As Lin Ming slowly walked through, he would look at the jade slips around him. Every now and then he would stop and meditate over one for some time.

"Mm? Soul Shifting Art?"

On one jade slip, Lin Ming found an arcane skill called the Soul Shifting Art. This technique was used to seize the bodies of others. It could help a soul that had lost its mortal shell to seize a new body.

To a soul that lost its body, seizing a new body was not the best choice at all. This was because the body and soul would not fit together, and if the two were forcibly fused, both the body and soul would suffer damage. Thus, seizing the body of another was something that couldn't be casually done.

And, this technique was to support the seizing of a body. It could reduce the negative side effects of seizing a body to a minimum.

This was an arcane skill developed by an ancient Empyrean. Although it didn't have any striking power, it didn't have any supportive effect on cultivation, and it definitely wasn't on the level of a transcendent divine might, the rank was still extremely high. In particular, to a soul that had lost its mortal body, this was a priceless treasure.

Lin Ming certainly didn't need it, but he knew two soul forms that did – Demonshine and Mo Eversnow.

Lin Ming held gratitude towards both of them. In the past, he had also promised to help them find a suitable mortal body. This Soul Shifting Art had simply come at the perfect time.

“Miss Mo.”

“Mm, I understand. Let’s both remember this cultivation method. When we return to the Sky Spill Continent, you can fulfill your promise to Demonshine about restoring him to a body.”

The situation with Mo Eversnow’s body was not easy to solve, but Demonshine’s situation was much easier.

Demonshine’s cultivation wasn’t too high in the past. Lin Ming guessed that in human terms, Demonshine had once been between the Divine Transformation and Divine Lord realms. Looking for a body for Demonshine in the Divine Realm wasn’t difficult at all.

Although the Soul Shifting Art was a very high level ability, it wasn’t complex at all. Lin Ming was able to fully understand this technique in about a dozen days.

Then, Lin Ming continued walking deeper into Library Pavilion, perceiving more and more the deeper in he went.

A month later, Lin Ming finally entered the middle regions of Library Pavilion. Here, the divine dream enchantment was even more formidable than the one on the outer edges. Still, with Lin Ming’s understandings of the Divine Dream Law, unraveling it wasn’t difficult at all.

All of this fell into Granny Mirage’s eyes, making her even more surprised! She simply couldn’t imagine how Lin Ming had managed to learn the Divine Dream Law to such a degree.

“What the hell, this brat can actually enter the middle regions of Library Pavilion?!”

After Lin Ming entered the outer area of Library Pavilion, Granny Mirage had been forced to admit that Lin Ming's talent was amazing. She had convinced herself that he had entered due to his ridiculous perception. Even so, she never thought that after entering the outer areas of Library Pavilion, Lin Ming would the proceed to casually stroll into the middle regions. This perception was much higher than what she had assumed before. He had been able to reach this level of understanding by studying the Divine Dream Law on his own? Was this the degree of perception that a true genius possessed?

One month, two months, three months, four months...

From the outer region of Library Pavilion, to the middle regions, and finally nearing the central region, Lin Ming continued to walk deeper and deeper. By reading the various jade slips in Library Pavilion that were filled with a wealth of unimaginable knowledge and also simultaneously resisting the divine dream enchantment all around here, this was a form of tempering Lin Ming's divine soul.

Hu – !

Lin Ming stepped into the third level enchantment barrier of Library Pavilion. This was also the central region of Library Pavilion. Here, Lin Ming could feel a deep pressure on him. Even so, he only needed to adjust himself for some time before continuing onwards.

In order to avoid being too exaggerated, Lin Ming deliberately faked a weakened appearance. His forehead was wet with sweat and his breathing was also loud.

Even though Lin Ming was intentionally putting on an act as if he found this enchantment difficult to resist, Granny Mirage still found this hard to accept.

At the start, Granny Mirage had been surprised. But now, she was shocked numb. She could only sum all of this up to Lin Ming's monstrous talent.

Even though Granny Mirage didn't like Lin Ming, she couldn't help but acknowledge his talent. Within the entire Divine Realm, perhaps only Xiao Moxian could compare with him.

Like this, Lin Ming stayed in Library Pavilion for 150 days. With the additional 100 days of perceiving the Divine Dream jade slip again, nearly a year had passed in Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. He began to prepare himself to leave Divine Dream Heavenly Palace and return to the lower realms.

After reaching the Divine Sea realm, making a breakthrough in his cultivation wasn't something he needed to hurry. Entering the Divine Transformation realm at 40 wasn't too late. The most important things he needed to do now were to consolidate his foundation and understanding of Laws.

With that, his future cultivation would be a flat road, smooth and unimpeded.

"Granny Mirage, this junior bids his farewells. I thank Granny Mirage for attending to me for the past year."

As Frost Dream and Divine Dream were still closed up in seclusion, Lin Ming could only say goodbye to Granny Mirage.

Granny Mirage's withered face twitched several times, her complexion not too good. Facing this monstrous genius Lin Ming, she simply didn't know what to say. Before, she had thought that Lin Ming had come to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace because he was some pervert with a dastardly plot, but only later did she realize that he really was studying the Divine Dream Law. His talent had far surpassed her level of understanding; it was simply indescribable.

In truth, Granny Mirage also felt that Lin Ming had other secrets on him. But, no matter how rich her imagination was, she would never have thought about the Magic Cube. After all, the Magic Cube itself was an enigma. She only guessed that Lin Ming had some special treasures on his body that increased his perception several times over, otherwise this was too unbelievable.

Clenching her teeth, Granny Mirage removed a ring from her finger and coldly said, "This is for you from Divine Dream."

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred and he directly took the ring. Since Empyrean Divine Dream wanted him to take this, he wouldn't be rude. As he couldn't see her, Lin Ming bowed and said, "Thank you Senior, and please thank Empyrean Divine Dream on behalf of this junior. This junior will leave now."

As he said this, Lin Ming turned into a beam of blue light and flew away.

Granny Mirage was left behind in a stunned daze. It was only after a long time that her dour expression reappeared. She mumbled to herself, "The youths of this era are becoming increasingly dreadful. This Lin Ming... is a devil come to life. This perception is... simply unimaginable..." ?

Chapter 1335 – Primordial Epoch Spirit Root

Chapter 1335 – Primordial Epoch Spirit Root

…

…

…

After leaving Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming sank his thoughts into the spatial ring that Granny Mirage had given him. There was only a single jade card within. This jade card was marked with the aura of Empyrean Divine Dream. Upon further inspection, he could confirm that this was a protective talisman.

Lin Ming's talent was amazingly high and his future achievements were without limit. The only problem was that he had yet to grow. Thus, Empyrean Divine Dream had used a bit of her own aura to make a protective talisman in order to help Lin Ming defend himself in certain situations. But, this sort of protective talisman could only be used once.

Even so, a talisman that could get him out of a dire situation just once was more than enough. At other times, Lin Ming had to rely on himself to survive the trials and tribulations he had to pass. This was how a genius had to grow. They had to rely on themselves to slaughter their way along the bloody path that led to the peak of all martial arts. If they lost, they would perish and turn into ash.

"Empyrean Divine Dream is quite generous to me." Lin Ming was grateful. Empyrean Divine Dream was not his friend or family or much related to him in any other way. For her to treat him in such a manner was already an extremely high form of benevolence. Of course, Lin Ming also knew that the reason Empyrean Divine Dream had done so was because of the upcoming great calamity.

Now, before Lin Ming returned to the Sky Spill Continent, he first had to look for a body for Demonshine. This wasn't difficult for the current Lin Ming. Demonshine was originally a demon beast of the demon race. All he needed to do was find a suitable vicious beast of the demon race and then help fuse them together with the Soul Shifting Art.

"Miss Mo, where in the Divine Realm are there the most demon beasts and also the strongest demon beasts?"

Lin Ming asked.

"If you are looking for demon beasts, then that would be Demondawn World; that is also the world which Empyrean Demondawn rules over. There are the most demon races there; ogres, imps, goliaths, if they are added together, there are more demons than there are humans in Demondawn World. Even Empyrean Demondawn himself has some blood relationship to the demon race."

"Demondawn World… isn't that the great world Tian Mingzi is at?" Lin Ming recalled that the Skydark Holy Lands which Tian Mingzi founded was located at the Demondawn World.

"Yes! He is the Great World King of Demondawn World!" Even though Mo Eversnow usually had an indifferent character, she found it hard to remain tranquil when speaking about Tian Mingzi. She hated him to the marrow of her bones.

"Mm… Demondawn World…" During these past years, Lin Ming had looked up materials on the Skydark Holy Lands. The Skydark Holy Lands had a population of around 2 trillion disciples.

2 trillion disciples sounded like an extremely high number, but the truth was that with humanity's ability to multiply, in addition to the long lifespan of martial artists, populations grew at an exponential rate. To break through 2 trillion people was easy.

Among these people, those with poor talent were sent out to handle the various countless industries of the Skydark Holy Lands. Only those with superb natural talent were able to stay at the true Skydark Holy Lands.

A Great World King Holy Land was similar to a super massive Divine Kingdom; it was unimaginably huge.

“Let’s go to Demondawn World first and look for a body for Demonshine.”

Lin Ming had already purchased his own spirit ship. As long as he used enough violet sun stones he could use void shuttling. Going to Demondawn World would only take several months.

Lin Ming wasn’t in a hurry. He used his travel time to digest the many comprehensions he gained during his stay at Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

Like this, Lin Ming entered a deep ethereal state. All sorts of divine dream marks flowed around his body.

With all of his concentration invested in training, Lin Ming couldn’t sense the passing of time. Soon, three months passed. It was only when Lin Ming had a sudden feeling in his mind that his eyes flashed. It was as if certain changes were occurring in his body.

“Lin Ming, what is it?”

Mo Eversnow asked Lin Ming, soul to soul.

“Miss Mo, I feel that after using the Magic Cube to comprehend the Divine Dream Law for so long… there seems to be some special relation that has formed between my divine soul and the Magic Cube. I might be able to barely borrow the strength of the Magic Cube, maybe just a little bit…”

Before now, Lin Ming had never been able to activate the Magic Cube; only Mo Eversnow had this ability. But, all that was left over of Mo Eversnow was her divine soul. If she were to stimulate the Magic Cube just once, that would consume far too much of her remaining soul force. It would cause her to fall into yet another deep slumber. If the consequences were serious, she would burn through her soul and die.

“You can prompt the movement of the Magic Cube?”

Mo Eversnow was shocked and then immediately overjoyed. If Lin Ming could feel a tiny bit of the Magic Cube’s strength during the middle Divine Sea realm, then once he entered the Divine Lord or Holy Lord realm, he would be able to stimulate even more of its strength. This meant that during an all-out life or death battle, Lin Ming’s killing ability would be incomparably terrifying. At that time, perhaps even a World King powerhouse could be directly torn apart by Lin Ming’s Magic Cube, with their soul shattered for all of eternity!

“Putting forth the Magic Cube to kill my enemies is impossible at this moment, but I can change some of the circulating energies within my divine soul with it.”

Although this was only a little progress it was still a good start for Lin Ming. As more time passed, Lin Ming would be able to develop more and more of the Magic Cube’s strength.

As Mo Eversnow and Lin Ming were talking, the spirit ship suddenly shook. They arrived at broad world; this was the Demondawn Great World.

As one of the few first-order worlds of the Divine Realm’s 3000 great worlds, the central continent of the Demondawn Great World was 10 times larger than the central continent of the True Martial Great World. In front of this massive mainland, even a planet was nothing more than a tiny speck of sand, not worthy of mentioning at all.

Above this great mainland were countless martial arts sects and martial arts families. Moreover, the Empyrean level influence, Demondawn Heavenly Palace, was also situated here. This could truly be called a land of countless masters. The background of this land was unimaginable.

Demondawn Great World was one of the several absolute strongest great worlds in the Divine Realm. It was only inferior to some worlds, such as the Buddha Glory Great World where Mount Potala was located.

Of course, these countless top sects had no relation to Lin Ming. His goal for coming here was only to enter Demondawn Jungle.

Demondawn Jungle was filled with countless demon beasts. Lin Ming wanted to capture a dog-type demon beast that was far more formidable than Demonshine's original body. He also wanted the demon beast's martial talent to be much higher. This could be considered his thanks to Demonshine for all of his help. If it weren't for Demonshine, then Lin Ming would never have been able to pass through the ancient transmission array and go to the Holy Demon Continent. Even during his adventures at Skysplit Tower, he might have perished when facing the Polaris Tower Master's plot to plant a slave seal in him.

However, wanting to find a demon beast in Demondawn Jungle with high martial talent, that wasn't too old, and was also suitable to Demonshine, wasn't easy at all.

Lin Ming spent five days searching without any harvests at all. There were only some demon beasts of lesser quality that he didn't bother choosing.

On the sixth day, Lin Ming was still searching for a dog-type demon beast. But at this moment, from not too far away, he could feel some strange true essence fluctuations faintly coming out from some distance in the jungle. These true essence fluctuations did not come from vicious beasts but from humans. Within Demondawn Jungle, there were often many martial artists that came to adventure and temper themselves. Some came to enhance their fighting ability and some came to kill vicious beasts to use their bodies' materials.

Lin Ming had encountered this situation many times already. But because of his excellent soul strength, he had always discovered the other party ahead of time.

“One, two, three… six, seven, eight… there are eight people in total, all at the Divine Sea realm. They are separated by the thick foliage and atmosphere in this jungle, but I can still clearly feel their auras and hear their words.”

Lin Ming had spent over a year cultivating the Divine Dream Law. As the Divine Dream Law grew stronger, his Three Essences as One also reached new heights and his senses had already become increasingly sharp and wide. In the future, if Lin Ming was able to train all of his cultivation systems to a similar height, then that would usher in a qualitative change in his strength.

Of course, this wasn’t easy at all. Empyrean Divine Dream had said that within the 33 Layered Heavens, there were three major races, humanity, the saints, and the spiritas. Among these three races, humans were most suited to the essence gathering system, In the Divine Realm this was especially so. Those who attempted to practice the soul forging system would be beset with all sorts of difficulties.

Lin Ming quietly hid himself away. Unless absolutely necessary he didn’t want to have any contact with people from Demondawn Great World, lest there be complications that came up.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Luo, we’ve searched for a month and yet we haven’t found a hint of the primordial epoch spirit root. I think that we are just doing nothing at all. Demondawn Jungle is too big. For us to look for something the size of a palm here is no different from looking for a tiny needle in the vast ocean.”

“Don’t complain. Although the chances of us finding it aren’t too great, there are still many of us looking together. This is the reason why our Skydark Holy Lands sent out a million disciples all over Demondawn Jungle to carefully search for it. For those that can find it, unimaginable rewards and glorious merits await. You should know that this primordial epoch spirit root contains a trace of chaos energy. Using it to temper the body is extremely beneficial. I really have no idea who this thing would be used for once it’s found, but my guess is that it’s for Senior-apprentice Brother Nether Limitless.”

As this Senior-apprentice Brother Luo spoke, his face was full of envy. He was only an inner court disciple; the difference in status between him and Nether Limitless was like the heavens and earth.

"I don't think that's true. The Elders might have another use for it. But, what I think is strange is that for the last 1000 years, Master Ancestor has been collecting all sorts of heavenly materials and over 90% of them have been body transformation type medicines. I wonder what they are for? Could Master Ancestor be thinking of dual cultivating body and energy?"

The inner court disciple blabbed. Without a doubt, the one he was speaking about was the true master of the Skydark Holy Lands – Tian Mingzi.

Upon hearing this, Lin Ming felt his heart turn cold. People from the Skydark Holy Lands? It seemed that enemies truly did cross paths often.

"Primordial epoch spirit root? Could it be the rare heaven and earth spirit root that is said to contain a hint of primal chaos energy from the forming of the universe? This sort of spirit root has unimaginable advantages to those that cultivate the body transformation technique. If I can obtain it, then perhaps I can open the Gate of Death in a single go. At that time, I will have opened all of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and can finally start walking towards the boundary of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

"But, what I find strange are the words that disciple just said. Tian Mingzi has been searching for body transformation medicines all this time? Could it be that he wants to switch into dual body and energy cultivation?"

Although Mo Eversnow hated Tian Mingzi to the bone, even she couldn't help but give him a high appraisal. Whether it was his ruthlessness, his talent, or his machinations, all of it left others dreading in his wake. In the past, Mo Eversnow's grandfather, a Great World King of no trifling status, had also been plotted to death by Tian Mingzi.

“Tian Mingzi shouldn’t be dual cultivating body and energy…” Mo Eversnow immediately denied this possibility. “Those that choose the path of dual cultivating body and energy must start as early as possible. Otherwise, once one forms their spirit body during Life Destruction, wanting to start the process would be beyond difficult. Lin Ming, you have had a great deal of lucky chances and you even started dual cultivating body and energy at a very early time during your road of martial arts, and yet you have encountered all sorts of difficulties to reach where you are now. Tian Mingzi would never do something so difficult and thankless.”

“Then who is he searching for body transformation medicines for? Could it be Nether Limitless?”

“That’s an even greater impossibility.” Mo Eversnow immediately refuted. “I have an extremely deep understanding of Tian Mingzi. In his heart, there was no one more important than him. Even the lives of thousands or millions are less important than a single fingernail. If he were to waste so much time and effort to do something, it has to be for himself!”

“Then…” Lin Ming frowned. He never imagined that during this trip to Demondawn Jungle he would run into disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands. Moreover, he had even obtained news of the primordial epoch spirit root. With such a precious worldly spiritual object before him, how could he miss it?

Chapter 1336 – Nine Stars Heaven Pill

Chapter 1336 – Nine Stars Heaven Pill

…

…

…

Lin Ming found it strange that the Skydark Holy Lands had been searching for body transformation medicines for such a long time. Even when he joined the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, the number of body transformation martial artists he saw was unbelievably low. There was actually only Shiku.

Shiku had a tremendous fortuitous encounter in a mystic realm and managed to eat a Dragon Turtle egg. This was something even superior to Lin Ming's supreme dragon bone. But by just relying on body transformation technique alone, it wasn't able to give him the ability to defy the heavens' will. He eventually lost his battle against White King.

When cultivating body transformation technique, the rewards were disproportional to the amount of resources and effort required.

But to Lin Ming this wasn't a question at all. He was someone who cultivated the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens as well as triple essence, energy, and divine. He would have to cultivation the body transformation technique sooner or later.

As Lin Ming was thinking out loud, a sound transmitting talisman lit up in front of the several Skydark Holy Land disciples. After hearing the message, a disciple frowned, "Those wandering cultivators are in trouble again. Another group was devoured by demon beasts and annihilated."

Another disciple who received the message said, “This is what happens to those casual cultivators, what do you expect? Demondawn Jungle is too dangerous for the likes of them, but there isn’t anything else that can be done. Demondawn Jungle is simply too big. By just relying on us alone, it is impossible to search for what we’re looking for. There is no choice but to recruit some scattered cultivators to help. At the very least they can serve as cannon fodder for us.”

As these people spoke, Lin Ming’s thoughts moved. He had originally been thinking of quietly following these people, but now that he discovered they had hired scattered cultivators to assist them, he could mix in with them honestly and openly.

Lin Ming began to quietly revolve the appearance changing technique he learnt at Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. Then, his appearance began to change. He became shorter, skinner, and his handsome appearance became much more ordinary. As for his cultivation, there was no need to conceal it. There was no way a middle Divine Sea realm cultivation could attract anyone’s attention.

Like this, Lin Ming began to walk towards the others.

“Halt, who goes there!”

The head disciple was a skinny and bald youth. After he saw Lin Ming, he directly extracted his weapon. His appearance could be considered handsome but there was a long scar across his face, lending him a somewhat fierce appearance.

Lin Ming glanced over the clothes of these disciples. The disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands all wore similar unified robes. Lin Ming cupped his fists together and said with a smile, “So it’s the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands. I am a wandering cultivator that just happened to hear that the Skydark Holy Lands has been recently searching for wandering cultivators to search for a treasure. I was wondering if there is such a matter?”

The bald youth looked over Lin Ming. Lin Ming was at the middle Divine Sea realm, but because he was hiding his inner world on purpose, it was impossible to tell how solid his foundation was. This was standard procedure for wandering cultivators.

The bald youth's eyes flashed with a hint of contempt. He took out an identification plate from his spatial ring and tossed it towards Lin Ming. "Take this identification plate. You'll receive daily missions and you can also find the others to work with them. This identification plate will record your day's trip and then you can go to a branch division of the Skydark Holy Lands to receive your rewards. If you discover the primordial epoch spirit root then this identification plate will automatically disintegrate and send a message to us. At that time, you'll have done a great merit and you will be generously compensated. Don't try to play any tricks either. The primordial epoch spirit root has a mind of its own; it's not something that you can control."

The bald youth lazily said. Towards a wandering cultivator like Lin Ming, he didn't care too much. If this sort of person entered Demondawn Jungle, chances were they would die soon enough. In other words, they were cannon fodder.

"Search well. If you work hard enough then perhaps you can even enter the Skydark Holy Lands and become a caretaker disciple."

The bald youth put out another enticing reward.

To many cultivators, this was a fatal attraction. The bald youth believed that this alone would leave Lin Ming extremely excited and energetic.

Caretaker disciple?

Lin Ming traced his nose. A caretaker disciple was honestly speaking a servant. This sort of person wouldn't receive any resources at all. Even if one was a caretaker disciple of the Skydark Holy Lands, what use would that be? They would simply be worked to death.

At this time, Mo Eversnow said to Lin Ming, "The Demondawn Great World has powerhouses like clouds. Moreover, because the majority of people here are from the various demon races, the situation is very chaotic. Even a Divine Transformation powerhouse wouldn't dare to openly go out in the wild. Killing someone and stealing their goods is far too common. As for those wandering cultivators and those from small sects, it is extremely difficult for them to maintain their lives. As for cultivating, that is even more difficult. To most people, they simply do not possess the wealth required to travel to different worlds, thus being able to join the Skydark Holy Lands is something worth celebrating. At the very least they will have some sense of safety. And even if they are only given the lowest level inheritances of the Skydark Holy Lands, those are still incomparably precious treasures. The vast majority of people have no decent inheritances at all."

"I see…" Lin Ming sighed with emotion. It was truly challenging for a low level martial artist of the Divine Realm to cultivate. He only had to think of Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan's experiences to understand a little of it.

As a result, Lin Ming suddenly put on an extremely happy expression of joyful anticipation. He said to the bald youth, "Then I will have to ask Senior-apprentice Brother to guide me!"

The bald youth was satisfied by Lin Ming's reaction. He beckoned with his hand, "Mm, then come with us. Consider yourself lucky today. We'll lead your for now."

………..

As Lin Ming was searching for the primordial epoch spirit root in Demondawn Jungle, deep within the Skydark Holy Lands, in a sealed dimension realm –

There was a pale-skinned man sitting on a blood-colored altar. His hair was inky black and his looks were very delicate and pretty. He looked just over 20 years old.

The blood-red altar he sat on was towering above a red sea. Angry waves surged about the altar, splashing crimson water drops into the air, as thick and heavy as blood.

Within the endless sea of blood all around, there were actually countless bizarre and grotesque creatures trying to struggle free.

Of these creatures, some had wings, some had curved horns, some were covered with scales, and some were patterned all over with mystical runes…

They looked just like the monstrous demons of countless legends.

The endless demons struggled in this sea of limitless blood, roaring about. This scene truly left one's scalp tingling with fear.

As for the man sitting atop the stone altar, he was as still as a statue.

After some time, the fog suddenly condensed in front of this man, forming into a man in a black robe.

This man was wrapped in a black cloak, making it impossible to clearly make out his appearance. His entire body exuded a strange aura, like he wasn't a human at all.

"Tian Mingzi, it's been such a long time, and yet you still haven't refined the Nine Star Heaven Pill?"

The black-cloaked man's voice was icy and heartless, as hard and grating as metal.

The youthful-looking man opened his eyes, revealing blood red dual pupils as bright as the stars. He had two pupils in each eye; these were the inborn dual pupils. In history, legends stated that those born with inborn dual pupils were often great figures of their time. Sometimes they were heroes, and sometimes they were villains.

"Nine Star Heaven Pill…" Tian Mingzi's lips curved up in a smile. From looks alone, Tian Mingzi looked like a delicate and pretty youth in his prime, not some old monster that had already lived for 100,000 years.

"3.6 billion years ago, the Nine Star Heaven Pill was able to help humans break through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace; how could such a pill be easy to refine? Even if you put forth the complete list of materials, many of them would be nearly impossible to find. There hasn't been enough time. Even so, I have prepared the Primal Chaos Pill for you to open the Gate of Death."

Tian Mingzi's voice was pleasant, just like a soft spring breeze.

Nine Star Heaven Pill. 3.6 billion years ago, that was the wondrous medicine that helped humanity break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. But now, under the suppression of the Divine Realm's Heavenly Dao Laws, even with the Nine Star Heaven Pill it was impossibly difficult for a human to break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

But this was not a problem to the black-cloaked man, because he wasn't a human to begin with.

And, the reason he wanted the Nine Star Heaven Pill was not to break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace…

"Primordial Chaos Pill… is still insufficient to restore my strength. In order to pass through the God Lamenting Wall I had to damage my cultivation and I must take pills on the level of the Nine Star Heaven Pill to restore myself. Tian Mingzi, do not forget that it is I who gave you all that you have today. 50,000 years ago, you failed in your mission to capture the Magic Cube. I hope that there will not be another accident now."

"The reason I failed to obtain the Magic Cube… was not because of me. At that time I already warned you that the time was not yet right, and yet you insisted on acting. As for your masters, they are unable to cross the God Lamenting Wall. With myself as the main force, how did you expect me to defeat a Great World King?"

Tian Mingzi rose, his voice faint.

"Humph, back then the existence of the Magic Cube had been noticed by some powerful individuals. The Verdant Feather World King, from the very start, had never been able to understand just how valuable the Magic Cube was, thus his blockade on the news wasn't tight enough and it began to slowly leak out. If that continued then the Magic Cube would have certainly fallen into the hands of an Empyrean. At that time, it would have been even more impossible to take. There was no choice but to seize it ahead of time!

“This matter has already passed many years ago; there is no need to continue discussing it. The imperative matter now is to refine the Nine Star Heaven Pill and restore my strength as soon as possible. Then, you and I can join together to exterminate those six people. The Saint God has already determined that those six individuals are barriers preventing my saint race from ruling the Divine Realm. In particular, Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, and Frost Dream. We must kill those three no matter the consequences! That is the highest level order that I have received!”

Tian Mingzi chuckled. He turned his head, his blood-red pupils staring at the black-cloaked man. “Frost Dream and Xiao Moxian, the two of them come from Divine Dream Heavenly Palace and Demondawn Heavenly Palace. Killing those two is as difficult as ascending to heaven. For me to attempt to do so is a death wish. The most I can do is help you kill Lin Ming; that is the limit of what I can do.

“Now, I have sent out people to secretly search for the primordial epoch spirit root and also search for Lin Ming’s whereabouts. Unfortunately, I heard that he entered Divine Dream Heavenly Palace over a year ago. As for Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, there is a barrier surrounding it for a million mile radius; I do not dare to send anyone to spy. In other words, it is impossible for me to find any news on Lin Ming. Even I would not know if he had left Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.”

Lin Ming had ridden a spirit ship and launched the great void shift as soon as he left Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. If Tian Mingzi’s people were over a million miles away, it would simply be impossible for them to sense anything. Within Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming had absolute safety.

But, no matter what Tian Mingzi imagined, he would never have thought that Lin Ming was actually in Demondawn Jungle, searching for the primordial epoch spirit root along with the disciples of his Skydark Holy Lands.

At this time, within Demondawn Jungle, nighttime was approaching. Lin Ming followed the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands back to their camp. During their entire day's search, they hadn't found anything at all.

Although nighttime didn't affect martial artists' vision, Demondawn Jungle became far more dangerous at night. Even the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands would easily perish during this time, thus they could only return.

Chapter 1337 – Eavesdropping

Chapter 1337 – Eavesdropping

…

…

…

“We still haven’t found it but that is also reasonable. The primordial epoch spirit root possesses its own wisdom. If we want to find it, it won’t be easy. But, that is unimportant. Our Skydark Holy Lands have sent out a million disciples as well as countless other wandering cultivators. Finding the primordial epoch spirit root is something that will happen sooner or later. Still, there is another matter that I’m afraid won’t be so easy to complete…”

The bald youth thoughtfully said. Many of those present simply didn’t know what this other matter was.

“It’s fine, you can all go now.”

The bald youth waved his hand, sending the outer court disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands as well as the outer court disciples to rest. “Wait. You right there, what was your name?”

The bald youth pointed at Lin Ming.

“Reporting to Senior-apprentice Brother, my surname is Duanmu, Duanmu Qun.”

Lin Ming casually gave out Duanmu Qun’s name. Duanmu Qun was a fey from the Holy Demon Continent.

“Duanmu Qun, mm, your performance was good today. Although your cultivation methods are rough and your foundation isn’t too solid, you can be considered quite good for a wandering cultivator. Tomorrow you can join our group!”

In the process of searching for the primordial epoch spirit root, they had inevitably experienced bitter battles with some roaming packs of demon beasts. The bald youth had originally planned to use Lin Ming as cannon fodder and sacrifice him, but they never thought that Lin Ming would live by relying on his own ability. Not just that, but he even possessed the strength to kill several strong demon beasts. This surprised the bald youth a little. Out of all the wandering cultivators he had met in these past days, Lin Ming was definitely the strongest one.

Thus, the bald youth dispelled any notion of sending Lin Ming to his death. Instead, he decided to bring Lin Ming into his squad. At a critical moment, Lin Ming could be a decent help, and in dangerous situations, he could even be used as a shield to save the strength of his team as much as possible.

“Well done. After all this is over, I will petition the sect to accept you as a caretaker disciple.”

The bald youth patted Lin Ming’s shoulder, once again putting forth this sweet enticement.

Lin Ming faked an overjoyed expression. He cupped his hands across his chest and said, “Thank you very much for recognizing me Senior-apprentice Brother. I only hope I can live up to your expectations.”

“Haha, well said.” The bald youth said, his face full of smiles. But, in his heart he was actually thinking, “These wandering cultivators are far too easy to trick. They are nothing but ant-like characters that struggle on the edge of death every day. Just a tiny advantage can lure them to cross seas of fire or water. This fellow wants to become a disciple of my Skydark Holy Lands? He needs to live through this first!”

As Lin Ming and the others went to rest, the bald youth and the several other core disciples gathered in the main hall of the camp.

These people were all secret disciples of Tian Mingzi. Although they were secret disciples, it was extremely difficult for them to see Tian Mingzi, much less receive his guidance. But, compared to ordinary disciples, their status was much higher!

In the Skydark Holy Lands, Tian Mingzi was the one and only king. This was like a mortal nation where all power and authority was controlled by the emperor. Even a distant relative was still a royal relative; who would dare to offend them?

As the several of them gathered in the main hall, one of them took out an array disc from their spatial ring. Then, they took out a violet crystal and inserted it into the array disc, creating an enchantment in the space above.

The enchantment of this array disc was able to isolate the senses of outsiders to avoid spies; it was extremely secure. Even a Divine Lord realm martial artist would find it hard to break through. Moreover, once the enchantment was broken, the array disc would react and alert everyone. This was an essential item for the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands to discuss important matters.

The space enchantment flickered. Within it, the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands never imagined that a faint strand of divine dream energy would infiltrate their security, clearly observing their conversation.

After cultivating the Divine Dream Law to now, Lin Ming's soul force had become incomparably powerful. Although his senses couldn't cut through space, it wasn't difficult to break through this sort of enchantment.

Lin Ming could see that these young disciples were at least at the core level of the Skydark Holy Lands. There were many things that they must be privy too, especially about the primordial epoch spirit root. They might even know why Tian Mingzi was collecting so many body transformation medicines.

“The primordial epoch spirit root is truly difficult to find!” After the enchantment spread out, a disciple began to complain.

“That is normal. The primordial epoch spirit root isn’t easy to deal with to begin with. Even if we find it we cannot act rashly. Luckily, the sect has sent out many disciples and we can form a giant sealing array to lock it in. There is also a massive number of wandering cultivators that we can use as cannon fodder. If we can obtain the primordial epoch spirit root, that will absolutely be a great contribution. We will obtain endless rewards from the sect. There might even be a small chance for us to study the transcendent divine might of our Skydark Holy Lands.”

As the disciples heard the term transcendent divine might, all of them were extremely excited. Although the Skydark Holy Land’s transcendent divine might was incomplete to an extreme degree, it was still an inheritance that would cause one’s blood to boil with desire.

“I wonder just what Honorable Master has been planning recently. Not only does he want us to find precious body transformation medicines, but he even wants us to search for Lin Ming’s whereabouts… this Lin Ming came in second place at the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. But even though he came second, the truth is that he is more or less on the same level as the first place Frost Dream. It could even be said that within the Divine Sea realm, he is the number one young elite of the entire Divine Realm. Compared to him, Elder Senior-apprentice Brother just can’t compare at all.

As they discussed the plan to search for the primordial epoch spirit root, one of them suddenly changed topics to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was startled. “Looking for me?”

Lin Ming didn’t believe that Tian Mingzi was searching for him because he wanted to drink some tea and ask him if he wanted to join the Skydark Holy Lands.

As Lin Ming thought of this, he realized that there was a possibility that Tian Mingzi had discovered his relation with Mo Eversnow. He might have even guessed that the Magic Cube was in his body!

That was undoubtedly dangerous to him. Once news of the Magic Cube was revealed, there might be no place for him to take shelter beneath the heavens.

Lin Ming took a deep breath, calming himself down. He rapidly recalled every moment where he might have revealed his identity. “Miss Mo, could Tian Mingzi have seen some clue from the Celestial Tyrant Manual?”

Lin Ming had used the Celestial Tyrant Manual’s Hundred Layered Waves in the First Martial Meeting. And, the Celestial Tyrant Manual was an inheritance of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands.

“No.”

Mo Eversnow shook her head. “The Celestial Tyrant Manual was originally an inheritance stored away by the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. In the entire Verdant Feather Holy Lands, there was no one besides me who cultivated it. Even Tian Mingzi was no exception. He simply doesn’t know just what it is like to cultivate the Celestial Tyrant Manual. Moreover, the Celestial Tyrant Manual is an ancient body transformation cultivation method passed down from ancient times 3.6 billion years ago. In the Divine Realm, it might not have been uniquely possessed by the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. However, I cannot confirm this.”

Lin Ming nodded. He calmed his thoughts and continued to listen on.

“Do you think that Honorable Master might have realized the secrets on Lin Ming’s body?” A disciple suddenly asked. The bald youth frowned, coldly saying, “Stop carelessly making assumptions! I do not know the reason that Honorable Master is looking for Lin Ming; it might not be to deal with him to begin with. In any case, we only have to follow orders. Above all, this matter must be kept absolutely secret. Lin Ming’s current status is too sensitive. We can only inform other core disciples of this. As for those wandering disciples, we cannot divulge this information otherwise this secret will spread out.”

“Understood!”

“Good. Then we will continue like this. Tomorrow we will look for the primordial epoch spirit root again.”

After the several disciples finished speaking, Lin Ming was lost in his thoughts.

Tian Mingzi was searching for materials to refine body transformation pills and also searching for his own whereabouts – just what was he plotting?

“Lin Ming, Tian Mingzi’s thoughts are extremely deep and hidden. Even though he was part of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands for so many years, I have never completely understood him. His talent and his strength have always been a mystery, even up until now. He is a highly ambitious character that doesn’t move according to common sense. Although I don’t know what he wants with you, you cannot allow him to find you.”

“I understand. Before I have the strength to truly struggle with a Great World King, I cannot come into contact with Tian Mingzi at all. Otherwise that is simply allowing others to play with my life.”

Even though he said this, Lin Ming still didn’t want to miss out on the primordial epoch spirit root. The appearance changing technique that Lin Ming learnt from Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, when used by a Divine Lord realm powerhouse, could even fool a Great World King. Lin Ming could rely on the Magic Cube to use this technique. Moreover, it would be difficult for him to encounter Tian Mingzi here.

Thinking like this, Lin Ming sat down and began to meditate. He was always cultivating; diligence and hard work was one of the required talents of a genius.

Night passed without words. Early next morning, the sun shined through the canopy of Demondawn Jungle, illuminating the endless canopy of trees. The disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands began their missions for the day.

Lin Ming went with the bald youth's squad, shuttling back and forth all over the jungle. They encountered packs of vicious demon beasts, but Lin Ming performed well during all of these battles. This surprised the bald youth more and more. Lin Ming's strength was far greater than that of other wandering cultivators.

As the squad ventured deeper into Demondawn Jungle, the surrounding miasma became increasingly thick. In front of them, thick mud began to appear, just like they were wandering into a swamp.

"This black swamp…" The bald youth frowned. According to what he knew, this sort of terrain in Demondawn Jungle was often infested with ambushing demon beasts. As for the miasma and black swamp, that could block their senses. Thus, walking through this area made one particularly susceptible to sneak attacks. One needed a guide to lead one through this area. With a guide, once a danger appeared, everyone else could quickly react and leave.

The bald youth looked at Lin Ming, "We're going to explore this area. Duanmu Qun, you walk first. An hour from now we'll have Zhong Feng replace you."

The Zhong Feng that the bald youth referred to was a very large fellow with a peak late Divine Sea cultivation.

As Lin Ming heard this bald youth's words, his expression stiffened. Without a doubt, leading the way here was the most dangerous position.

The bald youth coldly said, "What are you so afraid of? With us behind you, are you scared we'll let you suffer a loss? Moreover, we'll even replace you after a while."

"Then… alright. Several senior-apprentice brothers, your reactions must be faster this time. If danger truly appears then I might not be able to withstand it." Lin Ming said, a bit weakly.

“Haha, don’t worry!” The bald youth agreed, smiling. He certainly wanted to preserve Lin Ming’s life as far as possible, but this was because Lin Ming was still useful. If there truly was some kind of danger then he could only abandon Lin Ming.

Like this, Lin Ming walked in front of the squad. With his senses, he could sense every single movement in the surrounding 1000 miles. Not even miasma or the black swamp could hope to stop him!

After entering 100 feet into this black swamp, Lin Ming discovered that 100 feet away, there was a powerful python laying in ambushF, its large black eyes greedily staring at him.

Chapter 1338 – Finding the Spirit Root

Chapter 1338 – Finding the Spirit Root

…

…

…

"This black patterned python has an aura equal to the weakest early Divine Transformation realm power…"

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He could feel an approximate level of strength from this python. This sort of strength was nothing to him, but to the Skydark Holy Land disciples behind him, it was enough to ruin them all.

Lin Ming quietly walked forwards. If this were normal circumstances and he were an ordinary wandering cultivator, then after walking 10 more steps he would die without a doubt.

Lin Ming didn't want to expose his strength so soon. With a thought, undetectable divine dream marks slowly fluttered out from him, silently submerging into the swamp and drilling into that black python's head.

The black python shook as its spiritual sea grew thick with all sorts of illusions. Then, it immediately fell into a lethargic, sleeping state.

Like this, Lin Ming led the others safely onwards.

Along the way, they encountered potentially dangerous situations several times. But each time, Lin Ming managed to invade the spiritual seas of these demon beasts with the Divine

Dream Law, instantly resolving it. There had yet to be a single situation in which they were ambushed.

This caused the bald youth to feel amazed. Was this boy's luck really that good?

As the bald youth was thinking this, Lin Ming timidly said, "Senior-apprentice Brother, it's already been over an hour. Do you think that..."

The bald youth frowned. He knew that Lin Ming wanted to trade spots.

He originally thought that Lin Ming wouldn't live for such a long time, nor did he think there wouldn't be any sneak attacks. Perhaps... the black swamp here wasn't as dangerous as he thought it was?

"A coward who is afraid of death will have no future at all! Zhong Feng, go trade with him." The bald youth said to another tall burly youth.

"No problem." Zhong Feng appeared confident in himself.

Although these people were core disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands and there were even several secret disciples of Tian Mingzi here, the truth was that Tian Mingzi's disciples were divided into five ranks, with secret disciples being at the lowest rung. There were tens of thousands of them and there was a new batch every 10 years. It was normal for them to die in Demondawn Jungle. This was the price that a genius had to pay if they wished to grow up.

The bald youth patted Zhong Feng's shoulders. "Maybe I was thinking too much. If this black swamp isn't as dangerous as I thought then it doesn't matter."

"Okay."

Zhong Feng changed spots with Lin Ming and the squad continued forwards. But, after just an incense stick of time, Lin Ming could feel several great beasts lurking in the distance. There was a 100 foot alligator hiding underground, and beneath this giant alligator were also three black pythons. They were concealing their aura with the help of the swamp. It was impossible for a normal martial artist to sense them.

Zhong Feng unknowingly walked forwards. At this time, the giant alligator suddenly jumped upwards, chomping down at Zhong Feng.

Roar!

A terrifying roar shook the eardrums. Zhong Feng was shocked. He brought the hammer in his hands smashing down on the alligator’s back. As a late Divine Sea master, this hammer strike was similar to a falling mountain. Even if this alligator had thick skin and flesh it still gave a miserable scream as it was smashed away!

However, the moment that the giant alligator was pounded away, the three black pythons snapped forwards, their bodies like spears thrusting towards Zhong Feng.

“Be careful!”

The bald youth cried out in alarm. But, it was too late!

Zhong Feng had exhausted his old strength and hadn’t been able to recover himself yet; he was unable to resist the attacks of these three black pythons. Moreover, these three black pythons lived in a symbiotic state with the giant alligator. The giant alligator would grab the attention of the prey while the black pythons would launch a second sneak attack!

This sort of ambush was almost impossible to defend against. Many masters had died like this!

Puff!

Without caring about ruining his meridians, Zhong Feng forcefully revolved his strength to the limit. His fist came pounding out, sending a python flying away. But, the second python’s attack shattered his protective true essence, and then without any time to react at all, the last python pierced through his left chest!

Blood shot into the air!

“Damnit!”

The bald youth and the others all rushed forwards, joining their strength to kill the pythons.

The great alligator wanted to counterattack but was also killed by the others. In truth, its strength wasn’t too great; it was equal to a late Divine Sea human martial artist. Its true strength lay in its strange attack method and its dual sneak attack. Moreover, it was a beast that conserved its strength, pouring all of it into that single ambush. This would allow these beasts to kill a martial artist that was slightly stronger than them! This was also the reason why this black swamp was so dangerous.

At this time, Zhong Feng’s entire body was covered with blood. His complexion had turned a deep purple – these were clearly the symptoms of some virulent poison.

“Zhong Feng!”

“Junior-apprentice Brother!”

The disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands surrounded Zhong Feng. They saw that a massive hole had been pierced through his chest, his heart had been torn, and even his blood had turned black. Unless one had an extreme heaven-step pill, it would be impossible to save him.

But, besides the bald youth there were only two or three other secret disciples of Tian Mingzi present. The others were all ordinary inner court disciples, so how could they possibly possess an extreme heaven-step pill? That was a medicine on the level of a Boundless World Pill. Even if they were to sell everything in their possession and multiply that by 10, they still wouldn’t be able to afford it.

“It’s hopeless. He can’t be saved.”

The bald youth gloomily said, his complexion ugly.

Zhong Feng painfully groaned. This snake venom entered his bone marrow. Painful to the extreme. He struggled about, his fingers digging deep into the mud as unwillingness was etched on his face. Because he was losing blood too quickly and his chest was torn open, it was hard for him to make any sounds.

“Junior-apprentice Brother, I am sorry. I know that the flower-patterned snake’s venom is incomparably painful, but there is nothing I can do to save you. I can only end your pain here.” As the bald youth spoke, his brought the saber in his hands downwards, piercing through Zhong Feng’s throat. Zhong Feng’s eyes widened, his pupils turning up into his head as he died where he was.

The bald youth stood up, his appearance extremely grim. He stared at Lin Ming, his eyes similar to a beast staring at its prey, incomparably brutal.

“This is all your damned fault! If it weren’t for you, then why would my junior-apprentice brother die!?”

The bald youth angrily shouted, his eyes revealing a thick killing intent. In his opinion, if Lin Ming had been in front leading the way and didn’t request to change spots, then Zhong Feng wouldn’t have died.

Lin Ming had been safe leading the way, but Zhong Feng had died. In the bald youth’s mind, Lin Ming had killed his junior-apprentice brother by proxy. To him, just a finger of a Skydark Holy Lands disciple was 10,000 times more precious than the life of a wandering cultivator like Lin Ming.

“Do you really think you have equal status or authority to us? The wandering cultivators of the Demondawn Great World are nothing but ants, and you are just a slightly larger ant, worth nothing at all! Now fuck off to the front and lead the way, otherwise you’re dead here and now!”

Facing the bald youth's bloodstained saber and blatant killing intent, Lin Ming remained silent. He stepped forwards and continued to lead the way.

As the bald youth said, their status was indeed not equal with Lin Ming's, except that the ants here were not Lin Ming but these disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands.

As Lin Ming led the way, there naturally weren't any dangers. He smoothly caused all of those ambushing vicious beasts to fall into a deep slumber.

"How is this possible… this brat's luck is too good." The bald youth's complexion was extremely ugly. But, just as they were about to leave this black swamp, at this time, a small jade slip on the bald youth's body exploded and a message appeared in his mind.

The bald youth was stunned. "The primordial epoch spirit root has been found!"

"What!?"

The surrounding disciples all turned to look at the bald youth. Even Lin Ming's heart stirred as he looked backwards.

"In the northeast direction, 3000 miles away. The disciples of Silk Fan Hall have found the primordial epoch spirit root! We have to hurry to support them! Let's go!"

As the bald youth spoke, he flew straight towards the northeast!

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He had been waiting for this moment!

The reason he followed the bald youth's squad and ignored their incessant whining was not because he was thinking they could find the primordial epoch spirit root. After all, Demondawn Jungle was countless tens of thousands of miles wide. Wanting to rely on this small squad to find the tiny primordial epoch spirit root was like looking for a needle in the ocean.

No, what he was relying on was everyone else. With millions of Skydark Holy Lands disciples and wandering cultivators joining together, the efficiency of searching rose up countless times over.

Then 10 plus Skydark Holy Lands disciples flew up, following the bald youth. Lin Ming naturally followed from behind, flying at an unhurried pace.

As these people flew, they chose to return via the route they had just taken. This was a wise decision. The vicious beasts on this path had been hypnotized by Lin Ming so there wouldn't be any troubles at all.

"This idiot, he's actually following us. Good, he still has his uses."

The bald youth thought that after scaring Lin Ming just now, he would surely have fled as soon as possible. He didn't think that Lin Ming would have the courage to continue following them.

"Hehe, this boy has no choice but to follow. If he stays in Demondawn Jungle by himself, he will become nothing but food for the vicious beasts here."

The disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands simply didn't bother paying any attention to Lin Ming, instead flying faster. But, although Lin Ming seemed as if he couldn't keep up anymore, he never fell too far behind.

Chapter 1339 – Chaotic Space

Chapter 1339 – Chaotic Space

…

…

…

The bald youth and his squad rapidly flew through the air, finally passing through the thick miasma of fog and arriving in a spacious open area. There was almost a hundred people already waiting here.

They all wore the uniform clothing of the Skydark Holy Lands. The one in the lead was tall with eyebrows like swords and eyes like stars. He stood atop a spinning wheel, grasping a black heavy sword in his hands. His entire body emitted a light pressure; this sort of pressure originated from standing at the top for a long time.

He was an early Divine Transformation martial artist and his foundation was extremely solid. Energy surged within his body. One only needed to see him to know that he wasn't an ordinary Divine Transformation martial artist.

As the bald youth saw this person, he immediately bowed and said, "Greetings to Hall Master Nether."

In the world of martial artists, status was important and rigid. It was clear that this bald youth respected this Hall Master Nether a great deal.

This Hall Master was named Nether Darklight. For someone to become a Hall Master of the Skydark Holy Lands at the Divine Transformation realm wasn't easy at all. It was clear that this person had significant status in the Skydark Holy Lands.

Moreover, his surname was Nether. This also meant that he was a descendant of Tian Mingzi.

Nether Darklight looked at the bald youth and then glanced over the people behind him one at a time. His eyes paused on Lin Ming's body for a brief moment before continuing.

"All loose cultivators, go to the side."

A disciple underneath Nether Darklight yelled at Lin Ming and the others to clear the way. One could see at the sides that there were already dozens of loose cultivators here.

"Gathering so many loose cultivators?"

The bald youth had brought Lin Ming along because he had originally thought Lin Ming would be useful to him. He never thought that the other squads would also bring a massive number of loose cultivators. Moreover, the strength of these people was clearly inferior to that of Lin Ming. What help would these people be in capturing the primordial epoch spirit root? They couldn't even qualify as cannon fodder.

"Keeping them with us is useful. Let's go."

As Nether Darklight spoke, he took out six purple charms from his spatial ring and tossed them in the air. Then, Lin Ming was surprised by what happened afterwards. These six purple charms constantly spun in the air until they formed a purple space-time gate.

"Come on!"

Nether Darklight waved his hand and flew into the space-time gate.

"This is..."

Lin Ming's eyes widened. These six purple charms didn't seem too formidable, but they were actually able to pierce through space and form a space channel.

It had to be known that within the Divine Realm, shuttling through the void just once consumed a massive amount of energy. And as for creating a stable space channel and maintaining it, the energy required reached colossal proportions.

At Lin Ming's side, a black-clothed man saw his surprise and said, "Friend, you don't seem to come from the Demondawn Great World?"

Lin Ming turned his head. The man who spoke had an ashen appearance and looked very humble. His cultivation was at the middle Divine Sea realm and his foundation was a sloppy wreck; he was a standard loose cultivator.

Beside him was a blue-clothed girl. She had a cute and clever appearance and her skin seemed taut and supple.

"I'm not." Lin Ming shook his head. He knew that what happened just now was likely something that was general knowledge on the Demondawn Great World, and the surprise he revealed just now was clearly not the reaction that someone from the Demondawn Great World should have. Since that was the case, there was no need to hide anything.

"I thought so…" The black-clothed man shook his head, "I don't know how you came to the Demondawn Great World. This is a land that you should never have stepped foot on. This entire place is in chaos and it is simply impossible for a loose cultivator to live reasonably well. Even many small sects find it hard to gain a foothold. For these small sects, being exterminated overnight is something common."

As the black-clothed man spoke, the girl beside him constantly nodded.

"Me and my little sister were both born here. There's nothing else we can do about it. We simply don't have the means for interstellar travel so we can only keep living here in constant fear."

Lin Ming said, "If you aren't strong, living anywhere isn't easy at all. This brother, may I ask you what this space-time channel is?"

“You may not be aware, but the location of this Demondawn Jungle is special. It is rumored that there was once an earth-shaking battle between immortals and demons in the far-off ancient past. The fall out of that great war caused many holes to be pierced through the barriers of the Demondawn Great World as well as the countless divergent worlds and realms. Because of that, the space here is extremely complicated. The deeper you go, the more this is true. Even a World King or Holy Lord powerhouse wouldn’t dare to go into the deepest parts of Demondawn Jungle. Otherwise, once they enter the space maze, they might lose themselves within. The space here is extremely unstable to begin with, so forming a space channel isn’t difficult. This is a slightly safer method of travelling. On the other hand, transferring through the void itself is much more risky. If you’re not careful then you might transfer yourself to some chaotic world and never come out.”

“Oh? There is something like that?” Lin Ming’s mind stirred. This great battle between immortals and demons, just what was that? What did ‘immortals’ and ‘demons’ refer to? Was it possible that the reason there were so many demon races on the Demondawn Great World was related to this great war between immortals and demons?

“It seems that in the past several days I’ve only been in the outermost surrounding area of Demondawn Jungle. I haven’t gone far in at all.”

As Lin Ming was thinking this, he had already flown into the space channel. Everything within this space channel was twisted. In an instant, all sorts of images appeared. These images seemed as if they lasted a long time but also just for a split-second. Then, a space opened in front of Lin Ming.

As he left the space channel he arrived in another extremely primitive jungle. This jungle looked almost exactly the same as before; it was nearly impossible to distinguish the difference between the areas. If he went too deep into Demondawn Jungle, there was a possibility that he would become lost.

In this area of the jungle, there were also another hundred people waiting. Among these people were actually six Divine Lord powerhouses.

“Hall Master White, Hall Master Luo, you’ve all waited for a long time.”

Nether Darklight cupped his hands together. Although these six people were Divine Lord realm powerhouses, they were still Hall Masters just like Nether Darklight. One could also see from this that the potential of these six people was far inferior to Nether Darklight; they were only ordinary Divine Lord powerhouses.

“It’s about time. Let’s leave now and go capture the primordial epoch spirit root.”

“Should we not wait longer? We are still lacking in manpower. Hall Master Blue will catch up soon. If we wait for him then capturing the primordial epoch spirit root will be easily accomplished.”

“There is no need to wait. The primordial epoch spirit root is even more familiar with Demondawn Jungle than we are. If we wait for Hall Master Blue to arrive, who knows where it will have gone by then.”

It was impossible to use void transferal in Demondawn Jungle. Even Holy Lord powerhouses had to honestly fly around. In addition, Demondawn Jungle was an incomparably broad land. Wanting to discover the primordial epoch spirit root in a short period of time and also gather everyone together wasn’t realistic at all.

“That’s fine. If we can catch the primordial epoch spirit root then that will be a great merit for all of us.”

The group of several hundred people flew for some time. An old man led the way, grasping a charm in his hand and constantly correcting his position. Along the way, he also sent out a series of sound transmitting talismans. He wanted to contact the disciples who first found the primordial epoch spirit root, but he didn’t receive any response at all.

“There is no need to contact them. Those disciples have likely already died.”

“Mm…” The old man nodded, his complexion a bit gloomy. Although the primordial epoch spirit root was a spirit plant, it could still devour humans.

These sorts of spirit plants could entangle a person in their roots and then dig their root hairs into their body, sucking up their flesh and blood. It would only take a brief moment to suck an adult human dry.

“It’s here.”

The old man holding the charm stopped in the skies above a certain portion of the jungle. There wasn’t anything about this area that seemed out of place.

“Be careful. This primordial epoch spirit root is itself a wood-attribute spirit plant. Once it hides in the jungle, it is extremely difficult to find. It can ambush us at any moment.”

The six old Divine Lord powerhouses took the lead to fly into the jungle. But, the moment they approached, all of the trees in the surroundings seemed to come to life. Countless vines shot out, firing towards all the martial artists in the sky as if they were about to suck them all in.

“Mm?”

The Divine Lord powerhouses in the lead were overwhelmed, shocked. “Be careful! This area of the jungle and all of the vegetation here is being completely controlled by the primordial epoch spirit root!”

The old man grasping a charm shouted out loud. At the same time, the entire jungle dissolved into a black swamp. All of the trees and plants began to crazily wave around like a demonic spirit!

“No! this isn’t a jungle at all! All of the trees here are the root hairs of the primordial epoch spirit root! They are only a part of its main body!”

The primordial epoch spirit root had already stayed in this part of the jungle for a long time and sucked up all the world essence energy in the surroundings. It had turned this entire area into a dark swamp filled with deadly gas. Then, it used its root hairs to disguise this area as a jungle. These methods even surprised Lin Ming. In Lin Ming’s mind, the primordial epoch spirit root was nothing but a slightly larger ginseng, but because it had survived for so long it had gained a mind of its own and was able to avoid capture. Over time, it might have even developed defensive capabilities. But, he never thought that this primordial epoch spirit root would be so terrifying!

Chapter 1340 – Murdering Others and Stealing Blood

Chapter 1340 – Murdering Others and Stealing Blood

…

…

…

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Countless root hairs shot up like lances. Two lower Skydark Holy Land disciples had their protective true essence directly pierced through. With a light shattering sound, these root hairs were like vipers as they drilled into the two disciples' chests. All of their flesh and blood essence was sucked out by these roots hairs. Before long, the two of them had become dried up corpses.

Hu – !

A rich blood energy enveloped the surrounded world. Within this world, everything had turned a light red. The thick smell of blood swirled about, emitting a vast and boundless strength. This was the atmosphere of chaos.

"Domain!"

Lin Ming was startled. This primordial epoch spirit root was actually able to cultivate its own domain! It was almost the same as a human martial artist!

Within this domain, there were the auras of the Blood Laws, Grandmist Laws, and Wood Laws. Although these Laws didn't seem exquisite to Lin Ming and there were also numerous loopholes within them, by relying on its own profound foundation, the primordial epoch spirit root was able to cover a hundred miles in its domain, covering everyone within!

“Line up!”

The blue-clothed Hall Master Luo suddenly threw down a flag. The flag fluttered in the air, completely scattering the bloody atmosphere. The five Divine Lord Hall Masters flew around Hall Master Luo, each one bringing out their own magic tools. For a time, the six of them fused their strength together, forming the phantom of a six-armed demon king behind them. This was the demon art of the Skydark Holy Lands – The Six-Armed Halcyon Lord. Although this wasn’t a transcendent divine might, these six Divine Lord powerhouses had already practiced this cultivation method for 10,000 years. Now that they joined forces, countless demon king phantoms shot out from the flag. Ghosts cried and demons roared, the sound ringing through the ears.

The phantom of the Six-armed Halcyon Lord battled with the primordial epoch spirit root’s domain!

“Darklight, the Myriad Blood Demon Fading Array!”

Hall Master Luo shouted towards Nether Darklight.

“Yes!”

For Nether Darklight to become a Hall Master before the Divine Lord realm, he could be considered as an outstanding individual. He had seen many magnificent scenes and also gone through many dangerous life or death situations. At the beginning he had panicked for a brief moment because of the primordial epoch spirit’s sneak attack, but now he had calmed down.

“My comrades, offer a sacrifice of your blood, Myriad Blood Demon Fading Array!”

As Nether Darklight spoke he bit down on the tip of his tongue and spat out a mouthful of blood. This blood was mixed together with a trace of blood essence, turning into a dreadful blood demon in the skies.

And after Nether Darklight did this, the other disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands followed suit. They bit down on the tip of their tongue, spraying blood out into the air. Each mist of blood turned into a crimson blood demon!

The basis of the Myriad Blood Demon Fading Array was to use the blood essence of the casters to form an offensive array formation that attacked with blood demon kings. Once this sort of array formation was used, it would inevitably damage the life source of the user. Unless one was going all-out, they wouldn't use this array.

Some disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands hesitated at the start. After all, this was something that involved their own source blood essence; no one wanted to casually throw it away. But at this time they could only steel themselves and follow orders.

Nether Darklight shouted out, "Disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands, heed my orders! Use your everything to kill this primordial epoch spirit root! The more it swallows the flesh and blood essence of martial artists, the stronger it becomes! But once it is captured, that will be a great merit for all involved! The primordial epoch spirit root is something that Master Ancestor Tian Mingzi needs, and he will be generous with rewards. You are all inner court disciples, and in the Skydark Holy Lands there are hundreds of millions of you! Do you want to remain an inner court disciple for the rest of your life? Do you never wish to see Master Ancestor for the rest of your life? Do you never wish to study a transcendent divine might for the rest of your life?

"Riches and dangers come hand in hand; this is your chance! Everyone who participates in this battle, I guarantee that you will obtain rich rewards beyond your imagination! The value of this is far beyond the blood essence that you will pay! Fellow sect members, let us put forth our full effort and capture this spirit root!"

Nether Darklight's words were filled with passion, containing a stirring strength.

Those Skydark Holy Land disciples who originally had problems with giving up their blood essence were suddenly roused by Nether Darklight's words.

Indeed, this was their lucky chance. If they could find this medicine that Tian Mingzi was specifically looking for, just what kind of merit would that be!

If it weren't for the special terrain of Demondawn Jungle that required a massive number of disciples to carry out a full-on carpet search, they never would have had the chance to complete a mission for Tian Mingzi.

The 200-300 Skydark Holy Land disciples spat out their blood essence. This blood essence turned into blood-red demon kings, all of them rushing towards the root hairs of the primordial epoch spirit root.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Energy surged and blood flew out. Some blood demons were shattered and broken up but there was also a massive number of spirit roots that were burned and cut in half!

These blood demons possessed extreme corrosive properties. The primordial epoch spirit root was also burnt!

The disciples and Elders of the Skydark Holy Lands were not some random nobodies. If they dared to come and try to capture the primordial epoch spirit root, they naturally had certain abilities they could rely on.

“Continue! All the way until the end!”

Nether Darklight shouted out once more as he spat out more blood essence.

Although each time he was just spitting out a tiny bit of blood essence, how could he continue like this?

Some disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands turned to the loose cultivators.

"You lot! All of you offer your blood essence! Hurry!"

Even the disciples around the bald youth began to shout out loud.

"What're you all standing around for? Do you want to die!?"

As they spoke, several disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands took out their weapons, a thick killing intent overflowing from their bodies as if they were about to attack these loose cultivators at any moment.

If they really fought, then there would be no need for the six Divine Lord powerhouses or the Divine Transformation realm Nether Darklight to do anything. Just the bald youth and his group alone could kill off the dozens of loose cultivators!

The difference in strength was far too great!

Lin Ming frowned. These disciples were offering their blood essence, and now they also wanted the loose cultivators to do the same?

As long as the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands were able to catch the primordial epoch spirit root, they would be able to enjoy countless rewards. But what about the loose cultivators present? If they also spent their blood essence would they receive the same generous rewards?

The bald youth loudly said, "Today, I can promise all of you loose cultivators that as long as you offer your blood essence and fight with everything you have, after this battle is over, you will be allowed into the Skydark Holy Lands as official disciples! Isn't entering the Skydark Holy Lands something that you wish for even in your dreams?"

To enter the Skydark Holy Lands was indeed the wish of many loose cultivators. However, they also knew that the so-called official disciple was in truth a caretaker disciple. To put it more bluntly, that was to be a servant to others.

To burn their blood essence and also participate in a battle in which they would likely die, all in order to become a caretaker disciple – wasn't that thinking too cheaply of their lives?

Many loose cultivators didn't want this.

The bald youth's complexion turned cold. "Burn your blood essence or die, make your choice!"

Within the primordial epoch spirit root's domain, it was impossible for these loose cultivators to escape. And at this time, the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands were purposefully pushing the scattered domain energy towards the edges where the loose cultivators were.

For a time, at the position where the loose cultivators were, the power of the domain became increasingly strong and the smell of blood soared to the heavens. The chaos aura here became increasingly rich. Even if the primordial epoch spirit root's chaos aura wasn't yet able to transform into elementary grandmist energy, it was still as heavy as a mountain. With so much chaos aura pushing down on these loose cultivators, it was making it hard for them to breathe!

Some loose cultivators turned pale because they couldn't resist this pressure. Some of them even let out miserable screams as explosive sounds emitted from their joints and parts of their meridians broke apart. As loose cultivators, it was simply impossible for them to be like the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands and set down a great array formation to resist the power of this domain.

"Humph! You all would rather do things the hard way! You only have yourselves to blame."

The bald youth maniacally grinned. At this time, Nether Darklight coldly coughed, "What are you dawdling about for? For the loose cultivators that won't offer their blood essence, just kill them and extract their blood essence instead!"

As the one who was managing the Myriad Blood Demon Fading Array, Nether Darklight was eager to defeat the primordial epoch spirit root. This was an important accomplishment to add onto his record of merits!

Even with Nether Darklight's status, he was still rarely given the chance to perform tasks for Tian Mingzi. This was an unbelievably great opportunity for him. If he completed this task perfectly, he would obtain unimaginable rewards. Moreover, his status in the future would rise to new heights and he would be able to travel even farther down his road of martial arts.

With such a chance presented before him, how could he allow these loose cultivators, who were nothing more than a group of ants, to drag him down?

"Yes, kill them all!"

The bald youth smacked his forehead. Wasn't killing these loose cultivators and taking their blood essence even simpler?

"H-hold on!"

As a loose cultivator that was struggling vigorously in the scattered domain energy saw the bald youth about to attack, he shouted out, "Forgive me! I'm willing to offer my blood essence!"

"Too late! Killing you is much simpler. I want all of your blood essence! Only like that will the might of the Myriad Blood Demon Fading Array be even stronger!"

The bald youth laughed and thrust his saber into the loose cultivator's chest. The difference in strength was extremely high to begin with, and these loose cultivators were also being pushed down by the suppressive domain all around them. They simply didn't possess any ability to resist.

"Ahhh!"

The loose cultivator that had been begging for mercy cried out in pain, his entire body twitching. All of his blood essence was sucked out by the bald youth, turning into a crimson blood demon that hurtled towards the primordial epoch spirit root!

The Myriad Blood Demon Fading Array's might was beyond doubt. In addition, there were also the combined attacks of six Divine Lord masters constantly raining down, cutting away the root hairs of the primordial epoch spirit root!

Every time a root hair was cut off, a massive amount of blood shot into the air.

This extremely evil plant was actually able to bleed.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

The primordial epoch spirit root violently struggled. Thick branches smashed into the black swamp, causing millions of jins of blood to rush into the sky like a tsunami.

Bang!

Several hundred branches simultaneously struck the six Divine Lord realm masters. But, with the six masters having formed an array formation and also being under the protection of the six-armed demon king, they blocked all the attacks of the primordial epoch spirit root!

However, underneath the attack of the primordial epoch spirit root, the six Divine Lord masters weren't feeling much better. They were desperately persisting through this onslaught of attacks. In this war of attrition, the one to last to the end would win!

"This isn't the end yet. If I knew things would be like this I would have killed all those loose cultivators earlier. Although they are weak, their blood essence can still be used. If all their blood essence is taken out it, it will still be stronger than the blood essence we can put forth."

Although the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands had a vibrant blood vitality, how many drops of blood essence could they burn? How could it compare to taking out all of the blood essence from these loose cultivators?

Chapter 1341 – Drastic Measures

Chapter 1341 – Drastic Measures

…

…

…

As the bald youth was about to continue killing the other loose cultivators, the black swamp beneath them began to wildly rumble. With a loud explosive sound, endless amounts of black mud scattered in all directions. Then, a root hair 10 times thicker than the previous ones suddenly shot out.

This root hair was like a black dragon, releasing an incomparably terrifying aura. This was the primordial epoch spirit's main body!

The primordial epoch spirit root had intellect and was also aware that this was a critical moment in its survival. It had to go all-out!

"Rahhh – !"

The primordial epoch spirit root roared. This plant was actually able to roar. The following sharp sound wave transmitted several hundred miles outwards, piercing through the ears.

"Stop it!"

"Demon Massacring Great Array!"

The six Divine Lord masters attacked together. The joints in their bodies burst out with crackling sounds, their muscles expanding as their blood vessels popped out. Their skin began to turn a dark red. Without a doubt, this was a secret technique of the demonic path.

Although this sort of secret technique didn't involve burning their blood essence, the truth was that this harmed their source of life even more than that. This was a move that required them to burn their very life. Just using it once would cause one's fires of life to weaken by a great deal, a style of bringing down the opponent while bringing great harm upon oneself. This was their final finishing move saved for all-out events. If they couldn't kill their enemy then they would all die one after another, because this move greatly overdrew their true essence and blood vitality.

The bodies of the six masters burst out with layers of black light that wrapped around them. Behind these six people, a black scroll and a white scroll began to slowly unravel. Atop these scrolls were images of pain and suffering, people being tortured and demons being executed. Just glancing at these scrolls made one's entire body feel restrained!

Hah – !

The black and white scrolls suddenly came falling down, covering the primordial epoch spirit root.

The primordial epoch spirit root wildly struggled, wanting to tear those painting scrolls to pieces. As for the six masters, their faces began to pale as sweat streamed down their faces.

"Darklight, hurry! Use the strongest state of the Myriad Blood Demon Fading Array so we can defeat this creature in one fell swoop!"

Hall Master Luo roared out. When he used the Demon Massacring Great Array, every breath of time cost a thousand years of life. They simply couldn't continue like this.

"I know!"

Nether Darklight's eyes turned to those several hundred loose cultivators, his vision filled with a thick and brutal killing intent.

"Hurry and kill them all!"

"Great!" The bald youth laughed. If he used the blood essence of these loose cultivators, he could earn merits and not damage his own life source; that was something he truly wished for!

"Skydark Holy Lands! You damned dogs can go die!" Many loose cultivators angrily cursed. They began to take out their weapons, preparing themselves to struggle to the death.

"Let's fight with them and then run away!"

"I don't want to die here."

In the face of imminent death, no one was able to maintain their calm. Although these loose cultivators could also fight, they knew that there was a high probability they would all die here today.

"Big Brother, what do we do?" The blue-clothed girl who spoke to Lin Ming before was pale with an expression filled with fear. Beside her, her brother's forehead was also dripping with sweat.

And at this time, Lin Ming looked at the battlefield in front of him. This primordial epoch spirit root's strength had surpassed his imaginations. Even so, if this battle continued, the primordial epoch spirit root would be captured sooner or later. This was not something he wished to see.

What he hoped for was an outcome in which both sides were severely wounded.

"Hey, brat! We brought you all the way here, now it's time to make use of you. We'll start with you first! Now die!"

The bald youth decided to start with Lin Ming.

In his eyes, although Lin Ming was strong, he was still a loose cultivator in the end. In other words, he was nothing worth caring about.

Hu – !

The bald youth's saber slashed through the void, cutting down at Lin Ming!

Lin Ming sneered. Without even using the Phoenix Blood Spear, he stretched out his hand and grasped the bald youth's saber.

Omm!

With the sound of shivering metal, the bald youth's saber was easily gripped between two of Lin Ming's fingers. The saber seemed as if it was stuck in a block of iron, unable to be pulled out.

"What!?"

The bald youth couldn't believe his own eyes. This feeling was the same as if he were to step on an ant, but then found that the ant was lifting him instead!

At this moment, he felt a thunderous blast echo in his mind. Illusions began to grow thick in his spiritual sea. In the confusion, all he saw was Lin Ming's coldly indifferent face.

Puff!

With a light sound, Lin Ming flicked out a true essence energy arrow that pierced through the bald youth's throat.

A severe pain spread through the bald youth's body. The bald youth grasped his throat, desperately trying to stem the flow of blood, his eyes as round as plates and his vision filled with incredulity. Like this, he fell straight down from the skies.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Luo!"

“What happened!?”

The sudden change in Lin Ming immediately attacked the eyes of all the disciples from the Skydark Holy Lands.

Everyone saw Lin Ming easily kill that bald youth. Even the loose cultivators were shocked.

The bald youth himself had a late Divine Sea realm cultivation. As for Lin Ming’s cultivation, he was only at the peak of the middle Divine Sea realm. Even so… this was simply impossible.

“He killed Senior-apprentice Brother Luo?”

“How is this possible? He is only a middle Divine Sea realm martial artist!”

“He must have been hiding his cultivation! He isn’t a loose cultivator!”

The bald youth was not some ordinary nobody. Those people that Tian Mingzi were willing to accept as secret disciples were all amazing geniuses to begin with. Even so, he had been instantly killed by Lin Ming. The only explanation was that Lin Ming was hiding his cultivation or perhaps had even altered his appearance.

“Work together! Kill him!”

The disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands all rushed towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming’s complexion was calm and indifferent. An ancient and boundless aura surged out from his body, recklessly washing over everyone. He had opened the grandmist space. However, this grandmist space was different from before. This time, Lin Ming’s grandmist space was filled with a wisp of divine dream energy, making this space seem as if it were isolated from the world and located in a completely different space and time.

This was the domain created by Lin Ming combining the Divine Dream Law with the grandmist space. With Lin Ming’s current understandings into the Divine Dream Law, it was impossible for him to form the divine dream space. And it was even more impossible for him to completely fuse the divine dream space and grandmist space together. But, to integrate the Divine Dream Law into the grandmist space and allow it to take on certain characteristics of the Divine Dream Law was something he could do.

For a time, all of the martial artists were covered in the grandmist space. Illusions grew thick in their minds and the real world seemed to fall away from them.

Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and stepped forwards. A deadly spear light flashed out and several disciples were instantly cut down by Lin Ming!

"What have you done?!" As Nether Darklight saw this, his eyes filled with red rage.

Catching the primordial epoch spirit root was a golden opportunity for Nether Darklight to earn great merits; it would relate to how far he would be able to walk down the road of martial arts in the future. And yet, all of his efforts were being sabotaged by Lin Ming. By killing a massive number of Skydark Holy Land disciples, that would cause the great array to be destroyed. How could he not be angry?

He grasped his black heavy sword and cut down at Lin Ming, "Die for me!"

Facing Nether Darklight, Lin Ming's complexion was indifferent. In that instant, essence, energy, and divine fused within his body as his strength began to rapidly rise.

Three Essences as One!

Nether Darklight was an early Divine Transformation powerhouse, but to Lin Ming, he was the same as everyone else.

Divine Seal Art – God Forbidding Seal!

Lin Ming's fingers linked together, instantly forming thousands upon thousands of seals. These seals were all complex and ancient; besides Lin Ming, no one was able to understand them.

Lin Ming shouted out loud. Then, all of these seals flew towards the approaching Nether Darklight!

Ka ka ka!

Nether Darklight's sword light was covered in these seals. In that moment, these seals all turned into energy black holes, rapidly swallowing Nether Darklight's strength.

Nether Darklight felt his strength rapidly fading away. His complexion suddenly changed. He wanted to cut off his connection to his sword light and attack again, but Lin Ming had already appeared like ghosts and gods in front of him.

One spear shot out!

Nether Darklight was frightened out of his mind. A protective black fog covered his entire body. Ghostly energy grew thick around him as black light flashed. At the same time, he traced his spatial ring as if he wanted to pull out some life-saving magic tool.

But at this time, Lin Ming's spear light thrust into the black fog surrounding Nether Darklight. With a blur, space trembled and the black fog around Nether Darklight remained for just a brief moment before completely dissipating.

The Phoenix Blood Spear ruthlessly pierced into Nether Darklight's chest.

With this strike, the massive amount of energy contained within the Phoenix Blood Spear erupted. Nether Darklight cried out as most of his organs were torn to shreds. In his right hand, there was no time for him to use the magic life-saving tool he was taking out; he had already been killed by Lin Ming.

The disparity was too great!

Chapter 1342 – Sitting On the Mountain and Watching the Tigers Fight

Chapter 1342 – Sitting On the Mountain and Watching the Tigers Fight

…

…

…

Like this, Nether Darklight's corpse fell to the ground. Lin Ming grabbed the magic tool fragment that dropped down from Nether Darklight's hands and gave it a quick look. This fragment was a decent ancient artifact, and there was even a wisp of a remnant soul contained within it; he casually tossed it in his spatial ring.

From the moment that Nether Darklight attacked to the time he died, Lin Ming only needed several breaths of time. To kill an early Divine Transformation martial artist so quickly, it could only be said that the disparity between ordinary geniuses of a Great World King Holy Land and Lin Ming was too far off.

"He died. Senior-apprentice Brother Nether died?"

"Who is he? He can't be a Divine Sea realm martial artist!"

"Could it be an old enemy of the Skydark Holy Lands?"

The disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands were frightened. Lin Ming was simply too strong. Besides the six Divine Lord powerhouses here, the fiercest one among the rest had been Nether Darklight, but even he couldn't withstand two moves from Lin Ming.

Among these people there were also some Divine Transformation martial artists. But facing such a strong Lin Ming, all of them lost the courage to stand against him.

As for the loose cultivators, they were naturally overjoyed. They didn't think that there would be a powerful master amongst them who had been hiding their strength. Because of him, they all had a slim chance of survival.

And at this time, the six masters of the Skydark Holy Lands were also facing the primordial epoch spirit root. Without the support of the Myriad Blood Demon Fading Array, the six masters were finding it hard to continue on.

The several Divine Lord realm powerhouses roared out loud. But at this time, there was a ripping sound as the two demon massacring scrolls that the six masters put forth were torn to pieces by the primordial epoch spirit root!

Puff!

The six Divine Lord masters spat out mouthfuls of blood and flew backwards.

These six masters all had extremely ugly complexions. They had consumed a great deal of their life source and true essence in order to desperately struggle with this primordial epoch spirit root and capture it, and just as they were about to succeed, their plans had been ruined by Lin Ming and they had failed!

"Damn you, you little beast!"

"Just where did he come from!? I will tear him to shreds!"

These six old men wanted to kill Lin Ming, but at this time, the primordial epoch spirit root was greedily eyeing them from beneath.

The bombardment of attacks just now had also caused the primordial epoch spirit root to receive heavy wounds. During this battle, it had broken countless root hairs and even the main root had been damaged with countless scars. Deep red blood constantly leaked down from its body.

At this time, the primordial epoch spirit root was also wild with rage!

This battle had caused it to suffer great damage to its cultivation. It wanted to consume the flesh and blood essence of these people, turning them into essence energy to make up for its own losses.

“Jejejeje!”

A burst of strange laughter came bubbling up from the ground. The blood-filled primordial epoch spirit root slowly formed a head, taking on the appearance of a peerless beauty whose looks could bring down nations. To the eyes of those watching, this made the primordial epoch spirit root look like a snake demon with a human head.

“You people from the Skydark Holy Lands, you want to send out one million people to capture me? Then, I will swallow all of you up today and use your flesh and blood essence energy to make up for my losses! Die!”

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Root hairs shot up, rushing towards those six Divine Lord masters like countless pythons.

At this time, the six masters were in an extremely poor condition. They only had half of their true essence remaining.

“What do we do?”

A Divine Lord realm old man anxiously asked as he cut off several root hairs with his saber.

“The primordial epoch spirit root has already suffered heavy damage. Now it is weak and is only pretending to be strong. Its situation is about the same as ours! While it is difficult for us to capture it, it also isn’t easy for it to kill us!”

"If we allow it to escape today then this monster will be even more careful in the future. It will simply be impossible for us to find it then. We only have one chance at this! If we lose, we will incur Master Ancestor's wrath and the punishment will be great. It wouldn't be weird if we ended up being fed to demons!"

The six Divine Lord masters didn't have any path of escape for themselves. They had lost many disciples and even Tian Mingzi's bloodline descendant, Nether Darklight, had also died. If they didn't capture the one who murdered them and also didn't capture the primordial epoch spirit root, even allowing it to escape and making it harder to find it later, then they would have to face Tian Mingzi's inevitable anger.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Cang, you go and capture that little beast while the five of us keep off this monster. After that, we'll risk everything we have to join forces and kill it!"

These six masters hated Lin Ming to their bones. And with Lin Ming watching them from behind, it was impossible for them to battle with any sense of safety.

"Good! As long as we can capture this monster then no matter how great our losses are, the sect will still grant us enough medicines to restore ourselves. This is already a battle with our lives on the line; there is no way we can turn back!"

The six Divine Lord masters rapidly exchanged true essence sound transmissions. As they spoke, a black-robed old man suddenly shot towards Lin Ming.

"You little beast, I'll take your life!"

The black-robed old man took out a long great scythe and slashed out at Lin Ming's head. A brilliant purple scythe light flashed out!

Martial artists of the demonic path often favored long-handled weapons. As for the scythe, that was a weapon that often represented cruelty and evil.

Facing this black-clothed old man, Lin Ming took a deep breath.

This was his first time truly facing a Divine Lord powerhouse!

Although his opponent was only at the early Divine Lord realm and was also seriously injured, with less than half of his strength remaining, he was still a Divine Lord powerhouse.

Before, when Lin Ming was at the peak of the ninth stage of Life Destruction, he had been able to defeat the weakest Divine Transformation martial artists. But now, he was already a half-step into the late Divine Sea realm, and he had also cultivated essence, energy, and divine, along with the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens. His strength had taken a qualitative leap from in the past. As he was now, he could battle with a Divine Lord powerhouse!

He wanted to engage in a brutal battle with this black-clothed old man, but now was not the right time. He needed to save up as much strength as he could.

The archenemy of the primordial epoch spirit root was these six Divine Lord masters and not him. As long as he could occupy one of them then he could be the one watching tigers fight and profiting from their mutual destruction.

Lin Ming rapidly drew back, simply not bothering to fight this old man head on. His feet stepped onto Golden Roc Shattering the Void and he opened the Gate of Wonder. His body formed a series of phantoms as the black-clothed old man's attack completely missed him.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The black swamp was cut apart by this scythe light with mud gushing into the air. As for Lin Ming, he nimbly weaved between these eruptions of mud like a little fish.

"You little beast, all you can do is run!?"

The black-robed old man was burning with impatience at the end of his wits. Lin Ming was like a slippery little cockroach that he couldn't grab. Not just that, but on the other side, the battle between the five Divine Lord masters and the primordial epoch spirit root had reached the white-hot stage. They had originally been able to cause great damage to the primordial epoch spirit root, but since they were missing the black-robed old man, they were far too overstretched and were beginning to gradually exhaust themselves!

Nearly every time they fought they had to use up their life source and blood essence! This was truly a desperate all-in offensive! If they continued like this, they would use up all of their lives!

At this time, another gray-robed old man cried out in alarm. A root hair had pierced through his protective true essence. He frantically tried to avoid it, but the root hair still pierced through his shoulder.

As soon as the root hair entered his flesh and blood, it rapidly began to swallow up his flesh and blood essence energy. That gray-clothed old man's arm began to wither away at a visibly astonishing speed!

"Ahhhhhhh!"

The gray-clothed old man sent out a miserable cry. However, the four other people were being held back by the root hairs and were unable to rescue him.

"Cut off your arm!"

Old Man Luo cried out.

The gray-clothed old man fiercely clenched his teeth and decisively cut off his arm.

Blood splashed out, all of it swallowed by the root hairs.

The gray-clothed old man's face was like fading embers. He was unable to fight again. As for everyone else, they had wounds added upon wounds and had also consumed a massive amount of true essence. In another incense stick of time, they would exhaust all of their energy. At that time, they could only allow themselves to be played with!

Their condition was extremely poor right now. The primordial epoch spirit root wasn't something that the five of them could handle and they couldn't grab Lin Ming either. These six Divine Lord realm powerhouses felt as if they were going to go insane.

"Retreat!"

Old Man Luo grit his teeth and issued this order. Even though they were enveloped in the force field of the primordial epoch spirit root, they could still retreat. As for those disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands, they would likely die here and become nourishment for the primordial epoch spirit root.

Not just that, but once they added on the crime of losing the primordial epoch spirit root, this crime wasn't something they could deal with. The punishment for these events would be considerable, to the point that none of them dared to return to the Skydark Holy Lands.

But if they didn't return, they would have committed the grave crime of betraying the sect and thus be hunted down by the Skydark Holy Lands.

This was a true dilemma!

"You little beast, remember me! I will pay you back 10 times over for what you've done today! I will capture you and suck out your soul and refine your marrow!"

Old Man Luo wildly shouted out as he ran away in another direction!

"You want to run away? Dream on!"

The primordial epoch spirit root's face dreadfully twisted together. It stimulated its domain to the limit and brought it showering down from the skies, covering Old Man Luo and the others like a cage.

"Since you all injured me so much, you can leave behind your flesh and blood essence energy to supplement me!"

In this battle, the primordial epoch spirit root had also damaged its life source. How could it allow these humans who harmed it so much to simply scurry away?

“You evil monster, do you really think you can keep us here? Break for me!”

Old Man Luo shouted out loud and smashed into the boundaries of the domain. The domain violently trembled as if it wanted to tear apart. However, with the support of the primordial epoch spirit root’s Grandmist Laws, the layers of this domain were extremely heavy. Although it violently distorted, it still stiffly withstood the attack.

However, this strike also caused the alarming woman’s face of the primordial epoch spirit root to pale. It didn’t feel much better suffering the all-out attack of Old Man Luo.

At this time, Hall Master Cang – who had been chasing Lin Ming – also flew away, wanting to rip apart the enchantment together with Old Man Luo.

“Break!”

Elder Luo attacked once more, forcibly suppressing the roiling blood energy in his body. A crack appeared in the primordial epoch spirit root’s domain; it was near the breaking point.

The primordial epoch spirit root was unwilling to allow these people to escape.

It suddenly looked towards Lin Ming. “Brat, what is your cultivation? If you and I join forces, we can keep these six people here. I only want their flesh and blood essence energy. As for the rest, all of their inheritances and treasures can be given to you!”

Lin Ming faintly smiled upon hearing the primordial epoch spirit root’s words. “If you and I join forces, that just means you will surround them and I will fight them. Do you think I have the strength to face Divine Lord powerhouses? If I had that strength, do you think I would be chased around like I was just now, without the least bit of strength to fight back? Also, I have no interest in their resources, but you on the other hand are in desperate need of their flesh and blood essence energy to restore your lost strength. Don’t you think this transaction is unfair to me?”

Chapter 1343 – To Ask A Tiger For Its Skin

Chapter 1343 – To Ask A Tiger For Its Skin

…

…

…

“You were being chased around without the slightest bit of strength to fight back? Hehe… you are far too modest. Do you think I don’t know what degree of strength you are hiding? You mixed in with those loose cultivators and came to Demondawn Jungle for what reason? Don’t tell me that you came to play with these people. I think that your goal here is to capture me!”

The primordial epoch spirit root’s womanly face suddenly twisted into a strange smile. As it looked at Lin Ming, it spoke to him with true essence sound transmissions.

Lin Ming’s mind turned cold. He thought that this primordial epoch spirit root had limited intelligence, but it had correctly guessed his goal with its first guess.

“Hahahaha!”

The primordial epoch spirit root let out a series of ear-scratching laughs. “You want to capture me as a material for your alchemy? If you dare to covet me even amongst a crowd of Divine Lord realm powerhouses, your strength must be quite good, otherwise aren’t you just a sheep that walked into the tiger’s den? I don’t believe that you are that stupid!

“In this battle I have been wounded grievously and I don’t wish to be enemies with you. I am willing to give you some of my life root hairs to use for your alchemy as long as you help me kill these six Divine Lord powerhouses. I need to absorb their life’s blood essence to restore my strength!”

Lin Ming thought for a moment. “Giving me your root hairs? Why would I believe you? Isn’t cooperating with you the same as asking a tiger for its skin?”

“Heh, don’t you think your confidence in yourself is too low? Even if I defeat those six Divine Lord powerhouses, wanting to swallow them completely won’t be easy. The life source of a Divine Lord realm powerhouse is extremely formidable. If I want to absorb it, I cannot allow anything to disturb me during the process. When that time comes, if I don’t give you some source root hairs of mine, you might fight with me. As for me, I’ll have just finished a great battle and I won’t have absorbed the life source to restore myself just yet. That will be my weakest moment, so why would you fear me? I think in that sort of situation I would rather use some of my root hairs in exchange for the chance to peacefully absorb the flesh and blood essence energy of these six Divine Lord powerhouses.”

The primordial epoch spirit root used a true essence sound transmission to speak with Lin Ming. As it rapidly spoke with Lin Ming it was also dealing with the six Divine Lord powerhouses at the same time.

However, the primordial epoch spirit root’s domain was soon unable to persist. If these six Divine Lord powerhouses were to escape this danger zone they would return to the Skydark Holy Lands and report what happened here. That wasn’t something Lin Ming wished to see.

“Good, then I agree.”

Lin Ming quietly said.

The primordial epoch spirit root let out a clear laugh. “I like dealing with smart boys like you. You won’t regret it!”

As it laughed, it stimulated its domain to the limit, wanting to trap these six people within.

It looked at Lin Ming and licked its deep red tongue across its lips. “Hehe, you little beast, do you think I will really give you my source root hairs? Every time I cut off my source root hairs, that will cause me to lose a great portion of my strength! Before this you were watching all of us fight, wanting to wait for us to both grievously wound each other before swooping in and taking advantage; do you think I wouldn't know what you were planning? Although it won't be easy for me to absorb the blood essence of these Divine Lord realm powerhouses, it won't be as difficult as I said it was. As long as I use my secret technique and pay a small price, I will be able to instantly absorb a great deal of it. At that time, with the blood essence to restore me, I'll regain 70-80% of my strength. Then, I'll kill you afterwards and absorb your flesh and blood too!

"All those who dare move against me should die! Humans, demons, all lives in this world, all of you should just become my fertilizer! I will eat up all of you whole, becoming more and more powerful! In the future I will become an unrivalled powerhouse on the level of an Empyrean! I will control the entire Divine Realm!"

The primordial epoch spirit root shouted out in its heart. As it absorbed the life source of countless beings, its ambitions also grew greater.

At this time, Lin Ming's mind was also racing. "If I fight directly, then even when I am at my peak state I won't be a match for these six Divine Lord powerhouses or the primordial epoch spirit root! The primordial epoch spirit root's promises aren't believable at all. If I really kill these six Divine Lord powerhouses, not only will I not obtain any source root hairs but it will likely attack me. But, if I attack it now, I don't have much hope of defeating it, even if it is injured.

"The terrain within Demondawn Jungle is far too complex. Once this primordial epoch spirit root decides to run away, wanting to stop it will be impossible for me! Right now it doesn't wish to run away, but that is only because it desires the flesh and blood essence of these six Divine Lord powerhouses, and wants to absorb them to enhance its own strength."

Lin Ming's mind lit up.

He originally wanted to profit from the chaos between the two factions but now it seemed that his ideas were too simple. This primordial epoch spirit root wasn't a fool at all. As for these six Divine Lord powerhouses, there was even less to mention. If they were to escape and discover that he was fighting the primordial epoch spirit root, they would return without a doubt. They would then capture both him and the primordial epoch spirit root, who would both be tremendously wounded without any strength left!

Because there were three different sides, this was a very complex situation. Every side wanted the other two to mutually wound each other and then eliminate them together.

If this deadlock couldn't be broken, then the final outcome would likely be that the primordial epoch spirit root would freely escape and these six Divine Lord powerhouses would flee into Demondawn Jungle. As for Lin Ming, he would return with nothing at all.

This wasn't what Lin Ming wished for.

Thus, he needed to break this standoff. He needed one side to be the fool and the other side to be his spear.

Lin Ming didn't count on the primordial epoch spirit root to be an idiot nor did he expect the six Divine Lord powerhouses to lose their minds. If someone were to be a spear, that could only be him. After breaking this deadlock, he would have to rely on his own ability!

As Lin Ming was thinking like this, he fused essence, energy, and divine within his body, using Three Essences as One. At the same time, he opened the Heretical God Force and burnt the blood of the Ancient Phoenix. This was almost Lin Ming's strongest combat state.

Divine Seal Art – God Forbidding Seal!

Lin Ming's hands flickered as he formed thousands upon thousands of seals!

3600 seals flew out from Lin Ming's hands, dancing in the air!

These divine seal runes were able to swallow all energies! As these seals flew towards those six masters, they felt their strength rapidly fading.

"You little beast!"

"I'll kill you like a dog!"

Lin Ming didn't choose to frontally contend with these six Divine Lord powerhouses; there was no way he could get an advantage. These six Divine Lord powerhouses might have lived for 100,000 years by now. It was highly likely that these people would have desperate methods to save their lives. If he were to be severely wounded because he attacked them, then he would really be the fool here.

Thus, he would save as much strength as possible by diverting the attention of these six Divine Lord powerhouses and allowing the primordial epoch spirit root to take the lead in attacking them.

"This brat is quite the crafty one!"

The primordial epoch spirit root gnashed its teeth. It was naturally able to see through Lin Ming's plan. Lin Ming was only trying to contain them and was relying on it to face them head on. In this situation, this would greatly increase the risk to itself.

"Hehe, do you think you're safe just because of this? How useless. As a creature of the heavens and earth, my ability to withstand damage surpasses any human's by at least 100 times! As long as I can swallow up any of their essence energies I'll be able to restore enough of my strength. At that time, I'll eat you up!"

The beautiful snake-woman diabolically grinned. It emitted a screech, its entire body roiling like tumbling human blood.

Chi chi chi!

A massive amount of red juice was spat out, forming burning acidic smoke. It flew through the air, bubbling about as if it would burn everything.

The snake-woman's eyes turned increasingly red. Its eyes flashed with a cruel and vicious light and its serpentine tongue lashed around.

"All of you can die for me!"

In that instant, more root hairs shot out from the snake-woman's body, crazily firing at those six Divine Lord powerhouses.

"You evil creature, you can forget it!"

"You're the one that forced me! If you want to kill me then you'll be buried too!"

A skinny camel was still bigger than a horse. For better or worse, these old men had still lived for several tens of thousands of years, perhaps even 100,000 years. They each had their own respective life-saving cards.

Elder Luo tossed out an ancient charm from his spatial ring. Old Man Cang also took out a shining mirror from his chest. Each one of these old men began to use their final trump cards. For a time, all sorts of dazzling beams of light fired towards the primordial epoch spirit root.

"Explode for me!"

The charm that Elder Luo threw out suddenly exploded!

At the same time, Old Man Cang's mirror also exploded!

A terrifying wave of energy swept through the void. The space within Demondawn Jungle was unstable to begin with. For a time, massive tracts of space collapsed, causing vortexes of space to surge over the world. A massive amount of root hairs were blown apart, falling into the space storms and then disintegrating into powder.

The snake-woman's complexion turned white and blood vessels all over her neck burst apart, spraying red juice everywhere. In that violent explosion just now, her domain… had broken!

"These damned old fogies, they are far too stubborn!" It suddenly looked at Lin Ming, snapping, "You still haven't done anything, just what are you waiting for!?"

Lin Ming chuckled. He could feel that even as this primordial epoch spirit was desperately attacking, it had also kept a strand of sense locked onto him, lest he sneak attack it.

Lin Ming didn't doubt that if he really sneak attacked it now, although he could defeat it, he wouldn't be able to capture it. This plant was a sly fellow.

Lin Ming bit down on his tongue, spitting out some blood. This blood was mixed with some of his blood essence.

Gate of Life – burn the blood essence!

As the primordial epoch spirit root saw this, it was stunned, "Burning his blood essence? Is he insane?"

The primordial epoch spirit root simply didn't know that Lin Ming had opened the Gate of Life, giving him the ability to restore his blood vitality and even his blood essence. Although it could be used for body transformation medicines, this didn't mean that it understood the body transformation technique.

The primordial epoch spirit root originally thought that even if Lin Ming was helping it, he was only trying to take advantage of the troubled waters. But, it never imagined Lin Ming would even burn his blood essence to help.

"That's really blood essence! This boy is an idiot, he's really burning his blood essence to help me absorb those six Divine Lord masters! Hahahaha! Once he burns his blood essence, that is very difficult to restore! Even if he can restore himself in the future, the current him will be greatly weakened! After this, I wonder just how he will fight me! As long as I can swallow the blood essence of a single Divine Lord realm master and restore 60% of my strength, wanting to kill him will be beyond easy! The heavens help me! The heavens truly help me! Hahahaha!"

The primordial epoch spirit wildly cackled in its mind.

And at this time, the eyes of these six masters turned blood red. “You little beast! Have you gone mad!?”

“Do you want to die with us and allow others to profit!?”

Chapter 1344 – A Taste of Your Own Medicine

Chapter 1344 – A Taste of Your Own Medicine

…

…

…

The Divine Seal Art was a transcendent divine might created by Empyrean Divine Seal; its power was beyond doubt. These six Divine Lord masters originally had multiple problems in facing the primordial epoch spirit root's domain, and were even feeling that it was nearly impossible to resist. But now that they were being suppressed by the God Forbidding Seals, they were even more pitiful. They wanted to kill Lin Ming, but underneath the suppression of the domain they were only able to be passively attacked!

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

The God Forbidding Seals constantly fell onto the bodies of the six Divine Lord powerhouses. The Divine Seal Art's divine seal runes were energy black holes, able to swallow all types of energy. These six Divine Lord masters felt their strength rapidly fading away, and even the domain that was nearly torn to nothing by them began to slowly recover!

As long as the primordial epoch spirit root's domain was restored, they would be nothing but turtles in a jar; they would die without a doubt!

"You little beast, do you really want to perish together with us?"

"You are so young; it must have been difficult for you to reach this level of cultivation. Even so, I never imagined you would be so stupid. You actually join forces with a demon spirit to attack your fellow humans. If others wished to bury you, you are just the idiot that would help them dig the hole! If we're killed, the next one to be eaten up by the demon spirit will be you!"

The six Divine Lord masters breathlessly shouted.

Lin Ming faintly smiled in response. The movements of his hands didn't stop at all. He began to increase his pace of shooting out divine seal runes.

He said, "What use is there in cooperating with a demon spirit? Didn't you want to kill me to begin with? You think that your Skydark Holy Lands are much more noble than these demon spirits? You gathered so many loose cultivators here because you were thinking of making a sacrifice of their blood to help power the array formation to assist in capturing the primordial epoch spirit root. Do you really think that your methods are much better than the primordial epoch spirit root itself?

"If I didn't hide my cultivation then I would have already been killed by you! Now, the primordial epoch spirit root has already agreed to give me some of its source root hairs. I don't want too many to begin with, so why wouldn't I cooperate with it?"

Lin Ming's words seemed to be a matter of course. The primordial epoch spirit root laughed as it heard this.

"Haha, Little Brother, well said! There is no conflict between us to begin with, so we can definitely cooperate! I don't need root hairs too much so why not give you a few. With our strength together, we can easily kill these six people. Now, all of you can die!"

"Stupid! Stupid! Stupid!"

"Ahhhh!"

"I hate you all! I am unwilling!"

The six Divine Lord realm masters wildly screamed. However, with the several thousand God Forbidding Seals flowing through their blood, the amount of true essence they could transfer was becoming increasingly small!

If these were ordinary times, with Lin Ming's cultivation, it would have been impossible for him to deal with six Divine Lord powerhouses together. But now, these six people had consumed a great deal of blood essence and energy. If they had to resist the attacks of the primordial epoch spirit root with their strength being drained, they would be overwhelmed!

As time passed, the primal chaos barrier became increasingly thick, nearly forming a cage around everyone that blocked in the six Divine Lord masters.

"Hahahahaaha! This domain cage has already been closed; I want to see just how you all resist! You have already fallen into my hands, and now killing you is the same as killing a chicken! To die and become a part of me, you should all be honored by that!"

As the primordial epoch spirit root wildly laughed, 12 root hairs flew out from its body towards these six Divine Lord masters. These 12 root hairs were different from the ones before. They were a bright red, just like fresh blood; they were the primordial epoch spirit root's life root hairs.

As the primordial epoch spirit root was sending out its life root hairs, it had also kept a strand of sense locked onto Lin Ming.

The primordial epoch spirit root had just passed through a great battle; this was its weakest time. If Lin Ming were to attack, then it would absolutely lose and would be forced to escape. If that happened, absorbing these six Divine Lord masters would be impossible.

"This brat, I have no idea if he's stupid or just faking it. Could he be waiting for this opportunity to attack? Although he might be able to defeat me, I have hundreds of methods to escape. As long as I run away into Demondawn Jungle, there is no way he can find me.

"But if I do that, I will have no means to absorb these six people. Who knows when I'll be able to fully restore my strength."

The primordial epoch spirit root maintained complete vigilance. However, Lin Ming didn't seem to have any intention of attacking from the start. At this time, he was constantly creating new seals with his hands, sealing away the true essence of those six Divine Lord powerhouses as before, to allow the primordial epoch spirit root to smoothly absorb them.

"I'll succeed soon!"

The primordial epoch spirit root had already wrapped around the bodies of the several Divine Lord masters.

These spirit root tentacles were each life root hairs of the primordial epoch spirit root, and also the toughest root hairs it had. They weren't something that several dying Divine Lord powerhouses could hope to cut off.

"Haha, just three more breaths of time and I'll succeed! Almost! Almost there!"

Puff!

With a light puncturing sound, a root hair dug into the stomach of an old man, immediately draining all of his flesh and blood essence.

The old man cried out in pain as his stomach started to wither away.

"I've succeeded! This brat is truly an idiot! The heavens are helping me!"

The primordial epoch spirit root raucously laughed in his heart. It could feel the pure flesh and blood essence of the Divine Lord realm powerhouse flowing into its body, constantly turning into its own strength.

"I can't lose this chance!"

The primordial epoch spirit root went on a complete offensive. Several root hairs stabbed into the bodies of other Divine Lord realm masters, absorbing their flesh and blood essence.

"Ahhh!"

"You bastard!"

"I hope you rot!"

Before several Divine Lord realm powerhouses died, they continued to curse and struggle. But on the other side, as the primordial epoch spirit root was absorbing the flesh and blood essence energy of these masters, it was also paying full attention to Lin Ming. An invisible force field came shrouding down over Lin Ming; it had already prepared for him.

Lin Ming's strength was still an unknown, but he was definitely stronger than a weak Divine Lord powerhouse. As for Lin Ming's blood vitality, that was far stronger than these old fellows'. If the primordial epoch spirit root could absorb Lin Ming, then its strength would rise to new heights!

With such delicious food laid out in front of it, how could the primordial epoch spirit root miss out on this chance?

Lin Ming seemed as if he had yet to sense the primordial epoch spirit root's plans. He was continuing to use the Divine Seal Art to seal away the abilities of these Divine Lord powerhouses to resist.

"Stupid! Stupid! Stu – !"

Puff!

A Divine Lord powerhouse was shouting out like a madman before he spat out a mouthful of black blood. Because his lungs were swallowed up by the primordial epoch spirit root, he no longer had the ability to speak.

"Haha! I succeeded! The heavens have helped me! There is actually an idiot here who helped me accomplish the impossible! Too wonderful! Too wonderful! Even if he attacks me now it is too late! All of their flesh and blood essence has entered my body, and now digesting them is just a matter of time!

“In just an incense stick of time… no, in just half an incense stick of time, I’ll be able to return to my peak state!”

The primordial epoch spirit root laughed out loud. But at this time, its laughing face stiffened.

“This is… mm!?”

The primordial epoch spirit root’s mind went cold. Just a moment ago, because it had been fearing Lin Ming’s sneak attack, it had diverted its attention to him. But, it actually neglected the flesh and blood essence energy that it had been absorbing.

Thus, it was only now that it discovered that there were innumerable seals contained within this flesh and blood essence energy!

These seal runes had been absorbed together with the flesh and blood essence energy by the primordial epoch spirit root. They had flowed through its body, dispersing throughout.

“What is this!?”

The primordial epoch spirit root was shocked. It simply didn’t know what Laws these seals contained, but what it knew was that these seals were shot out by Lin Ming just now.

The way in which Lin Ming helped the primordial epoch spirit root deal with these six Divine Lord masters was to constantly shoot out these seals, sinking them into the bodies of the several Divine Lord realm powerhouses and then sealing away their true essence.

But as for what sort of principles were contained in these seals, the primordial epoch spirit root had no idea. Now, these seals had actually flowed into its body!

And most importantly, the primordial epoch spirit root had used its source root hairs to absorb those six Divine Lord powerhouses. This also caused these seals to spread through to its source root.

The primordial epoch spirit root had a foreboding premonition. “These seals are far too strange. Even within the body of a Divine Lord master they weren’t destroyed or refined. It must not be anything good for me to have absorbed them.”

It quickly revolved its energy, wanting to expel these seals from its body, but at this time, an incomparably shocking scene occurred.

The energy it sent out not only couldn’t expel these seals, but those seals suddenly turned into energy black holes that began absorbing all of its energy!

Not just that, but these energy black holes became increasingly crazy and brutal. Tens of thousands of miniature energy black holes transformed into tens of thousands of energy whirlpools, recklessly swallowing up all the energy and flesh and blood essence within the primordial epoch spirit root!

This was the primordial epoch spirit root’s weakest time! Although it had absorbed 30-40% of the six Divine Lord masters’ flesh and blood essence into its body, it hadn’t yet had time to digest them and turn it into usable strength. Now, the essence energy within its own body was being greedily slurped up by these energy black holes!

“I fell for it!”

The primordial epoch spirit root felt as if it had fallen into a sea of ice. Without a doubt, these strange seals were part of Lin Ming’s plan from the very start.

Lin Ming didn’t have the confidence that he could defeat and kill the primordial epoch spirit root. Thus, he had submerged these seals into the bodies of the six Divine Lord masters to seal away their true essence. Although it looked as though he was helping the primordial epoch spirit root, the truth was that these seals would be absorbed by it. Then, during its weakest time, these seals would turn into energy black holes and swallow its strength instead!

This was a trap, and also giving the plant a taste of its own medicine. Because the primordial epoch spirit root had been too greedy in wanting to absorb the strength of those six Divine Lord powerhouses, and in addition to no one being able to understand Lin Ming's Divine Seal Art and the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens, it was now doomed. Even if the primordial epoch spirit root was even more cunning, there was still no way it could fight Lin Ming.

As the primordial epoch spirit root realized this, its entire body turned cold. It finally understood that Lin Ming had never believed it from the beginning. Also, he wasn't satisfied with just several source root hairs, and wanted to catch everything in his net instead!

"This boy, he's playing a pig to eat the tiger. What a vicious and cunning little brat!"

A violent rage erupted in the primordial epoch spirit root's heart. It no longer bothered with absorbing the strength of those six Divine Lord masters, and instead turned all of its strength onto Lin Ming, pressing the entirety of its domain down on him.

"Die for me!"

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

12 source spirit roots fired towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming sneered. "You've finally discovered it? But what a pity, you are far too slow… and now, the one to die will be you."

Chapter 1345 – Receiving the Spirit Root

Chapter 1345 – Receiving the Spirit Root

…

…

…

Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear. Within his body, essence, energy, and divine fused together. He aimed his spear at the 12 root hairs and slashed outwards!

The power of thunder and fire intertwined upon the Phoenix Blood Spear. This was the power of thunder and fire tribulation that flowed out from the Heretical God Tree.

Heavenly Dao Judgment!

Bang!

With a terrifying explosive sound, those 12 root hairs were blown apart by Lin Ming. Lin Ming calmly retreated, but the primordial epoch spirit root's main body actually staggered backwards, slowing down. Tens of thousands of God Forbidding Seals formed energy black holes in its body, swallowing up a massive amount of its strength.

The transformed woman's face of the primordial epoch spirit root constantly twisted, becoming increasingly blurry. Because its energy was becoming too chaotic it was finding it hard to maintain its manifested shape.

With Lin Ming in front of it, it simply didn't have the opportunity to force out these God Forbidding Seals. If this continued, then it wouldn't be too long before Lin Ming would capture it.

But if it wanted to run away, that was also difficult. The primordial epoch spirit root's entire body was riddled with these divine seal marks, these marks were personally formed by Lin Ming. The primordial epoch spirit root suspected that Lin Ming would absolutely be able to use these marks to sense its presence and chase after it.

If it ran away, it would continue to weaken until it was overtaken by Lin Ming.

"This damned boy!"

The primordial epoch spirit root's voice became increasingly shrill and harsh. The woman's face it manifested became increasingly fierce, turning into that of a horrifying demon. "Boy, you have forced my hand!"

At that moment, a gray, boundless aura surged out from the primordial epoch spirit root's body, becoming increasingly intense. It roared towards Lin Ming like a gray inferno. This was the life aura of the primordial epoch spirit root, the primal chaos spirit energy from the forming of the universe that it had absorbed.

The primordial epoch spirit root didn't hesitate at all to consume its life aura in order to attack Lin Ming.

As Lin Ming saw these gray flames rushing towards him, he grinned, "You've finally used your last resort. But, your final ultimate move uses the power of the Primal Chaos Laws; it is useless against me!"

At that moment, behind Lin Ming, a blood red lotus flower slowly bloomed. This lotus flower was ancient and profound, red to the point that it seemed as if it were dyed in the blood of a demon god.

Grandmist space!

Hu – !

A powerful grandmist strength surged out. The Law-annihilating grandmist space spread out, covering an area of a hundred miles.

As the primordial epoch spirit root's gray flames entered this grandmist space, they actually seemed as if they were about to be absorbed. This was the power of primal chaos, but Lin Ming's attainments in these Laws were much higher. The grandmist space was a transcendent divine might established by an Empyrean level master.

"This… this is!? How is this possible!?" The primordial epoch spirit root was greatly shocked. "You can actually comprehend the Primal Chaos Laws!?"

At that moment, a deep feeling of unease swelled up within the primordial epoch spirit root's heart. It ignored all else and exploded those gray flames before turning around and fleeing!

Although it knew that escaping from here would be difficult, if it remained here it would die without a doubt.

Bang!

The gray flames exploded within the grandmist space. At the same time, the main body of the primordial epoch spirit root tried to sink underground. But at this moment, it sensed that all the light around it had disappeared, everything turning to darkness. A powerful traction force locked onto its body, making it impossible for it to dive underground.

Lin Ming's voice began to echo in the primordial epoch spirit root's ears like the whispers of a cackling demon.

"By the power of a black hole, swallow all power, swallow all matter, fall into an infinite abyss of time, within this cage of space you shall never emerge, sink forever, perish through the sands of history! Divine Seal Art, swallow all of existence – Eternal Darkness!"

At this time, a dark sphere floated out in front of Lin Ming. All of the origin energy within this world began to go crazy, wildly gathering towards the sphere and forming a giant black vortex. All of the mud in the swamp, all of the broken trees, all of the vicious beast skeletons, everything was being sucked up by this vortex, vanishing into that dark sphere where it would be sealed for all eternity!

This dark sphere was Lin Ming’s black hole seed. With it, he could simulate the final darkness of a black hole singularity.

A year ago when Lin Ming used this move, all of his meridians and blood vessels had bulged upwards, tearing apart as they were unable to withstand this pressure. But now, Lin Ming’s understandings into the soul forging Dream Laws were far more profound. Moreover, his fused essence, energy, and divine strength was being increasingly coordinated and his comprehension of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens was also much deeper.

Currently, he could freely use Eternal Darkness as he wished.

“What is this!?”

The primordial epoch spirit root furiously cried out as it began to lose its mind. It crazily struggled, but at this time, underneath the compulsion of the 10,000 God Forbidding Seals, all of them broke out. A terrifying strength swept out like a mat, recklessly enveloping everything nearby. The primordial epoch spirit root suddenly stiffened; it was impossible to break free from this strength!

“Ahhhh!”

The primordial epoch spirit root roared out; it was actually lifted up by this terrifying suction force!

The main form of the primordial epoch spirit root was over a thousand feet long and looked like a massive black python. It crazily struggled in the skies, but no matter what it did, it could not escape the shackles of Eternal Darkness.

“Die!”

As Lin Ming released the black hole seed, he also thrust out his spear.

Heavenly Dao Judgment!

The savage power of thunder and fire tribulation crashed into the primordial epoch spirit root, spurring those over 10,000 God Forbidden Seals to explode!

Energy shockwaves surged outwards. The primordial epoch spirit root was blown apart by Lin Ming's attack!

A massive deluge of bright red juice showered down like a waterfall. All of this blood-like juice was sucked in by Lin Ming.

"Brat, I curse you to a miserable death for the next 10,000 lives! I hope you die horribly!"

The primordial epoch spirit root viciously roared. As a plant lifeform, it truly did have a far more formidable ability to resist attacks than humans did. Even now, it still hadn't died, and if it were allowed to swallow up enough flesh and blood essence it could even restore itself.

"Seal!"

Lin Ming's fingers flashed. In just several breaths of time, over 10,000 more God Forbidding Seals sank into the primordial epoch spirit root's main body, sealing away all of its strength. Even its basic life functions were sealed away.

The Divine Seal Art could seal away even gods, much less a tiny spirit plant.

Hi – !

After the primordial epoch spirit lost all ability to resist, it was directly brought into the Magic Cube space.

After completing all of this, Lin Ming let out a long breath. After using Heavenly Dao Judgment twice, forming tens of thousands of God Forbidden Seals, and even displaying Eternal Darkness, he had consumed a considerable amount of energy.

As he turned his head, he could see that those six Divine Lord powerhouses still hadn't completely died off. Almost half of their flesh and blood essence had been swallowed up by the primordial epoch spirit root and their bodies were as thin as sticks, like corpses that had been withering away for thousands of years. Their appearances couldn't be called humans or ghosts.

"You… you…"

Old Man Luo looked at Lin Ming with horror. His hair was stringy and white, his eyes had receded deep into their sockets, his chest was caved in, and he had lost all semblance of life. He would die soon.

"Hahahaha! Hahahha!"

Old Man Luo seemed to suddenly come alive. He wryly smiled, "I never thought that even though the six of us joined forces to capture the primordial epoch spirit root, all of our efforts would be gifted to someone else. Finally, victory fell into the lap of a little brat like you! Even the primordial epoch spirit root was tricked by you! You are vicious and cunning enough, a wonderful plan indeed!"

Old Man Luo grit his teeth, his body constantly trembling.

"Are those your final dying words? How boring."

Lin Ming coldly glanced around, taking stock of the surroundings. After the six Divine Lord powerhouses had been caged in with the primordial epoch spirit root, the other disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands had either died or run away. Now, there were only six people left over.

The loose cultivators were still there, but Lin Ming didn't worry that they would recognize his identity from his moves. This was because Lin Ming had fought the primordial epoch spirit root in its domain, and added to the fact that he had used some concealing techniques, it was impossible for them to witness the scene of fighting.

"You... just who are you?"

Old Man Luo hadn't watched the finals of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, but he could feel that this youth in front of him was not some nobody. No matter how he looked, this youth in front of him was still at the middle Divine Sea realm and didn't seem to be hiding his cultivation at all...

Lin Ming grinned. His squatted down in front of Old Man Luo and said, "I am the Lin Ming you have been looking for. Surprised?"

Lin Ming's words caused Old Man Luo's heart to shake!

He felt that Lin Ming's smile was the smirk of a devil. This was Lin Ming? He was actually Lin Ming. He knew that everyone was searching for him but he deliberately walked into their midst? This youth was too terrifying!

In that moment, Old Man Luo's divine soul fell into illusion. He felt a powerful strength invade his spiritual sea. Ghosts and phantoms grew thick in his mind as he lost himself.

Lin Ming pressed his hand onto Old Man Luo's forehead. Divine Dream Law – soul searching technique!

By using the Divine Dream Law to display the soul searching technique, this was countless times superior to using the common soul searching technique of the demonic path. The information that could be recovered was far more complete. Besides things like cultivation methods, array formation techniques, alchemy techniques, refiner techniques, and other such extremely complex memories, everything else could be obtained.

However, Old Man Luo was a Divine Lord powerhouse and his divine soul was incomparably powerful. If Lin Ming rashly used the soul searching technique, it was likely he would suffer a backlash. Thus, he informed Old Man Luo of his status to make his enemy's mind fall into despair. This gave him the perfect opportunity to strike.

A tremendous amount of information emerged within Lin Ming's mind.

This included Tian Mingzi's recent movements, and possible reasons why he was searching for body transformation medicines and Lin Ming's whereabouts.

However, Lin Ming didn't find anything of value in this old man's memories. All of this information had only been speculation.

All sorts of clues indicated that there seemed to be some unknown force that had appeared within the Skydark Holy Lands. This influence was of an extremely high status and only received orders from Tian Mingzi himself. It seemed that the reasons there were people searching for body transformation medicines was all because of this influence…

"Tian Mingzi is looking for my whereabouts, could it be related to my body transformation technique?"

This thought inevitably appeared in Lin Ming's mind.

Lin Ming wasn't able to confirm anything without further information. He thrust his spear into Old Man Luo's throat. The dying old man struggled for several more breaths of time before finally laying motionless.

As for the other five people, they were all killed off one by one. Their spatial rings were also taken by him. After searching through them, he found that they mostly contained cultivation methods and pills of the Skydark Holy Lands as well as some weapons and other treasures. It was impossible for Lin Ming to take a liking to any of this.

After casually putting it all away, Lin Ming’s thoughts moved and he entered the Magic Cube space. He wanted to completely subdue and refine the primordial epoch spirit root.

Chapter 1346 – Refine

Chapter 1346 – Refine

…

…

…

In the Magic Cube space, massive layers of divine seal array symbols floated in the air, forming a massive array diagram. The primordial epoch spirit root was locked within this array. Its size had already reduced to 100 feet, resembling a python that had fallen into a giant spider web. No matter how much it struggled, there was no way it could escape.

“Mm? It recovered so quickly?”

After seeing the re-fused primordial epoch spirit root, Lin Ming was surprised. This primordial epoch spirit root was originally cut into several pieces by Lin Ming, but those sections of root hairs had actually given birth to shiny roots that branched out and joined back together again. As these tentacles connected to each other, there was the faint feeling that it was regenerating.

“The primordial epoch spirit root’s vitality is formidable. Refining it in alchemy will greatly benefit your body transformation technique.”

Beside Lin Ming, a white-clothed Mo Eversnow spoke to him. This was her soul form, uncontaminated with the dust of the mortal world. As she floated in the air, her bare feet hanging, she looked as ethereal and elegant as the night.

“You want to use me for alchemy? Hehehe, you are far too presumptuous! If you try, I will immediately burn up all of my origin energy so you can’t obtain even the tiniest bit! I will even explode here and bring you down with me!”

As the primordial epoch spirit root spoke, its face transformed, alternating between the appearance of a woman and the visage of a brutal demon. Its body wildly distorted. It appeared unstable as if it had gone crazy.

Lin Ming sneered, “You can try, but my Divine Seal Art can seal away even a spiritual god, much less a tiny nobody like you.”

“Hahaha! Seal away a spiritual god? Aren’t you afraid that the wind will cut your blustering tongue? Your nonsensical and pathetic cultivation method actually dares to call itself the Divine Seal Art? I’m laughing to death here!”

The voice of the primordial epoch spirit root was sometimes as heavy as metal and sometimes shrill like a screaming woman. It was extremely grating to the ears.

At this time, behind Mo Eversnow, the slumbering Fishy woke up. She rubbed her wide and tired eyes, but her expression immediately lit up as she saw Lin Ming. She was instantly overjoyed and all of that tiredness seemed to disappear. “Big Brother Lin Ming, you’re here!”

Lin Ming had rarely entered the Magic Cube space recently. When he cultivated, he would do so for months or even years at a time. It had been a long time since he had last seen Fishy.

Fishy was still the same as before, but her appetite was increasing with every day. But right now, Lin Ming was extremely wealthy. Even if she ate over a thousand violet sun crystals a day, he could still afford it.

Hearing Fishy call out Lin Ming’s name, the primordial epoch spirit root’s expression immediately distorted. “Lin Ming? You are Lin Ming? Which Lin Ming?”

The demonic face of the primordial epoch spirit root looked at Lin Ming with blank disbelief. But, as it quietly looked around at Lin Ming’s inner world, it finally said with panic, “A middle Divine Sea realm cultivation, you really have a middle Divine Sea realm cultivation? You aren’t hiding your cultivation!?

"That's right, the second ranked martial artist of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting also had a middle Divine Sea cultivation. That Lin Ming is you!?"

As Lin Ming heard the primordial epoch spirit root say this, he was a bit surprised. "You are a spirit plant of Demondawn Jungle and yet you actually know my name."

"So it's really you!" The primordial epoch spirit root's mind trembled. "You are known as someone that will become an extreme Empyrean in the future, amazing! Amazing! No wonder I lost to your hands, and even those six Divine Lord masters of the Skydark Holy Lands were annihilated by you. You are truly worthy of your reputation!" The primordial epoch spirit root's eyes flashed. At first, its gaze held nothing but extreme hatred for Lin Ming, but now it had fear and hate, both emotions mingled together.

Just what sort of concept was an extreme Empyrean? Even the status of a Great World King was enough to scare someone to death. As for an extreme Empyrean, that was an existence that rarely appeared in the Divine Realm in 100 million years. It was simply an unimaginable level.

"I never thought that you would pay attention to matters of the human world. It seems you've heard a great deal about me."

"Humph, even though I am a spirit plant, I can transform into a billion different forms. Whether it is a fiend, vicious beast, demon, or human, man, or woman, I can transform into anything I wish and freely enter and leave the human world, searching for rare cultivation methods and heavenly materials and even sucking up the essence energy of masters. It isn't strange at all for me to know your name."

"So that's how it is." Lin Ming said, much more relieved.

The primordial epoch spirit root clenched its teeth. "Lin Ming, do not kill me. I can pledge my loyalty to you and become your contract beast. In the future your achievements will be high. If I follow you, I will also have a bright future!"

As the primordial epoch spirit root spoke, its eyes flashed with a brilliant light. It stared at Lin Ming, waiting for his reply.

Lin Ming faintly smiled, “I apologize, but I have no need of your services. What does your bright future have to do with me? For me, your greatest value is to be refined into a pill. As for becoming my contract beast? Do you think you can keep up with my pace of growth? What meaning is there if you can’t? Moreover, your character is crafty and deceitful to begin with. I have no interest in watching my back all day long.”

Lin Ming’s words instantly sentenced the primordial epoch spirit root to death.

“Lin Ming, perhaps you might not have a liking for my talent, but I have a wealth of knowledge that you do not possess. Did you know that Tian Mingzi is planning to refine a divine pill right now, called the Nine Stars Heaven Pill? In the ancient past, this pill was used by humans to break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, but the pill recipe has been long lost to time. Isn’t that something that tempts your heart?”

“Nine Stars Heaven Pill?”

Lin Ming’s mind indeed stirred. A miracle medicine to break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace?

“Lin Ming, the Nine Stars Heaven Pill was indeed a divine pill used by humans in the ancient era to step into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. But now, with the Heavenly Dao rules having changed, even the Nine Stars Heaven Pill might not be able to help you accomplish that. But, what I find strange is that if the pill recipe has been long lost, how could Tian Mingzi have obtained it?

“I also wish to obtain this Nine Stars Heaven Pill, but with my current strength, wanting to move against Tian Mingzi is impossible. I need to be satisfied with what I have. If I continue to involve myself in Tian Mingzi’s matters, it’s likely my status will be revealed and i’ll finally end up dying beneath his hands.”

If Mo Eversnow gave Tian Mingzi such a high appraisal of talent, Lin Ming also wouldn't be negligent about him. Now that Tian Mingzi was also searching for him, if his status were to be uncovered, then he would die.

"That's right, Fishy, this is for you." Lin Ming suddenly perked up. He took out 10 nine sun jades from his spatial ring and threw them to Fishy.

"Later, you can try and eat this. But be careful that you don't eat too much."

Nine sun jades were refined by either half-step Empyreans or Empyrean masters. They were created by taking a massive volume of violet sun stones and violet sun crystals and then fusing them together with nine different essence energies. The final resulting nine sun jade was worth a trillion violet sun stones or 100 million violet sun crystals.

As Fishy took the nine sun jade in her hands, she felt her pulse speed up. Looking at these 10 nine sun jades in her hands, she couldn't help but drool, as if she were holding the most delicious food in the world.

"Thank you so much Big Brother Lin Ming!"

Fishy clearly said. Then, she carefully took a nine sun jade and placed it in her mouth.

Lin Ming radiated out his divine sense and locked onto Fishy's body, making sure that her vital signs wouldn't change too much. These nine sun jades were no trifling matter. This single nine sun jade possessed an energy far greater than the totality of what Fishy had eaten so far.

"Fishy, bite off a little piece but don't eat it."

Lin Ming cautioned, worried that Fishy's body wouldn't be able to withstand the energy.

"Mm, okay."

Hearing Lin Ming and Fishy's conversation, the primordial epoch spirit root was shocked. Eating a nine sun jade, and eating it a bite at a time? Just what were these people talking about?

Just as the primordial epoch spirit root was finding this strange, Fishy suddenly licked the nine sun jade like candy. A rich fragrance immediately flooded Fishy's mouth, causing her to open her drooling mouth and bit off a small piece.

As the primordial epoch spirit root saw this, its eyeballs nearly fell out from how wide they were. "This… how is this possible!?"

A nine sun jade was something manufactured by a half-step Empyrean or above. In terms of hardness, it surpassed even an ordinary spirit artifact!

Let alone this little girl that didn't seem as if she could even hold a chicken, even the primordial epoch spirit root would find it nearly impossibly difficult to break a nine sun jade. And yet, this little girl was eating a nine sun jade just like candy. What sort of freakish abomination was this?

These people were all monsters!

Lin Ming didn't care about the primordial epoch spirit root's surprise. When he had gone underneath Immemorial Imperial City and had faced the Ancient Elysium Seal, that had been an extremely top grade Empyrean spirit treasure refined by Empyrean Divine Seal himself. Even so, Fishy had still bitten off a tiny bit of it. Although she hadn't bitten down on the Ancient Elysium Soul's main body, it was still part of the 'seal' character array formation that was laid down with trillions of jins of violet sun crystals. That was already astonishing enough, but it also had to be known that this was supported by an array formation that Empyrean Divine Seal laid down.

No matter what sort of energy crystal it was, it was nothing more than candy in front of Fishy. She could easily bite them off and eat them.

Fishy had only eaten a piece of nine sun jade as small as a fingernail, but a drunken feeling came over her, making her feel incomparably comfortable. She couldn't help but take another bite. After another few greater bits, the entire nine sun jade was eaten up.

Slowly, Fishy's two round cheeks flushed pink, as if she were drunk. She looked extremely cute and lovable.

"Big Brother Lin Ming, these are much more delicious than the ones before." Fishy said with a happy expression. Then, her body shook several times as she burped out loud and then lay down on the floor and fell asleep.

Lin Ming smiled with satisfaction. Then, he turned to the primordial epoch spirit root and took out the Phoenix Blood Spear.

"Brat, you – !" The primordial epoch spirit root's entire body turned ice cold. It revolved all of its energy to the limit, wanting to break free from the prison of the Divine Seal Art and then blow up and perish together with Lin Ming, but no matter what it did, it was unable to do so with the Divine Seal Art's countless seal runes lurking within its body.

The primordial epoch spirit root roared more and more. But underneath the refining of the Divine Seal Art's seals, its roars became increasingly weak before finally being cut off. Its form grew smaller and smaller, changing shape as it fell into Lin Ming's hand. Within Lin Ming's hand, it had now become nothing but a palm-sized red root, just like a strangely colored ginseng.

In the ensuing days, Lin Ming changed his appearance several times. He went to all sorts of trading houses of the Demondawn Great World, having a different status each time as he bought up the materials he needed to refine the pill.

Finally, the preparations were complete. Lin Ming planned to go into seclusion and open the Gate of Death. And in these days of searching, Lin Ming was also lucky enough to capture a three-eyed demon wolf to serve as Demonshine's new mortal body.

This three-eyed demon wolf was far superior to Demonshine’s original body. Its natural talent was several times better and the body itself was much more formidable. This was more than enough to serve as Demonshine’s body.

“I’ll open the Gate of Death first and then return to the Sky Spill Continent and enter the Eternal Demon Abyss.”

Chapter 1347 – The Final Gate

Chapter 1347 – The Final Gate

…

…

…

High above the skies of the Demondawn Great World's central continent, countless celestial bodies dotted the heavens. These stars were titanic bodies that were millions of miles wide, but in these skies they were nothing more than little specks of sand not worthy of mention at all.

And in one of these countless stars, Lin Ming was sitting in a cave dwelling. In front of him, a spirit artifact furnace was slowly spinning. The fires of heavenly tribulation were brilliantly blazing beneath the furnace and the furnace itself glowed with a vivid red light.

Lin Ming was now refining the Esoteric Mortality Pill.

According to the records within the Celestial Tyrant Manual, the Esoteric Immortality Pill and the Esoteric Mortality Pill were pills required to open the Gate of Life and Gate of Death. However, the truth was that these pills were not some specific pill, but a general classification.

The Esoteric Immortality Pill required life-attribute pill materials, and the Esoteric Mortality Pill required death-attribute pill materials.

The primordial epoch spirit root represented that deathly chaos from the forming of the universe, a world in which no life existed. Thus, it was able to be used to open the Gate of Death's Esoteric Mortality Pill.

Lin Ming used an entire month to gather all the necessary supplementary reagents for refining the Esoteric Mortality Pill. Luckily, the Demondawn Great World was one of the several first-order great worlds in the Divine Realm. Here, as long as one had enough nine sun jades, they could buy almost any rare or precious materials they desired.

In order to avoid being found out by others, Lin Ming used different identities to buy different materials at different trading venues. The Divine Dream Law's appearance changing technique was extremely exquisite; not even a fairy would be able to sense anything wrong with Lin Ming.

Like this, Lin Ming collected all the materials he needed. Then, he went to Skybreak Planet.

The reason he chose Skybreak Planet was because there was a special transmission array here that led to the lower realms. As long as one was willing to pay enough violet sun crystals, they could return to the lower realms through it. And, through the guidance of some strange Laws, it would allow one to return to their home world.

Of course, going to other worlds was also possible, but one had to know the specific spatial coordinates for that world. However, in the violent and turbulent space flows, it was hard to find the exact coordinates.

Many precious materials were all placed into the furnace by Lin Ming.

For these materials, Lin Ming had spent 5 nine sun jades.

5 nine sun jades was a price equal to 5 trillion violet sun stones. When Lin Ming had won the auction for the Boundless World Pill in the past, he had spent 7 trillion violet sun stones to do so.

For the Esoteric Mortality Pill, the supplementary materials alone were able to catch up to the price of the Boundless World Pill, let alone the main ingredient that was the primordial epoch spirit root.

In terms of alchemy, Lin Ming wasn't considered some skilled expert. Although he had absorbed the memory fragments of an alchemist, that alchemist's alchemical skill wouldn't be considered too high.

Fortunately, Lin Ming had Mo Eversnow supporting him. In the past, Mo Eversnow had been a heaven-gifted eternally rare genius. At a young age she had managed to reach a half-step World King cultivation. Through her life, she researched into and gained a deep understanding of array formations and alchemy and a very rich breadth of personal experience in refining the Esoteric Immortality Pill and Esoteric Mortality Pill. This was because Mo Eversnow herself was also a dual body and energy cultivator.

With Mo Eversnow's experience guiding him, and then added onto Lin Ming's flames of heavenly tribulation which far surpassed all ordinary fires, refining the Esoteric Mortality Pill was over 90% guaranteed to succeed.

As time passed, the Esoteric Mortality Pill began to gradually take shape within the furnace. There was none of the fable medicinal fragrance, but instead a deathly silent breath. As one breathed in this type of air, they could feel their own breath catch in their throat as if their heart wanted to stop beating, their soul wanted to fall asleep, and even the circulation of blood in their body slowing down.

If a mortal were to smell this type of breath, their life would be immediately be ended.

"This pill is to push one to the edge of death and force them to survive. If there is such an effect from just smelling it, then if I were to take this pill, the power of that deathly stillness on me could be imagined. If it weren't for my own life vitality being so formidable, I might die in that situation."

Mo Eversnow said, "That's right. That is why the Eight Inner Hidden Gates' Gate of Death is the final gate. Open the Gate of Life first and then open the Gate of Death. With the life vitality provided by the Gate of Life, push past the barriers of the Gate of Death."

As Mo Eversnow spoke, the furnace violently shook and the lid came shooting off. A pure black pill flew out.

Lin Ming's figure flashed as he grabbed it.

This pill was extremely heavy and black without the slightest bit of luster at all. To be more accurate, it wasn't black at all. Rather, it absorbed all light and didn't emit any at all, giving it a black appearance just like Lin Ming's black hole seed.

Looking at this pill, Lin Ming could feel as if he had opened up some mysterious spatial channel to some unknown space-time.

Lin Ming revolved the power of the Gate of Life to the limit. At this time, all of his fires of life began to blaze upwards like an inferno. A massive power of blood vitality surged about. If some ghosts or lost souls were to approach, they would instantly have their souls scattered to nothing.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and swallowed the Esoteric Mortality Pill.

The Esoteric Mortality Pill was able to destroy life vitality. In that moment, it was like a cold bucket of water had been splashed over Lin Ming's fires of life. With this alternating struggle between life and death, Lin Ming's body shook and he spat out a mouthful of black blood.

After this black blood left Lin Ming's body it began to rapidly decay, drying up. This was the horror of the Esoteric Mortality Pill. If someone were to be contaminated with just the tiniest bit of blood, their body might wither away on the spot.

Lin Ming's body continued to decline. His face and muscles shrank, withering away. But underneath the support of the Gate of Life, his flesh and blood continued to regenerate.

This process continued for several quarter hours of time. Lin Ming endured the jarring pain of his body withering again and again, instead revolving the astral essence within his body according to the Celestial Tyrant Manual in order to begin his final attack on the Gate of Death.

……………..

At this time, deep within the Skydark Holy Lands, in a separate world.

A pale Tian Mingzi sat atop a scarlet stone platform. All around this platform was an endless red sea, the waves tumbling about with howls echoing into the skies. Countless thick water drops splashed up, as viscous as blood.

And in this this endless blood sea, countless bizarre creatures floated up and down, looking just like mythical hell.

Standing in front of Tian Mingzi was a vague black-robed person. His entire body was wrapped in a shroud of black fog. As the black fog roiled about him, it looked just like beating flames, nearly impossible to see.

And in front of this black-robed man was a slowly spinning compass. Countless mystical Dao runes glittered atop this compass.

These Dao patterns were completely different from the Dao patterns of the Divine Realm. Instead, they were much more similar to the bone fragment that Lin Ming had obtained in the past.

And underneath these Dao patterns were a bunch of scattered bones. These bones were already reduced to pieces and had decayed away, as if thousands of years had passed. If Lin Ming were here, he would recognize that these broken skeletons were the corpses of the six Divine Lord masters from Demondawn Jungle.

As the compass spun, the skeletons melted away, turning into a ghastly corpse energy that was completely absorbed by the giant array disc.

Then, above this array disc, many faint images formed. Besides the strange black-robed person, no one was able to understand what these images meant.

"Do you see it?"

Tian Mingzi asked, opening his eyes.

The black-robed person shook his head, saying, "If these corpses had their memories intact then that would be good. I would be able to easily find the murderer. But, the damage to these corpses is far too great, all I can do is use some arcane techniques to faintly restore the past."

As the black-robed man spoke, another image appeared above the compass. This person grasped a spear but it was impossible to make out his appearance or even his age.

"That's him?"

Tian Mingzi's eyes sharpened. It was this person that had killed many disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands and had stolen away the primordial epoch spirit root. "This is everything?"

With just this image alone, it was impossible to find this person.

"Hehe, my saint race's methods are far beyond just this."

As the black-robed man spoke, he suddenly opened his mouth, devouring up that image as well as the corpse energy. He slowly chewed it before finally swallowing it.

To the average person, they would find this beyond abhorrent. But this black-robed man seemed to enjoy this flavor very much.

"The killer isn't past 60 years of age, and there is the flavor of thunder and flame. He should be a martial artist skilled in the Thunder and Fire Laws..."

As the black-robed man spoke, Tian Mingzi's mind stirred. "Not over 60 years old?"

For someone beneath 60 years of age to defeat a Divine Lord realm powerhouse, that was definitely a top genius.

Of course, there could be great variations within the black-robed man's estimation. Just saying that this killer's age didn't surpass 60 was far too general.

"Hehe, I've caught him. I tasted a bit of his aura. These six people were all finally killed underneath his spear. By just doing that alone, his aura was left on these six corpses."

The black-robed man's secret technique was extremely strange. These leftover corpses were already destroyed beyond ruin, but this person was actually able to eat them up and find the killer depending on the killer's aura. This sort of technique was nearly related to the karma of samsara, and could be considered an extremely mysterious and profound part of the Heavenly Dao Laws.

"As long as I have tasted your aura, I will never forget it in my life. I want to see just whether or not I can find you! Jejejeje!"

The black-robed man queerly smiled and began to use the array disc to approximate the position of this aura. Not only could he identify one's aura, but he could even lock onto a person's position using this aura and a secret technique. This was something unheard of for a human martial artist.

"Can you find him?"

"There's a chance. But, if he is too far away then even I can't do anything."

The black-robed man continued to search and search, but there was no sign in the array disc.

Slowly, the black-robed man's appearance became increasingly blurry as if he couldn't continue for much longer. Using this technique wasn't easy for him either. After staying in this state for nearly two hours, and just as he was about to give up, his heart suddenly stirred. He turned his head towards a direction and then aimed the array disc there, instantly forming hundreds and thousands of seals.

As these seals flew in the air, the array disc began to emit a deathly still energy. This energy was so faint that one could barely sense it even with the sharpest of senses.

As the black-robed person caught onto this deathly still energy, his eyes began to shine. “I found you! To think that you would be opening the Gate of Death! If you weren’t opening the Gate of Death then it would have been impossible for me to find you, but since you are, you have begun to excite the counterforce of this universe’s rules, exposing your position. My saint race can be considered the ancestor of all body transformation techniques, and even your Divine Realm’s body transformation techniques originate from my saint race. You cannot hide from me!”

Chapter 1348 – Hunt of the Saint Race

Chapter 1348 – Hunt of the Saint Race

…

…

…

Lin Ming felt as if his own mortal body had perished, with nothing but an incomparably clear spiritual sense. He swam through an endless void, and this vast void was filled with countless hollows, each one leading to infinite dimensions. If he was not careful then he would lose his soul and would be unable to pull himself out.

For the consciousness to wander about in such a space was extremely dangerous. But, Lin Ming could faintly feel that in some distant space behind him, there was a black sphere that continuously emitted some invisible gravitational force. Because of this force, Lin Ming was able to clearly recognize the direction he needed to go in without fear of becoming lost.

"This sort of attraction is the… black hole seed!"

Lin Ming's mind immediately flashed back to his black hole seed. As a manifestation of the Laws from the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens, it actually had a function of guiding the process of the body transformation technique. This was because the body transformation technique was also one of the Concepts of the 33 Layered Heavens.

With the black hole seed, it was like a beacon signaling to him in a black and boundless sea. As he ran forwards, he searched about, passing through countless wild space flows before faintly making out a gate in the depths of time and space.

On top this gate were two white skeletons. The hands of these skeletons each grasped a handle of this gate, keeping it locked tight.

"This is the Gate of Death!"

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. The Gate of Death was the final of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, a gate that was located in the spiritual sea.

In order to open the Gate of Death, one had to bring the mortal body to the edge of death until there was only the spiritual consciousness remaining. Then, through taking a swim in one's spiritual world, they could feel where the Gate of Death was.

This was the so-called nirvana rebirth after annihilation.

Lin Ming was well aware that as long as he could open the Gate of Death, he could reach perfection of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and obtain endless benefits in the future. This would allow him to establish a solid foundation for opening the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

Lin Ming stretched out his hand, his thoughts forming a spear in his grip. As he held this spear, he smashed it atop that gate.

Bang!

The great gate shook. From a tiny gap in the gate, a vast amount of energy poured forth. Lin Ming knew that this energy was called astral essence.

This was also the energy that a body transformation martial artist used. It was one of the three main origin energies of the universe.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and allowed all the astral essence leaking out from the Gate of Death to be sucked into his body. In that moment, the phantom of an Azure Dragon appeared behind him.

Lin Ming simultaneously opened the first seven of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. The Heretical God Force erupted as he transferred all of his strength into a barrage of attacks. Spear after spear came crashing down, with 100 spear strikes coming in an instant. Then, these 100 spear strikes fused together, gathering into the strongest strength.

Celestial Tyrant Manual – Hundred Layered Waves!

Bang!

To use the pure power from body transformation to attack the Gate of Death, at this time, the Gate of Death violently trembled. An increasingly powerful force flowed outwards along with an immeasurably vast amount of astral essence, forming a raging river that poured onto Lin Ming.

More and more energy gushed out, becoming increasingly rich. Lin Ming swam within this energy and felt his mortal body that had been filled with the power of death begin to glow once more with the vitality of life.

His withered skin and flesh began to burst apart, falling off, revealing newborn flesh. His skeleton also regrew. Although Lin Ming's skeleton had been integrated with the power of a dragon bone and the power of a dragon bone was indeed wonderful, in the end it wasn't his original strength at all and would cause minor conflicts within his own strength. But now, this strength was also being refined and cast into his new body.

At that moment, Lin Ming could feel his mortal body reach unprecedented levels of strength. His entire body began to emit crackling noises, as if a God Beast were sealed within him and was trying to burst outwards.

"Ha – !"

Lin Ming shouted out loud and waved his spear, smashing it once more at the mystical gate in front of him.

This time, with a loud explosive sound, the gate completely broke apart.

Lin Ming had finally broken through the Gate of Death.

Astral essence continued to flood into Lin Ming's body like an endless river. Lin Ming's strength also rapidly rose. In just several breaths of time, his strength broke through 100 million jins and still continued to climb.

110 million!

120 million!

150 million!

180 million!

200 million!

....

With the Eight Inner Hidden Gates having reached perfection, the strength of Lin Ming's body had taken a qualitative leap upwards.

200 million jins was still not his limit.

230 million jins, 250 million jins, all the way to 260 million jins.

If Lin Ming were to erupt astral essence from his body, his strength would rise even more.

"The amount of astral essence within my body has increased by over a hundredfold. Although I cultivated the body transformation technique, the astral essence I had was pitifully low. Now that I've opened the Gate of Death, it actually increased so much. This is simply incredible!"

Lin Ming muttered. Mo Eversnow continued to explain, "Lin Ming, the current Divine Realm's Heavenly Dao Laws do not allow the body transformation technique to be cultivated to a high level, and thus astral essence has also been imprisoned. Before now, the cultivation of your body transformation technique was low, but with you having opened the Gate of Death and reaching perfection of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, your strength has risen to new heights. At the minimum, you have touched upon the Divine Realm Laws. But, the Eight Inner Hidden Gates is only the start. The truly heaven-defying difficulty will now begin as you try to break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. This step is simply far, far too difficult.”

Mo Eversnow shook her head as she spoke of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. She didn’t know whether or not Lin Ming would be able to take this step in the future.

“I can slowly approach the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. Now that I have opened the eight gates to perfection, in terms of body transformation technique I should be at the peak in the Divine Realm.”

Lin Ming was confident in himself. Before now, the person with the highest boundary in body transformation was Shiku, who had also opened seven gates. He was the same as Lin Ming’s previous state.

“Miss Mo, let’s not delay. Let us leave for the Sky Spill Planet as soon as possible. In my current state, I have some grasp of being able to enter the Eternal Demon Abyss.”

“Okay.”

Mo Eversnow turned into a wisp of spiritual energy that fused back into the world within Lin Ming’s Magic Cube.

Lin Ming left the cave dwelling he opened and began to fly towards the lower realms transmission array.

In the blink of an eye he crossed several dozen miles. At this time, a sense of absolute crisis surged in Lin Ming’s mind! He could feel that in that instant, his entire body was being seen through by an invisible eye!

Lin Ming’s entire body turned ice cold. He nervously stopped where he was, carefully looking all around as he took out the Phoenix Blood Spear.

“Who is it!?”

“Hehe, you’re quite vigilant. But what a pity, the difference in strength is too great. You are destined to die here today.”

A thousand feet in front of Lin Ming, the void was ripped apart as a black-robed man shrouded in dark fog stepped out.

He stretched out his long tongue, licking the air as if he were tasting Lin Ming’s aura.

“Truly incredible. It was already a surprise that you killed so many disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands and even obtained the primordial epoch spirit root, but to think you used this to open the Gate of Death. As for your cultivation… mm? You are at the middle Divine Sea realm?”

At this time, Lin Ming was still concealing his appearance. With the cleverness and versatility of the Divine Dream Law, no one could see through Lin Ming’s appearance changing technique unless they were a Great World King.

“Middle Divine Sea realm? Are you hiding your cultivation? What sort of cultivation disguising technique is this, that even I can’t see through?”

The black-robed man said, greatly interested in Lin Ming.

“Who are you?”

Lin Ming’s voice was gloomy and dire. Facing this black-robed man, he could feel an enormous sense of danger pressing down on him, making all of his hairs stand on end.

This person’s cultivation was shrouded in a thick fog. Lin Ming couldn’t see what this person’s cultivation was or what Laws they practiced. He wasn’t even able to confirm whether this person was truly a man or a woman. All he felt was an extremely dangerous aura.

Lin Ming had never encountered such an unpredictable and elusive enemy before.

And, most importantly, just how did this person find him?

Before Lin Ming caught the primordial epoch spirit root he had changed his appearance and even changed his appearance several times after. Moreover, he had escaped extremely far. In this situation, this person had found him?

And such a mysterious enemy came from the Skydark Holy Lands? All sorts of ideas raced through Lin Ming's mind. He suddenly realized that the situation in the Skydark Holy Lands wasn't as simple as he first thought.

"Miss Mo, what is going on here? Did I make a mistake somewhere?"

"I am not sure. If he can find you, it seems as if he's using the mythical karmic techniques. It is said that those supreme elders who cultivated the Time Laws to an extremely high boundary could calculate the past and predict the future. Predicting the future is just a bedtime story; the future is far too ethereal and winding and no one can accurately say what will happen. But, the past has already occurred, and that is something which is eternally unchanging. In this world, there are indeed some people that can see the past..."

"Mm? There is a secret technique like that?"

"Yes, but this person before us might not have used such a technique. There are countless roads to the Great Dao, and innumerable secret techniques that we are not aware of. This person is far too strange, and he even feels... like he isn't a human!"

As Mo Eversnow stated this stunning declaration, Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. This person wasn't a human? Were they a monster? Or a demon?

Or, was it possible they were an unknown alien race?

But, what was without a doubt was that this person in front of him was extremely strong, and much, much stronger than he was.

Just by looking at him being able to tear apart space to appear, that was something far from what Lin Ming could accomplish. That was the void shifting technique.

“Let’s not bother with some nonsensical banter. I will finish you. Since you ate my primordial epoch spirit root, I will use you to make my medicine instead. The effects shouldn’t be much worse!

As this black-robed figure spoke, Lin Ming felt all of the space around him suddenly shrink and be isolated. Along with the black-robed figure, he arrived in a separate world devoid of everything but shadows.

This was a domain, and also a very powerful domain. Lin Ming and the black-robed man were both completely isolated from the outside world.

In this domain, not only would Lin Ming be suppressed but he wouldn’t even be able to escape.

“This is my Eternal Demon Domain. Once you enter it you will fall under my control. You can forget ever escaping!”

The shadowy figure spoke with supreme confidence. He took out a black scroll and slowly unraveled it. On top of this scroll was a drawing of a black and white landscape. A simple stone bridge was in the center of this drawing, appearing extremely mystical.

Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. He didn’t wait for this shadowy figure to make his move, instead taking the initiative to attack first!

He opened the Heretical God Force to the limit and also revolved the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates. The astral essence he just obtained suddenly erupted from his body as he thrust his spear towards that black-robed man.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Thunder and flame crazily twisted together.

Heavenly Dao Judgment!

Chapter 1349 – Jade Slip Incarnation

Chapter 1349 – Jade Slip Incarnation

…

…

…

As soon as Lin Ming attacked, it was with one of his ultimate attacks!

He was well aware that this black-robed man's techniques and status were all mysteries. Disregarding the extreme sense of danger, just this person's ability to tear through the void allowed Lin Ming to guess that this person's strength was at least at the late Divine Lord realm. And in truth, it was likely even higher than that!

This opponent was extremely dangerous and also had the intention of killing him. It was impossible for Lin Ming to hold back. Even if he went all-out, that still wouldn't be enough!

The power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation fused together in the skies, rumbling through the world. For a time, everything in the heavens turned into a roiling sea of red and purple!

As the black-robed man saw this, he was stunned, "Could this be…"

The black-robed man could clearly feel the aura of the Heavenly Dao Laws coming from this red and purple energy. Adding the sense in front of him, it was exactly the same as the battle array disc he had seen before.

Although the black-robed man hadn't been at the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, he had still looked at the complete set of battle array discs. He had a keen understanding of all the styles and techniques that the geniuses in that tournament used. This was because killing these geniuses was the order issued to him by the Saint God, thus he had to thoroughly understand each person.

And this move, Heavenly Dao Judgment, was one of the startling and wondrous techniques of the First Martial Meeting. It wasn't because of its formidable strength, but because it was a technique created by a young genius, and that genius was Lin Ming!

"A middle Divine Sea cultivation, Heavenly Dao Judgment, and a spear as a weapon… you are Lin Ming!?"

The black-robed man's mind shook. At this time, the billowing thunderfire of Heavenly Dao Judgment had arrived in front of him.

Facing this attack, not only was the black-robed man not panicked at all, but he heartily laughed instead.

"Hahaha! Even such a tiny pearl dares to release brilliance. Just get smashed!"

The black-robed man suddenly raised his scroll, welcoming Lin Ming's Heavenly Dao Judgment.

Bang!

A terrifying explosion recklessly swept outwards. However, the power of this explosion was contained within the black-robed man's Eternal Demon Domain, unable to leak outwards. Finally, it all melted away.

Such a simple movement had blocked Lin Ming's all-out attack. And, the scroll in that figure's hand was a treasure of some unknown rank. Although it looked as if it were made of cloth, it had resisted Lin Ming's complete force, and the black-robed figure had seemed relaxed as he did so.

"Really, you travel so far and wide looking for something only to find it so easily! Lin Ming, I have searched everywhere for you, and you actually delivered yourself to me! I never imagined that you would possess such an exquisite appearance changing technique, one so perfect that even I cannot recognize you!

“But even if you change your appearance it is useless, because you cannot change your techniques. Now, be a good little boy and let me capture you. You should know that I do not fear your strength. I am not afraid to tell you that my strength was originally equal to your kind’s World King master! It is only because of various reasons that my strength sharply fell to the Divine Transformation realm. But now, after several hundred years, I have slowly restored myself back to the middle Holy Lord realm. To me, a genius like you is nothing but an ant. I can pinch you to death with just my hand!”

Middle Holy Lord realm!

Lin Ming’s mind shook. He couldn’t even fight with a late Divine Lord master. As for a middle Holy Lord realm martial artist, that was a character that could easily kill him. Moreover, Lin Ming felt that this black-robed man wasn’t exaggerating his strength at all.

This meant that there was no possibility of resisting him.

However, why would this person’s cultivation drop from the World King boundary to the Divine Transformation realm, and then slowly restore himself to a Holy Lord? Moreover, he even said ‘your kind’s World King master’, meaning that he wasn’t a human to begin with.

“Are you from an alien race?” Lin Ming calmly and clearly said. This was what Mo Eversnow had already speculated earlier.

“Hehe, what if I am, and what if I’m not? In any case, you will die no matter what. After I kill you, I will take your flesh and blood to refine a pill. Once I eat that pill, my cultivation will rise to even greater heights. At the same time, I will have earned a great merit by killing you. I will obtain countless rewards, and then I will also explore your soul and obtain all of your secrets, inheriting your treasures and destiny! With all of that and in addition to my talent, I have a chance that in the future… I might even become a divinity! Hahaha! Even I can become a divinity! What an honor!”

The black-robed man laughed as Lin Ming's mind raced.

Killing him would be a great merit?

What sort of influence would want his life?

The Skydark Holy Lands?

Lin Ming instantly thought of this but then immediately denied it. It was impossible for this black-robed man to serve Tian Mingzi. At the very least, he wasn't Tian Mingzi's underling.

The Skydark Holy Lands were nothing more than a Great World King Holy Land. If this black-robed man really came from the Skydark Holy Lands, then no matter how crazy he was, he still wouldn't say something as ridiculous as becoming a divinity in the future.

Even Lin Ming himself wouldn't publicly proclaim he would become a divinity.

This person's background must be no trifling matter!

Could this be…

Lin Ming already had a faint guess as to what was happening. But, this guess made his entire body turn ice cold.

A year ago he had listened to Empyrean Divine Dream speak of this matter, but Lin Ming never imagined that events would progress so quickly!

Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and took a deep breath, his eyes locked onto the black-robed man. Within Lin Ming's dark eyes, the vague and mysterious appearance of the black-robed man was clearly reflected.

The black-robed man's vision sharpened. His displayed the scroll in his hands, "This is the Witch Tomb Demon Scroll, a wondrous item that can even hold a planet. You should feel honored to be able to die underneath this scroll."

As the black-robed man spoke, he suddenly raised the black scroll in his hands. For a time, the entire world seemed to be absorbed into this divine scroll.

Lin Ming activated the black hole seed in his body, relying on his black hole seed's domain to protect his own mind. He shook, as if he were about to be sucked into this Witch Tomb Demon Scroll at any moment!

Lin Ming didn't panic. Instead, his eyes blazed as he glared at the black-robed man in front of him. He loudly shouted out, "I know who you are! You are a saint, one of the saint race that comes from outside the Divine Realm, someone that stems from one of the other 33 Layered Heavens! The reason you dropped to the Divine Transformation realm was because you passed through the barrier walls that divide the realms with some sort of arcane ability that caused your cultivation to drop!"

Lin Ming's voice was loud and resonant, with harsh and short syllables. The black-robed man stiffened for a moment, revealing a surprised expression.

However, the black-robed man chuckled, appearing as if he didn't care much for Lin Ming's speculations.

"Believe as you like! You'll be nothing but a confused ghost in the end!"

As the black-robed man spoke, he thrust the Witch Tomb Demon Scroll at Lin Ming.

In that moment, Lin Ming's expression was filled with ice-cold decisiveness. He took out a jade slip from his spatial ring. This jade slip shimmered, as if it were carved from the purest ice crystal. Impressively, the aura of Empyrean Divine Dream was sealed within it!

Before Lin Ming left Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Granny Mirage had given him a spatial ring. This was something that Empyrean Divine Dream left to him.

Inside the ring was only a single jade slip. This jade slip was a special talisman that Empyrean Divine Dream gave to Lin Ming and that could only be used once. Lin Ming never imagined he would have to use it so soon.

Could Empyrean Divine Dream have already cultivated to the legendary boundary of being able to faintly foresee the future and avoid disasters? Did she give him this talisman to prevent some inevitable accident from occurring?

Lin Ming didn’t have time to think such fanciful thoughts. He directly threw the jade slip upwards. In the air, this jade slip suddenly transformed into the phantom of a woman. This phantom shared some similarities with Empyrean Divine Dream.

This jade slip, in essence, was refined from a single petal of the divine lotus flower that Empyrean Divine Dream sat upon. She fused 300 years of her cultivation and a trace of her life origin energy into this to create an incarnation.

Although this was an incarnation, because Empyrean Divine Dream was closed up in seclusion helping Frost Dream break through to the Divine Transformation realm, this wisp of an incarnation no longer had any connection to Empyrean Divine Dream. It was not under the direction of Empyrean Divine Dream. Once this battle was over, it would naturally fade away.

Because of this, this incarnation’s attainments in Laws were limited.

Even so, this was an incarnation created by an extreme character like Empyrean Divine Dream. How could a saint that was merely equal to a human middle Holy Lord martial artist possibly resist it?

In the moment that Divine Dream’s incarnation appeared, the black-robed man’s mind quaked. His originally insolent and diabolical smile froze on his face, slowly dimming down as his complexion turned ashen.

“This… this is… this is an Empyrean incarnation! There was an Empyrean that actually refined an incarnation for you!”

The black-robed man was extremely horrified. He froze for a brief moment before spinning around and running away!

But at this moment, a faintly ethereal aura beyond all description came surging outwards. Waves of tumbling smoke appeared with auspicious bursts of divine light shining all over like a fantastical illusion, covering the entire surrounding space. These rays of light were like the sharpest swords, instantly tearing apart the Eternal Demon Domain!

Afterwards, the entirety of the skies were filled with the tune of heavenly music. This song made one feel drunk and mesmerized, forgetting who they were as they basked in euphoria.

This was the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody!

This was the divine song that Frost Dream had played atop the stage of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting!

Clothed in the purest white dress, Divine Dream was the absolute ruler of this space. Although this phantom was only her incarnation, the pressure she released was indescribable. Even Lin Ming, who had been the one to use the jade slip, was alarmed and fearful, much less the black-robed man who was withstanding the full force of this attack!

Divine Dream’s eyes locked onto the black-robed man. “Lin Ming is someone that is under my protection. Since you dare attempt to kill him, in the myriad heavens and countless worlds, there is no one that can save you!”

Divine Dream’s voice faintly contained the majesty of the Great Dao, spreading through the void. In that moment, her words were like the will of a divine god!

In Lin Ming’s impression, Divine Dream was gentle, kind, and mysterious. Usually, Divine Dream restrained her aura, something that made her seem like a mortal woman. Lin Ming had never been exposed to Empyrean Divine Dream’s dignified side before.

Now, with her invincible divine might revealed, it was impossible for anyone to have a single thought of resisting her, even if she were only an incarnation.

At that moment, Divine Dream moved. All of the space within a hundred miles froze. Time came to a standstill and even thoughts were frozen.

Divine Dream's strength gathered, forming a divine sword that chopped downwards!

An absolutely vast power covered the entire area for a hundred miles. With the suppression of the divine dream space added on, this attack was unavoidable!

The black-robed man desperately howled. He grasped the Witch Tomb Demon Scroll and brought it smashing into that sword!

Ca!

With a light sound, that Witch Tomb Demon Scroll was pierced through by Divine Dream's sword. Then, that sword continued thrusting into the black-robed man's head, cutting down at his spiritual sea!

The black-robed man's body shook. His gaze froze and he stood motionless. His eyes lost focus and turned dull.

Lin Ming was a thousand feet away. With his understanding of the Divine Dream Law, he had been able to see what had happened. Divine Dream's sword hadn't destroyed the Witch Tomb Demon Scroll nor had it injured the black-robed man's body. Rather, it had penetrated past his mortal shell and sundered his soul in half!

This was a truly terrifying attack!

Chapter 1350 – Chased by Tian Mingzi

Chapter 1350 – Chased by Tian Mingzi

…

…

…

The black-robed man's body fell down. The Eternal Demon Domain he formed also completely disintegrated, vanishing into nothing.

Instantly killed with a single sword strike?

Lin Ming sucked in a breath of air. Empyrean Divine Dream was far too strong. Just a wisp of her incarnation was able to instantly kill the mysterious black-robed man without the least bit of difficulty. Her enemy wasn't even given the ability to resist.

With a thought, Lin Ming put away the black-robed man's body.

This corpse likely involved many secrets. Lin Ming naturally couldn't leave it be.

Lin Ming respectfully bowed towards Divine Dream's phantom, saying, "I thank Empyrean Divine Dream for this life-saving graciousness. This junior will etch this favor in his mind."

"There is no need to be so formal. The strength saved within this incarnation can only be used for a single strike. Afterwards, it will collapse and fade away. Your growth is destined to withstand countless tribulations and trials. It is impossible for me to help you through all of them. Your future must rely on your own efforts."

As Empyrean Divine Dream spoke, the phantom violently shook, finally turning into a wisp of divine dream energy that scattered into the wind, leaving behind nothing but a single crystal clear flower petal that gently wafted down.

Lin Ming caught this flower petal in his hands. He only felt as if he had grabbed an ice crystal, translucent and shimmering, cold to the bone.

Empyrean Divine Dream's incarnation had disappeared far too quickly. As for Lin Ming's speculations, he had no time to speak them to Empyrean Divine Dream. But in truth, this wouldn't necessarily have been useful. Empyrean Divine Dream's main body was deep in seclusion and had already cut off contact with this incarnation.

"Time is of the essence. We must leave!" Mo Eversnow said.

"I got it!"

Without pause, Lin Ming directly launched his movement technique, flying towards the lower realms transmission array. In the brief moment when Empyrean Divine Dream appeared, he was unable to see through the black-robed man's true identity.

If he really was from the saint race, then that was truly dangerous!

His whereabouts had already been exposed, and not only had the black-robed man not managed to kill him, but he was killed in return. Once the saint race discovered this, they would likely hunt him down to eliminate all potential informants!

With Lin Ming's current condition, wanting to resist the saint race was like an ant facing an elephant.

…………..

Lin Ming's suspicions were correct. However, the one who wanted to kill him was not the saint race, but Tian Mingzi.

Ka ka ka!

With the sound of cracking jade, Tian Mingzi watched as a jade slip with a demon king mark cracked in half not too far away from him.

"Mm!?"

Tian Mingzi was shocked. "Black Demon died!?"

No one was clearer than Tian Mingzi on who the black-robed man was. He was one of the spies that the saint race had sent to infiltrate the Divine Realm at a great cost; his status was incomparably sensitive. If certain people learned that Tian Mingzi was cooperating with the saint race, he would die without a grave!

This was a crime that would bring the judgment of the universe down on him; Tian Mingzi simply couldn't afford this.

And if the black-robed man died, then there was an extremely high chance that his status had been exposed.

Tian Mingzi's complexion turned incomparably gloomy. He closed his eyes and then suddenly opened them. He originally thought that with the black-robed man's strength, he alone would be enough to end the battle. He never imagined that such an incident would occur. Could that youth who obtained the primordial epoch spirit root have some great figure standing behind them? Otherwise, with the black-robed man's strength, it was impossible for him to be killed.

Tian Mingzi hesitated for a moment. If there truly was a top master standing behind this youth, then he might not necessarily be able to deal with him.

"I must take the risk. If I don't take action now and this secret is revealed, then it will be difficult for me to take shelter anywhere in the Divine Realm!"

Tian Mingzi decided to move. The black-robed man was too important; he needed to silence all witnesses and bury his crimes. Otherwise, his only choice would be to abandon the foundation he had been laying down on the Demondawn Great World for the last 50,000 years.

With a hand tearing through the fabric of space, Tian Mingzi grasped his devil sword and stepped into the void.

This sword was eight feet long, longer than the height of an adult male. The sword edge was cold and keen, with the design of a vicious demon engraved on it. It looked incomparably dreadful.

In just several dozen breaths of time, Tian Mingzi passed through a space-time door to an area thousands of miles away.

Space shifting wasn't something that could be instantly done, but required some time. Moreover, the area Lin Ming was at was not the central mainland of Demondawn Great World, but a distant star called Skybreak Planet.

Tian Mingzi knew the location of this planet. But, to accurately find where the black-robed man died would take some time.

……………………

In the quiet skies, layers of clouds hung low to the earth. Strong winds billowed, as if a heavy deluge were about to pour down.

In the area that Lin Ming had already departed from, a black sword cut through the void, tearing apart the surrounding space.

A man in black suddenly stepped out. This person was Tian Mingzi.

Origin energy fluctuations still remained in the skies. Tian Mingzi could clearly feel the aura that the black-robed man left behind.

"He really died… even his corpse is gone."

The disappearance of the corpse left Tian Mingzi feeling even more restless. He let out a long breath, his complexion still gloomy and dim.

“There is the aura of Black Demon, the aura of the youth who captured the primordial epoch spirit root, and also the aura of a master, but that has already faded away. This feeling… could it be an incarnation?”

Tian Mingzi wasn’t a stranger to incarnations. Some top masters would occasionally create incarnations to protect their descendants, but creating one cost a certain amount of their cultivation. Normally, they wouldn’t be freely manufactured.

An incarnation would consume at least several hundred years of cultivation, and it would also disappear after a single use. Thus, those juniors that could obtain an incarnation created by a master were definitely of a high status.

Tian Mingzi couldn’t help but reconsider Lin Ming’s status and background.

“Less than 60 years of age, and can kill six Divine Lord powerhouse. It’s reasonable for him to come from a large influence, and likely even one greater than the Skydark Holy Lands. If this was just the matter of the primordial epoch spirit root, then I wouldn’t pursue this matter against such an influence. But now, since it involves the saints, I have no choice but to slay everyone involved, no matter what troubles I must incur. Luckily, this top master only sent out an incarnation and not their true self, thus giving me the chance to kill those involved.”

Tian Mingzi closed his eyes. In that moment, he seemed to blend together with the world, becoming one.

“Omniscience Lucidity Art!”

Tian Mingzi’s sense swept out like a tide. In that moment, everything within a thousand miles fell into Tian Mingzi’s vision, continuing to expand.

………….

In an open mountain valley, there was a giant white altar. This altar was 50 miles wide. A mortal horse would have to gallop for hours to run a circle around it.

This altar was the Skybreak World's lower realms transmission array.

The altar belonged to a local eighth-grade sect of Skybreak Planet – the Skybreak Sect. For a sect to be named after the planet, this meant that this Skybreak Sect was the number one sect of this planet.

"All right, you will soon pass through the void. Let me warn you in advance that during the transmission process you will encounter all sorts of dangerous space turbulence. This is an extremely risky endeavor. If you are to die at that time then don't blame us, you can only blame yourself for being weak. Are we clear?"

On the altar, an Elder of the Skybreak Sect traced his beard as he spoke. There were seven or eight martial artists standing in front of him, most of them at the Divine Lord realm as well as two at the Divine Transformation realm. The worst one was Lin Ming; he was only at the middle Divine Sea.

This Skybreak Sect Elder's words were mostly meant for Lin Ming. To fly from the Divine Realm to the lower realms was far more dangerous than flying from the lower realms to the Divine Realm.

This was because the space of the Divine Realm was incomparably vast and it was also like a beacon that exuded a faint guiding strength of the Heavenly Dao Laws. For a martial artist to fly from the lower realms to the Divine Realm was far smoother.

But to return to the lower realms was to go against this strength, like swimming against a rapid current. There were many dangers involved. In the eyes of this Skybreak Sect Elder, for a Divine Sea realm martial artist to return to the lower realms, there would be nine chances of dying and once chance of living. However, Lin Ming had already paid double the amount of violet sun crystals, and the Skybreak Sect Elder certainly wouldn't reject such a rich offer. To say it plainly, whether Lin Ming lived or died wasn't his problem at all. All that mattered was that he had his fee of violet sun crystals in hand.

"We understand, just hurry up!"

Many people were in a hurry. There were many matters they had to process in the lower realms and they weren't interested in listening to the nonsense of this old man.

"Mm, then I wish you a safe and successful journey."

The Skybreak Sect Elder slowly went to start the transmission array. As Lin Ming stood atop the altar, he let out a long breath. He was about to leave Demondawn Great World. Once he did, there would be far fewer troubles.

The Sky Spill Planet could guarantee him absolute safety. And once he returned to the Divine Realm, he could find a safe area and hide his identity while he looked for a chance to report his findings to Empyrean Divine Dream. Whether or not his guesses had been right, whether or not Empyrean Divine Dream believed him, or whether Tian Mingzi was connected to this matter at all, the likely outcome was that Tian Mingzi would inevitably be focused on by Empyrean Divine Dream. At that time, his days would not pass peacefully.

Once that happened, Tian Mingzi would no longer have the chance to move against him. In fact, if Lin Ming's speculations about Tian Mingzi were correct, Tian Mingzi would simply be killed off.

As the transmission array was just about to start, Lin Ming suddenly felt his mind turn cold. A terrifying sense dropped down from the skies, sweeping over his body!

This sense was like the gaze of a devil, clearly observing him from head to toe without missing the slightest detail!

"Damn!"

Lin Ming was very clear that the person who sent out such a terrifying sense was definitely a Great World King level character. In other words, the true master of the Skydark Holy Lands – Tian Mingzi!

“He’s coming, this is too fast!”

Lin Ming’s appearance changing technique wasn’t cultivated to a high enough level. Although he could change his appearance, he couldn’t yet change his aura. When he killed the black-robed man, he would inevitably have left his aura in that area. Moreover, his cultivation was clearly at the middle Divine Sea realm – this wasn’t something he could conceal! If a middle Divine Sea martial artist was going to the lower realms, their goal was likely to flee.

With all of this combined together, in addition to the fact that the transmission array wasn’t too far off, Tian Mingzi had definitely discovered him!

Lin Ming felt as if his body had dropped into an ice bath.

“Quick! Hurry up!”

Lin Ming shouted in his heart. At this time, he didn’t possess Empyrean Divine Dream’s jade slip anymore. If Tian Mingzi caught up to him, all that awaited him was death!

That Skybreak Sect Elder was slowly putting violet sun crystals into the transmission array. As Lin Ming saw this, he really wanted to take his spear and stab the old man in the face!

However, the Skybreak Sect Elder finally placed down all of the violet sun crystals. But, just as he was about to start the transmission array, a voice sounded out in his mind.

“Stop!”

Chapter 1351 – Forcing Through the Void

Chapter 1351 – Forcing Through the Void

…

…

…

The sudden voice startled the Skybreak Sect Elder. He simply didn't know where this voice was coming from, "Who is it?"

"I am the Great World King of the Demondawn Great World. Immediately stop the revolution of the transmission array!" Tian Mingzi's voice seemed as if it passed through layers and layers of the void, directly entering the spiritual sea of the Skybreak Sect Elder.

"This is… I…"

The Skybreak Sect Elder was dumbfounded. The Demondawn Great World's Great World King!?

To him, that was an utterly legendary character!

Although he didn't know whether this was true or false, from just this terrifying pressure alone, it was absolutely a top master. How could he dare to ignore the order of such a master?

The Skybreak Sect Elder immediately stopped the activation of the transmission array.

As Lin Ming saw this, his complexion changed.

The Skybreak Sect Elder glared at Lin Ming, simply not bothering to explain anything to him.

If he told others that he had stopped just because someone ordered him to, that would be a tremendous loss of face. In any case, he simply didn't care about a junior like Lin Ming.

Lin Ming grimaced. He was aware that Tian Mingzi's long distance sound transmission had reached this Skybreak Sect Elder!

With Tian Mingzi's methods, from where he was to here, he might need just 10 breaths of time to cross the void and arrive. It might even be less than that!

In other words, he had less than 10 breaths of time to escape here!

With so little time, Lin Ming wouldn't waste his time trying to persuade this old man to open the transmission array. And even if he tried, this old man definitely wouldn't listen to him.

One didn't need to be a genius to know whether someone would listen to the words of a Great World King or a middle Divine Sea realm boy.

Woosh!

The Phoenix Blood Spear leapt into Lin Ming's hand. In an instant, Lin Ming opened the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates and released the Heretical God Force to the limit.

Behind Lin Ming, the phantom of the Heretical God Tree began to appear. He only had 10 breaths of time. In 10 breaths of time, he had to defeat this Skybreak Sect Elder and forcefully activate the transmission array.

As for this Skybreak Sect Elder, although his foundation was a mess beyond wobbly, for better or worse he was still a Divine Lord realm master. Lin Ming had to invest his all-out strength in this attack!

The sudden change caused all the nearby martial artists to be surprised. This young man, just what sort of mental illness did he have?

"Brat, what are you doing?"

"Shit, you're crazy, stop scaring us all…"

A Divine Transformation realm martial artist cursed. However, his voice slowly faded away. Was this terrifying aura really something that a Divine Sea realm martial artist could release? And this solid foundation, this deep and vast true essence… this was definitely an unrivalled genius amongst Divine Sea realm martial artists!

Everyone looked at Lin Ming; even the Skybreak Sect Divine Lord Elder was shocked. This brat, could he actually be attacking him and thinking of forcefully opening the transmission array?

A middle Divine Sea boy actually dared to attack him? Was he crazy?

"Hah!"

Lin Ming roared, not holding anything back. His spear suddenly thrust forwards. From within his inner world, the black hole seed was shot out directly.

Eternal Darkness!

A black hole dark star of the universe was able to attract all matter and was heavy to an incredible degree. If a sun were struck by a black hole, that sun would be completely destroyed!

Destroying a planet was something an Empyrean could achieve. But as for destroying a sun, that was something only a True Divinity could accomplish. Moreover, that was only a possibility.

Lin Ming's black hole seed hurtled towards the Skybreak Sect Elder.

"Since you want to die so badly, let me help you along!"

The Skybreak Sect Elder wasn't an idiot. Tian Mingzi had sent him a long distance sound transmission and ordered him to stop this transmission array, and then this youth had attacked him, wanting to forcefully activate the array. It was clear that Tian Mingzi was coming for this youth, to capture or even kill him.

The Skybreak Sect Elder didn't know why Lin Ming was being chased by Tian Mingzi, nor did he know how Lin Ming had escaped Tian Mingzi's grasp and was just a step away from fleeing to the lower realms. But, what he was absolutely clear on was that if he weren't attending this transmission array today, then this boy really might have run away.

This was a golden opportunity for him to perform a valuable service!

Just what sort of character was Tian Mingzi? Within the entire Demondawn Great World, besides Demondawn Heavenly Palace, he was the sovereign king of this world! A normal Holy Lord of a Holy Land wouldn't have the chance to see Tian Mingzi. If he could help him with something, then that would definitely be a great benefit to him!

He didn't think that he would be able to rely on this favor to break through into the Holy Lord realm, but he would at least be able to live for several thousand years longer. How could he refuse such a wonderful thing?

Moreover, Lin Ming was extremely young. Although his aura was powerful and he seemed to be an unrivalled genius, the difference in cultivation was simply too great. To block him was a piece of cake. This was nothing but a giant meat pie that had fallen from the skies.

He wildly laughed, "Hahahaha! A little bead like you actually dares to struggle with the splendor of the sun and moon! Seven Star Battle Revolution!"

Behind the Skybreak Sect Elder, seven stars immediately appeared. These seven stars arranged themselves into the shape of the compass. With the seven stars shining, the old man's aura began to quietly rise, as if he were absorbing power from the starlight of the highest heavens.

A cyan sword leapt into the Skybreak Sect Elder's hand. All of the starlight completely gathered onto the blade of the sword.

"This sword is called Seven Stars. With a cut of this sword, stars revolve and seasons change!"

The cyan sword swung out, gathering the power of the seven stars and brightly shining atop Lin Ming's black hole seed.

But in that moment, a brutal and crazy vortex of energy appeared around the black hole seed. That power of starlight was twisted to pieces by this strength before being swallowed!

The black hole seed tore through the endless starlight before crashing into the Skybreak Sect Elder!

"What!?"

The Skybreak Elder was shocked. One of his greatest finishing moves was broken so easily. How could this be!?

He rapidly drew backwards, a curtain of blazing blue starlight appearing around him. This was clearly his protective technique. However, underneath Lin Ming's attack, this defense simply had no ability to resist. It was helplessly twisted apart and swallowed up by the black hole seed!

All energy, all matter, nothing could stop the swallowing of the black hole seed.

Ka ka ka!

As the curtain of starlight was twisted apart, the Skybreak Elder put forth his final strength and slashed his sword down on the black hole seed. A powerful backlash rolled upwards, causing the Skybreak Elder to spit out a mouthful of blood and fly backwards!

As the other martial artists in the transmission array saw this, all of their eyes went as wide as goggles, none of them able to speak.

Was this young man really just a Divine Sea realm martial artist?

Some people even suspected that Lin Ming was hiding his cultivation. But as they looked at his attacks and the aura he used, he truly seemed like a middle Divine Sea realm martial artist!

Without enough time to respond, Lin Ming's figure had already flashed and appeared near the transmission array. He pulled out three nine sun jades from his spatial ring, stimulating their energy to the limit, hastily pouring all of it into the transmission array.

Hu – hu – hu – !

Underneath the massive influx of energy, the transmission array wildly revolved, seeming as if it would explode soon!

As the martial artists on the altar saw this, their hearts went cold. In order to speed up the transmission array, this young man had overloaded it past its limits. This was simply a death wish!

To descend from the Divine Realm to the lower realms through a transmission array was filled with incomparable dangers. Even in a well-ordered and meticulous transmission array, there was already a chance that an accident would occur, much less with a transmission array that was going haywire like this. Not only would the space storms be more violent and turbulent, but if the transmission array was destroyed, the person still inside would truly die without a grave!

"He's insane!"

"Let's leave. I don't want to get caught up in this mess and die with him!"

The other martial artists weren't sure what was happening. They simply didn't even know why Lin Ming had fought the Skybreak Sect Elder and why he was going so crazy. None of them wanted to mess with this rabid dog.

Then, the seven or eight martial artists all flew down from the transmission array. This was even better for Lin Ming. Like this, he could save more time.

Lin Ming stepped onto the transmission array and a boundless energy erupted. A divine light shot into the sky, piercing through the void. Lin Ming shot upwards, entering the infinitely turbulent space flows!

Just five breaths of time after Lin Ming escaped into the transmission array, a long black sword stabbed through the void, forming a door in space. The black-clothed Tian Mingzi appeared, like the arrival of a death reaper.

As Tian Mingzi appeared, all of those martial artists that planned to go to the lower realms were shocked silly. Who was this? Why was his aura so formidable?

Facing Tian Mingzi, they even found it difficult to breathe. The pressure he gave off was simply too great.

Tian Mingzi didn’t bother with these people. He looked towards the transmission array that was still shining with light, and then his face turned colder than absolute zero.

“You think you can escape me by entering the transmission array?”

Tian Mingzi subconsciously clenched his fists as if he wanted to crush Lin Ming’s bones within them, “If you ran away in such a hurry, then the incarnation that expert gave you must only be able to be used once… if so, then there’s nothing for me to be cautious about.”

Tian Mingzi closed his eyes, his sense sweeping through the runes that were still swirling around the transmission array. These runes were solved by Tian Mingzi, one at a time.

The Skydark Holy Lands’ inheritances in the Space and Time Laws were extremely profound. Just Nether Limitless himself was able to form four spatial mirror image avatars. And as Nether Limitless’s teacher, Tian Mingzi’s comprehension of the Space Laws had reached an unbelievable level.

He thrust out his palms, grasping the void above the transmission array. A deep and vast energy surged out from his body and raced into the turbulent space flows.

This energy formed a massive hand in the turbulent space flows before coming hurtling forwards!

Tian Mingzi's actions weren't conventional by any standard. If he were to forcefully tear apart the void to enter and not open a proper spatial channel through a transmission array, he would inevitably encounter the sweeping strength of the space storm. This power of space was something that not even a Great World King could live through.

Rumble rumble rumble.

The crazy and brutal space storm tore into that black hand, constantly wearing it down and weakening it.

A spatial transmission from the Divine Realm to the lower realms reached unimaginable speeds In just five breaths of time, Lin Ming had already flown out to the far off distance.

"Lin Ming! Tian Mingzi is reaching across the void to attack you!"

Mo Eversnow's voice boomed in Lin Ming's mind.

"What?!"

Lin Ming's mind shook. Tian Mingzi had already reached such a degree? He actually possessed the ability to attack him while he was in a transmission array?

Lin Ming turned around to see a massive black hand chasing straight after him from a distant part of the spatial channel. This black hand broke through the barriers of countless space storms, but its strength was also constantly being weakened.

Chapter 1352 – Identity Exposed

Chapter 1352 – Identity Exposed

…

…

…

Tian Mingzi was already a Great World King powerhouse, and a peak Great World King master at that. He was very close to becoming a half-step Empyrean.

Such a character had an immeasurable disparity with Lin Ming. His attack could instantly turn Lin Ming into smoke and ash!

"Lin Ming, be careful!"

Mo Eversnow anxiously said. At this time, behind Lin Ming, that great hand was roiling forwards with the sound of rumbling thunder, rapidly rushing ahead. Facing this massive hand, Lin Ming was like a tiny bird flying away from an avalanche; he was simply nothing at all.

He absolutely could not contend with this!

Lin Ming was crystal clear that trying to block this attack with his own strength was impossible!

That meant that the only path he had left was to allow the surrounding space storms destroy it. Even the strength of a Great World King didn't reach the level of ignoring the rules of space.

Lin Ming took a deep breath as energy erupted from his body once more. He suddenly changed directions, flushing towards an area of incomparably chaotic space turbulence!

In that moment, even the usually calm Mo Eversnow paled. In the chaos of the vast space channel, an endless power of space formed massive violent space currents that were trillions of miles long. These tremendous currents lay far in the distance, like the swirling arms of a galaxy. Once one entered these unimaginable space currents, they would encounter the endless crazy power of infinite space storms cutting upon them like unlimited blades. This force could even cut a planet to pieces!

Just how dangerous was it to break into these turbulent space flows? With Lin Ming's strength, a single misstep would leave him beyond redemption!

Mo Eversnow's eyes sharpened. Without the slightest sound, she fused her divine soul with Lin Ming's body, using her comprehension of Space Laws to help Lin Ming avoid any mistakes to the best of her ability.

To pass through this turbulent space flow was like a mortal walking across a steel wire suspended high in the air. They could have successfully passed it a thousand times, but they weren't even allowed to make a single mistake!

Rumble rumble rumble!

A terrifying current fell on top of Lin Ming. The speed of this turbulence reached unimaginable degrees, its impact causing space to violently shake. This sort of shaking could easily shatter a mountain range!

At that moment, Lin Ming felt a powerful force attacking his insides, as if it wanted to rip his body to pieces! This was not a frontal attack, but only a slight scratch. Even so, this sort of impact could even exterminate an ordinary Divine Lord powerhouse!

Peng!

Lin Ming's protective true essence shattered like a glass wall being struck by a giant steel ball!

Gate of Death – open!

Lin Ming fiercely grit his teeth and directly opened the Gate of Death. The Gate of Death was located in Lin Ming's spiritual sea and was like a valve. Once the Gate of Death opened, all of Lin Ming's astral essence would flood out, erupting with an amount a hundred times greater!

Lin Ming currently only had true essence. But with true essence and astral essence fusing into his body now, the intensity and strength of his body instantly rose to incredible heights. By relying on his formidable mortal body, he forcefully withstood the impact from the power of space.

Roar – !

With the resonant cry of a dragon, the phantom of a True Dragon appeared behind Lin Ming. Lin Ming was like an Azure Dragon swimming through the wild seas, rapidly soaring through the world.

Putting aside Mo Eversnow, just Lin Ming himself had an incredibly high understanding into the Space Laws.

Empyrean Divine Seal was someone who reached large success in the Space and Time Laws. The essence of his primal chaos black hole was to seal away even gods into a singularity of space and time, reaching the boundary of an eternal seal.

During Lin Ming's year and a half deep sleep in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, his Space and Time Laws had reached perfection of the fifth level Concept.

Cross the void!

Seeing a giant space current fall onto him like an endless river, Lin Ming forcefully twisted his body and abruptly passed through a gap in this space current. The massive backlash caused Lin Ming's body to shake as he spat out a mouthful of blood.

And after that was the giant hand Tian Mingzi had sent out. At this time, this hand was already trillions upon trillions of miles away from Tian Mingzi. No matter how powerful or skilled Tian Mingzi was, or how high his comprehension of the Space Laws was, it was impossible for him to manipulate this hand to nimbly avoid the space storms.

Bang!

A space storm collided with the giant hand. Against this force that could instantly smash apart a million mountain ranges, even a Great World King wasn't able to withstand this!

Luckily, Tian Mingzi already had some response. However, there was not enough time. With a terrifying explosive sound, this hand was torn in half!

Energy crazily vented outwards. The massive hand violently shook before suddenly dimming down.

Immeasurably far away, Tian Mingzi shook and his complexion paled. His right hand trembled as if a snake had bitten it and a trace of blood flowed down from his fingertips.

All of this fell into the eyes of the surrounding people.

They looked at Tian Mingzi, disbelief thick in their eyes. Such a great person was actually injured?

How had he been injured?

Although these people didn't know what his status was, they knew that he was undoubtedly a World King level powerhouse; this pressure they felt could not be wrong.

If such a person were to rush here all in order to capture a junior who fled through a transmission array, by all reasoning that should be easy, so how could he have been injured?

Before they could react, Tian Mingzi's body shook once more. At that moment, blood vessels burst open on his hand as blood spewed out.

The true essence hand he sent out had struck a space current a second time. That half remaining energy was also completely torn apart!

At this time, within the space channel, Lin Ming had completely rid himself of Tian Mingzi's giant hand. The terrifying explosion of energy was like endless fireworks that detonated behind Lin Ming. Lin Ming's entire body was covered in thunder and flame, like a meteor in the deep night. Wrapped in this fiery flame and lightning, he rushed out from the space storm!

He had escaped!

Lin Ming's entire body was covered in blood and he didn't relax in the slightest. Although he had escaped Tian Mingzi's chase so far, he had penetrated into a space storm to do so. If he wanted to return to his original space tunnel, he would have to pay a considerable price.

At this time, because Lin Ming had repeatedly passed through gaps in the space storm and was also affected by the exploding energies, his organs had been tremendously injured. If it weren't for the support of his body transformation technique, he would have been grievously wounded and vomiting blood. If he lost his combat strength in this space storm, his fate could be imagined!

"In crossing the void this time, you still have to continue onwards for several hours!"

Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, Mo Eversnow spoke out. She had experience going to the lower realms from the Divine Realm.

"That's a long time..." Lin Ming clenched his teeth and swallowed down a pill. Even if Tian Mingzi wasn't chasing him, this would still be a difficult struggle.

……………………

On Skybreak Planet, Tian Mingzi looked at his injured hand. His hand had been as beautiful and clear as the finest jade, but now many blood vessels had ruptured, causing blood to leak out. His hand now seemed a bit disturbing and gloomy.

At this time, Tian Mingzi coldly sneered. He coldly spat out a single word, “Good.” This caused everyone to be even more confused. All of them fell into a silent panic, too afraid to say a single word.

“What a young hero. You risk the dangers of the violent space turbulence to avoid me chasing you. Your actions are truly bold and courageous, but this makes me even more unable to let you go…”

Tian Mingzi lifted his hand. Without knowing whether this was happiness or anger, everyone in the surroundings began to retreat backwards. They could feel Tian Mingzi emitting a faint killing intent.

“You…”

Tian Mingzi darkly said. With a wave of his right hand, the body of the severely wounded Skybreak Sect Elder flew into Tian Mingzi’s grasp, held by the throat.

In that instant, the Skybreak Sect Elder’s face turned ashen. “F-forgive me, Senior Skydark World King, please calm your anger. This lowly fool is useless and was unable to stop him, I contributed as much as I could…”

The old man quickly explained. He could also feel the killing intent rolling off from Tian Mingzi. With Tian Mingzi’s status, killing him was the same as killing an ant.

“Sky… Skydark World King!?”

Everyone in the surroundings was shocked as they heard the old man speak this name.

They had originally guessed that Tian Mingzi was a World King level character, but they never thought he would turn out to be the Great World King of the Demondawn Great World!

Looking at the entire Divine Realm, Tian Mingzi was a peak World King existence!

Such a character was absolutely not a figure that people of their status could ever come into contact with.

Looking at the Skybreak Sect Elder, Tian Mingzi smiled, happily saying. “I know you made a contribution, but… I want you to make one more. I want information on that youth.”

“Yes… yes… I will tell you…”

The Skybreak Sect Elder hastily nodded, his voice trembling. But before he could continue speaking, he felt Tian Mingzi’s hand tighten on his neck. With a severe pain transmitting through his body, there was a light cracking sound as his spine was shattered by Tian Mingzi!

“There is no need for you to speak. I will examine you myself.”

Still smiling, Tian Mingzi’s soul force broke into the Skybreak Sect Elder’s spiritual sea, brutally scanning through the old man’s memories.

Soul searching technique!

The information that could be described with words was limited in the end; it naturally couldn’t compare to the nuanced detail from a soul search.

But as Tian Mingzi saw Lin Ming’s fight with the old man from before he forcefully entered the void, he was suddenly shocked.

The move that Lin Ming used, Eternal Darkness, how could Tian Mingzi not know what that was? He had watched the entire Divine Realm First Martial Meeting finals with his own eyes.

“Middle Divine Sea realm cultivation, that strange energy black hole, a spear-using martial artist, how could this be…”

Tian Mingzi’s blood red pupils flashed with a brilliant light. “He is Lin Ming!”

Lin Ming…

Tian Mingzi’s eyebrows shot up. Lin Ming’s status was special. If he wanted to kill Lin Ming, he would definitely arouse a great deal of trouble. Once his role in that was revealed, that too was something he wouldn’t be able to shoulder.

Moreover, because of the saint race’s orders, he had planned to make his move in secret. But now, the entire situation had become a chaotic mess. The saint race spy had actually been killed by Lin Ming!

Tian Mingzi didn’t know whether or not Lin Ming realized the status of the saint race spy he killed, but what he was absolutely sure of was that the corpse of that spy was taken away by Lin Ming!

Once Lin Ming gave this corpse to Empyrean Divine Dream or Empyrean Vast Universe, the consequences would be dire!

“I have to… I have to kill Lin Ming!”

This thought flashed through Tian Mingzi’s mind. And, the moment that Lin Ming reached the lower realms was the best chance for Tian Mingzi to attack!

Chapter 1353 – Sky Spill Planet

Chapter 1353 – Sky Spill Planet

…

…

…

"Sky… Skydark World King, you… you…"

Near Skybreak Sect's transmission array, there were several Skybreak Sect disciples as well as the seven or eight martial artists waiting for the transmission array. They had all borne witness to Tian Mingzi killing the Skybreak Sect Elder and then searching his soul!

At this time, they were all horrified. In their eyes, Tian Mingzi was nothing but a cruel and malicious demon, someone who killed without batting an eye, and doing so without rhyme or reason.

Tian Mingzi looked at everyone around him, his complexion indifferent as he said, "I'm sorry. You have all seen something you shouldn't have."

Tian Mingzi chasing after Lin Ming was an extremely important matter. If this was revealed, he would definitely be embroiled in a great deal of trouble. If they investigated into this, they would likely uncover his collusion with the saints. If this happened, then he would die without a doubt!

Tian Mingzi naturally wouldn't allow something like this to happen. Even if these people around him didn't know of Lin Ming's status, he still wouldn't allow any of them to remain alive.

"You… you…!"

Hearing Tian Mingzi's words, everyone turned pale.

Although martial artists were strong, that didn't necessarily mean they were brave. When facing death, they were even more afraid, because compared to a mortal, their lives were much more wonderful and long.

"Run!"

Several martial artists cried out in panic, immediately turning tail to escape!

They all used their ultimate trump cards. Some use mystical escape talismans and some even burnt their blood essence. Without regard to the cost, they desperately tried to flee!

All of them escaped in different directions. But in the face of a Great World King, there was simply no chance for any of them to escape.

"If you wish to blame something, blame your luck for being bad."

In that moment, Tian Mingzi's aura erupted as he shot out hundreds of black energy swords. The speed of these energy swords was fast beyond belief. The dozen plus people around the transmission array were all instantly pierced through by these energy swords, cut into countless pieces of meat.

These dozen plus people all died on the spot!

Blood rained down along with bits and pieces of flesh. Tian Mingzi stood in this rain of blood, his body emitting an invisible force field. As these drops of blood and flesh approached him, they were automatically pushed aside.

At this time, Tian Mingzi was wearing a voluminous black robe. His face was pale white and his eyes were a deep scarlet red. When looking upon him in this hail of blood, he resembled a demon amongst demons!

“This is truly a shameful matter. I want to kill Lin Ming, but I can’t even sense him when he knocks on my gate. Not just that, but he stole the primordial epoch spirit root, and even my alliance with the saint race was discovered by him.”

Tian Mingzi mumbled to himself. At this time, some people on the planet noticed something unusual occurring.

“What’s going on? Are people fighting?”

Tian Mingzi’s vision turned icy and he coldly snorted. A monstrous demonic energy surged forth from his body, soaring into the skies and causing dark billowing clouds to appear. These dark clouds were heavy and gloomy, as if infinite demons were gathered within them.

Heaven and earth origin energy roared. Strong winds recklessly surged, like an apocalyptic scene.

“What!?”

“Heaven and earth origin energy is being stirred up?”

Skybreak Sect’s martial artists were startled; this wasn’t a natural occurrence.

As they were about to fly out and investigate, at this time, an invisible space covered all of them, enveloping the entirety of Skybreak Sect.

The world outside was completely isolated!

“How is this…!?”

The martial artists that flew into the sky all fell down, an indescribably bleak feeling drowning them.

“Is an unrivalled powerhouse planning to exterminate our sect?”

This thought flashed through the hearts of many people. And then, they knew nothing at all.

Tian Mingzi had used his own domain, a domain completely similar to the black-robed saint spy's – the Eternal Demon Domain.

Beneath this domain, everyone was isolated.

Tian Mingzi deprived everyone of consciousness but he didn't kill them. This wasn't because of some kind-hearted benevolence, but because he didn't want to make this matter too big. If a peak eighth-grade sect was instantly exterminated like this, that would arouse far too much attention.

"Lin Ming, if he flew to the lower realms, he should have returned to his homeland of the Sky Spill Planet."

Lin Ming's information appeared in Tian Mingzi's mind. The Sky Spill Planet was a tiny insignificant world of the lower realms, a planet that was slightly larger than average. If it weren't for the saint race's orders to assassinate Lin Ming, making him research all the available information on Lin Ming, he simply wouldn't know about such a tiny world of the lower realms like the Sky Spill Planet.

"If Lin Ming returned to the lower realms then he should have gone to the Sky Spill Planet. With his cultivation, then underneath the suppression of the Heavenly Dao Laws, returning to his home world is his limit. It is impossible for him to pass through the infinite space storms to go to other worlds. It is impossible for him to escape my grasp."

Tian Mingzi gently smiled as he pulled out a golden jade slip. This jade slip was as large as a book. As he sunk his thoughts into it, a celestial starmap of the 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm and innumerable worlds of the lower realms appeared in his mind. As long as he knew the coordinates of the Sky Spill Planet, then with his strength he would be able to pass through the transmission array and arrive at the Sky Spill Planet in two to four hours.

Tian Mingzi’s lips slowly curved up in a dreadful smile. With his strength and with Lin Ming contained on a single planet, wanting to find him would be as easy as catching a turtle in a jar.

“You have simply chosen the best tomb for yourself. The land of your home world is indeed a suitable place for you to be buried…”

Tian Mingzi’s words were like the whispers of a cackling demon. With a wave of his sleeves, a nine sun jade flew into the energy core of the transmission array. In the next instant, a divine light radiated outwards and Tian Mingzi vanished into the transmission array.

…........

At this time, a hundred quintillion miles away, separated by the vast and infinite void of space, there was a blood red plain. The ends of this plain extended outwards into a thousand mile long mountain range.

This mountain range had a name, Tragic Death Mountain. It constantly exuded demonic energy all year round.

With the loud whinnies of vicious beasts, a team of winged flood dragons landed at the ends of this plain. These winged flood dragons appeared extraordinary, and there was a crowd of heroic and dashingly spirited martial artists on their backs!

Of these people, the one leading them was a tall middle-aged man. In addition, the most standout among them was a man and a woman.

This pair was tall with extraordinary makings. The man was handsome and graceful and the woman was beautiful like an ethereal fairy. They were the Prince and Princess of a Divine Kingdom from the Holy Demon Continent. They could both be called proud children of the heavens!

“Tragic Death Mountain, we’ve finally arrived for our training. We must kill to our heart’s’ content this time!”

The handsome youth excitedly said. He grasped the long sword in his hand, a confident expression on his face.

Every year there were many martial artists that entered this mountain range, but over 90% of them never returned; they wouldn’t even have their corpses or bones remaining. Because they died in such a tragic manner, this mountain range was called Tragic Death Mountain. This was a graveyard for masters but also a treasure trove of great lucky chances. Many martial artists came here to adventure in hopes of being able to gain enough insights and experience to break through to the next boundary and walk even further down their road of martial arts.

It was also because of this reason that even though this mountain range had endlessly great risks, there were still many extreme characters that came every year in order to temper themselves.

“Big Brother, we must be careful. Tragic Death Mountain is unfathomable. Sovereign Father has already advised us to listen to General Wei’s heeding, and the most we can enter into Tragic Death Mountain is about 400 miles.” The Divine Kingdom Princess riding the winged flood dragon said. She wore a military uniform and seemed extremely stern and martial, but this did not diminish her gentleness and stunning looks. She was a rare beauty. With her appearance and her background, she was the ideal woman that many young elites in the Divine Kingdom yearned for.

“What the Princess says is right. The depths of Tragic Death Mountain are far too horrifying. Even if His Majesty were to personally arrive, he still wouldn’t dare to go into the deepest parts of Tragic Death Mountain. That area is a true absolute life-forbidden zone; no one is an exception.”

Behind the beautiful Princess, the tall and burly middle-aged man spoke. He wore a helmet and a suit of armor; he was clearly the General Wei that the Princess was referring to.

The young Prince obviously didn't seem willing to listen to this advice. He curled his lips, wanting to say several words refuting him and describing just how strong he had grown.

But before he could open his mouth, there was a terrifying rumble that came crashing down from the skies.

Everyone was shocked. They all looked up to see a brilliant meteorite come crashing down with unbelievable speed, tearing through the upper atmosphere as it came smashing down!

In addition to the thunder and flames wrapped around this meteorite, there was also a gray power surrounding it. No one had seen this gray power before. But, if someone skilled in the Space Laws were to see this, they would know that this was the power of the space storm that leaked out from the crack in space. Moreover, this space storm originated from the spatial void that existed between the Divine Realm and the lower realms; it was a terrifying force that could annihilate all of existence!

“What a fast meteorite!” The young Prince cried out in alarm.

And beside him, General Wei was also looking out far into the distance. Then, his mind shook. “No, that's not right, it doesn't seem like a meteorite at all. How come I think it looks like… a… a person?”

General Wei put forth a speculation that even he couldn't believe he said. However, with his eyesight that far surpassed that of normal martial artists, he could see that this was indeed a person.

Everyone that heard him was shocked. This was a person?

At this time, that ‘meteorite’ finally crashed to the earth. And, the point it landed at was that mountain range filled with demonic energy and also known as a life-forbidden zone – Tragic Death Mountain!

Bang!

In that instant, an incomparably terrifying explosion rolled up the earth for a thousand miles. The mountain range of Tragic Death Mountain was directly lifted up into the air and even the world was pierced through. The magma roiling beneath the ground shot into the skies, flooding forth like massive tsunamis. The horrifying shockwaves crushed the entirety of Tragic Death Mountain, rolling outwards with an unstoppable momentum.

“Shit! Danger!”

General Wei was shocked. He immediately set down an enchantment of energy, protecting those people near him.

A titanic shockwave crashed into General Wei’s energy enchantment. His face paled as his insides tumbled about, nearly causing him to vomit blood.

Even from such a distance, he had withstood less than a ten-thousandth of the impact force from just the aftermath shockwaves, and yet that had caused him to be injured. General Wei found it hard to imagine the might of the crash just now.

The storm quickly passed. Everyone opened their eyes wide to see the place where that ‘meteorite’ had landed. As they did, everyone was dumbfounded, their mouths falling open. Even the normally calm General Wei was unable to regain his calm for a long time.

Tragic Death Mountain, the legendary life-forbidden zone filled with endless demons, the legendary mountain range where countless masters had perished, had actually been over 70% destroyed!

Let alone those demons, not even the mountain range was left intact!

Just what kind of horrifying strength was this?

Everyone felt as if they were in a dream. But, that bubbling magma that was still surging upwards from deep underground told everyone that what they were seeing was not an illusion at all.

“Ge-general Wei, you said that meteorite just now was a person?”

The Divine Kingdom Princess shivered as she recalled this.

Everyone else also looked towards General Wei.

General Wei was still bewildered. He opened his mouth with some difficulty, saying, “I… I might have been mistaken.”

Chapter 1354 – Gray Light Barrier

Chapter 1354 – Gray Light Barrier

…

…

…

"The Sky Spill Planet… I've finally returned."

A massive crater extended for dozens of miles. It penetrated straight through the crust of the world, causing magma to gush out. Immersed in this magma, Lin Ming was slowly washed out.

At this time, all of his clothes had been torn to pieces. He was covered in blood and looked completely haggard.

The reason for this terrifying destructive power that was able to flatten Tragic Death Mountain was not Lin Ming's own strength, but the space storm chasing Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was forced into the turbulent space flows by Tian Mingzi's great hand and forced to struggle in this chaos for several hours. During this period, he had passed through immeasurably dangerous gaps in the space storm, continuously torn by a formidable power of space. If it were a normal martial artist, they would have been ripped apart several times already. Even Lin Ming didn't feel much better. All of his flesh and blood and meridians had cracked, and even his organs were injured.

His mind was extremely tense. He and Mo Eversnow had both consumed a great deal of energy. In that vortex of life and death, a single careless moment would have resulted in annihilation.

Finally, he had forced himself out of space, carrying with him a massive space storm. This space storm had chased Lin Ming all the way to the Sky Spill Planet. The space storms that existed between the Divine Realm and lower realms were immeasurably terrifying. Even though Tragic Death Mountain was extremely firm and supported by demon energy, it was still instantly smashed to nothing!

“Lin Ming, are you fine?”

“It doesn’t matter. Now that I’m on the Sky Spill Planet, I should be safe. Even if I lost my cultivation, with just my mortal body having opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, there is no existence here that should be able to pose a threat to me.”

Lin Ming’s current condition was indeed extremely bad. His inner world was an utter mess and the black hole seed had fallen into an inactive state, nearly shutting off all contact with the energy in his inner world.

90% of his meridians were torn, his blood vessels had erupted in countless areas, and vast amounts of blood filled his lungs, stomach, and within all parts of his body.

However, after Lin Ming had cultivated to this level, his body had already evolved into an extremely pure state of flesh and blood; it would only take some time for this ruined flesh and blood to dissolve into essence energy and then for his body to reabsorb it.

“Miss Mo, are you alright? You consumed a considerable amount of energy.”

Lin Ming could see that Mo Eversnow’s complexion was much paler than it usually was. It was clear that she had fiercely overdrawn her soul.

Mo Eversnow shook her head, saying, “I’m good. I just need some rest.”

As she faintly spoke, Mo Eversnow gently smiled, a deep emotion swelling in her heart.

Initially, when Mo Eversnow had first revived from her sleep, she had been easily able to kill Dragon One. Although she had lost her body, by just relying on her soul force alone she was still somewhat stronger than an early Divine Lord powerhouse.

When Lin Ming encountered some danger, she was able to burn a bit of her soul force to shield him from harm.

But now, Lin Ming had grown to the point of being able to contend with a Divine Lord powerhouse. He was now even stronger than Mo Eversnow's soul form. Like this, he certainly didn't need her to protect him anymore.

This caused Mo Eversnow to feel as if she had lost something, but she felt an even greater joy and happiness. From the depths of her heart, she was sincerely proud and happy that Lin Ming was growing so quickly, as if all his achievements were also what she had accomplished.

Lin Ming naturally wouldn't know of these complex feelings that percolated in Mo Eversnow's heart. He took out several precious soul-restoring pills from his spatial ring, crumbled them into essence energy, and used them to nourish Mo Eversnow's soul form.

"Miss Mo, you can sleep in the Magic Cube for some time. I should be safe. Please allow me to handle things for now. I'm sure I can restore myself fully in two or three days."

"Mm." Mo Eversnow softly nodded as she lightly smiled. She rarely smiled, but when she did, it made one feel as if flowers were blooming all over the world, accompanied by the warm embrace of spring.

She turned into a wisp of soul energy and entered the Magic Cube space. As for Lin Ming, he used his ruined body to struggle out of the crater with great difficulty. Currently, he was in his weakest state, but his senses were still extremely sharp. As soon as he left the crater, he turned his head in a direction. Some people had arrived.

In the great skies, a team of winged flood dragons were rapidly flying over. They were the Divine Kingdom Prince and Princess, General Wei, and their retinue.

The one flying in front was not General Wei but the Divine Kingdom Prince. At this time, his face was filled with excitement. "Hurry up! Maybe some treasure was born!"

That terrifying momentum and explosion had even ruined Tragic Death Mountain, a land of demons. If it were truly a magic tool that fell down, it would absolutely be the number one treasure of the entire Holy Demon Continent!

At the very least, even if it wasn't a magic tool, if it were something that was able to create such a terrifying explosion it must be some rare precious material from the vast universe. If they brought it back, they could definitely refine it to create some unrivalled divine weapon.

With such a great lucky chance delivered right to their door, how could they miss out?

After flying several hundred miles forwards, the Prince could see the blast range and the epicenter of the explosion. There was a massive crater several dozen miles wide and nearly 10 miles deep. There was lava gushing out to the surface constantly, tumbling about.

If this crater were to be filled with water instead, it could even be called a tiny inland sea.

Just as the Divine Kingdom Prince was about to find out what the cause of this explosion was, he was suddenly startled. At the very edge of the crater, there was a man covered in rags and blood.

"You… who are you?"

This person had been harmed so deeply. If he had been near the center of the explosion when it happened, how could he have survived?

As the adventuring team saw Lin Ming, they were surprised. As for General Wei, he was completely bewildered. He immediately recalled the image he had seen just a while ago. He had been able to faintly make out that so-called meteorite, and it had looked like this person.

It couldn't be him…

General Wei gulped and then shook his head, instantly denying this. Even a late Divine Sea master would have instantly perished in such an impact if they were to fall down with so much force. He must have been mistaken.

General Wei's eyes swept over Lin Ming, wanting to determine his cultivation. However, he wasn't able to do so.

Divine Sea realm?

Life Destruction realm?

Lin Ming's inner world seemed bleak and desolate, with incomparably wild origin energy raging about. It was simply impossible for General Wei to distinguish his cultivation.

"Could he be a half-step Divine Sea? Is he a martial artist that encountered some great lucky chance?"

This thought passed through General Wei's mind, but he wasn't able to confirm this.

However, no matter what the situation was, this person's origin was too mysterious. And, if he was able to survive after being so close to the blast, he definitely had something extraordinary to him.

As General Wei was thinking this, a faint feeling overcame him and he looked up. He could see an incomparably black divine light shine over the horizon. For a time, two suns seemed to appear in the heavens. One was a blazing white, and the other was pure, pitch black.

Heavens! What was that!?!?

General Wei was shocked. As for Lin Ming, his complexion completely changed.

Over 100 quintillion miles away, through a space tunnel, Tian Mingzi was quickly shuttling past a space storm.

He wasn't a martial artist from the lower realms, thus the Heavenly Dao Laws would not agree with him entering the lower realms from the Divine Realm. This caused him to be like a fish swimming against the current of a raging river.

Endless space storms surged towards Tian Mingzi before being melted away by him one at a time.

At a certain moment, a bright light burst out in front of Tian Mingzi. As he punched, there was a loud bang as space shattered. Tian Mingzi passed through the space storm and arrived in a completely different realm.

This realm possessed an extremely gentle and sparse heaven and earth origin energy, frail space, and weak Laws. Without a doubt, he was now in the lower realms.

In the lower realms, a Great World King could shatter space by lifting his hand. The power of the Laws binding space together was extremely weak.

"So this is the lower realms. After being a World King for so many years, this is actually my first time in the lower realms. Truly, this is an incomparably fragile realm. I feel that it would be far too easy for me to destroy a region of space."

As Tian Mingzi was saying this, his heart suddenly stirred. In his eyes, a blue planet was suddenly reflected. This planet was quite huge and there was a massive amount of heaven and earth origin energy gathered around it, forming a vast and boundless mist and nebula. This nebula stretched out for billions of miles, looking spectacular and marvelous.

This was the Sky Spill Planet.

"I've arrived at my destination." Tian Mingzi's lips curved up in a smile. "Let the hunt begin. Lin Ming, for me to use your own homeworld as your burial ground, that can be considered as my benevolence to you."

The Sky Spill Planet was extremely large. With the range of Tian Mingzi's sense, he could definitely slowly search for Lin Ming. But, he didn't want to do something that took such a massive amount of time.

He planned to annihilate all life on this planet. Then, the only being remaining would certainly be Lin Ming.

That was far more simple and straightforward.

As for slaying countless trillions of lives to save some time, that wasn't anything to Tian Mingzi. If he exterminated a planet in the lower realms, no one would know at all. And even if they did, no one would suspect that he did it.

"Lives of the Sky Spill Planet, if you wish to blame someone, then blame your fellow man!"

Tian Mingzi extracted his eight foot long sword from his spatial ring. Energy erupted from his entire body, and for a moment the phantom of a cruel devil appeared behind him. To scatter and spread an attack over an entire planet so that it would wipe out every life on it, this was still something that Tian Mingzi had to put his full effort behind.

"Fall into the Eternal Demon Domain – Demon God Descends!"

Tian Mingzi lifted his sword high up above his head and then brought it slashing down. The devil phantom behind him turned into a black divine light that cut downwards, hurtling forth like a brilliant black comet. A massive region of space was shattered by Tian Mingzi's attack. The entire Sky Spill Planet would soon be shrouded in the endless demon light.

Tian Mingzi viciously smiled. Under his attack, the space of the lower realms was simply far too fragile. This feeling was like using a divine weapon to kill a cow.

As this beam of divine light was about to pierce through the atmosphere of the Sky Spill Planet, a sudden change occurred.

Outside the atmosphere of the Sky Spill Planet, a dim ash-gray light barrier appeared. Tian Mingzi's attack struck this light barrier, and what happened next left Tian Mingzi shocked. His all-out attack collided with this ash-gray light and then disappeared, vanishing without a trace of ever returning.

"...Eh? How?"

Tian Mingzi was left dazed, immediately losing the ability to think for a moment. But then, an even more surprising scene occurred. The ash-gray light barrier faintly trembled before shooting back a black divine light at Tian Mingzi. This was Tian Mingzi's attack!

His attack was being returned to him, fully intact!

"What!?!?"

Chapter 1355 – Empyrean Primordius' Protection

Chapter 1355 – Empyrean Primordius' Protection

…

…

…

In that comparably frail lower realms world, an ash-gray barrier of light had inexplicably and suddenly appeared, even reflecting his own attack. Tian Mingzi would never have dreamt that such a matter would occur.

This moment right after Tian Mingzi attacked was the moment he had exhausted his old strength. As he saw his Demon God Descends bounced back towards him, he rapidly drew backwards, immediately forming thousands of seals.

Bang!

A black light exploded and a vast tract of the void collapsed. Tian Mingzi's body shook, his blood tumbling around as his robes were all torn apart.

Tian Mingzi never thought he would be struck so miserably by his own attack.

"What is happening here?"

Tian Mingzi's eyebrows shot up. He first thought that there was a secret unrivalled powerhouse protecting Lin Ming, but as he thought about this he immediately denied it. If there truly was someone protecting Lin Ming then he wouldn't have needed to flee in such a distressed manner, being forced into the space storms where he nearly died.

There was something strange about this Sky Spill Planet!

As Tian Mingzi thought of this, he carefully sent out his sense, investigating the area around the Sky Spill Planet. But, to his amazement, he discovered that as soon as his sense was about to penetrate into the atmosphere of the Sky Spill Planet, it was forcefully cut off, unable to take a half-step further.

It was still that ash-gray light barrier. The surface of that barrier was covered with ancient dao patterns. These dao patterns seemed like the tracings on top of a chaos stone, filled with profound mysteries and exuding a mystical shimmer.

The aura that this light curtain emitted was boundless and vast, leaving Tian Mingzi stunned.

Facing this ash-gray light barrier array formation, he felt as if he were facing the stable foundation of the universe itself, not shakable at all. From this alone, it could be seen that the person who laid down this array formation was absolutely hundreds of times more powerful than he was!

This was terrifying information. This meant that this person was an Empyrean level master, and even a top powerhouse amongst all Empyreans.

In the entire Divine Realm, existences of this level could be counted on a single hand.

“There is this type of array formation protecting the Sky Spill Planet?”

Tian Mingzi was dumbfounded. This light barrier emitted the feeling of passing years. It was likely that this light barrier was tens of thousands of years old.

In other words, tens of thousands of years ago, when Lin Ming had yet to be born, some mysterious powerhouse had laid down a protective array all around the Sky Spill Planet!

Tian Mingzi was unable to sense who had been the one to lay down this array formation, but he could faintly feel that the function of this protective array was to keep out powerhouses and not to block those with lower cultivations.

"What sort of secret is there in the Sky Spill Planet?"

Tian Mingzi didn't believe that such a desolate and barren lower realms planet would randomly arouse the attention of a Divine Realm powerhouse. It was likely that the Sky Spill Planet had some secret.

And, this secret might even by the reason for Lin Ming's formidable strength.

Otherwise, it was hard to imagine that a martial artist from the lower realms would be able to slowly step into the position of the number one young elite in the Divine Realm.

"My attack was blocked, but Lin Ming was able to enter without being hindered. Could this light barrier be blocking outsiders from entering, or could it be preventing martial artists above the Divine Sea realm from passing through?"

Tian Mingzi instantly thought.

If he couldn't enter but Lin Ming easily could, that meant there was some limiting factor preventing him from doing so. And, there were two main differences between him and Lin Ming. His cultivation was higher than Lin Ming's, and he came from the Divine Realm; he wasn't someone who originated from the Sky Spill Planet.

Whether it was the former reason or latter reason, both were bad news.

There was no need to mention the former. He could only watch Lin Ming wander freely about. The array formation of this top supreme elder wasn't something that he could hope to shake.

As for the latter reason, Lin Ming was considered invincible at the Divine Sea realm. Even if he sent out tens of thousands of Divine Sea disciples from the Skydark Holy Lands to chase after him, it would be nothing but delivering lambs to the slaughter.

“How can this be?”

Tian Mingzi frowned. This was a nightmare. The longer this dragged on, the more unknown variables would come into play.

But, he simply couldn’t break through this light barrier. Tian Mingzi very much wished to explore the secrets of this Sky Spill Planet. Perhaps it might even be his own great lucky chance.

With such a lucky chance laid out in front of him, there still wasn’t anything he could do. He absolutely hated this feeling.

“I can only make a sacrifice and hope my guess isn’t wrong…”

Tian Mingzi’s complexion was gloomy. He quietly retreated back into the space channel and returned to the Divine Realm. He silently came and silently left, leaving no trace, like a ghost.

And for those people living on the Sky Spill Planet, they only saw that black divine light flash over them, as if a black sun had appeared and then disappeared. There were some mortal nations that believed this was an ominous sign from the heavens and began to fall to their knees in repentance and worship. Following that, there were no other changes to the Sky Spill Planet.

At this time, in Tragic Death Mountain, General Wei looked up at the skies. “It’s gone?”

He originally thought that another meteorite was about to land, but he didn’t think it would be nothing but a fleeting flash of light.

Beside him, Lin Ming's complexion was dark and dire. He was well aware that the black divine light just now was Tian Mingzi's attack!

Tian Mingzi had chased him all the way to the Sky Spill Planet and had even sent out such a horrifying strike. If this strike had struck the Sky Spill Planet, it would have been a catastrophic apocalypse for all life living here. A frail world of the lower realms simply wouldn't be able to withstand the attack of a Great World King.

"I must really thank Senior Empyrean Primordius. If it weren't for him laying down this enchantment 100,000 years ago that stopped all martial artists above the Divine Sea realm from entering, then the consequences today would have been unimaginable. My family, my people, and even Divine Phoenix Island would have been destroyed today."

Lin Ming was overjoyed that he made the gamble to return to the Sky Spill Planet. The reason he chose to return here was all because of Empyrean Primordius' protection. Just what sort of character was Empyrean Primordius? Let alone Tian Mingzi, not even an ordinary Empyrean master would find it possible to break through that enchantment barrier.

"What sort of world phenomenon was that?" General Wei muttered to himself, looking up at the skies. At this time, he suddenly seemed to recall something. He cupped his fists together and said to Lin Ming. "Friend, what should I call you?"

Lin Ming's cultivation seemed as if it were at the half-step Divine Sea realm. If this were true, then he would break into the Divine Sea realm within the next 10 years. In the Holy Demon Continent, a Divine Sea realm powerhouse was quite rare and valuable.

Thus General Wei was extremely polite.

"My name is Lin Mo." Lin Ming casually said. The name of Lin Ming was well known in the Holy Demon Continent, and he was also known as the infamous master of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. It would be a bit troublesome if others were to find out his status.

General Wei politely bantered with Lin Ming. Their conversation mostly revolved around the landing of the meteorite; he wanted to snoop around for any clues about what Lin Ming was doing here.

But Lin Ming simply insisted that he had come to this area of the mountain range to adventure. Then, because of the landing of the meteor, he was severely wounded and afterwards he ran into General Wei.

The Divine Kingdom Prince organized a group of people to search the crater, but in the end there was nothing found at all.

“Brother Lin, where do you plan on going next?”

“The Blood Slaughter Steppes.” Lin Ming replied, without concealing anything.

“Oh? We are also headed back to our Divine Kingdom. Although we won’t pass through the Blood Slaughter Steppes, they are both in the same direction. Mentioning it, this entire trip has been a laugh. We came here to Tragic Death Mountain to gain some experience, but the result was that just as we arrived, Tragic Death Mountain disappeared.” General Wei ruefully smiled, as if the heavens were playing a joke on him.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. Although he didn’t really know whether or not the destination of these people was in the same direction as the Blood Slaughter Steppes, he could confirm that they were trying to win him over by providing him with assistance. After all, even with Lin Ming’s cultivation looking like it did, this was still an outstanding accomplishment to martial artists of the lower realms.

Lin Ming didn’t reject travelling together; he had taken a liking to this squad’s winged flood dragons. The bloodline of these winged flood dragons had been especially improved through breeding and they could travel hundreds of thousands of miles in a day. Combined with some transmission arrays, they would be able to quickly arrive at the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

Without these people, it would be difficult for Lin Ming to find the appropriate transmission arrays. Moreover, Lin Ming was currently grievously wounded. If he relied on just himself to fly, not only would he be slow but it would be impossible for him to find the time to sit down and meditate to restore himself. It would delay the time it took to recover by a great deal.

Lin Ming didn’t know what methods Tian Mingzi would decide to use in order to deal with him, thus he had to restore his wounds as much as he could and then quickly enter the Eternal Demon Abyss. Once he entered the Eternal Demon Abyss, he would feel much safer.

Like this, Lin Ming travelled along with General Wei and his group. As for Tian Mingzi, he had already returned to the Demondawn Great World.

Deep within the Skydark Holy Lands, at Skydark Demon Palace, several young disciples were rapidly rushing inside. All of them looked slightly panicked. They had all received an emergency gathering order. This order would not be sent out unless a major event was occurring.

These young elites were all outstanding heroic young geniuses in the junior generation of the Demondawn Great World. There were 12 of them in total, all of them at the Divine Sea realm. Nether Limitless was also one of them.

The 12 young disciples entered Skydark Demon palace and knelt down before Tian Mingzi.

“We respectfully greet the Palace Master!”

Tian Mingzi wore a long black robe, his entire body wrapped up in the fabric. He raised his hand and a ring flew into Nether Limitless’ grasp.

“All of you will come to the lower realms with me. I want you to go to a planet in the lower realms, find a person there, and kill him!”

As Tian Mingzi spoke, all of these young elites were dumbfounded. Just who was it that could be in the lower realms and also arouse so much attention from Tian Mingzi that he would send out the emergency gathering order?

They didn't understand why Tian Mingzi wouldn't go himself, but would instead send a group of young elites.

"This person's cultivation is at the Divine Sea realm and his strength is unfathomable. All of you added together will not be his match. After you discover him, do not fight him. Take out the ring I gave you and crumble it. Afterwards, you may kill him."

As Tian Mingzi spoke, the young elites present were all shocked. They didn't seem too convinced by these words. This person was also at the Divine Sea realm, but all 12 of them added together wasn't this person's match?

Tian Mingzi had no intention of speaking further. He waved the sleeves of his robe and a black light wrapped around everyone. in the next moment, they arrived at the Skydark Holy Lands' special transmission array that led to the lower realms.

The Skydark Holy Lands naturally also had such a transmission array.

After burning a massive number of violet sun crystals, Tian Mingzi brought the 12 young disciples to break into the void and fly non-stop towards the lower realms!

In the moment that the divine light shot into the sky, the strong winds also lifted Tian Mingzi's robes. In that brief instant, Nether Limitless inadvertently saw Tian Mingzi's left arm. As he saw this, his complexion immediately paled, not daring to believe his own eyes.

Tian Mingzi's left hand had been cut off from the wrist. The bleeding had stopped, but Nether Limitless could clearly see the broken bones remaining there. Tian Mingzi's left hand had disappeared!

How… how could that be?

Nether Limitless froze, speechless. Just who was it that had cut off the left hand of his master?

He subconsciously wanted to ask, but as his eyes touched upon the cold and gloomy vision of Tian Mingzi, he subconsciously shrank his neck, not daring to speak anymore…

Chapter 1356 – Nether Limitless Descends To the World

Chapter 1356 – Nether Limitless Descends To the World

…

…

…

With Tian Mingzi escorting them, Nether Limitless and his fellow junior disciples easily arrived at the lower realms region where the Sky Spill Planet was.

As they felt the thin and calm heaven origin energy of the lower realms, the young disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands felt their bodies suddenly fill up with strength, as if they had become 10 times stronger.

“The restriction of Laws in the lower realms is really weak.”

“Yes, here I can easily crush the void and flatten hundreds of mountains.”

The powerful Laws of the Divine Realm were like heavy shackles weighing down on the bodies of Divine Realm martial artists. Even using similar martial skills, they would seem weaker when used in the Divine Realm.

But after arriving in the lower realms, this was the same as a mortal going from a high gravity planet to a low gravity planet; they would naturally feel much lighter.

“This is it. The compass I gave you is a high-grade spirit artifact with a wisp of my soul inside. It can help you explore the Sky Spill Planet and find your target. The soul wisp within the compass has also recorded the aura of that person.”

Tian Mingzi clearly ordered. In the lower realms, a martial artist could extend their senses much further than in the Divine Realm. If Tian Mingzi were to take action himself, his sense would be able to cover the entire planet. If he did that, finding Lin Ming would be extremely easy.

Now, he had sealed a wisp of his divine sense into the compass. With the memories of Tian Mingzi's soul within the compass, although it couldn't reach the level of Tian Mingzi personally searching, as long as they found the general area where Lin Ming landed it would only be a matter of time until they found him.

"This is a space shuttle, a spirit treasure I refined myself. It can rapidly pass through space for a short distance. With it, you can almost teleport to any location in this world that you wish and rapidly overtake your target. Remember, after you find him, do not fight. Take out the ring I gave to you."

As Tian Mingzi spoke, he took out a shuttle ship magic tool from his spatial ring.

As the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands heard this, they glanced at each other, not too convinced. Just who was this person? Even with a Divine Sea cultivation, this person had caused Tian Mingzi to take such drastic actions, and even the 12 of them added together weren't his match.

"Honorable Master, who is it that we are being sent to kill?" Nether Limitless finally couldn't help but ask.

Tian Mingzi looked at Nether Limitless, and then clearly said, "You are to kill Lin Ming."

"Lin Ming!?"

Hearing this name, Nether Limitless was shocked. He couldn't help but gulp. The other heroic young elites present were also stunned silent.

They were actually being sent to kill Lin Ming!?

If it were really Lin Ming, then killing the 12 of them would be easy. Although they were arrogant individuals, they weren't arrogant to the point where they believed they could contend with Lin Ming. Lin Ming had almost reached the peak of all Divine Sea martial artists!

"We are being sent to kill Lin Ming..."

Some people felt weak at heart. They weren't idiots; they naturally knew the consequences that would stem from killing Lin Ming. Although Lin Ming wasn't a disciple of a Heavenly Palace, he was still one of the top geniuses chosen from a First Martial Meeting conducted by two Empyreans. To kill Lin Ming was to slap the faces of these two Empyreans to a certain degree.

Tian Mingzi naturally saw the hesitation of his disciples. He gloomily said, "Before this, I attacked Lin Ming through the void, and although I didn't manage to kill him, I forced him through a space storm and caused him to take severe wounds. Now, with the ring I gave you, killing him shouldn't be difficult at all.

"This is an extremely important and grave matter. After successfully killing Lin Ming, I will have you all make an oath to your heart demons to not reveal a single word of this. Of course, I will also compensate you with all sorts of resources for the dangers involved in this mission, and I will even put forth my strength to train you. As for the lucky chances and secrets on Lin Ming's body, those can be shared amongst you. You will obtain tremendous advantages. Although you might not be able to become World Kings in the future, becoming peak Holy Lords isn't a problem at all, and you may even have a chance of becoming a half-step World King. As for you Limitless, as long as you do not perish here, you will become a World King!"

Tian Mingzi put forth all sorts of conditions. As the young elites heard these conditions, all of them couldn't help but be excited. Seeking riches was something always accompanied by dangers. This was truly a great lucky opportunity for them.

A sharp light flashed in Nether Limitless' eyes. He clenched his fists.

He would never forget the shame that Lin Ming had brought him. It was only afterwards, when Lin Ming slowly began to blossom and shine in glory in the First Martial Meeting, did no one think that Nether Limitless losing to Lin Ming in the semifinals at Gravemoon Star was a shame. Instead, they began to think that this was a natural flow of events. Even the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands thought so.

But it was this sort of natural inferiority that had filled Nether Limitless' heart with unwillingness.

What was the reason for him being defeated and overshadowed in the First Martial Meeting, but Lin Ming reaching the pinnacle of his fame? In the entire Divine Realm, no one knew, nor could they understand the reasons why.

Nether Limitless believed that Lin Ming's luck must have defied the heavens and he had encountered some lucky chance that had made him what he was today. If he could kill Lin Ming then that lucky chance would be his. In this world, what was more soothing to the mind and heart than killing a hated enemy and stealing away all of their lucky chances?

"Let's go!"

"Set off!"

The group of Skydark Holy Land young elites stepped into the space shuttle and flew towards the Sky Spill Planet. When they encountered that strange invisible ash-gray barrier surrounding the Sky Spill Planet, they passed through without any impediments at all.

As Tian Mingzi saw this, he relaxed. His previous guess had been correct. This enchantment only locked out martial artists above the Divine Sea realm, and didn't affect martial artists at the Divine Sea realm.

Like this, his chances of killing Lin Ming had become much higher.

Several hours later, Nether Limitless and the others found the ruins of Tragic Death Mountain. Here, the massive crater that was dozens of miles wide was overflowing with lava, with smoke shrouding the skies. Waves of dreadful heat emanated outwards.

It wasn't hard to find this area. This was because after Lin Ming escaped from the space channel, he had brought a vast and turbulent space flow with him. Not only did this force destroy Tragic Death Mountain, but it even razed the world for over a thousand miles.

This sort of power of space was not something that should have existed in the lower realms.

"Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, this area has remains from a Divine Realm space storm. Lin Ming should have landed here, and he should also have suffered a deep backlash from that space storm."

"That's right. When Honorable Master attacked Lin Ming through the void, Lin Ming should have only escaped through desperate means. He's definitely seriously injured. Perhaps we can kill him without using Honorable Master's ring."

"Don't underestimate him. Even a lion needs to use its full force to capture a rabbit. Someone like Lin Ming has countless methods to escape or survive. Wanting to kill him will be difficult. Once we find him, we shall defer to Honorable Master's instructions and take out the ring he gave us."

Nether Limitless traced his spatial ring and took out the compass Tian Mingzi gave him.

This black compass looked black and simple. But in just a moment, Nether Limitless was able to use it to track down the direction Lin Ming fled in.

"Southeast. He might be between 1 million and 3 million miles away!"

The compass could only vaguely feel out the direction one was in. Finding Lin Ming would all depend on himself.

The 12 people entered the space shuttle and disappeared in a flash. The difference between this type of space shuttle and a spirit ship was that this shuttle could instantly pass through space for short distances. It wasn't like a spirit ship that had to save energy to carry out a series of great void shifts.

And at this time, 2 million miles away, a team of winged flood dragons were flying through the skies. Lin Ming sat down on one of these winged flood dragons, his eyes closed deep in meditation. Strong winds blew against him, sending his clothes chaotically flapping about. He had completely entered the ethereal state and was trying to maximize his ability to restore his injuries.

A moment ago they had already passed through two transmission arrays. Every transmission was a million miles, otherwise it would have been impossible for them to come so far.

"I've healed 70-80% of my wounds. It seems I underestimated my regenerative capabilities. After opening the Gate of Death, the power of my life force and blood vitality has increased several times over. I am also nearing the Blood Slaughter Steppes more and more. After I enter the Blood Slaughter Steppes, I can recuperate in Skysplit Tower and enter the Eternal Demon Abyss in my peak state."

As Lin Ming was thinking this, on a winged flood dragon flying by his side, General Wei cupped his hands together and said, "Little Brother Lin, once we pass that mountain range a thousand miles from here, we'll be nearing the Blood Slaughter Steppes. That is where we will have to bid our farewells."

"Thank you General Wei."

"Haha, there is no need to be so polite. If Little Brother Lin has any interest, you may come to my Swiftcloud Nation as an honored guest. My Swiftcloud Nation's Divine Sovereign, Skyfall Heaven, has a late Divine Sea cultivation and is also one of the top ranked human martial artists in the Holy Demon Continent. Little Brother Lin is an outstanding person and I am sure that His Majesty the Divine Sovereign and Little Brother Lin would get along wonderfully with each other. Perhaps you two might have the fate of being a master and disciple."

General Wei had put forth the great name of Swiftcloud Nation's Divine Sovereign in order to try to win over Lin Ming. In his mind, there was no outstanding youth in this world who would reject the chance of becoming Skyfall Heaven's disciple.

Lin Ming only smiled, not responding. But at this time, the smile stiffened on his face.

That was because in that instant, he had felt a keen sense lock onto him!

Before this, Lin Ming had been deep in meditation restoring himself and his senses were contained to a radius of several hundred miles around himself. Thus, he didn't notice that there were people already locked onto him from over a thousand miles away!

Not just that, but these people were approaching at an unbelievable speed. They were able to pass hundreds of miles in the blink of an eye. It wouldn't take long at all for them to cross a thousand miles!

It was impossible for a lower realms martial artist to possess such speed. These people definitely originated from the Divine Realm.

"One, two, three, four..."

A total of 12 people.

Lin Ming didn't suspect that there was a problem with the array formation that Empyrean Primordius had laid down. A character on the level of Tian Mingzi would never be able to break it. In other words, these 12 people should be at the Divine Sea realm, and for them to reach such speeds, that meant they definitely had the support of some type of magic tool.

This sort of squad had been sent to kill him?

Depending on what?

“Brother Lin, what’s the matter?”

General Wei asked. He discovered that something strange was occurring with Lin Ming.

Lin Ming gloomily said, “Some people have come. You should all leave first, otherwise you will be sucked into this mess…”

“What people? If they are looking to Little Brother Lin for trouble, then that is the same as looking to me for trouble too. Hahaha, after travelling so far together, I feel as if we’ve hit it off very well. If someone dares to move against Little Brother Lin, that will be the same as moving against me. Although my talent isn’t too great, I have still lived for over a thousand years and my strength is passable.” General Wei heartily laughed with a bright smile. The reason he said this was because he had an honest and straightforward personality and he really did hit it off well with Lin Ming. Moreover, and most importantly, he wanted to become friends with Lin Ming and win him over. At this moment, his Swiftcloud Nation was in urgent need of talented individuals, and Lin Ming was someone whose future accomplishments were unimaginable. To be on good terms with such a person had far too many advantages.

Lin Ming could only force a smile as he heard General Wei’s words. “General Wei, I fear the situation is not how you think it is… well, there’s nothing more to say. There’s no longer any time.”

As Lin Ming spoke, the space around them began to violently distort.

Chapter 1357 – Hand of the Devil

Chapter 1357 – Hand of the Devil

…

…

…

“What do you mean there’s no longer any time?”

Before General Wei could react, he felt the power of space around him suddenly turn wild. With a flash of light, 12 youths appeared like ghosts and gods!

They had almost instantly torn through the void to teleport here. There wasn’t the slightest indication before they had arrived!

“Who is it!?”

If General Wei was shocked so thoroughly, the others in his group were completely panic-stricken. These 12 people had suddenly emerged from nowhere and no one knew how they had arrived. What method did they use? How was this possible?

The 12 people all wore the uniform robes that indicated they were from the same sect. There was a special symbol embroidered on all of their chests, clearly indicating they came from this sect.

However, what left General Wei and his team dumbfounded was that these people all possessed a late Divine Sea realm cultivation. Moreover, each one of them had an aura as deep and vast as the sea, along with an incomparably solid foundation. This was simply unimaginable! In General Wei’s mind, even the Divine Sovereign of Swiftcloud Nation didn’t possess such a terrifying aura!

In the Divine Realm, the young elites often came into contact with each other and every one of them was a master. In addition, with the suppression of the Divine Realm's Laws acting on them, they naturally didn't think that their auras were too horrifying. But in the lower realms, everything was different. The power of the lower realms' Laws to restrict one's strength was extremely weak. A Divine Sea powerhouse's aura was already extremely powerful to them, and they also weren't bothering to conceal it. Thus, with these 12 late Divine Sea masters appearing together, they formed a dreadful pressure.

"This... this...!"

General Wei's eyes turned completely round. In the entire Holy Demon Continent, a late Divine Sea martial artist was rarer than rare. Now, in a single breath, 12 of them had popped out from nowhere. And what was most incredible was that these people were all youths. How could there possibly be an influence in this world that could raise so many young late Divine Sea masters?

"Am... am I dreaming..."

The Divine Kingdom Prince gulped. His talent was considered very good. At his age, he was already at the fifth stage of Life Destruction, giving him a limitless future. It wouldn't be a problem for him to reach the Divine Sea before he was a hundred years old, but if he were compared to these people...

Nether Limitless and the others simply didn't glance at General Wei and the others. This wasn't contempt nor was it disdain, but complete disregard, as if they were nothing but air. In the eyes of Nether Limitless, these common mortals of the lower realms were like ants. To see such magnificent geniuses like them descend to this backwater world was already the gathered luck of their last several generations.

Nether Limitless only stared at Lin Ming, his eyes shining with ruthlessness, a trace of fear, and even a hint of vivid excitement.

Ruthlessness because he hated and envied Lin Ming and his talent, fear because he was frightened by Lin Ming's power and fame, and excitement because as long as he could kill Lin Ming, everything Lin Ming possessed would become his!

"Lin Ming, we meet again."

Nether Limitless slowly and clearly said.

As this voice echoed out, General Wei and the others stirred, as if they were awakening from a dream. They recalled what Lin Ming had said before – "Some people have come. You should all leave first, otherwise you will be sucked into this mess…"

These words were directed towards these 12 black-robed youths!

"Lin Ming… haven't I heard this name before?" General Wei was stunned. "And he wanted to go to the Blood Slaughter Steppes? Isn't the current master of the Blood Slaughter Steppes someone called Lin Ming?"

As a high level figure of the Holy Demon Continent, General Wei naturally knew about something as important as the changing of masters of the Holy Demon Continent's Blood Slaughter Steppes. He also heard the rumors, that this new Steppes Master was incomparably mysterious. He had killed the previous Steppes Master as well as an imp race Divine Sea master in order to become the new Steppes Master. But from that day on, it was as if he had vanished from the world. Many influences wanted to establish cooperative efforts with the Blood Slaughter Steppes to allow the young elites of their sects and families to gain experience, but they weren't able to find any passage of communication at all.

This Lin Ming in front of him, could he be the Steppes Master? How had he managed to provoke such a fierce group of people? Wasn't this just a death wish?

As this thought flashed through General Wei's mind, Lin Ming silently took out his long spear, pointing it at Nether Limitless. "It seems Tian Mingzi truly has all sorts of methods at his disposal. He can even find me like this…"

Lin Ming's expression was calm and relaxed. But as this appearance fell into Nether Limitless' eyes, it brought a great pressure onto him.

Although Nether Limitless put forth a confident persona at the start, the truth was that his heart was shaking. He nervously and carefully sent out his divine sense to probe the extent of Lin Ming's injuries. And to his dismay, Lin Ming's wounds were far less heavy than he had imagined.

This cast a dark cloud over his mind. It wasn't because Nether Limitless didn't believe in the trump card that Tian Mingzi had prepared for him, but because the power and fame Lin Ming gained over time was simply too great. His performance in the First Martial Meeting was too awe-inspiring and fierce; he had no choice but to be careful.

"Humph, did you think that we couldn't do anything to you just because you fled back to your home world? Today is the day of your demise. After killing you, I will obtain all of your lucky chances. I will replace you, inherit your destiny, and become an Empyrean!"

As Nether Limitless spoke, it was like he was inspiring his own momentum and courage. Energy erupted from within his body. In that moment, night seemed to arrive as the world turned dark. The entire sky was covered underneath a terrifying pressure as space shook!

"This...!"

"Retreat... we must retreat!"

General Wei rapidly shouted. This terrifying person was the same as a demon god. This level of fighting had surpassed their scope of understanding!

Behind General Wei, the Divine Kingdom Princess' beautiful face was also pale, but her eyes were filled with awe as she looked at Lin Ming.

From their exchange of words just now, she was able to speculate that Lin Ming had come from the legendary Divine Realm. As for these black-robed men chasing him, they clearly also came from the Divine Realm. This was the only explanation for how there could be so many powerhouses that appeared out of nowhere.

As for those words – 'Did you think that we couldn't do anything to you just because you fled back to your home world?" – that clearly implied that Lin Ming was someone who ascended from this world!

Had there ever been someone who ascended that was this terrifying?

Facing Nether Limitless' aura, Lin Ming didn't feel anything at all. He slowly turned the Phoenix Blood Spear, his lips curving up in a cruel smile. "Depending on the bunch of you? I don't believe that Tian Mingzi is so idiotic as to send you here to die like this. If you have some trump card then bring it out now, otherwise you won't have the chance!"

As Lin Ming spoke, the Heretical God Force suddenly erupted. His spear thrust forwards, its might reaching the limit!

How could the space of the Sky Spill Planet resist Lin Ming's attack? This spear strike caused the void for tens of thousands of feet outwards to instantly collapse. If General Wei and the others hadn't retreated by now, they would have been sucked into that storm of space and time and immediately perished!

"Get in formation!"

Nether Limitless' pupils shrank. As he put forth Tian Mingzi's ring, the 12 heroic youths of the Skydark Holy Lands immediately formed the Skylock Array Formation. This array formation was one that the 12 of them had trained in for a long time. Once they created it, it wasn't something as simple as the sum of their total strength together.

However, Lin Ming's attack was far too terrifying. As his spear thrust forwards, the phantom of the Heretical God Tree had already appeared behind him. This Heretical God Tree took root in the endless void, seeming as if it could absorb strength from the endless worlds of the lower realms. On Lin Ming's spear point, thunder and flames howled. The power of heavenly tribulation arrived as the power of thunder and fire wove together into a sea of purple and red.

Rumble rumble rumble!

A crazy detonation erupted and the world changed color as if the end of all days had come. The Skylock Array Formation formed by Nether Limitless and the other 11 disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands immediately exploded underneath Lin Ming's strike. All of them flew backwards, their faces pale.

Even though the 12 of them joined forces they had still been destroyed by Lin Ming!

A powerful energy storm swept forwards for a thousand miles, razing the endless mountains and rivers!

As General Wei and his group saw this, all of their jaws dropped.

What they were not shocked about was the thousand miles of mountains and rivers that had been razed, but the situation occurring on the battlefield. Even though the 12 late Divine Sea masters had joined forces to form an array, their joint defense had been completely routed by Lin Ming. The 12 of them were all wounded!

What sort of horrifying strength was this!?

Was this really that handsome and friendly youth who had traveled with them so far?

He was such a terrifying existence?

As for the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands, a deep sense of powerlessness and fear emerged from the depths of their souls. As they watched the fight between Lin Ming and Frost Dream, it was hard to imagine from that just what the disparity was between them and Lin Ming. Tian Mingzi had constantly stressed that even the 12 of them joining together wouldn't be a match for Lin Ming. Even so, they couldn't help but doubt this. It was impossible for them to be convinced until they gave it a try.

Now, they finally understood deeply just how great the difference was between them and Lin Ming.

With the 12 of them joining together to form a great array formation, that allowed them to not be instantly killed by Lin Ming. But, if they were continually attacked, they might not even last for 10 breaths of time before someone died. And if someone died, there would be a crack in their array formation. Once that crack appeared then the array formation would collapse in the next strike and none of them would have the strength to resist.

“Lin Ming, you are ruthless, but no matter how powerful you are it is still useless! Today, you are doomed to die here! Everything you have will be mine!”

Nether Limitless maniacally roared out. He suddenly threw out the ring in his hand. The ring shattered in the air, and then, the pressure of a Great World King came shrouding down from the skies. In that moment, a severed hand appeared in the air.

This hand was stained with blood, and in the places that weren’t stained, the flesh there was far too white, appearing even translucent. Even though this hand was severed, it still appeared to contain endless amounts of vitality. Blood vessels slowly wriggled in it, as if it were still alive.

Nether Limitless was not surprised by this hand. He had already seen that Tian Mingzi’s left hand had disappeared, and in Nether Limitless’s opinion, someone like Tian Mingzi, the Great World King of a first order great world, who even had a chance of becoming an Empyrean in the future, would not fight someone to the point of losing a hand unless he had a death grudge with an equally powerful character. In other words, he could only have cut off his own hand.

As Lin Ming looked at this hand, he could feel the aura within it and approximately guess where it came from.

With a chuckle, he said, “Tian Mingzi really holds me in such high esteem. To think he would cut off his own hand to form an avatar to kill me.”

Lin Ming was clearly aware that even though Empyrean Primordius' enchantment could prevent supreme elders from the Divine Realm descending to the Sky Spill Planet, it actually couldn't defend against their avatars. As long as these people suppressed the cultivation of their avatar to the Divine Sea realm or below then they would be fine.

Otherwise, it would have been impossible for Fairy Feng to appear at the Sky Spill Planet and help Lin Ming ascend when he was just at the Life Destruction realm.

Tian Mingzi was able to consume several hundred years of his cultivation to form a wisp of an avatar to kill Lin Ming in the lower realms, but Tian Mingzi didn't think this was safe enough.

Lin Ming had far too many methods at his disposal. He had a tremendous ability to survive. For Tian Mingzi to just use his cultivation to form an avatar, that might not have been enough to kill Lin Ming. Thus, he cut off one of his hands to form an avatar with his own flesh and blood!

Chapter 1358 – Life or Death Crisis

Chapter 1358 – Life or Death Crisis

…

…

…

"In severing his hand, no matter what happens next, that will still cause damage to his essence energy. It seems Tian Mingzi has really put forth sufficient capital to kill me."

Lin Ming sneered, but his mind was actually rapidly coming up with solutions for how to pass this danger. Tian Mingzi was not an idiot. On the contrary, he was someone who did everything to the limit of perfection.

Even a lion had to use its full force to capture a rabbit. If Tian Mingzi had severed his hand to bring to the lower realms, it was because he truly had confidence in killing him, at least 70-80%.

"Hahaha! Once you die, Honorable Master can naturally take back his hand and reattach it with heavenly materials. As for any essence energy he loses, he can make up for it!"

Nether Limitless laughed.

Even if the supreme elders of the Divine Realm lost part of their mortal body, they could use a variety of heavenly materials to make up for the loss. But, any new body part that was formed would be inferior to the original in terms of formidability.

For an essence gathering system master, although their body wasn't as tough as that of a body transformation martial artist, their flesh and blood had still been tempered with true essence for a long period of time, and had also gone through numerous baptisms of origin energy. This was their spirit body.

If they lost their spirit body and wished to transform their newly regrown flesh and blood into a new spirit body, they would have to spend a long time to temper that part. Thus, Tian Mingzi had to take back this hand, otherwise his cultivation would suffer a great loss.

Tian Mingzi's flesh and blood wriggled in the skies, like a tiny growing meat embryo.

As this meat embryo grew, a massive amount of origin energy gathered towards it, forming a horrifying storm.

Without turning his head, Lin Ming said with a true essence sound transmission, "Leave this place. If you stay you will die. I fear the outcome will be the same even if you are several hundred miles away."

General Wei and his group had helped Lin Ming, otherwise it would have been impossible for him to use the transmission arrays so quickly and he also wouldn't have had the chance to meditate and heal his wounds. If Lin Ming had stayed in the crash site to heal himself, that would have been far more dangerous. Without the time that Nether Limitless and the others took to find him, his wounds would have been much heavier.

General Wei and his people had absolutely nothing to do with this matter. Lin Ming didn't hope that they would be dragged in and die.

Moreover, the area where Lin Ming was fighting Nether Limitless and the others was a primitive wilderness. If he fought here, there was no need to worry that there would be a great loss of life.

"Let's hurry and leave!"

General Wei was a man who knew his limits. He originally thought to become friends with Lin Ming and win him over, but these tiny thoughts and hopes had already vanished into thin air. This sort of person was destined to only be a visitor to the Holy Demon Continent and would soon leave.

While they all wished to see the battle of a Divine Realm master, being caught up in the stormy aftermath and dying was simply too unjustified.

Tian Mingzi's hand took several breaths of time to grow into a complete mortal body. During this time there was always an enchantment protecting it. If Lin Ming attacked at this time, the effects would be limited.

The newly born Tian Mingzi's entire body was covered in a thin layer of mucus. This avatar waved its hand, creating a long robe out of energy. As Tian Mingzi floated in the air, his eyes were bright and sharp. Tian Mingzi's avatar had also inherited a wisp of Tian Mingzi's soul.

"Lin Ming..."

Tian Mingzi's voice was indifferent. His long hair floated up in the air, just like a divine tree stretching out its branches. At this time, he looked like a demon god, and the area he was standing in seemed as if it were the center of this universe.

"Tian Mingzi, I only stole away your primordial epoch spirit root. Is that really enough for you to sacrifice your own origin energy and sever your hand to chase me down to the Sky Spill Planet?"

Lin Ming already had some guess as to why Tian Mingzi was willing to hunt him down no matter the cost. This definitely wasn't related to the primordial epoch spirit root. Although the primordial epoch spirit root was precious, it wasn't something that someone on the level of Tian Mingzi couldn't obtain eventually. Moreover, the primordial epoch spirit root had already been eaten up by Lin Ming.

"Are you testing me?" Tian Mingzi's avatar revealed a pale smile. "You should have already guessed something... but, regardless of whether your guesses are correct, I cannot allow any accidents to occur. You must die here."

"Is that so? That black-robed man was truly a spy from the saint race after all. What you have done is commit a crime against the entirety of humanity. Once Empyrean Divine Dream or Empyrean Vast Universe discover this, you will surely die without a grave. That is the reason why you are so nervous. You're afraid of the chance that any tiny bit of news will be revealed, even if it is just a tiny speck."

Although Tian Mingzi didn't say anything, Lin Ming was able to confirm his guesses.

"You're quite the smart one."

Tian Mingzi didn't plan to deny this fact nor was he able to conceal it. No matter what Tian Mingzi said, all Lin Ming had to do was hand the corpse of that black-robed man over to Empyrean Divine Dream and she would instantly know the truth.

As for whether Divine Dream would trust Lin Ming or Tian Mingzi, that was obvious! In other words, as long as Lin Ming returned to the Divine Realm, Tian Mingzi's life was over.

Nether Limitless and the others were all shocked stupid as they listened to the exchange between Lin Ming and Tian Mingzi.

In truth, they weren't too sure what the two were speaking about. But, they weren't fools. From the meaning of Lin Ming and Tian Mingzi's words, it seemed as if Tian Mingzi had been undertaking some great matter, and this matter involved betraying humanity. If he were to be found out, many Empyreans would join forces to exterminate him!

It was clear that this was the reason Tian Mingzi wanted to kill Lin Ming. It seemed that this weren't as simple as they had first assumed.

Nether Limitless and the other 11 disciples all looked at each other, fear, worry, and dismay in their eyes. They were nothing but little shrimps in the big picture. If they were involved in such a massive vortex, there wouldn't even be bones left of them. And although their Skydark Holy Lands was a demonic path sect, they were still humans after all. To betray their own race…

Nether Limitless and the others all felt weak in their hearts!

But they had already boarded the same ship as Tian Mingzi. If they were to betray Tian Mingzi then their fates could be imagined.

Tian Mingzi seemed as if he had no intention of bothering with Nether Limitless and the others. He only looked at Lin Ming and drew out a long black sword from his spatial ring. The sword handle had a strange shape and the blade was merely an inch wide and yet eight feet long. It wasn't that much shorter than the Phoenix Blood Spear, and it resembled the sword of judgment held by the fabled god of death.

"Smart people… always die early."

As Tian Mingzi said this, he suddenly rushed forwards, his sword slashing down at Lin Ming. The void of the lower realms was cut apart like tofu. Because of the powers of the protection left behind by Empyrean Primordius, the cultivation of Tian Mingzi's avatar was limited to the peak of the late Divine Sea realm. He wasn't able to go any further otherwise he would be restrained by the Laws.

In other words, Tian Mingzi's avatar had a Great World King's comprehension of the Laws as well as the spirit body of a Great World King. However, the cultivation he used was at the late Divine Sea realm.

This was already more than terrifying!

In this dire situation, against such a formidable adversary, the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower bloomed in full behind Lin Ming. The phantom of the Heretical God Tree also appeared. Lin Ming instantly erupted with the limit of his strength!

"Heavenly Dao Judgment!"

The power of thunder and fire contained within the Heretical God Tree surged outwards, gathering in the sky and forming a terrifying storm of energy. Without hesitation, Lin Ming detonated it.

Rumble rumble rumble!

In the skies, the fire and thunder hurtled downwards, colliding together with Tian Mingzi's sword light!

A terrifying explosion swept through the void. Tian Mingzi coldly smiled and waved his sleeves. Then, a strong veil of darkness fell down, as if a nightmare had fallen over this area and swallowed up the entire region.

The incomparably thick darkness swallowed up Lin Ming's power of thunder and fire. Like this, his Heavenly Dao Judgment dissipated in the darkness.

This was Tian Mingzi's Darkness Laws. With his Great World King level understanding of Laws to compete with Lin Ming, he naturally had a great advantage.

Peng!

The spear light shattered and Lin Ming was sent flying backwards, blood wildly tumbling within his body. In that brief collision just now, he had suffered a light wound. Although this didn't affect his current combat strength, it confirmed the disparity between him and Tian Mingzi.

This battle was far too tricky!

When Lin Ming fought Frost Dream, Frost Dream was the incarnation of Divine Dream's sundered soul. Because of the amnesia of birth, her memories had been sealed away, thus her boundary in the Laws was closer to Lin Ming's own.

This was completely different from the current situation of Tian Mingzi in front of him.

With the spirit body of a Great World King, the Laws of a Great World King, and also a cultivation that was a small boundary higher, Tian Mingzi was far superior to Lin Ming. If this battle continued then Lin Ming would die without a doubt.

Hah – !

From within Tian Mingzi's body, a vast roiling demonic energy spread forth. This demonic energy condensed into countless demons, all of them enveloping an area of 10 miles.

This was Tian Mingzi's 10,000 Demon Domain.

Every demon lingered at the edges of the battlefield, completely blocking in this area of space. Although Tian Mingzi didn't believe that Lin Ming had the ability to escape his grasp, he still opened the 10,000 Demon Domain and locked down this area in order to eliminate even the slightest chance of Lin Ming escaping.

"Lin Ming, your end has arrived. With my Divine Sea cultivation, I have used the 10,000 Demon Domain to create a cage around you. Although you possess the strength to break through this cage, I will not give you that chance. The moment you try, I will sever your head.

As Tian Mingzi spoke, he horizontally lifted the black sword in his hand. Demonic energy covered the blade, dense and dark. With Tian Mingzi's strength, he could do exactly what he said. If Lin Ming wanted to break through this 10,000 Demon Domain, he would be unable to resist Tian Mingzi's attacks. But, if he couldn't break through then he would have to fight Tian Mingzi here until he exhausted himself and died.

Lin Ming held onto the Phoenix Blood Sear, his palms slightly wet with sweat. However, his eyes were steady and calm!

This was another life or death crisis that he had to face!

Rumble rumble rumble!

With a terrifying thunderous rumble, above Tian Mingzi's head, a giant pagoda emerged out of thin air, slowly spinning around.

This pagoda was the same one that Tian Mingzi had used in the past to hold 10,000 masters of the Divine Realm, the catastrophic spirit treasure that helped him destroy the

Verdant Feather Holy Lands. To obtain this divine pagoda was one of Tian Mingzi's greatest lucky chances.

With a Divine Sea realm cultivation, Tian Mingzi was naturally unable to activate the true divine pagoda. All he could do was bring out a projection instead. But even if this was a projection, its might was extraordinary.

Tian Ming instantly formed thousands of seals with his hand. Then, this catastrophic divine pagoda began to come crashing down on Lin Ming. In that moment, Lin Ming felt all of the space surrounding him being shaken by this divine pagoda, not giving him any chance to dodge.

At the same time, Tian Mingzi was like a demon god descending to the world as he rushed forwards, his long sword slashing through space!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. If he couldn't dodge then he could only defend! In that he moment opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates to the limit, and even the black hole seed within his inner world appeared.

Facing Tian Mingzi's attack, it was impossible for Lin Ming to hold back.

The black hole seed caused a massive storm of origin energy to lift up. As Lin Ming thrust out his spear, even the power of Heavenly Dao Judgment was fused into his spear without reservation.

The spear light was like a black dragon as it struck against Tian Mingzi's sword strike.

Eternal Darkness!

Chapter 1359 – Burn

Chapter 1359 – Burn

…

…

…

In the moment that the spear light and sword light crossed, the world changed colors and all light seemed to disappear. A wild and violent energy erupted outwards and the earth was blown apart as if a titanic hammer struck it. The world hollowed, forming a massive crater in the ground that was dozens of miles wide. Magma sprayed into the air, and even nearby mountains were flattened like collapsing sand dunes.

This was a battle between extreme Divine Sea powerhouses, or, it was more accurate to say Divine Lord level powerhouses. This was the terrifying battlefield they created on a world of the lower realms!

Although this strength wasn't able to destroy a planet, wiping out all life here would simply be a matter of time!

The energy shockwaves swept out for a thousand miles before fading away. The earth was sundered and bubbling magma gushed out as if the world was bleeding. This was a ghastly sight.

Strong winds howled through the air. Tian Mingzi's clothes fluttered in the wind. There was a trace of blood on Tian Mingzi's eight foot long sword; this blood belonged to Lin Ming.

Stretching out his finger, Tian Mingzi stroked the sword edge and wiped away that trace of blood before gently licking it. At that time, Tian Mingzi's face, coupled with that scarlet blood, appeared increasingly monstrous.

Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear, his body floating dozens of miles away from Tian Mingzi. In that horrifying impact just now, his right arm had shattered and his left shoulder had also been pierced through by sword light. His collar bones were visible through his flesh, blood leaking down his arm and flowing over the Phoenix Blood Spear like a wandering red snake.

Tian Mingzi had severed his hand to form a flesh and blood avatar, and even added in a wisp of his soul to shape it. The strength of Tian Mingzi's avatar far surpassed Lin Ming's imagination! If it weren't for Lin Ming practicing the body transformation technique, that strike just now would have turned him to mush!

If this battle continued then Lin Ming would undoubtedly die!

"Lin Ming!"

In Lin Ming's mind, Mo Eversnow's concerned and anxious voice echoed outwards. Currently, she wasn't able to help Lin Ming in any way. This made her feel extremely uncomfortable.

Tian Mingzi was her absolute mortal enemy, someone whom she could not stand to live under the same skies with. After all sorts of strange circumstances and meandering paths, she had once again been forced into a desperate situation by him. Mo Eversnow had already died once, so she no longer cared about herself, but, how could she look on as Lin Ming died here?

Mo Eversnow took a deep shuddering breath, unable to remain calm. Even her fingers faintly shivered. She rarely lost her composure like this. This wasn't because of fear, but because of hate!

She hated Tian Mingzi to the extreme!

"Lin Ming, do you have a plan?"

Mo Eversnow said, forcefully suppressing the rage in her voice.

"I have no good method, I can only fight!"

After being locked down by Tian Mingzi and also covered in his 10,000 Demon Domain, Lin Ming was truly forced into a dead end. A moment ago, because Tian Mingzi had attacked with his all-out strength, the 10,000 Demon Domain had weakened for a brief moment, to the point that it could have been torn apart. However, Lin Ming had no way of diverting any attention to do that.

As soon as the collision finished, that domain had vaguely floated back around Lin Ming, locking him back in a cage.

In terms of domain ranks, whether it was the grandmist space or the divine dream space, both of them blew past the 10,000 Demon Domain. But, the essential difference was the disparity in cultivation and comprehension of Laws. This caused Lin Ming to be unable to pressure Tian Mingzi.

Tian Mingzi was someone who had lived for at least 50,000 years and Lin Ming was just over 30 years old. Lin Ming was only a fraction of Tian Mingzi's age, so how could there be any comparison between the heights in Laws that they both reached?

Separated by a distance of several dozen miles, Tian Mingzi began to casually walk through the void towards Lin Ming.

Although his steps were slow, every step he took crossed one or two miles. In another 20-30 steps, he would reach Lin Ming.

There was silence, only a terrible silence. The only sound that broke through the gloomy silence was the sound of Tian Mingzi's steps crossing through the void, as if the god of death were slowly approaching.

In one more strike, Lin Ming would absolutely suffer a life-threatening wound.

In the third strike, he might die!

Mo Eversnow looked at Tian Mingzi slowly approaching, and her eyes flashed with a cold light. Then, she suddenly said, “Lin Ming, in these past years my soul force has been restored a great deal, and as for you, through your training in Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, your connection with the Magic Cube has become increasingly close. We can make an attempt together, to join our strength and stimulate the movement of the Magic Cube. If we can do that then it will give us the opening we need to defeat Tian Mingzi!”

Mo Eversnow suddenly suggested. She actually wanted to galvanize the power of the Magic Cube to deal with Tian Mingzi!

The Magic Cube had always been passively defending. Was it possible to activate it so that it could attack on its own?

Lin Ming’s mind stirred. At this time, he could only desperately struggle. The Magic Cube was a divine tool of soul attacks. If he could stimulate the movement of the Magic Cube and destroy the wisp of soul that Tian Mingzi left in his avatar, then his avatar would only have its spirit body remaining. Without Tian Mingzi’s comprehensions of Laws, the avatar would be nothing to fear.

Lin Ming wanted to immediately agree and bet on this final tactic.

But just as he was about to speak, he seemed to suddenly wake up.

Did Mo Eversnow really think this was possible?

In Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming had indeed become closer to the Magic Cube. But, he also knew that he still fell far short of being able to stir its movements to kill an enemy.

When Mo Eversnow had suggested that the two of them join their strength together to stimulate the Magic Cube, the truth was that this was only an excuse.

In the end, Mo Eversnow wanted to rely on her own strength to activate the Magic Cube.

In the past, when the Verdant Feather Holy Lands was destroyed, Mo Eversnow had stimulated the movement of the Magic Cube by using the entirety of her strength. Because of that, she had paid a deep price, even losing her body in the process. And that had been at her peak state. Now, with her current condition, there was only a single way for her to possibly arouse the Magic Cube… and that was to completely burn up her divine soul.

With the price of her death, she would trade that for one final attack!

This was absolutely not what Lin Ming wanted. He would rather fall beyond redemption and perish than allow Mo Eversnow to die like this!

“Lin Ming, what are you still thinking about? This is our only chance. If Tian Mingzi attacks one more time, your injuries will be much heavier. At that time, even if we killed Tian Mingzi, we would be nothing but lamps without oil. At that point, even Nether Limitless and the others would be able to kill us.”

Mo Eversnow’s voice was hurried.

Lin Ming solemnly said, “Miss Mo, in I, Lin Ming’s life, whether it is now or in the future, I will not have your sacrifice yourself for me. I will not use your death to exchange for my own life. To step onto the peak of martial arts is the goal that I have been chasing through in my life, but even that peak of martial arts is far inferior to Miss Mo’s life!”

As Lin Ming said these words, Mo Eversnow was stunned. She didn’t think that Lin Ming would see through her intentions. Indeed, from the very start she had never planned to rely on Lin Ming’s strength. Rather, she wanted to burn away her divine soul and stimulate the Magic Cube, perishing together with Tian Mingzi’s avatar. And now, as Lin Ming said these words, Mo Eversnow felt her heart inexplicably touched in the softest, most defenseless parts of her soul. She didn’t know why, but she felt a twisting pain as a crystal clear teardrop quietly fell down her cheek.

“Big Sister, why are you crying?”

Within the Magic Cube space, the sleeping Fishy seemed to sense something happening. She opened her eyes and saw that a tear had fallen down from the corner of Mo Eversnow's eye.

Without knowing what happened, Fishy haplessly looked at Mo Eversnow. Then, she reached out her little hand and gently wiped away this single drop of 'soul tears'.

Eyes could cry. This could be sadness, but it could also be a lie, deceit, an act...

But if a soul form were to cry, that would only be because they were sad to the extreme, grieving to the extreme, or perhaps... their heart was touched.

Mo Eversnow softly patted Fishy's head. She said in a gentle voice, "Big Sister is alright. From now on, you must be a good girl and listen to your Big Brother Lin Ming's words..."

As she spoke, Mo Eversnow's body gradually floated upwards. In that instant, her soul form began to slowly flash. Beautiful and enchanting blue and white rays of light radiated from Mo Eversnow's body, dazzling to the eyes...

She was burning her divine soul!

"Miss Mo, you – !"

Lin Ming urgently cried out, alarmed.

"...Lin Ming, do you know? 50,000 years ago, I had to watch with my own eyes as the Verdant Father Holy Lands was destroyed in front of me. I lacked the strength, and was unable to stop Tian Mingzi. At that time, the Verdant Feather Holy Lands was the most important thing to me! My family and my foundation, my everything was there. Now, 50,000 years later, I must watch once more as Tian Mingzi destroys you, and right now, you are the most important person in my life. I, I will not allow this cycle to repeat itself once more, I will not! I won't!"

As Mo Eversnow spoke, her strength constantly flowed into the Magic Cube. Lin Ming could even feel the Magic Cube beating within his body, as if it were about to fly out from within him!

“You have your determination, but I have my oath. If you die, there is no reason for me to continue living on!” Mo Eversnow’s voice was incomparably firm and resolute.

The palpitations of the Magic Cube became increasingly intense! The truth was that the Magic Cube had no master. As the crystallized form of the universe’s ‘divine’, there was no mortal that was able to completely control it. And, in terms of being able to control the power of the Magic Cube, Mo Eversnow far surpassed Lin Ming.

At the moment that Mo Eversnow started to burn her own soul, Lin Ming felt an indescribably heart-rending pain tear through his body, as if there were something exploding within his inner world!

He could not allow Mo Eversnow to continue. He could not allow her to burn her divine soul. Right now, Mo Eversnow only had her divine soul remaining. Once she burnt that, she would truly perish! Not even a True Divinity would be able to save her!

In this moment, an indescribably wild and brutal strength ignited within Lin Ming’s body, exploding outwards!

The implacable black hole seed came to a grinding halt before it rapidly began to spin in reverse. From that black hole seed which originally nothing could escape, a torrential amount of energy began gushing forth!

“Tian Mingzi! I’LL KILL YOU!”

Lin Ming roared out. A gargantuan amount of energy began to swell forth from his body. If he didn’t release this energy, his body would explode!

Peng peng peng!

Lin Ming’s blood vessels ruptured and blood rained down. All of his strength was poured into the Phoenix Blood Spear. The Phoenix Blood Spear began to keen in excitement, as if a True Dragon was awakening within it!

In the past, you were the one to protect me…

And now, I should be the one to protect you…

No matter what, whether in the past, in the present, or in the future, I will not watch you burn your soul and die for me.

Even if I must overdraw my life, even if I must fall here, I will defeat Tian Mingzi!

In that moment, all sounds faded away from Lin Ming’s mind. All he could hear was the clarion cry of his own mind.

“My life’s blood essence, burn for me!”

Lin Ming roared. In that moment, he began to burn his blood essence without reservation!

A full 50% of his blood essence began to combust!

Even if Lin Ming had perfectly opened the Gates of Life and Death, he absolutely could not withstand such a consumption of blood essence!

“Lin Ming… you!”

Mo Eversnow froze. Burning 50% of his blood essence, what sort of concept was that? Did he not think of the ramifications!?!?

Lin Ming truly didn’t care about any consequences right now. If he couldn’t stop the Magic Cube from activating, then he could only defeat Tian Mingzi!

With half his blood essence as the price, this was Lin Ming’s last stand!

The sky trembled and the earth began to moan in grief. The power of thunder, the power of fire, the power of space, the power of time, all strengths gathered within Lin Ming's spear light. At this moment, any technique had lost meaning. This was Lin Ming's ultimate attack that came at the price of burning his own life!

"What? You actually…!"

With a superiority in all aspects and controlling the entire situation so far, Tian Mingzi had held utter confidence. But now, as he saw Lin Ming suddenly erupt with such a terrifying striking power, even his complexion paled.

"Samsara of the heavens and earth, the myriad Laws shall die out, only my demonic path shall remain immortal and forever!"

Tian Mingzi's hands formed dao patterns in the air. In front of him, a gray wheel appeared. This wheel had tens of thousands of seal, each seal seeming to contain its own world. With tens of thousands of charms, it was like facing tens of thousands of worlds.

"Heaven Absorbing Demon Art – Counterforce!"

Tian Mingzi had used the transcendent divine might belonging to Empyrean Demondawn!

In the past, Tian Mingzi had entered Demondawn Heavenly Palace and studied the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art from Empyrean Demondawn. Although this transcendent divine might was the same one that Xiao Moxian used, it was actually far more formidable.

The Heaven Absorbing Demon Art could suck in others' abilities and then dissolve these abilities with demonic strength before using them to strike back at the enemy.

Heaven Absorbing Demon Art Counterforce was one of the attack states of the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art.

Underneath the hands of Xiao Moxian, the energy gushing forth from the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art was able to form a vortex of energy. But in Tian Mingzi's control, it was actually able to form a demon god disc.

In that moment, Lin Ming's long spear smashed into the demon god disc. A terrifying divine light shot out, piercing through the heavens, sundering the earth!

In that horrifying explosion, Tian Mingzi's 10,000 Demon Domain was completely destroyed!

Puff!

The moment that the 10,000 Demon Domain was destroyed, Tian Mingzi suffered a tremendous backlash that caused him to vomit blood.

As Tian Mingzi spat out a mouthful of blood in the air, he couldn't believe his own eyes. Lin Ming, with his middle Divine Sea cultivation, had actually wounded his avatar, who possessed the Law comprehensions of a Great World King as well as the spirit body of a Great World King?

Ka ka ka!

Underneath Lin Ming's attack, a final strike that cost half his blood essence, this demon god disc also began to crack!

"What!?"

Tian Mingzi was shocked. He began to withdraw but it was far too late.

The Phoenix Blood Spear rushed forth like a raging Azure Dragon, shattering that demon god disc and hurtling past its broken pieces, thrusting straight towards Tian Mingzi's heart.

"Do you really think this strike can kill me!?"

Tian Mingzi shouted out loud as he brought his sword slashing down on Lin Ming's spear light.

Bang!

Spear light and sword light collided. All sounds faded away. Tian Mingzi only felt a powerful force wash through him, sending his sword flying away. The meridians in his body had broken apart in countless places and blood poured out from his mouth, gushing into the skies.

In this strike, he had truly been grievously wounded by Lin Ming. A middle Divine Sea realm junior had broken his own domain and even severely wounded his avatar at the same time?

Tian Mingzi found this impossible to believe!

And several hundred miles away, this final strike had been seen by Nether Limitless and the others. All of them were incomparably shocked. They would never have dreamed that Lin Ming was powerful to such a degree that even their Honorable Master would be wounded to such an extent!

As Nether Limitless looked lost and dazed, there was a flash in front of his eyes. A figure seemed to teleport right in front of him.

This person's body was bathed in blood. He was like an asura demon that had crawled up from the blood ponds of hell!

“Lin... Lin Ming...”

Nether Limitless's body stiffened. At this moment, there was an excruciating pain in his chest. As he looked down, he saw Lin Ming's right hand had penetrated into his chest and grabbed onto his beating heart.

Chapter 1360 – Devil

Chapter 1360 – Devil

…

…

…

"No… no…"

Nether Limitless' voice trembled. His two hands gripped Lin Ming's forearms, a look of panic and fear coloring his eyes. Nether Limitless' entire body was shaking. The feeling of having his heart gripped by someone, able to be crushed at any time, was simply indescribably horrible.

No matter who it was, death was frightening. This was especially true for young and handsome elites like Nether Limitless who had a long and gloried future awaiting them.

"Why… for what…?"

Blood began to spill out from the corners of Nether Limitless' lips. He couldn't understand why after Lin Ming severely wounded Tian Mingzi, he hadn't continued his onslaught but had instead decided to kill him.

Puff!

Lin Ming suddenly extracted his palm, blood shooting outwards. In that moment, Nether Limitless' heart had been torn to shreds by Lin Ming. Nether Limitless' body shook, his vision suddenly blurring.

And as Lin Ming pulled back his hand, something appeared within his palm. This was Nether Limitless' spatial ring.

Peng!

The ring exploded, shattering to pieces. A massive number of magic tools, weapons, pills, and all sorts of wealth and treasures were scattered about. With a wave of his hand, Lin Ming instantly picked out a shuttle-type magic tool from this random bunch of items.

This was the space shuttle that Tian Mingzi had given to Nether Limitless. It was a magic tool that could be used to teleport through the void for short distances. Although this space shuttle had no attack power, it was still a very high grade spirit treasure. Before this, Nether Limitless had used this item to overtake Lin Ming.

To any martial artist below the Divine Lord realm, travelling with this space shuttle was several times faster than flying at full speed.

This was especially true for Lin Ming, who was severely wounded right now. He had even burnt half of his blood essence. Without this space shuttle, trying to escape would be harder than fleeing to heaven.

"So, this is what you wanted..."

Nether Limitless' glazed over eyes looked at the space shuttle in Lin Ming's hand. His vision was becoming increasingly fuzzy. Finally, he fell down from the skies. As he fell, his hand reached out as if he wanted to grasp something in the air. He wasn't willing to just drop down like this. Or, perhaps it would be more accurate to say that he wasn't willing to perish like this...

"If you wanted this... you could have told me... if you didn't say then how would I know..."

This ridiculous and random thought flashed through Nether Limitless' mind. Then, he crashed onto the scorched land, his blood splashing out with a big plop.

Lin Ming simply didn't bother paying any more attention to him. He brutally wiped off the spirit mark that Nether Limitless kept in the space shuttle with the Divine Dream Law, and then activated it with his Space Laws, instantly escaping into the void!

Currently, with Lin Ming's perfect fifth level Space Laws, wanting to unravel the utilization of this space shuttle wasn't difficult at all. And all around Lin Ming, the other 11 disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands did not dare to block his way at all. All of them kept silent, afraid to move. They were afraid that they would suffer the same fate as Nether Limitless.

It wasn't that Lin Ming didn't wish to kill off Tian Mingzi's avatar, but that strike just now had come at the cost of burning half his blood essence. For him to do this again was impossible, because if he did, that would mean burning all of the essence energy he possessed. At that time, not even a god would be able to save him!

And now, taking advantage of the grievously wounded Tian Mingzi and also the remaining strength from burning his blood essence, Lin Ming did the only thing left to him, and that was to escape!

Even a grievously wounded Tian Mingzi wasn't someone he could deal with. If they had continued to fight, then in less than three breaths of time, the strength he gained from combusting his blood essence would have disappeared. At that time, Lin Ming would only be able to sit where he was and die!

From the area that Lin Ming left, Tian Mingzi slowly floated upwards, his sword in his hand. His bodily flesh was ruined and he had less than 30% of his original strength remaining.

It wasn't that he didn't want to block Lin Ming's attack, but that he couldn't. When Lin Ming burnt his blood essence, he had temporarily reached a level of strength that surpassed Tian Mingzi himself.

Tian Mingzi's movements were slow. Without any expression, a strong aura exuded from his entire body. This was… killing intent!

A terrifying killing intent seemed to substantialize into essence within the void, locking down the surrounding space.

To Tian Mingzi, if Lin Ming were allowed to escape, his fate could be imagined. Now, all of the anger in his heart was swelling forth as killing intent.

As the other 11 disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands saw Tian Mingzi's current state, all of them turned pale. This was because a moment ago, due to their fear, they did not dare to hinder Lin Ming. Now, they feared that Tian Mingzi would vent his anger upon them. The present Tian Mingzi gave off a feeling as if he were a wounded beast that had lost all rationale.

Now that Lin Ming had escaped, it would be difficult to catch up to him.

Tian Mingzi only had his avatar right now. Although the avatar of a peerless powerhouse was fierce, it had a fatal flaw – the total amount of energy it had was limited.

Every bit used meant that much less!

Not just that, but once an avatar was seriously wounded, it wasn't able to restore itself. The nature of an ordinary avatar was that it was similar to a puppet; it was a one-time use creation.

Once an avatar was formed, there was also a time limit. As long as they existed, they would continue to expend energy at all times. This also doomed Tian Mingzi to not be able to catch up to Lin Ming. With less than 30% of his strength left and also with severe injuries, his strength would continue dwindling away until there was nothing left.

And wasn't wanting to chase Lin Ming easier said than done?

To Tian Mingzi's true form, a treasure like a space shuttle was useless, without any meaning at all. But in the lower realms, Tian Mingzi's avatar only had a Divine Sea realm cultivation. If this avatar were still in its peak state then it would still be able to just barely maintain the same speed as the space shuttle, but now, wanting to overtake it was simply impossible.

Once Tian Mingzi's avatar faded away, wanting to rely on these remaining 11 disciples to find him and capture him wasn't realistic at all. Even if they faced the weakened Lin Ming who had burnt half his blood essence, even if he were wounded so seriously that he couldn't recover for years, and even if these injuries were so deep that they affected his future cultivation, they still wouldn't be able to face him!

All of them were frightened by Lin Ming!

As the disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands realized this, they became increasingly horrified. This mission might end in failure! As for the heavy injuries that Tian Mingzi's avatar suffered, all of this would be reflected on Tian Mingzi's true self. When he took back his avatar, his cultivation would inevitably suffer damage.

How could they dare to withstand Tian Mingzi's anger?

"M-master… save… save me…"

An extremely weak and raspy voice came out. If these people present weren't martial artists with a high cultivation, they simply wouldn't have heard it.

This was the voice of Nether Limitless. He actually hadn't died yet, but was stubbornly clinging onto his last fading dregs of life.

The fear of death was enough to push one past the barriers of all other things they feared. Thus, even though Nether Limitless was facing this Tian Mingzi that was like a wild and wounded animal, he still called out to him for help!

His life was rapidly fading away.

Tian Mingzi lowered his head, glancing at Nether Limitless. He waved his hand and Nether Limitless' body flew forth until it was right in front of Tian Mingzi.

"Honorable Master… save… me… I don't want to die…"

Nether Limitless knew that if Tian Mingzi's true self was here, saving him wouldn't be a problem. But as for his avatar…

Tian Mingzi didn't have any expression on his face. His killing intent was hidden and his anger seemed to have subsided.

"Limitless, do you know why I had you bring my ring to the Sky Spill Planet?"

As Tian Mingzi asked this, Nether Limitless was simply an endless ocean of confusion. He didn't even have the ability to think about this question. But as for everyone else, they were all stunned.

Yes, why did Tian Mingzi have the 12 of them bring his avatar to the Sky Spill Planet?

In truth, Tian Mingzi's avatar could definitely descend to the Sky Spill Planet by himself.

These people originally thought that Tian Mingzi wanted to save the energy and lifespan of his avatar. Thus, he had sent them here so that the search for Lin Ming could be performed by them, and Tian Mingzi would be responsible for fighting.

But now, listening to the meaning behind his words, it wasn't as simple as this.

"Save… save me…" Nether Limitless could no longer understand Tian Mingzi's words. He simply emptily reached out a hand as if he wanted to hold onto Tian Mingzi. This was the same as a drowning person reaching out one last time for some final hope to appear.

"This avatar cannot absorb origin energy from the world and turn it into true essence, nor does it have any restorative ability. Once my spirit body has been damaged, I am unable to repair it. Although I was confident in defeating Lin Ming, I feared that there might be some accident. And if an accident occurred, like now, then I would need some ready-made flesh and blood and ready-made energy to replenish myself. Thus, I brought all you here…"

Tian Mingzi unhurriedly spoke, as if he was casually bringing them out to eat dinner. But as these words fell into the ears of those present, they all felt as if they had fallen into a lake of ice, their hands and feet turning ice cold!

Tian Mingzi wanted to treat them as food?

The reason they were brought to the Sky Spill Planet was to serve as reserve food?

"Master… save me…"

Nether Limitless' lips were pallid. As he spoke, his mind was in utter chaos.

Tian Mingzi faintly smiled and then thrust out his hand like a bolt of lightning.

Puff!

His hand punctured into Nether Limitless' chest, grasping onto Nether Limitless' already broken heart!

"Master….. Master….."

After having his heart grasped again, even if his mind was in chaos he still had a slight response. His eyes glazed over, dull and vacant.

"Limitless, mortals give birth to children so that during their old age, they have someone to care for them. So that after they are buried, their flesh and blood can continue to exist in society. But as for me, I wish for eternal life, so what use are children to me?

"Your life comes from me, and now… I will take it back!"

As Tian Mingzi spoke, a black vortex suddenly appeared around his hand. This black vortex completely covered Nether Limitless!

Heaven Absorbing Demon Art!

Tian Mingzi used Empyrean Demondawn's transcendent divine might. It could absorb the strength of others to be used for oneself!

At this time, Nether Limitless was incomparably weak without the least bit of ability to resist. All of his energy, his flesh and blood essence, all of it was sucked up by Tian Mingzi!

As Tian Mingzi's strength rapidly restored itself, Nether Limitless' life vitality rapidly faded. His eyes turned dark gray, sinking deep into their sockets. His hair withered and his skin wrinkled and dried up. This was just like a mortal man instantly aging a hundred years, rapidly deteriorating!

With Tian Mingzi's flesh and blood being nourished, his less than 30% remaining strength was now restored to over 40%!

The other disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands trembled in fear as they saw this. Tian Mingzi's majesty and power were far too heavy. If Tian Mingzi wanted to kill them, they would be slaughtered like ducks and chickens in a cage. How could ducks and chickens have the strength to resist?

"Scatter and flee!"

A disciple shouted out. Several people seemed to wake from a daze. They realized that they would absolutely die if they stayed, but if they ran away, there was a slim chance of survival!

"The lot of you really believe you can escape?"

Tian Mingzi cruelly smiled. At this time, a thick demonic energy lifted up in the air, completely locking down the space of the surrounding area. This was Tian Mingzi's domain – the Eternal Demon Domain.

"Ahhh!"

These disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands desperately attacked the Eternal Demon Domain, but it was simply impossible for them to shake it.

“Let’s fight him!”

A disciple shouted out. He turned around and hurtled towards Tian Mingzi!

Chapter 1361 – Once More Into the Blood Slaughter Steppes

Chapter 1361 – Once More Into the Blood Slaughter Steppes

…

…

…

When pushed into a corner, even a bunny would bite back. With a disciple taking the lead, some people immediately risked their lives to attack Tian Mingzi!

Tian Mingzi sneered. Right now he was indeed seriously wounded, but even if he only had 40% of his original strength left, he was still on the same level of strength as Lin Ming in his peak state. How could these young disciples of the Skydark Holy Lands possibly hope to contend with him?

Bang!

The power of the domain erupted. The two disciples in the lead suddenly felt the energy within their bodies be completely suppressed by Tian Mingzi's domain!

Tian Mingzi grasped both of their foreheads.

"Heaven Absorbing Demon Art!"

A black line shined forth. The two young elites had all of their blood vitality and energy directly drained dry by Tian Mingzi!

"Honorable Master, please forgive us!"

These young disciples didn't have the courage to face Tian Mingzi to begin with, and now that they saw just how great the disparity of strength was between them, that tiny bit of confidence they had left completely crumbled. They all knelt to the floor and began to beg for mercy.

Tian Mingzi's complexion was coldly indifferent. "You already know far too much. Although I can make a heart demon oath to restrain you, you will inevitably be captured by others and have your souls searched. If that were to happen, my affairs would naturally be exposed. If you can kindly and quietly die right now, I will treat your families well.

As Tian Mingzi spoke, his hands formed a wheel in the air. This was the wheel disk evolved from the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art. As the young disciples saw this, their faces turned ash-gray with despair, their hearts and minds quaking.

No matter what they did, no matter what they said, it wouldn't avert their inevitable deaths.

Every disciple of the Skydark Holy Lands was swallowed up by this wheel disk, turning into pure blood vitality and energy that was then absorbed by Tian Mingzi. Tian Mingzi felt his strength rapidly restoring itself.

Miserable wails and pained howls echoed through the skies. In just a moment, all 12 disciples that had been sent to the Sky Spill Planet had been sucked dry by Tian Mingzi!

12 geniuses of a Great World King influence had died a tragic and violent death!

Tian Mingzi didn't care about these losses at all.

To most World King influences, the reason they raised the new generation and trained the elites was all for the future posterity of their family and their sect. They hoped that once the older generation declined, the new one would take their place and allow their sect to carry on into a brighter future.

But to Tian Mingzi, the reason he raised juniors was only to raise underlings and increase the number of chess pieces he had. He needed them for key moments in order to complete his plans.

And now was the time to use these juniors!

Even though they were also a World King Holy Land, there was such a difference. This was because Tian Mingzi's ambitions were far too great. He wanted to become a True Divinity and seek the road to eternal life. The reason he founded the Skydark Holy Lands was all in order to create a tool to aid him in the future. If necessary, he was willing to discard the entire Skydark Holy Lands, and what did it matter to him if he did?

After absorbing these 12 disciples, Tian Mingzi's strength returned. He wasn't any weaker than he was when he first battled Lin Ming.

But in comparison, Lin Ming had already burnt half his blood essence and had received major wounds. Underneath these completely distortional physical states, the disparity between them was even more obvious!

………

Woosh!

The dazzling shuttle flashed through the void. In every blink of the eye, Lin Ming crossed 300-400 miles.

The shuttle passed through the void again and again. After innumerable times, when Lin Ming pierced through the void once more, vast and boundless blood red plains were presented before him!

Gloomy red clouds hung low above the plains, as if they were about to drop blood. All of the surroundings seemed constrained and depressed. These plains were called the Blood Slaughter Steppes!

After so many years away, Lin Ming had finally reappeared!

As Lin Ming entered the Blood Slaughter Steppes, his body violently shook. He nearly fell down from the space shuttle!

At this time, his nose and ears were dripping blood. His face was whiter than paper and his body was shivering.

“Lin Ming…”

In the Magic Cube space, the corners of Mo Eversnow’s eyes were wet with tears.

When Mo Eversnow had first begun combusting her soul, Lin Ming had felt a heart-piercing and gut-wrenching pain, both physical and emotional. But when Lin Ming had burnt half his blood essence, Mo Eversnow was also heartbroken.

To burn half his blood essence at once, that was something that would greatly affect Lin Ming’s future accomplishments. This loss was far too great!

“Lin Ming… why would you do that… in that battle, you burned half your blood essence. Do you know how bright your future is? But because of this…”

Lin Ming’s desperate gamble had indeed won them a slim chance of survival. But in Mo Eversnow’s eyes, this slim chance might not be able to be sustained.

For this unknown chance to save her and him, he had paid such a deep and painful price. Mo Eversnow felt a deep sadness in her heart because of this.

She transformed into a soul form in front of Lin Ming, gently stroking his cheeks. In her eyes, brilliant crystalline tears shined light diamonds.

“If I burn my blood essence, I can still find ways to make up for it. But Miss Mo, if you truly burnt your soul, you would have perished there. Even if I stepped into the realm of True Divinity in the future, there would still be nothing I could do!”

At this time, Lin Ming was bleeding from every orifice and his face was as pale as paper. But even so, he was still gently smiling. This smiling face was just like the honest expression of a neighborhood boy, as bright and warm as the rays of the sun. It was a rarely seen emotion on Lin Ming's face.

As Mo Eversnow saw this smile, her heart was touched once more. "Lin Ming, from now on, please call me senior-apprentice sister..."

Lin Ming had already joined the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, and in the future, when the Verdant Feather Holy Lands was reconstructed, he and Mo Eversnow would come from the same sect. It was right for him to call her senior-apprentice sister.

"Of course, Senior-apprentice Sister."

Lin Ming suddenly said. He didn't like to call her Miss Mo because he felt that this name was too distant, like a stranger. Even so, if he didn't call her Miss Mo, he didn't know what else to call her. He naturally couldn't call by her name, Eversnow. Throughout all these years, Mo Eversnow had the status of a half-master to him, and in Lin Ming's mind, he held nothing but the greatest respect for her.

As Lin Ming saw Mo Eversnow still anxious, he said, "Senior-apprentice Sister, rest assured that even if I burnt 50% of my blood essence, or even burnt 70% of my blood essence, as long as I don't die, I can still become an Empyrean in the future and become a True Divinity. Although it is difficult to restore my blood essence after burning so much, it isn't an impossible feat."

Although Lin Ming said this, Mo Eversnow felt a heaviness in her heart.

Restoring his blood essence; wasn't that easier said than done?

The stronger a martial artist was, the more vivid and vibrant their blood vitality was, the more difficult it was to restore their blood essence.

If one was a lower realms Life Destruction martial artist with an extremely sloppy foundation, then they could restore their blood essence in the lower realms by finding some heavenly materials. Of course, these so-called ‘heavenly materials’ would be nothing but scraps to the geniuses of a Great World King Holy Land, something that they wouldn’t bother picking up if they saw it on the side of the road.

This was also reasonable. For a lower realms Life Destruction martial artist, even if they burnt all of their blood essence without a single drop remaining, how much strength could they possibly display?

But for someone like Lin Ming, not only was his foundation incomparably solid and deep, but his blood vitality, his fires of life, were like raging flames that would never subside. Wanting to restore his blood essence would be extremely difficult. Even if Lin Ming opened the Gate of Life and gained the ability to restore his blood essence, the most he could restore was 10-20%.

Mo Eversnow seemed to want to say something, but Lin Ming first said, “Senior-apprentice Sister, there is no need to speak. I have already considered everything, it’s just that there are many matters that even I am unsure of what will happen…”

As Lin Ming spoke, his complexion immediately changed.

Just now, he felt a strong sense lock onto him. This sense was just like a leech latching onto his body; it was impossible for him to shield against it!

This sense was gloomy, dreadful, and powerful. There was no need to consider who it came from… there could only be one person – Tian Mingzi!

Lin Ming never expected that his attack that cost half his blood essence would be able to destroy Tian Mingzi’s avatar. But, he never imagined that Tian Mingzi would recover so quickly, and would even be chasing after him right now!

At this time, Lin Ming’s situation was extremely poor. If he was overtaken, there would be nothing awaiting him but death!

"Tian Mingzi?"

Mo Eversnow saw Lin Ming's changing expression and correctly guessed that Tian Mingzi had locked onto him.

Tian Mingzi was simply far too formidable and he had studied countless different arcane abilities. After remembering a person's aura, no matter if they ascended to heaven or hell, he could still track them down!

The only possibility for Lin Ming to prevent this was if he cultivated the Divine Dream Law's appearance changing technique to the point of shifting his bones and even changing the aura of his soul. But now, his proficiency in this skill was far too lacking.

"Go!" Lin Ming activated the space shuttle to tear through the void once more!

In just an incense stick of time after Lin Ming disappeared, at the point where he had been standing, the void was torn open. A black-robed Tian Mingzi slowly walked out.

Although his avatar only had a Divine Sea realm cultivation, he didn't need a magic tool to shift through the void of the lower realms and chase Lin Ming. This wasn't because Lin Ming's space shuttle was slow, but because Tian Mingzi's Space Laws were far too fierce. Although the cultivation of his avatar was lacking, it had actually inherited the Laws of Tian Mingzi's true body.

"These plains…"

Tian Mingzi stopped where he was, not immediately entering.

He could make out the strangeness of the Blood Slaughter Steppes with a single glance. By all reasoning, this was a place that shouldn't exist in the worlds of the lower realms. However, as he thought of the ash-gray light barrier that surrounded the entirety of the Sky Spill Planet, he could accept this.

"Could it be that the unknown master who laid down the barrier to protect the Sky Spill Continent did so because of these red plains? These plains have the aura of a curse... could this be left behind by the transcendent divine might, the God Curse Art...?"

Tian Mingzi thought to himself. His intuition was not wrong; the Blood Slaughter Steppes was indeed cursed.

In the Holy Demon Continent, the Blood Slaughter Steppes was known as a forbidden land for all high stage Life Destruction martial artists and above. If a high stage Life Destruction martial artist were to enter, they would be fine at the start, but afterwards they would eventually suffer a tragic and miserable death in the future. This was the result of a curse!

Once or twice couldn't be considered anything at all. But, in the past, many Divine Sea masters of the Holy Demon Continent, Demon Emperors, Fey Emperors, and countless others, had been killed off by the curse of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. After that, there was no high stage Life Destruction martial artist that dared to enter the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

Thus, the Blood Slaughter Steppes and the Skysplit Towers here were all considered a great arena for martial artists below the Life Destruction realm.

For high stage Life Destruction martial artists and Divine Sea martial artists, unless they became twelve-winged Heavenly Demons beforehand in the Skysplit Towers, they would be cursed by the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

"God Curse Art... this shouldn't have been deliberately used. Rather, two extreme masters once battled here, and one of them used the God Curse Art. The aftermath of that battle covered this entire region, cursing this land. What a terrifying transcendent divine might. Even after tens of thousands of years or even hundreds of thousands of years, this land still remains affected as before, without the curse dissipating."

Tian Mingzi's avatar had inherited the experiences of his true self. He quickly realized the reason for this cursed land.

In the past, those characters that fought were likely Empyreans. But even if they were Empyreans and the aftermath of their battle was spread out here, it should still have faded away with time…

Chapter 1362 – Into the Eternal Demon Abyss Once More

Chapter 1362 – Into the Eternal Demon Abyss Once More

…

…

…

It was for a full half hour that Tian Mingzi stood quietly in front of the Blood Slaughter Steppes. Only then did he start to slowly fly in.

The remaining curse of an Empyrean master, even if it wasn't done on purpose, and even if it was just the aftermath from a great battle 100,000 years ago, still had to be dealt with carefully.

Of course, it was Tian Mingzi's avatar that was entering the Blood Slaughter Steppes and it would be his avatar that withstood the curse. Even if his avatar wasn't able to avoid the power of the curse, it wouldn't instantly kill him upon entering. The power of this kind of curse would often take days, weeks, or even months before it manifested into a visible role.

"If Lin Ming flew in here, does that mean there is something special about this place? Could these blood red plains possibly be the reason why Lin Ming was able to become the number one genius of the Divine Realm, even though he originated from the lower realms?"

Tian Mingzi couldn't help but think of this. He felt increasingly sure that this trip to the Sky Spill Planet was the right choice. Who would have thought that a world of the lower realms would actually possess such a heaven-shaking secret?

“Lin Ming, I thought you were a dark star, but I never imagined you would be my lucky star too. Without you, how would I know about the lucky chances here? But what a pity, no matter what secrets you possess, all of them will be mine! Hahaha!”

Tian Mingzi laughed out loud. As he flew into the Blood Slaughter Steppes, his speed increased.

………..

At this time, at one of the Blood Slaughter Steppes’ 12 Skysplit Towers, Polaris Tower –

On Polaris Tower’s fourth floor, in an extravagant grand hall, seven or eight old men in long robes were sitting around a circular table, discussing the candidacy of a new High Lord.

The supreme master of a Skysplit Tower was the Tower Master, but beneath the Tower Master were the High Lords. These High Lords were all previous geniuses of the Skysplit Towers. After passing through countless life or death massacres, they slowly climbed to the position of a High Lord.

These seven or eight High Lords hadn’t been in their position for very long. If one had to think of a reason, it was because of the great catastrophe that occurred at the Blood Slaughter Steppes 10 years ago. Because of the catastrophe, several Tower Masters, even more High Lords, and the previous Steppes Master himself had died. The Steppes Master had been replaced by a human, causing the leadership of the 12 Skysplit Towers to be reshuffled.

That sort of terrifying earthquake had never happened even in the last 10,000 years of the Blood Slaughter Steppes!

And the current Steppes Master was incomparably mysterious. Since becoming the Steppes Master he had yet to be seen.

Some rumors said that he had closed up deep in seclusion, and some rumors said that he had entered the Eternal Demon Abyss. There were even some people that said he had broken through the void with his martial arts and ascended.

But, no matter which view it was, there was one thing that everyone agreed upon, and that was that the current Steppes Master was one of the most terrifying existences in the entirety of the Holy Demon Continent!

The current Tower Master of Polaris Tower was someone who had climbed up the chaos left behind by that disaster. His strength was decent to begin with and it was said that he had the support of the current Steppes Master. Thus, his prestige had soared to the heavens, and even the several supervisory Elders of the Blood Slaughter Steppes treated him as an equal.

Facing this Tower Master that held true power, the High Lords present were all cautious and in awe. They were afraid to meet the eyes of the Polaris Tower Master.

The candidacy of a new High Lord was an important matter for any Skysplit Tower. The other High Lords were all slowly waiting for the final decision of the Polaris Tower Master.

As the Polaris Tower Master was about to say something, the entire meeting hall shook. The power of space suddenly violently shook! There were High Lords that understood the Space Laws, but even they couldn’t understand just why such a terrifying aura had covered the entire meeting hall!

“What is happening!?”

Everyone was shocked. There was a giant protective array formation that surrounded the periphery of Polaris Tower, and the inside was also covered with layers upon layers of array formations with countless protections. Numerous array formations protected the meeting hall in a giant sphere. They just couldn’t understand why a dreadful aura suddenly shrouded the entire area.

“Who is it!?”

The Polaris Tower Master immediately stood up, his hand tracing his spatial ring. At this time, in front of everyone, the void was torn apart and a young man with a pale face and black robes fell down from a space shuttle, appearing in the meeting hall like a ghost.

As the people present saw this, their eyes widened like dishes.

There were no transmission arrays in the meeting hall. If this black-robed man hadn't gone through a transmission array, then could he have actually torn through the void with his bare hands and directly teleported here!?

Not just that, but the meeting hall and Skysplit Tower itself was filled with layers of array formations!

Could a late Divine Sea realm master really be so terrifying?

As the leader of the people here, the Polaris Tower Master had a nervous expression. In facing such an uninvited visitor, they were all in a critical situation!

However, as he saw Lin Ming's face, he was completely startled. The horror and fear on his face immediately changed into shock and incredulous disbelief.

At once, a deep sense of awe and reverence swelled up within him. He knelt upon the ground.

"Subordinate greets the Steppes Master!"

The Polaris Tower Master recognized Lin Ming. When Lin Ming killed the last Steppes Master, he had appointed new supervisory Elders and Tower Masters. The Polaris Tower Master had been one of these people.

As for the so-called 'support' of the Steppes Master, that was the spell that Lin Ming had implanted within their bodies. If they had the thought of ever betraying Lin Ming, the spell would activate and they would be reduced to ash.

But it was because of this relationship that they were able to be thought of as trusted subordinates of Lin Ming. This was because of the spell in their bodies. If someone dared to kill them, Lin Ming would also know of this, and nobody in the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes had the courage to move against Lin Ming. Lin Ming's fame and prestige was far too great. Initially, he had broken through the traps of his enemies and slaughtered them like chickens. Even under the onslaught of two Divine Sea masters, Lin Ming had still killed them. As for the others, all he had to do was open his domain and they all died!

Against such a terrifying character, how could anyone dare to revolt?

"Steppes Master? This black-clothed youth is the mythical Steppes Master? One of the peak existences of the entire Holy Demon Continent?"

As the other High Lords heard the Polaris Tower Master call out Lin Ming's name, they were all stunned speechless. This sort of feeling was the same as an ordinary Holy Lord of the Divine Realm suddenly encountering a peak Empyrean.

Several of them immediately kneeled on the ground, but some others were frozen solid.

"Open the transmission array, I must go to the Eternal Demon Abyss!"

Lin Ming succinctly said, not bothering with how the other people here responded. Time was of the essence; he could feel Tian Mingzi approaching him faster and faster!

"Eternal Demon Abyss?" The Polaris Tower Master asked in a daze, "The Eternal Demon Abyss is currently undergoing a period of eruption. If you go there now..."

Every dozen years or so, or even several dozen years, the Eternal Demon Abyss would erupt. These eruptions did not come at a fixed time, and once the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted, everything inside would perish!

At the same time, after every eruption, a massive number of demon god bones and other treasures would spew forth from deep within the Eternal Demon Abyss. These were treasures that people from the Blood Slaughter Steppes would risk their lives to obtain.

Lin Ming frowned. The Eternal Demon Abyss was extremely mystical. Although his strength wasn't comparable at all to that of the weak martial artists of the lower realms, in his current state, it was hard to predict what would happen when he ventured into the Eternal Demon Abyss!

"Open it!"

Lin Ming said without hesitation. Although there was danger when the Eternal Demon Abyss erupted, there was still a slim ray of hope. But if he were to be overtaken by Tian Mingzi, that was certain death!

"Yes… yes…"

The Polaris Tower Master quickly nodded as he rushed to the Eternal Demon Abyss transmission array.

After putting blood demon crystals in the sockets, the transmission array began to start.

As the transmission array activated, a faint voice resounded near the ear of the Polaris Tower Master, "There will be a powerhouse soon catching up. If you don't want to be caught up in the chaos and die then hurry up and leave!"

The Polaris Tower Master was stunned. A powerhouse? He didn't know who Lin Ming was speaking of, but it was clear from his meaning that this person could easily annihilate everyone here.

Lin Ming believed that Tian Mingzi would appear directly at this transmission array. If there was no one here, then Tian Mingzi naturally wouldn't kill everyone on the other levels of Skysplit Tower; he would be chasing Lin Ming at full speed.

The moment before Lin Ming's figure vanished, he flicked a seal from his fingers. This seal was formed from the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation. After it fell onto the transmission array, it exploded upon impact, completely ruining the transmission array.

The Eternal Demon Abyss was buried deep underneath the 12 Skysplit Towers. If one didn't use a transmission array, then although there were still ways to enter, it would be very troublesome. Lin Ming didn't believe that destroying this transmission array would be enough to stop Tian Mingzi. Tian Mingzi was skilled in the Space Laws. Even if he had to tunnel tens of thousands of miles downwards, it would still take only a brief period of time.

Lin Ming destroying the transmission array left the Polaris Tower Master frightened. He didn't know what was happening, but he immediately did as Lin Ming said and quickly left this level.

After half an hour passed, a black light flashed in the area where Lin Ming and the Polaris Tower Master had been standing. Space was torn apart and a black-clothed Tian Mingzi appeared.

He glanced at the destroyed transmission array, a demonic smile splitting his face.

Chapter 1363 – Eruption of the Demon Abyss

Chapter 1363 – Eruption of the Demon Abyss

…

…

…

"So the secret is down here?"

After tracking the aura of the transmission array, Tian Mingzi was sure that Lin Ming had escaped deep underground.

In other words, deep beneath these blood red plains, there was a separate world with ancient ruins of the past. And, these ancient ruins clearly had some heaven-shaking secret. It was highly possible that these secrets concerned the extreme Empyrean master who had set down the enchantment around the Sky Spill Planet.

After chasing Lin Ming all the way here, Tian Mingzi had almost accurately deduced the reasoning behind the enchantment that protected the Sky Spill Planet as well as the reason for the curse left behind on the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

"Lin Ming, whether you ascend to the heavens or descend to the hells, you cannot escape me. I want to see just what secrets the Sky Spill Planet has!"

Tian Mingzi's sword sliced through the void. Using the energy fluctuations of the transmission array as a basis, he forcefully opened a transmission array and began descending deep underground.

………..

In the vast space underground, the infernal energy was so thick that it nearly condensed into bubbles.

The entire area was pitch black, with a faint gray haze floating about. The only light came from the tiny dots of starlight in the skies, but even this light was blocked out by the fog. If a mortal were to stand here, they would simply be blind.

This was the Eternal Demon Abyss. After so many years, Lin Ming had finally returned!

The so-called Eternal Demon Abyss was originally a massive tunnel that penetrated through the entire Sky Spill Planet, ending in the Sea of Miracles on the other side. This was caused by an Empyrean level powerhouse striking right through the center of the Sky Spill Planet.

And in truth, when people referred to the Eternal Demon Abyss, they often referred to the 10,000 mile surrounding area.

This was a very dangerous area, but if one was strong enough they could come here to seek their own lucky chances before safely leaving. As for the true central Eternal Demon Abyss, even if the highest under the heavens of the Holy Demon Continent were to enter, they would not be able to return!

Lin Ming had once seen a massive shape similar to a horned black dragon God Beast in the center of the Eternal Demon Abyss. Its body was thousands of miles long and its terrifying roar had blown away all the young elites that were still several hundred miles away.

This was an existence that even a Divine Realm World King would fear!

The last time Lin Ming entered the Eternal Demon Abyss, he had stumbled into the thousand mile forbidden zone. That was the thousand mile range around the true Eternal Demon Abyss. It was known as a true life forbidden zone, a place that no one could make it out of alive.

And this time, Lin Ming had returned to the Eternal Demon Abyss to go to the center. He wanted to venture deep into it and find the most core inheritances that Empyrean Primordius had left behind!

As for what he would meet along the way, Lin Ming wasn't sure. And as for reaching there alive, he wasn't confident in that either.

Lin Ming stepped on the space shuttle, wanting to teleport forwards once more. But, he suddenly discovered that the energy within the Eternal Demon Abyss was extremely chaotic. If he tried to teleport here, he might stir up some terrifying space storm. With Lin Ming's current condition, stepping into this sort of space storm would needlessly add wounds onto his already serious injuries. There would even be a chance of death.

Lin Ming remembered that the Polaris Tower Master had said that the Eternal Demon Abyss was in a state of eruption, able to erupt at any time. This meant that the Eternal Demon Abyss was several times more dangerous.

"Che!"

Lin Ming frowned. He put away the space shuttle and began flying towards the center of the Eternal Demon Abyss. At this point, there was no time to delay. His injuries were great and now that he couldn't use the space shuttle, he would have to fly through the Eternal Demon Abyss at high speeds in its most dangerous period. This was a tremendous pressure on him!

Strong winds howled. Lin Ming's face was pale.

To fly so crazily in the Eternal Demon Abyss was naturally extremely conspicuous.

"Roar!"

With a bass and shrill roar, seven or eight evil beings shot up from the ground, rushing towards Lin Ming!

These evil beings were formed from infernal energy. With the Eternal Demon Abyss in an erupting state, the infernal energy here was becoming increasingly thick and terrifying. This caused these evil beings to be that much stronger.

If these were ordinary times, a Life Destruction powerhouse would be more than enough to deal with these evil beings. But now, even a Divine Sea powerhouse would find it difficult.

The erupting state of the Eternal Demon Abyss made it an absolute land of death for the martial artists of the Holy Demon Continent.

The Phoenix Blood Spear swept out. These evil beings were instantly slain by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming didn't even slow down. He turned into a beam of light, breaking into the thick fog!

In this dense fog, there were even more evil beings!

After Lin Ming hurtled into the fog, these evil beings awoke like a pack of disturbed flies. They began to rabidly plunge towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's complexion was cold and callous. The Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands stabbed out again and again, and the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation roared outwards.

Chi chi chi!

Thunder and fire rolled up like a wave. Whether it was the power of fire or thunder, both were nemeses of evil ghosts and spirits. These evil beings were all charred to ash!

Lin Ming continued to barrel forwards, not slowing down in the least.

However, as time passed, more and more evil beings rushed at Lin Ming, forcing him to cut down more and more. Slaying 80-90 evil beings was fine, but killing 800-900 evil beings was another matter altogether. Lin Ming was rapidly consuming his energy.

If Lin Ming was in his peak state, he could restore his strength with just the Gate of Healing, the Gate of Life, and the supreme dragon bone. But now, Lin Ming's condition was extremely poor.

Blood slowly trickled down from Lin Ming's ears and eyes.

As Mo Eversnow saw this, she felt her heart pained with grief.

Good fortune never came in pairs and misfortune never came alone. Even though they had escaped to the Eternal Demon Abyss, they had actually run into here during the erupting state!

These evil beings were a hundred times more formidable and numerous than they ordinarily were!

Mo Eversnow quietly poured her soul force into Lin Ming's body, helping lighten the burden on him.

However, Mo Eversnow's soul force was only usable in limited amounts. Once she used it, she would incur damage to her divine soul. It would be hard for her to restore herself.

The more powerful someone was, the more difficult it was to restore their soul force. In the past, when Mo Eversnow had gone into a deep slumber, she had only regained consciousness after absorbing a massive amount of blood essence as well as the dragon bone marrow. From this it could be seen just how many resources were required.

"Senior-apprentice Sister, don't!"

Lin Ming stubbornly sealed away his inner world, refusing entry to Mo Eversnow's energies.

"Lin Ming!" Mo Eversnow cried out anxiously. Her bright eyes were wet with tears. "Do you want to die here?"

"I know what I'm doing!"

Lin Ming no longer spoke. In absolute silence, he only madly and crazily fought!

Whether it was evil beings, corpses, demonic spirits, or ghosts that appeared in front of Lin Ming, he cut down everything in his path!

He simply didn't care about them or about himself. At this time, Lin Ming was like a demon god that had lost his mind!

1000 miles, 2000 miles, 3000 miles…

Lin Ming pierced deeper and deeper into the Eternal Demon Abyss, endlessly slaughtering. Soon, he was 9000 miles in. Once he went another 1000 miles in, that would be the true Eternal Demon Abyss.

At this distance, the fog had already dispersed. As Lin Ming looked out in the distance, he could see brilliant black flames burning in the distant horizon, connecting the heavens and the earth. In the rivers of stars above the skies, a vast amount of star light sprinkled down, connected together with that black flame as if the galaxy were falling downwards!

This was the true Eternal Demon Abyss!

And at this time, Lin Ming suddenly felt a terrifying killing intent shroud over him. Compared to before, this sense was far more intense!

He knew that Tian Mingzi would arrive soon!

After so many twists and turns, Tian Mingzi had finally entered the Eternal Demon Abyss, and now both of them were in the same space!

With Tian Mingzi's speed, even if the power of space was in chaos and he couldn't teleport, he was still several times faster than Lin Ming!

The 1000 miles around the Eternal Demon Abyss was known as the thousand mile forbidden zone. To Revolving Core geniuses of the Eternal Demon Abyss, as well as many

High Lords and even Tower Masters, this was a land of no return. Once one entered, that meant nearly guaranteed death!

Even in the past when Lin Ming entered this place, he still had to expend a great deal of effort and take many risks before escaping with the guidance of Demonshine.

Now, the Eternal Demon Abyss was in a period of eruption and the thousand mile forbidden zone was a hundred times more dangerous than usual. Lin Ming's wounds were extremely heavy too; this would make it far more difficult for him to push forwards.

There was a possibility that Lin Ming would be overtaken by Tian Mingzi before he was able to enter the Eternal Demon Abyss.

"Lin Ming, you've been overdrawing your strength this entire way, adding wounds upon your previous wounds. You have even burnt half your blood essence. If this continues then you will die..."

As Mo Eversnow looked at Lin Ming in such a state, she felt as if someone had pulled out her heart. She hated herself and her inability to help Lin Ming.

As Lin Ming felt Tian Mingzi's killing intent rapidly approaching, he didn't immediately rush into the thousand mile forbidden zone. Rather, he stopped where he was.

He was rapidly calculating possible routes to take.

Lin Ming's original idea was to enter the Eternal Demon Abyss and borrow the strange and unknown power of the Eternal Demon Abyss to protect him. If he were lucky, then there was a chance that Tian Mingzi would perish inside.

But now, he had no idea whether or not Tian Mingzi had the possibility of perishing in the Eternal Demon Abyss.

The crux was that with Lin Ming's current condition, if he were to enter the depths of the Eternal Demon Abyss, he might be the first one to perish.

At this moment, Lin Ming could only make one desperate gamble!

He didn't plan on going deep into the Eternal Demon Abyss, but prepared to go somewhere else first.

After he resolutely made this decision, he adjusted his direction and rapidly flew somewhere else.

"Lin Ming, where are you going?"

Mo Eversnow was stunned. Lin Ming wasn't taking a straight line to the Eternal Demon Abyss but was curving around. This would naturally take him longer.

"To the ancient grave of the goddess!"

Lin Ming suddenly said.

Over 10 years ago, when Lin Ming had entered the thousand mile forbidden zone for the first time, because he had been attacked by several corpse devils and then chased after them, he had managed to stumble upon the ancient grave of the goddess.

The ancient grave of the goddess held four coffins, each one carved from the darkest obsidian rock.

The first three coffins had held all sorts of heavenly materials produced in the Eternal Demon Abyss. Lin Ming guessed that these heavenly materials were once collected by the corpse devils who occupied this tomb.

But in the last coffin, there was actually the corpse of the goddess.

Because the body of this goddess exuded an infinite majesty and might, the corpse devils simply weren't able to approach her. Thus, she retained her pure and untainted form.

Even though it was a corpse, the vitality of the goddess was more vibrant than that of a living person. Her entire being emitted a bright and exuberant aura; this was the vitality of life.

Even now, Lin Ming had no idea as to what the status of this goddess was.

At this time, because it was far too difficult to enter the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming decided to change directions and go to the grave of the goddess first.

Lin Ming's memory was extremely good. He could remember the exact position of the goddess' grave.

In the past, because Lin Ming didn't understand the Space Laws, he had nearly become lost in the thousand mile forbidden zone. But now, that sort of situation wouldn't occur. As long as he remembered the position of the goddess' ancient grave, he could arrive there directly.

"The ancient grave of the goddess, are you thinking to..."

As Mo Eversnow spoke, Lin Ming had already broken into the thousand mile forbidden zone. As soon as he entered the thousand mile forbidden zone, many evil spirits threw themselves at Lin Ming. These evil beings were far more formidable than the ones before!

Lin Ming grit his teeth, opening the Eight Inner Hidden Gates as he fought with everything he had!

Chapter 1364 – The Phantom within the Ancient Grave

Chapter 1364 – The Phantom within the Ancient Grave

…

…

…

From the time that Lin Ming entered the thousand mile forbidden zone until he reached the tomb of the goddess, he had killed countless evil spirits.

These evil spirits were 10 times more dense than outside the thousand mile forbidden zone and they were also far stronger.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation howled in the air. Lin Ming rushed through groups of demonic beings, dozens upon dozens of them instantly being charred to ash that was scattered in the wind.

At this time, Lin Ming's entire body was bathed in blood and the treasure armor he wore was nearly broken to pieces. He was a flickering fading flame in the deep dark.

But at this moment, Lin Ming saw a dark gray mountain appear in front of him.

This mountain was barren and desolate, without a single blade of grass growing upon it.

Around this mountain faint fluctuations of space were exuded. This also meant that there was some hidden cave dwelling within this mountain.

“It’s here.”

Lin Ming wouldn’t remember incorrectly; this was where the tomb of the goddess was. Although this mountain like plain and non-descript, the truth was that there was already an accessible channel leading to the tomb, otherwise it would have been impossible for those corpse devils to enter this ancient grave.

Lin Ming closed his eyes, spreading his senses and soon locating the entrance.

Looking at it, it seemed like a stone wall, but Lin Ming knew that this was merely an illusion.

He pressed his hands against that stone wall and pushed through. At that time, he felt as if he had passed through some gate made of mercury, entering a distorted space barrier before everything around him began to light up.

Lin Ming had finally returned to the tomb of the ancient goddess. This dark cave was filled thick with dust. The ancient passage, the weathered stone walls, everything had the taste of endless passing years.

In the cave there were four coffins. Three of them were already open. Only the fourth coffin was sealed. This coffin emitted a vast aura, as if there were some ancient monarch buried within it.

Lin Ming slowly walked to that coffin and respectfully bowed, “Deeply sleeping senior, today this junior has fallen into dire danger, thus I apologize for offending you.”

Lin Ming quietly said before he pushed open the coffin lid.

The goddess in the coffin was still lying down as she was all those years before.

Her skin, her body, everything seemed carved from the most perfect, exquisite jade in the world, as if it were formed from the essence of the stars and moon.

Her long black hair was thick and glossy as it lay pooled within the coffin, like waves in an ocean of ink. Her face glowed with an intangible light and one could even make out the faintest traces of blood vessels beneath her skin, seeming as if blood was flowing within them.

These fluctuations of life appeared all around the goddess. If one didn't know otherwise, they might think that this goddess had simply fallen asleep here and was ready to wake up at any moment.

This was an extraordinary woman. She was a fairy of the night, a sublime goddess formed from the splendor and glory of the universe.

"An ancient ruler!"

After seeing the goddess once more, Lin Ming's experience far surpassed what it was in the past. He could increasingly feel just how powerful the goddess was.

Lin Ming originally thought that the goddess was someone important to Empyrean Primordius but her strength was lacking, and that she had been relying on the protections of Empyrean Primordius to lay here filled with life vitality 100,000 years after her death.

But now, Lin Ming had completely changed his thoughts.

This goddess was likely amazingly powerful. Flowing all around her were the light fluctuations of the Life Laws. As heaven and earth origin energy gathered about her, it turned into spiritual beings that floated all around.

To die and still have Law fluctuations around them 100,000 years later, it was clear that this woman's understandings into the Laws had reached a breathtaking degree.

"Miss Mo, do you think there is a chance you can possess her body?"

Lin Ming slowly said as he looked at the goddess in the coffin.

To have Mo Eversnow possess the mortal body of the goddess was one of Lin Ming's ideas before he had entered the Eternal Demon Abyss. But, he also knew that wanting to do this was an enormous risk!

This was because the mortal body of the goddess was supported with the will of Empyrean Primordius. Empyrean Primordius might not be willing to see the goddess' body taken possession of by Mo Eversnow, turning into someone else's.

Mo Eversnow's eyebrows jumped up. Take possession of the goddess' body?

Mo Eversnow had once had this idea before, but she knew this goddess was no ordinary figure. Her power far surpassed Mo Eversnow even during her peak.

As for she herself, all she had left was her weakened soul. If she tried to possess this woman's body, it was hard to imagine what would happen.

But now, with Tian Mingzi rapidly approaching, Mo Eversnow had no choice. She could only take this gamble!

Without a word, her soul flew out from the Magic Cube, turning into a soul form in the air. Mo Eversnow's soul form wore a long blue dress, her body exuding a crystalline light, as if she were made from countless shattered crystals. It was an enchanting and dreamy sight, like a dream that was soon to fade.

Mo Eversnow clenched her teeth, wanting to rush into the coffin. But at this time, Lin Ming stepped in front of Mo Eversnow, blocking her way, "I'll go first!"

With this, Lin Ming revolved the Divine Dream Law to the limit. His complete sense, his will, his divine soul, he focused everything on the coffin, taking the first step to submerge his consciousness into the goddess' body before Mo Eversnow.

The area Lin Ming chose to enter was the chest of the goddess.

As soon as he entered, Lin Ming felt his mind tremble. Immediately, his soul and will arrived in a completely separate space.

This was a vast and starry world, as if it were the infinite universe itself.

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He wasn't a stranger to this starry world. Many years ago when he was still at the Revolving Core, he had stumbled upon the tomb of the goddess and had also come to this starry world that was formed from a world of will.

Within these starry skies was a terrifying existence.

As this thought passed through Lin Ming's mind, a massive amount of life origin energy gushed towards him like an endless tide.

This energy was pure and vibrant. It smashed into Lin Ming's body like a tide against the shore.

Luckily, Lin Ming was already prepared. As his body was pushed back by this energy, he steadily fell in the void before coming to a stop high in the skies.

He looked up. In front of him, in the void, in the horizon, as if it were close at hand and also immeasurably far, was a powerfully beating blood red heart.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

This was a horrifying sound. Every beat seemed to strike upon Lin Ming's fires of life, causing all of the blood vitality within his body to resonate and want to come gushing out.

This was the heart of a Great Emperor. This was the heart that Empyrean Primordius had left behind!

This heart had already been beating for 100,000 years, but its blood vitality was still as potent and boundless, and its life force remained like an endless ocean, unending. Every beat of this great heart caused the void to shake.

Even after leaving its body for 100,000 years, this heart continued to beat onwards. Moreover, it contained a terrifying vitality, as if it were destined to beat until the oceans dried and the world cracked, beating on until the end of all times.

This aura, as if all existence were beneath it, as if it alone ruled the vast cosmos, caused Lin Ming to recall Empyrean Primordius' words that he had once left behind in the Road of Emperor – "The masterless river of stars in the endless cosmos, I shall rewrite the infinite history!"

"Senior Primordius!"

Lin Ming shouted out as loudly as he could, not caring whether or not Empyrean Primordius could hear him.

In those vast starry skies, Lin Ming's voice seemed especially lonely. There was no response.

At this time, Lin Ming didn't have any time to delay further. He grit his teeth and flew towards that Great Emperor's heart!

In what seemed like an incomparably long time but also a mere instant, Lin Ming arrived in front of that great beating heart. In that moment, a wild and brutal wave of blood vitality swept up around Lin Ming, turning the entire starry world into a blur.

When Lin Ming saw his surroundings become clear once more, he saw that in the void, there was a massive planet in front of him. This planet was covered in dark and gloomy clouds. The land was endless and a great aura exuded from this planet; it was faintly familiar to Lin Ming.

This was… the Sky Spill Planet?

Lin Ming was startled as he thought this. This should be the Sky Spill Planet, but it was also different from the Sky Spill Planet in his memories.

At this time, the starry skies were ripped open and a giant portal appeared in the air. Countless powerhouses began emerging from this portal. These powerhouses each had a vague appearance and the ones in the lead all emitted a strange aura. This aura was similar to that of the mysterious black-robed person that Lin Ming had killed at the Demondawn Great World. In other words, there was a possibility these people were all from the saint race.

After these people appeared, they moved towards the Sky Spill Planet and immediately launched their attacks!

For a time, the void was shattered as terrifying fluctuations of energy wantonly bombarded the Sky Spill Planet. Lin Ming thought that the Sky Spill Planet would be destroyed, and every single life living on the planet would also perish in a miserable death.

But at this time, an energy barrier appeared around the skies of the Sky Spill Planet, blocking all the attacks.

Energy erupted in turbulent blasts and the energy barrier shook, but, it never broke.

Lin Ming’s eyes widened. He recognized that this barrier was the barrier that currently protected the Sky Spill Planet. It was the protection that Empyrean Primordius had laid down so long ago.

Empyrean Primordius had used the Sky Spill Planet as the foundation, and after many years of work, the protective array formation he laid down was incredibly firm. It was even able to resist the joint attacks of so many powerhouses without being destroyed.

And at this time, in the dark skies of the Sky Spill Planet, the thick clouds were torn apart and a Black Dragon thousands of miles long roared its way outwards.

This Black Dragon emitted a terrifying pressure as if it were a celestial body itself. On the back of this Black Dragon was a black-clothed man. He was tall and strong and he held a 10 foot long halberd in his hands. It was impossible to make out his face.

As Lin Ming saw this black-clothed man, his mind shook. This man was Empyrean Primordius!

He had the atmosphere of a Great Emperor, and that Black Dragon he was riding on was that horned black dragon that Lin Ming had seen in the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Without a doubt, the scene replaying in front of him was the great war from 100,000 years ago that played out on the Sky Spill Planet!

And among Empyrean Primordius' opponents, there were powerhouses from the saint race!

100,000 years ago, besides Empyrean Thunder Punishment, there were also many saints that were involved in that tragedy. At that time, Empyrean Primordius had already been one of the few characters that stood upon the very peak of the Divine Realm. The reason that he had suffered severe wounds during this war and possibly even perished afterwards was all because of the saint race.

Chapter 1365 – Blood Vitality Entering the Body

Chapter 1365 – Blood Vitality Entering the Body

…

…

…

The war was staged in the endless starry skies. Both sides had countless masters. Lin Ming saw a man holding a blue scepter that controlled lightning. During this battle, he was like the incarnation of the Heavenly Dao, wielding the power of thunder tribulation.

This person was Empyrean Thunder Punishment.

Besides Empyrean Thunder Punishment, Empyrean Primordius had to face two peak masters of the saint race!

By himself, Empyrean Primordius faced off against three dire enemies!

Even so, he didn't seem as if he could be defeated.

"How could supreme masters of the saint race enter the Divine Realm?"

Lin Ming couldn't understand this. According to Empyrean Divine Dream, the Divine Realm was only one of the 33 Layered Heavens, and there were massive barriers that separated these 'heavens'. Because of this, the more powerful someone was, the more difficult it was for them to break through and enter.

So how could these saint race masters have come to the Sky Spill Planet?

As Lin Ming was thinking this, the great war vanished, leaving nothing but that blood red beating heart in the skies.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

That powerful sound was like the deafening beat of a divine drum!

Lin Ming knew that what he saw just now was only incomplete images preserved in the memories of that heart.

A heart was only a part of the physical body, thus it shouldn’t have any memories. Then, logically speaking, this heart should contain a wisp of a remnant soul!

This idea immediately cut through Lin Ming’s mind, “Senior Primordius!”

A loud voice echoed through the world. Lin Ming was extremely hurried. Tian Mingzi was quickly catching up to them. He couldn’t rely on the eruption of the Eternal Demon Abyss to delay Tian Mingzi for much longer.

“Senior Primordius!”

Lin Ming shouted out once more. However, he still received no reply.

“Was my guess wrong? Is there really no remnant soul here?”

Lin Ming’s mind raced. The wisp of Empyrean Primordius’ remnant soul might be very weak to begin with, and then it had also been sleeping here for 100,000 years. If he really wanted to awaken it, wasn’t that something easier said than done?

As Lin Ming was thinking this, his power suddenly concentrated in his inner world. A blood red lotus flower began to slowly bloom behind him.

This was the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower.

A vast and boundless aura began to emit from Lin Ming’s body. He had opened the grandmist space!

The grandmist space covered that great heart. The elementary grandmist energy constantly struck against that beating heart like a surging tide.

“Senior Primordius!”

Lin Ming exhausted all of his strength as he roared out. His voice echoed like roiling thunder, shaking the void for thousands of miles around!

At this time, the beating heart suddenly shook. Its beating frequency slowed down as an invisible energy covered Lin Ming and began to absorb the divine dream energy within him.

Lin Ming was shocked but he didn’t prevent this, instead letting this force absorb as it wished. For Lin Ming to do this in his current state wasn’t easy on him at all.

A moment later, Lin Ming’s complexion turned much paler and there was even a trace of fading ash in his complexion. Then, a gray shadow poured out from the heart, finally transforming into a black-robed man.

This man’s figure was extremely vague, constantly trembling in the currents of heaven and earth origin energy as if he could disappear at any moment.

The phantom opened his eyes with great difficulty, staring at Lin Ming with confusion.

Lin Ming also looked at this black-clothed man in front of him.

Was this the remnant soul that had been attached to Empyrean Primordius’ heart?

This wisp of remnant soul didn’t have the great strength Lin Ming had imagined; it could even be called abnormally weak.

Presumably, in the past, Empyrean Primordius’ wounds had been extremely heavy or perhaps he had even perished, and the remnant soul he left behind was the tiniest fraction possible. After it slept so deeply for all this time, it even needed to draw support from Lin Ming’s divine dream energy to regain consciousness.

“Senior is Empyrean Primordius?”

Lin Ming asked.

“Who are you, that you can use the grandmist space?”

The black-robed man’s voice was ephemeral, weak and fading.

“This junior’s name is Lin Ming. In the Road of Emperor, I once obtained Senior’s blessing and was able to obtain a third of the Primordius martial intent inheritance, thus I am able to use the grandmist space.”

“I see, so that’s how it is. What you must be speaking of is the Samsara Road. Honorable Master indeed once left behind a part of his inheritance within the Samsara Road.”

The black-robed man’s words indicated his status. He wasn’t Empyrean Primordius but Empyrean Primordius’ disciple.

So this was what happened. Lin Ming suddenly became aware. It was said that Empyrean Primordius was a dual body and energy cultivator, and even though he focused on body and energy, leaving his soul a little weaker, a wisp of remnant soul that he left behind should still contain a tremendous pressure. It was something far from what this phantom in front of him could ever do.

And this remnant soul was the disciple of Empyrean Primordius. Did Empyrean Primordius have his own disciple leave his remnant soul to deeply slumber here, in order to protect his heart and also guard the body of the goddess?

“Senior, this junior is being chased down and hunted. I wish for my companion to borrow the body of the goddess to resurrect herself and fight against this person!”

In the past, Mo Eversnow had been a half-step World King master. Whether it was attainments in Laws or cultivation methods, she had reached an extremely high boundary. But unfortunately, she had lost her body and was unable to move true essence at all. This was especially detrimental for someone like her who had also dual cultivated body and energy.

If she could fuse together with the body of the goddess, then Mo Eversnow's strength would rise to astronomical degrees.

"Borrow the body of the goddess? You are speaking of… Heavenly Empress Xuanxing?"

Heavenly Empress Xuanxing?

Lin Ming was stunned. He never imagined that a young woman who looked around 17-18 years old would possess such a title.

If she could be referred to as a Heavenly Empress, then she wasn't a young elite at all. Rather, she was someone who had long come to fame, someone whose strength had already reached incomparably terrifying levels.

"Heavenly Empress Xuanxing is a monarch of the primal god race. Even if her divine soul is no longer here, wanting to possess her mortal body is not easy at all. If you cannot withstand the power of her mortal body then your divine soul will collapse and disintegrate. Do you know this?"

As the wisp of remnant soul spoke, Lin Ming was left dumbfounded. Primal god race?

This was another new race that Lin Ming had never heard of before. He had heard about the saints, the spiritas, and humanity; these were the three main races of the 33 Layered Heavens. Each race was separately skilled in body transformation, soul forging, and essence gathering, the three main cultivation systems. Lin Ming never knew that there was also a primal god race.

"Senior is… speaking about the primal god race?"

"Yes, the primal god race. The primal god race is the most perfect race to ever be formed by the heavens. They are powerful in the aspect of soul, body, and inner world, and are also able to triple cultivate in essence, energy, and divine. Their strength is great at birth and their talent defies the will of the heavens. Even their lifespans are 10 times longer than those of humans.

As the remnant soul slowly spoke, Lin Ming felt a chill crawl down his soul. Triple cultivators of essence, energy, and divine, talents that defied the heavens' will, lifespans 10 times longer than those of humans… this was simply too incredible.

“There is such a race in this world that completely surpasses the three main races?”

As Lin Ming spoke, a trace of surprise appeared on the face of that remnant soul. “I never imagined that you would also know of the three races. Yes, the primal god race truly possesses all advantages of the three main races, but, perhaps because they are existences that defy the heavens too much, the Heavenly Dao does not abide by their existence. Thus, even though they once prospered in the most ancient of times, they began to slowly decline afterwards. The number of their people became extremely low, finally nearing the point of extinction.

“Then Heavenly Empress Xuanqing is…” Lin Ming was puzzled. He simply didn't know how Empyrean Primordius had gotten mixed together with the primal god race.

“You do not need to know this. These are matters that involve the secrets of this universe. There is no significance in you knowing, and you possessing this knowledge would only draw disaster upon yourself.”

As the remnant soul spoke, he had subconsciously assumed that Lin Ming was a local martial artist of the Sky Spill Planet. When this was added to Lin Ming's weak blood vitality and fading strength, it was impossible to connect him to being the number one genius of the Divine Realm.

However, as the remnant soul finished speaking, he paused, “Eh… you seemed to have burnt most of your blood essence?”

This remnant soul was a disciple of Empyrean Primordius, thus before his death he was likely at least a Great World King level character. Moreover, he too cultivated dual body and energy, and was highly sensitive to the power of blood vitality. As he probed Lin Ming's body, he discovered to his astonishment that Lin Ming had burnt over half his blood essence. Even so, he was still able to stand here.

If an ordinary person were to do this, their life would be feeble and fading and they would find it difficult to continue supporting themselves.

"30 some year skeletal age, dual body and energy cultivation, and you even opened the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates?"

The remnant soul was shocked. This was no minor matter. In this universe, the body transformation technique was no longer compatible with the rules of the Heavenly Dao. Even his honorable master, Empyrean Primordius, hadn't been able to open the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates in his thirties.

"You… have had such a fortuitous encounter?"

The remnant soul could clearly feel that Lin Ming was a martial artist native to the Sky Spill Planet. For a native martial artist to grow to such a degree, they must have had countless lucky chances paving their road. This was simply inconceivable.

"Who is hunting you?" The remnant soul immediately asked. Perhaps the reason Lin Ming had burnt half his blood essence was that he was being chased down by this person.

"Tian Mingzi, he is a Great World King from the Divine Realm. He severed his hand, turning it into an avatar to enter the Sky Spill Planet in order to hunt down this junior. Now, he will likely arrive here in another quarter hour."

Lin Ming said. Although he was anxious as he spoke, he was still able to maintain his calm.

"A Great World King severed his hand to hunt you down?" The remnant soul looked at Lin Ming with incredulity etched on his face. He could faintly feel that Lin Ming's strength was far greater than what he had imagined. Such a character was in no way a tiny fish in a pool.

“If you were able to learn the grandmist space, it could be said that you have a certain fate with my honorable master. Moreover, at such a young age you also opened the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates. You even chose to dual cultivate body and energy, the same path that my honorable master took. Perhaps this is the karma of the world… perhaps you are the person that my honorable master has been waiting for all this time…”

The remnant soul quietly said. At the precipice of death, Empyrean Primordius had left behind his own inheritances so that in the future, those fated juniors could enter and inherit his legacy.

Now, no matter how one looked at it, Lin Ming was the most suitable candidate.

If this remnant soul could see Empyrean Primordius’ last wishes being inherited by the next generation, he could finally die in peace.

“You are so young and yet have such talent; you must be truly incredible. Unfortunately, even though you are being chased down by others, I cannot help you. All that remains of me is a wisp of a remnant soul; I have almost no strength remaining. There is a choice, but the decision must be made by you. If you have the confidence then your companion can take possession of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing’s mortal body. As for you, if you are able to withstand the baptism of my honorable master’s blood vitality, then you may attempt to direct the power of blood vitality within his heart into your own to temper yourself.”

“Direct the power of blood vitality into my heart and temper myself?”

Lin Ming was bewildered. He looked once more at the beating heart in the endless starry skies. The power of blood vitality contained within it was as vast and deep as the fathomless oceans. This was the power of blood vitality that only an Empyrean could possess. Moreover, Empyrean Primordius likely had the Demon Bead at some point, which was what allowed his body transformation technique to reach such an inconceivable boundary. If he were to direct the power of blood vitality within Empyrean Primordius' heart into his own, just what sort of scene would that be?

Chapter 1366 – Nine Stars Appear

Chapter 1366 – Nine Stars Appear

…

…

…

With Tian Mingzi chasing him from behind, Lin Ming simply didn't have a choice. He could only make a desperate gamble this time.

At most, Tian Mingzi would arrive within a quarter hour. For Lin Ming to withstand a baptism from the power of blood vitality and to allow Mo Eversnow the required time to possess the body of the goddess was far from sufficient.

Luckily, after Lin Ming had gained part of Empyrean Divine Seal's inheritance, his Time Laws had reached perfection of the fifth level. To the current him, laying down a time enchantment wasn't difficult at all.

A time enchantment wasn't a profound array formation to begin with. Even Old Man Good Fortune was able to lay down a 1:10 time flow enchantment, let alone someone like Lin Ming.

He took out a nine sun jade and began to form the time enchantment with the energy within it. A pale blue curtain of light came shrouding down, immediately hastening the time inside by a ratio of 1:25.

This was also because Lin Ming was injured, otherwise he could even arrange a 1:50 time enchantment.

If Tian Mingzi would catch up in a quarter hour then this time enchantment would give Lin Ming around six hours. This period of time should be enough.

“Senior, this junior has a question he would like to ask…” As Lin Ming laid down the time enchantment, he turned towards that remnant soul wisp.

“Ask.”

“This junior would like to know… did Senior Empyrean Primordius truly perish?”

All signs pointed towards the possibility that Empyrean Primordius died on the Sky Spill Planet, but Lin Ming found it hard to believe that such an extreme character would die.

The remnant soul shook his head, giving off a heavy sigh as he said, “Honorable Master’s determination and destiny are truly unfathomable. But, in that great war 100,000 years ago, his opponents were really far too strong. Perhaps… he really has perished…”

As the remnant soul spoke, all sorts of emotions crossed his face. Although he couldn’t say for sure if Empyrean Primordius had really died or not, as Empyrean Primordius’ disciple, he truly wished that his master had some slim chance of surviving. If his master truly had some tiny hope of living on, then he wouldn’t have ever said that his master might have died. So, in other words, it truly did seem that Empyrean Primordius’ situation was more than unfortunate.

“Mm, this junior understands.” This answer left Lin Ming feeling a bit regretful. Even if Empyrean Primordius had left behind some road for himself, the most that would be left over of him was likely an incomplete soul. To use an incomplete soul and revive that soul into an extreme character of the Divine Realm was nearly impossible.

He turned to Mo Eversnow and said, “Senior-apprentice Sister, let us begin.”

“Yes.”

Mo Eversnow no longer hesitated. She walked in front of the coffin and deeply bowed towards the mortal body of that goddess. “Senior Heavenly Empress, today this junior shall borrow Senior’s body to return to life. In the future, if possible, this junior will surely find Senior’s heroic soul and help revive Senior.”

If the goddess truly did leave behind pieces of her remnant soul in this world, then by collecting these pieces of remnant soul and fusing them with spirit essence, it wouldn’t be impossible to revive the goddess. But, one might need to reach the realm of True Divinity before being able to do so.

Mo Eversnow floated up as she flew into the goddess’ mortal body.

For a time, the goddess’ body floated high in the air, her long hair scattered outwards. A brilliant aura of life exuded from her body, swirling around her.

Within the body of the goddess was an incomparably terrifying life force and blood vitality, like a blazing inferno. This sort of heated blood vitality was extremely terrifying to the cold yin energy of a soul.

This was why some ghosts would choose weaker bodies with a heavy yin energy to possess. As for those full of life and surging blood strength, ghosts avoided these people as much as they could.

Mo Eversnow’s complexion was white. After being struck by this surging blood vitality, her divine soul nearly fell into chaos. However, she grit her teeth and continued forwards.

Not too far away, the remnant soul watched all of this, astonishment on his face. He didn’t know that Mo Eversnow’s talent had reached such a terrifying degree. Even if she were an Empyrean descendant, she would still be an extraordinary one of her generation.

But for what reason would the mortal body of such a top character have been destroyed.

For two extremely talented characters like Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow to appear in a world of the lowers realms was an incomparably rare occurrence. The remnant soul had even felt that there was no one in this world that would be able to obtain the inheritances left behind by Empyrean Primordius. After all, the chances that an unrivalled powerhouse would be born on the Sky Spill Planet were simply far too low.

But now, matters had developed in bizarre and fantastic directions. Could this world really possess concepts like karma and causality? Did the heavens decide to not abandon Empyrean Primordius, and thus created this final lucky chance for him?

“Senior-apprentice Sister, allow me to withstand the impact of this blood vitality for you!”

Lin Ming didn’t dare to hold back. Strength erupted from his body.

“Power of blood vitality, enter my body!”

With a loud shout from Lin Ming, a blood red stream formed in the air, howling forth like a blood dragon as it rushed into Lin Ming’s body!

This caused the remnant soul to gasp. This was the blood vitality of an Empyrean!

If he couldn’t withstand it, then there was a chance that the very foundation of his life would be washed away.

Mo Eversnow was nothing but a yin-based soul form; she wouldn’t be able to withstand too much blood vitality, especially such potent blood vitality that was contained within Empyrean Primordius’ heart. That sort of blood vitality could easily turn any ghost or soul into dust. Now, it was suitable that all of this blood vitality was sucked up by Lin Ming. First, it would help Mo Eversnow, and secondly, it was also something Lin Ming direly needed right now.

The goddess’ mortal body would be taken possession of by Mo Eversnow.

As for that power of blood vitality, it belonged to Lin Ming!

The power of blood vitality entered his body, rushing about like rivers of boiling lava through his blood vessels. Lin Ming felt his body becoming increasingly hot, as if he were placed in a boiler. All of his body's acupoints were opened wide, releasing hot streams of scorching air. Every breath he released was hotter than flames as his temperature rapidly increased.

These scorching hot streams of air turned into pure power of blood vitality, wasted as it dissipated.

Lin Ming grit his teeth and sealed up all of his acupoints, stubbornly containing this blood vitality within his body and then forcefully refining it!

This was to avoid wasting any of this blood vitality. However, it surely placed an even greater burden on Lin Ming's body. If some of the blood vitality had dissipated, the pressure would have been smaller. But now, his entire body was deep red, just like a boiled lobster. The tyrannical and brutal blood vitality recklessly attacked all of Lin Ming's meridians and blood vessels. Even though he opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and had absorbed the dragon bone marrow, allowing his body to reach incredibly durable degrees, his blood vessels still exploded even as his meridians were torn apart.

Empyrean Primordius had very likely been one of the past masters of the Demon Bead. This was also the reason why he was able to dual cultivate in body and energy and open the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. The power of his blood vitality could be imagined from this. Even if he left just a heart behind, the power of blood vitality within this heart could even wash away the fires of life from a Holy Lord or World King.

Unless one was an Empyrean powerhouse, no one would be brave enough to forcefully absorb the heart left behind by Empyrean Primordius.

But now, Lin Ming was directing this power of blood vitality into his own body. He was able to do so because the heart did not resist him.

Even Mo Eversnow was in such a situation. The mortal body of the goddess simply didn't reject her taking possession of it at all. Otherwise, Mo Eversnow would have long been burnt to ash.

Whether it was the great emperor's heart or the body of the goddess, for this situation to occur even if their guardian remnant soul allowed it, this could only be said to be the cycle of fate and the samsara of karma.

As the remnant soul saw all of this occur, he couldn't help but mutter to himself, "This Lin Ming, as well as his senior-apprentice sister, both are amazing individuals… I wonder just what they have experienced in their lives…"

It could be said that being able to find and enter this tomb, and also find the inheritances left behind by Empyrean Primordius and the goddess, was the good fortune of Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow. But from another point of view, Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow being able to arrive in the Sky Spill Planet's Eternal Demon Abyss and obtain these inheritances could also be considered the good fortune of Empyrean Primordius and the goddess.

These inheritances were an extremely important matter, and the standards required of the descendants were very high. Wasn't wanting to find a suitable successor easier said than done?

One needed not only talent, but also the correct moral character.

Empyrean Primordius did not want his own inheritance to end up in a treasure hunting zone of the Divine Realm, he didn't want people to slaughter their way to it, nor did he want some old fogies to come who were lured by rumors.

What he wanted was a descendant who shared the same destiny as him, someone who could inherit his legacy.

In this point, Lin Ming was the most appropriate choice.

Time slowly passed.

During the agonizing process of absorbing the blood essence, Lin Ming also obtained incredible advantages. The blood essence and life force he had burnt away was rapidly restoring itself.

From just over 40% of his blood essence remaining, to 50%, 60%, 70%…

Less than an hour later, his blood essence was restored to 90% and was approaching full restoration!

Another hour later, Lin Ming's blood vitality was restored to completion. Then, it began to climb, growing more and more.

At this time Lin Ming had already fully connected the thresholds of life and death, and the Gate of Life and the Gate of Death were also fully opened. The complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates released, and now with no place to go, this blood vitality began to impact Lin Ming's body.

In that moment, all of Lin Ming's blood vitality seemed as if it wanted to gather together into a bead.

Such a strange occurrence caused Lin Ming's body to tremble. Everything fell into darkness, then, he felt himself suddenly arrive in a completely black space. Above this space were nine stars, each one shining down with radiant starlight, their splendor illuminating Lin Ming's body.

After this starlight fell over Lin Ming, he felt all of his muscles stretch apart, resonating with these nine stars, surging like the ocean waves.

This is…

Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. Could these be the legendary Nine Stars of the Dao Palace?

Nine stars hung high in the heavens, their starlight shining down without end. Their brilliance was like a rushing river, galloping forwards through the universe.

Lin Ming even faintly felt that as long as he stretched out his hand, he could touch these stars in the sky. However, the truth was that these stars were incomparably far away; it was impossible for him to touch them.

In the end, Lin Ming only saw the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace; he was far from being able to reach that boundary.

But this still broadened Lin Ming’s vision. It would bring great benefits to his future road of cultivation.

Before now, the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace were nothing but a puzzle to Lin Ming, extremely mysterious. Lin Ming simply didn’t know which way to go or how to find them.

But now, he had seen the true Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. At least, he had a general direction to guide his road of martial arts.

The starry skies faded away and the nine stars returned to their distant homes. Everything was restored to tranquility.

At this time, Lin Ming half-knelt on the ground, his entire body soaked in sweat. And beside him, that wisp of Empyrean Primordius’ disciple’s remnant soul was shocked so much that he couldn’t speak.

What Lin Ming experienced just now was not an illusion. But in truth, in that briefest of moments, nine stars had truly appeared in the world, their starlight shining down on him alone!

Empyrean Primordius’ disciple was also a dual body and energy cultivator. He certainly knew what that scene just now meant.

“The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. Nine Stars of the heavens, each one corresponding to a Dao Palace within a martial artist’s body… at such a young age, this boy actually saw the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace so easily?”

Chapter 1367 – The Resurrection of Eversnow

Chapter 1367 – The Resurrection of Eversnow

…

…

…

In the past, the reason that Empyrean Primordius was able to break through the evil curse placed upon the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was likely because of the Demon Bead.

After Empyrean Primordius obtained the Demon Bead, it was only then that his body transformation technique rose to all new levels. Before then, even he had been stuck at the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

Now, for Lin Ming to see the boundary of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace like this left Empyrean Primordius' disciple incredulous.

The nine stars hid themselves but the blood vitality of the great emperor's heart still flowed into Lin Ming. As for Mo Eversnow, her resurrection was not yet over.

Even though Lin Ming had absorbed a great portion of the blood vitality left within Empyrean Primordius' heart, the heart still boiled and surged with potent blood energy.

At this time, Lin Ming's power of blood vitality had already reached its original peak and had even surpassed it by 30%!

A martial artist was unable to infinitely absorb the power of blood vitality. If a martial artist absorbed too much, their body would burst apart.

As for how much a martial artist could absorb, that was determined by their foundation.

At this time, Lin Ming’s body was like a blazing fire. The power of his blood vitality had already increased 50% over its original state.

At this time, the power of blood vitality within that great emperor’s heart finally began to weaken a little.

As the power of blood vitality within that heart weakened, Mo Eversnow’s soul form also completely submerged into Heavenly Empress Xuanqing’s spiritual sea.

Heavenly Empress Xuanqing’s spiritual sea was completely different from what Mo Eversnow had imagined. The average person’s spiritual sea really contained a sea that was the manifestation of their mental strength and soul force. The more powerful one’s soul force had been, the greater the waves of that spiritual sea would be, and the more vast and boundless it would be.

But, Heavenly Empress Xuanqing’s spiritual sea was actually an endless void.

This void was filled with countless vortexes and black holes. These black holes and vortexes all seemed to lead to other worlds. If her soul form was sucked into them, she might not be able to come back.

“How could there be such a spiritual sea…”

Mo Eversnow took a deep breath. In the legends, when a universe plunged into entropy and neared the brink of destruction, it would evolve into such a scene. The stars would completely burn out, turning into black holes. All of space would become twisted and highly unstable. Once a universe entered such a state, it would begin to slowly collapse until it finally exploded, destroying itself and continuing a cycle of rebirth.

Mo Eversnow faintly guessed that the reason Heavenly Empress Xuanqing died was a soul attack. This incomparably terrifying strike had made her spiritual sea into the entropic void it was now.

With such a spiritual sea, this would cause Mo Eversnow all sorts of problems if she wanted to possess the body. There simply wasn't any place for her soul to take root. If there was even the slightest accident then she would fall beyond all hope.

"Lin Ming, let me borrow your divine dream energy!"

Mo Eversnow called out.

In the past, Lin Ming had accumulated a great deal of divine dream energy within the Divine Dream World and Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. Now, it was finally time to use these vast reserves of energy.

Mo Eversnow used this massive amount of divine dream energy to begin repairing Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's spiritual sea. With Mo Eversnow's strength, wanting to completely repair this spiritual sea was impossible. What she needed to do was restore a tiny little corner where her own soul could find shelter.

Time slowly moved onwards. Like this, four hours passed.

Pa! Pa! Pa!

Drops of sweat dripped down Lin Ming's body, intermingled with his blood as they fell to the ground.

His power of blood vitality had doubled from its original state. But, this was also Lin Ming's limit.

He tightly gripped his fists together. At this time, Lin Ming felt his body filled with strength, like a True Dragon was hidden within his flesh and blood, ready to erupt at any moment.

"Did you see the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace?"

The remnant soul asked Lin Ming.

Lin Ming nodded. For him to arrive at this step was all of his accumulated efforts of his martial arts training, year after year.

Perhaps the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace might no longer be a curse upon all body transformation martial artists. As long as one’s accumulations were great enough, they could reverse the Laws and break through this ultimate barrier.

“Amazing!” The remnant soul praised from the heart.

Lin Ming shook his head, “Senior’s praise is too extravagant. The reason this junior is able to see the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace is not my own ability, but because of the power of blood vitality that I absorbed, which was left behind by Senior Primordius. Senior Primordius had already opened the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, so this junior was merely standing on Senior Primordius’ shoulders to just barely see the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace…”

“Even though you say that, if it weren’t for you already having reached the boundary of being able to touch the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, then even if you had absorbed the blood vitality of my master, you still wouldn’t have been able to digest it as you did now. You are only 30 some years old. For you to have reached this boundary already is unbelievable.”

The remnant soul sighed with emotion. Lin Ming’s talent had left him in deep shock.

Lin Ming didn’t continue speaking with the remnant soul. He placed his full attention back on Mo Eversnow.

At this time, Mo Eversnow had already fused together with the goddess’ body. She had the appearance of a 17-18 year old young woman. Her long hair was loose and scattered, her appearance ethereal and ephemeral.

She lay down quietly in the coffin, her face pale. It was clear that taking possession of the goddess’ body had consumed far too much of her strength.

Lin Ming walked over to the coffin, reaching out his hand and gripping ‘Mo Eversnow’s’ hand. Divine dream energy flooded out from his body and into hers. As their divine souls connected together, Lin Ming could feel his own consciousness completely entering that world filled with black holes and vortexes. All sorts of emotions and memories that belonged to Mo Eversnow began to rush into Lin Ming.

This sort of feeling was similar to when Lin Ming had entered the 100 cycles of Samsara. If he wasn’t careful then his consciousness would fall into an illusion and he would lose himself.

“Lin Ming, let me use the Magic Cube!”

Mo Eversnow’s voice suddenly echoed in Lin Ming’s mind.

Lin Ming was startled; use the Magic Cube?

In order to use the Magic Cube, Mo Eversnow had to burn her soul force. This would consume a tremendous amount of her energy.

“I’ll be alright. I only want to use the Magic Cube to stabilize this spiritual sea, not to activate it to kill enemies. I should be able to handle this. Moreover, currently I can already manipulate this body to a minor degree. My consumption of energy won’t be too great.”

As Mo Eversnow spoke, her soul form flashed. A crystalline light began to radiate from within her; the Magic Cube was finally being activated by her.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Within that inner world filled with black holes, incomparably crazy storms were stirred up, as if they were going to tear apart the void.

Every black hole, every vortex, everything was completely smashed apart by this strength!

The Magic Cube was truly worthy of being known as the most powerful divine soul instrument in existence. Just by using it a little, Heavenly Empress Xuanqing’s entropic spiritual sea that was near the brink of annihilation was actually beginning to be crushed down and reformed.

This was what it meant to break down something to the basics and then recreate it.

“Condense!”

Mo Eversnow’s face whitened. A massive force took her as the center and recklessly swept outwards. In that moment, she seemed to be creating a new world.

Before Mo Eversnow took possession of the goddess’ body, although the goddess’ body was filled with vibrant life force and her powerful blood vitality far surpassed that of powerful martial artists, her spiritual sea was deathly still, like a dead universe.

But now, by using the Magic Cube, Mo Eversnow was able to bring new strength to this world, a wild and boundless strength.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Mo Eversnow’s body shined with a brilliant light. As more and more black holes were destroyed, Mo Eversnow’s consciousness gradually occupied every corner of this spiritual sea, completely fusing into the mortal body of the goddess.

At this moment, Mo Eversnow’s eyes flashed open. The instant she did so, it was like a mysterious space was opened before her. An incredible power gushed forth from this space, washing over Mo Eversnow’s body.

As this mysterious space was opened, an aura of the Great Dao similar to the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens also poured forth, causing the nearby Lin Ming to be stunned.

“These Laws are…”

As Lin Ming felt the mysteries contained within these Great Dao Laws, he was incomparably bewildered. In this world there were Laws that could stand side-by-side with the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens?

“These are Laws of the Primal God!”

At this time, beside Lin Ming, Empyrean Primordius’ disciple blurted out, his eyes filled with fear and admiration.

“Primal God?”

“Yes. In the legends it is said that there was a realm that has been destroyed. But, there is another viewpoint, and that is that this realm was hidden with a spatial slit, unable to be found by anyone. Only the primal god race is capable of communicating with this realm and are able to derive strength directly from it. This is also why the primal god race is said to defy the will of the heavens.”

According to the remnant soul, without a doubt, because Mo Eversnow had resurrected, the ability of the goddess to communicate with this Primal God Realm was also restored.

The primal god race were originally the favored children of the heavens. As a people, they fused together all the benefits of the three main races.

This surging baptism of Laws was just like a mortal martial artist crossing Life Destruction. Standing on the side watching, Lin Ming also obtained great advantages from this.

As the baptism of Laws recklessly washed over her, Mo Eversnow’s body slowly floated upwards. Her eyes had been restored to the purest brightness and her pupils shined like dazzling stars.

At this moment, she had fused completely with the goddess. She was the goddess, and the goddess was she.

Mo Eversnow flew in front of Lin Ming, gently stroking and nuzzling his cheeks in her hand, her eyes soft. Her lips gently moved and she whispered, “Lin Ming, thank you. To be able to meet you is my life’s greatest lucky chance.”

For these 50,000 years, Mo Eversnow had experienced countless trials and tribulations. Now, all those bitter experiences had produced something sweet. If she hadn't met Lin Ming, she would have continued sleeping in the Magic Cube until her soul finally dissipated.

To say that meeting Lin Ming was her life's greatest fortune was true, without the least bit of exaggeration.

Lin Ming said, "Senior-apprentice Sister, to be able to meet you is also my life's greatest lucky chance. If you hadn't fallen onto the Sky Spill Planet with the Magic Cube, then perhaps I wouldn't even have been able to leave the Sky Fortune Kingdom. Even afterwards, in the God Beast Mystic Realm and several other times, if it weren't for you saving me then I would have perished many times over."

As a mortal, when Lin Ming first practiced martial artists had been the most difficult stage for him. Without the Magic Cube, it would have been impossible for Lin Ming to make it through those difficult times. And, the reason the Magic Cube had entered the Sky Spill Continent was exactly because Mo Eversnow had burnt away her life to activate it, even shattering the space barrier between the Divine Realm and the lower realms.

Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow, without each other, their lives had been destined to remain dim and dire, until they one day faded away into obscurity.

But because their paths crossed, because they met each other, their lives began to bloom together, shining in everlasting glory.

"Congratulations Senior-apprentice Sister! You have now fused together with Senior Heavenly Empress Xuanqing as one, and you can now communicate with the Primal God Realm. The primal god race is the most outstanding race in this universe, able to practice all cultivation Laws. Senior-apprentice Sister's future achievements will surely be limitless, and with Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's foundation, stepping onto the peak of all martial arts is not impossible."

Chapter 1368 – Tian Mingzi Arrives

Chapter 1368 – Tian Mingzi Arrives

…

…

…

After possessing Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's body, it could be said that Mo Eversnow had been fully transformed, gaining a new life.

To be able to communicate with the Primal God Realm, to be able to simultaneously cultivate the body transformation system, essence gathering system, and soul forging system without any restraints, the primal god race were truly the favored children of the heavens. Whether it was in cultivation speed, awareness of the Laws, or true combat strength, those of the primal god race far surpassed all martial artists of the same level.

Currently, Lin Ming had absorbed the power of blood vitality from Empyrean Primordius' heart, and his strength had been restored to its peak condition. Even so, when he faced Mo Eversnow, even though her figure and appearance were delicate and soft, he could sense that she contained a fathomless strength, as vast as the stars in the sky.

If Lin Ming were to fight Mo Eversnow now, he had to admit that he would lose without a doubt.

Not just that, but Mo Eversnow was still in the melding phase of her soul and new body; it was impossible for her to display her true strength and cultivation. Once this melding phase was over, Mo Eversnow's strength would rise by leaps and bounds, and her cultivation would fly past anything she had ever reached. Mo Eversnow had an extremely high fusion compatibility with this new mortal body; there would be no hindrances in her future cultivation.

Mo Eversnow originally had an extremely rare heaven-gifted talent. Now that she had obtained the body of an extreme talent from the primal god race, as she cultivated in the future, the great road before her would be flat and limitless, with no obstacles! At that time, underneath the 33 Layered Heavens, in the myriad worlds, Mo Eversnow would become a supreme elder of her own domain, living for a hundred million years!

After listening to Lin Ming's words, Mo Eversnow unconsciously turned to the distance, her eyes becoming deep and profound. "If I can step onto the peak of martial arts one day, I will reform my own mortal body, as well as revive Senior Heavenly Empress Xuanqing to thank her for this kindness..."

Heavenly Empress Xuanqing was a senior supreme elder and Mo Eversnow was simply a tiny junior. Heavenly Empress Xuanqing had been countless times stronger than Mo Eversnow, even when Mo Eversnow was at her peak. Mo Eversnow had been able to possess Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's body because she had allowed it, otherwise Mo Eversnow's soul would have long been turned to ash.

In her life, Mo Eversnow would never forget such a graciousness.

"Of course. At that time, Senior-apprentice Sister will surely have the ability to reshape your mortal body. Moreover, I should also have reached an extremely high boundary in the body transformation technique and my understanding of the Life Laws should have gone even further. I will definitely be able to lend Senior-apprentice Sister a helping hand." As Lin Ming spoke, his heart stirred. He turned and looked towards the exit of the tomb, his eyes flashing with a cold brilliance.

"Our friend has finally caught up. He'll arrive in another quarter at most. To rush all the way from the Divine Realm to the Sky Spill Planet, and even chase us down to the Eternal Demon Abyss only for us to bid our farewells here, it must be hard for him."

As Lin Ming spoke, he sneered in a mocking smile. When he said quarter hour, he was referring to time within the enchantment. If he were to remove the enchantment, Tian Mingzi would catch up in 10 breaths of time.

As Tian Mingzi's name was mentioned, Mo Eversnow didn't bother to hide the unfiltered killing intent in her eyes. Towards Tian Mingzi, she felt nothing but a searing hatred that extended down to her very marrow!

"This time, it is only his hand and a wisp of his soul. Killing him will only ruin a bit of Tian Mingzi's cultivation. But next time, I will take his life. I will suck out his soul and refine it, torturing it until he dies from suffering. I will use his sacrifice to console the countless lives of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands that are in the heavens!"

Mo Eversnow was not some overly empathetic or tender-hearted woman. As the Saintess of a World King Holy Land, she was decisive and ruthless in her actions, remembering favors and avenging grudges. Although sucking out someone's soul and refining it was a method of the demonic path, Mo Eversnow would still do it without any scruples.

Lin Ming raised his hand and lifted the time enchantment. As the time enchantment was lifted, he could feel an extremely powerful aura approaching at incredible speed, overflowing with killing intent. This was Tian Mingzi.

"Hehe, I've found you!"

As Tian Mingzi saw the black mountain that held the tomb of the goddess, he fiendishly grinned.

"You entered this mountain peak? Do you think you can bury your head in the ground like an ostrich? Did you finally realize that you cannot escape me, thus you ran into this mountain to draw support from something like an array formation inside? Is this your final stand?"

Tian Mingzi's senses swept over the black mountain peak but he didn't discover any traps at all. Although there were many evil spirits in the thousand mile forbidden zone, these evil spirits were only a minor inconvenience to Tian Mingzi. He simply didn't fear them at all.

However, it was always better to be safe than sorry. Tian Mingzi had no intention of entering this mountain peak; he was prepared to launch an assault from outside.

"I will destroy this mountain first!"

Tian Mingzi extracted an eight foot long sword, and just as he was about to slash out, a cliff of the mountain distorted and Lin Mingzi came walking out from the goddess' tomb with the Phoenix Blood Spear in hand.

As Tian Mingzi saw Lin Ming, he sneered. "To think that you came out on your own. Lin Ming, you truly are a heaven-gifted eternally rare genius. Your future prospects were originally without limit, but what a pity that you have become my enemy. You truly have no idea of death or danger. Today, you are doomed to die beneath my blade!"

"Oh? Is that so…" Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear, pointing it straight at Tian Mingzi. At this moment, as Tian Mingzi looked at Lin Ming, he was suddenly shocked.

He could clearly feel that Lin Ming's missing blood vitality was already restored!

No, he hadn't just restored it. To be more accurate, the power of Lin Ming's blood vitality was almost double what it used to be. The strength of his body was as deep as the sea, surging forwards. His cultivation had nearly broken through to the late Divine Sea realm!

Lin Ming was indeed ready to break into the late Divine Sea realm any time now. Originally, when he fought with Tian Mingzi, because Mo Eversnow was beginning to burn her divine soul, his potential had erupted from within him, nearly allowing him to break into the late Divine Sea realm. That final strike of his had not just been because he burnt half his blood essence but also because his cultivation had increased by a tremendous amount.

“How could this be possible… once your blood essence is lost, it is extremely difficult to make up for it, especially for an extreme talent like you with such a powerful blood vitality…” Tian Mingzi looked at Lin Ming with disbelief, then glanced at the tomb of the goddess behind him. “It really is this mountain, there must be some treasure here!”

Tian Mingzi was overjoyed. If an extreme genius like Lin Ming was able to rapidly restore his potent blood vitality, and even double it, that must mean that there were some peak treasures in this black mountain. It absolutely had to be a transcendent divine miracle medicine!

“Lin Ming, you truly have a great destiny upon your body. But, just because your blood vitality is powerful, do you really think you can defeat me with just that? Once I kill you, all the secrets you possess will be mine. All your lucky chances, everything you have will be taken by me! Hahaha!”

Tian Mingzi wildly cackled. At this time, his smiling face suddenly stiffened. He discovered that behind Lin Ming, another person had emerged from the black mountain.

This was a true peerless woman. Her slender waist, her tall and steady stature, her ephemeral appearance, everything about her had reached the pinnacle of perception. It was like she wasn’t a woman from this world at all, but an immortal goddess exiled from the highest heavens.

But this time, Tian Mingzi was of no mind at all to appreciate this woman’s beauty. He could only feel a cold and dense air covering him… this woman was terrifying!

Moreover, before now, this woman had been nearby and yet he hadn’t sensed her at all. This left a feeling of dread in Tian Mingzi’s heart.

“Who are you? Have we met before?”

Tian Mingzi’s eyes shined brightly as he stared at Mo Eversnow. Because Mo Eversnow had taken on the appearance of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing, he wasn’t able to recognize her at all. He could only faintly feel that she was somewhat familiar.

“We have indeed met before… and our origins are extremely deep…” As Mo Eversnow spoke, there was no expression on her face. But, her killing intent had already locked onto Tian Mingzi, sending cold chills down his spine.

He took a step back. “Origin? I do not remember having any grudge with you.”

Tian Mingzi was secretly frightened; he couldn’t imagine just where he had seen this woman before. At this time, if he were to somehow provoke someone who held such deep-seated hatred against him, his fate could be imagined.

“You will remember!” Mo Eversnow sneered. As she spoke, she suddenly stepped forwards, her speed reaching incredible degrees. In just a flash she had arrived in front of Tian Mingzi, her palm slashing down at him!

Mo Eversnow had just taken possession of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing’s body and didn’t have a weapon. But, she didn’t need a weapon for her attacks to be brutal and swift. The primal god race could cultivate all Laws and were born to triple cultivate in essence, energy, and divine. Heavenly Empress Xuanqing’s mortal body had long been tempered to a terrifying degree, high enough that she could even slice apart a high-grade spirit artifact with her bare hands.

As her palm came slashing down, a massive chunk of space collapsed. A storm of time and space began to billow behind her palm, sweeping towards Tian Mingzi!

Tian Mingzi was shocked. He didn’t dare to be incautious. He rapidly drew backwards and cut out with his sword, the black sword light meeting Mo Eversnow’s palm wind.

Kacha!

The sword light exploded. Mo Eversnow’s body moved like ghosts and gods, immediately stepping in front of Tian Mingzi once more. With her cold eyes and her long hair dancing about in the wind, she was like a death reaper that had come at night.

Peng!

With a thunderous crack, Tian Mingzi was sent flying backwards. He barely managed to block Mo Eversnow’s second palm strike and the attack left all his blood vitality tumbling within his body, leaving him breathless. Just who was this woman? Did she come from the Divine Realm or the lower realms, and how could she just emerge out of nowhere?

Chapter 1369 – Exterminate Your Avatar

Chapter 1369 – Exterminate Your Avatar

…

…

…

“Who are you!?”

Tian Mingzi roared out. In his opinion, this woman couldn’t reasonably have come from the Divine Realm. If Lin Ming truly had someone helping him then he would have called this helper as soon as possible. How would he have allowed himself to end up in such a miserable state during their last encounter? He had even been forced to burn half his blood essence to escape that danger.

But if this woman came from the lower realms or had been hiding here all along, that didn’t make sense either. How could a martial artist from the lower realms possibly share some origin with Tian Mingzi? And Tian Mingzi had never been to the Sky Spill Planet. If it weren’t for the reason that he was chasing down Lin Ming, he would never have thought that the Sky Spill Planet contained so many secrets.

But now, Tian Mingzi no longer had time to think. Mo Eversnow floated high in the air, her blue and white clothes floating recklessly in the wind. Her feet were bare, with ripples echoing beneath them. These ripples were because Mo Eversnow’s comprehensions in the Laws were too high. With every step she took, with every gesture she made, she would arouse vibrations in the Laws. This was the so-called commanding Laws without ordering them, but only needing to move the body.

Currently, Mo Eversnow was unable to display the true power of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's mortal body.

Whether it was seizing a body or possessing it voluntarily, there would inevitably be losses. These were serious losses that required one to begin their cultivation and comprehension of Laws from the beginning.

But, Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's body was simply far too formidable. In addition, Mo Eversnow herself had originally been an extreme talent. In this union of power and power, even though Mo Eversnow had possessed this body, she was still able to retain a considerable portion of the original strength.

Of course, Mo Eversnow's greatest aspect was not her strength but her cultivation talent. With Mo Eversnow's talent added upon Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's talent, both coming together, her future cultivation would pass 10,000 miles in one day!

In that moment, a magnificent landscape appeared around Mo Eversnow. Although the thousand mile forbidden zone was filled with a dreary fog and the skies were darker than a gloomy night, all around Mo Eversnow was actually brilliant beams of sunlight, filled with life and vibrant vitality.

Beside her, heaven and earth origin energy condensed into all sorts of rare spirit flowers, spirit plants, spirit birds, and spirit beasts. With every step she took, an enchanting beauty would stir and exquisite flowers would bloom. The sound of trickling spring water filled the air as the world around her became a paradise.

This was Mo Eversnow's domain, a domain that belonged to the primal god race – the Primal God Pure Lands.

The Primal God Pure Lands formed a separate world, and within this separate world, Mo Eversnow was the absolute queen of all she surveyed.

These pure lands instantly came shrouding down over Tian Mingzi!

“Tian Mingzi! Today I will exterminate your avatar and in the future, when I enter the Divine Realm, I will crush your true body’s bones to ash and refine your soul!”

Mo Eversnow coldly coughed, her voice filled with a heated killing intent.

Humph!

Tian Mingzi’s eyes were icy cold. Just as he was about to be surrounded by the Primal God Pure Lands, he shouted out loud and released his own domain. In that moment, all of the energy within his body erupted and the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy was stirred up. A great deal of the infernal energy within the Eternal Demon Abyss was dragged towards Tian Mingzi, manifesting into all sorts of strange and bizarre demons in the skies.

“Eternal Demon Domain!”

Tian Mingzi wanted to use the Eternal Demon Domain to contend with the Primal God Pure Lands!

The two domains met each other, fiercely colliding!

Ka ka ka ka!

As the demonic beasts formed by infernal energy flew into the Primal God Pure Lands they were instantly purified by a pure energy. These demonic creatures all began exploding into dust in the air!

As Tian Mingzi saw that his Eternal Demon Domain was about to be crushed by the Primal God Pure Lands, a divine light began to shine from between his eyebrows as a 1000 foot high pagoda appeared, spinning in the skies, rapidly growing larger.

“Catastrophic Pagoda!”

This pagoda was one of the greatest lucky chances Tian Mingzi had encountered in the past. Right now, he was only at the Divine Sea realm so it was impossible for him to activate the true pagoda; all he could do was galvanize a projection of the divine pagoda. Although this was a projection, Tian Mingzi had formed it by dividing a portion of the Catastrophic Pagoda's artifact spirit and then added in 30% of the true pagoda's essence energy. If this phantom was lost, it would cause tremendous damage to the true Catastrophic Pagoda.

The Catastrophic Pagoda suppressed the skies, stabilizing all the space around Tian Mingzi as it forcefully resisted the Primal God Pure Lands.

As Mo Eversnow saw this pagoda, her killing intent suddenly soared into the heavens. She certainly recognized this pagoda. 50,000 years ago, Tian Mingzi had used this pagoda to hold 10,000 powerhouses of the Divine Realm in order to invade and raze the Verdant Feather Holy Lands.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Mo Eversnow walked forwards one step at a time. With each step she took, the Primal God Pure Lands became increasingly powerful. The phantom of the Catastrophic Pagoda violently shook, as if it were about to disintegrate at any moment.

Tian Mingzi paled. Although he could feel Mo Eversnow's great strength, he didn't seem as if he were at a disadvantage at all.

"You said that you will crush the bones of my true body and refine my soul? Hahahaha!" Tian Mingzi raucously laughed, his eyes cold and killing intent thick in his voice. "I have no idea who you are, but your strength is only slighter stronger than my avatar's. And in comparison to my true self, my avatar is nothing at all! If my true self were to kill you, it wouldn't even take the blink of an eye! Today, I have paid a great price to come to the Sky Spill Planet all in order to kill Lin Ming. If you make way then after I complete my objective here, I will give you enough advantages to make up for it. Otherwise, even if my avatar perishes here, I will leave behind an eternal mark on your body. From that point on, you will never be able to escape my eyes! My true self will hunt you down until you are completely ruined!"

Tian Mingzi's voice was stern and beguiling. He had a premonition that as long as Mo Eversnow was here, it would be impossible to kill Lin Ming. Lin Ming's ability to survive any situation was ridiculous, and even if he continued chasing him down, he still might not be able to succeed, especially now that he had a helper.

"Hahahahaha!"

At this time, a hale and hearty laughter echoed outwards. Holding the Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands, Lin Ming slowly floated down from the skies, setting himself in front of Tian Mingzi.

"Tian Mingzi... Did you think that if I was here alone, you would still be able to pinch me to death as you pleased?"

Lin Ming's tone was clearly mocking. At this time, his blood vitality was surging like an overflowing river that stretched onwards to infinity. Behind him, the phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared. This divine tree took root in the Primal God Pure Lands, fusing together with that domain as one. And at this time, the grandmist space was also released. From behind Lin Ming, the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower appeared, bright red as if it were soaked in blood. The Primal God Pure Lands, Heretical God Tree and grandmist space, these three strengths gathered together, forming the most solid and the most terrifying hallowed ground. Once one stepped into this space, they would be imprisoned within it.

Tian Mingzi's pupils shrank. He gloomily said, "Your blood vitality has only doubled. Do you think that just because your blood vitality is strong, it will increase your combat strength by that much?"

"Why not? If you think that you can pinch me to death as you please, then meet my spear!"

Lin Ming pointed his spear straight at Tian Mingzi. Atop the Phoenix Blood Spear, the power of thunder and flame began to weave together.

The thunder and fire of heavenly tribulation joined together with Lin Ming's Fire and Thunder Laws that approached the sixth level. Not just that, but his surging blood vitality was also added on. Like this, the might of his Heavenly Dao Judgment could be imagined.

The current Lin Ming was truly incomparable to the past. It was not only because his cultivation was almost at the late Divine Sea realm, but also because he had seen the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace after having absorbed the essence energy of the great emperor's heart. Although Lin Ming couldn't be said to have taken a half-step into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, he had at least touched upon the threshold of that gate. As long as he could take another step forwards, he would be able to enter it.

He had made gains in both his body transformation and essence gathering cultivation systems. At the same time, Lin Ming's blood vitality had doubled from what it was before. With him having fused together with the essence energy from Empyrean Primordius' heart, he had been completely transformed!

In front of Lin Ming, the black hole seed appeared. The power of the Heretical God Tree poured into the Phoenix Blood Spear without reservation. The power of essence, energy, and divine fused within Lin Ming, combining as one!

Eternal Darkness!

As this spear came thrusting out, the heavens and earth seemed to split apart. Within the superimposed domain of the Primal God Pure Lands and the grandmist space, Lin Ming was a divine god of this world, controlling everything, sweeping away all obstacles!

Tian Mingzi's complexion was dignified. In a fraction of an instant, his hands linked together, forming thousands of seals. The Catastrophic Pagoda crazily spun as golden writing began to shine all over it!

Ka ka ka!

The void shattered. Lin Ming's spear strike continued forwards, causing large tracts of space to collapse around it. The black hole seed fused with the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation, howling towards Tian Mingzi like a red and purple divine dragon.

Bang!

This spear crashed into the Catastrophic Pagoda, causing the pagoda to violently shake!

A divine light emerged, rolling through the skies and piercing through the endless hazy fog. All of the tens of thousands of evil spirits for dozens and dozens of miles were sucked into this explosion, their forms instantly turning to dust!

Ka ka ka!

With a jarring screech, a shallow crack actually appeared on the surface of the Catastrophic Pagoda.

"What!?"

Tian Mingzi's pupils shrank, his complexion paling!

There was actually a crack in the Catastrophic Pagoda!?

Although this was only a phantom of the true pagoda, it still contained a divided wisp of the artifact spirit's soul. Moreover, it was formed with 30% of the true pagoda's essence energy. Even so, a crack had appeared in this pagoda because of Lin Ming's attack!

"Demon God Descends!"

Tian Mingzi shouted out loud. All of the energy within him erupted. Billowing demonic energy surged out around him, gathering onto his eight foot long sword before it slashed out!

Kacha!

The black sword light cut down upon Lin Ming's black hole seed, colliding with Eternal Darkness. In that moment, the black hole seed shook but the sword light was also broken into nothingness, causing a massive amount of energy to explode outwards.

Lin Ming drew backwards. In that collision just now he had indeed received a great backlash from that energy. But, Lin Ming's blood vitality was boiling over, and instead of being negatively affected by this impact, it caused his blood to boil with an even greater excitement, as if nothing bad had happened to him.

On the other hand, Tian Mingzi's situation was much worse. He was only an avatar and every time a bit of energy or blood vitality was used up, it was impossible for him to restore it. In that frontal collision just now, he had consumed a tremendous amount of strength. His complexion was pale and his body began to blur. And, the most hateful thing of all was that a crack had appeared on his magic tool, the Catastrophic Pagoda.

The reason that this result occurred was that he had fought within domain created by the superimposed Primal God Pure Lands and grandmist space. It was inevitable that Tian Mingzi's strength would be suppressed.

At this time, Tian Mingzi's complexion became thoroughly dark.

He never thought that not only could he not beat just Mo Eversnow, but now he wasn't even Lin Ming's match!

How could this be?

Tian Mingzi's complexion was extremely ugly. He had paid a great price in order to chase Lin Ming down to the lower realms, and he had done so because it was imperative that he cut down Lin Ming and extinguish all future troubles. But now, killing Lin Ming would be more difficult than rising to heaven.

He was well aware that once Lin Ming returned to the Divine Realm, he could only escape like a stray dog and give up the Skydark Holy Lands, becoming a fugitive that fled around the universe. The foundation that he spent 50,000 years building would be instantly destroyed!

Chapter 1370 – Take the Memories

Chapter 1370 – Take the Memories

….

…

…

At this time, Tian Mingzi realized that staying here was meaningless. It would be impossible for him to kill Lin Ming. If he were to stay, his avatar might be killed by Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow instead.

Tian Mingzi had already decided to withdraw, however, he was currently surrounded by the Primal God Pure Lands. Although the Catastrophic Pagoda was able to just barely resist it, wanting to escape from here would be difficult.

Tian Mingzi didn't want to loser this avatar. This was an avatar formed from severing his hand and he had even placed a wisp of his soul inside. If he lost it, it would consume a tremendous amount of his true self's essence energy and cultivation, even damaging his soul.

Before this, Tian Mingzi had been working with the saint race. With the help of the saints, Tian Mingzi had started to gradually touch upon the realm of a half-step Empyrean. Once he took this step, it would only be a matter of time for him to become an Empyrean. However, if he were to lose his avatar now, this would cause severe and lasting damage to his foundation, causing him to be stuck at the peak World King boundary for an even longer time. This was not a loss he could withstand; it would greatly affect his future boundary.

Tian Mingzi's ambitions were enormous. After coming into contact with the saints, he wasn't even satisfied with becoming an Empyrean anymore. He wanted to become a True

Divinity and even seek the true road to eternal life. How could he allow a portion of his mortal body to be destroyed like this?

He remained absolutely vigilant as he probed the Primal God Pure Lands for any flaws.

“Do you think there is a chance you will be able to run away here?”

Mo Eversnow sneered. Her palms gathered together and then came apart as a beam of light appeared between them; this was an energy sword formed by pure condensed origin energy.

“Today, you will leave this avatar of yours here!”

Mo Eversnow suddenly took a step forwards, cutting down at Tian Mingzi. At the same time Lin Ming also moved, the Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands revolving with the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation.

Heavenly Dao Judgment!

Mo Eversnow and Lin Ming, one left, one right, both of them rushing towards Tian Mingzi!

Even if they were alone, either one of them could battle Tian Mingzi. In particular, Mo Eversnow could absolutely kill Tian Mingzi by herself. However, they didn’t wish to do such a thing. Facing scum like Tian Mingzi, anything like honorable martial arts conduct was nothing but a joke. To kill Tian Mingzi’s avatar with absolutely overwhelming strength was the only true righteous way to go about it.

“Damn it all!” Tian Mingzi grit his teeth. Behind him, the Catastrophic Pagoda began to shine with a brilliant light, stabilizing the skies above.

Meanwhile, he poured all of his strength into this pagoda. Asura demon god phantoms began to appear around Tian Mingzi, maintaining the final barrier of the Eternal Demon Domain.

However, anything he did was useless; the disparity between them was simply far too great, especially against Mo Eversnow. Within her Primal God Pure Lands, she was the absolute ruler, controlling all.

A sword slashed down. Before the sword light arrived, the pressure of the blade and the Laws already came crashing down from the skies. Even within the Eternal Demon Domain, Tian Mingzi felt all of his blood vitality tumble around, his true essence becoming chaotic.

At the same time, Lin Ming's Heavenly Dao Judgment also arrived. The power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation wove together into a sea of red and purple. Flames howled, thunder billowed!

Ka ka ka ka!

The attacks from both sides combined together. The Catastrophic Pagoda violently trembled as cracks began to spread through its form like a growing spider web; it would soon break!

Tian Mingzi's face darkened. He forced out all the strength within his body, but no matter what he did, it was useless. In just several breaths of time, there was a loud shattering sound as the Catastrophic Pagoda broke apart, fading into ash!

Tian Mingzi spat out a mouthful of blood and his body flew backwards!

Tian Mingzi was tossed several miles away. But even though he was sent tumbling such a long distance away, the Primal God Pure Lands still followed him the entire time, covering him within so that he didn't have the slightest chance to escape through the void.

Tian Mingzi's figure became increasingly blurry as his complexion turned gloomy.

"You will pay a deep price. Even if my avatar cannot escape here today, I will activate my arcane skill and leave behind a mark of my flesh and blood essence energy in your body. Then, in the future, my true self will chase you down to the ends of the world!"

Tian Mingzi made one final threat.

"Hahahaha!" Lin Ming wildly laughed. "Do you hear yourself speaking? Do you understand how ridiculous you sound? You have colluded with the saint race. For your own ambitions, you did not even hesitate to betray your fellow man. After I return to the Divine Realm, I will announce this truth to the public. I believe that once Empyrean Divine Dream and Empyrean Vast Universe sea the corpse of the saint in my spatial ring, they will believe my words without a doubt. At that time, it won't be you chasing me, but everyone underneath the heavens chasing you!"

Lin Ming's words had completely poked at Tian Mingzi's fatal weakness. Tian Mingzi's face twisted as if someone had touched his reverse scale. "Lin Ming, you are courting death!"

Lin Ming chuckled once more. "How funny. Do you actually think I would keep this secret for you?"

Tian Mingzi seemed to suddenly think of something. A fierce smile spread across his face. "Perhaps what you say is true, but on the day that the great calamity approaches, do you think that the saint race will be defeated, or will humanity be defeated? Do you think that the inevitable rivers that will wash away this world are something that can be caused by my betrayal alone? Hahahaha! Let me tell you something, the saints are 10 times stronger than humanity. Humans only have a single Divine Realm but the saints control far more realms! A wise man can recognize the circumstances. I am only someone that is following the trends and making the most suitable decisions in this world! One day, you will eventually realize that my choice was correct all along. When the saint race controls this world, I will flay you alive until there is nothing but you divine soul left. I will torture you for 100,000 years and have you suffer in the most miserable way possible!"

Tian Mingzi hatefully said, his voice as haunting as the shrill cries of ghosts.

Tian Mingzi had joined the side of the saint race. One reason was because of his great ambitions, but another reason came from the fact that he recognized that the human race had an extremely high chance of losing to the saint race. Whether it was in the world of martial artists or the mortal world, when two sides fought, for all sorts of various reasons, there would always be traitors and defectors. In particular when one side was far stronger than the other.

The saint race was truly far more formidable than humanity. In ancient times, the saint race, the human race, and the soul race all existed as equals, controlling the 33 Layered Heavens together. But afterwards, humanity began to control less and less of the universe. Every time a universe fell to the enemy, the strength of humanity would weaken more and more.

When the great calamity truly arrived, it was impossible to say what would happen to humanity, who only occupied the Divine Realm.

"I cannot predict the trends of the world, but what I can predict is that you will absolutely die before then!"

Lin Ming shouted out loud as he swept his spear outwards. In that moment, innumerable Divine Seal runes swept towards Tian Mingzi, covering the skies.

All around Tian Mingzi, the Eternal Demon Domain was compressed to less than a hundred feet around him. These seals fell onto a massive number of fierce devils, instantly turning them to ash!

Woosh!

The Phoenix Blood Spear cut through the void. Tian Mingzi hurriedly drew back. However, his protective true essence was swept over by Lin Ming's spear light, causing it to explode into pieces.

After barely offsetting this spear light, before Tian Mingzi could even catch his breath, Mo Eversnow's attack also arrived!

Mo Eversnow was currently far stronger than Lin Ming. Her attack was unstoppable!

"Damnit!"

Tian Mingzi desperately combusted his blood essence, cutting down with his eight foot long sword.

However, at this time, the Primal God Pure Lands took this chance to break through the gaps of Tian Mingzi's shattered protective true essence and drill into his body!

Tian Mingzi's body shook, his strength immediately weakening by a dramatic amount.

Ding!

With a loud ringing sound, Tian Mingzi's sword was sent flying away. Mo Eversnow's sword chopped down on Tian Mingzi's left shoulder. The energy sword cut down, tearing through Tian Mingzi's body and cutting open his lungs as well as over 20 ribs. As Mo Eversnow's sword slashed through, a massive amount of blood rained down. Tian Mingzi was nearly cut in half by her strike!

In that moment, Tian Mingzi's eyes glazed over without any response at all. All he felt was another cold feeling pierce through his chest. From behind, Lin Ming's bloodstained spear had penetrated through his body, emerging from his chest.

Like this, Tian Mingzi was pierced through by Lin Ming's spear. His incomplete body hung atop the Phoenix Blood Spear, thick red blood flowing down the shaft!

This was the limit of an avatar. Even though Tian Mingzi was strong, every time he used his strength he became that much weaker. After several rounds of fierce combat, he was unable to maintain his peak state. As for Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow, their blood vitality seemed to be endless. They could fight on and on for days on end.

Tian Mingzi was already on the losing side, and under such an imbalance of power, in this round of attacks he was killed by Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow!

Tian Mingzi grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear in one hand and Mo Eversnow's energy sword in the other, his palms wet with blood…

Without words, all he did was glare at Mo Eversnow and Lin Ming with undisguised hatred.

His blood leaked out as more and more strength faded from his body. His body shrank, withering, until it was finally reduced to a severed hand.

This was the source of Tian Mingzi's avatar.

Besides this hand, there was also a wisp of soul fire slowly burning around the blood-dripping hand. This soul fire rushed about as if he wanted to escape, but it was forcefully locked in by Lin Ming's Divine Dream Law.

This was the wisp of remnant soul that Tian Mingzi had left in his avatar in order to guarantee success in killing Lin Ming. Tian Mingzi had even sent a wisp of his soul, all in order to allow his avatar to have the Laws and cultivation methods available to overpower Lin Ming!

Facing an enemy like Lin Ming, if he didn't have the support of Laws and cultivation methods then it was simply impossible to win.

Lin Ming sneered. He held onto this wisp of soul fire like an eagle that was grasping onto a chicken. For a time, this wisp of soul fire was nearly crushed in Lin Ming's hands.

"Lin Ming, slow down! Don't destroy it!" Mo Eversnow said out loud.

"Mm? Senior-apprentice Sister, what do you plan on doing with it? Do you really plan on refining this? This is only a wisp of his soul; there won't be any meaning to it at all." Lin Ming wanted to use the Divine Dream Law to directly refine this wisp of soul and turn it into pure soul force. He wanted to avoid Tian Mingzi's tricks and reduce the number of potential problems. But now, Mo Eversnow had stopped him from doing that.

Mo Eversnow said, “Although this is only an insignificant wisp of soul, Tian Mingzi left behind many valuable things inside to guarantee that he would be able to kill you. For instance, cultivation methods and Laws. After I fused together with Senior Heavenly Empress Xuanqing, my strength increased by a great deal. I might be able to activate the Magic Cube to cancel the spirit mark of this soul wisp, transforming it into a purified soul fragment so you can absorb the memories.”

Mo Eversnow slowly said with a true essence sound transmission. Lin Ming was startled as he heard this. “Activate the Magic Cube to transform this soul fragment?”

Chapter 1371 – Heaven Absorbing Demon Art and the Nine Star Heaven Pill

Chapter 1371 – Heaven Absorbing Demon Art and the Nine Star Heaven Pill

…

…

…

"Can that be done?"

Lin Ming very much wanted to obtain Tian Mingzi's wisp of soul. To further realize comprehensions of Laws and also understand the cultivation methods within was an extremely precious wealth.

Tian Mingzi's attainments in the Space and Time Laws were extremely high. Of course, it was impossible for Lin Ming to directly appropriate them for himself, but being able to meditate on these Laws in the future would be an inestimable advantage.

"It should be possible."

As Mo Eversnow spoke, her entire body suddenly ignited with dim white energy flames. These flames approached Tian Mingzi, wrapping around that remnant soul.

That wisp of remnant soul released a shrill cry as it rushed about, not willing to resign itself to its fate of being refined.

However, in front of Mo Eversnow, everything it did was futile.

Chi!

With a light sound, this remnant soul's divine was directly destroyed by Mo Eversnow, turning into pure soul energy. Then, without pausing, Mo Eversnow placed this wisp of soul energy into the Magic Cube space…

….

"Bastard!"

Countless trillions of miles away in the Divine Realm, in the depths of the Skydark Holy Lands, Tian Mingzi cried out in pain. He lashed out, sending the table in front of him flipping over. This table was made from timeless god stone and weighed over 100,000 jins, but it was still sent flying away like a piece of paper. All of the ink and paper on the table was twisted into ash by the turbulent energy flows!

"Die! All of you will die!"

Tian Mingzi's hair was disheveled. His hands were tightly grasped onto his forehead. His face was white, streaming with sweat!

Losing a hand wasn't enough to cause him to suffer so much. But, losing a wisp of his divine soul had actually caused serious damage to his spiritual sea! To forcefully cut away a piece of his soul and then have that piece completely destroyed, this agonizing pain and loss could be imagined!

"Lin Ming! And that woman!"

Tian Mingzi's eyes turned blood red. He fell to his knees, blood trickling down from the corners of his eyes.

To fail in this mission was a serious attack on him!

To Tian Mingzi, losing the 12 most outstanding young elites of the Skydark Holy Lands in a single go wasn't anything at all.

But to lose his avatar, this caused severe damage to his origin energy. His soul and body had both suffered tremendous losses. The hand he had tempered to nearly the half-step Empyrean realm was now lost forever, and this would create a massive hindrance to his future goal of becoming an Empyrean.

Tian Mingzi had an approximate understanding of what had happened in the final moments of the battle. Normally, when a supreme elder created an avatar, this avatar wouldn't have the ability to share memories. For instance, when Empyrean Divine Dream created her avatar, that was only an incarnation created by several hundred years of her cultivation; it didn't hold a wisp of her soul at all. Once this avatar was used up, it was gone.

But Tian Mingzi's avatar was different. Since it contained a wisp of his soul, he was able to obtain some transmitted information from the avatar.

Thus, he learnt that although the Sky Spill Planet seemed like an insignificant little planet among the billion plus worlds of the lower realms, it actually contained a heaven-shaking secret!

"Who is it that left behind their inheritance on the Sky Spill Planet?"

Tian Mingzi grabbed onto a pillar and pulled himself up. The right side of his face was stained with blood.

This inheritance was definitely left behind by an Empyrean level character, and most likely an outstanding existence amongst Empyreans. Otherwise, how could just the aftermath of that cursing technique have lasted for these last tens of thousands or even hundreds of thousands of years?

When Tian Mingzi's avatar entered the Blood Slaughter Steppes, it had been unable to completely avoid the influence of the curse. If it weren't for curses naturally being slow to work, then his avatar would have likely received tremendous damage before meeting Lin Ming.

"The Sky Spill Planet! What a pity!"

Tian Mingzi's eyes flashed with a cold brilliance. Because of the Empyrean enchantment that protected the Sky Spill Planet, his true self was unable to arrive there. And even if he were to send an avatar down, its strength had to be suppressed to the late Divine Sea realm. It simply wasn't able to display its true power. If the avatar had fallen into an array formation left behind by some unknown Empyrean, it would truly have died without a grave!

For an array formation left behind by such a top character, if there was any hostility towards Tian Mingzi at all, then even if Tian Mingzi's true self were to appear there he would likely perish.

Tian Mingzi could only watch the lucky chances of the Sky Spill Planet, but couldn't eat them at all.

Moreover, he could no longer stay at the Demondawn Great World. Once his betrayal was exposed, he could only look for a place to lie low and wait for the great calamity to arrive.

Even so, as he thought about giving up the Skydark Holy Lands that he had spent 50,000 years and endless amounts of effort and energy to establish, he felt his heart drip with blood. All of this trouble was granted to him by Lin Ming!

"Lin Ming, I will remember the grudge of today. When the great calamity arrives, I will have you die a hundred times more!"

Tian Mingzi grit his teeth, clenching his fists so hard that his nails dug into his flesh and blood.

And on the stump from his severed hand, the flesh and blood began to wriggle about.

With a crackling sound, the bones of his arm began to grow back once more. Blood vessels and meridians formed, followed by muscles and eventually the skin.

It only took a mere moment for Tian Mingzi to form a new hand. However, this hand was far inferior to his original hand. The essence energy that he lost would not be able to be restored.

....

At this time, in the Eternal Demon Abyss, Mo Eversnow and Lin Ming had arrived in the Magic Cube space.

Tian Mingzi's remnant soul had already turned into a milky white light that floated in midair.

Mo Eversnow floated in front of this light, both of her hands forming seals that submerged into it.

At this time, from the skies, a dark gray light came shining down upon this milky white light. This was the power of the Magic Cube.

Currently, it was still too difficult for Mo Eversnow to activate the Magic Cube to kill others. But, using it just to cancel out the spirit mark in this soul wasn't difficult at all.

Underneath the power of the Magic Cube, Tian Mingzi's spirit mark was slowly washed away.

The soul was fragile, and a spirit mark was like threads of thinnest spider silk as it spread through the soul, completely integrating into every part of this soul. Wanting to wash away the spirit mark without destroying the soul was something that only the Magic Cube could accomplish.

In a full quarter hour of time, this mass of soul energy was reduced to the purest masterless soul fragment.

Mo Eversnow waved her hands and this soul fragment flew towards Lin Ming, sinking into his spiritual sea.

For a time, a massive wave of memories washed over Lin Ming.

In order to kill Lin Ming, Tian Mingzi had poured a tremendous amount of his Law comprehensions in this soul fragment. Moreover, he had recorded all sorts of cultivation methods in it as well.

"Heaven Absorbing Demon Art!"

Lin Ming's eyes brightened. Tian Mingzi was truly an exceptionally rare heaven-gifted genius. He had received the recognition of Empyrean Demondawn and had even been allowed to enter Demondawn Heavenly Palace to study their core inheritance – the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art.

When Tian Mingzi had fought Lin Ming, he had used the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art, causing Lin Ming to suffer a heavy blow.

To study a transcendent divine might from the start required a great deal of time and energy.

But if it were a cultivation method that Tian Mingzi had already cultivated, then Lin Ming would be able to absorb that training experience and relearn it. Once he studied it himself, it would be far simpler.

Moreover, Lin Ming didn't wish to study the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art to the highest boundary; he only needed it as an auxiliary cultivation method. At a critical moment, for instance, if Lin Ming were to overdraw his energy and become as dry as an oil-less lamp, then the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art would be able to display a miraculous effect.

This was an extremely tyrannical martial art that absorbed all energy for oneself.

Besides the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art, Tian Mingzi had all sorts of comprehensions into Concepts and Laws, all of which was accepted by Lin Ming. Only by fully absorbing the masterless soul fragment in its purest untainted state could one perfectly inherit these memories that even included these comprehensions in Laws.

These Laws were temporarily sealed away by Lin Ming. He required time to slowly perceive them.

But at this time, something else caught Lin Ming's attention. "This is... the Nine Star Heaven Pill?"

Lin Ming was startled. In Tian Mingzi's memories, this was an ancient pill recipe that had been long lost to time. Over 3.6 billion years ago, when human martial artists had opened the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates, they would then be able to take a Nine Star Heaven Pill to directly break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Place!

"Senior-apprentice Sister..."

Lin Ming immediately reiterated news of the Nine Star Heaven Pill to Mo Eversnow.

"Nine Star Heaven Pill?"

Mo Eversnow thought for a moment before saying, "When I desired to break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace in the past, I searched through endless ancient texts and materials and I also saw records of the Nine Star Heaven Pill. This is truly a miraculous body transformation medicine, but all sorts of rare and incomparably precious heavenly materials are required to refine it. In particular, under the current rules of the Heavenly Dao, wanting to refine one is as difficult as ascending to heaven. Even if you were to gather materials for hundreds of years you might still be lacking. If you want to refine a Nine Star Heaven Pill, it is simply far too difficult. And even if you did manage to do so, it might not necessarily allow you to enter the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace."

In the end, the Heavenly Dao rules had changed. Now, underneath the current Heavenly Dao rules, the Nine Star Heaven Pill alone was unable to break through this demonic curse.

"What Senior-apprentice Sister says is also included in Tian Mingzi's memories. But, what I find strange is for what reason would Tian Mingzi be refining the Nine Star Heaven Pill?"

Tian Mingzi's wisp of remnant soul only had the smallest amount of his memories contained within it. There were no memories as to why he was searching for the Nine Star Heaven Pill.

Mo Eversnow said, "It should be related to the saint race... the saint race and human race are similar in appearance, but what they specialize in is the body transformation technique. Perhaps the Nine Star Heaven Pill is needed by someone from the saint race."

Mo Eversnow's speculations were reasonable. Lin Ming nodded, saying, "No matter what it is for, if there is a chance to concoct this Nine Star Heaven Pill then I must refine it. Although it will be difficult to break through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace with this alone, it will at least allow me to become that much closer. To walk down the road towards the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace is a path that defies the will of the heavens to begin with, but since I chose this path I must try twice as hard. Even if there is something that offers the slimmest chance, there is no way I can give up on it."

"Mm, what you say is right. Lin Ming, before you enter the Eternal Demon Abyss I will first help you officially break into the late Divine Sea realm. Your foundation has already reached the peak of stability. Now is the best time."

When Lin Ming fought with Tian Mingzi, he had almost broken into the late Divine Sea realm. The difference now was only an accumulation of energy. As long as he absorbed enough energy his breakthrough would be successful.

"Good plan, Senior-apprentice Sister."

feLin Ming nodded. Mo Eversnow took out Tian Mingzi's severed hand and then thrust out her palm, forming thousands of seals that rapidly wrapped it in a cocoon of energy. Mo Eversnow wanted to borrow the essence energy within Tian Mingzi's avatar to allow Lin Ming to break into the late Divine Sea realm in a single go.

Chapter 1372 – Entering the Eternal Demon Abyss

Chapter 1372 – Entering the Eternal Demon Abyss

…

…

…

Lin Ming was originally able to easily break into the late Divine Sea realm. However, to become a true late Divine Sea realm master, he needed the complete consolidated cultivation of a late Divine Sea master and this was something that required a period of accumulation. Only by constantly absorbing energy could one expand one's inner world and do this.

But now, with the total true essence contained within Tian Mingzi's hand to serve as a catalyst, this process would be much faster.

This was the hand of a Great World King, and Tian Mingzi was also an extraordinary person amongst all Great World Kings.

This sort of hand had been tempered for tens of thousands of years. It had long become an extremely pure spirit body.

"Break!"

Mo Eversnow flicked her finger and Tian Mingzi's hand completely exploded in the air. The essence energy, the aura, the flesh and blood vitality all thoroughly separated. All of these energies formed phantoms in the air. These phantoms were all strange and bizarre. There was a black wheel disk, a pagoda, a long sword, and even demons.

These phantoms all represented the various cultivation methods that Tian Mingzi had cultivated to a high level.

When a martial artist trained in a cultivation method, part of their energy would circulate according to that cultivation method, forming a phantom. Now, even if Tian Mingzi's avatar had died and his energies were pulled out, underneath the constraints of his cultivation methods and Laws, they would maintain their current state.

If someone was to pull out all of Lin Ming's flesh and blood and change it into source energy, one would see these energies condense into a divine tree, black hole seed, Prime Emperor Lotus Flower, and several other phantoms.

From the phantoms of Tian Mingzi's source energy, the most formidable one was a four-armed asura with wings. This asura carried a black wheel in its hand; the cultivation that this asura symbolized was the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art, the transcendent divine might created by Empyrean Demondawn.

"Shatter!"

Mo Eversnow thrust out her palm and all of the phantoms formed from these supernatural powers were smashed into pieces by her, turning into the purest and most source essence possible. All of these energies gathered into a great current that flowed into Lin Ming's body.

Lin Ming certainly wouldn't absorb Tian Mingzi's energy as his own; he only wanted to expand his inner world using it.

Ka ka ka ka!

Energy recklessly surged about as it impacted against the barriers of Lin Ming's inner world. Lin Ming's inner world became increasingly unstable. Cracks appeared as it constantly expanded.

Lin Ming sat down on the ground. Behind him, the phantom of the Heretical God Tree slowly appeared. Within the crown of this tree, a dark black hole slowly revolved.

In expanding his inner world with Tian Mingzi's essence energy, there would inevitably be some mixed energies brought in. But all of this energy was sucked into Lin Ming's black hole seed before being thoroughly compressed and crushed.

The black hole seed formed by the Divine Seal Art was a bottomless pit, able to absorb and annihilate all energies.

Such a state continued for several hours. Then, with a cracking sound, Lin Ming's body suddenly shook and massive airwaves erupted from around him. The massive stone cliff trembled as if a million jin steel weight had struck it. A massive section of rock exploded as countless cracks spread through it like a spider web.

Lin Ming had finally broken through to the late Divine Sea realm!

To seek Ninefall was to cross the Nine Divine Shifts. Now, Lin Ming had finished a third of the Nine Divine Shifts.

"Good! Very good!" Mo Eversnow praised out loud. "Lin Ming, you can now be considered a character in your own right. Even most Divine Lord powerhouses will not be your match. And in the Divine Realm, a Divine Lord powerhouse is someone that can control their own planet, becoming a master of their own domain."

Back in Phoenix Cry Palace, Fairy Feng and Sage Jiuyang were both Divine Lord powerhouses. Of course, they were Divine Lord powerhouses that stood at the peak of their boundary; Lin Ming was just a tiny bit away from being able to compare with them.

In the Divine Realm, an ordinary Divine Transformation master could already freely wander around, seeking their own lucky chances and journeying into mystic realms. If they ran into robbers they would also have the strength to protect themselves.

As for Divine Lord powerhouses, they were above even that. They could found their own sect and establish their own martial family. Later, their future descendants would politely refer to them as the founder.

The current Lin Ming was someone that could be compared to the founder of a Divine Realm sect.

“Lin Ming, it is finally time to enter the Eternal Demon Abyss. Adjust your condition and stabilize your true essence. Once you are ready we can go.”

“Of course, Senior-apprentice Sister.”

Lin Ming solemnly nodded. It was hard for him to imagine just what he would encounter in the Eternal Demon Abyss.

In the past, before Empyrean Primordius fell from the skies, he would certainly not have wanted his own inheritances to fall into the hands of his enemies.

Thus, there were bound to be layers upon layers of dangers within the Eternal Demon Abyss!

In the face of an array formation left behind by an extreme Empyrean, Lin Ming didn’t think for half a second that he would be able to resist it.

It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that as long as someone entered the Eternal Demon Abyss who was identified as an enemy by Empyrean Primordius, then they would die, even if they were a Great World King! As for half-step Empyreans, Lin Ming wasn’t sure whether or not they could safely pass through the ruins left behind by Empyrean Primordius.

However, this didn’t matter because it was impossible for half-step Empyreans to enter the Sky Spill Continent. There was no way for them to break through the protective barrier that shielded the entire Sky Spill Planet.

Only a character on the same level as Empyrean Primordius would be able to unravel the barrier he laid down. For instance, someone like Empyrean Divine Dream. At the very least, one needed to be only slightly weaker. As for characters like Empyrean Demondawn who were much worse, they could only use brute strength to forcefully break through the barrier of the Sky Spill Planet to take Empyrean Primordius' inheritance.

But such characters often had their own unique transcendent divine might and they would have already practiced it to perfection. As for resources, they had so many they would never be able to use them up. They wouldn't necessarily have any desire or need to take Empyrean Primordius' inheritances.

Also, a character on that level, such as Empyrean Divine Dream, would often have some sort of history with Empyrean Primordius. They wouldn't do something as cruel as digging up his grave.

Lin Ming went into seclusion to stabilize his condition for a full day, adjusting himself to his peak combat state. Then, he grasped his Phoenix Blood Spear and slowly flew towards the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Although his pace didn't appear fast, every step he took brought him several miles forwards. Along the way, some evil beings formed from infernal energy hurtled themselves towards Lin Ming, but they were all turned to ash by a single sweep of his spear.

He approached the Eternal Demon Abyss more and more.

As he pulled close, the infernal energy in the air became increasingly gloomy and thick, forming thin silk-like strands that winded all about.

When he was less than 200 miles away from the Eternal Demon Abyss, nearly all off the evil beings had vanished. This was a true absolute forbidden zone; not even evil beings were able to approach!

As Lin Ming stepped into this range, he felt as if he had stepped into another space-time. As he looked back in the direction he came from, he found that the road behind him became increasingly blurred. Once he stepped into this separate space-time, it seemed that all exits had vanished. The further he went, the more intense this feeling became.

"No wonder evil beings are unable to enter here. This area is already within the range of Empyrean Primordius' array formation. Evil beings wouldn't dare to rush into this area or else they would immediately turn to dust…"

Lin Ming whispered to himself. He could feel a vast and boundless strength sweeping over him; this was a strength that came from the Eternal Demon Abyss, a strength that belonged to Empyrean Primordius.

The sky was darker than ink and the starlight was like liquid water. Above the blood-red earth, the bones and rocks that littered the ground were covered by a light layer of cool light, as if silver was being poured onto the ground.

This scene was especially tranquil and quiet. In this dim and peaceful night, it was hard to imagine that this was an extreme danger zone that many powerhouses had never returned from.

Lin Ming had already fallen down from the skies. He no longer flew, but instead stepped atop the blood red stones, walking along the path paved by starlight, heading towards the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Right in front, the earth split apart, a titanic black flame emerging from the great scar, conflagrating upwards, connecting the heavens and earth together.

Starlight fell into the Eternal Demon Abyss like a waterfall. All of the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy and infernal energy swirled up into a vortex, converging into the Eternal Demon Abyss.

The Eternal Demon Abyss seemed to suck in all the origin energy of the world, swallowing all the essence of the sun and moon.

This was also reasonable. If the array formation that Empyrean Primordius arranged had to revolve for 100,000 years, it naturally had to absorb outside energy to power itself.

Lin Ming used four full hours to travel the final 200 miles.

At this moment, he had truly stepped onto the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

The Eternal Demon Abyss passed through the entire Sky Spill Planet, extending for over 100 million miles, continuing all the way through the planet until it ended up at the Sea of Miracles.

Only an Empyrean could pierce through a planet that was over 100 million miles wide in a single strike, perhaps even destroying that planet.

As for a Great World King like Tian Mingzi, the most they could do was annihilate all lives on this massive planet, or to destroy a tiny planet only ten thousand or so miles wide. The disparity was just too great.

Unfortunately, such a character had suffered the fate of passing away alone. This left Lin Ming filled with deep emotions.

Chapter 1373 – Crystal Bones

Chapter 1373 – Crystal Bones

…

…

…

These blazing black flames combusted over the 10,000 mile diameter of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

These were not true flames, but virtual flames produced by energy.

A terrifying energy followed these flames, swirling from the Eternal Demon Abyss, ascending into the skies. In such an aura, Lin Ming felt himself constantly baptized in a massive storm of power, making him feel a deep sense of awe.

In the past, Empyrean Primordius had descended down to his home planet from the Divine Realm and established his own Samsara Heavenly Dao. His supernatural powers had been nearly unparalleled; it was impossible to imagine just how magnificent that time was.

But what a pity, such an extreme character couldn't avoid the inevitable fate of extermination. Even if he didn't perish halfway on his road of martial arts, he still wouldn't have been able to withstand the erosion of the passing years.

Lin Ming stood on the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss, looking into it. He could see at most several dozen miles into the deep darkness.

Downwards, more and more endless flames of ash and gloom blocked his sight. He couldn't imagine just what sort of horrifying and wondrous world lay beneath him.

The diameter of the Eternal Demon Abyss was 10,000 miles wide and over 100 million miles long. To put it more simply, if one considered the size of mortal nations, hundreds upon hundreds of them could exist within that 10,000 mile diameter.

Even if one rode a horse all day for an entire month, they still wouldn't be able to complete a lap around the giant circle of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

At the edge of the Eternal Demon Abyss, just ten miles away from Lin Ming, he could make out a giant iron chain. This chain was pierced into the walls of the Eternal Demon Abyss, extending downwards endlessly until it slowly vanished into the infinite ashy flames.

This iron chain was thicker than the phantom of the Heretical God Tree when Lin Ming used Heavenly Dao Judgment!

This iron chain was simple and plain, filled with a heavy sense of texture. It was unknown just what sort of material this chain was made from, but all sorts of runes were engraved on it. These runes faintly shimmered, melting into the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy.

For 100,000 years, for countless days and countless nights, this iron chain had been continuously tempered by heaven and earth origin energy, swallowing the essence of the sun and moon. This chain absorbed endless surges of power every second of the day; it was impossible to imagine just how firm it was.

Lin Ming suspected that there was more than one of these iron chains. Rather, they were spread all over the periphery of the Eternal Demon Abyss. It was just that his vision was limited so he could only see one.

"I should follow this iron chain downwards."

Lin Ming bowed towards the Eternal Demon Abyss, then walked towards the wall area where the iron chain was located and jumped down.

In the incomparably massive Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming's figure was like a tiny speck of dust, simply insignificant.

To be safe, Lin Ming chose not to fly. Climbing down this iron chain was slower than flying, but it also wouldn't arouse the attention of some unknown existences.

This thick iron chain was cold to the touch and it also contained a potent power. As Lin Ming climbed down it, he looked like an ant climbing down a tree.

As he continually went deeper and deeper into the Eternal Demon Abyss, he felt that he was trudging through the mountains and rivers of time, finally arriving at a different, ancient time-space.

The Eternal Demon Abyss was simply far too deep. Lin Ming's speed wasn't too fast either. After climbing down for three days and three nights, he estimated he had gone a thousand miles down the Eternal Demon Abyss. However, compared to the 100 million mile depth of the Eternal Demon Abyss, this distance was nothing at all.

During these three days, Lin Ming didn't encounter any danger at all. Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, there existed nothing but a deathly stillness as well as the beating ash flames and the swirling heaven and earth origin energy. Besides that, Lin Ming couldn't make out any strange energy fluctuations.

Time slowly passed, a day at a time.

Lin Ming had already climbed down this iron chain for an entire ten days, nearly reached 10,000 miles deep into the Eternal Demon Abyss.

As he looked up, he could see the rough dark red stone walls extending upwards without end.

At 10,000 miles deep, all of his surroundings had turned pitch black. Outside of the Eternal Demon Abyss, there was the faint starlight that illuminated the ground, but this weak starlight simply couldn't penetrate through the endless fog. It came down just a tiny distance before completely disappearing.

Lin Ming took a step at a time, steadily climbing downwards. With such slow progress, it was unknown just how long he would have to climb for. But, he wasn't worried at all. To him, withstanding the baptism of the world essence energy within the Eternal Demon Abyss was also a kind of training.

Lin Ming restrained his aura, moving with utter caution. However, danger finally arrived.

Just as Lin Ming penetrated 15,000 miles deep into the Eternal Demon Abyss, there was a common-looking rock. As Lin Ming approached it, it suddenly burst into action. It was like a big lizard, suddenly stretching out its claws as it grasped at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's vision condensed and he reflexively counterattacked with his spear. The colored lights of thunder and fire wove together, and with a faint crackling sound, the body of this big lizard was pierced through by the spear light.

"It's dead?"

Lin Ming was startled. This beast was that easy to kill?

"Lin Ming, be careful!"

Mo Eversnow's voice resounded in Lin Ming's mind. At that moment, he felt his spiritual sea suddenly shake as a demonic will formed a sharp cone that thrust towards Lin Ming's soul!

"It really wasn't that easy to kill!" Lin Ming hadn't lowered his guard at all. Even if Mo Eversnow didn't remind him, he could still respond in time.

Divine dream energy flooded into his spiritual sea without hesitation. From between Lin Ming's eyebrows, a brilliant divine light began to shine. A fierce killing intent poured into his grandmist spirit, forming a sword that slashed outwards.

With a tearing sound, this evil will was chopped into several pieces by Lin Ming's grandmist battle spirit.

These several evil spirits seemed to have a life of their own. They wildly struggled, wanting to fuse back together.

"How tenacious!"

Lin Ming swept out his spear. The power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation descended. Underneath the baptism of heavenly tribulation, this evil spirit simply wasn't able to withstand it. It melted into ash and faded away.

This strike thoroughly killed this evil spirit. This evil spirit was extremely cunning; even after its body was ruined it could still use a spiritual attack. In truth, it was nothing but a mass of demonic will and a wisp of energy, intangible and invisible. If it weren't for Lin Ming's dual thunder and fire heavenly tribulation being the ultimate restraint on evil spirits, it would have taken him some time to kill it.

"This is an evil spirit formed from infernal energy."

Mo Eversnow informed. She was sure this was not an ancient life form from 100,000 years ago, otherwise it wouldn't be so weak.

The entrance of the Eternal Demon Abyss was surrounded by the aura left behind by Empyrean Primordius, thus evil spirits didn't dare to approach. But in this 100 million mile deep abyss, not every section contained the aura of Empyrean Primordius, thus there were many evil spirits born here.

"Mm? It seems that the gravity is changing here...?"

After killing these evil spirit, Lin Ming discovered that there was some strange change in the gravity of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Gravity pulled downwards originally, but the further down Lin Ming went, the more gravity angled at an incline, as if there was some strange attractive force in the walls of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

After Lin Ming climbed down a little more, he let go and directly fell onto the walls of the Eternal Demon Abyss, standing at a steady 90 degree angle.

This feeling was the exact same as being on flat land.

After taking several more steps, Lin Ming discovered more evil spirits similar to the one he killed before. These evil spirits were very good at hiding and staying dormant. To be more exact, if no one came, they were no different from stones on the ground without any life fluctuations at all. But, once a stranger approached, they would be like sharks that smelled blood, suddenly striking out to swallow the flesh and blood essence energy of their prey.

These evil spirits were not Lin Ming's match. He poured the power of thunder into the Phoenix Blood Spear. Purple arcs of electricity crazily danced on the spear shaft. These evil spirits were rapidly annihilated by Lin Ming, and their final spiritual attacks were all easily resolved with Lin Ming's grandmist battle spirit.

In terms of soul force and will, how could these evil spirits possibly be Lin Ming's opponent?

As these evil spirits died, they turned into a rich yin energy, causing the surrounding infernal energy to be increasingly strong. An ice-piercing cold thrust into the bones, making one feel as if they were a corpse in a grave.

"Lin Ming, this sort of evil spirit is formed from corpse energy. With so many evil spirits around, a reason they would often appear is that many powerhouses were once buried in an ancient battlefield or perhaps this might have been a mass grave for prisoners. This land beneath our feet was likely such an ancient battlefield."

As Mo Eversnow spoke, Lin Ming suddenly felt something crack beneath his feet as if he had broken something.

He looked down and saw that he had stepped on a skeleton.

Because it was too far in the distant past, these skeletons were already as frail as rotten wood, breaking with just a single step.

To find bones here wasn’t surprising at all.

As he walked further, more and more bones appeared.

These skeletons were at two extremes. Some were decayed and shattered, and others glowed and glittered like carved crystals.

After an essence gathering system martial artist died, their energy would slowly dissipate. Without their mortal body being vitalized by their energy, they would quickly erode.

As for those that had died 100,000 years ago and yet their bones remained as bright as crystals, they had either tempered their own bodies using arcane techniques or they were body transformation martial artists.

“These crystal bones, are they corpses of saints?”

Lin Ming’s mind stirred, inevitably thinking this. The saint race focused on the body transformation cultivation system. After dying, it was reasonable for them to leave behind such a skeleton.

However, Mo Eversnow shook her head.

“These are not saints!”

“Oh?”

Lin Ming was puzzled. At this time, Mo Eversnow flew out from the Magic Cube space and floated high in the air.

She stood in front of all these crystal skeletons for some time. Then, she said in a soft voice, “Lin Ming, as I look at these crystal skeletons, I feel a faint resonating pain in my heart. In truth, I don’t know where these crystal skeletons come from, but I can feel in my bones that I share the same roots as them… perhaps these skeletons were left behind by people of the primal god race…”

“Primal god race!?”

Lin Ming was startled. Why did so many people from the primal god race die here? How was Empyrean Primordius related to the primal god race? “Before, didn’t that senior say that there were very few people from the primal god race remaining? How come so many of them died here?”

Mo Eversnow shook her head, “I’m not sure. I only inherited Senior Heavenly Empress Xuanqing’s body and not her memories. As for how many of the primal god race are left, I am not sure. But what I can be sure of is that these crystal skeletons are the remains of people of the primal god race…”

Mo Eversnow had possessed Heavenly Empyrean Xuanqing’s body, thus she naturally came under the influence of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing. Towards the primal god race, she couldn’t help but feel warm and tender-hearted.

“Lin Ming, do you remember the Forsaken God Clan and the pendant of the jade goddess?”

Mo Eversnow asked. Lin Ming naturally wouldn’t have forgotten something like this.

In the past, when Lin Ming first entered the tomb of the ancient goddess, he had taken a jade pendant form her body, and he was even carrying it with him now.

Chapter 1374 – Dao Domain

Chapter 1374 – Dao Domain

…

…

…

Lin Ming took out the goddess' jade pendant from his spatial ring. The deep azure pendant was marked with an ancient design, just like a bird totem. This jade pendant was not a magic tool itself, but it actually had a special aura to it. It was clearly made from some extraordinary material.

In the past, after Lin Ming found this pendant, he also met a young girl from the cursed Forsaken God Clan, a young woman called Jue who also had a similar pendant on her. Without a doubt, the Forsaken God Clan and the goddess were strongly related.

"Lin Ming, if my guess isn't wrong, then the Forsaken God Clan are the fellow people of Senior Heavenly Empress Xuanqing. In the past, when Senior Heavenly Empress Xuanqing came to the Sky Spill Planet, she didn't come alone, but rather brought along a number of her people.

"Afterwards, in that great war 100,000 years ago, Senior Empyrean Primordius' disciples and Senior Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's people were all involved in that conflict. However, as Senior Empyrean Primordius and Senior Heavenly Empress Xuanqing perished in that battle, their disciples and fellow people also suffered similar casualties. Even so, there were some people that lived on the edges who were still able to survive and continue the bloodline inheritance…"

Lin Ming thought that Mo Eversnow's speculations were reasonable. The Forsaken God Clan were beset by troubles and disasters. At birth, their very bloodline would give them a curse. This curse would attach onto the bodies of those from the Forsaken God Clan in a tattoo-form seal. After their birth, the clansmen of the Forsaken God Clan would periodically have to suffer an excruciating suffering, a pain so deep that it dug into the marrow! And, as they aged, the period of time between these outbreaks would lessen and the time they were in pain for would continue until that person finally died from their suffering.

Although cultivating the martial path could delay the outbreaks of this curse, the effects were limited. As time passed, they would finally be defeated by the power of this curse.

Now, it seemed that this curse was likely carried over from the God Curse Art that haunted the Blood Slaughter Steppes.

It was even possible that the reason Heavenly Empress Xuanqing perished was greatly related to this God Curse Art. In the past, some supreme elder had likely struck Heavenly Empress Xuanxing with this God Curse Art, and although she hadn't directly perished, her people had been affected. Moreover, this curse had continued onwards for 100,000 years.

As Lin Ming thought of this, he felt a deep regret for the Forsaken God Clan. Even if the Forsaken God Clan was only the tiniest outermost people left behind from the primal god race, their talent was incomparable to that of the mortals of the Sky Spill Continent. They should have been able to blossom into glory within the Sky Spill Continent and even found their own wondrous Divine Kingdom, but what a pity, the curse they suffered slowly ate away at their foundation, and as a result they could only endure the humiliation and withdraw into a dimensional realm to extend their lives of pain.

"Lin Ming, no matter what happens in the future, when either you or I have enough strength, we must return to the Sky Spill Planet and find a way to cure the Forsaken God Clan of their curse. This is also a way to give back a little bit of the grace that Senior Heavenly Empress Xuanqing granted to us."

"Mm, Senior-apprentice Sister, please rest assured that even if it weren't for our connection with Senior Heavenly Empress Xuanxing, I would still do that. In the past, when I was being hunted down by the Asura Divine Kingdom, if it weren't for the Forsaken God Clan's Patriarch Shibai risking everything and threatening war with the Asura Divine Kingdom then perhaps I might have died to Situ Haotian's hands."

Lin Ming was a man who remembered every graciousness given to him. He certainly wouldn't forget the Forsaken God Clan and their kindness towards him.

If he made a promise to someone, he would slowly accomplish those promises one by one. For instance, finding a mortal body for Demonshine, or the commitment he made to Mo Riverbliss at Carefree Island.

As long as he had the ability to accomplish it, he would.

Mo Eversnow initially wanted to collect these crystal skeletons together and find a peaceful place to bury them. But as she thought about it, they couldn't stay here for too long and perhaps this place might be the best final resting area for these skeletons.

"Mm? There is..."

Lin Ming suddenly discovered that among the many crystal skeletons, amid the gray and hazy fog, there was a giant stone platform.

This platform was ten feet high and dozens of feet wide. It looked like a big stone table.

Various weapons were stabbed into this stone table!

There were swords, sabers, halberds, spears, and even magic tools like compasses and furnaces. At the same time, there were also tremendous disparities between these weapons. For instance, among the swords, some swords were as long as a man and extremely wide, just like a door. If such a sword were used, its might could be imagined. Besides heavy swords like this, there were exquisite soft swords that looked like jade belts, seeming as if they would bend at the slightest touch.

Among so many weapons, the worst of them were at the spirit artifact level. Let alone the Sky Spill Continent, even within the Divine Realm this would be considered an unimaginable amount of wealth!

Lin Ming roughly guessed that there were thousands of these weapons. Many of them were stabbed in together, layering upon each other to form a forest of sabers, swords, and other weapons. Standing in front of this stone table, Lin Ming felt as if he were a soldier lying in reserve, waiting for the day that he would enter the battlefield.

Such a scene was extremely solemn and somber, making one feel an intense sense of awe.

Were these left behind by Empyrean Primordius' followers in the past?

If these were their weapons, then where were they themselves?

Could they be the bones on the ground?

All sorts of thoughts raced through Lin Ming's mind. He felt his mood become extremely glum. The Eternal Demon Abyss was completely different from the layers upon layers of dangers that Lin Ming imagined at the start. Rather, as he walked further in, he didn't fight. Instead, it was like turning back and reading the pages of an ancient history book.

"Let's go."

After being reflective for some time, Mo Eversnow suddenly spoke up. She and Lin Ming left this grave area together.

As Lin Ming continued onwards, he suddenly felt a deep killing intent.

The surrounding infernal energy became increasingly chilly, finally making him stop.

Beside Lin Ming was Mo Eversnow, who had already come out from the Magic Cube space and was following him from behind. When Lin Ming first stopped, she also came to a halt.

"We… we have stepped into an absolute danger zone!" Mo Eversnow said.

Lin Ming faintly frowned. He had no idea how this absolute danger zone was formed. It didn't seem like one made from an array formation… could it be naturally formed from infernal energy?

Lin Ming sent out his divine sense, thinking to probe his surroundings. After comprehending the Divine Dream Law, his senses had become extremely keen. He soon discovered that the infernal energy had clumped together in various places, forming mysterious dao patterns. These dao patterns clearly held extremely high level Laws.

These Laws didn't seem as if they were naturally formed from the infernal energy of the Eternal Demon Abyss, otherwise they wouldn't be so exquisite. They also carried with them a tiny trace of a postcelestial touch.

"Lin Ming, this danger zoned should be formed by the remnants of Empyrean Primordius' dead disciples as well as those people of the primal god clan that died. Their deaths gathered together, forming a dao domain. That weapon mound we just saw is definitely the source of this killing intent."

Mo Eversnow put forth a reason for why this danger zone had formed.

Empyrean Primordius' disciples were inevitably all extraordinary characters. Even after they died, the cultivation methods they trained in and the Laws they comprehended wouldn't fade away so easily, but might have condensed into a dao domain instead.

For instance, if Lin Ming were to die, the Heretical God Tree and black hole seed within his inner world wouldn't immediately vanish but would remain there. If they were found by someone, they would be priceless treasures. But, if they weren't found, these two things might eventually evolve into a dao domain, creating a danger zone for others.

For example, the black hole seed was likely to absorb a massive amount of energy, turning into a space-time vortex. If a martial artist with a weak cultivation entered, they would be stuck in this vortex forever, unable to emerge.

The danger zone that Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow stepped into was exactly this situation. And, this dao domain was also formed from the deaths of tens of thousands of supreme elders.

The Eternal Demon Abyss was itself a separate world. Once one entered, they could forget leaving. Beyond that, there were many hidden dangers within the Eternal Demon Abyss. There weren't many of these hidden dangers, but to the martial artists of the Sky Spill Continent and even the highest under the heavens, they would absolutely die if they were to stumble into them.

Thus, for so many years, no one had ever returned from the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Mo Eversnow and Lin Ming's complexions were solemn. They thought this was an extremely tricky situation. If they were the least bit incautious, there would be a chance that they both perished here.

"Lin Ming, we cannot use brute force to overcome this… with our strength, it is impossible to push through."

Lin Ming said, "I also think the same. After these seniors died, their aura lingered here for 100,000 years. All of their knowledge, their lifetime worth of cultivation, all the Laws they comprehended, everything they were wove together in this place, even evolving into traces of the all-encompassing Great Dao. This is not something artificially formed, but is something even more exquisite than an array formation laid down by someone. If we take a single wrong step then we'll have gone beyond saving."

Lin Ming took out a random top grade saint artifact from his spatial ring and threw it into a corner of the absolute danger zone.

Peng!

With a cracking sound, a gray light shined and struck the top grade saint artifact.

This gray light looked extremely common, but once it struck the top grade saint artifact that Lin Ming threw out, the saint artifact trembled for a brief moment before disintegrating into dust that fell to the floor.

Even though Lin Ming was prepared for this, he still sucked in a breath of cold air.

Lin Ming could also easily destroy a top grade saint artifact but he couldn't do it like that gray light, immediately disintegrating it into dust.

Just how strong was this?

Perhaps not even some Holy Lord powerhouses could accomplish this.

Moreover, this was only the tip of the iceberg for this absolute danger zone. The further they went, the thicker and more intense the gray light was likely to become. There might even be other types of absolute killing energies. At that time, even if a Holy Lord or World King were to come here, they still might perish!

"Lin Ming, in the past, Empyrean Primordius' disciples and Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's people likely had a half-step Empyrean among their ranks. Compared to Tian Mingzi in his peak state, they were far, far stronger. And there might even have been more than one of these people. Once these people died, the power of the dao domain they left behind could be imagined. I fear that even a Great World King would be in danger coming here."

"Yes..." Lin Ming certainly understood what Mo Eversnow said. He didn't panic or become anxious, instead sinking into deep contemplation for a while. Then, he said to Mo Eversnow, "Empyrean Primordius and Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's followers shouldn't have left behind some trap that would intentionally damage their future descendants. This dao domain was likely left here as a form of protection. If we aren't recognized as enemies, then perhaps with that point we might be able to pass through this area."

Chapter 1375 – 100,000 Year Corpses

Chapter 1375 – 100,000 Year Corpses

…

…

…

Lin Ming closed his eyes within the absolute danger zone, allowing his senses to carefully feel the flow of energy.

“There is an aura of the Grandmist Laws here.” Lin Ming thought out loud. Empyrean Primordius’ disciples studied the Dao of grandmist. After they died, the dao domains they left behind naturally had the aura of the Grandmist Laws.

“There is also some kind of energy… is this… the power of divinity?”

Lin Ming’s mind stirred. This sort of power was extremely similar to the power of divinity that he withstood when he climbed up the Divine Seal Altar in the past. In truth, this so-called power of divinity was the combined strength of essence, energy, and soul.

“It is indeed the power of divinity. It should be the strength left over from the primal god race.” Mo Eversnow said.

The strength that her current body possessed was the power of divinity. Of those that died here, many of them were from the primal god race. It was reasonable that the absolute danger zone would have their strength.

“Lin Ming, if you and I work together we should be able to leave this dao domain.”

The reason that a dao domain was called a dao domain was because it contained the truths of the dao within it.

Lin Ming sank his energy into his inner world. Behind Lin Ming, the Prime Emperor Lotus Flower slowly bloomed. An ancient and boundless aura surged outwards; this was the grandmist space.

As for Mo Eversnow, she also used her own power of divinity. Beautiful divine lights began to shine outwards. Within the darkness of the Eternal Demon Abyss, sunlight appeared, making it seem like it was a beautiful spring day within the abyss. The sound of trickling water echoed through the air, filling the world with pleasant sounds and smells. The Primal God Pure Lands that Mo Eversnow created overlapped with Lin Ming's grandmist space.

With these two domains surrounding them, Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow slowly and carefully advanced forwards.

They didn't use brute force to break through the dao domain, but instead used similar energies to assimilate themselves into the dao domain and unravel the profound principles within it.

Lin Ming walked forwards a step at a time. The original absolute death energy slowly turned peaceful as it entered the dual domains of the grandmist space and Primal God Pure Lands.

And the various Laws of the dao domain also came from similar roots in Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow. The two of them carefully progressed forwards together.

Within this world, everything, including all Laws, had counters. Even though the absolute death energy in this dao domain could instantly crush a top grade saint artifact to dust, within this dual domain, although it still rippled out like waves and the strength inherent within it was still great, it was now extremely soft and gentle without any lethality at all.

Two hours later, Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow finally made their way out of this dao domain. As they looked around themselves, they saw that they had returned to the more familiar scenery of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

The ground was still the dark red stone as before, and not too far away were incomparably thick iron chains. The heavy metal rings cascaded down in layers upon layers, exuding a powerful and profound atmosphere.

When Lin Ming was descending into the Eternal Demon Abyss, he had climbed down these iron chains. He was now 20,000 miles deep, but these iron chains still connected into the darkness with no end in sight.

The Eternal Demon Abyss was far too mysterious. Lin Ming was aware that what they saw now was only the most minor outer portion of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

If he went further, there were bound to be more dangers awaiting him.

“Let’s continue onwards!”

Lin Ming said, steadily walking forwards with Mo Eversnow.

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss there were far too many stunning scenes that left one shocked. It was unknown how long Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow walked for, but eventually the floor beneath their feet began to become slimy. Something stuck to their steps, making every step forwards difficult.

As they looked down, they could see countless thick white silk threads, just like the strands of a spider web.

These spider webs were extremely adhesive. If one stepped on them, it was hard to break free.

Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow flew upwards. They only saw the spider web extending to the distant horizon to some distant land ahead.

These spider webs occasionally wrapped around something, forming giant spider web cocoons. These cocoons were as tall as a person, covered with layers upon layers of silk.

Looking on, there was no end to these cocoons. It was like there were countless cocoons dotting the landscape like flowers.

Lin Ming cast out his sense but wasn’t able to find just where they stopped.

As Lin Ming approached a large cocoon, he could see that these spider webs wrapped around some sort of transparent amber crystal.

What left Lin Ming bewildered was that there seemed to be some sort of life form sealed within these amber crystals. These weren’t insects but people.

In every large cocoon was a person!

To suddenly see people sealed within these amber crystals, and to also see tens of thousands of these crystals all around, Lin Ming couldn’t help but feel his heart skip a beat.

Those sealed within these amber crystals were not all humans. Rather, some had horns on their heads, some had cheeks covered with scales, and some had fierce faces, as if they were cruel devils.

Who were these people? Were they dead? Why were they sealed in amber?

He could feel that these people had completely different auras from those skeletal remains he had seen before.

Locked away within these amber crystals, it was hard to distinguish their true status.

But, what he could confirm was that none of these people sealed in amber were weak.

At this time, Lin Ming could faintly feel energy flowing through the strands of spider silk that formed these cocoons.

This energy was already extremely pale, but with trillions of strands of spider silk gathered together, it was still a considerable amount.

All of this energy was gathered together and transmitted deep into the Eternal Demon Abyss.

“Is this energy being pulled out from the amber crystals?”

Lin Ming was startled. So the flows of energy within these strands of spider silk truly did originate from these amber crystals!

Was it possible that the original function of this spider silk was to extract energy from the amber crystals, and the origin of energy for these amber crystals was the life forms sealed inside?

As Lin Ming realized this, he felt his heart jump. He probed all around, and finally discovered traces of the dao. All around the spider silk there were faint circulations of the Laws.

In other words, all those years ago, someone had arranged a massive array here, sealing away tens of thousands of powerhouses in amber crystals and then using a special technique to extract energy from their bodies!

This method…

Lin Ming was secretly dumbfounded.

Lin Ming couldn’t feel the slightest hint of life fluctuations from the powerhouses in these amber crystals. They were likely dead, and perhaps had even died before they were sealed away.

“To form a great array with so many corpses…this is likely some technique of the demonic path. Is this Empyrean Primordius’ work?”

Lin Ming asked out loud.

Mo Eversnow gently shook her head, “These aren’t necessarily corpses.”

“Mm?” Lin Ming was startled.

Mo Eversnow softly traced the amber crystal, slowly saying, “In the martial world, there are people who desire to extend their lifespans so much that they will use all sorts of incredible and inconceivable methods to do so. There are some divine medicines that can help prolong life, but to these peerless powerhouses who had dug out all the potential in their lives to the extreme, they are basically useless. Because these people are unwilling to turn to dust, or perhaps because they have many desires still left unfulfilled, they can adopt all sorts of ghostly and bizarre methods to extend their lives.

“For instance, if one enters a time enchantment and slows the speed of time within, then one year inside can equal 10 years outside. But, in truth, this method can’t really be considered as extending one’s life. And even so, people also discovered that time enchantments have a limit to which they can extend one’s lifespan.

“In the universe, there seems to be some Law out there that prevents unrivalled powerhouses from living near immortal lives. Afterwards, some people invented a new method. This method is to seal someone into a divine crystal and have them fall into a deep and permanent sleep, bringing all their life activities to a halt. This allows them to live longer, even if the effects are eventually limited.”

Mo Eversnow said. She guessed that this amber crystal was similar to the divine crystal used to extend one’s lifespan.

“Empyrean Primordius prolonged the lives of his followers? I feel that these people aren’t his disciples nor are they from the primal god race.”

“They aren’t. Rather, it seems more possible that they are from the saint race, the invaders of the Sky Spill Planet 100,000 years ago.”

As Mo Eversnow said this, Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. This was extremely possible indeed.

Empyrean Primordius had used the corpses of the saint race invaders, or even living captives, to arrange this array formation!

This method was ruthless and merciless. But, it was also well within reason. For someone to become an Empyrean, they had to slaughter countless people on their road of martial arts. If they were a soft-hearted individual, how could they have possibly arrived at this step?

Moreover, the human race and the saint race had a deep and endless grudge against each other. For a human to show mercy to the saint race was to court destruction for their own race.

However, if this array formation was gathering so much essence energy, what was it used for?

Lin Ming could feel that this array formation that absorbed the essence energy of the saint race wasn't so simple. Moreover, this array formation even absorbed heaven and earth origin energy from the outside.

As Lin Ming was thinking this, he suddenly felt his entire body go cold. At this moment, he could feel a deep killing intent lock onto him.

He turned around to see that within the crowd of cocoons, there was one cocoon where a pair of scarlet eyes was staring at him.

A weird creature with four arms had been hiding there like a spectral ghost, locking its gaze onto Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow.

“What is that?”

Lin Ming reflexively extracted the Phoenix Blood Spear. At this time, the creature moved.

Its speed reached nearly unbelievable degrees. Its foot smashed into the ground and its body immediately turned into an afterimage as it hurtled towards Lin Ming. It stretched out sickle-like arms covered with bone spikes, cutting downwards!

Peng!

With a loud crash, the Phoenix Blood Spear struck the bone spikes.

Lin Ming only felt an incomparably powerful impact force rush through him, sending him flying away as blood tumbled in his body.

What a horrifying strength!

It had to be known that after Lin Ming opened the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates, his strength had broken through 100 million jins. If he used some special skills, he could even multiply his strength. Even so, his own strength had been suppressed by this four-armed abomination!

This proved that the level of this four-armed monster was much higher than Lin Ming's. Only an absolute suppression of boundaries could create such an effect.

"is this an ancient life form that escaped the array formation?"

This thought immediately flashed through Lin Ming's mind. After 100,000 years, the array formation that Empyrean Primordius established might have experienced some minor accidents, leading to some things breaking free from their prison. In the past, on the other end of the Eternal Demon Abyss at the Sea of Miracles, there had been a life form that had worked free from its restraints too. This was the Ancient Devil that entered Yang Yun's body and wanted to attempt a comeback through using him.

The trip into the Temple of Marvels had been planned by the Ancient Devil.

And, this sort of living creature was tens of thousands of times more terrifying than the evil spirits and demons condensed from infernal energy that surrounded the outside of the Eternal Demon Abyss!

Rah!

That creature thunderously roared out once more, bringing its claws slashing down. It gathered the infinite infernal energy in the Eternal Demon Abyss as a terrifying strength erupted from it like a tide.

This terrifying killing intent seemed to crush everything in the surroundings.

Chapter 1376 – Black Dragon

Chapter 1376 – Black Dragon

…

…

…

Facing this ancient life form that was rushing towards him, Lin Ming didn't hesitate at all to open up the grandmist space!

Mo Eversnow was also ready to face this adversary. She stepped forwards, combining her Primal God Pure Lands with the grandmist space.

Chi chi chi!

As that creature broke into the dual domains, its entire body soared, actually ripping apart the dual domains of Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow. Its bone-thorned scythe hands seemed as if they were a weapon that surpassed all spirit artifacts, easily tearing through space.

"This is an ancient saint race powerhouse! Or perhaps even a contract beast of an ancient supreme elder saint!"

Mo Eversnow rapidly shouted. And at this time, Lin Ming had already summoned the phantom of the Heretical God Tree. The power of thunder and fire wildly poured into the Phoenix Blood Spear – Heavenly Dao Judgment!

A spear thrust out, crushing the void.

This ancient life form crashed into Lin Ming's spear light!

Rumble rumble rumble!

A terrifying storm of energy swept through the Eternal Demon Abyss. As this energy reverberated outwards, it caused countless glowing walls of patterns to shine in the air. As this storm crashed into these patterns, it wasn’t able to shake the great array at all.

In this frenzied explosion, Mo Eversnow also slashed out with her sword of light. Her attack was even more terrifying than Lin Ming’s. As her sword slashed out, a harsh whistling sound cut through the air.

A brilliant divine light seemed to swallow everything. It was like a round sun had risen within the Eternal Demon Abyss, puncturing through 10,000 miles of the gloomy haze.

Underneath the onslaught of such a formidable attack, the creature emitted an angry roar as it was sent flying backwards by the joint attack of Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow.

Bong!

With a loud bang, the ancient life form crashed into the barrier of the array formation, causing the shimmering walls to shake.

Its entire body was covered in blood and yet it still managed to crawl.

Lin Ming swept out with his divine sense and grimaced. In truth, the wounds of this creature weren’t heavy at all. It wasn’t leaking too much blood, and the injuries were only to the exterior body. The skeleton and tendons of the creature were intact.

Although his joint attack with Mo Eversnow was only 70-80% of their full strength, they had still directly struck the ancient life form. Even so, they still hadn’t been able to kill it?

Just what sort of terrifying defensive power was this?

Mo Eversnow said, “This is going to be troublesome. This ancient life form was likely a Holy Lord level powerhouse in the past, but because it was sealed away for 100,000 years, its sanity has fallen into depravity and all that is left over are its attack instincts.”

This ancient creature in front of them wouldn't be able to use Laws or techniques, and its eyes were also filled with chaos, without the least bit of wisdom shining in them. Its offensive capabilities were the most barbaric and brutal methods possible, just forcefully hurtling against others and chopping at them. After being sealed for 100,000 years, this creature had been weakened to the extreme. Even so, it was nearly impossible for Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow to kill it.

At this time, two more loud roars echoed out. These roars contained a fierce killing intent, causing Lin Ming's scalp to crawl. He turned to see more ancient life forms crawling out from behind the cocoons.

These two life forms were more similar to humans in appearance. However, their bodies were completely withered, looking as if they were in the last fading years of their life. But, the auras they emitted were still dreadful!

And behind these two life forms, there was also a red-haired man.

This red-haired man wore broken down armor. Two purple flames burned in his eyes and his disheveled hair was stringy and sparse.

However, his aura was vast and deep, as if he were a spiritual god.

Facing the aura of this red-haired man, Lin Ming felt as if his own flesh and blood would split apart. He didn't need anything to know that this person was once a great figure of the past! He might have even been a World King level character!

A World King, even if they were sealed away for 100,000 years and were weakened to a fraction of their original power, still wasn't someone that Lin Ming could deal with!

Moreover, this World King clearly had a glimpse of intelligence behind his fiery eyes. This person still retained his sanity, unlike those other ancient life forms that had nothing left but their instincts.

In that instant, Lin Ming suddenly felt that he was facing a danger beyond description!

He shuffled closer to Mo Eversnow, keeping full vigilance around himself. Lin Ming tightly gripped the Phoenix Blood Spear, his palms wet with sweat. Mo Eversnow's complexion was dignified, her heart tightening.

It was impossible for them to defeat this existence in front of them. The only method possible was to use the array formation that Empyrean Primordius had left behind in the past. Empyrean Primordius should have left behind some methods to deal with these ancient life forms in the array formation, otherwise these ancient life forms would have left long ago instead of hovering around this area.

But, even if this sort of method was possible, wanting to find it and also activate it within several breaths of time was harder than ascending to heaven.

In this life or death moment, although Lin Ming's palms were wet with sweat, his mind was as calm as water. He used his divine sense to rapidly sweep over the surrounding dao patterns, trying to see if there was anything he could use.

Mo Eversnow was also doing the same.

That red-haired man easily saw through Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow's idea. He smiled – a cruel smile that crossed his face to reveal a pair of sharp canines.

"Futile… effort…"

The red-haired man actually spoke!

He spoke in the language of the Divine Realm, but his words were choppy and very stiff. Lin Ming felt his heart chill. He expected this red-haired man to have intelligence remaining, but he didn't think it would be so high. It seemed that this 100,000 year confinement didn't influence his mind at all.

How could he win against such an enemy?

As Lin Ming was lost on what to do, a sudden change occurred!

Not too far from Lin Ming, the iron chain that was as thick as a divine tree suddenly started trembling!

Bang bang bang!

The iron rings emitted a horrifying sound. These iron rings, if any single one of them were taken out and thrown down from high in the air, could easily smash apart a mountain!

With hundreds of thousands and millions of iron rings smashing together, it was like 10,000 thunderbolts suddenly being cast to the ground, the sound piercing straight into the ears!

This is…

Lin Ming was shocked. He looked at the massive chain. This chain was cast from divine iron and the weight of every link was simply unimaginable. Even so, hundreds of thousands of miles of this chain was shaken so wildly… just what sort of great strength was this?

Rumble rumble rumble!

Iron chains struck the stone wall, bringing massive chunks of stone falling down. The entire 100 million mile plus long wall of the Eternal Demon Abyss began to shake!

Such a horrifying power and might could truly be described as earth-shaking.

As the red-haired man heard this sound, the color of fear flooded his eyes. He looked deeply at Lin Ming before silently withdrawing back into the darkness.

The three other ancient life forms that came out with him also retreated.

They had left like that? Lin Ming's mind stirred. This was…

Ang – !

At this time, a horrifying noise hurtled up from the depths of the Eternal Demon Abyss, setting off a terrifying storm of air that smashed into the rock walls, sweeping outwards for tens of thousands of miles. Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow were both caught up in this air current formed from the sound and were sent flying away!

All of this infernal energy, all of that dim haze, were completely flushed cleanly away by the horrifying sound.

This terrifying sound seemed to come from the endless ancient flow of time, piercing through reality!

This is…

A dragon's roar?

Lin Ming supported himself with his Phoenix Blood Spear and slowly stood up. He looked as deep into the Eternal Demon Abyss as he could. Even so, all he could see was an endless darkness without a hint of light, as if it were a tunnel leading to another universe.

Lin Ming already had a faint speculation about what was happening. An existence that could make these ancient kings tremble in fear and even shake the trillion jin iron chains, perhaps the only possibility was the mysterious Black Dragon that was sealed away in the Eternal Demon Abyss.

And that dragon's roar a moment ago had confirmed Lin Ming's guess.

In the Eternal Demon Abyss, there was a living Black Dragon that once had a vital relationship with Empyrean Primordius in the past!

Perhaps it was the guardian God Beast of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

"Black Dragon…"

Mo Eversnow looked at Lin Ming. In the past, when Lin Ming had once entered the thousand mile forbidden zone by mistake, he had seen this Black Dragon. Its body was thousands of miles long and covered in brilliant red scales. Its horn was as tall as a mountain and its wings were like the starry night. After they were unfolded, those wings seemed to cover the vault of the heavens.

This was a true God Beast. Before that point, not even Mo Eversnow had seen one.

“Did the Black Dragon save us? That roar shouldn’t be a coincidence.” Mo Eversnow said. That roar was clearly a warning to these ancient life forms, otherwise they wouldn’t have backed away.

If this were true, then in a sense, Lin Ming had obtained the approval of the Eternal Demon Abyss’s guardian.

Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow looked at each other and then continued forwards.

And at this time, in the far off distance, there was the echoing sound of flapping clothes. Lin Ming looked up to see two skinny old men walking on the void, breaking through the wind.

Lin Ming was surprised and immediately grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear. But, he wasn’t too worried. With the deterrence of the Black Dragon, these two that were walking towards him had to be from the human race.

Human race? Were these Empyrean Primordius’ followers in the past?

Lin Ming immediately thought of this. Were the followers of Empyrean Primordius still alive in this world?

Chapter 1377 – The Gate of Space and Time

Chapter 1377 – The Gate of Space and Time

…

…

…

The two who arrived were old men wearing gray clothes. Their figures were withered and there didn't seem to be any life in their faces.

However, their auras were formidable like a surging sea, making one feel daunted.

Then, they should have been disciples of Empyrean Primordius in the past.

"Junior Lin Ming greets two honored seniors!"

Lin Ming politely bowed. In Lin Ming's opinion, the Eternal Demon Abyss was a land of death. Everyone here should have died in that great war 100,000 years ago; he never imagined there would still be some people living here.

In truth, thinking about it carefully, no matter how frigid that war was 100,000 years ago, there should have been some survivors. Even the saint race had some survivors, much less Empyrean Primordius' followers.

A World King powerhouse could live for millions of years. To survive for 100,000 years in the Eternal Demon Abyss was only a fraction of their lifespan.

These two old men gazed deeply at Lin Ming and also looked at Mo Eversnow. As they saw Mo Eversnow, their expressions were extremely strange.

This was naturally because Mo Eversnow was possessing the body of the goddess.

“Are two seniors disciples of Senior Primordius?” Lin Ming asked.

The two old men didn’t reply. Instead, they only said, “Come with us.”

Then, they began flying deep into the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow glanced at each other before following suit.

Along the way, the two old men didn’t speak, nor did Lin Ming ask another question.

Slowly, Lin Ming could feel a great aura head towards him. The deeper he went, the more he felt that he was approaching an incomparably powerful existence.

Without a doubt, this powerful existence was the Black Dragon.

Lin Ming took a deep breath, his heart filled with awe.

In the past, this was the God Beast that had followed Empyrean Primordius. Just how magnificent was it?

The four people flew for around an hour. Lin Ming continued to hear the deep resonant dragon roar from the depths of the Eternal Demon Abyss, but now it was no longer just a roar. There was also a sound like a large bell being struck, its sound continuously echoing within the Eternal Demon Abyss as if it would last until the end of time.

The darkness gradually parted, and then, Lin Ming finally saw the Eternal Demon Abyss’ Black Dragon.

In the current 10,000 to 20,000 mile diameter of the Eternal Demon Abyss, half of this distance was occupied by the massive Black Dragon that extended for thousands of miles. Thousands of miles seemed simple, but when one was truly standing in front of this Black Dragon, only then could one truly understand how huge it was.

It wasn’t like a living being at all, but rather a celestial body!

It had to be known that an ordinary small planet only had a diameter of around 10,000 miles.

As Lin Ming flew towards this Black Dragon, he looked like a tiny speck of dust in front of it.

The Black Dragon seemed to be in a deep slumber. Its eyes were closed and it floated in the air. An incomparably horrifying aura was contained within its giant body. It was like all of existence, every living creature in this world, had to be respectful and cautious before this aura. This was the dignity of a God Beast. Once a God Beast's strength erupted, it could even shatter the eternal heavens and smash apart planets and moons.

As Lin Ming flew to the Black Dragon's head that was hundreds of miles wide, he was shocked by what he saw.

He could see that the black dragon's spine, collar bones, wings, and four limbs were all locked down by thick chains. There were nine chains in total, and the chain that Lin Ming had climbed down on was one of these chains.

Not even hundreds of people holding hands could wrap around one of these chains. If one of these chain links were to fall down, it could easily smash apart mountains.

And, these nine iron chains were attached to titanic iron hooks. These iron hooks were hooked deep into the flesh of the Black Dragon, locked into its bones.

Because too much time had passed, these nine iron hooks had already fused together with the flesh and blood of the Black Dragon, becoming one with it. This was a ghastly sight.

This Black Dragon was actually caged here by these nine chains…

As Lin Ming thought of this, he let out a deep breath, an unspeakably heavy feeling weighing on his mind. Such a powerful existence had nine chains penetrated through its body, locking it here for 100,000 years…

“How could this be…?”

Lin Ming couldn’t help but think.

Beside him, the thin gray-clothed old man said, “This is the handiwork of the saint race’s Immortal Emperor… he locked down Dragon Sovereign with nine dragon trapping cables. After the war ended, because Honorable Master had burned away 80% of his blood vitality and had also suffered severe wounds, causing his boundary to fall, he was unable to unravel the dragon trapping cables. And, to break through dragon trapping cables with force would only cause the weakened Dragon Sovereign to die. But, to be trapped by the dragon trapping cables also means that Dragon Sovereign’s strength would slowly fade away until he perished. Even if Dragon Sovereign’s blood vitality is incomparably powerful, he would still only be able to last for 10,000 years here. Because of this, Honorable Master laid down a Yang Returning Grand Array, absorbing the power of the world, essence energy, and blood vitality from all around in order to make up for the strength that Dragon Sovereign lost because of the dragon trapping cables. With this, Dragon Sovereign would be able to continue surviving.”

“Yang Returning Grand Array…” Lin Ming recalled the saint race powerhouses that were sealed within the crystals. So that was the Yang Returning Grand Array…

This great array was used to prolong the life of the Black Dragon!

The saint race had bound the Black Dragon with dragon trapping cables, and then Empyrean Primordius had used the people of the saint race to form the Yang Returning Grand Array in order to make up for the Black Dragon’s losses.

This… was true endless hatred, a hatred that would never rest nor forgive.

As Lin Ming was thinking, he felt the space in front of him twist around. In front of him, a mass of fog appeared out of thin air, gradually solidifying into a tall and stately-looking middle-aged man.

This man was 30 feet tall. In front of him, Lin Ming and everyone else seemed like little children.

This man was pale white and his face was covered with black and red scales. His eyes shined like galaxies, profound and endless.

There was no powerful aura exuding from his body, but imperceptibly, the power of the void around this man twisted and shook as if it couldn't withstand being in his presence.

Lin Ming was instantly aware that this man in front of him was the incarnation of the Black Dragon.

"Junior Lin Ming greets Senior Dragon Sovereign."

Lin Ming respectfully bowed and Mo Eversnow also followed suit.

This middle-aged man glanced at Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow. In particular, Lin Ming. He looked at Lin Ming for a full ten breaths of time, peering through his inner world, spiritual sea, and probing his flesh and blood body.

"You can withstand the blood essence of Primordius' emperor heart, and you have even opened the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates. Your inner true essence is also unbelievably stable. As a martial artist from the lower realms, for you to arrive at this step proves that your destiny is truly dreadful, covering the heavens and moon. You are an extremely rare gem."

The middle-aged man evaluated. He was most satisfied by Lin Ming's attainments in the body transformation technique, because Empyrean Primordius was also a dual body and energy cultivator.

"When Primordius left behind his inheritance, I didn't expect that there would be a successor with the ability to inherit it. I never imagined that today I would meet you. Lin Ming, are you ready?"

“I am.” Lin Ming respectfully replied. If the Black Dragon referred to Empyrean Primordius by his name alone, then it could be seen that the relationship between them was not that of subordinate and master, but like brothers, comrades who fought together.

Normally, an adult God Beast would have strength only slightly worse than an Empyrean. However, God Beasts were also divided into different ranks. There were some God Beasts that had a royal bloodline, and they were no worse than even outstanding top Empyreans. Lin Ming guessed that this Black Dragon before him was in that exact situation. This Black Dragon had clear differences from others dragons that Lin Ming had seen before. His body was far larger and he had a single horn and also a pair of giant wings.

“Then go.” As Dragon Sovereign spoke, he slashed at the skies, opening a gate of space and time.

From within this gate of space and time, a faint ancient and boundless aura rushed out, making one fall to their knees in awe.

Lin Ming had many questions in his mind, but he didn’t ask. He took a deep breath and stepped into this gate.

“You also go.”

The incarnation said to Mo Eversnow.

Mo Eversnow nodded and followed close behind Lin Ming.

The two gray-clothed old man watched as Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow entered the portal, silent.

The Black Dragon heavily sighed, saying, “When Primordius left behind his inheritance, he chose to leave it in a world of the lower realms… I never imagined that there would ever be anyone capable of inheriting it. For a lower realms world… it is simply too difficult to produce anyone talented. I wonder just how long this youth will be able to persist within Primordius Palace.”

"Maybe one year, maybe half a year. If he lasts less than three months then our efforts will have been wasted. Our thoughts are worthless, but what matters is that Honorable Master's emperor heart blood essence will be wasted."

As a gray-clothed man spoke, he still didn't have any expression on his face.

"Three months… I don't think it will be that short. Although I cannot be considered too familiar with humanity's cultivation system, I can still see that this boy's foundation is extremely solid. For him to have such powerful blood vitality and also be able to open the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates is not because of the emperor heart blood essence but because of his own achievements. The fact that the emperor heart blood essence chose him is in itself proof of his amazing talent. No matter where he goes in the Divine Realm, he should still be a first class genius."

The Black Dragon was unable to estimate what Lin Ming's true combat strength was like. He could only speculate some clues through Lin Ming's foundation. To classify him as one of the top geniuses of the Divine Realm was already a very high appraisal.

Speaking of this, the Black Dragon shook his head, "What a pity… when Primordius left behind his inheritance in the past, the difficulty he set to inherit it was far too high. To fully inherit it is a nearly impossible feat. Primordius was too strict; what he sought was perfection, and even in a world of the lower realms the tests he left for his inheritance were simply too hard. If no one is able to inherit it, then what is the point?"

As the Black Dragon sighed with emotion, Lin Ming had already stepped into the gate of space and time.

When Lin Ming passed through the gate of space and time, he felt his steps suddenly sink, as if something immeasurably heavy was pressing down on his body.

He was placed within a grand hall that was thousands and thousands of feet wide. The hall was extremely spacious, filled with deathly silence.

At this time, Mo Eversnow also arrived right by Lin Ming.

“This hall is…”

Mo Eversnow felt that after entering this hall, there was an incredible suppression on her. This suppression was not psychological, but originated from the suppression of one’s inner world and spiritual sea.

It was like there was some invisible force in this hall, suppressing the revolution of energy in the body, suppressing the flow of blood through the veins, and even suppressing one’s thoughts and spiritual sea.

This pressure left one strangely uncomfortable.

“This is grandmist energy! True grandmist energy!”

Lin Ming suddenly said. This heavy pressure was formed from grandmist energy.

In this hall, there was an incomparably faint wisp of grandmist energy. This was not elementary grandmist energy, but true grandmist energy.

Chapter 1378 – Suffer in Silence

Chapter 1378 – Suffer in Silence

…

…

…

Grandmist energy was formed at the beginning of the universe, the condensed form of all matter to exist. It was similar to a black hole in that a single wisp of grandmist energy was as heavy as a star.

Now, within the space that Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow were in, there was a wisp of grandmist energy floating about. This wisp of grandmist energy was similar to a black hole in that it would absorb all matter and energy, including even light. Thus, when light shined upon this grandmist energy it wouldn't be reflected at all, so no one was able to see it.

But, one could clearly feel its existence. Because of its terrifying weight, its presence alone was enough to place an omnidirectional pressure on a person's body, soul, and inner world.

"This is the ancient land that Empyrean Primordius left behind in the past?"

As Lin Ming stood in this hall, even if he were normally breathing it would still consume a massive amount of energy.

He could feel an incomparably rich and profound aura of the Grandmist Laws permeating this hall. This sort of aura could only have been left behind by Empyrean Primordius.

Lin Ming found it hard to imagine just what boundary Empyrean Primordius reached in the past. With his strength alone, he faced off against several extreme Empyrean masters. Although he was finally wounded and perished, it was likely that none of those people who challenged him had a happy ending. Thus, it could be calculated that Empyrean Primordius had possibly touched upon the boundary of True Divinity.

In the center of the hall was an altar. Hanging above this altar there was a giant, ancient-looking bronze bell. This ancient bronze bell was hundreds of feet tall, able to fit a palace within its interior.

On top of this bell, there were two words written in the language of the Divine Realm – Primordius Bell!

Primordius Bell?

This should be a holy weapon that Empyrean Primordius used in the past!

Lin Ming could feel a deep and boundless aura wafting off of this ancient bronze bell, exactly the same as the aura in the hall.

In the middle of the altar there was also a stone gate. This gate was 100 feet tall and exuded a wild and primal atmosphere.

It was clear that this stone gate was also the work of Empyrean Primordius. Lin Ming turned towards the Primordius Bell and stone gate, deeply bowing.

As a martial artist, he could disrespect the heavens, he could disrespect the earth, but he could not disrespect the brave and the worthy. A martial artist was an existence that defied the will of the heavens to begin with. A martial artist was someone that wielded the Heavenly Dao Laws and resisted the power of heavenly tribulation. The heavens and earth were for them to conquer, so why should martial artists be in awe of them? However, these martial arts pioneers paved the road of the Great Dao for everyone behind them. Without these martial artists, there would be no inheritances and thus no martial artists. So, it was necessary to respect and revere them.

After Lin Ming bowed, he discovered a gray jade slip atop the altar. He carefully picked up the jade slip and brushed off the dust of years, probing it with his senses. There were only some words within it.

"To those that enter Primordius Palace, kneel in the center of the altar and use the sincerity of your heart to feel the Primordius Gate until the date that the gate opens. The road of martial arts defies the heavens, and although you must stand proud and tall in this world, you still must have the heart to suffer in silence, passing through layers and layers of difficulty until you reach the peak of martial arts."

Kneel in the center of the altar and feel the Primordius Gate with the sincerity of his heart?

Lin Ming originally thought that the test Empyrean Primordius devised should be something similar to a battle, but he didn't think that the first trial would be to suffer patiently and quietly; it was a test of his disposition.

"Senior Primordius should have calculated that a potential successor who was able to arrive here must be an extreme genius of their generation, and possibly an arrogant and overly proud person. This test isn't meant to be an obstacle, but rather to sharpen the will."

As Lin Ming thought this, he stepped onto the altar and knelt down.

And at this time, with a loud rumbling sound, the giant ancient bronze bell that was hanging above the altar came slowly falling down, soon covering Lin Ming within it.

Lin Ming knelt on the ground the same as before, allowing the Primordius Bell to fall.

Clang!

With a loud bang, the altar suddenly trembled. Like this, Lin Ming, along with the Primordius Gate, was covered within the Primordius Bell.

In the moment when the Primordius Bell fell over him, Lin Ming could feel a terrifying pressure fall onto his body.

This was grandmist energy!

Contained within the Primordius Bell was a massive amount of grandmist energy. Although this grandmist energy didn't directly press on Lin Ming's body, its existence still caused the surrounding space to become dreadfully heavy.

If it weren't for the Primordius Bell forcefully stabilizing this space, the void within here would have collapsed due to the great weight of the grandmist energy.

Now, Lin Ming finally knew what Empyrean Primordius meant when he wrote down to suffer in silence. That meant to be covered within the space of the Primordius Bell where the pressure reached an incredible level.

Lin Ming felt his entire skeleton creak under this pressure. If a normal late Divine Sea martial artist were to stand here, the pressure would have crushed them into pieces of meat.

Lin Ming summoned his true essence, his entire body revolving with energy. He forcefully resisted this pressure with his formidable body and true essence.

His foundation was deep and his body was formidable. To withstand this kind of pressure wasn't anything at all.

Like this, he knelt on the altar for a full two months.

Within the Primordius Bell there was nothing but darkness. Only the Primordius Gate in front of Lin Ming emitted a faint shimmering light.

Two months later, Lin Ming discovered that the pressure within the Primordius Bell began to gradually increase.

After another ten days, the pressure rose to a terrifying degree. The phantom of the Heretical God Tree flashed out from between his eyebrows, covering down from the skies and planting itself behind him. By relying on the Heretical God Tree, Lin Ming was able to withstand the increased pressure, finally allowing him to relax a little.

"It's been two and a half months..."

Lin Ming silently estimated the time that had passed. His foundation was extremely deep. Even as he controlled his breathing underneath this heavy pressure, he was able to absorb heaven and earth origin energy around himself to maintain his consumption of true essence.

But soon after, the pressure continued to grow stronger and stronger, Lin Ming could easily withstand another eight to ten days, but once more and more time passed, such as a dozen or even 20 plus days, he would inevitably tire himself. His entire body would be pressured to the point of unimaginable pain and the massive amount of true essence he had to consume would be ridiculous. This was a great trial to any martial artist that kneeled here.

If it weren't for his powerful mortal body, his solid foundation, his ability to endure suffering, and his firm and unyielding heart of martial arts, it would have been impossible to continue.

"No wonder Empyrean Primordius put out such a test. If one's will isn't firm, they might have a mental breakdown in such an environment."

Humans feared the dark and they also feared being alone. If a mortal were trapped inside a little pitch black room for three days, they would start to go crazy, even if they had food and water. If they were closed in for a month, it was likely they would develop mental problems even after they left.

In that aspect, martial artists were much better. Even so, being enclosed in a dark, inescapable space, day after day while enduring a massive pressure, this sort of suffering could be imagined!

During these three months, the Primordius Gate remained completely still the entire time, as if it had no intention of opening at all.

“The pressure is still increasing… even at this level, the Primordius Gate still doesn’t seem as if it’s opening at all. This sort of test can truly drive one to the edges of despair.”

Lin Ming was already the number one genius of the Divine Realm. For him to withstand Empyrean Primordius’ test was relatively easy. If it were a normal genius, they would have exhausted themselves like a dried up lamp by now.

But in that exhausted situation, a person would have a glimmer of hope even if the Primordius Gate moved just a little bit. But now, there was still no sign of anything happening nor any clues about when something would happen. This left one drowning in hopelessness.

“This test is quite difficult…”

As Lin Ming was thinking, his thoughts suddenly stirred. He discovered that above the stone gate, at some unknown time, a thin layer of dao patterns had begun to emerge, like ripples in water.

Lin Ming could clearly recall that when he first kneeled in front of this stone gate, it didn’t have these dao patterns at all. Although the stone gate was extremely mysterious and had the aura of the Great Dao, the power of these Laws was buried deep within it, without any way to bring it out. With Lin Ming’s current ability, wanting to break apart the stone gate to perceive these Great Dao Laws that Empyrean Primordius left behind was simply the babblings of a madman.

But now, these traces began to appear, revealing themselves before Lin Ming.

These traces were similar to the chaos stones that Lin Ming had seen before, but they were at least 10,000 times more profound than what he had experienced in the past!

Chaos stones were also divided into ranks. Some chaos stones formed later in the universe, after the five elements had evolved. At this time, there was very little remaining primal chaos energy remaining in the universe. Moreover, those stones might only be common stones of the universe. It was impossible for such stones to withstand recording too many of the Chaos Laws, otherwise they would simply disintegrate into nothing.

However, there were some stones that were formed at the very beginning of the forming of the universe, when primal chaos energy still existed everywhere. Moreover, these types of chaos stones were naturally treasures of the heavens and earth; the degree of exquisiteness of the Laws recorded within them were as different as the sky and mud between these and ordinary chaos stones.

And currently, the Primordius Gate that Empyrean Primordius created was made from this kind of top rank chaos stone.

This massive 100 foot tall block of chaos stone contained an inestimable strength of the Primal Chaos Laws.

Lin Ming was overjoyed. He wanted to study and perceive these traces. In terms of perception, Lin Ming didn’t lose to anyone at his boundary. Moreover, he had perceived chaos stones before, so it would be familiar to him to do so again.

However, Lin Ming underestimated just how mysterious the traces of the Great Dao on the Primordius Gate actually were.

As time passed, the traces on the Primordius Gate became increasingly clear. There were many mystical truths contained with, enough that it overwhelmed Lin Ming. Some truths were not fully understood, but at the same time they floated to the surface of his mind; he found it hard to digest for some time.

And the pressure was becoming heavier and heavier!

At the fourth month, the space seemed to fill with more and more grandmist energy. The space around Lin Ming compressed so much that it felt as if his body would collapse at any moment.

Although Lin Ming could revolve his true essence and forcefully resist this pressure, this clearly wasn't a long-term plan. As the pressure increased, no matter how deep Lin Ming's foundation was, he would begin to lose ground until his body finally gave in.

Lin Ming firmly believed that amongst those of his age, in terms of talent, foundation, bodily strength, and ability to resist pain, he could be called number one!

If even he couldn't pass this test then this test simply wasn't aimed at Divine Sea geniuses.

Closing his eyes, Lin Ming carefully felt the flow of grandmist energy around him. He faintly discovered that there were some rules that governed it.

In these past days as he was perceiving the chaos stone, Lin Ming had become aware of many more things. And these things he became aware of could be used to unravel the Grandmist Laws within the Primordius Bell.

"So that's how it is... I see now. Empyrean Primordius left the power of the Grandmist Laws within the Primordius Bell in order to act as a test for martial artists to perceive the chaos stone. If one's comprehensions are lacking, they won't be able to withstand the rising pressure and would be defeated."

After realizing this point, Lin Ming was suddenly enlightened. His admiration towards Empyrean Primordius also grew deeper. It was amazing that he could design such a smelting trial by using his own understandings of the Grandmist Heavenly Dao.

Chapter 1379 – Three Years

Chapter 1379 – Three Years

…

…

…

Within Empyrean Primordius' smelting trial, if one's strength was lacking, they wouldn't be able to withstand the great pressure and would be eliminated.

If one's will and perseverance were insufficient, they wouldn't be able to withstand the debilitating despair that accompanied this pressure, making them unable to last until the traces of the Great Dao started to appear.

If one's will was sufficient, but their perception wasn't enough, they wouldn't be able to comprehend the mysteries of the chaos stone, let alone use the profound power of Laws contained within the chaos stone to resist the pressure of the Primordius Bell.

If one wished to pass this test, strength, will, and perception were all necessary!

Time passed day by day. Lin Ming didn't feel the passage of time as he constantly furthered his comprehensions, refining his understandings over time. Even so, during this time, the pressure within the Primordius Bell grew greater and greater every day.

But, the impact of the grandmist energy was resolved by Lin Ming's understandings of the Primordius Gate.

In this endless process of struggling, Lin Ming's comprehensions into the Chaos Laws grew increasingly deep.

Then, half a year passed…

Outside of Primordius Palace, the two thin old men waited still for half a year without taking a single step.

“Half a year! What Lord Dragon Sovereign said is true, this Lin Ming was truly able to persist for half a year. It seems he’ll be able to stay for a much longer time.”

“In accordance with the test established by Honorable Master in the past, lasting three months is already enough to enter the sect. As for half a year, that is considered an outstanding result.”

“I have no idea just what Lin Ming’s situation is within the Primordius Bell. It’s impossible for us to probe what is occurring inside.”

The tests that Empyrean Primordius left behind in the past were extremely harsh in their requirements, but wanting to inherit a part of his legacy wasn’t difficult.

However, to perfectly obtain his inheritance, that was as difficult as ascending to heaven.

This wasn’t because Empyrean Primordius was purposefully making things hard for others, but because the requirements to cultivate the Primordius martial intent were extremely high.

Depending on what the degree of completion was, Empyrean Primordius intended to pass down a corresponding level of the Primordius martial intent. If one lacked the ability to pass the test, then passing them any greater part of the inheritance was pointless.

“Half a year has passed and lasting for another half year shouldn’t be a problem. But, after a year is another greater ridge. Just how far Lin Ming can continue going forwards will depend on his good fortune and ability.”

As the two old men spoke, the Dragon Sovereign’s deep voice echoed outwards.

One year passed, just as stated.

On this day, the Primordius Bell that covered over Lin Ming began to faintly tremble. This sort of trembling caused the grandmist energy to stir about.

Placed within it, Lin Ming could feel the grandmist energy surge around him. The pressure suddenly increased!

Originally, the grandmist energy casually existed in the void around Lin Ming; it didn't truly press down on his body. But now was different. This grandmist energy began surging towards Lin Ming's body like a tide, impacting him and causing his flesh and blood to nearly break apart.

Ka ka ka!

A faint cracking noise sounded out from Lin Ming's knees, nearly crushed by the pressure. Even Lin Ming's spiritual sea began setting off with great storms.

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. The grandmist battle spirit howled out, directly suppressing the storm in his spiritual sea.

Meanwhile, from behind Lin Ming, a black bead slowly rose up, rising above Lin Ming's head and slowly spinning around.

This was the black hole seed that Lin Ming cultivated.

A black hole shared similar traits with grandmist energy. Both reached unimaginably heavy levels and were able to absorb all matter.

With the suppression of the black hole seed, the pressure around Lin Ming drastically lowered.

But at the same time, Lin Ming's consumption of strength massively increased.

"The traces on the Primordius Gate have changed again."

Lin Ming's eyes shined.

He discovered that upon the Primordius Gate, the words and formulas of cultivation method manuals appeared, followed by images. These images illustrated a variety of poses; each pose contained the charm of the Great Dao, with the Laws circulating all about them.

“This is… Empyrean Primordius’ martial arts inheritance!”

After one year, the Primordius Gate showed not just the Grandmist Heavenly Dao, but had evolved into the martial arts inheritance of Empyrean Primordius!

Lin Ming tamped down the excitement in his heart, impatiently looking everywhere he could. His memory had long ago reached a terrifying degree and he could memorize every image that appeared in just a few breaths of time. And among these images were all sorts complex runes, long seal formulas, heart mantras, all sorts of magnificent moves, and many other things. Even so, Lin Ming was able to instantly remember all of these things, never forgetting them in his life.

Not just that, but Lin Ming’s heart formed a preliminary understanding of all of this that would slowly be perfected over time.

Unconsciously, Lin Ming had entered a state of sudden enlightenment, and it was an extremely long period at that.

This sort of state could only be encountered through a stroke of serendipity.

Image after image appeared. The Primordius martial intent was a truly comprehensive martial art.

Lin Ming saw that a blood red lotus flower began to bloom above the Primordius Gate. That scarlet lotus flower contained all sorts of mysteries, making one be fully immersed in its enchanting beauty.

Above the scarlet lotus flower there was the phantom of a Heavenly Demon and a Heavenly God. And in between them, there was an ancient human.

This was the complete Primordius martial intent, with Heavenly Demon, Heavenly God, and Heavenly Mortal combined as one.

Before, what Lin Ming had cultivated was only the Heavenly Demon martial intent.

In truth, the Primordius Gate was the 'jade slip' of the Primordius martial intent. By using some stunning and extraordinary method, he had carved the essence of the Primordius martial intent which represented all of his life's martial arts studies into this top level chaos stone. This sort of method was truly praiseworthy!

Only Empyrean Primordius, whose attainments in the Grandmist Heavenly Dao had reached the pinnacle, could use such an amazing method!

Training passed without a sense of time. Placed within the Primordius Bell, Lin Ming had no idea just how much time passed. The only testimony to the passing of time was the ever-increasing pressure of grandmist energy within the Primordius Bell.

However, Lin Ming himself was constantly strengthening. His understanding of the Grandmist Heavenly Dao also continued to deepen!

No matter how great the pressure of the grandmist energy rose, Lin Ming was like an ancient mountain, solemn and unshakable.

On top of Lin Ming's head, the black hole seed continued to revolve as before. Behind him, the phantom of the Heretical God Tree was faintly visible.

Lin Ming had a fervent desire to study all of the inheritances left behind by Empyrean Primordius. He did not know of the passing years nor did he care about exhaustion!

Unconsciously, his cultivation had already reached the extreme late Divine Sea. He was making great strides towards the Divine Transformation realm!

Divine Sea, Divine Transformation, Divine Lord, each boundary only had three small boundaries. Combined together, they were considered the Nine Divine Shifts.

Lin Ming entered a wholly absorbed state. Without knowing it, the grandmist energy within the Primordius Bell had reached the peak.

Like this, every inch of space within the Primordius Bell was filled with a weight more terrifying than a 100,000 foot tall mountain.

This was like an ordinary mortal being immersed underneath 100,000 feet of mercury; the pressure they had to withstand could be imagined.

Even if Lin Ming had the dual suppression of the Heretical God Tree and the black hole seed, and he was also becoming increasingly skilled in the Grandmist Heavenly Dao, his body began to slowly crack apart underneath this titanic pressure.

Streams of fresh blood began to leak out from all over his body.

Feeling his body breaking apart, Lin Ming didn't have any change in expression. "Grandmist energy is the true foundation of the Primordius martial intent. Since it has crushed my body, it might as well truly enter my body!"

In that moment, Lin Ming made a crazy move. He introduced a wisp of grandmist energy into his body and sealed it within himself!

Heavy matter already created an enormous pressure on a person's body if it was outside. After it entered the body, the destructive force would be increased by 100 times. If a mortal committed suicide by swallowing gold, they would die because the gold was too heavy; they wouldn't be able to digest it and it would eventually penetrate through their stomach lining.

If it weren't for Lin Ming's understanding of the Grandmist Heavenly Dao having reached an extremely high degree, he would never have dared to absorb the slightest wisp of grandmist energy.

Underneath the control of Lin Ming's thoughts, he slowly brought that wisp of grandmist energy into his body.

The moment that the grandmist energy entered his body, he felt as if his meridians and blood vessels had been crushed flat. How could one's flesh and blood possibly resist the gigantic weight of grandmist energy?

Grandmist energy flowed through every inch of Lin Ming's meridians, crushing apart his body.

He didn't care about the pain that spread through his body, instead focusing his every thought into revolving the Grandmist Laws and refining the grandmist energy.

Only when Lin Ming consumed too much energy in his body did he slow down to restore his lost strength, continuing to refine the grandmist energy afterwards.

The process was extremely slow, but, every time he built up a little bit of the grandmist energy the pressure on him would lighten. Like this, he could continue to refine even quicker.

Hard work eventually didn't disappoint those who put in the effort.

After over a dozen days, Lin Ming finally completely refined the first wisp of grandmist energy.

Grandmist energy was one of the three main sources of the universe. Now, Lin Ming had finally obtained it.

In that moment, Lin Ming was extremely excited. Starting from today, his grandmist space was no longer filled with elementary grandmist energy but true grandmist energy.

The difference between a grandmist space with grandmist energy and a grandmist space without grandmist energy was greater than the difference between the clouds and mud. Even someone like Lin Ming, who was skilled in the Grandmist Laws, had to withstand a tremendous amount of pressure throughout from grandmist energy within every inch of the grandmist space. If it were someone else, then the effects could be imagined. Once an enemy entered the grandmist space, they would enter an absolute domain that was within Lin

Ming's control. If they wanted to withstand this pressure, it would be impossible for them to display any further combat strength!

Lin Ming pressed down the wild joy in his heart. After he slowly restored some of his used up true essence, he began to gradually absorb the second wisp of grandmist energy.

Every wisp of grandmist energy that was refined required a tremendous amount of effort, pain, patience, and will.

It was like Lin Ming was lost beneath a spell, unaware of exhaustion as he continued to refine.

To him, time had lost all meaning. Lin Ming didn't remember how much time passed, only how many wisps of grandmist energy he refined.

Withstanding the tremendous pain caused by the pressure of the Primordius Bell was also forgotten by him. He had slowly acclimated to the heavy pressure brought by the grandmist energy, even enjoying it a little.

Every wisp of grandmist energy was suppressed to the lowest degree possible. Even so, with so many wisps gathered together, it was still considerable!

"Three years!"

Outside of Primordius Palace, the two disciples of Empyrean Primordius, as well as the Dragon Sovereign, were able to clearly recall just how much time had passed since Lin Ming entered Primordius Palace. After one year had passed, every day added another point of happiness to their hearts.

And now, three whole years had passed.

"It seems that Honorable Master's inheritance has finally found a worthy successor..."

A gray-clothed old man sighed with emotion, unable to help streams of hot tears from welling up in his eyes. Because of physical reasons, they could only stay in the Eternal Demon Abyss without any hope of leaving. They never imagined that their Primordius legacy would finally have a day where it would reappear in society.

Chapter 1380 – Trail of the Demon Bead

Chapter 1380 – Trail of the Demon Bead

…

…

…

Lin Ming stayed within Primordius Palace for three years. This was something that the Dragon Sovereign had never imagined to be possible. In fact, when Empyrean Primordius left behind this test, the original intention of it was to have a martial artist withstand the heavy pressure of grandmist energy, allowing them to train in the Primordius martial intent as they perceived the Grandmist Heavenly Dao and opened the Primordius Gate.

But as for training speed, that all depended on a martial artist's perception.

Originally, Black Dragon and the two old men both believed that if one could continue to withstand Empyrean Primordius' test, then as long as they lasted for two years within it, they could nearly fully open the Primordius Gate. But now, Lin Ming had stayed within for three years.

The reason for this long period of time was that Lin Ming was refining grandmist energy.

He used one year and three months to absorb 30 wisps of grandmist energy.

Now, placed within the Primordius Bell, Lin Ming no longer felt that the heavy pressure of the grandmist energy upon his body was painful. Rather, because he kept pouring grandmist energy into his body, he felt himself filling up with a potent strength instead.

Finally, Lin Ming had reached the limit of his body's ability to absorb grandmist energy. Lin Ming controlled his breath and collected those 30 wisps of grandmist into a surging current, using them once more to attack the threshold of life and death in his spiritual sea!

The already opened threshold of life and death opened even further as this mighty impact smashed upon it.

Lin Ming shook. His entire body released explosive crackling sounds as a strength beyond description erupted from within his body, as if a True Dragon were awakening inside him.

This strength recklessly flushed outwards, crashing into the Primordius Bell. With a loud echoing sound, the Primordius Bell was rung!

The melodious ringing sound echoed within Primordius Palace. The separate world that Primordius Palace was located in simply couldn't contain this ringing sound. It echoed out, passing through the Eternal Demon Abyss, like the long beat of the Great Dao transmitted through ancient times, passing through from nothingness, cutting through the empty void and echoing throughout the skies.

At this moment, even outside of the Eternal Demon Abyss, many martial artists of the Holy Demon Continent could hear this ringing echoing between the heavens and the earth.

The 12 Skysplit Towers of the Blood Slaughter Steppes, the Tower Masters and High Lords, and all of the geniuses that came to adventure, heard this great sound.

This resounding bell sound deafened the senses, making the soul tremble as if it were the divine will of the heavens!

"Is it the Steppes Master?" Because of the Polaris Tower Master, the other 11 Tower Masters had already learned the news that Lin Ming, the true Steppes Master, had returned.

"What is the Steppes Master doing?"

"That ringing is coming from underground. It's probably from the Eternal Demon Abyss!"

To the martial artists of the Holy Demon Continent, the Eternal Demon Abyss was the ultimate absolute life forbidden zone. Even when the number one master of the Holy Demon Continent entered the Eternal Demon Abyss in the past, they had still died.

Moreover, the Eternal Demon Abyss was now in its erupting state!

As the Tower Masters of the Blood Slaughter Steppes realized this, they were shocked, their minds immediately filled with awe.

And outside of the Blood Slaughter Steppes, the people also heard the harmonic ringing coming from the Blood Slaughter Steppes. It was completely unknown just what it was. This sound resonated several hundreds of thousands and even millions of miles outwards. Throughout the entire area, this sound echoed. This was surely something that couldn't be accomplished by the hands of man!

"What sort of sound is this?"

"Could this be a sound coming down from the legendary Divine Realm?"

Underneath the baptism of this sound, everyone's souls fell into awe and submission, a feeling of reverence filling their hearts. Some mortals even thought that a god had arrived so they fell to the ground in worship.

Only Swiftcloud Divine Kingdom's General Wei was able to form some faint associations. Years ago, he had brought a mysterious youth to the Blood Slaughter Steppes. That youth, with his strength alone, had instantly defeated a battle array formed by a dozen late Divine Sea masters. And, these late Divine Sea masters each had the ability to easily defeat the Divine Sovereign of Swiftcloud Divine Kingdom.

This loud ringing definitely concerned that youth!

This concordant ringing continued echoing for a full quarter hour before it gradually subsided.

Lin Ming stood within Primordius Palace. In front of him, the Primordius Gate began to violently shake.

Rumble rumble rumble –

The shaking of the Primordius Gate became increasingly intense. A massive amount of dust was shaken to the floor. The gate had finally completely opened!

The moment that the Primordius Gate opened, an indescribable aura of the Grandmist Great Dao surged outwards, baptizing Lin Ming's entire body.

As this aura of the Great Dao baptized him, Lin Ming felt himself fill with clarity. All of the strength within his body gathered together, wildly expanding his inner world.

In that instant, Lin Ming felt as if he had experienced an incredible change, like a butterfly that had broken free from its cocoon.

He knew that if he could thoroughly complete this change, he would have evolved from the Divine Sea realm to the Divine Transformation realm.

The key to Divine Transformation was the word 'transformation'. Whether it was one's spirit body or inner world, all would undergo a great transformation as they entered this boundary.

But now, Lin Ming's accumulations were still slightly lacking. He had taken a half-step into the Divine Transformation realm, just a tad far from taking that final half-step.

He focused his mind, looking towards the Primordius Gate.

Sealed within the Primordius Gate was an independent space a hundred feet in radius. This was an ancient stone temple completely paved with timeless god stones.

In the center of this temple was a throne.

And on this throne, there was a person's skeleton!

This skeleton was large and wide. It was inevitable that this person must have been a tall and stately person before they died. Their skeleton shined like crystal, countless dao patterns carved onto the surface.

This skeleton exuded a vast and profound aura. When Lin Ming had opened the Primordius Gate and the grandmist aura had surged out to baptize him, that aura had originated from this skeleton.

As Lin Ming stood in front of this skeleton, he could feel all the blood vitality within his body faintly resonating with it. His organs began to tremble and his blood boiled over as if it wanted to gush out from his body.

“Is this Empyrean Primordius’ skeleton?”

If just these bones had such an extraordinary aura that was even able to affect Lin Ming’s blood vitality, then perhaps only Empyrean Primordius could accomplish this.

However, he immediately changed his mind, thinking this was unbelievable.

Where was Empyrean Primordius’ flesh and blood body?

How come there was only the skeleton, but no flesh and blood body?

After an essence gathering system supreme elder died, their body would slowly decay until all that was left was a skeleton. Lin Ming didn’t think this was strange, but Empyrean Primordius was someone that had managed to open the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and had tempered his mortal body to inconceivable heights!

Back then, when Empyrean Primordius had ripped out his emperor heart, it had continued beating for 100,000 years.

In these 100,000 years, that heart didn’t even show a hint of rotting away at all. Rather, it maintained its vast sea-like blood vitality, beating onwards for 100,000 years. Just what kind of terrifying body was that!

In Lin Ming's opinion, even if Empyrean Primordius had perished in battle, his corpse should be everlasting!

Only when several hundred million years passed and all of the power contained within Empyrean Primordius' flesh and blood was completely dissipated would his body finally begin to decay and his bones slowly become brittle and shatter.

"Are these really Empyrean Primordius' remains?"

As Lin Ming stood before this throne, he could feel the pressure transmitting from the skeleton and see the dao patterns upon it.

Only an Empyrean could have so many numerous and profound dao patterns on their skeleton.

But this vast aura that simultaneously contained the power of the Grandmist Heavenly Dao made Lin Ming feel that besides Empyrean Primordius, there was no other candidate that this skeleton could belong to.

Layers upon layers of questions rushed into Lin Ming's heart.

Could it be that Empyrean Primordius hadn't died? Was there another mystery?

Or, perhaps Empyrean Primordius' enemies were too strong in the past. If Empyrean Primordius was struck by that God Curse Art, then perhaps his body had rotted away because of this curse?

All sorts of thoughts flashed through Lin Ming's mind, but he still couldn't find a reasonable explanation for any of this.

He continued to gaze at the skeleton upon the throne. What he was sure of was that no matter who this skeleton was before they died, they were definitely an extreme character.

Lin Ming deeply bowed towards this skeleton.

After bowing, Lin Ming began to look around the stone chamber. In this stone chamber, besides this throne and skeleton, there was only a stone table. There was a single jade platform a square foot in size. And atop this jade platform was a simple brocaded box.

What left Lin Ming flabbergasted was that the material used to make this jade platform was actually nine sun jade!

Although it was only a square foot in size, the value of such a large piece of nine sun jade could be imagined.

But now, such wealth was only used to make the base for this brocaded box.

Just what was in that box?

Could it be…?

A thought flashed through Lin Ming's mind and his breathing quickened. Within this box, he could feel something with a blood vitality that soared to the heavens, even faintly affecting Lin Ming's bloodline.

He took a deep breath and then tentatively opened the box.

Within this box, there were two items.

One was a round black bead and the other was a simple ring.

This black bead was the size of a baby's fist. It seemed like it was made from jade and not made from jade, and seemed made from stone and not made from stone. Countless mystical lines were carved onto its surface.

Within this round bead, Lin Ming could clearly feel an overwhelmingly vast blood vitality, as if it were a living creature.

"Is this the Demon Bead!?"

Lin Ming immediately thought.

However, he couldn't confirm this either. And at this time, a regal voice sounded out, echoing throughout the entire temple.

"This bead is refined from a hundred million years of gathered blood vitality from the Grandmist Spirit Bead; it is a miracle medicine that surpasses a transcendent divine pill! However, the true Grandmist Spirit Bead has already been wrested away by the saint race."

This sudden voice caused Lin Ming's mind to turn cold. Was this the voice of Empyrean Primordius?

He swept out with his senses, wanting to see if there was some mysterious existence here such as a fragmented soul of Empyrean Primordius. However, he wasn't able to find anything at all.

Lin Ming suddenly realized that this voice was only a message recorded by Empyrean Primordius using an array formation. Empyrean Primordius' soul was not here.

It was a pity that Lin Ming still hadn't been able to experience Empyrean Primordius' dashing and heroic demeanor. After Lin Ming entered the Eternal Demon Abyss, he didn't find a wisp of soul left behind by Empyrean Primordius or even his body.

He had only seen a part of Empyrean Primordius that he had left behind in the past: his heart.

"So the Demon Bead's name was originally the Grandmist Spirit Bead… perhaps even the Magic Cube and all three ultimate divine treasures had different names given to them by different people over time.

"I never imagined that the Demon Bead would be taken by the saint race!

"Moreover, I have no idea just what price the saint race paid in order to start this war. Not just that, but for this reason alone, they likely had more than one Empyrean level master perish here. If they couldn't obtain the Demon Bead after paying such a steep price, how could they ever give up?"

Lin Ming thought that no matter how powerful the enchantment was that Empyrean Primordius laid over the Sky Spill Planet, he still wouldn't be able to stop the invasion of the saint race.

They were a race that was far more powerful than humanity. They had endless powerhouses pouring forth and a history of billions or even tens of billions of years.

If such a race decided to do something no matter what the cost was, it would be extremely difficult to stop them.

Chapter 1381 – Transforming the Divine Palace

Chapter 1381 – Transforming the Divine Palace

…

…

…

Lin Ming carefully picked up the Demon Bead. This Demon Bead was only the size of a baby's fist but it was as heavy as a mountain.

This Demon Bead contained essence energy, at least 10 times greater than the Demon Bead he had found before!

Originally, this was not a Demon Bead replica, but a Demon Bead formed from the condensed blood vitality of 100 million years using the true Demon Bead.

The Magic Cube could absorb souls and purify the soul fragments. Correspondingly, the Demon Bead should be able to absorb flesh and blood essence energy to form the most essential source of blood vitality.

"Junior, this bead contains a nearly infinite blood vitality. It is a supreme treasure to all body transformation martial artists. Today, I pass this on to you. You must use it cautiously and wisely; do not surpass the bearing limits of your body. In addition, within the Primordius ring I left behind there are many pills and spirit treasures, as well as the total accumulated knowledge and cultivation attainments in my 10 million years of life. Today, everything will be imparted to you. You must uphold my final will. When the great calamity of humanity arrives, you must contribute your own power to the effort. To lose the Grandmist Spirit Bead is the greatest mistake of my life. In there is ever a day where it is possible, you must retake the Grandmist Spirit Bead and return it to the human race, and seek a paradise pure lands for the orphaned god race.”

Empyrean Primordius’ words carried with them a thick sense of desolation. Although these words were the unfulfilled wishes he desired his successor to one day accomplish, Empyrean Primordius had likely merely said these words to psychologically comfort himself.

In truth, he didn’t think that there would be anyone able to retake the Grandmist Spirit Bead. This was simply far, far too difficult, a mission that required making an entire major race an enemy. Moreover, the strength of the saints surpassed that of humanity!

Not even Empyrean Primordius had this ability.

As Empyrean Primordius’ words were finished, at this time, the Primordius Gate began to wildly shake. In that moment, all of the grandmist energy that flooded the space within the Primordius Bell and outside the Primordius Bell began to flood this temple space.

The Primordius Bell was received into the temple where it hung high above in the center!

The enchantment all around the temple vanished. Lin Ming felt his vision instantly expand and he discovered that he had arrived in a massive Divine Palace.

This Divine Palace was thousands of feet tall, carrying with it a magnificent atmosphere and was emblazoned all over in gold and jade green.

Taking in a wider view, Lin Ming discovered that this hall was completely formed by violet sun crystals. Moreover, it seemed carved from a single massive piece of violet sun crystal.

Violet sun crystals were less valuable than nine sun jades, but they were also precious in their own right.

In the past, when Lin Ming went underneath Immemorial Imperial Palace, he had seen the Divine Seal Grand Array laid down by Empyrean Divine Seal. It was formed with countless violet sun crystals in order to write a single ‘seal’ character.

Currently, the violet sun crystals that formed Primordius Divine Palace were far less.

Not only was the main structure of the Divine Palace formed by violet sun crystals, but there were likely many other valuables inside that were extraordinary treasures.

Not just that, but on the Divine Palace walls, there were many murals engraved within them. These murals should have been the handiwork of Empyrean Primordius, and all of them contained the aura of the Primal Chaos Laws. Although they looked casually displayed about, if one observed and studied them closely enough, there would be significant gains.

If a young genius with high perception were to be enlightened from these murals, it wouldn’t be strange for them to make a sudden breakthrough in boundaries.

If any one of these murals were casually hung within a Great World King Holy Land, it would be an inestimable treasure that would be taken as one of the greatest inheritances.

Besides these murals and ornaments, behind the Divine Palace, there was a medicine garden. After 100,000 years, most of the plants within this medicine garden had reached the stage of maturity. These miraculous medicinal plants emitted fresh fragrances that refreshed the heart. If one just smelled these medicinal plants, they would feel invigorated. If a mortal were to breathe in this immortal fragrance, not only would it extend their life but it would broaden their minds. In some novels, there were stories of poor scholars that sucked in a breath of fragrance as they were searching for immortal treasures, and thus that smell awoke their minds, allowing them to become the number one scholar of the land.

“This Divine Palace… is truly a priceless treasure. It should be where Empyrean Primordius lived in the past!”

Lin Ming suddenly had this thought. In this Divine Palace he could see footprints left behind by Empyrean Primordius from the past. All of these ornaments and furnishings were presumably arranged according to Empyrean Primordius' preferences.

Lin Ming was currently standing on the highest level hall of the Divine Palace. It seemed that the smelting trial Empyrean Primordius had arranged in the past had been within Primordius Divine Palace.

When Lin Ming had been in the smelting trial area, because the air was filled with grandmist energy and there were the protection of spells all around, he hadn't been able to clearly see the full picture of Primordius Divine Palace.

Now, he was finally able to see its true colors.

"How luxurious!"

Lin Ming sighed with emotion.

At this time, Empyrean Primordius' voice sounded out once more. "Junior! You may now refine the Primordius Gate. Once you do so, from that point on, this Primordius Heavenly Palace shall be your dwelling! There is an inherent space array formation within, so you may shrink or enlarge it as you please. There are also time formations contained within here that will allow you to control the flow of time. You may even use Primordius Heavenly Palace as a spirit ship to cross the void and journey out! Once you activate the Primordius Heavenly Palace's great array, no one below an Empyrean will be able to break through the shields. Of course, the basis of all this is that you provide Primordius Heavenly Palace with enough energy!"

Empyrean Primordius' few words left Lin Ming overjoyed.

No one below an Empyrean could break through!

This could be called an opportune act of grace from the heavens. Primordius Heavenly Palace wasn't invincible. After all, once the array formation used up all the available energy, then Lin Ming would even find it hard to leave Primordius Heavenly Palace to escape any troubles. But, this would be able to buy a great deal of time for Lin Ming. He might even have the chance of using Primordius Heavenly Palace to directly break through the void during this time period and escape!

This Primordius Heavenly Palace could even be used as a spirit ship.

Moreover, one didn’t need to be a genius to know that this Heavenly Palace was much faster than an ordinary spirit ship! Once it began to undergo great void shifts, only an Empyrean master could hope to keep up with Lin Ming.

And from now on, he would be able to have Primordius Heavenly Palace as his own mansion?

How could Lin Ming not be excited about this? Although he was invincible amongst his age, the difference between him and the older generation was far too great.

He lacked a deep background, unlike Frost Dream, Xiao Moxian, and others like them. They had Empyrean level powerhouses to act as a deterrence for them and they often had the protection of Great World King level powerhouses.

This was one of Lin Ming’s most fatal weaknesses. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have been chased by Tian Mingzi to such an extent.

But now, with Primordius Heavenly Palace under his control, everything was different. From now on Lin Ming didn’t need to have scruples. Even if he were to encounter Tian Mingzi’s true self, he wouldn’t need to fear him.

As Lin Ming cast out his senses, he discovered that the Primordius Gate he had been watching all this time was in front of him. It was the main entrance to this grand hall.

And this great hall should also be where Empyrean Primordius closed up to cultivate in the past.

The most important room to a martial artist was not the bedroom, reception room, or meeting room, but rather their own cultivation area. Empyrean Primordius' cultivation area used the Primordius Gate as an entrance, and then there were also countless array formations layered all within this hall, flooding it full of grandmist energy. In terms of training areas, this was one of the absolute best. By cultivating here, he would have twice the results with half the effort!

Lin Ming left the room and turned towards the Primordius Gate. This simple-looking gate was placed right in front of the Primordius Bell, like an immortal monument.

Facing this divine object that contained countless mysteries and was also forged by Empyrean Primordius himself, Lin Ming didn't dare to be the least bit lacking in confidence.

He happily said, "Primordius Heavenly Palace, Primordius Gate, from this moment on, you shall accompany me! Today I am small and weak, and will find shelter in you. But in the future, when I rise to fame, you will shine in brilliance because of me!

"Primordius Gate, receive!"

Lin Ming generously cut open his wrist and sprinkled out a touch of blood essence!

To use his own source blood essence to imprint upon the Primordius Gate, only such a method was the most reliable and wouldn't allow his mark to be forcibly wiped away by others.

Omm ~

The Primordius Gate began to shake, and the entire Primordius Heavenly Palace followed suit in vibrating.

Refining the Primordius Gate wasn't easy or simple at all. If a normal martial artist were to come here, it would be impossible for them to do so. Even if Tian Mingzi's true self were to arrive here, he still wouldn't possess the ability to refine the Primordius Gate.

However, Lin Ming had already obtained the approval of Empyrean Primordius and he was also skilled in the Grandmist Heavenly Dao. Only someone like him could leave behind his mark on the Primordius Gate.

The burning hot blood essence fell onto the traces of the Great Dao Laws upon the Primordius Gate, circulating around it until it eventually carved itself into the pattern of a red lotus.

At this point, Lin Ming's mind melded together with Primordius Heavenly Palace. It was like Primordius Heavenly Palace had become an extension of Lin Ming's body. Every spell, every array formation, every rule and prohibition, he became aware of all of that.

Lin Ming was also able to clearly see through every corner of Primordius Heavenly Palace.

And at this time, Lin Ming also saw Mo Eversnow.

She was actually isolated in a closed and separated hall, unable to leave.

It had to be known that Mo Eversnow had stayed here for three straight years!

In such a long period of time, the average mortal would have already gone crazy. But from beginning until end, Mo Eversnow's mind had been as calm and tranquil as a placid lake.

After Lin Ming was covered by the Primordius Bell, there had been no news from him. Mo Eversnow had been a little worried, but she also had absolute faith in Lin Ming. In her opinion, if Lin Ming couldn't complete Empyrean Primordius' test, then there would be no one that could possibly inherit his legacy. Even if this inheritance waited another 3.6 billion years for another great calamity, it still would never be passed on.

Thus, for these three years, Mo Eversnow had been at ease and calmly cultivating in the meantime. This sort of waiting required a tremendous amount of patience, and Mo Eversnow had never been hurried or anxious during this time period. She believed that the more time passed, the greater Lin Ming's gains would be from Empyrean Primordius' test. Perhaps when Lin Ming finally exited, she might no longer be his match.

Mo Eversnow didn't wish to be left behind by Lin Ming's progress. Otherwise, if he were to encounter some life-threatening danger, she would only be able to watch from the sidelines without being able to help. For instance, when Tian Mingzi first chased after them she had only been able to watch helplessly on as Lin Ming burnt over half his blood essence, to the point where he also exhausted his life potential and nearly died.

Mo Eversnow did not wish for such a situation to ever occur again.

So, for these last three years, Mo Eversnow had been diligently cultivating, slowly melding together her soul with the goddess' mortal body even as she simultaneously improved her cultivation.

Mo Eversnow originally had a half-step World King cultivation. Now, with the goddess' mortal body, her cultivation progress could be described as walking 10,000 miles in a single day!

Just as Mo Eversnow was deeply concentrating, she felt the space in front of her suddenly distort. In the next moment, Lin Ming stepped out into the hall as if he had teleported there.

"Lin Ming!"

Mo Eversnow was shocked for a brief moment before immediately being overjoyed.

Although her mentality had been wonderful for these past three years, she still couldn't help but look forwards to Lin Ming reappearing. Now, Lin Ming had returned, and not only was he safe and sound but his strength had clearly risen a great deal!

This was truly a matter worthy of celebrating.

"Senior-apprentice Sister, I've had you wait a long time." Lin Ming guiltily said. When he first accepted Empyrean Primordius' test, that had also caused Mo Eversnow to go into seclusion herself for three years. He simply hadn't thought that such a matter would occur.

“There is no harm, I can cultivate wherever I am. Usually when I close up for training, it isn’t strange for me to do so for 10 years at a time.”

Chapter 1382 – Essence

Chapter 1382 – Essence

…

…

…

“Lin Ming, have you already accepted the complete inheritance of Empyrean Primordius?”

Mo Eversnow looked over Lin Ming. Currently, Lin Ming’s cultivation was ready to enter the Divine Transformation realm at any moment. In terms of cultivation methods, martial skills, Laws, or foundation, everything was perfection. He could be said to have reached the pinnacle of the Divine Sea realm.

“Yes, but I have only obtained the inheritance. I am far from being able to fully comprehend it yet.”

When Lin Ming had studied the Primordius Gate, he had comprehended many things about the Grandmist Heavenly Dao. But, to truly understand the Primordius martial intent wasn’t something that could be accomplished overnight.

“Not just that, but I have also inherited the Primordius Heavenly Palace that was left behind by Empyrean Primordius. As long as the Primordius Heavenly Palace has enough energy, no one beneath an Empyrean level powerhouse will be able to break through its defenses. Moreover, there are inherent space and time array formations within it that could be used to adjust its size or to change the flow of time within. It can even be used as a spirit ship to travel through the void.”

“Oh?”

Mo Eversnow was overjoyed to hear this. With the Primordius Heavenly Palace in his hands, Lin Ming's chances of surviving through dangers would be greatly increased. "This help has come at the right time. Even if we encounter Tian Mingzi after returning to the Divine Realm we should still have the ability to survive."

"Yes, but Tian Mingzi should have already escaped by now. The Skydark Holy Lands has probably been abandoned by him."

Lin Ming didn't hold on to any hopes that Tian Mingzi would kindly wait there for his own death. During this following period of time he would likely fully commit himself to the saint race and try to use their support to make a comeback before taking his revenge.

"Mm, Tian Mingzi has suffered great losses this time. Not only has he lost his Skydark Holy Lands but he even severed his own hand and lost a wisp of his soul. This will be greatly influential to his future achievements. I have a deep understanding towards this man; if he has a grudge he will definitely try to return it 10 times over. We must be as careful as possible. Even with Primordius Heavenly Palace protecting you, you still shouldn't give Tian Mingzi any openings at all. After we return to the Divine Realm you should temporarily stay in an Empyrean Holy Land and close up in cultivation for several years. When your Divine Dream Law's appearance changing technique reaches a high enough proficiency that you can change the aura of your soul then you will be safe to go out once more. Otherwise, not only will Tian Mingzi be hunting you down but even the entire saint race will do so. They will kill any human who can grow to threaten their plans."

"That's a good plan. Yes, Senior-apprentice Sister, I don't plan to return to the Divine Realm for some time. I haven't fully comprehended the inheritance of Empyrean Primordius so I would like to stay in the lower realms for some years until I break through to the Divine Transformation realm. My accumulations have already reached a sufficient level. Without accident, Dragon Fang, Jun Bluemoon, Hang Chi, and the others should also be preparing to break into the Divine Transformation realm right now."

The heroic young elites at the top of this First Martial Meeting were all peerless proud children of the heavens. Their future growth wouldn't be much slower than Lin Ming's.

According to Empyrean Divine Dream's speculations, these youths would likely all be important characters in the upcoming great calamity.

"That is also good."

Mo Eversnow nodded. What Lin Ming lacked the most now was time. His current cultivation was far too weak in comparison to his talent. In the upcoming great calamity, if the saint race were to make their move now then that would be the same as pushing Lin Ming to the top of the storm without him being ready.

At this critical juncture, it was far too dangerous for him to go out and adventure until he had the means to protect himself.

Closing up in cultivation and saving up his strength was the best method right now.

"Senior-apprentice Sister, come with me."

As Lin Ming spoke, he tugged on Mo Eversnow's sleeves. A white light flashed and the two of them were immediately teleported to Empyrean Primordius' private training grounds.

This training area was sealed up by the Primordius Gate. There was an endless amount of heaven and earth origin energy inside, and not just that, but a massive amount of grandmist energy was gathered within. This grandmist energy was a uniquely priceless treasure.

With the universe having evolved to the present, there was nearly no grandmist energy left in the world. If it weren't for the inheritance left behind by Empyrean Primordius, Lin Ming wouldn't have been able to find any grandmist energy even if he had the ability to refine it.

"What a treasure trove!"

Mo Eversnow praised out loud. This was a training area that an Empyrean had established with great care and effort; the effect it would have on one's cultivation could be imagined.

Lin Ming took out the Primordius Ring that Empyrean Primordius had left behind and extracted everything from inside.

A massive number of pills and jade slips suddenly filled the room.

Of the jade slips, most of them were cultivation methods and inheritances that Empyrean Primordius had accidently obtained. Even so, a cultivation method that Empyrean Primordius would deign to keep was definitely a peak treasure. It was something that even a World King Holy Land would treat as a legacy treasure.

In addition to this, there were many jade slips that contained Empyrean Primordius' own cultivation experiences.

The value of cultivation experiences recorded by an Empyrean could be imagined. If these treasures were to fall into the martial arts world, they would definitely be treasures that would raise a sea of blood and war.

Now, Lin Ming had taken all of these things out and was beginning to perceive and study them with Mo Eversnow.

From this day onwards, the two of them began to live a life secluded from the world.

The two of them had already warded off physical needs. By relying on absorbing heaven and earth origin energy alone, they could make up for any energy they consumed. Thus, for nearly 24 hours a day, the two of them were in constant cultivation.

These days were boring and dry, repeated day after day. A mortal would have long gone crazy.

But, this was something a martial artist was already used to. To walk down the road of martial arts meant to live a lonely and desolate life. If one wished to look down at the heavens and earth with disdain, they would have to hold the mindset of suffering in silence just like Empyrean Primordius had said.

In Primordius Heavenly Palace there was nothing to differentiate day and night. Sometimes Lin Ming would perceive the Primordius stone tablet and practice the Primordius martial intent. Sometimes Lin Ming would look through and study the cultivation experience jade slips that Empyrean Primordius had left behind, slowly practicing and making his way through them.

As for Mo Eversnow, she spent most of her time cultivating and some of her time furthering her alchemy skills.

Mo Eversnow's alchemical technique was originally at the rank of a grand master. Without her mortal body, her alchemy skills had been greatly restrained, but now that she had obtained the body of the goddess, using her primal god powers to practice alchemy was even easier than before.

Practicing alchemy always took some time and delayed one's cultivation a little. But, in the future as Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow's cultivations rapidly rose they would need all sorts of high quality pills.

This was especially true for Lin Ming, who practiced the body transformation technique. He would never lack a want for pills and thus had to have someone skilled in alchemy supporting him.

Time passed without end. The jade slips that Empyrean Primordius had left behind were all-encompassing and recorded countless Laws and experiences. If the average man were to look through just one of these jade slips it would still be impossible for them to do so in their lifetime. But, with Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow's perception they were able to slowly look through all of these jade slips.

Although they hadn't completely digested these comprehensions yet, this knowledge had become seeds within Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow's bodies. In the future when they reached a high enough boundary, these comprehensions would germinate and grow into a towering tree.

"Senior-apprentice Sister, this is the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence left behind by Senior Empyrean Primordius. We can divide a little bit of it between us to make a breakthrough and after that, we can return to the Divine Realm."

Lin Ming took out a round black bead. This was 100 million years of condensed essence from the Grandmist Spirit Bead; it would be extremely difficult to divide a portion of it. But, with the Grandmist Heavenly Dao, a portion of the origin energy could be split off and then absorbed by Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow.

Mo Eversnow wouldn't be polite or refuse Lin Ming. Her body was of the primal god race and she could now cultivate essence, energy, and divine: she also needed the essence of the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

The two of them sat down, face to face. The Grandmist Spirit Bead floated between them. Atop this ancient bead, the surface was covered with all sorts of magical runes and patterns.

Lin Ming began to revolve the Grandmist Laws, slowly pulling out the essence from the black bead. In the air, this essence gathered into two great currents. Even so, this was only 10% of the black bead's essence.

This essence divided into two, separately flying towards Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow.

For a time, an incredibly tyrannical and wild aura exuded from these black currents. These currents didn't seem like the condensed essence of the Grandmist Spirit Bead, but seemed like the body of catastrophic desolate pythons!

Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow were both as calm as mountains, allowing these two streams of essence energy to drift towards them.

The position that these two currents of essence energy entered their bodies at was their hearts.

As the essence energy current approached his heart, Lin Ming could feel his heart begin to rapidly beat, every beat seeming as if it wanted to pump out all the blood from his body. A massive blood pressure pushed against Lin Ming's blood vessels, turning his skin bright red and making his body extremely dry and hot.

Mo Eversnow was also in a similar state.

Hu – !

As this essence energy entered Lin Ming's body, it gathered in his meridians. In that moment, Lin Ming's entire body shook as his blood streams roiled with excitement.

The power of blood vitality was originally a burning hot force just like fire. Lin Ming could feel the blood essence gathering within his body because of this energy, wildly circulating about, making him increasingly hot like a volcano on the verge of eruption. All of that thick magma was focused in Lin Ming's blood vessels as if it had replaced his flowing blood.

Beside Lin Ming, Mo Eversnow's face was also extremely red, her body dripping with fresh sweat.

In a trance, Lin Ming could feel countless complex and strange scenes run through his mind. These images were all phantoms of extremely powerful ancient existences.

There were Demon Gods, Buddhas, saints, all of them mixed up in utter chaos. But, most of these existences were God Beasts. Among these God Beasts were Dragons, Rocs, Kirins, Black Tortoises, Grand Basilisks, and so forth!

These phantoms were…

Lin Ming was stunned. From these many phantoms, Lin Ming could feel an extremely chaotic aura, and this aura was similar to the essence he had just absorbed!

Could it be…

Lin Ming suddenly became aware that the gray current he absorbed was in truth the condensed flesh and blood essence of numerous God Beasts gathered by the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

Of course, it was likely impossible for the past holder of the Grandmist Spirit Bead to have killed so many God Beasts. The most likely scenario was that they had taken parts of the God Beasts and then absorbed them with the Grandmist Spirit Bead, condensing their essence together.

Even so, this was more than amazing!

With all of this essence energy accumulated over time, the quality surpassed imagination.

After swallowing this flesh and blood essence, Lin Ming could feel it wildly surge within his body. The many chaotic auras within this flesh and blood essence turned wild, running rampant like enemies on an ancient battlefield. They all began to compete in devouring each other, including even Lin Ming's own essence.

This mindless flesh and blood essence actually had an instinct to devour; it wanted to assimilate Lin Ming.

Lin Ming coldly snorted as he revolved the Grandmist Laws.

The Grandmist Laws represented the extreme limit of 'essence', one of the three aspects of the universe's essence, energy, and divine. Once it began to revolve, how could mindless instinct possibly hope to resist it?

Soon, all of this flesh and blood essence was absorbed by Lin Ming!

And beside Lin Ming, although Mo Eversnow didn't understand the grandmist laws, she began to revolve the power of divinity within her body. The primal god race were the favored children of the heavens, and their bodies were amongst the most formidable in existence. Mo Eversnow forcefully used the power of divinity to suppress the wild and chaotic instinct of the flesh and blood essence as she absorbed it.

Chapter 1383 – Divine Transformation

Chapter 1383 – Divine Transformation

…

…

…

For a time, the power of blood vitality within Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow began to rapidly increase. Their mortal bodies were also being transformed, reborn!

“What a pure power of blood, this is wonderful to my body transformation technique!”

Lin Ming happily thought. His blood energy was still climbing without end and a clear rushing sound echoed out from his body. This was the sound of his blood flowing through him, like a great river swelling past its limits!

All of the power of blood vitality within Lin Ming’s body seemed to rush towards the area between his eyebrows, as if it wanted to gush out from him!

At this moment, a divine light shot out from between Lin Ming’s eyebrows, cutting straight into the skies. It was like a star was resonating with it!

This star shined down with a cool and exulting light, sprinkling down upon Lin Ming’s body. As this star light reflected down upon Lin Ming’s body, he felt all of his muscles stretch outwards, the blood surging within him like tidal waves.

However, this sort of resonance only continued for several breaths of time before it was abruptly cut off.

Lin Ming was clear that this was the boundary of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

After a few years, Lin Ming finally saw the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace once more. Although he had yet to take a step past the threshold, every time he saw the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace allowed him to become that much more aware of it.

The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace were forbidden by the heavens and Lin Ming didn't expect to make a breakthrough in a single breath.

But in the past, Empyrean Primordius had already crushed his way over the Heavenly Dao rules, taking a firm step into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. This meant that these rules were not ironclad.

Thus, Lin Ming had absolute confidence that it would only be a matter of time before he too broke through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

Rumble rumble rumble!

The power of blood vitality rapidly grew within his body, causing his inner world to wildly shake.

The boundaries of his inner world were being constantly impacted by energy!

Lin Ming's inner world had reached the precipice of imminent expansion, but now that it was being wildly forced open by this power it actually came bursting apart at the seams!

In that instant, all of the energy contained within his inner world surged out like an unleashed dam, wildly crashing into the boundaries set up in the void of his inner world.

Lin Ming's inner world was soaring, rising!

And at this time, the heaven and earth origin energy within his inner world became more tranquil, drawing ever closer to the real world and reality.

The energy became increasingly strong, forming extremely rich origin energy clouds in the skies of his inner world.

Then, there was origin energy rain!

As this origin energy rain fell to the ground, young sprouts began to emerge from the earth, moistened by this rainwater.

They grew extremely fast, soon turning into ginsengs, snow lotuses, flower roots, lingzhi…

In just several breaths of time, they had grown the same span as in tens of thousands of years!

Moreover, this was not the end. After several more breaths of times, the essence energy within these plants became increasingly rich and intense. All of them began to gain a spiritual wisdom of their own and childlike phantoms evolved from their bodies, parting from the plants as they pranced about and played around in the origin energy rain.

These miracle medicinal herbs were not true plants, but plants formed by heaven and earth origin energy.

Right now, if spiritual plants were to be planted in the soil of Lin Ming's inner world they would be able to grow just like in the real world. If an animal were to enter Lin Ming's inner world they could also breath and survive.

This sort of change in his inner world also meant that Lin Ming had taken the final step from the Divine Sea realm into the Divine Transformation realm.

"Divine Transformation!"

Lin Ming's eyes suddenly popped open. In that moment, all of his aura gathered into a current that impacted towards the skies, flushing away all the grandmist energy around him!

Closing up in seclusion within Primordius Heavenly Palace for several years was the longest time Lin Ming had ever gone into seclusion for. Now that his cultivation had reached the Divine Transformation realm he found it hard to estimate just what degree his strength had reached. He had to look for a powerhouse to battle in order to truly find out.

"Lin Ming, congratulations!"

Mo Eversnow acclaimed from the side.

An ordinary Divine Transformation martial artist could already be considered a decent character in the Divine Realm. They could ride spirit ships and travel through the limitless void.

As for a Divine Transformation martial artist like Lin Ming, he could freely run wild over the entire Divine Lord realm. And even though Mo Eversnow couldn't say just how he would fare against a Holy Lord master, she was sure he would at least have the strength to protect himself.

At this point, Lin Ming was not a powerful figure in his own right. In the older generation, a Holy Lord was already an incredible existence. In the past, the Palace Master of Phoenix Cry Palace was also at the Holy Lord realm.

A Holy Lord had the ability to start their own sect and even rule over their own area in a central mainland of the Divine Realm.

"And congratulations to you, Senior-apprentice Sister."

Lin Ming said, all smiles.

Mo Eversnow's talent was originally that of a monstrous genius. In these past several years, her strength had become unfathomably deep and it was hard to estimate just what level her boundary had reached.

The primal god race's cultivation system was different from that of humanity. Even if they also cultivated the essence gathering Laws, there were still differences between them. Luckily, there were also some primal god race cultivation method jade slips left behind in

Empyrean Primordius' ring. Thinking about it, these were likely left behind by Heavenly Empress Xuanqing in the past. With these jade slips helping her, Mo Eversnow's cultivation rate could be said to be flying 10,000 miles in a single day. Lin Ming was absolutely sure that it wouldn't be too long before Mo Eversnow was restored to her peak condition of the past. Then, with an unstoppable momentum she would become a World King and even an Empyrean.

In the upcoming great calamity, she would certainly play an important role.

"Let's exit!"

"Okay!"

Bang!

The Primordius Gate opened and both Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow were teleported out of Primordius Heavenly Palace.

Outside, the Dragon Sovereign's phantom and the two gray-clothed old men were waiting for them.

"Lin Ming greets seniors!"

Lin Ming respectfully bowed.

And in front of Lin Ming, the two gray-clothed old men hurriedly helped Lin Ming up. They quickly said, "We definitely cannot accept such a gesture from you. If you wish to bow, then you only need bow to Lord Dragon Sovereign. As for us, the most we can be considered as are your worthless and foolish senior-apprentice brothers."

The two old men gazed at Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow, their complexions filled with countless emotions. After Lin Ming had inherited the legacy of Empyrean Primordius, even calling him the young master of Primordius Heavenly Palace was an understatement.

Their two statuses were naturally under Lin Ming. As for the Black Dragon, from beginning to end, he was Lin Ming's true Elder.

Several years ago when Lin Ming first entered Primordius Heavenly Palace, they never imagined he would perfectly inherit Empyrean Primordius' legacy.

According to any logical reasoning, Empyrean Primordius had left behind such a difficult test in the lower realms that it should be nearly impossible for anyone to pass it and thus no one should have been able to inherit his legacy. However, destiny had a way of playing tricks on all expectations. In this far off lower realms world there was actually someone able to perfectly inherit the legacy of Empyrean Primordius, as if everything done was guided by the hand of fate.

Lin Ming politely bowed towards the Dragon Sovereign, "Lord Dragon Sovereign, this junior has been lost in an absorbed state within Primordius Heavenly Palace for a long period with no sense of time. This junior would like to inquire, just how long was I within Primordius Heavenly Palace?"

The Black Dragon Sovereign's phantom faintly smiled, saying, "It's already been four years and three months!"

"Over four years…"

Lin Ming was secretly dumbfounded. Really, it was true when they said training passed without sense of time. In Primordius Heavenly Palace he would often meditate for several months, and after meditating several times, four years had quietly passed just like that.

"Lord Dragon Sovereign, this junior also has another question to ask."

"Then ask."

"This junior would like to know whether or not Senior Empyrean Primordius died in repose. This junior saw that there was a skeleton sitting within Primordius Heavenly Palace that bears some similarities to Senior Empyrean Primordius' remains. However, there were many questionable aspects to this. This junior doesn't believe that Senior Empyrean Primordius' body would fade away like that in just 100,000 years of time."

As Empyrean Primordius' fate was spoken of, the Dragon Sovereign let out a long and deep sigh. "Whether or not Primordius lived or died is something that even I am not sure of. In the past, after his preparations were completed, he had become a lamp without any oil. At the end he entered Primordius Heavenly Palace for one last closed door seclusion. Like that, 10,000 years passed. Afterwards, I transformed into a phantom to enter Primordius Heavenly Palace and I too saw the skeleton atop the throne. Perhaps Primordius really died… or perhaps there was some other possibility."

"That is…" Lin Ming felt this was too incredulous. If Empyrean Primordius had truly passed his life or death closed door seclusion then he should have left Primordius Heavenly Palace; it was impossible that the Dragon Sovereign and the others wouldn't know of this. Had Empyrean Primordius really died here?

"Senior Dragon Sovereign, this junior also has a question about the war 100,000 years ago. Senior Dragon Sovereign mentioned that the Immortal Emperor of the saint race also participated in this war. Such a character should have been a peerless powerhouse of the saint race, so how was he able to pass the God Lamenting Wall?"

The Dragon Sovereign said, "To think that you would even know of the God Lamenting Wall… it is true that the higher your cultivation, the more difficult it is to pass the God Lamenting Wall. However, there are exceptions to all rules. If your cultivation is high enough then it is possible to break through these rules to a certain degree. For instance, if a True Divinity level powerhouse were to pay an incomparably painful and overwhelming price, they could tear open the God Lamenting Wall!

"The God Lamenting Wall is like the tide: sometimes it is strong and sometimes it is weak. In the samsara 100,000 years ago, a True Divinity powerhouse chose an extremely weak period of the God Lamenting Wall and then temporarily ripped open a hole. The price of that was a massive amount of their blood essence as well as their life source. Moreover, for the next several tens of thousands of years, their cultivation would drop to that of an ordinary Empyrean. In the past, the one to tear open the God Lamenting Wall was likely the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign of the saint race. He received a deep wound in order to tear open the God Lamenting Wall and is likely still convalescing."

"Good Fortune Saint Sovereign... True Divinity powerhouse?"

Lin Ming's mind shook. Besides Empyrean Divine Seal of the past, this was the second True Divinity powerhouse he had heard of.

"Enough. You have already perfectly inherited the legacy of Primordius. My mission – our mission – can now be considered complete. We can also pass away in peace."

As the Dragon Sovereign spoke, a desolate light glinted in his eyes.

Lin Ming was stunned, "Senior, are you absolutely unable to break free from these dragon trapping cables?"

"I cannot." The Dragon Sovereign shook his head, "And let alone me, not even they are able to leave here."

The Dragon Sovereign pointed at the two gray-clothed old men. "In that war 100,000 years ago, they both had their life source injured by the God Curse Art. In the Eternal Demon Abyss with the protection of the enchantment that Primordius left behind they can still survive, but once they leave the Eternal Demon Abyss and are exposed to the remains of the God Curse Art, their bodies will melt into a puddle of goo."

Lin Ming's heart skipped a beat. Such a destiny was far, far too lonely and bleak. "Seniors, this junior swears that one day, when I break through the Empyrean realm, I will definitely return here and erase this cursed seal for you!"

Lin Ming had immediately made an oath that relied on him becoming an Empyrean, but no one here found him to be arrogant. Rather, it seemed natural.

The Dragon Sovereign smiled, saying, “It’s good that you have such kind intentions. Before you leave, I also have something important I must give you. Make sure that you treat it well.”

Lin Ming immediately agreed. “Senior, please rest assured that junior will definitely accomplish it.”

Chapter 1384 – Child of the Dragon

Chapter 1384 – Child of the Dragon

…

…

…

“Lin Ming, come with me.”

The Dragon Sovereign waved his hand and a beam of light wrapped around Lin Ming, instantly causing the both of them to disappear. Lin Ming felt space around him twist about and in the next moment he had arrived in a completely separate space.

This space was extremely vast and broad. The area where Lin Ming was standing was a desolate and bleak land.

The brown and ashen land was endless. Broken rocks littered the ground, without the least bit of life anywhere. Occasionally, massive bones thrust out from gaps in the earth. It was unknown just what sort of creature had left behind these giant bones, but as these bones were half exposed to the air they resembled broken halberds that pointed towards the skies.

The skies were also empty, without any clouds at all. There were no stars or other celestial bodies and the heaven and earth origin energy was very thin.

In the vast distance, Lin Ming could even see certain areas of space collapse, crashing apart into turbulent space flows before returning to normal. Besides that, this world was without the tiniest sound; it was utterly silent!

“The space here naturally collapses on its own; this is proof that the space here has reached an extremely fragile point.”

Lin Ming thought to himself. This sort of world seemed like the moment in stories when vast dimensions were on the verge of annihilation. All life would cease to exist and space would become extremely unstable.

Great dimensions also had their own life cycle. After many hundreds of millions or even billions of years, everything would collapse before returning to nihility.

“This place is…” Lin Ming began to ask the Dragon Sovereign.

“This is my inner world.” The Dragon Sovereign indifferently replied, as if this didn’t matter at all.

Lin Ming’s heart skipped a beat.

Inner world!

The Dragon Sovereign’s inner world had already reached this degree of decay?

Although this inner world was incomparably vast, countless times greater than Lin Ming’s own, it was hanging on the thread of destruction, without the least bit of life!

If this continued, then perhaps in just several tens of thousands of years, this entire inner world would collapse into nothing!

At that time, the Dragon Sovereign himself would likely perish, forever gone from this world.

“Lord Dragon Sovereign, you…”

Lin Ming didn’t know what to say. He only felt a dark discomfort in his heart. A legendary character like the Dragon Sovereign, a being who was able to stand side-by-side with Empyrean Primordius as brothers in arms, was likely to be an outstanding character amongst all God Beasts.

Even so, such a grand existence would end up with such a pitiful fate, his life force slowly grinding to a halt until he exhausted himself and died.

"It doesn't matter."

The Dragon Sovereign's expression was calm and peaceful; he had long ago accepted his fate.

"My life should have ended 100,000 years ago. It was only that at that time, Primordius used a great array to forcefully extract blood vitality and essence energy of the world to restore the strength I was losing to the dragon trapping cables, barely allowing me to maintain a feeble existence for all of these years. Life and death, those are things I have long since come to terms with."

As the Dragon Sovereign spoke, he shook his head as if he were remembering that great war 100,000 years ago. In terms of strength, the Dragon Sovereign was naturally inferior to Empyrean Primordius. Underneath the combined assault of several extreme Empyrean masters, it would be extremely difficult for him to survive! Back during that great war he had already believed that he would die in the chaos. For him to live for all these extra years was already more than enough.

Lin Ming silently paid tribute in his heart. In a sense, in that war 100,000 years ago, Empyrean Primordius and the Dragon Sovereign should have known the general direction of their fates. If they sacrificed the interests of the world and only cared for their own lives they could have given up the Demon Bead. Although the Demon Bead was precious, it was still inferior to one's own life.

And after giving up the Demon Bead, the saint race naturally wouldn't have continued to pay such a great price to attack Primordius and the Dragon Sovereign. But even so, the two of them had refused to do so. If one had to look for a reason, then it was likely because they didn't wish for the Demon Bead to enter the hands of the saint race.

This would cause the great calamity of humanity to become even more impossible to overcome.

Lin Ming couldn’t help but ask, “Lord Dragon Sovereign, is the Grandmist Spirit Bead now with the saints?”

“Yes!”

The Dragon Sovereign nodded.

“However… you once said that even if a True Divinity powerhouse wished to tear open the God Lamenting Wall of the 33 Heavens, they would have to use up a massive amount of their life source and even have their cultivation steeply drop for several tens of thousands of years. If so, then after the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign tore apart the God Lamenting Wall in the past to send Empyrean powerhouses of his race into the Divine Realm, the channel should have closed up. How could those Empyreans have brought the Grandmist Spirit Bead back?”

The Dragon Sovereign shook his head, “The saint race possesses more than one True Divinity! But, these True Divinities often do not have peaceful relations with each other, thus I have no idea how their relations are. Moreover, the Grandmist Spirit Bead itself has a certain function to pass through the barriers of the God Lamenting Wall, so the price of returning should be much less.”

“So that’s how it is!”

Lin Ming was suddenly aware. Divine heavenly tools like the Magic Cube and Demon Bead were the condensed form of the universe’s fundamental aspects. It was reasonable that they would be able to ignore the rules of the 33 Layered Heavens.

The Magic Cube definitely had such a function. When Lin Ming was in Carefree Island and had gone to the Red Desolate Mystic Realm, that Red Desolate Mystic Realm also forbade the entrance of anyone above the Divine Sea realm. By all reasoning, Mo Eversnow had already awakened and her strength had reached the Divine Lord realm, thus she shouldn’t have been able to enter. But, she did manage to enter and that was because she had hidden herself away in the Magic Cube space where she didn't receive any hindrance from the God Lamenting Wall at all.

If the Magic Cube had such a function then it wouldn't be strange if the Demon Bead shared it too.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming felt his heart stir. If so, then perhaps by relying on this he could find methods to enter the other universes.

The Dragon Sovereign continued to say, "To lose the Grandmist Spirit Bead is the greatest regret and guilt in Primordius' life. In the past, Primordius and Heavenly Empress Xuanqing wanted to use the Grandmist Spirit Bead as the foundation to create their own Samsara Heavenly Dao, creating a paradisiacal pure lands that existed independently from the 33 Layered Heavens. They wanted to rely on this Samsara Heavenly Dao to unravel the secrets to eternal life, in hopes that when their lives came to an end they would be reincarnated with perfect memories of their previous lives and bypass the amnesia of the womb. Unfortunately, they ultimately failed."

Eternal life was the perpetual and greatest pursuit of all supreme elders in the Divine Realm. No one wished to return to dust, and even Empyrean Primordius wasn't an exception to this. The reason he wanted to establish the Samsara Heavenly Dao was to seek out the method to eternal life.

"Empyrean Primordius actually wished to use the Grandmist Spirit Bead as a foundation to establish his own paradisiacal pure lands that could stand side by side with the 33 Layered Heavens…" Lin Ming didn't imagine that Empyrean Primordius' aspirations were so high. The 33 Layered Heavens were not ordinary great dimensions. Rather, every Heaven was in itself an endless and boundless universe. To create such a world seemed far too exaggerated.

The Dragon Sovereign seemed to see through Lin Ming's thoughts. He smiled, "You probably feel that Primordius was a bit too indulgent in his own whimsical fantasies. But, the truth is that if Primordius was allowed to continue on his road, breaking through into the realm of True Divinity and even reaching the peak of True Divinity, then perhaps there really might have been a chance of success. This is because the Grandmist Spirit Bead is the condensed ‘essence’ of a universe, and also the seed of a universe. Empyrean Primordius speculated that the Grandmist Spirit Bead, Divine Crystal Magic Cube, and other such divine objects of the heavens and earth are in fact a complete formative state of a universe. Perhaps there should have been 36 Layered Heavens, with universes of ‘essence’, ‘energy’, and ‘divine’, each leading groups of 12 universes. But, because of some unknown reasons, these three universes were unable to successfully grow, finally only condensing into universe seeds. The Diviner Crystal Magic Cube and Grandmist Spirit Bead should be these kinds of miraculous existences.”

As the Dragon Sovereign casually spoke these words, Lin Ming felt his mind wildly shake.

Universe seed? This was the first time he had heard of such a concept. He subconsciously traced his stomach… that small Magic Cube was really the formative state of a universe?

Lin Ming felt this was too incredible to believe. There was a universe within his body?

“Alright, I brought you here because there is something I wish to give you…” As the Dragon Sovereign spoke, Lin Ming felt the earth in front of them suddenly tremble. Countless runes appeared in the void, slowly spreading out in a large array for several miles.

This giant array formation was profound and exquisite, faintly gathering all the nearby heaven and earth origin energy. In the center of this array formation was a giant cocoon formed from crystalline silk threads. The cocoon was translucent, and one could even faintly make out what was occurring within.

Within, one could make out lumps of flesh that were wrapped up together.

“This is…”

Lin Ming could feel a vast ocean-like power of blood vitality rushing out from this giant cocoon. There was clearly a living creature within that cocoon, and it seemed to be growing ever so slowly as it absorbed the essence energy of the world.

The cocoon was covered in numerous complex dao patterns, exuding the aura of 10,000 different Heavenly Laws.

It was like an egg, an egg that wrapped a flesh and blood embryo.

In that moment, Lin Ming was already able to faintly guess what it was.

Following that, the Dragon Sovereign's words confirmed Lin Ming's guesses. "This is a unhatched dragon. I know that I do not have much time left in this world thus I have been preparing this dragon egg within my inner world. For these past years, I have been fusing all of my life source, blood essence, and blood vitality into this dragon egg, forming a flesh and blood embryo. This egg is now an extension of my life. Soon, in the future, it will hatch, and I do not wish to see it be born into the world of the Eternal Demon Abyss, a land without life or light. Take it, and treat it well, allow it to see the vast mysteries of the endless universes..."

As the Dragon Sovereign spoke, the countless silk threads that wrapped the dragon egg split apart and the dragon egg came slowly floating towards Lin Ming.

This was a baby God Beast, a true God Beast.

Lin Ming held his breath, his eyes staring unblinkingly at this unhatched dragon egg. Up until now he had never had a true contract beast. Most extreme talents like him were also the same; even Frost Dream and Hang Chi were the same.

It wasn't because contract beasts were useless, but because they couldn't find one that was appropriate.

A God Beast was simply an unthinkable wish. As for other contract beasts, their rate of growth couldn't compare to these peerless geniuses. If the talent of these contract beasts was cast too far off from these extreme geniuses, their function would be greatly reduced.

But now, Lin Ming possessed his own dragon, a true God Beast!

Such a contract beast was something that not even an Empyrean descendant could dream of possessing. This was because there weren't many more God Beasts than Empyreans, and most God Beasts in existence were wild and freely wandering existences that were also incomparably proud and lofty; just which one would lower themselves to work as the contract beast of a human?

Let alone an Empyrean descendant, even an Empyrean wasn't good enough!

Only an extraordinary Empyrean like Empyrean Primordius could possibly have the lucky chance to encounter a God Beast and also to subdue it. But in truth, calling it subjugation was wrong, because Empyrean Primordius and the Black Dragon were brothers in arms to begin with.

In the future, Lin Ming and this young dragon would also have such a relationship.

To be comrades in battle and also friends.

Lin Ming didn't say any words of refusal. He simply allowed this dragon egg to fly into his inner world.

After the dragon egg fell into Lin Ming's inner world, Lin Ming immediately summoned the pure world power within him to fuse into the dragon egg without reserve, nourishing the growth of the baby dragon.

Then, Lin Ming deeply bowed towards the Dragon Sovereign. "Lord Dragon Sovereign, rest assured that this junior will treat this child like a true brother!"

The Dragon Sovereign nodded. "You have a startling destiny. If it follows you, it will also be affected by your destiny. I hope that because of this, its future growth will be even better..."

Chapter 1385 – Departure

Chapter 1385 – Departure

…

…

…

After placing the baby dragon egg within his inner world, Lin Ming used his own true essence to help develop and provide energy for it. Because of this link, Lin Ming felt connected with the flesh and blood of the baby dragon and could even feel the tremendous blood vitality slumbering within it.

In this universe, the more powerful a life form was, the more difficult it was for it to reproduce. Rocs, Dragons, Phoenixes, the three great God Beasts all hatched from eggs, but to do so took a nearly incalculable amount of time and energy.

However, in the past 100,000 years, the Dragon Sovereign had already completed the majority of the incubation process. The little dragon embryo within the egg had already taken form and now Lin Ming only needed to complete the final step.

"Lin Ming, before you leave, I will give you one final piece of advice. If things seem impossible, do not push yourself too far. This grand calamity will be even crueler than the one 3.6 billion years ago. This is a war that involves the survival of the human race, and one's individual strength within this war will seem incomparably small. The greater your ability is, the more responsibility you will have to shoulder. If you haven't grown by then, do not try to show off. As long as there is life, there will always be hope."

Every word that the Dragon Sovereign spoke was well-intentioned advice. Lin Ming felt his heart warm as he heard this. He said, “Senior, please rest assured that this junior will follow your advice.”

The Dragon Sovereign nodded once more, sighing as he said, “In the past, when Primordius had exhausted the last dregs of his strength and was making his final arrangements, he often spoke about his life. His life was composed of earthshaking events, a man that stood tall and proud in the world and who left behind an indelible legend, but even so, he had made two fatal mistakes in his life. One was that he was far too arrogant in the past. If he had shared the secret of the Grandmist Spirit Bead and allowed the other Empyreans to join forces to assist him then he wouldn’t have been caught off guard by the saint race.”

“Secret?” Lin Ming was startled. “Are you saying that it wasn’t well known that Empyrean Primordius possessed the Grandmist Spirit Bead? It was a secret?”

By all reasoning, it was normal that no one would know about the fact that Empyrean Primordius possessed the Grandmist Spirit Bead. If Lin Ming were in Empyrean Primordius’ shoes and had obtained such a treasure, he too wouldn’t have publicized it. That would be suicidal behavior.

But, the problem was, if Empyrean Primordius had kept everything a secret, how would the saint race know?

The Dragon Sovereign noticed Lin Ming’s puzzlement, “The saint race has already arranged many spies and chess pieces in the Divine Realm; their invasion preparations began an extremely long time ago and they have many channels from which to obtain news.”

As the Dragon Sovereign spoke, Lin Ming was still confused, “How high of a cultivation could chess pieces of the saint race have? At most, they would be World King level powerhouses, and moreover they would have to damage their own cultivation in order to cross the God Lamenting Wall and enter the Divine Realm. After arriving here they would have to search everywhere for medicines to restore their strength so how could they possibly have learnt the ultimate secret of an extreme Empyrean?"

Lin Ming didn't believe that the saint race spies had the ability to come into contact with Empyrean Primordius.

The Dragon Sovereign said, "What you said is reasonable and in fact, the saints didn't possess the methods that you said. However, their chess pieces were not restricted to only saints, but there were also many humans. They carefully chose humans with great ambition and talent to train, taking them under their wing so that they could come into contact with the deepest secrets of humanity..."

As the Dragon Sovereign spoke, Lin Ming's mind shook. Tian Mingzi was also in this sort of situation!

Tian Mingzi's ambitions were higher than the heavens and he was also superbly gifted. Because of this, the saint race had chosen him. Starting 50,000 years ago, spies of the saint race had come into contact with him, offering him all sorts of resources and help in order to raise him into an Empyrean!

With the saint race's background, they indeed had this ability. Moreover, Tian Mingzi himself wasn't poor material to begin with; his only limit was a poor background. But, the appearance of the saint race had made up for his shortcomings.

They used all sorts of spells and restriction methods, making oaths and contracts at the level of a transcendent divine might in order to shackle Tian Mingzi and then raise him into an Empyrean chess piece. An Empyrean chess piece was more useful than 10,000 saint spies!

"The saint race has really laid out a great plan!"

Lin Ming grimaced, his thoughts turning dark. To raise an Empyrean would cost a countless amount of time and resources; they had indeed put forth enough capital.

If it weren't for Tian Mingzi's plans being toppled by Lin Ming, it was likely he would have become a human Empyrean that betrayed his own race in the future. For eternal life, for dominating strength, there would always be people that couldn't resist these temptations. They would make a deal with the devil, even selling their soul.

"So the traitor in the past was Empyrean Thunder Punishment?" Lin Ming suddenly asked.

The Dragon Sovereign's face flashed with a color of venom and loathing. He replied, "You're quite smart. Yes, the one to betray Primordius was none other than Empyrean Thunder Punishment. When Primordius spoke of his two greatest mistakes, the first one I have already said. As for the second, that is that his natural character was far too honest and straightforward, prone to follow his emotions. He swore brotherhood with Thunder Punishment but didn't see his true character. As for Thunder Punishment, when he swore brotherhood with Primordius he had long since become the dog of the saints. Without the saint race supporting him he would never have arrived at the step he did."

With this, Lin Ming understood everything.

He finally knew why in the war 100,000 years ago, Empyrean Primordius had to resist the onslaught of several Empyrean masters without any allies to call on.

He also knew why the supreme elders of the Divine Realm mostly didn't know the circumstances of this matter. Until now, only Empyrean Divine Dream and a select several other people knew the truth. People like Great World Kings of first-order worlds would have no idea about these events. Of course, even if they knew, they could only stare greedily on at Empyrean Primordius' inheritance without any ability to obtain it.

In fact, in Lin Ming's eyes, Primordius' first mistake wasn't a mistake at all. It wasn't that Empyrean Primordius was too arrogant, because no matter who it was, it was impossible to share such a great secret like the existence of the Grandmist Spirit Bead. If he shared it, the situation might even have worsened. After all, it was hard to predict the hearts and minds of others.

Empyrean Primordius' true mistake was his second one. Because he didn't conceal the existence of the Grandmist Spirit Bead to the limit and had wrongly believed in Empyrean Thunder Punishment, he had now ended up in such a state.

Human nature was truly impossible to predict…

Because of that, the strange curse of the Eternal Demon Abyss, the Skysplit Towers, the Road of Emperor, the Black Dragon, the tomb of the goddess, the Forsaken God Clan, the enigma of the battle between Empyrean Primordius and Empyrean Thunder Punishment, and just why Empyrean Primordius would appear at a lower realms world like the Sky Spill Planet…

Lin Ming finally understood all of this. Now, the only thing he didn't know was whether Empyrean Primordius was dead or alive and whether those skeletal remains in the Primordius Heavenly Palace were those of Empyrean Primordius.

That was also the final riddle of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

As for this riddle, not even the Dragon Sovereign knew the truth.

The journey into the Eternal Demon Abyss had finally ended. Lin Ming had inherited the full legacy of Empyrean Primordius and had even obtained the most precious treasure, the Primordius Heavenly Palace from it. Not just that, but there was also the 100 million years of condensed essence energy from the true Grandmist Spirit Bead.

And lastly, there was the supremely precious baby dragon.

The only regret was that the true Grandmist Spirit Bead had been stolen away by the saint race.

This was also inevitable. If the saint race didn't succeed in obtaining the Grandmist Spirit Bead the first time, the True Divinity powerhouses of the saints would inevitably have consumed their own blood essence and life force to rip apart the God Lamenting wall once more to obtain it. Lin Ming didn’t believe that the enchantment Empyrean Primordius had set over the Sky Spill Planet would be able to block the invasion of several saint Empyreans.

It was finally time to leave.

All that Lin Ming had left to do in the lower realms was to return a mortal body to Demonshine and visit his little sister, Lin Xiaoge, as well as his parents. Then, he would return to the Divine Realm.

Chapter 1386 – The Sky Spill Grand Meeting

Chapter 1386 – The Sky Spill Grand Meeting

…

…

…

The terrain of the Sky Spill Continent was shaped like a giant copper coin, surrounded by seas and with another sea in the center.

At the center of the Sky Spill Continent, at the edges of the Sea of Miracles, there were four Divine Kingdoms.

Among them was a prosperous Divine Kingdom that had only existed for a dozen plus years. This was a Divine Kingdom that had been recently established, called the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom.

This Divine Kingdom had replaced the Asura Divine Kingdom to become one of the four Divine Kingdoms. Although the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom's foundation was still shallow and they didn't possess many Divine Sea powerhouses of their own, their status was still high and transcendent. This was because of events that occurred many years ago. Just a dozen some years ago, a man named Yang Yun had taken control of most Divine Sea powerhouses in the Sky Spill Continent, slaying all those with variation bloodlines in order to cultivate his Great Blood Refining Art. His acts of terror had made everyone live in fear and dread.

At that time, Yang Yun had possessed absolute, overwhelming strength; he was a calamity upon the entire Sky Spill Continent. But then, a young man had appeared, leading a group of Divine Sea powerhouses to slaughter their way into the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's

Divine Palace. He had broken into the Nine Furnace Divine Palace's grand array and instantly killed 10 Divine Sea powerhouses and then struck down Yang Yun by himself, leaving behind a legend of his own.

This youth was Lin Ming.

Although Lin Ming had ascended, his fame and glory within the Sky Spill Continent was hotter and brighter than the blazing afternoon sun.

He had left behind countless myths and all of the older martial artists respected and admired him. He even inspired the younger generation of martial artists to work hard for the glory of their country.

Within the Sky Spill Continent, it could be said that there was no one who didn't know Lin Ming's name.

As for the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom, that was established by the friends and family that Lin Ming had left behind. Because of Lin Ming, the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom possessed a high status. There was no one who dared to disrespect them.

The Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom possessed the richest resources of the four Divine Kingdoms. Every four years, the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom would host a martial arts meeting in which heroic youths from all over the land would come to compete. The primary intention of this martial arts meeting was to seek out the people to recruit to serve as the elite of the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom and also to train them. After all, the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom had existed for far too short a time. Even though they possessed resources and fame, they actually lacked masters.

The conditions that the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom put forth were extremely rich. Once one entered the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom, one would be able to enjoy top tier resources and inheritances. Thus, many heroic youths headed towards the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom, hoping that they could amaze the world with a single feat of wonder in this martial arts meeting.

And today was the day that this martial arts meeting was being conducted.

On the top of a 100,000 foot tall mountain, the peak had been flattened down and a giant jade-bright arena had been formed.

The arena was surrounded with colorful and beautiful lights that shined in the skies, filling the air with wondrous brilliant hues. Countless dazzling divine carriages filled the skies as jade spirit boats and ships floated about, each pulled by many saint beasts.

And sitting within these divine carriages and spirit boats were high level figures of the Sky Spill Continent.

“The Seven Star Divine Kingdom’s Divine Sovereign, Li Yuxiao!”

On top of a refined jade building, an old man serving as the master of ceremonies loudly shouted out.

This was a martial arts tea party, where one could drink tea as they watched others compete in the martial path. Many lords and ladies came from all over to look at these young geniuses compete. This was not simply a contest, and every great figure that arrived on the scene had to be announced.

“Forsaken God Clan’s Patriarch, Shibai!”

The master of ceremonies shouted out once more. A sagely and wise-looking old man in white clothes slowly flew forwards on a crane, a smile on his face. He was the Forsaken God Clan’s Patriarch, Shibai.

“White Clan Patriarch, Fairy Snow Gale!”

In the skies, a phoenix cry sounded out. From afar, a bird with a phoenix-like appearance flew forwards, pulling a shimmering jade green ship. The one sitting inside this ship was the White Clan’s Fairy Snow Gale, one of the extraordinary Divine Sea powerhouses of the Sky Spill Continent.

Those that possessed the qualifications to be announced by the master of ceremonies were all top first-class figures of the Sky Spill Continent.

"Shang Family's Highest Elder, Shang Yuetian!"

"Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's Southern Baron, Yang Cheng!"

Every announcement represented the arrival of a Divine Sea powerhouse!

Those in the audience were all silently dumbfounded.

These Divine Sea powerhouses were all god-like characters of the Sky Spill Continent. It was rare to see a single one, but now there were so many today!

"This truly is a grand occasion. The Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom has only held three of these martial arts meetings so far, each one greater than the last. And in this session, over 20 Divine Sea supreme elders have arrived! This is far too exaggerated. Besides the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom, there is no kingdom that has so much face."

"Of course! Don't you know of the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom's origin? The legends say that many years ago, Sage Lin cancelled out the battle spirit tracing mark for many Divine Sea powerhouses that were controlled by Yang Yun and had them cut him down in battle. These actions were the same as saving their lives. For those that have reached a Divine Sea realm cultivation, it isn't easy to owe favors or sentiments to anyone, because they want to avoid being touched by karmic ties. And now that the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom is vigorously trying to develop, since it's impossible for those Divine Sea powerhouses to return the favor personally to Sage Lin, they have to look after the family that he left behind. If they could support his family at moments like this then they would definitely do so."

"Yes, and this session of the martial arts meeting is amazing. Of those young heroic geniuses that have come, one of them is the proudest daughter of the heavens and the current little princess of the entire Sky Spill Continent – she is Lin Xiaoge, the only little sister of Sage Lin. Her status is truly… high to the limit! If this is the martial arts meeting that Lin Xiaoge personally appears in, just which great figure would dare to not support her with their presence?"

To be called the little princess of the Sky Spill Continent without any other modifiers, there was only one person – that was Lin Xiaoge. As for the other princesses of Divine Kingdoms, they had to have the name of their origin added in. For instance, the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom's Third Princess, the Seven Star Fourth Princess, and so forth.

Lin Xiaoge could be called the person with the most special and unique status within the entire Sky Spill Continent. Even if the Nine Furnace Divine Sovereign saw her, they would still have to speak to her politely and with smiles, calling her the little princess.

Lin Xiaoge was now in her teens. She was beautiful and refreshing, slim and filled with grace.

Moreover, her cultivation far outstripped all rivals in her generation. In this martial arts meeting, many people believed that her chances of becoming the champion were over 90%.

Without a doubt, Lin Xiaoge was the absolute heroine of the day; everyone else could only be called a foil to her brilliance.

"Lin Xiaoge, she truly is the perfect woman… if I could marry the little princess, that would really be…"

"Keep on dreaming. If Lin Xiaoge's pursuers were to hold hands they could wrap themselves around the entire Sea of Miracles. Of the princes of the three other Divine Kingdoms or the young elites of the Divine Sea families and clans, just which one doesn't wish to capture her hand? But, none of them can match up to her. Even if you forget her beauty and her talent, just the fact that she is Sage Lin's little sister is enough to eliminate all hopes. If you want to marry her, you can't struggle for less than 5000 years!"

Everyone was enthusiastically speaking. And in this crowd, there was a blue-clothed youth that was casually strolling through the auditorium. Although it was extremely crowded here, there seemed to be some invisible force field surrounding him, making it so that no one could even touch the hem of his robe.

As everyone was fervently discussing, the blue-clothed youth widely smiled. He thought to himself, “A dozen plus years seem to have passed in a moment. Xiaoge has become an elegant and talented young girl. When I ascended all those years ago, she was nothing but a little brat with a runny nose chasing me around all day…”

This blue-clothed youth was Lin Ming.

He recalled the peaceful days that he lived before he ascended to the Divine Realm. As he passed life tranquilly with his wives, there would always be Xiaoge behind him, chasing him and calling out, ‘Big Brother!’, ‘Big Brother!’, especially attached to him. Those days seemed as if they occurred just yesterday.

In the blink of an eye, over a dozen years had passed. Lin Ming’s appearance hadn’t changed, but Lin Xiaoge had grown up into a proud daughter of heaven.

Recalling the past, Lin Ming would occasionally smile. This was the feeling of affection, a warm and peaceful feeling. After embarking on the road of martial arts, most of his time had been spent killing, struggling through life or death battles, or cultivating by himself in a boring and staid manner. In this kind of situation, this sort of warmth was even rarer.

Lin Ming calmly sat in the audience, watching the change of Divine Phoenix Island and the Lin Family with his own eyes.

And at this time, the martial arts meeting had officially begun.

In an area south of the arena, there was a jade structure floating in the air. This was a dwelling with columns carved from the finest stone, and many great figures of the Sky Spill Continent were enjoying precious fragrant teas at the summit. These teas could increase the lifespan of a mortal by several hundred years with a single sip. Even to a martial arts master, these teas were extremely precious. Even a Divine Sea supreme elder wouldn’t necessarily be willing to drink it down in gulps.

“Hahaha! The Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom is truly wealthy. For a tea party martial meeting, they actually used seven-colored fairy tea. This time, I have truly hit the jackpot; I’ll have to drink my fill!” A middle-aged man in a Seven Stars Robe laughed. He was the Seven Star Divine Sovereign, Li Yuxiao.

“Li Two, I know that you’re stingy, but there’s no need to be so shameless in front of everyone. I also know that you have several jars of this seven-colored fairy tea. When I’ve been to visit you, you’ve never been willing to take them out!”

Beside Li Yuxiao, a tall and thin old man jokingly smiled. For him to speak to Li Yuxiao in this manner proved that his status was also high.

“Old Man Zhao, stop ruining my image. My Seven Star Divine Kingdom is just a poor little country. If I were to let you drink and eat as you please I would be a poor man by now!”

Li Yuxiao laughed, clearly used to this sort of joking. But as he laughed, his mind stirred and he sobered up.

“Mm? Li Two, what’s wrong?” The old man asked.

Li Yuxiao traced his chin and then shook his head. “I probably was mistaken in what I felt. Something like a light sensation passed over me just now, swift and gentle, fainter than a feather…”

In that moment, Lin Ming had rapidly swept his sense over the entire audience. In fact, he hadn’t even bothered to conceal his sense, it was only that his senses far surpassed those present so they couldn’t sense him even if he didn’t hide.

And at this time, the lead of the martial arts meeting, Lin Xiaoge, finally appeared on stage.

After being separated for many years, Lin Xiaoge had become a stunningly beautiful young girl.

She wore a tight martial arts outfit that was in perfect contrast to her tall figure. She stood proud and slender with flexible and strong thighs. Her hair was tied back in a braid and her skin wasn't snow white like that of normal beauties, but white and soft with a hint of glowing red. Her cheeks were round like a child's, filled with the blush of youth. Her eyes were as clear as springs, crystalline to the very bottom and without the slightest bit of filth.

This was Lin Xiaoge, a young girl brimming with the surging fires of youth, with a vivid courage and dashing exuding from every inch of her body.

Lin Xiaoge's appearance immediately caused the audience to cry out in alarm. The atmosphere in the field had finally reached the peak!

Chapter 1387 – You've Grown Up

Chapter 1387 – You've Grown Up

…

…

…

"Little princess! Little princess!"

Many heroic young elites cheered out for Lin Xiaoge. They couldn't shout out her name, otherwise that would be disrespecting her. Rather, they shouted out her title as little princess. For someone to be called the little princess of the Sky Spill Continent, only Lin Xiaoge could lay claim to this fame.

Waves of shouts surged out like endless tides. Lin Ming faintly smiled, thinking out loud, "They're really crazy."

Lin Xiaoge's opponent was a tall and thin youth that looked just over 20 years old. Facing Lin Xiaoge, he clearly appeared a bit nervous.

Lin Ming swept his sense over Lin Xiaoge's opponent. Sloppy and ordinary, not her match at all.

In the past, because of Lin Ming, Lin Xiaoge had begun forming her foundation before she was ten years old. For all these years, she had all sorts of precious medicines to cleanse her body and was able to study top inheritances with famous teachers guiding her. Finally, before Lin Ming ascended, he even placed the blood of the Ancient Phoenix within her body, giving her the Ancient Phoenix bloodline.

To martial artists of the lower realms, a single drop of ordinary Ancient Phoenix blood was a priceless treasure.

A genius was never created in a single stroke. The only exceptions were those like Xiao Moxian, who were naturally destined to be monstrous geniuses by birth. As for the lower realms, most geniuses slowly accumulated their strength over time.

Facing this youth, Lin Xiaoge extracted her own weapon – a long red spear.

Seemingly because she worshipped her big brother, Lin Xiaoge had chosen the same weapon that Lin Ming used. It was extremely rare for a girl to use a spear to begin with, but this actually caused all the young elites present to wildly cheer out loud. Lin Xiaoge was tall with slender legs. As she grasped that long spear in her hands, it didn't feel out of place at all. Rather, she seemed heroic, filled with a daring spirit!

From the start, her opponent had been completely wasted by Lin Xiaoge's momentum. This battle wasn't tense at all; Lin Xiaoge easily won.

Following that, all sorts of young elites made their debut one after another. Some of them were common martial artists that hoped to join the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom, and some of them were even Divine Kingdom Princes who had come to the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom to 'show off', in the hopes of winning over Lin Xiaoge's heart.

In Lin Ming's eyes, some of these geniuses weren't too bad. They were just a bit worse than Lin Xiaoge.

And among these people, one girl caught Lin Ming's attention.

This girl wore a black dress and she had an extremely tall figure. Her skin was delicate and creamy white, her cherry lips slightly upturning, revealing a faintly demonic look.

If Lin Xiaoge was a brave young angel, this other girl was a dark enchantress of the night.

This black-clothed girl was also an extremely talented individual. She was a similar age to Lin Xiaoge and her strength wasn't any weaker.

The light of these two peerless women had covered over every other genius on the martial field. It was like this martial arts meeting was meant for the two of them to fight.

The black-clothed girl also had many suitors. They called out from her, and from their words, Lin Ming was also able to learn her name – Situ Yaoyao.

"Situ Yaoyao?"

Lin Ming was startled. He traced his chin. This name reminded him of one person – Situ Yaoyue.

In the past, when Lin Ming was chased by the Asura Divine Kingdom all the way to the Forsaken God Clan, Lin Ming had been forced to bet on a gambling fight. Finally, he had encountered the hidden genius of the Asura Divine Kingdom, Situ Yaoyue.

That woman had possessed a seventh stage Life Destruction cultivation as well as an Extreme Violet Dantian. She was skilled in the Darkness Laws, and with the Great Desolate Blood Halberd in hand, she had battled Lin Ming. Their battle had been hard to differentiate between victor and loser, but in the end she had lost to Lin Ming's violent body transformation technique and also lost the Great Desolate Blood Halberd to him.

Lin Ming asked someone near him, "This young friend, who is that girl on stage?"

As Lin Ming asked the youth this question, the youth revealed an understanding expression, as if they were sharing secrets between men. "Hehe, you have thoughts on her? I advise you to think otherwise. That girl on stage is the little sister of Situ Yaoyue, a peerless genius from the extinct Asura Divine Kingdom. Those that are pursuing her aren't as many as those hoping to win Lin Xiaoge, but there are at least several tens of thousands of them. Looking at your sloppy so and so foundation, I don't think you can consider yourself to be in the race at all, hahaha."

This youth had a young and friendly demeanor, and his clothing indicated he came from the Seven Star Divine Kingdom. Lin Ming had restrained his aura, and with the level of the martial artists in the lower realms, it was naturally impossible for them to make out his boundary and foundation.

Lin Ming was surprised for a moment. “Situ Yaoyue has a little sister?”

“Yes, she just recently grew up, and just like Situ Yaoyue she possesses an Extreme Violet Dantian. When the Asura Divine Kingdom was destroyed, the Situ Family didn’t have many people remaining. The Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom had shown mercy and only executed those from the Asura Divine Kingdom that followed Yang Yun in the past. As for the others, they were let go. With their country destroyed, the sisters were left alone and there were many people who had thoughts on them. It was said that there were several Divine Sea powerhouses who wanted to take them as their own. Their days definitely didn’t pass in peace…”

This Seven Star youth seemed to be very nosy. He purposefully lowered his voice and spoke in a dark and mysterious tone.

As Lin Ming heard this, he sighed deeply, feeling a bit of pity for Situ Yaoyue and Situ Yaoyao’s destiny. The two women had survived on the edges of the cataclysmic destruction of their kingdom, something that wasn’t easy at all. If they had to blame someone, they could only blame the high level figures of the Asura Divine Kingdom in the past. Those people had become enemies with Lin Ming, completely throwing themselves to Yang Yun’s side, betraying the other three Divine Kingdoms and becoming the enemy of the world.

In Lin Ming’s opinion, with Situ Yaoyue’s personality, she definitely would not submit to anyone. She was an incomparably proud individual who chased after the road of martial arts with all her heart and soul. This sort of woman desired only to travel the furthest they could on their path and wouldn’t consider something like marriage at all.

“I never imagined that after I fought Situ Yaoyue in the past, years later, our little sisters would also fight. It seems we really are rivals.”

Lin Ming self-deprecatingly thought.

And at this time, the Seven Star youth began to lewdly say, “Hehe, you know, those two girls are truly top quality goods. If I could marry the two of them together I would even be willing to be a pig in my next life. But what a pity, that’s impossible for nobodies like us, haha.”

The Seven Star youth patted Lin Ming’s shoulder as if they were already familiar buddies.

Lin Ming only smiled, giving no reply. After being in the Divine Realm for so long and now suddenly being together with ordinary martial artists of the lower realms, this was quite an interesting feeling.

The martial arts meeting continued. Without a doubt, Situ Yaoyao and Lin Xiaoge were the two most brilliant supernovas on the field. The two of them had continuous winning streaks. Those who wished in vain to defeat them were forced to admit defeat, and those Divine Kingdom Princes that hoped to win over their hearts were sent running back, beaten so badly that their mothers wouldn’t recognize them.

Finally, the battle between Situ Yaoyao and Lin Xiaoge arrived. The atmosphere within the arena had reached a crescendo.

This battle was extremely intense. Situ Yaoyao used the Darkness Laws, sending a thick shroud of darkness to cover the field. Lin Xiaoge then used the Fire Laws to clear apart the darkness, burning the arena red hot.

Then, Situ Yaoyao used her Extreme Violet Dantian, forming a demon moon in the sky. Lin Xiaoge followed by burning her Ancient Phoenix blood. With her red spear in hand, she seemed to rule the world. She engaged in a fierce melee with Situ Yaoyao. The two peerless women battled for several dozen rounds, their fighting spirit overflowing in the heat of the battle. The audience cheered out again and again, shouting at the top of their lungs.

The older martial artists sitting atop the white jade building also nodded repeatedly, filled with praise for Situ Yaoyao and Lin Xiaoge.

This battle lasted for just under an hour. But in the end, Lin Xiaoge's endurance proved to be superior. As they continued to fight, the difference in physical strength began to reveal itself as Lin Xiaoge's advantage grew greater and greater.

After all, with countless resources to temper her body and the Ancient Phoenix blood implanted within her, Lin Xiaoge was able to follow the same path that Lin Ming did in the past. In terms of strength, endurance, and blood vitality, she far surpassed other martial artists of her level.

In the end, Situ Yaoyao exhausted all of her strength and Lin Xiaoge was able to defeat her.

Even though the audience erupted in waves of cheers, Lin Xiaoge wasn't satisfied with this result. With all things considered, she felt that she hadn't truly defeated Situ Yaoyao. Rather, the reason she won was the increased blood vitality and strength that the Ancient Phoenix blood had given her.

"The last match has ended, and now Lin Xiaoge has become the champion of all young elites in this martial arts meeting! As for Situ Yaoyao, she is just a step below in second place!"

The master of ceremonies happily announced. As someone from the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom, he naturally hoped that Lin Xiaoge would win.

Beneath the arena, Situ Yaoyao was wiping off the blood from her lips, looking at Lin Xiaoge with an unconvinced and stubborn look in her eyes.

She was unwilling! Many years ago, the big sister she worshipped lost to Lin Ming, and now today she had lost to Lin Ming's little sister!

Lin Xiaoge could sense the refusal in Situ Yaoyao's eyes. She also wasn't satisfied with the battle just now. She turned towards Situ Yaoyao and loudly said, "Situ Yaoyao! The reason I defeated you now is because of my endurance. There is nothing to be proud of in beating you like this. One year from now, let us compete once more! If I cannot defeat you within a quarter hour then I will consider myself as having lost!"

Lin Xiaoge's words were breathlessly spoken, leaving the entire audience in shock. Then, they were suddenly excited. If they could watch such a battle, that would truly be an eye-opening stroke of luck.

"Humph, I have no need for you to go easy on me. But what you said is right. One year from now, I will challenge you once more!"

Situ Yaoyao loudly shouted out. Then, she turned and began to leave. The master of ceremonies smiled, saying, "Young Lady Situ Yaoyao, please wait a minute, we must award you the prize."

"I understand."

Speaking of the prize, Situ Yaoyao stopped walking. Although she was also an extremely proud person, it was impossible for her to ignore the prizes from the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom; they were simply too rich.

Like this, Situ Yaoyao and Lin Xiaoge stood together, the two of them in sharp opposition to each other, a brilliance shining from the two of them.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. He could feel the spirit of a martial artist from Lin Xiaoge's body. Only by never being satisfied with one's strength would one have the mindset to make continuous breakthroughs.

He said in a soft voice, "Xiaoge, you've grown up."

This light sound passed through the wind, traveling tens of thousands of feet before gently entering Lin Xiaoge's ears.

Lin Xiaoge suddenly shook.

This voice…

Her breath caught in her throat and her heart nearly jumped out of her chest. This sound was very familiar…

Big Brother!?

A vivid excitement filled her mind. Big Brother had returned from the Divine Realm?

She hurriedly cast out her sense. Although her talent was high, she was only twenty some years old and her cultivation was limited. Moreover, in this martial arts meeting there were many masters present, all of them sending out different auras that could hinder one's senses. With Lin Xiaoge's strength, wanting to find someone in this arena among tens of thousands of people wasn't easy at all.

Chapter 1388 – Returning Home

Chapter 1388 – Returning Home

…

…

…

Lin Xiaoge hurriedly searched for Lin Ming. And at this time, the sound of drums and strings filled the air. In the far off horizon, a golden light flashed as a massive golden carriage slowly flew forwards. In front of this carriage, nine spirit creatures similar to vermillion birds were pulling it forwards. Around these spirit birds were groups of soldiers clad in gold, carrying shimmering gold spears as if they were legendary generals of the heavens. Behind this carriage were groups of maids carrying silk covers that masked the sides of it. Not just that, but there were also two groups of maids that held baskets of flower petals, constantly tossing these petals out in the air. Although these flower petals were not heavenly materials, they were still top quality magic treasures, refreshing and revitalizing to the senses.

For a time, the entire sky was filled with the tantalizing sound of music as waves of fragrance overwhelmed the senses.

Just what sort of great person had arrived?

Everyone looked towards the skies. With such a big appearance, this was certainly not someone average. Even the many Divine Sea powerhouses that came before didn't have such pomp and flair.

As the curtains of the divine carriage were pulled apart, people were suddenly enlightened as they saw who was inside. They finally knew just what sort of mystical existence had arrived. Although they felt it was a bit strange, they had long since become accustomed to it.

On the exquisite jade building, the many Divine Sea powerhouses quickly set forwards to greet this figure. For someone to draw the greetings of so many people, it was clear that the master within this golden carriage had a status much higher than those present.

Only Lin Ming, upon seeing the scene within this divine carriage, felt his jaw drop down, his words caught in his throat like he had swallowed an egg.

This massive carriage was over 100 feet tall and wide and the inside was extremely spacious. It wasn't a problem for several people to lay down within it.

But now, in that opulent carriage, there was only a foot long red and furry little dog.

This little dog lay on sheets of silk in an extremely lazy and cozy posture, its doggy mouth arced in a smile. Its short and thin tail was curled upwards, happily shaking about.

And near this red little dog, there were all sorts of delicate pastries and fruits set about. These pastries and fruits were not ordinary items, but soul nourishing goods made from top quality materials. As long as one absorbed their essence, one could nourish the essence and revitalize the divine soul, strengthening the mind.

At this time, the little dog was pinching a crystal grape-like fruit in its paws, bringing it towards its doggy lips.

As Lin Ming saw this dog as well as the showy scene, he didn't know whether to laugh or to cry.

This dog only had a soul form, so what was the purpose of riding a carriage?

It seemed that Demonshine was passing his life in the lower realms extremely comfortably!

"This damned dead dog."

Lin Ming couldn't help but joke.

And this unconscious joke was actually heard by those nearby. Those sitting next to him changed their expressions immediately, "What nonsense are you blabbering on about? Lord Demonshine is the divine hound that followed Sage Lin in the past. In the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom, his qualifications are the oldest and his character is of the highest nobility and status. Although his appearance is… ehm… extremely cute, and not too dignified, he doesn't need to disguise himself. A book cannot be judged by its cover. Lord Demonshine's knowledge is incomparably rich and he far surpasses anyone in the Sky Spill Continent. He understands the Divine Realm and knows even more about the past and present. He is the national saint beast that protects the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom, and yet you actually called Lord Demonshine a 'damned dead dog', it's like you don't know that is a capital crime!"

Several surrounding people sternly admonished Lin Ming, their complexion a bit fanatic. Even that Seven Star youth that was friendly with Lin Ming quickly shut up.

To martial artists of the lower realms, Lin Ming, who had cut down Yang Yun, saving the lives of most of the Divine Sea powerhouses and completely reversing the situation of the Sky Spill Continent, was considered a living god. As for the guardian hound of a god, he naturally had to be an extraordinary existence amongst saint beasts.

Lin Ming speechlessly traced his nose, thinking this all too funny. That damned Demonshine had actually become a character of the 'highest nobility and status' as well as the divine guardian hound of the kingdom.

Such a great reputation and such a great show, once this was combined with what Lin Ming knew himself, he couldn't help but chuckle. As for those around him, although they had serious looks on their faces they could only endure this.

“The divine guardian hound of the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom, Lord Demonshine has arrived! Lord Demonshine has been invited to issue the rewards for the top three contestants of this martial arts meeting!”

The master of ceremonies shouted out loud. As for those great figures from the various Divine Kingdoms and martial families, they all greeted Demonshine on their own. Although they didn’t greet him like a junior did to a senior, their actions held the meaning of treating Demonshine like an Elder.

And in fact, Demonshine was indeed their elder. He was just under 50,000 years old, several times older than these people’s grandfathers. After all, in the Sky Spill Continent, even late Divine Sea powerhouses lived at most to 8000-9000 years old.

Although this was the indisputable truth, Lin Ming found it impossible to associate Demonshine with the appearance of an Elder.

As he watched Demonshine waggle his two small paws and greet these ‘juniors’ in return as if he were their elder, Lin Ming couldn’t help but laugh out loud again. This fellow was simply too rambunctious to fool these top level figures into treating him like an elder. That was simply the work of a con artist.

The top three contestants of this martial arts meeting had already gathered in the center of the arena, waiting for Demonshine to pass out the rewards. And at this time, an urgent true essence sound transmission from Lin Xiaoge echoed in his ears, filled with anxiety, excitement, and a trace of uncertainty.

“Uncle Demonshine, I heard my big brother’s voice just now! There are too many people and their force fields and auras are too jumbled up so I can’t find him!”

When Lin Ming ascended, Lin Xiaoge had still been extremely young. Even so, at that age, she had already established the most basic martial arts foundation for herself and her memory was extremely sharp. Lin Ming’s voice and appearance had left a profound impression on her and were something that she would never be able to forget.

“....What?”

Demonshine nearly jumped in shock, too stunned to reply. He quickly looked around the entire audience with his sense. In the past, he had signed a contract with Lin Ming, and although that contract had been lifted from the both of them, there was still a faint connection between their divine souls. In just a moment, Demonshine was able to find Lin Ming in the crowd of people.

In the corner of the arena, wearing blue clothes, there was a young man casually standing there with a smile on his face.

Although he didn’t seem different from anyone around him, Demonshine could feel that he existed in some different space, as if all Laws were bowing to him as a sovereign king, worshipping his existence!

After so many years passed, Lin Ming’s appearance hadn’t changed, but his aura had become increasingly deep, as fathomless as the sea. Even Demonshine couldn’t be sure just what Lin Ming’s boundary was.

Was it Divine Transformation?

Or higher?

Demonshine felt that Lin Ming was most likely at the Divine Transformation realm. But according to what he knew, just when did a Divine Transformation realm powerhouse have such a terrifying aura like Lin Ming did!?

Demonshine was dumbfounded. And beside him, Lin Xiaoge had followed his eyes and also locked onto Lin Ming.

Big brother! It was really her big brother!

Lin Xiaoge cried out with joy and recklessly flew straight towards Lin Ming.

This sudden change caught the entire audience off guard. The rewards ceremony hadn't occurred. Rather, they saw Lin Xiaoge burst out with excitement, her eyes filling with tears as she shot towards the audience.

In particular, those people surrounding Lin Ming were especially startled. They watched with their own eyes as the goddess of the Sky Spill Continent, an unreachable existence, began to rush towards them. All of them were at a loss as they began to panic!

10,000 feet, 1000 feet, 100 feet, with Lin Xiaoge's speed, this distance was passed in the blink of an eye. Lin Xiaoge soon reached the audience stands.

The Seven Star youth watched in awe as the goddess of his dreams appeared right in front of him, he was so happy and ecstatic that he thought he would faint from joy. Just what was going on?

He wasn't stupid enough to think that Lin Xiaoge would come here for him. Even so, the direction she flew towards was at him!

Was he dreaming?

The Seven Star youth was nearly about to reach out his hand. But at this time, he only felt a refreshing fragrance rush over him. Lin Xiaoge, the number one goddess of the Sky Spill Continent, the beauty that was chased by an innumerable number of suitors, had thrown herself into the arms of the man sitting beside him!

As Lin Xiaoge crashed into Lin Ming's arms, she began to cry out loud as she burst into tears.

How could Lin Xiaoge not be excited upon seeing Lin Ming again? Since Lin Ming ascended to the Divine Realm there hadn't been any news of him. Lin Xiaoge was a little child that had been extremely attached to her big brother, and as she grew up, she also learned from Demonshine just how cruel and grim the Divine Realm actually was. There were countless dangers waiting around every corner, and even the top powerhouse of the Sky Spill Continent could only be considered a useless speck of dust in the Divine Realm. At the time, Lin Xiaoge had been extremely worried. Even though Lin Ming was highly talented, the Divine Realm seemed far too dangerous.

That was until today. Now that she saw Lin Ming return safely, Lin Xiaoge felt as if she were in a dream. All of the worry that she had been keeping tamped down in her heart all these years was suddenly released and she couldn't help but cry.

Upon seeing this, the entire audience was so shocked that their chins nearly fell to the ground.

"Who is that man!?"

"How is he related to Lin Xiaoge!?"

The eyes of many Divine Kingdom Princes turned red with envy.

The Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom had never sent out any news that Lin Xiaoge had fallen in love. In fact, to a martial artist, discussing marriage in one's twenties was far too early. For a genius, marrying at 200 years wasn't too old. Even so, there were far too many handsome young elites pursuing Lin Xiaoge in hopes of winning her favor. They wished to cultivate these feelings over time and finally take her hand in marriage.

However, Lin Xiaoge had no interest in any of these pursuers. The Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom also had no plan of marrying Lin Xiaoge off, thus these droves of pursuers were all turned back in disappointment.

And now, all of them could only stare helplessly on as Lin Xiaoge threw herself into the arms of another man. They simply couldn't believe their own eyes. In their opinion, even if Lin Xiaoge were to accept the affections of someone, she would do so with a lofty attitude just like a goddess, not in this way where she threw herself towards someone underneath the gaze of everyone present.

At this time, Shang Yuetian, Li Yuxiao, and the others also discovered Lin Ming.

"Sage Lin, it really is Sage Lin!"

"Sage Lin has returned? Wasn't it said that you cannot return to the lower realms after ascending?"

"It really is Sage Lin, hurry, let's go greet him!"

Just what sort of character was Lin Ming? When he cut down Yang Yun in the past, he had only been a mere fifth level Life Destruction martial artist!

At that time, Lin Ming's strength was to the point where he could slaughter late Divine Sea powerhouses. Facing early Divine Sea powerhouses, he simply had to open his domain to instantly kill them!

Now with a dozen plus years having passed and Lin Ming also having returned safely from the Divine Realm, the boundary he reached was hard to imagine! It could be said that he could kill a hundred Divine Sea powerhouses by simply raising his hand!

All those who knew Lin Ming, including not just Divine Sea powerhouses but also the Sovereigns of many fifth-grade sects and Family Heads also flew towards Lin Ming.

Suddenly, Lin Ming was surrounded by many people in his little corner of the arena.

Chapter 1389 – Meeting

Chapter 1389 – Meeting

….

…

…

"This… this…"

The Seven Star youth sitting beside Lin Ming had already entered a stunned state, completely slack-jawed. He originally thought that Lin Ming was Lin Xiaoge's lover, but now that he saw so many great figures fly over to the packed little corner he was sitting at, he was left dumbfounded.

It would be almost impossible for him to see any of these characters.

Let alone these people, even high stage Life Destruction martial artists that were ranked on the Destiny Decree were nothing but mythical existences to him.

But now, so many of these top level figures were right next to him. Just the pressure they exuded was hard to withstand.

And, all of these characters had gathered around Lin Ming. As for little princess Lin Xiaoge, she was continuously crying in Lin Ming's arms.

Just who was this young man?

The Seven Star youth's brain was already abuzz with chaos; he could not imagine just who Lin Ming truly was.

And besides the Seven Star youth, everyone else in the audience wasn't sure what was happening either. They were already panic-stricken and in shock, so how could they have the presence of mind to think about it?

At this time, the Seven Star Divine Kingdom's Divine Sovereign Li Yuxiao's few words caused the hearts of all present to shake.

"Seven Star Kingdom's Li Yuxiao greets Sage Lin."

Lin Ming was far younger than Li Yuxiao, but Li Yuxiao still greeted him with the utmost respect. In the world of martial arts, strength was revered above all. As for Lin Ming's strength, he had already far surpassed them by 108,000 miles as well as being the great benefactor to all those present.

"Sage Lin? What did the Seven Star Divine Sovereign just say? That young man is Sage Lin?"

For most in the audience, this was the first time that they had seen Lin Ming. They never imagined that this character who had created the most fantastic and wondrous myth in the Sky Spill Continent, a great hero who far surpassed all others, would actually be standing right in front of them.

This sort of feeling was just like a mortal casually bumping into someone on the city streets and finding out that they were the current Emperor. Moreover, to these martial artists, the shock of seeing Lin Ming was at least a hundred times more intense than a mortal running into his Emperor!

"It's really Sage Lin! Didn't Sage Lin already ascend? How could he have returned to the Sky Spill Continent? I heard that those who ascend aren't able to return?"

"I have no idea. We cannot speculate on the affairs of such greater characters. I never imagined that Sage Lin would be so young! He seems like a young man in his early twenties."

“What nonsense, Sage Lin is very young to begin with. When he rose to fame he was just over twenty years old, and now he should be in his thirties.”

Lin Ming was far too strong. People subconsciously regarded Lin Ming as their senior, forgetting the fact that he was thirty some years old.

And not too far away from Lin Ming, the Seven Star youth felt his hand shaking.

His hand had been patting Lin Ming’s shoulder just now!

Rubbing his hand, the Seven Star youth felt his entire body lighten up, as if he were living a dream. “I actually spoke to Sage Lin and I even patted his shoulder. I ever said that nobodies like us would have no chance of matching with Lin Xiaoge… whatever happened, I’m glad I didn’t say anything too excessive or who knows how I would have ended up…”

It wasn’t just the Seven Star youth, but all those around him who had been seriously ‘educating’ him about Demonshine, the divine guardian hound of the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom, felt their minds go blank, completely losing all ability to process any thoughts.

“Shang Family’s Shang Yuetian greets Sage Lin.”

“White Clan’s Snow Gale greets Sage Lin.”

One by one, all the great figures present came up to greet Lin Ming.

Those with the qualifications to stand in the inner circle and greet Lin Ming directly were all Divine Sovereigns, heads of great families, or at least top level Princes of Divine Kingdoms. Without an exception, each one was a Divine Sea powerhouse.

As for those Sovereigns and Patriarchs of lower level sects and family clans, all of them were stuck in the periphery, simply not possessing the ability to speak with Lin Ming.

As Lin Ming saw all these familiar faces once more, his face was filled with emotion. Over a dozen years had passed since these old allies had helped him lay siege to Yang Yun. Now, they had established their status even more, becoming the absolute controllers of the Sky Spill Continent.

With them looking after the Vermillion Bird Kingdom that was formed by Divine Phoenix Island as well as the Lin Family, Lin Ming could feel relieved.

And with the resources he left behind, that was enough to supply the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom for the next several hundred years. They would be able to train a group of core leaders in the upcoming centuries, and at that time, the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom would be much more stable.

At this time, a small red dog pushed his way through the bustling crowd, yelling out, “Lin Ming! Good heavens, you finally came back!”

With Lin Ming’s current status, only Demonshine was able to speak so carelessly and jokingly to him. When Lin Ming’s cultivation was low, it had been Demonshine who had helped protect him. The youth and the dog had gone through many trials together, and even though Lin Ming became far stronger afterwards, they still considered each other friends and comrades in arms, without any distinction between who was higher and lower.

Lin Ming faintly smiled, jokingly replying, “I suppose. After so many years, it seems you’ve also become the national divine guardian hound.”

Hearing these teasing words, Demonshine’s complexion turned red. He playfully said, “Don’t make fun of someone as great as me. In just a dozen some years, you’ve already returned to the lower realms from the Divine Realm. From what I know, it isn’t easy to return. You need the necessary strength to pass through the space storms as well as a considerable amount of money for the transmission fee. Normally, others wouldn’t think of returning to the lower realms so easily. It seems you’ve done quite well for yourself in the Divine Realm.”

"It's been okay." Lin Ming smiled, not bothering to narrate all his brilliant successes. If he told Demonshine that he had obtained second place in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, the little dog would probably go crazy.

"Okay is good enough." Demonshine stretched out his paw, patting Lin Ming's shoulder, seeming as if he were worried for him.

However, this scene combined with the earnest and serious expression on Demonshine's face made one want to laugh out loud.

"It's hard to survive in the Divine Realm. Many geniuses of the lower realms often perish in the years after they ascend. As for those that survive, most just linger around uselessly, barely managing to maintain a living. Those that can produce some results and finally rule over their own area are the minority within the minority. Luckily, your talent is far too freakish, and with someone as wonderful as Fairy Feng guiding you, this shouldn't be a problem for you at all. So how is it, have your days at the Ancient Phoenix Clan been well?"

Demonshine knew that Lin Ming met with Fairy Feng, thus he naturally assumed that Lin Ming was also residing at the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

"I left the Ancient Phoenix Clan a long time ago..." Lin Ming casually said. When he had decided to go to the True Martial Great World to inherit the wealth that Mo Eversnow left behind, he had left the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Now, only his name existed there.

Looking back at his journey these past years, when Lin Ming first ascended, he needed the protection of Fairy Feng in order to reach the Divine Realm. Otherwise, he would have been torn apart by the space storms that existed between the lower realms and the Divine Realm.

But now, Lin Ming's strength far surpassed that of Fairy Feng. And in order to accomplish this, Lin Ming had put forth an endless level of effort, experiencing countless struggles, and even surviving innumerable life or death battles and dangerous situations.

Lin Ming didn't speak of any of this to Demonshine. He only smiled, clearly and gently.

“You’ve left the Ancient Phoenix Clan? Isn’t that a bit too premature? The Ancient Phoenix Clan is a Holy Land level influence of the Divine Realm and they have many resources that are quite good. If you leave the Ancient Phoenix Clan so soon, you might encounter many dangers…” Demonshine rubbed a paw over his chin, speaking with some worry.

Lin Ming chuckled. “There have been some dangers. Before I returned to the lower realms, I was in a tight spot, but I’ve finally resolved that manner. In fact, not only did I not lose anything, but I gained some advantages instead.”

Lin Ming naturally referred to the matter of himself being hunted down by the saint race’s spy and then Tian Mingzi. This was not just a tight spot, but an extremely dangerous death chase that nearly killed Lin Ming. However, he kept his tone even and understated so that he didn’t arouse Lin Xiaoge’s concern.

But even so, just a brief description caused Lin Xiaoge’s heart to tighten. She wanted to ask him just what happened, but Lin Ming only spoke a little bit about it to resolve her worries.

“Big Brother, Big Sister Qianyu and Big Sister Xingxuan both went searching for you. Have you seen them?”

In accordance with customs, Lin Xiaoge should have referred to Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan as her sister-in-laws. However, she was used to calling them big sister, thus she continued to do so.

“Mm, I saw them.” Lin Ming nodded. Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan had finally met with Lin Ming once more after several twists and turns in the Divine Realm. All of this was glossed over in just a few simple words.

“That’s wonderful!” Lin Xiaoge happily said. But at this time, she seemed to think of something. She whispered, “Big Brother… can I also go with you to the Divine Realm? I…”

Lin Xiaoge's voice dimmed down. Her cultivation was simply too low. No matter how stable her foundation was, she still only possessed a Revolving Core cultivation, soon to enter Life Destruction.

This sort of cultivation naturally didn't give her the qualifications to enter the Divine Realm. It was only that she feared that once Lin Ming went back, she wouldn't be able to see him for who knew how many years.

However, Lin Xiaoge never thought that Lin Ming would only faintly smile and say, "You can. If you want to go to the Divine Realm, then I will lead you there."

In the Divine Realm, Lin Xiaoge would have a better space to grow. As for Lin Ming, he only needed to place Lin Xiaoge, Mu Qianyu, and Qin Xingxuan in an Empyrean level Holy Land and he wouldn't need to worry about any sort of retaliation from Tian Mingzi.

The only worry was the upcoming great calamity of humanity. If the situation turned out worse than imagined, Lin Ming would send Lin Xiaoge back to the lower realms.

"Big Brother, are you for real? That's great!"

Lin Xiaoge jumped up in joy. She didn't think that Lin Ming would agree to her request. Going to the Divine Realm with her Revolving Core cultivation was one matter, and even if she was able to ascend, she feared that Lin Ming would refuse her because he thought it would be too dangerous to take her there. Because of this, she didn't believe he would agree so suddenly and readily.

"Big Brother, you're too awesome!"

Lin Xiaoge jumped up and hugged Lin Ming's neck.

At this time, not too far from Lin Ming, a black-clothed woman was standing calmly in the void, looking at him.

This woman was Situ Yaoyao. At this time, because of the intense battle that had just occurred, her complexion was still slightly pale. It made her seem a bit less demonic and a bit more delicate.

She and Situ Yaoyue truly were surprisingly similar in appearance.

Looking at Situ Yaoyao, Lin Ming couldn't help but feel a tinge of guilt. No matter what was said, the truth was that Lin Ming was the one who had brought about the destruction of the Asura Divine Kingdom, toppling their dynasty. The order to exterminate the Asura Divine Kingdom had also been handed down by Lin Ming. With his strength and prestige at that time, he indeed possessed the ability to erase a Divine Kingdom with a few simple words.

The annihilation of the Asura Divine Kingdom had caused Situ Yaoyue and Situ Yaoyao to live a rough and perilous life. If that hadn't happened, their growth would have been much smoother than it was now, and their statuses would have been very different. Although they would still have been inferior to Lin Xiaoge, they would absolutely have been unattainable and proud daughters of heaven.

"Is your older sister doing well?" Lin Ming suddenly asked in a soft voice.

Chapter 1390 – The Day of Return

Chapter 1390 – The Day of Return

…

…

…

After being spoken to by Lin Ming, Situ Yaoyao never thought that he would bother noticing her. Her feelings towards Lin Ming were extremely complex. Although he was their enemy and she also hated him, she couldn't help but admire him.

Although the fall of the Asura Divine Kingdom had been caused by Lin Ming, Situ Yaoyao also knew that this ending could only be blamed on the high level figures of the Asura Divine Kingdom in the past. They had followed Yang Yun and had made themselves enemies of the world.

"My big sister is doing well." Situ Yaoyao said, somewhat indifferently. Facing her old enemy, she naturally wouldn't reveal the difficult lives they lived. In this point, Situ Yaoyao and Situ Yaoyue shared the same level of proudness.

Lin Ming only smiled, not speaking further. He could imagine the destiny that the Situ Family had suffered and all the people that would try to push them down. In the past, the Situ Family had offended many people and had made many, many enemies. Although they should have also helped others in the past, human nature was capricious and fickle. When a family met misfortune, there would often be many people kicking them while they were down as opposed to helping them.

Moreover, although the Situ Family had been destroyed, they would have inevitably left behind a great deal of wealth. This wealth was certain to be grasped in the hands of the survivors of the Situ Family, and others would definitely covet them.

Lin Ming didn't seriously speak with the stubborn Situ Yaoyao. He only said to Demonshine with a true essence sound transmission, "Look after the descendants of the Situ Family for me. It seems that their days haven't passed in peace."

Demonshine obscenely grinned, "You want me to look after them? Really look after them? In the past, the Situ Family hunted you down to the edges of heaven and the ends of the sea, even forcing you into the 8000 Mile Black Swamp and then finally cornering you in the Forsaken God Clan before engaging you in a life or death battle. And even so, you still want to treat their evil with kindness? Have you taken a fancy to those two sisters and want to bed them together?"

Demonshine's tone wasn't proper at all. Lin Ming rolled his eyes, not bothering to bicker with him. "I've never made it a habit to treat those who harm me with mercy. In the past, those from the Asura Divine Kingdom that chased me down have already died, and there is no need to implicate those that weren't involved. If this continues, then that will be a cause of karmic injustice. I cultivate the martial path and wish for my thoughts to be as clear as possible, with no debts or grudges lest I wet myself with karma. The cause and effects of this world are troublesome, but it is still something that I must sort out to allow my mind to reach perfection. Only like that can I gather the momentum of my destiny and continue forwards carefully…"

Lin Ming's theory of destiny involved with karma wasn't something that was positively confirmed in the martial world. But, what he did know was that destiny truly did exist.

Destiny and karma were closely intertwined with one's inevitable fate. In addition, every time one was victorious, every time one survived a dangerous situation, the faith in themselves that they carved in their bones would be even greater. Then, the next time they encountered danger, they would be far more confident and the chances they had of returning alive would also be higher.

Demonshine smirked. “Che, how boring. Those two beautiful sisters could be so easily obtained by you and yet all you do is spout out a bunch of philosophical nothings. Well, since you asked me to, I will naturally help take good care of them. But, little Lin boy, I haven’t been to the Divine Realm in a long time and would like to go back for a quick stroll. Is it convenient for you?”

Demonshine knew that the price of going to and from the Divine Realm wasn’t small and he was afraid that Lin Ming wouldn’t be able to withstand it, thus he asked such a question.

Lin Ming smiled, “No problem.”

Lin Ming’s current wealth far surpassed most Great World King Holy Lands. Forgetting the pills and jade slips that were left behind in Primordius Heavenly Palace by Empyrean Primordius, just the Demon Spirit Bead essence and the nine sun jade base beneath it was a nearly incalculable level of wealth.

Lin Ming, Demonshine, Lin Xiaoge, and some others left the giant crowd of people and began to fly towards the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom’s palaces.

As the crowd was left behind, all of them felt as if they were experiencing some ridiculous dream. Lin Ming had appeared too suddenly. For such a secretive character to appear out of nowhere, this left one feeling truly perplexed.

After arriving at the Vermillion Bird Divine Palace, the first matter Lin Ming went to do was to visit his parents.

Since leaving the Lin Family at Green Mulberry City and going to study martial arts at the Seven Profound Martial House, over 20 years had passed, and unimaginable changes had occurred to him in this time. As Lin Ming recalled the road he walked, he sobered up. It was hard to imagine just how he had arrived at this step.

On his road, there were innumerable moments of sadness, danger, and even despair. He wandered the edge of life and death again and again, experiencing countless intense slaughter battles. In most of these fights, Lin Ming had defeated his opponents. But there were also many times where Lin Ming was hunted down by others and he would have to struggle through dangerous situations again and again.

To walk down the road of martial arts was to battle the heavens! If one was content with their current situation they could easily live a life 10,000 times better than that of a mortal king. But for someone like Lin Ming, who only wished to seek the peak of all martial arts, his true companion during these many years was loneliness and danger.

Such pressures and tribulations required a sturdy heart and mind to withstand. However, even though Lin Ming's heart of martial arts was extremely firm and resolute, it would still exhaust his mind if this continued for much longer.

At this time, to enjoy the warm affection of family was the best means of treatment. This was especially true when Lin Ming saw his parents living an easy and comfortable life, looking much more lively and young than they did in the past. Just this alone was enough for Lin Ming to know that all the pain and misery he suffered was worth it.

"Father, Mother, look who came back!"

Lin Xiaoge was shouting out loud like a morning bird. She crashed through the house doors, impatiently relaying the good news to her parents.

In the room, an attractive couple was sitting down. They both looked just over 30 years old, and the previous traces of work and exhaustion had long since been washed clean by all sorts of miracle medicines. Like this, it wouldn't be difficult for them to live for several thousand years.

"Father, Mother, your child has returned…"

……….

For the next several days, Lin Ming followed his parents and little sister.

During these warm times, Lin Ming felt an inexplicable peace of mind. All of those restless killing intents that gathered in his mind slowly subsided, becoming much fainter. Lin Ming's battle spirit also seemed to loosen as if it would soon break through to the blue soul level...

When Lin Ming was at the middle Divine Sea realm, his battle spirit had already reached gold perfection. As for the blue soul level, he still hadn't been able to take that final step even after all these years of training. But now, in these peaceful times, Lin Ming actually felt that the blue soul battle spirit level was finally entering his reach.

"Demonshine, I've brought a body for you. I can help you possess it."

Lin Ming called over Demonshine.

"Mortal body?" Demonshine's eyes brightened. He had been without a mortal body for many years already. In the past, he had bragged that he was Holy Lord Demonshine, but the truth was that he was simply making empty boasts. In truth, his strength had been located somewhere between the Divine Transformation and Divine Lord realm, and without his mortal body he was only able to display an extremely limited level of his past strength.

"Take it out and let's see!" Demonshine's tongue lolled out. He panted heavily as he spoke with excitement.

Lin Ming waved his hand. A barrier of grandmist space fell over them, isolating out everything. Then, he pulled out the body of the demon wolf he had captured.

This fierce demon wolf had sharp fangs and a pair of knife-like wings on its back. As Demonshine saw this, he was shocked. "Holy crap! A three-eyed demon wolf, I am seeing things!?"

"This demon wolf not only has a body as hard as divine iron, but it also possesses a third eye called the daevic heaven eye. It possesses the ability to understand the Laws from birth and it also possesses an intellect similar to humanity. Its mental strength is particularly formidable. I can't believe you were actually able to find something so good. This sort of beast would fetch a sky high price on the black market."

Demonshine didn't believe that Lin Ming had caught this demon wolf. Rather, he believed Lin Ming had bought it. But no matter how it was, this was truly a great mortal body for himself.

Lin Ming said, "Are you satisfied?"

"Satisfied, of course I'm satisfied. But, it's only that taking possession of this body won't be easy for me!"

"No worries, I can help you with that." Lin Ming possessed a perfect gold battle spirit and also comprehended the Divine Dream Law. His understandings of the soul had reached an extremely high level; it wouldn't be a problem at all for him to help Demonshine take over the body of a three-eyed demon wolf.

And in fact, with Lin Ming's help, the process of taking over the demon wolf's body was extremely smooth.

A day later, a tall and powerfully-built wolf that was larger than an ox began to recklessly fly above the skies of the Lin Family's palace. The howls and unbridled cackles of the demonic wolf caused everyone in the surrounding area to stare in shock.

Among these people were many high level figures. As they felt the aura exuded by this demon wolf, all of them were secretly dumbfounded. Lin Ming had been back for just a few days, yet he was able to so easily put forth such a terrifying demon wolf. Without a doubt, even if all of them gathered together they still wouldn't be a match for this demon wolf.

Like this, a month passed.

Woosh!

In the rear courtyard of the Lin Family Palace, the Phoenix Blood Spear shot forth, controlled by the Ruling Spirit Art. The spear seemed to have a mind of its own, deftly cutting apart a willow tree. With a sparkle of spear light, this willow tree was instantly carved by Lin Ming, leaving the image of a vivid, lifelike phoenix.

This spear was able to destroy a 100,000 foot mountain, but now the spear light was being used to carve a willow tree and also produce such a fine and intricate design. This level of control was truly shocking.

Lin Ming was using the Ruling Spirit Art to temper his own battle spirit. He wanted to overcome the barrier of the blue soul battle spirit as soon as possible.

"Big Brother, well done!"

In the rear courtyard, Lin Xiaoge clapped and cheered out loud as she saw Lin Ming train his martial arts.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. He turned to look at her. Standing beside Lin Xiaoge were three other young girls. These three young girls were all her friends, and as girls that knew Lin Xiaoge, their status was definitely not ordinary. Of these young girls, one was the Princess of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom and another was the most outstanding disciple of the White Clan; there was even a chance that she would be a potential candidate to be the Patriarch of the White Clan in the future. As for the last girl, she was the granddaughter of the Heavenmirror Sage, who had already retired to his homeland. She possessed a variation dantian and her talent was in no way inferior to Situ Yaoyue's. It was only because she was too young at 16 years of age that she didn't participate in Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom's martial arts meeting.

As they saw Lin Ming look at them, the young girls stumbled over themselves. The youngest girl's cheeks turned bright red and hot. The only reason they were able to enter the rear courtyard of the Lin Family Palace and see Lin Ming train was because they were Lin Xiaoge's friends. Otherwise, they would never have had such a chance.

There was no need to mention Lin Ming's storied deeds and history. The young girls could only envy Lin Xiaoge that she had such a spectacular big brother.

"I heard that Sage Lin will leave soon?"

A young girl whispered to Lin Xiaoge.

“That’s right. My brother is returning soon; he’ll be leaving tomorrow. Moreover, Big Brother has also promised to bring me with him, it’s just that… we will have to separate…”

“Oh…” Hearing Lin Xiaoge’s confirmation, the young girls were a bit disappointed. Just what sort of scene was the mythical Divine Realm like? They all hoped they could go and take a look, but unfortunately, they weren’t related to Lin Ming.

Like this, time passed until the next day. Lin Ming’s brief adventure in the lower realms had lasted for over four years, and now it was finally time for this trip to come to an end…

Chapter 1391 – Seeking an Audience with Divine Dream

Chapter 1391 – Seeking an Audience with Divine Dream

…

…

…

Divine Dream Great World –

An expensive and fast spirit ship shuttled through the starry skies. Along the way, one could faintly make out the mist-filled world of the Divine Dream Great World's central mainland. This was a land of dream and illusion, filled with wondrous sights everywhere, beautiful to behold.

As one of the several largest of the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds, the Divine Dream Great World possessed the richest spiritual energy in the entire Divine Realm. The scenery here was correspondingly enchanting.

Lin Xiaoge stood within this ship, looking down at all the scenes in the mainland. She would occasionally cheer out, just like a child.

Even Demonshine came out to watch. After 50,000 years, he was finally returning to the Divine Realm so he was certainly excited by this.

"With the degree of richness of this heaven and earth origin energy, it should be one of the peak great worlds of the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds. How was the Ancient Phoenix Clan able to establish themselves on such an awesome world?"

Lin Ming faintly smiled. “We aren’t at the Ancient Phoenix Clan.”

“Mm? We didn’t go to the Ancient Phoenix Clan? Then where are we?” In Demonshine’s opinion, Lin Xiaoge was far too weak right now. It would be better for her to join the Ancient Phoenix Clan first. She would have the protection of a Holy Land as well as a safe place to train.

“We’ve arrived.”

Lin Ming suddenly said. This trip had taken over a month. If he had used Primordius Heavenly Palace to travel instead it would have taken less than half the time, but Primordius Heavenly Palace was far too eye-catching; Lin Ming wouldn’t casually take it out if he could help it.

Demonshine and Lin Xiaoge looked up to see a vast sea of clouds in the distant horizon. Within this sea of clouds floated thousands of celestial mountains, and these celestial mountains were covered with all sorts of wonderful treasures of the world. The most inferior of these precious treasures still exuded spiritual auras that were hundreds and thousands of times more intense than the most valuable heavenly materials of the Sky Spill Continent!

A mysterious and dazzling immortal palace floated among these celestial mountains, similar to an illusionary mirage that could disappear at any moment. Spiritual springs surged, coming down in waterfalls that looked like endless bolts of white silk sprinkling down from the heavens. A single drop of this divine nectar, if dropped onto a field of mortal grass, could turn all of it into spiritual herbs. But now, rivers of this water were sprinkling down into the sea of clouds, vitalizing the heaven and earth origin energy in the surroundings.

“This… this is…”

Demonshine’s three blue eyes popped wide open, filled with absolute disbelief.

This was definitely not a level of strength and prestige that a Holy Land level sect should be able to possess. If a single item from within this sea of clouds was to be dropped in a small world of the Divine Realm, it would absolutely provoke a bloody and terrifying war as all the small sects struggled for it with their existences on the line. But here, these items were only decorations that were casually strewn about!

Lin Xiaoge also oohed and aahed in praise. Her eyes were wide open, looking at as much as she could.

In truth, she didn't know what this scenery meant. Even so, this didn't stop a profound and amazed feeling from swelling within her heart.

"This is Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, the dwelling of Empyrean Divine Dream."

Lin Ming slowly said. But as these words fell on Demonshine's ears, he nearly spat out a mouthful of blood in shock.

"You... what did you just say? Empyrean Divine Dream!? Are you sure!?"

Demonshine's claws shook. 50,000 years ago, he had followed the Demon Emperor to a mission at the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. In the army of 10,000 powerhouses, Demonshine had been insignificant. To him, an Empyrean was a completely unimaginable existence. Moreover, Empyrean Divine Dream was known as the most terrifying of all Empyreans. It was possible that she was the greatest powerhouse of the entire Divine Realm!

To Demonshine, such an existence was a god, and Lin Ming had actually led him here to Empyrean Divine Dream's Heavenly Palace! Demonshine definitely didn't believe that Lin Ming would bring them here just for some sightseeing.

Could it be... that Lin Ming had joined Divine Dream Heavenly Palace?

"Lin Ming! Are you joking with me? Did you join Divine Dream Heavenly Palace? No... that shouldn't be true... it's said that Divine Dream Heavenly Palace only accepts female disciples, so how could you have possibly joined?"

Demonshine had never lost his composure like this before. And beside him, Lin Xiaoge asked, “Uncle Demonshine, what is it? What is this Divine Dream Heavenly Palace…?”

“You won’t understand if I tell you. Even I cannot describe just how great the status of Empyrean Divine Dream is. In the past, when the Demon Emperor established a sixth-grade sect and then ascended, his strength increased by several times in the Divine Realm. But even during his prime, he wouldn’t even have been considered an ant in front of Empyrean Divine Dream! Empyrean Divine Dream might possibly even be the strongest powerhouse of the entire Divine Realm, the true god of a trillion quadrillion lives!”

Demonshine used the Demon Emperor as an example to explain Empyrean Divine Dream’s strength to Lin Xiaoge because besides Lin Ming, the most powerful character that she had heard of before was the Demon Emperor.

Although Lin Xiaoge found this hard to imagine, she could still faintly make out how magnificent it was.

Empyrean… the god of a trillion quadrillion lives?

“Lin Ming, how do you know Empyrean Divine Dream?” Demonshine placed his paws on Lin Ming’s shoulders, forcefully shaking him in his shock and excitement.

In his opinion, although Lin Ming did possess a heaven-defying degree of talent, it was still lacking when placed in the context of the entire Divine Realm. At the very least, he shouldn’t be great enough to enter the vision of someone like Empyrean Divine Dream. To a character like Empyrean Divine Dream, even Empyrean descendants were nothing but ordinary juniors not worthy of mention. In her millions of years of life, she had seen countless Empyrean descendants. Only the greatest peak geniuses amongst all Empyrean descendants could attract her attention a little, and that was only an extremely tiny bit.

“Lin Ming, how could your luck be so great? If you can bring us here then that definitely means you have some significant relation with Empyrean Divine Dream!” Demonshine couldn’t imagine just how Lin Ming had come into contact with Empyrean Divine Dream.

Lin Ming said, “I joined the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting and made it into the rankings, thus I obtained Empyrean Divine Dream’s attention.

Lin Ming casually said. In truth, he knew that if it weren’t for the pending arrival of the great calamity of humanity then he wouldn’t have attracted the attention of so many Empyreans no matter how wonderful his results in the First Martial Meeting were. But now, Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, Hang Chi, and all the others were already recognized as leads in the future great calamity.

“What rank!?” Demonshine’s voice grew increasingly high-pitched and frantic. He had also experienced the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting in the past. He had known many people that he considered extraordinary in the past, but when they participated in the First Martial Meeting, a land of tides that washed away all until the true gems emerged, they weren’t even able to pass the preliminaries.

If one had to insist on their rankings, they were likely ranked under a million!

However, even that sort of result was enough to be proud of!

If Lin Ming could obtain the attention of Empyrean Divine Dream then he definitely wasn’t lower than a million in rankings.

“Second place.”

Even though Demonshine was prepared for an answer like this, he still froze solid, harder than stone.

Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, second place… this sort of result… was that a result that a human could really accomplish?

“Heavens! How could this be possible! Lin Ming, you actually came second at the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting? Just what have you been up to in your years in the Divine Realm!?”

Demonshine's mind blacked out. He could be said to understand Lin Ming to an extent, but even so, he didn't believe that with the level of talent that Lin Ming displayed in the lower realms, he would somehow have placed second in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting.

And at this time, they had arrived at Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

Lin Ming said, "Let's leave this for later. I have to see Empyrean Divine Dream first. There is some extremely important information that I have to report to her. You can wait outside."

As Lin Ming spoke, he left the spirit ship and flew straight towards the depths of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

"Disciple Lin Ming wishes to seek an audience with Empyrean Divine Dream!"

Lin Ming stood outside Divine Dream Heavenly Palace and spoke to the two female guards.

These two women both possessed Holy Lord level cultivations.

Divine Dream Heavenly Palace only had a mere several hundred core disciples. With the maids, guards, and other servants added on, there were only several thousand people. Of these people, every single one was outstanding!

"Enter."

At this time, a faintly recognizable force spread to Lin Ming's ears, like the quietest of sighs. This was the sound transmission of Empyrean Divine Dream.

Lin Ming was delighted to hear this. He estimated that in the four years he was gone, Empyrean Divine Dream should have long ago finished her closed door seclusion. Without a doubt, Frost Dream should have broken into the Divine Transformation realm much earlier than he did.

Lin Ming flew straight into the Heavenly Palace to pay a visit to Divine Dream.

After four years passed, Divine Dream was still the same as before. She wore a long white dress and there wasn't the tiniest bit of a powerhouse's aura emitting from her body. She seemed just like a mortal woman, but her appearance and temperament were like a blue moon in the highest heavens, as quiet and deep as an iceberg, noble and cold, disallowing anyone from having blasphemous thoughts against her.

Standing beside Divine Dream was a young woman who bore a striking resemblance to her; this young girl was Frost Dream.

And as Lin Ming thought, Frost Dream had already stepped into the Divine Transformation realm, and even surpassed Lin Ming as she had reached the peak of the early Divine Transformation realm. She was making great progress in stepping into the middle Divine Transformation realm.

Frost Dream was Divine Dream's sublime incarnation, and not a true reincarnated soul that had passed through the cycle of samsara. Thus, in order to raise Frost Dream, Divine Dream had to pay an immense amount of resources and care.

"What is the matter?" Empyrean Divine Dream lightly asked. Her eyes swept past Lin Ming's inner world and then her eyebrows pricked up. "Oh? You have inherited Primordius' inheritance from the lower realms?"

Empyrean Divine Dream's mental perception and acuity was more illuminating than the sun. Lin Ming said, "Yes! I have gained the recognition of Senior Primordius, thus this junior has inherited the full legacy of Empyrean Primordius."

"Mm, well done." Empyrean Divine Dream softly said. "Then you can now be considered a true descendant of Primordius. Primordius was a marvelous and prodigious person. If it weren't for the matters that occurred 100,000 years ago, then perhaps he truly might have become a True Divinity in the future."

Lin Ming's heart skipped a beat upon hearing such a high evaluation from Divine Dream. Empyrean Primordius could have become a True Divinity?

In his mind, Primordius was similar to Divine Dream in strength. Moreover, listening to her tone, she likely placed herself on the same level as Empyrean Primordius.

If Primordius had survived to this day, then he would have been close to stepping into the realm of True Divinity. Then, what about Divine Dream?

Had she seen the realm of True Divinity? Or was she already a half-step into that fabled realm? Perhaps she was waiting for Frost Dream to mature before directly ascending into a True Divinity, becoming a true god of the Divine Realm!

As Lin Ming realized this, he felt that Divine Dream was increasingly unfathomable.

“Lin Ming, for what matter did you wish to see me?”

“Reporting to Senior, before this junior went to the lower realms, I needed to look for a mortal body for an old friend, thus I went to the Demondawn Great World. Then…”

Lin Ming reiterated his entire bitter experience with Tian Mingzi to Divine Dream, from beginning to end. He spoke of the Nine Star Heaven Pill that Tian Mingzi was refining, the saint race spy, and Tian Mingzi hunting him down all the way to the lower realms. He retold the entire story without omitting a single detail.

At the start, Empyrean Divine Dream didn’t have an expression. But afterwards, her eyebrows wrinkled together. “Where is the corpse?”

Empyrean Divine Dream suddenly said, an ice cold chill to her words.

Lin Ming quickly took out the corpse of the saint race spy from his spatial ring.

As Divine Dream saw this corpse, a cold light shimmered in her eyes. “It truly is the saint race! They ruined their cultivation to pass through the God Lamenting Wall and now wish to restore their strength with the Nine Star Heaven Pill. The saint race’s hands have already reached deep into many places within the Divine Realm, but we actually know nothing about them!”

Dim and gloomy clouds seemed to cover Divine Dream's face. "Lin Ming, you have earned a great merit this time. In the future, when the great calamity of humanity arrives, you will surely be a part of the main force. From this point alone, whether or not you are my disciple, I will put forth my full strength to help raise you. You cultivate dual body and energy, and as for that Nine Star Heaven Pill that you mentioned, I actually possess an incomplete formula for it. I can attempt to help refine it for you to help you make a breakthrough."

Chapter 1392 – Drastic Change

Chapter 1392 – Drastic Change

…

…

…

As Lin Ming heard Empyrean Divine Dream say she would refine the Nine Star Heaven Pill for him, he was ecstatic.

Under the current Laws of the universe, the Nine Star Heaven Pill by itself was likely insufficient for Lin Ming to break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. But even so, it would bring Lin Ming closer to that final step he needed.

As he gathered more and more momentum over time, he would eventually break through that barrier.

Empyrean Divine Dream said, “Lin Ming, I will train you as far as I can, but I also need your word that in the upcoming great calamity, you will do everything in your power, exhausting your entire being to resist the saint race. Hair cannot survive without the skin. The Divine Realm is already the final universe of humanity, and once the Divine Realm is conquered and destroyed, there will be no foothold for humanity any longer. Every human will devolve into a slave of the saint race, and it is likely that we shall be washed away by the river of history!”

“This disciple understands.” Lin Ming solemnly nodded. This great calamity concerned the survival of humanity itself. The future of the human race was also his own future.

If all of humanity were to degenerate into slaves and the saint race were to massacre all human martial artists on sight, then it would be nearly impossible for the still low cultivation Lin Ming to reach the peak of martial arts.

“You’ve also brought others here?”

Empyrean Divine Dream suddenly asked. With her sense, she had already discovered that Lin Ming was coming to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace long before he arrived, and also knew how many people he had brought.

“Yes, this junior was too abrupt. Because I offended Tian Mingzi, I…”

“Mm. Tian Mingzi has a Great World King cultivation and he is even soon to step into the half-step Empyrean realm. If he wishes to move against your friends or family then even the Ancient Phoenix Clan will not have the strength to protect them. You may gather all of those close to you. The men will enter Vast Universe Heavenly Palace and the women will be kept at my Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. I shall look after them, and, if they are of the temperament to walk the road of martial arts then I may also provide them with certain inheritances and resources.”

Empyrean Divine Dream readily responded. Lin Ming was overjoyed to hear this. “Thank you, Senior Divine Dream.”

In the time following this, Empyrean Divine Dream began to move. She gathered the materials of the Nine Star Heaven Pill for Lin Ming. Although these materials were extremely difficult for Tian Mingzi to find, Empyrean Divine Dream was able to collect all of them in a mere few months.

As for the Nine Star Heaven Pill, Lin Ming didn’t begin to refine it. He felt that depending on the Nine Star Heaven Pill alone to break into the boundary of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was still lacking; he would need to support it with the Demon Bead essence.

Currently, Lin Ming’s cultivation was far too weak. He wouldn’t be able to absorb much of the Demon Bead essence and would instead waste it.

Thus, the matter of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was placed to the side. Lin Ming spent most of his time deep in cultivation within Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

As for Empyrean Divine Dream, she took this time to launch a massive cleansing of the Divine Realm.

Her goal was clear – the spies of the saint race.

This was a monumentally massive workload and it also had to be carried out in secret. Otherwise, if the saint race spies were to find out and hide, it would be impossible to catch them all.

In normal times, this would be impossible to do; the Divine Realm was far too large and there weren't many saint race spies to begin with. To find them was harder than finding a needle in the endless oceans.

But this investigation was personally led by Divine Dream. She would suddenly appear in a land without any indication at all and instantly open the divine dream space, causing everyone to fall into her dreamland. Then, she would probe everyone's spiritual sea with the Divine Dream Law. Although it was impossible for Divine Dream to instantly search through all the memories of so many people, there were key differences in the spiritual sea of humans and saints, thus Divine Dream was able to search for this using her abilities.

The Great World King Holy Lands of all 3000 great worlds were the key targets of this investigation. In particular, those Great World Kings that had a high chance of becoming an Empyrean. This was to prevent a situation like that of Tian Mingzi from ever appearing again.

Only Empyrean Divine Dream was capable of such extraordinary methods, and this time, she was serious. Her actions were kept an absolute secret and as she searched through the various Holy Lands, all news from the inside was strictly blocked out. Not even ordinary World King Holy Lands were let off.

Such an investigation was an extremely burdensome matter; Empyrean Divine Dream used a full two years to accomplish this.

And, she had indeed found several spies of the saint race.

This result didn't bring her any happiness at all. Rather, it filled her heart with a cloud of gloomy darkness.

This situation had surpassed Divine Dream's expectations; the saint race had far more spies here than she had speculated. This also proved that the saint race already had an approximate understanding of humanity's forces.

On the other hand, the human race was completely oblivious to the saint race. Divine Dream didn't know how many True Divinity powerhouses the saint race possessed or even how many Empyreans they had. Even though she searched the souls of the saint race spies, she wasn't able to find any valuable information. From this point alone, it was clear that the saint race had already made preparations in advance for something like this to happen.

Once they fought, the fate of humanity was likely to be miserable!

But, nothing could be done about this. Even if a martial artist harmed their cultivation to pass through the God Lamenting Wall, it still wasn't that simple. A True Divinity and an Empyrean could do it, but they would have to lose a significant deal of their cultivation.

Divine Dream could also send human disciples into the universes of the saint race, but after the cultivations of these disciples were damaged, it would only be sending Divine Sea and Divine Transformation powerhouses into the saint race territories. The gains simply wouldn't be worth the losses.

The situation was becoming increasingly grim. Empyrean Divine Dream had a premonition that the great calamity wasn't too far away, and yet Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, and the others still hadn't grown up yet. Just how much time would the heavens give them?

Like this, another year passed.

Since Lin Ming returned to the Divine Realm, a total of three years had passed.

In the long history of the Divine Realm, a short three years was only an instant. Normally, this time period was too short for anything to happen.

However, these three years were doomed to be recorded in the annals of history…

………

On a sunny day, there was a land surrounded by mountains with a hazy origin energy filling the air.

In the Bright Luster Holy Lands, many young disciples had gathered onto a martial field, prepared for their long day of training.

The Bright Luster Holy Lands was established by the Bright Luster World King; they were also the number one influence of the Bright Luster Great World.

The Bright Luster Great World was a middle ranked great world, and the scale of the Bright Luster Holy Lands was comparable to the True Martial Holy Lands. They were a storied Holy Lands with a 5 million year history.

At this time, there were many intense battles on the martial field. Many Elders of the Bright Luster Holy Lands had appeared to direct the moves of the juniors, and even occasionally demonstrating skills to them. This was a sect filled with bustling liveliness and energetic peace.

At this time, the Chief Elder's mind stirred. He turned towards the horizon, a hint of doubt flashing across his face.

"What is it?"

Several other Elders near the Chief Elder asked him, thinking someone had arrived.

"Strange… I felt the Bright Luster Mystic Realm trembling just now… it's like something happened in the mystic realm?"

Many sects possessed their own exclusive mystic realm. These mystic realms often had many treasures and people could enter these mystic realms to seek the wealth within them. The only problem was that it cost a considerable amount of violet sun stones to open these mystic realms, and it was extremely difficult for any powerhouse at the Divine Transformation realm or above to pass through the barriers that separated the mystic realms from the Divine Realm. Thus, these divergent mystic realms had become a smelting trial for the young disciples of many sects.

The Bright Luster Mystic Realm was the largest mystic realm of the Bright Luster Great World. Compared to the second largest mystic realm of the Bright Luster Great World, it was at least 10 times larger.

The Bright Luster Mystic Realm had a vast and nearly limitless world within that contained countless rich resources. A significant reason for why the Bright Luster Holy Lands were able to rise to their current state was because of the Bright Luster Mystic Realm.

But on this day, the Bright Luster Mystic Realm was constantly shaking with tremendous changes occurring inside, as if it would collapse at any given moment.

This event alarmed even the Bright Luster World King.

"What is going on?"

The Bright Luster World King frowned. Even the Chief Elder was confused. He quickly called together the Divine Sea realm geniuses to enter and investigate the situation.

A massive number of violet sun crystals were inserted into the portal. And just in case, for backup, the Bright Luster World King even sent out a Divine Transformation realm core disciple. Because of this disciple, the activation cost of the transmission array increased by an entire nine sun jade.

A nine sun jade was worth a trillion violet sun stones. To a Great World King Holy Land, this was not a small amount of wealth. But, to spend so many violet sun stones on an investigation showed just how important the Bright Luster Mystic Realm was. The Bright Luster Holy Lands could not allow there to be any problems with it.

However, just as the transmission array began to revolve, a brilliant shine radiated outwards, causing the entire transmission array to explode!

A terrifying surge of energy exploded outwards. Many of the Divine Sea realm disciples present were grievously injured in the detonation, and there were even many low-ranking escort disciples that were directly killed.

“What is happening?!”

The Chief Elder was shocked. This transmission array had been used for the last several million years without incident. The construction cost was extremely high and it also went through inspections every decade. There shouldn’t be, and there had never been, a case of an explosion.

He hurriedly moved forwards to see just what had gone wrong. But then another terrifying explosion rang through the air. This time, even space was shattered by the energy. Even though the Chief Elder had reached the peak of the Holy Lord realm, he was still sent flying backwards and vomiting blood as he was struck by this explosion!

“Hahahaha! I’m here! I’m finally here!”

A reckless laughter echoed through the air. From the torn apart space, a group of figures flew out!

“3.6 billion years, we’ve waited for such a long time!”

“The shame of the past defeat will be washed away with your blood!”

“Divine Shifting Heavens, I will establish my immortal feats of wonder here! This is not the territory of my race!”

As strong roars and howls filled the air, countless people began gushing forth from the torn space. The disciples of the Bright Luster Holy Lands were completely dumbfounded!

As these voices fell onto the ears of the Bright Luster Holy Land disciples, they actually had no idea what these shadowy figures were saying; this was because they weren’t speaking the native language of the Divine Realm.

And, from these people’s auras, any single one of them was stronger than their Chief Disciple!

There were even those among them that could compare with the Bright Luster World King!

This terrifying mob of people could destroy their Bright Luster Holy Lands at any time!

And among these dark figures, a tall youth in white robes smiled as he drifted down from the sky like a spiritual god, looking down at the many Bright Luster Holy Land disciples underneath him.

This youth’s aura wasn’t formidable at all; he seemed similar to a human Divine Lord. But even so, the many World King and Holy Lord level powerhouses near him seemed to faintly respect and revere this youth.

This youth calmly lifted his right hand. In the palm of his right hand, a black bead slowly spun about.

As this youth appeared, all of the heaven and earth origin energy around him began to violently shake. The Laws of the heavens seemed to take this youth as their focal point.

As the Bright Luster World King saw this youth appear, his complexion completely changed.

Chapter 1393 – The Great Calamity Arrives

Chapter 1393 – The Great Calamity Arrives

…

…

…

The cultivation of this youth in front of him wasn't high, but as the Bright Luster World King looked at him, he could feel a sense of dread and fear in his heart, a sense of creeping unease about what could happen.

This terrifying possibility caused the Bright Luster World King's body to turn ice cold and his palms to sweat.

"Who are they?"

"How could this be? No one above the Divine Transformation realm can enter the Bright Luster Mystic Realm, so how could they have come out from there?"

The many disciples of the Bright Luster Holy Lands wondered this. None of them yet knew what was happening.

In the last three years, news of the upcoming great calamity had already spread throughout the Divine Realm. But, no one would first think of the great calamity when something dire happened, because in their subconscious, this event was something on the distant horizon. To them, this was something that might not occur for tens of thousands of years or even hundreds of thousands of years.

Moreover, even if the great calamity were to arrive, none of those present thought it would begin at their Bright Luster Holy Lands.

As the white-robed youth heard the disciples underneath him talking to themselves, he sneered, “Are all humans so stupid?”

What he spoke in was the language of the Divine Realm, and these words instantly caused the many people below him to grimace. However, when comparing their strength to that of this other party, they could only hold in their anger without any way of speaking back.

“Who are you? Why were you in our Bright Luster Mystic Realm!?”

Several Bright Luster Holy Lands disciples loudly shouted out.

The white-robed youth laughed. “You are all really so stupid. Even now, you still have no idea what is happening. Then, let me tell you who I am. I am the Good Fortune Saint Son, and the 3000 worlds of the Divine Realm will all be the territory of my kingdom in the future!”

“Good Fortune Saint Son?!”

The Bright Luster Holy Lands disciples barely had time to react when the white-robed youth suddenly raised his hand. A black bead flew out and began to rapidly spin in the air. “Now, with your lowly flesh and blood, become nourishment for the Grandmist Spirit Bead!”

“Grandmist Spirit Bead! It really is the Grandmist Spirit Bead! How is this possible, how could the Grandmist Spirit Bead be in their hands!?”

The Bright Luster World King had a vast amount of experience. Although he didn’t know about the relations between the Grandmist Spirit Bead and Empyrean Primordius, he had still heard of this object before. Now, he watched with his own eyes as the Grandmist Spirit Bead emitted a thick and inky black light, seeming to shroud the entire sky in dark chaos. This scene made the Bright Luster World King feel as if his own heart were being slowly devoured by darkness!

And feeling the terrifying aura that these figures were sending out, the Bright Luster World King could finally confirm that the saint race had arrived!

The great calamity that he thought would come in several hundred thousands of years had actually arrived so soon!

“Run away! All disciples scatter and flee!”

The Bright Luster World King roared out. At the same time he didn’t hesitate at all and turned around to tear apart the void. But as he thrust out his hand, he felt the power of space repel him, bouncing back his hand. The Grandmist Spirit Bead had sent out an energy field that locked down the neighboring vicinity of space, making it impossible for him to use the great void shift!

“A smart decision. But what a pity, it will not change your destiny.” The Good Fortune Saint Son cruelly smiled as the Grandmist Spirit Bead shot out.

The Bright Luster World King’s complexion paled. He launched his movement techniques to the limit, wanting to run out of this domain.

And at this time, he heard a cacophony of miserable cries behind him. The Grandmist Spirit Bead had aroused a crimson vortex of flesh and blood. A massive number of core disciples, all characters that the Bright Luster Holy Lands had spent a great price to raise, were sucked into this flesh and blood vortex, immediately turning into pure flesh and blood essence energy that was then absorbed by the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

This horrifying scene was macabre and disturbing. And, the one who had begun all of this, the white-robed youth, was actually watching all of this with a smile on his face. It was like he wasn’t cutting down lives of others but plucking flowers from the ground.

“Two High Masters, that Bright Luster World King will be left to the two of you. With my current cultivation, dealing with the likes of him is still a bit difficult, even if I have the Grandmist Spirit Bead.”

“Alright, haha!” Beside the white-robed youth, two gray-robed men nodded. One had a giant head and the other was as thin as a bamboo pole. Although their appearances were strange, they clearly had cultivations at the level of a Great World King. If they were placed in the Divine Realm, they would be characters that could rule a great world!

The two Great World Kings rushed towards the Bright Luster World King together.

The Grandmist Spirit Bead began to shine with an even more demonic and monstrous light…

……..

Within his chambers at Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming was closed up in training. During these three years he had slowly gathered more and more accumulations, growing increasingly close to the middle Divine Transformation realm.

Divine Sea, Divine Transformation, Divine Lord, every time one rose by a realm, the time required to advance multiplied by several times.

At this time, a clarion alarm sounded throughout Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, the grating sound even penetrating into every training chamber! The training chambers were isolated by enchantments to form their own separate space, so as to avoid martial artists being disturbed during their cultivation.

If there was an alarm that could sound throughout the training chambers, this was a warning alarm of the highest degree, one that interrupted all martial artists during their seclusion. Unless it was a sect-annihilating event, such an alarm would not be sounded.

“What is happening!?”

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed open from his cultivation, a surprised light shining within them. He couldn’t imagine just what events had happened for Divine Dream Heavenly Palace to sound such an alarm.

It couldn't be that the great calamity had already arrived, right?

Even Lin Ming also subconsciously believed that the great calamity wouldn't arrive for an extremely long time.

Compared to the entire history of the Divine Realm, 10,000 years was an extremely short period of time. Although the great calamity was said to be soon approaching, this 'soon approaching' would often need tens of thousands or even hundreds of thousands of years.

Lin Ming's figure flashed and he appeared at Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. As he appeared, he saw a great commotion of Elders and disciples rapidly heading towards the Assembly Hall.

Lin Ming's heart also flashed with a moment of anxiety. He followed the crowd towards the Assembly Hall.

Empyrean Divine Dream was already waiting at the Assembly Hall. She had a solemn and dignified look.

After the main figures arrived, Empyrean Divine Dream finally spoke. "The great calamity has arrived. The first disruption of the God Lamenting Wall was at the Bright Luster Holy Lands' divergent mystic realm. In one day, the Bright Luster Holy Lands was exterminated and the Bright Luster World King also perished in battle. In five days, the saint race thoroughly captured the entirety of Bright Luster Great World's central mainland. Countless martial artists have been slaughtered and innumerable lives have been wiped away!"

"Great calamity!? How could it have come so quickly!?"

"Only several years have passed!"

"We aren't prepared and yet the great calamity has come!"

Although the disciples of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace were elites amongst the elites, even they felt panicked upon hearing this news.

Lin Ming took a deep breath, tightening his fists as he grimaced.

Divergent mystic realms were originally transitionary spaces from the Divine Realm to other universes. If the God Lamenting Wall was torn apart somewhere, it would often be at these divergent mystic realms first.

“How could it be so fast… I’m only at the Divine Transformation realm. Even if I am invincible amongst those at my level, when facing the older generation, the most I can handle is a half-step Holy Lord. And in this great calamity, that level of strength isn’t even a tiny splash in the ocean!”

Thinking back to the great calamity of the Divine Realm 3.6 billion years ago, that was a struggle of Empyreans with even True Divinities taking action. Even the lowliest soldier had a Holy Lord level boundary.

A half-step Holy Lord could only be considered common cannon fodder.

In this great calamity, Lin Ming simply didn’t have any use or role to play. Let alone tempering himself in this great calamity, he only could watch as humanity fought with the saints.

This caused Lin Ming to feel very unwilling.

“Damnit, how could it be like this? If I had another several hundred years, then as long as I could reach the Holy Lord realm or a half-step Holy Lord cultivation, at least I wouldn’t be as useless and powerless as I am now!”

Lin Ming didn’t want his destiny to be decided by others. Now, if he wanted to rapidly enhance his strength, the only method was to enter a time enchantment and train. However, in a time enchantment, the Laws were distorted. If one couldn’t properly perceive the Laws, then that would make cultivating there far less effective.

Empyrean Divine Dream didn’t have any expression. It was only when the hurried discussion began to quiet down that she spoke again, “For this expedition of the saint race, the greatest powerhouse they have sent out so far is a half-step Empyrean. Even so, that is more than enough to annihilate a middle level world without an Empyrean present. In particular, in this war, there has been a person sent out called the Good Fortune Saint Son. His Saint Lord cultivation is equal to our human Divine Lord realm. This person possesses a mysterious bead that might possibly be the Grandmist Spirit Bead. Although he only has a Saint Lord level cultivation, he can still fight with a World King master! His level of talent is simply unimaginable!”

As Empyrean Divine Dream spoke, her eyes fell onto Lin Ming.

Lin Ming’s mind shook – Grandmist Spirit Bead!

When Empyrean Primordius lost the Grandmist Spirit Bead, did it fall into the hands of this Good Fortune Saint Son?

In that moment, Lin Ming’s mood was extremely complex. He remembered the final words that Empyrean Primordius had left behind in Primordius Heavenly Palace –

‘To lose the Grandmist Spirit Bead is the greatest mistake of my life. If there is ever a day when it is possible, you must retake the Grandmist Spirit Bead and return it to the human race, and seek a paradise pure lands for the orphaned god race.’

Lin Ming clenched his fists together. He had to retake the Grandmist Spirit Bead one day. However, he was simply far too weak right now.

Chapter 1394 – Negotiations of the Saint Race

Chapter 1394 – Negotiations of the Saint Race

…

…

…

Without a care for how unprepared humanity was, or how much confidence they lacked, the fact was that the great calamity had arrived early. The Bright Luster Great World became a battlefield. Whether it was the human race or the saint race, both of them seemed to subconsciously agree to not send out Empyrean powerhouses to join the battle. The highest cultivation amongst them was only at the Holy Lord realm.

This was now a conflict that hadn't reached the stage of all-out war. The saint race only put forth probing hands, and humanity seemed to be too scared, lacking the courage to launch a full-scale assault. They were well aware that once Empyreans joined the fray, that was when the ultimate showdown would begin. But now, humanity didn't even know how many True Divinity powerhouses the saints possessed, so how could they possibly fight them?

In this battle, Divine Lord and Holy Lord powerhouses made up the main force while World Kings and half-step Empyreans also participated. In such a battlefield it was impossible for growing geniuses like Lin Ming to go and fight, otherwise if there was an accident, the losses to humanity would be immeasurable.

The fight continued for half a month. By now, the name of a saint powerhouse had spread throughout humanity; he was the Good Fortune Saint Son!

This person possessed a Saint Lord realm cultivation, a realm equal to a Divine Lord cultivation. But, with this cultivation, he was actually able to defeat an ordinary World King in combat. He even had the ability to survive the assault of a Great World King.

He held a black demon bead in his hand, and all martial artists below the Holy Lord realm, no matter how many there were, would be instantly twisted to shreds by this object. Their bodies would turn into pure flesh and blood essence that was then absorbed by the black demon bead.

Such a terrifying character had everyone panicking in fright!

A Divine Lord that could fight a World King? Just what sort of concept was that? A Divine Lord and a World King were separated by the entire Holy Lord realm. This was an even greater difference than Divine Transformation to a Holy Lord!

The human supreme elders wanted to immediately strike out and kill this Good Fortune Saint Son. However, during their battles upon the Bright Luster Great World, they found that the Good Fortune Saint Son had powerhouses protecting him from behind. And, these mysterious saint race powerhouses actually didn't take action. Rather, they only watched the Saint Son fight. This sort of feeling was as if the saints were using this war to sharpen the Good Fortune Saint Son.

The characters that were supporting him were far too strong, thus even the Empyreans that wanted to kill him grew fearful and retreated.

This result was all reported to Empyrean Divine Dream.

"Damn, just what do the saints want?"

The saint race Empyreans were holding still and the human Empyreans didn't dare to rashly move. After all, the ones who feared this war were the humans. Humanity had less Empyrean powerhouses than the saints did, and there was no need to mention True Divinity powerhouses; the saint race likely had more than one True Divinity master while humanity had zero!

“They waited 3.6 billion years and now that the barrier between our universes has torn apart, they still haven’t come at us in full force. Rather, they’ve only been sending half-step Empyrean powerhouses. Just what sort of tricks are they trying to play?”

Empyrean Vast Universe paced back and forth. In the face of humanity’s life or death crisis, even he had lost all his former calm.

“Perhaps… they are not yet prepared, or it could be that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign is still healing from his wounds.” Empyrean Divine Dream quietly said from beside Empyrean Vast universe.

Empyrean Vast Universe’s thoughts stirred. “It really might be that he hasn’t yet recovered. 100,000 years ago, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign violated the Laws of the 33 Layered Heavens to tear apart the God Lamenting Wall in order to send saint Empyrean powerhouses to kill Primordius. Because of his actions, he received the backlash of the 33 Layered Heavens’ Great Dao Laws. These are wounds that originate from the Great Dao and should take tens of thousands of years to heal. Any method of restoring himself shouldn’t work, including even entering a space-time enchantment to speed up the recovery of his wounds. Currently, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign should still have several tens of thousands of years before he can do anything. Before then, his strength should be equal to an Empyrean’s.

“However, even if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign hasn’t recovered, if the numerous Empyreans of the saint race were to attack together, it would be nearly impossible for us to resist. Moreover, without a doubt, the saint race has more than one True Divinity, so how come they aren’t doing anything?

“It might be impossible, but could the saint race be wanting to use this war to temper that Good Fortune Saint Son?”

Empyrean Vast Universe couldn’t understand what was happening and even Empyrean Divine Dream was deep in silent thought. This was a war that concerned the survival of their race, and to cause this mess just to send out their Saint Son to adventure was far too childish and ridiculous an action. The saint race definitely wouldn't do something so stupid.

The Good Fortune Saint Son should only be taking the opportunity to temper himself; there must be some other reason that the saints hadn't yet launched an all-out war.

It was just that they didn't know what this reason was.

The war entered a stalemate. In a situation where Empyreans on both sides didn't take action, the Good Fortune Saint Son had far too much limelight. His momentum was nearly unstoppable, and although his strength was inferior to a Great World King's, the amount of death and destruction he caused actually far outstripped that of a Great World King!

It was all because of the appearance of the Grandmist Spirit Bead. With this bead, all powerhouses in a great area could be immediately killed; this was something that a Great World King powerhouse couldn't accomplish.

Those that were killed by the Good Fortune Saint Son were at least at the Divine Lord realm. Any one of his victims, if placed in a Holy Land level influence, could at least be a Palace Elder or a Branch Elder.

The saint race also had the intention of helping the Good Fortune Saint Son accumulate military merits. In the most exaggerated performance, he brought an army of a thousand peak Holy Lords to attack the eastern region of the Bright Luster Great World, destroying dozens of star regions and rampaging over a hundred trillion miles, killing countless human martial artists.

If this were to continue, then all the powerhouses of the Bright Luster Great World would be killed off!

Many human martial artists were nearly frightened to death by the mere mention of the Good Fortune Son; they found it hard to eat and sleep in peace.

And besides those of the Bright Luster Great World, many other martial artists were scared that it would be their turn after the Bright Luster Great World was destroyed.

"Why haven't our Empyreans taken action yet? How come they are allowing that Good Fortune Saint Son to be so rampant?" Some martial artists asked, puzzled.

"Don't be so naïve. The saints possess more Empyreans than we do. If true Empyreans join the battle, our forces will still be suppressed. In the end, we cannot fight the saint race. We don't have as many Empyreans as they do and our geniuses are also crushed by their geniuses."

Of humanity's budding young geniuses, there was only Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, Frost Dream, and a mere several others. In this war, because humanity's geniuses had cultivations that were too low, they didn't step on the wider battlefield so the Good Fortune Saint Son had ended up outshining them.

"Why would you help praise your enemies to ruin the momentum and prestige of your own people? Our geniuses have yet to grow and Lin Ming, Frost Dream, and Xiao Moxian are all geniuses that humanity rarely sees even in a hundred million years. I don't believe that Lin Ming will be any worse than the Good Fortune Saint Son once he grows!"

There were many martial artists that were fans of Lin Ming and Divine Dream; they weren't willing to listen to others say that the geniuses of the saint race far surpassed them.

"I also hope that what you say is true, but just think about it. The Good Fortune Saint Son only has a late Saint Lord realm cultivation but he can already defeat an ordinary World King. And how about Frost Dream and Lin Ming? During the past First Martial Meeting of the Divine Realm, they were both middle and late Divine Sea martial artists and comparable to weak Divine Lords. Now, compare the difference between the Divine Sea and Divine Lord realms and the difference between the Divine Lord and World King realms. Just think about which one is bigger, and there shouldn't be a need for me to say anything further. I also heard that the Good Fortune Saint Son possesses the Grandmist Spirit Bead, that is the number one top treasure of the 33 Layered Heavens, and what do Lin Ming and Frost Dream have? I've even heard others say that this Good Fortune Saint Son will become a True Divinity in the future!"

The continuous victories of the saint race left humanity feeling pressed breathless, gasping for air. And if the appearance of the Good Fortune Saint Son was any indication of the saint race's future, that meant they had more powerhouses than clouds in the skies!

An extreme genius combined together with the number one treasure of the universe; it was hard to imagine just what achievements the Good Fortune Saint Son would have in the future.

How could humanity contend with a new True Divinity? By relying on Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, Frost Dream, and the others?

Even their fans felt a bit afraid for them.

The war continued onwards, and the human martial artists of the Bright Luster Great World fell into an increasingly perilous state. As the Bright Luster Great World neared complete annihilation, many Empyreans found it hard to stay still. Losing tens or hundreds of thousands of Divine Lords to the saint race wasn't a fatal number to the massive Divine Realm, but tiny numbers quickly snowballed. Once the saint race slaughtered their way forth with unstoppable momentum and began nibbling away at the mid-level martial artists of humanity, then humanity would lose the foundation to train Empyreans from. Once that happened, as long as many Empyreans died in battle then humanity's future would fall into utter ruins.

"We must fight! An all-out war! I have no idea just what game the saint race is playing, but I know that if this continues then humanity will lose all their confidence. If we are to engage in total war at that time, then it's possible we will be defeated."

An Empyrean seriously said at a meeting of Empyreans.

The defeats at the Bright Luster Great World resulted in not just the loss of some human Divine Lords and Holy Lords. There were many star regions and continents, and most importantly, there was the damage that was caused to humanity's confidence.

Once the belief of inevitable loss was carved into their bones, humanity would then fall into a quagmire of chaos and unruliness, slowing moving towards ruin.

At Mount Potala, over a hundred human Empyreans had gathered together.

A storm was brewing. Even though the time was not yet ripe, everyone knew that a great war was inevitable.

"That's right, we cannot sit aside and do nothing any longer!"

"You and I are of the same race. For humanity's sake, why would we fear war!?"

Humanity was a selfish and greedy race; this was a characteristic of all intelligent life. In a situation without external threats, they would often fall into infighting.

But, if truly faced with a life or death moment, then this situation would actually stimulate the bravery and camaraderie of humans.

Once a race was fully united as one, that was a truly terrifying force.

Over 100 Empyreans gathered together. Over the past few days, even God Beasts had appeared in the skies above Mount Potala.

These terrifying God Beasts spread their roars for millions of miles, causing the minds of those who heard them to tremble!

Lin Ming also followed Empyrean Divine Dream to Mount Potala.

This scene of Empyreans and God Beasts was similar to that of 3.6 billion years ago.

Lin Ming took a deep breath, “Has the great battle arrived like this? This is too fast… it’s like I’ve been living a dream.”

He never imagined that even though he had been training day and night in preparation for the great calamity, that when the great calamity actually arrived, there would actually be nothing he could do!

Lin Ming clenched his fists together. He was unwilling to accept this!

Rumble rumble rumble!

In the skies, a divine light surged. A titanic, primal-looking stone platform tore through space, appearing in the skies above Mount Potala. This was the announcement platform, where the roles of many Empyreans would be assigned!

3.6 billion years ago, Empyrean Divine Seal had stood upon the Divine Seal Altar and commanded the masses, assigning everyone their duties. Now, this present scene was also similar. The only difference was that no one was able to reach the same heights that Empyrean Divine Seal had reached.

And even an extreme character like Empyrean Divine Seal had perished in the great calamity. Now, humanity didn’t have someone like Empyrean Divine Seal on their side, so how could they possibly emerge victorious?

Lin Ming felt his mind fill with a strong sense of powerlessness.

In fact, this sort of powerlessness also appeared in the hearts of many other humans. This was a war with an extremely low chance of winning.

However, at this time, another unexpected turning point occurred.

The saint race had requested negotiations, and the place where negotiations would be held was Mount Potala, where over 100 Empyreans had gathered!

Chapter 1395 – Fears of the Saint Race

Chapter 1395 – Fears of the Saint Race

…

…

…

“The saints wish to negotiate with us?”

As this news was spread out, many Empyreans were stunned.

A hundred Empyreans stood atop the 100,000 foot high announcement platform. The terrifying pressure of their combined auras caused even the celestial bodies in the skies to tremble.

They had originally held onto a determination to engage in war without fear of death, but because of the sudden proposal of negotiations from the saint race, all of these thoughts disappointed.

If possible, humanity didn’t wish to start a war of death.

However… why would the saints want to start negotiations?

If they planned on fighting until the extermination of humanity then there was no need for negotiations; they would simply start their all-out slaughter. If there were negotiations, then there would likely be talks of peace.

Just what did the saints fear?

From the start, the saint race didn't begin an all-out war. Rather, they sent out World King, Holy Lord, and Holy Lord level powerhouses. The highest captain of the forces they sent out so far had only possessed a half-step Empyrean cultivation.

The Empyreans had only been used so far to protect the Good Fortune Saint Son and had been still the entire time. As for True Divinity powerhouses, they hadn't been seen at all. It was clear from this that the saints didn't wish to start an all-out battle with humanity as soon as they arrived.

Thus, the Empyreans wanted to know just why the saints weren't willing to begin an all-out war. If they knew this point and were able to find out the bottom line of the saint race then they would be able to obtain the greatest benefits during the negotiations.

The deadline for the negotiations was in one month.

For this period of time, the saints and humanity fell into a strange and short period of peace.

On the Bright Luster Great World, the armies of the saint race no longer spread outwards. Humanity also retreated back into their safe territories, not coming into conflict with the saints.

The hundred plus Empyreans were still gathered at Mount Potala, staying up the entire day to discuss countermeasures. However, they weren't able to come up with anything conclusive.

If there had to be a reason for all of this, then it was that humanity didn't know anything about the saints.

"Humph! The saint race is just trying to play tricks! In truth, they likely aren't much stronger than our human race, and even though they have a True Divinity powerhouse, that True Divinity powerhouse already overdrew his essence energy in the war 100,000 years ago. Now, they are probably only at the ordinary Empyrean level. As for the others of the saint race, if they are compared to us, then if we are both engaged in a true life or death duel war, it’s unknown just which side will ultimately perish, or which side will be able to obtain any advantages! Stealing our resources is important, but if they wanted to steal our resources at the cost of their lives, then even those saint Empyreans will have to think it over!”

The one who spoke was a large and robust bald fellow who wore a shimmering red robe. His title was Fire God and he was also an Empyrean powerhouse.

If someone were to dare title themselves Fire God, then that meant this person’s attainments in the Fire Laws stood at the peak of the Divine Realm!

This person’s temperament was the same as the Laws he cultivated, fierce and violent, just like fire. He stood in the offensive camp of Empyreans, and didn’t agree with the other Empyreans who decided to not do anything. He advocated directly engaging in a mass slaughter and struggling to the end with the saints.

The speculations of Fire God were what many other Empyreans of the Divine Realm were thinking; it also seemed to be the most reasonable explanation so far.

Perhaps… the saint race wasn’t as terrifying as they had imagined.

If the saints and humanity were to wage war, they might not necessarily lose!

However, in three days, these suspicions were all refuted.

After three days, the entire Bright Luster Great World surged with a divine light, with energy tyrannically gushing forth!

The tear in the God Lamenting Wall began to expand. At first, this tear was only in the Bright Luster Mystic Realm, but soon it expanded to cover the entire sky!

Looking at the starry skies of the Bright Luster Great World from afar, one could see terrifying surging currents, wild and chaotic. The entire sky was swallowed up by a massive black hole. This black hole slowly spun around, seeming to lead to another world.

At the other end of this wormhole was the world of the saint race!

From within this swirling black hole, terrifying life forms roared out. These roars didn't need any medium to spread through the starry heavens, passing out to the trillions of celestial bodies outside! Moreover, even if one was extremely far away, these sounds still caused one's heart to shake!

After one day, a massive claw stretched out from that swirling black hole, ripping apart the endless skies like a piece of ragged cloth! From the darkness, immense phantoms gushed forth. Their figures were fierce and vicious and they grasped heavy swords or carried spears. Each one emitted a horrifying pressure, making it difficult to breathe!

On the fifth day, the loud roars peaked to the limit, as if a thousand God Beasts were roaring out together. Their roars were mixed in with the crashing sound of metal shackles, dreadful and titanic. The sounds spread throughout the entire central mainland of the Bright Luster Great World, causing the void to collapse.

Even the human martial artists near the Bright Luster Great World felt their bodies shake, their blood energy surging upwards. Those with weaker cultivations even vomited blood, extremely wounded!

As the human Empyreans heard this sound, all of them were silent. Not even that raging Fire God uttered a single word.

Another Empyrean meeting was urgently held. The atmosphere of this meeting was one of dread and fearfulness.

That terrifying aura, that terrifying sound, those were absolutely not something that could be randomly sent out. In these days, there were absolutely at least a hundred Empyrean level existences that had entered the Bright Luster Great World. As for that final sound, it was possible that it was sent out from a True Divinity life form!

It wasn't necessarily a saint race supreme elder, but there was a chance it could be a True Divinity level God Beast.

True Divinity...

Before the great calamity arrived, when the saint race was spoken of, although it was already acknowledged that the saints possessed a True Divinity powerhouse, this was an extremely distant matter even to Empyreans.

But now, as they felt the reality of a True Divinity's pressure, all of them felt a deep desolate fear.

Fire God and many other Empyreans had strange complexions, all of them unable to speak.

Divine Dream sighed. "The saint race's strength cannot be doubted any longer. They absolutely exist above humanity. They have more universes under their control, and in terms of resources or sheer numbers, humanity cannot compare with them. Before this, I also wished to find the reason for why the saint race feared engaging in all-out war with humanity. Seven days ago, I had the corpse of a saint race World King shipped back from the front lines. I searched his soul using the Divine Dream Laws in hopes that I could find out from that corpse's memories just what the saint race was fearing, but in the end I failed to find anything at all. Now, all of you use your own methods to give it a try!"

In the war on the Bright Luster Great World battlefield, even the saint race had World King powerhouses perishing.

However, as Empyrean Divine Dream used a soul searching technique to probe the saint World King's spiritual sea, she discovered that all memories related to the saint race's internal workings were sealed away, completely impossible to read.

The person who sealed these memories was extremely strong, and compared to Divine Dream, they had a far more familiar understanding of the saint race's spiritual sea and soul characteristics. As for Divine Dream, she was familiar with the human soul.

Empyrean Divine Dream waved her hand and a corpse flew out from her spatial ring. This was the saint race World King.

Ever since the war between humanity and the saints erupted, Empyrean Divine Dream hadn't taken a single moment of rest. To an Empyrean, taking several years without a moment of rest wouldn't influence them at all, but it would still place psychological pressure on them. Even Empyrean Divine Dream would feel somewhat mentally exhausted from all the work she had been doing.

"Divine Dream, if even you cannot search the memories, then perhaps we won't be much better…" Near Empyrean Divine Dream, a gray-clothed old man spoke. In terms of the soul, this old man was also extremely skilled.

Although he said that, he still walked over to the saint World King corpse to give it a try.

Even though the situation was impossible, he still had to give it a try. Perhaps he really might be able to unravel the seal on the memories.

Facing the saint race World King's corpse, the gray-clothed old man raised his hands and instantly formed hundreds of seals. Seven black skulls flew into the World King's corpse, galloping around his body.

After a long time, the gray-clothed old man suddenly shook and he stepped back from the World King's corpse. He shook his head over and over again, saying, "No… it's not possible. Even I cannot find out anything. All I can confirm is that there are memories sealed within him and not erased."

If memories were erased, they would definitely cause damage to the soul. To the saint race, even a World King powerhouse was considered a decent figure, so their memories naturally wouldn't be erased so easily.

As the gray-clothed old man failed, many others tried their own unique soul searching techniques, using their complete understandings of the soul in their attempts. Even so, they were far inferior to Divine Dream and the gray-clothed old man.

Some people hoped there would be an infinitesimally small chance that they would somehow succeed. But without a doubt, all of them were completely defeated in their attempts.

Finally, this meeting ended without any result.

The deadline given by the saint race for negotiations drew increasingly near. There were even some people who suspected that these negotiations were simply a façade laid down by the saint race, a trap to capture all the human Empyreans in a single attempt.

There were also some people who believed that the saint race was using the negotiation deadline as an excuse to delay for time in order to slowly gather their forces. Once the month passed, they would not negotiate and instead launch an all-out offensive.

Everyone had different opinions.

Lin Ming was also staying at Mount Potala. He was silent as he listened to all these discussions.

He had heard that Empyrean Divine Dream brought back a World King's corpse from the frontlines and had wanted to search their soul using the soul searching technique. But, in the end, she had failed.

"Even Empyrean Divine Dream was defeated. Do you think we have a chance of succeeding?"

Lin Ming asked Mo Eversnow.

"We can try… whether it is the spiritual sea of saints or humans, in front of the Magic Cube, a divine soul instrument that surpasses the highest Laws of the universe, all souls are the same. It is extremely important to the negotiations that we find out just why the saints are too afraid to commit to all-out war."

Chapter 1396– Reading the Memories

Chapter 1396– Reading the Memories

…

…

…

Mount Potala had three large clusters of monasteries. The first two groups were managed by the two resident Empyrean powerhouses of Mount Potala. One was the monasteries of calming prayers and the other was the monasteries of combat.

As for the last cluster of monasteries, that was called Genesis Mountain. It was the residency area of Mount Potala’s layman disciples as well as visitors. There were 360,000 residences that were divided into 720 central monasteries.

Such a massive group of monasteries could actually be contained within a single spatial ring. This was why the idea of Spatial Genesis first originated from Mount Potala.

Empyrean Divine Dream currently resided deep within Genesis Mountain, living at one of the four great Heavenly King Palaces.

All of the young Buddhist priests and monks had left this massive palace. Now the entire palace had been replaced with disciples of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, all of them women.

Empyrean Divine Dream had just finished bathing and changing her clothes. As her rosy red feet walked through the main hall, every step she took caused ripples to spread out from her. In truth, if one looked carefully, they could see that her feet weren’t even touching the ground. Even the so-called vision of a fairy riding the waves couldn’t compare with her at all.

“Honorable Master, Lin Ming desires an audience with you!”

A white-clothed female disciple said as she bowed.

“Lin Ming?” Empyrean Divine Dream’s thoughts stirred. “Let him enter.”

Whether it was Divine Dream Heavenly Palace or Genesis Mountain, Empyrean Divine Dream’s inner palace was a land that only women could pass through. However, Lin Ming was the only exception.

After obtaining the reply, Lin Ming stepped into the Heavenly King Palace, as he stepped into the corridors he could feel a rich and pure aura of combat rush up towards him.

He looked all around himself. Whether it was the walls or the ground, everything was paved in neatly-ordered red stone bricks. These bricks were engraved with faint marks; these were the Buddhist runes.

Buddhist runes were a type of the Great Dao seals. They formed a self-contained system and were extremely mysterious.

And these stone bricks were not formed from ordinary methods. Rather, they were timeless god stones that were fired and tempered in demonic blood.

Buddhists were compassionate, but that didn’t mean they wouldn’t take lives. In fact, the path of Buddhism also had specialized war Buddhas. In their faith, they had Asura Gods that determined the life and death of others. If someone of the demonic path could not be converted, then those of the Buddhist path would directly eliminate them.

All of the stone bricks beneath Lin Ming’s feet and around him were soaked in demonic blood.

The stone bricks fired in this demonic blood could gather and exude murderous and violent auras. If someone with a shaky mentality were to step here, illusions would crowd their mind as they walked and they would eventually fall into illusion. But, if someone with a firm heart and mind were to walk through these halls, they could actually temper their thoughts. If they were a disciple of Buddhism, they could even use this to train their Buddhist nature.

Calm! Forbearance! Zen!

These were all aspects of a Buddhist disciple's Buddhist nature.

"What a magnificent Mount Potala. Even walking through these corridors can be used for training. If a lonely ghost were to wander here, their soul would be flushed and scattered by the vivid blood energy here. This sort of inside heritage is truly terrifying!"

Lin Ming already knew that Mount Potala had a history of 3.6 billion years, and had even experienced the last great calamity. However, only by entering the true depths of Mount Potala today did he deeply understand just how unfathomable their background was.

If these floor tiles were placed in a World King Holy Land, although they wouldn't be priceless treasures, the cost to create them would still be mind-boggling. Even so, Mount Potala only used them to pave the floor and walls. This was because they had accumulated all of these paved stones over the course of 3.6 billion years.

As Lin Ming arrived at Empyrean Divine Dream's inner palace, he respectfully bowed. "Disciple Lin Ming greets Senior Divine Dream."

"What is it?" Divine Dream looked towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming humbly said, "This disciple wishes to borrow the corpse of the saint race World King."

Lin Ming directly explained his purpose for coming. He had a relatively high degree of trust towards Empyrean Divine Dream. He even thought that if the true final battle were to erupt and humanity was about to engage in its final great war, he would give the Magic Cube to Empyrean Divine Dream.

Although the Magic Cube was a precious treasure to him, the survival of the human race was far more important. Eggs could not hatch without a nest. If humanity were destroyed then all that would be left was the Divine Transformation realm Lin Ming. He would lose the foothold of his foundation, his family and wives and everyone he knew would be completely exterminated.

“Oh?” Divine Dream looked towards Lin Ming with a somewhat incredulous expression. Then, after a brief period of silence, without saying a word she waved her hand and sent the World King’s corpse flying towards Lin Ming. “Take it!”

Empyrean Divine Dream’s decisiveness surprised Lin Ming. He didn’t get to use the excuse he had prepared earlier.

“Thank you Senior.”

Empyrean Divine Dream pointed a finger towards a side temple. “Whatever it is you wish to do, you may close up there to do it.”

With that, Empyrean Divine Dream casually turned and left, leaving this area of the palace to Lin Ming.

As he entered, he found that there was a wondrous array formation within, seeming as if it formed a separate small world. There wouldn’t be any worry that he would be spied on by someone.

“Senior Divine Dream has the style of a true leader.” Mo Eversnow said from within the Magic Cube space, “The average person would have asked you why you wanted that corpse and what you were planning to do with it. After all, it’s unreasonable to ask for a corpse if you can’t discover anything from it.

“But, Divine Dream didn’t ask you any questions at all because she trusted you and knew that if you wanted that corpse, there was definitely a reason for it. With your cultivation, you shouldn’t be able to accomplish anything with that corpse, so if you had the confidence to probe it, that must mean that you have something that far surpasses your own boundary.

In other words, one of your greatest secrets. Thus, Empyrean Divine Dream simply didn't ask you and directly gave you the corpse, even giving you such a place to close up in!"

"It seems so." Lin Ming nodded. If someone wanted to take his secret as their own, that person could only be called a fierce and ambitious character. But, someone like Empyrean Divine Dream had a mind and viewpoint as wide as the universe. Only such a person could lead humanity through these times and unite all influences together. To have such a leader was truly the good luck of humanity.

Lin Ming felt a deep sense of admiration towards Empyrean Divine Dream. Whether it was the act of sundering her own soul to reincarnate an avatar in order to break through to True Divinity, or whether it was leading humanity to overcome this great calamity, everything she did required tremendous courage and daring!

Lin Ming used his divine sense to hold the corpse of the saint World King in the air. Mo Eversnow also appeared from the Magic Cube space. She floated in front of Lin Ming, her long hair waving about as a divine light flashed between her eyebrows.

Activating the Magic Cube and reading the memories of a World King required them to undo the seals on this powerhouse's memories. This wasn't an easy task at all and required the joint help of Mo Eversnow.

Lin Ming's connection with the Magic Cube was becoming increasingly close, but he was still far from being able to stimulate the Magic Cube by himself.

The appearance of the Good Fortune Saint Son had caused a sense of impending doom and crisis to swell up within Lin Ming.

The Good Fortune Saint Son only had a Saint Lord boundary and yet he could already activate the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

And for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign to allow the Good Fortune Saint Son to use the Grandmist Spirit Bead, this proved that the saints held a deep sense of trust towards him.

Even though they were both considered juniors of their races, the Good Fortune Saint Son was far ahead of Lin Ming.

How could Lin Ming admit defeat just like this? If he wanted to overcome this great calamity, then what he first needed to do was… obtain complete control of the Magic Cube!

With a deep breath, the grandmist battle spirit shot out from between Lin Ming's eyebrows.

The dark gold grandmist battle spirit had already taken on a faintly blue hue; this meant that he was approaching the level of a blue soul battle spirit.

With the support of the grandmist battle spirit, the Magic Cube within Lin Ming's body began to tremble.

Mo Eversnow's expression was also dignified. She formed seals over and over with her hands and flew into Lin Ming's inner world, helping stabilize his control. The current Mo Eversnow was growing at an incomprehensible rate; it was hard to speculate just where her limit was.

At this time, from deep within Lin Ming's dantian, a black light shined out. Lin Ming could feel that the Magic Cube within his body was moving.

The runes that patterned the surface of the Magic Cube seemed to come to life. All sorts of glittering seals floated out, flying into the surrounding space.

These seals didn't have any strength poured into them, but as they danced in the air they actually caused the void to tremble. As long as Lin Ming poured enough strength into them, they could crush apart all space!

"Go!"

Lin Ming thrust his hands forwards. The many seals flew into the corpse of the saint World King, submerging into his spiritual sea.

In that instant, Lin Ming felt his mind shake. Countless chaotic memories howled towards him. His body shook and his face paled.

“Lin Ming…” Mo Eversnow said, somewhat worried. With Lin Ming’s current level of strength, it was risky to directly read the memories of a World King even with her help. If he suffered an accident when rushing into the tumultuous flow of memories, then he would lose himself and would be unable to separate his memories from the memories of this other person.

This was a completely different scenario from reading Tian Mingzi’s memories. The memories held within Tian Mingzi’s avatar were only that of the tiniest wisp of his soul. And now, these were the complete memories of a World King.

In the raging river of memories, Lin Ming seemed to live through the life of that saint World King.

In the chaos, he saw many scenes, all of them incomparably lifelike as if he had experienced all of this himself. In that instant, his eyes dimmed and he nearly lost himself, thinking he was that saint World King.

Mo Eversnow’s heart clenched. At this time, the grandmist battle spirit sparkled from between Lin Ming’s eyebrows. That nearly-faded grandmist battle spirit blazed out like a lit beacon, showing the path for Lin Ming.

Immediately, Lin Ming’s eyes were restored to pure brightness.

Mo Eversnow let out a long breath of relief. In terms of will, the average person truly couldn’t compare with Lin Ming.

Lin Ming silently looked through these memories. From birth to adulthood, he watched the growth of the saint World King.

This was millions of times more informative than the information gleaned from the fuzzy soul search technique; it was almost the same as Lin Ming reliving the life of this saint World King.

This process was extremely slow; it required a great deal of energy and a very long period of time. Even though Lin Ming's will was formidable and he had studied the Divine Dream Law, such a great use of energy still caused his lips to pale and his face to appear like white paper.

Mo Eversnow silently placed her hand on the hollow of Lin Ming's back, supporting him.

"I've found it, it's here."

Lin Ming discovered the many sealed memories of the saint World King. With a loud roar, the grandmist battle spirit was stimulated to the limit. The Magic Cube seals hurtled towards them, followed by a loud ringing explosion.

Lin Ming's body shook and blood began to flow out from his nose.

The saint World King's corpse was suddenly flung away. Lin Ming collapsed to the floor, heaving in great gulps of air.

"How was it?" Mo Eversnow hurriedly asked.

"I've found it! I discovered a great deal of information about the saint race and even discovered just what they are fearing!

"Before the God Lamenting Wall dividing our world and the saint race's collapsed, the God Lamenting Wall dividing the worlds of the saints and the spiritas had already long disintegrated. Currently, the saint race and the soul race are like water and fire; they can break out into all-out war at any time. The attention of the saint race's True Divinity powerhouses has been diverted towards the soul race, and they don't even dare to casually sacrifice Empyreans to fight us. Not just that, but the saint race’s current state is far more complex than what we had imagined.”

Chapter 1397- Arrival of the Saint Race

Chapter 1397- Arrival of the Saint Race

…

…

…

“The current state of the saints is more complex than we thought?” Mo Eversnow looked towards Lin Ming, “What is their situation like?”

Lin Ming said, “The saint race isn’t a single monolithic entity. While they do have more than one True Divinity, these True Divinities are not as united as we first assumed. Humanity only has the single Divine Realm universe, but the saint race has many universes under their control, and their True Divinities are spread throughout them. And, between these universes, there is also the God Lamenting Wall that divides them. Moreover, it seems that because of the situation of the Grandmist Spirit Bead, the True Divinities are unable to come to an agreement. Now, they are only barely managing to cobble together an alliance because of the external threat of the soul race. Prior to this, it was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign who wished to invade the Divine Realm alone and take sole possession of it, to steal away the most resources and become the absolute Saint Sovereign of the saints!

“The other Saint Sovereigns definitely aren’t willing to see this happen, and now that the spiritas have diverted their attention, when that is coupled with all the disputes of interests amongst them, this has caused the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s long-laid plans to come to a complete halt.”

Lin Ming had only probed the memories of a saint World King. Although there were many secrets that he didn’t know, Lin Ming gained an approximate situation of the saint race.

“So that’s the reason. No wonder the saints have only sent out half-step Empyreans to oversee the war. That is because once they send out their own Empyreans, our Empyreans will also fight. At that time, it will be a great battle of Empyreans. If Empyreans die, that will be a considerable loss to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. Not just that, but the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign has yet to fully recover his strength from the war 100,000 years ago, thus why the current situation is so complex.” Mo Eversnow had already completely discerned the situation of the saints.

The saint race that invaded the Divine Realm was not the entirety of the saint race, but only the neighboring saint race universe that belonged to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

Even without the threat of the spiritas, if the other saint race universes wished to invade the Divine Realm, their armies would have to pass through the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s universe. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign likely wouldn’t be happy to let this happen. To him, the Divine Realm was a piece of delicious fat meat that was already near his mouth, but he simply didn’t have the chance to eat it right now.

Lin Ming nodded. “Senior-apprentice Sister should be right. We have at least a few more tens of thousands of years before the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign has fully restored himself. In truth, until then, we should be safe. As for this war, it should be restricted to the level of Holy Lords and World Kings; it won’t expand beyond that. The saint race is even more afraid of this situation than we are, so what’s the point of us fearing them!?”

“Yes! We don’t need to fear them at all!”

Mo Eversnow let out a light sigh of relief. This was the best news that she had heard yet. A few tens of thousands of years was more than enough time for Lin Ming to grow!

At that time, in a true slaughter war, Lin Ming would have the ability to hold his ground!

After understanding all of this, Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow were in a much better mood. But with a sudden thought, Lin Ming frowned, “The matter is now clear, but how do we pass this on? The things that we know are too detailed; it would be bad to repeat it in full.”

“Indeed.” Mo Eversnow nodded. “But there is no need to be too detailed. I know that Empyrean Divine Dream will be able to discern most of the situation herself and she will also believe your words.”

“That’s the only way we can do this.” As Lin Ming was speaking, the entire Mount Potala began to shake. The palace around him rocked as if an earthquake was passing through.

Lin Ming was shocked; this sort of earthquake was no minor matter. Just what sort of place was Mount Potala? This was a sect with two Empyreans, the longest lived sect of humanity, with a history of 3.6 billion years, so how could it be shaken by an earthquake? Let alone an earthquake, even if an Empyrean attacked this land with all their strength it would still be impossible for them to shake Mount Potala, because Mount Potala’s protective array formations were the strongest out of all the sects in the Divine Realm. Even Divine Dream Heavenly Palace’s protections might not be able to compare with theirs. This was the difference in historical legacy, one that stretched back for billions of years. The array formations here had been constantly improved and reinforced over time, and now the degree of firmness of the runes that held them together could be imagined!

Could it be… that the saints had arrived?

As this thought flashed through Lin Ming’s mind, at this time, many disciples of Mount Potala were terrified of what was happening. There were even many Empyreans that were feeling nervous.

The saint race had truly arrived. As Lin Ming had secluded himself to read the complete memories of the saint race World King, that was similar to experiencing the entire life of the saint World King. It was something that took more than just a few days, and now, the deadline for negotiations between humanity and the saints had finally arrived. The saint race powerhouses had now gathered here!

On the distant horizon, 160-170 black-robed figures had gathered. Of these figures, some were men, some were women, some were old and young, some were tall and short, some were as thick and sturdy as mountains, and some were as thin and slender as willow trees.

This hundred some people didn't seem like too much, but they actually covered the skies and the sun, leaving a darkness that enveloped the earth. The incomparably terrifying aura they sent out nearly caused space to collapse!

"How horrifying!"

"There must be half-step True Divinities in their ranks!"

"The saint race is too terrifying. This is only the tip of their forces; their True Divinity powerhouses have yet to arrive!"

Nobody doubted the high number of saint race Empyreans. Even Lin Ming didn't doubt that the saint race was far stronger than humanity!

3.6 billion years ago, during the era of Empyrean Divine Seal, humanity had been far more formidable than they were now. But, that fight had exhausted all of humanity, and in order to defend the final universe of the human race, Empyrean Divine Seal had perished!

"That is the saint race!"

At Genesis Mountain, within the four great Heavenly Palaces, Fire God stood high, wearing a long red robe as he looked up at the skies. His eyebrows were tightly wrinkled together. He knew that the reason Mount Potala shook was not because the saints had attacked, but because the 160-170 saint Empyreans, including the half-step True Divinities, had gathered their aura to cause such an impact to Mount Potala!

Such a dreadful aura caused one's courage to waver. Fire God couldn't help but acknowledge that if he were to battle with any of these saint Empyreans, he likely wouldn't be able to defeat over 40% of them!

In this sort of situation, even though Fire God was an extremely aggressive and war-oriented character with a vigorous and staunch personality, he was still left short of breath.

On the negotiating table, what would be compared was not fancy words or tricky terms, but simply… strength!

Without strength, no matter how loquacious your words were, everything would be useless!

“The True Divinities have yet to appear and yet their Empyreans are so strong!”

“That was clearly a demonstration of their power, but that demonstration was extremely effective. Let alone the ordinary disciples that aren’t even at the Divine Lord realm, even some Empyreans are feeling weak at heart.”

Empyrean Vast Universe shook his head. If even he lacked the confidence to face the saints, then the feelings of the others could be imagined.

“It’s because they don’t have any scruples at all that they came directly to Mount Potala to start negotiations. This is the supreme stronghold of humanity, based in the heart of humanity, and yet they aren’t afraid that we will ambush them and cut them down here. This is because they have confidence in their absolute strength!”

“That’s right, they simply don’t fear fighting us here at all. Even if there is a disadvantage to fighting us here, they can still make up for that with pure numbers. Moreover, if we are to truly fight, then their True Divinity powerhouses will catch up. Once they come, we will lose without a doubt…”

Although humanity hadn’t completely given up all hopes for this negotiation, there was still a heavy stone atop their hearts that pressed down on them, making them find it hard to stand tall.

At this time, from amongst the many saint Empyreans, a tall youth in white robes walked forwards, a smile on his face. He held a pitch black bead that slowly revolved above his hand. This youth was the Good Fortune Saint Son.

Even in front of many Empyreans, his momentum wasn't lacking at all, making others feel like he was a strategist with absolute plans of victory. This meant that his status was no lower than that of an Empyrean!

"The saint race's Holy Son is already seen on equal footing with an Empyrean?"

"It's not strange. The Good Fortune Saint Son already had the ability to protect himself in front of a Great World King and is no worse than one. And above a Great World King is the realm of an Empyrean. Not just that, but when that is combined with the Good Fortune Saint Son's talent, he should be treated on par with an Empyrean.

"That is too exaggerated! Our geniuses are still only at the Divine Transformation realm and their strength is equivalent to a late Divine Lord or half-step Holy Lord. That is far short of an Empyrean..."

"Our high level figures cannot compare with theirs and not even our young geniuses can compare with theirs. Just what is there to discuss?"

The many disciples gathered at Mount Potala all began discussing amongst themselves. Although they hoped that humanity would be able to give a strong showing and reveal a superior momentum, the truth was placed right in front of them.

The Good Fortune Saint Son held the Grandmist Spirit Bead in his hand, floating in the skies like a god. As he looked at the faces of those below him and saw panic, anxiety, nervousness, and many other emotions, he jeeringly smiled.

"Cowardly humans, your only worth is as my slaves. Tremble before me!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son sneered and looked towards Mount Potala's four great Heavenly Palaces; that was the area of Divine Dream's residence. Divine Dream hadn't appeared yet, but the Good Fortune Saint Son could still feel her aura, as deep as the sea and as steady as the earth.

“What a valiant and magnificent woman!” By all rights, when the saints had arrived, the human powerhouses should have come out to take a look, and in truth, many Empyreans had done so.

But Empyrean Divine Dream hadn’t actually appeared. She still sat quietly in her palace. This was the dignity and confidence of a leader!

This steadfastness was worthy of praise.

The Good Fortune Saint Son smiled. “Even now her aura remains stable; this isn’t something that can be faked. The Saint Sovereign was right. This Divine Dream is quite a character, but only this type of woman has the best flavor.”

The Good Fortune Saint Son traced his chin, a dark and devilish smile crossing his face. If these words fell into the ears of humanity then that would be the ultimate disrespect. He actually had thoughts of taking advantage of Empyrean Divine Dream!

Beside the Good Fortune Saint Son, a vigorous woman with a slim figure slowly stepped forwards, intimately pulling on his arms. She happily said, “Your Highness Holy Son, what are you thinking? Are you planning on including Empyrean Divine Dream in your harem?”

The woman who spoke didn’t have fair and pale skin, but healthy brown skin the color of wheat. When coupled with her curvy figure and the dagger tied to her thigh, her entire appearance was like a sexy female leopard, filled with an explosive strength. Her cultivation was only at the Divine Transformation realm. For her to stand here at the Divine Transformation realm, that was definitely because of the Good Fortune Saint Son.

“Divine Dream… hehe, because of the conflict between our races, wanting to conquer her completely is impossible. But… I’ll be satisfied with conquering just her body. It shouldn’t be too long before the Saint Sovereign fully recovers, and once I become an Empyrean I will lead the saint race to lay waste to the entire Divine Realm! I will place a slave seal in Divine Dream’s body and have her serve me for the rest of her life, hahahaha!”

Chapter 1398 – The Goal of the Saint Race

Chapter 1398 – The Goal of the Saint Race

…

…

…

As the woman heard the Good Fortune Saint Son's arrogant words, not only was she not angry, but she instead giggled, "Hehehe, Your Highness Holy Son is quite greedy, but if you truly wish to lay waste to the Divine Realm, with your current strength, that isn't difficult at all. Just the four great Protectors that the Saint Sovereign sent down are all half-step True Divinities. Moreover, in our saint race's Saint Convocation Heaven, there are many other hidden powerhouses whose strength has reached unfathomable boundaries. If you can invite them to emerge from their hidden realms then exterminating humanity won't be hard at all. "

The Good Fortune Saint Son shook his head, "A centipede is still hard to kill even when severed. Although humanity's golden days have passed, they still aren't easy to deal with. Just that single Empyrean Divine Dream has already come infinitely close to reaching True Divinity, and even amongst half-step True Divinity powerhouses, there are still divisions of weak and strong. Empyrean Divine Dream is an existence that stands exactly at the pinnacle of that level. Even I don't know just what degree that woman's strength has reached. Also, there are still Mount Potala's two Empyreans who have a similarly unfathomable strength. Great Limitless Buddha has already been long famous for a hundred million years and is the oldest, most qualified divine monk of Mount Potala. There is also that War Buddha, Emperor Shakya. Although he is only a rising talent, his strength is actually more terrifying than his elder's. I know that his reputation as a War Buddha isn't clear to all, but it is indeed dreadful. His self-created transcendent divine might is called the 'Three Thousands Great

Worlds', where he was able to divide his primordial soul a thousand times, three times. In other words, he divided himself into a billion incarnations that reincarnated in a billion different worlds, all of them enlightening themselves through a billion lives and allowing him to experience a billion samsaras. Then, his avatars ascended to the Divine Realm, slowly fusing back together into his true self. He, too, is someone that is extremely close to the realm of True Divinity, and his strength has reached incomprehensible degrees.

"Although we could exterminate humanity, we would have to pay a great price to do so, and right now, this price is not something we can afford. Alright, it's time to go down!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son flew down. The 100 plus Empyreans that were behind him were only there to increase his momentum and influence here. As for the one negotiating, that was only the Good Fortune Saint Son by himself.

....

There was a dark grand hall that was over a thousand feet tall and wide. In this grand hall was a stone table crafted from timeless god stones, in a square shape of over 200 feet wide and long. The ones standing on both sides were staring at each other in sharp contention.

The Good Fortune Saint Son sat at one end of the stone table, an iron fan in his hands. A confident and lazy smile graced his face.

Behind him stood the vigorous woman in the tight and revealing flexible armor as well as the many other Empyreans of the saint race.

And on the other side of this table were the Empyreans of humanity. Divine Dream and three others stood in the seats of honor.

Of these three other people, two of them wore cassocks and held monk staves in their hands. Their bald foreheads showed 12 rings. The last person was a red-robed old man. He silently sat at the negotiating table, his eyes closed in silence, giving off an aloof and distant feeling.

The first two were naturally the two Empyreans of Mount Potala. As for the last person, that was one of the great hidden Empyreans – Skyrend Godlord.

The name of Skyrend Godlord had been renowned for 80 million years already. In the past, he had established the Skyrend God Sect in the Divine Realm. For a period of time, besides Mount Potala, there was no other influence that was able to compare with him.

But afterwards, because of some unknown matter, Skyrend Godlord went deep into seclusion and no one was able to find any traces of him.

As for the Skyrend God Sect, they exhausted their destiny with the departure of Skyrend Godlord. Although they still managed to maintain themselves with the hidden protection of Skyrend Godlord, they gradually declined.

Now that the great calamity of humanity had arrived, he had also emerged from his seclusion.

“Now, let us begin!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son spoke with a commanding pose, his voice filled with a brash arrogance as if he had already placed himself on par with the human Empyreans present.

“Hehe, does the saint race have no one else? They sent out a smelly hairless little baby boy like you to manage negotiations that concern the future of two races?”

A cold voice echoed out. The one who spoke was Fire God, a human Empyrean. He spoke in a mocking tone, unable to bear the rampant manner of the Good Fortune Saint Son.

“Hahaha!” The Good Fortune Saint Son chuckled. “Since when was it your turn to speak? A lower-middle Empyrean like yourself will be stranded at the level you are forever, so what qualifications do you have to question me? In several hundred years when I become a World King, my strength will surpass yours. And after a thousand years, when I become an Empyrean, killing you will be no different from crushing an ant beneath my feet!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son's words caused the human Empyreans to frown. This Good Fortune Saint Son was truly too arrogant.

Ordinarily, one needed a million years of cultivating to reach the Empyrean realm. But, this sort of person mostly relied on piling up their resources and accumulating their cultivation over the years; their strength likely wasn't too outstanding.

There was another type of person who naturally possessed an extreme degree of talent and was able to cultivate to the Empyrean realm in a single breath with unstoppable momentum. For instance, War Buddha Emperor Shakya and Skyrend Godlord were two such characters. They had only used tens of thousands of years to become an Empyrean. For this type of character, there was a chance for them to become a True Divinity in the future.

But, even Emperor Shakya fell far short of this Good Fortune Saint Son. Listening to his meaning, he was saying that he could reach the Empyrean realm in just a thousand some years!

Moreover, once he became an Empyrean, he would be able to kill all other Empyreans on his level as if he were dicing vegetables.

"A thousand years from now you will crush me like an ant? In I, Huo Yuetian's life, I have never heard such a ridiculous joke!" Fire God laughed. His character was fierce and wild, and he couldn't endure others throwing sand in his face.

The Good Fortune Saint Son sneered once more, "Then you and I can form an oath now. 500 years from now we will have a life or death battle. If you are too scared to come, then all your meridians will break down and your cultivation will be completely wasted. And if you go against your oath, then you will suffer a backlash from your heart demons that will cause your soul to perish!"

"Why wouldn't I make an oath? Since when have I ever feared anything in my life?" Fire God stood up, standing in sharp opposition to the Good Fortune Saint Son. But at this time, Empyrean Divine Dream flung apart her sleeves and an invisible strength pressed down on him, forcing him back down.

Fire God's eyes widened. He looked at Empyrean Divine Dream, "Why are you stopping me?"

"That is enough. We are here to negotiate, not to make some gambling fight."

Divine Dream's voice was faint, but her words contained an irresistible feeling. This was the majesty and dignity of Divine Dream. With her powerful strength and her deep aura, even the wild Fire God wasn't able to disobey her.

Fire God grit his teeth and firmly sat back down.

"If Divine Dream is stopping me then that is because in her eyes, am I really not a match for that Good Fortune Saint Son 500 years from now?" Fire God's heart chilled. He didn't think that his judgment was superior to Divine Dream's. If that was true, then this Good Fortune Saint Son was truly too terrifying. Perhaps within 5000 years, the Good Fortune Saint Son would grow to a point where he could lead the armies of the saints to trample over the entire Divine Realm. There wouldn't even be a need for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign to do anything!

Fire God looked at the Good Fortune Saint Son. All he saw was a smug expression on his face. Then, the Saint Son's eyes turned to Empyrean Divine Dream and didn't look at him again.

"I've heard that humanity's Empyrean Divine Dream is the most mysterious woman of the human race as well as the most beautiful woman. I have always held a deep sense of admiration towards Empyrean Divine Dream, and now that I see you today, you are truly a woman whose beauty is without rival. Even the countless women back in my harem cannot compare with you. In my life, if I can take a woman as wonderful as Empyrean Divine Dream as my wife then I will truly be able to live a life without regrets, hahaha!"

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke, his eyes were glued onto Empyrean Divine Dream. His words were filled with an overly sexual teasing meaning, clearly aimed at her.

Empyrean Divine Dream seemed to not hear such disrespectful actions; her expression remained as calm as before. But at this time, in the Good Fortune Saint Son's eyes, Empyrean Divine Dream's figure suddenly blurred. A cone-shaped soul attack thrust straight towards the Good Fortune Saint Son's spiritual sea!

The Good Fortune Saint Son's figure trembled and a barrier of light appeared in front of him, blocking this sword of divine sense. His body shook and the chair of timeless god stone beneath him exploded into stone powder.

"Mm!?"

On the saint race's side, many Empyreans immediately stood up. Empyrean Divine Dream's illusion attack just now had caused the Good Fortune Saint Son to suffer serious losses. Luckily, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had placed a divine protective talisman on his body that had blocked this divine sense attack. Even so, the stone chair beneath him had been completely destroyed.

"I'm fine!" The Good Fortune Saint Son stood up and the many saint Empyreans sat back down. It was like everything that happened in the blink of an eye just now had nothing to do with him at all.

He looked at Divine Dream and lasciviously smiled, "Empyrean Divine Dream's strength is truly astonishing. Since you don't wish for me to sit, then I shall stand."

Empyrean Divine Dream had a placid expression. She didn't expect that her strike would have been able to kill the Good Fortune Saint Son; she only wanted him to suffer a loss and ruin his momentum and prestige. On the negotiating table, taking the initiative was extremely important. Even so, she didn't think that the protective charm placed on his body would be so powerful. It had forcibly shattered her sword of divine sense and the Good

Fortune Saint Son had ended up without a single injury. This caused Empyrean Divine Dream to dread the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign even more.

"Cut the nonsense and let's go straight into what we're here for!" At this time, beside Empyrean Divine Dream, the red-robed Skyrend Godlord suddenly spoke out loud. His voice was thick and growling but filled with a piercing power, causing one's eardrums to tingle with numbness.

The Good Fortune Saint Son turned towards Skyrend Godlord. He slowly said, "You are Skyrend Godlord? Not bad. Good, since these are negotiations, I won't delay any further. Let us delve straight into the matter!"

When the Good Fortune Saint Son referred to Skyrend Godlord by his name, this caused all the other human Empyreans to feel a chill crawl down their backs. Skyrend Godlord had disappeared into seclusion for the last several tens of millions of years, but even so, the saint race had information on him. Although the Good Fortune Saint Son didn't recognize the appearance of Skyrend Godlord, he was able to correctly deduce who he was from the fact he was able to sit at the seat of honor amongst all the human powerhouses as well as his aura and the Laws he cultivated.

The saint race's understanding towards human Empyreans was far deeper than they had thought!

Know yourself, know your enemy, and be invincible. Not only were the saints stronger than humanity but the information they possessed was also far greater than humanity's!

With this, how could the human Empyreans not worry?

"Let me get straight to the point. I will state this clearly for all of you. In that great war 3.6 billion years ago, countless lives perished and death and destruction was spread throughout the universe. Although my saint race is powerful, we do not wish for the annihilation of countless lives during every samsara of the great calamity. Thus, this time, my saint race wishes to establish a new order. We want to use this new order to stop the great calamities from occurring ever again. My saint race wishes to work together with humanity and establish a paradise in the Divine Shifting Heavens where saints and humans can coexist in peace and harmony. We will be able to share martial arts inheritances and resources with each other, helping our races reach new heights and develop the Divine Realm together. What do you think?”

The Good Fortune Saint Son looked at Skyrend Godlord, an amused smile on his face.

Chapter 1399 – Conditions

Chapter 1399 – Conditions

…

…

…

"Coexist together in the Divine Shifting Heavens?" Skyrend Godlord's complexion darkened.

Upon first hearing this speech, many people couldn't discern just what snake oil the saint race was trying to sell.

"You are saying that you want us to allow you saints to directly enter the Divine Realm? You want to establish sects in the Divine Realm, assist in developing the resources here, and even study our inheritances? Is that what you are saying?"

Skyrend Godlord tapped his fingers on the table, leisurely speaking. But with every word he spoke, his eyes became increasingly cold.

"Hehe, that is exactly what I am saying. Of course, humanity may also enter our saint race's territory and we will also support you humans the best that we can. You may even study our inheritances."

The Good Fortune Saint Son smiled, but as these words fell into Skyrend Godlord's ears, Skyrend Godlord sneered.

This agreement sounded fair. But, in other words, it was to allow the saint race to directly enter the deepest territories of humanity and wantonly loot the resources of the Divine Realm without moving a single soldier!

As for allowing humans to enter the world of saints, the sects of the saint race were originally stronger than those of humanity. Moreover, humans knew nothing about the saints. If they recklessly entered the saint race's universe, then they might simply die upon entry. Just what use was there to think about sharing resources?

The saint race could send a massive amount of their people into the Divine Realm, trillions at a time. But, it was impossible for humanity to do the same.

This was the difference in strength between the races.

"What do you think? In terms of inheritances, we can lend each other a helping hand. In your most recent Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, the first place Frost Dream, second place Lin Ming, and even the extraordinarily talented Hang Chi and Xiao Moxian can come to our saint race and study our inheritances. The great gates of my Good Fortune Saint Palace can be opened to them whenever they please!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son put forth another condition.

Skyrend Godlord sneered once more. "You want our geniuses to enter your saint race to gain experience? I'm afraid that is the same as tossing meat buns to a dog; there won't be any return for them at all! Do you really think we are fools!?"

"Haha, Mister Godlord, it seems you lack boldness. Who cares how splendid those young elites are? The peace between our two races is something that my saint race is putting forth all efforts to make possible and to prevent the great calamity from happening ever again. Why would we ruin what we worked so hard for just to strangle a few young geniuses? It seems that you are looking down at our saint race far too much. Moreover, if we can coexist in the Divine Shifting Heavens, our saint race will also be sending the champions of our First Martial Meeting to enter your human race. They will challenge the different masters of humanity and ask for advice from your teachers!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son spoke with a strong sense of righteousness.

At this time, Empyrean Divine Dream suddenly said, “Since that’s the case, how about Good Fortune Saint Son coming alone to my Divine Dream Heavenly Palace as a guest?”

Empyrean Divine Dream’s words contained ruthless needles within them. The Good Fortune Saint Son laughed, “I’ve heard that within Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, there are beautiful women all over. If there truly is an invitation then I cannot ask for anything more!”

“Is that so? It seems Saint Son has some interest. Then, we can go right after these negotiations end.” Divine Dream smiled, immediately cutting off the playful game the Good Fortune Saint Son was weaving.

The Good Fortune Saint Son’s smile suddenly stiffened. He hadn’t thought that Divine Dream would be so aggressive and menacing with her intentions.

At this time, beside the Good Fortune Saint Son, an old man’s lips moved as he passed a true essence sound transmission to him. As the Good Fortune Saint Son heard this, he grinned once more.

At this time, Empyrean Divine Dream and Skyrend Godlord had a foreboding feeling. Their complexions turned cold.

Bang!

With a terrifying ringing explosion, the entirety of Mount Potala began to shake. A massive black hand tore through space, forcefully smashing down at Mount Potala!

At the same time, outside Mount Potala, the glowing barriers of a massive array formation appeared, blocking this giant hand.

Ka ka ka ka!

The great hand fiercely collided with this array formation, causing a horrifying storm of energy to be whipped up. Then, this great hand unexpectedly tore apart a large chunk of the array formation. Four shadowy figures entered through this hole. Of these four figures, three were men and one was a woman. They wore black cloaks and armor with an astonishing aura exuding from their bodies.

“Eh? This array formation can still close itself up? This Mount Potala is quite good.” One of the men among the four people spoke. He had fair skin and beautifully delicate features, appearing strangely feminine. Behind him, Mount Potala’s array formation that had been ripped apart by the black hand began to slowly knit itself back together. However, there was still a black energy left behind that hindered the regenerative process of the array formation, causing it to restore much slower than it should.

“Hehe, it is a sect that managed to continue on from the last great calamity, so it must have some ability. But, if the four of us join together, completely eliminating it isn’t a problem at all.”

Beside the feminine man, a fat-looking middle-aged man spoke. His two pitch black eyes shined in the darkness, sparkling like diamonds.

These four people were the four great Protectors that the Saint Sovereign had sent out. They were also the four strongest subordinates of the saint race’s Saint Sovereign.

These four Protectors had come to the negotiation table, but not only did they not send any greetings, they even tore apart the defenses here in order to enter. The purpose of this act was clearly to demonstrate their own strength and make a grand show of it.

Bang!

The dimension of the meeting hall was ripped apart. The four people emerged from thin air, floating high in the skies above the negotiation table.

They all possessed half-step True Divinity cultivations!

In the moment that these four half-step True Divinities appeared, although they were just casually standing there, a faint array diagram appeared beneath their feet. This array diagram had countless runes flowing on its surface. The extremely oppressive strength left all the human Empyreans with extremely dark and ugly expressions.

Skyrend Godlord's complexion was dignified. The sudden appearance of these four people had caused a serious tilt in the balance of power between the two negotiating sides. If they were to fight here at Mount Potala, then even with the help of Mount Potala's array formations, Skyrend Godlord didn't believe for a second that they would win. If they were to ultimately fight here, then humanity would suffer serious losses!

It had to be known that the human Empyreans gathered at Mount Potala were already half the strength of humanity. In facing the strength that the saints had revealed so far, they were far from being their match. Moreover, it was possible that the saints still had True Divinity powerhouses that had yet to appear!

The disparity between humanity and the saints was simply far too great.

Skyrend Godlord and Empyrean Divine Dream glanced at each other, a glint of dread in each other's eyes.

And beside them, Great Limitless Buddha had also laid down his Buddha beads. He grasped his monk staff, his entire body revolving with energy.

"Four honored Saint Envoys, you have finally caught up, haha!" The Good Fortune Saint Son briefly bowed towards the four new arrivals. The four Protectors that the Saint Sovereign sent here had an extremely high status within the saint race. Moreover, these four people could also form battle arrays and multiply their strength in combat.

The four Protectors nodded back, not speaking. The Good Fortune Saint Son faintly smiled. "Now, let us return to the matter about coexisting together in the Divine Shifting Heavens!"

Strength was the greatest influence on the negotiation table. Without strength, just what was there to discuss? Now, even a hot-tempered and wild Empyrean like Fire God was afraid to tear apart all semblance of peace. If they were to truly fight, then it was possible that humanity would face total annihilation!

But, if they made a compromise and allowed the saints to enter the Divine Realm, they would have to endure the silent invasion of the saints. They would have to watch helplessly on as the saints plundered their resources. Even so, at the very least, humanity would still maintain their foundation and their younger generation would be able to develop.

To steel their heart for revenge and endure for a thousand years. This would give Divine Dream enough time to become a True Divinity, and Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, and the others would also be able to grow up. Once that time came, humanity would still have hope.

Throughout history, there were many human martial artists that had to suffer periods of shame and insults. But afterwards, they actually succeeded in becoming rulers of their own domain. Only by being able to endure the things that could not be endured could one make the impossible possible.

“What do you want to discuss?” Skyrend Godlord spoke once more. These words were the same as agreeing to the Good Fortune Saint Son’s conditions.

Empyrean Divine Dream’s eyebrows twitched slightly, but she didn’t object.

“Haha, this is the right way, huh?” The Good Fortune Saint Son was ecstatic. In the face of absolute strength, how could humanity not roll over on their backs?

In the future, the saint race would only need to occupy the Divine Realm and establish a foundation here. Then, they could plunder the resources of the Divine Realm without end and invest everything into their war with the spiritas.

After the soul race was defeated, the saint race could then turn their eyes back to humanity. At that time, dealing with them would be as simple as drinking a cup of tea.

Eventually, the saint race would become the true masters of all existence!

The Good Fortune Saint Son slowly closed his hand. “My saint race wishes to sign a non-aggression treaty with humanity. These are the conditions. First, humanity must cede the Bright Luster Great World to us, as well as all other affiliated worlds, hidden worlds, mystic realms, star domains, and so forth. All of that will belong to my saint race. Human sects must leave the Bright Luster Great World. If they wish to stay, they may, but they must obey the orders of my saint race unconditionally.

“Second, the Divine Realm’s 3000 great worlds, innumerable dimensional realms and smaller worlds, can be entered at will by my saint race’s influences. They will exchange inheritances with human influences and together they can develop resources.”

“Third, humanity must pay my saint race 10,000 nine sun jades for damages caused to us. This can also be paid in an equal value of materials or spirit treasures!”

As soon as the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke, he put forth such exaggerated conditions. After hearing this, Skyrend Godlord nearly flipped over the table!

Divine Dream’s complexion turned even chillier. If it weren’t for the four Protectors of the saint race being present, there was the chance that war would immediately have broken out right here, right now.

“How about it? Do you disagree?”

The Good Fortune Saint Son lazily smiled, appearing completely confident. At his side, the four Protectors of the Saint Sovereign had runes flowing about them, emitting a deep killing intent that put a great pressure on everyone present.

If the four Protectors were to deploy their battle array together, the strength they could display on the battlefield would be unimaginable!

Skyrend Godlord was silent and even Divine Dream didn’t speak out. Great Limitless Buddha held his Buddha beads in hand, meditating on heart sutras.

The atmosphere was extremely grim.

In the current situation, signing a treaty of peace could be called the best outcome for humanity. But, to give away too many interests and resources was something that no one dared to sign away so easily. Once they signed it, they would have to bear the great weight of being the scapegoat for all of humanity. This would be an event recorded down in history, and would become the greatest stain upon the lives of these powerhouses.

Divine Dream, Skyrend Godlord, Great Limitless Buddha, Emperor Shakya – all four of them would be listed as the traitors of mankind.

After a thousand years, if humanity could win then everything would be fine. But, if humanity were to lose, they would become the greatest sinners of all time.

But, if they didn't sign this treaty now, it was possible that humanity would perish at this moment.

The hundred plus Empyreans had all been pushed to the edge of the cliff.

To sign was to become a sinner, but not signing wasn't possible either.

At this time, the flame of a sound transmitting talisman suddenly lit up. Great Limtless Buddha's eyebrows slightly rose.

"What is it?" Skyrend Godlord asked.

"Someone wishes to enter the meeting hall…" Great Limitless Buddha replied with a true essence sound transmission.

"Who?"

"Lin Ming."

"Lin Ming?" Skyrend Godlord frowned. He looked at Divine Dream, but Divine Dream also didn't know what was happening. This was a meeting between Empyreans, so why would a junior like Lin Ming want to come here?

“What is he here for? Is he trying to add to the chaos? If any conflict really does occur, then with his cultivation he will be instantly destroyed!”

Skyrend Godlord unhappily said.

Chapter 1400 – I Refuse

Chapter 1400 – I Refuse

…

…

…

Even in Mount Potala, the strength of the humans was weaker than those of the saints here. If a battle broke out, there had to be someone that would protect Lin Ming to ensure his safety. But if that happened it would naturally affect their overall combat strength.

Skyrend Godlord waved his hands, implying the meaning that he didn't want to allow Lin Ming here to add chaos to the mix.

But at this time, Empyrean Divine Dream said, "Grandmaster Limitless, allow Lin Ming to enter…"

"Mm?" Skyrend Godlord's eyebrows shot up, surprised.

Empyrean Divine Dream responded, "If there really is some conflict then I will protect him."

Empyrean Divine Dream's status was higher than that of Skyrend Godlord, Great Limitless Buddha, or Emperor Shakya; she could even be called the leader of all humanity.

If Divine Dream spoke, Skyrend Godlord naturally wouldn't refuse her request. He frowned and said with a true essence sound transmission, "Divine Dream, if you allow that junior Lin Ming to come, just what can he accomplish? Do you think that his words are so beautiful and eloquent that the saint race will draw back from the Divine Realm?"

Skyrend Godlord's words were humorless. In these negotiations, strength was the only bargaining chip one could bring to the table. Everything else was simply empty nothings.

Empyrean Divine Dream said, "If Lin Ming wishes to enter then he naturally has something important to say. I have a deep understanding of his character."

In Empyrean Divine Dream's heart, Lin Ming was clear on just what his priorities were. He wouldn't do something that was out of order.

"Good. Since that's the case, I will bring him in." Great Limitless Buddha waggled his fingers and the space around him shook. A gate of space and time split the void.

Wearing blue robes, Lin Ming stepped out from this space-time gate.

For a time, everyone's eyes focused on Lin Ming. The pressure of a hundred plus Empyreans from the saint race was extremely terrifying, but luckily the pressure of the human Empyreans was there to balance it out, otherwise it would have been difficult for Lin Ming to withstand.

Lin Ming walked into the meeting hall and took a deep breath. He instantly noticed the Good Fortune Saint Son.

The Good Fortune Saint Son was tall and sturdy with a handsome face. He grasped an iron fan in his hands. Between his eyebrows, there was a golden mark that resembled a shining sword.

"So that's the Good Fortune Saint Son!"

Lin Ming had a deep impression of this person. 100,000 years ago, Empyrean Primordius had encountered a crisis because of the Demon Bead. In the end, the Demon Bead had been wrested from his grasp. That had been brought about by the actions of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. But afterwards, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had actually passed the Demon Bead to the Good Fortune Saint Son for him to use.

However, this wasn't giving it to him, but merely allowing him to use it. Lin Ming guessed that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wished to take advantage of this great war between humanity and the saints to have the Demon Bead absorb a titanic amount of flesh and blood essence energy. After all, although Empyrean Primordius had lost the Demon Bead 100,000 years ago, he had still left a complete 100 million years' worth of accumulated essence energy from the Demon Bead to Lin Ming.

So, it seemed that the Demon Bead would be in the hands of the Good Fortune Saint Son for quite some time, and retaking the Demon Bead was also Empyrean Primordius' dying wish. Lin Ming had accepted the kindness of Empyrean Primordius, thus he had to accomplish his final wish. Moreover, he needed the Demon Bead to help complete his body transformation technique.

"The Good Fortune Saint Son really is an extreme character. Currently, I am far from being able to compare with him."

As Lin Ming was thinking this, an old and harsh voice sounded out in his ears, "Boy, stand behind me and do not interrupt if you have nothing important to say. Otherwise, if there is a problem here then we really might not be able to protect you!"

The one speaking was Skyrend Godlord. Although his tone was a bit grating and unpleasant, there was no mistaking the concern in his voice. Lin Ming faintly smiled and thanked him in return.

The Good Fortune Saint Son looked at Lin Ming, surprise shining in his eyes. He had heard Lin Ming's name but had never seen a picture of him before, thus he wasn't able to recognize him. But, just from looking at Lin Ming's cultivation and age, he could tell that he was likely a young genius from an Empyrean Holy Land. This type of character definitely didn't have the qualifications to participate in the negotiations between two races.

"Who is that boy?"

“Your Highness Saint Son, that boy is one of the champions of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. His name is Lin Ming and his talent is extremely high. He fought Frost Dream to a draw and placed second in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting.”

“Oh? So he’s Lin Ming!” After the Good Fortune Saint Son learned of Lin Ming’s identity, he began to look him up and down. Although he had a deep understanding of humanity, he only knew their information and not their appearance. Moreover, the Good Fortune Saint Son mostly paid attention to the human Empyreans; they were the goal which the Good Fortune Saint Son had to defeat and cut down.

Lin Ming was simply far too young.

The Good Fortune Saint Son possessed an extreme level of talent and he also had a great destiny upon his body since his birth. He originated from a True Divinity level influence, and now, with his late Saint Lord level cultivation, he was actually able to contend with a Great World King. It wouldn’t be long before he stepped into the Holy Lord realm. At that time, not even a Great World King would be his match.

In this situation, someone who only had an early Divine Transformation cultivation didn’t have the qualifications to make the Good Fortune Saint Son feel any fear at all. This was because he had the confidence that his rate of growth far surpassed that of anyone else here. Only he could surpass all others; there was no one that could surpass him.

“A dual body and energy cultivator who has opened the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates. His cultivation is at the early Divine Transformation realm and his foundation is stable. He can also be considered a talented character, but what a pity, he is far too young. When he becomes a Divine Lord, I will already be able to fight with Empyreans. When he becomes a Holy Lord, I will be able to dominate all Empyreans. And when he is a World King, I will likely have broken through to the realm of True Divinity and will be leading the armies of my saint race to flatten the Divine Realm! At that time, no matter how talented he is, he will still die beneath my boot.”

As the Good Fortune Saint Son thought this, he didn't bother with Lin Ming anymore. He looked at Empyrean Divine Dream and said, "So, will you agree or disagree to the proposition of my saint race?"

Empyrean Divine Dream's delicate eyebrows scrunched together. At this time, Lin Ming's true essence sound transmission echoed in her ears. "Senior Divine Dream, may I ask what conditions the saint race have put forth so far?"

Empyrean Divine Dream reiterated the contents of the treaty. She also mentioned the arrival of the four Protectors as well as her approximation of the saint race's strength.

Lin Ming sneered as he listened to all this. The saint race's plans were indeed well thought out. With words alone, they wanted to turn the Divine Realm into their colony and freely plunder all the resources here. What wishful thinking!

Lin Ming responded with a true essence sound transmission, "Senior Divine Dream, the saint race is only bluffing. This junior knows that even if we were to refuse all their conditions, the saint race still would not dare to start an all-our war with us. This is because their current situation is extremely poor. The soul race might break out into war with the saint race at any time, and with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign still injured, waging war with humanity at the same time isn't something they can afford."

Lin Ming began repeating all the information he knew from beginning to end without concealing anything at all. At this time, Empyrean Divine Dream's decision involved the future of humanity and was of the utmost important. Lin Ming could only reveal everything he knew to Empyrean Divine Dream. Only like this would his words be believable.

Empyrean Divine Dream's thoughts stirred. She looked at Lin Ming with surprise. Humanity knew nothing about the saints, so how could Lin Ming know such a great secret?

"Are you sure?"

"I am!" Lin Ming confidently replied.

“How do you know?” Divine Dream wasn’t someone who liked prying into the secrets of others. But, this was simply far too important a matter. She had no other choice but to query Lin Ming about his sources to determine if they were credible or not.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment. Then, he said, “This junior learnt this from Primordius Heavenly Palace.”

He still hid the information about the Magic Cube. As for whether Empyrean Divine Dream would believe him, that wasn’t something he could control.

“Primordius Heavenly Palace?” Empyrean Divine Dream pondered for a moment. Lin Ming’s words had a hole in them. If he truly did learn such important information from Primordius Heavenly Palace, then his first action would have been to report this as soon as possible to all relevant authorities. After all, this was something directly related to the war between the saints and humanity. If they knew this information earlier, then humanity wouldn’t have needed to fear the saint race too much. They could have sent out more martial artists and stronger martial artists to the Bright Luster Great World so their war missions wouldn’t have failed so miserably.

Lin Ming wouldn’t ignore such holes in his information. If so, and if this information was true, then he would likely have just learnt it, and thus the reason for why he also hurriedly requested to enter the meeting hall where the negotiations were taking place. Otherwise, even in the worst case situation, Lin Ming would have released this information before the negotiations began.

As Divine Dream recalled Lin Ming asking for the corpse of that saint race World King a while ago, she began to form some associations in her mind.

After all, she was someone that had lived for 10 million years. With just a few clues, she was able to discern most of the story behind this matter.

Without a doubt, Lin Ming had some great secret on his body. And, he had used this secret to probe the memories of the saint World King. Moreover, this secret was something he didn’t wish for others to know of.

All geniuses inevitably had their own secrets. Moreover, this secret that Lin Ming was hiding was likely no trifling matter!

Divine Dream didn’t press further. In her opinion, Lin Ming had no reason to lie to her. His benefits were inextricably tied to the fate of humanity.

She also didn’t think of investigating Lin Ming’s secret or even about taking it for herself. After all, she was well aware that this so-called ‘peace’ between the saints and humanity would last only for a thousand years, or another 10,000 years at most. After that, there would be a cataclysmic war!

Just her alone was not enough to resist this calamity. There had to be more and more powerhouses that emerged, and Lin Ming was one of the most crucial people for the future. Divine Dream couldn’t protect characters like him fast enough, so why would she kill the chicken just to take the eggs? To Empyrean Divine Dream, the survival of humanity was the most important matter in her heart. It was something that was even greater than her goal of stepping into True Divinity!

Without the roots, how could the leaves survive? In Divine Dream’s heart, being an Empyrean of a prosperous and magnificent race was far superior to being a precarious True Divinity who had no place to rest and was being chased down throughout the heavens by a hostile race.

“Divine Dream, have you made your decision?” The Good Fortune Saint Son said, somewhat impatiently. He played with his iron fan with one hand, looking back and forth between Lin Ming and Empyrean Divine Dream. He could feel that Lin Ming and Empyrean Divine Dream were speaking with a true essence sound transmission just now, but he didn’t care too much. In his eyes, Lin Ming was an unimportant nobody. In these negotiations that involved the fates of two races, just what would he be able to say? No matter how flowery his words were, in the face of absolute strength, anything he tried was meaningless.

Thus, although the Good Fortune Saint Son was impatient, he still had a confident smile hanging across his face. He wanted to see that insufferably proud and arrogant Divine Dream submit to him.

The sense of achievement from making an unrivalled woman submit to him was something that he enjoyed very much.

Perhaps Empyrean Divine Dream would continue to struggle and bargain a little, but that didn't matter. He could put forth a gallant act of generosity and make some concessions. As for these concessions, he had already included them in the conditions before. For example, he could leave several hundred great worlds to the humans, as long as they could plunder the majority of them.

Divine Dream turned to look at the Good Fortune Saint Son.

Then, she smiled. Her smile was both beautiful and dazzling, as bright as the morning sun.

The Good Fortune Saint Son was stunned. Just why was Empyrean Divine Dream smiling at him. Was she smiling at him to flatter and persuade him? He wasn't sure just what was happening, but at this time, Empyrean Divine Dream parted her cherry red lips and clearly spoke out three syllables.

"I. Re. Fuse!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son's face immediately froze.

Chapter 1401 – Sneak Attack

Chapter 1401 – Sneak Attack

…

…

…

“What!?”

With this word, the entire audience was shocked. It wasn’t just the saint Empyreans, but even the human Empyreans were lost for a moment. Empyrean Divine Dream’s rejection had been too sudden. Her words had carried a tone implying that she had no plans of bargaining.

The Good Fortune Saint Son’s smile was frozen for the briefest moment before he coldly sneered. “Are you not satisfied with the conditions? We can hash out the details.”

Empyrean Divine Dream indifferently looked at the Good Fortune Saint Son, contempt thick in her eyes. “There is no need to discuss anything. I refuse any and all contents of this treaty.”

Hearing Empyrean Divine Dream’s words, the Good Fortune Saint Son’s complexion became increasingly dark. The human Empyreans were all panicked and began to constantly discuss amongst themselves with true essence sound transmissions.

Divine Dream was too forceful. Although this brash nature made many of the human Empyreans feel proud and elated, they still lacked courage when thinking back to how formidable the saints were, and they also feared that they had offended the Good Fortune Saint Son and taken this too far.

“Divine Dream, do you know what you are saying?” The Good Fortune Saint Son’s hands both grasped his fan. As the end of his fan scraped across the stone table, it made a high pitch squeaking noise.

The Good Fortune Saint Son had originally given space in the conditions to bargain with Empyrean Divine Dream. But, he never imagined that she would not bother bargaining at all and would flat out refuse him!

“Divine Dream...” Skyrend Godlord and Empyrean Vast Universe spoke to Divine Dream with a sound transmission. They were afraid that such an absolute rejection would provoke the saint race too far. If an all-out battle broke out, the consequences would be unimaginable!

“Divine Dream, you must endure the sword above your head; showing the necessary patience is what we must do here. Although we will shoulder the sins of humanity, that isn’t anything compared to the fate of humanity.”

As Skyrend Godlord said this, he and the others didn’t say anything more. Then, Empyrean Divine Dream actually waved her hand, “I understand.”

These words left Skyrend Godlord and the others without any avenue to speak further. Even so, they had no confidence about what was happening here.

“Is this what they mean by saying it is better to live as pieces of jade than to live as tiles on the ground?” The Good Fortune Saint Son demonically grinned and stood up. Beside him, the four saint race Protectors also stepped forwards. Astral essence swirled about their bodies, causing the earth to vibrate.

The human side refused to admit to being inferior. Although the 100 plus Empyreans here were weaker overall compared to those from the saint race, they still had the support of Mount Potala’s array formation. If a true battle began, even if they were defeated they would be able to cause deep losses to the saints.

With Divine Dream at the lead, there were also the great masters Skyrend Godlord, Emperor Shakya, and Great Limitless Buddha.

Ka ka ka!

The void shook. The four great masters of humanity stood in sharp opposition to the four Protectors of the saint race!

The eight auras smashed together. Of these, Divine Dream's icy blue aura was the largest and most magnificent. With her strength alone, she forcefully withstood the pressure of two Protectors! As for Skyrend Godlord, Emperor Shakya, and Great Limitless Buddha, the three of them joined forces and withstood the aura of the remaining two Protectors.

"How interesting!"

The black-armored leader of the four Protectors diabolically grinned. The astral essence swirling about him became increasingly wild. At the same time, from between the four of them, a golden shining dharmic wheel took form and began spinning below their feet.

The human side refused to show weakness. Great Limitless Buddha smashed his staff against the ground. With a loud peal of thunder, the floor made of timeless god stone exploded beneath the staff. A massive amount of golden energy began to gather towards him from all direction, turning into Buddhist seals and symbols that gathered towards Great Limitless Buddha's body!

For a time, Buddhist prayers echoed throughout the world. It was like a great bell had been rung, enlightening all!

This was the power saved within Mount Potala's array formation and now directed by Great Limitless Buddha. By borrowing the battlefield of Mount Potala, he could multiply his strength. Even if the four saint Protectors joined together in an array formation, it was impossible for them to shake Great Limitless Buddha's aura.

"Mm?"

The black-armored man’s complexion changed. He hadn’t truly started fighting. He had only used his aura to probe his enemies’ respective strengths.

The human Empyreans were far stronger than he had imagined. This also meant that if they were to truly fight, it would be hard for either side to gain an advantage.

Such a situation had never appeared since the negotiations had started. They had lost control of the negotiations.

Once the negotiations fell apart, the saint race would be unable to obtain any benefits. They didn’t want to fight here nor did they dare to fight upon returning. Like this, the saint race’s plan to put forth their strength and threaten humanity would completely fail.

The Good Fortune Saint Son’s complexion grew increasingly gloomy. Suddenly, he looked at Lin Ming.

Recalling the previous events, when the saint race had revealed their great strength, the humans had already acquiesced. Even that Skyrend Godlord had tacitly agreed to sign the treaty and was ready to bargain about the details of the treat. Even Empyrean Divine Dream hadn’t opposed this.

But then, Lin Ming had appeared from nowhere and had spoken some unknown words with Empyrean Divine Dream in a true essence sound transmission.

Following that, Empyrean Divine Dream’s attitude had taken a complete 180 degree turn and she had ended up rejecting all conditions that the saint race had put forth.

If someone said that none of this had anything to do with Lin Ming, the Good Fortune Saint Son wouldn’t believe them at all.

“Brat! Just what have you said to Divine Dream!?”

A deep cruel light of hatred flashed through the Good Fortune Saint Son’s eyes. This peace treaty with the humans involved a tremendous amount of benefits. If they signed it, then that was the same as grasping all the benefits of the Divine Realm without losing a single soldier!

Not only did this affect the benefits of the entire saint race, but to a certain degree it also affected the final result of the war between the saints and the spiritas. And, most importantly, the vast majority of the benefits would have flowed into Good Fortune Divine Palace, where he would have been able to use them. These benefits would have become a stepping stone that paved the way for him to become a True Divinity in the future.

Now, because of Lin Ming's appearance, all of this had disappeared in a puff of smoke.

How could he not hate Lin Ming!

And faintly, the Good Fortune Saint Son had a premonition that this Lin Ming would become a scourge upon him in the future. If he were to ruin the long-laid plans of the saint race once, he might do it again in the future!

As the Good Fortune Saint Son thought of this, he took out the Demon Bead from his spatial ring and began to galvanize its strength with his bloodline.

With a horrifying roar, the phantom of a demon king flew out from the Demon Bead, hurtling straight towards Lin Ming!

This was not the Good Fortune Saint Son's strength, but was the power that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had sealed within the Demon Bead. The Good Fortune Saint Son had only spurred this power. But with his current strength, he was only able to animate a tenth of this energy. Even so, a tenth of this energy was amazing enough!

The Good Fortune Saint Son's plan was simple. These negotiations were not going to progress anywhere, and since the humans dreaded a battle just as much as the saints did, it was impossible for them to start a battle first. Even if he did anything too excessive, the humans wouldn't do anything to him. If this was the case, he might as well be excessive to the limit and kill off Lin Ming!

At this time, Empyrean Divine Dream and the others were all resisting the pressure of the saints. Even the other Empyreans had joined the fray. No one thought that the Good Fortune Saint Son would launch a sudden attack, and that his goal would be Lin Ming!

Seeing that black demon phantom rush towards him, Lin Ming was greatly shocked. He rapidly drew backwards, extracting the Phoenix Blood Spear from his spatial ring at the same time.

He could feel a terrifying strength approaching him, just hundreds of feet away. Lin Ming felt as if all the blood essence within his body was being pulled out. His body began to crack, as if he would be mercilessly crushed to death under this pressure!

Chapter 1402 – A 100 Year Agreement

Chapter 1402 – A 100 Year Agreement

…

…

…

"Lin Ming!"

On the human side, the many Empyreans were shocked. But at this time, most of them weren't able to extend a helping hand.

At this critical moment, a white-clothed middle-aged man's figure flashed like a bolt of white lightning in front of Lin Ming, facing this black demon phantom and punching out with his fist!

Bang!

With a terrifying explosion, the timeless god stones all around him completely disintegrated.

Horrifying shockwaves surged outwards. This was a collision on the level of Empyrean masters. Even though Lin Ming was protected behind this white-clothed person, he felt his blood vitality tumble within him, feeling as if his body would explode at any moment.

Peng!

Lin Ming thrust out his spear, breaking down several true essence shockwaves. Even so, he was still sent flying backwards until he roughly crashed into a wall. He coughed out a mouthful of blood, his face extremely white.

In that single move just now, he had been severely injured!

Just what sort of character was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign? Even if his boundary had dropped, and the Good Fortune Saint Son had only used a tiny portion of the power he left in the Demon Bead, the might of that attack was beyond reckoning!

Once this strength locked onto Lin Ming, even though there were people around him to block it, he was still wounded underneath that tremendous swallowing force!

In the end, Lin Ming was far too weak.

At the Divine Transformation realm he was equivalent to a half-step Holy Lord. But in this meeting hall, that level of strength was the same as an ant.

Even the relatively weak Good Fortune Saint Son was still dozens and hundreds of times stronger than Lin Ming was!

Moreover, the Good Fortune Saint Son had a True Divinity powerhouse protecting him. All sorts of resources and magical tools were freely supplied to him; this was not something that Lin Ming could hope to compare with.

“I’m too weak!”

Lin Ming touched his own chest, examining his injuries. His internal meridians and blood vessels were in a complete mess, ruined by a dark energy. Without three to five days of rest, it would be extremely difficult to restore himself.

In this meeting hall, if there was any kind of intense collision, it was possible that Lin Ming would be sucked into the mess and perish in the aftermath. This was why Skyrend Godlord had opposed Lin Ming entering the meeting hall at the start.

This was the sorrow and pity of the weak.

“I must succeed Empyrean Primordius’ final wish and retake the Grandmist Spirit bead. I have to reach the peak of martial arts and inherit the will of Empyrean Divine Seal, leading humanity to cross this great calamity. But right now, I am weak to the point of shame. Even the aftermath of any attack here can ruin me, so what else is there for me to talk about?"

Lin Ming clenched his fists so tightly that his nails dug into his flesh.

He needed to become stronger, and he needed to become stronger much faster. This peace between the saints and humanity would only last for perhaps a thousand years. During this thousand years of time, he if couldn't grow strong enough, just what qualifications would he have to say he would accomplish the dreams and wishes of those that came before him?

"Lin Ming, are you okay?!"

Empyrean Vast Universe grimly said as he protected Lin Ming behind him. Empyrean Vast Universe's situation wasn't too good right now. After frontally colliding with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's power, although he wasn't injured, he was left in a distressed state.

Empyrean Vast Universe angrily glared at the Good Fortune Saint Son. This was a meeting for negotiations, and yet he had attacked with a killing move without even giving a warning, all in order to eliminate Lin Ming.

"You blind and reckless little beast, to think you would dare to kill others during negotiations! Our human race will never tolerate someone like you!"

Empyrean Vast Universe blew up into a violent rage, immediately raising this matter to the level of his entire race. This caused the atmosphere in the meeting hall to become even more tense!

"Hahaha!" The Good Fortune Saint Son recklessly laughed. "What did you just call me? What gives you the right to speak to me like that? You are simply nothing at all! In 10 million years of life, you've only managed to become a middle ranked Empyrean, and in the future, this is all you will ever be! In my eyes, you are nothing but garbage! Thousands of years from now, you will truly be nothing but an animal to me. If I want to kill you then, it will be no different from slaughtering a chicken! It won't take me any strength at all!"

“What did you say!?” Empyrean Vast Universe raged. His entire body swelled with blood energy as he neared the point of launching an attack.

The Good Fortune Saint Son thought little of it. He sneered, “Are you too stupid to understand what I just said? If you have the courage then we can engage in a life or death battle 300 years from now! Do you dare?”

The Good Fortune Saint Son’s words were aggressive and arrogant. Empyrean Vast Universe stiffened and all the blood in his body seemed to rush to his face.

He certainly remembered that at the start of these negotiations, Fire God had also come into conflict with the Good Fortune Saint Son. The Good Fortune Saint Son had proposed a death match several hundred years later, and Fire God had almost agreed. However, he had been stopped by Empyrean Divine Dream.

If Empyrean Divine Dream had done so, that was because she believed that several hundred years from now, Fire God wouldn’t be a match for the Good Fortune Saint Son!

And, Empyrean Vast Universe held a high degree of faith in Empyrean Divine Dream’s judgment.

As for Empyrean Vast Universe’s potential, he was even faintly worse than Fire God. Now that he faced the Good Fortune Saint Son’s challenge, he was left in a dilemma!

If he agreed, then there was an 80-90% chance he would die in battle.

But if he didn’t agree and chose to shrink back, then in this sharp and tense atmosphere where his actions concerned his own personal dignity and as well as the glory of humanity, he would weaken the momentum of the human race and also shame himself.

Humans had a sense of bravery and they also tried to live with dignity. This was especially true for those that had reached the level of an Empyrean!

At this time, Empyrean Divine Dream and the others were focused on facing the four Protectors. Empyrean Vast Universe grit his teeth, nearly agreeing to this battle!

But at this moment, Lin Ming raised his Phoenix Blood Spear and stepped forwards until he stood in front of Empyrean Vast Universe.

He wiped the blood from the corners of his lips and said, “Senior Vast Universe, if it’s going to be a hundred year duel, then allow this junior to participate!”

Lin Ming’s tone was casual, as if this battle was no big deal to him.

“Mm?” Empyrean Vast Universe was stunned. He didn’t immediately respond.

Lin Ming looked at the Good Fortune Saint Son and pointed the Phoenix Blood Spear straight at him. On the spearpoint, a cold light sparkled, blinding to the eyes. “How about you and I duel instead? I don’t even need 300 years… a hundred years is fine. In a hundred years, let us battle to the death. Do you dare to follow me?”

Lin Ming grinned as he spoke, revealing white teeth stained with blood.

This caused everyone to be shocked.

Lin Ming wanted to fight with the Good Fortune Saint Son in a hundred years?

For a time, even the confrontation between the Empyreans seemed to simmer down.

No one here doubted Lin Ming’s talent. But in the eyes of many people here, a Divine Sea martial artist fighting a Divine Lord master was much easier than a Divine Lord master fighting a World King.

In other words, Lin Ming was inferior to the Good Fortune Saint Son. And, the Good Fortune Saint Son also possessed the Grandmist Spirit Bead, a divine tool of the highest magnitude to help support his training. Moreover, there was also the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, a True Divinity powerhouse that was pouring all sorts of resources and inheritances upon the Good Fortune Saint Son without limit.

Such a character only surpassed others. There had never been a time when others had surpassed him.

And Lin Ming actually wanted to battle him in a hundred years. To overtake the Good Fortune Saint Son in a mere century, just what sort of bold courage was that!

“Lin Ming! Don’t be rash!” Empyrean Vast Universe hurriedly said. He knew that Lin Ming was stepping forwards for him. Lin Ming wasn’t someone that liked owing favors to anyone. When Empyrean Vast Universe had blocked that strike for Lin Ming just now, and now Lin Ming was receiving this challenge for Empyrean Vast Universe.

A favor for a favor.

“You want to duel me in a hundred years? Hahaha!” The Good Fortune Saint Son wildly chortled, his eyes flashing with contempt. “I admit that you are talented. To come in second place in the humans’ First Martial Meeting can be considered decent, but what a pity, compared to me, you still fall far short! If our cultivations were swapped right now and you were at the late Divine Lord realm while I was at the early Saint Transformation realm, you might have a chance of winning. But unfortunately, that isn’t reality at all. My cultivation is over a large boundary and a half higher than yours! Let alone 100 years, even 1000 years or 10,000 years from now, you will never surpass me! Instead, the difference between you and me will only continue to grow larger!”

Between Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son, one was at the early Divine Transformation realm, and the other was at the late Saint Lord realm, equal to the human late Divine Lord realm. This difference in cultivation was simply too great. For a normal genius, it would be extremely difficult to rise from the early Divine Transformation realm to the late Divine Lord realm in a hundred years, especially in a situation where Lin Ming had to overtake the Good Fortune Saint Son while he was at it!

A hundred years from now, it was likely that the Good Fortune Saint Son would have reached the Holy Lord realm and would even have traced the threshold of the World King realm. At that time, his strength wouldn’t be too far away from that of an Empyrean.

The difficulty of this feat could be imagined!

“That boy has gone crazy! He actually wants to duel my race’s Saint Son in a hundred years, it’s as if he wants to die!” A saint Empyrean coldly scoffed.

“Hehe, does he think that the Good Fortune Saint Son is casually chosen from nowhere? The Saint Son is the next appointed Saint Sovereign of my people. From birth, he has gathered the destiny of my saint race unto him. With such a destiny supporting him, how can he not be lucky!”

“Yes, my race’s Saint Son has entered countless life or death situations, and not only has he not died but he has obtained innumerable treasures. Now, he even has the Grandmist Spirit Bead with him. In terms of fortuitous events, no mere human can compare with him. And in terms of inheritances, he is number one in the world! As for resources, there is no need to mention them. And, as for natural martial talent, he possesses the bloodline of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign as well as the Saint Heavenly Demon Princess. From birth he has been soaked in baths of heavenly materials, and there is even the essence embryo of a God Beast fused into his body; his foundation and his bones are far superior to all others’. In the future he will definitely become a True Divinity level character!”

“Haha, how could this stupid little boy know all of this? Does he think he is invincible just because he obtained second place in some silly little human Divine Realm First Martial Meeting?!”

As the saint Empyreans spoke, they didn’t bother hiding their words with true essence sound transmissions, instead choosing to bluntly speak in front of the human Empyreans. With every word that fell into the ears of the human Empyreans, their complexions became that much uglier.

The Good Fortune Saint Son possessed the bloodline of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign as well as the Saint Heavenly Demon Princess. There was also the great destiny of his entire race supporting him, and fused in his body was the essence embryo of a God Beast. There was no need to mention the various inheritances and resources he enjoyed.

How could such a character come to be? What did it mean to be the next appointed Saint Sovereign of the saint race? Did this mean that in every generation of the saints, there would always be someone that appeared on the level of the Saint Sovereign?

Even those that believed in Lin Ming's potential, such as Empyrean Divine Dream and Empyrean Vast Universe, felt that Lin Ming had been too reckless this time.

"Lin Ming..." Empyrean Divine Dream took a deep breath. "Why did you settle on a duel in a hundred years? I know that you have some great heaven-startling secret that you are hiding, but it is impossible for that to surpass the Grandmist Spirit Bead. In terms of lucky chances, I fear that you are also inferior to the Good Fortune Saint Son. Moreover, this Good Fortune Saint Son has a great destiny swirling about him. If you wish to fight at some appointed date with him, I won't oppose you, because in the future, you and him are destined to battle sooner or later. But, to set the date a hundred years from now is far too soon!"

Lin Ming thought for a moment. Before he put forth this hundred year date, he didn't know that the Good Fortune Saint Son would be so lucky. Even so, he didn't regret anything at all. "I thank Senior Divine Dream for the advice, but this junior has already set forth a date of a hundred years. It isn't because I am arrogant, but because I wish to place enough pressure on myself. Any temporary peace between the saints and us humans will last no longer than a thousand years; it might even be much shorter than that. When the true great calamity finally erupts and I still do not possess the strength of a half-step True Divinity, what use is there in thinking I can do anything to help humanity resist this tribulation?"

Chapter 1403 – The Result of Negotiations

Chapter 1403 – The Result of Negotiations

…

…

…

Lin Ming's words caused Empyrean Divine Dream's heart to skip a beat. Reach the same level of strength as a half-step True Divinity within a thousand years?

It had to be known that Divine Dream herself, Emperor Shakya, and the other leaders of humanity were only half-step True Divinities.

They had used innumerable years to reach this step, and now Lin Ming said he wished to reach this level in just a thousand years. If this was said out loud, who would believe him?

But, if he wished to play a prime role in this great calamity, becoming a half-step True Divinity was the most basic step.

This was a war that involved the fates of two races. Empyreans could be considered the backbone of the forces, World Kings were soldiers, and as for Holy Lords, they were nothing but cannon fodder.

Lin Ming didn't wish for his own destiny to be controlled by others when the great calamity truly erupted. Even becoming a half-step True Divinity wasn't his final goal. What he wanted was to become a True Divinity, someone that could frontally contend with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

Only like this could he truly bring about a change in the war!

“Lin Ming, well said!” Empyrean Divine Dream suddenly said with a true essence sound transmission, “Geniuses should be bold and filled with determination, ready to make decisions that shake the heavens and earth. For us who walk down the road of martial arts, we did not do so to be defeated. Since you have recognized that this is the path you wish to take, Divine Dream Heavenly Palace will support you to our fullest capabilities.”

For Lin Ming with his Divine Transformation realm cultivation to challenge the late Saint Lord Good Fortune Saint Son in a hundred years was indeed a decision that would shake the heavens and earth. In several days, whether it was the saint race or human race, this matter would spread throughout both of them.

“Lin Ming, hehe…” The Good Fortune Saint Son looked at Lin Ming, a joking smile on his face. “Since you wish to duel me, very well then, let it be so. Let us form a heart demon soul contract with a transcendent divine might. 100 years from now, if one of us dares to back out, then he shall suffer a backlash of his heart demons, his meridians shall be torn to pieces, and his soul will evaporate into nothing, never to enter samsara!”

As the Good Fortune Saint Son put forth such a vicious and cruel oath, a demonic smile split his face. He wanted to rid himself of Lin Ming. Since it was no longer possible for the saints to co-exist in the Divine Shifting Heavens, exterminating Lin Ming could be considered a consolation prize.

Towards this type of genius that was sure to become an extreme Empyrean in the future, the Good Fortune Saint Son only thought of killing him off to end all potential troubles!

“Fine!”

Lin Ming readily agreed.

He and the Good Fortune Saint Son bit down on their fingers and flung out a drop of blood essence.

These two drops of blood essence connected in midair, forming patterns of blood-colored seals.

These seals seemed to burn like red-black flames. Then, these seals turned into curse seals that sank into Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son's bodies.

Seeing this, all of the human Empyreans present were shocked. Once this heart demon soul contract was signed, it meant that after a hundred years, only one of these two geniuses would emerge alive.

Signing this sort of contract required a titanic amount of courage and confidence.

Lin Ming… could he win?

Hu – !

All of the blood vitality began to condense within Lin Ming's body. The transcendent divine might curse seal formed a black-red mark on Lin Ming's chest that slowly hid itself away.

The contract had been formed!

As the Good Fortune Saint Son saw this, he diabolically grinned.

He knew that the goal of today's negotiations would not come to fruition. If they continued this stalemate there would be no meaning to it at all. No matter what the humans had learnt, it was impossible for them to give in any longer.

Killing Lin Ming in a hundred years was the only harvest of today.

"We're leaving!"

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke he immediately turned and flew away. Behind him, the many saint Empyreans also followed him and left. The array formation of Mount Potala was torn apart once more!

Then, the hundred plus saint Empyreans tore through the void of the Divine Realm, disappearing from sight.

The human Empyreans looked at each other, speechless. Negotiations had concluded like that?

In these negotiations, they had all thought that they would have to make concessions, otherwise death and war would spread through every corner of humanity. But, everything had ended just like this?

In the end, the saint race hadn't come at all. They had come in with a threatening posture and a menacing air, but in the end they left without anything at all.

From start to end, the saint race seemed reckless and wild, but the truth was that they never started an all-out war at all. Rather, they had tried to intimidate the human race, but once that intimidation failed, they were instead defeated!

This was proof that the saints dreaded something!

They were afraid. Even their powerful lineup was merely a mirage meant to threaten them.

But even so, it was true that the momentum of the saint race had been extremely horrifying.

If it weren't for Divine Dream insisting until the final moment and defending their bottom line, then perhaps they might have truly signed this treaty with completely disastrous conditions for humanity!

Thinking of this, everyone looked at Divine Dream and then looked at Lin Ming.

They certainly knew that before Divine Dream's attitude had undergone a complete change, she had conversed with Lin Ming using a true essence sound transmission.

"Divine Dream... what did Lin Ming say to you?"

The one who asked was Skyrend Godlord. He couldn't imagine just what Lin Ming had said to change Divine Dream's mind.

Before this, many Empyreans were puzzled as to why the saints didn't dare to start an all-out war; it was as if they dreaded the human race for some reason.

But, those were only speculations. The saint race had at least one True Divinity powerhouse as well as many half-step True Divinity masters. They were far more formidable than humanity in terms of overall strength. In a crucial moment that involved the life or death of the entire human race, who among them would dare to draw some conclusion based on some random information?

Divine Dream shook her head, "Nothing. Lin Ming only gave some suggestions."

Divine Dream was being specifically ambiguous in her wording; she clearly didn't want to reveal too many details. This was to protect Lin Ming's secret. The less people knew, the better it would be for him.

Skyrend Godlord hesitated for a moment and finally didn't ask again. He knew that Divine Dream didn't wish to explain herself.

Like this, the negotiations that involved the survival of humanity had ended. Following this, the saint race didn't act out in shame and rage, nor did they begin a large scale invasion of the Divine Realm. Rather, they stayed in the Bright Luster Great World.

Humanity also didn't send out Empyreans to retake the Bright Luster Great World. This was the best result possible. They didn't cede further territory, they didn't pay any compensation, and they also didn't lose sovereignty of the Divine Realm. In this situation, humanity even gained a moment of peace.

Empyrean Divine Dream was aware that the saint race dreaded humanity right now. But, if humanity were to force them to desperation, they would truly engage in a war where both sides perished. This was something that neither the humans nor the saints wished to see.

Thus, no Empyreans could be sent out in this war. Battles would be limited to the World King level.

Like this, a brief lull of peace appeared between humanity and the saint race. The Bright Luster Great World was temporarily occupied by the saints. For now, every human in the Divine Realm was cheering, cheering for the magnificence of the many Empyreans.

And at this time, news of Lin Ming challenging the saint race's Good Fortune Saint Son also spread out, traveling through the entire Divine Realm like a tide.

In contrast to what the Empyreans thought, most human martial artists thought that Lin Ming challenging the Good Fortune Saint Son was an extremely grandiose and wonderful feat!

After humanity was forced back again and again, suffering the sorrow of repeated losses, they sorely needed a hero to appear, a figure they could use to encourage themselves. They needed a hearty and vigorous battle with their enemy, one that could give them the courage to continue resisting the saints!

And Lin Ming jumping ranks to challenge the Good Fortune Saint Son had undoubtedly accomplished this. This caused many human martial artists to feel proud and joyous!

Even the common mortals of the Divine Realm vividly painted a scene of Lin Ming challenging the Good Fortune Saint Son at the negotiation table. Of course, this all came from their imaginations.

In their imaginations, Lin Ming appeared like a hero from the dark skies, suppressing everyone present and overwhelming the world!

But, the reaction in the saint race was the complete opposite. They heard stories where Lin Ming was casually struck by the Good Fortune Saint Son to the point of vomiting blood. As for the duel between the Good Fortune Saint Son and Lin Ming in a hundred years, everyone took that as a joke.

As their future Saint Sovereign, how could he possibly be defeated by a little Divine Transformation realm boy?

Chapter 1404 – The Elites of the Saint Race

Chapter 1404 – The Elites of the Saint Race

…

…

…

In the blink of an eye, a month passed from the negotiations at Mount Potala. The saint race continued to have their armies on standby. They didn't withdraw from the Bright Luster Great World nor did they continue their expansion outwards.

After several days passed, the saints sent out a messenger, bringing forth a personal letter from the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

The summary of this letter was that for 500 years, humans and the saints would not break out into a great war. There would be occasional battles of course, but all of this would be limited to the level of Holy Lords at most. World Kings and Empyreans would not participate in any fights.

The saints would also not withdraw from the Bright Luster Great World. The Bright Luster Great World would become the sole battlefield between humanity and the saints. All influences of the saints would send their disciples to temper themselves there, immersing themselves in the thick of the slaughter.

However, after leaving the Bright Luster Great World, humanity and saints could not freely slaughter each other; the only exception would be a life or death battle which both sides mutually consented to.

Whether it was a human or a saint, if anyone violated this restriction, then both races would join together to hunt down the criminals!

Once this treaty was signed, the conditions had to be followed, otherwise one would suffer a backlash of heart demons!

In the text of this treaty, there were 50 joint signatures from extreme Empyrean level characters of the saint race.

If humanity were to agree to these conditions, then they would also need 50 extreme Empyreans to sign it. This included Divine Dream, Skyrend Godlord, Emperor Shakya, as well as many others.

“The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wants to use the Bright Luster Great World as a tempering field.” Divine Dream quietly said after reading the letter.

“Yes, the saints need their geniuses to grow quickly, but so do we humans. The future Bright Luster Great World will be a land filled with blood and death. Those that perish there will often be heroic young elites. But, these constant life or death battles also come with opportunity. If our geniuses go to the Bright Luster Great World to gain experience, they too will grow much quicker.”

To set aside a battlefield like the Bright Luster Great World was advantageous to both the saints and humans. As for restricting all battles to below the World King level, that was also something that humanity hoped to see.

All in all, this was an equal treaty. Both the humans and saints wanted to sign it.

Empyrean Divine Dream was silent for a long time. Then, she signed her own name on it.

After Empyrean Divine Dream signed it, many other Empyreans followed suit.

When a full 50 Empyreans signed the contract, the contract turned into a black flame that slowly sizzled out in the air.

For such a contract, once it was broken, although it wouldn’t take one’s life, it would still damage one’s cultivation. To an Empyrean, this was already an extremely heavy price, so they naturally wouldn’t violate the terms.

Like this, a strange and awkward peace formed between the human race and the saint race.

In the Bright Luster Great World, the slaughter there actually became increasingly intense. Many youths, filled with courage and gusto, hated that their lands had fallen to the saints, and a violent battle would quickly break out with just a few words. Moreover, many influences also sent their own young disciples to temper themselves on this Bright Luster Great World battlefield. As for the World Kings and Empyreans, they did not intervene. If these young geniuses truly possessed sufficient strength and destiny then they would be able to save their own lives.

In the North Soar Great World, there was a large planet.

This planet was called the Bright Soar Planet because it was located at the border region of the North Soar Great World and the Bright Luster Great World. Many martial artists of the Divine Realm had to pass through this world to enter the Bright Luster Great World and adventure.

This also caused the usually idle and not too prosperous Bright Soar Planet to become extremely busy. Great throngs of martial artists would pass through this planet every day.

At this time, in an opulent restaurant on Bright Soar Planet.

Seven or eight martial artists were gathered here, drinking and conversing with each other. They were all young elites of humanity that were headed to the Bright Luster Great World to adventure.

Of those that dared go to the Bright Luster Great World, the weakest among them were geniuses of Holy Land level sects.

Normal eighth-grade sect geniuses would not dare to go because it was far too easy for them to die on the treacherous battlefield of the Bright Luster Great World.

As these martial artists spoke, they became increasingly excited and animated. They spoke about the current situation between the humans and the saints, the state of the Bright Luster battlefield, as well as the negotiations that happened on Mount Potala just several months ago. Finally, they shifted the topic to the hundred year duel between Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son.

At Mount Potala, Lin Ming had jumped over a boundary and a half to challenge the Good Fortune Saint Son. This had already become a glorious topic of discussion that had spread throughout the Divine Realm; even body transformation realm martial artists had heard of it.

Most martial artists of the Divine Realm had never seen Lin Ming before. But, only a pitiful number of martial artists had never heard of Lin Ming's dazzling feats.

To dare sign a life or death duel contract with the Good Fortune Saint Son, such a proud and daring character caused all of humanity to be filled with pride!

"I heard that Lin Ming is soon about to break into the middle Divine Transformation realm!"

"That's normal. He has already been at the early Divine Transformation realm for three years now, so he should be able to break through at any moment, but he simply doesn't wish to right now. For a genius like Lin Ming, making breakthroughs is an extremely simple matter. The only problem for him is that he needs to consider whether or not his foundation is solid."

"Haha, after making a breakthrough, Lin Ming's strength will rise by a large margin. If he continues growing at this rate then who knows what degree he will reach in a hundred years! That Good Fortune Saint Son was simply too arrogant, I've long since found him sickening to my ears!"

“The Good Fortune Saint Son is definitely talented. According to common sense, it should be difficult for Lin Ming to defeat him a hundred years from now, but Lin Ming has a great destiny on his body and he has continued to create miracles all the time. I believe that he will definitely bring about another miracle this time.”

“Do you really believe that this little Lin boy will be able to create a miracle?”

At this time, in a corner of the restaurant, a voice of disagreement sounded out. This person’s voice was halting as he spoke the language of the Divine Realm; it was clear that he wasn’t skilled in it.

Several young elites frowned. They turned to the corner of the restaurant to see two men and one woman.

The man who was sitting at the head wore embroidered robes. He had skin the color of wheat, and although he wasn’t handsome and even seemed a bit strange, his eyes were particularly deep, deep to the point that one could drown in them.

Sitting near this man was a young girl in a robe of feathers. She had a beautiful appearance and her figure was slender. A charming little smile hung on her face. She pulled on this man’s arm as if she were his lover.

As for the last man, he was skinny and tall like a bamboo pole. His hands were also thin and gnarly like the claws of a chicken. The sockets of his eyes were sunken in to an extreme degree, making him seem quite dreadful.

These three people all wore clothes different from those of humans. In addition to their halting use of the Divine Realm language as well as their hostility towards Lin Ming, when this was combined together it was clear that they all came from the saint race!

“It’s devils of the saint race!”

“These three saint race devils, to think that they dare run outside of the Bright Luster Great World. They are simply looking to die!”

The seven or eight youths were about to pull out their weapons but a white-clothed man stopped them. “Stop being so reckless. This is no longer the Bright Luster Great World. According to the agreement between humanity and the saints, once one leaves the domain of the Bright Luster Great World, one cannot slaughter at will. If you want to fight then both parties must agree, otherwise you will be punished for violating the rules.”

“That’s right, Big Brother is correct. Don’t be impulsive. Otherwise, even if you killed the three of them we would still have to be buried with them.”

As the several young elites spoke, the skinny saint man and the woman began to laugh as if they had heard the funniest joke in the world.

This laugh was reckless and without end. The young human elites frowned, “Just what are you laughing about!”

“I’m laughing at your ignorance!” The feather-robed woman stood up. “You barbarians are ridiculously stupid! You don’t even know what our status is and yet you think you can just kill us if you want? How laughable! You should be thankful that there is a treaty between the saints and the humans, otherwise we would have already lopped off your heads for your disrespect just now!”

The humans referred to those from the saint race as saint devils. As for the saints, they referred to humans as barbarians. In accordance with their words, they thought of humans as nothing but uncivilized slaves, pigs that could be butchered at any time. Although there was a temporary peace between the two races, they would still exchange insults with each other.

“Humph, just what nonsense are you spouting? Since you can’t do anything at all, then you might as well blabber on as much as you want! My human race’s second ranked genius Lin Ming is not someone that the likes of you could ever imagine!”

The martial artist who spoke swept over the cultivation of these three saints. These three saints all had a cultivation at the middle and late Saint Transformation realm. There was no need to fear this level of cultivation.

“Just what is Lin Ming? What gives him the qualifications to fight with Senior-apprentice Brother Saint Son Wumo? In the eyes of Senior-apprentice Brother Wumo, that Lin Ming is simply a rabid barking dog!”

“It was only that the situation at the negotiation scene was special that Senior-apprentice Brother Wumo would care about that idiot.”

“Haha, you can’t say it like that. That boy Lin Ming can still be considered a decent genius amongst the humans. Since he wants to die, then Senior-apprentice Brother Wumo might as well pass him a helping hand. This only means that the humans will be even weaker a hundred years from now.”

Wumo was the surname of the Good Fortune Saint Son. If these martial artists could refer to the Good Fortune Saint Son as Senior-apprentice Brother Wumo, then that definitely meant they had some relationship with the Good Fortune Saint Son.

As these people heard them dismiss Lin Ming in such a manner, all of them were enraged. “Just who are you!?”

The leader of the human youths asked, his voice gloomy. If this person could refer to the Good Fortune Saint Son as Senior-apprentice Brother Wumo, then it was likely that they came from the same sect that he did. In other words, a True Divinity level influence of the saint race. If they were core disciples of that True Divinity influence then their talent must be incomprehensible!

The three people looked at each other. Then, the feather-robed woman chuckled and said, “Then let me tell you. Listen well; we are both lower disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. My Senior-apprentice Brother Naqi is the first place champion of the most recent Saint Sea First Martial Meeting of the saint race! As for me, I was sixth!”

As the feather-robed woman spoke, she pointed towards the embroidered robe youth amongst the three of them.

As all the young elites of the human race heard this, they felt their hearts skip a beat and drop to their stomachs.

The first place and sixth place champions of the saint race's Saint Sea First Martial Meeting!

The Saint Sea realm was equal to the human Divine Sea realm. Whether it was humans or the saints, the Divine Sea and Saint Sea realms were both times when one's cultivation had reached large success. Taking humans as an example, after experiencing the nine stages of Life Destruction, their true might in the Laws would manifest. Thus, holding a First Martial Meeting for all heroic young elites at the Divine Sea realm was the most persuasive show of potential and strength. This was also the same for the saint race.

To be able to obtain first place in the Saint Sea realm First Martial Meeting, the talent of this youth could be imagined!

After all, the geniuses of the saint race surpassed those of humanity in both quantity and quality!

For this point, even if the young elites of humanity didn't want to agree with it, they couldn't deny it either.

Without a doubt, although this youth in front of them was only at the late Saint Transformation realm, in terms of true strength he was likely comparable to a weak Holy Lord! If such a character were compared to the Good Fortune Saint Son, then perhaps the only difference between them would be their age and the destiny upon their bodies. It was no wonder that he dared to speak like this!

Chapter 1405 – Irreproachable Stupa

Chapter 1405 – Irreproachable Stupa

…

…

…

He was a disciple from a True Divinity Holy Land, and also the first place champion of the saints' First Martial Meeting…

The young human elites glanced at each other, dismay in their eyes. Just what sort of concept was a True Divinity disciple? They only had to think about the difference between an Empyrean descendant and a World King descendant; the disparity between a True Divinity descendant and an Empyrean descendant would be even greater than that.

As the human elites thought of this, they felt their hearts race in their chest. They wanted to once again repeat that they believed in Lin Ming, but the difference between humanity and the saints was far too great.

Let alone someone like the Good Fortune Saint Son, even this youth in front of them was not someone easy to deal with.

As the feather-robed woman saw the shock and dread on these young human elites' faces, she smiled. "Senior-apprentice Brother Naqi possesses the title of Imperial Prince from my saint race. Do you lot even know what the words Imperial Prince mean? That is a reward personally handed down from the Good Fortune Saint Emperor! If it weren't for Senior-apprentice Brother Naqi being much younger than Senior-apprentice Brother Wumo, then perhaps the title of Good Fortune Saint Son might have fallen into Senior-apprentice Brother Naqi's hands! Humph, with the arrival of the great calamity, the destiny of my saint race has been affected and now two great geniuses have been produced in my generation. Senior-apprentice Brother Naqi and Senior-apprentice Brother Wumo are the two most brilliant supernovas in this vast world, and the only disparity between them is due to their age!”

It was clear that this feather-robed woman worshipped this saint youth to a ridiculous degree. Her words caused all of the young human elites present to feel a tremendous amount of pressure.

The recent First Martial Meeting of humanity was the most splendid and prosperous one for the last 100 million years. In addition to Lin Ming, there was Xiao Moxian, Frost Dream, Hang Chi, Jun Bluemoon, and Dragon Fang, six great geniuses.

And this sort of situation had appeared because of the impending great calamity.

Since this had happened to humanity, how could it not be said that the destiny of the saint race wouldn’t also be affected by the great calamity and they would also produce geniuses that hadn’t been seen in a hundred million years?

Moreover, the inheritance of the saints was far superior to that of humanity. If they had anomalies appear within their ranks, then these geniuses might even be stronger than those of humanity.

“Let’s go, we’re returning to the Bright Luster World first to continue tempering ourselves. Afterwards, we’re going to take a little visit to humanity and see just what level the young elites of humanity have actually reached.”

The youth named Naqi casually said. Then, he picked up his weapon from the table and left the restaurant with the man and woman in tow.

“Senior-apprentice Naqi, are you saying that we are going to test the young elites of humanity?” The tall and dark-skinned man behind Naqi licked his lips, his heart beating faster.

"Yes, sooner or later the great war between my race and humanity will finally come to a head. Since the Empyreans cannot fight now, we shall start first! After all, since we're going to war in the future, we might as well start destroying their confidence now! If we can beat them now, then after a thousand years there won't be a problem at all! Moreover, this is also a great inspiration to my saint race!"

Naqi slowly said. Not only did he want to become famous throughout humanity and the saint race, but he also wanted to take this opportunity to increase the momentum of the saints.

"Haha, Senior-apprentice Brother Naqi is right. Because Senior-apprentice Brother Wumo's cultivation is too high, those other geniuses of humanity cannot follow him. That leaves only us to take action. If we can beat up all of their geniuses, then how will those humans have any courage left to fight with us? When that time comes, our fame in the Bright Luster Great World will rapidly rise. Perhaps the Saint Sovereign might even give us a great reward!"

The thin man said without any scruples. As he spoke, the human martial artists had an extremely ugly complexion.

These people had no respect for anyone at all. They treated all the human martial artists here like nothing but empty air.

"Let's leave!"

The several young saint elites left. Their goal was the Bright Luster World.

……………

After the negotiations between humanity and the saints ended, Lin Ming had gone into seclusion at Mount Potala.

Mount Potala had a long and glorious history. In terms of background and inheritance, they were without a doubt the number one ranked influence throughout all of humanity.

The various mountains, gardens, towers, corridors, monasteries, everything was covered with array formations. These array formations could be used to support one's training and even had the use of repelling evil spirits. Even the gardens amongst the ravines that had many spiritual plants arranged within them were layered with multiple array formations.

If Lin Ming cultivated here, it was no worse than cultivating at Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, Highest Ancestor invites you to an audience!" A martial path monk in loose linen robes appeared in front of Lin Ming. His palms were gathered together in prayer as he recited Buddhist chants.

"Highest Ancestor?" Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. The one who managed most daily matters at Mount Potala was not Emperor Shakya, nor was it Great Limitless Buddha. Rather, it was Grandmaster Soulsense, someone with a half-step Empyrean cultivation. The two other eminent monks had already gone into seclusion to deeply meditate on their martial arts. Of them, one was called Highest Ancestor and the other was called Highest Master.

Highest Ancestor naturally referred to Great Limitless Buddha. He had become renowned throughout the world a hundred million years ago, and was the highest ranked and most storied character of the current Mount Potala!

"Highest Ancestor has heard that Junior-apprentice Brother Lin will soon break into the middle Divine Transformation realm, so he would like to personally extend an invitation to Junior-apprentice Brother Lin to go to the Irreproachable Stupa to enlighten yourself upon the Emperor will, as well as accept a baptism of the Buddha will."

"Emperor will... Buddha will..." Lin Ming had never heard of these terms before. He nodded and said, "Then I ask Senior-apprentice Brother to lead the way."

Mount Potala had far too many ancient buildings. These ancient sites were often hundreds of millions of years old, or even billions of years old. The disciples of all previous eras of

Mount Potala had constantly reinforced the array formations here and repaired all the structures, preserving their full form and dignity. Now, not only was there no sense of decay at all, but there was instead an atmosphere of the endless river of time, making one feeling awe in their heart.

Lin Ming followed the martial artist through many winding corridors before he arrived at a large and spacious garden. The courtyard was paved with thick, weather-beaten bricks, each brick seeming like a thick tome that recorded the long and solemn history of Mount Potala.

“We’re here.”

The martial monk grasped his beads, spoke a few Buddhist mantras and then slowly retreated backwards.

In front of Lin Ming was a forest of gray pagodas.

These pagodas each had different numbers of layers, and each one was hundreds of feet high. They did not have the magnificent beauty of being carved from jade or crystal, but they still emitted a deep sense of dignity and virtue.

Before this forest of pagodas was an old monk. He wore loose linen robes and had a golden kasaya draped over his shoulder. His feet were covered with straw sandals, his earlobes were large and round, and his two white eyebrows were a foot long. He leaned on a thick monk staff with his right hand and he held a string of Buddhist beads in his left. There were seven of these Buddhist beads in total, six small and one large. Among them, the large one was pale white with a tint of red as if there was blood surging deep within it. It actually resembled an eyeball somewhat, making it seem a bit shocking.

This old monk was only casually standing there but it seemed as if he had merged into one with the world around him. If Lin Ming didn’t use his eyes but instead only used his sense, then he would never have discovered the existence of this old monk. Even though he was close at hand, it was impossible to sense him. This was an extremely strange and beguiling feeling.

This white-browed old man was Great Limitless Buddha of Mount Potala. Even if Divine Dream were to see him, she still had to politely refer to him as Senior.

“Junior Lin Ming greets Senior Great Limitless Buddha.”

Lin Ming respectfully nodded.

Great Limitless Buddha looked at Lin Ming and slowly nodded in return. Then, he simply said, “Starting from today, for seven through seven for 49 days, you will stay here.”

Great Limitless Buddha’s tone was elderly and his pace of speaking was extremely slow. If one listened to him, they might think he had some difficulties speaking due to his age.

“This place is...” Lin Ming remembered that the martial monk who led him here had referred to this place as Irreproachable Stupa.

“This is a cemetery of Mount Potala, a burial ground where all previous Buddhist monks and masters of Mount Potala who stepped into the Empyrean realm are interred. In these last 3.6 billion years, when eminent monks of Mount Potala have died, they have been cremated and their ashes condensed into relics. These relics are placed in pagoda boxes, buried together with their life magic tools. Thus, this forest of pagodas is named the Irreproachable Stupa as well as the Burial Stupa.”

As Great Limitless Buddha spoke to here, Lin Ming was startled.

The graves of all previous eminent monks of Mount Potala!

Mount Potala had a history of 3.6 billion years. In this vast period of time, it was impossible to calculate just how many extraordinary characters had appeared in their ranks!

Only those great and highly accomplished Zen masters had the qualifications to be buried at the Irreproachable Stupa after their deaths. With so many outstanding characters buried here, even if they had died so many years ago, their Buddhist will and Laws still existed here, never to fade away.

At some unknown time, Great Limitless Buddha had already floated away.

Lin Ming was left by himself, quietly feeling the surging will left behind in this pagoda forest.

He took several deep breaths, adjusting his mindset. Then, he bowed before the Irreproachable Stupa several times, his heart filled with sincere gratitude.

A martial artist could disrespect the heavens and defy the earth, but they had no choice but to respect the past heroes.

There was a total of 72 of these Buddhist pagodas!

This was a predetermined number. When the number of eminent monks buried here surpassed this number, then two of them would be buried in one pagoda.

Looking at this arrangement of Buddhist pagodas, it actually had a faint similarity to the 72 Sorcerer Pagodas of the Sky Spill Continent's Southern Wilderness. Of course, this Irreproachable Stupa was countless times more profound and intricate.

This also proved that the Sorcerer of the Southern Wildness originated from a Buddhist background. Moreover, he came from a subordinate sect of Mount Potala, one that shared their roots.

Some pagodas were high and some pagodas were low. The height of the pagodas also indicated the achievements of the monks buried within.

Lin Ming was well aware that this place where all previous eminent monks of Mount Potala were buried was absolutely its most sacred holy grounds. With so many great monks resting here in peace, normally no one would be allowed to disturb them.

If it weren't for the arrival of the great calamity and the unique situation brought about by that, then Great Limitless Buddha would never have allowed him here to enlighten himself upon the Buddhist will of so many past seniors of Mount Potala.

After adjusting his mindset to an ethereal state, Lin Ming walked towards the forest of pagodas with respect and dignity.

One step at a time, Lin Ming's speed was extremely slow.

After nine steps, Lin Ming would stop for a long time, allowing his heart to feel and take in everything around him.

1000 feet.

800 feet.

500 feet.

Lin Ming came closer and closer to the forest of pagodas. As the distance shrank, Lin Ming began to feel that the will coming from the forest of pagodas was increasingly powerful.

He felt a pain between his eyebrows like a needle was being stabbed there. All the blood within his body seemed to rush towards that point.

Grandmist battle spirit!

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. With a light howl, the grandmist battle spirit rushed out. A dark gold spear appeared in front of Lin Ming. And, the shaft of this spear was also tinted with a light blue color. This was the blue soul boundary; Lin Ming had used an extremely long time, constantly accumulating but still not managing to make a breakthrough.

At this moment, his battle spirit had long reached gold perfection and had touched upon the threshold of a blue soul battle spirit.

The difference between a gold battle spirit and a blue soul battle spirit was immense. Now, underneath this baptism of Buddhist will, Lin Ming could feel his battle spirit forcefully whistle. The blue hue of the battle spirit became increasingly vibrant!

This Buddhist will could temper a battle spirit!

Lin Ming wasn’t surprised at all. In the entire Divine Realm, only Mount Potala possessed a graveyard where so many supreme elders were buried. The will here was likely also the strongest within the entire Divine Realm!

Chapter 1406 – Imperial Prince Naqi

Chapter 1406 – Imperial Prince Naqi

…

…

…

Since ancient times, when peerless human powerhouses died they would often leave behind hidden legacies that they would wait for destined successors to inherit.

As for the skeletons of these unrivalled powerhouses, they were often buried in some far off and unknown place, or they simply destroyed their own bodies. This was because the corpse of a peerless powerhouse was in itself a priceless treasure.

Of these peerless powerhouses, which one hadn't swallowed up countless heavenly materials during their lives? Their flesh and blood essence was comparable to a divine treasure of the heaven and earth, their bones and meridian channels were inscribed with dao patterns and Law runes. If one dug up their corpses and perceived them, it wouldn't be inferior to chaos stones.

Because of these reasons, peerless powerhouses wouldn't be buried in obvious tombs in order to prevent others from digging up their corpses after their deaths to refine pills, or be taken by others as objects to be perceived.

Only a sect like Mount Potala that had existed for 3.6 billion years, with a deep background that had reached unfathomable depths, could possess the ability to inter these skeletons at the Irreproachable Stupa to preserve them and allow these eminent monks to rest in peace within these Buddhist pagodas.

It could be imagined that the Buddhist bone relics in these pagodas were treasures amongst treasures.

As Lin Ming constantly neared the gathering of pagodas, he could hear faint Buddhist chants reverberate between the heavens and the earth. Shimmering golden Buddhist runes fluttered in the skies, bringing together all sorts of wonderful sights.

At this moment, Lin Ming could feel all the blood and true essence within his body boil up with excitement. His heart beat in tandem with the flow of Buddhist runes.

Hum –

The grandmist battle spirit trembled.

Lin Ming could feel the complete will within his body being baptized.

300 feet!

200 feet!

100 feet!

Lin Ming finally arrived in front of the forest of pagodas. A living Empyrean could conceal their own aura and also keep their battle spirit hidden within their spiritual sea, dormant until it was activated. For instance, Empyrean Divine Dream could appear like a completely ordinary mortal woman if she so chose.

But for an Empyrean that died, everything would return to nature. If a martial artist was lacking in will, it would be impossible for them to withstand the cleansing of the Irreproachable Stupa.

Lin Ming arrived at the first pagoda of the Irreproachable Stupa. This pagoda was eight stories high. In Buddhism, the most basic function of a Buddhist pagoda was a grave. It was used to bury the remains of the preeminent monks and their relics.

The doors to this pagoda began to open.

Lin Ming deeply bowed before entering the pagoda.

Looking all around, at the center of this pagoda was a relic. This relic was flat and wide, shaped like an oval. This relic was extremely different from what Lin Ming imagined relics to look like.

The remains of an eminent monk were normally buried in a chamber beneath the pagoda. But, this relic was actually placed in the center of the ground floor hall, revealed to the world without any jade box sealing it.

Looking down, there were a stone tablet beneath this relic with some words inscribed upon it. "Benevolent King, born 800 million years after the great calamity. He managed Mount Potala, and possessed an Empyrean cultivation. He became a monk at six years of age. His talent was extraordinary and his memory was wonderful. He studied the 300 Buddhist scriptures, and before 20 years of age, he did not practice martial arts at all, but fully invested himself in comprehending the dharma of Buddhism. The light of awakening came down to him and Benevolent King's body was reborn through nirvana, and from that point on he condensed a Buddha body. That is the stage of Life Destruction…"

As Lin Ming read this description, he was incomparably astonished. The stone tablet recorded that Benevolent King didn't study any martial arts cultivation method before he was 20 years old, and only meditated on the Buddhist scriptures. Even so, after that, his mortal body was reborn through nirvana, condensing into a Buddha body. That was the same stage as Life Destruction.

If this was true, then the path of Buddhism was far too mysterious and miraculous.

Further down, the stone tablet recorded the various achievements of Benevolent King. In addition, at the very bottom there was a brief string of words, "If I can preach to the infallible, then after I perish within my fires, let my tongue remain forever."

These several words seemed gentle and quiet, like an ordinary sentence, but they actually emitted a deep and powerful momentum. Just by looking at them one felt the impulse to pray in worship and accept a baptism of Buddhism with all their heart.

This sort of feeling was only comparable to what Lin Ming had felt when he read the words that Empyrean Primordius left behind in the Eternal Demon Abyss. “The masterless rivers of star in the endless cosmos, I shall rewrite the infinite history!”

“These words should be Benevolent King’s own. And from their meaning, they should also be his last words.”

Lin Ming thought. The meaning behind these words was that if the teachings he passed on were without mistake, then once his mortal body perished and he burned away in the fires, let his tongue not be burnt to nothing.

The flames that Mount Potala used to cremate their eminent monks were not normal fire, but divine fire composed of the complete nine level Concepts of the Fire Laws. Normally, once an essence gathering system martial artist died, their origin energy would dissipate, leaving behind a spirit body that simply wasn’t able to withstand the blaze of this divine fire. But, these eminent monks were actually able to leave behind relics through the flames.

As Lin Ming thought of this, his mind stirred. He looked up towards the relic at the center of the pagoda. Looking closer, this flat relic actually resembled a tongue.

“When Benevolent King died, his tongue was actually left remaining and turned into a relic. Really, his words came true…”

As Lin Ming looked at this relic, his heart was shaken. It was unknown just what boundary this eminent monk had reached in his life; it should have been a level even higher than Great Limitless Buddha.

Lin Ming continued to look. He discovered that behind this stone tablet was also a section of scriptures.

These scriptures were not martial arts heart mantras, but pure Buddhist passages. Lin Ming held a heart of reverent awe as he read this passage from beginning to end.

In calming the mind, one could also further their understanding of Concepts.

Lin Ming stayed at the Irreproachable Stupa of Benevolent King for three whole days. Then, he left.

He moved towards the next Irreproachable Stupa.

This Irreproachable Stupa also had a stone tablet. The words carved upon it were, "Jiu Moye. He was born one billion and 80 million years after the great calamity. He shaved his head, undergoing tonsure at three years of age…

"…He died one billion and 90 million years after the great calamity. After his death, his ashes were divided into 48,000 parts, each integrated into the bricks of this Buddhist pagoda, becoming one with the Irreproachable Stupa. This pagoda is spiritual; without anyone refining it, it became an Empyrean spirit treasure…"

Lin Ming read onwards. Grandmaster Jiu Moye had also left behind his last words. "To respect all life, my heart shines as bright as a mirror. When my body returns to the earth, give my heart to all living creatures."

These last words also gave Lin Ming some enlightenments. When Grandmaster Jiu Moye's mortal body was burned away, his heart that was as bright and clear as a mirror was left behind for all living creatures. His achievements were no worse than those of Benevolent King's.

He stayed in Jiu Moye's Irreproachable Stupa for another three full days.

He continued to the next Irreproachable Stupa. As time passed, Lin Ming looked at the life history of these eminent Buddhist monks, experiencing their life and accepting a baptism of their will.

During this period of time, Lin Ming's cultivation didn't rise by much. But, his soul actually went through a subtle transformation, and the grandmist battle spirit within him also became increasingly blue…

……….

As Lin Ming was enlightening himself within the Irreproachable Stupas, there was actually a storm of blood and slaughter occurring on the Bright Luster Great World, with countless deaths and battles.

Many heroic young elites flocked towards the Bright Luster Great World to temper themselves on that battlefield of slaughter.

There were some people that made breakthroughs at the precipice of life and death, their cultivation rapidly rising. There were even those that obtained the treasures and secrets of the dead, making great strides in their progress.

But, there were even more people that died. They were burnt to ashes without even a skeleton remaining.

And among these corpses, there was a name that rose in splendor.

That was… Imperial Prince Naqi!

With a late Divine Transformation level cultivation, he could fight a Holy Lord!

He could instantly kill the weakest of Holy Lords. And even against a strong Holy Lord, he still had the means to preserve his life.

This degree of talent was simply too alarming. It had to be known that on the Bright Luster Great World, the highest cultivation martial artists on the battlefield were Holy Lords. In other words, it would be extremely difficult for Imperial Prince Naqi to meet an opponent who could threaten his life.

Many missions that were aimed specifically at him failed, one after another. Once, over a dozen powerhouses couldn’t withstand this shame and joined forces to kill Naqi, in order to strengthen the momentum of humanity and also make a name for themselves.

But afterwards, not only did their trap fail, but Naqi instead killed five of them. They were forced to retreat in disastrous defeat!

Following that battle, Naqi’s fame rose, shaking the world like an earthquake. Beside him was also a feather-robed woman and a dark and tall thin youth. Although they were weaker than Naqi, they weren’t common geniuses of their generation either.

If a normal peak Divine Lord martial artist were to run into them, they wouldn’t be a match at all!

“I heard that Imperial Prince Naqi was the first place champion in the saint race’s First Martial Meeting!”

“Yes, Naqi is nearly from the same batch of geniuses as Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, and Frost Dream. This is a great coincidence. I heard that because of the great calamity, there were many rising talents in the saint race’s most recent First Martial Meeting, with countless masters rising together! And, this Naqi is also the direct disciple of the saint race’s True Divinity powerhouse, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. This title of Imperial Prince was also passed down from the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!”

On the battlefield of the Bright Luster Great World, several human martial artists were talking about Naqi.

It was impossible for these humans to hold a candle to the reputation of a True Divinity disciple. After all, most of these people here were geniuses from ordinary Holy Lands. They were four or five levels different from a True Divinity disciple; there was no comparison at all.

For these months, the Good Fortune Saint Son had gone into seclusion. Because of the contract between the humans and the saints, humans weren’t allowed to attack the Good

Fortune Saint Son, otherwise the balance at the Bright Luster Great World would be toppled. As for the saint race, they also agreed with this condition.

Thus, when the younger but equally talented Naqi appeared, rolling over the battlefield of the Bright Luster Great World was the same as turning over his palm!

This caused many human geniuses to be cautious with all their actions lest they meet Naqi. With their strength, they were the same as dead people if they were to stumble into Naqi! Moreover, their deaths would be worthless because they couldn't put up any resistance at all.

"Not only is there Naqi, but that feather robe woman and that bamboo-like man that follow him around are also top ten ranked characters of the saints' First Martial Meeting. They come from a True Divinity Holy Land too! If we encounter them, we must run as far away as we can."

"How come several top ranked champions of the saint's First Martial Meeting have appeared at the Bright Luster Great World battlefield, but you can't even see the shadow of our human race's First Martial Meeting geniuses!"

"Yah! What are they doing, are they still closed up in seclusion? How could that help them grow faster than life or death slaughters on the battlefield? Are they not coming out because they are scared?"

It was unknown who was speaking, but many martial artists glowered in his direction.

"Just what crap are you spouting!"

Some people immediately shut him down. The human race and saint race were mortal blood enemies. At this time, who could ruin the momentum of their own race?

Even so, although no one said it, there were some people who thought that the geniuses of humanity's First Martial Meeting were too afraid to appear on the Bright Luster Great World because of Naqi. After all, one was an Empyrean descendant and the other was a True Divinity descendant; they were an entire boundary apart.

“Don’t speak so casually. I heard that Dragon Fang, Hang Chi, and the others have already entered the Bright Luster Great World. As for Frost Dream, she has entered some mystic realm with Empyrean Divine Dream so she can’t appear for some time. I have no idea what Lin Ming is doing, but he should still be deep in seclusion at Mount Potala…”

Chapter 1407 – Enlightenment Beneath the Bodhi Tree

Chapter 1407 – Enlightenment Beneath the Bodhi Tree

…

…

…

“Grandmaster Yuanji, born 2.61 billion years after the great calamity and died 2.7 billion years afterwards. He had an Empyrean realm cultivation and was an abbot of Mount Potala…”

Lin Ming quietly read the inscription on a stone tablet before perceiving the Buddhist scriptures upon it. A day later, when he came out from this Irreproachable Stupa, he discovered that this was already the last one.

Lin Ming didn’t know how long he stayed in this forest of pagodas. After he left, he felt that his divine sense had reached an unprecedented state of purity, filled with wisdom.

As he stared within this forest of pagodas for days and nights, he experienced the samsara of many lives, gaining insight into life.

“Mm… this is…”

As Lin Ming left the forest of pagodas, the surrounding scene had undergone some strange and inexplicable change.

Within the 72 Irreproachable Stupas was a pure land of ultimate bliss.

This was an extremely beautiful land. Spirit springs trickled through brooks and flowers and plants bloomed everywhere. Walking here, one seemed to arrive in a paradise of heaven.

In the skies, flower petals danced in the air, filling the world with auspicious bursts of shimmering colors.

And in the center of this paradise was a unique spirit tree.

There were many spirit trees in this utopia, but this tree was special; it immediately attracted Lin Ming's eyes.

It wasn't too thick nor was it too tall. It was only 40-50 feet high.

But, the trunk of the tree was like a powerful and vibrant divine dragon that grasped its claws deep into the earth.

This tree trunk was ancient. The bark was cracked and the hollow of the tree seemed to have experienced endless years before growing into such an appearance.

On the crown of this tree, most leaves were already faded away, leaving only several hundred still hanging on the branches. Although they were scattered, these hundreds of leaves were still luscious green, glistening with a healthy light like they were carved from jade.

Standing in front of this ancient divine tree, Lin Ming could feel an inexplicable peace amidst a deep and ancient aura.

Lin Ming felt something stir in his mind. He walked underneath this tree and carefully sat down. At this moment, he could inexplicably feel the aura of Buddhism envelop him.

Looking up, every green leaf danced around like a little fairy. Lines ran all over the trunk, containing the infinite charm of the Great Dao. Lin Ming didn't doubt that even if a mortal with an extremely poor perception was to sit under this ancient tree they could also enter an ethereal state and achieve supreme enlightenment.

Bodhi Tree…

The name of this tree flashed through Lin Ming's mind.

Lin Ming was 15 years old when he first stepped onto the road of martial arts. He entered the Seven Profound Martial House, and the first teacher he had there was a Martial House Instructor, Hong Xi.

Hong Xi had told Lin Ming about a fable he once heard.

In the legends, 3000 years ago in the Sky Spill Continent, there once existed a peerless genius named Emperor Shakya. Emperor Shakya sat underneath a Bodhi Tree for seven days and seven nights, fusing seven different martial intents into one and achieving supreme enlightenment. He had broken through the shackles of martial arts, cultivation and indestructible vajra body before breaking through the void for his martial path and ascending to the Divine Realm.

To the Lin Ming at that time, this legend had only been a legend. Whether it was ascending to the Divine Realm or fusing together seven different martial intents, all of this was simply fanciful stories, impossible matters.

He had even been suspicious of whether this legend was true or false. In the legends, Emperor Shakya had used a mere seven days and seven nights of enlightenment to break through his bottleneck of martial arts, allowing his cultivation to wildly rise by several large boundaries. This was a nearly unbelievable story. It had to be known that in the Sky Spill Continent, when going from Revolving Core to Life Destruction and Life Destruction to Divine Sea, these great bottlenecks could stop a person for thousands of years, or even their entire lifetime. For Emperor Shakya to suddenly jump through several realms of cultivation was simply too exaggerated.

But it was only recently Lin Ming realized that this legend left behind in the past, a mystery of unknown origins, was actually a riddle. The low-key Buddhist Emperor Shakya was in truth an Empyrean of Mount Potala.

Moreover, he was the youngest Empyrean of humanity. He had used a mere 10,000-20,000 years of cultivation to reach the realm of an Empyrean. His future was limitless.

For such a character, jumping past several lower realms and fusing together seven different martial intents was nothing at all.

Moreover, it was said that Emperor Shakya had sent out a billion incarnations to the three thousand worlds to experience a billion lives. Even now, most of these avatars had yet to return.

If Emperor Shakya received all of his avatars, then perhaps his strength would rise to yet another level. At that time, it would be hard to tell just who was weaker or stronger between him and Divine Dream.

Bodhi Tree… seven martial intents fused as one…

Lin Ming sat in meditation. Currently, the martial intents he knew were the samsara martial intent, ethereal martial intent, and Primordius martial intent, the last of which included the Heavenly Demon martial intent, Heavenly Mortal martial intent, and Heavenly God martial intent.

But in fact, even though Lin Ming had closed up for several years in Primordius Heavenly Palace, he still hadn't been able to fuse together the Heavenly Demon, Heavenly Mortal, and Heavenly God martial intents.

In addition, Empyrean Divine Dream's divine dream space and Empyrean Divine Seal's black hole horizon could both be considered martial intents.

If a martial intent had to be explained, it was a Concept of martial arts that came from the martial artist themselves. What it corresponded to were the Laws. Laws originated from the universe and were a martial artist's understanding of the universe's rules.

When everything was considered, Lin Ming actually had seven different kinds of martial intents.

But, to completely fuse these seven different kinds of martial intents together was more difficult than climbing to the heavens!

This was because, of his martial intents, five of them were peak transcendent divine mights. In fact, the black hole horizon left behind by Empyrean Divine Seal had likely surpassed the category of a transcendent divine might.

To fuse them together was to endure a thousand sufferings and 10,000 hardships.

As Lin Ming sat beneath the Bodhi Tree, he soon entered a complete ethereal state.

Time passed day by day. Lin Ming remained motionless, like a sculpture in a garden.

Every day, there would be a crystalline leaf that gently fell down from the Bodhi Tree. As it fell onto Lin Ming's body, it would drip with a verdant green.

Occasionally there would be a Bodhi seed that fell down. These fingernail-sized Bodhi seeds were completely covered with ancient patterns that weaved together into images of Buddha, lifelike and spiritual.

The Bodhi leaves and Bodhi seeds would eventually turn into crystalline motes of light that fused into Lin Ming's body.

The Buddhist scriptures and Buddhist comprehensions that Lin Ming studied began to slowly swirl within him, fusing with his spiritual sea.

The samsara martial intent that was within Lin Ming's spiritual sea had faded away. It turned into a pure flow of energy that converged onto the Primordius martial intent. The ethereal martial intent was also the same.

All of these changes were sublimated within Lin Ming's soul, becoming purely lucid.

Like this, Lin Ming sat beneath the Bodhi Tree for 33 days.

33 days later, Lin Ming's eyes flashed open.

With an incomparably loud whistling sound, a spear-shaped battle spirit the color of blue jade howled into the air, circling in the air before returning to Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

As for Lin Ming's aura, it suddenly exploded outwards like an army of galloping horses!

His strength had greatly increased. The bottleneck of the early Divine Transformation realm had long been shattered by Lin Ming during these last 33 days!

Middle Divine Transformation realm!

Blue soul battle spirit!

As Lin Ming rose up from beneath the Bodhi Tree, he felt as if the entire world was different.

His soul had undergone a nirvana, and his martial intents had been thoroughly smoothed out.

Heavenly Demon, Heavenly Mortal, Heavenly God, these three martial intents had fused into the complete Primordius martial intent. As for the samsara martial intent and ethereal martial intent, they had also fused with it.

It was only the black hole horizon and divine dream space that Lin Ming wasn't able to fuse together. But even so, his understandings of these two martial intents were much clearer than before.

"Congratulations, Benefactor Lin."

At this time, an old voice sounded out in Lin Ming's ears.

Lin Ming perked up and he respectfully bowed. "Junior greets Senior Great Limitless Buddha."

In this moment, the land of pure utopia began to blur. A form slowly walked in from the edge, becoming gradually clearer.

This old monk with the white eyebrows and large earlobes was Great Limitless Buddha.

"Benefactor Lin, this old monk originally agreed to allow you to stay in the Irreproachable Stupa for seven by seven, 49 days, but Benefactor Lin has been in enlightenment under the Bodhi Tree for 33 days..."

Lin Ming was startled. As he was gaining insights within the Irreproachable Stupa he had entered a completely ethereal condition and had long forgotten about the seven by seven, 49 day deadline that Great Limitless Buddha had set for him.

"My apologies. Because this junior was reading the scriptures, I momentarily lost my wits and forgot the time."

"No harm. If Benefactor Lin can stay here for such a long time and even see the pure lands of ultimate bliss and meditate beneath the Bodhi Tree, that is your Buddhist faith, and a good deed. Empyrean Divine Dream entrusted this old monk to help temper you and enhance your strength as much as possible, and this old monk can be considered as barely having accomplished that. Of course, this mainly depends on Benefactor Lin's own ability."

"I thank Senior." Lin Ming felt a heartfelt gratefulness. He was extremely lucky. Even though he didn't have any background at all, he was still able to study the essence of Empyrean Primordius, Empyrean Divine Dream, and Empyrean Divine Seal's inheritances: the true inheritances of two peak Empyreans and a True Divinity powerhouse.

Now, he had even been able to grasp some insights of Mount Potala, an influence with a 3.6 billion year background.

In the Divine Realm, there were no other Empyrean disciples that were able to experience such things and have such lucky chances.

In addition, Empyrean Divine Dream was willing to support him with any resources at her disposal. Currently, in terms of resources, he was no worse than any top Empyrean disciple.

Lin Ming thanked all of these supreme elders that helped him from the depths of his heart.

“Very well, Benefactor Lin, the battle at the Bright Luster Great World has grown fierce. In order for a genius to grow, it is impossible to seclude yourself forever to cultivate into an Empyrean. You must go to the Bright Luster Great World and walk your own road of martial arts!”

As Great Limitless Buddha spoke, he waved the sleeves of his robe. Lin Ming felt space blur around him, and in the next moment he had appeared at the entrance of Mount Potala.

Thinking about it, since the First Martial Meeting had concluded, eight or nine years had passed in the blink of an eye.

In this long period of time, Lin Ming had experienced only a handful of battles. He had fought several times at Demondawn World and had also been chased down by Tian Mingzi to the Sky Spill Continent.

For the rest of that time, Lin Ming had been closed up in training. He had trained in Divine Dream Heavenly Palace for one year and Primordius Heavenly Palace for four years. After returning to the Divine Realm, he had also cultivated for another three some years.

In this long span of time, Lin Ming had gone from the peak of the middle Divine Sea realm to the middle Divine Transformation realm. That was a full boundary of cultivation that he had overcome.

All of his previous accumulations had exploded out at once.

Lin Ming’s steps moved and he appeared hundreds of miles away. He stepped on space, flying away. In the air, Lin Ming took out the Primordius Heavenly Palace that had been shrunk by hundreds and thousands of times. His figure turned into a beam of light that flew into it. Then, Primordius Heavenly Palace turned into a soaring comet that flew towards the Bright Luster Great World!

During this great calamity, there was a treaty in place which stated that besides the Bright Luster Great World, fighting was off limits in the other 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm. Even so, Lin Ming intended to be careful. The defenses of Primordius Heavenly Palace were much stronger than those of any ordinary spirit ship.

As for how high profile and glaring Primordius Heavenly Palace was, Lin Ming completely ignored it, not bothering with hiding anymore. In jumping over a boundary and a half to challenge the Good Fortune Saint Son to a duel 100 years from now, his actions could not be any more high profile.

Chapter 1408 – Witchplume, Blacksalt

Chapter 1408 – Witchplume, Blacksalt

…

…

…

North Soar Great World, Bright Soar Planet –

As the large planet closest to the Bright Luster Great World, Bright Soar Planet became increasingly busy. There were countless martial artists passing through there every day.

On this day, a young man wearing a bamboo hat arrived at the Bright Soar Planet.

He wore tight-fitting black clothes and the bamboo hat was tugged down, hiding his eyes. Within the thronging crowd, he appeared extremely common. But, if one carefully observed him, they would notice that there seemed to be an invisible force field surrounding him. Even on the busy streets, there wasn't a single person that bumped into him.

This black-clothed young man was Lin Ming.

As he walked forwards, he could see that the restaurants, medicinal stores, weapon and armor shops, and all other businesses were booming with customers. In particular, the shops that sold one-time use talismans were nearly overrun with eager martial artists.

"The Divine Realm is too large, there are simply too many martial artists."

Lin Ming sighed. On this street, any one of these people could be considered an outstanding young genius of a Holy Land. Many of them were at least on the level of Phoenix Cry Palace's White Daohong that Lin Ming had seen in the past.

Back then, White Daohong had been the idol of many young disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. But if he were placed here, he would simply be lost in the crowd.

White Cloud Bistro was one of the largest and most successful restaurants on the Bright Soar Planet. This business was part of the North Soar Great World's World King Holy Land, and the restaurant itself was a spirit artifact. It had been located here for an extremely long period of time and the inner furnishings were incomparably opulent. The meals were exquisite, and they were all wonderful spirit foods and spirit wines that benefited a martial artist's cultivation. Of course, none of this came cheap, but even so, the young elites that gathered at Bright Soar Planet were able to afford the sky high prices.

At this time, on a floor of the restaurant, seven or eight martial artists were loudly speaking.

"Haha, we're not bragging at all here. On the Bright Luster Great World's Whiteheart Planet, the seven of us were surrounded by over a dozen of those saint mongrels. But, not only did they not kill us, but they were instead cut down by our Seven Star Formation! We killed nine of those saint mongrels and the remaining five were left scurrying away with their tails between their legs! In this war I've already obtained 3000 merit points!"

In the middle of the hall, a martial artist with a thick and full beard was enthusiastically boasting.

However, the people around him were all laughing. One of them mercilessly taunted him, saying, "I must say Tiny Hammer, you keep blowing your so-called heroic exploits to ridiculous levels so often that even we are finding it hard to stand. We might as well talk about the great bloodbath that will be occurring on the Chaotic Blood Continent soon."

"That's right, the battle on the Chaotic Blood Continent will be tomorrow, but what a pity that we don't have enough merit points to go take a look. I hear that Hang Chi and Dragon Fang are the ones fighting this time!"

"Humph, that Imperial Prince Naqi is too arrogant, he doesn't even think that he needs to fight the geniuses of my human race. As for that Good Fortune Saint Son, even though he agreed to fight Lin Ming 100 years from now, that is only because the situation was special at the time so he had no choice but to agree. Normally, the Good Fortune Saint Son would only take him as a barking dog and wouldn't bother to respond to him at all.

As the topic of Naqi was brought up, the boisterous discussion in the restaurant immediately dimmed down. The 20 some heroic young elites that were drinking or eating suddenly had a strange complexion cross their faces. Many were angry, but there were also many that seemed to feel some dread.

"Naqi?"

Lin Ming's mind stirred. He vaguely remembered this name and also had an impression towards Naqi, because he had absorbed the memories of the dead saint World King.

This Naqi was the first place champion of the saint race's most recent Divine Sea First Martial Meeting. In terms of talent, he wasn't much lower than the Good Fortune Saint Son. The only reason he was weaker was because of the difference in their ages.

From the memories of the dead saint World King, Lin Ming could see that he had an extremely high opinion of this Imperial Prince Naqi.

"I see, so he was the first place champion of the saint race's First Martial Meeting. He truly does have the qualifications to be arrogant." Lin Ming's eyes dimmed down. He swished the wine in his glass, saying, "They really think I'm just some barking dog. In the eyes of the saint race, humans are nothing but lambs to be butchered..."

As Lin Ming thought this, his eyes glinted with a cold light.

"This Imperial Prince Naqi is arrogant, but he indeed possesses the ability to be arrogant. I wonder if there is a chance that he will fight Lin Ming or Frost Dream!"

It wasn't known who said that, but the young human elites here immediately fell silent.

If the humans were compared to the saints, then they really did fall short. Even though they were all champions of the First Martial Meeting, everyone always felt that the human champions were weaker than the saint champions.

Of course, it was impossible for them to truthfully say out loud that humans were weaker than saints, thus everyone remained silent.

"We'll have to look at the results of Hang Chi and Dragon Fang's battle. But, Hang Chi's opponent isn't Naqi, because Naqi simply didn't bother with accepting his challenge..."

"Hang Chi is absolutely weaker than Naqi. In the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, he only came third. Compared to Lin Ming and Frost Dream, the disparity between them is considerable. I have no idea what Lin Ming is doing right now. I heard that he is closed up in seclusion at Mount Potala, but at this time, how could closing up in cultivation help him grow faster than fighting on the actual battlefield!"

Some martial artists grumpily said. It was true that Lin Ming had been in seclusion for a long time. The great calamity had already begun over half a year ago, but Lin Ming still hadn't left Mount Potala.

"Even if Lin Ming or Frost Dream challenged Naqi, he still might not agree. That fellow always acts as if he's above everyone else, as if there is no genius in humanity that has the capital to challenge him. If I had to say it rudely, he was looking down at all of them. Even then, if they challenged him, it would be fine if they could battle to a draw. But if they lost..."

The martial artist speaking quieted down. Everyone's complexions turned ugly.

Frost Dream and Lin Ming were the future hopes of mankind. This was particularly true for Lin Ming, who had to settle his grudge with the Good Fortune Saint Son in a hundred years. If he lost to Naqi here, then that would be so sad that it wasn't funny at all.

“If Lin Ming didn’t come to the Bright Luster Great World, that is probably a wise decision on his part. His background is shallow and he requires time to gather himself and improve. He is also much younger than Naqi.”

“That’s right, Lin Ming is younger so being weaker now doesn’t matter at all.”

Some people found psychological comfort in this and changed the topic to Lin Ming’s age. In Lin Ming’s age group, the only one comparable to him was Xiao Moxian.

As Lin Ming listened to these people speaking, he breathed out a long depressed sigh. Was he really pitiful to such a degree? Did others really need to use his age as an excuse to feel better about themselves?

“This Naqi, I must pay a little attention to him. Since he feels that challenging the geniuses of humanity disgraces his title of Imperial Prince, then I’ll have to see just what worth he has!”

Lin Ming stood up. He left behind a small bag of violet sun stones, put on his bamboo hat and then left the restaurant.

The goal that he had decided for himself was to surpass the Good Fortune Saint Son in 100 years.

In several hundred years, he had to reach an Empyrean level of strength.

A thousand years from now, when the war between the humans and the saints truly erupted, Lin Ming had to reach a half-step True Divinity level of strength.

This was strength, not cultivation.

As for what boundary Lin Ming’s strength would reach at that time, it was hard to foresee.

Wanting to break into the Empyrean realm within a thousand years wasn’t easy. After all, even the current youngest Empyrean, Emperor Shakya, had spent 10,000-20,000 years in order to break past the Empyrean bottleneck.

3.6 billion years ago during the era of Empyrean Divine Seal, there were likely many young elites that had become Empyreans at a young age, but they also probably required several thousand years.

A thousand year time limit was far too challenging.

The road of an Empyrean was far too difficult. Even for those extremely talented characters, there was still a chance that they would be stuck at this step.

As for whether or not a Great World King realm martial artist could compare with a half-step True Divinity, that wasn't something that Lin Ming could guess at all.

In short, the future was filled with unpredictable mysteries. Each lucky chance that he needed to encounter was also an unknown. Without reaching that step, it was impossible for Lin Ming to guess just what level his strength would reach.

But for his current goal, what he needed was to overcome the Good Fortune Saint Son within 100 years.

He needed to use the vast pressure and brief golden age brought about by the great calamity to overcome his limits and create a miracle for himself!

Lin Ming stepped forwards, passing hundreds to a thousand miles in a flash. Right now, by relying on his understandings into the Concept of Space, he could already use void transfer to move through the Divine Realm. Of course, this was still far slower than a spirit ship.

He took out the Primordius Heavenly Palace from his spatial ring and transformed the shape of it. Then, by riding the Primordius Heavenly Palace, he flew towards the Bright Luster Great World at rapid speeds.

Two hours later, at some point within the broad and endless Bright Luster Great World, there was a fluctuation in space as ripples appeared. A gray palace shot out from these ripples, rapidly flying forwards!

Primordius Heavenly Palace was countless times faster than an ordinary spirit ship. Even so, the Divine Realm was far too large. Wanting to cross through a great world within a single day was a bit difficult.

And as Lin Ming was flying, the great battle atop the Chaotic Blood Continent had begun!

The Chaotic Blood Continent was not a planet, but a massive continent that floated in the starry skies above the Bright Luster Great World. This continent was extremely strange. Normally, in a Divine Realm Great World, only the central mainland was able to defy physics and maintain a floating continental shape. As for the other floating continents, if they were too large, they would collapse under their own gravitational force and form a sphere, becoming a planet.

Rumors said that the Chaotic Blood Continent was not naturally formed, but created by the hands of a man in ancient times. This mysterious figure was said to have been an extreme Empyrean or even a True Divinity powerhouse, but whatever they were, they had used their infinite supernatural abilities to form this floating continent and then kept its shape fixed with a grand array formation. As for what the reason had been for creating this continent, it was unknown.

On this continent, all the influences were mixed up together and there were endless wars all year round. Because of this, the smell of blood and the sounds of chaos filled the air at all times, and the Chaotic Blood Continent had gained its fame like this.

At this time, within the central area of the Chaotic Blood Continent, there was a mountain hundreds of thousands of feet high. This mountain had been sliced off near the middle, and the upper half had been completely flattened, forming a massive platform.

Gathered on this giant platform were many human powerhouses as well as saint race powerhouses.

Among these powerhouses were also many Great World Kings and half-step Empyreans.

According to the conditions of the treaty, these people could not take action on the Bright Luster Great World. The only reason they appeared here was because a great battle would soon erupt and draw the attention of all eyes.

The two battling parties were the top 10 extreme geniuses of the human and saint races' respective First Martial Meetings.

There would be a total of two battles.

The first match was the sixth placed martial artist of the saint race's First Martial Meeting versus the sixth placed martial artist of the humans' First Martial Meeting.

This was Witchplume against Dragon Fang.

The second match was the saint race's fifth placed martial artist against the humans' third placed martial artist.

This was Blacksalt against Hang Chi.

Witchplume and Blacksalt were both fellow junior disciples of Naqi. The three of them often appeared together.

With humanity and the saints having fought to this point, although the saints had gained an upper hand so far, humans had also won many battles. With both sides having their own victories and defeats, no one refused to accept being the loser.

This was especially true for hot-blooded young elites who were filled with vigor and daring.

The battles between the two sides became increasingly intense and the slaughter grew increasingly wild. Thus, it was unavoidable that there would be a battle between the peak geniuses of the saints and the humans!

By determining who was stronger between these peak geniuses, that would equally prove which race was stronger and which race was weaker!

Chapter 1409 – The Chaotic Blood War

Chapter 1409 – The Chaotic Blood War

…

…

…

This battlefield on Chaotic Blood Continent was called Ash Blood Mountain. This was once an ancient battlefield where countless martial artists perished and continued to die.

On Ash Blood Mountain's sheared off mountaintop, there were currently tens of thousands of people.

These tens of thousands of people were all the most extraordinary of youths, the elites among the elite geniuses. They either had astonishing backgrounds, were extremely strong, or had accomplished remarkable feats and obtained enough merit points, otherwise they wouldn't have the qualifications to come and watch the battle here. After all, the space was extremely limited atop Ash Blood Mountain.

Walking atop Ash Blood Mountain, one could see young elites of World King Holy Lands everywhere. Even Empyrean descendants weren't uncommon.

These people were often 50 or 60 years old, but their cultivation had stepped into the Divine Transformation realm and was making great progress towards the Divine Lord realm. If they were just a bit older then they might have broken through to the Divine Lord boundary and would have been outstanding characters amongst all Divine Lords, even possessing the ability to fight with ordinary Holy Lords. In the Divine Lord realm, they would have already been considered amongst the highest peaks with rarely a rival to challenge them.

“Hang Chi has arrived!”

“It’s really Hang Chi!”

Everyone turned to see a bald monk youth in white linen robes treading forwards on the wind. His expression was calm and indifferent as he held a string of prayer beads in his hand. Even though he knew he was going to experience a frigid and dangerous battle today, he still calmly arrived here.

“Hang Chi comes from Mount Potala, so his natural character is to not raise disputes with other. I never imagined that he would be forced to participate in this duel today.”

“Yes, according to the temperament of Mount Potala’s high monks, they wouldn’t normally participate in such duels. But, this is something that involves the glory of humanity, and the Buddhist path is also humanity’s Buddhist path. What the saints follow is the demonic path, and if Buddhism was to ever come into conflict with demonic beings, they would never give way! Moreover, this duel was first provoked by the saints. If no one were to come, then my human race would truly have no one!”

The battle of Chaotic Blood Continent had been started by the fifth ranked martial artist of the saint race’s First Martial Meeting, Blacksalt.

Blacksalt followed Imperial Prince Naqi about, causing a wave of slaughter and terror all over the Bright Luster Great World. After his reputation shot up, he challenged Lin Ming.

This was because Blacksalt couldn’t stand the fact that Lin Ming had challenged the Good Fortune Saint Son. In his opinion, for Lin Ming to challenge the Good Fortune Saint Son was the same as insulting him.

But afterwards, Lin Ming simply didn’t enter the Bright Luster Great World. Thus, even though Blacksalt had sent out a challenge, Lin Ming was naturally unable to accept it. Because of this, Blacksalt became increasingly rampant and reckless, shouting out to all that Lin Ming was a little scared cat who didn’t have the courage to receive his challenge.

In order to not disgrace the dignity of humanity, Dragon Fang and Hang Chi had received this challenge.

After Hang Chi arrived, a black-clothed youth with a long sword hanging over his shoulder followed him. This young man was Dragon Fang.

After a nine year absence, Dragon Fang had become even deeper and more restrained. He was like a treasure sword hidden in a chest. Although his sharp edge wasn't obvious, once he was drawn out, his blade could instantly take another's life.

"I heard that Dragon Fang was at the Asura Road for the last nine years."

"I have no idea what sort of place that is. I've only heard that entering that land is to lay at death's door with nine chances of death and one chance of survival. If you want to continue living there, you not only need strength but also a sufficient destiny. It seems Dragon Fang was truly able to survive in that cursed land."

"He has become even stronger. For a great worldly genius like Dragon Fang, he will not perish unless there is some great cataclysmic accident. Even if he went to the Asura Road, his destiny probably rose to greater heights. He might even go once again."

The geniuses of the Divine Realm simply didn't know what sort of place the Asura Road was exactly. There were just far too many secrets in this universe. These secrets had formed throughout history for various reasons, and some could even be traced back to the previous great calamity.

"Hehe, Lin Ming still hasn't come." The skinny and tall youth named Blacksalt carried a heavy sword on his shoulders. His mouth curved up in a disdainful grin. His heavy sword was as long as a person and it seemed particularly glaring when compared to his thin frame.

"That little turtle Lin Ming, is he afraid to come and lose here? Sooner or later I'll beat him up and cripple him. I'll show him just what worth he has and why he isn't worthy of fighting Senior-apprentice Brother Saint Son."

As Blacksalt spoke, a cracking sound filled the air. The heavy sword hanging off his shoulder had been flung downwards and the thick blade sliced through the stone of Ash Blood Mountain, creating an opening dozens of feet long. Underneath his sword, even the terrain of Ash Blood Mountain, which was known for its durability, was as frail as tofu.

“To fight you, we are more than enough.” Dragon Fang’s eyes shined with a sharp light, his vision like vorpal blades.

As for Hang Chi, he quietly took out a long staff from his spatial ring. This staff was nine foot long, simple and humble. The wood had its natural patterned texture. It formed an extremely sharp contrast to Blacksalt’s heavy sword.

“Do you really think you are so amazing? If the top 10 martial artists of your human First Martial Meeting were to participate in our saints’ First Martial Meeting, the lot of you wouldn’t even rank in the top 20! Today, I will show you just how great the difference between us is! So which one of you two wants to fight first?”

Dragon Fang stepped forwards. He pulled forth his Dragon Fang Blade and pointed it straight at Blacksalt.

Blacksalt sneered, wanting to attack, but he was suddenly stopped by a woman beside him. “Blacksalt, these are just two minor players of the human race. Let’s save time and have the four of us all fight together!”

The woman who spoke was tall and wore a robe of feathers. Her name was Witchplume. She was the sixth ranked martial artist of the saints’ First Martial Meeting. Although her ranking was a bit worse than Blacksalt’s, their strength was nearly the same.

“Fight together, a group battle?”

The audience looked at each other. In a duel between geniuses, it was often one against one. A four man group battle was extremely rare.

But to the saints, this type of fighting style was extremely common. The saints were a highly cooperative race, like a group of wolves in the field, hunting together.

Sometimes, many influences within the saint race would especially train their young elites in fighting with a chaotic group melee.

“That’s also good!” Blacksalt chuckled, not caring about which way he fought.

Hang Chi and Dragon Fang glanced at each other, silently agreeing to this form of combat. Although the two of them had never fought together, if they did, the effect would be extremely strong. Hang Chi’s Wheel of Samsara excelled in defense and Dragon Fang excelled in offense.

With a union of offense and defense, their combined combat strength wouldn’t be as simple as one plus one equals two.

Not too far from the battlefield, a saint youth floated high in the skies, his form blurred in the void around him. Martial artists at the Divine Lord realm and below simply couldn’t sense him.

Even peak Divine Lord masters were barely able to feel his existence.

This youth was Imperial Prince Naqi.

He simply didn’t want to appear in the crowd. This was an arrogance that stemmed from the depths of his bones. To him, those inferior human martial artists simply weren’t entitled to see him at all, like a god that never appeared amongst ordinary mortals.

“That Witchplume, she really doesn’t plan on showing any mercy to the humans. In terms of group combat, my race excels in that aspect and can display 120% of their strength.”

Imperial Prince Naqi thought out loud, a smile appearing on his lips. He originally thought this battle would be easily won, and now it was even more so.

And on the battlefield, the fight had already begun!

Behind Hang Chi, the phantom of a golden Buddha had appeared. This golden Buddha sealed up all space for a thousand feet outwards. As for Dragon Fang, his two pupils had become as sharp as needle tips, completely locking onto Witchplume and Blacksalt.

In Dragon Fang's vision, black flames had already began to burn around Witchplume, and behind her was a black firebird that was wantonly soaring about.

"Monster race? No… that is a hybrid of the saints and monsters!"

At this moment, Dragon Fang could clearly feel the aura of the monster race from Witchplume and he could even feel her boiling monster blood.

"Oh? Your eye technique is quite interesting. Can you see through my bloodline? That's right, my mother is a Dark Golden Crow from the monster race. My Saint Convocation Heaven also has the monster race, and our monster race is far more glorious and wondrous than your Divine Realm's monster race! But, even with a massive population to support them, for a top monster and saint to join together and give birth to a hybrid descendant, that is a miracle that can only occur once in 5 million years!"

Witchplume arrogantly bragged. Her body flowed with the bloodline of the monster race and the saint race. Since she possessed the advantages of both races, she was certainly arrogant.

As she spoke, there was a light tearing sound as the clothes on her back were ripped apart, revealing the slender curve of her back. There was nothing left to guard her but a tiny piece of flexible armor that wrapped around her front, highlighting her figure. Her beautiful womanly form was exposed to the world, enchanting and dazzling to the eyes.

Then, the flesh on her back began to twist and deform. With a crackling sound, a pair of ten foot long black wings unfolded from her back.

Hu – !

Brilliant black flames blazed on her wings. This was clearly the combination of the Fire Laws and the Darkness Laws.

The saints were not naturally inclined to use the Laws. When they fought, they relied on their powerful mortal bodies and astral essence to compete with others. In terms of understanding the Laws, they were far inferior to humans.

But now, this Witchplume was actually able to use dual Laws; this clearly came from her monster bloodline.

The monster race had the inborn ability to control the power of Laws. The world Laws turned into runes that were fused into their very flesh and bones.

Witchplume was such an example. From birth, her skeleton was inscribed with Law runes of Fire and Darkness. When a saint and monster joined together, their resulting child was no worse than the child between a human and a monster.

However, looking at all of this, Dragon Fang only sneered, “Just what the hell is a Dark Golden Crow? I’ve never heard of it before! I thought you were the descendant of a God Beast but now it seems you’re just a mediocre nothing. 5 million years? Is that some strange anomaly? Even something like that can be considered a miracle?”

Dragon Fang coldly laughed again and again. After he experienced Xiao Moxian’s God Beast level bloodline, Witchplume’s bloodline wasn’t anything at all. In Xiao Moxian’s situation, she was a miracle that could only occur every several hundred million years, or even longer!

“You are courting death!”

Witchplume angrily said, enraged. A clear phoenix cry rang out from her throat and a pitch black sword appeared in her hands. Her figure flew forwards, leaving a series of afterimages behind her.

And as she moved, Blacksalt also took action. He grasped his heavy sword and followed close behind her. Compared to Witchplume's extreme speed and her swift and fierce movements, what Blacksalt exploded with was absolute strength, as vast as an erupting volcano.

A sword pounded down, like a falling mountain range!

Facing the joint attack of Witchplume and Blacksalt, Hang Chi's complexion was dignified. He grasped his staff and drew a crescent moon in the skies. As the staff cut through the void, it left a golden arc of light in its path. This golden light finally formed a round Buddha diagram. This Buddha diagram had six golden circles, and within these six golden circles were filled the phantoms of blood demons, hungry ghosts, beasts, ghost slaves, humans, and immortals. These six golden circles represented the six paths of samsara.

"Wheel of Samsara!"

Hang Chi shouted out loud and the giant Wheel of Samsara began to radiate outwards.

Nine years after the First Martial Meeting, Hang Chi was almost 50 years old. Now, with his first action he summoned the skill that had made him famous many years ago. But now, he was even calmer and deeper than he was in the past. He was like a towering mountain, unshakeable!

Chapter 1410 – Attack and Defend

Chapter 1410 – Attack and Defend

…

…

…

Bang!

Blacksalt's sword smashed atop Hang Chi's Wheel of Samsara. With a terrifying ringing sound, the Wheel of Samsara violently shook and a crack snaked across its golden surface.

What an absolutely horrifying strength!

"Fires of darkness, shatter!"

At this time, Witchplume's two wings slashed out and the Dark Golden Crow behind her also rushed forth, the black flames around it turning into a pitch black sea!

Hu – hu – hu –

Flames roiled. At that moment, the Wheel of Samsara seemed to melt. Hang Chi's forehead began to seep with sweat as his face paled. How could he withstand the attacks of two people by himself?

"All Existence to Void!"

Dragon Fang suddenly opened one of the variation states of the Three Lives Pupils. Nine years ago, Dragon Fang had only been able to use All Existence to Void for a short period of time, but now he was able to freely wield it.

All Existence to Void was an eye technique able to see through all Laws in the world. Before the Three Lives Pupils, all Concepts were seen through!

"The power of space, the power of time, gather unto me!"

Dragon Fang's raised his hands and energy erupted from his body. From all around him, the power of space and the power of time began to wildly rush towards him. Then, his figure divided into sixteen copies.

16 spatial mirror images!

16 Dragon Fangs slashed out together. Their black sword lights gathered as one, thrusting straight forwards!

That raging sea of black flames was split apart by Dragon Fang's sword. The sharp and keening sword light pierced straight towards Witchplume's forehead.

"What!?"

Witchplume was immensely shocked. She never imagined that Dragon Fang's attack would be so terrifying!

In these 16 sword strikes, each one contained a tenth of the real Dragon Fang's strength. With 16 swords gathered as one, their might wasn't as simple as adding them together. In other words, this strike was several times stronger than Dragon Fang's strongest strike by himself!

Bang!

With a loud ringing sound, Witchplume's body was sent storming backwards by the Dragon Fang Sword. She cried out in the air and quickly closed her wings to defend against this sword light.

Ca!

The sword light ravaged forwards, causing massive clumps of feathers to rain down from the sky. These were all Witchplume's feathers.

Dragon Fang's sword strike had slashed through her two wings, leaving her in a bloody mess! Even the flexible armor that covered her upper body was nearly broken apart!

Damn it all!

Witchplume fell to the ground and staggered backwards. Dragon Fang's sword has used the Three Lives Pupils to see through her Darkness Laws. When the 16 strikes gathered as one, they were incomparably fierce and dangerous!

His sword strike had severely wounded Witchplume!

"Witchplume, are you alright?!"

Blacksalt supported her with his thin arms.

Witchplume cruelly smiled. She wiped the blood from the corners of her lips, "I'm fine!"

As the human audience members saw that their side had gained the advantage, all of them erupted in a chorus of cheers.

"Dragon Fang! Dragon Fang!"

Many people began shouting out for Dragon Fang. Back during the First Martial Meeting, Dragon Fang was ranked sixth amongst the top six geniuses. But, that had been because when he first participated in the First Martial Meeting finals, he had only just opened the Three Lives Pupils and his strength hadn't been able to fully develop.

Even so, his potential was astonishing. After entering the Asura Road to adventure, he crawled back from the precipice of death, and now he had grown by a large margin!

"Haha, Dragon Fang is stronger!"

“That’s right, what do those saints think? Dragon Fang was also only ranked sixth in the human First Martial Meeting!”

“Humanity will win! Humanity must win!”

All of the human martial artists were extremely excited. But not too far away, as Imperial Prince Naqi saw this scene, his smirked in contempt. “What a pack of fools, it’s as if they think they will really win! What a stupid race; there isn’t even any meaning in conquering them. However, those two fellows on stage are a bit more troublesome than I had thought.”

In truth, Imperial Prince Naqi didn’t care much for the result of this fight. Witchplume and Blacksalt couldn’t be called the true peak geniuses of the saint race. The true geniuses were the top three ranked martial artists of the saints’ First Martial Meeting.

If Witchplume and Blacksalt lost it wouldn’t matter much to begin with, let alone that it was impossible for them to lose now!

Naqi’s vision fell upon Hang Chi. At this time, Hang Chi was pale and his hands shivered as he grasped his long staff.

When everyone saw Dragon Fang reveal his momentous strike, they actually ignored the real hidden hero – Hang Chi.

If Hang Chi hadn’t used the Wheel of Samsara to block the attacks of two people, then it would have been impossible for Dragon Fang to break apart Witch Plume and Blacksalt’s joint attack on the battlefield and wound Witchplume!

However, for a single person to withstand two attacks, the pressure could be imagined!

Hang Chi had already been severely wounded. There was no way he could repeat what he just did.

“Hang Chi!”

As Dragon Fang saw Hang Chi's current state, he felt his heart gripped. In that exchange just now, if one had to say how useful they were, Hang Chi was responsible for 60% while Dragon Fang was only responsible for 40%.

"I'm fine!"

Hang Chi took a deep breath, revolving the Diamond Sutra to suppress the roiling blood vitality within him and seal up all the tears in his organs with true essence. After all, he wasn't a body transformation martial artist. Once his mortal body was injured his combat strength would rapidly plummet.

"Hang Chi!"

"Hang Chi was injured!"

The young elites present were all the most outstanding geniuses amongst their peers, thus they naturally had amazing sight. After their short period of cheering, they then discovered that Hang Chi was in a very poor situation!

"This is bad!"

Everyone felt their heart skip a beat. All those young elites that were cheering immediately quieted down.

In a group battle, defense was the most difficult aspect. Attacks struck one person, but the one defending had to defend against two; they would naturally be in a much more miserable state!

The young human elites all had a grim complexion. If Hang Chi was defeated, how could they continue fighting?

"Hang Chi, don't bother with defending, let's attack together."

Dragon Fang rapidly said to Hang Chi with a true essence sound transmission. He was well aware that it was impossible for Hang Chi to withstand a similar strike.

“That’s impossible. My offensive ability is inferior to my defensive ability. If we give up our current advantage they will inevitably attack us. Even though we will mutually wound each other, we will be in a far worse state than they will be. This is because one of them is a saint and the other is a saint and monster hybrid. Regardless of which one it is, their mortal bodies are extremely formidable and their defensive powers are extraordinary!”

Hang Chi calmly analyzed the situation on the battlefield. For him to attack with Dragon Fang would be the same as suicide.

“Then let me share the pressure with you.” Dragon Fang said.

“No need. You do not excel in defense. If a sword were to become a shield, the effect could be imagined. I can probably withstand another attack like that again. You must seize this chance to attack and settle this match in the next strike!”

As Hang Chi made this decision, Dragon Fang felt like someone had pulled his heart out. He was afraid that something would happen to Hang Chi.

In this duel, although there were elders from both the saints and humans present, that didn’t mean that one side wouldn’t lose their lives. If both sides were to attack with all of their strength, then a consequence was possible death at any moment!

“Don’t worry, I know what I’m doing.” Hang Chi seemed to sense what Dragon Fang was fearing. “Whether it is me or them, none of us will die here, otherwise that will be too stupid. For the true great calamity a thousand years from now, for my Buddhist path, for my road of martial arts, I won’t give up my life here.”

“Good!” Dragon Fang grit his teeth and grasped the Dragon Fang Blade.

At this time, Blacksalt and Witchplume stood up, their light and heavy swords pointed towards Hang Chi and Dragon Fang.

“You’re not bad! To think you can actually wound me. But, too bad for you, there will be no next time! Now go die!”

At this moment, Blacksalt's body emitted a series of explosive crackling sounds. His four thin limbs, his chest, his stomach, his entire body began to inflate, filling up with thick muscles! His face became wild and fierce and his spine grew from both ends, forming a spike that pierced through his flesh and grew into a vicious tail and a long horn on his head and even many long bone spikes coming out from his back.

His arms became thick and long, turning into sharp claws. His legs became thick and robust. With a single step forwards, the ground shattered beneath him.

"This is..." Many human martial artists were shocked.

"Haha, this is our saints' body metamorphosis! Some extreme clans within my saint race possess the ability to metamorphosize!"

Among the watching martial artists, a young saint elite began to proudly speak.

"Lord Blacksalt possesses an ancient saint bloodline. After metamorphosing, his body gains a wild and terrible strength!"

The saint race had different metamorphic abilities depending on the various bloodlines they had inherited. They were originally the race with the most powerful mortal body. After metamorphosing their body, they would be able to unlock the latent power deep within themselves and release their ultimate strength.

Of coursing, metamorphosing required a tremendous amount of energy. In the different bloodlines, some metamorphic forms had different strengths, consumed different amounts of energy, and lasted for different durations.

Bang!

Blacksalt's four limbs smashed into the ground. He bit onto his heavy sword and bolted forwards, like an ancient dinosaur. His body had been magnified by several times, and the thin Witchplume was actually riding on his back.

Witchplume grasped her sword, her two wings blazing with burning black flames.

The combination of a woman and a wild beast hurtled towards Dragon Fang and Hang Chi. Wherever they went, rock cracked open. With every step they took, the entire Ash Blood Mountain seemed to vibrate.

Dragon Fang's complexion changed. This momentum was far too terrifying!

“Hang Chi! You…”

Before he could speak further, Hang Chi had already stepped forwards to bear the impact of Blacksalt and Witchplume's attack!

“Samsara domain, Eight Sectioned Stupa!”

With an explosive ringing sound, a giant eight-story pagoda fell down from the skies. This divine pagoda was filled with the aura of the great dao. Each level held a divine being, bursting with divine light!

By using the Eight Sectioned Stupa to suppress the void, when this was combined with the Wheel of Samsara, it formed a divine domain like an iron fortress!

Hang Chi's complexion was cold as he calmly faced Blacksalt and Witchplume's all-out attack.

As Dragon Fang saw Hang Chi fearlessly face the combined attack of the two saint geniuses, Dragon Fang felt that something had been touched within his heart. This battle was no longer just a battle between them and the saint race geniuses.

This was a contest between the humans and the saints. In these strange and perilous times, any battle between the saints and humans could increase the morale of either side, helping their chances of victory. This was extremely valuable.

How could they lose here!?

"Eyes of Myriad Blood!"

Dragon Fang's entire body erupted with energy. His eyes turned blood red; he had opened the third state of the Three Lives Pupils – Eyes of Myriad Blood!

With Dragon Fang's current strength, wanting to open the Eyes of Myriad Blood was incomparably difficult. However, his only path left was to desperately risk everything on this!

Chi chi chi!

Dragon Fang's eyes were dyed with blood. Because a massive influx of energy poured into his eyes, the blood vessels in his eyes continuously broke apart, causing tears of blood to roll down his face. He grit his teeth, grasped the Dragon Fang Blade, and then split into 32 forms.

32 spatial mirror images!

By using Eyes of Myriad Blood and forming 32 spatial mirror images, this was Dragon Fang's ultimate attack!

"Void Extermination!"

32 Dragon Fangs slashed out together. Their brilliant sword lights wove together, shooting outwards!

Chapter 1411 – Lin Ming Arrives

Chapter 1411 – Lin Ming Arrives

…

…

…

Ca!

The space of the Divine Realm was torn to pieces by this sword light! Poured into this sword strike was Dragon Fang’s complete strength; the limit of his potential!

At this time, Blacksalt and Witchplume had already jumped high into the skies. The blazing black flames and the wild beast that was the body metamorphosized Blacksalt had fused into one, forming a horrific black meteor!

Bang!

With a terrifying explosion, the center area of Ash Blood Mountain was hollowed out!

The Wheel of Samsara and the Eight Sectioned Stupa completely collapsed. Hang Chi spat out a great mouthful of blood. At this crucial moment, he grit his teeth together and smashed his staff into the ground.

Diamond Vajra Sutra!

The moment Hang Chi reached the limit of his physical body, he completely ignored all damage to his meridians and organs to forcefully revolve the Diamond Vajra Sutra and continue resisting.

“Be defeated!”

Dragon Fang howled out into the skies. His eye sockets were dripping with blood as the Dragon Fang Blade in his hand cried out with a keening wail! The black sea of flames was torn asunder by this sword light, cutting straight towards Witchplume's forehead. Dragon Fang wanted to use this strike to tear through Blacksalt and Witchplume together!

And at this moment, Witchplume took a sudden step backwards. The bone spikes atop Blacksalt's back rapidly grew forwards like sharp swords, thrusting outwards!

Kacha!

The spikes crashed into the sword light. Three spikes exploded into bits but the weakened sword light still fell down in a wild and raging torrent.

Blacksalt growled. Together with Witchplume, they revolved their astral essence to the limit, resisting this sword strike head on!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Massive chunks of red rock tumbled down. The entire Ash Blood Mountain seemed to melt away like a glacier, completely collapsing!

Even though the surrounding young martial artists were all outstanding elites amongst all elites, they were still thrown away by the maddening waves of energy!

The reason that Ash Blood Mountain was chosen as the battlefield for this fight was because this area was special and the rock was as hard as divine steel. Even so, the terrain still couldn't withstand this terrifying strength.

The young human elites all paled, their faces changing. How could the fifth and sixth placed martial artists of the saint race's First Martial Meeting be so fierce!?

What was the result?

As everyone looked towards the center of the battlefield, they only saw Dragon Fang kneeling on the ground, barely hanging on with the support of the Dragon Fang Blade. His eyes were blood red, with blood continuing to drip down.

And not too far behind him, Hang Chi's protective true essence had completely shattered. He had propped himself up with his staff, standing tall. Behind him, the faint phantom of a golden Buddha was still wavering about. Still, the current Hang Chi's meridians were a completely jumbled mess and his organs were damaged in several areas; it was impossibly difficult for him to continue standing.

"Dragon Fang! Hang Chi!"

The human martial artists all tensed. And at this time, with a loud crashing sound at the distant ruined rocks, massive stones tumbled down and a bloodsoaked Blacksalt shot out from the wreckage like a wild beast, landing on the ground on all fours. The three longest bone spikes on his back had broken and a horrifying sword wound crossed down his back, stretching from his neck to his tail.

This sword wound was as deep as a ruler and had nearly cut his spine in half. This final sword strike had been caught and rigidly stopped by his powerful mortal body and bones. If it weren't for him having used his body metamorphosis, this sword strike would have cleaved him in two.

Behind him, a pale Witchplume also rose up from the ruins. The flexible armor all over her body had broken and she used her black flames to form a new set of flexible armor around her. Blacksalt had withstood 60-70% of Dragon Fang's final attack and she had withstood 30-40% of it. Even though that was so, she had been deeply wounded. Dragon Fang's attack was far too swift and violent but Blacksalt had still managed to use his mortal body to withstand it. It could only be said that the defensive capabilities of Blacksalt's mortal body had reached a freakish level.

As Naqi saw this, he smiled. He knew that this fight was over.

Even though the humans and the saints had both received similar levels of injuries, that only meant that the inevitable winners were the saints. This was because the saints' ability to resist attacks and also regenerate their bodies was far more powerful than the humans'.

In the current situation, Hang Chi's wounds were the heaviest. Although Dragon Fang hadn't been wounded, he had still deeply overdrawn his strength. Over half his true essence was used up and his combat efficiency had plummeted to rock bottom.

As Blacksalt emerged from the ruins, he roared. With a slimy wriggling sound, the flesh and blood on his back twisted together, with even new bones growing.

The sound of this flesh and blood wriggling about was clear and loud. Blacksalt was actually regenerating himself! This sort of regenerative ability was appalling!

Blacksalt had withstood Dragon Fang's sword strike and was still able to restore a portion of his combat strength in a short period of time. The saints were a completely beast-like race; their bodies were too abnormal.

The surrounding human martial artists felt a chill crawl down their spines. In their days here, they had fought with and also slaughtered many saint race martial artists. But, they had never encountered a savage and freakish genius of the saints that was able to undergo bloodline metamorphosis, such as this Blacksalt in front of them. This Blacksalt was more than just a bit stronger than an ordinary saint!

"Hahahaha! My saint race is truly superior to the human race!"

"Stupid humans, what else can the likes of you still say?"

Many saint martial artists shouted out loud. Their stiff and halting Divine Realm language was especially grating to the ears.

Among the humans, some martial artists argued back and some were silent.

They thought of the true elites of the saint race: they likely all had a physique like Blacksalt. This thought left a thick despair surging in their hearts. Could humanity truly overcome this great calamity? If they were defeated then all of humanity would devolve into nothing but slaves.

Was this era truly the time when humanity would perish?

At this time, with the sound of flapping clothes rustling in the wind, a white-robed monk flew into the center of the battlefield. He waved his robes and a Buddhist light wrapped around Hang Chi. This white-robed monk had an ordinary World King realm cultivation.

“High Master, I have shamed the name of Mount Potala…” Hang Chi bitterly smiled.

The white-robed monk sighed, shaking his head as he said, “Apprentice Nephew, you must not be too harsh on yourself. If anyone should be ashamed, it should be us. You did not lose to him in strength or talent, but lost to him in background. You relied on your Empyrean Holy Land background to struggle with a genius from a True Divinity Holy Land to this degree, and for that High Master is more than proud of you. If Mount Potala were also a True Divinity level Holy Land, then we could allow your strength to reach even greater steps. Even if it were just half a step further, this battle would have had a different result.”

As this white-robed monk spoke, he brought Hang Chi with him and flew away.

The third and sixth placed martial artists of the human First Martial Meeting had fought against the fifth and sixth placed martial artists of the saint First Martial Meeting, and the final result was… humanity had been defeated!

Although the saints had won with difficulty, a loss was loss.

“We’ve lost…”

The human martial artists were all silent. They felt a heavy pressure on their hearts.

"They both wounded each other, but we lost to the saint race's endurance and regenerative ability…"

"Although I don't want to admit it, the saints are truly stronger than us. They have greater numbers and their inheritances are also better."

"3.6 billion years ago, humanity had to pay a deep price in order to ensure the survival of our race, the Empyreans nearly died out and 80-90% of our martial arts civilization was destroyed. As for the saints, they were nearly untouched. They still had many large sects that continued to pass their legacy on and there are many saint sects that have a background of 4-5 billion years! Moreover, they even have the support of a True Divinity Holy Land…"

The inheritances and resources of a True Divinity Holy Land far surpassed those of an Empyrean Holy Land, so they were able to raise even more extraordinary geniuses and also had an easier time training Empyreans.

"Hahaha, if any of you still aren't convinced, then you can come up and fight me!"

Blacksalt's entire body was covered with wounds but he still gave off such a dreadful momentum!

"To all those young human elites that wish to fight, I alone am more than enough! Pass a message out and inform Lin Ming and Frost Dream to come to the Bright Luster Great World to look for me! There is no need for Senior-apprentice Brother Naqi to do anything, I will defeat them both myself! Especially that fool Lin Ming, the thought that he wishes to challenge my saint race's Good Fortune Saint Son, my Senior-apprentice Brother Wumo, is just laughable!"

Blacksalt's body slowly shrank before he turned back into a dark and thin youth.

Who had thought that such a thin body was able to contain that horrifying explosive power!

However Blacksalt shouted, no one came to accept his challenge.

It was impossible for Divine Sea realm geniuses to fight Blacksalt; that was just asking to die.

As for Divine Transformation realm martial artists, Hang Chi and Dragon Fang represented the strongest ones here. After the two of them, everyone else was a level lower. Even if they were to face the extremely wounded Blacksalt, they still wouldn't be a match.

"The human race has no one? Hahaha!" Blacksalt chortled. "I will wait here for seven days. In these seven days, any young human martial artist can challenge me. I want to fight the entire Bright Luster Great World!"

Blacksalt fused his voice with astral essence, spreading it over everyone present.

"This fellow is too arrogant!"

As the human martial artists heard Blacksalt's shout, they were all filled with an indignant anger.

"Just who does he think he is!?"

"I really want to defeat him! If I could defeat him, I would be willing to trade that for 60-70% of my lifespan!"

The human martial artists all suppressed a fire in their bellies. Even though Blacksalt was shouting so arrogantly, none of them were able to defeat him.

Blacksalt was true to his words. He really did wait atop Ash Blood Mountain for other young human martial artists to challenge him.

On the first day, no one accepted his challenge. On the second day, several human martial artists stepped into the arena. Even though they knew who they were fighting, they still couldn't swallow this insult. There were many human martial artists that were brave and daring. They didn't seek victory, but only wished to punch Blacksalt with their fist or at least slash him with their sword.

The results were as expected. The several martial artists that challenged Blacksalt were all beaten to a pulp, their skeletons and meridians shattered. If it weren't for the human World Kings saving them, they would have been killed by Blacksalt. Even so, these degrees of injuries were enough to have them recuperating in bed for half a year.

Blacksalt laughed out loud. He spoke once more, telling none of the human trash to come. If they didn't even possess the qualifications to have him stretch out his bones, then what was the point?

In these days, the saint martial artists had already laid down spirit artifact cave dwellings and mansions. The saint martial artists gathered here, joyfully celebrating, eating big pieces of meat as they drank their fill. This was the scene of a celebration feast.

As heroes of the saint race, Blacksalt and Witchplume received many invitations. For a time, the morale of the saints reached the extreme.

No one knew that on the third day after Blacksalt arrived on the Chaotic Blood Continent, a common-looking palace broke through the void and also arrived.

In these days, countless people had come to the Chaotic Blood Continent. This caused the palace to arouse no one's attention.

“This is the Chaotic Blood Continent, hm, I wonder just where the duel is happening?”

Lin Ming thought to himself. But, he soon discovered that finding their location was extremely easy. The most powerful martial artists on the Chaotic Blood Continent had all gathered in a single place. Their vivid blood vitality and powerful true essence gathered into a force that shot up into the sky, forming an invisible fountain that erupted into the heavens.

“Looks like it's over there.” Lin Ming faintly smiled. “It hasn't finished either; we've made it in time.”

Deep within the Magic Cube space, Mo Eversnow nodded. “Mm, the Chaotic Blood Continent is extremely far, placed in the deepest parts of the Bright Luster Great World. Luckily for us, Primordius Heavenly Palace is extremely fast and we’ve made it here in three days. Let’s go and see what’s happening over there.”

Chapter 1412 – Fight

Chapter 1412 – Fight

…

…

…

The hundreds of thousands of feet high Ash Blood Mountain was now in a state of chaos.

At the base of the mountain, the human martial artists had established some scattered dwellings. Over the past few days, Blacksalt's challenge against all young human elites had spread out, arousing heated discussions.

Even the other worlds outside the Bright Luster Great World had heard this. All of the young human elites became incensed.

It had to be known that Blacksalt was not the first place champion of the saints' First Martial Meeting, but only placed in fifth. If a fifth ranked martial artist could stomp over all of humanity in such a cruel and savage manner, then what face did humanity still have?

If the human geniuses were all defeated, this was equal to proving that humans were inferior to saints. In this great calamity, they wouldn't be able to play any role at all!

In the Bright Luster Great World, there were constantly nearby human martial artists catching up from all directions, gathering here. The saints were also the same. More and more saint martial artists arrived, wanting to see the proud and tall figure of Blacksalt as he laid forth his challenge atop Ash Blood Mountain. They all became increasingly excited, sending out constant cheers!

"It's been three days already."

In an open glade at the base of Ash Blood Mountain, seven or eight human martial artists were gathered together, drinking wine.

“Things are such a depressing mess right now that people are blocking the doorways shouting. Unless Lin Ming or Frost Dream take action, no one will be able to defeat Blacksalt. They should both be aware of such a gigantic matter already, and if they know but still don’t come, then the morale of humanity will fall to the pits.”

“It’s useless if Lin Ming comes. Even if Lin Ming defeats Blacksalt, the saint race still has stronger elites behind him, such as Imperial Prince Naqi. If Lin Ming were to face Imperial Prince Naqi...”

As the martial artist spoke to here, he quieted down. The third ranked human junior Hang Chi had fought against the fifth ranked saint junior Blacksalt but still hadn’t been able to win. Following that logic, then if the second ranked human Lin Ming were to fight the first ranked saint Naqi, the chances of winning were nearly nonexistent!

If Lin Ming came, he might be beaten to a pulp.

And if Lin Ming were to lose, then the hopes that humanity held in him would truly be dimmed.

As several martial artists were discussing, no one noticed that not too far away from them, a black-clothed youth with a bamboo hat was standing there. His arms were held near his chest, embracing a long spear. He casually leaned back against a large tree, seeming to melt into his surrounding environment so that no one could feel him.

This black-clothed youth was Lin Ming, who had finally caught up to the Chaotic Blood Continent.

“I never thought that so many things would happen in just a few days. It seems Hang Chi lost...”

Lin Ming stood up and began walking towards the distant ruins atop Ash Blood Mountain.

As he moved he rustled the grass beneath his feet. It was only then that the several drinking human martial artists noticed Lin Ming.

As they turned towards him, they could only see his fading back.

“That person… when did he arrive here?”

……

Bang!

With a loud explosive ringing sound, a massive rock was crushed. A tall and brawny-looking human youth grasped a broadsword as he stepped onto the battlefield.

“Blacksalt, I’ll challenge you!”

“You?” Blacksalt sneered. “It seems that any dog or cat will crawl up here. You are not worthy!”

“What did you say!?” The brawny youth grimaced. He was not some nobody of his generation, but someone who had once also entered the finals of the human First Martial Meeting. It was hopeless for him to try to defeat Blacksalt, but his only desire was to leave some mark on Blacksalt’s body or chop down on him.

“Luqi, go and fight him.” Blacksalt said to a red-clothed woman.

In these past days, many young elites of the saint race also gathered here. This red-clothed woman was someone that had ranked 29th in the saints’ First Martial Meeting; her strength was no joke. She was even stronger than Hua Xuan, who had also reached the finals of the human First Martial Meeting and was in the upper echelons of Empyrean descendants.

The red-clothed woman jumped upwards. Without giving that brawny youth a chance to speak, the full moon sickle in her hands cut down at his neck.

The saint race martial artists focused on cultivating their mortal bodies. Many of them were like Blacksalt with a defensive ability that had reached the limit. But now, this red-clothed woman in front of them was actually the opposite. Her mortal body was extremely soft and flexible, like a piece of moldable dough.

The brawny youth had never encountered such an opponent before and was immediately struck into a disadvantage. In just a few moves, he was defeated. This was simply the massive gulf of strength that existed between them. On one side was an upper level Empyrean descendant, and on the other side was someone who just managed to reach the human First Martial Meeting finals.

“Too weak! It’s fine if Lin Ming and Frost Dream don’t come, but are the other top ten ranked youths of humanity also dead?” Luqi sneered. She turned and panned her eyes over the audience, arrogantly saying, “So who’s next?”

Her voice was loud and clear.

In these three days, very few human martial artists went up on stage to fight. Those that were a little stronger found it impossible to defeat Blacksalt, and those that were a bit weaker were directly defeated by Blacksalt’s followers.

There were not many people that were willing to step on stage to fight if they knew the only result that awaited them was death.

The red-clothed woman was only casually mocking the humans and didn’t expect that anyone would actually come up. But, she never imagined that after that brawny youth had been beaten into a near death state and had to be carried away, there would actually be someone else that came on stage.

This person wore black clothes and carried a spear. His figure was slim and straight, as if he himself were a long spear, giving off a sharp and arrogant feeling.

The red-clothed woman chuckled. “To think there really is someone that wants to die. Since that’s the case, then let me help you along!”

The red-clothed woman raised her sickle blade and slashed down!

But as she slashed out with her sickle, not too far behind her, Blacksalt actually frowned. He didn't know why, but this black-clothed man was emitting an extremely dangerous feeling, setting off all his alarms...

This person is...

Blacksalt had grown up in wild and dangerous jungles since childhood. He could metamorphosize into a beast and he also had the natural intuition of a beast. Even though this black-clothed youth was casually standing there, not seeming special at all, Blacksalt could actually feel a terrifying aura exuding from his body.

"Luqi..."

Blacksalt wanted to warn her, but at this moment the black-clothed youth moved. His figure accelerated to extreme velocities and the red spear in his hands thrust out!

Atop the spearpoint, the power of thunder and fire wove together, sending out a brilliant divine light!

With a thrust of this spear, the void collapsed, thunder and fire howled, and a flaming spear light hurtled forth like a red and purple flood dragon, roaring into the heavens!

Bang!

With a loud banging sound, a coruscating light burst out, blinding to the eyes. Luqi cried out miserably as all her protective astral essence exploded to pieces. She spat out a mouthful of blood and was sent tumbling a thousand feet away.

Blacksalt's figure flashed and he instantly appeared in the skies and caught Luqi. He immediately turned his head to look at the black-clothed youth, his eyes cold.

This sudden change caught everyone by surprise. Whether it was humans or saints, none of them could respond. No one expected for this sudden reversal to occur. This red-clothed woman was an upper Empyrean descendant, but she had been instantly defeated. This disparity was not tiny at all!

If someone could achieve this point, that person could only be a top six character of the human First Martial Meeting!

In other words, this youth on stage was someone that was in the top six of the human First Martial Meeting, moreover, his weapon was a spear. If so, the identity of this person was already renowned!

"You are Lin Ming!?"

Blacksalt's pupils shrank as he suddenly realized Lin Ming's status.

"Yes I am. Weren't you looking for me?"

Lin Ming took off his bamboo hat and faintly smiled. After nearly four years of closed door seclusion, this was his first fight. His entire body was filled with a backed up strength that he was aching to release.

"Lin Ming!? You're really Lin Ming!?"

Out of the human martial artists present, only a small number of them had seen Lin Ming before. But after seeing him, their expressions immediately turned to those of heated excitement.

Now that the saint race's Blacksalt had defeated Hang Chi, the only juniors of the human race that were able to contend with him were Lin Ming and Frost Dream.

Blacksalt's braying had continued for far too long. The humans present wished that they could rush up to him and bite out a chunk of his body. Now that someone finally stood up and was willing to fight him, how could the young elites of humanity not be excited?

The mentality of martial artists was a hundred times more powerful than mortals'. They could withstand tremendous physical pain, they could withstand cultivating in loneliness, and they could even withstand the multi-faction plotting that occurred in mystic realms. But, when it came to defending the glory and dignity of their own race, their strength was far from what was imagined.

After being suppressed for so long, even they were feeling uncomfortable.

As for Lin Ming, he was a legend in the eyes of many young human elites. Most of them already knew Lin Ming's story, that he had ascended from the lower realms, a martial artist of common stock. For him to arrive at this level was already a miracle of miracles.

Now, Lin Ming had stood up to face the saints. From here on, his legend would either end or rise to even greater heights!

As for which possibility would happen, no one could predict it.

Many people believed that it shouldn't be difficult for Lin Ming to defeat Blacksalt. After all, he was the second ranked martial artist from the human First Martial Meeting. If he couldn't defeat the fifth ranked martial artist of the saint First Martial Meeting, then humanity truly would have lost. Thus, Lin Ming not only would win this battle, he had to win this battle.

But after Blacksalt lost, who else would enter the stage then? If it was Imperial Prince Naqi, could Lin Ming still win?

Ever since the battle atop Ash Blood Mountain had begun, Naqi had yet to make a public appearance. His name gave off a pervading sense of fear in the minds of the young human elites; this mysterious and powerful character gave off far too great a pressure.

Blacksalt flew down from the skies. After setting down Luqi, he stepped in front of Lin Ming.

As he looked at Lin Ming, a cruel and happy smile crossed his face.

“You actually dared to come! You human martial artists are actually quite brave. In these days, there have been several people that still came on stage to be abused, even though they knew they would lose!”

“From your words, do you think the likes of you can abuse me?” Lin Ming slowly turned his spearpoint towards Blacksalt.

“Heh, I may not be able to ruin you, but the person who can is already nearby. As for me, even I can peel off your skin. It’s still unknown just who will win this battle!”

As Blacksalt spoke, the muscles all over his body emitted explosive crackling sounds. His aura rapidly climbed upwards as he grew larger and taller. Horrifying bone spikes grew out from his back and a thick tail extended down to the floor.

Pa pa!

With a random swing of that tail, the stone of Ash Blood Mountain that was as hard as divine iron was instantly turned to powder.

Facing Lin Ming, Blacksalt wasn’t arrogant anymore. He immediately used his body metamorphosis from the beginning.

Lin Ming had some understandings of the saint race. Although he knew they had the ability to undergo body metamorphosis, this was the first time he had seen it.

“Let me warn you, when I metamorphosize my body, my strength and speed will increase by three times. I heard that you also study the body transformation technique. Now, allow me to let you experience just what the true power of body transformation is like!”

Chapter 1413 – Horrifying Weight

Chapter 1413 – Horrifying Weight

…

…

…

As the human and saint martial artists saw Lin Ming and Blacksalt about to start a brutal battle, they both began to crazily shout out.

“Blacksalt! Tear that brat to shreds!”

“Kill him! Ruin him!”

Blacksalt was a top ranked core disciple of a True Divinity Holy Land. His reputation was extremely high.

“Lin Ming, your human body transformation technique simply isn’t a top body transformation technique. It is something that belongs to the dregs of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens. Let me show you what the true difference is between our body transformation techniques!”

The Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens were divided into three great categories of essence, energy, and divine. Each category was divided into 11 variations.

Solely the body transformation technique had 11 different methods to practice it. There were those that suited humanity, saints, and there were some variations that suited the monsters and spiritas.

In Blacksalt's opinion, only the saints' body transformation technique had the greatest foundation and was also the strongest variation of the body transformation technique.

Blacksalt roared out and wildly hurtled towards Lin Ming! He understood that Lin Ming was extremely strong, but he still had absolute confidence in himself. He wanted to use this battle to become renowned through the universe! If he could challenge the entire human race without being defeated, then he would be a hero of the saints and obtain enormous rewards. Moreover, the more battles he won, the more confidence he would gain and the greater help this would be to his future growth.

Facing Blacksalt's menacing charge, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a vicious light. He grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and opened all of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates!

With a loud explosive sound, a terrifying shockwave erupted from Lin Ming. The rocks beneath his feet began to crack apart like an expanding spider web!

Lin Ming's body transformation technique had already touched upon the threshold of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. In addition, when Lin Ming had entered Primordius Heavenly Palace, he had directed grandmist energy to enter his body. Using the grandmist energy that was as heavy as a star, he had tempered his own skeleton and muscles, withstanding pain that an ordinary man would not be able to bear.

Empyrean Primordius had sealed a massive amount of grandmist energy within the Primordius Gate. That was no longer elementary grandmist energy, but true grandmist energy!

The intensity of Lin Ming's mortal body had reached unbelievable degrees.

Without using any true essence, without using any Laws, and by only relying on the mortal strength of his body as well as his astral essence, he welcomed the rampaging Blacksalt!

"Eight Inner Hidden Gates – Hundred Layered Waves!"

Lin Ming shouted out loud, pouring all of his strength into the Phoenix Blood Spear. Lin Ming's strength had nearly reached a billion jins. Now, as he used the Hundred Layered Waves, it was like an infinitely high tide, smashing through the world!

"Mm!? Lin Ming wants to use his body transformation technique to deal with Blacksalt?"

"The body transformation technique isn't a domain that humans excel in. Even if Lin Ming dual cultivates in body and energy, his methods aren't extraordinary. What he excels in the most is the essence gathering system!"

The human martial artists cried out in alarm. As for the saint race martial artists, they repeatedly jeered out loud, waiting for Lin Ming to be sent flying back by Blacksalt.

"You are seeking death!"

Blacksalt roared out and three bone spikes on his back stabbed forwards like a sharp trident. With the support of his bodily strength, astral essence exploded outwards!

In that moment, Lin Ming instantly struck out with a hundred spears. These hundred spears fused together as one, violently crashing into Blacksalt.

Kacha!

A terrifying explosion followed as massive chunks of rock burst into powder. Lin Ming was sent flying backwards and Blacksalt's form shook. Blacksalt's barrier of astral essence had shattered, but because of his powerful mortal body, those shockwaves of spear light had been completely withstood by him without any injuries at all.

As for Lin Ming, he was sent flying hundreds of feet backwards by Blacksalt. Although he wasn't injured, it was still Blacksalt who gained the advantage in this collision.

Even so, Blacksalt couldn't accept this result. This was because Lin Ming hadn't used any true essence at all!

“This boy, how could his body transformation technique be so fierce? Then just what degree has his essence gathering system reached?”

“Blacksalt, ruin that boy, wreck him into pieces!” The surrounding saints began to wildly shout out. Blacksalt sending Lin Ming flying back in that strike just now had caused their morale to rapidly rise, shaking like an earthquake.

Weng!

Blacksalt’s body rushed out once more. On his claws, a divine fire seemed to burn. As he slashed out with his claws, the void seemed to shake. It was hard to imagine how powerful this attack was.

Lin Ming flourished the Phoenix Blood Spear, watching Blacksalt hurtle towards him. When he had used the Celestial Tyrant Manual’s Hundred Layered Waves just now to attack Blacksalt, the result was that he hadn’t been able to take the advantage. Blacksalt was a martial artist that specialized in the body transformation technique. If Lin Ming had defeated him there, then his many years of cultivating the body transformation technique would have been nothing but a waste.

However, Lin Ming’s body transformation technique wasn’t as simple as just the Eight Inner Hidden Gates!

“Emerge, grandmist energy!”

A keen light flashed in Lin Ming’s eyes. A wisp of grandmist energy left his inner world, covering Lin Ming’s arms and the Phoenix Blood Spear.

A little bit of grandmist energy was as heavy as a star. With a wisp of grandmist energy attached to Lin Ming’s spear, a single strike was like wielding a thousand mile mountain range!

“You boast that your body transformation is unrivalled, but let me see whether you can withstand the weight of my spear!”

Lin Ming opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates once more. The Phoenix Blood Spear swept out, crashing down like a blood red divine mountain range!

Blacksalt's claws smashed together with Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear.

Kacha!

With a deafening explosion, Blacksalt's body shook. His protective astral essence shattered beneath the Phoenix Blood Spear as if it were nothing but glass!

"What!?"

Blacksalt was aghast. He knew how durable his protective astral essence was, and yet it had been so easily broken by Lin Ming's casual spear strike!?

At this time, Lin Ming's second spear strike came crashing down.

Blacksalt's complexion changed. He wanted to avoid it, but at this moment a boundless and ancient power enveloped him, surrounding the entire void within a range of a thousand feet. Blacksalt's movements immediately slowed!

Grandmist space!

"This is bad!"

The speed that Blacksalt was so proud of was bound by the grandmist space. He grit his teeth, erupting his astral essence to the limit as he used the spikes on his back to resist Lin Ming's attack.

Lin Ming sneered and brought his two arms crashing down. The Phoenix Blood Spear smashed into Blacksalt's back. This strike directly broke through Blacksalt's three bone spikes and the Phoenix Blood Spear continued unabated, pounding into him and causing his back to burst apart in a bloody mess before he was sent flying away!

Blacksalt miserably screamed out. He plummeted downwards like a meteor.

Bang!

With a ringing sound, Blacksalt crashed into the ground, sending countless chunks of rock flying up. He was like a comet that crashed into the earth!

“Blacksalt!”

This sudden turn in the tables had surpassed everyone’s expectations. The saint race martial artists all cried out in horror. At this time, Blacksalt emerged from the rubble. The saint race martial artists had an incomparably horrifying defensive power. Even though Blacksalt had received such heavy wounds, he was still able to forcefully bear it.

Blacksalt’s body was covered in blood. His skin and flesh had cracked open. As he looked up to the sky, he found that Lin Ming had disappeared.

Before he could respond, an extremely dreadful weight pressed down on his back.

This strength was as heavy as 10 million mountains. Not even Blacksalt could withstand it.

He miserably coughed, his four limbs shaking.

“You…!”

Blacksalt’s eyes turned blood red. Lin Ming was clearly riding atop Blacksalt’s back. The current metamorphosed Blacksalt was similar in shape to a large tiger. As Lin Ming rode atop his back, it was similar to a man riding his mount.

To Blacksalt this was the ultimate humiliation. As a proud martial artist of the saints, just how arrogant was he? How could he allow a human to ride atop his back?

Blacksalt angrily roared out. He wanted to jump up and throw off Lin Ming, but at this time, Lin Ming fused his grandmist energy onto the Phoenix Blood Spear and brought it pounding down!

Peng!

The Phoenix Blood Spear's shaft solidly smacked onto Blacksalt's back. Blacksalt's ruined back exploded once more. With the terrifying weight still pressing down on him, his body shook and he spat out a mouthful of blood. His knees weakened and he was forced to the ground.

Rocks constantly crumbled beneath them. Underneath this weight, Blacksalt was forced to the ground!

"This… what is going on here?"

"He's riding on Blacksalt's back! Some terrifying weight has forced Blacksalt to his knees. It's impossible for him to do anything, let alone throw off Lin Ming!"

The situation had rapidly reversed. At the start, Blacksalt had won a minor advantage when he sent Lin Ming flying back a few hundred feet. But after that, it was Lin Ming who had beaten down Blacksalt!

Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and pointed it at Blacksalt's back. If it weren't for the barrier of grandmist space, Blacksalt would have already been buried in the ground. Now, he was unable to stand up no matter how much he wanted to. He vomited out great gulps of blood, dying the earth red.

With a human standing on his back and forcing him down with his spear, Blacksalt found this humiliation unbearable. He struggled as hard as he could, but no matter how much he tried, nothing worked.

"Damn! Damn it all!"

Blacksalt had never felt so helpless in his life. He had always been proud of his mortal body, but this current feeling was like squatting on the ground with someone pushing him down with just a single finger, making him unable to stand up.

Many saint martial artists were bewildered. None of them understood just what sort of mysteries were on Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear and why Blacksalt was pressed down so hard that he couldn't stand up.

The human martial artists were also confused. But, this didn't stop them from cheering for Lin Ming. Ever since the great calamity began and the saint race had invaded, the human race had suffered one defeat after another!

The only incident that was able to show the strength of humanity had been the negotiations of Mount Potala and Empyrean Divine Dream completely refusing all of the saint race's treaty conditions. At the same time, Lin Ming had also jumped a boundary and a half to challenge the Good Fortune Saint Son to a life or death battle in a hundred years. However, when this matter was put in pleasant terms then Lin Ming had courage to face this challenge. But, if it was put in coarser terms then Lin Ming was simply a fool who had bitten off more than he could chew.

In these past days, the humans had been oppressed and mocked by the saints again and again. They desperately needed a victory to boost their morale and confidence!

"Lin Ming! Lin Ming!"

"Make him so that he can't step ever again!"

The human martial artists all shouted out, releasing all the pressure in their hearts.

And at this time, an indifferent voice sounded out.

"Enough!"

This voice seemed to come from the icy cold nine nether abyss, causing the heated battlefield audience to quiet down.

The young human elites felt their hearts skip a beat as a chill filled the air.

Lin Ming's mind stirred. He received the Phoenix Blood Spear and looked up at the void.

There, space distorted and a thin, white-clothed youth appeared. His face wasn’t too handsome, but his aura was swift and fierce. He was pale like jade and his eyes were sharp. His entire body exuded an evil atmosphere.

Chapter 1414 – Challenging the Imperial Prince

Chapter 1414 – Challenging the Imperial Prince

…

…

…

The appearance of this youth immediately attracted the eyes of everyone present.

As the saint martial artists saw this person, all of them began to rise up in excitement.

"Imperial Prince Naqi!"

"It really is the Imperial Prince!"

The saint race was an extremely hierarchical society. Superior martial artists enjoyed endless worship and even a certain faith from their race, and top geniuses were able to enjoy an extraordinary status!

Moreover, this title of Imperial Prince was personally bestowed by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign; it held amazing significance.

Among the younger generation, Naqi's status was only inferior to the Good Fortune Saint Son's. Both of them were peak geniuses born unto these prosperous times of the saints, and both of them had tremendous chances of becoming a True Divinity in the future.

At that time, even if Naqi couldn't become the Saint Sovereign of the saint race, he could still become the Second Sovereign. This level of status wasn't much worse than the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

"He's Naqi!"

For many of the human martial artists, this was the first time they had seen Naqi.

Even Lin Ming was the same.

Lin Ming looked at Naqi, sneering, “You’ve finally appeared. How stupidly pompous!”

Naqi grinned in response. “Aren’t you the same? I’ve been wanting to meet you for a long time already, but haven’t you been hidden away in seclusion at Mount Potala for all this time before finally showing up today?”

As Naqi spoke he slowly fell onto the battlefield. He stood a hundred feet away from Lin Ming, standing in stark opposition to him.

At this time, Lin Ming’s Phoenix Blood Spear was still pointed at Blacksalt’s body. Blacksalt’s body was dripping wet with blood and his spine had nearly broken in half. His bones and cartilage had been ruined and his nerves had been severely damaged.

Even though the saints had an extremely formidable body with a high regenerative capability, if their spine was broken apart it would still be very difficult to recover. It would require a tremendous amount of time and resources.

“Senior-apprentice Brother… Naqi…”

Blacksalt found it difficult to speak. Every word brought more blood gushing out from his lips.

As the saint martial artists saw this they felt their backs turn cold. They were well aware of how strong Blacksalt was and he was strong enough to lift up a mountain. He could even toss that mountain into the sea afterwards and create a new island.

But now, Lin Ming had only used his spear to ruin all of Blacksalt’s resistance. This sort of visual scene was far too jarring.

“How did Lin Ming accomplish this?”

"He truly is terrifying. It seems that we've underestimated the humans."

Saint martial artists all respected powerhouses, even if they were enemies. Lin Ming's great strength had won the awe and wonder of these people. If Lin Ming were to jump into a crowd of these young saint elites, it would be like a tiger amidst a flock of sheep. He could easily murder any one of them, so what qualifications did they have to look down on someone that could cut them down as he pleased?

However, Naqi thought little of Lin Ming suppressing Blacksalt. Naqi only stared at the Phoenix Blood Spear before saying, "I never imagined that you would have been able to refine grandmist energy!"

Naqi revealed the truth behind Lin Ming's secret card. Lin Ming was startled. The Grandmist Heavenly Dao was incomparably mysterious and not even a great number of human World King powerhouses would be able to recognize the grandmist space or grandmist energy. Grandmist energy existed at the most early formative stage of the universe, and as the universe evolved, that grandmist energy had nearly disappeared from existence as it became celestial stars and all other matter.

Empyrean Primordius was only able to cultivate the Grandmist Heavenly Dao because he had experienced a great lucky chance.

Lin Ming was vigilant towards this Imperial Prince Naqi that was eyeing him. It wasn't just his strength that Lin Ming needed to be wary of, but also his experience.

Naqi laughed, as if he had seen through Lin Ming's thoughts. "Is it strange that I recognize grandmist energy? Didn't you know that 100,000 years ago, there was once a human Empyrean that utilized the Grandmist Heavenly Dao, and this person perished beneath the hands of my saint race? Many of his treasures and even a part of his grandmist energy was obtained by my people."

As Naqi laughed, all of these words were incomparably grating as they fell onto Lin Ming's ears. Lin Ming's complexion darkened. Empyrean Primordius was his mentor and he had died because of the saints. Lin Ming had no choice but to avenge this grudge if possible. Now, Naqi's callous and cruel words had touched upon Lin Ming's reverse scale.

Lin Ming simmered with rage. The weight of the Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands constantly grew and the spear shaft sank even lower. With a crackling sound, more and more bones broke. Pressed beneath the Phoenix Blood Spear, Blacksalt vomited even greater mouthfuls of blood, his body unceasingly trembling. Currently he didn't even possess the ability to cry out. His skeleton had been nearly shattered to bits and his organs were almost turned to soupy gruel.

Naqi frowned. He coldly said, "Lin Ming, is it possible that you don't know that this duel on Ash Blood Mountain was mutually agreed to by the high level figures of Mount Potala and the saints? This is only a duel, and unless there is some accident in the battle, neither side can kill the other!"

What Naqi said was true. When Mount Potala had sent forth Hang Chi and Dragon Fang to fight, they had already concluded that their chances of winning weren't very high. It was also impossible for them to send the future hopes of their people into a deathtrap, thus they took the initiative to lay down conditions for this match.

Lin Ming was silent for a moment. Then, he put away the Phoenix Blood Spear and the massive pressure suddenly vanished. This sudden change caused Blacksalt's body to shake once more, vomiting out one last mouthful of blood before he fainted on the spot.

Not too far away, the saint martial artists were all silent. Lin Ming was too horrifying. Blacksalt's powerful bodily strength and defensive abilities were renowned within the saint race, and yet he had been beaten into a bloody goo by Lin Ming. He didn't even seem to be alive anymore.

"Humph!" Naqi coldly snorted. With a wave of his hand, Blacksalt was received into a cave dwelling that he carried with him.

Naqi didn’t bother arguing over the matter of Lin Ming worsening Blacksalt’s wounds when he removed his spear. He only sneered and said, “Since you can make Blacksalt into such an appearance, it seems you’re a bit stronger than I first anticipated, but… hehe, during the negotiations at Mount Potala, you challenged my Senior-apprentice Brother Wumo, the Good Fortune Saint Son… how stupid of you. You’re no different than a little child playing around with a slingshot in the middle of two armies, challenging the general of one side to a duel in a year. If it weren’t for the special situation at the negotiation site and us saints being unable to weaken our momentum, why would Senior-apprentice Brother Wumo ever bother responding to you? To him, you are nothing more than an ant!”

Lin Ming’s complexion was cold and calm. He asked in reply, “From your tone, do you think that you can step on me like an ant?”

“Hahaha, it seems you really are in a hurry to get stomped by me. Although you are a bit stronger than I first thought, that barely makes you eligible to fight me. Do you honestly believe you are invincible amongst your generation? You have just experienced two battles, and although it doesn’t look like you’ve consumed too much energy, I don’t want you searching for any excuses when I beat you into the ground. I will give you three days’ time to adjust your condition. Three days from now, you and I will fight!”

Naqi crossed his arms against his chest, his voice filled with contempt as he looked down at the world. It was like he simply didn’t place this battle against Lin Ming in his heart.

“This fellow is far too brash!”

“Just who the hell does he think he is?”

On the human side, there were martial artists that couldn’t stand Naqi’s actions. Even so, they had no choice but to admit that Naqi’s strength was unfathomably deep. Until now, no one had found out where his limits were. They didn’t even know what techniques he used or what cards he had hidden.

For the second ranked martial artist of the human First Martial Meeting to challenge the first place champion of the saint First Martial Meeting, this was a battle that the humans had little confidence in.

True Divinity descendant. These three words were like mountains that pressed down on their chests, making it hard for them to breathe. Many of them were cheering for Lin Ming in their hearts, but even so, facing such a powerful opponent, any result was an unknown.

Not too far away from the battlefield, a black-clothed Dragon Fang and a white linen-robed Hang Chi were looking at the center of the battlefield. "It's been nine years but Lin Ming has really taken a step further in his growth. Perhaps… his legend will continue on today." Hang Chi quietly said. He held prayer beads in his hands and chanted Buddhist prayers. As for Dragon Fang, he had clenched his fists; it was unknown what he was thinking.

Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and looked straight at Imperial Prince Naqi. He sneered and then slowly lifted the spearpoint, pointing it straight towards Naqi's forehead.

"Three days is too long. Those two fights just now were only a warm up. You and I, let's finish this now."

Lin Ming's words were similarly arrogant. In these two fights just now, his battle against the red-clothed woman wasn't anything at all. But, his battle against Blacksalt could be considered intense. Blacksalt himself wasn't a common nobody, but Lin Ming had referred to their battle as a warm up.

"Is that so…" Naqi smiled, and his smile became increasingly evil as he exposed the sharp tips of his canines. "Since you are in such a hurry to be defeated, let me fulfill your wish."

Clang!

With a clear and resonant cry, Naqi extracted a pitch black long spear from his spatial ring.

Naqi’s weapon was also a spear!

“Spear? Interesting!”

Lin Ming looked at Naqi, his body seething with fighting spirit. He could feel that Naqi wasn’t weak at all. Although Naqi was arrogant, he had the unfathomable strength required to back it up!

“I must defeat the Good Fortune Saint Son, so I’ll defeat you here as the first step!”

Chapter 1415 – Fighting the Imperial Prince

Chapter 1415 – Fighting the Imperial Prince

…

…

…

Strong winds howled. Within the grim and desolate ruins atop Ash Blood Mountain, Naqi's long hair chaotically whipped about, his clothes flapping around him.

His eyes were as sharp as lightning. His left hand was held behind his back and his right hand grasped a spear. The pitch black nine foot long spear slowly extended outwards as he pointed the tip towards the ground, a cold light sparkling atop it. As this image was joined together with his straight figure, Naqi was like a tall and steady pine tree.

Above the heavens, below the earth, only he was worthy!

Just this aura alone made one subconsciously fall into a submissive state of awe. Just by standing in front of him, one could feel a tremendous pressure, pushing them to the limit.

This was the aura of a future sovereign!

This aura was the superior momentum that Naqi had accumulated over an extremely long period of time. By constantly defeating geniuses at the same level, his confidence had risen again and again. When combined with his terrifying strength, this aura was the manifestation of his being!

"This Naqi is truly extraordinary!"

“There will inevitably be a role for him on the stage of the future great calamity. He might even become one of the leading main characters!”

Even though the human martial artists couldn’t bear Naqi and wanted to bite a chunk out of him, they couldn’t help but acknowledge just how horrifying he was.

This sort of person was a dragon in a pool. As the true war of the great calamity arrived, he would constantly change, evolving until he soared to the heavens.

Facing such a Naqi, Lin Ming’s complexion was cold. He held the Phoenix Blood Spear in one hand, extending it out. The 10 foot Phoenix Blood Spear looked as if it was cast in iron, immovable.

“How amusing!”

Naqi smiled. But suddenly, a cold light burst out from his eyes and the rocks beneath his feet exploded.

Bang!

As the air trembled around him, Naqi made his move!

His speed reached an unimaginable level. The inky black spear was like a bolt of black lightning, thrusting torwards Lin Ming’s throat like a kiss from a death god!

This sudden attack had caught everyone unprepared. This attack had reached the extremes of speed and power; even a peak Divine Lord powerhouse would have been instantly defeated beneath this spear strike without any ability to resist.

In that moment, Lin Ming also moved. His sense locked onto Naqi’s body. From the very instant that astral essence erupted from Naqi’s body, Lin Ming had been prepared.

The Phoenix Blood Spear thrust out. The immense power of thunder and fire that had been saved within the Heretical God Tree burst out, fiercely colliding in the sky.

Bang!

It was like bolts of divine thunder crashed into the ground. Countless crushed stones were raised up and then swept into the sky by a wild vortex of energy. The earth shivered and divine light spilled out in all directions. In the dark skies, a round sun seemed to appear.

Luckily, everyone was already prepared and wasn't too close to the battlefield. The older martial artists had laid down protective enchantments in front of the juniors, but even then, those protective enchantments were wildly struck by the waves of energy, nearly exploding.

Hu – !

The blinding explosion of thunder and fire continued for several breaths of time before slowly fading away. The skies were filled with immense amounts of rock that had been reduced to sand by the horrifying energy. The rocky sand was lifted up into the skies by the wind, turning the entire Ash Blood Mountain battlefield into a dusky world.

"How terrifying!"

"To think this is a battle between a middle Divine Transformation youth and a late Saint Transformation youth. It's hard to imagine this is possible... even a battle between Holy Lords can't compare!"

"This Imperial Prince Naqi and Lin Ming are both geniuses born unto the world of the great calamity. One was born in the saints and one was born in humanity. In a hundred million years, their strength will reach levels that cannot be comprehended by common sense!"

"This will be a fight between dragons and tigers; just who will emerge victorious?"

The human martial artists were originally lacking in confidence, but as they saw Lin Ming's aura rise like a beam of light, a faint spark of hope ignited in their hearts. If Lin Ming, as the second ranked martial artist of the human First Martial Meeting, could defeat the first place champion of the saint First Martial Meeting, then humanity would truly be lifted up in pride and happiness. Otherwise, they would be cast down. Everyone knew that although Lin Ming had come second, the truth was that he was nearly equal to Frost Dream. No one could tell who was weaker or stronger between the two.

If Lin Ming lost here, that would be equal to all the young elites of humanity losing!

“You can actually receive my probing strike so easily. You indeed possess the qualifications to be my opponent!” As Naqi spoke, his eyes sparkled.

The surrounding martial artists were left speechless. Such a sharp and vicious attack was only a probing strike – this was too ridiculous.

Naqi strode forwards, one step at a time. As he did, flames seemed to burn atop his body. These were not true flames. Rather, because the astral essence within his body was too powerful, it had reached the level of substantializing, thus it appeared as flames around him.

1000 feet, 900 feet, 800 feet…

Like this, Naqi approached Lin Ming, coming closer and closer. The saints’ body transformation excelled in close combat. As for the humans’ essence gathering, that excelled in long distance combat. In these past days, when human martial artists had fought in missions throughout the Bright Luster Great World, the most basic knowledge they learnt was that they could not allow the saints to approach them and engage in a brutal melee. Otherwise, in a situation where both sides had similar levels of strength, there was a 70% chance that they would die!

“Lin Ming, be careful!”

“Get away!”

Many martial artists anxiously cried out. But Lin Ming simply watched as Naqi approached, motionless.

"Oh? You've got guts! Could it be that you think your level of body transformation technique has reached a degree comparable to mine?"

As Naqi spoke, he was only 100 feet away from Lin Ming. For a peak master, this mere 100 feet wouldn't even take a thousandth of a blink of an eye to cross. This was simply the same as no distance at all.

Ka ka ka!

All of the joints in Lin Ming's body exploded with loud crackling sounds. He had opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates to the limit. The strength that was hiding within him was like a volcano that could erupt at any moment!

"How interesting! Haha, then let me see just what worth your body transformation technique has!"

Naqi burst out with a horrendous roar as a blazing divine light covered his entire body. Strange runes began to appear all over his face. His hair grew longer and a pair of sharp fangs extended down from the corners of his mouth just like spikes. His elbows and knees lengthened, growing ferocious bone spikes all over, and gold scales emerged from his skin, covering his entire body.

Just 100 feet away from Lin Ming, Naqi completed his body metamorphosis!

Only a small number of people within the saint race possessed this transformation ability.

Although it couldn't be said that every saint who could metamorphose their body was more powerful than those that couldn't, the absolute fact was that the several peak members of the saint race all had this ability!

As Naqi transformed his body, a horrifying energy erupted. Even those human martial artists 10 miles away could feel this dark pressure, much less Lin Ming. If Lin Ming was a mere hundred feet away, the pressure he had to withstand could be imagined! If it were a normal martial artist in his shoes, they would fall to the floor trembling, losing all ability to fight!

Many saints fell to their knees, praying towards Imperial Prince Naqi. Although this was a strange sight to humans, something they couldn't understand, for the saints this was actually a natural response originating from their inborn instincts. For a people that worshipped a powerful mortal body, this was the awe they felt from encountering such a magnificent specimen!

Naqi's bloodline was one of the peak bloodlines of the saints. He was worthy of their worship!

Facing this Naqi, Lin Ming simply raised the Phoenix Blood Spear, his eyes as cold as ice.

"How brave! An essence gathering system martial artist is actually able to withstand my pressure at such a close distance! Then, let me see whether you are strong or just plain stupid!"

As Naqi laughed out loud, he grasped his long spear and smashed down at Lin Ming!

The might of this spear strike was titanic, as if a 100,000 foot high mountain had been dropped down from the clouds with infinite momentum! Even the void collapsed under this pressure. With the locking in of the surrounding space, no one within 100 feet could escape Naqi's spear. As long as this spear came pounding down, even if Lin Ming had opened the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates he would still be wounded to the brink of death!

Many martial artists cried out in fear, waiting to see Lin Ming be smashed to pieces by Naqi's spear. But, Naqi's movements suddenly stiffened, slowing down by a great deal.

"What!?"

In this moment, Naqi felt a vast and boundless aura cover the space within 100 feet. All space within this area became heavy, filled with an incomparably terrifying gravitational force, stifling his every motion. And, lingering atop his spear, a trace of gray energy wandered around. This gray energy was as thin as a strand of spider silk, but his spear actually wasn't able to cut through it. It had caused his spear to slow down to half its speed!

What Lin Ming used was the grandmist space that contained grandmist energy!

True grandmist space was the fusion of the Heavenly Demon, Heavenly Mortal, and Heavenly God martial intents. Simultaneously, the grandmist space also contained true grandmist energy.

Grandmist energy was as heavy as a star. If these thin strands wove together, they formed a giant spider web, and any martial artist that fell into the grandmist space was like a fly caught in a web of grandmist energy, unable to struggle at all!

A single thin strand of grandmist energy was something that even a World King would find difficult to cut apart. If it were twisted into a web, the hardiness of that grandmist energy could be imagined!

Of course, Lin Ming had yet to reach this degree of proficiency. He had simply used the tiniest strand of grandmist energy, but this tiny strand had still caused a massive hindrance to Naqi's movements.

In that moment when Naqi's spear was shackled, Lin Ming also thrust out with his own!

The dazzling spear light reached the extreme. A strike that didn't ask for force, only speed!

Lin Ming wanted to attack Naqi before he regrouped the astral essence he had used and pierce through his defenses!

Lin Ming could imagine that Naqi's defensive capabilities were truly terrifying. If Naqi were to stimulate his defensive abilities to their limit then Lin Ming's only ability that could harm him would be Heavenly Dao Judgment.

But, there was no time to use Heavenly Dao Judgment right now. What Lin Ming needed to do was take the initiative and pierce through Naqi's body as the saint was attacking with all of his strength. Because of Naqi's powerful mortal body, it was impossible to win with a single spear strike, but he would still be able to heavily wound him!

"Space and Time Laws!"

As the Phoenix Blood Spear thrust out, the surrounding flow of time slowed down. Only that red spear reached an extreme velocity.

With this extreme speed coupled with Lin Ming's large success comprehensions of the Space and Time Laws, the potential of this strike was overwhelming!

However, just as his spear reached Naqi's chest, the space around Naqi seemed to fall into a thick darkness. At the same time, time distorted and space drew back. An invisible strength came shrouding down and the slowed down flow of time around Naqi was reverted to normal.

Puff!

Blood splashed out. Naqi retreated a single step back. Although this only seemed like a simple step backwards, the truth was that he had stepped back a thousand feet!

His hand held onto his bloody chest, blood flowing out from between his fingers. As he looked at Lin Ming, a look of astonishment crossed his face.

Chapter 1416 – Naqi's Power

Chapter 1416 – Naqi's Power

…

…

…

Naqi was not surprised by Lin Ming's use of the Time and Space Laws, but by the degree to which he could utilize the grandmist space. When he had approached Lin Ming, Lin Ming hadn't taken even half a step backwards. The reason that Lin Ming had dared to allow a body transformation martial artist to come close was not because of his own body transformation technique but because of his grandmist space. The smaller the area of the grandmist space was, the greater its might would be!

In other words, from the very start Lin Ming hadn't feared close combat at all. When Imperial Prince Naqi had approached him he already had a plan laid out. Lin Ming had waited for the moment that Naqi attacked to launch his own counterattack and take him by surprise.

However, the sure-win strike had failed.

Lin Ming was startled. Even though he didn't underestimate Naqi, he never imagined that Naqi would be able to attain such high comprehension in the Laws as a saint race martial artist.

In that instant, Naqi had utilized three different Laws. In particular, the Space and Time Laws. Although he hadn't been able to achieve the degree of proficiency that Lin Ming had reached, he had still steadily reached the fifth level Concept. If he used it for just defense then he was only slightly worse than Lin Ming, and this slight difference had caused his chest to be stabbed by the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Naqi's defensive powerful was horrifying. It was impossible for that light stab to pierce his heart. Even though Lin Ming was able to break apart Naqi's tough skin that was as hard as divine iron, that was entirely due to the powerful strength brought to him by the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. Otherwise, he wouldn't even be able to leave behind a flesh wound!

"Naqi is injured!"

Many people noticed the blood leaking out from between Naqi's fingers. The saint martial artists were so shocked that they couldn't even speak.

In their minds, Naqi was an invincible existence amongst his peers. The only one that could challenge Naqi was the Good Fortune Saint Son if he had reversed his age by several dozen years!

And yet this Naqi was actually injured.

Everyone could see that the spear strike had only caused a light wound to his skin and flesh that didn't even affect Naqi's combat efficient. Even if that strike were to hit a human's body, it still wouldn't affect their combat strength, but those saint martial artists found this hard to believe.

This was because Naqi was a legendary existence in their minds!

The human martial artists all gripped their fists, not cheering. They only looked at the battlefield, nervousness in their eyes. In that exchange just now they hadn't been able to understand anything at all, and the result was an unknown to him.

Naqi looked at his bloodstained hands. He stretched out his tongue and licked his bloodstained fingers, looking like a demonic monster.

"I didn't expect that not only would you have inherited Empyrean Primordius' legacy but that you would also have practiced the Grandmist Heavenly Dao to such a degree. I've underestimated you." As Naqi spoke, the muscles on his chest began to wriggle about. The wound that Lin Ming left behind was regenerating at a visible speed.

What an abnormal restorative power!

This sort of regenerative ability was even greater than Lin Ming's.

Lin Ming watched as the wound he left behind vanished. He coldly said, "I also didn't think that even though you are a saint you would comprehend the Laws, and also to such a high boundary."

"Hahaha!" Naqi laughed. "In the 33 Layered Heavens Dao, the essence gathering system has 11 layers. The 'Seek Nine Falls and find the Nine Divine Shifts' that humanity practices is only a single variation. In this world there is also an essence gathering system that my saint race can cultivate. Did you think that only you could dual cultivate body and energy and that I could not?

"Yes, whether it is humans or saints, both are equal. The saints excel in body transformation and humans excel in essence gathering. This also means that the 'Seek Nine Falls and find the Nine Divine Shifts' that humanity practices is the strongest essence gathering system of the 11 Daos! Now, let us see just who among us is more powerful!"

Whether it was Lin Ming or Naqi, both of them dual cultivated in body and energy. They were both unrivalled geniuses in this aspect, stepping on similar paths as if guided by the hands of fate.

Of course, Lin Ming not only dual cultivated body and energy, but triple cultivated essence, energy, and soul.

He believed that even though following this path of cultivation was difficult, it was necessary if he wished to find the road which led to the peak of martial arts, because that was the most universal truth in the world.

Bang!

Lin Ming and Imperial Prince Naqi collided once more. Their overwhelming momentum caused the earth to shake.

A terrifying shockwave rushed out like a tide, extending to infinity!

Lin Ming and Imperial Prince Naqi both launched into a brutal melee. Each strike was devastating, creating massive craters in the ground and filling the skies with dust. As one looked down from the heavens, they could see a giant bowl-shaped pit being slowly dug out.

In just a moment, the towering Ash Blood Mountain had been reduced to a desert. Countless rocks were turned into powder, crazily sweeping through the world in giant storms.

"Interesting, interesting! You are a match that is worthy for me to be excited about! But what a pity, your grandmist space cannot be filled with grandmist energy at all times, otherwise your true essence cannot endure. I know that stimulating the grandmist energy that is as heavy as stars places a tremendous burden and level of consumption on your body! If this is the limit of your skill then your loss has already been decided!"

Naqi wildly cackled. Atop his spear, a divine fire lit up. This was his astral essence that he was maddeningly burning.

Ka ka ka ka!

Naqi's joints emitted explosive sounds once more. His body grew again and again until he was a head higher than Lin Ming.

Naqi's body was originally covered in scales, but now those scales had turned into plates of bone armor!

The hard and fierce bone armor covered Naqi's entire body. His arms became sturdier and thicker and meridian channels spread through his fingers, twisting about like worms. His entire being filled with strength and even his shoes split apart as clawed feet appeared, similar to a dragon’s.

On his head, curved horns grew out just like a devil. Then, with a flapping sound, a pair of giant wings unfolded behind Naqi’s back. As these two wings spread out, their wingspan was actually 30 feet.

Imperial Prince Naqi had transformed his body once more. This was two body metamorphoses!

“Two body metamorphoses?”

“He can transform his body twice!?”

All of the human martial artists were shocked. A single body metamorphosis ability was already freakishly abnormal, but Naqi was actually able to do so twice.

A terrifying aura exuded from his body. Let alone fighting him, even those people that were watching from ten miles away felt a horrible pressure!

Naqi smashed his claws into the ground and then slowly stood up. His two wings spread out, causing all of the surrounding dust and sand to be swept up into a tornado.

“My clan is one of the most magnificent clans of the saint race. We possess the royal bloodline, and when the most outstanding peak geniuses of my clan step into the realm of True Divinity, they can metamorphose their body three times! This was something that a senior accomplished in the holy war 3.6 billion years ago!

“Currently, I fall far short of that. But in the future, I too will step into such a boundary. I will leave behind the most wonderful legacy in the history of my clan!”

As Naqi spoke, he placed his long spear back into his spatial ring. Then, he extracted a massive heaven-sundering war halberd!

This halberd was 15 feet long; just the head of the halberd was four feet long! The giant halberd edge was cold and bright like a scythe. The shaft was as thick as an arm, and not even a grown man would be able to grasp it in one hand. The entire shaft was carved with images of all sorts of demons, savage and brutal.

But, this massive war halberd was actually perfect for Naqi's giant body.

Lin Ming didn't doubt that this halberd was forged with some type of special divine metal. Not only was it hard, but the weight itself could easily crush a mountain range. It was likely tens of millions of jins or even a hundred million jins!

It was hard to imagine just what might this halberd could display when used by Naqi, who had undergone his second metamorphosis.

As the surrounding human martial artists saw Naqi take out this giant war halberd, all of them looked at each other in utter dismay, shocked to the point of speechlessness.

They were all aware that the saints primarily cultivated body transformation, but as for what degree their body transformation technique had reached, no one knew. Now that they saw Naqi, they finally gained a profound understanding of this.

After the body transformation technique was cultivated to the peak, its might was beyond horrifying!

Facing such an enemy, just how would Lin Ming fight?

Naqi wildly laughed. After undergoing two body metamorphoses, even his personality had been influenced. He had become even more savage and arrogant!

"Lin Ming! I said that I will leave behind the most wonderful legacy in my clan! Now, let me start with you!"

Naqi roared out loud and dove towards Lin Ming. His wings spread out as his speed reached incomprehensible degrees! He was like a dragon, hurtling through the endless skies!

Hu – ! Hu – !

The two wings beat in the air, stirring up strong winds that swept up the surrounding sand. Naqi forcefully used the pressure of his flight to leave behind a giant pit in the ground!

That heaven-sundering war halberd came pounding down!

Lin Ming's eyes widened as his entire body erupted with strength.

Grandmist space!

Hoh – !

The boundless aura of the grandmist space spread out. A strand of grandmist energy spun atop the war halberd. However, Naqi simply grinned, forcefully suppressing this grandmist energy as he struck down at Lin Ming!

"Haha! The Grandmist Heavenly Dao is wonderful, but your comprehension is too weak! Just what do you think a spider thread-thin strand of grandmist energy can do to me!? Now die!"

Within the grandmist space, Naqi's speed hadn't diminished at all. He continued rushing towards Lin Ming with his halberd!

In that moment, the space around Lin Ming came under a heavy pressure, nearly collapsing. He was placed in a cage, locked inside!

This was no longer just the Concept of Space, but Naqi also forcefully suppressing space with his powerful strength. Even with Lin Ming's comprehensions of the Space and Time Laws, it was impossible for him to instantly break through these bindings!

If this halberd struck him, Lin Ming would find it nearly impossible to withstand it, even if he burst out with all of his strength. If there was an accident, he could be crushed to death!

As for Lin Ming using the Phoenix Blood Spear to block, it was simply impossible to block Naqi's overwhelming momentum.

This was a critical moment!

In a thousandth of an instant in this life or death moment, a tiny blue spear rushed out from between Lin Ming's eyebrows.

This blue spear split in two, half of it firing towards the war halberd and the other half firing towards Naqi's forehead.

A terrifyingly exuberant aura emitted from this deep blue spear, similar to the aura of the grandmist space. This little blue spear was Lin Ming's blue soul battle spirit!

When a battle spirit entered the blue soul realm, its strength would suddenly rise to another level, taking a huge leap upwards!

It had to be known that this step had stopped Lin Ming for a full 10 years!

Even Frost Dream, who studied the Divine Dream Law, had been extremely far from the blue soul battle spirit level in the past. Even the vast majority of peak Holy Lord powerhouses were stuck at this step, unable to make a breakthrough in their lives.

Chapter 1417 – Blue Soul Battle Spirit

Chapter 1417 – Blue Soul Battle Spirit

…

…

…

The blue soul battle spirit split into two. One half shot towards the heaven-sundering war halberd. A battle spirit was the manifestation of a martial artist's will. If one's will was strong, they could control everything around them. The Ruling Spirit Art was created with this characteristic in mind.

At this time, Lin Ming had abruptly used his blue soul battle spirit to control the space around the war halberd! The blue soul battle spirit was like an invisible hand. When combined with the grandmist energy, it slowed down the halberd.

As for the second half of the battle spirit, it shot into Naqi's spiritual sea, crashing into it like a bolt of lightning!

Naqi's body shook and he coughed miserably. In this moment, Lin Ming rushed forwards and thrust the Phoenix Blood Spear towards Naqi's throat.

"You – !"

Naqi was enraged. He roared out, slashing his claw down at the Phoenix Blood Spear!

Kacha!

Naqi's post-metamorphosis body was far too durable. His claw pressed against the Phoenix Blood Spear, bending it into a curve.

Power of thunder and fire – explode!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. From behind Lin Ming, the phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared. A terrifying power of thunder and fire flushed out as if the dam holding it back had burst apart.

Bang!

A fierce explosion rang out. Naqi's right hand was exploded into a mess of blood and flesh!

And at this time, the war halberd that was hindered by the blue soul battle spirit and grandmist energy came smashing down!

Lin Ming stepped on the void, suddenly stepping back. As he stepped back, space was destroyed and spatial runes appeared beneath his feet, instantly bringing him back a thousand feet.

That detonation of thunder and fire had torn apart the space cage just now. Thus, Naqi was unable to lock down Lin Ming.

Bang!

The heaven-sundering war halberd pounded the earth, causing the ground to shake. A savage energy shot up into the skies, blowing away all the clouds and leaving the entire Ash Blood Mountain in a chaotic wreck. The originally messy ruins of Ash Blood Mountain were struck hundreds of feet lower by Naqi's attack!

This was the all-out attack of Naqi after he had undergone his second transformation; the might of this strike could be imagined, but it was still avoided by Lin Ming!

Not only did Lin Ming avoid it, but he even caused grievous wounds to Naqi's right hand.

"That is a blue soul battle spirit!"

"Lin Ming has already stepped into the threshold of a blue soul battle spirit?"

The saint martial artists weren't too knowledgeable about battle spirits but the human martial artists had a deep and profound awareness of them; they knew just how significant it was for a middle Divine Transformation martial artist to reach the level of a blue soul battle spirit.

There were numerous peak Holy Lords that were unable to take this step in their entire lives. The distance between a gold battle spirit and a blue soul battle spirit was simply too great, like an immeasurable moat. Even so, Lin Ming had actually obtained a blue soul battle spirit at the Divine Transformation realm. This level of talent was far too bewildering!

"Maybe… Lin Ming has already surpassed Frost Dream in attainments of battle spirits!"

"I can't believe it. Frost Dream comes from Divine Dream Heavenly Palace and studies the Divine Dream Law so her soul is undoubtedly strong. Then, just what is Lin Ming relying on to reach this level?"

The human martial artists all looked at each other in confusion. Lin Ming's immense strength encompassed every aspect; he nearly had no weakness!

Crash!

Naqi leapt up from the wreckage. His right arm was stained with blood and his face was savage. After undergoing two body metamorphoses he thought that even if this strike wouldn't win him immediate victory, he would still be able to wound Lin Ming and then slowly overcome him. But, he never imagined that Lin Ming would use this strange method to counter his attack and cause him to be injured instead.

As a result, his all-out strike had struck nothing at all. This feel of hitting nothing but air was extremely uncomfortable and enraging!

Lin Ming's eyes blazed as he looked at Naqi. He slowly said, "In this world there is no perfect race. The saint race's geniuses seem as if they are more powerful than the humans', but they also have their own weakness. Your overly powerful mortal body has instead weakened your soul. In terms of battle spirits, you are inferior to humans!"

Lin Ming laid bare the weaknesses of the saint race.

To a human martial artist, a battle spirit could be said to play a large role, but also a small role.

If one said it had a large role, that was because there were many special situations where a battle spirit could display a tremendous function. It could stabilize one's will and be used to withstand soul attacks.

If one said it had a small role, that was because in actual combat, the effects of a battle spirit weren't too obvious.

This was because if someone had a battle spirit then so would others. If someone used their battle spirit to hinder their opponent, their opponent would use their battle spirit to offset this.

Unless there was a great disparity in battle spirits, the effects of them in combat were minor.

Thus, when Lin Ming was in the Sky Spill Continent he had frequently used his battle spirit. This was because he was often the only one who possessed a battle spirit. Even when he met other martial artists of the Sky Spill Continent who had a battle spirit, they were often at the bronze forming stage. To reach bronze perfection was a legend among legends. As for a silver battle spirit, that was a completely unknown domain to the martial artists of the Sky Spill Continent. In terms of battle spirits, all of them were thrown 108,000 miles away by Lin Ming.

Like this, Lin Ming's battle spirit hadn't found a rival. He had been able to pull open a great gulf between himself and the other martial artists of the Sky Spill Continent.

But in the Divine Realm, the function of his battle spirit had been far smaller because the opponents Lin Ming faced were stronger and their attainments in battle spirits were also outstanding. Frost Dream possessed a battle spirit that was on equal standing with Lin Ming's.

When everyone was supporting their attacks with battle spirits then the battle spirits would balance each other out, meaning neither side would be able to display their full strength.

Now, in facing Imperial Prince Naqi, Lin Ming's battle spirit was able to display a miraculous effect. This was because the saint race's battle spirits were far too weak!

"Battle spirit... hehe! I didn't think that your battle spirit could reach such a degree! My saint race is a natural enemy race of you humans. Throughout these countless years, innumerable wars have erupted between our races, so how could my saint race not know about your human race's battle spirits? Your attack was unexpected so I suffered a loss, but as long as I revolve my astral essence with an arcane skill and seal away my spiritual sea, then your battle spirit attack is useless. The most you'll be able to do is try to hinder my motions, but I can use my absolute strength to break through the obstruction of your battle spirit!"

As Imperial Prince Naqi spoke, his entire body began to emit explosive crackling sounds once more. He lifted his war halberd, rushing towards Lin Ming again!

His strength already reached a nearly unimaginable degree. Even under the dual influence of the grandmist space and blue soul battle spirit, he forcefully withstood them both and attacked Lin Ming!

A terrifying strength poured forth, like a raging tsunami, a collapsing mountain!

All of Naqi's astral essence turned into a black dragon that danced in the air as it impacted towards Lin Ming!

Lin Ming revolved all the true essence within his body. The phantom of the Heretical God Tree reappeared behind him. The power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation gushed forth, howling into the world.

Heavenly Dao Judgment!

Bang!

This was a true frontal collision. Supported by the blue soul battle spirit and grandmist space, Lin Ming weakened Naqi's impact!

The power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation wove together into a sea of red and purple, swallowing up the skies!

Naqi raised his head to the sky and let out a heaven-quaking roar. All of the muscles within his body burst out and his long hair twisted in the wind. He brought his war halberd crashing down. The void trembled as a brutal shockwave caused the world to vibrate and all of the spectators' scalps to tingle.

A terrifying endurance, a terrifying mortal body explosive force!

Even with the bindings of the blue soul battle spirit, Naqi was still fierce like an unstoppable beast.

"This is too horrifying! It's absolutely impossible to fight Naqi in close combat, otherwise Lin Ming will be ripped to shreds!"

"This is Lin Ming! He cultivates dual body and energy so his body is equally durable. If a normal martial artist were to stand in his place, even if they weren't directly struck down by Naqi, just this aura alone and the shockwaves it produces would cause their body to burst apart in a fountain of blood!"

"No wonder that Naqi was so arrogant these past days, because he indeed has the qualifications to be arrogant! If Naqi is so fierce, then what degree has the Good Fortune Saint Son reached? Since Lin Ming challenged the Good Fortune Saint Son to a match in 100 years, isn't that the same as a 100 year suicide deadline?"

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

A dreadful impact noise stunned the ears. Everyone retreated again and again. In the skies, all they saw were two beams of divine light violently colliding. One was pure black and the other was red and purple!

This sort of collision required an unthinkable amount of energy. Even so, that Imperial Prince Naqi likely didn't care at all. In the eyes of the human martial artists, he wasn't a person at all but a beast in disguise. His stamina and endurance were undoubtedly just as great.

As for Lin Ming, he actually managed to forcefully engage Naqi in a brutal melee fest. Moreover, this was dozens of moves, each move shaking the heavens and earth!

The ones most shocked here were the saint martial artists.

There all watched with dumbfounded expressions. Originally, when saints and humans fought, it was usually saints chasing and humans fleeing. The humans would try their best to pull open the distance and attack the saints from afar. Because of this, the saints looked down at humans with contempt, thinking they were nothing but a gutless and pathetic race.

But now, Lin Ming was actually engaging Naqi in a head on battle!

As Witchplume, the sixth ranked martial artist of the saints' First Martial Meeting, looked up at the skies, she took a deep breath. Her eyes sparkled. The intensity of this battle was too great. If she were up there instead, let alone being able to block a move, but even if she did she wouldn't be able to last more than 20 exchanges before collapsing. In other words, Lin Ming not only surpassed her in strength but also in endurance and restorative power. These two aspects were the pride of the saint race and yet she had been surpassed in them by a human!

"Hahaha! Great! Wonderful! Let me see just how long you can last!"

Naqi's entire body was covered in blood. Although he was rapidly using up his strength and astral essence, his aura became increasingly fierce the longer he fought!

“Dragon Wrestling Art!”

Naqi used the Dragon Wrestling Art of the saint race. When a saint martial artist achieved the peak of their mortal bodies, they could even wrestle an Azure Dragon unarmed!

Currently, Naqi was far from reaching such a level. Even so, he had managed to cultivate a bit of this move’s charm. For him, bringing down a young dragon wasn’t any problem at all.

“Black hole seed!”

Lin Ming flew backwards, his hands forming over a thousand seals at once. The dark black hole seed emerged from his inner world, rapidly spinning in the skies.

After nine years, this miniature black hole had become much larger.

This was the inheritance left behind by Empyrean Divine Seal and also the highest level technique that Lin Ming possessed!

“Another little fancy trick of the essence gathering system. Then, I will use absolute strength to annihilate it!”

Naqi laughed and hurtled towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming’s expression was calm and cold. His entire body began revolving energy as the phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared behind him. All of the heaven and earth origin energy within a hundred miles began to stir until it was whipped up into a howling storm. Lin Ming chanted out loud, “Power of the Black Hole, swallow all matter, swallow all light, swallow the five elements, swallow all sound, fall into an infinite abyss of time, within this cage of space you shall never emerge, sink forever, perish through the sands of history! Divine Seal Art, swallow all of existence – Eternal Darkness!”

Chapter 1418 – Suppressing the Imperial Prince

Chapter 1418 – Suppressing the Imperial Prince

…

…

…

In that moment, every ounce of origin energy between the heavens and earth began to crazily gather towards that seed of chaos, forming a dark star black hole!

Then, Lin Ming used the entirety of his strength to thrust this dark star black hole towards Imperial Prince Naqi.

“Dragon Wrestling Art, I’ll blow you up!”

Naqi lifted his hands high, bringing the heaven-sundering war halberd into the air. Then, he smashed down. This strike was used with 120% of his strength. He revolved all of his astral essence to the limit. His muscles bulged outwards as countless blue veins rose up, squirming about like earthworms even as they burst apart beneath the pressure!

The heaven-sundering war halberd came pounding down!

Bang!

With a dreadful explosion, Naqi’s halberd collided with the black hole seed!

In that instant, all the space within 10 miles collapsed!

This was the space of the Divine Void! Underneath the intense collision of Lin Ming and Naqi’s strike, this stable space was as frail as glass!

“A battle between a Divine Transformation and Saint Transformation martial artist can actually cause the space within 10 miles to collapse!”

“These two people are the absolute king amongst kings within their level, no one can compete with them! In front of them, a divine mountain is as frail as a sculpture and space is as thin as paper!”

Everyone cried out in alarm. At this time, the terrifying detonation force created by the black hole began to wantonly spread out.

It was Lin Ming and Naqi that bore the brunt of this terrifying impact.

Naqi’s entire body shook like an earthquake passed through it. The skin and flesh of his arms cracked apart and his palms split open. The bones of his arms cracked to pieces and he almost lost all feeling in his arms!

“What!?”

Naqi never imagined that this ordinary-looking black hole would be unbelievably hard. Not only did it withstand his attack but it also erupted with a terrifying strength.

As the one controlling this black hole, the impact that Lin Ming had to withstand was not light. Even though the black hole couldn’t be destroyed, Lin Ming still received tremendous wounds underneath the reckless surges of energy.

The explosive energy swept over Lin Ming like a wave, forcing him back a thousand feet. Only then was he able to stabilize the restless blood within him.

Naqi’s hands shivered. Blood dripped down his arms, gruesome and alarming. He nearly dropped the heaven-sundering war halberd.

He hadn’t thought that his battle with Lin Ming would reach such a frigid and savage degree.

Naqi had already consumed 60-70% of his astral essence. His strength had also plummeted by a great deal. But, he knew that he couldn't weaken his momentum right now. Lin Ming definitely wasn't in a better situation than he was. The victor of this fight would depend on who could hold out the longest.

"Die!"

Naqi roared. He ignored his severely wounded arms and rushed towards Lin Ming once more!

After exhausting so much of his energy, he still didn't stop for even the slightest moment. He instead hurtled himself into another collision.

No matter how ruthless you are, I can be even more ruthless!

This form of combat caused all the martial artists to suck in a breath of cold air!

Ka ka ka ka!

Fierce and vicious bone spikes shot up from all over Naqi's body!

As these bone spikes drilled forth from his skin, they brought behind them icky goo and blood. Each spike was four to five feet long, cold and dense just like a spear!

This was not body metamorphosis, but one of Naqi's attack methods. It was similar to the time that Blacksalt utilized the spikes on his back. This was an ability that came from certain bloodlines of the saint race.

At this time, Naqi's arms were injured and he couldn't control his halberd. Thus, he used his body as a weapon to forcefully hurtle himself towards Lin Ming!

Wild Dragon Dash!

Naqi's speed reached the extreme. Astral essence burned over his body. He was a massive black fireball that shot towards Lin Ming!

At this time, because of the previous collision and him barely suppressing the tumbling blood within him, Lin Ming's true essence was in a chaotic mess. Even so, he wanted to face Naqi's crazy rush head on!

The grandmist space couldn't be used to defend; Lin Ming had trouble summoning it right now. As for his blue soul battle spirit, just that alone was not enough. Even If he tried to use his Phoenix Blood Spear in conjunction with it, that was simply suicide!

For Naqi, this 1000 foot distance took less than an instant to cross!

As the human martial artists saw this, all of them cried out in alarm.

However, Lin Ming actually remained remarkably calm. If Naqi hurtled towards him, although the might was great it would still put him at risk!

In this critical moment, Lin Ming's pupils shrank. His soul force rushed into his inner world, and in front of Lin Ming, a massive stone gate appeared!

This stone gate emitted an infinite ancient aura. The entire gate was covered with mysterious carvings, as if a separate universe were sealed within it.

This was the Primordius Gate!

In the past, when Empyrean Primordius created this stone gate, he had done so with the highest level of chaos stone and then recorded all of the comprehensions he had gleaned in his lifetime. This included the complete heart mantra to the Primordius martial intent. However, the use of the Primordius Gate was not as simple as recording inheritances – it could also be used as a bafflingly powerful magic weapon!

Lin Ming summoned all the true essence available to him and poured it into the Primordius Gate!

Bang!

Naqi didn’t have time to react at all. He was like a raging bull, solidly smashing into the Primordius Gate!

The several spikes on Naqi’s body disintegrated into dust!

Puff!

Naqi spat out a mouthful of blood as he was sent rolling hundreds of feet away. The dark red Primordius Gate, besides violently shaking a bit as Naqi crashed into it, wasn’t even damaged in the slightest!

“This is...”

The martial artists watching were all shocked. This battle was already at its crescendo. When both Lin Ming and Naqi were nearly spent dry, this strange scene had occurred.

This strike was absolutely adding wounds upon wounds for Naqi!

As the one controlling the Primordius Gate, Lin Ming only had to withstand the traction of energy as Naqi crashed into the gate. His blood restlessly stirred up within him, but the force he withstood was hundreds and thousands of times lighter than Naqi!

“You... you...”

Naqi’s entire body shivered. His body was a mess of blood and flesh, and his muscles were split apart all over his body. Over half the bone armor that covered his body had broken and all of the spikes that jutted out from him had cracked apart. There were even some spikes that had pierced through his own flesh because of that massive impact just now, thrusting into his flesh. His meridians were broken and his organs were severely injured.

As he spoke, he vomited a mouthful of blood. This blood was mixed with fragments of his organs.

The current Naqi couldn’t even be described with just tragic!

If a human had been wounded to this degree, they would have died countless times already.

In that brief exchange just now, Lin Ming had taken a great advantage. But, this was due only to his magic weapon. The power of a weapon was a part of a martial artist's strength, and Lin Ming currently was only able to stimulate a tiny portion of the Primordius Gate's true strength; he was far from being able to fully control a treasure of this level. It was only that he had made the correct tactical choice at this moment.

The Primordius Gate had resolved Naqi's attack while simultaneously causing heavy losses to him!

Naqi was already at the point of collapse.

"Die!"

At this time, Lin Ming opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates once more. By relying on the Gate of Life he even burnt a part of his blood essence for greater strength. Now that he had the advantage, with Naqi having sustained severe wounds, he absolutely wouldn't give his opponent any time to catch his breath.

He picked up the Primordius Gate with both hands, and by relying on his formidable bodily strength, he brought this stone gate pounding down at Naqi!

This was an attack using the Primordius Gate as a weapon!

Let alone the human martial artists that were skilled in the essence gathering system and were proficient in using the Laws, or even the saint martial artists that excelled in their bodily physiques, none of them had ever seen someone attack by picking up a massive stone gate and smashing it down on someone else.

The Primordius Gate could shrink and grow. In Lin Ming's hands, it was 30-40 feet long, 20 feet wide, and a foot thick. As it came smashing down, the momentum and pressure it brought with it could roll over everything!

Imperial Prince Naqi was panic-stricken. Without a care for the agonizing pain in his arms, he brought up the heaven-sundering war halberd to meet this strike!

Facing this massive gate that was as thick as a city wall, the originally large heaven-sundering war halberd seemed like nothing but a child's toy.

Peng!

With a muffled ring, Imperial Prince Naqi was smashed away by Lin Ming's Primordius Gate!

Although he had barely managed to use the heaven-sundering war halberd to block this attack, his arms were in complete ruins. How could he withstand Lin Ming's aggressive onslaught of gate smashes?

Lin Ming stepped forwards. The Primordius Gate that he held in his hands came crashing down once more!

Bang!

Like a fly, Naqi was sent tumbling back by Lin Ming again. He vomited blood in the air and even his war halberd was sent shooting away!

Lin Ming revolved the Space Laws and chased after him!

One step one smash, Naqi vomited blood again and again. No matter how powerful the bodies of the saints were, and even if Naqi had completed two body metamorphoses and he also possessed a heaven-defying king bloodline, he still couldn't withstand this brutal and savage barrage.

This was complete devastation! Overwhelming and brutal! A beating to the death!

"This… this is…"

"The Imperial Prince… is defeated!?"

The saint martial artists were bewildered. The number one person amongst the younger generation of saints, the one who possessed the king bloodline, the invincible legend that was Imperial Prince Naqi, was actually savagely beaten by a human!

The final victory of humans had not come due to the essence gathering system or use of the Laws, but had relied on Lin Ming's powerful bodily strength. A stone gate had been used to pulverize Naqi, causing him to vomit out endless amounts of blood.

The saint race martial artists found this impossible to accept!

"Hah!"

Lin Ming roared and struck out once more. With a loud ringing sound, Naqi was brutally struck down and pounded deep into the ground.

The earth caved in. Dust and sand rose up from all over. As the tens of thousands of saint and human martial artists saw this scene on the battlefield, all of them were left in utter silence.

Chapter 1419 – Victory and Defeat

Chapter 1419 – Victory and Defeat

…

…

…

Peng!

In the wreckage of the ruins, Naqi crawled up from the rubble. He was already pounded into a nearly unrecognizable form by the Primordius Gate.

At this time, all of Naqi's bone spikes had shattered, his arms were ruined, and the bone armor that covered his body had cracked to pieces. Even the bloodied white bones of his arms were exposed to the world. Half of his wings were cut off. He was a complete mess as he dragged himself across the ground.

Just his outside appearance was this horrible and his insides were even worse. His meridians had broken in countless areas, his organs, bones, and blood vessels had cracked apart everywhere.

"The Imperial Prince was defeated!"

"Imperial Prince Naqi is known as being invincible amongst his step in the entire saint race. He is someone that will surely step onto the road of True Divinity in the future, but he lost here to a human!"

The saint martial artists that watched this battle were all dumbfounded. A deep sense of shock and disbelief came over them. This was simply too unimaginable.

Here, a legend was broken and another legend had been formed.

The impression that Lin Ming left on them was profoundly deep.

As for the human martial artists, in particular the young elites, all of them clenched their fists together, their faces filled with excitement. They could no longer hold in their cheers.

Lin Ming had won!

The second ranked martial artist of the human First Martial Meeting had defeated the first place champion of the saint First Martial Meeting!

At this time, at the center of the battlefield, Lin Ming was holding the Primordius Gate high above Naqi's head.

Naqi looked up at Lin Ming. His hair was disheveled and he looked like a wild animal. A grim light shined in his eyes. His killing intent hadn't dimmed at all.

Lin Ming sneered, "Still won't admit defeat? Then I'll beat you until you're convinced!"

As Lin Ming spoke he struck out once more. Towards the geniuses of the saint race, especially those incomparably arrogant ones like Naqi that were certain to become his enemy in the future, Lin Ming wouldn't be the least bit kind at all. If this Naqi wouldn't admit defeat then Lin Ming would beat him into bits and pieces. And, leaving behind some permanent damage would be the best possible result!

At this time, a cold voice sounded out, "Stop!"

Woosh!

A black line shined, shooting out like an arrow towards Lin Ming!

Lin Ming was alarmed. He immediately raised the Primordius Gate to block this attack!

With a loud explosive sound, a wild shockwave surged outwards. Lin Ming wasn't the one who had blocked this attack. Rather, the one who blocked the black light had been a gray-robed old man who was now standing in front of him. This old man had blocked the black light with a wall of true essence.

Hu – !

The black light disintegrated, turning into pure astral essence.

Lin Ming looked at the broken black light from behind the gray-clothed old man. This black light, even if the gray-clothed old man hadn't blocked it for him, still wouldn't have taken his life. However, it would have struck him into a mess, causing his blood vitality to tumble and even causing him to receive heavy wounds.

"Thank you Senior for saving me."

Lin Ming didn't know who this gray-clothed old man was. He was likely a human supreme elder that was watching the battle on Ash Blood Mountain from afar. His cultivation had reached the half-step Empyrean boundary.

"No problem." The old man beckoned with his hand, faintly saying, "To protect the young heroic elites of my race is my responsibility. I am Skyrend Godlord's seventh direct disciple. Young Hero Lin, it's nice meeting you."

In terms of rank, Lin Ming was countless times lower than this direct disciple of Skyrend Godlord. In terms of cultivation and strength, the disparity between them was also difficult to measure. This gray-clothed old man was someone who was even more honored and majestic than a Great World King; he was absolutely a high level figure of humanity. But, because of Lin Ming's talent, this gray-clothed old man didn't regard Lin Ming as a junior at all. Rather, he faintly spoke to him like a peer.

At this time, the void distorted, turning fuzzy. On the saints' side, a man in a black cape slowly appeared. He was the one that had struck out with that bolt of astral essence just now. He hadn't intended on killing Lin Ming, only to make him suffer some troubles.

Seeing this black-caped man, the gray-clothed old man glowered. He coldly said, “You are the one who attacked just now?”

The black-caped old man coldly snorted. “So what if I did? My saint race’s Imperial Prince has already been wounded to such a degree and this boy still wants to attack? Does he want to take Naqi’s life as well?”

The black-caped old man stood in sharp contention. His cultivation was completely unfathomable to Lin Ming, but he was likely no worse than the gray-clothed old man, otherwise his aura would not be so strong.

The black-caped old man’s eyes blazed as he looked at Lin Ming. He didn’t bother to conceal the thick killing intent in his eyes. However, after the high level figures had finished negotiations, it was impossible for the powerful characters of the human and saint race to fight. Otherwise, in this sort of situation today, it was likely that the actions would have set off a cataclysmically bloody event.

“So young and yet so vicious. Your strength is decent, but the reason you won against Naqi is because of some foreign object that caused Naqi to suffer a loss. What meaning is there to your own ability to rely on foreign objects?”

The black-caped old man was naturally referring to the Primordius Gate. In his opinion, if Lin Ming hadn’t summoned the Primordius Gate in the end to defend against Naqi’s wild dash, then Lin Ming would have likely been struck by him and suffered severe wounds.

But, the result was that this unknown move of Lin Ming’s had caused Naqi to be wounded instead. That single exchange had become the turning point in the battle.

Lin Ming sneered, “A loss is a loss and a win is a win. Is the mindset of the saints really so frail? Every time you win you must become increasingly arrogant but you can’t accept your own losses at all?”

“Hehe, to think you would rather try to teach me instead. However, I can’t be bothered to argue with a junior like you. You’ve already dug your own grave from your arrogance anyways and you only have a hundred years left to live. A hundred years from now, when you battle the Good Fortune Saint Son, you will surely die without a grave. Or maybe you won't even live until then!"

The black-caped man cruelly smiled. He waved his arms, sending out a black light that wrapped around Naqi, and Naqi was received into his dwellings. Then, the black-caped man's figure blurred and he vanished.

For a time, the only ones left on the center of the battlefield were Lin Ming and the gray-clothed old man.

The saint martial artists still remaining were extremely frustrated. It felt as if someone was pushing down on their heads.

The many battles that the saints had won before this, even when added up together, were less important than Lin Ming and Naqi's battle.

This was because this was a peak duel, a battle that symbolized the strongest martial artists of the saint race and human race's juniors. And in the end, the saints had been the ones to lose. No matter what the reason was or how it happened, this faintly proved that the juniors of the saint race were inferior to the juniors of the human race.

Moreover, there was also an extremely mysterious Frost Dream from the human side that had yet to appear. Frost Dream was the first place champion of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. Her strength was at least equal to Lin Ming's.

As Lin Ming flew back from the battlefield, what awaited him was tens of thousands of frantic and fired up human martial artists!

Nine years ago, when Lin Ming placed second in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting and fought to a tie with Frost Dream, many people had cheered for him. However, their cheers hadn't been as heated as they were today!

The First Martial Meeting was only a competition between the juniors of the human race, but this time it was a battle between the humans and the saints.

This was a battle to see which younger generation of the two races was weaker!

Tens of thousands of martial artists cheered. There were also many people that brought out long-distance sound transmission jade slips to send this news in vivid excitement. Many people had already used battle array discs to record the entire battle from beginning to end.

Once news of this event was passed out, it was destined to not only affect the younger generation, but also have a resounding influence on the older generation of martial artists.

Currently, humanity was far too eager for a complete victory. They needed to raise their confidence and boost their morale!

In just a mere ten days, the news that Lin Ming had defeated Imperial Prince Naqi had spread throughout the entire Divine Realm!

When this news reached Atlas World and the Crimson Light World, the ones most excited were the many martial artists of the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

They were individuals that truly came from the same sect as Lin Ming. To be able to be considered as someone from the same sect was absolutely something to be proud of for the rest of their lives. In the future, when they accepted disciples, those disciples could even boast about this. They could boast that their teacher had been in the same sect as Lin Ming, who had defeated the number one young elite of the saint race!

At this time, in the void of the Divine Realm, a ghostly spirit ship was flitting through space. A tall young man grasped a cup of red wine as bright as fresh blood. As he enjoyed this wonderful wine, he was watching the scenes atop a battle array disc. This was the recorded battle between Lin Ming and Naqi.

This tall youth was the Good Fortune Saint Son. He smirked all the way until the fight ended and then slowly placed his wine cup down.

"Your Highness Holy Son, this Lin Ming is a threat!" Beside the Good Fortune Saint Son, a bewitching wheat-skinned woman filled the Good Fortune Saint Son's wine cup. A small dagger was tied to her thigh and she wore a short leather jerkin that perfectly contrasted her robust height and sex appeal. During the negotiations at Mount Potala, this woman had accompanied the Good Fortune Saint Son.

"Threat? Hehe, if he was given a thousand years of time then he might grow into such a character, but too bad for him, he won't have such a chance. There's no need to pay attention to him. Just let him jump around in happiness for a few days. In my eyes, this is nothing more than a little feud between children. Besides having a group of useless people be excited for some time, there isn't any significance to this battle at all! I already knew that they were going to fight and I didn't care to pay attention to them at all, otherwise I would have personally gone to take a look."

The enchanting young woman was puzzled as the Good Fortune Saint Son laughed. This was a battle between the top geniuses of the saint race and human race, a matter that involved the honor and glory of both races, and yet the Good Fortune Saint Son had called this a feud between children? This was a bit too much… after all, Lin Ming and Naqi were likely to grow into True Divinities in the future. As for this battle, it might be related to their future growth. For whoever won, it would greatly benefit their confidence and destiny.

The Good Fortune Saint Son chuckled, "Their future potential is endless, but what a pity, the war between the humans and us saints will not wait for them to grow. There is no need to bother with them and I also don't have any time to spare them. What will erupt in the future is a holy war that involves the prosperity and decline of my saint race and the human race. How could this event be affected by a little battle between Divine Transformation and Saint Transformation children? Come, we're going to the monster race!"

"Monster race?" The enchanting woman was startled. "Which monster race?"

In the woman's eyes, there were two different monster races. One was the monster race in the humans' Divine Realm, and the other monster race was the one in the saint race's Saint Convocation Heaven.

The Good Fortune Saint Son licked his lips, laughing as he said, “Of course it’s the Divine Realm’s monster race. According to what I know, within the Divine Realm, the relations between the monsters and the humans aren’t good at all. Hehe, isn’t the enemy of my enemy my friend? As the future Saint Sovereign, what I must pay attention to is the situation during the start of our holy war, not a little spat between two juniors.” The Good Fortune Saint Son waved his arms at the battle array disc spinning on a table. “This sort of thing is just interesting to see, even at the worst there is no need to panic. Do you understand?”

The Good Fortune Saint Son’s voice carried with it the aura of a superior being. The enchanting woman stiffened for a moment. Then, she slowly nodded and said, “Yes, Your Highness Saint Son, I understand…”

Chapter 1420 – Raging Undercurrents

Chapter 1420 – Raging Undercurrents

…

…

…

The Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds also included many medium and small worlds. Although these medium and small worlds weren't as large as a great world, they reached a terrifying quantity. When their total area was added together, they were even broader than the total area of the 3000 great worlds.

Within these worlds lived many other races. Lots of these races weren't purebred humans. There were goliaths, gores, imps, monsters, and even clans like the Occult Bone Clan were included.

Out of all these different races, the monster race was the most powerful.

The monster race had their own great world as well as countless medium and small worlds. Their population was extremely high and they had many World Kings and Empyreans in their ranks.

The members of the monster race naturally had an inborn martial arts talent. According to the quality of their bloodline, different Law runes were inscribed into their bones and flesh. They were a brave and fierce race, a truly terrible force to be reckoned with.

At this time, in the monster race's Monster Emperor Palace, in a vast hall, there was a rectangular stone table.

More than 10 people were sitting around it. The one sitting in the honored seat of this stone table was a large middle-aged man.

This man was 15 feet tall, twice the height of an adult male. His hair was icy blue, his face was handsome, and his eyes were as deep as pure sapphires. Looking into his eyes made one feel trapped and unable to look away.

As he sat there in his seat, he was like an unfathomable sea that gave off an unpredictable feeling.

This middle-aged man was the monster race's Monster Emperor!

In the past, when a Monster Prince joined the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting and ended up being horrendously defeated by Lin Ming, that Monster Prince had been the grandson of the Monster Emperor.

This middle-aged man was the absolute king of the monsters. The several other monster Empyreans looked to him as their leader.

Sitting at the other end of the table was a white-clothed youth. This youth was tall, but compared to the Monster Emperor he seemed as small as a child. This youth held a cup of wine in his hands and his legs were relaxed outwards in a completely comfortable and leisurely posture. He didn't have the least bit of respect towards this dignified occasion.

This white-clothed youth was the Good Fortune Saint Son.

The reason he came to the headquarters of the monster race today was to work together with the monsters.

The atmosphere of this meeting hall was solemn. Currently, many other supreme elders of the monster race were respectfully sitting here. It was only the Good Fortune Saint Son's posture which was disrespectful. In this situation, lifting his legs and drinking wine was extremely impolite.

“Your Highness Saint Son…”

The enchanting woman who followed the Good Fortune Saint Son reminded him.

The Good Fortune Saint Son faintly smiled. “It’s no problem at all. We came here to work together and thus what matters is our mutual interests and not whether or not I am respectful. If the monsters were to reject me just because of my manners then they would have never been able to last in the Divine Realm for so long. For the monsters to maintain their own lands in a universe where humanity is over ten times stronger isn’t easy at all.”

The Good Fortune Saint Son smiled, not bothering to conceal anything.

At the other end, the Monster Emperor laughed as he listened to the Good Fortune Saint Son’s words.

The monster race was truly at odds with the humans.

Both of them shared the same universe and thus it was inevitable that both sides came into conflict over various benefits and resources. In history, there were even great wars that were waged between the humans and the monsters.

It wasn’t wrong to say that the humans were powerful, but the monsters were equally deep in their background. If humans really wished to start an absolute genocide against the monsters, then although they would win, they would have to pay a deep price and lose several Empyreans in the process. These were consequences that even the humans dreaded.

Beneath the cover of this fear, the monster race was able to continue onwards.

For the last several hundred million years, the humans and monsters were actually able to peacefully coexist.

The Monster Emperor didn’t mention the deep history that the monsters shared with the humans. He merely took out a jade slip from his spatial ring and tossed it at the Good

Fortune Saint Son, “Saint Son, take a look at this. If you came here to cooperate with us then I’m afraid you’re one step too late.”

The Good Fortune Saint Son took the jade slip and swept his divine sense through it. This jade slip was the handiwork of Divine Dream.

This was a treaty between the humans and the monsters.

The summary of it was that the humans and monsters would join forces to withstand this great calamity.

The treaty set forth many terms. In general, humans would pay even more, and in the future after the saints were defeated, the humans would hand over even more benefits to the monster race. All of this was taken with a heart demon oath by Divine Dream; she would not renege on her promise.

As the Good Fortune Saint Son saw this jade slip, he wasn’t surprised at all. He merely smirked and tossed the jade slip onto the table. “Divine Dream, she truly is a woman with charm.”

He described Divine Dream not by her ability to lead nor her great strength, but by her ‘charm’. To him, Divine Dream seemed like nothing but a little game that was waiting to be conquered.

As the preparations for the great war between the human race and saint race were beginning, whether it was the Good Fortune Saint Son or Divine Dream, neither of them neglected the other races of the Divine Realm. They were a considerable fighting force.

For the humans, even if they didn’t think they could obtain the support of these different races, they at least had to avoid them being swept up by the saints.

If that happened then humanity would be stabbed in the back by their enemy, leading to their inevitable defeat!

As for the monsters, whether it was the saints or humans, they were all alien races. The monsters didn't care which one of them ruled the Divine Realm. All that mattered to them was who could give the monster race the greatest benefits.

These benefits were all protected by heart demon oaths.

In a sense, this great calamity could even be called an opportunity for the monsters.

They could take this chance to search for the greatest benefits to allow their race to prosper into the future.

"These terms aren't bad."

The Good Fortune Saint Son put down his cup of red wine and stood up. He was well aware that the reason the Monster Emperor took out Divine Dream's jade slip was because he didn't fully reject cooperating with the saints.

The Monster Emperor did this purely because he wanted to bargain.

Only if the humans and saints competed against each other could the monsters attempt to gain even greater benefits.

The Good Fortune Saint Son had already guessed this. No matter what the terms were, the Monster Emperor would not immediately agree. Rather, he would find another offer and then ask for a counter offer from Divine Dream. At that time, Divine Dream might lay out even more exaggerated conditions.

In this way, the saints would fall into a never-ending game with the humans. The final outcome of this was that the conditions would become increasingly rich for the monsters. The monster race might not even need to take action in the war, but after the war ended they could still enjoy tremendous benefits.

This was a truly well thought out plan!

"Your Highness Holy Son, this old fox wants us to struggle with the humans. He wants to fish for benefits from the chaos."

During these negotiations there were a great number of followers that accompanied the Good Fortune Saint Son. There were even a considerable number of saint Empyrean powerhouses attending this event. The reason they came here was to increase their weight in these negotiations as well as to protect the Good Fortune Saint Son.

After all, if the current Good Fortune Saint Son were to run into an Empyrean powerhouse, he wouldn't even have the ability to escape.

The Good Fortune Saint Son grinned. Then, he coldly replied with a sound transmission, "His plan is well thought out but I won't let him do as he wishes. If we continue struggling with the humans then there won't be any advantages for us and it will simply help the monsters in vain."

The Good Fortune Saint Son seemed to gain a great sense of confidence. He picked up his wine cup once more and said, "Your Majesty Monster Emperor, according to what I know, your people and the humans have always been enemies, right?"

"There are no eternal enemies nor are there eternal friends. There are only eternal interests." The Monster Emperor replied, his answer watertight.

"Yes… that's right, there are only eternal interests. For the glory that is the word interests, let us take a drink." The Good Fortune Saint Son raised his cup of wine and swallowed down a great gulp.

This sort of behavior left everyone puzzled.

After drinking, the Good Fortune Saint Son licked his lips and said, "Your Majesty Monster Emperor, how about we both go straight to the point and be honest with each other. If you think that we will be your allies in competing with the human race then I must say you are mistaken. We are different from the humans because our saint race is far more formidable than the human race! You might have guessed it by now, but there are some reasons as to why we cannot wage all-out war with the humans yet. But, this temporary ceasefire won't last for much longer. At that time, do you really think that you are a match for my saint race even if you join forces with the humans?

"The terms of the humans are generous, but, you must realize that the premise of all this is that you can win! However, what if you don't win? What do you think will be the fate of the monster race?"

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke to here his words turned cold. The Monster Emperor frowned; these words had struck at his weak point.

If the combined armies of the humans and monsters were defeated then the saints would simply directly exterminate their monster race! They would not leave behind any chance for the monster race to continue existing.

"Your Majesty Monster Emperor, let me be honest. The strength of your monster race is weak when compared to the humans. Even if you joined forces with the humans, how much help could you offer them? Do you think you can change the overall situation of this war? It is inevitable that my saint race will unify this universe under our control. If we sign a contract now then I can make an oath on my heart demons. I will make sure to leave behind resources and lands to your monster race that are at least 10 times larger and more plentiful than what they are now!

"Of course, Your Majesty must not forget that there is also a monster race within my Saint Convocation Heaven. Us saints have been able to coexist harmoniously with the monster race of Saint Convocation Heaven, and they are also much stronger than your Divine Realm's monster race. In the future, you and them may even communicate with each other, joining into one large group to ensure 10 billion years of prosperity for the monster race!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son's words were filled with confidence. It was like he was not talking about possible futures but absolute certainties.

As if everything that would happen was already taken for granted.

This was the confidence that belonged to a true leader. It was also extremely persuasive.

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke to here, he suddenly changed the topic. His expression also became much gentler. “Your Majesty Monster Emperor, if you are unsatisfied with the terms of the proposal then we can speak further on the topic. I will try to satisfy Your Majesty’s requests as much as possible. How about it?”

After the stick was the carrot. This was a very ordinary negotiation method. But, when the Good Fortune Saint Son used this method it was very natural, as if everything he did was justified by the heavens and earth and absolutely couldn’t be refused.

The Monster Emperor was silent. He couldn’t help but consider the Good Fortune Saint Son’s words.

The monster race of Saint Convocation Heaven was indeed a tremendous influencing factor in the decision he had to make. The Divine Realm’s monster race was far too weak. If they wanted to further develop, they needed the support of a more stable foundation.

The Good Fortune Saint Son smiled as he saw the Monster Emperor wavering. He took out more wine from his spatial ring and began to serve it to himself. He didn’t disturb the Monster Emperor and only waited for his reply.

The atmosphere was silent for a long time. The Monster Emperor wasn’t speaking out loud, but he was silently communicating with a sound transmission, “Demondawn… what do you think?”

Within a hidden chamber of Monster Emperor Heavenly Palace, there was a tall black-robed man. This person was who the Monster Emperor had been speaking to with sound transmissions.

This black-robed man was Empyrean Demondawn.

Chapter 1421 – Bait

Chapter 1421 – Bait

…

…

…

Empyrean Demondawn had significant relations with the Monster Emperor.

In the past, Demondawn and the Monster Emperor were comrades. Before the two of them rose to fame, they had encountered each other in a mystic realm filled with perils. At the time, the two of them stumbled upon death's door and nearly perished. Only by mutually supporting each other had they been able to live.

Afterwards, the two of them never broke off their connection. Together, they explored many mystic realms and even became Empyreans. They could be considered sworn friends.

There were extremely few Empyreans to begin with. For a pair of friends to become Empyreans was even rarer.

There were very few people that knew how Empyrean Demondawn and the Monster Emperor were related. These people were also mostly at the Empyrean level.

Afterwards, Empyrean Demondawn's son had married the monster race's Dark Phoenix Saintess.

The Dark Phoenix Saintess was not a descendant of the Monster Emperor. However, if one wished to marry the Dark Phoenix Saintess they needed the compliance of the Monster Emperor. This act had deepened the relations between the Demondawn bloodline and the monster race.

This marriage had originally been a marriage of politics, but no one had expected that after the Dark Phoenix Saintess and Demondawn's son were married, they would actually produce a daughter.

This daughter was Xiao Moxian.

This was a rare bloodline miracle that occurred only once every several hundred million years. From birth, Xiao Moxian was destined to step onto the road of an Empyrean and thus her status was extremely sensitive.

She possessed a half-monster body, was the successor of the Demondawn bloodline, and was also the next likely candidate to be the Saintess of the monster race.

Because of this, Empyrean Demondawn's relations with the monster race had become complicated in thousands of ways.

Empyrean Demondawn himself was not a pure human. His bloodline tended towards the demon race. The giant demons, imps, and goliaths were all minor branches of the demon race; this was the same back in the Sky Spill Continent.

The demon race of the Divine Realm could barely be considered to be at peace with the human race. But, there would often be conflicts that erupted.

After all, it was inevitable that there would be battles where interests conflicted.

Demondawn World was originally the great world where the demon race gathered. There were many different demon clans here.

The demon race and monster race existed outside of the human race. In this great calamity, neither of these two races were in great danger.

Even if Empyrean Demondawn were to join forces with the saint race, he couldn't be labeled a traitor to his people.

Demondawn was silent as he thought of the Good Fortune Saint Son's proposition.

This was a choice that had to be considered again and again, because this choice would affect the future of the monster race and also the future bloodline of Demondawn.

Empyrean Demondawn was a man with deep ambitions; he wasn't good-hearted or merciful at all. Even so, if he wanted to join with the saints, there were many things he had to consider.

Within the dark chamber, Empyrean Demondawn stood up and waved his hand to create a black enchantment.

He walked into the enchantment and then said, "Let us discuss it here."

A moment later, the black enchantment was torn open and three people entered. One was a saint Empyrean, one was the Good Fortune Saint Son, and the last was the Monster Emperor.

The Good Fortune Saint Son was startled as he saw Empyrean Demondawn. He smiled and bowed in a rare gesture of respect, saying, "So it was Senior Demondawn. I've already heard that the number one most proud daughter of the Divine Realm is Xiao Moxian, a woman that possesses the body of a half monster. Her mother is the Dark Phoenix of the monster race, and now it seems that Senior Demondawn's relations with the monster race are deeper than what I had imagined."

"Don't say anything useless. Sit!" Empyrean Demondawn's voice was cold and indifferent. The Good Fortune Saint Son thought little of it. As he said earlier, he had come here to discuss cooperating for mutual interests, not for any sort of etiquette.

"I will not directly act against humanity. That is my bottom line."

Empyrean Demondawn went straight to the point. Although he didn't consider himself part of humanity, he still had many connections to other human Empyreans. If he really tore apart all pretense of civility then there truly wouldn't be an escape route left for him.

If the saints were to win in the future then he would be able to obtain a greater advantage, but if the saints were to somehow be defeated then the Demondawn bloodline would be beyond salvation.

Empyrean Demondawn had already come to an understanding. He could accept parts of the saints' treaty, but not the complete article. In a sense, he would be remaining neutral.

In these chaotic times, often it was wisest to choose the route of self-preservation.

The Good Fortune Saint Son was silent for a moment. Then, he smiled and said, "Senior Demondawn, is this considered as having your agreement to our mutual cooperation?"

Empyrean Demondawn didn't reply; this was tacitly agreeing to it.

The Good Fortune Saint Son grinned. "The truth was that I had planned to pay a visit to Senior Demondawn after visiting the monsters. But, I never imagined that I wouldn't need to go. Yes, I also heard that Senior Demondawn's granddaughter is the number one talent amongst the younger generation of humans."

The Good Fortune Saint Son flattered Empyrean Demondawn.

Empyrean Demondawn shook his head. "Those are only incorrect rumors spread by some outsiders. In the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, she only took fourth place."

"Haha." The Good Fortune Saint Son chuckled. "Senior Demondawn is too modest. I know that Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao Moxian was only 26 years of age when she fought the over 30 year old Frost Dream, Lin Ming, and Hang Chi. Even so, the difference was quite small. If Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao Moxian were given four more years and she were to join the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting at 30 years of age, she would have inevitably surpassed Frost Dream and Lin Ming!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son took out an iron fan from his spatial ring and slapped it open, rapidly fanning himself.

"Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao Moxian possesses a God Beast bloodline. Let alone the Divine Realm, even in the entire saint race amongst all the universes, that is a physique that is rarely seen even in several hundred millions of years. Unfortunately, if I have to be honest, the monster race of the Divine Realm, because of the inheritances they lost in the previous great calamity, is far inferior to the monster race of my Saint Convocation Heaven in terms of cultivation methods. Senior Monster Emperor, what do you think?"

The Good Fortune Saint Son turned to the Monster Emperor. The Monster Emperor's eyebrows arched up. Although he didn't want to listen to such words, he couldn't help but admit that what the Good Fortune Saint Son said was truth. The Divine Realm's monster race had a background that was far too shallow and they were far inferior in overall strength to the humans.

"I guess that Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao Moxian should be mostly cultivating in Demondawn World. To her, that would be more effective than cultivating within the monster race, and in truth the monster race's ability to cultivate is inferior to that of humans and saints. However, that is only relatively speaking. If she were able to obtain the correct inheritances and also have the guidance of famed mentors, then after she grows up her strength could be completely different."

The Good Fortune Saint Son glanced at Empyrean Demondawn. Empyrean Demondawn frowned. He could faintly make out just what the Good Fortune Saint Son wanted. "What are you trying to say?"

"Haha, Senior Demondawn, if you agree then I can bring Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao Moxian to the monster race of Saint Convocation Heaven and allow her to study the monster race inheritances there. Senior Demondawn need not worry. I can absolutely guarantee with a heart demon oath that Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao Moxian will be safely returned within several years. Not even a single hair will be harmed on her body."

"No need."

Empyrean Demondawn flat out refused. He could see just what the Good Fortune Saint Son's thoughts were.

He clearly wanted to bring Xiao Moxian to Saint Convocation Heaven and slowly use his methods to bring her under his control.

Even though the Good Fortune Saint Son would have a heart demon oath binding him from doing anything to her at all, as time passed, who knew just what sorts of sly methods the Good Fortune Saint Son would use. At that time, perhaps she really might fall for him.

Xiao Moxian's bloodline was extremely special. Any man that could marry her would obtain an unbelievable advantage.

In this point, not to mention Xiao Moxian, but even in the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Yan Littlemoon and her perfect Ancient Phoenix bloodline had caused countless young elites to pursue her in the hopes that they could marry her and obtain her primordial yin.

And, Yan Littlemoon's phoenix bloodline had only been transplanted within her after her birth.

Compared to Xiao Moxian, who possessed half the flesh, blood, and bones of a Dark Phoenix God Beast, Yan Littlemoon was cast 108,000 miles away.

Empyrean Demondawn certainly wouldn't sit idly by to let something like that happen.

If the Good Fortune Saint Son were a morally upstanding character that he could entrust his granddaughter to, then that would be fine.

However, in Empyrean Demondawn's eyes, the Good Fortune Saint Son viewed himself as the center of all existence and he also had great ambitions. If Xiao Moxian were to be betrothed to him, it could possibly harm her.

"Haha, Senior Demondawn seems to be prejudiced against me." The Good Fortune Saint Son laughed, not minding this. "In truth, I came this time because I had the intention to invite the two of you to Saint Convocation Heaven. My race's Saint Sovereign will soon leave seclusion in the next several days. Since the two of you are already peak Empyreans, then if you have any problems on your road to becoming a True Divinity, you can certainly raise any questions with my race's Saint Sovereign."

As the Good Fortune Saint Son said this, Demondawn and the Monster Emperor both felt their hearts beat faster in excitement.

This was particularly true for the Monster Emperor. He breathlessly said, "Ask for the method of True Divinity!?"

The road between an Empyrean and a True Divinity was a massive threshold.

Within the Divine Realm, ever since Empyrean Divine Seal perished, countless extreme figures had appeared in the following 3.6 billion years. However, none of them had been able to step into True Divinity!

In order to become a True Divinity, many extreme supreme elders exhausted every possible method they could think of, but all of them had failed. In their final 100 million years of their lives, they slowly faded into ash, returning to the endless nothingness.

The stronger one was, the less they were resigned to allowing their life to fade away. And to an extreme talent that had managed to become an Empyrean, their eventual death became a nightmare that haunted them.

Many people even suspected that the reason these extreme geniuses of the Divine Realm failed to become True Divinities was not because of their lack of talent but because there was some unknown force hindering them.

There was also a possibility that because of the massive loss of martial arts inheritances 3.6 billion years ago, the final and most essential link to becoming a True Divinity had been lost.

As for the Empyreans of the Divine Realm, none of them knew where the road to becoming a True Divinity really was.

The Good Fortune Saint Son had put forth this condition at this time undoubtedly as a massive temptation.

“That’s right, to consult on the method of becoming a True Divinity. I am not just speaking nonsense here. If you two are willing to sincerely cooperate with my saint race then the Saint Sovereign might be willing to teach you the method of True Divinity. Of course, even if he does teach you this method, success will be filled with countless sufferings and hardships. As for whether or not this method works, I can guarantee its authenticity with a heart demon oath!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son was honest; to become a True Divinity was far too hard. Even with the guidance of the Saint Sovereign, the chances of success were incomparably small.

But, this tiny ray of hope left the Monster Emperor frothing with excitement.

Oftentimes, people didn’t fear defeat, but feared that they wouldn’t even have a chance. He was already an extreme Empyrean, so if he didn’t even attempt it, how could he be willing to give up here!?

Moreover, if he ever became a True Divinity, the monster race would obtain a massive advantage. They might even become an eternally prosperous race.

This sort of condition truly left the Monster Emperor enticed.

As for Empyrean Demondawn, he had fallen silent. The more generous the conditions were, the more they would have to pay.

To refuse the method of becoming a True Divinity was a term that they could not reject, thus the Good Fortune Saint Son would have them pay an even greater price. For instance, he might want their two races to join together with the saints to attack humanity, or, to make their alliance that much more stable, the Good Fortune Saint Son might even have Empyrean Demondawn betroth Xiao Moxian to him…

Empyrean Demondawn was a man of great ambitions. In the face of such great temptations, it was hard for him to make such a choice…

Chapter 1422 – Asura Road

Chapter 1422 – Asura Road

…

…

…

Divine Dream World –

Amidst a boundless sea of clouds were countless floating celestial mountains. These mountains were covered with all sorts of spirit trees and flowers as well as numerous world treasures. Among these many celestial mountains was an exquisite jade structure that was slowly travelling about. This was Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

At this time, within a separate space-time of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, sunlight was falling down in its great glory. A beautiful spring day bloomed all over as the crisp sound of spring water splashed up into the world. The running springs were clear and sweet, with clusters of bamboo decorating the lakes. A fresh and fragrant scent wafted through the air, refreshing to the senses and warming the heart.

A white-clothed Empyrean Divine Dream was holding a jade bowl as she leaned over the edge of a lake, feeding the little fishes swimming within it.

The fish food within this jade bowl wasn't common food, but treasures refined from precious materials of the heavens and earth. These were treasures that even a Holy Lord would feel envious over, but Empyrean Divine Dream was actually using them to feed the fish. Of course, the fish she was feeding weren't ordinary fish. These fish could take human form, and as they studied the Divine Dream Law and grew up they would be incredible geniuses.

Standing not too far away from Empyrean Divine Dream was a white-clothed youth. This youth was Lin Ming.

After the battle with Imperial Prince Naqi, Lin Ming had returned to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace and began to train in the Divine Dream Law with Empyrean Divine Dream.

In the blink of an eye, five months had passed. In these five months, Lin Ming had been personally guided by Empyrean Divine Dream. This was a completely hands-on style of teaching, a level of favor that only Frost Dream had been given in the past.

Not just that, but every several days, Divine Dream would find several senior-apprentice sisters of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace to come and fight Lin Ming to help train him in various aspects of battle.

The food that Lin Ming ate every day was the highest level of spirit food in Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. Because of the great calamity, the resources used to develop Lin Ming could be called the best in the entire Divine Realm.

After Lin Ming returned to the Divine Realm from the Sky Spill Continent, he had first gone to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace and then Mount Potala. Finally, after all this time, he had once again returned to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

At Mount Potala, Lin Ming had gone to the Irreproachable Stupas and had felt the wills of the past high monks of Mount Potala.

In Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, he was able to live in the same separate space as Empyrean Divine Dream where she would freely direct him.

Lin Ming could already be considered one of the greatest cards that humanity had to withstand the great calamity. Of course, the basis of all this was that Lin Ming could grow up before all-out war broke out. Otherwise, all the efforts placed in him would be for naught.

“Senior Divine Dream, junior wishes to leave and go out to adventure.”

"Mm?" Divine Dream looked at Lin Ming. She wasn't surprised that Lin Ming would want to leave, only that it would be so soon. "If you leave, where will you go? The Bright Luster World battlefield?"

Lin Ming shook his head. "The Bright Luster World battlefield is full of life and death slaughters, but that place no longer suits me. There are no World Kings fighting and the most powerful ones there are Holy Lords. Moreover, there aren't many of them to begin with. As a place to adventure and temper myself, it won't have any effect at all."

"Then where do you want to go?" Divine Dream asked. Besides the Bright Luster World battlefield, there were no other places that were suitable for Lin Ming to go to. Although Lin Ming had yet to grow and his cultivation was only at the Divine Transformation realm, he absolutely wasn't weak.

He already possessed strength on par with a Holy Lord. Just what sort of concept was a Holy Lord? In the past, the Palace Masters of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's 72 branch palaces were Holy Lords.

In the past, Fairy Feng and Sage Jiuyang were both peak Divine Lords. Now, neither of them were Lin Ming's match.

Currently, if Lin Ming was to be placed in any of the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds he would be a character that could rule over his own domain. In terms of strength he was equal to someone from the older generation.

The only reason that Lin Ming seemed weaker than normal was because he had spent a great deal of his time in different Heavenly Palaces and the characters he came into contact with were Empyreans or World Kings.

In this sort of situation, if Lin Ming wanted to go out and adventure, the only suitable locations for him would be mystic realms.

Lin Ming said, "This junior would like to go to Saint Convocation Heaven, the territory of the saints!"

“What!?” Divine Dream was shocked. Lin Ming’s words were astonishing. He actually wanted to go to a universe controlled by the saints!

“What do you plan on doing there?”

With Lin Ming’s current status, going to the Saint Convocation Heavens would undoubtedly be dangerous.

Lin Ming said, “This junior has already cultivated the Bodily Rebirth Technique to a high level of proficiency. Now I can change the aura of my body and soul. Even if I were to go to the territory of the saints, I wouldn’t be seen through as long as I don’t come into contact with an Empyrean level character.”

The Bodily Rebirth Technique that Lin Ming spoke about was the appearance changing technique he had studied at Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

When he had changed his appearance and gone to the Demondawn Great World, he had been caught by Tian Mingzi’s divine sense because he hadn’t been able to change the aura of his soul.

“Junior wants to go to Saint Convocation Heaven to experience and learn more about the saint race’s body transformation technique inheritances. The saint race’s body transformation technique inheritance is indeed at least a hundred times more powerful than anything in the Divine Realm. The Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens is originally all-encompassing. The road that I still wish to travel is long. I believe that my experience will be much greater if I can go to the Saint Convocation Heavens.”

As Lin Ming spoke, Divine Dream shook her head, “Humans still know nothing about the saints, moreover, the space channel that connects the Divine Realm and Saint Convocation Heavens is strictly monitored by the saints in order to prevent any human spies from entering their land. If you want to survive in the Saint Convocation Heaven, it will be extremely dangerous for you. It’s likely you would be found out when you pass through the channel, so I cannot agree with your decision to go. If you want to go somewhere where there are saints in order to temper yourself and adventure, I can recommend a destination to you…”

“Where?”

“Asura Road!” Empyrean Divine Dream calmly said. Lin Ming felt a shiver run down his back.

Asura Road!

He had faintly heard that after the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, Dragon Fang had gone to Asura Road.

“That is where Dragon Fang went nine years ago?” Lin Ming asked.

“Yes, it is the same destination. However, Dragon Fang didn’t truly enter Asura Road; he only wandered around the surroundings. After truly entering Asura Road, wanting to leave afterwards isn’t easy at all. That… is a very ‘special’ place.” Divine Dream heavily emphasized the word ‘special’.

“What sort of place is that?” After Lin Ming listened to this, he was interested. He originally thought that Asura Road was a place similar to a mystic realm with a massive amount of demons and monsters inside, as well as evil beings and vicious beasts. If these creatures were powerful enough then wanting to engage in a brutal slaughter with them was nine chances of death and one chance of survival. In addition, perhaps the Asura Road had some types of treasures and wanting to obtain these treasures depended on one’s lucky chances. Because of these treasures, there would be tremendous battles that broke out between the various martial artists that entered Asura Road. These types of situations were similar in the Red Desolate Mystic Realm and the God Beast Mystic Realm.

However, Divine Dream had only said that Asura Road was very ‘special’.

It had to be known that Divine Dream had lived for 10 million years and had seen countless sights. It wasn’t easy for her to classify anything as ‘special’.

Divine Dream continued, “I have also been to Asura Road. It is a fantastical place that you cannot imagine. It is a completely self-contained world with its own set of Laws. It doesn’t belong to the 33 Layered Heavens at all. Rather, it seems to be a man-made world.

“If the Heavenly Dao is a type of life, then the Heavenly Dao of the Divine Realm and Saint Convocation Heaven is similar to this life. Cold, relentless, uncaring and unchangeable. But, within the Asura Road, this life seems to be different, as if it has the ability to think…”

As Empyrean Divine Dream slowly spoke, Lin Ming was shocked.

Heavenly Dao Laws that could think? Just what was that like?

Chapter 1423 – God Runes

Chapter 1423 – God Runes

…

…

…

Lin Ming hadn't thought that Empyrean Divine Dream had been to the Asura Road too. Nine years ago, when Dragon Fang went to the Asura Road, that likely meant that his master, the Three Lives Old Man, had also been there.

It seemed that the Asura Road was a smelting trial destination that wasn't a secret to the high level figures of the Divine Realm. As for the average person, they had likely never heard about it because they simply weren't able to come into contact with it.

Empyrean Divine Dream said, "The Asura Road is filled with countless dangers. It's a land that possesses all the various races of the 33 Layered Heavens because it is an unordered world to begin with. It is common for murder to casually take place on the streets and it is extremely chaotic. However, this still isn't the main source of danger."

"Mm? These dangers are…" Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. Oftentimes upon entering a mystic realm of the Divine Realm, the true dangers didn't originate from the mystic realm itself but the other treasure hunters that were participating. In a world without rules and restrictions like a mystic realm, killing others and stealing away all of their property was common.

Divine Dream said, "If you go to the Asura Road, you may encounter dangers from the rules that exist there, and there will be things that occur which you never imagined possible. Or, you may even run into enemies that far surpass your boundary. At that time no matter how talented you are, you will still be defeated… all of this is something you must clearly understand before you enter the Asura Road, especially if you venture into its depths.”

Lin Ming quietly nodded. No matter what, if Dragon Fang was able to go then there shouldn’t be any problem for him. As for areas deeper in the Asura Road, that was something he had to consider.

“Senior Divine Dream, can you tell this junior what sort of world the Asura Road is?”

Empyrean Divine Dream had spoken a great deal about the Asura Road but she hadn’t truly described it.

Empyrean Divine Dream took a light breath, contemplating for a moment before saying, “The Asura Road is an independent world that is completely sealed off. In terms of area, it is around half the size of the smallest of the Divine Realm’s 3000 great worlds. Even so, that means it is extremely broad. In the past, I also didn’t go into the deepest parts of the Asura Road. Rather, as I was exploring the middle of the Asura Road, I found a mysterious transmission talisman that allowed me to go to Soul World. Afterwards, I went to Soul World because I believed at the time that there would be great lucky chances there that concerned my future. This is likely something that you already know.”

As Empyrean Divine Dream spoke, Lin Ming suddenly realized what had happened. He had thought it was strange. If it was so difficult for powerful martial artists to pass through the God Lamenting Wall, just how had Empyrean Divine Dream gone to Soul World?

“So, one can enter any of the 33 Layered Heavens from the Asura Road?”

Empyrean Divine Dream said, “That’s right. But, there are many trial challengers and returning to your own universe is the easiest. However, when I say ‘easiest’, that is only relatively speaking. The deeper you venture into the Asura Road, the more difficult it will be to return. There are many people that become stuck in the Asura Road for their entire lives and are unable to leave.

"In my opinion, I feel that the Asura Road is a massive trial field created by a divine being. In that world, there are many ways in which you can obtain a mysterious and unique strength of the Asura Road – the god runes. These runes are granted to you by the Heavenly Dao Laws of the Asura Road and they hold endless enigmas. They are similar to inscription techniques' body inscription symbols and soul inscription symbols but they are far more profound; there is almost no comparing them."

"Mm?" Lin Ming was stunned. In inscription technique, there were body inscription symbols that could increase a martial artist's strength and soul inscription symbols that could increase a martial artist's soul force.

However, perhaps because of the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago and all the lost inheritances, or perhaps because the Heavenly Dao Laws were like this to begin with, the further a martial artist's cultivation progressed, the smaller the effects would be. This was because a martial artist's own strength was far too strong, and the ability for even the highest level of inscription techniques to increase one's strength was far too limited.

Empyrean Divine Dream continued to say, "These various god runes have all sorts of incomparably exquisite Laws. The runes are similar to the Law fragments that you experienced during your Ninefall. They can be directly fused into your flesh and blood, bones, inner world, and even your soul. Their use is not only to be perceived, but also act as a direct method of strengthening yourself.

"For instance, you can use them to enhance your physical strength, defensive power, true essence thickness, striking power, and so forth. There are even some that can give you bloodline powers. There are even those you can perceive that will allow you to comprehend much more powerful attacks.

"In the Asura Road, god runes will be a part of your strength – an extremely important part. You may be rewarded with god runes by completing various missions of the Heavenly Dao, or you may even exchange or purchase them. Sometimes, if your destiny and lucky chances are wonderful enough, you may also obtain rare god runes. Of course, there remains the most simple and direct way of obtaining god runes… and that is to take them from others. There are some god runes that you can take for yourself as long as you kill the other party.

“This is also the reason why slaughter is common in the Asura Road. Everyone wants to kill others in order to obtain their god runes. In particular, if an extremely rare god rune was to appear in the world, it might start a horrible storm of blood and mayhem.”

Empyrean Divine Dream slowly said. Lin Ming was shocked after hearing this. He felt that this new world completely subverted all rules he knew of.

Why would the Asura Road have such strange Heavenly Dao Laws? Could it be like Divine Dream had said, and the Asura Road was created by some senior supreme elder with an unimaginably high level of cultivation?

And why had he created the Asura Road? Was it to help temper geniuses?

From how it was described, the Heavenly Dao rules of the Asura Road encouraged slaughter, urging people to kill others for their god runes. This was a much more convenient method than obtaining runes through completing different tasks.

But, there was something else that Lin Ming didn’t understand. “Senior Divine Dream, this junior has another question. Do these runes require the special Heavenly Dao rules of the Asura Road in order to function? Will they be unusable after leaving the Asura Road?”

Lin Ming hadn’t seen Dragon Fang use the power of any god runes, nor had he heard of anyone in the Divine Realm who increased their own strength using god runes. If the god runes from the Asura Road were tremendously useful in enhancing one’s abilities even outside of that world, then there would definitely be some rumors.

Divine Dream nodded, “Yes! After leaving the Asura Road, all god runes you possess will disappear.”

“Then why do people compete for god runes in the Asura Road? Even if their flesh and blood, organs, and even their souls are marked by these runes, they are still nothing more than illusions that will disappear as long as they leave the Asura Road. Do these people plan on never leaving the Asura Road in their entire lives?"

Empyrean Divine Dream said, "Your question is well thought out. Indeed, many people have never and will never leave the Asura Road in their entire lives. The Asura Road has existed for countless hundreds of millions of years. That world might be 10 billion years old or even 100 billion years old, or possibly even older than that! It is far more ancient than our Divine Realm's history.

"In that world, there seem to be people who existed there to begin with. Moreover, after all of these years, an incalculable number of trial challengers have entered the Asura Road. There are some people that aren't considered to be too talented, and thus after entering the Asura Road they cannot leave. They will get married and start their own livelihoods in the Asura Road. Perhaps they would start their own clan or perhaps they would found their own sect. Their lineage will continue for generations, forever staying there. To these people, the Asura Road is their world, and the runes there are an incomparably precious strength!

"In addition to that, to the trial challengers from the outside, the god runes are also extremely valuable. I have told you that Asura Road is a massive trial field. After you satisfy certain requirements of the trials, you will complete them and obtain generous rewards depending on the degree of completion.

"One type of reward is the power to completely or partially fuse these runes into your body and soul. Even after you leave the Asura Road, this strength will be internalized by you and turned into your true strength!"

"Mm? There is also something like that?"

Lin Ming was stunned. These Laws were indeed extremely mysterious.

However, as he thought more about it, when Lin Ming was on the Holy Demon Continent's Blood Slaughter Steppes, the Road of Emperor and the twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo were also similar.

This was because Empyrean Primordius, who had created the Road of Emperor as well as the 12 Skysplit Towers, was simply far more powerful than the mortals that participated in his trials. He was so much more powerful than them that he was able to create his own rules and directly grant strength as the rewards to certain martial artists.

The twelve-winged Heavenly Demon Tattoo and the Asura Road's god runes were in truth similar things.

If this were true, and the Asura Road were created by someone, then this mysterious person was countless times more powerful than Empyrean Primordius!

If this person was a martial artist, just what boundary would they have reached? Extreme True Divinity? Or, perhaps the mysterious entity described in folktales that created everything, the creator of the world?

Chapter 1424 – Transmission Accident

Chapter 1424 – Transmission Accident

…

…

…

A pale white spirit ship rapidly flew through the endless void of the universe. This spirit ship was carved from crystalline stone and was only several hundred feet long. Compared to the massive spirit ships that were thousands or tens of thousands of feet long, this spirit ship was extremely small and delicate. However, its value was hundreds of times greater than those giant spirit ships because its speed was simply not something that those giant spirit ships could hope to compare with.

Even the Primordius Heavenly Palace that Lin Ming possessed couldn't hold a candle to this tiny crystal spirit ship in terms of speed. This wasn't because Primordius Heavenly Palace was lacking in value, but because Primordius Heavenly Palace was a dwelling that mainly focused on defensive protections. Acting as a spirit ship was only an auxiliary function.

"We've arrived."

Empyrean Divine Dream's voice faintly echoed through the spirit ship. In just several days of time, she had brought Lin Ming aboard this crystal spirit ship and had crossed several great worlds of the Divine Realm before arriving at a chaotic nebula.

"This is the entrance to the Asura Road?"

"It can be considered so." Empyrean Divine Dream nodded. "Rather, it is more accurate to say that the entrance existed here a long time ago. It was said that due to the great calamity

3.6 billion years ago, many entrances leading from the Divine Dream to the Asura Road were destroyed. The ones I know of that are remaining are nothing more than ancient ruins. Normally, it is impossible to enter the Asura Road using this location, but I can rely upon my cultivation to forcefully sunder open the void and form a transmission channel to let you through.

“After you enter this transmission channel, a unique serial number will be implanted into your body. This number will follow you through every smelting trial that you complete within the Asura Road, and it will only vanish when you leave or upon your death. This number will also become the only marking from which the Asura Road’s Heavenly Dao rule will recognize you.”

“I understand. Then, when Dragon Fang entered the Asura Road in the past, was it also Three Lives Old Man that helped him open a portal?”

“Yes. Within the entire Divine Realm there aren’t many people that can open a portal like this; there are probably around 20-30 people that can. Although Three Lives Old Man is nearing the end of his lifespan, he still remains horrifyingly powerful. He is the most senior person in the entire Divine Realm. 280 million years ago, he had already become an extreme Empyrean.”

Lin Ming said, “If so, then aren’t the conditions for opening the transmission channel to the Asura Road too high? There shouldn’t have been many young geniuses that were able to enter the Asura Road in these past years to temper themselves.”

“Mm… indeed, there haven’t been many at all.” Empyrean Divine Dream nodded. “Not entering the Asura Road isn’t necessarily a disadvantage. Even extreme geniuses have a chance of perishing within the Asura Road.

“In addition, besides having an Empyrean open a portal to allow martial artists to enter the Asura Road, there is also another method. Before the last great calamity, there were many Asura Commands that existed in the Divine Realm. If you can find an Asura Command then there is no need for you to take a transmission channel; you can rely upon that Asura

Command to directly enter the Asura Road. Moreover, this Asura Command is also a necessary item to leave the Asura Road and return to the Divine Realm."

"Asura Command?" Lin Ming's mind stirred. It seemed that if he couldn't complete the smelting trials of the Asura Road, the only way he would be able to leave was to find an Asura Command.

"Alright. Lin Ming, I shall send you there now. Let me give you a word of caution, do not try to thoroughly complete the trials of the Asura Road. The difficulties of these trials are too great, far too great. If you can complete a part of it and obtain just a portion of the rewards, that alone is already rare. You should take safety into consideration before you do anything. As long as there is life, there will be hope, and you should value your life as the most precious treasure!"

Divine Dream earnestly warned Lin Ming. Lin Ming nodded, "I understand."

"Mm... also, I want to speak to you about that 100 year duel you have decided on with the Good Fortune Saint Son. I know that you did so in order to intentionally place pressure on yourself to grow, but just because there is pressure on you doesn't mean that you will succeed. What I want to say is that if that time truly comes and you are certain that it is impossible for you to defeat the Good Fortune Saint Son, I possess a last resort. I can unbind your heart demon oath, but there will be a high price to pay."

Lin Ming's heart skipped a beat as he heard Empyrean Divine Dream casually speaking. Pay a price to unbind his heart demon oath?

His heart demon oath was especially formed by a transcendent divine might used to form contracts. The most terrifying aspect was that it used a martial artist's heart demons. Everyone had heart demons, and the higher a martial artist's cultivation was, the more powerful their heart demons were.

Thus, whether it was young heroic elites, Holy Lords, World Kings, or Empyreans, all of them could be bound by heart demon oaths. Even True Divinities feared their own heart demons.

If someone tried to unbind the heart demon oath of another, they would be forced to endure a counterattack of their own heart demons. Now, Empyrean Divine Dream had said that she had a last resort she could use to help Lin Ming resolve his heart demon oath. There had to be a price paid, but as for what this price was, he had no idea.

Lin Ming knew that even if Empyrean Divine Dream had astonishing attainments in the domain of the soul, and she also comprehended heart demons to a high degree, this price couldn't be light at all.

Such a promise was an extremely heavy graciousness to Lin Ming. After all, in the eyes of nearly all high level figures in the Divine Realm, although Lin Ming was talented, it was almost the idiotic babblings of a retard to think that he could overtake the realm and a half advantage that the Good Fortune Saint Son had over him in a mere hundred years.

"Senior Divine Dream, this junior will carve this graciousness in his mind. A hundred years from now, I will not disappoint you."

Lin Ming grit his teeth. He had to squeeze out every single drop of his potential; there was no path of retreat for him.

"Mm, you have never done anything you don't have confidence in. I hope that this time is the same."

As Divine Dream spoke she extended her right hand. Because of the movements of her arm, a beautiful, white pure arm as smooth as jade stretched out from her long white sleeve.

This arm seemed supple and flexible but it contained an incomparably terrifying power. With just a tiny tap, the void shattered like a frail ice crystal, completely disintegrating.

Ka ka ka ka ka!

This crack spread out like a growing spider web. In just an instant, it covered the heavens, blotting out the world!

"Step back a little."

Empyrean Divine Dream faintly said. Lin Ming quickly flew back to the spirit ship.

Empyrean Divine Dream rapidly moved her fingers, forming a series of seals. The entire area began to spin around, forming a giant vortex in space. Endless heaven and earth origin energy began rolling up towards this vortex, swept up into it. Empyrean Divine Dream had actually forcefully created a black hole vortex.

This sort of action left Lin Ming shocked. With the slightest of gestures, Empyrean Divine Dream had broken apart all space for a hundred miles and forcefully opened up a spatial transmission channel.

This was the power of the most extreme Empyrean.

"You may enter now. I have already reformed the space channel. Through this channel you can directly enter the Asura Road. Also, this space channel is limited by certain rules. Only you alone are allowed to pass through; it is impossible for you to bring along incarnations of powerhouses, otherwise I could have produced several of them to help protect you in critical moments."

"Oh, what happens if I violate these rules?" Lin Ming suddenly asked.

"Not much. You will be shot back out with some minor injuries, but you can re-enter afterwards."

"I see..." Lin Ming nodded. "Then Senior Divine Dream, this junior will be on his way."

As Lin Ming spoke, he took a deep breath and then turned into a beam of light as he dove into that black hole vortex!

The moment he entered that black hole vortex, Lin Ming felt a massive resistance. This resistance began to rapidly increase. In just the blink of an eye, it became an overwhelming momentum that formed an impregnable iron wall, rushing towards Lin Ming!

"Mm?"

Lin Ming was startled. Before he could respond he was struck by this horrifying strength. He was slapped backwards as if he were struck by a mountain.

Woosh!

Lin Ming flew out from the black hole at an even faster speed than he entered. The terrifying strike of energy caused Lin Ming to feel as if all his bones almost shattered. A coppery rush swelled up his throat as he spat out a mouthful of blood and nearly fainted where he was.

"What… what happened…" Lin Ming's entire body was in severe pain. The energy within him was restlessly moving and his organs felt discombobulated.

Before he entered the Asura Road transmission channel, he had asked Divine Dream what would happen if he violated the rules. If the punishment were to be exterminated like a rabid dog then that sort of death would be far too unjust.

Afterwards, Empyrean Divine Dream had said that the punishment wasn't too great so Lin Ming didn't mind much after that. Or, to be more accurate, he didn't think that the Asura Road would recognize that he violated these rules.

However, Lin Ming had indeed violated the rules. Within the Magic Cube space there were two people. One was Mo Eversnow and the other was the gluttonous and sleep-loving Fishy.

In Lin Ming's opinion, the Magic Cube was an existence that surpassed the scope of the Heavenly Dao Laws. It was impossible for anyone to see the Magic Cube that was deeply slumbering within his body.

In the past, Lin Ming had encountered various mystic realms which also had various restrictions when crossing into them, but none of them were able to block the Magic Cube. This was the same when Lin Ming returned to the Sky Spill Continent. The Sky Spill Planet had the protective enchantment of Empyrean Primordius, making it so that no non-native martial artists with a cultivation above the Divine Sea realm could enter. But, this hadn't been able to stop the Magic Cube.

Only today had he ever encountered problems!

This was something that Lin Ming never imagined possible. This Asura Road was far too strange.

Even the Magic Cube was unable to skirt around its rules!

"Lin Ming, you..." Empyrean Divine Dream looked at Lin Ming, puzzled, "Do you have an incarnation jade slip on your body? Was it given to you by one of Mount Potala's eminent monks?"

Lin Ming ruefully smiled. He certainly didn't have an incarnation jade slip on his body to explain his current predicament. If he couldn't bring Fishy and Mo Eversnow with him, then he would need to explain this to Empyrean Divine Dream.

Empyrean Divine Dream had helped him far too many times. At Demondawn World, she had also saved his life. Lin Ming's emotional and mental inhibitions towards Divine Dream had fallen to the lowest limit.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment and then truthfully said, "It isn't an incarnation jade slip... on this junior's body is... Senior, please take a look."

As Lin Ming spoke, his thoughts moved and both Mo Eversnow and Fishy were teleported out from the Magic Cube space. Although Mo Eversnow was residing in the Magic Cube space, she also had an approximate understanding of what was happening. She looked towards Lin Ming and also looked towards Empyrean Divine Dream. This sort of situation was completely beyond her realm of expectations. With everything happening so suddenly she was a bit embarrassed and also a bit cautious, although she knew there was no point keeping her guard up in front of Empyrean Divine Dream.

As for Fishy, she rubbed her large and sleepy eyes. She looked around, her eyes blurry, like she didn’t know what was happening.

As Empyrean Divine Dream saw Mo Eversnow and Fishy suddenly appear, she was shocked. Hiding within Lin Ming’s body were two women? And from beginning to end, she had never seen through it!

Chapter 1425 – Parting Ways

Chapter 1425 – Parting Ways

…

…

…

"You…" Divine Dream looked at Mo Eversnow and Fishy. At this time, Fishy's eyes were extremely large and she looked at Divine Dream with a dazed expression. She was used to staying and sleeping in the Magic Cube space so the sudden change in scenery had left her extremely confused.

"This pretty big sister is…"

Fishy hadn't seen anyone besides Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow in 10 years. During this period, she had been sleeping for 99% of the time.

"Fishy, don't be rude. This is Senior Divine Dream, not your big sister."

Lin Ming didn't know whether to laugh or cry as he heard how Fishy referred to Divine Dream.

She had actually called Divine Dream her big sister, however, Fishy's true age was actually a mystery.

Lin Ming had once asked Fishy about her age, but Fishy was hazy on this subject. She didn't understand the concept of time, and what left one the most speechless was that Fishy would often dig deep into the ground to sleep. She had no idea just how long she had slept for during these periods. Short periods would be several months and long periods would be a few years.

In fact, if one truly calculated the ages of the four people present, Lin Ming was probably the youngest.

As Lin Ming realized this point, he traced his nose, a strange feeling swelling up in his heart. This tiny little child Fishy was actually much older than he was.

“You are…” Divine Dream couldn’t imagine that even with her extreme Empyrean cultivation she still hadn’t been able to sense the aura of these two people. It seemed that there were far more secrets on Lin Ming than she had thought and these secrets far surpassed most others.

Thinking of this, Divine Dream didn’t probe further nor did she ask what Lin Ming’s secrets were. At this time, she suddenly discovered that these two women who had come from within Lin Ming’s inner world were far from ordinary.

She deeply stared at Mo Eversnow. A blurry phantom crossed her mind, but in that instant, this phantom became crystal clear, overlapping with the Mo Eversnow in front of her.

Suddenly, an incredulous light flashed in Empyrean Divine Dream’s eyes.

“You are Heavenly Empress Xuanqing! That is impossible, you have already…” Divine Dream continued to look at Mo Eversnow and then came to a realization. “You are not Heavenly Empress Xuanqing, but that mortal body is truly that of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing. The bloodline aura of the god race is something that my divine sense will not misidentify.”

Empyrean Divine Dream was able to see through the mysteries of Mo Eversnow’s body. But, as she turned her eyes towards Fishy, Fishy’s physique was actually a mystery to her, like a dense fog. Even with Divine Dream’s extreme Empyrean cultivation, she still found it difficult to tell what was happening.

“A coalescence energy body? Such a physique is possible?”

Although Empyrean Divine Dream wasn't able to discern who Fishy was, she could still thoroughly see through Fishy's body. In her eyes, this was the perfect spirit body!

"How could this… how could such a body exist in this world?"

The sudden appearance of these two women had left Empyrean Divine Dream far too surprised. They had hidden themselves within Lin Ming's inner world and hadn't revealed the slightest hint of their aura. This point alone was already astonishing to Empyrean Divine Dream.

"Fishy's physique… shouldn't exist?"

Lin Ming looked at Empyrean Divine Dream. Those words just now had caught his attention.

Empyrean Divine Dream let out a light breath. "Yes, this sort of body is a perfect energy body, and also the most sublime spirit body. For us martial artists, no matter how thorough our nine stages of Life Destruction are, the spirit body we form is still composed of flesh and blood. At most, our bodies are tempered by energy to the limit, allowing us to hold a tremendous amount of energy in our bodies. But, this little girl's entire body is composed of perfect energy. She is an energy life form. If she were to cultivate the essence gathering system, the boundary she could reach would be unfathomable. It is hard to imagine just how talented she would be in that aspect. Of course, she cannot dual cultivate body and energy and can only cultivate energy alone. Even so, just by walking down the road of the essence gathering system, she can still become Divine!"

Lin Ming looked at Fishy with incredible disbelief as Empyrean Divine Dream said this. If Empyrean Divine Dream could place such praise on Fishy, then Fishy's talent was truly extraordinary!

Still, what was strange was that even now, she had never cultivated before. It seemed as if she was completely unable to move the energy that was within her body.

"Lin Ming, what is happening here?"

Lin Ming explained the process of how he met Fishy as well as how he helped Mo Eversnow possess the body of the goddess, concealing the least he could.

He also told Empyrean Divine Dream about Fishy's secret ability to eat violet sun crystals and even nine sun jades.

After Empyrean Divine Dream listened to this she fell into silence for a long period of time, as if she were thinking about something.

Lin Ming didn't disturb her. He silently waited at the side.

Mo Eversnow looked at Lin Ming, a tinge of worry in her expression.

Mo Eversnow knew just how strong Divine Dream was. After such a situation occurred, although Lin Ming's secrets hadn't been fully revealed, it was about the same.

If Divine Dream truly wished to plunder anything from Lin Ming, she could do so easily.

Lin Ming returned an at ease expression to Mo Eversnow. He said with a sound transmission, "Senior-apprentice Sister, feel relieved that if Empyrean Divine Dream wanted to explore what my secrets were, she would have already done so. I simply wouldn't be able to conceal it. Moreover, Empyrean Divine Dream has even given me life-saving grace before. In fact, I even thought that if I can truly grasp the power of the Magic Cube within a hundred years and defeat the Good Fortune Saint Son then I could lend the Magic Cube to Empyrean Divine Dream for several dozen years. I believe that if Empyrean Divine Dream were able to study the Magic Cube for such a long time, the might she would be able to display with it would be unimaginable. You and I would both benefit from that."

Lin Ming had made this decision after careful consideration. Just because Divine Dream didn't probe Lin Ming's secrets didn't mean that she wouldn't be tempted by the Magic Cube. However, in this great calamity, when facing the much stronger saint race, humanity had to work together and unite as one in order to overcome this hurdle.

"Mm…" Mo Eversnow nodded. "I'll follow your lead."

“Thank you Senior-apprentice Sister.” Lin Ming smiled as he spoke. This smile came from the depths of his heart. Mo Eversnow was already the most important partner in his life. She was one of the extremely few people that he could trust without reservation.

At this time, Empyrean Divine Dream said, “The two of them should remain here.”

“Mm?” Lin Ming was startled. He thought that Empyrean Divine Dream would send Mo Eversnow with him to adventure through the Asura Road.

“Remaining here will be much more significant for you than entering the Asura Road. You…” Empyrean Divine Dream looked at Mo Eversnow.

Mo Eversnow bowed. “Junior’s name is Mo Eversnow.”

“Mm, Mo Eversnow. You, although you possess Heavenly Empress Xuanqing’s mortal body, you still train in the cultivation methods of the human race. You probably obtained some remnant cultivation methods of the god race, but there are too many flaws. The god race are the favored children of the heavens and they combine all the merits of the three major races. Yet, you chose to only practice the human race’s cultivation techniques. That is simply wasting away what was given to you.”

Mo Eversnow was ecstatic as she heard Empyrean Divine Dream speak. She could already guess what Empyrean Divine Dream wanted to say.

“In the past, I once left the Divine Realm and travelled all over, adventuring through the endless lands and even entering an ancient ruin of the god race. If you enter Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, you can study with me. With your background, the boundary you can achieve a hundred years from now will be unimaginable. However, if you go to the Asura Road, although that is a good place to temper yourself, it will actually delay your earliest stages of cultivation. That may not necessarily be good for you. Moreover, while the Asura Road has all races from the 33 Layered Heavens, they actually lack only the god race. The god race is too perfect and its people are forbidden by the Heavenly Dao. Even within the Asura Road I fear you will not find the god race.”

Empyrean Divine Dream looked at Mo Eversnow once more. She asked her, “The decision is yours.”

Mo Eversnow looked at Lin Ming. Lin Ming responded with a true essence sound transmission, “Senior-apprentice Sister, please don’t worry about me. I will be fine by myself.”

“Mm…” Mo Eversnow nodded. She believed in Lin Ming. Thus, Mo Eversnow deeply bowed towards Empyrean Divine Dream, saying, “I thank Senior for helping me to cultivate.”

“Mm.” Empyrean Divine Dream smiled with satisfaction. Then she glanced at Fishy. “You are called Fishy, right? You can return with me. I heard from Lin Ming that you can eat violet sun crystals and nine sun jades.”

“Yes.” Fishy was naturally shy and timid, but she didn’t feel alert towards Empyrean Divine Dream at all. It was like Empyrean Divine Dream released some invisible aura that made everyone around her feel perfectly at ease.

“Very well then. I have quite a few nine sun jades and you can eat as many as you want.” Empyrean Divine Dream smiled as she spoke.

Fishy was overjoyed at hearing this. “Really? That’s great!”

Her eyes nearly became the same shape as nine sun jades. Fishy’s natural character was someone who loved to eat and sleep above all else. This was simply who she was. Although Lin Ming could provide her with her favorite foods, he was still a far cry from how wealthy Empyrean Divine Dream was.

Fishy’s body was like a bottomless pit. No quantity of nine sun jades seemed to be able to fill her up.

At the end, it was actually only Lin Ming that was going in by himself. Mo Eversnow looked at Lin Ming, not knowing what to say for some time.

“Senior-apprentice Sister, Fishy, please take care of yourselves.”

Lin Ming sincerely said. He was fully aware that he would be gone for an unknown number of years. He bowed towards Empyrean Divine Dream once more, then, he turned into a beam of light that submerged into that endless space vortex…

Chapter 1426 – Might of the Runes

Chapter 1426 – Might of the Runes

…

…

…

The gray skies were covered with dark red clouds. The layers of clouds hung low in the skies as if they would start bleeding at any moment.

The ground was a vast desert with shattered stones littered throughout. It was an extremely bleak and desolate land.

“This is the Asura Road?”

Lin Ming stood in this desert, his eyes closed. The heaven and earth origin energy was extremely fierce and wild. All sorts of different origin energies gathered here, recklessly colliding in chaotic abandon.

For martial artists that just arrived, even if it was Lin Ming, they would still be unaccustomed to this atmosphere and it would even cause their skills to be impacted. Of course, this could be adapted to with a little bit of training.

“This is the Asura Road, a separate world…”

Lin Ming stretched out his finger and gathered the power of space on his fingertip. To his amazement, he discovered that the power of space here was several times more stable than in the Divine Realm. It was extremely difficult if he wanted to shatter the void here; in fact, it was impossible for him right now.

"It's hard to imagine that this is really a world created by someone and yet it is far more stable than a natural true universe. I have no idea just what boundary the person who created this world reached."

Lin Ming thought to himself. He had a long future here. Perhaps it would be ten years or even dozens of years, but this was the land he would be travelling through.

His goal was to thoroughly complete the smelting trials available to him.

However, according to what Empyrean Divine Dream had said, even if the Asura Road was linked to all of the 33 Layered Heavens, the people who had managed to do this were incomparably few!

Sha… sha… sha…

Lin Ming moved forwards a step at a time. A faint rustling sound occurred every time he moved forwards. He cast his sense out in all directions, carefully monitoring his surroundings. He could clearly sense every living creature under the sand and stone.

There was a foot long sand scorpion, its body dark red and its tail utterly venomous waiting underneath a rock…

In the distance, there was a wild desert wolf carefully waiting for prey…

After some time, Lin Ming suddenly stopped where he was. He could feel that a faint aura had locked onto him!

Lin Ming's mind turned cold. He had just come to the Asura Road and yet he had run into some unexpected visitor?

He gently traced his spatial ring. This aura was faint at the start, but it began to strengthen more and more, lingering around him as it became increasingly intense.

"Jejejeje! A newbie appeared!"

A grating sound echoed out from behind a boulder. Lin Ming coldly watched as two men walked out. They were both less than six feet tall, their skin was rough and gravelly, and they wore glazed white earnings.

Upon further inspection, these earrings weren't some precious stone at all, but rather teeth. These teeth had been polished to an extreme degree, thus they looked like glazed stones.

These two gazed at Lin Ming as if he were some delectable meal that had just crossed their path. They looked at him from head to toe, licking their lips and laughing, "Haha, I haven't seen someone new in such a long time. To see a fresh face here is quite exciting."

Lin Ming's expression was indifferent. He calmly took out his Phoenix Blood Spear. In such a desert, killing and robbing someone likely wasn't uncommon at all.

"Ho, you seem quite brave." Another martial artist looked at Lin Ming's spear with disdain. "You're just a small hairless little boy, and yet you're so confident in your own strength? Oh… interesting! Isn't this boy a human?"

"He really is a human. It's rare to see new humans come here!"

"We've been camping at this transmission area for such a long time and we've finally encountered a little dish. Trying to obtain some harvests really isn't easy, hahaha."

There were hundreds of thousands or even millions of transmission points in the Asura Road; it was impossible to count them all. Some transmission points were even random. They would be in one location for a few months before swapping over to somewhere new.

However, there were some experienced bandits that had some unique abilities or methods to search for transmission points. They would camp around these transmission points and especially wait for 'newbies' to enter the Asura Road.

The strength of newcomers was normally weaker than most. However, since they would have just entered the Asura Road to adventure, they would often carry a great deal of supplies with them. This was an extremely good effort to reward ratio. After killing one of these newbies, the profits from such an endeavor were extremely high.

Of course, if these robbers were to run into some cruel and ruthless people they would simply avoid them. After all, those people had just entered the Asura Road so how would they know that the people camping around the area were robbers? Unless they were perverted murderers, why would they randomly start killing?

Thus, squatting over a location to wait for newcomers was an extremely safe hunting method. These people were widely known as ‘vultures’.

As vultures, they had to learn an ability that could quickly and accurately ascertain the cultivation of others. Otherwise, they could easily kick the wall with some mistake.

In the Asura Road, quickly discerning the cultivation of others wasn’t easy at all.

The Asura Road was filled with countless different races. Although every race had to follow one of the three great cultivation systems of essence gathering, body transformation, or soul forging, each race used different cultivation methods to do so. And, these robbers had accumulated a great deal of experience about these various cultivation methods.

Now, they could immediately see that Lin Ming’s cultivation was lower than both of theirs.

They suppressed him in cultivation and this was also two against one. The two men cruelly laughed as they circled around Lin Ming.

Lin Ming’s eyes became increasingly cold. “You want to kill me and steal my possessions?”

“Kill you and steal your possessions? Hahaha!” A man laughed, “What do you think?”

“Essence gathering system, Divine Transformation realm human, and also a little defenseless boy. Your talent is quite good but you shouldn’t be over a hundred years old.”

“Eh? Your mortal body is tempered quite nicely. A dual body and energy cultivator? Killing you would be a pity, but if we…”

“You want to use that?”

The two people didn’t bother concealing their conversation from Lin Ming. Lin Ming was startled as he heard all of this. These two people were quite skilled in seeing through his cultivation.

They weren’t humans but they could actually discern his cultivation realm and even see his dual body and energy cultivation path. As for Lin Ming, he didn’t know anything about these two people’s cultivation systems at all.

It was obvious that these two people cultivated something Lin Ming had never seen before. It was some cultivation method that didn’t belong to the humans, saints, or demons, but still had to be one of the 33 different Heavenly Daos.

Lin Ming could just barely sense their aura to roughly judge their approximate strength and then translate that into human cultivation levels.

“…Alright, but if he cannot be raised well then it will be a bit of a waste. Those runes are extremely rare. If we sell them we can trade them for a great deal of good things…”

“It should be possible. We only need to raise him for three to five years before we can use him. He should make a good slave puppet. If he becomes stronger and we can use him to hunt greater prey then the price will be worth it. If there’s danger, he can also protect the rear…”

As they two men spoke, Lin Ming was bewildered. What were they speaking about? They wanted to turn him into a slave puppet?

At this time, one of these two vultures began to shine. His entire body lit up with a gray light as runes shone around him.

"Runes?" Lin Ming immediately went on complete alert.

In the outside world, when Lin Ming fought with his enemies, he had seen countless runes and things similar to runes.

Whether they were Law fragments, seals, or even patterns and lines, all of them were similar to these god runes.

Towards these runes, Lin Ming never cared too much. When he saw them he would respond in kind, using his strongest attack in return.

But now, as he saw these vultures shine with runes, Lin Ming's guard rose. These were definitely the god runes that Empyrean Divine Dream had spoken about!

These god runes only existed in the Asura Road and corresponded to the special Heavenly Dao rules here. They possessed an unimaginable strength and were able to strengthen various aspects of a martial artist.

After locking his sense onto these runes, Lin Ming could feel a vast and mystical aura from them.

These runes were like spirit gods dancing in the air.

The runes of an ordinary martial artist were controlled by the martial artist themselves. However, these runes were different. They were an independent strength that didn't belong to the martial artist but originated from the power of the Heavenly Dao Laws.

In a sense, a martial artist used themselves as a medium to directly borrow extra power from the Heavenly Dao.

Like this, god runes could be used to greatly increase a martial artist's combat strength.

"Surprised? It seems this is your first time seeing god runes. Hehe, no wonder, you're nothing but a newbie! Let me tell you something: the Asura Road is not for little children like you to wander around in! I will have you regret ever having stepped foot in here!"

The robber whose body shined with runes roared out loud. Then, three runes separated from his body and shot towards Lin Ming.

Midway, these runes released an invisible strength that shrouded over Lin Ming. It was like a restriction of Laws, making it so that he couldn't retreat.

Woosh!

These runes chased after Lin Ming and flew into his body. He shook for a brief moment as his heart chilled. "What is this!? I can't even dodge them!?"

Lin Ming panicked. He simply wasn't able to avoid these god rune attacks at all. It was like they had the support of the Heavenly Dao Laws; once they started it was a sure hit strike!

The only way stop them was if his strength reached a degree where he was able to contend with the Asura Road's Heavenly Dao Laws. However, these Laws had been created by someone with an unimaginable strength; wanting to contend with them was simply the ramblings of an idiot!

Just what sort of effect would these runes have? If he encountered some runes that were strong enough to immediately defeat him, wouldn't that be the most unjust death?

As all of this flashed through Lin Ming's mind, how could he not be panicked.

But at this time, the two robbers laughed out loud. "Little brat! Are you afraid? Hahahaha! You have been struck by my god slave seal. As long as this god slave seal submerges into your spiritual sea and you are severely wounded by me then you will become my slave. You won't even be able to kill yourself! I think that you are quite a good seedling. After you become my slave, I will train you and make you my dog. You will be used to kill my enemies!"

"Accept your fate! For us to use you is your honor!"

The two robbers laughed, cutting down with their swords at Lin Ming!

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. What? Those god slave seals would only come into effect after he was severely wounded?

In the Divine Realm, there also existed a slave seal that could be used to completely control someone.

However, this was only possible if there was a vast difference in strength or the one being subdued decided to submit of their own will. Otherwise, they could burn away their body in suicide instead of becoming a puppet.

In the Asura Road, as long as someone was extremely injured and their mind fell into confusion then the god slave seals would be able to display their effect. Even if both sides fought to a draw, had similar strengths, and were mutually wounded, this might also be the case.

This was the function of the god slave seal. It wasn't too heaven-defying at all, but seemed rather practical!

"So that's how it is. These god runes can strengthen a martial artist to a certain degree, but they won't be too heaven-defying. Otherwise, a child who couldn't wrestle a chicken would be able to exterminate a Holy Lord if they had enough god runes with them. After all, these runes have the support of the Heavenly Dao rules and are nearly impossible to dodge. But if that were true, this Asura Road would have lost all sense of fairness and would have no effect at all as a smelting trial!"

Lin Ming suddenly realized what was happening. Like this, he didn't need to dread these god runes too much. He would always have the ability to resist at least.

Chapter 1427 – The First Rune

Chapter 1427 – The First Rune

…

…

…

The runes of the Asura Road could only enhance the various strengths of a martial artist within a certain range. They could only play a supporting role and a martial artist's own strength was the main factor. This was so there wouldn't be a situation where a Holy Lord would be able to kill an Empyrean.

With this condition as the basis, only then would these runes help in tempering individuals.

As Lin Ming understood all of this, he felt much more relieved.

At this time, the two bandits rushed towards him.

"You are still distracted in a fight? A laughable idiot like you is only courting death! This sword of mine will split apart all of your ribs!"

The two bandits attacked Lin Ming together. Atop their swords, fierce ghostly faces appeared. These souls were distorted in pain, crying out for help.

Hum~ Hum~ Hum~

The haunting cries of 10,000 ghosts radiated outwards. These two people were clearly martial artists of the demonic path.

Facing this aura, Lin Ming sneered. “You can only control me if I’m injured, but what happens if you’re the ones that are injured instead?”

Bang!

After understanding the approximate conditions of the god runes, Lin Ming didn’t need to hold back anymore. His strength erupted from his body like a volcano. Behind him, the phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared and the manic power of thunder and fire howled forth!

Ka ka ka!

The void trembled. Although Lin Ming couldn’t crush the space within the Asura Road, he could still cause it to violently shake. The two robbers that cockily tried to attack Lin Ming were both shocked!

“What? A move that could cause the void to shake? How is this possible?”

“What a formidable aura, he definitely isn’t an ordinary youth!”

“We’ve kicked ourselves this time, we have to run!”

Without further ado, the two martial artists turned tail to run. The runes from the body of one of the robbers lit up, as if they were about to manifest into some other effect.

A cold light flashed in Lin Ming’s eyes. He didn’t know what those runes were used for but he definitely couldn’t let them activate. Otherwise, if those runes could greatly increase the defenses of those two or even form a defensive barrier around them then that would give them the time to use some other methods to escape.

“The power of thunder and fire, Heavenly Dao Judgment!”

Lin Ming didn’t hold back. The complete power of thunder and fire tribulation erupted!

This was Lin Ming's self-created transcendent divine might. To use this move to deal with two people that were nearly equal to ordinary human Divine Lord martial artists was like using a giant cleaver to slay a chicken.

But, in order to be cautious against the existence of these god runes, Lin Ming had used this move without hesitation!

Bang!!!

A terrifying detonation lit up the world. Countless crushed stones and waves of sands were sent soaring into the heavens, directly disintegrating and turning into endless clouds of dust. It was like a giant meteor had smashed into the earth, obscuring all vision on the ground within a dazzling red and purple glow!

"Ahhhh!"

The two robbers cried out in pain. One of them was immediately evaporated into ash in the violent explosions.

As for the other, an incomparably brilliant god rune appeared from his chest. This rune shimmered with an intense light as it resisted the power of Heavenly Dao Judgment!

The red and purple divine light was constantly melted away even as the light of the god rune was constantly weakened.

A moment later, there was a faint explosive sound as the god rune was exhausted of all its energy. It crumbled apart within the destructive power of heavenly tribulation.

As for that robber, he fell onto the ground like a dead dog. His entire skeleton was shattered and his skin was burned black. His breath came in halting gasps; he was on the verge of death.

This caused Lin Ming to be extremely surprised.

Heavenly Dao Judgment couldn't be said to be his complete strength, but it still wasn't able to kill some demonic path martial artist that was only equal to a weak human Divine Lord in cultivation.

Without a doubt, that god rune had played a crucial role in his survival. It must have greatly strengthened this fellow's defensive abilities.

If an early Divine Lord martial artist was able to achieve such an effect with such a god rune, then what effects would it display with a Holy Lord or World King?

Lin Ming felt more and more that within the Asura Road, these god runes were considered an extremely important part of a martial artist's strength.

Of course, a martial artist's own strength was the first and most important factor. But, if one had enough god runes and enough formidable god runes, then that might allow a martial artist's strength to rise by a large boundary.

Not just that, but after completing certain smelting trials in the Asura Road, these god runes would transform into true strength within Lin Ming's body. The mightier the runes that Lin Ming was able to obtain, the more his strength would rise.

It seemed that his first goal after arriving at the Asura Road should be to understand the functions of as many god runes as he could as well as to obtain his own god runes.

"That's right, didn't Senior Divine Dream say that there were many god runes I would be able to take from others?"

Lin Ming happily smiled as he thought of this. He glanced over at the two robbers. One had been torn to bits and pieces by the power of thunder and fire and had died on the spot.

As for the other, because of the protection of the god rune, he was still hanging onto one final breath of life. He had just arrived at the Asura Road and Lin Ming hadn't even gone to steal anyone's runes, yet some people had already come to deliver their runes right to him.

This was like running into a pot of gold. Although these two robbers' runes were likely not too heaven-defying, it was still better than nothing at all.

Lin Ming walked towards the dead robber and swept through the shredded corpse with his divine sense. He discovered that this robber's god runes had already disappeared. This caused Lin Ming to sigh with regret. It seemed that upon a martial artist's death, the god runes they had would disappear. Unfortunately, he hadn't known of this just now and had wasted many runes in vain.

Then, Lin Ming walked towards the next robber.

This robber was still conscious. He looked at Lin Ming, his lips purple and his face white and cold. His voice shook, "For… forgive me… I… I will give you… my runes…"

The robber rolled over with some difficulty, crawling on the ground. His hand pawed against the rocky sand floor, leaving behind a trail of bright red blood.

"I don't need you to give me your god runes. I'll take them myself…"

Lin Ming callously said. He had no sympathy towards someone who murdered others and stole their possessions. The Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands thrust out and stabbed into the robber.

The robber squealed like a pig and almost fainted.

This piece of flesh actually had a rune carved into it. Lin Ming wanted to separate this rune, but he discovered that as soon as he cut it out, although a god rune really did appear, it vanished as soon as it floated upwards.

"No… no…" The robber's voice continued to tremble, "If you kill me… you…won't… have anything… if you can make an oath, I… I will give you… all my runes…"

The robber haltingly spoke. However, Lin Ming wouldn't care about the words of a robber at all. He only thought for a moment as he recalled Empyrean Divine Dream's words.

She had told him, ‘Of course, there remains the most simple and direct way of obtaining god runes… and that is to take them from others. There are some god runes that you can take for yourself as long as you kill the other party’…

Empyrean Divine Dream had only said ‘some’, which meant that only some runes were able to be taken. As for the others, he likely couldn’t take them even if he killed others. Those runes were likely bound to a martial artist’s body.

“So that’s how it is…”

Lin Ming finally understood. He raised his spear once more and thrust it straight through the robber’s back.

The robber spat out a mouthful of blood, dead.

From his corpse, seven runes appeared. Six of them disappeared, leaving behind a single one that slowly floated towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming stared at this rune for some time. Then, he slowly reached out his hand and touched this rune with a fingertip.

Woosh!

With a light sound, this rune flitted forth like a little butterfly and entered Lin Ming’s body.

Lin Ming felt heat flow into his flesh, blood, and meridians. After that, a message appeared in his mind.

“God rune: Mournful Spirit’s Right Hand. Grade: silver level. Can be inscribed onto the palm of the right hand to increase the striking power of the right hand. There are a total of seven runes within the Mournful Spirit’s Right Hand, divided into the gold and silver levels. The more that are collected, the greater the strength will be. By collecting all seven, they may be fused into one. The grade of the rune will also enter the blue soul level.”

This small tidbit of information flashed through Lin Ming’s mind.

However, there was far more information than the general attributes of this god rune.

Lin Ming was able to glean many things from what he had learned.

First, there were god runes that came in sets.

Second, by completing a full set, there would be additional rewards. If a trial challenger wished to gain even more strength, they would have to endeavour to collect a complete set.

Third, god runes were divided into different grades, and the cost of different grade god runes were also vastly different. Moreover, it seemed that the classification of this grade system was entirely similar to that of battle spirits. This left Lin Ming a bit surprised. Could it be that the supreme being who created the Asura Road was also human?

Chapter 1428 – Spiritas Slave

Chapter 1428 – Spiritas Slave

…

…

…

The entire Asura Road consisted of a massive continent. This central continent was in the shape of a giant rectangular strip. The Asura Road was over 100 quadrillion miles long, but it was actually only a billion miles wide.

This strangely-shaped continent was countless times longer than it was wide; this caused the entire land to look like a straight road.

In addition, countless slaughters took place on this continent, just like an Asura battlefield.

The name of the Asura Road had been derived from these two aspects.

The Asura Road was divided into three sections: the outer section, middle section, and inner section. The deeper one went down the Asura Road the more intense the slaughter would become and also the more dangerous it would be. If one wanted to emerge from the depths of the Asura Road, that would be extremely difficult!

Currently, Lin Ming was on the outermost section of the Asura Road.

Asura Road, City of Discord –

This was the first large city on the edges of the Asura Road's outer section.

The skies above the City of Discord looked like a giant grey curtain. The air was overflowing with chaotic origin energy and deep pulses of killing intent appeared frequently.

Here, countless masters roamed the lands and countless influences were caught up in intrigue; it was a perilous city in constant chaos.

In the city itself, the thugs of the various influences still had some level of restraint. However, in the outskirts of the city, murdering others and stealing their goods was far too common.

“A fat sheep has come.”

“Mm? A human martial artist? His cultivation is a bit low but it’s rare to have such a deep foundation. He must be some genius that came here to temper himself. Hehe, this sort of person is usually extremely wealthy.”

In a jungle on the outskirts of the City of Discord, seven or eight demon race martial artists were gathered together. They all wore black clothes and they were tall, with powerful and robust figures. Their bodies were healthy and corded with muscles. They were a bit similar to the Sky Spill Continent’s Giant Demon race but slightly shorter.

In addition, there was someone completely wrapped in a thick black robe with a bamboo hat covering his face. His entire body exuded dark demonic energies and he seemed ethereal. He gave off an extremely dangerous feeling.

“Be careful, this person is strong. Although his cultivation isn’t high, do not underestimate him.” The black-robed man said in a coarse voice. It seemed he had a high status amongst these people.

“We understand, Mister. We’ve been in this line of work for 20 years and we’ve already had over a hundred of us brothers die, so we’ve long understood such a truth. Even if the person in front of us is only a normal Divine Transformation youth we still won’t take him lightly and will use everything we have. Even a lion must try its best to capture a rabbit.”

The leader of these black-clothed people said. The black-robed man they called mister was already sufficient to explain his status. He should be considered the strategist of this bunch.

The several black-clothed martial artists looked at each other. Then, the captain of these demon martial artists waved his hand, saying, “Go!”

Of these seven or eight martial artists, the weakest were equal to late Divine Transformation martial artists. At this time, they all rushed out together, hurtling towards their prey!

“More robbers…”

Flying in the air, Lin Ming had long ago discovered this group of people. Although he couldn’t understand their cultivation and thus couldn’t see their exact boundary, he could still discern their relative strength through their auras.

Lin Ming discovered that in the Asura Road, his own cultivation had become his lucky charm.

Of course, Lin Ming didn’t think he was invincible in the Asura Road. In fact, there were some people here that could kill him without much effort at all.

However, the strength Lin Ming revealed on the outside was far too low, only at the Divine Transformation realm. Those people with strength equal to the late Holy Lord realm simply wouldn’t bother wasting their time on robbing someone at the Divine Transformation realm. Those that would do such a thing were usually at the Divine Transformation or Divine Lord realm in strength. And, these people weren’t able to pose a threat to Lin Ming.

As Lin Ming saw these people shoot towards him he sneered. He didn’t retreat. Rather, he suddenly accelerated, breaking through the air directly at them!

“Mm? This brat!”

The captain demon martial artist was shocked. He never thought that not only would his prey not run away but he would actually accelerate towards them. There were only two possibilities for such a situation. The first was that this youth was a fool and the second was that this youth had absolute confidence in his own strength.

For a youth that dared to enter the Asura Road smelting trial and also have such a solid foundation, there was almost a zero chance for the first possibility.

That meant it could only be the second!

As the black-clothed demon captain thought of this, he viciously smiled, “If that’s the case, let’s see just who is more ruthless!”

“Kill!”

A roar shook the heavens. The seven or eight demon martial artists attacked together. Lin Ming flung his hand forwards and thrust out the Phoenix Blood Spear. A divine light of thunder and fire twined together, slicing through the void, causing a horrifying wave of energy to sweep forwards!

Rumble rumble rumble!

With a series of terrifying explosions, the red and purple spear light covered all the demon martial artists.

In an instant, blood rained down as anguished voices cried out! The three demon martial artists in the front that bore the brunt of the attack immediately exploded into pieces from the brutal power of thunder and fire! Up until these people died, their faces were still covered with expressions of absolute disbelief.

The demon captain was panic-stricken. He would never have dreamt this was possible. He had already given this human youth an extremely high appraisal in strength, but his true strength was as different from his thoughts as the heavens and earth! If this youth wasn’t concealing his cultivation then perhaps only the greatest genius of a universe could be so ridiculously strong!

“How… could… such… bad luck…”

The was the demon captain’s last thought. In the next moment, all of the demon robbers had been completely exterminated by Lin Ming!

The entire battle had lasted for less than a single breath of time. The Phoenix Blood Spear was still held slanted in Lin Ming’s hand, the spearpoint not stained with a single drop of blood.

Lin Ming’s complexion was still indifferent like before. And in that jungle area, there was still the black-robed man. His entire body shook; it was clear that he was shaking in fear.

“That human… is simply a devil!”

This black-robed strategist hid behind a giant rock, hiding his aura as much as possible. A force field made from his soul force appeared around him, isolating out all fluctuations of life.

In terms of concealing his aura, only a soul form could do this in the most perfect way possible.

But at this time, with a slight swishing sound, a human youth appeared right in front of him like ghosts and gods.

“Ahh!”

Fortunately, the black-robed man was used to seeing life or death scenes or he would have already fainted in fear.

Lin Ming had appeared too suddenly without any indication at all.

“The last one…”

Lin Ming raised the Phoenix Blood Spear, killing intent flowing out from him.

Against these people that murdered and robbed others, he wouldn't give them any quarter at all. He would kill all them without a shred of mercy.

"Wait… wait!"

The black-robed man shakily spoke out words of the Divine Realm.

In these past days within the Asura Road, Lin Ming discovered that there were three main languages used. One of them was the language of the Divine Realm, mostly used by humans and demons. However, because there weren't many humans in the Asura Road, the Divine Realm language was mostly spoken by the demon race.

This black-robed man clearly wasn't from the demon race. Lin Ming could feel a very powerful soul aura coming from this man's body. As for the blood vitality of his body, it was far, far too little, approaching almost zero.

"Spiritas?"

A thought lit up in Lin Ming's mind. This was the first time he had seen a martial artist of the soul race.

The soul race was one of the peak races of the 33 Layered Heavens. Their strength was an unknown to him, but they shouldn't be any worse than the saints.

"Yes… I am a spiritas. Do not kill me, I am willing to give you all my god runes and be your slave."

As the black-robed spiritas spoke, he took off his robe, revealing a sparkling body. This spiritas wore a set of armor that shimmered with a great light. It seemed as if he wasn't a solid entity at all.

The man knelt down on his knees, showing absolute submission.

“Mm? Be my slave?” Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred. When he first arrived the Asura Road, he had encountered two robbers that possessed god slave seals.

Ordinarily, many people would rather die than become a slave. This was because after becoming a slave, they would lose all sense of personality and turn into a mindless puppet without any awareness at all; this was no different from death. They would be controlled by others and lose any and all dignity.

Unless a master lifted the seal on their own initiative, they would be a slave until death.

“You would rather be a slave than die?” Lin Ming still hadn’t retracted his spear.

“Yes, because of some reasons I still do not wish to die yet. Moreover, you are extremely strong. If I follow you I will quickly lose value, and perhaps you might let me go at that time.”

“Lose value? Then tell me just what value you have for me now.” Lin Ming’s coldly said. In terms of strength, this spiritas in front of him was nothing at all.

“Information!” The spiritas martial artist said. “In addition, I can refine pills and draw inscriptions. You might not know, but the best alchemists and god rune masters in the Asura Road are all spiritas! In the achievements of these two skills, my soul race is several times stronger than the other races combined! There is just no comparison!”

“Oh?” Lin Ming’s mind stirred. “Inscription?”

Within the Divine Realm, when one reached a high enough cultivation, the role that inscription technique could play was extremely small. But in the Asura Road, the inscriptions that this spiritas martial artist spoke about were obviously not as simple as the Divine Realm inscription technique.

What he said was – god rune master.

This likely had something to do with god runes.

And, the spiritas martial artist's next words confirmed Lin Ming's thoughts.

The spiritas said, "In the Asura Road, if god runes are combined with inscription technique then they can produce incredible changes. Here, god runes are nearly equal to the highest Laws. Moreover, the truth is that these Laws can even be used in the outside world; all of that depends on whether or not you can receive the permission of the Asura Road's Heavenly Dao. If you can spare my life then I can do inscription or alchemy for you. Even if there is some alchemy or inscription mission that I cannot help complete, I can still recommend to you spiritas grandmasters. Once you control me with a god rune, I will be absolutely loyal to you and you will not need to suspect me at all. Moreover, the god runes are the highest Laws so no one can unravel them but you.

"And, you can ask me any questions you have about the smelting trials and unknown lands of the Asura Road!"

The conditions that the spiritas martial artist put forth were very tempting, especially the last one. Indeed, Lin Ming knew far too little about the Asura Road. He didn't even know how to complete any of the Asura Road's smelting trials.

Lin Ming looked at the spiritas martial artist, "You seemed to know that I'm a newcomer to the Asura Road. How do you know this?"

"That is because I can approximately feel the strength of the god runes within your body, and… they are too weak… far too weak. Not only is there an extremely small quantity but the quality is also very low. If you were weak then this would be reasonable, but you are extremely strong. This proves that you are likely a newcomer. Moreover, even if you weren't a newcomer, your understandings of the Asura Road shouldn't surpass mine because I have already lived here for several hundred years and have collected a great deal of information."

"Very well, it's a deal!"

Lin Ming agreed. Killing this spiritas martial artist was meaningless to him, but keeping him around would indeed be a bit useful.

Chapter 1429 – The Final Trial

Chapter 1429 – The Final Trial

…

…

…

A gray-blue rune shimmered in the air before slowly sinking into the spiritas martial artist's forehead. The spiritas' face twitched as he grit his teeth and withstood the pain.

For a moment, the pupils of the spiritas were filled with chaos before suddenly being restored to pure brightness. Now, as he looked towards Lin Ming his eyes were filled with awe and respect.

"Old slave Soulwhite greets Master."

"Good. Soulwhite, I do not need you to follow me for too long. When I leave the Asura Road I will return your freedom to you. Now, I want to ask you, how can I be considered as having passed the smelting trials of the Asura Road?"

"Reporting to Master, this Asura Road, in the mind of this servant, is like a game created by a supreme god. We are placed in this game and made to play it. For the winners, unimaginable rewards await, but for losers, there is nothing but death."

"In the Asura Road the Heavenly Dao rules that govern this world are incomparably strange. Many things have already been set in stone. Trial challengers can find god runes through certain lucky chances, and once you collect the required specific sets of god runes then that will trigger a chance to enter the final smelting trial. Through this smelting trial, you will be able to obtain the rewards of the Asura Road's Heavenly Dao! This is because the person who created the Asura Road is an unimaginable existence. There are even those who speculate that this unknown existence is the master of the 33 Layered Heavens. In short, the rewards of the Asura Road are extremely rich!”

“Collect the sets of god runes?”

Lin Ming’s mind stirred.

“Yes. Only those god runes that can form complete sets are considered the most useful. There are some individual scattered god runes, for instance, the slave seal rune that master used on this servant, that do not have much significance. Currently, there are known to be over a thousand sets of complete god runes. But, these god rune sets are mostly focused within the bronze level and silver level. A small number are in the gold level and even less are in the blue soul level. Beyond that, any complete sets at the zenith black level are simply a legend. In order to qualify for the final smelting trial, there are 36 sets of god runes required.

“A complete set of god runes is ten times, a hundred times, or even a thousand times more valuable than runes of the same grade that aren’t complete. Moreover, runes that can form complete sets will not fuse with the blood and flesh of a martial artist. Once martial artists are killed, these god runes will escape from their bodies where they can be obtained by the killer!”

“So that’s how it is…” Lin Ming said to himself, suddenly aware. When he entered the Asura Road he had killed two robbers, and one of them had dropped a god rune called the Mournful Spirit’s Right Hand. This god rune was part of a set, and now it seemed that this wasn’t a coincidence at all. It seemed that only these god runes were able to be dropped from others.

And as Soulwhite had said, if one wanted to pass the smelting trial, the first condition was to collect enough complete sets of god runes. Only like this would he have the chance to go through the smelting trial. Otherwise, he wouldn’t be able to enter at all.

Moreover, every time a set of god runes was gathered, it could greatly enhance a martial artist's strength. From this, one could see that they were much more valuable than ordinary god runes.

Even so, not even a complete set of god runes would bind with the flesh and blood of a martial artist. Once a martial artist was killed, these god runes would fall out. These god runes would inevitably become objects that countless martial artists struggled over, treasures that would start a storm of blood and war!

This was especially true for extremely high level god runes. Let alone a set, if only a single one were to appear in the world, that was still enough for everyone to crazily struggle for it. Who knew just how many rivers of blood would have to flow?

If this Asura Road was really a game created by a supreme god, then the original intention of this game was to make the trial challengers here slaughter each other, and then use this trial of blood and death to select the most outstanding individual from the mountain of corpses!

"Soulwhite, tell me something, through all these years, just how many people have thoroughly completed the Asura Road's smelting trial?"

Lin Ming could imagine that wanting to complete the smelting trial was more difficult than ascending to heaven. But, according to Divine Dream, the Asura Road had already existed for countless hundreds of millions of years; it was a world that had existed far beyond the last great calamity. In all of these years, more geniuses had emerged than there were grains of sand in an endless desert. In addition, with the increasing number of martial artists that were native to the Asura Road, there should have been someone capable of passing the smelting trial.

Soulwhite said, "Reporting to Master, the Asura Road's smelting trial is simply far too difficult. In history, there are indeed martial artists who have crossed the smelting trial, but their era is far too remote for our imaginations. These people once left behind endless numbers of legends in the past, but these legends were watered down over the generations, evolving into numerous versions that are impossible to verify.

"To thoroughly pass the smelting trial is a near impossibility. But, if it is only collecting the 36 sets of god runes required to enter the final trial, and then surviving and completing a part of the trial and correspondingly collecting a part of the rewards, then that is a bit more simple.

"Of course, this is simple only in the context of the massive number of martial artists in the Asura Road. With so many people, there will always be those that possess strength that defies the heavens or luck that defies the heavens and are thus able to collect the required god runes. I believe the master is also one of these people.

"However, if Master enters the final trial, Master must be careful, because this final trial has an extremely high mortality rate. Master must not be greedy for more rewards and choose a path that cannot be completed; that will only result in dying in vain. In these last 100 million years, out of all the martial artists that have started the final trial, the one with the highest completion has only reached an 83% completion rate."

"Oh?" Lin Ming thought out loud, "83%? You know this exact number?"

"Of course. This is because after the Asura Road's final trial ends, the Asura Road's Heavenly Dao will inform every existence in this world about the results of those martial artists that have completed above 70%. The Heavenly Dao will also inform the world of their name and cause their name to rise to fame! In the last 100 million years, only two people have managed to surpass 80% in the final trial. One of them is a saint race martial artist and the other is a soul race martial artist, one a man and the other a woman. Coincidentally, both of them appeared 30 years ago. The saint martial artist had an 81% completion rate and the young spiritas girl had an 83% completion rate. Afterwards, both of them earned unimaginable rewards. It is said that the two of them were the top geniuses of their respective races.

As Whitesoul spoke to here, Lin Ming was startled.

Number one top talent? 30 years ago?

Lin Ming didn't ask about who that spiritas girl was – he certainly wouldn't know her. But, that saint martial artist…

"What is the name of that saint martial artist?" A light flashed in Lin Ming's eyes.

"That person's name was Wumo."

Whitesoul spoke as if this was something everything knew about.

As Lin Ming heard this name he sucked in a deep breath. Wumo! The Good Fortune Saint Son, Wumo!

"It really was him!"

As he thought, before entering the Asura Road, the Good Fortune Saint Son had yet to obtain his title. At that time, he was only known as Wumo.

But, after leaving the Asura Road and also completing 81% of the final trial, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had bestowed a title upon him – the Good Fortune Saint Son, the official title for the next Saint Sovereign!

The next time that he appeared in the world, he naturally was referred to as the Good Fortune Saint Son. Then, that title had become his name.

"So that's how it is… Wumo also once entered the Asura Road!"

Lin Ming didn't think this was strange. In the Divine Realm, because of the broken transmission arrays, only those skilled Empyrean descendants would be able to come to this Asura Road smelting trial. As for the other races, this sort of trial was likely much more common. If the Good Fortune Saint Son was such an extraordinary person, how could he miss out on this opportunity?

“He participated in the smelting trial 30 years ago and obtained an 81% completion rate. That makes him one of the top ranked martial artists in the last 100 million years! And, this compares all the geniuses of the 33 Layered Heavens. If Wumo can accomplish this, it’s no wonder he’s so arrogant.”

With such an achievement under his belt, it was no surprise that he didn’t care for Lin Ming.

Not only did the Good Fortune Saint Son believe that Lin Ming’s talent was inferior to his, but to make up the disparity of dozens of years was easier said than done!

“In the turmoil of the world, the soul race is really overflowing with talent! That spiritas genius was actually able to suppress Wumo! It’s unbelievable. In the 33 Layered Heavens, powerhouses are like clouds. There is no limit in this universe; there is always a higher mountain and a stronger person.”

As Lin Ming was thinking this, he felt his heated blood boiling within him. Out of all the upcoming heroes of the 33 Layered Heavens, he was sure to be one of them, and also an important one!

The Good Fortune Saint Son had completed his smelting trial 30 years ago. But, he had likely entered the Asura Road at least 40 years ago. In other words, the disparity between Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son was around 40 years. In the next 100 years, Lin Ming had to overcome this disparity of 40 years!

If he was chasing after an ordinary genius then this would be simple. But, the one he was chasing after was the second most talented genius in the last 100 million years of the 33 Layered Heavens!

This required that Lin Ming grew over 50% faster than he did!

“Grow 50% faster…” Lin Ming gripped his fists, a smile crowding his face. “I don’t think that’s too bad!”

Now that he had a clear goal in his heart, he felt his fighting spirit roused.

He had to overtake the Good Fortune Saint Son and reveal his skill in the future. Now, his quest to do so would begin at the Asura Road!

No matter what, Lin Ming's degree of completion had to surpass that of the Good Fortune Saint Son as well as that spiritas girl!

Lin Ming subconsciously gripped his fights. But, as his fighting spirit was seething, he didn't know that a trillion miles away at one of the countless other entrances to the Asura Road, a team of martial artists had entered.

These people were all saint martial artists; there were several hundred of them in total.

Without a doubt, each and every one of them was a genius. If they were placed in the Divine Realm it was likely that they could reach the top 100 of the First Martial Meeting finals.

The leader of these people was a tall youth. This youth was Imperial Prince Naqi, who had been defeated by Lin Ming.

After several months of recuperation, Naqi's shattered body had healed from his savage beating by Lin Ming. After all, In terms of recovering, Naqi surpassed even Lin Ming.

"Asura Road! Hehe, we've finally arrived to complete this trial! Just wait for me Lin Ming. During our battle at the Chaotic Blood Continent, you used some strange move to summon a stone gate carved from chaos stones and had me smash into it, severely wounding and even defeating me! That loss was due to a tactical mistake on my part and not because I was lacking in strength. I refuse to accept that battle. We still haven't truly compared just who amongst us is stronger and weaker!

"Now that I have come to this Asura Road, my ultimate goal is to complete over 80% of the final trial and have my name carved down on the divine tablet for the next 100 million years!

At that time, I will obtain incredible advantages and then I will fight you again, ruining your body and soul, destroying your confidence until you never dare to fight me again!”

Chapter 1430 – City of Discord

Chapter 1430 – City of Discord

…

…

…

“This is the City of Discord…”

Lin Ming looked at the massive city in front of him. Just the city walls themselves were hundreds of feet high and the city gate was thick and heavy, made from some unknown material. All sorts of complicated seals were etched onto its surface.

On each side of the city gates was a hefty-looking guard. These people were both from the demon race and were equal to a late Divine Transformation human martial artist in cultivation.

“The city entrance fee is a single origin energy rune for each person.”

As Lin Ming approached, the two guards glanced towards him without any expression.

“Origin energy rune?” Lin Ming was startled. This sort of thing sounded like a currency. In the Asura Road, did even the currency consist of runes?

At this time, behind Lin Ming, Soulwhite hurriedly walked forwards. He wiped his hands together and some floating motes of light left his palms, forming two runes that flew towards the guards.

One of the guards took out a jade slip and received the two runes. He stoically said, “You may enter.”

With a wave of the guard’s hand, Lin Ming and Soulwhite entered the city.

“Origin energy runes are currency here? Then is it not possible to use the nine sun jades I brought?” Lin Ming asked. If this were true then things would be a bit inconvenient for him.

“Nine sun jades…” Soulwhite was startled. He naturally knew what nine sun jades were. They were an extremely large unit of currency to the humans.

“Master’s background is truly grand.” Soulwhite said, “Reporting to Master, nine sun jades can be used, but only demons and humans will accept them. The spiritas and saints don’t have much use for the nine sun jades. The soul race will accept soul stones and the saint race will accept blood demon crystals or blood yang crystals.”

“So that’s how it is…” Lin Ming said, suddenly aware. There were many different races in the Asura Road, and because of differences in cultivation systems and methods, resources held differing values to them.

“How are origin energy runes obtained?” Lin Ming asked.

Soulwhite said, “In the Asura Road, there are many blank runes. These blank runes can absorb heaven and earth origin energy to become origin energy runes. However, this process requires a long time and a great deal of energy. Origin energy runes are the most basic form of currency in the Asura Road; they can be exchanged for all other types of currencies. Other types of currencies can be exchanged for origin energy runes, but the exchange rate will be a bit lower. Generally speaking, 10,000 or so violet sun stones can be exchanged for a single origin energy rune.”

“Understood.” Lin Ming nodded. With Soulwhite following him it was indeed much easier. Otherwise, he might even have had trouble entering the city gates.

As Lin Ming was about to walk deeper into the city, he discovered that many other martial artists didn’t need to pay a fee to pass the city gates.

“How come those people don’t need to pay an entrance fee?”

“They are permanent residents of the City of Discord.” Soulwhite explained. He knew a great deal about this area. “Within the City of Discord, the permanent residents are protected by the law enforcement team. If there is anyone that attacks or poses a threat to the lives of the city residents then they will be hunted down by law enforcement and killed. As for those that aren’t permanent residents of the City of Discord, they do not receive this treatment. If they die, they die, and nobody cares. This is why many people want to become permanent residents here, however… it is simply far too difficult for most. The simplest method to become a permanent resident in the City of Discord is to buy a house here, but even the cheapest house is several hundred million origin energy runes. Even if a Divine Lord powerhouse had unlimited blank runes and were absorbing heaven and earth origin energy at all times every day, they would still require several hundred thousand years to produce that many origin energy runes. And, a Divine Lord powerhouse can only live for 100,000 years. They would have to work for several generations to accomplish that.”

“Such a ridiculous house price?” Lin Ming felt this was unbelievable. Even if a Divine Lord powerhouse were to work for a lifetime they still wouldn’t be able to afford a house? In the Divine Realm this would be incredible.

Several hundred million origin energy runes was equal to several trillion violet sun stones, around half of a Boundless World Pill. This was a completely unfathomable price to an ordinary Divine Lord powerhouse!

“It is normal. This is the Asura Road, where slaughter is everywhere. It is hard to find a safe place to live. If one can become a permanent resident then they will have a safe place to cultivate and won’t need to worry about being killed every day. This is an extremely tempting proposition to many martial artists. However, there is a limited number of houses in the city so the price is correspondingly high. This old servant just said that if one used origin energy runes alone, then even a Divine Lord powerhouse wouldn’t be able to afford it in their lifetime. But, periodically, there are those that have heaven-defying luck and will obtain a priceless rare god rune. If they sell this god rune it is possible to immediately have the funds to purchase a house. After all, there are many outside martial artists that come here to adventure and temper themselves, and what they want are only god runes. Moreover, these people are often exorbitantly rich.”

“Mm.” Lin Ming nodded. He was also the same. He had no interest in buying a house here and only wanted god runes.

“Before, you said that there are many places in the City of Discord to obtain god runes.”

“Yes, Master, please follow me.”

As Soulwhite spoke, he brought Lin Ming to walk towards the center of the city.

The streets in the City of Discord were extremely spacious and the buildings were several times larger than Lin Ming had imagined. The buildings were constructed with roughly-hewn rock that wasn’t carved much at all. Even so, it possessed a bold and wild taste to it.

As they walked further, Lin Ming discovered that the martial artists he passed along the way all had very good levels of talent. There were often martial artists with sloppy foundations, but they would normally be shop attendants, waiters, or entertainers of some sort.

Besides these common people, everyone else here was extraordinary.

These elites were not just trial challengers that came from the outside 33 Layered Heavens, but also included native residents of the Asura Road.

In fact, there were far more native residents of the Asura Road than there were outsiders. These people could also cultivate martial arts in the Asura Road as well as attend the same trials and inspections. Everything that was available to the trial challengers was also available to them.

There were similarly great geniuses that could be born from these people. Now, all of these various geniuses had gathered at the City of Discord in order to receive the missions here.

These were god rune missions.

If one could complete a mission, they could obtain the corresponding god rune rewards.

“It’s here, Black God Fort!” Soulwhite pointed at a giant towering black building in front of him.

This black pagoda had a total of 13 levels and each level was hundreds of feet high. The pagoda was extremely large, making it look like a dark mountain.

As they entered the first level of Black God Fort, the inside was staggeringly huge. If it weren’t for the many martial artists gathered here, it would be possible to go horse riding.

Lin Ming swept his eyes over the crowd and noticed that many martial artists weren’t here for missions, but had set up various stalls in the giant hall.

They sold all sorts of things. Besides pills and magic tools, the most available goods were shield-shaped badges.

There were far too many people that had set up stalls and because there were so many people within Black God Fort’s first level, it had an extremely chaotic atmosphere. The people here all came from different races. There were ogres that were five and a half feet tall, their entire bodies wrapped in thick corded muscles with chains all around them. There were imps that were less than five feet tall, their entire bodies covered in wrinkled skin without any hair at all. There were many beautiful monster race youths, there were many spiritas that had ethereal bodies, and all sorts of other races.

However, there was an extremely small number of humans, just as Lin Ming had expected.

The small number of young human elites in the hall were all martial artists that were native to the Asura Road. The reason that this had occurred was naturally because the portals leading from the Divine Realm to the Asura Road had been destroyed. In addition, within the current 33 Layered Heavens, humanity was the weakest of the three main races.

Their numbers weren't too high and thus it was reasonable that there weren't too many of them in the Asura Road.

Like this, Lin Ming's appearance attracted a great deal of attention in the hall.

"Heh, a little Divine Transformation human kid."

"His foundation is quite nice! For a Divine Transformation realm boy to enter the Asura Road alone means he's quite brave. However… within the Asura Road, the overly brave tend to die overly fast, hahaha."

Several saint martial artists discussed amongst each other with true essence sound transmissions, a smile hanging on their lips. The saints were mortal enemies with the humans. In this Black God Fort, they had some scruples and wouldn't recklessly attack, but if they were outside, it wouldn't be rare to encounter situations where saints and humans fought upon first meeting.

Lin Ming faintly frowned. He could sense many unfriendly or even hostile senses bearing down on him, wanting to observe his inner world.

"It's the saints…"

Lin Ming didn't need to use his eyes to see who was watching him. In the Asura Road there was no restriction of treaties. It was likely that the saints would annihilate any humans they came upon here and steal their wealth and god runes.

Lin Ming didn't bother with these saint martial artists. He looked towards the giant mission board in the center of the hall. Different difficulties of missions corresponded to different degrees of rewards.

What surprised Lin Ming the most was that even accepting these missions required one to pay an origin energy rune fee. Moreover, the fee required for these missions was quite astonishing!

In order to receive a gold level mission, one required 100,000 origin energy runes. These origin energy runes would not be returned, regardless of whether or not the mission was completed.

100,000 origin energy runes was equal to a million violet sun stones. Although it wasn't anything to him at all, how could an ordinary martial artist afford this? Moreover, if they couldn't complete this mission then they would lose everything.

Soulwhite said, "Because origin energy runes are required to accept missions, this has further cemented the status of origin energy runes as the most robust and solid currency of the Asura Road."

After looking at the gold level missions, Lin Ming looked over the blue soul level missions. The price to accept a mission had increased by a hundred times. Now, it cost 10 million origin energy runes for a single mission.

Following that was zenith black level missions. On the entire mission board, there was only a single mission at that level. The price was also increased by a hundred times.

That was a billion origin energy runes! In other words, 10 trillion violet sun stones or 10 nine sun jades. That was more expensive than a Boundless World Pill.

In the past, the Boundless World Pill could only be purchased by at least a World King Holy Land at a tremendous price. Now, when this level of wealth was placed in Black God Fort, it was only able to trade for a single chance to complete a zenith black level mission. If someone were to accept the mission and fail, all of that wealth would be lost.

No wonder Soulwhite had said that gathering a complete set of zenith black runes was a legend.

At this time, Soulwhite said, "Master, you can also purchase missions from the stalls that the trial challenger have set up in Black God Fort. The badges each represent a mission and the different colors each represent a different level. The silver-white badges are silver level missions, the golden badges are gold level missions, and the blue-green badges are blue soul level missions. After a mission is completed, the badge will automatically turn into a rune. Normally speaking, buying a mission badge from a trial challenger is far cheaper.”

“Oh? No wonder there are so many stalls set up in Black God Fort. It seems there are many more missions than are listed.”

Lin Ming rubbed his chin. If someone were to first come to Asura Road and not understand any of the rules here then it was possible to be led through many detours.

Chapter 1431 – Receiving a Mission

Chapter 1431 – Receiving a Mission

…

…

…

Lin Ming glanced over the stalls and picked one. The reason he chose this stall was because he felt that out of all the nearby dozens of vendors, this one was a bit stronger than the rest.

This vendor was an ogre and his cultivation was equal to a peak human Divine Lord.

His foundation was extremely shaky, but he should still have the ability to battle with a half-step Holy Lord.

Moreover, an ogre race martial artist would be willing to trade in violet sun crystals; this would make the process much easier.

Lin Ming looked at the stall. Out of the dozens of mission badges, most were gold, a small number were silver, and there were also a few at the blue soul level.

Some badges had a price tag attached. These prices were around half the price of those offered by Black God Fort.

Seeing Lin Ming walk over, the vendor didn’t seem very excited at all. The vendor took out a jade slip with a rune inscribed on it. He began to estimate the value of this rune without any intention of assisting Lin Ming.

This was naturally because Lin Ming's cultivation was too low, thus he didn't seem like a customer.

"How come some badges don't have a price listed?" Lin Ming asked.

The vendor glared at Lin Ming and impatiently said, "The badges with marked prices aren't high quality items. As for the higher priced ones, speak to me if you want to buy one, and if you don't want to buy one then don't block the view of my stall."

"I want to buy one." Lin Ming didn't care about this vendor's attitude. In the City of Discord, if one didn't reveal enough strength then they wouldn't be respected.

"Which one?" The vendor laid down the rune jade slip he was fiddling with, his voice still as cold as before.

"This one, how many origin energy runes is it?"

Lin Ming pointed at a blue soul level mission badge. Before this, he had already asked Soulwhite with a true essence sound transmission about it. This badge should be very expensive because it offered a complete set.

The vendor looked at Lin Ming with surprise, frowning, "Are you trying to waste my time? You're only at the Divine Transformation realm but you want to buy a blue soul level mission badge? Do you want to die?"

Normally speaking, a blue soul level mission required a Divine Lord realm master to complete. Moreover, these missions were extremely dangerous. There was a high chance of death. In these missions, defeat not only meant the loss of wealth, but often the loss of life.

"You don't need to worry about whether or not I can complete the mission. I will pay whatever the origin energy rune cost is."

“Heh, then you best not be playing around with me. I do not like being messed around with like a fool. 8 million! That is the final price!” The demon race fellow loudly said. His words exuded an oppressive feeling as if he disallowed all negotiations of price.

This was also the style in which one did business in the City of Discord. Without strength, one would be at a disadvantage to even buy something.

“This is the price.” Soulwhite said with a true essence sound transmission. He was good at estimating accurate prices.

Lin Ming nodded. “Deal. I want to ask, do you take violet sun stones?”

This fellow agreed so easily?

The demon vendor was stunned. Although this price wasn’t too high, 8 million was still a considerable sum of money, even to a Divine Transformation realm martial artist. Yet, Lin Ming didn’t even bat an eye.

“I can take violet sun stones.” The demon vendor nodded. It was common for humans to take out violet sun stones as a transaction currency. “1 to 1500!”

This vendor immediately put out an exchange rate. Lin Ming glanced at Soulwhite and Soulwhite responded, “This rate is a tiny bit of a loss but still within an acceptable range.”

“Mm.”

Lin Ming quickly took out violet sun crystals. As long as someone wasn’t trying to trick him, he didn’t mind spending whatever amount of money necessary.

“The number seems right.” The vendor swept through the violet sun crystals with his sense and determined it was correct. He looked at Lin Ming with some surprise. A Divine Transformation realm martial artist that bought a blue soul level badge without even batting an eye, and, what was rare was that he didn’t even try to bargain. It seemed as if this boy had some background to him.

Lin Ming received the badge. Before he had a chance to look through the mission details within it, a not-so-friendly voice suddenly rang out.

“Hey, boy, come over for a little chat.”

Lin Ming turned to see the three saint race martial artists staring at him from behind. One of them was lying back in an armchair, his legs propped up on a stool in a very comfortable position. He stretched out his right hand, waggling a hooked finger at Lin Ming, clearly wanting Lin Ming to come over.

“Yes, you, come here!”

Lin Ming sneered in his heart. These three saint martial artists were the people that were probing him the moment he entered the hall, trying to investigate his inner world. This was an extremely rude and unreasonable form of behavior.

Now these three people were sitting there trying to wave him over. It seemed they were far more mentally ill than Lin Ming first presumed.

Lin Ming couldn’t be bothered to deal with them, but, at this time, the ogre vendor who sold Lin Ming the blue soul level badge said, “I advise you to go over. Those three are called the Black Iron Ghost Triad and are quite infamous in the City of Discord. They force through transactions and even kill others to steal their possessions. They stop at nothing to get what they want and many people have died beneath their hands. If you go over there you might suffer a little loss and lose a little money, but if you ignore them then you might lose your life later.

“I know you have some background and are usually like a young master that is used to having his way, and you don’t like any stains to ruin your sight, but this is the City of Discord; here, strength is everything. Far away dragons cannot pressure local snakes. If you die here, who cares what sort of background you have? They might not even be able to find out what happened.”

“Thank you for the advice. I want to ask, is fighting allowed in Black God Fort?” Lin Ming asked.

“You cannot, so you should be safe here. However, you cannot stay here all the time. They probably see that you come from some wealthy background and want to forcefully sell you something and make you eat the loss. In the City of Discord, you must learn forbearance.” The ogre vendor casually said. These sorts of matters were obviously common at Black God Fort.

Here, if one revealed their own wealth and lacked the strength to protect it, they would be targeted by others.

“It seems I really can’t fight here… what a pity…” Lin Ming thought to himself. The ogre vendor never would have imagined that the question Lin Ming asked just now was not because of his own safety but because he wanted to directly eliminate these three.

“Boy, we’re calling you! Are you deaf!?”

The three saint martial artists were enraged as the saw Lin Ming continue to ignore them. They stood up, smashing their fists together and making explosive crackling sounds with their joints.

“If you want to see me then come over here yourself. You want me to go over there? It looks like you ate something bad today.”

Lin Ming’s voice was indifferent but his words caused the Black Iron Ghost Triad to be shocked. They were actually being yelled at by a mere Divine Transformation realm boy?

This scene immediately attracted the gazes of many people present. After they saw the identities of both parties, they waited with expectant expressions.

“It’s the Black Iron Ghost Triad.”

“Haha, a Divine Transformation realm boy just challenged the Black Iron Ghost Triad?”

“Hehe, that boy just arrived at the City of Discord so he likely doesn’t know who the Black Iron Ghost Triad are or how vicious they can be. He’s really kicked the bucket this time.”

“What bad luck for him. I thought this boy had some sort of background, but it’s a shame he doesn’t know that these ruffians simply don’t care about any sort of status in the City of Discord. Those with shoes aren’t afraid of those with bare feet. At the worst, if the three of them kill that boy they’ll just run away. Even though that boy is fine at Black God Fort, once he leaves he’s definitely going to suffer a miserable fate. Not only are those Black Iron Ghosts difficult to deal with, but they kill anyone that offends them. Moreover, they even hang the corpses up above the streets to serve as a consequence showing people what happens when they are angered.”

People were speaking out loud without true essence sound transmissions. They simply didn’t care if anyone heard.

The vendor who sold Lin Ming a mission badge slowly shook his head. In his opinion, Lin Ming’s character was too feisty and eccentric. For him to deliberately provoke the Black Iron Ghost Triad wasn’t a wise move at all. If he had such a character, it would be impossible for him to continue living in the Asura Road. It was likely he would be killed tomorrow by the Black Iron Ghost Triad. He had only met Lin Ming by chance so he wasn’t too interested in persuading him. This boy could heed his advice if he wanted.

“What did you say? Did I hear wrong?” One of the three saint martial artists looked at Lin Ming, devilishly smiling. “How strangely odd, is this world becoming more idiotic or is it us Black Iron Ghost Triad that is becoming too merciful? Is it because we haven’t killed anyone recently?

“How interesting. Boy, I originally just wanted a bit of your blood, but now I’ll be taking your life. You’d better not leave Black God Fort for the rest of your life.”

The Black Iron Ghost Triad stood up and began grinning demonically as they walked towards Lin Ming.

However, Lin Ming didn’t care about them at all. He turned around and began walking towards the second level of Black God Fort. Since he couldn’t fight here he couldn’t finish these people off. Everything would be settled once he left this area. Now, he wanted to see just what there was on the second and third levels of Black God Fort.

The first level only had a single zenith black mission badge. Although Lin Ming could afford it, he didn’t want this mission at all, because the god runes rewarded for it weren’t complete.

Only by finding complete sets of god runes could he qualify for the final trial. Although separate zenith black level god runes were valuable, Lin Ming didn’t want to waste his time if they couldn’t help him enter the trials.

“Where are the stairs?” Lin Ming asked Soulwhite.

“In the center of the hall behind the central pillar; you can go to the second floor from there.”

Soulwhite was calm this entire time. He had experienced Lin Ming’s strength for himself so he didn’t worry for him at all.

‘Mm.” Lin Ming nodded and turned towards there.

But at this moment, the staircase to the second floor began to shine. Then, the voice of a young girl spread through the entire Black God Fort.

“Congratulations, trial challenger Dugu Li. You have successfully defeated all opponents within the game and have completed the checkpoint. You have earned one chance to draw a blue soul level mission!”

These words caused the entire hall to erupt into chaos.

“Fuck, a blue soul level drawing!”

“This Dugu Li is too lucky. To think he actually managed to obtain the qualifications for a drawing.”

“Don’t be jealous of him. This is because he is strong. Dugu Li is stronger than us to begin with, and with some luck he managed to obtain the qualifications.”

Everyone was rapidly discussing. All of the transactions at the various stalls also came to a halt. Even the three Black Iron Ghosts that were menacingly glaring at Lin Ming were distracted.

This left Lin Ming a bit puzzled. “What is a blue soul level draw chance? Is it precious?”

“Yes, yes it is extremely precious! Master may not know, but even among blue soul level missions, there are some blue soul level missions that will provide very rare god runes which are tens or hundreds of thousands of times more valuable than ordinary blue soul level god runes. Moreover, Black God Fort will not sell these rare blue soul level missions. They can only be obtained through a drawing. Not even the rich can purchase them!”

“Oh? There’s something like that?” Lin Ming said, a tad interested. “From what I heard, he played some game and finally won in the end to obtain the drawing qualifications?”

“Yes. This game is on the second floor of Black God Fort.”

Chapter 1432 – The Wheel of Destiny

Chapter 1432 – The Wheel of Destiny

…

…

…

"Black God Fort's second level?" Lin Ming rubbed his chin. "Then, can I also participate in this trial?"

"Of course, Master. Anyone that enters Black God Fort has a chance to participate in the trial. As long as you pass through all the checkpoints you will obtain a single drawing chance.

"In the drawing there are three things that can be obtained, however, the ones with the greatest chance to be drawn are mission badges. Still, these mission badges will inevitably be rare ones. Within Black God Fort, there are some mission badges that cannot be purchased with any amount of money. Luck and strength are both essential factors. If you have enough strength or you have luck that defies the heavens, then you can obtain these rare mission badges at a small price. These types of mission badges are often a hundred times more valuable than those obtained with origin energy runes."

"Interesting. Let's go take a look." Lin Ming felt more and more that Soulwhite's previous speculations were correct. This Asura Road seemed as if it were a giant game area created by some supreme divine god. The rules that were governed by the Heavenly Dao Laws actually resembled game rules somewhat.

"Let's see what this Dugu Li fellow can draw out."

"Yes, I hope it will at least be a rare blue soul level rune. Although it isn't ours, it should still be fun to watch!"

"Heh, maybe Dugu Li won't want it and will be willing to sell it to us!"

Many people started moving towards the second floor. Some rich martial artists even had thoughts of buying any runes.

Between the first and second levels of Black God Fort was not only a wide staircase but also several transmission arrays. Even if a thousand people were to rush up, it would still be spacious.

The second level was several times broader than the first level at over ten miles wide. The reason there was such a scene was clearly because there was a minor dimension located on the second level.

Even with so many people standing here, it didn't look crowded at all.

At this time, in the center of the second level, there was a giant platform. A tall saint man was standing above this platform, his expression excited and in high spirits. This man was clearly Dugu Li.

Standing beside Dugu Li were four or five guards. These guards all wore white suits of armor and there was the image of a snowflake carved into their chest pieces. They looked dashing and heroic.

Standing in front of these guards, Lin Ming could feel how terrifyingly strong they were.

"These guards are actually peak Divine Lord powerhouses? A peak Divine Lord powerhouse would have an extremely high status in any ordinary Holy Land of the Divine Realm and can even be an Elder of a branch palace, but they can only be considered guards here?"

“These aren’t ordinary guards.” Soulwhite said from beside Lin Ming. “These are the City Lord’s personal guards. Because they wear silver-white armor and their chests have the image of a snowflake, these personal guards are called the Silver Snow Corps. There are a total of 108 guards in their forces and each one of them is an outstanding martial artist. It’s impossible for the average person to hope to join them.”

“The City of Discord’s City Lord?” Lin Ming was startled. In the Asura Road where slaughter was everywhere, anyone that could become the City Lord of such a large city couldn’t be underestimated at all.

“Yes, it is the City Lord. In the City of Discord, there are two groups of people that must not be provoked. The first is the Silver Snow Corps that acts as the City Lord’s personal guard and the other are the Asuras!

“Asura?”

This was the first time Lin Ming had heard this term used like this in the Asura Road. Ever since he came here, there were far too many new terms he had learned.

“Yes, those martial artists who can independently complete trial tasks and complete a full set of god runes will obtain the title of Asura. Those that collect a full set of silver runes have the qualifications to become a one-star Asura. Those that collect a full set of gold runes can have the qualifications to become a two-star Asura. Those that obtain a full set of blue soul runes have the qualifications to become a three-star Asura!

“Generally speaking, three-star Asuras are already extremely terrifying. It is normally difficult to see them. Above that, four-star Asuras are an even more mysterious existence. It is impossible to judge those types of characters with any type of common sense! In order to become an Asura, the god runes obtained have to come from completing certain tasks. Stealing runes and buying runes will not factor into this title. Titled Asuras all receive the approval of the Asura Road’s Heavenly Dao. Even a one-star Asura can obtain a tremendous increase to their strength. In addition, those that can become a Titled Asura are all extraordinary geniuses in their own right. They can often jump an entire large boundary to fight. Even ordinary Holy Lords will not casually think to provoke a one-star Asura at the Divine Lord realm, much less a two-star Asura. This is why Asuras are the second group of people that cannot be provoked in the City of Discord.

“And that Dugu Li who is on stage right now is a one-star Asura! He is extremely famous in the City of Discord. Those three Black Iron Ghosts seem to be bossy and brutal, but even they grovel in front of Dugu Li. This is the suppression brought by strength.”

“I understand.” Lin Ming nodded. Dugu Li’s cultivation was a bit lower than the three Black Iron Ghosts’, but in terms of overall combat strength, Dugu Li’s talent allowed him to easily best the three of them together.

Not just that, but because Dugu Li had the title of a one-star Asura, he had the support of the Asura Road’s Heavenly Dao. If he were to fight the Black Iron Ghost Triad he would simply roll right over them.

With such a difference in strength, it was no wonder no one dared to provoke these people.

At this time, Dugu Li finally started to begin his drawing. This was the reason that many people had rushed to the second level.

The Silver Snow Corps guards began to move a giant metal disc in.

This metal disc was extremely heavy. It was unknown what sort of material it was made from. The surface of the metal disc even had stains and it exuded an extremely ancient atmosphere.

“This disc…” Lin Ming’s eyebrows shot up. He could feel that this clumsy and ordinary disc actually contained infinite mysteries. It even far surpassed the Primordius Gate! This was definitely not something that any ordinary powerhouse could hope to create.

Moreover, since the Silver Snow Corpse was personally moving it, it was clearly unusual.

“Master, have you noticed?” Soulwhite said. “This disc isn’t ordinary at all. It is called the Wheel of Destiny and will reveal just how lucky your destiny is. It is something that has been passed down from the most ancient times of the Asura Road and represents the will of the Heavenly Dao. It cannot be destroyed, and even if you deliberately toss it miles away into the sea, it will still return to the world underneath the mystical rules that govern this land. If you try to attack it or destroy it then you will be cursed and punished by the heavens. The consequences of such actions are serious and even your own destiny will fall into ruin. This is why no one ever dares move against the Wheel of Destiny. The reason that this Wheel of Destiny is placed in the City of Discord is to act as the great treasure that stabilizes the destiny of this city. In the end, there is a finite number of cities allowed to exist in the Asura Road. Without a treasure like this to stabilize the city, a city will not obtain the approval of the Asura Road’s Heavenly Dao and will be easily destroyed.”

“I understand.” Lin Ming nodded. He also guessed something similar. This metal disc was likely a magic tool personally created by the mysterious divine god that established this world. Of course, when that divine god forged this object, they likely did it en masse. Although this object was nothing in the eyes of that mysterious being, to the martial artists of the Asura Road, it was a representative of the Heavenly Dao.

On the platform, Dugu Li took a deep breath and walked in front of the Wheel of Destiny.

The drawing chance he obtained was to spin the Wheel of Destiny.

After spinning the Wheel of Destiny, all sorts of different results could be had.

The most likely possibility was to obtain a god rune mission badge. These types of mission badges all had extremely rare missions.

The second possibility was to directly obtain a god rune. If one could directly obtain a god rune, then the gains were truly great.

Besides the first two possibilities, there was a third. This third possibility was extremely small. Only those people who had a great destiny upon their bodies and would inevitably inherit the fate of the world could pull out such a drawing.

But as for what it was that would be pulled out, no one knew.

But without a doubt, this third possibility was the most valuable one of all. Its value couldn't be calculated at all.

This Wheel of Destiny was something that would determine one's own destiny to a certain extent. It would be a lie to say that anyone wouldn't be nervous upon spinning it.

Even though Dugu Li knew it was extremely unlikely he would pull out that third possibility, as he stepped in front of the Wheel of Destiny, those sorts of odd fantasies still rose up in his mind.

With a deep breath, Dugu Li took out the assessment token he had from passing the game and then crushed it in his hands. The rune turned into a stream of light that flowed into the Wheel of Destiny. Then, the Wheel of Destiny began to shine with a brilliant light as numerous runes shimmered upon it.

Without a doubt, these runes were all blue; they were blue soul level god runes.

However, amongst these god runes, some were finished runes and some were badges.

In addition, on some places on the disc, there were areas without any runes at all. There was only a single ancient character that read – Destiny!

If one could draw this option then one would obtain that mysterious third reward possibility.

Chapter 1433 – The Hunter Game

Chapter 1433 – The Hunter Game

…

…

…

In the platform at the center of the level, Dugu Li thrust out his hand, pouring the entirety of his astral essence into the Wheel of Destiny. The runes atop the Wheel of Destiny began to emit a bright luster, unpredictably changing.

Everyone's eyes were locked onto the Wheel of Destiny.

Runes lit up one by one. As Dugu Li looked at these flashing lights, his mind tightened.

As the runes began to dim down, the last shining rune would be the one which Dugu Li drew.

Although this drawing only occurred for several breaths of time, to Dugu Li, each second seemed as long as a year.

Finally, the last lit up rune lay above a shield badge.

At the end of the draw, this shield was the first reward possibility – a rare mission badge.

This was the worst of the three possibilities but also the likeliest. Most people drew this result.

Dugu Li's lips twitched, a bit of regret in his heart. After coming this far he couldn't help but fantasize that he would draw out the third possibility and ascend to the heavens in a single leap. However, the fantasy was shattered.

“Congratulations Lord Dugu Li!”

“That’s right, Lord Dugu Li truly has a wonderful destiny upon him. A rare blue soul badge is of inestimable value.”

Everyone began to congratulate Dugu Li. His status was high to begin with, and now he could go even higher.

“Lord Dugu Li, do you have any intention of transferring this badge?”

Someone asked. However, Dugu Li immediately rejected this idea. “I definitely won’t transfer this blue soul badge.”

Dugu Li said, leaving no room for argument. Although he currently didn’t possess the ability to complete this blue soul badge’s mission, he could have this badge temporarily held at Black God Fort until he made a breakthrough before returning at a later date to complete it. If he sold it to others then that would be far too wasteful. After all, this type of rare badge couldn’t be purchased with money.

Dugu Li looked at the one who spoke up and said, “If you want one, you can participate in the trial yourself!”

The Black God Fort’s smelting trial was open all year round but there weren’t many people who participated in it. This was because those that didn’t possess an Asura title would find it nearly impossible to gain any advantages in the trial. Even for those with an Asura title, wanting to complete the checkpoints would require a significant amount of strength and luck.

Moreover, every time one participated in this trial, there was an admission fee of 100,000 origin energy runes. For many martial artists, this amount of money left them feeling overly nervous.

But today, because many people had been roused by Dugu Li, they began to stand up in abundance. “Haha, since that’s the case, I will participate once!”

“I also want to give it a try. I’ve never participated in Black God Fort’s trial before. Although the admission fee is a bit steep, I still want to experience it once.”

“Me too!”

In a short period of time, seven or eight people had signed up.

These seven or eight people were all outstanding individuals amongst their level. Many of them were just a single step away from becoming an Asura. As long as they had another year or so, they would be able to complete the necessary steps to obtain an Asura title.

Upon seeing this scene, the three Black Iron Ghosts that came into conflict with Lin Ming were also enthused. They all looked eager to give this a try.

“Big Brother, let’s go and try too!”

“300,000 origin energy runes isn’t a small number, but if we can pass the trial our gains will be great. Still, the chances of us passing this trial are extremely slim. Currently, there are a lot of people participating and before the trial really begins we will have to struggle against these trial challengers, making things even harder for us. After all, none of these challengers are weaker than we are. If we lose, we’ll have lost 300,000 origin energy runes. That will take a great deal of work and time for us to earn back…”

The leader of the three Black Iron Ghosts hesitated. In truth, he understood that even if the three of them worked together in the trial, their chances of success were nearly zero.

However, after some others heard these words they were left speechless. The so-called ‘great deal of work and time’ was actually extorting, robbing, strong-arming, and murdering others.

As the three Black Iron Ghosts were wavering, not too far away, a human youth raised his hand and said, “I would also like to participate.”

“Mm?” The three Black Iron Ghosts were shocked.

“This boy, isn’t he the fellow who bought the blue soul mission badge!”

“This little beast is far too rowdy, to think that he would dare scold us Black Iron Ghost Triad in front of so many people! In all these years, those arrogant fools that dared to provoke us have all died.”

The boss of the three Black Iron Ghosts sneered. He wanted to wait until they left to deal with Lin Ming, but he never imagined Lin Ming would jump into the tiger’s den.

“Hehe, he also wants to enter the trial. How interesting. He doesn’t know the rules of this area and yet he dares to participate in the Black God Fort smelting trial. In this world how can there be someone who attacks those that are stronger than themselves?”

Even a one-star Asura could fail this sort of trial. Moreover, Lin Ming didn’t have too many runes on him right now. For him to toss out 100,000 origin energy runes to participate in the Black God Fort trial was far too conspicuous.

Many people looked over to Lin Ming, including even the ogre vendor who sold Lin Ming the blue soul mission badge. In his eyes, Lin Ming seemed like a pretty little flower that wasted money everywhere and anywhere.

“Hehe, if he participates then this trial might be fun. We should make sure to ‘look after’ him.”

“Haha, third brother is right. Big Brother, we also need to participate.”

“Mm…” The boss of the three Black Iron Ghosts was originally unsure, but now that he was provoked by Lin Ming he directly raised his hand and said, “We will register too!”

“The three Black Iron Ghosts are also entering!”

“After that human boy decided to participate the three Black Iron Ghosts also decided to join in. This is clearly because of him. It seems they want to mess with him in the trial.”

"That's right. This Black God Fort trial isn't something that just any ordinary martial artist can play around in. That human youth is far too young and naïve, and now he also has to deal with the Black Iron Ghost Triad."

Everyone began to discuss amongst each other. None of them thought that Dugu Li's drawing would cause so many hopeless trial challengers to lose their minds and register. This would only make the trial even more intense and difficult to complete.

"What a pity. They should have given me those origin energy runes instead of just throwing them away here." Some martial artists sighed.

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred as he heard all of this. "Soulwhite, where do the origin energy runes used to purchase mission badges and pay for the trial entrance fee go? Are they taken by the City of Discord's City Lord?"

Soulwhite shook his head. "It's not like that. If that were the case then the City Lord would have accumulated an unimaginable amount of wealth. All of the origin energy runes are completely recycled by the Asura Road's Heavenly Dao. It seems as if these origin energy runes are used to support the continued revolution of power for the Heavenly Dao here. Some people even suspect that the entire Asura Road is an incomparably massive array formation and the trial challengers are placed in this array formation and have to follow its rules."

"This is…" Lin Ming was stunned. Although this sort of perspective was shocking, the more he thought about it the more reasonable it sounded.

"Master, the three Black Iron Ghosts are specifically targeting you. Although they cannot do anything to you in Black God Fort, the trial is different. Master must be extra careful."

"Mm, I got it." Lin Ming chuckled.

"Is there no one else registering? Then… all registered martial artists, please step up to the platform." A silver-armored martial artist said from above the platform. He was part of the Silver Snow Corps.

At the end, there were a total of 15 martial artists that had registered.

Lin Ming quietly stepped onto the platform. Beside him were the three Black Iron Ghosts. It could only be said that enemies often crossed paths.

“Hehe, little boy from the human race, us grandpas will take good, good care of you.”

“You should try to put up a little struggle. Don’t give up so fast, hahaha!”

On the platform, the three Black Iron Ghosts were sinisterly smiling. And at this time, the Silver Snow Corps martial artist stepped in front of the martial artists. He said without any expression, “Now I shall announce the rules. There are some among you who already know them, but I shall repeat them anyways.

“The trial you shall be participating in is in truth a game! This game is called the Hunter Game. After 20 breaths of time, all of you will be transmitted to a separate dimensional realm. There, all of you are hunters and all of you are prey. Your goal is to hunt as many prey down as possible and obtain the trophies from their bodies!

“These are the trophies!”

As the Silver Snow Guard spoke, he flung several black objects towards the participants.

Lin Ming took the trophy in his hand and looked at it. It was actually a black skull. This black skull was very heavy and exuded an extremely fierce feeling.

The Silver Snow Guard continued to say, “This is a skull badge. The trial challengers that join this game may hunt each other and steal each other’s skull badges. In addition, within this dimensional realm there are many prey that come in all different shapes and abilities. If you kill them you may also obtain skull badges!

“Of course, these prey may be hunters themselves that hunt you instead! Their strength is decided by the strongest amongst you. Once a trial challenger loses all their skull badges or they are severely wounded and unable to fight, they will be considered as eliminated from the game and directly transmitted out of the dimensional realm.

“Within the dimensional realm you may freely fight. However, you may not kill others. For every person you kill, that will subtract two skull badges from your count. Consider your actions before you take them.

“Alright, I have finished explaining the rules. When the game ends, your result will be judged based on the number of badges you have collected. If you surpass 50 skull badges then you will have the chance to draw a blue soul level mission badge. If you surpass 100 badges, then you will obtain a blue soul level draw chance as well as a zenith black draw chance!”

The Silver Snow Guard and the other participants didn’t have any reaction to this, but Lin Ming was startled. “You can also qualify for a zenith black drawing?”

“Yes Master. If you perfectly complete the Black God Fort smelting trial then you will obtain a zenith black draw chance. But, I haven’t heard of anyone managing to accomplish this in all these years…”

Chapter 1434 – Hunters and the Hunted

Chapter 1434 – Hunters and the Hunted

…

…

…

Shua!

After the Silver Snow Guard announced the rules, a bright silver door emerged high above the platform. This was the portal to the dimensional realm.

“Begin!”

“Haha, we’ll have results soon. The game lasts for 14-16 hours at most, but the truth is that several days will pass inside.” This was not the first time that the martial artists present had watched the Hunter Game. Time flowed differently within the dimensional realm. To martial artists that lived such long lives, 14-16 hours was only a brief period of meditation.

“The Silver Snow Guard said just now that the difficulty of the Hunter Game is based upon the strongest trial challenger that joined. If so, won’t everyone else who has lower cultivations suffer a great loss? That human boy has the lowest cultivation amongst everyone that entered; he’s only at the Divine Transformation realm. As for the other martial artists in the Hunter Game, they are all at the middle Divine Lord realm or above. There are even peak late Divine Lord masters and those that have touched upon the threshold of the Holy Lord realm.”

“That’s right. This is why the Hunter Game normally has participants who have similar cultivations. Those with weaker cultivations will suffer a loss.”

As everyone was speaking, many people present looked towards Lin Ming.

This Hunter Game was extremely difficult to begin with. Even if a peak genius were to go in, they would still need to be cautious. If the difficulty was even higher, then it would be almost impossible to complete.

“Master, your cultivation will have you suffer a loss in the game.” Soulwhite said.

“It doesn’t matter.” Lin Ming waved his hand. “Didn’t you tell me before this that at the start, the prey within the world of the game are extremely weak, but will slowly strengthen? And the rate at which they grow stronger is decided by the cultivations of the trial challengers within?”

“Yes.”

“Then I don’t need to worry. Soulwhite, do you know of the martial artists that are participating?” Lin Ming asked as he moved towards the transmission portal.

“Out of all the participants, there is only a single Asura and he is a one-star. It is unlikely for him to pass this trial, and as for the others, their chances are even lower. In order to pass this trial and earn the chance to draw a blue soul mission badge, one usually needs to be a two-star Asura. Sometimes, even two-star Asuras are defeated. As for one-star Asuras, only outstanding ones like Lord Dugu Li can succeed with a great deal of luck.”

“I see.”

As Lin Ming said these last words he stepped into the dimensional realm.

Light spun around him. In the next moment, he had arrived at a completely different space.

The other trial challengers all stepped through the portal and were transmitted to different places in the dimensional realm.

The horizon was blurry at first but everything began to gradually clear up. In front of Lin Ming were vast, nearly endless grasslands. And scattered over these grasslands were all sorts of black rocks as well as the bones of beasts.

“What a large world…” Lin Ming concluded as he swept his sense all around him.

He recalled the Silver Snow Guard’s instructions. He would need to gather a total of 50 skull badges in order to be considered as having passed the blue soul level checkpoint.

Every trial challenger only had a single skull badge. All the trial challengers together only had a dozen some skull badges. In order to gather more, they had to be obtained from the prey here. However, these beasts wouldn’t be easy to deal with.

According to the Silver Snow Guard, how powerful the prey were was decided by the trial challenger with the highest cultivation.

Although Lin Ming was confident in his own strength, the trial in front of him was intentionally aimed at geniuses to begin with. If the difficulty of the trial suddenly rose to the Divine Lord realm, this would be disadvantageous for Lin Ming.

Even if he had the ability to gather 50 badges, anything more than that would be impossible. Lin Ming wasn’t satisfied with this result.

Thus, Lin Ming made a decision. That was, before he killed any prey in this game world, to eliminate every other trial challenger participating. If so, then this Hunter Game’s difficulty would be lowered to the level of a Divine Transformation cultivation.

If everyone knew that Lin Ming had made such a decision before the Hunter Game even began, they would all think he was crazy.

As Lin Ming thought like this he flew into the skies.

These grasslands were extremely vast and the grass was also very deep. In some places it was as high as his waist and in some place it was over his head.

If a martial artist was hidden in these grasslands and was also extremely far away and restraining their aura, then finding them would be difficult. Even though Lin Ming could eventually find them with his powerful divine sense, he would have to spend a considerable amount of time and effort. Thus, Lin Ming chose the easier and most direct method – to fly through the skies…

……….

At this time, dozens of miles away from Lin Ming in an open land, three saint race martial artists were gathered. These three were the Black Iron Ghost Triad.

“This is the world of the Hunter Game. I’ve heard about it countless times before but this is my first time seeing it for myself.”

The admission fee for the Hunter Game was simply far too high. Because the Black Iron Ghost Triad knew that it was almost impossible for them to clear it, they hadn’t ever attempted it.

“Mm, even if we aren’t successful this time, we at least explored this area. In the future we will definitely become Asuras and we will have to pass this checkpoint sooner or later. The 300,000 runes can’t be considered wasted.”

“Hehe, of course it’s not a waste. Since we’re here, let’s have our fill of the hunt! Big Brother, do you think we should go look for that boy now, or should we wait one or two days and have that boy gather some skull badges for us before we look for him again?”

The third brother of the Black Iron Ghosts licked his lips, his tone a bit impatient.

“Of course we look for him now! That boy can’t necessarily last for a long time. The prey here are extremely strong and they only become stronger over time. One or two days from now, that boy will probably be eliminated. If so, that is far too merciful for him. Even if he wasn’t eliminated, he should only be able to obtain a few skull badges anyways.”

"Good idea, I also think we should look for him as soon as possible. I can't wait! Unfortunately, we cannot kill him here, but crippling him isn't a problem."

In this dimensional realm, the Silver Snow Guard only discouraged killing others; he didn't outright forbid it. If someone killed someone else, they would have two skull badges deducted.

"Mm, it's not worth it to kill him. Two skull badges is far more valuable than his life. But, the problem here is where do we find him. If that boy decided to find somewhere to hide and also restrains his aura, then it won't be easy to find him."

"That really is a problem."

This was something that the Black Iron Ghost Triad's boss was also troubled about.

None of them knew just how they should begin searching for Lin Ming. But then, the Black Iron Ghost third brother was suddenly startled as he shouted out, "Big Brother, look over there..."

The third brother pointed in a direction. In the far off horizon, there was a small spot flying against the sun, just several dozen miles away.

Martial artists had extremely good eyesight. Even at such a far distance they could still clearly see what that spot in the skies was.

"That is a trial challenger... a human?"

The Black Iron Ghost Triad boss poured astral essence into his eyes. He immediately saw the person's facial features.

"It's actually Lin Ming! That boy is just looking to die!"

"Is it really him? Why would he be flying so high? Is he deliberately exposing his position? Just what is wrong with this world? There is someone that isn't scared of dying and wants to fly up to hasten their end instead?"

“This boy is a foolish idiot. No matter what he’s thinking, since he wants to die so badly then let’s help him! Let’s go.”

The Black Iron Ghost Triad didn’t fly into the skies. Rather, they stayed close to the ground, rapidly rushing towards Lin Ming.

Currently, as many martial artists in this trial were hiding their whereabouts, anyone that flew into the skies stood out like a firefly in the dark night.

Chapter 1435 – Many Wolves, Little Meat

Chapter 1435 – Many Wolves, Little Meat

…

…

…

"They're here… one… two… three… four, four waves of people. It seems I'm really welcome here." Lin Ming mockingly said. Out of all the trial challengers, Lin Ming had the lowest cultivation. In the eyes of the others, he was like a piece of meat that could be butchered however they pleased.

Out of the four different waves of people that were coming, two were alone and two were in groups. One of the groups was the Black Iron Ghost Triad and the other was a couple.

When they passed through the portal they had held hands and gone together. Like this, they wouldn't be separated in the space transmission passage.

Woosh!

The couple was the first to arrive. A monster youth followed close behind them.

This monster youth had pale skin and sharp, pointed ears. Although he could be called a youth, he was actually around a hundred years old. His nickname was Charming. With his outstanding strength and fair yet handsome appearance, he was well-received by the many women within the City of Discord.

"Hehe, do you want to eat everything yourself?" The monster youth grinned.

“There are too many wolves and too little meat. Just a single skull badge and there are even more people catching up here. Who can obtain this skull badge will all depend on your ability!”

The husband and wife couple in front of the monster youth drew their weapons, as if they wanted to compete for Lin Ming’s skull badge. To them, Lin Ming’s badge was already a piece of fat placed in the pot. The only question right now was who had the ability to eat it.

Shua! Shua!

Right after, two more waves of people arrived. The Black Iron Ghost Triad was amongst them. For a time, besides Lin Ming, there were seven people here in total.

It was said that when enemies met, eyes would turn red. When the Black Iron Ghost third brother saw Lin Ming, he demonically grinned as he kneaded his fists again and again.

“Brat, heaven’s path was there but you chose not to take it, and instead you would rather break through the gates of hell! Although we won’t kill you today because of the rules, we will still beat you into a cripple. Once we leave, we’ll tidy you up some more. We’ll shatter your bones and meridians until you’re crawling like a dead dog on the streets! Hahaha!”

“A pack of wolves surrounding a single piece of meat. There’s just one skull badge and so many of us here. It will be impossible for us to divide it. Do you really think we should fight each other over a single skull badge?”

The monster youth glanced over at the Black Iron Ghost Triad and also looked at Lin Ming, his voice calm. If he dared to operate by himself in the City of Discord, he inevitably had a strong foundation of his own. If they were to really fight here, he would not be weaker than any of the other three parties.

“Hehe, everyone, give him to us brothers.” The Black Iron Ghost Triad boss spoke up. “Us brothers already have a grudge against this boy and we just happened to want to settle it here today. As for that skull badge, it isn’t too important to us. Honestly speaking, out of everyone here, none of us really have a chance of passing the game checkpoints. In my opinion, aren't most of you here to gain some experience to prepare yourself for next time?"

"Haha, none of that matters to me. I've long since had the strength to become a one-star Asura but I simply didn't have the time for it. I'm really thinking I should stay here to collect the 50 skull badges and complete this trial!" The monster youth confidently said, his arrogant voice passing out far and wide.

The Black Iron Ghost Triad boss' eyebrows shot up. This monster fellow was far too rampant. Just what sort of awesome hero did he think he was?

Although the boss found this unbearable, he didn't dispute those words. Instead, the Black Iron Triad boss said, "Fine, you can pass whatever you want. We'll let you have the skull badge; we don't want it."

"Haha, what a wonderful idea, It's a deal!" The monster youth smiled wide. Of course, if he wanted the skull badge he also had to obtain the agreement of the other two parties.

"However...." The monster youth paused for a moment. He suddenly turned to Lin Ming, an interested look in his eyes. "Before anything happens, I have something I want to ask you. I've been curious; why were you flying through the skies? In this Hunter Game, no matter how I see it, only a mentally retarded child would do something like that. Even a fool knows what consequences flying through the skies will bring. Even so, you seemed to have done so intentionally. Was it to draw us to you? You have succeeded, but... just what is your motive?"

"Hehe, that's simple. He probably understands that is is impossible for him to pass the checkpoint, thus he deliberately attracted a group of people to him so that they would somehow engage in a group melee. Then, he would be able to take advantage of the chaos. This idea of yours was far too dumb!" One of the Black Iron Ghosts sarcastically mocked.

Lin Ming chuckled, and his chuckle was very calm. “There is no other reason I did so than to draw you all here. I flew through the sky and exposed myself on purpose to save myself a great deal of trouble.”

“Eh, how interesting!” The monster youth rubbed his chin, his wide and large eyes shining as he stared at Lin Ming as if he wanted to see through his body. “The more I know, the less I understand. This is the world of the Hunter Game and also the first time you have come here, so it’s impossible for you to have set up any traps beforehand to deal with us. Could it be that you actually thought you could deal with all of us by yourself?”

“Correct.” Lin Ming snapped his fingers. “Your presence here increases the difficulty of the game by a great deal. I admit that with all of you here, I lack confidence to be able to pass the checkpoint, thus I made the decision to send all of you out and reduce the difficulty.”

“What!?”

As Lin Ming spoke, the monster race youth as well as everyone else was left completely dumbfounded. Was this boy insane? Where did he get the crazy idea of eliminating all of them?

“Well, to put it in simpler terms…” Lin Ming took out the Phoenix Blood Spear. On the spear point, the power of thunder and fire began weaving together. “My strength, is greater than all of yours combined!”

As Lin Ming spoke, his figure vanished like ghosts and demons in the night.

“This is bad!”

“Be careful!”

The sudden change left everyone panic-stricken. All of them began to immediately retreat.

And at this time, the Black Iron Ghost third brother suddenly felt a chill crawl down his back. A thick killing intent had quietly appeared from behind him, locking onto his entire body!

Reflexively he took out a saber from his spatial ring to slash behind him, however… Lin Ming's speed was far too fast, a level that surpassed his ability to respond to. The moment the third brother slashed out, he felt a cool feeling at his back and a sharp pain as a spear thrust through his chest like a viper, sticking outwards.

Blood sparkled on the spear point, dazzling to the eyes.

The Black Iron Ghost Triad's third brother was pierced through by Lin Ming's spear! The tough body of a saint race martial artist was sliced apart like raw beef beneath the Phoenix Blood Spear!

"The hell!?"

Just 200 feet away, the monster youth was able to clearly see everything that happened. To him, Lin Ming's speed was not much different from teleportation!

These were the Space Laws! Only a human martial artist could use the Laws to the extreme! Although saints were fast, they couldn't be faster than the Laws!

And there was also that casual and light spear strike. Without any grand martial skill behind it and only some true essence poured into the attack, that spear had been able to pierce through the body of the Black Iron Ghosts' third brother. This striking force left the monster youth frightened. Although the Black Iron Ghosts' third brother only had ordinary strength, he was still a saint race martial artist and his martial arts came from tempering his body. No matter how weak he was, since he had cultivated to the Saint Lord realm, his flesh and bones should be as hard as divine iron. In addition, there was also astral essence protecting his body, and yet he had still been so easily pierced through by Lin Ming's spear. Just what sort of explosive force was behind that attack!?

"First!"

Lin Ming suddenly pulled out the Phoenix Blood Spear. The reason that his attack had so easily pierced through the Black Iron Ghosts' third brother was because of his true essence and because his mortal strength had reached several hundred million jins after he opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. And, another reason was that Lin Ming had poured his battle spirit into the Phoenix Blood Spear. Towards the saint race martial artists that were weak in the aspect of the soul, a battle spirit was a great advantage of humans.

"Die!"

Lin Ming coldly shouted. He smashed his palm into the Black Iron Ghost third brother's chest. This simple palm strike was actually the most insidious martial skill in Lin Ming's arsenal – the Pulse Cutting Palm!

After not using this attack for so many years, this martial skill now struck the Black Iron Ghost third brother. Lin Ming didn't hold back at all. With a light cracking sound, true essence violently crashed into the Black Iron Ghost third brother's meridians and bones, instantly severing them and cutting off his blood vitality!

Killing was discouraged in this game through loss of skull badges. Thus, Lin Ming decided to follow the choice that the Black Iron Ghost Triad had taken. He wouldn't kill them, but, he would completely cripple them. To a martial artist this was a fate far worse than death, especially for the Black Iron Ghost Triad that had done all sorts of evil acts. The three of them had made innumerable enemies in the City of Discord. If they were to lose their cultivations then their fates could be imagined!

"His attack is so strong and ruthless!"

The monster youth was bewildered. In just two moves, this human youth had completely wasted the Black Iron Ghost third brother's martial arts. This sort of clean and merciless strike was definitely not something that a frail and flowery youth raised in the safety of a great family could do. This was something that only someone who constantly walked on the edge of life and death could accomplish, someone who had killed countless opponents. His skill was extraordinary and the terrifying strength and killing intent hiding within his body was nearly limitless. Although this youth seemed like a modest gentleman most of the time, once he erupted, he was like a bloodthirsty tyrannical beast, savage and brutal!

“Run!”

This thought instantly appeared in the monster youth’s mind. He could no longer care about why Lin Ming was so strong at such a low cultivation. All he knew was that if he didn’t run away right now he would absolutely suffer the same fate as the Black Iron Ghost third brother!

However, as soon as the monster youth made this decision he felt his body shake. An invisible strength had struck him like an arrow and entered into his body, marking his bones and meridians.

“What is this?”

The monster youth was shocked but immediately reacted. “Is this a tracking god rune?”

In the Asura Road, there were many auxiliary god runes; tracking god runes were one of these. Once they were planted they were extremely difficult to resolve. But now, the monster youth could feel that what Lin Ming planted inside his body was not one of these god runes but a self-created tracking mark.

“It isn’t a rune… it is a battle spirit mark, but the effects are the same!”

The monster youth instantly understood what happened. Lin Ming had planted a tracking mark in his body to hunt him down – this was a true Hunter Game! Unfortunately for them who had participated in this game, they were not hunters, they were the prey!

As a monster race martial artist, although his talent in battle spirits couldn’t compare to a human’s, he was still far superior to a saint. He immediately reacted, wanting to erase this battle spirit mark.

However, just as his sense touched upon the battle spirit mark he felt his arms and feet turn cold. This battle spirit mark flickered with a deep blue light, like the purest of blue jades.

This was clearly… a blue soul battle spirit!

“Blue soul battle spirit? Are you fucking joking with me?” The monster youth was horrified. His own battle spirit was only at the elementary gold level and yet he had bumped into a blue soul battle spirit. This couldn’t even be described as hitting a stone with an egg.

Chapter 1436 – Self Explosion

Chapter 1436 – Self Explosion

…

…

…

On the battlefield, Lin Ming's figure flashed and he disappeared from sight. He was like a death reaper that haunted the night, wantonly harvesting life.

His speed was far too fast. From crippling the Black Iron Ghost third brother to taking his spatial ring, this had only taken a fraction of a second. The moment that people saw blood splash out, the Black Iron Ghost third brother's crippled body was already falling down from the air.

"Third Brother!"

The Black Iron boss roared out. Although the Black Iron Ghost Triad had done all sorts of evils in their lives, they still had a bond between them because they were true blood brothers. Now that they saw their blood brother being wasted in front of their eyes, even the most cold-hearted individual couldn't remain unresponsive.

"He's crippled Third Brother!" The Black Iron second brother shouted, his eyes turning red.

"Don't be impulsive! We are not his match at all!" The Black Iron boss could only remain as calm as he could. At this time, the only one he could save was himself. As he sent a sound transmission to his second brother he fled with all his strength. But at this time, a voice of death quietly echoed in his ears like the whispers of the end. "You are second!"

"Fuck, I'll fight with you!"

The Black Iron boss was a ruthless individual. Since he clearly knew he wasn't able to run away, he erupted his astral essence to the limit, protecting all of his vital points as he swept his saber out towards Lin Ming's waist.

But as his saber was slashing outwards he felt himself suddenly slow down. All around him, time was distorting at incredible degrees.

Time laws!?

The Black Iron boss was nearly frightened to death. As a saint race martial artist, his attainments in the Laws were nearly nothing at all. A powerful saint martial artist could use their terrifying strength to crush through the Laws and break free from the shackles of time or pierce through the void, but the Black Iron boss was far from accomplishing this.

Hu – !

Lin Ming appeared behind the Black Iron boss like ghosts and gods. His left hand grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and his right hand formed a fist that came crashing down at the Black Iron boss' spine!

"Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!"

The Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist was originally a body transformation system martial skill. And now that Lin Ming had fully opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and had also seen the threshold of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, this punch could even pulverize the void. If this fist struck someone, especially a place as frail as the spine, even a saint race martial artist wouldn't be able to withstand it!

Kacha!

With a loud cracking sound, a wild and brutal vibration force spread through the Black Iron boss' entire spine. A horrifying destructive power began to ravage his bones, marrow, and nerves!

The Black Iron boss cried out in misery, his entire body shook and his head drooped downwards. His entire spine had been ruined by Lin Ming!

Even though saint race martial artists had high regenerative abilities, this sort of wound was nearly the same as crippling them.

Even so, Lin Ming accompanied it with a Pulse Cutting Palm!

He would not allow his opponent any chance to stand back up. After all, a wound to the spine could be cured with good enough medicines. But, a wound created from the Pulse Cutting Palm would require a Great World King to spend a great deal of effort in order to concoct the correct pills to heal it. And, it was impossible for the Black Iron Ghost Triad to obtain such medicines with their abilities.

Rather, it was better to say that before they could find the necessary medicines, they would have already died a horrible death in the City of Discord.

Peng!

The Black Iron boss' spatial ring exploded. Lin Ming picked up the skull badge from the wreckage. As for the Black Iron boss himself, he dropped next to his third brother like a pile of rotten meat.

Lin Ming didn't even pause for half a step. The space beneath him shrank to an inch and he instantly crossed a hundred miles. In the next moment he had overtaken the last of the Black Iron Ghost Triad.

“Ahhhh! I'll perish with you!” The Black Iron second brother's eyes were red with rage. His entire body began to swell up like a balloon. The astral essence within him rumbled like a volcano, ready to explode at any moment!

“Self-explosion?”

Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. Some martial artists, before they died, could galvanize the entirety of their inner world, their energy, and their blood vitality to explode. This explosive attack was ten times stronger than their all-out strike. Even a martial artist that was an entire boundary higher than them would have to evade such an attack, otherwise it would be easy to be wounded.

However, this sort of martial skill was far too vicious. It was a completely suicidal attack to bring both parties down. Normally, very few martial artists would study such a martial skill. Only those deathsworn martial artist and ruffians would ever think of learning such a move.

“Brat, I may die but I will drag you down with me!” The Black Iron second brother’s face was completely distorted like a deformed monster. This wasn’t because he was angry but because the astral essence within his body was nearing the point of explosion. Blood vitality began gushing out from all over him, and his muscles, bones, and meridians were already overflowing with chaotic astral essence in a complete mess. His body resembled a large meatball, disgusting and monstrous.

Woosh! Woosh!

The Black Iron second brother’s four limbs stretched out. They suddenly turned soft as they swung towards Lin Ming like tentacles.

During the battle at the Chaotic Blood Continent, there were saint race martial artists that had used similar abilities. As a race who thoroughly cultivated the body transformation technique, they could make their bodies as hard as diamonds or as soft as noodles in order to bind their enemies.

“Blood energy lockdown!”

The Black Iron second brother bit down on the tip of his tongue and spat out a large mouthful of blood essence. This was 30-40% of his blood essence. Since he was going all-out with his life on the line, he no longer had the scruples to care about this.

As his blood essence burned, the Black Iron second brother's entire body erupted with a fog of blood. Then, Lin Ming felt his body slow down. It was like his entire bloodline was being attracted to the Black Iron second brother, wanting to leave his own body!

Under this traction of blood energy, Lin Ming felt like he had fallen into a swamp. His movements slowed down, making it hard for him to move.

This was the Black Iron second brother's so-called blood energy lockdown. Although it was an attack made by combusting his blood essence, Lin Ming could still easily work his way loose. But, in the brief moment that Lin Ming was doing so, the second brother's four limbs wrapped themselves around him.

"Now that I've got you, you are dead! No matter how strong you are, we are going to die together!"

The Black Iron second brother maniacally laughed. At the moment before his death he had fallen into madness!

Even though Lin Ming was held down by the Black Iron second brother, he still remained as calm as before. He indifferently said, "Your self-explosion trick is useless against me."

Lin Ming's ten fingers flashed as he formed hundreds and thousands of seals.

Divine Seal Art – God Forbidding Seal!

Woosh woosh woosh!

These God Forbidding Seals instantly sank into the Black Iron second brother's inflated body.

The God Forbidding Seal was the first technique listed in the Divine Seal Art. Every seal was in truth a miniature black hole. Lin Ming had once used the God Forbidding Seal to break through Frost Dream's Dreamsoul Immortal Melody and exterminate the spiritual god of faith energy that she had summoned. At that time, in terms of strength, Frost Dream was no weaker than Lin Ming, and the Laws she displayed had reached an inconceivable degree.

Now, when Lin Ming and the Black Iron second brother were compared to each other, they were on completely different levels in terms of strength and skill.

At that time, Lin Ming had forcefully blocked the spiritual god of faith energy, so what could this self-explosion skill from the Black Iron second brother hope to do against him?

Chi chi chi!

The God Forbidding Seals were like a pack of starving beasts as they wildly swallowed up the astral essence and blood vitality within the Black Iron second brother's body.

Black Hole seals originally had the ability to swallow all power. They could even swallow up the Divine Dream Law's summoned power of faith, much less something as simple as astral essence and blood vitality.

"W-what?" The Black Iron second brother's complexion changed. His body actually began to shrink and wither away. The hundreds of God Forbidding Seals that entered his body were wildly swallowing up all his energy. Currently, the Black Iron second brother's body was like a giant water bag, and these God Forbidding Seals were like hundreds of holes that constantly drained him.

"Explode! Explode! Why can't I explode!?"

The Black Iron second brother's appearance was fierce and demented. "This is impossible! Once my Saint Demon Disintegration Art starts, not even I can stop it. Just how are you doing this!?"

In just several breaths of time, the Black Iron second brother's body had shrunk to an even smaller size than his original self. Let alone exploding with energy, his astral essence and blood vitality were at pitifully low levels, making him look like he was in the last waning years of his life.

The Divine Seal Art included the Laws of Sealing and also the Laws of Swallowing. Once everything was swallowed into these miniature black holes it would naturally be thoroughly sealed away!

The astral essence and blood vitality within the Black Iron second brother's body had all been swallowed up and sealed away. Naturally, he no longer had the strength to explode his body.

"This is it, what a shame..."

Lin Ming forcefully broke through the four limbs binding him. These four broken limbs didn't leak any blood at all; the blood vitality within them had already been cleanly swallowed by the God Forbidding Seals.

"I am unwilling..." The Black Iron second brother shivered, his face white. Could there be any situation more miserable than how he was now? He couldn't escape, and the suicidal self-explosion technique he tried to use had been easily resolved. To him, this was extremely pathetic.

"You're the third one... Pulse Cutting Palm!"

Lin Ming thrust out his palm. With a light cracking sound, the Black Iron second brother's bones and meridians shattered as he fell to the floor.

Like this, the Black Iron Ghost Triad had been completely eliminated by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming took the last skull badge. Now that he had obtained three skull badges, in addition to his own, he had four. Still, he was 46 skull badges away from completing the blue soul level trial checkpoint and 96 skull badges away from completing the zenith black level checkpoint.

Although it seemed the number of skull badges for the zenith black level checkpoint was only twice that of the blue soul level checkpoint, Lin Ming knew that the difficulty was more than double, because as more time passed, obtaining skull badges would become increasingly hard.

“I should look for the remaining skull badges…”

Lin Ming glanced around. Everyone near the battlefield had already fled away without even half a shadow remaining.

A smart choice, but unfortunately… it was useless!

When Lin Ming had cut down the Black Iron Ghost Triad, he had simultaneously placed a blue soul battle spirit mark on their bodies. In this dimension realm, no matter how far they tried to run, in Lin Ming’s eyes they would be like giant beacons of light in the darkness.

Like this, the true Hunter Game could begin.

However, Lin Ming didn’t immediately hunt down these people. Instead, his figure flashed and he arrived above a field of tall grass. As he looked down, he icily said, “You’ve been watching for a long time. Come out.”

The winds rustled the high grass, but there was no sound of movement from within the field.

Lin Ming pointed his Phoenix Blood Spear downwards. On the spear point, the light of thunder and fire sizzled. “Then, we can only fight now.”

“Wait… wait…”

A deep voice echoed out. The tall grass was separated and a monster martial artist covered head to toe in green hair slowly walked out. He had an extremely ugly complexion right now.

This green-furred monster martial artist was much shorter than ordinary monster race martial artists. Standing in front of Lin Ming, he was an entire head shorter.

Chapter 1437 – One-star Asura

Chapter 1437 – One-star Asura

…

…

…

Lin Ming looked at the green furred martial artist. This martial artist looked like a monkey with lustrous green skin that shined like moss. His body was thin and unremarkable. Compared to the handsome monster youth before, this monkey-like martial artist was far less pleasing to the eye. Even so, Lin Ming felt an unusual atmosphere from him.

Lin Ming fell to the ground. The two of them were only a hundred feet away, and they had both locked tightly locked onto each other.

The monster youth's face was extremely grim. He was revolving his aura to the limit.

"You actually managed to find me…what a freak…"

This monster youth had been hiding in the tall grass from the very start. He had restrained his aura and he was also exceptionally skilled at camouflage, concealment, and sneak attacks. He had long seen Lin Ming flying in the sky, but he hadn't chased after him. Instead, he hid beneath Lin Ming and waited for the other trial challengers to arrive and circle Lin Ming.

His plan had been to use Lin Ming as bait and tempt more people to gather here. Then, once they were all exhausted from fighting each other, he would enter the fray and take all the profits.

This was the so-called ‘the mantis stalks the cicada while unaware of the bird behind’. The green furred monster youth had made the correct choice and also the wisest choice, however, his one mistake was that he never imagined Lin Ming would be this strong. This Lin Ming had exterminated the Black Iron Ghost Triad at the very start, and his ruthless and merciless tactics left one scared.

Not just that, but Lin Ming had also left a tracking mark on everyone else’s body. This green furred monster was originally a skilled assassin that specializing in concealing himself and tracking others. He naturally recognized that the tracking mark Lin Ming left behind was extremely difficult to undo thus he had remained motionless.

Even so, he had been detected by Lin Ming.

“You’ve been watching for a long time already.” Lin Ming waved the Phoenix Blood Spear. He had already noticed this green furred monster martial artist at the start but had simply been feigning ignorance.

“My concealment technique is difficult to detect for even a Holy Lord or half-step World King…how could you have such sharp perception?”

The green furred monster youth tightly clutched onto a nearly transparent weapon.

This weapon seemed to merge with the space around it, hidden in the void. If one didn’t look carefully it would be difficult to spot.

This was a dagger.

From watching this small monster martial artist fellow in front of him, Lin Ming could feel the deep killing intend hiding in his body. This monster youth was likely some sort of master assassin.

“You’re an assassin? You’re aura is quite strong, much stronger than those seven other people just now. I heard that there was a one-star Asura that participated in this trial; was it you?”

The green furred monster youth remained silent, not answering.

But, Lin Ming was certain that this green furred monster was the sole one-star Asura out of everyone that had come.

In the Asura Road, every person who possessed the title of Asura was strong in their own right. Moreover, the title itself could directly increase their strength.

A one-star Asura could increase a martial artist's strength by a small boundary.

In other words, a late Divine Lord one-star Asura would be equal to a half-step Holy Lord.

"Very good! I've long been wanting to experience just what sort of strength the title of a one-star Asura can grant you. This Hunter Game is something that I must win no matter what."

Lin Ming didn't plan on sparing anyone here. Out of the ten plus trial challengers here, he would eliminate them all one at a time, leaving no behind!

Hu – !

Behind Lin Ming, the phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared. Atop the Heretical God Tree, thunder and flame wove together as a wild energy howled through the air.

A deep blue light lit up on Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear; this was the light of a blue soul battle spirit.

"Sixth level of the Thunder and Fire Laws as well as a blue soul battle spirit...." The green furred monster youth's face darkened. If this human youth was truly at the middle Divine Transformation realm, then perhaps he was the top genius of a great race.

The monster race martial artist simply didn't have enough time to react. Lin Ming was already rushing towards him. Lin Ming's spear thrust out, causing a terrifying wave of thunder and flame to rise up.

The void shook. The winds and clouds shifted. In an instant, all the tall grass around the green furred monster youth turned into ash and even the swamp around him was scorched black.

Heavenly Dao Judgment!

Bang!

A terrifying explosion swallowed the entirety of space for ten miles. A brilliant flare lit up the heavens, becoming the only light between the heavens and the earth. The monster youth wanted to dodge, but he was caught up and twisted in this horrifying power. His flesh and blood was unable to resist the tyrannical power of thunder and fire and his entire body ignited. In the next moment, he split apart!

"Mm?"

Lin Ming was startled. This green furred monster youth was quite strong; Lin Ming didn't believe that a single strike would b e able to kill him. Moreover, when that green furred monster youth's body had blown up in the explosion of thunder and fire, Lin Ming hadn't felt his soul aura at all.

"This is...a substitute?"

This thought instantly flashed through Lin Ming's mind. At the same time, he felt a deep killing intent hone in on him. This killing intent was like a sharp needle. Although it seemed common it was incomparably sharp as if it were about to pierce through Lin Ming's protective true essence.

Without thinking, Lin Ming recklessly released grandmist energy from his inner world.

Grandmist space!

Bang!

As the heavy grandmist energy spread outwards, all space for a radius of a hundred feet turned into an impregnable fortress of absolute space. If an ordinary martial artist were to try to enter they would be directly pressed into goo by the immense pressure of the grandmist space, let alone have any chance to attack.

Ka ka ka!

The monster youth's dagger slashed out like the claws of a death god. However, after it only cut through three tiny wisps of grandmist energy the speed of his attack rapidly fell and his striking power had also mostly dissipated.

"What!?"

The monster youth was panic-stricken. And at this time, Lin Ming had already reached him.

"There is no place for you to run!"

Xiu!

A brilliant spear light enveloped the monster youth, swallowing all...

.....

.....

At this time, on the second level of Black God Fort, many martial artists were gathered. Some were meditating, some were talking, and some of them were even crowding around Dugu Li, congratulating him.

Dugu Li had an extremely high status. He was close to becoming a two-star Asura, and now that he passed the Hunter Game, his reputation had risen even further.

Just now, a Silver Snow Guard had spoken privately with Dugu Li. For this sort of situation to appear, that likely meant that the City of Discord's City Lord had extended an offer towards Dugu Li.

Because of Dugu Li's performance, the City Lord wanted him to enter the Silver Snow Corps!

Once Dugu Li became a direct subordinate of the City Lord then he would be able to receive a salary of origin energy runes every year. This was a wealth that many people were envious of!

Moreover, those from the Silver Snow Guard would be given a free residence within the City of Discord. As long as they didn't betray the City Lord or didn't accidently die somewhere, this residence would be theirs for the rest of their lives.

This was a level of treatment that many people could only long for in their dreams.

"Haha, congratulations brother Dugu Li, it seems you will become a Silver Snow Guard soon!"

"Brother Dugu Li, when you enter the City Lord Mansion in the future you must live well. Eat delicious food, drink great wine, and make sure to look after this little brother."

Many people who were acquaintances of Dugu Li began flattering him en masse. Today, Dugu Li was undoubtedly the hero. As for those other trial challengers that entered the Hunter Game, such as the Black Iron Ghosts, they were only a small entertaining interlude. People looked towards them for some lively fun, but the true attention wasn't on them.

However, no one thought that at this time, the portal leading to the Hunter Game would suddenly wildly fluctuate.

"Mm? Are some people coming out?"

“How could it be so quick? Not even an incense stick of time has passed since they entered and yet someone’s been eliminated?”

Originally, many people didn’t have much faith in the martial artists that entered the trial. Wanting to pass the checkpoint of the Hunter game was simply far too hard. Now, there was someone that came out in less than an incense stick of time. That absolutely meant that they were eliminated.

Wanting to pass the trial would normally take 14-16 hours.

“Who is it? Is it that human boy with the lowest cultivation…that is just too sad!”

“It might not be him. Sometimes, strength matters less then luck does. There are those that immediately run into some difficult beast as soon as they enter the game world, or they might have their skull badges taken away by another trial challenger and then be directly eliminated.”

Everyone looked towards the portal. Lights flashed from within the portal, then, someone’s figure was shot out.

This person fell straight to the floor like a dead dog, even tumbling for several hundred feet as they left a trail of blood.

The Silver Snow Guard’s figure flashed and he appeared right in front of this person. As soon as the person stopped tumbling, everyone’s eyes fixed onto them. This person’s entire body was wet with blood, their hair was a mess, a large hole was in their chest, and their organs were a utter mess.

“This is…”

“This is too miserable!”

In the City of Discord, there were deaths occurring all day long. The martial artists present had already been long accustomed to these sights so they weren’t surprised at all.

But, after seeing someone enter the Hunter Game in high spirits and with a smug expression, and then seeing them suddenly end up like this, the visual impact of it was very large.

“His clothes are tatters and blood is covering his face. Even his hair is matted with blood. Just who is he? Could he be that Divine Transformation realm human….”

“I recognize him, he’s the Black Iron Ghost Triad’s third brother!”

“It really is the Black Iron third brother! How could it be him!?”

“He’s hanging onto a single breath of life but all of his meridians have shattered and he’s been utterly crippled.” A martial artist said after walking up to check on the Black Iron third brother’s current state.

Looking at the Black Iron third brother’s chest, one could see a massive hole had been pierced through it and the surrounding flesh and skin had been twisted. This was enough to reveal the terrifying strength behind this strike. It could be imagined that when the Black Iron third brother had been struck, this attack had ripped through his protective astral essence and mortal body like wet paper without any resistance at all!

Out of the dozen some people that entered, there were indeed some strong individuals amongst them. However, none of them were strong enough to accomplish this and leave such heavy wounds. It was hard to imagine just what happened.

“It isn’t a beast attack; it is definitely another trial challenger. A beast wouldn’t break someone’s meridians like this.” Someone judged based on the attack technique.

Everyone looked at each other in confusion, not sure what was happening. But at this time, the light of the portal flashed again and a second person was ejected.

“Someone else is coming out!”

Everyone looked over. This second person was in an even more pathetic state then the Black Iron third child. It was like someone had pulled out his spine. This person collapsed on the floor in a puddle as if they were made of liquid meat.

“What a cruel and ruthless technique. His entire spine has been shattered!”

“This person is….mm!? The Black Iron boss!? First it was the Black Iron third brother and now it is the boss…could it be that the Black Iron Ghost Triad offended someone so they were purposefully targeted?”

“The Black Iron boss was already left in such a horrible state with a single strike. The difference in strength was far too great. This other party was truly ruthless; they had the intention of crippling him from the start!”

Chapter 1438 – Clear Out the Trash

Chapter 1438 – Clear Out the Trash

…

…

…

“These two have been crippled. The one who did this used some sort of specialized martial skill to break all their meridians and vital points. Even if they have top medicines it will be impossible for them to recover from this.”

As everyone was speaking, the portal flashed again and another person was sent tumbling out.

This was the most miserable-looking person so far.

His entire body was dried up like he had aged to the end of his years. His hair was as thin and sparse as weeds and all of his blood vitality was sucked out.

“Another one! Could this be the Black Iron Ghost Triad’s second brother!?”

“Yes, it seems it’s him.”

The Black Iron Ghost Triad brothers had each come out looking worse than the last. The Black Iron second brother’s entire body was a mess and he seemed as if he would die at any moment. There was only a tiny bit of astral essence in his body that was barely maintaining his life.

“The Black Iron second brother tried to use the Saint Demon Disintegration Art to perish together with his enemy, but for some unknown reason his technique failed and he was the one ruined instead.”

“This is too tragic. Someone must have been targeting the Black Iron Ghost Triad and was likely their personal enemy. This enemy was too strong for them and no matter if they tried to escape or if they tried a suicide attack, nothing they attempted worked.”

“The Black Iron Ghost Triad has made far too many enemies but they wouldn’t be stupid enough to offend someone so strong. Just who could it be?”

As everyone was wondering, the portal flashed for a fourth time.

There was still someone else!?

Everyone looked towards the portal in surprise. The trial had only begun a short time ago and yet people were already being eliminated one after another.

At this time, there was no blood splashing on the floor. The martial artist who was ejected from the portal wasn’t seriously injured. He was still able to walk and had a little bit of combat strength left.

But after seeing who this person was, everyone was shocked speechless.

This person was the only Asura in the dozen some trial challengers.

The one-star Asura – Viper.

He came from a sect of assassins and his nickname in the City of Discord was Viper. This was because he was similar to a viper in his actions. When he decided to kill someone, he would first hide from his prey and then make a fatal strike at the most opportune time. Even those that were stronger than he was weren’t willing to needlessly provoke him because no one wanted to be targeted every day and have to be vigilant against ambushes at all times.

But this person was actually eliminated from the trial in less than two incense sticks of time.

“Viper, you…”

Dugu Li felt this all too unbelievable. “Who defeated you?”

That green-furred monster martial artist called Viper took a deep breath. He seemed as if he didn’t want to speak about what happened, but after a moment of silence he said, “It was that Divine Transformation realm human youth. Under his hands, I wasn’t even able to last for five moves. If he didn’t show mercy towards me then perhaps I would have suffered the same fate as the Black Iron Ghost Triad…”

“Human youth, that Divine Transformation realm human youth?” Dugu Li was left dumbfounded. He couldn’t believe his own years.

A bit after Viper said these words, he turned around and strode out of Black God Fort without saying a single word more.

Everyone who was left behind had their mouths dropped open, not closing for a long time.

They never thought that four people would be continuously defeated in such a short period of time. And, the one who did so was only a middle Divine Transformation martial artist, the most improbable fellow of all…

……….

At this time, in the dimensional realm where the Hunter Game was being held, three martial artists were floating beneath the gray and dimly lit skies.

Strong winds howled through the world, carrying along the roars of wild beasts. Of these three martial artists, one was Lin Ming and the other two were the couple that had taken him for prey earlier and had wanted to take his skull badge.

Currently, the couple had an extremely ugly expression on their faces, unsightly to the extreme. Although they hadn't planned on passing the checkpoint this time, they still thought they could experience the Hunter Game and be better prepared for next time. However, they didn't imagine they would run into this dark star known as Lin Ming, causing them to be eliminated at the very start of the game. Now, those 200,000 origin energy runes were basically wasted.

"Do you want to fight, or will you withdraw yourself?"

Lin Ming calmly said. His voice exuded a great pressure on the couple.

"Che, you are ruthless enough."

The man unwillingly tossed his spatial ring with the skull badge towards Lin Ming. His wife bit her lips and also followed suit. Like this, the total number of skull badges they had was zero.

After a brief moment, this couple was directly sent out from the dimensional realm and eliminated from the game.

"Seven..."

Lin Ming whispered as he received the skull badges in his hand. He was 93 away from reaching his goal.

As Lin Ming chased the couple he had seen a great number of beasts beneath him that were considered the 'prey' of this Hunter Game. Although these prey were extremely weak, he didn't doubt that they would grow increasingly strong as he gathered more skull badges.

"There is still that monster youth as well as an imp martial artist. Their position is still within my control..."

Lin Ming closed his eyes. Then, his figure flashed as he flew dozens of miles away.

This rapid flight caused a dreadful sonic boom to follow him. The tall grass beneath him was crushed by this tremendous pressure.

"Eighth!"

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light and he extracted the Phoenix Blood Spear. Just ten miles away from him was a white-clothed monster youth – Charming.

Charming already knew that Lin Ming would reach him sooner or later. He grasped a four foot long sword, waiting for Lin Ming to come.

"You don't plan on giving up?" Lin Ming was a bit surprised. Facing his overwhelming killing intent, this Charming was still releasing a powerful fighting spirit.

"If I don't fight you then how can I be willing to give up! Demon Subduing Killing Array!"

The monster youth waved the long sword in his hands and a massive array formation appeared for several miles around him. He knew that Lin Ming had left a tracking mark in his body thus he had prepared this array formation beforehand.

This idea was quite good. Unfortunately, his opponent was Lin Ming. With a disparity of absolute strength dividing them, this array formation was meaningless.

"Grandmist space, break!"

The moment that Lin Ming rushed into the array formation, the aura of the Grandmist Great Dao erupted from his body, wildly surging outwards.

The star-heavy grandmist energy tore through the array formation's seals. Lin Ming pushed his way through!

Rumble rumble rumble!

With a horrifying explosion, the giant array formation's seals were shattered by Lin Ming.

With the protection of the array formation, the monster youth fought with Lin Ming in a fierce battle. But even though he had the advantage of the battlefield, he was barely managing to keep up with Lin Ming's onslaught.

After all, the array formation he laid down was far inferior to the profundity of the grandmist space.

After exchanging four or five moves, the monster youth was struck by Lin Ming, causing his blood vitality to tumble and make the energy within his body feel as if it wanted to explode.

And then, behind Lin Ming, the phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared. The crazy power of thunder and fire fell down in torrents, completely tearing the array formation to shreds!

Heavenly Dao Judgment!

Lin Ming's spear cut out, breaking through space.

In this moment, the monster youth knew that he had lost; the difference in strength was far too great. This wasn't something that could be made up for with a hastily laid down array formation.

He was originally confident that he could pass this trial during his first attempt, but now, he wasn't even able to see the shadow of a second skull badge. After being targeted by this dark star Lin Ming, he had been eliminated from the trial…

………

Hu – !

In Black God Fort, the light of the transmission array portal flashed once more. A dejected-looking monster youth left the transmission array. Although he wasn't injured heavily, his self-confidence had come under tremendous attack.

Lin Ming was far stronger than him and much younger than him. There was no comparing their talent.

As the gathered martial artists saw the monster youth emerge, they were left flabbergasted.

Whether it was the crippled Black Iron Ghost Triad that were on the verge of death or the only one-star Asura, Viper, all of them were more noticeable than this monster youth.

And after that monster youth came out, another person was eliminated in less than half an incense stick of time.

Like this, when the Black Iron Ghost Triad, Viper, and the couple were added together, there were now eight trial challengers that had been eliminated from the Hunter Game!

In other words, within the Hunter Game, besides Lin Ming himself, there were only two or three people left.

The game had only begun a quarter hour ago and just a bit more than two hours had passed in the game world. Yet during this time, eight people had been eliminated. This rate of elimination was far too terrifying.

“This boy cannot possibly be at the Divine Transformation realm.” Someone said. Many martial artists of the Asura Road were limited by what they could see in their own world. They simply didn’t know what levels of talent the peak genius of a race could achieve.

“He truly is at the Divine Transformation realm…” Charming said, shaking his head like he didn’t want to acknowledge this. “It is because he is at the Divine Transformation realm that he decided to eliminate everyone else when the Hunter Game started. That is because our existence there drags the game difficulty to a much higher degree and he doesn’t have the confidence to complete it at such high difficulties… of course, his goal might not just be the blue soul level checkpoint…”

As Charming spoke to here, the several martial artists around him were stunned. If his goal wasn't the blue soul level checkpoint, then, could it be... the zenith black level checkpoint?

Chapter 1439 – Golden Armor Warrior Array

Chapter 1439 – Golden Armor Warrior Array

…

…

…

Three quarter hours later, the several final trial challengers had also been eliminated from the trial by Lin Ming.

Thus, in the Hunter Game, there was only Lin Ming left.

The martial artists outside all glanced at each other. Lin Ming's methods were truly as Charming had said. He had swept out all the other trial challengers in order to reduce the difficulty of the game so that he could pass it himself.

This method seemed completely farcical because not only was every trial challenger who entered extremely strong, but finding them in the vast game world wasn't easy either.

Yet Lin Ming had accomplished this, and his actions were neat and merciless. In just several hours of time, he had managed to complete all of this.

His methods left one imagining just how he had accomplished them.

At this time, in the game world, Lin Ming already had 15 skill badges.

These skull badges had been taken from the other trial challengers. There were only 12 trial challengers to begin with, and the other three badges were from the prey that some other trial challengers had killed. Now, their hard work had benefited Lin Ming.

"It's time to hunt… this is when the true game begins."

Lin Ming licked his lips. In this dimensional realm there were all sorts of creatures. By killing them he could obtain skull badges.

He closed his eyes and let his sense spread outwards. Soon, he found the first prey.

Lin Ming's figure flashed and he vanished from where he was, rapidly flying in a new direction.

In just several breaths of time Lin Ming had flown several hundred miles. Then, he came to a halt.

"It's here."

Right beneath Lin Ming was a swamp. The grass and waters were bright and calm, without any waves at all.

Lin Ming fell down towards the surface of the swamp.

Just when Lin Ming was 40-50 feet from the water's surface, the placid water surface suddenly exploded. A 100 foot long alligator rushed out at an unbelievable speed, causing thousands of jins of water and mud to shoot up. The alligator's jaws were wide open, large enough to swallow a house. It bit down at Lin Ming.

Kacha!

The alligator's jaws snapped together, swallowing Lin Ming.

However, before it could fully swallow Lin Ming, the alligator's head exploded. Its body split apart as blood rained down.

A savage power of thunder and fire gushed out from the alligator's maw, instantly killing it. Lin Ming had used the grandmist space to protect himself, and when he attacked with the Thunder and Fire Laws, he hadn't been injured at all.

A shining skull badge fell into Lin Ming's hand. This was the reward for hunting down the alligator.

In this game world, there were only hunters and prey. Whoever was stronger was the hunter and whoever was weaker was the prey.

"These prey are really weak at the start."

Lin Ming looked at the headless alligator corpse that was twitching beneath him. He flung out a fireball and burnt it to ashes.

Soon, the headless alligator completely vanished, turning into a stream of pure energy that flowed into the swamp.

"So that's how it is. All of the beasts in this world are energy beings. They aren't illusions or material beings, but puppets made of energy. Perhaps the origin energy runes we paid to enter this trial are used to maintain the activation of the array formation.

As Lin Ming was thinking like this, his figure flashed as he flew to the next prey.

Under his incomparably powerful divine sense, none of these beasts could hide from his eyes.

There wasn't a single prey that was able to contend with Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's badge count slowly increased. From 10 to 20 to 30…

"49."

Lin Ming counted the badges. He hadn't encountered any difficulties in gathering this many badges so far.

"This is the 50th badge."

Lin Ming looked at a giant lizard in front of him. This lizard was a tad more formidable than the monsters before but it was essentially the same. It was easily cut down by Lin Ming.

According to the rules, the difficulty of the Hunter Game was originally set to the cultivation of the strongest trial challenger. This was in order to test a trial challenger's talent and not their absolute strength.

A lucky one-star Asura could already pass this checkpoint, let alone Lin Ming.

After hunting down 50 prey, the strength of the prey rose to yet another level.

"They're getting stronger."

The creatures grew increasingly strong. However, to Lin Ming, this difference was only killing them in five moves instead of three. He still easily exterminated them.

His number of badges had now reached 60.

Another two hours later, he had reached 64!

"This is easy..."

Lin Ming took a brief rest as he readied himself to kill the 65th monster.

If he continued at this speed he would soon have killed 100 prey. However, he had a feeling that before he killed the final one, there would be some event that occurred.

As Lin Ming was pondering this, the scenery around him suddenly changed!

The power of space wildly flew around him, dizzying and mystifying. The grasslands vanished as Lin Ming suddenly arrived in a spacious wilderness.

And at the same time, a pale red array formation appeared beneath Lin Ming's feet. The runes flickered and shimmered. These runes were similar to the most common god runes of the Asura Road.

“Mm… this is… an array formation?”

As this thought flashed through Lin Ming’s mind, there was a series of clanking sounds as golden-armored warriors began to appear in front of Lin Ming. These warriors wore thick suits of golden armor. Their faces could not be seen, but their aura was filled with a thick killing intent.

“Puppets?”

Lin Ming paused. He could feel that these golden-armored warriors were puppets formed from energy.

They continued to emerge all around Lin Ming. Each warrior stepped atop an array symbol. In total, there were 36 warriors.

36 warriors?

Lin Ming looked down at the skull badges in his hand. There were 64 badges and with these 36 opponents that had appeared, that just happened to add up to 100.

“So that’s how it is. Whether it was the previous prey or other trial challengers, all of them can only be considered an appetizer. No matter if I killed them with ease or with great difficulty it still wouldn’t affect the final result, because in this Hunter Game I was destined to meet these 36 golden-armored warriors at the final checkpoint. No matter how many trial challengers enter this Hunter Game, the game will control the number of skull badges, making it so that only one person is able to face these last 36 golden-armored warriors, otherwise it would have been impossible to collect 64 badges to begin with. This is the final battle here.”

Lin Ming thought. He began to sizzle with fighting spirit.

If he could kill these 36 golden-armored warriors then he would be able to pass this trial perfectly.

Lin Ming extracted the Phoenix Blood Spear, his entire body revolving with energy. He did not underestimate these new enemies. The divine god that created the Asura Road had reached an unimaginable level of martial arts cultivation. If this person were to establish a trial then the conditions for passing it must be extremely high! Even though Lin Ming was considered the number one talent of his race, he still wouldn't underestimate anything here.

"Mm? The runes that these golden-armored warriors are standing on seem to correspond to the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens? But if so, how could the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens evolve into 36 positions?"

Chapter 1440 – Gathering the Badges

Chapter 1440 – Gathering the Badges

…

…

…

Lin Ming wasn't surprised to see the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens in the final pass of this Hunter Game. In his eyes, the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens represented the peak of the universe. Besides the Divine Realm there were 32 other Heavens, but these Heavens only stood on equal ground to the Divine Realm, not dominating it. The Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens was also the highest supreme Concept formed by gathering together essence, energy, and divine. The supreme being who created the Asura Road was absolutely someone who had reached the pinnacle of this aspect.

But now, there were 36 golden-armored martial artists in front of Lin Ming, three more than he thought there would be. Even so, when everything added together it exuded an extremely harmonious feeling, as if nothing was out of balance.

Hu – !

A massive circular postcelestial dao diagram appeared beneath the 36 golden-armored warriors. At the same time, an invisible force covered Lin Ming, surrounding him.

This is… a domain?

Lin Ming's mind turned cold. This was not just a domain – it was an extremely high rank domain. This domain consisted of three different kinds of power – spirit essence, true essence, and astral essence.

These three powers perfectly fused with each other and flooded the surrounding space. At this time, the 36 golden-armored warriors split up into three groups, each group consisting of 12 of them.

For each group of 12 there was a leader, with the other 11 standing in different positions around this person. Their positions each contained profound and wonderful truths that were difficult to explain.

“This array formation diagram is extremely skillful. This should be the first threshold in the Asura Road that has a sense of difficulty.”

During his time in the Asura Road, Lin Ming could feel that this world’s checkpoints were divided into many, many ranks. A trial challenger had to complete these checkpoints one after another in order to fully complete this trial.

In the last 100 million years, only the saints’ Good Fortune Saint Son and the spiritas’ young genius girl were able to surpass 80% in completing these checkpoints.

And now, this trial challenger game in front of Lin Ming was definitely the first checkpoint that branched out from the previous difficulty. Lin Ming absolutely had to complete this in the most perfect manner he could.

As Lin Ming was thinking this, the 36 golden-armored warriors began to move.

They attacked together. With 12 people to a group, their attacks gathered into three torrential currents that flooded towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming revolved the energy within his body. The grandmist energy from his inner world flooded outwards.

Grandmist space!

Hah – !

A heavy and boundless aura covered the void. As those raging currents of energy entered the grandmist space they were immediately weakened by the heavy grandmist energy.

By the time these attacks reached Lin Ming they had less than a third of their original strength. Basically, they weren't able to pose a threat to Lin Ming.

"Break!"

Spear light swept out. These three strengths were crushed by Lin Ming's azure spear light with overwhelming force!

At the same time, Lin Ming stepped forwards, hurtling straight into one of the groups of golden-armored warriors!

This group of golden-armored warriors were essence gathering system martial artists.

Lin Ming was well aware of the balance within this grand array of 36 golden-armored warriors. As long as he could kill any one of these warriors, he would be able to break the perfection of the array formation and they would no longer be able to pose a threat to him.

And of these three great cultivation systems, the one Lin Ming was most familiar with and the one that humanity excelled in the most was the essence gathering system. Thus, he didn't fear that his opponent was skilled in the essence gathering system. If his opponent used the Laws, he could use his own Laws to counter. Attacking the group of essence gathering system warriors was the easiest as well as fastest route.

As for the body transformation system warriors, their defensive ability was formidable. Even three rounds of attacks might not result in any true damage done to them. As for the soul forging system warriors, there was no need to speak of them. Their mysterious and strange soul attacks held too many unknown variables for Lin Ming.

Hah – !

The phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared behind Lin Ming. The massive Heretical God Tree rose straight into the skies. The wild power of thunder and fire raged down it, pouring into Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear. For a time, a purple and red sun seemed to appear within the void.

Lin Ming thrust his spear out and a divine light swept over the world.

Lin Ming's attack was far too strong. Even though 12 golden-armored warriors united together, they still found it difficult to withstand the impact of this spear strike. Lin Ming's attack had disrupted their formation!

Bang!

The postcelestial array diagram beneath the 12 golden-armored warriors paled. A bright light cut through Lin Ming's eyes. This was his chance!

Just as Lin Ming was about to attack them, the other 24 golden-armored warriors came hurtling towards him. If he were to turn to deal with them then the brief advantage he gained from his attack just now would be lost!

Lin Ming didn't plan to let his opponents have any time to recover. He shouted out loud, galvanizing the grandmist space to the peak. At the same time, he opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, increasing his defensive power to the limit. He actually planned to forcefully resist the attacks of the two other groups of golden-armored warriors and then quickly exterminate the essence gathering system group. If he could do this then their array formation would be broken!

Ka ka ka!

Two beams of energy fiercely collided with the grandmist space. This placed a great pressure on Lin Ming, but he didn't care at all. Instead, he thrust out his spear.

Three Essences As One, Eternal Darkness!

In that instant, essence, energy, and divine strength fused within Lin Ming. The Phoenix Blood Spear emitted a clarion cry as an absolute dark black hole seed was shot out.

A black hole seed could absorb all matter and energy. Now that Lin Ming was using the grandmist space to suppress the movements of the 12 golden-armored warriors in front of him, he could only use this strike.

Bang!

A horrifying explosion of energy rang out. The black hole seed caused a massive black vortex to appear. Two golden-armored warriors were caught up in this vortex and were completely split up from the postcelestial dao diagram beneath their feet.

Then, their bodies were sucked into that twisting black vortex and torn into pieces, instantly dying!

Woosh! Woosh!

Two skull badges dropped into Lin Ming's hands. He took a deep breath. In that attack just now he had been forced to make a quick decision and as a result he had withstood the strikes of two other attacks, leaving him with some wounds. But to his powerful mortal body, this degree of injury wasn't anything at all.

"It's over."

Now that two of the 36 golden-armored warriors were gone, the array formation was no longer in balance. The remaining golden-armored warriors were not Lin Ming's match.

Everything else was simply a matter of time.

Lin Ming suppressed the slightly restless energy and blood within himself. He grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and hurtled forwards like a tiger rushing into a flock of sheep. An essence gathering system golden-warrior bore the brunt of this attack and was sent flying away by Lin Ming, losing all contact with the postcelestial dao diagram beneath him.

The golden-armored warrior tried to use the Space Laws to return to his position in the array diagram, but Lin Ming's Space Laws were even more profound. In just a split second, he immediately teleported behind that golden-armored warrior and stabbed his spear through his chest, immediately killing him!

Lin Ming didn't stop here. He swept out his spear and shattered the neck of a golden-armored warrior behind him.

And at this time, other golden-armored warriors began to slowly encircle Lin Ming. However, now that they had lost the balance of their perfect array formation, they were like tigers without fangs in front of Lin Ming, unable to pose any threat.

Two more golden-armored warriors were exploded into pieces by Lin Ming's Heavenly Dao Judgment!

The more warriors that died, the less pressure he faced and the faster he killed them.

In a quarter hour, all 36 golden-armored warriors were annihilated by Lin Ming, turning into 36 skull badges that fell into his hands.

Like this, he had perfectly finished this trial!

"It's done. 100 skull badges. According to the difficulty of this trial, Dragon Fang and Hang Chi should also be able to complete it. They would only need to spend some effort. Even for someone a bit weaker, they could also complete it with a bit of luck. As long as they kill one person then everything would be much easier."

Lin Ming appraised the difficulty of this trial. In order to finish it, one would need to be a top genius of their race. However, they didn't need to be the most extreme of geniuses.

"Now that it's over I should leave."

As Lin Ming was thinking of exiting, the space in front of him suddenly twisted. A series of god runes began to appear in front of him.

Within Lin Ming's mind, a mental sound transmission spoke to him. "You have shattered the golden-armored warriors within 300 breaths of time. Due to this, you may choose to participate in the second challenge or leave the world of the Hunter Game."

"Another challenge?"

Lin Ming was startled. He could challenge this trial a second time?

That battle right now could be said to be very easy for Lin Ming. When he killed those 36 warriors he had done it in less than 300 breaths of time. It had only taken around eight or nine breaths of time to kill each one of them.

If he participated in the second challenge, just what would he win if he passed? Would it be additional rewards? What kind of rewards?

According to the information he knew from the start, the zenith black level drawing he gained from having 100 skull badges was the highest reward available.

Lin Ming was a bit puzzled, but without a doubt, his choice was to participate in the next challenge!

After Lin Ming made his choice, the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy began to surge all around him. At the same time, a massive number of runes fell down from the clouds until they linked into a single stream. It was hard to estimate how many there were.

Lin Ming took a closer look. These runes were origin energy runes, the currency of the Asura Road.

Whether it was the fee to enter the Hunter Game trial or purchasing mission badges, one needed origin energy runes. And now, these origin energy runes tumbled down from the sky in a massive deluge and then burned in the air.

Hu – Hu – Hu –

Brilliant flames burned. These were flames formed by heaven and earth origin energy. Every breath of time, over a thousand origin energy runes were burnt up. The horrifying conflagration burned through the skies.

“There are so many origin energy runes being burned. It seems my previous guess was right. The origin energy runes that we pay are indeed used to maintain the revolution of the Asura Road’s array formations. If this array formation burns so many of these runes then it’s hard to say just how powerful it will become!”

Without a doubt, the difficulty of the challenge would rise to an all new level. Perhaps even Hang Chi and Dragon Fang wouldn’t be able to complete this challenge.

“Is this a test aimed at extreme geniuses? I wonder whether or not the Good Fortune Saint Son experienced this sort of challenge? What was his result?” Lin Ming’s lips curved up in a smile. The more difficult a challenge was, the more it caused his blood to boil over with fighting spirit.

And at this time, in the outside world, only two to four hours had passed.

In the past, martial artists would normally need 14 to 16 hours to gather the 50 mission badges needed for the blue soul level reward. However, in reaching the final checkpoint, Lin Ming had only used two to four hours.

To have such a horrifying speed was because of his overwhelming strength and his sharp and powerful divine sense.

Chapter 1441 – Weakness

Chapter 1441 – Weakness

…

…

…

36 warriors appeared in front of Lin Ming once more. But this time, they were taller and larger, each of them around 10 feet high. Their golden armor was also a darker, mellower hue, and the strength percolating in their bodies had increased by several times.

Their cultivation was similar to Lin Ming's, each of them equal to a middle Divine Transformation human martial artist. Not just that, but they had a solid foundation and their blood vitality was booming. If any one of them were chosen, they could have joined the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting and easily advanced into the top 20 spots of the finals.

If these characters were alone then Lin Ming could easily defeat them, even instantly kill them.

But when 36 of them were gathered together to form a large battle array formation, their combat strength increased by many times over. This caused Lin Ming to feel that this situation was becoming increasingly tricky.

Origin energy runes continued to cascade from the skies, burning down all around him.

Then, suddenly, Lin Ming hurtled forwards, the Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands thrusting outwards.

He didn’t wait for these 36 golden-armored warriors to suck up all the power from the burning origin energy runes. He immediately attacked, his target still the same essence gathering system warriors.

The phantom of the Heretical God Tree reappeared behind him. The power of thunder and fire wove together – this first attack was one of his killing moves, Heavenly Dao Judgment!

Spear light split through the void, emitting a horrifying screeching sound. A roiling wave of thunder and fire rolled up all around him, swept around by his spear, forming a massive red and purple vortex as it shot towards a golden-armored warrior!

This golden-armored warrior did not hurry at all. The array diagram beneath his feet began to spin as power poured into his body. At the same time, the 11 other golden-armored warriors behind him stepped forwards, their hands reaching towards the first golden-armored warrior’s back as they pooled their strength together to resist Lin Ming’s spear strike!

Bang!

A crazy collision rang out. The earth shook and cracked, causing countless stones to fly into the skies before they were dissolved into powder by the chaotic energy.

By coordinating their strength, the 12 golden-armored warriors forcefully resisted Lin Ming’s attack.

As Lin Ming saw this, his mind turned cold. He didn’t think it was strange that his Heavenly Dao Judgment wouldn’t be able to break through the array formation; how could this second, stronger version be so easily broken?

But for just 12 golden-armored warriors to resist his attack, this caused a deep sense of crisis to rise in Lin Ming’s heart.

Hu – hu – hu –

At this time, Lin Ming felt the wind behind him begin to howl, killing intent rising from all around him. The other two groups of golden-armored warriors attacked Lin Ming together.

The array diagram sparkled beneath their feet as countless Law runes spun around. Lin Ming grimaced. If he had to receive both of these attacks at once then it would be extremely hard.

The power of space distorted beneath his feet. He instantly used the Space Laws, wanting to teleport away from here.

But at this time, a terrifying power covered him. Lin Ming felt the power of space around him be immediately locked down, rending his Space Laws useless!

“What?”

Lin Ming was surprised. He immediately realised that this strength was the domain he had felt before!

During the first battle this domain had also existed. But, it was completely suppressed by Lin Ming’s grandmist space and was unable to be used.

But during this second battle, this domain was far stronger than before. Even though Lin Ming was using the grandmist space, he still wasn’t able to completely nullify it.

In this critical moment, this domain had bound Lin Ming’s ability to flee through space.

“Damn!”

Seeing two terrifying beams of strength hurtle towards him, Lin Ming grit his teeth and erupted his energy to the limit. The Eight Inner Gates were opened all at once and he used the grandmist space to protect his body. For a time, Lin Ming’s body emitted an endless string of popping explosions as the phantom of an Azure Dragon materialized behind him.

With a loud shout, Lin Ming smashed out with his spear, forcefully resisting these two attacks!

Bang!

The void shook, nearly collapsing. Even the star-heavy grandmist energy was torn apart by the terrifying energy. In the final moment, Lin Ming had used the Phoenix Blood Spear to defend against one attack. Then, he used a barrier of protective astral essence and his powerful body granted by the Eight Inner Hidden Gates to withstand the other!

Without any fancy collision, Lin Ming was sent flying hundreds of feet away. Blood tumbled within him, his armor was torn apart, and he was injured all over!

“What a strong attack!”

Lin Ming wiped the blood from the corners of his lips. By relying on his formidable mortal body he had only received minor wounds in that strike just now. But if this were to continue, he simply wouldn’t be a match for the 36 golden-armored warriors.

These small wounds would slowly accumulate over time as his physical strength was exhausted.

As for the golden-armored warriors and their array formation, the origin energy runes burning all around them would constantly supply them with additional energy. Perhaps they could never be exhausted. If he couldn’t break through their formation then no matter how tenacious Lin Ming was or how fast he restored himself, he still wouldn’t be able to avoid defeat.

“This array formation must have a weakness.”

This thought flashed through Lin Ming’s mind. His own Heavenly Dao Judgment had already been blocked by just one group of the golden-armored warriors.

Lin Ming was confident that although his striking power might not be the absolute highest amongst all the top young geniuses of the various races, it was close to that level. If even his attacks didn't have any effect, just what could anyone else do?

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

The 36 golden-armored warriors attacked once more. And at this time, Lin Ming didn't meet them in a head-on collision. He began to distance himself, relying on his speed to avoid them. As long as he didn't fall into their domain then it wouldn't be a problem for him to use his Space Laws to avoid their attacks.

Before he found out the method to break their array formation, Lin Ming didn't want to waste any more strength.

Like this, the trial had turned into a protracted battle.

And at this time, in the outside world, a full four hours had passed.

Even if Lin Ming's final battle was in a deadlock, he still used far less time than the other martial artists had.

Lin Ming wasn't in a hurry. As he dodged, he began to adjust his breathing and frequency at which he absorbed heaven and earth origin energy, reaching a balance between consumption and replenishment.

Slowly, Lin Ming discovered that although these 36 golden-armored warriors belonged to the three great cultivation systems of essence, energy, and divine, there were still different cultivation methods used between all of them.

Amongst the body transformation technique group, there was the saint race's body transformation technique, the Nine Saint Transformations, the human race's body transformation technique, the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, and also the monster race's body transformation technique, Nirvanic Rebirth.

Although the 12 body transformation technique warriors each belonged to a different race, there were differences among each one of them.

Their cultivation methods were each a single one of the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens. As for these puppets' attacks, they matched with the postcelestial dao diagram beneath their feet, complementing each other in an impregnable and impeccable manner.

"What wonderful skills. To form this type of array, perhaps the one who did so was the supreme elder who created the Asura Road. They must have mastered 33 types of cultivation Laws, or perhaps… it was 36 kinds!"

Lin Ming focused his eyes on the leaders of the three groups of golden-armored warriors. His original assumption had been that the saints, humans, and spiritas were the strongest of the three great system thus they had to be the leaders. But now, it seemed that he was wrong.

The leader of the body transformation system warriors was not a saint and the leader of the essence gathering system warriors was not a human. The three leaders among the 36 golden-armored warriors were an even purer form of energy than the rest.

This was particularly true for the golden-armored warrior that led the soul forging system group. Lin Ming could feel a familiar aura from him…

It seemed as if this were… mm?

Lin Ming was shocked. This aura actually seemed similar to the Magic Cube!

This thought flashed through Lin Ming's mind. Then, after several more breaths of time, he finally understood. The reason that the golden-armored warrior array formation was composed of 36 individuals and not 33 individuals was because not only did this array formation represent the foundation of the 33 Layered Heavens, but also the Magic Cube, Demon Bead, and the mysterious Purple Card that he had yet to hear any news about.

Within the 33 Layered Heavens, essence, energy, and divine each corresponded to 11 different Heavens. Moreover, there was a divine object that corresponded to them too. These were the Magic Cube, Demon Bead, and Purple Card. According to what Divine Dream had said, the Magic Cube, Demon Bead, and Purple Card each represented a single layered heaven, a universe unto itself.

It was only that these divine objects had yet to evolve. They were considered 'universe seeds'!

If these three divine objects could evolve into a true universe, then there might be 36 Layered Heavens instead. This was the principle which this array formation came from.

Thus, the three leading warriors of the three groups did not belong to any race, but were instead pure energy bodies.

After realizing all of this and looking at the array formation of the 36 golden-armored warriors once more, Lin Ming suddenly had an inspiration. If he wasn't wrong, then even though these three leading warriors were the strongest points of the array formation, they were also where its weakness lay.

As long as he could block these three warriors from interacting with the other 33 warriors, then Lin Ming would only need a single breath of time.

After realizing this, Lin Ming's blood began to boil over with fighting spirit.

After he dodged several continuous attacks, he then hurtled himself towards these three groups.

This time, the one he targeted was the not essence gathering system group, but the soul forging group! This was also the group which resonated with the Magic Cube!

Amongst the three groups of golden-armored warriors, Lin Ming was most familiar with the essence gathering system. But in terms of only the leader, Lin Ming's familiarity with the Magic Cube had reached the same as his own flesh and blood.

"God Forbidding Seal!"

In just a fraction of an instant, Lin Ming formed thousands of seals!

The black hole seed was summoned by Lin Ming. The surrounding heaven and earth origin energy began to rush towards him, forming a dark gray vortex. Tens of thousands of God Forbidding Seals began hurtling towards the 12 warriors of the soul forging system!

Lin Ming no longer attacked the golden-armored warriors themselves but the energy connections between them. He could already see that they were freely exchanging energy through the array diagram beneath their feet. As long as he could sunder this connection, he could instantly strike down the leader of the soul forging system warriors.

"Seal!"

The God Forbidding Seals were in essence miniature black holes. They had the ability to swallow all and seal away all. For a time, countless energy routes were severed between the golden-armored warriors!

But these golden-armored warriors clearly had some sort of wisdom. They seemed to understand Lin Ming's plan and began to immediately attack the God Forbidding Seals, wanting to destroy them all.

At the same time, the other two groups of golden-armored warriors also attacked Lin Ming!

Lin Ming ignored them all. From within his inner world, a gray stone door appeared.

This stone door was originally the size of a book, but as it appeared it began to rapidly increase in size. Above the stone door, a series of mystical patterns and runes appeared, circulating all around it as if they contained the most ancient of secrets.

This was the Primordius Gate.

“Suppression!” Lin Ming shouted out loud. With a loud explosive sound, the massive Primordius Gate came slamming down, cutting off the energy connections and also resisting a great number of attacks.

The attacks of the many golden-armored warriors were originally extremely fierce and sharp. But as these attacks struck the Primordius Gate they were like hail striking a steel plate, unable to do anything at all.

At the same time, Lin Ming attacked. His target was the leader of the soul forging system warriors!

Chapter 1442 – Clearing the Trial

Chapter 1442 – Clearing the Trial

…

…

…

Lin Ming's attack was deliberately and carefully planned. He poured in all of his strength, even opening the Gate of Life and burning his blood essence without hesitation. With the Gate of Life as a foundation he could freely burn a part of his blood essence without permanent loss. However, this only lasted for a short period of time, and after he did this he wouldn't be able to use it for a long time afterwards, otherwise he would permanently damage himself.

Thus, Lin Ming wouldn't use this move unless he had to. And now, Lin Ming had used this ability to allow his striking power to reach the limit, in order to achieve a one-shot kill!

He only had one chance to attack. This was because he could feel that these golden-armored warriors had a mind of their own. After one defeat, they would be on guard for his attack and wouldn't fall for it a second time.

Ca!

Seven or eight energy channels were disrupted by the God Forbidding Seals!

And the Primordius Gate also blocked the attacks of the other two groups of golden-armored warriors.

Like this, the golden-armored warrior leader in front of him fell into an isolated state, cut off from most others. There was less than a handful of other golden-armored warriors that were able to help him.

Beneath the golden-armored warrior leader's helmet, a flash of cold brilliance shined from his eyes. With a howling sound, a viridian soul sword shot out from between his eyebrows!

This soul sword seemed to consume a great deal of the golden-armored warrior leader's strength. After bringing forth this soul sword his eyes dimmed downed to near darkness.

At the same time, Lin Ming had already summoned the black hole seed from within his inner world. In that instant, all of the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy began crazily gathering towards this black hole seed!

Even the origin energy runes that were providing power to the array formation were sucked into the black hole seed.

Eternal Darkness!

Ka ka ka ka!

The earth ruptured as countless rocks were swept up by wild waves of energy, shooting into the skies. This was the strongest attack Lin Ming could currently use.

Underneath the impact of this tyrannical energy, the Magic Cube within Lin Ming's body began to faintly stir.

After reaching the Divine Transformation realm Lin Ming had gained the ability to partially activate the Magic Cube. Now, as he used Eternal Darkness, he also began to activate the Magic Cube's power!

Lin Ming's target was the soul forging system warrior, and the Magic Cube was the ultimate nemesis of all souls and minds!

The Magic Cube itself didn't appear, but the aura that belonged to it spread out, covering the 12 golden-armored warriors!

The golden-armored warrior leader suddenly shook and the soul sword that he had shot towards Lin Ming exploded into flashing shards before vanishing. Not just that, but the golden-armored warrior seemed to suffer some sort of massive backlash as the light that surrounded its body began to wildly fluctuate.

Without the support of its fellow warriors, the golden-armored warrior leader was far weaker than Lin Ming, much less now that Lin Ming was also using the Magic Cube!

"It's over!"

Lin Ming coldly shouted. The Phoenix Blood Spear as well as the black hole seed came crashing down.

Peng!

With a loud explosion, the golden-armored warrior shattered into countless fragments. And these fragments were also swept up by the black hole seed, disappearing from sight!

He had broken through!

Lin Ming let out a long breath. Now that he had struck down that golden-armored warrior, it basically meant he had thoroughly won and completed this trial.

Just as Lin Ming was about to follow up his attacks, he suddenly paused. After the black hole seed absorbed all those broken light fragments, those light fragments actually gathered together to form deep blue god runes that separated from the black hole seed, slowly spinning in the air.

A black hole had infinite gravitational strength; it was even able to swallow light. At a black hole singularity, space and time also came to a terminal end. It could be said that the Black Hole Laws dominated these Laws.

But, these blue god runes calmly floated out from the black hole seed. This entire scene appeared simple and easy, as if the massive gravitational force of the black hole seed didn't even exist.

This caused Lin Ming to suck in a cold breath of air. He had no idea what boundary the senior who created the Asura Road had reached, but even after billions of years or tens of billions of years, the god runes he casually left behind as a legacy actually contained such wonderful principles behind them.

However, he had no time to probe these Laws further. The battle had still not ended!

Lin Ming revolved his strength to the limit, stimulating the Magic Cube once more as he attacked the soul forging system warriors!

Now that they had lost their leader, the remaining 11 golden-armored warriors were in a state of disorganized chaos.

At this time, the power of Lin Ming's burnt blood essence had yet to disappear. With the Magic Cube supporting him, he was like a tiger amongst a flock of sheep!

The Phoenix Blood Spear swept out as the black hole seed recklessly swallowed all energy.

One by one, the golden-armored warriors were swept up in his attacks and shattered into fragments. These fragments of light slowly gathered, forming god runes.

These god runes were all blue, meaning they were blue soul level god runes.

The second group of golden-armored warriors was much stronger than the first. Even though their array formation was torn apart, their individual strength couldn't be looked down upon.

Lin Ming opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates once more. With the power of the black hole seed he was able to engage in a fierce melee with them. He went on a complete offensive barrage, resisting the attacks of the other golden-armored warriors with his body. Every time he attacked he would aim for their weakest point, instantly killing them!

Less and less golden-armored warriors remained, and more and more god runes floated in the air.

Most of the names of these god runes had a prefix – the 33 Layered Heavens.

"33 Layered Heavens' Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!"

"33 Layered Heavens' Nine Divine Shifts!"

"33 Layered Heavens' Nirvanic Rebirth!"

"33 Layered Heavens' Nine Revolution Rebirth!"

.....

Each Concept condensed into a single rune. After Lin Ming killed off the remaining golden-armored warriors, all of them had become runes!

There were a total of 36 runes.

These 36 runes were all blue in color. They slowly floated in the air before dividing into two groups.

One group had 33 runes, and one group had three runes.

These two groups of runes began to fuse together in the sky, condensing into their final rune forms.

And the center of these runes were a deep black-red color. In other words, they were zenith black runes!

This was just like Soulwhite had said. When a complete set of runes combined together, they could sometimes rise to an even higher level.

These two runes, without any indication, began to fall down towards Lin Ming.

Woosh! Woosh!

The runes entered Lin Ming's body without him resisting at all. He allowed it to freely occur. The moment that these runes fused into his flesh and blood, Lin Ming felt as if his soul was touched. Then, the complete information of these two god runes was transmitted to his mind.

These two runes were respectively called the Protection of God and the Blessing of God.

The former came about by fusing 33 runes together. This god rune could directly increase a martial artist's combat strength.

As for the latter, its function was quite unique. It didn't increase one's combat strength, but its usefulness far surpassed the first god rune. This second god rune was used to increase the height of one's destiny. If one possessed it, then one could turn the dangers of mystic realms into fortunes, turning bad luck into good.

"This Blessing of God..."

As Lin Ming realized what the use of this Blessing of God was, his thoughts stirred. He had some faint associations in his mind...

Chapter 1443 – Drawing

Chapter 1443 – Drawing

…

…

…

At this time, outside of the game world, over four hours had passed since Lin Ming had entered the dimensional realm.

Normally, a martial artist would have to spend 14-16 hours to gather the 50 skull badges needed for the blue soul level reward. This was mainly because no one could be like Lin Ming and simultaneously possess an extremely powerful sense and combat strength. In the broad grasslands he was able to rapidly find the hiding prey and kill them.

"Four hours… someone said that this human youth's goal was the zenith black level reward. What do you think?"

Currently, no one doubted that Lin Ming would be able to easily complete the blue soul level checkpoint. After all, that was just how strong Lin Ming was. He had even easily defeated a one-star Asura. Moreover, Lin Ming's cultivation had been the lowest of all the trial challengers that entered, so the prey he had to face would be weaker.

In this sort of situation, it could be said that gathering the 50 skull badges for the blue soul level reward was as easy as taking a stroll through the park, with absolutely no difficulties at all.

If the people present had to sum it up, they were simply on a completely different level from Lin Ming.

As for the zenith black level reward, that degree of difficulty caused all the martial artists present to feel daunted.

In the City of Discord, let alone collecting a hundred badges to obtain a zenith black level reward, even collecting 60 or 70 badges was a rarity that had almost never occurred.

Throughout the entire history of this city, there might not be anyone who had accomplished that.

Perhaps in ancient times there were some people that had obtained a hundred skull badges in the City of Discord, but that sort of knowledge was long lost in the dust of time. No one was able to keep records that far back.

No one knew just what Lin Ming would achieve, but at this time, the transmission array portal suddenly shimmered.

Someone was coming out.

Besides Lin Ming, everyone else had been eliminated. If there was someone coming out then it could only be Lin Ming.

“How could this be… four hours, it was that fast?”

In the opinions of these people, taking four hours to complete the zenith black level mission reward was impossible. Even completing the blue soul level checkpoint was impossible in such a short time.

“That human boy was defeated?”

“Impossible! He is so strong that he can complete that blue soul level checkpoint even if his eyes are closed. If he used only four hours, that is simply because he is too strong, not because he was unable to complete the checkpoint. It’s just that with only four hours, obtaining the zenith black level reward is unlikely…”

No one knew just what Lin Ming had experienced in the game world. The portal flashed once more and then Lin Ming appeared.

He didn't have any visible wounds or injuries. Or, perhaps he was wounded but had already recovered in the game world. In the slaughter-filled Asura Road, no one wanted to be injured with enemies all around.

The guards of the Silver Snow Corps brought forth the Wheel of Destiny.

The simple and heavy metal disc was set down in front of Lin Ming. It looked stained and ancient, revealing an aura that seemed to come from the beginning of time.

"Trial challenger, you may place the skull badges you obtained within the Wheel of Destiny to obtain the corresponding rewards. 50 skill badges correspond to a blue soul level reward and 100 skull badges correspond to a zenith black level reward."

As the Silver Snow Guard spoke, he looked curiously towards Lin Ming. He too was looking forwards to seeing just how many skull badges Lin Ming had obtained.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. He was thinking to somehow conceal the fact that he won the zenith black level drawing reward, but with the method to get the reward the way it was, he was doomed to be unable to hide it.

In the City of Discord, being too high profile wasn't a good thing. This was especially true if it was known he had obtained something like a zenith black level reward. After all, this was bound to arouse the jealousy of others and even bring life-threatening dangers onto himself. In the City of Discord there were always those that were stronger, for instance, Holy Lord level martial artists.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and placed all the badges in the Wheel of Destiny. His speed was extremely fast, and along with him blocking the view of his hands, no one was able to see how many skull badges he put in.

"How many were there?"

"I couldn't see it but I feel… there were more than 50…"

If it was more than 50 but less than 100, then the reward was still the same as obtaining 50, a blue soul level reward.

"You may draw."

A Silver Snow Guard said from not too far away.

Lin Ming had completed two checkpoints at once, so he could draw twice. Now, he began his first drawing.

This was also the blue soul level drawing. At Lin Ming's level, a blue soul level drawing reward wasn't too valuable to him. He was aiming towards completing over 90% of the Asura Road's smelting trial. To him, only the second drawing mattered.

Lin Ming stood before the Wheel of Destiny. Everyone's eyes were locked onto him. The legends said that this Wheel of Destiny was an artifact created by the Asura Road Master himself. It grasped the destiny of the world and controlled strange and profound Laws.

According to a trial challenger's destiny, three types of drawings were possible.

The worst drawing choice was to obtain a blue soul level mission badge. The next possibility was to obtain a rare blue soul level god rune. As for the best reward, that was also the most mysterious. That was to draw 'Destiny'. In these last several millions of years, no one had ever managed to do this.

After two-star and three-star Asuras made their drawing, even they were unable to draw the third possibility. The most they obtained was a rare blue soul level rune. This was already an extremely good result.

Lin Ming didn't hesitate in front of the Wheel of Destiny. He poured his true essence into it and started his drawing.

The Wheel of Destiny quickly spun as the runes atop it lit up one at a time. No one knew just where it would stop.

“It’s begun!”

“What great resolve. A normal person would take several deep breaths and pray to the heavens before starting their draw. After all, a person can only obtain a reward once in their lifetime in the Hunter Game, so how could they not avoid all chances of being careless. But, this human youth didn’t even bat an eye before he began his drawing.”

“Let’s see what he pulls out.”

Everyone’s eyes were glued to the Wheel of Destiny. It spun faster and faster, reaching incredible speeds. Then, it slowly decelerated. The lights lit up over and over, and the final shining rune would indicate just what Lin Ming would obtain.

After 10 breaths of time, the Wheel of Destiny stopping spinning. The final several runes shimmered, dimming down and leaving behind a single shining dagger rune.

“The Blood Dripping Dagger, that is… the first possibility, a mission badge!”

Many people present had already thoroughly researched the Wheel of Destiny. They knew what rewards every rune on the Wheel of Destiny represented.

The first possibility was a mission badge. It was also the worst possibility.

“This human, he is so strong and yet he draws out this garbage?”

“His luck is too bad. In the legends, the drawing that the Wheel of Destiny lands on is related to that person’s destiny. This human youth is so incredibly talented and yet he gets the worst choice. Does he not have any destiny upon him?”

“He made such a ridiculous scene but his final result was the same as Lord Dugu Li’s. Hilarious. I originally thought that at the worst he would draw the second possibility, or perhaps even the third.”

Many people came here to watch because they wanted to see a different result. After all, it was natural to want to personally witness something that only occurred every several thousand years.

But in the end, what Lin Ming drew was the first possibility. He was no different from the many other trial challengers that had come before him.

This left everyone a tad disappointed, but there were also many people gloating over Lin Ming's drawing. As these people thought that even a peak genius drew something similar to them, their mood was much happier.

However, at this moment, something occurred that left them all dumbfounded.

After Lin Ming completed his first drawing, without any delay at all, he poured all of his energy into the Wheel of Destiny and directly began his second drawing!

What Lin Ming poured into the Wheel of Destiny was no longer just true essence, but true essence, astral essence, and spirit essence, all as one. This was also called the power of divinity!

"The second drawing!"

"Heavens! He really completed the zenith black level checkpoint!"

"It was just four hours; this is too abnormal!"

Before this, there were some people who speculated that no matter how talented Lin Ming was, it would be impossible for him to pass the zenith black level reward challenge. After all, besides the most ancient of times, in the last several hundred million years of the City of Discord's history, there had never been a person who appeared that was able to obtain the zenith black level reward. This caused everyone to subconsciously think that no matter what happened, Lin Ming would never succeed.

But now, all of them watched as the Wheel of Destiny began to spin around, as if it was screaming to them that all their previous thoughts were wrong.

The Wheel of Destiny rapidly spun, yet Lin Ming maintained his calm. But in this moment, within his flesh and blood, there was a god rune that was faintly shimmering.

This was one of the two god runes that Lin Ming had obtained in the world of the Hunter Game after he defeated the 36 golden-armored warriors for a second time – the Blessing of God.

This was a zenith black level rune. With it, he could directly increase his own destiny! In a crucial life or death moment, or perhaps in the danger zones of a mystic realm, he could rely on this rune to turn bad luck into good, saving himself from the precipice of doom.

However, Lin Ming also believed that no matter how wonderful this Blessing of God was, it could not increase his destiny infinitely.

Destiny was illusory and ephemeral. Empyreans, and even True Divinities, could not fully unravel it. But, there was something that everyone knew, and that was that destiny was not endless, whether it was for a sect, a dynasty, or even an unrivalled martial arts master. If they freely spent their destiny then they would eventually overdraw it and it would slowly exhaust itself.

This was what others meant when they said that one's destiny was over, that their days had come to an end.

Destiny needed to be accumulated. For a sect to raise a peak supreme elder, that could take hundreds of thousands or even millions of years of accumulated destiny. And once they succeeded, this would also greatly exhaust their destiny. Perhaps after that extreme supreme elder died, the sect would begin to decline. This was the so-called decline after the flourish; what goes up, must eventually come down.

Whether it was a sect or a dynasty, this sort of phenomenon would occur because their destiny was exhausted.

When Lin Ming made his first drawing, not only did he suppress the power of the Blessing of God, but he also only activated the Wheel of Destiny with true essence. His goal was to not pull out anything good.

But this time, he pushed the Blessing of God to the limit and activated the spinning of the Wheel of Destiny with his strongest energy – Three Essences as One.

He believed that since the Asura Road Master also cultivated the Concept of the 33 Layered Heavens, then using the combined power of essence, energy, and divine would allow him to obtain the approval of the Wheel of Destiny much more easily.

In addition, there was the Blessing of God that he had obtained from the Hunter Game. This sort of god rune might have been especially left in there for this exact drawing. Lin Ming had sacrificed his first reward in order to hedge everything he had on this second drawing to obtain the best result he could.

The Wheel of Destiny rapidly spun. The shining runes atop the disc had already gathered into dazzling beams of light…

Chapter 1444 – One’s Talent Arouses the Envy of Others

Chapter 1444 – One’s Talent Arouses the Envy of Others

…

…

…

As Lin Ming steadily stared at the spinning Wheel of Destiny, he also kept his guard up at full alert.

At the start, no one believed that Lin Ming would be able to complete the zenith black level mission. They only thought that his talent was a bit refreshing, thus he attracted the attention of so many people.

Even if Lin Ming were to complete the blue soul level checkpoint and pulled out a relatively high reward, no one would covet his possessions because he had enough strength to protect himself.

But, if Lin Ming were to complete the zenith black level mission and draw out something even more precious, then that was not some small event; that was something that could alarm even Holy Lords and World Kings. In the City of Discord where there were no rules but strength, Lin Ming would be placed in an extremely dangerous situation.

The Wheel of Destiny began to slow down. All of the martial artists present watched with breath abated. In the center of the Wheel of Destiny, there was an ancient rune word – Destiny. This was also the most mysterious reward of all.

Of course, besides Lin Ming, not many people bothered looking at the Destiny rune. They simply didn't believe that Lin Ming had a chance of pulling it out. If Lin Ming was able to obtain the zenith black level reward and obtain a single drawing chance, that was already a nearly unbelievable event. As for drawing that mystical Destiny rune, that was simply a joke and a half.

It wasn't that they didn't believe in Lin Ming, but that in the minds of these people, the possibility of drawing that Destiny rune never existed to begin with, no matter who tried.

The zenith black level reward was something only seen every several hundred million years. As for drawing the third possible zenith black reward, the degree of difficulty in accomplishing that was inconceivable. Many people suspected that in the last several hundred million years, in all the cities on the outskirts of the Asura Road, there had never been anyone capable of drawing that third zenith black reward possibility.

The runes continued to shimmer. Some conscientious people had already taken out sound transmitting talismans, ready to send out news of what was happening.

Lin Ming had only spent four hours in the Hunter Game, and with no one thinking that he could ever have obtained the zenith black level reward, news was limited to those in Black God Fort, with no one outside knowing.

But now, many people had the idea to rob all of Lin Ming's harvests. Although Lin Ming was talented, his cultivation was actually limited.

A rare zenith black god rune could not only enhance one's strength but it was also a necessary rune required to open the way to the Asura Road's final smelting trial. Even if it were impossible for anyone in this city to participate, they could still sell it for an unimaginable level of wealth!

None of these little actions escaped Lin Ming's notice. However, he didn't bother with them. At this time, the Wheel of Destiny had nearly come to a stop.

The hundreds and thousands of runes shimmered on and off without any pattern to them. Because the Wheel of Destiny had nearly stopped spinning, these runes lit up for longer and longer and the speed at which they alternated shining became increasingly slow.

The runes would light up for almost an entire breath of time. This meant that the end result was soon about to appear.

The Sun of Suffocation, the Soul Bleached Bones, the Fiery Buddha’s Blade, the Stone of Resurrection…

Every shining rune had its own name…

Finally, a rune named the Rainbow Bridge lit up for almost three breaths of time before fading away with an almost daring unwillingness. Then, the last rune lit up. Everyone’s eyes widened, nearly popping out of their eyes with blatant disbelief.

Well, it was more accurate to say that this was not a single rune, but two runes joined together to form a word.

This word was the most mystical possibility of all – Destiny!

This was the third reward, the ultimate rune, Destiny!

Everyone was shocked speechless, but Lin Ming’s actions were quick. He tamped down the rising excitement in his heart and placed his hand on the Wheel of Destiny. At that moment, he could feel something forming within the Wheel of Destiny!

This was likely the reward he was about to obtain.

A white light radiated out, shining over everyone watching. It was like a second sun had risen inside Black God Fort’s second level, making everyone close their eyes from the glare.

“The third reward, Destiny? Moreover, it’s the third reward from the zenith black drawing? Is this reality? Am I dreaming here!?”

"This is too strange, how can there be such a freakish genius!?"

In the hall, everyone's eyes went red with jealousy. And at this time, the dazzling thing that was being formed appeared. Lin Ming didn't even bother looking at it. With a wave of his hand, that object directly submerged into his palm. It didn't go into his spatial ring, but directly drilled into his body.

He didn't bother investigating with his sense, but strode straight down the platform.

"Soulwhite!"

Lin Ming sent out a true essence sound transmission.

"Master, this old servant is here." Soulwhite was also completely dumbfounded. But, he too could feel how tense the atmosphere was. There were countless pairs of eyes targeting Lin Ming like daggers.

"We're leaving."

As Lin Ming walked down from the platform, many martial artists present held their breaths, their eyes shining brilliantly. They stared at Lin Ming's hand – the divine light that appeared had hidden itself in there.

They didn't know what Lin Ming had drawn. In order to confirm that, they would need to chop off Lin Ming's right hand.

Everyone in the City of Discord was a desperado, those who did evil without caring for the lives of others. Some people began to trace their spatial rings, their auras rapidly revolving!

If it wasn't for Lin Ming being far too strong, they would have already attacked. Although fighting was forbidden in Black God Fort, this so-called rule was only a commonly accepted custom in the City of Discord. At this time, who could still care about such customs?

But, they also knew that trying to steal away the mysterious object that Lin Ming had drawn in the chaos of battle was impossible by virtue of their own strength. Instead, they could easily draw the disaster of death upon themselves.

Even so, in the face of such intense greed, with a chance that they could ascend to the heavens in a single bound, how many people here could still hold themselves back?

Everyone began to think that perhaps the god of fortune would descend upon their bodies. Perhaps in the ensuing chaos they could steal away that mysterious object without others knowing.

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold and callous light. He walked forwards one step at a time, making others retreat from his path.

In the eyes of these people, the suppressive aura Lin Ming gave off was far too strong.

The zenith black level reward that hadn't been obtained for the last several hundred million years had been obtained by him, and during the drawing, even that most mysterious third reward was obtained by him. This type of person most likely had an unrivalled destiny on their side, and most likely some unimaginable ability.

Whoever tried to attack him first would likely die a most miserable death.

Some people even made way for Lin Ming. This was because they were pressured by his aura.

At this time, a voice suddenly sounded out. "Little Brother, how about coming to the City Lord Mansion for a little visit? I'm sure that the Great City Lord would appreciate such a handsome young elite as yourself."

Lin Ming turned around. Atop the platform, a tall silver-armored guard had appeared. This person's entire body shimmered with a sparkling light – he was a spiritas martial artist. There was a great difference between this person's silver armor and the other Silver Snow

Guards. This person's armor looked heavier and there was also a silver kirin carved into it. It was obvious that this person held a very high status in the Silver Snow Corps.

As soon as Lin Ming saw this person, his pupils shrank. This person actually had a Holy Lord level cultivation!

Currently, Lin Ming didn't fear Holy Lords, but that was only early Holy Lords. This silver-armored guard was not someone as simple as an early Holy Lord no matter how he saw it. This was because this guard was a spiritas, so he was unable to accurately measure his cultivation. But even so, Lin Ming could approximately judge him to be equal to the middle or late human Holy Lord realm!

Although Lin Ming was confident he could escape, this was sure to delay him by a great deal of time. In his current situation, this delay could prove fatal! Moreover, more and more powerful people would catch up to the scene. Even the City of Discord's City Lord might arrive. At that time, he wouldn't be able to escape even if he had wings!

As this silver-armored warrior put forth this invitation to Lin Ming, this acted like a trough of cold water being poured over everyone's head, immediately extinguishing their greedy hearts and having them calm down.

Whatever mysterious object had been drawn, it wasn't something they could obtain even at the cost of their lives.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then smiled, "Well, if Sir extends me such a gracious invitation, then this junior won't refuse."

"Master..." Behind Lin Ming, Soulwhite felt his heart gripped. He wanted to remind Lin Ming that the City Lord of the City of Discord had a World King level cultivation. If Lin Ming were to enter the City Lord Mansion, he would never emerge from there. No matter how strong Lin Ming was, there was nothing he could do in front of a World King powerhouse.

As Soulwhite was about to speak, Lin Ming waved his hand, signaling him not to speak again. At that time, Soulwhite felt space twist as he was received into Lin Ming's Extreme Violet Ring.

Atop the platform, the silver-armored guard remained unmoved as he saw this scene. He kept his sense locked onto Lin Ming. No matter what Lin Ming did in the next moment, he would still be able to take the initiative.

"Then, shall we go now?"

The silver-armored guard smiled. Lin Ming nodded and uttered out a stiff, "Okay."

Just as his voice fell, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a brilliantly cold light. At the same time, all of the strength hidden within his body wildly erupted! True essence, astral essence, and spirit essence gathered together, Three Essences As One!

Simultaneously, Lin Ming also unleashed the grandmist energy within him – the grandmist space surged forth!

Hu – !

A terrifying force field spread out, covering a radius of a hundred feet and trapping hundreds of people inside. Within this force field, the massive pressure left everyone short of breath, making it feel as if their blood vessels would crack open!

"Boy, it seems you want to do things the hard way!"

On the platform, the silver-armored guard suddenly attacked! Meanwhile, the other silver-armored guards also moved, including every other guard in Black God Fort.

"Black God Fort forbids all fighting. All offenders shall have their martial arts crippled!"

A guard shouted out loud. Lin Ming only sneered. At this time they were still looking for a reason to attack him?

“Heavenly Dao Judgment!”

The phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared behind Lin Ming. Lin Ming thrust out his spear; his goal was the leader of these silver-armored guards. As the surrounding martial artists saw this terrifying divine light rise up, all of them felt a cold chill shoot up their spines. This attack was far too strong. Even the shockwaves might be enough to kill them!

It was true that they were greedy, but they weren’t greedy to the point of entering a fight they were sure to die in. Once the City Lord arrived and involved himself in this mess, no one here would be able to escape.

“Run!!”

As the martial artists saw the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation about to explode, all of them rushed out like a tide, fearing that they would die in the aftermath.

At the same time, the silver-armored guard captain also extracted a tall silver tower shield from his spatial ring. He shouted out loud, taking a sudden step back as he defended against Lin Ming’s strike with this tower shield!

Chapter 1445 – The City of Discord’s City Lord

Chapter 1445 – The City of Discord’s City Lord

…

…

…

Bang!

A terrifying explosion of energy swept up a storm, causing the entire floor to collapse! These floors were created from timeless god stone and also had an array formation to support them, but underneath Lin Ming’s attack, the entire level began to cave in. Even the main structure of Black God Fort violently trembled as if it wanted to implode!

In this life or death moment, Lin Ming shouted out, “God Forbidding Seals, enter my body!”

His ten fingers flashed as hundreds of God Forbidding Seals formed in the air. These God Forbidding Seals of the Divine Seal Art were able to seal away everything, however this time Lin Ming wasn’t targeting an enemy, but himself.

The God Forbidding Seals were similar to miniature black holes. If Lin Ming thrust these God Forbidding Seals into his body, this in itself was already an extremely dangerous course of action. If he made even the slightest mistaken then his blood vitality and muscles would be swallowed up. If that happened, the backlash would cause him to be immediately defeated!

Lin Ming didn’t plan for that. Rather, the reason he used the God Forbidding Seals was to swallow up the divine sense that the silver-armored guard captain had placed into his body.

In this sort of situation, how could he let someone lock onto him with their sense? This was the same as waiting to die!

Chi chi chi!

The faint traces of divine sense were inexorably and wildly swallowed up by the God Forbidding Seals. The silver-armored guard captain’s body suddenly shook. This divine sense was connected to his spiritual sea. Now that it was swallowed in such a crude manner it was unavoidable for him to suffer a counterattack. Although it was far from injuring him, he didn’t feel any better off.

“Boy, you want to die!?”

The silver-armored guard captain cried out. He took a sudden step forwards, but at this time, the second level rang out with a rumbling bang once more as another explosion occurred.

This was also Lin Ming’s attack. He didn’t use Heavenly Dao Judgment again, but rather the Thunderfire Annihilation that he hadn’t used in an extremely long time!

Thunderfire Annihilation was naturally far weaker than Heavenly Dao Judgment, but in terms of blast radius and the flames and divine light that it created, it was superior to Heavenly Dao Judgment. This was because the power of Thunderfire Annihilation was scattered in a much larger area, and although it seemed powerful, it was actually quite weak. As for Heavenly Dao Judgment, all of that strength was condensed together into a relatively smaller scope.

For a time, pained cries rang out all throughout Black God Fort. A massive amount of timeless god stone fragments were sent scattering into the air!

Lin Ming wasn’t aiming for a killing strike. Rather, he wanted the largest blast effect possible to cause the entire building to fall into absolute chaos!

Many people began to flee and many were also injured. Even though they had all begun retreating, it was inevitable that they would be caught up in the shockwaves.

Pa! Pa! Pa!

The crystal windows of the second floor were shattered. In order to avoid dying in the chaotic battle, many martial artists broke through the windows and jumped out. What followed behind them were tongues of fire and thunder!

"You little brat, do you think you can create some confusion and escape? How ridiculous!" The silver-armored guard captain had already guessed Lin Ming's plan. He spread out his divine sense, wanting to lock onto Lin Ming's position. "I have already remembered your soul aura, do you know what a soul aura is? That is as unchangeable as your bones. Even if you change your appearance you still won't be able to escape my sense. This is the unique ability of the soul race. As long as I remember your soul aura, even if you flee to the ends of heaven or the edges of the sea, I will still find you and catch you!"

As he laughed he started moving to chase Lin Ming. But at this time, the smile froze on his face. He discovered that he actually couldn't sense Lin Ming's aura!

It was like he had… completely vanished!

"How is this possible?"

The silver-armored guard captain was immensely surprised. By spreading out his divine sense and locking onto someone's soul aura that he remembered, he could instantly track someone down even within a range of several thousand miles. But now, within the entire scope of his divine sense, Lin Ming had disappeared!

"This is impossible!"

The silver-armored guard captain didn't dare to believe what had happened. From the time that the chaos happened until now, only a single breath of time had occurred. It was impossible for Lin Ming to run several thousand miles in this small span of time!

If he were to use the great void shift to pass through space then he could indeed cross such a distance, but using the great void shift required a certain amount of time to set up. It couldn’t be instantly used whenever someone wanted to.

“Where is he?”

The silver-armored guard captain was panic-stricken. When Lin Ming had drawn the third possible reward for the zenith black level drawing, he had already sent a message to the City Lord. But now, the person had disappeared from his sight! The consequences for this failure would be serious… as the guard captain thought of how ruthless and cruel the City Lord could be, all he felt was fear.

“Chase after him!”

The silver-armored guard captain breathlessly ordered. Many other silver-armored guards began to run out from Black God Fort. But currently, there were numerous martial artists milling about the street. In this confusion, how could anyone search for Lin Ming’s trail?

The silver-armored guard captain was at a loss of what to do. In this brief delay, almost 10 breaths of time had passed. For a peak martial artist, 10 breaths of time was more than enough to cross several hundred miles. If they were skilled in the Space Laws then they could go even further!

It was likely that the human youth had already fled the City of Discord!

“Damn it! Damn it all! How did he do this? How is he able to conceal his soul aura!?”

The silver-armored guard captain crazily shouted. But then, his complexion distorted and his entire body turned icy cold. He could feel a terrifying aura approaching.

The City Lord had arrived!

“The… the City… City Lord has come…”

The silver-armored guard captain’s face instantly drained of blood.

In that moment, he felt the space tighten around him. Soon, a black-robed man slowly appeared.

This person wore a silver mask and his entire body emitted a thick demonic energy.

Every silver-armored guard fell silent. The pressure that this black-robed man emitted was too great. As the personal guard of the City Lord, they understood just how terrifying he actually was!

Everyone envied the Silver Snow Corps for their status, resources, and free residence that they enjoyed. But in truth, only they knew their own pain. To be under his command was the same as being in a cage with a tiger. As the subordinates of the City of Discord's City Lord, they had to be cautious at all times. The slightest slip up could result in the most severe form of punishments.

These were the rules of the Asura Road, completely different from the rules that governed sects in the outside. The rules and following penalties were a hundred times more severe than in the outside world!

"Where is he?"

The City Lord's voice seemed to rise up from the nine nether abyss.

The silver-armored guard captain fell to his knees, lying prostrate on the ground, too afraid to move.

"This subordinate was useless… he fled… this subordinate had locked onto that human boy's soul aura, but for some unknown reason he was able to change his soul aura and suddenly disappeared from sight, this is… this subordinate should die."

The silver-armored guard captain grit his teeth, his voice trembling as he spoke.

"Humph! You have a Holy Lord level cultivation and you can't even stop a Divine Transformation junior from escaping, just what use have I left for you!?" The City Lord traced his spatial ring, his entire body exuding killing intent.

The silver-armored guard captain shook. He knew that the City Lord was an utterly cruel and merciless man. Even if a Holy Lord powerhouse disobeyed him, he would execute them without any hesitation.

"City Lord, this subordinate begs your forgiveness, please allow this subordinate a chance for redemption…"

The silver-armored guard captain could barely keep his calm. In the face of death, no one was able to remain unmoved. Even Holy Lords that lived tens of thousands of years were no exception.

The City Lord's eyes flashed with a cold light, his fingers still tracing his spatial ring. He didn't immediately answer. Although only a few breaths of time passed, this short period of time was like years to the silver-armored guard captain.

The City Lord finally released his spatial ring. "Do you know what it means to obtain the third zenith black reward from the Wheel of Destiny? In all these years, in all the countless cities of the Asura Road, how many people have been able to obtain this legendary reward? Do you know that this reward is said to be related to the mysterious Asura Road Master? You are just garbage! Even though this is the greatest lucky chance in the last hundred million years, it actually disappeared from before my eyes! You should have reported to me at the very start! Not after he pulled out the zenith black level reward!"

The City Lord was enraged. In his opinion, this destiny should have been his. The treasures of the Asura Road were obtained by those that had the strength to grasp them. Lin Ming's treasures, the things that he obtained in the City of Discord, should all be his!

However, he actually wasn't able to grasp this chance to ascend to the heavens in a single leap!

This was intolerable!

“As-Asura Road Master…” As the silver-armored guard captain heard this news he began to tremble. He never imagined that mysterious reward would have such significant meanings to it! Just who was the Asura Road Master? That was the legendary ruler of the 33 Heavens!

From start to finish, the silver-armored guard captain had never imagined that Lin Ming could obtain the zenith black level reward. After all, this reward was far too rare. If the silver-armored guard captain had reported to the City Lord after Lin Ming had entered the game world, but Lin Ming didn’t manage to obtain the zenith black level reward, then he would have equally suffered for reporting something so minor to the City Lord.

Afterwards, when Lin Ming had come out he was extremely crafty. When he had placed the skull badges into the Wheel of Destiny, he had hidden the number of badges he obtained so that no one knew whether it was 50 or 100. Like this, he had managed to delay for a dozen plus more breaths of time. Only like this had he been able to escape before the City Lord arrived!

In truth, from start to finish, the silver-armored guard captain had done nothing wrong. Even so, he had gotten the worst of the worst results. If he had to blame someone he could only blame his own luck for being too bad. Not only did he encounter such a rare and improbable event, but this human youth also had techniques to conceal his soul aura. He had truly stumbled into a bout of bad luck!

Now he was forced to suffer in silence, unable to vent his bitterness. After all, who would dare to argue back in front of the City Lord? He could only kneel down and await his punishment.

“I will not kill you today and will spare your worthless life! It is not because I am showing you mercy but only because you have remembered the soul aura of that human. I will give you a single chance to redeem yourself. However, even though you can avoid the death penalty, you cannot avoid the punishment for your crimes. I will imprison you for 200,000 years and also plant a slave seal in your body. If you cannot complete the mission assigned to you then you can die!"

In the myriad cities of the Asura Road, after several hundreds of millions of years, this unbelievable destiny, this heaven-defying chance, had occurred within his City of Discord.

Yet, he wasn't able to obtain it. How could he be resigned to this!

"Yes… yes… I thank the City Lord for such mercy…" The silver-armored guard captain felt his back slick with sweat. Death was truly too terrifying.

"As for the lot of you, you will also all be punished. Everyone here is imprisoned for 50,000 years! If anyone can catch that human then generous rewards await you! If you cannot, then all that awaits you is death!" The City Lord's voice was icy as he looked at everyone else.

All the guards knelt on the ground, too scared to speak.

Chapter 1446 – Ancient Jade

Chapter 1446 – Ancient Jade

…

…

…

After the events at Black God Fort, the entire City of Discord was placed on high alert.

When the City Lord learned that Lin Ming had escaped, he used a thousand mile sound transmission to inform the guards to start the great array formation and seal up the city.

The City Lord did this because he thought Lin Ming might not have necessarily left the City of Discord. If he searched the city he might be able to make some gains.

And, more importantly, the City Lord wanted to place a total blockade on all news. He then scanned the log book for that day in Black God Fort and captured all the martial artists that had appeared there, imprisoning them all!

Then, each one of these people had soul searching god runes used on them to comb through their memories. If any one of them had passed on news to others, those other people would also be equally captured and imprisoned. Then, they would have memory sealing god runes placed within them.

This sort of crazy method reflected the tyrannical rules of the Asura Road. Here, strength was everything. With strength, one could ignore all public opinion and do whatever they wished. As for things like mercy or benevolence, that was simply a joke.

The reason for blocking this news was to prevent other top masters from joining the hunt for Lin Ming.

Normal martial artists wouldn't know just how valuable the thing Lin Ming obtained was. They only went to look for the fun of it; even the silver-armored guard captain was the same. Although he knew that what Lin Ming obtained was rare, he didn't know just what it meant.

But, just because these ordinary martial artists didn't know what it meant didn't mean that the other City Lords didn't. If this news spread out and other City Lords decided to join in on the action, it would be far more difficult for the City of Discord's City Lord to capture Lin Ming.

At this time, Lin Ming was completely unaware of all the changes occurring within the City of Discord. He had already fled 50,000 miles north.

Here was a forested mountain range. Lin Ming carved his own cave dwelling in this mountain range and temporarily went into seclusion.

He had already changed to a completely different appearance.

He wore a black robe made from energy, and he was of medium height with average, ordinary looks. His complexion was a bit yellower and his chin a bit pointier. His eyes drooped a little and he looked completely common, like someone you wouldn't notice in a crowd.

Now that he needed to escape, the more low key his appearance was the better.

The reason Lin Ming was able to flee this calamity was all because he cultivated the Divine Dream Law's Bodily Rebirth Technique to a high enough boundary. Not only could he easily change his appearance but he could also change the aura of his soul. Even a Great World King wouldn't be able to easily see through his camouflage.

When he had planned to leave Divine Dream Heavenly Palace to go on an adventure and temper himself, the first place he chose was not the Asura Road but the Saint Convocation Heaven where the saint race ruled supreme!

Lin Ming had dared to go to the Saint Convocation Heaven because he was able to rely on the Bodily Rebirth Technique.

Just from this alone, Lin Ming felt a heartfelt admiration towards Divine Dream. She had actually managed to research the soul forging system to such a refined degree and establish her profound Divine Dream Law.

Of course, that ordinary Holy Lord level spiritas guard captain wasn't able to easily see through Lin Ming's disguise, and part of the reason for that was also because of the Magic Cube. The Magic Cube had allowed Lin Ming to understand the Divine Dream Law to such a degree that he nearly reached Frost Dream's level of talent.

"It looks I won't be able to use my original appearance anymore. Then, I'll use this appearance to continue participating in the Asura Road trials. It should be safe enough."

Lin Ming had confidence in his own appearance changing technique. Even if he were to stand in front of the City Lord himself, the City Lord wouldn't be able to recognize him. Only an Empyrean would be able to see through his disguise.

Now that the dangers had abated, Lin Ming focused on his right hand. He wanted to see just what it was he drew.

Whatever it was, he had risked his life to obtain it. Moreover, it was something that hadn't been seen for several hundreds of millions of years. It shouldn't be too bad.

A faint green light appeared in Lin Ming's right hand, slowly gathering together. Finally, it formed a green jade.

Lin Ming looked at this jade. It was a deep green and the size of a baby's palm, just like a jade pendant.

The surface of the jade had strange carvings on it. Compared to the complex language of the Divine Realm or saint race, this sort of writing was far simpler, only comprised of four strokes.

Lin Ming looked at the jade for half a day. He couldn't recall anything about these characters.

"Just what is this… there isn't any explanation at all…"

Lin Ming couldn't understand just what effect this ancient jade had. All he could feel from this ancient jade was a vague primal aura, as if it had existed for countless years. However, even after hundreds of millions or even billions of years, this jade remained clean and bright. As he held it in his hands, there was even a slightly warm feeling.

"Perhaps it can be used when opening the final trial?"

Lin Ming thought out loud. Just as he was preparing to place it in the Magic Cube space, a sudden spiritual message flashed in his mind. This message had no words, but it still managed to transmit some blurry information to him.

Lin Ming's mind stirred and he poured his divine sense into the ancient jade. Immediately, he could see some faint lines within the ancient jade. These lines formed a complex design. As Lin Ming looked at it, he could feel that it was somewhat similar to a map.

And all around this map were blurry comments. As for these words, Lin Ming was able to understand them. They consisted of the Divine Realm's language as well as the saint race's language.

During the period of time after Lin Ming came into contact with the saints and the spiritas, he slowly studied their language. A martial artist had photographic memory and it wasn't too much of a hassle to learn a new language, especially for someone with peerless perception like Lin Ming.

"Great Desolate God Trove…"

Lin Ming slowly read the words, one at a time.

“Soulwhite, do you know what the Great Desolate God Trove is?”

Soulwhite emerged from Lin Ming’s Extreme Violet Ring, slightly startled. “Great Desolate God Trove? This old servant does not know, but I have heard of the Great Desolate before. That is an extremely large area in the Asura Road, a completely wild and savage wilderness region. Many martial artists go there to temper themselves, but even they only journey around the edges. As for the depths of the Great Desolate, no one dares to go that far. In its depths, there are powerful ancient desolate beasts and even God Beasts. Moreover, there is quite a number of them!

“It is said that there are numerous rare and hidden treasures in the Great Desolate. If one is lucky enough, if your destiny defies the heavens, then you may even find bones of long dead God Beasts. That is a land filled with immense lucky chances but it is also extremely dangerous. Those who go there are always hanging onto life by a thread, with nine chances of death and only one chance of survival.”

Lin Ming sucked in a cold breath as he heard Soulwhite’s description.

God Beast…

Up until now, Lin Ming had only seen two God Beasts with his own eyes.

The first was the Black Dragon in the Eternal Demon Abyss, and the second was Empyrean Demondawn’s contract beast.

A normal God Beast was slightly weaker than an Empyrean. But, there were some God beasts with powerful bloodlines and inherited strengths that were able to compare favorably with peak Empyrean powerhouses!

In terms of strength, Empyrean Demondawn’s God Beast and the Black Dragon in the Eternal Demon Abyss were on completely different levels.

Although Lin Ming had never seen the Black Dragon within the Eternal Demon Abyss fight, he could confirm that it was no weaker than Empyrean Primordius was in the past.

Otherwise, it would have been impossible for the Black Dragon to fight side-by-side with Empyrean Primordius.

In this Great Desolate there really might be a god trove. And, the lines in this ancient jade might be the map to that ancient ruin.

As Soulwhite saw Lin Ming develop the idea of going to the Great Desolate, he hurriedly discouraged him. “Master, with your cultivation it is far too early for you to go to the Great Desolate. That place is different from the world of the Hunter Game. The Hunter Game is only a trial and its difficulty is determined by your cultivation. However, the Great Desolate is different. That is the true world, where only your strength matters. I believe that master should instead look at that rare blue soul level mission first. Still, a blue soul level mission isn’t easy to complete either. There are many two-star Asuras that form teams in order to complete blue soul level missions.

“Mm…”

Lin Ming nodded. It was true; his strength was a bit too low right now. He might as well finish the rare blue soul level mission first.

Lin Ming took out the blue soul level mission badge and poured his divine sense into it. Then, a piece of information spread through his mind.

“Precipice Cliff, leave a name upon the Emperor Stone.”

This short sentence was the so-called mission.

“What sort of place is Precipice Cliff?” Lin Ming asked.

Soulwhite ruefully smiled as he heard this. He said, “What a coincidence. Precipice Cliff is also at the Great Desolate, but it is located at the edges. It isn’t too dangerous there.”

“Oh? So it seems no matter what, I’ll need to take a trip to the Great Desolate. Is this Emperor Stone located on this Precipice Cliff?”

The aim of this mission was clearly to have Lin Ming go to the Great Desolate and leave his name upon the Emperor Stone. At the very least he had to leave some sort of symbol.

Lin Ming guessed that this Emperor Stone likely had some sort of array formation. Once this array formation came into contact with his mission badge, the mission badge would turn into a god rune, the rare blue soul level god rune he would obtain from this mission.

After Lin Ming understood the mission details, he spent several days in his cave dwelling adjusting himself. After he reached his best state, he left.

Destination – the Great Desolate!

Chapter 1447 – Encounter in the Great Desolate

Chapter 1447 – Encounter in the Great Desolate

…

…

…

Asura Road, the Great Desolate –

No one knew just where the Great Desolate ended. It was said that the deeper one went into the Great Desolate, the more strange and fantastical phenomena one would see. Moreover, the space and time there was extremely disorderly, and even Empyreans that were skilled in the Space and Time Laws could easily become lost in the space labyrinths.

It was said that the Great Desolate eventually led to another unknown space, perhaps a world that was no longer a part of the Asura Road.

In short, the depths of the Great Desolate were a forbidden zone.

Currently, Lin Ming was only at the very outermost edges of the Great Desolate; he was still incomparably far from reaching anywhere near the center.

This land was named the Great Desolate but it wasn't desolate at all. Instead, there were mountains that towered for hundreds of thousands of feet with ancient, high trees that reached into the skies. Their roots gripped the earth like dragon claws, and within these primal groves, all sorts of vicious beasts flitted about.

The reason that the Great Desolate was called the Great Desolate was that whoever stepped into that land, no matter who they were, would feel an ancient and prehistoric breath overwhelm them. It was said that the terrain of the land had remained pristine and unchanged for the last 10 billion years. Every inch of that land had experienced endless years.

This also caused Lin Ming to feel a deep sense of respect towards this land in his heart.

Rumble rumble rumble!

A magnificent river surged in front of Lin Ming. The waters were turbulent and wild, as wide as a sea, seeming to contain an infinite strength.

Soulwhite said, “Master, this river is called the Desolate Springs and it runs through the Great Desolate. When a martial artist wants to enter the Great Desolate, they usually follow the path of this river forwards. If we follow this river it will be a bit more secure, and we will also arrive at Precipice Cliff.”

“Mm, alright.”

Lin Ming nodded. It really was a wise decision for him to bring Soulwhite under his control; it saved him a great deal of trouble.

As Lin Ming wanted to go forwards, the clarion cry of a bird rang through the skies, alarming many vicious beasts hiding in the grass. Lin Ming saw a massive bird as large as a hill soar through the heavens, its wings blocking out most of the sun.

This scene left Lin Ming secretly dumbfounded. This bird was several miles long. Although it was far smaller than a Golden-winged Roc, it was still on a completely different level from other birds.

Bang! Crash!

The giant bird landed atop a cliff. Lin Ming silently revolved the Divine Dream Law, shielding his own figure as much as possible to avoid being spotted by the giant bird.

In this Great Desolate he had to remain absolutely vigilant. Otherwise, it would be easier for him to encounter some existence that he couldn't afford to provoke. If he did that, then escaping would be an impossible hope.

Soulwhite said, "Master, we are only about a thousand miles away from Precipice Cliff. We should be a bit more careful when we follow the Desolate Springs and we won't encounter any dangers. The vicious beasts around the Desolate Springs have low striking power. As long as they are not provoked, they won't attack others. Once we reach Precipice Cliff then Master can leave a name upon the Emperor Stone and complete the mission."

"I understand." Lin Ming nodded. As they walked forwards, they actually encountered a fair number of martial artists. These people were doing as Soulwhite had said and were walking alongside the river. This was the safest entryway into the Great Desolate.

Out of the many martial artists, there were those at the Divine Sea, Divine Transformation, and Divine Lord realms. They either came to the Great Desolate to adventure or to complete some sort of mission. Of course, the missions they were given might not be to go to Precipice Cliff.

During this time period, Lin Ming saw massive slaughter fests take place around him as well as some squads picking up the bones of rare beasts.

These were not the bones of God Beasts, but some ancient desolate beasts that had a faint bloodline connection to God Beasts. These bones had existed here for far too long and the marrow had already drained away, leaving nothing behind but bones.

In Lin Ming's eyes, these ancient desolate beast bones were extremely wonderful treasures. Even so, they were much worse than the Azure Dragon bone he had found before.

However, these sorts of beast bones still caused dozens and hundreds of people to kill each other in a struggle to obtain them. Finally, over half these people died, leaving pools of blood to drench the earth!

The final strongest powerhouse carried off the beast bones even as he was severely wounded. As Lin Ming was watching this, he noticed that it was likely this powerhouse had received grievous hidden wounds that would be difficult to recover from. In fact, this powerhouse had also burnt 20-30% of his blood essence. If he wanted to restore just that, then he would have to pay an extremely deep price.

“This place is really filled with the scent of blood. In the Asura Road, strength is king. Fighting and killing over treasures is far too common. Even if you don’t fight, others will fight you all the same.” Lin Ming sighed. These common martial artists or martial artists from small influences lacked far too many resources. Their only recourse to advance in their road of martial arts was to desperately struggle with their lives on the line.

“Hey, brat, have you been here all along? Have you seen any beast bones? Did you see who they were taken by? Where did that person go?”

Lin Ming didn’t jump into the struggle for beast bones. Even so, trouble came knocking on his door regardless.

Lin Ming turned around to see several saint and imp race martial artists approaching him. They were backup called in by their comrades, but while they had been catching up their comrades had all been killed.

They didn’t feel anything towards their comrades’ death. Rather, what they were concerned about was the whereabouts of the beast bones.

“I have no idea.” Lin Ming shook his head. He didn’t bother telling these people which direction the severely wounded martial artist had run off in with the beast bones.

“Heh, don’t try to lie to me. Let me search your soul a bit. If what you say is true then I won’t kill you.”

Out of the small group, an old imp man spoke as he licked his lips, chuckling as he reached out a hand towards Lin Ming. He simply didn’t believe Lin Ming’s words. If Lin Ming were here, why wouldn’t he have seen who took the beast bones?

Lin Ming frowned. This imp wanted to search his soul and said it in such a calm and casual manner, as if he were asking for directions!

He didn't want to kill anyone here, but some people actually came seeking their own death.

The old imp laughed as he saw Lin Ming was resisting. "Haha, brat, I already know you are lying. You might be the friend of whoever took away the beast bones, or perhaps the bones are on your body!"

The old imp stretched out his skinny chicken claw-like hand to grasp Lin Ming!

A thick killing intent flashed in Lin Ming's eyes. In the next moment, a red and purple light flashed out, slicing through the void!

The old imp suddenly shook, his entire body shivering. His stretched out hand also froze where it was as his fingers trembled.

He looked down with disbelief etched in his eyes. There was a massive bloody hole in his chest.

"You… you…"

"Damn it, kill him!" The other martial artists around the old imp were all enraged.

"Fight together, this boy isn't simple at all!"

They never thought that Lin Ming would sneak attack in such a manner just now, nor did they recognize his true strength.

"Come then, all of you can die together."

Lin Ming waved the Phoenix Blood Spear. At the same time, energy erupted from his body as the heavy grandmist energy surged outwards, blocking out the space all around him!

As these people were enveloped in the grandmist space, they immediately felt a terrifying suppressive pressure pushing down on them. Let alone attacking, even breathing was becoming difficult.

“Ahh!”

“W-wait!”

Some people miserably cried. However, once Lin Ming attacked, he didn’t hold back at all. The Phoenix Blood Spear swept out with a thick arc of spear light. In just several blinks of the eye, all of these people were killed by Lin Ming!

Blood splashed everywhere. Lin Ming wiped off the blood from the Phoenix Blood Spear and shook his head. “They kill others like cutting grass. These Asura Road people are really mentally insane.”

As Lin Ming was speaking out loud, he heard the faint explosions of energy just several dozen miles away. It was clear some people had started to fight.

“I’ll go around them.”

Lin Ming didn’t want to be caught up in any more troublesome matters. If there was some battle taking place on the road then he would just circle around them.

However, after ten miles, he stopped his footsteps. The fighting taking place in the distance was actually quite unusual.

From the wild and heated origin energy in the air, he could feel that the two sides fighting were all masters, completely incomparable to the trash he just killed.

“Who is fighting? These swift and fierce energy collisions, this is definitely a battle between extraordinary individuals. Moreover… how could these sounds…”

Lin Ming’s hearing was extremely sharp. Even from such a distance he could hear what sounds were coming from that chaotic battlefield. As he heard a familiar sound, an astonished light flashed in his eyes.

“I guess I’ll go take a look.”

As Lin Ming spoke, he rapidly rushed towards the battlefield. The 20-30 mile distance took only several blinks of time.

At this time, he heard someone shout out, “Wings of the Dark Phoenix!”

For a time, the aura of a God Beast shot up into the skies. Lin Ming was extremely familiar with this aura. Ten years ago, within the arena of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, he had fought against this aura.

“Wings of the Dark Phoenix, a God Beast’s aura, is it Xiao Moxian? She… also came to the Asura Road? Just who is she fighting?”

Chapter 1448 – The Phoenix Within the Flames of Battle

Chapter 1448 – The Phoenix Within the Flames of Battle

…

…

…

Lin Ming was extremely startled to discover that Xiao Moxian was one of the people fighting. But as he thought about it further, it wasn't strange at all.

With the great calamity ready to erupt at any moment, Xiao Moxian would also want to rapidly increase her strength, but in the Divine Realm alone, it would be hard for her to find sufficient space to grow. She needed rivals and opponents, she needed a new world to broaden her horizons, and she needed pressure that would force her to transform into someone greater than she was before. The Asura Road was indeed a very good place to go.

Then, after arriving here, Xiao Moxian had at some time obtained a mission to go to the Great Desolate. And, her appearing here was also reasonable, because the Desolate Springs was the safest entry route into the Great Desolate.

As Lin Ming thought of this he sped up. He could clearly see the phantom of a Dark Phoenix in the distant skies. Lin Ming had fought with Xiao Moxian before so he clearly understood that this was her bloodline strength – the Phoenix Trueform. Unless she encountered some formidable opponent, Xiao Moxian wouldn't easily reveal this ability in the Asura Road. It was similar to an elephant revealing its ivory tusks or a rhinoceros revealing its horn; it would arouse the greed of others.

Lin Ming's guess was correct. Xiao Moxian was indeed placed in a great crisis.

The cause was simple. After Xiao Moxian entered the Asura Road, the first place she stopped was Wave City. After entering Wave City, she went to the mission issuing area, similar to the City of Discord's Black God Fort, and then she also participated in the trial game there. With Xiao Moxian's talent, obtaining the 50 badge blue soul level reward was far too simple, and even obtaining the zenith black level reward wasn't difficult at all. After Xiao Moxian had two drawings, although she didn't draw the Destiny reward that Lin Ming had drawn, she had still pulled out the second zenith black reward possibility, and the best one at that. If she drew that, the value of the god rune would only be slightly worse than the Destiny reward. This would be enough to cause all the martial artists in Wave City to go crazy with greed. In addition, her blue soul level reward was likely the most precious third possibility type too.

When these factors were added together, the result could be imagined.

Xiao Moxian was now besieged from all sides!

"Fires Scorching the Starry Skies!"

Hu – hu – hu !

Black flames swept up a storm. Xiao Moxian wielded her swift long whip, the speed reaching unimaginable degrees as if she would tear apart space itself. Flames burnt along the whip's length. Every time the whip lashed out, martial artists would be torn apart, leaving behind nothing but bloody fog.

Corpses were already piled up all around her. These corpses were either torn apart by long whip strokes or charred into cinders. As for Xiao Moxian, her long hair was scattered about and blood stained her face. Her large pitch black eyes were filled with a cruel and ruthless light!

Although she normally seemed naughty and cute, she actually had the blood of the monster and demon races flowing through her veins. When it came to killing someone, she could instantly become a dark enchantress, showing no mercy at all!

She had already been fighting for a long time, and dozens of people had been killed by her. The rocks all around were dyed black and red, and all the surrounding plant life had withered away. There were many wounds crisscrossing her body and even her expansive Dark Phoenix wings were wet with blood. This blood was hers.

The battlefield was already thick with the scent of blood and death. Xiao Moxian was like a dark angel, her body brimming with a terrifying power as she harvested all life around her.

“I’m sure that she must have a true phoenix bloodline within her. She might even be the descendant of a phoenix!”

In the group of people, a Holy Lord martial artist suddenly shouted out. He clearly had a considerable amount of experience. In the midst of this intense battle he had been able to see through Xiao Moxian’s bloodline!

“A phoenix body! How could a descendant be born from a phoenix mating with other races?”

“If so, then us brothers have really hit the jackpot. Just a single drop of her blood essence is incomparably precious. If we can capture this woman and dual cultivate with her, we can suck up her yin essence and even swallow her primal origin energy. We can even use her blood to make medicine to obtain unimaginable benefits! Hahaha!”

“Use her for medicine? That ruins the fun too much. This is truly a top quality woman, the most outstanding kind of all, so how can we use her as medicine? We should enjoy her as thoroughly as we can. When we capture her we can plant a slave seal within her and make her serve us faithfully! Hehe, little girl, don’t resist us. We have enough people that you will be captured sooner or later. No matter what you try, we will place a slave seal rune within you and enjoy your body, hahaha!”

The leading martial artists increased their violent barrage of attacks. These people all had a Holy Lord level cultivations for a total of four Holy Lords!

Although they weren't strong Holy Lords, several of them added together formed a terrifying strength! It would be almost impossible for Xiao Moxian to escape the siege of these people, and even someone like Lin Ming would find it difficult.

Xiao Moxian formed more seals as she wrapped her body in black flames. Mystical runes began to shine over her face, neck, and arms. These runes were the Law runes of a Dark Phoenix that were inscribed into her body. They were the miracle of Laws that she inherited from her mother, the symbol of a God Beast!

These runes shimmered with a brilliant black light. The power of Laws began to crazily surge around Lin Ming. Black flames soared to the heavens, sweeping across the skies!

"Don't struggle little girl, it is useless for you to delay for time. Do you really think that that old man will be here to rescue you? Perhaps he already died at Wave City, or at the very least he was mutually wounded together with Wave City's City Lord, otherwise how would the four of us be able to enjoy such a lucky chance? Hehehe!"

The four Holy Lords spread out, attacking Xiao Moxian from afar.

Bang!

Flames crazily detonated. Several martial artists that attacked Xiao Moxian were turned to ash!

But the four leading Holy Lord powerhouses actually retreated. One of them even casually grasped a minion beside them to use as a shield. That unlucky martial artist was directly burned down to nothing, but the Holy Lord powerhouse behind him was completely fine.

"The ones sieging you are all our slaves controlled by god runes. Don't you know that there are god runes that can specifically act as slave seals for others? If you burn them, that isn't any loss to us at all. In fact, you will have needlessly wasted your strength, hahaha!"

This Holy Lord was from the demon race. He was short, with pointy ears and nearly black skin. At this time he was fiendishly smiling as his eyes greedily swept over Xiao Moxian's body. In truth, they also knew that Xiao Moxian was extremely strong. If they were to truly attack in a head-on fight then no single one of them alone was Xiao Moxian's match. Even if they joined forces Xiao Moxian could still counterattack and kill off one or two of them.

Thus, they used the many slaves under their control to wear down her strength. This was the safest and most methodical tactic.

Xiao Moxian's eyes shined with a cold light. Although she possessed a nearly unparalleled physique, she had indeed consumed far too much energy and was nearing her limit.

Her inky black eyes narrowed as she glared at the demon Holy Lord who had just spoken. Killing intent rose from all around her. "You are courting death!"

Bang!!

At this moment, a volcano seemed to erupt within Xiao Moxian. Her strength rapidly ascended as her aura violently gushed out, causing the earth to shake!

In that instant, it was like a true phoenix was awakening within Xiao Moxian!

"This is..."

The demon Holy Lord that was speaking before suddenly paused. He felt the space around him tighten as a terrifying strength swept at his direction! Xiao Moxian had ignored all others to attack him; her only goal was to wipe out the Holy Lord who had shouted just now.

"Old Fourth, be careful!"

Not too far away, two of the other Four Wave Saints also moved to help him. As for the last one, he attacked Xiao Moxian. He was too far away so he didn't have enough time to help his comrade, thus he thought of attacking Xiao Moxian to force her to retreat.

Xiao Moxian realized that there was an attack coming at her from behind and she also realized the consequences of being struck. But, she ignored it, stubbornly attacking as she did before!

Her long whip howled as dreadful black flames formed a raging inferno that smashed into the demon Holy Lord's body. The demon Holy Lord cried out miserably as half his body was struck. Many of his organs broke, his meridians cracked, and he vomited out a mouthful of blood.

"How… how is this possible?"

He found this all unbelievable. How could Xiao Moxian suddenly erupt with such a titanic strength?

"She has burnt her bloodline, the bloodline of a Dark Phoenix!"

The Holy Lord behind Xiao Moxian shouted out as he attacked her. His saber came roughly chopping down upon her back.

Xiao Moxian had spent all of her strength and attention to strike that demon race Holy Lord so she had no time to turn around and defend. Instead, she wrapped her wings around her body, revolving all of her strength to resist this saber strike.

Ca!

A saber slashed through Xiao Moxian's protective true essence and cut down at her phoenix wings. Blood splashed out and her face paled. Her body was sent flying backwards until she crashed into a cluster of rocks.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Rocks shattered and Xiao Moxian was buried within the debris. But in the next moment, a massive amount of broken stone was swept away by her black phoenix wings. Xiao Moxian stood up, but as she did, she revealed that only one of her phoenix wings was upright; the other wing was hanging at a strange angle. That saber strike just then had cut through her wing bones.

In addition, there was also a three foot long wound; it was unknown just how deep it was, but it had already injured her organs. If she didn't possess a phoenix's body then she would have already lost all combat strength.

"Old Fourth, are you okay!?" Two of the Holy Lords caught the demon race Holy Lord. Although half his body was ruined, he still had a single breath of life. In that life or death moment just now, the other two Holy Lords had been able to bear a part of Xiao Moxian's attack, saving his life.

"This damned girl!"

The boss of the Four Wave Saints shouted out, his eyes shining with a ruthlessly sharp light. "She has burnt her phoenix blood!"

A Phoenix God Beast was the only creature in the universe that could freely burn its blood essence without diminishing its fires of life. This was because they could rebirth themselves within the flames of nirvana.

However, this also had a premise, and it was that a phoenix that combusted its blood essence had to have completed at least a single nirvana, otherwise it was difficult to do so.

Currently, Xiao Moxian had yet to undergo her nirvana, thus she could burn her ancient phoenix blood at most only once. If she did it any more then she would damage her life force, just like an ordinary martial artist burning their blood essence.

"Let's attack together, she is already exhausted."

"Right, no one hold back. We can't have this little girl pulling out some trump card like what she did to Old Fourth."

"We'll steal away the treasure she drew, keep her lowly life and plant a slave seal in her and then train her well!"

The Four Wave Saints said, their eyes glimmering with greed and perversion. Among the four of them, the three that still had their battle efficiency stood up. Their strength began to echo between each other before it suddenly burst outwards!

Hu – hu – hu!

Energy gushed out. These people all came from the demon race or the saint race, and their different strengths converged together to form an array diagram. Within this array diagram, the phantom of a giant sea monster began to emerge. This sea monster was massive, with dozens of tentacles, resembling something like a massive octopus.

"Attack!"

The three of them all attacked with their sabers. As their sabers came slashing down, Xiao Moxian glared at them, her eyes cold and implacable. At this time it was no longer possible for her to burn her ancient phoenix blood any further. Even burning a little of her blood just now had placed a tremendous burden on her body.

Even in this completely exhausted state where she was like a flickering candle in the wind, she still slashed out with her whip at the three sabers. At the same time, she took out a jade slip from her spatial ring and poured her true essence into it before crumbling it!

This was a defensive-type jade slip. Although it was very valuable, it was impossible for this alone to defend against the joint attack of the three Holy Lords. At most it would reduce the wounds that she received.

"Accept your fate!"

The three Holy Lords cruelly cackled, their speed increasing until they were like three meteors that hurtled towards Xiao Moxian. The array diagram appeared above their sabers and the giant sea monster behind them savagely roared as it sent several tentacles thrusting towards Xiao Moxian.

In that moment, the earth suddenly shook and space was torn apart. The mountain stones tumbled down in an avalanche as the power of space groaned in the air.

“Mm?”

The three Holy Lords didn’t even have time to respond. They saw Xiao Moxian disappear from their sight, replaced by a thick ancient stone gate that fell down from the clouds, separating them from her!

“What is this?”

“Cut it down!”

The three Holy Lords were extremely fast. Their attacks didn’t slow down in the least as they slashed out at the stone gate. In fact, it was impossible for them to slow down, just like someone that was racing suddenly coming to a complete stop. If they did so then the energy and momentum in their attack would create a backlash against them and injure them instead.

The array diagram upon their sabers shined even brighter. The octopus-like sea monster roared out and slammed its tentacles at the stone gate.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Energy exploded. All of the attacks fell down on the stone gate. Wild shockwaves spread outwards, causing all the nearby stones to disintegrate.

The sea monster phantom that bore the brunt of this impact was torn apart!

As for that heavy stone gate, it merely shook a little without showing any signs of damage. After that, the array diagram atop the three Holy Lords’ sabers also cracked apart. Because they were too fast, all of them crashed into the stone gate. For a time, they were completely knocked senseless!

Puff!

The boss of the Four Wave Saints spat out a mouthful of blood. Although he hadn't been attacked just now, he had taken a rebound injury. This was like a person punching at a stone wall with all their strength. Although the wall would be fine, their hand would be injured.

"What happened!?"

This sudden change in events left the Holy Lords all perplexed and startled. The Holy Lord boss suddenly looked up in the sky to see a youth wrapped in a black cape.

This youth held a long spear. His build was ordinary, as was his appearance. His face was a bit yellow, making him seem like someone that would never be noticed in a crowd.

Without a doubt, the stone gate that came down just now had come from this person.

Chapter 1449 – Fighting the Four Saints

Chapter 1449 – Fighting the Four Saints

…

…

…

“Who are you?” The Four Wave Saints’ expressions changed as they saw this common-looking youth appear in front of them. He seemed quite young, but his first move was to put forth such a strange magic tool. It was unknown just what this magic tool was forged from but its defensive power was unmatched and unshakeable. Just by looking at it one could tell it was an extremely precious treasure.

Normally, they would have had thoughts of stealing it away, but if they were to fight now they would have to fight both Xiao Moxian and this strange youth together. That was a completely unwise decision.

“He is a human! Moreover, he is at… a Divine Transformation realm cultivation?”

“It doesn’t seem like he is that girl’s companion so he shouldn’t know what treasure she has on her. No one should know our whereabouts either.” One of the Four Wave Saints said. When Xiao Moxian had escaped Wave City she had undergone a void shift and escaped. Luckily, one of them had a rare tracking rune that was able to lock onto her position from afar.

There was an extremely small number of these tracking runes. Although it wasn’t just them who possessed one, the Four Wave Saints were sure that when Xiao Moxian escaped, there were no surrounding martial artists that had one on them.

As the Wave Boss looked at Xiao Moxian, he could tell from her expression that she didn't know just who this other person was.

As long as they weren't companions then everything would be much easier.

"Don't look down on him just because it seems he has a Divine Transformation realm cultivation. He could be using some sort of secret method to hide his cultivation. After all, he is definitely not a fool, and no one would attack someone clearly stronger than they are."

The Four Wave Saints didn't lower their guard because their enemy had a mere Divine Transformation realm cultivation.

The black-caped youth grasped his long spear and slowly floated down between the Four Tide Saints and Xiao Moxian. This youth was naturally Lin Ming.

After Lin Ming changed his appearance, not only did his looks become plain and ordinary but even his soul aura had been altered. Not even Xiao Moxian could see who he was.

"Friend, I advise you to not meddle in the business of others. In this Asura Road, we rule by the law of the jungle and the strong eat the weak. Those who can't mind their own affairs are likely to die! If you leave now then we might give you some benefits before we send you on your way, but if you insist on sticking yourself into this situation then don't blame us Four Wave Saints for being rude!"

The Wave Boss warned Lin Ming.

"Four Wave Saints?" Lin Ming's eyebrows arched upwards. It seemed that the martial artists of the Asura Road really preferred to form teams and give themselves some silly name. The Black Iron Ghost Triad he met before was also the same.

Lin Ming glanced over at Xiao Moxian. As he arrived, he saw Xiao Moxian burn her ancient phoenix blood to nearly kill one of the Four Wave Saints.

It had to be known that the Four Wave Saints were all Holy Lords; their cultivation could not be compared to that of the Black Iron Ghost Triad. If the four of them joined together, their strength would rise even further.

Even so, Xiao Moxian had been able to persist for such a long time and nearly kill one of them. The corpses that littered the ground all around were an alarming scene. These massive numbers of Divine Transformation and Divine Lord realm martial artists were all slain by Xiao Moxian. Their lives had been cut down with single strokes, their blood dyeing the stone and earth red.

This strength was absolutely bewildering.

“This is incredible, perhaps even that Imperial Prince Naqi isn’t any more talented than Xiao Moxian, but Xiao Moxian is also far younger than he is. A divine body seen only once every billion years is indeed extraordinary!”

Lin Ming was flabbergasted. In the great calamity, Xiao Moxian was sure to be a strong heroine who played a leading role.

“Who are you? Have we met before?”

Xiao Moxian’s true essence sound transmission echoed in Lin Ming’s ear. She didn’t recognize the Primordius Gate nor did she see through his changed appearance.

“There is no point in bothering with who I am. Let’s speak after we finish off these fools.”

Lin Ming’s voice had also changed, becoming thin and horse, not appealing to listen to at all.

Xiao Moxian grinned as she heard Lin Ming, revealing a pair of cute sharp fangs. However, these fangs were stained red with blood, giving off a sad and mournful beauty.

“Great!” Xiao Moxian raised her long whip. At this time, she was still able to laugh. Even though she was like an oil-less lamp just now, she had been able to restore some of her origin energy in this short period of time. It could only be said that a God Beast body was far too formidable.

"Friend, it seems you want to die no matter what!"

The Four Wave Saints could sense that Lin Ming wasn't ordinary at all, but at this time it was too late for them to give up on their goal.

They surrounded Lin Ming, but Lin Ming took this time to attack. As soon as he struck out, he did so with all his strength. His opponents were Holy Lords, and although they were weak Holy Lords, the three of them added together couldn't be underestimated.

Bang!

The Primordius Gate was sent hurtling forwards by Lin Ming once more. Its momentum was broad and glorious, like an endless avalanche!

"It's this stone gate again!"

The Four Wave Saints grimaced. "Don't try to defend against it. Spread out and attack him!"

The Wave Boss said with a sound transmission. His entire body erupted with astral essence and he rushed forwards like a slippery eel, circumventing the Primordius Gate to attack Lin Ming himself.

After all, he was still a Holy Lord powerhouse. When his saber slashed out, combined with his great mortal bodily strength, the saber wind was incomparably fierce and sharp. This saber strike could even shear a mountain in half.

However, even though the Wave Boss was fast, Lin Ming was even faster. Lin Ming's figure flickered as he revolved the Space and Time Laws, instantly shooting off towards the Third Wave Brother. The Phoenix Blood Spear thrust out and the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation twisted together atop the shaft.

Heavenly Dao Judgment!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Red and purple spear light surged, shrouding down towards the third brother with overwhelming momentum, blocking off all possible paths of escape.

As Xiao Moxian saw this, her eyes widened. A move that controlled the power of thunder and fire? This move seemed somewhat similar to that one fellow's techniques...

As Xiao Moxian thought of this, she didn't hold back either. The long whip in her hand slashed out like a viper towards the Second Wave Brother. Her physical state was very poor right now so she couldn't engage them in frontal combat, but to use some long-ranged attacks to siphon off the attention of one or two of them was possible.

"What fascinating strength. But what a pity, you still can't do anything to me."

The Third Wave Brother that was being covered by Heavenly Dao Judgment took out a green ruler from his spatial ring. This ruler immediately grew to ten feet long before he brought it pounding down, wanting to smash apart the power of heavenly tribulation.

But at this moment, from all around Lin Ming, a horrifying atmosphere spread outwards. This atmosphere was boundless and ancient, containing an incomparably suppressive feeling.

Grandmist space!

Hu – !

Star-heavy grandmist energy wrapped around the green ruler, instantly slowing it down. The potential within the attack also diminished rapidly.

"Mm!?"

The Third Wave Brother was shocked. This sudden change left him panicked.

“Be careful!”

The Wave Boss shouted. He wanted to move to help the Third Wave Brother but it was too late. With a loud rumbling explosion, the Third Wave Brother was struck by the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation. He soared backwards, his chest covered with red as he spat out great mouthfuls of blood!

His mortal body was powerful enough that he didn’t receive a fatal wound, but his combat strength dropped precipitously.

Behind Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian was watching all of this occur. She wasn’t placed within the grandmist space so she didn’t feel the suppressive aura directly, but she could still vaguely feel the aura of the Grandmist Great Dao. “This person… is also skilled in the Grandmist Laws?”

Chapter 1450 – This Place Shall be Your Grave

Chapter 1450 – This Place Shall be Your Grave

…

…

…

In Xiao Moxian's mind, the figure of Lin Ming inevitably appeared. Whether it was the power of thunder and fire or the Grandmist Laws, those were all abilities utilized by Lin Ming. This was especially true for the Grandmist Laws; very few people understood them. If one wished to learn them they would need an abnormally high perception in order to perceive the Grandmist Laws from chaos stones. After all, in this universe grandmist energy had nearly disappeared.

Even so, Xiao Moxian couldn't confirm that this youth in front of her was Lin Ming based on those abilities alone. In the end, this was the Asura Road and not the Divine Realm.

Xiao Moxian didn't know that Lin Ming had come to the Asura Road, and that Divine Dream, in order to protect Lin Ming, had kept his whereabouts an absolute secret. In addition, there were countless martial artists from the various universes here that studied every Law possible, so someone appearing that was similar to Lin Ming could occur.

Lin Ming's attacks became increasingly ruthless. He revolved his strength to the limit with every move, each move bearing down more and each move aiming to take a life. He was even stronger than Xiao Moxian. By himself in a one against three situation, he managed to suppress the three Wave Saints!

In terms of striking power the Four Wave Saints were powerful, and if they were to fight three against one, they shouldn't have been placed in such a disadvantageous position. However, Lin Ming had the Primordius Gate withstanding attacks for him.

The Primordius Gate was like an indestructible aegis. No matter how wild or brutal the attacks were, the impact would only cause a slight tremble.

"Let's break through this gate first!" The Wave Boss shouted out with a true essence sound transmission.

"How do we break it? Even a World King wouldn't be able to do anything to it. This stone gate must be an Empyrean spirit treasure!" Another one of the Wave Saints said. Out of the three of them still standing, their Third Wave Brother had already been severely wounded by Lin Ming's Heavenly Dao Judgment. Even speaking caused him to vomit blood.

"That's right, it is because it is an Empyrean spirit treasure that this boy shouldn't have been able to completely refine it! According to common sense, it should also be impossible for him to move this stone gate. It must be because this stone gate has a spirit of its own that is allowing the boy to control it. Even so, without the absolute control of a martial artist, this stone gate is in the end nothing but a lifeless object. As long as we can overcome this stone gate then we will win!"

The Wave Boss said. Then, he suddenly pulled out a black ghost banner and tossed it into the skies.

This ghost banner rose up with the wind, drawing demonic words in the air!

Wu – wu – wu –

Sad and shrill cries echoed out from the ghost banner. All sorts of resentful spirits began to stream out it. These spirits were personally killed by the Wave Boss and enslaved by him before being sealed into the ghost banner. Once they were taken out, their pained resentment soared to the heavens.

These resentful spirits gushed out like a tide. They didn't attack Lin Ming but instead rushed towards the Primordius Gate!

"Mm?"

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. This sort of tactic was a bit surprising.

Hu –

A massive number of tortured spirits screamed out, hurtling towards the stone gate without a care for their existence!

The Primordius Gate contained the aura of the Grandmist Laws. Once these spirits rushed towards it they would be torn apart by the Grandmist Laws. However, they continued on no matter the cost, tens and hundreds of thousands of them wrapping around the Primordius Gate!

As the Wave Boss saw the resentful spirits he refined perishing in droves, he felt his heart drip with blood. But at this time, he didn't have the luxury to care about it anymore.

As long as he killed this youth, he could obtain his treasures. Moreover, he would be able to obtain that charming young woman and her zenith black level reward!

This was a great temptation. With these treasures he could leap up to the heavens in a single bound!

"Take this opportunity to attack him!"

The Wave Saints shouted out loud. Runes began to shimmer all over their bodies; these were the god runes unique to the Asura Road!

The god runes of the Asura Road, besides the special functions they had, could greatly increase a martial artist's strength every time a complete set was gathered.

“Master, be careful! These people have gathered three sets of gold runes and half a set of blue soul runes. They are considered the highest peak two-star Asuras and can enjoy the blessings of heightened strength from the Asura Road!”

Soulwhite warned from within Lin Ming’s spatial ring.

Lin Ming’s eyebrows arched up. This situation was becoming somewhat tricky. These Wave Saints were originally skilled to begin with, and now with the god runes increasing their strength they would become even more difficult to deal with. It wasn’t a problem for Lin Ming to fight a weak Holy Lord, but now there were three of them, all stronger than average. If Lin Ming wanted to kill them all off then that would be difficult.

After all, as long as they separated and escaped then there wouldn’t be anything that he could do. If he couldn’t eliminate them all here then they would reveal Xiao Moxian’s location, bringing about even greater troubles!

Dealing with several weak Holy Lords was already Lin Ming’s limit. If he had to deal with a World King then there was no chance for him to win.

Moreover, because those resentful spirits had wrapped themselves around the Primordius Gate, it would be hard for him to move it for some time. This was the weakness of him being unable to completely refine the Primordius Gate. Because of that, he was only able to treat the Primordius Gate as a shield and not as the immeasurably powerful Empyrean spirit treasure that it was. Otherwise, if Lin Ming had fully refined it then he would have been able to erupt the energy contained within with just a thought and cause all those hateful spirits to disintegrate instantly.

“Master, you also have god runes. Although they aren’t complete they are still zenith black level runes. If you summon their power within your body with an arcane technique then you can also increase your strength. Rising half a small boundary in strength shouldn’t be a problem at all.

“Oh?”

Lin Ming was surprised. The two runes could increase his strength by half a small boundary?

Lin Ming was already at the peak of the middle Divine Transformation realm. If he increased his cultivation by half a small boundary then that would almost be the equivalent of entering the late Divine Transformation realm!

“The Asura Road takes god runes as manifestations of the Laws and they are things created by the Asura Road Master. The zenith black runes that Master obtained are extremely rare. Using them to rise half a small boundary shouldn’t be a problem at all.”

As Soulwhite spoke, Lin Ming had already started pouring his true essence into the god runes. For a time, from between his eyebrows and on his right hand, faint red-black runes began to shine.

Black and red were the colors of zenith black runes!

As the Wave Saints saw Lin Ming’s body began to radiate a black and red light, they were shocked.

“This is…”

“Zenith black runes? How is that possible!?”

Zenith black runes were normally something that only City Lord level characters possessed. Moreover, the zenith black runes they had were usually of a lower realm. But, the two zenith black runes shining on Lin Ming’s body both blazed with a divine light, emitting an extraordinary and terrifying aura.

Behind Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian also saw the bright shimmer of these zenith black runes. She had already been at the Asura Road for long enough that she understood what this red and black light meant.

“Who is he?”

Xiao Moxian's large eyes widened until they were like brilliant black gems. She couldn't stop looking at Lin Ming as she took an increasing interest towards him.

She really wanted to know what the answers to her questions were but she didn't ask. Xiao Moxian had a childlike innocence and naiveté. The more she wanted to know something the less she would ask about it. Instead, she would investigate herself; only then was it fun.

"This brat!"

The Wave Saints felt the situation become increasingly messy. This boy was so young and yet he possessed zenith black level runes. They suspected that Lin Ming had an unfathomably deep background.

However, they had already tossed their lives into the ring and it was impossible for them to retreat. The greater background a person had the more ruthless they had to be in utterly exterminating them. They didn't even think that Lin Ming would ever let them go.

"Attack together! We must kill him!"

The Wave Saints drew out their sabers and attacked. Three sabers gathered as one, their strength instantly increasing by several times. They joined together the power from the god runes as they attacked Lin Ming; this was their strongest attack!

"Line of the Deep Sea!"

A terrifying power erupted, rushing forth like a raging tsunami. From behind the Wave Saints, the sea monster phantom that attacked Xiao Moxian appeared once more, hurtling towards Lin Ming.

"Master, be careful!"

Soulwhite cried out in alarm. Although Lin Ming was talented, his cultivation was simply too low. If he had to resist the strongest attack of these Wave Saints that were two large boundaries higher in cultivation than he was, then that was simply a crazy decision.

Xiao Moxian was also worried for Lin Ming. Without caring for the exhaustion that wracked her body, she slashed out her whip, hoping to reduce the pressure on him.

As for Lin Min Ming, he remained calm and unhurried.

His soul force reached into his inner world and a dark gray light howled out!

“Your tactics were good, but unfortunately, I have more than this stone gate.”

As Lin Ming spoke, there was a loud metallic ring, a gong that originated from the most primeval era, bringing with it the endless breath of the Great Dao Laws. A heavy and ancient bell suddenly fell down from up high, covering Lin Ming within it.

This ancient bell exuded a vast and boundless aura. The surface of the bell was carved with images of flowers and creatures, phoenixes and dragons, leviathans and rocs, and even dao patterns similar to those of chaos stones.

This was the Primordius Bell, another one of the Empyrean spirit treasures that Empyrean Primordius had left behind for Lin Ming. When Lin Ming first entered Primordius Palace, he had knelt in front of this ancient bell for three years, fully perceiving the highest truths of the Great Dao contained within, using this bell to directly refine the Primordius martial intent!

The attacks of the Wave Saints completely fell onto the Primordius Bell!

Clang!

The Primordius Bell was rung by the attacks of the three people. A visible sound wave radiated out in response, causing space to tremble. Within this horrifying bell sound, everything was crushed.

Wherever the sound wave went, the ground collapsed and mountains were destroyed. The Wave Saints bore the brunt of this attack. Their blood swelled up within their bodies, tumbling about, nearly causing them to fall from the skies!

Their saber lights as well as that roaring sea monster had all completely exploded into bits, turning into nothing.

Not only had their attacks failed against Lin Ming, but they had been struck by the sound wave of the Primordius Bell, causing them to suffer a severe wound from the backlash!

“What do we do!”

“What kind of magic tool is this!?”

A trace of blood spilled out of the Wave Boss’ mouth. With great difficulty he suppressed the roiling blood within his body. But at this time, he saw a giant bell come falling down on him from above.

In the next moment, they were all covered inside of that ancient bell.

“This is bad!”

The Wave Boss was bewildered. Without a doubt, this ancient bell was also an Empyrean spirit treasure!

Just by attacking it, the reverberating shockwave had caused such massive damage. If someone were actually able to activate this ancient bell then they could likely extinguish a person’s body and soul!

“Push away this bell and fly away! It’s impossible for this human boy to truly control this bell; it must also be a lifeless object! As long as we don’t strike it we won’t suffer a backlash.”

The Wave Boss instantly judged. As a Holy Lord level powerhouse, he had a rich depth of combat experience.

But at this moment, the space in front of them distorted and a black-caped youth stepped out!

Lin Ming had actually entered the space covered by the Primordius Bell. Now, within this mere 100 foot radius of space, there were four people!

What sort of concept was 100 feet to a top master? That was the same as being face to face!

“None of you will leave here! This place shall be your graveyard!”

Lin Ming’s expression was coldly indifferent as he raised the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Chapter 1451 – Back to the Wall

Chapter 1451 – Back to the Wall

…

…

…

“This damned brat!”

The Wave Saints were shocked. Their first thought was that this boy in front of them had gone out of his mind. For four masters to fight within a small 100 foot radius space, that was no different from melee combat. It would be difficult to use any moves and one would barely have enough time to attack, much less defend. This was a suicidal method of fighting! Even a saint race martial artist wouldn’t choose such a violent and extreme method of fighting. They would leave some space between them and their opponents so that there was a reaction buffer time.

Moreover, Lin Ming was a human and humans focused on the essence gathering system. What they specialized in were long-distance attacks. Even though the Wave Saints saw that Lin Ming dual cultivated in body and energy, he was still nothing but a human. How could a human compare with a saint?

Not just that, but within this sealed space, any explosion of energy would be increased by several times! This was a completely desperate combat tactic.

“Brat, do you want to die!?”

“He’s dug his own grave, let’s kill him together!”

Just as the three Holy Lord powerhouses were about to attack, a sharp light flashed in Lin Ming's eyes. The grandmist space suddenly erupted as it flooded the entirety of the Primordius Bell!

Om -! Om -!

Grandmist energy spread out, bounced back again and again by the Primordius Bell, its strength constantly superimposing. In that instant, the power of Lin Ming's grandmist space increased by several times!

Not just that, but the Primordius Bell forcefully condensed the grandmist space, causing the power of this force field to become far more formidable!

It had to be known that when Lin Ming was in Primordius Heavenly Palace perceiving the Primordius martial intent, he had done so by kneeling within the Primordius Bell and withstanding the horrifying pressure of grandmist energy! For three whole years, Lin Ming had withstood an immeasurable degree of pressure.

And now, Lin Ming had released the grandmist space to the limit. Its power constantly increased beneath the shimmering dao patterns of the Primordius Bell. He planned to engage the Wave Saints in a brutal battle beneath this suffocating pressure!

"What is this!?"

"What a terrifying pressure!"

The Wave Saints' complexions changed. Trapped within this space with the heavy pressure crashing down on them, they were able to display less than half their strength.

"Don't let this brat take the initiative. We must forego all defense to attack and kill him!"

Three sabers chopped down on Lin Ming!

In an all-out attack situation, within a 100 foot radius of space, Lin Ming had nowhere to dodge! This was because those blazing saber lights had already covered all the space within the Primordius Bell!

Lin Ming's tactic could be said to be fighting with his back against the wall; this was a do or die situation. In order to create a situation where he could display his greatest degree of strength, he had also fallen into great danger!

But, the advantage of this was that every escape route was cut off, including even his own. There was no one that would be able to run away from this small battlefield. Even if someone were skilled in the Space Laws, it would still be impossible for them to escape at such a close distance and with such a powerful force field suppressing them.

In the violent combat within the Primordius Bell, only one side would emerge alive.

Lin Ming had chosen this tactic in order to stop the four Wave Saints from escaping. Otherwise, there was no way he would be able to keep all three of them from fleeing.

Lin Ming's eyes were grim. At this moment, a walnut-sized black sphere spun out from his inner world; this was Lin Ming's black hole seed!

A black hole was the most peaceful and also most terrifying celestial body in the universe. In a radius of 100 feet, the might created by summoning this black hole seed was hard to imagine.

In that moment, all of the energy within the Primordius Bell was sucked into the black hole seed. This included even the power of space and time, leaving distortions all around. With a massive gravitational force used within this small space, any movement would consume an incalculable amount of strength. When this was combined with the dreadfully heavy suppression of the grandmist space, the Wave Saints' three sabers came to a screeching halt as if they had fallen into a swamp. All of the saber light was being sucked into that black hole seed.

"What is this!?"

“Shit! Do you really plan on dying together!?”

As the black hole seed appeared, the Wave Boss felt a chill shoot up his back. He instantly realized just how dangerous this move was. In this sealed space, if the force field and that black sphere were to collide with their ultimate attacks then the resulting explosion would contain an unimaginable destructive power.

Lin Ming himself would also have to withstand heavy injuries.

At this time they couldn’t dodge even if they wanted to. And if they didn’t attack and only Lin Ming did, then they would be left in an even more miserable state!

“Stop! Stop! Are you insane!?”

“You want to die together with us!?”

Lin Ming ignored all their shouts. The black hole seed he summoned shot towards the Wave Saints!

Eternal Darkness!

As the Wave Saints saw this life-reaping black hole seed fly towards them, they all fiercely clenched their teeth and slashed out with their sabers. Their saber lights collided with Eternal Darkness!

Bang!

A horrifying explosion sounded out in that sealed space. Divine light wantonly fired off into the walls of the Primordius Bell, bouncing back and forth with an even more terrifying potential!

That tyrannical shock wave along with that dangerous force field was enough to tear everything to pieces. Even a martial artist’s body was no exception.

Although Lin Ming had absolute confidence in his defensive abilities, even he didn't dare to use his own body to directly withstand such an attack!

Thus, the moment that Lin Ming hurtled out Eternal Darkness, he also summoned the Primordius Heavenly Palace from within his inner world!

Primordius Heavenly Palace contained spatial array formations. It could be shrunk or enlarged and was an indestructible fortress. This was Lin Ming's own safety shelter.

However, 100 feet was simply far too short a distance and the explosion was far too fast. Even though Lin Ming had summoned the Primordius Heavenly Palace when he had attacked, he was still struck by the wild shock wave as he was entering it!

Peng!

With a dull thump, Lin Ming felt as if he was struck in the back by a billion jin divine hammer. All of his blood vessels, muscles, and organs seemed as if they would explode. He was sent flying forwards before smashing into a wall of Primordius Heavenly Palace.

Bang!

Lin Ming bounced on the ground. He felt his blood vitality tumble within his body and his vision turn dark.

At the same time, the Primordius Bell also shot up from the ground because of that gigantic explosion. However, the Primordius Bell was far too heavy and there was also a massive amount of grandmist energy contained within, making it as heavy as a small planet. Thus, it didn't bounce too high.

On the contrary, the earth beneath the Primordius Bell suddenly sunk down and all of the land for several miles was blown away by the impact like a giant meteor had crashed into the ground as the shock wave spread outwards. Not too far away from the Primordius Bell, Xiao Moxian was startled. She revolved her true essence to the limit and wrapped herself with her remaining wing to protect her body.

Clang!

A thunderous bell peal rang into the heavens!

Xiao Moxian was sent flying backwards as she received a light shaking injury. The main problem was that she had been too heavily wounded from before so she found it a bit difficult to resist this shock wave.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Mountains collapsed and rivers were forced to change course. Several surrounding mountains were flattened by this shock wave and numerous frightened people and vicious beasts were sent tumbling through the skies. The Wave Saint that Xiao Moxian had nearly killed before exploded into a mass of bloody fog underneath this shock wave!

As Xiao Moxian saw this, she was well aware just what had happened, and she also correctly guessed how that shock wave was produced. Within the Primordius Bell, Lin Ming and the remaining Wave Saints must have all used their finishing blows in a frigid final battle.

Even in the outside, such a dreadful collision of finishing blows would cause near-fatal injuries. And within the limited space of the Primordius Bell, the destructive power of that collision would be increased by several times!

Even though Lin Ming dual cultivated body and energy, and even though his defensive abilities were extremely high, if he were still sucked into that sort of explosion he would inevitably suffer a miserable fate. After all, when exchanging finishing blows like that, both parties would use at least 90% of their energy to attack, so where would they have the strength left to defend?

“Hey! Hey! Don’t you dare die!” Xiao Moxian shouted out in panic as she saw the Primordius Bell still shaking.

“Stop scaring me, I haven’t even figured out who you are! You can’t die like this, I don’t want to owe anyone any favors!” Xiao Moxian ran over to the Primordius Bell. Someone she had never met before had suddenly rescued her. If this mysterious person had even paid with his life then Xiao Moxian would be at a loss for what to do.

And at this time, within Primordius Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming was wiping the blood from the corners of his lips. He stood up and looked down at himself. His clothes and battle armor beneath it had completely broken apart. But, this was only a minor problem. He waved his hand, forming new clothing with energy.

He had received some minor wounds on his back that weren’t too serious. This was because he hadn’t been made to withstand too much of the impact, and also because the zenith black god rune, the Protection of God, had provided him with a considerable increase to his defensive abilities.

“What a fearsome strike.”

Lin Ming flew out from Primordius Heavenly Palace. He reached out his hand and Primordius Heavenly Palace rapidly spun as it shrank before flying back into his inner world.

And around Lin Ming, there was nothing but bits and pieces of flesh and blood everywhere. The Wave Saints couldn’t be any deader than this.

The explosive effects of the black hole seed in such a small and sealed off space had surpassed Lin Ming’s imagination. The Wave Saints had likely never imagined that this was possible. The Wave Boss and Third Wave Brother were from the saint race, and their mortal bodies were tenacious enough that they left behind pieces of their bodies. But as for the Wave Second Brother, he had become puddles of goo.

At the middle Divine Transformation realm, Lin Ming had eliminated three Holy Lords!

This sort of battle success would have caused even the Good Fortune Saint Son to drop his chin in shock.

Of course, Lin Ming had been able to accomplish this mostly because of the treasures that Empyrean Primordius had left behind to him. If they had fought outside of the Primordius Bell, then even though Lin Ming would have been able to defeat them after several rounds of combat, it wouldn't have been possible for him to kill them.

"I wonder at what time I'll be able to kill three Holy Lords without relying on external objects or traps, and just with my strength alone. Only then will it be considered fierce enough."

As Lin Ming was thinking to himself, he suddenly heard someone knocking on the Primordius Bell.

"Hey you! Black cape boy! Are you still alive in there? Don't scare me like this! Damn, how could this bell be so heavy!"

Xiao Moxian poured her true essence into the Primordius Bell but found it hard to lift. This surprised her. Even though she was injured, she could still use her true essence to lift a large mountain, but now she couldn't even lift this ancient 100 foot bell.

"Agh! It's so heavy!" Xiao Moxian finally raised up a side of the Primordius Bell.

As Lin Ming saw this he was even more startled. The Primordius Bell contained a great deal of grandmist energy within it. Even for him, he would need to expend a great deal of strength and effort if he wanted to lift the Primordius Bell without utilizing the Grandmist Laws.

For Xiao Moxian to use brute force to accomplish this proved just how abnormally strong she was.

Lin Ming stretched out a finger and poured his Grandmist Laws into the bell. In the next moment, the Primordius Bell floated upwards.

Chapter 1452 – Team

Chapter 1452 – Team

…

…

…

Outside of the Primordius Bell, Xiao Moxian felt this ancient bell she was struggling to lift suddenly lighten and float upwards, leaving her surprised. Was there really someone alive inside?

In this sort of situation, Xiao Moxian didn't think that the young man who rescued her would be able to survive. Even if he luckily lived through that explosion, his entire body would be drenched in blood and he would be near the point of death.

Although she said that, Xiao Moxian didn't think that someone she never met before would sacrifice their life to randomly save her. If he dared to enter this bell then he should have some method to live.

Thinking of this, Xiao Moxian quickly took out live-saving pills from her spatial ring to prepare to save him. These pills even included a transcendent divine pill that was especially prepared by Empyrean Demondawn to save her life.

However, when the Primordius Bell completely floated upwards, Xiao Moxian was shocked as she saw the scene within.

There were scattered pieces of flesh and blood everywhere as well as broken bits of sabers. Standing amongst these bloody ruins was the black-caped youth. He didn't seem wounded at all and still had a calm appearance as before, as if he had been uninvolved in the vicious battle within the ancient bell.

Xiao Moxian's jaw dropped, her overly large eyes becoming even rounder. "You... you aren't injured at all?"

Xiao Moxian couldn't help but admit that at this moment, Lin Ming was exuding a brave and dashing air, unfathomable like a sea, where it was impossible to tell just where the limits of his strength were. If it weren't for his yellowed skin and ordinary looks, if he were just a bit more handsome, then he could be described as a perfect young heroic elite.

"Hey you... are you okay?" Xiao Moxian's two fingers continued to twitch. She wanted to walk up and touch Lin Ming, to see if he would strangely fall apart once he was touched.

"I'm fine, but you should hurry and take some medicine. It isn't safe to be injured in this Asura Road's Great Desolate."

Lin Ming faintly said. Xiao Moxian was sincerely convinced of this youth's tenacity. In the end, she was the one who needed medicine more. Just what sort of feed had this farm animal eaten that he grew up so fierce?

Xiao Moxian undid her Phoenix Trueform body transformation. With half a wing broken, even though she possessed a heaven-defying God Beast body she still had to take some time to heal herself. After swallowing down some pills, Xiao Moxian sprinkled some valuable golden healing powder on her wounds. As she did this she would occasionally glance over at Lin Ming, her eyes filling with curiosity.

"Hey, you're really amazing, do you have some sort of special physique? In that bell, what sort of technique did you use to block the impact of all that energy?

"Hey, are you one of those martial artists that are born in the Asura Road? I see that your cultivation is at the middle Divine Transformation realm, how old are you?"

Xiao Moxian was like a curious child. She immediately asked many questions.

When Lin Ming was in the Primordius Bell, he had used Eternal Darkness. However, because he was hidden within the bell, Xiao Moxian hadn't seen this, otherwise she would have been able to confirm his identity.

Heavenly Dao Judgment, Grandmist Laws, in addition to Eternal Darkness, when these three things were added together it was more than a coincidence.

Lin Ming didn't even have time to respond to this barrage of questions before Xiao Moxian giggled, "You remind me of this one abnormal fellow I knew before, hmm… well, I mean that he was so strong that it was abnormal."

Lin Ming wouldn't have been surprised at all if Xiao Moxian recognized who he was. Although he could change his appearance and his soul aura, he couldn't change his techniques.

Then, a little bag that hung on Xiao Moxian's waist suddenly wiggled, as if there was something that was struggling to climb out.

Xiao Moxian seemed to recall something. She chuckled and then opened the bag. This bag was only the size of a fist but after it opened, a little furry ball came rolling out.

Lin Ming was stunned. As he fixed his eyes on this ball, he saw that it was a little yellow dog. Its entire body was plump and round and looked extremely cute.

As this little yellow dog appeared it began to whine towards Xiao Moxian several times, like the howls of a baby wolf.

"Big Yellow you are being naughty again. I already said that you are too young so you can't fight yet. Be a good little boy and stay in the beast bag." Xiao Moxian said.

Lin Ming was bewildered. This round yellow puppy was Xiao Moxian's contract beast?

Xiao Moxian came from Demondawn Heavenly Palace and was a proud daughter of heaven. Just what sort of contract beast would she have?

Just by looking at this ‘Big Yellow’ in front of him, it was hard to imagine what sort of bloodline a round little puppy like this had.

“That’s right Big Yellow, this brother here has saved us. About that...” Xiao Moxian suddenly turned to Lin Ming. “You’re quite fierce. The two of us should form a team together. Don’t worry, I am also very fierce. I won’t drag you down.”

Xiao Moxian sincerely said. As she spoke she unconsciously revealed the tips of her canines, making one think that she was up to no good.

“Form a team?” Lin Ming was stunned. Forming a team was actually quite a good idea, but how would any loot be divided? Normally, one would obtain one rune or perhaps two. Collecting a full set of runes wasn’t easy to begin with, much less two complete sets.

At this time, Soulwhite had already guessed what Lin Ming was thinking. “Master, it’s common for martial artists to form teams in the Asura Road. The Four Wave Saints were also the same.”

As Soulwhite spoke, Lin Ming recalled his adventure so far in the Asura Road. Indeed, he seldom saw solo martial artists. Not to mention the Four Wave Saints, but even the roving gangs of bandits, the Black Iron Ghost Triad, or the various teams in the Great Desolate were in the same situation.

Forming a team had clear advantages in the chaotic Asura Road. Whether it was combat strength or survivability, it was far superior to that of a single person.

“If we form a team and obtain god runes, how would we divide them?” Lin Ming asked. Then, Soulwhite replied with an unexpected answer.

Soulwhite said, “There is an easy solution. Normally, when martial artists collect god runes it isn’t to complete sets but to sell them for resources. If so, then you can divide the resources equally.

“For extreme geniuses like Master who are gathering complete sets of god runes to participate in the final trial, then that can also be done by several people together. Completing one set of god runes is enough because out of the many god runes, there is one called ‘Transmission Connection’ that can form a complete set. There are five god runes in this set and it allows a person, no matter how far they are, to directly transmit themselves to another person’s side. In this way, a team can continue into the final trial together. Moreover, within the Asura Road there are many missions that are far easier when done in a team.”

“So there’s something like that…” Lin Ming said, a bit dumbfounded. It seemed that these god runes had many mystical and wonderful uses that he had yet to learn. During his battle with the Four Wave Saints, Lin Ming had felt some of the benefits of having god runes.

“Master, don’t let the runes of those Four Wave Saints go to waste.”

“Mm.”

Lin Ming nodded. He stepped in front of the Primordius Bell and put it away with a wave of his hand. Underneath the Primordius Bell, vague god runes were already shimmering above the ruined corpses of the Wave Saints. These god runes were mostly at the gold level.

Lin Ming waved his hand and received all of them.

The Four Wave Saints had three complete sets of gold runes and half a set of blue soul runes. But, these blue soul runes were the worst grade of all blue soul runes.

All of these runes were taken by Lin Ming. The runes that were taken from the bodies of others could be used to participate in the final trial after they were completed, but they couldn’t be used to grant himself the title of Asura. In order to become an Asura he had to gain runes obtained from missions. Currently, Lin Ming wasn’t even a one-star Asura.

“In order to enter the final trial I’ll need to gather 36 complete sets of god runes. Are any of these three sets of gold runes part of the 36 required sets?” Lin Ming asked.

Soulwhite shook his head, saying with regret, “I fear that master will be disappointed. The 36 complete sets of god runes required to open the final trial are all extremely rare runes, but these runes are very common.”

“Mm… I didn’t think it would be so easy either.”

As Lin Ming was speaking, Xiao Moxian took out some food from her spatial ring to feed the small yellow puppy. The little yellow puppy hummed in happiness, its cries very lovable. Even so, Lin Ming could recognize that there was a great strength within this tiny dog that had yet to develop.

“Hey, I owe you a life, but my life is really valuable so let’s say I owe you a great favor instead.” Xiao Moxian glanced over at Lin Ming. “What should I call you?”

Lin Ming pondered for a moment. As he was considering whether it was necessary to hide his identity from Xiao Moxian, he perked up. He turned around and looked towards the distant horizon. There was a young martial artist flying towards him at breakneck speed.

This youth was from the monster race. If he dared to brazenly fly in the skies above the Great Desolate then he was either impatient enough that it was worth the risk or he had the capital to do so.

Chapter 1453 – Yet Another Monster Prince

Chapter 1453 – Yet Another Monster Prince

…

…

…

Seeing this young man fly in from the distant skies, Lin Ming put down any idea of revealing his true identity.

In Lin Ming's opinion, it really wasn't necessary to reveal his identity to Xiao Moxian, and towards someone unknown, he wouldn't casually reveal something vital like it.

Looking at Xiao Moxian's expression, it seemed as if she knew who this monster youth was.

This person also seemed to come from the Divine Realm; was he Xiao Moxian's companion?

Just as this thought flashed through Lin Ming's mind, his suspicions were immediately confirmed.

"Junior-apprentice Sister, I've found you!"

The youth fell down at a quick speed, causing a wave of dust and smoke to rise up.

"Junior-apprentice Sister, are you safe!?"

The youth who flew here wore blue clothes, and although he wasn't too handsome, he had an extraordinary temperament; he was definitely an outstanding genius.

“I’m fine.” Xiao Moxian’s expression was lukewarm as she spoke to this senior-apprentice brother of hers. This caused Lin Ming to be a bit confused. This youth should have arrived at the Asura Road with Xiao Moxian, so how come he was safe but Xiao Moxian had been besieged instead? Had they been forced to scatter because they were being chased?

“Is Old Blue okay?” Xiao Moxian asked. The Old Blue she referred to was an old monster race man who was responsible for acting as Xiao Moxian’s guardian in this adventure through the Asura Road.

That monster race old man himself had a Great World King cultivation.

After Xiao Moxian’s incident in Wave City, the old monster race man had fought the Wave City Lord in a brutal battle. When Xiao Moxian escaped, the two of them had still been fighting.

The monster youth said, “Old Blue severely wounded the Wave City Lord, but he was also injured himself. Although that Wave City Lord is weaker than Old Blue, he had many god runes and was supported by the Laws of the Asura Road, so he was able to injure Old Blue too. Although Old Blue doesn’t have any life-threatening injuries, he… he was marked with a tracking god rune by the Wave City Lord. This sort of mark can only be undone with a corresponding unbinding god rune, and that sort of god rune is extremely rare so it will be difficult for Old Blue to find one for some time. Old Blue is safe and that Wave City Lord won’t be looking for him to fight, but if he were to come here then you would also be discovered by the Wave City Lord. For the treasure you obtained, the Wave City Lord will definitely take any risk to lead his subordinates to you!”

The Asura Road’s god runes possessed Laws far beyond the control of any Empyrean. The rules they established were completely beyond the influence of a Great World King powerhouse. Before this Old Blue was able to find the corresponding god rune to unbind the tracking rune on him, the Wave City Lord would be able to find out where he was. If Old Blue were to return to Xiao Moxian’s side, that would instead place her in even greater danger.

“Oh, so it’s like that?” When Xiao Moxian heard that Old Blue wouldn’t be around to protect her anymore, not only was she not worried, but she became even more excited. A faint hint of elation rose in her eyes. “And?”

“Mm… according to what Old Blue said, due to security reasons, he wants us to return first. We are only at the edge of the Asura Road so returning to the Divine Realm shouldn’t be difficult at all. Once we recover we can return here and continue adventuring. This method will be safer and we’ll also be more prepared next time. Junior-apprentice Sister, what do you think?”

Xiao Moxian was the precious child of the monster race and Demondawn bloodline. When Old Blue came to the Asura Road, he was willing to sacrifice his life to protect Xiao Moxian. But now that he was injured and also had a tracking mark placed on him, there was no way he could continue to protect her. He was afraid that Xiao Moxian would have some accident, thus this was all he could do.

“I don’t want to go back.” Xiao Moxian devilishly smiled. “That’s perfect, I wanted to adventure through the Asura Road myself to begin with. What’s the point of adventuring if I’m going to be monitored at every moment? Do you think I came here for vacation?”

For a genius to grow, they had to experience the pressure of true life or death battles. Moreover, Xiao Moxian naturally had adventurous and wild blood running through her veins. If she didn’t take risks she wouldn’t be at ease. Now that she knew she could go through the Asura Road by herself, she was naturally much more excited.

“Junior-apprentice Sister, please don’t speak so carelessly. Although a genius truly does need pressure to grow, you are different from those common geniuses. Your body has half of a God Beast bloodline and you are the descendant of a true God Beast. Even if you only ate and slept every day without doing anything at all you would reach the realm of an Empyrean sooner or later!

"There is just no need for you to take such a great risk to come adventuring. As long as you live a calm and diligent life and adventure under the protection of your elders, you can still easily become an extreme Empyrean."

The monster youth was extremely worried as he saw how eager Xiao Moxian was to travel through the Asura Road alone. He immediately cautioned her.

However, Xiao Moxian naturally hated following the rules of others to begin with, so why would she listen to his advice? "Humph, who cares about an extreme Empyrean? I already said that I will become a True Divinity in the future, and that is only the barest minimum. You can hurry up and return by yourself; don't bother me anymore."

Xiao Moxian dismissively waved her hand, hinting for the monster youth to leave post-haste.

The monster youth was left speechless. Become a True Divinity, and that was also the 'barest minimum'? This junior-apprentice sister of his had ambitions that were far too high!

He ruefully smiled and then embarrassingly said, "Junior-apprentice Sister, you are being too mischievous. If something happens to you, how can I explain that to grandfather? Then again…"

"Hey! Stop being so nagging, you're just like some old lady. Do you still have something you need to say? If not then we're going to leave first." Xiao Moxian broke apart the monster youth's argument. She raised her chin towards Lin Ming, indicating for them to leave.

The monster youth's smile froze on his face. This was an extremely embarrassing matter for him. He was one of the most outstanding young elites of the monster race and also one of the likely candidates to be the next Monster Emperor. Otherwise, how could he have been able to enter the Asura Road with Xiao Moxian to adventure together?

But now, he had been labeled a nagging old lady by Xiao Moxian. How could he feel comfortable about this?

“Junior-apprentice Sister, since ancient times the truth has never been easy to hear. I...” As the monster youth spoke to here he suddenly realized something. He turned to Lin Ming and said, “Wait, who are you?”

The monster youth had naturally noticed Lin Ming, who wasn’t standing too far from Xiao Moxian. But after he glanced over his humble and common appearance as well as his Divine Transformation realm cultivation, he didn’t pay further attention to him. But now, Xiao Moxian wanted to go through the Asura Road and also bring this shabby-looking young man with her?

And most importantly of all, he was a human.

As someone born of the monster race, he was raised with a negative impression of humans. He didn’t want Xiao Moxian to have too much contact with humans at all.

Moreover, he also knew that this junior-apprentice sister of his had an extremely high-handed mind and normally didn’t have a liking for anyone. Now, she didn’t even want him to accompany her as she traveled through the Asura Road, so why would she bring this boy with her? Just what specialty did this young man have? He had been together with Xiao Moxian for most of the time, so where had this unknown boy suddenly come from and why did the two of them seem to be on good terms with each other?

Lin Ming originally didn’t have any plans to bother responding to this monster youth, but then he also saw Xiao Moxian curiously looking at him. It was obvious that he would need to reply to this question sooner or later, so he simply said, “My name is Lin Lanjian.”

Lin Lanjian was the name that Lin Ming had used before when he entered the Four Divine Kingdoms and was being chased down by the Asura Divine Kingdom.

“Lin Lanjian? So your surname is also Lin? You have the same last name as that abnormal fellow I know.”

Xiao Moxian couldn’t help but inevitably form these associations.

Her senior-apprentice brother frowned, grumpily saying, “Junior-apprentice Sister, you plan on journeying through the Asura Road and you want to go with this young man too?”

“Why do you care so much about what I want to do?”

“Of course I have to care. This person comes from unknown origins and there is nothing we know about him. All we know is that he is a human, and you should know that humans are greedy and deceitful liars. In these last several billions of years, how many great wars have erupted within the Divine Realm between humanity and us monsters? How many of our people have died? This is because humans have always lusted after our resources!”

The monster youth had no goodwill towards humans. He didn’t hold anything back as he spoke out loud in front of Lin Ming, the same as cursing Lin Ming to his face.

This caused Lin Ming to frown. In truth, Lin Ming also acknowledged that humans were a truly greedy and deceitful race, but the other races were no exception. The saints, the monsters, the demons, all of them were the same.

Lin Ming coldly said, “There is no need to speak so high-handedly as if you are any better or more noble than everyone else. There are wars between every race. Are you trying to say that you have never attacked others for their resources before?”

Lin Ming’s words were forceful and aggressive, each one drawing blood. The monster youth couldn’t refute them. It was true; in many mystic realms he had attacked others for their treasures. Then again, it should be said that this was common amongst all martial artists.

“There’s no point in endlessly arguing… Lin Lanjian, let’s go. Where did you say you wanted to go?” Xiao Moxian clearly didn’t like this monster youth minding her matters. Towards this senior-apprentice brother who constantly badgered and pestered her, she had no liking at all.

“I’m going to Precipice Cliff, the Emperor Stone.” Lin Ming stated his destination.

"That's such a coincidence! I also have to go there. Do you have a mission there?"

"Yes."

"I also have a mission." Xiao Moxian chuckled, no longer bothering speaking with her senior-apprentice brother and instead walking away with Lin Ming.

The left behind senior-apprentice brother had an incomparably ugly expression.

He had flown so far to get here and had found Xiao Moxian after such great difficulties, but she had slammed the door in his face. Moreover, he had no idea what sort of potion this sorry-looking fellow had brewed to make her form a team with him.

How could he be willing to endure this?

The monster youth grit his teeth and began stepping forwards.

"You want to come too?" Xiao Moxian asked the monster youth.

"Humph, I also have a mission at Precipice Cliff's Emperor Stone, so why can't I take this road?"

Although he had no choice, he couldn't allow Xiao Moxian and this black-caped fellow to wander off together. How could he not worry about what would happen?

"Boy, just who are you? Are you a native martial artist of the Asura Road?" The monster youth asked Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission.

"Think what you will." Lin Ming said, not caring much.

"Hah! What fine words! No one has spoken to me like that in a long time. Do you even know what status she has?" The monster youth concluded that Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had just met so he must not know what her true identity was.

Without Lin Ming's reply, the monster youth said, "The girl standing next to you is the direct bloodline descendant of an Empyrean and she has a heaven-defying talent. As for me, I am also the direct bloodline descendant of an Empyrean; my grandfather is the Monster Emperor. I have no idea why my junior-apprentice sister decided to go with you, but I advise you to watch your thoughts and not think of anything inappropriate. After this trip to Precipice Cliff, I want you to vanish from my sight!"

This youth's grandfather was the Monster Emperor? Lin Ming groaned inwardly. This was yet another Monster Prince!

Chapter 1454 – Monster Prince Duyu

Chapter 1454 – Monster Prince Duyu

…

…

…

In the Divine Realm, the Monster Emperor was not the title of a cultivation realm, but the title of the supreme king of the entire monster race!

The monster race had more than one Empyrean, but all monster Empyreans had to obey the command of the Monster Emperor. The Monster Emperor represented absolute authority, and the descendants of the Monster Emperor naturally belonged to the most illustrious and magnificent family of the monster race.

The Monster Emperor lived for a long time and had countless children. Even amongst the Monster Princes there were those that were weaker and those that were stronger. Lin Ming could feel that this youth in front of him had a solid foundation; he was definitely an outstanding individual amongst his peers.

“If this person came with Xiao Moxian to the Asura Road to adventure and also had a Great World King to protect them, his status must not be ordinary. He might be the most extraordinary of the current Monster Princes, and he might even have a chance of inheriting the throne of the Monster Emperor in the future.”

Lin Ming quickly surmised. If this monster youth was so confident in himself, he must have the abilities to back it up.

His guess was correct. This monster youth in front of him was Monster Prince Duyu, the grandson of the Monster Emperor. He father was a half-step Empyrean and also had the chance of rising even further in the future. As for his mother, she possessed the purest bloodline of the royal Hydra Family.

The monster race had a smaller population than humanity, but for them to exist for all these years in the Divine Realm without being destroyed, they definitely had their own strengths. In terms of numbers and the ability to reproduce, the monster race was far inferior to humanity, but in terms of individual talent, the average talent of the monster race was higher than the human average. During the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, there had also been a Monster Prince that had participated. Although he had been ruthlessly and mercilessly beaten down by both Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, one had to admit that he was also a master, someone stronger than even Vast Universe Heavenly Palace's White King. If it weren't for this being the era in which countless miraculous young elites were being born, then he would definitely have been able to bloom in wonder at the First Martial Meeting.

Without a doubt, this monster youth in front of Lin Ming was far stronger than the Monster Prince that he had encountered at the First Martial Meeting.

Although he was worse than Dragon Fang, Hang Chi, and the others, he was talented enough to look down at most geniuses within the Divine Realm with contempt. Of the Empyrean descendants, he was among the best.

However, it was just that Lin Ming's current world view was too high. He had seen far too many chosen and had personally experienced the terror that was the Good Fortune Saint Son. To the current him, any sort of Empyrean descendant was ordinary.

But to common geniuses, not to mention peak Empyrean descendants, even the worst Empyrean descendants were considered legendary existences. When Great World King geniuses or even geniuses of ordinary Holy Lands were to arrive at some small place in the middle of nowhere, they would shine with a brilliant light, too bright for anyone to look up to them.

In this sort of situation, the Monster Prince Duyu naturally had an inherent sense of superiority. If he were to encounter a common mortal genius and speak a few words to them, that was their good fortune.

Monster Prince Duyu thought that Lin Ming was shocked by his status. After being satisfied with the deterrence created by his status, he said, “Your foundation also seems solid, so you should be considered a somebody at least. What sort of background do you have? Do you have some special bloodline in your lineage? Do you have an extreme master teaching you?”

As Monster Prince Duyu asked all of this, Lin Ming said, “I don’t have any background at all. My ancestors were all mortals.”

What Lin Ming said was nothing but the truth, but Monster Prince Duyu didn’t believe him. In the eyes of Monster Prince Duyu, a martial artist with such a solid foundation couldn’t possibly originate from a common mortal background; they at least had to be the peak young elite of some sect.

To Monster Price Duyu, Lin Ming likely came from some tiny influence, like a Holy Lord level Holy Land. He probably didn’t want to state where he came from in order to not embarrass himself.

“This brat has an ordinary background and his looks are also so ugly. No matter how I see it there is no way that Junior-apprentice Sister Xiao Moxian should ever take a liking towards him.”

Monster Prince Duyu thought to himself. Then, he was much more relieved in his mind. As he looked at Lin Ming once more, most of the annoyance was gone from his eyes.

He was extremely hostile and antagonistic towards Lin Ming at the start because he himself was interested in pursuing Xiao Moxian’s affection. However, Xiao Moxian had for some reason displayed a strangely bewildering interest in Lin Ming. Moreover, she even refused his suggestion to return to the Divine Realm and then expressly stated that she wanted to continue through the Asura Road's trials together with Lin Ming. How could Monster Prince Duyu feel comfortable about this?

To Monster Prince Duyu, Xiao Moxian was the perfect wife.

Xiao Moxian's background and bloodline were without question. If it weren't for her grandfather being Empyrean Demondawn, then the current Monster Emperor might have already positioned her to be the next Monster Empress. In addition, as Empyrean Demondawn and the Monster Emperor grew increasingly close in their relations, there became countless young elites in the monster race chasing after her hand.

Forgetting the advantages of dual cultivating with Xiao Moxian, just her status alone was enough for anyone to ascend to the heavens in a single leap. However, there was something that happened after that had plunged Monster Prince Duyu into a deep inner conflict; it was that his grandfather seemed intent on engaging Xiao Moxian to the Good Fortune Saint Son, in exchange for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign gifting him with the method to break into True Divinity!

In front of this massive temptation, even Empyrean Demondawn wavered.

This matter was one of the greatest secrets of the monster race. It was only because Monster Prince Duyu was the most likely candidate to be the next Monster Emperor that he was able to obtain a whiff of this rumor.

This left Monster Prince Duyu in a conundrum. On one hand, he hoped to obtain Xiao Moxian, and on the other hand he hoped that his grandfather would be able to become a True Divinity. If his grandfather was able to pave the road to becoming a True Divinity, then Monster Prince Duyu would be able to follow in his footsteps and perhaps even challenge the realm of True Divinity one day.

After several days of consideration, Monster Prince Duyu developed a plan. Even if Xiao Moxian were to marry the Good Fortune Saint Son, who knew just when that would happen? And if they did marry, that was only due to political needs. It wasn't known whether or not Xiao Moxian and the Good Fortune Saint Son would have marital relations.

If Xiao Moxian was disinterested in the Good Fortune Saint Son then he could preemptively move in on Xiao Moxian before their marriage. Like this, all the advantages would be obtained by him. In any case, what mattered the most to the saints was that the monster race would assist them in the great calamity; Xiao Moxian was only a secondary consideration.

Thus, Monster Prince Duyu had terminated his seclusion early so that he could come to the Asura Road together with Xiao Moxian, all in order to cultivate her feelings.

Now that a third wheel like Lin Ming had popped in from nowhere, he was definitely displeased with that. But if Lin Ming was completely inferior to himself, then that was another matter altogether.

Thinking like this, Monster Prince Duyu even felt that it might be a good matter if Old Blue wasn't able to accompany them on their trials through the Asura Road. This would give him a true chance to pursue Xiao Moxian's affections. After all, for a lone boy and girl to travel through the endlessly dangerous Asura Road, overcoming obstacles one after another, he might be able to reach his goal sooner than he thought.

As Monster Prince Duyu was thinking about this, he suddenly heard a roar explode in front of him. He immediately went on alert; a vicious beast had appeared!

In the Great Desolate there were vicious beasts everywhere. To meet a vicious beast was naturally a time for him to show off. However, he didn't hurry to take action because there was also this Lin Lanjian nearby.

He planned on allowing Lin Lanjian to fight first. If this human male was weak then he might even be eaten up by this vicious beast.

As Monster Prince Duyu was thinking this, there was another loud roar as a 100 foot long rhinoceros appeared in front of the three of them.

This rhinoceros contained a terrifying strength. As it rushed forwards, the earth shook in its wake.

Although it looked like a rhinoceros, as one saw its cruel and sharp fangs, no one could think that it was a grass-munching herbivore.

“Not bad!” Monster Prince Duyu’s eyes lit up. This rhinoceros was clearly strong. Even if it couldn’t kill Lin Lanjian, as long as Lin Lanjian ended up in a miserable state then he could clean up the mess afterwards.

Monster Prince Duyu smiled as he looked at Lin Ming. “Brother Lin, do you plan on fighting this one?”

How could Lin Ming have known that during this short period of time, Monster Prince Duyu would have had so many ‘colorful’ psychological calculations. Although he felt that Monster Prince Duyu was hostile towards him, he didn’t care much at all. It didn’t matter for him to get rid of this vicious beast either.

Just as Lin Ming was about to attack, Xiao Moxian actually excitedly pulled out her whip. She tightened her whip, making it crackle in response.

“What a large cow. My Big Yellow finally has something to eat.”

Xiao Moxian chuckled. Without waiting for Monster Prince Duyu and Lin Ming to move, she immediately took the initiative.

The rhinoceros roared and hurled itself towards Xiao Moxian. In its eyes, these three people were all food. It dripped saliva down its maw as its fangs glistened.

Xiu!

A whip came slashing out, followed by tumbling flames. Xiao Moxian’s figure drew a delicate arc in the sky. In the next moment, the whip wrapped around the rhinoceros’ legs as if it had a mind of its own. This whip was extremely tough, tough to the point that the giant rhinoceros couldn't break free. It immediately fell down where it was!

Bang!

The earth shook. Xiao Moxian flipped upside down in the air, falling straight down like a meteor. A chilling sword appeared in her hand, thrusting downwards!

Chi!

The long sword pierced through the rhinoceros' divine iron-like skin as if it were tofu. It drilled through the beast's throat and then a massive amount of flames erupted from the sword, instantly incinerating the rhinoceros' throat to ashes.

The giant rhinoceros fiercely struggled for a brief moment before falling over, motionless. It was a one-strike kill!

Even though Lin Ming already expected this result, he couldn't help but marvel at her combat skills. Her actions were neat and methodical, without any delay at all.

"The severe wounds that the Four Wave Saints caused to her have mostly healed, and don't seemed to affect her combat strength anymore. Although she had taken some medicine, the greater reason was her own regenerative abilities. The physique of a God Beast is truly too abnormal."

As Lin Ming was thinking this, Xiao Moxian opened her wriggling beast bag. She said, "Big Yellow, it's time for a meal."

The little puppy called Big Yellow immediately came rolling out of the beast bag. It bounced about for a bit, its eyes shining as it saw the rhinoceros. Then, it rushed towards it!

Lin Ming had a funny look on his face. This little dog was so small, just how much could it eat? However, in the next moment, something incredible occurred. The 100 foot long rhinoceros actually began to shrink. Then, it was swallowed up by the little dog that was tens of thousands of times smaller.

This scene caused Lin Ming to be dumbfounded. He could feel that this little dog contained the power of space within its body. Although this dog was tiny, there had to be another world within its body if it was able to swallow up that giant rhinoceros.

After eating the giant rhinoceros, Big Yellow burped out loud and rolled on its small belly in satisfaction. Then, it sauntered back into the beast bag to sleep.

“What a gluttonous little taotie. Swallowing down a 100 foot rhinoceros is truly childish.” After Big Yellow ate the giant rhinoceros, Monster Prince Duyu began to casually comment. In truth, he had a strong sense of superiority in his mind.

Then, he looked over at Lin Ming’s expression. A taotie was a type of God Beast. Although it wasn’t amongst the strongest of God Beasts, it was still a true God Beast. In this world, just how many young elites could have a God Beast as a contract beast? To martial artists of minor backgrounds, this was something they couldn’t even dream of.

Chapter 1455 – Weakness

Chapter 1455 – Weakness

…

…

…

Taotie?

As Lin Ming heard this name he was startled. The legendary Taotie was said to have a swallowing ability that surpassed a Golden-winged Roc. In terms of combat ability they were slightly worse than the four main divisions of God Beasts, but no matter what, they were still genuine God Beasts. A Taotie with a royal bloodline was said to be able to swallow a great dimension. This sort of creature formed their own heaven and earth within their bodies, giving them unfathomable degrees of strength.

“Xiao Moxian really is the proudest daughter of heaven of two great influences. To think that she would even have a God Beast as her contract beast; not even most Empyreans have this chance.”

In Lin Ming’s eyes, only a peak Empyrean like Empyrean Demondawn could have a God Beast as their contract beast. This was because a God Beast was far too arrogant and proud; they were inherently unwilling to submit to other races. If someone wished for a God Beast to follow them, they had to first obtain the approval of that God Beast.

Monster Prince Duyu faintly smiled as he saw that Lin Ming knew just what a God Beast was. The reason he had said all of this so nonchalantly was to shock Lin Ming and have him understand just what caliber of woman Xiao Moxian was.

Xiao Moxian carefully put away her beast bag. She clearly loved this Big Yellow a great deal.

"Haha, Junior-apprentice Sister, you are becoming stronger with every passing day. For you, dealing with an ancient vicious beast is as easy as lifting a hand, but that little fellow is eating more and more. The more a Taotie God Beast eats, the faster they grow. If this little fellow follows Junior-apprentice Sister in the future, it will surely be able to swallow up even more powerful ancient vicious beasts. Once it grows into an adult, it will surely be a great help to Junior-apprentice Sister!"

Monster Prince Duyu was envious that Xiao Moxian had such a contract beast and he didn't. However, when he thought that Xiao Moxian would become his in the future, he relaxed.

Xiao Moxian clearly enjoyed Monster Prince Duyu's flattering. She laughed, quite happily.

Xiao Moxian and Frost Dream were different. Frost Dream was cold and aloof and she rarely came into contact with the other sex. This included even people like Lin Ming.

But Xiao Moxian wasn't disgusted with men. She still had a childlike innocence to her like she didn't understand the concept of the relations between men and women. Instead of being annoyed by her many cloying pursuers, she instead thought they were amusing.

She would even use all sorts of pranks to have fun at the expense of others. Monster Prince Duyu would occasionally fall for these tricks, giving him a great headache.

The three of them continued forwards. After another 10 miles, they encountered another vicious beast.

The beast that appeared this time was a horned lizard. Its aura was far greater than that of the giant rhinoceros they encountered before.

Xiao Moxian wanted to take it down but she was blocked by Monster Prince Duyu. "Junior-apprentice Sister, we still have several hundred miles to travel until we reach

Precipice Cliff. Adventuring is something we're all here for, so we should share the burden. If you fight every time then we won't have the chance to do anything. How about we take turns with these vicious beasts?"

Xiao Moxian looked at Monster Prince Duyu with surprise, but she didn't really care about who had the chance to fight. As for Lin Ming, his thoughts stirred. He knew that Monster Prince Duyu had made this suggestion to probe him, embarrass him, or both.

However, Lin Ming was disinclined to bother with Monster Prince Duyu's devious little games.

In this battle, the horned lizard was dealt with by Monster Prince Duyu alone. Monster Prince Duyu was indeed amazing. Although he was weaker than Xiao Moxian, he was still able to look down at all martial artists of his level with disdain. With his monster blood boiling over, he threw himself into a fierce battle with the horned lizard. After a few moves, he shattered the horned lizard's defenses and struck it to death.

This entire battle lasted for only five breaths of time. Monster Prince Duyu had used three moves in total. When combined with the horned lizard's struggles, this caused the nearby mountain to explode and dozens of ancient trees to fall over. The battlefield extended to a large area!

"Haha, this lizard was quite strong. That was a fun battle."

Monster Prince Duyu commented with a relaxed tone as he slapped his hands together, wiping them clean.

With a wave of his hand, he placed the horned lizard's corpse into his spatial ring where it would later be Big Yellow's dinner.

However, within Lin Ming's spatial ring, Soulwhite snorted with contempt as he looked at the great scene Monster Prince Duyu had caused. "What an idiot. To think he used so much energy in fighting a single horned lizard."

“Oh?” Lin Ming was surprised. He asked Soulwhite with a sound transmission, “What would you do?”

Before Soulwhite could reply, Monster Prince Duyu looked over at Lin Ming, grinning as he said, “Brother Lin, the next one is yours.”

Lin Ming laughed inwardly. This Monster Prince Duyu was indeed trying to probe him, but Lin Ming didn’t mind much at all.

The three people continued forwards. However, what made Monster Prince Duyu feel uneasy was that Lin Ming only encountered a few beast weaklings. He simply didn’t need to use any strength to defeat them.

“This isn’t going to work.”

“That beast was also too weak. Where have all the strong vicious beasts of the Great Desolate gone?”

Monster Prince Duyu cursed. Coming this far, the beasts they encountered became increasingly weak.

However, at last, when the second round had passed and it was Lin Ming’s turn again, they ran into yet another large fellow.

This vicious beast was also a horned lizard, but instead of one horn this lizard had three horns. Moreover, it was much larger than the one Monster Prince Duyu had killed earlier. Its entire body was jet black with red patches mottling its head. Just the tongue that slipped out of its mouth was thicker than an adult’s thigh!

Feeling the aura of this lizard alone, there was no doubt that this horned lizard was far more terrifying than the last!

“Haha, this lizard isn’t bad. Brother Lin, it should be your turn to deal with it. It shouldn’t be difficult for you, right?”

Monster Prince Duyu looked at Lin Ming with a mocking light in his eyes. The corners of his lips tugged up in a jeer as he waited to see Lin Ming be defeated.

Lin Ming faintly smiled and stepped forwards.

“Lin Lanjian! You have to kill it within three breaths of time or it will be too sad!” Xiao Moxian playfully cheered from behind. She was well aware of how strong Lin Ming was.

However, this sort of cheer caused Monster Prince Duyu to frown. Before, when he dealt with the single-horned lizard, he had spent five breaths of time to do so. But, this three-horned lizard was clearly much stronger and yet she was saying that Lin Lanjian should be able to kill it in three breaths of time. How could he possibly believe this?

Lin Ming glanced towards Xiao Moxian and smiled. Then, he walked towards the horned lizard. He sent a sound transmission to Soulwhite, “Soulwhite, you said before that it doesn’t take much energy to deal with this lizard?”

“Of course. This type of horned lizard has a weakness at its abdomen. Normally it is lying flat on the ground to cover up its weakness, but once it attacks its prey this weakness will be exposed.”

“Understood.” Lin Ming didn’t need Soulwhite to point out exactly where this weakness was. As he swept his sense out, he immediately found an uncommon place at the belly of the beast. It was there!

Roar!

The horned lizard roared and threw itself towards Lin Ming. Lin Ming didn’t even bring out the Phoenix Blood Spear. His figure vanished as he revolved the Space Laws. In the next moment he had flash-stepped beneath the belly of the horned lizard. He slammed up his palm, and with a light cracking sound, that lizard shook as if it had been struck by a bolt of lightning. Its body tumbled over, crashing into a pile of boulders as it fell downwards.

Its limbs continued to twitch. Soon, it died.

“W-what!?” Monster Prince Duyu’s eyes popped open. Even Xiao Moxian’s large black eyes had widened. She blinked in disbelief as if she couldn’t believe what had happened.

Before, she had cheered out for Lin Ming to end the battle in three breaths of time because she had a certain understanding of his strength. If Lin Ming were to really finish the battle in three breaths of time then she wouldn’t be surprised at all. But just now, Lin Ming didn’t use any strength at all. He simply flash-stepped over, thrust out with his palm, and easily ended the fight. That giant horned lizard had been slapped to death?

This was really too unbelievable. Although Xiao Moxian believed she could easily kill that lizard, she couldn’t do so with a single palm strike. To this sort of massive beast, a human arm wasn’t any different from a fly.

“How did you do that?”

Monster Prince Duyu gulped. He couldn’t help but ask this question.

Lin Ming simply said, “This lizard has a weakness. It has an area at its abdomen where its monster beast core is contained. If you push against this area and flood it with true essence then you can destroy the beast core and directly kill it.”

“This…” Monster Prince Duyu’s jaw dropped downwards at a loss for words. When he killed the one-horned lizard, it had taken him a considerable amount of effort to do so, but now he was suddenly informed that the beast had a weakness. This made him feel as if he had been played around with.

He breathlessly said, “If you knew that earlier then why didn’t you say anything?”

Lin Ming shrugged, “You never said you didn’t know, so how would I know what you know? You never asked me either.”

These words felt as if they were jammed down Monster Prince Duyu’s throat.

This damned brat! Monster Prince Duyu originally wanted to test out Lin Ming's strength, but he never imagined that he would resort to shortcuts to bring down the three-horned lizard. He simply didn't use any strength at all.

"So you're a native martial artist of the Asura Road."

Monster Prince Duyu assumed that Lin Ming was a martial artist born within the Asura Road. If so, then it wouldn't be strange for him to understand the specific weaknesses of the lizard.

Lin Ming didn't comment further. Since he planned on hiding his status, he'd let this monster youth assume whatever he wanted.

"This brat, I never thought he would have such tricks up his sleeve." Monster Prince Duyu thought to himself. And at this time, they had already arrived at Precipice Cliff…

Chapter 1456 – This Is It?

Chapter 1456 – This Is It?

…

…

…

Precipice Cliff. As the name suggested, it was a precipice on the edge of the Great Desolate.

This precipice was 36 miles high and as smooth as a mirror, without any curve at all.

The only roughness on this precipice were the marks left behind by other powerhouses.

If one wished to leave behind their mark on Precipice Cliff, it required more than cultivation alone. They had to be an outstanding genius amongst all geniuses.

At this time it was the thick of night. The silver moon hung high in the sky, reflecting a crystalline sheen upon the smooth wall of Precipice Cliff, as if the entire land was shrouded in liquid mercury. It was a beautiful sight.

This was an important stop at the Great Desolate because Precipice Cliff itself was a wonderful safe zone. It exuded a faint pressure and aura of a great emperor, making it so that no vicious beasts dared to approach. Because of this, many martial artists came to Precipice Cliff to rest and adjust their condition.

This was one of the few safe zones in the entire Great Desolate.

“Haha, we’ve finally arrived at Precipice Cliff.

Monster Prince Duyu smiled. “This Precipice Cliff is a divine treasure of the Great Desolate; it is said that it is related to the Asura Road Master. If one can leave their mark upon Precipice Cliff then they can obtain the destiny of an emperor; it will be greatly beneficial to your future growth. Junior-apprentice Sister, since we're here, we must leave our mark upon Precipice Cliff so it can be recorded for all posterity."

As Monster Prince Duyu spoke, he readied himself to fly up Precipice Cliff. However, he was stopped by Lin Ming.

"Hold on."

"Mm? What are you doing?" Monster Prince Duyu frowned, looking towards Lin Ming.

"I think it might be better if you change your appearance. Although you said no one knows where you are, this is Precipice Cliff, one of the common trial areas for new young elites in the Asura Road. Don't you think there might be an ambush here? With so many people around, you might be noticed by some more ambitious individuals."

Xiao Moxian didn't tell Lin Ming just why she was being chased by others. Although she didn't state it, he had already guessed the approximate reason.

"Appearance changing? Have you?"

Xiao Moxian's thoughts stirred. A sly look entered her large eyes as she glanced over at Lin Ming.

As Lin Ming saw that interest flash through Xiao Moxian's eyes, he was a bit embarrassed. He knew that Xiao Moxian had some guesses about who he was, or at least suspected it.

"Why are you looking at me like that?" Lin Ming awkwardly said after Xiao Moxian stared at him for a full ten breaths of time.

Beside Xiao Moxian, Monster Prince Duyu was actually filled with jealousy. Although this junior-apprentice sister of his never disregarded the opposite sex, she had never revealed such interest in anyone. This Lin Lanjian was ordinary in appearance and background, so what qualifications did he have to attract his junior-apprentice sister?

"I'm looking at you because you remind me of someone."

Xiao Moxian blinked her eyes, her gaze still locked onto Lin Ming's face.

"Oh? Are they your friend?" Lin Ming abashedly replied. In truth, he didn't have any deliberate plan to conceal his identity from Xiao Moxian. But, Xiao Moxian didn't seem to be the most reliable of people, and there was also the hostile Monster Prince Duyu. With him here, he definitely couldn't reveal himself.

"Not a friend. I wouldn't mind beating him up if I saw him, but maybe... I wouldn't be able to beat him."

Xiao Moxian giggled, revealing her cute little canines.

"Uh..." Lin Ming was dumbfounded. He wasn't sure if Xiao Moxian was joking or not, but it seemed that she still held her defeat at the First Martial Meeting close to her heart.

Then, there was a small interlude as Lin Ming helped Xiao Moxian and Monster Prince Duyu change their appearance. His Bodily Rebirth Technique was itself a sort of spiritual illusion that could be applied to others. However, when he performed it on others he could only change their appearance and not their soul aura. It wouldn't be enough to conceal them from a Great World King.

However, Lin Ming also believed that the World King level City Lords wouldn't personally run out from their cities to lie in ambush for Xiao Moxian.

After reaching the bottom of Precipice Cliff, Lin Ming discovered that there were three or four groups of people already waiting.

The Asura Road was extremely large and yet there was only a single Precipice Cliff. Every day there would be many martial artists coming here in order to try and leave their name.

"It is said that it is common for people to receive missions to leave a name on Precipice Cliff, but there actually aren't many who can do this."

A martial artist said from the base of Precipice Cliff.

"Hey, what do you mean it is common? Leaving a name on Precipice Cliff is a rare mission and many people can't obtain such a mission badge. Those that can are definitely ruthless individuals with considerable abilities. It's only because the Asura Road is so large that there are people coming here every day, making it seem that this mission is a bit more common."

"Even outstanding individuals might not be able to leave their name behind."

As everyone was speaking, they were looking up at the high Precipice Cliff. However, no one actually moved.

After all, they only had a single chance. Once they failed, it was over for them, thus no one would recklessly begin. Once they tried and failed, they would have used their mission badge in vain.

Lin Ming carefully observed the area.

He discovered that the 36 mile high Precipice Cliff had many marks, but the truth was that there were massive differences even between these marks.

Some marks were deep and some marks were shallow. Some people left behind their name and some people left behind runes. Between these marks, the greatest difference was in their heights.

The higher one went up Precipice Cliff, the fewer marks there were. At the very top of Precipice Cliff was a giant purple boulder, and this purple boulder had the least marks of all. However, every mark on it revealed a devastatingly breathtaking aura.

"What is that purple boulder?"

Before Lin Ming could ask Soulwhite this question, the eager and high-spirited Monster Prince Duyu suddenly spoke first.

The ones that were asked seemed a bit annoyed. “That is the Emperor Stone, didn’t you know? The Emperor Stone is at the summit of Precipice Cliff. If you can leave a mark on the Emperor Stone then you can obtain extra rewards, but leaving behind a mark on Precipice Cliff itself is difficult to begin with and trying to leave behind a mark on the Emperor Stone is ten times as difficult. It’s simply impossible for commoners.”

As this random traveler spoke, Lin Ming remembered that the contents of his mission was to leave a name on Precipice Cliff’s Emperor Stone.

The mission had specifically stated the Emperor Stone and not Precipice Cliff. It seemed that the Asura Road really thought highly of him. Could this even still be considered a blue soul level mission?

Lin Ming looked up at the Emperor Stone. There were only several dozen marks on it, including sword marks, saber marks, fist marks, runes, spear holes, and so forth. All of these different marks contained the aura of Laws, and they felt as if they had existed since the most ancient of times.

“Only several dozen marks? In all the endless years of the Asura Road, only several dozen people have been able to leave behind their own marks? That means on average there isn’t even one mark every several hundred million years, right?”

Lin Ming asked Soulwhite. Soulwhite responded, “Master, even the marks left behind on the Emperor Stone will not last forever. They will eventually slowly fade away. Only by leaving by a deep mark will it remain for a long time. For instance, that sword mark at the highest point was left behind 100 million years ago by the ancient Evil Sword Duke using his Evil Divine Sword. When he left behind that sword mark he had a Divine Lord level cultivation.

The sword mark that Soulwhite mentioned was in truth a bit blurry, because 100 million years of time was simply too far off in the distance. There was only a single character carved there – ‘Evil’.

Lin Ming was basking in the concepts left behind in this ‘Evil’ character when he heard some people arguing.

“Fine, then let’s have a little competition. Our Blue Sword Faction isn’t afraid of you at all.”

“Haha, your Blue Sword Faction has already been left breathless these past years by the suppression of the Snow Moon Holy Lands. Do you really think you can defeat our Chalk Family? Let’s see just whose disciples are more amazing.”

As the two sides of people were arguing, someone from the Blue Sword Faction group suddenly flew up. He was like a giant bird as he flew up more than 10,000 feet high. Once he arrived at a blank area on Precipice Cliff, he revolved all the energy within his body and poured it into his sword. Then, with a loud shout, he slashed downwards.

Kacha!

With an echoing sound of metal on stone, some stone chips were cut away by this person.

Then, that person fell back down to the ground. His movements were steady; it was clear he had exhausted a considerable amount of his energy.

Everyone looked up. They saw that 10,000 feet up Precipice Cliff, there was a bowl-sized mark. This was a Law mark left behind by two sword strokes. Because of the lack of strength, the mark wasn’t drawn perfectly so it seemed a bit rough.

“Success!”

“Amazing!”

The youth that dropped to the ground returned to the cheers of his group.

But on the other side, the White Chalk Family group seemed to think little of it. “You weren’t even able to leave behind your name and only a tiny Law mark, so what are you all so happy about? White Shun, it’s your turn.”

With those words, a person from the White Chalk Family flew up. This person also flew up around 10,000 feet, reaching a position several feet above the height that the Blue Sword Faction disciple reached. Then, he carved his own mark right above the mark left behind by the Blue Sword Faction disciple.

The weapon he used was a dagger. This dagger was like a divine brush. With the sound of wind and the chipping of stone, bits of rock fell down. Then, this disciple floated to the ground.

Everyone looked up to see that this White Chalk Family's White Shun had left behind a character on Precipice Cliff – 'White'.

A character was certainly much more complex than a two stroke Law mark. In order to carve this into Precipice Cliff it required a far greater amount of strength. It wasn't something that the average person could hope to accomplish.

Moreover, this 'White' character was several feet above the mark left behind by the Blue Sword Faction disciple, making it seem as if the lower mark was suppressed. This caused the Blue Sword Faction disciple to be extremely depressed.

The people from the White Chalk Family began to cheer in abundance.

On the other side, the Blue Sword Faction people had extremely ugly complexions. They were indeed inferior in the first round. "Third Junior-apprentice Brother, it's your turn."

The Blue Sword Faction side sent yet another person up.

A competition between two great influences had the other martial artists at the base of Precipice Cliff enjoying the show.

"This is a close struggle between dragons and tigers!"

“They really do have many geniuses. Whether it is the Blue Sword Faction or White Chalk Family, both of them are different from us. It’s already amazing if we have anyone able to leave their mark, but everyone in their groups can do it.”

Not too far away from Lin Ming, some martial artists began to vividly discuss what was happening, their eyes filled with admiration.

But just as they had spoken, a contemptuous voice spoke out. “This is it? How mediocre. Out of those in both their groups there isn’t a single one worth mentioning.”

This person’s voice was loud and martial artists had extremely sharp hearing. The one speaking immediately attracted the gaze of many present.

The one who was speaking was Monster Prince Duyu, who had travelled here with Lin Ming.

Monster Prince Duyu’s arms were folded against his chest. There was a proud and cocky smile gracing his face. In his opinion, this level of ability was really just too pathetic.

Chapter 1457 – Emperor Stone

Chapter 1457 – Emperor Stone

[*Chinese miles and feet are different from imperial standards*]

…

…

…

Monster Prince Duyu's words immediately aroused the anger of everyone.

Not to mention those young elites of great sects that were spoken down to by Monster Prince Duyu, even the commoner martial artists were annoyed.

To obtain a mission badge of this level required a certain standard. Mostly, they were one-star Asuras. As a result, after arriving here they had seen the geniuses of great influences show off, and they were left sighing in awe.

But at this time, these geniuses of great influences were called 'mediocre' by Monster Prince Duyu. Didn't this mean that everyone else was even worse than mediocre?

How could they feel good about this?

"Who the hell are you?"

"You're not as awesome as you think you are!"

Some martial artists glared at Monster Prince Duyu.

Monster Prince Duyu sneered and slowly uncrossed his arms. He clenched his fists together, causing crackling popping sounds to echo in the air. “What? You lot are so weak and yet others can’t mention it?”

“Interesting! How interesting!” Near the White Chalk Family, a middle-aged man leading their group looked towards Monster Prince Duyu. “If you have such confidence, do you think you can amaze everyone here with your achievements? Really, a newborn calf doesn’t fear the tiger at all. If you want then you can try yourself!”

“Elder White Glory, he is simply running his mouth off! If he comes up then I’ll suppress him for you!” A nearby junior disciple said. All of these heroic young elites were arrogant individuals and none of them wished to accept they were naturally inferior.

Monster Prince Duyu continued smiling. Towards the mission of leaving his name upon Precipice Cliff, he had full confidence.

From the attempts of the White Chalk Family and the Blue Sword Faction he could see the approximate difficulty of the mission. Precipice Cliff looked like a singularly smooth wall, but this simple wall actually contained the aura of outstanding individuals since time immemorial!

Even if the marks these outstanding individuals left behind had vanished, their auras would still be preserved within Precipice Cliff. Slowly, over time, these countless auras condensed into a horrifying force field. If one wasn’t a truly amazing individual it would be impossible to obtain the approval of Precipice Cliff.

The higher one went up Precipice Cliff, the more intense the aura would be and the greater the pressure. The higher one wished to go, the more pressure they would have to withstand.

Meanwhile, carving a mark into Precipice Cliff was also challenge. The larger the mark one left, the more strokes there were, the deeper the writing was, then the greater the difficulty would be.

To leave behind an extremely deep and profound mark on Precipice Cliff while withstanding the tremendous suppression of the aura there wasn’t simple at all.

When the martial artists of the White Chalk Family and Blue Sword Faction had tried, they had flown up just a bit more than 10,000 feet and the marks they left behind were very simple; there was no need to mention how deep their carvings were. To Monster Prince Duyu, they were simply far too weak.

Monster race martial artists tended to be outspoken and brash, speaking out however they wished. As Monster Prince Duyu saw such a poor performance from these people, he simply spoke out his thoughts.

The result was that he had caused everyone to be angry with him.

Of course, Monster Prince Duyu didn’t care about whether or not these people were angry. In his eyes, these people were nothing more than ants. In the future their achievements would end at the Holy Lord realm, but he himself would be an Empyrean level character.

After stepping below Precipice Cliff, he looked up and lazily said, “Of course I’ll give it a try. The reason I came to Precipice Cliff is to complete a mission. Is there anyone stronger amongst you lot? Is there anyone willing to leave a mark on Precipice Cliff with me?”

The corner of Monster Prince Duyu’s lips tugged up as he swept his eyes over everyone.

“Heh, this fool doesn’t know what death or danger are.”

Two people walked forwards. One was a tall young man and the other was an ordinary-looking dark-skinned woman.

These people came from the White Chalk Family and the Blue Sword Faction. Their auras were restrained and their foundations were solid. One could immediately see that they were outstanding martial artists of their generation.

“Peak Holy Land geniuses.”

Lin Ming judged from not too far away. From the point that Monster Prince Duyu had spoken out to this sudden conflict, Lin Ming hadn't spoken at all. He had only stood on the sidelines, watching.

"Let's begin!"

Monster Prince Duyu licked his lips, eagerness in his eyes. He seemed impatient to start, as if he were confident that he would be able to go very high.

As for the other two people, their eyes were dignified, secretly competing with everyone around them. They could feel that this brash fellow wasn't bluffing; he really did have the ability to back up his boasts.

This wasn't any casual competition. They could not afford to lose, because losing meant disgracing the honor of their sect and family.

"I will go first. Do you think you can keep up?" As Monster Prince Duyu spoke, he flew straight up. His speed was fast as he flew upwards like an arrow.

The other two refused to be outdone. Both of the leapt up, the repulsion force causing the ground to explode beneath them. The three of them leapt upwards like mighty tigers, unstoppable!

"How fierce!"

Seeing Monster Prince Duyu be so fierce and strong in his actions, all the angry commoner martial artists were silenced. They clearly weren't his match.

10,000 feet passed in the blink of an eye. At this height, Monster Prince Duyu hadn't slowed down at all, all the way up to 20,000 feet. At this point, the other two people seemed to be weakening.

30,000 feet! 40,000 feet!

With 1500 feet to a mile, Monster Prince Duyu had already gone up more than 20 miles!

At this height, Monster Prince Duyu was still calm and relaxed, his flight easy. As for the other two, they had reached their limit.

This height was already pushing their limits.

The pressure of Precipice Cliff was terrifying, especially when one went higher. The closer one approached to the Emperor Stone, the greater the pressure they would have to bear; it was impossible for them to withstand.

For those that lacked talent, it was impossible to obtain the recognition of the Emperor Stone!

If they continued to fly upwards they could still go several thousand feet, but they would have consumed far too much energy by then. It would be impossible for them to leave any mark on Precipice Cliff at that point.

How could this be… the disparity was too great!

The two of them found this unbelievable. They originally felt that Monster Prince Duyu was some talented character, but they didn’t think he would be above them by so much!

At this point, the two of them could not longer ponder what to do. They had to stop where they were to leave a mark behind on Precipice Cliff.

Saber and sword crossed. The young man from the White Chalk Family was just barely able to leave behind the simple mark of his family on the wall.

As for the young woman from the Blue Sword Faction, she was only able to leave behind a single shallow sword mark; she didn’t have the strength to leave behind another stroke.

Then, the two of them began to fall beneath the weight of the massive pressure. As for Monster Prince Duyu, he rose even higher!

“What!?”

"How could this be?"

The surrounding martial artists were all left dumbfounded. This disparity was not minor at all!

The Elders of the White Chalk Family and Blue Sword Faction also had extremely ugly expressions.

Several miles away from Precipice Cliff, Lin Ming shook his head. "The peak geniuses of Holy Land level influences simply cannot compare at all to outstanding Empyrean descendants. This sort of competition is only a one-sided stomp."

He had expected this result from the start. After all, a peak Empyrean descendant wasn't a common cabbage. In the entire Divine Realm, there were no more than 10 such characters.

Now, Monster Prince Duyu had casually come to a little corner of the Asura Road. To ordinary common geniuses, he was an unfathomable existence.

As everyone saw Monster Prince Duyu reach just under 30 miles, all of them were clear what this meant. Even if he didn't leave behind a mark on Precipice Cliff, just reaching this height was as difficult as ascending to heaven. But Monster Prince Duyu clearly had plenty of strength left over. Was he planning to shoot straight to the Emperor Stone?

Many martial artists had guessed correctly. Monster Prince Duyu's goal was indeed the Emperor Stone!

He was the number one young genius of the Divine Realm monster race. He had sufficient pride in his status. As the great calamity arrived, he had to give an even greater performance than all previous geniuses so he could show his worth.

What he needed was to be recognized! He needed to prove just how amazing the young geniuses of the monster race were!

Of course, it was also convenient for him to reveal his wondrous strength in front of Xiao Moxian.

At a height of 33 miles, Monster Prince Duyu began to truly feel the pressure. The closer he reached to the Emperor Stone, the more terrifying the pressure became.

"This is more difficult than I thought it would be."

Monster Prince Duyu forcefully summoned true essence and rose another mile.

Precipice Cliff was 36 miles tall, but the Emperor Stone was a mile in diameter itself. In other words, as long as he could fly up 35 miles he could leave behind his mark on the Emperor Stone.

By this time, Monster Prince Duyu had consumed a considerable amount of strength. He estimated that even if he were to succeed in flying up 35 miles, he likely wouldn't have the strength to leave behind a character.

"How could this be so hard! I have to go all-out!"

Monster Prince Duyu roared out loud. His bones began to emit loud cracking sounds. His body became larger and more solid, and scales covered his neck and cheeks.

This was the monster race's body metamorphosis. Monster Prince Duyu had activated his monster bloodline to forcefully fly up yet another mile and reach a height of 35 miles.

Now, he had finally arrived in front of the Emperor Stone.

"I'm here!"

All of Monster Prince Duyu's blood was tumbling in his body and the energy within him was chaotically raging about. He had reached his limit. If he tried to continue upwards beneath the dual pressure and restless energy within himself then he would likely suffer broken organs and even his meridians would be damaged. However, he continued to release trues essence. Once he stopped it would be impossible for him to leave behind any mark on the Emperor Stone.

“Monster Prince Descends!”

Monster Prince Duyu clawed at the Emperor Stone without any reservations!

After completing his body metamorphosis, his hands had become like dragon claws. Moreover, there was a fierce and savage-looking gauntlet covering his hands. These gauntlets were Monster Prince Duyu’s weapons. In terms of sharpness, it was no worse than a sword or saber.

Monster Prince Duyu had poured all of his remaining true essence into this strike. As his claw came slashing down, his monster blood boiled over.

Kacha!

The Emperor Stone exploded with a burst of sound. A tiny amount of stone fragments were torn off by Monster Prince Duyu.

Although this was only a slight trace, Monster Prince Duyu had indeed left behind a shallow mark on the Emperor Stone. He had succeeded!

This strike exhausted all of his strength. Beneath the heavy pressure his body began plummeting to the ground. In midair, he forcefully suppressed his tumbling blood and swallowed down a pill to restore some origin energy. Only then was he able to stumble back onto the ground.

All around Monster Prince Duyu, the many martial artists were shocked speechless.

This fellow had actually managed to leave behind a mark on the Emperor Stone. Although it was only a tiny shallow mark, it was still the Emperor Stone! Compared to Precipice Cliff, it was on a completely different level.

Monster Prince Duyu looked up at the little marks he left behind. Out of his five fingers, only his thumb, index finger, middle finger, and ring finger had left behind small traces. His pinky didn't have any strength left to chip the Emperor Stone. Moreover, the traces were very shallow.

"The Emperor Stone lives up to its reputation. It isn't easy at all..."

As Monster Prince Duyu thought out loud, he turned towards Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming, a smile on his face. He wanted to see just what it would be like when Lin Ming tried to complete this mission.

Chapter 1458 – Prize

Chapter 1458 – Prize

…

…

…

At the base of Precipice Cliff, dozens of martial artists looked up at the mark left behind on the Emperor Stone. Although Monster Prince Duyu had left behind only the shallowest of marks, this mark still left behind a profound impression as it reflected within everyone's eyes.

"That monster youth can actually leave behind a mark on the Emperor Stone, but we can't even fly higher than 20 miles… the difference is too great…"

"This could be called a scene that isn't encountered even in 10,000 years."

"It's not as much as 10,000 years. The trace he left behind is a bit shallow, so it should be a 1000 year event. Even so, a thousand year event is shocking enough. After all, the Asura Road is comprised of numerous geniuses of the 33 Layered Heavens."

The ones who were angry because of Monster Prince Duyu's overly arrogant and provocative attitude were all left silent. The White Chalk Family and Blue Sword Faction also felt ashamed of their own inferiority. But to them it still wasn't a disgrace to lose to such an outstanding individual. The difference was simply too great at the start.

"This monster youth might be an Empyrean descendant!"

Someone said in whispered hushes. The reason that the Emperor Stone was called the Emperor Stone was that those who could leave behind a mark on it could become an Empyrean in the future, an absolute emperor of the people.

An Empyrean… that level of existence left far too great an impact on the average person.

As everyone was speaking, Monster Prince Duyu only faintly smiled, not thinking much about it.

As for the White Chalk Family and Blue Sword Faction that had instigated a competition with him, he didn't bother with them anymore. He had already defeated them miserably enough.

Rather, it should be said that slapping these people in the face didn't mean anything to Monster Prince Duyu. The face he wanted to slap belonged to Lin Lanjian; he had long been sick of seeing that brat.

Thus, he sent Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming a true essence sound transmission, "Junior-apprentice Sister, I only displayed a humble showing of my skills just now. It should be your turn to give it a try. And you too, Lin Lanjian, you should try to complete your mission as well. Come and give it a try, do you think you can reach 30 miles at least?"

As Monster Prince Duyu spoke, the cunning light in his eyes grew even brighter.

Xiao Moxian didn't reply to Monster Prince Duyu's true essence sound transmission. At this time, her wide and blinking eyes were staring at Lin Ming.

"Hey, what mission do you have?" Xiao Moxian lifted her own mission badge and stuck out her slender neck like a curious child, wanting to see just what Lin Ming's mission badge was.

"Precipice Cliff, leave a name upon the Emperor Stone." Lin Ming lightly said.

As Xiao Moxian heard this, she revealed an expression as if she had already expected this. “So it really was the Emperor Stone. I have the same mission. It seems we’ll fail this mission if we can’t leave our mark on the Emperor Stone.”

“Mm.” Lin Ming nodded. Xiao Moxian’s mission was the same as his. This proved that she too had been approved by the Asura Road’s Heavenly Dao.

“Hehe, I’ve already been wanting to compete with you.”

As Xiao Moxian said these words, her liquid eyes flashed with a playful light. “If we were to fight directly I’d probably lose, but... aren’t you older than me? Hehe, since I can’t beat you up let’s compare our talent and potential instead. Just who is better than whom in the end?”

As Xiao Moxian spoke, Lin Ming’s mind stirred. Indeed, this impish little enchantress’ words had aroused his fighting spirit.

What Xiao Moxian said was right. In terms of individual strength, she was slightly worse than he was. But in terms of talent and potential, that was a completely separate matter!

Xiao Moxian’s glorious name had already spread throughout the entire Divine Realm!

Whether it was before the First Martial Meeting or after the First Martial Meeting, Xiao Moxian had been recognized as the one possessing the most talent in the entire Divine Realm!

Even though Lin Ming and Frost Dream had the most dazzling performances in the First Martial Meeting and had taken first and second place, they still weren’t able to shake Xiao Moxian’s status as the number one most talented individual in the entire Divine Realm!

The physique of a God Beast was formidable enough to stir the anger of the heavens. Just by growing up, she would reach a level close to an Empyrean. And beyond her God Beast physique, she also possessed a ridiculously high perception and had inherited Empyrean Demondawn’s martial talent. Moreover, she had nearly unlimited top resources at her disposal. For her, becoming an extreme Empyrean was the most basic accomplishment she would have. There was a high chance she could step into the realm of True Divinity!

Lin Ming also wanted to know just how his own potential was compared to Xiao Moxian's.

"Okay, then let's compete a bit." Ever since Lin Ming arrived at the Asura Road, he could feel that there were far too many powerhouses in the world; it was impossible to know where the peak of martial arts was. In his life, nearly every person he met could be an opponent of his. During the First Martial Meeting, Lin Ming had defeated Xiao Moxian, but he always felt that this victory was wrong because of his advantage in age. But now, he could fairly compete with Xiao Moxian.

Hearing Lin Ming agree, Xiao Moxian chuckled, "Great!"

The two still used true essence sound transmissions to speak. Not too far away, Monster Prince Duyu's complexion was ugly. He spoke to the two of them and yet neither of them had responded to him. Instead, they spoke to each other and also seemed to be having some fun and interesting conversation. This made him feel as if he were being treated as empty air.

"Hey, don't you think it would be a bit more fun if we had a little prize? Without some type of prize, it's a bit of a boring competition, don't you think?" Xiao Moxian asked, full of enthusiasm, completely not noticing Monster Prince Duyu's expression.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. "It's only a casual competition. What sort of prize do you want?"

"If I win, you undo your appearance changing technique and let me see just who you are?" Xiao Moxian ground her teeth together, her eyes shining with challenge. She was trying to goad Lin Ming into agreeing, however no matter how contemptuous she tried to be, it only looked as if she were having a great deal of fun.

"Alright." Lin Ming agreed. In his opinion, revealing his status to Xiao Moxian wasn't anything at all. He only needed to hide the truth from Monster Prince Duyu.

Xiao Moxian smiled, and she did so dazzlingly. She thought to herself, “Little guy, I’ll be sure to defeat you this time!”

In terms of strength, even Xiao Moxian wouldn’t call herself the top young elite of the entire Divine Realm. But in terms of potential and talent, she was confident she wouldn’t lose to anyone. This was her pride, her road of martial arts. She wanted to become a True Divinity!

“How do you know I am using an appearance changing technique?” Lin Ming asked with a laugh.

“Ha! A woman’s intuition!” Xiao Moxian said with a great deal of self-satisfaction. Lin Ming didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry. In his eyes, Xiao Moxian was a young girl. For her to call herself a ‘woman’ was a bit funny.

As the two spoke they had already reached the base of Precipice Cliff. Looking up, they could see the 36 mile high Precipice Cliff stabbing straight into the night sky like a divine sword.

“This Asura Road Master seems to really like the number 36.”

After Lin Ming entered the Asura Road, he discovered that many places used the number 36. Even the Hunter Game had an array formation of 36 people at the end.

He looked towards Xiao Moxian and grinned. “And if you lose?”

“You can make any request you want!” Xiao Moxian proudly and briskly waved her hand. “Oh, yes, but in advance let me tell you that sacrificing my body or anything like that is an absolute no-go!”

“Uh…” A strange color flashed over Lin Ming’s face as he heard this; just what was going on in this girl’s brain? “My only request is… if… if something were to happen to me in the future, then I hope that you can look after several people for me and guarantee that they can live their lives in peace…” Lin Ming said after a deep period of thought. His request left Xiao Moxian a bit surprised.

The road of martial arts was filled hardships and dangers. Moreover, in this great calamity, it was impossible to tell which way the tide would turn. Also, Lin Ming still had a showdown with the Good Fortune Saint Son. Although he believed in his own ability to grow enough to challenge him in the future, there was no saying what would happen…

“Alright.” Xiao Moxian thoughtfully nodded. “Now, let’s begin. Shall we go together?”

“Okay, we’ll start together!”

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian stood a hundred feet away from each other. The position they chose at the base of Precipice Cliff was just beneath the Emperor Stone.

As for the other martial artists, they were still lost in the shocking scene that Monster Prince Duyu had created. Although they saw Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming, they didn’t care too much about them.

Some influences had already dispatched representatives to pay their respects to Monster Prince Duyu. Although they knew it was impossible for Monster Prince Duyu to join their side, forming a good relationship with him wasn’t bad either.

Monster Prince Duyu was disinclined to bother with these people. He coldly sneered as he looked at Precipice Cliff. He never imagined that Lin Ming would be so reckless and blind as to compete with someone like Xiao Moxian. Even he had to confess that he was flung miles away by Xiao Moxian. In terms of talent, she was fully deserving of being known as number one within the Divine Realm.

A cold breeze blew past. Lin Ming immediately soared upwards. His movements were smooth and calm. Although he didn’t seem to be going too fast, he was like a stream of water that ascended upwards, as comfortable and free as a horse racing through the grasslands.

The pressure of Precipice Cliff wasn’t able to affect him at all.

And beside Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian was also enjoying this relaxing trip up. She was like a black butterfly soaring through a bush of flowers. Her movements were brisk and light as she shot straight up to the top!

These actions immediately attracted the attention of many people.

“There are more masters going up!”

Not many people knew that Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had arrived together with Monster Prince Duyu, thus no one paid attention to them. But now, as they looked at the pair’s movements, they could tell that these two certainly weren’t ordinary young elites.

“It shouldn’t be. What is going on with today that there are so many masters?”

“Look at their movements. It seems they are also capable of flying above 30 miles!”

To the current martial artists, 30 miles was an astounding result.

And as they were speaking, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had already easily and swiftly crossed 20 miles. Without either of them falling behind, both of them flew straight towards the 30 mile mark.

As Monster Prince Duyu saw this, he frowned. He wasn’t surprised that Lin Ming could reach this height, but what he was surprised about was that Lin Ming remained as calm as Xiao Moxian.

25 miles…

27 miles…

29 miles…

Lin Ming smoothly broke through the 30 mile mark, keeping pace with Xiao Moxian throughout.

Xiao Moxian looked at Lin Ming and smirked. Her speed suddenly ramped up. Lin Ming merely faintly smiled in response and followed her pace.

As the martial artists below saw this, all of them were shocked to the point that their jaws dropped. At over 30 miles the pressure of the Emperor Stone was obvious to anyone, but not only did they not slow down, they instead increased their speed. Just how were they doing this?

As everyone was dumbfounded, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had broken through the 33 miles line!

33 miles represented the 33 Layered Heavens; this could be considered a dividing boundary. At this height, Lin Ming suddenly felt a deep resistance push down on him as if he had fallen into a swamp. Every time he rose up another ten feet he would have to consume a good deal of energy; it made advancing upwards far more difficult.

However, this was only a bit more difficult. He continued to rise, unstoppable. The Emperor Stone was already within reach.

Chapter 1459 – Struggle of Dragons and Phoenixes

Chapter 1459 – Struggle of Dragons and Phoenixes

….

…

…

After flying so high, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian attracted the attention of everyone present. Once they passed 33 miles, the pressure suddenly rose to yet another level. Every time they flew up 10 more feet they would have to consume massive amounts of energy.

It was hard to imagine just how deep the true essence of these two people was.

"They will soon reach the Emperor Stone. The 35 mile Emperor Stone isn't far away from them at all…"

"Can these two people all leave behind a mark on the Emperor Stone? Just what is happening today that three people suddenly appear who can leave behind a mark on the Emperor Stone?"

Everyone felt as if they were in some fantastical dream. Not too far away from them, Monster Prince Duyu's eyes were brilliant as he stared at Lin Ming. Lin Ming would soon break past 34 miles. He himself had also reached this height and understood just how great the pressure of the last mile was. The last mile was the greatest and most difficult to bear.

"This brat… he's actually not falling behind Xiao Moxian at all! I can't believe that he still has so much strength left over. After passing 34 miles, the pressure will rise to another difficulty. If he can't retain any strength then it will be impossible to leave behind a mark on the Emperor Stone. I want to see just how you do this…"

Monster Prince Duyu had thought that Lin Ming would fly to around 30 miles at most. He didn't imagine that Lin Ming would soon reach the Emperor Stone, and that his speed would also be consistent with Xiao Moxian's.

He found this all hard to accept.

As Monster Prince Duyu had said, for the last mile of Precipice Cliff, the pressure indeed increased by several times.

Underneath that massive pressure, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian suddenly slowed down as if they had run into a wall. The aura of Precipice Cliff was really far too strong here; it was tangible.

"Finally, a little bit of a challenge." Xiao Moxian laughed. She looked at Lin Ming as black flames wrapped around her entire body. In the next moment, she ascended like a blazing star, her speed suddenly increasing!

As for Lin Ming, he activated the power of the Azure Dragon within his body. His feet pressed against the stone wall, and with the force of the recoil he pushed upwards, shooting high like an arrow.

At the same time, Lin Ming waved his right hand, bringing out the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Ca!

The long spear slashed out. Spear light recklessly cut through the barrier of pressure, tearing it. Lin Ming passed through this gap like a fish and impacted upwards, his speed also increasing.

"What?!"

Monster Prince Duyu's eyes nearly fell out of their sockets. He was waiting for Lin Ming to admit defeat at this time, or at least approach his limit. But, he never imagined that Lin Ming would rush upwards at an even fiercer pace than before. It was clear that he had retained a tremendous amount of strength!

How was this possible…?

Monster Prince Duyu was shocked. To retain so much strength in such a situation and even go up faster than before? Just who was he?

He originally thought that Lin Ming was a native martial artist of the Asura Road. Moreover, Lin Ming gave off a very humble and ordinary feeling, the type that you wouldn't notice in a crowd of people. When he killed vicious beasts on the road here, he had relied on his experience to use tricks to defeat them; this couldn't be considered his true strength.

But now, looking at Lin Ming's performance on Precipice Cliff, it was true that he was the peak genius of an entire race!

"Good, great!" Xiao Moxian joyously laughed as she looked at Lin Ming. Beneath the great pressure of the Emperor Stone she was still able to freely laugh as before. This left everyone beneath her startled and awed.

"Your potential is amazing, but… I haven't even transformed. I've already won this competition!"

As Xiao Moxian spoke she suddenly swept her sleeves downwards. As she did so, black flames tumbled all around her, forming bird-like wings of flames. She immediately pulled ahead!

The 35 mile Emperor Stone checkpoint was broken through!

Xiao Moxian had no plan to stop and leave her mark here. She continued flying upwards!

The Emperor Stone was exactly one mile in diameter. To leave her mark on the top was an enormous difference from leaving her mark on the bottom. Xiao Moxian clearly wouldn't be satisfied with leaving her mark on the lowest area; she wanted to leave her name on the highest peak!

As for Lin Ming, he also had such a plan.

When Xiao Moxian broke through the 35 mile mark she felt as if she had stepped into a different space. All around her the Space and Time Laws were strangely distorted. At the same time a dreadful force field came shrouding down over her body, forcefully preventing her ascent!

"What powerful Space and Time Laws, and there is also this formidable force field. This Emperor Stone truly is marvelous."

After being blocked by this terrifying strength, Xiao Moxian felt the blood surge within her and her energy become chaotic. Although she could withstand this, it placed a great strain on her. If this continued then she might be able to go several hundred feet more at most.

"Phoenix Trueform!"

Xiao Moxian's eyes blazed with a divine light. Her pupils turned purple-black, as if a raging inferno grew there.

With a resonant phoenix cry, a massive amount of fire origin energy gathered behind Xiao Moxian. The raging energy gushed out all around her and a pair of pitch black phoenix wings stretched out from her back, proud and strong!

These black phoenix wings were over 15 feet wide together, twice the height of an adult male. Compared to these spacious wings, Xiao Moxian's figure appeared delicate and petite. She could easily wrap herself up in these wings.

Hu – Hu – Hu –

The massive amounts of fire origin energy condensed into black flames that combusted all around her. Soon after, these black flames turned into a roiling sea of fire that turned the entire sky a shimmering black!

After transforming her body into her Phoenix Trueform, Xiao Moxian was in her strongest state. She was like a dark goddess of the night, ruling over everyone, demanding their worship.

As the many martial artists beneath Precipice Cliff saw this, all of them were shocked. This black-clothed girl was also from the monster race. This sort of bloodline seemed to contain some indescribably majestic and royal aura, making everyone want to fall to their knees.

"Junior-apprentice Sister is too strong! I haven't seen her take action for two years and yet her strength has already grown to this degree. Even though I am several years older than her I am still not her match. The title of the number one most talented genius in the Divine Realm is hers beyond reproach!"

Monster Prince Duyu couldn't help but praise. At the same time, his visions as he looked towards her became increasingly hot. This was a look of yearning mixed with desire.

After Xiao Moxian transformed her body, her strength suddenly increased. The Emperor Stone's pressure was broken apart by her wings. She continued flying straight up!

"Lin Lanjian, if you haven't held back anything then you're as good as defeated!"

Xiao Moxian's clear and crisp voice sounded out in Lin Ming's ear.

Lin Ming also couldn't help but commend Xiao Moxian in his mind. Her Phoenix Trueform really did defy the heavens!

At this time, Lin Ming sunk all of his energy into his inner world. As he stepped upon the Emperor Stone, the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation within the Heretical God Tree suddenly exploded outwards!

Behind Lin Ming, the phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared!

With the Heretical God Force opened to the limit, Lin Ming also opened the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates. With all eight gates opened, surging waves of astral essence flooded through Lin Ming's body. His entire body emitted crackling noises as if thunderbolts were rolling through his body, like a True Dragon was awakening in his heart.

In that instant, Lin Ming's mortal bodily strength rose to several hundred millions of jins! Even the starlight in the sky above was quickened by him. The silver threads of starlight converged within Lin Ming's body, gathering towards nine acupoints, forming a faint mirage of nine Dao Palaces!

As these Dao Palaces emerged, they instantly vanished as if they were never there to begin with. This was the boundary of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

In the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming had already gazed upon the threshold of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. Although he was still an extremely great distance from reaching the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, this was still something that the more ordinary Eight Inner Hidden Gates couldn't possibly compete with.

Bang!

With a loud explosion of energy, Lin Ming was like a human-shaped beast after he released the Eight Inner Hidden Gates to the limit. He rushed forwards, chasing straight upwards with Xiao Moxian!

One dragon and one phoenix, racing up hand in hand, with unstoppable force!

A 35 mile height, the height at which the Emperor Stone was, still couldn't stop them.

"This… they've reached the Emperor Stone but they still aren't satisfied? Do they plan on leaving their mark on the pinnacle of the Emperor Stone?"

“Who are they? That monster youth from before was abnormal enough, but compared to these two people the difference is like mud and clouds.

Everyone began to shout out loud. If Monster Prince Duyu were to be compared to Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming, the difference really was too great!

In truth, in terms of strength, Monster Prince Duyu wasn’t much worse than Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming. But, what Precipice Cliff challenged was one’s potential and talent! In other words, their future achievements!

When comparing this, Monster Prince Duyu wasn’t able to match Xiao Moxian or Lin Ming at all. The disparity was far too great.

And at this time, an even more startling scene occurred. The black-clothed girl that was flying up the Emperor Stone suddenly attacked the caped youth!

Woosh!

Xiao Moxian’s whip came slashing out. Blazing flames roared forth, forming snakes of flame that instantly enveloped Lin Ming!

This caused the entire audience to be scared witless. This was the height of the Emperor Stone, a height that surpassed 35 miles! If it were them at that height they wouldn’t even be able to resist the pressure of the Emperor Stone. That great pressure would directly wound them and cause them to vomit blood, but as for that young boy and girl, they actually still had the strength to fight!

This was too aggravating!

As Lin Ming watched the fire snakes about to strike him, he arched an eyebrow upwards. “You want to sneak attack me?”

“Hehe! We’re only competing on who can win, but we never placed limits on the methods we can use. In other words, we can use any method we want, so why can’t I sneak attack

you?” Xiao Moxian laughed out loud. Because she had used most of her strength to resist the pressure of the Emperor Stone, the striking power of her attack wasn’t strong at all. Rather, it was extremely tricky, with many changes that made it hard to predict.

However, this wasn’t a problem at all to Lin Ming. His spear speed could also reach the limit.

“Chasing Thunder!”

The Phoenix Blood Spear thrust out. With a sparkle of electric purple light, Lin Ming’s spear broke through the fire snakes!

“If you want to attack me, then does that mean I can attack you?” Lin Ming asked back.

“Of course, there is no need go easy on me otherwise there would be no point in winning.”

“You’re quite confident in yourself. Do you think your true combat strength can compare with mine?” Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear, gathering his strength.

“Mm… probably not… however, I think that in my repertoire of skills, I have something quite suitable for this current situation, so I’ve as good as won!”

Xiao Moxian smiled wide, her cherry red lips parting to reveal her small canines.

Her wings suddenly spread out. Behind her, the black flames crazily spun around.

“Heaven Absorbing Demon Art!”

The skill that Xiao Moxian spoke of was exactly the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art. This ability could absorb another’s energy to use for themselves! As they were ascending up the Emperor Stone, 90% of their energy was already being used to resist the pressure of the Emperor Stone. If someone could absorb the other person’s true essence to use for themselves, they could take the absolute advantage!

Chapter 1460 – Reach the Extreme

Chapter 1460 – Reach the Extreme

…

…

…

The moment that the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art appeared, all of the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy began to gather towards Xiao Moxian. Within Lin Ming, even the true essence, blood vitality, and Law fragments were attracted by this strength, wanting to burst out from his body!

In just ten years without seeing each other, Xiao Moxian's Heaven Absorbing Demon Art had reached a completely different level than the one she displayed during the First Martial Meeting.

The Heaven Absorbing Demon Art could permanently absorb true essence and world power from a martial artist, and it could also temporarily absorb it. Currently, Xiao Moxian was using the latter version. The first version was far too cruel and evil; she naturally wouldn't casually harm another person's cultivation.

But in terms of attracting power, the latter version was several times more powerful than the previous!

Beneath Precipice Cliff, everyone saw a massive vortex of energy appear 36 miles high.

Underneath the terrifying force field of Precipice Cliff, it was hard to imagine just what sort of technique could still display such a horrifying might!

"They are attacking each other at this time!"

“They are already having trouble resisting the pressure so how could they still have the power to fight! Aren’t they friends? Why would they try to pull each other down?”

Many people noticed that Xiao Moxian was speaking with Lin Ming as they walked towards Precipice Cliff. Xiao Moxian hadn’t concealed her smile either, proving that the relationship between these two wasn’t too bad. But at the 36 mile height of Precipice Cliff they actually began to brutally strike out at each other. This was far too unexpected.

“Maybe they are having a competition… the one who leaves a deeper mark, the one who leaves a higher mark, will win, thus they are attacking each other.”

Some people already correctly guessed Xiao Moxian’s reason for attacking. As the others heard this they were left speechless.

This was the most reasonable explanation.

Really, this was what common people meant by being aggravated to death by constantly comparing themselves to others. Even if these people desperately tried as hard as they could, they still couldn’t rush up the Emperor Stone, but these two still wanted to compete over it. To them, it was like leaving a mark on the Emperor Stone didn’t have any challenge at all. Rather, the only challenge came from competing with someone else. Only by competing with someone else to leave a mark would there be a challenge.

Xiao Moxian’s Heaven Absorbing Demon Art created a giant vortex that covered nearly the entirety of the Emperor Stone. She giggled, turning to Lin Ming and saying, “What other methods do you have? If you don’t use them now, you won’t have any more time!”

“Heaven Absorbing Demon Art, huh? So that’s how it’s going to be.”

Lin Ming certainly recognized this move. After the vortex of the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art covered his body he could feel the energy within him being rapidly pulled away. The pressure surrounding him immediately increased.

This was the transcendent divine might created by Empyrean Demondawn. As a direct descendant of Empyrean Demondawn she naturally possessed his bloodline, one that perfectly complemented this transcendent divine might!

“Hehe, your power is so pure. The pressure around me has lightened by a great deal!”

Xiao Moxian’s hearty laugh echoed in Lin Ming’s ears. As Lin Ming saw the Heretical God Tree’s power of heavenly tribulation having difficulties resisting the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art, he took a deep breath and then sunk his energy deep into his inner world. The black hole seed came howling out!

A black hole was the heaviest celestial body in the entire universe and its gravitational pull was also the strongest. Within the black hole horizon, not even light was able to escape.

In that instant, within the massive black vortex that Xiao Moxian created, an even larger and more terrifying vortex appeared!

This vortex was absolute darkness and spun in the opposite direction. Like a cruel circular saw, it tore apart the vortex of Xiao Moxian’s Heaven Absorbing Demon Art!

“What!?”

The moment that the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art shattered, Xiao Moxian suffered a backlash of energy. Her face whitened and she suddenly stalled.

Her Heaven Absorbing Demon Art was an extreme transcendent divine might. However, Lin Ming’s Divine Seal Art had surpassed the category of transcendent divine mights. This was a cultivation method created by a True Divinity!

Not just that, but the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art and Divine Seal Art were completely analogous cultivation methods, both of them able to form giant attracting vortexes. When they bumped into each other, they naturally had to contest to see which was superior!

Everyone below paled as they saw this scene. Xiao Moxian's advantage had been completely suppressed by Lin Ming. Not just that, but there was also the heaven-shaking black vortex. As for Monster Prince Duyu, he was completely frozen solid. In his eyes, all that was left over was that pitch black vortex. He mumbled to himself, completely unable to accept what was happening.

Beneath the traction force of the black hole seed, the energy that Xiao Moxian had gathered with the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art began to be rapidly pulled out. This caused the pressure on her to rapidly increase in response!

She grit her teeth and her giant phoenix wings stirred up a tornado that forcefully stabilized her body beneath the massive storm of energy and the tremendous pressure of Precipice Cliff.

"This cultivation method is…" Xiao Moxian's thoughts raced. The instant that her move was defeated by Lin Ming she wasn't sad at all. Rather, a look of excitement crossed her face as she clearly recognized the true nature of this technique.

"It is that fellow's abilities after all. Although the appearance is a bit different, the aura cannot be wrong. During the First Martial Meeting, he used this technique to break through Big Sister Frost Dream's Dreamsoul Immortal Melody and fight to a tie with her! This Lin Lanjian is really that abnormal fellow after all! Hah! To think he would use an appearance changing technique to try and deceive this miss!"

Presently, Xiao Moxian had basically confirmed Lin Ming's true identity. The power of thunder and fire, Grandmist Laws, as well as this final black hole cultivation method, all of this together was more than convincing.

There were countless martial artists in this world, and it couldn't be calculated just how many practiced similar Laws and cultivation methods.

But, the Laws that Lin Ming cultivated were extremely rare; one could even say that he was the only one to practice them. Those that practiced similar Laws as he did could be called nearly zero. In addition, the talent and potential that this Lin Lanjian displayed could not be wrong.

"A freak is really a freak. Ten years later I've already improved so much but I still can't catch up to him. He's growing too fast!"

As Xiao Moxian was thinking, her hands weren't lying idle. Although she was covered by the vortex of that black hole seed, she still had the strength to fight.

"Counterforce – Heaven Absorbing Demon Art!"

Xiao Moxian accumulated all the strength she absorbed with the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art into a dao diagram and then shot it outwards.

Bang!

With a loud explosion, the vortex barrier created by the black hole seed had an opening forcefully torn apart by Xiao Moxian, allowing her to rush through.

"Consider yourself ruthless enough, this miss isn't going to play with you anymore!"

Xiao Moxian's figure flickered as she flew straight towards the peak of the Emperor Stone. However, the brief exchange just then had consumed a great deal of her strength. Her speed wasn't too fast and it wasn't easy for her to resist the pressure.

Seeing Xiao Moxian end the battle, Lin Ming received the black hole seed and pursued her towards the peak.

As everyone below saw this happen they were left dazed.

"What an intense battle, and yet they still have the strength to carve their mark in the stone?"

"You're wrong. Although that exchange looked like an intense battle just now it was mostly an exchange of energy. They haven't used up too much true essence."

Among the many martial artists present, there were those with extraordinary sight.

The one who spoke was correct. Even though Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were unrivalled geniuses of their generation, they still couldn't ignore the pressure of the Emperor Stone.

Thus, the moves that these two people used were to save energy as a premise. Although that exchange seemed like an intense battle, it was in truth a competition of energy. In the end, Lin Ming had taken the upper hand!

Withstanding the ever-increasing pressure, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian simultaneously reached the peak of the Emperor Stone!

At this time, the two of them weren't relaxed either. They were both using around 95% of their strength to resist the pressure of the Emperor Stone.

Xiao Moxian was the first to move! The Emperor Stone was extremely firm, far harder than divine iron. Xiao Moxian's right hand turned into a phoenix claw as she slashed at the wall, forcefully digging out chunks of stone!

Although the Emperor Stone was hard, Xiao Moxian still possessed a God Beast body. In addition to her true essence flooding her moves, carving something into the Emperor Stone wasn't difficult at all.

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

Rocks shattered. Xiao Moxian's blood vitality tumbled within her body. She vigorously summoned her energy, releasing a barrage of strikes as pieces of the stone wall were torn down! Each piece of crushed stone was no smaller than those brought down by Monster King Duyu's own claw strike!

Meanwhile, Lin Ming used his fingers as a spear, pointing them towards the Emperor Stone. Spear light wrapped around his fingers, forming a divine blade. Wherever his fingers pointed, stone chunks would tumble down! He had already touched upon the threshold of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. In terms of mortal bodily strength, he was no worse than

Xiao Moxian. In addition, his true essence was many times deeper than Xiao Moxian's; the number of rock chunks he brought tumbling down was even more than hers!

The two of them revealed their supernatural powers. After striking at once, they didn't stop at all, but rather continued with an onslaught of attacks!

The two of them weren't satisfied with leaving just traces behind; they wanted to carve characters into the Emperor Stone!

The character that Xiao Moxian formed was a square foot large. As for the character that Lin Ming left behind, it was actually a bit bigger!

On Precipice Cliff, being able to leave behind a small trace on the Emperor Stone was already an accomplishment. For the average person to leave behind a simple character was extremely strenuous; they would have to use up dozens of times more strength.

Ca!

The sound of chipping stone sounded out in the air, alarming to all. Xiao Moxian's attacks were as smooth as the wind. Even so, her complexion began to pale; it was clear she had consumed a tremendous amount of energy.

In just 10 breaths of time, a delicate and beautiful character appeared on the peak of Precipice Cliff. This was the character that represented her name – 'Xian'.

And nearby, Lin Ming had also completed carving his last name – 'Lin'!

This 'Lin' character had a penmanship that flowed like dragons and snakes, as if it were formed by dancing blades. Smooth strokes, sharp turns, a fierce momentum, just looking at it made one feel as if the aura could injure them! It was like this character contained the mysteries of martial arts within it; it could be its own cultivation method inheritance!

"What a magnificent character…"

At this time, the people below were no longer marveling at the square foot long characters that Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had left behind on the Emperor Stone. Rather, their attention was attracted by the Concepts left behind in those two characters.

The ‘Xian’ contained a nimble and elegant aura. One ‘Lin’ contained a swift and fierce aura, like a divine spear. Both characters complemented each other, enhancing the beauty of the other, each with their own advantages!

“They really are amazing geniuses of the younger generation.” Everyone held their breath as they looked at the scene upon the Emperor Stone.

No one knew that not too far away, two pairs of eyes were looking at everything happening upon Precipice Cliff from a space distortion.

“Those two must be the ones that completed the Hunter Game trial at the City of Discord and Wave City!”

“One possesses the body of a Phoenix God Beast and the other has inherited the legacy of an unrivalled powerhouse. These two youths have infinite potential.”

“Interesting, how interesting… in the great world of the 33 Layered Heavens, it seems an all new story will be written. Perhaps it will be different from the past…”

As the two voices spoke they gradually faded away. From beginning to end, no one was able to feel their aura. They seemed to have completely fused with the space around the Asura Road, no one able to sense them at all.

Chapter 1461 – The Asura Sutra

Chapter 1461 – The Asura Sutra

…

…

…

After reaching the peak of the Emperor Stone and carving in the character of 'Xian', Xiao Moxian had expended 80-90% of her true essence; she was already finding it hard to maintain flight. As she glanced over she could see that Lin Ming had also carved his surname 'Lin' into the stone wall. The Lin and Xian characters were about the same size, a square foot, but the Lin character had deeper and more forceful strokes, with a vigorous and fascinating aura. The Concepts contained within this character were even better!

This was the killing intent that Lin Ming had gathered by fighting over many years and passing through numerous battlefields where his life or death hung on the edge. The flavor of his life was reflected in the character that he drew. In this aspect, Xiao Moxian who had grown up in Demondawn Heavenly Palace and had experienced far fewer hardships and tribulations simply couldn't compare with Lin Ming.

"A freak is really a freak, his potential is actually so strong… I wonder just what secret he has on him…" Xiao Moxian said, unconvinced. She possessed a Phoenix Trueform, and at the age of 26 she had reached the middle Divine Sea realm where she was able to contend with peak Empyrean descendants that were 40 years of age. Even so, in terms of talent and potential she still wasn't able to surpass Lin Ming, but was instead faintly overshadowed by him.

It was hard to imagine just what Lin Ming relied on to come this far.

At this time a deep purple light radiated out from the Emperor Stone. This purple light wildly surged outwards, blinding the eyes of everyone below.

“What is this?” Xiao Moxian was startled. She was already near her limit. Before this she had used the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art to confront Lin Ming’s black hole seed and had suffered a great loss, causing her to consume a considerable amount of energy. Now, this divine light had suddenly appeared, illuminating the world. She felt a strange power flow into her body along with the divine light. With a soft cry, she lost her balance and nearly fell down.

But suddenly, she felt herself lighten as a hand gripped her wrist. A flow of true essence entered her body, revitalizing her nearly dried up inner world.

Even through her sleeves, Xiao Moxian could feel the strength in this hand. The grip was solid and the fingers were strong. She didn’t need to look to know who it was. Lin Ming originally had a deeper reservoir of true essence than she did and after the confrontation in which he came out ahead, he certainly had strength to spare.

Lin Ming only grasped Xiao Moxian’s wrist for a minute. After pouring his true essence into her he distanced himself. He originally wanted to ask if she was alright, but at this time a startling scene occurred on the Emperor Stone.

It wasn’t just Lin Ming; everyone beneath Precipice Cliff was looking upwards in astonishment.

Above the Emperor Stone, a dazzling divine light shimmered, eventually gathering into golden characters. These characters flashed into existence atop the Emperor Stone, exuding a profound strength that blinded all!

As everyone looked at these characters they felt a stabbing pain in their eyes, as if they would soon lose their vision.

Many people couldn’t help but close their eyes and hide away.

There were even some people that began bleeding from their eyes.

“What is happening? Is this a world phenomenon?”

“Is it because two unrivalled geniuses both carved their name on the peak of the Emperor Stone that they have stirred up a world phenomenon?”

Many people immediately thought. In this world, when someone extraordinary occurred it was easy for world phenomena to be aroused.

“That Lin Lanjian, just what did he do? And what are those golden characters writing?”

Not too far away from Precipice Cliff, Monster Prince Duyu’s eyes were wide open. He wanted to see just what was appearing on the Emperor Stone.

He could faintly feel that the golden characters were some sort of extraordinary treasure. After arriving at Precipice Cliff, he heard that if he could leave his name on the Emperor Stone, not only would he receive the support of the countless destinies imbued onto the Emperor stone but he would also receive a reward.

Now, Monster Prince Duyu suspected that these glowing golden words were the contents of the reward. After looking at them there would likely be some tremendous harvest!

However, no matter how Monster Prince Duyu poured true essence into his eyes he was unable to clearly make out these characters. Instead, the great pressure from them caused his eyes to bleed and balloon outwards as if they would soon explode.

“Damnit!” Monster Prince Duyu cursed, unwillingness swelling up within him. The blood vessels in his eyes had burst apart, leaving them dyed deep red! He had no choice but to close his eyes. But, if his eyes didn’t work, then he would use his sense!

Monster Prince Duyu sent out his divine sense, wanting to probe the shining characters on the Emperor Stone. However, the moment his divine sense broke through the pressure of Precipice Cliff with great difficulty and rose 36 miles high, touching those shining characters, Monster Prince Duyu felt his own divine sense fall into an endless maze, nearly causing his soul to collapse!

"Ahhh!"

Monster Prince Duyu cried out in pain as if a snake had bitten him. He hastily pulled back his divine sense. However, just that brief contact alone had caused him to vomit blood. His face paled and even his soul was injured.

The Emperor Stone was one of the miracles left behind in the Asura Road. No matter who it was, regardless of their cultivation, anyone that dared to challenge its rules would suffer the punishment of the Emperor Stone!

At this time, high in the air, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were able to clearly see the shimmering characters.

The first row only had a few simple words, plain and humble. The characters glowed with a divine light, flickering about like beating flames.

These words were – 'Asura Sutra'!

Underneath these words were smaller words: "The 33 Heavens, the boundless Great Dao. My resolve is to seek the peak of all martial arts. I spent 3.3 billion years to travel through the 33 Heavens, cultivating 33 lives. One life one Empyrean, one life one Divinity. What I seek is the highest truth of the Heavenly Dao…"

These words were clearly no sort of heart mantra or cultivation method. Rather it was a preface. It was likely the preface written by the Asura Road Master himself, the preface of the Asura Sutra!

This preface was more precious than any gold. Although it started with several dozen words and continued for hundreds more, after reading them Lin Ming felt his mind shake!

In this preface, it was written that in order for the Asura Road Master to seek the peak of martial arts, he spent 3.3 billion years to travel through the 33 Heavens.

In every Layered Heaven, the Asura Road Master would seal away his life's cultivation and begin from nothing. Like this, he cultivated 33 lives!

Each life was 100 million years!

Moreover, through these 100 million years, he cultivated from a mortal to an Empyrean and even stepped into the realm of god, becoming a True Divinity!

This was what it meant within the preface when it wrote, 'One life one Empyrean, one life one Divinity!'

However, even after fully cultivating 33 lives, the Asura Road Master still hadn't reached the goal he sought. Even after combining the 33 Heavenly Daos, he still felt that something was missing.

The 33 Heavenly Daos were by no mean the entirety of all martial arts!

The Asura Road Master had used 300 million years to create his own world – the Asura Road. As a result, he speculated that the complete Heavenly Dao was a total of 36. In other words, 36 Layered Heavens.

It was only that for some reasons, the last three Layered Heavens were unable to fully evolve, but rather became universe seeds!

If one could breed these three universe seeds and gather all 36 Heavenly Daos, they could become aware of the highest truths in all of existence, controlling the world and even creating their own Heaven, becoming the lord of all creation!

As Lin Ming read this preface, he felt his heart overwhelmed with awe, unable to speak at all.

He naturally knew that these three final Layered Heavens were the Demon Bead, Magic Cube, and that mysterious Purple Card.

These three divine objects were the essence of the universe seeds!

If one could completely evolve them and gather all 36 Heavenly Daos, one could become the ultimate ruler of all!

“The Asura Road Master… too terrifying.” Lin Ming was bewildered. Just the preface alone meant that the Asura Road Master must have lived for at least 3.6 billion years. He had cultivated 33 lives, becoming a True Divinity in each one. Then, he spent 300 million years to create a world like the Asura Road.

Just what sort of concept was that?

It was hard to imagine just what boundary the Asura Road Master had reached.

Such an existence… were they dead or alive? If they were dead, where was their body now?

All of these questions raced through Lin Ming’s mind. And at this time, he discovered that on the Emperor Stone, after this preface, an incomparably ancient scripture began to appear, each line contained shimmering traces of the Great Dao.

Every character of his ancient scripture contained unimaginably profound Concepts. The traces of the Great Dao mixed together 33 Heavenly Daos, infinitely mysterious.

Lin Ming’s mind shook. He no longer paid attention to matters of the Asura Road Master but instead fully invested himself in this ancient scripture!

Near Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian was also in a similar state.

Although the shimmering characters on the Emperor Stone weren’t too numerous, the truth was that they contained an incomprehensibly large amount of information. Just remembering the words themselves wasn’t difficult, but wanting to remember all the Concepts contained within these words required an incredibly high perception!

And Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were two such people with monstrous perceptions!

In just ten breaths of time, only several hundred words shimmered into existence.

This writing was likely not the main content of the Asura Sutra; there was no cultivation method. Rather, it was likely a general outline of a sort. Although it didn’t involve specific techniques, the layers upon layers of profound mysteries within this general outline was enough to give one endless advantages.

After the light slowly dimmed down, Lin Mind and Xiao Moxian looked at each other. They could see the excitement and awe gazing back in each other’s eyes.

“This is a cultivation method manual left behind by the Asura Road Master?”

“It seems to be, but, this is only a vague outline. To use this alone to practice anything is impossible...”

At this time, high up in the air, Lin Ming could no longer feel the pressure of the Emperor Stone. He easily floated in the sky. It was obvious he had obtained the complete approval of the Emperor Stone.

As he glanced down he saw that because of the flash of divine light just now, the many martial artists underneath Precipice Cliff were left in a much worse state. Many of them were injured, with blood dripping down from their eyes. There were even some individuals who tried to use their divine sense to probe the Emperor Stone and were heavily injured, receiving damage to the soul as a result.

“We’re probably the only ones who saw the Asura Sutra.” Lin Ming thoughtfully said. It seemed that this was the reward left behind by the Asura Road Master.

This was also reasonable. The Asura Road Master naturally wouldn’t let his own inheritance spread to the hands of common people. That would simply be a careless waste of treasures.

At this time, two beams of light shot out from the Emperor Stone, one beam going to Lin Ming and the other to Xiao Moxian. These beams of light sank into their mission badges. In the next moment, the two mission badges flew up and gradually dissolved, turning into shining god runes. However, these god runes were not the blue that Lin Ming expected from the start, but were black-red in color.

These were zenith black level god runes!

Chapter 1462 – Late Divine Transformation

Chapter 1462 – Late Divine Transformation

…

…

…

Only by leaving behind a name on the Emperor Stone would they receive a god rune. This was the mission given to them by the Asura Road's Heavenly Dao.

However, according to the mission description, after completing it, the reward should have been a blue soul level rune. Yet, the one Lin Ming obtained was a zenith black god rune.

It wasn't just him; Xiao Moxian was also the same.

This was now the third zenith black god rune that Lin Ming had obtained. First were the Protection of God and Blessing of God, and now he had obtained another one from the Emperor Stone!

"It must have been because me and Xiao Moxian both perfectly carved our names onto the Emperor Stone, thus the original blue soul level runes were upgraded to zenith black runes."

As Lin Ming was thinking this, the Emperor Stone rune turned into a beam of light that zoomed into his body, entering his inner world!

In that instant, Lin Ming could feel the three god runes resonating beautifully within his inner world. In the next moment, they all broke apart at the same time, turning into pure energy. This energy was like fresh spring water, revitalizing Lin Ming's body. This energy was different from ordinary energy; it did not enter through his meridians or acupoints but spread through his blood levels and fascia, swimming through his entire body.

What Lin Ming cultivated was the power of divinity. True essence, astral essence, spirit essence, all of it could be used by him. The mellowness of true essence, the fierceness of astral essence, and the flexibility of spirit essence, none of these characteristics were found in this energy. Rather, this energy was warm like spring water as it flowed through his body, seeming to be independent of these three types of energy.

This was a new type of energy. When the Asura Road Master comprehended the 33 Heavenly Daos and created the Asura Road, this was an energy he created beneath the inherent rules of his Heavenly Dao.

After this energy ran through Lin Ming's entire body, it gathered in his inner world where it began to attack the boundaries of it.

Lin Ming was shocked by this sudden change in the situation!

He had long since reached the peak of the middle Divine Transformation realm. If his inner world were to continue evolving, he would directly step into the late Divine Transformation realm and complete the sixth shift of the Nine Divine Shifts!

Lin Mine was immersed in energy that revitalized his entire being, an intoxicating feeling. At this time, the Emperor Stone force field that had vanished reappeared once more, covering his body.

However, this force field was different from before. Before, the force had placed a tremendous pressure on him, causing him to revolve most of his energy to resist it.

But now, this force field was comfortable and light.

The force field wrapped the entire area around Lin Ming, placing him in an invisible cocoon. Within the protection of this cocoon, Lin Ming felt as if he were placed back in his mother's womb, unimaginably cozy.

Vaguely, as if through the lens of a dream, Lin Ming could see Xiao Moxian also wrapped in this giant cocoon. Her eyes were closed tight and her face was flushed red. Her eyebrows gently shook and her lips were curved up in a happy smile; she was clearly ecstatic.

Lin Ming knew that similar changes were occurring within Xiao Moxian. Within her body was likely two or three zenith black god runes, and now those god runes had transformed into a strange power.

Although this strange power didn't belong to the essence gathering system, it actually fused together true essence, astral essence, and spirit essence within their bodies, allowing their cultivation to step upwards.

Lin Ming knew that god runes were extremely valuable. There were many martial artists in the Asura Road that didn't plan on completing full sets of god runes to participate in the final trial. Even so, they still continued to collect god runes to sell them to others who desired them. A set of gold runes was priceless, a rare blue soul god rune was something that even a Holy Lord would viciously struggle for. As for a zenith black level god rune, there was even less to speak of.

The higher quality a god rune was, the more valuable it was. These god runes brought about all sorts of advantages. They could enhance strength, defense, blood vitality, destiny… there were even those that could directly increase one's cultivation and have them undergo breakthroughs in realms!

At this time, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were like butterflies being reborn in a cocoon. Wrapped within the thick force field, their bodies were constantly transforming, evolving.

Not too far away, the martial artists below were able to guess what was happening as they saw this. This was likely the advantage granted by the Emperor Stone for leaving their names at the highest peak!

In the eyes of these people, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were originally unrivalled proud children of heaven. Now, they obtained even more advantages, allowing their strength to rise to an all new level. This sort of transformation was something that really aroused everyone's envy.

In the crowd of people, Monster Prince Duyu clenched his fists, his eyes shining brilliantly as he looked up at Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming, wrapped up together in a force field. His complexion was extremely ugly!

This great lucky chance of transforming together with Xiao Moxian left his heart bleeding with jealousy.

"Why is it him? Why is it not me!?"

Monster Prince Duyu gnashed his teeth together. He recalled his high-spirited mood as he arrived at Precipice Cliff and how he had stomped over the White Chalk Family and Blue Sword Faction. Everything he did was simply a joke. What meaning was there in competing with common mortals like them?

Moreover, what he found that hardest to acknowledge was that he had a strong premonition that if he were to continue going forwards with Lin Ming, today's situation would simply repeat itself again and again!

This Asura Road was a giant trial field to begin with. There were lucky chances everywhere. As long as you had the strength, as long as you had the destiny, everything was yours to obtain!

The strong became stronger! The weak became weaker! The weak wouldn't even be able to find an opportunity; they would simply be weeded out by the Asura Road's cruel and merciless law of the jungle!

Although Monster Prince Duyu had a deep hatred and envy towards Lin Ming, he couldn't help but admit that whether it was strength or destiny, he was already cast miles off by Lin Ming!

This meant that if he were to continue travelling with Lin Ming, every piece of bad luck would be his and all the advantages would be Lin Ming's!

"This damned Lin Lanjian, how can I get rid of him?"

A cold and ominous light flashed in Monster Prince Duyu's eyes. Because of how hard he was clenching his fists his nails had dug deep into his palms, drawing blood. He didn't want to travel together with Lin Ming.

In the most extreme situation, if they were to enter some mystic realm where there were near death perils everywhere, or if they were being chased down by some peerless powerhouse, then perhaps he would be nothing but cannon fodder for Lin Ming. His death might even help Lin Ming!

If one lacked destiny, if one lacked strength, then dying in a dangerous situation wasn't strange at all!

At that time, there would only be Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian left to travel through the Asura Road. Every good thing would be taken by Lin Ming. As for Lin Ming ever remembering him in a good way, that was impossible. Perhaps Lin Ming might think in his heart that he was lucky to have such an idiotic fool to act as cannon fodder to help him succeed.

In this case, if anything were to happen between Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian again…

Monster Prince Duyu could no longer bear to imagine what would happen further. He was so angry that his liver hurt, his gallbladder hurt, and his intestines twisted together. He had determined a single thing, and that was that he couldn't continue onwards with Lin Ming!

As Monster Prince Duyu was lost in his own thoughts, time continued to pass. Soon, an hour passed.

During this hour, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian's bodies continued to float in front of the Emperor Stone. The force field cocoon that wrapped around them had become thicker, nearly forming a separate space-time dimension. It was impossible for those outside to see either of them.

This thick and large cocoon not only supported the process of Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian absorbing the energy of the god runes, it also provided a cultivation area for them. This was the best possible protection. Normally, it was already extremely difficult for a martial artist to fly past 30 miles up Precipice Cliff, much less break through this massive cocoon.

In a hazy dream, Lin Ming seemed to experience an entirely different life of cultivation. He seemed to relive his time when he first started practicing martial arts at the body transformation realm. His fists struck the hard stump of an iron wood tree, each fist making dull thumping sounds. After a long, unknown period of time, the stump was wet with his blood. Without any raw materials for medicine, it was easy for hidden wounds to gather in his muscles, bones, and meridians, forming injuries that would eventually leave him crippled…

However, Lin Ming marched day after day, never giving up. He continued to train, eventually reaching the breakpoint level of a martial artist, the Pulse Condensation realm.

From that point, Houtian, Xiantian, Revolving Core… he continued to cultivate. The opponents he faced became increasingly powerful and the many mystic realms he ventured through became far more dangerous.

He didn’t know how many times he risked his life or how many times he teetered on the edge of death. But, he grew stronger every day and his cultivation grew increasingly high until he became an existence that could shake the earth heavens, freely walking through the Divine Realm, unstoppable!

He didn’t know how many years passed in this dream. Then, at some time, he suddenly woke up.

At this moment he discovered that his inner world had developed further. He had stepped into the late Divine Transformation realm!

The late Divine Transformation realm was only a step away from the Divine Lord realm. And, the Divine Lord realm was another great transformation for Lin Ming. It was an extremely critical realm.

It had to be known that the Good Fortune Saint Son's equivalent cultivation was also only at the peak of the late Divine Lord realm!

If Lin Ming could enter the middle Divine Lord realm, then although he still wouldn't be able to defeat the Good Fortune Saint Son, he should still possess the capital to contend with him!

At that time, even if he encountered a World King, Lin Ming would at least have the ability to protect himself.

He turned his head to glance at Xiao Moxian. He could see that Xiao Moxian had yet to complete her transformation. Her pitch black phoenix wings still wrapped around her body, like a beautiful black-winged angel.

At this time, the bright moon had fallen and the eastern skies had brightened. Dawn was arriving.

Then, Xiao Moxian suddenly launched her wings. Flames seemed to burn between her eyebrows. As the same time, the giant cocoon floating in front of the Emperor Stone also released a radiant light.

As the martial artists beneath Precipice Cliff saw this, all of them came to full alert. They could sense that Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were about to emerge!

Everything that occurred today would be vividly recalled by everyone. Three people had come to the Emperor Stone and left behind their mark. Of course, compared to Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, the first person, Monster Prince Duyu, was simply not worthy of mentioning. When the stories were retold in the future, he was doomed to be forgotten.

Rumors had long since spread that those who left their name at the pinnacle of the Emperor Stone would obtain a reward from the Asura Road's Heavenly Dao. And now, all of this was confirmed by the miracles occurring upon Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian's bodies!

Divine light sparkled, the winds and clouds arose from all over the world. The rising sun in the east sprinkled its golden glory upon the world. As this sheen of light reflected upon Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, the cocoon around them broke apart. They were like a god and goddess descended from the highest heavens, too dazzling to behold.

The two of them slowly fell down. As the martial artists who had been waiting beneath Precipice Cliff all night saw the two of them, they were shocked speechless.

Two unrivalled geniuses of their generation had left behind their name on the peak of the Emperor Stone, one leaving the mark 'Xian' and the other leaving behind the mark 'Lin'. These square foot characters contained inherent Concepts, similar to a martial arts inheritance. Just by looking at them, one would gain further awareness. Then, the two of them also broke through their realms before the Emperor Stone, stepping in tandem into the late Divine Transformation realm.

The so-called miracles of the world, this is what they were.

Chapter 1463 – The Imperial Prince Visits

Chapter 1463 – The Imperial Prince Visits

…

…

…

As Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian landed on the ground, many martial artists subconsciously made way for them. Their eyes as they looked at Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian contained a sort of awe and admiration, like the children of small mountain villages seeing a royal prince and princess appear.

“Are they a pair? What an amazing couple.”

“it’s hard to imagine what level of talent their future child will have…”

“They should be the descendants of Empyrean Holy Lands, or even True Divinity Holy Lands.”

As the surrounding martial artists were speaking to each other, Monster Prince Duyu had an extremely dejected expression on his face. This was the same as pouring salt on his wounds.

“Junior-apprentice Sister, congratulations…”

Monster Prince Duyu squeezed out a smile as he saw Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian walk towards him.

Monster Prince Duyu was at the peak of the late Divine Transformation realm. Although his cultivation had been the highest among the three of them, he had actually been the weakest.

Now, Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming had both stepped into the late Divine Transformation realm and their cultivations had become much more similar. Now, his strength couldn't even be compared at all. If the three of them were in absolute danger and one of them had to die, there was no way he would ever be able to escape.

“Let's go, it's not good to stay here too long.” Lin Ming said with a true essence sound transmission as his eyes swept over the martial artists beneath Precipice Cliff. What he had accomplished with Xiao Moxian just now was far too shocking; they were likely to draw the attention of many people. In addition, they had just made another breakthrough in their cultivation and in the time it took to do so it was likely that these people around them had already sent out the news.

In this dog-eat-dog world of the Asura Road, if anyone was suspected of having valuable treasures on them then it was easy to be killed and robbed. Even if it was well known that they came from great influences there would always be those willing to take the chance!

“Mm, let's go.” Xiao Moxian's strength had just risen by a large degree; she was in a very good mood.

The three people launched their movement techniques and quickly left. No one stopped them. As they were flying away, Lin Ming cast a deep glance towards Monster Prince Duyu. In the brief moment they had spoken, Lin Ming was able to faintly feel a simmering hatred from within Monster Prince Duyu, and even some killing intent!

If it weren't for Lin Ming studying the Divine Dream Law and having an extremely sharp soul perception then it would have been impossible for him to sense Monster Prince Duyu's hatred.

From the start Monster Prince Duyu had only disliked Lin Ming.

This was because Monster Prince Duyu didn't understand Lin Ming. He thought that Lin Ming was an ugly little minion of common birth, someone that posed no threat to him. Thus, he wanted to defeat and shame Lin Ming, not kill him.

But now, Monster Prince Duyu had clearly birthed a killing intent in his heart. The presence of Lin Ming was an enormous threat. Not only did Lin Ming threaten the progression of his courtship towards Xiao Moxian, but there was even a threat to his destiny, his life.

In the vast Great Desolate, Monster Prince Duyu trod upon the wind, his heart heavy and sad.

He could increasingly feel that during this adventure through the Asura Road, it would be impossible for him to keep up. He had two choices: go adventuring by himself or follow Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian to his eventual death.

Monster Prince Duyu could already see that the danger of the situations they encountered from now on would become increasingly terrifying, and the risks would rise every higher. If he continued with them, not only would he not obtain any advantages but he would meet only dangers instead.

"Junior-apprentice Sister… how long do you plan on staying in the Asura Road? Old Blue is still being monitored by the Wave City Lord so the situation is dangerous for us. We should return as soon as possible. The deeper we go into the Great Desolate, the more dangers there will be. If something were to happen to you…"

Monster Prince couldn't finish his words before Xiao Moxian interrupted him with a laugh. "I don't want to go back. This Asura Road has just started to become fun, so why would I return? If you want to return so badly then return yourself!"

Xiao Moxian simply didn't bother with Monster Prince Duyu's worries. She was increasingly excited to go deeper into the Great Desolate.

This result was already what Monster Prince Duyu expected. Xiao Moxian was a playful girl who loved mischief and roaming, and now that she had obtained advantages already, how could she possibly think of turning back?

However, he wasn't willing to give up here. He continued to say, "Junior-apprentice Sister… this Lin Lanjian has been following us all this time; he should be a native martial artist of the Asura Road and also knows the geography and situation of the Great Desolate extremely well. If he has evil thoughts, he might lead us to some danger zone and try to trap us so he can kill us and steal our possessions. With his strength and an advantage in location, there will be no way we can contend with him!

"This person is an unknown variable and his character isn't known either. I feel that there are far too many problems with him!"

If Monster Prince Duyu couldn't change Xiao Moxian's decision to not return then he could only take a step back and try to convince her to throw away Lin Ming.

However, the pitiful Monster Prince Duyu had never seen the true Lin Ming before, nor had he seen Lin Ming's techniques. Just seeing the brief use of the black hole seed that Lin Ming had used atop Precipice Cliff wasn't enough information for him to deduce Lin Ming's true identity.

Hearing Monster Prince Duyu's divisive words, Xiao Moxian chuckled inwardly. She already knew Lin Ming's true identity. Although she wasn't happy that Lin Ming had defeated her twice already, hearing words like 'unknown identity', 'evil intentions', or 'killing and stealing their possessions' wouldn't change her mind at all.

Moreover, although Xiao Moxian seemed innocent, she wasn't naïve or ignorant. In fact, she was an extremely intelligent girl, able to deduce many situations. She could already see the repulsion and hate that Monster Prince Duyu held towards Lin Ming, the envy and negative emotions that clouded his mind. It was no longer possible for him to coexist together with Lin Ming.

If the two of them stayed together, there was bound to be an accident.

But, if Xiao Moxian were to choose one person to travel with, the result was obvious. It was clearly Lin Ming!

She was closer to Lin Ming in strength, and her talent was also similar to his. Traveling together with Lin Ming was the most suitable choice for adventuring through the Asura Road.

If she were to go with Monster Prince Duyu, then as she rapidly grew, there would inevitably be a time when he would become a weight that would pull her down.

Xiao Moxian didn’t feel much towards Monster Prince Duyu to begin with. They were originally only ordinary martial brother and sister. She was becoming tired of the daily nagging and long-winded complaining of Monster Prince Duyu; the stern and quiet Lin Ming was much more interesting.

Moreover, Xiao Moxian wanted to go with Lin Ming because she still harbored the intention of surpassing him. She wasn’t resigned to continuously losing to him.

“Why don’t you go back by yourself.”

Xiao Moxian suddenly said. Her words were a massive attack that brutally cut down Monster Prince Duyu’s pride and confidence.

If he were to go back alone then he would have to leave Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian to travel through the Asura Road together. How could he be willing to allow this!

Monster Prince Duyu had fallen into a conundrum. Going with Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian was clearly not viable, but neither was leaving alone!

All of this was due to Lin Ming!

As Monster Prince Duyu was incomparably depressed, Lin Ming was actually carefully observing his surroundings. He completely ignored the exchange between Monster Prince Duyu and Xiao Moxian.

What Lin Ming was thinking about now was the ancient jade pendant he had drawn from the Wheel of Destiny. This jade had four words within it – Great Desolate God Trove!

When Lin Ming came to the Great Desolate, leaving his name on the Emperor Stone was only a convenient side trip. The real reason he came here was to look for the Great Desolate God Trove!

“Soulwhite, you said that there is a city a thousand miles ahead, called Heavendevil City?”

“Yes, Heavendevil City has a grand and prestigious reputation. Most martial artists that come to participate in the trials of the Great Desolate will choose Heavendevil City as their resting location. This also makes Heavendevil City extremely prosperous. In terms of the number of masters alone, Heavendevil City far surpasses Wave City and the City of Discord!”

“Alright. Then we’ll go there as our next stop. We’ll go to Heavendevil City to find some information on this emperor jade and see if anyone can interpret this map.”

As Lin Ming was making these plans, he didn’t know that soon after he left Precipice Cliff, another group of unexpected visitors had arrived.

This group of people were mostly saints, but there were also some people from the monster and demon races.

In the group, the one that stood out the most was a white-clothed youth. He was tall and thin, and although he couldn’t be considered too handsome, his aura was swift and fierce. His eyebrows were sharp like swords, angled towards his temples, and his eyes were clear and slender as if they had been carved from dancing blades. A faintly evil energy exuded from his entire being.

If Lin Ming were here he would immediately recognize this person. This was Imperial Prince Naqi!

Soon after his fight with Lin Ming, Naqi had come to the Asura Road smelting trial. For the saint race, it was far more common to go to the Asura Road smelting trial than it was for the humans. In the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's Holy Land alone, all direct disciples had to pass through the trial of the Asura Road.

"This is Precipice Cliff!"

As Imperial Prince Naqi and his entourage arrived here, they immediately attracted the eyes of everyone else.

This group of people had far too great a momentum. There were even World King powerhouses amongst them!

At the edges of the Asura Road, a World King was a lord of a city. Such a person had a considerable level of status. For these people to suddenly appear at Precipice Cliff caused the hearts of many to quiver.

"Out of the way! Out of the way!"

Naqi's minions loudly shouted for people to clear the way. This scene was similar to a Crown Prince going on a journey; random nobodies naturally couldn't approach him.

Soon, at the central point beneath Precipice Cliff, only Imperial Prince Naqi and his people were remaining. The other common martial artists had already traveled several miles away. Although they didn't feel well doing this, they could only feel anger in their hearts with no way to voice it.

"Just who is that putting on such a large show?"

"Don't speak so casually! There are World King powerhouses amongst them. Moreover, each of those juniors has an extremely solid foundation! They are possibly from Empyrean

Holy Lands! Just what has been going on in these past several days? The Emperor Stone keeps having more and more masters arriving to challenge it. These juniors should have come for the trial here!"

As people were speaking, the heroic young elites in Imperial Prince Naqi's group began leaping up one at a time, like fishes jumping through the dragon gate. Each one displayed their skills, all of them flying up at least 30 miles to leave behind their mark! There were even those that passed 33 miles, just a step away from reaching the Emperor Stone!

"This is the Emperor Stone that was blown so out of proportion? It doesn't seem hard at all!" Imperial Prince Naqi commented as he saw his junior-apprentice brothers nearly reach the top. This Emperor Stone seemed a bit too mediocre for him.

"Your Highness Imperial Prince, it is rumored that if you can carve your name at the highest peak of the Emperor Stone and perfectly complete this trial then you will obtain an extra reward. Your Highness must not take this lightly and strive to obtain that reward."

An old man said from beside Imperial Prince Naqi. This old man had an ordinary World King cultivation.

In the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's True Divinity Holy Land, an ordinary World King powerhouse could only be considered an outer court Elder. In other words, a role similar to a steward.

"Highest peak?"

Imperial Prince Naqi smiled. He looked towards the top to see just what marks his ancestors had left behind.

At the highest point of the Emperor Stone were two square foot-large characters. One was a 'Xian' character that contained a beautiful and flexible aura. The other was a 'Lin' character that contained a swift and fierce character, thick with killing intent.

Chapter 1464 – Insurmountable

Chapter 1464 – Insurmountable

…

…

…

“These two characters…”

Imperial Prince Naqi rubbed his chin, intently staring at the Lin and Xian characters. Most of the marks on the Emperor Stone exuded the atmosphere of countless years, but these two characters seemed quite new, as if they were just carved in.

“How interesting.”

Imperial Prince Naqi grinned. The ‘Lin’ character reminded him of a certain someone.

Of course, he couldn’t confirm this at all.

“Wasn’t it said that leaving behind a name on the highest point of the Emperor Stone was extremely difficult? That to do so perfectly was something that couldn’t even occur in a hundred million years? These types of rumors were passed down about the Emperor Stone, but those two characters up there are clearly recently carved in. It seems this Emperor Stone is also mediocre.”

Naqi chuckled. He was considered knowledgeable about the geniuses of humanity. He suspected that the Lin character was left behind by Lin Ming, and that the Xian character might be from Xiao Moxian. During the great battle at the Chaotic Blood Continent, Naqi hadn’t seen Xiao Moxian; he had only heard that she had excellent talent.

Thinking about it, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian's current cultivation was suitable for adventuring through the Asura Road. If Lin Ming were to have entered the Asura Road directly after their battle at Chaotic Blood Continent, then he wouldn't find that strange at all.

Since Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were both able to leave behind their name at the highest point at the Emperor Stone, and also do so perfectly, Naqi was fully confident he could easily accomplish the same.

After all, although he had lost to Lin Ming during their showdown at the Chaotic Blood Continent, Naqi still wasn't fully convinced of his loss. The truth was that from beginning to end, Lin Ming had not been able to suppress him. In fact, at the very final stages of their battle, he had faintly suppressed Lin Ming.

It was only that at the most critical moment, Lin Ming had summoned forth that strange stone gate during his attack, causing him to directly impact into it. Not only did crashing into that stone gate heavily wound Naqi to the point of vomiting blood but it also caused the tide of the battle to reverse. If that hadn't happened, Imperial Prince Naqi had full confidence he could have obtained victory at the end.

After all, in terms of endurance, Naqi had absolute confidence in himself as a body transformation martial artist.

In this sort of situation, he believed that whether it was talent, potential, or strength, he far surpassed Lin Ming. If Lin Ming were able to perfectly leave his name upon the Emperor Stone then there was no need to mention himself.

Moreover, even that woman Xiao Moxian had done it. This proved that the Emperor Stone mission wasn't too difficult. Although Imperial Prince Naqi had never seen Xiao Moxian before, just the rumors he had heard weren't enough to prove to him that her talent surpassed Lin Ming's.

“Haha, what Your Highness says is right. I think that this Emperor Stone seems as if it’s especially prepared for you. Your Highness has the title of Imperial Prince, and this is the Emperor Stone. If Your Highness isn’t able to perfectly leave your name atop it then the words Emperor Stone are really useless after all!”

“Once Your Highness decides to go I’m sure there will be immediate success!” Some of Naqi’s subordinates started to flatter him.

As for those people that were watching from far away, they felt contempt in their heart as they heard this. After being rudely driven out by this new group of people, all they had were criticisms in their hearts.

“Really, it’s as if he isn’t scared his tongue will be cut by the wind. It’s as if he thinks leaving a name upon the Emperor Stone is some sort of fun little game.”

“They might have seen the perfect marks that that man and woman left on the Emperor Stone, thus they think it’s simple to do the same. In fact, I am willing to bet that the couple from yesterday were monstrous geniuses amongst all monstrous geniuses. Hehe, I can’t wait for these people to fail.”

Several martial artists were secretly discussing amongst themselves with true essence sound transmissions. They definitely didn’t dare to say these words out loud. In the Asura Road where there were countless masters all around, a few unwise words could easily cost someone their life.

However, just as they were speaking, that white-clothed martial artist amongst the group of newcomers looked over at them. He smiled as he pointed a finger at them and hooked it in a ‘come here’ gesture, almost making them faint from fear.

“Damn! Did he hear our sound transmission!?”

“No way! Calm down! When has it been easy to hear true essence sound transmission?”

Several martial artists paled. They began to walk towards Imperial Prince Naqi with some trepidation.

“The lot of you, I want to ask you something. The two that left behind their names on the Emperor Stone, was it a man and a woman?” Naqi asked.

The martial artists that were questioned immediately nodded. They told Imperial Prince Naqi what they knew about the couple’s appearance.

“The young man had a yellow complexion and his looks were ordinary…”

Imperial Prince Naqi traced his chin. This description clearly didn’t match with Lin Ming, but there was always the possibility that he had used an appearance changing technique. For someone like Lin Ming who had such a sensitive status, doing so would allow him to travel through the Asura Road in a much safer manner.

“Mm, very good, now all of you can screw off!” Imperial Prince Naqi demonically grinned. With a sudden punch of his fists, a crazy surge of astral essence erupted, recklessly impacting outwards. As this astral essence crashed into the martial artists they shook and cried out in pain as they were sent flying away.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Three people landed against giant boulders and broke them into pieces upon impact. They were wounded all over, continuously throwing up blood.

Uhyak!

The martial artists crawled up to their feet, continuing to vomit blood with bits of their organs mixed within it. Imperial Prince Naqi only sneered as he saw this.

“What were you all talking about just now? Don’t you understand that loose tongues lead to trouble?”

Imperial Prince Naqi's words caused all the surrounding martial artists to fall silent! In fact, the people who were speaking amongst themselves were more than those three still crawling up on their bellies. Most of the people here still thought it was nothing more than a dream for Imperial Prince Naqi to perfectly leave his name upon the Emperor Stone.

Now that they saw what a tragic state those three martial artists had ended up in, all of them were secretly rejoicing that they hadn't had the bad luck to be chosen.

In truth, Imperial Prince Naqi hadn't heard what these people were speaking about in true essence sound transmissions; he simply didn't have the ability to do so. But just by looking at the mocking and disdainful glances everyone was sending his way he could approximate what they were speaking about. In particular, the astonished looks on their faces as he called them out confirmed this.

"Lo-Lord, please forgive this lowly one… this lowly one had eyes but couldn't see Mount Tai. Please treat us like a fart and ignore us."

Although several martial artists hated Naqi to the extreme, they had no choice but to beg for mercy. As people who survived in the Asura Road, they knew when they had to lower their heads, otherwise they would have died a long time ago.

"Rejoice that I don't want to waste my time killing you all. I will forgive your dog lives because I want you all to look and personally see just how shallow your experience is!"

As Naqi spoke, he turned his gaze to Precipice Cliff. As he looked upwards, he could see the Emperor stone. Then, a smile appeared on his lips. He had just thought of an excellent idea.

"Mister Zhou, I heard leaving a name upon the Emperor Stone is equal to obtaining the approval of all the outstanding heroic young elites of the past and even obtaining the support of their destiny. Is that true?"

The old World King near Naqi respectfully replied, "That is what it is reported to be like."

“Mm, very good. Then if that’s the case, before I leave behind my name I will destroy the two characters they left and leave my own name in their positions!”

As Naqi spoke, a fiendish smile lit up his face. If one could leave marks on the Emperor Stone then one could naturally also ruin the marks left behind by others. Of course, doing this was several times more difficult!

“My road of becoming a great emperor will start here!”

As Naqi spoke, his body soared upwards. His movements were smooth and elegant, like a piece of cloud being blown upwards by the wind.

The pressure that surrounded Precipice Cliff wasn’t able to affect Imperial Prince Naqi at all.

“Awesome!”

“His Highness is so fierce!”

Many martial artists cheered from the base of Precipice Cliff, obsequiousness thick in their voices. It had to be known that Imperial Prince Naqi was someone who would become at least an extreme Empyrean in the future and he even had a chance of becoming a True Divinity. In the Good Fortune Holy Land, even the statuses of Great World Kings were far lower than his own.

Imperial Prince Naqi shot upwards like an ascending meteor. He had already flown 30 miles high.

The pressure here still wasn’t able to hinder his movements. With a smile on his face he easily broke through 33 miles.

It was only at this time that Naqi felt a considerable amount of pressure.

“Now it’s getting interesting.”

Naqi smiled.

34 miles, 35 miles, he soon rushed to the height where the Emperor Stone was. But here, the pressure suddenly rose astronomically!

“Mm!?”

Naqi frowned. The pressure of the Emperor Stone had suddenly increased by several times.

Pop! Pop! Pop! Pop!

Naqi’s joints emitted explosive popping sounds. He was using the saint race’s body metamorphosis.

However, the higher he went the more terrifyingly fast the pressure increased. This was a nearly exponential growth!

As he flew to the center of the Emperor Stone, Naqi had no choice but to use his second body metamorphosis!

Curved horns jutted out from his head and a pair of demon wings unfurled from his back. The pressure here had already exceeded his expectations. This pressure was left behind by numerous unrivalled geniuses of the last several hundred millions of years that had carved their name onto the Emperor Stone. This included the auras of Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian. The aura that they left within the Emperor Stone also became a part of the pressure!

“What is this!?”

Naqi’s complexion immediately changed!

Pressure fell like a torrential storm all over his body. He could even feel that he was nearing his limit!

This was especially true for Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian's auras. Because they had just left behind their names, the pressure from their auras was extremely strong. Naqi could even faintly feel the power that belonged to Lin Ming.

"Is it really him!?"

Naqi grit his teeth and forcefully impacted upwards. He never thought that after such a short period of time, he would be using this sort of method to compete with Lin Ming!

The flavor of Lin Ming's aura was as heavy as grandmist energy. As it covered his body it felt like a 100,000 foot high mountain was pressing down on him, crushing him. This was an extremely horrifying weight!

As for Xiao Moxian's aura, it was slightly lighter, but lighter didn't mean it was easier to withstand. As her aura covered him, it was like 10,000 flames ignited throughout his body, causing him to be wracked with agony.

At this time, Naqi was only 200-300 feet from the highest point of the Emperor Stone. But, this 200-300 feet had become a nearly insurmountable moat!

If he wanted to leave behind his name at this height, it would still be easy for Naqi to do so. However, he had bravely boasted in front of everyone and wasn't willing to take back his words in embarrassment and shame. He summoned up more astral essence, forcefully pushing himself up another 100 feet!

Imperial Prince stepped on the Emperor Stone for leverage. But every time he did, all the flesh and blood in his body seemed as if it would rupture. His blood wildly tumbled in his body, making him feel like he was going to explode into a puddle of goo at any moment.

Naqi grit his teeth and shot up another 100 feet.

Pa pa pa!

Blood vessels burst open on Naqi's arms and wings. His body shook and blood started leaking from the corners of his mouth.

"How could this be!?"

Naqi wasn't convinced. It was fine if Lin Ming did it alone, but even that woman Xiao Moxian had left behind her name on the crown of the Emperor Stone. Now, he couldn't do the same!

Looking upwards at the top of the Emperor Stone, the Lin and Xian characters hung high above him, aloof and distant, their strokes smooth and forceful. When he looked up at these characters from the base of Precipice Cliff, Naqi had never felt such a distance between them. But now, he wasn't able to overtake these last 100 feet.

Chapter 1465 – Heavendevil City

Chapter 1465 – Heavendevil City

…

…

…

Naqi wished with all his soul that he could ruin those two characters, but the moment he was only 200-300 feet from reaching the peak of the Emperor Stone his mortal body had reached its limits; many of his blood vessels had burst apart!

Bang!

Naqi reluctantly punched outwards, attacking through space to strike the Lin character on the Emperor Stone!

However, he had very little strength remaining to begin with, and underneath the suppressive pressure of the Emperor Stone, his attack diminished to nearly nothing. He simply wasn't able to mar the Emperor Stone at all.

That Lin character's aura remained as swift and fierce as before, looking down at him from its unharmed perfection as if it were taunting his own incompetence.

"Your Highness, don't force yourself!"

At the base of Precipice Cliff, the old saint man shouted out anxiously. Everyone could see that Naqi had reached his limit; it was impossible for him to reach the top of the Emperor Stone.

Many people had a taunting look on their faces. Naqi was less than 200 feet away from reaching the top of the Emperor Stone. To anyone else, this would have been a result to be proud of, but when this result was combined with his previous words, it actually caused people to want to mock him.

“Hehe, to think he wanted to destroy the characters left behind by that man and woman and leave behind his own. Just who the hell does he think he is? Those two were true monstrous geniuses that had reached the limits of potential. Normally, even an extreme Empyrean descendant couldn’t hope to reach the peak of the Emperor Stone.”

“Desperately persisting just because he wants to save face is simply a death wish. I want to see just how he ends up.”

“Shh, stop using sound transmissions, if you’re not careful they’ll notice you.”

Several martial artists were using sound transmissions to quietly discuss what was happening. Currently Imperial Prince Naqi was only 10 feet from reaching the top of the Emperor Stone. However, all of his blood was nearly stagnant; he had reached his absolute limit.

“How could it be like this!”

Imperial Prince Naqi felt a deep shame.

He didn’t think that he was weaker than Lin Ming. In fact, during their battle at the Chaotic Blood Continent, he hadn’t truly lost to Lin Ming. Yet now, on the Emperor Stone, he was completely unable to compare.

This meant that although his strength wasn’t inferior to Lin Ming’s, his potential was actually extremely far off!

“My potential is worse than his!?”

Imperial Prince Naqi couldn't accept this. Underneath Precipice Cliff, that old man Mister Zhou heaved a deep sigh. In the battle of the Chaotic Blood Continent, Naqi and Lin Ming were nearly the same.

Because their strength was close, this caused everyone to overlook something. It was that Naqi had been at the late Saint Transformation realm, but Lin Ming was only at the middle Divine Transformation realm!

Lin Ming had leapt up a small boundary to suppress Imperial Prince Naqi!

To extreme geniuses, overcoming a small boundary to fight was as easy as drinking water. But when this small boundary was between peak martial artists, both of them unrivalled geniuses of their generation, then that was truly terrifying!

Every time a peak genius rose a small boundary in their cultivation their strength would experience a massive increase.

"This Lin Ming is indeed a horrifying person. But luckily my saint race will launch a full-on invasion of the Divine Realm before long. He will not have the space to grow, otherwise if he did, he might become a character like Empyrean Divine Seal of 3.6 billion years ago!"

As Mister Zhou was thinking about this, he felt that it was prudent to kill off Lin Ming as soon as possible. To cull the weeds he needed to destroy the roots!

And at this time, on the Emperor Stone, Naqi was finally unable to continue. The closer he reached to the top, the more terrifying the pressure became. Although this was only a minor 10 foot distance, it was as great as the earth and heavens.

The opportunity to challenge the Emperor Stone only came once in a lifetime. Once he failed his mission badge would break apart. Naqi knew that reaching the top of the Emperor Stone was no longer possible. With a raging hatred simmering in his eyes, he struck out a claw eight feet from the top.

Kacha!

With an explosive sound, Naqi tore out a chunk of stone.

This last claw strike comprised all of Naqi's remaining energy. After this strike, he was no longer able to support himself. His body plummeted straight down like a broken kite.

Hu – !

Mister Zhou flew up high to grab the severely wounded Naqi. As he looked up to look at the mark Naqi left behind, Mister Zhou shook his head.

Naqi's last claw strike had left behind a three inch long mark. But in terms of depth, it was no deeper than the marks left behind by Monster Prince Duyu. And beyond that, this mark was extremely rough. One could barely make out the symbol of the saint race, and this symbol didn't contain any Concepts at all.

This was because Naqi was already completely exhausted, a lamp without oil, thus he didn't have the ability to leave behind any Concepts.

If Naqi hadn't insisted on trying to forcefully push himself up the last 100 feet of the Emperor Stone then he could have left behind a perfect mark. But now, the mark he left behind was no different from one that a dog would leave.

Beside Mister Zhou, the other saint disciples were also looking at each other in disappointment. None of them knew what to say.

And not too far away, the other martial artists had also quietly departed. They were afraid that Imperial Prince Naqi would take out his anger on them in a fit of indignant shame after he recovered.

"Rest for a moment and then we'll embark deeper into the Great Desolate!" Mister Zhou issued an order. As he did so a cold brightness shined in his eyes. He was wondering just how he could assassinate Lin Ming.

………

In the vast expanse of the Great Desolate, there was a 10,000 foot high precipice. This precipice continued for several hundred miles, as sharp and steep as if someone had carved it with a saber. Above this precipice towered a grand and magnificent city. The city walls themselves were a thousand feet high and held together with incomparably firm array formations. Looking from afar, it looked like a mountain range hidden in the horizon. The wonders of this city left one shocked with awe.

This city was Heavendevil City.

Heavendevil City was over 10 times larger than the City of Discord and also the largest city on the edge of the Great Desolate. Many martial artists who planned to participate in the trials in the Great Desolate stopped here. Because of the constant stream of people, Heavendevil City was always bustling.

Lin Ming and his group walked down the streets of Heavendevil City. Both sides of the streets were lined with a variety of shops. The martial artists that walked down the roads were mostly youths. Moreover, each one had a solid foundation with extraordinary skill; they were all heroic young elites!

This was also well within reason. After all, whether it was the martial artists who came here to adventure in the Great Desolate or the people who lived in Heavendevil City, they needed the ability to face the ancient vicious beasts that surrounded the city. Otherwise, they would end up as nothing but food for those vicious beasts.

This was originally a land where powerhouses gathered. In addition to the constant slaughter that occurred year-round, the strong survived and the weak were continuously weeded out. In terms of average quality, Heavendevil City far surpassed the other cities on the outer edge of the Asura Road.

Xiao Moxian was extremely inquisitive as she walked into the city. This was a scene she hadn’t seen before in the Divine Realm.

In the Divine Realm, masters were normally gathered in large sects and Holy Lands. In the cities, there were usually only low level martial artists. After all, a city was a place where one lived, and masters would usually go into their sect to cultivate in seclusion.

But the Asura Road was different. Here, most martial artists came to engage in life or death battles and enter challenging smelting trials. Those that established sects to cultivate were instead in the minority.

“Master, if you wish to find information you can go to Heaven’s Secret. Heaven’s Secret is an extremely renowned intelligence network that operates on the edge of the Asura Road. As long as you have sufficient wealth you can find out a great deal of secret news.”

“Heaven’s Secret? There’s no need to hurry. Information about the map in the emperor jade shouldn’t be directly inquired into. It needs to be separately investigated.”

Lin Ming already made his plans. He would split the information of the emperor jade into a dozen plus pieces and slowly investigate it.

Chapter 1466 – Tragic Death Valley

Chapter 1466 – Tragic Death Valley

…

…

…

After Lin Ming arrived at Heavendevil City he didn’t immediately inquire for information on the emperor jade. Rather, he went to Heavendevil City’s Black God Fort to look at the missions within.

Every city in the Asura Road had correspondingly different missions. After completing these missions, one could obtain god runes as a result.

Lin Ming had already experienced the wondrous effects of high grade god runes. With such an opportunity for more in front of him he naturally wouldn’t let it go.

Heavendevil City was established over a massive area. From the point where Lin Ming entered the southern city gates, he was several hundred miles away from Black God Fort, which was near the northern city gates.

Lin Ming didn’t fly these several hundred miles. Instead, he walked the entire route. As they continued through, Lin Ming discovered that the closer he neared the northern gates, the more solemn and noble the architecture became. There was even a faint killing intent all around.

At the southern gates, both sides of the streets were lined with shops and bustling with many people; it was lively and prosperous. But near the northern gates, these sorts of shops, restaurants, and hotels had disappeared. All of these structures were replaced by fortresses!

These fortresses were built with large and heavy gray rocks. These rocks were covered with mottled dark red traces, clearly left behind by weapons or claws. Lin Ming could even faintly smell the scent of blood here, as if this entire area was an asura battlefield.

“These buildings are all built with heavenly limestone and fused together with the essence of darksteel iron, making it extremely firm. Even so, this stone has been made into such an appearance as if it were struck constantly with swords and sabers. Could there be frequent battles in the northern city area?”

Xiao Moxian asked from beside Lin Ming, a bit surprised. At this time, Lin Ming had already obtained the answer from Soulwhite.

He said, “Heavendevil City faces the endless Great Desolate and there are endless numbers of ancient vicious beasts that occupy the boundless wild. Every few years there is likely some event where vicious beast waves lay siege to the city. The southern city faces the cliff so the northern side is where the battlefield is.”

As Lin Ming explained all of this, Xiao Moxian looked at him with surprise. “How did you know that?”

Lin Ming rubbed his nose, not explaining. Beside him, Monster Prince Duyu snorted in disdain, “He is a native martial artist of the Asura Road, so it isn’t anything at all for him to know this. It’s not like it’s anything new.”

Xiao Moxian chuckled once before not speaking further.

The three of them soon arrived at Heavendevil City’s Black God Fort. Before they entered Heavendevil City they had changed their appearances once more. This was to prevent any of those ambitious people at Precipice Cliff tracking them and causing further trouble.

Heavendevil City’s Black God Fort was several times larger than the one in the City of Discord, and the martial artists here were also of a higher caliber. In the City of Discord there were many Life Destruction martial artists. But here, one rarely saw even Divine Sea martial artists. And even if one did see them, they were often the staff of Black God Fort who belonged to the common people of Heavendevil City.

Those who had the daring to adventure deep into the Great Desolate were mostly Divine Lords or above.

Lin Ming stepped up to the mission board. This mission board was the same as the one in the City of Discord. The various missions were listed along with a price tag. If one had origin energy runes they could trade them for a mission badge.

However, what surprised Lin Ming was that there were two rare blue soul level missions, and these two missions only needed a small number of origin energy runes to purchase. Moreover, although they had hung on the mission board for some time now, there were very few people who asked about them.

“Mm? How peculiar. Are these missions extremely difficult?”

Lin Ming traced his chin. He read over the content of the two mission badges.

The first rare blue soul level mission was to enter God Burying Ridge and obtain a god burying stone. At that time, the god burying stone would fuse together with the mission badge and one could obtain a god rune as a result.

The second mission was to hunt down 3600 high level vicious beasts within three years. The mission badge would absorb the monster energy of these vicious beasts. After fully killing them, one would also receive a god rune as a reward. If over three years passed then the mission would fail.

The difficulty of the second mission was easily understandable. High level vicious beasts were much stronger than ordinary Divine Sea martial artists, and to kill 3600 beasts in three years meant to kill at least three of them each day. There were many middle and late Divine Sea martial artists that came to adventure in Heavendevil City, and for them this mission would be nearly impossible to complete.

As for the first mission, that was simply to enter God Burying Ridge and obtain a god burying stone. The difficulties and mysteries of this mission were naturally located in God Burying Ridge.

What sort of place was that?

“Reporting to Master, this old servant has only faintly heard of God Burying Ridge before. However, I am not too sure of the details.”

Although Soulwhite had lived in the Asura Road for a long time, that didn’t mean he knew everything. The Great Desolate contained numerous secrets to begin with, and Soulwhite’s strength was originally far too lacking to come adventuring in Heavendevil City, thus he didn’t know much about this area.

“God Burying Ridge seems like it would be very fun to go to.”

Xiao Moxian was a young girl who didn’t fear the heavens or earth at all. The more mysterious and spooky a place was, the more it aroused her interest. As for Monster Prince Duyu, he had an extremely ugly complexion. This sort of place was obviously extremely dangerous. If he were to rashly go there with Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian then he would lose his life if he wasn’t careful.

Lin Ming inquired about the situation of God Burying Ridge towards the Black God Fort staff member responsible for issuing the mission badges. This staff member was an old imp man. As this old imp listened to Lin Ming’s question he was clearly impatient. After all, Lin Ming only had a late Divine Transformation cultivation. Going to God Burying Range was the same as a death wish to him.

The old imp simply didn’t want to bother with this little junior who was pestering him with questions out of boredom. However, this was his duty here, thus he reluctantly threw a jade slip towards Lin Ming that contained a brief introduction of God Burying Ridge.

Lin Ming sank his divine sense into the jade slip, soon finding the information he wanted.

God Burying Ridge was an area that spanned a radius of tens of thousands of miles. This was a danger zone that had existed since time immemorial, and countless rumors had leaked out over the last several hundred million years. If an ordinary martial artist were to enter there was basically no path for them to return. Even for peak geniuses, chances were higher that they would end up dead then surviving that dangerous land.

And within the center of God Burying Ridge was a red mountain range. Within this mountain range was an unfathomably deep valley called Tragic Death Valley.

The reason this valley had this name was because out of all those who had ever been seen entering, no one had ever emerged. A tragic death, a death in vain, the meaning of Tragic Death Valley was that those who entered would die without any meaning or value at all. There were many mystic realms where one had nine chances of death and one chance of survival, but if one safely emerged, chances were they would obtain a massive lucky chance.

However, Tragic Death Valley was different. There were no known lucky chances within Tragic Death Valley. Tragic Death Valley was a place where people entered but never emerged. It was an absolute death zone with no hope at all.

In the rumors that were passed down for several tens of millions or even hundreds of millions of years, it was said that several Empyreans died in Tragic Death Valley! Tragic Death Valley was one of the most famous danger zones in the entire Asura Road, because it was an absolute death zone.

“Even Empyreans died there?”

Lin Ming asked, his mouth agape. He didn’t know how many Empyreans there were in the Asura Road, but if it were similar to the Divine Realm then there would be several hundred of them. Every Empyrean was a peak genius that had massive destinies gathered upon their bodies. They were all outstanding individuals that had stepped over the bones of countless other martial artists in order to complete their own road to becoming an Empyrean!

Such a person could not be underestimated!

Once a martial artist became an Empyrean they would rarely encounter fatal disasters in their remaining long lives. But now, Lin Ming learned from this jade slip that many Empyreans perished in Tragic Death Valley.

This sounded like a bedtime folk tale.

“Empyreans died there?”

Even the playful Xiao Moxian who didn’t fear anything was still shocked silly. This was a place where even Empyreans died. It meant that no matter how talented one was, no matter how great of a heroic young elite they were, or even if they were a first class martial artist like the Good Fortune Saint Son, they were still nothing but a joke in front of Tragic Death Valley.

This also meant that Tragic Death Valley was a forbidden zone that no one could enter.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then said, “We definitely cannot go to this Tragic Death Valley. Even if the rumors are exaggerated and even if Empyreans didn’t perish within, it still isn’t a place where we can survive. As for the surrounding God Burying Ridge around Tragic Death Valley, that is still a place where we can go. Of course, we’ll have to make arrangements and think of a plan beforehand.”

The dangers of God Burying Ridge were much lesser. According to the jade slip, God Burying Ridge was a place where ordinary martial artists would die without a doubt and where peak geniuses would end up more unlucky than lucky.

Lin Ming firmly believed that whether it was him or Xiao Moxian, they couldn’t be described as mere peak geniuses.

If they really did die in God Burying Ridge then this mission was too abnormal. It was simply sending any and all heroic young elites to their deaths.

“You want to go to God Burying Ridge?” Monster Prince Duyu’s complexion sank as he heard Lin Ming’s words. He simply didn’t want to go to such a dangerous place. If he was together with Lin Ming then he would become a lightning rod that attracted all the bad luck onto himself.

He no longer had the heart to continue with the Asura Road smelting trial. At the very least he didn't want to continue onwards with Lin Ming.

"Don't joke with me. Didn't you read the jade slip? It said that this is a place where even Empyreans die. If you want to go die then don't drag us along with you."

Monster Prince Duyu said, wanting to pull up Xiao Moxian as a shield. But, it was clear that he would be disappointed.

Xiao Moxian jeered, "Can your courage be any tinier? The area where Empyreans die is Tragic Death Valley. It's good enough as long we don't go there. The blue soul level mission we have is only restricted to God Burying Ridge."

As Xiao Moxian spoke, Monster Prince Duyu's complexion became increasingly ugly. He had actually been called lacking in courage by Xiao Moxian; this made him feel very aggrieved. He simply didn't want to go along with Lin Ming.

At this time, Lin Ming wasn't bothering with the dispute occurring between Xiao Moxian and Monster Prince Duyu. He continued looking through the jade slip; there were unexpectedly maps that included God Burying Ridge and Tragic Death Valley.

These maps were extremely rough. This was because in all of these years, no one had ever been able to fully explore God Burying Ridge, thus this map had been slowly pieced together and filled in with speculations over time before becoming barely legible.

Of course, there were likely some people in Heavendevil City that had detailed maps of God Burying Ridge. But, one didn't need to be a genius to know that these maps would be expensive; they wouldn't be easily seen by others.

Lin Ming was also only casually looking; he didn't expect that this map would have any great value.

However, as Lin Ming continued looking, he began to frown. Some outlines of this map were clearly familiar!

As Lin Ming recalled the lines within the emperor jade, he let out a long breath. He had come to a conclusion. The Great Desolate God Trove listed in the emperor jade had an 80-90% chance of being located in God Burying Ridge!

There was also an enormous chance that it was located in Tragic Death Valley, the legendary zone of no return!

"Is the Great Desolate God Trove in Tragic Death Valley?"

Lin Ming was stunned.

If even Empyreans couldn't return from this place, how could he possibly go?

Chapter 1467 – Fatty Zhou

Chapter 1467 – Fatty Zhou

…

…

…

Beyond a shadow of a doubt, the Great Desolate God Trove was related to the Asura Road Master.

And if this Tragic Death Valley could even bury Empyreans, then it was likely also related to the Asura Road Master.

If so, one could imagine that the Great Desolate God Trove had an extremely high chance of being within Tragic Death Valley!

“This Tragic Death Valley is a land where even Empyreans perish. If I were to go then all I can rely on is this emperor jade I obtained from the City of Discord.

“But whether or not this emperor jade is a death-sparing token is something I cannot confirm!”

Lin Ming believed that if he entered Tragic Death Valley, he would surely have a certain advantage over others. But, how great this advantage would be was a mystery. The dangers inside Tragic Death Valley couldn’t be taken as a joke.

Lin Ming couldn’t help but cast his sense into the Magic Cube space. There, the emperor jade calmly floated. Its entire body was a deep green and covered in faint lines that gathered into endlessly diverse patterns. These patterns were similar to maps of God Burying Range.

Lin Ming would absolutely go to Tragic Death Valley. To a martial artist, walking down the road of martial arts was originally choosing to struggle against the heavens every day. If there was the opportunity to obtain a heaven-shaking lucky chance, but he was too afraid to grab it because of his own fears and uncertainties then he would be doomed to never accomplish anything.

Lin Ming didn't want such a lucky chance to slip out from his hands. But, the key was how should he go and at what time in his life should he go?

For instance, after breaking through to the Divine Lord realm, he would be able to escape the grasp of a World King powerhouse. If he reached the middle Divine Lord realm, he would have the strength to battle an ordinary World King.

All sorts of thoughts raced through Lin Ming's mind. But at this time, the old imp in front of him was also growing impatient. "Hey, are the three of you done looking or not? Stop blocking the way, there are still many trial challengers behind you waiting to accept a mission!"

The old imp said without a trace of humor in his tone. Lin Ming thought for a moment, not minding the harsh manner of the old imp. Instead, he took out a jade slip filled with origin energy runes from his spatial ring and handed it over to the old imp. Lin Ming had traded for these origin energy runes at the City of Discord using nine sun jades.

The old imp was surprised. He used his calloused hands to rub the jade slip and immediately estimated the amount of origin energy runes within it. This was definitely a considerable wealth.

"W-what do you want?"

"I will take this mission; you can keep the remaining origin energy runes. I just want you to answer something for me. What should I pay attention to if I want to go to God Burying Ridge?"

As Lin Ming was speaking the old imp lit up with a smile. He glanced around to see if anyone was looking at him and then put away the origin energy rune jade slip. He said, “You’re a smart one. There are many adventurers that come here and, without knowing anything at all, rush towards God Burying Ridge to never return, instead dying there. Hehe, this is the perfect question that you asked me today. In God Burying Ridge, there are many things that you have to pay attention to, but only those with experience know about them. As for these experiences, they are gathered using the lives of those that have gone before. Those that know will not speak of it easily, and even if they do they might not be clear about it. Go to the west city and look for Fatty Zhou, Zhou Shiyan. If you put forth a high enough reward he will lead you to God Burying Ridge. But, let me tell you something ahead of time. The total travel fee should be around a million origin energy runes. If you pay more, then you’ll have been tricked by him!”

The old imp said with blinking eyes. Lin Ming found this understandable. With a guide leading the way, it would definitely be much safer.

“Eh… do the three of you really want to go to God Burying Ridge? With your current cultivations, going to God Burying Ridge is the same as throwing a meat bun to a dog. You won’t return at all!”

The old imp cautioned as he saw Lin Ming and the others about to walk away. He did so only because of the origin energy runes he was given.

Lin Ming casually said, “Our team also has some masters, so you don’t need to worry about us.”

Seeing Lin Ming about to leave Black God Fort, the old imp shook his head, “Having masters to protect you is useless. That God Burying Ridge is far too strange. The dangers are specifically aimed at each person. Sometimes, even those with high cultivations will still die!”

Dangers specifically aimed at each person?

Lin Ming’s footsteps paused for a moment, “Thank you, I understand now.”

Then, he left Black God Fort with Xiao Moxian. As the old imp looked at Lin Ming’s fading back, he shook his head. He knew that youngsters like them wouldn’t listen to his advice.

“This year, how could there be so many people sending themselves to their deaths?”

The old imp rambled to himself. But at this time, Lin Ming and the others had already left Black God Fort. They planned to go to the west city and look for this Zhou Shiyan.

“You’re sure you want to go?”

After Monster Prince Duyu left Black God Fort, he didn’t continue walking. Instead, his gloomy eyes stared at Xiao Moxian. “Junior-apprentice Sister, do you really want to go to God Burying Ridge with some unknown fellow? That is an extremely dangerous place so you should be afraid that others will harm you! Do you know that you have…”

As Monster Prince Duyu spoke to here he suddenly stopped. His malice-filled eyes turned towards Lin Ming, overflowing with killing intent. He simply hadn’t used a true essence sound transmission to speak just then, and was plainly speaking in front of Lin Ming. It was clear that he was finally fed up with Lin Ming.

Lin Ming knew what Monster Prince Duyu’s final words were going to be. He was referring to her phoenix bloodline. She possessed the flesh and blood of a true God Beast. In the past, within the Ancient Phoenix Clan, a single drop of phoenix blood essence was unimaginably valuable. From this alone, one could see how precious Xiao Moxian’s body was.

If someone with evil thoughts captured her, they could make good use of her. Whether it was using her body to cultivate, or using her for alchemy, one could obtain inestimable benefits.

“How can a man be so nagging? If you don’t want to go then you can stay in the city and wait for us to return.”

What Xiao Moxian couldn't stand the most was others continuously badgering her into changing her mind. During this trip through the Asura Road, Monster Prince Duyu had done so repeatedly. She was already sick and tired of him.

Hearing Xiao Moxian's words, Monster Prince Duyu was angry to the point of vomiting blood, but he simply didn't have any means to change her mind. He continued to glare at Lin Ming. If looks could kill, Lin Ming would have died 100 times already.

Monster Prince Duyu grit his teeth and ultimately decided to follow them. Old Blue's wounds weren't fully healed yet, and even if he were to recover he still needed to undo the tracking rune on him. For a time, he couldn't be counted on to provide any help.

If he were to lose Xiao Moxian and return himself, there was no way he could explain what happened. Moreover, he was worried about allowing Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian to go together. If something happened between the two of them, he would regret it for the rest of his life.

"I might not have an accident if I go to God Burying Ridge. Perhaps there might be a lucky chance for me also."

Monster Prince Duyu thought, comforting himself. He followed behind Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, eventually arriving at the west city. After making several inquiries, they located that Zhou Shiyan the old imp told them about.

Zhou Shiyan lived in a three-story building. This building was formed with expensive array formations, and the back garden was planted with all sorts of spirit flowers. It looked beautiful and refined, as if spring was blossoming here all year round.

"This Zhou Shiyan is quite wealthy."

Lin Ming thought to himself. In Heavendevil City, the value of land was high enough to give one a seizure. Back in the City of Discord, the price of a house was enough to cause an ordinary Divine Lord powerhouse to feel powerless and desperate, but in Heavendevil City, land was several times more expensive. If this Zhou Shiyan could live in a relatively large house in Heavendevil City, this proved that he had some skills.

“It looks like this Zhou Shiyan is fairly reliable. If he can gather such wealth it is likely related to God Burying Ridge. If he really is familiar with the situation around God Burying Ridge then whether it is as a guide, or hunting for treasures himself, he can likely make a fortune doing so.”

Lin Ming entered the small building. As he did so, array formations immediately appeared, blocking him. To Lin Ming, these array formations weren’t anything at all. However, he still stood with manners and poise outside of the array formation, waiting for the master of the house to come out.

Soon, a fat man in a blue robe appeared at the entrance. This fellow was half a head shorter than Lin Ming and his entire body was plump, brimming with health and vitality. His chins were pushed together and his two small and bright eyes looking at Lin Ming and the others, filled with happiness.

“Are you here to discuss business?”

“Mm. We want to go to God Burying Ridge!” Lin Ming went straight to the point.

“God Burying Ridge? Good! It seems that you little fellows are becoming increasingly brave. Three Divine Transformation youths want to go to God Burying Ridge? Well, let me tell you ahead of time that I will only be guiding you there. Your life or death will be in your own hands!”

“I understand.” Although Lin Ming had a rough map, he still didn’t know which route to enter God Burying Ridge was the safest.

“Each person will be 2 million origin energy runes. If all three of you are going, then I’ll give you a discount and charge you 5 million.” Fatty Zhou stretched out his palm and showed five thick and short fingers.

“3 million, no more, no less.” Lin Ming replied. Although he didn’t care about an extra 2 million origin energy runes, he didn’t want to put on a display of stupidity, otherwise others would treat him as a fool. At that time, they might try to deliberately trick him and lead him into some dangerous situation.

“Haha, it looks like you’ve already considered the price beforehand.” After being exposed by Lin Ming, Fatty Zhou laughed, not embarrassed at all. “Deal!”

Chapter 1468 – Encounter at the Gates

Chapter 1468 – Encounter at the Gates

…

…

…

"These people are also going to God Burying Ridge?"

A day later, Lin Ming was led by Fatty Zhou into his house where there were seven or eight martial artists waiting.

These people were mostly young, but two of them were middle-aged.

Out of these people, three of them attracted Lin Ming's attention, two men and one woman. The woman had extremely bright eyes and she stood very high. Even when compared to Lin Ming she was only a tad shorter. Her thighs were round and filled with potent power. She wore a short leather jerkin that exposed her flat belly and her large chest nearly exploded out of it. Her skin was pale and as bright as her eyes, and on her back she carried a case of javelins and tied on her fair and strong thighs was a sharp dagger.

Javelins?

Lin Ming was surprised. This was an extremely strange and rare weapon type. Normally, a martial artist would carefully craft a single weapon instead of a set of them.

This woman had an early Divine Lord cultivation.

And beside this woman was a man at the middle Divine Lord realm. He seemed to be a companion of this woman. He had a large build with a big cloak thrown over his shoulder. A black heavy sword hung on his back. This heavy sword was taller than an adult human and as wide as half a door. It looked extremely heavy. Once this heavy sword was slashed out, the might behind it could be imagined.

Moreover, what astonished Lin Ming the most was that this man and woman had extremely powerful bodies, faintly exuding the atmosphere of astral essence. These martial artists both dual cultivated body and energy, and Lin Ming could even feel a faint yet familiar aura from them.

“Mm? This is… the dragon race bloodline?”

Lin Ming was slightly amazed. If God Beast bloodline did not originate from the same source then it would be very difficult to sense. Before, Lin Ming had swallowed the bone of an Azure Dragon, now he was able to feel a faint resonance with the man and woman in front of him, leaving him surprised.

“This man and woman seem to be owners of a dragon race bloodline… they should be geniuses of some universe’s monster race…”

Lin Ming guessed. In the 33 Layered Heavens, the monster race could be considered a very large and separated tribe. The monster races of many other universes were often far stronger than the monster race of the Divine Realm!

As Lin Ming was observing this man and woman, they were also observing him.

They were from the Dragontongue Family, and the Dragontongue Family did possess the bloodline of a True Dragon. This sort of bloodline was inherited within their very bones. Even after multiple generations, their bloodline still wouldn’t diminish.

Of course, when compared to a monstrous genius like Xiao Moxian whose mother was a true God Beast, they were far from being able to match up to her.

“That man also has the aura of dragon blood within him.”

The leather-armored woman said with a true essence sound transmission.

"It's the blood of an Azure Dragon. He should also have noticed us, however, this person's Azure Dragon bloodline purity is limited. He should have encountered some lucky chance and managed to transplant it post-birth. This sort of bloodline can't compare to ours."

"Yes, but such lucky chances are extremely wonderful for ordinary people, thus his foundation is also very solid. Moreover, he seems to dual cultivate body and energy just like we do. He should have his own skills, and if he dares go to God Burying Ridge at the Divine Transformation realm then he is confident in them too."

God Burying Ridge had a grim and ominous reputation, one that was well deserved. Even these two dragon siblings only dared to go to God Burying Ridge after reaching the Divine Lord realm.

If a Divine Transformation realm martial artist were to go, they had to have absolute confidence in their strength, otherwise they would only be idiots.

Besides these two dragon siblings, there was also a youth in a black tight fitting outfit that caught Lin Ming's attention. This youth looked to be around 15-16 years old and his hands and feet were wrapped with thick bandages. He had black hair and held a long sword in his hands as he sat in a corner of the house. Where he sat, a faint force field emitted from him, making it seem as if he was hidden in the dark. If an ordinary person were to step into this room it would be easy to ignore him, not sensing him at all.

This person clearly excelled at concealing himself. He was likely some sort of incredible assassin.

"So many masters, this really is a den of crouching tigers and hidden dragons."

Lin Ming silently appraised. Martial artists that came to the Great Desolate were all outstanding individuals to begin with, and those that dared to take missions in God Burying Ridge were the most amazing of all of them.

“Are these three little fellows also joining?”

From the corner of the room, a voice suddenly sounded out. The one speaking was a middle-aged man in silk robes. His eyes were shaped like triangles and his eyebrows hung downwards. He seemed to be a very strong and bold character.

This person had a half-step Holy Lord cultivation. Besides Fatty Zhou, he had the highest cultivation here.

However, in Lin Ming’s eyes, his strength was only so-so. He wasn’t young anymore. Compared to the dragon siblings he was far inferior.

“That’s right. What, are you worried that someone’s going to drag you down?”

Fatty Zhou smiled as he spoke, his eyes curving into two little crescent moons.

The middle-aged man grunted. Although he didn’t state his meaning, it was obvious.

Lin Ming didn’t respond at all, but Xiao Moxian wasn’t willing to allow this insult to pass. “Hey triangle eyes, who do you think you are speaking to! Maybe you’ll be the one to hold everyone back!”

Xiao Moxian had never been someone willing to freely suffer a loss. She immediately poked at the middle-aged man with her words.

The middle-aged man flew into a rage. Just as he was about to do something, Fatty Zhou suddenly stepped forwards and blocked the two from fighting. “Everyone, please give me some face and calm down. Now that you are all in my team you will have to listen to my orders. If something like this were to happen in God Burying Ridge and you do not listen to my orders then I shall have to kick you from the team so you don’t get everyone else killed!”

As Fatty Zhou was speaking, his voice began to turn icy. For this person to survive in a den of powerhouses like Heavendevil City he certainly wasn’t as harmless as his appearance suggested.

The middle-aged man coldly humphed and no longer spoke.

"Everyone is here, let's leave then."

Fatty Zhou waved his hand. Like this, the team of 12 people set out towards God Burying Ridge.

And at the same time, just outside of Heavendevil City, a similar team of people had just entered city.

The one leading them was a white-robed youth that rode atop a large horned wolf. The youth said to the old man beside him, "Mister Zhou, your World Detection Art can't be maintained forever. I fear it won't be easy finding that boy in a place as large as Heavendevil City, especially if he's using an appearance transforming technique."

This white-robed youth was Naqi. After he entered Heavendevil City he constantly inspected everywhere around him, hoping to catch Lin Ming's trail.

"It's truly not easy at all. That little beast is a crafty one. We cannot be too noticeable in our actions otherwise he will leave Heavendevil City early and deliberately hide himself. I have confidence that when I find his scent I will be able to see through that little beast's disguise, no matter what he tries."

As Mister Zhou spoke, his eyes were closed in meditation. In order to continue using the World Detection Art he lowered the usage of all other energies to a minimum. The principle behind this technique was to rely on the memory of a person's aura to search for that person in an area of dozens of miles. Even if they used an appearance changing technique he could still see through them.

"Mm, since Mister Zhou says that, I can feel at ease. When I find that little brat... hehe..." Naqi cruelly smiled, killing intent filling his eyes. "When that time comes don't interfere; I will deal with him alone. I will return double the shame that I felt in the battle at the Chaotic Blood Continent. Mister Zhou, all you need to do is prevent him from escaping. Once I defeat him I will waste away all his martial arts but let him keep his pathetic life. Then, I will bring him back to the saint race to make into medicine. His mortal body should be at sufficient standards as an alchemy ingredient.”

“Haha, well said Your Highness! At that time, that will surely be a great merit! Your Highness’ status in our race will rise even further in the future!” Some people flattered from all around.

Naqi only coldly smiled. In truth, he didn’t have full confidence in defeating Lin Ming. But now, he had especially prepared a card to deal with Lin Ming.

Naqi continued to think of ways to use Lin Ming’s mortal body as well as how to use all the advantages and merits he would gain from killing Lin Ming to further advance his status in the saint race.

But at this time, he completely failed to realize that a group of modest-looking martial artists had walked towards his direction…

This team of martial artists had 12 people; it was Fatty Zhou’s team.

“We are about to leave the city gates. After we leave the city gates, everyone must listen to my commands! This is a must, remember it! If you do not want to follow my rules then do not enter my team!” Fatty Zhou continued to hammer in this point.

There were many impatient responses. These people were all arrogant geniuses of their generation, so how could they be willing to obey others?

As Lin Ming saw Fatty Zhou’s gaze sweep over him, he lightly nodded in return. At this moment, his expression froze. He saw a group of martial artists at the city gates. This group had over 20 people, both men and women, old and young. Some of them were dressed like underlings, and there were three or four people leading them. These people all rode vicious beasts that they had tamed in the Great Desolate. Their auras were powerful and their foundations were solid.

And as Lin Ming saw them his heart turned cold. Among this group of people was someone he recognized – Imperial Prince Naqi.

Chapter 1469 – Entering God Burying Ridge

Chapter 1469 – Entering God Burying Ridge

…

…

…

"Naqi, he also came to adventure through the Asura Road?"

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. However, this was also well within reason. At the time of their battle, Naqi was in his best cultivation period to journey through the Asura Road, so it wasn't strange for him to come here.

Even humanity's Dragon Fang, Hang Chi, and the others should also be at the Asura Road. However, Lin Ming simply hadn't met them yet.

Beside Naqi was also an old man. This old man's eyes were closed tight, with rapid movements occurring behind his eyelids as if he were using some arcane technique. Lin Ming's eyes widened. He could faintly sense countless threads of divine sense spread out to cover a distance of dozens of miles.

This caused Lin Ming to feel a sense of dread. This old man had a World King cultivation and there were two other middle-aged people near him that were half-step World Kings!

"Naqi, did he realize that I'm here?"

Lin Ming began to ponder past events. He had left behind the Lin character upon the Emperor Stone, and if Naqi also went there then he might have made that association.

Although the saints and humans had signed a temporary peace treaty that forbade them from recklessly slaughtering each other, there were still some limits to it: this treaty was restricted to the scope of the Divine Realm. If it were in the Asura Road, then the saints were free to chase him down and it still wouldn't violate the terms of the treaty, and thus no one would need to worry about backlash from their heart demons.

If Naqi had truly guessed that he was in Heavendevil City, he would inevitably do everything he could to hunt him.

"Maybe, just maybe that old World King man is using some secret technique to search for me!" Lin Ming immediately thought.

As Fatty Zhou's group walked forwards, Lin Ming and Naqi came nearer and nearer to each other. Naqi rode a large horned wolf, his eyes casting all around with a superior attitude.

In fact, within Heavendevil City, Naqi was a superior individual. Just Mister Zhou alone was enough to shock many people.

Naqi's vision swept over Lin Ming but he didn't spare an extra glance towards him. Naqi's eyes only paused on Fatty Zhou's body for a brief moment before ignoring his troop.

Beside Naqi, Mister Zhou's eyes were closed as before. Occasionally he would form a few seals with his hands. These seals would spin up and dance in the air, looking extremely mysterious.

Mister Zhou was searching for Lin Ming by using the aura that Lin Ming had left behind on the Emperor Stone. The World Detection Art was a secret technique that sensed someone based on the aura; it was a high level tracking technique several times more accurate than using one's eyes.

However, when Lin Ming and Naqi crossed paths, Mister Zhou was still forming seals with his hands. There was a faint cracking sound as these seals constantly faded away in the wind.

From beginning to end, he didn't open his eyes nor did he sense Lin Ming.

Lin Ming remained as calm as before. His appearance changing technique could change his appearance, aura, and soul fluctuations; not even a Great World King could see through his disguise.

Lin Ming's only worry was that Monster Prince Duyu would betray him. Fortunately, Monster Prince Duyu simply didn't know who Naqi was. Currently Monster Prince Duyu had a very grim expression as he worried over what would happen during the trip to God Burying Ridge.

Like this, Imperial Prince Naqi and his group entered Heavendevil City. As for Lin Ming and the others, they left Heavendevil City with no accident at all.

Imperial Prince Naqi would never have imagined that he just passed by Lin Ming.

"Your Highness, where shall we head first?"

"We'll go to Heavendevil City's Black God Fort. There might be some clues we can find there. This boy Lin Ming, if he really did enter the Great Desolate then Heavendevil City is a stopping station that he cannot avoid. After entering Heavendevil City he should have gone to Black God Fort to search for missions he can complete to obtain god runes. We'll see if we can find him at Black God Fort. If we can't then we'll look for other traces of him."

"Your Highness is too wise!"

Then, Imperial Prince Naqi and his group walked towards Black God Fort.

As for Lin Ming and the others, as soon as they left the city, all of them launched their movement techniques and flew off with lightning speed!

The 12 of them flew for several quarter hours of time, passing over 10,000 miles. Only then did Fatty Zhou slow down.

"We'll soon arrive at God Burying Ridge."

As Fatty Zhou said this the group slowly landed. Lin Ming looked ahead. In the horizon, he could see a long and meandering serpentine black mountain range. This mountain range emitted an ancient and desolate aura, making it seem very special.

Lin Ming even discovered that the closer he approached God Burying Ridge, the fewer vicious beasts there were. It seemed that the vicious beasts feared the aura of God Burying Ridge so they deliberately avoided it.

“Hey, Fatty, do you know what sort of origin God Burying Ridge has?” Xiao Moxian suddenly asked, curious. Many people also looked towards Fatty Zhou, wanting to know what the history of God Burying Ridge was. This sort of strange and menacing place was likely not naturally formed.

Fatty Zhou chuckled. After being directly called Fatty by Xiao Moxian, he wasn’t angry or annoyed at all; it was a well-known nickname of his.

“I don’t know the origin of this place. I’ve only heard that God Burying Ridge has already existed for over 10 billion years. Within that place, many evils lurk about! Upon entering, everyone needs to stay close to me and don’t act out on your own. If you die then there is nothing I can do to help you.”

Fatty Zhou slapped his belly after he finished speaking, continuing to lead the way like a waddling penguin.

Close behind Fatty Zhou was Xiao Moxian. She had a relaxed and slightly excited expression on her face. This was in stark contrast to Monster Prince Duyu. From the moment he left the city gates he had remained utterly silent, and now, his face was so dark and gloomy that it seemed he would drip water. He could faintly feel that within this group of people, although he wasn’t the weakest, he was in the lower middle reaches in terms of strength.

Many of these people were inferior to him in talent, but their cultivation base was much higher than his. The only two people here with similar cultivations were Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, but those two were simply freakish abnormalities.

Fatty Zhou's pace was very slow. From noon to evening and then to night, they only traveled 100-200 miles.

During this period of time, they didn't encounter anything at all. All that surrounded them were endless barren mountains and plains. There were very few plants and even the rocks were exposed and weather-beaten.

"Fatty Zhou, I think you are walking far too slowly. It's been a full day but we've only walked less than 200 miles. I've heard that this God Burying Ridge extends for tens of thousands of miles. If this continues won't it be several months before we reach the end?"

The one who spoke was a saint race youth. They were walking so slowly, and yet, let alone the legendary dangers that existed in this land, they didn't even see the shadow of a ghost. He was growing increasingly tired of journeying at such a slow pace.

"You want to walk to the end? This is God Burying Ridge! Going several thousand miles in and emerging alive is already your good fortune and yet you still have the gall to say you want to walk to the end. It's as if you don't want to live!" Fatty Zhou bluntly said.

The saint youth frowned. After being rebuked like this, he was inevitably unhappy. "I'll say this politely but we are your guests here. If we can join this team, that means that none of us are common mortals. Even those three Divine Transformation martial artists probably have some extraordinary background. I don't think you can afford to offend even the likes of them."

"Hey, who are you talking about?" Xiao Moxian unhappily said after being classified as 'one of those three Divine Transformation martial artists'.

At this time, because of the appearance changing technique she used, Xiao Moxian didn't seem cute or pure at all. The saint youth simply didn't buy her act. He just snorted, no longer speaking.

As the group continued forwards, Fatty Zhou seemed to intentionally go against the young saint's complains. Not only did he not increase his pace but he even slowed down.

In the previous 20 hours they had nearly crossed 200 miles. But in the following 8-10 hours, even though Fatty Zhou led them all the way through dawn, they only managed to cross 40-50 miles. This was a pace even slower than mortals!

Moreover, he would often lead the group around in large curving arcs. These arcs would often take over double the time of walking in a straight line. To a martial artist, this distance would only take the blink of an eye, but underneath the leadership of Fatty Zhou, everyone sluggishly moved over the path like snails. This caused many people to feel morose.

"Fatty Zhou, why do you lead us in so many circles? If we continue like this we won't be able to find god burying stones even in the next year!"

The saint youth who complained before became increasingly impatient. This slow speed was simply far too outrageous, and he always felt that this Fatty Zhou was messing around with them. Although there clearly weren't any dangers, he would still walk in a circle around random areas. Who knew whether or not these circular paths were necessary? It was as if Fatty Zhou wanted to demonstrate his own special sense of the existing area and deliberately led them through long circling detours.

This saint youth even began to suspect that Fatty Zhou was a swindler, that he was working together with the staff of Black God Fort to trick money out of the trial challengers. In truth, this Fatty Zhou was simply a nonsensical guide who knew nothing at all.

"I lead you in circles to avoid some possible danger zones. Although it can't be said that there are definitely dangers, the chances of dangers in those places are far higher than normal. It's better to be safe than sorry. Going a bit slower is far superior to losing your life."

Fatty Zhou patiently explained. However, the saint youth didn't believe this at all. "You're the only one saying there are dangers. How do we know whether these danger zones are really danger zones? We've come this far and yet there hasn't even been any threat to us at all!"

As the saint youth spoke, Fatty Zhou's complexion darkened. His voice was icy cold as he responded, "Once the dangers of God Burying Ridge appear, they will often take your life. If you want to curse yourself to death then that is fine, but don't bring your bad luck to our door."

Fatty Zhou's words contained a faint killing intent. The saint youth frowned but didn't speak further.

"If you don't believe me then you don't need to follow me at all. You can walk your own path."

Fatty Zhou coldly tossed out these words before continuing forwards. His pace remained as slow as before and he would continue walking in circles occasionally.

Lin Ming followed behind Fatty Zhou, rubbing his chin. He also had the thought that Fatty Zhou might have been working together with the old imp staff member from Black God Fort, but just from sensing the aura from Fatty Zhou, he could feel this person wasn't simple at all.

In short, he preferred to believe in Fatty Zhou's credibility. Even if Fatty Zhou was swindling them, he still had a certain understood into God Burying Ridge, otherwise, he would have died in God Burying Ridge long before he could trick people several times.

The complaining saint youth grimaced, his expression changing several times. In the end, he didn't go off on his own and continued following Fatty Zhou in his slow pace. The rumors of God Burying Ridge were far too fierce and far too dangerous. Even if this Fatty Zhou was a mysterious con artist treating them all as fools, at least they had all still been safe until now.

Chapter 1470 – Strange Death

Chapter 1470 – Strange Death

…

…

…

From noon to midnight, from midnight to noon, the skies above God Burying Ridge seemed forever covered by a faint fog, without a single ray of sunlight making it through.

Here, ancient dark green rocks littered the land. These stones had experienced the river of endless years, as if the landscape of God Burying Ridge had never changed for the last several billions of years.

The group of 12 people had already penetrated 300-400 miles deep into God Burying Ridge. Then, something finally occurred! The slow and steady Fatty Zhou suddenly jumped up like a dog chasing a rabbit. His speed increased to incredible velocities and even the ground shook beneath him, causing everyone to be startled.

Lin Ming reflexively jumped backwards. His right hand traced his spatial ring and the Phoenix Blood Spear came flashing out!

All this occurred in the blink of an eye. Beside Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian wasn't any slower. Her bloodline began to roil within her as she grasped her whip, ready to transform into her Phoenix Trueform at any time.

Lin Ming's first reaction was that Fatty Zhou had encountered some sudden danger and he had decided to flee and leave them behind!

However, what surprised Lin Ming was that even though all of this had occurred, the surroundings were still quiet. The wind blew at a low speed and the mountain stones remained as bleak and barren as before, as if nothing had occurred.

As for that Fatty Zhou, after jumping out several hundred feet he suddenly stopped. His right hand thrust out like an arrow and there was a light slapping sound as if he had struck something.

Then, Fatty Zhou bent over and picked something up. As he did, his round and tubby body seemed as if it was giving him a hard time in trying to bend over.

After that, Fatty Zhou walked back, his face flushed red with health. He held a red spirit grass in his hands. As he turned his palm, this spirit grass was received into his spatial ring.

“Haha, lucky, lucky! I’ve actually managed to pick up a blood dripping orchid; I can trade it for quite a bit of money or I can even refine it into a pill. It’s not bad either way. This blood dripping orchid will try to dive into the ground and escape, so if you’re not fast enough it will manage to flee.”

Fatty Zhou casually said. But as he spoke, let alone the saint youth that had been complaining all this time, even Lin Ming wasn’t feeling all too well.

This fellow, could he really be relied upon!?

It wasn’t a problem for him to pick a spirit grass. After all, in these sorts of mystic realms, whoever discovered the treasure was the one who owned it.

But before this, every step Fatty Zhou took was careful and as slow as a snail. He had even said it was better to be safe than sorry, and going too fast could easily lead to death. But, when he discovered that spirit grass just now he happily leapt forwards even faster than a rabbit, crossing hundreds of feet in an instant with no problem at all.

“Are you fucking playing with us!?” The saint youth violently shouted out in anger!

Fatty Zhou smirked, immediately responding, “If you don’t believe me you can leave by yourself. No one asked you to follow me! In fact, personally I would rather a person like you leave early so you don’t drag us into your vortex of bad luck!”

“What did you say?!”

The saint youth almost attacked, but at this time several other people persuaded him to calm down. “Consider this over. Don’t fight here. Now that we’re halfway there, there’s no way you can leave by yourself. On the contrary, it will be extremely dangerous to go anywhere alone. No matter if we are being tricked or not, it’s much safer if we are all together.”

The one who spoke was the older brother of the dragon siblings. In order to not offend Fatty Zhou, he used a true essence sound transmission.

“Humph!” The saint youth coldly snorted, suppressing his anger. “Zhou Shiyan, I will remember your name!”

“Do whatever you want. There are many people that already remember my name, so who cares if you do too.” Fatty Zhou hummed as he continued to lead the way.

The 12 people continued to advance forwards. Fatty Zhou was still as slow as before, as if he were challenging the saint youth’s bottom line.

However this time, there were far fewer people complaining. Currently, many of them were spreading out their sense, thinking to find some of the precious medicinal herbs in God Burying Ridge. The blood dripping orchid that Fatty Zhou picked up just now was quite valuable. Even though these people came from decent backgrounds, they were still tempted.

If they managed to pick up some heavenly materials, then that would still be a good lucky chance even if they didn’t find any god burying stones.

After 10 miles of walking, the saint youth’s heart suddenly stirred. Not too far away, there was a spirit grass growing beneath a large boulder. This spirit grass was only three inches high and there was a pigeon egg-sized fruit growing at the end. The entire fruit was blood red in color.

"Is that… a monster blood fruit?"

The saint race was shocked. In the legends, when a monster beast with a royal bloodline died, such fruits would be bred from using their corpses as fertilizer!

It wasn't only the saint youth that saw the monster blood fruit, but he was the fastest of those who did. He hurtled himself towards it. These several hundred feet passed instantly!

"Stop!" Fatty Zhou's complexion rapidly changed. "Don't touch that fruit!"

Fatty Zhou's voice and appearance were stern, but that saint youth only returned a contemptuous glance at him. "Are you stupid or sleepy? Do you think I am a three year old child? You just want this monster blood fruit. If I believed you again then I would be the idiot!"

As the saint youth spoke he plucked the monster blood fruit.

Lin Ming's pupils shrank as he saw this, all the muscles in his body tightening. The truth was that out of everyone here, he had been the first to discover the monster blood fruit because his divine sense was the most formidable out of everyone here. However, he didn't want a monster blood fruit so badly that he was willing to desperately rush out without regard for anything else. And more importantly, the moment he discovered the monster blood fruit, he also had a foreboding feeling pass through his heart.

Now that he heard Fatty Zhou shout out to stop, Lin Ming immediately raised his guard to full alert.

And standing around Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, the dragon siblings, and even that taciturn, 15-16 year old-looking black-clothed youth had also silently drawn out their weapons. The black-clothed youth's weapon looked like a saber; the blade was black and shining with a cold brilliance.

This was because Fatty Zhou's words had placed them all on alert. They would rather believe in potential dangers than be caught unprepared.

However, that saint youth didn't seem to encounter any dangers. As he grasped the spirit grass he loudly laughed, "Haha! This fruit is worth over a hundred million and it often can't be found in any city! I just happened to be close to breaking through to the middle Divine Lord realm. Once I refine this fruit into a pill it will greatly enhance my blood vitality!

"Awesome! Even if I don't obtain any god burying stones during this trip into God Burying Ridge I've more than recouped my losses! I've fucking had enough with this swindler tricking us all this way! I'm sick of his shit!"

As the saint youth was speaking, Lin Ming felt a chilling air crawl up from beneath his feet and shoot straight up his back. He saw an extremely strange and horrifying scene occur. The 'monster blood fruit' that the saint youth was holding in his hand suddenly stretched out a root hair to grip the saint youth's arm. Then, it began to wantonly absorb the blood essence in the saint youth's muscles!

The saint youth's arm began to wither away at a visible speed, but the saint youth himself didn't seem to sense anything wrong. He still remained ecstatic from his find and glaring at Fatty Zhou in triumphant disdain.

"Then again, I should also thank a useless swindler like you. Without you leading the way I would not have picked this monster blood fruit, hahaha!"

At this moment, the saint youth's self-pleased laughter was already standing in sharp contrast with the left half of his body that was completely decayed. This strange scene left a nearly unforgettable impression.

"There is no need to think about it, he is already dead…" Fatty Zhou's complexion was pale. There was no one else in the group that was gloating over the saint youth's misfortune either. Instead, it left them increasingly fearful of how dangerous this trip was. According to normal trends, they shouldn't have encountered such a strange existence at this distance.

“Did someone die? Why do you all have such expressions?”

The saint youth shouted out, panic beginning to rise in his voice as he saw the pity and panic in everyone’s expressions as well as their guarded stances. A feeling of intense restlessness surged in his heart. “What is going on… what are you looking at…”

A foreboding feeling appeared in his mind. Then, he turned his head to look at the left half of his body and saw the most terrifying scene of his life as well as the last scene of his life… his left half had completely rotten away, and things that looked like red roundworms were wriggling around in his flesh. This incomparably disgusting and horrifying scene caused him to cry out at the top of his lungs.

However, just as his cry started, a cold light shimmered through the air and pierced through his throat!

Ca!

With a light sound, blood splashed in the air. The saint youth’s throat was stabbed through and his voice was immediately cut off!

Lin Ming’s eyes widened. The one who attacked was Fatty Zhou!

“He could not be allowed to scream. It would lure other things here. We must leave here immediately or that thing will attack us too!”

As Fatty Zhou spoke, he launched his movement technique and rushed deeper into God Burying Ridge. Lin Ming followed behind. The scene that just happened was shocking to the mind. This God Burying Ridge had strange things everywhere.

The group of 11 people rushed forwards a dozen plus miles in a single go before stopping down.

All of their complexions looked unwell as if they mourned over the loss of someone in their group. The tragic death of the saint youth just now had caused them to shake with fear.

Even the normally flippant and happy Xiao Moxian had an unnatural expression. “Just what was that, it was disgusting!”

“I think… we should turn back!”

The one who spoke was Monster Prince Duyu. Without a doubt, the one who had been impacted the most just now was him.

He had secretly estimated the strength of that saint race youth who had just died. His final estimation was that he wasn’t much stronger than that saint youth. If he were to have fought that saint youth, although he could have won, it would have been a difficult victory.

If that saint youth had died so miserably, then if they had exchanged positions, he would have suffered the same fate.

“If you want to return then return yourself. We have no plans of doing so.” The one who spoke was the young girl that carried javelins, the young sister of the dragon siblings. As she looked at Monster Prince Duyu, her eyes were filled with disdain.

This disdainful gaze left Monster Prince Duyu infuriated. He regretted his impulsive action that had led to him following Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian into this damned danger zone.

“Fuck, I hate meeting those brash idiots that think they are some big tiger. He died and nearly dragged us down with him.” Fatty Zhou foully cursed. “Luckily, we didn’t encounter any dangers when we left nor did we deviate from the road I am familiar with.”

Fatty Zhou looked all around. After determining their approximate position, he finally let out a sigh of relief.

“What killed him?” Lin Ming suddenly asked.

Chapter 1471 – Old Enemy

Chapter 1471 – Old Enemy

…

…

…

What Lin Ming cared for the most was how the saint youth had died. Even after searching through his memory, he couldn't think of any evil plant that could kill a Divine Lord realm genius in such a strange and quiet way that didn't even elicit a single reaction.

Fatty Zhou's head shook like a rattle. "I have no idea. There is a 90% chance that this God Burying Ridge is a dao field left over by some extreme character of the past. This dao field has nearly become its own self-contained and separated world, moreover it has existed for billions or even 10 billion years. Do you know what sort of concept that long of a timespan is? A planet can spontaneously form life in billions of years and complete countless samsaras of species, much less something like this dao field. Over the years, God Burying Ridge has gathered countless types of mysterious energies, force fields, domains, and all other sorts of phenomena. It's incalculable just how many commoners, geniuses, powerhouses, mortals, vicious beasts and demons, have all died here! This separate world has already evolved into an unimaginably complex situation! If you see a plant it might not be a plant, and if see you something alive, it might not be alive, so if you ask me a question even I wouldn't know about it!"

As Fatty Zhou spoke, Lin Ming was gravely startled. In truth, not to mention a place like the God Burying Ridge which had been sealed up for billions of years, even if some poisonous insects were sealed into a jar, they would cannibalize each other until a mutated poisonous bug queen appeared.

Currently, God Burying Ridge was like a massive poisonous bug pot. Here, countless powerhouses of numerous races converged, as well as vicious beasts, monster beasts, ghosts, demons, spirits, and all sorts of existences. Over the billions of years, these existences swallowed each other, slaughtered each one, and constantly evolved all the while. It wasn't strange for some evil beings to grow out of all this chaos.

Even Lin Ming's group of 12 people could only be considered poisonous insects in a poisonous bug pot. As for the saint youth who had died, he was the first to become fertilizer.

………

At this time, in Heavendevil City's Black God Fort –

The old imp responsible for issuing mission badges was reclined on a chair. His two stubby legs were resting on a stool, as a completely satisfied expression crossed his face.

He had already been resting for a good while this afternoon. Then, at this time, his eyes widened and he suddenly took his legs off his stool, standing upright. Not too far away he could see three saint race martial artists walking towards him.

Among these three saint race martial artists, there was an old man whose cultivation he couldn't sense. The other two had a solid foundation with vibrant blood vitality; it was clear they were outstanding geniuses.

Such people likely came from a great background and these types of people liked to be extravagant in their actions. Moreover, looking at the appearances of these people it was clear they had just arrived at Heavendevil City. Maybe they were trying to obtain some information from him. If so, that would be a good chance to earn some extra income.

"Several guests, are you here to look for missions?"

The old imp said, his face wrinkled with smiles.

“No. I want to ask you something. A few days ago, was there a Divine Transformation martial artist that accepted an extremely difficult mission?”

The person asking this question was precisely Imperial Prince Naqi. In these past days, Naqi and Mister Zhou had searched Heavendevil City for Lin Ming, but still couldn’t find any hints to his trail.

Naqi believed that Lin Ming hadn’t stopped at Heavendevil City but had directly left here to continue deeper into the Great Desolate. Or, Lin Ming could also have accepted some mission in Heavendevil City and currently be completing it. Naqi believed that the latter had a slightly higher possibility.

If Lin Ming was on a mission then he definitely would have chosen an extremely difficult one that far surpassed the limits of an ordinary Divine Transformation realm martial artist. If so, then the staff of Black God Fort would have a deep impression of this person. Naqi believed this was the best possible way to find Lin Ming.

“This…” The old imp turned his eyes, rubbing his hands together, “Every day there are people accepting missions, it’s hard for me to recall such specifics…”

Before the old imp finished speaking, one of Naqi’s subordinates tossed a jade slip filled with origin energy runes towards him. The old imp’s eyes brightened and he quietly received this jade slip. He said, “Ah, well, now that I think about it, several days ago there were a few Divine Transformation realm martial artists who accepted an extremely difficult mission – a trial at God Burying Ridge!”

“What did they look like?”

“There were two men and one woman. The two men were common-looking, nothing special at all. The girl was pretty, but not some stunning beauty.”

Naqi and Mister Zhou looked at each other. Mister Zhou nodded and said with a sound transmission, “It really might be them. They could have used an appearance changing technique. As for that woman, she might be Xiao Moxian…”

“Xiao Moxian… humph!” Naqi coldly coughed. He was also well aware of the agreement between the saint race and the Divine Realm’s monster race. The Good Fortune Saint Son would marry Xiao Moxian in order to solidify their status as allies, but now, Xiao Moxian was actually travelling so closely with Lin Ming.

Although the relations between Naqi and the Good Fortune Saint Son weren’t harmonious, and their rivalry could even be described as water and fire, Naqi still didn’t want to see a mere human cuckold the Good Fortune Saint Son.

“What else do you know?”

Naqi looked at the old imp. The old imp rubbed his hands together, a pensive expression on his face.

“Give it to him.”

Naqi’s subordinate took out another origin rune jade slip. The old imp’s eyes lit up with joy. “That’s right, I remember! Haha, the three people you are looking for went to the west city to search for Fatty Zhou as a guide. This Fatty Zhou especially leads people to God Burying Ridge. He’s a man that’s always sniffing for any profit. Unless there was some accident, they should have already left by now!

“Countless people have died in God Burying Ridge over the years, but, the guides who dare travel through God Burying Ridge all year round have certain understandings into the safer routes and entrances of God Burying Ridge. If you look for another guide you might be able to overtake them on the road.”

“Oh? So there’s something like that too… where do I find a guide?”

“Hehe, this information is complimentary. In the east city there is a pair of brothers called the Red and Black Spiders. They are skilled in shamanistic arts, tracking techniques, and curse techniques. Out of all the guides, their strength is the highest but their price is also the highest. It would be best if you look for them. In God Burying Ridge it is extremely important to have a knowledgeable guide, otherwise if you randomly wander through that desolate land you'll die without even knowing how."

"Red and Black Spiders? I understand."

After obtaining this information, Naqi demonically grinned. He had more or less confirmed that Lin Ming had entered God Burying Ridge.

Now, it was time for the hunt to begin.

"Mister Zhou, there was someone I asked you to contact a few days ago. Have they arrived yet?"

"They are close. In fact, even without that person joining us we will still be able to kill the little beast easily."

"It's better if that person assists us. Even a lion must use their full force to capture a rabbit. Although Lin Ming only possesses a Divine Transformation realm cultivation, he has a great destiny upon his body and his life is hard to crush. Even though Mister Zhou is at the World King realm and there are also two half-step World King senior-apprentice brothers here, it's hard to guarantee that we will be able to kill Lin Ming after finding him. If that person comes then our chances of success will rise to 99%. Moreover, that person already has a grudge with Lin Ming. Even without us telling him to, he would do everything in his power to chase down Lin Ming! He should be thanking us for giving him this chance to begin with."

As Naqi spoke, Mister Zhou faintly smiled, "Your Highness is right. Since there's a free helper we might as well make use of him. Let us go search for the guides first."

Two hours later, Naqi's group found the Red and Black Spiders that the old imp spoke about.

These were two blood brothers that were together called the Red and Black Spiders. The older brother was called Black Spider and the younger brother was called Red Spider. Both of them had Holy Lord level cultivations and were from the imp race. The two brothers were short and their bodies were wrapped in black and red cloaks. Their skin was shiny and dark and their eye sockets were deep to a terrifying level.

Just from their aura alone, one could tell that these two were amazing martial artists within their level.

Naqi and his group paid enough origin energy runes that the spider brothers agreed to lead them to God Burying Ridge alone and no one else.

Half a day later, everyone gathered at the city gates. However, none of them were in a hurry to leave yet, as if they were waiting for something.

After another hour passed, Mister Zhou looked up towards the horizon. He smiled and said, “He’s here!”

As Mister Zhou’s voice fell, the space tore apart not too far away from them. A sharp sword tore out from the void, cutting through it like paper. Afterwards, a tall martial artist in black robes walked out from the space crack.

This person was pale, with handsome and elegant looks. He had an extremely young appearance and his pupils were blood red. His entire body emitted a dark demonic energy.

After Tian Mingzi’s identity as a spy was unveiled by Lin Ming he had no choice but to give up the Skydark Holy Lords and flee to the Saint Convocation Heaven where he could fully rely on the saints. Otherwise, Empyrean Divine Dream would not have let him off.

The foundation he had spent tens of thousands of years building had been destroyed in an instant. Moreover, because of his chase into the Sky Spill Continent, he had lost a hand. Having to retrain this hand would place a massive delay on him breaking through to the Empyrean realm in the future.

Perhaps it would even be a curse that made him unable to make another breakthrough in his lifetime.

If it weren't for Lin Ming then Tian Mingzi could have smoothly lurked until the outbreak of the war, providing all sorts of intelligence to search for the greatest benefits.

His enmity with Lin Ming could be described as absolutely irreconcilable.

"Great! Sage Tian Mingzi, you should also have an approximate understanding of the situation. Your mission this time is to work together with us to kill Lin Ming. If there is a chance then I would like to fight alone with him, but if there isn't, then kill him first to eliminate all future troubles! After this matter is finished I will prepare a generous gift for Sage Tian Mingzi!"

"Even if you didn't offer me anything I would do everything in my power to annihilate him."

Tian Mingzi's expression was calm and his voice was icy cold, but his heart was raging with emotions. He hadn't revealed the secrets of the Sky Spill Planet to everyone. His conclusion was that Lin Ming's rise to fame was concerned with the Sky Spill Planet. After he returned from the Sky Spill Planet all those years ago, he searched for all the information he could on the history of it and he finally was able to piece together an idea of what happened there.

Whether or not his guess was right, Tian Mingzi was positive that the Sky Spill Planet's lucky chance was absolutely obtained by Lin Ming.

If he could kill Lin Ming then he could obtain these secrets for himself. At that time, not only would he have made up for all the losses from losing his palm but he could also obtain a tremendous advantage that would allow him to break through to the Empyrean realm!

Chapter 1472 – Inner Ridge

Chapter 1472 – Inner Ridge

…

…

…

In the bleak and desolate earth, exposed rocks littered the ground, vast and endless.

God Burying Ridge occupied an area of tens of thousands of miles; it had slightly more surface area than a small planet. Besides mountain ranges, there were also valleys, dry lands and deserts. In short, it was a completely barren world.

The group of 11 people had already penetrated 2000 miles deep into God Burying Ridge. They had spent more than 10 days to come this far.

Everyone was closely gathered together with Fatty Zhou. Even though Fatty Zhou seemed a bit unreliable when he randomly sprinted out to gather some spirit treasure, the others still didn't act rashly. They had already learned from the saint youth's mistakes; there was no treasure here that was more important than their lives.

Of course, there were occasionally some treasures on the road that were obtained by them. In Lin Ming's eyes, these treasures weren't tempting at all, but some people were actually moved.

"I found this first!" A black-clothed girl with long hair said.

"I was the one who clearly found it!" A tall girl with a bountiful chest said, standing her ground.

The two women arguing were the young dragon clan girl and Xiao Moxian. They were both fighting over a precious and beautiful gem that contained a pure energy within it. To an ordinary martial artist this would have been a priceless treasure. But people like Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, and that dragon clan girl wouldn't necessarily care about something like this.

The reason they quarreled was because their personalities didn't mesh at all. Whether it was the young dragon clan girl or Xiao Moxian, they both had arrogant and aggressive characters. After travelling together for over 10 days, they would occasionally come into verbal conflicts with each other. However, because neither party would yield, the result was that the tension between them only intensified.

Lin Ming and the dragon clan youth could only wryly smile about this. However, these occasional arguments were actually a seasoning to this extremely arduous and boring journey.

"Beautiful ladies, I think we should rest here first. Once we pass through that mountain in front of us, that is when we truly entering God Burying Ridge. The dangers will be greater than ever, so it's best if you preserve your strength to deal with them." Fatty Zhou smiled as he stepped up to mediate their argument.

"God Burying Ridge's inner ridge? Are you saying that we've only been walking through the outer ridge?" The dragon clan youth asked Fatty Zhou, startled.

"There is no such thing as an outer ridge. We've only been walking along the very edge of God Burying Ridge."

"We've walked for over 10 days and that was only the edge?" Many people were depressed as they heard this. Through all of these days, there had only been a single instance of danger. But for the rest of the time, everyone still maintained full vigilance so that they could immediately react to any possible dangers. This caused all of them to feel mentally exhausted. However, Fatty Zhou just told them all that they had only been meandering along the edges of God Burying Ridge. They couldn't help but find this hard to accept.

“How do we define the boundary between God Burying Ridge’s inner ridge and outer edge?” Lin Ming asked after a brief moment of thought.

“That’s a good question. The way we define the inner ridge and outer edge of God Burying Ridge is using God Burying Ridge’s dao field as the divisionary threshold. There are some rumors that say God Burying Ridge’s dao field is left behind by the Asura Road Master and had already existed for countless billions of years. However, no one really knows how it came to be. But, perhaps because the dao field is too ancient or perhaps because the person who laid down this dao field had intended it to be so, there are actually over a dozen entrances into this dao field. We are currently going to go through one of them. The entrance we’ll be passing through is the safest one and could also be called the only possible one for us to go through! All other entrances will cause near immediate death upon entry.”

“Asura Road Master!?”

Fatty Zhou’s words left Lin Ming speechless. As for everyone else, their mouths dropped down in astonishment. In their minds, the Asura Road Master was a legendary existence who likely exceeded every other past or present powerhouse in the universe! Now, Fatty Zhou was actually saying that this God Burying Ridge dao field was left behind by the Asura Road Master!

“Those are only wild speculations of course. No one can truly say how the God Burying Ridge came to be. As I said before, the God Burying Ridge dao field has already formed a self-contained world. Once you pass through the entrance the dangers will dramatically increase. All of you must be psychologically prepared for anything to happen.”

After listening to Fatty Zhou’s words everyone sucked in a breath of cold air. If the God Burying Ridge dao field was analogous to a poisonous bug pot then they could now be considered as truly entering the poisonous bug pot. They would have to face all sorts of evil beings that had evolved over billions of years!

Among these existences, some could be considered living creatures and some couldn’t be considered anything at all. They could be sentient fields of energy or even accumulations of corpse energy or ghost energy. These sorts of things had no intellect at all, only an instinct to swallow everything. They would swallow energy and food, continuing to grow until they even swallowed the memories of martial artists. After gathering enough energy and soul wisdom, they would eventually evolve into demons!

In short, the inner ridge of God Burying Ridge was an extremely bizarre and strange world with countless mysterious species. Even a World King could die within. If one’s cultivation was high they still might not necessarily be able to live, but if one’s destiny was great enough, then even a Divine Lord realm powerhouse could safely enter and exit after finding a god burying stone.

Only an Empyrean could rely upon their tyrannical power to freely travel through God Burying Ridge. But, if an Empyrean were to enter to deepest depths of God Burying Ridge where Tragic Death Valley lay, even they would die in vain, never to emerge again.

Fatty Zhou led everyone a distance until they reached a rift valley.

This rift valley extended deep underground. The further one walked, the deeper they went. This rift valley was only a hundred some feet wide and the walls were cliffs that extended tens of thousands of feet high. It was difficult for even monkeys to climb.

The ground of the rift valley was slippery, glowing all over with moss and giant mushrooms. It was an eerie and terrifying feeling.

At this time, Lin Ming saw a dazzling brilliance appear in front of him, as if a paradise was hidden at the end of this rift valley.

Faintly, Lin Ming could hear the sounds of birds and even the fragrance of spirit grass.

After walking several more steps, Lin Ming confirmed his guess. Through a crevice in the rift valley’s cliffs, there was a world of auspicious and beautiful lights.

From a bleak and desolate world to suddenly this fantastical and wondrous scene, this immediate change was shocking.

“Don’t be fooled by what you see. What you see might not be the truth. After entering the inner ridge, use your vision as little as possible and use your divine sense as much as you can. Anything you see can be a threat to you, even things that aren’t actively attacking you. Do not try to bump into anything lest you draw a disaster upon yourself. As for things you cannot see even with your sense, treat them as illusions that do not exist.”

As Fatty Zhou spoke, he led everyone through the entrance to this paradise. The entrance was overflowing with origin energy, but as Lin Ming approached, he could actually feel a faint killing intent. The origin energy here didn’t seem auspicious at all. Rather, Lin Ming could faintly feel that the light of the entrance was so dense that it condensed into a storm of lightning and fire, able to burn anything that passed into ashes.

“This is the entrance, but there is no easy way to enter. You can only rely on your own true essence to protect your entire body and forcefully pass through. An ordinary middle Divine Lord martial artist will be charred to ash. Can you enter?”

Fatty Zhou looked over at Lin Ming and the others.

Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, and Monster Prince Duyu had the lowest cultivations out of everyone here. They were naturally the ones Fatty Zhou was questioning.

“Let me warn you ahead of time. When I said that a Divine Transformation realm martial artist entering God Burying Ridge is seeking death, this is the reason. Moreover, there is also you fellows…”

Fatty Zhou’s eyes swept over the dragon clan girl and the black-caped youth standing not too far away. The two of them were at the early Divine Lord realm.

As the dragon clan girl saw the doubt in Fatty Zhou’s eyes, her eyes flashed with disdain. “A middle Divine Lord cultivation isn’t anything at all. In fact, it is extremely simple, because of my race I don’t even need to use astral essence or true essence. With the intensity of my body alone I can resist it.”

As the dragon clan girl spoke she looked at Xiao Moxian, a thoughtful look in her eyes. “But as for you, you should be careful not to die.”

“Hahahahahaha!” Xiao Moxian bent over laughing as if she had heard the funniest joke of her life. “I don’t need true essence to enter or exit. Those flames and thunder won’t even touch the hem of my clothes!”

As Xiao Moxian spoke, the other martial artists were startled. This was simply a bit too exaggerated. If Xiao Moxian was an unrivalled genius that could fight a middle Divine Lord with her late Divine Transformation cultivation then they could accept that, but for her to say that she didn’t even need true essence to pass through the curtain of thunder and flames unscathed was a bit too ridiculous.

They had already seen how fierce God Burying Ridge could be. Even Fatty Zhou said that an ordinary Divine Lord powerhouse wouldn’t be able to enter, then it must be true; he certainly wasn’t the type to exaggerate.

“The anger of two proud girls really leaves me speechless.” Fatty Zhou forcefully smiled.

“Don’t try to cause trouble, it’s not easy to pass through. If you think you can show off by not using true essence, you might end up losing your life.” A late Divine Lord martial artist said from the group.

However, the two women clearly didn’t want to listen to him. The dragon clan girl smiled, “Aren’t you afraid that the wind will cut your tongue? Then let me see just how you can pass this energy attack unscathed without using any true essence at all!”

As the dragon clan girl spoke she was already stepping forwards. She flew straight towards the entrance, not using any true essence at all.

And behind her, the dragon clan youth was only shaking his head, clearly not worried about the safety of his little sister.

As for the others, their eyes were wide. To not use any true essence but instead rely on her powerful mortal body to resist the energy within that space? Were her defensive capabilities really that strong?

Peng peng peng!

A barrage of energy exploded over the dragon clan girl. Her skin shined with a cold light. She was indeed using her body to resist this attack!

The clothing she wore was a superior spirit artifact. Even under the barrage of this intense energy, she didn't seem harmed at all.

"She's this strong?"

Many people thought that the dragon clan girl was only exaggerating, but, they never expected she would actually use her body alone to resist the impact of energy and pass through. This level of talent was frightening!

"It's the defense of dragon scales..." Lin Ming had the blood of an Azure Dragon flowing within him so he could feel that when the dragon clan girl passed through the entrance, faint dragon scales appeared over her body. By depending on her dragon scales and high-grade spirit artifact vestment she was able to easily resist this energy. The cold light that shimmered over her skin was reflected from those dragon scales.

Many monster race martial artists would have defensive scales appear over their bodies when they transformed. But, it was difficult to freely manipulate this transformation like this dragon clan girl did, instantly changing her body.

"Those dragon clan siblings aren't ordinary at all. I wonder which level universe they came from."

As Lin Ming was thinking this, Xiao Moxian also moved. Although she only had a late Divine Transformation cultivation, she didn't seem weaker at all. Without using any true essence, she also rushed through the entrance.

Chapter 1473 – Ghostly Steps

Chapter 1473 – Ghostly Steps

…

…

…

As Xiao Moxian rushed into the entrance without using any true essence at all, the other martial artists nearly gasped in shock!

The reason that the dragon clan girl didn't use true essence to pass through the entrance was that she cultivated dual body and energy as well as her Divine Lord realm cultivation.

But, Xiao Moxian's cultivation was only at the late Divine Transformation realm. The difference was far too great. Moreover, this black-clothed girl seemed unlikely to be a martial artist who had reached large success of body transformation, yet she still wasn't using any true essence at all?

In a spark of light, Xiao Moxian had already broken through the entrance. The entrance dazzled with a golden light, overflowing with the chaotic powers of thunder, flame, wind blades, and even space and time, everything weaving together into a web of death.

Xiao Moxian didn't even use her Phoenix Trueform as she rushed into this web.

Ca!

With a light sound, Xiao Moxian's body was struck by a bolt of thunder.

The watching martial artists' pupils shrank. Without any time to respond, they saw Xiao Moxian's figure vanish, leaving nothing behind but an afterimage.

This terrifying speed didn’t surprise Lin Ming and Monster Prince Duyu, however, the other martial artists felt their eyes widen in astonishment even as disbelief colored their faces. It was hard to imagine that this terrifyingly fast Xiao Moxian was only a Divine Transformation realm martial artist.

In the web of chaotic energies, Xiao Moxian erratically drifted about, leaving behind a series of afterimages in her wake. She was like an enchanting spirit of the night, dancing through the skies and leaving a trail of ethereal smoke, freely travelling through the web of energies that was nearly impossible to avoid. When people thought that Xiao Moxian had nowhere left to dodge and she was about to be struck, she used an inconceivably fast movement technique to pass through gaps within the barrage of energies. Finally, those attacks of chaotic energies only struck her afterimages!

“How terrifying!”

“How is she doing that!?”

Just looking at that dense web of attacks, no one believed that someone could simply use a movement technique to dodge everything and pass through the entrance to the inner ridge. This was simply incredible!

Among the many martial artists watching, there were some who saw how Xiao Moxian was dodging. For instance, Fatty Zhou and the dragon clan youth.

“Although the chaotic energies at the entrance look crowded, the truth is that energy attacks come in waves and there is a brief gap between these waves that lasts for less than an instant. That black-clothed girl can see through these gaps and pass through them!”

The dragon clan youth slowly said. But, this explanation was even more shocking.

Although this approach seemed simple it was nearly impossible to accomplish. It needed an incomparably horrifying level of observation and calculating ability. Every moment, one had to include countless variables to figure out where to dodge. Just a single mistake would mean one would be struck by the chaotic energies!

Woosh!

Xiao Moxian passed through the inner ridge entrance and steadily landed down without using any true essence, as she had said before. Moreover, the chaotic energies hadn’t even touched her clothing!

As the dragon clan girl saw Xiao Moxian land, her complexion became ugly. Compared to Xiao Moxian’s light and sprightly movements, her using her bodily defensive capabilities and high grade spirit artifact vestment to withstand the barrage of chaotic energies seemed clumsy and oafish.

Moreover, she had to admit that she was inferior to Xiao Moxian in movement techniques.

As Xiao Moxian looked at the dragon clan girl’s complexion, she smirked. This was exactly the effect she wanted.

“Is that girl really at the Divine Transformation realm?”

“In terms of movements I am not even capable of a tenth of what she can do!”

“Perhaps she has some particular talent in terms of movement, but what she did just now needs not only power, but also talent in observation and instantly calculating the situation. Her perception must be terrifying!”

Many martial artists didn’t know that Xiao Moxian was the descendant of a true God Beast. If they knew, they would be so surprised that their chins would hit the floor. After all, she was a proud beauty that even the heavens would be jealous of.

In fact, Xiao Moxian wasn’t just talented in movement. She was strong in all aspects, and her movement abilities were only a part of her strength.

Beside Lin Ming, Fatty Zhou traced his chin, secretly dumbfounded. He originally thought that out of all the guests here, the dragon siblings and short black-cloaked youth were already extremely talented, but he never imagined that there would be someone so bizarre.

It was no wonder that this Divine Transformation realm girl would be so brave as to enter God Burying Ridge.

After Xiao Moxian passed the entrance, everyone turned to look at Lin Ming and Monster Prince Duyu.

These two people had come together with Xiao Moxian and were also at the Divine Transformation realm. Just how strong were they?

After being looked upon by so many people, Monster Prince Duyu's complexion was extremely poor. In his innermost heart he didn't want to go into the inner ridge, but at this time it wouldn't be safe for him to return alone either. His only choice was to steel his mind and continue forwards.

"What shit luck." Monster Prince Duyu calmly thought to himself. He revolved his true essence to the limit and directly impacted towards the entrance.

Ka ka ka!

Thunder and flames crashed onto his body. It wasn't easy for him to withstand such a fierce destructive power. In fact, it was somewhat straining.

When Xiao Moxian was at the middle Divine Transformation realm, her strength already far surpassed Monster Prince Duyu's. Now that she had stepped into the late Divine Transformation realm, the difference between her and Monster Prince Duyu increased even more.

Hu – !

Monster Prince Duyu also steadily landed on the floor. From start to finish his performance was satisfactory.

"It looks like these three people are all unrivalled monstrous geniuses, and that black-clothed girl should be the most magnificent of them all. Even so, it's incredible if just a single one of these monstrous geniuses were to appear, so why would three of them show up together?" Fatty Zhou breathed out a sigh of relief. He could feel that this black-clothed girl's movements and talent already surpassed the scope of his understanding.

"This little brother, it seems you'll be able to easily pass too..."

Fatty Zhou smiled at Lin Ming. From just the aura emanating from Lin Ming's body, he could feel that Lin Ming was also a dual body and energy cultivator and his foundation was shockingly solid. It was hard to imagine how strong he was.

Lin Ming nodded. Then, he activated his movement techniques and rushed towards the entrance to the inner ridge.

In terms of speed, Lin Ming had the Gate of Wonder and high attainments in the Thunder Laws, allowing him to surpass Xiao Moxian in this aspect. In terms of perception, Lin Ming was on par with Xiao Moxian. For him to pass through the entrance like Xiao Moxian had done wouldn't be a problem at all.

However, Lin Ming had no need to do that. Using true essence to protect his body was the simplest and easiest method.

The power of thunder and fire wrapped around Lin Ming, creating a barrier around him. This power just happened to counterbalance the chaotic energies – no more, no less, just right.

After several breaths of time, Lin Ming passed through the entrance.

"This youth isn't simple either. But he doesn't seem to be as amazing as that black-clothed girl."

Many people secretly speculated. Of course, it was hard to see just how much strength Lin Ming was holding back by him passing through the entrance.

“It looks like we can’t regard these three as ordinary late Divine Transformation realm martial artists. Although that young man didn’t have some startling performance when he passed through the entrance, his skill in controlling energy was sublime. He didn’t waste a single speck of energy at all. It’s clear that he has high achievements in the Laws.”

As Fatty Zhou thought this he protected his body with true essence and passed through the entrance.

Behind him the others began to follow one at a time. Some passed through with ease and some didn’t.

“You’re quite skilled. Allow me to introduce myself. I am called Dragon Cloud and this is my little sister Dragon Moon.” As the dragon clan youth arrived beside Lin Ming, he turned towards him and spoke with a smile.

Chapter 1474 – Curse

Chapter 1474 – Curse

…

…

…

The talented and the strong always attracted the attention of others. When Dragon Cloud saw the strength of Lin Ming's group he immediately wanted to become friends with them. Lin Ming and Monster Prince Duyu weren't too startling in their performance, but Xiao Moxian was stunning.

"My name is Lin Lanjian." Lin Ming said, introducing himself.

"My name is Ji Xian'er." Xiao Moxian giggled. As opposed to Lin Ming who had given a fake name, Xiao Moxian had given her true name.

The surname of Empyrean Demondawn's direct lineage was Ji. Xiao Moxian's birth name was Ji Xian'er.

Xiao Moxian's name that she usually referred to herself as was one that was conferred to her in a smelting trial. Xiao Moxian – the Little Demon Fairy.

Fatty Zhou was extremely careful as he led the group forwards into the inner ridge. He pulled out the compass and constantly adjusted direction using divinations arts. His speed was even slower than when they were walking through the outer ridge.

Even so, no one complained.

As they continued to walk forwards, Lin Ming was silent. He looked all around him, using his sense to probe the inner ridge's dao field.

In the legends, God Burying Ridge's dao field was left behind by the Asura Road Master and had evolved through billions of years of time. As Lin Ming investigated his surroundings, he could faintly feel a deep and boundless aura. This aura gathered into vague lines of the Great Dao that slowly flowed through the world like streams of stars.

"These Great Dao lines..."

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He could feel that the Great Dao lines were somewhat familiar, however, he couldn't immediately recall where he had seen them before.

"Could this be... the jade pendant's map!"

Lin Ming's mind shook. He seeped his divine sense into his spatial ring and began to verify the lines within the emperor jade's map with what he could sense around him. Finally, he was able to confirm that this map within the jade pendant was a chart of God Burying Ridge's dao field!

In other words, the Asura Road Master had once carved the entire chart of God Burying Ridge's dao field into this jade pendant!

As Lin Ming realized this, he shuddered. If so, then this emperor jade was far too valuable.

With the entire dao field chart of God Burying Ridge, let alone the value it had in exploring this land, just the Concepts, Laws, and all sorts of principles within the dao field itself were more than enough for Lin Ming to gain massive insights.

As Lin Ming continued forwards with Fatty Zhou, he simultaneously verified the emperor jade map's lines with the dao field around him.

Seeing the map was one thing and personally experiencing it for himself was another. Now that Lin Ming was able to verify this dao field with what he knew, the previously mysterious and impossibly profound emperor jade was actually able to allow Lin Ming to discover all sorts of deep and mystical principles.

Every two hours, Lin Ming would gain new comprehensions. To branch out a part of his concentration and divine sense to meditate on the emperor jade was extremely dangerous in God Burying Ridge. Although Lin Ming practiced the Divine Dream Law and his sense was formidable, even he wasn't an exception.

However, sharpening one's axe wouldn't delay the process of cutting wood; preparing himself for this area would be far more beneficial. This also allowed Lin Ming to understand the essence of God Burying Ridge. This was something that Fatty Zhou couldn't compare with. Although Fatty Zhou could guide one into God Burying Ridge, this was due to the sum of countless predecessors who had traded their lives for more experiences. The master passed their knowledge to their apprentice and this knowledge continued all the way until now.

Although these experiences were easy to use, they couldn't explain just why God Burying Ridge was the way it was.

Everyone continued forwards slowly and calmly. Then, at this time, a gray tornado appeared in the skies. Wind howled and the faint moans of ghosts wafted in the air.

These ghostly beings were formed from all sorts of energy fields that had existed here for billions of years. They could be called bizarre and incomprehensible. Even a Holy Lord would feel dread facing these existences.

"Ignore them. As long as they don't take the initiative to attack us then we don't need to bother with them. I will use this Heaven Net Compass to shield the vitality of the 11 of us. These ghosts do not have eyes nor do they have divine sense; they only have an instinct to devour life. As long as they don't smell the life coming from us they will not find us."

As Fatty Zhou spoke, many array symbols began to spin around them, sticking onto everyone and wrapping around them.

This was only a light force field with some runes. This thin barrier blocked out the ghosts that could rush towards them at any moment, wanting to steal their lives.

Wu ! Wu ! Wu !

Fierce winds swept up and the cries of ghosts became increasingly loud. Then, from within the tornado, the figure of a ghost king that was several dozen feet tall appeared.

This ghost king's body had already substantialized, and it had the facial features of a person. Two soul flames flickered within its hollow eyes; it was clearly intelligent.

This intelligence was gathered from the ghost king swallowing the souls of numerous martial artists. By eating up the wisdom of living beings, this ghost king had eventually evolved its own form of a soul.

"Ghost king!"

Fatty Zhou frowned, a dignified look on his face. From the time he entered God Burying Ridge, Fatty Zhou had always been extremely careful and slow in his pace, but he had also been smiling the entire time. This was the first time he showed such a grim expression.

"Is the situation very bad?" Some people asked with a true essence sound transmission.

Fatty Zhou nodded. "Yes. If this fellow discovers us then some of us will certainly die."

The force field that Fatty Zhou laid down was not invincible. If these ghosts were powerful enough, they could see through his force field. At that time, all of them would be in danger. This ghost king was extremely difficult to deal with and it was likely that several of them would die in the ensuing battle. But, the most terrifying part was that the echoes of their battle would likely attract other evil beings over here. Once that occurred, their losses would be astronomical.

Everyone maintained full vigilance. Every single martial artist here was an extraordinary individual amongst their level. As they grew up to this point they had encountered many brutal battles. Facing such a grim scene, all of them appeared solemn but not panicked at all.

Luckily, the force field that Fatty Zhou laid down was extremely stable, locking down the life force of everyone here and not revealing the smallest trace. The ghost king didn't notice their existence at all.

The black winds faded; the ghost king seemed as if it would leave soon.

Everyone began to secretly breathe a sigh of relief. Not facing a life or death battle was the best possible outcome.

The further the ghost king went, the more relieved Fatty Zhou became. The moment he was about to tell everyone to begin moving out once more, a sudden change occurred!

A mysterious and invisible strength emerged from the air, smashing into Fatty Zhou's force field and causing it to wildly shake as if it would shatter at any moment.

After that strike just now, the ghost king that had been leaving stopped in its tracks as if it had sensed something.

"What is happening!?"

A half-step Holy Lord trial challenger asked, his complexion darkening.

Fatty Zhou's complexion was grim and unsure.

Bang!

With another strike, the force field became even weaker. Fatty Zhou's palms began to drip beads of sweat. He had confirmed a terrifying fact, and that was that someone was attacking them!

Not the evil beings of God Burying Ridge, but other people!

“What is happening!” Some other people also discovered that something was wrong.

“Curse technique… this is a curse attack that we God Burying Ridge guides use! Someone is using a secret curse technique to attack us!”

A God Burying Ridge guide was an extremely special occupation in Heavendevil City that had an incalculably long inheritance. Masters passed their knowledge to their apprentices and their apprentices passed their knowledge to their students.

This included all sorts of secret techniques, including divination, feng shui, array formations, curse arts, and so on.

Since long ago, the God Burying Ridge guides would compete with each other. They competed for customers, and for the reason of stealing away their rivals’ knowledge and inheritance, they would even kill them. They could use all sorts of secret arts to interfere with the other party’s abilities. In particular, this was true for when the other party was under attack by the evil beings of God Burying Ridge. Using secret techniques at this time was the most vicious and ruthless method!

“Curse!? What kind of curse!?”

Fatty Zhou’s words aroused unease in everyone. Curse techniques were extremely mysterious and almost impossible to guard against. As long as this other party had locked onto their soul aura they could attack from afar. Even among the common mortals there were sorcerers that could harm people by stabbing a little straw man figure of someone, much less martial artists.

Normally, using curse arts against martial artists of a similar level didn’t have much effect. But, the crucial point was that this curse attack that struck Fatty Zhou at this moment was the straw that would crush the camel’s back.

“This curse technique… could it be the Spiders?”

As Fatty Zhou realized this his complexion became extremely ugly. Amongst the God Burying Ridge guides, the Spider Brothers were a notorious duo. They were infamous for murdering others to steal their possessions, and it was unknown how many fellow guides had died under their hands. Even their own customers might be killed by them!

“Spiders?” Lin Ming had never heard this name before. Now that they were being attacked he naturally associated this with Imperial Prince Naqi. Could this be his doing?

Thinking back on it, he did leave some flaws behind in his methods. It was possible that Naqi had chased him all the way to God Burying Ridge.

The main point was that Lin Ming never expected he would meet Naqi at Heavendevil City to begin with. And now that he realized this, there was no time to make up for these mistakes.

Bang!

Fatty Zhou’s force field shook again, as if it were about to shatter.

As for the ghost king, it had also discovered that there was something strange here. It opened its mouth and let out a deep and ghastly roar.

Chapter 1475 – Instant Death

Chapter 1475 – Instant Death

…

…

…

At this time, a thousand miles away, a giant red spider and a giant black spider were lying on the ground. These were the Spider Brothers' contract beasts as well as their mounts.

And between these two spiders, the Spider Brothers were sitting cross-legged in the void. A gray crystalline sphere shimmered in front of them, clearly reflecting the image of Fatty Zhou's face.

"I didn't think you would have this sort of method. I will increase the agreed upon rewards."

Imperial Prince Naqi smiled with satisfaction from behind the Spider Brothers. They had been casually recommended by the mission issuer at Black God Fort, but after he had hired them he had been pleasantly surprised with their skills.

"Hehe, us brothers are the strongest God Burying Ridge guides of Heavendevil City. The several other guides are all within our control. We've already secretly placed tracking symbols on their bodies." Red Spider cackled, his voice hoarse.

The Spider Brothers were imp race martial artists. They originally excelled in tracking, cursing, poisons, and assassinations. Many years ago they obtained a set of god runes that allowed them to mark the other guides and quietly track their positions. Once these guides obtained a rare treasure from God Burying Ridge, they would kill them and steal their goods.

Now, they were using this tracking technique to locate Fatty Zhou and attack him with a curse technique.

Because they were too far away, the curse technique wasn't too strong. But using it at this exact moment actually had a wondrous effect.

"We have already fulfilled your requests. With our interference it will only be a matter of time before we catch up to them. My only fear is that those several little fellows can't withstand us playing around with them and will be eaten up by the evil beings of God Burying Ridge."

Black Spider said with a faint note of disdain.

"Haha, if that man can be directly killed off then that is for the best. But as for that woman, do not kill her. She is still useful to me."

Imperial Prince Naqi happily laughed. Since he was doing all of this he might as well do it to the limit. After killing Lin Ming he would steal Xiao Moxian away.

But, he had to be careful in how he dealt with Xiao Moxian. If he were to do anything to her then he would have to cleanly handle the matter; he couldn't allow even a hint of a rumor to escape, otherwise the alliance between the saints and the Divine Realm monster race would shatter. If so, then it would be difficult for him to escape severe punishments. Moreover, his greatest opponent, the Good Fortune Saint Son, would take this chance and launch an all-out attack to eliminate him while he was down.

Thinking of this, Naqi licked his lips. He was very willing to make this future Saint Sovereign senior-apprentice brother of his a cuckold.

"Don't even dream of it." A cold voice suddenly said.

The Spider Brothers frowned. They turned their heads, looking towards a black-robed man. This black-robed man had handsome and elegant features. His skin was pale and his dual pupils shined with a blood red light.

This person was Tian Mingzi.

Seeing this person with a Great World King cultivation, the Spider Brothers choked on their response. They could only suppress the mocking words they wanted to spit out.

"This fellow Lin Ming, I understand him very well. If you think that a mere curse technique will kill him then you're simply fantasizing too much!"

Tian Mingzi had no scruples when he spoke, even mocking Imperial Prince Naqi. Although Imperial Prince Naqi wasn't happy, he didn't refute these words. As the saying went, the one who understood you most was not your friend but your enemy, and against someone like Lin Ming, Tian Mingzi indeed had the right to say all of this.

"It doesn't matter if he doesn't die. First we will ruin them. It's best if we can make that fatty leading them lose his combat strength. As long as they don't have that fatty leading them then the others will be nothing but headless flies. It will be easy to capture them all then." Imperial Prince Naqi gloomily said.

………

Kacha!

A large section of the force field that Fatty Zhou laid down was torn apart. A ghostly wind swept up the rocks, howling towards them as it carried infinite moaning screams!

"This is bad!"

Fatty Zhou was in a dire situation. His fat face was wet with drops of sweat. At this time their only choice was to fight!

"Be careful of this wind. It isn't ordinary wind but restless ghost energy!"

Fatty Zhou shouted out. But as he spoke, there was a miserable cry as a middle Divine Lord martial artist had his arm touched by this black wind.

In a mere moment, that man’s arm seemed to be cut by countless knives. Flesh and blood flew off in rapid chunks, rapidly swallowed up by ghostly spirits in the air. Soon, there was nothing left of that arm but white bones!

“Ahhhhh!”

The martial artist cried out in pain and terror. The other people also felt a creepy chill crawl over their scalp and spine. As martial artists who had fought through endless slaughter fields, they were used to seeing life or death situations. But, this gruesome scene was 10 times more horrifying than dying normally!

Someone couldn’t resist the pressure of the black winds and turned tail to run.

“Do not run away! If you leave you’ll just die faster!”

Fatty Zhou shouted. However, it was too late. The martial artist who fled was immediately sucked up into the black winds. The mourning cries of infinite ghosts became even louder. The ghost king suddenly stepped forwards, its claws grasping towards the chest of that fleeing martial artist and instantly sucking away the flesh and blood of his heart.

The martial artist screamed in agony and fear. In just several breaths of time he turned into a dried up corpse that scattered to dust in the wild winds!

“His flesh and blood was sucked dry!”

Fatty Zhou frowned. Now there were only 10 people left in the group and one of them was severely wounded.

The weaker ones amongst the 10 all paled as the blood drained from their faces. Perhaps the next one to die would be from among them.

“We must cause heavy damage to that ghost king! I will attack, you people defend!”

Fatty Zhou roared out. As long as they could destroy the ghost king there was no need to fear the other ghosts.

Everyone was in a critical situation. Dragon Cloud and Dragon Moon took out two 10 foot long dragon spears. These spears were magnificent and grand; every strike was able to turn several ghosts into ashes.

The others also hastily attacked. The most eye-catching among them was the small youth with the bandage-wrapped hands. He held a black sword and repeatedly slashed out. Every time he did, one or two ghosts would be savagely killed. Although this was less than the dragon siblings, his sword speed was extremely fast and his total kill count was no lower.

As for the others, they were weaker than Dragon Cloud and Dragon Moon. That terribly howling black and cold wind placed a tremendous pressure on all of them.

Hu – hu – !

With blazing seals shining in his hands, Fatty Zhou threw a burning charm towards the ghost king.

At the same time, his round body leapt up like an overweight rabbit, hopping towards the ghost king.

With a wave of his right hand, a massive thick cleaver appeared in his grip. Without further ado, he chopped straight down at the ghost king's head!

Bang!

The charm exploded and the flash of fire caused the ghost king to slow for a moment. Fatty Zhou's cleaver came chopping down, cutting off all avenues for the ghost king to dodge.

However, not only was the ghost king not startled, it began to cruelly chuckle. Its ugly and fierce head turned to the right as it used its shoulder to forcefully withstand Fatty Zhou's cleaver strike!

Kacha!

Golden light radiated outwards. A thick black plate of armor had appeared over the ghost king's shoulder, stiffly blocking the cleaver strike.

Its body paused for a moment before it stretched out a claw towards Fatty Zhou.

"What a terrifying defensive ability!"

Fatty Zhou rapidly flew backwards. At the same time, the dragon siblings as well as the small youth rushed forwards like ghosts and gods. Although this was their first time combining attacks, they actually coordinated well with a tacit understanding of what to do. Two spears and a sword thrust forwards, allowing no chance for the ghost king to dodge.

However, the ghost king didn't plan to dodge at all. Armor shimmered over its body once more, and with a series of loud ringing sounds, the three attacks were all resisted by the ghost king's armor!

The ghost king's complexion only distorted a little but there was no damage to it at all.

"Too strong!"

The three people's expressions changed. And at this time, a black tornado came shrouding down over them, enveloping all three of them!

With their strength, breaking through this black tornado would only take the blink of an eye. But, the ghost king wouldn't give them this time.

It cackled as it thrust its claws towards the three of them!

Its icy cold claws glowed with a ghostly green light; they were clearly poisonous!

If this ghost king were to grab them then they would either become its food or be poisoned and eventually become its companions!

"We will block, you break through this black wind!" Dragon Cloud shouted out towards the small fellow. As he did so he thrust his spear towards the ghost king. They had to delay for enough time for this small fellow to break through the black wind, otherwise they would all be doomed.

And as Dragon Cloud and Dragon Moon thrust out their spears, they discovered that Lin Ming had appeared behind the ghost king at some unknown time. He was like a spirit that directly teleported to the ghost king's rear.

His weapon was also a spear!

This deep red spear was slightly shorter than the dragon siblings' spears and it looked ordinary, not particularly special at all.

A spear thrust out. Spear light howled, piercing right towards the ghost king's back!

"Jejejeje!"

The ghost king queerly laughed, simply not caring about Lin Ming's attack. That strange black armor also shimmered into existence behind it; it planned to directly withstand Lin Ming's spear!

At the same time, its body drew backwards. It no longer attacked the dragon siblings, but reached out a claw to grab Lin Ming's head!

"Be careful!"

The dragon siblings cried out in alarm.

If Lin Ming were to continue to stubbornly attack and his attack were to fail then his head would be burst apart by the ghost king like a rotten watermelon!

Lin Ming's complexion was cold and determined and there was no hesitation in his movements. Within his body the Eight Inner Hidden Gates opened up as the power of essence, energy, and divine fused together as one.

"Three Essences As One! Power of heavenly tribulation!"

Bang!

With a loud explosion the power of thunder and fire stored within the Heretical God Tree erupted forth! Thunder and fire heavenly tribulation wove together, creating a horrifying detonation. Whether it was fire or thunder, they were the elements that countered ghosts and evil beings the most, much less thunder and fire heavenly tribulation!

With a blinding divine light, a sun seemed to appear in the world. Lin Ming's spear stabbed into the ghost king's back, tearing through its armor as spear light blew up within its body.

In that instant, the ghost king's substantialized body was torn apart like a cloth sack. Thunder and fire spewed forth from its mouth and all over its body, forming beams of red and purple light that made the ghost king look like a porcupine.

"Uwooo!"

The ghost king cried out in agony. However, there was no chance it could continue surviving beneath this terrifying barrage of thunder and fire. With a loud popping sound, it vanished into smoke and ash.

"I-it's dead?"

Fatty Zhou's eyes were as wide as full moons. The dragon siblings and the small fellow also felt this was unbelievable. They had fought with the ghost king just now so they understood just how terrifying it was, yet it was instantly killed off by Lin Ming's spear?

Chapter 1476 – Paradise Reborn

Chapter 1476 – Paradise Reborn

…

…

…

If the horrors of God Burying Ridge had only been rumors in the past, the dragon siblings had now personally experienced just how terrifying and formidable these evil beings were with their weapons. Although they were confident they could engage in a prolonged battle and eventually whittle down the ghost king, this was still God Burying Ridge, a land with countless dangers and tribulations round every corner. If the battle continued on much longer who knew what else would have been dragged into the mix.

If that happened, even if they weren't completely annihilated they would still suffer tremendous losses. Moreover, in the chaotic battle, some people would have been chased down by those ghostly creatures. If these people separated from Fatty Zhou, their fate could be imagined.

Even Fatty Zhou didn't have any methods to effectively deal with the ghost king, and his cultivation was at the early Holy Lord realm. He was also considered quite strong, with many tricky abilities and methods he could use. Even if Fatty Zhou were to run into a weaker middle Holy Lord realm martial artist he could still protect himself. But in this situation, the ghost king that Fatty Zhou hadn't been able to do anything to was instantly killed off by Lin Ming!

A late Divine Transformation realm genius had strength equal to a late Holy Lord master? That was leaping over two large boundaries!

From the start, everyone thought that Xiao Moxian was the most extraordinary individual in Lin Ming's group, especially when it came to movement. But, it seemed that Lin Ming far surpassed her.

"I really have no idea how he trained this far. Although he has the blood of the Azure Dragon within him due to some lucky chance, in terms of bloodline talent, that will only make him better than an ordinary martial artist. It's impossible for Azure Dragon blood alone to allow him to reach this level! Even my dragon clan is inferior to him..."

Dragon Rain found this hard to accept. Lin Ming's bloodline was far inferior to her own, but in terms of strength, the late Divine Transformation Lin Ming was far stronger than she was at the early Divine Lord realm! This caused her to feel deeply frustrated at this great disparity.

"His talent simply doesn't come from the Azure Dragon blood alone. There must be some secret on his body, but it's hard to say what it is." Dragon Cloud rapidly said with a sound transmission.

At this time, Fatty Zhou forced out a smile, saying, "Everyone, don't just stand there stunned, we're still in trouble here..."

"Mm?" Everyone finally perked up after being reminded by Fatty Zhou. Now was not the time to be distracted. No matter how freakishly abnormal Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were, the top priority right now was to settle the matter with these ghosts as soon as possible. By all reasoning, now that the ghost king had died, these ghost winds should no longer prove a threat, so why was Fatty Zhou saying they were still in trouble?

"What's the trouble?" Dragon Cloud anxiously asked.

Fatty Zhou said, "God Burying Ridge's ghost winds are usually led by a ghost king. Once the leading ghost king dies, the ghost wind should disappear. However, the ghost wind is becoming increasingly fierce. This means that there is another ghost king nearby, or possibly even the higher level existence ghost emperor, an evil being equal to a World King powerhouse. That is not something any of us can deal with!”

Fatty Zhou was the calmest and most analytical person in the group. He had passed through countless dangerous situations in God Burying Ridge. Although Lin Ming’s strength had far surpassed his earlier expectations, he still didn’t think that Lin Ming would have the ability to deal with a World King level ghost emperor.

“Ghost emperor, World King powerhouse?”

As everyone heard this they sucked in a breath of cold air. Then, deafening noises filled the air as the sound of metal crashing upon metal echoed through the void. This sound was like the sound of chains being violently dragged across the floor. A terrifying aura came shrouding down from the skies, sending chills up everyone’s bodies!

Fatty Zhou’s complexion greatly changed, “Hurry and escape!”

He had already determined that their battle with the evil spirits just now had finally lured in some incredibly horrifying existence!

In God Burying Ridge, if one lost the protection of a force field and had to face these endless evil beings head-on, the strength of a single martial artist was very minor in comparison. If there was a single mistake then one could easily perish!

Rahhh!

A terrifying roar split the world. For a time, devastatingly strong winds rose up from all around. Evil spirits howled and the martial artist whose arm had been withered away by the ghost winds before was directly sucked up into the swirling gale.

“Ahhh!”

The martial artist screamed out in agony. His body suddenly exploded in the violent winds, turning into a rain of bones and blood!

As Fatty Zhou saw this, he no longer hesitated. He chose a direction and rushed straight ahead!

Everyone followed him. Lin Ming also put away his long spear and fled with all his strength. Although he was formidable, even he wouldn't do something as risky as facing this World King level ghost emperor.

Wuuu ~ !

Wuuu ~ !

Ghostly winds whistled, causing many large rocks to break down. The evil spirits and ghost winds fused together as one, forming a fierce and gruesome devil's head that rushed towards everyone, wanting to devour them all!

With everything hanging by a thread, Fatty Zhou threw out his Heaven Net Compass.

With a cracking sound, a brilliant light flashed out. The Heaven Net Compass was smashed away by the ghost winds and crumbled away in the air!

Fatty Zhou felt his heart twist as he saw this. But at this time he couldn't care about such things.

With a bizarre cry, Fatty Zhou launched his movement technique and hurtled himself forwards at full speed!

His body was fat and round. As he rushed forwards he was like a plump mouse barreling forwards. He stayed close to the ground, borrowing the camouflage of the terrain to flee.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian relied on their exceptional movement abilities to keep close to Fatty Zhou. Faintly, from behind, Lin Ming heard another miserable scream!

Then, a rumbling explosion sounded out. He turned his head to see a dazzling pillar of flames shoot into the skies. This was the light of a martial artist self-exploding!

There was someone that had been caught and covered by the ghost winds. Unwilling to become food for the ghost winds, this person decided to blow themselves up!

When a martial artist exploded themselves, the resulting attack would be over 10 times more powerful than that martial artist's all-out strike. This explosion momentarily hindered the ghost winds, allowing the others that were attempting to escape a rare opportunity to catch their breath!

But, this opportunity only lasted for one or two breaths of time!

Taking advantage of this chance, Fatty Zhou grit his teeth and pulled out a new compass from his spatial ring, He quickly spoke an incantation and threw this compass outwards.

Light sparkled. The compass exploded in mid-air, turning into a new force field.

The effect of this force field was to conceal a person's life force as much as possible so ghosts couldn't detect them. Fatty Zhou couldn't be bothered with seeing how effective this force field was; he continued to recklessly run forwards.

Under the shield of this compass, the remaining eight people ran several hundred miles forwards. Then, at this time, the surroundings suddenly changed. That bleak and desolate world, filled with shades of gray, had suddenly turned into a spring paradise.

Here, there were spirit flowers and trickling spirit springs. The skies were lit by a radiant sunlight and white clouds floated peacefully about. This was like a fairyland on earth, a perfect utopia.

As Fatty Zhou stepped into this 'fairyland', he immediately paused, looking as if he had been struck by lightning.

Everyone also came to a halting stop. For everyone here, Fatty Zhou's every action and movement was the law; they had to follow everything he did.

Lin Ming also stopped. He turned around and saw that as the mournful ghost wind blew into the boundaries of this paradise, it paused for a moment before completely vanishing.

“How… how could this be…”

Dragon Cloud asked, his voice weak. After stepping into this paradise of ultimate bliss, he noticed that Fatty Zhou’s complexion had become no better. In fact, it had even worsened.

“We seem to… have fallen into deeper trouble…” Lin Ming said, frowning.

Fatty Zhou ruefully smiled. He glanced at Lin Ming, saying, “You also understand the landscape of God Burying Ridge?”

Lin Ming shook his head, “I do not understand the landscape, but I saw that ghost wind stop as it reached the edge of this paradise. If there is something that could make ghostly beings not dare to take another step forwards, then it must be something even fiercer. Moreover, I can sense the dao field here… contains a killing intent.”

As Lin Ming rushed forwards it seemed that he was doing so blindly, but the truth was that he had been sensing God Burying Ridge’s dao field the entire time, verifying it with the jade pendant in order to find the safest routes.

He could feel that the current situation far exceeded Fatty Zhou’s ability to handle. Counting on him alone would not be realistic.

“Heh, you’re right. I didn’t think that you would also be able to feel the God Burying Ridge’s dao field killing intent. This sort of paradisiacal land is what us God Burying Ridge guides call Paradise Reborn. The plants here are lush and filled with life and everything seems as beautiful as a daydream, safe and comfortable. But, the truth is that this is the most dangerous illusion! God Burying Ridge is originally a desolate deathtrap. No grass should grow here and all wild beasts have become extinct. However, when things reach the extreme they take a full circle all around to the start. When a deathtrap like this reaches the highest limits, it instead becomes a land filled with life and vitality! If you want to find a reason, the reason is that too many strong beings have died in this deathtrap. The entire flesh, blood, and even bones of these powerful beings become fertilizer, thus nourishing the land to the point where it can grow such vibrant spirit grass and spirit trees!"

Fatty Zhou's words left everyone shocked speechless, several of them sucking in a breath of cold air. This verdant land was actually formed by absorbing the bodies of other powerful beings!

The more people died here, the more powerful they were, the brighter and more beautiful the flowers would be!

"Sage Zhou, please hurry and find some way for us to return to our old route! I no longer want to find any god burying stones!"

The one who spoke was Monster Prince Duyu. He was able to survive the last catastrophe without any wounds. He didn't want to participate in God Burying Ridge's trial to begin with, and the only reason he came here was purely because of Lin Ming. Now that the situation had spiraled out of control he inevitably felt a deep hatred towards Lin Ming.

"Return?" Fatty Zhou bitterly smiled. He pulled out a broken compass. "In order to escape just then I had to break this Heaven Net Compass into pieces. It is no longer possible for me to divine the path to return. I can only rely on my experience to blindly guess a way back. At most I have a 20-30% chance of returning, and it's possible I will lead you deep into a danger zone."

"20-30%!?" Monster Prince Duyu felt his heart skip a beat as he heard this low probability. He grit his teeth, "20-30% is good enough. It's much better than staying here to die!"

Monster Prince Duyu glared daggers at Lin Ming. This situation was all thanks to him!

"That's right! Trying is always better than waiting to die!"

"Sage Zhou, I say we try returning to our old route!"

Several martial artists echoed. At this time no one referred to Zhou Shiyan as Fatty Zhou. Instead, they respectfully called him Sage Zhou.

Fatty Zhou ruefully smiled and nodded once. “I can try it. However, I have no grasp as to whether or not we will succeed…”

As Fatty Zhou spoke, a disagreeing voice spoke up. “I don’t think you can rely on that. If you return, perhaps you might die even faster.”

Everyone frowned upon hearing this. In the face of death, everyone wanted to hear hopeful words, not ones that brought despair. As they turned to the one speaking they discovered that it was actually Lin Ming!

Chapter 1477 – Separate

Chapter 1477 – Separate

…

…

…

Even though Lin Ming was strong, such words were far too bristling. Monster Prince Duyu was especially angered.

“We’ll die faster if we return? Aren’t you just speaking nonsense? If it weren’t for you, why would I have come to this damned land to begin with!? If you want to die then you can stay here yourself, the rest of us are going back!”

Monster Prince Duyu breathlessly shouted out, his voice shaking with anger. He had already been driven past the limits of all tolerance by Lin Ming. The other martial artists were also unhappy with what Lin Ming said just now. It was true that Lin Ming was strong, but his understanding of God Burying Ridge wasn’t necessarily any better than that of the rest of them and he certainly didn’t have the necessary experience to evaluate situations that Fatty Zhou said. Thus, Lin Ming’s claims were all based on nothing.

Dragon Cloud hesitated for a moment before saying, “Brother Lin, you said that we would die even quicker if we were to return, do you have a reason for this claim?”

Lin Ming replied, “At the entrance there will be some people that will stop us. They might have a World King powerhouse with them…”

“Mm?” Lin Ming’s words caused all the martial artists to freeze in cold fear. When Fatty Zhou had spoken about the entrances to the inner ridge, in truth there was only a single one;

the rest were mere decorations. In other words, if they were to leave through a single exit it would be easy for anyone to lay an ambush for them.

“Why would there be a World King hunting us? Aren’t you just thinking about this too much!?”

Many martial artists said. They simply didn’t believe that they were worth a World King level powerhouse chasing them all the way here.

But Dragon Cloud seemed to suddenly remember something. He turned towards Fatty Zhou and said, “Sage Zhou, you said that someone attacked us with a curse technique and that is the reason your force field shattered?”

Fatty Zhou nodded. “This technique likely stems from the work of the Spider Brothers. Among the various guides of God Burying Ridge, they excel the most at curses.”

“Why would they do such a thing? Do they have a grudge against you? Or are they trying to kill us to steal our treasures? We haven’t even obtained any god burying stones yet.”

“There is no grudge between us at all!” Fatty Zhou shook his head. “River water does not interfere with well water; we mind our own business without interfering with each other!”

“Then that is really too strange…” Dragon Cloud couldn’t understand why the attack occurred.

“Perhaps someone hired them.” Lin Ming suddenly said.

“Hired them?” Dragon Cloud was stunned. He looked towards Lin Ming, “It seems your background is deeper than I thought…”

Thinking about it carefully, Lin Ming wasn’t surprised by this assassination attempt at all, and he had even said they would die quicker if they tried to return, as if he already knew someone had come here to hunt him down. With his tone, it was like he knew that a World King powerhouse lying in ambush was not just a speculation but a reality!

In other words, their situation was far worse than anyone could have imagined!

“Do you recognize those that are hunting us down?” Dragon Cloud asked. He was an intelligent young man; his words were already very close to the truth.

Everyone looked towards Lin Ming, waiting for his reply.

Lin Ming was silent for a brief moment. Then, he slowly and clearly said, “Without a doubt, they are coming here for me.”

“What!?”

Hearing Lin Ming say this, Dragon Cloud and Fatty Zhou were still barely able to maintain their calm, however, everyone else began to seethe with rage. Monster Prince Duyu in particular was angered to the extreme.

He suddenly strode forwards and grabbed the collar of Lin Ming’s clothes. “So it was you who sent us tumbling into this hell hole. Even if you are being fucking hunted by someone you shouldn’t drag us down with you! Just what have we done to you that you would harm us like this!?”

Monster Prince Duyu was frantic, nearly about to attack. But at this time, he felt a thick killing intent surge out from Lin Ming!

This terrifying killing intent locked onto his entire body, drowning him in an icy bath of despair as if he would die in the next moment!

Monster Prince Duyu bounced backwards as if he had been bitten by a snake. His complexion was grim as he glared at Lin Ming, licking his lips as he said, “How about all of us attack him together and subdue him. Then, we can take him to his enemy! If we do that then we’ll be able to escape here safely.”

As Monster Prince Duyu spoke these words he felt the pleasure of revenge. At this time it was assured that Lin Ming would become the target for everyone else!

He felt that Lin Ming was far too stupid. This was a matter that everyone clearly wasn't aware of and yet he deliberately chose to speak out about it. No one liked being dragged into a mess by others.

“If you really wish to do so, then I'll play with you.” Lin Ming's voice was indifferent. As he looked at Monster Prince Duyu, the killing intent in his eyes became increasingly thick.

“Everyone calm down!”

Fatty Zhou shouted out. But, there were very few people able to calm down at this time. According to Fatty Zhou, even if they safely returned a number of them would still die.

“How can you ask us to remain calm at a moment like this? We are being hunted by a World King powerhouse!”

No matter what world it was, a World King wasn't some random cabbage. They were able to control and overawe their own domain.

“We cannot be involved with him any longer. Let's ditch him here and continue by ourselves. At the very least we won't be sneak attacked anymore.”

Some martial artists proposed.

“Well said. We're already showing him extreme forbearance by not haggling over the disaster he has brought on our heads. If we bring him with us then sooner or later we'll end up dying here!”

Everyone quickly came to a unanimous opinion. Listening to these people, Monster Prince Duyu's smile became increasingly wide. Now he finally had the opportunity he wanted to place Lin Ming in a death trap!

In Monster Prince Duyu's eyes, there were dangers everywhere within the inner ridge. Without a guide to lead the way, this was an absolute world of death. Although it was true that Lin Ming was strong, this was a place where even World Kings could perish.

He had long harbored hatred for Lin Ming and now he finally had a chance to retaliate against him; this made him feel far too good in his heart. And for this chance to take revenge, he was even happy that Lin Ming's enemy had hunted them all the way here, even if it meant they had been dragged into the mess.

"Brother Lin, you have quite the character..." Dragon Cloud looked towards Lin Ming, "You could clearly hide this matter, so why are you speaking out about it?"

Lin Ming looked at Dragon Cloud and faintly said, "Why would I want to hide it?"

Dragon Cloud was stunned, not knowing what to say.

"Heh! This brat doesn't know of death or danger. He's harmed us this much and yet he still has the airs to be righteous!"

Someone unhappily said. Lin Ming coldly sneered. In the Asura Road, strength was the law, strength was everything. If one was weak and pulled into a disaster where they died, they had no choice but to accept their fate!

The strong survived and the weak perished. This was the most basic law of the jungle. If the one being chased was an ordinary martial artist, then even if everyone here seized that person and stripped them of all their possessions, that person could only fall on their knees and beg for mercy.

But now that the person being chased was their teammate Lin Ming, they could only shout curses at him.

"This is... I, I hope you see what I must do. I can only say that I am sorry." Fatty Zhou helplessly spread his arms wide as he spoke to Lin Ming, the implication clear in his words. He would comply with the view of the majority of the people here. Moreover, bringing Lin Ming with them was indeed far too troublesome. They would continue to be hunted down the entire time. Fatty Zhou didn't believe that he had any chance of living if he were chased down by the combined forces of the Spider Brothers and a World King powerhouse.

"Sorry." Dragon Cloud also helplessly said. Dragon Moon seemed as if she couldn't help saying something, but she finally kept silent. To her, abandoning a companion to escape was not a glorious or heroic approach to doing this.

But at this moment, Xiao Moxian stepped forwards until she stood next to Lin Ming. She patted him on the shoulder, nodding as she indifferently said, "Haha, I think your social skills are far too lacking. It doesn't seem that anyone here is willing to help you. How about this little miss here be merciful and take you in?"

As Xiao Moxian spoke these words, everyone was shocked that she would have such deep loyalty. As for Monster Prince Duyu, he suddenly jumped up. "Junior-apprentice Sister, what nonsense are you babbling on about!? You want to go with him? He is a dead man walking! If you go with him you will be killed!"

Monster Prince Duyu impatiently said. He wanted to grab Xiao Moxian's hand but was actually dodged by her. "I say, why must you always be such a long-winded nagger. You go and do what you want and stop trying to manage me!"

"Junior-apprentice Sister, has he taken control of your mind? Are you still clear-minded right now? If you go with him you will die!" Monster Prince Duyu was about to go insane. He had finally thrown off Lin Ming with such great difficulty, and now that he was about to see his enemy die he was drowning in happiness. He fantasized about how, as long as he could leave safely, he could continue to journey through the Asura Road with Xiao Moxian and endure hardships with her, growing their feelings together all the while until she finally grew to love him. But now, Xiao Moxian actually wanted to join Lin Ming and die together with him!

Lin Ming was also startled. He looked towards Xiao Moxian, "Why do you want to go with me?"

Xiao Moxian wouldn't know that he had an emperor jade that was carved with the lines of the God Burying Ridge's dao field. According to any normal person's reasoning, if she were to separate herself from the main group then although that wasn't complete suicide, it was still nine chances of death and only once chance of survival.

Xiao Moxian clucked her tongue and laughed. "Me, I'm not someone that likes to abandon their companions. Moreover, I also owe you a life."

When Lin Ming first entered the Great Desolate he had rescued Xiao Moxian. With this graciousness there was no way that Xiao Moxian would abandon him here alone. That was truly being ungrateful and forgoing all virtues.

"If you come with me, aren't you afraid of dying?" Lin Ming looked at Xiao Moxian, the corners of his lips curving up in a happy expression.

He had to admit that for someone to disregard their own life or death and follow him at this moment was a touching decision.

"Haha, do you think this miss will die? Stop joking around with me! I am someone who will become a True Divinity in the future! Why would I perish in a tiny place like this?"

Xiao Moxian carelessly tossed out these words. Lin Ming wasn't affected, but the others, including Fatty Zhou and the dragon siblings, nearly choked on themselves.

Become a True Divinity?

Many people already thought it was exaggerated to hear others say that they had set their goal to becoming an Empyrean. But to become a True Divinity, that was unimaginable!

This little girl was crazy...

This was the first thought that appeared in everyone's minds. But as they recalled the ghostly movements that Xiao Moxian used to pass through the entrance to the inner ridge, they were actually rendered speechless. If every other aspect of hers was as outstanding as her movement techniques, then she really did have a chance of becoming a True Divinity!

This was simply an incomprehensible unrivalled genius!

“Junior-apprentice Sister!”

Monster Prince Duyu was extremely depressed. He knew that once Xiao Moxian made a decision there was no way anyone could change her mind; even Empyrean Demondawn himself was no exception. As for him, he was a mere acquaintance with no weight in her heart. Wanting to change her mind was simply a dream.

“It’s useless speaking to me. I guess you don’t plan on coming with me anymore, so bye-bye. I hope that we will see you alive once we leave this place.” Xiao Moxian giggled, seeming as if she wasn’t heading deeper into the perilous God Burying Ridge but rather having a nice outdoor stroll in the autumn.

Monster Prince Duyu clenched his fists so tightly that he drew blood. It was indeed impossible for him to continue following Xiao Moxian. Although he desired and fervently wished to obtain her, he wouldn’t continue onwards if he knew it led to certain death. To Monster Prince Duyu, his own life was the most precious treasure of all, surpassing everything else!

The groups had been determined. Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian would go together in one group and everyone else would be in another group.

But at this time, a deep fragrance suddenly stirred up in the grasslands. Beautiful flower petals danced in the breeze, fluttering along with the winds. This warm and delightful spring scene should normally have caused one to sigh in joy, but upon feeling this spring breeze, Fatty Zhou’s complexion suddenly changed.

“Bad… this is bad!”

Chapter 1478 – 10,000 Corpse Flowers

Chapter 1478 – 10,000 Corpse Flowers

…

…

…

“What’s wrong Sage Zhou!?”

Everyone here in God Burying Ridge could be described as frightened birds. Now that they heard Fatty Zhou say such words, all of them raised their guard.

“Don’t breathe in that fragrance, it is the fragrance of 10,000 corpse flowers!”

Fatty Zhou shouted out. However, as he did so a martial artist was covered by this fragrance. In that moment, the martial artist seemed to lose consciousness as his eyes became lost. Flower petals began to fall down from the air like butterflies, landing on this person’s skin. Then, these flower petals melted, turning into a bright blood red liquid than sank into his body.

The martial artist’s body shook. In the next moment, a macabre and gruesome scene occurred. More and more flower petals fell onto this martial artist and more and more red liquid seeped into his body, spreading all over. Finally, even the martial artist himself began to melt apart into red liquid. Then, those bright blood red flowers began to germinate within him, sprouting out enchanting buds.

The roots of these flowers greedily absorbed the liquefied body of the martial artist; they were actually using the martial artist as nourishment!

This caused a tingling chill to crawl up the scalps of these people.

“Don’t let those flower petals touch you. This is how the 10,000 corpse flowers reproduce. A single flower petal can grow into a 10,000 corpse flower!”

Fatty Zhou rapidly said with a sound transmission. 10,000 corpse flowers were the most common type of creature in this Paradise Reborn land that used powerhouses as nourishment. They were extremely valuable for medicinal purposes. However, if someone wished to pluck these flowers, the price might be their life.

At this time the entire sky was filled with drifting flower petals. The bursts of flower fragrance met the senses and this flower fragrance actually had the effect of attacking one’s divine sense. By smelling this fragrance one’s thoughts would slow down, making it much harder to avoid the flower petals!

“Damnit!”

“Stand back to back! We’ll win if we can withstand this for a short time!”

Fatty Zhou rapidly cried out. At the same time he drew a thick cleaver and slashed out without holding anything back. Torrents of cleaver light fell downwards, each ray cutting through four or five flower petals, causing those flower petals to dissolve into red liquid that sprinkled onto the ground.

However, after every flower petal was cut apart the cleaver light would greatly weaken. After breaking through a fifth flower petal, the cleaver light would break apart. There were simply far too many flower petals dancing in the air!

“Everyone attack together!”

Dragon Cloud and Dragon Moon attacked with their spears. Their strength was not weak at all. Facing one side, they were able to destroy all of the incoming flower petals with their spear light.

Several other martial artists stood back to back, relying on each other to resist the attacks of these flower petals. If any one of them were to fall, all of them would die!

And at this time, Lin Ming and Xian Moxian were by themselves, soon covered in this rain of red flower petals.

"Junior-apprentice Sister!" Monster Prince Duyu shouted.

"Leave them be, we can't even take care of ourselves!" A martial artist rapidly said. The martial artists that entered God Burying Ridge had extremely fragile relations to begin with, so who could care about others when disaster befell them?

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Bright red flower petals were like flying knives that spun towards Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian. This beautiful, fairy tale-like scene was actually filled with a thick killing intent. The two of them were instantly blocked in by over a hundred flower petals.

The results of this scenario could be imagined. Once these flower petals touched the body, the consequences would be horrifying.

After falling into such a dangerous situation, Lin Ming wasn't hurried at all. He poured his strength into his inner world, causing a boundless aura to surge out from within himself!

"Grandmist space!"

Hu – !

Star-heavy grandmist energy recklessly swept outwards, causing the space around Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian to immediately become as hard as a wall. The terrifying pressure pushed upon the flower petals, making them as slow as if they had fallen into a lake of molasses.

"What strange flower petals." Through his formidable divine sense, Lin Ming discovered that every flower petal contained a resentful spirit! Moreover, these flowers were filled with blood vessels. Rather than flowers, they were more like condensed flesh and blood essence.

The 10,000 corpse flower was a flower of flesh and blood!

“Three Essences As One, Heretical God Force!”

Lin Ming revolved his strength to the limit. With a loud series of explosive sounds, a massive number of flower petals imploded upon themselves underneath the pressure of the grandmist space!

Simultaneously, Xiao Moxian formed a series of seals with her hands. Black flames blew outwards, setting the remaining flower petals on fire. As the flesh and blood was scorched away, the resentful spirits also disintegrated. In just several breaths of time, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian’s combined attack completely eliminated the hundred plus flower petals!

“This is…”

Even Fatty Zhou and the others who were still surrounded by flower petals were shocked speechless. They knew that Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were strong, but it was bizarre to be strong to such a degree. It seemed that the two of them alone were stronger than the rest of them combined.

In truth, the fact that Lin Ming could easily obtain victory was because his grandmist space was best suited to such a combat environment. As for Xiao Moxian’s flames, they inherently restrained all ghosts and spirits.

“30 feet to the front left, behind that gray rock, attack together!”

Lin Ming rapidly said to Xiao Moxian with a true essence sound transmission. As the many flower petals burst apart, he spread his formidable sense and quickly found the hiding spot of the 10,000 corpse flower’s main body.

The main body of the 10,000 corpse flower was extremely skilled at hiding. Even an experienced God Burying Ridge guide would find it difficult to locate it.

The reason that Lin Ming could accomplish this was because of the Divine Dream Law and his powerful divine sense. Moreover, it was also because when those many flower petals exploded, the main body of the 10,000 corpse flower received a backlash of energy, causing the energy fluctuations around it to wildly pulse about.

Hearing Lin Ming's words, Xiao Moxian didn't hesitate in the least. She slashed out with her whip, stirring up a terrifying wave of phoenix true fire!

At the same time, Lin Ming also followed up with his spear!

At that moment, from behind Lin Ming, the phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared. The power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation came tyrannically crashing down.

Bang!

A terrifying noise sounded out as a large chunk of this beautiful paradise was ripped apart. Then, a giant scarlet root that looked like a ginseng was raised out of the ground by this explosion. For a time, it was unknown how many root hairs were torn up.

Squee – !

The bright red root began to emit mouse-like screams in the air. It seemed to have a spiritual intelligence of its own and was struggling around in the force field in an attempt to escape.

"The 10,000 corpse flower was found by that youth?"

Fatty Zhou was completely shocked. Not only had Lin Ming broken through the besiegement of the 10,000 corpse flower but he had also dug out its main body.

The main body of the 10,000 corpse flower was not powerful at all; it only excelled in hiding. Once its hiding spot was found out, even a half-step Holy Lord powerhouse would be able to kill it.

Squeek! Squeek!

Beneath the horrifying pressure of the grandmist force field, the 10,000 corpse flower emitted waves of miserable screams. Its root body looked like an overfilled water bag, about to explode at any moment!

“Brother Lin, don’t destroy it! That is a precious type of raw medicinal material!”

Fatty Zhou quickly reminded Lin Ming as he saw the 10,000 corpse flower about to explode beneath the force field.

Lin Ming’s mind stirred. Without removing the grandmist force field he formed hundreds of seals with his hand that flew into the 10,000 corpse flower root.

“Divine Seal Art – God Forbidding Seal!”

Puff! Puff! Puff!

The aura of a black hole came shrouding over the 10,000 corpse flower, locking down the flow of energy within it! The 10,000 corpse flower wildly cried out as it was being imprisoned by the God Forbidding Seals, but soon after that there was no more sound as it was completely sealed away.

As the 10,000 corpse flower died, the remaining flower petals withered and fell. They slowly decayed, turning into red liquid that soaked into the ground.

The remaining survivors eyed Lin Ming and also the blood red 10,000 corpse flower in his hands.

This human youth was too terrifying! Such a dreadful disaster was easily solved by him!

Fatty Zhou knew that the reason Lin Ming was able to accomplish this was because he could be called perfect in all aspects. He had used that strange force field to break through the attack of the 10,000 corpse flower’s flower petals, and then he had used his far superior sense to immediately lock onto the position of the 10,000 corpse flower’s main body.

There was no weakness in the methods that Lin Ming had used. And thinking about his other aspects, he also surpassed everyone by far, far enough that they couldn't look up to him. This was a true extreme genius!

"Little Sister… it seems we were mistaken about something… he does have the blood of an Azure Dragon within his body, but his achievements are not because of this blood. Rather, this bloodline is simply something that improves upon his perfection." Dragon Cloud looked at Lin Ming, a strange feeling in his heart. As someone who was proud of his dragon clan bloodline, he was thoroughly overwhelmed by Lin Ming.

Chapter 1479 – Information Jade Slip

Chapter 1479 – Information Jade Slip

…

…

…

"Hey! Let me take a look, this thing looks really fun."

Xiao Moxian commented as she looked at the 10,000 corpse flower in Lin Ming's hand. She reached out a curious hand to pinch it. Even when facing such a dreadful thing that was rank with blood, Xiao Moxian could still see it as a toy. One couldn't help but sigh with admiration over how strong her nerves were. A martial artist's life was filled with life and death; that was something she was long used to seeing. She had killed countless people already, and as for something like a 10,000 corpse flower, she simply didn't care about the dangers it brought. This was the inherent risk-loving nature that Xiao Moxian had.

The 10,000 year corpse flower resembled a blood red ginseng, but its main body actually felt meaty, as if it were formed from flesh and blood. Looking through its skin, one could even see lines that were filled with red liquid.

It seemed like an animal but also a plant.

"This thing is similar to the 10,000 year corpse grass in the Eternal Demon Abyss… even the name is similar, what a strange coincidence…"

Lin Ming mused. The 10,000 year corpse grass he captured in the past was also a spiritual plant that grew on the corpses of powerhouses. Of course, compared to the massive number of powerhouses that died in the Asura Road, the powerhouses of the Eternal Demon Abyss could only be considered common mortals. Without a source of good nourishment, the 10,000 year corpse grass was far from being as powerful as this 10,000 corpse flower.

In truth, the Eternal Demon Abyss and God Burying Ridge both had sealed force fields. Moreover, they were lands where many powerhouses perished. It wasn't strange for these two different lands to evolve similarly strange spirit plants.

"What use does this have?"

Lin Ming asked Fatty Zhou.

"Brother Lin's 10,000 corpse flower can be refined to make a great number of pills. Eating it directly is also beneficial. In particular, if it were given to a contract beast to eat it can help quicken the evolution of the contract beast."

After seeing Lin Ming show his great skill twice, Fatty Zhou became increasingly respectful towards him.

"Quicken a contract beast's evolution?" Xiao Moxian excitedly said. Her first thought was Big Yellow and having Big Yellow eat this plant to help hasten his growth. But, the main work of capturing this 10,000 corpse flower was due to Lin Ming, so it wasn't considered hers at all.

"Make pills..." Lin Ming thought for a moment. He didn't know what sort of pills the 10,000 corpse flower could make.

"Brother Lin, I have here a jade slip that records the details of many magical treasures of God Burying Ridge, and there are also many various uses for them. You can take it for a look. After looking through it you can simply destroy it."

Fatty Zhou tossed a blue jade slip towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming received the jade slip and swept through it with his divine sense. The contents were indeed as Fatty Zhou had said; it displayed tens of thousands of magical and mystical objects that had been found in God Burying Ridge before.

Among the records of some magical things, not only did it list their weakness, method of capturing, and even specific dangers, there were also many ways listed to refine pills from them.

However, most magical things only had an extremely short description. It was clear that this was because the information was lacking.

It was obvious that this jade slip was quite valuable. It was certainly one of the main inheritances of the God Burying Ridge guides.

To the guides of God Burying Ridge, the most important inheritances were skills to live in God Burying Ridge, divination techniques, and methods to judge the danger of various landscapes.

This sort of core inheritance was what Fatty Zhou relied on to find food. It was the sum of all information that Fatty Zhou's predecessors had slowly gathered over time in exchange for their lives; he certainly wouldn't give such a core inheritance to Lin Ming. Moreover, it wasn't something that Lin Ming could learn in a single day.

"Thank you!"

Lin Ming began to skim through the jade slip. His divine sense was powerful and he had a photographic memory. Not to mention the many records of magical things listed in the jade slip, Lin Ming was even able to quickly and perfectly memorize the endless mysterious Asura Sutra from the Emperor Stone.

In just a single incense stick of time, Lin Ming finished reading through the jade slip. Then, in front of Fatty Zhou, he crumbled the jade slip to dust.

“Farewell and goodbye. I wish you all the best and hope you can leave here alive.” Lin Ming said. Then, he looked towards Xiao Moxian and said, “Are you sure you won’t change your mind?”

“Of course!” Xiao Moxian said, rubbing her chin. “Are you very moved by how heroic I am?”

“Eh… well, a bit.” Lin Ming was startled for a moment before he laughed.

Like this, the two of them walked side by side into the far off distance. Soon, their figures vanished in the sea of flowers and grass.

As Fatty Zhou saw this, he didn’t know what to feel.

“Big Brother… I think that separating from them might have been a mistake…” Dragon Moon whispered from beside Dragon Cloud.

Dragon Cloud shook his head. “If we went with them, we would have encountered more dangers. We’ve come with them all this way, but have we been short of people dying?”

Dragon Cloud rhetorically asked. Dragon Moon could only agree. Just because Lin Ming was able to survive a disaster didn’t mean that they also had the ability to do so. In a life or death moment no one would risk their own survival in order to save a stranger.

“We have to be cautious, and in truth… if Lin Lanjian wants to survive through dual crises of escaping a World King powerhouse and also travelling through God Burying Ridge, his hopes of doing so are near zero. No matter how strong he is, he cannot be stronger than a World King powerhouse.

As Dragon Cloud said this, many people agreed. Even Fatty Zhou wasn’t an exception.

The disparity between the Divine Transformation realm and the World King realm was too great. It was impossible to overcome a gap of three great boundaries.

Moreover, there were far more terrifying dangers in God Burying Ridge that Lin Ming wouldn't be able to deal with. If he didn't understand the terrain here, he could easily step beyond hope of redemption!

"Let's go!" Fatty Zhou waved his hand. Everyone turned and walked away, beginning their life or death journey anew.

………

"They seem to have… separated!"

Several hundred miles away, in a mountain valley, the imp race Spider Brothers were using a compass to divine the situation. However, their tracking mark had been placed on Fatty Zhou and not Lin Ming. They weren't sure if Lin Ming had really separated from Fatty Zhou or not, but had extrapolated this from the available information and signs they had.

"Separated?" Imperial Prince Naqi traced his chin. "If they separated then they must have realized something, otherwise they wouldn't have done something so stupid such as dividing their forces! However, Lin Ming shouldn't know just who is hunting him down, and separating randomly in God Burying Ridge is no different from suicide."

Naqi quickly thought. If Lin Ming separated himself from Zhou Shiyan it would indeed be far, far more difficult to find him.

"Let's speed up!"

"This…" The Spider Brothers had awkward expressions. The faster they went, the more dangers they would have to undergo.

"Mm? Are you questioning my orders?" Naqi frowned.

"We do not dare. We understand." The Spider Brothers could only grit their teeth and agree. When one was underneath the house of others they had no choice but to lower their heads. If they were being employed by a World King powerhouse, that meant higher rewards, but at the same time they also had to swallow any insults and suffer even greater risks.

“Several lords, the entrance to the inner ridge is not too far away. As long as we enter the inner ridge that means we will all be in the same sealed off dao field as the person you are looking for. At that time, we can use our divine sense to search for them, but doing so may alert unknown existences there, bringing in even more dangers.”

The Spider Brothers cautioned. They had already arrived in front of the inner ridge entrance.

Chapter 1480 – Hunt

Chapter 1480 – Hunt

…

…

…

In the grand and rolling desert, strong winds cut like knives. The endless yellow sand buried the bones of strange and unusual beasts, looking bleak and desolate.

This place seemed like a death trap, but as Lin Ming saw this scene he actually let out a sigh of relief. They had finally escaped the Paradise Reborn lands that they had fled into.

Lin Ming only had a basic understanding of the dao field traces left behind by the Asura Road Master in the jade pendant. But, by using this little bit of knowledge he was able to emerge from Paradise Reborn. Moreover, by verifying the terrain with the jade pendant map, he obtained an even more profound understanding of the emperor jade.

"I must say… Lin Ming." Xiao Moxian smirked as she spoke, a playful tone in her voice. She had called Lin Ming by his true name and not Lin Lanjian.

"What?" Lin Ming asked Xiao Moxian.

"Ah… how come you don't have any reaction at all? Although your identity is already obvious, if I suddenly call you by your name shouldn't you at least be shocked or surprised?"

After suppressing it for such a long time, Xiao Moxian was finally able to tear down Lin Ming's secret identity. She was originally anticipating seeing the surprise on his face; that would at least give her a little bit of a sense of accomplishment. However, Lin Ming's reaction was far too calm.

This was like someone doing their best to correctly guess a riddle, but the riddler themself wasn't affected at all. This made Xiao Moxian feel a bit unhappy.

"Didn't you know a long time ago? Moreover… I already knew that you knew." Lin Ming faintly smiled as he indifferently spoke.

"Well, that was boring." Xia Moxian spread her arms wide in defeat. "What do you plan on doing next? Not only are you being chased down by a World King but you also have to face the perilous God Burying Ridge, a land of almost certain death. And, what is worse is that the World King and his group have guides to lead the way while we are like headless flies in this chaos. No matter how you look at it, we're going to die without a doubt."

"If you knew you were going to die then why would you follow me?" Lin Ming said, smiling.

"I said that I owe you a life, and since I saw you about to die soon I thought I should lend you a hand, but… you seemed pretty confident so you must have a plan of some kind. Why don't you tell me?"

Lin Ming shook his head. "I have yet to think of a good plan. Frankly speaking, God Burying Ridge isn't too threatening to me. The greatest threat is from that World King powerhouse chasing me down. Now, what I have to do first is to feel out the specifics of God Burying Ridge's dao field and verify it with what I know in my heart. If I can familiarize myself with the environment here then I can control the landscape and the advantage. Only then will I have the ability to contend with a World King."

Lin Ming casually said. But as Xiao Moxian heard this she was secretly surprised.

Without a guide to lead him through God Burying Ridge, Lin Ming actually said that God Burying Ridge didn't pose too great a threat to him. Did he have something he could rely on?

What shocked Xiao Moxian the most was that Lin Ming said he wanted to familiarize himself with God Burying Ridge's environment and use this advantage to contend with a World King. This was simply incomprehensible to her. If it weren't for Lin Ming acknowledging his true identity just now, Xiao Moxian might have suspected he was someone else who had inherited the legacy of some God Burying Ridge guide.

While Xiao Moxian was basking in her amazement, Lin Ming was searching the jade pendant with his sense, looking for a place where he could hide himself and prepare for a guerilla battle.

But at this time, Lin Ming suddenly felt a light sense wash over him, lasting for only the most fleeting moment.

This caused Lin Ming to be startled. Although this sense was incomparably vague, his intuition wasn't wrong. Someone was using some arcane searching technique to find his location in God Burying Ridge!

In Heavendevil City there were innumerable martial artists. As long as he used an appearance changing technique there was no search technique that would have any effect on finding him.

But now he was in God Burying Ridge, a land where there wasn't anyone within 10,000 miles. As long as someone found him with their searching technique, regardless of whether or not he had changed his appearance, they would still find him. This other party clearly knew what happened to him after he entered God Burying Ridge and was looking for him.

"We've been discovered!"

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. Without Lin Ming mentioning it, Xiao Moxian had also noticed that faint detection sense sweep over them just now. "If someone dares to recklessly use a searching technique like this in God Burying Ridge they must really not fear any evil beings they might draw in. It seems your guess was right; we really are being chased down by a World King powerhouse."

Xiao Moxian couldn't smile at this time. They were stuck in a danger zone and also being hunted down by a World King!

"Follow me."

Lin Ming turned towards a direction and used his movement technique, instantly launching forwards.

…………

At this time several hundred miles away, Imperial Prince Naqi and his group of people were surrounded by a mob of ghosts, engaged in a fierce battle!

With the Spider Brothers to guide them and also force fields to hide them, Naqi and his group could have easily ventured deep into God Burying Ridge and obtained all sorts of treasures.

However, as soon as they entered the inner ridge, Mister Zhou and the others had used all sorts of searching techniques like the Heaven Spying Art, making them shine like a lighthouse at night, This caused all of the surrounding evil beings to come hurtling towards them.

"How troublesome!"

Naqi frowned as his halberd smashed through a corpse devil. With two World King level powerhouses present, there was no threat from these evil beings. Even so, this undoubtedly hindered their speed.

At this time from beside Naqi, Tian Mingzi suddenly said, "We should divide our group into two."

"Mm?"

Naqi looked towards Tian Mingzi.

"It is far too inefficient to search for them as we are now. If we split up it will be much quicker."

In their group they had two World Kings and their searching techniques overlapped to a great extent. If they could divide their group in half it would indeed be much faster.

Naqi and Mister Zhou looked at each other, and then Mister Zhou said, “Alright.”

With Tian Mingzi’s Great World King cultivation he simply didn’t need a guide to walk through God Burying Ridge.

A Great World King was only inferior to an Empyrean. Unless he ventured into the few absolute death zones in God Burying Ridge, there was nothing here that was a threat to him.

Of course, the premise for all this was that they didn’t enter Tragic Death Valley. Tragic Death Valley was a place where even Empyreans would die!

Tian Mingzi nodded. He launched his movement technique and readied himself to fly away.

“But… I hope that I can leave a tracking rune on your body. This is also for your own safety. How about it?”

Just as Tian Mingzi was about to leave, Mister Zhou stopped him with some words. A tracking rune appeared on his fingertip. This was one of the Asura Road’s god runes and symbolized the Laws of the Asura Road. Once this rune marked his body then it was impossible for even someone of Tian Mingzi’s cultivation level to remove.

Tian Mingzi frowned. He didn’t like to be followed, but after a moment’s hesitation he nodded his head in assent.

Mister Zhou flicked his fingers and the rune shot into Tian Mingzi’s body.

Then, Tian Mingzi didn’t delay any further. He turned and flew away!

Looking at Tian Mingzi’s vanishing back, Imperial Prince Naqi said, “If that fellow suddenly proposed to divide into two groups, he must have some other reason to do so.”

Naqi was someone who believed everyone was plotting something, and Tian Mingzi was someone who was particularly good at scheming. If he suddenly wanted to split up the group, he was definitely trying something.

"He might have discovered something. Perhaps he wishes to explore a lucky chance by himself, or perhaps he found Lin Ming and is in a hurry to kill him so he can plunder the secrets from his body for himself!"

As Mister Zhou spoke these words, Naqi wrinkled his eyebrows. "Yet you still let him leave. Even a tracking mark is useless; it will only take an instant to kill Lin Ming with the difference in their cultivation. At that time, all the secrets on Lin Ming's body will be taken by him."

Mister Zhou said, "Imperial Prince Your Highness, you can't have your cake and eat it too. Lin Ming has a great destiny on his body, and even if all of us join together and attack him now, killing him won't be easy. Even Tian Mingzi only guarantees our chances to be higher. If Tian Mingzi can really kill Lin Ming then even if he takes all of Lin Ming's secrets for himself we will also have gained."

"I suppose."

Naqi would certainly be happy if he didn't need to pay any price to kill Lin Ming. Of course, this was based on the fact that he simply didn't know what secret Lin Ming had on him. If he knew about the existence of the Magic Cube, then perhaps even the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would personally tear apart God Burying Ridge; he might even engage in all-out war with the soul race for that reason alone.

Mister Zhou's guess was correct. Whether it was in strength or sensing ability, Tian Mingzi surpassed Mister Zhou. Even Mister Zhou's Heaven Spying Art was unable to compare with Tian Mingzi.

A moment ago Tian Mingzi had already found Lin Ming's location. A man and a woman travelling alone; that was undoubtedly Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian.

The reason he proposed to divide the group into two was because he wanted to have sole possession of Lin Ming's secrets.

"Lin Ming… the end of your days has come. Everything that you have will be mine!" Tian Mingzi's eyes shimmered with an ominous light. He had waited for this day for far too long!

He desperately wished to kill Lin Ming! As Tian Mingzi's sense passed over Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, it was even clearer than it was a moment ago.

Lin Ming's mind chilled and he stopped where he was. "There is no need to continue running. The enemy has arrived, and he is much faster than we are…"

Chapter 1481 – Meeting Tian Mingzi

Chapter 1481 – Meeting Tian Mingzi

…

…

…

“Mm?” Xiao Moxian paused. Just now, she had also felt a powerful sense cover him. From this sense alone, she could tell that this other party was far stronger than an ordinary World King.

“Although you have a great destiny, who would have thought that I would have such bad luck following you. To think that in this damned place we’ve been caught by a World King powerhouse…”

Xiao Moxian took out a long whip from her spatial ring. Fleeing no longer had any meaning. Now that they had been locked onto by a World King powerhouse’s divine sense, with the difference in their speed it was only a matter of time before they were overtaken.

“Who is chasing you?” Xiao Moxian asked.

Lin Ming frowned. “I thought it would be the saint race’s Imperial Prince Naqi, but… it seems someone else has come this time.”

As the enemy approached closer and closer, Lin Ming could faintly feel that this person’s aura was becoming increasingly strong.

This was…

As Lin Ming thought of this person's possible status, his pupils shrank. And in the next moment, his speculations were proven correct!

With a flash of black light, a tall and young-looking man appeared in front of Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian as if he had teleported there. He wore a long robe and held a black sword in his hand.

His body burned with faint black flames. His complexion was deep and gloomy and his dual pupils were blood red.

This person was Tian Mingzi!

At this time, Tian Mingzi's entire body was gushing forth with a dense aura. His long hair flew in the wind, making him look like a demon god at night. It was a tremendous pressure to face this type of person.

"Lin Ming... it's been a long time since we've seen each other..."

The man's smooth and melodious voice contained an icy killing intent, as if it wafted up from the nine nether abyss.

"It really is you."

Lin Ming grasped his Phoenix Blood Spear, his complexion dignified. This situation was far worse than he had anticipated! He had thought that only a World King had come, but now it was a Great World King powerhouse.

"10 years. I've been waiting for this day for 10 years." Tian Mingzi slowly floated down to the ground, landing in front of Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian. He glanced over Lin Ming's appearance and fiendishly grinned. "Your appearance changing technique is wonderful; to think that it can even change your aura. Unfortunately, that no longer matters."

Lin Ming's vision sharpened. His face began to gradually distort and transform. His skin became fairer and smoother, his looks became much more handsome and delicate, and he even grew, causing him to look stronger and more robust.

He had restored his original appearance, and beside him, Xiao Moxian had also lifted her concealment, returning to her originally beautiful appearance, that of an enchantress who could bring the downfall of nations.

"Young lady, you really are Ji Xian'er!"

Tian Ming looked at Xiao Moxian, causing her eyelids to jump. She certainly recognized Tian Mingzi. This was because Tian Mingzi had come from the Demondawn Great World and had also entered Demondawn Heavenly Palace in the past to study their inheritances.

However, she couldn't rely on any graciousness that Tian Mingzi owed Empyrean Demondawn in the past. Tian Mingzi was already a traitor to his universe and now he no longer had any scruples. It was likely that he wouldn't mind killing both of them here.

Xiao Moxian had the Dark Phoenix bloodline within her body and was considered a top quality alchemy material. The efficacy was the same as eating a living God Beast!

"So it's you. Why are you hunting us?" Xiao Moxian coldly asked.

"That matter is far too complex to say. All sorts of grudges gathered together have doomed me to kill Lin Ming. I must say that I have waited for this day far too long! Thus, there is nothing you can do or say that will stop me today. Miss Ji, you don't plan on staying with Lin Ming, right?"

Xiao Moxian continued silently holding her whip.

"Then that is too unfortunate…" Tian Mingzi began to stroke the front of his blade, killing intent overflowing from his body without end. "You should know that going against me now is the same as dying! Your grandfather showed graciousness to me, so I could have originally left you alive, however… ten years ago I lost a hand and I suffered tremendous damage to my blood vitality, even causing the spirit body I trained for so long to have a flaw. Now, it is not possible for me to step into the Empyrean realm. What I need are top grade blood elixirs to restore my lost blood vitality…”

As Tian Mingzi spoke he revealed the extent of his killing intent. At this time, he was like a human-eating beast.

Although Xiao Moxian was brave to the heavens, even she felt a cold chill crawl up her back. It was hard for anyone to directly face Tian Mingzi’s gaze.

He actually used such a casual tone to state that he wanted to eat her.

In all her years, Xiao Moxian had encountered many people with perverse ambitions who wanted to befriend her in order to gain benefits from her body. But, most of these people’s thoughts were to obtain her primordial yin and dual cultivate with her. Very few people were as crazy as Tian Mingzi!

Tian Mingzi lifted his sword high, his aura suddenly erupting. A fearful force field came falling down to lock in Lin Ming, preventing any chance that he could escape.

“Lin Ming, you don’t think that you still have any chance of escaping alive right now, do you? I will put everything I have into killing you and will not leave you any chance to escape. After you die, I will inherit your everything and I will even help you accomplish your unfinished dream of reaching that illusive peak of martial arts. As for you, you can become a stone that paves my road to the top!”

As Tian Mingzi spoke he hurtled forwards. The long sword in his hand came slashing out to behead Lin Ming!

As Tian Mingzi had said before, he didn’t hold back anything in his strike. A black sword light emitted a keening whistle as it tore through the surrounding space like paper. Beneath the imprisonment of the aura around him, Lin Ming couldn’t dodge at all. Even if he fled to the ends of heaven and the edges of the sea, this sword would still home in on him, following him forever!

This was the all-out strike of a Great World King, it absolutely wasn't something Lin Ming could hope to contend with.

In this critical moment, Lin Ming poured all of his true essence into his inner world.

Origin energy violently surged. The moment Tian Mingzi's sword pierced forwards, a palace of black stone left Lin Ming's inner world, rapidly spinning, rapidly growing!

"Mm! This is!?"

Tian Mingzi was shocked. From this black stone palace he could feel an ancient and boundless aura; it was clearly some extraordinary thing.

Of course, even if this were some extraordinary treasure, Tian Mingzi didn't think that it had any chance of harming him when used by a mere Divine Transformation realm martial artist. However, to be careful, Tian Mingzi avoided this black stone palace, his sword light circling around it and continuing to thrust towards Lin Ming!

As the sword light was about to cut off Lin Ming's head, in that instant, a dark divine light shot out from the black stone palace, covering both Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian.

"Don't resist!"

Lin Ming quickly said to Xiao Moxian with a true essence sound transmission. In truth, even without his sound transmission, Xiao Moxian was well aware of what was happening. She relaxed her guard, allowing that black light to sweep her up into the black stone palace.

In the next moment there was a terrifying explosive sound as Tian Mingzi's sword crashed into empty space. The earth trembled as thousands of jins of sand was recklessly lifted up by energy, shooting into the world like a massive tsunami!

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were dizzy for a short moment but they were protected from the energy impact by the black light. Then, they landed within the black stone palace!

Peng!

With a muffled sound the two people hit a wall and bounced onto the ground. Lin Ming felt all the blood within his body tumble around and he stretched out a hand to brace himself. He felt something soft beneath his hand, and as he looked down he could see that Xiao Moxian was being pushed down by him.

“Sorry.”

Lin Ming awkwardly apologized.

“I’m sorry that you didn’t hurry up with that. Aiya, that really hurt!” Xiao Moxian rubbed her head. Just a moment ago her head bumped into the wall. Luckily she had her God Beast bloodline otherwise she would have been seriously bruised and beaten.

“What is this place?” Xiao Moxian asked.

“This is Primordius Heavenly Palace.” Lin Ming briefly stated. In the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Min had inherited the legacy of Empyrean Primordius. If he didn’t consider the Primordius martial intent then the Primordius Heavenly Palace was absolutely the most precious treasure that Empyrean Primordius had left behind! As long as he entered Primordius Heavenly Palace then any martial artist with a cultivation below the Empyrean realm would be unable to break through. Of course, the premise of all this was that Primordius Heavenly Palace had enough energy.

“Primordius Heavenly Palace?”

Xiao Moxian was startled. Before she could respond, the black stone palace violently shook. Xiao Moxian tumbled about, unable to hold back a shout as she was tossed into the air.

“Tian Mingzi is attacking us.”

Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred and images of what was occurring outside Primordius Heavenly Palace appeared above him.

Outside of the Heavenly Palace, Tian Mingzi was holding his sword with both hands and wildly hacking at the Heavenly Palace. However, his barrage of all-out attacks was only able to cause the Heavenly Palace to tremble. To break through its outer walls was actually impossible!

“Just what is this palace!?”

Tian Mingzi grimly said. He had thought he was going to kill Lin Ming, but now everything had suddenly changed at the last moment. This was a piece of meat near his mouth that had escaped at the last moment!

“This palace is protected by array formations, I can’t break through…” Tian Mingzi frowned. This palace was definitely something refined by an Empyrean, moreover it was definitely an extreme Empyrean powerhouse, otherwise there was no way just an array formation would be so firm!

“it really is Empyrean Primordius!” As Tian Mingzi looked at the black stone palace he could feel the aura of the primal grandmist universe. Before this he had already looked at as many ancient texts as he could find. With the information he gleaned he suspected that the supreme elder who died on the Sky Spill Planet was Empyrean Primordius, and now this confirmed his suspicions.

“The rumors said that Empyrean Primordius controlled some shocking secret in the past, something that alarmed even the saint race. Now, this secret is likely to have fallen into Lin Ming’s hands. If I can obtain it then I will ascend to the heavens with a single leap!”

As Tian Mingzi thought of this he grew increasingly excited.

Although Lin Ming was hiding within Primordius Heavenly Palace, Tian Mingzi wasn’t worried at all. Primordius Heavenly Palace relied on its array formations to protect itself, but these array formations needed an astronomical supply of energy. As long he continued to attack and exhausted the energy or Primordius Heavenly Palace, then catching Lin Ming was simply a matter of time.

Thinking this, Tian Mingzi summoned all the true essence within his body and readied himself to attack once more. But at this time, Primordius Heavenly Palace wildly shook. In the next moment it turned into a beam of light, shooting into the horizon like a meteor with unbelievable speed.

“What!?”

Tian Mingzi nearly bit his tongue. This palace could actually fly, and fly so quickly!

“Damn! If it continues flying deep into God Burying Ridge then I will have to face considerable risks to keep up with it, and wanting to capture it will be even harder!”

Chapter 1482 – Stake It All On A Single Throw

Chapter 1482 – Stake It All On A Single Throw

…

…

…

Above the endless barren earth, a black stone palace flew through the sky with incredible speed. The velocity of the palace was so fast that it created horrifying sonic booms as it passed through the world.

This scene naturally aroused the attention of numerous evil spirits. With a deep roar, dozens of evil spirits soared into the sky, rushing towards the black stone palace!

Lin Ming's complexion was indifferent as he saw these evil spirits rushing towards him. His mind connected to the Primordius Gate as he tossed a massive number of violet sun crystals into the array formation, setting it all ablaze. The speed of Primordius Heavenly Palace became even more terrifying. With loud banging sounds these evil spirits were smashed apart by Primordius Heavenly Palace!

"Wow, so fierce!" Within the palace, Xiao Moxian happily clapped her hands together in surprise as she watched the juggernaut-like momentum of Primordius Heavenly Palace. "I have to say Little Lin Lin, if you had such a treasure to begin with then why didn't you take it out earlier? You waited for Tian Mingzi to chase us and now this miss was put into such an embarrassing scene by that."

Lin Ming said, "I waited for the enemy to arrive first before I took out Primordius Heavenly Palace because I wanted to see who was hunting me down and confirm my guesses."

Lin Ming originally thought that the one chasing him was Imperial Prince Naqi, but he never imagined it would be Tian Mingzi. It seemed that Tian Mingzi should have been one of the helpers that Imperial Prince Naqi had hired. Then, they divided into groups to hunt him down. Tian Mingzi went by himself while Naqi and the Spider Brothers went to ambush Fatty Zhou.

"Primordius Heavenly Palace. That name is… was this palace refined by Empyrean Primordius?" Xiao Moxian had an extremely keen understanding of the Divine Realm's history. Just by hearing the name of this palace she could recall Empyrean Primordius.

"Mm, that's right."

"No wonder. So it was Empyrean Primordius' work, no wonder this palace is so fierce. I fear that even my grandfather doesn't have the ability to refine such a palace!"

Empyrean Demondawn was known for his unparalleled demonic attack techniques, but in terms of refining artifacts and laying down array formations, he was far worse than Empyrean Primordius.

Empyrean Primordius was skilled in the Grandmist Laws. He used grandmist energy and a grandmist force field to lay down a great array formation, and then used the Primordius stone tablet as the center of this array formation. In the entire Divine Realm, there was no one that could lay down such an array formation.

As for refining techniques, the materials Empyrean Primordius used were often from the forming of the universe. The chaos stones that formed at the evolution of the universe were materials that could only be found by a stroke of fate. And, Primordius Heavenly Palace itself was created with a massive amount of this sort of divine stone. Thus, Primordius Heavenly Palace could be called a singularly unrivalled treasure within the entire Divine Realm.

Kacha!

With an explosive sound, Primordius Heavenly Palace wildly shook once more, as if it had crashed into something. Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian nearly collided with each other again under the powerful inertia.

“What’s going on?” Xiao Moxian asked, startled.

“We struck a force field!” Lin Ming frowned. His sense immediately touched upon the emperor jade and he discovered that he had truly gone on the wrong path just now.

He had been relying on the lines of the emperor jade to move forwards and avoid the endless layers of killing intent in the dao field. However, Lin Ming had yet to fully understand and clarify the meaning of the lines in the emperor jade and Primordius Heavenly Palace was simply flying far too fast. Lin Ming didn’t have the time to carefully analyze the flight path, thus this situation appeared where they had struck a force field.

Peng!

The violent collision just now had caused the several hundred violet sun crystals in the Heavenly Palace’s array formation to shatter into powder. There were even cracks that appeared in the eight central nine sun jades within the array formation.

“Che!” Lin Ming deeply frowned as he looked at these cracked nine sun jades. It was true that Primordius Heavenly Palace was formidable, but it wasn’t formidable for no reason at all.

If there were an Empyrean managing Primordius Heavenly Palace then they could galvanize it with ease. However, Lin Ming’s cultivation was a limiting factor that didn’t allow him to activate the full abilities of Primordius Heavenly Palace. Thus, in order to activate the abilities of Primordius Heavenly Palace he had to draw support from outside sources.

The reason Primordius Heavenly Palace was able to fly through the skies with such overwhelming speed was that he was burning violet sun crystals and nine sun jades as if they didn’t cost anything at all. Lin Ming wasn’t bothered about burning these items, but the problem was that he had a limited number of nine sun jades with him. Once they were used up then Primordius Heavenly Palace would have that much less to burn.

This was also a reason why Lin Ming didn't take out Primordius Heavenly Palace at the very start. This was a final live-saving card. Unless it was a last resort, he wouldn't easily use it.

"Uh… how many nine sun jades do you have?" Xiao Moxian's eyelids jumped up as she looked at the eight cracked nine sun jades in the center of the array formation.

A single nine sun jade was worth a trillion violet sun stones!

When Primordius Heavenly Palace was normally flying, it didn't require much energy to do so. But in this God Burying Ridge, Primordius Heavenly Palace had to break through multiple force fields, evil beings, and also resist Tian Mingzi's all-out attacks; the energy required for all of this was nearly unimaginable.

With a series of cracking sounds, the eight nine sun jades turned into ash.

This rate of consumption was simply too bewildering.

Lin Ming waved his hand and replaced the scattered nine sun jades with new ones. At the same time, a massive number of violet sun crystals were tossed near the nine sun jades, burning in order to supplement the energy of the array formation.

"Do you have any nine sun jades?" Lin Ming glanced at Xiao Moxian.

"I do."

"Take them out." Lin Ming tersely said.

Xiao Moxian took out her nine sun jades; she had 20 some in total. Lin Ming also took out his square-shaped nine sun jade base. Just this thick base itself was worth several hundred nine sun jades! This was also one of the treasures that Lin Ming inherited in Primordius Heavenly Palace. This base had been used to hold the grandmist spirit bead essence.

“You have such a large piece of nine sun jade?” Xiao Moxian was surprised as she looked at this nine sun jade base. This was far too luxurious!

What lucky chance did Lin Ming obtain that he was so rich?

Lin Ming said, “These nine sun jades can support us for a long time, but if we are continually attacked by Tian Mingzi then all of the nine sun jades will burn out in around half a day! In other words, we will absolutely die if Tian Mingzi catches up to us.”

Lin Ming rapidly analyzed the situation. Even if Tian Mingzi laid down a force field he still wouldn’t be able to trap Primordius Heavenly Palace. But, breaking through Tian Mingzi’s force field would require a massive amount of energy; this wasn’t something that Primordius Heavenly Palace could continue doing forever.

“Then what can we do? We can’t lead Tian Mingzi in circles all day long. If this continues we’ll run out of energy sooner or later.”

Xiao Moxian didn’t need to investigate with her sense to know that Tian Mingzi was chasing close behind them.

Rapidly flying through God Burying Ridge was a suicidal move to begin with, something that even a Great World King wouldn’t do. But, Primordius Heavenly Palace was currently able to clear an opening through the air. Whether it was evil beings, resentful spirits, ghosts, or anything else, all of them would be smashed into ashes when they tried to attack.

It was also because of this reason that Primordius Heavenly Palace consumed a massive amount of energy, moreover it even gave Tian Mingzi an opening through the skies. Since he didn’t need to face the attacks of these evil beings he could fly much more relaxedly.

If this continued, Tian Mingzi could wait for his enemy to be completely exhausted before swooping in for the kill.

“I have an idea…” Lin Ming took a deep breath, grimly saying, “If we want to throw off Tian Mingzi’s chase then there is only a single place to do so. That is a place where even he won’t go… and also where we must!”

“You’re saying…” Xiao Moxian felt a chill crawl up her back as she heard this. Although there were many terrifying places in God Burying Ridge and they were known as places where even Great World Kings could die, that was only a possibility of death. In truth, it wasn’t too likely for them to perish; it wouldn’t be enough for a Great World King to shrink back in fear and not dare to enter.

If there was a place that even a Great World King truly wouldn’t enter, then that would be a place Empyreans wouldn’t dare to step in. That was… Tragic Death Valley!

“Lin Ming, you aren’t saying you want to go to Tragic Death Valley right!?” Even though Xiao Moxian’s character was that of one who didn’t fear the heavens or earth, her complexion still greatly changed upon hearing this.

“Yes!”

Xiao Moxian sucked in a breath of cold air. “We’re really entering Tragic Death Valley? Legends say that is a place even Empyreans can’t return from, do you believe that? If we enter, do we still have a chance of leaving?”

“I have some confidence. We need to stake everything on this!”

Lin Ming had already confirmed that the Great Desolate God Trove was in Tragic Death Valley.

If so, then he would need to go there sooner or later. He believed that the Asura Road Master had reasons for rewarding him with the jade pendant after layers of tests; it shouldn’t be a trap meant to harm others.

Even though there were dangers in Tragic Death Valley, it shouldn’t be a hopeless dead end!

With such a lucky chance in front of him, Lin Ming certainly wouldn't give up on it. And now with Tian Mingzi chasing him from behind, this actually forced Lin Ming to shift his plans earlier and enter Tragic Death Valley now!

"Lin Ming, I really cannot understand you. No matter what I think of it, it seems you already have some understanding of God Burying Ridge..." The more Xiao Moxian was with Lin Ming, the more mysteries she felt from him. He was an enigma with layers upon layers of riddles.

Lin Ming even had confidence that he could return from a place where Empyreans died; this was simply unbelievable to most people. But, Xiao Moxian didn't think this was too far-fetched. Lin Ming was someone who was always creating miracles.

"Alright. If you have so much confidence then I'll accompany you!"

Chapter 1483 – Entering Tragic Death Valley

Chapter 1483 – Entering Tragic Death Valley

…

…

…

Bang!

Primordius Heavenly Palace broke through yet another force field! These force fields were not left behind by the Asura Road Master, but had naturally evolved in these billions of years from massive clumps of gathered energy.

As Primordius Heavenly Palace continued breaking through these force fields and disintegrating evil beings in its way, several nine sun jades also shattered into ash.

Lin Ming calmly switched out new nine sun jades. The nine sun jade base that had held the grandmist spirit bead essence was also broken up into pieces by him.

In this short period of time, Primordius Heavenly Palace had already consumed 50-60 nine sun jades.

This degree of consumption left even the wealthy Xiao Moxian panic-stricken. If these nine sun jades were exchanged for Boundless World Pills, they could buy almost ten of them.

“God Burying Ridge is indeed horrifying!” Lin Ming thought as he looked at how fast the nine sun jades were being consumed. In this incense stick of time, Primordius Heavenly Palace had withstood an innumerable barrage of terrifying attacks. If they weren’t safely within Primordius Palace and had to directly face the dangers of God Burying Ridge, it was hard to say whether or not the two of them could have come this far and still remained alive.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Divine light shined. Primordius Heavenly Palace was like a meteor as it cut across the horizon. Its speed was extremely fast; at this time Lin Ming had already penetrated 7000-8000 miles deep into God Burying Ridge!

“This brat! To think he even obtained such a strong magic tool! However, with this sort of Empyrean spirit treasure, even if it has recognized Lin Ming as its master, activating it to move isn’t easy at all. Lin Ming isn’t strong enough to the point where he can supply this spirit treasure with his own origin energy yet, so he must be burning a massive number of nine sun jades to do so. I want to see just how long your nine sun jades can last.”

Tian Mingzi followed close behind Lin Ming, never giving up the chase.

This chase wasn’t easy for him either. Although the vast majority of evil beings, resentful spirits, and force fields were crushed by Primordius Heavenly Palace, some of them evaded and instead rushed towards Tian Mingzi. Underneath the attacks of these evil beings, Tian Mingzi also rapidly used up his strength.

And at this time, in front of Tian Mingzi and Primordius Heavenly Palace, a red mountain range appeared.

This red mountain range was terrifyingly high. In particular, the front two mountain peaks rose a million feet into the sky, piercing through the heavens like divine swords.

The main body of this mountain range circled about, spanning across God Burying Ridge, seeming to divide the tens of thousands of miles wide God Burying Ridge into two!

This mountain range was…

Tian Mingzi’s eyebrows shot up. This mountain range looked as if it were carved by a divine being; such skill could only be called an act of god. From afar, it resembled a giant red dragon. The front two perilous peaks resembled dragon horns, and the following mountain peaks looked like the dragon body and dragon claws. This unbelievably lifelike terrain made it hard for anyone to believe that it was formed naturally.

At the front of this dragon was a deep canyon that looked like a dragon's maw. It was a jet black land, unfathomable, seeming to swallow everything within it.

"This landform is…!?"

Tian Mingzi's mind chilled. This red dragon mountain range had its jaws wide open, waiting for any life to enter.

Facing this massive maw, Tian Mingzi couldn't help but give birth to a profound sense of despair and constraint in his heart. It was like everything in this world, including space and time, was distorted because of the existence of this maw. Anything that entered would be sucked in, never to emerge!

It was like a true black hole of the universe, a path of no return!

"This is Tragic Death Valley!"

Tian Mingzi instantly thought.

Before he entered God Burying Ridge, he had asked the Spider Brothers in detail about God Burying Ridge's situation and thus he naturally knew about Tragic Death Valley. Although this was his first time seeing this valley for himself, he instantly recognized it for what it truly was. There was no suspecting it at all. No ordinary place could make him feel such despair and dread.

"This is a place that even Empyreans cannot return from!"

Tian Mingzi felt a chill crawl up his back. As he recalled the infamous reputation and stories of Tragic Death Valley he unconsciously slowed his footsteps. Although these rumors might have been exaggerated, they still weren't something he could deal with!

"This Lin Ming, is he planning on flying into Tragic Death Valley?"

Tian Mingzi asked out loud with shock thick in his voice. He watched with his own eyes as Primordius Heavenly Palace, wrapped in black flames, continued barreling nonstop into Tragic Death Valley.

That Lin Ming, had he gone insane? He knew he was being chased down and had nowhere else to go, thus he decided to stake everything he had on this one gamble and break into Tragic Death Valley?

This was a place that even an Empyrean couldn't emerge from. If Lin Ming entered then that was absolute suicide. Even that seemingly mighty palace of his would be nothing but a joke; it would offer him no protection in there.

"This brat, is he really planning on doing something so idiotic!?"

Tian Mingzi found this unbelievable. His divine sense had been locked onto Primordius Heavenly Palace all this time and he was sure that it was real and not some illusion.

"Could he have escaped the palace and secretly fled somewhere?" This thought flashed through Tian Mingzi's mind but he immediately denied it. Underneath his powerful divine sense it was impossible for a Divine Transformation realm junior to escape his notice.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Primordius Heavenly Palace continued hurtling forwards like a falling star, shooting straight towards the entrance of Tragic Death Valley!

In front of the massive Tragic Death Valley entrance, even Primordius Heavenly Palace appeared extremely small.

As if it were a little pebble falling into a giant black hole.

Hu – Hu – Hu – !

When Primordius Heavenly Palace flew into Tragic Death Valley, a massive gravitational force seemed to grab hold of it, making it suddenly accelerate. Then, under this pull, Primordius Heavenly Palace was drawn into a giant downwards spiral, continuing into the entrance. Moreover, as Primordius Heavenly Palace neared the entrance it was like space distorted, causing the palace to seem even smaller. As it completely sank into the dark, it looked as small as a grain of sand.

"They've gone in!" Tian Mingzi stopped in his tracks, stunned. He looked at the pitch black entrance of Tragic Death Valley with incredulity on his face, unable to summon up even the tiniest speck of courage to continue chasing after them.

"Lin Ming entered Tragic Death Valley like that? Will he perish in there, never to emerge again?"

All common reasoning told Tian Mingzi that entering Tragic Death Valley meant death, with no exceptions. Much less with how low Lin Ming's cultivation level was.

However, Tian Mingzi's intuition told him otherwise. How could a martial artist with a such a great destiny upon their body die so simply like this?

Lin Ming had grown up in the world of common mortal martial artists. Coming this far, he had experienced countless dangers and near death situations. Even so, he was able to turn every disaster into safety. Tian Mingzi himself had once chased after Lin Ming into the Sky Spill Planet, but he was still defeated!

Now, it was hard for him to believe that the Lin Ming who did all of that would die so easily here!

"This boy, just what tricks is he planning?"

Tian Mingzi didn't believe that Lin Ming would die in Tragic Death Valley, nor was he willing to believe that. If this were true, then all the secrets on Lin Ming's body would turn into unfulfilled dreams; he wouldn't be able to obtain anything at all.

"Whether you are dead or alive, I will stand guard out here. If you don't come out in a month then I'll wait for a year, if you don't come out for a year then I'll wait ten years, if you don’t come out in ten years I’ll wait 50 years, until I am sure that you have really perished within or if there is a small chance that you will emerge.”

Tian Mingzi fell down from the sky and hid himself in a barren land a distance away from Tragic Death Valley. He didn’t dare to approach Tragic Death Valley because he could feel that Tragic Death Valley had a strange attraction force. All life that neared it would be involuntarily pulled in, and even space and time was twisted around the entrance to Tragic Death Valley.

Even Tian Mingzi dreaded such a strange and bizarre place.

As long as he didn’t approach Tragic Death Valley, then with his strength it wouldn’t a problem for him to go anywhere in God Burying Ridge as long as he was a bit more cautious.

....

“We really went in! Ahh, you’re crazy!”

Xiao Moxian said to Lin Ming in Primordius Heavenly Palace. The moment that Primordius Heavenly Palace was sucked into Tragic Death Valley, Xiao Moxian had held her breath, unable to remain calm. This was a true life or death gamble. Although Lin Ming said he was confident he could come out from God Burying Ridge again, it was hard to say what he thought his chances were.

“They say to place yourself into a field of death and then fight your way to life. This is our disaster, but that doesn’t mean this can’t be our lucky chance.”

Lin Ming lightly said. He discovered that the power of space and time in Tragic Death Valley was extremely strange. Still deep within Primordius Heavenly Palace, he cautiously branched out his sense and realized that space and time here was completely twisted.

“This Tragic Death Valley is like a black hole!”

Lin Ming immediately thought. Tragic Death Valley indeed had some similarities to a black hole. For instance, it was also a path of no return, a place that sealed away all of existence and distorted both time and space.

In a black hole, space was infinitely compressed and time also became infinitely long. But in this Tragic Death Valley, time seemed to be pulled longer.

Chapter 1484 – Bones

Chapter 1484 – Bones

…

…

…

Primordius Heavenly Palace peacefully flew through Tragic Death Valley, no longer consuming a great deal of energy. This proved that there were nearly no dangers currently in Tragic Death Valley.

“I never thought that the legendary Tragic Death Valley, the most dangerous land of all, would actually be uneventful.” Lin Ming repeatedly explored his surroundings with his sense. After determining that there weren’t any evil beings, he turned to Xiao Moxian and said, “Let’s go out and take a look. It seems Tian Mingzi really didn’t follow us.”

One of the reasons Lin Ming entered Tragic Death Valley was to look for the Great Desolate God Trove. He couldn’t stay in Primordius Heavenly Palace forever, otherwise he was doomed to not find anything at all.

“Okay.”

Xiao Moxian nodded. Facing this legendary death trap, even her complexion was solemn.

Tragic Death Valley was filled with absolute darkness. This pitch black darkness swallowed up all light, and even martial artists with extremely high cultivations would find it difficult to see anything. They could only use their sense to probe their surroundings.

Lin Ming confirmed that there weren’t any more dangers around him and then lit a wisp of flame. The weak light radiated outwards, illuminating their surroundings.

Then, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian saw a devastated and grim world.

Tragic Death Valley was surprisingly broad. From the outside, Tragic Death Valley only seemed a hundred thousand feet wide, but after entering the valley, they discovered that the size expanded to dozens of miles.

This several dozen mile wide cave was marked with many different kinds of barren and ancient traces of the past.

Shattered weapons, broken armor, mottled rocks, and even… scattered bones!

Tragic Death Valley could be called a graveyard of bones!

Many bones had been weathered by time. If one accidently bumped into them they would dissolve into a thick bone dust!

Some places had far too much bone dust. Just taking a step would leave behind a deep footprint.

“What a poignant sight. Billions of years is simply far too long a time period. These bones cannot withstand the weathering of years and even an Empyrean can only live for 100 million years. Another hundred million years later, their body will eventually decay…”

Xiao Moxian sighed. At this time, Lin Ming squatted down and picked up a broken spear.

This spear was jet black and broken in half. The spear shaft was brittle, but as he traced the spear edge he could still feel its terrifying killing intent.

“This is a spear made from divine wood and infused with all sorts of supernatural powers. Even so, it has rotted away. You said it was billions of years, but perhaps… it was even longer than that.”

Lin Ming’s voice was quiet, but Xiao Moxian felt a chill crawl up her back. More than billions of years?

"Haven't you discovered that the space and time here is different from in the outside world?" Lin Ming said.

Xiao Moxian thought back to what happened. Thinking about it, what Lin Ming said was correct.

This Tragic Death Valley had a bizarre gravitational force that sucked in even space and time. The flow of time and scale of space here were different from in the outside world.

The several tens of thousands of feet wide valley was actually dozens of miles wide within.

The time that passed outside was also much slower.

"It is indeed different. The flow of time here should be increased to a rate of 10:1." Xiao Moxian judged after closing her eyes for a moment.

In truth, when discussing attainments in the Space and Time Laws, although Lin Ming was already extraordinary in these aspects, he was still inferior when compared to Xiao Moxian, a monstrous genius when it came to comprehending Laws. But, the reason Lin Ming was the first to notice these differences in space and time was because the situation in Tragic Death Valley was similar to a black hole, which allowed him to quickly associate the two.

The Divine Seal Art's black hole seed, because of its powerful gravitational force, could compress space and time to an infinite degree and become a permanent seal.

"A 10:1 flow of time, then… these skeletons must have experienced tens of billions of years?" Xiao Moxian was shocked as she reached this conclusion.

In fact, it was hard to trace back the history of the Asura Road. The Asura Road could be billions of years old or even 10 billion years old. If it were 10 billion years old then these bones would have already been lying here for 100 billion years!

Just what sort of concept was 100 billion years? Xiao Moxian had a hard time imagining this. Let alone these skeletons, even a boundless dimension could collapse in on itself and celestial bodies would fade away.

“What a horrifying place.” Xiao Moxian mumbled to herself. She could feel that Tragic Death Valley was like a book that recorded the history of the Asura Road, and these bones were the writings within it.

As Xiao Moxian was astonished, Lin Ming had closed his eyes, seeming to sense something. After some time he had finally determined something.

“Ji Xian’er, have you discovered that although the flow of time here is quickened, the Laws aren’t twisted at all?”

Normally in a time enchantment, the speed of time could be freely changed. If an Empyrean were to take action they could even arrange a 1000:1 time enchantment.

But, the more one changed the flow of time in a time enchantment, the more the Laws would be twisted, making it nearly impossible to cultivate within.

But in Tragic Death Valley, this situation didn’t exist.

If one cultivated and meditated on the Laws here, it was nearly the same as doing so outside!

If one trained here for ten years, only one year would pass outside!

“Really!?”

“Yes. Unfortunately, the origin energy here is far too thin, so training would require a massive number of nine sun jades. The Asura Road Mater truly had methods capable of capturing the good fortune of the world. To think that when he constructed Tragic Death Valley he could produce such heaven-defying results…”

Lin Ming sighed with emotion. Xiao Moxian herself was extremely excited by this discovery. She said, “Then, should we start cultivating now?”

“There’s no need to hurry. We should investigate the situation of Tragic Death Valley first. Otherwise no matter how strong we become it will all be wasted if we cannot leave.”

Lin Ming’s words were a tub of cold water poured all over Xiao Moxian. Her originally excited mood was suddenly doused by half.

Lin Ming wasn’t wrong. If they couldn’t leave this place then anything they did would be useless.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian continued forwards. Then, on a high-rising rock they saw lines of ancient characters.

‘Empyrean Extreme Violet. My life shall soon come to an end. Before my final days, I venture into the Valley of the Red Dragon, seeking relics of the God of Creation, to peek upon the limit of martial arts and uncover the riddles of history!’

As Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian saw these characters they both glanced at each other, both able to see the shock and awe in each other’s eyes. In the Asura Road, Tragic Death Valley was known as a land from which even Empyreans couldn’t emerge after entering. However, many people questioned the validity of these claims and wondered whether they were exaggerated. Now, they could see the words on this rock were proof that those rumors hadn’t been exaggerated at all!

“Empyrean Extreme Violet, I wonder just what type of person he was and what cultivation he reached? The reason he entered Tragic Death Valley at the end of his lifespan was likely because he didn’t have any confidence that he could emerge once he entered. Before he died, he made his last journey into Tragic Death Valley in hopes of catching a glimpse of what lay beyond his vision.” As Xiao Moxian spoke, there was a trace of fear in her voice. If even an Empyrean didn’t have confidence in being able to leave Tragic Death Valley and only came here at the point before his death, then what about two Divine Transformation martial artists like themselves?

At this time, even though Xiao Moxian believed in Lin Ming, she couldn't help but feel her heart shaking.

"Valley of the Red Dragon, that should be the true name of Tragic Death Valley. Because this valley has existed for far too long and countless people died here, it was eventually named Tragic Death Valley by the people of the current era. As for the God of Creation, that should be referring to the Asura Road Master."

"Come, let's continue onwards."

Lin Ming ventured deeper forwards with Xiao Moxian. The deeper they went into the valley, the fewer skeletons they saw. These skeletons had a very great difference from those farther outside. These skeletons glittered with a crystalline light as if they were carved from white jade. It was obvious that these people hadn't died too long ago.

"Maybe there's something valuable here."

Thinking this, Lin Ming waved his hand and picked up several spatial rings. These spatial rings could still be used. After opening the space within them, he let everything tumble onto the floor. Looking at these treasures, Lin Ming was slightly disappointed. The majority of the treasures had lost their divine glow and weren't much of use anymore.

Xiao Moxian said, "That's strange. Even if the flow of time here is at a 10:1 ratio, the magic tools shouldn't be decayed like this. In the last couple thousand years there have definitely been many people that died here and the weapons and pills of these people should have only experienced several tens of thousands of years. They should still be preserved well."

Xiao Moxian's question was also what Lin Ming was thinking. Lin Ming carefully investigated his surroundings and shook his head, "They really have decayed far too quickly, at a rate that surpasses common sense. Perhaps it's not something as simple as the decay of time, but that their origin energy was sucked in by Tragic Death Valley's array formation."

Tragic Death Valley also had an array formation, and all array formations required energy to activate. Besides absorbing origin energy from the outside, absorbing origin energy from the magic weapons and pills of these powerhouses was a very good source.

“You’re right. Some unknown force is pulling out all the origin energy in this area. This has also caused the heaven and earth origin energy here to be thin…” Xiao Moxian said after carefully feeling all around herself.

Chapter 1485 – God Beast Tomb

Chapter 1485 – God Beast Tomb

…

…

…

The heaven and earth origin energy here was too thin. It would be difficult for Lin Ming or Xiao Moxian to cultivate, unless they used a prodigious amount of nine sun jades.

“Let’s continue forwards. Maybe we’ll find something ahead.”

Lin Ming said. He could faintly feel that deep within the Valley of the Red Dragon, there was some terrifying power transmitting outwards, as if it were some demonic magic.

The dark gray rocks were endless. As Lin Ming continued forwards there were less and less skeletons, instead, the faint existence of that powerful demonic force was growing increasingly strong.

It was not until Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian turned another corner that they were startled by what they saw.

Up in front of them was a massive cliff. It was unknown how deep this cliff went, but beneath the cliff was an endless wasteland covered with glistening ghostly green bones. It resembled a giant graveyard!

These bones were thousands of feet long or even 10,000 feet long. They were mostly buried beneath the ground, and what was showing was only a tiny part, the tip of the glacier. The bones beneath were far larger. Some were bigger than mountains, piercing through the void and exuding an incomparably terrifying aura.

It had to be known that these bones were only a small part of the entire skeleton. If these broken bones were gathered together to form the complete skeleton then it was hard to imagine how large they were. They might even be a thousand miles long.

“These are… God Beast bones!”

Lin Ming immediately thought. Only a God Beast could possess such a massive body.

This boundless grave had God Beasts buried within it, and there was definitely more than one. God Beasts were an extremely rare existence in the Divine Realm, and yet so many of them were buried here.

Seeing these God Beast bones, Xiao Moxian happily clapped her hands, “God Beasts! There are so many God Beasts, heavens!”

Xiao Moxian was a half God Beast herself. She certainly wouldn’t be wrong about the aura of a God Beast. “If these God Beast bones were all fresh then their value would be inestimable! Unfortunately, they have experienced far too long a time and all their blood marrow and origin energy has been sucked away…”

Xiao Moxian excitedly flew down to the God Beast bones, wanting to take a look through them to see if there were any newer ones. In truth, even if a hundred million years had passed and the origin energy and blood marrow of these God Beast bones had been sucked dry, they were still immensely valuable. Not only could they be used to refine all sorts of magic tools, but just absorbing their aura alone would be beneficial to the body.

“These God Beasts all died a long time ago…”

Xiao Moxian judged once she probed her surroundings. These God Beast bones didn’t have the least bit of blood left within them. Moreover, in this endless deep grave there seemed to be some terrifying demonic power that caused her to feel restless.

“What’s deeper past this grave?”

Xiao Moxian immediately thought. She couldn't help but want to explore further in.

And at this time, a faint voice suddenly passed into Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian's ears. "Do not walk further in… otherwise… you will not return…"

As soon as Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian heard this voice they shook. There was someone there!

"Who!?"

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian raised their guard, immediately probing their surroundings with their sense. However, they couldn't discover anyone alive near them.

The voice didn't come again. Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian looked at each other and were able to see the shock in the other's eyes. There was actually someone living in Tragic Death Valley.

"Senior! Junior Lin Ming comes from another universe to adventure through the Asura Road. I was forced by someone into Tragic Death Valley. I humbly ask who Senior is…"

Lin Ming guessed that this other person must have also strayed into Tragic Death Valley. Although Lin Ming didn't know what dangers existed here, he knew without a doubt that it wasn't easy to survive here for a long time, because the origin energy of the spirit artifacts and magic tools had long been sucked dry. As for this person, they had managed to live for such a long time, and listening to their tone, they might have even gone into the depths of this God Beast Tomb. If this were true, then this person must be some extraordinary character.

The voice was silent for a moment before saying, "Divine Mist."

These two simple words had no title so it was hard for Lin Ming to estimate this other person's cultivation. But at this time, from Lin Ming's Extreme Violet Ring, Soulwhite cried out, "Empyrean Divine Mist! A legendary character of the Asura Road! To think it is actually him!"

"Oh?"

Lin Ming was startled. In the Asura Road, not everyone could be could be called legendary. If this person could reign supreme amongst the Empyreans then he was undoubtedly unrivalled even amongst peerless individuals.

"Empyrean Divine Mist, he is a spiritas. He went missing millions of years ago but I never imagined he would actually be here. This is truly stunning." Soulwhite said.

If what Soulwhite said was true and if ten years within Tragic Death Valley was one year outside, then Empyrean Divine Mist had already lived here for many, many years.

An Empyrean's lifespan was also only a hundred million years long.

"Even an Empyrean was trapped in here for tens of millions of years. Tragic Death Valley lives up to its reputation." Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. After a moment of silence, he held his hands together in respect and said, "Senior, may I ask what strangeness is in this Valley of the Red Dragon? It seems as if everyone here besides Senior has died?"

From what Lin Ming knew, there should have been people entering Tragic Death Valley in these last several thousand years. Those that entered Tragic Death Valley during that time should only have experienced tens of thousands of years in here, and yet none of them had been able to survive. The only living being here was Empyrean Divine Mist.

Empyrean Divine Mist sighed. He didn't directly reply to Lin Ming's question but said, "You two are both outstanding martial artists, but it is such a pity that you were chased down to this dangerous land..."

Empyrean Divine Mist's voice clearly had a tone of pity in it. In his opinion, he didn't have any belief that Lin Ming or Xiao Moxian would be able to live.

"Hey, gramps, can't you say some lucky words for us? Maybe we have some chance of leaving!" Xiao Moxian didn't want to hear such words. It seemed as if this Divine Mist was saying they would die here without a doubt.

“Leave?” Divine Mist bitterly sighed. “If I could leave, I would have left long ago. Why would I sit here suffering in boredom for so many years? In these years, I have witnessed countless elites stumbling into this land, and all of them began like you two. They were first frightened, then shocked, and then excited, doing everything they could to find some method to leave. Many of them cultivated in Tragic Death Valley, becoming increasingly strong, however, no matter how confident they were that they could leave, their final fate was to die here and watch as time slowly withered them away. Facing eternal loneliness and despair, all of them were slowly driven mad by their pain and suffering. They became crazy, demented, their thoughts twisting into chaos until they even killed each other…”

As Empyrean Divine Mist spoke, Lin Ming was secretly dumbfounded. He could imagine the despair and desperation of those people who were trapped in Tragic Death Valley, with no other fate but to wait for their impending death even as they suffered in the lonely darkness. Even those with nerves of steel wouldn’t be able to withstand this.

Empyrean Divine Mist continued to say, “The people I mentioned were those who had a cultivation nearing or at the World King realm. Only they have the qualifications to live for a long period of time in Tragic Death Valley. As for the weaker ones, they can only live for several months at most. This is because in Tragic Death Valley there will be occasional eruptions of demonic energy that spill forth like tsunamis. This power will destroy all life, destroy magic tools, pills, and charms. The skeletons that you saw on your way here are those who died beneath the waves of this demonic power.

Lin Ming felt a chill crawl up his spine. No wonder there were more skeletons the closer to the entrance of Tragic Death Valley he was and fewer the deeper he went. It was likely that these people had been forced to the perimeter by the waves of demonic power.

Whether they were Divine Lords or Holy Lords, they had all died.

“What is this demonic power? Does it erupt from deep within the God Beast Tomb?”

“Yes…”

"What is happening within the God Beast Tomb?"

"I am unsure... In the past when I entered Tragic Death Valley, the God Beast Tomb was already here. I have stayed here for tens of millions of years and used this time to study the God Beast Tomb, but all I concluded was that it is a massive array formation. Some ancient existence had used the bones of a hundred God Beasts to form a terrifying array formation, but as for what this array formation does, I have no idea..."

"The bones of a hundred God Beasts to lay down an array formation?"

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were shocked speechless upon hearing Empyrean Divine Mist say this. This really was a heaven-shaking and earth-sundering ability! If there was someone who arranged this array formation, it was an absolute certainty that it would be the Asura Road Master. Only the Asura Road Master would have the daring and ability to do this. But, the question was, just what was the reason for it?

Chapter 1486 – Lin Ming's Ambitions

Chapter 1486 – Lin Ming's Ambitions

…

…

…

"Gramps, you told us not to enter the God Beast Tomb. Will we not be able to return if we do?" Xiao Moxian asked as she recalled Empyrean Divine Mist's first words.

Empyrean Divine Mist sighed and said, "For these last tens of millions of years, out of the innumerable individuals I have seen enter the God Beast Tomb, none of them have emerged alive. Only when the eruption of demonic power happens from deep within will their bones be blown out… in the past I also once attempted to venture deep into the God Beast Tomb and possibly find some method to leave the Valley of the Red Dragon, but after passing a hundred miles deep I felt the call of a formidable demonic power that nearly made me lose my sense of self. In the end, I failed…"

The call of a formidable demonic power? One that could even make an Empyrean lose their sense of self?

Lin Ming's heart skipped a beat. He could confirm that Tragic Death Valley shouldn't be a land of absolute death; there had to be a way to leave. The Asura Road Master wouldn't create such a land to joke around with his incomparably weaker juniors.

If Tragic Death Valley did have an exit then it was highly likely that it was deep within the God Beast Tomb, because out of everyone that had ever entered, no one had emerged.

"Senior, you sound very weakened…"

Lin Ming pondered. From Empyrean Divine Mist's sound transmission, he could feel that his soul aura was like a flickering candle in the wind. Empyrean Divine Mist was of the spiritas race, who took the soul as the source of their existence. Now that his soul aura appeared to be so weak, this proved that he likely couldn't live for much longer.

Empyrean Divine Mist chuckled self-deprecatingly. "Well said. In these years I have experienced countless demonic tides. The origin energy in this cave is far too meager and the soul crystals and origin energy runes I brought here have long been used up. I can now only depend on absorbing the thin origin energy here to resist the corrosion of the demonic tides. At the same time, I must meditate to maintain my condition, sealing away my life activities in order to barely linger onwards..."

Empyrean Divine Mist's words contained a depth of sadness to them. A proud son of heaven like himself had ended up in such a state, having to spend tens of millions of years silently suffering in the Valley of the Red Dragon. Such a fate truly moved the heart.

"Senior, junior has a question, I wonder if it is improper to ask or not." Lin Ming asked after hesitating for a moment.

"You and I are nothing but people who will soon die. There is nothing that cannot be said." Empyrean Divine Mist confidently responded.

"That is... I want to ask, why did Senior enter Tragic Death Valley in the past? That is, the Valley of the Red Dragon that Senior referred to. With Senior's status and strength, you can already overawe the Asura Road. Why would you enter such a perilous land like Tragic Death Valley, where the chances of survival are so slim? Although other Empyreans have come here, they likely came at the moments before their death. If they had to choose between entering Tragic Death Valley or dying in repose outside, they chose to come here and attempt to peek at the secrets of the source of the Asura Road and also to find out how to walk down the path of True Divinity..."

Lin Ming had been wondering this the entire time. He could understand if Divine Lords and Holy Lords were accidently sucked into Tragic Death Valley, but it was impossible for an Empyrean to be accidently sucked in with their level of cultivation.

If they entered Tragic Death Valley, it was a completely voluntary action.

If an Empyrean were to enter Tragic Death Valley at the end of their life then that would be understandable, but Empyrean Divine Mist had clearly arrived here at the height of his power. Why would he take such a risk?

“Because of… enmity!”

Empyrean Divine Mist said these three words and then fell silent, clearly unwilling to say anything more. Lin Ming also tactfully didn’t ask further.

A single word of enmity. Perhaps Empyrean Divine Mist’s life hadn’t been as vivid and illustrious as others had imagined.

“Miss Ji, let us go back and see if we can find out what the situation at the entrance is like.” Lin Ming turned to ask Xiao Moxian.

Xiao Moxian threw back a smile in return, infinitely enchanting. “You’re quite a dullard, calling me Miss Ji. Stop being so polite about everything, it’s fine if you just call me Xian’er.”

“Mm… well, alright… then, let’s go back and take a look.”

Lin Ming was well aware that after entering Tragic Death Valley, there was no way to leave from the entrance. If there was, then all the previous people who had come here would have discovered that method. If there was a method then those people would never have waited until they died here. Even so, he wanted to return to investigate the situation and carefully examine the area so he could remember every nook and cranny of Tragic Death Valley. Then he could familiarize himself with the structures and profound principles that governed this land, and also prepare contingencies for any emergencies.

Xiao Moxian patted Lin Ming's shoulder, casually saying, "I already handed over my life and all my property to you. I'm still young and don't want to pass away here, so please lead the way."

She was a naturally optimistic person. Even after entering such a danger zone she still didn't go crazy with despair, even when she had no idea what Lin Ming was relying on.

As they walked towards the entrance, Lin Ming was able to confirm his suspicions. The entrance was blocked by a force field.

This was a terrifying force field, similar to the surface of a black hole. One could only enter, not leave.

Moreover, as long as one passed that force field then they would enter a completely different world from which even light couldn't escape. This was a true separate world.

"If even Empyreans cannot break through that enchantment then there's definitely nothing I can do."

Lin Ming shook his head, no longer thinking of leaving from the entrance.

He retraced his steps and returned to the God Beast Tomb and then went from the God Beast Tomb back to the entrance, taking this path several dozens of times. Every time Lin Ming walked this distance he would spend two to four hours doing so. As he walked this route again and again, he remembered the positions of all the shattered bones, where the bones were crowded, sparse, where there were more bones of powerhouses, every detail that he could memorize, he did.

"What use is there in remembering all of this?" Xiao Moxian asked Lin Ming. They had already walked back and forth several dozen times, taking several days and nights to do so. She wasn't bothered or impatient at all with this, but continued walking with Lin Ming and also remembering her surroundings. Although Xiao Moxian appeared unreliable most of the time, at needed moments she could shine with her own dependability and earnestness.

"It might be useful…"

Lin Ming had some faint speculations in his mind and wanted to confirm them one at a time.

On the fifth day, Lin Ming had fully remembered the complete details of the area outside of the God Beast Tomb. Then, he arrived at the cliff where the God Beast Tomb lay.

With a light jump, Lin Ming flew down to the depths of the God Beast Tomb.

His speed wasn't fast. As he flew down, he felt the demonic power that Empyrean Divine Mist spoke of.

As he thought, the further he went, the more that demonic power would increase in strength, as if it were enticing his body and soul, trying to draw him closer.

Lin Ming's mind chilled. He immediately stopped flying and returned using his old route.

For the next several days, Lin Ming continued to explore the edge of the God Beast Tomb. He went in and out but never went deeper than 10 miles.

As for Empyrean Divine Mist, he had no words to say about Lin Ming's actions. He had already given sufficient warning. If Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian insisted on venturing into the God Beast Tomb to die then he wouldn't stop them.

On the tenth day, Lin Ming returned to the edge of the tomb's cliff and then meditated atop a raised rock.

Without any questions, Xiao Moxian accompanied Lin Ming to meditate atop that rock. Placed beside them was the nine sun jade base, slowly glowing with a gentle light.

Xiao Moxian was cultivating. As for Lin Ming, he was perceiving the dao patterns in the emperor jade, verifying everything he knew with the God Beast Tomb.

Lin Ming's guess was that regardless of the Great Desolate God Trove or the exit of Tragic Death Valley, it was all located deep within the God Beast Tomb. If he wanted to obtain these things he would need to journey deep down into that graveyard!

And according to Empyrean Divine Mist, even an Empyrean would lose their mind upon entering the God Beast Tomb. If Lin Ming wanted to accomplish what they couldn't then he would need to completely understand the profound and mysterious processes of the great array formation!

Time slowly passed. One month… two months… three months…

Lin Ming meditated like a stone statue. The dao patterns within the emperor jade were enigmatic and difficult to understand. Even when he was verifying them with what he gleaned from the God Beast Tomb, it was still arduous and straining.

In the fourth month, Lin Ming flew off from the rock and continued to investigate the God Beast Tomb. This time, Lin Ming extended his investigative range to 20 miles. Every time, Lin Ming would remember as many placements of God Beast bones as he could, as well as their auras and Law characteristics.

All of this information was completely taken in by Lin Ming, being analyzed and summarized by his extraordinary perception.

After two weeks of analyzing, Lin Ming returned to meditate on the rock once more.

In a flash, half a year had passed. During this half year, Empyrean Divine Mist had watched everything happening.

"You are quite persistent… with your age, perhaps having such achievements isn't a coincidence at all… but what a pity, this is an array formation personally arranged by the Asura Road Master and it contains infinite mysteries. Let alone you, I once spent a full 10,000 years perceiving the God Beast Tomb but failed to find out anything in the end. And before and even after me, there were countless peerless geniuses who also tried to understand the God Beast Tomb, to seek flaws in the array formation, but in the end, all of them were defeated…"

Empyrean Divine Mist shook his head. He didn't expect Lin Ming to have perceived anything at all in this last half year. In this case, Lin Ming was able to focus his mind and calmly meditate each day with no despair in his eyes and no feeling that he would give up soon. Disregarding whether or not all of this was meaningless, just his character and disposition to go through all this was admirable.

"Senior's words are sensible, but if junior doesn't try it once, how will I know that all my efforts will be in vain?"

Lin Ming spoke without opening his eyes, nor did he pause his meditation. He was grasping every minute and second to calmly and assiduously enlighten himself.

In perceiving the God Beast Tomb's array formation, there was a great difference between how he did it and how those who came before had tried. Those ancient seniors all attempted to find a flaw in the God Beast Tomb's great array so that they could use this flaw to enter deeper within.

But Lin Ming was different. He was studying the entire array formation because he wanted to grasp this array formation together with the inheritance within the emperor jade!

This seemed like a fantastical fairy tale, but with the ability to reference the emperor jade, Lin Ming's own unusually high perception, his solid martial arts foundation, as well as the general outline of the Asura Sutra, this gave him a slim chance of accomplishing it!

Lin Ming discovered more and more of the mysteries within the emperor jade. The dao field and dao patterns inscribed within were the essence of the Asura Road Master's inheritance.

It was just that without any notes and without any master to teach him, Lin Ming only had the God Beast Tomb to refer to, making it extremely difficult to understand the inheritance within the emperor jade.

But this process of enlightenment was actually a way of honing Lin Ming and allowing him to gain even deeper comprehensions. Only perceiving things on his own would be the most suitable process for him.

At this time, Empyrean Divine Mist said, “If you don’t try it once then you won’t know if your efforts will be in vain, and you aren’t willing to give up like that? That’s well said of you, but… after several more hours the tide of demonic power will erupt… can you survive that?”

Chapter 1487 – Demonic Tide

Chapter 1487 – Demonic Tide

…

…

…

While Lin Ming stayed in Tragic Death Valley for half a year, only half a month passed outside.

In terms of exploring God Burying Ridge, half a month wasn't anything at all.

"What? Lin Ming entered Tragic Death Valley!?"

Outside of Tragic Death Valley's entrance, Imperial Prince Naqi and the others were gathered together. They had following Tian Mingzi according to his tracking mark and learned from him that Lin Ming had entered Tragic Death Valley.

"Tragic Death Valley… that is a place where even Empyreans die. Did that brat just die like this?"

Naqi commented, amazed. He found it a bit unbelievable that Lin Ming died like this.

"With Sage Tian Mingzi hunting him down, under the pressure of a Great World King powerhouse, Lin Ming came to a dead end and had no choice but to desperately enter Tragic Death Valley. No matter how it happened, Lin Ming is finished and now my race has one less future obstacle in its way, haha!" Mister Zhou said from beside Naqi, stroking his beard the entire time. He was in a very good mood; he didn't believe that Lin Ming had even the tiniest chance of surviving after entering Tragic Death Valley.

“Could Tian Mingzi be lying to us?” Naqi asked with a sound transmission. He simply found it unbelievable that Lin Ming would die like this.

“It should be true. Our tracking mark already proves that Tian Mingzi flew towards Tragic Death Valley and he has no reason to hide anything about Lin Ming from us. Tian Mingzi also desired to kill Lin Ming.” Mister Zhou said. Then, he flicked a finger with a spatial ring and four figures came tumbling out onto the ground in a jumbled mess. “Since Lin Ming has been forced into Tragic Death Valley, there is no way that he won’t die. Now, our mission can already be considered completed, and keeping these people is no longer meaningful...”

These four people were Fatty Zhou, the dragon siblings Dragon Cloud and Dragon Moon, as well as Monster Prince Duyu. They had yet to die, but their injuries were heavy and their appearances were miserable.

Their true essence and aura had already been sealed away by god runes; they were nothing more than fishes on the chopping block right now.

“Should we kill them?” Mister Zhou asked.

These few words caused the complexions of the four to pale. In the face of death, no one could remain calm and confident. In particular, Monster Prince Duyu’s lips trembled. He didn’t want to die here.

“Keep them around for the moment. I still don’t believe that Lin Ming would die so easily. If he really entered Tragic Death Valley then it should be impossible for him to emerge again. However, what I am afraid of is that he has some special method he used to not enter Tragic Death Valley. Rather, he is hiding somewhere in that red dragon mountain range. We will stand guard here and keep watch for a year. If we still can’t find him during this time period then that will confirm he has died.”

Imperial Prince Naqi’s eyes flashed with a cold light as he said this. Although he was proud and arrogant he was also cautious in his actions, especially when it came to someone like Lin Ming, who had caused him to suffer a great loss in the past. He knew that Lin Ming had a great destiny upon his body, and dying like this was simply too ridiculous a way to perish.

“Your Highness is right. Then, let us arrange some ambushing array formations and sit back and wait for him!”

Mister Zhou and Naqi soon came up with a plan. But at this time, the earth began to faintly shake. “What’s going on!?”

“It’s Tragic Death Valley!”

Naqi could clearly see that the red dragon-like divine mountain range was shaking all over.

Behind Mister Zhou and Naqi, the Spider Brothers appeared nervous. “There is a terrifying energy outbreak occurring in Tragic Death Valley! We must hurry and retreat!”

The Spider Brothers were God Burying Ridge guides and thus naturally had an extremely deep understanding into Tragic Death Valley. Normally, staying near Tragic Death Valley wasn’t too dangerous, but if there was an energy outbreak occurring then that would cause all of the evil beings around Tragic Death Valley to be stirred up into a frenzy as they joyfully welcomed this grand feast of energy.

And among these evil beings, there were even ghost emperors that could compare with Great World Kings.

“Energy outbreak? Then, anyone that is in Tragic Death Valley will die?” Naqi’s asked, his thoughts turning.

“It should be… we aren’t too sure. If there is anyone in there then I estimate they should die until they can’t die anymore.”

As the Spider Brothers spoke, they had already grabbed Fatty Zhou and the others to fly backwards. Naqi and his group soon followed. The only one remaining was Tian Mingzi. He looked towards that shaking Tragic Death Valley and dark shadows crossed his face like gloomy clouds.

……….

"This is a demonic tide!"

Within Tragic Death Valley, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had stood up. The cliff was shaking beneath them, as if it were about to break apart at any moment.

A deep and horrifying strength was percolating, gathering deep within the God Beast Tomb.

Lin Ming's expression was solemn. He immediately grabbed Xiao Moxian's hand.

As Xiao Moxian felt her hand grabbed by Lin Ming she was startled, "You…"

"Don't randomly run, you must follow me!"

Lin Ming ordered without explanation. His tone was strong and blunt, allowing no refusal.

He had already heard half a year ago from Empyrean Divine Mist that the demonic tide would erupt periodically. Martial artists who entered Tragic Death Valley didn't pass away but were instead swallowed up by the demonic tides.

This was the greatest test he would face here. He didn't know whether or not he could survive this disaster, but he had to bring Xiao Moxian with him, otherwise she would surely die here.

Xiao Moxian was stunned and then nodded in response. Although she was known as a beautiful enchantress, she was still a young and naïve girl. Facing such a terrifying disaster, she couldn't help but have a faint feeling of wanting to depend on someone.

“Junior, this demonic tide is like a volcanic eruption in the mortal worlds. However, what gushes out is not lava but demonic energy. If this energy catches you then your cultivation and even your flesh will be completely melted away! I know that you think you might be able to rely on your extraordinary talent, but it is impossible for you to resist this demonic energy with your cultivation. In these tens of millions of years, I have even seen ordinary World Kings be carelessly caught by the demonic tide and have their bodies burst apart.”

As Empyrean Divine Mist said this, Xiao Moxian’s complexion changed. This demonic tide could kill even World Kings!

She also knew of the demonic tide, but as for how dangerous it was, she had no idea. But now, she learned that even World Kings could die in it. With her and Lin Ming’s strength, it would be extremely difficult to survive this catastrophe!

“Could it be that before we find a way to leave we will die in this demonic tide?”

Xiao Moxian subconsciously tightened her grip on Lin Ming’s hand. From her angle, she could see Lin Ming’s dashing profile.

Lin Ming had long since undone his appearance concealing technique. His facial features were strong and sharp, as if they had been carved by a saber. His eyebrows were straight and slanted up at an angle and his hair was blowing in the wind. At this time, all of Lin Ming’s concentration was focused on the depths of the God Beast Tomb. His eyes were like stars in the deep night, bright and calm, giving one an inexplicable sense of safety.

“He doesn’t seem anxious at all…”

Xiao Moxian thought. Lin Ming was too calm, calm to the point that it startled her!

Xiao Moxian had no choice but to admit that in the face of this dreadful strength that far surpassed the limits of her cultivation and could easily kill her, she could not remain as calm as Lin Ming was right now. This was something that couldn’t be faked and there was no reason to stay calm if one wasn’t, because if they died then they died.

Chapter 1488 – Perfect Harmony

Chapter 1488 – Perfect Harmony

…

…

…

Bang!

With a terrifying explosion, a dreadful column of black energy erupted from deep within the God Beast Tomb, impacting into the skies!

The demonic tide had begun!

Lin Ming grabbed onto Xiao Moxian’s hand with even more strength. He didn’t expect Empyrean Divine Mist to lend him a helping hand. Empyrean Divine Mist was weakened to an extreme degree and the fires of his soul were greatly diminished. Although he could still use sound transmissions, he likely lacked the ability to help them resist the demonic tide. Moreover, he didn’t have any obligation to help them.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Like an angry roaring sea, the entire God Beast Tomb began trembling. A terrifying flow of energy began gushing out from deep within the tomb, washing towards the cliff with endless momentum!

Facing this dreadful storm of energy, Lin Ming didn’t immediately escape. Instead, his concentration was completely focused on that tumbling sea of black energy, as if he were thinking of something!

Lin Ming was indeed pondering something. On one hand, he had to observe the flow of demonic energy to see whether it conformed to the rules within the emperor jade's dao field. On the other hand, he needed to see just what variations would occur when the demonic tide spewed forth from the God Beast Tomb.

"Lin Ming!"

In this critical moment, Xiao Moxian's complexion completely changed. Her hand was pulled tightly by Lin Ming but he didn't seem as if he was planning to run away at all. Instead, he stood there as if he were in a daze. If they continued to stay here then both of them would die miserable deaths!

"Go!"

Grasping Xiao Moxian's hand, Lin Ming turned and fled!

Lin Ming flew in front and Xiao Moxian behind him. She followed his exact footsteps, her body fluttering forwards like a piece of cotton as she was pulled forwards by Lin Ming as if she didn't weigh anything at all!

Just as they took several steps away, a brilliant black beam of energy shot up 30 feet in front of them, piercing through space like a sharp sword. To even pierce through the void, the degree of sharpness that this energy beam had was unimaginable!

Seeing this beam of energy in front of her, Xiao Moxian paled. It seemed that the eruption of demonic energy would come not just from deep within the God Beast Tomb, but also from underground!

If they had walked just a few dozen feet further forwards then they would have been struck by this demonic energy and their fates could be imagined!

Lin Ming held onto Xiao Moxian's hand as before, seeming as if he didn't even see this column of energy. He continued wildly dashing forwards; this was a race with his life on the line!

"He can actually remain so calm! His disposition and foundation are impeccable. If such a good seedling could have been my disciple then my life's work wouldn't perish with my death… but what a pity… the demonic tide is heartless. No matter how calm a martial artist is, that alone cannot save them. He and I… will both die, and it is only a matter of time."

A bitter and bereft voice echoed through the God Beast Tomb. If it were a World King with a deep foundation, they could rely on their protective true essence to resist the demonic tide. But, a Divine Transformation realm martial artist simply didn't possess this ability…

Bang!

Another beam of black divine light broke through the ground in front of Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, piercing through the void. This black divine light was more than fierce enough to take both their lives! To flee in such an environment, this could barely be described as frantically dancing upon a knife's edge!

Xiao Moxian didn't even doubt that they would both die in the next moment! Each time they seemed to encounter a stroke of good luck and avoid being struck by these energy beams, but they would be struck sooner or later!

She following Lin Ming without knowing what direction she was going. In this apocalyptic scene, Xiao Moxian felt the world fall far away from her, with only this hand grabbing her own seeming to exist. This powerful hand was true to the touch, even causing a bit of pain with how tightly it held onto her…

Lin Ming's strong feet pumped across the mottled rocks. Energy surged within him and his divine sense radiated outwards, rapidly sensing all of his surroundings! However, wanting to use his sense to discover where the next explosions of energy would occur was useless, even for someone like Lin Ming who cultivated the Divine Dream Law. It was impossible for his sense to penetrate the ground of God Burying Ridge that was covered by a massive dao field.

Bang!

Another beam of divine light shot upwards. This time, it came from right beneath Xiao Moxian's feet!

In that moment, Xiao Moxian felt herself lighten as if she would turn into ashes at any moment. She couldn't help but cry out in alarm!

The feeling of being on the verge of death was like an electric current that shot through her body!

At this moment, time seemed to come to a standstill. But then, Xiao Moxian felt a great strength cover her body, wrapping her up and forcefully ripping her away from her position.

The black divine light rubbed against Xiao Moxian's right half, disintegrating her clothes.

"Lin Ming!?"

Xiao Moxian could barely collect her scattered wits. The one who pulled her away just now was Lin Ming. He had already switched direction ahead of time, thus he didn't step onto that beam of energy and was able to pull her away in time!

As if he knew where that energy was going to erupt from to begin with.

"He avoided it? Was that a coincidence?"

It wasn't just Xiao Moxian, but even Empyrean Divine Mist was startled; he also thought of this idea. Even that eruption of energy had been avoided by Lin Ming. Could this still be described as a coincidence?

Empyrean Divine Mist couldn't believe that. The ground rock of Tragic Death Valley was extremely bizarre, and no sense was able to pierce through it. Even a Great World King wouldn't be able to determine where the next eruption of energy would appear, so how could a human youth accomplish that?

Empyrean Divine Mist didn't have any time to think about this; Lin Ming had pulled Xiao Moxian upwards and flew towards the precipice of Tragic Death Valley!

Beneath the distortion of the Space Laws, Lin Ming easily climbed up the several dozen mile cliff. He was able to borrow leverage from the cliff, jumping hundreds of feet each time.

Woosh! Woosh!

Crazy flows of energy shot out from the cliff face without end, but Lin Ming seemed to have some incredible ability to predict where they would emerge and managed to avoid them the moment they shot out. This was true whether the energy flows were in his immediate vicinity or not!

Underneath this horrifying tide of energy, the ground and mountains were torn asunder. The earth cracked apart and black serpents of fire continued to jet outwards. The demonic tide became increasingly fierce, increasingly violent. Xiao Moxian felt that what she was breathing was no longer air, but the chaotic flow of energy!

Peng!

Another energy flux shot out. Lin Ming rolled over on the cliff, perfectly avoiding this beam that seemed as if it would absolutely hit him!

And at this time, Xiao Moxian, who was being pulled forwards by Lin Ming, was left completely speechless. This clear pattern of evasion absolutely could not be explained by coincidence. It was clear that Lin Ming could foresee where the dangers would erupt!

How was he doing this?

Xiao Moxian couldn’t imagine how it was possible. In terms of sense and soul force, with the support of her own God Beast soul, she wasn’t necessarily any worse than Lin Ming, who studied the Divine Dream Law.

But, she was completely unable to feel where the energy tide would erupt from.

“This junior, just how is he doing this?” In the God Beast Tomb, Empyrean Divine Mist was surprised. All of this was completely unexpected and it surpassed his scope of understanding. It was obvious that Lin Ming possessed some ability that allowed him to accomplish this.

The eruption of energy continued. Compared to the black sea of energy that swelled up from the God Beast Tomb, the true dangers lay in the energy beams that shot out from the ground and walls. They were virtually unavoidable.

If one could avoid these then there was no need to fear the demonic tide!

And Lin Ming seemed to have the ability to foresee where the energy would erupt.

Lin Ming's concentration was completely focused on dodging. He zigzagged around, holding onto Xiao Moxian's hand the entire time.

With her hand held by Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian felt as if she were holding onto the entire world. Even when the world seemed to be ending, this hand was her safe haven, making her feel as if she could rely on it.

Dreadful black waves crashed against the rocks, splashing up tens of thousands of feet. These waves were also dodged by Lin Ming.

The rocks were torn apart by energy. The ground underneath Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian's feet had nearly turned into a black sea.

Such a scene continued for a quarter hour of time. Then, the energy tide began to weaken and no more chaotic energy erupted. Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian came to a stop atop a rock on the precipice of the cliff.

At this time, Lin Ming's entire body was drenched with sweat. Because he had used up too much strength and because of how tense everything was just now, his forehead had blue veins sticking out and his fingers were softly trembling.

It's over…

As the black waves fell away, Lin Ming let out a long sigh of relief. He felt weak with exhaustion.

Beside Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian hesitated for a moment and then stretched out a hand, wiping away Lin Ming's sweat. Her other hand was still being held by Lin Ming. With their two hands grasped together, there was an inexplicable feeling of the two being in perfect harmony.

As they fled all the way here, Lin Ming's mind was too tense and concentrated, so he never noticed how it felt to hold onto Xiao Moxian's hand.

In fact, this was the first time Lin Ming had held Xiao Moxian's hand. Although he had grabbed her arm before, he was separated by the cloth of her sleeves.

But now, he was truly holding her palm in his.

Xiao Moxian's hand was soft to an unimaginable degree, and calling it warm and fragrant wasn't enough to describe it. As he held onto her hand, he felt his entire body be refreshed, like a parched traveller taking a taste of clear spring water at an oasis, making his entire body feel comfortable. Lin Ming wasn't a virgin who had never been intimate with a woman before, but this was the first time he felt something so marvelous when holding onto someone's hand.

"How could this…"

Lin Ming was startled and yet he wasn't willing to release Xiao Moxian's hand for some time. Because of the special circumstances just then, he had no choice but to grab her hand and fly, but now that the danger had abated, with Lin Ming's personality he wouldn't continue taking advantage of her.

However, as he released her hand, he felt an unexpected feeling of dismay. This wasn't because of the emotions between men and women, but because his bloodline and soul blended together well with hers.

Lin Ming had absorbed a 1000 foot Azure Dragon bone and he had the Azure Dragon bloodline within him. As for Xiao Moxian, she was the descendant of a phoenix, a true blood child of a phoenix.

Dragon and phoenix, rejoicing together!

It wasn't just Lin Ming who was feeling this, but Xiao Moxian was the same. She had a strange lingering sadness at releasing Lin Ming's hand. Although Lin Ming's Azure Dragon bloodline could hardly be considered rich when compared to her own, his foundation was solid and his body was tempered to an amazing degree, even touching upon the boundary of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

In terms of bodily toughness, Lin Ming didn't lose out to Xiao Moxian!

From Lin Ming's body, his blazing astral essence and yang-attribute Azure Dragon blood subtly vitalized her bloodline, making her feel satisfied.

Chapter 1489 – Empyrean Divine Mist

Chapter 1489 – Empyrean Divine Mist

…

…

…

Xiao Moxian never imagined that just this strange touch would make her feel so peculiar, enough to cause her mind to shake. She subconsciously drew back her hand and Lin Ming also took this chance to release his grip. Like this, the two of them separated.

Lim Ming recalled the aftertaste of that feeling just now. He couldn’t help but admit that Xiao Moxian’s bloodline held an extremely strong appeal to him. Now, between Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, besides the attraction between their bloodlines, there was even a faint resonance in their life force.

In that period of intense action just now, Lin Ming felt as if all the pores throughout his body had opened, greedily absorbing the pure and gentle yin phoenix energy that Xiao Moxian was quietly exuding. This sort of yin energy fused together with Lin Ming’s own blood, complementing each other in a balance of yin and yang and causing slightly crackling sounds to pop throughout his body. The Azure Dragon blood stirred restlessly within him, nearly spontaneously forming an Azure Dragon phantom behind him.

This feeling was as if he had just completed a breakthrough.

However, they had held hands for far too short a time and the yin yang energy hadn’t been able to fully equalize with each other. Lin Ming had no idea what effect could be achieved if he really did cultivate with Xiao Moxian.

“Yin yang equalization… I never thought that there would be such wondrous results. The body transformation technique cultivates astral yang energy, but the body transformation technique doesn’t necessarily utilize the most extreme positive yang energy. If yin and yang can complement each other, then perhaps I can even reach the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace faster…”

In the brief moment when his bloodline was vitalized just now, Lin Ming suddenly had a realization.

The higher one ascended in the boundaries of martial arts, the more it required a well-rounded development. An extreme Empyrean could not have a weakness in any aspect.

If someone wanted to break through the True Divinity realm, relying on just a single cultivation system was far too difficult.

On a similar level of reasoning, when one cultivated body transformation to the highest degree, relying on just the limit of positive yang energy was not enough. It would instead become brittle, easy to break.

“Thank you… for just then.”

Xiao Moxian softly whispered. Her cheeks flushed with a beautiful red, like the color of spring apples.

“You saved my life another time. It seems I owe you more and more.”

“There is nothing you owe me. You were forced into Tragic Death Valley because of me to begin with…” Lin Ming sobered up and began to sit in meditation again. When he was fleeing, although it didn’t seem as if he were using up a lot of energy, the truth was that it required an abnormally high level of concentration as he was constantly deducing and calculating the demonic tide with the array formation. This placed a tremendous burden of consumption on Lin Ming’s soul force and it was even more tiring than undergoing a protracted battle.

As Lin Ming was meditating, Xiao Moxian also sat down on the ground. She grasped her legs, holding her chin down on her knees. She looked into the distance, her eyes lost in thought.

Two hours passed. Lin Ming nearly restored himself to his top condition. As he opened his eyes, he discovered that Xiao Moxian was staring at him, her wide and clear eyes gazing into his own.

Being stared at like this by such a beautiful young woman, even Lin Ming felt somewhat uncomfortable. He coughed, "What are you looking at?"

"I'm examining whether you have any pimples on your face!" Xiao Moxian sternly said before giggling. As she laughed, she threw back her head, her long black hair slipped behind her ears, gently brushing against her pure and white skin and charming blushed cheeks. In this moment, the gently laughing Xiao Moxian seemed to be basked in sunlight, infinitely beautiful.

Lin Ming was startled. He coughed once and then turned around, "Your clothes are torn..."

When they were fleeing, Xiao Moxian's clothing had been struck by the energy fluctuations and torn apart. Although it didn't reveal anything embarrassing, it still revealed her snow white arms and silky shoulders. In addition to the enchanting smile on her face, even Lin Ming felt a bit dazed by all this imagery.

After being reminded by Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian stuck out her tongue and immediately formed new clothes of origin energy around her body. As for her torn vestments, she placed then back in her spatial ring.

After finishing all of this, Xiao Moxian continued looking at Lin Ming, seeming as if her pitch black eyes could speak on their own.

"What are you looking at me for..." Lin Ming asked a second time.

"Just curious. You seem to have many secrets on your body. I'm interested."

Xiao Moxian had followed behind Lin Ming and watched as Lin Ming dodged all the eruptions of demonic energy as if he could foresee where the demonic tide would shoot out from. And back in God Burying Ridge, Lin Ming's understanding of the landscape also far surpassed her imagination.

None of this seemed rational or possible but Xiao Moxian never asked for the reason why. She liked to maintain this sort of mystery and slowly unravel it on her own; only then would it be interesting to her. It was similar to when she had guessed that Lin Lanjian was Lin Ming, but had never voiced this speculation out loud.

In Xiao Moxian's eyes, Lin Ming was like a fantastically wondrous novel. There was no way to know what would be written on the next page, and as she was full of expectations she would be urgently ready to read the next page because she would still be surprised even then.

At this time, Empyrean Divine Mist's sound transmission sounded out in Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian's ears. "You two come here, I want to see you…"

Lin Ming stood up upon hearing this sound transmission. Before this, he had only heard Empyrean Divine Mist's sound transmission and had never seen him in person.

Towards this senior who had been stranded in Tragic Death Valley for tens of millions of years, Lin Ming always felt a certain respect.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian passed through the valley paths that were destroyed by the black tide of demonic power. As they did, they were surprised to discover that the mountains and stones that were torn asunder by the demonic energy actually began to bond back together… as if these rocks were alive, made from flesh and blood and were able to naturally regenerate.

He knew that this was a function of the dao field. When the Asura Road Master had laid down the dao field, this Tragic Death Valley had become an indestructible magic tool that not even an Empyrean could destroy.

After a period of time, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian arrived at the cliff of the God Beast Tomb. According to the guidance of Empyrean Divine Mist's divine sense, they passed through another valley glen and came to a large, depressed hollow 20 miles deep.

This area was located between two giant bones and the location was extremely secretive.

"Force field…"

Lin Ming stopped. He discovered that there was a force field between these two bones, as if a cave dwelling were hidden here.

Lin Ming cleared his mind and calmly waited.

After ten some breaths of time, the force field automatically opened and Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian both saw what lay within.

The cave dwelling between the two bones was extremely narrow and small. In fact, calling it a cave dwelling wasn't appropriate at all, because this space was only large enough to accommodate a single person.

Within this tiny space was a massive purple crystal, and sealed within this purple crystal was a person!

This person's eyes were tightly shut and his arms were crossed against his chest. His body was shrouded in ragged white robes and was withered and dried like firewood, making him seem no different from a mummy.

Only a faint glimmer shining out from this person's body proved that he was a spiritas from the soul race and also proved that his body still faintly possessed the fires of life.

Although his fires of life were like a precarious candle in the wind, the dignity and aura emanating from this person proved his status as an unrivalled powerhouse. He was without a doubt Empyrean Divine Mist.

"Senior Divine Mist…"

Looking at Empyrean Divine Mist's current condition, Lin Ming could only sigh with emotion. Time was truly the most terrifying weapon in all of creation. Even an extraordinary Empyrean of his generation had been reduced to such a state.

"You… have truly… startled me!"

A low and deep sound transmission echoed near Lin Ming's ears. Empyrean Divine Mist's eyes were still closed. His body was completely sealed away in that purple crystal, unable to move at all.

"I originally thought that you would not be able to escape this catastrophe, but you actually managed to survive… that demonic tide will even exterminate World Kings, and yet you live before me, that is incredible! You are far more outstanding than my wildest dreams!

"Moreover, that demonic tide can be considered quite strong. Since you escaped that catastrophe you should have no problem surviving the next one. If so, then you shouldn't have any problems living here…"

Empyrean Divine Mist's tone was very slow. Lin Ming simply listened to him, not even expressing any opinion of Divine Mist's praise, instead remaining calm.

"In this sort of death land, you can free your heart from arrogance and impatience, focusing your heart to perceive the Asura Road Master's array formation. Your intentions are good, but what a pity… your cultivation is too weak. If you were able to become an Empyrean then perhaps you truly would have the chance to break your way out of this land! Well, I have nothing to do now, so I shall lend you a helping hand and rapidly increase your strength in a short period of time. I believe you are probably… someone who cultivates essence, energy, and divine?"

Empyrean Divine Mist saw through Lin Ming's cultivation methods. Lin Ming nodded, "Yes."

"What deep ambitions! You humans, whether it is soul forging or body transformation, neither path comes easily to you. Yet, you dare to cultivate essence, energy, and divine! In the aspect of essence gathering I have nothing I can provide you, but in terms of the soul forging Laws, I dare say that within the entire Asura Road, there is no one who can claim to be above me!"

Empyrean Divine Mist was highly confident in his words. He was from the soul race, and was an extreme spiritas Empyrean. If he said this, he naturally wasn't boasting in the least.

As Empyrean Divine Mist spoke to here, before hearing Lin Ming's opinion, a powerful mind force broke out from the purple crystal and thrust towards the point between Lin Ming's eyebrows like a divine sword!

Seeing this sword of will fly towards him, Lin Ming was startled. However, he didn't resist at all, instead allowing this sword of will to penetrate deep into his own spiritual sea!

In fact, he couldn't resist even if he tried. Just what sort of character was Empyrean Divine Mist? As a peak Empyrean of the soul race, his attainments in soul and will were unrivalled.

"Good! Good! Very good! Blue soul battle spirit! As a human at the mere Divine Transformation realm, you have actually formed a blue soul battle spirit. You have surprised me yet again. Even in the ancient era of 3.6 billion years ago, there still might not have been a genius like you who could appear!"

In that instant, sealed deep within the purple crystal, Empyrean Divine Mist's eyes suddenly shot open. Because of the discovery of the blue soul battle spirit he was especially excited, and his fires of life became that much more vibrant.

"You cultivate essence, energy, and divine, but compared to your body transformation and essence gathering, your soul forging system attainments are far too low!"

As Empyrean Divine Mist spoke, his eyes were like two ghostly blue flames burning in the dark, emitting an enigmatic and breathtakingly fearful light.

“Today, I lend you a hand and help you fulfill your goal. If you really have even a one in a million chance of escaping from this land of death, then that will be completing one of my wishes!”

Chapter 1490 – Grinding the Soul

Chapter 1490 – Grinding the Soul

…

…

…

A tall ancient sword floated within Lin Ming's spiritual sea; this was Empyrean Divine Mist's sword of will.

This sword emitted a deep blue aura, vivid and primal. The sword blade aimed at Lin Ming's spiritual sea and suddenly thrust outwards!

Woosh!

The sword directly submerged into Lin Ming's spiritual sea. At this moment, Lin Ming's entire body shook, his face whitened, his lips trembled, and he nearly spat out a mouthful of blood.

Empyrean Divine Mist had actually used this soul sword to attack Lin Ming's spiritual sea!

This crude and barbaric method was more than enough to damage to Lin Ming's soul.

However, Lin Ming believed in his intuition that Empyrean Divine Mist wouldn't harm him. At this time, there was no meaning in Divine Mist harming him if he couldn't leave. Moreover, the fires of his soul were already so weak, so what would he covet from Lin Ming?

And, if Empyrean Divine Mist wanted to truly harm him, he would have suffered from far more than some soul pain. Even if Empyrean Divine Mist was weakened to an unbelievable degree, he still had more than enough strength to exterminate Lin Ming. The proof of this was that Empyrean Divine Mist was able to use some secret technique to forcefully withstand the demonic tide, whereas Lin Ming couldn't!

"Your soul is already extremely powerful and you have even cultivated a soul technique, but… your soul and your will lack killing intent! This is similar to a squad of strong soldiers having no military tactics or discipline at all. If they went to war they would dash about and move independently of each other, and no matter how strong these soldiers were individually, the strength they would be able to display would inevitably be limited. Your soul is in the same situation. Although you have a powerful soul force, you still cannot kill others!

"Your soul is only used to explore and sense the world around you. At the highest level, you only use it to support your battle spirit in an attack. This is far from being sufficient. You must fuse your soul into your body and have it become a part of your true power!"

"Have my soul fuse into my body and become a part of my power…" Empyrean Divine Mist's words caused a brilliant beam of light to flash through Lin Ming's mind. Thinking about it, what Empyrean Divine Mist said was true. On the occasions he used his soul force, he nearly only used soul force. But in combat, Lin Ming relied on his body transformation and essence gathering systems to succeed. In terms of the soul, besides his battle spirit, Lin Ming didn't use it in combat at all. This was because Lin Ming's soul forging system was far weaker than his other two cultivation systems.

In true combat, Lin Ming only used the soul forging system in Three Essences As One. But, that was only using spirit essence, not truly using his soul.

"What should I do?" Lin Ming asked.

"First, I shall temper your soul! Your soul is a mine rich with ore. Although it is powerful, there are far too many impurities. I shall help you temper it!"

As Empyrean Divine Mist spoke, his sword of will that was within Lin Ming's spiritual sea suddenly chopped down!

This strike was several times more terrifying than the previous one. Lin Ming's spiritual sea was nearly brutally torn in half!

Lin Ming's entire body shook and he kneeled down on the floor. Blood began flowing out from his ears and nose.

"Lin Ming!"

Xiao Moxian's heart tightened. She quickly went to support him.

"He's fine. I used a secret technique to temper his soul. You, come as well. Consider this as good fortune I bestow upon you!"

Another sword shot out from between Empyrean Divine Mist's eyebrows and sank into Xiao Moxian's spiritual sea!

Xiao Moxian's complexion paled and she tightly clenched her fists.

The God Beast blood within her was pushing back against Empyrean Divine Mist's soul force.

"Do not resist me. My strength is limited and cannot continue for too long. This is an arcane ability unique to my Divine Mist lineage. Using the most savage method possible I will hammer your soul and grind down your spiritual sea. Then, I shall restore it and the cycle will begin anew!

"Bearing the pain of your soul being torn will not be easy. But if you can withstand it then it will be a great advantage to you. But, if you cannot withstand it then it may harm your soul forever!

"In my Divine Mist lineage, there are few people capable of using this arcane technique. Moreover, when they do so they will often have to perform many preparations, readying all sorts of soul medicines to prevent others from being harmed by this technique. But, we do not have the luxury of these conditions. Even so, I believe you two are the most extraordinary of the outstanding heroes that exist, and I also believe you will surpass this…"

When Empyrean Divine Mist spoke of the Divine Mist lineage, he was naturally referring to the extreme Empyrean Holy Land he once helmed. Those that were able to withstand such a technique were inevitably peak Empyrean descendants. Even so, when those Empyrean descendants had to withstand such a barbaric method of tempering their soul, they had to be cautious and slowly adapt to it.

But now, Empyrean Divine Mist had immediately forced them to bear the brunt of the pain. This was because the current situation was far too special.

Ka ka ka!

The pain of a disintegrating spiritual sea was beyond any description. 70% of Empyrean Divine Mist's strength was focused on Lin Ming and the other 30% was branched off to Xiao Moxian.

This was mainly because Xiao Moxian didn't have any attainments in the soul forging system.

Like this, the tribulation that Xiao Moxian withstood was far less agonizing than Lin Ming. Even so, she grit her teeth together, finding this almost impossible to withstand!

She clenched her teeth and silently endured the pain. Currently, she wasn't the young teenager she was in the past. Back then, her natural disposition was to play around all the time and she hated cultivating; having her withstand such pain was certainly impossible. But now, the great calamity of humanity had arrived and could erupt at any moment. As for her monster race and Demondawn bloodline, they had fallen into a dizzying choice that would decide the future fate of their people. Not just that, but she had fallen into this dangerous land and she had no idea whether she would survive and make it out. There was no longer any path to escape the choices she would have to make in the future. She could only strengthen herself as much as she could. Only like this could she stand ready and tall in the tumultuous waves of the great calamity.

Peng!

With a crunching sound, Lin Ming felt his own soul crack apart like glass!

The sword of will that floated above his spiritual sea morphed into a sledgehammer and heavily smashed his soul!

This torment was simply unbearable. Lin Ming felt as if his soul would break apart and he would die at any moment! He bit his lips until they bled and his nails dug so deep into his palms that they were red. He tried everything he could to maintain the last hint of clarity in his mind, all in order to avoid being washed away by the severe pain and suffering the permanent soul damage that Empyrean Divine Mist spoke of.

This was far too painful!

It wasn’t just pain, but a tribulation of his soul that was impossible to resist!

Although Lin Ming’s talent had already far surpassed that of extreme Empyrean descendants, and had even reached the standards of being the top genius of an entire race, this grinding tribulation still caused him to nearly collapse. After all, he was not a spiritas. When it came to how tough his soul was when compared to the peak spiritas Empyrean descendants, Lin Ming didn’t necessarily have any advantage over them.

More and more cracks appeared in Lin Ming’s soul. Then, with a faint popping sound, his soul completely disintegrated, turning into endless motes of sparkling light.

The disintegration of the soul. To a normal martial artist, this would have been death beyond death.

This was even true for Lin Ming!

When one's soul disintegrated, their life would end. But underneath the effect of Empyrean Divine Mist's arcane technique, no matter how much Lin Ming's soul disintegrated, it still maintained its form beneath the urging of some mysterious power, guaranteeing that his spirit mark remained intact and the fires of his life were inextinguishable.

This was like a common mortal having their stomach torn open or their head cut apart. In normal times they would die, but there were some doctors of superb skill who defied this, even cutting open a mortal's chest and stomach to remove some infection and still guaranteeing that the person would live.

This was a truth similar to when a martial artist crossed Life Destruction and had their body reduced to the tiniest of particles.

Then, Lin Ming felt himself isolated from the world as if he had arrived in some unknown space. Everything seemed impossibly far away and his sense nearly vanished. He had almost reached his limits!

He forcefully protected the last bit of pure brightness in his mind, clenching his teeth to stay awake. However, the terrifying power of pain rushed over him a wave, ready to devour him! He would soon not be able to withstand it any longer!

At this time, Lin Ming heard a vague summons, seeming to come from the distant horizon. The sounds were beautiful, like the enchanting call of nature.

After that, he felt a warm and soft hand take hold of his own.

Then, an incomparably pure primordial yin energy flowed up from this hand, spreading up Lin Ming's arm and throughout the rest of his body, revitalizing his dried up spiritual sea like a gentle spring.

"Is… that Xiao Moxian?"

Lin Ming immediately thought. This power that flowed up his arm was intoxicating. Although his body was racked with pain he still felt extremely comfortable, like a mortal with a scalding burn having cool medicinal cream spread over his wounds.

This revitalizing power boosted Lin Ming's strength, allowing his will to resist being destroyed!

And at his side, Xiao Moxian was also feeling the same way.

Her soul force and battle spirit were far from being as powerful as Lin Ming's. Although she only withstood 30% of this tempering, she still rapidly reached her limit and found it hard to continue.

In the moment before she failed, Xiao Moxian suddenly remembered something. She recalled the time when she held Lin Ming's hand and their yin and yang fused together, perfectly complementing each other in harmony. Like this, she took the initiative and grasped Lin Ming's hand in her own.

Their blood vitality supported and resonated with each other, allowing them both to survive this perilous storm.

This state continued for an unknown period of time. Slowly, Lin Ming felt himself gradually adapting to the agonizing pain of having his soul torn apart. Then, a beam of divine light shot out from Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

The shattered pieces of his spiritual sea and the fragmented motes of his soul followed this beam of divine light, gathering together and condensing.

A moment later, Lin Ming's soul form was restored to its true shape and his spirit mark also returned. He had truly withstood this tempering of his soul.

Lin Ming opened his eyes and felt his entire body void of any energy. He was soaked in sweat.

He turned his head to see Xiao Moxian in the same state. Her clothes were moist with her sweat and stuck tight to her body, accentuating her perfectly shaped curves. Crystal clear drops of sweat also rolled down her face, illuminating her soft and blushing skin. For a time, Xiao Moxian's clear face was so beautiful that it was blinding.

Lin Ming couldn't help but look at Xiao Moxian and whisper, "Thank you."

He was well aware that if she was able to reach out and grab his hand just now then it proved her situation was far better. As for himself, he was a dried up lamp on the verge of collapse.

"I'm just helping myself here…" Xiao Moxian revealed a tired and relaxed smile. Her chest heaved up and down; she had really exhausted herself just now.

Chapter 1491 – To Shake A Tree With A Gust Of Wind

Chapter 1491 – To Shake A Tree With A Gust Of Wind

…

…

…

Although Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were exhausted, they could clearly feel that their soul force had increased. This sort of savage method of tempering the soul caused nearly unimaginable pain, but the effects were wondrous. There was no soul medicine that could compare to these advantages.

Moreover, the key was that soul medicines could only be taken once and would be greatly weakened every time after. But as for this type of soul grinding cultivation, it could be repeated however many times it was needed.

"Thank you, Senior."

Lin Ming held his fists together, giving thanks from his heart. As he looked at Empyrean Divine Mist in that purple crystal, Lin Ming was actually startled. He didn't know whether it was an illusion or not, but he could feel that after Empyrean Divine Mist used that arcane technique just now, he had become even weaker than before.

"This sort of arcane technique, could it have consumed Empyrean Divine Mist's soul force…"

Lin Ming immediately thought to himself. "Senior, you…"

“I’m fine.” Empyrean Divine Mist closed his eyes. After a moment of silence he reopened them, saying, “Since I have decided to guide you, there is no need for you to express any sense of gratitude towards me, nor do I need you to worry for me. The reason I’ve done what I did is because I didn’t wish for the secret legacy techniques of my soul race to be lost under my hand…

“Although I do not believe you have any chance of escaping from Tragic Death Valley, at the very least, with your outstanding talent you will be able to survive the demonic tides. Without a doubt, you will die after I die, and when I die, the legacy of my inheritance will not be broken. I can rest peacefully with that knowledge…”

Empyrean Divine Mist deeply sighed. Even if Lin Ming could survive the demonic tides, he didn’t believe at all that Lin Ming could escape Tragic Death Valley because his cultivation was simply far too low.

“You may leave now. I must rest… ten days later, seek me out once more. I shall guide your soul forging technique!”

Empyrean Divine Mist said, before falling into silence.

For the next ten days, Lin Ming went back to the cliff above the God Beast Tomb once more. He sat in meditation, perceiving the array formation and dao patterns that the Asura Road Master had left behind in the emperor jade again.

As he constantly meditated on these dao patterns, Lin Ming discovered that after undergoing that tribulation of soul tempering, not only had his soul force increased, but the speed at which he would able to perceive the array formation had become even faster. He could deduce more and more in his mind.

In these ten days, Lin Ming perceived what would have taken him 15-16 days in the past!

This was an astonishing increase! It had to be known that Lin Ming would also cultivate his soul in the future and also study soul forging arts. In the future, the speed at which he perceived the array formation would be much faster than it was now.

Lin Ming didn’t think that whetting his soul would give him such pleasant surprises. Otherwise, who knew how long it would have taken him to see through this God Beast Tomb. It wouldn’t have been a surprise if he had to spend 20 some years here. To Lin Ming, that was far too long a time.

Ten days later, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian returned to Empyrean Divine Mist’s cave dwelling as promised. This time, they didn’t grind their souls. Rather, under Empyrean Divine Mist’s direction, they began to study the soul forging Laws.

Empyrean Divine Mist had extremely high attainments in the aspect of soul force; in this, he even surpassed Divine Dream. If Lin Ming had a question, Empyrean Divine Mist would answer it with the complete breadth of his knowledge, fully sharing everything he knew.

Empyrean Divine Mist’s words could be described as utter truths with profound meanings behind them, always directed to the essence of the matter. In the past, Lin Ming had never experienced such guidance before.

Let alone Lin Ming, not even Xiao Moxian had been accompanied by an Empyrean level character and tutored for every hour of the day with all questions answered. After all, whether it was the Monster Emperor or Empyrean Demondawn, they both had their own matters to attend to, such as creating pills, cultivating, refining tools, or perfecting their individual inheritances; it was naturally impossible for them to follow Xiao Moxian in particular.

Before, Lin Ming had once studied the Divine Dream Law in Divine Dream Heavenly Palace for a year. But in this year, although Lin Ming had perceived things on his own, he hadn’t even seen Empyrean Divine Dream at all. It wasn’t because Empyrean Divine Dream was purposefully ignoring Lin Ming, but because she simply had far too many matters to attend to. With the great calamity of humanity arriving, Empyrean Divine Dream had to fully invest herself in breaking through to the True Divinity realm, so how could she continuously worry about Lin Ming?

Learning on his own was completely different from having the guidance of a top master. This was especially true for Lin Ming, who was profoundly inexperienced about the soul forging system; he needed a good teacher to guide his road.

Like this, Lin Ming continued to study and cultivate. Empyrean Divine Mist did nothing but spend all his time wholeheartedly directing Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian. As for Empyrean Divine Mist himself, he indeed had nothing beyond this that he could do.

Thus, two months of time passed.

Besides cultivating, Lin Ming spent the rest of his time perceiving the array formation. As time passed, he gained an increasingly deep understanding of the God Beast Tomb that the Asura Road Master had arranged. As his soul force continued to rise, Lin Ming would gain new insights each time.

On this day, Empyrean Divine Mist had finally saved up enough energy in preparation to help Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian whet their souls once more.

This time, before the grinding process even began, Xiao Moxian simply held onto Lin Ming's hand.

Lin Ming felt a bit embarrassed. He looked at Xiao Moxian, not sure what to say.

As Xiao Moxian caught Lin Ming's glance she blushed slightly, feeling a bit awkward. But soon enough she gave a snort and deliberately used an indifferent tone to haughtily say, "What are you looking at anyways? It's just holding hands a few times, there's no need to be so affected by how strange you think it is."

Lin Ming nodded and embarrassedly traced his nose before turning back. In truth, when he held hands with Xiao Moxian, he was the one who obtained more benefits.

Then, the soul whetting training began.

With the previous time's experience, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian found it a bit easier to withstand the agonizing pain. Even so, Empyrean Divine Mist seemed to purposefully increase the intensity of this grinding. After the process was finished, the two were still completely exhausted and near the point of fainting!

Lin Ming rested for a full hour before he was able to catch his breath. As he looked at Empyrean Divine Mist, he discovered that his complexion was even paler than before and his soul aura had greatly weakened.

"Senior, your body..." Lin Ming was able to confirm that every time this arcane technique was used, it would place a massive burden on Empyrean Divine Mist's soul force!

"You leave now. Seek me out again ten days later. There is no need for you to worry about me... to me, living an extra year or dying a year early doesn't mean anything at all."

Lin Ming fell into silence as he heard Empyrean Divine Mist's words. He simply had no idea what to say. He quietly returned to the nearby cliff and began to perceive the God Beast Tomb once more.

Days passed like this, one after another.

Cultivating, whetting, perceiving...

Although these days seemed boring and dull, Lin Ming was actually completely investing his heart and mind into it.

There was no separation of night or day in Tragic Death Valley. If Lin Ming carefully kept a record then he could remember the time and date, but if he invested himself thoroughly in training then it was easy to lose track of time.

Lin Ming was in a trance. Without feeling the passing of years, his hair grew increasingly long, nearly reaching his waist. As for Xiao Moxian's hair, it flowed down like a luxurious and incomparably beautiful black waterfall, nearly touching the ground.

As he and Xiao Moxian trained, their cultivations nearly reached the peak of the late Divine Transformation realm. They were only a single step away from breaking through to the Divine Lord realm!

Divine Transformation to Divine Lord was a large step. Many martial artists of the Divine Realm had to use hundreds of years or even thousands of years to break through it. Even Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were unable to accomplish this overnight, but needed a massive amount of accumulations.

Pah!

Shimmering silver white blood spewed forth from Empyrean Divine Mist's mouth, spraying onto the purple crystal and dyeing it in shards of broken silver.

Many spiritas had silver blood that shined like liquid mercury.

"Senior!"

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian cried out in alarm. After finishing the soul grinding just now, Empyrean Divine Mist had spat out a mouthful of blood. He had clearly consumed far too much energy and had even damaged his life source.

With a series of sharp sounds, cracks began to spread all over the purple crystal that held Empyrean Divine Mist. These cracks had been there already, but now they had widened, making it seem as if the purple crystal would shatter at any moment.

"I'm fine. I understand… my own body… well enough…"

Empyrean Divine Mist's voice was weak and faint. The purple crystal he sealed himself in was in truth a top grade soul crystal, similar to humanity's nine sun jades.

This soul crystal was used to maintain Empyrean Divine Mist's vitality. Once it completely shattered, it would be difficult for Empyrean Divine Mist to continue going on. Even if he barely managed to survive, he wouldn't be able to withstand another eruption of the demonic tide.

In terms of strength, the current Empyrean Divine Mist wasn't necessarily a match for even an ordinary World King!

"Senior, you have reached your limit. You cannot help us with the soul whetting training any longer." Upon seeing such an extreme character of his generation end up in this situation, Lin Ming didn't feel any better.

"You do not need to manage me. All you need to do is practice the inheritance I have passed down to you with best of your ability. In I, Divine Mist's life, I do not wish to leave behind any regrets before I die."

Empyrean Divine Mist's voice was insisting. "Seek me out again ten days from now…"

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian looked at each other, able to see the helplessness in the other's eyes. Empyrean Divine Mist simply wouldn't listen to them.

Lin Ming turned and silently left, and at this time Empyrean Divine Mist called out to him once more.

"Junior, are you going to perceive the God Beast Tomb once more?"

"Yes." Lin Ming nodded.

"You… are quite persevering…" Empyrean Divine Mist chuckled. Since the purple crystal began to crack apart once more, the expression on his face became much livelier.

"Junior, do you know… how long you have been in Tragic Death Valley for already?"

Lin Ming shook his head. "I don't know the exact time, but it should have been several years…"

"It is seven years!"

Lin Ming was startled. To those ancient characters that lived for millions of years, this was only a fleeting moment. But to the 50 some year old Lin Ming, this was an extremely long period of time.

“Seven years… and during this time you never ceased to meditate upon the God Beast Tomb. That is truly praiseworthy persistence…”

Empyrean Divine Mist praised. But as Lin Ming heard this he responded, “Senior says that junior has praiseworthy persistence, but I feel that this might not be a compliment at all, but a word of caution that this junior is wasting his time in trying to shake the leaves from a tree with a gust of wind and simply overreaching his bounds.”

Lin Ming was able to discern the meaning hidden behind Empyrean Divine Mist’s words. In fact, no matter who saw this situation, they would never think that a Divine Transformation realm martial artist would be able to see through the massive array formation that the Asura Road Master had laid down with innumerable God Beast skeletons. No matter how one phrased it, this was simply a fantastical tale. Even if Lin Ming were to trade positions and hear about this he still wouldn’t believe that he could accomplish it.

“Climbing the road of martial arts is originally trying to shake the leaves from a tree with a simple gust of wind… at the least… you have the courage to try…” Empyrean Divine Mist’s tone suddenly filled with deep emotions, as if Lin Ming’s words had made him recall a distant memory. In the end, he too had once been someone who had tried to shake that tree with nothing but a little bit of wind, and as he was climbing to the peak of that martial arts mountain, he stumbled into Tragic Death Valley midway.

Thus, Empyrean Divine Mist didn’t approve or disapprove of Lin Ming’s thoughts. Even if he believed that Lin Ming wouldn’t perceive anything useful from the God Beast Tomb, he still appreciated Lin Ming’s heart and will to do so.

“Senior’s words are reasonable, but I believe that in as long as one year or as little as three months, I will be able to completely understand the God Beast Tomb and break through…”

As Lin Ming said these words, Empyrean Divine Mist was suddenly startled. His eyes popped open, looking at Lin Ming, the beating soul fires within the depths of his eyes dancing without end…

Chapter 1492 – I Will Follow You

Chapter 1492 – I Will Follow You

…

…

…

Lin Ming suddenly saying that he could break through the array formation in three months to a year left not just Empyrean Divine Mist shocked, but even Xiao Moxian felt her jaw drop down. "Lin Ming, are you saying you want to break through the array formation? Are you joking with me?"

"Mm… I believe I have a 60-70% chance of doing it." Lin Ming couldn't confirm this with absolute confidence because there were many things he had yet to understand.

"Are you playing with me? I already prepared myself to spend several hundred years or even a thousand years here, but you're saying you can leave so soon?"

Even though Xiao Moxian had confidence in Lin Ming, she always felt that it would be a bit ridiculous for him to see through the array formation that the Asura Road Master had laid down.

If this were the past Xiao Moxian, then her mind would have long collapsed upon discovering that she would have to stay in this pitch black and unchanging hell for several hundred years. But now with Lin Ming accompanying her, Xiao Moxian didn't feel that the days were too boring.

"Do you even know what you are saying? This God Beast Tomb is likely an ancient great array left behind by the Asura Road Master. The Asura Road Master is a character that existed 10 billion years ago, and even now no one knows whether he is alive or dead. There are several hundred God Beast corpses laid down in the God Beast Tomb, and yet this impossibly grand method is only a single piece in the Asura Road Master's chess game. As for what his final goal is, not even I can guess. But, just from what I've gleaned in these years, it is nearly impossible to break through that array formation. Moreover, in the past I also tried thoroughly researching the array formation, and didn't discover any clues in 10,000 years…"

Empyrean Divine Mist immediately said all these words in one breath, his voice hoarse as if he had consumed a great deal of strength to do so.

"Senior, are you afraid that I comprehended something incorrectly?" Lin Ming asked Empyrean Divine Mist, seeing the caution behind his words.

"Yes… I have consumed too much soul force today so it is difficult for me to continue using sound transmissions… I want you to know that the Asura Road Master should have possessed at the very least an extreme True Divinity cultivation, and perhaps he likely even stepped beyond that to an unknown boundary. For you to use just seven years to break through his array formation is simply too… unbelievable. I worry that you made some mistake at the very start and continued along this error as you perceived the array formation. If you enter the God Beast Tomb because you incorrectly comprehended something due to a mistake, then you'll have wasted your life in vain…"

As Empyrean Divine Mist finished speaking, he fell silent. The purple crystal surrounding him was already dyed a dazzling silver by his blood, streaks of it flowing around like rivers of mercury.

As Lin Ming saw this silver blood, he sighed. He held his fists together and said, "Senior, please rest well and don't use sound transmissions any longer. This junior understands to handle affairs cautiously."

Empyrean Divine Mist faintly shook his head as he heard Lin Ming's reply. He knew that Lin Ming didn't take heed of his warning.

No matter how talented a martial artist was, they could still find themselves taking grueling detours in their cultivation. No matter how smart a student was, even they could make mistakes on a test.

Similarly speaking, a talented array master could also make mistakes when breaking through an array formation.

If they comprehended something wrong from the start, the results they would deduce at the end would also be wrong.

After all, the mind was not the Heavenly Dao rules; no one could guarantee they would be correct 100% of the time.

Looking at Lin Ming's fading back, Empyrean Divine Mist let out a bitter sigh. He didn't hope that Lin Ming would die like this, causing all of his previous efforts to be for naught.

As Lin Ming returned to his stone atop the cliff, he didn't waste a single second and immediately began meditating as he sat down, perceiving the lines within the emperor jade. During these years, Lin Ming's soul force became increasingly powerful and his deductions became increasingly sharp. He wasn't too far away from thoroughly comprehending the God Beast Tomb.

One month… two months… three months…

During this time, Lin Ming didn't return to Empyrean Divine Mist to study the soul forging Laws. Instead, he sat motionlessly atop the rock in a completely entranced state.

"The 33 Heavens, the boundless Great Dao. My resolve is to seek the peak of all martial arts. I spent 3.3 billion years to travel through the 33 Heavens, cultivating 33 lives. One life one Empyrean, one life one Divinity. What I seek is the highest truth of the Heavenly Dao…"

The words of the Asura Sutra's general outline repeated themselves within Lin Ming's mind.

The general outline only had a mere several hundred words, but they actually contained the Asura Road Master's understanding of the Great Dao as well as the path he chose to cultivate. Moreover, it hinted towards the highest truths of the God beast Tomb.

With the Asura Sutra general outline and the emperor jade pendant added together, Lin Ming used a total of seven years to fully understand the essence of the God Beast Tomb.

"33 Heavens, 33 lives…" Lin Ming murmured this number again and again. A thought suddenly flashed in his mind as the entire array diagram of the God Beast Tomb appeared in his mind, overlapping with the emperor jade's lines as they verified each other.

"The God Beast Tomb's great array formation is divided into 33 parts, each part containing profound and mystical principles consistent with the Dao of the 33 Layered Heavens. And in the center of the tomb, there are three blank spots. Could the Asura Road Master have laid down this array formation so that the future generations could fill in these three gaps?

All sorts of thoughts flashed through Lin Ming's mind. He felt as if he had seized upon new insights yet again. Even though he thought comprehending 80-90% of the God Beast Tomb's array formation was his limit, he was actually able to go another step further!

"Three months might not be enough…"

Lin Ming thought to himself. Unwittingly and unknowingly, he had already entered an ethereal state. His mind was completely focused on the God Beast Tomb's array formation. Besides that, everything else in this world seemed to fade away.

This was similar to a state of enlightenment. For most martial artists, this was a state that could only be discovered and not sought, but with Lin Ming's unusual perception and powerful soul force, in addition to his ethereal martial intent having fused with his other martial intents, he actually regularly entered this enlightened state. This was the state of comprehending without a thought that Buddhist martial artists often spoke about.

Fourth month…

Fifth month…

Lin Ming was as still as a statue above the cliff rock, not moving at all. There was even a thin layer of bone dust that had gathered over his body.

Thus, half a year passed. It was already three months past the shortest deadline that Lin Ming had thought of. For this last half year, Empyrean Divine Mist hadn't sent out a single word, but had remained in a deep slumber within the purple crystal.

Empyrean Divine Mist could only sigh inwardly. Lin Ming was simply too stubborn. A martial artist needed a heart of persistence, but it was rare to see someone as persistent as Lin Ming.

Six months and 10 days later, Lin Ming finally opened his eyes from meditation. In the pitch black darkness of the God Beast Tomb, his eyes shined like stars in the sky, brilliant and dazzling.

"Lin Ming!" Xiao Moxian was startled from beside Lin Ming. As she turned and saw that he had opened his eyes, she happily said, "It took you long enough to wake up! You've been meditating for such a long time that I thought you went crazy!"

Xiao Moxian could see that Lin Ming's eyes were filled with a glorious light. Besides being a bit exhausted, he didn't seem to have overdone anything at all. She finally relaxed herself.

"I'm glad that you're fine. Don't push yourself too far. This is an array formation likely left behind by the Asura Road Master. It's already extremely brave of you to try and perceive it. Even I attempted it but I couldn't understand anything at all."

Xiao Moxian had been watching over Lin Ming for the last five months already. As she watched him perceive the God Beast Tomb, she was a little distressed upon thinking that he might have overdrawn his mentality in doing so. Without noticing it, Lin Ming had already managed to occupy a little spot in her heart. She continued to say, "Rest up. We'll restore ourselves and tomorrow we'll go back to Senior Divine Mist to continue training."

Seeing Lin Ming not say a single word in response, Xiao Moxian's eyes twitched. "Hey, I spoke so much and yet you don't seem to have heard me."

Just as Xiao Moxian's voice fell, Lin Ming suddenly reached out a hand and held Xiao Moxian's wrist.

"Lin Ming, you..."

Xiao Moxian was stunned. She didn't know just what Lin Ming was doing. Although they had often held hands in these past seven years, there was always a reason behind it, with no other meaning. In an idle time, the two of them had never touched skin.

"Do you trust me?"

Lin Ming suddenly asked, his voice deep and solemn.

"Of course I trust you." Xiao Moxian blurted out in response, not sure why Lin Ming would ask such a silly question.

"I am going to go into the God Beast Tomb until I reach the deepest depths! Are you willing to follow me?"

As Lin Ming spoke, he earnestly looked into Xiao Moxian's eyes. His voice was slow and steady as he spoke one syllable at a time.

Xiao Moxian was bewildered. "Go into the God Beast Tomb!? You... have comprehended it!"

"I am 90% sure of it!" Lin Ming confidently replied. When he said 90%, that was in case an unexpected situation occurred, like another demonic tide.

Xiao Moxian covered her mouth. She knew that with Lin Ming's personality there was no way he would say something so irresponsible. But, the question now was that even if Lin Ming perceived something, was it right?

She felt that the current Lin Ming was slightly delirious. As she looked into his bright eyes, the sight was a bit blinding.

As she and Lin Ming looked into each other's eyes, she took a deep breath and nodded. "I will follow you."

Chapter 1493 – Entering the Tomb

Chapter 1493 – Entering the Tomb

…

…

…

From Xiao Moxian's eyes, Lin Ming could see how heavy her trust in him was. He had prepared for this journey into the God Beast Tomb for over seven years. Moreover, he had to consider Xiao Moxian, who followed him into Tragic Death Valley; he had to succeed no matter what.

Lin Ming didn't go there immediately. Instead, he and Xiao Moxian flew towards Empyrean Divine Mist's cave dwelling.

After seven years of being together constantly, Lin Ming had developed a deep respect towards Empyrean Divine Mist. Before he left, he naturally wanted to bid his farewells to Empyrean Divine Mist.

"Are you sure?" Empyrean Divine Mist asked, his voice quiet and deep.

"Yes." Lin Ming calmly and firmly said.

He knew why Empyrean Divine Mist had such a heavy expression. In these seven years, Empyrean Divine Mist had placed a tremendous level of care and effort into Xiao Moxian and himself. If they were to die in the depths of the God Beast Tomb then these last seven years would have been lost in vain.

Towards Empyrean Divine Mist who had limited time left on this earth, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had become his spiritual sustenance.

After being trapped in this land for tens of millions of years, it was hard to imagine how lonely and desolate Empyrean Divine Mist's life had been. Moreover, the most terrifying thought was that he would die alone in this dreadful place.

Before he died, he hoped that he would have peace of mind and he also hoped that there would be someone to inherit his legacy. Even if that person were to die in Tragic Death Valley in the future, at least at the moment of his death his legacy wouldn't be ended. That would be his final wish.

But now, Lin Ming actually wanted to enter the God Beast Tomb. If he failed, his final wish would be no more and he wouldn't be able to pass in peace.

"You will also go?"

Empyrean Divine Mist looked towards Xiao Moxian. If Xiao Moxian didn't go then even if Lin Ming died there would still be someone remaining.

Xiao Moxian grit her teeth. She looked towards Lin Ming and then turned back to Empyrean Divine Mist and nodded.

She was completely in the dark as to what degree Lin Ming had perceived the God Beast Tomb, but she still decided to bet her life on him and follow him into it.

"You can wait here. If there is a chance that Lin Ming returns safely, you can always go later." Empyrean Divine Mist tried to persuade her.

But, Xiao Moxian shook her head, simply saying, "I don't want to."

Her courage came from her deep trust in Lin Ming. Moreover, in this dark and desolate land that hadn't changed for billions of years, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had become each other's spiritual light. If Lin Ming were to die then Xiao Moxian would lose all courage to face the lonely and forsaken future by herself.

To live the rest of her life in this sort of hell, even martial artists with formidable wills would fall into insanity from the despair.

"Yes… since you have decided to go then I will no longer try to persuade you. I only hope that when you discover that you have miscalculated, you do not try to show off and can retreat safely without being swayed by your feelings. I also hope that at that time, if it's not too late… that I… can have someone bury me when I die…"

As Empyrean Divine Mist said these words he instantly looked older. After spending seven years with Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian and teaching them everything he could, it was like he had poured his very life into them.

If Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian left, it was the same as taking away his backbone.

In that moment, A strange feeling came over Lin Ming's mind. He wasn't related to Empyrean Divine Mist by blood, and in fact they weren't even part of the same race. Between them, there wasn't the slightest bit of relation, but in the end he had become the continuation of this poor old man's life.

When a martial artist stepped onto the road of martial arts it was impossible for them to know where their path would end. They might perish in a mystic realm, they might be murdered out in the wilds and have their belongings stolen, they might die without their corpse left behind, they might even disintegrate into ash without leaving anything behind.

Empyrean Divine Mist was now in this situation. If he perished in Tragic Death Valley, the only things accompanying him would be the skeletons all around him.

And now, Empyrean Divine Mist only had a simple desire, and it was that someone could arrange a grave for him, and that at the point of his death, after spending tens of millions of years alone, he could pass on with someone beside him…

Lin Ming's heart was touched by Empyrean Divine Mist's words. He lifted his robe and deeply bowed towards Empyrean Divine Mist.

“Senior, please rest assured that this junior will return and will not allow Senior’s care and graciousness to ebb away.”

…….

Lin Ming didn’t immediately leave. Instead, he waited for another demonic tide to pass. Only then did he and Xiao Moxian venture deep into the God Beast Tomb.

The demonic tide wouldn’t erupt twice in a row. Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian chose to depart after a demonic tide erupted in order to prevent the possibility that there would be another one any time soon.

Massive bones were scattered all over in the endless God Beast Tomb. Some bones were as high as mountain peaks, stabbing into the sky like divine swords, vanishing into the darkness as if they disappeared into some unknown space and time.

There was no wind in the tomb, but there were still flows of energy that resembled wind. This sort of energy seemed to be similar to the previous eruptions of energy.

As this wind blew past the bones, scratching sounds echoed in the dark, resonating with the bleakness all around and making one feel an inexplicable sense of dread and sorrow.

This sense of sorrow became increasingly rich, nearly drowning one in sadness.

As they reached 50 miles deep into the God Beast Tomb, Xiao Moxian could feel her heart filled with a deep anguish, as if a demonic power was summoning her soul, making her feel as if she had to follow it.

This was the demonic summons that Empyrean Divine Mist spoke of. There were many martial artists who after entering the God Beast Tomb were enraptured by this demonic power and didn’t return.

The demonic power grew increasingly strong. Xiao Moxian used her powerful soul force to guard her mind and keep the bright clarity shining in her heart. However, this power was far too strange, strange to the point that even a World King wasn't able to withstand it. Although Xiao Moxian's soul force was strong, it wouldn't surpass that of a World King.

She soon felt as if she was about to cave in. Although she knew that this demonic power that was pulling at her soul was fatal, she still couldn't help but feel like she was succumbing to it, like she was losing control of her mind.

Xiao Moxian wanted to shout out at Lin Ming, but at this time her complete focus was being used to resist the corrosion of this demonic power on her soul. She wasn't able to divert even a single speck of her attention, otherwise she suspected she would immediately lose herself in illusion.

In a daze, Xiao Moxian felt a mental strength shoot into her mind, forming a simple rune. This rune was shaped like a sword and pierced through the chaos before diving into Xiao Moxian's spiritual sea.

At this time, a voice sounded out near Xiao Moxian's ears. "Guard your mind, meditate upon the Asura Sutra and use the sutra's Laws to revolve your energy!"

"Asura Sutra?"

These two words were like bells of heavens ringing in her mind. Immediately, a flash of brilliance cut through her mind.

"33 Heavens, the boundless Great Dao…"

Without waiting for Xiao Moxian to begin meditating, a strong a vibrant voice resounded in Xiao Moxian's ears. The sound contained intense thoughts that formed golden characters in Xiao Moxian's spiritual sea. Every character was bright and illustrious, containing concepts that were hard to put into words.

These characters were the general outline of the Asura Sutra.

As the general outline of the Asura Sutra flashed in her mind, the pressure on Xiao Moxian's soul rapidly reduced and her mind was restored to pure brightness.

The world around her became clear once more.

Xiao Moxian discovered that she had been holding onto Lin Ming's hand. A strong yang energy steadily streamed up into her body from his hand.

The general outline of the Asura Sutra she had heard just now had been Lin Ming's thoughts.

As Xiao Moxian recalled the moment where she nearly lost herself, she felt her entire body soaked with sweat. Without making the necessary preparations to enter the God Beast Tomb, no matter how talented one was, no matter what cultivation they possessed, everyone would perish here. Even though Xiao Moxian was supremely talented, it was impossible for her to ignore the horrifying power within the God Beast Tomb.

"The Asura Sutra we saw before actually has such an effect..." Xiao Moxian was startled. These mere several hundred words of the Asura Sutra general outline contained far too mystical and profound principles. If the God Beast Tomb was really created by the Asura Road Master, then it was reasonable that the Asura Sutra would have such an effect.

However, Xiao Moxian was well aware that she and Lin Ming were only on the outermost edge of the God Beast Tomb. They were still far from reaching its depths.

Thinking about it, a complete God Beast skeleton was thousands of miles long and the God Beast Tomb was composed of several hundred God Beast skeletons. The size of this place was simply unfathomable. This was an independent world opened up by the Asura Road Master himself!

If they wanted to go deeper into the God Beast Tomb they would have to face even more horrifying dangers. To arrive safely at the end was simply far too difficult.

Chapter 1494 – Asura Sutra General Outline

Chapter 1494 – Asura Sutra General Outline

…

…

…

When the demonic power was suppressed by the Asura Sutra, Empyrean Divine Mist's sound transmission echoed out near Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian's ears. "So that's how it is. You both obtained the Asura Sutra general outline left behind by the Asura Road Master. It seems that you two have perfectly left behind your names atop the Emperor Stone…"

The moment Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming entered the God Beast Tomb, Empyrean Divine Mist's sense had locked onto their bodies, not leaving them just yet.

Thus, he naturally witnessed the scene where Lin Ming helped Xiao Moxian use the Asura Sutra to overcome the summoning attraction of the demonic power.

"Does Senior also know the Asura Sutra general outline?" Lin Ming thought out loud.

"Yes. The Asura Sutra general outline is rare, but in these countless years there have also been people who were able to perfectly leave behind their name on the Emperor Stone, thus it has spread out from them. I once tried myself to perceive something from it, but my natural talent was lacking and in the end I couldn't perceive anything at all. I never imagined that the Asura Sutra general outline could have such fantastic effects in the God Beast Tomb. Just meditating on it allows you to resist the attack of that demonic power."

When Empyrean Divine Mist referred to his own talent as lacking, he was being modest about it. With his extreme Empyrean cultivation, he had made very little harvests upon meditating on the Asura Sutra general outline. This was because the Asura Sutra general outline was a mere several hundred words and didn't contain any specific cultivation method; it was only an outline of the Heavenly Dao. Although it contained profound and mysterious principles, it wasn't possible for him to perceive anything through it.

"You have perceived the Asura Sutra general outline?" Empyrean Divine Mist asked Lin Ming.

"Yes, this junior obtained the Asura Sutra general outline from the Emperor Stone seven years ago and I have been enlightening myself upon it this entire time."

"Seven years… of meditating upon the Asura Sutra, and you have also researched the God Beast Tomb… did you recognize that the Asura Sutra general outline is the key to opening the God Beast Tomb?" Empyrean Divine Mist guessed that this was the reason Lin Ming dared to venture deeper into the God Beast Tomb. Lin Ming was smart and had recognized that the Asura Sutra was related to the God Beast Tomb's array formation.

However, Empyrean Divine Mist had also meditated on these two things before and was well aware of just how horrifyingly profound and mystical the principles contained within them were. The God Beast Tomb was an array formation spread over several thousand miles and was complex to the extreme! As for the Asura Sutra general outline, it was only a mere several hundred words, inversely simple to the extreme!

Whether it was complex to the extreme or simple to the extreme, wanting to perceive something from either one was as hard as ascending to the heavens. As for connecting the two together, wasn't that easier said than done?

"Seven years and only several hundred words, how much could you have perceived from the Asura Sutra general outline?" Empyrean Divine Mist faintly said.

"Junior's comprehension is poor and I also lack the main text of the Asura Sutra, thus… my understanding is actually very shallow."

“Alright.” Empyrean Divine Mist heaved a deep sigh. He knew that urging was useless because Lin Ming wouldn’t listen to him. “My divine sense can continue for 600-700 miles, but after that I can go no further. You must take care of yourself!”

After Empyrean Divine Mist said these words he fell silent.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian continued going deeper into the God Beast Tomb, and the summoning of the demonic power grew increasingly strong. From the start, Xiao Moxian was able to meditate upon the Asura Sutra general outline to easily withstand this strange call, but after they were almost a hundred miles in, that terrifying demonic power had nearly turned into essence.

Chi chi chi!

A ghostly fire began to burn in front of Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian. In just several breaths of time, this ghostly fire transformed into a fierce demon. It had gruesome features with fangs and claws. Two wings stretched out from its back and it held a trident in its hand, looking like the Asura King from nighttime stories.

The demon roared and hurtled towards Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian!

Xiao Moxian paled as she saw this demon. Just this casual demon that appeared had an aura comparable to a half-step World King!

This was still the outer edge of the God Beast Tomb. If they continued deeper in, who knew what they would encounter! No wonder it was said that even an Empyrean would perish here!

“Chant the Asura Sutra together!”

Lin Ming hurriedly shouted out as this demon rushed towards them. Xiao Moxian’s pupils shrank. At this time she didn’t need Lin Ming reminding her to know that her only method was to use the Asura Sutra to battle this enemy. A half-step World King demon was not an existence she could contend with on her own!

Xiao Moxian's cherry red lips opened and moved, the words of the Asura Sutra enunciated clearly. The words condensed into glowing runes in the air, flying towards the Asura demon like a flock of birds and locking it in place!

"How fierce…"

After locking down that Asura demon, Xiao Moxian grimaced in surprise. She had poured her complete strength into her words and yet only managed to barely lock down this Asura demon; she hadn't been able to destroy it at all.

And at this time, Xiao Moxian heard a series of explosive sounds around her. Not too far away, several black demonic flames burst into existence, condensing into new Asura King phantoms. These Asura Kings were formed from the overwhelmingly rich demonic power here, every Asura phantom stronger than the first!

Xiao Moxian was dumbstruck. This was too terrifying! They were two Divine Transformation realm martial artists, but here they had to face several half-step World Kings!

How could they begin to fight them?

She couldn't help but look towards Lin Ming. From the moment they entered the Great Desolate, without noticing it, she had slowly started to depend on Lin Ming. Although he wasn't too much stronger than she was, whenever there was some danger that occurred he would be able to easily resolve it.

At this time, Lin Ming focused his energy into his inner world. The Heretical God Force and Eight Inner Hidden Gates opened together. Because he seemed to breathe in too much, his entire body seemed to inflate, and a strong aura of the power of thunder and fire filled his mouth and nose!

In that moment, Lin Ming squatted down a little and opened his mouth to shout out loud and release massive tongues of thunder and flame!

The power of thunder and fire was fused into Lin Ming's breath. He began to speak, and as his words echoed out, each syllable was fierce and thrilling, shocking the mind, seeming to crash down like heavenly tribulation, containing a holy and destructive power beyond description. The power of thunder and flame howled out, rolling through the air like thunderclaps, igniting the world with 10,000 flames!

What Lin Ming was loudly proclaiming was the Asura Sutra general outline. Compared to Xiao Moxian's version, it was dozens of times more massive!

In that instant, an Azure Dragon phantom appeared behind Lin Ming! It was like a Divine Dragon was awakening in Lin Ming's body, sending out an earthshaking roar!

With Lin Ming's body as the center, visible sonic waves wantonly spread out, surging from him like a storm.

"33 Heavens! The boundless Great Dao!"

A horrifying sound echoed within the world. With a loud crash of thunder, the demonic power all around them was destroyed and those Asura phantoms were torn asunder by these dreadful sounds.

Golden runes formed the general outline of the Asura Sutra. Underneath the suppression of these glowing runes, all of the Asura phantoms began to continuously explode!

Peng! Peng! Peng!

Like this, over ten half-step World King Asura demons were ripped into fragments by Lin Ming!

The few remaining Asura demons were greatly weakened, their condition extremely poor. They wanted to escape, but Lin Ming clasped his hands together and the golden runes crashed down upon them with a dreadful pressure.

With a cracking sound, these final demons were all completely killed off.

All the Asura demons turned into demonic power that fluttered all about them.

Off to the side, Xiao Moxian was shocked as she saw this.

Although they had both chanted the Asura Sutra general outline, how come there was such a great difference between the two of them?

“Lin Ming… what cultivation method did you use just now?”

Xiao Moxian thought that Lin Ming should have used some sonic wave type cultivation method, but before Lin Ming could respond, Empyrean Divine Mist’s shocked sound transmission echoed out to her.

“Lin Ming… when you meditated upon the Asura Sutra general outline, did you become aware of the Asura Road Master’s ‘Dao’?”

The reason the Asura Sutra that Lin Ming had shouted out just now was able to have such an effect was not because he had used any secret technique on his voice, but because he had an astoundingly deep comprehension of the Asura Sutra!

The Asura Sutra general outline was a mere several hundred words long and each word stood by itself. There was no concrete cultivation method nor was there any description about moves or techniques. From this, it was simply impossible to utilize it in battle. Yet, under Lin Ming’s comprehension, the Asura Sutra general outline had become a deadly life culling weapon! That mantra of several hundred words was able to eliminate his enemies!

Empyrean Divine Mist had never thought this possible.

Although he himself had meditated on the Asura Sutra in the past, in the end he didn’t obtain any harvests.

“Senior is far too exaggerated. This junior has merely obtained some superficial insights, and I am still far, far away from becoming aware of the Asura Road Master’s ‘Dao’. From this Asura Sutra general outline, what I can understand is only one 10,000th of the truth within it. I can only waste its potential and shout it out loud to destroy my enemies here. But, the true function of the Asura Sutra general outline is to help guide a martial artist towards the peak of martial arts and help them find where the direction of the Great Dao lays. This is the summary of the Asura Road Master's 33 lives, and the direction it points to might be to a realm even above that of a True Divinity. This junior simply cannot see it clearly."

As Lin Ming assiduously meditated for seven years, he could increasingly feel just how mighty the Asura Road Master truly was.

"To transform the words of the Asura Sutra into a strength that could be used to kill others is already fantastic." Empyrean Divine Mist sighed with emotion. "The Heavenly Dao is vast and endless. In its endless cycles, who can see its direction? For you to arrive at this step is already astonishing. Perhaps you are right. If one morning I could gain knowledge of the correct path then I could die at sunset without regrets. I will no longer try to change your mind. Go forth and break through this God Beast Tomb's great array formation, whether you succeed or fail."

"Thank you Senior for your understanding. I will not disappoint Senior's expectations.

Lin Ming respectfully cupped his hands together. As he turned back around, the demonic power had already vanished. All that appeared in front of him was a massive city wall created by the bones of a God Beast!

The pale white walls were formed from bones, shocking and alarming!

"What is this?" Xiao Moxian said, bewildered. This city wall seemed to emerge from thin air. Before this moment, she had never noticed it at all.

"33 Heavens Asura Bone City. Within these city walls lies the main center of the God Beast Tomb's great array formation..."

Chapter 1495 – 33 Dao Diagrams

Chapter 1495 – 33 Dao Diagrams

…

…

…

“33 Heavens Asura Bone City?” Xiao Moxian was startled. She never thought that deep within the God Beast Tomb would be a city wall built from God Beast bones.

“Let’s enter.”

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian flew towards this massive city wall. 10,000 feet in the air, they were able to see the world behind that wall of white bones.

Then, Xiao Moxian saw something she would never forget in her life.

After that wall of bones was not endless barren and desolate earth, nor was it some wilderness. Rather, it was more accurate to say that this didn’t seem like they were in some valley at all, but the endless starry skies!

The infinite starry skies were broad without end. And floating in these starry skies were massive dao diagrams.

Because the distance was too great and these starry skies were too vast, Xiao Moxian found it hard to determine how large these dao diagrams were. As she probed with her sense, she finally sucked in a deep breath of astonishment.

These dao diagrams were thousands of miles large; they were comparable to a small planet!

All of these dao diagrams floated still in the skies. At the center of each array diagram was the complete skeleton of a God Beast.

These God Beast skeletons were clearly different from the God Beast remains near the outer edges of the God Beast Tomb.

The bones at the edges of the tomb had weathered the passage of billions or even tens of billions of years. Their blood had long since dried up and there was no value to them besides the bones themselves.

But, the bones in these array diagrams were shining crystalline like jade. These bones were exuding a rich blood vitality, seeming as if they were alive!

These beast bones even emitted the aura of a God Beast, forming a God Beast phantom above them. There were phoenixes soaring into the highest heavens, dragons leaping through the misty sea – it was like these God Beast bones would revive at any moment.

“This place is…” Xiao Moxian looked at this vast array formation, shocked. These complete God Beast skeletons were several hundred miles high and thousands of miles long. As they floated in the vast infinite space, their size was bewildering to the senses!

As for Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, in this space they were nothing but tiny particles of dust, completely not worthy of mentioning.

“This is the true God Beast array formation. Without a doubt, the passage to leaving Tragic Death Valley should be here!”

Lin Ming closed his eyes and allowed his sense to recklessly spread outwards as he verified what he knew with this array diagram.

“There are 36 dao diagrams here and 33 God Beast skeletons. The central three dao diagrams are empty.”

Lin Ming murmured to himself. He had already expected this scene after perceiving it from the emperor jade.

“I never imagined that… this would be the scene of the array formation within the God Beast Tomb. I attached my divine sense to your body and it seems you’ve broadened my horizons.

Empyrean Divine Mist softly said. If it weren’t for Lin Ming then his sense wouldn’t have been able to break through the chains of the demonic power and he wouldn’t have been able to see the true array formation.

“36 dao diagrams. Each dao diagram has its own guardian God Beast sealed within it. The inherent killing intent is endless and peerless. Such a terrifying aura already completely surpasses any Empyrean, to a point where it is hard to look up to. If an Empyrean were to step into such a dao diagram they would immediately perish!”

Empyrean Divine Mist didn’t doubt how terrifyingly deadly these 36 dao diagrams were. Just the aura alone was fearful enough.

“How do we pass this?”

Xiao Moxian asked. She had never seen such a scene before. In particular, after listening to Empyrean Divine Mist’s analysis, she deeply understood just how terrifying this array diagram was.

If she had to enter this array diagram then her pathetic cultivation level could basically be ignored. Just any speck of light could turn her to ash without the smallest chance of escaping.

“Let’s go over!” Lin Ming succinctly said.

These three simple words caused Xiao Moxian’s heart to skip a beat. Even Empyrean Divine Mist hesitated, but if Lin Ming was so confident in himself then he should have researched this 33 array diagram beforehand.

For seven years, Lin Ming had been sitting quietly in meditation above the cliff. How had he managed to perceive the Asura Road Master's God Beast Tomb array formation?

Empyrean Divine Mist sucked in a light breath. He could feel that there were far too many secrets on Lin Ming's body. With Lin Ming's Divine Transformation realm cultivation, he wanted to contend with the array formation left behind by the Asura Road Master. This sort of decision was far too shocking!

"Can he really succeed?" Empyrean Divine Mist couldn't help but produce such an idea. He didn't think that Lin Ming would die now, because Lin Ming arriving at this point was already a miracle, even if this miracle was because of the Asura Sutra general outline.

Empyrean Divine Mist was well aware that if Lin Ming truly managed to break through the God Beast great array formation, there was a high chance he would find the method to leave Tragic Death Valley. And ever since the Asura Road was formed, there had never been a person who had left Tragic Death Valley!

"Come with me!" Lin Ming took hold of Xiao Moxian's hand and together they flew towards one of the 36 dao diagrams.

The dao diagram that Lin Ming chose shined with a brilliant spectrum of rainbow light. At the center of the dao diagram was a flame-colored skeleton, shining like heated rubies, brilliantly burning. This was a phoenix!

"Phoenix..."

As Xiao Moxian saw this crystalline phoenix skeleton, her body shook. Her bloodline roiled within her, faintly resonating with the phoenix skeleton.

"This is a royal amongst all phoenixes, and a peak royal at that!"

Xiao Moxian whispered to herself. The God Beast skeletons within the 33 dao diagrams were not from common God Beasts, but the most peak existences amongst all God Beasts!

If one could absorb the phoenix marrow within this phoenix skeleton, then whether it was Xiao Moxian or Lin Ming, either of them would experience unimaginable benefits.

Of course, this was only wishful thought. This phoenix skeleton was locked onto the array formation and impossible to obtain.

When Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian stepped onto the dao diagram, the dao diagram erupted with seven brilliant fountains of light. These seven fountains of energy were the colors of a rainbow, thrusting into the sky like seven divine swords.

All around these erupting fountains were beams of divine light formed from energy. These divine lights were as sharp as sword lights, recklessly shooting about.

Looking at these distant erupting fountains, Xiao Moxian could clearly feel the terrifying strength contained within them. Although they appeared beautiful and enchanting, the truth was that these fountains of energy could easily shatter apart stars! If one’s mortal body was sucked into those fountains, then one would absolutely die; not even an Empyrean could escape!

Facing this titanic power that could eliminate the heavens and earth, Xiao Moxian felt that her own strength was far too little.

Even those divine lights that flowed out from around them were extremely terrifying. Xiao Moxian hesitated for a moment and then took out a high-grade spirit artifact, carefully tossing it into the cutting path of the divine lights.

The moment that the spirit artifact touched those divine lights, there was a slight cracking sound as the high-grade spirit artifact was easily cut in half by the divine light. The halves of the spirit artifact were sucked into the light, and in the next moment that high-grade spirit artifact had been reduced to nothing but dust!

Although she had already expected this result, Xiao Moxian still sucked in a cold breath upon seeing for herself how sharp this divine light was. Destroying a spirit artifact was bad enough, but disintegrating a spirit artifact into dust was even more terrifying!

And, what was even more dreadful was that these divine lights were only tiny beams that leaked out from the main seven rainbow fountains; they weren't even comparable.

Then, just how terrifying should the main body of that divine light be?

Xiao Moxian was clear that this dao diagram was not something that a person could contend with. Even if there were 1000 copies of her, all of them would die inside.

After throwing away that destroyed spirit artifact, Xiao Moxian looked towards Lin Ming.

All she could rely on now was Lin Ming. And facing those terrifying fountains of energy, even Xiao Moxian wasn't too confident in his chances right now.

At this time, Lin Ming was floating motionlessly. His eyes were like two stars that shined with a dazzling light, his sense capturing the entire dao diagram.

This was one of the 33 dao diagrams; Essence Gathering – Five Elements!

The 33 dao diagrams represented 33 different ways to cultivate the Great Dao. There were 11 body transformation kinds, 11 essence gathering kinds, and 11 soul forging kinds. This dao diagram in front of them was one of the essence gathering paths to cultivating the Great Dao!

Lin Ming chose this dao diagram because this essence gathering dao diagram closely resembled humanity's cultivation system. Lin Ming possessed high attainments in this domain, and the Thunder and Fire Laws he practiced also belonged to the power of the five elements.

Lin Ming took a step forwards, revolving all the true essence within his body to the limit. Behind him, the phantom of the Heretical God Tree began to slowly appear.

The Heretical God Force Lin Ming used was extremely overbearing. Within his level, there was no martial artist that could compare with him. If he revolved the Heretical God Force to the absolute limit and combined it with Three Essences As One, then in terms of true essence intensity alone, even Xiao Moxian's Counterforce Heaven Absorbing Demon Art would have a hard time comparing to it.

But now, in front of these terrifying fountains of energy that erupted into the skies, Lin Ming's Heretical God Force was nothing but a little trickling stream flowing next to the raging seas; there was no comparison between them at all. Lin Ming's strength was only that of a person, but that erupting energy fountain seemed to contain the strength of the universe.

Just what was Lin Ming planning to do?

Xiao Moxian's eyes widened. She found it hard to imagine what would happen. Lin Ming had summoned the Heretical God Tree, but relying on this weak strength, what could he do to this massive dao diagram?

Lin Ming's mind focused into his inner world. In his inner world, the azure emperor jade began to shine with a dim brilliance.

Lin Ming's true essence poured into the emperor jade without end, slowly spinning around the lines within it.

This process continued for several breaths of time.

The energy that was poured into the emperor jade came gushing out. Then, the energy condensed into Great Dao runes, each one containing the charm of the emperor jade!

Several hundred Great Dao runes spun around, forming a complete dao diagram.

This dao diagram spun out from Lin Ming's inner world, slowly coming to a rest above his head where it slowly revolved.

Then, after a brief period of time, a second dao diagram shot out from Lin Ming's inner world.

Then a third, a fourth…

After a quarter hour passed, 33 dao diagrams spun around Lin Ming's body, wrapping him within.

"Come in." Lin Ming said to Xiao Moxian.

Xiao Moxian immediately walked into the barrier of dao diagrams.

The space within these 33 dao diagrams was extremely narrow. Xiao Moxian was nearly stuck skin to skin with Lin Ming, and they could even feel each other breathing.

Being so close to Xiao Moxian, Lin Ming's nose was filled with her fragrance. He could even feel her soft body beneath her clothes.

Although this sort of feeling was infinitely enchanting, at this time, all of Lin Ming's concentration was focused on the task at hand without diverting even the least bit to anything else. This was a moment that concerned his life or death!

"Follow me. You must absolutely not walk beyond the range of the dao diagrams." As Lin Ming spoke he began to walk towards those seven erupting fountains of rainbow energy.

After understanding what Lin Ming wanted to do, Xiao Moxian was shocked. Her eyes went wide and her face was filled with disbelief. Lin Ming actually planned to enter those erupting fountains of energy like this?

Chapter 1496 – Glow of the Five Elements

Chapter 1496 – Glow of the Five Elements

…

…

…

In Xiao Moxian's opinion, the 33 array diagrams that Lin Ming formed were extremely varied and complicated, even containing the profound principles of the Great Dao. But, looking at these array diagrams she couldn't sense if they were strong because there was far too little origin energy poured into them.

She even felt that if she were to attack with all her strength, she could shatter these 33 array diagrams!

In comparison, those erupting fountains of energy could blow apart celestial bodies and even those sparks of divine light were more than enough to instantly kill a Great World King!

Now, Lin Ming actually wanted to use these 33 array diagrams to resist the terrifying rainbow colored energy fountains. This was no different from wearing paper armor and trying to resist a hail of arrows!

This caused Xiao Moxian to not be able to summon any confidence. "Are you sure… we can walk through like this?"

"I'm sure."

Lin Ming's voice was calm, without any waves at all. At this time, his mind was completely empty as he focused on dealing with this multicolored light.

“O-okay…”

Xiao Moxian rubbed her own chest. In the face of this scene, although she was usually brave and courageous, she still felt a bit weak at heart.

She stared at these floating array diagrams and grit her teeth, fiercely whispering, “I guess I’ll bet my life with you. If I die like this I’ll haunt you in the afterlife!”

“This really is betting your life…” Lin Ming murmured. He had spent seven years meditating on the emperor jade and the God Beast Tomb’s array formation, but all of that had only been theoretical.

If he had to truly put forth what he learned into practical application then he couldn’t say he was 100% confident in himself. After all, what Empyrean Divine Mist said was right. A person wasn’t the Heavenly Dao Laws and it was possible to make a mistake; even the most talented student could have the wrong answer on a test.

“Lin Ming… I hope you’re right…”

Empyrean Divine Mist quietly said. His body was extremely weak right now and this was the limit to which he could follow Lin Ming. He couldn’t follow Lin Ming into that multi-colored glow because if his divine sense was struck by those rainbow-hued lights, his main body would suffer a serious backlash. He could only watch from afar as Lin Ming walked into that light and not follow him any further.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian walked forwards together, carefully making their way into the cover of that brilliant light.

Whoosh!

Just as they stepped into the rainbow-colored light, a beam of divine light shot towards them like an arrow!

As Xiao Moxian saw this beam of divine light about to pierce Lin Ming's chest, her pupils contracted and she sucked in a deep breath!

At this point it was impossible to dodge. If she tried to do that she would be separated from the protection of these array diagrams and would have to face the chaotic flow of divine light all around her. That would be an even worse situation than this.

All she could depend on were Lin Ming's array diagrams!

Peng!

The divine light struck the array diagrams. Then, an unbelievable scene occurred.

The divine light that could reduce a high-grade spirit artifact to dust actually crashed into the array diagrams and entered into them like a snowflake falling into a lake of water, completely pushing in and vanishing!

Then, this energy circulated in lines along the dao diagrams, going from one end to the other before finally shooting off in the opposite direction into the infinite space.

From start to finish, this energy was like a river that bent around Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, not even harming them in the least.

"How… how is this possible?"

Xiao Moxian's eyes were wide. This array diagram that appeared extremely weak didn't directly block the divine light, but had instead guided it around them so they didn't receive any injuries at all.

What sort of principles were these?

Thinking about it, for an array diagram to forcefully resist the impact of this divine light, it would need to be something that surpassed an Empyrean spirit treasure.

But, if it were only easing the strike then it wouldn't take as much strength to deflect it.

“How did you do that…” Xiao Moxian found it hard to believe that the protective array diagram around them would have such an effect. It was clearly because of the patterns atop the array diagram. Those patterns had redirected the brutal energy away from them.

Lin Ming said in a low voice. “The lightning of the mortal world can sunder a towering old tree, but it actually cannot destroy a piece of steel, because steel can induct the lightning to enter the ground.”

Lin Ming didn’t explain further. He was completely focused on the brilliant beams of energy all around him. The array diagram he set up around them originated from the emperor jade, and had the same origin as the array diagram in the God Beast Tomb. Thus, neither of them conflicted with each other. Like this, the array diagram that surrounded them was similar to steel. When struck by the brilliant bursts of divine light, it wasn’t damaged at all.

Like this, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian thoroughly entered into that gushing rainbow-colored energy and submerged into all the colorful lights. Not too far away, Empyrean Divine Mist watched this occur with his divine sense, utterly shocked by what he saw.

“A bold of thunder can burn down a towering old tree but actually cannot destroy steel…”

Empyrean Divine Mist repeated what Lin Ming had said just then. This was an extremely simple truth that even mortals knew of, but now Lin Ming had used this truth to break into the God Beast Array Formation that the Asura Road Master had created.

When Lin Ming first tried to enter the array formation, Empyrean Divine Mist had never imagined he could arrive at this point. With Lin Ming’s Divine Transformation realm cultivation, he faced the array formation created by the Asura Road Master, and had resisted the demonic power and also walked into the central array diagram. Now, Empyrean Divine Mist’s sense was no longer able to continue following them through.

Lin Ming still had many dangers to face and this was only the start of his journey. But, just entering into those erupting fountains of energy was enough to shock the mind.

If Lin Ming could continue forwards until he reached the center of the entire God Beast Tomb, then he might become the first person in all these endless years to ever emerge from Tragic Death Valley.

Empyrean Divine Mist took a slow and deep breath as he silently returned his sense. He felt that these seven years that passed were no different from a dream. Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were two unrivalled geniuses he encountered near the climax of his life. The two of them had low cultivations but their talent reached the extreme of possibility. In particular, Lin Ming could create the most unexpected of miracles.

“Perhaps… he might be the turning point in my life…”

Empyrean Divine Mist suddenly thought, a strange feeling swelling in his heart for the first time in all his years. He had quietly lived on in Tragic Death Valley for tens of millions of years, and now, at the point before his death, a turning point in his life had finally arrived…

…………

At this time, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had already walked into the main light fountains of the Five Elements array diagram. Vast surges of light raged all around them, recklessly striking Lin Ming’s 33 array diagrams. However, each strike was melted away and channeled elsewhere.

But, the rainbow hued lights were far too powerful. The array diagrams violently trembled, seeming as if they would shatter at any moment.

Watching these array diagrams that seemed as if they would collapse, Xiao Moxian held her breath and carefully moved forwards.

Like this, the two of them continued through the elements… violent thunder, fierce winds, raging fires, freezing waters…

The power of the five elements was passed one at a time. They even passed by the center of the array diagram and the phoenix skeleton that stabilized the array formation.

From start to end, Lin Ming didn't have the least bit of emotion on his face. His mind remained completely focused on moving forwards.

After an unknown period of time, the glowing light around Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian began to dim down.

In that moment, Lin Ming let out a light sigh of relief. His back was already soaked wet with sweat.

"We… finally made it through…" Lin Ming said, his voice a bit hoarse.

Chapter 1497 – Dragon Energy

Chapter 1497 – Dragon Energy

…

…

…

Xiao Moxian looked at Lin Ming, a feeling of disbelief filling her features as they finally passed through that array diagram just now.

Like this, with their Divine Transformation realm cultivation, they had passed through the array diagram created by the Asura Road Master.

And there were still 35 array diagrams, three of which were empty. In other words, there were still 32 of them.

“We don’t need to pass through all the array diagrams.”

Lin Ming said. The God Beast Tomb array formation was divided into three levels that surrounded the center position. As long as they could break through three levels of array diagrams, they could reach the center of the God Beast Tomb array formation.

And during these last seven years, Lin Ming had been carefully researching three array diagrams in careful detail; he didn’t have time to analyze the others.

These three array diagrams belonged to essence, energy, and divine. The second array diagram that Lin Ming chose was… Body Transformation – Nine Stars!

This array diagram was the one Lin Ming was most familiar with. It was part of his cultivation system.

The dark gray array diagram floated still within the universe. In the center of this array diagram was a massive dragon skeleton.

This skeleton was pitch black and shined with a metallic sheen, seeming as if it were made from divine iron. It was thousands of miles long and its four dragon claws rose like mountains. Two wings rose up from its back, seeming as if they could conceal the stars. A single fierce and mighty horn extended high from its head, shooting up like a divine sword.

Looking at this dragon skeleton, Lin Ming's mind turned cold. From this skeleton, Lin Ming could feel an aura similar to that of the Black Dragon Sovereign he met within the Eternal Demon Abyss.

If he wasn't wrong, then this dragon was the same kind as the Dragon Sovereign within the Eternal Demon Abyss!

In this universe there were all types of God Beasts, and even the dragon race themselves were divided into dozens and hundreds of variations. But, although Lin Ming had browsed through numerous ancient texts, he had only ever met this type of dragon in the Eternal Demon Abyss. Now, it was his second time seeing one.

"What type of dragon is this?" Lin Ming asked Xiao Moxian. Xiao Moxian was the descendant of a God Beast and her understanding of God Beasts naturally surpassed his own.

However, Xiao Moxian shook her head, saying, "I don't know… there are great differences between the God Beasts of the 33 Layered Heavens. I only understand the God Beasts of the Divine Realm, and many God Beasts are variation species from ancient times. There are even some that originate from before the last great calamity so there is no record of them in history books."

"Before the last great calamity?" Lin Ming was startled. "How is that possible? The last great calamity occurred billions of years ago. There shouldn't be any life form capable of surviving for such a long time…"

In this universe, whether it was an Empyrean or God Beast, they had a limited life span. Even if they entered a time enchantment to slow down time relative to the outside world, the amount they could lengthen their lives by was still limited. For instance, after 300 million years, Three Lives Old Man was also on death's door.

"That's right." Xiao Moxian nodded. "But amongst the God Beasts, there are those that are deeply slumbering within their eggs and have yet to hatch. Or, for some unknown reason they have been sealed away for a long time, so it wouldn't be strange in that situation if they managed to survive the great calamity too."

As Xiao Moxian explained, Lin Ming became aware. So that's how it was. Indeed, he had heard of God Beast eggs being sealed for countless years but still being able to hatch out a God Beast afterwards.

As Lin Ming was pondering this, he suddenly felt something move within his inner world.

"Mm?"

Lin Ming was startled. He carefully probed with his sense and impressively discovered that the overflowing Black Dragon energy within this array formation was gathering into an invisible current and flowing towards him.

"Could this be..."

Lin Ming had a thought about what was happening, and his guess was confirmed in the next moment.

This dragon energy was being dragged into his inner world by some strange force, forming a gray spiral. And, at the end of this gray spiral was the dragon egg that the Dragon Sovereign from the Eternal Demon Abyss had given him!

The black dragon egg was covered with strange and mysterious runes that were slowly flickering; the dragon energy was being breathed in by the dragon egg.

"The dragon egg is absorbing the dragon energy here?"

Lin Ming was stunned.

In this map of 33 array diagrams, each array diagram had a complete God Beast skeleton sealed within.

These God Beasts were not ordinary God Beasts, but the most powerful kind of their bloodline! Since they died, numerous billions of years had passed, but beneath the nourishment of the Asura Road Master's array formation, their skeletons had yet to lose their vitality. In fact, beneath this array formation's revitalizing powers, they seemed to become increasingly strong, as if they were going revive at any moment.

These God Beast skeletons were top treasures, but because of the array formation, Lin Ming simply didn't want to touch them. However, he didn't think that the dragon egg within his inner world would use some strange and unknown method to swallow the dragon energy here.

Was it because they were both from the same race?

But, coming from the same race couldn't be the only reason, because Xiao Moxian was a phoenix descendant and yet she hadn't been able to absorb the energy of the God Beast in the last array diagram.

From this, Lin Ming could speculate that the Eternal Demon Abyss' Dragon Sovereign might share an extremely close relationship with the Black Dragon in this array diagram. There was even a chance that they were similar ancient variation species.

All sorts of thoughts flashed through Lin Ming's mind. He didn't hurry forwards, but instead sat down on this array diagram and began to meditate.

Slowly, the dragon energy gathering towards Lin Ming began to condense. Most of the dragon energy was absorbed by the dragon egg, but a small portion remained in Lin Ming's inner world where it fused with his body.

The traces of dragon energy were compatible with Lin Ming's meridians and blood vitality, joining with him and becoming a permanent part of his flesh and bloodline.

The black dragon energy blended together with the Azure Dragon bone, bringing great benefits to Lin Ming.

The Azure Dragon bone that Lin Ming absorbed before, although it had a rich blood energy within its thousand foot length, in truth lacked a trace of life force. After all, it was from a dragon skeleton and it was extremely different from a living Azure Dragon.

And now, the Black Dragon energy that Lin Ming absorbed was also absorbed from bones, it was no different from the energy of a living True Dragon.

Lin Ming could hear small popping sounds through his body as his mortal body rapidly strengthened.

Beside Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian also noticed this. She saw a massive amount of God Beast energy gathering into a vortex around Lin Ming and then disappearing from sight. Behind Lin Ming, the phantom of a Black Dragon appeared, clawing at the air.

"How could this be?"

Xiao Moxian was startled. Lin Ming could actually use the God Beast energy here?

At the first array diagram, Xiao Moxian had probed the phoenix energy there, but that was the energy of a Fire Phoenix, whereas Xiao Moxian was a Dark Phoenix descendant. The Fire Phoenix energy brought with it an insufferably arrogant aura that simply wouldn't submit to anyone.

At the second array diagram, the Black Dragon energy was also similar to the Fire Phoenix energy. But for some reason, Lin Ming was actually able to absorb it.

Time passed. Lin Ming closed his eyes in meditation, motionless. Xiao Moxian peacefully waited on the side. She was well aware that such a lucky chance could only be encountered through a stroke of fate.

The dragon energy within this array diagram was as vast as the endless sea, but the dragon egg within Lin Ming's inner world had yet to hatch, so the amount of energy it could absorb was limited.

After four hours passed, the dragon egg finally stopped absorbing the Black Dragon energy. At the same time, Lin Ming's mortal body had reached the saturation point of absorbing too much Black Dragon energy.

As his eyes opened, he clenched his fists, causing popping sounds all over his knuckles.

"My Eight Inner Hidden Gates has reached the limit of limits!"

A sharp light flashed through Lin Ming's eyes. He could feel that his body seemed to contain too much strength, as if it wanted to break through the shackles of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. However, some invisible rule was hindering this breakthrough.

"This is the Heavenly Dao rule that blocks the Eight Inner Hidden Gates..."

Lin Ming faintly frowned. It was impossible for him to break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace from just absorbing this dragon energy.

Within his inner world there was still the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence that he had yet to use. During his time in Primordius Heavenly Palace, he had only used a small portion of it.

Most of the essence had been saved for later. Once he gained enough accumulations, he would use it to break through the chains of the Heavenly Dao in a single try!

Lin Ming felt that this time was approaching. If Empyrean Primordius was able to break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, then he himself shouldn't have a problem. Although the Heavenly Dao placed shackles on him, that didn't mean there was no road to take.

When Lin Ming stood, the dragon energy on the array diagram seemed to be stirred up by him.

The Black Dragon phantom behind Lin Ming shot into the sky, making several circles before it flew back into Lin Ming's body and submerged into his inner world.

In that moment, within Xiao Moxian's eyes, Lin Ming's aura seemed to experience a great change.

At the start, Lin Ming's aura was swift and fierce, powerful like a divine spear. But now, while Lin Ming's aura was similar to how it was in the past, it included a faint pressure, the atmosphere of an emperor, making him seem like a king!

Not just that, but Lin Ming's body also had a strange yang energy, bringing with it a strange attraction for her.

Chapter 1498 – Breaking Through the Array Formation

Chapter 1498 – Breaking Through the Array Formation

…

…

…

“I never thought that before I entered the center of the array formation, I would coincidently experience such a lucky chance in this Nine Star array diagram and obtain such benefits.”

After inexplicably refining so much dragon energy here, the advantage Lin Ming obtained was far superior to even the Azure Dragon bone he absorbed in the past.

“Lin Ming, you aren’t from the dragon race, are you?” Xiao Moxian asked, her eyes wide. As she looked at Lin Ming, her expression was like she was seeing some ridiculous monster in front of her. She didn’t understand just how Lin Ming absorbed the dragon energy in the array diagram. She originally thought that Lin Ming had accomplished this due to his understandings of the array formation, but thinking about it more carefully, even if Lin Ming’s comprehension of the God Beast Tomb array diagram was extremely high, this dragon energy was simply too lawless and tyrannical. Unless one had energy that came from a similar origin, how could this dragon energy resign itself to fuse with a mere human like Lin Ming?

“Dragon race?” Lin Ming froze for a moment, quietly rubbing his nose.

“That’s right. I’ve always felt a faint dragon aura from your body. Although it usually isn’t too intense, I clearly felt it just now. You likely have a dragon bloodline within your body, moreover it is a royal dragon bloodline. Perhaps it might even be some ancient variation dragon species!”

Xiao Moxian felt more and more that what she was saying made sense. The dragon aura she felt was in truth the aura of the Eternal Demon Abyss’ dragon egg.

Lin Ming smiled. “I’m not related much to the dragon race. I’m merely an ordinary human.”

“Perhaps you’re unaware… there are some ancient variation bloodlines that have gone deep into a hidden slumber after spreading down and being diluted for so long. If there isn’t some particular circumstance, they won’t awaken.” Xiao Moxian tilted her head, trying her best to figure out the situation.

Lin Ming didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry. Xiao Moxian’s imagination was far too rich.

“You’re thinking about it too much. Let’s cross through this Nine Star array first!”

At the start, Lin Ming didn’t have full confidence he could pass through the Nine Star dao diagram. But after absorbing the dragon energy just now, the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace became increasingly clear to him. At this time, crossing this Nine Star dao diagram shouldn’t be a problem at all.

Together with Xiao Moxian, he stepped deeper into the array diagram. In the skies above the dao diagram here, nine stars floated in the air!

The beautiful starlight fell down like a waterfall of mercury threads, forming nine Dao Palaces atop the array diagram.

“Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!”

Lin Ming took a deep breath. Ever since he started training in the body transformation technique, the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had been his goal. This was an extremely mysterious boundary, but today, atop this dao diagram, he was able to see the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace in their glory. This left him feeling ecstatic, like the clouds parting before the morning sun.

The nine Dao Palaces were suspended in the air like divine watchtowers, incomparably mystical.

Lin Ming revolved all the astral essence within his body and grabbed onto Xiao Moxian's hand. Xiao Moxian was already expecting this would happen. She silently grasped Lin Ming's hand in return and followed behind him.

Like this, the two of them stepped into the first Dao Palace – the Purple Temple Dao Palace!

The Purple Temple was in truth a part of a person's dantian. When a martial artist entered the Divine Sea realm, their dantian would be replaced by an inner world, and thus the Purple Temple would also be located within the inner world.

The first level of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was to form a Dao Palace in one's inner world to correspond with a star in the sky.

The moment that Lin Ming stepped into the Purple Temple Dao Palace, he once more began to form array diagrams around himself.

The previous array diagrams Lin Ming formed had belonged to the essence gathering system. But this time, they were of the body transformation system. The patterns atop these array diagrams flowed around like blood vessels, emitting a strong blood vitality.

Within this Dao Palace, starlight flooded every nook and cranny. This starlight seemed beautiful and majestic, but it was also thick with killing intent. If one took a single wrong step they would actually suffer a gruesome death.

Lin Ming closed his eyes and used his own blood vitality to feel the patterns all around him. “Follow me, and don’t take a single step out. Follow my exact footsteps.”

Lin Ming whispered. Xiao Moxian firmly nodded.

The air was thick with killing intent. Every step Lin Ming took followed the Nine Star Laws. Every time he stepped forwards, a star seemed to glisten beneath his foot before dying out.

Faintly, as Lin Ming walked through the corridors of the Dao Palace, he could feel his own inner world heating up to a blazing degree. This was the exact position that corresponded to the Purple Temple Dao Palace.

In that moment, starlight gathered in Lin Ming’s inner world. This silver light flowed around, seeming as if it would condense into a divine palace.

Lin Ming glanced over at Xiao Moxian. She had an expression that was completely focused on following his steps, and clearly wasn’t experiencing a similar reaction.

“The nine Dao Palaces correspond to places on my body and are stirring up a reaction. This should be because an elementary form of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace has appeared within my body…”

Lin Ming thought to himself. This wasn’t surprising at all. He had already seen the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace several times, so his body forming its own elementary version of it should be a normal matter.

Lin Ming used four hours to smoothly pass through the Purple Temple Dao Palace. Then, he stepped into the second Dao Palace – Heaven’s Eye Dao Palace.

Heaven’s Eye Dao Palace was located between a person’s eyebrows and was considered the eye of their mind, able to see through all illusions and deceit. When Lin Ming stepped into this Dao Palace, he felt a similar burning heat between his eyebrows.

Lin Ming couldn't help but slow down his pace and focus on perceiving how this Dao Palace corresponded to his own body.

After spending four hours in this Dao Palace, he finally remembered the feeling of the Heaven's Eye Dao Palace and continued out of it.

Like this, Lin Ming spent around four hours in each Dao Palace, for a total of 36 hours. In other words, he used up a day and a half of time to pass through the Nine Star dao diagram.

This dao diagram that Lin Ming just crossed was not as much of a test as it was a lucky chance. Disregarding the God Beast energy he absorbed, just being able to faintly experience the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had given him significant benefits.

"Now, onto the last dao diagram..."

At this time, of the 33 dao diagrams, Lin Ming had passed through the outer circle and the middle circle. Once he passed through the last level of dao diagrams, he would reach the eye of the God Beast Tomb array formation.

"Let's rest up before continuing."

Since they started rushing through the God Beast Tomb, six or seven days had passed. Xiao Moxian was more or less fine, but Lin Ming had greatly exhausted his mental fortitude.

"Alright." Xiao Moxian intelligently nodded. She had been following Lin Ming through this death zone so she was already used to following his orders here.

Six hours later, Lin Ming opened his eyes from meditation. The third dao diagram he chose was... Soul Forging – Dreamland.

Stepping into this array diagram, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian felt as if they stepped into a blood red world.

Here, the skies were deep red and covered with dark red clouds, seeming as if they would bleed at any moment. The ground flowed with flaming lava and the smell of sulfur overwhelmed the senses.

“It’s quite hot here…”

After entering this world, Xiao Moxian felt as if she were being roasted alive by the flames around her. Her clothes were hot to the point that they could spontaneously combust and the air she breathed in and out was like fire.

This was extremely strange, because as a descendant of a phoenix, she shouldn’t fear any sort of burning heat.

“Mm!?” Xiao Moxian’s heart chilled. Not too far away she could see a red scorpion covered with flames. This scorpion emitted an extremely terrifying aura, even surpassing that of a half-step Empyrean!

The moment that Xiao Moxian saw this scorpion, the scorpion also saw Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming. The scorpion cried out loud and then hurtled towards them.

“Lin Ming!” Xiao Moxian’s pupils shrank. This fire scorpion was formed from the demonic power all around them. It absolutely wasn’t something they could contend with at their current cultivation level!

As Lin Ming saw this fire scorpion that possessed strength near an Empyrean come rushing towards them, he remained calm. He only moved to take hold of Xiao Moxian’s arm and move her behind him. “Don’t move. Hold your breath. In this array diagram, everything we see is a dream. That fire scorpion in front of us is nothing more than a lie, an illusion!”

Lin Ming’s sound transmission echoed in Xiao Moxian’s mind, leaving her stunned. “Illusion!?”

In her sense, this scorpion couldn't be any more real. It was exactly similar to the Asura phantoms she encountered before which had been formed from demonic power, and yet this fire scorpion was only an illusion?

Although she felt this to be unbelievable in her heart, she couldn't help but trust Lin Ming's words. She held her breath as she saw that suppressive fire scorpion hurtling towards her.

Ho - !

With a gust of wind, that half-step Empyrean fire scorpion suddenly vanished, as if it never existed at all.

"This is the dream world. Within this dream, everything you believe to be true will be true, and everything you believe to be false will be false. After you awake from this dream, everything will become nothing, but if you cannot awaken then you will be trapped in this dream forever."

Lin Ming said with a sound transmission. In this Dreamland dao diagram, if one were to fall into the dreamland they would never be able to leave.

"Follow me and don't take a single wrong step. No matter what you see around you, don't believe in it."

Lin Ming said without glancing back. All around him, array diagrams began to form once more. These array diagrams were formed from spirit essence and there were also 33 of them. In these last seven years, these array diagrams were the most important things that Lin Ming had perceived from the emperor jade. Only with the ability to form these did he dare to rush into the God Beast Tomb.

The two of them marched forwards in sync with each other. The route that Lin Ming took was extremely strange. Sometimes he went right, sometimes he went left, sometimes he stepped backwards and Xiao Moxian would blindly follow him no matter what.

During this time, all sorts of strange and fantastical scenes constantly appeared, as if they were stuck in a hell of flames.

Soon, they arrived at an eternal paradise.

Streams trickled and dappled sunlight shimmered across endless fields. Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian stepped over soft and lush grass, their senses filled with the scent of flowers.

As they walked through, they would occasionally see fish leaping out from lakes and cranes holding lingzhi in their beaks – a perfect utopia.

But Xiao Moxian had done as Lin Ming said and had emptied her mind of all needless thoughts. She was a proud daughter of heaven, and for the last seven years she had trained in the soul forging arts with Empyrean Divine Mist. In terms of soul force and sense, she wasn't much different from Lin Ming.

Although she didn't know anything about the God Beast Tomb's great array formation, as long as Lin Ming told her to take notice and do something necessary she would perform the task perfectly.

It had to be known that this was a dao diagram laid down by the Asura Road Master. To guard one's mind here wasn't easy at all. Even if one clearly knew that what they were seeing was an illusion, they still couldn't help but unconsciously be caught within it.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian experienced countless illusions and mirages within this Dreamland array diagram. Even so, they remained unmoved, their minds and hearts maintaining their pure brightness.

Under Lin Ming's lead, the two of them avoided all the killing intents within the array diagram. It was unknown just how long had passed. Several months, several years, or perhaps only an instant, but at this time Lin Ming suddenly let out a long breath and a small smile bloomed on his tense face.

“We’ve arrived. This is the eye of the God Beast Tomb array formation.”

Chapter 1499 – Ancient Bronze Temple

Chapter 1499 – Ancient Bronze Temple

…

…

…

After laboring for seven years and putting in great effort every day, the moment Lin Ming waited for had finally arrived.

He had truly walked through the God Beast Tomb array formation and had arrived in this place that no one had ever been to!

“Where are we?”

Xiao Moxian asked, surprised. Even so, when Lin Ming broke through the first dao diagram, she had a premonition that he would really be able to break past this God Beast Tomb array formation and even lead her out of this dangerous land.

However, upon actually arriving at the core of the God Beast Tomb array formation, Xiao Moxian felt as if she were living a dream.

The God Beast Tomb array formation’s array heart was filled with mysteries. Ever since Tragic Death Valley had existed, countless martial artists had perished here, and yet none of them were ever able to step foot into the eye of the God Beast Tomb array formation.

As the illusions of the Dreamland array diagram vanished, the final three dao diagrams revealed themselves in front of Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian.

These three dao diagrams were arranged in a triangle, each one a thousand miles wide. These dao diagrams were filled with countless intricate patterns, but none of them had any energy flowing through them. Rather, there was nothing but a deathly silence.

There were no God Beast skeletons stabilizing the dao diagrams. They were like Lin Ming had thought – empty.

And, in the center of these three vast dao diagrams, floating in space was a magnificent ancient bronze temple!

This bronze temple was as large as a mountain. As it floated in the endless darkness it emanated the aura of mystery and the atmosphere of endless years.

“Let’s go over. There shouldn’t be any dangers…”

Lin Ming grasped Xiao Moxian’s hand and the two of them flew towards the bronze temple together.

Their speed was extremely slow. The distance of thousands of miles took a full two hours to cross.

As they approached the bronze temple, they were able to deeply feel just how grand and wondrous it was.

Standing before it, Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming could feel a terrifying demonic power originating from the temple. It seemed that all the demonic power from before had surged out from this bronze temple.

“How do we enter?”

Xiao Moxian looked at the great gate of the bronze temple. This gate was thousands of feet high and appeared extremely heavy, sending out a boundless aura. It was like the most source Great Dao of the universe was sealed behind this gate, and after opening it one would experience a baptism of the Great Dao.

Lin Ming remained silent. As he stood before the gate he could feel the ancient jade within his inner world grow increasingly hot. With a wave of his hand the ancient jade appeared in his palm. Then, grasping the ancient jade, he pressed it onto the gate.

If he wasn't wrong, then the ancient jade itself was the key to this gate.

Like this, the ancient jade that was the size of a baby's palm sank itself into the gate.

"What are you doing?" Xiao Moxian asked.

"Opening the gate." Lin Ming simply responded. However, he frowned. This ancient bronze door didn't move nor were there any changes.

In that moment he thought he had made a mistake. But, after waiting for several breaths of time, Lin Ming heard a loud rumbling sound like thunder as the thousands of feet high gate, a gate that was as heavy as a planet, began to slowly open!

This ancient bronze gate opened at an extremely slow speed, but there wasn't any strength that could prevent it from opening.

As the two sides of the gate gradually separated, Xiao Moxian felt as if a world was being created in front of her and those two sides of the gate were the heavens and earth.

As the gate opened, the aura of the boundless Great Dao surged outwards. The scene within the mysterious ancient bronze temple also revealed itself to Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian!

Xiao Moxian couldn't help but open her mouth in shock. Traces of excitement, awe, and fear percolated in her heart.

This ancient bronze temple lay at the center of Tragic Death Valley's God Beast Tomb array formation. No one had stepped in here for billions upon billions of years; just what could be inside?

Lin Ming held Xiao Moxian's hand, a serious expression on his face as he said, "Follow me."

Like this, the two of them stepped past the front gates.

The ancient bronze temple was spacious. Everything within was large to the point of shocking others. The columns were thick enough that it would take hundreds of people holding hands to wrap around it. Grandiose murals covered the walls and the tiles were as thick as tomes. Everything here seemed solemn and dignified, exuding the presence of an emperor.

The great hall was quiet without the least bit of sound. Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian could clearly hear their own beating hearts as well as the echoing of their footsteps.

At this time, the whistling sound of beating flames resonated in the hall.

Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming were startled. In the next moment, they saw torches light up on both sides all around them, blazing like miniature suns and illuminating the interior of the bronze palace as if it were daytime.

Then, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were finally able to clearly see everything within the hall.

This hall was broad enough to hold a vast army. All around it were sculptures of different kinds.

Some sculptures were fierce, some sculptures were peaceful, some sculptures illustrated martial artists of different races, and some sculptures emulated flowers and trees. However, most of the sculptures were of... God Beasts!

Just walking down the hall, Lin Ming could see hundreds and thousands of God Beast sculptures surrounding him. These God Beast sculptures were all lifelike, and all of them were ancient variation species, types that even Xiao Moxian had never even heard of before.

As they reached the end of this hall, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian crossed through a corridor and entered into a second grand hall.

This grand hall was much smaller than the previous one. The most prominent object in this hall was a towering bronze tablet. This bronze tablet was 99 feet tall, 13 feet thick, and appeared extremely heavy. The surface of the tablet was as smooth as glass, without a single character carved into it.

And beneath this bronze tablet was an ancient bronze coffin. This ancient bronze coffin was wrapped in thick chains, seeming as if they locked in the coffin. Lin Ming looked closer and could see that the materials used to craft these chains were heavenly materials that could only be encountered through a stroke of fate. If an Empyrean level refiner were to obtain just a little bit of these materials, they could be happy for the rest of their life.

“Bronze tablet, ancient coffin… could this be a grave?”

This was Xiao Moxian’s first thought. If it really was a grave, then the person most likely to be within the ancient bronze coffin should be the Asura Road Master!

Although the Asura Road Master was powerful beyond comparison, he was a character who existed billions or tens of billions of years ago. The most likely scenario was that he had died. If he were to die and bury himself in this bronze temple and also establish the God Beast Tomb array formation to protect his resting place, then all of that was reasonable.

“Could it be that… Tragic Death Valley is a grave that the Asura Road Master constructed for himself!?”

Xiao Moxian suddenly blurted out loud. She couldn’t help but feel faint at heart. No one wished for their grave to be disturbed by others. If a grave was truly the Asura Road Master’s goal when he created Tragic Death Valley, then it was natural for everyone who entered to have died. But, she and Lin Ming had arrived at this step and had even seen the Asura Road Master’s coffin. This was really… a disgraceful crime beyond all morals.

“You’re mistaken.” Lin Ming shook his head from beside Xiao Moxian. The Asura Road Master had clearly left the emperor jade behind as the key to opening the God Beast Tomb array formation. Of course, even if one were to obtain the emperor jade, wanting to open the God Beast Tomb array formation was beyond difficult!

The requirements for the person opening the God Beast Tomb array formation were that they needed a solid foundation, bizarrely outstanding perception, and they also needed to cultivate essence, energy, and divine.

Lin Ming pointed towards the bronze tablet and said to Xiao Moxian, “This bronze tablet looks like a table but the truth is that it’s a book, an ancient book cast from bronze.”

“Book?” Xiao Moxian was dumbfounded. After she probed with her sense, she discovered that it was indeed a thick ancient book.

From the front, this ancient bronze book that stood up on the ground was no different from a bronze tablet.

“So this is a book. I wonder what is written inside, and just what is in that coffin?”

Lin Ming shook his head, “I don’t know what is in that coffin, but what I’m sure of is that the Asura Road Master’s remains aren’t interred within it.”

Lin Ming had reasons for his speculations. The Asura Road Master was an unfathomable existence. Even if he had already died and was resting forever within that ancient coffin, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian would still feel an impossibly terrifying pressure standing in front of the ancient coffin; there was no way they could stand there with such relaxedness. Moreover, Lin Ming believed that if the Asura Road Master chose to leave behind his inheritance before he died, he wouldn’t choose his own grave as the spot and have countless trial challengers come thronging here to disturb his resting place.

“Can I open it?” Xiao Moxian pointed towards the ancient bronze book. Here, she had to be careful with every movement she made. If she accidently touched something that had some spell on it, she might bring a fatal catastrophe upon herself.

Lin Ming closed his eyes and investigated with his sense. In truth, after they broke past the God Beast Tomb array formation, that should have been considered as passing the test. Thus, there shouldn't be any dangers in the bronze temple.

"You can." Lin Ming replied.

"That's great!" Xiao Moxian excitedly said. She rubbed her hands together, looking somewhat impatient.

After coming all this way and being on the verge of seeing the final secrets within Tragic Death Valley, of course she was excited.

Moreover, she might be the first person in all these years to open the ancient bronze book and see the secrets within. As she thought of this, she had a very high sense of achievement.

She cheerfully hopped over to the front of the ancient book. Then, her two hands grasped the cover of the ancient book and she made an effort to pull it back. However, as she tried to open the cover, she simply couldn't move it at all. It was like this ancient book was a metal statue, not moving no matter how much Xiao Moxian tried.

Xiao Moxian didn't believe in superstitions. She pulled up her sleeves, bit down on her lips, and then pulled with all her strength, grunting, "Open up!"

Xiao Moxian's shout was loud and clear, but the ancient book simply didn't care how much effort she was using. It remained unmoving as before.

"Argh! Is this a joke? We've come this far but there's still a spell on this book, how exasperating is that!" Xiao Moxian indignantly huffed.

In her opinion, the previous tests were more than enough. In the countless years since Tragic Death Valley was created, no one besides that freakish fellow Lin Ming was able to pass the trial, so why was there a need to add another unnecessary sealing spell on the book?

As Lin Ming saw this, he couldn't hold back a smile. He walked forwards and reached out to release the buckle on the book cover. With an amused expression on his face he said, "There is no spell, it's just that the cover was fastened down. You only needed to undo the metal buckle."

"Uh..." Xiao Moxian looked at the buckle on the side of the ancient book and gulped down like she had swallowed an egg. She blushed red as she was filled with embarrassment. She awkwardly said, "Why didn't you say so earlier..."

Chapter 1500 – Essence Spirit Embryo Stone

Chapter 1500 – Essence Spirit Embryo Stone

…

…

…

Seeing Lin Ming continuing to laugh, Xiao Moxian ground her teeth together and fiercely pinched Lin Ming's waist. "If you already saw it then you should have reminded me. Were you waiting for me to make a joke of myself?"

Although Xiao Moxian pinched quite hard, she hadn't used any true essence. Lin Ming's mortal body was extremely durable so not only did he not feel any pain from her pinching him but it actually felt quite comfortable. Because they had finally broken past the God Beast Tomb array formation, Lin Ming was in an extremely good mood. He smiled and said, "I just thought that you looked quite cute when you puffed your cheeks trying to open the book so I couldn't help but tease you a little."

After hearing Lin Ming's words, Xiao Moxian scoffed and then turned away, her cheeks turning red as she said, "I didn't think you were such a naughty boy before."

"Alright, alright, I was wrong. Let's not argue, we have important matters to attend to first." Lin Ming moved away Xiao Moxian's hands that were still pinching his waist, his complexion turning serious. Everything in this hall had been left behind by the Asura Road Master and was extremely important; they naturally couldn't treat it lightly.

Lin Ming solemnly opened the ancient bronze book.

On the title page of the ancient book were large characters that said – Asura Sutra: Volume One!

These characters were ten square feet each. The brush strokes were simple and plain yet containing a sublime beauty like a painting.

“This is the main body of the Asura Sutra…”

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. Before now, he had only seen the general outline of the Asura Sutra on the Emperor Stone. That general outline had no cultivation method and could only be used to guide one towards the Great Dao; it simply wasn’t able to be used to contend with opponents.

But now, Lin Ming was staring at the main body of the Asura Sutra.

If the Asura Road Master had left behind this ancient bronze book, it was reasonable that he would carve the main text of the Asura Sutra within it!

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian looked at each other, each one seeing the shock in the other’s eyes. This sort of stunning text might even contain the secrets to becoming a True Divinity.

Lin Ming flipped the page of the ancient book. On the second page, the first few words were –

“If the Heavens have a path, then I shall follow the Heavenly Dao. If the Heavens have no path, then I shall stand for the Heavens!”

These words contained an unyielding strength as if they were rushing out, howling through the universe!

Disregarding these brush strokes that looked like they were floating Azure Dragons, just the boldness of these words caused one to feel infinite shock.

‘If the Heavens have no path then I shall stand for the Heavens!’ Although these words seemed to be the babblings of a lunatic, the Asura Road Master had actually managed to accomplish this.

The great world of the Asura Road was the Heaven created by the Asura Road Master!

"What is the 'path' that these words are referring to?" Lin Ming carefully thought, savoring these words. When mortals said the heavens had no path, the truth was that they meant the Heavenly Dao was uncaring and merciless.

But, when martial artists referred to the 'path', they were actually referring to the Heavenly Dao. It was possible that the Asura Road Master was referring to the Heavenly Dao rules. If the Heavenly Dao rules didn't abide his existence then he would simply break through the Heavenly Dao rules and stand in the Heavens' place.

Below this were more obscure passages. Beneath these passages were traces that seemed to represent the highest truths of the Great Dao, making one's mind feel filled with a dusky haze and making the writings difficult to read and understand. It was as if these passages were like demonic curses, whispering to the mind.

"The text of the Asura Sutra also contains that terrifying demonic power!"

Xiao Moxian was gifted with an extraordinary perception, but even she felt it was straining her mind to read the main text of the Asura Sutra. Disregarding understanding it, just looking at it required her to consume a massive amount of energy to resist the mental attack of that demonic power.

Lin Ming said, "The Asura Road Master likely leaned towards the demonic path to begin with. You can see this with his name being 'Asura'."

In Lin Ming's impression, the Asura Road Master was not some kindly and merciful individual. Just the Asura Road he formed was filled with incomparably tragic and cruel rules. In these last 10 billion years, the Asura Road had been filled with slaughter. This was the same for Tragic Death Valley and God Burying Ridge, where countless martial artists had perished!

As Lin Ming looked at the Asura Sutra, he felt a stabbing pain in his eyes. Only by enduring this feeling could he continue to read.

All martial artists of the Nine Divine Shifts had a near photographic memory. And, Lin Ming was far superior in this aspect compared to other martial artists. Not to mention remembering words, he could even remember complex dao patterns.

However, Lin Ming had a great deal of trouble remembering this Asura Sutra. He had to look through it several times to barely recall what he saw.

Beside Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian's speed of memorizing was even slower.

After all, Lin Ming had been perceiving the dao patterns within the emperor jade for all this time, but Xiao Moxian had to start from scratch.

"Don't worry, we can take our time."

Lin Ming took several deep breaths and rubbed his pained eyes. Then, he sat down in front of the Asura Sutra.

He had plenty of time. There was no need to be in a hurry.

Like this, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian slowly continued reading. They used a whole seven days before they roughly read through the Asura Sutra.

After reading through it, Lin Ming was enlightened. At the very least, he understood what type of cultivation method the Asura Sutra was.

The Asura Sutra that the Asura Road Master created focused on inner and outer cultivation.

Inner cultivation meant to cultivate oneself.

Outer cultivation meant to cultivate an avatar!

The Asura Sutra had a total of three volumes, divided into essence, energy, and divine. Each volume focused on both inner cultivation of oneself and outer cultivation of an avatar.

When the Asura Sutra was cultivated to the limit, one could fuse one's own essence, energy, and divine as one, and then also fuse in three avatars. At that time, one could achieve an unbelievable boundary.

But what Lin Ming saw now was only the first volume of the Asura Sutra, the path of cultivating the mortal body. At the same time as one cultivated their body, they also had to cultivate an essence energy avatar. And, this essence energy avatar had to be formed using one's own blood energy or created using some miraculous treasures of the heavens and earth.

The disadvantage of the first option was that it would cause one's blood vitality to drop. After refining an avatar, there would be a long time during which one's cultivation and strength wouldn't rise, but fall instead.

As for the disadvantage of the second option, it was far too difficult to find some miraculous treasures of the heavens and earth. Those sorts of treasures could only be found through a stroke of fate. Moreover, even if someone managed to obtain one, wanting to refine it into an avatar was beyond difficult.

And at the end of the Asura Sutra, the Asura Road Master had left behind a postscript that left Lin Ming shocked. When the Asura Road Master finished creating the Asura Sutra, he had obtained the perfect material to form an essence energy avatar – an Essence Spirit Embryo Stone.

This Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was a sacred spirit born within a stone.

A divine stone, after absorbing heaven and earth origin energy as well as the essence of the sun and moon for countless billions of years, would gather all of this origin energy together, slowly condensing into a human form. Once this sacred spirit shattered through the stone and was born, its talent would be at the highest extreme and its strength would be amazing. Its martial aptitude would even surpass that of a God Beast!

In the legends, there was an ancient supreme elder that had leapt forth from this type of stone. Afterwards, they became a True Divinity and performed great deeds of good fortune.

However, this sort of thing was far too rare. It could only be discovered and not sought. The conditions for forming an Essence Spirit Embryo Stone were far too harsh and the time requirements far too long.

First of all, the stone had to be a god stone. Next, the environment had to be one where heaven and earth origin energy gathered at terrifying degrees. In this situation, countless lucky chances had to coincide over a period of billions or even tens of billions of years before it could finally form.

It wasn't strange for a single Essence Spirit Embryo Stone to experience several great calamities of the universe!

No one could raise an Essence Spirit Embryo Stone. Not even a True Divinity could do so if they spent billions of years of their life.

The Asura Road Master was no exception to this. Moreover, by the time he obtained the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone he had already cultivated his essence, energy, and divine avatars, thus he no longer needed it.

However, the Asura Road Master had done something which left Lin Ming shocked.

He had arranged a dao field and then had placed the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone that had taken billions or even tens of billions of years to breed within it. Then, the Asura Road Master had laid down a time enchantment within the dao field, speeding up the flow of time to a 10:1 ratio. Afterwards, the Asura Road Master had used skeletons of some dead God Beasts as materials to create an essence energy array formation in order to supply the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone with the required energy as well as power the revolution of the dao field.

After tens of billions of years had passed, a true sacred spirit would be bred.

As Lin Ming read this, he suddenly became aware.

The dao field that the Asura Road Master laid down was God Burying Ridge.

That 10:1 time enchantment he created was Tragic Death Valley.

As for that essence energy array formation, that was the God Beast Tomb.

The existence of Tragic Death Valley was an inheritance left behind by the Asura Road Master. The reason that the Asura Sutra was left here was all in order to nurture the birth of this spirit essence stone.

Lin Ming was shocked as he thought of this. Just what sort of heaven-shaking methods were these? The Asura Road Master was far too powerful to put into words!

"So this is the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone..."

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred and his eyes shifted to the ancient bronze coffin just 30 feet away.

The ancient bronze coffin was wrapped in dark chains.

And sealed within this ancient coffin, was it the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone?

Chapter 1501 – Opening the Coffin

Chapter 1501 – Opening the Coffin

…

…

…

"Lin Ming, you think that the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone is sealed within the coffin?" Xiao Moxian immediately knew what Lin Ming was thinking from the light in his eyes.

"It really might be so."

Lin Ming walked near to the ancient bronze coffin. This coffin had lain here for countless years and the surface of it was covered with carved images. These images included fierce Asura demons, ancient vicious beasts, and even martial artists of other races.

Thick chains wrapped around this coffin, and every chain buckle was covered with runes. Because too much time had passed, the divine iron that formed the ancient coffin and chains was stained with rust, filled with an atmosphere that seemed to come from the deepest depths of time.

Through the crevices in these iron chains, Lin Ming could see the scenes on the ancient coffin. There were Asura demons eating humans and even humans burning demons as a sacrifice to Asuras.

There were also ancient vicious beasts ripping apart people to shreds as well as people striking vicious beasts and drinking their blood.

In short, all of these scenes were filled with a tyrannical, brutal, and cruel feeling. Looking at them caused killing intent to surge in the heart, as if it would erupt at any moment.

Lin Ming squatted down near the ancient bronze coffin. The coffin was as wide and tall as the book, appearing extremely heavy. The coffin lid and coffin body seemed cast together, without the slightest gap separating them.

“This ancient bronze coffin also exudes demonic power…” Lin Ming’s eyes sharpened. The demonic tide that occasionally erupted in Tragic Death Valley was related to the first volume of the Asura Sutra, but a part of it also came from this ancient bronze coffin!

“If we open it will something ominous happen?” Xiao Moxian weakly said as she saw all the violent carvings atop the coffin. Tragic Death Valley had existed for billions of years, and with the time enchantment here, dozens of billions of years had passed. For such a long time, this ancient bronze coffin had existed within the center of the God Beast Tomb array formation. It was hard to imagine just how much essence energy was absorbed here and what it could have been breeding.

It had to be known that the things in Tragic Death Valley could easily kill a World King. If this Essence Spirit Embryo Stone had already taken form then the terrifying strength it possessed was something neither she nor Lin Ming could deal with.

“Lin Ming, do you think that these chains are locking in the embryo stone to prevent it from breaking out of the coffin?” Xiao Moxian suddenly asked. Lin Ming was silent for a moment. There was indeed a great risk if they opened up the ancient coffin, especially when he still knew so little about the Asura Sutra’s first volume.

“Maybe. But no matter what happens if I open the ancient coffin, I will still open it. Still, I must fully perceive the Asura Sutra first.”

Lin Ming would certainly open the ancient coffin. In order to arrive here he had to take numerous risks and complete something that countless ancient heroes had never done before. Now, he would soon obtain the Asura Road Master’s inheritance. If anyone were to tell him to give up here then that would simply be a joke.

All Lin Ming could do now was to thoroughly perceive the Asura Sutra to reduce the risk to the smallest level possible.

Like this, Lin Ming sat in meditation in front of the Asura Sutra and assiduously enlightened himself upon it.

As for Xiao Moxian, she also accompanied Lin Ming in meditating on the Asura Sutra together. Of course, in terms of comprehending the Asura Sutra, Lin Ming was naturally faster than she was.

Thus, if Xiao Moxian were to run into any questions of spots she found difficult to understand, she was able to consult Lin Ming.

Slowly, Xiao Moxian also gained a deep understanding of the Asura Sutra. Her perception was extraordinary to begin with, and in addition to Lin Ming's guidance, her rate of growth slowly rose. This caused Lin Ming to praise her without end. In terms of perception alone, she indeed surpassed him.

Training passed without sense of time. Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian sat in meditation within this hall every day. Like this, a full year passed them by.

Whether it was Lin Ming or Xiao Moxian, the foundation of their mortal bodies was outstanding. And, the Asura Sutra First Volume revolved around cultivating the mortal body. The Asura Sutra cultivated essence, energy, and divine. The main difference from other cultivation methods was that when the Asura Sutra was cultivated to the extreme, a martial artist could gather essence, energy, and divine unto themselves and then reach an inconceivable boundary.

However, every positive had a negative. Although the Asura Sutra was a cultivation method that pointed towards the peak of all martial arts, the route it took to get there was extremely time intensive. It required a massive accumulation of time, on the magnitude of millions of years, in order to show its true strength.

The days of seclusion were boring and dry. As Lin Ming meditated, he often exchanged information and insights. At the start, it was him helping Xiao Moxian. But afterwards, Xiao Moxian provided him with many unique thoughts and inspirations.

Due to the limit of their cultivation it was impossible for them to cultivate the Asura Sutra First Volume to the limit. Even so, the two of them fully carved the Asura Sutra First Volume deep into their hearts. Now, even if they lost the ancient bronze book they could still recall the Asura Sutra in full detail, including the various Concepts and textures and feelings of the runes.

Another half year passed. Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian combined everything they understood into one. At this point, they had already spent a total of nine years in Tragic Death Valley.

In these nine years, Lin Ming's cultivation had made considerable progress, in particular, the last half year in which he was perceiving the Asura Sutra First Volume. He was only half a step from reaching the Divine Lord realm.

"I see. So this is the original appearance of the God Burying Ridge's dao field..."

After perceiving the Asura Sutra First Volume, Lin Ming recalled the traces of the dao field that were carved within the emperor jade. Many things he couldn't understand before had suddenly become clear to him.

Now, if Lin Ming were to leave Tragic Death Valley and explore God Burying Ridge, he could rely on his understanding of the Asura Sutra to wander about with absolute freedom and safety, even with his eyes closed.

"God Burying Ridge is divided into death roads and life roads. When life roads reach the extreme, mortals can safely enter and exit. When death roads reach the extreme, even World Kings will perish. And of God Burying Ridge's extreme death roads, there are a total of seven spots."

Lin Ming murmured to himself. The so-called guides of God Burying Ridge were the product of the countless experiences and knowledge accumulated by their seniors. These people had tested the many death roads until they had found the one life road into God Burying Ridge. They simply didn't understand the true principles that lay behind the God Burying Ridge's dao field, and had simply relied on their own empirical methods of testing to find a way to avoid danger. This was why being a God Burying Ridge guide was such a dangerous occupation, one that always teetered on a knife's edge.

Then, Lin Ming's eyes flashed open from his meditation. He stood up and walked towards the ancient bronze coffin.

Xiao Moxian's thoughts stirred. "Lin Ming, are you planning to open the coffin now?"

During these past days, she and Lin Ming had reached a bottleneck in their understanding of the Asura Sutra. This was the limit placed upon them by their cultivation level and broadness of their horizons. Until they became stronger, it would be hard to experience another breakthrough.

When a martial artist cultivated the martial path, it was impossible for them to go into seclusion and directly leap up several large boundaries. They had to constantly adventure and gain more experiences, and then realize new things from these experiences. They had to constantly fight in order to temper themselves. If they were to go into seclusion for all their life, not only would that weaken a martial artist's true combat strength, but it would cause their comprehension of Laws and cultivation methods to stagnate.

"Now is as good a time as any." Lin Ming nodded his head. "We've been in Tragic Death Valley for nine years now. We've done everything that we can and have reached the limit of what we can accomplish here. It's about time that we think of leaving this valley, but before we go I must open this coffin."

Lin Ming took out the emperor jade from his inner world. Then, he held the emperor jade in his hand as he prepared himself to open the ancient bronze coffin. The risks were unknown and it was impossible to know just what would come out from the ancient coffin. It might be an unrivalled treasure but it also might be a life-reaping killing intent!

With the emperor jade in hand, Lin Ming felt things would be much safer. Thinking about it, the Asura Road Master shouldn't have deliberately left a killing trap here for his future inheritors to open. That would simply be too great of a joke.

Because too much time had passed, the chains on the ancient coffin had melded together with it. Lin Ming took a deep breath, linking his hands together and forming hundreds of seals, each seal resonating with the runes on the chains.

In that instant, the runes on the chains began to shimmer one at a time. The entire hall was illuminated with a dazzling light. With a light popping sound, all of the chains fell apart.

Lin Ming pressed his hands on the coffin and glanced at Xiao Moxian. "Do you plan on staying here?"

Lin Ming cautioned her. He was afraid that if some evil being really did emerge, then Xiao Moxian would suffer a gruesome fate like he would. But if she left earlier then she would be able to survive.

Xiao Moxian chuckled, indifferently saying, "At this time do you really think I would change my mind? Hey, if I'm here maybe I'll be the one saving your life."

Xiao Moxian wasn't bragging. In terms of overall strength, although she was inferior to Lin Ming, she wasn't too far off. If Lin Ming encountered some danger then with Xiao Moxian here he would have a much higher chance of surviving.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. He didn't bother speaking any more. His fingers suddenly grasped down and gripped two corners of the ancient coffin.

With a loud shout, crackling sounds emitted from all over his body. The Heretical God Force erupted, the Eight Inner Hidden Gates opened, and from behind Lin Ming the phantom of a True Dragon appeared!

At this time, he bent down, focusing his strength into his waist. His spine curved like a taut bow as all his strength passed into his arms. A power equal to nearly a billion jins of strength suddenly broke out!

Rumble rumble rumble!

The ancient bronze coffin that had lain here for 100 billion years was shoved open by Lin Ming!

In that moment, it seemed as if what Lin Ming pushed open was not the lid of a coffin but a door leading to another world!

Ka ka ka ka!

The entire bronze temple shook. The ground trembled. With loud rustling sound, a beam of light descended from high above, shining atop the Asura Sutra. Countless runes of the Great Dao swirled about, gathering together in a purple kaleidoscope to form a door of light!

“This is… a portal!?”

Xiao Moxian held her breath. For a door of light to suddenly appear, seeming as if another world was behind it, this should be a portal!

Did this portal lead to the outside?

Xiao Moxian couldn’t help but think this, a sense of excitement rising in her mind.

She had already stayed in the absolute darkness of Tragic Death Valley for several years. Moreover, before she entered the God Beast Tomb with Lin Ming, a wisp of despair had begun growing in her heart. Now that she realized she could soon leave Tragic Death Valley, how could she not be excited?

However, being pleasantly surprised was only one matter. At this time, Xiao Moxian’s concentration was completely focused on what was happening around her. Her right hand touched her spatial ring, ready to deal with any dangers that arose.

What was in the ancient coffin?

If it were a treasure, then they could naturally take it and everyone would have a happy ending. But if it were an evil being, then both she and Lin Ming would face a life or death crisis.

Chapter 1502 – Essence Energy Heaven Pill

Chapter 1502 – Essence Energy Heaven Pill

…

…

…

The moment that the ancient coffin opened, a vast and terrifying tide of demonic power gushed forth. Lin Ming leapt backwards, extracting the Phoenix Blood Spear at the same time even as he revolved his true essence to the limit!

The heavy ancient coffin revealed a pitch black interior without the least bit of sound.

Lin Ming's complexion was solemn. He sent out a wisp of his divine sense to probe the ancient coffin. As soon as he did, he felt his heart skip a beat.

Within the coffin were hundreds of thousands of god runes. And these god runes were all pasted along a 10 foot high divine stone, sealing it tightly within.

This divine stone calmly lay within the ancient bronze coffin. After 100 billion years of being sealed, it was finally freed from its chains.

Probing deeply with his sense, Lin Ming could feel that this divine stone seemed to have some sort of embryo breeding within it. There was a heartbeat and breathing of heaven and earth origin energy, as if it were constantly growing and evolving.

The breath that it exuded was like 10,000 year spirit grass, carrying with it an intoxicating aroma.

Without a doubt, this divine stone was the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone!

Lin Ming carefully investigated the god runes atop the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone and discovered that the dao patterns had a sealing effect. They sealed away the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, allowing it to constantly absorb a large amount of essence energy to grow, but preventing it from forming its own wisdom.

As Lin Ming discovered this, he let out a light breath. It seemed that the Asura Road Master was extremely thoughtful in his actions, otherwise, if the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was bred for too long and absorbed too much power, then its strength might surpass the level of his potential successor. If that were true, then this entire ordeal would be tragic.

After determining that there weren't any dangers, only then did Lin Ming carefully approach the coffin.

Within the coffin, besides the Essence Embryo Stone, there was also a bronze box. Lin Ming investigated the bronze box for a little before discovering that there was a separate space sealed within it.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then picked up the bronze box. This box didn't seem special at all, but it was heavy to the touch. All sorts of god runes patterned its surface.

These god runes had the effect of slowing down time. Lin Ming quickly calculated and came to a surprising conclusion. Within this bronze box, time flowed at a speed over 10,000 times slower, and the method of sealing prevented the outside world from affecting the contents within.

"What is inside?"

Lin Ming thought. He formed a seal with his hand to undo the bindings on the bronze box.

As Lin Ming opened the box, a rich medicinal fragrance rushed up his nose. Within the bronze box was a deep green pill the size of a longan. This pill glittered as if it were carved from crystal, as beautiful as jade. There was a little mass of origin energy fluttering about within the pill as if there was some life form within it.

Just smelling this medicinal fragrance caused Lin Ming's pores to open all over his body and stretch out to absorb this medicinal fragrance; it was extremely comfortable.

"This is definitely an immortal pill that surpasses the level of a transcendent divine pill. The benefits of absorbing it are unimaginable."

As Lin Ming saw this pill, he realized what the function of the bronze box was. The over 10,000:1 slowing of the time flow was to prevent the pill from undergoing too long a time so that it didn't decay. In addition, the pill was covered in layers of god runes to keep the spiritual energy of the pill overflowing with abundance and prevent any medicinal efficacy from leaking out.

Near this pill was also a jade slip. Sinking his sense into this jade slip, Lin Ming saw a few simple lines of words.

"Essence Energy Heaven Pill. The one who uses it can solidify their own essence energy and be reborn.

"For those that have not cultivated body transformation, they may smell this medicinal fragrance for two hours a day. For those that have reached small success of body transformation, they may take one-third of the Essence Energy Heaven Pill every day. As for those that have reached large success of body transformation, they may take the complete pill."

"Essence Energy Heaven Pill!"

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. From the name and description of this pill, he could tell that it was mainly focused on 'essence' from the three cultivation methods of essence, energy, and divine. This was a miracle medicine used to nourish the mortal body.

The first volume of the Asura Sutra was a set of arcane techniques specially used to cultivate the mortal body. However, if the one who opened the Asura Sutra had a shaky and sloppy mortal body foundation, then wanting to train in the Asura Sutra First Volume would be as difficult as ascending to the heavens.

In order to prevent this situation from happening, the Asura Road Master had especially prepared this type of body transformation medicine. It could be said that it was perfectly thorough in his planning.

But, even though this pill looked crystalline and beautiful, eating it wouldn’t be so easy. According to the brief introduction from the jade slip, a person who had never cultivated body transformation simply didn’t possess the qualifications to take this pill; they could only smell the medicinal fragrance daily. For those that had reached small success of body transformation, they could take a third of the pill. Only those who reached large success of body transformation could swallow the entire pill.

Lin Ming believed that with the Asura Road Master’s vision, he could only be considered as barely reaching large success of body transformation if he opened the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. Currently, he would only be able to swallow a third of the pill.

“Lin Ming, you picked up a treasure.”

Xiao Moxian also recognized how valuable this pill was. If this pill were to wander into the world, then even Empyreans would brutally battle for it.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. “We found it together. This pill, part of it is yours.”

“I don’t want it.” Xiao Moxian shook her head. “The reason we were able to arrive here is thanks to you. The one who passed the test of the Asura Road Master and thus the one who was selected by him is also you. As for me, I haven’t even done anything up until now, but I still managed to learn an unsurpassed sutra. To me, that is far more luck than I deserve. I don’t like to owe anyone anything. The reason we can leave this place is all due to your efforts. All of the treasures obtain in this bronze temple will naturally belong to you. I won’t take anything at all.”

Xiao Moxian was someone who would never maliciously covet things that weren’t her own. But, Lin Ming shook his head and said, “I’ll take the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, but this pill we will divide equally.”

No matter how it was said, Xiao Moxian had followed him for nine full years. Whether it was being hunted down by Tian Mingzi or forced into Tragic Death Valley, the main cause of all this was Lin Ming. Xiao Moxian had only been dragged into this mess because of him.

In addition, for these last nine years, Xiao Moxian had always held an attitude of sharing life and death with Lin Ming. To Lin Ming, this was worth giving at least half this pill to Xiao Moxian, otherwise he would always feel regret.

Xiao Moxian seemed as if she wanted to argue, but Lin Ming said, “Let’s not argue about this. I’ll refine the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone first and then we can discuss the matter of leaving. Leaving shouldn’t be a problem, but there is likely to be some people waiting in ambush outside!”

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had been in Tragic Death Valley for nine years, and around ten months had passed outside. To long-lived martial artists, waiting for ten months wasn’t anything at all.

Moreover, the one hunting them down was Tian Mingzi, someone who had a blood enmity with him. Tian Mingzi was someone who possessed vast ambitions, and his personality was naturally sinister and cruel. Lin Ming would never underestimate how patient Tian Mingzi could be. Let alone ten months, even if it were several years Lin Ming would still be extremely careful when leaving and prepare to deal with Tian Mingzi’s revenge at any moment.

“Tian Mingzi… how do you plan on dealing with him?” Xiao Moxian’s thoughts turned grim. Tian Mingzi was a Great World King!

Lin Ming said, “I will absorb the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone first and then consider it further.”

Chapter 1503 – Swallowing the Sacred Spirit

Chapter 1503 – Swallowing the Sacred Spirit

…

…

…

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were both at the peak of the Divine Transformation realm. With their current cultivation levels it was simply far too difficult to directly confront Tian Mingzi. It had to be known that the Good Fortune Saint Son was at the peak of the Saint Lord realm and over an entire large boundary higher than Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian. Even so, he was unable to fight with a Great World King, and could only escape from them.

Now, Lin Ming guessed that Tian Mingzi was guarding the outside. Even If Lin Ming were to go into seclusion within Tragic Death Valley for 100-200 years, he still wouldn't be Tian Mingzi's match.

This was because going into seclusion within a comfortable and relaxed environment would cause one's strength progression to be far too slow.

Lin Ming arrived in front of the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone and gently traced the patterns on the rough rock. Lin Ming had long since imprinted the god runes that the Asura Road Master had used to seal away the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone into his heart, and unraveling them should be easy.

Lin Ming's fingers sprang froth, creating several hundred array symbols that flew out to undo the seals.

Every time a seal was undone, Lin Ming would take a short break and adjust himself. After all, he had no choice but to be careful with this Essence Spirit Embryo Stone that had been nourished by God Beast bones for billions of years.

As the seals were halfway undone, the life activities within the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone became increasingly fierce. From deep within the stone, a deep and resonant roar echoed out, as if hundreds of God Beasts were rushing out from the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone.

"These are God Beast spirits."

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. This Essence Spirit Embryo Stone had been nourished by the God Beast array formation, so it was inevitable that God Beast spirits would be fused into it.

Not just that, but as Lin Ming undid more and more of the seals, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone emitted an increasingly strong demonic power! A faint howling began to gather between the heavens and earth.

Chi chi chi!

As the seal was two-thirds undone, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone continued to pour forth black demonic energy into the surrounding space. Xiao Moxian felt her heart gripped as she saw all of this. Even if the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone had been sealed away by the Asura Road Master, after all these billions of years it had simply absorbed far too much essence energy. It would not be easy to handle!

"Lin Ming, do you plan to undo the seal on the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone now? I've heard that in ancient times, there were martial artists that formed a true avatar, but they were not able to erase the spiritual wisdom of that avatar. As a result, their consciousness was swallowed up by their avatar and their bodies were stolen instead!"

There were many types of people that cultivated avatars through the times, and this type of avatar was actually divided into two types. The first was like Empyrean Divine Dream who sundered their own primordial spirit using an arcane technique to divide their soul in two. Like this, the avatar they formed would originate from the same source; the avatar was the true self, and the true self was the avatar. Like this, the two could fuse back together without any backlash.

The second kind was what Lin Ming was planning to do, using a spiritual object to form their avatar. This type of spiritual object originally had a wisdom of its own, and if one failed to refine it, the avatar would instead steal the body of the true self and the true self would become the avatar.

“I know.” Lin Ming simply replied, continuing to undo the seals.

Seeing Lin Ming’s resolve, Xiao Moxian no longer spoke out. But, by just undoing two-thirds of the seal, the power that the avatar revealed already surpassed Lin Ming!

If he failed to control it, all that would await him was annihilation.

“Heretical God Force!”

Lin Ming gathered his hands together. The phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared behind him.

A terrifying power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation recklessly fell onto the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone like waterfalls of red and purple.

Thunder and flames were extremely good forces for refining embryo stones.

In the legends, when the world was being created, a holy goddess had fired up clay figurines to create all the varied creatures of life. As for thunder, there was even less to say about it. The Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was first formed by a strike of lightning.

As the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation pressed down on the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone suddenly popped open its eyes!

These dark gray eyes revealed a deep hatred and burning cruelty, making one feel cold upon seeing them!

This Essence Spirit Embryo Stone already had a wisdom of its own.

As more and more demonic power flushed out like a tide, the will of the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone became increasingly terrifying. Standing nearby, both Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian paled. Just how would they subdue such a terrifying will!?

At this time, Xiao Moxian saw Lin Ming continue to undo the seal as if he wasn't afraid at all. Now, only a fifth of the Asura Road Master's seal was left. As more and more of the seal unraveled, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone became that much stronger. If the seal was completely undone, even Xiao Moxian found it hard to imagine just how formidable the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone would become!

"Uwooo!"

The Essence Spirit Embryo Stone emitted an ear-piercing roar. It crazily struggled about, causing stone chips to fall down from the surface of the divine stone. The Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was soon about to conceive its human form!

As it looked at Lin Ming, its eyes revealed nothing but greed and wild cruelty. This sort of feeling was like a wild beast seeing its most delicious prey.

To the newborn Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, Lin Ming, with his incomparably powerful blood vitality, was a truly wonderful meal!

"Lin Ming, be careful!"

As she watched the final seal be undone by Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian's complexion changed and she nearly lost her voice as she shouted out to him. At this time, the Essene Spirit Embryo Stone's will had reached a terrifyingly powerful degree. Even a Great World King might have their body wrested away! Even though Xiao Moxian had great faith in Lin Ming's abilities, she still felt panic surge through her. The current situation had far surpassed their control! The Spirit Essence Embryo Stone had been nurtured for countless years. Even with the suppression of the Asura Road Master's array formation, it had reached an incredibly dreadful boundary.

"Ohh!"

The moment that the seal was fully undone, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone emitted a tearing screech. Its will formed a bloody and ominous sword, crazily lashing out at the thunder and fire emitted by Lin Ming.

It wanted to reverse the situation and seize Lin Ming's body, turning Lin Ming into its temporary body and avatar.

Puff!

Lin Ming stared blankly on as this shimmering red sword of will pierced through the point between his eyebrows. Lin Ming's body suddenly shook and he stepped backwards, his face pale.

"Lin Ming!" Xiao Moxian cried out in alarm. She thought that Lin Ming would use some trump card before the sword of will pierced him, but she never imagined that Lin Ming wouldn't do anything at all, instead allowing the sword of will to thrust into his spiritual sea!

It had to be known that the battle of wresting control of his body would occur in Lin Ming's spiritual sea. Because of the massive battle within, it might cause damage to Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

To hold a decisive battle within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, even if the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was defeated it could still escape. But if Lin Ming were defeated he would have his body stolen away.

Xiao Moxian felt her heart tighten. She could only watch blankly on as Lin Ming struggled internally just a hundred feet away from her. There was nothing she could do at this moment as Lin Ming's will battled that of the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone; she didn't even dare to move his body.

“Just what is Lin Ming planning…” Xiao Moxian felt her palms become wet with sweat. No matter how strong Lin Ming’s soul force was, how could he defeat the will of the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone that not even a World King could contend with?

Time seemed to come to a standstill. Lin Ming had turned into a statue, completely motionless as if he were frozen.

Xiao Moxian’s speculations were correct. After billions of years of being bred over time, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone developed an intelligence of its own, even under the seal of the Asura Road Master. It had now reached a point where it could seize the body of a Great World King.

At this time, within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, his complexion was cold as his transformed body of will floated high in the skies.

And in front of him, just several hundred feet away was a phantom formed from demonic power. Its body took the shape of a God Beast spirit. Its face was fierce and cruel and its entire being emanated dark energies.

This phantom of demonic power looked at Lin Ming and cackled.

“I… really… must thank you. Here… I have been sealed away… for countless years… today… I am finally born. From now on… this great world… is mine to roam… I will swallow all martial artists of the world… and achieve an unsurpassed true form!”

The phantom of demonic power chortled. Because it had never spoken before, its voice was extremely scratchy.

Lin Ming was startled as he heard this. It wasn’t strange for the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone to have developed its own intelligence, but the words it spoke were strange. It had been locked in this array formation since the moment it was formed and had never experienced the outside world so there was no reason for it to speak the words it did.

The phantom of demonic power saw Lin Ming's confusion and smiled. "Through these countless years… innumerable people have died trying to enter the God Beast Tomb array formation… they were swallowed up by the array formation and their essence energy also became my nourishment. As for their minds, all of it became mine!"

The phantom's voice was filled with cruelty and malice. It seemed as if it were formed from numerous personalities. This phantom of demonic power had no personality of its own, but was instead an amalgamation of all the martial artists that it had swallowed up.

"I see, so that's how it is. So you are the spiritual wisdom of the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, a monster formed by swallowing the souls of countless others." Lin Ming sneered as he finally understood.

"Hehe, you say that I am a monster. I have gathered into myself the minds of innumerable individuals… after billions of years of being formed, I have become a soul-devouring sacred spirit that surpasses the Laws. I am ever changing, ever evolving. I can swallow the will, soul, and essence energy of unlimited people, until the day I finally become the ruler of the universe! This is a situation that the man who laid down this array so many billions of years ago could never have imagined! He was far too conceited. By relying on his absolute cultivation he arranged this great array and even dared to create his own Heavenly Dao rules. He tried to arrange a destiny for his future successors, but how could he have calculated what would happen billions of years in the future? There is no foolproof plan in this world. My birth already far exceeds any plans he ever made. Now, I have already evolved into a perfect life form, able to swallow the wisdom of any being. I will create my own history, my own era! I will become a terrifying existence that all life in the 33 Heavens shall respect and fear!"

"You sure like to shamelessly boast." A cold smile touched Lin Ming's face.

The soul-swallowing sacred spirit chuckled in return. "I really don't understand how you can smile even at the point of death. Are all humans as stupid as you are? Such a stupid soul… if your mortal body weren't so formidable then I wouldn't even bother trying to swallow you."

The corner of Lin Ming’s lips curved up in a taunting smile. He slowly raised his right hand, and on the top of his hand a black cube appeared, slowly revolving in his palm. This black cube was covered with patterns, filled with an ancient aura.

Chapter 1504 – The First Avatar

Chapter 1504 – The First Avatar

…

…

…

Seeing the black cube floating in Lin Ming's hand, the soul swallowing sacred spirit grinned. "Magic tool? How interesting, do you still plan on resisting me? I have swallowed the souls of countless martial artists and my will has already reached an inconceivable degree. I can even seize the body of a God Beast! You will become a part of me. Your mortal body isn't bad; it can become one of my avatars!"

The soul swallowing sacred spirit became increasingly fluent at speaking. Then, it roared out and rushed towards Lin Ming.

In the crazy impact, the soul swallowing sacred spirit transformed into a thick and viscous darkness, fusing into the surrounding space and causing countless swords of will to pierce towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming sneered. "Really, the evils that we bring upon ourselves are the hardest to bear!"

The moment that the phantom of demonic power hurtled towards Lin Ming, a terrifying black vortex erupted forth with the small cube in Lin Ming's hand as the center. This dreadful vortex seemed as if it could swallow the entire universe!

All of the sacred spirit's swords of will were twisted apart by this black vortex, like rotten branches in a torrential storm.

The sacred spirit cried out in horror. This sudden situation had far surpassed anything it imagined possible. That horrifying cube in Lin Ming's hand emitted a terrifying aura. This aura was even somewhat comparable to the aura of the Asura Road Master from billions of years ago!

"Just what is that!?"

The sacred spirit screamed. It crazily struggled, wanting to flee from that black vortex, but the suction power of this black vortex even surpassed that of a black hole; there was no way for the sacred spirit to resist!

"No! Stop, stop!"

As the sacred spirit saw that it would soon be twisted apart by this vortex, the soul swallowing sacred spirit howled out, "If you kill me then you will never obtain the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone. It has already been contaminated with the countless memories I have swallowed up, and if I do not gather those memories then at the moment you refine the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, those memories will invade your soul and cause you to lose who you are!"

The sacred spirit wailed as it rapidly spoke with a sound transmission. As an abomination it had no personality to begin with, so it didn't fear losing itself. But a martial artist was different. When a martial artist lost who they were they would become an entirely different person. No one would wish for that to happen.

Facing this sacred spirit's threat, Lin Ming simply sneered. "You think too much of yourself. Now die!"

As Lin Ming spoke, the soul vortex in Lin Ming's hand became increasingly fierce. The spinning black energy was as sharp as a knife, tearing apart the sacred spirit's consciousness!

"You... will... re...gret..." The soul swallowing sacred spirit sent out a final curse. But at this time, it discovered that its own awareness was being drawn out and all of its memories and spirit marks were being erased by an invisible strength, completely purified into pure memories!

This sudden occurrence caused the soul swallowing sacred spirit to feel cold all over. To cancel spirit marks and also purify memories, was this even possible!?

This was its last thought. In the next moment, its awareness and memories were completely wiped away, leaving behind nothing but endlessly pure soul fragments that were sucked in by the black cube in Lin Ming's hand.

After doing all of this, Lin Ming let out a light breath and rubbed his forehead.

That struggle just now had consumed an enormous amount of energy.

It had been many years, but he finally had the strength to activate the Magic Cube on his own!

Of course, the reason that the Magic Cube had such a terrifying effect just now was because the soul swallowing sacred spirit had invaded Lin Ming's spiritual sea and wanted to wrest away his body.

This was what he had meant when he said that the sacred spirit was bringing evils upon his own head. If the sacred spirit had withdrawn into the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, then it would have been far more difficult for Lin Ming to deal with it using the Magic Cube.

"After diligently training with Empyrean Divine Mist for seven and a half years, my soul force is no longer comparable to how it was in the past. Otherwise, even with my extreme Divine Transformation cultivation it would still have been impossible for me to activate the Magic Cube. The Good Fortune Saint Son is at the late Saint Lord realm and he is already able to use the Grandmist Spirit Bead."

Lin Ming traced the patterns on the black cube, his mood extremely good.

According to Lin Ming's own speculations, his ability to use the Magic Cube was not comparable to how the Good Fortune Saint Son could use the Grandmist Spirit Bead. But as time passed, he would eventually catch up to him!

After exterminating the soul swallowing sacred spirit, there was no longer any obstacle to Lin Ming refining the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone.

As for those twisted soul fragments, they weren't very useful to Lin Ming. Most of them were soul fragments of Divine Lord, Holy Lords, and at most World Kings; it was already rare if they had even an incomplete transcendent divine might.

And to the current Lin Ming, only complete and peak transcendent divine mights were worthy of him spending the time to cultivate them.

Lin Ming simply had too many peak transcendent divine mights right now. They included the inheritances of Empyrean Divine Dream, Empyrean Primordius, and Empyrean Divine Mist – three great Empyreans. Moreover, there was also the Heretical God Force of unknown origin; all of them were peak transcendent divine mights.

In addition, there was also the incomplete inheritance of Empyrean Divine Seal as well as the first volume of the Asura Sutra!

This was already more than enough for Lin Ming to practice for thousands of years.

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred and his consciousness returned to reality from his spiritual sea. Slowly, pure brightness was restored to his eyes and he saw Xiao Moxian standing not too far away from him.

Xiao Moxian's face was pale and her hands were gripped tightly together; she appeared extremely tense.

When Lin Ming's body was invaded by the sacred spirit, Xiao Moxian felt her own heart shrink within her. She feared that something would go wrong and when Lin Ming's eyes were restored to clarity, they would be flooded with a greedy, cruel, and monstrous light.

In this dark and lonely Tragic Death Valley where killing intent was everywhere, she had lived with Lin Ming for nine years. To her, Lin Ming was already someone she subconsciously relied on. If his body were to be wrested away by others, then she found it hard to imagine what the consequences would be.

She would likely be hunted down by that soul swallowing sacred spirit and the exit to leaving Tragic Death Valley would also be blocked by it. Even if she were to successfully escape the sacred spirit with some great stroke of luck, when she imagined her future of having to live alone in Tragic Death Valley, facing the dark and arid days by herself and being the only one to watch over the endless skeletons here until her life faded away, she knew she would go insane.

“I’m fine. Sorry for making you worry about me.” In the dark and gloomy chamber, Lin Ming suddenly smiled. His smiling face was like the spring wind melting away the cold ice of winter. Xiao Moxian’s heart shook and her nose burned as she almost started to cry.

In a situation with nearly no hope, anyone would become vulnerable, let alone a young girl like Xiao Moxian.

She nearly couldn’t help but fly into Lin Ming’s arms. However, as she approached him, her pace picked up and she viciously punched him in the chest.

“I was such an idiot for worrying about you! You already had a strategy to deal with that thing!” Xiao Moxian said, feeling increasingly aggrieved. Her large eyes glistened, seeming as if tears would come tumbling down at any time.

The battle within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea had concluded extremely quickly, but a quarter hour had passed in the outside world.

To Xiao Moxian, this quarter hour seemed as long as a year.

Facing Xiao Moxian who was revealing the demeanor of a disgruntled young girl, Lin Ming didn’t know what to say. He looked back at her a bit sheepishly for a moment. Luckily, Xiao Moxian had no intention of further pursuing this. She said, “Well, hurry up and refine the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone.”

“Of course.”

Lin Ming nodded. He glanced back at the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone. At this time, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone had been completely unsealed and its consciousness had been erased. Now, it was a pure flesh and blood body, one containing the essence and strength of several hundred God Beasts. The foundation of its mortal body had already reached an unimaginable level.

This was the perfect avatar body described in the Asura Sutra!

The so-called perfect avatar body meant a complete body that was perfect, without any loopholes or weaknesses. Ordinarily, when a martial artist was fighting or meditating, the power of blood vitality within themselves would slowly flow out from them. But a perfect body would be completely sealed up, forming an independent world within the body. Inside and outside were two completely separate spaces!

Lin Ming quietly revolved the Divine Mist Heart Mantra he had learned from Empyrean Divine Mist for seven years. He branched out a part of his own divine soul and poured it into the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone.

By separating a part of his own divine soul, this would cause Lin Ming’s soul force to weaken by a great deal. But, the advantage of this was that the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone would be forever under his control. It would become his absolute avatar, never being able to form the self-awareness required to betray him.

Lin Ming’s soul force poured into the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone like a gushing river, flooding into every nook and cranny of it. With a cracking sound, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone became increasingly small as more and more stone chips started to fall off!

Lin Ming used the soul fraction he placed in the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone to control its flesh and blood. He began to revolve the astral essence contained within the Essence Spirit

Embryo Stone. In that moment, an incomparably vast and wild torrent of blood vitality rushed out, submerging Lin Ming's divine soul!

"What a terrifying strength!"

Lin Ming was shocked. The power of blood vitality within this Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was too strong. If his soul wasn't firm then it would have been dashed into pieces!

With a cracking sound, the divine stone completely shattered. Fragments of divine stone shot out all over and the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone leapt out from the remains!

At this time it was still a mass of moving flesh. Its facial features were blurry and it was impossible to see its true appearance.

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He discovered that the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone had the seals of the Asura Road Master within it, seals that contained all the horrifying power that the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone had absorbed from the God Beast array formation for the last several dozens of billions of years.

There were a total of three seals, each one more durable than the last. With Lin Ming's current strength it was impossible for him to unravel them all. However, he had the strength to undo the first two.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment. Then, he decided to undo the first seal.

With his understanding of the Asura Sutra, doing this wasn't difficult at all.

As the seal was undone, there was a thunderous explosion, as if countless God Beasts were roaring from within the Spirit Essence Embryo Stone!

A rich blood vitality and heaven and earth origin energy erupted like a natural disaster.

There was no place for this strength to rush through. Once this strength flooded each and every inch of the avatar's flesh and blood body, it hurtled towards Lin Ming's true self!

The Essence Spirit Embryo Stone had now become Lin Ming's avatar. And, the avatar's cultivation also followed that of the true form. The avatar and true form could freely exchange energy between themselves!

Chapter 1505 – Becoming A Divine Lord

Chapter 1505 – Becoming A Divine Lord

…

…

…

Bang!

Lin Ming's body shook. In that moment, a terrifying power rushed into his body. This was the power condensed by the God Beast array formation, and now it was pouring into his body, breaking into his inner world!

Lin Ming had already foreseen this change when he unraveled the seal, but he didn't expect the impact to be so wild and intense. His inner world seemed as if it couldn't withstand this strength and wanted to crack apart!

If his inner world cracked open then his fate could be imagined. In this life or death moment, Lin Ming had an obvious choice; he could open his inner world and let this tyrannical strength gallop outwards. In doing so, although it would make things safe for him, it would actually waste away a large amount of essence energy that the God Beast array formation had accumulated.

A sharp light blew up in Lin Ming's eyes. He didn't open his inner world. Instead, he relied on this ferocious strength to begin rapidly increasing the boundaries of his inner world! He wanted to take advantage of this opportunity and break into the Divine Lord realm!

This was a crazy decision. Underneath the torrents of so much wild energy, if he couldn't withstand the pressure of this energy then his inner world would develop cracks all over it and it would be nearly impossible to recover from. The reason Lin Ming dared to do this was because he had absolute confidence in his own foundation as well as the intensity of his body!

As energy filled him, Lin Ming's body emitted explosive crackling sounds. The blood vessels under his skin ballooned upwards, making it seem as if they would all collapse at any moment.

In the Nine Divine Shifts, the Divine Lord realm was the last boundary. Divine Lord, Divine Lord, the meaning of that was to truly become divine! Of course, this 'divine' was relative to common mortals. A Divine Lord martial artist could hold a world within their body and enjoy the worship of mortals. To mortals, they would be a god. As for the True Divinity boundary in the road of martial arts, this was a divine god of martial artists. A True Divinity powerhouse could control an entire universe. To them, the title of True Divinity was well deserved!

An ordinary Divine Lord powerhouse could already create their own clan or establish their own eighth-grade sect. They could create an inheritance that lasted for hundreds of thousands of years, become an ancient ancestor, and enjoy the devotion of countless disciples and followers.

In the Divine Realm, a Divine Transformation martial artist could already wander the world. A Divine Lord realm martial artist was a true character.

As for Lin Ming, once he became a Divine Lord he could instantly kill a Holy Lord. To a certain degree, he could even contend with a World King!

In the entire Divine Realm, besides in Empyrean Heavenly Palaces, World Kings were extremely rare even in a great world. They were figures that countless martial artists respected and revered. There were many peak Holy Lands that had inheritances of millions of years and yet they couldn't produce even a single World King!

Thus, to Lin Ming, the Divine Lord threshold was extremely significant!

However, for Lin Ming to break through the Divine Lord realm in this situation, the pain he had to withstand could be imagined.

Underneath the tremendous pressure, Lin Ming's blood vessels ballooned up from beneath his skin, even breaking apart. Blood seeped out from all of his pores! This blood mixed with his sweat, making Lin Ming look as if he were being bathed in blood.

And within Lin Ming's inner world, the crazy energy impacted towards him, strong enough to cause mountains and rivers to shake. His inner world was originally filled with spiritual energy, but now it was filled with a terrifying energy storm. Those spiritual plants within his inner world were smashed apart in this storm, turned into innumerable fragments!

In his inner world, rivers changed course, lakes evaporated, and mountains collapsed!

In his inner world, it seemed as if the end of times had arrived.

"Heretical God Tree!"

Lin Ming roared out. Within his inner world, the towering Heretical God Tree stretched out its lush branches and vibrant leaves, stabilizing it.

The massive root system held the earth of Lin Ming's inner world firmly in place. With this divine tree stabilizing Lin Ming's inner world, everything became much more stable. However, a powerful pressure caused Lin Ming's body to balloon; the blood vitality within him seemed as if it would burst out in the next moment.

Lin Ming grit his teeth and opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates to the limit. With the dual support of his formidable mortal body and the Heretical God Tree, he forcefully withstood the impact of energy. Then, with a 'ka ka ka' sound, the boundaries of Lin Ming's inner world began to break open!

As the boundaries of Lin Ming's inner world opened, the void outside of the world was constantly fused with pure energy. Lin Ming's inner world was growing, evolving!

Once his inner world opened up there would be an avenue for the energy to drain out of. The pressure on Lin Ming began to rapidly reduce.

Slowly, the bulging blood vessels beneath Lin Ming’s skin began to shrink back down. Blood also stopped leaking from his pores. Like this, Lin Ming had crossed the most difficult stage. Following this, breaking through the Divine Lord realm was only a matter of time.

However, because Lin Ming had withstood the terrifying pressure, nearly all of his blood vessels had burst open and even his inner world had been wrecked in the baptism of that ruinous energy storm. In addition to him having branched out a proportion of his divine soul into his essence energy avatar, he would be greatly weakened for a long period of time.

“Lin Ming, you’re really too reckless, you always do things to the extreme. Anyone that follows you will have a permanent heart attack.” Xiao Moxian had been watching Lin Ming’s entire breakthrough process from the side. She was left somewhat speechless by everything.

From entering God Burying Ridge then falling into Tragic Death Valley, the two of them had survived demonic tides together and had even rushed into the God Beast Tomb array formation. After that, Lin Ming had risked his soul to refine the essence energy avatar. He was always making her heart race without end.

Lin Ming’s lips twitched and he laughed. “I still haven’t yet reached 60 years of age. From the time I was 15 years old, I've spent the following 40 years of my life struggling like this. I cannot compare to someone like you who comes from an Empyrean background. From birth you possessed an unachievable talent that mortals could only dream of as well as the support of endless precious resources. I am simply a martial artist that came from the lower realms, moreover I am even a martial artist that originates from the most common stock of mortals. Although I encountered my own lucky chance in the lower realms that changed my fate, relying on that alone would not have been able to make up the difference between us. I had to risk everything I had. I had to risk my life on lucky chances and even risk my life to step further on the road of martial arts, otherwise it would have been impossible for you to see me standing here.”

Because of his exhaustion, Lin Ming's words seemed a bit faint, as if they were lacking energy. But as these words fell onto Xiao Moxian's ears, they caused her heart to shake.

In truth, she had already heard that Lin Ming came from a common mortal birth. He wasn't someone who was taken in by an Empyrean level character as a disciple, but he still managed to attain his current incredible achievements.

This sounded like a fantastical bedtime story, and even Xiao Moxian had been skeptical of it, half-doubting it the entire time. Now, she had confirmed this from Lin Ming himself. Not only was he a common person, but he was even a common person of the lower realms. Within the entire Divine Realm as well as the billion plus worlds of the lower realms, there were countless common mortals, but their lives only lasted for a mere several dozen years. They were truly like ants, continuing generation after generation. For a common mortal of the lower realms to arrive at Lin Ming's current level and have his achievements, this was simply unbelievable!

In comparison, Xiao Moxian herself came from Demondawn Heavenly Palace and was the most beloved daughter of the monster race and demon race. Disregarding her resources and inheritances, she possessed a rare half-phoenix body, something that might not even occur in a billion years. Yet, for all that she had, her present achievements were no better than Lin Ming's.

This caused Xiao Moxian to feel a bit ashamed of herself. How could anyone live in the presence of such a freakish genius?

Chapter 1506 – Leaving the Valley

Chapter 1506 – Leaving the Valley

…

…

…

10 days later, within the God Beast Tomb, before Empyrean Divine Mist's cave dwelling –

At this time, Lin Ming was already fully restored. His cultivation had reached large success and he had learned the Asura Sutra First Volume. For the current him, entering and leaving the God Beast Tomb array formation was easy and simple.

"Senior Divine Mist, junior has returned. I apologize for having you wait a long time for me."

Lin Ming said. Since he left, he had been gone for a year and a half. To the current Empyrean Divine Mist whose lifespan was near its end, this was an extremely long period of time.

In the cave dwelling, Empyrean Divine Mist was left speechless for a long time. Lin Ming could feel a weak divine sense spreading over his body, probing the changes in his body and cultivation that occurred in the last year and a half.

This divine sense belonged to Empyrean Divine Mist.

Since Empyrean Divine Mist had taught Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian his life's soul arts, his situation became increasingly worse. He weakened by the day, and if this speed were to continue then it wouldn't be too many years before he was like a lamp without oil, drying up and dying.

For the current Empyrean Divine Mist, a martial artist at a relatively ordinary boundary could kill him.

“Praise the young, I really must praise the young…” Empyrean Divine Mist deeply sighed with emotion. This God Beast Tomb array formation that had been unbroken by others for numerous billions of years was actually solved by Lin Ming.

“Your cultivation has already reached the Divine Lord realm… before, you told me that you have yet to cultivate for sixty full years. For you to break through the Divine Lord realm at this age and also to have such a solid foundation… your future achievements are hard to imagine. For me to pass on my life’s Divine Mist Heart Mantra to you before I die, I can at least die peacefully.”

Lin Ming was silent for a moment. He said, “Senior is too fatalistic. This junior has already found the exit and can lead Senior to leave this valley. Senior’s life is not yet over; it’s only that your soul force and blood vitality is lacking right now, but as long as there are enough soul medicines then it will not be a problem for Senior to continue living for millions of years.”

Lin Ming held a deep sense of gratitude towards Empyrean Divine Mist. The reason that Empyrean Divine Mist had weakened so much in these nine years was that he had used a secret skill to temper Lin Ming’s divine soul. No matter what the original reason was for Empyrean Divine Mist helping him, this was a great graciousness to Lin Ming. Lin Ming would never forget this graciousness in his life.

“It’s useless. I am well aware of my own situation. I should have around a mere hundred years of life remaining…” Empyrean Divine Mist sighed, his voice filled with gloom.

Lin Ming said, “Senior, as long as you leave the valley then I can help Senior seek out soul nourishing medicines. As long as there is medicine, then although Senior cannot be restored to your peak strength in the past, with a hundred years of training, stepping back into the Great World King boundary shouldn’t be a problem at all. Moreover, Senior is an Empyrean and there should be the influence that you established in the past. If junior leads you to that influence then they can help Senior find soul medicines. There shouldn't be a problem at all!"

During these years that Lin Ming studied the Divine Mist Heart Mantra, he gained a deep understanding into the cultivation system and physical state of the spiritas. In his opinion, Empyrean Divine Mist's situation absolutely wasn't as bad as he thought.

It was just that he had consumed too much energy and had been stranded in this forsaken land for tens of millions of years, suffering in this suffocating environment and slowly being overwhelmed with despair. Not just that, but at the end he had even passed on his secret techniques to himself and Xiao Moxian, thus the reason why Empyrean Divine Mist was the way he was now. As long as they all left here, then with the tough vitality of an Empyrean, Empyrean Divine Mist could definitely slowly restore himself.

Empyrean Divine Mist shook his head and said some words that surprised Lin Ming. "I will not leave."

"Why!?" Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were both shocked. In this hellish land, facing endless nights of darkness, facing the limitless loneliness and countless skeletons, how could anyone endure that? If Xiao Moxian were to stay in this land for just a year on her own she would want to go insane, and yet Empyrean Divine Mist didn't want to leave? This was as if Empyrean Divine Mist simply didn't want to continue living on and wanted to cut off his life. In Xiao Moxian's opinion, even if one knew they would die, it was better to die outside in a proper grave than to be buried here!

"Senior, is your mind alright? Why would you choose a dead end and live out the rest of your life in this lonely place?" Xiao Moxian couldn't help but ask. As she thought of a top character of his generation, a peak Empyrean who commanded the winds and seas, passing away in this miserable hell hole filled with countless corpses and without anyone to bury him, she felt extremely uncomfortable in her heart.

Empyrean Divine Mist faintly smiled. "There is no need for you to feel sorry for me. In my life, I once enjoyed limitless glory and killed people as if I were cutting wheat. For me to end up in such a state, that is the plan that fate has for me. Do you remember when told you why I entered Tragic Death Valley…?”

Empyrean Divine Mist’s words caused Lin Ming’s thoughts to race. Indeed, he had asked Empyrean Divine Mist this question nine years ago. “Senior said that it was because of enmity!”

“Yes… because of enmity. I have enmity with a person and that person has enmity with you. Between the two of us, we can resonate our souls and do not need a tracking mark to find each other. Regardless of how much space or time separates us, he will be able to find me. If I leave Tragic Death Valley, he will discover me. It isn’t a problem for me to die, but you will likely be dragged into my mess.”

“Soul resonance? Could it be that he was the one who forced Senior into Tragic Death Valley?” Lin Ming asked, bewildered. Xiao Moxian also found this hard to accept. She asked with amazement in her voice. “Senior was an extreme Empyrean, just who could force you into Tragic Death Valley?”

“True Divinity…” Empyrean Divine Mist’s voice became thin and ghostly. He sighed, “The one hunting me down is a Soul Emperor of my soul race, as well as my blood brother.”

“Soul Emperor!”

Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. This was a top level character equivalent to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

This was an absolutely genuine True Divinity. Moreover, he had the ability to command his entire race. If Empyrean Divine Mist were being hunted by this sort of character, being forced into Tragic Death Valley was also reasonable!

Empyrean Divine Mist continued to say, “Because us brothers can sense each other’s souls, I was forced onto a road of no return. I desperately thought to enter Tragic Death Valley, setting myself in a death trap and using that to seek a path of survival. Unfortunately, I was not the successor that the Asura Road Master chose and thus I wasn't able to obtain the inheritance of Tragic Death Valley. Instead, I exhausted my life here!"

"Since he is your blood brother why would the Soul Emperor wish to kill Senior?" Xiao Moxian asked, finding this incomprehensible. However, Empyrean Divine Mist did not answer this question.

Empyrean Divine Mist fell into a deep silence. Lin Ming knew that Empyrean Divine Mist didn't want to speak about this subject; this was the pain that forever haunted his heart.

In the world of martial artists, there were far too many sad and tragic stories.

Because of the Soul Emperor's existence, it was impossible for Empyrean Divine Mist to leave the valley. If he were to leave he would immediately die and the fate he would suffer might even be worse than his current situation. As Lin Ming thought of this, he quietly said, "Senior, although you cannot leave the valley, I will be sure to return within ten years. I will bring you back soul restoring medicines! Senior gave junior the graciousness of bestowing upon me your inheritance and I will definitely return this. Only doing that will be the bare minimum to suit my heart of martial arts."

As Lin Ming spoke, he examined the array formations around Empyrean Divine Mist's cave dwelling. These array formations were laid down by Empyrean Divine Mist in the past to resist the tides of demonic power. Currently, it appeared that these array formations could still last for some time.

"Let's go, we're leaving the valley!"

Lin Ming looked towards Xiao Moxian. Xiao Moxian glanced back at Empyrean Divine Mist, finding it hard to bear leaving him here. Then, she nodded.

Like this, the two of them left Empyrean Divine Mist and entered the God Beast Tomb array formation once more. Now that Xiao Moxian had cultivated the Asura Sutra First Volume, she also had the ability to break through the God Beast Tomb array formation.

The two of them used several hours to return to the ancient bronze temple. There, the portal remained, slowly spinning in place.

“Let’s leave.”

Lin Ming grabbed Xiao Moxian’s hand and decisively stepped into the transmission array.

After nine years, they were about to leave this place.

Cha - !

A light flashed and Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian felt their environment rapidly change. In the next moment, they saw that they had arrived in a green and lush forest.

There were fields of flowers with fresh life everywhere. Lingzhi and spirit herbs were all around, green and beautiful, making it seem as if this was a paradise. In God Burying Ridge, there were lands of life and lands of death. This was one of the rare areas which lacked fatal dangers.

Lin Ming turned around and saw that not too far away was a red mountain range that rose to a terrifyingly high degree. The main body of this red mountain range winded its way through, spanning across the entire God Burying Ridge like a vast red dragon. The many mountain peaks resembled dragon claws and dragon horns, extremely lifelike. Without a doubt, this was the Red Dragon Mountain Range and the entrance to Tragic Death Valley was the maw of this red dragon.

They had truly come out! Moreover, they weren’t too far away from Tragic Death Valley.

After confirming this point, Xiao Moxian didn’t know what she was feeling in her heart. She thought that she would have to stay in that dark and dreary Tragic Death Valley for hundreds of years, thousands of years, or even for the rest of her life. Now, she had weathered that disaster and had returned to the outside world, so how could she not be excited?

She couldn’t help but pick up a spirit flower and inhale a deep breath of its scent. This sort of long lost fragrance moved her heart and caused her eyes to be slightly wet. In Tragic Death Valley, she had to face endless piles of bones that left the scent of decay and rot all over her. Just when had she been able to experience the fragrance of such flowers?

Only by experiencing despair could one understand the value of life! At this time, even a green leaf, even a falling flower petal, could fill a person’s heart with joy and hope!

“Wonderful…”

Xiao Moxian closed her eyes, intoxicated and in love with the abundant and fragrant spring scenery all around her.

However, Lin Ming was quiet this entire time, as if he didn’t see the beautiful scene around him. He closed his eyes, casting out his sense.

“Lin Ming, what are you doing?” Xiao Moxian felt her heart go cold as she saw Lin Ming. She raised her guard and carefully sensed everything around her. Then, she discovered that an invisible strength had locked onto them.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. “Did you also feel that? This is one of the few life zones in God Burying Ridge so there shouldn’t be any dangers here. But, there is actually something monitoring us. If I’m not wrong then this area already has an array formation placed around it, and the person who arranged it was likely Tian Mingzi…”

As Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were speaking, several hundred miles away, in a mountain valley of shattered stone, several people were meditating.

At this time, a handsome black-clothed man with a youthful appearance suddenly opened his eyes. His eyes were like two blood moons, bright and red.

“They really… came out?” The young man licked his lips, a devilish smile touch his face. This young man was Tian Mingzi.

Chapter 1507 – Lure the Enemy

Chapter 1507 – Lure the Enemy

…

…

…

Around Tian Mingzi, three martial artists stood up. These three were Imperial Prince Naqi's subordinates and had half-step World King cultivations.

Besides them, there were also two other people sitting; they were the Spider Brothers, the God Burying Ridge guides who had led them here.

The Spider Brothers were currently in the employment of Imperial Prince Naqi and were standing guard here for Lin Ming. In their opinion this was a pointless endeavor, but the rewards that Imperial Prince Naqi gave them were extremely rich so they didn't mind doing boring work like this.

"Sage Tian Mingzi, who did you say came out?"

The Spider Brothers casually asked. This crushed stone mountain valley was a life zone they had chosen based on their previous experiences and there shouldn't be any dangers here. Thus, they weren't too alarmed at hearing Tian Mingzi's words.

"I am speaking of Lin Ming. He has emerged from Tragic Death Valley."

As Tian Mingzi spoke, a thick killing intent shined in his eyes. He extracted a black sword from his spatial ring. Underneath the dim light of God Burying Ridge, it shined with a cold sheen.

Upon hearing this, the Spider Brothers nearly jumped out from where they were sitting. “Lin Ming? The Lin Ming that you said entered Tragic Death Valley? He came out? Are you joking with us?”

Tian Mingzi clearly didn’t want to answer such inane questions. “Do you think that someone like me decided to wait here for ten months just to relax?”

In Tina Mingzi’s opinion, someone like Lin Ming with such a massive destiny upon his body wouldn’t easily die. Now, he had confirmed his initial suspicions!

The Spider Brothers found this hard to accept. “Are you sure that he really entered Tragic Death Valley?”

“I saw it myself!” Tian Mingzi coldly responded. With that, he flew up and soared towards the direction where Lin Ming was!

Behind Tian Mingzi, Naqi’s three subordinates glanced at each other before crumbling up a sound transmission jade slip to send this astonishing news to their master.

Lin Ming had been in Tragic Death Valley for nine years but only ten months had passed outside. Imperial Prince Naqi naturally couldn’t wait outside for Lin Ming to appear in the surroundings of Tragic Death Valley, if ever. He needed to make the best use of his time and adventure as much as possible, thus he and his retinue had parted ways with Tian Mingzi.

Seeing the brilliant flash of the jade slip sound transmission with their own eyes, the Spider Brothers felt this was all unbelievable. Naqi’s three lackeys began preparing to leave. They looked at the Spider Brothers and said, “You two need to hurry!”

The Spider Brothers were still in a stunned shock, but the sudden shout of the three people seemed to wake them up from their dream.

“This is impossible…”

The Spider Brothers whispered. At this time, Naqi's three lackeys also soared up into the air, leaving the two Spider Brothers behind. The two Spider Brothers prepared to leave. They found it hard to imagine that Tragic Death Valley, the legendary land of doom that no one had ever emerged from in 10 billion years, had been broken today by a little baby boy.

At this time, a thousand miles away, a flame lit up in front of Naqi. This was the light of the sound transmission jade slip.

After listening to the sound transmission, Naqi's complexion turned gloomy. "The incoming message says that the array formation Tian Mingzi laid down has detected Lin Ming's trail. He has emerged from Tragic Death Valley!"

"What!?"

Besides Naqi, Mister Zhou was panic-stricken. "That boy, he really came out!?"

In these last ten months, Mister Zhou became increasingly aware as to how terrifying Tragic Death Valley really was. He had looked up some past texts and had confirmed that the rumors of Empyreans perishing in Tragic Death Valley long ago were true. Even Empyreans couldn't leave Tragic Death Valley and yet Lin Ming was able to; this was simply incredible.

"Whether or not he really entered Tragic Death Valley and then left, or if he used some concealment technique and didn't really enter, at this time, we cannot let him run away!"

Imperial Prince Naqi clenched his right fist as if he were squeezing Lin Ming in his palm. Naqi could feel a growing threat from Lin Ming. Originally, Lin Ming's hundred year challenge towards the Good Fortune Saint Son had been a joke to scoff at, but now, he could faintly feel that if Lin Ming were given a hundred years to grow, he would reach an unimaginable boundary!

At that time, he would surely become a great threat to the saint race.

As for himself, he definitely would not be Lin Ming's match.

“Imperial Prince Your Highness, we must be careful. We do not know what sort of lucky chance he obtained after entering Tragic Death Valley. If we misjudge his strength then we might meet with unexpected failure.

Mister Zhou said, thinking it absurd himself that he would say such words. As a World King powerhouse, he actually dreaded a Divine Transformation realm martial artist. If this were known, he would be the greatest laughing stock in the world.

“I know. But, no matter how heaven-defying his lucky chance is it still won’t change the disparities in cultivation. He was three great boundaries lower than us to begin with. I don’t believe that he can overcome this, no matter what he does. Now that he’s left Tragic Death Valley we must kill him no matter what the cost is, otherwise if he escapes then it will be far more difficult to hunt him down in the future!”

Imperial Naqi shot up into the sky, soon followed by Mister Zhou and the others!

As for Tian Mingzi, he was already flying towards the mountain valley where Lin Ming was. To him, this several hundred mile distance took nothing but the blink of an eye.

Here, Lin Ming was already waiting with his arms crossed behind his back. Floating behind him was Primordius Heavenly Palace!

Xiao Moxian had already retreated into Primordius Heavenly Palace.

Lin Ming sneered as he saw Tian Mingzi. “Your patience has not disappointed me. I’m glad you waited this long.”

As Tian Mingzi saw Lin Ming, his eyes suddenly widened, inexplicably shocked. In his caution, he hadn’t missed a key change that had occurred to Lin Ming.

That was… Lin Ming’s cultivation had reached the Divine Lord realm!

“The Divine Lord realm! How is that possible!? In just ten months you broke through from the late Divine Transformation realm to the Divine Lord realm!?”

Tian Mingzi knew that when Lin Ming entered Tragic Death Valley, he hadn't stepped into the late Divine Transformation too long ago. In any case, it was impossible for a late Divine Transformation realm martial artist to step into the Divine Lord realm so quickly. For a normal martial artist, they often needed a thousand years to break through to the Divine Lord realm from the Divine Transformation realm. Some needed ten thousand years to cross this hurdle, and there were even those that never managed to surpass it in their lifetime. No matter how talented Lin Ming was, using even 20 years would have been considered a heaven-defying level of skill.

But now, he had only used ten months!

This was even more panicking than Lin Ming emerging from that death trap known as Tragic Death Valley!

"You must have eaten some heavenly material!"

Tian Mingzi's eyebrows shot up. He would never have imagined that there was a unique time enchantment in Tragic Death Valley that allowed a martial artist to cultivate in a completely normal state. The only explanation he could come up with for this change was that Lin Ming had encountered some unrivalled lucky chance in Tragic Death Valley and had eaten some heavenly material to allow him to complete this transformation. But, no matter how good a heavenly material was, it still wasn't one's own cultivation that they trained themselves. It would cause their foundation to be shaky. This was a rash and dangerous choice that geniuses normally wouldn't consider!

"So, in order to deal with me hunting you down, you didn't hesitate to eat up a heavenly material that would ruin your foundation in order to forcefully break into the Divine Lord realm?" Tian Mingzi's eyes flashed as he stared at Lin Ming. "In order to survive you really are reckless, hm? But what a pity, it doesn't matter even if you break through to the Divine Lord boundary, much less with such an unstable foundation. Even if you were to train for another ten years at the Divine Lord realm, you would still be nothing for me to deal with!"

Tian Mingzi sneered and stroked the front of his blade, his body bursting with flaming killing intent. “Aren’t you going to run back into your little turtle shell? Or do you plan on confronting me directly?”

“Hahaha!” Lin Ming bellowed out. “Trying to provoke me is useless. With your Great World King cultivation, you want to deal with a little junior like myself. You even diligently guarded this land for ten months and try to goad me into fighting you, it seems as if you are more desperate than I thought! It’s true, I cannot directly fight with you right now, but… do you have the courage to continue chasing me?”

As Lin Ming spoke he drew backwards, instantly sinking back into Primordius Heavenly Palace.

Primordius Heavenly Palace flew into the air! With a loud rumbling sound, violent sonic booms spread through the sky as rocks shattered below and the palace flew off into the distance!

At this time, Tian Mingzi didn’t immediately give chase. Lin Ming’s final words had caused him to grimace. He couldn’t help but admit that Lin Ming’s threat truly made him feel a degree of fear.

Tian Mingzi’s character was to be naturally suspicious of everything, and Lin Ming had deliberately put forth some sort of lure in front of him.

“This brat is a crafty one. If I chase after him I am likely to encounter some real dangers, but for me to not chase after him is impossible!” Tian Mingzi’s eyes sparkled with a cold light. However, he immediately grinned. “You have your tricks, but so do I. You have never understood the limits of my strength. If you presumed that I am an ordinary Great World King, then you are greatly mistaken!

“Today is my life’s greatest lucky chance. Once I kill you, all of your secrets, including the secrets of Tragic Death Valley, will belong to me!”

Tian Mingzi’s eyes turned a deeper blood red. He grasped his sword and chased straight after Lin Ming.

Chapter 1508 – Chaos Prison

Chapter 1508 – Chaos Prison

…

…

…

Deep within Primordius Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming was sitting in meditation in the main hall. He already felt a sense lock onto Primordius Heavenly Palace; Tian Mingzi had really given chase.

Moreover, Lin Ming expected that not only would it be Tian Mingzi, but Imperial Prince Naqi and his followed would soon join the hunt.

Lin Ming saw Imperial Prince Naqi and his group in Heavendevil City. They had a World King powerhouse in their ranks as well as two half-step World Kings. Once Tian Mingzi was added into this mix, he would have to face at least two World Kings and their subordinates.

"Lin Ming, what do you plan on doing?" Xiao Moxian glanced at Lin Ming. In her opinion, even though Lin Ming had broken through to the Divine Lord realm, it was still impossible for him to simultaneously contend with so many powerhouses. The difference between a Divine Lord and World King was simply far too great.

"I must lure them deeper. In God Burying Ridge there are seven death zones. I will choose the most dangerous one and wait for them there!"

As Lin Ming spoke, his eyes shimmered with a deep killing intent. He knew that whether it was Tian Mingzi or Imperial Prince Naqi, neither one of them would give up on chasing him down here. This was similar to Lin Ming not giving up on a lucky chance even if the situation was dangerous.

His advantage was that he understood the dao field of God Burying Ridge. With it, he could use the terrain to his benefit.

Xiao Moxian's heart skipped a beat as she heard this. Although God Burying Ridge's dao field was far less dangerous than Tragic Death Valley's God Beast Tomb array formation, it was still extremely terrifying. In the legends, it was said that even Great World Kings perished here. If Lin Ming chose the most dangerous death zone of them all, then it was unknown just how brutal the battle would be.

"Do you plan on even killing Tian Mingzi?" Xiao Moxian gasped. Tian Mingzi's cultivation was simply far too different from their own. Lin Ming had just stepped into the Divine Lord realm. For him to kill the Great World King Tian Mingzi, this was an unimaginable feat.

Lin Ming said, "Tian Mingzi is an extremely deep and secretive individual. In the past when he was a direct disciple of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, he came into contact with the saint race and became their spy. Finally, by relying on his own strength and plots he was able to undermine the entire Verdant Feather Holy Lands. Even the Great World King of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands was killed off by him. If I want to kill him, I have no assurance of being able to do that at all."

According to Mo Eversnow, Tian Mingzi was a dreadfully talented individual, no worse than Mo Eversnow herself. If his plans hadn't been ruined at the Sky Spill Planet and he also lost a hand, then he would have become an Empyrean sooner or later. Moreover, Tian Mingzi had no background to speak of. He was nothing more than a common mortal martial artist. For him to arrive at this level with his talent and schemes was already astonishing enough.

Lin Ming would certainly fear such a ruthless character.

In truth, if it were possible, Lin Ming didn't want to toss himself into a life or death battle with Tian Mingzi right now. To face someone that he didn't know the full strength of and was also two and a half large boundaries higher in cultivation, this was a truly unwise decision.

However, if Lin Ming didn't face Tian Mingzi then his only choice was to hide away in Tragic Death Valley once more to seek out protection and then nothing would change. Tian Mingzi would keep guard outside Tragic Death Valley, and as for Lin Ming, he would have to go into seclusion there. In the dark and desolate land of Tragic Death Valley, it would be nearly impossible to make another breakthrough.

Lin Ming's cultivation in seclusion had already reached a bottleneck. He needed to continue tempering and sharpening himself through tribulations and battles in order to walk further down the road of martial arts.

Primordius Heavenly Palace shot forwards like a meteor. In a situation where he was speeding forth without any consideration for the massive amount of energy consumed, everything passed by in a flash. Soon, Lin Ming arrived at his destination. A hundred miles in front of him was a land of absolute darkness, a void of chaos.

This entire land was covered in black fog. In the midst of this swirling fog was a massive tear in the void. The tear revealed endless darkness, and this darkness seemed as if it led to a different time and space.

This was the most dangerous death zone of God Burying Ridge – Chaos Prison!

Here, time and space were incomparably chaotic, as mixed up and crazy as a labyrinth. If a Divine Lord or Holy Lord realm martial artist were to enter, they would instantly lose themselves in the chaotic space-time and be forever unable to leave.

Even for a World King powerhouse, once they entered deep into Chaos Prison, they would have to face the terrifying force fields and space-time storms within. They would have to consume a massive amount of energy, and if they couldn't escape in a short period of time then they would also die there.

"This place is..."

Seeing this black fog that emitted a horrifying aura, Xiao Moxian was startled. She knew that Lin Ming was about to fly into this land!

In these past years, Xiao Moxian had perceived the Asura Sutra First Volume and also had the basic ability to judge and determine the God Burying Ridge dao field. She could instantly see that this place which Lin Ming chose could be called the riskiest and most deadly place of the entire God Burying Ridge!

“This is Chaos Prison!” Lin Ming said without turning around. To the speeding Primordius Heavenly Palace, a hundred miles took nothing more than several blinks of an eye. Then, with an unstoppable momentum, Primordius Heavenly Palace broke into Chaos Prison like a comet crashing into the earth!

Xiao Moxian held her breath. She believed that Lin Ming could easily flit through Chaos Prison normally, but to do so when being chased by two World Kings, this was a true life or death struggle!

Even though Lin Ming was familiar with the God Burying Ridge dao field, the force fields and space storms in Chaos Prison were the same to everyone. If Lin Ming was sucked into one of them he would die like everyone else. Lin Ming’s one advantage here was that he could follow the dao field within Chaos Prison and avoid these fatal storms.

Ka ka ka!

As Primordius Heavenly Palace entered Chaos Prison, the entire structure shook. In the center of the array formation, three nine sun jades immediately shattered, turning into ash.

It was obvious that Primordius Heavenly Palace had just been struck by the force fields and storms here and consumed a massive amount of energy to defend itself!

Lin Ming said, “If we stay within Primordius Heavenly Palace then there is no way for us to avoid the force fields and storms. We must leave this place. Enter my inner world and let me handle the rest.”

Lin Ming said without further explanation. He began to take back Primordius Heavenly Palace, and in the next moment he and Xiao Moxian were teleported outside.

This place was like a universe filled with a thick and sticky black space. There were wild storms everywhere and also terrifying raging currents of energy. Space and time was muddled and killing intent shot out in all directions. Many dangers were invisible and unable to be sensed. If one were to die here, there would be nothing left of their corpse.

As Lin Ming drew Tian Mingzi to this danger zone, in order to guarantee that he could be as flexible as possible, his only choice was to put away Primordius Heavenly Palace and place himself in the midst of absolute danger.

Xiao Moxian deeply stared at Lin Ming. There seemed to be many words she wanted to say reflected in her eyes, but she also knew that now was not the time to talk. She grit her teeth, stamped her feet and plunged into Lin Ming's inner world.

Xiao Moxian was well aware that before breaking into the Divine Lord realm it would be impossible for her to assist Lin Ming in any way. If she carelessly interfered then she would instead drag him into harm's way. Hiding out in his inner world was the best choice in the current situation.

This was also the same as handing her life over to him. If Lin Ming died, she would perish with him.

After several breaths of time, Tian Mingzi arrived outside Chaos Prison like ghosts and gods. He looked deeply at the terrifying void of fog beneath him, his complexion gloomy and uncertain.

"This boy, he wants to lure me inside!" Tian Mingzi knew that this was a danger zone, however he had no choice but to enter!

"Could Lin Ming… have something he can rely on to survive in this danger zone?"

Tian Mingzi knew that there was a reason for Lin Ming leading him here. The most logical explanation was that this danger zone suited Lin Ming the most.

With a deep breath, Tian Mingzi revolved his protective true essence to the limit. In the next moment, he shot into Chaos Prison like a falling star.

When Tian Mingzi laid an array formation down outside of Tragic Death Valley, he had left a tracking mark in the array formation too. Afterwards, when Lin Ming stepped into the array formation, this tracking mark was naturally kept on his body.

This was one of the things that Tian Mingzi was relying on to hunt down Lin Ming. Otherwise, if he were to fly into Chaos Prison then it would be difficult to find him.

Arriving soon after Tian Mingzi was Imperial Prince Naqi and his group. Before they neared Chaos Prison, the God Burying Ridge guides, the Spider Brothers, quickly changed complexions.

“Stop! Stop! Slow down! We cannot go any further! That is a danger zone in front of us! Anyone who enters will die!”

The Spider Brothers anxiously cried out.

“Mm?” Imperial Prince Naqi frowned. He glared at the Spider Brothers, his vision fierce and swift.

At this time, the two brothers were paler than paper. They absolutely didn’t want to take another step forwards.

“That is an extremely perilous land before us. In these years there has never been a God Burying Ridge guide who dared to fully enter. I fear that even if a World King powerhouse were to enter they would still suffer fatal dangers and be unable to leave!”

The Spider Brothers had no information about Chaos Prison. Of those that entered Chaos Prison, very few survived. Even for those surviving, they had no reason to share any information about such a danger zone with the Spider Brothers. But, just by surveying the surrounding environment and using their own intuition, they knew that this place couldn’t be casually entered, otherwise they might suffer the fate of total annihilation.

“An extremely perilous land where even World Kings would perish?” As Imperial Prince Naqi looked at Chaos Prison, he cracked his knuckles, explosive sounds echoing out from them.

Chapter 1509 – Blue Throne Bai Qi

Chapter 1509 – Blue Throne Bai Qi

…

…

…

“This boy wants to lure us into a trap!”

Naqi’s vision was gloomy as he stopped his steps.

“Imperial Prince Your Highness, perhaps the Spider Brothers fear death and are intentionally exaggerating the dangers.” Naqi’s follower said with a true essence sound transmission.

Naqi pondered for a moment. Then, he said, “That Lin Ming is a lunatic. He really might be thinking to fight us to the death in that danger zone. If he dies, he thinks he can drag us down with him. I don’t know what he relying on, but what I can confirm is that he has a very deep understanding of God Burying Ridge and he also understands how to use the terrain to avoid disaster. For him to find this danger zone here shouldn’t be by accident!”

Although Naqi dreamt of killing Lin Ming, he still hadn’t lost his calm.

Mister Zhou said, “Your Highness is right. As long as we remain cautious we shouldn’t have any problems. Let me take the others ahead first and Your Highness can remain outside. We contacted Ash Murder a while ago and he should catch up to us any time now.”

Naqi hesitated for a moment, then, he looked towards Mister Zhou and said, “Mm, Old Zhou, remember to be careful. This Lin Ming has a tough life. Luckily, you had the foresight to contact Mister Ash Murder ahead of time. As long as he arrives then everything will be fine.”

Naqi looked towards Chaos Prison, not planning to enter and show off his strength. Even if the Spider Brothers were exaggerating, he wouldn’t recklessly enter a place like that. His strength was below Lin Ming’s to begin with, and within such a danger zone, the chance he would perish in there was too great.

“Me and some others will stay out here to wait for Mister Ash Murder. The rest of you enter to chase Lin Ming!”

Naqi ordered. As the Spider Brothers heard this they began to panic. “Chase Lin Ming? Imperial Prince, you are asking us to die!”

“Heh, if you don’t want to go in then you can die now. The choice is yours.” Naqi icily said. He hadn’t put forth such a high service fee for nothing.

The Spider Brothers blanched. They glanced at Mister Zhou, who had currents of astral essence flowing around him, and also glanced at the Chaos Prison which was exuding killing intent all over. As they did, their hearts surged with a deep sense of despair. What the Imperial Prince said was true. With Mister Zhou’s strength he could instantly kill the both of them. If they didn’t enter Chaos Prison now then they would die. There was simply no alternative for them.

Mister Zhou didn’t even give them the chance to hesitate. He reached out his hand and a terrifying strength covered the two Spider Brothers, holding them tight and dragging them along into Chaos Prison!

As soon as they entered Chaos Prison, the environment around them suddenly changed. As they entered that originally pitch black space tear, they saw that everything became a spiritual land rich with origin energy. Although there were no world treasures here, they could feel a heaven and earth origin energy so thick that it nearly substantialized. In the skies, dense origin energy clouds formed, as if it would rain down droplets of origin energy at any time.

A faint green aura covered the ancient land, as if some divine treasure was hidden here.

Within Chaos Prison, space and time were jumbled up. Although the entrance was the same, Lin Ming and Mister Zhou had ended up in completely different spaces.

Feeling the surrounding aura, Mister Zhou's eyes brightened. He could faintly feel that within this Chaos Prison, there existed some rare treasure!

As he turned around he saw that the entrance had already vanished. He was now trapped in a sealed off space and time. However, because he had just entered Chaos Prison, the hindrance of space and time here wasn't too intense so it wasn't yet able to block him.

He sent out a summary of his speculations to Imperial Prince Naqi in a sound transmission.

"Treasure?"

Imperial Prince Naqi's eyes brightened. There were many treasures in God Burying Ridge and Chaos Prison was known as a danger zone that even World Kings could die at. It would be normal if there was a shocking lucky chance there!

High risk also meant high rewards.

Imperial Prince Naqi clenched his fists, an excited color flashing in his eyes. If he could kill Lin Ming and obtain the treasures in Chaos Prison, then that would be a great lucky chance!

With such a lucky chance placed in front of him, how could he not be excited?

However, no matter how eager he was, he still didn't lose his calm. His guess was that Lin Ming had a certain understanding into Chaos Prison and the environment within, otherwise there was no way he would have placed himself in such a death zone. If Naqi followed him in without any reassurance, then with his cultivation not only would he not be able to help Mister Zhou but he might even become a burden to him. At that time, not only would he not obtain any treasures but, his life might be taken by Lin Ming.

As Imperial Prince Naqi thought of this, he suppressed the desire for this lucky chance in his heart. An icy light glimmered in his eyes. “Lin Ming, you brought me to this place and even showed me such lucky chances, I must thank you for that. But do not think I am an idiot you can fool around with. Even a lion must use its full force to capture a rabbit. Although your cultivation hasn’t yet reached the Divine Lord realm, I will still gather the strongest force possible before killing you with everything I have!”

With two World Kings as well as Ash Murder who was rushing here, there were many masters hunting down the mere Divine Transformation realm Lin Ming. This could be called an absolute victory!

.....

At this time, in Chaos Prison, Lin Ming had already flown deep into the depths of this land. Here, he could feel a terrifying pressure. This pressure affected not only his body but also his soul. If a martial artist was lacking in cultivation then even flying would be difficult here.

Lin Ming silently revolved the Asura Sutra, using the Laws within to resist the pressure. He immediately felt much more relaxed.

The Asura Sutra was the inheritance of the Asura Road Master. In a sense, it could be called the Heavenly Dao Laws of the Asura Road itself. Lin Ming had only studied the general outline and first volume of the Asura Sutra. Although he couldn’t be said to possess the ability to control the Asura Road’s Heavenly Dao Laws, he at least understood how to follow them.

With the support of the Asura Sutra, the pressure on Lin Ming became less and less intense. Gradually, he managed to acclimate himself to this pressure and return to his normal flying speed.

This Chaos Prison was flooded with deep killing intent everywhere. But as long as Lin Ming was a bit more careful, he could freely move wherever he wished.

As he passed through a space crack, Lin Ming arrived in a strange hall he had never seen before.

“This place is…”

Lin Ming’s vision sharpened. At this time he could see a massive black altar in front of him. Around this altar were rows of sculptures. These sculptures were all carvings of martial artists from different races. They held wild and dangerous weapons in their hands and all wore the same patterned armor. Their bodies emitted a dense demonic power.

“It’s this demonic power again.”

Demonic power flooded all the inheritances of the Asura Road Master. Many of his cultivation methods were dominated by this demonic power, using it as their lead.

Lin Ming counted the sculptures; there were a total of 108 of them.

“108 iron-armored spectral soldiers… they seem to be guarding something.”

Lin Ming looked at the altar. He could faintly feel that there was a great power buried within the altar, as if some unrivaled powerhouse had suppressed a dreadful existence there.

Was the one who arranged this altar the Asura Road Master?

Lin Ming thought. He began to probe the altar’s array formation. Compared to the God Beast Tomb’s great array formation, this one was far inferior. Even if the Asura Road Master had arranged this, he should have done so casually. But even if he did so casually, it should still contain a horrifying power!

Lin Ming slowly advanced forwards. The ground was covered with lines and these lines were the same as God Burying Ridge. They were divided into paths of life and paths of death. If he stepped onto a path of death, he would activate a disastrous sequence of events.

Lin Ming made his way onto the altar. As he looked around, he could see dao patterns inscribed all over the altar floor. These dao patterns came from the same origin as the Asura Sutra. As Lin Ming looked around, he spotted several ancient words. What was written was – "Asura Road Master's third generation disciple: Blue Throne Bai Qi."

Blue Throne Bai Qi?

Lin Ming was startled. So the one who left behind these ancient words was the disciple of the Asura Road Master.

Blue Throne Bai Qi. Blue Throne should have been his title, and Bai Qi was his name. Throne might be the title of a position in the influence that the Asura Road Master established in the past, similar to an Elder, or it could be something else altogether.

This was another character who had existed billions of years ago. Now, he was likely dead.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming's mind stirred. He carefully looked over the dao patterns on the altar. These dao patterns, in addition to the essential protective measures, also possessed soothing and calming properties.

After a martial artist died, if their body and soul were intact, if they were too powerful, and if they were also sealed in an enclosed space, then the force field of their body would not dissipate for an extremely long time. After tens of thousands of years, it was possible for this force field to evolve into ghosts and evil spirits. It was even possible for the martial artist's corpse to rise up, gaining a certain sentience of its own.

But, if there were calming dao patterns carved onto the tomb, then this situation wouldn't occur.

If so, then this altar was in fact a grave!

Lin Ming suddenly became aware. If he wasn't wrong, then this was the grave of the Asura Road Master's disciple, Blue Throne Bai Qi!

It was even possible that each of the seven great death zones of the God Burying Ridge had a disciple of the Asura Road Master buried within it.

When these disciples of the Asura Road Master were nearing the end of their lifespan, they must have chosen to be interred in graves surrounding Tragic Death Valley, creating a seven star formation to stabilize and protect the potential of Tragic Death Valley with it in the center.

Perhaps this was their way of expressing their respect towards their master, or perhaps they were protecting something.

"God Burying Ridge, God Burying Ridge… so that's how it is. I thought that this God Burying Ridge meant that even gods would be buried if they entered, but in truth I was mistaken. The original meaning of God Burying Ridge was that divine gods were buried here, and these divine gods were the disciples of the Asura Road Master."

Lin Ming didn't know what boundary the disciples of the Asura Road Master had reached. If he were to think they were True Divinities, that simply seemed far too exaggerated. After all, there was an extremely small number of True Divinities even within the entire 33 Layered Heavens.

However, calling them Empyreans was the bare minimum. They might have even been extreme Empyreans.

As Lin Ming was thinking, his mind stirred. He had already sent out his sense and had felt that some people were approaching.

"The ones hunting me down have finally arrived. They aren't too slow, but I wonder just who came." Lin Ming licked his lips, his eyes blazing with a brilliant fighting spirit!

He had waited for this battle for a long time!

During the nine years within Tragic Death Valley, Lin Ming had spent most of that time in seclusion and hadn't fought a single battle. Now that he finally left Tragic Death Valley, he felt his blood boil over at the thought of the powerful opponents he had to face, as if he had suppressed the raging strength within himself for far too long and needed to erupt!

Chapter 1510 – Provoke

Chapter 1510 – Provoke

…

…

…

Bang!

A dreadful explosion burst out from the endless black void, accompanied by faint pained screams. In the next moment, a space crack opened and several wounded people were pushed through, in an extremely distressed and miserable state. They were part of Mister Zhou's group.

There were originally seven of them, but now only five were left; the other two had died.

The ones surviving were only Mister Zhou, a half-step World King martial artist, a late Divine Lord martial artist, and the two Spider Brothers.

Even in this Chaos Prison where killing intent was everywhere, the Spider Brothers' experience and intuition were able to be displayed to a great affect. It was the reason their group had managed to survive until now.

"What place is this?"

Mister Zhou looked at the magnificent ancient altar in front of him. They had just been in a chaotic space storm but in the next moment they had arrived within a grand hall; it could only be said that the space-time within Chaos Temple was far too chaotic.

Besides this ancient black stone altar, there were also 108 stone sculptures surrounding it. The altar was covered in dao patterns that exuded a deep killing intent, as if there was some incomparably powerful strength sealed within it.

“There is a treasure here!”

Mister Zhou’s eyes brightened. The aura all around was definitely not because the origin energy here was too rich, but because there were some rare treasures sealed away here!

Mister Zhou didn’t recognize these dao patterns that originated from the same source as the Asura Road Master’s dao patterns, and thus he definitely didn’t know that it was a grave. But, just based on his many years of experience he was able to conclude that there were some great treasures beneath the altar!

His judgment was not wrong. Whether or not Blue Throne Bai Qi’s corpse was interred beneath the altar, there would definitely be a massive number of funeral objects buried with him. These funeral objects would hold an unparalleled attraction towards a World King powerhouse!

“Old Zhou, what do we do? Do we continue chasing after Lin Ming or should we dig up the treasures here?”

The half-step World King said from beside Mister Zhou, a bit of uncertainty in his voice. As they arrived here they had encountered many dangerous situations. Even though they saw a treasure in front of them they still didn’t dare to recklessly act. No matter what it was, anything in Chaos Prison wouldn’t be easy to take.

Mister Zhou thought for a moment. “We must chase after Lin Ming but we also cannot give up these treasures. It was said that God Burying Ridge is related to the Asura Road Master, so perhaps these treasures were left behind by him!”

Just what sort of character was the Asura Road Master? Let alone an ordinary World King like Mister Zhou, even an Empyrean powerhouse would greedily covet the Asura Road Master’s treasures.

For all martial artists, if they didn’t struggle for a lucky chance when it was placed in front of them, then they simply didn’t need to cultivate the martial path.

And hearing Mister Zhou’s words, the Spider Brothers grimaced, their complexions changing. In their eyes, this black stone altar was a danger zone amongst danger zones; they couldn’t even run in time, much less think of digging for treasures here!

“You… you…” The older Spider Brother gulped. “Do you know what place this is? Demonic power, black stone altar, and also 108 puppet guards, this is an absolute death zone. Once the great array formation is activated here then all of us will die!”

As the older Spider Brother spoke, his face paled and his lips shivered. He was well aware that even if they dug out some treasure here there would be no share for them. For them to come here was simply asking to die.

“I beg you to let us brothers go!”

The younger Spider Brother fervently begged. The deeper they ventured into Chaos Prison, the lower the chances that the two of them would emerge alive.

“What long-winded nagging!” Mister Zhou’s eyes turned cold. “If you continue babbling nonsense then I’ll kill you both here!”

Mister Zhou’s voice was filled with killing intent. At this moment, from beside Mister Zhou, the half-step World King said with a sound transmission, “Old Zhou, we should use these two as pathfinder stones. Let’s make them step on the altar floor first to see if there is any danger.”

As this point was suggested, Mister Zhou’s thoughts stirred. “Your suggestion is good, but now isn’t the time for that. We should wait for Mister Ash Murder to arrive here. His Highness the Imperial Prince has our tracking mark and with Mister Ash Murder’s strength they should definitely be able to find us even in this absolute death zone. When we’ve all gathered together then it won’t be too late to have these two cannon fodders explore the way for us.”

“Old Zhou, you’re right, haha! We should wait for Mister Ash Murder to arrive. Once he does, all of the treasures will be ours!”

The two martial artists beside Mister Zhou were elated. If the Asura Road Master had buried treasures here, then although they couldn’t eat the meat they could still have a bit of the soup. Perhaps they might even stumble into their own lucky chance here.

Like this, Mister Zhou and his group sat down and began to meditate. Hidden within the array formation, Lin Ming frowned. These people weren’t foolish enough to rush into the array formation to dig for treasures, but instead seemed as if they were waiting for others.

Lin Ming noticed that their group was missing Imperial Prince Naqi and Tian Mingzi. His first thought was that they must be coming to reunite with Mister Zhou.

Lin Ming had Tian Mingzi’s tracking mark on him. Even if he was hiding in this array formation, Tian Mingzi would still sense him. Lin Ming certainly wouldn’t idly sit by and allow all of his enemies to gather together in one place.

“If you don’t want to move into the array formation then I’ll help you!”

Lin Min sneered. Like this, he emerged from the shadows of the array formation.

As he stepped out from the shadows of the array formation, his aura was no longer isolated by it. He was immediately sensed by Mister Zhou and his group.

Mister Zhou’s eyes shot open!

“Who is it!?” He leapt up, his eyes focusing on Lin Ming. At this time, the light within the hall was extremely dim and Mister Zhou’s eyes were like bolts of lightning in the dark skies, piercing through the layers of gloom to see Lin Ming.

“Lin Ming!? It’s you!?”

Mister Zhou looked at Lin Ming with incredulity.

Lin Ming had actually appeared here and even presented himself in front of them! He simply didn’t know the meaning of life or death!

Around Mister Zhou, everyone began taking out their weapons. Several senses locked tightly onto Lin Ming.

“You little beast, you are courting death!” The half-step World King saint said, a diabolic grin crossing his face. In his opinion, Lin Ming was simply a cunning brat, as slippery as a cockroach. Once someone grabbed onto Lin Ming, killing him would be extremely simple.

“I’ll kill you in three moves!” The saint martial artist said, about to attack. However, Mister Zhou blocked him. “Don’t be impulsive. This is a trap!”

Mister Zhou didn’t believe that Lin Ming was an idiot. If he dared to appear in front of them even when he wasn’t their match then he must have something he was relying on. The best explanation would be that there were traps here.

“Haha!” Lin Ming laughed. “Are you all so gutless? Weren’t you chasing after me? Now the five of you are all standing there and each of you have a cultivation higher than mine, and yet you’re too scared to attack me. You lot are nothing but little turtles, hahaha!”

Lin Ming loudly shouted. Mister Zhou and the two martial artists besides him immediately developed ugly complexions.

They had a World King and a half-step World King on their side, and yet they were being taunted by a junior like this.

“I must say, old man, what is your name again? When I was leaving Heavendevil City I ran into you. At that time, I was surrounded by you all and saw you riding some stupid-looking monster beast. Your eyes were closed shut and you were wildly waving your arms around like a dumb clown, mumbling crap like some ridiculous side street con artist. I must ask, what were you doing at that time? Were you acting? Were you pretending to be a clown? If you were pretending to be a clown then good job, you even fooled me.”

Lin Ming said. The time he spoke of was when he followed Fatty Zhou to leave for God Burying Ridge. At that time, at the city gates, he had bumped Imperial Prince Naqi and his group. Mister Zhou had been using his Heaven Spying Art to seek out Lin Ming's trail, but because Lin Ming was using the Bodily Rebirth Technique to conceal his appearance, Mister Zhou wasn't able to discover him at all.

Now being mocked by Lin Ming like this, Mister Zhou was livid. Before this, he had openly bragged that as long as Lin Ming was within 50 miles of his Heaven Spying Technique, he could immediately find him through any appearance concealing technique. No matter how well hidden he was, he would still be able to grab Lin Ming. But now, Lin Ming was telling him that he had waltzed away from right in front of him and he hadn't even noticed!

Everyone beside Mister Zhou looked at him. Indeed, Lin Ming's description just now was truly the period when Mister Zhou was entering the city. In other words, Lin Ming had truly avoided them at the city gates. Mister Zhou, a World King powerhouse, had used his special secret technique and yet couldn't sense a Divine Transformation youth. If this matter were to spread out then it would shame him to no end!

"You little beast, I'll smash you in half!" Mister Zhou's eyes flooded with an ominous light. He stepped forwards, nearly wanting to attack.

Lin Ming laughed out loud. "You think you can? I'm standing right here right now, and yet all you can do is talk? Do you have any guts at all? With so many World Kings and Divine Lords, all you can do is stand there and blabber on? In the future, sooner or later there will be a day when I kill my way into the saint race and exterminate all of your people. Whether they are men or women, I will waste away their cultivation and make you all into slaves!"

Lin Ming was too arrogant. This simply wasn't the way he had acted in the past. Mister Zhou felt blue veins bulging out from his forehead. In his life, he had never been so aggrieved before. A junior that was several cultivation boundaries lower than him was actually cursing him to his face and yet he was completely helpless to do anything about it!

"I think you are all little turtles. I will give you all ten breaths of time. If you aren't going to do anything then I'm going to leave. I don't have the time or patience to chatter with you. You can either come over here, wash your necks and prepare to die, or you can hurry up and get the hell out of my way! Go return to your grandmother's home. If all of you are such cowards then why did you enter this place to try and join in on the fun? You shouldn't have bothered coming here to begin with!

"I'm going to start counting now. Ten… nine…"

Lin Ming became increasingly arrogant, just like a wastrel scumbag young master of a noble family, looking down at everyone as if they were worth nothing at all.

The more Lin Ming's current personality diverged from how he was in the past, the more suspicious Mister Zhou became and the less willing he was to move half a step forwards.

"This brat is too conceited! Old Zhou, I will go myself and kill him in three moves!" From beside Mister Zhou, the half-step World King powerhouse was nearly crazy with rage. In his eyes, humanity was nothing but a lowly race that only deserved to be slaves of the saints. But now, this human that he could kill as easily as turning his palm was insulting them to their faces. If he could tolerate this, what else could he tolerate?

Lin Ming laughed, continuing to count. "Eight… seven… six… I must say, you talk so much and yet you do nothing at all. If you think you can kill me in three moves then I'll eliminate you in three moves instead! Perhaps I'll just trample you to death with one foot!"

Chapter 1511 – Absolute Killing Array

Chapter 1511 – Absolute Killing Array

…

…

…

Mister Zhou's complexion became so dark and gloomy that it seemed water could be squeezed out of his face. His killing intent burst out with an unprecedented intensity, all of it falling onto Lin Ming!

However, Lin Ming remained unmoved. He carelessly said, "Three… two and a half… two… one and a half… hey, I've already counted to one and a half, aren't you guys going to come and die yet?"

Lin Ming was purposefully trying to anger them. As he spoke to here, he suddenly noticed that the Spider Brothers seemed to be wanting to sneak away. He laughed, saying, "Hey, you two Imp race turtles, where do you think you're running off to? You haven't even fought me yet, just how sad is that!"

The Spider Brothers felt that the situation was spiraling out of control. Once these people were provoked into doing something by Lin Ming, they would definitely be dragged into their deaths. They were thinking to quietly escape, but Lin Ming's words immediately caused them to freeze in place.

At this time they didn't have any thoughts of even trying to bother Lin Ming. Mister Zhou was like a powder keg ready to blow up at any moment. The slightest action that caused Mister Zhou to be unhappy could set him off, causing him to kill them both out of shame and anger!

However, Mister Zhou seemed as if he didn’t care about the Spider Brothers at all. He continued to stare at Lin Ming, his eyes filled with killing intent.

“Hahaha, if you keep staring your eyeballs might pop out. Really, how boring of you. There are only two numbers left! One! Zero!” Lin Ming finished counting down from ten and then waved his hands, saying, “I’m not going to wait here for you; I’m leaving first. If we have another chance then let's meet again in the future!”

Lin Ming turned with a flourish, swaggering away as he left.

This caused the two saint race martial artists beside Mister Zhou to become so angry that fires seemed to fan out from their eyes. “That brat, he must be faking things!”

Someone shouted.

The truth was that Mister Zhou was also suspecting this. This was possibly some play that Lin Ming was putting on to run away! If they watched helplessly as Lin Ming managed to escape like this then not only would this become the greatest shame of his life but he would also become the laughing stock of the entire saint race! He would even be punished by the rules of his people!

But to really run over and grab Lin Ming… he didn’t have the courage to do so!

Thinking of this, Mister Zhou suddenly roared out loud. He reached out a hand and grasped towards the Spider Brothers!

The Spider Brothers weren’t Mister Zhou’s match at all. They cried out in fear as a golden hand made of astral essence grabbed them both!

“Ahhh!”

“Forgive us!”

The Spider Brothers shouted out with pale faces. However, Mister Zhou didn’t care about their objections at all. He grabbed both of them and his muscles bulged out as he threw them towards Lin Ming with all his strength!

In that moment the Spider Brothers felt as if their bodies were being torn apart by a tremendous strength. The terrifying speed they were sent hurtling forwards at struck them like a bolt of thunder!

Mister Zhou himself was a body transformation martial artist. Once he erupted with all his strength, his steps could shatter the earth and his fists could sunder mountains and rivers. The Spider Brothers were tossed forwards like sand bags, so hard that even a tiny planet could be crushed! As for a Divine Lord realm martial artist, they would be smashed to death!

He wanted to use the Spider Brothers to smash Lin Ming to death. At the same time, he could also use them to investigate the mysteries of the black altar and see if this was a trap laid down by Lin Ming.

“Ahhhhhhhhhhh!”

The Spider Brothers hurtled forth like a meteor. Their sad and miserable cries were torn apart by the tremendous currents of astral essence. Upon seeing this, Lin Ming’s arrogant smile immediately vanished, instead replaced by a cold killing intent. He sneered, “So you finally started to do something. Although you think you are just probing me with some cannon fodder, this killing array isn’t as simple as you think it is.”

Lin Ming used a true essence sound transmission to rapidly speak. Before he finished speaking, the black altar in front of him suddenly shook. Then, a hundred thousand rays of black divine light shot out from the altar, piercing through the void like divine swords!

The Spider Brothers were struck by these divine swords and were instantly split apart, turned into nothing but minced meat!

Peng!

At nearly the same time, an even thicker beam of black divine light struck the Spider Brothers, reducing their minced meat to ashes!

Finally, their corpses didn't even remain atop the altar. This was Blue Throne Bai Qi's grave, no one was allowed to blaspheme it!

"What?!"

Mister Zhou's pupils contracted. The Spider Brothers being split apart and reduced to ash by the hundred thousand rays of divine light was horrifying, but also within his expectations. However, what shocked him the most was that when those black beams of divine light were randomly shooting about, he could see Lin Ming clearly standing atop the altar, not moving at all within the storm of black divine light. Even so, those black beams of divine light seemed to have eyes, all of them avoiding Lin Ming, not even touching the hem of his robes!

"He can control the great array formation here!?" Mister Zhou was panic-stricken as he thought of this. If this were true then that was truly dangerous!

"That's not right! If he can control the array formation here then he should have been able to use it to directly attack me. There should have been no reason for him to provoke me into doing something. No, he shouldn't be able to control the array formation but he should be able to see through it. The area where he is standing should be the life zone of this array formation where no divine lights are able to attack him!"

Mister Zhou instantly thought. This situation was slightly better. However, Lin Ming was already in an invincible position, it would be impossible for them to kill him!

"We're withdrawing!"

Mister Zhou was decisive in his decision. Seeing that it was impossible to kill Lin Ming, he needed to convene with Mister Ash Murder and further consider the situation.

He believed that with Mister Ash Murder's strength, combined with Tian Mingzi, they would have the ability to kill Lin Ming. After all, this Chaos Prison was only known as a danger zone where World Kings died. If one was strong enough they could still break through the array formation!

However, Lin Ming only laughed. "You still think you can run away now? It is too late! This is the tomb of Blue Throne Bai Qi! You want to walk away like nothing happened after disturbing Senior Bai Qi's grave? Keep on dreaming!"

Lin Ming's eyes were icy cold. At this time, the 108 sculptures around the altar began to shake. Their eyes opened, revealing sparkling red lights. These sculptures were actually alive!

Seeing this scene, Mister Zhou felt all the hairs on his body rise. These puppets were emitting a dreadful aura of demonic power; it was hard to imagine how strong they were!

To deal with several of these sculptures was manageable, but if he wanted to simultaneously face 108 of them together, he would be hacked apart in the onslaught of attacks!

Mister Zhou couldn't bother with saving his subordinates. He turned around, wanting to flee alone. But as he turned, he saw something that left his entire body cold. The entrance to this hall, the narrow space crack that they had travelled through, had vanished!

The exit had been blocked!

"Damn it all!"

Although Mister Zhou had already guessed that this was an absolute killing zone, he didn't think it would be dangerous to such a degree. He originally thought that the only danger in this hall was the altar and that it would have many traps hidden within it, thus the reason he had used the Spider Brothers to probe it. In the worst case situation the Spider Brothers would die a miserable death and the rest of them could safely retreat. However, he didn't expect that just probing the altar would trigger the absolute killing array here!

“Break for me!”

Mister Zhou punched his fist against the sealed space barrier, wanting to shatter through the void and escape. However, the space barrier remained motionless. There was no path for them to escape!

Chapter 1512 – Killing a World King

Chapter 1512 – Killing a World King

…

…

…

"Attack together! Risk everything!"

In this life or death moment, Mister Zhou's eyes turned blood red. He joined forces with the other two to attack together!

But at this time, the iron-armored spectral soldiers had come alive. Their bodies emitted crackling 'ka ka ka' sounds as stone chips peeled off from their bodies, fluttering onto the floor!

These iron-armored spectral soldiers had glowing red eyes. Their bodies were withered and from these withered bodies one could faintly see visible skin texture!

As Lin Ming saw this he sucked in a breath of cold air. These iron-armored spectral soldiers weren't sculptures at all, nor were they puppets; they were true people that were molded over and sealed in black stone to form sculptures!

It was impossible for a living person to be sealed for billions of years. But, a corpse, if sealed away using some secret technique, had a possibility of being preserved for 10 billion years as an iron-armored spectral soldier!

These people might have been killed by Bai Qi before his death and then kept here as funeral objects to accompany him. But, none of that was important. What was important was that in Lin Ming's eyes, he could see that these people had all been World King level existences before their death!

108 World Kings!

It could be imagined that all those billions of years ago during the era when the Asura Road Master ruled the world, the martial arts civilization of that time had been at least 10 times more prosperous than it was now! 108 World Kings… although they had already died and had even been weakened over billions of years, when they joined together they were still a force that Mister Zhou wasn't able to deal with!

Bang!

Mister Zhou and the two other saint martial artists attacked with all their strength. They released their strongest moves, barraging the space barrier in a vicious onslaught. However, even though the three of them joined together, they only managed to cause the space barrier to gently vibrate, without a single dent at all!

Like this, a deep sense of despair surged in Mister Zhou's heart. Although he knew that this was an absolute killing zone before he entered Chaos Prison, he didn't think the risks would be so bad!

Even the cowardly Spider Brothers who feared death had only described Chaos Prison as a place where World Kings might perish. But in Mister Zhou's opinion, the Spider Brothers had never entered this place and had exaggerated their description to serve as a deterrent from entering. So, Mister Zhou wasn't too afraid of entering Chaos Prison.

But now, he knew that the Spider Brothers simply weren't able to see the killing intent here and what he thought was their exaggerated description was actually far lacking compared to the truth. This place was not just a danger zone that a World King might die in, but even for a Great World King, this absolute killing zone was an extremely ominous land filled with fatal perils and little hope of surviving!

“You little beast, your plan was good but since you want to harm me then I’ll drag you to the grave with me!”

Mister Zhou erupted with a roar. Together with his two followers, they all rushed towards Lin Ming. They wanted to attract those 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers to Lin Ming so that they would all perish together!

However, the moment that they hurtled towards Lin Ming, the saber of a spectral soldier immediately chopped towards the waist of the weakest late Saint Lord realm martial artist! Although this iron-armored spectral soldier no longer understood Laws, the arcane skills used to refine its corpse made its bodily strength several times greater than it had been before its death. It was invulnerable, immune to fire and water!

Kacha!

With a loud shattering sound, the saint martial artist’s protective astral essence instantly exploded. With a keening shriek, his body contorted at an incredible angle. He wanted to use his powerful mortal body to resist the saber light and then use a secret body transformation skill to twist and avoid the saber blade.

However, the iron-armored spectral soldier was far too horrifyingly strong; all of that saint race martial artist’s efforts were wasted! Just a single saber strike broke through the Saint Lord realm martial artist’s protective astral essence and at the same time continued to cut through his spine, tearing apart all his organs in the meantime!

He had been split apart at the waist!

In that moment, the late Saint Lord realm martial artist felt the heavens and earth spin around him in a dizzying fashion. Like this, only the upper half of his body continued shooting towards the altar, but during this time several hundred divine lights shot out from the altar, scorching his remains to ash!

The scene of such a wretched death was truly eerie!

As for Mister Zhou and the other half-step World King powerhouse, their cultivation was far deeper. By relying on the horrible death of the Saint Lord realm martial artist as well as the slow speed of the iron-armored spectral soldiers, they circled around and rushed up the altar!

They had already prepared themselves. The moment that black beams of light exploded towards them, they forcefully twisted their bodies to avoid fatal wounds!

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Black divine light pierced through the half-step World King's arm and thigh. After all, his cultivation was lower and he couldn't compare with Mister Zhou. Because of this, he was pierced in several places. Although he avoided being hit in any vital zones of his body, to be so heavily injured on this dangerous altar was the same as dying soon after!

Only Mister Zhou flitted left and right, dodging beam after beam of black light as he rushed towards Lin Ming like a lively cheetah!

Ca!

Black light wove around him. Mister Zhou didn't understand these dao patterns beneath him, thus he stepped on a death zone of the array formation!

As this death zone was activated, several hundred black divine lights shot towards him, sealing away any direction he could escape in. No matter how he twisted his body, he would have to withstand this strike!

"Ahhhh!"

Mister Zhou roared out, erupting his astral essence to the limit, forcefully resisting two beams of black light!

However, the black light was far too terrifying. With a loud rumbling explosion, it was like an iron hammer on glass as it struck Mister Zhou's protective astral essence. With a resounding crack, Mister Zhou's protective astral essence shattered to pieces!

The weakened black light continued forwards, piercing through Mister Zhou's shoulder and thighs!

"So fierce! I have no idea how long the great array formation of this tomb has been here, but it still has such unstoppable might! Even a World King saint martial artist with a powerful body was immediately pierced through."

Seeing Mister Zhou continuing to fly towards him, an excited light shined in Lin Ming's eyes!

All of the strength percolating within his body suddenly erupted to the limit. The phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared behind him, and in the bough of this tree, a dark blue Divine Dragon was slowly flying around!

"Rahh - !"

A resonant dragon roar rang through to the highest heavens. Lin Ming took a step forwards, stepping onto a life zone of the array formation. He waved the Phoenix Blood Spear, releasing the Eight Inner Hidden Gates to their limits!

He actually had no plan to avoid Mister Zhou's strike. Rather, he intended to face it head on!

"You little beast, die!"

The current Mister Zhou was covered in blood. Although his present condition was extremely poor, this was a desperate life or death strike made by a World King; the might behind it was extremely terrifying!

Mister Zhou poured all of his remaining strength into his fist and punched out at Lin Ming!

Facing Mister Zhou's fist, Lin Ming held his spear in both hands and brought it pounding down. "Asura Heavenly Dao, Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!"

In that instant, a dreadful demonic power poured into the Phoenix Blood Spear. This demonic power burned like divine flames, transforming into a winged Asura phantom with three heads and six arms. This Asura phantom's six hands each held different weapons, and behind it also spun the Wheel of Samsara. This Wheel of Samsara had similarities to the Wheel of Destiny Lin Ming saw at the City of Discord. It was one of the secret techniques located within the Asura Sutra, the inheritances of the Asura Road Master – this was the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

Lin Ming had trained for nine years, and after breaking through to the Divine Lord realm, a powerful strength was contained within his body, needing to be released. Thus, he chose to directly confront a World King powerhouse; this would also be his first time doing so!

Bang!

The Phoenix Blood Spear collided with Mister Zhou's fist! In his haste, Mister Zhou hadn't used a weapon. But to the saint race that were skilled in body transformation, their body was their best weapon!

A dreadful explosive sound flooded the area. Mister Zhou felt a titanic strength shoot up his shoulder. His arms went numb and a deep pain enveloped his fists. A trace of blood shot out from his hands!

"What!?"

Mister Zhou was shocked. He thought that his all-out desperate attack would kill Lin Ming, but the result had completely surprised him. Lin Ming had directly resisted this strike! Him, a World King powerhouse, was actually blocked by a human junior who was only several dozen years old!

This was simply a fantastical fairytale!

Although this was a hasty strike and he also didn’t use a weapon, he couldn’t believe that a junior several cultivation realms below him could possess such a terrifying combat strength!

“You!!!”

Mister Zhou’s pupils shrank. As he looked at Lin Ming, a deep fear threatened to overwhelm him. This boy had only grown for several dozen years and yet he had reached this level of ability. If he were given several hundred years to grow, just what would he become!?

At this time, Lin Ming also felt his blood tumbling within him and his true essence in chaos. After all, a World King was still a World King. Even though this World King was exhausted this was still his desperate life or death attack. With this strike, his fist had still been able to suppress Lin Ming’s spear light.

Rumble rumble!

Energy exploded outwards like a tide. In the ruinous shockwaves of that energy, Lin Ming was forced backwards!

However, he had already calculated what path to take. The dao field of the black stone altar had long since been carved into his memory. Every time Lin Ming stepped backwards, he would step on a life zone of the black stone altar and evade the black divine light!

But, Mister Zhou did not have the ability. As he was forced backwards, he bumped into another absolute death dao pattern.

Woosh! Woosh!

Several incomparably thick beams of divine light shot towards Mister Zhou, blocking all directions that he could dodge in. At this time, Mister Zhou had yet to recover himself, thus it was impossible for him to avoid this attack!

Black light howled forwards. A blazing hatred and unwillingness flooded Mister Zhou's eyes.

Peng peng peng peng!

With a series of explosive sounds, Mister Zhou's protective astral essence exploded to pieces. His mortal body was torn apart by the black light and his head flew off. Dimly, Mister Zhou could see as his body became increasingly far away. Then, he saw Lin Ming retreat again and again, but those black beams of light all missed him, none of them even touching his clothes.

"How can this be…?"

Mister Zhou's pupils gradually lost focus. He found it impossible to imagine that a World King powerhouse like himself had hunted down a junior only several dozen years old, and the result was his current grim fate!

Not only would he perish here, but his last desperate attack hadn't been able to harm Lin Ming…

Amidst the whistling black light, Mister Zhou's torn up body was completely scorched to ash!

Like this, a World King powerhouse was turned to ash in front of Bai Qi's grave. This was the first World King powerhouse that Lin Ming had slain. Although Lin Ming hadn't directly killed him, he was the one who brought about his death.

Chapter 1513 - More and More Murder

Chapter 1513 - More and More Murder

…

…

…

“A World King powerhouse died by my hands!”

At this time, Lin Ming’s blood was still tumbling within his body. He had yet to fully recover from that violent collision just now.

This was the first World King that Lin Ming had killed, but it wouldn’t be the last. This was because before long, he would have to face the next World King!

That would be a truly savage battle. Either they would die, or he would perish!

“Old… Old Zhou…”

Not too far away from where Mister Zhou had miserably died, the half-step World King that was barely managing to live watched helplessly as everything occurring around him. His two eyes were already dull and glazed over.

When he saw Lin Ming block Mister Zhou’s all-out strike he felt as if he were living in some sort of dream. In that maniacal clash of energy, Lin Ming and Mister Zhou had both been sent flying backwards. However, Lin Ming had avoided the murderous black divine light, and as for Mister Zhou, he had died a horrible death!

“This Lin Ming is simply a demon…”

This was the half-step World King’s last thought. Within a breath of time of Mister Zhou’s death, the 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers rushed over to the altar and hacked him to meat sauce!

Like this, the squad that Mister Zhou led here had been completely annihilated!

However, Lin Ming didn’t relax at all. He looked over to those 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers that were approaching.

Chik chik chik!

After the iron-armored spectral soldiers killed the last saint race martial artist, they turned in unison to Lin Ming and pointed their weapons at him.

Lin Ming’s heart tightened. He slowly retreated, but the 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers continued to press down on him!

He had expected this situation from the very start. Every time he took a step he was able to step on a life zone of the black stone altar’s dao patterns in order to avoid that terrifying black light. But, these iron-armored spectral soldiers were different. Once they were activated, it was hard to say whether or not they would attack him!

In order to minimize the danger, from the start Lin Ming had never disturbed the grave of Blue Throne Bai Qi. Instead, he used words to provoke Mister Zhou into action.

Otherwise, if he only wanted to activate the great array formation here, Lin Ming wouldn’t even have tried to goad his enemies but would have directly attacked them.

The iron-armored spectral soldiers approached closer, step by step. Lin Ming held his breath, his palms wet with sweat.

“Asura Heavenly Dao, Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!”

Lin Ming lifted his hands. Behind him, a brilliantly red wheel appeared. This wheel was engraved with innumerable demons and Asura phantoms. Runes covered its surface, just like the runes that covered the surface of the ancient bronze coffin in the God Beast Tomb array formation. This wheel was thick with the smell of blood and slaughter!

The so-called Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel was the 10,000 life and death samsaras experienced by 10,000 demons. The pain that these demons suffered in their 10,000 samsaras, their sins, the heavenly tribulations they faced, all of their karma was carved into a wheel and condensed into infinite demonic power. This was an offensive and defensive technique!

However, the reason Lin Ming used the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel was not to attack or defend. He was well aware that with his limited strength it was simply impossible for him to oppose these 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers. Even if he were to hide within Primordius Heavenly Palace, he would have to face the barrage of attacks from the great array formation. Sooner or later, Primordius Heavenly Palace would run out of energy and he would be in the same dead end as before.

The only way out of this predicament for Lin Ming was to use the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao and obtain the approval of Blue Throne Bai Qi's array formation.

The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel slowly spun. In the moment that a tide of great demonic power surged out, the 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers froze. The weapons in their hands also slowed down. Their blazing red eyes all focused on the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel above Lin Ming. Those 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers had been demons before their death, and they had a natural sense of awe and subservience upon seeing this Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel.

Lin Ming held his breath, keeping completely still. This sort of feeling was just like a common mortal facing 108 vicious tigers. A single careless move would mean a fate where he didn't even have bones remaining!

This stalemate lasted for a dozen some breaths of time. To Lin Ming, this time was as long as hours. Then, from the black stone altar, beams of black light shot out. Black lights each struck an iron-armored spectral soldier, and these iron-armored spectral soldiers that were struck immediately returned to being black stone sculptures.

In a short period of time, the 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers completely transformed into black sculptures and gathered again around the black stone altar. The sealed off space crack also re-opened.

One difference was that these 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers were in different positions from before. And, the blazing red light in their eyes hadn't yet gone out. This proved that the array formation was still in an active state.

"I'm safe… for now!"

Lin Ming let out a long sigh of relief, his body dripping with sweat. To face such a close encounter with death, the pressure on him had been great.

Stepping on the life zone dao patterns, Lin Ming stepped off the black stone altar. He used black flames to eliminate the pieces of meat and blood on the ground. After that, he removed all traces of combat and also received Mister Zhou's spatial ring and treasures that he dropped. Then, like a ghost, he flitted back to the shadow of the great array formation, waiting in ambush yet again.

He was like a wolf hiding in the dark, waiting for his prey.

He also summoned Primordius Heavenly Palace. This Heavenly Palace contained the Laws of Space and Time and was able to shrink and grow as he pleased. Currently, Primordius Heavenly Palace was only the size of a table. Lin Ming placed it atop a life zone of the black stone altar's dao patterns, and then with a flash, Lin Ming's figure submerged into it.

As soon as Lin Ming entered Primordius Heavenly Palace he relaxed his body. He immediately began to swallow down pills, sitting down in meditation to control his breathing. He was fully aware that the battle he experienced just now was only the appetizer. Soon, he would have to face more battles, in addition to the extremely deep Tian

Mingzi. Lin Ming felt a sense of dread when he thought of Tian Mingzi; he had to adjust himself to his peak condition to face him.

After an incense stick of time, Lin Ming opened his eyes from meditation. He saw Xiao Moxian sitting not too far away from him. When Xiao Moxian had entered Lin Ming's inner world, she also entered Primordius Heavenly Palace within him.

At this time, Xiao Moxian was leaning back in a chair, her long legs propped up on a stone bench. Her snow white thighs were vivacious, filled with the vitality of youth.

"I didn't imagine you would also have this kind of move." Xiao Moxian chuckled. For a time, it was like spring had arrived.

She was referring to when Lin Ming had stood atop the black stone altar and had mercilessly taunted and enraged the saint race martial artists. This sort of Lin Ming was simply far too different from how he was normally.

"The situation required it." Lin Ming wryly smiled.

"Well, nice acting!" Xiao Moxian leapt down from her chair. "What are we going to do next?"

"Wait."

Lin Ming didn't have any better methods. Bai Qi's tomb was an extremely dire and ominous place, but not every spot in this hall was dangerous.

The black stone altar was likely to be where Bai Qi was buried. If Bai Qi's corpse was really interred there, then that black stone altar was undoubtedly the most important place in the entire tomb as well as the most dangerous place. To wait there was the wisest and safest choice.

"The absolute killing array here can identify my Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. Moreover, those 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers are not a force that Tian Mingzi can deal with. If we’re here, we can control the battlefield. However, there’s just something I’m worried about…”

Lin Ming faintly frowned as he spoke.

“What are you worried about?”

“I’m worried that Tian Mingzi might have some hidden card in hand or perhaps he might be plotting something else. When we left Tragic Death Valley, we stepped into the tracking array formation that he laid down and we have his tracking mark within us! The area outside of Bai Qi’s grave isn’t too dangerous. By all rights, with Tian Mingzi’s strength, he should have caught up to us by now. If so, then the first ones to come here shouldn’t have been that one called Mister Zhou, but Tian Mingzi!

“Besides Tian Mingzi there is also Imperial Prince Naqi. Imperial Prince Naqi wasn’t with that Mister Zhou fellow, so there can only be two possibilities. Perhaps he never came to God Burying Ridge, or perhaps there is someone even stronger protecting him. That person might be Tian Mingzi or it might be someone else!”

In Lin Ming’s opinion, Imperial Prince Naqi had an extremely important role in the saint race. Generally speaking, Imperial Prince Naqi should also be the most closely guarded.

Tian Mingzi was a Great World King. In terms of strength, he was much better than Mister Zhou. However, he wasn’t a saint after all and anyone would find it hard to trust in others that weren’t of their race. With the saint race’s naturally arrogant and suspicious minds, Imperial Prince Naqi most likely wouldn’t seek out protection beneath the wing of Tian Mingzi, but with Mister Zhou. However, he didn’t do this. This caused Lin Ming to suspect that during his time in Tragic Death Valley, Imperial Prince Naqi had found an even stronger helper.

As Lin Ming was thinking this, the warning array he left outside of the black stone altar was touched. At this time, the warning array was directly shattered. Lin Ming's thoughts turned cold. Someone had come, and they were apparently much stronger than Mister Zhou!

Chapter 1514 – Mister Ash Murder

Chapter 1514 – Mister Ash Murder

…

…

…

At this time, outside of Bai Qi's tomb, four saint race martial artists were floating in the endless starry skies. Among these four people was Imperial Prince Naqi!

Of the three people, one was Imperial Prince Naqi's subordinate, Manyu, a half-step World King. The other two wore gray capes, their bodies emitting a horrifying aura that was mysterious and dangerous.

One of these two gray-robed people was faintly in the lead. This person was Mister Ash Murder, the person Naqi had invited here.

Ash Murder was a saint, and had once been shown graciousness in the past by the first ranked disciple of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. Now, by helping Naqi, this was the same as returning the favor he owed from the past.

"Mister Ash Murder's sense is truly sharp. Even such a secretive warning array formation was easily discovered by you!"

Imperial Prince Naqi praised from his heart. He didn't know that he had unknowingly stepped into a warning array formation. Even with Mister Ash Murder reminding him, he still wouldn't have been able to see it. Only when Mister Ash Murder destroyed the array formation had he been able to sense it.

"This warning array formation shouldn't have been laid down by that brat Lin Ming, right?"

Imperial Prince Naqi rubbed his chin. If Lin Ming was somewhere ahead of them, laying down a warning array formation so that he could ambush them or escape ahead of time was a highly likely possibility.

The only problem was that Naqi didn't believe this. He found it hard to imagine that Lin Ming's attainments in array formations had reached such a high degree, to a degree that he couldn't sense it at all and only someone like Ash Murder could do so. This disparity was simply far too great.

He admitted that he was lacking in certain aspects when compared to Lin Ming, but he wouldn't be lacking to such a degree.

Ash Murder hesitated for a moment and then said in a deep and icy tone, "It shouldn't be him. This warning array formation comes from the same lineage as the killing array formations here. The dao patterns and array symbols are very similar; it's unlikely that they stem from the hands of a junior."

When Lin Ming laid down the array formation, he had used the exclusive dao patterns of the Asura Heavenly Dao. This was also the reason why Imperial Prince Naqi, as well as Mister Zhou, hadn't been able to sense the warning array formation.

"So that's how it is. If it was part of the killing array formation here then it's not surprising that I wasn't able to discover it!"

Imperial Prince Naqi immediately became aware, feeling that this argument was fair. He laughed, "Mister Ash Murder is too fierce. All the dangers that we encountered along the way weren't able to hinder Mister Ash Murder at all. Speaking of it, these so-called killing zones must be nothing but fun little danger games to Mister Ash Murder. Perhaps even calling them 'games' is too high a word, hahaha!"

Imperial Prince Naqi laughed out loud. His subordinate Manyu also followed in kind. “Your Highness is right. Although this God Burying Ridge is risky, that also depends on the person. With Mister Ash Murder’s strength, coming in and out of here should be extremely easy!”

Ash Murder only faintly smiled at the flattering of these people. His strength had already reached the level of a half-step Empyrean and in these past years he had also studied ancient arrays. Thus he didn’t fear the killing array formations too much. Although he couldn’t freely wander about, he wouldn’t meet any dangers as long as he was a bit more careful.

“In the past, the Saint Sovereign’s disciple, Empyrean Saint Mountain, gave me a great graciousness. And now, today I shall help you eliminate this future disaster to the saint race. This can be considered as returning the favor. As for breaking through array formations, that’s just something I happen to be an expert at. In this God Burying Ridge, the only place I somewhat fear is Tragic Death Valley. As for the other places, they can’t be considered much at all. Even for that Tragic Death Valley, once I break into the Empyrean realm, I will also go in to take a look!”

Ash Murder’s words were calm and plain but filled with a high degree of confidence. He truly did want to go to Tragic Death Valley.

“Haha, Mister Ash Murder, I think perhaps the rumors of Tragic Death Valley are overly exaggerated. Even that brat Lin Ming was able to enter Tragic Death Valley and also safely leave. I think that this Tragic Death Valley is far too mediocre!”

Imperial Prince Naqi coldly coughed. If Lin Ming had truly traveled into Tragic Death Valley and then safely left, he would become the sole person in 10 billion years to do so. Naqi naturally refused to accept this no matter what, thus he had to disparage Lin Ming at any given opportunity.

Mister Ash Murder coldly sneered. “Tragic Death Valley is indeed extremely dangerous. Although you say that Lin Ming safely emerged from Tragic Death Valley, I can’t believe that at all!”

“Mm?” Imperial Prince Naqi was stunned. “This is something that Tian Mingzi saw with his own eyes. Does he have some reason to lie?”

“Anything is possible.”

A contemptuous light flashed in Mister Ash Murder’s eyes. Words could be unreliable; only seeing was believing. If someone were to say that a Divine Transformation realm youth had entered Tragic Death Valley, a place where even Empyreans perished, and had then safely emerged to become the first person to do so in 10 billion years, then he found that impossible to believe. Moreover, Ash Murder had also studied Tragic Death Valley in the past and knew that Empyreans had indeed died there!

For a junior like Lin Ming to do something as ridiculous as breaking out of Tragic Death Valley, Ash Murder wouldn’t believe it even if he saw this happen with his own eyes, much less believe it based on someone else’s account.

“It’s either Tian Mingzi is being untruthful, or that Lin Ming in truth never entered Tragic Death Valley to begin with and was only camouflaging himself!”

Mister Ash Murder said with absolute confidence. Naqi was startled, but he felt this was also extremely likely. At the time, besides Tian Mingzi, no one else had seen Lin Ming fly into Tragic Death Valley. And afterwards, none of them had seen Lin Ming emerge from Tragic Death Valley with their own eyes. They had only heard about his whereabouts and had caught up to him here. Who knew if Lin Ming was simply making circles around Tragic Death Valley?

“A bystander can see the situation clearly. What Mister Ash Murder says is right. I was far too ready to believe in the words of others. This is mainly because I subconsciously believed that Lin Ming had an unbelievably great destiny upon his body, thus it was likely that anything incredible could happen to him and not be strange at all, so I believed everything I heard.”

Naqi frowned as he spoke. He needed to reconsider everything that Tian Mingzi had told him. It wasn't because he thought that Tian Mingzi was lying to him on purpose, but as Ash Murder said, if Lin Ming with his Divine Transformation realm cultivation was really the first person to leave Tragic Death Valley safely in 10 billion years, then this was simply too unbelievable, no matter who heard it.

Naqi believed that because he had been defeated miserably by Lin Ming in the past, he subconsciously thought that it was possible for Lin Ming to create any miracle afterwards. This sort of thinking was the same as being mentally defeated before he even fought Lin Ming. Once a martial artist developed this sort of thinking it was nearly impossible for them to surpass the other party.

"Tragic Death Valley is a place where even Empyreans will be trapped forever. If you say a Divine Transformation realm junior can break out then you are simply taking the world as a joke!" Ash Murder snorted in scathing disdain at Tian Mingzi's opinion. "Imperial Prince, in the future you will be a leader of the saint race and your achievements might be no worse than the Good Fortune Saint Son's. You must not let a human junior throw your heart into confusion."

Ash Murder looked at Naqi and meaningfully said.

Naqi respectfully said, "This junior is truly ashamed. In these past years, during the battle at Chaotic Blood Continent as well as leaving my name upon the Emperor Stone, I have been defeated twice. Those events have really left this junior impatiently angry. In truth, when I fought Lin Ming in the battle on Chaotic Blood Continent, I wasn't any worse than he was, and when we left our names upon the Emperor Stone, that wasn't a true contest of our strength! I will restore my confidence and kill Lin Ming so that my heart of martial arts will achieve perfection."

"Mm, it's commendable that you can realize this. Let's continue forwards now. That human junior shouldn't be too far away."

They had temporarily lost track of Mister Zhou's trail. But, they weren't worried about this, because in Chaos Prison, there were many space barriers and space-time storms, so it was normal to lose contact with tracking marks.

Like this, the four people passed through a space crack and then arrived in a grand hall.

Within this grand hall was a magnificent black stone altar. It immediately attracted the attention of the four.

The black stone altar was covered in dense layers of dao patterns. 108 fierce sculptures surrounded it, flooding the hall with a terrifying demonic power!

"Mm? This place is..."

Imperial Prince Naqi's eyes brightened. He could immediately sense that this place was extraordinary!

"Interesting, interesting!" Ash Murder traced his beard, laughing. He had used his sense to investigate just now and discovered that there were likely some treasures buried beneath the black stone altar!

"The heavens truly help me! If I'm not wrong then there are treasures in this place, and there must be a buried divine trove of some sort! I have come to God Burying Ridge several times before but I never imagined that there would be such great treasures buried in this danger zone. This is a tremendous lucky chance. Although I first came here to hunt down some human junior, this is a perfect coincidence, hahaha!"

"Buried treasure!" Imperial Prince Naqi was immediately enthused by these words. He and Ash Murder were travelling together and Ash Murder also owed a favor to his Good Fortune Saint Palace. By all reasoning, a part of the treasures should be divided to him!

Moreover, it was said that this God Burying Ridge was connected to the Asura Road Master. If so, then perhaps this buried treasure was also related to the Asura Road Master. The value and rarity of the Asura Road Master's treasures could be imagined!

However, being enthused was only being enthused. Imperial Prince Naqi still didn't lose his calm.

"Mister Ash Murder, the aura of demonic power here is too thick, and those 108 sculptures are each concealing a deep killing intent. This is a danger zone, and although there is buried treasure here, obtaining it will not be easy!"

"Of course!" Ash Murder easily responded, his face filled with confidence. "This divine trove is guarded by layers upon layers of protections, so how could it be easy to obtain? Even someone like me must use some effort, but that is only some effort and eventually I will obtain the treasures. These array formations have already existed for billions or even ten billion years. If the might of the array formations in the past were at a ten, then their present state can only be called a one!"

Ash Murder wasn't blindly confident in himself. No matter what array formation it was, it would be greatly weakened over 10 billion years of time. Moreover, he possessed a half-step Empyrean cultivation as well as an understanding into ancient array formations. He was confident he could eventually break through the array formation here.

"Guard me. I will study the dao patterns first."

Upon saying this, Ash Murder carefully stepped forwards. The step he took avoided the death zones runes. Although he didn't understand the Asura Heavenly Dao, by relying on his experience of ancient arrays he could faintly feel his way through one or two steps.

Although Ash Murder didn't step on any death zones, because of Mister Zhou's previous invasion, the great absolute killing array within Bai Qi's tomb was already activated. Now, this step of his had become the fire that lit the fuse. Those 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers began to restlessly stir, the red light in their eyes becoming increasingly bright!

Chapter 1515 – Violently Beating the Imperial Prince

Chapter 1515 – Violently Beating the Imperial Prince

…

…

…

A bright red light began sparkling within the eyes of the 108 sculptures, causing a deep sense of fear to stir within Ash Murder.

Their bodies were emitting a horrifying demonic power!

“These sculptures…” Naqi looked at the 108 sculptures, frowning. He could sense a dangerous aura from them, one that made him feel sick and uneasy!

“Mister Ash Murder!” Naqi couldn’t help but call out.

“It’s no problem.” Ash Murder waved his hand. “The situation is still well within my hand.”

Ash Murder took a step back, turning towards those 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers. Astral essence revolved all over his body as he maintained an air of calm around him.

Seeing Ash Murder’s appearance, Naqi felt slightly relieved. Within this absolute killing zone of God Burying Ridge, he was far too weak. He needed the protection of powerhouses to survive here.

“These 108 sculptures are guarding the divine trove. For such a divine trove, it would actually be more strange if there weren’t guardians.” Ash Murder raised both his hands together, drawing dao patterns in the air.

“We first must handle them, otherwise it will be extremely troublesome once we are digging up the treasures!”

As Ash Murder spoke he formed thousands of dao patterns in the air with his hands. “33 Heavens, the gods of life and death, by the name of Ash Murder, seal away all existence!”

Ash Murder’s body shook as he shot out a gray chaos light. This chaos light was actually a little similar to the black hole from the Divine Seal Art. Of course, it was immeasurably far from reaching the realm of the Divine Seal Art. The Divine Seal Art was a cultivation method created by a True Divinity whereas Ash Murder’s sealing technique was only from an incomplete transcendent divine might.

However, as a half-step Empyrean, Ash Murder’s cultivation was able to make up for the difference in levels. Several thousand array symbols shot out, instantly blocking the void all around him. He actually wanted to seal away the 108 puppets!

As this sealing technique was shot out by Ash Murder, these 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers violently trembled. The red light in their eyes became increasingly savage and cruel and stone flakes shed off from their bodies. They had come back to life!

The strength of these 108 spectral soldiers gathered together. For a time, the entire hall was flooded in a storm of their potent demonic power.

Bang!

The void shook and the earth trembled. The space crack behind the group suddenly closed as the black stone altar sealed away all exits once more.

“Mister Ash Murder!”

Naqi nearly lost his voice crying out as he saw the space crack disappear.

"Don't worry… the situation is still under my control."

Ash Murder clenched his teeth as he spoke. At this time his face was extremely ugly. The strength of these 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers had far surpassed his imagination.

"These are guard puppets formed by some sage! Moreover, they were all World Kings before their death!"

Ash Murder's eyesight was outstanding. He could immediately see through a part of the 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers' array formation.

If this was really a true battle array formed by 108 World Kings then Ash Murder would die without a shadow of doubt. But currently, this was only an array formation composed of 108 World King corpse puppets. With this, he still had the strength to fight.

Although Ash Murder thought highly of himself and seemed overly arrogant, he truly did possess a certain level of ability. With his half-step Empyrean cultivation he was much stronger than Mister Zhou!

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

The gray chaos light that Ash Murder shot out formed gray ropes that wrapped around the 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers. These ropes were covered with shimmering runes. In Lin Ming's eyes, these runes were extremely crude, but with so many of them connected together in addition to Ash Murder's half-step Empyrean cultivation, they were extremely effective. Just three of these ropes could bind a celestial body!

But at this time, the 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers completely recovered. They raised their various weapons and chopped down at Ash Murder's sealing array!

Kacha!

108 weapons slashed down at these gray ropes!

This attack caused Ash Murder to pale!

Luckily, these iron-armored spectral soldiers had limited intelligence. The force of their attacks was spread all throughout the ropes. If they had joined together to attack one spot on the rope then it would have been immediately cut in half!

“I can’t divide my attention, come and lend me a hand! These 108 puppets form a battle array. If we can kill a few of them then the situation will become much easier to handle!”

Ash Murder bellowed. At the same time, he waved his hand and tossed out two human-shaped puppets from his inner world as well as a blue wolf the size of an ox!

Ash Murder himself also refined puppets, and that blue puppet was his contract beast!

Two puppets, a blue wolf, in addition to Imperial Prince Naqi and two others, there were now seven fighters gathered on Ash Murder’s side!

By himself, Ash Murder was using a sealing technique to prevent a frontal collision with those 108 iron-armored soldiers. He was well aware that if his sealing technique broke and those iron-armored spectral soldiers rushed towards them, the consequences would be inconceivable!

Seeing Ash Murder holding up the sealing ropes by himself and reaching his limit, Naqi and the others didn’t hesitate. All of them joined forces to attack the iron-armored spectral soldiers!

Their ultimate attacks composed a simple battle array. With the three people, a beast, and two puppets joining their attacks, a raging torrent of energy erupted outwards!

“Attack!”

Naqi shouted out loud, ready to release the tyrannical energy of their attack. The iron-armored spectral soldiers in Bai Qi’s tomb were formidable, but after billions of years, their bodies had inevitably deteriorated. As long as they could land this attack, killing several of them shouldn't be a problem.

But just as he was about to attack, he felt a cold chill shoot up his back and into the heavens. A profound killing intent had locked onto him!

Someone was sneak attacking him!

This was the first thought that raced through Naqi's mind. He had experienced countless life and death battles and his body had been conditioned to reflexively respond to dangers in a time of crisis. He didn't think about anything else and immediately leapt forwards!

As he rushed forwards, Naqi caught a glimpse of the person who was sneak attacking him. Then, his mind shook!

"Lin Ming! It's you!"

A blazing anger ignited in Naqi's eyes. He watched helplessly as Lin Ming appeared from the shadows like a ghost, grasping the Phoenix Blood Spear in his hand. Behind him, the phantom of a massive True Dragon had appeared!

The power of fire and thunder heavenly tribulation gathered onto the Phoenix Blood Spear. Howling flames and churning thunder wove together, forming a sea of red and purple!

Kacha!

A spear thrust forwards with unstoppable momentum, exploding towards Imperial Prince Naqi and the others! The temporary combat array they formed immediately exploded to pieces, and the energy they gathered was also blown up by Lin Ming's spear. A terrifying wave of energy blew outwards. The two puppets that Ash Murder released were caught up in this detonation of energy and broke into pieces!

Ash Murder’s puppets shouldn’t have been so weak. But, something like a puppet depended on their energy to fight, and at this time the two puppets had gathered all of their energy to attack the iron-armored spectral soldiers. The puppets simply hadn’t reserved any energy to protect themselves and had instead been struck down by Lin Ming!

After the puppets were instantly destroyed, Lin Ming’s spear potential didn’t end. He attacked once more!

And the one he chose to attack this time was Imperial Prince Naqi!

Out of everyone here, Naqi was not some strong and mighty figure, but he was an extremely important person. This was because his status was extremely special. If Naqi died then this would ruin the mentality of everyone here as well as cause tremendous losses to the saint race!

At this time, Ash Murder was using all of his strength to hold back the iron-armored spectral soldiers; he simply didn’t have time to help. Naqi had to face Lin Ming directly!

Naqi drew backwards, using a halberd to block the waves of energy.

“Lin Ming, despicable villain like you can only ambush others!”

At this time, Naqi’s eyes as he glared at Lin Ming could nearly spit out fire!

“You are calling me a despicable villain? I am younger than you and yet to hunt me down you actually brought a half-step Empyrean as well as two World Kings. Yet, you still call me a despicable villain? Do you have any face at all? If you have the courage then come and fight me yourself. If you are too scared then you are even less than a turtle!”

Lin Ming shot out his spear straight towards Naqi’s chest. “Hey turtle, why aren’t you running? Are you planning on meeting my strike head-on?”

Lin Ming’s imperious attitude enraged Naqi!

"Do you think I really fear you? During the battle on Chaotic Blood Continent, you only won because of a magic tool, that wasn't your ability at all! Take my halberd!"

The hate and anger within Naqi's heart erupted like a volcano. Facing Lin Ming's spear, he no longer evaded but instead struck out his halberd in an open welcome!

Naqi's halberd was like a falling mountain. Golden light radiated outwards!

Seeing Naqi's strike falling down, Lin Ming fiendishly laughed. He simultaneously released the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and Heretical God Force to the limit. The Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands emitted a keening cry. For a time, his spear light howled out like a True Dragon.

"Imperial Prince, be careful!"

Ash Murder shouted out from behind Naqi. However, this warning was too late.

Naqi's all-out strike, that dazzling and thick golden spear light, was actually instantly torn into pieces by the True Dragon phantom formed by Lin Ming's spear. This True Dragon seemed all-powerful, undefeatable as it roared towards Naqi!

Just the aura of that dreadful True Dragon caused Naqi's protective astral essence to shake, as if it would collapse at any moment.

Naqi was panic-stricken. Just how was this possible!?

He never thought that he was much worse than Lin Ming. Even though he lost to Lin Ming in the contest of the Emperor Stone, that was only the difference in talent and potential. Something like potential only slowly translated to strength over a long period of time.

In terms of current strength, Naqi didn't think he would lose to Lin Ming. At least, not by much.

"Imperial Prince Your Highness!"

Beside Naqi, the half-step World King, Manyu, rushed forwards, slashing his saber down at the True Dragon phantom. However, even after being cut by this saber, the True Dragon phantom continued with unstoppable force.

“Explode!”

Lin Ming shouted out. All of the strength poured into the True Dragon phantom instantly erupted. That half-step World King was blown away. As for Naqi, he bore the brunt of this attack. Lin Ming’s spear smashed into his chest!

Kacha!

Naqi’s protective astral essence shattered to pieces along with the treasure armor he wore. His ribs broke apart and he spat out a great mouthful of blood. His organs ruptured and he was sent flying backwards like a torn up sack.

“How could… this be… he… he is not at Divine Transformation… he is a Divine Lord!”

Naqi’s eyes were blurred and empty. The moment that he was struck by Lin Ming he also determined Lin Ming’s cultivation. At that time, it was like someone had pulled out his spine.

Lin Ming’s spear strike not only crushed Naqi’s ribs and organs, but it also completely annihilated his confidence!

He couldn’t believe that a mere several years ago, Lin Ming had only been at the middle Divine Transformation realm and now he had grown into the Divine Lord realm!

As for Naqi himself, during the battle of Chaotic Blood Continent he had only been at the late Saint Transformation realm. And even now, he was still at the late Saint Transformation realm. Although his strength had grown, his cultivation remained stranded where it was. Compared to Lin Ming, this was the same as the heavens and earth.

“This is… because of the approval of the Emperor Stone? How can I… ever… surpass such potential…” In that moment, Naqi’s physical wounds were not as great as the wounds of his mind. He had completely lost all courage to face Lin Ming.

Chapter 1516 – The Furious Ash Murder

Chapter 1516 – The Furious Ash Murder

…

…

…

Seeing Imperial Prince Naqi grievously injured by his spear strike, how could Lin Ming give him a chance to recover? Taking advantage of his weakened state, Lin Ming stepped forwards, slashing out the Phoenix Blood Spear to take Naqi's head!

To finish off his opponents without any reservation, this was how Lin Ming fought!

"Your Highness!"

Beside Naqi, Manyu cried out in panic. If the Imperial Prince died then it would be because of his protection being flawed. Once he returned to the saint race he would suffer extreme penalties.

"You dare to injure the Imperial Prince of my people? I'll take your life!" Manyu grabbed a saber and cut out at Lin Ming's waist, wanting to use this attack to force him back.

Lin Ming shouted out loud and a broad and ancient stone gate appeared beside him. This stone gate was as stable and still as a mountain, completely blocking Manyu's saber strike!

Kacha!

The saber slashed down on the stone gate. The stone gate only trembled a little but not a single mark was left behind.

"Out of my way!"

Lin Ming struck his palm out on the stone gate. The stone gate howled out, suppressing Manyu!

“This brat!” Manyu was shocked. Lin Ming’s strength had far exceeded his imagination! By himself, he actually faced all of them together and had taken the upper hand! Although it could be said that Lin Ming took advantage to sneak attack them the moment they were all focused on dealing with the 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers, for him to accomplish this was nearly unbelievable. After all, he only had an early Divine Lord cultivation.

Manyu didn’t have time to think about how Lin Ming broke into the Divine Lord realm in just a few years; he had to face off against this incomparably heavy Primordius Gate. This area was an absolute killing zone. Although Lin Ming was able to recklessly dash about, Manyu definitely didn’t have the courage to do so.

He slashed out several hundred saber lights, all of the saber lights crashing onto the Primordius Gate and releasing a dazzling explosion. At the same time he roared out loud and used his fists to punch against the Primordius Gate. He wanted to use his powerful saint race body to forcefully resist the Primordius Gate.

His entire body swelled with blood vitality, some of it even leaking out the corners of his mouth. He turned around and what he saw left his body icy cold. Lin Ming had already arrived in front of Naqi. Naqi’s face was pale. Right now, his life hung on the thinnest thread!

Lin Ming’s attack was merciless. With a sharp thrust of his hand, the Phoenix Blood Spear whistled forth, howling towards Naqi like a raging red dragon!

As long as this spear struck, Naqi would die without a burial ground!

But as soon as the Phoenix Blood Spear was about to strike Naqi, a gray rope whipped outwards and wrapped around Naqi, immediately carrying him away!

Bang!

The Phoenix Blood Spear heavily smashed into a space barrier. The space barrier trembled and divine light shot out, but the space barrier didn't even have the tiniest crack. This was the space barrier that held Bai Qi's grave; not even a Great World King was able to break through it.

"Just a little bit more!"

Lin Ming darkly sighed in regret. Just a little more and he would have killed Naqi!

As he turned around, he saw Naqi wrapped in the gray rope and shooting towards a gray-robed man. Naqi entered his inner world, vanishing from sight.

This gray-robed man was that mysterious Mister Ash Murder.

"So you are Lin Ming! To think that you would ambush us here. You little beast, I will take your life!"

Ash Murder was so angry that his insides were gurgling within him, seething with rage! Lin Ming had chosen the time when his concentration was completely focused on other matters to sneak attack him. Before this, he didn't even know that Lin Ming had been hiding here. Lin Ming's sudden appearance had left Ash Murder startled.

The battle array that Imperial Prince Naqi and the others formed had been shattered by Lin Ming, and the two puppets were also crushed apart by him. Not just that, but Lin Ming had made him lose his concentration in order to save Naqi. This caused the pressure of those 108 puppets to be even greater on him!

"This brat was already long waiting in ambush here. He was waiting for us to break out of the array formation before he sneak attacked us!"

Ash Murder wasn't an idiot; he was able to immediately understand what was happening. A junior that was only several dozen years old was able to freely move within a danger zone of God Burying Ridge, a place where even World Kings could perish. Not just that, but he was able to keep guard in this ancient array formation and ambush a half-step Empyrean!

This boldness and these methods caused even Ash Murder to feel a cold chill run down his spine.

Lin Ming glanced at Ash Murder and simply didn't bother him with. He turned around and immediately attacked Manyu!

Although Ash Murder had invested all of his strength into sealing away the 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers and was unable to divert his attention, he still possessed a half-step Empyrean cultivation and likely had many terrifying abilities. Lin Ming found it hard to contend with an ordinary World King right now. If he approached Ash Murder, a simple strike would severely wound him or even kill him.

The most intelligent plan would be to wait until Ash Murder was completely exhausted by the iron-armored spectral soldiers, and then Lin Ming could wait for a chance to deal with him.

"Brat, you really do not know the meaning of death or danger!" Manyu was already enraged by Lin Ming. He had been caught off guard by Lin Ming's sneak attack and now that he saw Lin Ming continue to attack him, he roared out loud, grasped his saber and slashed out at Lin Ming!

All of his strength was poured into this saber strike without any held back! He had already seen Lin Ming's strength with his own eyes, but he didn't believe that Lin Ming had the strength to kill a half-step World King in frontal combat.

A saber cut out, the saber light piercing through the dark like a bolt of lightning. At this time, the Phoenix Blood Spear was still covered with the interwoven power of thunder and fire, but it was different from the previous red and purple spear light. This time, Lin Ming's spear also contained a gray light, one that seemed to swallow all of existence!

This gray light was concealed in the spear light, seeming common and humble, something that no one would notice. After all, it wasn't strange for a martial artist's attack to cause an eruption of multi-colored lights. These lights were the colors of the various Laws.

Kacha!

An explosive whistling burst out and Lin Ming's figure suddenly came to a stop. His spear crashed into the saber and the power of thunder and fire erupted, surging outwards!

A terrifying impact spread through Lin Ming's body, causing him to fly away. He didn't lose his balance because of Manyu's attack, but had used the attack to swiftly bounce away like a bird. As for Manyu, his body shook for a moment before he stabilized himself.

"Manyu, join forces with my contract beast and delay Lin Ming! I just need you to buy me some more time!"

Ash Murder shouted as blue veins stuck out all over his face. In that collision just now, Lin Ming had been forced back and Manyu had only shaken a bit. This allowed Ash Murder to let out a breath of relief. As long as Manyu could suppress Lin Ming, then all he had to do was seal away these iron-armored spectral soldiers. Once he did so, killing Lin Ming was only a matter of time.

"Awoo!"

With Ash Murder's order, the silver blue wolf contract beast let loose a howl as it hurtled itself towards Lin Ming!

In that explosion just now, the silver blue wolf had also been injured. But, the life force of an ancient vicious beast was extremely tough. Even if it were severely wounded it could still stubbornly continue fighting!

The silver blue wolf flanked Lin Ming and leapt at him. At Ash Murder's order, Manyu should have joined in to attack from Lin Ming's right. However, as the blue wolf rushed forwards, Manyu remained motionless as before.

During his collision with Lin Ming just now, when Manyu broke through the thunder and fire heavenly tribulation, an all-swallowing black light had shot into his spiritual sea!

This black light was a soul attack that came from the inheritance of Empyrean Divine Mist – this was Empyrean Divine Mist's transcendent divine might!

Empyrean Divine Mist's soul attacks were completely different from all other soul attacks that Lin Ming knew of. Most soul attacks used one's own soul as the weapon, and if the attack failed, one would receive a backlash to the soul. But, Empyrean Divine Mist's soul attacks could actually use energy to directly strike an opponent's soul, without any need for using one's own soul as the attack medium.

As long as one fused this energy into their attack, then this attack would have both a material attack as well as a soul attack; this was a nearly unstoppable strike!

"What is happening?"

Seeing Manyu remain motionless, Ash Murder was confused. Manyu hadn't died but his mind had entered a state of utter chaos, one that he was unable to rid himself of.

And at this time, Lin Ming welcomed the silver blue wolf. With a loud shout, he opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates to their limits. The phantom of a True Dragon reappeared behind him. "Celestial Tyrant Manual – Hundred Layered Waves!"

In an instant, 100 spears thrust out and fused as one. Lin Ming's bodily strength suddenly increased by several times, reaching several billion jins of strength!

After losing Manyu's pincer attack, the silver blue wolf had to face Lin Ming alone!

Bang!

Lin Ming's spear crashed into the silver blue wolf's skull!

An impact force of several billion jins erupted. With a loud cracking sound, the silver blue wolf's skull caved in and its two eyeballs were popped out by the pressure.

"Awoo!"

The silver blue wolf emitted a sorrowful howl. Its magnificent body was directly pounded into the ground by Lin Ming's brutal and absolute strength. Fresh blood and pieces of meat were sent flying out!

Lin Ming's attack was ruthless, giving no chance of reprieve. He stepped forwards, thrusting his spear out at the silver blue wolf's throat!

The Phoenix Blood Spear pierced through, and with a twist, the silver blue wolf's throat and neck were torn apart as the spine was completely severed. Like this, the silver blue wolf died a miserable death!

"Silverback!"

Seeing Lin Ming kill his own contract beast, Ash Murder's eyes turned red with rage! His blue wolf wasn't strong. Although the blue wolf was an ancient vicious beast, ancient vicious beasts normally grew at a slower pace than the mortal races. He had tamed the blue wolf far too early and although Ash Murder was at the half-step Empyrean realm, the blue wolf was only equal to a mid to late Saint Transformation realm martial artist. At this point, the blue wolf was no longer able to provide much help to Ash Murder, but Ash Murder had always felt an extremely deep sentimentality towards this contract beast that he had raised for hundreds of thousands of years. Now, this contract beast of his had been killed by Lin Ming's spear strike. How he could not hate!?

"Brat, I will pull out your soul and tear you to pieces!"

Ash Murder angrily roared. He felt like a lion that had been wrapped in chains and was now being played around with by a mouse!

As for Lin Ming, he simply didn't care about Ash Murder's threat. He turned around and rushed towards Manyu, who was still frozen by his soul attack!

At the same time, Ash Murder's body burnt all over with gray flames. His face turned as red as fresh blood!

Then, he suddenly bit down on the tip of his tongue and spat out blood essence. This blood essence began to brilliantly burn!

Ash Murder had been pushed to the brink by Lin Ming. Without any hesitation, he burnt his blood essence to use an arcane skill. He vowed to kill Lin Ming here and now!

Chapter 1517 – Angering One To Death

Chapter 1517 – Angering One To Death

…

…

…

Piki paka!

Ash Murder's entire body erupted with astral essence. His upper robes tore apart, revealing a vibrant and thickly muscled body as strong as diamonds. These muscles were completely covered with blue veins that stuck out like worms, continuing to inflate!

As his muscles inflated, Ash Murder also increased in size. His skin split apart and massive bone spikes stretched out from his body, shining with a cold light.

Many saint race martial artists were capable of body metamorphosis and Ash Murder was no exception to this. With an enraged half-step Empyrean burning his blood essence and then metamorphosing his body, it could be imagined just how dangerous he was!

Chi-la!

All of Ash Murder's clothes split apart. Behind him, a pair of dripping wings stretched out, similar to a bat. Ash Murder's arms also grew to seven or eight feet long, as long as an adult was high. His arms were covered with blue veins and had claws that were sharp and fierce!

After transforming his body, Ash Murder resembled a savage demon!

As Ash Murder transformed his body, the gray ropes he formed with his sealing technique also burst apart!

With Naqi’s combat array broken, it was no longer realistic for Ash Murder to think of sealing away these 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers, especially in the face of Lin Ming’s assault.

With this being the case, he no longer bothered with sealing away the spectral soldiers. Instead, he chose to fight. He wanted to tear apart Lin Ming and then break through this array formation of iron-armored spectral soldiers!

Although these spectral soldiers were strong, once he ripped apart a corner it would be possible to escape!

“You little beast, give me your life!”

After burning his blood essence, Ash Murder’s face was blood red. He completely ignored the iron-armored spectral soldiers and crazily threw himself towards Lin Ming, wanting to kill this human brat who he hated to the extreme.

Seeing Ash Murder hurtle towards him, Lin Ming remained calm. For Lin Ming to face Ash Murder in this condition would be a hopeless battle.

Then, a table-sized gray palace shot out from Lin Ming’s inner world, rapidly spinning about. Lin Ming sank into this palace, vanishing from sight.

This was Primordius Heavenly Palace, an escape route that Lin Ming had kept in place all this time.

Seeing this, Ash Murder sneered. “You want to hide away in your abode but you will die all the same! I will crush your turtle shell!”

Kacha!

With a terrifying sonic boom, Ash Murder’s claws struck Primordius Heavenly Palace. The grand array formation within the Heavenly Palace violently trembled. However, although the array formation shook, there wasn't the slightest crack in its defenses. Primordius Heavenly Palace had solidly withstood Ash Murder's attack!

According to Empyrean Primordius, as long as Primordius Heavenly Palace was given enough energy, no force below that of an Empyrean would be able to break through it. Although Ash Murder had transformed his body and burnt his blood essence, he was still a half-step Empyrean. Moreover, he couldn't be considered an outstanding existence amongst half-step Empyreans. Between him and a true Empyrean, the difference was immeasurably vast. It was absolutely impossible for him to break through the defenses of Primordius Heavenly Palace!

"What!?"

That strike just now had caused Ash Murder's arms to go numb. He didn't think that his all-out strike would actually be blocked by such a common-looking palace.

With his strength, he could crush thousands of miles of mountains and rivers, and yet he couldn't even break apart this table-sized palace.

"Is this an Empyrean spirit treasure?"

Ash Murder immediately thought. An Empyrean spirit treasure wasn't too rare; even he possessed them. But, most Empyrean spirit treasures were weapons and armor. In their life, an Empyrean ordinarily refined two or three Empyrean spirit treasures, and with the countless Empyreans that had appeared in the 33 Heavens through the billions of years of history, there were many weapons and armors left behind by them.

As for other categories of Empyrean spirit treasures such as accessories, flexible armors, pill furnaces, or other such treasures, they were mostly ignored. These types of objects had extremely harsh requirements in terms of materials and array formations needed. An Empyrean wouldn't normally refine such items, thus not many of these types of Empyrean spirit treasures existed.

And, if there was a category of Empyrean spirit treasure that was rarer than those, that would be an immortal abode spirit ship!

A weapon could be refined from a piece of divine iron, but a dwelling was different. It required far too many complex structures and array formations, making it so that it would inevitably be shaky and weak. But now, Lin Ming's Empyrean spirit treasure was such a rare immortal abode spirit ship.

And, if it could block his attack so easily, then it likely wasn't just an Empyrean spirit treasure, but the highest peak of Empyrean spirit treasures.

All of these thoughts passed through Ash Murder's mind like a bolt of lightning. But at this time, his complexion immediately changed. He could feel a massive killing intent lock onto him; he had stepped onto a death zone dao pattern!

"Damn!"

Ash Murder cursed in his heart. This wasn't a coincidence at all, but a plan Lin Ming had thought of from the start!

Lin Ming had deliberately stood behind this death zone dao pattern. When Ash Murder attacked Lin Ming, he had stepped into this trap!

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Hundreds of black divine lights shot out from all directions, blocking all directions for Ash Murder to dodge in!

In that moment, Ash Murder was so enraged that his hair almost flew straight up and his eyes nearly popped out of his head. His intestines hurt from anger so much that they twisted in his body!

In this encounter with Lin Ming, he had been suppressed and controlled at every turn, suffering loss after loss. How could he not be infuriated.

“You little bastard, you remember me!”

Underneath the net of black lights, dodging was no longer possible. Ash Murder roared out loud and closed his two wings around himself. He stimulated his astral essence to the limit, forcefully resisting this strike!

This was an absolute killing zone that Lin Ming had carefully chosen; it was at least a hundred times more dangerous than normal danger zones. Since Lin Ming wanted to kill Ash Murder he naturally had to choose the riskiest place!

Peng!

Thick beams of black light crashed into Ash Murder’s protective astral essence. They pierced through his wings and smashed into his body.

Ash Murder’s muscles tore and his blood vessels burst apart. However, Ash Murder was indeed worthy of being called a half-step Empyrean powerhouse. In addition to the powerful mortal body of a saint, he had abruptly withstood this barrage of black lights!

Of course, this was also because Bai Qi’s tomb had existed for far too long. Too much of the array formation’s energy had faded away, making it much weaker than it was at the start. Otherwise, if it were at full power, then even a true Empyrean might have perished if they entered here!

After being tricked by Lin Ming, Ash Murder’s entire body was wet with blood. His wings had nearly been torn in half and he looked wretched.

As for Lin Ming, he was calmly hiding in Primordius Heavenly Palace, watching all of this occur.

“Haha, Old Man Ash Murder, your defensive capabilities are quite good. You lived through such an attack but your wings are torn and you seem a bit pathetic. You continue fighting out there. I’m going to take some pills and restore my condition. After I’m better, I’ll come back out to play with you.”

Lin Ming's words could be called angering someone to death. He purposefully said this to provoke Ash Murder and disrupt his rhythm!

He could see that this Ash Murder was extremely strong and also had a certain understanding of array formations. As for the great array formation of Bai Qi's tomb, it had undergone far too long a time. In the case that it wasn't able to kill Ash Murder, the consequences would be disastrous.

However, breaking through these dao patterns required a calm mindset. If Ash Murder wildly stumbled around and stepped onto several more killing zone dao patterns, the results could be imagined.

Disturbing Ash Murder's mindset was the exact effect that Lin Ming wanted.

Hearing Lin Ming's words, Ash Murder felt his eye sockets nearly split open. He took a deep breath, glaring at Primordius Heavenly Palace with utter hate. His burning gaze seemed as if it could pierce through the Heavenly Palace and kill Lin Ming. He was well aware that Lin Ming was deliberately angering him, but even though he knew this, it was hard for him to calm down his heart. After all, once he transformed his body, his personality became even more crazy, savage, and hard to control.

Ash Murder knew that the dwelling Lin Ming was hiding in was an Empyrean spirit treasure. As long as he continued to attack, he would slowly exhaust the energy of the palace. Then, he could seize Lin Ming and do whatever he wished with him.

However, he didn't have this chance because at this time, those 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers had already rushed forwards. The moment that he attacked Lin Ming, the remaining other two people, Manyu and his own follower, had already been hacked to pieces by the spectral soldiers' weapons!

Thus, except for Naqi who had been received into Ash Murder's inner world, everyone else had died!

The iron-armored spectral soldiers roared out loud and hurled themselves towards Ash Murder. Ash Murder broke into the midst of the spectral soldiers, slamming his claws atop one of their heads!

Kacha!

That iron-armored spectral soldier was smashed away by Ash Murder's claws like a flimsy chicken! It crashed into the space barrier, causing cracks to tear through its body.

Ash Murder's strike had cracked the spectral soldier's body. This was simply because far too much time had passed and its body had eroded over the years.

If Ash Murder only faced a single iron-armored spectral soldier then he could easily win. But unfortunately, he had to face 108 of them.

Pitch black ghostly sabers chopped down on Ash Murder's body. All of these iron-armored spectral soldiers were covered in a thick aura of death, as if they were evil ghosts that rushed out from the depths of hell!

"Old Idiot Ash Murder, you're quite fierce! But, I don't think you'll be able to last much longer. This place is quite peaceful; it would be perfect for your tomb. What do you think? Hahahaha!"

Lin Ming began making a ruckus from within Primordius Heavenly Palace once more.

Ash Murder's eyes blazed red. He forcefully held back the cruel and savage personality he gained after transforming his body. If he could just grab ahold of Lin Ming right now, he would tear him to strips!

Whoosh!

A burning arrow shot towards Ash Murder. Ash Murder punched out, blowing up the arrow. Then, with a wave of his hand, seven or eight nearby spectral soldiers were sent flying back by him.

"Amazing!" Lin Ming clapped. "Splendid, you are truly splendid. This is extremely entertaining! How come it feels like I'm watching a monkey dance around?"

Lin Ming tried to anger Ash Murder some more. In front of Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian traced her chin as she sized up Lin Ming. "You're too naughty Lin Ming. I think that old man Ash Murder, even if he isn't killed by the army of those iron-armored spectral soldiers, would still be angered to death by you."

Lin Ming shook his head, saying, "It would be great if I could anger him to death. This person is extremely fierce. Normally, it is very difficult to control your personality after undergoing body metamorphosis, but even after being mocked by me he is still managing to suppress the negative thoughts in his heart so that he doesn't step into some danger zone."

As Lin Ming spoke, he was continuously keeping track of Ash Murder's steps. The dao patterns in Bai Qi's tomb were in all directions and at all heights. Whether it was flying in the air or walking on the ground, one could touch them. As for Ash Murder, it was impossible for him to remain still while fighting these iron-armored spectral soldiers.

And if he were to be forced all over then he would inevitably fall into a danger zone. After all, he wasn't like Lin Ming who had a true understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao. Ash Murder only relied on his intuition and the experience he gained through numerous life or death dangers to feel his way between the life zones and death zones.

"These iron-armored spectral soldiers are being destroyed by him, but once he steps into another death zone, I want to see just how he'll hide!"

As Lin Ming looked at Ash Murder, his eyes blazed with a brilliant light.

Chapter 1518 – Sacred Soul Primal Spirit

Chapter 1518 – Sacred Soul Primal Spirit

…

…

…

In the fierce combat, Ash Murder stepped onto a death zone once more!

Ash Murder wasn't like Lin Ming and didn't understand the Asura Road's array formations. It was inevitable that he would step into a death zone.

When Ash Murder's foot fell down, the ground of the entire hall shivered. An indescribable killing intent enveloped Ash Murder's heart, causing him to be shocked.

He instantly realized that he had stepped onto a death zone dao pattern!

No matter how much he calculated things, it was impossible for Ash Murder to avoid all the death zones; he would touch one sooner or later! Without thinking, Ash Murder immediately drew backwards.

But at this time, an extremely strong power of space bound his steps. Then, a life reaping black light howled towards him!

This black light wasn't enough to take Ash Murder's life. But in his current condition, he had already been injured and had even burnt his blood essence as well as a massive amount of astral essence. If he was struck by this black light then that would be adding wounds upon his wounds, making it difficult for him to continue facing these iron-armored spectral soldiers!

In this life or death moment, Ash Murder exploded with a thunderous roar. “Sacred Soul Primal Spirit!”

As Ash Murder roared out loud, there was an explosive crackling sound. From within Ash Murder’s body, it seemed as if something had been freed. A crazy wave of demonic power surged forth, forming the phantom of an ancient beast behind Ash Murder’s body. This ancient beast had two wings, with the body of an animal and the head of a man.

This ancient vicious beast had an illusory body but the aura it emitted was beyond terrifying. As that black light came crashing down, it erupted an incomparably dreadful power that smashed apart all the surrounding space.

The space within Bai Qi’s tomb had already been locked down by the array formation. Once the killing array began, the space barrier would be closed, sealing away all paths of exit. However, when Ash Murder summoned this ancient vicious beast phantom, he forcefully broke open a crack in space!

“Mm!?”

Within Primordius Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming was bewildered. Although the grand array formation of Bai Qi’s tomb had greatly weakened through the billions of years, it still wasn’t something that an ordinary half-step Empyrean could break through.

He could feel that this man-faced ancient vicious beast wasn’t a part of Ash Murder’s soul. Rather, it was the soul and flesh-blood essence of an ancient beast that had been sealed within his body.

In this crucial moment, Ash Murder released this power, causing his strength to instantly rise!

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Several beams of black light shot forwards! That Sacred Soul Primal Spirit savagely roared out, its body immediately bulging outwards, wrapping around Ash Murder to resist that black divine light.

Puff puff!

All of the black light rained down in a dreadful deluge, sounding as if a thunderstorm was rolling past. A dreadful atmosphere filled the entire hall!

In this crazy explosion, the Sacred Soul Primal Spirit phantom was torn to pieces by the black light. Ash Murder's entire body was covered in blood; he was nearing his limit.

"Break for me!"

Ash Murder cried out. He burnt 10% of his blood essence!

A ghostly red sheen began shining over his body. As he struck the space barrier with all his strength, three surrounding iron-armored spectral soldiers were sucked into the shockwaves, their bodies cracking apart and then exploding into fragments.

"God Stranding Rope!"

Ash Murder linked his fingers together. Seven or eight masses of chaos energy gathered together into gray ropes that flew towards Primordius Heavenly Palace, instantly tying it down.

Lin Ming immediately understood what Ash Murder was trying to do. He didn't plan to fight this iron-armored spectral soldier array formation. Rather, he wanted to break through the void and then escape from Bai Qi's tomb, dragging Lin Ming and Primordius Heavenly Palace along with him!

As long as he escaped here then Primordius Heavenly Palace would eventually run out of energy. At that time, both he and Xiao Moxian would die without a doubt!

"Lin Ming, what do we do!?" Xiao Moxian felt her heart tighten as she saw those God Stranding Ropes wrap around Primordius Heavenly Palace.

Although Primordius Heavenly Palace was large, if it was sealed away by Ash Murder using his special sealing technique and then taken into his inner world, then carrying it through a small space crack wouldn't be a problem.

Ultimately, even though Primordius Heavenly Palace was a peak Empyrean spirit treasure, Lin Ming's cultivation was the limiting factor. He was simply unable to activate its movement and could only depend on the great array formation that already existed within Primordius Heavenly Palace. This placed him in a completely passive situation.

"We can't just wait here to die. We must risk our lives!"

In that moment, a sharp light flashed through Lin Ming's eyes. This Ash Murder that had come from nowhere had far exceeded his expectations; this was the strength of a half-step Empyrean, someone only inferior to an Empyrean existence. Looking at the entire Divine Realm, there were likely no more than a thousand such characters.

Rumble rumble rumble!

A ghostly battle chariot rolled toward Ash Murder. The spectral soldier standing atop this chariot grasped a dark axe as it chopped down at Ash Murder's head. Gray flames burned all over it, emitting a thick aura of death.

Ash Murder didn't turn around. He bent his body at an incredible angle to evade the attack and then his arms stretched out to wrap around that spectral soldier's neck. With a cracking sound, Ash Murder forcefully twisted off that spectral soldier's head!

Like this, Ash Murder had already destroyed 30 some iron-armored spectral soldiers. The fewer spectral soldiers there were, the easier it was for Ash Murder to handle them. But at this time, Ash Murder had repeatedly used arcane skills and had even combusted his blood essence; he wouldn't be able to last for much longer. If he continued to fight then it was possible that he would perish together with these iron-armored spectral soldiers.

“Break for me!”

Ash Murder roared out in his heart. At this time, he was resisting the onslaught of dozens of iron-armored spectral soldiers. Behind him, the severely damaged Sacred Soul Primal Spirit was breaking apart the space barriers of this hall!

The iron-armored spectral soldiers were only lifeless objects with no wisdom of their own. They would first attack things that threatened them, and as for the Sacred Soul Primal Spirit, it was only smashing the space barrier. Because of this, all of the iron-armored spectral soldiers had focused their attacks on Ash Murder and just a bit less than half of the space barrier had been ripped open by the Sacred Soul Primal Spirit!

This fight was becoming increasingly intense. Ash Murder’s eyes were red from fury and slaughter and he had already burnt over 20% of his blood essence. Wounds covered his entire body and his two wings had been completely torn off. His chest and back both had bones exposed, and there were even some that revealed his damaged organs.

He had already neared his limit.

And at this time, behind Ash Murder, the Sacred Soul Primal Spirit had forcefully withstood the barrage of black lights and was now using its remaining strength to break open the space barrier; it was nearly exhausted of power.

Ash Murder grit his teeth. Today’s battle had cost him serious losses!

He glared towards Lin Ming’s direction with brutal hatred in his eyes. Everything that he lost today would be made up for by Lin Ming’s body. Thus, even if carrying away Lin Ming caused his own chances of escaping to be that much lower, he would still do it with no regrets!

If he didn’t kill Lin Ming then his thoughts would never flow smoothly for the rest of his life.

“Mm? Something’s wrong!”

Looking towards Primordius Heavenly Palace, Ash Murder felt a foreboding premonition in his heart. Out of the God Stranding Ropes he used to bind Primordius Heavenly Palace, someone had torn up a small section of it. This was proof that someone had taken advantage of the chaos of battle to secretly escape.

“This brat!”

Ash Murder felt a profound restlessness surge in his heart. He cast out his sense like a tide, searching for Lin Ming. However, he wasn’t able to find him at all.

“Damn it all!”

Ash Murder was sure that this wasn’t just Lin Ming’s plan to distract him and lead him away. During his short contact with Lin Ming, he could feel that although Lin Ming was young, the way he handled his affairs was decisive and crafty. He didn’t believe that Lin Ming would just sit here, waiting for his death.

“Where is he?”

The longer Ash Murder couldn’t find Lin Ming, the more uneasy he became. But in the moment that he had diverted his concentration to search for Lin Ming, an iron-armored spectral soldier had grasped a spear and stabbed Ash Murder’s back!

The ghostly fires burnt his flesh. Blood shot into the wind!

“Ahh!”

Ash Murder roared. He turned and smashed his palm against the iron-armored soldier's head, breaking it open.

Now, he had killed over 40 iron-armored spectral soldiers!

All this time, Lin Ming had been hiding in the shadow of the black stone altar’s array formation. The moment that Ash Murder shattered the head of this iron-armored spectral soldier, he rushed out like a cheetah!

He stepped on the Space Laws, his speed reaching incredible levels. As he hurtled out from the shadow of the array formation, he had already calculated his path to avoid all the death zone dao patterns.

Lin Ming gripped his spear in both hands, his bodily strength climbing to the peak. His target was actually the Sacred Soul Primal Spirit phantom that was trying to break through the space barrier!

Lin Ming's goal was obvious. He wanted to kill this Sacred Soul Primal Spirit phantom that was already injured, and then trap Ash Murder in Bai Qi's tomb and strangle him to death here!

"Lin Ming, you really came out! Did you think I wouldn't be ready for this!?" Ash Murder demonically grinned as he saw Lin Ming shoot towards his Sacred Soul Primal Spirit. Lin Ming's plan was extremely vicious, but what a pity, a half-step Empyrean was still a half-step Empyrean. Even though he was severely wounded his combat strength was still terrifying, so how could he be successfully sneak attacked by a junior like Lin Ming!

"You are hopeless!" The severely wounded Ash Murder forcefully spat out another mouthful of blood essence, burning it away. This was the limit of blood essence he was able to burn. A half-step Empyrean far surpassed Lin Ming in strength to begin with, and now by burning his blood essence, he became even stronger!

It could only be said that Ash Murder feared and hated Lin Ming too much. Even though victory was in his hands, he still had to insure against all possibilities so that Lin Ming didn't have the tiniest chance to recover!

"Once you leave the protection of this hall's array formation, you are nothing at all! I can pinch you to death with my hand! Since you seek death then let me help you on your way!"

A grim light burst out from Ash Murder's eyes. With a roar, he punched away the iron-armored spectral soldiers in front of him and reversed himself to hurtle towards Lin Ming!

At this time, Ash Murder was already desperate. He didn't hesitate to spend any price to kill Lin Ming!

With Ash Murder's half-step Empyrean cultivation and also having burnt his blood essence, killing the Divine Lord Lin Ming would only take an instant!

Lin Ming was extremely fast but Ash Murder was even faster. Even though Lin Ming distorted space, he was unable to avoid the eruption of energy coming from Ash Murder. The shackles of the power of space were stiffly torn apart by him!

"Die!"

Ash Murder punched out. In that moment, this fist locked down the space around Lin Ming, making him unable to avoid the strike. A terrifying fist potential erupted forwards like an avalanche. Not to mention Lin Ming, even a World King powerhouse would be pulverized to nothing by this strike!

Lin Ming suddenly froze. He was unable to break through the space that was locked down by this fist potential.

"You're finished!"

The bloody Ash Murder wildly cackled as his fist solidly smashed into Lin Ming's chest.

Chapter 1519 – Unimaginable

Chapter 1519 – Unimaginable

…

…

…

Kacha!

With a resounding crack, Lin Ming's protective true essence exploded as Ash Murder's fist smashed into him. In that moment, his ribs collapsed and he spat out a mouthful of blood as he was sent flying backwards!

However, Ash Murder was the one who was surprised by his fist's damaging effects. He thought that his fist strike would tear Lin Ming apart, and yet it only caused him to vomit blood?

When his fist struck Lin Ming's body, Ash Murder felt like he had struck an ancient bronze bell that had been refined for an extremely long period of time, making his fist shake to the point of pain!

Even he didn't possess such a bodily intensity; this was simply incredible!

He was a half-step Empyrean who also specialized in body transformation and Lin Ming was only an early Divine Lord powerhouse who took the body transformation as his subclass of martial arts. When comparing the both of them, how could there be any comparison at all?

"What a durable mortal body, this boy must have had some strange fortuitous encounter!"

Ash Murder was inexplicably shocked as Lin Ming crashed into the black stone altar. Although Lin Ming was coughing up blood his life force remained as vibrant and blazing as before, without seeming as if it would die down the least bit. It could even be said that his wounds weren’t heavy at all.

“This is impossible!”

Ash Murder was completely dumbfounded. This fist strike had come after he burnt his blood essence and yet he hadn’t been able to kill Lin Ming with it. In fact, he hadn’t even been able to severely wound him!

Moreover, what shocked Ash Murder the most was that when Lin Ming was sent flying backwards, he didn’t touch any death zones at all. Instead, he safely landed on the black stone altar, without triggering any traps. Besides the shaking wounds he had received he was relatively fine.

How could this be such a coincidence!?

Just as Ash Murder thought of this ‘coincidence’, he felt his entire body go cold as if he were dropped into an icy lake.

Something was wrong!

This wasn’t a coincidence at all, but a path that Lin Ming had already calculated when he was sent flying backwards!

The speed Lin Ming rushed forwards with as well as the angle of collision was already calculated well in advance. Thus why he didn’t touch any death zone runes.

This also meant that Lin Ming had intentionally been struck by him. From the start, he had never imagined that his attack would work out, but was planning on being struck instead. Just why would he do such a thing!?

An intense feeling of unrest surged in Ash Murder's heart. He turned around to look at his own Sacred Soul Primal Spirit!

But the moment Ash Murder turned around, seven or eight iron-armored spectral soldiers already rushed towards him from behind. They grasped their ghostly sabers and dark spears, striking at him!

However, from between the gaps of these iron-armored spectral soldiers, Ash Murder was clearly able to see another 'Lin Ming' flying towards his Sacred Soul Primal Spirit!

This Lin Ming was wrapped in thunder and flames, a deep red long spear in his hands. A terrifying vortex of energy swirled around the spear point, drawing in all the origin energy within Bai Qi's tomb. This was the black hole seed!

At this moment, Lin Ming had used his strongest strike, gathering the power of essence, energy, and divine into one. He used the Gate of Life to burn his blood essence and fused the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation into a soul attack. The Eight Inner Hidden Gates and Heretical God Force were released to the limit. Underneath his strongest state, he struck out with the Divine Seal Art's Eternal Darkness!

"No!"

As Ash Murder saw this happen, his eyes widened so much that blood flowed out!

However, with the iron-armored spectral soldiers blocking him, there was no way for Ash Murder to stop Lin Ming. He could only watch helplessly on as all of this occurred!

"How is this possible!?"

Ash Murder roared out in unwillingness. At this time, seven or eight spectral weapons slashed out towards him, not giving him any time to attend to other matters!

Time seemed to come to a standstill.

Whether it was the ghostly weapons that were swinging at him or Lin Ming who was attacking with his strongest strike, everything became extremely slow…

Ash Murder felt as if all the strength in his body was being sucked out. He grit his teeth and raised his claws that were dripping with blood, and then fired into the group of iron-armored spectral soldiers.

“Get out of my way!”

Two iron-armored spectral soldiers bore the brunt of Ash Murder’s attack and were swept away, their necks broken. But at this time, a ghostly spear and saber stabbed into his body.

Beneath the impact of this tremendous strength, Ash Murder’s organs were twisted to pieces. The pitch black ghostly spear forcefully punctured through Ash Murder’s body and came through the other side, carrying with it a rain of blood!

At the same time, the black hole seed atop Lin Ming’s spear point burst out with a black brilliance. In that moment, it was like a black sun had risen within this sealed off hall!

The Sacred Soul Primal Spirit wasn’t without intelligence. Even though it was severely wounded, it still counterattacked Lin Ming. Its human-faced beast body spread its tattered wings and plunged towards Lin Ming.

However, Lin Ming’s attack was too sudden and his methods too ruthless. At his first strike, he released the limit of his strength and had even burnt his blood essence. As he collided with the Sacred Soul Primal Spirit, a dreadful detonation erupted.

Energy brutally surged outwards. Shockwaves of energy spread out like countless sabers. The Sacred Soul Primal Spirit that was already completely spent of energy was instantly shattered by Lin Ming’s strike!

However, Lin Ming was caught up in this wild explosion. He was sent flying away like a ragdoll!

As Lin Ming flew backwards, he revolved the Space Laws to avoid the killing zone dao patterns.

“Ji Xian’er!”

Lin Ming shouted out. Xiao Moxian had already been waiting in advance. She revolved Primordius Heavenly Palace’s grand array formation according to Lin Ming’s direction, commanding it to receive him within it.

Bang!

Just as Lin Ming was about to crash into Primordius Heavenly Palace, a gray light shout out and wrapped around him. In the next moment, Lin Ming felt himself tumbling into a soft form as an enchanting scent filled his senses.

In the final moment, Xiao Moxian had caught Lin Ming. After being struck by those energy shockwaves and now being caught in the embrace of a beautiful young woman, Lin Ming felt much better than before and his nerves even relaxed a bit.

He had succeeded!

Underneath the gaze of a half-step Empyrean powerhouse, had had sneak attacked the Sacred Soul Primal Spirit and had succeeded in doing so!

This had been an extremely risky plan. Lin Ming was far from being Ash Murder’s match. If Ash Murder grabbed onto him, he would have suffered the fate of instant and immediate death.

Bang!

Ash Murder’s bloodied body fell onto the ground. Two cruel weapons were thrust into his chest and stomach. Not too far away, the Sacred Soul Primal Spirit had already been exploded into pieces by Lin Ming!

In such a condition, the Sacred Soul Primal Spirit had fallen into an everlasting sleep. Without a transcendent divine miracle pill it would be impossible to awaken it. And at this time, Ash Murder himself was a lamp without oil; his hopes of leaving this hellish place had now become extremely slim!

Without the Sacred Soul Primal Spirit it was impossible for him to have any free time to attack the space barrier. Moreover, Ash Murder was no longer able to resist the attacks of the remaining spectral soldiers.

He looked towards the direction of Primordius Heavenly Palace, his eyes blazing with hatred and despair.

In this battle, every choice Lin Ming made had been upon the precipice of life or death! In this battle, he had faced an enemy over ten times stronger than he was but had used the array formation here as well as all sorts of guerilla tactics to instead kill those who had come here to kill him!

Especially in this final strike, he had calculated his escape route ahead of time, had lured the tiger out of the cave, and had then used diversionary tactics to strike down Ash Murder's last hope!

To lose to such an opponent, to lose to a mere junior that was only several dozen years old with a Divine Lord cultivation, Ash Murder felt frustration and depression fill his heart.

At the start he had indeed underestimated his enemy, but later, he had lost even after he dropped any contempt he had.

Ash Murder looked towards the black stone altar. The 'Lin Ming' that was struck by him had already shakily stood up. This Lin Ming looked at him, a hint of pity in his eyes. Then, this Lin Ming flew towards Primordius Heavenly Palace.

At this time, Ash Murder was no longer capable of stopping him.

Up until now he still couldn't understand why there were two Lin Mings. Based upon the manners and movements of these two Lin Mings, it was impossible for one to be a puppet. If so, it could only be an avatar!

How could Lin Ming have such a powerful avatar?

"Hah - !"

The array formation of Primordius Heavenly Palace revolved once more. Then, another Lin Ming rushed in!

This Lin Ming was not the Lin Ming that was being held by Xiao Moxian. But, there wasn't any difference in their auras. It was only that this new Lin Ming was holding not the Phoenix Blood Spear, but a red spirit artifact that appeared similar.

Just then, this Lin Ming had been the one to withstand the frontal attack of Ash Murder's fist. This Lin Ming's chest had been pounded in by Ash Murder's strike, and he had even spat out blood and had his organs break apart.

Even so, his life force remained as vibrant as before despite his combat strength having dropped by a great deal.

As Xiao Moxian saw this new Lin Ming appear, she shouted out in praise. "Fierce! Too fierce! A mortal body equal to the Saint Lord realm was able to receive the frontal strike of a half-step Empyrean and only be severely wounded! Moreover, this wound is..."

Xiao Moxian looked towards the chest of the new Lin Ming. The muscles of his chest were slowly creeping together, visibly regenerating!

Such a terrifying defensive ability and such a terrifying resiliency, this was something that not even Xiao Moxian with her half God Beast body could hold a candle to!

"This is indeed worthy of being the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone. I must say Lin Ming, your true self is too pitiful, you're so much worse than your avatar!"

Lin Ming ruefully smiled, “How can I possibly compare with him? The life that is bred from an Essence Spirit Embryo Stone is no worse than a God Beast’s body to begin with. And not just that, but even if you ignore perception, his mortal body was similar to yours from the start, and in addition, he has been nourished by the Asura Road Master’s God Beast Tomb array formation for billions of years! In terms of the intensity of his mortal body, he is far superior to you and me!”

In the bronze temple, after Lin Ming had divided a portion of his soul to occupy the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, this Essence Spirit Embryo Stone had become eternally marked by Lin Ming’s soul. Like this, his facial appearance, his limbs, his hair, his bloodline, everything was completely similar to Lin Ming.

His energy was inherited from Lin Ming and his cultivation realm was also similar to Lin Ming’s. It could only be said that this Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was a perfect clone of Lin Ming.

The only difference was that this Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was focused in mortal body intensity and the body transformation system; it had no combat strength in the essence gathering system.

With this sort of essence spirit avatar, Lin Ming’s combat capabilities had more than doubled. It was only because of this avatar’s formidable defensive abilities that Lin Ming dared distract Ash Murder to launch a sneak attack.

“Awesome! Doesn’t this avatar have two more seals that aren’t undone yet? If you undo those seals, just how strong will it become? It’s truly worthy of being called the Asura Road Master’s masterpiece. How could any inheritance that he left behind be bad? Otherwise, he’d probably be too ashamed to put it out.”

Xiao Moxian patted the strong mortal body of Lin Ming’s avatar, grinning as she spoke.

Lin Ming’s avatar had an intelligence of his own. But, because the avatar’s soul was a part of Lin Ming’s soul, this avatar’s intelligence was the same as Lin Ming’s. With Lin Ming in front of his avatar, he naturally didn’t control it.

Chapter 1520 – Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel

Chapter 1520 – Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel

…

…

…

Xiao Moxian was extremely keen on Lin Ming's avatar. She pinched the avatar's muscles, feeling that they were as solid as rubber. "Lin Ming, this avatar grows through the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, right?"

Xiao Moxian had also studied the first volume of the Asura Sutra. Although she hadn't refined her own avatar, she had many understandings into them.

"Yes, by absorbing the demonic power that filters through the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel he can evolve, but that boundary of my avatar is limited by my own; it cannot be much higher than mine. At most, his cultivation will be one or two small boundaries higher. Perhaps, after I reach large success in the Asura Sutra First Volume he will be able to rise three small boundaries above me…"

Concerning the boundary of his avatar, Lin Ming couldn't be sure. After all, the avatar that the Asura Road Master refined in the past did not use the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone as the material, but he had instead divided his own flesh, blood, and soul, similar to the relationship between Frost Dream and Divine Dream.

"The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel can hold 10,000 demons and have them undergo 10,000 samsaras of life and death. Starting from today, I will begin collecting 10,000 demonic souls for my karmic wheel. This Ash Murder will be the first one!"

The first soul Lin Ming chose was that of a half-step Empyrean!

For those with low cultivation, weak strength, or pitiful talent, Lin Ming wouldn't even glance at them. Not even Mister Zhou from before was able to arouse Lin Ming's interest.

As Lin Ming looked out from Primordius Heavenly Palace, he saw Ash Murder engaged in fierce combat with the iron-armored spectral soldiers.

His wings had been sliced off and his arms were shattered, with his entire body covered in blood. His bones and organs were revealed in open wounds; he was already well past his limit!

But in this condition, Ash Murder still hadn't died. Just how tenacious was he!

Kacha!

An iron-armored special soldier's head was blown apart by Ash Murder's fist. But at this time, five ghostly spears pierced towards Ash Murder's chest from three different angles.

Ash Murder grasped out his hands, forcefully grabbing hold of four spears. However, the last spear thrust into his chest!

Ash Murder's chest was already bloodied and gruesome, revealing his ribs. This ghostly spear thrust through the gap between the ribs, twisting apart Ash Murder's heart and lungs to pieces!

Puff!

Ash Murder coughed out a mouthful of blood. In the final throes of his life, he waved his hands, sending those four iron-armored spectral soldiers that he held the spears of flying far away.

Using this momentum, Ash Murder kicked the chest of the fifth iron-armored spectral soldier, impacting its chest so hard that it completely caved in.

At this time, Ash Murder felt a cold shadow cover his head. Before he could respond, he felt his head shake. With a loud bang, a vibrating force passed from his head to his ears, blowing out his eardrums and causing blood to leak out from his ears.

Like this, a black 10,000 jin hammer smashed into Ash Murder's head. At this moment, Ash Murder's eye lost focus. He felt the entire world blur, everything seeming to fade far away from him…

He fell to his knees, the blood leaking from his head covering his eyes. This was also the final moment of Ash Murder's storied life. He never imagined that he, with his half-step Empyrean cultivation, who had lived a revered life, would actually be played to death by a Divine Lord junior in the end.

What a joke.

He looked towards the direction of Primordius Heavenly Palace. His consciousness began to fade away…

Ash Murder died. A half-step Empyrean had died in Bai Qi's tomb, underneath the assault of the grand array formation here and Lin Ming's planning.

108 iron-armored spectral soldiers. Of them, 52 had been destroyed by Ash Murder. Now, only slightly more than half were left.

From this alone, one could see just how terrifyingly strong a half-step Empyrean was.

As Ash Murder died, the iron-armored spectral soldier array formation also calmed down. Many of the iron-armored spectral soldiers returned to their statue-like state. In this battle, the array formation had consumed far too much energy. If this grand array formation was said to be able to persist for several billion more years before this, now it could only last for several hundred million more years and it would also be much weaker than it was originally.

"You stay inside. I'm going out to take a look." Lin Ming said to Xiao Moxian within Primordius Heavenly Palace.

Xiao Moxian pursed her lips, but she didn't argue with Lin Ming. There were layers upon layers of dangers in Bai Qi's tomb, and with her current strength she was simply far too weak to go out right now.

Lin Ming slowly floated out from Primordius Heavenly Palace, landing on the black stone altar. He looked towards the characters that were carved onto the black stone altar, 'Blue Throne Bai Qi', and deeply bowed, gripping his fists together. "Senior Bai Qi, this junior was helplessly forced today, thus I was only able to lure the enemy here to engage in a life or death battle. I hadn't known before that this was Senior's tomb, so I apologize for any offense that I committed. Within a thousand years, junior will surely reenter this land and repair this array formation for Senior so that it is even stronger than before and Senior may rest in peace for billions of years more."

Lin Ming didn't know why Blue Throne Bai Qi was buried here. In the end, he could only say that it was his own fault for having disturbed Bai Qi's tomb. The only way he could compensate for this was to repair the array formation in the future.

"Unfortunately, I have no idea what Senior Bai Qi's last wish was, otherwise I could have helped him accomplish it."

This time, Bai Qi could have been said to have given Lin Ming a life saving grace. With Lin Ming's personality, he didn't like owing favors to anyone.

After bowing to Bai Qi, Lin Ming turned to Ash Murder. He didn't walk over first but instead used his avatar to investigate. After making sure that Ash Murder was completely dead, only then did he walk over himself.

Lin Ming had thoroughly and completely won this battle.

At this time, Lin Ming seemed to remember something. A playful smile graced his lips. His avatar lifted up his foot and then stomped down, brutally crushing Ash Murder's left hand.

Kacha!

With a loud sound, Ash Murder's hand was pressed into the ground. And on Ash Murder's middle finger, the spatial ring that had lost the protection of its master's energy exploded into pieces.

After the spatial ring exploded into pieces, a chaotic flow of space energy surged outwards. A massive amount of pills, weapons, armor, and talismans were thrown out. With a miserable cry, a distressed saint youth was flung out too.

This youth's clothes were torn up, his body was covered in blood and his chest was caved in. His injuries were extremely heavy. Although he was able to rely on his powerful mortal body to slowly restore himself, he hadn't been able to recover much. He only had 10-20% of his original combat strength remaining.

This saint youth was Imperial Prince Naqi!

At the start of the battle, Imperial Prince Naqi had been extremely wounded in his collision with Lin Ming. Afterwards, Lin Ming had followed up his attack, wanting to sever Naqi's life. But just as Lin Ming was about to do so, Ash Murder had stuck his hand in and rescued Naqi, placing Naqi into his spatial ring.

Now that Ash Murder had died, Naqi naturally lost his protection.

Naqi's lips leaked blood. He had wounds added atop his previous wounds. Within the spatial ring, he had been meditating, restoring himself. But then with the sudden rupture of the spatial ring, a ruinous space storm had formed and sucked him in. if Naqi was in his peak condition then a space storm of this degree wouldn't have been anything to him. But Naqi had been in deep meditation to recover from his wounds. He should have had someone guarding him so that no one was able to disturb him, and now that he was swept into the space storm he actually suffered a grievous backlash.

He had no idea what had happened outside. After Naqi entered the spatial ring he had completely invested his focus into meditating, wanting to restore himself just that much faster. Only then would he be safe again. But now, he had been tossed out by Lin Ming onto the floor, unable to even tell what direction was what.

“Lin Ming, you little bastard!”

Naqi reflexively jumped up as he saw Lin Ming. He grasped his halberd and pointed it towards Lin Ming. Facing Lin Ming, his eyes gleamed with killing intent, his entire body on high alert.

But at this time, Naqi could see pity in Lin Ming’s eyes, like the mercy someone showed to their inferior. This sort of pity and faint contempt stoked a furious rage in Naqi’s heart.

“There is no need to look. They’ve all died. Moreover… you will also die.”

Lin Ming’s voice was indifferent, like the judgment of a death god.

“W-what!?” Naqi’s mind shook. He instantly used his sense to investigate the situation around him. Then, he saw a scene that caused his courage to crack.

He turned around and saw that just a step behind him was Ash Murder’s ruined body, leaking blood. Ash Murder’s bones were all shattered and his organs were a ruined mess. His corpse was covered with blood and all life had faded from his body.

Ash Murder’s empty eyes were still staring in the direction of Primordius Heavenly Palace, their lonely gaze filled with unwillingness and despair. He had died with everlasting regrets.

“M-mister Ash Murder!?”

Naqi’s heart shriveled as he saw Ash Murder’s corpse. He didn’t dare to believe, and was unable to believe, that the half-step Empyrean Ash Murder, someone far stronger than Mister Zhou, had died here and in such a miserable way.

As for Lin Ming, he was safely standing in front of him. Just how was this possible!?

For a time, Naqi's entire body went icy cold, as if he had been plunged into the nine nether abyss!

"Im… impossible!"

Naqi despaired. He looked towards Lin Ming, his body shaking. Lin Ming had actually managed to kill Ash Murder; this was simply unthinkable. And, Ash Murder was Naqi's final pillar of hope. With Ash Murder dead, his fate could be imagined.

"You're over. This will be your grave… or, perhaps your grave will be my Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. Although your cultivation isn't high, your talent is in the highest echelons of your race. That gives you the qualifications to enter my Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!"

As Lin Ming spoke, his right hand drew a circle in the air. The energy path left behind by his fingers formed a spinning gray wheel. The wheel had images of countless demon phantoms, ghosts, and monsters filling it, their expressions filled with anger, hatred, pain, and cruelty. This gray wheel slashed down at Imperial Prince Naqi.

After listening to Lin Ming's words and seeing this Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, Naqi's complexion completely changed. He immediately understood that Lin Ming wanted to seal his soul away within this Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel to strengthen his devil arts.

However, what was pitiful was that he didn't have any ability to resist. Let alone the fact that he was severely wounded right now, even if he were in his peak condition he wouldn't have any hope of defeating Lin Ming!

"You think you can seal my soul? You can keep on dreaming!"

Naqi's eyes turned blood red. He was fully aware that once his soul was sucked into Lin Ming's terrifying gray wheel, he would be forever enslaved by Lin Ming, his soul never finding peace. This was a fate countless times more miserable than death. He would rather die than be sucked into Lin Ming's grand array!

Chapter 1521 – Crisis

Chapter 1521 – Crisis

…

…

…

“Lin Ming, let’s die together!”

Naqi crazily shouted. He was also a ruthless and decisive individual. He clearly knew he wasn’t Lin Ming’s match and chose a suicidal attack. In that moment, all of the energy within his body erupted as he rushed towards Lin Ming; he wanted to blow up all of his astral essence!

Naqi was also well aware that even if he exploded his body, it still wouldn’t be possible to kill Lin Ming. But, as long as he caused severe wounds to Lin Ming that was more than enough, because in this absolute killing zone, there was a chance Lin Ming could die if he was injured so deeply!

To cause heavy wounds to Lin Ming with his own death, this was 10,000 times better than having his soul sealed in the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel.

Lin Ming wasn’t surprised to see this at all. He sneered, withdrawing at the same time. His fingers flashed as he formed tens of thousands of gray seals.

As these seals appeared, the surrounding space and time began to distort. Even light was swallowed into these seals. Each of these seals that Lin Ming formed was a miniature black hole.

“Divine Seal Art – God Forbidding Seal!”

The Divine Seal Art was said to possess the ability to seal away all of existence; naturally, sealing away astral essence was nothing at all. In the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, the Divine Sea realm Lin Ming had been able to break through Frost Dream's Dreamsoul Immortal Melody by using the God Forbidding Seals.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

These seals flew towards the wounded Naqi like a hail of arrows, sinking into his body. At that moment, Naqi felt as if demonic leeches crawled within his body. These leeches sucked his blood, absorbing his astral essence and flesh and blood essence.

"Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!"

Lin Ming thrust his right palm forwards and the gray demon wheel was pushed forwards by him. It covered Naqi like a cruel and hungry maw.

"No!"

Naqi miserably cried out, struggling with all his strength. However, with his entire body sealed by the God Forbidding Seals, no matter what he tried, he still couldn't revolve his astral essence or bodily strength.

Suicide was not possible and neither was escape. At this time, Naqi finally deeply understood what it meant to feel fear and powerlessness.

At this time, Naqi felt a terrifying demonic power cover his body, wanting to forcefully pull out his soul.

The agonizing pain of having his body and soul split apart struck him like a tide. This horrifying feeling was like being slowly skinned alive! The pain was indescribable!

Naqi cried out, his screams so loud they split his throat and lungs. With a light cracking sound, his soul was torn away from his body, turning into a wisp of gray light that submerged into the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. Thus, the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel gained its first demon soul.

Lin Ming waved his hand and took away the God Forbidding Seals from Naqi's body. Then, all of Naqi's origin energy and blood energy was sucked out by the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone.

In just a moment, Naqi's originally perfectly tempered body lost all of its blood vitality, nearly turning into a mortal body.

Like this, an Imperial Prince, a proud genius of his generation, had died a tragic death in God Burying Ridge. He had been struck down by Lin Ming and even his soul had devolved into a ghost slave!

After the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone sucked Naqi's bodily strength, its blood energy became increasingly vibrant. The collapsed chest of that avatar began to wriggle around, clearly regenerating at an increased speed.

Lin Ming looked at the wounds of the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone and estimated that it would fully recover in an incense stick of time. This sort of regenerative ability was really far too abnormal.

Unfortunately, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone wasn't able to grow quickly. Even though it had swallowed the massive amount of blood energy within Naqi, the energy it contained still didn't grow by much.

After swallowing up Naqi's origin energy, Lin Ming repeated this process and had the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone swallow Ash Murder's origin energy.

Ash Murder's essence energy was dozens of times more formidable than Naqi's. After the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone swallowed up this essence energy, the wounds on his body continued to squirm around before fully recovering in several breaths of time.

"It's over!"

Lin Ming let out a long sigh of relief. Just as he was about to return to Primordius Heavenly Palace, a strange premonition emerged in his heart. This dangerous premonition came from the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone!

“What!?”

Lin Ming’s entire body went cold. At this time, where could this danger have come from?

Lin Ming didn’t know what this danger was. Without thinking further, he flew straight towards Primordius Heavenly Palace at max speed. As long as he entered Primordius Heavenly Palace then he would be temporarily safe. This was the best strategy to deal with the current situation.

But at this moment, a corpse that was lying on the ground suddenly leapt upwards!

This corpse had been that of Ash Murder’s follower!

There had been a total of four people in Ash Murder’s group. They were Ash Murder, Naqi, Manyu, as well as some common-seeming follower who only had a mere Saint Lord realm cultivation. When Lin Ming first ambushed them, this follower had been sucked into the storm and died afterwards. Not even Lin Ming had kept track of him afterwards!

Even the two puppets that Ash Murder put forth as well as his silver blue wolf contract beast seemed far more important than this follower!

But now, this follower leapt up, plunging towards Lin Ming like a demonic fiend!

“How is this possible!?”

Lin Ming was bewildered. This torn corpse, could Ash Murder have seized its body?

This was Lin Ming’s first thought, however, he had no time to continue thinking of what was happening. He had to immediately respond!

This corpse that rushed towards him seemed as if it only had a Saint Lord realm cultivation, but Lin Ming absolutely would not believe this. If this corpse had been able to hide from his sense and hide from the killing array in Bai Qi's tomb, then it was absolutely a terrifying character!

Without thinking, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone rushed towards this corpse like a cheetah. At the same time, Lin Ming himself hurtled towards Primordius Heavenly Palace!

Primordius Heavenly Palace was only 100 feet away. With Lin Ming's speed, this was less than the blink of an eye!

However, at this time, a voice echoed in his mind.

"It's too late! Today is the day you die!"

This voice was somewhat familiar. Lin Ming's hands and feet immediately turned cold, his entire body drenched in sweat.

Tian Mingzi!?

Bang!

With a loud explosion, Lin Ming solidly crashed into an enchantment, feeling as if his skeleton would come apart. In that brief moment just now, Tian Mingzi had laid down an enchantment, isolating Lin Ming from Primordius Heavenly Palace!

Tian Mingzi knew how to hit Lin Ming where it hurt. He had already calculated Lin Ming's weakness. As long as Lin Ming couldn't return to Primordius Heavenly Palace then he could pinch him however he wished!

Peng!

With a loud ring, Tian Mingzi punched out, solidly striking the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone!

Lin Ming's avatar spat out a mouthful of blood and was sent flying backwards! Even though the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was powerful, it still couldn't withstand a frontal collision with Tian Mingzi!

This was the strength of a Great World King!

In a sense, the extreme talent Tian Mingzi was not necessarily any weaker than the half-step Empyrean Ash Murder!

Lin Ming felt a cold chill creep into his chest. He was completely dumbfounded by Tian Mingzi's sudden appearance!

"This person… has been waiting here for a long time already, waiting for his opportunity. This is really what they mean by the praying mantis stalking the cicada, while ignoring the sparrow from behind!"

Lin Ming immediately understood what was happening. Tian Mingzi used some skillful arcane technique to change his appearance into that of the follower to mix in with Imperial Prince Naqi's group. This was something that neither Naqi nor Ash Murder was aware of. It was likely that the true follower had long since been killed off by him!

"The one who can change their appearance isn't just you!" Tian Mingzi coldly sneered.

When Lin Ming was at the Divine Transformation realm, he had used the Bodily Rebirth Technique to change his appearance and was even able to conceal his identity from the World King realm Mister Zhou. Then, it wasn't strange for Tian Mingzi with his Great World King strength to conceal the truth from the half-step Empyrean Ash Murder.

Tian Mingzi had used this appearance changing technique to wait for a chance to launch a sneak attack. When Lin Ming and Ash Murder critically wounded each other, he would launch his fatal life reaping strike!

He chose to do this because he really feared Lin Ming's methods too much. And in fact, what happened had proved that his choice had been correct. Otherwise, the first to die would have been Tian Mingzi and not Ash Murder.

"Your avatar is quite good; did you obtain it in Tragic Death Valley? Moreover, there is that dwelling you hide in, that is also a top grade Empyrean spirit treasure. What a pity, what a pity. You have nowhere else to go now. Without your dwelling you are like a mouse without a hiding place. I can mess with you as I please!"

Tian Mingzi moved towards Lin Ming, one step at a time. After he removed his camouflage, he didn't launch an attack first. Rather, he set up an enchantment to separate Lin Ming from Primordius Heavenly Palace. As long as Lin Ming wasn't able to return to Primordius Heavenly Palace then Lin Ming would lose any shelter he had and have no strength to resist him!

"Your methods… are praiseworthy!"

Lin Ming's breath slowed down and his complexion turned dark and grim. He already knew that Tian Mingzi was a sinister and cunning individual. With his mortal commoner background, he began as an outer court disciple of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, and slowly crawled his way upwards to become an inner court disciple, core disciple, and finally became the one who overthrew the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, even killing the Verdant Feather Holy Lands' old Great World King. For him to arrive at this step by himself, besides having his own destiny and lucky chances, he also had to have spectacular methods of his own!

Today, Lin Ming had finally experienced them.

Lin Ming had thought it was strange from the start. Out of all the people who had hunted him down to this place, only Tian Mingzi had placed a tracking mark on him. Yet, he was also the only one who hadn't arrived. For Tian Mingzi, this didn't seem to make sense at all.

So, it seemed as if he had already arrived but he had simply been waiting for his chance all along! Lin Ming thought that he was the winner, but he was made into a fool by Tian Mingzi!

Chapter 1522 – To Seek Survival In The Face Of Death

Chapter 1522 – To Seek Survival In The Face Of Death

…

…

…

Tian Mingzi slowly extracted a long sword from his spatial ring. This sword was black with a narrow blade. It was eight feet long and engraved with images of cruel and savage demons.

This was not the first time that Lin Ming had seen this sword. Tian Mingzi's weapon was a strange sword variation, not much shorter than his Phoenix Blood Spear.

With Tian Mingzi's strength in combination with this strange sword, the strength he could display in battle was hard to imagine.

"Although your strength is nothing compared to mine, I will do everything in my power to kill you and not give you the tiniest chance to resist!" Tian Mingzi said, his killing intent completely locked onto Lin Ming. He slowly advanced; each step he took was on a life zone dao pattern.

While pretending to be dead in Bai Qi's tomb, Tian Mingzi carefully memorized where Lin Ming stepped. He knew where safety was and where danger was.

As long as he didn't step on a death zone dao pattern then the grand array formation in Bai Qi's tomb would not activate.

Seeing Tian Mingzi perfectly avoid the death zone dao patterns, Lin Ming's complexion was solemn. His complete divine sense radiated outward as numerous possibilities were calculated in his mind.

Today, he would face a second life or death crisis!

Growing to this point, Lin Ming had faced countless life or death crises! Forgetting the past, just after entering God Burying Ridge, Lin Ming had faced numerous dangers on the edge of death. Just a single step and he would have tumbled down beyond redemption!

After experiencing all these dangers, this caused Lin Ming to be even calmer the more dangerously critical a situation was!

Facing Tian Mingzi head on, Lin Ming could come up with no strategy that allowed him to live. This was an enemy that was two and a half large boundaries higher than him. At most, Lin Ming could jump two large boundaries to barely contend with someone.

The further a martial artist went in their cultivation, the greater the disparity was. This was why early on Lin Ming was able to jump two and a half large boundaries to fight, but now, even after experiencing innumerable lucky chances and repeated fortuitous encounters, he could only jump two boundaries to fight.

"Tell me your secrets. I know that you have some heaven-shaking secret on your body. If you tell me then I will let you die in peace. If you don't tell me, then I will break your hands and feet, waste away your meridians, suck out your blood energy, crack open your bones, and turn you into a pile of rotten meat. I will make it so that you won't even have the strength to resist mortals. Then, I will tear out your soul and obtain your secrets all the same, the only difference being that it is a little bit more troublesome for me. But for you, the pain you will experience will be indescribable."

As Tian Mingzi spoke, his aura reached the limit!

As for Lin Ming, at this time he was still calculating the only possibility to escape from this disaster!

Tian Mingzi frowned. “You really are courting death. Although there is no hope for you to escape, I won’t give you any time to think about it!”

As Tian Mingzi spoke, he rushed forwards like an ancient vicious beast, directly impacting towards Lin Ming!

In these years, Tian Mingzi and Lin Ming hadn’t fought many times. But each time Tian Mingzi thought Lin Ming had no path to escape, Lin Ming was always able to flee to the heavens. This was the case at the Sky Spill Continent and also the case at Tragic Death Valley.

Now, in Bai Qi’s tomb, no matter how much Tian Mingzi was assured in his plan, he wouldn’t give Lin Ming any chance to think about escaping!

As Tian Mingzi attacked, Lin Ming also moved. Lin Ming revolved his true essence, pouring all of it into the Phoenix Blood Spear. Then, Lin Ming reversed his body, releasing the Eight Inner Hidden Gates to the extreme. A billion jins of strength erupted and Lin Ming threw the Phoenix Blood Spear straight out!

Woosh!

The Phoenix Blood Spear shot forwards like a meteor as it tore through the void. However, the direction of the attack was not towards Tian Mingzi, but towards an absolute death zone rune atop Bai Qi’s grave!

At this moment, Lin Ming used the Phoenix Blood Spear as the weapon to attack an absolute death zone rune.

Once this absolute death zone rune was activated, terrifying black light would rain down from the heavens, directly attacking the person who touched it. Even if Lin Ming had thrown the Phoenix Blood Spear and hadn’t even touched this death zone rune, he still wouldn’t be an exception!

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

At that moment, several hundred beams of black divine light shot towards Lin Ming like hundreds of divine swords!

And at this time, Tian Mingzi had arrived just in front of Lin Ming; he too had to face the attack of the black divine lights!

For a time, Tian Mingzi's complexion changed. He never imagined that Lin Ming would be so ruthless. The moment that Tian Mingzi attacked, Lin Ming had also moved against the death zone runes, making it so that both of them fell into danger! However, if Lin Ming wanted to use this method to kill Tian Mingzi then he was far too naïve. Lin Ming was the focus of this attack and Tian Mingzi was only collateral damage.

This attack of divine light was far too fierce and brutal without any angle to dodge. Even for Mister Zhou and Ash Murder, when they touched these absolute killing zone runes, they still couldn't dodge and had to face these black lights head on!

"This brat, is he thinking of committing suicide!"

Tian Mingzi's pupils shrank. In that instant he could only forcefully withdraw his attack and retreat, stimulating all the true essence within his body to resist that black divine light!

With Tian Mingzi's strength, it was impossible for this black divine light that had been weakened over billions of years to easily kill him. Even so, he had to resist this black divine light with all his strength. If he tried to exterminate Lin Ming underneath the deluge of this black divine light then he too would die without a grave here.

Tian Mingzi could resist the attack of divine light several times, but Lin Ming was in a far worse position. Once he was struck by this black divine light, then whether it was his protective true essence or his mortal body defensive capabilities that far surpassed other martial artists of the same step, they would all be torn apart like the thinnest pieces of paper!

In that moment, Lin Ming's complexion was as calm and cold as a glacier. Seeing these hundreds of black divine lights shoot at him, their trajectories all reflected within his eyes.

“Asura Heavenly Dao!”

Lin Ming cried out, his body erupting with energy once more. In front of him, the phantom of the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel appeared again. He wasn’t thinking to use this to block the black divine light, but the black divine light still came from the same origin: the Asura Heavenly Dao. Because of this, the black light was also similarly restrained by the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws. This was a point that Lin Ming clearly understood after training in the first volume of the Asura Sutra.

In this hopeless situation, Lin Ming had to bet his life on a single move. With the Asura Heavenly Dao, he had to restrain the black divine light, forcefully opening up a slim chance of survival in the barrage of light that had no dead angles.

Even though Lin Ming had had already cultivated the Asura Sutra to the degree that it would give him this chance, he still didn’t fully grasp whether or not he could truly accomplish this.

“Open!”

Lin Ming roared. The Heretical God Force erupted to its limits, and the Gate of Life burned with blood essence. The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel was shot forth with all his strength!

In that moment, the attack trajectory of the black divine lights slightly shifted. Although this shift didn’t seem worthy of mention at all, it was the difference between life and death for Lin Ming!

Lin Ming’s pupils contracted. His body twisted at an unbelievable angle. At this moment he was like a slippery fish, shuttling back and forth through the beams of black divine light!

“What!?”

Not too far away, Tian Mingzi felt his mind shake as he saw all of this happen. This was because as the one who had stirred up the absolute death zone dao pattern, Lin Ming had to withstand an onslaught of black divine light that was ten times worse than what he had experienced. Moreover, these black lights left no paths open for dodging. If Tian Mingzi were the one placed in this hopeless situation, even he wouldn't be able to avoid the black divine lights. He would have to forcefully withstand three or four black divine lights, and although he wouldn't die, he would still be injured.

Tian Mingzi originally thought that Lin Ming would undoubtedly die in this situation. However, he never imagined that Lin Ming would be able to dodge these black divine lights!

How was this possible!?

"Break again!"

Just as Lin Ming was about to run through the net of black divine lights, he punched out his fists, sending a current of true essence smashing into a second death zone rune. This action caused Tian Mingzi to be thoroughly shocked.

Lin Ming hadn't even yet fully dodged the divine lights from the first absolute death zone rune, but he had now attacked a second one! He was insane!

Two nets of divine light gathered together. This terrifying attack was life-threatening even to someone like Tian Mingzi. Even so, Lin Ming placed himself in the midst of this danger!

From the inconceivable way Lin Ming had dodged just now, Tian Mingzi could confirm that Lin Ming struck the death zone dao patterns not to kill himself but to seek a road to survival in the face of death!

But, Tian Mingzi didn't have time to think just what road to survival Lin Ming had found. With the net of black divine lights gathered around Lin Ming, Tian Mingzi couldn't approach him right now. But, as soon as those black divine lights ended, Lin Ming would die.

Hu - ! Hu - ! Hu - !

The hundreds of black divine lights from the second absolute death zone rune fell down on Lin Ming in a horrifying deluge.

These black divine lights superimposed on those from the first wave, becoming even more dense and dangerous!

At this time, Lin Ming's heart was calm and still to the extreme. The paths of the divine lights were all reflected in his eyes as he revolved his divine sense to its utter limit. He flushed right and left, finally closing in on Tian Mingzi's enchantment.

As Tian Mingzi saw this, his entire body shook. He finally understood just what Lin Ming was planning. Lin Ming was planning to use himself as the lure to guide those black divine lights into attacking his enchantment. As long as the enchantment was broken, Lin Ming would be able to return to Primordius Heavenly Palace!

And now, Tian Mingzi had to face the absolute killing array in Bai Qi's tomb that had been activated by Lin Ming!

Even so, a good half of this array formation had been broken by Ash Murder. Of the original 108 iron-armored spectral soldiers, around half of them had been destroyed and the remaining half wasn't too great a threat to Tian Mingzi. But, Tian Mingzi wasn't willing to let Lin Ming's plan succeed because he had a premonition that once Lin Ming returned to Primordius Heavenly Palace and was given a chance to catch his breath, he would inevitably produce some unbelievable method again and again to deal with him. In the end, Tian Mingzi might even be the one played to death!

"Lin Ming, I won't let you!"

Finally, Tian Mingzi moved. Disregarding the threat of the black divine lights, he fired right into Lin Ming!

The enchantment that Tian Mingzi laid down blocked Lin Ming from returning to Primordius Heavenly Palace. With Lin Ming's strength, it was impossible for him to break past this barrier and Tian Mingzi wouldn't give him the chance to do so.

But now, Lin Ming was guiding these terrifying black divine lights, a force that could even kill World Kings. With a barrage of hundreds of black divine lights striking Tian Mingzi's enchantment, it would be pierced through like paper!

"Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!"

Lin Ming shouted out as he used the Asura Heavenly Dao a second time!

The first barrage of divine lights had yet to pass, and now with a second wave added on, Lin Ming had to use the Asura Heavenly Dao yet again. This placed a tremendous burden on his body!

"Open again!"

Lin Ming roared. All the blood vessels under his skin bulged out. With the Gate of Life, he burnt 10% of his blood essence!

Chapter 1523 – Lin Ming's Counterattack

Chapter 1523 – Lin Ming's Counterattack

…

…

…

Black light shot out and energy wildly raged about in the air. Beneath the cover of countless killing intents, Lin Ming tightened his protective true essence to the limit, rushing left and right without any defensive protections.

This was because Lin Ming was well aware that even if he stimulated his protective true essence to the limit, against this black light, any defense he summoned was no different from paper! If this was the case, then he might as well focus all of his concentration and true essence on the Asura Heavenly Dao!

Three beams of divine light that couldn't be avoided had their trajectory forcefully changed by Lin Ming. In that instant, Lin Ming became flexible as if he had no joints at all and passed through a narrow slit between those black lights at an inconceivable degree. But at this time, the fourth unavoidable beam of black light came shooting at him. Because Lin Ming had consumed too much strength too quickly, he simply wasn't able to deal with it. There was no way for him to avoid this!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. He chose not to use his true essence to protect himself when withstanding this divine light because he knew that doing so was useless.

He twisted his body once more, allowing this black beam of light to pierce through his lower left abdomen.

This part of his body didn't have any vital zones. If his body had to be pierced somewhere, then having it pierced here was much better than his chest or head.

Puff!

In that moment, the black light easily punctured through Lin Ming's body. Lin Ming spat out a mouthful of blood, biting down on the tip of his tongue as he stimulated the Divine Mist Heart Mantra. With this, his consciousness didn't flicker in the slightest, even with the severe pain that wracked his body.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The black divine lights that Lin Ming avoided fell down on Tian Mingzi's enchantment in waves. With the sound of a rolling thunderstorm, this barrier exploded like glass!

In that moment, Lin Ming didn't reveal any happiness at all. With his emotionless face, he calmly continued hurtling towards Primordius Heavenly Palace!

"Dream on!"

A voice struck Lin Ming's ear like a peal of thunder. Tian Mingzi had finally attacked!

Tian Mingzi shot into a place where the divine light was the sparsest. By revolving all the strength in his body, he forcefully withstood a beam of black light. Although this black divine light wasn't able to pierce his body, it still ravaged his back muscles, tearing them apart.

Tian Mingzi simply wasn't able to care about the wounds on his back. His sword cut forth and a black vortex appeared from thin air, "Heaven Absorbing Demon Art!"

In that moment, a dreadful suction force erupted like a tide, directly locking onto Lin Ming!

Because it was weakened by the black divine light and also because of the haste in which it was used, this Heaven Absorbing Demon Art wasn't even a tenth of Tian Mingzi's usual strength. However, when it locked onto the severely wounded Lin Ming, he still slowed down. Lin Ming was like a fly that fell into a giant spider web, his speed sharply plummeting!

The dragging force of the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art was simply far too strong. Lin Ming was unable to continue forwards.

“I’ll drain your blood dry!”

Tian Mingzi made a claw with his right hand and pulled it backwards. The terrifying suction force of the Heaven Absorbing Demon instantly shifted to Lin Ming’s lower abdomen where he had been pierced through. Tian Mingzi actually wanted to use his Heaven Absorbing Demon Art to suck out all of Lin Ming’s blood from his wound. From this move, one could see just how cruel and insidious Tian Mingzi’s methods were!

In that moment, Lin Ming’s body shook. He felt all of his blood vitality being gathered into his lower abdomen by that suction force, wanting to gush outwards. He grit his teeth, locking in his blood vitality with true essence.

Tian Mingzi’s eyes flashed with a grim light. His right hand tightened, as if he wanted to crumble something in his grasp.

Puff!

With a loud cracking sound, Lin Ming’s true essence lock was shattered by Tian Mingzi’s strength. A pillar of brilliant blood erupted from Lin Ming’s abdomen like a fountain!

Lin Ming’s lips trembled and his face began to whiten.

“Hahaha! Today is the day you die!” Tian Mingzi wildly laughed. He waved his hand and his black sword appeared in his grip. With the sound of howling wind, he hurtled towards Lin Ming!

With the strength of a Great World King and his true essence fused into his sword, this sword strike could even pierce through a celestial body. It was impossible for the wounded Lin Ming to resist it!

Moreover, Lin Ming's movements were bound by the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art; it was impossible for him to defend!

The black sword came shooting towards Lin Ming's heart. If it struck its target, Lin Ming would die here and now!

"You're finished!"

Tian Mingzi maniacally grinned. It was like he could see the future where Lin Ming was slowly dismembered by his sword.

He had hunted Lin Ming down for a full ten years. This Lin Ming with his countless secrets had cost him a hand and also the foundation that he spent 50,000 years building. Now, Lin Ming would finally die at his hands today!

The keen sword whistled forwards. The distance of only several hundred feet passed by in a flash. Then, just as that sword was about to pierce through Lin Ming's body, a shadow shot forwards like lightning, blocking Lin Ming from that black sword!

"Mm!?"

Tia Mingzi was startled, but his black sword had already struck that shadow!

With a loud ringing sound the black sword was deflected backwards. As for that shadow, it simply shook a little but didn't receive any damage at all.

Tian Mingzi's eyes focused. This shadow was only the size of a table; it was Lin Ming's Primordius Heavenly Palace!

After the enchantment was shattered by the black divine lights, Lin Ming could fly to Primordius Heavenly Palace, and naturally, Primordius Heavenly Palace was able to fly towards him. But, the one temporarily controlling Primordius Heavenly Palace was not Lin Ming, but Xiao Moxian!

Xiao Moxian had already controlled Primordius Heavenly Palace once before, and now this was the second time. In a critical moment, she had used Primordius Heavenly Palace to block this fatal strike against Lin Ming!

“Damn it!”

Tian Mingzi wanted to attack once more, but at this moment, a brilliant rainbow-hued beam shot out from Primordius Heavenly Palace, wrapping around and dragging in the severely wounded Lin Ming.

Hoh - !

Xiao Moxian flew up to grab Lin Ming. As she grabbed him, her hands were shaking slightly.

“Lin Ming, are you okay?”

Xiao Moxian’s breath caught in her throat, her voice trembling. When Lin Ming had been pierced through the abdomen by the black divine light and then had a fountain of his blood come gushing out when Tian Mingzi used the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art, she had felt her heart shrink.

“I’m… fine…”

Lin Ming’s complexion was pale and his lips were dry. Just now, almost 80% of his blood had been sucked out! He had also lost a great deal of his blood vitality.

“The blood you drew out of me, I will make you pay back this debt.”

Lin Ming grit his teeth, a thick killing intent shining in his eyes.

……

“Just a little more, just a little more and I would have killed him, damn it all!”

Tian Mingzi was breathless with anger. He reached out his hand, wanting to call back his black sword. But at this time, he heard a rumbling behind him.

Tian Mingzi turned to see Lin Ming’s Essence Spirit Embryo Stone grab onto the Phoenix Blood Spear and come hurtling at him.

With the strength that Lin Ming’s avatar had, Tian Mingzi wasn’t scared of it at all. But, the crux was that behind Lin Ming’s avatar, there were hundreds of black divine lights chasing him.

That explosive rumble just now was the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone actively attacking the death zone rune. It was deliberately drawing in black divine lights to attack Tian Mingzi!

That death zone rune was far too close to Lin Ming. Moreover, with the angle that Lin Ming had chosen, it was impossible for Tian Mingzi to avoid it!

Lin Ming’s true self had already been severely wounded be Tian Mingzi and the black divine light. When his body was pierced through and a massive amount of his blood vitality was drawn out by the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art, Lin Ming’s fighting will hadn’t diminished in the least. Even though his true self had lost his combat strength, he still controlled his avatar to activate the black divine lights and calculate the best angle to attack Tian Mingzi.

His avatar would have to withstand the black divine light with Tian Mingzi. No one was going to emerge from this unscathed!

“What!?”

Tian Mingzi’s complexion changed. He never imagined Lin Ming would be so ruthless. When he was on the verge of death, he had actually used just several breaths of time to come up with this plan and turn the tide of battle!

The black lights were imminent and threatening; there was no way for Tian Mingzi to evade!

Tian Mingzi clenched his jaw. “Lin Ming, only one of us can live beneath the heavens!”

He roared out, erupting his true essence to the limit. Demonic energy surged around him, forming a black protective shield.

He was well aware that he had to resist this strike by paying the lowest price possible. If he suffered devastating wounds from these black lights then he would absolutely fall into tremendous danger!

Chapter 1524 – Tragic

Chapter 1524 – Tragic

…

…

…

"Counterforce – Heaven Absorbing Demon Art!"

Tian Mingzi recklessly released the energy absorbed by the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art to withstand this strike!

And at this time, Lin Ming's avatar came shooting towards Tian Mingzi without fear. Without any consideration for the black lights all around it, it wanted to attack Tian Mingzi!

Tian Mingzi's complexion instantly turned ugly. He had personally witnessed Lin Ming's avatar being punched in an all-out strike by a half-step Empyrean powerhouse, and yet it had only received injuries.

The defensive capabilities of this avatar were simply like those of a farm animal!

Just from this alone, Tian Mingzi knew that in a competition of defense, he couldn't compete with this vicious beast in human form. In a situation that he couldn't defend, there was no way he could resist the all-out attack of a half-step Empyrean.

Those with bare feet did not fear shoes with holes. This was only Lin Ming's avatar, but the one defending was Tian Mingzi's true self. To go all-out with his true self against an avatar, only an idiot would do something so stupid!

"Who cares if you attack me, I will block all attacks together!" Tian Mingzi's eyes flashed with a grim light. In this moment, he stimulated his strength to the extreme!

The main threat to him was from those black divine lights. As for the attack of Lin Ming's avatar, he simply didn't care about it.

Bang!

Lin Ming's avatar smashed its spear into Tian Mingzi's black barrier. The terrifying mortal bodily strength of that avatar erupted like a volcano!

Lin Ming's avatar specialized in body transformation and its mortal body was far superior to that of Lin Ming's true self. It was a God Beast Essence Spirit Embryo Stone. In the bronze temple, it had been refined over billions upon billions of years with the essence energy of 33 extreme God Beasts. In terms of how formidable its body was, this avatar far surpassed both Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, and completely outclassed Imperial Prince Naqi. This was a grand masterpiece of the Asura Road Master; how could Naqi possibly compare with it?

Thus, this avatar's physical strength was almost 10 times stronger than Lin Ming's true self, reaching up to 10 billion jins!

Kacha!

The spear of Lin Ming's avatar pierced into Tian Mingzi's black barrier and actually caused a crack to appear in the surface!

Although only a tiny crack appeared, this meant that Tian Mingzi's barrier had greatly weakened. If he were to meet another powerful attack then his barrier would completely collapse.

"What!?"

At this moment, Tian Mingzi was completely panic-stricken!

He knew that Lin Ming's avatar was fierce, but he thought it was only its defensive capabilities. No matter what, he never imagined that its striking power would also be so terrifying. Disregarding the essence gathering system, disregarding the various Laws and martial skills, in terms of frontal impact ability alone, Lin Ming's avatar far surpassed his true self! If Lin Ming's true self was a mortal fighter then Lin Ming's avatar was a wild tiger! When facing off head to head, how could a mortal fighter compare to a tiger?

Seeing the black divine lights come shooting down, Tian Mingzi's eyes nearly popped out with rage. In that life or death moment he bit down on his tongue and burnt his blood essence!

For Tian Mingzi who dreamed of breaking into the Empyrean realm, there was no need to mention how precious his blood essence was. Ten years ago, he had lost a hand to Lin Ming and now he was forced by Lin Ming to burn his blood essence. This was decision he only made as a last resort!

However, even though he burned his blood essence, Tian Mingzi didn't have enough time to use a defensive martial skill because the black divine lights had already arrived in front of him. Now, he could only use this black barrier that had a crack in it to withstand this attack!

Woosh!

Lin Ming's avatar had ruined Tian Mingzi's plans, forcing him to directly face the impact of these black divine lights.

Lin Ming definitely wouldn't block these black divine lights for Tian Mingzi. If the avatar had to withstand the attack then both of them would do so together!

"Ahhhh!"

Tian Mingzi wildly roared out, the anger blazing in his heart hot beyond imagination. It was clear that he was far stronger than Lin Ming and he had done everything in his power to kill him. Whether it was disguising himself as Ash Murder's follower, hiding away to sneak attack, isolating Lin Ming from Primordius Heavenly Palace with an enchantment, or drawing out Lin Ming's blood through his wound with the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art, everything Tian Mingzi did could be called desperately trying to kill Lin Ming no matter the cost. All of this was so that Lin Ming wouldn't have the tiniest sliver of hope to survive. But, the end result was that through all the twists and turns, he was forced once more by Lin Ming into a dangerous situation!

Bang!

Several hundred black lights solidly smashed into Tian Mingzi's barrier. The barrier that had been struck once already suddenly produced a massive fissure that raced down it before it shattered into pieces. Tian Mingzi coughed, vomiting out a mouthful of blood as he was sent flying away!

Ca!

As he was sent flying backwards, a black light pierced through his right shoulder, mincing his shoulder blade to pieces!

Feeling this severe pain in his shoulder, Tian Mingzi's complexion completely changed. To a Great World King, this sort of wound only needed a single day to regenerate. But in his current situation, this pierced shoulder would actually affect his combat strength, causing all sorts of serious consequences for him.

At this time, beside Tian Mingzi, Lin Ming's avatar was also struck by the raging river of black divine lights. The avatar was flushed away, distressed and gushing blood all over.

However, this avatar was extremely formidable. Even with such heavy damage, although its bones and muscles had been torn apart and its organs had been scrambled up, its body hadn't been pierced through. In terms of mortal bodily defense, Tian Mingzi was far from being able to compare with it.

Energy surged, wildly storming about. Tian Mingzi suppressed the harrowing pain in his shoulder to form a final shield of protective true essence to block the shockwaves of energy.

Even so, a great deal of this energy broke into Tian Mingzi's body where it wildly rushed through his meridians!

Pa pa pa!

Tian Mingzi's blood vessels collapsed one after another, blood spraying from his body!

He crashed into the black stone altar. In the final moment, he barely managed to change his direction to avoid landing on another death zone dao pattern. Luckily, Tian Mingzi had remembered where the majority of the death zone dao patterns were, otherwise if he were to strike another one now then he might have simply died here.

Lin Ming's avatar also crashed into the black stone altar, its entire body covered with blood.

Looking at the area where Tian Mingzi fell, Lin Ming's avatar darkly sighed. According to the angle of the black divine lights, Tian Mingzi should have fallen into another death zone dao pattern. But, Lin Ming hadn't placed much hope in this to begin with. He didn't think that the prudent and cautious Tian Mingzi would make such a low-level mistake.

Gritting his teeth, Lin Ming's avatar flashed away, flying straight towards Primordius Heavenly Palace!

Tian Mingzi saw Lin Ming's avatar escape, but didn't stop him at all.

His current condition was extremely bad so it would be hard to instantly create another enchantment, and even if he did, he might not be able to block Lin Ming's avatar.

Moreover, even if he blocked Lin Ming's avatar, it would be hard for Tian Mingzi to do anything in a short period of time. This avatar's defensive capabilities were far too dreadful. If they fought then this avatar might disregard all consequences to strike another death zone dao pattern, wanting them both to perish together. If that were to occur, Tian Mingzi found it hard to imagine what the consequences would be.

The moment that Lin Ming's avatar entered into Primordius Heavenly Palace, Tian Mingzi felt a thick killing intent surge up from behind him.

He turned around to see the remaining 50 some-iron armored spectral soldiers come to life once more. The stone chips on their bodies had already fallen and a red flame lit up their eyes. They grasped their deadly weapons and began moving towards him!

Although Lin Ming and Tian Mingzi's battle seemed as if it occurred over a long period of time, the truth was that everything had happened far too quickly. The battle could only be described as ever-changing. From the time when Tian Mingzi rushed towards Lin Ming's true self, to the time at which Lin Ming activated the death zone dao pattern to draw the black divine lights into helping him enter Primordius Heavenly Palace, and even to the time that Lin Ming's avatar had triggered another death zone dao pattern, causing tremendous losses to Tian Mingzi, all of this had occurred in just several breaths of time!

And, several breaths of time were all that were required for those iron-armored spectral soldiers to reawaken. Now, they had finally entered their combat state.

For a time, Tian Mingzi's complexion became even uglier. This iron-armored spectral soldier array formation had only half of its spectral soldiers remaining and was far weaker than it was before. Perhaps it was only at 20-25% of the original array's strength. But now, Tian Mingzi's condition was also extremely poor. His shoulder was ruined and he had lost the ability to move one of his arms. His blood was chaotically moving within his body and many of his blood vessels had exploded. He had even been forced to burn some of his blood essence.

To fight against 50 iron-armored spectral soldiers in this situation, the difficulty of this could be imagined!

In terms of strength, Tian Mingzi was a peak Great World King, not much worse than the half-step Empyrean Ash Murder. But in terms of endurance and defensive capabilities, Tian Mingzi was far inferior to Ash Murder, who was from the saint race. Ash Murder cultivated body transformation and even in a situation where he was extremely wounded he was still able to maintain a considerable amount of his combat strength. This was not something that Tian Mingzi could copy.

Facing these iron-armored spectral soldiers, Tian Mingzi had fallen into a life or death struggle!

“Well done, Lin Ming!” Tian Mingzi gazed towards Primordius Heavenly Palace with hatred shining in his eyes. He could already foresee that in order to defeat these remaining iron-armored spectral soldiers, he would need to pay a heavy price!

However, Lin Ming wasn’t much better off. He had lost almost 80% of his blood and his blood vitality had been deeply diminished.

As for his avatar, it would be unable to fight again. After being struck by so many divine lights, it wouldn’t have any combat strength for some time.

Now, what mattered the most was whether or not Tian Mingzi would have to pay some sky-high price to destroy all these iron-armored spectral soldiers.

If Tian Mingzi had even just 20% of his combat strength left afterwards, Lin Ming still wouldn’t dare to leave Primordius Heavenly Palace. At that time, if Tian Mingzi were to simply sit down, meditate, and restore himself to his peak state then Lin Ming would die without a doubt.

“Lin Ming, for you to achieve what you have, I truly do admire you. But, you will die, no matter how deep the price I must pay. I will kill you and take all the secrets from your body!”

Tian Mingzi said with a true essence sound transmission towards Primordius Heavenly Palace. The palace array formation didn’t stop sounds without striking power, thus Lin Ming was able to hear all of this.

“And there is you too, Xiao Moxian! You also must have left Tragic Death Valley and have been secretly assisting Lin Ming from the shadows to oppose me! When I break into your dwelling’s grand array formation, I will toss you alive into a pill furnace and use your half-phoenix body and primordial yin for my alchemy to make up for the blood energy I have lost! You are nothing more than a turtle in a jar, there is no way for you to survive!"

Tian Mingzi threatened Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian with words, wanting to shake their wills. Although this was a simple tactic, in this desperate situation it had a great effect. This was because everything that Tian Mingzi said had a chance of becoming reality!

After Xiao Moxian heard this, she paled.

Growing up until now, there were many people who had threatened her. Some people wanted to capture her to dual cultivate with her, and some people even wanted to rape her and take her primordial yin.

But, she had never encountered someone like Tian Mingzi who wanted to toss her into a pill furnace alive to refine her into a pill.

Thinking about how it would feel to be slowly refined alive into a pill, Xiao Moxian was terrified. Tian Mingzi was a brutal and ambitious person. He had no sympathy for beauty or lingering sentiments. For him, his only ambition was to conquer the world and become a god; he felt no emotions like lust or love.

Chapter 1525 – Like Rain With Water

Chapter 1525 – Like Rain With Water

…

…

…

Bang!

A horrifying explosion rang through Primordius Heavenly Palace. These were the sounds of energy detonations that were wildly surging outside from the fierce battle between Tian Mingzi and the iron-armored spectral soldiers!

Even if Tian Mingzi was severely wounded, his strength was still formidable. His black sword was like the scythe of a death god, reaping through the battlefield and shearing iron-armored spectral soldiers in half!

“Heaven Absorbing Demon Art!”

Tian Mingzi’s right hand reached out and a terrifying suction force locked onto the spectral soldier that he had just killed, drawing out all of its strength to completely gather into him!

Tian Mingzi planned to restore himself using the dregs of this battle in order to reduce the total energy he lost to the barest minimum.

This was also the tyrannical feature of the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art. In a battle, one could use this overbearing technique to absorb the enemies’ strength, becoming ever stronger during battle!

In a situation where there was a great difference in strength, then after a battle ended, the martial artist who used the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art would have even more energy in their body than they did at the start.

"Mm!? This power is...!"

As the strength from the spectral soldier entered Tian Mingzi, he felt his entire body shake and his meridians become chaotic, his blood tumbling within him!

The strength within the spectral soldier's body was extremely unique. It carried a terrifying demonic power that was incompatible with the Laws that Tian Mingzi knew of, as if it were its own independent Laws!

Not only could Tian Mingzi not use this strength, but it caused his true essence to run amok, nearly causing him to vomit blood!

"Damn! How could this happen!?"

Tian Mingzi was breathless with anger. Since he didn't understand the Asura Heavenly Dao he certainly wasn't able to control the strength contained within these iron-armored spectral soldiers. When he sucked in this strength that was infused with this strange devilish power, it was like eating a handful of poison powder.

When a mortal ate food they couldn't digest their stomach would be pained and uncomfortable. As for a martial artist that sucked in energy they couldn't control, the result could be imagined. This power wildly rampaged through Tian Mingzi's meridians, creating a tremendous burden on his already damaged meridians!

Puff!

Tian Mingzi's clothes tore apart. Several black arrows of energy shot out from his acupoints; he had forcefully pushed out this demonic power!

This brief collision left Tian Mingzi grimacing. Against these iron-armored spectral soldiers, he actually wasn't able to use this Heaven Absorbing Demon Art!

Without the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art, this battle would be that much more difficult.

"I cannot recklessly engage them head on. I must use guerilla tactics and avoid any frontal confrontation as much as I can to reduce my energy usage to the minimum." Tian Mingzi didn't fear contending with this incomplete group of iron-armored spectral soldiers. Rather, what he feared was Lin Ming, who was hiding away in Primordius Heavenly Palace!

He had no idea just what methods Lin Ming had remaining. The more strength he had left, the safer he would be.

....

"Lin Ming, you don't need to hurry..."

Xiao Moxian supported Lin Ming to sit atop a black stone bed. This stone bed was formed from chaos stones; it was where Empyrean Primordius usually cultivated.

Just this stone bed was a unique Empyrean spirit treasure. Although, its level was quite ordinary among Empyrean spirit treasures.

There were many similar treasures in Primordius Heavenly Palace. If any of these treasures were taken to the outside, they would become objects that World King Holy Lands would brutally wage war for.

By sitting on this chaos stone bed, the chaos energy in one's body would be pulled along by the stone bed so that it spontaneously circulated on its own, thus providing a cultivating effect.

Now with Lin Ming severely wounded, he could also sit on this stone bed to direct the chaos stone energy into his body and slightly make up for the blood vitality he lost.

"I'm fine. I need to speed up the flow of time here to the longest possible – 1 to 500!"

Within Primordius Heavenly Palace were many array formations, one of them being an array formation that could control the flow of time; there was no need for Xiao Moxian to personally set up an enchantment.

In a time enchantment where the temporal flow was sped up to a ridiculous degree, it was simply impossible to cultivate. But, using it for recovering wasn't a problem at all.

Now, Lin Ming needed to restore his injuries as soon as possible.

By relying on his own formidable regenerative abilities and all sorts of top ranked pills, Lin Ming could restore the wound on his lower abdomen in a mere two to four hours.

As for the blood vitality he was missing, that was a bit troublesome. No matter what, it would take some time.

And this was under the assumption that all sorts of top medicines were taken.

Lin Ming didn't have such a long time to restore himself. By the time he was recovered, Tian Mingzi would have already finished his battle.

"Ji Xian'er, you and I are both in an extremely dangerous situation. I have a feeling that once Tian Mingzi breaks through the iron-armored spectral soldiers, although he will have consumed a great deal of strength, he won't be completely exhausted. If that happens, even if you and I are completely restored, the both of us combined will not be his match..."

Lin Ming's expression was grim. The moment that Tian Mingzi defeated the iron-armored spectral soldiers would also be his weakest moment. If Lin Ming couldn't defeat Tian Mingzi at this time, then as more time passed, Tian Mingzi would only become increasingly strong.

At that time, their only destiny would be to slowly stand by until they were killed or refined into pills.

"Then what can we do?" Xiao Moxian asked Lin Ming. At this time, she had no idea what they could do. In this God Burying Ridge she had experienced all sorts of dangers and tribulations, and she had slowly become accustomed to relying on Lin Ming to come up with a plan for these times.

“First I need to recover. Come and help me.”

Lin Ming said. He took out some blood vitality restoring pills from his spatial ring and swallowed them all down as he started to meditate.

The pills that Lin Ming swallowed all had mild, nourishing properties. Currently, Lin Ming’s blood vitality was too weak and he couldn’t handle the more brutal medicines.

Xiao Moxian also sat on the stone bed. She sat on her knees, facing Lin Ming.

She pulled Lin Ming’s hand into her own, continuously delivering the blood vitality within her own body.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were hard and flexible, a perfect complement of yin and yang. With the two of them together, Lin Ming’s True Dragon energy blended with her True Phoenix blood. The energy between them echoed, becoming stronger, boundless.

As Lin Ming’s True Dragon energy was nourished by the True Phoenix blood, it became increasingly vibrant and vigorous, rushing up like a river at high tide, endlessly swirling within him.

As for Xiao Moxian’s True Phoenix blood, after it obtained the nourishment of Lin Ming’s True Dragon energy, it became increasingly hot, like a never-ending flame, burning on until the end of time.

In this life or death moment, neither of them held back anything. Their aura, blood vitality, energies, and even their life force mixed together, lifting each other up.

This sort of feeling was as if Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had fused together as one.

Of course, Lin Ming's profits during this process were much greater. After all, he had lost a tremendous amount of blood vitality and had to rely on Xiao Moxian's primordial yin energy to make up for it.

After being revitalized by Xiao Moxian's blood vitality, the muscles over Lin Ming's lower abdomen began to wriggle about. His organs regenerated and the skin began knitting together. His wound was regenerating at a visible speed.

The origin energy exchange became increasingly quick. Xiao Moxian's body was dripping with sweat. As Lin Ming's vigorous yang energy entered her body she felt her entire body heat up. Blood rushed to her face, making her feel comfortable and warm, like her entire body was melting away into a puddle.

Even Xiao Moxian's inner world faintly trembled, seeming as if it wanted to break into the Divine Lord realm!

Xiao Moxian had already entered the late Divine Transformation realm. She had diligently cultivated in Tragic Death Valley for nine years and had also studied the first volume of the Asura Sutra. She was extremely close to breaking into the Divine Lord boundary!

As for Lin Ming, he felt as if his entire body was being baptized in a bath of nectar. His entire body was comfortable and his pores opened up. The 360 acupoints on his body as well as the tens of thousands of pores were wide open, greedily absorbing the primordial yin energy that Xiao Moxian was releasing. As this energy circulated through Lin Ming's body, all sorts of changes occurred within him, accompanied by a myriad of different tastes.

In a time of crisis, the two of them had completely invested themselves in this cultivation process. They became familiar with each other's body. This sort of familiarity was not just their bodies, but even their bloodline, inner world, and spiritual sea was completely opened to the other party.

It was unknown how long this state continued for. Lin Ming's eyes remained shut tight and the wound on his abdomen had already completely healed. Even a good portion of his blood vitality had been restored. Although it wasn’t to his peak state, it was far, far better than before.

After being in this state of perfect harmony, Xiao Moxian’s large, pitch-black eyes opened. Her eyes blinked as she stared at Lin Ming right in front of her. She was only a mere three inches from his face, and at this distance she could clearly smell the unique and masculine scent wafting from his body. This scene smelled quite nice.

Lin Ming’s face was strong, with distinct edges. He had extraordinary looks. His eyes were like stars and his eyebrows slanted up like swords. His body was filled with the spirit and soul of a vibrant, outstanding young elite, but he still retained the calm atmosphere of a mature martial artist.

At this time, Lin Ming’s entire body was covered in sweat. His eyelids gently trembled and his body continued to release a strong yang energy. As this energy entered Xiao Moxian’s body, it made her feel so good that she thought she was drunk.

She didn’t know how long she had been staring at Lin Ming for. Her cheeks were red, endlessly alluring. Sometimes here vision was clear, and sometimes her vision was blurry.

At this time, Lin Ming opened his eyes.

After being discovered sneaking a look by Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian didn’t evade his sight. She continued to stare at him as before, both of them in close proximity to each other.

Her eyes flickered. Within her eyes was the naïve innocence of a girl, the tender feelings of a young woman, as well as ten thousand flavors of emotions that had yet to mature. Just the light in Xiao Moxian’s eyes had countless meanings that she couldn’t express.

Seeing Xiao Moxian’s eyes that were sometimes clear and sometimes blurry, Lin Ming was stunned for a moment. But at this time, he couldn’t think about it too much. His palm turned and a black bead appeared in his hand. This was the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence that he obtained from the Eternal Demon Abyss.

This was the blood and flesh essence energy gathered by the Grandmist Spirit Bead over a period of a hundred million years. When Lin Ming was at the Eternal Demon Abyss he had used 10% of the energy within to break through his cultivation boundary. The remaining 90% had been left over because he was too weak to absorb it all.

Now that he had broken into the Divine Lord realm, taking out the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence to restore his blood vitality was just the right timing.

The Grandmist Spirit Bead essence was an extremely potent and tyrannical medicine. Lin Ming had mixed together with Xiao Moxian in perfect harmony to restore a part of his blood vitality, and only then did he dare to think about absorbing it.

This Grandmist Spirit Bead that was covered with demonic runes slowly floated upwards, levitating between Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian. Xiao Moxian was stirred out of her thoughts. Then, her eyes shifted from Lin Ming's face to this mysterious black bead.

"Lin Ming… this is…"

From this black bead, Xiao Moxian could feel a blood vitality surging out like a boundless sea, causing her to be startled!

Chapter 1526 – Another Breakthrough

Chapter 1526 – Another Breakthrough

…

…

…

Lin Ming didn't plan on concealing anything from Xiao Moxian. He held the black bead and truthfully said, "Ji Xian'er, this is a hundred million years' worth of gathered essence from the Grandmist Spirit Bead."

"Grandmist Spirit Bead!? You mean the Grandmist Spirit Bead that is in the hands of the Good Fortune Saint Son!?" Xiao Moxian was dumbfounded. As a peak young elite of the Divine Realm, she certainly knew what level of treasure the Grandmist Spirit Bead was and what it meant.

"It is exactly that."

Xiao Moxian was even more panic-stricken as she heard Lin Ming's affirmation. "How would you have something like that?"

"Senior Empyrean Primordius passed it down to me."

The saint race had wrested the Grandmist Spirit Bead from Empyrean Primordius. This was not a secret to the high level figures of the Divine Realm, and even Xiao Moxian knew of this history. In fact, if Lin Ming didn't say anything, Xiao Moxian would have figured it out after recovering from her shock.

"Empyrean Primordius! I see, so your chaos stone dwelling is also passed down to you from Empyrean Primordius!"

Xiao Moxian said, suddenly aware, She finally knew what sort of lucky chances Lin Ming had experienced.

There were far too many secrets circling around Lin Ming. In Xiao Moxian's eyes, even if there was a successor who had completely inherited Empyrean Primordius' legacy, it would still be hard for them to reach Lin Ming's current lofty heights. Moreover, as a martial artist from the lower realms, it was unimaginable how Lin Ming would have obtained Empyrean Primordius' approval.

"Yes, Senior Primordius bestowed upon me a great graciousness. The things he left for me have saved my life several times. Just in facing Tian Mingzi, Senior Primordius has already rescued me three times."

Lin Ming and Tian Mingzi had had several bitter encounters with each other. During his trip to the Sky Spill Continent, Lin Ming had relied upon the secrets within the Eternal Demon Abyss to reverse the situation and slay Tian Mingzi's avatar.

Now, he had used Primordius Heavenly Palace to prevent Tian Mingzi hunting him down through God Burying Ridge.

"This Grandmist Spirit Bead essence in my hands is condensed from the blood vitality that the Grandmist Spirit Bead absorbed over a hundred million years. It is almost impossible to split apart and if I swallow it directly then I cannot withstand the impact of it. I can only use the Grandmist Heavenly Dao left behind by Empyrean Primordius to divide a small portion of its origin energy and then slowly absorb it. Now, I will draw out a part of its origin energy and you and I will absorb it together."

"Absorb it together?" Xiao Moxian was well aware of how precious this Grandmist Spirit Bead essence was; it far surpassed a transcendent divine pill! If she could absorb it then it would be of great benefit to her cultivation!

“Mm, when we cultivated together just now, I was able to feel that you were just half a step from the Divine Lord realm. If you absorb the Grandmist Spirit Beat essence then it might be possible for you to break through to the Divine Lord realm!”

Facing Tian Mingzi, Lin Ming didn’t have faith that he would be able to defeat him alone. If he could add on Xiao Moxian, then the two of them would have a much higher chance of success.

Xiao Moxian also trained in the Asura Sutra. Once she broke into the Divine Lord realm, she wouldn’t be much weaker than Lin Ming!

“Divine Lord realm… perhaps I might be able to break through, but even if I do, you and I together might not be Tian Mingzi’s match…”

Xiao Moxian didn’t refuse. At this time, she and Lin Ming were travelling the stormy seas on the same little boat together.

“That’s right… that’s why I have to bet everything on this. In the next several hours, I have to make another breakthrough!”

As Lin Ming spoke, a sharp light exploded in his eyes. Xiao Moxian was shocked to hear this, “Make another breakthrough? How will you make another breakthrough?”

Lin Ming had entered the early Divine Lord realm just several days ago; it would be impossible for him to make another breakthrough.

In many cases, geniuses would intentionally suppress their cultivation in order to further stabilize their foundation, even when they were able to make a breakthrough anytime they wanted. But, this sort of situation only occurred when those geniuses stayed in that boundary for a long enough time and their cultivation had accumulated to a high enough degree.

As for Lin Ming, he had just broken through a large boundary several days ago and he had no accumulations at all. His inner world was completely empty. In this situation, him wanting to make another breakthrough was simply an idiot spouting nonsense.

Lin Ming said, “It is indeed impossible for me to make another breakthrough in the essence gathering system, but there actually lies a chance for me to do so in the body transformation system. I plan to… challenge the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!”

As Lin Ming spoke the words ‘the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace’ every word he spoke was slow and steady, each word carrying with it a bold courage and deep determination!

Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

This was a mythical boundary, one that the Heavenly Dao Laws would not abide!

As a proud daughter of the Divine Realm, Xiao Moxian certainly knew just what this boundary meant.

“Lin Ming… are you joking with me… you want to break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!?”

Ever since the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago, the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had become the shackles that bound down all human body transformation system martial artists. They were chains that could not be broken.

In the legends, a million years ago, Empyrean Primordius had broken free from these chains, becoming the first and only person to step into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace since the last great calamity!

However, the reason Empyrean Primordius was able to accomplish this was because of his extreme talent and, more importantly, because he possessed the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

That was the ultimate body transformation treasure in the entire 33 Heavens, and a unique existence that surpassed the Heavenly Dao rules. With Empyrean Primordius’ talent in addition to such a heaven-defying treasure, people could acknowledge that he had broken free from the Heavenly Dao rules and stepped into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

As for Lin Ming, he did not possess the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

Lin Ming created miracle after miracle, and even Xiao Moxian believed that there would be a day when he could break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. But, this time would only come once he came across some bewildering lucky chance and when all sorts of factors coincided together. When all of that occurred and with the massive destiny upon Lin Ming's body, only then would he have a chance of success!

It was definitely not like now, where Lin Ming would break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace just because he said he would!

"Lin Ming, do you have any idea what you are speaking about? The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace are a myth. If you possessed the Grandmist Spirit Bead then perhaps you might be able to do it, but now you only have the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence."

Xiao Moxian was normally fully confident in Lin Ming, but at this time even she found it hard to believe in him.

Lin Ming gravely said, "From the time I stepped on the road of martial arts I chose to dual cultivate in body and energy, so I certainly know what the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace mean. In fact, I am far clearer than anyone else on how difficult it is!"

Lin Ming's words left Xiao Moxian speechless. Indeed, Lin Ming had already cultivated the Eight Inner Hidden Gates to the limit. In terms of understanding the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, even an Empyrean was inferior to him. The only reason he dared to say he would break through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was because he had carefully considered all variables.

"Do you really have full confidence you can do it?" Xiao Moxian said, disbelief thick in her voice.

“I don’t…” Lin Ming shook his head, “But now I have no other choice. I only have around a 10% chance of succeeding!”

“10%…” Xiao Moxian felt her heart sink into her stomach. Although it was shocking that Lin Ming would say he had even a 10% chance of breaking into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, having only a 10% chance of making a breakthrough in such a critical moment simply seemed far too low.

“If you don’t break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, is there no way for us to live through this?” Xiao Moxian asked after a moment of silence.

Lin Ming shook his head, “I cannot think of another way for us to survive this. Tian Mingzi’s methods are too sinister and crafty; even I couldn’t imagine that he would be playing the bird as the praying mantis hunted. Although I managed to wound him, I had to pay a deep price to do so. If I had been prepared for him then this would not have been the result. We are currently in Bai Qi’s tomb. If I’m not wrong, as long as Tian Mingzi eliminates the spectral soldiers he will then seal away Primordius Heavenly Palace. It's even likely that he will place layers of seals on the space crack exit to remove any chance that we can escape. Then, he will trap us here and slowly refine us.”

With Tian Mingzi’s normal way of doing things, Lin Ming didn’t expect that he would reveal any flaw that he could exploit to escape.

Xiao Moxian sucked in a deep breath as she heard this. Then, she suddenly laughed. “Well, since you put it that way, it seems this really is what they call nine chances of death and only one chance of survival…”

If they could only wait for death if Lin Ming wasn’t able to break through to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, then their chance of death had reached 90%.

Lin Ming shook his head, “It might be more than 90%, because even if I make a breakthrough into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, I still have no idea what degree of strength I will reach and whether or not that will allow me to fight Tian Mingzi.”

Tian Mingzi was a peak Great World King. Even if he was completely exhausted, he was likely to have even more cards hidden up his sleeves.

After listening to Lin Ming, for a time, Xiao Moxian didn't know what sort of feelings were running through her heart.

Besides the fear of death that could arrive at any time, there were also other thoughts on her mind.

She looked at Lin Ming for a long time and then quietly said, "If you were to die with me here, would you regret it?"

"Regret?" Lin Ming was stunned. He found it strange that Xiao Moxian would suddenly ask such a question. If they were really to die here then what use was regret?

"I want to ask you, do you regret coming to the Asura Road, do you regret journeying to the Great Desolate, do you regret rescuing me and entering Tragic Death Valley with me, where we were stranded for nine years and even after we finally came out we still might be buried in this dangerous land..."

Xiao Moxian's words caused Lin Ming to recall some memories. Although it was easy to say that they were stranded in Tragic Death Valley for nine years, the truth was that those nine years were 3300 days and 3300 nights. He remembered all of this because it was something that left a deep mark in his mind.

He let out a light sigh and said, "If I really die here then of course I will be unwilling, but, in this world there are no second chances for regrets. Since I made my choice I also have to face them. It's not about regretting or not regretting, because what use is regret in the end?"

Xiao Moxian wrinkled her nose in response, not seeming to like Lin Ming's answer. She unhappily said, "From what you're saying, if regret is useful to you then you'll regret... right?"

Xiao Moxian seemed to tangle this seemingly meaningless question that made no sense at all. Lin Ming didn't know how to reply. In truth, he faintly understood her thoughts, but now was not the time to dwell on such things.

"At this time what use is there in talking about these sorts of tangled thoughts? Let's conserve as much time as we can and absorb the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence. Trying to make a breakthrough right now is what we should both be striving for."

Xiao Moxian glared at Lin Ming, her complexion a bit ugly. "The flow of time has been sped up 500 times here, so how much time could saying some words take? I'm just afraid that if I don't say them now, I won't have the chance to later..."

Speaking to here, Xiao Moxian's voice seemed to carry a hint of sadness.

Lin Ming felt his heart soften. "Then if you have any other words to say, say them..."

"I have a question I've wanted to ask you for a long time already..." Xiao Moxian's lips trembled, her eyes haunting as she looked at Lin Ming. She was silent for a long time, and then, as if she were mustering her determination, she calmly and clearly said, "One day, if you and I become mortal enemies, will you kill me?"

Chapter 1527 – Attacking the Dao Palace

Chapter 1527 – Attacking the Dao Palace

…

…

…

Lin Ming was stunned as he heard Xiao Moxian's question. He asked in response, "Why would we be mortal enemies?"

"I mean, if." Xiao Moxian said, not explaining much.

Lin Ming looked at Xiao Moxian strangely. At this time, she was asking such strange and bewildering questions. "These ifs that you speak of have no meaning at all. In this desperate life or death situation you still have the mind to ask such confusing questions; just what are you thinking?"

Xiao Moxian's complexion darkened. She coldly said, "If the monster race and demon race were to stand on the opposite side of humanity? If our races must be foes with each other, will you kill me then?"

Xiao Moxian's words caused Lin Ming's heart to turn cold. He immediately understood what Xiao Moxian was trying to say.

In the war between the humans and saints, the monsters and demons were indeed able to stay uninvolved. And if they were to choose a side, it was hard to say which side they would decide to join. And, as the most important future figure of the monster and demon races, Xiao Moxian would likely become the eventual ruler of both races!

Even being hunted down by the saints was something that was only aimed at Lin Ming, not Xiao Moxian. If Xiao Moxian were to be captured by the saints then they would only think of forcefully marrying her away. As for killing her and seizing the bloodline in her body, when this was compared to alliance of their two races, then the benefits Xiao Moxian's bloodline brought were unworthy of mentioning.

As for using Xiao Moxian for alchemy, those were only Tian Mingzi's thoughts.

"So you're saying… that Empyrean Demondawn and the Monster Emperor are leaning towards the saints?" Lin Ming asked.

"I do not know, and even if I did I cannot change their decision."

Xiao Moxian earnestly said.

"I understand…" Lin Ming quietly responded. He was silent for a long time, and then he said with a serious expression, "It is impossible for me to have you betray your people. Similarly, I also cannot betray my people. This isn't just because of the blood that flows through my veins, but because my family, my friends, my teachers, my masters, all those that I know, all of them are humans. If humanity and the demon race must become enemies, then as a member of humanity, I will fight for them until the end."

Lin Ming had received the deep graciousness of Empyrean Divine Dream and had also inherited the legacy of both Empyrean Primordius and Empyrean Divine Seal. Whether it was Empyrean Primordius or Empyrean Divine Seal, both of them had died bravely in battle for the existence of humanity, and Lin Ming had inherited their hopes and wishes. How could he possibly betray the human race?

"If there really comes a day where you and I represent our own races and there is no path left for us to go, then I can only hope that you do not hold back."

Lin Ming stared straight into Xiao Moxian's eyes. For a time, it seemed as if her body was shaking.

Her vision blurred, seeming as if she was lost in thought for a moment. Then, she slowly said, “I understand…”

The truth was that Xiao Moxian already knew the answer to this question before she asked it. She didn’t need to be a genius to know what Lin Ming’s reply would be, because if he replied otherwise then he wouldn’t be the Lin Ming she knew.

But for some reason, even though she knew the answer, she still mulled over this question and kept it close to her mind, a pressure that perpetually hung over her heart. Now, she asked this question just because she wanted to release it from her heart, and to convince herself to thoroughly give up all thoughts of anything else happening.

Give up…

Xiao Moxian felt a strange and unknown ache in her heart.

Xiao Moxian had a feeling that the Monster Emperor and her grandfather had already sided with the saint race. This was because the method to break into the True Divinity realm was far too fatal a temptation!

Then after they left the Asura Road, just what would await them? She and Lin Ming would both go on their own separate roads, and the next time they saw each other, they would be mortal enemies, fighting to the bitter end?

As Xiao Moxian imagined this result, she felt her heart hollow out and a painful hitch as she tried to breath.

When Lin Ming rescued her in the Great Desolate, when they spend nine years of days and nights in Tragic Death Valley, when they held hands to escape the demonic tide, when they rushed into the God Beast Tomb array formation, as well as when they stumbled into Bai Qi’s tomb, resolving danger after danger as he struck down foes dozens of times stronger than he was…

All of these scenes flashed through her mind, lingering in her consciousness. The final image in her mind was when Lin Ming stumbled into her arms, severely wounded, and the two of them freely gave their energy to each other, trying their best to break free from this hopeless situation…

For a time, a bitter grief swelled up within her.

Xiao Moxian didn’t think that Lin Ming would betray humanity. Similarly, she would not betray the demon race.

They were doomed to never have anything good come from their relationship.

As Xiao Moxian was lost in her thoughts, Lin Ming sat in front of her, silent the entire time. After all, he wasn’t the youth he was in the past, one that didn’t know anything about human thoughts and emotions. He was able to faintly guess just what Xiao Moxian was thinking.

And regarding this, he could only remain silent.

He certainly hoped that whether or not the monsters and demons opposed humanity, Xiao Moxian would still stand by his side, together. However, this thought was too selfish and not practical. So, Lin Min Ming decided not to say anything and simply remained silent.

“Let’s continue to cultivate. But, I hope your mood isn’t affected.”

Xiao Moxian looked at the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence in front of her, seeming as if she couldn’t concentrate at all.

Lin Ming frowned. He said, “Don’t absorb the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence. Your current mood is not suitable for making a breakthrough.”

Breaking through to the Divine Lord realm was an extremely important matter. Many martial artists would spend hundreds of years preparing for this moment. They would undergo a long ritual, burning incense, praying, and even then there was a chance they might fail, much less someone like Xiao Moxian right now whose mood was so shaky. If she were to fail her breakthrough now, then the massive amount of energy would turn chaotic in her body, causing her to fall into depravity and damage her cultivation.

“No! I can make this breakthrough!” Xiao Moxian stubbornly said.

“That… alright.”

Lin Ming agreed. If Xiao Moxian could arrive at this step, she naturally had an outstanding cultivation ability and talent. In terms of cultivating experience she was no worse than Lin Ming. Lin Ming didn’t need to worry about her because she knew well enough what her limits were.

Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred and the time enchantment covering them was immediately removed. This time enchantment could be used to heal from wounds, but wanting to make cultivation breakthroughs was not possible. This was because if Xiao Moxian wanted to break into the Divine Lord realm, she had to enlighten herself with the world Laws. As for Lin Ming, if he wanted to break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, he needed the Dao Palaces within his body to correspond with the nine stars in space. None of these things were possible to accomplish within the time enchantment.

Lin Ming formed dozens of seals as he revolved the Grandmist Heavenly Dao, drawing out the blood vitality from the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence.

This blood vitality essence split into two, floating towards Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian like ancient pythons.

These two pythons had fierce appearances and their aura was formidable. Their bodies were covered with scales that clearly shimmered with lines. They didn’t seem like manifestations formed from blood vitality, but true ancient vicious beasts.

As these pythons approached Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, the two of them felt all the blood vitality within their bodies being pulled by them, as if their blood wanted to roar out from them.

In that moment, Xiao Moxian had also settled her thoughts, eliminating all distractions as she fully invested herself in making her breakthrough.

She could feel a wild and brutal will from this Grandmist Spirit Bead essence in front of her. This would not be easy to absorb. If she failed to subdue it, she would fall into madness.

Then, Lin Ming turned his hand, revealing a crystalline pill in his palm. This was the Nine Star Heaven Pill!

In the past, just before Lin Ming returned to the Sky Spill Planet, he had encountered Tian Mingzi in the Demondawn Great World. The cause was this Nine Star Heaven Pill. The Nine Star Heaven Pill was a lost recipe in the Divine Realm. It was an ancient pill that was once used to help humans break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, but now its effects were much diminished.

Afterwards, Lin Ming had obtained the pill recipe for the Nine Star Heaven Pill. Empyrean Divine Dream had gathered the materials and helped him refine the pill. Now, he was finally able to use it.

The Nine Star Heaven Pill was swallowed down by Lin Ming. At the same time, the python of Grandmist Spirit Bead essence rushed into Lin Ming's body, bringing with it a savage and tyrannical aura, as if it came from a primal and desolate era.

This energy crashed into Lin Ming's meridians, seeming as if it would wash away his veins and split apart his body!

In the Eternal Demon Abyss, Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow together had only absorbed 10% of the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence. But now, in Bai Qi's tomb, Lin Ming directed 20% of this essence energy into his body.

The ancient python ravaged through Lin Ming's body. But at this time, Lin Ming's True Dragon energy came wildly galloping out, suppressing it with overwhelming force!

With his own blood vitality, Lin Ming had forcefully suppressed the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence that he swallowed. In that moment, all of Lin Ming's energy rushed towards nine points on his body, seeming to form pearls of blood!

These nine points on Lin Ming's body seemed to echo with some strange and unknown power in the endless skies. Lin Ming felt his sight fade away and in the next moment he had arrived in a completely pitch black space.

This space was empty, with only nine stars hanging high above. These nine stars were arranged in a strange manner, sprinkling endless starlight down, shining upon the world.

As this starlight illuminated Lin Ming, he felt his flesh, blood and bones all stretch out and all the pores and acupoints over his body automatically open to recklessly swallow up the starlight from these nine stars. As this starlight entered his body, a vast river of strength followed, one that seemed as if it would never end!

Beneath this powerful strength, Lin Ming could feel his flesh, bloodlines, meridian channels, everything within him transforming. His mortal body rapidly increased in strength.

The first time Lin Ming saw the boundary of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was when he absorbed the blood vitality of the great emperor heart in the Eternal Demon Abyss. Then, when he absorbed the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence, he had touched upon the threshold of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

At that time, Lin Ming had only been 34-35 years old. Now, he was over 50 years old. Over 20 years had passed.

In these 20 years of accumulating strength, Lin Ming had remained stranded beneath the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. All sorts of lucky chances and fortuitous encounters had been slowly gathered by him, all for today's breakthrough!

Even so, Lin Ming only had a 10% chance of breaking into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

In this dark void, If Lin Ming could pull down one of the stars in the sky and refine it into the Dao Palace within him, then he would truly have stepped into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace that Lin Ming saw were no illusion. Above where Lin Ming was sitting, there were indeed nine stars that shined, their starlight sprinkling down. Even Xiao Moxian was able to clearly see them.

“The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, it really is the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!”

Xiao Moxian’s eyes brightened. At this time she couldn’t even give further praise because she had to complete her own breakthrough. However, whether it was because she lacked accumulations or because her mood was in chaos, although she had managed to subdue the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence within her, she was still a single breath away from stepping into the Divine Lord realm.

Chapter 1528 – Dao Diagram of the Heavenly Dao

Chapter 1528 – Dao Diagram of the Heavenly Dao

…

…

…

To refine a star to enter his body was easier said than done. Lin Ming constantly swallowed starlight, gathering his strength. His mortal body continued to grow stronger and stronger. Although he didn't break through to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, his mortal bodily strength rose up from a billion jins, rapidly approaching 2 billion jins!

"My strength is still far too lacking!"

Lin Ming's eyes were like bolts of lightning in the darkness. He formed more seals with his hands, drawing out another ancient python of blood vitality from the Grandmist Spirit Bead and having it rush into his body.

This python was another 20% of the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence. Lin Ming had now swallowed a full 40% of the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence in this attempt. When this was added onto the powerful blood vitality within the Nine Star Heaven Pill, Lin Ming's mortal body rapidly inflated as if he would explode at any moment.

His veins bulged out like worms. Sweat dripped down from all over him. His body had reached the limit of strength that it could absorb and wanted to explode!

Lin Ming looked up, his brilliant eyes locking onto one of the nine stars floating in space. Then, he leapt upwards!

Nine stars. Of them, seven were incomparably bright and two were dim. The seven bright stars corresponded to the seven Bright Palaces within the human body, and the two dark stars corresponded to the two Hidden Palaces within the human body.

Now, the star that Lin Ming rushed towards was the closest bright star! This star's name was Army Breaker!

The Army Breaker Star. The meaning of this was that it could freely wander the world, breaking through the lines of any army, unstoppable and irresistible!

Lin Ming's bodily strength erupted to the limit. The Eight Inner Hidden Gates opened to the limit. He wanted to forcefully pluck this star down!

When martial arts were practiced to the highest level, one could pick down stars and shoot down moons. These were not empty fairytales, because Lin Ming was trying to do this right now!

In terms of foundation, if Lin Ming were compared to the body transformation martial artists from 3.6 billion years ago, he would be ten times or even a hundred times better! In the past, if Lin Ming wanted to break through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace with his strength, it would have been as easy as eating a meal. But now, he had to break past the Heavenly Dao rules!

The Heavenly Dao rules did not abide the existence of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace; this caused Lin Ming's cultivation to be blocked. But looking at this from another viewpoint, this meant that the foundation of Lin Ming's body transformation had been suppressed even as it accumulated to an unbelievable degree. Once it erupted then it would truly be like dragons and phoenixes soaring to the highest heavens, showing naught but disdain for the world!

The moment that Lin Ming rushed towards the Army Breaker Star, the void trembled around him. It was like all of the surrounding space-time was collapsing. A terrifying strength gathered, dreadful to the extreme!

Lin Ming maintained his vigilance. This dreadful power was truly fear-inspiring. It seemed as if it could tear apart everything and it was clearly aimed at him!

Opening the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was something not allowed by the Heavenly Dao rules. Even if Lin Ming's mortal body foundation had accumulated to an incredible degree, the moment that he tried to impact the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, he would inevitably be hindered by the Heavenly Dao!

In the empty void, lines of the Great Dao slowly appeared, weaving together into a dao diagram that locked down the nine stars in the sky.

"Are these the Heavenly Dao Laws that lock down the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace?"

Lin Ming looked towards the dao diagram in the sky. This dao diagram contained an incomparably horrifying strength. He didn't doubt that as long as he rushed forwards, he would be ruthlessly and mercilessly suppressed by this dao diagram!

To transgress the Heavenly Dao was to withstand heavenly tribulation. Once heavenly tribulation came falling down, even extreme geniuses could perish in ashes, without even their bones remaining!

Lin Ming took a deep breath and decisively shot into the dao diagram. He had to gamble everything he had because there was no alternative for him!

Weng –

The lines of the Great Dao came pressing down upon Lin Ming, carrying with them a great aura that could not be defied, one that stood at the pinnacle of all existence.

Lin Ming roared out. He gathered all his strength and punched!

In the dark void, all strength besides that of the body transformation system was forbidden. Lin Ming could only revolve the strength within his mortal body, releasing his Eight Inner Hidden Gates to their limit as he smashed into the dao diagram!

Kacha!

With a thunderous peal, Lin Ming's arm shook, the bones nearly cracking as his fists stained themselves red with blood.

As for the Great Dao lines in front of him, they only slightly trembled, without any hint that they would shatter.

The dao diagram slowly rotated, pressing Lin Ming in the center of countless dao patterns. These dao patterns were like a terrifying grinding pan, grinding down on Lin Ming's bones and muscles!

The void was crushed to pieces. Under this horrifying pressure, even Lin Ming's powerful mortal body seemed as if it would crack open. His blood vessels exploded and blood gushed out from him.

This was the strength of the Heavenly Dao, completely different from the nine by nine heavenly tribulation of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, thunder, yin, and yang, that Lin Ming had previously experienced. Those were tangible disasters, but this time it was entirely suppression of the Laws.

These invisible Laws could be as heavy as stars, able to grind down everything.

Lin Ming's body emitted loud crackling sounds. No matter how durable his mortal body was, under the suppression of these Laws he still couldn't withstand it.

Lin Ming clenched his jaws, his eyes turning red with effort. The moment that he had decided to break through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, he had expected that this experience would be difficult. But, he didn't think it would be difficult to such a ridiculous degree.

"Did I overestimate my 10% chance of success?"

Lin Ming was unwilling. In the past, Empyrean Primordius had undergone a similar tribulation, but back then, Empyrean Primordius also possessed the Grandmist Spirit Bead, a divine object of the highest level when it came to body transformation Laws. By relying on the Grandmist Spirit Bead to protect his body, only then did he overcome that tribulation.

As for Lin Ming, he had to resist the Heavenly Dao Law unarmed!

The difficulty of this could be imagined!

Bang!

Lin Ming punched out his fists once more. Countless blood vessels exploded, leaving his clothes dripping red. His body was nearly crushed to pieces. And on the outside of this empty nothingness, Lin Ming's true self was also in an extremely poor situation.

At this time, Lin Ming's true body was pale white and shivering. He was bleeding from his nose, eyes, and ears!

Above Lin Ming's head, the phantoms of nine stars were clearly visible. As the vast and endless starlight came sprinkling down, even Primordius Heavenly Palace vanished. Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian arrived in an endless cosmos. What they sat on was no longer the chaos stone bed, but the infinite galaxy.

"Lin Ming..."

Xiao Moxian's heart tightened as she saw Lin Ming's pained expression. She already knew that breaking into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace would be extremely risky. Even an extreme character like Empyrean Primordius had relied upon a divine object in order to break through. Moreover, when Empyrean Primordius had broken through to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, he had already been cultivating for tens of thousands of years.

As for Lin Ming, all he had to rely on was his heated blood and ardent will. With his less than 60 years of cultivation, he was attempting to break through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. The risks he faced could be imagined.

Xiao Moxian also paled. At this time, she didn't know how she could help Lin Ming. Although a massive amount of energy entered her inner world, she still wasn't able to make her breakthrough. There was just some kind of final catalyst that was missing.

Weng – Weng – !

The Heavenly Dao Laws revolved. Lin Ming shivered as he overdrew his strength. Right now, his strength was still far from enough for breaking past the barrier of the Heavenly Dao!

Lin Ming took a deep breath, resolving to wrestle against the odds with his life. Using the Grandmist Heavenly Dao, he forced a third python from the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence to enter his body!

This was also another 20% of the essence. Combined with the previous two times, Lin Ming had absorbed a total of 60% of the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence!

In front of Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian was panic-stricken.

Lin Ming was insane! His mortal body was already ruined to such a degree and yet he wanted to absorb another 20% of the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence. Just how could he possibly refine it?

Chapter 1529 – Extreme Yin Blood Essence

Chapter 1529 – Extreme Yin Blood Essence

…

…

…

The Grandmist Spirit Bead essence was originally an extremely violent and tyrannical blood essence energy. If one's cultivation was insufficient, then directing the Grandmist Spirit Essence into the body would cause their body to perish through exploding. This was like a mortal swallowing down a bar of gold; their body wouldn't be able to digest it and their stomach would swell until they died.

Lin Ming's situation was already extremely poor. In this state, he forcefully swallowed another 20% of the essence energy. The burden this placed on his body could be imagined.

In the endless empty universe, Lin Ming roared out loud. With the support of this wild and brutal Grandmist Spirit Bead essence, he punched out at the nine star dao diagram! After directing the last 20% of the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence into his body, Lin Ming had already cut off all avenues of retreat. He could only bet everything on this last desperate attempt!

With Lin Ming's current strength and his ruined body, it was impossible for him to fully absorb this 20% of the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence. If he couldn't break through the nine star dao diagram then he could only wait for his body to explode!

Kacha!

Lin Ming attacked with everything he had, even splitting apart his fingers. The nine star dao diagram wildly shook, but, it still didn't break.

"It's still not enough!"

A deep sense of unwillingness surged in Lin Ming's mind. Even though he had ignored the ramifications of swallowing this latest 20% of the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence, the strength he needed was ultimately far too distant from being able to break through the nine star dao diagram.

If this continued then it wouldn't be long before Lin Ming's body ruptured and his inner world exploded into pieces!

"Essence energy avatar, second seal, release!"

Lin Ming shouted out. The Essence Spirit Embryo Stone avatar that he inherited from within the bronze temple had a total of three seals. These three seals were left behind by the Asura Road Master and each successive seal was bound more tightly than the last.

The final seal was the most formidable. With Lin Ming's current cultivation he was unable to release it, but he was able to unbind the first two.

In the bronze temple, Lin Ming had undone the first seal. Using the strength that was released, he expanded his inner world and broke into the Divine Lord realm!

With Lin Ming's understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao, he still wasn't able to fuse his true self with his avatar. He could only use the method of undoing this seal and obtaining energy from his avatar.

Bang!

When Lin Ming released the second seal there was a loud explosion like 10,000 bolts of thunder crashing down together, like endless God Beasts roaring out!

An indescribably dreadful strength erupted like a volcano, surging out like a tsunami. This strength flooded out from the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone avatar and all of that extra strength impacted straight towards Lin Ming!

Lin Ming's Essence Spirit Embryo stone avatar had already reached an inconceivable boundary in the intensity of its mortal body. As this wild and brutal power erupted from within it, it was still able to withstand it. However, Lin Ming's true self was different. As this incomparably fierce strength flooded his body, in addition to everything before it, his body began to crack apart.

The reason Lin Ming crazily summoned all the strength he could was in order to shatter past the nine star dao diagram. As long as he could break through it then there would be a point where his strength could be released. He would be able to break into the next boundary and allow his strength to rapidly rise.

However, if the nine star dao diagram didn't break then everything would reverse. Lin Ming would die beneath the suppression of the nine star dao diagram and the havoc that was being wreaked upon him by it.

"Celestial Tyrant Manual – Hundred Layered Waves!"

In this black void, Lin Ming could only use the strength of body transformation. With his strength that reached 2 billion jins, he struck out with the Celestial Tyrant Manual's Hundred Layered Waves. In that moment, Lin Ming's bodily strength increased by several times, breaking straight past the critical point of 5 billion jins!

This horrifying strength crashed into the nine star dao diagram, causing it to violently shake!

Energy wildly raged outwards, causing the surrounding void to tear apart like scrap paper. A crack finally appeared in the nine star dao diagram!

Seeing this crack in the dao patterns, Lin Ming's eyes brightened. He was like a parched traveler in the desert who finally saw an oasis!

This crack was his final ray of hope. Otherwise, if this were to continue then his mortal body might not be able to last for another incense stick of time!

Bang!

Lin Ming's fist smashed out again and all the muscles of his right arm split apart. Ignoring his collapsing body, he revolved the Celestial Tyrant Manual to the limit. The crack in the nine star dao diagram was expanded once more by Lin Ming's strike!

At this time, Lin Ming had already reached his limits. He bit down on his tongue, burning his blood essence through the Gate of Life. Then, he struck out with a third punch!

Kacha!

His bones released a deafening explosive sound as they shattered. Lin Ming's face twisted in pain. The bones in his right arm had completely shattered and his hand was hanging down at a strange angle; he was unable to make a fist!

"Damn it!"

For a time, Lin Ming's pupils shrank. As he stared at his ruined right arm his entire body shivered.

Without a continuous barrage, the crack in the nine star dao diagram began to slowly regenerate!

Even if one used absolute strength to tear down a dao diagram of the Heavenly Dao, it would still slowly recover.

Just a little bit more!

Lin Ming bit down with his teeth, a furious rage blazing within him. He still had his left arm but this left arm would at most be able to punch three more times. With these three punches it was impossible for him to break through the nine star dao diagram.

"Will the heavens kill me?"

Lin Ming was unwilling! He was less than 60 years old and had walked down the road of martial arts for just over 40 years. He had passed through many great storms, suffered many tribulations, defeated countless extraordinary individuals, and had passed through innumerable life or death dangers to arrive at this step. Through all that, he finally stood at the peak of all young human geniuses!

How could he be willing to perish like this?

Although he had weakened, at the same time a terrifying energy wildly raged through his body, attacking his meridians!

There was the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence as well as the unsealed strength from the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone. These two strengths were both at the extreme yang. As they collided within Lin Ming's body, they were like two volcanoes erupting together!

These two extreme yang strengths weren't willing to submit to anyone, and with Lin Ming's ruined body it was impossible for him to subdue them. They continued to ravage through Lin Ming's body, using his body as a battlefield. If he wasn't able to suppress them then he could only wait for his body to explode into pieces!

"The Heavenly Dao does not abide me. In the end, am I unable to overcome the Heavenly Dao?"

Within Lin Ming's body, the two yang energies became increasingly wild, smashing into each other more and more, completely unable to be subdued. Lin Ming grit his teeth, his fingernails digging deep into his palm. With his current state, wanting to evenly stabilize these two yang energies was completely impossible.

The condition of his body became increasingly worse. His eye sockets began to crack apart and his eyes bled.

In that moment, he could feel death floating close by. In his life, he had only encountered this feeling once, when he had broken into the ninth stage of Life Destruction and experienced a nine by nine heavenly tribulation.

As Lin Ming was about to collapse and have the two energies blow up his body, he felt a soft, feminine yin energy enter his body. This strength was like a stream of clear spring water, revitalizing his ruined body.

“This is…”

Lin Ming was startled. He could faintly feel this soft feminine strength slip in between the two fierce yang energies, causing those two violently clashing energies to calm down.

Although this strength was far from being as formidable as the two yang energies, it was pure to the extreme. The soft and soothing attributes of this energy was able to smoothly stabilize the two other energies, achieving a state of yin and yang balance.

“This is Xiao Moxian…”

Lin Ming immediately realized. At this time, the only one who could release such a pure and soft blood vitality was Xiao Moxian.

From this soft feminine strength, Lin Ming could sense the rich energies of phoenix blood. As it was light and clear as water, it also carried with it a faint aura of flames.

But what surprised Lin Ming was that this strength was completely different from the time when he and Xiao Moxian held hands. Not only was Xiao Moxian sending out her True Phoenix blood energy, but it carried the aura of life force, as if this energy came from her source of life.

“Phoenix blood essence!?”

Lin Ming’s mind shook. His consciousness forcefully withdrew from the black void where he was attempting to break through to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and his eyes shot open to see Xiao Moxian.

At this time, Primordius Heavenly Palace was completely wrapped up in the divine light of the nine stars. Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were placed within this endless world of starlight.

She held onto his hand, her bright red lips open as a stream of rich blood energy fluttered out from between then and towards Lin Ming.

This power of blood vitality transformed into the appearance of phoenixes in midair. They were beautiful and enchanting, releasing clear and pleasant cries.

This was Xiao Moxian's source blood energy and also her True Phoenix blood essence!

In the past, one could see how precious phoenix blood essence was from how much the Ancient Phoenix Clan treasured just a single drop. And, the Ancient Phoenix Clan's phoenix blood essence came from the dead body of a phoenix, drawn out using a secret technique. That blood essence had been preserved for countless years and was far inferior to Xiao Moxian's phoenix blood essence in terms of purity; her phoenix blood essence was brimming with life!

Moreover, the Ancient Phoenix Clan's phoenix blood essence had come from the corpse of a phoenix that was thousands of miles long. That phoenix corpse had a tremendous amount of blood essence within it, so how could a single drop of that compare to the pure and highly condensed phoenix blood essence within Xiao Moxian?

A phoenix that underwent nine stages of nirvana could burn their blood essence infinitely without damaging their life source at all. But, this was restricted to burning their blood essence. If they were to give their blood essence to others, that would be a permanent loss, one that was extremely difficult to recover from!

This could be said to be Xiao Moxian's most precious thing. It was what the countless individuals who tried to obtain her body considered to be the most valuable treasure!

But now, Xiao Moxian was directly giving this phoenix blood essence to Lin Ming to stabilize the two violent yang energies within him.

"Ji Xian'er!"

Lin Ming anxiously shouted out. If Xiao Moxian gave him her blood essence then not only would this affect her current cultivation but also her future lifespan and achievements!

Hearing Lin Ming's shouting, Xiao Moxian opened her eyes. Her pupils were dark like the bottom of a lake, as cold as an iceberg.

"Why are you doing this? This kindness is too heavy." Lin Ming was unable to shoulder this burden. "If you give me your life's most precious blood essence, then even if I break through to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace it will still injure your life source and cause permanent damage to your cultivation. How will I have the face to stand tall in this world?"

The blood essence in Xiao Moxian's body was no trifling matter.

A martial artist with a weaker cultivation could restore their lost blood essence without much difficulty. But for someone like Xiao Moxian, her blood essence could be called that of the highest grade within the entire Divine Realm. Once she lost her blood essence then restoring it would be incomparably hard, a journey filled with endless hardships.

Listening to Lin Ming's words, Xiao Moxian lightly sighed. "We both might die here. If you don't break through to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, do you think I will still live on?"

Speaking to here, she seemed to suddenly remember something. She said in an extremely quiet voice, "In the future, won't you and I be mortal enemies? If I give my blood essence to you and discard my own bloodline, then my grandfather and the Monster Emperor will have no need for me to become the future ruler of their two races. Then, I'll have saved you the trouble of having to fight with me. Isn't that just wonderful?"

Chapter 1530 - For Forever, My Blood Will Mark You

Chapter 1530 - For Forever, My Blood Will Mark You

…

…

…

Hearing Xiao Moxian's words, Lin Ming was dazed. He didn't know just how to reply.

Xiao Moxian didn't know why she would unexpectedly say such strange and dismal words that would not only make Lin Ming unhappy, but also herself. It seemed as if she wanted to vent all of the bitterness and resentment in her heart.

She apologetically smiled, saying, "Some matters are too troublesome. Carelessly speaking about them might affect your mood to break through."

Lin Ming was silent for a moment. He could feel a peculiar pain in his heart, one that he found hard to face. He finally said, "I'm sorry, I know."

"You don't know." Xiao Moxian shook her head, earnestly looking towards Lin Ming, her eyes seeming to flash with some strange crystalline light. "You don't know… how scared I was when I entered Tragic Death Valley. My personality favors liveliness and fun, and what I cannot stand the most is unending loneliness and the infinite dark. When I entered Tragic Death Valley I really, really wanted to leave. I thought that if I had to stay there for hundreds of years then I would turn insane.

"But afterwards, something I never expected happened… those nine years of days and nights were not as fearful as I thought they would be. From the time I was born to now, I have seen numerous spiritual lands that are beautiful beyond description. I've seen floating celestial mountains and neverending fields of paradise… and yet, no matter how much I try to recall those places, I have no impression of them. Instead, during my nine years in Tragic Death Valley, facing the eternal dark and the piles of bones, those days, are actually a time that I will never forget. In the depths of that darkness and misery, to have someone I could rely upon is really… something I will remember all my life."

Xiao Moxian suddenly laughed. She was finally speaking the words she didn't know how to say. Without suppressing them in her heart, without caring for what would result, without caring for what Lin Ming thought of them, just saying them was enough.

"Sometimes, I even thought that it wouldn't be bad if we never left. At least, I would never have to think about us being enemies in the future nor would I have to deal with so many troubling matters… of course, I knew you would never agree to not leaving."

Lin Ming was shocked for some time. He still held onto Xiao Moxian's hand. The soft and tender touch of her hand brought with it an indescribable gentleness, like a piece of pure jade immersed in running water.

In that moment, Lin Ming could feel the burden of a heavy emotion on his back, one he didn't know how to face.

"I'm sorry…" Lin Ming finally said these weak and feeble words after a long period of silence.

However, Xiao Moxian actually laughed in response, a laugh as bright and cheerful as spring flowers. "There's nothing you should be sorry to me about. You were the one who saved my life, and entering Tragic Death Valley with you is something that I have never regretted and will never regret. Giving you my life source blood is also something I do not regret. In the future, even if we never meet again, my blood will always flow within your body, becoming a mark upon your bloodline, accompanying you for the rest of your life. You can try as much as you want Lin Ming, but you'll never be able to throw me away."

Speaking to here, Xiao Moxian seemed to laugh in an increasingly happy manner. The corners of her lips lifted up in a smile to reveal two cute canines.

For a time, Lin Ming turned silly.

“Now, go and break through to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace if you can. I don’t want to die here.”

Xiao Moxian cupped Lin Ming’s cheek, her voice serious. Lin Ming silently looked into her bright eyes and solemnly nodded.

This was his promise to Xiao Moxian, and also a promise to himself.

He couldn’t bear the feelings of Xiao Moxian. All he could do now was summon as much strength as he could and attack the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

The energy within his body was equalized by Xiao Moxian’s blood essence and had already begun to slowly stabilize. In this state, even Lin Ming’s meridian channels and blood vessels that had torn apart due to the violent energy began to restore themselves. This was the effect of yin yang harmony.

Lin Ming closed his eyes, returning to that endless dark void once more. He faced the nine stars hanging in the skies, seven of them bright, two of them dark.

In that moment, Lin Ming could feel flames burning in his heart. In his broken right hand, the flesh and blood constantly regenerated as the meridian channels regrew.

He cried out loud and shot into the skies. The Eight Inner Hidden Gates opened altogether. Behind Lin Ming, the phantom of a True Dragon appeared, roaring out!

Celestial Tyrant Manual – Hundred Layered Waves!

Bang!

With a loud explosion the void was collapsed by Lin Ming's fist. The Heavenly Dao lines that wove into a nine star dao diagram were shaken by Lin Ming's strike, causing a crack to appear within it.

Seeing this crack, the light in Lin Ming's eyes brightened. He roared out again, his fists punching at the same place.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

Lin Ming punched again and again. Blood splashed out from his fists, alarming and startling!

Without caring for the violent flows of energy surging through his body, the nine star dao diagram continued to shake as the crack grew larger and larger!

The Heavenly Dao Laws seemed to become furious, as if Lin Ming's crazy barrage was the reason. The Great Dao lines wildly gathered, converging towards Lin Ming and pressing down on him!

Krik krik krack!

The bones throughout Lin Ming's body emitted explosive crackling sounds. Fresh blood leaked out, dying his entire body deep red.

However, Lin Ming ignored all of this. He continued his onslaught on the nine star dao diagram!

The crack in the dao diagram grew larger with each punch, each punch coming at the cost of Lin Ming's breaking body.

"Just a little bit more, a little bit more!"

Lin Ming's eyes were blood red as he cried out from his lungs.

But at this moment, he suddenly felt the skies around him tremble. The entire world seemed to tumble around him, all the origin energy becoming restless!

“What!?”

This sudden change shocked Lin Ming. This strength did not come from the Heavenly Dao Laws, but an external force!

Lin Ming’s mind turned cold. A foreboding feeling surged within him.

Then, a maniacal voice echoed through the air, “Lin Ming, you want to break through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!? You want to defy the Heavenly Dao Laws!? Keep on dreaming! But no matter how hopeless you are, I will not allow you the slightest chance of success. I will lay down a grand Void Locking Array around you, separating you from the starlight of those nine stars so that your ridiculously pathetic attempt at a breakthrough will fail outright! I want your body to collapse and your boundary to fall! Hahahaha!”

This maddening cackle came from Tian Mingzi!

Outside of Primordius Heavenly Palace, Tian Mingzi was still fighting the iron-armored spectral soldiers. According to his original plan, he needed to use several hours to slowly fight so that he could preserve his strength and reduce his wounds to the minimum, defeating the iron-armored spectral soldiers with the lowest possible price.

After that, he could lay down an enchantment to seal up the exit to Bai Qi’s tomb. Once that was complete he could meditate to restore himself to his peak condition and then begin to refine Primordius Heavenly Palace.

This was the safest and most effective method. As long as he could restore his strength then Lin Ming was as good as dead.

However, during this battle, Tian Mingzi saw the space above Primordius Heavenly Palace vanish, suddenly revealing an endless void. And at the peak of this endless void were nine stars!

After being stunned for a brief moment, he immediately understood that this was a phenomenon that was summoned by Lin Ming's attempt at breaking through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was exclusive to the human race's body transformation system. The saint race and demon race both practiced a different cultivation system that was different from the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. 3.6 billion years ago, martial artists that cultivated the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace to the peak were no weaker than those who cultivated the essence gathering system.

But now, because of some unknown change in the Heavenly Dao Laws, the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace became an impossible goal to reach. But, once one managed to reach it, one's strength would become even more terrifying. If Lin Ming broke into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace then not even gods would know what would happen.

Although Tian Mingzi didn't believe Lin Ming had the ability to do so, he wasn't willing to give him even the slimmest chance to succeed. He immediately desperately attacked the iron-armored spectral soldiers, wanting to break them all as soon as possible. Once he did so, he could interfere with Lin Ming's breakthrough attempt!

At this time, Tian Mingzi's entire body was soaked with blood. His shoulder and lower abdomen had been pierced by two deep spears and were dripping blood. Horrifying wounds covered his entire body and his spine had nearly been severed in half. His left arm had been cut off but only forcefully reattached using an arcane technique.

Tian Mingzi had paid a deeply tragic price in order to break the iron-armored spectral soldier array.

He didn't have time to heal his wounds. After hurriedly swallowing down some pills, he pulled out an array disc from his spatial ring and tossed it in the air. His hands formed numerous seals. But, because his left hand had been cut off and reattached, the meridians and blood vessels had yet to fully regenerate and his movements weren't as accurate. The speed at which he formed seals was much slower than before.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

The array disc spun around, sprinkling chaotic black light that covered Primordius Heavenly Palace, cutting off the energy connection between Primordius Heavenly Palace and the outside world!

And at this time, Tian Mingzi stepped on the void. He held his black sword in his hands, spookily whispering, “Frenzied blood, become heart demons, indomitable might of the Heavenly Dao, follow my blade! Cut!”

For a time, the entire Primordius Heavenly Palace was shrouded in a vast dark demon light!

The sword light was blocked by Primordius Heavenly Palace’s array formation but there were still some illusions that seemed to permeate into Primordius Heavenly Palace.

“Hahaha! Lin Ming, in my presence, you still want to make a breakthrough!? In the past, with my status as a core disciple, I exterminated the entire Verdant Feather Holy Lands! The old Holy Lord of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands was a Great World King! And at that time, I was only an early World King. It was at the exact time that he was trying to recklessly make a breakthrough in his boundary that I used my secret demonic arts to galvanize the heart demons within him. Not only did he fail his breakthrough, but his cultivation boundary was severely damaged! Then, I killed him! Even a Great World King died beneath my hands, much less someone like you!

“Everyone has heart demons, and the more powerful a martial artist is, the more formidable their heart demons are. When a martial artist makes a breakthrough, they must face their heart demons; this is an inevitable truth. This is also the time when martial artists are at their weakest. Moreover, not only are you trying to make a breakthrough but you are defying the will of the heavens to do so, and because of that you have to face heavenly tribulation also! Just give up any hope you had!”

Tian Mingzi wildly laughed. His voice was like a demonic spell that attacked Primordius Heavenly Palace!

Primordius Heavenly Palace’s array formation had blocked Tian Mingzi’s sword light and most of the striking power, but a part of the energy still submerged into the Heavenly Palace.

Although Primordius Heavenly Palace’s was wonderfully skilled, it wasn’t able to isolate out everything, otherwise the starlight from the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace wouldn’t have been able to fall past the array formation.

Tian Mingzi’s sword light was easily blocked by Primordius Heavenly Palace. However, it couldn’t completely block this strange and bizarre heart demon technique.

For some time, Lin Ming felt illusions grow thick in his mind. The nine star dao diagram that was almost torn apart suddenly seemed much farther away.

“Damn!” Lin Ming’s complexion darkened, his heart quickening with urgency.

Chapter 1531 – Crimson Space

Chapter 1531 – Crimson Space

…

…

…

Lin Ming's breakthrough was originally defying the heavens' will to forcefully change one's life. To break through the chains of the Heavenly Dao was indescribably difficult. Even though Lin Ming's mortal bodily foundation had reached this degree of tempering, he still only had a 10% chance of succeeding. Finally, he still had to rely on absorbing Xiao Moxian's phoenix blood essence in order to have some hopes of succeeding.

In this sort of situation, Lin Ming simply wasn't able to tolerate any interference.

And Tian Mingzi was doing things to the extreme; he didn't want to give Lin Ming even the smallest chance of rising back up. Even if he had to desperately damage his blood vitality and affect his future cultivation, he still wouldn't hesitate!

"Lin Ming, your life is too resilient. You being my enemy is a challenge to my own destiny, the most dangerous risk! I will stop at nothing in order to kill you, today is the day you die!"

Ever since ancient times, those who dared to oppose extraordinary individuals with great destinies always had to face enormous risks. Not to mention the world of martial artists, even in the mortal world, those emperors that founded their own kingdoms would have to face countless assassination attempts as they tried to rule the world. And in the end, all of those assassins would fail!

Tian Mingzi crazily raved. Not only did he use his heart demon technique but he also attacked Primordius Heavenly Palace at the same time, causing the entire Heavenly Palace to tremble!

If Primordius Heavenly Palace trembled, that would inevitably cause the energy around Lin Ming to become chaotic. Moreover, with the addition of the ghostly illusion energy, all of this caused Lin Ming to have even more difficulties in his breakthrough.

“Hah!”

Lin Ming’s eyes were red with rage. He roared out loud as his fist smashed out. Swathes of illusions were shattered by his fist, but when this fist reached the nine star dao diagram it had already weakened by a great deal. Finally, it only tore open an infinitesimally small part of the dao diagram, one not even worthy of mentioning.

Not just this, but the nine star dao diagram slowly regenerated. If Lin Ming couldn’t tear open the nine star dao diagram then the result would be defeat!

If his breakthrough failed then Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian would both die!

“Lin Ming!”

In Primordius Heavenly Palace, Xiao Moxian was anxious. She continued to hold Lin Ming’s hand. Because she had consumed her source blood vitality, her face was pale as if she were sick.

She grit her teeth, opening her lips wide once again to pass more of her phoenix blood essence to Lin Ming.

At this time, Xiao Moxian’s smooth and soft arms and body were weightless, as if she would fall into Lin Ming’s embrace at any moment.

In the dark void, Lin Ming was concerned as he felt the pure strength of Xiao Moxian's phoenix blood essence enter him. She had already used up a great deal of her blood essence. If she were to use up any more then the damage would be inconceivable!

"Ji Xian'er, do not pass me the energy of your blood vitality!"

Lin Ming shouted out, but Xiao Moxian didn't stop at all. Lin Ming became increasingly anxious. "Ji Xian'er, even if you pass me your phoenix blood essence it will only allow the two yang energies within my body to achieve yin yang harmony, but I actually cannot fuse them. With Tian Mingzi disturbing me, I won't be able to break through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace like this!"

Lin Ming was burning with impatience, his eyes widened to the point of cracking. There was too much weighing down on his shoulders and yet he couldn't fulfill his promise.

He hated himself. He was unwilling!

"Break for me!"

Lin Ming roared out loud, his entire body releasing explosive crackling sounds. He burned the Gate of Life's blood essence without regard for the consequences in exchange for strength that he could barely control. The meridians all throughout his body began to tear apart.

Celestial Tyrant Manual – Hundred Layered Waves!

Lin Ming's fist punched out through burning his life to the limit. His strike smashed through the illusions and crashed into the nine star dao diagram, causing a shocking gap to be ripped open!

However, as Lin Ming tore through the nine star dao diagram, he could sense infinite ghosts and illusions swell up from all around him, attacking his innermost feelings! The fiercer Lin Ming's attack was, the more energy he released and the more emotional his heart was, making it much easier to experience a backlash of his heart demons.

Puff!

Lin Ming spat out a mouthful of blood. His vision dimmed and he was sent flying backwards.

Kacha! Kacha!

The nine star illusions shattered and Lin Ming’s consciousness was ejected into the endless void. Like this, his breakthrough had already reached the brink of failure!

Outside of Primordius Heavenly Palace, Tian Mingzi had also realized this point. He devilishly grinned.

Although he couldn’t see what was happening inside of Primordius Heavenly Palace, he could extrapolate what was occurring from the starlight outside that suddenly dimmed down.

“Nearly 20 years of grudges will be brought to completion today!”

Tian Mingzi lifted his grievously wounded body and bit down on his tongue, taking out a wisp of blood essence. He wet his finger with this blood essence and began to draw a scarlet blood symbol in the air!

Curse of the Demon Heart!

Peng!

As this curse seal landed on Primordius Heavenly Palace’s array formation, Lin Ming shook like he had been struck and began to fall down.

“Lin Ming!”

Seeing Lin Ming fall down, Xiao Moxian felt like someone had violently gripped her heart. She stretched out her delicate arms, embracing Lin Ming against her chest.

Xiao Moxian's front was dyed red with blood. Lin Ming felt as if he had fallen into a bath of warm and fragrant incense; all he could smell was the fresh virgin scent of beauty.

He opened his eyes. What he saw was Xiao Moxian's pale face and her two eyes filled with tears.

Xiao Moxian tightly held onto Lin Ming. At this moment, it was like only the two of them existed in this world. At their time of death, they could still lean upon each other.

"If we die here, will you regret it?" Xiao Moxian asked, her whispering lips close to Lin Ming's ear.

Lin Ming's nearly torn open eyes revealed a rare tenderness in this moment. He gently shook his head.

At this time, it was like all the sounds of the world had fallen far away.

Xiao Moxian suddenly cried, large drops of tears falling down her cheeks. "At the precipice of death, when someone is accompanying you, dying doesn't seem as scary as it should. But Lin Ming, I don't want you to die. I will give you my everything… and when you break through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and escape from here, you will live on for a billion years, a trillion years, and my blood will always follow you!"

As Xiao Moxian said this, she seemed to affirm a great determination. She wrapped her hands around Lin Ming's head and bent down over him, deeply kissing him.

Two pairs of warm lips brought with them a hint of blood as they touched together.

In that instant, time seemed to come to a standstill. In the endless starry skies, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian hugged each other, dark enchanting blood red flowers seeming to bloom all around them.

That charming moment nearly made Lin Ming fall into intoxication. However, he soon awakened from this drunken state and discovered that as Xiao Moxian was kissing him, she was pouring all of her phoenix blood essence through this kiss, as if she wanted him to inherit every last drop within her body!

Once she did this, she would perish like broken jade!

“You…”

Lin Ming wanted to shove Xiao Moxian away, but she had tightly latched onto him, not releasing him no matter how much he struggled.

“No… don’t do this!”

Lin Ming passed a sound transmission on with difficulty. “Even if you give me all of your blood essence… I cannot fuse with it so soon… and if it's just bringing those two yang energies into harmony, the blood vitality you passed me before was more than enough!”

Even if Xiao Moxian poured all of her phoenix blood essence into Lin Ming, he still wouldn’t be able to directly absorb it like that. When Lin Ming absorbed the bone of an Azure Dragon in the past, he had consumed a great deal of strength to do so. Although his cultivation was far higher than it was back then, Xiao Moxian’s phoenix blood essence was hundreds and thousands of times purer than the strength of the Azure Dragon within him.

“Can’t fuse? Then I’ll fuse with you!”

Xiao Moxian’s kiss became increasingly intense and fiery. Her body seemed to melt into his, joining together with him as one.

As blood vitality continued streaming into him, Lin Ming was becoming increasingly restless. Raising up his wounded body, he tried to push Xiao Moxian away, but in the chaos and confusion of the moment, he felt his hands shoving against an indescribable softness.

Looking down, Lin Ming could see that his hands were pressed onto Xiao Moxian’s womanly peaks. The two solid peaks on her chest were pushed down by Lin Ming, containing a wondrous bounciness.

In that moment, Xiao Moxian groaned and her body trembled. She wanted to move back but her body instinctively softened, falling into Lin Ming as if she had no more strength left within her.

Her face was lit with a sunset glow illuminating the dappled waters. Her two hands wound up like snakes, winding around Lin Ming's neck as she affectionately kissed him. Her small red tongue roamed about, sucking on Lin Ming's everything.

In this time, a strength beyond description passed between their lips and spread to Lin Ming's limbs and bones. This strength was different from the phoenix blood essence that Xiao Moxian had fed to him, but its degree of purity was no less than her source blood essence. And most importantly, this strength wasn't blocked from fusing together with Lin Ming. Their two bodies seemed to melt together as one. This was Xiao Moxian's primordial yin energy. When she offered it freely without reserve, her aura was easily able to fuse with Lin Ming.

For a time, Lin Ming was overcome with chaotic sentiments. His heart filled with the fires of desire. He wanted to press Xiao Moxian beneath his body and wildly make love to her!

She was a perfect woman of the world and carried with her an indescribable gentleness and sharp mind. Even though Lin Ming's goal was to chase after the peak of martial arts and he had cultivated to the point of having a mind as still as water, it was still impossible for him to prevent the heated feelings growing in his heart.

However, Lin Ming still maintained a trace of clarity in his mind. He was deeply aware of what the word responsibility meant. His union with Xiao Moxian was something that the demon race and monster race would not permit no matter what, and if he took her primordial yin then this would cause a tremendous impact on her future.

The future… was an unknown. In fulfilling the desires of today, they might have to trade it for a painful consequence in the future.

‘I'm married…” Lin Ming said, finding it hard to say.

“And so what?” Xiao Moxian’s body suddenly shook. She slowly separated from Lin Ming’s burning hot lips. She faced him, just several inches away, staring at his face, her eyes so pure that no one would want to injure her.

Lin Ming was at a loss for how to respond.

“I am not looking for some ending with you, nor do I have any hope that I will be together with you in the future. I just want to kiss you, simply give you my body. Isn’t that something you want?”

Xiao Moxian’s voice trembled as she spoke. The tears in her eyes shined, sparkling as they tumbled downwards like little motes of starlight.

With a soft touch, Xiao Moxian’s tears fell onto Lin Ming’s face as they broke apart like shattered crystals.

At this time, Lin Ming was dazed.

Chapter 1532 – Union of Phoenix and Dragon

Chapter 1532 – Union of Phoenix and Dragon

…

…

…

Lin Ming stiffened. Xiao Moxian's words echoed in his heart and stirred an inexplicable pain. He felt that this love was too heavy, something he could not afford to bear.

"I… am not deserving enough for you to do this. If Senior Demondawn were to find out about all this then how would you continue to hold your head up high in the monster race and demon race?"

If the demon and monster races really did sign a pact with the saints then Xiao Moxian might be married off to the Good Fortune Saint Son. If so, then Xiao Moxian deciding by herself to make love to Lin Ming today would be a great crime of betraying her own people. Not only would Empyrean Demondawn lose all face with his race, but so would Xiao Moxian!

"It's enough as long as I think you are deserving!" Xiao Moxian sobbed, her voice cracking as she vented her grievances. She grasped Lin Ming, saying to him, "Why do you have to bring up these matters, why do you have to bring up my grandfather? Today is only today. Can't you stop lying to me and make me happy? I won't think about what the future brings nor do I want to."

Xiao Moxian began to strip off her clothes as she spoke. Her fingers trembled as she undid her ties and her upper clothes began to fall off, revealing her smooth neck and snow white skin.

"My body, my primordial yin and phoenix blood, countless people have desired them. I give you my body without asking for anything in return and without caring for what the future may bring... as long as you want it."

Xiao Moxian's eyes were wet with tears and her cheeks were blushing red. With a flick of her finger, all of the clothes she wore burst into flames!

The brilliant flames flashed, burning her clothes into fading ash. Then, her body, the delicate and supple body of a young woman, pressed up against Lin Ming, leaving a shine in his eyes.

Her slender waist, her slender thighs, Xiao Moxian was filled with the beauty of a young woman in her prime, an enchanting beauty as mesmerizing as the brightly lit moon...

Underneath the endless starry skies, starlight sprinkled down on Xiao Moxian's perfect body, covering her with a faint veil like liquid mercury. In that moment, Lin Ming's breath caught in his throat. The Xiao Moxian in front of him was far too beautiful, far too dazzling, making it impossible for anyone to look straight at her.

Xiao Moxian pressed her finger against Lin Ming. Before he could respond, his clothes also burnt away, leaving them exposed to each other without the slightest barrier of clothing.

An unspeakably soft touch, the atmosphere of a young girl that could enthrall anyone, all of this challenged the final bit of brightness in Lin Ming's mind.

Loving lips kissed Lin Ming. Two soft white arms slid around his back like snakes. In that moment, Lin Ming nearly lost his mind.

Even though Xiao Moxian didn't ask for any result between them in freely offering her body today, Lin Ming wasn't willing to have Xiao Moxian lose all standing within her two races.

To a girl, especially one considered a Saintess in the eyes of the monster and demon races, reputation was extremely important. With Lin Ming's personality, he refused to ruin her good name.

But…

Perhaps he had the ability to change things!

If he was strong enough then he could be the one to give Empyrean Demondawn and the Monster Emperor what they wanted. If he could do this then he could reverse their situation with the saint race and there would be no need to sacrifice Xiao Moxian!

In that moment, Lin Ming felt a firm resolve in his heart, one that he had never felt as deeply before. He needed strength! He needed strength beyond strength!

And, the premise to achieving all of this was…

If he could face Tian Mingzi and survive!

As all of this passed through his mind, Lin Ming growled. He picked up Xiao Moxian from his body and pressed her to him. His hands recklessly roamed over her body, feeling all over her without anything separating them.

He could feel the softness pressing against his chest. He affectingly traced her back, traced her curved bottom, and stroked her soft thighs.

Sensing the sudden change in Lin Ming's thoughts, Xiao Moxian felt as if she was melting. She enthusiastically responded by sucking on Lin Ming's skin.

Her warm tongue lapped up Lin Ming, teasing him all over. The desires within Lin Ming exploded like a volcano. Finally, he couldn't bear it anymore and thrust into her body.

Xiao Moxian cried out as a strange and aching feeling passed through her. She could feel that there was no barrier that existed between her and Lin Ming fusing together. She had no idea why she cried out, but she wasn't able to suppress it from echoing out of her throat.

She stretched out a shivering hand and stroked Lin Ming's cheek. "Lin Ming, do you know? If we were to die in the next moment I would not be afraid of anything at all."

"You won't die. We will live on, I'm sure of this!"

Lin Ming's voice was firm. He thrust into Xiao Moxian's body, again and again.

The energy within Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian became turbulent. The phoenix blood essence that entered Lin Ming's body finally fused together with the two yang energies, rushing into him like a tide.

As for the power of blood vitality inherited from the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone and the ancient Black Dragon energy that he absorbed from the God Beast Tomb array formation, all of that poured into Xiao Moxian.

This energy flooded through Xiao Moxian's body, intertwining with the waves of pleasure that coursed through her as she made love to Lin Ming. Xiao Moxian cried out again and again, unable to her prevent groans from leaking out from her overwhelmed senses.

Her face was like a red tide, flirtatious and loving. Through the blending of their blood vitality, not only did Xiao Moxian not lose any phoenix blood essence but the yin yang harmony within her began to rapidly rise and her inner world constantly expanded.

From the peak of the Divine Transformation realm, she was nearing the Divine Lord realm!

Xiao Moxian had absorbed a massive amount of the grandmist spirit bead essence. However, she still hadn't been able to break through to the Divine Lord realm. For some reason, she had been missing just the tiniest spot. Now, she finally understood that her failure wasn't because she hadn't accumulated enough energy, but because the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence was far too yang attributed. If she couldn't achieve yin yang harmony then it would have been near impossible for her to make a breakthrough.

A brilliant divine light began to shine out from Xiao Moxian's lower abdomen, completely surrounding her and Lin Ming. Beneath the cover of this light, Xiao Moxian's strength rapidly rose!

Woosh!

The remaining Grandmist Spirit Bead essence was summoned out by Lin Ming. It dissolved in the air, turning into two mighty streams of gray energy that submerged into Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian's bodies. Thus, the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence had been completely absorbed by Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian!

In that moment, the endless starlight of the universe gathered around Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, forming a swirling whirlpool of dreamy starlight around them.

In this sort of enthralling and confusing environment, Lin Ming made love to his heart's content. He kissed Xiao Moxian's lips, kissed her slender pale neck, and kissed her bright red nipples.

All the energy within his body merged together with Xiao Moxian as one. But compared to Xiao Moxian, Lin Ming's harvests were far greater!

The energy brought forth by Xiao Moxian's primordial yin blood was different from the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence that Lin Ming absorbed as well as the strength sealed within the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone. However, these energies weren't much stronger. With a pure strength joining with them, all of this power came into equilibrium, fusing together in Lin Ming's body where he could utilize all of it!

His mortal body began to subtly change. His broken meridians began to regenerate, becoming even tougher than before. His skeleton developed a crystalline luster and even his battle spirit that had been stranded at the early blue soul realm seemed as if it would make another breakthrough!

Anf!

A resonant dragon roar echoed out. From between Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, the phantom of an Azure Dragon flew upwards. But following that, there was also a clear phoenix cry as a Dark Phoenix phantom shot up into the skies. The True Dragon and True Phoenix danced in the void, both of them rejoicing in life.

The True Dragon phantom was flooded with thunder and flame. As for the Dark Phoenix phantom, it was filled with pitch black flames, flames that seemed as if they could burn down the world.

“This fiery atmosphere, these are the flames that Xiao Moxian has comprehended, the phoenix nirvana true flame!”

In that instant, Lin Ming obtained a deeper comprehension of fire. Lin Ming’s attainments in the Concept of Fire had been at the sixth level; he had been stuck at this boundary for an extremely long time.

No matter what Law it was, the further one’s comprehensions were, the more difficult it was to comprehend more. But now, as Lin Ming made love to Xiao Moxian and their energies joined together without reserve, Lin Ming was able to deeply experience the true meaning of Xiao Moxian’s phoenix flames. His Concept of Fire pressed up against the threshold of the seventh level!

Ka ka ka!

Meanwhile, beneath Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian’s inner world was experiencing earth-shattering changes. The boundaries of her inner world broke apart and endless starlight and boundless energy rushed in, nourishing this world!

This energy formed origin energy clouds in the skies, followed by origin energy rain!

Underneath the revitalization of this origin energy rain, all the myriad lives began to regenerate. All sorts of spirit trees and spirit grasses grew with glee. In just several short breaths of time, lingzhi and ginsengs grew to the ages of tens of thousands of years. There were even some spirit grasses that developed their own spirits, forming plump fruits like little porcelain dolls that fell to the ground and began racing and hopping about in joy.

Xiao Moxian had finally broken into the Divine Lord realm!

Moreover, she was a Divine Lord that far surpassed others at her step. In terms of the essence gathering system alone, Xiao Moxian was no worse than Lin Ming.

In the breakthrough process, Xiao Moxian's body became increasingly hot. This type of heat transmitted through Lin Ming's loins, giving him an indescribably pleasurable feeling. Finally, with a loud roar, he released his life essence into her.

Xiao Moxian stubbornly held onto Lin Ming's back. At this time, her entire body was flushed red as if she were burning up. She opened her eyes, her vision blurry, as if she found all of this extremely satisfying and yet extremely painful.

"Lin Ming, I'm hot, so hot..."

Xiao Moxian clutched onto Lin Ming in the throes of passion. This tempting scene nearly caused Lin Ming's blood to surge again, making him want to take hold of her and make wild love to her once more.

However, Lin Ming still retained a certain clarity in his mind. He could feel that something was off with the current situation. Xiao Moxian had just broken into the Divine Lord realm so she should be radiating energy and joy, with her strength soaring to the heavens. Yet why was her body releasing such a burning heat that even her consciousness was blurred?

As he probed Xiao Moxian's body with his divine sense, Lin Ming was immediately shocked. Within Xiao Moxian's inner world as well as her meridians, she was flooded with flames. This power of fire became increasingly wild and intense, as if it wanted to burn her to the ground.

Lin Ming also came from the Ancient Phoenix Clan and had pure phoenix blood essence fused into his body. Although it was much weaker than his Azure Dragon blood within him, Lin Ming was considered relatively knowledgeable about phoenixes. He immediately understood just what Xiao Moxian's situation meant.

"Nirvana… this is a phoenix's nirvana…"

Lin Ming was dumbfounded. At this time, Xiao Moxian was actually experiencing her phoenix nirvana!!

Chapter 1533 – Xiao Moxian's Nirvana

Chapter 1533 – Xiao Moxian's Nirvana

…

…

…

To undergo nirvana was the most important transformation of a phoenix's life. After undergoing nirvana, the mortal body of a phoenix would be thoroughly incinerated to ashes and a new life reborn in that sea of flames. The mortal body of this new life would be far more powerful than before and also have a certain ability – that was, to burn their blood essence to an unlimited degree.

A phoenix was the only existence in the world that could recklessly burn their blood essence and yet never have their blood essence fade away. By virtue of this ability alone, a phoenix was destined to stand at the highest level of all God Beasts!

Different phoenixes would undergo different numbers of nirvanas in their lifetime. The more powerful a phoenix and the purer their bloodline, the more nirvanas they would undergo. In their life, this type of phoenix might undergo two or three nirvanas. After this phoenix grew up, although they wouldn't be as strong as an Empyrean, their strength would still stand between a half-step Empyrean and an Empyrean.

However, in mythical tales, there were stories of phoenixes with royal bloodlines that would experience nine nirvanas in their lifetime! After nine nirvanas, they would become as formidable as a True God!

Xiao Moxian's entire body became increasingly hot, as if she were boiling. Her cheeks and her stomach all turned fiery red.

Lin Ming probed Xiao Moxian with his divine sense and discovered that her entire body and inner world was flooded with raging, overwhelming flames. These flames surged through her meridians and blood vessels, heating up her bones!

Lin Ming's eyelids shot up as he noticed this. A phoenix nirvana was not easy or simple. The richer and purer one's phoenix bloodline was, the more terrifyingly powerful their nirvana would be once it erupted from their body. Xiao Moxian was undoubtedly talented and her nirvana would be no worse than experiencing heavenly tribulation.

"Lin Ming… I am hot… so hot…"

Xiao Moxian's consciousness dimmed, her eyes fluttering. She dazedly reached out a hand and grabbed onto Lin Ming, pulling herself into his embrace.

A burning heat filled Lin Ming's embrace. Xiao Moxian dripped with sweat, and as her sweat evaporated it covered them both with a thin layer of mist. At this point her eyes were blurred and she recklessly stroked Lin Ming's body as if she were under the effects of an aphrodisiac.

Her enchanting and upturning breasts were so flushed red they seemed as if they were ripe peaches, ready to drip juice. One couldn't help but want to knead them.

Facing this Xiao Moxian that was wildly rubbing and inflaming him, even though Lin Ming had just undergone a round of lovemaking he still felt fires burn in his loins. Yet, he didn't dare to needlessly move Xiao Moxian. He wasn't sure what Xiao Moxian's nirvana would be like and he feared that the slightest mistake would affect her crossing this tribulation.

In that moment, all sounds in the world seemed to fade away. As Lin Ming held onto Xiao Moxian while she dripped fragrant sweat all over him, he sat in meditation, his mind as still as water.

And at this time, outside Primordius Heavenly Palace, Tian Mingzi's barrage of attacks had slowed down.

Tian Mingzi's body was bathed in blood and his complexion was pale. He had clearly reached the point of exhaustion, a lamp without any oil remaining. As he looked at the dimmed down starlight that sprinkled from the nine stars above, his lips curved up in a fiendish smile.

If those nine stars dimmed down, it clearly meant that Lin Ming's breakthrough into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was verging on failure.

"Lin Ming, you will soon fail your breakthrough to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. I want to see just how you'll continue to fight with me! Hahaha! I have waited for this day for far too long!"

Tian Mingzi's hair was disheveled and he staggered as he stood. In a severely wounded state he had used the Heart Demon Art as well as simultaneously attacking Primordius Heavenly Palace and blocking the light of the nine stars; he had long since become unstable.

He supported himself up with his black sword. "Strange, if Lin Ming failed in attacked the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace then that starlight should have completely vanished. Why is it still there in a dimmed down state?"

Tian Mingzi looked at those nine stars that seemed as if they would disappear at any moment and yet stubbornly hung on. "Whatever, I have already won. After attacking the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and failing, Lin Ming will surely encounter a backlash. The fate of those that recklessly try to resist heavenly tribulation must be miserable indeed, hahaha! Right now he must be bloodied and suffocating to death. Good, then let me fan the fires once more!"

As Tian Mingzi thought like this, he swallowed down a medicinal pill. His face immediately flushed red with blood. This medicinal pill clearly stirred up his blood vitality. This was not an ordinary pill. Normally speaking, taking such a pill would have tremendous side effects and one would never use them unless it was a critical moment.

After swallowing this pill, Tian Mingzi's eyes flashed with a dark and evil light. He formed more and more seals with his hands, the bright red seals he produced slamming into Primordius Heavenly Palace!

Bang!

The power of these blood seals sunk into Primordius Heavenly Palace and headed towards Xiao Moxian.

"Tian Mingzi!"

A glimmer of hatred shined in Lin Ming's eyes. He punched out his fists and struck those bright red blood seals. In that moment, all the strength in his body fused together as one, and with a loud explosive sound, the blood seals shattered. Lin Ming's body merely shook in response, the blood within him moving restlessly.

This strike filled Lin Ming with joy. He could feel that his own strength had increased by a large margin. Even if he hadn't made a true breakthrough into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, his body transformation and essence gathering systems had experienced rapid growth.

And when Lin Ming punched through these blood seals, he could feel something soft fall deeper into his embrace and two delicate arms wrap around his neck. Those heated soft breasts drew close to his own, their softness and touch beyond description. Lin Ming looked at Xiao Moxian a bit dazedly, his mouth parched.

"You're about to undergo nirvana soon… what… do you want?" Lin Ming gulped, not sure where to place his hands.

Xiao Moxian licked her lips, slowly saying, "I want to dual cultivate with you."

Her eyes were still blurred but she had sobered up a great deal. "That feeling just now felt far better than I thought it would, I want to try it again…"

"Uh..." Lin Ming wanted to say that this was her nirvana and randomly doing something might not be the wisest idea. But before he could say anything, he could feel Xiao Moxian push him down and straddle his waist, riding him from above.

Xiao Moxian, who had just been introduced to the affairs between men and women, not only did she not have the shyness of a virgin anymore, but she instead had a wild taste to her. Her luxurious black hair fell down in waves, dancing in the air. At that moment, Lin Ming felt his body burning all over!

The fires of nirvana within her passed through the contact of their bodies. These flames broke into his inner world and fused with the Heretical God Tree!

This fusion startled Lin Ming. It felt as if it wasn't Xiao Moxian experiencing nirvana alone, but it was as if he was experiencing it together with her.

Suddenly, energy surged through Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian. Inexplicably, some dual cultivation methods flashed through Lin Ming's mind. Although he had never studied these methods before, with his perception and foundation, he had more than enough time to use them. Soon after, he displayed this technique with Xiao Moxian. Although this dual cultivation technique wasn't too profound, their bloodlines meshed together far too well, and even if they didn't use a dual cultivation method they still would have been able to reach a fusion of their essence, energy, and soul.

As their ecstasy reached the peak, Xiao Moxian's body suddenly melted.This was true disintegration. Her body shined with a brilliant light and blazing flames shone forth from her inner world, splendidly burning all around her.

These flames were not the shape of ordinary flames. Rather, they formed blossoming dark red lotuses in the void, as if they were truly material objects!

As these flames transformed into lotus flowers, their degree of heat was unimaginable!

The flames of a phoenix's nirvana were some of the most terrifying flames in the endless world. Even though Lin Ming's Fire Laws had touched upon the seventh level Concept, he still couldn't withstand this heat.

But strangely, as Lin Ming was scorched by these flames, he felt euphoria beyond compare, as if the hotter his body became, the more pleasurable it was.

He held onto Xiao Moxian who nearly disappeared into flames, withstanding this heat. It was like they were both being melded together into a single flame, truly combining.

Divine light pierced through the void. Countless beautiful red lotuses opened all around Lin Ming and Xian Moxian, their temperatures having reached inconceivable degrees. Even Lin Ming's body began to melt away.

Lin Ming also had phoenix blood within him. Although the quality was relatively low, after receiving Xiao Moxian's primordial yin, his phoenix blood could be said to have undergone a qualitative leap. It could be said that within the entire Ancient Phoenix Clan, there wasn't a single person who could compare with even 1% of his current bloodline.

Now, after being galvanized by Xiao Moxian's nirvanic flames, Lin Ming's own phoenix blood began to brilliantly burn, causing a nirvana fire tribulation within his inner world!

A phoenix's nirvana was not a light matter. The more powerful a phoenix, the truer this was. In most cases, although nirvana wouldn't fail, it would still consume a massive amount of origin energy; this was an inevitable truth.

However, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian's nirvana was different. Seemingly because of their yin yang harmony or perhaps because of dragon and phoenix dual cultivation, the process of their nirvana was extremely smooth. Their mortal bodies melted away, becoming forms of energy. Their life forces and souls seemed to fuse together in this brilliant blaze of energy.

With a resonant phoenix cry, a black phoenix shot up into the skies, a phoenix flying to the highest heavens!

This phoenix was no phantom – it was Xiao Moxian's true body!

In that moment, Xiao Moxian had turned into a true phoenix, no longer that of a half-phoenix!

In the process of her nirvana, Xiao Moxian's essence, energy, and divine had been baptized and revitalized, growing at a horrifyingly ridiculous pace!

Originally, she had just broken into the Divine Lord realm, but now she had reached the peak of the early Divine Lord realm. She was just a single step away from entering the middle Divine Lord realm!

The terrifying speed at which her cultivation base rose completely shocked Lin Ming. This was the heaven-defying feature of one with a phoenix body. This was the monstrous talent of the royal phoenix bloodline!

Lin Ming also found it hard to estimate how strong Xiao Moxian currently was. He had only followed Xiao Moxian's nirvana and had obtained a massive advantage, but the advantage she had gained was at least 10 times greater than his!

In the endless starry skies, Xiao Moxian emitted a heart-warming keen. Her body began to condense within the blaze of flames. A brilliant red lotus opened up, revealing a proud womanly figure. At this point, every aspect of her could be called perfect, dazzling and blinding to the degree that it was nearly impossible to look at her straight on!

Chapter 1534 – Opening the Dao Palace

Chapter 1534 – Opening the Dao Palace

…

…

…

Xiao Moxian floated high in the air, lofty and proud. Her delicate newborn body was fair and enchanting, as flawless as jade. At this time, her long hair danced about her and her entire body was bathed in sparkling starlight, like an immortal goddess. If anyone were to see Xiao Moxian now, they would inevitably feel a sense of shame and inferiority in her presence.

"Lin Ming!"

Xiao Moxian brightly smiled as she looked down and saw Lin Ming. Then, she rushed downwards like a little bunny, her bare body flying into Lin Ming's arms.

A jade warmth in his arms, the fragrance of a young woman, and also the residual aura of the flames of nirvana – all of this was like a dream, leaving one enchanted.

Xiao Moxian would never have imagined that this round of dual cultivation would have given her so many benefits. She had brought the yin yang energies within to harmony, not only allowing her to break past the Divine Lord bottleneck but also helping her complete her first nirvana.

The earlier a phoenix experienced nirvana, the better. However, even more so for a phoenix with a royal bloodline, it was still extremely rare that they would undergo nirvana at Xiao Moxian's current boundary.

Xiao Moxian held onto Lin Ming. Without any explanation, she wrapped her arms around his neck and deeply kissed him. Beneath her lips, her tongue played with his for a long time, only then reluctantly separating.

She coyly looked at Lin Ming as she flavored the aftertaste on her tongue. Her kiss with Lin Ming was just like holding hands with him, allowing her to equalize their energies. Of course, this effect was ten times greater than with just holding hands. It was like not only their energies connected, but their life forces and even their souls, leaving them both enthralled. This was countless times more wonderful than when mortals kissed.

Xiao Moxian didn't seem satisfied with kisses alone. She licked her lips and said, "Lin Ming, I'm in love with this feeling. I want to experience it again and again and again."

As Xiao Moxian spoke she was about to reach down to deliver her fragrant lips onto Lin Ming's once more. But at this time, Primordius Heavenly Palace violently shook as another blood seal came crashing down.

"Tian Mingzi!"

As this blood seal fell down, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian each struck out, crushing that blood seal to nothing!

After passing through and being weakened by Primordius Heavenly Palace's array formation, Tian Mingzi's blood seal didn't have much strength remaining. It was easily broken apart by Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian at their full strength.

"This drop dead old geezer." Xiao Moxian grit her teeth. She was an extremely vengeful individual. Tian Mingzi had cultivated in Empyrean Demondawn's domain for many years and had even trained in a part of the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art, receiving the graciousness of Demondawn Heavenly Palace. Yet not only did he not return the favor to Demondawn Heavenly Palace, but he even wanted to take Xiao Moxian for his alchemy. How could she not hate him?

“Lin Ming, you try and break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace once more. Then, you and I will join forces to strike down this old bastard!” Xiao Moxian spoke up, her words brimming with confidence. This was the confidence that came from strength.

Xiao Moxian had gone through the equivalent of two breakthroughs just now. The first was breaking into the Divine Lord realm and the second was experiencing a phoenix nirvana. There was no comparing her previous strength with her current state.

“Good, that’s always what I intended to do!” Lin Ming’s eyes burst out with a sharp light. At this time, the foundation of his mortal body had reached an indescribable degree!

Lin Ming’s mortal body contained the incomparably pure phoenix and dragon blood that had begun to fuse together. Not just that, but he also had the strength of the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone and the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence. With all of this gathered together with the accumulations Lin Ming gained during the years, his mortal body had reached a truly heaven-defying realm!

What was defying the heavens? That was to break through the Heavenly Dao rules and to defy the will of the heavens!

Lin Ming let go of Xiao Moxian. He took a deep breath as he released the Eight Inner Hidden Gates to their limits.

Ka ka ka ka!

His joints released explosive crackling sounds. This sort of sound shook the body, even causing one’s eardrums to tremble. Atop Lin Ming’s head, the light of the nine stars suddenly shined brightly yet again. He wanted to attack the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace once more!

The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had held Lin Ming down for far, far too long. Even if he were to attack this boundary now, he would still encounter numerous difficulties, each one harder than the last.

But now, the moment Lin Ming had been waiting for had finally arrived. With his absolute strength he would break through these shackles!

Weng - !

Energy trembled in the skies. The lines of the Great Dao reappeared. Above Lin Ming, the nine star dao diagram reformed!

The dao diagram wove together, forming a massive net that pressed down towards Lin Ming!

Lin Ming was already prepared. He roared out loud, all the strength within his body erupting like a volcano!

One billion jins, two billion jins, three billion jins… and still rising!

Only when his strength neared four billion jins did it slow. At this time, Lin Ming’s fists could break down mountains and rivers and tear through space!

“Celestial Tyrant Manual – Hundred Layered Waves!”

A strength of four billion jins, when used by the Hundred Layered Waves technique, was magnified multiple times. Lin Ming’s strength rose once more, surpassing the critical point of 10 billion jins!

In ancient times, strength of 10 billion jins had a specific title – that was, the strength of a dragon!

This wasn’t implying that the mortal bodily strength of a True Dragon was only 10 billion jins. Rather, it was a description of a martial artist’s bodily strength. Once their strength broke past 10 billion jins, it would experience a qualitative change!

Kacha!

Lin Ming’s fist smashed into the nine star dao diagram!

The nine star dao diagram violently shook, seeming as if it would disintegrate at any moment!

An alarming crack ripped through the nine star dao diagram; the Heavenly Dao Laws were about to be torn down by Lin Ming!

After a great chunk of the dao diagram was torn apart, faint strands of starlight fell through the dao diagram and shined onto Lin Ming. This starlight gathered into Lin Ming's body, circulating through his limbs and bones. In an instant, Lin Ming felt his flesh and blood become far more powerful and far more solid.

This starlight gathered somewhere in his body, seeming as if it would form its own Dao Palace!

Once the Dao Palace formed, this would be the true Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

"I've only absorbed a little bit of starlight and yet my body has obtained so many advantages. If I can truly follow what the ancient texts say and refine a star into my body, then what boundary will the intensity of my body reach? If I can refine all nine stars into my body and form my own dao diagram in the skies, then even an Empyrean won't be my match!"

In that moment, a heroic feeling surged in Lin Ming's heart. His road of martial arts was without end; it was impossible to say where the limit lay! Extreme Empyrean, True Divinity, neither of these were Lin Ming's end goal because he wanted to surpass all of this!

Ka ka ka ka!

Lin Ming gripped his fists, his joints exploding. With a roar, he punched out a second time.

Bang!

The gap in the dao diagram tore even wider. More and more starlight flowed out.

Lin Ming greedily absorbed this starlight, feeling his mortal body strengthen. His punched out again and again, his fists crashing into the dao diagram until they were stained with blood and his arms were numb!

The nine star dao diagram represented the rules of the Heavenly Dao, beyond reproach. Even if Lin Ming were to barrage the dao diagram with the strength of a dragon he still wouldn't be able to safely break it open.

Whenever the energy within his body became chaotic and his blood began to tumble about, within Lin Ming's inner world, the harmonized dragon and phoenix energy would turn into a dragon and phoenix phantom that raced through his body. Then, Lin Ming's aura would immediately become much smoother.

"I've already torn open 90%, I'm almost there!"

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a severe light. The more he attacked, the fiercer his attacks became. Although there was only 10% of the dao diagram remaining, this last 10% was the most solid and most difficult to break apart. In order to do so he would need to consume a massive amount of energy and blood vitality.

And at this time, outside of Primordius Heavenly Palace, Tian Mingzi saw that the nine stars hanging above him, which had just dimmed down, had suddenly become several times brighter than they were at the start!

In particular, the star known as Army Breaker was releasing a light as luminescent as a full moon, causing one's will to tremble!

"How could this be? How is this possible!?"

Tian Mingzi was dumbfounded. He had clearly driven Lin Ming to the edge of despair. In order to do this, he had not hesitated to consume his life force, consume his blood essence, and risk permanently damaging his future cultivation forever.

He felt that he had already used all possible methods to their limit. And in truth, everything he did seemed to have succeeded. The starlight of the nine stars had dimmed down and they seemed as if they would vanish at any moment. No one would ever expect that they would suddenly brighten up by thousands of times.

“Damn it all!”

Tian Mingzi didn’t believe in superstitions. He clenched his teeth, taking out more pills from his spatial ring and swallowing them down!

His face flushed as red as blood. His hands flickered as numerous blood seals were formed by him.

These blood seals were all intended to stir one’s heart demons. Tian Mingzi’s eyes flashed with a grim light as he sent these blood seals all smashing into Primordius Heavenly Palace!

This was a move that consumed Tian Mingzi’s blood vitality in order to cast. The foundation of a Great World King’s body was far too terrifying. If an ordinary World King were to attempt such a move in this state, they might have withered away to dust.

At this time, within Primordius Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming only sneered as he saw all of these blood seals fly towards him. If there wasn’t the protection of Primordius Heavenly Palace and Tian Mingzi was directly attacking Lin Ming, then Lin Ming absolutely would not have been able to withstand this attack. But within Primordius Heavenly Palace, everything Tian Mingzi did was merely wasting his own strength.

“Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist!”

With his strength of four million jins, Lin Ming struck out with the Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist. This was strength training’s ‘flow like silk’ that was recorded in the Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians. In the past, the Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians stated that those who practiced flow like silk to the highest boundary could turn their own energy into a trillion strands and turn anything they punched into dust!

And now, Lin Ming had clearly surpassed this boundary!

His fists smashed into the blood seals. After being severely weakened by Primordius Heavenly Palace's array formation, these blood seals simply exploded into the tiniest motes of energy.

Lin Ming punched out again and again, smashing all these blood seals apart. Then, he grit his teeth and erupted his bodily strength to the limit. The Gate of Life's blood essence burned and the power of dragons and phoenixes erupted. He shot into the skies, firing right into the nine star dao diagram!

"Break, Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!"

At this time, Lin Ming was no different from a blazing meteor. He poured his complete strength into this one strike and even used the Gate of Life to burn 20% of his blood essence. This could be described as an all-out attack!

Kacha!

Lin Ming's fist crashed into the final flaw of the nine star dao diagram!

In that moment, the nine star dao diagram finally shattered! Nine stars, seven bright and two dark, appeared in front of Lin Ming!

A powerful impact rushed through Lin Ming's blood but he didn't care about this at all. As long as he could break through to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and baptize himself underneath the powerful starlight, everything would recover. Moreover, his mortal body would reach its peak condition.

He spotted the direction of the Army Breaker Star and hurtled towards it!

Chapter 1535 – Refining A Star

Chapter 1535 – Refining A Star

…

…

…

The stars manifested within the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace were in fact not true stars.

True light-emitting stars were massive fireballs like the sun in the sky; their volume was unimaginable. Even an Empyrean or True Divinity would find it impossible to refine such a large object. When a martial artist said they had the ability to move a celestial star, they usually meant that they could move a planet that wasn't too big. To move something as large as a blaze star was simply impossible.

The stars in the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace were formed by the Nine Stars Heavenly Dao of the 33 Heavenly Dao Laws. Each human that cultivated the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had nine stars that corresponded to them in space. But after the events of the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago, up until now, only Empyrean Primordius had been able to fully step into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. Now, Lin Ming was the second!

As Lin Ming approached the Army Breaker Star, he discovered that this blazing white sphere of light was only a foot in diameter, and in the center of this sphere was a fist-sized core; this was the essence of the Army Breaker Star.

The star in front of him was pure strength condensed from the rules of the heavens and earth. What Lin Ming had to do now was to refine this star into his own flesh and blood.

In that moment, Lin Ming opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates to the limit. Astral essence surged out from his body and with his 4 billion jins of strength he reached out his arm, directly grasping onto the Army Breaker Star!

Chi-la!

As Lin Ming's hand entered the blazing white sphere of light, he felt a terrifying pressure and burning heat, as if this sphere of light wanted to tear apart his hand. The closer he reached to the core of this white sphere, the more intense the heat and pressure became. Lin Ming could even feel that his body was about to explode to pieces.

"With starlight as my sail and a dao diagram as my ship, I shall sail the vast universe, my strength rising to another heaven!"

Lin Ming roared out loud and grabbed onto the core of this star!

In that moment, Lin Ming felt as if his hand was immersed in a pool of strong acid, his flesh and blood being melted away. If it were a martial artist with a weaker body then their hand would have been instantly melted away to bones.

Lin Ming revolved the Celestial Tyrant Manual and sucked out the strength of the star core. The Celestial Tyrant Manual was a cultivation method jade slip that the old Holy Lord of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands had found together with the Magic Cube when he explored an ancient ruin. The only problem was that it was incomplete, so it was hard to say just what grade of cultivation method it had been. But in the current Divine Realm, the Celestial Tyrant Manual was undoubtedly a peak body transformation cultivation method, because all body transformation techniques related to humanity's Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had long been lost to time.

After being held by Lin Ming, this star core flushed right and left as if it wanted to struggle free from his grip. Lin Ming was startled. It was like this star core formed from the Heavenly Dao rules had a mind of its own; it was incomparably mysterious.

“What a wondrous road of martial arts. The Eight Inner Hidden Gates and Nine Stars of the Dao Palace are both body transformation Laws of the human race and also one of the Laws of the 33 Heavens; just why would they change?”

Lin Ming was puzzled. To change the rules like this was to take one of the 33 Heavenly Dao Laws and reverse it.

Such a splendid road of martial arts had been severed just like that; it was truly regretful!

Then, Lin Ming placed that star core in his mouth and swallowed it down!

For a time, Lin Ming felt an indescribable heat flow down his body and sink into his inner world.

Infinite starlight burst out within Lin Ming’s body and a massive amount of starlight surged out from him, making his entire body shine with a beautiful crystalline transparency. In this baptism of starlight, Lin Ming could feel the astral energy within him being fired up and tempered, purified repeatedly as it was refined again and again.

The starlight of the highest heavens became increasingly dazzling, shining like flowing mercury as it spread throughout Lin Ming’s limbs and bones and then converged into his inner world. This sort of scene represented the majesty and wonders of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

It was unknown how long this process continued. Sometimes Lin Ming would feel severe pain wrack his body and sometimes he would feel extreme pleasure. Although the process of refining this star wasn’t easy, he didn’t experience any life or death dangers. This was mainly due to Lin Ming’s bodily foundation being far too solid. If his mortal bodily intensity were to be placed amongst martial artists that had just entered the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace 3.6 billion years ago then he would be far, far stronger!

To use such a body to refine a star, even if that star was far more formidable due to the change in the Heavenly Dao rules, this sort of matter still wouldn’t be anything to the current Lin Ming.

In the sky, the eight other stars had already vanished. All of Lin Ming's pores opened as they overflowed with starlight.

When Lin Ming trained in body transformation before, he took all sorts of divine pills and medicines to aid in his breakthrough and often had to experience the process of having his body transformed and reborn, reforming his marrow, expelling the impurities and even draining out his old blood until the new mercury-thick blood filled his veins.

But now, long before Lin Ming had broken into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, he had trained to the point that there wasn't the tiniest amount of impurities left in his body. His blood and his recently combined Azure Dragon blood and phoenix blood essence couldn't be changed again.

Without reaching this degree, it was impossible to break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

When a martial artist broke through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace in this state, it was no longer possible for them to replace their blood and bone marrow.

The true Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was to use the starlight of the highest heavens to baptize the spirit body, inscribing the power of the Laws into the flawless mortal body!

Strength training, flesh training, viscera training, altering muscle, bone forging, tempering marrow; these six stages of early body transformation could be called laying down and strengthening the foundation of a martial artist's body.

The Gate of Healing, Gate of Life, Gate of Pain, Gate of Limit, Gate of View, Gate of Wonder, Gate of Death, Gate of Opening; these Eight Inner Hidden Gates could be called digging out the very depths of a martial artist's life potential.

Then, the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace were inscribing the very Laws themselves into a martial artist's body, allowing a human body transformation martial artist to utilize the strength of the 33 Heavenly Dao Laws!

The 3000 roads of the Great Dao, no matter where they started, all headed towards the same destination. If one walked down the road of martial arts it was impossible to bypass the Laws of the 33 Layered Heaves, because they were the foundation upon which the universes of the 33 Heavens were formed!

As time passed, the crystal nucleus of the Army Breaker Star completely decomposed in Lin Ming's inner world, turning into shimmering starlight that formed a revolving dao diagram.

Then, starlight began to gather upon this dao diagram, using it as the foundation to build a palace!

This palace was square, with sharp corners, giving off a solemn and dignified atmosphere. At the same time, it glittered crystal clear, as if it were carved from the most luxurious jade.

This was Lin Ming's Dao Palace. The moment that this Dao Palace finished building, it meant Lin Ming had truly broken into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

Lin Ming's consciousness took human shape. He entered his own inner world and stepped into the palace.

In the next moment, his surroundings suddenly changed. He arrived in a new world, a vast and boundless land. But no matter where he looked he could see a heavy fog, as if everything here was waiting for Lin Ming to develop.

Although the Dao Palace had formed, it was still empty inside. The array diagram was not yet complete. This also meant that Lin Ming was only at the very beginning stages of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

"A Dao Palace in my inner word, this is the Purple Temple Dao Palace!"

Lin Ming's eyes sparkled. The Purple Temple Dao Palace was one of the nine great Dao Palaces of the human body!

The function of this Dao Palace was to condense the power of the stars from the highest heavens. In a short period of time, it would allow the intensity of Lin Ming's astral essence to rise by a dramatic degree! This sort of increase could be by three to four times, or even eight to nine times!

The exact number was determined by the foundation of the martial artist as well as the completeness of their Dao Palace.

This was because the origin of the Purple Temple Dao Palace's strength didn't come from a martial artist's body but from starlight in the highest heavens. Thus, even if it increased strength by several times it still wouldn't overdraw a martial artist's potential; this was the advantage of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

In comparison, the Gate of Life's blood essence was to burn a martial artist's blood vitality. If one burned too much it would damage a martial artist's life source and would reach unrecoverable levels. From this alone, the difference between the two could be seen.

As the Purple Temple Dao Palace completely opened, Lin Ming's clothes began to flutter about him. A massive amount of starlight formed a vortex within his body. As the Dao Palace became established, it began to crazily grow!

From several billion jins, it grew without end. With irresistible momentum, it broke through the strength of a dragon and continued growing!

The opening of the Purple Temple Dao Palace not only meant Lin Ming gaining another ability, but in terms of his body alone, he experienced a massive leap forwards!

Lin Ming floated high in the nine star heavens, his eyes closed as he silently felt the transformations occurring in his body.

"Nine Stars of the Dao Palace… this is Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!"

As Lin Ming raised his hand, he could feel the astral essence within his body surging all about him, his supernatural powers billowing like a tide. As the starlight fully entered his body, his bodily strength had already reached more than 15 billion jins!

Without relying on the Celestial Tyrant Manual to superimpose his strength, just his base strength alone had surpassed the strength of a dragon! And if he were to use the Celestial Tyrant Manual again after this and gather the strength of the nine heaven stars into his body, then Lin Ming's explosive force would reach an incomprehensible degree!

"The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, I've finally broken through… Tian Mingzi… I've made you wait for a long time…"

In that instant, Lin Ming's eyes flashed open. In his vision, a deep killing intent flashed!

Chapter 1536 – Facing a Great World King

Chapter 1536 – Facing a Great World King

…

…

…

As Lin Ming's consciousness withdrew from the star space, Xiao Moxian was the first to welcome him back.

"Lin Ming, I knew you would succeed!"

At this time, Xiao Moxian had already used energy to form a long black dress. After experiencing her phoenix nirvana her body exuded a strange and enthralling appeal. It was no longer just the simple pureness of a young girl but contained many flavors of grace and charm.

After Lin Ming broke through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and obtained Xiao Moxian's primordial yin blood and baptism of her phoenix nirvana, the yin yang energy within him had also become balanced and the rise in his strength was not a small matter.

As for Xiao Moxian, she had broken through to the Divine Lord realm and experienced her first phoenix nirvana; her strength had risen even more than Lin Ming's!

After several hours of cultivation, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had both been reborn. There was no comparison between the past and current them!

The two of them both contained a dreadful supernatural power within them, one that wanted to break free!

"Xian'er, let's go!"

Because of the substantial change in their relationship, the way Lin Ming called Xiao Moxian also changed. Xiao Moxian held onto Lin Ming's hand and followed him out.

She was well aware that outside of Primordius Heavenly Palace, there was a Great World King waiting for them!

However, this didn't cause her to feel fear. Rather, it ignited a blazing fighting spirit in her heart.

The Divine Lord realm to challenge a Great World King!

Looking at the broad world, since ancient and modern times, just who had this sort of daring boldness!?

At this time, outside of Primordius Heavenly Palace, Tian Mingzi was looking at the skies with suspicions. The nine stars had long since vanished.

Just two hours ago, the extremely dim nine stars had become incomparably bright. Among them, the Army Breaker Star was especially brilliant, like the luminescent moon shining on a clear night.

Because of that, Tian Mingzi's thoughts had become chaotic and he had spared no expense to use an arcane skill, even using his blood essence to form heart demon seals again and again. But due to the array formation protecting Primordius Heavenly Palace, he had no idea whether or not his attacks had been effective. Afterwards, those nine stars had brightened for a long time before slowly dimming down and then vanishing completely.

This scene caused the overly cautious Tian Mingzi to frown. He had no idea just what had happened.

It had been countless years since anyone had broken through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and even any ancient texts that described the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had been lost to time. Tian Mingzi had no idea what sort of phenomena would occur when a martial artist tried to break through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

After seeing the nine stars disappear, Tian Mingzi believed that Lin Ming should have failed in his breakthrough.

“This brat is really the reincarnation of a demon god. Even the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace that were cursed by the Heavenly Dao have produced such a phenomenon because of him, it was like he had nearly made his breakthrough! Luckily, my heart demon seals are especially used to stir martial artists’ heart demons when they are attempting a breakthrough… otherwise, that brat really might have been successful in his breakthrough!”

Tian Mingzi calculated in his mind. He felt that this speculation was the most reasonable.

Perhaps, because of the heart demon seals and the energy backlash from failing to break through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, Lin Ming’s mortal body might have already collapsed and he may have been in a dying state.

Looking at Primordius Heavenly Palace, this inestimably valuable palace was still covered with a powerful array formation. It would be impossible to shatter its defenses in a short period of time.

Tian Mingzi diabolically grinned. “Such a wonderful treasure and yet you cannot drive it with your own power. You can only rely on using nine sun jades to supply the required energy to power the array formations, that is truly a waste! Then, let me help you receive this treasure! Moreover, all the secrets on your body will also be mine! I will allow you to maintain whatever feeble existence you still have for several more days while I restore myself to my peak state, and then I’ll slowly refine this Primordius Heavenly Palace once more. After that, I’ll pull out your soul and refine it, hahaha!”

As Tian Mingzi imagined himself using a soul searching technique to discover all of Lin Ming’s secrets, he became increasingly happy with himself.

In trying to kill Lin Ming for these last 20 years, the price he had paid was immeasurable. Not only had he severed his hand but he had even lost the Skydark Holy Lands that he had ruled for 50,000 years. Now, he had even been forced to burn 30% of his blood essence, greatly damaging himself in the process!

“My lost blood vitality can be restored using Xiao Moxian. She has a half phoenix body and she also comes from the royal phoenix bloodline! If I use her to make a pill, not only can I fully recover my blood vitality but I’ll even surpass my peak state in the past! For me to encounter Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian in the Asura Road is my life’s greatest lucky chance!”

If he was successful in killing Lin Ming, this would indeed be the most important moment in Tian Mingzi’s life. He would inherit everything of Lin Ming’s; even becoming an extreme Empyeran in the future would be easy. Thus, even though Tian Mingzi was a naturally cold-minded and sinister individual who hid his thoughts deeply, at this time he couldn’t restrain his mood from wildly oscillating!

“I’ll sit in meditation, and three days later when I’ve restored my strength I will have a 90% chance of refining this Heavenly Palace!”

Although Tian Mingzi desperately wanted to kill Lin Ming right now, he didn’t immediately try to break through Primordius Heavenly Palace’s array formation. Rather, he decided to wait until he restored himself to his top condition before killing Lin Ming. This was to ensure that his plan was successful and prevent Lin Ming from counterattacking him in any manner.

Then, Tian Mingzi casually set up an array formation around Primordius Heavenly Palace. To Tian Mingzi, Lin Ming was a turtle in a jar; there was no escape for him.

As Primordius Heavenly Palace was surrounded, Tian Mingzi grinned. But then, his smile froze on his face. He stared blankly on as the array formation surrounding Primordius Heavenly Palace was torn apart and a youth in black clothes stepped out, following by a young woman in a dress. These two people that just stepped out from the array formation were Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian!

"What!?"

Tian Mingzi couldn't even believe his eyes. He had been thinking of all possible means by which he could refine Primordius Heavenly Palace and yet Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian emerged on their own volition!?

Could they have realized that staying in there was the same as waiting for death, so they planned to rush out now and risk their lives battling him while he was at his weakest?

"A wise decision, but still useless!"

Even though Tian Mingzi was near exhaustion and he was covered with countless wounds, he was still a Great World King. He was an existence who could destroy a planet with his hand, so how could he be killed by a mere Divine Lord powerhouse?

As for Lin Ming's avatar, Tian Mingzi didn't fear it anymore. He had only been surprised by the avatar's sneak attack before, but now he was prepared. He could absolutely use an array formation to imprison the avatar and then slowly refine it. No matter how powerful that avatar's bodily defensive abilities were, it was impossible for it alone to change the tide of this war.

"Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, are you really that impatient to die? Haha, that is just what I like!" Tian Mingzi laughed. Although he was arrogant on the surface, the truth was that he was maintaining vigilance all around him in order to prevent Lin Ming from using any more of his dirty tricks. However, no matter how guarded he was, he still felt his heart shake as he saw Xiao Moxian's cultivation!

Xiao Moxian had also broken through to the Divine Lord realm!

Just what was happening?

Tian Mingzi felt this to be unbelievable. He was well aware that just some time ago, Xiao Moxian had only been at the late Divine Transformation realm. After entering God Burying Ridge and Tragic Death Valley, why would her cultivation base suddenly rise to the Divine

Lord realm in such a short period of time? Even if she were to ignore all consequences to her foundation and swallow any heavenly materials she could find, it would still be impossible for her cultivation to rise so quickly!

“Divine Lord realm, you also broke through the Divine Lord realm! Good! Very good! But you still cannot change your fate of destruction. The only thing that will change is that when I use you for alchemy, I will be able to press out more of your phoenix blood essence to restore more of my lost blood vitality!”

Tian Mingzi looked at Xiao Moxian and cackled.

Although he could see Xiao Moxian’s breakthrough, he actually couldn’t see Lin Ming’s. Tian Mingzi didn’t understand the boundary of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace to begin with, so he only thought that Lin Ming was still at the peak of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

However, he could faintly feel that Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were much stronger than they were before. This caused him to be on full alert. He was only worried that Lin Ming would have some tricks up his sleeve, not that Lin Ming would be stronger than he was.

“Tian Mingzi, aren’t you afraid that the wind will bite your blathering tongue? Hehe, just you wait, I’ll cut you up to feed to the dogs!”

Xiao Moxian stood in sharp opposition, not backing down in the least. This caused Tian Mingzi to scowl.

“You really have no idea of death or danger!”

Tian Mingzi flicked his hand and a pill flew into his mouth. With it, an abnormal red color brightened his cheeks. His missing blood vitality seemed to become exuberant once more.

Without a doubt, this was a pill with a side effect. Eating too much of this would have a tremendous impact on his future.

Lin Ming sneered as he saw this, "Your body is already so ruined that you need medicines to fight? Your arm seems to have been severed too and the meridians haven't even fully healed. How pitiful… but, no matter how miserable you are I won't show any mercy at all. I will kill you now in your weakest moment!"

As Lin Ming spoke to here, astral essence surged out from his body. An unimaginable great strength erupted from him like a tide!

Tian Mingzi's pupils shrank. His complexion became increasingly fierce and wild. "So your strength has made some progress, no wonder you're so arrogant. But, if you think that this alone is enough to defeat me then you are far too naïve! Let me show you what the strength of a Great World King is like! Today, I will make up for all the blood vitality I lost from your body!"

Tian Mingzi drew the black sword from his spatial ring and stepped on the void, slashing out at Lin Ming. As this sword came slicing down, countless demons seemed to gush out from the blade. At the same time, this sword also carried with it a terrifying suction power. This was Tian Mingzi's Heaven Absorbing Demon Art that he used in conjunction with his attack!

Seeing Tian Mingzi's sword cut down, Lin Ming didn't evade or dodge. He locked onto Tian Mingzi's sword light and punched out!

In that instant, Lin Ming's great strength of 15 billion jins erupted, strength that surpassed that of a dragon!

Kacha!

With a loud crack, Tian Mingzi's sword light disintegrated into countless motes of black light. As for Lin Ming, his body only shook but he stood firm where he was without retreating a single step.

"What!?"

Tian Mingzi’s was bewildered. Because he was cautious that Lin Ming would play some trick on him, that had only been a probing attack just now. Even though he hadn’t gone all-out, it was still a terrifying strike. Despite this, he never imagined that Lin Ming would block it bare-handed with such ease.

Chapter 1537 – Fighting Tian Mingzi

Chapter 1537 – Fighting Tian Mingzi

…

…

…

Tian Mingzi's complexion changed as he saw that Lin Ming's strength had greatly increased. Although he had overdrawn his blood vitality and his boundary had dropped, a skinny camel was still larger than a horse. This sword strike of his was able to instantly kill a peak Holy Lord, but Lin Ming with his early Divine Lord realm cultivation had been able to easily block it!

Although Tian Mingzi had only used 30% of his strength there, didn't Lin Ming also not use his complete strength?

"You…" Tian Mingzi's lips shook as he spoke. An inconceivable possibility appeared in his mind, but only this possibility could reasonably explain what just happened!

"You… you broke through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!?"

As Tian Mingzi looked at Lin Ming now, his eyes were filled with fear and dread!

Lin Ming was far too fearful, fearful to the point that it suffocated him!

Originally, Tian Mingzi with his Great World King cultivation had joined forces with an ordinary World King, two half-step World Kings, some guides and underlings, and later even a half-step Empyrean. This amazingly mighty lineup of martial artists had been used to hunt down a late Divine Transformation realm martial artist through the God Burying Ridge. That could simply be called the most ludicrous joke in the world. If news of this were to ever spread out then they would all be laughed at as idiots who tried to kill a chicken with an oxen knife.

Not even hunting down a strong World King would require such a luxurious lineup!

However, this amazing lineup of individuals, in hunting down a single junior, had met an unexpected result!

First, they had forced Lin Ming into Tragic Death Valley, a land that no one had ever emerged from for 10 billion years. However, not only did Lin Ming leave unscathed but he had also obtained massive benefits, benefits that allowed him to break into the Divine Lord realm!

Even a Divine Lord realm martial artist still wasn't worthy to be chased by such a strong group. Once they found him they could instantly crush him to death!

But following that, Lin Ming had lured them all into a danger zone, using all sorts of traps and methods in addition to his own terrifying combat strength to kill them all off one at a time!

If Ash Murder, Mister Zhou, and all the others who came before had made the grave mistake of underestimating their opponent, then Tian Mingzi could be said to have treated his with the utmost sincerity, stopping at nothing to ensure victory. He hadn't even hesitated to use up his own blood essence and even then he had only caused Lin Ming to receive heavy wounds and be forced back into Primordius Heavenly Palace. Afterwards, he had even used his heart demon blood curse so that Lin Ming's heart demons would burst out during his breakthrough and he would perish.

But, the reality was that Lin Ming had closed up in Primordius Heavenly Palace and had broken through to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, allowing his strength to reach unprecedented heights!

This Lin Ming had been set in death trap after death trap but had found the path to survival, making it so that no one could summon the courage to face him!

Even if Tian Mingzi were a Great World King, he was also the same.

However, now that matters had come to this step it was impossible for him to retreat. He had severely damaged his life source and if he didn't kill Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian now then it was likely he would fall to the boundary of an ordinary World King in the future. Not just that, but his lifespan would be damaged and it would be nearly impossible to progress a single inch forwards in his future cultivation. To Tian Mingzi, this was a fate worse than death!

Now, in this sealed off space, it was either he would perish or they would die!

“Good! Very good!” Tian Mingzi's eyes were dignified. Although his words seemed confident, he lacked any assurance in his heart. If he were in his peak state then no matter what breakthroughs Lin Ming made he could still easily suppress him. But now, he had lost all grasp of the situation because he simply didn't know how strong a martial artist would become after reaching the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

There was simply no reference target for this. This was because the saints didn't cultivate the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace; their race had a body transformation technique that was easier and suited them more. Thus, it could be said that within the current universes of the 33 Layered Heavens, only Lin Ming had reached the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. His achievements could not be replicated!

Facing this enemy that he didn't understand at all, Tian Mingzi could only try his best!

Tian Mingzi spread out his arms. Behind him, the phantom of a demon god formed. All of the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy gathered towards this demon god!

A Great World King was still a Great World King. Even after being reduced to such a state he could still display such a powerful technique.

Tian Mingzi shot out the black sword in his hands. This sword seemed to turn into a black snake, winding through the air before falling into the hands of this demon god phantom.

Tian Mingzi had given his sword to the demon god phantom!

Seeing this, Lin Ming was startled. He could faintly feel that Tian Mingzi's sword was extremely unusual. Its shape was strange, with the blade being longer than an adult male was high, and yet the blade was as narrow as a flower petal. It was difficult to apply any sort of force with this sword and thus difficult to understand why any refining master would design a sword like this.

But seeing this demon god phantom gradually take shape in the air, Lin Ming was able to speculate that this demon god phantom wasn't summoned by Tian Mingzi, but had always been sealed within the sword!

Then, Tian Mingzi struck his chest with his fist and spat out a mouthful of blood into the demon god phantom. As this demon god phantom absorbed Tian Mingzi's blood, it became increasingly real and its expression became increasingly fierce!

Witnessing this scene, Lin Ming felt his heart skip a beat. Tian Mingzi had actually used his own blood to raise this demon! In the legends, there were witches and shamans that raised poisonous bugs in their body, feeding them with their own flesh and blood. This demon that Tian Mingzi released was in a similar situation.

"Hahaha! Lin Ming! This demon slave that I carefully raised is for when my true self has been severely wounded! It can display 50% of my peak strength! You can die now!"

Tian Mingzi raved. Then, the demon god phantom hurtled forwards, billowing demonic energy that surged all about it, condensing into ash gray pythons that twisted above the sword before cutting straight down!

"A demon slave with 50% of your combat strength?"

Hearing Tian Mingzi's wild laughter, Xiao Moxian was shocked. A Great World King truly did have endless methods to use; she never imagined Tian Mingzi would have such a backup plan. Just from looking at the billowing demon energy of that demon god phantom, she could see just how strong it was!

A demon slave with 50% of Tian Mingzi's peak combat strength? How could she and Lin Ming block it?

And as Xiao Moxian's mind wavered, the demon slave roared out loud and rushed towards Lin Ming. A terrifying demon will turned into a beam of dark light that shot into Xiao Moxian's spiritual sea. This was the heart demon seal that Tian Mingzi had used before!

Without being weakened by Primordius Heavenly Palace's array formation, this heart demon blood seal was over ten times more powerful than before!

"Be careful!"

Just as this heart demon was about to enter Xiao Moxian's mind, Lin Ming's voice cracked in her ear like a shocking thunderclap!

In his voice, he had fused the Divine Mist Heart Mantra, using the Laws of the soul forging system to block the heart demon blood seal that was trying to drill into Xiao Moxian!

"Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!"

Lin Ming's spear swept out and drew a dao diagram in the air. This dao diagram had countless demons sealed within it, all of them fierce and dreadful!

Rumble rumble rumble!

The dao diagram revolved, suppressing and smashing apart the heart demon blood seal like a massive grinding pan!

Xiao Moxian's mind shook. Only then did she free herself from the shackles of the heart demon.

She was startled by what had just happened; she had almost fallen into Tian Mingzi's trap.

"He's lying to you!" Lin Ming quickly said to Xiao Moxian with a true essence sound transmission.

Xiao Moxian eyebrows shot up. She immediately understood what Lin Ming was saying!

Perhaps Tian Mingzi might have really raised a demon slave so he could bring it out whenever his true self was injured. But, the strength of this demon slave wasn't as formidable as Tian Mingzi had described.

The reason for this was that Tian Mingzi had to face the iron-armored spectral soldier array and had repeatedly burnt his blood essence to defeat them. If this demon slave really did possess 50% of his peak strength then why would he need to burn his blood essence now?

In other words, Tian Mingzi had already used this demon slave to deal with the iron-armored spectral soldier array, causing the origin energy of the demon slave to be severely damaged and its strength to have lowered.

But no matter what the truth was, Tian Mingzi was simply making empty claims about this demon slave.

And there was only one reason he did this. He wanted to produce a brief moment where Xiao Moxian's mind wavered so he could use a heart demon blood seal to invade her spiritual sea and stoke her heart demons!

"Guard your mind. This Tian Mingzi wants to deal with you first so he can suck up your phoenix blood essence to recover his own strength and then deal with me!"

Lin Ming quickly said. Xiao Moxian grimaced. This Tian Mingzi was far too sinister!

But, one couldn't blame Xiao Moxian for being too careful in thinking this. Tian Mingzi's acting was far too real, and in addition to his Great World King boundary, it was easy to believe that he had some ultimate hidden card in his hands.

Bang!

At this moment, the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel released an explosive sound. After it crushed the demon heart blood seal to dust, it began grinding down on the demon slave!

Lin Ming stepped on space. As he raised his hands, tremendous supernatural powers rushed forwards with overwhelming momentum!

He grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and pointed it straight between the demon slave's eyebrows. "All demons in this world, be received into the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, never to enter samsara, forever and ever imprisoned to be used by me!"

"Uwooo!"

The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel flew forwards like a horrifying spinning saw wheel. The demon slave released heart-rending screams as the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel tore into its body!

Xiao Moxian's thoughts were right. This demon slave, in its peak state, might have had 40-50% of Tian Mingzi's strength. However, because Tian Mingzi needed to break through the iron-armored spectral soldier array as soon as possible so he could hinder Lin Ming's breakthrough, he had summoned the demon slave, greatly consuming its energy. Now, it was far inferior to how it was in the past!

Xiao Moxian watched as the demon slave was cut apart. Lin Ming's words were like the proclamation of heaven, seeming as if he were ordering the slave demon to be sucked into the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. She couldn't help but feel admiration at Lin Ming's combat strength.

Xiao Moxian had broken into the Divine Lord realm and had completed her first phoenix nirvana; currently, her strength wasn't too far off from Lin Ming's. But, in terms of true combat experience, the Xiao Moxian who grew up in Demondawn Heavenly Palace was far inferior to the likes of Lin Ming and Tian Mingzi, who wandered the world in search of adventures, experiencing countless dangerous life or death situations. Even if their strength was similar, the combat strength that Xiao Moxian could display on the battlefield was far inferior to Lin Ming's.

As she admired Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian also felt an indescribable affection towards him. Even though she was a proud daughter of heaven who possessed a nearly unrivalled talent and had even completed her first nirvana during the Divine Lord realm, or even if she were to become a True Divinity in the future, when she was with Lin Ming she knew that he would always stand in front of her, forever protecting her and giving her an inexplicable sense of safety.

Chapter 1538 – Hatred of 50,000 Years

Chapter 1538 – Hatred of 50,000 Years

…

…

…

Hum ~ hum ~ hum ~

The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel viciously spun, soon about to cut through Tian Mingzi's demon slave!

This demon slave had been carefully raised by Tian Mingzi; it was equal to a contract beast in energy form. Once it was exterminated by Lin Ming, Tian Mingzi would suffer enormous losses!

"Demon slave, wind the primordial spirit!!"

Tian Mingzi roared out loud. In that moment, the demon slave phantom that was suppressed by the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel emitted a shrill scream. Ignoring the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel that was cutting through its body, it hurtled towards Lin Ming!

Ca!

With a loud cracking sound, the demon slave was split in half by the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

The split up halves of the demon slave began to burn, turning into pure streams of gray energy that wound towards Lin Ming!

This was the demon slave's final desperate attack! After this strike, the demon slave would extinguish into smoke, no longer existing in this world. Tian Mingzi was planning to use this demon slave to suicide into Lin Ming, having both of them die together!

An ordinary contract beast would not be under the absolute control of their master; they wouldn't sacrifice themselves simply because they were commanded to. But, Tian Mingzi's demon slave was completely raised by him and was under his full domination. If it was ordered to risk its life in an attack then it would truly be reckless!

At the peak of its strength, this demon slave had 40-50% of Tian Mingzi's full strength. Even though this demon slave was nothing but a dried up lamp, the strength that it could erupt with at its final moment was still terrifying. On the spot, it turned into a giant net that came bounding towards Lin Ming!

Ca! Ca! Ca!

The surrounding 100 feet of space was completely sealed off. Lin Ming's complexion changed. This Tian Mingzi was too ruthless; he had sacrificed this contract beast that he raised for so many years and had forced it to burn away all its life essence.

In that moment, Lin Ming felt his heart shake. Just as he was being covered by the demon slave net, illusions grew thick in his mind!

Lin Ming saw illusions of terrifying scenes. First he had been captured by Tian Mingzi, his cultivation completely crippled and his soul sucked out to be refined. Then, Xiao Moxian was raped by him, and Lin Ming could only watch helplessly on as she was refined into a pill! Next, Lin Ming's primordial spirit was imprisoned by Tian Mingzi for a million years, forced to undergo endless torture and pain before disintegrating to ash!

These innumerable illusions flashed through Lin Ming's mind, the pain nearly causing his spiritual sea to be torn apart!

"These are heart demons!"

Lin Ming's mind shook. This demon slave was an energy life form, one connected to heart demons. Thus, it unexpectedly had the ability to affect his own heart demons.

"Haha, Lin Ming, how is the taste of having heart demons enter your body!? I know that you have a will firm but this is a heart demon life form that I've carefully raised for 60,000 years! This demon slave is formed from the evolved obsessions of an ancient powerhouse. It was obtained by me, and then I used several hundred years to slowly refine it and cancel out its consciousness before it was fully subdued by me! Although I'm not relying on it to kill you, it's more than enough to imprison you!"

A heart demon life form evolved from the obsessions of an ancient powerhouse?

Lin Ming was startled. Most martial artists' heart demons usually came in two extreme forms; one was something they feared more than anything else in the depths of their heart and the other was something they longed for incomparably.

Obsessions, in other words, were desires. When an unrivalled powerhouse died, for their obsessions to turn into an energy life form, that was truly incredible!

This attack that came from the demon slave burning its life away not only surrounded Lin Ming but also surrounded Xiao Moxian. Even if they knew that everything they saw was illusions, it was still difficult to rid themselves of these heart demons!

"Phoenix Trueform!"

Xiao Moxian cried out loud. The back of her clothes tore apart and two giant phoenix wings unfurled, stretching to the skies!

In that moment, wild and savage black flames rolled forth from Xiao Moxian like a tide, burning away the heart demons!

The black flames nearly reached the seventh level Concept of the Fire Laws!

Tian Mingzi's mind chilled. This Xiao Moxian was not easy to deal with; her strength wasn't much different from Lin Ming's. if this were to continue then the demon slave would be completely burnt away by her.

Tian Mingzi sneered, "You've actually cultivated to the seventh level Concept of the Fire Laws; even an ordinary World King who cultivates supernatural fire powers is no better than you! You are truly a pair of outstanding youths, but what a pity, you are both destined to die here today!

"Shadow Snake Sword, explode!"

Tian Mingzi suddenly shot out his sword. As his sword pierced towards Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, the surface of the black sword shimmered with a massive number of runes. As these runes shined, the sword began to disintegrate, erupting with an infinite rain of light!

Tian Mingzi wanted to blow up his own black sword!

This black sword had also been obtained by Tian Mingzi in an ancient mystic realm and was itself an Empyrean spirit treasure. However, the original artifact spirit had already died and thus Tian Mingzi had captured an ancient vicious beast to draw out its soul to replace the sword's artifact spirit.

Then, he had spent tens of thousands of years to completely refine this sword until he became of singular mind with it!

Because this artifact spirit had been placed in by Tian Mingzi and combined with the fact that he had completely refined the sword, he could use a thought command alone to have this black sword of his explode!

The might of an exploding Empyrean spirit treasure was unimaginable! For instance, if Primordius Heavenly Palace were to explode, the consequences would be incredible. Even a planet would be blown up!

Of course, Tian Mingzi's black sword was far inferior to Primordius Heavenly Palace in grade. Even so, this was not something that Lin Ming could withstand! If an Empyrean spirit treasure were to explode near their bodies then both Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian would be completely destroyed!

"Hahaha! Lin Ming, you are far too naïve! I know that your strength has greatly risen because you broke through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, and as for me, I have nearly exhausted all my strength. You rushed out now, choosing what you thought was the perfect time and situation to do so, but the difference in our cultivation is far too great! Even though I am a dried up lamp I still have limitless methods to kill you! I am willing to abandon my demon slave and my Shadow Snake Sword, all to eliminate you! As long as I can kill you then everything I've lost can be recovered!"

Tian Mingzi's attack could be called meticulously calculated and prepared in advance. Although abandoning his demon slave that he had spent tens of thousands of years raising and Shadow his Snake Sword was an enormous loss, he didn't miss them too much because he knew that the secrets on Lin Ming's body far exceeded the value of those two!

Seeing the dazzling runes on the Shadow Snake Sword shine to the extreme as it began storing a massive explosive force, Lin Ming didn't panic at all. Rather, he sneered and said, "Tian Mingzi, are you really so sure that there is some heaven-shaking secret on my body that is enough to make up for everything you've lost? Since that's the case, let me show you just what my secret is!"

As Lin Ming spoke, his momentum rose beyond description, as if he was ready to wield the heavens and earth, dominating all of existence.

Tian Mingzi was shocked as he heard this. Lin Ming really did have a heaven-shaking secret on him… just what could it be!?

He stared with eyes wide open, his concentration completely focused. At the same time, he also stimulated the energy within the Shadow Snake Sword to explode! He wasn't so stupid that he would miss the best chance to attack just so he could see what Lin Ming's secret was!

"Could it be the inheritance of a True Divinity level character?"

Tian Mingzi instantly thought. In his opinion, he had thought that in front of Lin Ming's current achievements, even the inheritances of peak Empyreans weren't anything at all. In the entire Divine Realm, there were over a handful of peak Empyreans, and this was even more when the dead were included!

With so many peak Empyrean descendants, not a single one of them was able to compare to Lin Ming.

In that moment, Lin Ming sunk his thoughts into his inner world. A vast and boundless aura of the Great Dao surged out from Lin Ming's body, as if everything had returned to the most primal era. With Lin Ming's inner world as the core, a black and mystical vortex appeared!

"Power of the heavens' stars, gather unto my body, Purple Temple Dao Palace!"

Lin Ming roared out. Within his inner world, a magnificent Dao Palace shining with glory appeared. In that moment, the vault of Bai Qi's tomb seemed to vanish, replaced with an endless starry sky!

Endless starlight gathered into a vast river of sparkling lights, all of it flowing into Lin Ming's inner world!

Lin Ming's strength began to wildly grow!

And, all of this crazily growing strength was poured into a gray cube within Lin Ming's inner world!

"Reveal yourself, Divine Crystal Magic Cube!"

Lin Ming had stepped onto the peak of the early Divine Lord realm and had also broken into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. With his dragon and phoenix blood energy brought into harmony, on this day he had finally obtained the ability to galvanize the Magic Cube's strength!

When Mo Eversnow had been a half-step World King she had also been able to do this because her talent was outstanding and her strength far surpassed that of all other half-step World Kings. At that time, Mo Eversnow had the ability to stimulate the Magic Cube. Of course, wanting to activate its powers to the max still required her to burn her soul to do so. And now Lin Ming's strength was no weaker than that of Mo Eversnow in the past!

The ash gray cube floated out from Lin Ming's inner world, slowly revolving in the skies. Mysterious runes appeared all over its surface. With a single glance, one could feel their soul be trapped, forever unable to leave!

It was like this ash gray cube contained a universe unto itself, limitless, boundless, so vast that even a True Divinity could not explore its depths!

"This is… this is…!??"

As the Magic Cube appeared, Xiao Moxian had no reaction. As for Tian Mingzi, he was shocked beyond all description. A maddening demented light colored his complexion!

"Magic Cube! The Divine Crystal Magic Cube! How could it possibly… how could it possibly be in your hands! You… you… you… you actually…"

Tian Mingzi pointed a shaking finger towards Lin Ming, his words filled with anger, shock, fear!

This was an object he had waged war for, something he had spent a massive amount of effort to take, but Lin Ming had unexpectedly obtained it! He had overthrown the Verdant Feather Holy Lands for this item alone. He had killed the old World King of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands and had hunted their Saintess to her death, and yet all of his efforts had become a gift to Lin Ming!

How could he not be angry about this!?

“I knew it! I knew that bitch Mo Eversnow hadn’t yet died! If you picked up the Magic Cube then you must have seen that whore!”

Tian Mingzi’s expression wildly shook, as if he were losing his mind. To see Tian Mingzi lose his calm like this surprised even Xiao Moxian. Just what was that black cube? Why would Tian Mingzi have such a great response to it?

Chapter 1539 – Young Demon God

Chapter 1539 – Young Demon God

…

…

…

Of the three wondrous divine tools of the universe, Xiao Moxian only knew the legends of the Grandmist Spirit Bead. This was because the Good Fortune Saint Son had deliberately displayed it to the world. As for the Magic Cube and Purple Card, Xiao Moxian didn't know about them at all. There was no consensus on their names either. Throughout the different epochs and different universes, they had taken different names.

Even though Lin Ming and Tian Mingzi had repeatedly used the term Magic Cube, Xiao Moxian had no idea what they were referring to.

"Heart demon cage, shatter!"

Lin Ming shouted out loud. The Magic Cube raised a vortex of energy that spun around like a saw. The great heart demon web formed by the demon slave was torn apart by the Magic Cube!

"Uwoooo!"

The moment the demon slave completely died, it sent out a lung-retching scream. However, it could not change its fate of being swallowed up by the Magic Cube. It turned into a gray flow of energy that was gathered into the Magic Cube.

The demon slave was originally a heart demon life form. Heart demons, souls, thoughts, wills – all of these were under the category of divine within the trifecta of essence, energy and divine, thus it was utterly suppressed by the Magic Cube!

To use the Magic Cube to swallow up the demon slave was far too simple!

The ash gray Magic Cube revolved in Lin Ming's palm. Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian instantly regained their freedom to move; all of the heart demon phantoms and endless illusions around them immediately disappeared!

In that instant, Tian Mingzi's complexion became horrendously ugly. His entire body shook with rage, so angry that his eyes nearly popped out of their sockets.

"So that's how it is! I finally see! I never imagined this was possible! To think that the Magic Cube was obtained by you of all people, hahaha! How ironic. For 50,000 years i've done everything in my power to secretly search for this object that now lies in your hand, and yet I never knew any of this!"

Tian Mingzi felt nothing but utter hate and loathing in his heart! If he had known that the Magic Cube was in Lin Ming's possession then how wonderful would it have been if he had killed Lin Ming when he was still small and weak!

"Tian Mingzi, you are finished! Today I shall kill you, for myself, and also for the millions of souls that died for the Verdant Feather Holy Lands!"

Lin Ming gathered all of his strength, pouring every last ounce into the Magic Cube!

For a time, a trillion stars seemed to extinguish themselves as the world fell into a dark, ash gray space. Tian Mingzi felt a horrifying strength break into his body and lock onto his soul!

The Magic Cube was a divine tool of the soul. When Lin Ming was still weak the Magic Cube was only able to serve as a passive defense. When something broke into his spiritual sea and tried to seize his body, only then would the Magic Cube counterattack on its own.

But now, with Lin Ming's strength having risen to the Divine Lord realm, he was able to stimulate the movement of the Magic Cube. This was completely different from the past. The Magic Cube could be controlled by Lin Ming and used to attack the enemy. Even if the enemy's soul was protected by their mortal body, their soul would still be impacted by the Magic Cube!

In this wild and manic soul storm, Tian Mingzi felt his own soul shake life a leaf in a storm, almost torn from his body in the next moment!

For a time, he found it hard to control the Shadow Snake Sword to make it explode! Moreover, the key problem was that now with the web of the demon slave shattered by Lin Ming, even if the Shadow Snake Sword were to explode, Lin Ming would still be able to block it!

If so, not only would he not be able to injure Lin Ming but he would have lost his own Empyrean spirit treasure in vain!

And at this moment, Lin Ming rushed towards Tian Mingzi like a tiger descending the mountain. Strength erupted from his body as the Purple Temple Dao Palace gathered the power of the heavens' stars. Lin Ming grasped his Phoenix Blood Spear and thrust right towards Tian Mingzi's head!

"Asura Heavenly Dao, Demon Extermination!"

After Lin Ming opened the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace he used another technique within the Asura Sutra. This was a body transformation martial skill, and now with the support of the heavens' stars, Lin Ming was strong enough to use it!

Seeing Lin Ming's spear thrust towards him and even crushing the surrounding space, Tian Mingzi's complexion greatly changed. He recalled the Shadow Snake Sword, and without a thought to the danger to his life, he forced out another mouthful of blood essence and spat it on the Shadow Snake Sword. After the Shadow Snake Sword absorbed this blood essence it turned a deep shade of reddish black.

A demonic wind howled, like 10,000 grieving ghosts were crying out for justice!

"Even if you have the Magic Cube, so what!? In the past, Mo Eversnow couldn't kill me even when she burnt her soul, and now my strength cannot be compared to how I was 50,000 years ago!"

Tian Mingzi wildly roared. He grasped his Shadow Snake Sword and cut towards Lin Ming!

This was Tian Mingzi's strongest strike, one he made by overdrawing his life!

Facing this sword, Lin Ming's expression was indifferent. 15 billion jins of strength erupted from his body. Supported by his arcane techniques, his strength rose again to the power of five dragons!

Bang!

A dreadful sonic explosion blew up like a detonating star. The world collapsed all around them. Tian Mingzi felt an indescribably great strength ram into his body, causing his palm to shake, his arm to go numb and the Shadow Snake Sword to fly away from his hand!

"What!?"

Tian Mingzi cried out, inexplicably shocked. Although he had speculated that Lin Ming's strength had risen after opening the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, he never imagined it would be to such a degree. Lin Ming's strike could even shatter a planet!

With his bodily strength alone, Lin Ming had reached such a terrifying boundary. And when supported by his true essence and astral essence, anyone that faced Lin Ming would feel as if they were facing an ancient grand dragon in human form!

"Die!"

Lin Ming roared. He gripped his spear, aiming it at Tian Mingzi's head and bringing it smashing down!

Tian Mingzi desperately revolved the Space Laws to avoid this spear strike. But in that time, the gargantuan strength had already caused space to collapse, making the Space Laws unusable!

Tian Mingzi stared helplessly on as this unbelievably terrifying spear rushed towards his own head!

Time seemed to slow down. A strong sense of despair and unwillingness swelled up within Tian Mingzi's heart!

Lin Ming was far too strong. After breaking into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, he could honestly and openly face off against a true World King! In addition, with the Magic Cube supporting him, his strength could already allow him to rule his own domain in the Divine Realm! He was no longer a young genius but an overlord!

In this life or death moment, Tian Mingzi twisted his head to the side. But then, Lin Ming's spear still crashed into his right shoulder.

Kacha!

With a loud explosive sound, the terrifying strength of five dragons fell onto Tian Mingzi's body like an unending waterfall. His protective true essence shattered and all the bones in his entire right side directly shattered like twigs. His organs burst open and blood and flesh splashed outwards!

Lin Ming's spear had forcefully torn open half of Tian Mingzi's body, tearing off his right lung and nearly severing him in two!

In that moment, Tian Mingzi's pupils lost their focus. The right half of his body drooped down and his hand was left hanging, with blood gushing out of him!

Even in ordinary times, such a heavy wound would nearly kill Tian Mingzi. This was not a strike that a Great World King could afford to take.

Much less, Tian Mingzi was in an almost exhausted state right now without much energy left. Before this he had repeatedly forced out his blood essence to use his secret techniques. And now, receiving such a heavy wound nearly destroyed his life source.

A person's life source was their very foundation. Once it was destroyed it was nearly impossible to continue living. Even a transcendent divine pill would only be able to extend their lifespan a little bit. Sooner, and not later, death would come to claim them.

"You..."

Tian Mingzi humorlessly chuckled, vomiting blood the entire time. A year ago he had rushed into God Burying Ridge with great ambitions in his mind. With his Great World King cultivation, he hunted down the late Divine Transformation Lin Ming. But, he never imagined that this event which should have been his life's greatest lucky chance would actually lead to his current fate!

All of those who hunted Lin Ming, whether they were World Kings or half-step Empyreans, were killed off by Lin Ming, one at a time!

Not just that, but he possessed the Magic Cube and the inheritances of numerous powerhouses. Such a character was as terrifying as a true demon god!

However, no one would know about any of this because everyone who hunted after him had died! He would become a freakish monster that hid in the shadows of the juniors, an existence whose strength already surpassed the giants of the older generation!

Puff!

Tian Mingzi spat out a mouthful of blood. He wanted to say something but all that came out from between his lips was more and more blood.

And at this time, Lin Ming punched out with his fist, smashing into Tian Mingzi's throat!

The trillion true essence threads of strength training's flow like silk instantly erupted in Tian Mingzi's throat, turning his spine into nothing but muddied flesh!

Tian Mingzi's head fell down at an awkward angle. An unwilling and sad smile still hung on his lips, making him look like a macabre puppet.

Then, Lin Ming pulled out the Phoenix Blood Spear and swept it out, cutting off Tian Mingzi's head.

A fierce and ambitious individual, one who had lived for 100,000 years, one who was soon about to enter the half-step Empyrean realm, had been killed by Lin Ming like this. His head bounced on the ground like a rubber ball, his eyes perfectly round, dead with everlasting regrets.

Chapter 1540 – The Dust Settles

Chapter 1540 – The Dust Settles

…

…

…

Seeing Tian Mingzi's head roll to the ground, Xiao Moxian still felt that all of this was unreal. She recalled the last 10 years she had spent with Lin Ming, experiencing all sorts of drastic changes and upheavals, ups and downs that they crossed through with repeated life or death dangers. Finally, their strength rose by a large degree and they slowly killed those that had hunted them down. All of this was like an eternal dream.

Xiao Moxian even felt that these last 10 years were far more rich and passionate than all her life experiences before that. All of those dangers and hopes had become unforgettable memories etched into her bones.

And throughout all of these dangers, Xiao Moxian had only played a supporting role. But even so, she had obtained a massive harvest. It wasn't just her cultivation and strength that had risen, but her mentality and will had evolved.

Looking at Lin Ming once more, he was the one who had helped lead her through all of this. In terms of how his mentality and strength had been a steady constant this entire time, there was no need to mention it.

Xiao Moxian could approximately guess that most of Lin Ming's near 60 years of life had passed in such an environment. He had grown to where he was by experiencing endless adventures, battles, and life or death slaughters.

Xiao Moxian suddenly thought that it wasn't strange for Lin Ming to have such achievements at his young age.

Lin Ming was only a martial artist from the lower realms and as he trained in martial arts he had to overcome all sorts of unfavorable conditions. Compared with the Empyrean descendants of the Divine Realm, Lin Ming was no different from an ant to an immortal being. However, it was these layers upon layers of difficulties that led to Lin Ming's myth. Lin Ming's experiences and his near 60 years of hardships were his most precious treasures! A treasure sword was sharpened through tempering and the fragrance of a plum blossom came with the freezing cold. All of these things that Lin Ming experienced were far from what any Empyrean descendant could compare with.

For instance, in these last ten years, if it weren't Lin Ming who had undergone these experiences but some ordinary Empyrean descendant, even if their strength was the same as his they would have died countless times already.

Of course, Xiao Moxian was also well aware that Lin Ming's current achievements were impossible without lucky chances and fortuitous encounters. She immediately remembered the sudden response that Tian Mingzi had displayed after seeing the Magic Cube.

Just what was that thing? Xiao Moxian was suddenly filled with curiosity.

At this time, Lin Ming had walked near Tian Mingzi's corpse. He took Tian Mingzi's spatial ring and then formed seals with his hands, summoning a vicious-looking dao diagram to his front.

"Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!"

The Asura Heavenly Dao was not some orthodox cultivation method. The Asura Road Master's life was also filled with slaughter and death. While this Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel could be used to attack an enemy, it could also be used to absorb an enemy's essence energy for oneself.

Then, all of the essence energy in Tian Mingzi's body was drawn out by the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

Even Ash Murder's essence energy that had scattered into the air after his death was gathered by the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

These essence energies were Tian Mingzi and Ash Murder's life essence. If Lin Ming didn't gather them with the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, then after several tens of thousands of years, these essence energies sealed within Bai Qi's tomb would slowly evolve into existences without any thoughts of their own. They would only be ghosts that knew to swallow others. In many mystic realms, these types of ghosts would be a source of grave danger.

Now that Lin Ming had sealed all of this essence energy into the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, this situation naturally wouldn't happen.

"Essence energy of all living beings, be used by me!"

Lin Ming flicked his finger and the essence energy within the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel rerouted towards the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone!

Drawn out essence energy was more suitable to cultivate avatars. If it were Lin Ming's true self then although absorbing these essence energies could increase the cultivation of his body, too much would leave behind hidden dangers within him. But, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was nourished from the infinite essence energy gathered by the God Beast Tomb array formation, thus there was no need to be careful with it.

Hu - !

In that instant, all of the essence energy poured into the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone. The Essence Spirit Embryo Stone's entire body emitted crackling sounds as its muscles and organs wriggled about. All of this blood vitality was completely absorbed by it, and the strength and astral essence within the avatar continued to grow!

The body of the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was similar to the saints'. In other words, it was an existence especially bred for body transformation.

Its cultivation method was also similar to the saints'. If one had to describe the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone's cultivation base, then using the saint race's Saint Lord boundary was more appropriate.

And after absorbing the essence energy of a Great World King and a half-step Empyrean, the astral essence within the avatar wildly circulated through its body, joining with the energy that was already within it to begin with. Without any hindrance, its cultivation rose by a small boundary.

This was something Lin Ming already expected.

The Essence Spirit Embryo Stone could easily rise in cultivation boundaries. Let alone a small boundary in the Saint Lord realm, there wouldn't be a bottleneck even when entering the Holy Lord realm from the Saint Lord realm.

The only restriction to the avatar's cultivation was Lin Ming's own cultivation. In other words, if Lin Ming's own cultivation was lacking then the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone would encounter a bottleneck. Moreover, if Lin Ming was much weaker than his avatar then he simply wouldn't have the strength to control the much stronger Essence Spirit Embryo Stone.

Lin Ming let out a long sigh of relief as he finished. For Tian Mingzi and Ash Murder's essence energy to be used by him after their death, they had truly died miserable.

"Lin Ming!"

Just as Lin Ming finished, Xiao Moxian blinked over and looked towards Lin Ming.

As Lin Ming met her playful eyes, his thoughts stirred. He was able to approximately guess what she was thinking of. He laughed, saying, "You want to ask me what the Magic Cube is, right?"

“What I want to know is… just what sort of thing allowed my lover to grow from a common martial artist from the lower realms into the number one talent of his race?” Xiao Moxian said, her eyes filled with curiosity. But, she suddenly changed the topic and said a bit contradictorily, “But, I don’t think you should tell me… this should be your life’s greatest secret, and if you tell me…”

Xiao Moxian dragged out her words, looking at Lin Ming all the while.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. Then, he straightened up and solemnly said, “This is indeed my greatest secret. But, the reason I was able to reach this step is not just the Magic Cube. The Magic Cube accompanied me during my youth when I first stepped on the road of martial arts and helped me traverse that most difficult period of my early road.

“Since I was willing to take out the Magic Cube during my battle with Tian Mingzi, I have no intentions of hiding the truth from you. Moreover, during this adventure through the Asura Road, I will slowly gain the power to protect the Magic Cube!”

Lin Ming’s current strength was high enough that he could defeat an ordinary World King. But, his trial through the Asura Road had yet to end. Lin Ming intended to continue to train here until he reached at least the late Divine Lord realm or half-step Holy Lord. Perhaps he would even wait until he broke through to the Holy Lord realm and was able to kill a Great World King before considering leaving.

At that time, Lin Ming would be able to fully refine the Primordius Gate and fully control Primordius Heavenly Palace. Then, by relying on this Empyrean spirit treasure, even if an Empyrean were to chase after him they still might not be able to kill him.

Only in that state would Lin Ming truly be able to freely wander the Divine Realm and display his skills in the upcoming great calamity!

Lin Ming raised his right hand and an ash gray cube floated into his palm, slowly revolving around, filled with a mystical aura.

He said, “Xian’er, this is the Magic Cube. I accidently obtained it when I was 15 years old, in a restaurant. At the time, I was working for the restaurant and –”

As Lin Ming was speaking, Xiao Moxian suddenly covered his mouth with her hand.

She grinned, “You don’t need to say anything. If you trust me enough to tell me your greatest secret, I am more than satisfied with that. Although I am curious, I don’t really need to know.

“When we leave the Asura Road I will have to return to Demondawn Heavenly Palace. If my parents, grandfather, or the Monster Emperor find out about what happened between us, then they will become enraged… moreover, there is my engagement with the Good Fortune Saint Son. If this matter were to become a problem then I would be confined to my quarters and not even the heavens know what would happen after that. If I know the secrets of your Magic Cube, then even if I don’t willingly reveal them, that doesn’t mean someone won’t use an arcane technique to learn information about you from me…”

Xiao Moxian had already considered this for a long time. As Lin Ming listened to this, he was silent for a while. “You… do you plan on returning to the monster race and demon race no matter what?”

If Xiao Moxian didn’t return to the monster and demon races and instead stayed within Lin Ming’s inner world, then no one would know about it.

Xiao Moxian lightly sighed. She nodded, “Yes. I will return, because they are my people…”

Xiao Moxian was a very independent and free-thinking woman. She was bold and brave, and if she favored something then she would recklessly pursue it no matter what others thought or said.

But at the same time, she would not degenerate into becoming a servile dependent of any man. She had her own martial art’s goal, her own pursuits, and her own faith in herself.

Just like Lin Ming who would never betray humanity, Xiao Moxian would not discard her own race. Although the future was filled with unknowns and uncertainties, she wouldn’t evade her future but face it head on.

“I understand.” Lin Ming gently embraced Xiao Moxian. “Let’s leave this place.”

Chapter 1541 – Heading Deeper Into the Asura Road

Chapter 1541 – Heading Deeper Into the Asura Road

…

…

…

In the depths of the Great Desolate there was a virgin forest that was untainted by human hands. These trees had been here for hundreds of thousands of years, and because these trees originated from ancient breeds they grew much larger. So large that dozens of people together couldn’t wrap their hands around them. Their crowns pierced thousands of feet high, straight into the skies, and their large and vibrant leaves were like clouds that blocked out the sun.

In this wild forest, there was a keening wolf howl that impacted into the heavens. All of the birds and beasts in the woods were startled by this howl and fled in droves.

Bang!

With an explosion of energy a shockwave rose up. A great black wolf as large as an elephant tumbled through the air and smashed into a large tree, causing an avalanche of leaves to be shaken off.

The trees in this wild forest were all spiritual trees. Their dense trunks were more like pillars of divine iron and as this great black wolf crashed into the tree trunk it dizzily bounced off and landed in the deep foliage.

“I’ve got you!”

With a clear cry, a black-clothed girl rushed through the woods like a black butterfly, arriving right in front of the great black wolf in just several blinks of the eye. She raised a black badge she had prepared and pushed it in between the great wolf's eyebrows.

In the next moment, the great black wolf's body shrunk as if it were being forced down by some strange energy. Its body became smaller and smaller, melting and pouring away into that black badge. Finally, that wolf's massive body was absorbed by the black badge without anything remaining.

Soon after, the black badge in this girl's hand turned deep blue. It slowly floated in the air, exuding a mysterious charm.

This black-clothed girl was Xiao Moxian and the mission badge in her hand was one she obtained in Heavendevil City.

"Blue soul level god rune – Darkness Demon Wolf, it's mine now!"

The darkness demon wolf wasn't a true life form but an existence that evolved from the energy of the Asura Road, similar to the nightmare beats in the Divine Dream World. As long as one could kill it then one could use a mission badge to absorb it and then transform it into a god rune.

Xiao Moxian flicked her fingers and this rune disappeared into her body, vanishing from sight.

Over half a year had passed since the battle with Tian Mingzi. During this time period, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had returned to Heavendevil City and bought up all the mission badges that were related to the final smelting trial. Then, they had slowly completed these missions, transforming them into god runes.

As for Lin Ming's servant Soulwhite, he had been kept in Heavendevil City. Lin Ming didn't need him accompanying him anymore.

Soulwhite wasn't too useful to Lin Ming now. Soulwhite had spent most of his life out in the periphery of the Asura Road and had little to no understandings of what happened deep in the Great Desolate or deeper in the Asura Road. Still, Lin Ming didn't undo the slave seal in his body yet in order to prevent him from leaking information and causing trouble.

"We've just about completed all the missions in the Great Desolate. If we go 30,000 miles east then there will be a transmission array. We can take that transmission array to reach the middle-rear sections of the Asura Road."

At this time, Lin Ming emerged from the woods. Most of the god runes in the Great Desolate had been obtained by the both of them.

In fact, according to what Soulwhite said, if the two of them formed a team to enter the final smelting trial they would only need to collect a single set of runes; the second set would only be a spare.

"Are we finally going to the middle-rear sections of the Asura Road?" Xiao Moxian asked, excitedly tracing her chin. The middle-rear section of the Asura Road was also the so-called 'inner' Asura Road. The final smelting trial was also located in the inner Asura Road. After the end of the final trial, she and Lin Ming would both return to the Divine Realm and that would be the time when they would have thoroughly completed the Asura Road trial.

A 30,000 mile distance wasn't far away to Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian. If they flew, it would only take them several quarter hours to cover the distance. But this time, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian spent almost two months walking the distance.

During these two months, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were constantly in battle.

More than half a year ago, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had just broken through their boundaries and their strengths had dramatically risen. But, because their strength rose too quickly their foundations weren't too solid.

For instance, to combine the seventh level Concept of the Fire laws with his actual combat skills or save energy within their inner world, all of this required time.

But, Lin Ming wasn't worried. He had several dozen years to fully accomplish all of this.

....

The Great Desolate was a far-reaching land with broad, sweeping borders. In the deepest depths of the Great Desolate there were said to be ancient God Beasts. In addition to the convoluted space-time, it was an extremely complex environment. Even Empyreans shrunk back upon venturing too far.

The Great Desolate was also the dividing line between the outer Asura Road and the inner Asura Road. If a trial challenger wanted to pass deeper into the Asura Road, they could not travel through the Great Desolate and could only take one of the several large-scale transmission arrays that ferried people back and forth.

On the eastern side of the Great Desolate there was a city. This city wasn't too large and was surrounded by the Great Desolate; it could be considered far away from all else. All those that travelled through this city were peak masters and most of them were trial challengers that needed to travel into the inner sections of the Asura Road.

"Pardon me, is this the transmission array to enter deeper into the Asura Road?"

The transmission array guard heard a simple and indifferent question. The one who spoke had a voice filled with energy.

As he turned he could see a young man and woman standing behind him. These two youths had extraordinary looks that brightened the eyes, but one could see from their worn out clothes that they had experienced a long and arduous journey to arrive here.

Those people that could travel through the Great Desolate on foot and arrive at the transmission array were without a doubt peak masters.

"Yes."

The guard respectfully replied, no showing any disdain because of the young age of these two. From these two, especially the black-clothed man, he could feel a faintly roiling killing intent. This sort of killing intent could only be developed through long periods of life or death slaughters.

“We’re planning on going deeper in.” The black-clothed youth said. This black-clothed youth was naturally Lin Ming, who had crossed halfway through the Great Desolate to arrive here.

“Mm… alright. But, I want to caution you two: this transmission array can only go one way. In other words, it can deliver you deeper into the Asura Road. If you want to return you will have to rely on other methods to do so.”

The guard earnestly said. Lin Ming was already aware of this point. Once a trial challenger entered deeper into the Asura Road, if they wanted to leave they would have to satisfy certain conditions, and, the conditions in the inner Asura Road were far more severe than those on the periphery. Many people were unable to accomplish these conditions and could only continue living on in the Asura Road for the rest of their lives. Of course, to certain people, this wasn’t necessarily bad. Many masters preferred the dangers of the Asura Road where death and slaughter hid around every corner.

The light of the transmission array shined like a blazing sun. in the next moment, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian vanished together with other trial challengers from the Great Desolate. They passed through the void and truly entered the Asura Road.

Chapter 1542 – Divine Rune City

Chapter 1542 – Divine Rune City

…

…

…

A dark wind howled through the boundless land. Lin Ming soon left the dizzying spatial transmission and found himself in the center of a vast wilderness, knee deep in grass. What surprised Lin Ming was that when they left it had been daytime, but here was a dark night, with a depressing gloom covering the world, hiding all light.

This pitch black environment immediately raised Lin Ming's guard. He spread out his sense and didn't discover any vicious beasts, only some other trial challengers that had come here with him and Xiao Moxian.

Because the Asura Road was far too long, it took an exorbitant amount of energy to open a transmission channel from the outer Asura Road to the inner Asura Road. Thus they would only start the transmission array once dozens of people had gathered.

The trial challengers that arrived here with Lin Ming rose up one after another. Without a word, many of them launched their movement techniques and flew away. Some people began discussing amongst themselves; they were clearly in groups and were discussing their next step after arriving here. The two that caught Lin Ming's eye was a young-looking man and woman not too far away.

At this time, the man and woman had taken out a compass as if they were investigating something.

"Spiritas…"

Lin Ming's eyebrows slightly arched up. The skin of these two shined with a faintly shimmering light; this was a sign of the soul race.

The body of the spiritas contained an extremely rich soul energy. If they didn't deliberately conceal the light they emitted, they would glow extremely beautifully. In the dark of night, they would be like enchanting illusions.

This young spiritas pair had outstanding looks and their foundation was extremely solid. One could instantly sense they were geniuses amongst their generation.

However, their cultivation wasn't too high. In Lin Ming's opinion, their cultivation was just enough to enter the Great Desolate, but it seemed a bit forced for them to come to the inner Asura Road. This was true even if they could jump ranks to fight.

At this time, the compass in their hands lit up. The young man's face brightened and he happily said with a sound transmission, "Big Sister, we're in luck this time. It seems that we were right when we thought that the transmission array to the inner Asura Road would bring us to a random location. Fortunately for us, we didn't land in some place with vicious beasts and our arrival area is also extremely safe and near Divine Rune City. If we hurry along we should be able to arrive in three days."

From their words it was clear that these two spiritas youths were brother and sister. But at this moment, as the older sister heard her little brother speak, she humorlessly said, "What is so good about this place. Although we're near Divine Rune City there is still a wild mountain range separating us. With our strength, wanting to travel through that mountain range will be too difficult, and if we must go around it that will make our journey far longer and we might also encounter other dangers..."

The young spiritas girl said, her eyebrows pressed together in a frown.

Their cultivation was indeed not high. Wanting to travel through the inner Asura Road was just barely manageable already.

As the two of them were speaking, most of the other martial artists had flown away. The only ones remaining were Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, who had yet to leave.

The young spiritas girl looked over at Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian for a while. Then, the light in her eyes changed and she greeted them, “Hey there, how do you do.”

Lin Ming looked back at the young spiritas girl, nodding his head in response.

“Do you two not know where you want to go?” The trial challengers hadn’t stayed in this grasslands for a long time; those that knew where their destination was had already left, leaving only Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian idling about. From this, one could see that it was likely they were unfamiliar with the area and didn’t know where to go.

Lin Ming didn’t reply; this was considered his tacit agreement.

“May I ask, would you two like to accompany us to Divine Rune City? Divine Rune City is the largest city in the surrounding area, and in terms of influence even an Empyrean Holy Land is inferior to Divine Rune City! If you go to Divine Rune City, whether it is supplies or missions, it is a very good place to go.”

Divine Rune City?

Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred. Was this related to divine runic technique?

He remembered that just when he defeated Soulwhite and he was begging for his life, Soulwhite had said that he was skilled in alchemy and inscription so taking him in as a slave would be far more useful than killing him.

And in the Asura Road, a higher level inscription master wasn’t called an inscription master but a divine runic master.

In the Divine Realm that was ruled by humanity, when a martial artist reached an extremely high boundary, the inscription arts weren’t much useful to them anymore. But, this was different in the Asura Road. According to what Soulwhite had said, in the Asura

Road, god runes and inscription could be combined together in a wondrous evolution, creating an entirely different form of inscription altogether. This was why divine runic masters and alchemists had an extremely high status in the Asura Road.

And, the best alchemists and divine runic masters in the Asura Road were all spiritas. This was because the spiritas all possessed a formidable soul force that made them perfectly suited to studying alchemy and divine runic technique. When this was combined with the long inheritance of the soul race, they were several times greater than all the other races in these two skills!

This Divine Rune City, with its name, was most likely related to this.

“Divine Rune City is a city of divine runic masters?” Lin Ming asked after thinking for a moment.

“That’s right. Several hundred million years ago, many top divine runic masters of the Asura Road gathered together to form a divine runic association. At the time, the city they chose as their headquarters was quite ordinary, but as time passed and they took in more and more divine runic masters, growing all the while, they slowly had martial artists from all over coming to them, seeking help. After that, the city eventually developed into the current Divine Rune City. Not only are there divine runic masters but also a massive number of alchemists, refiners, and top masters from all around. Me and my little brother came to the inner Asura Road in order to go to Divine Rune City and experience the divine runic technique there and also participate in an assessment or competition of the Divine Runic Masters Association. If we’re lucky, we might be able to apprentice ourselves to someone there…”

The young spiritas girl knew she was lacking in strength so she thought to join with others. And if she were to accompany others, it was best to form trust with them, thus she had told Lin Ming her goal in going to Divine Rune City. Lin Ming also understood why these two came to the inner Asura Road even if their cultivations were lacking.

Lin Ming soon understood the whole city. This brother and sister believed that with their status as divine runic masters, they would be able to obtain sufficient protection in Divine Rune City. The only danger for them would be the road to Divine Rune City, thus they had invited Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian to travel together with them.

As for Lin Ming, when he was at the outer Asura Road he had Soulwhite as a guide. But now that he was in the inner Asura Road, he was unfamiliar with the people and places here, and he didn't even know where he needed to go to obtain missions. If he could find a city and inquire into some information then that would naturally be the best choice for him.

And, this Divine Rune City interested Lin Ming very much, because Lin Ming was also once an inscription master.

In the past, when Lin Ming first stepped onto his road of martial arts, in his weakest moments he had relied on inscription technique to gain the training resources he needed to overcome this most difficult period.

But after that, as Lin Ming's strength rose, his inscription technique could no longer follow the footsteps of his cultivation. Even so, Lin Ming always held a certain sentimental feeling towards inscription arts.

He looked towards Xiao Moxian and said with a sound transmission, "What do you think about taking a trip to Divine Rune City?"

Xiao Moxian said, "It's up to you. I'll follow where you go."

"Then we're going to Divine Rune City!" Lin Ming decided. Then, he agreed to the young spiritas girl's offer.

The spiritas siblings were overjoyed. Although they could faintly feel that Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had relatively ordinary cultivations, they were still stronger than the two of them. Moreover, there was strength in numbers. With the four of them, crossing the wild mountain range shouldn't be a problem, and in a worst case situation, if they met some sort of powerful vicious beast that they couldn't defeat, they would each still have a higher chance of surviving if they scattered and fled.

"My name is Yue Liuxing and this is my little brother Yue Qifeng." The spiritas girl introduced herself and her brother.

"I am Lin Ming and this is my wife Ji Xian'er."

Lin Ming didn't bother to hide his name. The Asura Road was far too large and there were also too many duplicate names. Moreover, he had already killed Tian Mingzi and Naqi, and the place where they died was in the extremely isolated tomb of Bai Qi. All of this had been meticulously cleaned up by Lin Ming so that no one would know about it, thus Lin Ming didn't fear anyone discovering his true identity.

Lin Ming had only casually introduced her, but Xiao Moxian felt a bit warmer as she heard this. Her cheeks flushed a little. In truth, she wasn't really considered Lin Ming's wife, and although the two of them had made love and dual cultivated, they had never held a marriage ceremony and the two of them were destined to part ways in the future. To describe their relationship as lovers was much more appropriate.

Along the way, Lin Ming continued chatting with Yue Liuxing, gaining a much higher understanding of Divine Rune City. In the city, all divine runic masters were divided into different ranks depending on their attainments in the divine runic arts. Every higher level required tests and there was also a corresponding competition.

As for the siblings, they were both geniuses in divine runic arts. Their goal in going to Divine Rune City, besides apprenticing themselves to someone, was also to compete in the many competitions. The prizes for these competitions were quite generous.

As they spoke, Yue Qifeng discovered that Lin Ming had some original opinions into divine runic arts. This surprised him. He asked, "Big Brother Lin Ming, do you understand the divine runic arts?"

Lin Ming was 10 years older than Yue Qifeng so Yue Qifeng had referred to Lin Ming as big brother.

Lin Ming smiled, “Barely. But, what I understand is inscription technique, and it’s just a little. It’s not comparable at all to your divine runic arts.”

Lin Ming’s understandings of inscription technique had come from the soul fragments in the Magic Cube. And in the past, the people that were killed by Mo Eversnow and had their souls sucked into the Magic Cube couldn’t be considered much anyway. They were all Tian Mingzi’s subordinates and their cultivations were Divine Lords or Holy Lords, without a single World King amongst them. If their inscription technique was placed in the lower realms then it would be marvelous without compare, but if placed in the Divine Realm, it wasn’t considered much at all.

Moreover, the inscription technique of the Divine Realm was cast far behind by the long legacy of the spiritas in the Asura Road. In the Divine Realm, a top character like an Empyrean wouldn’t study inscription technique because the value wasn’t too great.

But the divine runic arts of the Asura Road were different. According to what Soulwhite had said, the divine runic arts could display effects beyond belief.

Thus, Lin Ming was well aware that someone with his caliber of understanding was nothing when placed in Divine Rune City.

Chapter 1543 – The Qualifications to Enter the City

Chapter 1543 – The Qualifications to Enter the City

…

…

…

"The wild mountain range is in front of us!"

After the group traveled for around half a day, Yue Liuxing suddenly pointed towards a dark mountain that appeared before them.

"This is the most dangerous part of the road. We must join together and fight as one. There are many different types of vicious beasts, but I understand their weaknesses and the ways to fight the most vicious types. Listen to my directions in battle."

As Yue Liuxing reached the base of the mountain range she pulled out a jade slip. Recorded within this jade slip was the terrain of the mountain range as well as the distribution degree of dangerous vicious beasts scattered throughout it.

This surprised Lin Ming. According to most reasoning, the inner and outer Asura Road were nearly completely isolated from each other. He never imagined that these two siblings would have information on the inner Asura Road and in such an exhaustive manner that they even possessed a map of this mountain range detailing the distribution of vicious beasts.

"Our cultivation isn't high so we can only avoid as many danger zones as we can. However, there are some places we won't be able to avoid. For instance, this place here is the habitat of the giant blood eagle and we have to cross this area no matter what. The giant blood eagle has a bloodline connection to the ancient Roc, so it is an extremely dangerous place to be. If we meet one or two we should be able to deal with them but if we meet a group then we'll have no choice but to flee our separate ways and hope that the heavens smile down on us."

Yue Liuxing earnestly stated her precautions and possible tactics. Xiao Moxian rubbed her chin as she listened to this. It was unknown how the ancestors of the monster beasts obtained their God Beast bloodline, but these bloodlines could be passed on for multiple generations without weakening.

These kinds of vicious beasts were extremely nourishing, especially for mortals.

Xiao Moxian chuckled, whispering to herself, "It seems my Big Yellow will have something to eat. Although the God Beast bloodline purity of these beasts is low, there should be an effect if he eats many of them..."

"Mm? What did you say?" Yue Liuxing asked, distracted.

"Haha, it's nothing."

One hour later.

Woosh!

A sharp crackling sound howled through the air. A massive blood red eagle with a fleshy head emitted terrifying screams as Xiao Moxian's whip slashed over its body, breaking one of its wings.

Xiao Moxian's whip was like a cord of black lightning, nearly impossible to follow. Where it went, the void would sizzle, the piercing air penetrating through the ears!

As the group of four traveled all this way, Lin Ming hadn't done anything at all. Xiao Moxian personally cut down all the dangers that appeared.

Whether it was the giant blood eagle or any other type of vicious beast, all of them were cut down by Xiao Moxian like vegetables. Not even Yue Liuxing or Yue Qifeng were able to interfere.

“So fierce!”

The handsome and somewhat shy Yue Qifeng’s mouth turned into an O shape as he saw this splendid battle take place. His eyes shined as he looked at Xiao Moxian, clearly filled with awe and worship.

As for Yue Liuxing, this was completely unexpected. She never imagined that the two allies she pulled into her group would be so fierce. She originally thought that they would have to work together and pass through countless life or death dangers to travel through this mountain range, but what really happened was something completely different.

“Big Yellow, it's time to eat!”

As Xiao Moxian called out, there was a cheerful little roar as a small furry yellow dog rushed out from Xiao Moxian’s spirit beast bag like a tiny whirlwind. Big Yellow drooled as it hurtled towards the giant blood eagle, cleanly eating it away in just a few moments of time.

This left Yue Liuxing and her little brother dazed. They finally understood what Xiao Moxian had said by ‘It seems my Big Yellow will have something to eat now’.

“How can that little thing eat so much?”

Yue Qifeng felt this all to be unbelievable. She struggled to imagine how such a small body could eat so much.

“That beast that looks like a little yellow dog should be the girl’s contract beast. If that girl is so fierce then her contract beast likely isn’t ordinary either. Maybe it is some sort of desolate ancient vicious beast...”

Yue Liuxing murmured. If it was a desolate ancient vicious beast then she wouldn't be surprised by how much it ate.

Yue Liuxing's guess was more or less correct, however Big Yellow was not desolate ancient vicious beast but a Taotie God Beast. Although its bloodline was inferior to the bloodline purity of Lin Ming's Black Dragon, a God Beast was still a God Beast. This sort of gluttonous God Beast formed a separate world within its body. After growing up, it could even swallow a planet.

After seeing the little yellow dog cleanly eat up the vicious beast, Yue Liuxing's eyes turned to Lin Ming. To her, Lin Ming was filled with even more mysteries.

She could faintly feel that Xiao Moxian was following Lin Ming. If so, this meant that Lin Ming might even be stronger than Xiao Moxian!

She didn't know just where these two humans had come from. Their strength was strong to the point of being abnormal.

With Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming, the four of them reached Divine Rune City safely, without any accident at all.

Divine Rune City was the largest city in the surrounding 10 million miles. A massive number of divine runic masters, alchemists, and top martial arts masters were gathered here.

Such a city naturally had to have an imposing atmosphere. Lin Ming wouldn't be surprised if it had city walls as grand and tall as a mountain ridge.

However, the reality was that Divine Rune City had no city walls at all. Instead of city walls, it had a titanic large-scale defensive array formation!

This array formation also had the effect of gathering heaven and earth origin energy. Lin Ming could feel that the origin energy in the surrounding several hundred thousands of miles was being slowly gathered towards this array formation, finally settling near Divine

Rune City. This caused the heaven and earth origin energy here to be thick to the point of nearly condensing into liquid.

If one could cultivate here they would absolutely have astronomical results. Just this advantage alone was enough to have countless martial artists seek out this land.

Of course, this array formation needed a tremendous amount of energy to support it, otherwise it wouldn't activate. Even an Empyrean Holy Land would be overwhelmed with the task of supporting such a gargantuan array formation.

From this, it could be seen that this Divine Rune City was disgustingly wealthy!

However, this was also well within reason. Whether it was divine runic masters, alchemists, or refiners, all were rich characters amongst all martial artists. Lin Ming wholeheartedly pursued the martial path and thus didn't place much focus on these occupations, so he didn't have many interactions with these martial artists who focused on these secondary skills.

Lin Ming originally thought that entering a treasure land like Divine Rune City required a high entrance fee, and this entrance fee would naturally be used to maintain the activation of the array formation.

But, he didn't think that there would be no entrance fee at all. Rather, the city had extremely high standards for all martial artists entering.

As Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were about to enter the city, they were stopped by the city guard. These city guards had late Divine Lord realm cultivations. In a small Holy Land, Divine Lord martial artists could serve as outer court Elders, but in Divine Rune City, they could only serve as gate guards.

"Determine your city entrance qualifications!"

The voices of the city guards were indifferent, with a faintly superior aura to them. It had to be known that the guards of Divine Rune City were part of the Divine Runic Corps and thus they were treated extremely well. Their status was not low and not only was their strength extraordinary but they also had a considerable level of talents. There were many weak martial artists that wished to apply to become a guard for Divine Rune City but simply lacked the ability to do so.

“Me and my little brother are divine runic masters.”

Yue Liuxing said. She drew traces in the air, her fingertips leaving behind paths of energy that coalesced into beautiful runes. With a glance to Yue Qifeng, he also quickly followed suit.

As Lin Ming saw this, he recalled a scene from when he was 15 years old. When he had just obtained the Magic Cube, he had to go to the Seven Profound Martial House’s Zither Quarters to look up information about sky worm silk. But, because there were many beautiful women there, he had been mistaken by the elder senior sister there for some sort of sexual pervert who had gone to seek out advantages from the many beautiful women. The result was that Lin Ming had met Qin Xingxuan and had to prove that he was an inscription master, and the method he used was drawing an inscription symbol in the air.

At the time, Qin Xingxuan had been shocked by Lin Ming’s inscription technique. That was also the first time they met.

“Mm, your talent is satisfactory!” A city guard nodded, revealing a convinced expression. These two city guards were also spiritas and had an approximate understanding of the divine runic arts. They were able to see how talented Yue Qifeng and Yue Liuxing were.

“Then you fellows, you don’t seem to be divine runic masters…”

The city guards turned to Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, and upon seeing that they weren’t spiritas, realized that they likely weren’t divine runic masters. The talent of the other races in the divine runic arts simply couldn’t compare to those of the soul race, thus most of those from other races usually wouldn’t choose to become divine runic masters because no matter how hard they tried, it was far too hard for them to catch up to the talent of the spiritas.

“We aren’t.” Lin Ming didn’t count on drawing up some half-baked inscription runes to pass.

A city guard expectantly nodded. Then, he took out two god rune talismans from his spatial ring. These two god rune talismans turned into seals that sank into Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian’s body, casually wandering through them.

“What is this?” Lin Ming could feel no malice behind these runes thus he didn’t try to stop them, but he was still unhappy that these city guards investigated them so suddenly.

“It is to determine your cultivation and skeletal age. Although there is no fee to enter Divine Rune City, the standards for entering are extremely strict. Otherwise, just the rich heaven and earth origin energy here would have had the city bursting at the seams with martial artists! Those that can enter the city must either be talented geniuses, powerhouses, or divine runic masters, alchemists, or refining masters!

“Since you two aren’t powerhouses, divine runic masters, alchemists, or anything like that, you can only rely on your talent to enter, otherwise you cannot enter the city. We only allow the most extraordinary of individuals to enter!”

The city guard proudly said. Lin Ming was startled as he heard this. If they admitted only the most extraordinary of individuals then it wasn’t a surprise that Divine Rune City’s strength had developed to such a terrifying degree.

After the city guard finished, he looked at the results of the runes. From what he saw, he was left dumbfounded!

He never thought that the young man and woman standing in front of him were two monstrous geniuses!

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had youthful appearances, but the truth was that martial artists had many techniques to disguise their looks. It was hard to tell one’s age from appearances alone, but, these divine runes would not be mistaken; they could measure a person’s skeletal age to within a year.

“One has cultivated martial arts for over 40 years, and the other for more than 50 years… you…”

The city guard’s mouth fell open. To reach the Divine Lord realm at only 40-50 years was simply the talent of an abnormal freak! He had thought that his talent was good to begin with, but compared to this young man and woman in front of him, he was simply garbage.

Chapter 1544 – Lin Ming's Goal

Chapter 1544 – Lin Ming's Goal

…

…

…

"Do we have the qualifications to enter the city?"

"Yes, of course you do!" The city guard respectfully handed over the city tokens. In the 33 Heavens, because humanity had devolved in the past, their status wasn't too high in the Asura Road. If they went to some places it was likely they would be looked down upon and excluded by others. But in the Asura Road, strength stood above all. If one's talent reached a certain boundary then regardless of whether they were human or some other race they would be respected all the same.

The city guard suspected that Lin Ming was the successor of some great influence; he naturally couldn't offend such a person.

When Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian obtained the qualifications to enter the city, Yue Liuxing looked at them curiously. She had seen the amazed expressions of the city guard from the side of her eyes. Without a doubt, Lin Ming's strength and talent were far more terrifying than she had originally anticipated.

"We will be going to the Divine Runic Master Guild for the examination now, would you like to come and have a look?"

Originally, after entering Divine Rune City, the relationship between the two groups should have ended here. However, Yue Liuxing and Yue Qifeng were far too young and although they were proud of their talents in the divine runic arts, their actual combat strengths were somewhat lacking. If they could become friends with two powerhouses like Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian then that would give them many advantages.

"Mm, we'll come too." Lin Ming readily agreed. This startled Xiao Moxian. She said with a true essence sound transmission, "Since when did you enjoy joining in on the fun? Did you want to see how great the difference is between the inscription masters of the Divine Realm and the divine runic masters of the Asura Road?"

Lin Ming shook his head, "It's just convenient. The reason I want to go to the Divine Runic Master Guild is also the true reason why I came to Divine Rune City. I want to find the path of how to cultivate the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!"

To cultivate the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace required two essential factors. One was inheritances; in other words, cultivation method manuals! And second was resources, in other words pills and other materials!

In terms of cultivation methods, the Celestial Tyrant Manual that Lin Ming trained in mostly focused on the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, in particular the Gates of Life and Death. The Esoteric Immortality Pill for the Gate of Life and the Esoteric Mortality Pill for the Gate of Death were both found in the Celestial Tyrant Manual.

But in terms of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, the Celestial Tyrant Manual didn't have many records on it. Or, it was more accurate to say that these records had already been lost. When Mo Eversnow's grandfather obtained the Celestial Tyrant Manual in the ancient ruins where he also found the Magic Cube, it had been incomplete.

Thus, now that Lin Ming had broken through to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, he was at a loss as to how he should further continue.

The Asura Sutra First Volume also had body transformation cultivation methods. But, these methods were mostly focused on raising the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, and in terms of type, they were far closer to the saint race. There was a great difference between the Asura Sutra First Volume and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace that humanity cultivated.

Missing cultivation methods was one part, and pills and resources were another.

In the essence gathering system aspect, Lin Ming didn't have too high a need for pills. But in the body transformation system, it was impossible to continue without pills.

When Lin Ming first tried to complete Tempering Marrow, he had used up several thousand Heaven Opening Pills without accomplishing it! And to the relatively minor person that Lin Ming was back then, every Heaven Opening Pill was extremely precious. In the past, the Martial House Master of the Seven Profound Martial House, Qin Ziya, had been stranded at the peak Houtian realm for over 20 years, unable to break into the Xiantian realm because he didn't have a Heaven Opening Pill. That was how precious they were!

Tempering Marrow was divided into percentages, and the closer one reached to 100%, the more difficult it would become to continue. Lin Ming finally had to rely on the Shattered Demon Heart Crystal and only then was he able to forcefully lift his Tempering Marrow boundary to 60-70%. Finally, he had relied on the Nirvana Dragon Root he obtained in the Demon Emperor Palace to bring his Tempering Marrow to perfection.

Following that, when he opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, each gate was more difficult than the last. In cultivating the body transformation technique, Lin Ming had spent a massive amount of heavenly materials. Each heavenly material that Lin Ming used for his breakthroughs possessed a shocking value for that relative cultivation level, enough that martial artists several boundaries higher would be willing to engage in life or death battles for them!

Finally, when Lin Ming broke through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, that was also because he had accumulated resources to the peak. Not only did he have the support of the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence and the sealed energy from the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, he also needed Xiao Moxian's primordial yin blood.

With these three incomparably precious treasures together, only then did he accomplish a miracle and complete his breakthrough of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. From this alone,

one could see that walking down the road of body transformation was truly a heaven-defying path.

Lin Ming had only opened a single star, and there were still eight stars behind that. Thinking about it, he felt a bit powerless and frustrated. Even though Lin Ming had a firm heart of martial arts, it was still hard to not be bitter about it.

The following eight stars would inevitably require an astronomical amount of resources. Not just that, but looking for materials, looking for pill recipes, finding a master alchemist, all of these problems were enough to cause a grand headache!

"It would be great if I could become a divine runic master and alchemist..."

This thought flashed through Lin Ming's mind. However, whether it was the divine runic arts or alchemy, it wasn't something that could be learnt in one day. One had to study from the very start in order to be successful. Even though Lin Ming's perception was high, it would still be difficult for him.

Lin Ming could only take a step back and consider befriending some high rank divine runic masters and alchemists of Divine Rune City. If they had something they were interested in then he might be able to ask them to help him refine some pills or draw up some inscriptions.

However, any divine runic master or alchemist who could refine the pills for the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace would inevitably be a grandmaster. One didn't need to be a genius to know that all grandmaster level characters had long since joined great influences where they were worshipped and treated as living buddhas. Wanting to ask them for any sort of help without enough rewards was an impossible matter. And for the current Lin Ming, besides the Magic Cube, Primordius Gate, Primordius Heavenly Palace, and Black Dragon Egg, there was nothing he possessed which would be able to tempt these grandmasters. And Lin Ming would never barter with those items to begin with.

"Ah, this is really troublesome."

Lin Ming rubbed his temples. “Nine Stars of the Dao Palace pills, alchemists, as well as methods to train in the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, I wonder if we’ll be able to find any of these things in Divine Rune City.

Divine Rune City had a history of several hundred million years, and for this entire time they had gathered countless extraordinary individuals. This city was known as a place that could solve any matter in the aspect of pills or inscriptions. No matter how one thought about it, this was the easiest place to find ways to cultivate the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace or ancient pill recipes.

…………

In Divine Rune City, there was no need to ask where the Divine Runic Master Guild was. It was the most eye-catching as well as the highest construction in the entire city.

“That is the Divine Runic Master Guild.”

Yue Liuxing pointed at a divine pagoda in the center of the city that was several thousand feet high. From any corner of Divine Rune City, one could see this massive pagoda.

As they walked towards the tall pagoda, one could see Divine Lord and Holy Lord realm masters everywhere. Really, in this place where Holy Lords walked everywhere, it made one feel as if Divine Lords were as common as dogs. One would occasionally see those with lower cultivations, but these were all outstanding individuals of their level, all of them young elites. Just like the city guard had said, Divine Rune City only allowed the best to enter.

The descendants of elites, the apprentices of elites, they too tended to be elites. Gradually, Divine Rune City became a place where talented people gathered, like a growing den of dragons.

Thus, in the inner Asura Road, Divine Rune City was a particularly special existence. Although they weren’t a sect, they were a city that was united together. There was no other influence who wished to look to Divine Rune City for trouble.

The streets of Divine Rune City were lined with numerous shops. There were pill stores, weapon stores, inscription stores, and countless others.

Half of the shops here were part of the business complex of the Divine Runic Master Guild. Just the income from these shops alone reached an incalculable number, more than enough to continue supplying the great array formation of Divine Rune City.

Within Divine Rune City, fighting was banned and flying was prohibited. Those who violated the city rules would be severely punished. At the same time, there was an extremely strict hierarchical system in Divine Rune City. Here, high ranked divine runic masters could enjoy all sorts of privileges, and those that offended them would be captured and imprisoned. It was even possible that these divine runic masters would kill those who offended them and no one would stop them or mourn the deaths of those they killed.

Before arriving at Divine Rune Pagoda, Lin Ming could feel strange changes in the heaven and earth origin energy around him.

Lin Ming had already seen many places with rich heaven and earth origin energy. For instance, the heaven and earth origin energy of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace was so rich that it turned to strands of fog; this wasn’t strange at all. However, the heaven and earth origin energy around Divine Rune Pagoda wasn’t just rich, but the origin energy was faintly restrained by some sorts of Laws, forming an indescribably coordinated beauty. Lin Ming even discovered that as he approached closer to Divine Rune Pagoda, the heaven and earth origin energy around him began to spontaneously form runes, just like inscription runes. This scene shocked Lin Ming. The heaven and earth origin energy here was clearly condensing into inscription runes. From this, one could infer just what degree of magnificence the inscription technique of this Divine Rune Pagoda held!

Chapter 1545 – Information About the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace

Chapter 1545 – Information About the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace

…

…

…

For the surrounding ten miles around Divine Rune Pagoda, there wasn't a single building. The entire area was a massive square, and on this square were all sorts of martial arts vendors who were selling various goods. Some sold pills, some sold weapons, but of course, most of them sold inscriptions and divine runic inscriptions.

All of the stalls were well-organized.

Lin Ming cast out his sense and was able to approximately feel that in this 10 mile square trading market, there were around several tens of thousands of people.

These several tens of thousands of people were all outstanding individuals. Whether it was sellers or buyers, none of them were poor. In such a giant trading market, the daily volume of transactions was mind-boggling.

"This Divine Rune City is quite lively." Lin Ming sighed.

"Yes, Divine Rune City is the most famous trading hub in the inner Asura Road because there are a massive number of pills, divine runic inscriptions, weapons, and all sorts of other things that are sold here. Many people prefer coming here to buy and sell their goods because of the required qualifications to enter the city. Because of their strict standards, everything sold in Divine Rune City is only the highest quality of goods! In Divine Rune City, there are ten large trading companies and the largest of them belongs to the Divine Runic Master Guild. Every three years, this trading company will hold a large-scale treasure exhibition show. At that time, all sorts of influential forces throughout the Asura Road will bring their treasures here to display and trade amongst each other. There are extremely good treasures that can be found and traded and there are also open sales all over. This treasure exhibition will continue for a full month, and almost anything you can imagine can be purchased at this exhibition. Not only are there pill and divine runic inscriptions but there is also a great number of ancient pill recipes, ancient inheritances, God Beast flesh and blood, Empyrean spirit treasures, transcendent divine mights, and even relics of True Divinities from times long past."

Yue Liuxing confidently spoke up from near Lin Ming, a somewhat satisfied tone in her voice. It had to be known that in Divine Rune City, almost 90% of the people were spiritas. In a sense, Divine Rune City was a city of the soul race.

For her own race to have such a bustling city, Yue Liuxing was certainly proud of this.

"Oh? There is this kind of grand meeting?"

Lin Ming was even more satisfied with this Divine Rune City. In such a large volume of transactions there would definitely be some that concerned inheritances and pills of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. In ancient times, the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was a considerably popular human cultivation method, so it wouldn't be surprising for inheritances to be left behind in ancient runes.

"Of course, even if Divine Rune City has a tremendous amount of daily business there are still Empyreans that come here every year to make transactions of their own. Besides various treasures, you can also inquire into all sorts of information. All of the greatest intelligence networks of the inner Asura Road have branches in Divine Rune City, and some of them are even headquartered here. In short, in Divine Rune City, if you want to buy something, the premise is not whether you can find it here but whether or not you can afford it. The hard currency here is pills or origin energy runes."

“I understand.” Lin Ming subconsciously traced his spatial ring. In terms of wealth, Lin Ming was once rich. But because of his battle with Tian Mingzi he had been forced to use up a massive number of nine sun jades to power Primordius Heavenly Palace. Although he was still considerably wealthy, the amount of money he had was completely inadequate to buy pill materials for the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

How to obtain a sufficient amount of wealth was one of the problems Lin Ming worried about.

“You just said that there are intelligence networks that sell information?” Lin Ming planned to inquire into information pertaining to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. To have pre-prepared information was always better than flying around like a headless fly.

“That’s right. In Divine Rune City, the most famous intelligence network is Heaven’s Secret. Their headquarters are based here and if you have anything you wish to find out, chances are you’ll be able to discover it.”

“I understand, thank you very much. There are indeed some things I wish to ask about so we’ll leave our sound transmission marks with you and part ways for now.”

Hearing Lin Ming say he was leaving, Yue Liuxing was startled for a moment, but there wasn’t anything she could do to stop him. After the two groups exchanged sound transmission marks, Lin Ming then left with Xiao Moxian towards Heaven’s Secret.

Heaven’s Secret was also located at the center of Divine Rune City; it was extremely easy for Lin Ming to find.

The headquarters of Heaven’s Secret wasn’t considered too grand. From the outside it seemed like an antique pavilion that was a bit too old fashioned. There were gardens surrounding it that extended out for several miles.

Lin Ming didn’t need to be a genius to know that the value of land in Divine Rune City came at a sky-high premium. If Heaven’s Secret was able to construct such a luxurious garden in Divine Rune City, it was a clear indication of their status.

Entering the pavilion, Lin Ming looked up at the entranceway to see a plaque with the words ‘Heaven’s Secret Pavilion’ written on it in large brush strokes.

“Young hero, is there information you would like to inquire about?”

Someone welcomed Lin Ming at the entrance.

This person was only a doorman but their foundation was extremely solid. The way he walked and spoke was steady and solid; he was definitely an outstanding person amongst his peers.

“Mm.”

“What would you like to ask about? The information that our Heaven’s Secret sells is divided into different ranks and different prices. The higher level the information is, the more valuable it is. At the highest level, the information will come at an astronomical price.”

Heaven’s Secret Pavilion had a total of seven floors. The lowest floor had the cheapest information, but even though this was only the most ordinary information it still wasn’t something that an ordinary Divine Sea powerhouse would be able to handle.

“Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.” Lin Ming directly stated his goal for coming here.

“Please enter the fifth level.”

The doorman respectfully said. It was clear that this doorman was an extremely knowledgeable person. Just from some casual term that a guest gave out, he was able to judge the approximate value of it. To be able to understand many things from all over the Asura Road as well as the entire 33 Heavens, this wasn’t something that an ordinary person could hope to accomplish.

Just this alone made Lin Ming feel a bit more confident about this Heaven’s Secret. If they dared to call themselves the number one intelligence network of Divine Rune City then they really must be amazing.

“The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace is only a fifth-level inquiry; it doesn’t seem that it's too exaggerated.” Lin Ming traced his chin. There were still two levels above the fifth. This meant that information about the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace wasn’t too difficult to look up. In other words, inheritances of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace shouldn’t be difficult to find either. Of course, it was unknown what the rank of this inheritance would be.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian walked up to the fifth level. The one who greeted them was an old man. In front of this old man was a table with many wooden signs placed atop it. These wood signs had words such as, ‘inheritances’, ‘pills’, ‘sects’, ‘cities’, ‘mystic realms’, ‘races’, ‘vicious beasts’, and so forth, each of them pertaining to the matter of information that someone wanted to look up. The person seeking information here would pick up the appropriate wooden sign and would then be directed to the corresponding room.

Lin Ming picked up the wooden sign for inheritances.

Afterwards, a woman in a green dress came and brought Lin Ming to a different room.

After closing, all sound and aura was isolated outwards. It was clear that there was an extremely well-done array formation constructed in this room to prevent anyone from spying inwards.

An old woman in brocaded robes was already sitting down in this room, waiting for Lin Ming.

“What sort of inheritance would you like to inquire about?” The old woman asked in an elderly voice.

“The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.”

As Lin Ming spoke, an astonished light shined in the old woman’s eyes. She stared at Lin Ming deeply. The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had long been lost to the rivers of time. She was currently unable to judge what Lin Ming’s body transformation cultivation was, but only knew that he was at least at the peak of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

For a youth to open the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates, that wasn't easy at all.

"If you're asking about the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace then you should understand just how difficult it is. It is one of the 33 Heavenly Daos."

"I know." Lin Ming calmly nodded.

"Mm, if you can cultivate the Eight Inner Hidden Gates to this degree, then your understanding of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace is likely greater than my own. I can only give you some information about inheritances, and as for cultivating, everything will depend on yourself."

The old woman didn't try to urge Lin Ming not to waste his time or effort; she was only responsible for sharing information with guests here. As for the purpose of that information, she didn't ask that either.

"About the inheritance of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, there are 42 pieces of information. Each piece of information is ranked differently and the higher the rank, the more expensive it is to find out."

The old woman was very familiar with the information about the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. All of this information was gathered by Heaven's Secret. Heaven's Secret would gather all sorts of information and then this information would be sorted and classified into different categories and then passed out to the individual responsible for that corresponding category. That person was responsible for memorizing all of this information so that when guests came, there was no need to look up information; they would have the answers readily available.

"I only want the highest rank. It needs to be at the transcendent divine might rank or above!" Lin Ming gained a bit more confidence in Heaven's Secret as he heard this number. As he had expected, it wasn't too difficult to look up information on inheritances of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

"Transcendent divine might? It seems you have a big appetite!" The old woman chuckled. "But, those that would enter my Heaven's Secret Headquarters to inquire about information would have to have at least that much. When it comes to low rank cultivation methods, we simply don't bother recording them at all. If you are looking for transcendent divine mights, there is indeed one, but it isn't complete at all. There are three pieces of information, each one costing 350 million origin energy runes. If you want, I can sell you all three for a billion. Also, we only provide information. Our information doesn't mean that you will be successful in your quest. But, what you should know is that for the price we charge, we will not provide any false information to you. If you ultimately cannot find what you are looking for then the problem lies with you."

The old woman calmly said. This expensive price left Lin Ming secretly flabbergasted.

Origin energy runes were a currency unique to the Asura Road. They could be manufactured by having blank runes absorb heaven and earth origin energy. There were many strong martial artists, who had no other way of earning money, and who would spend a massive amount of time to create these origin energy runes and then use them to purchase goods.

In the Asura Road, every business that was connected to the Asura Road Heavenly Dao had to use origin energy runes. Lin Ming suspected that these origin energy runes were the source for how the Heavenly Dao rules revolved in the Asura Road, and thus how they became the hard currency for this land.

A billion origin energy runes were equal to 10 trillion violet sun stones. This was far more expensive than the Boundless World Pill that Lin Ming had spent nearly all his wealth buying in the past, and this was only for information about a transcendent divine might. As for whether or not he could rely on this information to obtain a transcendent divine might, that was hard to say.

This high price was simply because a transcendent divine might was far too precious. In the Divine Realm, it was considered wonderful if a World King Holy Land could have even an incomplete transcendent divine might. If it weren’t for the fact that the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace received such little attention then this price might be even higher.

“I only have nine sun jades.” Lin Ming said.

“We accept nine sun jades. If you wish to pay in nine sun jades then that will be 11 of them.”

Lin Ming pulled out 11 nine sun jades. The old woman picked them up and appraised their purity before nodding with satisfaction. Those that could use nine sun jades as currency were clearly not poor, because these were things created by human Empyreans.

The old woman accepted the nine sun jades and then took out a blank white jade. She poured her divine sense into it and soon wrote down all the necessary information.

Then, she gave this jade slip to Lin Ming. “The information is in here. Take a look.”

“Thank you.” Lin Ming took the jade slip and swept through it with his divine sense. But as he saw the contents, he was left startled.

“This… how is this possible… something like this could happen?”

Chapter 1546 – Riddle of the Cultivation Method

Chapter 1546 – Riddle of the Cultivation Method

…

…

…

In the jade slip, there were three pieces of information recorded down about transcendent divine mights of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

The first piece of information came from 30 years ago. The Divine Taboo Wasteland was a dangerous death zone. It was said that it was a land left behind by a great body transformation emperor. And, this great body transformation emperor was a human.

In the Divine Taboo Wasteland, someone had once found a remnant of a transcendent divine might related to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. However, they disappeared afterwards and their whereabouts were currently unknown.

The second piece of information came from 40 years ago. In the Stormy Sea, there were a number of islands that seemed to flit in and out of existence. One of these islands held an ancient ruin that concerned the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, and there were said to be inheritances left behind by powerhouses that once practiced the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. However, the location of this island was filled with uncertainties, and many people even thought it was nothing more than a mirage. A great number of powerhouses had gone to the Stormy Sea to seek out some clues of this island, but they all failed. Some people even went missing and no one knew whether they had died or not.

The third piece of information was also the simplest. The first two pieces of information were about mystic realm danger zones. Wanting to find transcendent divine mights of the

Nine Stars of the Dao Palace from those places was as dangerous as ascending to the heavens, and if there were any mistakes at all, one could even lose their life.

But, the third piece of information was more concrete.

In the inner Asura Road, there was an assassin organization known as Heaven's Net. This Heaven's Net had a branch division in Divine Rune City and the third leader of Heaven's Net was a human. This person dual cultivated in body and energy and trained in a remnant transcendent divine might of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. If one was willing to pay a high enough price, they could borrow it for a look!

But, what truly shocked Lin Ming was that the remnant transcendent divine might that the third leader of this Heaven's Net assassin organization possessed was… the Celestial Tyrant Manual!

This startled Lin Ming a great deal. Was there such a coincidence in this world? He himself possessed the Eight Inner Hidden Gates section of the Celestial Tyrant Manual, and just by casually inquiring at Heaven's Secret, he would find information about the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace section of the Celestial Tyrant Manual?

Could the Celestial Tyrant Manual have been a common body transformation law formula of ancient times, and thus there were many copies of it?

As soon as this thought appeared in Lin Ming's mind he shot it down. He didn't know what level of cultivation method the Celestial Tyrant Manual was, but he guessed that it was a transcendent divine might. And now, Heaven's Secret also recognized it as a transcendent divine might. Without a doubt, this was the most likely situation.

If the Celestial Tyrant Manual were indeed a transcendent divine might, then wanting to make another copy of it was nearly impossible. To do so, one needed to have reached large success in cultivating the Celestial Tyrant Manual, and the one who did so would be a body transformation Empyrean!

Many transcendent divine might manuals were singularly unique; this showed just how precious they were.

Moreover, the Celestial Tyrant Manual that Lin Ming had was found in an ancient ruin along with the Magic Cube. If there was an inheritance cultivation method that could be found together with the Magic Cube and was related to the Magic Cube, then it definitely wouldn't be something common!

"My Celestial Tyrant Manual was obtained by the Verdant Feather World King, and at the time, he only managed to obtain the section about the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. If there is only one copy of the Celestial Tyrant Manual, then… does the Celestial Tyrant Manual that the third leader of Heaven's Net possesses make a set with mine? This is too coincidental… how could it be such a coincidence?"

Lin Ming felt this all to be unbelievable.

It had to be known that the Magic Cube was discovered in the Divine Realm. But in this Asura Road that was a completely separate universe from the Divine Realm, he actually managed to find news about the other half of the Celestial Tyrant Manual. How could he not be surprised?

Anomalies like this that were out of the ordinary were always suspicious. Lin Ming couldn't help but think there was some unknown secret.

But no matter what, Lin Ming decided to meet this Heaven's Net leader to see where the Celestial Tyrant Manual in their hands had come from.

"So, these three pieces of information, do they satisfy you?"

The old woman faintly said. She had noticed the shock on Lin Ming's face as he read through the jade slip. But, she didn't ask further because it wasn't her concern at all. She was only here to provide information and receive payment.

"I'm satisfied."

Lin Ming believed that the information coming from Heaven's Secret was true. If they were able to stand tall in Divine Rune City where there were so many powerhouses and also become the largest intelligence network in this city, then it would have been impossible to reach these heights by swindling their way here. Moreover, the Celestial Tyrant Manual indeed existed.

"But, I want to ask something. How can I contact this Heaven's Net third leader?" Lin Ming guessed that a behind the scenes leader of an assassin organization was mostly a mysterious figure. Wanting to make contact with him wouldn't be easy at all.

The old woman said, "Consider this information a free gift to you. Wanting to make contact with the Heaven's Net third leader is extremely difficult and all I know is that this person's code name is Blood Moon. This person's whereabouts are all a mystery, and if you are thinking about joining Heaven's Net to find them then you will be wasting your time. This is because Heaven's Net doesn't accept new members like yourself; most of the people in their ranks start out as extremely talented children that they take in. These people have all grown up in Heaven's Net and have been trained in that hellish environment, making all of them loyal and devoted to their organization!"

Lin Ming wasn't surprised by this at all. An assassin organization particularly focused on the loyalty and confidentiality of their members. Many of them wore masks for their entire lives and even their team members wouldn't know their true appearance or name, only knowing them by their code name.

Assassin organizations most loved looking for orphans and children that were extremely good at stealing and pickpocketing. By raising these people from their childhood and training them into sublime killers, these people would be utterly loyal to the organization and their backgrounds would also be clean.

"Senior, you said that most of the people from Heaven's Net were raised since childhood, but what about the rest?"

The old woman said, “The rest have either been thoroughly inspected by Heaven’s Net for a long time or they have been guaranteed by extremely important individuals of Heaven’s Net. These types of people are normally extremely talented individuals, for instance, divine runic masters or alchemists! No matter how perfect the training system of Heaven’s Net is, it is impossible for them to train divine runic grandmasters or alchemist grandmasters. Otherwise, there would be no need for an existence like the Divine Runic Master Guild. However, as an assassin organization, it is impossible for them to lack talented individuals in those aspects, thus they can only take in divine runic masters, alchemists, and refiners after they have been trained. If you wanted to make contact with Heaven’s Net’s third leader, then being introduced by divine runic masters or alchemists is the best way to go about it. This is because the Heaven’s Net third leader has a high need of pills and he is also needing people to refine them. If you are a divine runic grandmaster or grandmaster alchemist then you won’t even need to look for him; he will look for you.”

The old woman slowly said. Since Blood Moon dual cultivated in body and energy he certainly needed pills. Let alone Blood Moon, even someone like Lin Ming who experienced lucky chance after lucky chance needed pills and materials to the point of suffocating from them.

Now, Lin Ming had finished swallowing all God Beast parts he had, had finished swallowing the Nine Star Heaven Pill, had finished swallowing the Grandmist Spirit Bead Essence, and had even absorbed Xiao Moxian’s primordial yin blood to bring himself into harmony. If he wanted to continue training then he would really be nothing but a destitute beggar with nothing to his name.

“Senior, do you think I am an alchemist or something?” Lin Ming ruefully smiled.

“That’s not my problem. If you know any grandmaster alchemists or divine runic grandmasters then you can have them introduce you. I’ve already provided you with the method on how to make contact, so what else do you have to ask me?”

“Nothing…” Lin Ming helplessly said. Out of all the people this person could be, they had to be a leader of an assassin organization. This type of person was usually secretive in their movements, a divine dragon that never showed their face, so where would he begin looking for them?

“Alright. If you have any other information you wish to inquire into then feel free to visit.”

The old woman expressionlessly saw her guests out. Like this, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian left Heaven’s Secret Pavilion.

“Lin Ming, what was in that jade slip that surprised you so much? And you even have to ask about an assassin organization?”

Xiao Moxian asked Lin Ming as soon as they left. Lin Ming answered without hiding anything from her. After Xiao Moxian heard this she pressed her eyebrows together and said, “Is it that strange? Reasonably speaking, your Celestial Tyrant Manual should be a singularly unique copy. If so, then the Celestial Tyrant Manual that Blood Moon possesses should have been two parts of a whole to the one that you have. It’s only that they were separated and they were separated so long ago. The first half was left in an ancient ruin within the Divine Realm and the second half came all the way to the Asura Road… I wonder how this is related?”

“I think it’s strange too. It seems there is some mystery to this code name Blood Moon.”

Lin Ming couldn’t figure out what the reason was. The only way he would be able to find out the truth was if he met Blood Moon in the future.

The truth was that what Lin Ming wanted to know the most was how the Celestial Tyrant Manual was related to the Magic Cube. Was it just a coincidence that the first half of it was found together with the Magic Cube?

Unfortunately, the Verdant Feather World King had died long ago, so this mystery was hard to solve.

If he could see the second half of the Celestial Tyrant Manual, would he be able to find some clues about the Magic Cube?

This was something that Lin Ming deeply cared about, even more so than the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace cultivation method itself.

After all, the Magic Cube was Lin Ming's most important treasure. His initial rise to fame had relied upon the Magic Cube, and as Lin Ming stepped into the Divine Lord realm and his cultivation continued to increase, he would be able to control more and more strength of the Magic Cube. The Magic Cube would eventually become Lin Ming's most powerful magic tool!

In the future, he might need to use the Magic Cube to kill his enemies. In the future great calamity of humanity, the Magic Cube would become one of Lin Ming's greatest strengths. Any secret regarding the Magic Cube was extremely important to him!

"What do you plan on doing?" Xiao Moxian shrugged. "Have you thought about becoming a divine runic master? You should be able to meet this third leader like that, right? Don't you have some experience with inscription technique? But, it does seem that the Asura Road's inscription technique is far more profound than that of the Divine Realm, and they have even combined it with god runes."

"How could I possibly do that..." Lin Ming ruefully smiled, "My inscription technique is too shameful to even show others, much less combine with god runes. How could it be that easy..."

As Lin Ming spoke to here, he immediately perked up. Inscription technique combined with god runes...

God runes... that's right!

A brilliant light flashed in Lin Ming's mind. The god runes of the Asura Road could be obtained by challengers after they completed certain tasks; they were in a sense traces of the

Great Dao that corresponded to the Heavenly Dao of the Asura Road! They were divided into many different grades; for instance, silver, gold, blue soul, zenith black… and so forth!

Once one collected enough god runes then they could open the final trial of the Asura Road.

As for divine runic inscriptions, they were able to use the god runes of the Asura Road in inscription technique, forming the divine runic arts.

"I have successfully obtained and studied the Asura Sutra First Volume, and I understand the Asura Road Heavenly Dao… then, god runes… perhaps I might be able to draw up one myself?"

As this crazy thought began to grow within Lin Ming's mind, he gained unprecedented clarity of his path.

If he could become a divine runic master then not only would he be able to see the third leader of Heaven's Net, but it would be a great help to paving his future path to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

Chapter 1547 – Divine Runic Masters Guild

Chapter 1547 – Divine Runic Masters Guild

…

…

…

Rather than asking others, it was better to ask himself. If Lin Ming wanted to walk down the path of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, his dependence on pills was far too great. And, in order to make pills for the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, each material needed was rarer than the last. Moreover, to refine them was extremely difficult, something that would be nearly impossible for anyone that wasn't a grandmaster alchemist.

But, asking a grandmaster alchemist for help wasn't easy to begin with. In addition to that, the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace often used ancient pill recipes, the kind that alchemists almost never refined. Even if they did, they would need to spend some time familiarizing themselves with the process. This only added another level of difficulty and a grandmaster alchemist might not be willing to waste so much time. Thus, there was no choice that would be as convenient as Lin Ming's own alchemy ability.

"Divine runic master… alchemist… perhaps I really need to consider learning them…"

Lin Ming thought to himself. Then, at this time, a flame lit up in front of him. It was a sound transmitting talisman sending a message from Yue Liuxing.

The general gist of it was that she had completed the divine runic arts assessment with her little brother.

Yue Liuxing had been evaluated as a fourth grade inscription master, divine runic arts apprentice.

Yue Qifeng had been evaluated as a third grade inscription master, divine runic arts apprentice.

Yue Liuxing's voice in the sound transmitting talisman was one of joy and happiness; she was clearly more than satisfied with her results. Moreover, they had both been evaluated as possessing extremely high levels of talent and were fortunate enough to be received as disciples by an Elder of the Divine Runic Masters Guild. Even though they were only ordinary disciples now, if they performed their duties well they had a chance of rising to be direct disciples in the future and possibly even being the ones to inherit the legacy of that Elder.

At that time, Yue Liuxing and Yue Qifeng would both become characters that could wield power as they pleased, mighty and unapproachable!

At the end of the message, Yue Liuxing invited Lin Ming to come and take a look at the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

This was just what Lin Ming wanted to do. He wanted to see what sort of scene the Divine Runic Masters Guild was like.

The tall pagoda where the Divine Runic Masters Guild was located was filled year round with the lingering fragrance of incense and medicine. In the skies around the pagoda, strange god runes appeared from time to time. Many martial artists that came to Divine Rune City would often come here for sightseeing and be amazed by the wondrous scenes all around them.

As Lin Ming arrived at Divine Rune Pagoda, he saw a line of martial artists all waiting to take the assessment. These people were all uncommon individuals, and in Lin Ming's eyes, many of them could be considered heroic young elites. For Lin Ming to judge someone as a heroic young elite, they had to at least have the ability to stand tall in an ordinary World King Holy Land.

"What are they doing?"

Lin Ming could see that the content of the tests these young martial artists were taking was similar to the Seven Profound Martial House's Ten Thousand Killing Array. They would need to enter the illusory magic array and then fight their way through to assess their strength.

"Brother Lin, over here!"

The voice of a young girl suddenly called out. Lin Ming turned to see that the one shouting to him was Yue Liuxing. She beckoned to Lin Ming from the crowd, having Lin Ming walk over.

Beside Yue Liuxing was Yue Qifeng, as well as another spiritas man.

This spiritas man had a middle Divine Lord realm cultivation. Lin Ming guessed that he wasn't too old; for him to have this cultivation at his current age was quite rare.

"Let me introduce you, this is my senior-apprentice brother, fifth grade inscription master, third grade divine runic master Luo Yubai, Senior-apprentice Brother Liu. Senior-apprentice Brother Liu is the most magnificent direct disciple beneath my master and just completed his test to become a third grade divine runic master last year!"

Yue Liuxing clearly held deep admiration in her eyes as she introduced Lin Ming to this person. In particular, when she mentioned the words 'direct disciple' and 'third grade divine runic master', her eyes shined particularly bright as if she couldn't conceal the envy and respect within her.

In Divine Rune City, inscription masters were divided into 12 grades and divine runic masters were divided into nine grades. It wasn't hard to rise in grade as an inscription master, but wanting to rise in grade as a divine runic master was far, far too hard.

In the inner Asura Road, there were numerous twelfth grade inscription masters, but there wasn't a single ninth grade divine runic master.

In fact, eighth grade divine runic masters were nearly myths unto themselves. As for ninth grade divine runic masters, they had only existed in ancient times several billion years ago; to divine runic masters, a ninth grade divine runic master was an existence close to that of god.

It was because of this extremely difficult grading system that Yue Liuxing was filled with admiration and yearning towards the term ‘third grade divine runic master’. A third grade divine runic master was high enough to receive a courteous reception from almost any large influence. This was particularly true for someone like Luo Yubai. With his extremely high talent, his future was limitless; he might even become a sixth grade divine runic master in the future. This meant that many Great World Kings would be respectful when seeing Luo Yubai, treating him with the same dignity that they reserved for their descendants.

Lin Ming glanced over Luo Yubai. This person was indeed outstanding. From looks, he seemed to be around 23-24 years old. He was tall and stood straight with an imposing and immaculate appearance. His forehead was wide and even, and he had the aura of a natural born ruler.

On his right eye was a small round lens, something that resembled a monocle. In fact, this was a common magic tool that divine runic masters used and was specifically for analyzing the structure of divine runes. He wore robes of black and white, like ink on water. The base of his clothes were white, and black ink traced lines along them. These lines were designs of divine runic inscriptions and looked natural and pleasing.

“Hello.”

Lin Ming politely greeted. Luo Yubai glanced at Lin Ming without any expression. Then, Lin Ming felt a sudden divine sense wash over his body as if it wanted to thrust into his spiritual sea and inner world, completely understanding him!

Lin Ming’s mind chilled. He immediately summoned a little power from the Magic Cube, and in addition to the Divine Mist Heart Mantra that he studied, he concealed his inner world and spiritual sea, making it so that Luo Yubai only saw faint white mirages.

With Luo Yubai's cultivation, it was impossible for him to see through any secrets within Lin Ming. But, no one liked being probed by others, and this was the most basic form of politeness between martial artists.

Luo Yubai certainly knew this. But, as a divine runic master and also a spiritas, he was particularly skilled in the aspect of sense. In any normal circumstances, it was impossible for human martial artists of the same step to discover that he was probing them, much less Lin Ming who was at a much lower cultivation boundary.

Upon discovering that there wasn't anything special about Lin Ming, Luo Yubai proceeded to ignore him. Since Lin Ming was a human, this made it so that Luo Yubai had fundamentally no interest in exchanging any pleasantries with him.

He pushed up the monocle on his eye and faintly said to Yue Liuxing, "These two are your friends?"

"Y-yes."

Yue Liuxing was a bit embarrassed as she saw the lack of expression on Luo Yubai's face.

"Mm… later, don't bring irrelevant people to the Divine Runic Masters Guild. We'll consider it fine just this once."

Luo Yubai used a sound transmission to speak and didn't say it out loud. Then, he turned and left.

But, his expression and gestures demonstrated a clear sense of superiority that caused Xiao Moxian's eyes to twitch. She could approximately guess what Luo Yubai had said to Yue Liuxing, otherwise there was no way she would look so awkward.

"Just who does he think he is!" Xiao Moxian pouted. Yue Liuxing was frozen where she was, her face filled with an apologetic expression.

Lin Ming didn’t care about this at all. He indifferently said, “This person is an outstanding young elite of the Divine Runic Masters Guild and has an inborn sense of superiority. Unless you are an equally outstanding character it is hard to enter his view.”

Luo Yubai’s cold response hadn’t surprised Lin Ming at all. This was because Yue Liuxing’s status was insignificant to begin with; she was considered amongst the lowest echelons of the Divine Runic Masters Guild. As for the friends she invited over, they weren’t divine runic masters nor were they part of the soul race, and their cultivations were only at the peak of the early Divine Lord realm, so who would bother with seeing them?

“Imagine there is a successor of a royal family. One day, a son of a branch family with no status at all decides to invite his own common city friends for a visit. In the eyes of the world, it is impossible for that successor to treat those common city friends with any sense respect at all; in fact, that successor is likely disinclined to meet with them to begin with, because those common city friends have no value in his eyes. Currently, this other person views us in the same way.”

Lin Ming’s words were all spoken with a true essence sound transmission. Xiao Moxian was still miffed after hearing this. “What a snobby little bastard. I can beat up 10 of these people and still not be satisfied!”

“It should be more than 10.” Lin Ming smiled. “But in terms of inscription technique, he can defeat me 100 to 1 I believe.”

Lin Ming self-deprecatingly said. These words were not modesty; they were the truth.

Xiao Moxian also worried a little for Lin Ming after hearing this. “Then how do you plan on learning? Learning these sorts of things will probably require a great deal of time.”

“Yes, but I don’t plan on taking a conventional approach; I have other methods available to me. I’ve never had much contact with the Divine Runic Arts so it's impossible for me to judge how much time it will take, but I believe that my speed of learning the divine runic arts will be at least 100 times faster than anyone else’s.”

Lin Ming confidently said. Xiao Moxian was left stricken – 100 times?

Something that would take someone else a hundred years to learn, Lin Ming could learn in a single year?

“Miss Yue, about how old is this Senior-apprentice Brother Luo of yours?” Lin Ming only cared about how many years Luo Yubai had spent to become a third grade divine runic master.

Yue Liuxing thought about it for a while, “He is over 400 years old…”

“Over 400 years old… could he have used 400 years to learn the divine runic arts?” Lin Ming frowned. Although he was confident that he could quickly learn the divine runic arts, taking 400 years to become a third grade divine runic master seemed a bit too much.

“How could it be so long? Senior-apprentice Brother Luo first started studying the divine runic arts when he reached the Divine Lord realm, so he has probably studied the divine runic arts for around 70-80 years. Studying the divine runic arts requires a tremendous amount of time and you also need a ridiculously solid soul force as a support. Many martial artists first cultivate the martial path first before studying the divine runic arts. Me and my little brother are also the same, that is why we are only divine runic art apprentices right now. There is still a long road ahead of us and we will continue to primarily focus on cultivating.”

“So that’s how it is!”

Lin Ming finally understood. When a martial artist was young, that was the prime time in their life to cultivate martial arts. From their teenage years to when they were several dozen years old, martial artists were in a constant race against time. The higher their cultivation achievements were in their youth, the more life potential they could dig out in the future, meaning that their future achievements would also be greater. If they placed too much time and energy in learning the divine runic arts, then the losses would simply outweigh the gains.

“70-80 years to become a third grade divine runic master, that is also acceptable.”

Lin Ming was constantly calculating the time he needed to learn the divine runic arts.

If a divine runic arts talent like Luo Yubai needed 70-80 years to become a third grade divine runic master, then if he could increase this speed by 100 times, Lin Ming could reach the same level in maybe 10 months.

Of course, a third grade divine runic master was far from reaching Lin Ming’s requirements. He needed to become a divine runic grandmaster and also minor in alchemy. Only like this would he be able to refine the pills needed for the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

Chapter 1548 – Broken Jade

Chapter 1548 – Broken Jade

…

…

…

After entering the Divine Runic Masters Guild, the medicinal fragrance was much richer. If an ordinary pill were placed in the Divine Runic Masters Guild for a long time, then it would soak in the medicinal fragrance and become a medicinal pill. If a mortal were to breathe in this fragrance then their mind would become sharper and they would become the number one scholar of their country. If a martial artist lived here year round it would also be beneficial to their cultivation.

The grounds of the Divine Runic Masters Guild, their walls, their stone tables and stone benches, and even their eating utensils were engraved with runes. These runes not only served decorative purposes but they were themselves array formations that could do various things such as gathering origin energy or strengthening the use of tools.

"Miss Yue, I saw some people lining up outside the Divine Runic Masters Guild waiting for some test, just what are they testing?" Lin Ming asked as he followed behind Yue Liuxing.

"It seems that the Divine Runic Masters Guild is looking to recruit guards. Those people have all come to apply." Yue Liuxing casually said. Lin Ming was dumbfounded upon hearing this. Just for recruiting guards, so many people had come, and these people were all outstanding young elites!

However, upon thinking about it further, this was also within reason. Not only was it easy to come into contact with great individuals within the Divine Runic Masters Guild, but one could also obtain high wages. Just the medicinal fragrance within the Divine Rune Pagoda would be greatly beneficial to their cultivation if they could inhale it daily.

Lin Ming continued following Yue Liuxing through a number of winding corridors until they reached a broad hall.

Within this grand hall, there were several neatly arranged rows of blue stone counters. These counters all had various alchemy and inscription tools on them.

Standing behind some of these counters were young martial artists. These martial artists wore robes and were clearly busying themselves with working at the counters. A few old men sat on the sidelines, judging their work while they sipped on some tea and also occasionally gave pointers. It was clear that they were guiding their apprentices.

“Sir Lin, take a look. The one in a black and white robe is a divine runic master and the one in a blue and red robe is an alchemist. The badges on their chest represent their grade; the more stripes there are, the higher their grade is.

In Divine Rune City, alchemists and divine runic masters were separate. Although there were a massive number of alchemists in the Divine Runic Masters Guild, the reason that this organization was named by its divine runic masters was because their status was higher than alchemists’!

Lin Ming watched with his own eyes as a disciple completed a divine runic symbol and then placed it on a rock. The divine runic symbol immediately melted into the rock, fusing with it.

Then, this hard rock shimmered with a brilliant light. After the light died down, it still glowed with a golden light, because it had actually turned into gold!

This was truly turning stone into gold!

Turning stone into gold was an immortal skill that mortals dreamed of. However, this was a useless ability to martial artists, because to them, gold was no different from iron.

But, if someone were to tell Lin Ming to turn stone into gold just by touching it then that wouldn't be something he could do.

Let alone Lin Ming, not even a Great World King could do this. In order to accomplish this miracle, one needed to be at least an Empyrean!

This was because turning stone into gold involved changing the structure of matter, something that was part of the Heavenly Dao Laws. In truth, changing the structure of matter was violating the Heavenly Dao Laws. Although it wasn't the same as rebelling against the heavens, it was similar. If one wasn't an Empyrean or hadn't crossed heavenly tribulation then it was impossible to do this.

But in front of Lin Ming, a simple divine runic art had accomplished this. This was because in the Asura Road, divine runic arts represented the Heavenly Dao, the will of god. Because of this, people changed this skill from inscription technique to the divine runic arts.

After witnessing a divine runic master turn stone into gold, Lin Ming saw another divine runic master place a divine runic symbol into a basin of water. This water became increasingly thick, and before long, it had turned into oil.

And, what startled Lin Ming the most was a middle-aged divine runic master with three stripes on his badge placing a divine runic symbol on a frog. This frog then transformed into a mouse!

Although this wasn't particularly useful to a martial artist, this was actually an extraordinary ability!

For a single divine runic symbol to turn stone into gold, turn water into oil, and even change the shape of a life form and turn a frog into a mouse, this was almost the same as the divine ability of creation!

"The legendary Asura Road is said to be created by the Asura Road Master. But, the title of the Asura Road Master is not a True Divinity, but the Creator. The Asura Sutra that he created is the cultivation method to control the power of divine creation and create an entire world. If one mastered the Asura Sutra, then it might really be possible to create an entirely new world. Unfortunately, I understand far too little about the Asura Sutra.”

Lin Ming sighed deeply. He was far too young, with less than 60 years of cultivation. There was a long road ahead of him.

“If one reached the highest levels of the divine runic arts, could one change grass into peak heavenly materials? Or change stones into nine sun jades? If so, then to an eighth or ninth grade divine runic master, wealth has no meaning at all.”

Of course, Lin Ming was just thinking about this. He didn’t doubt that wanting to transform something into top medicinal materials would require an absurdly high grade of divine runic symbol; it wouldn’t be easy at all to draw up.

As Lin Ming was thinking, he soon saw another divine runic master place a divine runic symbol onto a hoe. This hoe was an ordinary hoe used by mortal farmers on their farm; it was indeed stained with rust and time. But after this divine runic symbol was placed on it, the entire hoe shined with a divine light. Although its shape didn’t change, the quality of this hoe had directly climbed up to a low-grade saint artifact!

The rust fell off, revealing a pitch black edge that shined with a cold light. Even the handle gained a strange elasticity that allowed one to bend it like a moon, and one could even use it to save strength and shatter a pillar of divine steel. In Lin Ming’s eyes, this handle would make an excellent spear shaft.

“This is truly heaven-defying!”

As Lin Ming sighed with praise, he also understood that divine runic arts were limited to the Asura Road. Once one left the Asura Road, it would be impossible to use the divine runic arts because god runes did not exist outside of the Asura Road.

The only exception would be if one could thoroughly pass the final test of the Asura Road and control the Laws of the Asura Road for one’s own use, instead of simply following them.

Lin Ming could faintly feel that the Asura Road Master had in truth formed his own independent Heavenly Dao, and although this Heavenly Dao stood outside of the 33 Heavenly Daos, it still stood on equal footing with them!

To be able to create his own Heavenly Dao Laws, this sort of method was truly heart-shaking to hear!

Without a doubt, after one's divine runic arts reached this level, even if there was a poor quality pill, if one were to place a high grade divine runic symbol on it, it would become something far more profound. This was not something that the medicinal inscription symbols that Lin Ming learnt before could hope to compare with.

After passing through this hall, Lin Ming and the others arrived at a side hall of the Divine Runic Masters guild.

This side hall was considerably large; it was the trade area of the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

This trade area was completely different from the square around Divine Rune Pagoda. In the Divine Rune Pagoda square, there were all sorts of sounds, cries and bargaining noises, just like a busy mortal market fair.

But here, everything was quiet. The stall vendors lazily sat in their chairs. They might have been meditating or resting, as if these stalls had nothing to do with them at all.

These vendors were all divine runic masters or alchemists of the Divine Runic Masters Guild!

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian approached a stall. The stall vendor reluctantly opened one eye to sweep over Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, then, he returned to meditating as if he hadn't seen them at all.

This was because to the stall vendor, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian didn't resemble customers at all. They were as young as little babies, their cultivations weren't high, and they weren't divine runic masters or alchemists, so what could they possibly be doing here except taking a look? This stall vendor simply couldn't be bothered with attending to these customers who were only interested in window shopping.

"What sort of service is this!" Xiao Moxian said, a bit indignantly. Ever since coming to the Divine Runic Masters Guild she had been continuously ignored.

First was that Luo Yubai who seemed to have his eyes on the top of his head. She wished that she could maliciously stomp on him as revenge.

Now it was this old geezer, sitting there motionlessly like he was some almighty Buddha; how could Xiao Moxian be happy with this?

"Hey you, how do we buy these medicines?"

Xiao Moxian pointed towards a withered yellow root that looked like a radish and asked about this common-looking herb. She asked about this medicinal herb because she could feel a rich heaven and earth origin energy emanating from it; it clearly wasn't ordinary.

The divine runic master lazily opened an eye, glancing at Xiao Moxian from between the slits of his eyelids. He lightly said, "Your eyesight is alright, but you don't even know the name of this medicinal herb. You aren't a customer at all, but you're simply curious about all of this. If you're just going to waste my time, then don't bother disturbing me."

After being exposed by the divine runic master, Xiao Moxian squawked out loud, nearly choking on herself. Lin Ming smiled, saying, "Although we don't understand the divine runic arts, buying good materials is always useful. I also intend to dabble in the divine runic arts in the future, so I ask Senior to kindly inform us of the price..."

With Lin Ming's Divine Lord boundary cultivation, he was at the perfect time to begin learning the divine runic arts. But to this old divine runic master, Lin Ming clearly didn't have any chance of learning anything because he was a human.

He looked at Lin Ming with an annoyed look, as if he didn't want Lin Ming to continue bothering him. Then, he directly listed off the names of several materials as well as the price of the medicinal herb.

This time, Lin Ming was left dumbfounded. He had never heard of these materials before, and according to the old man, he simply didn't accept origin energy runes. Rather, he wanted to barter, the most primitive form of trade.

Realizing this, Lin Ming suddenly became aware. These vendors all held extremely high positions and didn't lack nine sun jades or origin energy runes. What they lacked were materials and rare god runes, or superior top grade pill furnaces for alchemy, or even top grade pens for drawing up divine runic symbols.

Thus, these vendors were mostly interested in bartering. They had no interest in origin energy runes because there were things that couldn't be purchased with origin energy runes.

Lin Ming was able to confirm that he couldn't afford anything here. He hadn't even heard of these materials before, so what was there to buy?

Lin Ming had no choice but to withdraw. The divine runic master sighed, giving off an expression that he had long expected this. Then, he closed his eyes and returned to his meditation. This caused Xiao Moxian to be even more disgruntled.

"Let's go." Lin Ming said. The reason he came to the Divine Runic Masters Guild was too see just what the divine runic arts were. Now that he had accomplished his goal, he could leave. All that remained was to learn the divine runic arts.

However, just as Lin Ming was about to leave, he suddenly stopped where he was, no longer leaving. His eyes locked onto a table covered with random objects in front of the old divine runic master. Among these random items was a common-looking piece of broken jade, but as Lin Ming saw this jade, he was shocked!

Chapter 1549 – Buying Treasures

Chapter 1549 – Buying Treasures

…

…

…

There were too many scattered items in front of the old divine runic master's stall. It was like he was too lazy to sort these things out and let them pile up in a messy bunch.

Among these random items was a common piece of broken jade that was hidden by some other things. If it weren't for Lin Ming's extraordinary eyesight and a faintly familiar aura that he felt from this broken jade, then he would never have noticed it at all.

Lin Ming silently squatted down in front of the old divine runic master's stall, quietly probing that broken jade.

After a short period of time, he was able to confirm that he wasn't mistaken.

Normally, someone old and well taught like this old divine runic master vendor would have a vast amount of experience and it should have been impossible for Lin Ming to find any hidden gems in his trove of random items. But, this broken jade was too special. Besides Lin Ming, there was no one else who would have sensed anything special about it.

Although this broken jade was only an inch in size and was extremely fragmented, there were faint lines on its surface. These lines revealed an aura, one that was the exact same as the emperor jade that Lin Ming had obtained from the Wheel of Destiny!

When Lin Ming first entered the Asura Road, he had obtained the emperor jade. By relying on it, he had been able to enter the Great Desolate God Trove hidden in the depths of the God Burying Ridge. In God Burying Ridge, the emperor jade had allowed Lin Ming to repeatedly overcome danger after danger, saving his life countless times!

"Could the Asura Road Master have left more than one piece of emperor jade? Was there a pair, or even more than a pair?"

Lin Ming didn't know why this emperor jade was broken. This little piece wasn't even a quarter of the size of a complete emperor jade, and it was also missing the most essential lines of an emperor jade. This would make perceiving anything from it nearly impossible.

This divine runic master must have accidently obtained this broken jade from somewhere, and although he could faintly feel that it was uncommon, he couldn't figure out just what it was. He likely thought it was only a fragment of an ancient top magic weapon, and thus he had brought it out to sell.

Lin Ming began to leisurely look over every other item in the stall to prevent the old divine runic master from discovering his true purpose.

At this time, the divine runic master vendor opened his eyes, saying, "You aren't a divine runic master and you also don't understand the materials that I have, and yet you still linger around here. Have you taken a fancy to my items? Or perhaps you think you found some treasure amongst my random goods that you would like to take from me?"

As the old divine runic master spoke these words, Lin Ming felt his heart chill. This old geezer, he was far too vigilant.

However, Lin Ming's behavior really couldn't be explained. What others wanted, Lin Ming didn't have, and as for the items that were placed out, Lin Ming had no idea what they were. If he continued to wander around here and look about, then that simply couldn't be justified.

Lin Ming's thoughts turned and he immediately responded, "Senior shouldn't say that. Although this junior is nothing but an amateur layman when it comes to the divine runic arts and I also don't have any materials that Senior wants, I have still decided to become a divine runic master in the future. I will eventually need to understand what these things are, and there are always some things that I have which Senior might need. For instance… god runes!”

The god runes in the Asura Road were obtained through completing missions. Lin Ming had many rare blue soul runes as well as a few zenith black runes with him.

A divine runic master’s divine runic arts needed rare god runes. Only by combining these god runes with inscription did that form the divine runic arts.

Lin Ming guessed that divine runic masters were normally busy with their own matters every day so they almost never had time to go out in the greater Asura Road and complete missions. Thus, in order to obtain rare god runes they would trade for them here. This was why he thought of exchanging some treasures with god runes.

“You want to become a divine runic master? Hehe…” The divine runic master vendor chuckled. Although hadn’t done any evaluations, his meaning was obvious. In his opinion, a human wanting to become a divine runic master was no different from a toad wanting to eat swan meat.

However, the divine runic master vendor was indeed interested in Lin Ming’s god runes. He asked, “What god runes do you have? Let’s take a look!”

Lin Ming didn’t take out his god runes just yet. If this vendor saw that he had so many rare god runes then he might ask for a ridiculous price.

Lin Ming said, “If I dare to speak like this, then I naturally have quite a few in my inventory.”

As Lin Ming finished speaking he continued looking at the random treasures. His original idea was to casually pick some items and then conveniently take the broken emperor jade too. However, he immediately rejected this after he thought of it.

This was because besides the emperor jade fragment, the other items didn't need to be appraised at all. If he chose a random bunch of bargain items and then added on this strange emperor jade fragment once more, it would inevitably arouse the vendor's suspicions.

It was clear that this vendor didn't understand just what the emperor jade fragment was and Lin Ming lingering around here was suspicious to begin with. If he were to take the emperor jade fragment with a bunch of other things, then that would be far too suspicious.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming directly took up the emperor jade fragment and then flipped it over a few times in his hand. He suddenly said to Xiao Moxian, "Xian'er, I remember you said that your uncle wanted to refine his life's magic tool, but he needed to fuse in the treasure spirit of an Empyrean spirit treasure? A complete Empyrean spirit treasure would be too luxurious, but using a fragment should be more than enough. Since your uncle's 103,000th grand birthday celebration is coming up, then how about I make a gift of this spirit treasure fragment?"

Lin Ming was simply making things up on the spot. Where did Xiao Moxian have an uncle that needed an Empyrean spirit treasure to refine his life's magic tool?

But, Xiao Moxian was a smart young woman; she immediately realized that Lin Ming wanted to hide his intentions of buying this broken jade and avoid the suspicion of the old man.

"Could this broken jade be a treasure?"

Xiao Moxian felt this all a bit too unbelievable. But, whether or not Lin Ming's judgment was correct, she wouldn't ruin his play anyways. Without revealing a puzzled expression, she slapped on the most helpless look that she could. With a thick embarrassment in her tone, she said, "Sir Lin, don't you think that this gift is… a bit too sad? My uncle's celebration will have people coming from all sides, and if you only take out a spirit treasure fragment then… don't you think it's a bit pitiful to take out? You should know that my uncle handles most decisions of my family. If he has a poor impression of you then I'm afraid that our matters will be…"

Xiao Moxian immediately responded with her own play. Lin Ming was left a bit stunned; wasn't her acting a bit too good?

Hearing Xiao Moxian call this gift a bit… sad, the divine runic master vendor's lips twitched. This was equal to saying that he was selling trash!

Just what sort of noble status was a divine runic master? He had lived to his old age and had a great deal of face, and yet right now he was insulted by a little girl; how could he be happy about this at all?

"Do you want to buy it or not!"

The old divine runic master coldly coughed.

Lin Ming quickly apologized. "Senior has misunderstood the situation. This junior didn't mean it like that. I only meant to say that this magic weapon fragment has the lowest value out of all of Senior's goods, but even so, it would bleed out far too much wealth from me. May I ask just how much this magic weapon fragment is?"

"Heh, you don't need to flatter me into forgetting!" The old man sneered. He stared at Lin Ming and then said, "10 blue soul runes!"

Lin Ming's heart skipped a beat as he heard this. He knew the approximate cost of an Empyrean spirit treasure fragment as well as the cost of a blue soul rune. 10 blue soul god runes for this fragment was far too outrageous. Although Lin Ming could afford 10 blue soul runes, he still felt that this old vendor was cheating him. If he agreed, not only would he make himself seem suspicious but this old man might not even sell it to him anymore.

"10 blue soul runes? Are you joking with me? As a senior, should you really be trying to butcher a junior like this? The most I can offer you is three!" As Lin Ming spoke, he raised three fingers and three blue soul runes floated above his fingertips. Lin Ming had taken special care in choosing these three blue soul runes. Although their value wasn't too high, they were still quite rare among blue soul runes; they couldn't be bought with mere money. Lin Ming wanted to stir up this old divine runic master's interest.

However, Lin Ming never thought that as soon as the old divine runic master saw these three runes, he would immediately grab back the emperor jade fragment!

Lin Ming inwardly grimaced. Could this old man not be planning on selling to him anymore?

If the old divine runic master didn't plan on selling to Lin Ming then Lin Ming didn't have anything else he could do; he could only leave. Otherwise, if Lin Ming offered a higher price, the old man's suspicions would be even higher, finally only having the opposite effect.

The old man flipped the broken jade in his hands several times, carefully probing it and using his sense to evaluate it. This process continued for an entire incense stick of time.

This old man had already appraised this item many times before. In the Divine Runic Masters Guild, the divine runic masters were generally on good terms with each other. When others evaluated this item, they also came up with a similar appraisal.

This sort of magic weapon fragment was likely of the Empyrean spirit treasure rank.

This wasn't too tempting to the old man. If it weren't for the strange lines that covered this piece of jade, he would have already dealt with it.

An Empyrean spirit treasure wasn't priceless even if complete; it would be far lower in value than a transcendent divine might. This was because an Empyrean would at most be able to form a single transcendent divine might in their life, if at all. As for Empyrean spirit treasures, they would create several of them.

An incomplete Empyrean spirit treasure was even less valuable. It's only use was as Lin Ming had said, to draw out its artifact spirit and form one's own treasure.

Finally, the old man handed the broken jade to Lin Ming. He coldly said, “Three blue soul runes, for you.”

Hearing these words, Lin Ming finally relaxed.

This old fellow was cautious and stingy to the point that he could squeeze oil from sand. A junior had chosen one of his items and even given a good reason for doing so, yet he had actually taken it back to look over several times!

Three blue soul runes was a bit high for an Empyrean spirit treasure fragment, but it wasn't too outrageous. Lin Ming feared that the runes he took out weren't able to move the old divine runic master. If so, he could only leave. Otherwise, the more he tried to barter the more suspicious the old man would be. It seemed that Xiao Moxian's performance just now was a bit more effective than he thought.

Lin Ming handed over the three blue soul runes and finally bought what he wanted. As for the old man, he was satisfied with the three blue soul runes Lin Ming had put forth; he had indeed needed them.

Chapter 1550 – Undying Medicine

Chapter 1550 – Undying Medicine

…

…

…

In order to prevent any more problems occurring, after Lin Ming bought his item he took a few more circles around and then bid his farewells to Yue Liuxing and Yue Qifeng. Together with Xiao Moxian, he left the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

"Lin Ming, what is that thing you bought?" Xiao Moxian couldn't help but ask Lin Ming with a sound transmission as soon as they left. Her curiosity had gotten the better of her.

"If I'm not wrong then this should be something left behind by the Asura Road Master." Lin Ming honestly replied. Xiao Moxian was startled upon hearing this. The Asura Road Master!

In the Asura Road, the Asura Road Master was the true divine god. Anything related to him, even if it was only a tiny fragment, was astoundingly valuable. No wonder Lin Ming had tried so hard to buy this piece of broken jade.

"What use does this have?"

"I have no idea at present. But no matter what, we're headed back to Heaven's Secret for now!"

"You want to return to Heaven's Secret?" Xiao Moxian asked, surprised. They had just left from there not too long ago. "What do you want to go to Heaven's Secret for?"

“There’s some information I need. This information is extremely important for me to learn the divine runic arts.”

The divine runic arts were broad and all-encompassing. In order to study them, one needed to invest a massive amount of time and energy while accumulating a tremendous amount of knowledge and experience. What Lin Ming lacked the most now was time. Even if he had the Asura Sutra supporting him, it was impossible to do all of this overnight, and if all of this took too much time then it was meaningless to Lin Ming.

After several hours, Lin Ming arrived at Heaven’s Secret once more. This time, Lin Ming had chosen to change his appearance.

Although Heaven’s Secret sold all sorts of information, what they wouldn’t reveal was what sort of information their guests had inquired about. This was one of the most basic rules of an intelligence network, otherwise there would be no guest that would be able to ask for information in confidence, lest they be looked up by others.

Even so, Lin Ming felt it was safe to change his appearance. After all, the information he was seeking now was highly sensitive.

“Sir, what would you like to inquire about?” The doorman asked Lin Ming at the entrance to Heaven’s Secret.

“Divine runic masters.”

“What rank?”

“Fifth rank and above.”

“Then please go to the fifth floor.” The doorman respectfully said. This was the same floor as last time.

After reaching the fifth floor with Xiao Moxian, Lin Ming took up the wooden sign marked with ‘people’ and then was led to the corresponding room.

In this room, there was a blue-clothed old man waiting for Lin Ming.

The old man sat in the back of the room, separated from guests by a hanging curtain. He spoke to Lin Ming through this curtain.

“What would you like to know?” The old man’s voice was hoarse and gritty, as if he were in the waning years of his life.

“I want information on divine runic masters and alchemists. I do not want any divine runic masters from the Divine Runic Masters Guild. They must live outside of Divine Rune City and should preferably have strange and eccentric personalities. They need to be people who have committed all sorts of sinful and evil deeds. I need their location, their cultivation methods, their cultivation boundaries, an approximation of their strength, what influences support them, and all other related information! Moreover, the divine runic masters should be at the fifth grade or above. At the very least they must be at the fourth grade!”

The blue-clothed old man was surprised as he listened to Lin Ming. “The information you want is extremely detailed so our price will be very high. This is also because if we betray the information of these individuals, our Heaven’s Secret might offend them.”

Heaven’s Secret was an intelligence network and thus they inevitably collected information on great influences and important figures. If they sold this information to others they were likely to offend them, especially if they sold this information to their enemies or other hostile groups. Thus, Heaven’s Secret would be very careful with what sort of information they sold. If they couldn’t offend the individual, then they would never sell the information no matter how high the price. As for those that they could offend, the price would be exorbitantly high.

An intelligence network was involved in all aspects of the world. If their background wasn’t deep enough and they aroused the anger of some people, it was possible that they would be dug up and eliminated!

“Information on divine runic masters is sensitive to begin with. There are often many complex relationships behind these divine runic masters. Luckily, you don’t want any information about divine runic masters that are a part of the Divine Runic Masters Guild, otherwise no matter how many origin energy runes you offered we still wouldn’t sell it to you. If you want information on divine runic masters that have been exiled outside of Divine Rune City, then I can actually provide some information to you. There are a few pieces of information I have which aren’t too involved with the greater influences. Each piece of information will be charged according to the detail as well as the grade of the divine runic master and they will be around 500 million to 700 million origin energy runes each.”

As the blue-clothed old man said these words, even though Lin Ming had already been prepared for this, he still felt his heart drip blood.

This was indeed ridiculously expensive! Although he was wealthy, during all his years in the Asura Road, he had never earned money, only spent it, and he had spent a great deal of it too. Lin Ming didn’t have too many nine sun jades left on him.

Lin Ming took out a piece of white jade and poured his divine sense into it, further detailing his requests. He wanted to know their strength, cultivation, moral behavior, temperament, and so forth. He also only wanted those evil and demonic people. As for divine runic masters that were highly respected and noble characters, he didn’t want them at all.

After the blue-clothed old man looked through the white jade, he said, “There are a total of three individuals that match your request. The total price will be 1.6 billion!”

“Mm…”

Lin Ming took a deep breath and fished out some nine sun jades from his spatial ring. After he lined them up, he said, “Tell me everything.”

“Alright!”

The blue-clothed old man wrote down three sections of information on a jade slip.

Lin Ming took the jade slip and recorded all the information in his mind. Then, he and Xiao Moxian left Heaven's Secret…

………………

100,000 miles southeast of Divine Rune City, there was a remote mountain. People rarely visited this mountain, and deep in a valley of it was a lake that stretched for ten miles, named Star Lake.

As night arrived each evening, Star Lake would be filled with the night winds. The reflection of starlight would shine down on the lake, making it seem like a stretch of liquid silver, beautiful to the eyes.

On one side of Star Lake was an ancient castle.

This castle was built with obsidian, and had already stood here for 100,000 years. A part of the castle extended into the lake, leaving a black reflection on the surface. Looking at this black reflection, one felt a sense of peace and quiet.

However, no one imagined that such a beautiful and wondrous place was in truth a den of darkest evils…

Within the castle, there was a completely sealed off space. The floors were made of pale red tiles and the walls were dark gray. Pill furnaces and divine runic tables were scattered all about, making it seem messy and chaotic.

On these stone tables and on the walls, there were black stains. These stains were left by dried up blood.

In the center of this space, there was a row of metal frames, dozens of them altogether. But, what was startling was that on every metal frame, there was a young girl tied up.

These young girls were in rags and some were even naked. The oldest of them were in their twenties, and there were even those that were 16-17. The youngest among them looked to be around 11-12, with a few 13-14 year olds placed throughout.

Every girl was covered with scars. These scars were found on their necks, thighs, chests, stomachs, and wrists. There were knife wounds, scratches, and even bite marks.

Some wounds were intentionally afflicted, and some seemed specifically designed to let out blood.

After suffering for such a long time, all of these girls were in the depths of despair, their eyes without light, like dying embers. If it weren't for their faint heartbeat and breathing, one might even think that they were dead.

Although they had been tortured into such states, one could still the beauty that hid behind their dirty faces and disheveled hair. It was clear that these were once proud beauties of different races.

There were humans, monsters, demons, and even saints!

In fact, not only were they beauties of different races, but there were those amongst them with relatively high levels of martial talent! Some had special physiques, variation bloodlines, or variation dantians.

Some girls were martial artists. There were those at the Xiantian realm, and even some at the Revolving Core realm.

But now, their cultivations had been sealed away; they were no different from ordinary mortal girls.

If one were to send these girls to large influences, then although they might not have been peak geniuses, they should still have become inner court disciples. If one raised them with enough effort, then there were high chances that they would reach the Divine Lord realm in the future!

But now, all of that was impossible. Their lives would be buried in the horrendous and despairing castle.

Some of these people had been kidnapped, and some had been bought as slaves.

Of them, most were mortals that had never cultivated before. They were simply unable to withstand the inhuman torture. Without a doubt, they would die from suffering in just several months.

But those who cultivated had already been trapped in this castle for several years. After being tortured night and day for several years, the average person would have suffered mental collapse or died. But, the master of this castle was an alchemist, and with all sorts of miracle pills and medicines, wanting to die was nearly impossible. This castle master would even use dangerous pills to heighten the cultivation boundary of these girls, digging out their life potential and then stealing it away.

What awaited them was a lifetime of endless suffering and pain. Only when their essence energy and blood vitality was sucked dry, only when their youth and strength had faded, would they be abandoned and buried in the back gardens of the castle. Seemingly because of the presence of their skeletons, the flowers in the back gardens bloomed especially bright.

At this time, the space barriers of this hidden space suddenly shook violently. A man’s roar echoed out within it!

“Trash! Trash! Damn it all!”

Bang!

With an explosive sound, something seemed to detonate. Stone tables were flipped over and pill furnaces were tossed away, bouncing all over. A pale man with grayish white hair rushed in like a rabid beast.

This man wore tattered robes and he looked to be middle-aged, but, there was not a trace of blood on his face and a faint death aura percolated around his body.

This meant that his life was nearing its end.

“I failed, I failed again! The Life Lifting Undying Pill, just how many times have I failed!?” The man’s eyes were blood red, seeming as if he were about to go crazy! He was a spiritas, but the faint soul glow that symbolized the soul race had already vanished. This was a sign that his fires of life had diminished and his life was nearing its end… he would have at most another hundred years to live.

He dreamed to refine an Endless Life Immortality Pill. For this pill, he had refined for 10,000 years already. He thought that he would never be able to successfully complete the refining of this pill before he died, thus in the last several hundred years, he had been refining the lower quality Life Lifting Undying Pill. He wanted to lengthen his life, even if it were only by several hundred years!

Chapter 1551 – Sex Fiend Torchriver

Chapter 1551 – Sex Fiend Torchriver

…

…

…

"I am a sixth grade divine runic master and eighth grade alchemist, how could I fail here!" The spiritas man seemed to teeter on the edge of insanity. "It's impossible for me to fail, it must be because the blood essence quality of you whores is insufficient!"

The man pulled on a girl's hair, causing her to scream out in pain and fear.

Towards this scene, most of the other girls still had dead expressions on their faces, as if they didn't see anything at all.

But, there were some girls that hadn't been here long enough who trembled as they saw this, panic coloring their complexions.

Here, besides being raped and having their essence energy stolen, this crazy divine runic master would sometimes use their flesh and blood to refine pills! They had witnessed some of their companions being tossed alive into a pill furnace in order to refine Life Lifting Undying Pills.

To life forms with an intelligence of their own, death was an extremely terrifying matter. Upon approaching death, many people would turn crazy and lose all sense of reasoning. In just the mortal world alone, when some kings were on the verge of death, they would use the strength of their entire nation to find life extending medicines. These kings would have alchemists take virgin boys and girls and use their flesh and blood for alchemy. Some kings even specifically raised 12-13 year old virgin girls to take their menstrual blood every month to refine pills, and in order to guarantee the virgin purity of their menstrual blood, they would only allow them to eat berries and drink morning dew.

In the martial world, this insanity could reach the limits!

In particular, if an alchemist feared death, this would intensify everything he did.

“What a pity, what a pity, if I could capture a proud daughter of heaven who reached the Divine Transformation realm before her 60th cultivation year, and then refine her virgin blood essence into a pill, I would definitely be able to live on for another hundred more years!”

The spiritas man spoke as if he had lost his soul, his gestures bizarre and ghostly.

Many years ago, this spiritas man had been an Elder of the Divine Runic Masters Guild and also had a World King cultivation.

As a sixth grade divine runic master, eighth grade alchemist, and even an Elder of the Divine Runic Masters Guild, this spiritas man was blessed with endless brilliant halos around him. There were countless influences that curried his favor, and even Sect Leaders of Great World King influences had to treat him with politeness and respect. As for his disciples and followers in the Divine Runic Masters Guild, there was no need to mention them; they wouldn’t even dare disobey him in the least.

His prestige had been as high as the sun and he lived a life where he was the center of countless stars. There were countless people that respected and admired him, and there were even many female divine runic arts apprentices that willingly offered themselves to him for a higher status, allowing him to do whatever he wished to them.

After tasting these young girls, the spiritas man began to seduce them on his own initiative, bringing in many young girls as his toys. He had held the post of Elder for tens of thousands of years and countless women had been ruined and deceived by him. As for the disciples he received, they tended to be women, and many of these disciples also had to simultaneously serve as his living furnaces.

Towards this spiritas man who was obsessed with obscene desires, even immortals couldn't compare to the lavish lifestyle he lived.

He wasn't satisfied with his World King cultivation and he wasn't satisfied with being an ordinary Elder of the Divine Runic Masters Guild. He wanted to become a Red Robe Elder and he wanted to become a Great World King. He used all methods at his disposal to grab more resources and take advantages of anyone he could. Time and time again he formed deep grudges with others within the Divine Runic Masters Guild, and with his continued violating of young female apprentices, he was finally impeached by the Council of Red Robe Elders and was removed from his post of Elder.

This was something he remembered and something he bore a deep grudge towards. During a trip into a dangerous mystic realm, he tried to wrest away sole possession of a miracle medicine while also killing the divine runic master Elder who had proposed to impeach him. But in the end he was defeated. Not only did he fail to obtain the miracle medicine but he was even beaten to the ground and severely wounded.

Afterwards, he was expelled from the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

Some people wanted to finish him off and cut off the disease at the roots. He fled to the open sea, living a life of seclusion for tens of thousands of years. It was only when his arch enemy died during an exploratory trip into a mystic realm did he show himself again.

But when he reappeared, his lifespan was nearing its end. Not just that, but in the past when he was injured in the mystic realm he had also wounded his divine soul, causing his lifespan to be drastically reduced. During these past years, he had done everything at his disposal to refine life extending pills and pills to restore his divine soul. But, because the foundation of his life force was mostly destroyed, every effort he made was nearly useless to begin with.

As his day of death approached closer and closer, he had fallen into a state of madness. He was too obsessed with his previous life of endless glory and joys and wasn't able to endure the loneliness and desolation until his end. He bought a large number of young women, venting his rage on their bodies and using their blood essence to refine pills. Finally, he built his evil castle of sin on the shores of Star Lake!

Because his divine sense had been damaged and he had thrown his entire being into refining life extending pills, he had no intention or desire to refine other pills. Thus, to many great influences he had lost all value, with none of them bothering with him. Because of this, he could only steal away a limited number of resources; wanting to obtain the proud daughter of heaven that he needed was impossible.

Thus, of the young girls in castle, most of them were simply mortal women with extremely high levels of martial talent.

Bang!

This nearly crazed spiritas man flipped over a stone table and then threw himself onto a young 16 year old girl.

This young girl only had a Pulse Condensation cultivation. She had been born in the Asura Road and had once been the core disciple of a tiny sect. This sect was far too small; one could say that it was situated between the martial world and the mortal world. In her sect, this young girl had been a proud daughter of heaven, admired by countless young disciples.

But in a single night, her entire sect was exterminated. All beauties, all young women with any level of talent, were rolled up in a black wind and brought to this hellish castle.

The one who destroyed her sect was this spiritas man. To her, his World King cultivation was an incomprehensible existence!

This fiend didn’t immediately rape these women. Rather, he used their virgin blood to refine pills, but unfortunately for him, his efforts failed again and again.

This caused him to become even more insane. As he threw himself onto this young 16 year old girl, he ripped away the remnants of her tattered clothes.

In that moment, the young girl was left entirely naked. Her face was pale and she pitifully screamed out. But, this scream seemed to stimulate the spiritas man, causing his eyes to light up with a blood red color. These last years had been endless pain to him, and only by making others feel this pain was he able to be satisfied.

He licked his lips, demonically grinning as he said, “Your whorish blood is too low quality, causing me to fail in refining my Undying Pills. Since that’s the case, keeping your virgin body around any longer is useless. I will suck dry the little primordial yin that you have!”

As the spiritas man cackled, he bit down on her pale shoulder, greedily sucking up her blood. What he was doing was not just drinking her blood but also absorbing her blood essence, using it to restore his declining fires of life.

The young girl crazily struggled, but the more she struggled the more it seemed to arouse this bestial demon. His pupils had gone wide and his entire body was excited. He tore off his own clothes, pressing himself onto her. But, just when he was about to thrust into her body, he stiffened and his enlarged pupils rapidly contracted. In that instant just now, he had felt a sense sweep through this sealed off space, and soon afterwards, a deep killing intent had locked onto him!

Without thinking, he threw himself forwards!

Bang!

With a terrifying explosion of energy, a spear light pierced through the void like a 100,000 foot rainbow!

Under this unstoppable divine light, the space barrier that sealed off this area was torn apart like paper. Not just that, but half of the obsidian castle immediately collapsed!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Stones tumbled as walls came falling down all around. The spiritas man’s hideout was destroyed.

A young man and woman floated in the air. The man grasped a spear, his eyes shimmering with killing intent. He pointed his spear right towards the spiritas man's head.

"You, you are sex fiend divine runic master Torchriver?"

Lin Ming's voice dripped with murder as he glared at this spiritas man.

Lin Ming's request towards Heaven's Secret was that he wanted a fifth grade or above divine runic master who had an ordinary World King cultivation or below, who had no influences, or only weak influences behind them, and did all sorts of evil and sinful deeds.

The information of the first divine runic master that Heaven's Secret had given to him was that of this sex fiend Torchriver. In his life he had raped countless women and he had developed a grotesquely infamous reputation within the Divine Runic Masters Guild. Finally, he had been banished by them.

Lin Ming never imagined that this Torchriver would go so mad as he neared the end of his life. During these past years, it was unknown how many young girls had died beneath his hands. Not even dying 10,000 times would make up for his sins!

Near Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian tightly clenched her jaw; she had borne witness to everything that had happened. To see other women harmed like this, her rage had already reached its limits. "Lin Ming, do not kill him. Leave him a sliver of life; I want him to experience a life that is worse than death!"

Chapter 1552 – Divine Runic Master Shortcut

Chapter 1552 – Divine Runic Master Shortcut

…

…

…

"Who are you?"

To be ambushed just as he was about to rape someone, Torchriver was burning with rage. His eyes were blood red, as if he wanted to devour Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian.

But at this time, he noticed Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian's cultivations.

They were only at the Divine Lord realm!?

Were they hiding their cultivation?

No, that wasn't right… they were extraordinary young elites!

Torchriver had raped countless women in his life, and he usually only preyed on young girls. Thus, he was very sensitive to the life auras that surrounded young girls so he could confirm that Xiao Moxian wasn't very old.

So young, and yet they had reached the Divine Lord realm; just how had they cultivated!?

This discovery caused Torchriver's eyes to shine brilliantly.

"A variation bloodline! She must possess a variation bloodline! A proud daughter of heaven and she also has a variation bloodline! If I can use her blood as medicine and eat her up every day then perhaps I really might be able to heal the wound to my divine soul. I will be able to live for thousands more years and complete my immortality pill!"

Torchriver suddenly cackled, "The heavens haven't abandoned me, they haven't abandoned me! What I lack is a proud daughter of heaven for my alchemy, and yet you have delivered yourself right to my door! Good! Very good! You will become my living furnace. We shall dual cultivate every day and I will bring you to paradise!

As Torchriver spoke, he lewdly stared at Xiao Moxian.

This caused Xiao Moxian to nearly burst apart with rage!

"Lin Ming, dig out his eyes, slice out his tongue, and cripple his cultivation! I want to slice off his flesh and slowly torture him for a hundred years, a thousand years with every slice!

Xiao Moxian came from a demon and monster bloodline to begin with; she was no blindly puerile and benevolent person. How could she allow herself to be insulted in such a way!

"Haha, if I haven't misunderstood then you are only two martial artists at the Divine Lord realm. Your talent is a bit better than those of your generation, and yet you think you can kill me? You are insane! Even though my cultivation boundary has dropped I am still a half-step World King! Catching you two is the same as catching two chickens!"

Torchriver raved. He turned to Lin Ming and chortled again and again, "Is this your little lover boy? Very well, then I shall use him for my alchemy right in front of you!"

Before Torchriver finished speaking, his complexion suddenly changed. He could feel a vast and deep killing intent cover him. Then, the surrounding world changed. The world fell away, the stars vanished, and everything was isolated from him. He was completely trapped in a sealed off space!

"Force field!?"

Torchriver immediately realized that this black-clothed youth had surrounded him with a force field. For such a genius, it wasn't a surprise if they had a force field. But, what astonished Torchriver was that this force field formed an incomparably stable space, far surpassing the limits of any Divine Lord realm martial artist. There were even many Holy Lords who couldn't compare to this!

"Interesting, such talent even causes me to be more inspired to turn you into a pill!" Torchriver said, brilliantly staring at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming coldly sneered, "The information that Heaven's Secret gave me said that you have already fallen to the brink of madness, but now it seems that not only are you mad but you are also stupid. Your cultivation has fallen to a half-step World King, and with your fires of life nearly extinguished, even among half-step World Kings you are the weakest. A talented late Holy Lord martial artist would already be able to brutally murder you and yet you continue to dream on! Now die!"

As Lin Ming spoke, he hurtled himself forwards. Although his speed wasn't fast, his figure was as calm and stable as a mountain!

Nine Stars of the Dao Palace – Purple Temple Dao Palace!

Lin Ming revolved his strength to the limit and smashed his spear down at Torchriver!

Because the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had been lost for far too long a time, and in addition to the changes that occurred in the Heavenly Dao Laws, it had become extremely difficult to practice. But, this difficulty meant that it had become even stronger than before. Although there was no text that stated how the different levels of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace corresponded to the different ranks in the essence gathering system, Lin Ming could approximately confirm that opening a single star in the Nine Stars of the Dao palace far surpassed the early Divine Lord realm of the essence gathering system.

In other words, although Lin Ming appeared to be an early Divine Lord, the truth was that when he combined the cultivation of his body transformation and essence gathering systems, he already far surpassed that.

Torchriver naturally couldn't understand Lin Ming's Nine Stars the Dao Palace. He simply grinned, saying, "Since you want to die, allow me to help you along."

Torchriver took out a deep red sword from his spatial ring and then slashed out at Lin Ming. He wanted to crush Lin Ming's spear light and cut apart Lin Ming's body at the same time!

However, just when his sword light came into contact with the Phoenix Blood Spear, Torchriver's smile froze. The spear light he thought he could easily tear apart actually contained a horrifying strength beyond description. It was like this spear light was formed from heavy stars, able to collapse space and cut through galaxies!

Kacha!

With an explosive sound, Torchriver's sword light shattered. The red spear thrust towards Torchriver's chest!

This spear had locked down Torchriver and locked down the space around him. It was impossible to dodge!

Even Torchriver's blood vitality rebelled, as if it wanted to break free from his body.

…What?

Seeing this spear light rush towards him, Torchriver immediately paled. He thought that killing a junior like Lin Ming would be as easy as turning his hand; he never imagined that this would be the result!

This youth's strength was powerful beyond understanding. Although this spear hadn't pierced him yet, what he knew was that even if he didn't die, this spear strike would still severely wound him and cause him to lose all combat strength!

In this life or death moment, Torchriver punched his own chest and spat out a mouthful of blood essence. This blood essence formed a mysterious symbol in the air!

At the same time, Torchriver pulled out two divine runic symbols from his spatial ring. He thrust them outwards, causing them to burn in the air!

After these two divine runic symbols burned, they turned into a protective barrier that received Lin Ming's spear strike!

Kacha!

With an explosive sound, Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear smashed into this translucent barrier.

In a brief moment, the barrier exploded and the spear continued thrusting ahead, driving into the blood symbol that Torchriver spat out.

And at this time, Lin Ming finally felt a tremendous existence. The Phoenix Blood Spear suddenly slowed down, startling Lin Ming. He had used an arcane technique to strengthen himself, causing the might of this strike to reach the power of five dragons, and yet he hadn't been able to kill this Torchriver who had fallen in cultivation boundary and had nearly lost all his blood vitality!

Without a doubt, this was the work of the divine runic arts.

Torchriver had thrown out two divine runic symbols to lessen Lin Ming's spear potential and had then used a divine runic symbol formed from his own blood to resist Lin Ming's all-out strike. The divine runic arts could be used for more than assisting in alchemy; they could be used in combat.

However, relying on this alone was not enough to change Torchriver's fate. As the Phoenix Blood Spear was blocked by the blood symbol, Lin Ming's thoughts moved and a shadow rushed out from his inner world, hurtling towards Torchriver. This was Lin Ming's Essence Spirit Embryo avatar!

It dwelled in Lin Ming's inner world and could rush out at any time to fight.

After absorbing Tian Mingzi and the others' blood energy, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone had broken through yet another boundary. In terms of mortal bodily strength, it far surpassed Lin Ming!

Ca!

The Essence Spirit Embryo Stone thrust a spear towards Torchriver, aiming to take his head.

"Ahhh!"

Torchriver cried out in alarm, scared out of his mind. A single Lin Ming was already as terrifying as a life-reaping ghost. Only by sacrificing a great portion of his remaining life was he able to form this divine runic symbol of blood to barely resist the attack, and now another Lin Ming had appeared!

Peng!

With a cracking sound, Torchriver's protective energy was unable to withstand the terrifying strength of the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone. In just a moment, Torchriver's defenses collapsed and the avatar's spear pierced through his chest.

The long spear penetrated through Torchriver's body. In front of the horrifying strength of the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, the frail mortal body of a spiritas was no different than paper.

A massive amount of flesh and bones were twisted by this dreadful strength. Torchriver's body was pierced through like a water bag, blood leaking out from all over him.

"How is this possible..."

Torchriver's eyes filled with despair and disbelief. He had been easily defeated by a mere Divine Lord junior and would die here... how could he accept such a ridiculous result?

Pulse Cutting Palm!

Lin Ming smashed his hand into Torchriver's chest. A savage and wild true essence rushed through Torchriver's body, tearing apart every single meridian within him and severing the power of his blood vitality.

In that moment, Torchriver's body fell down from the air like a ragdoll. In a strange coincidence, he fell into the sealed space where the young girls were imprisoned.

Puff!

As the crippled Torchriver plopped to the floor, his blood splashed out. The young girls who were imprisoned stared helplessly on. This unbelievably powerful Torchriver had fallen to the ground like a dead dog, leaving all of them stunned.

Was this a dream?

Torchriver still had a single breath of life remaining. Lin Ming had intentionally kept Torchriver alive, because the shortcut for him to become a divine runic master was in Torchriver's body.

Chapter 1553 – Refine the Soul

Chapter 1553 – Refine the Soul

…

…

…

These girls that had been tortured by Torchriver over so many years had already anticipated that they would die here. They had lost themselves to despair long ago and there was nothing left that could stir anything in their hearts.

But at this moment, they saw that cruel and god-like Torchriver fall onto the floor in a completely inhuman mess, on the verge of death. Then, a faint spark of hope ignited in their stunned eyes.

After being beneath the agonizing abuse of Torchriver for so many years, even if they saw him about to die, they still couldn't believe it. They were afraid that this was all a dream.

At this time, Lin Ming floated down with his long spear in hand. Seeing Lin Ming descend like a god from heaven, the young girls were left in a daze.

"You're free…"

Lin Ming flicked his fingers and several true essence arrows shot forth, cutting the chains that shackled these young girls. Even the energy seals within their bodies were lifted.

The moment that their shackles were cut, because many of the girls were weak and their muscles had atrophied, they fell onto the floor. The pain from this fall finally made them believe that this scene in front of them was real and not a dream!

As they felt the rough ground, they also felt the freedom that they hadn't had for such a long time. Their bodies shivered.

It wasn't known who started crying out first, but the girls couldn't help but weep one after another.

They didn't know who this young man was, but in their hearts, this young man was their god and their savior. Even if they had to take care of him for their entire lives they were willing to do so. Even if this youth wanted them all to die here they would still comply without blinking. This was because when they were imprisoned by Torchriver, they didn't even have the ability to commit suicide. They had lived a life worse than death!

Looking at these young girls, Lin Ming sighed in pity for them, lamenting their fates. Many of them had a decent talent for cultivating martial arts, but their lives were mostly destroyed.

Lin Ming flicked his fingers again and dozens of pills flew into the hands of these young girls. Lin Ming had given them miracle pills to make up for their lost blood vitality and to wash their marrow.

These young girls were abused by Torchriver and their blood vitality had been mostly sucked dry. Each of them had a pale white face and their yin energy was lacking. If they wanted to continue cultivating martial arts in this sort of condition, it would be impossibly difficult to do so.

Normally, the lower cultivation a martial artist was, the worse their bloodline was, the easier it was to make up for lost blood vitality. The higher one's cultivation was, the greater one's bloodline, and the more one's talent defied the heavens, then the more difficult it would be to make up for lost blood vitality.

But as for martial artists with low cultivation, although it was relatively easy to make up for lost blood vitality, they were simply far too weak to find the necessary blood tonics and pills to do so. Thus, for a martial artist at a low cultivation to make up for lost blood vitality was extremely difficult. For these young girls, it was simply impossible.

However, this was a simple task for Lin Ming. To him, these pills weren’t precious at all, but to these starry-eyed girls, these were unrivalled miracle medicines!

Most of these young girls were common mortals. Even if they were to walk down the road of martial arts, they would only be able to reach the Pulse Condensation, Houtian, or Xiantian realms. To them a Heaven Opening Pill would be a priceless treasure, much less these miracle pills that Lin Ming handed out.

“Take these. These are all pills with moderate properties. Even though your bodies are weak, there won't be any side effects.”

Lin Ming gently said. As these girls held the miracle pills in their hands, their fingers began to shiver.

Although they didn’t know what grade these pills were, they could approximate their value from the rich medicinal fragrance wafting off them.

Because of this, there were some girls that held the pills tightly in their hands, not willing to swallow them.

Lin Ming sighed again as he saw this. This was the life of low level, mortal martial artists. To a high level martial artist, things that they casually tossed to the side of the road were incomparably precious treasures to these low level martial artists.

Lin Ming waved his hand once more and shot out some more pills. This time, the pills were thrust right into these girls’ mouths.

“Rest well. You all may leave whenever you wish, or you may also stay here. Three days from now, I will bring you to the nearest mortal city. I suggest that you wait, because the nearest mortal city is 10,000 miles away. Here is something to tide you over for the next few days.”

Lin Ming tossed out a bottle of fasting pills. This was the limit to which he could help these young girls. Their future days and the paths they chose to take would rely on themselves. After thinking some more, he said, “You all possess talent to cultivate the martial arts. In the future, if you can walk far down that road, then perhaps the bitter and painful experiences of your youths might not be a bad thing.”

As Lin Ming finished speaking he no longer delayed. He picked up the nearly dead Torchriver and flew away.

Left behind, the many young girls watched Lin Ming’s fading back, their eyes lost in thought. The fragrance of the medicinal pills was still in their mouths, and the warm medicinal efficacy nourished their bodies, soothing their pain. In their lives, this was probably the happiest moment they had experienced…

Sometimes, setbacks and frustrations weren’t bad. These experiences could allow a person to mature at the fastest speed possible. If a person grew up without experiencing any problems, then it was hard to temper their personality and will. Xiao Moxian was similar; only in the nine years within Tragic Death Valley had she matured in mind.

Lin Ming brought the near-dead Torchriver and went to the deepest depths of Star Lake. Here, he summoned Primordius Heavenly Palace and entered it along with Xiao Moxian.

“Lin Ming, what do you plan on doing?”

Xiao Moxian was confused. Why would Lin Ming spend so much money to purchase information on divine runic masters from Heaven’s Secret. Moreover, he had especially chosen evil and sinful divine runic masters. Could it be that he wanted to save the common people and eliminate future scourges? However, no matter what was said, they had indeed performed a good deed today.

“You’ll know in a bit. This is the first time I’ve tried this so I don’t know whether or not it will succeed.”

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He stretched out his right hand and then a cloud of darkness began to condense over his palm. In another several breaths of time, within this halo of black light, a dark gray cube slowly appeared, exuding a deep and mystical aura.

This was the Magic Cube.

After Lin Ming took out the Magic Cube, the dying and despairing Torchriver suddenly twitched like he had been bitten by a snake. His body immediately stiffened.

He stared at the Magic Cube with wide eyes that were filled with utter panic.

"This... what is this!?"

His voice shivered and fear discolored his face. Torchriver was a spiritas. Within their bodies, the soul was the most important and integral part of them. Thus, he was extremely sensitive to this divine soul artifact, the Magic Cube!

The saints refined their bodies, humans refined their energy, and the spiritas refined their souls. In a sense, the Magic Cube was the greatest and most precious treasure to the entire soul race, but at the same time, it was their supreme nemesis! This was because the Magic Cube was able to directly pull out a person's soul from their body and swallow it!

Now that Torchriver was in front of the Magic Cube, he was in that exact situation. He felt a terrifying force latch onto his body, faintly trying to pull out his soul!

This strength left one drowning in helplessness, filled with fear!

Torchriver had originally been on the verge of collapse. His life was at its end, and with his cultivation being crippled by Lin Ming, there was nothing in his heart but anguish. But now that he faced the Magic Cube, another emotion overcame all else. This feeling was fear. In front of the Magic Cube, he felt as if he was being thrust into the deepest pit of hell, forever unable to reincarnate!

Torchriver struggled to retreat, leaving a trail of blood on the ground. For a spiritas to see the Magic Cube was like a mouse seeing a cat, a frog seeing a snake; this was an instinctual, inborn suppression!

However, he had been locked onto by a strength and was left unable to struggle at all. He could only watch helplessly as the Magic Cube came closer and closer. This feeling was truly bloodcurdling!

"You... what are you trying to do!?"

"I am going to refine your soul." Lin Ming smiled. But at this moment, his smile was extremely fierce. "This is a divine tool that can refine souls. Its name is the Divine Crystal Magic Cube. You might have heard of it before or you might not have, but none of that matters, because you will soon feel its strength."

"You... what do you want to know, I will tell you anything you want, do not swallow my soul!"

Torchriver was paler than white, his voice trembling the entire time.

"I'm sorry. The things I want to know are not things you can tell me."

Lin Ming fiendishly grinned. Then, he poured his origin energy into the Magic Cube. The Magic Cube began to spin, sucking up all of the nearby divine soul energy!

With the Magic Cube as the center, a black vortex appeared, seeming as if it could swallow the world!

"Ahhhhhh!"

Torchriver issued a heart-piercing scream. His body was twisted apart in this vortex and crushed to pieces. A deep blue divine soul was forcefully torn out from his ruined body before being sucked into the Magic Cube!

"No - !"

Torchriver’s last cry seemed to stretch to infinity within this vortex, completed distorted.

After that came pain, a pain that couldn’t be described.

A terrifying energy struck his soul form!

And forcefully tore away his spirit mark!

The souls of the spiritas were strong to begin with and their spirit marks were extremely deep. For their spirit mark to be torn out, the pain was excruciating beyond compare.

Torchriver felt as if time had slowed down to a crawl. Each breath of time seemed to last as long as a year. This endless and inexhaustible pain made him want to die but he simply didn’t possess the ability to kill himself.

Torchriver cried out again and again. Lin Ming was able to extinguish his soul from the start, but he didn’t do so. Instead, he slowly grinded away Torchriver’s spirit mark. Towards this scumbag divine runic master who had caused so much suffering, only this sort of fate could slightly make up for all his sins.

A person’s soul was composed of pure memories and their spirit mark. This was a person’s ‘characteristic of life’. If they lost either half then the person would lose all sense of self.

A person’s spirit mark was like endless tiny filaments that thoroughly penetrated into every nook and cranny of a person’s soul. Wanting to completely erase them without damaging the memories was impossible. But, the Magic Cube could actually do this. It had the ability to pull out these tiny, imperceptible threads.

And as this ability was reflected on Torchriver’s body, it was more painful than being slowly flayed alive!

Lin Ming slowly and carefully removed Torchriver’s spirit mark from his memories. This was also because Lin Ming had never used the Magic Cube in this manner before. It was his first time using the Magic Cube to produce memory fragments on his own initiative.

In order to maintain the full body of Torchriver's memories, Lin Ming used a full day and night to complete this laborious work. And as he was nearing the end, Torchriver's soul had already dimmed down to nothing but an ember. His consciousness had been slowly tortured and destroyed by Lin Ming.

Chapter 1554 – Heavenly Extreme Bliss

Chapter 1554 – Heavenly Extreme Bliss

…

…

…

This day and night of pain was simply indescribable. Even Xiao Moxian who swore she would cut Torchriver to pieces still felt her heart skip a beat as she saw his fate. The echoes of pain that transmitted from Torchriver's soul were far too brutal and agonizing. It was hard to imagine just what he had experienced in this day.

"Finished…" Lin Ming let out a long sigh of relief. He looked towards the complete ownerless memory fragment that floated within the Magic Cube and a happy expression crossed his lips. He had spent a great sum of money at Heaven's Secret to purchase information and then had cut down Torchriver with all of his strength. Everything he did was for this ownerless and complete memory fragment, the memories of a divine runic master!

Of the three divine tools, the Divine Magic Cube, Grandmist Spirit Bead, and that secretive and mysterious Purple Card, each one was the highest level of treasures.

For the Purple Card, Lin Ming had no idea what its function was.

But as for the Magic Cube and Grandmist Spirit Bead, he had more or less dug out their secrets.

Of the Grandmist Spirit Bead and the Magic Cube, one was focused on the body and the other on the soul!

The Grandmist Spirit Bead could forcefully wrest away and swallow the blood vitality of all life. Moreover, it possessed the ability to condense all of this blood vitality into Grandmist Spirit Bead essence. The effects of the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence even surpassed a transcendent divine pill that was refined by an Empyrean!

When Lin Ming broke through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, if he didn't have the help of the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence, then even if he had the strength from the Essence Spirit Embryo stone and Xiao Moxian's primordial yin blood, it still wouldn't have been enough for him to achieve his breakthrough!

The reason that the Good Fortune Saint Son had the strength to suppress an ordinary World King with his peak Divine Lord realm cultivation was all because of the heaven-defying support of the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

In a sense, the Grandmist Spirit Bead suited the saint race far more than any other race.

If a human were to obtain the Grandmist Spirit Bead then the use of it would be extremely minor for them. This was because the road of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had been blocked!

In the past when Empyrean Primordius obtained the Grandmist Spirit Bead, his essence gathering system cultivation had already reached the World King boundary. But, he hadn't started body transformation yet at all; he had started everything from zero.

Not only was this road of martial arts one that defied the heavens, but Empyrean Primordius had also missed the best opportunity for him to cultivate body transformation. The difficulty of the road he took afterwards could be imagined.

Even so, Empyrean Primordius had finally relied on the heaven-defying effects of the Grandmist Spirit Bead and his own prodigious talent to break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. But, Empyrean Primordius hadn't opened too many Dao Palaces. At that time, his essence gathering system cultivation was the extreme Empyrean realm, but his Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had only opened four or five palaces. His body transformation cultivation was far inferior to his essence gathering cultivation and his body transformation technique only had a limited ability to enhance his combat strength.

In comparison, Lin Ming had a Divine Lord realm cultivation and had opened a single star of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. Currently, his body transformation cultivation was higher than his essence gathering system cultivation. It was similar to giving a child a well-crafted and accurate crossbow, making that child's lethal killing ability to rise to an all new level. Even a strong and robust man could still be severely wounded or shot dead by an accurate arrow.

Therefore, Lin Ming was able to cross two large boundaries in the essence gathering system and contend with an ordinary World King!

As for the Magic Cube, its abilities seemed to surpass even those of the Grandmist Spirit Bead. It was able to ignore the protection of the flesh and directly exterminate an enemy's soul.

But, the true strength of the Magic Cube wasn't its ability to directly extinguish a person's soul and increase Lin Ming's combat strength. Rather, the true strength of the Magic Cube lay in its ability to cleanse a person's soul of its spirit mark, turning it into pure memories that could be freely absorbed without needing to worry that one would fall into madness! This heaven-defying effect was perfectly suited for plundering the cultivation methods of others!

The cultivation methods of the martial world couldn't be passed on orally but had to be passed on through cultivation method jade slips. This was because cultivation method jade slips were far too complex and couldn't be fully explained in words alone.

However, with the Magic Cube, Lin Ming was able to completely accept and inherit any martial artist's cultivation methods. This even included their attainments and experiences in those cultivation methods!

Thus, Lin Ming could cultivate at an astronomical speed. When combined with his superior perception, the speed of his progress could only be described as rising 10,000 miles in a single day!

Besides cultivation methods, almost everything else was applicable. This included divine runic arts, alchemy, array formations, refining technique, any many other skills. Not only could he inherit all of their knowledge but he could inherit all of their experience!

And what Lin Ming needed to do was to constantly practice, thoroughly mastering this knowledge and reviewing these experiences, fusing those memories into his body until they became instinctual. This method of studying and speed of learning was simply mind-boggling, truly heaven-defying!

The divine runic arts that took others dozens of years to learn would only take Lin Ming several months of practice!

It could be said that when Lin Ming had reached the Divine Lord boundary and gained the ability to activate the Magic Cube, he had silently undergone a dreadful transformation, one that no one knew about!

As Lin Ming grew stronger he would be able to kill stronger masters and swallow their memories!

And the more memories Lin Ming swallowed, the faster his cultivation would rise and the stronger he would become!

As long as he had enough time, Lin Ming's strength would grow like a snowball rolling down a snowy mountain, rapidly growing! He would eventually become a perfectly versatile genius, skilled in all aspects!

Thus, although the Grandmist Spirit Bead was also a priceless treasure to Lin Ming, during his youth, the use of the Grandmist Spirit Bead was far inferior to the help of the Magic Cube.

From what he knew, the Grandmist Spirit Bead focused on the mortal body and was able to produce endless medicines that surpassed the rank of transcendent divine pills. But, transcendent divine pills were still something that Lin Ming could find if he went searching for lucky chances, wandering through danger zones, or he might even be able to purchase them.

However, soul fragments from the Magic Cube were different. This would save a massive amount of cultivation time for Lin Ming, and what Lin Ming needed the most right now was time.

Lin Ming closed his eyes in meditation, restoring his divine soul to its peak state. Then, he began to swallow Torchriver's ownerless soul.

These were the complete memories of an ordinary World King. The amount of information stored within it reached unimaginable levels!

When Lin Ming was in the lower realms, he had only absorbed small soul fragments. Moreover, the past masters of these soul fragments didn't surpass Holy Lords before they had died. Even so, to the Lin Ming of that time, these soul fragments placed a tremendous burden on his divine soul.

Swallowing these ownerless memories was like cutting open his head and stuffing in a massive amount of information. Because there was too much information and it was far too complex and diverse, Lin Ming had felt as if his head would explode. This wasn't something that the average person was able to withstand.

Fortunately, during Lin Ming's nine years in Tragic Death Valley, he had cultivated the Divine Mist Heart Mantra and his soul force was no longer comparable to how it was in the past. Although abruptly absorbing the memories of an ordinary World King was extremely difficult, it wasn't to the degree where it would instantly shatter his spiritual sea.

It had to be known that Torchriver had lived for nearly a million years. Moreover, a World King had an extremely sharp memory and they were able to memorize things very clearly and in much detail. As these memories accumulated over time, the total quantity of them was simply unimaginable!

When Lin Ming let open his spiritual sea, these memories rushed into him like endless waves from a dam that broke apart. Even though Lin Ming was already prepared, he was nearly washed away in this deluge of memories and his divine soul almost lost!

He hurriedly guarded his mind, summoning a battle spirit sword and sending it howling out!

Kacha!

Torchriver's ownerless soul was chopped to pieces by Lin Ming's battle spirit!

Lin Ming swept through these soul fragments at a frightening speed, immediately discarding large numbers of useless soul fragments.

These included Torchriver's life experiences, his dealings with others, his friends, foes, and so forth.

There were also a great number of memories from when Torchriver lured, raped, and intimidated young girls. All of these were discarded by Lin Ming.

However, upon seeing these memories, Lin Ming thought more and more that this Torchriver died a deserving death. He had simply ruined far too many young girls. After being raped by him, many of these young girls had been savagely tortured to death. He had even gone into the world of mortals, disguising himself as a bandit rapist and violating young girls from all over. The youngest of these was even 12-13 years old.

For such a disgustingly immoral despoiler to reach this level, it was truly a rare sight.

Different people had different pursuits in life. What Lin Ming pursued was the peak of martial arts and to stand on par with the heavens and earth. But this Torchriver pursued immortality so that he could enjoy new young girls forever, tasting them all whether it was now, a thousand years from now, or a million years from now.

Torchriver's ownerless memories were quickly chopped into hundreds upon hundreds of pieces. Like this, 99% of the memories were thrown away by Lin Ming.

The only remaining memories were those related to cultivation method inheritances, divine runic arts, and alchemy.

But upon reviewing Torchriver's cultivation methods, Lin Ming was stunned. Torchriver had over 100 different cultivation methods and even a complete transcendent divine might.

With the status of an ordinary World King, it was very difficult to ever hope of learning a complete transcendent divine might. But, as a divine runic master, Torchriver was wealthier than some Great World Kings. By spending a massive amount of wealth he was able to obtain this transcendent divine might. And, what left Lin Ming speechless was that this transcendent divine might was called Heavenly Extreme Bliss; it was a dual cultivation method.

Out of Torchriver's 100 some cultivation methods, over 70 of them were related to dual cultivation. He had really taken the road of obscenity to the limit.

Lin Ming threw away most of these cultivation methods. He simply couldn't be bothered with looking at these low level ones. But, it was too wasteful if this complete transcendent divine might was lost like this.

Thinking about this, he kept the Heavenly Extreme Bliss.

At this time, Lin Ming seemed to realize something. He momentarily stopped absorbing Torchriver's soul fragments.

Then, Lin Ming took the spatial ring from Torchriver and crushed it. A massive amount or bottles, jars, pill boxes, and all sorts of things came flying out.

Among the mess was a pink jade slip that Lin Ming grabbed. This pink jade slip was the complete cultivation method jade slip for Heavenly Extremely Bliss!

Torchriver had used several hundred thousands of years of time accumulate a massive amount of wealth through his career as a divine runic master. Then, in addition to a mind-boggling lucky chance that he obtained in a mystic realm, he had traded all of that for this complete transcendent divine might jade slip!

This caused Lin Ming to sigh. In terms of obscenity, Torchriver had done everything in his power to reach the peak!

“Mm? What is that?” Xiao Moxian watched as Lin Ming temporarily withdrew from absorbing memories and then specifically took out the jade slip. She could immediately feel that this jade slip wasn’t ordinary.

“Uh… this is… a complete transcendent divine might…”

Lin Ming dryly coughed and awkwardly gesticulated.

“A complete transcendent divine might jade slip?” Xiao Moxian was startled. “An ordinary World King had this sort of thing!? Not even Tian Mingzi had one!”

Tian Mingzi only had two incomplete transcendent divine mights. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have entered Demondawn Heavenly Palace to study the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art.

“That’s right. Divine runic masters are ridiculously rich. This jade slip was obtained by another World King in a mystic realm, but after that World King tried practicing this cultivation method to 60-70%, he realized that it didn’t fit him too well. The World King took it out to sell, and in order to obtain this jade slip, Torchriver paid a heart-bleeding price, trading half of his lifetime savings for it.”

“I see… can I see what sort of jade slip that is?” Xiao Moxian laughed and took the jade slip from Lin Ming’s hands.

Chapter 1555 – Learning Skills

Chapter 1555 – Learning Skills

…

…

…

Xiao Moxian happily began to search through the contents within the jade slip, but after she saw what was inside she was left completely stunned. The descriptions of the cultivation method were extremely graphic and exceedingly pornographic.

This was actually a dual cultivation method.

Xiao Moxian blushed. She sputtered, saying, “Bleh, just what sort of Empyrean was this? I can’t believe that the summary of their lifetime’s studies is this sort of thing.”

Lin Ming awkwardly coughed. “This is a cultivation method formed by husband and wife Empyreans who took the sexual road… the two of them were peerless geniuses of their time and both became Empyreans together.

Lin Ming had scanned through Torchriver’s memories and knew what the origin of this cultivation method was.

For a husband and wife to cultivate to the Empyrean realm together was an extremely rare sight. Empyreans were already rare in the martial world; an Empyrean Holy Land might not even be able to train an Empyrean successor in tens of millions of years, and for a couple to reach the Empyrean boundary together was far rarer than that. For instance, Empyrean Demondawn and the Monster Emperor only had World Kings as wives.

"Cultivate into Empyreans together? Heh, Lin Ming, we must become True Divinities together!"

Xiao Moxian suddenly said, stating her goal. She wanted to become a True Divinity, and in her opinion it wasn't difficult at all for Lin Ming to accomplish this. For him, the realm of True Divinity might even be underestimating him.

Xiao Moxian was filled with anticipation as she thought of cultivating into True Divinities with Lin Ming. Perhaps, they would leave behind an eternal story of love and adventure, one that would be spoken about by the future generations, just like Empyrean Divine Seal!

"Alright."

Lin Ming chuckled. In truth, his goal surpassed that of a True Divinity. He wanted to surpass a True Divinity and reach the peak of all martial arts.

Xiao Moxian grinned and put away the Heavenly Extreme Bliss jade slip. This jade slip was only good as reference material for Xiao Moxian; she wasn't satisfied with taking the path of others. When she had the ability to do so, she would carve out her own cultivation path. Only like this would she be able to surpass those who came before her.

At this time, Lin Ming had reentered the soul space and continued to absorb Torchriver's memory fragments. Now he was about to absorb the most essential part – memories of the divine runic arts and alchemy!

This was the main reason that Lin Ming had killed Torchriver.

Torchriver had already reached the last years of his life and had fallen into a demented state, ready to die at any moment. He had lost all value, and in this situation, there was no one that would bother to provoke someone who had once been a World King and was even now a half-step World King.

As for him ruining the lives of countless young women, there were even fewer people that cared about this. When a martial artist began slaughtering, sometimes they would exterminate entire cities. They could destroy what they wanted and no one would chase after this; this was a brutal world where strength reigned supreme. Besides the Heavenly Dao, there were no laws that stood above martial arts.

For a time, images of runes and array formations rushed into Lin Ming's mind.

Torchriver had been a divine runic master and alchemist for several hundred thousands of years. Although he was a sinful person, his accomplishments in divine runic arts and alchemy were truly worthy of respect!

After all, he had once been an Elder of the Divine Runic Masters Guild, and was a true sixth grade divine runic master!

It had to be known that in the Divine Runic Masters Guild, an eighth grade divine runic master was a legend and ninth grade divine runic masters were ancient myths that only existed billions of years ago. It could be said that a seventh grade divine runic master was the highest level there was, and if one had such ability, they could even become Guild President of the Divine Runic Masters Guild!

If one had to forcefully equate ranks of divine runic masters with the cultivation ranks of a martial artist, then a seventh grade divine runic master would be equal to an Empyrean. And in fact, there were many divine runic masters that had the strength of an Empyrean!

A sixth grade divine runic master was equal to a World King. Outstanding sixth grade divine runic masters were similar to Great World Kings.

Torchriver was a sixth grade divine runic master, and 100,000 years ago, his cultivation had been that of an ordinary World King.

A fifth grade divine runic master was equal to a Holy Lord.

A fourth grade divine runic master was equal to a Divine Lord.

A third grade divine runic master was equal to Divine Transformation.

Even so, the truth was that a third or fourth grade divine runic master was far more precious than a comparable martial artist of that boundary.

Divine Transformation realm powerhouses could be found everywhere, but third grade divine runic masters had a considerable amount of status. If a third grade divine runic master were a bit younger than average, proving that they had a bright future ahead of them, there would be many great influences that would try to win them over.

Yue Liuxing's senior-apprentice brother was in this type of situation. He had studied the divine runic arts for only several dozen years, and now he had become a third grade divine runic master. Although he was only at the third grade, there were many leaders of large influences that were polite to him, because there was a chance that he could become an Elder of the Divine Runic Masters Guild in the future.

That was a truly incredible person.

As Lin Ming scanned more and more memories, a huge amount of information piled up in his mind. He felt as if a massive steel weight was wildly smashing into his spiritual sea!

Lin Ming grit his teeth, resisting this mind-tearing pain as he slowly reorganized Torchriver's memories.

These memories contained a massive amount of experiences concerning alchemy and divine runic arts that Torchriver had accumulated over hundreds of thousands of years.

Although Torchriver was a lustful villain, there was no doubting his specialized skills. One could even say that he was considerably talented in divine runic arts and alchemy, otherwise it was impossible for him to have become a sixth grade divine runic master, eighth grade alchemist!

Torchriver was also well aware that the divine runic arts were the foundation for his pursuit of comfort, women, and immortality!

Torchriver had an amazingly sharp memory. He was able to clearly remember every young girl that he had abused in the last several hundred thousands of years. But, beyond that, he was also able to clearly remember the process, details, and experiences of all the alchemy and divine runic arts he had done!

Countless experiments, whether they had been failures or successes, had consumed a massive amount of precious materials or hard work. This was the summary of all his experiences and the experiences of his predecessors. It was all invaluable data!

It had to be known that although a divine runic master made a great deal of money, they also burnt through money just as fast. The materials they used often cost several hundred million origin energy runes. If they failed, all of that would vanish into nothing, completely wasted!

To raise a single divine runic master would require a large influence to invest the entirety of their financial resources. For a single person to become a divine runic master alone, that was simply far too difficult.

Every divine runic master had their own unique take on the divine runic arts, and every now and then they would suddenly have strange and bizarre ideas. If they wanted to put these ideas into practice they had to undergo countless revisions and deliberations, because every new idea meant new investments of materials. And of these ideas, over 99% would fail.

But, even failure meant that they would gain more experiences and knowledge from these defeats. And once they succeeded, even if they only succeeded a little bit, this would mean an astonishing new amount of wealth. This success would become some divine runic masters' ultimate secret skill, something they would never pass onto anyone else!

This was inevitable. After all, researching new ideas simply cost far too many resources.

In addition, the Divine Runic Masters Guild was not a single, unified obelisk. Within the guild, many divine runic masters would compete against each other for resources. They would invest their resources into new studies, and whatever new information they gained, they wouldn't pass it on to anyone, not even their own apprentices. In this case, the hundreds of thousands of years of memories that Lin Ming absorbed, and all of the experiences and knowledge that went with them, was simply unable to be measured with mere wealth!

In particular, unlike other divine runic arts apprentices, Lin Ming learnt all of this in a short period of time. Other apprentices would take dozens or hundreds of years, flattering and helping their master and having to also show a great deal of skill before they were taught anything worthwhile. Even then, only when their master retired and had a foot in the coffin would they decide to pass on the essence of their life's studies. But at this time, their apprentice wouldn't be young either.

And those that had the qualifications to flatter their masters and learn true abilities were all direct disciples of divine runic masters, like Yue Liuxing's senior-apprentice brother, Luo Yubai. As for brother and sister duo Yue Liuxing and Yue Qifeng, they wouldn't even see their master more than five times in a month, so what guidance could they possible seek?

Every divine runic master would have more or less a dozen or even dozens of 'unique skills'. And now, all of Torchriver's unique skills had been completely learned by Lin Ming!

What Lin Ming had to do was thoroughly digest all of these experiences and attainments, practicing them until they became natural movements to him. No matter how much knowledge he had, it was useless if his hands and feet couldn't follow his mind.

Xiao Moxian activated Primordius Heavenly Palace's time enchantment, increasing the flow of time to a 20:1 ratio. Within this time enchantment, Lin Ming constantly recalled Torchriver's memories.

After a month passed, Lin Ming had fully carved the hundreds of thousands of years of Torchriver's memories into his spiritual sea, making them completely his.

After finishing all of this, Lin Ming let out a long breath of relief. He hadn't rested for a single moment in this entire month and his temples were pained, he had deep headaches, and his entire body was soaked with sweat.

Lin Ming then rested in meditation for a full 10 hours, slowly restoring himself.

As he opened his eyes, his vision gleamed with a bright light, shining with intelligence!

He knew that the step he took had been the right one. By absorbing the memories of a divine runic master, the advantages he obtained could be imagined!

This had saved Lin Ming dozens and hundreds of years of back-breaking work!

All of this was thanks to the heaven-defying abilities of the Magic Cube. Otherwise, it would have been unimaginably difficult for Lin Ming to study divine runic arts and alchemy!

But, just Torchriver's divine runic arts were not enough.

Lin Ming wasn't satisfied with this alone. He studied the divine runic arts and alchemy in order to pave the road for his Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. After all, unlike Empyrean Primordius, Lin Ming didn't possess the endless essence of the Grandmist Spirit Bead. Lin Ming could only refine pills through alchemy, and the pills required for the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, in particular the last several stars, would be far too difficult for a mere sixth grade divine runic master. He would need to be at least a seventh grade divine runic master!

Torchriver had only been a sixth grade divine runic master. In the future, he would only serve as reference to Lin Ming. Since these memories would all be reference materials, Lin Ming didn't mind having too many of them.

"Come, let's go to where Heaven's Secret said the second divine runic master is."

As Lin Ming spoke, a thick killing intent sparked in his eyes. The second divine runic master was even easier for him to kill. He couldn't help but admire the work of Heaven's

Secret. If it wasn’t for their information then he would never have been able to find so many skilled divine runic masters that had also lost the protection of any great influences.

After receiving Primordius Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming brought along the many young girls that had been imprisoned by Torchriver and flew straight to the southeast. His destination was only a million miles away; it wouldn’t be long before he arrived.

Chapter 1556 – Eternal Glory Cult Leader

Chapter 1556 – Eternal Glory Cult Leader

…

…

…

Over a million miles southeast of Divine Rune City, there was a grand and vibrant mountain range called the Dragon Union Mountain. And within Dragon Union Mountain was a sect that had been founded a mere 100,000 years ago, called the Eternal Glory Cult.

The Eternal Glory Cult had only had two leaders so far, both of them dragons amongst people. However, what was unfortunate was that the first leader had perished in a mystic realm, a story of a man who had died at the prime of his life.

At present, the second Eternal Glory Cult Leader had only commanded the Eternal Glory Cult for a mere thousand years. But in this thousand years of time, the Eternal Glory Cult had rapidly expanded. The new leader was young and filled with promise, with a halo of future wonders to him. Many influences from all over wanted to be on good terms with the Eternal Glory Cult.

Now the Eternal Glory Cult was a peak Holy Land. Within 10,000 years, they had hopes of growing into an ordinary World King Holy Land.

“Eternal glory shines supreme, existing as the heavens!”

In the great square that lay before the doors of the church of the Eternal Glory Cult, over 10,000 people were lying prostrate in worship. These were all disciples of the Eternal Glory Cult, and in the revered seat above the church, a young man in five-colored royal robes was regally sitting, enjoying the worship of these ten thousand plus people.

The Eternal Glory Cult was not just a sect, but also a ‘religion’!

The greatest difference between a sect and a religion was that a sect used inheritances as the core of their foundation while a religion used certain teachings and beliefs as the core of their foundation instead.

Now, the young man sitting in the revered seat was the Eternal Glory Cult Leader. He was the ultimate faith of countless disciples, a being equivalent to god in their eyes.

These disciples constantly went out to preach and find new followers on missionary expeditions. These believers were all loyal to this young man, and the fanatical ones were willing to die for him.

This young cult leader possessed not just outstanding talent but he was also a divine runic master.

He had refused the approaches of countless large influences trying to win him over and prop up his sect. This was because he had great ambitions and was unwilling to bow down before anyone. He wanted to be the ultimate master of his fate, ruling over this world of his!

But at this time, this young man felt his heart turn cold. Suddenly, without warning, a killing intent beyond his understanding locked onto him. As his complexion changed, he immediately leapt upwards!

Bang!

The seat that the young cult leader had been sitting on was destroyed by a horrifying spear light. This caused the expressions of everyone in the square to rapidly change.

A young man and woman appeared in the air, seeming as if they had come from nowhere. They were Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian.

“You are the sixth grade divine runic master, Chifeng?”

Lin Ming looked over this Eternal Glory Cult Leader. From appearances, this cult leader didn't seem too old, but the truth was far different.

"Who are you?" The man's complexion turned cold. This unknown other party was exuding thick killing intent; he had clearly come here with no good intentions.

"Chifeng, peak Holy Lord cultivation, outstanding martial talent, his strength shows scorn for all other martial artists of his realm. In the divine runic arts, his talent is similarly peerless. With his peak Holy Lord cultivation, he managed to become a sixth grade divine runic master. He can be called a truly rare talent!

"However, this person's character is cruel and sinister. He has great ambitions and is unwilling to yield to any influence or any person. He wishes to found his own sect and rule the world. He loves the worship and admiration of people and wants to become the god of countless others.

"In a mystic realm danger zone, in order to obtain an ancient inheritance, Chifeng killed his own master – the first leader of the Eternal Glory Cult. Afterwards, he took his master's place and became the second leader of the Eternal Glory Cult and began to secretly practice the ancient inheritance he obtained in that mystic realm.

"And in order to practice this ancient inheritance, one needed the power of 'belief'. Thus, Chifeng turned and developed the Eternal Glory Cult into his own personal religion, drawing in innumerable believers so that he could use their prayers and worship to cultivate his own martial arts! But, what these followers of his don't know is that once their power of belief is sucked out, their life origin energy will also be lost, causing their own cultivations to be hindered…"

Lin Ming loudly spoke, pouring true essence into his voice. These were all words passed to him by Heaven's Secret.

Upon hearing these words, Chifeng's face turned darker than water.

"What utter nonsense!"

“Hah, if you don’t want others to know about your deeds then you should have never done them. During the adventure into that mystic realm, it wasn’t just you and your master who went; there were many other witnesses. Unfortunately, your master was blind and accepted a disciple like you. Not just that, but in order to consolidate your status as the cult leader, you even married his daughter. What a pity; his daughter never knew that her father died beneath the hands of her husband!”

After Lin Ming learned the Divine Mist Heart Mantra he developed even sharper perceptions of soul force. As he spoke he could clearly feel fluctuations in Chifeng’s divine soul. With this, Lin Ming was able to confirm that the information Heaven’s Secret gave to him was more or less correct!

To sell this information for several hundred millions of origin energy runes, it naturally had a certain guarantee of authenticity!

“Chifeng, your talent is outstanding. Whether it is divine runic arts or alchemy, you have wonderful attainments, and even your martial arts cultivation is the same. But too bad for you, you have made a grave mistake. You were far too arrogant, and before you were able to spread your wings, you became far too hasty and tried to train in your devil arts and found your own religion. Because you were unwilling to serve under others, you rejected the invitation of all the other great influences and thus you have lost their protection. Now, this day shall be the day of your death!”

Lin Ming drew out the Phoenix Blood Spear and pointed it straight towards Chifeng’s head.

And at this time, the many followers of the Eternal Glory Cult had become enraged. They soared up in droves, surrounding Lin Ming.

“Just who are you!? Since you dare to offend our god, your punishment will be your life!”

“You actually dared to slander our cult leader and even the past cult leader! You will burn in the fires of hell for a thousand years before your bones turn to ash!”

The followers of the Eternal Glory Cult all drew out their weapons and rushed towards Lin Ming. Their belief and worship of the Eternal Glory Cult was deeply ingrained into their hearts and minds. For Lin Ming to say such heretical words in front of them, this naturally touched their reverse scale.

“What a bunch of idiots! You deserve to have all your strength sucked dry!” Xiao Moxian coldly snorted at the actions of these foolish believers.

And at this time, Chifeng laughed. “The stupid ones are you! With your mere Divine Lord realm cultivation you actually came here to try and trick my people! As my followers have said, you will burn in the fires of hell for a thousand years as your bones turn to ash!”

As Chifeng spoke, Xiao Moxian suddenly attacked. Her body disappeared in a series of afterimages as she launched towards Chifeng at inconceivable speeds!

After her cultivation stepped into the Divine Lord realm and she completed her first phoenix nirvana, Xiao Moxian’s strength had become absolutely terrifying!

“Attack together!”

As the many followers saw Xiao Moxian move, all of them prepared to attack her. But suddenly, an invisible force field came shrouding down over them. A boundless and primal aura spread out in all directions, causing them to freeze where they were, unable to move a single step forwards.

This was Lin Ming’s grandmist space. After pouring grandmist energy into the grandmist space, these followers of the Eternal Glory Cult that were only at the Divine Lord and early Holy Lord realms found it impossible to move even the slightest bit. They were like insects caught in a spider’s web; the more they struggled, the tighter the force field would bind them!

And this force field affected not just the followers but also Chifeng!

Chifeng's complexion changed. He revolved his energy to the limit, wanting to break through the shackles of this force field. But by now, Xiao Moxian had already rushed in front of him!

Her body shimmered with a dazzling black light. The back of her clothes tore open, revealing a pair of phoenix wings that unfurled into the skies. At the same time, Xiao Moxian also burnt her phoenix blood essence!

After experience her phoenix nirvana, she had gained the most important ability of her bloodline; she could burn her blood essence without harming her life source.

Once Lin Ming opened the Gate of Life, he had gained the ability to regenerate his blood essence. But, there were many limits to this ability. Once he burned 50% of his blood essence, he would cause permanent damage and losses to his blood vitality. And, after burning his blood essence he required several days to restore himself. Thus, Lin Ming didn't freely burn it.

However, Xiao Moxian wasn't bound by these worries. After experiencing her first nirvana, she could burn up to 70% of her blood essence without any negative side effects. Moreover, as she went through more and more nirvanas in the future, this 70% limit would slowly disappear until she finally reached the boundary where she could infinitely burn her blood essence. Not just that, but after burning her blood essence, Xiao Moxian restored herself at a pace that far outstripped Lin Ming.

In a way, Xiao Moxian burning her blood essence was similar to Lin Ming opening the Heretical God Force. She could do it whenever she wished.

As she pulled out her whip, she slashed out at Chifeng's face!

Seeing with his own eyes as Xiao Moxian shot towards him with a dreadful momentum, Chifeng's complexion changed. He never imagined that Lin Ming would have such a strange force field, causing him to weaken by 50%.

In this life or death moment, nine divine runic symbols appeared in front of Chifeng. These nine divine runic symbols began to burn together before gathering into an array diagram that blocked Xiao Moxian's whip.

Peng!

With an explosive shattering sound the array diagram broke apart. Chifeng took this change to roar out loud and fly away!

"You are indeed worthy of being a sixth grade divine runic master with such a lifesaving card. Someone with a peak Holy Lord cultivation can actually resist Xian'er's all-out strike even while being covered by the grandmist space."

This was the second divine runic master that Lin Ming had faced. Both of these divine runic masters could be called loners. The divine runic symbols they had were mostly drawn up by themselves, but they still held such power behind them.

Chifeng took out another two divine runic symbols. He slapped them onto his body, causing them to transform into a bright blue set of ice armor. At the same time, his fingers flashed and with a loud shout a fire dragon was shot out by him, impacting towards Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian.

This fire dragon was Chifeng's vital true flame. Many alchemists would subdue a Fire Elemental for their own use, and now that Chifeng faced such powerful enemies, he had summoned the Fire Elemental from within his body. This was also one of his final trump cards.

Xiao Moxian chuckled. Facing this fire dragon, she didn't avoid or dodge, but fired straight towards it!

Ca!

Her black wings danced forth like black sabers, cutting that fire dragon into several pieces. With a loud detonation, the fire dragon blew apart into smoke and ash!

Chifeng was left panic-stricken as he saw this. At the same time, despair began to rise in his heart. Just how did this young girl possess such strength? His all-out attack had actually been defeated by her as if she had been blowing out a candle?

“Waters fill the dragon king’s temple and fires light up the phoenix’s nest. If you want to play with fire in front of me then you might as well set yourself on fire instead!”

If one ignored the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, Xiao Moxian wasn’t much weaker than Lin Ming. She wasn’t someone that a peak Holy Lord was able to handle; this was true even for an outstanding existence amongst peak Holy Lords. Moreover, for this opponent to use flames to attack her, it was like he wanted to die.

Chapter 1557 – Thorough Mastery

Chapter 1557 – Thorough Mastery

…

…

…

“Let me show you what true fire is.”

Xiao Moxian spread out her hands and ghostly black flames leapt between them, beating like a heart and peacefully burning. Although these flames didn’t seem too hot, the surrounding void began to distort because of these flames, showing just how hot they were.

Chifeng’s complexion changed as he saw this. “You’ve already approached the seventh level Concept, to bring Virtual Fire into reality!”

These flames contained virtual flames and true flames. Once these flames reached the limit in their fusion, the Concept of Fire would enter into the seventh level!

Currently, Xiao Moxian had yet to step into the true seventh level Concept, but even so, this was an extremely exaggerated accomplishment. There were many fire-attribute cultivation method World Kings that couldn’t compare with Xiao Moxian.

Kacha!

Chifeng’s icy armor was blown away by Xiao Moxian’s black flames, with half of his body being charred black in the process. However, he still struggled to the end. He reached out, wanting to pull another divine runic symbol from his spatial ring and bet his life, but at this time, the grandmist space came shrouding down over him, locking down his movements once more.

Meanwhile, Xiao Moxian's whip vanished into dozens of afterimages that formed a cone as they came slashing down!

"Ahh!"

Chifeng was frightened out of his mind. He desperately tried to summon true essence to break free from Lin Ming's force field shackles, but beneath the phantoms of these dozens of whip attacks his protective true essence instantly collapsed as dozens of bloody holes were pierced through him!

And at this time, only then was Chifeng able to pull out a second set of divine runic symbols from his spatial ring. But then, his face paled and he fell downwards with a scream!

Beneath the joint attacks of Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, the originally far weaker Chifeng simply didn't have the ability to resist. The ending to this battle had already been doomed to be one-sided from the start.

In terms of strength, Chifeng was still slightly worse than the completely exhausted Torchriver.

"Take him away!"

Lin Ming indifferently said. Xiao Moxian flicked her hand and her whip tightly wrapped around Chifeng.

"What do you want to do with all these followers?" Xiao Moxian asked as an afterthought.

Lin Ming replied, "Don't bother with them. If they can't tell right from wrong then there will be no future for them in the Asura Road. They will all die sooner or later."

As Lin Ming spoke, his body turned into a beam of light that hurtled into the skies, with Xiao Moxian following right behind.

This was the second divine runic master they had captured: the sixth grade divine runic master, seventh grade alchemist Chifeng!

Although this person was weaker than the cruel and sinful sex fiend Torchriver, in terms of sinisterness, he actually far surpassed him. He had secretly killed his own master in a mystic realm for mere treasures. This sort of heartless decision was almost the same as Tian Mingzi killing the old Verdant Feather World King; this was something Lin Ming hated the most.

And even worse was that after his master had died, Chifeng had married his master's daughter in order to consolidate authority around him. As her heart had been breaking over the death of her father, Chifeng had appeared and comforted her, even propping up the sect by himself. In this sort of situation, it was simple for Chifeng to capture the heart of his master's daughter.

Afterwards, Chifeng had made up all sorts of lies to trick the people and establish his own religion, absorbing the power of faith from his followers to cultivate his devil arts. Although these were heinous actions, they weren't comparable to what he had done before.

In short, this person was deserving of death!

And most important was that killing Chifeng wasn't difficult at all. This sort of genius actually wanted to establish his own sect and had refused all outside help. On this alone, Lin Ming greatly admired Heaven's Secret. For them to have such accurate information was truly remarkable. Lin Ming even suspected that perhaps the cultivation method manual that they used to gather information was on the level of a transcendent divine might.

Lin Ming quickly exterminated Chifeng's soul and erased his spirit mark. Then, he swallowed down Chifeng's soul.

Chifeng wasn't too old. In terms of total amount of memories, he had far less than Torchriver, so it was easier for Lin Ming to absorb them. In Primordius Heavenly Palace's time enchantment, Lin Ming used only a single month to absorb all of these memories.

The reason that Chifeng was able to become a sixth grade divine runic master at the peak Holy Lord realm was all due to his own outstanding talent. However, in terms of the experiences he had accumulated, he was inferior to Torchriver. Even so, Chifeng had many unique ideas and a very wide range of thoughts that provided a great deal of inspirations to Lin Ming.

After Lin Ming killed Chifeng, he had killed two of the three divine runic masters that Heaven's Secret had told him about.

And, the last one was the simplest one.

This person was only a fifth grade divine runic master with an early Holy Lord cultivation. Killing him was extremely easy.

This person had originally been given a death sentence by a Divine Kingdom from the outer Ausra Road. To avoid being hunted down, he had fled into the inner Asura Road. He was a solitary person with a strange and eccentric personality. He was cruel and diabolical, and didn't join any influence, not even the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

Lin Ming flew another 500,000 miles to the southwest. He placed the young girls that had been tortured by Torchriver in a mortal city, and then flew for several more hours before he found the third divine runic master.

There wasn't any difficulty in finding this person and Lin Ming also easily cut him down. Like this, the memories of three divine runic masters had been gathered up by Lin Ming!

Then, Lin Ming used three months within Primordius Heavenly Palace's time enchantment to complete a thorough mastery of all three divine runic masters' memories!

The divine runic arts and inscription technique were essentially the same thing, but the divine runic arts were far more complex.

Moreover, the uses of the divine runic arts were far wider than those of inscription technique!

The function of inscription technique was divided into four types: one was object inscription symbols that increased the power of weapons and armors, one was medicinal inscription symbols that increased the efficacy of pills, one was body inscription symbols that increased the might of the body, and the last were soul inscription symbols that increased the intensity of the soul.

Of these four inscription symbols, Lin Ming had only seen the first three; he had never studied the last kind.

However, divine runic arts not only had all the effects of inscription technique but their usage far outstripped it.

To turn stone into gold, water into oil, all of this was changing the structure of matter. Even changing the shape of a life form could be accomplished by the divine runic arts. A seventh grade divine runic master could even produce divine runic symbols that transformed a martial artist into a pig or dog.

In the Divine Runic Masters Guild, there was a type of punishment where one was transformed into a pig or dog for a thousand years. The martial artist being punished would even retain their original intelligence the entire time.

To have the intelligence of a sentient being while having the body of a pig or dog, this was a truly sickening experience.

In addition, divine runic symbols could even be used in battle.

For instance, Torchriver and Chifeng had both used divine runic symbols to create barriers. They could have even formed offensive fireballs, wind blades, ice arrows, and so forth.

The divine runic symbols produced by a grandmaster could even be used multiple times as long as one poured enough true essence into them.

The divine runic arts were extremely broad in their use; this was because they were the manifestation of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws.

"Xian'er, I must close up for a period of time to practice my divine runic arts and alchemy. Let's return to Divine Runic City first!"

After Lin Ming killed the three divine runic masters he had also obtained their spatial rings. These divine runic masters were considerably wealthy to begin with, and this was especially true for Chifeng; he had accumulated a great deal of wealth through his religion.

Origin energy runes were useful, but the most important thing was that these spatial rings held a massive amount of alchemy materials and divine runic arts materials. These materials were perfectly suited for Lin Ming to practice.

However, the grade of these materials was a bit high for the current Lin Ming. Lin Ming had to start practicing with the most basic of materials before he advanced, and these materials were easily found in the bustling Divine Rune City.

Lin Ming controlled Primordius Heavenly Palace to immediately fly back to Divine Rune City.

Divine Rune City had markets that were dedicated to selling divine runic arts materials. But, if one wished to purchase a massive amount of divine runic arts and alchemy materials, the Divine Runic Masters Guild was the most convenient place to do so.

If one was a divine runic master that was registered to the Divine Runic Masters Guild then they could receive a 10% discount. However, Lin Ming wasn't registered.

As Lin Ming was purchasing materials at the Divine Runic Masters Guild, he pulled out a long list of materials he needed and then bumped into someone he had met before.

A fat old man in white robes with black patterns rounded the corner, wearing a strange eight-cornered hat.

"Uh..."

Lin Ming's expression stiffened and he subconsciously turned away. However, the old man had caught sight of him. The old man had extremely good memory and was able to instantly recognize Lin Ming.

This old man was the spiritas divine runic master vendor who had sold Lin Ming the broken jade during the first time he had come to the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

The spiritas vendor was extremely knowledgeable and shrewd, someone that could squeeze oil from sand. But, he had still been robbed blind by Lin Ming. That broken jade was far too special; besides Lin Ming himself, no one would have been able to recognize it.

As Lin Ming saw this old man, he was a bit suspicious. "This old geezer, he shouldn't have noticed something strange afterwards, right...?"

The truth was that the transaction had already been completed, and even if the old man regretted it there was nothing he could do. Moreover, Lin Ming was strong in his own right and didn't fear this old man.

"Oh, it's you!"

The spiritas old man smiled at Lin Ming. From his expression, Lin Ming couldn't tell whether or not he had regretted selling that broken jade.

"So it's Senior, this is such a coincidence."

Lin Ming hollowly laughed, pretending he had just seen this old man.

"Are you buying materials...?"

The spiritas old man glanced at the list in Lin Ming's hand. He could make out the massive amount of low level materials. These were things that only low level inscription masters, apprentice divine runic masters, and low level alchemists would use.

Normally, when one first started out as a divine runic master, inscription master, or alchemist, they would buy these materials to practice. Of course, these materials were all relatively expensive, and without certain finances, it was impossible to afford them.

The materials on Lin Ming's list alone were worth several hundred million origin energy runes. Although many of these materials were used by novices, they were still considerably expensive. They weren't something that an ordinary divine runic arts apprentice would use. But, Lin Ming didn't care about this. What he cared about the most was their effects in helping him practice, and whether or not they could help him quickly raise his skill in divine runic arts and alchemy. Price was a secondary consideration.

The spiritas old man thoughtfully traced his chin. Then, he recalled the words that Lin Ming had said before, that he had wanted to become a divine runic master. The old man chuckled.

"You want to study divine runic arts and alchemy? Commendable spirit, commendable!"

A strange color appeared on Lin Ming's face. No matter how he heard it, these words were clearly ironic…

In particular, this spiritas old man was smiling so brightly that it appeared far too self-satisfied. Anyone who saw this would think his heart wasn't matching his words, and he was simply joking about…

Chapter 1558 – A Long Lost Feeling

Chapter 1558 – A Long Lost Feeling

…

….

….

Lin Ming drily coughed, saying, “Junior is only trying, but as for whether or not my dreams will succeed, that will depend on whether or not I have talent in this aspect.”

“Haha, you’re quite optimistic. You seem to have just started learning the divine runic arts, or have you not even started yet?”

The spiritas old man smiled, stroking his beard.

“Mm…” Lin Ming gloomily nodded. This old spiritas geezer who had drowned himself in the divine runic arts for tens or even hundreds of thousands of years was able to approximate whether someone had just started learning the divine runic arts. This was a thought completely based on his intuition.

Moreover, when Lin Ming bought the broken jade he hadn’t even known about any of the materials that the old spiritas man was selling. If he said he was a divine runic apprentice or something like that, it would have been far too fake.

“Such perseverance! What wonderful perseverance!” The old spiritas man ‘praised’ yet again. Of course, this so-called praise was simply implying that Lin Ming was biting off more than he could chew, a daydreamer who fantasized too much.

However, with the old man’s smiling face that looked like a Buddha, an outsider simply wouldn’t be able to clearly tell what his meaning was.

“Speaking of the divine runic arts, the materials you want to buy are quite luxurious.” The old spiritas man took up the list of materials and sighed as he looked over it. “Ah, how rich! For you to toss out so much money when you first start learning the divine runic arts, this is enough for two generations! You must have an Empyrean relative in your family…”

“Eh…” Lin Ming was at a loss for words. He simply didn’t reply.

“I say… would you like me to take you in as an apprentice?” The old spiritas man said, his eyes shining.

Lin Ming was stunned. Was there really such a wonderful matter in this world?

Although he didn’t need anyone to teach him, a divine runic master was extremely cautious in accepting any disciples to begin with. If a sixth grade divine runic master said they were accepting an apprentice, there would be countless people stepping over each other to grab that position. Even being a mere secret disciple would be a great honor.

Unfortunately, the higher rank a divine runic master was, the higher their standards in accepting an apprentice. Normally, a divine runic master would accept at most four or five disciples and wanting to become one of these apprentices was easier said than done!

Now, this old spiritas man actually said that he would take in Lin Ming as an apprentice; this left Lin Ming dumbfounded. “Could this old geezer think that I have some talent in the divine runic arts, so he developed thoughts of taking me in as his apprentice?”

Lin Ming felt that if he studied the divine runic arts, even if he didn’t have the heaven-defying abilities of the Magic Cube, his divine soul and perception were already considerably worthy of praise. But, to the spiritas, having a powerful divine soul and soul force was the most basic standard; this couldn’t be considered Lin Ming’s advantage.

As Lin Ming was wondering just what was happening, the old spiritas man’s next words nearly had Lin Ming choking on himself. “As my apprentice, you would have to give me a similar amount of money every month. Of course, paying me in equivalent materials is even better!”

As the old spiritas man spoke, he put forth his hand and stretched out all five fingers.

“....”

Lin Ming wanted to curse out loud. So this old man wanted to take him in as an apprentice so that he could collect tuition expenses.

“This wily old fox, I knew that he wouldn’t be so kind.” Xiao Moxian said with a true essence sound transmission. Lin Ming also bitterly smiled in response, “It seems I overthought the situation. I was far too naïve.”

“Humph, this old man is so cheap. He probably isn’t even willing to teach his own apprentice, so how could he possibly teach strangers. No matter how I look at it, any apprentice he takes in is unlucky.”

Xiao Moxian criticized. All divine runic masters had a high opinion of themselves and valued themselves, but even this was divided into degrees. She had a premonition that this old man valued his knowledge to the point of death.

Seeing the old spiritas man’s hand still floating in front of his face, Lin Ming was left helpless. He slowly asked, “You shouldn’t be thinking of 500 million per month, right? You’re being far too greedy!”

“Smart boy. If you’re really the disciple of some great family then you should be a bit bolder. These materials you bought already cost 500 million, but if I teach you, the effect will be much better.”

The old spiritas man spoke in deep and mysterious tones. He handed a booklet to Lin Ming and said, “This is something I wrote myself, the ‘Secrets of Divine Runic Arts’. Here, take a look, it’s free!”

Lin Ming’s lips twitched but he took the booklet without any expectations. Could something free really be any good?

However, looking at how thick this ‘Secrets of Divine Runic Arts’ was, it couldn’t be that everything inside was useless right? Perhaps there might be some insignificant shred of useful content within it.

Seeing Lin Ming accept the ‘Secrets of Divine Runic Arts’, the old spiritas man chuckled. “I think you’ll change your mind in a few months. At that time, come back and look for me, haha! I must say, you are a human and your talent doesn’t seem too outstanding to begin with, if it wasn’t an open-minded and generous person like myself, an ordinary divine runic master simply wouldn’t be willing to accept you. Luckily, you’ve met me…”

The old spiritas man said with a haughty air of superiority. Xiao Moxian couldn’t bear listening to this anymore, “Hey, just what are you saying! You have no idea what our talent is like!”

“Hehe, I can guess it more or less. It’s not like you know if I did or not.”

The old spiritas man traced his beard, “Remember to look for me if you change your mind. My surname is Xue. Just look for Grandmaster Xue and you’ll find me!”

“In any case… you aren’t short on money, are you?” Lin Ming suddenly asked as he remembered this. He remembered that this old man had only been willing to barter.

“Well, I’ve had something come up recently so I’m a bit tight on money. Moreover, although I said materials are the best, origin energy runes, nine sun jades, I accept all forms of currency. Do you think there is anyone that dislikes having more money?”

The old spiritas man’s eyebrow shot up as he spoke. He rubbed his fingers together in front of Lin Ming and then raised his fingers again for an amount of origin energy runes.

This was truly more annoying the more one saw. Just as Xiao Moxian was unable to resist the impulse to slap him, she was pulled out of the hall by Lin Ming. They had already bought the materials they needed and there was no necessity to stay any longer.

500 million origin energy runes – the amount of materials that would buy could pile up into a mountain.

In these past days, Lin Ming was really spending money like tossing out water. As more and more origin energy runes were spent without earning anything in return, Lin Ming's wealth continued to shrink with every passing day.

Divine runic masters and alchemists were occupations where one used up money like they were burning it. The lowest level materials weren't cheap to begin with, and as one rose in the ranks, the materials would only become increasingly expensive. Although divine runic masters and alchemists were able to earn a great deal of money, they would always feel as if they lacked wealth. This sort of strange reverse phenomenon was especially reflected in the growth of divine runic masters.

But, for those divine runic masters that had plateaued, they were relatively wealthier. This was because they were already past the time of spending money to practice, and unless there was some great project incoming, they normally wouldn't be short on money.

"We have to find some way to earn resources. When I start to pave the road to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, the expenses will only increase, but I fear I'll be a poor man by then."

As Lin Ming was thinking this, he and Xiao Moxian arrived at a divine runic master trading company.

"Two guests, what would you like?"

A young girl welcomed Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian.

"I want to rent a room for alchemy and divine runic arts for one year."

Normally, an alchemist or divine runic master would have their own specialized alchemy chamber or divine runic arts chamber. This place would have array formations that would increase the chances of succeeding in refining pills or drawing up divine runic symbols.

Primordius Heavenly Palace didn’t have these sorts of rooms and if Lin Ming were to build them they would require far too much time and effort. In order to practice at this time, renting a room was the most suitable choice.

“May I inquire as to what grade of room sir would like? We have the best heaven symbol rooms, the slightly better earth symbol rooms and profound symbol rooms, or the ordinary flowing water rooms.”

“The ordinary room is fine.” Lin Ming casually said. He didn’t lack money in renting out a better room, but as someone that was just starting out he didn’t want to depend too much on external factors. The worse the environment was, the more he would be able to practice his techniques.

“Very well. Guests, please come with me.”

The young girl brought Lin Ming to a plain stone chamber.

This stone chamber was a square room around 30-40 feet wide and long. There were several simple array formations inside that were used to increase the intensity of flames and increase a martial artist’s perception. At the center was also a simple alchemy furnace as well as a blue stone divine runic table.

Here, Lin Ming planned to spend an entire year. Although it was possible to use a time enchantment to absorb the memories of divine runic masters, he couldn’t practice divine runic arts or alchemy within one. This was because the divine runic arts and alchemy required one to communicate with the Laws of the outside world and a time enchantment twisted the Laws within it.

Lin Ming didn’t immediately start practicing alchemy or the divine runic arts. Rather, he pulled out the ‘Secrets of Divine Runic Arts’ that old man Xue had given him. After all, this thick booklet should have something interesting in it. Moreover, old man Xue himself was a respectable person with his own reputation to worry about. No matter how stingy he was, he shouldn’t write a worthless book with no value at all to ruin his reputation… right?

Thinking this, Lin Ming opened the ‘Secrets of Divine Runic Arts’ and began skimming through it. But, he quickly discovered that he had been far too naïve yet again. He had seriously overestimated the moral nature of this old man Xue.

The beginning of this ‘Secrets of Divine Runic Arts’ indeed contained some practical knowledge and skills. But, at the most critical parts, it was entirely blank!

Then, this old man Xue would start writing again about entirely different skills and knowledge. But, as one approached the crucial point, it would become blank once more.

This repeated again and again without a single piece of real information offered. The entire booklet was simply to stir one’s appetite for more. After Lin Ming closed the booklet, he couldn’t help but curse, “Shit, I’ve never seen such garbage, this is ridiculous!”

“This old geezer is far too greedy! Wanting to gain the slightest advantage from him is like grabbing feathers from a flying goose, it's more difficult than ascending to heaven!” Xiao Moxian could have been said to have opened her eyes.

“He’s already determined that I cannot learn the divine runic arts so he wants me to give him money. But, it seems he really is short on money currently. I have no idea what he is doing, or perhaps he’s always looking for profits to begin with.”

Lin Ming shook his head, no longer thinking about it. He took out the divine runic pen from the blue stone divine runic table and then poured his origin energy into it. In that moment, he felt something he hadn’t felt for a long time.

This sort of feeling was extremely familiar to Lin Ming; it even touched him a little.

After so many years he had finally picked up the inscription arts that he had left behind so long ago.

The days when Lin Ming was an inscription master were one of the most important sections of his road of martial arts. The inscription technique had been with him through these most difficult years when he first started learning martial arts.

He was even glad that because of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, he could pick up the inscription technique he had put down. This sort of feeling was similar to recalling the times of his youth. During those years, Lin Ming completed the most important transformation of his life. It was a time that he would never be able to forget…

Chapter 1559 – A Spring Rain

Chapter 1559 – A Spring Rain

…

…

…

When Lin Ming was in the lower realms, he had been experienced with inscription technique for a long time; he had even dabbled in alchemy.

Now, attempting the divine runic arts wasn’t strange at all.

He took out a material called a blue tongue orchid and slowly brought it floating up using his soul force. Then, he proceeded to extract the juice from it.

Just this small step wasn’t easy at all. Because someone new to the divine runic arts would have difficulty controlling the release and pressure of their soul force, they would often have to try this step hundreds of times before having a single success.

And every failure was equal to throwing away a considerable amount of wealth.

When a martial artist first learned the divine runic arts, it was the same as burning away a ton of money. In the past, when Lin Ming was in the lower realms and studying inscription technique, in order to save money he hadn’t practiced using materials at the start, but had instead used his true essence to replace materials in drawing up the symbols. Of course, this sort of practice method was very limited in its speed.

Fortunately, Lin Ming was much richer now so he didn’t have to save in such a fashion.

Lin Ming focused his attention, directing a tiny bit of soul force into the blue tongue orchid to extract the juice from within it. At this time, a deep memory swelled forth from within him. This familiar feeling showed Lin Ming just how to use his soul force.

Of the three divine runic masters that Lin Ming had killed, no matter which one it was, they had completed this simple step millions of times already and were incomparably familiar with the process. Thus, even though their spirit mark had been erased, this familiar feeling had lingered on in their ownerless memories, allowing Lin Ming to understand how to control the potency of his soul force from the start. This sort of feeling seemed as if it came naturally to him.

Chi-la!

The blue tongue orchid juice was dragged out by Lin Ming's soul force, forming all sorts of shapes in the air. From just this refined controlling ability alone, if Old Man Xue had seen this he definitely wouldn't believe that Lin Ming was a novice to the divine runic arts.

Lin Ming quickly picked up the divine runic pen and placed the pen tip into the drop of juice. As the pen tip filled with juice, Lin Ming moved his hands and rapidly drew a small rune in the air.

Although this rune was quickly drawn, if one didn't pay careful attention they wouldn't even have thought that Lin Ming had drawn it. The small rune trembled in the air before stabilizing.

This small rune was only the size of a grain of rice.

However, the moment that Lin Ming completed drawing up this rune he shook his head. The truth was that he had failed in the drawing process.

"I've used too much soul force; there are at least seven or eight flaws in this rune. Even though this was a tiny rune, wanting to draw it perfectly wasn't easy at all."

Under the guidance of the three divine runic masters' memories, Lin Ming was well aware of just where he messed up and also how to fix his mistakes. The reason he had failed was because his soul force wasn't able to completely align with his motions. As long as Lin Ming continued to endlessly practice and slowly gain more and more skill, his body would gradually remember this feeling.

Compared to Lin Ming, other divine runic master apprentices would not have such treatment. Many times, they would have no idea where they had gone wrong and they would have to constantly consult with their master. But, their master likely had their own work to do and it was impossible for them to guide their apprentices around all day, personally teaching them hands-on.

If they were consulted too much, anyone would become annoyed. At this time, the apprentice would have to look to his own perception. If their perception was good then they could slowly look through their past experiences and find out where their mistakes had been.

If their perception was poor, then that simply meant they weren't fit to be a divine runic master.

Lin Ming tried again and again, always drawing up the same rune. If he could successfully draw up this rune then he would be far more proficient in drawing it up the second time; it wouldn't be as difficult as when he first attempted it.

Moreover, in the structure of these tiny runes, because of the differences in the processing of energy, the power of one's soul force, and whether one was skilled in harmonizing their movements, this would lead to differences of quality even in the same small rune. Between different divine runic masters there would be tremendous differences in the quality of the same rune. A grandmaster's rune would have effects several times better than that of a divine runic apprentice.

But, a complete divine runic symbol was composed of tens of thousands of these small runes. If every small rune was several times better, then once these differences accumulated then the overall effects of the divine runic symbol would be the difference between night and day.

Even though it was the same divine runic symbol, the divine runic symbol produced by an apprentice could just barely be used. But, the divine runic symbol of a grandmaster would sell for a considerable price at an auction.

What Lin Ming needed to do now was strive for excellence and build a solid foundation, drawing up every rune as perfectly as he could.

Lin Ming wasn't satisfied with becoming a normal divine runic master. He wanted to become a grandmaster. Only then would he be able to build the foundation for practicing the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

Even through repeated failures, Lin Ming kept his calm and patience. He tried again and again, using up a massive amount of materials, but even so, he didn't care for this loss.

If an ordinary divine runic apprentice were to practice like Lin Ming then they would have already overdrawn their soul force. However, Lin Ming's soul force was extremely formidable to begin with, and with him having cultivated the Divine Mist Heart Mantra, he far surpassed most spiritas. Even through these continuous defeats, Lin Ming could still trudge on.

Of course, such perseverance wasn't without limits. After Lin Ming practiced for a full night and day, he felt as if his head would split apart. The divine runic symbols that he drew continued to have mistakes, and after every one, Lin Ming felt as if he wouldn't be able to last much longer.

After finishing drawing up the last rune, Lin Ming felt a dizziness in his mind. He slumped over on a stone bed, his body worn out and aching.

Peng!

With a light cracking sound, the group of divine runic symbols floating in front of Lin Ming exploded in midair, turning into brilliant fireworks before they vanished.

As Lin Ming overdrew the strength of his divine soul, these divine runic symbols were unable to maintain their form. They were naturally destroyed without Lin Ming's support.

Lin Ming didn't feel this was a loss at all. Although he had successfully drawn up these runes, they weren't perfect.

"Lin Ming, are you alright?"

Xiao Moxian asked with concern as she saw Lin Ming's pale face. After they entered this stone chamber, Lin Ming had fully invested himself in drawing up divine runic symbols. He hadn't noticed what Xiao Moxian had been doing during this time.

"I'm fine. I'll feel better once I rest a little." Lin Ming rubbed his temples. Then, he discovered that Xiao Moxian was holding onto a pink jade slip. It was obvious that while Lin Ming had been practicing the divine runic arts, Xiao Moxian had been looking at this jade slip.

"That is… 'Heavenly Extreme Bliss'?"

Lin Ming froze for a moment before coming to this conclusion. This Heavenly Extreme Bliss jade slip was the dual cultivation transcendent divine might that he had obtained from Torchriver.

"Yes, I've been looking over this in the last day."

Xiao Moxian devilishly smiled. Although she wasn't embarrassed, a faint sunny glow still filled her face, making her seem infinitely charming.

If one went into seclusion alone, that was truly a lonely and boring life. In particular, when martial artists closed up they would often do so for dozens of years. To stay in a stone chamber for dozens of years by oneself, a normal person would definitely fall into madness.

Even if a martial artist had a firm mind and will, they would still feel exhausted and weary after dozens of years of loneliness.

But dual cultivating was different. Not only would one cultivate even faster, but the process was extremely enjoyable to begin with. Thus many martial artists happily practiced dual cultivation together, experiencing ultimate bliss even as they raised their cultivations and broke through boundaries.

However, although this method seemed wonderful, it was actually quite difficult. Wanting to find a dual cultivation transcendent divine might like Heavenly Extreme Bliss that was created by a husband and wife Empyrean couple was extremely problematic. And, even if one had a top dual cultivation method, finding a suitable partner wasn't easy either.

In order to dual cultivate, one needed mutual feelings and also a spiritual harmony between the man and woman. Only like this would the body and soul fuse together during dual cultivation, joining together the life force fields. This sort of wonderful state could not be forced. Without an emotional foundation between two partners, the effects of dual cultivation would be extremely limited.

Not just that, but dual cultivation also had requirements in the bloodline, foundation, and talent of both partners. If one were to dual cultivate with a mortal woman or a female martial artist with a sloppy foundation, there would be little to no effect at all. The only result would be giving vent to one's sexual feelings and wasting one's essence energy.

Even for Torchriver, he gradually lost all value as he approached the end of his lifespan. One could even say that he was extremely poor in this aspect. When he chose a young girl, he only chose those with talent to brutalize in order to make up for his losses.

However, Torchriver was unable to force these women to feel anything for him, thus he could only use the most savage and least effective method of raping these women until he sucked up all of their primordial yin. To use this method with Heavenly Extreme Bliss, this was truly a waste of a treasure.

In comparison, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian could be called the best partners for each other. Not only did they have feelings for each other, but each of them had an extremely high level of talent, a solid foundation, and an extraordinary bloodline. Moreover, their two blood energies were in yin yang harmony, a dragon and phoenix rejoicing together. It was like they were a pair of lovers deliberately created by the heavens.

“What have you practiced from that Heavenly Extreme Bliss?” Lin Ming coughed, unable to help asking. Even so, a feeling of gradual anticipation crept over him. Between him and Xiao Moxian, their life forces attracted each other, and when they were together, it wasn’t just the physical sensation of their bodies together, but a spiritual melding. This was the so-called ‘spiritual bond’ that some people felt, and it was truly wonderful.

“I’ve only practiced to the threshold of the first level. Even so, I want to try it with you…”

As Xiao Moxian spoke, she pushed Lin Ming down on the bed. Like this, the two made love to their heart’s content, the spring beauty endlessly glorious. In this process, Lin Ming could also feel the energy and bloodline within him communicating with Xiao Moxian in a very strange way, their yin yang energies harmonizing with each other and becoming increasingly powerful.

It was clear that this strange connection was the Laws of the Heavenly Extremely Bliss.

Chapter 1560 – Leaving Seclusion

Chapter 1560 – Leaving Seclusion

…

…

…

Compared to not having a transcendent divine might rank dual cultivation method, if Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were to try dual cultivating themselves, the effects and speed would naturally be very different.

Heavenly Extreme Bliss focused on training and recuperation. There was absorbing yang to restore yin and absorbing yin to restore yang; both of these were greatly beneficial to both the man and woman. As for the third focus, that was the essence of Heavenly Extreme Bliss.

In short, the main role of Heavenly Extreme Bliss was to consolidate one's foundation and stabilize one's cultivation; the speed of training was terrifyingly fast, especially for geniuses like Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming.

But, if one looked at these and thought that Heavenly Extreme Bliss was not too amazing in the aspect of direct combat, then they would be mistaken. Heavenly Extreme Bliss had offensive martial skills, but these abilities required the man and woman to work in unison in order to display their true striking power. And upon using them, the effects wouldn't be as simple as one plus one.

Thus in the past, although this husband and wife Empyrean couple were only middle to upper rank Empyreans, when they joined forces they were able to contend with a peak Empyrean. This allowed them to have a nearly unparalleled status within the Asura Road!

After dual cultivating with Xiao Moxian for several hours, Lin Ming's originally overdrawn soul force had faintly returned. And during this dual cultivation process, it was Xiao Moxian helping Lin Ming – Lin Ming had barely moved at all. This was a thoroughly enjoyable experience.

This was also reasonable. Although Lin Ming had inherited Torchriver's memories, he hadn't practiced Heavenly Extreme Bliss after all. If he were to try using it then he would inevitably find it a bit strange and unfamiliar.

Slowly, Lin Ming felt his soul force recover by a great deal as he came into perfect harmony with Xiao Moxian. After their repeated rounds of lovemaking, Lin Ming became increasingly radiant, with a significant upturn in the energy circulating through his body.

Lin Ming even felt himself becoming increasingly close to reaching the middle Divine Lord realm!

When Lin Ming had broken through to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, his cultivation had risen straight to the peak of the early Divine Lord realm. Now, he was confident that with several more years of training he would be able to make another breakthrough!

If so, then before Lin Ming was 60 years of age he would be able to break into the middle Divine Lord realm. This was a truly incredible achievement.

As for Xiao Moxian, her cultivation speed far surpassed Lin Ming's.

Xiao Moxian was several years younger than Lin Ming to begin with, and after completing her first phoenix nirvana she had also reached the peak early Divine Lord realm. She might even break into the middle Divine Lord realm before Lin Ming.

"This cultivation method has even better effects than I imagined."

Sitting up on Lin Ming's body, Xiao Moxian dripped with fragrant drops of sweat, still immersed in the blissful pleasure of love. Not only were her cheeks red but her body glowed with jade perfection as if she had been soaking in a hot spring for a long time. She seemed so soft and flushed that one could even pinch out water from her skin.

"This is indeed wonderful. It is rare to find a complete transcendent divine might to begin with, but this dual cultivation method transcendent divine might can only be created by a husband and wife Empyrean. It's impossible for a single Empyrean to create something like this."

Lin Ming had many top cultivation methods, even ones that surpassed the rank of a transcendent divine might. For instance, the Asura Sutra was one such cultivation method, and even the Divine Seal Art was faintly superior to a transcendent divine might.

However, these two cultivation methods were extremely incomplete. Although he could use a part of their strength, wanting to cultivate from the beginning and raise his foundation to make breakthroughs with these cultivation methods was extremely difficult.

In this aspect, Heavenly Extreme Bliss was able to show its true advantages. From the start, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian could feel each other's origin energy surging just by holding hands. And now, with the two making love, the effects of this were naturally unparalleled.

After dual cultivating with Xiao Moxian, Lin Ming felt his state of mind be much improved. Thus, he began to tirelessly practice the divine runic arts once again.

After another period of time, as Lin Ming was drawing up another divine runic symbol, he felt the proficiency of his skill had clearly increased to another level.

Closing his eyes, all sorts of finger movements flashed through his mind. These finger movements originated from the ownerless soul fragment memories and were as natural to Lin Ming as if they were his own.

Grasping the divine runic pen, Lin Ming began to draw up another divine runic symbol.

The divine runic pen was filled with the juice of materials. One by one, gorgeous runes were formed beneath Lin Ming's hand. At the start, Lin Ming would successfully draw one complete rune every seven or eight tries, but now he could succeed after two or three tries.

Each time there was a mistake, Lin Ming would reference the memories of the three divine runic masters to find out where he had gone wrong. This sort of analytic ability far surpassed anything an ordinary divine runic apprentice could hope to achieve.

Slowly, Lin Ming corrected his mistakes. Rune after tiny rune was drawn up by Lin Ming, whereupon they floated in the air.

All sorts of rare and precious materials were turned into runes or wasted in Lin Ming's hands.

Lin Ming didn't care about what results he achieved with these divine runic symbols; all he cared about was the process. By repeating these processes again and again, Lin Ming steadily advanced his skill in the divine runic arts.

Tenth day –

With a forehead coated in sweat, Lin Ming drew up one last rune. In that moment, a thousand floating runes shimmered in the sky, fusing together beneath a strange halo of light. Finally, these runes formed a complete divine rune that floated in the air.

Lin Ming's expression was one of complete focus. He took out a god rune of the Asura Road's Heavenly Dao from his spatial ring. Then, by fusing this god rune with the divine rune he drew up, Lin Ming had produced his first divine runic symbol.

Judging by Lin Ming's memories, this divine runic symbol had many imperfections; it could be called very rough or even useless. But, this was still the first divine runic symbol that Lin Ming had created. In the future, as his skill continued to rise, the effects of the divine runic symbols he created would have better and better effects.

In fact, Lin Ming could even change and improve the structure of divine runic symbols through his own understanding of the divine runic arts.

Training passed without sense of time. Days passed, one after the other. Lin Ming continued to practice drawing divine runic symbols every day, and after his soul force was overdrawn he would dual cultivate with Xiao Moxian. Like this, a year passed.

During this year, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian's cultivation became increasingly close to the middle Divine Lord realm. At the same time, Lin Ming's skill in drawing up low level divine runic symbols had reached near perfection.

He had thoroughly fused the memories of the three divine runic masters into his own divine runic arts. Now, what Lin Ming needed to do was to go to the Divine Runic Masters Guild and undergo the test for becoming a divine runic master. At the same time, he had to find a chance to approach the assassin organization Heaven's Net and come into contact with Blood Moon, so he could obtain the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace portion of the Celestial Tyrant Manual.

As long as Lin Ming had a suitable cultivation method then his cultivation would rise. With enough strength, he would be able to firmly stand tall in the upcoming great calamity.

Chapter 1561 – The Divine Runic Master Examination

Chapter 1561 – The Divine Runic Master Examination

…

…

…

The Divine Runic Masters Guild held examinations for divine runic masters every year. In order to seek out talented individuals, the Divine Runic Masters Guild spared no effort.

For this examination there would always be a massive number of young martial artists that entered into Divine Rune City every year, hoping that they would be able to obtain the recognition of the Divine Runic Masters Guild and bring back the divine runic master badge that they could proudly display to the world.

These youths came not just from Divine Rune City but from many other places all over the Asura Road. For instance, Yue Qifeng and Yue Liuxing were such examples.

In the early morning of the examination, Lin Ming stood in front of the gates of the Divine Runic Masters Guild, looking up at the dignified and weighty plaque. He took a deep breath.

After he became a divine runic master registered with the Divine Runic Masters Guild then it would be much easier for him to come into contact with the Heaven's Net assassin, Blood Moon. With his status as a divine runic master, wanting to exchange for the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace section of the Celestial Tyrant Manual shouldn't be a problem. Moreover, Lin Ming suspected that even though Blood Moon possessed the latter half of the Celestial Tyrant Manual, this cultivation method shouldn't be too useful to him. Lin Ming didn’t believe that there had been anyone besides himself and Empyrean Primordius who had opened the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

“We’re finally here! It’s this place!”

As Lin Ming was lost in thought, he heard a soft woman’s voice behind him. He turned to see a young woman in a white divine runic master’s robe dragging along a gray-haired old man, seemingly in a hurry to enter the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

This young woman looked to be around Xiao Moxian’s age. Beneath her voluminous divine runic master’s robes, one could still see her winding curves. She was definitely a shapely young woman.

On the chest of her robes was a divine runic badge. This badge only had a single rune carved atop it without a single stripe; this was the badge worn by divine runic apprentices.

As for the old man that was being dragged along, he smiled as he was being pulled. “What are you in a hurry for, what are you so anxious for? The examination doesn’t even begin for another two hours and there aren’t many people on the martial field. As for those other old fellows, they definitely won’t appear until the last moment.”

As the old man spoke, Lin Ming glanced at the divine runic master badge on his chest. There were six stripes, indicating that he was a sixth grade divine runic master!

Moreover, the last stripe was embellished with three small runes. This meant that this old man was considered first class amongst sixth grade divine runic masters. He could even be called a superior sixth grade divine runic master!

This was an amazing accomplishment and it also meant that this old man’s cultivation had likely reached the Great World King boundary. Even if it hadn’t, he likely wasn’t too far away.

“The inner Asura Road really has many World Kings…”

Lin Ming was already mentally prepared for this. The Asura Road originally gathered all outstanding individuals from the 33 Heavens, and this was especially true for the inner Asura Road. Moreover, Divine Rune City was one of the most prosperous cities of the inner Asura Road. Here, Holy Lords and Divine Lords were far too common, and even World Kings weren't a rare sight.

As this old man moved towards the gate, the two guards standing there immediately greeted him with great respect, bowing to him. This was the respect given to a sixth grade divine runic master. Even if this old man wasn't a divine runic master of the Divine Runic Masters Guild, this etiquette could not be ignored.

However, as Lin Ming walked closer he clearly wasn't treated so well. The two guards didn't even glance at Lin Ming and allowed him to enter.

In order to join the examination, there were no strict requirements to register. However, there was one point: materials needed to be prepared in advance by the examinee or purchased through the Divine Runic Masters Guild. Only when one successfully passed the examination would they be reimbursed for these materials. This was to prevent some divine runic apprentices from showing up and participating while not caring if they passed or not.

As Lin Ming walked into the hall, he traced his spatial ring. He had prepared five sets of materials today. Two were for the first grade divine runic master examination and three were for the second grade divine runic master examination.

Lin Ming wanted to raise his grade as a divine runic master as soon as possible. This was because even if he obtained the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace section of the Celestial Tyrant Manual, he still required a massive amount of exceedingly rare and precious materials to refine the medicine. However, these rare and precious materials were nearly impossible to collect unless he had the status of a high grade divine runic master!

As he arrived in the examination hall, 11-12 youths were already waiting there.

Lin Ming saw the young girl he had bumped into at the gates. In addition, he saw Yue Liuxing and Yue Qifeng, the brother and sister duo he had met when he first arrived at the inner Asura Road. They were also entering the divine runic master examination this year.

“Eh? Lin Ming!”

“What a coincidence to run into you here.”

This wasn’t as much of a coincidence as it seemed. The last time he saw Yue Liuxing and Yue Qifeng, they had only been divine runic apprentices and now was the appropriate time for them to try out for the diviner runic master examination.

“It’s been a while.” Lin Ming smiled in greeting.

“Lin Ming, what are you doing here?” Yue Liuxing asked, curious. She didn’t think that Lin Ming had come here to take the divine runic master examination with them.

Lin Ming awkwardly coughed. But, just as he was about to answer, the wooden door of the hall opened and another examinee arrived.

As Lin Ming turned, a strangely interested look came over his face.

The newly arrived examinee was also a young girl in her prime, She wore a blue robe and her hair was like a shawl that spread down her back. Her entire body exuded a light and sprightly feeling.

However, what caused the strange expression to come over Lin Ming’s face was not the young girl but the master following behind her. This master was a bit short and fat, with small and bright eyes. From his looks, he resembled an extremely large and fat mouse. This was the Old Man Xue that Lin Ming had accidently encountered in the Divine Runic Masters Guild a year ago.

This Old Man Xue had been tricked by Lin Ming. The emperor jade fragment had been sold to Lin Ming as if it were a mere spirit treasure fragment. Although he hadn’t noticed anything afterwards, Old Man Xue still thought he could con Lin Ming once more and take him in as a disciple. In the end, he failed.

“This stingy old geezer would actually accept an apprentice?” Lin Ming looked at the young and beautiful girl standing in front of Old Man Xue. Although he felt it a bit unbelievable, she was clearly his apprentice. He felt that any apprentice of his was surely unlucky.

Old Man Xue was all smiles as he entered. After passing through the doors, his eyes locked onto another high grade divine runic master. This was the sixth grade divine runic master that Lin Ming had seen at the entrance.

“Old Su, haha, to think I’d see you here today!”

“Hehe, this isn’t something normal. But, let me give you a warning. I brought Clearshadow here today not to become a first grade divine runic master, but to take the test for a second grade divine runic master! At that time, make sure you don’t bully me, haha!”

“Oh! What a coincidence! I also brought my apprentice Dreampearl here to take the second grade divine runic master test.” Old Man Xue responded in sharp opposition. The young girl called Dreampearl behind seemed much more modest. She smiled and said, “Teacher, you think too highly of me. I only have 30% confidence that I can successfully draw up a second grade divine inscription symbol.”

30%!

Although Dreampearl spoke humbly, Old Su still felt his heart skip a beat once he heard this. A divine runic master examination would last for around 10 hours, and during this time an examinee was allowed to attempt drawing up a divine runic symbol several times. Even if one failed once, they still had a second attempt and a third attempt. If she could guarantee a 30% success chance then there really might be a possibility she could pass the test.

Old Su couldn’t help but glance over at his own apprentice Clearshadow. He could faintly feel that Clearshadow didn’t have a 30% chance of success.

“Don’t worry, Teacher! Just because she says 30% doesn’t mean it is 30%. I would like to experience her skills myself!”

Clearshadow wasn’t too anxious or panicked. Old Su nodded in satisfaction. But at this moment, Old Man Xue halted. As soon as he passed through the door he had come into conflict with Old Su and hadn’t noticed the other people in the room. But now that he glanced over everyone else, he discovered there was someone he was acquainted with – Lin Ming, a little pig that he had wanted to butcher for money but that had managed to escape.

“Hey brat, you’re here because…” Looking at Lin Ming’s posture as well as the divine runic pen in his hand, a ridiculous complexion flashed over Old Man Xue’s face. “Brat, don’t tell me you’re here to participate in the divine runic master examination!”

Lin Ming spread out his hands, saying, “It’s a bit regrettable, but… that is the reason I am here.”

“Hahaha!” Old Man Xue heartily smiled, waggling his fat finger at Lin Ming. “You, you must be teasing me! In any case, why don’t you consider my earlier suggestion and become my apprentice? If your talent was too low and you were unfit for the divine runic arts then I wouldn’t think of receiving you to begin with.”

Lin Ming helplessly shrugged and sighed, saying, “I’m really not teasing you.”

Like this, Old Man Xue’s laughter suddenly stopped. He looked at Lin Ming with the eyes of a stranger. He was well aware that a year ago, Lin Ming had been nothing but an interested outsider to the divine runic arts. Now, he wanted to take a go at the divine runic master examination. It seemed this young man really liked to waste his time away.

Well, what’s done was done. This was Lin Ming’s materials and money to begin with so there wasn’t anything he could do.

“Well, keep thinking about it. I think it's best if you were my apprentice.” Old Man Xue said, giving Lin Ming ‘advice’ one more time.

Lin Ming responded, “Senior’s price for taking in an apprentice is too high. This junior truly can’t afford to enjoy such luxuries.”

As Lin Ming spoke, he glanced at the Dreampearl behind Old Man Xue. This young woman was clearly Old Man Xue’s best apprentice, someone who might inherit his complete legacy in the future. Otherwise, there was no way that someone like Old Man Xue would accompany her here for the divine runic master examination.

It was hard to say what was so special about this young woman that someone so stingy like Old Man Xue would see in her.

After listening to Lin Ming joke about Old Man Xue’s tuition fees, Old Su laughed, “Old Xue, just what do you want me to think of you? You would even con a little junior out of his money!”

Old Su naturally wouldn’t relinquish a chance to mock Old Man Xue. However, Old Man Xue’s skin was thick enough for the both of them. After being seen through he said, “All goods come at a cost. If I dare to put out such a price then I naturally have confidence in my worth. Boy, if you don’t believe me then you can come and study with me. I guarantee that it will be much faster than you studying alone.”

Old Man Xue struck his chest in guarantee. But, just as he was about to say something else, the doors to the hall opened once more and another young heroic elite entered.

This person was a spiritas youth that seemed to be just over 20 years old. He walked with mighty strides, like tigers and dragons. His eyes were bright, and there was no teacher following behind him. He had come here alone!

Chapter 1562 – Soul Emperor Divine Void

Chapter 1562 – Soul Emperor Divine Void

…

…

…

The spiritas youth was tall. His eyes were cold and bright, like a warm spring at the summit of a 100,000 foot snowy mountain. His hair was quite special; it was long and wrapped around his waist, supple enough to attract the envy of any woman. It flowed with a silver light, as if it were liquid mercury.

This sort of man had a noble and untouchable charismatic atmosphere, as if he were born to be an emperor.

His sudden appearance immediately attracted the attention of everyone present. Even Lin Ming was surprised; this youth was just far too unusual.

The youth chose a divine runic table to stand at. He watched without touching the ground, only stepping on the air instead. This was because he had released his soul force, turning it into tangible essence that floated beneath his feet. Thus, he simply didn't need to touch the ground.

This was a method of cultivating soul force. By using this method to remain floating all year round, one's soul force would slowly be tempered.

As Old Man Xue and Old Man Su saw this youth, they glanced at each other. They saw a trace of fright appear in the other's eyes.

From this youth's body, they could feel an aura that was difficult to describe. Moreover, the clothing that this young man wore as well as the temperament brought about by his cultivation method reminded them of something.

Old Man Xue thought for a moment, saying, "Young man, are you from Divine Void Divine Kingdom?"

Old Man Xue's words caught the attention of everyone present. Everyone looked towards the young man, their faces filled with anticipation. This was because most of the martial artists present were spiritas, and Divine Void Divine Kingdom had an extraordinary significance to their soul race.

The young man slightly nodded, acknowledging his background. With this, everyone present, including Yue Liuxing and Yue Qifeng, all looked at this spiritas youth with fear and awe in their eyes.

Divine Void Divine Kingdom – that was a spiritas True Divinity Holy Land!

Although Divine Rune City had astonishing influence and power, that was only in terms of alchemy and divine runic arts. In terms of military force alone, Divine Rune City naturally couldn't compare to a True Divinity level influence like Divine Void Divine Kingdom.

"Divine Void Divine Kingdom?"

Lin Ming thought out loud, faintly recalling something.

Old Su sighed with emotion, "Really, heroes come from the youth. We spiritas had two great Divine Kingdoms in the Asura Road – Divine Void and Divine Mist Divine Kingdoms. But because Empyrean Divine Mist strangely disappeared without any trace at all, everything relied on the support of Divine Void Divine Kingdom. But afterwards, when his majesty the Soul Emperor broke through the True Divinity boundary, that made my soul race truly invincible! Looking at you, your foundation is solid and your soul force has managed to condense into substantial essence. It seems you are also a leader amongst the juniors of Divine Void Divine Kingdom."

The spiritas martial artists of Divine Void Divine Kingdom, when compared to the other spiritas, were like the royal family members of the imperial capital compared to the aristocratic families; the difference in status was obvious. Although the silver-haired youth was young, he would definitely become an important figure in the future. Thus, he couldn't be considered a common junior. Even divine runic masters with considerable status like Old Su and Old Man Xue had to treat him with respect.

The silver-haired youth lightly said, "I'm no leader at all. Divine Void Divine Kingdom is filled with extraordinary people. I am merely one of the successors of Divine Void Divine Kingdom's King Qin. 15 years ago, I was taught under Imperial Scholar Lord Pao and learned a little bit of the divine runic arts. When I left the Divine Kingdom to adventure through the world, I heard that Divine Rune City's divine runic arts were without parallel. Thus, I came here to experience just how wonderful they are!"

The silver-haired youth casually said, confidence tinting his voice. In terms of divine runic arts, Divine Void Divine Kingdom was naturally inferior to Divine Rune City. But, the difference wasn't too great. Many top masters of Divine Void Divine Kingdom were divine runic masters.

So, the silver-haired youth had only come to Divine Rune City to 'experience' this place. He wasn't like Yue Qifeng and Yue Liuxing who hoped to study and grow here.

This divine runic arts examination was only a means for this silver-haired youth to prove himself. He didn't really want or need the badge of the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

"So it's the heir to King Qin! How disrespectful of us!" Old Xue had a stern expression as he heard the name of King Qin.

In Divine Void Divine Kingdom, those that earned the title of King were Empyreans. Although Divine Void Divine Kingdom's 'Kings' were only weak Empyreans, an Empyrean was still an Empyrean. Compared to a World King, their status was as different as the heavens and earth.

"Hahaha! This examination truly has so many astonishing people! One Clearshadow, one Dreampearl, those two are already outstanding elites amongst their generation. I thought that these two would be the main leads in the examination, but I should have realized that there is always a higher mountain. As the examination is about to start, someone even more amazing actually appears. Young man, what is your name?"

Old Su asked the silver-haired youth, laughing.

The silver-haired youth cupped his hands across his chest and said, "Qin Yi."

As he spoke, the two proud daughters of heaven, Clearshadow and Dreampearl, both looked at him, a brilliant fighting spirit in their eyes. Indeed, as Old Man Su had said, this examination had far surpassed their expectations.

Although they couldn't make out how skilled this Qin Yi was in the divine runic arts, they could approximate it from his background. If he didn't have true ability then he wouldn't have come to the Divine Runic Masters Guild to lose face. Divine Void Divine Kingdom could be called the spiritual leader of all spiritas within the Asura Road!

Qin Yi would eventually become their greatest competition!

As Old Su and Old Xue were talking to Qin Yi, a peculiar light flashed in Lin Ming's eyes.

Divine Void Divine Kingdom!

Divine Mist Divine Kingdom!

The so-called Divine Mist Divine Kingdom was the Divine Kingdom that Empyrean Divine Mist had founded!

Millions of years ago, Empyrean Divine Mist had already been an extreme Empyrean. However, he had been unable to step into the realm of True Divinity. Afterwards, because of some reason, he was hunted down by his own older brother and was forced into Tragic Death Valley.

Like this, Empyrean Divine Mist had been stranded in Tragic Death Valley for millions of years. In Tragic Death Valley, this was tens of millions of years. Only at the end did he meet Lin Ming.

This older brother of Empyrean Divine Mist, without a doubt, was Empyrean Divine Void! Or, as some others called him, True Divinity Divine Void!

Now, the spiritual leader of the Asura Road’s soul race was the so-called Divine Void Divine Kingdom. And this Divine Kingdom’s ruler was the culprit ultimately responsible for bringing about Empyrean Divine Mist’s ruin!

Lin Ming rapidly realized all of this.

In the past, when Lin Ming asked Empyrean Divine Mist why he had been chased into Tragic Death Valley, Empyrean Divine Mist had only responded with a single word – enmity.

It was only just before he left Tragic Death Valley that Empyrean Divine Mist revealed more about his past. The one who had chased him down had been his blood brother. Moreover, because of some strange telepathic connection between the brothers, as long as Empyrean Divine Mist left Tragic Death Valley his older brother would be able to sense him. Thus, it was impossible for Empyrean Divine Mist to leave.

All of this occurred in just several breaths of time. It was at this moment that he thought of something…

After a moment of thought, Lin Ming spoke, wanting to confirm his guess. “I have something I would like to ask…”

“Mm?”

In a situation where everyone was gathered around Qin Yi, it was extremely abrupt for Lin Ming to ask a sudden question. In this hall, Lin Ming had a very humble and common status. Besides Old Man Xue, Yue Liuxing, and Yue Qifeng, there had been no one else that took notice of him. If there was anything noticeable about Lin Ming then it might be that he was a human. In this hall, besides him, everyone else was a spiritas martial artist.

There were simply far, far too few human divine runic masters.

Qin Yi, Old Man Su, Clearshadow, Dreampearl, and the others only glanced at Lin Ming before ignoring him. Old Man Xue smiled, kindly asking, “What is it, boy? Are you trying to rain on his parade?”

In Old Man Xue’s eyes, Lin Ming had come here to play games and cause chaos. But, there were simply far too many talented individuals that had shown up. Perhaps instead of causing chaos, Lin Ming might be made a joke instead.

Lin Ming said without any hurry, “I want to ask, when did Senior Divine Void break into the True Divinity realm?”

Lin Ming’s question aroused an immediate frown from Qin Yi. Qin Yi’s eyes were swift and fierce as he glared at Lin Ming, “What insolence. The name of his majesty the Soul Emperor is not something someone like you can speak out loud!”

With this shout, killing intent surged out from Qin Yi’s body and locked onto Lin Ming, forcefully and menacingly. This sort of feeling was like a fight could break out at any moment.

The atmosphere became tense for a time. Old Man Xue hurriedly laughed as he tried to defuse the situation, “Lin Ming, the given name of his majesty the Soul Emperor cannot be spoken out loud so casually. But because you are not from the soul race you probably don’t know about this matter, so we’ll make an exception for you just this once. However, there won’t be a next time...”

Sometimes, the name of an emperor was a taboo term. In mortal nations, there were emperors that couldn't be referred to by their name. And beyond even speaking out the name, sometimes even writing the name on paper was forbidden. One would need to replace the name of the emperor with other illustrious words instead.

Even so, Lin Ming had received the grace of Empyrean Divine Mist. Towards this Empyrean Divine Void who had forced Empyrean Divine Mist into a hopeless dead end, Lin Ming had no favorable impressions at all.

Lin Ming looked at Old Man Xue. Although Old Man Xue was a stingy and tricky fellow, the truth was that he had a good heart. Since Old Man Xue had tried to resolve the situation for him, Lin Ming didn't want to make matters more difficult. He faintly said, "This junior truly didn't know."

"Mm, just make sure you pay a little bit more attention next time. Then, you asked when his majesty the Soul Emperor broke into the True Divinity realm?" Old Man Xue looked at Lin Ming, a little puzzled. He didn't know why Lin Ming would suddenly ask such a question.

"Yes." Lin Ming replied.

"Well… the current Soul Emperor broke through to the True Divinity realm 3 million years ago!" As Old Man Xue spoke he cupped his hands together across his chest, clearly showing his respect for Soul Emperor Divine Void.

3 million years?

Lin Ming's eyes widened. He felt his speculations were much more likely to be correct. "Do you know the exact time?"

Lin Ming kept chasing for answers. This confused Old Man Xue; just what was Lin Ming asking these questions for?

However, Qin Yi arrogantly replied, “The exact time is 3.47 million years ago. When his majesty the Soul Emperor broke through to True Divinity, nine colors of heavenly tribulation descended from the skies, the winds and clouds changed, and all worshipped him. This matter was permanently written down in the holy texts of the soul race and is the most grand occasion to occur in the last 100 million years of my people! Your curiosity runs far too deep; just what does his majesty the Soul Emperor breaking through to the realm of True Divinity have to do with you?”

“Mm, I understand now…”

Lin Ming took a deep breath, his vision solemn.

When Divine Void broke into the realm of True Divinity, that was about the same time Empyrean Divine Mist was forced into Tragic Death Valley!

Chapter 1563 – The Examination Begins

Chapter 1563 – The Examination Begins

…

…

…

When Lin Ming was in Tragic Death Valley, he had accompanied Empyrean Divine Mist for seven years. During these seven years, Empyrean Divine Mist had nearly never spoken about his past. Lin Ming had only once asked him how long he had been stranded in Tragic Death Valley and Empyrean Divine Mist had responded with an approximate figure – 35 million years.

The flow of time in Tragic Death Valley was increased in a 10:1 ratio from the outside. That meant that 35 million years within Tragic Death Valley was equal to 3.5 million years outside, a figure consistent with the 3.47 million years that Qin Yi had spoken of!

It was inevitable that he formed some connections in his mind.

The most likely explanation was that in the past, when Divine Void wanted to kill Divine Mist, the reason was to compete for the qualifications to become a True Divinity! Or, they were struggling for some sort of object that was able to allow either one of the two brothers to rise to the True Divinity Realm; for instance, pills, artifacts, and so forth!

And in the end, Divine Void had come out on top. After he became a True Divinity, he forced Divine Mist into Tragic Death Valley.

Lin Ming had thought this was strange in the past. Empyrean Divine Mist and Great Emperor Divine Void were brothers to begin with. If the two brothers were willing to support each other then they could truly dominate the world, unrivalled by anyone. So, just what had happened that could cause these two brothers to become enemies?

If it was said that the means of becoming a True Divinity were the reason that the two brothers engaged in a life or death struggle, then everything was easily explained!

The True Divinity realm was far too tempting for an Empyrean! Even Divine Dream, Primordius, Demondawn, all of them were willing to pay a great price to reach the True Divinity boundary.

Empyrean Divine Dream had severed her primordial spirit. Empyrean Primordius had returned to his homeland to found his own Samsara Heavenly Dao. Empyrean Demondawn had sided with the saints to betray humanity. All of this was done to reach the True Divinity realm!

Moreover, Lin Ming had something that he hadn't been able to figure out before. Empyrean Divine Mist and Great Emperor Divine Void had similarly astonishing levels of talent to begin with and their cultivation conditions were similar. So, why did Divine Void step into the True Divinity realm whilst Divine Mist remained at the extreme Empyrean realm? When an Empyrean stepped into True Divinity, that was an entirely new level altogether; it wasn't a minor difference.

If one had to think about it, then several million years ago, the two brothers Divine Void and Divine Mist must have stumbled onto some opportunity to becoming a True Divinity. But, this opportunity could only help one person realize their dreams. And for this chance, Divine Void had harmed Divine Mist. If so, then everything made sense!

"So originally… the reason Divine Mist fell into Tragic Death Valley was because of some chance of becoming a True Divinity!"

Lin Ming sighed with emotion. Millions of years ago, Empyrean Divine Mist had been at the prime of his life. He could be called a dashing and heroic figure who had even learned about a chance to become a True Divinity. If he had succeeded then his prospects would have been endless and his name would have been preserved in the annals of history.

But no one could predict the heavens or the hearts of others. In the end, Divine Mist had been harmed by his brother and had lost his chance of becoming a True Divinity. Then, he had been trapped in the hopeless Tragic Death Valley of tens for millions of years as he slowly exhausted himself to the point of death!

This gruesome experience had only been described by Empyrean Divine Mist with one word – enmity. He was unwilling to bring up his past because he didn't want to relive it. In this word 'enmity', it was unknown just how much misery and sorrow was contained!

Lin Ming secretly swore that if he had the ability, he would definitely seek justice for Empyrean Divine Mist!

As Lin Ming was deep in thought, several red-clothed deacons stepped into the examination hall. Amongst these red-clothed deacons was a white-robed old man.

These people were all judges for this examination.

The white-robed old man was an Elder of the Divine Runic Masters Guild. During every examination for divine runic masters, the Divine Runic Masters Guild would send out an Elder to manage it, even if they were only testing for new recruits.

With Old Man Xue and Old Man Su, there were three senior divine runic masters present.

As the old white-robed man stepped through the doors, Old Man Xue sent him a true essence sound transmission informing him of the situation. After the old man heard this, he looked at Qin Yi with some surprise. "Qin Yi, I'm looking forwards to your performance!"

The white-robed old man didn't conceal his appreciation of Qin Yi. Of course, he didn't ignore the other juniors here. He quickly glanced over everyone in the hall and said, "There is also the rest of you, I am anticipating your performance too. If possible, I hope that all of you can become divine runic masters. Of course… because the examination is considerably strict, the chances of that happening aren't too high. Every year, only an exceedingly small number of people qualify. Perhaps this year will be considered a good harvest..."

As the white-robed old man spoke, his eyes swept over Qin Yi, Clearshadow, and Dreampearl. The three of them were the stars of this year.

Of the three of them, Clearshadow and Dreampearl both seemed brimming with confidence, eager to begin. As for Qin Yi, his complexion was indifferent as if he didn't care too much.

"Dreampearl, relax your mind and show your normal level of skill."

Old Man Xue said towards his own apprentice, giving her a thumbs. Although this old man was stingy towards others and he particularly wanted to take advantage of Lin Ming's wealth, he was indeed very good to his apprentices.

After speaking to his apprentice, Old Man Xue turned to Lin Ming. He laughed, saying, "There is also you, boy. You can do it! Even if you are here to cause a little chaos you should try your best to stir up some trouble. Otherwise, it won't be you wasting our time but us wasting yours."

Old Man Xue said, his face full of smiles. Lin Ming smiled and nodded in return. Towards this overly large fellow that resembled a round mouse, Lin Ming had some good impressions. This old man's heart wasn't bad at all. If he were to cooperate with such a person in a life or death mystic realm, then although he might be taken advantage of a little, he at least wouldn't need to worry about a hidden knife to his back.

As the examination Elder stood at the front of the stage, the divine runic master examination was set to begin.

Lin Ming quietly glanced over at Qin Yi and took up his own divine runic pen. Although meeting Qin Yi during this examination was a bit surprising to Lin Ming, it was a little interlude that he took seriously.

At this time, Qin Yi’s hands were hanging low to his sides. He hadn’t picked up his divine runic pen yet, like he wasn’t even here to take the examination. His confidence seemed to be without parallel.

“During this divine runic master examination, there is no limit to the number of failures. If you can complete a single first grade divine runic symbol in 10 hours then you will be considered as having passed. The examination begins now!”

The white-robed Elder calmly announced. Although he said there was no limit to the number of failures, the money for the materials had to be provided by oneself. There was no one that was willing to randomly waste their own materials. Moreover, a low level divine runic master could at most complete three divine runic symbols in 10 hours. In other words, if they failed three times then they would have more or less failed the examination.

As the examination started, many examinees began rapidly using their soul force to process materials. Then, they used their divine runic pens to suck up the juices of the materials and begin drawing up the numerous and complex divine runes.

Lin Ming was no exception. The divine runic symbol he chose to produce this time was the ‘Overwhelming Rune’.

Although the Overwhelming Rune sounded as if it had an earth-shaking name, it indeed was an unforgettable memory to Lin Ming.

When Lin Ming was 15 years old, in order to pay for resources he had busily rushed everywhere to find a job. This was when he stumbled upon the Magic Cube. After he obtained the Magic Cube, he inherited the memories of an inscription master. The first inscription symbol that Lin Ming had drawn up was the Overwhelming Rune.

Of course, that Overwhelming Rune and the Overwhelming Rune of the Asura Road were two completely different concepts. The current Overwhelming Rune was part of the divine runic arts, and it was tens of thousands of times stronger. In the past, the Overwhelming Rune that Lin Ming had drawn up had only been the lowest level inscription symbol.

Even so, to the Lin Ming of that time, collecting the materials for the Overwhelming Rune had nearly caused him to be broke.

In order to save the materials that cost him all of his wealth, Lin Ming hadn't been willing to practice drawing up Overwhelming Runes using his materials. Rather, he used his own true essence to draw up the Overwhelming Rune. He had practiced for many days and nights, failing countless times as he repeatedly overdrew his divine soul.

In this sort of hellish practice environment, Lin Ming had put in an incredible amount of effort before he managed to successfully draw up the Overwhelming Rune. But, the process of selling the Overwhelming Rune was also filled with suffering and difficulties.

No one was able to judge the quality of his work. Lin Ming had gone to numerous shops where he was rejected many times. Finally, he had to sell the Overwhelming Rune on consignment. The price was low to the point that it seemed to be an inscription symbol drawn by an apprentice. During the process, he even encountered his old sweetheart Lan Yunyue. She had looked at him with a sadness unfit for an outsider.

As Lin Ming recalled all of this, his movements became much slower. It was like the scene of dozens of years ago when he first drew up the Overwhelming Rune was replaying itself in his mind. He recalled walking down that difficult early road, adding halo upon halo to his body until he shined with radiance. He was moved just by thinking about this.

As Lin Ming was immersed in his own drawing, every stroke of his was filled with a sincere earnestness.

And to the side, there was someone that was staring at Lin Ming the entire time. This person was Old Man Xue.

Old Man Xue was all smiles. He planned to see just what tricks Lin Ming was going to bring up. But as Lin Ming started to draw up the Overwhelming Rune, his happy expression slowly froze on his face, to be replaced by one of growing astonishment.

In his opinion, it was impossible to produce a divine runic master without dozens of years of hard work. This was also in a situation where there was a teacher guiding them.

Of course, if one was a heaven-gifted rare talent and also had the hands-on help of a teacher, then learning enough to become a divine runic master in 10 years wasn't a problem at all.

For instance, Qin Yi had only practiced the divine runic arts for 15 years. And looking at his appearance, he was definitely more skilled than a first grade divine runic master.

However, no matter how ridiculous one's talent was, Old Man Xue didn't believe that Lin Ming could learn how to honestly draw up a divine runic symbol in a single year. Although Lin Ming's movements were slow, they were steady and true!

His fundamentals could be called solid.

This was especially astonishing because Lin Ming was a human martial artist!

"This boy… just how did he practice? Had he already come into contact with the divine runic arts a year ago and was just pretending?"

As Old Man Xue thought about it, he didn't believe that Lin Ming would do something so juvenile and meaningless as tricking him. At that time, there was no point in pretending. After all, Lin Ming wasn't a child.

"Could he have had some fortuitous encounter? Or perhaps he had the guidance of some famous teacher?"

At this time, Old Man Xue was completely ignoring his own apprentice Dreampearl. All of his concentration was placed on Lin Ming as he closely observed Lin Ming's movements. If Lin Ming could maintain this state then there really was the chance that he could complete a divine runic symbol!

Of course, it was too early to make any guesses right now. Lin Ming's movements weren't fast and completing a single divine runic symbol required forming hundreds and thousands of tiny runes. If there was a single misstep then the entire drawing would fail!

However, even if Lin Ming failed, this was an incomparably terrifying talent in Old Man Xue's eyes. If this level of talent could be maintained, then Lin Ming would absolutely be able to become a divine runic master in two years. Within five or six years, he could become a second grade divine runic master. In 10 years, he might even rise to a third grade divine runic master!

This was the speed of a monstrous genius!

Chapter 1564 – Divine Runic Master Qualifications

Chapter 1564 – Divine Runic Master Qualifications

…

…

…

The examination had already been underway for several dozen breaths of time and Lin Ming had drawn up 10 tiny rune structures. Although his speed was very slow, his strokes were steady and it was impossible for anyone to find a flaw in them.

However, besides this sort of proper and orderly method astonishing Old Man Xue, who knew of Lin Ming's background, there was no one else that noticed him.

The attention of the people present was mostly concentrated on the two beautiful girls, Dreampearl and Clearshadow.

Their drawing of the divine runic symbol could be called as beautiful as flying dragons and dancing phoenixes, wonderful to the senses. Their ten slender fingers waved like lush plants in the wind, and when joined together with the divine runic pen that had absorbed the juices of all sorts of materials, the beautiful rainbows of lights they painted in the skies were as illusive and wonderful as a dream.

This exquisite and smooth technique left many people who had come to watch the examination, including some deacons, crying out in praise.

To watch these two young girls draw up divine runic symbols could be called a type of enjoyment.

“They are indeed apprentices taught by Old Su and Old Xue! From their appearances it shouldn’t difficult for them to obtain the qualifications for a divine runic master at all.”

Several deacons discussed amongst themselves with true essence sound transmission. The white-robed old man smiled, saying, “Yes, there shouldn’t be any problems for them to obtain the divine runic master qualifications, but perhaps the main play today might not be them. That main lead, has yet to begin…”

As the white-robed Elder spoke, he glanced towards the side. Everyone followed his vision. The one that he had been speaking about was the successor to the Divine Void Divine Kingdom’s King Qin, Qin Yi.

The examination had already been in progress for 20 some breaths of time, but Qin Yi’s hands were still calmly resting by his side. He had yet to do anything.

“What is he doing? Is this his attempt at being humble?”

As the deacons saw Qin Yi’s calm and idle appearance, all of them frowned. In truth, although they held some awe towards this talented youth from Divine Void Divine Kingdom, they didn’t believe that he would blossom in glory and drown out the light of Divine Rune City’s local examinees.

The competition had been going for such a long time but he hadn’t even moved yet. Whatever he was planning, it seemed a bit too theatrical.

“This fellow is too arrogant!” A deacon said, a bit disgusted.

“What is the meaning of this? Does he want our people to complete their drawings first so he can then display his high and mighty skills?”

The white-robed Elder shook his head, “You have misunderstood what he is doing. Although this Qin Yi is arrogant, that arrogance is within his bones and he won’t normally show it. The reason he has yet to move is not because he is intentionally demonstrating his strength, but because he is carefully analyzing and feeling out the structure and characteristics of all the materials. He is drawing up a divine runic symbol plan diagram in his mind. Once he is finished, he will draw it, and draw it all at once."

When a top artist was drawing up a painting, they would have a complete image in their mind of what their painting would be like before they even began. This was what it meant to have a well thought out plan and one would be able to proceed with absolute confidence; to be forewarned was to be forearmed. A divine runic master was the same when they drew up divine runic symbols. If they first outlined the divine runic symbol in their mind, they would be able to draw up the complete symbol.

And just as the white-robed Elder finished speaking, Qin Yi began to move.

He casually picked up a handful of materials and tossed them in the air. He revolved his soul force, manifesting it into a sharp blade that chopped up these materials.

These divine runic symbol materials were all quite expensive. A normal divine runic master would process them with care, lest they make any mistakes and waste them. But, Qin Yi's actions were bold and brave, because he had already become familiar with the structure and characteristics of these materials. Even the tiniest differences in the materials had been thoroughly probed by him earlier. This was the ability brought about by Qin Yi's strong soul force.

With a series of slicing sounds, the batch of materials was processed by Qin Yi. Some had their juices drawn out, some were ground into powder, and some were sliced into parts.

Then, all of the materials gathered within Qin Yi's palm.

This caused the white-robed Elder's eyes to brighten. What wonderful hand work! At such a young age this Qin Yi was able to control several types of materials at once!

Normally, when a divine runic master drew up a divine runic symbol, they would handle materials one at a time in order to guarantee the highest chance of success. This was because one couldn't split their mind in two, and the difficulty of controlling several materials at once could be imagined! It would make the process far, far more difficult!

Of course, the advantage of this was that the speed at which one drew up the divine runic symbol would be that much faster. Even so, these weren't actions that a young divine runic master would dare to do.

"This boy is far fiercer than I originally thought! From the materials he has gathered, I think he is drawing up a divine runic symbol called the Fire Melting Symbol. This divine runic symbol is considered quite difficult amongst the first grade divine runic symbols!"

"He is an outstanding character to begin with, so it isn't a surprise for him to choose the Fire Melting Symbol."

Compared to Qin Yi manipulating a dozen plus materials at once, drawing a Fire Melting Symbol wasn't difficult at all.

As everyone was speaking, Qin Yi began drawing. Without using the divine runic pen, he fused his finger with true essence and used it as a pen, pulling up the material juices to begin his drawing.

His speed was extremely fast. In just several blinks of the eye he drew up one tiny rune. Then in another several blinks he drew up a second. Then a third, fourth... soon he had dozens of them drawn up.

These tiny runes floated in the air, supported there by some invisible power. They were kept a good distance from each other as they faintly resonated with some mysterious Laws. Of course, these Laws were the Asura Road Laws.

Although Qin Yi hadn't started until some time into the examination, with just a little bit of work, he had caught up to everyone else, and had even begun surpassing them.

"What amazing speed!"

The complexions of many people changed. Even Lin Ming glanced to Qin Yi more than once. This Qin Yi was clearly a talented young elite that was carefully raised by Divine Void

Divine Kingdom. Although his cultivation might not be the highest, in terms of divine runic arts he was likely the top junior of his generation in the Divine Void Divine Kingdom.

However, Lin Ming only glanced at him twice before refocusing his thoughts and devoting his attention to the Overwhelming Rune. Even within the divine runic arts system, the Overwhelming Rune could only be considered a low difficulty rune as well as a low level rune.

However, Lin Ming had still chosen this rune because of the memories it recalled for him. Moreover, what Lin Ming was in now was the divine runic master examination and not a divine runic master competition. He would pass as long as he drew up any first grade divine runic symbol.

As Lin Ming calmly and steadily drew up the Overwhelming Rune, he heard two explosive sounds behind him. Two partially drawn divine runic symbols had burst into smoke and flames in the air. This was because some divine runic apprentices had been distracted by looking at Qin Yi and their soul forces had gone out of control, thus their divine runic symbols had blown up.

These two divine runic apprentices suddenly seemed as if they would begin crying.

Although they still had plenty of time remaining, the chances of them crossing the examination were small to begin with. At the start, when their soul force was at its peak, they still had some hopes that they would succeed. But as more time passed and their soul force weakened, their chances would naturally diminish.

Besides these two nearly hopeless divine runic apprentices, there were many others that were having trouble controlling their soul force. Even Yue Liuxing was focused on her work with an extremely tense expression on her face, as if she didn’t dare to allow anything to distract her. One could only say that Dreampearl, Clearshadow, and Qin Yi were far too different from them.

But, in this intense and exhilarating competition between divine runic apprentices, there was someone that didn't pay much attention to Qin Yi at all, no matter how shocking his performance was. Rather, 99% of his attention was focused on Lin Ming. This person was Old Man Xue.

From the start of the examination until now, he had been staring at Lin Ming throughout.

He didn't even glance at his own apprentice more than a few times. Although Qin Yi's appearance had slightly diverted his attention, he had only looked at him for a moment before turning back to Lin Ming.

This sort of situation didn't escape the eyes of Old Man Xue's good friend, Old Su.

"I must say... Old Man Xue, why do you keep staring at that boy? Is there something strange going on?"

Old Su asked from beside Old Xue. His attention had originally been placed on his own apprentice, Clearshadow, so he thought that Old Xue should also be focused on his apprentice, Dreampearl. But, he discovered that Old Xue kept his eyes on Lin Ming from the start of the examination until now, not even blinking. It was like there was something quite interesting on Lin Ming's face.

"He..."

Old Xue wryly smiled, not sure what to say.

Seeing the forced smile on Old Xue's face, Old Su was even more interested. "You don't care about your own apprentice, you haven't looked at Clearshadow, and you aren't even interested in that Divine Void Divine Kingdom genius, Qin Yi. Instead, you are focused on that boy alone? What secrets does he have?"

"Secrets..." Old Xue shook his head. "If I were to tell you that this boy had only studied the divine runic arts for one year, would you think I was stupid?"

"Only a year!?"

Old Su's eyebrows leapt up. Before, he had heard Lin Ming and Old Xue squabbling. Old Xue had been mocking Lin Ming and saying that his chances of becoming a divine runic master were low, but Old Su only thought this was because Old Xue wanted Lin Ming to become his apprentice and pay tuition fees. He never imagined that Lin Ming had only studied the divine runic arts for year… no wonder Old Xue had thought that Lin Ming had come to the divine runic master examination to cause trouble.

"Are you sure he's only studied for one year? The first year of practicing the divine runic arts could be called unimaginably difficult, but if you look at his drawing technique, do you really think that is possible from some novice who has only been studying for a single year?"

Old Su shook his head repeatedly, not willing to believe this.

Old Xue said, "That's why I've been watching him. Qin Yi comes from the True Divinity Holy Land, Divine Void Divine Kingdom. In terms of divine runic master inheritances, although they are inferior to us, that is only in scale and quantity. In terms of the number of top divine runic masters, they have no fewer than we do. If Qin Yi is hand-taught by them then the skills he has displayed aren't strange at all. But, this Lin Ming… I really cannot figure him out. He is far more amazing than Qin Yi is."

"Are you sure you didn't make a mistake?" Old Su said, still unable to believe this.

Old Xue said, "I also doubted it. I thought, did this boy really not start practicing the divine runic arts until a year ago? Perhaps he was playing with me at the time? But what would be his motive in doing so?"

Chapter 1565 – Continuing the Examination For A Second Grade Divine Runic Master

Chapter 1565 – Continuing the Examination For A Second Grade Divine Runic Master

…

…

…

After Old Xue spoke, Old Su began to watch Lin Ming. Lin Ming had completed a third of his divine runic symbol but there were no abnormalities yet in his soul force and his movements were still as steady as before. Compare to when he first started drawing up the divine runic symbol, there wasn't any difference at all.

If this continued, he really would be able to pass the divine runic master examination.

This would be an extraordinary accomplishment.

"Let's just quietly observe. This young man is worth paying attention to, especially as a human. That alone makes him even more out of the ordinary…"

Old Xue whispered. And at this time, Clearshadow and Dreampearl had already completed two-thirds of their divine runic symbols; they were twice as fast as Lin Ming. As for Qin Yi, he was even faster. The tiny runes floating in front of him had already started gathering together, forming a variety of strange patterns as they condensed into a divine runic symbol. This was the last process for completion.

Finally, Qin Yi drew the last tiny rune. As this tiny rune floated into the air, the thousand some tiny runes shimmered, weaving together in the sky and forming a divine runic symbol.

At the same time, Qin Yi took out a gold level god rune from his spatial ring, one that was compatible with the divine runic symbol he created.

For a first grade level divine runic symbol, a silver god rune was more than enough; a gold god rune would not have any superior effects. The reason Qin Yi chose a gold god rune was because he was hoping to enhance the grade of the divine runic symbol. If he needed to choose a blue soul level god rune he would have used a blue soul level god rune.

The divine runic symbol fused together with the Asura Heavenly Dao's god rune. The arrangement of the numerous tiny runes was also affected by the god rune's influence; this was the adding of the Asura Road's Heavenly Dao Laws to the divine runic symbol.

This was the most important step of the divine runic arts. With this, the Fire Melting Symbol was complete!

And after Qin Yi finished drawing this divine runic symbol so quickly he was still beaming and in good spirits, with no sign that he had overdrawn his strength. He flicked his finger and this Fire Melting Symbol turned into a stream of light that flew towards the white-robed Elder responsible for the examination.

The white-robed Elder stretched out his hand and grasped the dazzling divine runic symbol. Then, he probed its internal structure with his sense. He nodded again and again, "Good! Good! Very good!"

To praise three times at once, this was an extremely rare occurrence for the strict examination officials!

Qin Yi's Fire Melting Symbol could only be called superb.

A Fire Melting Symbol was a first grade divine runic symbol. Its use was to be fused into a spirit artifact and increase the spirit artifact's fire-attribute strength. Normally, a low grade spirit artifact's fire-attribute strength could increase by 50%, a medium grade spirit artifact's could be increased by 20%, and a high grade spirit artifact's wouldn't have any change at all.

Now, according to Lin Ming's estimate, the Fire Melting Symbol that Qin Yi drew up was slightly stronger than average. It should be able to increase a low grade spirit artifact's fire-attribute strength by 60% and a medium grade spirit artifact's by 25%. This was extremely rare, because it was already amazing for an ordinary divine runic master to create a Fire Melting Symbol that was on a standard level. To surpass that standard level was as difficult as ascending to heaven.

"Qin Yi, you have passed the first grade divine runic master examination! At the same time you've also earned the right to enter the second grade divine runic master examination. You can choose to enter the second grade divine runic master examination after this is over. Do you have any plans to do so?"

"Of course I will try. My original goal is not to be a mere first grade divine runic master."

Qin Yi confidently replied. The white-robed Elder chuckled, "Good, you have daring. Then, 12 hours from now, we shall start the examination for a second grade divine runic master!"

A divine runic master examination lasted for 10 hours and there was a two hour break before the second grade divine runic master examination began. If one's foundation was sloppy and they took until the 10th hour of an examination to finish, then they would have used up all their soul force and would find it impossible to continue onwards to the second grade divine runic master examination.

"Great."

Qin Yi faintly responded. Then, he walked over to the resting area. Several deacons nodded towards him, feeling a bit strange in their hearts. They suspected that before long, Qin Yi would overtake them in attainments in the divine runic arts, making it seem as if all the effort of their lives had been wasted. Really, comparing oneself to others could truly anger one to death.

After Qin Yi, without any accident, Dreampearl and Clearshadow also completed their divine runic symbols.

The white-robed Elder also inspected their two divine runic symbols. Their two divine runic symbols were in the upper echelons of difficulty for first grade divine runic symbols and there wasn't much difference in their speed or quality. The two of them could be called evenly matched, but compared to Qin Yi, they were slightly inferior.

"Dreampearl, Clearshadow, would you like to join the second grade divine runic master examination?" The white-robed Elder asked as before.

"Of course!"

"You don't even need to ask!"

Dreampearl and Clearshadow responded, a fighting spirit thick in their voices. The two young women had originally come here to take the test for a second grade divine runic master; the first grade examination had only been a short prelude.

After Dreampearl and Clearshadow, the next one to complete their divine runic symbol was Lin Ming!

The moment that Lin Ming completed his divine runic symbol, Old Su and Old Xue looked at each other, disbelief thick in their eyes. In truth, even in the last quarter hour of time, Lin Ming's movements were as steady as they were at the start, without any chaos in his aura. At this time, the two of them had already guessed that Lin Ming would succeed. However, they still felt it a bit unbelievable that Lin Ming really obtained the qualifications to become a first grade divine runic master.

"Perhaps I really made a mistake… he should have studied the divine runic arts for more than a year, but… from what I can see his skeletal age isn't too old and his cultivation is so high, yet he also minors in the divine runic arts. At the same time, he is even a human… I have no idea just how he practiced…"

Old Xue mumbled to himself. Then, he glanced over at his subordinate and said, “Go to the city gates and look up the skeletal age records for Lin Ming when he entered.”

Divine Rune City only accepted the most outstanding of elites. If one was able to enter Divine Rune City, they had to be divine runic masters, alchemists, refining masters, old masters, or young elites.

If Lin Ming were to enter with a status as a young elite then he would have had to have his skeletal age verified. And indeed, at the time Lin Ming truly had been tested.

“Young man, do you wish to continue onto the second grade divine runic master examination?” The white-robed Elder asked again.

Lin Ming nodded, “Yes.”

The first grade divine runic master examination wasn’t difficult to Lin Ming at all. He had inherited the memories of two sixth grade divine runic masters and a peak fifth grade divine runic master. If he had difficulties becoming a first grade divine runic master then that would have been too unreasonable!

Hearing Lin Ming reply that he was going to join, Dreampearl and Clearshadow both glanced at him with surprise. They had already noticed Lin Ming by now. Amongst everyone here, Lin Ming seemed very common and ordinary, and they had both considered him to be a background character. But, this person was actually going to join them in the second grade divine runic master examination?

Chapter 1566 – Second Grade Divine Runic Master Examination

Chapter 1566 – Second Grade Divine Runic Master Examination

…

…

…

During this divine runic master examination, four people had rapidly earned the qualifications for a first grade divine runic master and even wanted to continue onwards to the second grade examination. Throughout all of the previous examinations of years past, this was a particularly rare phenomenon.

"That human boy Lin Ming, he wants to take the second grade divine runic master examination… It seems a year ago he was pretending to be a pig to eat the tiger." Old Su commented. He didn't believe that someone could learn the divine runic arts to such a degree in just a single year.

"That's the only explanation." Old Xue nodded. "This boy, I can't believe he's bored enough to do all of this. I wonder just what his skeletal age is. I think he isn't too old, so for him to have these accomplishments at a young age is quite incredible…"

As Old Xue spoke, a flame sparked in front of him, brilliantly burning.

This was the light of a sound transmitting talisman. Before, he had ordered his subordinate to go to the city gate guards and look up Lin Ming's records from when he first arrived.

The message was very simple. It provided information for when Lin Ming first entered the city, including his cultivation boundary and other assessments. And more importantly, his skeletal age.

After Old Xue listened to the information on Lin Ming, his mouth fell open and his eyes went out of focus. He wasn't able to respond for a long time.

Old Su stared at Old Xue's reaction. Through this, he was faintly aware that the message from the sound transmitting talisman wasn't ordinary at all. "Hey old man, what's the matter, why don't you say something?"

After being dazed for some time, Old Xue forced a smile. He murmured, "I'm afraid you won't believe me. I can't even believe myself."

"What is it?" Old Su hurriedly asked.

Old Xue waved his hand. Using his soul force he collected the not-yet-dissipated flames of the sound transmitting talisman and replayed them in Old Su's ears. After Old Su heard this message, although he was prepared, he was still shocked speechless.

"Early Divine Lord realm cultivation, complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates opened, and when he entered the city he wasn't even a divine runic master. Thus, they could only determine the level of his talent. And, they determined that his skeletal age is... less than 60 years old!?"

Old Su's throat twitched. Disregarding Lin Ming's divine runic arts talent, just his Divine Lord realm cultivation and his complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates at less than 60 years of age was the sign of an unrivalled monstrous genius. Even the talents of a True Divinity Hold Land would be hard pressed to compare!

Moreover, the most important information from the city records was that when Lin Ming first entered the city he wasn't a divine runic master, thus they could only determine his talent. Was any of this real?

Old Su and Old Xue looked at each other. Old Xue self-mockingly said, “Now there are two possibilities. One is that when he entered the city, there was some reason we don’t know of that he had to hide his status as a divine rune master. Either that, or he really did just start studying the divine runic arts a year ago. Of course, you could say that I’m just spouting nonsense...”

Old Su reluctantly said, “Do you think it's still necessary to investigate whether or not he started practicing the divine runic arts a year ago? He is likely around 53-55 years old; that is far too young! But by such a young age, he opened the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates, cultivated to the early Divine Lord realm, and even studied the divine runic arts! Moreover, from what it looks like he even has accomplishments in the soul forging system. Can you feel it? He has definitely cultivated some soul forging technique! I really have no idea how he manages his time. Even if he started practicing in his mother’s womb he still shouldn’t have been able to reach such heights!”

Old Su and Old Xue had no idea how to evaluate Lin Ming. But besides them, no one else knew how terrifying Lin Ming was. All they knew was that Lin Ming was an extremely splendid divine runic apprentice. Of course, he was now officially a divine runic master.

After another two hours passed, a fifth examinee finished their divine runic symbol. This person was a woman... Yue Liuxing.

This divine runic symbol that Yue Liuxing drew up hadn’t been easy. During her first attempt, a brief moment of negligence had caused her to fail a third of the way in. She had gathered her thoughts and had managed to complete the second drawing successfully. After finishing, although Yue Liuxing had exhausted a great deal of her soul force she was still bubbling with excitement. Starting from today onwards, she had finally become a divine runic master. This was something she had long desired and had been chasing after!

After her examination was complete, she turned to see two other people in the hall who she cared about. One was her little brother and the other was naturally Lin Ming.

At this time, Yue Qifeng was still immersed in drawing up his divine runic symbol. His divine runic symbol was currently 80% complete but his forehead was dripping sweat and he had used up a great deal of the power of his divine soul. Success and failure both hung on a thin string.

Yue Liuxing didn't disturb him, but silently cheered on her little brother. Then, she looked towards Lin Ming, but discovered that he was already sitting in the resting area.

Because Yue Liuxing had focused all of her attention into drawing up her divine runic symbol, she didn't pay attention to anything happening around her. She was completely unaware of whether or not Lin Ming had passed, and didn't even see Clearshadow, Dreampearl, and Qin Yi's performance.

"Lin Ming, you… could you have…"

Although she found it hard to believe, as she saw Lin Ming sitting in the rest area as well as noticing the calm and idle atmosphere to him, she suspected that he had already completed his examination.

"I've finished my drawing."

Lin Ming faintly smiled towards Yue Liuxing; he had some good impressions towards this young girl.

"Draw… you finished drawing…?"

Yue Liuxing was startled. She was well aware that when they first entered the city, Lin Ming had known nothing about the divine runic arts. In fact, she was the one who had proposed they come to Divine Rune City!

How could he have only used a single year to learn the divine runic arts? Moreover, his speed was even faster than her own!

Yue Liuxing was dumbfounded by this information. She didn't even notice the white-robed Elder asking her whether or not she wanted to continue onto the second grade divine runic master examination.

And Yue Liuxing's reaction also fell into Old Xue's eyes. This left him increasingly puzzled; just what secrets did Lin Ming have on him?

“This brat should have known this Yue Liuxing girl a year ago… it seems that in her eyes, Lin Ming also knew nothing about the divine runic arts a year ago.”

Old Xue's eyes were bright and vibrant. He could immediately see just what caused such a visceral reaction in Yue Liuxing.

“Yue Liuxing, do you wish to participate in the second grade divine runic master examination? The Elder asked you a question here!” A deacon testily said as he saw Yue Liuxing not responding for a long time.

Yue Liuxing jumped up as if she were shocked but quickly regained her composure. She hurriedly apologized, “Sorry, sorry, I do not wish to join the second grade divine runic master examination. Even if I joined I wouldn't be able to pass.”

A second grade divine runic master was too distant a prospect for Yue Liuxing right now. She needed at least 10 more years of hard work.

Not just Yue Liuxing, even Dreampearl and Clearshadow knew it would be difficult for them to pass the second grade divine runic master examination.

“Mm… then you can step back.” The deacon impatiently waved his hand.

Yue Liuxing respectfully drew back, her eyes still on Lin Ming. Lin Ming smiled. He knew what Yue Liuxing was surprised about, so he said to her with a sound transmission, “I'll talk to you about it later.”

After Yue Liuxing left, several other divine runic apprentices failed, their incomplete divine runic symbols exploding into smoke and flames in front of their faces. And at this time, six hours had already passed since the examination started. To fail now basically meant that the divine runic apprentices would no longer be able to pass. If they couldn't complete their drawing in the first eight hours, then unless there was some divine stroke of fate and they were possessed by some ghost, there was no way they could succeed.

These divine runic apprentices were well aware of their limits and decided to directly give up.

And within these people, the persistent Yue Qifeng seemed particularly conspicuous. His body trembled but he maintained a steady flow of soul force. After seven hours, he finally drew up his last tiny rune. Then, he fused the divine runic symbol with a god rune, forming a complete divine runic symbol.

Although this was only the most low level of divine runic symbols, it caused an abundance of joy to shine on Yue Qifeng's voice.

The moment Yue Qifeng completed his drawing he nearly collapsed to the floor. He slumped backwards in a chair, a grin spreading across his face. He couldn't even summon the energy to wipe away his sweat.

He had finally succeeded.

Yue Qifeng was 20 some years younger than Lin Ming and actually managed to become a first grade divine runic master; he could also be called an amazing young elite!

Of course, Yue Qifeng specialized in divine runic arts and wasn't too splendid in his martial arts cultivation. And with so many extraordinary individuals here today, this caused his praiseworthy performance to not be noticed by too many people.

Seeing Yue Qifeng's reaction, Lin Ming sighed with emotion. In the past when he drew up his first inscription symbol he had been about the same as Yue Qifeng.

After Yue Qifeng, another divine runic apprentice managed to complete his drawing. But after him, the dozen some remaining examinees all failed.

Thus, out of everyone present, seven people had managed to pass the first grade divine runic master examination. As for those that had decided to participate in the second grade examination, there were only four – they were Lin Ming, Clearshadow, Dreampearl, and Qin Yi!

The Divine Runic Masters Guild was timely and decisive. The second grade divine runic master examination would soon begin!

Compared to a first grade divine runic symbol, a second grade divine runic symbol was on a completely different level!

Drawing up a divine runic symbol was divided into three main sections. The first was processing the materials, the second was to use one's soul force to draw up the materials into tiny runes. And the third part was to fuse the divine runic symbol with a god rune.

Of these three parts, the most difficult was not the second part, but the third part – fusion!

The third part was also the most essential aspect of the divine runic arts. The reason that the divine runic arts were separate from inscription technique and even far outstripped it was because of this third part, because it fused the Asura Road's Heavenly Dao into it!

Because of this, divine runic symbols were symbols that represented the Heavenly Dao.

And only in higher levels of divine runic arts would the difficulty of this third part slowly manifest. The higher the grade of divine runic arts, the more difficult the third part would be. There were many high grade divine runic arts that would fail in the face of the infinitely powerful and mysterious Asura Heavenly Dao.

As for the lowest level of divine runic symbols, the third step was only a brief detour. In truth, it wasn't too significant and at the lowest levels, divine runic symbols were nearly similar to inscription technique, whether it was in regards to their effects or fundamental nature.

However, upon reaching a second grade divine runic symbol, the difficulty of the third step would appear slightly. To a divine runic apprentice, this was a massive test!

Chapter 1567 – The Third Step

Chapter 1567 – The Third Step

…

…

…

The Asura Heavenly Dao was vast and endless, impossibly complex and difficult to understand. How to make the tiny runes align with the Asura Heavenly Dao was the essence of the divine runic arts!

The first two parts of the divine runic arts were similar to inscription technique. Many divine runic masters had been studying this field for hundreds and thousands of years and they had reached the twelfth grade in the inscription technique.

In the Divine Runic Masters Guild alone, there were several twelfth grade inscription masters.

However, these twelfth grade inscription masters were at most seventh grade divine runic masters; some of them weren't even at the seventh grade. If one had to come up with a reason then that was that understanding the Asura Heavenly Dao was far too difficult. It was simply impossible to perfectly master the final third step of the divine runic arts.

There were innumerable divine runic grandmasters that had studied the Asura Heavenly Dao for their entire lives. These were the Laws the managed everything within the Asura Road, a world that stood parallel with the 33 Heavens. In terms of their complexity, they were on par with the 33 Heavens!

This was equal to an independent universe. The power of these Laws could be imagined!

In truth, even seventh grade divine runic masters were an extremely rare existence within the Asura Road. These characters were able to become the guild president of the Divine Runic Masters Guild. Such a character basically had to have an Empyrean level cultivation!

Only an Empyrean could rely upon their great strength to slightly borrow the strength of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws. Moreover, this was only borrowing. Although an Empyrean was an existence that had experienced heavenly tribulation and could stand equal to the Heavenly Dao, the truth was that the area on which they stood was a tiny, nearly infinitesimal part. Moreover, that was only the transcendent divine might that they established. That alone allowed an Empyrean to stand at the same height as the Heavenly Dao.

If they wanted to stand equal to the entirety of the Heavenly Dao Laws then that was simply impossible. Not to mention an Empyrean, not even a True Divinity could comprehend all of the Heavenly Dao Laws in a universe!

As for those young martial artists who had only been studying the divine runic arts for a hundred years and didn’t even have a Holy Lord realm cultivation, wanting to have them borrow the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws was asking for far too much, no matter how heaven-shaking their talent was. Even though Clearshadow and Dreampearl were gifted daughters of heaven, when they were trying to complete the third step of a second grade divine runic symbol, they still had to be extremely cautious and proceed with absolute care. And even if they focused all of their attention, there would still be a high chance that they would be defeated.

Qin Yi glanced over at Clearshadow and Dreampearl, his lips curving up in a smile. The third step of the divine runic arts was what he was most confident in!

The essence of the divine runic arts was to join together the Asura Heavenly Dao into inscription technique.

In a sense, these were rune Laws that derived from the Asura Heavenly Dao.

The Asura Road could not be separated from its runes. Whether it was god runes or origin energy runes, these runes were the embodiment of the Asura Road Laws.

In terms of inscription technique skill, the Divine Void Divine Kingdom that Qin Yi came from could not compare to the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

But, in terms of understanding the Asura Heavenly Dao, the Divine Void Divine Kingdom that was ruled by a True Divinity actually surpassed the Divine Runic Masters Guild!

It was relying on this point that the Divine Void Divine Kingdom dared to state that they were no worse than the Divine Runic Masters Guild in terms of the skill of their divine runic masters.

And this was the truth. The divine runic master who taught Qin Yi could compare with the president of the Divine Runic Masters Guild in skill.

This was how important the third step was.

With his ability in this aspect, Qin Yi didn't care much about the second grade divine runic master examination. This was simply a means to prove his strength.

"Are the four of you ready?" The white-robed Elder asked, glancing over them. Clearshadow and Dreampearl were somewhat nervous. As for Qin Yi, he was calm and composed. A divine runic pen jumped into his hands, spinning above his fingertips as if it had a mind of its own. The crystalline pen seemed to reflect a brilliant light.

Facing the second grade divine runic master examination, Qin Yi finally picked up his pen. Without a doubt, this divine runic pen was some priceless treasure.

As for the last examinee, others viewed him with a bit of bias. He quietly laid out his materials and began arranging them on the table. This fellow actually surprised the white-robed Elder. A human, and a young human at that, had actually decided to join the second grade divine runic master examination. This was a truly incredible event.

The white-robed Elder traced his chin and looked at Lin Ming for another second before passing over him.

“Then… I declare the beginning of the examination!”

The time allotted for the second grade divine runic master examination was 10 hours, the same as before!

A second grade divine runic symbol naturally took a much longer time than a first grade one. To give the same 10 hour time limit was equal to increasing the difficulty of the examination.

As the examination started, Clearshadow and Dreampearl began to anxiously process their materials. From the materials they had gathered, one could guess what rune they had decided to draw up. The divine runic symbol they had chosen was – Touch of Gold.

The use of this divine runic symbol was to turn stone into gold. This divine runic symbol was essentially useless and mostly a waste of resources to make. But, divine runic masters still held this symbol in high esteem because turning ‘stone to gold’ was something that only the divine runic arts could accomplish. Without the divine runic arts, even an Empyrean would be helpless in this matter.

Thus, although this was a worthless symbol, it was a divine runic symbol that put the charm of the divine runic arts on full display!

And as for the reason that Clearshadow and Dreampearl had chosen Touch of Gold, that was because this divine runic symbol was considered relatively easy and their chances of succeeding would be somewhat higher.

As for Qin Yi, he had chosen Heart of the Medicine Furnace. This was a divine runic symbol for pills. It could greatly increase the medicinal efficacy of a pill and was considered to be in the medium-high difficulty levels of second grade divine runic symbols.

As for Lin Ming, he had chosen the Pill Resting Symbol. This was also a divine runic symbol for pills. When placed on a powerful pill and rested for a month, it would make the properties of a pill far more temperate and the medicinal efficacy easier to absorb.

Although the name of the Pill Resting Symbol was a bit simple and rustic, in terms of how difficult it was to draw up, it was even beyond the Heart of the Medicine Furnace.

“How amusing!”

Qin Yi smiled as he saw Lin Ming choose such a difficult divine runic symbol.

He thought that the divine runic symbol he chose would be the most difficult. The other divine runic apprentices likely wouldn’t even have the courage to participate in the second grade divine runic master examination, much less choose a divine runic symbol as difficult as the Pill Resting Symbol.

But Lin Ming had chosen to do so and he was also a human.

“This brat, does he really have the ability to do it? Or does he know he can’t pass so he’s just putting on an act?” Qin Yi glanced at Lin Ming, a playful light in his eyes. He wanted to see just what Lin Ming’s performance would be like and how much of the Pill Resting Symbol he would be able to complete.

It wasn’t just Qin Yi that noticed Lin Ming, but the white-robed Elder was also tracing his chin in surprise. This sort of divine runic symbol was one that many well-known senior divine runic masters didn’t choose when they went through their second grade divine runic master examination. Yet, Lin Ming had made this choice even though he was a human, his name was unknown, and he didn’t have any obvious background.

As for Old Xue and Old Su, they were already left speechless. This Lin Ming wasn’t an idiot nor did he come here to cause a ruckus. Rather, he really was undergoing the second grade examination. And if he dared to choose the Pill Resting Symbol…

“Old Xue, you don’t think he’ll really be able to draw up the Pill Resting Symbol, right…?”

“I don’t know… don’t ask me. I originally thought that this boy’s divine runic arts talent was worse than that of Clearshadow and Dreampearl. In the first grade examination I was unable to see just how skilled he was, but after learning of his skeletal age I don’t dare to evaluate him yet. He is simply a monstrous genius!”

Lin Ming didn’t bother with everyone that was paying attention to him. He continued on at his slow and unhurried pace, processing the materials in a uniform manner. His movements were steady without any flaws to them, and the divine runic pen in his hands was like an iron chain spanning a raging river, simply unshakeable.

The reason Lin Ming chose the Pill Resting Symbol was because this divine runic symbol was worth a considerable amount of money and he would be able to sell it after he drew it up. Currently, Lin Ming’s net worth could withstand this sort of loss, but in a situation where he only spent money and didn’t earn any, he couldn’t continue like this forever. Sooner or later he would have to figure out some way to recoup his expenses.

A divine runic symbol like Touch of Gold was formed from expensive materials and couldn’t even be sold for a tiny bit of money. Lin Ming naturally wouldn’t choose such a worthless divine runic symbol.

For a second grade divine runic symbol, processing the materials and drawing up the tiny runes was a slightly more difficult process than it was for a first grade divine runic symbol. But to Lin Ming, this wasn’t hard at all.

As Lin Ming, Clearshadow, and Dreampearl began drawing, Qin Yi didn’t immediately begin. Instead, he crossed his hands behind his back and started observing everyone else, especially Lin Ming.

As Qin Yi saw Lin Ming’s steady technique, he was a bit astonished.

“This boy, I didn’t think his skill level was much during the first grade divine runic master examination; who knew he would have some modicum of skill. However, the speed and expertise of his drawing skill is still lacking compared to my own. Moreover, the key to completing a second grade divine runic symbol is the third and final step. In this aspect, Touch of Gold is far more simple, but you decided to choose the much more difficult Pill Resting Symbol. I want to see just how you complete the third step… of course, the premise of that is if you can last until the third step…”

Qin Yi faintly smiled and began his own work.

If Qin Yi wanted to watch Lin Ming’s ‘third step’ then he would have to finish drawing up his divine runic symbol before Lin Ming started on the third step. Otherwise, with his current skill level, it was impossible for him to draw up his own divine runic symbol while watching someone else.

This wouldn’t be a problem in Qin Yi’s eyes. His drawing speed was considerably faster than Lin Ming’s.

All sorts of materials flew into the air where they were pulled apart and processed by Qin Yi’s soul force. Then, he drew out the juices of these materials with his divine runic pen, forming brilliant colored lines in the air. This was an extremely enchanting sight.

“This Qin Yi is really fierce…”

A deacon praised out loud. The white-robed Elder also nodded in acknowledgement. Even for a second grade divine runic symbol, Qin Yi was able to maintain such a smooth drawing technique like passing clouds and flowing rivers. It wouldn’t be difficult for Qin Yi to form the main body of the divine runic symbol. The crux of the examination, the most difficult part, would be the final, third step. Everything would depend on how Qin Yi fused the Asura Road’s Heavenly Dao into the divine runic symbol.

“Divine Void Divine Kingdom’s third step has always been superior to ours. This is because they have inheritances related to the Asura Heavenly Dao…”

The white-robed Elder sighed as he recalled this.

Chapter 1568 – Completing the Main Body

Chapter 1568 – Completing the Main Body

…

…

…

When it came to exploring the Asura Heavenly Dao, the Divine Runic Masters Guild was unable to compare with Divine Void Divine Kingdom.

Divine Void Divine Kingdom had an incomparably long history of inheritance!

Tens of millions of years ago, Divine Void Divine Kingdom and Divine Mist Divine Kingdom had once been a single Divine Kingdom. That Divine Kingdom was a titan. Billions of years ago, they had once produced a True Divinity level ruler!

After that True Divinity ruler died in repose, the Divine Kingdom had continued for a long time without producing a True Divinity. Even so, they remained the number one spiritas influence in the Asura Road. Every generation they would always have an extreme Empyrean master. This sort of prosperous state continued for billions of years, making their foundation incomprehensibly deep!

Thus, in terms of understanding the Heavenly Dao, the loosely organized Divine Runic Masters Guild with a mere 100 million years of history simply couldn't compare with Divine Void Divine Kingdom.

Time passed slowly. Brilliant motes of light shined in Lin Ming, Clearshadow, Dreampearl, and Qin Yi's hands. And of these people, Qin Yi's light was the most radiant!

In the resting area, Yue Liuxing and Yue Qifeng were stunned. In their impression, Lin Ming was someone who hadn't even heard of Divine Rune City a year ago. He had been a human youth who didn't even know what the divine runic arts were…

Last year, they had even invited Lin Ming to the Divine Runic Masters Guild to visit and see just what the divine runic arts were. The way that Lin Ming acted that time didn't make it seem like he was lying at all. Moreover, the key was that there was no reason for lying to them; would anyone be so bored after eating to do something so inane?

"Could it be… that big bro Lin Ming studied the divine runic arts to this degree in merely a year?" Yue Qifeng felt as if someone struck him in the chest as he said this.

But Yue Liuxing was far calmer. She shook her head, saying, "There is definitely something that we don't know. It might be Sir Lin's secret and it might not be polite for us to ask him…"

Yue Liuxing could faintly feel that not asking about this matter was the best idea. Moreover, even if they asked Lin Ming he likely wouldn't reveal anything. When Lin Ming said that he would speak to them later, that was likely only politeness on his part and he wasn't really planning on telling them anything.

……..

Amidst the shimmering lights of divine runic symbols, an entire hour had passed.

Even Qin Yi had to be careful in drawing up a second grade divine runic symbol. Drawing up the correct structure of the tiny runes was important in determining whether or not the divine runic symbol would smoothly fuse with the Asura Heavenly Dao later.

Thus, although Qin Yi was faster than Lin Ming, Clearshadow, and Dreampearl, it wasn't by too much.

Another hour passed.

Qin Yi’s expression was earnest. All of his concentration was completely focused on the task at hand. The main body of the divine runic symbol was nearly finished, and as he reached the end, his speed became even slower and his movements ever the more cautious. As he drew up the last tiny rune, all of the tiny runes shined in unison.

His divine runic symbol had already taken its initial shape.

All that remained was the third step, the key step to turning a quasi-inscription symbol into a true divine runic symbol!

The difference between a second grade divine runic symbol and first grade divine runic symbol was only a single grade. But on this third step, that single grade made the two as different as clouds and mud.

Qin Yi was extremely careful. His soul force controlled the thousand some tiny runes in the air, having them all maintain their current positions. Then, Qin Yi began to slowly restore and adjust his soul force, bringing himself back to a better condition so he could complete the third step.

Although Qin Yi had completed the third step fusion process many times already and was 80-90% confident he would succeed, even a 10-20% chance of failure was unacceptable to him. His pride would not allow him to fail here. He would pass the examination with flying colors.

As Qin Yi was restoring himself he glanced over at Lin Ming. He grinned as he saw Lin Ming drawing one stroke at a time, steadily and impeccably.

“Interesting! I didn’t think this little boy would have some level of skill. He’s already completed 75% of the main body’s structure and there aren’t any fluctuations in his drawing yet. If he can continue like this then he’ll complete the main body of the divine runic symbol. He might be able to accompany me for a little fun in the third step!”

Qin Yi felt a hint of interest in Lin Ming's appearance. If he outshined all others in this divine runic master examination without anyone being able to act as a foil to him then there wouldn't be any meaning to it at all.

Only if there was competition, only if someone had a chance to beat him, would that make things interesting.

He was looking forwards to Lin Ming's performance. He wanted to see just how much of the third step Lin Ming would be able to complete.

Like this, Qin Yi rested for a quarter hour to restore himself to his peak state. This was not an easy task to accomplish. For a low level divine runic master to hold aloft a thousand some tiny runes with even spacing between them and also maintain the circulation of energy, this was extremely difficult, let alone doing all of that and also restoring one's soul force.

"This Qin Yi can maintain concentration while relaxing at the same time. He's restored most of the soul force used up in preparation for the third step; this isn't something the average person can accomplish. It seems that this Qin Yi has already completed a second grade divine runic symbol more than once. If there isn't an accident, then he'll pass this examination without any problems..."

The white-robed Elder sighed with emotion. But, even as he praised Qin Yi in his heart he also felt a bit bitter. After all, Qin Yi came from Divine Void Divine Kingdom and they were faintly considered a competitor to the Divine Runic Masters Guild. In truth, there wasn't any major conflicts of interest between these two great organizations, but even so, whether it was martial artists or divine runic masters, one would always have the heart and spirit to outdo everyone else. They naturally hoped that there would eventually be an outcome as to who was better and who was worse.

And now that he saw a descendant of his competitors blossom in splendor in his own home ground, the white-robed Elder wasn't very happy with this taste.

As he looked over to Clearshadow and Dreampearl he could see that the two young women were only continuing with a great deal of difficulty. Even if they did complete their divine runic symbols, it would simply be something flashy without any substance at all. How could their Touch of Gold possibly compare to Qin Yi's Heart of the Medicine Furnace?

At this time, Qin Yi pulled out a gold god rune from his spatial ring.

He recited a mantra, his hands flickering as he produced a succession of seals. In the air, a divine light came shrouding down, and then a strange scene took place.

Beneath this shining light, the gold level god rune began to break down, turning into endless mystical and profound lines that began to slowly blend together and fuse with the divine runic symbol that Qin Yi had drawn up.

This fusion wasn't immediate. Rather, it had to follow the flow of the Asura Heavenly Dao. To describe it in other words, the Laws of the Asura Heavenly Dao were joining together with the divine runic symbol, and the number of Laws that joined in as well as the degree of their perfection would be a massive indicator in how valuable and effective the divine runic symbol would be.

A grandmaster could fuse a great amount of Asura Heavenly Dao Laws in a divine runic symbol, making it so that even a fifth grade divine runic symbol could sell at the price of a sixth grade divine runic symbol.

The higher the grade of a divine runic symbol, the more time it would take to fuse in the Laws. The third step of a second grade divine runic symbol, even if drawn up by Qin Yi, would still take at least half an hour or three quarters of an hour. On average, it would take just under an hour.

But just as Qin Yi was a quarter hour into the third step, someone else had finished drawing up the main body of their divine runic symbol. This person was Lin Ming.

He was slightly faster than Clearshadow and Dreampearl.

Although he was slower than Qin Yi, Qin Yi had rested for a quarter hour, and now that he was another quarter hour into the third step, the half hour difference was the difference between him and Lin Ming drawing up the main body of their symbols.

“He’s really done it!”

Many people were paying attention to Lin Ming. Old Xue and Old Su were nearly looking at him alone, caring about his performance even more than that of their own apprentices.

“This boy’s abilities are truly hidden deep!”

“This is unbelievable. If someone were to find out this boy’s skeletal age they might be shocked to death! I wonder just what his story is... it looks like he’s about to begin the third step. Even if he fails here, he is still a monster amongst all monstrous geniuses. And if he succeeds, that would really be...”

As Old Xue spoke here he didn’t know just what to say.

Compared to Lin Ming, the two apprentices they took in weren’t worth anything at all. Their divine runic arts skill was inferior to Lin Ming’s, and their cultivation speed was far outpaced by him.

Of course, this wasn’t because their apprentices were too lackluster but because Lin Ming was far too freakish.

At this time, the thousand some tiny runes in front of Lin Ming slowly floated about. A colorful brilliance flowed through these tiny runes, as beautiful as a dream.

Lin Ming was as calm as a placid lake. Slowly, he lifted up this elementary divine runic symbol. He ran his other hand over the table, picking up a gold god rune.

He was already prepared to begin the third step.

Chapter 1569 – Perfect Pill Symbol

Chapter 1569 – Perfect Pill Symbol

…

…

…

“He’s directly starting the third step!?”

A deacon remarked with surprise as he saw Lin Ming not going through any adjustments beforehand. If Lin Ming took out a gold god rune now then it was clearly because he was preparing to start the fusion process.

After a divine runic master completed the main form of a divine runic symbol, they would have consumed a great deal of soul force. And, the third step was the most essential step. If one didn’t rest then their chances of success would be much lower.

“Not everyone has the ability to maintain the main form of a divine runic symbol for such a long time without incurring some errors in the tiny runes. If he cannot calmly control the main form of the divine runic symbols and the order of the thousand some tiny runes, then the longer he continues the more soul force he will use up instead. Lin Ming might not have the ability to rest at this time so completing the drawing in a single continued attempt might be better.”

Another deacon said to the previous one.

The last deacon nodded, saying, “Yes, if he has the ability to rest at this time then he should be considered a teacher within the ranks of a second grade divine runic master.”

As these two deacons were speaking, Old Xue, Old Su, and the white-robed Elder were all staring at Lin Ming. They wanted to see just what this young man would do at this step.

Lin Ming's right hand moved and the gold god rune slowly decomposed in a halo of golden light, turning into countless mystical lines that gathered onto the main form of the divine runic symbol. These laws were the Heavenly Dao Laws of the of Asura Road.

Without a doubt, Lin Ming's understandings of the Asura Heavenly Dao far exceeded those of anyone present. In this aspect, after he thoroughly enlightened himself on the emperor jade as well as having studied the first volume of the Asura Sutra, although Lin Ming couldn't control the Asura Heavenly Dao, wanting to borrow its strength was actually an extremely simple matter.

The Law lines soon fused into Lin Ming's divine runic symbol. With Lin Ming's familiarity with the Asura Heavenly Dao, he could complete the fusion process in a mere incense stick of time.

However, Lin Ming didn't choose to do this. After all, completing the third step in a mere incense stick of time would have been far too shocking, and it might even arouse certain suspicious in those present.

Thus, Lin Ming decided to slow down his speed. This was only an examination and not a competition; as long as he finished then he was fine.

A quarter hour soon passed. Clearshadow and Dreampearl both completed the main forms of their divine runic symbol and began the third fusion step.

They were weaker than Qi Yi, so they couldn't rest before the third step like he could. For them, this last fusion step would be filled with difficulties.

After half a quarter hour passed, beads of sweat began to appear on Qin Yi's forehead. He had entered into a completely absorbed state. The Law runes were slowly pushed into the divine runic symbol. With his soul force, lasting until now was not easy.

Finally, Qin Yi fused the last Law line into the divine runic symbol. His Heart of the Medicine Furnace drawing was finally complete!

As Qin Yi felt the power of Laws gushing forth from the Heart of the Medicine Furnace, he grinned.

He had succeeded! Moreover, the process had been relatively easy. With overwhelming superiority he had obtained the qualifications to become a second grade divine runic master and was also the most extraordinary individual in this examination.

In that moment, beams of multicolored light blossomed from the Heart of the Medicine Furnace. Qin Yi reached out for the divine runic symbol, but just as he was about to touch it, his expression froze. With disbelief thick on his features, he turned to see Lin Ming. At some unknown time, Lin Ming had also completed his Pill Resting Symbol.

After taking his divine runic symbol, Lin Ming placed it on a tray in preparation for the proctor Elder to examine it.

Lin Ming had used less than half an hour to complete this third step fusion process. It was nearly half the time that Qin Yi had spent.

Old Su and Old Xue watched Lin Ming complete the third step. The entire process was completed without any kind of thrilling, soul-struggling scene at all. Rather, he had completed the third step easily and pleasantly, the entire drawing of the divine runic symbol having been completed in a single go.

No one had expected that Lin Ming’s third step would be completed in such a manner. The most difficult part of the second grade divine runic symbol was the third step, but in Lin Ming’s hands, there didn’t seem to be any difficulty at all.

“Is it… over?”

Old Xue and Old Sue glanced at each other. They had originally hoped that there would be some difficulties for Lin Ming in the third step and they wanted to see just how he resolved the situation, but, what truly happened had far outstripped their expectations. This inevitably caused a peculiar feeling to form in their hearts. Was Lin Ming's third step really the same as everyone else's third step?

Two deacons picked up Lin Ming and Qin Yi's divine runic symbols, handing them over to the white-robed Elder.

The white-robed Elder looked deeply at the two examinees. The first divine runic symbol he chose to examine was Qin Yi's Heart of the Medicine Furnace.

With a single sweep of his sense, the white-robed Elder approximately understood the situation. As a sixth grade divine runic master he could nearly instantly judge a second grade divine runic symbol and what the quality was like.

"Good!"

The white-robed Elder said from the depths of his heart. Although Qin Yi's Heart of the Medicine Furnace couldn't be called perfect in every aspect, every part of the drawing process had been above average. This was truly a commendable accomplishment. This Heart of the Medicine Furnace was a considerably well done divine runic symbol that could be sold at a decent price.

"Congratulations Qin Yi, you are now a second grade divine runic master!"

Qin Yi faintly smiled after having his results confirmed by the white-robed Elder. This assessment was well within his expectations; he was confident in his divine runic symbol. What he cared about was what Lin Ming's evaluation would be like.

At this time, the white-robed Elder looked at the Pill Resting Symbol that Lin Ming had drawn up.

The white-robed Elder also wanted to see if there were any problems in this Pill Resting Symbol. Lin Ming had simply fused the Asura Heavenly Dao into this divine runic symbol far too easily.

The Pill Resting Symbol that Lin Ming drew up was three inches long and two inches wide, just like a rectangle. The charm's surface was filled with countless mystical lines; it didn't seem like something that was drawn up by a person. Even an amateur would see that this divine runic symbol was beautiful and symmetrical.

The white-robed Elder soaked his soul force into the Pill Resting Symbol and took a mental swim through its lines. After confirming the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws that were within the symbol, the white-robed Elder took a deep breath.

Not only was the Pill Resting Symbol that Lin Ming drew up completely up to standards, but it was extremely valuable.

"Perfect..."

The white-robed Elder whispered this evaluation to himself. This Pill Resting Symbol, whether it was the processing and handling of materials, structure of tiny runes, distribution of energy, or even the final fusion of the Asura Heavenly Dao rules, everything could be called the absolute peak of perfection that a low level divine runic master could accomplish.

It was hard to imagine that this divine runic symbol had come from the hands of a human youth. Just how did this boy study? And who was his teacher?

As the white-robed Elder was appraising Lin Ming's Pill Resting Symbol, Qin Yi was noticing the expression on the old man's face. As Qin Yi saw the awe on the old man's face as well as the perfect evaluation, Qin Yi felt a surge of frustration. Without a doubt, the quality of the Pill Resting Symbol that Lin Ming drew up had been superior to his own Heart of the Medicine Furnace!

"Let me take a look!"

Old Xue impatiently walked over, nearly grabbing the Pill Resting Symbol from the white-robed Elder's hands. After sweeping through it with his divine sense, his eyelids jumped up. This boy, his abilities were truly deep...

Old Xue even suspected that the Lin Ming he saw a year ago was a different person from the Lin Ming he was staring at now.

Old Xue passed the divine runic symbol to Old Su.

As Old Su looked at it, he too was left dumbfounded.

“What a great Pill Resting Symbol. Even a fourth grade divine runic master is inferior… I have no idea how he did the fusion process. There must be some sort of trick inside.”

Old Su speculated. Old Xue thought for a moment, then said, “This boy, he isn’t a part of my Divine Runic Masters Guild…”

“We must bring him in, we have to bring him in! We definitely cannot lose such talent! If we do things right then he might even become the next Guild President!”

The Divine Runic Masters Guild was always eager to bring in more talented individuals. The Divine Runic Masters Guild was originally a loose organization, and only by bringing in more talented people would Divine Rune City become more powerful. The previous Guild Presidents of the Divine Runic Masters Guild had all been extremely noble and renowned seventh grade divine runic masters that had been fairly elected by the guild.

“Lin Ming, I want to ask you, would you like to join my Divine Runic Masters Guild?” Without Old Su and Old Xue speaking, the white-robed Elder had already asked Lin Ming.

“Do I want to join the Divine Runic Masters Guild?”

Lin Ming traced his chin, making his decision seem as theatrical as he could.

He definitely wanted to join the Divine Runic Masters Guild, after all, this was the entire reason he had come to take this examination. Joining the Divine Runic Masters Guild would make everything far more convenient for him.

First, if he joined the Divine Runic Masters Guild then he would be able to obtain their protection. This would make him relatively more safe. Next, if he joined he would have sufficient status to contact Blood Moon and obtain the Celestial Tyrant Manual. Third, materials would be much easier to obtain in the Divine Runic Masters Guild and there would even be a discount. This was necessary for him to find the ancient pill recipes and materials needed for the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

Although Lin Ming had already come here with this plan, he knew that truly peak geniuses would have far more advantages if they joined the Divine Runic Masters Guild. This was because this sort of talented individual would have many other influences seeking to take them in. The inner Asura Road was an incomparably vast land and there were multiple divine runic master organizations besides Divine Rune City. For instance, Qin Yi's Divine Void Divine Kingdom, in terms of divine runic arts skills, wasn't that different from the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

Thus, Lin Ming didn't mind trying to obtain more benefits from joining the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

Thinking of this, he said, "Can I wait before making this decision? When I passed the first grade divine runic master examination I was able to continue to the second grade divine runic master examination. So, since I've passed the second grade divine runic master examination, can I continue to the third grade divine runic master examination?"

As Lin Ming asked this, Old Xue, Old Su, and the white-robed Elder all froze, their expressions stiffening. Lin Ming wanted to take the third grade divine runic master examination?

"You're saying that… you want to take the third grade divine runic master examination?"

Old Xue looked at Lin Ming with amazement. Not only were the three old men shocked but even the other examinees in the resting area, including Yue Qifeng and Yue Liuxing, were startled. It was already incredible for Lin Ming to pass the examination for a second grade divine runic master, but he wanted to continue to the third grade examination? Really, people never gave up until they failed!

Chapter 1570 – Third Grade Divine Runic Master Examination

Chapter 1570 – Third Grade Divine Runic Master Examination

…

…

…

Normally, before a martial artist became a third grade divine runic master they would study for dozens of years or even over a hundred years of time.

The reason that the time fluctuated so much was because even as a young martial artist studied the divine runic arts, they still had to put time into cultivating. And, different people would divide their time in varying proportions. If someone invested more time into the divine runic arts then they would learn it faster than others, but no matter how much time they invested it would still take 20-30 years.

But compared to Lin Ming, who wasn't even sixty years of age, Old Xue could go crazy and still not figure out how Lin Ming had allocated his time.

How could he dual cultivate body and energy, opening the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates and even achieving a Divine Lord realm cultivation as he even practiced the divine runic arts to such a degree?

"Are you sure you want to take the third grade divine runic master examination?"

Lin Ming nodded. "Yes, this junior only wishes to try; I am not fully confident that I will pass."

Lin Ming was indeed unable to ascertain whether or not he would be able to successfully draw up a third grade divine runic symbol. Even if he failed somewhere he should still be close to reaching the third fusion step, and once he truly began the third step, then completing a third grade divine runic symbol shouldn't be too difficult.

The third step of the divine runic arts was Lin Ming's greatest advantage.

If Lin Ming could become a third grade divine runic master and then join the Divine Runic Masters Guild, his status would be completely different from that of a second grade divine runic master.

Young second grade divine runic masters like Qin Yi were rare in the inner Asura Road, but they existed. Every influence was always raising a new generation every ten years, and after so much time there were bound to be some extraordinary individuals that appeared.

The reason that Qin Yi seemed so splendid here was because the Divine Runic Masters Guild would hold examinations every year, year after year. Because of this, it was not possible to concentrate the number of geniuses together. If the geniuses of the last thousand years of the Divine Runic Masters Guild were added up then that would be a dreadful number.

However, for Lin Ming, if he could become a third grade divine runic master at his young age then that would be something that might not happen in a thousand or even ten thousand years.

In this sort of situation, Lin Ming would be highly valued by the Divine Runic Masters Guild. With this status, everything would be much easier for him to do.

As for what others would do such as suspecting him or conspiring to ruin him, Lin Ming wasn't afraid of this. In terms of individual combat strength he could already fight an ordinary World King. And with Xiao Moxian's help as well as the life-saving card of Primordius Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming could calmly retreat even if he faced a middle level World King.

And if he had to face a spiritas, then Lin Ming also had the fatal divine tool that was their ultimate nemesis!

Lin Ming didn't fear middle level World Kings and World Kings weren't like cabbages spread everywhere. Looking at the entire Divine Runic Masters Guild, a World King was at the rank of an Elder. There were even some sixth grade divine runic masters with a half-step World King cultivation.

Thus, Lin Ming had the ability to protect himself in the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

And most importantly, no one knew of his true strength. This provided an extra layer of protection for him.

"Since you passed the second grade divine runic master examination, then according to the rules of the Divine Runic Masters Guild you can choose to continue onwards to the third grade divine runic masters examination. Besides Lin Ming, does anyone else wish participate in the third grade divine runic master examination?"

The white-robed Elder looked at Qin Yi. Out of everyone else present, only Qin Yi had completed the second grade divine runic master examination, thus he also had the qualifications to join Lin Ming.

Qin Yi's complexion changed, becoming extremely ugly.

He had nearly no hope of successfully drawing up a third grade divine runic symbol.

In fact, at the start, Qin Yi had been planning to join the third grade divine runic master examination. But, this was not because he thought of passing it but because he wanted to show off his dazzling skills.

In drawing up a third grade divine runic symbol, Qin Yi could complete 70-80% of it. It was only the final step of fusing together the Asura Heavenly Dao that he could not succeed at.

But now, he had been grouped together with this freak Lin Ming. Lin Ming clearly had plans of joining the third grade divine runic master examination, so how could Qin Yi possibly join him just to act as a foil and make him shine brighter?

He grit his teeth, remaining silent. This was the same as admitting he was withdrawing from the third grade examination.

“Mm… then it’s only Lin Ming who will take the examination? Alright then, Lin Ming, you come with me to the side room… I will allow you to rest for 10 hours in a time enchantment. Then, you can choose the materials you need. If you can complete any third grade divine runic symbol then you’ll have passed.”

The white-robed Elder said. Giving Lin Ming 10 hours to rest was more than enough.

Lin Ming didn’t want to rest for such a long time but he didn’t decline the offer. After giving his thanks, he walked towards the side room.

Allowing Lin Ming to change environments and undergo the examination in the side room was to reduce external disturbances to the lowest amount.

This was also to increase Lin Ming’s chances of passing the third grade divine runic master examination.

The white-robed Elder was secretly hoping that Lin Ming would pass the third grade divine runic mater examination. To the Divine Runic Masters Guild this would be a cause worthy of great celebration. Once this matter was passed on to the other divine runic master organizations then they would earn considerable face.

Moreover, Lin Ming would inevitably have amazing achievements in the future. After Lin Ming became some powerful and mighty figure, then this white-robed Elder would also be able to boast that he was the one who personally oversaw his third grade divine runic master examination.

…………

Lin Ming followed the white-robed Elder to a side room. After he left, Clearshadow and Dreampearl also finished their own second grade divine runic master examinations. Unfortunately, they had both failed to complete their divine runic symbols by the tiniest amount.

In ordinary times, if Clearshadow and Dreampearl had been able to display their usual skill then they would have been able to complete a second grade divine runic symbol. But today, seemingly because the appearance of Lin Ming and Qin Yi placed a considerable amount of pressure on them, they hadn't been able to display their highest level of skill. After failing twice, this meant they had failed their examination.

Upon failing the examination, the two young women looked forlorn and depressed. Old Xue and Old Su quickly cheered them up with some words, but at this time they also discovered that Qin Yi, who had completed his second grade divine runic master examination, had an extremely ugly complexion.

What happened?

Did Qin Yi also fail?

If Qin Yi failed then that would have provided a little bit of comfort to Clearshadow and Dreampearl. But, this didn't seem likely.

"Teacher, what happened to Qin Yi? He shouldn't have failed his examination, right?"

Before this, Clearshadow and Dreampearl had both been in a completely focused state so they didn't know what had happened around them.

"Qin Yi..." Old Xue forced a smile. "He indeed passed the examination and he did so extremely splendidly. But what a pity, there is always someone stronger than the strong. Lin Ming completed his second grade divine runic symbol even more perfectly, and, what is most perturbing of all is that after Lin Ming finished his second grade divine runic master examination he wanted to carry on to the third grade divine runic master examination. As for Qin Yi, he gave up. He likely knew he didn't have the ability to pass… this is the same as admitting that he is inferior to Lin Ming, so how could his complexion be any good?"

In Old Xue's opinion, Qin Yi's talent in the divine runic arts should be the best amongst the juniors of Divine Void Divine Kingdom. For him to be frustrated like this by one of his peers, this was definitely an attack on his mindset.

After listening to Old Xue's words, Clearshadow and Dreampearl's mouths fell open. They weren't able to respond for a long time.

"Teacher… are you saying that Lin Ming, he… he is continuing on to the third grade divine runic master examination?"

"That's right. Lin Ming should have already started his examination by now."

Lin Ming had rested for 10 hours within a time enchantment. Now that half an hour had passed, he should have started his examination by now.

"This is… the third grade divine runic master examination…"

Clearshadow and Dreampearl were both in a muddled daze. The two of them hadn't even been able to complete the second grade divine runic master examination and yet Lin Ming went straight to the third grade examination!

How could they live like this!

For a time, both of them were immensely frustrated.

Old Su saw the emotions plain on their faces, and said with a comforting tone, "Lin Ming won't necessarily pass the third grade examination. His chances of passing the third grade examination might not be higher than your chances of passing the second grade examination. Your problems were that you weren't able to display your true skill today, but that isn't something you should be discouraged by. Instead, that Qin Yi was likely struck harder by this than you two were."

Old Su said, nudging his head towards Qin Yi.

At this time, Qin Yi was sitting in the resting area, his face grim and cloudy as if someone in his family had died.

Although he looked like he was calmly sipping tea, his eyes were glued to the doors of the side room. It was obvious that he cared a great deal about Lin Ming’s results.

Time slowly passed. In the blink of an eye, another two hours passed.

Lin Ming’s examination was already halfway over.

Chapter 1571 – Divine Runic Master Prodigy

Chapter 1571 – Divine Runic Master Prodigy

…

…

…

Because of the door to the side hall, Qin Yi wasn't able to see how Lin Ming's examination was going. This caused him to be especially restless. He took up his teacup and then placed it down, looking at the time throughout.

Almost three hours…

Although a third grade divine runic symbol was far more difficult than a second grade divine runic symbol, the time it took wasn't that much longer. Three hours should be more than enough to draw up the main form of a divine runic symbol.

And after the main form was the most difficult fusion step.

That was the crux for how to draw up a third grade divine runic symbol!

"This boy, he shouldn't really be able to succeed, right…?" Old Xue whispered to himself, looking again and again at the door to the side hall. "No, I must take a look at the situation myself…"

…….

At this time, in the side hall, Lin Ming's drawing had reached the most critical phase. He had chosen one of the simplest third grade divine runic symbols.

He didn’t have full confidence that he would be able to pass the third grade divine runic master examination, so choosing a simpler divine runic symbol would make things a bit easier.

Beautiful tiny runes floated atop the tip of Lin Ming’s divine runic pen. At this time, his concentration was completely focused and his forehead was wet with beads of sweat.

Not too far away, the white-robed Elder and several deacons were steadily watching Lin Ming’s actions.

As Lin Ming became increasingly close to finishing the main form of the divine runic symbol, all of them watched with breath abated. After that would be the most critical step! A single mistake would cause utter defeat.

At this time, a sound transmission echoed in the white-robed Elder’s ears; it was Old Xue. He was requesting a projection of Lin Ming’s examination.

For a spiritas martial artist, using their soul force to form a projection wasn’t difficult at all. Moreover, this wouldn’t affect Lin Ming’s third grade divine runic master examination.

The white-robed Elder nodded once and took out a crystal ball from his spatial ring. Then, he completely recorded the image of Lin Ming’s third grade divine runic symbol and projected it outside.

As this scene was projected outside, everyone suddenly stood up. Old Xue and Old Su’s eyes shined with a bright light as they saw this. Qin Yi’s face darkened; in the phantom, Lin Ming had already completed drawing up the main form of the divine runic symbol.

Lin Ming had taken out a blue soul level god rune; following this would be the third step, fusing together the Heavenly Dao Laws.

From a third grade divine runic symbol to a sixth grade divine runic symbol, what were used were blue soul level god runes. But, even amongst blue soul god runes there were differences in quality.

The blue soul level god rune that Lin Ming had taken out was a relatively low rank one.

With a flick of his right arm, the blue soul god rune dissolved into lines of the Asura Heavenly Dao.

Underneath Lin Ming's hands, these Heavenly Dao lines began to fuse into the divine runic symbol in a neat and meticulous order.

In the process of fusing the Asura Heavenly Dao, the slightest mistake would cause the structure of the entire divine runic symbol to collapse. Lin Ming's movements were like a daredevil balancing atop a thin steel wire; a single mistake would wipe out everything.

"Teacher, can he succeed?"

Dreampearl asked absent-mindedly from beside Old Xue.

Old Xue earnestly said, "The third fusion step is the most difficult step in creating a third grade divine runic symbol. He has only just begun and this process should take at least over an hour. And, there cannot be a single mistake during this entire process… it's difficult to say!"

"The third step has started. Everything before this I can also do!"

Qin Yi grimly said.

He wasn't boasting either. In his normal peak condition, Qin Yi could also complete the main form of a third grade divine runic symbol.

However, Qin Yi could at most finish half of the third step. This was because the third step was far too difficult. By the time he reached the midway point, he would have greatly overdrawn his soul force. As a result, by that time he could only watch helplessly on as the structural system of the divine runic symbol collapsed in his hands.

Out of everyone present, Qin Yi was the one who didn't want Lin Ming to succeed the most. He even cursed Lin Ming in his heart, fervently hoping that he would fall short and fail during the fusion process.

Time slowly passed. One quarter hour, two quarter hours... Lin Ming's movements remained calm and steady throughout. What no one knew was that after Lin Ming practiced the Asura Sutra, his understand of the Asura Heavenly Dao had reached a phenomenal level. Although the third step was the most difficult to others, it was actually the simplest step for Lin Ming.

For a divine runic symbol, as long as Lin Ming could complete the main form then there shouldn't be any problems finishing the rest. To him, fusing in the Asura Heavenly Dao was a breeze.

However, he didn't want to be overly shocking to everyone, thus he slowed down his speed and finished the third step a little at a time.

In that moment, an hour had passed!

Lin Ming didn't have a single problem in this hour. He smoothly completed 90% of the fusion process.

At this time, whether it was the white-robed Elder, Old Xue, or Old Su, all of them held their breath. They could faintly feel that some glorious event was occurring, as if they were witnessing the rise of something momentous!

"Could... could he really succeed...?" Qin Yi's eyelids jumped up. He felt this was far too unbelievable.

After another incense stick of time, the final lines of the Asura Heavenly Dao fused into the divine runic symbol. In that instant, the entire divine runic symbol lit up with a brilliance beyond compare.

Third grade divine runic symbol – complete!

At this point, the phantom projection vanished. The white-robed Elder couldn't be bothered with maintaining it. Rather, he hurried forth to examine the divine runic symbol that Lin Ming drew up.

“This is incredible!”

Old Xue and Old Su stood up. They rushed forwards, pushing open the door to the side room to evaluate the result themselves.

Everyone followed in close pursuit, wanting to bear witness to this momentous occasion.

“How is it?”

Old Xue asked as soon as he stepped through the door.

At this time, the white-robed Elder had sunk his soul force into the divine runic symbol. After a moment of probing, he handed over the divine runic symbol.

“Take a look yourself.”

Old Xue and Old Su were already burning with impatience.

They nearly snatched the divine runic symbol as they sunk their divine sense into it. Looking around, they could clearly see the situation within. They both sucked in a cold breath of air. Not only was this divine runic symbol complete, but it was impeccable in nearly all aspects!

The two old men looked at each other in shock. Then, they turned towards Lin Ming. They no longer knew just what to say to him.

After looking at Lin Ming for a long time, Old Xue wryly smiled, “This brat, I really want to cut him open and study him…”

A year ago, Old Xue had met Lin Ming in the internal trading area of the Divine Runic Masters Guild. At that time, he never would have expected that the little kid who he didn't even want to bother responding to would produce such a shocking event.

As Lin Ming heard Old Xue's words, he felt they were a bit insensitive. Slice him open and study him?

He knew that Old Xue was only joking around, but it was true that his influence and relationships were lacking; this was something he was extremely sensitive about. He couldn't guarantee that there wouldn't be anyone in the Divine Runic Masters Guild who would have such an idea. After all, his skeletal age was a bit too conspicuous. For him to have such achievements at his skeletal age, it was inevitable that there would be some people who had their own suspicious and would want to investigate him.

If it were a World King then Lin Ming naturally wouldn't fear them. But, if an Empyrean were interested in him, then that would not be a good development.

"This fellow, just which divine runic grandmaster's apprentice is he? Could it be a hidden seventh grade divine runic master?"

Old Su thought out loud, looking back into his memories. Even after thinking for some time, he still couldn't think of such a great expert in the entire inner Asura Road. Lin Ming's divine runic arts technique was far too abnormal.

Hearing Old Su and Old Xue's words, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. That was right, he should come up with a hidden grand expert master who was teaching him.

In the divine runic arts, it was nearly impossible for someone to achieve great success without a master teaching them. Lin Ming was young and had such attainments in the divine runic arts that if he said he had no master, no one would believe him. Rather, it would be said that not only did Lin Ming have a master, but his master was disgustingly formidable. This secret master was likely a seventh grade divine runic master, an Empyrean, and perhaps even above an Empyrean!

This person must have personally taught Lin Ming and meticulously guided him through every step of the divine runic arts. When this was added along with Lin Ming's own amazing perception and talent, only then could that legendary moment have occurred just now.

As Lin Ming realized all of this, he was became willing to push things along and smooth the road, making up a master for himself.

A powerful master would give him an extra layer of safety and deter some of those people who thought of plotting against him.

In fact, if Lin Ming were to say he had a True Divinity as a teacher there would still be people that believed him. After all, whether it was in divine runic arts or individual strength, Lin Ming far surpassed the geniuses of a True Divinity Holy Land!

Chapter 1572 – Entering the Guild

Chapter 1572 – Entering the Guild

…

…

…

“Hey little fellow, how about we talk for a bit.”

After Lin Ming obtained the qualifications to become a third grade divine runic master, he knew that these several old geezers would have many questions they would want to ask him; this was something he couldn’t avoid.

Lin Ming nodded, “Well, that’s fine, we can speak in another room.”

“If you will.”

The white-robed Elder, Old Su, and Old Xue brought Lin Ming to a different room. After passing through the door, Old Xue turned and said to his apprentice Dreampearl, “The lot of you can wait outside.”

Dreampearl scratched her head, curiously looking towards the room. She also wanted to know what Lin Ming’s status was but she had been blocked by Old Xue.

She pursed her lips, muttering, “It’s like they are trying to keep everything a secret, what’s so great about knowing anyways.”

Dreampearl sat on a stone chair, not feeling very happy. She was filled with curiosity towards this human youth that was around her age and in fact really did want to know where Lin Ming came from and how he practiced to become so formidable.

“That fellow should have a powerful master.”

Clearshadow said from beside Dreampearl.

“Definitely… and they are probably much fiercer than our masters…”

Dreampearl said without mincing her words. As Old Xue heard this just as he was closing the door, he nearly choked on himself.

“This rascally girl!”

Old Xue awkwardly coughed. He could only pretend that he didn’t hear this. But, this was the truth. As he measured his own level, he felt that it was impossible for him to teach an apprentice like Lin Ming. Even an extremely good piece of jade would need a grandmaster to cut and polish it into a perfect piece of art. The level of a master was extremely important in determining the level of an apprentice.

The three old men sat in front of Lin Ming. The white-robed Elder took out a divine runic master’s robe and a divine runic master badge.

“This is for you. This badge will serve as your third grade divine runic master certificate and this divine runic master robe is also the uniform of the Divine Runic Masters Guild. In the Asura Road, the styles of badges and robes differ between the varying great influences that offer them, but they are mostly the same besides some minor differences…”

“Mm, thank you.”

Lin Ming nodded. He waved his hand and this robe appeared on his body.

The divine runic master robe produced by the Divine Runic Masters Guild was in essence manifestations of energy produced by runes. Whether it was putting it on or taking it off, one only needed to think it.

As Lin Ming put on the robe he could feel the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy as well as the Laws being dragged towards it. Even his soul force was being faintly nourished. It was clear that this robe wasn't some ordinary piece of clothing.

As for the badge, it was a carefully crafted magic tool that made one's soul force and mental focus more concetrated. The two objects were above the level of a medium-grade spirit artifact.

"Seniors, if you have any questions then this junior will try to answer to the best I can." After Lin Ming put on the dressings of a divine runic master, his tall figure perfectly accented his new clothing, making him seem ethereal and elegant.

"There are a few questions I would like to ask. What I am very curious about is just who is your teacher? No matter how much I think of it, I cannot think of anyone in the entire inner Asura Road that would be able to secretly and quietly teach an apprentice like you."

Without Lin Ming saying anything first, the white-robed Elder directly asked Lin Ming about his teacher.

The inner Asura Road had many divine runic master organizations and they fiercely competed against each other. If they could pull a top master to join their guild, that was an event worthy of great celebration. It would be far greater than bringing in a junior like Lin Ming.

Lin Ming said, "My teacher has been living in seclusion for many years, and is unwilling to disclose his identity..."

Lin Ming had already thought up a good answer. As for the white-robed Elder, a look of deep disappoint appeared on his face. But in truth he had already anticipated this. Such a divine runic grandmaster would receive the greatest standard of reception and respect from any influence. If this person wanted to make themselves public they would have already done so. Moreover, this person might not want to join the Divine Runic Masters Guild to begin with.

Still, the white-robed Elder didn't give up. He continued to ask, "Then let me venture another question: just what grade of a divine runic master is your teacher?"

The white-robed Elder already guessed that Lin Ming's teacher was at least a seventh grade divine runic master. He might even surpass the current President of the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

Lin Ming said, "I apologize. It isn't that I don't want to say it but because I do not know what the level of my teacher's divine runic arts has reached. According to what I know, teacher has already been in deep seclusion for 100-200 million years. Even if he were to come out of hiding, I fear that not many people would recognize him..."

Lin Ming concocted a wild story. But in this specific situation with his awe-inspiring performance just now, no matter how ridiculous his words were, those present still might believe him. This was because they truly did think that Lin Ming had such a heaven-shaking teacher.

"Seclusion... for 100-200 million years!" The white-robed Elder's eyebrows jumped up. He looked at the two other old men, fear and awe coloring his complexion.

Old Xue gulped. Even though he had expected that Lin Ming's teacher was extremely terrifying, if Lin Ming's master had gone into seclusion for 100-200 million years then wouldn't that make his true age around 200-300 million years old?

Such an age already far exceeded the 100 million year lifespan limit of an Empyrean.

Then, it was either that Lin Ming's teacher had used some secret technique to go into deep hibernation, or that he was a True Divinity level powerhouse!

And in Old Xue's opinion, the latter possibility was a bit more likely...

Thinking of Lin Ming's master, Old Xue forced a smile. "I must say kid, you tricked me well. You were clearly under the guidance of a divine runic grandmaster and yet you acted like you didn't know anything about the divine runic arts. It seems you really wanted to play around with an old man like me… by the way, when you bought that jade from me…"

Old Xue's eyes widened. He felt that he had been hoodwinked by Lin Ming once again! That jade piece of indeterminable origin might have been some sort of extraordinary treasure.

"Hey little fellow, you were quite particular in buying that little piece of jade. Why don't you tell me more about it so that I can widen my horizons…"

Old Xue puckered his lips, feeling sad. He was now 99% sure that he had sold that broken jade for a major loss!

"Jade?" Lin Ming pretended to be surprised. "Oh, I remember. A year ago I found that broken jade in your stall and thought it was some amazing ancient treasure, but after I took it to be appraised by my master the result was that I had been mistaken. Sure enough, there were no advantages for me…"

Lin Ming flippantly said. But, Old Xue didn't believe this at all. With a pained expression he said, "Come on, just tell me honestly what the jade was. I've already been conned by you so you can tell me what it is right? Since my eyes were poor I can only blame myself for that. I just want to know what use that little trinket had."

"Senior… you've really… thought too much about this…" A cunning light flashed in Lin Ming's eyes but he concealed it well. No matter what Old Xue said, Lin Ming definitely wouldn't disclose the origins of that jade piece. This caused Old Xue to feel even more depressed. He was more and more sure that he had been bamboozled by Lin Ming, and as a divine runic master who was proud of his appraisal ability, the most painful and aggrieving matter was to be swindled by others and not know how.

Old Xue seemed to want to ask something else, but at this time the white-robed Elder dryly coughed a few times and said, "Lin Ming, let's speak about formal matters now. I want to ask you – do you have any intentions of joining my Divine Runic Masters Guild?"

This matter was the most important question that the white-robed Elder wanted to ask Lin Ming.

He originally inquired about Lin Ming’s teacher because he still had hopes that there was a one-in-a-million chance he could win over Lin Ming’s teacher and have him join the divine runic masters guild.

But as he expected, that wouldn’t be possible. So, his most vital task now was to win Lin Ming over to join their Divine Runic Masters Guild.

For an organization like the Divine Runic Masters Guild, the most essential factor of their strength was the quantity and quality of their divine runic masters.

The reason that Divine Rune City was able to develop to its current scale was because they relied on their many divine runic masters as well a decent number of alchemists.

The more powerful and the greater number of divine runic masters there were, the more influential the Divine Runic Masters Guild would become. In particular, seventh grade divine runic masters had a great appeal, one that drew in many others. This sort of divine runic grandmaster would always be able to draw in divine runic masters from nearby regions so that they would join the Divine Runic Masters Guild out of their admiration.

At the same time, a great number of influences would rush here to cooperate with the Divine Runic Masters Guild, providing all sorts of favorable conditions for them.

Over time, Divine Rune City would become increasingly prosperous. In terms of all sorts of transactions, access to talented individuals, possession of rare and precious resources, everything would rise exponentially.

Thus, it could be said that the influence and strength of the Divine Runic Masters Guild was closely intertwined with everyone’s benefits in Divine Rune City.

If the Divine Runic Masters Guild ever declined, then Divine Rune City would exist in name only.

“You don’t have to be in a hurry to respond. First, let me tell you about the advantages of joining the Divine Runic Masters Guild…” The white-robed Elder took out a handbook and handed it to Lin Ming.

“This is the internal handbook of the Divine Runic Masters Guild. It has the rules and conditions that members must abide by. If you join the Divine Runic Masters Guild then if you purchase materials in Divine Rune City, we can offer you a 15% discount. This is the highest discount and not even Elders have a better deal. Of course, new divine runic masters definitely do not receive this treatment.

“You will also possess the authority to browse the jade slips in the Divine Runic Masters Guild’s library. Even if it is the most core jade slip inheritances, you will still have the ability to apply for viewing.

“In addition, every month the Divine Runic Masters Guild will give you a fixed number of contribution points. In the Divine Runic Masters Guild, these contribution points are used to purchase all sorts of rare and precious materials and they are also much handier than origin energy runes. If you have points then you have rights to purchase materials before anyone else.”

The white-robed Elder immediately put forth so many good conditions. This was the kind of treatment that the Divine Runic Masters Guild would offer to an ordinary Elder, but now all of this was promised to Lin Ming. This was because with Lin Ming’s current achievements, becoming an Elder was just a matter of time. He would become a Red-Robed Elder or possibly even the future Guild President.

These conditions were also the limit that the white-robed Elder could offer. Lin Ming was satisfied with these conditions. He thought for a moment and then said, “Junior has a matter that he would like to consult with several seniors about.”

“Speak your mind.”

Lin Ming thought about his words for a moment and then said, “According to what this junior knows, there are several nearby influences that have long-term cooperation with the Divine Runic Masters Guild… and, there is an influence that this junior is extremely interested in. They are the assassin organization known as Heaven’s Net!”

Chapter 1573 – News of Blood Moon

Chapter 1573 – News of Blood Moon

…

…

…

It wasn't a secret that the Divine Runic Masters Guild cooperated with nearby great influences. This was an extremely vital source of the Divine Runic Masters Guild's resources and wealth.

However, when it involved an assassin organization, the Divine Runic Masters Guild considered this to be a considerably taboo subject. After all, an assassin organization had many tenuous and strange connections that involved many vendettas.

The Heaven's Net assassin organization had offended many great influences and they had killed many well-known individuals. If the Divine Runic Masters Guild cooperated with this assassin organization they would inevitably have to face some pressures, thus non-core members of the Divine Runic Masters Guild wouldn't know the details of their cooperation.

As Lin Ming suddenly mentioned the Heaven's Net assassin organization, the white-robed Elder and Old Xue frowned. However, Old Su's eyes shined with a strange light.

"Do you have a grudge with someone from Heaven's Net?"

Old Su suddenly asked. Since Lin Ming was interested in them, his first thought was naturally that Lin Ming had some enmity. After all, Heaven's Net had far too many enemies; it was simply impossible for them to keep track of all of them.

"No, this junior simply wants to meet someone – one of the leaders of Heaven's Net, Blood Moon! To be honest, there is a cultivation method that I would really like to obtain which is in Blood Moon's hands."

Lin Ming looked towards Old Su. He faintly sensed that Old Su had some sort of connection with Heaven's Net, or, at the very least he knew some of their people.

"Blood Moon…"

Old Su thought for a moment. It was hard to make out what he was thinking of from his expression.

"Old man, do you know Blood Moon?"

Old Xue asked as he saw Old Su thinking of something.

"Senior, if you know Blood Moon, then I request that you recommend this junior to them. I am willing to make a pledge on my heart of martial arts so that I won't reveal anything related to Blood Moon's identity."

Everyone's eyes turned to Old Su. Old Xue and the white-robed Elder naturally hoped that Old Su would help Lin Ming with this Blood Moon matter, because then Lin Ming would be considered as owing a favor to the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

Old Su said, "I don't know where Blood Moon is but I do have ways to make contact. As for whether or not Blood Moon is willing to meet you, that is something I cannot guarantee…"

Lin Ming was overjoyed to hear this. He said, "Thank you Senior Su!"

As long as he could find some way to contact Blood Moon then his chances of meeting him were much higher. With Lin Ming's current status as the youngest third grade divine runic master as well as a disciple of someone who might be a True Divinity, if this Blood Moon wasn't too strange and eccentric then he would be willing to meet him.

After all, in the eyes of many people, Lin Ming might become a seventh grade divine runic master in the future! It would be extremely significant if they could befriend Lin Ming before he grew up.

Old Su rose and said, “Tonight I will try to find a way to send a message to Blood Moon. I should be able to obtain an answer by tomorrow. If Blood Moon is willing to see you then I can lead you there, otherwise… if Blood Moon doesn’t wish to see you then there is nothing I will be able to do.”

Lin Ming was already more than satisfied with this answer. “Thank you Senior Su for the help. No matter if this matter succeeds or not, consider this junior to owe you a favor.”

“It’s not that big a deal.” Old Su waved his hand. “That’s right, since you just came to the Divine Runic Masters Guild you can have those two girls Clearshadow and Dreampearl show you around the area so you can familiarize yourself.”

“That’s right, there are many places in the Divine Runic Masters Guild that you don’t know of yet!” Old Xue echoed. In truth, he wanted Dreampearl and Clearshadow to be on good terms with Lin Ming. If they could get to know him then that would be greatly beneficial to their future growth.

Thus, after an incense stick of time, Lin Ming, Clearshadow, Dreampearl, as well as the brother and sister Yue Liuxing and Yue Qifeng went to explore the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

From the outside, the Divine Runic Masters Guild only covered an area of several dozen miles. But, the inside actually contained its own world.

Within the center of the Divine Runic Masters Guild there was a separate space-time that was sealed away. This was a dimensional realm, similar to the one that the Forsaken God Clan lived in within the Sky Spill Continent.

This dimensional realm was thousands of miles long and wide. After entering, the space was incomparably broad. There were majestic palaces that floated between pillowy clouds, looking grand and extravagant.

"Junior-apprentice Brother Lin, I hope that you don't mind me calling you this..." Dreampearl sweetly said from beside Lin Ming. She had already joined the Divine Runic Masters Guild a long time before this so calling Lin Ming her junior-apprentice brother was actually quite reasonable.

"Of course you may, Senior-apprentice Sister Dreampearl."

Lin Ming faintly smiled. After being so easily recognized as a senior-apprentice sister, Dreampearl lit up with pleasure.

"This is the treasure storage palace. The Divine Runic Masters Guild has many rare and precious materials that are kept here. If you want to exchange for them then you'll need enough origin energy runes, but they also take contribution points. These contribution points are the currency of our Divine Runic Masters Guild!"

Dreampearl said, pointing at a grand palace in front of her.

The palace was surrounded with enchanting landscapes, serene and beautiful.

At this time, there were many young disciples milling about outside the palace, one of them someone that Lin Ming had met before.

"Senior... Senior-apprentice Brother Luo?"

Yue Qifeng shouted out from beside Lin Ming.

This senior-apprentice brother Luo was Luo Yubai. He, Yue Qifeng, and Yue Liuxing had the same master and the three could be said to come from the same sect.

A year ago when Lin Ming first visited the Divine Runic Masters Guild, he had casually encountered Luo Yubai.

After Luo Yubai saw Lin Ming and the others he was a bit startled. His eyes quickly focused on Dreampearl and Clearshadow.

He faintly smiled. “So it’s Junior-apprentice Sisters Dreampearl and Clearshadow, and there’s even Qifeng and Liuxing, and, there’s also one more…”

Luo Yubai was surprised as he saw Lin Ming. He felt that Lin Ming looked somewhat familiar.

Martial artists had extremely good memories and even though Luo Yubai had bumped into Lin Ming a year ago, he still immediately recalled who Lin Ming was.

“You… shouldn’t be that…”

After remembering who Lin Ming was, Luo Yubai’s expression filled with incredulity. A year ago, Yue Qifeng and Yue Liuxing had brought Lin Ming to visit the Divine Runic Masters Guild and they had given him a tour of the outside. But, the place they were right now was the core region of the Divine Runic Masters Guild and it was impossible for outsiders to enter. Moreover, there was also Lin Ming’s appearance and the divine runic master badge on his chest…

That was clearly… a third grade divine runic master badge!

And Luo Yubai himself was also a third grade divine runic master!

Just how… would it be like this?

Luo Yubai was thoroughly shocked. Yue Qifeng quickly explained, “Senior-apprentice Brother Luo, Big Brother Lin Ming here has just passed the Divine Runic Masters Guild’s examination so he’s also a third grade divine runic master now!

After Yue Qifeng explained the situation, Luo Yubai was left shell-shocked. Yu Qifeng’s words were spoken so casually as if he were buying vegetables from an outside stall.

This was a third grade divine runic master examination! He had passed it so easily and had done it all in a single try!?

Luo Yubai felt as if he were lost in a dream. And at this time, Clearshadow had given Lin Ming a price list that included many precious materials of the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

Lin Ming had inherited the memories of three divine runic masters so he had a good understanding of materials needed for the divine runic arts. After casually sweeping over the list he spotted several materials that couldn't be purchased on the outside. If one wasn't a part of the Divine Runic Masters Guild then it would be difficult to find these materials.

This made Lin Ming feel that it was an increasingly good choice that he joined the Divine Runic Masters Guild. In the future, with the backing of the Divine Runic Masters Guild it would be much easier for him to refine pills for the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

"How do I earn guild contribution points?"

Lin Ming asked, clearly interested.

Dreampearl said, "There are many ways to earn points. For instance, you will obtain some through a monthly salary or you can even complete missions for the Divine Runic Masters Guild. The amount of contribution points you receive will vary depending on the difficulty of these missions. You can also trade for points with others. These methods usually only give you a small number of points. If you want to earn a massive amount of points, the best way would be to contribute your own unique divine runic arts techniques."

Many divine runic masters were self-reliant, similar to freelancers. The Divine Runic Masters Guild was a loose organization that definitely didn't want to see the other divine runic masters keep to themselves more and more, thus they had set up this provision where any person that contributed their own secret techniques would be rewarded with points.

"I understand." Lin Ming rubbed his chin. It seemed that there were several ways for him to earn points.

As Lin Ming was doing some calculations in his mind, the flame of a sound transmitting talisman flashed in front of him.

The message came from Old Su and the contents were extremely simple – it was that Blood Moon, a leader of Heaven’s Net, had agreed to meet with Lin Ming.

Chapter 1574 – Marvel Blue City

Chapter 1574 – Marvel Blue City

…

…

…

Tens of thousands of miles west of Divine Rune City, there was a vast and limitless ocean.

Above this ocean were countless islands. Some islands were several thousand miles large, and some had more surface area than a giant planet.

Among these many islands, there was a large island with a 10,000 mile radius. This island was called Blue God Island.

This island was hot and humid, lit up with sunlight. Most of it was vast tracts of lush forests.

And surrounded by these lush forests, there was a tropical nation filled with greenery. This nation was called Marvel Blue Nation and its capital was Marvel Blue City.

Marvel Blue Nation was no mortal country. This was because this area produced a type of resource called blue snow gold. Moreover, these verdant forests were also filled with ancient vicious beasts and all sorts of heavenly materials. Thus, although Marvel Blue Nation was situated in a vast ocean, most of the citizens were martial artists and it wasn't strange to see amazing top masters here.

Although its quality and quantity of martial artists couldn't compare to Divine Rune City, Marvel Blue City was still outstanding when compared to many major cities of the Divine Realm. The entire Marvel Blue Nation could be called a peak World King Holy Land.

On this day, a massive spirit boat anchored on the outskirts of Marvel Blue City. A young human man and woman leapt off the spirit boat. Then, the man received the spirit boat into his inner world.

This young man and woman were Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, and this spirit boat was only a disguised Primordius Heavenly Palace. After Lin Ming obtained Blood Moon's reply, he had journeyed west until he came to Marvel Blue City with Xiao Moxian. This city was where Blood Moon was located.

After arriving at this hot tropical island, the weather was extremely wet and humid. The martial artists here exuded an extremely deep and exotic atmosphere.

Most of the men wore hats tied down with cloth. They were shirtless or wore extremely short crop tops with loose pants and boots.

As for the women, they wore short, tight-fitting clothes with plunging necklines that proudly revealed their chests. They often wore bold leather skirts that revealed their slim waists and slender legs.

Some women with higher statuses had beautiful metal accessories hanging off of their faces and necks. These accessories were a metallic silver blue. This was the national resource of Marvel Blue Nation – blue snow gold.

As Lin Ming walked, he evaluated everything around him. Most of the martial artists walking outside were at the Divine Sea or Divine Transformation realm, and even Divine Lord realm martial artists weren't rare. This level of strength was extremely exaggerated. In the Divine Realm, a Divine Transformation realm martial artist possessed the ability to freely travel through the universe, and a Divine Lord realm martial artist could be the ultimate ruler of a small planet.

Soon, Lin Ming arrived at the gates of Marvel Blue City.

The tall city walls didn't seem as if they had experienced many years. Rather, they had a very new feeling to them. It seemed that this Marvel Blue City wasn't as ancient as Lin Ming had thought.

The city gates were manned by two teams of soldiers. After Lin Ming paid the city entrance fee, he stepped inside.

According to the address that Old Su had given him, Lin Ming continued inquiring for directions along the way. Finally, he arrived in a small materials shop that seemed common and insignificant.

Within this materials shop were all sorts of materials required for the divine runic arts and alchemy. There were even furnaces, divine runic pens, and so forth.

Because these things weren't too valuable, the shop seemed quite lonely and desolate.

Lin Ming only glanced over the shop a few times without the slightest desire to purchase anything. This was because he wasn't here to buy materials to begin with.

Lin Ming quietly took off a spatial ring and stepped in front of the shopkeeper. This shopkeeper was a short and pudgy middle-aged man. His cultivation was ordinary and sloppy. If he were in a crowd, one wouldn't notice him at all.

Lin Ming traced the spatial ring and pulled out several dozen materials. Then, he said in a low voice, "I'm selling, this is a total of 1,263,400 origin energy runes."

Upon hearing Lin Ming and seeing the materials that Lin Ming had taken out, the fat shopkeeper narrowed his eyes and looked deeply at Lin Ming.

The materials that Lin Ming took out as well as his asking price were all a single code word for him to make a connection in Marvel Blue City.

"What is your name?" The fat shopkeeper asked.

"Lin Ming."

His name had already been passed to Blood Moon ever since Old Su contacted her.

“Mm… follow my person. He will bring you to the one you wish to see.”

As the fat shopkeeper spoke, an old man with eagle-like eyes brushed open the curtains leading to the back of the shop and slowly walked out.

Although this old man’s movements were slow, his eyes were sharp. As he walked across the tiles, his steps were steady to the point of being startling.

“Come with me!”

The old man said, his voice sharp. It was hard to discern whether this was the voice of a man or a woman, and it was also quite harsh to the ears.

“Peak Holy Lord!”

Lin Ming judged in his heart. This old man actually possessed a peak Holy Lord cultivation, and he was even a human at that. In the Asura Road, humans were rare to begin with but in Marvel Blue Nation, over half the citizens were humans.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian followed this eagle-eyed old man out of the shop. From the body of this old man, Lin Ming could feel a surging essence energy. He raised his guard, remaining vigilant of his surroundings as he kept his focus on this eagle-eyed old man.

They walked without speaking. The eagle-eyed old man brought Lin Ming meandering left and right, passing through busy streets and squares, slowly approaching the center of Marvel Blue City.

Marvel Blue City covered an area of hundreds of miles and it was extremely broad. As for the center of Marvel Blue City, there was a massive and magnificent building complex! Now, Lin Ming was standing in front of this building complex.

Tall walls were manned by steely guards. As Lin Ming saw this, he was shocked. This place… could it be…?

The Imperial Palace!?

Marvel Blue Nation was not some small influence. Its sovereign was equivalent to sect masters of other large influences. This Imperial Palace was the core of Marvel Blue nation and could be called a den of crouching tigers and hidden dragons. There were many masters living in the Imperial Palace!

Lin Ming had already looked up information on Marvel Blue Nation before he arrived. Because Marvel Blue Nation was rich in great vicious beasts, medicinal herbs, and even the extremely valuable blue snow gold, the Marvel Blue Royal Family was extremely wealthy. Besides the masters in their court, there were many other elders and officers in their employ. In the event that a battle broke out, Marvel Blue Imperial Palace would have a terrifying combat strength.

Was Blood Moon in the Imperial Palace?

Lin Ming felt a bit odd as soon as he thought about it. Could there be some connection between Marvel Blue Nation and the Heaven's Net assassin organization?

The eagle-eyed old man brought Lin Ming to the back gates of the Imperial Palace. This was the smallest gate leading into the Imperial Palace but there were still 20 guards standing here.

The eagle-eyed old man lifted the plate card hanging on his belt and the guards immediately smiled, “So its Eunuch Liang. Please enter!”

The eagle-eyed old man stepped forwards past the gate, but Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were blocked.

“These two are…”

“These two are entering the palace for business reasons. These are their sign cards. ” The eagle-eyed old man continued to speak in his strange not-like-a-man and not-like-a-woman voice and tossed a jade slip to a guard.

The guard looked over the jade slip and allowed them to pass.

This scene caused Xiao Moxian to stick out her tongue at the guards. She said with a true essence sound transmission, “This old man is a court eunuch!?”

Xiao Moxian had thought that the eagle-eyed old man’s voice was a bit strange. So, it seemed that he was a court eunuch.

To Xiao Moxian, a eunuch was an extremely strange existence because this sort of occupation did not exist in Demondawn Heavenly Palace.

“Why would such a master be willing to be a eunuch? Moreover, if their cultivation has reached this boundary, then they could even regrow their body with certain top materials!”

For instance, when Tian Mingzi had hunted down Lin Ming in the Sky Spill Planet, he had severed his own hand to do so. After Tian Mingzi returned to the Skydark Holy Lands he had used secret techniques and heavenly materials to regenerate his severed hand. The only problem was that this hand had yet to be tempered so it was far inferior to his original hand.

Lin Ming was also curious. As for Eunuch Liang, who was walking in front, he seemed to guess what Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were thinking of. He chuckled mysteriously and then said with a true essence sound transmission, “You two are dual cultivation companions, right?”

Upon hearing this question, Xiao Moxian was startled. Then, she confidently said, “That’s right!”

“Hehe, for you to find an appropriate dual cultivation companion to increase your cultivation speed is your good fortune! However, while you may have heard of nourishing yin with yang and yang with yin, have you ever heard of locking in your essence energy to nourish yourself? In this world there are some martial arts where one must cut off their own manhood before one can cultivate them! Us eunuchs who sever our seven affections and six desires are perfectly suited to practice this type of martial arts! The average person must give vent to the physical temptations of the flesh, but for us, we can reverse this process, locking in our essence energy within our body. Slowly, our essence energy will accumulate, filling us with daily energy and bestowing upon us plentiful physical strength.

“Some people who wholeheartedly pursue the peak of martial arts would castrate themselves to establish their own unrivalled martial arts. Even on this road there are still transcendent divine mights! And in our Marvel Blue Imperial Palace, there are over 1200 eunuchs. What we practice is the Sunflower Melody, a transcendent divine might that was established by someone who castrated themselves and became an Empyrean!

“When ordinary people cultivate martial arts, those who fail are innumerable. But, when we eunuchs cultivate the Sunflower Melody, we can produce masters at a rate countless times higher!”

Eunuch Liang said, clearly filled with pride. Indeed, the road of martial arts had extremely high standards and not everyone had the ability to cultivate. But, if one chose to cultivate the Sunflower Melody, the restrictions were far lower.

However, there was one caveat. For someone who cultivated the Sunflower Melody, if they ever developed the desire towards men and women and no longer wished to be a eunuch, they could restore themselves with heavenly materials but this would mean that all the martial arts they cultivated would be wasted.

But in the legends, if one was able to practice the Sunflower Melody to the highest levels and reach the extreme Empyrean boundary then they could still regenerate their body and have their physical flesh reach perfection. But, this was far too distant a matter. For the average person, an Empyrean was nothing but a fairy tale.

Upon listening to Eunuch Liang, Lin Ming was left stupefied. The roads of martial arts of the 33 Heavens were endless and infinitely varied. The cultivation methods consisted of every possible thing that the mind could imagine!

However, Lin Ming didn't have the thoughts to think further about this. What he came here for was Blood Moon. He asked, "Eunuch Liang, this junior would like to know, is honored Blood Moon in the Imperial Palace?"

"Hehe, honored Blood Moon is certainly in the Imperial Palace, or what would I have brought you here for? Just follow me and you'll be fine. I'll bring you there!"

Chapter 1575 – Imperial Concubine Moon

Chapter 1575 – Imperial Concubine Moon

…

…

…

Marvel Blue Imperial Palace was extremely broad within; there were over 108,000 houses in it. Many imperial palace layouts were similar to those of mortal imperial palaces.

At the front of the Imperial Palace were the formal halls. There was the Heaven and Earth Hall, Primal Chaos Hall, Spiritual Cultivation Hall, Golden Dragon Hall, and over a hundred other such halls. When the Emperor met with his royal advisors and ministers he would do it in these halls.

But at the back of the Imperial Palace was the harem. This harem had over 3000 occupants. Every concubine was beautiful, graceful, and incomparably enchanting.

In the world of martial artists, a martial artist would found their own influence to create their own sect and become the sovereign. As for those martial artists like the Marvel Blue Emperor who chose to found their own country, construct their own Imperial Palace and make themselves an Emperor, that was somewhat rarer.

In the Imperial Palace there were at least 18,000 imperial guards, 20,000 palace maids, and 10,000 court eunuchs. When Eunuch Liang said there were 1200 eunuchs, he had been referring to those who had the qualifications to cultivate the Sunflower Melody. These eunuchs were supervisors and leaders of the other eunuchs.

As Lin Ming walked forwards he saw many of these chief eunuchs. They were at the Divine Transformation or Divine Lord realms, with some even at the Holy Lord realm.

Those at the Holy Lord realm wore different clothing. They wore yellow robes, indicating a higher status of court eunuch.

Lin Ming rubbed his chin as he saw this. In the Imperial Palace, just the military force of the eunuchs was considerably terrifying. He wouldn't be surprised if the head chief eunuch was a World King powerhouse.

As they followed Eunuch Liang they were stopped at several more checkpoints. At each checkpoint, Eunuch Liang would take out different tokens. As they passed through an arched door, Lin Ming smelled the intoxicating scent of perfume and the clear atmosphere of women. This left him startled. This was clearly… the Marvel Blue Imperial Palace Harem!

Looking at the various palaces here and the many carvings of phoenixes, the architectural style here was much simpler and more composed. The paths were lined with red carpets and groups of charming maids carried lanterns and trays of fruits and they shuttled back and forth throughout.

"Harem…"

A strange color came over Lin Ming's face. According to common reasoning, the harem was a restricted area. Besides eunuchs, no other men were allowed entry. Did these usual rules not exist in Marvel Blue Imperial Palace?

As Lin Ming was thinking, Eunuch Liang brought Lin Ming to an elegantly modeled courtyard. The palace in this courtyard was carved from jade and the gardens were planted with lush plants. There were all sorts of heavenly treasures and exotic flowers planted in the garden.

Above the entrance to this courtyard was a large plaque – Full Moon Hall.

These three words were written in a flowing and beautiful script; they clearly came from the hands of a woman.

Lin Ming followed Eunuch Liang into Full Moon Hall. As soon as they entered the rooms he was able to smell the faint scent of light powder. In Full Moon Hall, even within the guest rooms, everywhere was filled with fine red silk, screens of peacock feathers, and velvet carpets. This could be called an opulent aesthetic that was pleasing to the eyes.

In this hall, above a large expanse of red silk, there was a woman in a red skirt, dancing barefoot.

This woman's red skirt seemed connected to the silk beneath her, making the entire hall look as if it were lit on fire. Her skin was pure white, like the most perfect jade, and her smooth hands were as fine as orchids. When joined with her slender arms, her movements were gentle and glamorous.

The woman's legs were wrapped in a long gauzy skirt but one could still make out her perfect curves beneath the slinking fabric. Although she wore a long red skirt, she actually wore the common clothing of the Marvel Blue Nation. She wore a tight-fitting top that revealed her waist and stomach, and as she waved about she undulated like a snake, flexible and fascinating.

This woman's charms were extreme to the limit. However, her face was covered by a veil so it was impossible to see her facial features.

After this woman danced for a quarter hour she finally stopped. She wrapped herself in a heavy shawl and sat down in the honored seat. Eunuch Liang bowed to her and said, "This old servant greets Imperial Concubine Moon."

Lin Ming was stunned upon hearing this – Imperial Concubine Moon?

"This shouldn't be…"

A bizarre thought appeared in Lin Ming's mind, one that he found hard to react to for some time. But as he joined this together with where he was and what he had seen and heard, this was the most reasonable conclusion.

Without needing Lin Ming to say anything, Imperial Concubine Moon spoke up. She turned to Lin Ming and said, “You have come to me to seek out a cultivation method manual?”

“Yes.”

Lin Ming was darkly shocked. Blood Moon, one of the leaders of the Heaven’s Net assassin organization was actually Imperial Concubine Moon of the Marvel Blue Imperial Palace. Just what was going on here?

Imperial Concubine Moon, Blood Moon, Full Moon Hall…

These three terms all shared the ‘moon’ word. For Imperial Concubine Moon to be Blood Moon was the best explanation.

Then, could it be that the chief leader of Heaven’s Net was the Marvel Blue Emperor?

Lin Ming immediately shot down this thought as soon as it appeared.

Marvel Blue Nation had bountiful resources and considerable national military strength; it simply wasn’t worth it for the emperor to work as the chief leader of an assassin organization in his spare time. In an assassin organization, the core figures would always hide their identities in order to avoid being targeted by others who wanted to retaliate against them.

For an influence like the Marvel Blue Nation, the gains simply weren’t worth the losses. This was because it was possible that their identity could be uncovered by others if there were enough clues and traces. If their real identity was exposed and multiple enemies targeted them then the entire nation could be wiped out overnight!

If Heaven’s Net didn’t have some close relationship with the Marvel Blue Nation then there could only be one explanation as to why Blood Moon was here. That was that her status as Imperial Concubine Moon was only one of her identities and her true status was hidden.

But if this was true, there were even more questions.

Blood Moon was clearly extremely secretive about her identity as Imperial Concubine Moon, so why would she expose herself and let Lin Ming know who she was?

Of course, even though Blood Moon revealed her identity, she still wore a veil, making it so that one couldn't see her face.

In fact, even her cultivation was hidden. Lin Ming simply wasn't able to see through it.

This was something common for a leader of an assassin organization.

As all these thoughts flashed through Lin Ming's mind, Imperial Concubine Moon seemed to know what he was thinking. But, she didn't explain, instead smiling and saying, "Which cultivation method of mine did you want?"

Lin Ming awoke from his thoughts. He composed himself and honestly said, "The Celestial Tyrant Manual's Nine Stars of the Dao Palace section!"

As soon as Lin Ming spoke, Imperial Concubine Moon's complexion changed. "Celestial Tyrant Manual!?"

"Yes." Lin Ming nodded. Although he was curious about Blood Moon's identity, he didn't ask her. It was impossible for her to answer him nor did he expect her to.

"You know I possess the Celestial Tyrant Manual?" Imperial Concubine Moon's eyes narrowed, as if she wanted to see through Lin Ming. Lin Ming calmly looked back at her. After an incense stick of time, she suddenly nodded and said, "That's right, there were some other people that knew… I never thought that you would be able to find out, but you must have asked Heaven's Secret. Heaven's Secret…"

A cold light flashed in Imperial Concubine Moon's eyes. No one liked having their own information being traded around by others. In a way, the intelligence organization Heaven's

Secret and the assassin organization Heaven's Net were the same. Both of them were extremely unlikable to certain people and it was easy for them to offend others.

"Celestial Tyrant Manual… so you actually dual cultivate body and energy. You have opened the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates and have even managed to peer into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. That is quite… incredible!"

Imperial Concubine Moon whispered, her eyes still locked onto Lin Ming. But, Lin Ming remained composed throughout. Although Imperial Concubine Moon had covered her appearance with a veil and even her inner world was covered with a fog so that he couldn't see into her, Lin Ming could still faintly feel that she was a human.

As a human martial artist, she would have a thorough understanding of how difficult the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was.

"If you want the Celestial Tyrant Manual's Nine Stars of the Dao Palace section, that is possible. But, you need to put forth sufficient conditions!"

Imperial Concubine Moon spoke straight to the point. The reason she was willing to see Lin Ming was because she valued something that he could offer her.

"If it is within reason, then please say it Imperial Concubine Moon!"

Lin Ming certainly didn't think that Imperial Concubine Moon would give him the Celestial Tyrant Manual for nothing. That was a transcendent divine might! If he wished to obtain it then he would have to pay a high enough price.

Now, it would depend on what Imperial Concubine Moon wanted from him.

Chapter 1576 – Blood Moon's Conundrum

Chapter 1576 – Blood Moon's Conundrum

…

…

…

Imperial Concubine Moon sat down on a couch and bid a servant to steep a pot of tea before waving for Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian to also take a seat. Then, she slowly said, "I heard that Sir Lin Ming had a teacher whose cultivation is above the Empyrean realm?"

As Imperial Concubine Moon said this, Lin Ming finally understood what she wanted. No wonder she was willing to see him; it was because she had the idea to connect to his teacher through him.

She needed help from the 'master' that Lin Ming had conjured up on a whim, a master that didn't even exist.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. Then he said, "What is the matter? Must it need my master to emerge from seclusion? Can it not be me?"

"You?" Imperial Concubine Moon gently shook her head. Her cherry red lips opened as she said, "You are far too weak…"

"How do you know if we are weak or not?" Xiao Moxian mumbled, not feeling very happy at these words.

Imperial Concubine Moon lightly chuckled as she heard this. She had taken Xiao Moxian's remarks as the spirited and self-confident nature of a junior. "Lin Ming, I sincerely hope that… I can obtain your master's help. I am willing to offer the entire Celestial Tyrant

Manual! But, let me give you a word of caution. The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace is a road that defies the will of the heavens. Try not to be too stubborn about these matters."

Imperial Concubine Moon advised with good intentions. Lin Ming faintly smiled. "Thank you for the advice, but… I'm afraid my master… will not meet you."

Imperial Concubine Moon pressed her eyebrows together. "Why…?"

In truth, she also thought that if the status of Lin Ming's master was too high then he truly wouldn't want to meet her. After all, she was nothing but a small and unimportant nobody to an extreme Empyrean. And to a True Divinity, she was nothing more than a speck of dust.

However, she didn't believe that Lin Ming had a True Divinity level master. In the entire Asura Road, if one counted all the rumors, those that were either dead or alive, or those that had gone into seclusion for hundreds of millions of years and could never be found, even if all of these factors were added together there were only several True Divinities. If a junior she casually saw was the last disciple of a True Divinity then she felt that was far too unbelievable.

"Is that so… then, Lin Ming, you've come out to adventure and gain experience all by yourself? Your master has washed his hands of you?"

When a master taught their apprentice, although they would do their best, sometimes they wouldn't be willing to do everything for them. These masters would allow their apprentices to roam free without any interference. Only like this would the apprentice experience the trials and tribulations of the world and grow through being tempered.

If Lin Ming was in such a situation then it would be impossible for Imperial Concubine Moon to request help from Lin Ming's master.

Lin Ming didn't confirm or deny anything. Instead, he asked, "Why don't you tell me what you need? Perhaps I will be able to help you."

“You?” Imperial Concubine Moon looked at Lin Ming and shook her head again. “Unless you have an extremely mighty martial artist that can help you, there is no way for you to help me. This is because my troubles are extremely great and involve a battle between World Kings. You two are far too young. If you are involved in my mess then you will only be killed!”

“Then why don’t you tell? If I cannot help you then I naturally will not try to force it.”

Lin Ming insisted, not giving up. He needed to obtain the Celestial Tyrant Manual at all costs.

“Alright…” Imperial Concubine Moon was silent for a moment. Then she stood up and said, “Follow me to my chambers.”

Imperial Concubine Moon was tall and slender, only slightly shorter than Lin Ming. With her proud figure accentuated by her long skirt, it surrounded her with the atmosphere of a woman who renounced the world and stood above others. Although her face was masked by a veil, one could still see the faint but perfect outline of her face. Above her nose hung a chain of red crystals that only served to add bit of mystery to her.

The chamber that Imperial Concubine Moon mentioned was located in a separate time-space deep beneath the ground. There was a solid soundproofing array formation here. If one was within it, then even a half-step Empyrean wouldn’t be able to listen in.

Eunuch Liang did not follow. In the chamber, only Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, and Imperial Concubine Moon were present.

“I am Blood Moon – you should have already guessed this by now.”

Imperial Concubine Moon sat down in a spacious stone chair before motioning for Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian to also sit.

She lifted her hands and dexterously picked up a pot of tea, pouring a cup for Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian. If Imperial Concubine Moon hadn’t heard of Lin Ming’s awe-inspiring performance at the Divine Runic Masters Guild and knew he was an amazing junior of his generation then it would have been impossible for her to treat him with such courtesy.

"I did guess your identity, but I was still surprised. I originally thought that Blood Moon was one of Imperial Concubine Moon's secret identities, but the more I thought about this the less likely it seemed..."

"Oh? Why do you think that's not possible?" Imperial Concubine Moon smiled.

"Because if Imperial Concubine Moon wanted to see us then you could definitely conceal your identity and leave the palace. You wouldn't even need us to come to Marvel Blue Nation and could just meet us with your identity as Blood Moon. If so, then we would have only known you as Blood Moon and wouldn't know of your identity as Imperial Concubine Moon. For you, this would be far safer. I don't think there is anything I have done yet or shown that would have you place so must trust in me."

Lin Ming slowly explained. Imperial Concubine Moon nodded, saying, "Continue on."

"Mm... so I guessed that Imperial Concubine Moon is not your true identity but only a temporary one. Only like this would you meet us without caring for us knowing your identity. The only thing I'm not clear about is why you have such authority in Marvel Blue Imperial Palace that you can have others leave and enter as they please. And, does the emperor of Marvel Blue Nation have any relations with the Heaven's Net assassin organization?"

Lin Ming's words evoked a smile from Imperial Concubine Moon. A look of appreciation flashed in her eyes. "Your analysis is quite good. Imperial Concubine Moon is indeed a temporary status of mine, and Marvel Blue Nation and Heaven's Net only have cooperative relations with each other. The reason I entered Marvel Blue Imperial Palace is in truth to accomplish a mission. I am not any Imperial Concubine Moon. That is a title especially bestowed upon me by the Marvel Blue Emperor in order to make my mission easier."

As Imperial Concubine Moon spoke, Lin Ming nodded in understanding, suddenly aware. "So that's how it is. Then, Imperial Concubine Moon's employer is the Marvel Blue Emperor?"

"You could say that."

This brief exchange finally explained the suspicions in Lin Ming's mind. But, this was also reasonable. Imperial Concubine Moon was only a fake identity and Lin Ming still had no idea as to what Blood Moon's true identity was. That veil around her face still wrapped her with a sense of mystery.

"Then how difficult are Imperial Concubine Moon's troubles? Is there anything I can do to help?"

Lin Ming asked. This was what he wanted to know.

Imperial Concubine Moon hesitated for a moment and then said, "My Heaven's Net organization has had some changes occur internally. Because of this, someone is trying to harm me. This person has a World King cultivation and many helpers..."

Imperial Concubine Moon lightly said, not revealing anything further. This was because if she spoke more then she would have to reveal some inner secrets of Heaven's Net, and these were not secrets she could speak of to Lin Ming. This was because she didn't have much hope that Lin Ming would be able to help her.

"World King..."

Lin Ming thought for a moment. World Kings were divided into ordinary World Kings and Great World Kings. If one simply said the term World King then they were usually referring to an ordinary World King.

Of course, ordinary World Kings were still divided into the weak and the strong. Lin Ming could deal with a weaker World King, but it wouldn't be easy for him to handle a formidable World King.

"If it is only an ordinary World King then Imperial Concubine Moon shouldn't need to fear too much…"

Lin Ming looked at Imperial Concubine Moon. From the information that he had gleaned, this Imperial Concubine Moon was also a World King powerhouse, otherwise she simply wouldn't have the ability to become a leader of Heaven's Net.

And, as one of the leaders of Heaven's Net, even if there was some inner turmoil within Heaven's Net there should still be those that supported her. She should have the ability to compete for control.

If everyone became hostile to Imperial Concubine Moon after the change within Heaven's Net, then it could only be said that her relations in Heaven's Net were far too pathetic.

As Lin Ming mentioned this, Imperial Concubine Moon sighed. "My situation isn't as good as you think it is."

As Lin Ming heard this, his thoughts stirred. He couldn't help but meet Imperial Concubine's eyes for several moments. To probe her body with his sense was extremely impolite, thus Lin Ming hadn't done so. But now that he listened to her, he seemed to realize something.

"It seems that Imperial Concubine Moon is… wounded?"

Imperial Concubine Moon sighed. She self-mockingly laughed, saying, "There have been many matters that have occurred these past few years. In the face of benefits, many people will choose betrayal… and now, the situation I am in is very bad…"

"I about understand what is happening…"

Imperial Concubine Moon's explanation was short, but Lin Ming was able to faintly make out what was happening. This difficulty of hers should be some sort of internal struggle within Heaven's Net.

"Then I will bid my farewells. I shall return to visit tomorrow." Lin Ming didn't immediately reply. He needed some time to think and ready himself.

"Mm, if you wish to see me tomorrow, then follow the same method as today."

Imperial Concubine Moon said, not seeing her visitors out. As soon as Lin Ming left, a figure flashed within the chamber and Eunuch Liang appeared.

"Miss, should I follow them? I feel that it is extremely unusual for them to suddenly appear at this time…"

Imperial Concubine Moon said, "No need. He shouldn't have been sent by the other side. There is no reason for Old Su to deceive me. And, this Lin Ming is indeed a young and talented divine runic master. Although others in the organization must harm me there is no way they have the ability to find this type of genius to be their helper. He really should have come here for the Celestial Tyrant Manual. Since he has opened the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates he has more than enough motive to seek out the Celestial Tyrant Manual. Of course, it is impossible for him to successfully practice the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace…"

Upon mentioning the Celestial Tyrant Manual, Eunuch Liang's thoughts stirred. He said, "Isn't this Celestial Tyrant Manual something that Miss brought from the Divine Realm. If this matter becomes too widespread, then would Miss' blood enemy in the Divine Realm become involved?"

As Eunuchs Liang brought up the topic of her personal enemy, Imperial Concubine Moon took a deep breath as a thick killing intent flashed in her eyes!

Within Heaven's Net, because their big boss was missing, the things that were left behind had caused tremendous turmoil due to the layers upon layers of entangled benefits. Even one of her trusted subordinates had betrayed her and wounded her at a critical time. But even so, she hadn't developed a deep hatred towards this person.

However, when it concerned her enemy in the Divine Realm, she wished that she could eat his raw flesh and drink his blood!

Chapter 1577 – Life-death Seclusion of the Emperor

Chapter 1577 – Life-death Seclusion of the Emperor

…

…

…

Eunuch Liang was one of the chief eunuchs of Marvel Blue Imperial Palace as well as a trusted subordinate of the Marvel Blue Emperor. In the past, Blood Moon had done a favor for Eunuch Liang and there was even some friendship between them. The reason that Blood Moon came to Marvel Blue Imperial Palace was also because Eunuch Liang brought both sides together. Although Blood Moon could be said to be on a mission, the truth was that this was more a form of asylum. In Marvel Blue Imperial Palace, Blood Moon would be able to obtain some protection. Even so, she would have to return to Heaven's Net sooner or later. That was where she had placed so much effort in these years to establish her own business and foundation, and there was also something there she needed to retrieve.

Before Blood Moon entered the harem, Eunuch Liang had referred to her as 'miss'. But now, he also referred to her as 'Imperial Concubine'. Eunuch Liang was faintly aware that Blood Moon came from the Divine Realm and she also had a blood enemy there, one that she was absolutely irreconcilable with.

Blood Moon had hidden her identity and had come to the Asura Road alone to temper and gain experience. In the end, she had become one of the leaders of Heaven's Net. All of this was because of this blood enemy of hers. She needed to take revenge for all her grudges, but, it seemed that Blood Moon's enemy had a cultivation at the Great World King realm. With her current strength, she simply wasn't his match.

In these years, Blood Moon had desperately cultivated, seeking all chances regardless of how dangerous they were. However, even though she made progress, her enemy also made progress. It was hard to say whether or not she would be able to catch up to him in her lifetime!

As this irreconcilable blood enemy of hers was mentioned, a thick and profound killing intent flashed in her eyes, only fading after a long time. In this world there were few things that could cause her to lose her composure, but, this enemy from the Divine Realm was one of them.

She calmed her mind and no longer thought about the hatred of the past. She said, “Eunuch Liang, I heard that His Majesty will be entering life-death seclusion in the next few days; is this news true?”

Eunuch Liang sighed as the topic of the Marvel Blue Emperor’s closed door seclusion was mentioned. “It is necessary seclusion… His Majesty follows the Heavenly Dao and has a great destiny upon his body. I only hope that during this seclusion, His Majesty will be able to make another breakthrough and live forever…”

Although Eunuch Liang said this, his tone and expression indicated that he wasn’t too optimistic that the Marvel Blue Sovereign would be able to successfully pass this closed door seclusion.

As for Blood Moon herself, she definitely didn’t expect that the Marvel Blue Emperor would be able to prolong his life. His fires of life had flickered out and he was at the end of his rope. If he were to make another breakthrough here then that would truly be violating the Heavenly Dao!

If the Marvel Blue Sovereign could have achieved this then he would have already broken through the shackles of a World King and become an Empyrean. He wouldn’t be like he was today, desperately struggling with his life on the line.

Blood Moon also knew that a hundred years ago, the Marvel Blue Emperor had realized he didn't have much time remaining on the mortal coil. He had even attempted to open the final smelting trial of the Asura Road, but, he had been too old and wasn't able to obtain the qualifications to enter. Then, the Marvel Blue Emperor had gathered a group of top masters to explore one of the forbidden death zones of the inner Asura Road – the Forbidden Divine Barrens. He had hoped to seek out some immortal medicines but in the end he remained disappointed.

By then, the Marvel Blue Emperor had done everything he could. His strength weakened by the day and his life's essence energy continued to fade from him, even as his boundary dropped. Now, at death's door, he had chosen to enter life-death closed door seclusion. There was simply no chance of him making another breakthrough. Without a doubt, his chamber would become his grave.

Blood Moon didn't think that the Marvel Blue Emperor would be able to cross this tribulation. What she cared for now was with the Marvel Blue Emperor in life-death closed door seclusion, just who was managing the affairs of the nation?

"Eunuch Liang, with His Majesty in seclusion, who is managing the nation?"

"According to the laws and customs of the court, the Empress is the one wielding the imperial jade seal to serve as temporary manager of national matters. Once His Majesty leaves seclusion then the imperial jade seal will be returned to him. If there is some accident and His Majesty doesn't leave seclusion, then the Empress will pass the imperial jade seal on to the new Emperor..."

Blood Moon frowned upon hearing this. If the Empress was the one holding power, then this wasn't good news to her at all!

Eunuch Liang seemed to guess what she was thinking. He said, "Although the Empress is the one managing the national affairs, she still won't act unreasonably. Miss, please feel relieved..."

“Mmm… I hope that is true…”

Blood Moon said. She rubbed her temples. There were far too many things that had happened in these last few years, making her feel exhausted as if she couldn’t keep up with it all!

………

After two days there was still no movement in the Imperial Palace. And on the third day, Lin Ming returned once more to Full Moon Hall.

During these two days, Lin Ming had kept himself busy. He had inquired about a great deal of news.

He knew now that the Emperor of Marvel Blue Nation had a Great World King cultivation. However, his life was nearing its end and he didn’t have much longer to live. He would die in his chambers soon.

With the old Emperor soon to die, this brought about the matter of establishing a new Emperor.

During the Marvel Blue Emperor’s long life, he had over a thousand children. When his grandchildren and great grandchildren were added on, this number rose exponentially higher.

Of these many descendants, only two of them had the qualifications to become the new Emperor.

These two people were Prince Marvel Shen and Grandprince Marvel Snow.

Prince Marvel Shen was older and his cultivation was at the peak Holy Lord realm. During these years, he had developed and amassed a considerable amount of influence and power.

As for Grandprince Marvel Snow, he was younger and his cultivation was at the early Holy Lord realm. He could be considered a promising young man, and his talent even surpassed that of Prince Marvel Shen. As for the power he had developed, it was much smaller. Now, both Marvel Shen and Marvel Snow had their supporters; it was hard to say whose hands the throne would fall into.

And, there was one piece of news that Lin Ming paid particular attention to…

Blood Moon, also known as Imperial Concubine Moon, had been gifted to the Marvel Blue Emperor by Grandprince Marvel Snow.

When Marvel Snow gifted Blood Moon to the Marvel Blue Emperor, the Marvel Blue Emperor’s lifespan was already coming to its natural end; he had no wants or desires to take in a new concubine. But even so, the Marvel Blue Emperor had given Blood Moon the title of Imperial Concubine Moon. Without a doubt, this was because the Marvel Blue Emperor wanted to help Marvel Snow increase his influence.

Lin Ming suspected that the Marvel Blue Emperor intentionally did this to blur the official choice of successors. He wanted the prince and grandprince to struggle for the throne so that the most qualified one would be able to occupy it!

This was also a reasonable matter. The reason that the Marvel Blue Emperor was able to sit steadily on his throne was his own strength. But, for the next emperor, they would either need a World King level of strength, or they would need to have the means and methods to rule as well as the ability to amass and develop their own influence! Only by accomplishing these two matters to their fullest extent could one rule their own nation!

“Lin Ming, what do we do now?”

Xiao Moxian asked. She was sitting on a bench in Full Moon Hall, her elbows resting on a table as she propped up her chin. She was a little bit worried. They had already been in Marvel Blue Nation for so many days and yet they hadn’t even seen a hint of the Celestial Tyrant Manual.

“There’s nothing we can do for now. We can only wait.”

Lin Ming replied simply. He didn't seem to be in a hurry at all, but the truth was that even after he returned to Full Moon Hall, although Blood Moon had been willing to see him again, her attitude towards him had clearly been much more distant.

In Blood Moon's opinion, although Lin Ming was an outstanding young elite worth befriending and who would also have a limitless future, that was something far off from now. He simply didn't have the ability to help her solve her current troubles.

Right now, Blood Moon was within Marvel Blue Imperial Palace. She faced layers upon layers of pressure. Not only did she have to attend to the internal struggles within the Imperial Palace, she also had to be on guard against the turmoil that was rocking Heaven's Net!

Moreover, because Blood Moon had been betrayed by a close subordinate of hers, she had received a wound that had yet to heal, making matters even worse!

In Blood Moon's eyes, if Lin Ming's master was willing to help then solving her problems would be as easy as lifting their hand. However, if Lin Ming's master wasn't willing to help, then just a junior like Lin Ming alone wouldn't be of any assistance to her.

Thus, the second time that Lin Ming came to Full Moon Hall, she had only politely summoned him. She had a young eunuch lead Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian to a side hall and basically didn't see him at all.

Like this, five days passed. Lin Ming still hadn't seen Blood Moon.

And in Full Moon Hall, Lin Ming wasn't even able to walk as he pleased. After all, there were women everywhere and if he wasn't careful he would see far too much of their bodies.

Things continuing like this was not a plan.

However, Lin Ming was clear that if he couldn't put out some sort of condition that could move Blood Moon, it was simply impossible for him to borrow her transcendent divine might for any period of time.

Thus, Lin Ming didn't even mention the matter of the Celestial Tyrant Manual. He peacefully stayed at Full Moon Hall, either meditating, dual cultivating with Xiao Moxian, or practicing his divine runic arts.

Slowly, a dozen some days passed. In the blink of an eye, Lin Ming had stayed in Full Moon Hall for half a month.

In the early morning, a maid slammed the doors open to put down a basin of wash water. Her eyes narrowed as she looked at Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian. As she saw their lazy and fulfilled appearances in bed, her eyes flashed with contempt.

She didn't have to be a genius to know what the two of them had been doing last night.

The young maid also acknowledged that Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian could be considered a dragon and phoenix amongst humans, a match made by the heavens. But, they had freely eaten and slept here without any meaning or intention of leaving Full Moon Hall, and they had done so for half a month. Since it was her job to manage their daily needs she naturally wasn't feeling happy that she had to do these extra duties.

Moreover, she could see that her master didn't care too much about this young man and woman. Thus, she had faintly regarded Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian as simple freeloaders.

"I must say… sir, miss, how long do you plan on living here?"

This young maid was quite interesting. If she managed to be chosen to enter the Imperial Palace, she naturally wasn't ugly. Rather, with her teenage appearance, she seemed quite pure and naïve.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. He easily knew what this young maid was thinking. "What, are you in such a hurry to kick us out?"

After having her thoughts revealed, the young maid wasn't embarrassed. She said, "This is the harem; men usually cannot enter here. Although Imperial Concubine Moon has a special status that gives her the privilege to bid you enter and leave, you cannot stay here forever. Aren't these the common rules of a palace?"

"That makes some sense." Lin Ming smiled and nodded, still having no intention of leaving. His actions seemed mildly antagonistic.

The young maid's lips twitched and she unhappily threw a white towel onto the edge of the water basin, causing a large splash.

Just as she was about to stomp off in a huff, a sharp and long voice echoed through the air, "By the decree of the Empress, Imperial Concubine Moon must come out to meet her!"

This eunuch's voice had a great penetrative power, one that reached into every inch of Full Moon Hall. As the young maid heard this, her body shook and she nearly fell to the floor.

Chapter 1578 – Summons of the Empress

Chapter 1578 – Summons of the Empress

…

…

…

The eunuch's sharp and grating voice reverberated through all of Full Moon Hall. The young maid propped herself up against the carved wooden door. She gathered her wits, her hand held against her chest even as her complexion was left paled and stunned.

She had been shocked by that shout because she was far too young and her cultivation was far too weak. As for that eunuch's voice, it was extremely vigorous. Although there wasn't any true essence in his voice it was still filled with energy, making the eardrums shake.

And, another reason was that to a palace maid without any decent cultivation, the title of Empress was far too terrifying!

The Empress was the mother of the nation and the head of the harem. All palace maids, all eunuchs, all imperial concubines, everyone had to obey the summons of the Empress. Within the harem, the Empress had absolute power!

Now, a powerful chief eunuch had suddenly shouted out the decree of the Empress. This inevitably placed a great deal of pressure on a young maid!

"The summons of the Empress?"

Lin Ming rubbed his chin, some thoughts flashing through his mind. Now that the Marvel Blue Emperor was in closed door seclusion, if the Empress had issued a decree towards

Imperial Concubine Moon then it was impossible that they would be chatting about old times. There was definitely some play involved concerning political and material benefits.

And according to what Lin Ming knew, Prince Marvel Shen was the son of the Empress!

Prince Marvel Shen had a prominent background. Although his talent was a great deal worse than Grandprince Marvel Snow’s, the influence and power he grasped in his hands was several times greater than Marvel Snow’s!

And Blood Moon was also known as Imperial Concubine Moon. She was the offering that Grandprince Marvel Snow had given to the Marvel Blue Emperor.

With a little bit of thinking, one could imagine just what sort of cooperative relationship they had.

Blood Moon was an imperial concubine in name only. In truth, she was actually a helper that Marvel Snow had brought in!

And the price that Marvel Snow paid was likely a promise to help Blood Moon stabilize her position in Heaven’s Net once he succeeded the position of emperor!

This was a mutually beneficial interaction, a win-win situation for the both of them. Of course, the basis of this was that Blood Moon was able to help Marvel Snow succeed the throne. Otherwise, if she failed, not only would she obtain no advantages but she might be dragged in without any ability to defend herself!

All of these thoughts raced through Lin Ming’s mind. He could feel that the Empress’ summons this time had no good intentions behind them!

The Empress would certainly support her son Marvel Shen, and as for Blood Moon, she supported Marvel Snow. Between Empress and imperial concubine, there was bound to be a fierce battle!

And at this time, Blood Moon had already exited to receive the decree.

This was a written decree with the seal of the Empress as well as the mark of the imperial jade seal; it wasn't a verbal decree only.

Generally speaking, if the Empress wanted to summon someone she would only need to pass on a message. She normally wouldn't need to do something as serious as sending out a written decree.

"Imperial Concubine Moon. In these past days, the Empress has been managing national affairs and now she wishes to clear out the harem. In these last months the Emperor has been unable to pay attention to the affairs of the state and in his absence, there have been many princes and imperial concubines that have been forming their own influences within the imperial palace, even gathering guests here and creating all sorts of trouble and commotion. Now, the Empress has decreed a cleansing. Imperial Concubine Moon, I hope that you do not mind if I search through Full Moon Hall!"

In front of Imperial Concubine Moon, a yellow-robed eunuch cunningly smiled. His voice was sharp and daggers were hidden in his smile. Although his face was old and covered with wrinkles his eyes were still as sharp as an eagle's, as if he could see through people to their bones.

This was a peak Holy Lord eunuch. Those eunuchs that wore yellow robes were all leaders amongst the eunuchs. For the Empress to send a chief eunuch to pass on a decree, it could be said that she was taking this matter extremely seriously. Moreover, there was even another team of eunuch bodyguards behind him!

These eunuch bodyguards all had a Divine Lord realm cultivation. The leader amongst these eunuchs even had an early Holy Lord realm cultivation.

Even though Marvel Blue Nation was a peak Holy Land influence, it was still impossible for them to have Divine Lords everywhere. A true palace bodyguard normally had a late Divine Transformation realm cultivation. Now that a team of Divine Lords had been sent here, it was clear that they had sent their most outstanding individuals!

This uproar and threatening momentum was definitely not a good sign.

Blood Moon frowned. According to palace rules, the Empress was in charge of the harem and she truly did have the authority to issue such a decree. Moreover, the Empress was now temporarily managing national affairs so her authority was even greater.

If she were to disobey then that would be violating the decree. There would be charges pushed against her, giving the Empress a chance to punish her!

Blood Moon was in an extremely bad situation to begin with. If she stirred up more trouble then it would only be adding fuel to the fire.

She quickly said with a true essence sound transmission, “Lin Ming, you and your companion must quickly leave through the transmission array here. I will have Eunuch Liang meet you on the outside! Although I have a token that allows you to enter the palace, the Empress is currently managing affairs of the state, thus if you were to fall into her hands she would be able to call down charges on you. If that were to happen then you would be dragged into this mess!”

Blood Moon’s words were quick and succinct; everything was heard by Lin Ming.

These words left Lin Ming startled. He suddenly developed a much more favorable impression of Blood Moon.

In Blood Moon’s opinion, Lin Ming must have some amazing master standing behind him. In ordinary times, it would be impossible for her to request a favor from Lin Ming’s master.

But if Lin Ming were to fall into danger, that would be a completely different situation!

If the Empress rashly did something to Lin Ming, harming him or even killing him, then it would be possible that Lin Ming’s master would take revenge for him. The anger of an Empyrean was no trifling matter. It was possible that the entire Marvel Blue Nation would be destroyed for this reason alone!

But Blood Moon did not use this to her advantage. Instead, she bid Lin Ming escape as soon as he could. The Imperial Palace had numerous masters standing guard here. If a junior like Lin Ming was wrapped up in the palace disputes then there really was a chance he would die!

Although Blood Moon didn't attach much importance to Lin Ming and had even placed him in a side room without seeing him for half a month, she had never intended to harm him nor did she plan to use his safety as a chip to gain more advantages for herself.

This caused Lin Ming to feel a bit more trusting of Blood Moon. Although Blood Moon came from an assassin organization she still had her own moral code, one that she wouldn't break. This sort of person was worth knowing.

However, although Blood Moon had told Lin Ming to leave, the old eunuch that issued the decree wouldn't stand by and let this happen. In fact, before the old eunuch even stepped into Full Moon Hall, he had already carefully probed every master inside!

Lin Ming only had a Divine Lord realm cultivation but his foundation was far more solid than an ordinary Divine Lord powerhouse's. The position he stood at was naturally vibrant and out of the ordinary.

And besides Lin Ming, there was no other top male master in Full Moon Hall. Eunuch Liang was not in Full Moon Hall at the moment, and even if he were the old eunuch would still have recognized and ignored him. Because of this Lin Ming had become the focus of his attention!

The old eunuch didn't wait for Imperial Concubine Moon to respond. He turned towards the side building where Lin Ming was and hurtled forwards!

Peng!

The wooden doors of the building were smashed apart!

The old eunuch rushed in like a wild bull!

“Ahh!”

The young maid that had been delivering washing water suddenly screamed. The powerful flux of energy that came with the old eunuch rushing over here suddenly surged towards the young maid!

The young maid only had a Pulse Condensation realm cultivation. If she were struck by this flow of energy then if she were lucky only all of her organs would shatter. If she wasn’t lucky then her entire body would explode to pieces and she would die a miserable death where she stood!

In the Imperial Palace, the life of a palace maid or eunuch was far too cheap. If they were struck to death they would simply be buried somewhere without even a tombstone to mark their grave.

Let alone these low level palace maids and eunuchs, even princes without status or talent were the same. After all, the Emperor had far too many descendants and the Imperial Palace had a limit to the number of people that it could hold. Those that lacked talent would be banished from the Imperial Palace, and as for whether they lived or died in the future, no one cared.

“Just what are you doing!?”

Xiao Moxian shouted out loud. Her apricot-round eyes widened and she waved her hand, her fast reflexes sending out a current of true essence that wrapped around the young maid and pulled her over!

Peng!

Where the young maid had been originally standing, all of the surrounding furniture was shattered by the terrifying currents of energy. Even the tiles began to crack apart like a spider web.

These floor tiles had been specially made. Although they weren't constructed from something as precious as timeless god stone, they still used materials as hard as divine steel. Now that these tiles were struck by the old eunuch they almost exploded to pieces. It could only be said that this old eunuch was deliberately setting his momentum up so that he could suppress Lin Ming with lightning speed!

Without the orders of the Empress, there was no way that a mere peak Holy Lord chief eunuch would dare to be so rampant in Full Moon Hall!

For the old eunuch to rush in and then stop, this was to vividly display the Empress' attitude towards Imperial Concubine Moon!

"Hehe, so there really are accomplices and one of them is even a man!"

The old eunuch looked at Lin Ming and then turned towards Imperial Concubine Moon, a sly and thoughtful smile stretching across his face! It was like he had caught Lin Ming and Imperial Concubine Moon in bed together!

Imperial Concubine Moon's face darkened, a thick surge of killing intent flashing in her eyes. She never thought that this old eunuch would use such a method to accuse her of crimes. This was simply a grand humiliation to herself!

"You stupid old turtle, it seems you don't want to live!"

Xiao Moxian was already enraged. She still had the young maid held to her chest. The young maid had been frightened pale. Just now she had walked up to death's door. If it weren't for Xiao Moxian pulling her back then her blood would have splashed everywhere and she likely wouldn't even have had a complete corpse!

The young maid looked towards Xiao Moxian with gratitude and awe. She felt grateful that Xiao Moxian had rescued her, and she was awed that Xiao Moxian would call this chief eunuch an old turtle to his face!

These chief eunuchs had an extremely high status and they could execute young maids and young eunuchs as they pleased! To a low level maid like herself, these chief eunuchs were existences that they felt absolute fear towards. Moreover, this chief eunuch had a peak Holy Lord cultivation!

But Xiao Moxian had still called him a turtle. And for a eunuch, they especially hated and loathed being called a turtle!

The young maid already thought that these words were braver than the heavens. But even so, she never imagined that Xiao Moxian's next words would be even more malicious!

Without caring for how angry this chief eunuch was, Xiao Moxian sneered and said, "How ridiculously strange. When farm beasts like donkeys and horses are wild, they become much more docile after they are castrated. It becomes much more enjoyable to ride them and they listen to orders obediently. But you, after you had your manhood severed your temperament became so much worse instead. Does this mean that you are inferior to even donkeys and horses?"

Xiao Moxian's words were toxic to the extreme!

After the young maid heard this she nearly fell on the floor. This was the same as challenging the chief eunuch's bottom line!

And indeed, after the chief eunuch heard Xiao Moxian's words, thick killing intent flashed in his eyes!

Chapter 1579 – All Encompassing Net

Chapter 1579 – All Encompassing Net

…

…

…

“Jejejejejejeje!”

The yellow-robed eunuch wildly cackled. To a eunuch, their most taboo subject was their castration. Even for those court eunuchs that severed their manhood to practice martial arts, this was still no exception!

Now, Xiao Moxian had specifically poked at this wound so how could he not become enraged? In his heart, this old eunuch had already passed down a death penalty to Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming.

“I have no idea how long it’s been since someone has dared speak to me like this! Good! Good! Very good! Do you know what the most exquisite torture methods in the imperial palace are? I can allow you to experience them all!”

The yellow-robed eunuch reached out for Xiao Moxian, but at this time, a cold cough resounded in the world. “What insolence! Are you trying to rebel!?”

This voice carried with it a powerful penetrative power. All of the nearby vases and furniture was left shattered by this voice!

Imperial Concubine Moon held a four foot long treasure sword, her face covered by her veil. She raised her sword. With her slender figure combined with this sword, she gave off a fierce and swift feeling.

"You stupid minion, who gave you the courage to be so rampant in my Full Moon Hall!"

As Imperial Concubine Moon spoke she pointed her swords towards the yellow-robed eunuch's throat. But, this yellow-robed eunuch acted as if he didn't see this sword at all. He sneered and said with his grating voice, "Imperial Concubine Moon, my actions are all under imperial decree. In order to prevent the escape of the suspects my methods were a bit extreme. I apologize if there was any disrespect."

The old eunuch's words were respectful but his tone and posture were clearly filled with arrogance. He didn't put Imperial Concubine Moon in his eyes at all.

The eunuch was well aware of Imperial Concubine Moon's status. From the start she was not a true imperial concubine. Let alone sleeping with the Marvel Blue Emperor, they had probably never met before.

This Imperial Concubine Moon was someone that Grandprince Marvel Snow, otherwise known to him as Lord Snow, had brought into the harem as reinforcement. In other words, she was Lord Snow's subordinate.

Eunuch Sun had no respect towards this sort of fake imperial concubine. Moreover, he knew that the Empress had decided to take action against Lord Snow, and cutting off his wings was her first mission!

The Empress would inevitably tear down Imperial Concubine Moon!

At this time tomorrow, it was hard to tell whether Imperial Concubine Moon would be dead or alive!

"Imperial Concubine Moon, the Empress has summoned your presence. At the same time, she has given me the discretion to apprehend your henchmen however I please. This man and woman are clearly not part of the Imperial Palace. As for the reason for them being here, I cannot comment on it. Everything will be decided by the Empress!"

Eunuch Sun's words were forceful and menacing. Imperial Concubine Moon's eyes turned cold, "Are you threatening me?"

"How would this servant dare to such a thing? However, if Imperial Concubine Moon resists the decree then I can only send a sound transmission command to the chief imperial guard of the Imperial Palace, and have the imperial guard assist Imperial Concubine Moon in a trip to see the Empress!"

As Eunuch Sun spoke, the eunuch bodyguards behind him moved forwards, encircling Imperial Concubine Moon, Lin Ming, and Xiao Moxian within.

These eunuch bodyguards all traced their spatial rings, ready to fight at any moment!

Although these eunuch bodyguards didn't have a high cultivation, they were skilled in various battle arrays. Once they formed a battle array, their combat strength would increase. With the peak Holy Lord Eunuch Sun added in, this caused Blood Moon's eyebrows to wrinkle. If she wasn't injured then she wouldn't fear these people at all, but now, if she were to fight, then she would quickly lose control of the situation.

And since she was within the palace, if she tried to resist the imperial decree then she would be in the wrong no matter how it was said. It would be impossible for her to rid herself of a charge of rebelling.

Not just that, but Eunuch Liang wasn't in Full Moon Hall but at Lord Snow's palace. This current situation was extremely bad.

And as Blood Moon was finding it hard to back down, Lin Ming stepped forwards and said, "Since this is the summons of the Empress, we might as well take the trip over. It would be nice to meet the mother of the Marvel Blue Nation."

Lin Ming's voice was slightly cold. Eunuch Sun chuckled. Was this boy an idiot? Just what use was there for Lord Snow or Imperial Concubine Moon to raise such a person? In this situation, this young man would actually speak such foolish words. Meet the Empress? What would the Empress want to meet him for?

In his imperial palace, the words of the Empress were the will of heaven; no one could defy them!

After listening to Lin Ming, Blood Moon was at a loss for what to do. She knew that it would be difficult for today's matters to not end in death, but she never imagined that Lin Ming would also become involved.

"I've even dragged you into this..." Blood Moon said with a sound transmission, her voice a bit helpless. "If the Empress has summoned us then I'm afraid she's going to harm us. She will casually come up with some charges to get rid of us. Now that we're in the imperial palace our situation is extremely bad. I've already contacted Eunuch Liang, but just the help of a chief eunuch like Eunuch Liang will not be able to help us too much. If you wish to guarantee your own safety then you'll need to find some way to contact your master..."

In Blood Moon's opinion, Lin Ming's master should have left him some life-saving card. Hopefully, Lin Ming would be able to rely on this to safely retreat.

But, she didn't think that Lin Ming would only shake his head and say, "When I left my master, it was to adventure alone. It is no longer possible for me to rely on his help. I must do everything by myself."

Lin Ming's words left Blood Moon's heart sinking with disappointment. If Lin Ming didn't have the backing of his master then where did his bravado come from?

She wanted to give Lin Ming a few words of warning but she had no idea what to say. At this time, nothing she said would be useful.

Like this, the team of eunuch bodyguards sandwiched Lin Ming, Imperial Concubine Moon, Xiao Moxian, and everyone else between them, leading them towards the central palace.

Even the young maid that delivered water, Imperial Concubine Moon's maids, and the young eunuchs had been led away.

Marvel Blue Imperial Palace was extremely large and the group was walking at the same pace that mortals would walk at. Even though their destination was only 10 or so miles away, it still took them two to three quarter hours!

Along the way they passed through many corridors and palaces. Everything was quiet around them. Occasionally, squads of eunuchs patrolled around, filling the air with a chilling atmosphere!

Seeing this imperial palace that had absolutely no lively or busy atmosphere at all, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. It seemed that the Empress really was working to clean out the harem. She was taking advantage of the Marvel Blue Emperor's closed door seclusion to take all authority in her hands and eliminate her enemies!

……..

The palace that the Empress stayed in was called Arid Peace Palace and was also known as the Empress's Palace. In the entire harem, besides the Soul Nourishing Temple that the Marvel Blue Emperor would stay at, Arid Peace Palace was the grandest construction.

Arid Peace Palace was nine levels high and was built from precious seven-feathered divine stone. The pillars of the palace were crafted from blue snow gold and even the tiles were specially processed, each one supported by divine runic symbols. When these floor tiles joined together, they formed an array formation. As one walked atop these tiles, they could feel their blood vitality restlessly moving as it was stirred up by the array formation.

The current Arid Peace Palace could be called heavily guarded! A massive number of eunuch bodyguards were set up in full combat formations. This type of feeling was as if an all-encompassing net had been laid down, just waiting for Imperial Concubine Moon to enter!

"Lower the palanquin!"

Eunuch Sun loudly announced. The eunuch bodyguards lowered Imperial Concubine Moon's palanquin. Imperial Concubine Moon parted the silk screen and stepped out. As she looked at the situation around Arid Peace Palace, she sneered.

She gently smoothed her veil down and accompanied Eunuch Sun into Arid Peace Palace.

The main hall of Arid Peace Palace had nine doors, each door surrounded on both sides by thick columns carved with images of phoenixes. There were a total of ten pillars, each of them looking grand. And in the center of the hall was a regal woman. She wore a golden red phoenix gown, each strand of silk spun from blue snow gold. It was resistant to water and fire, and even sabers and swords would find it difficult to slash through. It was a priceless garment.

Without a doubt, this woman was the Empress of the Marvel Blue Nation!

Lin Ming looked at this woman. This Empress had the appearance of a 30 year old. When Lin Ming had left the imperial palace he had also inquired into some information about the Empress.

Empress Naye had been received into the palace 100,000 years ago. At that time, she had been the proudest daughter of heaven within the Marvel Blue Nation. Her talent was outstanding and she had a variation bloodline. Moreover, her appearance was fantastic too.

Before that, Marvel Blue Nation had held a martial meeting involving all heroic young elites at the Divine Sea realm. In the end, Naye had been the one to emerge as champion. She had earned the attention and praise of the Marvel Blue Emperor and had entered the imperial palace afterwards. Along the way, she gained more and more favor, her rank increasing until she was finally titled as the Empress.

This grace was due to the advantages that the Marvel Blue Emperor had gained after taking Naye's primordial yin. Moreover, dual cultivating with Naye was helpful to his own cultivation.

Now that 100,000 years had passed, Naye still dual cultivated with the Marvel Blue Emperor. However, she still wasn't able to break through the World King realm and remained stranded as a half-step World King.

This was already an extremely commendable achievement. The World King realm was simply far too difficult to reach. Even though Marvel Blue Nation was considered a Great World King Holy Land, they only had three or four World Kings within their lands.

This number of World Kings was already extremely good. In the past, within the Divine Realm, there were some Great World King Holy Lands like the True Martial Holy Lands who only had a single World King leading their sect. 50,000 years ago, the Verdant Feather Holy Lands had also been a Great World King Holy Land but their Holy Land only had two World Kings, one of them Tian Mingzi and the other one the old Verdant Feather World King. If they had more World Kings then the Verdant Feather Holy Lands wouldn't have suffered such a miserable fate after Tian Mingzi's betrayal so many years ago.

Imperial Concubine Moon was well aware of the World Kings in the Marvel Blue nation. Besides the old Emperor who was a Great World King, there were three other World Kings.

The first was the Imperial Scholar. He was not only a World King but also a sixth-grade divine runic master. Within the Marvel Blue Nation he was a highly respected and noble character!

The second was the Grand Marshal of the Marvel Blue Nation, the commander of the military forces. He had been bestowed the title of grand duke and was highly beloved by the people.

The third was Eunuch Wei, the highest chief court eunuch of the entire imperial palace and also the most trusted subordinate of the Marvel Blue Emperor. He was someone that had cultivated the Sunflower Melody to the eighth level! Although he was a court eunuch, the truth was that he had a status equal to the Imperial Scholar.

Of these three people, the Imperial Scholar and Grand Marshal were unable to interfere in the struggle for the throne due to the laws and customs of the nation. As for Chief Eunuch Wei, he was only loyal to the Marvel Blue Emperor and also maintained neutrality in the struggle for succession. Even though Lord Snow and Lord Shen had done everything in their power to try to win over Eunuch Wei, even delivering to him all sorts of heavenly materials, Eunuch Wei had refused all offers and had returned all gifts.

Imperial Concubine Moon suspected that all of this was arranged by the old Emperor. He wanted the three World Kings of the Marvel Blue Nation to all remain neutral in the struggle for succession and finally dedicate their lives to the winner.

The advantage of this was that the scale of the struggle would be reduced to a minimum. These three World Kings were the cornerstones of the Marvel Blue Nation. As long as they weren't involved in the struggle then the foundation of the Marvel Blue Nation wouldn't be affected.

Chapter 1580 – Swords Drawn, Bows Bent

Chapter 1580 – Swords Drawn, Bows Bent

…

…

…

“If you will, Imperial Concubine Moon!” Eunuch Sun sinisterly said. However, Imperial Concubine Moon coldly sneered, not immediately stepping forwards. Instead, she turned towards the side, looking in the distance. After several breaths of time, there was the sound of rustling cloth as an eagle-eyed yellow-robed old man stepped forwards on the wind. Although he didn’t seem too fast, he arrived beside Imperial Concubine Moon in the blink of an eye.

This eagle-eyed old man was one of Lord Snow’s trusted subordinates as well as Blood Moon’s good friend – Eunuch Liang!

The entire Marvel Blue Imperial Palace had a total of five chief court eunuchs. Of these five, the only true grand chief eunuch was Eunuch Wei; the other four were vice chiefs. Eunuch Liang was one of them and he supported Lord Snow, standing opposite to the Empress’s ally, Eunuch Sun.

These two people had similar cultivations, both of them at the peak Holy Lord realm!

Moreover, because they were eunuchs that cultivated the Sunflower Melody and locked in their own essence energy, their strength and endurance far surpassed that of an ordinary person. If they were to fight then they could last much longer than a martial artist on the same level.

“Imperial Concubine Moon, this old servant has come late. I am sorry for frightening you.”

Eunuch Liang was originally loyal to Lord Snow and Blood Moon was also someone he had recommended to Lord Snow. With these relations between them, he naturally wouldn’t idly stand by as the Empress decided to harm her.

And as an accompanying eunuch that was part of Imperial Concubine Moon’s retinue, he naturally had a valid reason to join Imperial Concubine Moon to enter Arid Peace Palace.

“Eunuch Liang, it must have been hard for you.”

Imperial Concubine Moon smirked. With Eunuch Liang here she had even more chips to play with. Even if the Empress wanted to move against her, it wouldn’t be so easy.

Although she was wounded and couldn’t display her full strength, if Eunuch Liang was added on then even if she had to face the peak Holy Lord Eunuch Sun, half-step World King Empress, as well as the many guard eunuchs and their array formations in Arid Peace Palace, she still wouldn’t be at a disadvantage.

She had the capital to struggle for victory!

“So it was Eunuch Liang. It’s been a while since we’ve seen each other and it seems that your Shadeless Steps have risen to another level!” Eunuch Sun said, his smile not reaching his eyes.

“Haha, the feeling is mutual. Eunuch Sun, you seem as if you’ll step into the half-step World King realm soon. I fear that in several more years you’ll catch up to Eunuch Wei!”

Eunuch Liang and Eunuch Sun were on opposites sides to begin with. Now that they encountered each other here, they naturally stood in sharp contention to each other!

Eunuch Sun coldly snorted. “Great Chief Wei has already cultivated the Sunflower Melody to the eighth level. How could I possibly surpass him!”

Eunuch Sun no longer bantered with Eunuch Liang. He turned to Blood Moon and said, “Imperial Concubine Moon, please enter the palace. Do not have the Empress wait for such a long time!”

“How annoying! Whatever I do, I don’t need a minion like you to order me around!”

Blood Moon’s voice was cold. From the start until now, she had referred to Eunuch Sun as a lackey. But in truth, as a peak Holy Lord powerhouse, Eunuch Sun had significant status in the palace. There were many high level characters that treated him with due respect. For Blood Moon to call him a minion really grated on his ears!

“Who were you saying is annoying?”

At this time, a calm and dignified voice sounded out. This voice had a strange piercing power, as if it could reach into one’s mind.

This was the voice of the Empress!

“I have summoned your presence and yet you linger at the entrance without entering. What a great air of importance you have!”

The Empress’ voice was forceful and imperious. Blood Moon remained calm. She flung her sleeves and walked into the grand hall with her back straight and her head high, looking directly at Empress Naye. She lightly bowed in accordance with palace etiquette and said, “For what matter is the Empress summoning me?”

Blood Moon’s voice contained a hidden sense of pride. Since the Empress created such a commotion and even summoned her here it was obvious what she wanted; she wanted to deal with Blood Moon.

But, Blood Moon didn’t seem as if she was defeated at all. She remained tall and lofty, an unbending blade of grass in the storm, a chrysanthemum that withstood the frost. This sort of feeling was one that the Empress hated!

The Empress wanted Imperial Concubine Moon to bow in awe and fear, not standing in sharp opposition like she was now!

The Empress' smoky eyes frowned. She gently lifted her gown and let it slowly fall. Beside her, 10 eunuch guards readied a battle array!

These 10 eunuch guards were all Holy Lord powerhouses. The 10 of them stood in particularly chosen positions to form a 10 man battle array. And this battle array locked onto Blood Moon. The 10 court eunuchs had gathered their essence energy, their breath long and stable. They were like 10 leopards, primed and ready to leap, filled with danger.

And around the eunuchs were eight old maids. These old maids had already stayed in the imperial palace for at least 10,000 years. Although they all had wrinkles on their faces, their inner worlds were filled with boundless amounts of energy; it was clear they were all masters.

Including the eunuch guards and old maids, there were a total of 18 people. Beneath the feet of these 18 people were shimmering runes.

Lin Ming had studied all sorts of dao patterns. With a single glance, he could see that these lines were carved by a divine runic master. They could strengthen the martial artists that stood on them!

With 18 people standing as one, although their cultivation was only at the Holy Lord realm, if they joined together they might be able to contend with a World King!

Besides these 18 people there was also the half-step World King Empress as well as Eunuch Sun. This lineup of powerhouses within Arid Peace Palace could be called a formidable force!

At this time, Eunuch Sun sent a sound transmission to Empress Naye. After she heard it she sneered and looked towards Lin Ming, shouting at him, “You minion, who gave you the courage to live in Full Moon Hall!”

Lin Ming was startled. He didn't think that the fire would burn so quickly that it reached him.

"Minion?" Lin Ming scoffed. For so many years, no one had ever called him a minion. Not even his enemies had done so!

"You old hag, just what gave you the ability to act so superior? Who do you think you are? If I live in Full Moon Hall, what does that have to do with a granny like you?"

Lin Ming simply didn't care about Naye. Who cared if she was an Empress? To Lin Ming, that title was nothing at all!

"Insolence!" The Empress shouted out, enraged. Her tone became increasingly grim. "What a wonderful minion, to dare speak against me! In so many years, no one has dared to speak to me like that! Full Moon Hall is a special quarter for concubines in the harem. Those men that can enter are only eunuchs! And yet a minion like you actually dared to ask me why you can't live in Full Moon Hall? If that's the case then someone go up and inspect that minion to see if he's been cleanly castrated or not! If he hasn't been cleanly castrated then have the chief doctor cut it off once more!"

In the harem, men were not able enter to begin with. If there was a man quietly and secretly living in the quarters of an imperial concubine, then that was a capital crime deserving of death by 10,000 cuts.

But, concerning Marvel Blue Imperial Palace, it was a martial artist's palace and thus the rules weren't so strict to begin with. When this was added with the fact that Imperial Concubine Moon wasn't a true imperial concubine anyway and she also had Lord Snow's token, she was well within her rights to bring Lin Ming into Full Moon Hall without violating any rules. But now, the Empress had grabbed this point. Since she was cleaning up the harem, she would first start with Imperial Concubine Moon. This was what they meant by condemning someone without a care for the pretext!

With an order from the Empress, the several Holy Lord eunuchs beside her moved forwards to capture Lin Ming.

Lin Ming remained expressionless, as if he hadn't heard anything at all. However, his right hand was already tracing his spatial ring.

"Who dares to move!"

Blood Moon shouted out loud and stood in front of Lin Ming. She glared at Naye, coldly saying, "Naye, the reason for everything you've done is to bring me here and find an excuse to punish me, so why must you attack a bystander! Naye, I heard that 100,000 years ago when you were at the Divine Sea realm, you were a champion of the Marvel Blue Nation's martial meeting of outstanding young elites. That is the reason why the eyes of the Marvel Blue Emperor landed on you and the reason he brought you into the palace. Now, I would like to experience just how great the strength of this martial meeting champion is!"

As Blood Moon spoke she had already taken out her four foot long sword from her spatial ring!

The sword blade was cold, the sword light blinding!

"Imperial Concubine Moon, are you planning to rebel!?" Before Naye spoke, Eunuch Sun had already stood in front of the Empress. At some time, he had placed a pair of divine iron gloves on his hands. The gloves were fierce and sharp, the 10 fingers ending in daggers.

Eunuch Sun's weapons were a pair of iron gloves.

As Eunuch Sun moved, Eunuch Liang also stepped forwards in front of Blood Moon. A simmering killing intent rolled off his body. His weapon of choice was also a pair of iron gloves. It seemed that this type of weapon was especially suited to the Sunflower Melody.

At this time, the air was thick with tension, all swords drawn – a battle could break out at any moment!

And at this time, Naye suddenly smiled. “Imperial Concubine Moon, not only did you harbor a man in Full Moon Hall but you even want to attack me? Good! Very good! I’ve long suspected that there was some issue with you. After entering the palace you have always kept your appearance covered and isolated from all probing senses. I’ve long wanted to remove a dangerous character like you. I will tear down your veil and see just who you are! How could I tolerate such an unknown and disastrous character like you within the sacred grounds of my palace!”

Naye stood up as she spoke. Her entire body emitted an aggressive momentum!

Naye had entered the palace 100,000 years ago, and after 10,000 years of imperial struggles and plotting, she had used all sorts of methods to win the favor of the Marvel Blue Emperor and become Empress. Now, she had ruled over the harem for 90,000 years and had long ago formed a great and majestic dignity!

The harem of an imperial palace was originally a land of strife and intrigue. There were countless imperial concubines that wished to capture the favor of the Marvel Blue Emperor. As long as one could obtain his favor, then not only did it mean authority and status but far richer resources. Naye was able to stand out amongst this treacherous harem and climb to the highest position. She didn’t depend on just her outstanding talent, stunning looks, and a physique that was suitable for dual cultivating, but she also relied on her ruthless and savage methods!

Now that she was in charge of national affairs, she would use this moment as her chance to exterminate all her enemies and guarantee that her son could smoothly ascend to the throne!

In this sort of situation, how could she let go of Imperial Concubine Moon who supported Lord Snow?

“Naye, what wonderful methods you have. Between you and me, we already understand each other. I have already been in the palace for half a year and yet I have never fought. Then, let my first battle be in Arid Peace Palace!”

Blood Moon suddenly slashed out with her sword – take the initiative, take the advantage!

As her sword slashed out her skirt floated around her and her black hair danced in the wind. Blood Moon's sword strike didn't seem as if she were aiming at an enemy but was as if she were dancing.

The first time Lin Ming saw Blood Moon he had seen her dancing. It seemed as if she was someone who loved to dance, and now in the heat of battle, her actions were like dancing shadows, beautiful and dangerous!

Chapter 1581 – Blood Moon's Crisis

Chapter 1581 – Blood Moon's Crisis

…

…

…

"Protect the Empress!"

The moment that Blood Moon moved, 18 eunuchs and old maids had already been prepared. They stood atop an array formation, and the Empress and Blood Moon stood at the heart of it! Now that Blood Moon launched such a sudden attack, the runes beneath the 18 eunuchs and maids shimmered as they gathered their strength, forming a mighty raging river that rushed towards Blood Moon.

The floor tiles exploded to pieces as energy raced forwards like a tide, filled with killing intent!

Facing the onslaught of these 18 people, Blood Moon coldly sneered. "An 18 Clear King Array. Such a dignified Arid Peace Palace, as the ruler of the harem you can only display an array formation of this level?"

Arid Peace Palace's 18 Clear King Array had to be laid down by array masters and divine runic masters. However, within the entire inner Asura Road, although array masters were somewhat easy to find, divine runic masters were not; they were exorbitantly expensive characters. If one wanted to ask one of them to help then they would have to pay a steep price. Moreover, there also had to be a certain friendship or they wouldn't bother to begin with.

If it was the Marvel Blue Emperor then he could certainly request a peak sixth grade divine runic master to add divine runic symbols to this array formation. In fact, in Marvel Blue Imperial Palace's Golden Imperial Throne as well as Heaven and Earth Hall, there was a peak sixth grade divine runic array. Once this array formation began, the effects would be extraordinary!

But in the harem, Arid Peace Palace was only the living quarters of a half-step World King Empress. For her, it was impossible to use such a grand array. This so-called 18 Clear King Array could barely be considered to be at the sixth grade, or in other words a quasi-sixth grade array formation.

A sixth grade divine runic array was far more expensive than a sixth grade divine runic symbol because an array formation required dozens of divine runic symbols of the same level to support it. For Arid Peace Palace to be able to lay down a quasi-sixth grade array formation was already extremely luxurious for a half-step World King Empress.

The 18 early Holy Lord eunuchs and old maids stood above 18 Clear King Array. With it, the might of their joint attack increased by dozens of times and one could fight a World King – on the premise that this 18 Clear King Array wasn't broken!

But how could a true World King powerhouse stand there idly and let themselves be struck by these people?

In that instant, Blood Moon took out a shining gold talisman from her spatial ring. The design of a fierce ghost's head decorated the talisman; this was a sixth grade divine runic symbol!

This divine runic symbol had been drawn up by the Divine Runic Masters Guild's Old Su especially for Blood Moon. Old Su and Blood Moon had a very deep friendship, and the reason Lin Ming was able to come to Marvel Blue Nation was also because he had been introduced by Old Su.

Hu - !

As the divine runic symbol entered Blood Moon's hands it began to burn brilliantly, turning into hundreds of dao patterns that rained down. These dao patterns didn't attack the 18 eunuchs and maids, but attacked the array symbols beneath their feet!

This was a sixth grade array shattering symbol and that 18 Clear King Array was within the level of arrays that this symbol would break! As a high level member of Heaven's Net, she would naturally gather sufficient information before she took on a mission. Before this, Lord Snow had paid a sufficient price to bribe enough eunuchs and maids into telling him that the great array formation within Arid Peace Palace was the 18 Clear King Array!

In response to this array, Blood Moon had asked for Old Su's help to draw up a specific array shattering symbol. Now, the time had come to use it!

Ca!

A tooth-aching sound echoed out accompanied by a flash of golden light, blinding everyone in the hall. In that moment, the runes beneath the 18 eunuchs and maids shattered, turning into violent flows of energy that caused a backlash against them. Their bodies shook and they were nearly injured!

This was the moment Blood Moon had been waiting for. Her body turned into a beam of light that shot forwards. Powerful true essence poured into her sword.

As her sword slashed out, a round and bright moon rose behind Blood Moon. The cold moonlight sprinkled down, covering the entire Arid Peace Palace. As for Blood Moon, she was illuminated by this moon in the background. Her slender body stretched out like she was a goddess riding the wind, filled with infinite charm and grace!

However, this charm and grace was actually fatal!

Just what sort of strength did Blood Moon possess? Although she was wounded she was still a World King powerhouse, someone that a Holy Lord could not contend with!

With a flash of moonlight, a cold and chilling night seemed to descend. Beneath the cover of this endless night, everyone felt inexplicably oppressed. The bright moon in the skies attracted the eyes of everyone!

"This is bad!"

Empress Naye's complexion changed. True essence erupted from her body as she rapidly retreated. She was well aware that in that moment she had been covered by Blood Moon's domain!

This long night and bright moonlight, that was Blood Moon's domain – The Endlessly Long Night!

As Naye drew back, two eunuchs and a maid bore the brunt of Blood Moon's attack. Blood Moon's attack struck them, decapitating them and sending their heads rolling to the floor!

Like this, the 18 Clear King Array was broken by Blood Moon!

As blood splashed out, the moonlight seemed to be dyed red. The bright moon in the skies began to take on a faintly reddish hue!

This was the sign of Blood Moon. Within her domain, every time she killed a person the moon would drink their blood, becoming increasingly red. Once she killed innumerable people, this bright moon would turn into a dark red blood moon. And at that time, the power of the Endlessly Long Night would reach its peak!

After the success of her first strike, Blood Moon didn't stop there. Her sword changed direction as she cut towards another group of eunuchs and maids!

She wanted to quickly kill off these early Holy Lord powerhouses and use their blood to water the Endlessly Long Night!

Blood Moon was originally a high level member of an assassin organization. Even within Arid Peace Palace, she killed without mercy! She was well aware that in this situation, it was no longer a question of whether she was rebelling or not. Ever since ancient times, when the changing of a dynasty was coming, coups and rivers of blood were common, whether it was in the mortal world or the world of martial artists!

As long as one won, then one could still be king no matter how many people they killed. But if one lost, that would be a capital crime of rebelling against the nation!

The winner was king and the losers were villains; this was the simplest truth.

At this time, the Empress was taking advantage of the fact that the Emperor was in closed door seclusion to show her hand. With force, she wanted to subdue all others. How could Blood Moon sit around and wait for death?

But as Blood Moon attacked for a second time and was about to decapitate another eunuch, an alarm sounded out in her heart!

A killing intent was hidden within the atmosphere of chaos, like a viper hiding in the brush!

“Sneak attack!?”

Blood Moon was startled. At this time, there was actually a hidden ambusher that appeared from nowhere! Such hiding methods and assassination techniques left a strong sense of restlessness in her heart!

She no longer had time to think about who it could be; she rapidly drew backwards!

Chi!

With a light sound, the Endlessly Long Night domain was pierced through by a strange force. This power was incomparably ruthless and sinister, shooting straight towards Blood Moon!

“Be careful behind you!”

A voice suddenly rang out. This was Lin Ming's warning!

Without thinking, Blood Moon slashed out behind her. With a loud cracking sound, she chopped apart a black flashing dagger!

Because the Endlessly Long Night domain had been broken, an immense amount of sharp and violent sword energy gushed out! Three coiling dragon pillars supported by array formations were sliced to pieces by this sword energy. The entire structure shook, nearly collapsing in on itself!

A battle between quasi World Kings could move mountains, fill seas, and even destroy some smaller planets. With this violent battle occurring deep in the palace, no matter how solid the building was, once it lost the protection of a domain then it simply wouldn't be able to block the true essence currents rushing about!

"White Sky, is that you!?"

Blood Moon's voice was cold, her complexion gloomy and dark like the bottom of a lake. Although that sneak attack hadn't injured her, it had planted a parasitic domain seed within her domain.

This parasitic seed wasn't able to harm her. With just a little bit of effort she would be able to remove the seed, but this process required some time. In the meantime, this seed would erode her true essence, making it so that she couldn't activate her domain ability.

And at this time, a tall man in gray robes stepped out from behind a folding screen within Arid Peace Palace. This thin screen shouldn't have been able to isolate the sense of a martial artist. If Blood Moon wasn't able to discover this from the start, then this proved that this other person had an amazing concealing technique.

And the people that usually possessed this type of ability were assassins!

“Blood Moon, it’s been a while since we’ve seen each other!” A man hoarsely said, immediately calling out Blood Moon’s codename within Heaven’s Net. He wore a white and black mask with two fierce blood red lines running down from the eyes, looking fierce.

He clearly knew who Blood Moon was.

“Someone from Heaven’s Net?”

Lin Ming’s eyes narrowed as he immediately realized this.

Chapter 1582 – Assassin White Sky

Chapter 1582 – Assassin White Sky

…

…

…

As Blood Moon saw the masked man appear, her complexion turned grim. He was the same as Blood Moon in that both of them covered up their cultivations with secret techniques, making it so that one couldn't see what level his cultivation boundary was at. In addition, his black and white mask was able to isolate out all senses so that no one could uncover anything about him at all.

This was a frequently used tactic of Heaven's Net.

"Who is that?" Lin Ming asked with a true essence sound transmission.

"One of the three leaders of Heaven's Net, White Sky, a World King powerhouse!"

Blood Moon replied, her eyes fixed on White Sky.

"World King…"

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. He wasn't surprised by White Sky's cultivation boundary at all. Heaven's Net was similar to the Marvel Blue Nation; both could be considered peak World King Holy Lands. And, the big boss of Heaven's Net was likely a Great World King whereas the other leaders were ordinary World Kings.

Blood Moon herself was in truth at the early World King boundary. Amongst World King powerhouses, she was on the weaker end of the spectrum. The White Sky in front of her was similar to her.

But at this time, Blood Moon's situation wasn't good to begin with. White Sky's appearance had suddenly brought about a massive crisis!

Facing White Sky, Blood Moon sneered and said, "I never thought you would chase me all the way here. In order to hunt me down you've involved yourself in the struggle for the Marvel Blue Nation's throne?"

Empress Naye suddenly laughed out loud, "Imperial Concubine Moon... or, perhaps it's better if I call you Blood Moon! Did you think that only Lord Snow would be able to invite people from Heaven's Net, but I could not? The ones I bring are even stronger than you!"

As Naye spoke, she sat back upon her empress throne. Her expression turned idle and bored once again, as if everything was in her control.

At the start she hadn't known what Blood Moon's true identity was; it was Heaven's Net that had approached her on their own initiative. They wanted to join in on the struggle for the throne, and their goal in all of this was Blood Moon.

This was a naturally happy occurrence for both sides. Thus, all of that led to Empress Naye summoning Blood Moon today.

She had already made all of her preparations in order to place Blood Moon in a death trap.

White Sky looked at Blood Moon from beneath the eye holes in his mask. His voice was indifferent as he said, "Blood Moon, if you thought you could find protection in the Marvel Blue Imperial Palace, then you were wrong to indulge in such whimsical fancies. If you can involve yourself in the struggle for the throne, then so can we! I know that you're aware of what I've come here for. Is the item that Big Boss left behind in your hands? As long as you hand it over, I will not kill you! You and I are from the same organization so I naturally have some sentiment towards my fellow comrades. I don't even care about the matters of authority in Heaven's Net because none of it concerns me at all. If you want to leave and take someone with you then I won't stop you."

White Sky didn't conceal his goal at all, nor did he care about the presence of the Empress or the others. His voice was harsh, bringing with it a faint killing intent that was forceful and aggressive.

As Lin Ming heard this, his thoughts stirred. Something that the Big Boss had left behind?

He originally found it strange that there would be an internal power struggle within Heaven's Net. Lin Ming thought it was because they were competing for authority, but now it seemed that the original cause was some sort of treasure!

If this was a treasure that could cause a bloodbath among the high level figures of Heaven's Net, then this must be something extraordinary!

"What you want is not in my hands!"

Blood Moon had no intention of bargaining for her life. She pointed her sword straight at White Sky's throat.

Seeing this, White Sky chuckled, his laugh grating to the ears. "I thought you would give such a response, otherwise it wouldn't be you at all. But, look around you, do you still think you can win in this situation?"

As the gray-robed man spoke, he took out a short sword from his spatial ring. This sword was two feet long without a hand guard. Moreover, the hilt was extremely short, just two inches long, making it difficult for an adult male to hold.

The short sword was deep blue and the blade as thin as paper. Without a doubt, this short sword could display one's speed to the limit!

“Blood Moon, it seems that you are going to die here today. What a pity that your arrogance and pride have doomed you, it is truly regretful. In the past, Big Boss also greatly appreciated you.”

White Sky’s voice was cold and indifferent. His white and black mask was blank and without expression, but those two lines that ran down from the base of his eyes seemed even fiercer than they were before.

“Leave Blood Moon for me to deal with! You can all manage the rest of these underlings!”

White Sky’s focus had already locked onto Blood Moon. As for Empress Naye, she quietly sat back on her throne and gently waved her hand. Eunuch Sun understood this order, and led the remaining 15 old maids and eunuchs to surround Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, and Eunuch Liang.

Even the young eunuchs and young maids that followed Blood Moon were surrounded.

The young maid that brought washing water to Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian was already pale with fear. She had guessed that there would be nothing good coming from the Empress’ summons, but she never thought that matters would develop to this stage. The two sides were actually going to fight in Arid Peace Palace, with life and death on the line!

These young maids were well aware that if Blood Moon was defeated, they would be buried along with her. To the Empress, killing them was no different from slaughtering chickens or dogs!

And in the current situation, it seemed impossible for Blood Moon to win. Even if she could escape by herself, the young maids and eunuchs she left behind would be brutally beaten to death!

“Haha! Eunuch Liang, I never thought there would be such a day between you and me… a smart bird knows which tree to nest in. If you regret your decision, there is still time for you. I can plead sympathy for you to the Empress and perhaps the Empress will allow you to keep your cheap life.”

Eunuch Sun flicked his yellow eunuch robes, the smile of a victor on his face. As he looked at Eunuch Liang, his eyes were the same as if he were looking at a pitiful worm.

Facing such an arrogant Eunuch Sun, Eunuch Liang's face darkened. There was no hope that he would obtain any form of safety if he voluntarily surrendered.

Currently, he was figuring out just what his chances were that he could safely escape from Arid Peace Palace.

"As well as you..." Eunuch Sun turned towards Lin Ming. "Your talent isn't too bad. If you are willing to testify against Imperial Concubine Moon and confess to all those shameful activities that occurred between you and her, then the Empress will pardon you of your capital crimes. Perhaps you will even receive her favor and be accepted into the palace as a eunuch. You will have the chance to practice the Sunflower Melody that so many people long for in their dreams."

Eunuch Sun said, a thoughtful and playful look on his face. Indeed, if the Empress were to get rid of Imperial Concubine Moon today, she would still need a justified reason to do so as well as evidence in order to stop the criticism of others. And, Lin Ming would make the perfect evidence as a witness.

"You want me to testify against Imperial Concubine Moon and practice the Sunflower Melody?" Lin Ming laughed, his laugh filled with reckless mirth.

Eunuch Sun frowned. "What are you laughing about?"

"He's laughing at how stupid you are." Xiao Moxian suddenly said, her voice clear and loud, attracting the eyes of everyone present. "A dumb old turtle like you has slaved their life away as a minion and yet you can still feel superior to anyone? Look at the disgusting thing you've become. You don't seem like a ghost or a person. Is it possible that you think everyone in this world wants to be like you?"

As Xiao Moxian spoke, she smiled with glee as if she didn't care at all for the tense atmosphere around her.

And, her actions naturally enraged Eunuch Sun!

He had already been mocked by Xiao Moxian and had been called inferior to castrated horses and donkeys. Now he was being mocked yet again!

"You little whore, you seem to have forgotten what I've said. In the palace, we have the greatest forms of torture. Do you know what a wooden horse is? First we will cripple your cultivation and turn you back into a mortal. Then, we will strip you of all your clothing and make you ride the wooden horse down the streets. And, this wooden horse has all sorts of trap devices. Once you've understood their exquisite pain, you'll know what it means to wish for death, hahaha…"

Eunuch Sun queerly cackled. A wooden horse was the most brutal form of punishment that a mortal palace could pass down to a woman. There was a wooden pillar on the wooden horse, and this pillar would expand up and down, ruthlessly destroying a woman's body from the inside. Many times, the person riding the wooden horse would be tortured to death. It was an extremely cruel and barbaric form of punishment.

And in the world of martial artists, the wooden horse was formed by thorn hardwood that was tens of thousands of years old. This wood was as hard as divine iron, and with the female martial artist having their cultivation wasted away, they would equally die a miserable death from suffering.

As Eunuch Sun said such sinister and malicious words, Lin Ming's complexion turned icy cold. His eyes burst out with blazing killing intent.

Eunuch Sun cackled once more. He simply didn't place an early Divine Lord junior's killing intent in his eyes. To him, this was the same as a praying mantis waving its scythes at a wild tiger.

Just as Eunuch Sun was about to spit out some more perverse words at Lin Ming to cause him to shake in fear, Lin Ming spat out two words – "Go die."

In that moment, Eunuch Sun only saw Lin Ming's right hand shoot out, followed by a chilling spear light!

At the same time, a primal and boundless aura covered everyone present. This aura was incomparably heavy, as if a giant mountain was pressing down on them from the sky, making them able to display less than 30% of their strength!

As Eunuch Sun was crushed by this mountain-like weight, he found that even breathing became difficult!

And at this time, Lin Ming moved!

Lin Ming's velocity reached unimaginable heights. In just a thousandth of the blink of an eye, he arrived right in from of Eunuch Sun, the Phoenix Blood Spear in his hands piercing forwards!

What!?

Eunuch Sun was panic-stricken. He never thought that Lin Ming would possess such a terrifying force field that could completely bind his movements!

He desperately resisted this pressure, wanting to block Lin Ming's strike. At the same time, he opened his mouth to spit out gray flames. He wanted to use these gray flames to force Lin Ming backwards and half his attack.

However, Lin Ming was far too strong. And under the suppression of the grandmist force field, killing Eunuch Sun was as simple as turning his hand!

With a loud cracking sound, the gray flames that Eunuch Sun spat out weren't even able to stop Lin Ming for a split-second before they were scattered by the Phoenix Blood Spear!

The long spear continued forwards with overwhelming momentum. The cold spear point thrust straight towards Eunuch Sun's throat!

And at this time, Eunuch Sun’s mouth was still open from spitting out flames. As he saw this spear point nearly stab into his mouth, he was almost frightened to death!

He quickly traced his spatial ring, wanting to take out the divine runic symbol that he saved as his life-saving card. However, Lin Ming’s spear was too fast. Underneath the savage attack of this spear, Eunuch Sun’s protective true essence was pierced through like paper.

The Phoenix Blood Spear stabbed into Eunuch Sun’s mouth, twisting apart his teeth and tongue, penetrating through his throat and exiting through the back of his head, carrying with it a rain of blood!

And at this time, Eunuch Sun no longer had the ability to use the ancient divine runic symbol that he had pulled out. With his throat pierced, the agonizing pain made him want to cry out but he couldn’t make a single sound at all!

This sort of pain was indescribable!

As for Lin Ming, he raised his right hand and strung up Eunuch Sun through his throat with his spear, lifting his entire body up!

Chapter 1583 – Life Seizing Jade Talisman

Chapter 1583 – Life Seizing Jade Talisman

…

…

…

Like this, Lin Ming used the Phoenix Blood Spear to pierce through Eunuch Sun and pick him up, just as if he were picking up a dog.

Eunuch Sun had yet to die. His hands gripped the spear as he struggled with all his might. His legs kicked out in desperation and his throat sent out gurgling sounds of pain. However, because his vocal cords were torn apart and his throat was destroyed, he wasn’t able to make any coherent sounds at all. All he could do was struggle in agonizing pain.

A massive amount of blood leaked out from the hole in his throat like the water of a dam that had broken free. Eunuch Sun could feel his life rapidly passing away!

He never thought that he would experience such a day. He had been pierced through the throat by someone’s spear and picked up, his life rapidly fading without even being able to make a single sound!

This sudden scene stunned everyone present. All of the young eunuchs and maids that followed Lin Ming here from Full Moon Hall stared at him with wide eyes. Although their cultivation wasn’t high, they fully understood just how terrifying Eunuch Sun was!

Eunuch Sun was one of the chief court eunuchs of the entire imperial palace, and amongst the chief court eunuchs he faintly stood at the second rank, inferior only to the main chief court eunuch, Eunuch Wei. Eunuch Sun was someone who cultivated the Sunflower Melody for many years and the true essence in his body was vigorous and deep; his strength could already be called unfathomable.

Of all the young eunuchs and young maids in the imperial palace, just which one didn't fear Eunuch Sun? If they saw Eunuch Sun it was the same as a mouse seeing a cat. And yet, this sort of terrifying character had been pierced through the throat and lifted up by Lin Ming's spear point!

And at the start, their impression of Lin Ming was that he had been a promising young martial artist with slightly better than average talent.

"Lin Ming… you…"

Blood Moon's eyes shined with a glimmer of splendor as she looked at Lin Ming from behind her veil. She had witnessed everything that had happened just now. If Lin Ming had used some sort of life-saving card in his hand that his Empyrean master had left him to deal with Eunuch Sun then she wouldn't have thought that was strange at all. But just now she had clearly seen that Lin Ming hadn't attacked with any foreign help at all. A terrifying force field had erupted from within Lin Ming, suppressing Eunuch Sun so that Lin Ming could subdue him without any problems!

"You… who are you!?"

The originally calm and composed Naye stood up, her eyes dim and gloomy as she looked at Lin Ming. Before this, Lin Ming's presence had been very common in this hall. His early Divine Lord cultivation was inferior to even her eunuch bodyguards'. She had only thought that Lin Ming was some unimportant nobody that she could crush like an ant, but she didn't think such a horrifying scene would occur!

At this time, assassin White Sky's complexion had also darkened. He stepped forwards and slowly said, "You… which organization are you from? To play the role of a junior and hide in the crowd, this level of concealment technique is quite skilful…"

White Sky grimly smiled as he maintained absolute vigilance around Lin Ming. He knew that someone who could severely wound Eunuch Sun so easily had strength possibly equal to his own!

For a peak Holy Lord powerhouse to be pierced through the throat in a single strike, he simply couldn't believe that this Lin Ming was a peak early Divine Lord powerhouse, but a World King in disguise!

However, he had used some cultivation concealing arcane technique to cover up his inner world, making it so that no one could see his cultivation. Whether it was White Sky or Blood Moon, both of them used such an arcane technique. When Lin Ming was at the Sky Spill Continent, even Yang Yun had used such a trick.

Covering up one's cultivation was easy but camouflaging one's cultivation was far more difficult. This was just like concealing one's appearance and changing one's appearance. If a mortal wanted to conceal their appearance, all they had to do was wear a black piece of cloth around their face. But, if they wanted to change their appearance into that of someone else, they needed profound techniques and a human skin mask. Even a top master who was especially skilled in such things would find it hard to change their appearance without a single flaw.

Thus, in the world of martial artists, there were very few arcane techniques that could allow one to camouflage their own cultivation whilst also making it so that other people of similar cultivation boundaries couldn't see through them. Moreover, these techniques were extremely difficult to learn!

At the very least, Heaven's Net didn't have such a technique. Otherwise, it would have been much easier for them to ambush and kill others.

As White Sky spoke, he used the entirety of his sense to investigate Lin Ming's inner world, wanting to find a flaw in Lin Ming's cultivation camouflaging skill. He believed that as long as he searched carefully enough, he would be able to find a flaw somewhere. However, he remained disappointed.

Lin Ming's inner world was whole and unified, without the slightest sign that it was fake. This caused White Sky to frown; was there such a perfect cultivation changing technique?

To accomplish this would be easier as a Great World King, but White Sky didn't believe that Lord Snow was able to request help from a Great World King. This was because the Emperor of the Marvel Blue Nation was a Great World King to begin with and Lord Snow was only at the Holy Lord realm. It would be extremely difficult for someone like him to put out anything that could tempt a Great World King.

"Ah… ah…"

Eunuch Sun's broken thoat released miserable gurgling sounds. He reached out his hands, grasping towards the Empress, wanting the Empress to save him. But unfortunately, he could no longer voice out the words.

The Empress' complexion became extremely ugly.

Although she didn't care about Eunuch Sun's life, Eunuch Sun had still been faithful and loyal to her for all these years. With so many of her subordinates around her, it was impossible for her to not rescue him and cause her subordinates to doubt her. Moreover, to Lin Ming who dared challenge her dignity, she hated him to the marrow of her bones.

"Release him!"

The Empress coldly said, her eyes shining with a chilling light.

"I should release him just because you say so? Who do you think you are? You are just the wife of some World King Holy Land's bandit chief! Do you really you are an Empress that commands the world? Your cultivation is only at the half-step World King realm. To only be a half-step World King after 100,000 years, you are already doomed to mediocrity. Someone with your middling level of talent is only barely noticeable. In the past when I competed in the First Martial Meeting you wouldn't even have the qualifications to be crushed by me, and yet here you are, acting all domineering, trying to boss me around. How ridiculous!"

Lin Ming jeered, his hand still holding onto his spear as Eunuch Sun dangled on it like a dog.

“You are courting death!”

Empress Naye said, her complexion ugly. Her talent wasn’t anything to someone of Lin Ming’s level, but in the Marvel Blue Nation she was a proud daughter of heaven and had stood at the top for a long time. The arrogance of a ruler had already formed in her bones, so how could she allow Lin Ming to mock her like this?

She traced her spatial ring and took out a charm. This charm was not made from symbol paper but was carved upon white jade, its entire body shining with light!

Naye was well aware that Lin Ming was likely stronger than she was, thus she didn’t attack him directly. Instead, she flung out the charm in her hand!

“Life Seizing Talisman! Peak sixth grade divine runic symbol!”

Eunuch Liang shouted out from behind Lin Ming. This was a warning to tell Lin Ming that this was a peak sixth grade divine runic symbol, one that stemmed from the hands of a peak sixth grade divine runic master. And, a peak sixth grade divine runic master was a Great World King!

In order to use this Life Seizing Talisman, the minimum requirement was that one needed to be a half-step World King. Once it was used, its might would be unimaginable. It could severely wound a World King, and if they weren’t careful, it could even kill them!

This sort of divine runic symbol was priceless and ordinary half-step World Kings wouldn’t have the wealth or qualifications to use it. Only someone as rich as Naye could keep such a life-saving card in her hands!

“Retreat!”

Eunuch Liang screamed. Once this divine runic symbol was used, all ordinary World Kings had no choice but to withdraw!

Hu - !

The divine runic symbol burned as the white jade seemed to melt away. Many of the lines hidden in the white jade dissipated into the air. These lines were asura dao patterns and corresponded to the Asura Heavenly Dao. This divine runic symbol borrowed the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao to kill one's enemies.

Seeing these wildly spinning Heavenly Dao lines, Lin Ming only sneered. Not only did he not retreat but he instead moved forwards!

In understanding the Asura Heavenly Dao, no one could compare with him. In this aspect, not even a seventh grade divine runic master could hold a candle to Lin Ming!

This sort of divine runic symbol was only one of the killing Laws of the Asura Heavenly Dao. In Lin Ming's eyes, there were at least 100 different ways to break it!

Lin Ming didn't use too much true essence. He only used 30-40% of his strength to thrust his spear forwards, right into the center of this asura patterns that were dancing in the air!

This caused everyone to suck in a deep breath of surprise.

"Lin Ming!"

Blood Moon cried out in alarm. Even when she was in her peak condition she still couldn't directly meet the might of this Life Seizing Talisman but would have to use everything at her disposal to block it. Yet, Lin Ming actually thrust his spear out, right at the Life Seizing Talisman. Once that talisman exploded, Lin Ming would explode into a bloody mess!

"Die!" Seeing Lin Ming arrogantly rush towards that Life Seizing Talisman, Empress Naye cruelly smiled. She wanted to see Lin Ming's body torn to shreds.

However, as Lin Ming thrust his spear into the patterns in the air, an unbelievable scene occurred.

The array symbols, beneath the spear light of the Phoenix Blood Spear, didn’t explode. Instead, they began to rapidly dim down.

With a crackling sound, the jade talisman violently trembled as many dao patterns were scattered by the spear light. Innumerable tiny runes began to escape like frightened frogs.

Light flashed amongst the runes as if the energy hidden within them was about to erupt. But in the end, they finally extinguished, turning the jade talisman into a dud that lost all of its power!

“This… this is…”

Empress Naye’s eyes became as round as full moons, her expression twisting into something like a maze. Every divine runic symbol that was sold would undergo all sorts of tests to verify it, so it was impossible for a situation to appear where it was actually a dud. And, her top sixth grade divine runic symbol had been purchased with a nearly insane amount of money and had also been carefully examined. Just how could it possibly fizzle away like this?

Could it be that there was something strange in Lin Ming’s spear light just now?

Naye didn’t dare to believe this, but she had heard that when divine runic symbols were used to attack top divine runic masters, their effects would be greatly reduced. But that sort of situation would only appear when low level divine runic symbols were used to attack high level divine runic masters.

For instance, a fifth grade divine runic symbol being used against a sixth grade divine runic master.

And the divine runic symbol she used was a peak sixth grade one. It couldn’t be that this young man in front of her was a seventh grade divine runic master!

At this time, all the masters within Arid Peace Palace were shocked silent. In particular, Blood Moon. There were great waves rushing about in her heart. She was well aware that although Lin Ming was indeed a divine runic master, he had only just passed his third grade divine runic master examination!

Could a third grade divine runic master break through a peak sixth grade divine runic symbol?

Chapter 1584 – Blood Splashing Through Arid Peace Palace

Chapter 1584 – Blood Splashing Through Arid Peace Palace

…

…

…

When Old Su introduced Lin Ming to Blood Moon, she had also learned about his approximate age, talent, and skill in the divine runic arts.

Although Blood Moon was stunned, being stunned was useless because she felt that Lin Ming wouldn't be able to help her; he was simply far too young.

What Blood Moon really cared about was Lin Ming's master, but when she asked Old Su about Lin Ming's master, Old Su hadn't been able to tell her anything at all. Thus, that was the reason why Blood Moon invited Lin Ming for a conversation. But as a result, she didn't have much hope that she would be able to build a relationship with Lin Ming's master because her level was simply far too low.

White Sky thought that Lin Ming was a World King camouflaged as a Divine Lord realm martial artist. But, Blood Moon knew the truth about Lin Ming's cultivation as well as his skeletal age when he entered Divine Rune City!

Let alone that faking his skeletal age was far more difficult, there was simply no reason for Lin Ming to do so. What advantage would there be in hiding his unparalleled talent?

Before sixty years of age, Lin Ming had such an abnormal combat strength and he also managed to find the method to break through the Life Seizing Talisman. Blood Moon could no longer imagine just what sort of heaven-defying character Lin Ming was.

And at this time, after Lin Ming shattered the Life Seizing Talisman he didn't stop there. He grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and pointed it straight towards Empress Naye. His dreadful killing intent had locked onto her!

He clearly wanted to attack Naye!

"Protect the Empress!"

The 15 remaining eunuchs and maids that Eunuch Sun had led saw Lin Ming stepping forwards, one step at a time. All of them gathered in front of their Empress, keeping her safe behind them.

The 18 Clear King Array beneath their feet had already been broken by Blood Moon. Now that they had lost three people, their battle array was no longer complete, and without that battle array they simply didn't have the strength to resist Lin Ming!

The 15 eunuchs and maids were deathly pale, their minds trembling. If the Empress died they would all be buried along with her, but facing Lin Ming, they would die all the same!

Lin Ming was like a death god. One step at a time, he finally reached within 100 feet of the Empress' Throne. At this mere 100 foot distance, even though Naye herself had undergone countless storms and tribulations in the harem, her complexion still changed. She simply didn't know where Lin Ming's depths were!

"White Sky!"

Naye sent a true essence sound transmission. The only one who could deal with Lin Ming right now was the Heaven's Net leader, White Sky!

However, White Sky hesitated, not moving in front of the Empress.

“You - !”

The Empress’ heart sank. She only had a cooperative relationship with White Sky, not one where she had employed him. If he felt that today’s matters were too tricky and gave birth to the thought of retreating then her situation would become far worse!

Then, a boundlessly deep aura erupted from Lin Ming’s body once more. This aura covered the entire Arid Peace Palace!

This was Lin Ming’s grandmist space!

As Lin Ming grew stronger, the power of the grandmist space grew increasingly terrifying. Moreover, this space was also flooded with the star-heavy grandmist energy!

When the grandmist energy superimposed over this force field, it placed an incomparably dreadful pressure on the Empress and her 15 eunuchs and maids!

The Empress could still barely summon 40-50% of her true essence, but the maids and eunuchs around her could barely remain stable! Each of them dripped with a cold sweat, their entire body shaking like an earthquake as if they were mortals that saw a devil.

Lin Ming didn’t care about these little underlings. He looked towards the Empress and smiled, “Didn't you want me to return this dead dog minion of yours? Then here he is!”

As Lin Ming spoke, he raised the Phoenix Blood Spear and thrust straight towards Empress Naye!

And hanging atop this spear point was Eunuch Sun’s half dead body!

“P-protect… protect the Empress!”

A eunuch shouted out. However, even though he shouted out these words his feet were like roots planted in the ground, unable to move at all!

This was because the pressure of the grandmist space was suppressing his movements and also because Lin Ming's momentum was far too overwhelming. Anyone who dared to block that spear of his would undoubtedly die. In this situation, who would still dare to stand in front of Lin Ming's spear?

Ca!

A brilliant spear light shot across Arid Peace Palace. Three eunuchs that bore the initial brunt of the attack were swept away by the energy winds. At the same time, Lin Ming opened the Heretical God Force to the limit as he primed the strength of a True Dragon within his body!

With a resonant dragon's cry, the phantom of an Azure Dragon appeared behind Lin Ming, savagely roaring!

A powerful dragon's dignity spread out, combining with the power of the grandmist space and Lin Ming's roiling killing intent to lock onto Empress Naye, preventing her from escaping!

However, Lin Ming's spear hadn't used his full strength. This was because he could feel that when he attacked, White Sky had still locked onto him from behind.

White Sky had a World King realm cultivation and Lin Ming couldn't help but be cautious of a World King powerhouse. Moreover, White Sky was a leader of Heaven's Net which specialized in assassinating others; who knew what sort of strange killing techniques he would have. If Lin Ming wasn't careful, then it was possible he would find unexpected defeat.

"How detestable!"

As Lin Ming's spear light approached, Empress Naye screeched out loud. She pulled out two divine runic symbol jade slips from her spatial ring and crumbled them to dust.

In that instant, the jade slips dissolved into numerous complex dao patterns that wrapped around Naye. Thes were clearly sixth grade defensive divine runic symbols!

Lin Ming only sneered as he saw these divine runic symbols. As his spear light was about to strike Naye, it immediately changed directions.

Bang!

With a loud explosive sound the spear light erupted. The power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation within the Phoenix Blood Spear wove together and detonated. Eunuch Sun, who was still hung on the Phoenix Blood Spear, emitted one last cry of pain as his entire body was split up by the explosion and his remnants sprinkled down in a rain of flesh and blood!

A wild and fierce strength crashed into the divine runic symbols that surrounded Naye. These divine runic symbols only lasted for a single breath of time before they also exploded to pieces.

Naye paled, her beautiful face losing all of its composure. In this life or death moment she slashed out with her sword at Lin Ming's power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation!

But, the difference in strength was far too great. Even though Lin Ming had held back 60% of his strength, Naye still wasn't able to resist this attack!

Brutal torrents of energy fell down. Naye's protective true essence shattered like glass. With a cry of alarm, her entire body shook. Even her protective robes made from threads of blue snow gold and sky work silk were ripped apart!

And even though this spear light had been weakened again and again, it still smashed into Naye's chest!

Puff!

Naye spat out a mouthful of blood as she was sent flying backwards!

Violent energy currents swept through all of Arid Peace Palace. The tiles were lifted up off the floor and disintegrated into powder in the air. If it wasn't for the presence of the grandmist space then the entirety of Arid Peace Palace would have been destroyed!

Naye was covered in blood. This blood was hers as well as Eunuch Sun's. Bits and pieces of Eunuch Sun's exploded body had splashed onto Naye, making the sight of her horrible to behold!

Lin Ming took a sudden step forwards, wanting to continue with his attack. But then, his footsteps paused and he stayed his hand.

As his spear strike had severely wounded Naye, he had never lost track of White Sky.

And this White Sky had decided to launch a sneak attack as Lin Ming had just finished his own attack!

Lin Ming coldly smirked. He had kept back 60% of his strength just now all in order to defend against White Sky. Even if White Sky suddenly attacked now, with the 60% of his strength he had reserved and the 20-30% he had just restored, it would be more than enough to block White Sky's attack!

However, just as White Sky moved, Lin Ming's complexion changed. He could see White Sky's figure suddenly blurring before disappearing altogether!

"Afterimage!?"

Lin Ming grimaced. White Sky was indeed worthy of being a World King assassin leader. His movements were ghostly and phantasmal and the afterimage technique he used just now was far too lifelike in the current situation. Because Lin Ming had originally thought that White Sky was going to sneak attack him, he hadn't been able to immediately see through this afterimage!

In only a thousandth of an instant, White Sky's figure appeared in front of Xiao Moxian!

The target he chose to attack was actually Xiao Moxian!

White Sky was an extremely cunning individual. He knew that because of Lin Ming's appearance today, it would be impossible for him to accomplish his goal. Lin Ming's strength might not be inferior to his own. If he wanted to kill Lin Ming and Blood Moon here then that would be hopelessly impossible.

Thus, White Sky intended to retreat from this battlefield.

But he couldn't leave empty-handed, he needed at least a tiny bit of gain. Capturing Blood Moon was not possible so he had decided to target Xiao Moxian instead!

He could see that Xiao Moxian had an extremely significant relationship with Lin Ming.

After they entered Arid Peace Palace, their relationship could be guessed by the way they acted around each other as well as how they stood together. There was a 99% chance that Xiao Moxian was Lin Ming's dual cultivation dao companion!

For martial artists that lived for such a long time, the lives of their concubines and living furnaces were unimportant; to think of using them to threaten a martial artist was stupid at best. Sometimes, even their wives weren't worth enough.

But a dual cultivation dao companion was different. In particular, White Sky could see that Xiao Moxian had an extraordinary bloodline and her talent was extremely high. A dual cultivation dao companion could only be found through a stroke of fate. To Lin Ming, she was likely an extremely important person. If he could capture her then he could force Lin Ming into submission.

He didn't expect that he would be able to force Lin Ming to help him deal with Blood Moon, but he could at least force Lin Ming to not interfere in his battle with her. As long as Lin Ming didn't interfere then he had the means to deal with Blood Moon.

To use an afterimage to confuse Lin Ming, the reality was that he was aiming for Xiao Moxian. His plan was well thought out!

The moment that White Sky appeared in front of Xiao Moxian, Blood Moon's expression lit up with surprise! She was much closer to Xiao Moxian than Lin Ming was, but even so she didn't have enough time to respond. White Sky had attacked too suddenly and his movement speed had reached an incredible level!

"Be careful!"

Blood Moon hurtled forwards, wanting to block off White Sky's escape direction. At the same time, her killing intent locked onto White Sky. She even wanted to activate her Endlessly Long Night force field, but with her true essence being corroded by the parasitic field she simply wasn't able to use it! And at this time, White Sky's hands were already reaching out towards Xiao Moxian!

"You're coming with me!"

White Sky's expression was fierce and savage. But in this moment, Xiao Moxian coldly sneered, "Do you think you can knead me like mud?"

True phoenix blood, burn!

Bang!

With a loud explosion, black flames ignited all over Xiao Moxian!

The heat of these blazing flames reached unimaginable degrees. Even the array formation-supported tiles beneath her instantly turned to steam!

Facing a World King powerhouse, although Xiao Moxian couldn't win, this didn't mean she couldn't defend herself. She burned her phoenix blood essence, using the strongest ability she had gained after undergoing her phoenix nirvana!

Chapter 1585 – Fighting White Sky

Chapter 1585 – Fighting White Sky

…

…

…

Raging flames surged about and waves of heat howled through the air. A sun seemed to ignite within Xiao Moxian’s body.

In that moment, from behind Xiao Moxian, a massive black phoenix phantom soared into the air. This phoenix phantom was also wrapped in flames and the moment it appeared, the vault of Arid Peace Palace began to be scorched away. The carvings and paintings that decorated the palace began to melt into the walls.

White Sky never imagined that this sort of change would occur just as he was about to capture Xiao Moxian. This young girl with her low cultivation was actually able to burst out with such a terrifying strength!

“Counterforce – Heaven Absorbing Demon Art!”

Xiao Moxian drew her whip and slashed it outwards. This whip burned with flames. At the same time, the dark power within the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art erupted out, swallowing the void and locking White Sky in a thick and viscous darkness!

“Concept of Darkness sixth level! Concept of Fire seventh level!”

White Sky sucked in a cold breath. This common-looking young woman had actually achieved such horrifying attainments in the Fire and Darkness Laws!

White Sky's short sword thrust out. In this moment White Sky didn't hold back at all and attacked with everything he had. Facing Xiao Moxian, who was burning her phoenix blood essence, he had no choice but to be cautious of her.

Ca!

The sword light cut through the whip shadows. Flames filled the skies, howling and raging. Xiao Moxian took a step back as she lashed out with her whip once more!

But her whip wasn't aimed at White Sky. Rather, the whip shadows spread all over White Sky, forming an enchantment barrier around him!

This enchantment didn't have any striking power but it actually locked White Sky within it, making it difficult for him to use that strange and ghostly movement technique.

"Mm!?"

White Sky was shocked. Xiao Moxian had set up an enchantment around him!

An ominous feeling appeared in his heart. At this time, he could feel a profound killing intent growing behind him, savage and turbulent!

He turned around to see that Lin Ming had grasped his Phoenix Blood Spear. Lin Ming's hair fluttered in the wind as he rushed forwards like a demon god!

Facing White Sky, Lin Ming was filled with killing intent. Originally, Lin Ming had the mentality that he wouldn't fight with this person unless he had to. After all, this White Sky was a World King powerhouse and fighting with him at this time wasn't the wisest course of action. But, he never thought that White Sky would actually attack Xiao Moxian. This action had irreversibly touched upon Lin Ming's reverse scale, the source of rage!

Lin Ming hadn't held back in this strike. The Heretical God Force completely exploded within him and inside his inner world, the Purple Temple Dao Palace began to open!

In that moment, the world seemed to fall away. Arid Peace Palace vanished as everyone seemed to suddenly appear in the boundless starry skies of the endless universe!

Everyone stood in this void, surrounded by infinite space. And above the heads of these people, nine stars began to appear!

Of these nine stars, seven were bright and two were dark. Their locations seemed to faintly hint at the highest truths of the Great Dao. Endless starlight fell down as trillions of silver threads fell onto Lin Ming.

A terrifying killing intent surged out in all directions. With Lin Ming's inner world as the center, this starlight crazily gathered into him, forming a terrifying river of stars that swirled around him. The space around everyone seemed to be locked down, completely disconnected from the outside world.

In this instant, everyone in Arid Peace Palace was left stunned!

"This is..."

Blood Moon looked at the nine stars in the skies, her eyes filled with utter disbelief. She had also once tried to dual cultivate body and energy so she was well aware what these nine stars meant!

"Nine Stars of the Dao Palace... this is the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!"

Blood Moon felt as if everything she knew had been turned upside-down!

The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was a legendary realm that was forbidden by the Heavenly Dao rules. Lin Ming was less than 60 years old so when he had asked Blood Moon to borrow the Celestial Tyrant Manual, she had urged him to forget about the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace because it was simply far too unrealistic.

Lin Ming had lived in Full Moon Hall for over half a month but in the end, Blood Moon hadn't lent the Celestial Tyrant Manual to him. One reason was because she didn't think that Lin Ming would be able to help her, and another reason was that even if she were to lend it to him, there would simply be no meaning to it. He wouldn't be able to cultivate it and would just be wasting his time.

But she never would have imagined that the truth was that Lin Ming had already stepped into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

The reason he had asked her to borrow the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace section of the Celestial Tyrant Manual was because he had already cultivated it!

"How is this... possible..."

Blood Moon could no longer understand Lin Ming. This was not a question of talent anymore. She couldn't think of just what lucky chance existed that could allow him to break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

Many of the martial artists present were talented but they hadn't chosen to walk the path of dual body and energy cultivation. And, the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had already disappeared for billions of years, so even though they saw these stars appear behind Lin Ming they still didn't know just what they were.

They could only feel that this was a dreadful phenomenon. As those nine stars appeared in the skies, all of the human martial artists present felt their blood vitality gravitating towards those nine stars, as if all the blood running within their bodies wanted to howl out of them!

Then, Lin Ming attacked!

The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was currently Lin Ming's greatest strength. The boundary he had reached had already surpassed the early Divine Lord realm of the essence gathering system!

Explosive crackling sounds lit up from within Lin Ming's body. The galactic storm within his inner world erupted and his bodily strength reached 15 billion jins. When combined with the techniques of the Celestial Tyrant Manual, Lin Ming's striking power rose to the strength of five dragons!

Bang!

A horrifying air wave burst outwards. Even the dual imprisonment of Xiao Moxian's enchantment and the grandmist space wasn't able to cage this terrifying strength. The entirety of Arid Peace Palace was torn apart by the explosions of energy, completely collapsing!

"Asura Heavenly Dao – Demon Extermination!"

Lin Ming once again used a move from the Asura Sutra. He was only just able to use this technique when he gathered the power of the nine stars unto himself. He had once used this Demon Extermination technique to kill Tian Mingzi!

Out of all of Lin Ming's attacks, it could be called his strongest one!

As Lin Ming thrust out his spear, space itself was crushed!

Facing this attack, White Sky's complexion changed.

Although he didn't recognize the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace he could still feel the wild and tyrannical power erupting from within Lin Ming. With this strength used by the present Lin Ming, he resembled an ancient great dragon!

How could one's strength reach such a terrifying degree!?

In that moment, White Sky's body ballooned outwards. All of the strength contained within his inner world burst out!

White Sky held his sword, his feet dancing on seven stars. His body emitted a creamy white light, a light that contained a primal flavor beyond description.

Of the nine tribulation Laws of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, thunder, yin, and yang, this was the Yang Laws!

The Yang Laws stood above the five elements. When the universe formed, first came chaos, then came yin and yang!

Yin and yang came after chaos and grandmist; it was one of the most extreme source Laws! It was only an extremely rare breed of person who thoroughly mastered the Yang Laws.

In the past, White Sky had stumbled upon a great lucky chance and had obtained an ancient inheritance concerning the Yang Laws. By coincidence, his physique also happened to be suited to practicing the Yang Laws. This was the main reason he was able to struggle through the plot-filled assassination organization of Heaven’s Net and slowly crawl his way to becoming a World King and assassin leader!

At White Sky slashed out his short sword, all of the surrounding light was swallowed up by this luminescent white divine light, as if the heavens and earth were isolated outwards.

The eunuchs and maids of Arid Peace Palace were suppressed by this dreadful divine light and found it difficult to breathe. Their blood vitality restlessly surged within their bodies, on the verge of exploding out from them!

Peng!

With a loud crack, two eunuchs of Arid Peace Palace blew up into pieces. But as their bodies exploded there was no blood that splashed out. Rather, their bodies evaporated beneath this white divine light, dissipating into nothingness!

This caused all of the eunuchs and maids with lower cultivations to shiver. As long as this divine light shined upon them then their bodies would disintegrate; how could they not be terrified of such a scene!

“Retreat!”

Xiao Moxian suddenly called out. Xiao Moxian was the closest one to Lin Ming and White Sky's battle but she didn't fear the shock waves of their attacks. Rather, it was the young maids and eunuchs of Full Moon Hall that could not withstand this pressure.

The long whip in her hand slashed out, wrapping around four or five frightened eunuchs and maids. Then, she drew backwards, preventing them from being covered by the divine light.

White Sky's Yang Laws were similar to a force field. This force field wildly clashed with Lin Ming's grandmist space!

Chi chi chi!

As the white light entered the grandmist space, it rapidly dissipated like snow falling into molten iron. As the two force fields collided, the difference could be seen with a glance.

The Yin Yang Laws originally came after the Grandmist Laws. Moreover, Lin Ming's grandmist space was established by Empyrean Primordius and there was true grandmist energy supporting it!

The power of this grandmist space had long reached unimaginable levels!

As White Sky watched his own force field be swallowed up by the grandmist space, his complexion changed. White Sky was also a ruthless and decisive individual. In this grave and imminent danger, he forced out a mouthful of blood essence. This blood essence brilliantly burned, its strength used by White Sky to fiercely raise the power of his Yang Laws.

For a time, White Sky's sword light became increasingly ancient, as if it were a blade that shuttled through the endless years to slash forth from the nothingness of the most primitive times.

This was the atmosphere of the absolute beginning!

Beneath the superimposed power of two force fields, Lin Ming's spear light collided with White Sky's sword light.

Bang!

In that strike, the sun and moon lost their luster and the world lost all light!

A horrifying surge of energy exploded from the center of the grandmist space and yang force field! If it weren't for the barrier of these dual force fields then this strike would have swept up the entire imperial palace in a storm. Within this storm, all other buildings besides those protected by the strongest array formations would have turned to ash!

Puff!

White Sky spat out a mouthful of fresh blood and was sent flying backwards. As for Lin Ming, his body shook and his blood tumbled within him.

In that exchange just now when Lin Ming had erupted with all his strength, White Sky had managed to use the Yang Laws to screen out most of Lin Ming's strength and then block Lin Ming's spear light with his own sword light.

"Genesis energy! In his Yang Laws, he had already evolved elementary genesis energy! Although it is only a tiny bit, it is still dreadful. Indeed, it seems there isn't a single World King powerhouse that is simple at all!"

Lin Ming thought to himself, stunned. In this world, there were three great source powers – grandmist energy, genesis energy, and spirit source!

Genesis energy was able to stand on the same level as grandmist energy!

Chapter 1586 – Imperial Palace’s Great Chief Eunuch

Chapter 1586 – Imperial Palace’s Great Chief Eunuch

…

…

…

Of the three major source powers, none of them were a trifling matter.

Grandmist energy – the source of matter.

Genesis energy – the source of energy.

Spirit source – the source of soul.

When these three source powers were unified, they formed essence, energy, and divine!

In the past, it was because Lin Ming lacked spirit source that Divine Dream didn’t allow Lin Ming to study the Divine Dream Law.

Each one of the three major source powers was incomparably precious. The reason that Lin Ming was able to possess so much grandmist energy was because he inherited it from Empyrean Primordius. By himself, it would have been impossible to obtain it. This was because grandmist energy had almost completely disappeared after the forming of the universe. It was said that grandmist energy still existed in black holes, but black holes were celestial bodies where the gravitational force reached such an extreme that it created a force field around itself, an absolutely separate space. Even an Empyrean couldn’t enter one!

Empyrean Divine Seal’s Divine Seal Art was founded with inspiration from black holes.

It was incredible that this White Sky was able to cultivate a tiny amount of elementary genesis energy in his attacks. It was clear that he had once obtained a powerful inheritance, and although this inheritance was inferior to the Primordius martial intent, it should still have been on the level of a transcendent divine might.

At this time, Arid Peace Palace, which was supported with all sorts of array formations and was comparable to a spirit artifact, was completely razed to the ground. Empress Naye had been injured in the chaos. Her entire body was drenched in blood and she looked miserable.

In the center of the battlefield, the only ones left were Lin Ming and White Sky, standing in harsh opposition with each other!

In that strike just now, White Sky had been forced to burn some of his blood essence and had even suffered a loss. As for Lin Ming, he had only been forced back with his blood tumbling within him; the difference could be easily seen.

Everyone who stood on the Empress’ side was currently looking at Lin Ming with fear and dread in their eyes. Even White Sky wasn’t Lin Ming’s match!

A World King powerhouse had been suppressed by Lin Ming!

At this time, the maids and eunuchs of Arid Peace Palace who luckily survived were all trembling with fear. The pressure that Lin Ming placed upon them was too great. With the aura of the grandmist force field also covering them, they couldn’t even stand steady.

And at this time, the one with the most tumultuous mood was Blood Moon.

It was already shocking when Lin Ming displayed the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, but afterwards when Lin Ming used that terrifying 15 billion jins of strength, he actually used an arcane technique to increase his strength to 50 billion jins: the strength of five dragons!

When Blood Moon saw this technique Lin Ming used, she felt it was strangely familiar.

"Celestial Tyrant Manual? This is the Celestial Tyrant Manual? This Lin Ming actually understands the Celestial Tyrant Manual?" All sorts of chaotic emotions swelled in Blood Moon's heart. She thought that the Celestial Tyrant Manual was a unique cultivation method manual and yet Lin Ming also knew of it?

"No wonder… no wonder he would request the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace section of the Celestial Tyrant Manual from me… it is because he already practiced the Eight Inner Hidden Gates section to the peak and has even opened the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!"

Blood Moon mumbled to herself. She felt that this youth in front of her was filled with riddles.

White Sky's complexion was grim. In that collision of force fields just now when White Sky's yang force field had smashed into Lin Ming's grandmist space, the disparity had been evident.

This sort of disparity manifested in the grade of the force fields!

The yang force field was originally not as exquisite as the grandmist space. Moreover, there was a massive amount of grandmist energy that flooded the grandmist space; this was true grandmist energy, not elementary grandmist energy!

And within the yang force field, there was only elementary genesis energy.

This sort of difference couldn't even be described with clouds and mud. The only reason that White Sky had suffered a small loss was because his cultivation was far deeper than Lin Ming's. With the difference in their cultivation boundaries he had forcefully made up for their force fields to block Lin Ming's Demon Extermination.

"Divine Lord realm… you really are at the Divine Lord realm?"

As White Sky looked at Lin Ming, there was a strange trembling in his voice!

In that exchange just now, he had been able to confirm what Lin Ming's boundary was!

The true essence standard that Lin Ming displayed, although it far surpassed all other early Divine Lord martial artists, could still be explained with the reasoning that he was an unrivalled genius. Even so, it was explainable. In other words, Lin Ming didn't truly surpass the Divine Lord realm!

At first he had thought that Lin Ming was a World King powerhouse that had concealed himself, but no matter how profound a World King powerhouse was at camouflaging their cultivation, it would be impossible for them to maintain a Divine Lord realm cultivation in the heat of battle. Otherwise, they would be brutally beaten by others.

"You… just who are you?"

White Sky said with raging emotions. He found it hard to keep his expression or tone calm. Ever since he joined Heaven's Net as a child, he had grown one step at a time until he became a leader. He had experienced the sandy plains of slaughter numerous times and had walked upon the thread of life or death almost daily. Even so, this was an expression that he rarely showed. He had long since formed a mindset where he could face death without panicking, but now that he faced such a terrifying character like Lin Ming he was actually left flustered.

Nothing about Lin Ming could be explained with common sense!

Lin Ming didn't bother replying to White Sky. He slowly stepped forwards, closing the distance between them, his focus locked onto his enemy the entire time. When his focus was combined with that star-heavy grandmist energy, it seemed menacing and forceful!

White Sky's complexion changed. He couldn't help but take a step backwards. "Do you really want to bet life or death with me?"

"Isn't that what you just did?" Lin Ming coldly sneered.

"I was trying to capture your dual cultivation dao companion but I wasn't planning to do anything to her. I only wanted to use her to threaten you to retreat and stay out of the internal struggles of my Heaven's Net. I didn't attack you nor did I have the thought of killing your dao companion!" White Sky explained his motives. But, in doing so, he had already admitted defeat.

However, Lin Ming disregarded this explanation. "And yet your actions have enraged me even more."

"Even if you try as hard as you can, you still won't be able to keep me here!" White Sky's eyebrows shot up. He had absolute confidence in his own movement techniques.

"Yes, but perhaps I might try to leave some mark on you."

"Why must you be so forceful?" White Sky said, frowning. He still hadn't unraveled who Lin Ming was and he didn't want to offend someone he knew absolutely nothing about.

He had already thought of escaping.

But at this time, the grandmist force field that shrouded Arid Peace Palace strengthened by several points, as if it wanted to completely lock down this space!

Although White Sky's movement techniques were skillful he was still temporarily stuck in this grandmist space!

If White Sky were to attack he could definitely break open the grandmist space. But at this time, Lin Ming would definitely take the chance to attack him. White Sky would be hard pressed to split his attention and would likely be severely wounded by Lin Ming.

Then, it would really be as Lin Ming said; there would be a mark left behind on his body!

Thinking of this, White Sky's voice became dreary. "Do you think that I've already shown my hand and I don't have a final all-out attack?"

As an assassin leader of Heaven's Net who had risked his life over tens of thousands of years in Heaven's Net, survived and even come out on top, it wasn't a surprise that he had some final trump card in his hand.

And as Lin Ming faced White Sky's threat, he remained silent as before, still not removing the grandmist force field!

"Good! You're ruthless enough!" White Sky's voice carried with it an icy chill.

For two masters to fight to such a degree had already exceeded everyone's expectations. Lin Ming had hidden himself in this crowd of masters and had crippled Eunuch Sun with a single strike, destroyed Empress Naye's divine runic symbol jade slips, and then suppressed World King White Sky; his strength was unbelievable!

Not only was Lin Ming abnormal but his dual cultivation companion wasn't easy to deal with either. Although she seemed like a charming and delicate young girl, she was actually able to erupt with a horrifying combat strength. Even White Sky had been forced to avoid her attack.

These two people gave off a feeling as if they didn't belong to this world. They were strong to the point of disbelief.

And as White Sky was about to use his desperate trump card to engage in a bloody final battle with Lin Ming, an old voice echoed outwards –

"Why must you fight to this degree…"

As this voice sounded out, the killing intent that pervaded the air suddenly diminished.

Everyone turned around to see an old yellow-robed man calmly stepping towards them, walking on the wind!

This yellow-robed old man had a face covered with wrinkles and a head of white hair.

His voice was old with a strange sharpness to it, making him sound bizarre. He wore yellow robes in the style of a eunuch, with the difference that there was a golden dragon embroidered on his front and back.

In the imperial palace, a dragon was the symbol of royal authority. Only the emperor and crown prince had the qualifications to wear imperial robes, and the crown prince’s imperial robes had a dragon with one less claw, a four-clawed golden dragon.

This old eunuch wore yellow robes with the image of a four-clawed golden dragon. In other words, he had status equal to that of a crown prince! But, the truth was that the Marvel Blue Nation had no crown prince. In other words, within the Marvel Blue Nation, this eunuch had status second only to the Marvel Blue Emperor!

That meant his status was extraordinary!

He was one of the three World King masters that commanded the Marvel Blue Nation below the Marvel Blue Emperor; he was the great chief eunuch of the imperial palace, Eunuch Wei!

Chapter 1587 – To Admit Defeat

Chapter 1587 – To Admit Defeat

…

…

…

“Greetings, Empress.”

Eunuch Wei slightly bowed as he set down on the floor.

His words were peaceful with a hint of true essence poured into them. This true essence rushed into Empress Naye’s body like a cool wind, making the pain wracking her body feel much better.

Within the Marvel Blue Nation, besides the Marvel Blue Emperor, there were three other World Kings. The Grand Marshal was in charge of the military, the Imperial Scholar was in charge of political affairs, and Great Chief Eunuch Wei was in charge of internal affairs and national resources. This included managing blue snow gold, the various heavenly materials, assigning resources, expenses of the imperial palace, and even the daily matters of tens of thousands of maids and eunuchs in the imperial palace. All of this was within Eunuch Wei’s hands. He could be said to have tremendous power and influence.

Although this type of character had to greet the Empress based upon court etiquette, the truth was that within the Marvel Blue Nation, his status was faintly above that of the Empress.

This was the world of martial artists in which strength ruled supreme. In the world of martial artists, even if one founded an imperial power as their center, it would still be different from a mortal's imperial palace. Those without strength, whether it was a prince or imperial concubine, none of them would be able to stand out.

Lin Ming was vigilant against this Eunuch Wei who just appeared. This person's aura was deep and his true essence was restrained; it was hard to judge what the limit of his strength was.

Although he was an ordinary World King, there were still those that were strong and weak within the World King realm. Lin Ming could feel that this Eunuch Wei was even stronger than White Sky.

Thus, he had no choice but to be cautious of him.

After all, Eunuch Wei was likely not on their side.

After Naye restored a bit of her strength, she stood back up. With a wave of her hand, the bloodstains that covered her evaporated. Even Eunuch Sun's shredded meat was burnt into ash.

Her robes of blue snow gold and sky work silk had originally been a treasure, and now that the blood had evaporated and the ash fell away, they immediately became bright and clean again. Unfortunately, the robe itself had been torn by Lin Ming, causing Naye's grandeur to be reduced by a great deal.

"Eunuch Wei... you have come. I am happy to see you here."

Naye smiled. She didn't do as Lin Ming thought she would and accuse Lin Ming, Blood Moon, and the others of conspiring to rebel against her to Eunuch Wei. Rather, she only said that she was happy to see him, completely ignoring the fact that Arid Peace Palace had been razed to the ground and she herself had been severely beaten up.

With this, Lin Ming couldn't help but measure the Empress a few points higher.

Eunuch Wei had already managed affairs within the imperial palace for hundreds of thousands of years and naturally understood what was happening. As for the disputes of the throne, he didn't take a side nor did he divide between right or wrong. Whoever was stronger would be able to take the throne. To the victor went the spoils; this was the only truth.

When the old Emperor went into seclusion, he had told Eunuch Wei not to interfere in the affairs of the imperial struggle. But now that Arid Peace Palace was destroyed, and with the possibility that the entire imperial palace might be ruined if this fight continued any longer, Eunuch Wei had to interfere.

"Everyone, how about we end today's matter as is? The Empress and Imperial Concubine Moon should also be tired? Perhaps it would be good if you were to return to your quarters to rest."

With Eunuch Wei's appearance, he spoke a few words in order to defuse the conflict.

Just as the two sides were about to engage in a life or death fight, a word to pause the battle and they had paused. In a situation where either side would suffer a loss if they continued, this was the only choice they could make.

Lin Ming looked deeply at White Sky. In truth, he also knew that with his strength, although he could defeat White Sky if he used everything at his disposal, killing him wasn't likely.

And in the imperial palace, if he wanted to kill the Empress then Eunuch Wei wouldn't stand idly by and allow that to happen. Not to mention that Eunuch Wei was stronger than White Sky. If Lin Ming were to fight with him then it was unknown who would win in the end. Truly fighting with Eunuch Wei would be an unwise idea that would only earn him another formidable enemy. Moreover, in the Marvel Blue Nation, there was more than one World King master.

Besides, Lin Ming didn't know this Lord Snow to begin with so he had no obligation to risk his life for him. He also didn't intend to interfere in the struggle for the throne.

Lin Ming only wanted the Celestial Tyrant Manual and now he had mostly achieved his goal.

Lin Ming glanced over at Blood Moon. Blood Moon bowed, intending to resolve the conflict like this.

The truth was that they had already taken the advantage. The maids and eunuchs that Naye had raised had mostly died and Eunuch Sun had been killed by Lin Ming. Even the carefully constructed Arid Peace Palace that symbolized the will of the Empress had been destroyed.

To Naye, the peak Holy Lord Eunuch Sun had been her absolute right hand. But now that he was cut down by Lin Ming, she could only swallow this insult.

This was the suppression brought by strength.

Blood Moon was filled with curiosity towards Lin Ming. She wanted to know just how Lin Ming had learned the Celestial Tyrant Manual, but now was not a good time to ask.

She gently smiled and said to Eunuch Wei, "Since Eunuch Wei has appeared then let us resolve matters like this. I only hope that in the future when I am in Full Moon Hall, there will not be another summons from the Empress where her only goal is to reprimand me!"

Blood Moon's voice carried with it a slight warning. In truth, she relied on Lin Ming to gain the upper hand.

Even so, Blood Moon still had the capital to remain standing tall. This was because her wounds would heal in another month or two and when her strength was restored to its peak state, she wouldn't be any weaker than White Sky.

If so, then she naturally had the ability to establish herself in the entire Marvel Blue Imperial Palace.

After being warned by an imperial concubine, Naye's eyes flashed with a cold light. But, she eventually flung her sleeves backwards and calmly told the remaining eunuchs, "Begin a trip to Soul Nourishing Temple!"

Now that Arid Peace Palace was no more it was naturally impossible for her to rest here. As for Soul Nourishing Temple, it was the palace of the Emperor and only the Empress had the right to enter and pass the night there. The imperial concubines did not have the ability to do so.

Like this, the sudden storm had passed. Although there would be some criticisms due to the destruction of Arid Peace Palace, these opinions would slowly be suppressed.

Lin Ming wouldn't care about any of this. His only regret today was that he wasn't able to leave some mark behind on White Sky. Even so, forcing him to burn a bit of his blood essence could be considered sufficient interest.

Lin Ming planned to return to Full Moon Hall with Blood Moon. But at this time, he was stopped by someone.

"This little brother, please stay a moment."

Lin Ming paused and turned to see Eunuch Wei smiling at him. A eunuch originally grew old strangely, especially when they had a senile-looking appearance. When they smiled, it normally appeared unappealing, and sometimes extremely repugnant.

However, when this Eunuch Wei smiled, it appeared somewhat gentle and kind.

"I never imagined that Lord Snow would have such hidden depths that he could actually request the help of such a peak character like this little brother."

Eunuch Wei said, his eyes looking up and down Lin Ming. Although he hadn't seen the entire fight, he could guess the approximate situation. He was extremely curious as to what Lin Ming's status was. If this Lin Ming came from a large influence, then that influence was likely not something that a Great World King influence like the Marvel Blue Nation could compare with.

The difference was too great!

Lin Ming lightly smiled, "Eunuch Wei has misunderstood. I am not Lord Snow's helper and I also do not help him. It is only that I have some old friendship with Imperial Concubine Moon so I have come to the palace to pay a visit to her."

Lin Ming smoothly said. His words caused Eunuch Wei to look at Imperial Concubine Moon with a different light in his eyes. Eunuch Wei was an intelligent person who was also well-informed; he naturally knew the purpose of Imperial Concubine Moon coming to the palace.

He never would have thought that Imperial Concubine Moon knew such a person!

Like this, he had to completely reconsider the imperial struggle between Lord Shen and Lord Snow. He would even need to rely more on Eunuch Liang who was on good terms with Imperial Concubine Moon.

All of this was on the premise that Eunuch Wei thought Lin Ming might have come from a peak Empyrean influence.

A peak Empyrean influence could command the wind and rain within the entire inner Asura Road. To such an influence, Eunuch Wei was nothing more than an ant. If he could form relations with an Empyrean influence then that would mean many benefits in the future!

However, Eunuch Wei could see that Lin Ming had no intention of revealing his background so he could only put the plan of climbing relations with Lin Ming behind. He smiled and said “Little brother, if you are interested then you can come to the Marvel Blue Nation as a guest. My Marvel Blue Nation will certainly welcome you as an honored guest!”

Eunuch Wei spoke these words in front of everyone.

And at this time, Empress Naye had yet to leave. Whether it was Arid Peace Palace of Full Moon Hall, the many eunuchs and maids were able to clearly hear him.

In the eyes of these young eunuchs and maids, Eunuch Wei was, aside from the old Emperor who was nearing the end of his lifespan, one of the three World King powerhouses of the Marvel Blue Nation. Moreover, even amongst ordinary World Kings, Eunuch Wei’s strength was still considered in the upper echelons. He had already cultivated the Sunflower Melody to an unbelievable boundary.

Within the imperial palace, Eunuch Wei was the absolute chief eunuch in charge of all internal affairs. Not only did the Empress and numerous princes need to pay him due respect, but if he was to clearly state his support for Prince Shen or Grandprince Snow, then the matter of ascension would already be half-settled.

Unfortunately, no one was able to successfully curry favor with Eunuch Wei. Even though Lord Shen and Lord Snow and sent him gifts again and again, these gifts had been fully returned by him.

But now, this Eunuch Wei who held one of the top three positions of power and authority within the Marvel Blue Nation was actually taking the initiative to show goodwill towards Lin Ming. This caused the young eunuchs and maids to be startled. As they looked at Lin Ming once more, they felt that he was an increasingly unfathomable youth.

In fact, these young eunuchs and maids had a limited cultivation boundary so it was hard for them to understand just what Lin Ming’s strength and talented represented. It was Eunuch Wei’s flattering words towards him that left the greatest impact on them!

As for Empress Naye, as she sat in her palanquin she also froze as she heard Eunuch Wei’s words. Her complexion turned grim.

Finally, she settled herself in her seat and shouted to the eunuch beside her. “Begin the trip to Soul Nourishing Temple –”

Like this, the people of Arid Peace Palace vanished around a corner.

As for the eunuchs and maids of Full Moon Hall, all of them returned, overflowing with joy and thankfulness. The eunuchs that carried the palanquin were especially zealous in their actions, each step they took floating up as if they were going to fly.

They all felt as if they had overcome and won a great war.

Chapter 1588 – Cultivation Method In Hand

Chapter 1588 – Cultivation Method In Hand

…

…

…

To the young eunuchs and maids of Full Moon Hall, whether it was the ruler of six palaces – the Empress, or the manager of internal affairs – Great Chief Eunuch Wei, both were existences that they feared to the point of death. With just a single word from either one of them, any of the young eunuchs and maids would be exterminated. But today, the Empress had lost so many eunuchs and maids and even had her Arid Peace Palace destroyed, yet she was only able to swallow this insult. And when Eunuch Wei came, not only did he not charge Lin Ming with the crime of destroying Arid Peace Palace, but he instead remained respectful towards Lin Ming, even welcoming him as an honored guest to the Marvel Blue Nation.

For these two characters to have such a response, the young eunuchs and maids felt this was unbelievable and at the same time proud and ecstatic!

Although the Empress and Eunuch Wei were in fact only giving in to Lin Ming and Lin Ming had no connection to these young eunuchs and maids, he was still staying at Full Moon Hall. When the Empress admitted defeat this time, it was her admitting defeat to the entirety of Full Moon Hall. This made them feel like a warm sunlight was shining on their faces, making them euphoric and carefree!

As for Lin Ming's image, he became an immeasurably deep figure in the hearts of the young eunuchs and maids. And as for the young maid who had brought Lin Ming his daily washing water, she constantly glanced at him within the palanquin, filled with curiosity.

In her eyes, Lin Ming was undoubtedly the hero of Full Moon Hall. Although his battle with a World King had been extremely short it had still left a deep impression on her mind. She had originally looked at Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian with disdain for their daily lovemaking, but now she actually envied Xiao Moxian. However, Xiao Moxian's strength left her in fear and awe at the same time.

For a young woman to have such strength was incredible.

The group of people returned to Full Moon Hall in high spirits. Upon returning to Full Moon Hall, Blood Moon sent out rewards. Each of the accompanying eunuchs and maids was rewarded with 1000 origin energy runes, leaving them even more overjoyed. They all happily shouted out, "Praise Imperial Concubine Moon!"

Blood Moon faintly smiled. She waved her hand, "You may all leave."

The eunuchs and maids bowed and withdrew, leaving behind only Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, and Blood Moon in the room.

"Lin Ming, I must thank you for today's matters!" Blood Moon said, personally pouring a cup of fog rain tea for Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian. This was the most valuable tea in Full Moon Hall and it had a wonderfully refreshing effect.

Lin Ming received the teacup and said, "There is no need to be so serious. Today's matters also happened because of me. If it weren't for a man living in Full Moon Hall then the Empress wouldn't have been able to easily incriminate Imperial Concubine Moon."

Blood Moon couldn't help but smile. "Lin Ming, there is no need for you to be modest. You and I both know that the Empress was deliberately finding faults, and even if you weren't there she still would have found some other method to deal with me. If it weren't for you, I have no idea how today's matters would have ended. If I'm lucky, my wounds should heal after another short period of time. At that time, there will be no need for me to fear them. Even if White Sky were to return there would be nothing he could do to me."

Upon mentioning White Sky, Lin Ming coldly sneered, “If White Sky were to return, there is no need for Imperial Concubine Moon to do anything; I still haven’t settled my account with him. As for Imperial Concubine Moon, what wounds have you received that are so serious that you still haven’t fully healed after such a long time?”

Blood Moon sighed, “It is unliving poison… it is a rare poison that can kill a Holy Lord and affect a World King! If it weren’t for my subordinate betraying me then I would never have been injured by such a poison. As for the reason it's affected me for so long, it’s because I have to use my true essence to suppress it thus I’m unable to fight it with everything I have.”

“Oh? Unliving poison?” Lin Ming had inherited the memories of three alchemists so he certainly knew about this type of poison.

In this world, poisons of the mortal world were naturally ineffective towards martial artists. But, there were some poisons that could kill high level martial artists!

And these poisons all came from alchemists. Moreover, the materials needed to refine them were all extremely precious heavenly materials.

Alchemists could refine pills that could increase one’s cultivation. There were some transcendent divine pills that World Kings would brutally struggle for, because these transcendent divine pills were far too valuable to a World King.

But with every positive came a negative. If there were pills that had positive effects on World Kings then there were naturally poisons with a negative effect on World Kings.

There were even some cultivation enhancing pills with properties that were too tyrannical, that if taken improperly or by someone with an insufficient cultivation, could cause one’s body to explode and die.

Thus, it wasn’t uncommon to see poisons that could kill high level martial artists!

Unliving poison was one variation of these poisons. This poison was based upon the bile of an ancient desolate flood dragon combined with an unliving snake's venom as well as a variety of rare and precious materials.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. Then, he said, "Although unliving poison is fierce, its properties, according to what I know, shouldn't be able to affect a World King to such a degree…"

"That's right, but this unliving poison was also supported by the divine runic arts from a peak sixth grade divine runic master, so its toxicity far surpasses that of an ordinary version. I've already spent over half a year driving out the poison."

"Divine runic arts!"

Lin Ming traced his chin. He faintly smiled and said, "If it really is the divine runic arts then there will definitely be traces of the Asura Laws left in the poison. And, these traces are something I might be able to unravel. Although I cannot completely undo the poison, I can make the poison lose the support of the Asura Heavenly Dao so it is easier to drive out."

As Lin Ming spoke, Blood Moon's heart moved. She immediately recalled Lin Ming's sensational divine runic arts skill. Not only had he used a single spear strike to break through Empress Naye's Life Seizing Jade Talisman, but he had even broken through Naye's protective divine runic symbols. This was not something that an ordinary person could hope to achieve.

There were even many sixth grade divine runic masters that wouldn't be able to accomplish his!

This part alone made Blood Moon feel that this was all too unbelievable. She didn't know how at such a young age, Lin Ming had been able to find the weakness of a sixth grade Life Seizing Jade Talisman and two protective divine runic symbols. Even if Lin Ming specialized in countering these two types of divine runic symbols he still shouldn't have been able to easily counter the Asura Heavenly Dao traces in the blink of an eye.

There were too many riddles about Lin Ming that Blood Moon couldn't figure out. Even being a True Divinity descendant wasn't adequate to explain Lin Ming.

To be less than 60 years of age and be able to fight a World King, that was incredible!

"Lin Ming… are you really… less than 60 years of age?" Although she felt that this question was impolite, Blood Moon couldn't help but ask.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. He ambiguously said, "I am indeed not that old. The reason I was able to reach my current level is because of some chances. My luck has been quite good."

Although Lin Ming had casually said all of this, Blood Moon found this hard to believe. In the 33 Heavens, there were countless individuals that had good luck. However, even the descendant of a True Divinity Holy Land wouldn't have luck that could reach a tenth of Lin Ming's!

Although Lin Ming hadn't stated his exact age, Blood Moon could faintly confirm that Lin Ming's skeletal age was indeed less than 60 years!

Something suddenly flashed through Blood Moon's mind. She traced her spatial ring, pausing for several breaths of time. Then, she took out a blood red jade slip.

This jade slip was the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace section of the Celestial Tyrant Manual.

"Lin Ming, I owe you a great favor from today. I originally thought that the half-step World King Empress, her eunuchs and maids, including even Eunuch Sun, wouldn't have the ability to stop me. But, I never imagined that the Empress would invite White Sky from Heaven's Net and nearly cause me to suffer an incalculable loss. If it wasn't for your assistance today than I might not have escaped Arid Peace Palace alive. Or, at least without paying a grievously deep price.

"I will always remember this graciousness. I know that you need this so I will lend it to you. You can use it for as long as you want."

As Blood Moon spoke she placed the red jade slip on the table and pushed it towards Lin Ming. Although Blood Moon had been poisoned, she still had life-saving methods. These were her final all-out trump cards and if she were to use them she would have been able to escape White Sky. But, she would need to burn her blood essence to do so and suffer severe damage to her origin energy.

To Blood Moon who had yet to avenge her great hatred, this was a matter she could absolutely not accept. Thus, even if she gave the Celestial Tyrant Manual to Lin Ming, it was well worth it.

Lin Ming's eyes brightened. "The Celestial Tyrant Manual!" The reason he sought out Blood Moon was because of this jade slip and now he had finally obtained it!

Blood Moon said, "I could have lent you this earlier but I originally thought that even if you obtained the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace section of the Celestial Tyrant Manual, you still wouldn't be able to cultivate it and would only be wasting your time in vain. This is the reason I didn't consider your request too much. But, I never expected that you would have actually opened the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and achieved a legendary, heaven-defying realm. I really have no idea how you did it."

Blood Moon was filled with curiosity towards what Lin Ming had experienced in his life but she didn't ask him about it. This was likely something that involved Lin Ming's lucky chance and was his deepest secret.

Lin Ming didn't turn down the offer. He took the Celestial Tyrant Manual in his hands and swept through it with his sense. The method to cultivate the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was truly recorded within here!

Lin Ming had trained in the body transformation technique for many years, and as time passed, he thought more and more that the Celestial Tyrant Manual was an extremely unusual cultivation method.

From the start, Lin Ming thought that the Celestial Tyrant Manual was a transcendent divine might. However, upon further thinking about it, perhaps it wasn't as simple as it seemed.

The body transformation technique was once extremely popular within the Divine Realm and there were countless inheritances of it left behind. After 3.6 billion years, nearly everything had vanished, but there were still body transformation cultivation methods that were left behind like the Chaotic Virtues Combat Meridians. However, none of these cultivation methods were as overbearing and tyrannical as the Celestial Tyrant Manual.

Many body transformation cultivation methods were only suitable for the Heavenly Dao of 3.6 billion years ago. If one practiced them now it would be impossible to cultivate the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

But, the Celestial Tyrant Manual's cultivation method actually involved all sorts of precious pills, and these pills – even in a situation where the body transformation Laws were forbidden – still had a considerable effect. This was extraordinary.

Thus, Lin Ming paid more and more attention to the Celestial Tyrant Manual. The Hundred Layered Waves was an arcane skill that increased one's bodily strength by multiple times. This meant that in the future, when Lin Ming became stronger, the might of this skill would become increasingly terrifying.

Lin Ming received the Celestial Tyrant Manual and said to Blood Moon, "Thank you, Imperial Concubine Moon. I really did need this jade slip. In truth, there were also some questions I've been wanting to ask you but I felt that it was too rude… so I haven't found a way to ask them yet…"

Blood Moon waved her hands, "Sir Lin, please don't be so polite. Ask anything you please."

Lin Ming faintly smiled. “What I wanted to know is… how did you obtain the Celestial Tyrant Manual?”

Chapter 1589 – Blood Moon's Identity

Chapter 1589 – Blood Moon's Identity

…

…

…

Lin Ming had long felt it was strange. A cultivation method manual on the level of the Celestial Tyrant Manual was unique; only a single copy existed. If one wanted to copy it then they would need to practice the Celestial Tyrant Manual to perfection like the creator themselves had.

In this sort of situation, the creator would need to spend many years and a great deal of energy to make a copy.

There were extremely few people able to achieve this point, especially since the Celestial Tyrant Manual was so difficult to cultivate.

If there really was someone capable of making a copy of the Celestial Tyrant Manual then that was likely from some time before 3.6 billion years ago.

For this cultivation method to be found within the Divine Realm as well as by Blood Moon in the Asura Road, and for the two versions to supplement each other, that was far too great a coincidence.

Although Lin Ming had his suspicions, he had only just met Blood Moon and didn't know her at all. Anything that involved the Celestial Tyrant Manual likely involved some secret of hers, thus she wouldn't reveal that to others. It was only now that Lin Ming was slightly closer to Blood Moon that he asked her.

However, Lin Ming didn't think that after he asked this question, Blood Moon would actually seem embarrassed, not too willing to reply.

"Sir Lin… this Celestial Tyrant Manual is something I obtained in a mystic realm and as for the details, they actually concern some of my secrets. Once I speak of them they might become a threat to my personal safety so I cannot tell you… my apologies!"

Blood Moon carefully weighed her words. Even though Lin Ming had helped her she still had to conceal the origins of her cultivation method manual; she couldn't help but feel sorry from her heart.

But Lin Ming was actually quite relaxed about this. He casually said, "If this matter involves your safety then there is no need for you to tell me anything. I am not offended at all."

As Lin Ming said this, a glimmer of remorse shined within Blood Moon's eyes. She said, "This is really difficult to say, but Sir Lin, the truth is that I would like to ask you about the origin of the Celestial Tyrant Manual in your hands. If I'm not wrong, at the time Sir Lin was facing White Sky, when you faced the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, you used a secret technique from the Celestial Tyrant Manual to increase your strength by several times?"

Lin Ming was a bit surprised that Blood Moon recognized the Celestial Tyrant Manual he used. Although it seemed that Blood Moon also practiced the Celestial Tyrant Manual, the Celestial Tyrant Manual in her hands only concerned the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and she hadn't even opened the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates, so how had she done it?

Lin Ming had some faint ideas in his mind. Could it be that…?

He looked deeply at Blood Moon, a brilliant light shining in his eyes.

This brief hesitation caused Blood Moon to think that Lin Ming wasn't willing to reply. She sighed and said, "I know that my question is somewhat excessive, but it's just that the origin of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates section of the Celestial Tyrant Manual in your hands is extremely important to me and involves someone that I have been continuously searching for all this time. To me, that person is as important as my own life. I ask that Sir Lin please tell me. If Sir Lin wishes to know about the Celestial Tyrant Manual in my hands, then I can also explain, but I hope that Sir Lin can take an oath on your heart of martial arts to never reveal it…”

As Blood Moon spoke to here, Lin Ming looked at her, his eyes filled with disbelief.

Could the person Blood Moon was searching for be…

In this world, was there really such a wonderful coincidence?

Seeing Lin Ming in a daze, Blood Moon was a bit worried. The reason she was willing to concede this time was to ask Lin Ming about this matter. But if Lin Ming didn’t want to say anything to her then there was nothing she could do.

“Sir Lin, I will tell you about the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace section of the Celestial Tyrant Manual in my hands. I only hope that you do not leak it to others, otherwise it will create a threat to my life…”

Just as Blood Moon was about to reveal some of her secrets, Lin Ming took a deep breath. With a strange expression he said, “Could… the person you be looking for have the surname Mo…?”

As Lin Ming spoke, Blood Moon jumped up as if she had been shocked, her entire body suddenly freezing. She looked at Lin Ming with eyes filled with disbelief. Then, slowly, the shock in her eyes slowly turned to joy and euphoria!

Her fingers trembled. However, she was aware of what was about to happen, and fear surged in her heart. She was afraid that what she was about to learn was bad news.

Seeing Blood Moon’s response, Lin Ming was able to confirm his own speculations. He sighed. He never thought that he would find the person Miss Mo had requested him to find.

Lin Ming understood that the ‘moon’ word from the codename Blood Moon actually came from her real name – Mo Brightmoon.

And Mo Brightmoon was Mo Eversnow’s younger sister who had been lost for many years. In the past, because Tian Mingzi was hunting them down, Mo Eversnow had offered her soul to the Magic Cube in order to start a storm that killed 10,000 masters of the Divine Realm as well as send her little sister away from the Snowfall Realm. From that day on, Mo Brightmoon’s whereabouts had been unknown.

Lin Ming never imagined that Mo Brightmoon, in order to take revenge, would enter the Asura Road to temper herself and even join Heaven’s Net!

On the edge of life and death, she sharpened her strength so that she would one day have the power to take revenge.

At the same time, she was also searching for news of her older sister.

As for the word ‘blood’ from Blood Moon, it expressed her blood hatred that was as deep as the sea, as well as her domain, the Endlessly Long Night which Mo Brightmoon used. This domain had a phenomenon where a blood moon would hang high in the sky!

For Lin Ming and Blood Moon to meet here today was a tremendous coincidence as well as reasonable truth. This was because Blood Moon had to enter the Asura Road due to Tian Mingzi’s existence in the Divine Realm, just like Lin Ming had entered the Asura Road because of the Good Fortune Saint Son. And after entering the Asura Road, he went searching for clues related to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, and this led him to the Celestial Tyrant Manual and Blood Moon.

These similar choices led to today’s coincidence. It was the existence of the Celestial Tyrant Manual that led the two of them to meet each other.

However, in Lin Ming’s opinion, it was far too difficult for Blood Moon to take revenge. If Tian Mingzi hadn’t lost his hand at the Sky Spill Planet then he might have already entered the half-step Empyrean realm.

As for Mo Brightmoon, after passing through many tribulations and working herself to the bone for all these years, she was only at the early World King realm.

The difference between these two boundaries could be overcome by a peerless genius that ranked in the top several talents of their race. But to geniuses whose level of talent was similar to an Empyrean descendant's, this difference could take tens of thousands or even hundreds of thousands of years to bridge, and even that would be extremely difficult.

And for those with less talent, they would never be able to overcome this boundary.

Tian Mingzi's talent was at the peak Empyrean descendant level. It would be far too difficult for Mo Brightmoon to surpass him!

Seeing Mo Brightmoon waver as if she were caught in a dream, Lin Ming said, "Miss Mo is safe. Because of some reasons, she was unable to come with me, but she is currently training with an Empyrean master. If you wish to see her then after my journey through the Asura Road I can lead you to her. Before this, I had also heard Miss Mo speak about you. Are you the young Saintess of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, Mo Brightmoon?"

As Lin Ming said this, Mo Brightmoon's entire body shivered. She had to grab onto the table to steady herself.

She had searched for 50,000 years, and now she had finally obtained news about her older sister!

"She's safe… she's safe…"

Mo Brightmoon mumbled, repeating Lin Ming's words like a mantra. Tears fell down from her eyes, moistening her veil.

Lin Ming didn't speak. He sat silently on the side. He knew that today's news was extremely impactful to Mo Brightmoon and she would need some time to regain her composure.

After a quarter hour, Mo Brightmoon returned from the great sadness and happiness of hearing news about her family. As she looked towards Lin Ming, her eyes were filled with a deep sense of gratitude.

“Excuse me, but may I ask what Sir Lin and my older sister’s relationship is…” Mo Brightmoon said. As she looked at Lin Ming, her vision towards him was completely different from before. To Mo Brightmoon, finding out clues about her older sister was more important than any favor.

“To me, Miss Mo is both a master and a friend. She helped me walk through the road of martial arts when I first started, and that period of time was the most difficult for me. She taught me many things, and although Miss Mo and I could be called master and apprentice, we are also partners that have fought for life and death together. She has saved my life several times, and I have also saved her. Our relationship could be said to have reached a degree where there is nothing we cannot say to each other and nothing we cannot share with each other. We trust each other as much as we trust ourselves. Normally, I call Miss Mo my senior-apprentice sister, thus in terms of relations, I am her junior-apprentice brother.”

As Lin Ming said these words, Mo Brightmoon mostly believed him. Of course, this was only Lin Ming’s one-sided statement and that wasn’t enough to win over Mo Brightmoon’s complete trust.

Thus, Lin Ming continued to speak. He spoke about Mo Eversnow bringing him to Carefree Island and Immemorial Imperial City. He spoke about obtaining the Ten Severing Dao Fruit Tree and many other treasures. He spoke about meeting Mo Eversnow’s aunty, Mo Riverbliss. He spoke about the chess piece that the Verdant Feather Holy Lands had hidden in Carefree Island. He spoke about all of this in great detail.

After hearing this, Mo Brightmoon completely believed Lin Ming. If Lin Ming didn’t have a completely trustworthy relationship with Mo Eversnow then there was no way she would lead Lin Ming to Carefree Island and entrust him with everything. This was the same as placing all hopes of reviving the Verdant Feather Holy Lands onto Lin Ming.

And in Mo Brightmoon's opinion, Lin Ming was far too amazing. He had the strength and ability to easily accomplish this!

"I never thought that my older sister would be able to find an unrivalled talent like you. This is my older sister's luck as well as the luck of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. You have yet to reach 60 years of age and yet your cultivation is at the early Divine Lord realm and you can even fight an ordinary World King. Your achievements in the divine runic arts are also unbelievable. Moreover, you even cultivated the complete Eight Inner Hidden Gates and broke into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace! I'm really finding it hard to imagine just how you accomplished all of this in less than 60 years of training… no matter how talented you are and how many lucky chances you find, your diligence and hard work must be incomparable!"

In Mo Brightmoon's ear, Lin Ming could be called a hero of the world! Even within a great calamity, an unrivalled talent like Lin Ming might not appear. He was a person that could carry a great calamity on his shoulders. For instance, Empyrean Divine Seal from 3.6 billion years ago might not be any better than Lin Ming.

Of course, all of this was on the premise that Lin Ming could maintain his current level of talent as well as maintain his forwards momentum.

"Big Sister is really fortunate to have your help. With you, rebuilding the Verdant Feather Holy Lands won't be too difficult! Even taking revenge on Tian Mingzi will only be a matter of time!" Speaking of Tian Mingzi, Mo Brightmoon found it hard to remain calm. She really hated Tian Mingzi to the point of gnashing her teeth at the thought of him! Tian Mingzi also came from the Verdant Feather Holy Lands but had betrayed them, overthrowing them and even slaughtering the Mo Family!

This hatred was absolutely irreconcilable!

"That scumbag Tian Mingzi is probably at the peak Great World King realm now. The grudge that my Verdant Feather Holy Lands holds towards him must be considered further; we cannot be impatient about this.

As Mo Brightmoon spoke, a strange color came over Lin Ming’s face. He hesitated for a moment before saying. “Ah… about your enmity against Tian Mingzi, you might not need to worry about that anymore…”

Chapter 1590 – Hard to Believe

Chapter 1590 – Hard to Believe

…

…

…

“Mm? What did you say?” Mo Brightmoon froze for a moment. She didn’t understand what Lin Ming meant. “‘You might not need to worry about that anymore?’”

As Mo Brightmoon spoke, she looked at Lin Ming, puzzled. According to Lin Ming, he and Mo Eversnow were partners that trusted each other with their lives. If Mo Eversnow had an enmity she had to avenge, Lin Ming wouldn’t sit by and do nothing.

Mo Brightmoon looked at Lin Ming, waiting for his explanation.

Lin Ming thought about his words for a moment. Although he felt this was ridiculous to say, Mo Brightmoon should still believe him. But it might take her some time to accept it…

He paused for a while to give Mo Brightmoon enough time to prepare her mind. Then, he slowly said, “Well… the truth is that Tian Mingzi has already died.”

“W-what!?”

Mo Brightmoon shot up, even nearly knocking over the pot of fog rain tea.

“You said… that Tian Mingzi has died!?”

Mo Brightmoon stared at Lin Ming, great waves roiling in her heart!

For all these years, Tian Mingzi was a great mountain that constantly pressed on her. Her joining an assassin organization was all in order to temper herself. Only by passing through endless slaughters and walking upon the thin edge of death would she be able to easily break through to the next boundary.

Mo Brightmoon was well aware that her talent was far inferior to Tian Mingzi's. Not just that but Tian Mingzi was far older than she was. For her to surpass Tian Mingzi would be more difficult than ascending to heaven!

Thus, she had to put forth even greater effort!

And because of Tian Mingzi's existence, Mo Brightmoon had to conceal her identity and never mention anything about her life. Even Eunuch Liang only knew that her nickname was Blood Moon; no one knew her true name.

Hiding her status in an assassin organization like Heaven's Net was even easier.

However, this blood enemy that had pressured so much it left her gasping for breath, her greatest enemy that prevented her from rebuilding the Verdant Feather Holy Lands, her enemy, an existence she never knew when she would be able to contend with, she had been informed by Lin Ming that he had died!

This caused Mo Brightmoon's mind to turn into chaos. She found it hard to respond.

What sort of person was Tian Mingzi? 50,000 years ago he broke through to the World King realm. Moreover, with his talent, he was likely a Great World King now, or even a peak Great World King, someone touching upon the half-step Empyrean realm.

Such people rarely perished within mystic realms. And with Tian Mingzi's sinister and crafty tactics, wanting him to randomly perish would simply be a daydream. So, how did he die?

Was he killed by someone? Who could kill a peak Great World King?

Mo Brightmoon's first reaction was disbelief. But, she felt that Lin Ming was someone who didn't normally boast, but when he did it would surprise others. This sort of person would normally not lie and there was also no benefit for Lin Ming to do so.

"Is… it this thanks to the help of your master?" Mo Brightmoon suddenly realized. If Lin Ming had the help of a peak Empyrean powerhouse then he really could kill Tian Mingzi!

Even if Tian Mingzi was a Great World King who ruled over his own world and even established his own Great World King influence, a peak Empyrean could still kill him and suppress everything that followed with their strength.

If her big sister Mo Eversnow wasn't able to wait and truly hated Tian Mingzi to the bone, then asking Lin Ming's master for help was a high possibility.

"Master…" An awkward expression colored Lin Ming's face. He drank some more fog rain tea and said, "I have had several masters before, but currently, most of them cannot fight me… as for that peak Empyrean master, the truth is that he doesn't exist…"

Lin Ming had indeed apprenticed himself to several masters in the past. There was Divine Phoenix Island's Mu Yuhuang, the Ancient Phoenix Clan's Fairy Feng, Huo Violentstone, and many others. These people were no longer Lin Ming's match.

However, as Lin Ming said this, Mo Brightmoon's face twisted like the tiny runes in a divine runic symbol. She looked at Lin Ming like he was some sort of freak.

Mo Brightmoon didn't respond for a long time. "You… you don't have a master? Did you cultivate to your present level by yourself?"

"Mostly, yes." Lin Ming spread his hands. "I created an Empyrean master in order to provide some protection for myself. My strength is a little limited right now so I feared that there would be some people with dark intentions towards the secrets on my body. With the deterrence of a peak Empyrean master, more people will hesitate before doing anything.

"If I really had to say that I had an Empyrean level master, the truth is that I do; that is Empyrean Primordius. But he has been missing for many years and he has likely perished. As for others, there is also Empyrean Divine Dream who gave me directions once, although she didn't direct me too much."

Lin Ming's words had already left Mo Brightmoon speechless.

If Lin Ming didn't have a true peak Empyrean master, then how had he managed to cultivate to such an abnormal degree!?

"Then… if you don't have a master… Tian Mingzi… how did he die?"

Mo Brightmoon said with some difficulty as she slowly recovered from accepting the fact that there could be a monstrous existence like Lin Ming.

Lin Ming stiffened for a moment. He looked at Mo Brightmoon. Even though he knew she would find this hard to believe, that anyone would find this hard to believe, he still said, "The truth is that… Tian Mingzi was killed by me…"

With this, Mo Brightmoon nearly spat out a mouthful of blood.

"W-what did you say!?"

Was there anything more absurd than this? Lin Ming was a youth with less than 60 years of cultivation and yet he had killed a peak Great World King!!

Even though Mo Brightmoon believed that Lin Ming wasn't someone who liked to boast, she still felt this was far too unbelievable!

Luckily, Lin Ming continued to explain, "I didn't strike down Tian Mingzi all by myself. It was because Tian Mingzi was injured beforehand. To be more exact, I lured him into an absolute death zone and used the killing array within to severely wound him and then kill him at his weakest point."

Although Lin Ming explained the situation, Mo Brightmoon was still shocked in a daze. Luring him into an absolute danger zone to kill him?

Lin Ming had said this all lightly, but how could it be so easy? This sort of danger zone was likely deadly to Lin Ming too, moreover, Mo Brightmoon understood what Tian Mingzi's methods were like. He was a sinister and deceitful figure, so how could he be easy to trick? And how could he be so easily killed by others?

"What… what danger zone was it?" Mo Brightmoon felt as if she had used up her lifetime supply of astonishment. She didn't know how to face this monster in front of her.

"God Burying Ridge."

"God Burying Ridge…" Mo Brightmoon sucked in a breath of cold air. She had definitely heard of this danger zone before.

That was a place where it was said even Great World Kings could perish and only Empyreans could freely enter and leave. Lin Ming had actually used the terrain of the danger zones within God Burying Ridge to kill Tian Mingzi. If he did so then he must have chosen the most dangerous of places within God Burying Ridge, but how could Lin Ming himself leave those places alive?

"If there was a danger zone that could even severely wound Tian Mingzi, then how did you live?" Mo Brightmoon asked, unable to understand what happened.

"That… is a long story. The main reason is that I perfectly passing a trial in the past and obtained some certain information on God Burying Ridge, and when I was forced into Tragic Death Valley by Tian Mingzi, that allowed me to comprehend some things, giving me an understanding of God Burying Ridge's killing arrays."

"You… you entered… Tragic Death Valley?" Mo Brightmoon's jaw nearly fell down. Disbelief colored her face. "You said that you entered Tragic Death Valley? The Tragic Death Valley that no one has managed to return from for 10 billion years?"

Mo Brightmoon knew how horrifying a place Tragic Death Valley was; it was the core of God Burying Ridge. Although Empyreans could freely enter and leave God Burying Ridge, if they were to enter Tragic Death Valley, they still wouldn't be able to return no matter what they tried.

There were some rumors that Empyrean Divine Mist might have entered Tragic Death Valley and was unable to leave. Although these were only legends, it was still enough to demonstrate how terrifying Tragic Death Valley was.

"Uh… there should only be one Tragic Death Valley…" Lin Ming rubbed his nose. Even he felt this was a bit too outrageous. The average person would find this really too hard to accept.

"…"

Mo Brightmoon had long been at a loss for words. When Lin Ming said he had entered Tragic Death Valley and then returned, Mo Brightmoon wasn't shocked at all. Rather, after learning so many surprising new things, she had been left numb.

"You said… you were forced into Tragic Death Valley by Tian Mingzi and then after you left you lured him into a danger zone and kill him instead…?"

Mo Brightmoon mumbled, summarizing what had happened.

"Yes." Lin Ming nodded.

"Tian Mingzi is a cunning and sinister person, so how could he have been tricked by you?" Mo Brightmoon asked.

Lin Ming said, "He thought that he could kill me. Moreover, he had no choice but to kill me. So even though he knew that he was heading into a danger zone, he had no choice but to continue hunting me down. The situation at the time was extremely special…"

Concerning the matter about being chased down by Tian Mingzi, Lin Ming didn't conceal anything from Mo Brightmoon. He explained to her the entire process, including what the circumstances were that Tian Mingzi chased after him as well as his escape route being blocked so he had no choice but to try and kill him.

Lin Ming even explained about Imperial Prince Naqi, half-step Empyrean Ash Murder, and World King powerhouse Mister Zhou, all of those people who had tried to kill him and then ended up dying instead.

As Mo Brightmoon listened to this, her lips twitched. She lifted her teacup and took a big sip as she regained her composure, slowly digesting everything Lin Ming said.

According to what Lin Ming said, when he was still at the Divine Transformation realm he had been chased down by a number of World Kings.

Then, Lin Ming was forced into Tragic Death Valley where he broke through to the Divine Lord realm. After he left, he killed several half-step World Kings, a World King, and a half-step Empyrean. During this time, Lin Ming had used a killing array to play around with all of these people, using all sorts of tricks and schemes to slowly kill them off. During this process, his strength, will, judgment, mentality, foresight, his ability to adapt, everything was indispensable!

After that, Lin Ming was nearly defeated by Tian Mingzi. Even though Tian Mingzi had fought with every trick up his sleeves, forcing Lin Ming into dead end after dead end, Lin Ming still broke through his boundaries and opened the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

Finally, he killed Tian Mingzi!

Like this, everything that tried to kill him had ended up being killed by him.

After thinking about all of the events that happened, Mo Brightmoon calmed down. Her gaze was steady as she looked at Lin Ming, and she thought to herself, “Big Sister, Big Sister… just what kind of monster have you found?”

As Mo Brightmoon spoke, she slowly lifted her veil…

Chapter 1591 - The Treasure of Heaven's Net

Chapter 1591 - The Treasure of Heaven's Net

…

…

…

Now that Tian Mingzi was dead there was no reason for Mo Brightmoon to conceal herself. Moreover, since Lin Ming was the person her older sister had chosen, he was worthy of her complete trust.

Taking off her veil, Mo Brightmoon revealed her gorgeous appearance.

She looked like a young woman, dressed in the tight-fitting corset of the Marvel Blue Nation. This tight corset was short and alluring, serving to perfectly contrast a woman's curves. Mo Brightmoon wore a pomegranate-colored skirt, the deep red as bright as flowers in full bloom. Gauze was draped over her shoulder, giving her an aura of grace.

Mo Brightmoon loved to dance. When she danced wearing these red palace clothes it highlighted her slim waist and slender figure, making her seem filled with endless flavors.

"It's really been a long time… since I've taken off my veil."

Mo Brightmoon sighed. Because of Tian Mingzi she had no choice but to live carefully. She knew that Tian Mingzi was always searching for clues about the Magic Cube's whereabouts, and regardless of her sister or herself, both were objects that Tian Mingzi specifically focused on.

Thus, even within the Asura Road, Mo Brightmoon had concealed her identity and hidden behind her identity as an assassin.

"Miss Brightmoon, I remember that Miss Mo said the Celestial Tyrant Manual in her hands was only a remnant piece that included the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. Just where did the section in your hands come from?"

Lin Ming had long had this question on his mind. If the Verdant Feather Holy Lands' Celestial Tyrant Manual was originally complete and he had the Eight Inner Hidden Gates section while Blood Moon had the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace section, then Lin Ming would have thought that Blood Moon was Mo Brightmoon from the start.

Mo Brightmoon said, "This half of the Celestial Tyrant Manual was found in the same ancient ruins as the Magic Cube. I knew that with my talent it would be incomparably difficult for me to catch up to the older Tian Mingzi, thus I searched everywhere I could for lucky chances.

"When the Verdant Feather Holy Lands was destroyed, I learned the method to enter the ancient ruins of the Magic Cube. I went in with the mindset of risking my life, and when I entered the ruins to seek lucky chances I was at the half-step World King realm and even then I nearly died. But in the end, I didn't obtain anything. My only harvest was this half of the Celestial Tyrant Manual that I couldn't cultivate.

"At the time I thought I had gone there in vain and was left disappointed, but today I rejoice my choice for going there. If it weren't for this half of the Celestial Tyrant Manual then I never would have met you and obtained news about my big sister."

Mo Brightmoon sighed inwardly. She had once journeyed the world to seek lucky chances, and in retrospect, they were soul-stirring memories. Many times, a single misstep and she would have perished.

As for the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace section of the Celestial Tyrant Manual, Mo Brightmoon truly wasn't able to practice it. She wasn't like her older sister who had made dual cultivating body and energy her goal. Instead, she mostly cultivated the essence gathering system and had only dabbled in the body transformation system, not looking into it too thoroughly.

“So it’s like that.” Lin Ming relaxed. “What does Miss Brightmoon plan to do in the future? Would you like to return with me to the Divine Realm?”

“I will definitely go back. In the past when I was asking all around for mystic realms, I didn’t have many lucky chances. But, I did accidently obtain an ancient Asura Command. With this token I was able to enter the Asura Road to adventure and temper myself as well as avoid being hunted down by Tian Mingzi. His presence was simply too terrifying. I feared that if I stayed in the Divine Realm I would eventually be found by him!”

Tian Mingzi’s character was cruel and cunning and he also had the support of the Skydark Holy Lands. If he didn’t hesitate to spend any price to find Mo Brightmoon then it wouldn’t have been strange for him to eventually find her. After all, her cultivation had been extremely low at the time and as she constantly cultivated and constantly searched for lucky chances, she would likely have exposed clues about herself.

As long as Tian Mingzi was able to locate her approximate position then no matter how well Mo Brightmoon concealed herself she still wouldn’t have been able to find the truth from Tian Mingzi’s eyes.

This point was different from Mo Riverbliss. Originally, Tian Mingzi didn’t know that the Verdant Feather Holy Lands had left behind Carefree Island as their emergency contingency. Moreover, Mo Riverbliss was old and her potential was exhausted, so she didn’t need to leave to search for lucky chances and could quietly live in seclusion. As long as she didn’t expose herself then no matter how smart Tian Mingzi was, he still wouldn’t find her.

“So Miss Brightmoon had an Asura Command!”

Before Lin Ming entered the Asura Road, Empyrean Divine Dream had told Lin Ming there were two ways to enter the Asura Road.

One way was to have an Empyrean help and forcefully reform one of the spatial channels that had been destroyed in the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago.

The second way was to obtain an Asura Command.

Asura Commands originated from the Asura Road. Before the great calamity in the Divine Realm 3.6 billion years ago, it was possible to find many Asura Commands wandering about the Divine Realm. If one could find an Asura Command then one didn't need to form a transmission channel and could use the Asura Command to directly enter the Asura Road. Moreover, this Asura Command was one of the items needed to return to the Divine Realm.

Mo Brightmoon had an Asura Command so she could leave and enter the Asura Road as she pleased. Of course, using it required a massive amount of origin energy runes each time, an amount most martial artists couldn't afford to pay.

"Then what does Miss Mo have planned for the near future? Do you plan to stay in the Marvel Blue Nation and help Lord Snow ascend the throne?"

Mo Brightmoon nodded. "When I was being hunted down by high level figures of Heaven's Net, Lord Snow and Eunuch Liang helped me a great deal. On principle alone, I cannot leave like this. I have to return the favor. Even if I cannot help Lord Snow ascend the throne I at least can keep him from being persecuted by Lord Shen."

"Mm..." Lin Ming thought for a moment. It was reasonable for Mo Brightmoon to do this but he didn't plan to involve himself in the imperial struggle.

Lin Ming had already accomplished his goal so he could leave the Marvel Blue Nation whenever he pleased. As for who became emperor, that wasn't related to him at all.

However, Mo Brightmoon was currently wounded so he couldn't leave immediately. He had to stay and protect her for some time until her full World King strength was restored. Once that happened, then even the high level figures of Heaven's Net wouldn't be able to do anything to her.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. "I'm also curious about something else. Why would those from Heaven's Net have such an unending grudge with Miss Brightmoon? And, did that missing big boss really leave behind something with Miss Brightmoon? If there is some secret involved then Miss Brightmoon need not reply. I'm only randomly asking."

Mo Brightmoon gently smiled. “There is nothing that cannot be said. Since you are someone Big Sister trusts I will naturally trust you too. The big boss of Heaven’s Net is also called Heaven’s Net. The name of Heaven’s Net is one that reverberates like thunder in the ears of those in the world of assassins. But, there are actually few people, including myself, who know Heaven’s Net is a woman!”

Listening to Mo Brightmoon’s words, Lin Ming was left secretly stumbled. According to what he knew, Heaven’s Net was one of the top ranked assassin organizations, and its big boss was a woman, a woman with a Great World King cultivation! She was someone who had founded an assassin organization that struck fear in the hearts of others. It was hard to imagine just what life she had experienced. Unless she had an entire book of stories it was impossible for her to arrive at this step.

Mo Brightmoon continued, “The reason I joined the Heaven’s Net assassin organization in the past was because when I was adventuring through a mystic realm in the Asura Road, I happened to accidently save the life of a severely wounded Heaven’s Net, thus she and I became as close as sisters. Heaven’s Net trusted few people and I was one of them.

“Heaven’s Net knew that I had a deep and profound blood enmity with someone, thus before she left she gave me something. She told me that if she didn’t return, then I should leave the Heaven’s Net organization and make good use of this item, find a lucky chance and then return to the Divine Realm to avenge my hatreds.

As Mo Brightmoon spoke to here, Lin Ming was startled. It seemed that he had underestimated the value of whatever it was that Heaven’s Net had left behind. He originally thought that whatever it was that a Great World King left behind, no matter how precious it might be, would not be able to tempt an Empyrean. But listening to what Mo Brightmoon was saying, if this thing was able to give her the opportunity to find a lucky chance that could allow her to kill Tian Mingzi, it must be something far more extraordinary.

Lin Ming said, “Tian Mingzi was already a peak Great World King. The disparity between him and Miss Brightmoon was not small at all. If there was a lucky chance capable of overcoming this difference, then I fear even Empyreans would be tempted.”

Listening to Lin Ming, Mo Brightmoon bitterly smiled and shook her head.

"How could it be so easy? The thing that Heaven's Net left behind represents a lucky chance, and one could even call it the greatest lucky chance of the entire Asura Road! But... it is something I cannot obtain. I am well aware of my own abilities. If I were to use this thing, chances are I would waste it..."

Mo Brightmoon sighed.

The truth was that Mo Brightmoon had an extremely high level of talent. Although she was inferior to the peerless genius that was Mo Eversnow, she was still able to cultivate to the World King realm and even had hopes of becoming a Great World King in the future. This was also the standard of an upper Empyrean descendant.

Most Empyrean descendants would end up as ordinary World Kings. Those that were able to become Great World Kings were outstanding individuals amongst them.

"The great lucky chance in the Asura Road? That would be..."

Lin Ming said, surprised. He could faintly guess just what it was. If it was something that could be called the greatest lucky chance in the Asura Road as well as something that no one could obtain, then there was only one thing that matched!

"Yes, it is the qualifications to enter the final trial."

Mo Brightmoon's words confirmed Lin Ming's speculations.

The young heroic elites of the 33 Heavens would enter the Asura Road, completing all sorts of dangerous missions, venturing into numerous dangerous situations filled with perils, collect complete sets of god runes, and fulfill conditions required by the Asura Road's Heavenly Dao. All of this was to struggle for the qualifications to enter the final trial.

And, the Asura Road's final trial was left behind by the Asura Road Master. Through this smelting trial, one would obtain rewards from the Asura Road's Heavenly Dao.

However, the difficulty of this final trial was above and beyond all imagination. Wanting to complete it was impossibly difficult.

When Lin Ming had asked Soulwhite about the final trial, he had said that in the last 100 million years, there were only two people who had completed the final trial with a score above 80%. One of these was a saint race martial artist and the other was a soul race martial artist; one man, and one woman.

The saint martial artist was Lin Ming's great enemy – the Good Fortune Saint Son Wumo. He had completed the final trial with an 81% score!

As for that spiritas woman, she was even more terrifying. She had completed the final trial with an 83% score!

This was the highest record for the last 100 million years!

Chapter 1592 – Healing Wounds

Chapter 1592 – Healing Wounds

…

…

…

The reason that Lin Ming came to the Asura Road was also to enter the final trial. He wasn't sure just how much of the final trial he could complete.

In completing the final trial, every 5% was a small leap and every 10% was a massive jump.

In the last 100 million years, out of all the innumerable young geniuses that had ventured into the Asura Road from all over the 33 Heavens, including all of the countless martial artists that were native to the Asura Road, when all of these people were added together, only two people had managed to surpass 80% in completion.

Then, there was still 85%, 90%, and even 95%.

Every higher grade meant a massive leap in difficulty!

Lin Ming's advantage, besides his own talent, was that no one could compete with his understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao. By relying on this, he was greatly anticipating the final trial!

However, in order to enter the final trial there was something he had to inevitably do. This was to experience numerous trials within the Asura Road, obtain multiple sets of god runes, and then complete all sorts of other conditions.

And obtaining these god runes and satisfying all the conditions of the Asura Road was not easy at all.

Sometimes these conditions would even change and one would need to search for them.

In addition, some missions required a specific amount of time to complete. For instance, some missions were within mystic realms but these mystic realms only opened every ten years, so one might need to wait ten years for the chance to enter.

And for these mystic realms that had missions, sometimes they were too far away and their entrance location was always changing, so entering them wasn't easy. Even after finding the way in after great difficulty, one could still perish if their strength was lacking.

In short, one needed to invest a massive amount of time and energy to obtain the qualifications for the final trial.

To someone like Lin Ming, although he was strong, his talent was high and completing these missions wasn't too difficult, what he lacked was time!

The great calamity of humanity could erupt at any moment and he also had a duel against the Good Fortune Saint Son that he had sworn to fight within a hundred years. Now, he had to cultivate the essence gathering system as well as prepare to further open the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace; that required him to practice the divine runic arts and alchemy. To him, time was of the essence.

When Mo Brightmoon mentioned the qualifications for the final smelting trial, Lin Ming's thoughts inevitably stirred.

But for a time, Lin Ming didn't open his mouth due to his embarrassment about asking of this matter. Luckily, Mo Brightmoon could see Lin Ming's thoughts. She gently smiled and said, "The final trial qualifications could be said to be for one person, but the truth is that within the Asura Road there is a type of 'collective transmission' god rune. With this god rune, there can be a total of five people who enter the final trial together, forming a squad. Many young elites that enter the final trial form a team to continue onwards. If you wish, then when the true final trial begins I can bring you with me. With you, I'm sure that these final trial qualifications will not be wasted."

Lin Ming was someone that Mo Eversnow had chosen, and the development of his strength was far more important than Mo Brightmoon's strength. Moreover, Mo Brightmoon was well aware that becoming a Great World King was her limit. As for Lin Ming, his future was limitless.

Lin Ming was the most suitable candidate to join these final trial qualifications.

"Then I really must thank you… I really do need these qualifications. Moreover…" Lin Ming's words lingered as he awkwardly turned to Xiao Moxian not too far away. As Lin Ming and Mo Brightmoon were talking, Xiao Moxian had been peacefully sitting near a window, not interrupting them.

For Lin Ming to turn towards Xiao Moxian at this time, he clearly wanted to ask Mo Brightmoon whether or not she could also bring Xiao Moxian along.

Mo Brightmoon chuckled. "I indeed had a candidate in mind, but no matter how good that candidate is they still cannot compare with your dao companion. I must say, I also don't know Miss' name, I'm quite ashamed of myself…"

At the start, Mo Brightmoon didn't place too much importance on Lin Ming, only on the imaginary master that stood behind him. As for the young girl that followed Lin Ming, she had regarded her as Lin Ming's partner and thus didn't pay too much attention to her, not even asking for her name.

Xiao Moxian didn't care too much about it. She clucked her tongue and happily said, "My name is Ji Xian'er, but you can call me Xian'er."

"Ji Xian'er… mm, that's a good name. Then, Xian'er, Lin Ming, I, as well as two others I chose before, will be the five people to attend the final trial. Although it is said that we form a team, the trial will look further into our individual talent the further in we go. So Lin Ming, Xian'er, you two must display your talent to your limits."

“Miss Brightmoon, please rest assured that I will not disappoint you for choosing us for those two spots.” Lin Ming solemnly said. He was sufficiently confident in himself as well as filled with expectations. “Speaking of which, when can we enter the final trial?”

“The final trial occurs every hundred years. Until the next opening of the final trial, there is still 50 years…”

“50 years?”

Lin Min was stunned. This time had exceeded his expectations. He had only lived for 50 some years so far. If another 50 years passed, then he would almost be twice as old.

“You think that’s too long?” Mo Brightmoon said, seeing Lin Ming’s expression. In the Asura Road, young elites came to adventure for a long time. On the shorter end it would be hundreds of years and on the longer end it could be thousands or even 10,000 years. There were even some people that never managed to leave after coming here.

In reality, 50 years wasn’t anything at all.

“I’m good.” Lin Ming quickly composed himself. He could wait for 50 years and there were also many matters he needed to attend to during this period that required a massive amount of time.

For instance, practicing the Celestial Tyrant Manual, collecting the heavenly materials needed to open the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, practicing divine runic arts and alchemy, all of this required him to study them in detail.

Moreover, his cultivation had risen too quickly in Tragic Death Valley. He required some time to digest all of his accumulations and consolidate his own foundation. He had to do this sooner or later otherwise he would encounter bottlenecks when he was trying to rise to the next cultivation boundary.

These 50 years would be an essential part of Lin Ming’s accumulation process.

As for Lin Ming's battle with the Good Fortune Saint Son, he originally had a hundred years of time. If 50 years were deducted he still had plenty of time to return. Although Lin Ming had stayed in Tragic Death Valley for nine years, that was time spent within a time enchantment; the truth was that only a year had passed outside.

"Good, I'll wait 50 years and then go to this final trial!"

Lin Ming decided. In these 50 years he would have to consolidate and accumulate his cultivation in the essence gathering system as well as make another breakthrough in the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

Thus, Lin Ming and Mo Brightmoon shared sound transmission marks and settled on a meeting approximately 50 years from now.

"Miss Brightmoon, I will leave the Marvel Blue Nation soon. This struggle for the throne isn't something I will participate in. Besides White Sky, how many enemies does Miss Brightmoon have? After your recovery, will you be able to handle them yourself?"

The final trial qualifications could be used for a team of five to participate. If it was only White Sky who wanted to enter then he could simply give Mo Brightmoon some advantages and join her team. But, he insisted on taking away the final trial qualifications, proving that he had a partner or had even gathered an entire team of five.

"There are four or five… but as long as I've recovered I'll be fine. I don't fear them at all." Mo Brightmoon had mixed in within the Asura Road and an assassin organization for so many years and had experienced numerous dangers and life or death slaughters. If she couldn't overcome this tribulation then there was no way she could have lived this long.

"Great, then let me assist you in healing your wounds now. I feel that there is more than one type of dao pattern left behind in your body?"

Lin Ming had probed Mo Brightmoon's physical condition with his sense and discovered that within her inner world, several types of Asura Dao patterns had been left behind.

These dao patterns represented the Heavenly Dao Laws of the Asura Road. If one didn't understand the Asura Heavenly Dao, then they would be extremely difficult to expel, no matter how high their cultivation.

"Mm, these are traces from tracking god runes; they aren't the divine runic arts. Can you undo them?"

In the Asura Road, some god runes had special effects. For instance, transmitting teammates, tracking enemies, controlling slaves, and so forth. Many people would use these as supportive arcane skills. When Lin Ming controlled Soulwhite he had also used a controlling god rune.

"I'll give it a try…" Lin Ming said, not giving any absolute assurances. He pointed towards a bed in the room and motioned for Mo Brightmoon to lie down.

The bed was covered with red silks. As Mo Brightmoon lay down on the bed, her long red skirt spread out like a rose in full bloom.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment. Then, he extended his hands and pressed them against Mo Brightmoon's belly.

Mo Brightmoon originally wore a short, tight-fitting bustier that revealed her lower belly. Her skin seemed smooth to the touch, like soft jade.

An essence gathering system martial artist's inner world was located at their lower abdomen; this was also where a person's dantian was.

At this time, Lin Ming's mind was as still as a placid lake, without a single distracting thought. He sunk his divine sense into Mo Brightmoon's inner world, investigating every dao pattern, locking onto their positions, remembering their structure and textures…

Chapter 1593 – Blue Moon Sect

Chapter 1593 – Blue Moon Sect

…

…

…

The god runes of the Asura Road were originally a manifestation of the Asura Heavenly Dao. Lin Ming relied on his comprehension of the Asura Sutra First Volume to slowly change the positions of these Asura Dao patterns.

These dao patterns existed within Mo Brightmoon’s inner world as threads of energy. After a long time passed, these threads of energy would eventually melt away until they vanished altogether.

But now, they couldn’t afford the time and had to clear out these threads as soon as possible.

Lin Ming found a thread of energy and said to Mo Brightmoon, “I’m going to start. This may hurt.”

Every energy thread of dao patterns had sunk into Mo Brightmoon’s flesh and blood. Wanting to pull them out was the same as drawing out an extremely tough string from someone’s body; there would be a considerable amount of pain.

If a mortal had to withstand this pain they would immediately faint.

Martial artists had a far higher pain tolerance than mortals did. But, their bodies were far more solid so pulling out these energy threads was also much more difficult and painful.

As Lin Ming locked onto an energy thread with his own energy and began to pull it out, Mo Brightmoon violently shook. Small bumps began to appear where Lin Ming's hand touched her abdomen.

Lin Ming couldn't help but slow down a little.

"Continue." Mo Brightmoon grit her teeth. Growing up until now, she had experienced many hardships and tribulations. To her, this pain couldn't be considered anything at all.

Lin Ming nodded. He twined a finger around the energy thread and began to pull it outwards.

His actions were extremely gentle. But even so, the pain caused by these Heavenly Dao traces flooded her with pain like an endless tsunami.

Waves of agonizing pain smashed into Mo Brightmoon's spiritual sea. Although she didn't say anything her entire body was soaked with sweat, making her seem even more enchanting.

Lin Ming was completely focused on the task at hand. In a quarter hour, the energy thread that formed a complex Heavenly Dao trace was finally pulled out.

As soon as this energy thread was completely pulled out into the air, it disappeared in a flash of light.

Lin Ming didn't stop here. He began to pull out a second one.

Then, a third and a fourth. After two whole hours of time, Lin Ming had completely cleared out all traces of the Heavenly Dao.

And at this time, Mo Brightmoon's body was dripping sweat, her face was white, and her lips had lost all color. She appeared extremely fragile right now.

Lin Ming let out a long breath of relief. This process had consumed a great deal of energy.

Finally, the Great Dao scars within Mo Brightmoon's body were all eliminated and no one would be able to track down her position again. All that was left over was the unliving poison that still pervaded her body. But with Mo Brightmoon's strength and in a situation where she wasn't restricted by those Great Dao scars, driving out the rest of the poison should only take several more days.

"We're good here. Miss Brightmoon, I will return to my room first. Ten days from now I will leave, and the next time we meet again might be 50 years from now..."

Mo Brightmoon weakly nodded. As she looked into her own inner world, she saw that it was just like Lin Ming had said. The Great Dao scars within her body had all been cleared out by him.

This caused Mo Brightmoon to fall into even greater disbelief. Those scars were something that not even Old Su had been able to do anything about. His only suggestion was for her to wait for years and allow the energy in those scars to slowly fade away until they vanished.

But Lin Ming had only used two hours to clean up all of them. It was far too amazing.

"50 years from now... I'll see you then..."

Mo Brightmoon ruefully smiled. She also planned to leave Heaven's Net. Within Heaven's Net, the only person she was close with was the big boss. But now, she had disappeared, gone to fulfill a wish she had for her entire life and it wasn't known whether she was still alive. With that, there wasn't anything in the whole of Heaven's Net that Mo Brightmoon wasn't too reluctant to part ways with...

....

Ten days later, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian left the Marvel Blue Nation. In these ten days, Lord Snow had heard news of what had happened and repeatedly visited Lin Ming to form relations with him. However, Lin Ming refused him every time. Lin Ming didn't need to be a genius to know just what Lord Snow wanted, and that was for Lin Ming to assist him in ascending the throne.

But Lin Ming wasn't interested in involving himself in the struggles and strife of the imperial palace, thus he directly and simply refused all attempts to pull him in.

Lord Snow was also helpless in this matter. He had no choice but to give up.

In these ten days, Lin Ming had carefully crafted his plan for the next 50 years.

Besides consolidating his foundation and accumulating his cultivation, he decided to make the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace his main cultivation focus.

And in order to open the second Dao Palace of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, he had to refine an extremely rare and precious pill of the Celestial Tyrant Manual – the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill.

This type of pill required many rare and precious heavenly materials. Moreover, there were extremely strict standards required of the alchemist who was refining it. This was something that was impossible to buy and could even be called an utterly priceless medicine with no market price.

In order to refine this pill, Lin Ming would have to begin by collecting all the materials and then refining it himself.

Without a doubt, this would consume a disgusting amount of time and energy.

But no matter how much time Lin Ming had to spend he would still complete it. To him, the body transformation technique was in no way less important to him than the essence gathering system.

So, Lin Ming returned to Divine Rune City and with his status as a member of the Divine Runic Masters Guild, he used the highest 15% discount to buy up a pile of materials as large as a mountain.

The total price of these materials could leave one panic-stricken; Lin Ming spent just over 200 nine sun jades!

In the past, Lin Ming had inherited a massive amount of wealth within Primordius Heavenly Palace. But after being chased down by Tian Mingzi in the Asura Road and also freely spending so much money in Divine Rune City, Lin Ming's wealth had shrunk down to a precipitous state. He had less than 50 nine sun jades remaining.

Lin Ming couldn't help but forcefully smile. No matter how rich he was, he still couldn't continue spending money like he was dumping water without having any income at all.

As for practicing alchemy and the divine runic arts, Lin Ming didn't plan to do so in the Divine Runic Masters Guild. This was because Lin Ming didn't need a master and could practice by himself.

Compared to the bustling Divine Rune City that had countless transactions happening within its borders every day, Lin Ming preferred a calmer, more peaceful place.

Only this type of place best suited Lin Ming's mindset to practice the divine runic arts and alchemy, as well as hone his cultivation and stabilize his foundation in preparation for the future when he was finally ready to break into the Holy Lord realm.

Thus after buying all the materials he needed, Lin Ming rode Primordius Heavenly Palace, which was camouflaged as a spirit ship, and flew away from Divine Rune City.

He flew for half a month.

The Asura Road was a universe that coexisted with the 33 Heavens. In terms of actual area it wasn't as large as one of the 33 Heavens, but a great world of the Divine Realm still couldn't compare to it in size.

As Primordius Heavenly Palace flew for half a month, Lin Ming saw countless countries and countless lives.

Within the Asura Road, races from all over the 33 Heavens could be found. There were also many people that were of mixed blood. There were more people than there were grains of sand in a desert. In order to count them, one would have to use trillions as the lowest base unit.

With so many lives, there were also innumerable sects.

The Blue Moon Sect was one of the innumerable large and small sects located within the inner Asura Road. It was an extremely common sect.

If one judged the Blue Moon Sect by the standards of the Divine Realm then it would only be a seventh grade sect. The supreme rulers of the sect were the Sect Master and the Highest Elder; both of them were at the Divine Lord realm and only the two of them were Divine Lords. Everyone else was below the Divine Lord realm.

Of these two people, the Highest Elder was 80,000 years old and at the middle Divine Lord realm. The Sect Master was 50,000 years old and at the early Divine Lord realm.

To Divine Lord realm powerhouses that lived less than 100,000 years, 50,000 years could be called middle-aged and 80,000 years could be called an extremely old age, nearing the point of death.

On this day, an extremely handsome young man and beautiful young woman came to the Blue Moon Sect, wanting to join. As for that young man, he claimed to be a low level divine runic master and alchemist.

Both of them were extremely young but their talent was outstanding. Even though they were only several dozen years old, they had already cultivated to the late Divine Sea realm.

To the Blue Moon Sect, these were two extremely wonderful seedlings. In the future they would reach the Divine Transformation realm and even have a chance of cultivating to the Divine Lord realm.

Thus, the Elders of the Blue Moon Sect personally welcomed these two people. After investigating their background, they were placed as inner court disciples.

The numerous Elders were highly satisfied with these two people's talent. As for the young man being a low level divine runic master and alchemist, they didn't care about this too much. They were only a small sect, so wanting to raise a divine runic high master was far beyond their league.

If a martial artist wanted to become a truly valuable divine runic master they needed to spend a massive amount of rare and precious materials. This was not something that the Blue Moon Sect could withstand. The two strongest martial artists in the Blue Moon Sect were merely Divine Lord powerhouses, so how much wealth could they have?

Like this, the young man and woman settled down in the Blue Moon Sect.

These two people were naturally Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian.

After Lin Ming finished his final considerations and plans, he chose this small sect to spend the first 20-30 years. This was a purer place with a simpler atmosphere.

He could live in peace here and practice his alchemy and divine runic arts while furthering his own cultivation.

As for Xiao Moxian, she certainly decided to join Lin Ming. During her nine years in Tragic Death Valley, her cultivation had risen far too fast. She needed time to consolidate it.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian suppressed their cultivation to the late Divine Sea realm. Of course, deceiving the people of the Blue Moon Sect wasn't a problem at all.

Lin Ming didn't do as many other disciples did when they joined the sect and started cultivating. Rather, after he moved in, he remodeled his own dwelling area so that there was a divine runic arts room and an alchemy room.

Higher level divine runic masters often constructed divine runic arts rooms that cost an astronomical price. As for Lin Ming, his room was far more normal and basic; he simply needed to make do.

As a sect Elder saw this situation and discovered that Lin Ming was indeed planning to practice the divine runic arts and alchemy, he immediately came to persuade Lin Ming to change his mind. He didn’t want Lin Ming to delay his cultivation for too long because of the divine runic arts and go astray, wasting away his own talent and time.

But Lin Ming only smiled, clearly unconvinced.

One’s road of cultivation all depended on the individual; no one else could change their mind. If Lin Ming wished to take one path there was nothing the Elders could do. They could only allow Lin Ming to do as he pleased.

Thus, within the Blue Moon Sect, Lin Ming began his peaceful days of seclusion.

Every day he would thoroughly study the divine runic arts and alchemy. At night, he would meditate in his room, sometimes accumulating his cultivation, sometimes practicing Heavenly Extreme Bliss with Xiao Moxian. As the days passed, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian’s strength slowly consolidated.

Chapter 1594 – Quiet Training

Chapter 1594 – Quiet Training

…

…

…

News of Lin Ming establishing his own divine runic arts room and an alchemy room soon spread throughout the entire Blue Moon Sect.

This was extremely fresh and novel news. In the Asura Road, alchemists were not rare, but the occupation of divine runic master was considered a noble career throughout the entire Asura Road. Divine runic masters would only gather in peak great influences as well as large cities devoted to the divine runic arts like Divine Rune City.

But to the Blue Moon Sect, these peak great influences were simply legends amongst legends; it was impossible for them to ever come into contact with them. As for Divine Rune City, only the most amazing elites of the Blue Moon Sect were able to enter; ordinary disciples wouldn't even be able to step past the city gates.

Thus, the occupation of divine runic master was something that the disciples of the Blue Moon Sect had only heard of but had never seen before. As they suddenly heard that a divine runic master had appeared in their sect, all of them ran over to Lin Ming's residence to take a look and see just what a divine runic master looked like and what type of work they did.

However, this disciple called Lin Ming didn't seem willing to communicate with others. When the average person entered his residence he would actually remain in his alchemy room or divine runic arts room, tinkering with something, without any intention of coming out to greet guests.

Even if he wasn't refining pills or practicing divine runic arts, he would often be quietly meditating in his room. Or, he would sometimes be holding a blood red jade slip. This jade slip was extremely strange. It was far larger than an ordinary jade slip and had a very heavy and solemn appearance to it. It was unknown just what was recorded within it.

This youth called Lin Ming would look at this jade slip every day. His straight eyebrows often rose up and wrinkled like he was puzzled. But sometimes he would have an extremely happy appearance as if he was suddenly enlightened.

These actions left his visiting guests feeling awkward and embarrassed. Others asked Lin Ming how he had come into contact with the divine runic arts, what his divine runic arts level was, or whether he had a true divine runic arts master as his teacher. But, Lin Ming either remained silent or immersed in his blood red jade slip, without seeming as if he heard anything at all. This caused those disciples that were extremely interested in the divine runic arts to feel snubbed, as if they were making themselves unwelcome.

There were many female disciples within the Blue Moon Sect. Many of these young girls were well known for their beauty within several hundred thousand or even millions of miles. However, no matter how outstanding their appearance or how amazing their talent was, they were all denied by Lin Ming.

Slowly, no one came to visit Lin Ming anymore.

And Lin Ming also began his quiet days of training.

After practicing martial arts for so many years, Lin Ming had never been like he was today, truly settling down his mind and heart, not needing to think about matters or worrying every day. Instead, he calmly and peacefully trained.

With Xiao Moxian, they were like an ordinary mortal couple. Every day was filled with ease and enjoyment.

Here there were no battles, no dangers, no mystic realms that he had to risk his life in, and no people with dark intentions that coveted his treasures.

Life and death dangers and slaughter battles were undoubtedly helpful for making breakthroughs in cultivation.

But to practice the divine runic arts and accumulate cultivation, a peaceful environment was much more suitable. Many heroic young elites often spent several thousand years or even over 10,000 years to break into the Divine Lord realm.

Of these thousands upon thousands of years, only a minor period of time would be spent searching for lucky chances and adventuring through dangers. Most of the time would be spent tempering one's state of mind and accumulating one's cultivation and consolidating one's foundation. This was the life Lin Ming was living now.

Although his cultivation progressed extremely slowly during this time, this was an essential process of walking down the road of martial arts. All martial artists had to experience it and Lin Ming was no exception.

Spring became autumn and then back again. In the blink of an eye, a year had passed.

If Lin Ming wasn't practicing the divine runic arts or alchemy, he could be found with that blood red jade slip in his hands.

This jade slip was the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace section of the Celestial Tyrant Manual.

As Lin Ming was reading through this jade slip he didn't conceal anything. This was because no one would be able to recognize anything about this jade slip to begin with.

After diligently meditating for a year, Lin Ming gradually found clues about refining the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill.

Of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, the second Dao Palace corresponded to the Ravenous Wolf Star.

The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, seven bright and two dark. They were – Ravenous Wolf, Titan Gate, Cherished Kismet, Merciful Song, Ardent Virtue, Martial Song, Army Breaker, Left Aide, and Right Support.

The first Dao Palace that Lin Ming opened was the Purple Temple Dao Palace, corresponding to the Army Breaker Star.

The function of the Purple Temple Dao Palace was to gather the power of the nine stars and massively increase the strength of Lin Ming's astral essence. This sort of increase could enhance Lin Ming's bodily strength by three or four times to eight or nine times. All of this depended on a martial artist's own foundation and the degree to which they had opened the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

As for the second Dao Palace, that was named Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace, and corresponded to the Ravenous Wolf Star.

Lin Ming revolved his astral essence every day according to the Celestial Tyrant Manual. In addition to dual cultivating with Xiao Moxian, Lin Ming estimated that in another 20-30 years, he would finally reach the level where he could attempt to break into the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace.

And in these 20-30 years, Lin Ming had to bring his divine runic arts and alchemy up to the level where he could refine the Ravenous Wolf Heavenly Pill.

Otherwise, if he spent an unimaginable amount of wealth and time to collect the materials for the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill but failed in refining it, that would truly be a hopelessness beyond crying.

Although there seemed to be plenty of time with the opening of the final trial being 50 years from now, the truth was that time was of the essence. There were far too many matters for Lin Ming to process.

Like this, a few more years passed. Lin Ming continuously practiced alchemy and the divine runic arts. The massive amount of materials he had purchased from Divine Rune City was slowly used up.

His skill in the divine runic arts and alchemy also steadily increased.

During this time, Lin Ming refined a mind-boggling amount of low level pills and divine runic symbols.

Lin Ming's soul force far surpassed that of others at his level. In addition to his understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao, whether it was refining pills or drawing up divine runic symbols, he was much faster than the average person would be.

However, even though Lin Ming had inherited the memories of three alchemists and divine runic masters, this didn't mean his alchemy technique and divine runic arts technique was flawless.

On this day, as Lin Ming was halfway through refining a furnace full of pills, there was a massive bang as the entire pill furnace exploded.

Even though Lin Ming reacted extremely fast, half the room still collapsed. The carefully arranged alchemy room was also left in an utter mess.

As a Divine Transformation outer court Elder of the Blue Moon Sect heard this news, he quickly went to personally check it out.

He inspected Lin Ming's body. Then, after making sure that Lin Ming was uninjured he gave him several words of advice. In short, he hinted that Lin Ming need not worry about such useless things and only needed to practice martial arts; that was the true, orthodox path.

In the eyes of these numerous Elders, experimenting with alchemy and divine runic arts was simply a wasteful occupation where one idled their time away. This was because with Lin Ming's current conditions it would be impossible for him to make any progress.

Moreover, the divine runic arts had too high a requirement on a martial artist's talent. Almost only spiritas martial artists were able to be divine runic masters. For a human martial artist to become a divine runic master, that was far, far, far too difficult.

To put it rudely, it was the dreams of a fool.

But Lin Ming didn't heed the advice of the Elder and the Elder couldn't force him. After all, if Lin Ming joined the Blue Moon Sect, he could also leave.

If they wanted to retain the mind and hearts of people, they needed to give them more freedom.

The Blue Moon Sect Elder sent a low level disciple to clean up the room. Soon, three outer court disciples came to Lin Ming's residence to clean his room.

These outer court disciples were in their teens and their cultivation was at the Pulse Condensation realm. They had just joined the Blue Moon Sect and had been chosen from the mortal world.

In the Blue Moon Sect, their status was low. Although they were called outer court disciples, the truth was that they weren't much different from maids.

Lin Ming glanced at these three female disciples. All of them looked naïve and adorable, like lovely young girls.

Lin Ming also knew that although these young girl disciples seemed to be living through many hardships, the truth was that their families were proud to have daughters who managed to pass the standards to join a large martial arts sect. The family and friends of these young girls were filled with pride and joy, and even the royalty of the mortal world had to show courtesy to their parents.

This was the deterrence brought about by a martial arts sect!

However, the road of martial arts was well known as being extremely rough and filled with bumps. Although the families of these young girls were living bright and glorious lives, who knew what would happen to their daughters in the end? Perhaps they might be abducted by others to become living furnaces, or perhaps after a little bit of success they would perish in a mystic realm, or perhaps they might even be murdered for their possessions…

Thinking of this, Lin Ming lightly sighed. In the past when he first stepped onto the road of martial arts, he also suffered many difficulties.

Seeing the three young girls giving their best to clean up the room, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He waved his hand, beckoning them over.

These young girls froze. Lin Ming was a core disciple and his cultivation had reached the late Divine Sea realm. To them, he was an impossibly lofty character. Their difference in status couldn't even be described as clouds and mud.

Moreover, Lin Ming's manner was indifferent, and even when inner court disciples came to visit he still didn't respond to them. Even those amazingly talented and beautiful senior-apprentice sisters had to eat closed doors when they tried to approach Lin Ming.

But Lin Ming was actually calling them over. This made them all feel extremely flustered and flattered.

They stepped over, a bit shy, a bit nervous. Lin Ming took out some bottles. The contents of these bottles were some of the pills that Lin Ming had refined over the past few years.

As Lin Ming was practicing the divine runic arts and alchemy he had produced far too many pills and divine runic symbols. To Lin Ming, these things didn't have any value at all. They weren't even worth his time or effort selling them.

However, throwing them away was also a pity. Thus, Lin Ming suddenly had the idea to give these things to others.

This was also for the benefit of the Blue Moon Sect.

After all, for these past years the Blue Moon Sect had treated him considerably well. After determining that Lin Ming's background had no problems, the Elders of the Blue Moon Sect would send someone over to deliver pills, origin energy runes, and other such resources. To the Blue Moon Sect that could be called poor, these things were worth a good amount of wealth.

These things were for the benefit of the inner court disciples. And because Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had extremely high levels of talent, the benefits they received were higher than others'. But, Lin Ming also knew that he would have to eventually leave the Blue Moon Sect. If the Blue Moon Sect was depending on him to break through to the Divine Lord realm and become a pillar of the sect, they would be disappointed.

Thus, Lin Ming decided to give away all of these pills and divine runic symbols that didn't have much value to him to the disciples of the Blue Moon Sect.

The Blue Moon Sect was a small sect to begin with and he didn't fear arousing suspicions or causing waves by bringing out these items.

It wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that Lin Ming could raze a sect of this level to the ground with a single hand.

"These are for you." Lin Ming placed the bottles of pills in a jade box and passed it to the three Pulse Condensation realm outer court disciples. These disciples were lost in a daze, not sure what was in the jade box.

And at this time, Lin Ming said, "Go and call your sisters here as well as the male disciples you know. Call all of them here together."

Chapter 1595 – Middle Divine Lord Realm

Chapter 1595 – Middle Divine Lord Realm

…

…

…

The young female disciples received the jade box. From the slits of the jade box, a rich medicinal fragrance wafted out.

Just by smelling this medicinal fragrance they felt their bodies relax as comfort swept over them. The true essence circulating within their bodies quickened and their cultivation sharpened by several degrees.

If just smelling this medicinal fragrance had such an effect, then eating a pill directly would have an unimaginable benefit.

The oldest of the three young girls gulped. Her hands trembled as she opened the medicine bottle and several green pills rolled out.

These pills were crystalline and sparkled with a clear light. On the surface of the pills were strange lines, faintly hinting at the aura of mysterious Laws.

These lines that were carved onto the pills were pill symbols. The young girls had never seen these pill symbols before; they couldn't even recognize the names of most of these pills.

However, Lin Ming had given them several types of pills, and the young girls were able to recognize one of them.

This pill was called a Nine Yang Pill and was used by martial artists at the Xiantian realm or below. It was used to consolidate one's foundation and nourish one's blood vitality. Each Nine Yang Pill was several dozen times more precious than a single Heaven Opening Pill!

The young girls had once seen the sect provide these pills for talented disciples and had nearly been blinded by awe and greed. Of course, they didn't have the qualifications to use them.

These Nine Yang Pills that Lin Ming refined were different from the Nine Yang Pills they had seen before. These Nine Yang Pills had strange patterns on the surface, and seemingly because of these patterns, the effects of these pills were far better!

These young girls didn't know that these 'pill patterns' were in fact traces of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws left behind after Lin Ming reinforced them with the divine runic arts.

To Lin Ming these were useless items, but if placed within the Blue Moon Sect, these were treasures even to inner court disciples. These young girls were only outer court disciples, moreover, the effects of these pills were enhanced several times by the divine runic symbols drawn onto them.

In these years, the direction of divine runic arts that Lin Ming practiced had mainly focused on medicinal runic symbols.

Only these types of divine runic symbols had an effect on pills and thus were the most useful to Lin Ming.

"These medicines… are too precious… we cannot accept them…"

The oldest girl, one that looked around 18-19 years old, grit her teeth as she spoke. The truth was that one could see from her expression that she really wanted these pills.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. He had a much more favorable impression of this girl. It wasn't easy to gather the courage to reject such things.

During these years, Lin Ming had watched the low level disciples of the Blue Moon Sect go into seclusion, journey out to adventure, rush about for resources, and do all sorts of other things. This made him recall his experiences when he was also in his teens.

He lightly smiled, saying, “If I give them to you then take them. Or, are you afraid that the higher level disciples will steal them from you?”

Lin Ming was well aware that even though the Blue Moon Sect seemed like a calm and comfortable place, there were still inevitably inner struggles. These three young girls had ordinary levels of talent and there would naturally be people jealous of these pills.

“For the things I give, I will naturally ensure justice is served. You can feel at ease in taking these pills.”

The two younger girls swallowed a gulp of saliva. Their hands shook as they held the pill bottles.

“Call those you know here.”

Lin Ming sent out the young girls. Several quarter hours later, there were really several outer court disciples that arrived.

These disciples were in their late teens or early twenties. None of them had a cultivation that surpassed the Xiantian realm. They had just started walking on their own roads of martial arts.

For these last four or five years, every other day Lin Ming would refine a furnace full of pills. When he refined less there would be seven or eight, and when he refined many there would be over a dozen. After accumulating pills for all these years, he had already gathered over 10,000 of them.

And, these 10,000 plus pills were all supported with divine runic symbols.

Placed within the Blue Moon Sect, this was an unimaginable level of wealth.

News of Lin Ming wantonly giving out pills soon spread to the entire Blue Moon Sect.

Many outer court disciple and inner court disciples only thought these were rumors, but after seeing the pills that Lin Ming passed out they had no choice but to believe this. Thus, disciples began to visit Lin Ming like droves of ducks. This was because his pills were far too tempting to them.

However, to the inner court disciples, Lin Ming didn't give pills freely. Instead he had them gather some violet sun crystals.

The price in violet sun crystals was only half or a third of the true value of the pills. This sort of price was already extremely favorable. Many inner court disciples didn't have a place to purchase pills and these pills were far too difficult to buy to begin with.

Originally, Lin Ming wasn't too popular. This was because he was far too eccentric and withdrawn, ignoring all visitors that came to see him.

But now, because Lin Ming was passing out pills, this caused his reputation to rise to unprecedented degrees within the Blue Moon Sect.

"Where did these pills come from? Did you refine them?"

The Elders of the Blue Moon Sect were startled. Several of them came over to Lin Ming's residence to ask him.

"I obtained them through a variety of channels and some are refined by me." Lin Ming shrugged.

This vague answer clearly indicated that he didn't wish to speak more about the matter.

The Blue Moon Sect Elders were at a loss of what to do. In truth, it was completely reasonable for Lin Ming to refine these low level pills. According to common logic, these pills could be refined by a late Divine Sea alchemist.

But the low level pills that Lin Ming refined were far too great! Not even the nearby famous alchemists were able to refine pills of similar quality.

Had Lin Ming done all this by studying alone? Was he actually a rare prodigy of alchemy and the divine runic arts?

The Elders looked at each other. They didn't have any plans of pressing Lin Ming to reveal the origin of the pills. However, on the second day, the Elders invited a family famous for constructing cave dwellings to the Blue Moon Sect, where they constructed an expensive divine runic arts room and alchemy room for Lin Ming.

The Blue Moon Sect even helped Lin Ming by buying a great deal of alchemy materials for him.

This was all welcomed by Lin Ming. Although these were all low level materials, they were more than enough for Lin Ming to practice his technique.

Time slowly passed. The seasons came and went, from spring to fall and back again.

Lin Ming's skill in the divine runic arts and alchemy reached an increasingly high degree of proficiency.

Now, what he pursued was not just quality in alchemy and divine runic arts, but speed.

At the start, Lin Ming would refine a furnace of pills every two days. Now he would refine two furnaces of pills every single day.

A massive amount of low level pills was constantly produced by Lin Ming.

Although Lin Ming was only giving away some of the inferior medicines he had refined, the quality of these medicines became increasingly high.

Gradually, Lin Ming's reputation soared to the heavens!

More and more disciples came to purchase pills from Lin Ming. There were even some nearby sects that would come to the Blue Moon sect to purchase pills. Of course, the price this time would rise to the market standard.

Although the price of the pills was increasing, more and more people flocked to buy them.

At this time, no one suspected Lin Ming of obtaining pills from ‘various channels’ any longer. If so many pills were being sold and given out, then the only possibility was that Lin Ming refined them himself.

The Blue Moon Sect realized they had picked up a treasure!

The income from selling pills went into Lin Ming’s hands. Then, he handed this money over to the Blue Moon Sect to have them seek out different materials.

The materials Lin Ming wanted were of an increasingly high grade. The pills he refined also became increasingly refined.

Of course, Lin Ming would not bring out pills that true Divine Lord or Holy Lord realm martial artists could use, in order to prevent some martial artists having dark thoughts. Lin Ming wasn’t scared of them, but if they were to bother him it would be impossible for him to peacefully and calmly meditate here.

Slowly, 12 years passed.

The cultivation that Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian revealed was risen to the Divine Transformation realm.

In the Blue Moon Sect, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian experienced the toil of daily life. Every now and then they would join the disciples of the Blue Moon Sect to go out adventuring.

For instance, exploring mystic realms, finishing missions, and so forth.

By watching the slaughter and struggles of low level martial artists, he actually found a strange feeling that he had almost forgotten. This odd feeling strangely touched Lin Ming's heart.

And in the 13th year, as Lin Ming was calmly meditating one day he finally felt something stir within his inner world. He knew that his cultivation was about to make a breakthrough!

From the early Divine Lord realm to the middle Divine Lord realm!

This breakthrough didn't come suddenly at all. It could be called a simple matter of course. This was like filling a cup with wine, filling it so much that it naturally overflowed.

And the scene of this breakthrough was extremely peaceful.

In the past when Lin Ming made breakthroughs, they tended to shake the heavens and earth or be extremely thrilling, sometimes almost breaking apart his inner world.

But, this breakthrough was tranquil, like a quiet spring day.

Lin Ming only sat in meditation for the night and on the next day as he opened his eyes, his inner world had developed once more and his cultivation rose to the middle Divine Lord realm.

Besides the sensitive Xiao Moxian feeling the change of atmosphere in the room, not even tiny animals in the surrounding area were alarmed.

After five months Xiao Moxian also broke into the middle Divine Lord realm. She only cultivated the essence gathering system and her cultivation speed had been faster than Lin Ming's. If it wasn't for Lin Ming obtaining greater advantages during all the lucky chances they experienced, then perhaps Lin Ming's essence gathering system cultivation might have fallen behind Xiao Moxian's.

After making a breakthrough, Lin Ming's strength rose once more. As for the level of Lin Ming's divine runic arts, it arrived at the standard of a peak fifth grade divine runic master.

Moreover, even amongst ordinary fifth grade divine runic masters, Lin Ming had a special advantage; that was that no one could compare to his understandings of the Asura Heavenly Dao.

And at this time, Lin Ming finally began his preparations to refine the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill. In refining the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill, just collecting the required materials would take a tremendous amount of time. He had no choice but to prepare as early as possible. Just by breaking into the middle Divine Lord realm, Lin Ming's strength hadn't risen by too much. If he were able to open another Dao Palace then he would be much more confident in entering the final trial.

Chapter 1596 – Nirvana of the Mind

Chapter 1596 – Nirvana of the Mind

…

…

…

"Lin Ming, are you planning to start refining the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill?" Xiao Moxian asked from the side. She watched as Lin Ming looked through the Celestial Tyrant Manual for the last several days, seeming to be calculating something.

"It's good to make preparations early. Although this Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill isn't a transcendent divine pill, the difficulty of creating it actually is no less than one. And in terms of how precious the materials are, it surpasses a transcendent divine pill. This could be called a test on my skill and wealth…"

As Lin Ming spoke to here he ruefully smiled. In terms of cultivation level it was definitely impossible for him to refine a transcendent divine pill.

Within the Divine Realm, a transcendent divine pill was the highest grade of pill possible.

A good portion of transcendent divine pills came from the hands of Empyreans.

But, Empyreans were limited in number to begin with and most Empyreans were not skilled alchemists. Although their cultivation was high, they might not be able to match up to half-step Empyreans and Great World Kings who specialized in alchemy when it came to their level of skill.

Thus, a good part of the transcendent divine pills were also refined by half-step Empyreans and peak Great World Kings.

In refining a transcendent divine pill, one needed not just sufficient skill in alchemy but also a minimum cultivation base. If one's cultivation was lacking then they wouldn't be able to continue through the entire alchemy process. Just achieving a certain temperature of fire would be impossible.

Lin Ming's current strength couldn't compare to that of a peak Great World King, so refining a transcendent divine pill was impossible for him.

However, Lin Ming had the support of the divine runic arts and the Asura Heavenly Dao. He could refine a top pill at the peak level of an ordinary World King and then use the divine runic arts to forcefully increase its grade to the standard of a transcendent divine pill.

This was also Lin Ming's greatest goal in studying the divine runic arts: to use the Asura Heavenly Dao to change the rules and find a shortcut.

"After a dozen more years or so my alchemy skill should be able to stand on par with the alchemists I have absorbed and even rise to the level of a top ordinary World King. At that time, I should be able to refine the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill..."

Lin Ming pondered. Currently, his strength could be considered quite good amongst ordinary World Kings. In another six or seven years, he should be able to reach the level of sex fiend Torchriver's alchemy skill. Lin Ming had confidence in himself in this aspect, and moreover when it came to the divine runic arts, it was possible he could surpass Torchriver due to his thorough understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao.

It was only the materials needed for the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill that were giving Lin Ming a headache. There were all sorts of rare and precious heavenly materials and most of them couldn't be bought, so how would he go about collecting them?

Lin Ming jotted down the materials he needed in a list.

Of them, the most precious were – dragon saliva grass, heaven devouring snake gallbladder, jade dragon's horn, primal jade quintessence...

Many of these materials were connected to God Beasts!

Speaking of just dragon saliva grass, that was divine grass that was watered and raised with the saliva of a True Dragon!

There were said to be True Dragons and ancient pythons that would wait for a heavenly material to grow, watering it with their saliva the entire time. They would wait for 10,000 years, 100,000 years, until that heavenly material matured and then they would eat it to increase their own strength.

This sort of heavenly material was priceless and the key problem was that there was almost no market for them. This was because these heavenly materials were often eaten by their guardian beasts after they matured, so how could anyone obtain them?

As for a heaven devouring snake gallbladder, that was the gallbladder from a heaven devouring eight path python. Although this type of ancient desolate beast was far from being as strong as a God Beast, in the entire Asura Road there was only a single place to obtain them, and that was deep within the Great Desolate.

And there was no need to mention the dangers within the Great Desolate. That was a land where even Empyreans had to be cautious.

The jade dragon's horn was the bone of a True Dragon. Its grade was far beyond the supreme dragon bone that Lin Ming had absorbed in the past, the only exception being that it didn't need to be as large.

All of the materials left Lin Ming with a ringing migraine. If he tried to gather them himself it would be absolutely impossible to collect them all. For instance, that dragon saliva grass was something that could only be discovered through a stroke of fate.

If Lin Ming wanted to obtain these materials his only choice was to buy them.

And to buy these things, even if he had a massive amount of wealth he still might not be able to find a place to purchase them. Not just that but he wasn't even wealthy to begin with!

This left Lin Ming in a dilemma.

The road of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was simply far too expensive. Although it seemed exaggerated that Lin Ming could jump ranks to fight like he could, this sort of monstrous strength was created with the consumption of countless heavenly materials. Every time Lin Ming took a single step forwards in the body transformation technique he had to consume resources dozens of times that of an essence gathering system martial artist, or even hundreds of times.

Time passed, the years leaving no mark.

Without noticing it, another 12 years passed. Lin Ming had stayed in this small and unknown sect for a full 25 years.

In these 25 years, Lin Ming seemed to have once again tasted the difficulties and hardships of low level martial artists as they tried to climb to the top.

In these 25 years, Lin Ming's strength didn't rise by too much. But, his state of mind seemed to change, slowly settling and evolving from the constant state of intrigue and slaughter that he experienced for the first 50 some years of his life.

The reason he chose the Blue Moon Sect to practice his divine runic arts and consolidate his foundation instead of Divine Rune City was because compared to Divine Rune City, this Blue Moon Sect was a relatively weak environment. Here, he could lead a simple life, unaffected by the deceits and struggles of the inner court disciples.

To him, any conflicts between the Blue Moon Sect disciples were like fighting between small ants.

In these 25 years of tranquil living, Lin Ming experienced a nirvana of his mind.

It was time to leave.

This Blue Moon Sect could be called the place Lin Ming had stayed at for the longest time in his life. Here, he didn't need to think about anything. He could calmly cultivate, living a mortal life with Xiao Moxian.

It could be expected that he would not experience such peaceful and comfortable days in the future. Whether it was the final trial or the great calamity of the Divine Realm, Lin Ming had to face them all. He could be said to be wandering into a violent storm of blood and terror!

And at this time, the granddaughter of the Blue Moon Sect's Sovereign, a young girl named Qian Qiao, came to Lin Ming to study alchemy.

Qian Qiao was 22 years old. In the world of martial artists, she was extremely young.

She was born three years after Lin Ming came to the Blue Moon Sect. Afterwards when Lin Ming became famous, Qian Qiao was still young. At that time she had taken Lin Ming as her idol and now she had grown into a slim and delicate young girl.

Qian Qiao's talent was very good and her soul force far surpassed other martial artists of her age. Because of this, she was particularly fascinated by alchemy. Every so often she would come to Lin Ming for advice, and unlike the other inner court disciples she was always quiet for fear of disturbing Lin Ming. After all, Lin Ming was usually cold and indifferent to whoever he faced, as if he didn't have any patience at all.

Qian Qiao had never bothered Lin Ming. Sometimes she would simply watch Lin Ming quietly in the room, taking notes as he practiced his alchemy.

At times, Lin Ming would even give her some pointers. Every time, Lin Ming could see a hint of admiration from this young girl's eyes, and even youthful adoration.

The current Lin Ming had many more experiences than he had in the past. He naturally knew what this look meant.

However, Qian Qiao never expressed anything but the utmost respect for Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian.

Towards this little girl called Qian Qiao, Xiao Moxian would often tease Lin Ming about her. It seemed that she was quite fond of her.

Unwittingly and unknowingly, Xiao Moxian's own state of mind experienced a great change. From the past naughty and mischievous young girl she had been, she had matured a great deal and become much calmer.

As Lin Ming watched Qian Qiao quietly recording his alchemy attainments in the outer hall, for some reason he recalled many past memories. For a time many feelings washed over him. It seemed he had developed a strange feeling towards this place where he had lived for the last 25 years.

Or, it was better to say that Lin Ming wasn't nostalgic to stay in the Blue Moon Sect, but reluctant to part with the 25 years of ease and comfort he had lived. This was a type of living that he had never experienced.

Thinking back to the past, it was probably only during his childhood that he lived such a peaceful life.

But in any event, Lin Ming was destined to not stay here for much longer.

On this day, Lin Ming called over Qian Qiao and earnestly taught her the divine runic arts. After 10-12 hours of teaching, they finally ended when the sun set.

Before leaving, Lin Ming recorded many of his alchemy attainments and passed it to Qian Qiao, along with a bracelet.

Qian Qiao looked at Lin Ming in a daze for some time, her cheeks flushed red. She was surprised that Lin Ming had been so patient with her today.

After several breaths of time, she turned around and left with a satisfied expression. As she walked away, her long black hair gently rippled in the wind, dancing in beat with the leaves…

Lin Ming lightly sighed. That night, he and Xiao Moxian left this place that they had lived in for 25 years…

Their figures quietly vanished in the endless night. No one noticed they vanished, and not even the mountain array formations that protected the Blue Moon Sect were able to detect them.

When Qian Qiao returned to her room, she searched through the bracelet that Lin Ming had given her and was shocked.

This bracelet seemed like an ordinary accessory but the truth was that it was a storage spirit artifact similar to a spatial ring. Left in this bracelet was over a thousand medium grade pills as well as a massive amount of divine runic symbols that hadn’t yet been used.

These medium grade pills were sufficient for Divine Sea realm or Divine Transformation realm martial artists to use! They were even valuable for Divine Lord realm martial artists!

These pills were the ones that Lin Ming had never taken out to sell before. This was because according to common sense, with the level of alchemy he could reach with his cultivation he should never have been able to produce such high quality medium grade pills.

After Qian Qiao was stunned she returned to Lin Ming’s residence to look for him. But, Lin Ming had already vanished, without leaving a single trace of himself behind.

As she looked through the empty alchemy room and divine runic arts room, she felt hollow for a moment, her heart sinking. Then, she passed all the pills to her grandfather, the Sect Master of the Blue Moon Sect.

After receiving these thousand plus medium grade pills, the Blue Moon Sect Master was left dumbfounded, shocked speechless.

“Will they come back?” Qian Qiao suddenly asked, as if she seemed to realize something.

The Blue Moon Sect Master lightly sighed. He ruefully smiled and said, “They are not people of our world… chances are, they will not return…”

…….

One month later, Divine Rune City –

A spirit ship came to a slow stop as a young man and woman flew off the deck.

After 25 years, Lin Ming had returned to Divine Rune City.

But, there was no comparing the him of today to the him of 25 years ago.

The refinement of the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill would all begin here.

Chapter 1597 – Astronomically Expensive Materials

Chapter 1597 – Astronomically Expensive Materials

…

…

…

When Lin Ming returned to Divine Rune City, he discovered that the atmosphere was different from before. There were over ten times the guards stationed at the city gates.

Originally, there were several guards at the gates of Divine Rune City, and their cultivation was at the Divine Lord realm.

But now, there was a small army of soldiers, and the leader of this group was a Holy Lord.

Every person that entered the city was subjected to a strict interrogation. That Holy Lord captain always held a crystal ball in his hands with strange Law lines that shimmered within it.

These Law lines were clearly due to the divine runic arts. Lin Ming could see from a glance that this crystal ball was used to determine whether or not a martial artist that was trying to enter the city had disguised their cultivation.

“Strange…”

Lin Ming rubbed his chin. Why was Divine Rune City on such high alert all of a sudden?

“Is there some influence that wants to attack Divine Rune City?” Xiao Moxian asked.

Lin Ming shook his head. “It shouldn’t be. Divine Rune City is a neutral place to begin with and it is a massive influence with a tremendous number of divine runic masters. There shouldn’t be anyone that would move against Divine Rune City, especially since so many other organizations depend on them.”

Lin Ming pressed down the suspicions in his mind. He walked over to the city gates with Xiao Moxian whereupon the both of them were immediately stopped.

“City entrance token!” A martial artist icily said as he blocked Lin Ming’s path. Lin Ming looked at the war armor that these guards were wearing. Some of them wore the standard service armor of Divine Rune City and others didn’t.

As if they were formed from two different groups.

Lin Ming said, “I am a divine runic master from the Divine Runic Masters Guild. This is my badge.”

Lin Ming took out his third grade divine runic master badge. After the guard inspected it, he returned it to Lin Ming and allowed him and Xiao Moxian to pass.

After entering Divine Rune City, it became apparent that the inside clearly hadn’t changed much. The streets were still busy and bustling as usual.

Lin Ming walked all the way to the Divine Runic Masters Guild, flashing his divine runic master badge and entering.

As he passed through the trading area he saw many divine runic masters and alchemists trading within. He also immediately saw Old Xue.

At this time Old Xue was comfortably reclining back in a rocking chair. A pile of random items was placed in front of him and he seemed to have fallen asleep.

After 25 years, Old Xue hadn’t changed at all.

As Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian walked past, Old Xue's eyes suddenly shot open. "Hey boy, so it was you!"

Old Xue's eyes shined as he saw Lin Ming as if he had seen a treasure. He looked at Lin Ming for a long time, looking him up and down until even Lin Ming began feeling uncomfortable.

Lin Ming coughed, "Elder Xue, it's been a while."

Xiao Moxian also sweetly called out, "Elder Xue, it's nice to see you."

Old Xue lit up with a smile as he heard Xiao Moxian greet him. He had an extremely good impression of this likable young girl. But as he turned back to Lin Ming, his face darkened.

"It's been over 20 years. Do you even remember that you are a divine runic master of the Divine Runic Masters Guild? Brat, I think you must have forgotten everything as you went adventuring outside! Even so, it seems you managed to make a breakthrough in your cultivation. I remember that when you left you were only at the early Divine Lord realm."

Lin Ming rolled his eyes. It seemed this Old Xue really spoke without caring for what he said.

"It's a lucky breakthrough. I must say Old Xue, now that I've returned to Divine Rune City I saw a great number of guards standing outside. Just what is going on?"

"Heh, it's a war." Old Xue grinned, looking as if he didn't care much. It seemed he was already accustomed to these types of situations.

"Although I said it's a war, the truth is that it's not related to us. It's a spiritas Empyrean influence of the inner Asura Road, the Extreme Star Holy Lands, fighting with another saint Empyrean influence, the Heaven Strife Holy Lands. As for the reason they decided to suddenly go to war, it's probably because they are competing for something. Our Divine Runic Masters Guild is one of the groups supporting the Extreme Star Holy Lands. Because they're at war they buy up a massive amount of pills and divine runic symbols that are constantly transported to the war front. As for the guards at the city entrance, they were sent here by the Extreme Star Holy Lands. They're afraid that there will be some saint spy infiltrating into our city to stir up chaos. During this period of war, all saint martial artists, regardless of whether or not they're connected to the Heaven Strife Holy Lands, are forbidden from entering the city."

In these last 100 million years, the Divine Runic Masters Guild would occasionally cooperate with some great influences and provide them with a massive number of pills and divine runic symbols. Of course, these great influences would pay them back with rich rewards, including origin energy runes, rare and precious materials, inheritance jade slips, and so forth.

This was a significant source of wealth for the Divine Runic Masters Guild. Compared to the income of the shops in Divine Rune City, the income from participating in these wars was often far more valuable.

"So it's like that." Lin Ming thoughtfully said. When human martial artists studied the divine runic arts they were only inferior to the spiritas. As for the saints, they could be called simple-minded with extremely brawny bodies; their soul force was pitifully weak and they weren't suited for auxiliary skills like the divine runic arts or alchemy.

Moreover, the saints didn't have a good relationship with the spiritas to begin with. Indeed, in all these years, there weren't many saint martial artists that came to Divine Rune City.

The crystal balls placed at the gates of the city were to prevent any saint martial artists from sneaking their way in.

Lin Ming was secretly startled. In these 100 million years it was unknown how many times the Divine Runic Masters Guild had cooperated with other influences like this. The wealth they had accumulated after all this time could be imagined.

"I must say boy, why did you return so suddenly? Is there something going on?" Old Xue eyed Lin Ming suspiciously. He felt that this fishy boy probably needed something.

After being seen through by Old Xue, Lin Ming awkwardly rubbed his chin. He said, "There really is something I need. The reason I returned to Divine Rune City is because I need to buy some materials to refine a pill."

Lin Ming directly stated a goal.

"Hoh! So you've even practiced alchemy!" Old Xue looked at Lin Ming in surprise. With his current understanding of Lin Ming, if Lin Ming dared to say he wanted to refine a pill then his skill in alchemy was likely considerably high.

"You brat, you know to return when you want to make use of us, but are you aware you have zero contribution points!?"

In the Divine Runic Masters Guild, the contributions that a divine runic master made to the guild would be converted into points. Since Lin Ming had been gone for 25 years, he naturally didn't have any contribution points.

Lin Ming awkwardly coughed. He smiled and said, "There were some matters I had to attend to so I've been a bit delayed. I should be staying at the Divine Runic Masters Guild for a period of time, and there really are some rare and precious materials I need to buy, I just don't know where they are sold."

As Lin Ming spoke, Old Xue rolled his eyes and sent Lin Ming a look of disdain. He said, "What are you smiling so sadly about? My Divine Runic Masters Guild has the best and most complete material storehouse in the entire world! There are no materials you cannot buy, I'm only afraid that you can't afford them."

Old Xue said with full confidence, a great deal of pride glowing on his face.

"Then I'd like to request for you to look over this list and see if I can obtain these materials here."

Lin Ming smiled and took out a list from his spatial ring. This list had all the materials needed to refine the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill. There were a total of 32 different kinds of materials.

Old Xue took the list with a great show of graciousness. Then, he looked over the list.

He was immediately left dumbfounded.

The first several materials on the list were precious, but as long as one had enough money they could be bought. However, the latter materials were horrifying!

There were several materials that even Old Xue had never seen before; he had only heard of them!

"Dragon saliva grass, heaven devouring snake gallbladder, jade dragon's horn, primal jade quintessence…" Old Xue was left stunned. Not even the Divine Runic Masters Guild had all of these materials!

Although the Divine Runic Masters Guild's storehouse was rich and abundant, since there were materials that came in, there were materials that went out. If these materials couldn't be converted into pills and divine runic symbols then they were useless. Thus, after many rare and precious materials entered the storehouse they would soon be traded away to others.

As for the extremely rare and precious materials that were in high demand and couldn't be bought normally, they didn't stay in the storehouse for too long.

These materials that Lin Ming had listed, if placed within the Divine Runic Masters Guild storehouse, would require the highest level of authority to use. That was, the authority of a seventh grade divine runic master!

Moreover, the price was bound to be astronomically high, to the point where one would strain their neck!

“Are you messing around with me!?” Old Xue slapped the list on the table, his beard and eyebrows flying up in a rage. He felt that Lin Ming was teasing him; just how could a young junior use these materials!?

In his opinion, even if Lin Ming obtained these materials it would be impossible for him to use them in alchemy. It would be a complete waste.

“Why would we be messing with you? If we buy them we’re definitely using them.” Xiao Moxian backed up Lin Ming.

Old Xue looked at Xiao Moxian, half believing, half disbelieving. He turned back to Lin Ming. “Are these materials things your master wishes to use?”

Old Xue immediately thought. Lin Ming pushed this train of thought along. He laughed, saying, “That’s about right. Do you think the Divine Runic Masters Guild has these materials?”

Old Xue gave Lin Ming a side-eye and leisurely said, “The more general rare and precious materials are indeed here, but I’m afraid that the Divine Runic Masters Guild only has two or three of the most precious materials on this list. Moreover, they are exorbitantly expensive. Not only do you need a massive amount of origin energy runes, but more importantly you need a certain degree of authority as well as contribution points. I estimate that just one of those materials will require 700-800 million points. If you stay in the Divine Runic Masters Guild in the future you will receive a monthly salary of contribution points. As a third grade divine runic master, I think every 18 million years or so you’ll be able to barely afford a few leaves of dragon saliva grass.”

Old Xue mockingly said. As a third grade divine runic master, Lin Ming’s yearly salary would be around 20 points. In 10 million years he would receive 200 million points, just barely enough to buy a single material.

Of course, if Lin Ming rose to a higher level of divine runic master in the future then his salary would also increase. Even then, it wouldn’t be by too much.

Lin Ming wryly smiled, “Old Xue, I’m glad you’re happy teasing me.”

Old Xue spread his hands in goodwill. “I’m just speaking the truth. Even I can’t afford the things you want. But… if your master is willing to join the Divine Runic Masters Guild then he might be able to obtain what is needed in a short period of time.”

Seeing Old Xue make circles to ask about his master, Lin Ming said, “My master will not come to the Divine Runic Masters Guild. Only I can buy these materials…”

“Ha! Then do as you want.” Old Xue lazily said, his expression saying he didn’t care about Lin Ming’s business. He leaned back in his chair and closed his eyes.

Chapter 1598 – Mission Division

Chapter 1598 – Mission Division

…

…

…

"Lin Ming… what do you plan on doing? 700-800 million points to buy a single one of the materials you need, how could we afford that?"

Although Xiao Moxian's lips twitched as she saw Old Xue's disdainful attitude, she couldn't help but acknowledge that what he said was the truth.

There was simply an astronomical number of contribution points needed to buy these materials. Not to mention that even if they had the contribution points they also needed nine sun jades.

And their nine sun jades weren't enough.

"Let's go take a look. Maybe there's some way we can earn some…"

Lin Ming thought for a moment. He knew that there were several ways in the Divine Runic Masters Guild to earn points.

The first way was a monthly salary. However, as a third grade divine runic master his monthly salary was negligible; it was simply far too little.

The second way was to trade, but Lin Ming couldn't think of anything he could take out to sell for a large number of contribution points. He had some of the pills and divine runic symbols he drew up at the Blue Moon Sect, and some of them were even decent in quality, but none of these things would be able to sell at a good enough price. The people of the Divine Runic Masters Guild simply had too high a standard.

The third way was missions. The Divine Runic Masters Guild often issued out missions. After completing them, one would receive contribution points as a reward.

The fourth way was to contribute one's research results and specialized techniques to the Divine Runic Masters Guild. One would earn a great deal of rewards from this.

Lin Ming had several special techniques that others didn't know of that he had obtained from the memories of the three divine runic masters he killed. But, these techniques weren't particularly heaven-defying. Even if he contributed them, it was nothing but a drop in the ocean compared to the hundreds of millions of points he needed.

If Lin Ming had a true heaven-defying technique, that would be the understandings of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws described in the Asura Sutra First Volume. But, Lin Ming hadn't even fully cultivated the Asura Sutra so it was impossible for him to copy down the intricate secrets within, and even if he could he wouldn't reveal the tiniest secret related to the Asura Sutra. This type of inheritance was just far too tempting to others.

Removing the first, second, and fourth way of earning points, Lin Ming could only choose the third way. That was to undergo missions and earn contribution points.

"Elder Xue, I plan to take on missions to earn points..."

"Take on missions?" Elder Xue looked up at Lin Ming in surprise, a strange light glowing in his eyes. "Don't tell me you plan on completing missions to earn enough points to buy those materials..."

Lin Ming nodded. "I'll give it a try. There isn't another way I can think of."

"Good heavens boy!" Elder Xue looked at Lin Ming like a lunatic. "Have you not woken up yet? Do you know how many points you will receive per mission at your level? I don't know what you've been messing around with during these last 20 some years, but I could approximately guess it. A monstrous abnormality like you can surprise me, but no matter just how amazing your achievements have been in these 20 some years, you shouldn't think of relying on that alone to earn enough points through missions. If you want to buy all the materials you want, I estimate you will need at least 3 billion points! Even if I wanted to earn 3 billion points I would have to work myself to the bone and I'd still have no idea how long it would be until I would have earned them all."

Lin Ming had already thought of everything that Elder Xue spoke of. Although he had a shortcut to studying the divine runic arts and alchemy, in terms of grade, Lin Ming was still a fifth grade divine runic master. After all, the three divine runic masters Lin Ming killed had been at most at the sixth grade, and wanting to surpass them would take more time.

To practice to the point of being a fifth grade divine runic master in a mere 25 years was far too exaggerated; there wouldn't be anyone who believed this. What fifth grade divine runic master hadn't spent thousands of years or tens of thousands of years to get where they were?

And even a fifth grade divine runic master wouldn't be able to refine the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill!

Just the materials alone gave one a headache. Basically speaking, those that could afford the several rare materials he needed were Empyrean level characters. Even a Great World King would feel destitute if they tried to purchase these materials.

However, everything depended on the individual and everything was possible with enough effort. Lin Ming had spent an unimaginable price to first establish the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and then spent a considerable effort to obtain the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace section of the Celestial Tyrant Manual, finally finding a light on the road. It was impossible for him to give up now.

"Elder Xue, where is the special Mission Division?" Lin Ming asked. He wasn't too familiar with the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

After Old Xue listened to this he rolled his eyes yet again. “You brat, you don’t even know where the Mission Division is. It’s clear you haven’t come to the Divine Runic Masters Guild even a handful of times!”

Lin Ming hollowly laughed at Elder Xue’s grumbling, not speaking back.

“Whatever, whatever, I just think you’re crazy so just forget about it. I’ll lead you over there so you can see just what the level of rewards is for the missions and finally decide to give up.”

Old Xue had sat at his stall all day and hadn’t sold much at all so he decided to close shop instead. At his age, it was no longer possible to increase his cultivation and he liked to idle his time away. Setting up a stall was just a casual lifestyle that Old Xue liked to live. He loved the sense of achievement of selling high and buying low, and also finding good treasures. The truth was that he didn’t need the stall for any income. This was what people meant by fishing for the fishing and not for the fish.

Old Xue brought Lin Ming through some ancient-looking corridors. Finally, he arrived in another hall of the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

This hall resembled a small city square. The area was considerably broad, covering a wide area. There were a few people here, some young and some old and everyone wore the robes of a divine runic master or alchemist. It seemed they were all people with status.

At the center of the hall was a giant array disc. Above this array disc were floating screens of scrolling text.

This was an illusory magic array. Its role was to project text information and all of these scrolling texts represented missions.

In addition, on the side of the hall there were stacks of scrolls. These scrolls were also missions, but the difficulty was a bit lower than the missions projected on the illusory magic array.

"This is where you can pick up missions! Most of the missions they hand out can be found here. The minor missions give as little as several hundred points and the highest ones are worth a dozen or two million points. But, those missions that give 10-20 million points require you to be at least a peak sixth grade divine runic master. They are extremely difficult and not even I can complete them."

Old Xue slowly said as he played with a walnut in his hands. This walnut was a magic tool crafted from wood. "Look, I'm not trying to bring you down here, but if you really want to rely on completing missions to buy those precious materials you want then you'll need several hundred thousand years unless you can rise to an even higher level of divine runic master."

Lin Ming looked through the mission contents. Indeed as Old Xue said, those that rewarded several million points required one to be a Great World King divine runic master or alchemist to be completed. With Lin Ming's current strength it was impossible.

Although Old Xue had underestimated Lin Ming's skill level in the divine runic arts, his conclusion wasn't wrong in the end. Lin Ming silently calculated. As a fifth grade divine runic master, the highest reward missions he could complete only offered several hundred thousand points.

Moreover, anything that gave several hundred thousand points wasn't an easy mission at all. These missions took more than four or five days and some even took as long as a month.

If he was obtaining 20,000-30,000 points in one month, he would need to work for over a thousand years to gather 3 billion points.

And this was in a situation where one took missions non-stop. In reality, no one would do this. A divine runic master had to practice, study, go into seclusion, and so forth. It was also impossible for this war to continue for 1000 years.

Lin Ming gained an even deeper understanding of how precious the materials were that he needed to buy. It was simply impossible for a fifth grade divine runic master to obtain them.

The only possibility would be a peak sixth grade divine runic master expending a massive amount of time and effort!

Xiao Moxian also knew what level Lin Ming's skills were at. She worriedly said, "Lin Ming, what can we do? We'll have to participate in the final trial in another 25 years. There isn't enough time for you to earn the points."

"I don't know. Let's continue looking first."

Lin Ming didn't have any plan currently.

Old Xue spread his hands. "Well, now you've seen it. If you want to complete missions to earn enough points for those materials then you're simply living a dream. But if you don't want to give up, you can go to the mission posting office to see if there's some mission that's good for you."

Old Xue pointed at the end of the hall.

Over there was an antique long counter, and standing behind this counter were four or five people. Out of them, a young woman with an explosive figure was the most eye-catching.

This woman wore a flame-colored dress, and this dress drew tight to her skin, accentuating her enthralling curves and buxom, perfectly enchanting figure. The front of the dress had deep, plunging neckline, thrusting down and exposing a snow white valley even as it gave a sneak peak of her proud and full breasts. The tight dress had slits that ran up to the base of her thighs and every movement she took drew the eyes to her waist, inviting one to daydream over the hidden wonders.

Chapter 1599 – Fourth Grade Mission

Chapter 1599 – Fourth Grade Mission

…

…

…

Seeing the woman in the red dress, Lin Ming was stunned. In the world of martial artists, every place had their own clothing customs. In the human race within the Divine Realm, most clothing types tended towards being conservative. But in the inner Asura Road, many places had women that wore bold and provocative clothing.

And with this woman in front of him dressed the way she was, Lin Ming couldn't help but acknowledge that she had a special flavor to her. She easily aroused a man's desire to conquer and ravish.

"This woman is quite extraordinary…"

Lin Ming said, his eyes remaining glued to the woman's body.

Old Xue cheekily grinned. He said to Lin Ming, "Isn't she a top grade woman? She is from the Extreme Star Holy Lands and her name is Suya. Don't look down on her, she's not simple at all!"

Old Xue traced his beard, meaning thick in his voice. He knew that someone with an explosive figure like Suya who dressed in such enchanting clothing exerted a considerably strong attraction towards young men. Her body was like a ripe peach, making everyone want to take a bit of her.

Seeing Old Xue's expression, Xiao Moxian coughed in displeasure. She twisted Lin Ming's arm with her hand.

Women could be strange sometimes. Towards naïve and young competitors, they wouldn't develop any jealousy. For instance, when Lin Ming was in the Blue Moon Sect, Xiao Moxian could see that the Sect Master's granddaughter Qian Qiao had developed a crush on Lin Ming and she was only a third of his age. As long as Lin Ming wanted to he could have easily taken her in as a concubine. Even so, Xiao Moxian had still been very kind to Qian Qiao, even treating her like she would her own little sister.

But towards this alluring and sexual Suya, Xiao Moxian couldn't help but think that she was displeasing to the eyes.

Old Xue coughed upon seeing Xiao Moxian's disgruntlement. He straightened himself out and seriously said, "This Suya is our Divine Runic Masters Guild's contact with the Extreme Star Holy Lands. If you want to take on a mission it's best if you go through her, because since the Extreme Star Holy Lands are at war, there are many missions with a high point reward.

"I see."

Hearing Old Xue's response, Lin Ming found it all amusing. He walked over to Suya. As he approached he could see that there were six divine runic masters there to take on missions.

Without exception, all of these divine runic masters were men. There were young men as well as middle-aged men. These six divine runic masters were speaking with the red-dressed woman, and from their eyes Lin Ming could see a faint hint of vivid heat.

Normally, young elite divine runic masters had extremely high standards and were never for want of women. There were innumerable women that were willing to throw themselves in the chests of these divine runic masters.

But in front of Suya, they seemed to have lost all the lofty manners of a divine runic master and fell down in worship at the base of her deep red dress.

This also implied to Lin Ming that this Suya was not just a beautiful vase, but also someone with considerable strength and methods.

Lin Ming discovered that these six divine runic masters were treated differently by Suya. Towards the four younger divine runic masters, Suya was polite and curt in her answers, not really paying much attention to them.

It was only to those two middle-aged divine runic masters that Suya spoke at length and smiled warmly. And, those two middle-aged divine runic masters were both peak fifth grade divine runic masters, not too far away from becoming sixth grade divine runic masters.

"This woman is quite arrogant. Those young divine runic masters don't even enter her eyes, but the range of missions that a young divine runic master can complete is indeed limited." Lin Ming mused to himself.

Xiao Moxian scoffed. "Did this Extreme Star Holy Land specifically send such a sexually charged young woman here to attract all those deviants at the Divine Runic Masters Guild to complete missions for her?"

Lin Ming was startled for a moment before he laughed out loud. Indeed, this was a possibility. Because of Suya, this Mission Division area might be busier than usual.

Lin Ming pushed into the group of six divine runic masters, causing the four young ones to look at him with annoyance in their eyes.

Lin Ming glanced over their divine runic badges. The four youths were second or third grade divine runic masters. Lin Ming's badge also indicated he was a third grade divine runic master so their statuses were similar.

"Stop being so pushy!" Someone unhappily said, not recognizing Lin Ming.

Lin Ming had only briefly appeared when he joined in on the divine runic masters examination 25 years ago. Afterwards he left the Divine Runic Masters Guild. Besides Old Xue, Old Su, and the several examination officials present, no one would recognize him.

As that young divine runic master was halfway done speaking, he caught a glance at Old Xue behind Lin Ming. He quickly hid away all anger and instead put on a bright smile, saying, “Greetings, Elder Xue.”

The two middle-aged men also politely greeted Old Xue. “Elder Xue, it seems you also came for missions.”

Although the two middle-aged men were peak fifth grade divine runic masters, there was a great difference between them and the sixth grade divine runic master Old Xue. This was essentially the difference between a peak Holy Lord and a World King!

It was at this step that countless martial artists were stranded forever, never able to make a breakthrough. It had to be known that even an ordinary World King had the talent of an Empyrean descendant!

“I’m just taking a look.” Old Xue laughed, accepting the greetings of these juniors.

Behind the counter, Suya brightened as she saw Old Xue, like a peony opening in the shining spring sun. She sweetly said, “Elder Xue, I’ve been here for so many days and there are many missions that I can’t seem to get completed… perhaps you could help me out a little.”

Suya’s voice was crisp and tender to the bone. If a girl heard it, it might seem a bit fake. But to a man, this was a lethal tone.

Even Old Xue’s beard shook as he heard this; it seemed he enjoyed the attention.

“You old pervert.” Xiao Moxian harshly denounced. Lin Ming chuckled at her response.

“I’m flattered, flattered. I’ll take a few missions since I’m here, but the main reason I came to the Mission Division is to introduce this boy to you…”

As Old Xue spoke he pointed towards Lin Ming. “He entered the Divine Runic Masters Guild 20 some years ago. He’s in a bit of a need for contribution points, so he’ll probably need to do a number of missions for you.”

As Old Xue introduced Lin Ming, Suya took a glance at his divine runic master badge. As a mere third grade divine runic master, she didn’t place him in her eyes.

She didn’t really want to bother speaking to such a young divine runic master, but since Old Xue introduced him she couldn’t ignore him.

“Raindrop, arrange a mission for him.”

Suya casually said. Beside her a well-behaved little girl took out a pile of mission scrolls and gave them to Lin Ming to look at.

Lin Ming looked over these missions scrolls. They were third grade missions and below. The rewards were several hundred points or even several dozen points; it was really small to the point of being pitiful.

“Do you have higher grade missions?”

Lin Ming asked. Suya was a bit taken aback. Lin Ming was a third grade divine runic master but he wanted to take on even higher grades of missions?

Old Xue wasn’t surprised at all. A monstrous freak like Lin Ming simply couldn’t be judged by common sense. He laughed, saying, “Since this boy wants to see them, take out some higher grade missions for him. Perhaps he has the ability to complete them.”

Although Suya thought otherwise, since it was Old Xue requesting this she had no choice but to act accordingly. “Raindrop, bring out some fourth and fifth grade missions.”

Raindrop picked out a number of mission scrolls, all of them at the fourth and fifth grade.

Lin Ming earnestly looked through every mission. He carefully analyzed them all, calculating which one had the potential for the most points.

"What an idiot..."

Behind Lin Ming, those several young divine runic masters mocked him without holding back. Of course, because Old Xue was present they could only speak to each other with sound transmission.

"This fellow's courting tactics are... well, he's got more guts than we do. We're only at the level of trying to get closer to Miss Suya, but this idiot is trying to stir up a big fuss in front of her. We should study his techniques a little later..."

"I bet you he will take out several mission scrolls to bring back. It's not like he will lose anything if he can't complete them!"

As the several young divine runic masters spoke, Lin Ming indeed took out several mission scrolls.

These missions scrolls were all fourth grade, but they were also at the highest level of fourth grade missions. Compared to the rewards from fifth grade missions, the difference wasn't that great.

Lin Ming meticulously looked through these mission scrolls. The more difficult a mission was, the more time it took, the higher the rewards would be.

As a fifth grade divine runic master, Lin Ming had the ability to complete fifth grade missions. But, he also had to calculate the time and energy he would need to invest into these fifth grade missions and after doing so he discovered that the reward to effort ratio wasn't much higher.

As for these peak fourth grade missions, Lin Ming could rely on his skill and understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao to rapidly complete them.

Lin Ming took out a total of five fourth grade missions scrolls and lined them up on the countertop.

Looking at the difficulty of these five mission scrolls, the several young divine runic masters present were left speechless.

“This boy, his skin is too thick!”

Putting on an act all depended on how thick one’s skin was. If one’s skin wasn’t thick enough there was no way they could fake things to such a degree. If they were in Lin Ming’s position there was no way they could pretend to peruse through such difficult missions.

These missions, all of them could only be completed by someone that was at least a peak fourth grade divine runic master!

“He’s forcing this too much. Only an idiot would think he could complete them, and Miss Suya isn’t stupid so how could she believe him?”

“That’s right, his acting is going to have the opposite effect now.”

As the several young divine runic masters spoke, they indeed saw Suya frown. If it weren’t for the fact that Lin Ming was brought here by Elder Xue, she would have already sent him tumbling out of the Mission Division.

She felt nothing but disgust for young men that liked to play such tricks.

“These missions, do you plan on completing them by yourself?”

Suya heatedly asked Lin Ming. Because the reward points given by the Divine Runic Masters Guild were directly placed into the divine runic masters badge, normally divine runic masters would come here in person to receive missions; they wouldn’t send representatives.

Lin Ming didn’t directly answer. Instead, he said, “If I’m taking a mission I naturally have some confidence I can complete it.”

“Haha…”

Suya faintly sneered. She felt that she had to put some restrictions on people who would appear at her counter in the future, lest some brain-addled idiots like this Lin Ming appear in front of her again.

“Raindrop, register these missions to him.” Suya coldly said. She would do things properly for Old Xue’s sake, but the truth was that she had already considered Lin Ming an idiot who was up to no good and had placed him on her personal blacklist.

Chapter 1600 – Three Billion Points

Chapter 1600 – Three Billion Points

…

…

…

Seeing Raindrop record his name on a mission jade slip, Lin Ming seemed to remember something. He asked Suya, “The missions you issue, are materials subsidized?”

The missions that the Extreme Star Holy Lands gave out were mostly to have divine runic masters draw up divine runic symbols or for alchemists to refine pills. Upon completion of these missions, the Extreme Star Holy Lands would give the Divine Runic Masters Guild the rewards and then the Divine Runic Masters Guild would convert this reward to an appropriate portion of points and pay the divine runic master.

But besides rewarding points, the Extreme Star Holy Lands also had to subsidize materials with money.

The Extreme Star Holy Lands would only subsidize the bare minimum of required materials to complete the mission. If a divine runic master or alchemist failed in the creation process then they could only eat the losses themselves.

“You also want materials?” Suya almost laughed out loud from anger. Although she nearly wanted to tell Lin Ming off she had an amazing level of self-restraint. She said, “If you can complete the mission then I will refund the cost of the materials to you. But for now I’ll have to say sorry, you’re going to need to put forth the advance money for the materials yourself!”

"Oh... I see." Lin Ming still had many nine sun jades left so buying the materials wasn't a problem. As for Suya's reaction, he didn't care about it at all. He had come here to complete missions and earn points in order to refine the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill, not to chase after women.

Lin Ming picked up the five mission scrolls and asked, "Is there a deadline for these missions?"

"Whenever you want!" Suya coldly said.

These missions usually had a deadline of three months and the sooner they were completed, the higher the rewards were. On the battlefield, time was life.

However, Suya didn't have much hope in Lin Ming so she replied thoughtlessly.

"I understand."

Lin Ming took the scrolls and walked away. Old Xue traced his chin. He said, "Boy, can you really complete a peak fourth grade divine runic symbol?"

Even Old Xue found this hard to accept. A divine runic master needed time to study and improve. No matter how talented one was it was impossible to learn all the required skills overnight.

When Lin Ming left the Divine Runic Masters Guild he had only been a third grade divine runic master. Now, not too long a time had passed so how could he possibly be a peak fourth grade divine runic master?

"I'm bringing them back to give them a try. There should be a chance I succeed." Lin Ming ambiguously replied, not confirming anything.

Old Xue said, "But... even if you complete these missions, the contribution points you'll receive are nothing but a drop in the bucket when compared to 3 billion points. If you continue like this you'll need two to three thousand years to purchase the materials you want. And that is also in a situation where you succeed every time and don't have to pay for the materials. In truth, even a peak fifth grade divine runic master wouldn't say that they would succeed every time and if you have to pay for the materials of the failures yourself then your profits will be extremely small."

Of the missions Lin Ming obtained, the highest one had an 80,000 point reward and the rest were 50,000-60,000.

Even if he completed all of them that would only be around 300,000 points. That was nothing but a fraction of 3 billion.

Moreover, these missions weren't easy at all. The mission scrolls often required 20 divine runic symbols to be drawn up. For an ordinary divine runic master, this would take several months to complete.

At this rate, earning 3 billion points in two to three thousand years would be considered extremely fast.

"These materials are ridiculously expensive..."

Lin Ming helplessly muttered. Of all the pill materials he needed, none of them were inferior to the supreme dragon bone that he found in the God Beast Mystic Realm, and that was something that even Great World Kings would fight for.

After leaving the mission hall, Lin Ming read through the five mission scrolls once more.

The first mission scroll was to refine 30 white yang pills as well as mark them with fourth grade divine runic symbols. If the refining process went smoothly then he could produce 30 white yang pills in three furnace batches.

The second mission scroll was to draw up 20 Thunder God Symbols.

The third mission scroll was to draw up 20 Havoc Flame Symbols.

The fourth mission scroll was to draw up 20 Thousand God Earth Shield Symbols.

The fifth mission scroll was to draw up 20 Bone Battlearmor Symbols.

All of these divine runic symbols were used to kill an enemy or protect oneself. When a martial artist was fighting an enemy they would often find themselves in a situation where they had exhausted their true essence or were unable to react fast enough. At this time, throwing out an offensive or defensive divine runic symbol could change the tide of battle.

There were even some precious divine runic symbols that could allow one to jump ranks to fight. For instance, in the Marvel Blue Nation, Empress Naye had used a Life Seizing Talisman when Lin Ming attacked her.

At that time Naye had only been a half-step World King. But, the Life Seizing Talisman she had was enough to cause severe wounds to an ordinary World King.

If Lin Ming wasn't skilled in the Asura Heavenly Dao and broke through that life seizing talisman with a single spear strike, then he would have been severely wounded, let alone be able to wound Naye.

The Havoc Flame Symbols and Thunder God Symbols were both offensive symbols, as for the Thousand God Earth Symbols and the Bone Battlearmor Symbols, they were defensive symbols.

Imagine. In a battle when both sides were desperately fighting to the limit and were in their final life or death struggle, at this time, one party would pull out a defensive divine runic symbol to block the other party's attack. Then, the result of the battle could be imagined.

When two armies battled it was a competition of the martial artists' strength as well as a competition of their equipment.

If one side was fully armed, using top spirit artifacts, all sorts of divine runic symbols, and all sorts of pills without consideration for money while the other side used ordinary weapons, then there was no need to imagine what the result of that battle would be like.

Because of this reason, the Extreme Star Holy Lands had paid an exorbitant price to cooperate with the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

“3 billion points…”

Lin Ming stroked the thick mission scroll, lost in thought.

In order to gain 3 billion points, it was impossible to do this by completing these steps in an ordinary manner.

Lin Ming pondered for a long time. Finally, from the fifth grade mission scrolls he picked up the Havoc Flame Symbol!

He planned to start with these Havoc Flame Symbols first.

For the past 25 years, Lin Ming had spent the majority of his time and energy on drawing up medicinal runic symbols. This was because medicinal runic symbols were extremely important to him.

Even so, the principles between the various kinds of divine runic symbols were the same to begin with. With Lin Ming’s current strength, drawing up a Havoc Flame Symbol wouldn’t be difficult at all.

And this Havoc Flame Symbol was a popular offensive divine runic symbol to begin with so many divine runic masters knew how to draw it up, including the three that Lin Ming had killed.

In Lin Ming’s mind, the complete drawing plan of the Havoc Flame Symbol appeared, along with sex fiend Torchriver’s version that had slight alterations. If he followed along this method then the Havoc Flame Symbol he drew up would be slightly stronger.

……………

After helping Xiao Moxian settle somewhere else and purchasing enough materials, Lin Ming went alone to the rear court of the Divine Runic Masters Guild. Here there was a special service where they rented out divine runic arts rooms.

“I want to rent a divine runic symbol drawing room.”

Lin Ming said to the young lady responsible for receiving guests.

When Lin Ming was in the Blue Moon Sect, he had transformed two rooms in his residence to a simple alchemy room and divine runic arts room. Of course, if they were compared to a specialized divine runic arts room, the difference was considerable.

A high grade divine runic arts room had an astronomical construction cost. They were often rented according to a daily basis and the costs were sky-high.

“Hello.” A young receptionist faintly smiled at Lin Ming, bowing. “The divine runic symbol drawing rooms are between grade one and seven and each has a different price. Which one would you like to rent?”

“The highest grade possible.” Lin Ming planned to undertake a great battle in this divine runic arts room. He naturally couldn’t fall behind when it came to quality of the facilities.

“Of course.” The young receptionist’s dulcet voice was sweet. She pulled out a price list for Lin Ming. As Lin Ming looked over this list he was left speechless. A sixth grade and seventh grade divine runic arts room needed not just a massive amount of origin energy runes but, more importantly, contribution points. To rent a sixth grade divine runic arts room for a month required 1000 contribution points.

A seventh grade divine runic arts room was even more exaggerated; a single month required 10,000 contribution points.

Lin Ming’s current contribution points were zero. He could only rent a fifth grade divine runic arts room that required no contribution points.

After paying in violet sun crystals, Lin Ming was brought by the receptionist to a divine runic arts room.

Within this room there were different models of divine runic pens, a luxurious divine runic table, as well as various tools needed to process materials.

In addition, the divine runic arts room itself was supported by a giant array formation. The function of this array formation was to make it easier for one to gather their soul force and could increase the success rate of a divine runic symbol drawing plan by at least 30%.

“I’ll rent this place for half a year.”

Lin Ming said. The young receptionist looked at Lin Ming with surprise. According to Lin Ming’s badge, he was a third grade divine runic master yet he wanted to rent a fifth grade divine runic arts room for half a year. In her opinion this was a considerable waste. But, she had seen many rich low level divine runic masters in her time so she wasn’t alarmed.

“Great.”

The young receptionist bowed and withdrew. In the entire room, there was only Lin Ming left. At this time, Xiao Moxian wasn’t living together with Lin Ming. Lin Ming planned to completely invest his concentration in drawing the divine runic symbols.

He wanted to gather the materials required for the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill in three years and then use another three years to refine the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill and break through the second Dao Palace of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

To earn 3 billion points in three years, not even a seventh grade divine runic master would brag to such a degree. If anyone else were to learn that Lin Ming had this plan, they would think he was insane.

But, Lin Ming had to do this.

He didn’t have much time to slowly sharpen himself. The most he could stay in the Asura Road for was another 20 some years.

In these 20 some years he had to refine pills, open the second Dao Palace, consolidate his foundation, and participate in the final trial!

Time was of the essence!

He felt the smooth divine runic table. Then, as Lin Ming took a deep breath, his eyes flashed with a brilliant light!

From the time he first came into contact with the inscription technique when he was 15 years old, nearly 70 years had passed. Lin Ming had a special affection towards the divine runic arts because of his past. Now that he had to rely on the divine runic arts to earn these astronomically expensive materials, he was faintly excited!

The pattern for the Havoc Flame Symbol appeared in his mind. Lin Ming took out seven or eight materials and threw them onto an array formation on the divine runic table. This array formation was able to automatically process materials for Lin Ming.

Like this, processing materials and the degree of heat could be controlled by adjusting an array formation. This was also the greatest supportive function of a divine runic arts room. One would be able to save a massive amount of soul force for the divine runic master and guarantee that they had more energy to invest into the final stage of the drawing.

Chapter 1601 - Havoc Flame Symbol

Chapter 1601 - Havoc Flame Symbol

…

…

…

A Havoc Flame Symbol was formed from more than 800 tiny runes, and each tiny rune had its own profound structure.

In order to draw one up, one had to have excellent attainments in the divine runic arts and the divine runic master had to have a thorough understanding of the Fire Laws.

When the Havoc Flame Symbol was activated, it would erupt with an annihilating flame that could melt away mountains and evaporate rivers. This required that the divine runic master have an understanding of the Fire Laws that reached the sixth level Concept.

This was also another reason that Lin Ming chose the Havoc Flame Symbol. If he drew this symbol up then he would have a natural advantage over others because his Fire Laws already touched upon the seventh level Concept. Although he was inferior to Xiao Moxian, his understanding was still superior to that of most ordinary fire-attribute ordinary World Kings!

Lin Ming had originally inherited Torchriver’s memories, and with his extraordinary soul force, understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao, and deep understanding of the Fire Laws, he was able to easily draw up the first Havoc Flame Symbol. After undergoing a few problems, Lin Ming quickly produced a successful result.

The palm-sized divine runic symbol in his hand had a warm atmosphere to it.

This Havoc Flame Symbol was already successfully drawn up and matched every standard. As long as Lin Ming could draw up 19 more than he could complete the mission.

But Lin Ming didn't plan to do so.

Even if he completed the mission and obtained 50,000-60,000 contribution points then that was still meaningless. It was simply far too small a number.

He held onto the Havoc Flame Symbol and walked out of the divine runic symbol drawing room.

"Sir, may I help you?"

The young receptionist who had helped Lin Ming before bowed as she saw him, sweetly smiling. Towards this wealthy young divine runic master who also had outstanding looks, it was inevitable that a young girl like her would develop a good impression.

"I need an array formation to test the power of a divine runic symbol."

"Of course." The young receptionist smiled. "All divine runic masters that have rented our rooms may use our test array formation at no cost."

The young receptionist led Lin Ming to another room. This room was completely sealed off and the walls and floor were all especially supported with array formations. In addition to the power of space locked in here, even a tremendously powerful divine runic symbol would find it hard to destroy this place.

The young girl pointed to a platform in the center. This was where the test array formation was.

Lin Ming took the Havoc Flame Symbol and stepped onto the platform. The young receptionist politely drew back. All divine runic masters were sensitive about their inheritances and kept them strictly confidential; it wasn't good manners to look at their experiments.

As the young girl left, Lin Ming started the array formation.

This array formation was in itself an illusory magic array. When Lin Ming activated the array formation his surroundings changed and several ancient great desolate beasts appeared.

These great desolate beasts were simulations created by the array formation. As they appeared, they turned to Lin Ming and savagely roared as if they wanted to eat him whole.

Facing these vicious beasts, Lin Ming slowly lifted the Havoc Flame Symbol.

Flooding the Havoc Flame Symbol with his true essence, hundreds of tiny runes shimmered together. A destructive power erupted from the Havoc Flame Symbol and with an explosive sound the several ancient desolate beasts were swept up in the waves of flames, many of the beasts turning to ash.

Some were severely wounded, but some only suffered minor injuries. There was even one that wasn’t affected at all.

Hu - !

The illusory magic array vanished and all the ancient desolate beasts disappeared.

Lin Ming stepped down from the platform.

The light from the array disc flashed, producing an evaluation of Lin Ming’s divine runic symbol.

“Power: Holy Lord injury level, one star.”

Lin Ming had inherited the memories of three divine runic masters thus he naturally knew what this evaluation meant. A Holy Lord injury level evaluation meant that this Havoc Flame Symbol could heavily wound or even kill a Holy Lord level martial artist.

And Holy Lord level injuries were divided into five magnitudes. A Holy Lord one star was the worst magnitude possible.

“Only a Holy Lord one star… it’s a bit weak.”

Lin Ming shook his head, not too satisfied with this injury level. With his understanding of the seventh level Fire Laws, his strength as a fifth grade divine runic master, and also his comprehensions of the Asura Heavenly Dao, the divine runic symbol he drew up was only able to severely wound the weakest of Holy Lords. He wasn’t content with this result at all.

But, if any other divine runic masters were to hear Lin Ming’s thoughts now, all of them might die from vomiting blood.

In the domain of divine runic arts, a sixth grade divine runic master was equivalent to a World King, a fifth grade divine runic master was equivalent to a Holy Lord, and a fourth grade divine runic master was equivalent to a Divine Lord.

Lin Ming had drawn up a peak fourth grade divine runic symbol. Ordinarily this level should be able to heavily injure a late Divine Lord or wound a half-step Holy Lord.

But now it was already exaggerated that Lin Ming’s Havoc Flame Symbol had reached a Holy Lord one star injury level. Most importantly, this was the first time that Lin Ming had drawn it up!

How could anyone still live upon hearing this!

Lin Ming recalled that brilliant detonation of flames. In that explosion of flames, Lin Ming had carefully observed the entire process of how the energy within the Havoc Flame Symbol interacted with the Asura Heavenly Dao.

He discovered many places where the flow of energies didn’t harmonize.

The divine runic master who invented the Havoc Flame Symbol in the past simply didn’t understand the Asura Heavenly Dao. Rather, he had used his accumulated experiences to create the Havoc Flame Symbol. Now, to Lin Ming's eyes, there were many holes in the process where the Havoc Flame Symbol had fused with the Asura Heavenly Dao.

If these holes were fixed then the Havoc Flame Symbol would undergo a massive transformation. As for what this transformation would end up like, Lin Ming wasn't able to estimate it at all.

Lin Ming would have to finish patching all of these holes before he could further rend judgment.

With these thoughts in mind, Lin Ming stepped out of the test room. He didn't even hear when the young receptionist greeted him; he had completely immersed himself in his own world.

After returning to his divine runic arts room, Lin Ming began the process of deduction.

He closed his eyes, meditating with the Asura Sutra in mind.

The Asura Sutra was the most current cultivation method of all the ones that Lin Ming possessed. Its grade was at least at the peak True Divinity realm, or possibly even surpassed the boundary of a True Divinity. Even though this cultivation method was still incomplete, the power behind it was incomprehensible!

To be more exact, describing the Asura Sutra as a cultivation method wasn't wholly accurate.

The Asura Sutra should be called a set of Laws. These were Laws that the Asura Road Master created and stood outside the Laws of the 33 Heavens. It was the 34th Heavenly Dao Law that stood on equal footing with the Laws of the 33 Heavens.

The Asura Heavenly Dao was complex and difficult to understand. The innumerable patterns were ever-changing and impossibly complex! To repair the problems within the Havoc Flame Symbol would be easier said than done!

Lin Ming took out several dozen jade slips, recording all of his calculations within them.

It was impossible to write down the structural patterns of the Heavenly Dao Laws in a journal like mortals did. These different structural patterns had energy transformations that were complex to the extreme. All of these transformations needed to be felt with one's sense, and then engraved onto a jade slip.

Like this, Lin Ming lost himself in deducing the Asura Heavenly Dao. He compared the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws with the tiny runes in the Havoc Flame Symbol, modifying all the areas that were in disharmony.

From time to time, Lin Ming needed to use materials to draw up tiny runes and test the effects of the modifications.

But in most situations, there would be new problems with the modifications Lin Ming made. Sometimes the entire structure of tiny runes would collapse due to the instability of the energy!

To make these sorts of deductions was far too much work!

Lin Ming's current understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao, when compared to other divine runic masters', could be called the difference between clouds and mud.

But compared to the entire Asura Heavenly Dao, what Lin Ming understood was only the tip of the iceberg; he was far from being sufficient!

This also caused many new problems to occur as Lin Ming was modifying the Havoc Flame Symbol. His understanding of the Laws was too lacking.

Peng!

Another brilliant burst of flames appeared in front of Lin Ming. The several dozen tiny runes he drew up exploded, indicating that new problems occurred in the revisions Lin Ming had just made.

This situation had already occurred countless times. The results that he had carefully calculated again and again were proven wrong during experimentation and had to be redone once more. This sort of frustration couldn’t be tolerated by most people.

However, Lin Ming’s patience and stubbornness far surpassed that of others.

With every wrong calculation he would begin anew, making deduction after deduction until he made it right.

Like this, Lin Ming made deductions through the day and night. He had already achieved a wholly absorbed state, not eating food or drinking any water. It was only when Lin Ming completely exhausted his soul force that he stopped. Then, he revolved the Divine Mist Heart Mantra, restoring his soul force and beginning once again. Soon, ten days passed in an instant…

Chapter 1602 – Suya's Troubles

Chapter 1602 – Suya's Troubles

…

…

…

In his high degree of concentration, Lin Ming simply didn't feel time pass by. It was only when he reached into his spatial ring with his sense to take out several materials for more verifications did he discover there was nothing there.

Lin Ming was stunned. Then he realized he had used up all the materials he purchased.

Originally, when Lin Ming was at Suya's counter he had purchased enough materials to create 20 Havoc Flame Symbols. But now, because he had been experimenting with all these materials and he would have to throw out the materials after every failure, this quick consumption caused him to use up all his materials for Havoc Flame Symbols in just ten days.

"If I knew this I would've bought more…"

Lin Ming shook his head and walked out of his divine runic arts room.

After ten days of continuous calculations, because Lin Ming had continually overdrawn his soul force his eyes were bloodshot, his hair was messy, and he appeared haggard.

With this sort of grubby appearance, it contrasted sharply with divine runic masters that paid such great attention to their image.

As Lin Ming walked, many divine runic masters looked at him with strange and surprised eyes, as if they had seen some ugly monster walking before them. Lin Ming ignored them all. He arrived at the Mission Hall and placed 2 nine sun jades on the counter of the temporary material area, saying, “Havoc Flame Symbol material, 100 portions.”

This temporary material area was especially established to help divine runic masters complete their missions. The materials inside were jointly provided by the Extreme Star Holy Lands and the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

As for the price of materials, they were lower than market price. This was also the Extreme Star Holy Land’s desire to encourage divine runic masters to complete the missions they took up.

Although the Extreme Star Holy Lands was a peak Empyrean influence, their consumption of resources during war was terrifying and their materials storehouse wasn’t too abundant.

And now, Lin Ming had come to buy materials for 100 symbols. The person in charge of this material area certainly wasn’t willing to sell them to Lin Ming. The amount of materials stored here was on a blade’s edge; how could he endure it if these materials were wasted by others or they were taken out to be sold at an even lower price?

“Why do you want so many materials for drawing Havoc Flame Symbols?”

The person in charge of the material area asked. He was a dark and thin middle-aged man from the Extreme Star Holy Lands.

“To complete a mission and do some research while I’m at it.” Lin Ming calmly replied.

“Research?” The dark and thin middle-aged man frowned. “My apologies, but our materials are not for you to research with, but to help you aid the warfront. These materials all have the potential to save a martial artist’s life. If you do not have a mission scroll then we cannot provide materials to you.”

Lin Ming's mission only required him to draw up 20 symbols, but now he actually wanted to buy materials for another 100 of them. The materials center wasn't willing to sell the materials to him.

This caused Lin Ming to frown. If he went to other places to buy materials, it didn't matter too much if they were more expensive. The problem here was that he would have to go to many places to buy these materials and Lin Ming's mind was currently filled with charts and diagrams of deductions of the Asura Heavenly Dao. Once his concentration was interrupted then he would lose any inspirations he had. The loss would be tremendous.

Lin Ming said, "I don't need to buy at reduced prices. I will buy according to market price."

Lin Ming said, making a concession. Because of the war, the market price for these materials had sharply risen. If Lin Ming wanted to buy at market price, he would have to pay 50% more origin energy symbols for these materials.

The middle-aged man hesitated for a moment. He said, "I'll ask for you..."

He pulled out a sound transmitting talisman and reported this matter to Suya. Even though the market price for these materials was rising day after day, these materials also became increasingly scarce. Even if it were at market price, the Extreme Star Holy Lands still didn't want to sell them.

To this middle-aged man's report, Suya's answer was extremely cold. She seemed to have many thoughts weighing down her mind and couldn't summon any interest to care about this sort of trivial matter.

She faintly said, "Just let him do as he wishes. He is someone that Elder Xue recognizes and there must be some reason this is so. Although I don't see it... perhaps he might have a chance of becoming an outstanding divine runic master in the future..."

Although materials were scarce, the amount of materials that Lin Ming alone could use up was limited. Suya was disinclined to haggle over this chump change.

After Suya responded, the middle-aged man immediately began to ready the materials.

Without speaking further, Lin Ming took out more nine sun jades and exchanged them for the materials. Then he left, returning to his divine runic arts room.

Seeing Lin Ming leave, the middle-aged man made another report to Suya.

However, Suya didn't have the mind to listen to such minor matters. Today, she had received an Extreme Star Command issued by the highest power of the Extreme Star Holy Lands, Extreme Star Heavenly Palace. Moreover, the one who issued this order was the Vice Palace Master, the second-in-command of the entire Extreme Star Holy Lands as well as an Empyrean level character!

With this Extreme Star Command, a mission was passed down to Suya that she felt was nearly impossible to complete. In half a year, she had to quickly transport 80,000 fourth grade divine runic symbols and 10,000 fifth grade divine runic symbols to the warfront!

A divine runic symbol was an extremely expensive consumable treasure. When a martial artist fought for months at a time, they might use up four or five divine runic symbols!

This was also under the assumption that the martial artists of the Extreme Star Holy Lands would save any divine runic symbols they had until they absolutely had to use them.

In fact, there were some soldiers that, because of their lack of divine runic symbols, would lose their lives in battles that they would have otherwise won.

Thinking of this, Suya felt as if a great stone pressed down on her heart, making it hard for her to breathe.

Military commands must be followed at all costs. If she failed in her mission then she would be punished by the palace rules!

"80,000 fourth grade divine runic symbols… 10,000 fifth grade divine runic symbols… and only half a year to complete this mission… just how can I possibly accomplish this?"

Suya reclined in her chair, her heart racing with anxiety. Ever since the outbreak of war earlier in the year, she felt that the weight on her shoulders had been far too heavy.

Before this she had put forth a proposal to increase the mission rewards to incentivize the divine runic masters. But, this proposal was immediately rejected by Extreme Star Heavenly Palace. The reasoning was simple: every point that the Extreme Star Holy Lands rewarded was exchanged with the Divine Runic Masters Guild through resources.

The Extreme Star Holy Lands was a top Empyrean influence with a legacy of a billion years. It was a massive organization with many assets and sources of income, but in this war, the consumption of all resources in every aspect was astronomical. It would be difficult for the Extreme Star Holy Lands to continue consuming resources at an even higher rate.

Without more points as a reward, it would be difficult for Suya to complete her mission.

However, her complaints fell on deaf ears. To her, the commands of Extreme Star Heavenly Palace were ironclad. They responded to her, “If we could increase the point rewards however much we wanted, what would we still need you for?”

These words left Suya feeling especially weak. With such a pressing mission weighing down on her, could she actually be forced to sell her body to complete it?

However, to those in power, whether it was an individual’s body or life, everything they had was insignificant compared to the entire war situation.

………

At this time within the divine runic arts room, Lin Ming naturally didn’t know about the difficult position Suya had been placed in nor did he care. He was completely immersed in altering the Havoc Flame Symbol.

This extremely intense work caused Lin Ming to neglect eating and sleeping. He made countless deductions and failed countless experiments. On the divine runic table in front of

Lin Ming, there was a large pile of jade slips that he used to deduce and analyze the structures of the Asura Heavenly Dao.

It had to be known that these jade slips had an extremely large capacity to store information. But, they were completely filled with Lin Ming's observations and experimentations of the tiny rune structures. From this it could be seen how many calculations Lin Ming had done.

Through these nights and days of experimentations, Lin Ming couldn't sense the passing of time. Without noticing it, 40 days passed.

Lin Ming's face was haggard and his eyes were bloodshot. In front of him were scattered scraps of materials as well as haphazardly dumped divine runic symbols. All of these divine runic symbols were defective products!

Lin Ming had used nearly two months of time to try transforming the Havoc Flame Symbol so that it conformed to the Asura Heavenly Dao. But, he failed countless times.

With every defeat he tried again. But in the end, he still wasn't able to succeed.

Lin Ming felt as if he had no more strength within him. After continuously failing again and again, no matter how much resolve Lin Ming had, he would still feel tired and annoyed.

Now, he had been stuck on a single problem for a full ten days. He was unable to draw up the fire energy in a way that agreed with the revolution of the Asura Heavenly Dao.

And this time, Lin Ming's 100 portions of materials had been almost used up again. He still had to buy materials and he hadn't even succeeded in earning any money yet. All of this cost him a considerable amount of his remaining wealth. Lin Ming couldn't help but ruefully smile.

3 billion points wasn't easy to earn. Even if he had many advantages that others didn't, it still wasn't enough.

Just as he opened the doors of the divine runic arts room, Lin Ming was met with Xiao Moxian walking in.

She was carrying a bowl of soup in her hands.

Although Lin Ming didn't need to eat anything, he had still used up his soul force and energy and needed to supplement it. This soup that Xiao Moxian carried in was made with dozens of types of medicinal soul materials and was one of the highly praised dishes of the divine runic master community. After drinking it, one could speed up the recovery of their soul force and nourish their spiritual sea. The effects were extremely good.

Correspondingly, the price of this soup was high and the cooking process was extremely troublesome.

Because Lin Ming had wholeheartedly studied the Havoc Flame Symbol, Xiao Moxian had been worried over Lin Ming's ghastly appearance and forgetfulness in eating. Thus, she had learnt some recipes from Old Xue and this was the third time she had brought a bowl of soup to Lin Ming.

Seeing Xiao Moxian appear at this time, Lin Ming felt a sense of warmth surge in his heart. A great deal of the frustration he accumulated from his failures also disappeared. "Xian'er, it's fine for you to focus on your own cultivation, there is no need for you to waste your time making soup for me. I'm fine."

"Look at you, you've already become a beggar."

Xiao Moxian reprimanded as she laid down the bowl of soup. Of course, she was only casually speaking and she knew that trying to change Lin Ming's mind on this matter was useless. Moreover, overdrawing his soul force might not be bad for Lin Ming. With the Divine Mist Heart Mantra that Empyrean Divine Mist had passed down, after one overdrew their soul force they could restore it again to full, allowing one's soul force to stably grow.

Xiao Moxian lightly lifted the lid of the bowl and blew a deep breath over it. As Lin Ming looked at Xiao Moxian's gentle figure and her slender white hands, he unknowingly became lost in thought.

Xiao Moxian saw Lin Ming staring at her in a daze and was somewhat embarrassed. Just as she was about to say something, Lin Ming suddenly raised his fists and shouted out in surprise, "I've got it!"

"W-what?" Xiao Moxian said, puzzled.

"I've figured it out! I've figured out how to solve the problem!"

Lin Ming was shaking with excitement, but Xiao Moxian actually puffed out her cheeks, her face blushing red, "You are really… really, crazy…"

Chapter 1603 – Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol

Chapter 1603 – Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol

…

…

…

Lin Ming took out some of the remaining materials in his spatial ring. As he thought more and more about the calculations and deductions he just made, his eyes grew increasingly bright. The fire energy of the Havoc Flame Symbol was unable to match the Asura Heavenly Dao pattern structure, however, the truth was that there wasn't a flaw in the Asura Heavenly Dao pattern construct but that Lin Ming's Fire Laws were unable to reach the level of the Asura Heavenly Dao!

If he could borrow help from Xiao Moxian's nirvana flames and add in his own heavenly tribulation flames, combining the two types of flames together, just what would that be like?

Lin Ming could feel that he had found the most essential point. As he was revising the Havoc Flame Symbol, he limited his viewpoint to the structure of the runes and the fusion of the Asura Heavenly Dao. But, he forgot the attack shape of the Havoc Flame Symbol – the destructive flame itself!

Xiao Moxian's flames were the nirvanic flames of a Dark Phoenix. These flames possessed the attribute of destruction.

As for Lin Ming's own heavenly tribulation flames, they also possessed the attribute of destruction.

If both could perfectly fuse together then the Havoc Flame Symbol would be able to reach its greatest heights!

Only this sort of perfect flame could better match the Asura Heavenly Dao.

“Xian’er, let me borrow your nirvanic flames!” Lin Ming threw his remaining materials into the processing array formation as he excitedly spoke to Xiao Moxian.

Xiao Moxian could also see that Lin Ming’s revision process had reached a critical point. She naturally wouldn’t play a game on Lin Ming because of her little bit of anger from being embarrassed just then. She flicked her finger and a black flame ignited in her palm.

This flame seemed to have a mind of its own. It transformed into all different shapes in the air, like a Dark Phoenix dancing in the skies.

Lin Ming thrust out his hand and opened the Heretical God Force. The heavenly tribulation flames were released by him. Compared to Xian Moxian’s flames, Lin Ming’s heavenly tribulation flames seemed more violent as if they would burn through the void.

The two types of flames slowly melted into one.

Originally, these two types of flames were destructive in nature, and combining them could easily cause an explosion. But for more than 20 years, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had lived together like a mortal couple and their thoughts and hearts had long since connected. Moreover, because they had been dual cultivating for such a long time and exchanged energy between their bodies countless times, their bodies were already in perfect harmony with each other.

Thus, the two flames that Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian released fused together perfectly.

The flames blazed red and black and then suddenly calmed down, quietly burning in the air. There didn’t seem to be any heat coming from this flame. There wasn’t the lively intelligence within Xiao Moxian’s nirvanic flames or the fiery savageness in Lin Ming’s heavenly tribulation flames.

But, Lin Ming knew that this peaceful-seeming flame was actually terrifying. It didn't seem to emit any heat because the heat condensed within the flames had reached the limit!

Looking at this flame, Lin Ming flicked his ten fingers and constantly threw all sorts of materials into the array formation, quickly extracting, heating, grinding, and processing the juices to draw up the divine runic symbol.

Lin Ming quickly wet his divine runic pen with these juices and started drawing.

At this time Lin Ming had already consumed a great deal of his soul force. But because of the vivid excitement that wiped away all exhaustion from his eyes, he was more than capable of completing this divine runic symbol drawing.

Time passed. Lin Ming drew the divine runic symbol in the air, the illustrious patterns leaving Xiao Moxian dazzled.

After two hours, Lin Ming had finished!

In that moment, the entire divine runic symbol emitted a brilliant luminesce, blinding to the eyes!

Lin Ming took out a symbol talisman and rubbed the symbol in the rune on it, forming a complete divine runic symbol. The last step, fusing in the Asura Heavenly Dao, had already been deduced countless times by Lin Ming and was thoroughly memorized within his heart.

Lin Ming revolved all the true essence within his body according to the Asura Sutra. Countless rune Laws gathered towards him, pouring themselves into the Havoc Flame Symbol. After an incense stick of time, the Havoc Flame Symbol was complete!

Looking at the newly transformed Havoc Flame Symbol, Lin Ming was filled with all sorts of emotions. For this symbol paper that was only several inches long, he had paid a tremendous amount of time and effort and now his perseverance had borne fruit!

This final product also had many flaws. It was because of Lin Ming's current state of mind as well as some deductions still not being perfected. Thus, there were many areas to improve.

Lin Ming estimated he would need another ten days to create a new and perfect Havoc Flame Symbol!

"To create this flame symbol, one needs to reach the seventh level Concept in comprehensions of the Fire Laws. This flame symbol itself has also fused with nirvanic flames and heavenly tribulation flames, so let's call it the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol."

Lin Ming casually made up a name for his own work. This Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol represented the current peak of Lin Ming's divine runic arts and understandings of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws.

He thought to himself that when he needed to refine the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill in the future as well as the other pills for the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, he would need to rely on medicinal runic divine symbols. Thus, it would be best if he revised the medicinal runic symbols in order to increase the amount by which they enhanced a pill to its limit. At least it would help him not waste any of the precious materials he purchased.

"You succeeded?" Xiao Moxian happily laughed from nearby.

"Mm." Lin Ming nodded. Although this work wasn't perfect, ten days from now he would be able to draw a perfect Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol. "Let's go buy some more materials now."

In order to draw up 20 Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols, Lin Ming estimated he would need another 30 portions of materials. The difficulty wasn't minor to begin with and this was with the failure rate factored in.

Thus, Lin Ming returned to the material sales section once again. By now, the price had risen by another 50%. This price was already over twice the normal price.

Lin Ming didn’t haggle. He paid the nine sun jades and obtained the materials.

After returning to his room, Lin Ming didn’t immediately set off on working. Rather, he sat in meditation for 20 hours, adjusting his breathing and mindset.

Then, Lin Ming began his crazy drawing process. He used a total of eight days to draw up 21 divine runic symbols.

The extra one was for Lin Ming to keep in hand.

“You’re finally done?”

Xiao Moxian happily asked as she saw the many divine runic symbols.

“I’m done!”

Every single divine runic symbol had the Lin character written on the bottom.

This was the mark left behind by the creator. This sort of mark was left behind by the person’s sense, and because the fluctuations of every person’s sense were different, it wasn’t able to be faked.

To a famous divine runic master, their mark was their brand. As long as their mark was left behind on a divine runic symbol it would cause the price to dramatically rise.

Looking at the Lin character on the bottom right of the divine runic symbols, Lin Ming felt a deep sense of satisfaction. He wanted a brand of his own.

During these ten days, Lin Ming had made a very important modification to the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol. This modification caused the power of the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol to be reduced by a great deal but it also caused it to have an unbelievably special effect.

If this effect was known by other divine runic masters, it would create waves within the entirety of Divine Rune City.

If Lin Ming wanted to earn 3 billion points he would have to depend on the quality of the divine runic symbols. It was impossible for him to rely on quantity.

Lin Ming picked out one divine runic symbol from the stack of 21 and then brought the remaining 20 towards the Mission Division.

It was currently night and the large Mission Division seemed particularly lonely. There were only a dozen some people present.

Lin Ming immediately spotted Suya behind her counter at the end of the Mission Division Hall.

Late at night, Suya was wearing a red silk dress, looking similar to a negligee. The loose silk dress wasn't able to hide Suya's explosive body.

She was lazily lying back on a couch, her eyes closed and her eyelashes gently trembling, as if she was profoundly weary.

Beside her was a small table made from iron vines with a glass of red wine on top of it.

This kind of woman was originally a rare beauty of the world. No matter how she moved she would arouse 10,000 amorous and enchanting feelings.

Suya had already noticed Lin Ming and didn't care for him at all.

It was only when Lin Ming stood in front of her counter and placed the 20 Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols on the countertop did Suya slowly open her eyes.

"I'm here to hand in the mission."

Lin Ming clearly said.

Lin Ming swept her eyes over the 20 Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols. Of course, in her eyes, they were Havoc Flame Symbols.

Suya also had some achievements in the divine runic arts. She could see from a glance that there wasn't a problem with these finished Havoc Flame Symbols.

"You've finished..." Suya looked at Lin Ming with surprise. She took up the wine glass, taking a sip, without any expression on her face. "After three whole months, you've consumed 150 portions of materials to create 20 Havoc Flame Symbols..."

Suya faintly spoke of Lin Ming's 'good work'.

For a normal peak fourth grade divine runic master, it would usually take them around 10 days and 30 some portions of materials to draw up 20 Havoc Flame Symbols.

But Lin Ming, whether it was time or materials, had used up eight or nine times that of an ordinary divine runic master. This was simply far too pathetic.

And even so, Suya didn't believe that Lin Ming had drawn up these divine runic symbols by himself. He likely had some Elders helping him, otherwise how could a young divine runic master draw up a peak fourth grade Havoc Flame Symbol?

She believed that Lin Ming was using the missions she issued as a chance to practice his own divine runic arts. Suya didn't feel good about this at all, especially when she had her own heavy mission weighing her down.

However, no matter what was said, Lin Ming was still a young divine runic master with a bright future, otherwise it would have been impossible for him to obtain Elder Xue's recognition. This was a point that she couldn't deny.

Thus, she didn't mock Lin Ming. She simply said lazily, "You can leave them there and go."

The 20 Havoc Flame Symbols, when compared to 80,000 fourth grade divine runic symbols, were nothing but a drop in a bucket of water. There was naturally no need to have any great reaction at all.

Still, it was a surprise that Lin Ming had completed this mission. She believed that he had simply come here to waste her time and play around three months ago.

“Hey, just what sort of attitude is that!!”

Xiao Moxian unhappily shouted! These were things that Lin Ming had worked diligently and arduously on for the last three months, neglecting to eat or sleep, and yet Suya was looking as if she didn’t care at all. How could Xiao Moxian not be annoyed by this?

In her eyes, this sensual woman in front of her couldn’t even qualify as Lin Ming’s concubine, so what was she being so arrogant about?

Chapter 1604 – Handing in the Mission

Chapter 1604 – Handing in the Mission

…

…

…

Xiao Moxian was originally the bright pearl in Empyrean Demondawn's eyes, and within the monster race she was considered a little princess.

From birth to adulthood, Xiao Moxian had been a star that countless planets revolved around. There were countless young elites that did everything they could to win her favor and innumerable Elders who praised her to the heavens.

In the Divine Realm, whether it was the monster race, demon race, or human race, as long as Xiao Moxian was mentioned, it would be like the arrival of a legend. She was the proudest daughter of heaven, a mystical woman who left all the chosen prides of heavens drowning in love.

In this sort of situation, Xiao Moxian was considerably proud in her heart. This was a type of arrogance she was born with, one that belonged to the most superb woman of a generation.

However, when she was with Lin Ming, she had always taken him as the center. Whether it was giving her primordial yin to Lin Ming, dual cultivating with him, busily following him around everywhere, or even cooking up soup for him, everything she did had been for him. In front of Lin Ming, she didn't display her usual haughtiness and arrogance.

Like this, Xiao Moxian would absolutely not allow other women to put on appearances in front of Lin Ming.

How could an arrogant woman like herself possibly endure another woman mocking her man?

She long felt ill when she looked at this Suya, and now she wanted to walk over and give her two slaps to the face.

Sensing Xiao Moxian's strong hostility, Suya frowned. She continued to lay back on her couch, not bothering to move at all. "What? You want to hit me? This is the special area of the Extreme Star Holy Lands and also where I work. If you do anything to me I will recognize it as an attempt to destroy the cooperative relationship between the Extreme Star Holy Lands and the Divine Runic Masters Guild. If any losses are incurred and the war effort is delayed, can you take on responsibility for this?"

Suya's voice was indifferent, but there was a clear threat behind her words. "If you have nothing else then you can leave. I won't send you off!"

Suya didn't place Xiao Moxian's threat in her eyes. She clearly had her own strength and was confident in herself.

"This woman is hiding her cultivation…"

Lin Ming deeply looked at Suya and yet wasn't able to see what her cultivation was. This was a method similar to Mo Brightmoon's.

Lin Ming estimated that Suya wasn't weak at all. If she was sent by the Extreme Star Holy Lands and was also responsible for all contact between them and the Divine Runic Masters Guild, as well as being the person in charge here, then she definitely wasn't some common person.

Moreover, Old Xue had also reminded him to not view Suya as just a beautiful vase. She had her own exquisite methods.

"Let's not argue with her. Xian'er, let's go."

Lin Ming grabbed Xiao Moxian's hand.

Xiao Moxian could barely endure this insult. But at this time she really couldn't do anything to Suya.

"Those divine runic symbols..." Xiao Moxian pointed to the 20 divine runic symbols on the countertop. Lin Ming had spent a great deal of energy and time drawing up those divine runic symbols. If they were handed over like this then that was far too great a loss!

Xiao Moxian had watched Lin Ming's three months of hard work. Those were the result of Lin Ming's painstaking effort and they also concerned whether or not Lin Ming would be able to smoothly open the second Dao Palace of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace in the future. It would even affect the results of the final smelting trial.

Thus, Xiao Moxian was even more nervous than Lin Ming was.

She felt that Lin Ming would need to receive at least several dozen million contribution points for these 20 divine runic symbols for it to be even.

But Lin Ming simply smiled gently at her and said, "It doesn't matter."

He believed that gold would always shine in the end.

As Lin Ming was walking away, Suya was a bit startled. She said, "You don't want to take your contribution points?"

According to the agreement, Lin Ming would receive 50,000-60,000 contribution points upon completing the mission.

"Raindrop, pay Sir Lin the contribution points."

As Suya spoke, she continued to lazily lean back on her couch. She didn't intend on speaking to Lin Ming again.

To Suya, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were characters on the level of little brothers and sisters, filled with a vigorous youth and loving to compete with others. However, their antics had no effect on Suya.

Only a peak fifth grade or sixth grade divine runic master would have Suya standing up to greet them and see them off. For them, she would even personally process the payment of their contribution points.

With Suya's orders, a green-clothed Raindrop walked forwards, carrying a pink jade slip in her hands. This jade slip had the contribution points recorded within it.

This green-clothed girl's manners were quite humble. She offered forth the pink jade slip and said in a soft voice, "Sir Lin, these are your contribution points. There are a total of 60,000. Please verify them."

The green-clothed girl gently poured her true essence into the jade slip and a brilliant light flashed atop it. Runes began to appear in the air like flashing stars.

These runes were only for accounting; there was no other effect. As long as Lin Ming received them with his divine runic masters badge then these runes would become his points.

The runes for contribution points seemed simple but creating fakes was impossible. This was because every rune had a corresponding twin rune within the Divine Runic Masters Guild. Once it was used up the two twin runes would collide and destroy each other.

If one created a fake rune, there would not be such an effect because no matter how clever a divine runic master was, they still couldn't change the rune record within the guild headquarters.

To a third grade divine runic master, 60,000 contribution points was an absolutely massive sum of wealth.

However, Suya didn't expect that Lin Ming would lightly smile and say, "No need."

“Mm? What do you mean?” Suya looked at Lin Ming with surprise. Turning in a complete mission and receiving points was a completely justified course of action and yet he didn’t want to receive them? Then what was the point of taking on missions?

In the Divine Runic Masters Guild, contribution points were much more precious than more common forms of wealth like nine sun jades. This was because many rare materials required contributions points for purchase. A sixth grade divine runic master would never complain that they had too many contribution points.

Lin Ming casually said, “Let’s just leave it like this. I will temporarily not take my contribution points reward for completing the 20 divine runic symbols.”

Lin Ming wasn’t interested in only 60,000 contribution points. To put it more bluntly, this was like trying to send away a beggar with change. What he needed was 3 billion points; taking or leaving 60,000 points made no difference to that end sum.

If he took it then that was equal to giving his own 20 Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols for free. Lin Ming wasn’t stupid enough to do something like that.

But if he didn’t take the reward then these 20 Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols could be considered as being lent out. Lin Ming said he wouldn’t receive the points reward temporarily; that didn’t mean he would give them away.

“Why don’t you want them now? Do you think my Extreme Star Holy Lands lacks points to reward you?” Suya’s words had a faint arrogance to them. Although she was being pushed around and was in a mess due to the Extreme Star Command issued by Extreme Star Heavenly Palace, to outsiders, Suya was still the calm and confident woman she was before.

She was just like these high and mighty arrogant divine runic masters. As long as she left the confines of her room she would always be dressed properly and impeccably, revealing nothing but her perfect temperament and good image in order to avoid losing any face.

Lin Ming faintly smiled, “Lady Suya says that, but at the same time I do not need your points.”

He responded to Suya, countering her words.

Suya looked at Lin Ming with surprise. Her lips curved up in a playful smile. She mockingly said, “If I’m not wrong, up until now Sir Lin’s contribution points should have been at zero… I heard that you left the Divine Runic Masters Guild for a long time and didn’t receive a salary during that period. And now that you’ve come back for three months, you still haven’t collected any accounts. If you did, then according to your standard as a third grade divine runic master, shouldn’t you have… well… five points?”

The Divine Runic Masters Guild only offered a pitiful salary for low level divine runic masters. This was to encourage divine runic masters to take on missions. The guild had no interest in supporting bums.

A third grade divine runic master would only receive 20 points every year. Lin Ming had been back for three months so he should have received five points.

“Sir Lin, you only have five points so are you sure you don’t need these 60,000 points?”

Suya’s smile became increasingly wide and bright. She originally thought that her verbal attack was strong enough to leave a mark, but she never imagined that Lin Ming wouldn’t be embarrassed at all. Instead, he smiled and said, “Miss Suya, you’ve investigated quite clearly but there is no need for you to worry about my salary. Perhaps a month from now, my total amount of points will have reached a considerable level. There even might be people scrambling to ask me to produce divine runic symbols…”

Lin Ming’s words were subtle. He only used vague terms like ‘considerable’ and ‘might be people’.

However, as Suya heard this, she thought that this Lin Ming was simply incorrigible.

Initially, Lin Ming had put on some act to take a look at fifth grade missions and ended up choosing fourth grade missions. Then, after three whole months passed, he used 150 portions of materials and an amount of time nearly 10 times what others would take to produce 20 divine runic symbols. Moreover, he likely had to request help from someone to finish this mission.

Suya already felt that she had given him sufficient face in not ruining his act last time, but he was still continuing it.

He was clearly poor and yet he didn't want to take the contribution points after turning in the mission. He was pretending to be a wealthy person and even his smile seemed to carry a profoundly fake taste to it.

Then, he actually dared to say that a month from now there would be some people who would be scrambling to ask him to make divine runic symbols. And, she could feel that the 'some people' Lin Ming was referring to was actually pointing to herself.

She was disinclined to bother with a ridiculous fool like Lin Ming. She lightly said, "I have no idea who will be scrambling for you to make divine runic symbols in the future, but I don't have any intention of doing so. If you want to slap yourself in the face by putting on such a stupid farce then go ahead. If you don't wish to receive those 60,000 points then I won't force you either. I don't have the interest or time to play around with you. Today's transactions are over now. I thank you for handing in your mission and I won't be seeing you off."

As Suya spoke she picked up her wine glass, gently swishing it around and taking a sip.

The red wine shimmered along her ruby red lips. When coordinated with her long loose dress and her slightly visible breasts, she exuded an alluring sex appeal.

Lin Ming smiled and left the Mission Division with Xiao Moxian.

Extreme Star Heavenly Palace was in drastic need of divine runic symbols. Three days later, the 20 divine runic symbols that Lin Ming drew up were sent to the front lines.

The ones that obtained this batch of divine runic symbols were a ten man squad of Holy Lords.

The squad captain was known as Dunepeak and he was a late Holy Lord powerhouse. The other squad members were all at the early Holy Lord realm.

This squad had already fought on the front lines for a long time and was in dire need of supplies.

Now, they finally obtained 20 Havoc Flame Symbols. And the bottom right corners of these Havoc Flame Symbols had a Lin character inscribed on them.

Chapter 1605 – Special Effect

Chapter 1605 – Special Effect

…

…

…

For the squad led by Dunepeak, a peak fourth grade divine runic symbol was just barely enough. The effects were far inferior to those of a true fifth grade divine runic symbol.

The ten of them were all at the Holy Lord realm. According to the cultivation of a Holy Lord martial artist, they had the strength to use a fifth grade divine runic symbol. As for a sixth grade divine runic symbol, their cultivation wasn't enough; they simply weren't able to activate one.

"Captain, the Heavenly Fire Symbols we applied for haven't been approved. They've only sent us these little things."

A squad member slapped the 20 Havoc Flame Symbols on a table, looking a bit depressed.

"What are you talking about? What are you calling 'little things'? These are peak fourth grade Havoc Flame Symbols and their effects aren't much worse than those of fifth grade divine runic symbols. We should be happy that we're able to use them. Do you know how tight the current supply of divine runic symbols and pills is right now? The warfront consumes massive amounts of every type and many squads like us are fighting bravely without anything to help them and yet we've got so many supplies to use!

"Cheer up guys! Some of you come from the outer Asura Road and some of you come from the 33 universes. In your universes do you have something like our divine runic symbols?

Isn't fighting just the same? When we battle others we fight mainly by ourselves. These divine runic symbols only serve a supportive role."

"Captain is right!"

After being berated by the captain, the other squad members seemed to perk up, many of them seemingly reignited. Indeed, even without divine runic symbols they could still fight!

"Everyone gets two Havoc Flame Symbols. This means that your lives can be saved two times. Make sure to be careful when you use them. Now, let's go!"

The captain waved his hand and the rest of the squad followed.

....

War was like a blazing inferno, a raging fire, fierce and tragic!

Every day a massive number of masters perished. If an ordinary Holy Land was to be sucked up into this war between two goliaths they would soon be ruined without even dregs remaining.

The spiritas Extreme Star Holy Lands and the saint Heaven Strife Holy Lands had a long-standing feud. But now, because of a titanic mineral resource trove discovered in an inner sea, the endless entanglements and hostilities of the past mixed together and finally erupted into an all-out war between two Empyrean level influences!

As long as one party could suppress the other they could monopolize the giant resource trove and then expand!

The several main leaders of these two great influences all had Empyrean level cultivations and none of them were able to do anything to the others. In this case, cutting down the subordinate strength of the other party was the most effective method possible. If an Empyrean lost their Heavenly Palace and Holy Lands, and all of their disciples, followers, and descendants were killed off, leaving them all by their lonesome, then could they still be considered an Empyrean level influence? What ability would they have to monopolize an inner sea giant mineral lode that was a million miles wide?

Thus, the war between these two great influences involved all their World Kings, Holy Lords, and even Divine Lord martial artists!

These mid-ranked powerhouses of the Empyrean level influences battled amongst the inner sea and the countless islands that dotted it, filling the air with the smell of slaughter and blood! As for the small squads, they were all assigned to engage in minor guerilla battles.

Dunepeak's squad was filled with experienced soldiers. All of them knew what combat tactics they should use. As for special items like recovery pills, they were all one-time consumable items. They were to be saved until they absolutely had to be used.

In order to maintain their life-saving cards, they chose battles that were favorable to them and ones where they could launch sneak attacks. But in this world of war and intrigue, how could they avoid being stabbed in the back themselves? At this time, Dunepeak's squad had finally been surrounded by an enemy ambush.

As they saw an old opponent that had almost been extinguished by their squad last time, Dunepeak's complexion became extremely ugly.

"Old friend, it's been a long time since we've seen each other, hahaha!"

A brazen and contemptuous laugh echoed out in the air. A man wearing black armor and with a thick scar on his face stepped forwards. This man had a dragon saber strapped to his back. The dragon saber was the height of a man and a half and left deep imprints in the ground with every step.

Behind this scarred man were also 20 Holy Lord martial artists!

This was a combination of two squads. The other squad was a brother squad of the scar-faced man and together they were twice as strong as Dunepeak's squad in terms of combat strength. If a true life or death battle were to occur here today, then Dunepeak's squad would suffer certain disastrous defeat!

They only had two roads to take. One was to fight with their lives on the line and risk themselves to cause heavy losses to the enemy.

The second was to scatter in all directions and let the enemy kill half of them without being able to do anything to them at all. As the members of Dunepeak's squad realized this, their complexions became extremely ugly.

"Tyrant Blade, I'm surprised you haven't died yet!" Dunepeak's voice was icy cold.

"Haha, if you haven't died, how could I die? Thanks to you, all of my brothers were killed off last time! Now, I will use your life to pay tribute to their souls. Go, kill them all!"

Tyrant Saber waved his hand and his squad of 20 violently clashed with Dunepeak's squad of 10!

In a life or death slaughter, neither side held back. For a time horrifying waves rose up in the inner sea.

However, Dunepeak's squad had half the members of their enemies. With one person being forced to face two they were quickly suppressed.

In just a short half incense stick of time within this brutal combat, several of Dunepeak's squad members had received heavy wounds!

In terms of their mortal bodies, the spiritas martial artists were far inferior to the saint martial artists. Even if the saint martial artists were injured it wouldn't affect their combat strength too much. But once a spiritas martial artist was wounded, their combat strength would be heavily influenced.

"Ahh!"

With a miserable cry, one of Dunepeak's squad members had his left arm chopped off!

The left arm that shined with the light of a spiritas was flung high in the air, its blood sprinkling down into the choppy waters below!

“Crimson Cloud!”

Dunepeak watched as one of his own brothers was heavily wounded. It was likely that all ten of them would be buried here today. A deep feeling of despair and anger rose up in his heart.

“Kill kill kill them all! Killing one is enough, killing two is a profit!”

The soldiers were always somewhat bloody. Dunepeak didn’t want to be chased around the inner sea like dogs to their death. He led his squad into a life or death battle!

“Haha, beat him to death!”

The two saint soldiers grinned as they rushed towards Crimson Cloud. But, Crimson Cloud himself had already suffered a severe wound and was no longer able to resist.

Dunepeak watched helplessly as all of this unfolded before him. He wasn’t able to go out and help because he was facing two captain level characters at the same time, one of them Tyrant Saber!

Saber light flashed. Crimson Cloud thought that his life had was at its end. All he could do now was give everything he had and try to drag down one of them to the grave with him!

He pulled out the two Havoc Flame Symbols he had just obtained yesterday!

This sort of peak fourth grade offensive divine runic symbol was almost equal to Crimson Cloud’s all-out strike. Only in a state where both he and the enemy were wounded would this type of divine runic symbol have a miraculous effect. If he used it right at the start of battle then it wouldn’t be too useful.

Currently, Crimson Cloud was heavily wounded and could no longer use any techniques. All he could do was throw out these Havoc Flame Symbols and struggle with his enemies!

Even if he couldn’t kill them he could at least wound them.

“Be careful! Those are divine runic symbols!”

The saint martial artists felt their hearts gripped as Crimson Cloud took out two Havoc Flame Symbols.

During the battle between the saints and the spiritas, the saints had suffered the full pain wrought by these divine runic symbols.

Because the saints didn’t create divine runic symbols they also didn’t have sources for divine runic symbols. Their advantage came from their strong endurance and resilience that allowed for sustained fighting. But when it came to equipment, pills, and divine runic symbols, they were far inferior to the spiritas. Many times, the spiritas had used these divine runic symbols to change the course of a battle.

Thus, they were certainly afraid of these things.

“Defend together!”

The two saint martial artists shouted, revolving their astral essence to the limit to form a barrier. And at this time, the two Havoc Flame Symbols exploded!

The dao patterns of the Asura Heavenly Dao wove together in the skies. Fire energy wildly surged out in all directions. For a time, the entire sky was lit up with a deep crimson light!

The two saint martial artists were pushed back as their astral essence resisted the flaming heat of these Havoc Flame Symbols!

With the two Havoc Flame Symbols used together, their total might was twice that of Crimson Cloud’s all out strike. Even though the two saint martial artists had joined together they still felt it difficult to withstand!

“These flames, how can they have a corrosive power? They’re corroding away at our astral essence!”

Seeing their protective astral essence melting away like wax in a fire, the complexions of the two saint martial artists changed.

They felt that the flames released by this Havoc Flame Symbol were far beyond ordinary. They carried with them an attribute of destruction!

Ka ka ka!

Their protective astral essence was split apart. The two saint martial artists were overwhelmed with shock. The power of these Havoc Flame Symbols far surpassed the usual; they had already burnt through their protective astral essence.

“Bodily defense!”

The bodies of the saint martial artists were ranked in first amongst all the various races; they were comparable to ancient vicious beasts. Even if their protective astral essence shattered they still had their physical bodies as a second layer of defense.

Energy erupted from their bodies. The bones of the two saint martial artists released explosive crackling sounds! But at this time, the destructive flames were already falling down upon them in a deluge of fire.

Peng!

The flames exploded and black flames burnt through the air. The two saint martial artists screamed in pain as they were sent flying away. Their chests and arms were scorched black, even revealing the bones beneath!

However, the life force of the saint martial artists was far too formidable. Even though they were burnt to such a degree they still maintained a considerable level of combat strength.

“How horrifying!”

The two saint martial artists began to drip with a cold sweat. These wounds could heal in one or two days, and if they used pills it would be even quicker.

However, they felt a moment of impending doom as those flames scorched them. This was because they had no idea when those dreadful black flames would finally burn out.

Luckily, their astral essence was deeper and managed to hold out until the end of these flames.

“Not a single one died…”

Crimson Cloud mirthlessly smiled. It was already extremely good for a peak fourth grade divine runic symbol to have such an effect.

To depend on two one-time use peak fourth grade divine runic symbols to kill two Holy Lord powerhouses wasn’t realistic to begin with. A divine runic symbol could only display its best effects when a battle reached its white-hot phase.

“If only these were fifth grade divine runic symbols…”

Crimson Cloud spat out a mouthful of blood, his face pale. To fight two enemies alone, this step was his limit. He hated himself for being useless and not being able to lighten the burden for his brothers.

Just as he was planning to burn his soul and send out one final strike, an incomprehensible scene occurred in front of Crimson Cloud!

After the flames of the Havoc Flame Symbol disappeared, the mystical dao patterns that spread through the air still didn’t vanish. Even the two talisman papers that had the lines of the dao patterns were unharmed.

The Asura dao patterns continued to revolve according to innumerable mysterious rules. Then, beneath the incredulous eyes of Crimson Cloud, the dao patterns fused back together, forming two new Havoc Flame Symbols!

It was like the two Havoc Flame Symbols had never been used before!

Chapter 1606 – Power of the Flame Symbols

Chapter 1606 – Power of the Flame Symbols

…

…

…

A divine runic symbol was originally a one-time use consumable item. Once it was used up it was gone. No one had ever heard of a divine runic symbol that would not disappear after being used and would instead be restored to its original state!

The two divine runic symbols floated back into Crimson Cloud's hand as if they had a mind of their own. After entering his hand, besides a warm and comfortable feeling that surrounded them, everything was the exact same as before he had used them.

If he didn't watch the inner sea being swept up in a terrifying explosion of flames and didn't see the two saint martial artists being scorched black, Crimson Cloud would really wonder whether or not he had used these Havoc Flame Symbols just now.

"Can these Havoc Flame Symbols actually be used multiple times?"

As soon as this thought flashed through Crimson Cloud's mind he nearly couldn't believe it himself.

Divine runic symbols were one-time use objects just like pills. He had never heard about a pill being eaten, reforming, and then being able to be eaten again. That completely defied all common sense logic!

"This fellow!"

Those two saint martial artists that were burnt by the destructive flames also saw the divine runic symbols used by Crimson Cloud restore themselves to their original appearance after being used.

The saint martial artists were panic-stricken. Just what was going on here? If a divine runic symbol could be used multiple times, was that even allowed!?

Seeing Crimson Cloud hold those two divine runic symbols in hand, the saint martial artists were already deeply afraid. They didn't dare to attack.

But at this time, another martial artist sneered. "He's just bluffing. If that spiritas dog was able to use divine runic symbols multiple times then our Heaven Strife Holy Lands would have been long destroyed by their Extreme Star Holy Lands!"

"That's right! I can't believe I was almost fooled." The two saint martial artists grimaced as they mocked themselves for their stupidity. If this Crimson Cloud fellow really had such fierce divine runic symbols then why would he only use them after one of his arms was cut off? He would have used them at the start!

If so, then the two of them together wouldn't have been able to defeat him.

"Attack together, kill him!"

"This spiritas dog, he dares to trick me? I will tear off that dog head of his!"

The two saint martial artists launched their attacks once more. Last time they had defended with everything they had, but now they were attacking with everything they had!

Seeing those two masters hurtle towards him, Crimson Cloud grit his teeth and activated the Havoc Flame Symbols once more!

In a hopeless situation he still had to try everything he could. At this time, his only hope of survival was that these two Havoc Flame Symbols could actually be used multiple times. Otherwise, he was as good as dead!

Pouring his spirit essence into the Havoc Flame Symbols, Crimson Cloud felt as if they had been insatiably hungry, crazily sucking up his spirit essence!

Although Crimson Cloud had lost an arm, the truth was that he hadn't used up too much of his spirit essence. Even after these two Havoc Flame Symbols wildly drew out his spirit essence, he still had over half remaining.

"What is this..."

Crimson Cloud was startled by the Havoc Flame Symbols drawing out so much of his spirit essence. When he had used peak fourth grade divine runic symbols in the past, although he had to pour in his spirit essence, he had never poured in this much!

This sort of feeling was like the two Havoc Flame Symbols in his hand were a bottomless abyss, recklessly sucking out his strength.

Crimson Cloud had no time to respond. At this moment, the two Havoc Flame Symbols flew out, releasing a blazing light in the skies.

The surrounding heaven and earth origin energy began moving like a tsunami, gathering together and condensing into a raging sea of flames in the skies. And in the midst of this sea of flames, the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws wove together with the mysterious dao patterns. Beneath the influence of these dao patterns, the sea of flames gained a horrifying destructive aura, as if they would burn through space!

The two saint martial artists that were rushing forwards were instantly surrounded by this turbulent sea of fire!

"What!?"

No matter what, the two saint martial artists would never have imagined that those two divine runic symbols could be used multiple times. If this Crimson Cloud really had such divine runic symbols then why didn't he use them earlier? Why wait until now!?

They had no time to think. That ghastly sea of black flames contained a terrifying destructive aura. As they were sucked into the center of it, their astral essence quickly consumed itself.

The power when these Havoc Flame Symbols were used again even far surpassed the first time!

Peng!

One saint martial artist's protective astral essence was burnt to nothing! He cried out in alarm as he faced the roiling black flames alone, nearly scared out of his mind.

He had already been severely wounded by the first use of the Havoc Flame Symbol; how could his body endure it a second time?

"How could this happen!"

All across the battlefield, the other martial artists also noticed the situation happening here. Two seas of flames had appeared and their reckless surges of energy were wildly rushing out, colliding with everyone else.

"This is… Havoc Flame Symbols!?"

Dunepeak's squad was stunned. According to traditional concepts, divine runic symbols should only be used at the last moments of a desperate struggle in order to display the best effects. Thus, besides the almost-dead Crimson Cloud, no one had used them.

With a pitiful scream, that saint martial artist whose protective astral essence shattered first was swept up by the black flames! The destructive power within those black flames broke into his body, ravaging through his meridians and recklessly destroying everything!

Those black flames could burn astral essence and were impossibly difficult to suppress!

The saint martial artist frantically struggled but his life vitality was rapidly fading!

“Captain!” Crimson Cloud suddenly shouted out, “Let’s use our Havoc Flame Symbols together!”

He didn’t know whether or not all the Havoc Flame Symbols could be used multiple times, but this was the only gamble he could make!

If he was right then they could make all their opponents suffer severe wounds without paying too great a price!

Hearing Crimson Cloud’s shouts, the other martial artists in Dunepeak’s squad were all stunned. At this time, they witnessed something incredible.

The Asura Heavenly Dao Laws that formed the terrifying sea of fire suddenly converged in the air, turning into two new flame symbols that flew into Crimson Cloud’s hand.

“What in the world!?” Dunepeak’s squad felt this was all too unbelievable. After these Havoc Flame Symbols were used they actually restored themselves to their previous state!

Without further speaking, Dunepeak took out his own two Havoc Flame Symbols. He didn’t know whether these two flame symbols could be used more than once but this was his only hope!

All the other martial artists in Dunepeak’s squad followed suit, bringing out their Havoc Flame Symbols.

In an instant, the entire sky was lit up with an endless panorama of black flames.

Because of these flames, the vast inner sea seemed to boil with excitement…

……

After Lin Ming handed over the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols he bought a massive amount of materials and returned to his divine runic arts room to practice.

Lin Ming was only practicing one thing: revising the structure of the divine runic symbols so that they drew even closer to the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws. This would allow their strength to greatly increase or they could even be like the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols and obtain an unbelievable special effect.

Only this type of divine runic symbol would sell for a sky-high price.

The Havoc Flame Symbol that Lin Ming revised was only a peak fourth grade divine runic symbol. Although its effects were heaven-defying, Lin Ming still remained unsatisfied.

Because the grade of the divine runic symbol wasn't too high, only an Empyrean level influence like the Extreme Star Holy Lands that was also at war with another party would purchase them in bulk. Otherwise, selling them off one at a time would be far too slow a method to gather wealth.

Lin Ming's goal was to revise a fifth grade divine runic symbol!

This was a gargantuan project. The revision of a fifth grade divine runic symbol was several times more difficult than that of a fourth grade divine runic symbol!

Even though Lin Ming had some previous experiences, he would still struggle with it.

Lin Ming secluded himself in his divine runic arts room and restarted the days of neglecting to eat and sleep.

A massive amount of materials was placed atop the divine runic table. Jade slips were haphazardly scattered everywhere as he made new calculations and deductions every night.

Making countless calculations all day long was an extremely arduous and tedious process. Luckily, Xiao Moxian would frequently make soul recovery soups and bring them to him, relieving his boredom and making him feel a hint of pleasure and concern.

But, Lin Ming was well aware that the revision of a fifth grade divine runic symbol could not be accomplished in one go like with a fourth grade divine runic symbol. Rather, the process was divided into multiple stages and each stage only represented a part.

What Lin Ming studied now was only the theoretical basis behind it.

If Lin Ming didn't have any inspirations, he would find something else to do.

And of these other things, the most important was to refine a soul recovery pill for Empyrean Divine Mist.

A soul recovery pill that could help an Empyrean would have a grade close to a transcendent divine pill. It would be extremely difficult to refine.

At least, this was with Lin Ming's current level.

Time passed a day at a time. In the blink of an eye, 20 days had passed since Lin Ming handed in his mission.

At the front lines of the Extreme Star Holy Lands, ten Holy Lord level squads were gathered together. The 100 plus people were called here to hold a war assembly.

This sort of war assembly would occur every month. Everyone would freely exchange information. This included information they obtained on enemies, fighting tactics, and new adaptations to make on the battlefield.

At this time, in a corner of the assembly, a tall and majestic man was standing there. This big fellow had a long beard and a pair of large axes hanging on his back. He was currently beaming with joy!

"I'm not exaggerating! You have no idea what the scene was like at the time! There were over 21 opponents and also two late Holy Lords leading them! As for us, we only had 10 people; this was a completely one-sided match! And, those saint demons even laid traps for us. With an order from the captain we engaged them in a brutal struggle for survival. That battle was truly world-shaking, enough to shock gods and alarm ghosts!

The big fellow was speaking so fast and excitedly that his beard was flying up. Then, a strong hand slapped his back and an icy voice sounded out. “Sit down and stop making things up!”

After being yelled at the big bearded fellow wasn’t feeling too good. But as he turned around, he saw the one standing behind him was his captain – Dunepeak.

The bearded fellow immediately shut up. He said, “Captain, I’m just telling the truth... where am I making things up...”

“Good. Then shut up.”

Even though Dunepeak had earned a massive merit he still couldn’t be happy about this war assembly. He knew that he couldn’t conceal his combat report, otherwise that would be a grave and oftentimes fatal offense. But, he still had a single worry. That was... once he gave his report, would the strange Havoc Flame Symbols in their hands be confiscated by the higher powers?

Before this, he had learned through other channels that it was only his squad’s Havoc Flame Symbols that had special effects; the divine runic symbols of the other squads were the same as before and could only be used once.

Chapter 1607 – “Lin”

Chapter 1607 – “Lin”

…

…

…

At this time, a large middle-aged man stepped into the center of the assembly site. This person had thick eyebrows, eyes like a tiger, and an intimidating aura. He was an Empyrean disciple from Extreme Star Heavenly Palace, a Great World King powerhouse – Deep Blue.

These 10 Holy Lord squads were under Deep Blue’s direct jurisdiction and he was also the one presiding over this assembly.

As he stepped into the assembly site, Deep Blue spoke a few opening remarks before looking at Dunepeak. He went straight to the point, “Dunepeak, in your combat report you said that your team achieved a great success. You fell into an ambush of 21 enemies that even had two captain-level characters but instead of being killed you slayed 13 people and forced the remaining eight to flee into the wild. As for your squad, the only price you paid was some wounds?”

Although Deep Blue seemed to have a happy expression, his eyes were like a hawk as he looked over Dunepeak’s squad of 10.

After being praised by Deep Blue in the war assembly, Dunepeak and his squad felt proud of their accomplishments. Indeed, they had truly won a great victory in that battle and had fought with vigor!

However, Dunepeak’s mind was still filled with doubts. 20 Havoc Flame Symbols were given to their squad of 10; would the other 10 be taken back? He clenched his teeth, “Yes!”

“Mm, good, you earned merits, great merits. All of you may receive rewards in accordance with army regulations!” Deep Blue said. The martial artists in Dunepeak’s squad were increasingly excited.

But at this time, Deep Blue changed the conversation. “Then… I want to know, how did you win?”

Dunepeak’s mind shook. The subject had finally been brought up!

As he expected, when headquarters provided those Havoc Flame symbols they didn’t know about their special effects.

Dunepeak took a deep breath and took out the combat report he had prepared long in advance.

He stepped forwards and bowed, saying, “Lord Deep Blue, I have already prepared the combat report. This combat report may have a considerable influence on the war. But, before Lord Deep Blue takes a look, I have a request to make.”

“Oh? Request?”

“Yes!” Dunepeak had a serious expression. “I request that in any event, Lord Deep Blue does not take back military equipment!”

“Why would I take back your military equipment?” Deep Blue’s eyebrows shot up. He could faintly feel that Dunepeak’s combat report was related to this equipment.

He hesitated for a moment before saying, “As long as it is equipment issued by the military I naturally won’t take it back.”

“Thank you Lord Deep Blue.” Dunepeak said, ecstatic. If Deep Blue guaranteed this under the eyes of so many people present then he wouldn’t renege on his words.

Dunepeak immediately passed over the combat report and began speaking. He could give up the rewards from this merit but he definitely had to keep those 20 Havoc Flame Symbols no matter what. This was a matter that concerned his life and the lives of his brothers!

As Deep Blue listened to the combat report, his expression was calm, then startled, then filled with disbelief. At the end, he rose to his feet, unable to contain his surprise!

His eyes were filled with excitement. He looked at Dunepeak with disbelief. “Havoc Flame Symbols that can be used multiple times? Are you speaking the truth?”

Deep Blue’s voice was filled with potent energy. It spread through the entire war assembly. For a time, the entire assembly site fell into complete silence.

Everyone could clearly hear Deep Blue’s words.

Havoc Flame Symbols that could be used more than once? This kind of divine runic symbol existed in the world?

Divine runic symbols were powerful but their creation costs were astronomical. They could only be used once. A martial artist normally had two or three divine runic symbols to protect themselves and they would only be willing to take them out in critical situations. They were treated like hidden treasures.

If there was a Havoc Flame Symbol that could be used unlimited times, just what sort of scene was that? If there was a squad where each person had a Havoc Flame Symbol, wouldn’t that be a violent and random barrage of explosions? There was no opponent who could withstand that!

This sounded unrealistic, but Dunepeak’s squad had defeated an enemy force twice their size and hadn’t lost a single person. This was the best proof!

As the members of the other squads realized this, their eyes began to burn with heat.

Such a divine tool of the battlefield, they also wanted one!

………..

Late at night, Divine Runic Masters Guild –

At night, the Mission Division of the Divine Runic Masters Guild would be extremely lonely and desolate. But no matter how lonely it was, Suya would not leave her position.

For 24 hours a day, whether it was eating, meditating, or occasionally cultivating, Suya would spend her time here.

In this alone, Suya was extremely devoted to her work. At any time, anyone could find her if they wished.

Of course, the reason for this was also due to the tremendous pressure on her.

At this time, Suya was dressed in a loose pink nightdress. She sat behind the counter, taking inventory of the divine runic symbols she had.

In truth, she had taken inventory too many times so it was impossible for her to have made a mistake. But she still did so because it was a habit of hers.

The reason this habit developed was because Suya was feeling extremely restless in her heart.

Of the time that Extreme Star Heavenly Palace had given her to complete her mission, a quarter had passed.

However, she had only received 9000 fourth grade divine runic symbols and 1500 fifth grade divine runic symbols.

But the mission that headquarters had given her was to gather 80,000 fourth grade divine runic symbols and 10,000 fifth grade divine runic symbols!

The disparity was far too great.

The divine runic masters weren't too enthusiastic about taking on missions.

These people were extremely arrogant to begin with. Besides missions, they also had to cultivate, study, and research.

The soaring cost of materials had unknowingly increased the difficulty for divine runic masters to complete their missions. After all, if a divine runic master failed to draw up a symbol they would have to pay for the materials lost.

If things continued at this speed, Suya wouldn't even have half the amount of divine runic symbols needed when the deadline for her mission came!

What should she do?

Suya's advantage lay in her feminine charms.

But, those that prostrated themselves beneath her pink dress were mostly young divine runic masters without much skill. In Suya's eyes, they were even worse than Lin Ming.

A true higher level divine runic master wasn't necessarily attracted by Suya's feminine charms and wiles.

In recent days, Suya had smiled towards these high level divine runic masters every day, trying to arouse their interest; she was beginning to feel a bit exhausted by this work.

Playing with the cup of red wine in her hands, Suya's heart was not as calm as she revealed on the outside.

"Young Lady, the Heavenly Palace has passed down orders."

At this time, Raindrop approached and took out a golden token with both hands.

"Another Extreme Star Command!" Suya's heart skipped a beat. Every time she saw an Extreme Star Command, she would have an unlucky foreboding feeling.

With a deep breath, Suya swept through the contents of the Extreme Star Command with her sense. For a time, she was shocked.

“A divine runic symbol that could be used countless times? There was such a strange divine runic symbol in the ones I delivered?”

Suya also had some attainments in the divine runic arts, otherwise she wouldn’t have been sent here to the Divine Runic Masters Guild. She was well aware that it was an impossible matter for divine runic symbols to be used multiple times.

But, headquarters wouldn’t lie about something so important. Perhaps there really was someone who invented a divine runic symbol that could be used many times!

“Who is it?”

The first people Suya thought of were the peak divine runic grandmasters of the Divine Runic Masters Guild, and even the Guild President, a seventh level divine runic master!

But, none of these people seemed to have taken a mission from the Extreme Star Holy Lands. With their status they wouldn’t bother with such things…

“Could it be a peak sixth grade divine runic master?” Suya immediately thought. There were some sixth grade divine runic masters that had taken on missions.

But as she thought about it more she soon shot down this idea. Within the Extreme Star Command, there was a phantom image of the divine runic symbol which could be used multiple times. Suya could immediately see that it was a fourth grade divine runic symbol – a Havoc Flame Symbol.

A sixth grade divine runic master wouldn’t take on a mission to create Havoc Flame Symbols.

“Havoc Flame Symbol…”

Suya had a good memory and she could recall that there were people who took on missions to draw up Havoc Flame Symbols these days.

But as she recalled this, she knew there were only five or six people who had taken on missions to draw up Havoc Flame Symbols. Of these people, there wasn't anyone who was capable of accomplishing such an unbelievable matter!

"It shouldn't be him…"

Suya inexplicably thought of Lin Ming but she immediately shook her head. She was being too ridiculous here. Just how old was Lin Ming? He was less than a hundred years old and his divine runic master rank was only the third grade if she remembered correctly.

But as Suya was thinking this, the expression on her face froze.

She subconsciously covered her mouth.

On the phantom image of that Havoc Flame Symbol, there was a clear character carved onto the bottom right corner of the divine runic symbol – 'Lin'!

"Lin? Could it… really be him!?"

Realizing this possibility, Suya was completely stunned.

Chapter 1608 – Late Night Suya

Chapter 1608 – Late Night Suya

…

…

…

“You would like to look for Lin Ming? Miss Suya, please wait a moment, I will check for you…”

In the divine runic room rental area, a young receptionist in a long skirt smiled sweetly as she looked up Lin Ming’s room number for Suya.

“Fifth grade divine runic room, Room #28.”

The young receptionist continued, “It is late at night so Sir Lin is probably resting at this moment. Miss Suya, do you plan on visiting Sir Lin?”

“Yes.” Suya nodded.

The young receptionist tittered. Suya was the most eye-catching beauty in the Divine Runic Masters Guild this year. In the middle of the night she wore such a sensual pink nightdress to enter Lin Ming’s room alone, just what could she be planning?

This sort of meeting would always cause young girls to form interesting associations.

Of course, she naturally couldn’t reveal these ideas.

Seeing the strange glint in the young receptionist’s eyes, Suya certainly knew what she was thinking. But, she was disinclined to care about such things.

At this time her mind was a mess. She didn't know whether or not that Havoc Flame Symbol really came from Lin Ming and how she should face him.

In Suya's memories, there weren't many people within the entire Divine Runic Masters Guild who had the surname of Lin. This was because while this name was relatively common within the human race, there were very, very few people of the soul race who had such a name.

If a spiritas divine runic master were to create their own divine runic symbol, there would be no reason for randomly putting the 'Lin' character on a corner of the divine runic symbol.

However, this third grade divine runic master was far too young. How could he possibly produce such a ridiculous divine runic symbol?

All of these thoughts raced through Suya's mind. Soon, she reached Room #28.

Lin Ming's contribution points were non-existent. This also meant that he couldn't rent a room that required contribution points.

Looking at the tightly sealed stone door, Suya's mood was extremely complex. She hesitantly reached out a hand and pressed down on the sound transmission array formation........

……

At this time, within the divine runic room, materials were scattered chaotically everywhere. There were also many incomplete divine runic symbols.

But above a stone bed in a corner of the room, a beautiful spring scene was taking place.

After delivering the Havoc Flame Symbols and completing his mission, Lin Ming painstakingly researched in this room for a month and finally came up with a way to transform a fifth grade divine runic symbol.

Today, Lin Ming had completed the preliminary theoretical basis and this part of his work had come to an end. Then, he and Xiao Moxian began to dual cultivate Heavenly Extreme Bliss together.

But at this time, Lin Ming heard a sound transmitted from the array formation at the front door; someone was knocking on his door.

“Mm? Who would come looking for me at this time?”

Lin Ming frowned. Normally speaking, when a divine runic master entered their divine runic room they would spend most of their time in deep concentration. It wasn’t polite to suddenly bother them.

Moreover, it was late at night so this was even more impolite.

“Who’s here?”

Xiao Moxian’s face was blushed her. She grabbed her night clothes from a nearby counter and covered her perfectly shaped body. She had come to Lin Ming’s room many times and there had never been a visitor before.

“I have no idea.”

Lin Ming stood up, dressed himself, and walked over to open the front door.

With a creaking sound the stone door opened and the alluring figure of a sexy beauty stood on the other side. Lin Ming was stunned for a moment.

“Sir Lin.” Although Suya felt that this situation was extremely awkward and embarrassing, she still revealed a charming smile. At this time, Suya wore a light pink nightdress that exposed a blinding amount of snow-white skin. Her plunging neckline was so deep that it exposed the top of her gauzy negligee and one could make out her exquisite thighs and curves. To appear at night with such seductive clothing, most men would feel their blood boiling by now.

“So it’s Miss Suya.”

Lin Ming could approximately guess what Suya came here for but he didn’t reveal any of his thoughts. He simply stood at the entrance and asked with a smile, “What is Miss Suya here for?”

Sensing Lin Ming’s not quite welcoming smile, Suya thought little of it. Instead, she cast him a charming look and said in a soft and breathy voice, “Sir Lin, will you not ask me to enter?”

To ask such a question at such a time and place with these clothes and with such an alluring tone, there was no man that would refuse her.

However, Suya never thought that at this time, a young woman’s voice would echo out in response, “It’s not too convenient for you to come in now.”

Following this voice, a black-clothed young woman walked out from behind Lin Ming, a playful smile hanging on her voice. She said in a whimsical tone, “Oh, isn’t it Miss Suya? What, why are you here so late? Are you looking for my Lin Ming for some reason?”

Xiao Moxian emphasized the words ‘my Lin Ming’, clearly demonstrating a taste of her power here.

Seeing Xiao Moxian, Suya’s smile froze. She didn’t think that Xiao Moxian would also be here. Moreover, with the faint blush that was covering Xiao Moxian’s face as well as the light scent coming from the room, Suya could already guess what was happening inside.

This left Suya speechless. What sort of coincidence was this?

In ordinary times, with Suya’s pride, she would have already turned and left upon seeing such a scene. But, today was her unlucky day. With the Extreme Star Command pushing down on her she had to obtain an answer as soon as possible. The fires of war that blazed on the frontlines would not wait for her.

She barely managed to maintain her smiling face as she said, “Oh, isn’t it Miss Xian’er? The last time I saw you I felt that Xian’er’s looks and beauty were astonishing. You truly left a deep impression on me!”

Suya was overjoyed that she remembered Xiao Moxian’s name from somewhere, otherwise things would have been even more awkward.

However, Xiao Moxian remained indignant, clearly not falling for Suya’s words. She carelessly said, “I truly admire Miss Suya’s loquacious ability to communicate. For Miss Suya to say such fake words, it’s as if our last meeting had a happy ending. On another note, would it trouble you to not call me Xian’er? I’m not too familiar with you and hearing you call me that is quite disgusting for me, and embarrassing for you.”

As Xiao Moxian spoke, she looked down to stare at the proud twin peaks that were exposed through Suya’s flimsy garments. She chuckled and said, “I’ve already heard rumors that many young divine runic masters in the Divine Runic Masters Guild were enthralled by Miss Suya to the point of being crazed idiots, but now that I see it for myself it seems that these rumors weren’t an exaggeration. For you to come to a man’s room alone in the middle of the night and with such an appearance, do you think this is appropriate?”

Hearing Xiao Moxian’s cynical mocking, Suya was nearly angered to death. Just what sort of character was Suya? She had been revered for so many years and yet today she was being taunted by some young girl and her only choice was to respond with a smile.

“It seems that Miss Xian’er had some misunderstandings about me. If there was any place where I offended you before, then I, Suya, respectfully apologize to Miss Xian’er for any mistakes I made in the past.”

Suya had already made a full gesture of defeat and Xiao Moxian had no intention of beating up someone that had already fallen to the ground. She smirked and said, “What matters do you have with my Lin Ming tonight?”

The truth was that Xiao Moxian also approximately guessed what was happening. She certainly didn't believe that Suya came in the middle of the night to have some sexual rendezvous with Lin Ming, but knew it was because of those Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols. It would be impossible for this Suya woman to seduce Lin Ming tonight, especially with her here.

"It's a good thing I was here tonight, otherwise only the heavens would know what this succubus would have done." Xiao Moxian thought, her lips curving up in a pleased smile.

Seeing the two women quarrelling, Lin Ming awkwardly coughed and said, "Miss Suya, please come in and take a seat."

Although Lin Ming didn't have any good impression towards this overly proud and arrogant woman, he still needed to go through her to earn contribution points.

Lin Ming's words finally resolved Suya's problem.

Suya looked at Lin Ming with gratefulness and then entered the room.

Lin Ming's room was extremely messy. There were materials piled up and scattered all over with symbol papers thrown about. There was also a large pile of jade slips used for calculations and deductions.

The clean and orderly Xiao Moxian originally couldn't stand this chaotic mess. However, she tried not to move these scattered things unless absolutely necessary so she didn't affect Lin Ming's research.

To invite a guest into such a messy room was extremely disgraceful to begin with. If a beautiful woman were to come in, she would likely frown and possibly leave.

However, as Suya saw this cluttered room and the messy divine runic table, her eyes brightened with a dazzling light!

She was also a divine runic master so she knew what the mess on the divine runic table meant. All of those failed symbol papers and haphazardly placed jade slips meant that Lin Ming was researching something!

When a divine runic master did research they would often consume a massive amount of materials. As for the deductions, they would be written on jade slips. Looking at the divine runic table, there were at least 50-60 jade slips piled atop it.

These specialized jade slips had an enormous storing capacity. If a massive mortal encyclopedia was stored into a single jade slip it wouldn't even account for the tip of an iceberg.

Suya found it hard to imagine just how many calculations and deductions Lin Ming had made in these past days. Could the improvements of the Havoc Flame Symbol have been done by Lin Ming alone?

"Sir Lin is truly hardworking… no wonder you would have such proud results at such a young age." Suya smiled as she looked at the divine runic symbols and jade slips on the divine runic table. The more she looked, the more startled she was. The failed divine runic symbols were all fifth grade divine runic symbols! Just what was Lin Ming doing? Could he actually be thinking of improving a fifth grade divine runic symbol? Had he gone mad?

These thoughts instantly flashed through Suya's mind, making her even more startled. She felt she had to completely reassess the value of this young man before her.

"Miss Suya, please speak openly if you have any matters to discuss." Lin Ming said, going straight to the point.

"Alright, then I won't beat around the bush. Sir Lin, I want to ask you, did the 20 Havoc Flame Symbols you turned in for your mission have Sir Lin's surname inscribed onto the bottom right corner?"

As Suya asked, although her expression was tranquil her breathing was heavy.

Suya’s question was well within Lin Ming’s anticipation. He indifferently nodded and said, “That’s right. Did the Extreme Star Holy Lands use those divine runic symbols well?”

Although Suya already had some guesses in her heart, she still held her breath upon hearing Lin Ming’s answer. She felt her heartbeat quicken. Yes, it was really him!

To revise the Havoc Flame Symbol that had been inherited for so many years to such a degree, how had he done it!?

“Yes, they did…”

As Suya spoke, stormy waves were set off in her heart. It wasn’t just her, but even the entire army was in uproar. There were countless squads that were clamoring to obtain a single one of these divine runic symbols!

Chapter 1609 – Cooperation

Chapter 1609 – Cooperation

…

…

…

Lin Ming wasn’t surprised by Suya’s sudden change in expression.

He flicked his hand and took out the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol that he had placed in his spatial ring.

At the time, Lin Ming had created 21 flame symbols and delivered 20 of them.

“Are you speaking of this?”

Lin Ming placed the flame symbol on the divine runic table. Just saying that he was the creator of those divine runic symbols wouldn’t be enough to win trust; taking out evidence would be more persuasive.

Seeing this divine runic symbol, Suya’s eyes lit up. This was it!

This Havoc Flame Symbol seemed like it was no different from ordinary Havoc Flame Symbols, but it had the terrifying property of being able to be used multiple times. With that property, it became a divine tool for the battlefield!

If a small squad of 10 people was provided with a Havoc Flame Symbol, just what sort of battles would be possible?

With a massive fiery bombardment at the start, the opponent would definitely be left miserable by the opening salvo. Then, they would be encircled and barraged with martial skills and flame symbols; just who could live through that?

Suya took the Havoc Flame Symbol and touched a slender finger to the bottom right corner where the 'Lin' character was located.

The sharp strokes of the character were like swords, startling Suya.

These strokes were exactly the same!

She looked up, staring at Lin Ming. A strange feeling percolated in her heart.

Just what kind of man was this?

When Lin Ming had first accepted the mission to draw up the Havoc Flame Symbols, Suya thought that he was only pretending to be able to do so in order to attract her attention. She never would have dreamed that not only would Lin Ming complete the mission but he would also improve the Havoc Flame Symbol!

She wasn't sure if Lin Ming had made these improvements himself, but she didn't have to be a genius to know that after improving the Havoc Flame Symbol, the difficulty would be far higher. Even so, he had still managed to complete them!

"He's likely less than 100 years old…" Suya felt all of this to be too incomprehensible. Lin Ming was too abnormal. Let alone a junior that was less than 100 years old, even the higher level divine runic masters would be unable to accomplish something so heaven-defying.

In the quiet divine runic room, Lin Ming sat behind the divine runic table, holding absolute initiative.

And facing this Lin Ming that could be called a little brother from a younger generation, Suya had no idea what to say.

“He already expected I would come here to look for him!” Suya immediately thought. As she saw Lin Ming having no intention to speak at all, she finally began to become aware of what he was thinking. Did he want her to speak first? In these types of negotiations, the first to speak would be the one to lose the initiative.

However, against Lin Ming who had such skills, what advantage did Suya have?

Strength was momentum!

Suya had no way to maintain her previous pride and confidence. To Lin Ming, she could only reveal a flattering smile. She said, “Sir Lin, was that batch of divine runic symbols created by you?”

“Yes.” Lin Ming had nothing to hide and this matter couldn’t be concealed anyways.

So it was true…

Suya wasn’t surprised. She immediately began to consider how to offer conditions to have Lin Ming cooperate with her. But as she thought about her haughty manner the last time she saw Lin Ming as well as the dispute she had with Xiao Moxian, Suya really wanted to kick a wall.

She had simply cursed herself to death, otherwise why would she need to be so humble and submissive today?

“These changes were also completed by Sir Lin alone?” Suya asked.

“The changes were made by me. The reason I was able to do so is because the inheritance I study is special.”

Inheritance?

Suya’s heart skipped a beat. According to Elder Xue, it seemed that Lin Ming had an extremely powerful master.

What was this inheritance that it could cause such abnormal transformation?

Even a seventh grade divine runic master was absolutely unable to accomplish this.

Suya felt her mood become increasingly unsteady. This Lin Ming was an extraordinary treasure! Whether it was for the Extreme Star Holy Lands or the Divine Runic Masters Guild, it was the same!

She couldn't help but ask, "I do not know who Sir Lin's honorable master is..."

Lin Ming frowned upon hearing this. His voice became much colder as he said, "Miss Suya should also know that every divine runic master has their own inheritance, and the core techniques are something that the master might not even pass down to their apprentice. Is Miss Suya asking this question because you intend to make a secret attack on my inheritances?"

Lin Ming immediately buckled down, causing Suya to stumble. She said, "I apologize Sir Lin, I was rude. The reason I am here today is to represent headquarters, which wishes to discuss cooperation with Sir Lin..."

Suya paid careful attention to Lin Ming's expressions. Speaking with Lin Ming, Suya was being extremely careful. After all, because of her arrogance the last time she spoke with Lin Ming, it would be hard to get along well with him quickly.

Seeing Lin Ming not intending to respond, Suya continued to ask. "Sir Lin, may I ask you how many times the Havoc Flame Symbols you created can be used?"

The truth was that when Suya received the Extreme Star Command, Extreme Star Heavenly Palace had already done some experiments on their own. Suya only needed to obtain Lin Ming's confirmation as to whether or not every divine runic symbol could reach the same standard.

"They can probably be used several hundred times. After being used too many times the divine rune structure will slowly collapse and be destroyed.

“And in a single battle, this type of divine runic symbol can be activated four times at most. Moreover, the last three times need the martial artist to pour in a certain amount of energy. After using the divine runic symbol four times the energy within will be exhausted and unable to activate. The divine runic symbol has to charge itself for a period of time before it can be used again.”

When Lin Ming created the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol, because he had used nirvanic fire and heavenly tribulation fire, this caused the flame energy to be too high. When combined with the many modifications of the Asura Heavenly Dao that Lin Ming had added on, this made the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol extremely powerful, to the point that it could kill a peak Holy Lord.

But at the same time, the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol placed high requirements on the user. According to Lin Ming’s estimates, one needed to be a peak Holy Lord to draw out its full strength.

Thus, Lin Ming also made another modification. Using his understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao, he made it so that the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol released its energy in bursts, greatly extending the lifetime use of the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol as well as reducing the requirements for the user.

Lin Ming’s data was all similar to the data that Extreme Star Heavenly Palace themselves had gained through testing.

This sort of Havoc Flame Symbol had been given the price of 400,000 points for a single one. This was also the ideal price that Extreme Star Heavenly Palace wished for.

And in fact, when Extreme Star Heavenly Palace issued a mission they would request 20 symbols. In other words, Extreme Star Heavenly Palace would have to pay Lin Ming 8 million points every time.

Suya hesitated and said, “Sir Lin, the Extreme Star Holy Lands would like one batch of these improved Havoc Flame Symbols. No matter how many we will take that many and we will also pay you sufficient rewards.”

“Oh?” Lin Ming traced his chin. He had already expected this type of mission commission. Currently, the Extreme Star Holy Lands lacked offensive and defensive divine runic symbols. As for pills, they were less pressured for those.

“Before we speak about this commission, what about the previous account?”

Lin Ming had a smile on his face. But, his words left Suya stunned.

The previous account…

That’s right, Lin Ming was still owed for the 20 Havoc Flame Symbols he handed over last time!

Suya had wanted to pay 60,000 contribution points but Lin Ming didn’t want that at all. He said that he didn’t ‘lack contribution points’.

It was only now that Suya realized why Lin Ming didn’t need contribution points. He thought that 60,000 points was too little and was waiting for this development to occur so he could demand a higher reward!

Suya also remembered that Lin Ming had said that perhaps after a month, his total amount of points would reach a considerable number.

Lin Ming had already expected that today’s events would occur.

This left Suya slightly frustrated. She felt that she had been completely crushed by this little brother.

“I must say Miss Suya…” Xiao Moxian looked at Suya, faintly smiling. “I remember that someone said last time that they would never have any intention to look for Lin Ming to create divine runic symbols… right?”

A month ago, Lin Ming had predicted that there would be people scrambling to ask him to draw up divine runic symbols.

But Suya had rudely and needlessly added in, “I have no idea who will be scrambling for you to make divine runic symbols for you in the future, but I don’t have any intention of doing so…”

Now that Xiao Moxian mentioned this, Suya was left helpless.

“Miss Xian’er, about last time, I really must apologize…”

Under the roof of others, one had no choice but to lower their hands. Suya lowered her posture once more. “But today I believe I have put forth sufficient sincerity. Sir Lin, what do you think of… 250,000 contribution points?”

Suya used pleading eyes to look at Lin Ming. Her eyes were like autumn pools of water, able to stir one’s emotions.

She put the initial price at 150,000 contribution points below what headquarters’ limit had been. This was to keep a bargaining space.

Before Lin Ming could speak, Xiao Moxian said, “250,000 points? Your plan is quite well thought out. The divine runic symbols that Lin Ming draws up can be used 200-300 times. According to the initial price of 60,000 for 20, every one should be worth 3000. Then, if you multiply that by 250 times it should be 750,000 for a single one!

“Then again, the improved Havoc Flame Symbols that Lin Ming creates are even stronger than ordinary flame symbols. Perhaps we don’t even want this pitiful amount of money!”

Xiao Moxian forcefully said.

Suya froze. “750,000…”

According to such a price, if Lin Ming handed over 1000 divine runic symbols then they would have to pay 750,000,000 contribution points. If this continued then Extreme Star

Heavenly Palace definitely wouldn't be able to withstand it. After all, they had already consumed a massive amount of resources in this war.

Although Lin Ming's Havoc Flame Symbols could be used 200-300 times and were even stronger than ordinary versions, Extreme Star Heavenly Palace still hoped they could obtain a lower price if they bought in bulk. After all, although this improved Havoc Flame Symbol had higher techniques behind it, the cost of creating one wasn't necessarily much higher.

"Sir Lin..." Suya knew that quarrelling with Xiao Moxian was meaningless. She used begging eyes to look at Lin Ming. "The cost of materials will all be taken on by our Extreme Star Holy Lands..."

Lin Ming's expression was indifferent. Suya's starting price didn't affect him at all.

250,000 for one divine runic symbol, that meant he would need to draw up 12,000 of them to obtain 3 billion points. How long would it take to draw up 12,000 divine runic symbols? It would likely be two or three years.

Lin Ming faintly said, "Miss Suya, the truth is that you seem to have made a mistake. My divine runic symbols don't need to be sold to you alone. Do you think that besides your Extreme Star Holy Lands, no one else is willing to pay a higher price?"

Chapter 1610 – Grandmaster Overflow

Chapter 1610 – Grandmaster Overflow

…

…

…

Suya was shocked by Lin Ming's words. Indeed, as Lin Ming said, if the Extreme Star Holy Lands wanted to buy those improved Havoc Flame Symbols they could only do so from Lin Ming, but Lin Ming didn't necessarily need to sell to them.

This sort of improved Havoc Flame Symbol could be used 200-300 times and in a battle could be activated four times. This was a heaven-defying special effect. There were many Holy Lord powerhouses that would be willing to buy such a Havoc Flame Symbol in order to serve as their final trump card.

If an early Holy Lord martial artist had this sort of flame symbol, although they might not be able to defeat a middle Holy Lord realm martial artist, it still wouldn't be a problem to protect themselves.

If they had to go to a life or death mystic realm to adventure and even desperately bet their lives against those other people there, they would absolutely want to buy one or two of these Havoc Flame Symbols no matter what the cost was.

In addition, these revised Havoc Flame Symbols had the special attribute of being able to be used multiple times; this was an almost completely unique attribute. There were many divine runic masters that loved to collect all sorts of divine runic symbols who would love to get their hands on one. Moreover, there were many wealthy juniors of powerful influences that would similarly love to possess such a rare divine runic symbol as a point of pride.

This was a symbol of status.

Thus, even if Lin Ming publicly sold these divine runic symbols, their price would still rapidly reach a horrifying level. Their price might even surpass the accumulated total of 200-300 Havoc Flame Symbols!

Thinking of this, Suya knew that perhaps there might not be any transactions.

The price that the Extreme Star Holy Lands offered simply wouldn't be enough.

She stood up and despairingly said, "Sir Lin, Miss Xian'er, I apologize for disturbing you today. I will go back first. Sir Lin, I will come to visit you again in the future."

Suya could be called miserable. Her overly large eyes seemed to contain tens of thousands of words, all of them touching.

Even Lin Ming, who was used to seeing beautiful women, couldn't help but acknowledge that Suya was an extraordinary woman.

Suya and Xiao Moxian possessed two different types of figures. Suya had explosive curves, perfectly round and soft. Although she was a shocking beauty like Xiao Moxian, she possessed a flavor that ordinary women did not have. She constantly attracted the gaze and heat of men, even with the slightest movement.

Like this, Suya walked away. From beginning to end, she possessed a feminine beauty, one that was gentle and meek. She seemed completely different from the proud figure that was resting on the couch just a month ago.

"Big Brother Lin, it seems like you turned her down." Xiao Moxian said after Suya left.

"No need to worry, I have too many concerns right now. I have to research how to transform a fifth grade divine runic symbol and I also have to refine a soul recovery pill for Senior Divine Mist. I don't have much free time. If I have to draw up Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols I'll have to create dozens of them. When something is rare, it becomes far more precious. If I were to sell them at a cheap price then these Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols won't be valuable at all."

Lin Ming said. He had already considered this. When a new product came out, no one would know its true price. The true price was artificially created by others.

If he sold a small number of Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols, then those who bought them would scurry to hype up the price as much as possible so they would have more value.

Once the price was higher, they might resell them.

As for the next person, they would also have a similar idea. As this process continued, the price would become increasingly high until it even exceeded the original value.

Lin Ming would be happy to see such a scene occur.

……….

Still night, Suya returned to her own room and opened a long distance sound transmission array, attempting to send a message to the Internal Affairs Envoy of Extreme Star Heavenly Palace – Sage Brightyang.

Suya relayed all of her experiences from today. As Sage Brightyang heard this, he frowned.

"This junior called Lin Ming wants 750,000 contribution points for one? He is insatiably greedy!"

Sage Brightyang's face darkened. After a period of thought he sneered and responded, "There is no need for you to concern yourself with this matter. That brat probably thinks that we can't live without him. What a naïve child! Since he's so greedy then I won't let him obtain even one point."

As Sage Brightyang replied, Suya's heart skipped a beat. It couldn't be that Extreme Star Heavenly Palace wanted to do something to Lin Ming, right!?

Lin Ming was living within the Divine Runic Masters Guild and had an extremely sensitive status to begin with. If Extreme Star Heavenly Palace attacked a member of the Divine Runic Masters Guild without provocation then they would inevitably suffer backlash from Divine Rune City!

This might even cause their alliance to fall apart and both sides to become enemies.

After all, kidnapping a divine runic master and forcing them to refine divine runic symbols was the absolute most taboo action for all divine runic masters. It was something that all of them loathed, no matter who they were.

Moreover, there was said to be a peak Empyrean master behind Lin Ming!

If they were to offend a peak Empyrean level character for a mere improved Havoc Flame Symbol, then that would absolutely be saving a little to lose a lot. The foolishness of that decision would be unbelievable. There wouldn't even be a need for the Extreme Star Holy Lands to continue their war. With a peak Empyrean joining the enemy side, their loss would be ensured.

Suya didn't feel that Extreme Star Heavenly Palace would do something so reckless. But, she was still worried that Extreme Star Heavenly Palace didn't know about Lin Ming's background.

She soon obtained an answer. Sage Brightyang's tone was extremely gloomy. "We naturally won't do anything to cause enmity with the Divine Runic Masters Guild. But, this doesn't mean that we don't have any means to deal with this boy. We've already invited Grandmaster Overflow..."

Grandmaster Overflow?

Suya was stunned. She had heard this name before.

In the world of divine runic masters, most divine runic masters were extremely proud and famous, respectable characters that were honored by others.

But, there were divine runic masters that lived in the dark. These divine runic masters did not research the divine runic arts but instead plagiarized the results and accomplishments of others.

If someone were to develop an astonishingly valuable divine runic symbol, there would naturally be evil individuals that attempted to appropriate these techniques for themselves. After all, these divine runic symbols involved a massive amount of benefits!

Generally speaking, when a divine runic master drew up a divine runic master they would have measures to prevent them from being cracked. Moreover, divine runic symbols involved numerous tiny complex runes and structures as well as a fusion between the divine runic symbol itself and the Heavenly Dao Laws and different fluctuations of weak and strong energy flows. Wanting to recreate a forgery was nearly impossible.

But, there was one type of divine runic master that specialized in this field.

Just like in the mortal world where there were thieves who specialized in picking locks; they were able to open any of them.

These types of divine runic masters were loathed by all others. There was no divine runic master that wanted the things they carefully researched to be stolen by others.

However, when driven by tremendous benefits, there were a number of divine runic masters that would rather become one of the people that lived in the dark.

These people had their own inheritances.

Of course, these inheritances were especially focused on how to unravel the divine runic symbols of others.

And this Grandmaster Overflow was a grandmaster level character amongst all dark divine runic masters!

According to what Suya knew, Grandmaster Overflow was a peak sixth grade divine runic master! If he had chosen to focus his efforts on the orthodox path then he would have obtained great results.

But as someone of the dark path, Grandmaster Overflow was known as a person who could open any lock. The only problems to him were time and cost.

Although many divine runic masters had their own ultimate final technique, Grandmaster Overflow didn't have a liking for these. After all, in order to crack open the secrets of a divine runic symbol one needed to consume a massive amount of rare and precious materials as well as a variety of costly array formations. The total cost could leave one dumbfounded.

"Unravel… if we can really unravel the secrets to this improved Havoc Flame Symbol, then the advantages to our Extreme Star Holy Lands will be tremendous!" Suya thought. She didn't know why, but she felt something strange in her heart. In her short moment of contact with Lin Ming just now, she didn't know why but that youth had become unfathomably deep and unpredictable.

Would Grandmaster Overflow be able to unravel Lin Ming's divine runic symbol?

Suya knew that with things having reached this point there was nothing she could do. She could only calmly wait in her area of the Mission Division and do her own job…

……

Two days later, Extreme Star Holy Lands…

The Extreme Star Holy Lands was located above the Asura Road's Miluo Star Ocean. This Star Ocean had countless massive 100,000 mile wide islands that floated above it, and although they were called islands, the truth was that they weren't much smaller than continents of some planets.

Above these islands was an endlessly dark night. In the skies, there was always an endless ocean of stars that floated across the world.

Underneath this endless starlight, there was a deep blue palace floating high in the sky. This was Extreme Star Heavenly Palace!

This was the supreme command center of the Extreme Star Holy Lands as well as the residence of the Extreme Star Holy Lands’ two Empyreans!

And on this day, the gates of Extreme Star Heavenly Palace opened. As the Internal Affairs Envoy of Extreme Star Heavenly Palace, Sage Brightyang personally waited at the entrance of the Heavenly Palace to greet Grandmaster Overflow!

Grandmaster Overflow was a Great World King to begin with, and through these years, the wealth he accumulated was unimaginable. Although he was a cruel and infamous individual known for his spite, he still provoked fear and awe in many people!

This was the suppressive fear brought by strength!

Chapter 1611 – Test

Chapter 1611 – Test

…

…

…

“You actually managed to have Grandmaster Overflow come and help?” A World King said from beside Sage Brightyang. This World King was Waking Cloud, a direct disciple of one of Extreme Star Heavenly Palace’s two Empyreans.

“Requesting Overflow to help will definitely come with a great price…” Someone added in after Waking Cloud.

Sage Brightyang said, “To this type of divine runic symbol, Grandmaster Overflow will definitely have a great interest. And after he unravels the secrets to creating one, we will definitely have to pay a great price. However, for the techniques behind this sort of divine runic symbol, it is absolutely worth it…”

As Sage Brightyang was speaking, a melodious immortal song echoed through the air. A magnificent divine carriage decked in gold and jade shot through the horizon, dragging a brilliant rainbow behind it.

This divine carriage was hundreds of feet wide and was several times larger than an ordinary pavilion. It was pulled by 18 dignified ancient great beasts, slowly flying forwards. In front of the divine carriage was a squad of golden-armored warriors leading the way, each one carrying spirit artifacts. And behind the divine carriage were enchanting maids with high martial talents and cultivations, all of them holding various musical instruments. As they flew forwards, music filled the air. At the vanguard of the procession was a spirit boat filled with pretty maids that sprinkled down flower petals, like a cascading river of color fading into the deep!

And these flower petals were not ordinary flower petals. Rather, they were considerably expensive spirit flower petals. Just scattering these flower petals was an extremely great wealth!

From this alone, one could see how wealthy and opulent the master of the divine carriage was!

The divine carriage came to a steady stop before Extreme Star Heavenly Palace. Four beautiful maids moved forwards and parted the curtains of the divine carriage. Then, an old man in an opulent yellow robe stepped out.

This old man had unsightly features but his eyes were razor sharp. His held two young concubines to his chest. Without a doubt, this was Grandmaster Overflow!

“This kind of parade…” Waking Cloud was left flabbergasted. Just the flower petals alone cost innumerable origin energy runes. Even an Empyrean travelling outside wasn’t too different.

“Grandmaster Overflow!” Sage Brightyang hurriedly moved forwards to greet him.

But Overflow only slightly nodded back and released the two concubines from his arms. He lightly said, “My time is valuable. There is no need for any pleasantries.”

“Good!” Sage Brightyang said, leading Overflow to the best divine runic room in the entire Extreme Star Heavenly Palace.

As for Overflow’s guards, maids and concubines, all of them were treated well and asked to wait outside the palace.

Extreme Star Heavenly Palace's divine runic room was several miles wide. This giant square was so large because there were all sorts of expensive arrays set up as well as a top grade divine runic table that seemed like an altar.

Above this divine runic table, the runes of multiple array formations shined.

After glancing through this facility, Overflow was fairly satisfied.

"Who created that divine runic symbol?" Overflow asked, getting straight to the point.

Sage Brightyang hesitated for a moment. "A third grade divine runic master."

Seeing Overflow frown as if he were about to be angry, Sage Brightyang quickly explained, "His divine runic arts level is likely above the third grade, and the current rune structure of the symbol might not have been invented by him either."

Overflow coldly coughed. If this was really the work of a mere third grade divine runic master, then asking him to unravel it was simply an insult.

He coldly said, "I hope it is a valuable divine runic symbol. I travelled several hundred million miles to come here and I'd better not be disappointed. Where is the divine runic symbol?"

Sage Brightyang immediately took out the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol that Lin Ming had created. From appearances, this divine runic symbol didn't seem any different from an ordinary Havoc Flame Symbol.

Seeing this fourth grade divine runic symbol, Overflow didn't seem to have any interest. But as he swept his sense through the structure of the divine runic symbol, a brilliant light shined in his eyes.

"Eh, this is quite interesting!"

Overflow was clearly excited. Sage Brightyang was ecstatic. If this could arouse Grandmaster Overflow's interest then he would likely treat this not as a mission but as a personal endeavor. He would assuredly put forth 120% of his effort.

"Are there the array formations I want?"

"Yes!" Sage Brightyang immediately ordered people to start the array formations in this room. These array formations had long been arranged in advance, and all of them were to support one in the divine runic arts. The cost of construction for each one was astronomical. If the cost was exchanged for contribution points of the Divine Runic Masters Guild then every array formation would be worth at least 10 million points.

Although Extreme Star Heavenly Palace was considerably wealthy, they only arranged these array formations in a single divine runic room.

Sage Brightyang embarrassedly said, "We only have conventional array formations; we don't have specialized unraveling array formations. I must ask Grandmaster Overflow for help in setting them up."

Overflow laughed and proudly said, "This is natural. These unraveling array formations are all a specialty of my career; you naturally wouldn't know of them."

These dark divine runic masters made their living by plagiarizing and stealing the work of others. But, when it came to their own techniques and inheritances, they would keep them hidden watertight, never revealing their secrets to others.

If anyone wanted to steal their techniques, they would go all-out against them.

Grandmaster Overflow took out a dozen plus array discs from his spatial ring and placed them on the massive divine runic table.

Overflow was extremely careful in his actions. Each array disc was crafted from materials worth tens of millions of points. Moreover, the array discs also involved a variety of secret techniques. These array discs could be called Overflow's specialty treasures.

After Overflow spread out all the array discs, Sage Brightyang and the others drew back and used crystal balls to observe what was happening. They didn't want to disturb Grandmaster Overflow.

"He's so professional." Someone praised from behind Sage Brightyang.

"That's right, the professionalism is completely different. Just those array discs that the Grandmaster took out are more expensive than the entire seventh grade divine runic room we prepared!"

"Lord Internal Affair Envoy's move is quite wonderful. As long as we succeed then we'll have saved a tremendous expense for Extreme Star Heavenly Palace and we'll also have gained a top divine runic symbol technology. With this amazing battlefield weapon in our hands, no one will dare to move against our Extreme Star Heavenly Palace!"

Listening to this person, Sage Brightyang faintly smiled. He said, "Just who is this and just what is he doing? Grandmaster Overflow is a peak dark divine runic master. With him helping us, our plan of copying that technology is almost assured success. We only need to wait for the good news. I estimate that he should finish in around 10 days."

………..

As Extreme Star Heavenly Palace launched their offensive to copy Lin Ming's divine runic symbol, it was finally becoming known by others that these improved Havoc Flame Symbols made by Lin Ming were able to be used multiple times. Moreover, it was also learned that the true name of these divine runic symbols was actually Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol.

However, these were merely rumors spread from the frontlines and there was no way to measure the veracity of these claims. As for one of the few insiders, Suya definitely wouldn't spread such news for Lin Ming.

The members of the Divine Runic Masters Guild were all highly accomplished in the divine runic arts. They all knew how difficult it was to create a divine runic symbol that could be used multiple times.

Their knowledge and experience made them doubt such an unbelievable matter.

All of this led to the scene today. A group of divine runic masters waited in a test room of the Divine Runic Masters Guild. They surrounded an illusory magic array, waiting to see the destructive might of this Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol.

Seeing was believing! Through this array formation test, they could confirm the truth.

Lin Ming was also in this test room. He held a Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol in his hand, the one that he had created a month ago.

"Lin Ming, you brat, you're always up to some tricks."

Old Xue had arrived with his good friend Old Su. The two of them had also heard the rumors, and although they felt it was a bit incredible, since it concerned Lin Ming they already half believed it subconsciously.

Old Su traced his chin. He couldn't help but ask, "I heard that your Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol could be used multiple times? How many times is that?"

Old Su cared most about the number of times that the divine runic symbol could be used.

Lin Ming faintly smiled, "You'll find out after the test..."

Lin Ming didn't waste his time with idle chatting. After several dozen people finally gathered in the room, he walked into the center of the array formation and activated it.

At this time, Lin Ming saw Suya.

Today's Suya was dressed much more conservatively. She wore a windproof coat with a high collar. Even so, her explosive figure still struggled to escape the confines of her clothing.

Suya faintly smiled as she saw Lin Ming glance at her. She knew that Lin Ming planned to establish the reputation of the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol and then sell it for a high price.

Today's array formation test would pave the way for that high price.

Chapter 1612 – Copy

Chapter 1612 – Copy

…

…

…

After the testing array formation activated, dozens of ancient vicious beast simulations conjured up by the illusory magic array appeared. These vicious beasts surrounded Lin Ming, their strengths ranging from the Divine Transformation realm to the World King realm!

These were merely living targets. Although they had defensive capabilities similar to real vicious beasts, they were not aggressive at all.

Facing these ancient vicious beasts, Lin Ming calmly activated the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol.

For a time, dao patterns of the Asura Heavenly Dao wove in the air. With a terrifying explosion, flames swept out like a tide.

Dozens of ancient vicious beasts were swallowed up by the flames. Over 90% of the vicious beasts were instantly reduced to ash with only several of them surviving the carnage.

Of the surviving vicious beasts, some were severely burnt. But, there were also several vicious beasts equal to the human late Holy Lord realm or peak Holy Lord realm, and even a World King level vicious beast that wasn’t injured at all.

In particular, that World King level armored forest dragon still stood tall and proud in the skies, its scales not damaged even the slightest bit.

Seeing this destructive power, Old Xue didn't even need to look at the data; he immediately judged the strength of the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol in Lin Ming's hands. "This is… a Holy Lord level two star destructive power. It's slightly better than an excellently crafted Havoc Flame Symbol, about a star higher."

"It's quite good." Old Su nodded.

Before anyone else could make their judgments, with Lin Ming's right hand as the center, the numerous dao patterns of the Asura Heavenly Dao rapidly condensed, manifesting back into a new Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol in the blink of an eye!

Lin Ming didn't pause; brilliant flames erupted once more.

Another explosive sound occurred!

Beside Lin Ming, a terrifying detonation blew up once more!

Lin Ming had activated the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol a second time!

All of the several remaining ancient vicious beasts were sucked up into the flames. Sorrowful howls filled the air.

The late Holy Lord and peak Holy Lord level vicious beasts were charred black by the flames.

"The second time came so fast!"

Although the people present had heard that the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol could be used continuously, they never imagined that the gap between uses would be so short.

But this was only the start. Following this, the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol within Lin Ming's hand exploded for a third time!

As the creator of the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol, Lin Ming was the person most familiar with the runic structure within it. Combined with his understanding of the Asura

Heavenly Dao as well as his achievements in the seventh level Concept of the Fire Laws, using the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol came as easily as breathing!

Normally, a martial artist could use the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol four times before the energy within it exhausted itself. Then, the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol would need time to recover energy for its next use.

But Lin Ming simply didn't need to do this.

As Lin Ming used the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol, he continued to fill it with new energy!

The flames used to create the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol were Lin Ming's tribulation fire and Xiao Moxian's nirvanic fire.

Currently, Lin Ming had these two types of flames.

Thus, within Lin Ming's hand, the power displayed by this Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol had an essential difference compared to when it was placed in someone else's hands.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Within the array formation, a terrifying explosion lit up the world every two breaths of time!

That dreadful sea of flames swept through the entire array formation. If it weren't for the protection of that array formation, the entire testing room would have been ruined by the terrifying explosions!

Lin Ming activated the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol again and again.

Although this flame symbol was constantly absorbing Lin Ming's energy, Lin Ming's strength wasn't comparable to a two star Holy Lord level attack. To him, keeping up a barrage of this level wasn't anything at all.

This was just a well-trained martial artist doing hundreds of pushups without being exhausted.

Beneath the wild canopy of explosions, besides the World King level ancient beast, every single other vicious beast had been swallowed up by the flames and destroyed.

This scene left all of the other divine runic masters present speechless. In particular Suya; her eyes were as wide as full moons and she couldn't find the words to describe this.

She had read the test reports that Extreme Star Heavenly Palace had sent her about the Nirvanic Flame Tribulation Flame Symbol. It was true that this flame symbol could be used multiple times, but every four times it was used it needed to recharge. It was impossible for it to perform like it did with Lin Ming today, continuously striking out without missing a beat!

Perhaps this wasn't just because Lin Ming was the creator of the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol but also because of Lin Ming's terrifying strength!

She finally became faintly aware that this youth in front of her, in terms of divine runic arts or strength, had far surpassed her imagination. Right now it was impossible for her to estimate him. His depths were completely concealed, absolutely airtight!

"Elder Xue… Lin Ming, he… is he really less than 100 years old?"

Suya glanced at Old Xue. Everything related to Lin Ming had been told to her by Old Xue.

"His skeletal age indicated so. I think he wouldn't be so bored as to fake this."

Old Xue licked his lips. Over the years he had seen many incidents of a monstrous genius occur around Lin Ming. It was hard for anything Lin Ming did to surprise him now.

Suya sucked in a deep breath, at a loss for words.

She suddenly felt that it was a laughable matter when she looked at Lin Ming like he was a little brother.

The explosions within the array formation were like a violent storm, continuing without a hint of dying down.

Everyone was keeping quiet count of this intense bombardment in their hearts. Now, after an incense stick of time, more than a hundred explosions had occurred!

Even that final World King level beast was struck into bloody shape by the barrage of attacks!

It howled again and again. Its scales were swallowed up by those destructive flames and a great deal of its flesh was burnt black!

“Could it be… that Lin Ming can burn the World King level ancient vicious beast to death?”

This thought flashed through the minds of many people present. A human could not compare to the defensive abilities of an ancient vicious beast. Even the bodies of the saints, in terms of defense, were slightly worse than vicious beasts.

And now, in this situation, it seemed that Lin Ming would really be able to annihilate this vicious beast!

By this time, the number of explosions had risen to over 200!

This World King level armored forest dragon was already burnt into a miserable appearance. A large number of red bones had been exposed and also scorched black by the flames.

Finally, with a miserable wail it fell to the ground, surrounded by flames!

With a slight cracking sound, the armored forest dragon turned into endless motes of light and vanished.

Like this, all of the vicious beasts within the array formation had been completely destroyed by Lin Ming’s Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol!

“How terrifying, even that World King level vicious beast was killed! This is only a fourth grade divine runic symbol!”

Although Lin Ming had relied on multiple attacks to achieve this, to use a fourth grade divine runic symbol to kill a World King vicious beast was far too amazing. Ordinarily speaking, only a sixth grade divine runic symbol could accomplish his.

Within the array formation, even though all of the vicious beasts had disappeared, the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol within Lin Ming’s hands continued to explode another 150 some times. Only then did the sea of flames finally die down before vanishing.

Thus, the test had ended.

“412 times!”

After the flames within the array formation dissipated, some people spouted out this number. How was this testing divine runic symbols? This was more like setting off firecrackers!

Many divine runic masters looked at each other and gulped. They heard that Lin Ming had created a Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol that could be used multiple times but they never imagined this would be over 400 times.

The price of a Havoc Flame Symbol was at the top of fourth grade divine runic symbols. If the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol was equal to 400 some Havoc Flame Symbols, then he was rich!

Many people soon realized this and Suya was no exception. She sighed. When Extreme Star Heavenly Palace had done their own tests, the upper limits of use was only 200-300 times. The reason that Lin Ming could use it over 400 times was clearly because he understood the runic structure of the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol.

“I wonder how headquarters’ copying plan is coming along.” Suya thought as she watched Lin Ming walk down from the testing array formation, his face not even slightly reddened.

An inexplicable feeling of dread appeared in her heart. She feared that this Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol wasn't as simple as it seemed. If Lin Ming dared to put it forth in such a grandiose manner, would it truly be so easy to copy?

"This Lin Ming… I really have no idea what depths he is hiding!"

Suya was increasingly awed by Lin Ming. And at this time, Lin Ming revealed a toothy smile as he asked, "Everyone, is there anyone that would like to buy this Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol? I only accept contribution points. You can purchase one alone or in batches; the highest bid wins!"

With these words, the entire audience of divine runic masters was left stunned…

…..

At this time, a hundred million miles away, in Extreme Star Heavenly Palace's seventh grade divine runic room –

Grandmaster Overflow had been locked in battle with this Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol for the last two days and one night.

During this time, Grandmaster Overflow didn't rest at all. He sat motionless in front of the divine runic table, using all sorts of methods to analyze this fourth grade divine runic symbol!

From the start where he didn't expect much at all, to the time when his interest was aroused by the unique structure of this divine runic symbol, and now through two days of battling, Grandmaster Overflow's complexion became increasingly dignified.

He could clearly feel that this Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol was unusually troublesome.

However, the more difficult things were the more it stirred his fighting spirit. He believed that he was amongst the best rune breakers within the profession of dark divine runic masters. In this world, besides seventh grade divine runic symbols which were only a problem because of the limit of his cultivation, there was nothing he couldn't unravel. Whether it was a fourth grade, fifth grade, or sixth grade divine runic symbol, he could open any lock.

These were the thoughts in Overflow's mind.

He was a considerably prideful person.

And now, Overflow had already been defeated by this fourth grade divine runic symbol many times. At this time, two jade slips were placed in front of him.

All sorts of calculations and deductions were recorded within these two jade slips. Overflow used his special inheritance to analyze the rune structure of the divine runic symbol. Every time he did so he had to make a massive number of calculations.

However, the results obtained from these deductions left Overflow feeling strange. He didn't know whether or not these results were right, and just what he could draw up if he followed these results.

Chapter 1613 – Array Destruction

Chapter 1613 – Array Destruction

…

…

…

This improved Havoc Flame Symbol was something that Overflow had never seen before. He had lived for several hundred thousand years, and through this long period of time he had come into contact with all sorts of strange divine runic symbols. Even so, he had never cracked apart such strange Law lines before.

The more Overflow calculated, the more hesitant he became.

With a deep breath, Overflow put the jade slip to the side. There were some things he had to confirm.

Overflow took up a red, square-shaped array disc from the side. This one was only a square foot but it was the most precious of his array discs. If this array disc was converted to contribution points of the Divine Runic Masters Guild, it might be worth around 60 million contribution points!

When analyzing the structure of a divine runic symbol in order to crack it open, a martial artist needed more than their soul force and sense; they also needed to rely on the power of array formations.

This was because the energy structure of a divine runic symbol was compressed within the tiny runes. One had to strip away the tiny runes in order to prove the internal structure.

And this red array disc was able to play such a role. It could simulate a stable force field that slowly and steadily separated each tiny rune.

Facing this fourth grade divine runic symbol, Overflow was extremely patient. It had been over 100,000 years since he had analyzed a fourth grade divine runic symbol. Not even a fifth grade divine runic symbol was able to arouse his interest.

What Overflow cracked was only sixth grade divine runic symbols and they also had to be the work of a grandmaster.

After gently placing a top grade soul crystal into the red array disc, the array formation within began to activate.

Among the spiritas, the value of a soul crystal was similar to a nine sun jade.

This top soul crystal was equal to 10 ordinary soul crystals. In other words, it was equal to 10 nine sun jades. This was a considerable price to pay in order to activate the array disc.

However, in order to ensure the precision of the array formation, Overflow used the best materials. And as long as materials were used for the purposes of cracking open the divine runic symbol, they would be paid for by the Extreme Star Holy Lands.

Just one array disc wasn’t enough. Overflow hesitated for a moment and then took out another. This array disc was slightly less valuable than the first but it still cost about 30 million contribution points!

The use of this array disc was to simulate and imitate. But in the simulation process, one needed to use an extremely precious material called ripple sand. This ripple sand would be melted into liquid and the liquid would be used as ‘ink’ for the array disc to draw up a copy. And each portion of this material was worth around 5 million contribution points.

Every time Overflow conducted a test, he would need half a portion of ripple sand.

Like this, under the support of all sorts of precious materials and expensive array discs, Overflow's analyzing process began. As the two array discs floated in the air they released dazzling lights.

Outside of the divine runic room, Sage Brightyang and the others were completely focused on everything that was occurring. They hadn't left at all in the last two days.

It had to be known that all the materials Overflow used were provided by the Extreme Star Holy Lands. In this situation they definitely didn't dare to leave.

Now that Sage Brightyang saw all these resources being slowly consumed in front of him, his lips twitched as he found the scene extremely distressing. The Extreme Star Holy Lands had already invested 70-80 million contribution points so far, and as this analyzing process continued, it would likely break through a hundred million and continue even higher!

Perhaps they would need to spend 400-500 million points before coming close to cracking Lin Ming's work.

"You must spend money to make money; without risk there is no reward..." Sage Brightyang grit his teeth, comforting himself like this. As long as they could unlock this Nirvanic Flame Tribulation Symbol then it would be worth the investment. Not only would they experience a favorable turn in the war, but the Extreme Star Holy Lands would profit immeasurably in the future.

As Sage Brightyang was lost in thought, he suddenly heard Grandmaster Overflow's sound transmission echo in his ears. "Quickly bring a martial artist that understands the seventh level Concept of Fire to be my assistant. The faster the better!"

"Fire... seventh level Concept?" Sage Brightyang was stunned. What was this for?

"Don't dawdle around. The creator of this divine runic symbol has reached the seventh level Fire Laws and the flames he uses are extremely strange. Go ask your Heavenly Palace to bring the one with the highest achievements in the Fire Laws to come. Immediately!"

Overflow was skilled in analysis. He analyzed that the flame energy textures within the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol and the profound skill and perfection within those fire patterns left him shocked and in fear!

“It's actually two types of destructive flames, and the grades of both flames are extremely high. Just how did he perfectly fuse these two types of flames together?”

As Overflow was lost in thought, Sage Brightyang was filled with doubts.

The creator of this divine runic symbol was Lin Ming, and Lin Ming was someone that understood the seventh level Concept of Fire? Just how was that possible? He wasn’t even 100 years old!

But doubts were only doubts. Sage Brightyang soon found the martial artist with greatest attainments in the Fire Laws within Extreme Star Heavenly Palace. This person was his High Master, a half-step Empyrean powerhouse!

Within Extreme Star Heavenly Palace, this person was among the top 10 ranking characters.

His achievements in the Fire Laws had reached the peak of the seventh level Concept and even touched upon the mysteries of the eighth level Concept!

Sage Brightyang could affirm that this person’s ability to control flames was countless times better than Lin Ming’s.

“Good, not bad!”

Seeing the one arriving, Overflow was more than satisfied. A half-step Empyrean was not an ordinary individual. Just by standing there, he faintly affected the Laws around him, creating a terrifying pressure.

With this sort of assistance, Overflow felt his chances of success were much higher.

“Carefully release the flames and pour all of your understanding of the Fire Laws into the flame.”

Overflow rapidly ordered. At the same time, he activated all sorts of expensive array formations on the divine runic table. He was going to start attempting to copy the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol.

Only by attempting to copy some of the tiny runes would Overflow know whether or not his analysis was correct.

The array formations of a seventh grade divine runic room were extraordinary. With just a thought, the materials were all processed and completed by the array formations. Then, with Overflow moving them with his soul force, they began to slowly condense into tiny runes.

At this time, Overflow picked up both array discs. He placed the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol that Lin Ming created above the array disc on his left hand, and on the array disc above his right hand, a replica began to rapidly form.

Overflow used his horrifying soul force intensity to conduct all of this. The reason he called an assistant here was to control the flames to his satisfaction. Everything here was perfect!

“My analysis of the structure is correct!”

Overflow said with a dry mouth. His eyes shined with an increasingly bright light. As long as he could correctly analyze the rune structure then sooner or later he would be able to unlock this divine runic symbol.

And, Overflow had already confirmed over two days that the value of this divine runic symbol was absolutely that of a priceless treasures.

If he could unravel the principles behind it then in the future he could apply these principles to other divine runic symbols!

For a fourth grade divine runic symbol to be used 200-300 times couldn't be considered to amazing. But, what about a fifth or even sixth grade divine runic symbol?

That was an unimaginable wealth!

These distracting thoughts only appeared for a fleeting moment. Overflow quickly focused all of his concentration on the copying process, lest a single mistake occur midway.

But at this time, Overflow ran into something that felt wrong as he was in the copying process.

This wrong feeling didn't come from the tiny runes of the divine runic symbol, but came from…

The Asura Heavenly Dao!

"The Asura Heavenly Dao does not fit!? No, I have already made a copy of the tiny rune structure, so this is proof that I didn't make a mistake. How come the Asura Heavenly Dao doesn't fit? This is impossible!"

Overflow's eyebrows shot up; this was unbelievable.

His deduction process was perfect; for him to copy it to this point proved this. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for the structure of tiny runes to take shape. However, there had been a major problem when fusing together the Heavenly Dao.

"I won't believe this!"

Beads of sweat began dripping down from Overflow's forehead.

He didn't believe he was wrong. He continued on, insisting no matter what. After drawing up the tiny rune structure, he tried to forcefully fuse the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws into it.

And at this time, the two array discs in his hands began to violently tremble!

Overflow’s mind shook. Before he could respond, the tiny rune structure copy exploded!

This wasn’t just an explosion of materials; there was also a backlash of the Asura Heavenly Dao patterns that Overflow had been trying to control!

Kacha!

With a heart-rending shriek, Overflow’s complexion dramatically changed. He watched helplessly as the raging Asura Heavenly Dao brutally shattered those two priceless array discs in half!

Even the array formations above the divine runic table began disintegrating because of the impact of the Asura Heavenly Dao.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Once the first explosion occur, a series of ripple effects swept out. In that moment, the entire divine runic table seemed as if it had been swept into a storm and left in an utter mess.

At least four or five array formations had been destroyed and even four of the array discs that Overflow brought had been shattered!

Overflow froze, his complexion becoming increasingly dark!

He stared blankly at the array discs in his left and right hands, unable to accept everything that just happened. His most precious array discs, the tools to his livelihood, had been destroyed like this!?

In that explosion just now, according to the standards of the Divine Runic Masters Guild, he had lost at least 100 million contribution points!

Not only were Overflow’s losses serious, but the truth was that the Extreme Star Holy Lands had lost a great deal too!

The array formations on the divine runic table each had a dreadful construction cost, not much cheaper than Overflow's array discs. With four or five array formations exploding, the Extreme Star Holy Lands would need to pay up nearly 100 million contribution points!

Contributions needed to pay traded through materials, pills, and other such things. They were extremely precious!

As the explosion occurred, Sage Brightyang's High Master was standing at the side. But, he could only watch helplessly on as this occurred, unable to stop it.

Although the power behind the explosion wasn't too high, it was still caused by the Asura Heavenly Dao. Moreover, because it happened within the array formations it was impossible to prevent. Unless one thoroughly understood the Asura Heavenly Dao, it didn't matter how high their cultivation was!

And at this time, the doors to the divine runic room burst open. Sage Brightyang who had by this time already lost his composure rushed in. He looked at the chaotic divine runic table with a pale face, his body shivering, unable to say a single word.

Chapter 1614 – One Billion Point Reward

Chapter 1614 – One Billion Point Reward

…

…

…

Sage Brightyang took quick inventory of the losses. Two 30 million point array formations had exploded as well as three 10 million point array formations.

In addition, a massive number of tools and rare and precious materials were destroyed!

These losses left Sage Brightyang bleeding in his heart!

For this last year the Extreme Star Holy Lands had been at war and had spent a massive amount of resources. Now, the entire Holy Land was having trouble distributing resources.

As a result of that brief moment just now, 100 million points had been lost. If these 100 million points were changed into divine runic symbols, just what sort of war strength would that be!

Moreover, this operation of cracking apart the divine runic symbol was proposed and led by Sage Brightyang. He had already made an oath to the Vice Palace Master that he would absolutely break the divine runic symbol otherwise he would be punished.

Even searching for help, the distribution of materials, the requisition of the seventh grade divine runic room, everything had been handled by Sage Brightyang.

He originally thought that everything would be a success and he would be able to obtain a great merit. As for himself, he would have received tremendous advantages in this mission. However, he never imagined things would develop to such a point!

If he couldn't unravel the divine runic symbol and also had such great losses, he definitely couldn't take responsibility for this failure!

Thinking of this, Sage Brightyang's face turned liver red. As he looked at Overflow he wished that he could slap this moron to death!

"Overflow... this, this is all because of you! You said that there was no lock you couldn't unlock! Array formations worth 100 million points have been destroyed by you!"

Sage Brightyang suppressed the bubbling anger in his heart. He didn't dare to tear down all decorum with Overflow. First, Overflow was considerably strong to begin with, and secondly, he was also depending on Overflow to recoup some of the losses from just now.

Although he had already lost all hope that Overflow could unravel the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol, if he were to give up now then he would be the guilty party here. If Overflow could make any form of progress then he could at least recover just a little bit of the losses.

Seeing Sage Brightyang's rage-filled eyes, Overflow's complexion turned icy cold. "What are you trying to say? My losses were worse than yours! This time I broke apart four of my array discs!"

"But all of these experiments were led by you!" Sage Brightyang said, his words becoming increasingly loud and frothy.

"Yes, I was the one who led them but you are the one who called me here!" Overflow coldly said, not yielding an inch.

"Stop fighting!" At this time, Sage Brightyang's High Master spoke out.

Out of everyone here, he had the highest status. “Overflow, is there no chance for you to unravel this divine runic symbol?”

This High Master also knew how serious today’s matters were. Within Extreme Star Heavenly Palace, there were internal struggles for power. There were countless individuals that were eyeing Sage Brightyang’s seat as the Internal Affairs Envoy! This was a highly lucrative position.

Because of today’s matters, it was even possible that he would be dismissed from his position. This was because there were a considerable number of people in Extreme Star Heavenly Palace who advocated to buy divine runic symbols from Lin Ming at an increased price.

“I don’t know… if I can resolve the question as to how to fuse the Asura Heavenly Dao and the tiny runes then I might be able to succeed…”

Overflow quietly said. He didn’t know just where the error had been and why the Asura Heavenly Dao Law lines would have such a violent explosion.

“I will not provide any more materials or array formations!” Sage Brightyang coldly said.

Overflow sneered. “Then we’re done here.”

The two stood in sharp opposition. Sage Brightyang frowned. If he continued to provide materials then his gamble would become even larger. If he lost… Sage Brightyang shuddered at the consequences.

He looked towards his High Master for help.

This High Master couldn’t decide on a plan. He thought for a moment and then came up with a compromise. “Continue trying to unravel it, but don’t do any tests if you can. If you must do tests, don’t use any expensive array formations…”

….

At this time, within the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

After Lin Ming finished his test, many divine runic masters scrambled to purchase a Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol.

The price continued to climb.

Finally, the price rose to 900,000 contribution points for a single one!

This price was already several times the original max price of the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol.

If there were 900,000 contribution points, one could buy 300 Havoc Flame Symbols.

And if they bought a Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol, it could only be used 200-300 times.

Of course, the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol was slightly stronger and in terms of flexibility 300 Havoc Flame Symbols were better. At the very least, one didn't need to fill them with energy.

"Lin Ming, you brat, you're rich now! 900,000 for one, if you make two or three a day that is 2 million points… hey, since I looked after you, don't you think you should give me a red envelope for luck?"

After the price was settled, Old Xue slyly grinned at Lin Ming and elbowed him. With so many contribution points, even Old Xue was feeling jealous.

Lin Ming rolled his eyes. "Since when did you look after me?"

Old Xue froze as he heard this. He immediately smiled and said, "You silly blind wolf, I was the one who first led you to the Mission Division!"

Old Xue spoke with a half-joking tone but Lin Ming was left speechless. That was considered as having looked after him?

However, he didn't doubt that if he really took out a red envelope, this old fellow in front of him definitely wouldn't refuse it.

He shook his head, "This still isn't enough..."

Although Lin Ming could make more than one or two Nirvanic tribulation Flame Symbols a day, he couldn't do this for two or three years. This price point wasn't satisfactory to him.

"It's still not enough? Them how much do you want!?" Old Xue blew his beard up from shock. Even he couldn't earn points like this and yet Lin Ming said it wasn't enough.

"3 billion..."

As Lin Ming put forth this number, Old Xue felt his heart skip a beat. He suddenly remembered that four months ago he had looked over a list of precious materials that Lin Ming had needed. The total price for these materials was around 3 billion contribution points!

Old Xue originally thought that Lin Ming had gone mad. After all, not even he could come up with 3 billion points. But now, in just four months, although Lin Ming didn't have 3 billion points he could still easily earn 1-2 million contribution points in a day!

At this rate, Lin Ming would sooner or later earn 3 billion points!

Thinking of this, Old Xue was left in a cold sweat. This boy Lin Ming, had he already expected to go through this method to rapidly earn contribution points?

If so, then this brat was far too horrifying. This proved that it wasn't an accident when he improved the Havoc Flame Symbol!

"It seems you must buy those materials no matter what..." Old Xue thoughtfully said.

"Of course." Lin Ming nodded.

“Even the Divine Runic Masters Guild doesn’t have all the materials you are searching for… some materials must be searched for somewhere else, or you must wait a period of time…”

“What about the treasure fair?”

Lin Ming suddenly said. When Lin Ming first came to Divine Rune City with Yue Liuxing, he had heard her mention the treasure fair that happened at there.

This was an event organized by the trading companies of the Divine Runic Maters Guild and would occur every three years. The treasure fair occurred on a vast scale. At that time, all sorts of important figures from the Asura Road would come to display and trade their treasures.

Amongst these treasures there would even be priceless valuables that would be publicly auctioned. At that time, all sorts of top grade pills, divine runic symbols, rare materials, ancient inheritances, flesh and blood of God Beasts, Empyrean spirit treasures, transcendent divine mights, and so forth would be sold!

And the currency of the treasure fair, besides origin energy runes, was contribution points from the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

Contribution points were considered the universal currency issued by the Divine Runic Masters Guild. They were considered a better and easier to use currency than the Asura Road’s more universal currency, origin energy runes.

This was because contribution points could be exchanged for all sorts of rare items from the Divine Runic Masters Guild. As for origin energy runes, they might not be able to buy these things.

For those people that came to participate in the treasure fair, as long as they could bring out something that the Divine Runic Masters Guild found valuable, they could change it for an equal amount of contribution points. In the treasure fair there were some items that could only be bought with contribution points. Thus, the participants would usually exchange materials for a massive number of points.

Lin Ming expected that he would be able to buy many of the rare materials he needed at the treasure fair.

Now, there was still a year until the treasure fair. During this remaining year he had to earn enough wealth so that he wouldn't be stretched for points when he needed it.

………..

As Lin Ming was beginning to draw Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols as well as study how to improve a fifth grade divine runic symbol, the Extreme Star Holy Lands had quietly posted a titanic reward.

They were recruiting dark divine runic masters from all over with a reward of one billion points to crack open the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol. As long as they could accomplish this then the Extreme Star Holy Lands would share the results with all dark divine runic masters as well as reward those who contributed.

Of course, this reward couldn't see the light of day; it was only sent to those who existed in the world of dark divine runic masters. But even the divine runic masters of the Divine Runic Masters Guild had some connections with dark divine runic masters. Thus, this news passed through all sorts of channels and became known by some well-informed individuals within the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

"They want to unravel the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol? This Extreme Star Holy Lands really doesn't care about face!"

Within the Divine Runic Masters Guild, some divine runic masters had mocking expressions as they heard this news. No matter how it was said, pirating the achievements of others was extremely disgraceful, especially in the world of divine runic arts.

“Hah! This is a war that relates to the decline and rise of their sect, so what is their face worth in all of this? Lin Ming’s Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols are 900,000 points each, so buying 1000 of them will cost 900 million points. The Extreme Star Holy Lands might not be able to pay such a high price. Moreover, once a soldier with a Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol dies, a situation will appear where they can’t use its complete worth…”

“If they can appropriate this new technology for themselves then they can make as many as they want. And posting a reward is that fastest and most economical way to find people to crack open this divine runic symbol…”

Some people echoed.

These divine runic masters had no obligation to keep a secret for the Extreme Star Holy Lands. After one person knew that a reward was posted, this news spread from one person to ten, from ten to a hundred, and soon throughout the entire Divine Runic Masters Guild.

“This time, Overflow himself is leading the mission. Although his character is corrupt and he is infamous, in terms of unraveling divine runic symbols there is nothing below a sixth grade divine runic symbol that can stop him.”

“If he really can unravel the secrets then Extreme Star Holy Lands will have gained big.”

Several divine runic masters discussed. In front of so many benefits, no one could feel relaxed. If the Extreme Star Holy Lands wanted to steal away this massive cake then there would naturally be people that were jealous.

However, they were only jealous. As orthodox divine runic masters they didn’t have any foundation to unravel divine runic symbols so it was impossible for them.

Chapter 1615 – Bankrupt Plan

Chapter 1615 – Bankrupt Plan

…

…

…

News about the Extreme Star Holy Lands posting a reward soon spread throughout the entire Divine Runic Masters Guild. Even the gate guards and floor sweepers knew about it.

As for Suya, she had been uneasily pacing back and forth in her section of the Mission Division, as if something were heavily weighing down on her mind. Luckily, she didn't see Lin Ming these days otherwise she would have no idea how to face him.

These matters also entered into Lin Ming's ears, but he didn't care about it at all. When he drew up the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols he hadn't even left behind any specialized anti-forgery tiny runes. He guessed that these dark divine runic masters had the ability to crack the method by which he had drawn up the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol and they could even find top fire-attribute martial artists to simulate the effect of the heavenly tribulation flames and nirvanic flames.

However, no matter what they tried they wouldn't be able to unravel the Asura Heavenly Dao.

That was the foundation for Lin Ming creating the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols.

As Lin Ming grew stronger and stronger over the years, he increasingly discovered just how heaven-defying the functions of the Asura Sutra were, and this was in a situation where he only obtained a single remnant volume of the Asura Sutra. If he were to collect all of them, it was unknown just what effects there would be.

This also caused Lin Ming to increasingly anticipate the final smelting trial. He wondered; just what had the Asura Road Master left behind in the final trial?

As these thoughts flashed through Lin Ming's mind, he no longer thought about them. He instead devoted his full time and concentration to drawing up the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols.

In this period of time, Lin Ming had only produced 30 Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols.

He was well aware that the more rare something was, the more precious it became. On the other hand, if he drew up too many things then it would instead become less valuable.

Currently, Lin Ming was selling Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols at a fixed price of 900,000 contribution points. And whenever he put one up for sale it would be nearly immediately grabbed up.

And on the outside, the true price of the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol actually rose to beyond a million points and the supply still fell far short of demand.

Like this, Lin Ming would only draw up two Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols every day. By doing this, he could save a tremendous amount of time and use it to research how to transform a fifth grade divine runic symbol.

Time slowly passed. Without knowing it, three months flew by.

In these three months, Lin Ming had earned 55 million contribution points. But, in order to transform a fifth grade divine runic symbol he had to use up a massive amount of materials. Moreover, many of these materials were extremely precious and had to be purchased with points. On this alone, Lin Ming spent over 8 million contribution points.

From this day, there was still nine months until the treasure fair.

Lin Ming had less than 55 million points. With this tiny amount of wealth, wanting to win anything in grand auctions at this treasure fair would be a futile gesture.

Calculating the numbers, Lin Ming had to spend the rest of his time earning as many points as he could. Otherwise if a rare material appeared that he needed but he couldn't afford, he wouldn't even have time for regret.

Whether it was drawing up a divine runic symbol or researching how to transform a fifth grade divine runic symbol, he had to fuse the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws so it was impossible to carry on this process in a time enchantment, because time enchantments twisted the surrounding laws.

In other words, Lin Ming truly had nine months remaining.

....

At this time, Suya was sitting behind her lonely counter in the Mission Division, her mood extremely poor.

This was because news of the Extreme Star Holy Lands posting a reward for dark divine runic masters had spread out, placing her in a very awkward position.

Although it could be said that the Extreme Star Holy Lands cracking open the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol had nothing to do with the overwhelming majority of divine runic masters, these methods were abhorred by almost all divine runic masters.

Her association with this caused Suya's area in the Mission Division to be much lonelier than usual.

Luckily, the Internal Affairs Envoy at Extreme Star Heavenly Palace responsible for leading the assignment to unravel the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol had drawn all attention to himself, making it so that Suya's mission wasn't as urgent and giving her a moment to catch her breath.

“Have you heard the news? The seventh grade divine runic room at the Extreme Star Holy Lands had another explosion occur. It seems that many array formations blew apart.”

In a corner of the mission hall, many divine runic masters were talking amongst themselves in a low voice as they sipped on tea.

Suya was considerably strong herself and her hearing was top notch. She naturally heard what they were speaking about.

There was an explosion in the Extreme Star Holy Lands’ seventh grade divine runic room!?

Suya felt her heart fall to her stomach. She lowered her head and listened carefully. She had yet to hear of this matter because no one had informed her.

“There was an explosion? Why?”

“Hehe, that was because a long time before the billion point reward was posted, there had already been an explosion. Otherwise, why do you think the Extreme Star Holy Lands would put forth such an astronomical reward to gather so many dark divine runic masters to crack open the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol? This is because they had been defeated in their first attempt and now with the divine runic room exploding once more, they failed again!”

“How do you know this?”

“Well, I have a friend who is a dark divine runic master. You know, I’ve tried urging him to follow the correct path and stop wasting his time and energy with that garbage, but he doesn’t heed my advice.”

“So that’s how it is!”

If this news came directly from a dark divine runic master than it was likely true.

"Incredible, simply incredible… I can't imagine just how this Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol was produced. Overflow leads a team of dark divine runic masters and yet even he can't succeed. It's far too odd!"

When the members of the Divine Runic Masters Guild heard that the Extreme Star Holy Lands had put forth a sky high reward of a billion points to unravel the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol, they felt a bit sorry for Lin Ming. They thought that the achievements he worked so hard on would be stolen by others. But, they never imagined that such a powerful lineup of dark divine runic masters would not only fail to accomplish anything but instead blow up the entire divine runic room!

"Incredible? Hehe! Don't look down on Lin Ming just because he's young. It's like his inheritance comes from an entirely different branch of thought and his inheritances are different from ours. This Lin Ming has a master who has reached an incredible boundary. If his master were to ever come out then he would likely be the most revered divine runic grandmaster in the entire Asura Road. His status would be unshakable and not even an influence like the Extreme Star Holy Lands would dare to do anything to Lin Ming. I suspect that Lin Ming's master is even fiercer than the Palace Master of Extreme Star Heavenly Palace!"

No one doubted that Lin Ming had a ridiculously powerful master.

If it were martial arts inheritances, then one could adventure through ancient ruins left by powerful masters and obtain their inheritance jade slips and heavenly materials to rise up to the top alone.

But this was impossible with the divine runic arts. This was because one had to have a master teaching them personally; there was no meaning in just perusing through jade slips.

Thus, even if Lin Ming stood up and said that he had no master and had taught himself, no one would believe it.

“Disregarding Lin Ming’s master, Lin Ming himself has an unfathomably high degree of talent. I just learnt that Lin Ming had obtained the qualifications to become a third grade divine runic master over 20 years ago, and at that time he was less than 60 years of age! Elder Xue and Elder Su had two young apprentices that participated in the same examination as Lin Ming, and the results were as different as the heavens and earth. During that examination, Lin Ming tested straight to a third grade divine runic master.”

After Lin Ming became famous, many people began to look up his background and history.

They also dug up the fact that Lin Ming had become a third grade divine runic master before he was 60 years of age.

When these divine runic masters heard this, all of them were stunned speechless. To them, becoming a third grade divine runic master was something that happened when they were several hundred years old!

“Overflow and his group, as well as the Extreme Star Holy Lands, only have themselves to blame. They wanted to crudely unravel the results of the research of others like deluded idiots and now they can’t even recoup their initial investment. These people spent a full three months preparing for this experiment and yet even though they bet everything on this attempt, the result was that it blew up in their faces!”

“Just how many array formations were lost? Didn’t they carry on simulations before the test?” Some people asked, feeling this all too unbelievable. Overflow was not some common nobody. His talent, if he had chosen to walk the orthodox path, would have quickly allowed him to rise to become the Vice President of the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

“Of course they made simulations and at the time there hadn’t been any problems. But as they began the true experiment, there was a problem during the fusion of the Asura Heavenly Dao. They lost control of the process and a storm of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws blew out, causing the divine runic symbol structure to collapse. Everything was uncontrollable after that. Not only did they lose seven or eight array formations but they even lost three to five array discs.”

“Seven or eight array formations! Just how many points is that!?”

“I heard from my friend that the points lost was this number…” The one speaking put forth an exaggerated expression and stretched out eight fingers.

“80 million? No… it can’t be… seven or eight array formations and three to five array discs can’t be that cheap. It shouldn’t be… 800 million!?”

The several divine runic masters looked at each other, horror shining wide in their eyes.

“That’s right, it was 800 million points! After all the costs were added together, including the array formations and array discs from the first failure, as well as all materials used during the last three months, this is the total cost! Of course, 800 million is only a number that my friend estimated, but it shouldn’t be too far off. And, these points weren’t just paid for by the Extreme Star Holy Lands. Overflow also put forth a considerable amount of materials and most of the shattered array discs were his.”

“This… isn’t this too exaggerated…?” The Extreme Star Holy Lands and Overflow had lost way too much!

“And this is only if they give up! If they continue onwards then they will lose even more! My friend is already ready to withdraw. He studied this divine runic symbol for three months and the conclusion he came to is that this Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol cannot be undone by mortal hands. The reason is that the inheritance of the creator is far too special… they simply cannot understand it…”

As the several divine runic masters spoke they became increasingly loud and boisterous. They became more awed and terrified by the mysteries that surrounded Lin Ming.

And, this discussion all fell in Suya’s ears.

If this news had already spread to the Divine Runic Masters Guild then it was likely to have occurred yesterday. Even so, she hadn’t heard any news. The reason for this was likely not because they were hiding anything from her but because the matter was far too large and involved the one in charge of leading this mission. All of this led to a chaotic situation within headquarters and now no one had time to bother with contacting her.

As for learning through others that the plan to copy Lin Ming's divine runic symbol had become completely bankrupt, this could only be called ironic.

As Suya thought of this, an unspeakable feeling surged up in her heart.

She didn't seem surprised at all. Rather, Sage Brightyang had slapped himself to death this time.

And after several quarter hours passed, another Extreme Star Command was sent down to Suya from headquarters. Suya's mind shook. The Extreme Star Command that was sent this time, could it be…

As Suya looked through the Extreme Star Command and also saw the person that issued it, she was startled. This Extreme Star Command was issued by a new Internal Affairs Envoy. In other words, the original Internal Affairs Envoy, Sage Brightyang, had already been removed from his office…

Chapter 1616 – Lin Ming's Conditions

Chapter 1616 – Lin Ming's Conditions

…

…

…

In these days, Lin Ming nearly hadn't rested at all. He spent 90% of his time calculating the rune structure of a fifth grade divine runic symbol.

The work required to improve a fifth grade divine runic symbol was several times greater than what Lin Ming originally anticipated. Lin Ming had already completed the theoretical basis for revising a fifth grade divine runic symbol, but when he actually tried to apply this there were many problems that had to be solved.

At this time, a loud knock sounded out from the door.

Lin Ming thought it was Xiao Moxian, but after opening the door he discovered that it was Suya standing at the entrance.

Today's Suya was still dressed in a sultry outfit that gushed out with sex appeal. The tight-fitting fabric hugged her curves, perfectly outlining her explosive figure. The collar at her chest was opened up, plunging down deep and leaving one lost in daydreams.

Suya's manner of dress hadn't changed but her eyes had gone through a great transformation. When she looked at Lin Ming before, there was always a hint of contempt in her eyes, as if she were looking at a little child. But now, there was respect in her eyes as she looked at Lin Ming, and even some awe.

“What is it?” Lin Ming was stunned for a moment. Then he casually asked Suya to enter. His work room was a thorough mess.

Suya didn’t mind. She found a place to sit. After a moment of hesitation, she said, “Sir Lin, you probably already learned that the Extreme Star Holy Lands wanted to copy your Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol…”

“Oh.”

Lin Ming faintly nodded without much expression. “And?”

Suya could feel a strong sense of confidence from this indifference. It was like Lin Ming completely didn’t mind the massive undertaking the Extreme Star Holy Lands had carried out to copy his divine runic symbol. In fact, it didn’t seem as if he was worried at all. Without a doubt, Lin Ming had absolute confidence in his own Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol, and the Extreme Star Holy Lands actions didn’t even qualify to earn Lin Ming’s disdain. Rather, he ignored them altogether.

“They… failed…” Suya awkwardly said. She knew that even if she didn’t say it, Lin Ming would find out sooner or later so she might as well speak on her own initiative.

“Oh.”

Lin Ming replied yet again. It was clear he had already expected this result.

“Sir Lin, although I know that coming to ask you for your cooperation yet again is shameless on my part, but… I have no choice but to ask you. I heard that you are in need of contribution points, right?”

Lin Ming remained silent, waiting for Suya to speak.

“I just received an Extreme Star Command from headquarters. They wish to purchase 2000 Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols. For this, they are willing to pay a total of 1.2 billion contribution points.

Suya carefully said. As she spoke she paid careful attention to Lin Ming's expression.

When Suya received the Extreme Star Command a quarter hour ago she nearly wanted to curse out loud. Headquarters had used a stupid research project to offend Lin Ming and now they actually wanted to buy from him at an even higher price. Then what were all their previous efforts for?

Without a doubt, the mission to ignore any sense of shame, forget all face she had, and apologize and then negotiate with Lin Ming definitely fell on her. This caused Suya to be fully enraged.

But what other choice did she have? As a disciple of the Extreme Star Holy Lands she had no choice but to follow orders. Moreover, she was related to the matter of Sage Brightyang being dismissed from his position.

Suya had to complete this matter no matter what. The Extreme Star Command that headquarters had passed down to her was, "Find any solution possible using any method you have. The spending limit is 1.2 billion points. Any more and headquarters cannot shoulder the cost."

As for 'using any method you have', that left Suya's heart racing.

She was a woman all on her own. Besides her seduction skills, just what other methods could she use?

Today, she went straight to the point and simply listed headquarters' conditions, leaving no room for bargaining.

She was extremely scared that Lin Ming wouldn't agree. If Lin Ming didn't agree would she really have to offer up her body?

But to be fair, in terms of looks, ability, and talent, Suya didn't feel as if she would be suffering a loss. But, the crux of the issue was that facing this icy Lin Ming, Suya suspected that even if she offered her body on her own initiative, she would still be refused.

If that happened then she really wouldn't have any face left over!

Hearing this total of 1.2 billion points, Lin Ming hesitated for a moment.

This was equal to 600,000 points for each divine runic symbol.

2000 symbols… this would require a long time to complete. It would drag on almost to the start of the treasure fair.

And for only 1.2 billion points, that might not be enough for Lin Ming to buy his materials.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming frowned.

Suya felt her heart gripped as Lin Ming frowned. "The money for materials can also be put forth by us."

The materials that Lin Ming used for a Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol weren't rare at all. Adding in this small amount of money wouldn't change anything.

"1.2 billion is too little."

Lin Ming quietly said.

As Suya heard this, she felt the world fade around her. This was the highest price that headquarters was able to put forth!

Currently, the Extreme Star Holy Lands was far too tight on resources. With the failure of the last experiment, the Extreme Star Holy Lands had no intention of suffering another misfortune.

"Lin Ming… what do I need to do for you to agree? As long as you don't increase the price, any other conditions… you can have them no matter what… I'll do anything."

As Suya spoke, her milk white breasts heaved up and down. She was actually feeling anxious.

Through all these years, Suya's sex appeal had caused countless men to surround her and prostrate themselves at her feet. But even amongst all these people she was able to calmly draw back. Yet today, in front of a little brother that was less than 100 years old, she was feeling increasingly intense emotions.

Suya felt her cheeks brighten as she spoke these suggestive words. Even so, she could faintly feel that Lin Ming's manner indicated he likely wouldn't have such a request. If so, then it was hard to say whether or not today's negotiations would come to a fruitful end.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. He needed at least 2 billion contribution points to have sufficient capital in the treasure fair.

But this price wouldn't be given to him by any organization.

Thinking like this, Lin Ming said, "I can draw up 2000 Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols at the price of 1.2 billion points. But… I have a condition. That is, a year from now I want the Extreme Star Holy Lands to lend me 800 million points without interest, for one year."

There were no permanent enemies, only eternal interests. Lin Ming wouldn't hold onto the fact that the Extreme Star Holy Lands had tried to forge his own Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol and ignore profits.

After all, if Lin Ming wanted to earn a big amount of contribution points now, he could only go through the Extreme Star Holy Lands.

Hearing Lin Ming's words, Suya let out a light breath of relief. She didn't know what she was feeling. His request was only to borrow money without interest…

If so, then the Extreme Star Holy Lands would likely agree to his request.

Although the Extreme Star Holy Lands was stretched in resources, if they mortgaged some things they could still obtain enough contribution points.

“I will discuss this with headquarters.”

“Okay, then I will begin to draw up the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols. Every half month I will hand in a part of the mission and you will pay me my contribution points.”

Lin Ming stood up and spoke. He was already in the pose of sending out his guest. After all, his time was precious.

After being seen out by Lin Ming, Suya felt frustrated. It was like she hadn’t been welcome at all…

Like this, the conditions had been set.

Although the price that the Extreme Star Holy Lands put forth wasn’t high, it was enough to satisfy Lin Ming’s requirements to participate in the treasure fair.

Like this, Lin Ming started working night and day.

In the course of such work, Lin Ming steadily improved, whether it was in his skill level of the divine runic arts or his understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao.

Half a month later, Lin Ming brought a stack of finished Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols and arrived at the Mission Division.

Suya had already been waiting for Lin Ming. As she saw Lin Ming walking over she quickly moved forwards to welcome him.

“Are the contribution points prepared?” Lin Ming had a somewhat exhausted look on his face. During this last half month he had clearly consumed a massive amount of energy. Even though Xiao Moxian regularly made him soul nourishing soups, they were still unable to fully supplement the soul force that he was spending like running water.

To complete the divine runic symbols, Lin Ming squeezed dry the well of his soul force. If it weren't for a recent breakthrough in the Divine Mist Heart Mantra he wouldn't have been able to withstand such high intensity work.

Seeing such a Lin Ming, Suya felt a bit apologetic. She quickly replied, "I've prepared it. This also includes Sir Lin's payment for the first 20 Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols."

"Mm…"

Lin Ming nodded and then took out the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols from his spatial ring and placed them on the countertop.

There were three stacks, each stack extremely thick.

Seeing so many Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols, Suya was shocked. "This is… how many are there?"

"Each stack is 60 for a total of 180." Lin Ming lightly said.

Suya gulped. "These… you drew these up in half a month?"

"Yes. Is there a problem?"

"No… no problem…"

It had to be known that when an ordinary divine runic master drew up a divine runic symbol, there were three processes.

There was handling the materials, drawing up the main body of the divine runic symbol, and then fusing together the final Heavenly Dao Laws.

During the first step, one could use support from array formations so it wouldn't take much time. But as for the second and third step, for a peak fourth grade divine runic symbol each took at least two hours.

To draw up a full divine runic symbol took a minimum of four hours.

Moreover, every time one was created it would consume a massive amount of soul force. One had to rest during this period of time. In a normal day, drawing up two or three would be the average speed for a general divine runic master to draw up a fourth grade divine runic symbol.

This was why Old Xue ridiculed Lin Ming and said he could earn 2 million contribution points by drawing up two or three a day.

If one could draw up four divine runic symbols in a day, that was already an extremely heavy workload.

But Lin Ming had actually drawn up 12 a day! That was three times the limit of an ordinary divine runic master!

Every day had 24 hours. He had to draw up one every two hours and that was in a situation where he had no rest! How could Suya not be shocked by this.

“Contribution points…” Lin Ming flatly repeated.

“Oh, yes… of course…” Suya had her maid give Lin Ming his contribution points.

Without speaking further, Lin Ming walked away. 15 days of high intensity work had left him deeply exhausted, however he had no other choice but to hurry ahead.

Lin Ming had six months to complete these 2000 divine runic symbols!

Chapter 1617 – Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol

Chapter 1617 – Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol

…

…

…

Time flew by, an unending river.

Lin Ming worked like a construct that didn't know of exhaustion. The amount of work he completed every day was staggering.

When Lin Ming's soul force ran dry he would meditate and revolve the Divine Mist Heart Mantra.

As a peak transcendent divine might, the Divine Mist Heart Mantra was the most suitable method for restoring his dried up soul force. In the past when Lin Ming cultivated the Divine Mist Heart Mantra underneath Empyrean Divine Mist, he had his own spiritual sea completely ruptured and then restored. The pain from that time was countless times more exaggerated and agonizing then his current soul force exhaustion.

Day after day, Lin Ming discovered that the intensity of his soul force was rapidly growing!

At the start he was able to draw up 12 divine runic symbols a day before he collapsed.

But after two months, Lin Ming was able to draw up 13 divine runic symbols a day. After another two months, Lin Ming was able to draw up 14 divine runic symbols.

This also meant that every time Lin Ming turned in part of the mission, each time there would be more than the last.

Seeing Lin Ming work like a monster, bringing in almost 200 Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols every half month and even seeing this number increase over time, Suya was shocked at first, apprehensive next, and then as she became accustomed to this she simply became numb.

This was the beginning of the sixth month.

Lin Ming handed over 220 Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols.

In these past 15 days he had drawn up 220 peak fourth grade divine runic symbols. Even Suya didn't know what expression to have for this.

With this, Lin Ming's mission was complete. Moreover, he had even produced an extra hundred!

And before these divine runic symbols were shipped to the warfront they had already undergone a routine inspection.

The 2100 plus Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols were completely without a single defect. All of them maintained an absolute standard in quality. Compared to the 20 Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols that Lin Ming had sent at the start, none of them were worse.

At the end, the number of times that the flame symbols could be used had climbed to over 300. This was a result of Lin Ming's technique becoming increasingly skilled and intricate, leading to each Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol he created becoming increasingly perfect.

To produce a single divine runic symbol at a high quality wasn't strange at all. But, to produce over 2000 divine runic symbols perfectly, that was horrifying.

Not just that, but Lin Ming had maintained a constant speed of three times that of the average person!

And what left Suya breathless the most was that Lin Ming had continued this ultra-high intensity work pace for almost six months without end!

The exhaustion, loneliness, aridness of the situation, it was simply hard to imagine. Every time Suya saw Lin Ming she could also feel the serious overdrawn nature of his soul force. Perhaps anyone else would have collapsed by now.

But Lin Ming was able to persist through all of it.

Regarding this, it wasn't just Suya, but even the people of Extreme Star Heavenly Palace had long been at a loss for words. They originally thought that Lin Ming would need at least two years to complete 2000 divine runic symbols, but he had managed to accomplish this in half a year with a production speed that could frighten one to death. They also finally realized that their early plan to copy his work had been doomed to failure from the start.

Lin Ming was able to produce these Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols not because of luck or coincidence but because he was an abnormal monster.

"Sir Lin, this is your reward." Suya handed over a jade slip with around 13 million contribution points. With this, their transaction had ended.

Although Extreme Star Heavenly Palace had paid a gigantic sum of money for these Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols, correspondingly the frontlines of the war had obtained remarkable victories!

These Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols had a specific activation method and only the disciples of Extreme Star Heavenly Palace knew how to use them. If 20-30 Holy Lords activated their Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols together, even a World King would have to retreat.

"Thank you."

Lin Ming took the jade slip and swept his sense through it. After seeing that there were no errors, he planned to return to his own room. But at this time, Suya called out to him, “Sir Lin, please wait.”

“Mm? Is there something else?” Lin Ming turned to look at Suya.

Suya covered her mouth and laughed. “Sir Lin, do you find me annoying? It seems that every time you come you are in a hurry, as if you’re afraid to see me!

“Sir Lin, it is like this. The mission to complete 2000 Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols has already been finished, but I wonder if Sir Lin has any interest in continuing to cooperate with us. The Extreme Star Holy Lands is willing to put forth a price of 600,000 points for every divine runic symbol and continue purchasing Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols from Sir Lin…”

Even 2000 Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols wasn’t enough for the Extreme Star Holy Lands to use.

Before this, they had only requested for Lin Ming to draw up 2000 because they had thought that Lin Ming would take a long time to complete this mission. But at that time, perhaps the war between the Extreme Star Holy Lands and Heaven Strife Holy Lands would have come to an end.

Now that they saw Lin Ming’s rapid production speed, they would be willing to eat the costs of another 1000.

“I’m sorry… there are other matters I must attend to.” Lin Ming refused this request but he didn’t absolutely reject all cooperation. He thought for a moment and said, “After around five more months I should have finished things. At that time I will consider working with your Extreme Star Holy Lands again…”

“Great!”

Suya was already satisfied with such an answer. In her opinion, Lin Ming wasn't someone that lied or exaggerated. If he said something then that was proof he had confidence or interest.

Like this, Lin Ming took the 10 million plus points and went to the special materials section of the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

He bought up 12 million points of materials in a single go, including all sorts of rare and precious ones. For instance, osmosis rainbow flower fruit. This sort of fruit was the size of a pigeon egg and cost 3 million contribution points, but Lin Ming purchased three of them together.

After taking up all of these materials, Lin Ming returned to his own divine runic room.

By this point Lin Ming had long switched into the highest quality seventh grade divine runic room. This divine runic room was no smaller than a city square and was filled with all sorts of array formations and nearly processed all the materials for him.

He had temporarily refused Suya's request because he had arrived at a critical moment in transforming the fifth grade divine runic symbol.

Before the treasure fair started, Lin Ming planned to select two types of fifth grade divine runic symbols and complete revisions of them.

Of these two types of divine runic symbols, the first one he chose was called the Heavenly Fire Symbol.

The Heavenly Fire Symbol could be called an improved version of the Havoc Flame Symbol.

Because Lin Ming already had experience transforming the Havoc Flame Symbol, it wasn't too much work to transform the Heavenly Fire Symbol.

As for the second divine runic symbol, that was a true test of Lin Ming's ability.

This was a peak fifth grade divine runic symbol!

With Lin Ming's current level of skill, wanting to transform a peak fifth grade divine runic symbol wasn't realistic at all. But, this fifth grade divine runic symbol seemed as if it were especially created for Lin Ming alone.

Its name was the Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol.

The word Extreme meant to bring things to the absolute extreme. The words Dual Polarity meant that this divine runic symbol was able to display the powers of two different elements to their extreme limits. And, these two elements were the thunder and flame elements that Lin Ming specialized in!

The Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol was a dreadfully dangerous offensive divine runic symbol. Out of all the known fifth grade divine runic symbols, the Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol's power and performance could be ranked in the top three. It even surpassed many sixth grade divine runic symbols!

Thus, if one could successfully draw up a single Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol, its value would be enormous.

However, the Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol actually had many limitations.

The difficulty of drawing one up was extremely high. The powers of thunder and fire were violent and tyrannical to the extreme. Wanting to fuse these two types of powers together into a symbol paper wasn't easy at all. If there was a single error, it was possible that the entire mess could explode.

Even a peak fifth grade divine runic master had to be utterly cautious in drawing up an Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol. Failure meant losing all of the invested materials and having blown up array formations. It was even possible to be injured in the process.

The original structure of this divine runic symbol wasn't perfect to begin with. To make revisions and improve the Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol… the difficulty of this could be imagined!

At this time, all sorts of array formations began to activate in the divine runic room.

Lin Ming stood within these array formations, all of his concentration focused on a beautiful red and purple symbol that floated three feet in front of him.

The tiny runes each contained a horrifying strength. If there was even a single mistake in the structure of the tiny runes, the consequences would be incredibly severe!

It had to be known that if one broke any array formations in this room, all damages had to be paid by the divine runic master who rented it.

Because of this, many peak divine runic masters didn't dare to draw up an Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol in the center of expensive array formations. This caused the difficulty to be even higher. It was rare to see a perfectly drawn Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol.

Lin Ming closed his eyes in meditation. At this time, behind Lin Ming, the phantom of a divine tree began to slowly appear.

This was the Heretical God Tree within Lin Ming's inner world!

Chapter 1618 – Heretical God Tree Evolution

Chapter 1618 – Heretical God Tree Evolution

…

…

…

The Heretical God Tree was a holy ruler of fire and thunder. With the suppression of the Heretical God Tree, the fluctuating thunder and fire runes calmed down, becoming peaceful and without a single sign that they would go out of control.

This ability to control thunder and flame to such a degree was something unique to Lin Ming.

He had cultivated the Fire and Thunder Laws to touch upon the threshold of the seventh level Concept. And, martial artists that trained in fire and thunder were extremely rare to begin with. For someone to reach Lin Ming's current achievements was extremely difficult because he was the only one who possessed the Heretical God Force.

Facing the hundred plus tiny runes formed from thunder and fire, Lin Ming's complexion was earnest. His speed was slow and he would often spend a long time drawing up a single tiny rune, constantly making calculations to find the best drawing method.

Like this, several hours passed as Lin Ming immersed himself in making calculations and a drawing plan.

Lin Ming's forehead was wet with beads of sweat. Even with the support of the Heretical God Tree, it was impossible for him to control these 100 plus tiny runes for 8-10 hours.

He grit his teeth, trudging on. Another two hours passed. After Lin Ming forcefully completed a part of the drawing plan, he had reached his limit; he couldn't continue on.

If an ordinary divine runic master were to encounter this situation then they would find it hard to process the remainders of the divine runic symbol that floated in the air. If they were to handle them incorrectly then they might even blow up. But to Lin Ming this wasn't a problem at all.

With a simple thought, the 100 plus tiny runes vanished like fireflies scattering in the night. They flew towards the Heretical God Tree and all of that power of thunder and fire was absorbed by it.

Within several breaths of time, all of the energy had dissipated.

The moment the drawing process ended, Lin Ming slumped onto a stone bench, completely exhausted. This high-intensity deduction process was a tremendous test on his endurance and skill as a divine runic master, and the taste of overdrawing his soul force constantly didn't feel that great either.

After swallowing down some pills, Lin Ming began to meditate.

For these days, Lin Ming's life repeated like this. Every day he would draw and calculate until he exhausted his soul force, and after his soul force was restored he would resume the process.

He had bought a large amount of materials before this and constantly burnt through them. The dregs of these materials were sprinkled around the room. Even the jade slips he used for calculations were randomly piled around.

In this state, Lin Ming had nearly been driven to dark obsession. He completely immersed himself in the Asura Heavenly Dao and the world of divine runic arts, not knowing day or night.

Unknowingly and unwittingly, three months passed. The deadline for the treasure fair approached closer and closer.

As for Lin Ming, he was just a tiny bit away from completing the revisions to the Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol. Even though he squeezed out all of his potential he still wasn't able to complete his work.

It was already late at night. In the dark divine runic room, the light of the array formations radiated outward, dazzling. Lin Ming stood before the divine runic table, all of his focus concentrated on drawing up an Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol.

Lin Ming's eyes were bloodshot and even his fingers trembled. However, as he drew up the tiny runes in the air, his actions remained as stable and accurate as before.

He had already drawn up 763 tiny runes. The structure of these runes could be called perfect!

However, as he drew up the 764th tiny rune, Lin Ming could feel the energy control of thunder and fire go out of equilibrium. He knew that changing a fifth grade divine runic symbol was as difficult as ascending to the heavens, and any changes in the equilibrium of the tiny runes would accumulate until the entire rune structure collapsed.

As a result, Lin Ming tirelessly chased after this point. He had continued this for three days.

In these three days, Lin Ming constantly squeezed out his potential. The burden on his body and soul was immense.

To be more accurate, ever since Lin Ming returned to Divine Rune City, he had spent almost all of his time in such a state.

A divine runic master was a noble and distinguished occupation. Although there were some divine runic masters that would appear tired because they were drawing up a divine runic symbol, there were very few divine runic masters who would push themselves to their limits like Lin Ming did. Divine runic masters were used to a high-brow lifestyle and their work was often relaxed. In their eyes, what Lin Ming was doing would seem far too crazy.

“Just a little bit left…”

Lin Ming had already tried drawing up these 764 tiny runes several dozen times, but he still hadn’t been able to successfully draw the complete plan. And each attempt used up a great deal of Lin Ming’s soul force.

In doing so, his soul force had been nearly emptied.

“This is my limit…”

Lin Ming took a deep breath. In his vision, even these 700 plus tiny runes seemed a bit blurry.

As he spoke, the energy structure had already become unstable. If this continued then the energy structure would collapse and possibly explode.

“Did I make a mistake in the structure that I deduced?”

This thought flashed through Lin Ming’s mind and a deep sense of frustration filled his heart. With his current level of skill and cultivation, it was abnormally difficult to transform the Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol to begin with. Even if Lin Ming had an enormous advantage over others, he still wasn’t an exception.

With his soul force and mentality having reached the limit, Lin Ming wasn’t able to continue any longer. He dispersed the tiny runes that he had worked so hard to draw up and then let them fly into the Heretical God Tree.

In these months, Lin Ming had attempted to draw up the Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol countless times. And all of the failed attempts had been absorbed by the Heretical God Tree.

Although these divine runic symbols had been failures, they were still drawn up using rare and precious materials. These materials were related to thunder and fire and often formed from the essence of flame and thunder in the world.

If Lin Ming were to convert all the materials he used into points, it would be in the tens of millions. For a fifth grade divine runic symbol, this cost was ridiculously exaggerated.

If he continued to consume materials like this, it wouldn't be long before the cost of materials surpassed a hundred million.

It was now, when all the energy essence had been absorbed by the Heretical God Tree and Lin Ming was planning to meditate to restore his soul force that something startling occurred.

Within Lin Ming's inner world, the Heretical God Tree had absorbed the thunder and fire essences of countless failed Extreme Dual Polarity Symbols, and now, it was finally beginning to grow once more!

"…This is!"

Lin Ming's mind shook. Because of the sudden change in the Heretical God Tree, a great deal of his fatigue had vanished.

He watched as the Heretical God Tree absorbed the incomparably pure power of thunder and fire, and then began to extend its branches and leaves.

In comparison to the previous evolutions of the Heretical God Tree, it didn't grow much. However, atop the crown of the tree, many strange lines began to appear.

Lin Ming could see that these lines were dao patterns formed from the Great Dao Laws.

The Heretical God Tree was originally able to absorb the Thunder and Fire Laws. Now, the Fire and Thunder Laws that the Heretical God Tree absorbed were carved within it. And, these Laws faintly manifested the Asura Heavenly Dao!

“This is…”

Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air.

The Heretical God Force was an incredibly marvelous cultivation method. At the beginning stages of this cultivation method, one would form a Heretical God Seed.

This Heretical God Seed didn’t have a set path for growth. Depending on the different types of energies and Laws that were used to water it, it would grow into a completely different type of Heretical God Tree!

Lin Ming’s Heretical God Tree contained many Fire Elementals and Thunder Sources, as well as the destructive flames and heavenly judgment lightning of nine layered tribulation and even Xiao Moxian’s nirvanic flames.

With all of this gathered together, Lin Ming had now unknowingly poured in the Asura Heavenly Dao through the tiny runes of the Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol, causing the Asura Heavenly Dao to manifest in the Heretical God Tree and evolve once more.

It had already been a long time since the Heretical God Tree last evolved.

During this period of time, as Lin Ming’s strength increased, the Heretical God Tree had absorbed far too much strength. With the Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol added on top of that, it finally succeeded in evolving.

The Heretical God Force was a cultivation method that had followed Lin Ming since the start of his road of martial arts. Although it couldn’t be called the strongest of all of Lin Ming’s abilities, it was the one he had reached the highest boundary in and was also the one from which he could bring out the greatest effects.

Up until this now, the Heretical God Force had already saved Lin Ming’s life at numerous critical junctures. Even many of Lin Ming’s current attacks were based upon the Heretical God Force.

Now, this current evolution of the Heretical God Force caused Lin Ming to perk up and be inspired.

After he ate a soul recovery pill he sat in meditation for a short four hours. Then, he took out a variety of materials from his spatial ring and began to challenge the drawing plan of the Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol once more.

When a person was madly obsessed with a matter, they would display a horrifying tenacity.

At this time, when Lin Ming had drawn up the 764th tiny rune, he happily discovered to his surprise that because of the changes in the Heretical God Tree, the energy structure that was originally difficult to control became much more malleable and fluid. Although it hadn't reached perfection, Lin Ming was confident that in the next several days he would be able to overcome the greatest hurdle in transforming the Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol.

At that time, he would be able to perfectly revise the Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol!

………

As the treasure fair approached, Divine Rune City became increasingly lively with every passing day. A massive amount of martial artists flocked towards Divine Rune City from all directions.

Divine Rune City's treasure fair was famed throughout the entire inner Asura Road. It could be called one of the top three ranked great trade meetings of the whole inner Asura Road.

Whenever this time approached, all the treasures from the inner Asura Road would be gathered and all the elites would converge.

As for Divine Rune City, they would also lower the city entrance standards. They would no longer look at talent or whether or not one was a divine runic master. Rather, as long as one had sufficient wealth or treasures, they could enter Divine Rune City.

As for the previous rule that disallowed saints from entering, this would also be cancelled during the period of the treasure fair. Divine Rune City would not harm their own benefits just because of the Extreme Star Holy Lands' war. And even if there were saint spies that entered, it would be impossible for them to cause a ruckus in this treasure fair where masters were around every corner. It had to be known that in this treasure fair, even Empyreans would appear to buy the things they wanted.

At this time, there was still a month until the treasure fair. Every inn within Divine Rune City was already filled to the brim. Some of the more luxurious inns would have a cost of over 10,000 origin energy runes a night, and one might not be able to rent these rooms even if they had money.

Many were forced to bring out their own dwellings and live on the outskirts of Divine Rune City.

During the treasure fair, being able to live in Divine Rune City was a sign of status. Without status, one wouldn't even have the chance to rent a room.

Chapter 1619 – Treasure Fair

Chapter 1619 – Treasure Fair

…

…

…

Divine Rune City's treasure fair was held by a business directly subordinate to the Divine Runic Masters Guild, the Runic Pill Trade Association.

Although the Runic Pill Trade Association's reputation wasn't too obvious, the truth was that the material warehouses of the Divine Runic Masters guild, the cashing in of contribution points, and many other shops and industries affiliated with the Divine Runic Masters Guild were all managed by the Runic Pill Trading Organization.

The term Runic Pill came from the divine runic arts and the pill refining alchemy arts. In Divine Rune City, the divine runic arts and alchemy came hand in hand.

The Divine Runic Masters Guild established the Runic Pill Trading Organization in order to govern their vast fortune and innumerable assets. After all, when it came to business affairs, they needed people who were proficient in that aspect. Divine runic masters generally didn't have the time nor ability to manage such massive amounts of wealth.

As the treasure fair was readying to go into full swing, in a seventh grade divine runic room at the Divine Runic Masters Guild, an exhausted Lin Ming was slumped down in front of a table. His face was pallid and streaming sweat and he seemed completely drained.

But at this time, a burning excitement was shining in his eyes.

A moment ago he had just completed the improved Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol! This also signaled the first time he completed an Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol.

This improved version had a new name, a highly fitting one that was also very tyrannical – the Heretical God Symbol!

The reason it was called this name was because Lin Ming had successfully improved the Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol and he had relied entirely upon the Heretical God Tree's ability to control fire and thunder energies to do so.

The successes of the Heretical God Symbol left Lin Ming feeling a deep sense of accomplishment and satisfaction.

This was something he had used over half a year of painstaking efforts to complete. Only then did he succeed in creating this masterpiece of his. This improved divine runic symbol was the manifestation of Lin Ming's highest level of divine runic arts!

Even for a long time in the future, even if Lin Ming truly stepped into the realm of a sixth grade divine runic master he would it hard to surpass today's accomplishments.

Thinking about the entire creation process of the Heretical God Symbol, Lin Ming felt a stirring feeling in his heart. The reason he was able to succeed was entirely because of some coincidental lucky chances in addition to the evolution of the Heretical God Tree. If he had to turn back time and repeat this process over again, he might not necessarily succeed.

Picking up the completed Heretical God Symbol, Lin Ming took a pen and wrote the 'Lin' character on the bottom right corner.

This was Lin Ming's brand.

Besides the Heretical God Symbol, Lin Ming also drew up the improved version of the Heavenly Fire Symbol.

The various properties of the Heavenly Fire Symbol couldn't be considered as outstanding amongst fifth grade divine runic symbols. Moreover, as with the improved version of the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol, Lin Ming found it much easier to revise because he knew the supporting theoretical basis behind it.

At the bottom right corner of the Heavenly Fire Symbol, Lin Ming also wrote his surname.

At this time, there was a knock on the door. The one who arrived was Xiao Moxian.

Today, Lin Ming decided to take a brief vacation. He made a plan with Xiao Moxian beforehand to go to the treasure fair and take a stroll through it.

Of course, this was also to pave the way for the treasure fair half a month from now.

....

In these past days, using the words lively or bustling wasn't enough to describe the atmosphere of Divine Rune City.

On the streets there were Divine Lords and Holy Lords everywhere. Many of these people hid their cultivation so it was unwise to offend anyone. There were even Great World Kings and half-step Empyreans mingling amongst the crowds.

During the treasure fair, although the greatest auctions would come at the finale of the event, there were still many people trying to drum up interest in their own treasures, thus they participated in the treasure fair from the beginning.

They would display their treasures to attract buyers at the treasure fair. Then when the time for the auction came, they could sell for a good price.

There were even many things that were sold during the treasure fair.

Lin Ming had a specific goal – that was to find dragon saliva grass and a jade dragon horn. As for a heaven devouring snake gallbladder and a primal jade quintessence, those could be found within the Divine Runic Masters Guild's warehouses.

Originally, with Lin Ming's qualifications he didn't have the authority to purchase such precious materials. But, his performance this past year was far too eye-catching. Within the entire Divine Runic Masters Guild there was no one that didn't know of Lin Ming. This caused his status to be incomparable to what it was before.

In addition, Lin Ming contributed all of the ultimate final divine runic art techniques he obtained from Torchriver and the other two divine runic masters' memories and completely handed them over to the Divine Runic Masters Guild. Through these techniques he was able to obtain the right to purchase the heaven devouring snake gallbladder and primal jade quintessence.

Walking through Divine Rune City, Lin Ming could feel the light being blocked out. Looking up, he saw a massive round structure floating high in the skies. This structure was a hundred miles wide! It was incomparably massive as it floated in the skies of Divine Rune City!

This building was built entirely with special obsidian. Beneath the bright sunlight it sparkled with an intense black light. This was a massive floating castle!

From far away, Lin Ming could see many martial artists passing in and out of this giant castle. They were like little bees flying in and out of a nest.

This giant floating castle was the listed address where the Divine Runic Masters guild held the treasure fair.

Divine Rune City was a city where the roads were already paved with gold. Every inch of land was developed and it was impossible to accommodate too many extra people.

Thus, holding the treasure fair in the skies was the most appropriate solution.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian flew up towards the floating castle.

After flying through the front gates, even though Lin Ming had been prepared he was still shocked by the scene occurring before him.

A hundred mile wide space was easily spoken, but the truth was that it was similar to a mortal city in size. A mortal city a few dozen miles wide was already considered large, but for a hundred mile wide city, one couldn't even see the mountains from one side to the other.

This sort of hundred mile wide floating castle had an incomparably broad space within it, as if it were a separate world!

At this time, there was a massive channel in front of Lin Ming. This channel was enough to accommodate hundreds of flying individuals.

And both sides of this giant channel were packed with shops!

Every shop was the size of a palace. Their front gates were wide open as they faced the channel. Looking from afar, this place really did resemble the honeycomb structure of a beehive!

Many martial artists flew through this channel, stopping by any shops that they were interested in.

During this treasure fair, the cost to rent a space in this floating castle was astronomically high. Anyone that could afford it was a major seller.

As for those that couldn't afford a shop, they also had a space. That was the giant market squares within.

The market squares within the floating castle were ten miles long and wide. They could easily hold 100,000 stalls.

"This is quite the grand event." Lin Ming praised.

Xiao Moxian faintly smiled. "Indeed. The Asura Road may be smaller than the Divine Realm, but in terms of liveliness and number of masters, I fear that it is far superior."

Within Demondawn Heavenly Palace, Xiao Moxian had seen many great scenes before. But to hold such an event where so many Divine Lords, Holy Lords, and World Kings converged, all of them bringing out treasures to sell, this was a scene that Demondawn Heavenly Palace wasn't able to compare to.

"Young master, come and take a look at our clothes! Not only are they artistically crafted but they are also practical. Let that pretty lady beside you try one on and I'm sure her beauty will capture you!"

Lin Ming suddenly heard a sweet womanly voice sound out in his ears as he was speaking to Xiao Moxian.

Lin Ming turned his head. At some point, he and Xiao Moxian had unknowingly approached a clothing shop.

This shop had all sorts of robes and vestments on display. The worst of these were all medium-grade spirit artifacts.

If Lin Ming were back to the time when he bought the Boundless World Pill, these enhanced vestments would all be luxury items. But now, Lin Ming's strength surpassed that of an ordinary World King and his wealth was countless times greater than that of an World King of the Divine Realm. Currently, buying a medium-grade spirit artifact vestment wouldn't be anything at all.

"Do you have anything of a higher quality?"

Lin Ming wasn't interested in these magic clothes but he remembered that he had never gifted Xiao Moxian anything. Although Lin Ming didn't really care much for the quality of the clothes that this shop sold, the clothes themselves were actually quite artistic and beautiful. If Xiao Moxian were to wear them they would definitely look beautiful on her.

"Of course."

Seeing Lin Ming open his pockets in such an extravagant manner, the saleswoman was even more attentive to him. She quickly brought out several of her shop's best articles of clothing and Xiao Moxian chose one of them with a bright smile. To the current Lin Ming, 80,000 contribution points was nothing but a light drizzle.

Xiao Moxian happily went to try on the clothes. To her, although these clothes were quite good looking, the most important thing was that Lin Ming was buying them for her.

"Miss, I would like to ask you something. There are several rare and precious materials I want to buy at this treasure fair. Where would I be able to find them?" Lin Ming borrowed this opportunity while he was buying clothes to ask where the rare and precious materials were located in the treasure fair. He didn't want to randomly wander about without aim.

"Rare and precious materials? How rare and precious?" The saleswoman enchantingly smiled. Lin Ming's generosity had her treating him with a great deal of respect and joy.

"In contribution points, 10 million and above."

Lin Ming didn't want to sound too shocking thus he only said 10 million. But in truth, the materials he wanted to buy were in the hundreds of millions.

Even so, the young saleswoman covered her mouth in surprise. 10 million contribution points! Even some poorer World Kings only had around 20 million or so points of wealth.

And this young man in front of her wanted to buy materials that were 10 million points or above. Really, people couldn't be judged by their appearances.

"Those types of precious valuables are all exhibited in the central VIP hall of the castle. Some things are even in the hundreds of millions of points. But to enter the VIP hall, you'll need VIP status or at least 50 million points..."

The young saleswoman looked at Lin Ming with awe and gave him a map of the floating castle.

“Thank you.”

Lin Ming glanced through this map. There was an extremely detailed explanation of every area and it was highly helpful to Lin Ming. After leaving the shop, he and Xiao Moxian flew to the central VIP hall.

The entire VIP hall was made with timeless god stones. Lin Ming showed a jade slip with at least 50 million contribution points and smoothly entered.

As soon as he entered the VIP hall, everything became completely different.

The VIP hall lacked the ruckus from outside and there weren’t as many people. Within the entire hall, a rich medicinal fragrance wafted about; this was the fragrance of the heavenly materials everywhere.

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He had high accomplishments in alchemy and immediately ascertained that the pills which could release such a smell would sell for at least 50 million.

This filled Lin Ming with anticipation as he entered the VIP hall. Here, perhaps he really could find the dragon saliva grass and jade dragon horn he needed.

Chapter 1620 – Divine Void Duke

Chapter 1620 – Divine Void Duke

…

…

…

"Sir, may I ask how I can help you?"

After Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian entered the VIP hall, a beautiful maid welcomed them. The treatment within the VIP hall was completely different from the outside.

"I want a list of the treasures in the VIP hall."

Lin Ming glanced at the maid. The maids in the VIP hall all wore uniforms and they had the emblem of the Runic Pill Trading Company embroidered on their chests.

Soon after, the maid handed a jade slip to Lin Ming. Just as Lin Ming was about to search through it, his heart chilled. In that moment he had felt someone's sense pass swiftly and gently over him.

This sense was decidedly covert. If it wasn't for Lin Ming's powerful soul force then he wouldn't have noticed it.

Lin Ming frowned. Just who was investigating him?

That brief sense just now was icy cold, as if it harbored dark intentions.

Lin Ming held the jade slip and quietly swept his sense outwards, probing the crowd in the hall. But, he wasn't able to determine where this sense had come from.

This caused Lin Ming to be increasingly wary. This meant the person's strength was even above his!

"If this person is so strong, could they be a Great World King?"

Lin Ming was left puzzled. He had lived in seclusion within the Blue Moon Sect for over 20 years, only studying the divine runic arts and alchemy. After he left he went to Divine Rune City where he painstakingly researched for over a year.

During this time period, Lin Ming didn't think that he had provoked any enemies. As for his previous enemies, Tian Mingzi and Naqi had already been killed by him. As for Heaven's Net, they shouldn't have any reason to keep focusing on him after 20 years of not doing anything. Moreover, if they wanted to do anything to him they would have to heavily weigh the consequences.

Lin Ming felt that there shouldn't be anyone focusing on him, so how come there was someone locking onto him as he was buying materials?

"Brother Lin, what is it?"

Xiao Moxian asked. She discovered that there was something unusual with Lin Ming.

"Nothing, there's just someone snooping on me and their boundary is very high." Lin Ming said, keeping an eye out for anyone strange, "But there's no need to worry about this person. As long as we're in Divine Rune City there's nothing he can do against us. We just need to pay a little attention to this and we'll be fine. This person will jump out on their own volition sooner or later."

As Lin Ming spoke, his eyes brightened. Because of that unfriendly sense he hadn't paid much attention to the jade slip. But now that he looked at it again, there were several things listed that caught his interest.

Among these items was a top spirit treasure called a Dragon Contract, and the material used to refine this spirit treasure was the jade dragon horn that Lin Ming needed!

“A hundred million year Jade Dragon and the blood marrow within the dragon horn is completely preserved, that’s extremely rare! Unfortunately it was already refined into a spirit treasure so it is far more expensive than the original materials. Even so, I must buy it. This type of rare and precious material can only be found through a stroke of fate.”

Lin Ming only wanted to take the jade dragon horn for alchemy. As for the spirit treasure, he would need to discard it no matter how good it was. It was truly a pity.

“It looks like the 2 billion contribution points I’ve gathered won’t be enough… there are many things on this list that I need. At that time, if I spend all my points on materials and miss out on all the other good things, that would be too unfortunate…”

Lin Ming made a quick calculation. The 2 billion points he gathered suddenly wasn’t enough.

He lacked too many contribution points!

“Xian’er, let’s see what quality that jade dragon horn is like.”

“Okay!” Xiao Moxian said. Like this, the two of them walked towards the exhibition of the Dragon Contract.

And as Lin Ming walked away, not too far from them there was a VIP rest room, covered with intricate array formations that isolated all sense.

The stylized floor was covered with fur rugs made from ancient vicious beasts. There was a tea table placed atop the rugs and this tea table was surrounded by several men and women, all of them slowly sipping tea.

A beautiful maid knelt on the rug, pouring tea for those present. Her tea skills were intricate and beautiful.

“I just bought some dark rain flower tea at this treasure fair. 100,000 points for one tael. Dark rain flowers can only be picked once every 10,000 years, and only after being cooked together with 72 different kinds of heavenly materials can this type of top grade dark rain flower tea be made. This tea is wonderful. The points spent weren't wasted at all."

The one who spoke was a blue-clothed man. He was dressed ordinarily and looked like a mortal scholar. His cultivation was obscured and it was difficult to see his depths.

And sitting beside him were several young men and women. These people all wore top grade vestments and golden crowns. Their foundations were solid and their looks were outstanding; it was clear they were elites among elites, and even so these people clearly looked towards the blue-clothed man with respect.

Around the tea table, besides the several young men and women, there was also an old man wrapped in a black cloak. His entire body exuded a grim atmosphere and he seemed profoundly mysterious.

"Old Shadow, what is it... you seemed to have something on your mind..." The blue-clothed man looked at the black-cloaked old man, smiling as he spoke. "This is wonderful tea, it will cool soon..."

"It's nothing. I just saw someone I'm not too happy about..." The black-cloaked man grimly said. Although his face was cloaked in darkness, one could still see a pair of sharp eyes like those of an eagle.

As the black-cloaked old man spoke, the blue-clothed man's eyebrows arched up. "What person could make Old Shadow be so unhappy?"

"Hehe..." The black-cloaked old man's lips twitched and he dismally chuckled. "A young boy who came from who knows where, he was able to create a fourth grade divine runic symbol that could be used multiple times. It's called the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol. Duke Fullmoon, you must have heard of this person already."

"It's Lin Ming?"

“Right, it’s him!” The black-cloaked old man said, not too willing to mention this name. This person called Duke Fullmoon began to laugh, “Old Shadow, it seems you’ve taken your defeat of copying the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol to heart. You can be called the number one master amongst dark divine runic masters, but the reason you failed can’t be blamed on yourself. I estimate that it must be an issue with the inheritance of this young man called Lin Ming…”

Duke Fullmoon candidly said. The black-cloaked old man sitting in front of him was Grandmaster Overflow, who had failed to copy the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol over half a year ago.

Grandmaster Overflow’s name was Shadow Overflow. It was just that very few people knew his name.

The treasure fair held by the Divine Runic Masters Guild was one of the grandest events of the inner Asura Road. As a dark divine runic master, Overflow naturally wouldn’t miss out on such festivities. He was also counting on this treasure fair to find some rare and precious materials as well as other treasures.

But, the reputation of a dark divine runic master was too sour to the ears. Many orthodox divine runic masters who considered themselves righteous were nearly unable to coexist with dark divine runic masters. As someone who lived in the dark world, if Shadow Overflow wanted to attend the treasure fair he could only hide his status.

“Inheritance…” Shadow Overflow’s eyes shined with a cold light. He had also thought of this point before.

Shadow Overflow’s feelings towards Lin Ming could be described as utter hate.

Although Lin Ming had never deliberately provoked Shadow Overflow, it was because of Lin Ming’s Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols that Shadow Overflow lost 200 million points in array discs! Not just that, but his reputation had suffered a massive blow!

Now, it had become known in the entire dark divine runic master community that Grandmaster Overflow had lost to a brat in the divine runic arts. This left him even more depressed.

And as representatives of the Divine Runic Masters Guild, those orthodox divine runic masters all viewed Shadow Overflow as a joke.

How could Shadow Overflow be happy with all of this? All of the unfortunate events that happened to him had been thanks to Lin Ming. Thus, even if Lin Ming hadn't left the Divine Runic Masters Guild for over a year, he had still somehow managed to inexplicably make an enemy.

In these past several months, Shadow Overflow specifically gathered information related to Lin Ming. He was able to see Lin Ming's appearance through a phantom image and thus was able to recognize him.

"Lin Ming… Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol…" Duke Fullmoon stirred his tea with the cup lid, his lips curving up in a grin.

Seeing Duke Fullmoon's expression, Shadow Overflow's thoughts stirred as he guessed something.

"Duke Fullmoon, have you taken a liking to Lin Ming's inheritance?"

"Haha!" Duke Fullmoon laughed out loud. "That's right, this young man called Lin Ming seems to have started studying the divine runic arts not too long ago. He should be in possession of a unique inheritance completely different from what is known today. And, I value this inheritance very much! If Lin Ming was able to improve the Havoc Flame Symbol, it must be because of this inheritance. Old Shadow had never come into contact with Lin Ming's school of technique and thus didn't understand his type of inheritance, so it's natural for you to have failed.

"So, Old Shadow didn't lose to a young man like Lin Ming, but to the mysterious inheritance behind him!"

As Duke Fullmoon said this, Shadow Overflow's complexion became slightly better. After all, he didn't believe that a junior like Lin Ming could surpass him in attainments of the divine runic arts. If he lost, it had to be because of this strange inheritance.

Duke Fullmoon said, "I suspect that this inheritance Lin Ming studies has a special method that allows divine runic symbols to be used repeatedly. But, Lin Ming has only managed to transform a Havoc Flame Symbol and the value of that isn't too heaven-defying. No matter how strong a peak fourth grade divine runic symbol is, it is still a fourth grade divine runic symbol.

"For this inheritance to be left in Lin Ming's hands is too great a waste. But if it were in my hands then I would be able to display its full abilities!"

As Duke Fullmoon spoke, his eyes shined with a dazzling light.

Shadow Overflow cackled, his heart moved to happiness. "Duke Fullmoon is indeed bold. I also wish to obtain this boy's inheritance, but it seems there is a powerful master standing behind him, thus I haven't dared to act rashly."

Hearing this, Duke Fullmoon laughed dismissively, thinking little of it. "His master is just an Empyrean, right? Even a great influence like the Divine Runic Masters Guild or the Extreme Star Holy Lands wouldn't dare to offend an Empyrean, but for my Divine Void Divine Kingdom, it's just a little bit of trouble. It's not considered much at all."

Duke Fullmoon was fully confident in his words and he had the capital to be confident. Although his strength was only that of a World King, he had the backing of Divine Void Divine Kingdom. And, Divine Void Divine Kingdom was a True Divinity level influence!

In the past, the two greatest peak Empyreans of the spiritas were Divine Mist and Divine Void!

These two peak Empyreans were blood brothers, but afterwards, Divine Mist went missing and Divine Void stepped into the realm of True Divinity. From that point on, the myth of Divine Void Divine Kingdom was born!

Speaking to here, Duke Fullmoon stood up and said, “We’re leaving. Old Shadow, let’s go and meet this Lin Ming!”

Chapter 1621 – Jade Dragon Horn

Chapter 1621 – Jade Dragon Horn

…

…

…

With the young maid guiding them, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian arrived at the center of the flying castle’s VIP hall.

The ground here was formed from clear crystal glass. This sort of crystal had no impurities at all. If one didn’t reach out to touch it, it would be difficult to even tell it was there.

The crystal glass beneath was empty space. As one walked over the crystal they could see the skies from a hundred thousand feet up in the air. Looking down, one could see the incomparably vast Divine Rune City stretching to the horizon.

From this height, the massive palaces and temples of the city became as small as toys, and the people walking along the streets became smaller than ants.

Walking here, one felt as if they were walking over the entirety of Divine Rune City.

“Sir, the exhibition room over there is the display room for the Dragon Contract spirit treasure. If you wish to enter, you must abide by the trading rules!”

The young maid gave a jade slip to Lin Ming. The jade slip was engraved with the words ‘Treasure Fair Trading Rules’.

Lin Ming swept over the jade slip. There were dozens of rules listed in it. The basics of it were that all trading must be done voluntarily and fairly and once a transaction was made it was permanent. One couldn't buy or sell and then refuse on a whim.

Lin Ming took the jade slip and smiled. He placed 100 contribution points onto the badge on the young maid's chest.

Seeing this, the young maid was ecstatic. This tip was several times a year's wage.

As the girl happily left, Lin Ming stepped into the display room.

This display room for the Dragon Contract was 10 feet wide and long. There were a variety of objects placed within the room.

The most eye-catching of these objects was a dragon carved from white jade placed upon a pedestal in the center of the room. This dragon was carved in an exquisitely lifelike manner, as if it were about to come to life at any moment.

The white jade dragon's claws held a jade box. This jade was surrounded with a number of array formations. With a brief probe, Lin Ming could estimate that the strength of these array formations could even hold back a World King powerhouse.

However, even though these array formations separated Lin Ming from the box, he could still feel that a powerful strength was locked within it. The surging blood vitality coming from it left one's heart racing.

If he wasn't wrong, then this jade box held the Dragon Contract that was refined with a jade dragon horn!

"This grade of treasure is likely an Empyrean spirit treasure… it must be ridiculously expensive!"

Seeing that this jade chest was around a square foot, Lin Ming could guess that this Dragon Contract was a foot long at most.

A true jade dragon horn could be a thousand feet long. But, using some arcane skills, one could shrink it down, concentrating it.

For instance, Lin Ming's Azure Dragon bone had been refined by Mo Riverbliss using a secret technique and turned into dragon bone relics.

As Lin Ming walked into the room, a fat shopkeeper narrowed his eyes and looked at him.

Although Lin Ming was young and his cultivation wasn't too high, the fat shopkeeper wouldn't underestimate him. Anyone that entered the VIP hall could not be looked at with contempt. This was especially true for the youths, because they likely had some great influence standing behind them.

"Sir, are you interested in the Dragon Contract?"

The fat shopkeeper stood up from his chair, a wide smile on his face. He had a Divine Lord cultivation and was only a guard for this small display room. The treasures here belonged to his master.

"Can you take it out for a look?" Lin Ming asked. His sense was isolated out by the array formations so it was impossible for him to see what was inside.

The fat shopkeeper shook his head. "I am very sorry but the Dragon Contract is sealed in the array formation so that even I cannot take it out. No matter which guest comes, they can only look in from the outside. The true auction will begin a month from now and once it starts, sir will naturally be able to see its true colors."

"Mm..." Lin Ming nodded. It was reasonable to maintain the mystery around a treasure of this level. "This Dragon Contract is an Empyrean spirit treasure?"

"That's right. This is a treasure found by my family's master on a mystic realm venture. During that venture into the mystic realm there were over 10 World Kings participating, but with my family's master having a great destiny upon his body, he was the one to luckily survive the dangers and obtain this item!" The fat shopkeeper vividly illustrated the origins of the Dragon Contract.

Lin Ming didn't doubt this. It was normal for a mystic realm with Empyrean spirit treasures to have dozens of World Kings exploring it.

He quietly calculated the price of this Dragon Contract. Although it was worse than the Primordius Gate and Primordius Bell, it wasn't too far off.

A month later, its auction price would definitely be ridiculous!

Lin Ming increasingly felt that the 2 billion points he had was far from enough.

In a short month he had to find some way to gain another massive amount of points, otherwise he would be in danger of losing in the auctions he wanted to win.

And these materials could only be found through serendipity.

If he failed this time, he didn't know when he would next have this chance. Lin Ming wasn't able to wait this long.

"Can you reveal the starting price?" Lin Ming asked.

"Well… it hasn't been decided yet, but it should be between 500 million and a billion…"

"Mm, I understand." This price was well within Lin Ming's anticipating. As for the final auction price, he wouldn't be surprised if it was at least double.

"Sir, although the Dragon Contract isn't for sale yet, there are still some items here that you may be interested in. Would you like to take a look at them?"

As the fat shopkeeper spoke he took out many items.

Things that were able to be displayed in the VIP hall naturally weren't ordinary. Lin Ming swept over the items and quickly discovered extremely valuable spirit artifacts and high grade pills.

However, these things didn't draw Lin Ming's attention. What he cared about was a necklace.

Lin Ming had amazing eyesight. At a glance he was able to see that there was a divine runic symbol on this necklace.

Lin Ming had inherited Torchriver and the others' memories so he had a deep understanding of the different types of divine runic symbols. He was able to recognize that this was a peak sixth grade divine runic symbol, one that even approached the seventh grade – it was called the Heart Spirit Symbol.

Its function was to use the necklace to remember a person's soul aura. Then, the master of this necklace could use the necklace to communicate with that person. As long as they were in the same universe, even if they were separated by 10 quadrillion miles the necklace with the Heart Spirit Symbol would still be able to send a message! This was something that no sound transmitting talisman could compare with.

Although the Heart Spirit Symbol was a peak sixth grade divine runic symbol, it only had the single function of facilitating communication and this was limited to only two people. Thus, the effects weren't as great as those of other peak sixth grade divine runic symbols. Moreover, a great deal of rare and precious materials were needed to draw it and the cost was astronomical, so very few divine runic masters drew one.

Still, there would occasionally be a divine runic master that would spend a great deal of effort to draw up this divine runic symbol. This was mostly when there was a special need for it. For instance, to protect certain important individuals. As long as two people were in the same realm, regardless of where they were they could instantly locate the other person.

Lin Ming was skilled, but he had yet to truly step into the boundary of a sixth grade divine runic master so it was impossible for him to draw up a Heart Spirit Symbol.

Even Torchriver and the others wouldn't draw up a Heart Spirit Symbol.

But, this necklace was actually useful to Lin Ming.

He planned to buy it and gift it to Xiao Moxian. If so, he could communicate with her at any time and know what her current situation was. This would be tremendously useful for the final trial.

If Lin Ming passed the final trial and was able to bring the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws back to the Divine Realm, this necklace would still be able to be used. At that time, Lin Ming could also know what Xiao Moxian's circumstances were in Demondawn Heavenly Palace. Otherwise, he would be endlessly worried that Empyrean Demondawn would find some clue about him on Xiao Moxian and keep her under house arrest.

"This necklace, how much is it?"

"Sir has great eyes. This necklace is called the Thousand Mile Heartlink. It is the best gift to give one's lover. At any time, anywhere, you will be able to contact them. The price is 30 million points."

The fat shopkeeper said, looking at Xiao Moxian with flattering eyes.

Xiao Moxian wrinkled her nose. "This is too expensive. 30 million to buy a necklace for communication?"

Still, Lin Ming remembered the Treasure Fair Trading Rules that he looked over earlier. One of the rules stated that all items had to be clearly marked with the auction price. In particular, within the VIP hall, all items were price-marked beforehand and the Runic Pill Trading Organization even sent people to specifically verify that these items were accurately priced.

With Lin Ming's experience, he knew that this Thousand Mile Heartlink was indeed worth this price. Although it had a very niche function, the cost to manufacture it was extremely high.

He said, "I'll buy it."

As Lin Ming spoke, he took out a contribution point jade slip and sent 30 million point runes fluttering out.

"Big Brother Lin, you still have an auction in a month…" Xiao Moxian anxiously pulled on Lin Ming's arm.

"Having another 30 million for the auction won't matter. If I buy this necklace now, it will definitely be useful later." Lin Ming vaguely said, paying the points.

"Great!" The fat shopkeeper was overjoyed as he saw these 30 million points.

After buying this necklace but before taking it in hand, a voice resounded from behind him. "Thousand Mile Heartlink? That's a good name. Shopkeeper, forget that transaction. I am interested in that necklace."

Lin Ming turned around as he heard this voice. He saw four or five men in feathered robes. These robes all appeared similar; it was clear they came from the same influence.

And beside these young men and women was a black-cloaked old man. This old man caught Lin Ming's attention. From this old man's body, Lin Ming could feel an icy cold aura.

And this icy cold aura was the same as the one Lin Ming felt when he first entered the VIP hall!

"It was this person? He was spying on me?"

Lin Ming frowned. He simply didn't have the slightest impression of who this old man was and this should be the first time they met, so why would this person be targeting him?

Hidden in his black cloak, Shadow Overflow darkly smiled as he noticed Lin Ming’s gaze. From beneath his shadowy cloak, one could only make out his old and withered lips, looking extremely bleak.

Chapter 1622 – Suppressing Fullmoon

Chapter 1622 – Suppressing Fullmoon

…

…

…

Seeing the black-cloaked old man and the blue-clothed man appear, Lin Ming had a sudden premonition that these people did not come here for the Thousand Mile Heartlink but for himself.

He quietly watched as the blue-clothed man who looked like an ordinary mortal scholar and the peculiar black-cloaked old man approached.

“Shopkeeper, I heard that you were selling that necklace for 30 million? I will add another 10 million, so how about selling it to me instead?”

As Duke Fullmoon spoke he glanced over at a captivating woman near him. “Junior-apprentice Sister Qing, your birthday is approaching so how about I make a gift of this necklace. If you wear it, I’m sure you’ll be even more beautiful…”

The young woman standing beside Duke Fullmoon was indeed a ravishing beauty, pleasing to the eyes.

Hearing Duke Fullmoon suddenly offer her such a precious gift, her heart skipped a beat. She found this hard to imagine. She was Duke Fullmoon’s lover, yes, but she wasn’t too special amongst his several other lovers. Duke Fullmoon had never given her anything so precious before.

“Really?”

This junior-apprentice sister Qing smiled, pleasantly surprised.

“Of course I’m for real.” Duke Fullmoon traced her cheeks. Then he turned to Lin Ming, a grin on his face.

He hadn’t taken a liking to this necklace; his only goal here was to probe Lin Ming.

If the master behind Lin Ming was a True Divinity and not an Empyrean, then any amount of points would be nothing to Lin Ming. Although Duke Fullmoon felt that the chances there was a True Divinity master behind Lin Ming were extremely low, he still had to be careful about this. A True Divinity was someone he absolutely could not offend.

Lin Ming frowned, not responding. As for the shopkeeper that was selling the necklace, he froze. He received a commission for selling any item, and the higher he sold it for the more he would make. He certainly hoped to sell a higher-priced necklace to Duke Fullmoon.

And at this time, Junior-apprentice Sister Qing looked at Xiao Moxian with haughty eyes, like the enormous sense of superiority a rich person felt against the poor.

Xiao Moxian only coldly laughed. She looked at Duke Fullmoon and that Junior-apprentice Sister Qing as if she were looking at a flock of bumbling idiots “Wasting another 10 million to compete for something like this, is there any meaning to it? Someone that brags about their money just because they have some great influence standing behind them, I really wonder if these people are fools or just insane.”

Xiao Moxian naturally didn’t know why these people had come over to antagonize Lin Ming. Instead, she simply considered all of them wastrels of their generation.

Duke Fullmoon’s complexion sank. As he listened to Xiao Moxian, he felt an anger he couldn’t voice.

Xiao Moxian turned to Lin Ming and spoke as if it didn’t matter at all. “Big Brother Lin, if he wants to fight for that necklace then let him; I have no interest in it. Someone is selling it for 30 million and he doesn't think it's expensive enough so he wants to add another 10 million, what a special fellow he is."

Xiao Moxian had extremely good eyesight. Looking at the clothes that Duke Fullmoon wore, she was able to approximately judge his net worth. If this was the type of person that came from a large influence and liked to randomly stir up trouble just because, then there was nothing good that could come from quarrelling with them.

Although Lin Ming was wealthy and he could definitely compete for this Thousand Mile Heartlink, he was stretched for money and couldn't spend it on something as insignificant as this. If he really decided to compete with these people in terms of money then that would truly be silly.

Thus, Xiao Moxian said what she said to comfort Lin Ming and make it easier for him to give up.

Lin Ming knew just what Xiao Moxian was trying to do. He faintly smiled, "If I'm buying something I definitely won't let others take it away. Moreover, this necklace is indeed useful to us."

"Big Brother Lin, what are you..." Xiao Moxian was startled. In her opinion, Lin Ming wasn't irrational like this. Just because they were bitten by a mad dog on the streets didn't mean they should get on the floor and bite back.

"It's fine." Lin Ming waved his hand.

Duke Fullmoon was surprised by these words. He thought that Lin Ming would give up the Thousand Mile Heartlink with Xiao Moxian's urging, but he didn't think that Lin Ming would say these words instead.

"How amusing. Since you're interested, then let's have a little competition. I'll add another 10 million to make it 50 million. What about you?"

Duke Fullmoon looked at Lin Ming with provocation in his eyes.

Lin Ming only smiled and looked to the fat shopkeeper.

At this time, the fat shopkeeper's forehead was dripping with sweat. This was because he was excited but also because he was afraid.

He was someone that barely managed to break into the Divine Lord realm by relying on accumulating to his age as well as using a variety of pills. He was nothing but an old steward that was unlikely to have any more achievements in his life. He was well aware that those guests able to enter the VIP hall all had extraordinary backgrounds. Moreover, he could also feel that although this Lin Ming was dressed ordinarily, he absolutely wasn't ordinary, even for those people here.

With two dragons battling, he didn't want to offend either one of them. But, he also wanted to obtain more advantages, so this made him lean towards the one that offered a higher price.

Seeing Lin Ming look at him, the fat shopkeeper squeezed out a sweaty smile. He said with a dry mouth, "That guest has put forth a bid of 50 million, do you plan on..."

"Plan on what?" Lin Ming asked in return. He pointed towards the contribution points jade slip in the fat shopkeeper's hand. "You seem to have mistaken something here. I offered you 30 million points and you have already accepted. The transaction is complete and the necklace is mine. If anyone is to sell it, then that would be me."

As Lin Ming spoke he placed a jade slip on the table. This jade slip was a copy of the Treasure Fair Trading Rules that the young maid had given him earlier.

Although the dozens of rules listed in the Treasure Fair Trading Rules seemed like nonsense, it was actually quite useful at this time.

These were rules that everyone at the treasure fair had to follow.

Of these rules, one was that all trades had to be done fairly and voluntarily. And there was also one more rule: all transactions were permanent once completed.

And Lin Ming had completed the transaction with the fat shopkeeper just now.

Lin Ming unhurriedly took out a recording array disc. Before the shopkeeper could respond, Lin Ming recorded the 30 million points that the fat shopkeeper held onto an illusory magic array.

“You…”

The shopkeeper was stunned; he didn’t know how to react.

Duke Fullmoon frowned. “You consider that as having completed the transaction? Although you paid the points you still haven’t taken the necklace. If this is a transaction, isn’t it only half finished?”

“Is that so?” Then, Lin Ming slowly took out two sound transmitting talismans and smiled at Duke Fullmoon and Shadow Overflow. “If you two are targeting me then you must know my status already, right? If you know who I am then you should also know that it won’t be a problem for me to contact several Elders in the Divine Runic Masters Guild. How do you think they will rule on this matter?”

Dragons could not bully local snakes. Within the Divine Runic Masters Guild, Lin Ming could be called an influential person with a number of connections. Although that Old Xue and Old Su seemed like cheeky old fogies who liked to waste their time, for better or worse they were true and blue Elders of the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

Although Old Xue normally tried to tease and take advantage of Lin Ming, when facing outsiders he absolutely wouldn’t shield them. How could he allow himself and his colleagues to be bullied at their own home?

Duke Fullmoon’s complexion became much uglier. He certainly knew of Lin Ming’s fame. Lin Ming was a talented individual that the Divine Runic Masters Guild was carefully raising!

How could someone that could successfully create the improved Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol be ignored?

"The Treasure Fair Trading Rules state at the front that anyone who dares violate the rules of the treasure fair will lose their trading qualifications, whether they are buyers or sellers. I have no idea who you are and what influence you originate from, but in Divine Rune City you follow the rules of the Divine Runic Masters Guild. If you insist on breaking the rules then according to the rules I must ask you to leave the city."

Lin Ming's words were spoken clearly and calmly. But, his words held a momentum that could not be refused. Duke Fullmoon couldn't find the words to argue back.

As for that fat shopkeeper, his entire face was dripping sweat and he couldn't help but wipe himself clean. It was like Lin Ming said. If he truly didn't follow the rules and give the necklace to Lin Ming then he would be asked to leave Divine Rune City. Once that happened, his master would blame him and he definitely would not be able to withstand the punishment.

"Interesting! How interesting!"

Even though Duke Fullmoon knew he had lost in this first confrontation with Lin Ming, the gloomy look on his face still rapidly disappeared and the confident smile appeared once more.

"I've underestimated you."

Although this was a minor matter and Lin Ming's methods couldn't be considered too clever, Duke Fullmoon was still a bit more wary of Lin Ming. He had also obtained a copy of the Treasure Fair Trading Rules, and didn't look over it much because he thought it was a bunch of nonsense.

He never imagined that jade slip with pages of nonsense would be the reason he lost to Lin Ming just now.

All things considered, Lin Ming was more careful than he was. This sort of person, when exploring a mystic realm, could often find advantages in the environment to overcome their enemy.

Xiao Moxian also never imagined that Lin Ming would have this move. She grinned, revealing a tiny pair of canines. She was originally a proud and arrogant genius and she definitely didn't like having her spotlight be stolen by another woman she considered nothing but a pretty vase.

She smiled with deep satisfaction and said, "Well, if you want to put forth 300 million then I can consider selling this necklace to you."

These words were deliberately spoken by Xiao Moxian to irritate these people.

"300 million… hehe." Duke Fullmoon bleakly laughed. He didn't need this Thousand Mile Heartlink necklace to begin with and he certainly wouldn't give Lin Ming a random 300 million points.

"You seem to be short on money?"

Duke Fullmoon meaningfully looked at Xiao Moxian. From the way Xiao Moxian was afraid that Lin Ming would lose money struggling with him, he could infer that Lin Ming's current economic situation wasn't doing too well.

At this time, Shadow Overflow's sound transmission reached Duke Fullmoon's ears.

Duke Fullmoon's thoughts stirred and he grinned. "So that's how it is. You want to buy this Dragon Contract?

"What a coincidence. The item I'm looking forwards to the most is also this Dragon Contract. That Thousand Mile Heartlink has a clearly marked price so you used the rules to gain an advantage over me, but this Dragon Contract is to be auctioned fair and square. I want to see at that time just how you'll compete with me!"

Shadow Overflow had been using his sense to spy on Lin Ming from the start, thus he naturally knew Lin Ming wanted to buy the jade dragon horn.

Chapter 1623 – Target

Chapter 1623 – Target

…

…

…

“Compete with me for the Dragon Contract?” Lin Ming’s heart chilled. Although he appeared to remain calm, his mind was racing as he considered this blue-clothed man’s words.

“Their words and actions… seem to be targeting me, probing me…”

Lin Ming slyly smiled. Within the inner Asura Road, this sort of massive treasure fair that had all sorts of top quality pills, divine runic symbols and Empyrean spirit treasures for sale would attract influences from all over.

At this treasure fair, there were more Divine Lords than dogs, Holy Lords walked everywhere, and there were even a massive number World Kings. Even half-step Empyreans were hidden amongst the crowds. If one were to casually provoke someone, they might end up being someone with a powerful background.

The Dragon Contract refined with the jade dragon horn cost a minimum of 500 million points. This was not a price that the average person could put forth.

And this blue-clothed man and black-cloaked old man had come from nowhere and then signaled that they were going to compete with him for the Dragon Contract; it was clear that their origins were great!

Lin Ming couldn't help but find this a bit strange. Ever since arriving at the Inner Asura Road he basically didn't make any enemies. Yet, these two people came from out of nowhere and also originated from a great influence, so just how were they connected?

After sifting through his memories, Lin Ming still couldn't find a clue as to who they were. So, he simply put this line of thinking to the side.

Lin Ming nonchalantly glanced at the black-cloaked old man. This old man seemed to have a familiar atmosphere to him, the atmosphere of a divine runic master…

Different situations called for different measures. If these people were probing his financial situation, he absolutely could not show the slightest hint of weakness. Otherwise, once these people discovered what his financial bottom line was they would bide their time until the auction began and then make targeted bids against him. This would be extremely disadvantageous for him.

"You also want the Dragon Contract?" Lin Ming's eyes were indifferent. He lifted his gaze and looked at the blue-clothed man. Although his voice wasn't loud, it held the tone of inevitable victory.

Duke Fullmoon's eyes flashed as he welcomed Lin Ming's gaze. A taunting smile curved up his face. "Yes, there are many things I am interested in at this auction. And of those things I am interested in, there is nothing I cannot obtain."

Duke Fullmoon's words were similarly sharp.

Xiao Moxian watched on from the side, her eyes filled with loathing and disgust as she glared at this Duke Fullmoon. To be fair, this duke's words weren't too hateful, but the tone in which he spoke and the contempt in his eyes was far too aggravating. If this were the Divine Realm she might have already dug this dog's eyes out.

But this was the Asura Road and her situation was different to how it used to be. They had no backing here and their wealth was also limited.

Xiao Moxian could only puff out her cheeks and glare at Duke Fullmoon with eyes that could kill.

"See you in a month then." Lin Ming lightly smiled. His eyes slowly swept over Duke Fullmoon and Shadow Overflow's faces as he imprinted them deep in his mind.

In any case, these two people were hostile to him, so remaining a bit vigilant was always good.

After leaving behind these words, Lin Ming took Xiao Moxian's hand and left. The moment he turned, he frowned. This was a bit of a headache… to think that there would actually be competition that appeared. At the time of the treasure fair, he feared that it would be hard to obtain the things he wanted…

Points! He had to earn some more points!

"This smelly brat really has no manners, to think he would dare to take the last word against the Duke. It seems he doesn't know how high the heavens are." Junior-apprentice Sister Qing leaned against Duke Fullmoon's shoulders, sending a disdainful glance at the fading Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian.

"According to what he said, it seems he believes that he'll win against you at the treasure fair."

Duke Fullmoon smiled. "Win against me? They are far from enough!"

In that brief probe just now, although Lin Ming was airtight and didn't reveal anything, Duke Fullmoon's intuition told him that Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian weren't people with deep backgrounds nor were they too wealthy.

The Dragon Contract required over a billion points to win, and that was the bare minimum. That was a massive amount of wealth, and even as a Duke of the Divine Void Divine Kingdom, taking out all of that at once was still painful.

In regards to Lin Ming’s words, he hadn’t taken them to heart. But, his gaze was a bit sharper. He didn’t know why, but the way Lin Ming looked at him and the apathetic disdain in his eyes caused him to not be too happy.

“This brat can endure.” Shadow Overflow walked over. His eyes stared at Lin Ming’s departing back, flickering in the dark of his cloak.

“Send some people to keep an eye on him and keep looking up any information on him. It's impossible that he’ll be a good little boy and hand over the secrets of his divine runic arts inheritance. We must be prepared.” Duke Fullmoon thoughtfully said.

…………

The air around the grand and splendid Divine Rune City was filled with mysterious fluctuations of energy.

All year long, the only season was a warm spring. Gentle sunlight fell down from skies, falling onto the buildings and creating mottled shadows.

Wandering through the city, Xiao Moxian could feel the warmth of the person hugging her wrap around her. Even though she couldn’t be called happy, her earlier anger and worries diluted a great deal.

“Big Brother Lin, those people were just disgusting! I just wanted to take a stroll around the treasure fair… but now even my mood is ruined by them…” Xiao Moxian said, twisting her lips. She hung her head down, nestling into Lin Ming’s warm chest, feeling weak and not wanting to leave.

“Just treat them as nothing.” Lin Ming smiled, letting go of the playful and beautiful girl.

Xiao Moxian chuckled and then coldly snorted as she thought of the events again. A faint killing intent rolled off her. “Humph, if this was the Divine Realm I would have already killed them. To dare speak to my Lin Ming like that…”

Lin Ming shrugged. To him, the events of today were only a small interlude. He simply didn't take it to heart.

However, this small event did remind him that there would be many more hardships than he thought if he wanted to obtain the treasures he wanted from the treasure fair a month from now.

He needed to earn more money! He needed to make more preparations!

After flying straight back to the Divine Runic Masters Guild, Lin Ming strode directly into his seventh grade divine runic room.

Because he had successfully produced the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol and caused the reputation of the Divine Runic Masters Guild to rise to new heights, his fame was completely different from before. The guards all treated him with respect and didn't stop his movements.

"Mm?"

At the entrance of the seventh grade divine runic room, he could see a familiarly enchanting figure standing there.

Wearing a dress with a plunging neckline, Suya's bombastic figure was outlined in a soul-stirring manner. Her black hair hung down like a waterfall, shining with a gorgeous brilliance in the sunlight. Her collar was lowered to the point of revealing her collarbones and downwards to the deep and snowy valley of her chest.

In addition to the sensual atmosphere that surrounded her, she exhibited a unique charm.

Suya's eyes shined as she saw Lin Ming. She had already been waiting here for some time.

Her eyes glanced over at Xiao Moxian happily walking as she held onto Lin Ming's arm. She didn't know why, but a faint feeling of jealousy appeared in her heart.

But she quickly suppressed this feeling and a welcoming smile appeared on her face. “Sir Lin is indeed burdened with a myriad of affairs every day. I’ve already been waiting here for you for six hours. I wonder if Sir Lin has any available time; we’re in need of another batch of divine runic symbols…”

Before she finished speaking, Lin Ming had already brought Xiao Moxian and rushed past her like a breeze of wind.

He threw back some faint words, “I’m not available for the time being.”

Suya froze in place as she heard the door to the divine runic room open and then slam shut.

She couldn’t help but bitterly smile. What should she do now?

Ever since Lin Ming had finished the first batch of Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols, the Extreme Star Holy Lands’ dependence on Lin Ming increased with every day. These past days, Lin Ming seemed to be making some big movements within the seventh grade divine runic room. The surging power of divine runic arts within was much stronger than before.

One couldn’t help but think that he was creating a new divine runic symbol. The Extreme Star Holy Lands had already tasted the benefits so they wanted to monopolize these new divine runic symbols if possible. And Suya was the only person who could probe the situation for them.

But now, Lin Ming hadn’t even given Suya the chance to speak.

This was the first time that Suya ever felt powerless and frustrated in front of a man.

“This man…” Suya looked unwillingly at the tightly shut door of the seventh grade divine runic room. She bit her lips, her thoughts rapidly turning…

To be honest, Lin Ming really wasn’t in the mood to deal with Suya. The treasure fair was only a month away and his points were far from enough!

If he mass produced divine runic symbols for the Extreme Star Holy Lands, he clearly wouldn't make enough points in the time he had.

His greatest hope was to invest all of his efforts into the two divine runic symbols he had been researching – the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol and Heretical God Symbol.

These two divine runic symbols were far stronger than the improved Havoc Flame Symbol he first created. He would definitely be able to exchange them for more points.

Upon entering the divine runic room, Lin Ming went into a quasi-enlightened state. His entire being was immersed in recalling the comprehensions of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws.

In front of him, Xiao Moxian was skillfully bringing out the materials that Lin Ming needed to draw up the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol. Her actions were practiced and familiar as she lined up the mountain of various materials, placing them on the spirit stone table near Lin Ming.

Xiao Moxian had a deep tacit understanding with Lin Ming, nearly reaching a state where their hearts and minds were connected. With just a glance, without needing words, she could accurately make out what he was thinking as if she could read his thoughts.

After the preparation of materials was complete, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a brilliant light. His hands flew out as a blue spirit root flew into his grip. He began to carefully extract the juices, not even relying too much on the array formations in this room.

Although these seventh grade array formations were astronomically expensive and useful, there were still some crucial materials that needed to be handled by Lin Ming. This was because the requirements for drawing up the Heretical God Symbol were far too high. Even a seventh grade array formation wasn't enough. The only materials that Lin Ming would allow the array formations to process were the ones that weren't important.

Chapter 1624 – Soul Recovery Symbol

Chapter 1624 – Soul Recovery Symbol

…

…

…

Within the divine runic room, the air was hot like boiling magma. The heat manifested in curling crimson red undulations of energy, the temperature so high it left one staggering for breath.

Even the light within this room was twisted like waves due to the high heat.

Even though this was a seventh grade divine runic room with many spells and array formations surrounding it, a massive amount of the power of fire still radiated outside.

And the source of this tremendous power of fire was the discarded pieces of materials scattered over the floor, materials used for the Heavenly Fire Symbol.

Lin Ming was far too exhausted. Even a thin layer of salt had appeared on his eyebrows from the amount of evaporated sweat.

In these past several days he had almost never closed his eyes. The closer the treasure fair was, the more he was forced to seize every second of time available to him. Without the wealth of a powerful influence backing him, he could only rely on himself.

To Lin Ming, the spirit medicines and spirit treasures at the treasure fair were all astronomically expensive!

Soul force continually flowed out from his fingertips, manipulating the divine runic pen as it left traces of light and shadow in space. Using the extracted juice of materials, Lin Ming left behind lines of tiny runes in the void.

Every tiny line left behind a glowing brilliance and emitted a power of fire that wilted the mind.

Every single stroke of the runes required an immaculate level of technical skill. The tiniest deviation would lead to the flame patterns coming into conflict with each other and then exploding.

After Lin Ming absorbed the memories of three divine runic masters, when combined with his profound understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws as well as his current skill in the divine runic arts, theoretically speaking his chances of failing to successfully draw up a divine runic symbol were extremely low. Moreover, he had also successfully drawn up the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol and Heretical God Symbol before.

But the production of these two divine runic symbols was the pinnacle of Lin Ming's understanding into the theory behind divine runic symbols as well as the peak of his current skill level.

Thus, if he wanted to draw up the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol and Heretical God Symbol once again, every step he did would push him to the limit.

Constantly chasing after his limits was a rapidly tiring matter.

These two divine runic symbols had an extremely high fusion compatibility with the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws. Every tiny stroke of the runes formed a mosaic that was able to combine and shift together to form an exponential number of changes.

The slightest mistake would create damage to the overall structure of tiny runes, possibly even causing an explosion.

This meant that Lin Ming needed to invest every ounce of focus into his work, to concentrate every thought into controlling the divine runic pen.

During a sustained period of high concentration it was easy to consume a massive amount of soul force. If Lin Ming hadn't cultivated Empyrean Divine Mist's soul force cultivation method and had his previous soul force intensity, he would definitely be far too tired to do anything and might have even caused permanent damage to his soul!

In the history of divine runic arts, there were some divine runic masters that in order to draw up a peerlessly powerful and infinitely marvelous divine runic symbol, would directly consume their mind and soul and die in their divine runic room.

The improved Heavenly Fire Symbol that Lin Ming was drawing, in terms of difficulty and finesse required, was enough to annihilate the mind of a fourth grade divine runic master.

The original Heavenly Fire Symbol had more than 800 flame-based tiny runes combined, and there were countless array formation marks within. But, Lin Ming's improved Heavenly Fire Symbol had over a thousand flame-based tiny runes added within, as well as over 10,000 elaborate array formation marks interspersed throughout. This allowed the Heavenly Fire Symbol to have channels that were able to absorb the power of fire even more smoothly.

These profound changes made the difficulty of drawing up a Heavenly Fire Symbol exponentially greater than before. All of these new additions required Lin Ming to consume an enormous amount of soul force.

There was no need to mention the changes Lin Ming made in the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws. The original Heavenly Fire Symbol had an extremely rough and crude implementation of the Asura Heavenly Dao. Within it, only several rune paths conformed with the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws.

As for Lin Ming's changes, he completely eliminated all previous rune paths that corresponded to the Asura Heavenly Dao, and planted in 108 new rune paths in their place.

These modifications, if seen by other divine runic masters, would truly shock the world. Some lower level divine runic masters would find it impossible to understand.

The consequences of these complex changes were a massive increase in the use of soul force as well as endless and constant calculations during the drawing process.

Even if Lin Ming had successfully produced a Heavenly Fire Symbol once, there would occasionally be a slight deviation in the flame-based runes at the start, finally causing there to be a conflict with the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws that were fused into it.

Finally, a massive fire dragon would blow up from the tiny runes, causing the entire divine runic symbol to be ruined.

If it weren't for Xiao Moxian standing guard on the side and quickly responding, and swallowing the fire dragons with the Darkness Laws, then Lin Ming's eyebrows and most of his hair would have been burnt away.

"3972 flexible array lines, conforming to the right spiral revolution of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws..." Lin Ming mumbled to himself, all of his concentration focused on the floating lines of flames in the air.

Finally, the long lines of flames were pulled into the top of the Heavenly Fire Symbol.

The entire Heavenly Fire Symbol erupted with a blazing light. The lines of the flame runes rapidly decomposed, gathering onto the tiny runes within and then combining once more...

Another two hours passed.

The reformed flame runes began to fuse with the lines of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws in the air.

With a brief flash, all of the surging energies vanished at once.

All that was left in Lin Ming's hand was a simple and plain Heavenly Fire Symbol that sparkled with a strange light.

The Heavenly Fire Symbol seemed ordinary and rough, without even the slightest power of fire leaking out.

If other divine runic masters were to see this, they would certainly sing praises to the heavens! To create a Heavenly Fire Symbol that didn't have the slightest bit of energy flowing out, this required a deeply profound understanding and control of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws. All of that power of fire needed to be forcefully locked inside.

Pada!

A drop of sweat fell down from the tip of Lin Ming's nose. Before it hit the ground, the drop of sweat was already evaporated by the high heat.

Lin Ming finally opened his eyes, letting out a long breath of relief.

Xiao Moxian smiled like a blooming flower, finally relaxing a little.

"The Heavenly Fire Symbol is finished... do you want to rest a little?" Xiao Moxian's worried eyes looked at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming confidently smiled. He shook his head and said, "No need. I'll be fine after I practice the Divine Mist Heart Mantra."

"You're being too hard on yourself..." Xiao Moxian whispered. But, she knew that once Lin Ming decided to do something it was nearly impossible for anyone else to change his mind.

Moreover, she also knew that he was pressed for time. Every step Lin Ming made was to prepare for the future war with the saint race in the Divine Realm.

Thinking of these future matters, a desolate and sad look passed through her face. Divine Realm... saint race... monster race... to her, this was a knot in her heart that she couldn't undo.

Dong! Dong! Dong!

A knocking sound echoed out from the front door.

“Sir Lin.” Suya’s dark and sensual voice transmitted from the other side of the door.

Xiao Moxian suddenly frowned deeply, her body immediately straightening up. A faint sense of hostility flashed over her face. When a beautiful woman met another beautiful woman, it wasn’t unlikely for sparks to occur, especially when there was a man involved.

Lin Ming also wrinkled his eyebrows. He didn’t like being disturbed by outsiders when he was deep in drawing up divine runic symbols.

“What is it?” Lin Ming coldly asked, patiently holding back his temper.

“The great lord Empyrean of our Extreme Star Holy Lands knows that Sir Lin has been busy with many matters these days and has been working hard on the divine runic arts, so he has bid me send you some Soul Recovery Symbols.”

Soul Recovery Symbols?

Lin Ming was startled as he heard this. A Soul Recovery Symbol was an extremely complex divine runic symbol. In order to create one, one needed the special condensed soul crystals of the spiritas and then to add in the Soul Recovery Laws of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws.

This sort of divine runic symbol was expensive and not too practical. Normally, only divine runic masters near the seventh grade, half-step spiritas Empyreans, or other characters of that level would use these divine runic symbols, because drawing one up required a peak sixth grade divine runic master.

For the current Lin Ming, meditating on the Divine Mist Heart Mantra was a waste of his time. If he had these Soul Recovery Symbols to supplement him then it would really be a useful gift that came at the right time.

As long as this type of supportive divine runic symbol was fused into his body he would be able to rapidly recover his soul force.

Without needing Lin Ming to speak, Xiao Moxian had already opened the front door without reservation.

Her hostility to this seductive temptress Suya was one matter, but these Soul Recovery Symbols that could help Lin Ming were another.

As long as it was something that could help Lin Ming, she wouldn't refuse it.

As the front door opened, a strange and intoxicating scent rushed in, accompanied with the gentle tinkling of bells.

Suya's casual dress was provocative enough, but today she was especially dressed up. She wore a long and silky dress that was cut low at the chest, exposing her curvy figure. Her majestic chest was proud and full as a startling amount of snowy white skin was exposed.

Her earrings were made from strange crystals, mysteriously polished so that they exuded a dazzling light. When combined with her pouty looks, every movement of hers exuded a captivating scent.

She carried a plate with both hands that was stacked with divine runic symbols carrying a dark strength.

Slowly stepping into the room, Suya maintained a trace of a smile. Her star-bright eyes were mesmerizing.

Of course, this brilliant gaze was focused on the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol that Lin Ming just drew up.

Suya had stayed in the Divine Runic Masters Guild for a long time and experienced many things. As she saw the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol and the complex runes that still floated like rivers of stars in the sky, her eyes shined even brighter. This divine runic symbol was absolutely not simple.

Suya smiled and then placed the plate of Soul Recovery Symbols in front of Lin Ming. Behind her, Xiao Moxian was running out of patience.

As Xiao Moxian saw Suya's round and perky bottom from behind, she couldn't help but feel inexplicably annoyed.

"Miss Suya, we are currently in the process of researching and developing a new divine runic symbol, so we are a little busy at the moment. We thank you for the favor of sending these Soul Recovery Symbols and we will remember this." Xiao Moxian was well aware that the goal of Suya sending Soul Recovery Symbols here was nothing more than an attempt to curry favor with Lin Ming in order to obtain even greater benefits in the future. If Lin Ming wasn't anybody at all, they definitely wouldn't bother with him.

Thus, although Xiao Moxian's words were polite, they had an undertone of seeing a guest out.

Chapter 1625 – The Auctions Begin

Chapter 1625 – The Auctions Begin

…

…

…

Suya wasn’t some weakling to be pushed around. She could hear the meaning behind Xiao Moxian’s words and tone so she turned to Lin Ming and cast him a winsome smile. “Sir Lin, this is quite embarrassing to ask, but may I ask what divine runic symbol you are researching right now?” As she spoke she bent down and curiously looked at the improved divine runic symbol.

Suya propped her hands against the divine runic table. Her plunging deep neckline originally revealed a deep snow white valley, and after bending down, her large and explosive mountains swayed back and forth like surging pendulums.

Sitting on the other side of the divine runic table, Lin Ming never imagined he would see such a scene. He was slightly surprised as he inevitably got a clear look at Suya’s beautiful scenery. This sort of temptation, if a young divine runic master were to see it, would cause their blood to boil. And even though Lin Ming wasn’t too affected he was still momentarily stunned by what he saw.

At this time, Suya was simply far too close to Lin Ming. As for Lin Ming, he simply had nowhere to look away to. And as he was wondering what he should do, he suddenly noticed a chilling cold rise up. He couldn’t help but look at the direction of that icy cold air.

All he saw was Xiao Moxian glaring at Suya, her entire face covered with black lines, seeming as if she was on the verge of storming out. To attempt to seduce Lin Ming right in front of her, this woman simply didn't place her in her eyes!

As Lin Ming felt Xiao Moxian's burgeoning anger, he coughed loudly and pushed himself away from the divine runic table, quickly retreating. "Miss Suya, I am indeed trying to revise a divine runic symbol. If there aren't any other matters, I want to try to grasp the time to draw up several more. These Soul Recovery Symbols have come at the perfect time. I will remember this sentiment."

Lin Ming was also hinting for his guest to see her way out. It wasn't only because of Xiao Moxian, but also because he really was far too busy.

"Heavenly Fire Symbol? This is a Heavenly Fire Symbol? There isn't any power of fire leaking out!" After entering Lin Ming's divine runic room with great difficulty, Suya naturally wouldn't leave until she investigated for some information. She couldn't help but gently touch the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol. As she discovered the peculiarities inside, she exclaimed out loud.

In her opinion, every Heavenly Fire Symbol would inevitably have a certain amount of energy flowing out of it. The higher the grade a divine runic master who created the divine runic symbol was, the more complex the rune structure would be, the more exquisite the Law lines, and the less strength that would flow out. This was a manifestation of a divine runic master's ability to control a divine runic symbol.

She had rarely encountered this situation before where there wasn't any energy flowing out from a divine runic symbol. This proved to her that Lin Ming's ability to confine the energy of the divine runes had reached an astonishing degree.

Suya suppressed her surprise; she had already accomplished her goal for coming here. She faintly smiled at Lin Ming and said, "Sir Lin, then I will not disturb you from drawing up divine runic symbols."

Then, her eyes narrowed, curving up like crescent moons in the skies, enchanting and alluring. “I would also like to ask Sir Lin to consider our Extreme Star Holy Lands and sell this improved Heavenly Fire Symbol to us in the future. The price can be further discussed.”

Lin Ming thought for a moment. The Extreme Star Holy Lands could be considered an old customer of his. If he really did sell divine runic symbols, he would have intentions of selling to them. But, he had a special plan for these two divine runic symbols that he was creating now.

“I am not too familiar with producing these divine runic symbols. If I can produce them en masse I will consider you.” Lin Ming didn’t confirm anything as he kept his words ambiguous.

Suya’s eyes shined as she heard this. As long as Lin Ming said this, she would have something to report to the Extreme Star Holy Lands.

The previous batches of Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols had miraculous and wondrous effects on the battlefield. This caused Suya to withstand a great deal of pressure from the high level figures of the Extreme Star Holy Lands, making her feel pressed for time.

Now, all she could do was keep track of Lin Ming.

“Then I won’t disturb Sir Lin. If there is anything you need, please inform me. As long as I can accomplish it, I will definitely try to help Sir Lin as much as I can.” Suya threw one last smile towards Lin Ming. Lin Ming nodded in return. Then, with a twirl of her dress, Suya turned and left.

It was only that as Suya passed by Xiao Moxian, her eyes flashed and she raised her proud swan-like neck, her gaze touching upon Xiao Moxian.

Xiao Moxian returned this gaze with eyes that could kill. Her small canines were sharp like a little tiger’s, reflecting an icy cold brightness.

As the two women’s eyes met, an intense electric light sparked in the void.

With a bang, the door closed.

As Suya's footsteps gradually faded away, Xiao Moxian slowly pursed her lips. She shot Lin Ming a look, her complexion still gloomy. She didn't think that Suya was more beautiful than she was, but Suya's figure had the flavor of a ripe peach, explosive and bursting from the seams. This was an attribute that Xiao Moxian completely lacked; her figure was more slender and smooth.

"Disgusting woman." Xiao Moxian indignantly sputtered out.

Lin Ming coughed. Without saying anything, he picked up a divine runic pen.

Over the next half month, Lin Ming invested all of his time and focus in producing the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol and the Heretical God Symbol.

These divine runic symbols were far more complex than the previous Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol.

Every time he drew one up he would have to put in seven to eight times the effort of producing a Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol. Moreover, what gave Lin Ming a headache the most was that the failure rate was far too high!

In the first few days the failure rate reached as high as 70-80%. With this rate, Lin Ming could only draw up a single divine runic symbol in one day.

Even half a month later, his failure rate only fell to 50%.

This was also with the batch of Soul Recovery Symbols that Suya had provided. With their wonderful effects of revitalizing the divine soul, every time Lin Ming felt his soul force on the verge of collapse he would absorb one Soul Recovery Symbol and feel his soul force rapidly restore itself.

Time quickly passed.

In the final two days before the treasure fair began, Lin Ming didn't take a single moment of rest. Every time a Heavenly Fire Symbol failed and exploded, not only would Lin Ming's clothes tear apart but even the nearby strange and amusing Xiao Moxian would find her face completely blackened with soot. When combined her two white canines, this was an especially entertaining sight.

But in the end, Lin Ming still produced 10 improved Heavenly Fire Symbols and 10 Heretical God Symbols.

In the early morning of the next day, as the sky was bright and the sun was dawning, countless crowds of people had gathered in Divine Rune City.

As Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming left the Divine Runic Masters Guild they were able to see the tides of people flying through the skies, like swarms of locusts!

Only during the period of the treasure fair would Divine Rune City allow martial artists to fly, because the treasure fair was held in the floating castle. Due to this, this miraculous scene could be viewed.

The floating castle was a hundred miles wide and flew high in the air. Even so, the innumerable martial artists surrounding it were like motes of dust!

Although he had barely managed to catch a night of rest, Lin Ming was still feeling the aftereffects of overdrawing his soul force for an entire month. Now that he suddenly left his room, the dazzling sunlight made even Lin Ming feel a bout of dizziness. It took him a moment to adapt to the brilliant dappled sunlight.

"There really is a great deal of people here." Looking at this scene in front of him, Lin Ming was startled. With so many people it was hard to imagine just how high the volume of trade transactions would be.

Taking Xiao Moxian's hand, Lin Ming once more flew into the treasure fair in the flying castle. At this time, he suddenly had a strange feeling.

He could clearly feel that as he arrived at the treasure fair, the entire floating castle rippled with a thick power of divine runic symbols.

These were a type of hidden defensive divine runic symbols that were fused into the spirit stone of the castle. If anyone attacked this castle, these defensive divine runic symbols would erupt with a terrifying defensive barrier.

Rows upon rows of stores were everywhere, with the treasures inside all outstanding. Compared to the last time Lin Ming was here, there were many more good items.

Just by smelling the rich medicinal fragrance in the air, he could tell that there were far more spirit medicines for sale.

However, the sale square which had been there before had been cleared out.

A massive complex hung in the center of it, shaped like an eight-sided honeycomb.

This building was like a miniature sun. it was covered with radiant glowing stones, swallowing up all surrounding shadows and shining with a noon light.

On all eight sides of this honeycomb structure, around every 10 miles, there was a giant massive illusory mirror that showed what was occurring within.

It was clear that this was an auction site. The staff inside were busily bustling about in preparation. However, it was clear from the hourglass that hung above the structure that there was only an hour left until the auction began.

Lin Ming had already received the news. From today forth, the most precious items of the treasure fair would all be sold in the auction.

As for the item shops outside, the things they sold were far from comparable to the heavenly treasures sold in the auction house.

It was inevitable that the jade dragon horn he needed would appear there, and it was even possible that the dragon saliva grass would too. After all, these were materials that top divine runic masters wanted and their price would definitely soar as the divine runic masters fought for them!

As Lin Ming was thinking, he heard a giggle burst out from the entrance.

“Duke Fullmoon also came, haha… the pressure on a little girl like me is far too great. I hope that Duke Fullmoon won’t snatch something from my hands…”

Duke Fullmoon?

This laughter was also quite familiar. Lin Ming couldn’t help but follow these sounds and be surprised as he caught sight of a few familiar faces… how could these people have gathered together?

The few people at the entrance were surrounded by a group of extremely muscular and vigorous guards.

Of the people being guarded, one of them was a tall and graceful woman, a peerless beauty of her generation. She had been the one smiling and laughing – it was Miss Suya from the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

Beside Miss Suya was a blue-clothed man, a faintly happy smile on his face. His eyes burned as they occasionally dipped down to her swaying figure before slowly coming back up to her face.

Behind this blue-clothed man was a slow and creeping black-cloaked old man.

The old man’s complexion was gloomy and dark. It was only when Suya and the blue-clothed man occasionally laughed out loud that the old man would join in with a few terse and hollow laughs. It was hard to tell from his complexion whether he was irritated or not.

The blue-clothed man and the black-cloaked old man were the two people that Lin Ming bumped into when he last visited the treasure fair.

For them to meet again was also inevitable, because there were many treasures at this auction that the blue-clothed man had to obtain no matter what.

Chapter 1626 – Encounter

Chapter 1626 – Encounter

…

…

…

From Suya’s words, Lin Ming learned that this blue-clothed man’s title was Duke Fullmoon.

With the title ‘Duke Fullmoon’ in addition to the way Suya treated this man, it was clear that this person was a high level figure of some Divine Kingdom.

Generally speaking, large influences were separated into nation-type organizations and sect-type organizations.

In a sect, important figures would normally be titled Elders, Protectors, Highest Elders, and so forth. And in a Divine Kingdom, important figures were normally titled Dukes, High Princes, Imperial Scholars, and so forth.

There wasn’t much difference between these types of influences to begin with. Everything, including ranking and such, depended on the personal preferences of the founder.

Although this Duke Fullmoon was hiding his cultivation, Lin Ming could faintly feel that he had already reached the World King realm. Even if his cultivation wasn’t at the World King realm he likely already had the capital to contend with a World King.

If there was a powerhouse that could battle with a World King in this Divine Kingdom and he was only titled a Duke and not a High Prince, the power of this Divine Kingdom could be imagined!

A spiritas Divine Kingdom… as well as at least a peak Empyrean influence…

Lin Ming sifted through Torchriver's remnant memories and locked onto some possible Divine Kingdoms. Still, he couldn't confirm which one this other party came from.

"Miss Suya, I just bought some dark rain flower tea. It is 100,000 points for just one tael. Dark rain flowers can only be picked once every 10,000 years, and only after being cooked together with 72 different kinds of heavenly materials can this type of top grade dark rain flower tea be made. In the upcoming days I plan on holding a martial arts tea party at Carefree Hall. At that time, I wonder if Miss Suya would be kind enough to grace me with her presence?"

"Martial arts tea party? Dark rain flower tea? Duke Fullmoon is indeed a dauntless man! I, Suya, would love to attend!" Suya's eyes narrowed into crescent moons as if she were truly interested in going. But just as one thought she was about to agree, an embarrassed color actually flashed over her face. With an expression filled with regret she said, "But I apologize, I've recently received a mission from Extreme Star Heavenly Palace that I must complete within the Divine Runic Masters Guild. Now that the situation at the warfront has become intense, it is impossible for me to leave my post. I can only regretfully decline Duke Fullmoon's invitation…"

Like this, Suya rejected Duke Fullmoon's invitation without any rudeness at all, and even her explanation was sound. But, Duke Fullmoon still frowned. He had already invited Suya seven or eight times before to visit his Carefree Hall but he had been turned down by her every time. Not just that, but every time she rejected him she had seemed extremely reasonable and there was nothing that Duke Fullmoon could find fault with.

"This woman, she really doesn't know how to appreciate favors. She keeps refusing Duke's request every time!" Beside Duke Fullmoon, the woman called 'Junior-apprentice

Sister Qing' smirked as she spoke with a sound transmission. Even the eyes she looked at Suya with were cruel and cutting.

Suya certainly noticed the hostility emanating from this other woman, but she simply covered her mouth and tittered, as if she wasn't aware of anything at all.

Suya was well aware what sort of place the 'Carefree Hall' where Duke Fullmoon was planning to hold this so-called martial arts tea party was; it could be called Duke Fullmoon's harem as well as his personal quarters.

Since ancient times, in the palaces of emperors and great kings, harems forbade other men from entering; the only ones that could enter and leave were eunuchs. A 'martial arts tea party' held in a harem? Wasn't that just a joke? Suya didn't doubt that when this martial arts tea party occurred, the only ones there would be Duke Fullmoon and his maids and concubines.

And as the honored guest of such an event, once she went to Carefree Hall to participate in this 'martial arts tea party' there was an absolute certainty she would become the main dish of Duke Fullmoon's nightly entertainment. She certainly wouldn't agree to this type of invitation.

Duke Fullmoon rubbed his chin, his eyes once again raking up and down Suya's explosive body, not seeming surprised or angry at her rejection.

"Duke, what is so good about her? Is her body so overwhelming? In Carefree Palace there are many others that are as equally plentiful of figure, there is nothing they lack..." Seeing Duke Fullmoon so interested in Suya, Junior-apprentice Sister Qing began to unhappily whine with a sound transmission. In truth, her own body was quite good.

"You don't understand. This sort of enchanting seductress seems as if they will become intimate with anyone, but the truth is that women like her are aloof of all relations and are the most arrogant in their bones. She is a butterfly that can flit around in all social situations and any interest she shows in men is only superficial. As for those that have thoughts of eating her up, it is actually impossible. The more one likes this type of woman, the more difficult they are to conquer, but only by conquering this type of woman can one truly be satisfied!”

For martial artists that lived for thousands of lives, it wasn’t uncommon to have crowds of wives and concubines. Duke Fullmoon was already a veteran in courting women and was a thorough expert in them. He had no interest in women that threw themselves into his chest on their own initiative. Rather, a proud and arrogant woman like Suya who had her own strength, that was the type of woman he wanted to conquer.

“It’s all about the long game. Sooner or later I’ll taste this woman and have her serve me from the depths of her heart.”

As Duke Fullmoon spoke he smiled confidently. He wanted to change the topic of conversation so that he could slowly infiltrate the mind of this beautiful woman that he planned on conquering in the future.

But at this time, Suya’s eyes brightened as if something she saw made her overjoyed. As she smiled, her smile was more radiant than peonies in spring.

She turned towards a direction and waved. As she waved her hand, her voluptuous body shook like a branch in the wind, leaving the mind stunned.

“Sir Lin, over here!”

Even though there were layers upon layers of people in the crowd, this didn’t stop Suya at all. She seemed as if she would forcefully push her way through the crowd to greet someone.

This left Duke Fullmoon startled. He immediately frowned. Who was this Sir Lin? Was there someone here that had a status higher than his own? A background greater than his own?

In Duke Fullmoon’s eyes, anyone that could cause Suya to impatiently greet them was definitely a character with an extraordinary status!

Hearing Suya’s distant greetings, Lin Ming could only ruefully smile; he originally didn’t want to bump into this hard to handle Duke Fullmoon.

As for Xiao Moxian, she didn’t want Lin Ming to bump into Suya.

Thus, the two of them came to a tacit agreement that they would take a round detour around the auction hall and pretend as if they didn’t see anyone. But, they never imagined that this Suya would seem to possess something like a telepathic ability; even in the endless crowds she was able to keenly lock onto Lin Ming’s presence.

Suya’s voice and sex appeal had a deep penetrative power. As she shouted out loud, her luscious body swaying back and forth as she moved forwards all smiles, Lin Ming instantly became the focus of attention.

“Sir Lin, what a coincidence!” Suya was excited like a little girl. She stood on her tiptoes, beckoning over Lin Ming as if she were afraid he hadn’t seen her.

Such a welcoming Suya caused Xiao Moxian’s bright smile to slowly dim down. Her hand that held Lin Ming’s hand mysteriously disappeared and reappeared at his waist, pinching a little of his skin and twisting a bit.

Lin Ming was left speechless. He certainly knew what Xiao Moxian’s meaning was. She was warning him not to be too friendly with this woman.

“This is… Miss Suya, it really is a coincidence.” Lin Ming awkwardly coughed.

“That’s right, this must be fate!”

Suya laughed, her smile becoming increasingly happy. And, this smile wasn’t the professional smile that often hung on her face, but was a smile that came from her heart.

It was clear that Suya treated Lin Ming considerably differently.

Seeing Lin Ming as well as the genuine smile coming from Suya, Duke Fullmoon's previous attitude and self-control of not being angry at being rejected by this beautiful woman suddenly vanished.

His face immediately turned gloomy.

How could it be this boy again!?

So the so-called Sir Lin was actually Lin Ming!

Just now he had been bragging in front of his concubine that Suya was the type of woman that was only superficially intimate with others but was in truth a proud and haughty woman that disdained men. As for conquering Suya, that would be extremely difficult and only someone like himself had this ability.

But in the blink of an eye, Suya was ridiculously attentive to Lin Ming. She passed through the crowds of people without hesitation to greet him as if she were afraid that Lin Ming would run away if she were a bit slower.

This was simply a slap to Duke Fullmoon's face!

If Suya were to greet some great person, like an Imperial Prince from a True Divinity level influence, then Duke Fullmoon would be envious but he wouldn't be angry. However, the one she was greeting so excitedly was Lin Ming.

A month ago, Duke Fullmoon had already verified through various intelligence organizations that besides an unknown master that no one had seen before, Lin Ming had no one else supporting him. Otherwise, he wouldn't have had to go to the trouble of running to the Marvel Blue Nation for a body transformation cultivation method.

"This brat has some ability…" A cold light flashed in Duke Fullmoon's eyes. In this brief encounter he had thoroughly lost to Lin Ming.

And at this time, although Suya was already standing beside Lin Ming, she didn't seem to 'forget' or 'snub' Duke Fullmoon.

Through the crowds of people she said to Duke Fullmoon, "Duke Fullmoon, Suya must bid her farewells for now. In the future if the Duke comes again, Suya will definitely pay a visit."

Suya's words were sufficiently polite. As for paying a visit, who knew if that was possible even in the next tens of millions of years.

Although Suya knew that this would offend Duke Fullmoon a little, it was clear who was more important between Duke Fullmoon and Lin Ming.

Disregarding that Suya had a good impression of Lin Ming already, making it easier for her to follow him, Lin Ming's value alone was already so ridiculously high that Suya was willing to pay any price to win him over.

Duke Fullmoon came from a large influence but no matter how large that influence was, there was only the slightest thread of relations between them and Suya. The reason she was polite to Duke Fullmoon to begin with was that she had the thoughts of becoming friends and perhaps making use of him in the future.

Just for this, Duke Fullmoon wanted to trick Suya into his bed. Regarding this, Suya could only break down laughing in her heart.

But Lin Ming was completely different. If Lin Ming really had the same plan as Duke Fullmoon then she would find it much more difficult to handle. The slightest mistake and she really would be caught in Lin Ming's web.

Thinking of this, Suya felt an inexplicable ripple in her heart, but she quickly cast these bewildering thoughts away. She knew that Lin Ming didn't have such ideas about her.

She said to Lin Ming, "Sir Lin, are you planning to attend the auction? How about we go together?"

Without needing Lin Ming to respond, Xiao Moxian smiled and said, “No need. We’re fine going by ourselves.”

Although Xiao Moxian was smiling, when her smile was combined with her shiny pair of canines it gave off the feeling that she could pounce and bite at any moment.

Suya thought little of it. She tactfully said, “That’s also a good idea.”

Although they said to take separate roads, there was only a single path from the entrance to the auction hall. For now, they were temporarily travelling together.

Chapter 1627 – Grand Event

Chapter 1627 – Grand Event

…

…

…

Glowing crystals paved the passageway. Their mystical luster lit up the path to the auction hall with a rainbow of colors, casting the world in enigmatic beauty.

The channel finally came to end. Three crystalline doors appeared in front of everyone, dividing it into three different directions.

Four golden-armored guards with black capes swung over their shoulders guarded the doors behind them.

Although their auras were restrained, Lin Ming could still feel the sea-deep energy of these four.

This aura… is a Holy Lord level character.

After realizing the strength of these four people Lin Ming couldn’t help but be amazed. This was the first time he had seen Holy Lord level characters guarding gates. Before now, the highest rank guards he had seen were at the Divine Lord realm.

From this, it could be seen how much the Divine Runic Masters Guild valued this auction.

As Lin Ming was in thought, a middle-aged man approached them and spoke with a pleasant tone. “Three guests, do you plan on entering the auction? Please show your identity cards. Moreover, there are three different tiers of seating available, each with different fees.

Please pay the fees for the seating tier you choose and someone will arrive to escort you there."

Regarding the workings of the Divine Runic Masters Guild, Suya was clearly much more knowledgeable than Lin Ming. She took out a golden Divine Runic Masters Guild status card and quickly passed it over.

This middle-aged man belonged to the Runic Pill Trading Organization and he had never seen Suya before. But, he knew that Suya existed in the Divine Runic Masters Guild. After checking this card, his attitude towards her was much more respectful. He didn't think that this beautiful woman in front of him would be the person issuing missions for the Extreme Star Holy Lands. For these past two years, the high level figures of the Runic Pill Trading Organization had kept in constant contact with Suya, and to them the Extreme Star Holy Lands was a source of significant wealth.

"And this sir and lady..."

The middle-aged man looked at Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian. Lin Ming didn't reveal his name, only handing over his VIP card and entering.

"Sir Lin, have you rented a room yet?" Suya turned her hand and the opulent status card disappeared into her spatial ring.

"I haven't. I heard that there were three tiers of seats?"

"Indeed. There are ordinary seats that are on the base level; these are 100,000 points each to rent. Above those are private rooms. The ordinary private rooms are a bit small but the price is 2 million, and above those are the luxury suites that are 30 million."

The truth was that the Extreme Star Holy Lands had already rented a luxury suite in preparation for this auction. Suya wanted to invite Lin Ming but she knew that there was no chance he would join her, so she simply didn't ask at all.

30 million points wasn't much to Lin Ming, but he felt that this wasn't necessary. Just an ordinary room was enough to hide his identity.

Lin Ming chose an ordinary private. Like this, he parted with Suya.

After entering the room, a maid left behind a number plate for Lin Ming and carefully informed him of the rules before leaving.

The room was similar to a floating building in the sky, a bit small and narrow inside. At the front was a massive window through which one could see the entire auction hall arena as well as a path leading to a balcony outside. The entire auction's luxury suites, ordinary rooms, and ordinary seats were like three different tiers of mountain peaks, layered just like a theatre.

The luxury suites and ordinary rooms were both built with strange flying stones. These stones were marked with all sorts of runes that covered them like sand on paper. It was clear that these divine runic symbols provided a tremendous levitating force to the buildings.

In addition, these flying stones had a natural floating power, so as the massive luxury suites and ordinary rooms were in the skies, they dotted the landscape like islands in the air, able to overlook everything beneath them.

In front of every ordinary room was a massive floating flat projection stone that was 20-30 feet tall. These projection stones clearly reflected every movement on the stage, down to the tiniest detail.

And below that was a giant stone book controlled by a spirit stone. This stone had lines of flowing text on it that indicated the items that were to be auctioned today.

As long as Lin Ming swiped his fingers over the spirit stone, the entire stone book would shine with a gentle shimmering energy and a delicate woman's voice would begin to explain in detail any treasure that was listed.

This was the first time that Lin Ming had experienced such an array formation that explained things in advance. This array formation indeed made things far more convenient.

And at this time, he suddenly heard a commotion coming from the top row of VIP suites.

“Look over there! That is Soaring Starlight Shuttle, Empyrean Lionheart’s personal transport! Even Empyrean Lionheart came! This year’s treasure fair is truly a grand event!” Some people cried out in alarm.

Empyrean. This word, no matter where it was said, always carried with it a mystical charm.

When Lin Ming displayed such vivid skills in the Divine Runic Masters Guild, many of the divine runic masters there subconsciously assumed that there was a peak Empyrean powerhouse standing behind him.

Otherwise, it would be impossible for him to have such a deep background in the divine runic arts.

Lin Ming had inherited Torchriver’s memories so he had naturally heard of Empyrean Lionheart before. This was a character that had risen to fame tens of millions of years ago, and although he was inferior to top characters like Empyrean Divine Mist, he was still a horrifying existence!

Lin Ming looked out in the center of the arena. The projection stone was currently reflecting the world outside.

All that was seen was a massive interstellar ship as large as a planet, looking like a vicious beast that spanned the heavens and earth.

Swathes of mysterious runes floated like stars around the ship, constantly swirling about.

The entire treasure ship emitted a cold and metallic luster. It was like a sun rising into the heavens, eternally glorious.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The great ship that was thousands of feet high. It emitted ear-cracking creaking sounds as it filled the surroundings with a blazing brilliance, carrying with it a momentum as if it would charge through the universe. People only saw this Empyrean level spirit treasure, the Soaring Starlight Shuttle, but didn't see Empyrean Lionheart themselves. This left many of them feeling a bit regretful.

“It's fine. An Empyrean level character isn't someone we look up at.”

“I heard that before Empyrean Lionheart came, Empyrean Minor Violet had already arrived. But I have no idea where she is...”

“Mm? Empyrean Minor Violet also came?”

“That's right... rumors say that Empyrean Minor Violet isn't on friendly terms with Empyrean Lionheart... if the two of them compete, I wonder what sort of scene that would be...”

In the audience, many people were wildly discussing amongst themselves. These two Empyreans were the rulers of their own Empyrean Holy Lands with incomparably rich resources. If they were indeed planning on competing in this auction then that would truly be a dizzying sight!

Lin Ming hadn't activated the isolation array formations in his room so all of these discussions entered his ears.

Lin Ming also knew of Empyrean Minor Violet. She was a woman who had equally risen to fame tens of millions of years ago and had established her own Holy Land. Whether it was in strength or methods, she was a terrifying character. Empyrean Minor Violet's name struck like a bolt of thunder in the ears of everyone within the inner Asura Road!

In this auction, two Empyreans had arrived. This was truly a grand event for the ages.

"I just hope these two ruthless people don't take a liking to the things I want..." As Lin Ming thought of the possible situations that could occur, he could only secretly complain to himself. If they were to struggle with him then he absolutely would be in trouble!

There were many people who even if they had a large number of points wouldn't dare to compete with two Empyreans. They simply didn't have the confidence to do so!

"Ladies and gentlemen, you have waited for far too long."

At this moment, a deep and sonorous voice spread throughout the entire auction hall arena. The scene on the projection stones rippled once more, showing the scene of the auction stage below.

They saw a tall middle-aged man in neat and meticulous clothing stepping onto the auction stage platform. His eyes were deeply set and his nose was high. He had a sharp, pronounced jaw and his aura was deep, giving off a calming feeling.

This person was the president of the Runic Pill Trading Organization as well as a high level Elder of the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

Out of all the Elders within the entire Divine Runic Masters Guild, Song Wen was the only one who wasn't a divine runic master. Even so, he was still an Elder.

Not only did he not have many attainments in the divine runic arts but his strength was also only at the early Holy Lord realm. Still, there wasn't a single person in the Divine Runic Masters Guild that underestimated him, because he had a surpassingly outstanding ability to manage operations of large-scale organizations. This was also the reason he was able to become an Elder.

Divine Rune City was not purely a sect; it was a comprehensive gathering of interests and individuals, and as such needed a person with Song Wen's talents.

"Today's treasure fair has gathered elites from all over. As a show of respect, the first auction today will have me as the auctioneer!"

Song Wen’s voice wasn’t loud but his words spread through the massive arena site. Not a single word was left out from everyone’s ears.

After he finished speaking, a squad of late Divine Lord guards brought up a giant square box to the auction stage.

This box was completely carved from special obsidian material. This material had an extremely strong isolating effect and also had strong defensive divine runic symbols fused into it.

Even so, from the middle of the box one could hear sounds like the roaring of dragons and tigers. The light of the treasure leaked out shot into the sky, attracting the attention of everyone.

Generally speaking, the first item in an auction would be an extremely high quality item. This was to whet the appetite of the bidders and ignite the enthusiasm of the crowd so that the auction started off on a high note.

And as everyone’s eyes were focused on the obsidian box on the auction stage…

In an opulent VIP suite, Duke Fullmoon was embracing his ‘junior-apprentice sister Qing’ in his chest as he fiddled with an information jade slip.

“Ordinary private room #36? This brat isn’t even willing to pay out for a VIP suite?”

When Duke Fullmoon entered the auction hall the first thing he did was to ask someone to look up where Lin Ming was. The locations of all visitors were registered so looking up where someone was wasn’t difficult at all.

“He’s nothing but a poor little beggar, how could he possibly compare with the Duke?” Junior-apprentice Sister Qing softly said.

“Haha!” Duke Fullmoon laughed, using a little bit of strength to pull Junior-apprentice Sister Qing’s waist. He said, “He’s not as poor as he seems. 30 million isn’t a price that he can't pay. I've looked up some of his information already. After he crafted that batch of Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols, even with conservative estimates the Extreme Star Holy Lands still paid him over a billion points!"

Duke Fullmoon had already investigated the quantity and approximate price of Lin Ming's sale of Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols. Only by knowing oneself and knowing the enemy could one be undefeated. Since Duke Fullmoon was on bad terms with Lin Ming and he needed the Dragon Contract to begin with, it was naturally best for him to clearly investigate as much as he could into Lin Ming.

At this time, Shadow Overflow, who was also sitting in the VIP suite, lifted up the hood of his black cloak, revealing a face like a wizened old sorcerer.

He hoarsely said, "A billion plus points, how could he be Duke's match? I heard that the Duke must purchase many things for Divine Void Divine Kingdom this time so you must have a great sum of wealth in hand! In addition with the Duke's own wealth and mine, that Lin Ming has already lost!"

Chapter 1628 – Nameless Ancient Pill

Chapter 1628 – Nameless Ancient Pill

…

…

…

In this auction, Duke Fullmoon not only represented himself, but also represented Divine Void Divine Kingdom to purchase resources.

Divine Void Divine Kingdom was far too large. Besides Divine Void, the True Divinity ruler of the nation, there were also seven Empyreans. These seven Empyreans each wielded power over a province of Divine Void Divine Kingdom. There were seven provinces, and these seven provinces added together comprised the complete Divine Void Divine Kingdom.

Duke Fullmoon came from the Nine Nether Province and he was a subordinate of Empyrean Nine Nether. Of these seven provinces, the Nine Nether Province was one of the strongest.

“Let’s see just what this first treasure is!”

Duke Fullmoon’s gaze focused on the obsidian box on the auction stage. He was also curious about what the opening treasure of this grand auction would be.

But at this time, Runic Pill Trading Organization President Song Wen didn’t immediately open the box. Instead, he used his rich and magnetic voice to introduce the origin of the treasure.

“Ladies and gentlemen, the treasure within this box was obtained from the Drifting Islands within the Stormy Sea. I’m sure everyone here is already familiar with the Stormy Sea and its Drifting Islands…”

As Song Wen mentioned the Stormy Sea, everyone beneath the stage sucked in a light breath of air.

This was one of the several great life forbidden zones of the inner Asura Road!

Lin Ming also had a deep impression of the Stormy Sea. Not to mention Torchriver’s memories, but when Lin Ming first arrived at the inner Asura Road, he had inquired at Heaven’s Secret about information related to transcendent divine mights of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, and Heaven’s Secret had given him three pieces of information. The first piece of information concerned the Forbidden Divine Barrens, the third piece of information concerned Mo Brightmoon’s Celestial Tyrant Manual, and the second piece of information concerned the Stormy Sea.

The Stormy Sea had islands that mysteriously flitted in and out of existence; these were the Drifting Islands. According to Heaven’s Secret, the Drifting Islands had inheritances left behind by powerhouses related to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. Thus, if Lin Ming were to find the Drifting Islands there was a chance he could obtain transcendent divine mights related to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

But these islands had no fixed location. Their whereabouts were unknown, constantly shifting, like a mirage that vanished upon second glance. Many powerhouses went to the Stormy Sea to search for these islands but their exploration ended in failure. Some of them returned, but some of them went missing, their life or death unknown.

He never imagined that the first treasure of this auction would have been found at the Drifting Islands!

Out of the many life forbidden zones of the inner Asura Road, the Drifting Islands wasn’t the most dangerous but it was absolutely the most enigmatic. No one knew how they were formed. If one wanted to find the Drifting Islands and return alive, they needed to have absolute strength and a great destiny above their body, otherwise it would be impossible to succeed.

“The first treasure is something found at the Drifting Islands!?”

“Divine Rune City’s auction is really explosively amazing, it's no wonder that even Empyreans would come here!”

For some martial artists in the arena, this was their first time attending Divine Rune City’s treasure fair. Upon seeing such treasures with their own eyes they were definitely drooling with greed, but what a pity they weren’t able to afford such treasures.

Most of them didn’t have a total net worth surpassing 30 million points.

“Let’s not come to conclusions so quickly. Although this is something from the Drifting Islands it might not be too precious. There are also useless treasures at the Drifting Islands; we have to see what grade of treasure this is first.”

Some people said. However, they soon shut up.

This was because as Song Wen opened the obsidian box, a strange spiritual light shot out from the slits of the box. At the same time, a massive aura of life gushed out, as if there were some living creature inside.

Such a boundless and vigorous aura definitely wouldn’t belong to something ordinary.

Song Wen used both hands to lift up a small jade platform. And at the center of this jade platform was a little circular groove, and this groove surprisingly held a pill!

As this pill appeared, it released a brilliant rainbow-colored light. Faint traces of flames seemed to burn on the surface of the pill, slowly evolving into mystical shapes. There were dragons, phoenix, humans, and even traces of the Great Dao as well as the aura of Laws.

Even though Lin Ming was several miles away from the auction stage, he could still feel a formidable spirituality.

This was an extraordinary pill!

Lin Ming instantly judged. He could feel all the blood within his body being galvanized by this pill, as if the blood within him were about to spray out at any moment.

Lin Ming's blood vitality was extremely stable, but this pill was still able to affect the very foundation of his blood. This proved that there was an incredible condensed power of blood vitality within this pill.

Moreover, Lin Ming could faintly feel that this pill sent out a vast energy, one that would be tremendously helpful to his own essence gathering system!

Back in the past when Heaven's Net had given him information, they said that the Drifting Islands had inheritances related to powerhouses that cultivated the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace that existed from before the great tribulation. Lin Ming suspected that this pill was left behind by ancient ancestors of humanity.

This was a pill that could supplement his blood vitality as well as greatly enhance his essence gathering system!

This was a pill completely suited towards Lin Ming!

Lin Ming was immediately tempted. But, he felt that this sudden surprise wasn't good at all. This was only the first auction and he was far from any sign of a jade dragon horn or dragon saliva grass, and yet he discovered that he had an intense desire to win the auction of this pill!

In total Lin Ming had around 2 billion points. If he had to buy different treasures as well as keep the dragon saliva grass and jade dragon horn in mind, then even if he doubled his points to four billion he still wouldn't have enough!

Lin Ming hesitated but he didn't give up on purchasing this pill. To him, this pill was far too useful. It could even be said that for the current Lin Ming, this was a pill perfectly crafted for him. It was something that could only be found through a stroke of fate. If he were to miss out on it now then he would be regretting it in the future.

However, Lin Ming simultaneously couldn't give up on the jade dragon horn and dragon saliva grass. If so, then he had to rely on some special methods to earn points!

Song Wen placed the pill back down on the auction stage platform. Lin Ming discovered that the phantoms on this pill radiated outwards, producing phantasmal images that seemed to be using up the medicinal strength of the pill.

But, the truth was that even though these medicinal strengths scattered outwards, they returned due to some strange traces of the Heavenly Dao Law and were then reabsorbed again. It was like the pill itself was breathing.

"Divine runic symbol!"

Lin Ming could see that on the surface of the pill, there was an extremely sophisticated divine runic symbol. Not only did this divine runic symbol enhance the effects of the pill but its greatest function was to maintain the strength of the pill. If this were a seventh grade divine runic symbol then there really was the chance that this pill could keep for at least a billion years without losing any strength.

If there was a time enchantment that slowed time as well as a variety of array formations, then it wouldn't be difficult to maintain the peak potency of this pill for billions of years. This was also the reason why a divine pill like this could be preserved on the Drifting Islands for such a long time.

"The base bid price is 500 million. Every increase in bid price can be no less than 10 million points. Now, let the auction begin!"

Song Wen shouted out loud. Before a moment of time passed, someone immediately shouted out a price.

"550 million!"

In a single breath someone had raised the bid by 50 million. But in truth, this pill's value far surpassed this price.

Standing near Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian couldn't help but feel worried for him. Currently, Lin Ming's financial resources weren't too abundant.

"560 million!"

"570 million!"

The bid continued to rise. Those that had spoken out a bid price so far were martial artists in the ordinary rooms. Martial artists in the ordinary seats weren't able to bid such a high price and the people in the luxury VIP suites had yet to take action.

But at this time, a voice echoed out from a luxury suite.

"700 million!"

The reason for raising the bid price so much at once was to kick out all of those who didn't have the resources to match it. And, this effect was achieved. Many bidders in the ordinary rooms immediately fizzled.

"730 million!"

Someone else increased the bid price again. This person was also from the luxury suites.

"Big Brother Lin, what do you plan on doing? Looking at this momentum the price might rise over a billion, and that disgusting Duke Fullmoon might target you too!"

Xiao Moxian hurriedly said. If the greater portion of Lin Ming's wealth were to be sucked dry during the first auction then what would he do afterwards?

The bid price continued to climb but Lin Ming actually remained silent. He was rapidly estimating the price of this ancient nameless pill.

Although this pill came from ancient times, Lin Ming possessed a vast breadth of knowledge on pills and could estimate the approximate cost. According to normal calculations, the true value of this pill was around 1.3-1.4 billion points.

This price was truly difficult for Lin Ming to withstand.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. Then he said, ”Xian’er, this pill might be sold for less than a billion.”

“Mm?” Xiao Moxian was stunned.

“Let’s wait and see. I won’t buy this pill if it crosses 1.2 billion.”

Lin Ming’s thoughts were clear. This ancient nameless pill was valuable, but the bidders sitting in this auction hall were mostly spiritas. To them, this pill that was left behind by ancient human seniors wasn’t as valuable as it was to Lin Ming.

Even if there were some human martial artists that planned to buy this pill, they often only cultivated the essence gathering system. This made it so that the value of this pill was far less than 1.3-1.4 billion; the cost to performance ratio simply wasn’t good enough.

But Lin Ming, who dual cultivating body and energy, could display the full potential of this pill.

And as he thought, when the bid price rose to 770 million there was suddenly a drastic drop in bidders.

Everyone had their own scale in mind. The people present here weren’t idiots.

“800 million!”

Lin Ming suddenly said. Although his voice was calm, his inner emotions weren't as tranquil. He really feared that an Empyrean would emerge and suddenly compete with him.

He looked up at the several highest luxury suites. If he wasn't wrong, then Empyrean Minor Violet and Empyrean Lionheart were staying in those suites.

"820 million!"

At this time, a familiar voice sounded out. Lin Ming looked over and saw a feather-robed man standing in front of the windows of his luxury suite, holding a crystal cup in his hands. This cup contained a blood red wine and there was a faintly happy expression on this man's face as he slowly sipped on the wine.

From a distance, this man even turned towards Lin Ming and raised his glass in greetings.

This person was Duke Fullmoon.

In all rooms, there were array formations that limited sight into them. But, Duke Fullmoon deliberately deactivated these array formations to allow Lin Ming to see him.

"That annoying fly, it's him again!"

Xiao Moxian felt a deep loathing as she saw Duke Fullmoon. She wished she could spit in his face.

Lin Ming also slightly frowned.

"840 million!" Lin Ming shouted out once more.

"850 million!" Duke Fullmoon followed up right after.

Duke Fullmoon was bidding not just to spite Lin Ming but to consume Lin Ming's wealth so that he couldn't compete for the Dragon Contract later. Things would be easier with one less competitor. Otherwise, if Lin Ming really bet his nearly 2 billion points on the Dragon Contract then even Duke Fullmoon would find the price painful to match.

Chapter 1629 – Ancient Pill In Hand

Chapter 1629 – Ancient Pill In Hand

…

…

…

“Hehe… Duke Fullmoon has calculated well. If I’m not wrong then this Lin Ming needs the nameless ancient pill. He is a human as well as someone who dual cultivates body and energy; this ancient pill could be called perfectly suited for him. Because of that, it will be easy to ruin him!”

In the VIP suite, Shadow Overflow cackled. His laugh had a strangely eerie feel to it.

According to their information, Lin Ming’s wealth didn’t surpass 2 billion. If Lin Ming were to buy the ancient pill for over a billion then there wouldn’t be any threat from him later on.

“900 million!”

Lin Ming suddenly increased the bid by 50 million.

However, Duke Fullmoon didn’t stop here. He shouted out, “910 million!”

The two times he bid were only 10 million higher than Lin Ming’s bid price. It seemed that he intended to purposefully hinder him.

“950 million!” Lin Ming shouted out again.

“960 million!” In the VIP suite, Duke Fullmoon laughed out loud. To have Lin Ming spend even a hundred million more with just a little bit of effort, this caused him to be in a very good mood.

And at this time, in an ordinary room, Xiao Moxian’s face was cold to the point of developing frost. She was just a step away from violently rushing out.

“Big Brother Lin, this damned dead fly is deliberately targeting you! He doesn’t want to buy that pill, he just wants to waste your points. If this continues then you are only throwing away your hard earned wealth.”

Lin Ming nodded. “That’s right. He wants to annoy me and use up my resources, but he won’t have the courage to continually follow me.”

Lin Ming had a set price in mind for this pill and that was that he wouldn’t surpass 1.2 billion. This was a limit that Duke Fullmoon wasn’t aware of.

Lin Ming could use this to his advantage.

“990 million.” Lin Ming added another 30 million. He called out this bid so that Duke Fullmoon would bid a billion.

According to Lin Ming’s estimate, a billion points surpassed the limit that this pill would sell for at the auction.

And Duke Fullmoon did as Lin Ming thought he would. He drawlingly called out, “One billion. Haha, that friend in the ordinary room, do you really want to struggle with me?”

Duke Fullmoon insolently said. His voice spread far as if he were intentionally trying to anger Lin Ming.

He thought that Lin Ming would shout out another price and then he could disturb Lin Ming several more times, causing him to lose even more wealth, but he didn’t think that Lin Ming wouldn’t speak up again.

Lin Ming seemed to suddenly quiet down in the ordinary room he was in, no longer shouting out a price.

“Guest #24 has put forth a bid of one billion! The first item of this auction has already broken through a billion! Is there anyone willing to bid higher?”

On the auction stage, Song Wen spoke with zealous fervor.

However, no one in the auction seats responded. The psychology of people was quite subtle. 990 million was only 10 million away from a billion, but crossing this gap gave two completely different feelings.

To spend a billion points to buy this ancient pill, the price to performance ratio of this was far too low.

Song Wen shouted out one more time but there still wasn’t a response. When it came to some auctions of the highest caliber like this one, even a magnificent auctioneer could only play a limited effect in increasing the price.

Let alone Song Wen, even if Suya put on her most sexually appealing attire and did her best to arouse enthusiasm and seduce the audience, she still wouldn’t have much of an effect.

The VIP guests who could afford to bid upon this nameless ancient pill were all powerful figures of their great influences or were absurdly strong. So, which one of these people would toss away a billion points just to win the smile of a beautiful woman?

“One billion, going once!”

Song Wen began to announce.

Hearing these words, Duke Fullmoon felt his heart skip a beat.

He didn’t want to buy this nameless ancient pill. This was something used by humans and was suited for martial artists that dual cultivated body and energy. As a spiritas, whether it was him or the Divine Void Divine Kingdom behind him, no one needed this ancient pill.

If he bought something that wasn’t of much use he could only pay for it from his own pockets. It was impossible for him to use the wealth of Divine Void Divine Kingdom to pay for this ancient pill and his pockets weren’t so large that he could disregard a loss of a billion points.

If he obtained the ancient pill the only thing he could do was resell it. But no matter who he sold it to, he wouldn’t be able to match the price that it sold for at this auction.

But this wasn’t the crucial issue. The key problem was that it would take a long time afterwards for him to resell this nameless ancient pill. This would make it so that the wealth he had to spend in this auction would diminish by a great deal. If something truly amazing were to appear later he might not be able to afford it!

And even if he thought of using Divine Void Divine Kingdom’s wealth to buy something he wanted, that would be something that belonged to the Divine Void Divine Kingdom, not him.

“One billion, going twice!”

Song Wen counted down once more. Duke Fullmoon’s pulse began to race. He looked up towards the top two VIP suites, hoping that Empyrean Lionheart or Empyrean Minor Violet would be interested in this ancient pill. However, the two VIP suites were quiet from beginning to end, as if they never even heard anything.

To an Empyrean, this nameless ancient pill wasn’t of much use at all.

Empyreans could refine their own transcendent divine pills, but more than that, eating up a transcendent divine pill wasn’t too beneficial to their own cultivation.

Many Empyreans had been stranded at their boundaries for a long time and had been unable to break through. Wanting to rely on a simple transcendent divine pill to make massive leaps in their cultivation was the talk of a babbling moron.

Seeing Song Wen count down a third time, Duke Fullmoon felt as if he had eaten a fly.

He felt like he had been stupidly tricked.

He thought of ruining Lin Ming but he hadn't considered Lin Ming's wealth enough.

Although Lin Ming wanted this nameless ancient pill, he might not be able to afford that sky high price!

"That poor fool, he doesn't have any capital to struggle with the Duke. What an idiot to compete for treasures." Nestled in Duke Fullmoon's chest, Junior-apprentice Sister Qing had a proud expression as she tenderly smiled. Her talent could only be considered decent and wanting to stand out in Divine Void Divine Kingdom was impossible. If she wanted to rise above the crowds she needed to attach herself to someone with authority and potential, such as Duke Fullmoon. Now, she had increasingly felt that she had chosen the correct person.

With such a grand auction that gathered innumerable heroes and even two Empyreans, the man she chose had domineeringly bid on the first item of the auction, forcing out all people so that no one dared to shout a higher price.

Originally Duke Fullmoon was already upset, but now this brainless woman was trying to flatter him for no reason at all, causing him to be even more irritated and ashamed of himself. He shoved the flirting woman away, roaring, "Get out!"

Junior-apprentice Sister Qing was pushed rolling away and nearly struck the wall. She was frightened; she had no idea just why Duke Fullmoon had suddenly become so angry.

And at this time, just as Song Wen was about to begin his final countdown, someone shouted out a bid from the ordinary rooms. "One billion… and ten million!"

This voice was heavy, as if the bidder couldn't bear this price at all.

And as this voice entered Duke Fullmoon's ears, it was like the melodious call of heaven.

He let out a long sigh of relief, finally saved at the last moment. He looked towards the room that shouted out this price and saw that it was indeed Lin Ming.

Duke Fullmoon's complexion darkened. This item had finally been won by Lin Ming.

At this time he didn't dare to continue a bidding war with Lin Ming. With Lin Ming's current wealth, this bidding price was likely his limit.

"This poor fool!"

Duke Fullmoon cursed out loud. He wanted to rip off Lin Ming some more, but he didn't think Lin Ming would be so poor. Duke Fullmoon simply didn't have the courage to continue.

After shouting out three bids and having to experience a brief bout of fear and trepidation only to cause Lin Ming to lose a hundred million plus points, Duke Fullmoon wasn't too happy.

Then, Shadow Overflow chuckled. "The truth is that Duke's goal has already been accomplished. During this first auction, 60-70% of Lin Ming's wealth has been removed… after this he shouldn't pose much of a threat anymore."

Even though this was true, Duke Fullmoon didn't feel too great.

"This brat Lin Ming seems to have already given up on the jade dragon horn. He's smart enough, at least he knows when to give way. But, the only problem is that if he gives up the initiative like this then I can't step on him later."

Duke Fullmoon's complexion sank. He wanted to roll over Lin Ming in the auction for the jade dragon horn, but now he felt as if he were punching nothing but pillows.

And at this time, Song Wen counted down a third time. The first item in this auction had been won by Lin Ming!

“Congratulations to this guest in ordinary room #36 for winning this nameless ancient pill from the Drifting Islands!” Song Wen loudly announced. There was a smattering of applause throughout the audience. Many people were startled. They didn’t think that there would be crouching tigers and hidden dragons amongst the ordinary rooms.

Chapter 1630 – Violet Gold Spear

Chapter 1630 – Violet Gold Spear

…

…

…

According to the rules of the auction, the deadline for payments was ten days after the end of the auction.

If one took the treasures but didn't pay, one would receive the severe retribution of Divine Rune City. Punishments involved being imprisoned for thousands or even tens of thousands of years.

Generally speaking, no one would do such a thing. This was because before entering the auction, one had to verify their identity with a status card. Those people with considerable status and weight in the world certainly wouldn't do something so shameless.

"Then, onto the second auction item!"

Several elegantly-dressed women brought out a tall sandalwood box that was dozens of feet high. As Song Wen opened this box, everyone could see that it was a portable cave dwelling.

Lin Ming didn't have any interest in this sort of thing; he already had Primordius Heavenly Palace.

The starting price of this cave dwelling was 20 million points. After the auction began, scattered bids arose from the audience. Finally, the one to win was a martial artist in an ordinary arena seat. This item was won with 35 million points.

After the cave dwelling, there were mystical treasures, contract beasts, medicines, pills, magic weapons, and all sorts of other things that were brought out one after another.

Of these items, some aroused Lin Ming's interest. But as he considered the values of the items, he didn't bid as he thought they weren't worth the price.

This auction would continue for an entire month and was divided into several parts. Just the first round of the auction would last for three days and three nights.

To a martial artist, three days and three nights was less time than one spent in a bout of meditation.

As Lin Ming paid attention to the items that were being auctioned he also practiced the Divine Mist Heart Mantra. The reason Lin Ming was able to arrive at where he was, besides his luck and will, all of this was related to his diligence and hard work. Now, Lin Ming's cultivation was a race against time. If this auction was to last for an entire month he naturally couldn't stop cultivating.

But at this time, Song Wen brought out a black stone chest that piqued his interest.

This stone box seemed ordinary and simple, but Lin Ming could feel a faint and vast aura exuding from it.

As Song Wen slowly opened the stone box, a faint black light shot straight out, illuminating the arena. A cold killing intent spread out with it and Lin Ming's body shook. As he gazed at that black light, he could feel something that resonated with his soul… spear potential!

"That's a spear…"

Lin Ming was a professional veteran of spears. Before, the saint artifact Phoenix Blood Spear had accompanied him through his battles, slowly being tempered until it was finally reborn into a spirit treasure. It was a powerful spear that would continue to grow with him.

Thus when it came to spears, Lin Ming had a startling sense of acuity.

In the VIP suites, Duke Fullmoon stared at the item in the stone box, equally excited. It was just that the resonance in his heart was weaker than Lin Ming's and he also had a sense of uncertainty.

"Empyrean level spirit treasure spear?"

Duke Fullmoon's eyes shined.

"Empyrean spirit treasure? Duke, you are already at the World King realm and you also wield spears. The spear you've been using is nothing but an ordinary spirit artifact that cannot follow your rapid ascent. Now, this treasure here seems perfectly suited for the Duke. You must succeed in obtaining it!"

Junior-apprentice Sister Qing leaned into Duke Fullmoon and giggled. Even though she had been violently shoved away by Duke Fullmoon, she didn't dare to display any temper at all. Her relationship with Duke Fullmoon was just like a mortal emperor and their concubine; since when would a concubine dare lose their temper with the emperor?

Duke Fullmoon didn't seem to hear her words. He only continued staring at the black box.

Song Wen fiddle with something on the black stone chest. Then, strange runes lit up all around the black box, surging about with waves of energy as it automatically opened. Then, an intense brilliance exploded outwards like a dazzling sun as torrent of essence energy shot up into the skies!

A dragon-like golden spear burst out, humming in the void, emitting a pressure as deep as the sea!

"This is another precious item to be sold today, an Empyrean spirit treasure excavated from some Empyrean ruins – the Violet Gold Spear! The starting price is 800 million points!"

800 million was an extremely exaggerated number. But, an Empyrean spirit treasure was indeed worth this price!

A so-called Empyrean spirit treasure was not a treasure forged by an Empyrean, but a treasure that was raised and cultivated by an Empyrean.

It needed to be carried with an Empyrean, passing through millions of years of nourishment as it slowly transformed. In their lives, an Empyrean would raise at most several Empyrean spirit treasures. With their 100 million year lifespan, they wouldn't produce over 10 such treasures.

For instance, Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear. When Lin Ming became an Empyrean and used all sorts of additional heavenly materials to refine his spear, he could receive it into his inner world and nourish it with his essence energy until it became an Empyrean spirit treasure.

But this was a very long process. It was impossible to do this without waiting millions of years.

It could only be said that Lin Ming grew too quickly. Even though Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear crossed through heavenly tribulation with him and developed an artifact spirit, when compared to Lin Ming's heaven-defying growth, even the Phoenix Blood Spear couldn't keep up.

When an Empyrean was living, they wouldn't sell the Empyrean spirit treasures they cultivated even if offered 10 billion points. This was because only a weapon they raised themselves would be best suited for them.

It was only when an Empyrean died and their Empyrean spirit treasures become masterless treasures would these items be dug up from ruins by their descendants and then sold.

Song Wen took the gold spear in his hands. Holding this spear, the feeling was like he was grasping onto a golden dragon.

This spear was 12 foot long and was an overlord spear. In a sense it was more appropriate to call it a lance.

The golden spear's shaft was covered with mystical lines. The spear head was dark black and red, emitting a sharp light that cut into the eyes.

"The spear shaft is covered with Asura Law lines, but what a pity... there are some places that are lacking..."

Lin Ming's understanding into the Asura Heavenly Dao became increasingly deep with every passing day. He could see with a single glance what was wrong with the patterns on the golden spear shaft.

The Asura Heavenly Dao was incomparably mysterious to the martial artists of the Asura Road; no one could solve it. Even a seventh grade divine runic master could only summarize the knowledge of their predecessors to engrave array formations, but the truth was that they didn't understand the essence of the Asura Heavenly Dao.

Because of this, it was impossible for them to draw up perfect Asura Heavenly Dao patterns.

"How unfortunate. That spear's Buddha-killing aura is absolute and I have no idea how many powerhouses' blood it has drunk. In addition, it was carried by an Empyrean level character for million of years and has developed a terrifying killing intent. It is wonderful in nearly all aspects. If only the Asura Heavenly Dao patterns on it were perfect then it would undergo a qualitative transformation!"

Lin Ming deeply sighed, feeling a bit regretful. The structure of this spear had already been finalized and it was impossible to change the Asura Heavenly Dao patterns on the spear shaft. Otherwise, if he were to try it would only cause more mistakes, resulting in an opposite effect and worsening it.

Moreover, there was something else. This spear shaft was forged with violet red golden crystals. These crystals were extremely expensive and extremely hard. If supported by an array formation then even a Great World King could give up all thoughts of crushing it.

Even so, violet red golden crystals lacked any elasticity. In other words, this violet gold spear was a hard spear. This meant that in Lin Ming's eyes, its functionality dropped a great deal.

A hard spear without flexibility meant that there was no cushioning force. In a head-on collision of toughness, it was easy to be struck and injured by the shaking force.

Of course, even with these two disadvantages, this Violet Gold Spear was still far superior to Lin Ming's own Phoenix Blood Spear!

If Lin Ming could switch spears he would certainly be willing to. After all, the Phoenix Blood Spear would take far too long to grow.

Currently, Lin Ming estimated that the final price of this spear would be around 1.2-1.4 billion points. But to Lin Ming, this price was far too high for the value he would receive. The most he could accept was a billion points, but this amount could only buy a spear shaft.

Lin Ming glanced outside his room at everyone else in the arena. He could see a fanatic greed in the eyes of the other martial artists as they stared at the Violet Gold Spear. It was clear they had a strong desire to buy that Violet Gold Spear!

A weapon on the level of an Empyrean spirit treasure was surpassingly rare! Even in this auction there wouldn't be more than a few of them.

To find an Empyrean spirit treasure that suited oneself, this could only be called a stroke of fate.

"Let the auction begin!" Song Wen loudly proclaimed.

But just as Song Wen's voice fell, someone shouted out loud from the VIP suites. "850 million!"

"860 million!"

There were many people that wanted to buy this Violet Gold Spear.

These people were mostly World King powerhouses, even Great World King powerhouses. Only this type of person had the ability to just barely move the powers of an Empyrean spirit treasure. As for those people of a lower boundary, they weren't able to afford it.

"900 million!"

The bid continued to climb. Although the martial artists in the VIP suites were all high level figures, none of them understood the Asura Heavenly Dao like Lin Ming did, thus they couldn't see the flaws in the Violet Gold Spear. To them, this Violet Gold Spear was the peak level that a weapon could obtain. Even if they were to expend every cent of their wealth to buy this spear they would still think it was worth it!

As the bid price rose like increasingly strong waves, this caused Duke Fullmoon's blood to boil with ambition. He definitely had to win this spear.

"You aren't going to bid?" Shadow Overflow smiled. He could see that Duke Fullmoon wanted to obtain this spear no matter the cost.

"Hehe, there's no need to be in a hurry. Those shouting out bids right now are just being noisy. This spear is definitely worth more than that! Even buying it for 1.5 billion or 1.6 billion isn't anything at all!"

Duke Fullmoon's judgment was much worse than Lin Ming's. To him this spear could sell for 1.5-1.6 billion, but to Lin Ming it could only sell for 1.3-1.4 billion.

"I've heard that Lin Ming also uses the spear. I was hoping to roll over him in this auction but he hasn't even said anything. How boring..."

"Duke, how many points could that poor idiot have? To a little nobody like him, this Empyrean spirit treasure is just something to look at, how could he possibly afford it?" Junior-apprentice Sister Qing giggled from Duke Fullmoon's chest.

"Heh, you're right my little darling, he definitely won't dare do anything at this price range." Duke Fullmoon grinned. He reached out a hand and began to recklessly knead Junior-apprentice Sister Qing's plump chest.

"1.2 billion!"

Duke Fullmoon suddenly shouted out.

A sudden bid of 1.2 billion caused many people to lose the courage to bid higher. For a time, the entire arena calmed down.

Duke Fullmoon was more than satisfied with this effect. He looked towards Lin Ming's room, a meaningful smile crossing his face.

But in the next moment, his smile froze. From Lin Ming's ordinary room, another bid was clearly shouted out, "1.21 billion!"

Chapter 1631 – Lin Ming Strikes Back

Chapter 1631 – Lin Ming Strikes Back

…

…

…

1.21 billion was only 10 million higher than Duke Fullmoon's bid. It seemed as if Lin Ming was making it clear that he was going to challenge Duke Fullmoon.

"Just what qualifications does this brat have to oppose me!?"

Duke Fullmoon frowned. He thought that Lin Ming wouldn't be able to compete with him but Lin Ming actually shouted out such a price. "He shouldn't have many points left. If he shouts out this bid then he must have placed himself in great debt! He wants to borrow money to compete; does he really think he can defeat me?"

Duke Fullmoon didn't place Lin Ming's bid in his heart because he didn't consider Lin Ming to be a worthy opponent. If Lin Ming hadn't bought the nameless ancient pill then he might not have been in trouble, but currently he was only a little grasshopper, able to hop a few times before being crushed.

"Hehe, he is just an idiot slapping himself in the face. My Duke should find it easy to clean the likes of him up. There won't be chances for him to cause a commotion any longer."

Junior-apprentice Sister Qing giggled as she wrapped herself around Duke Fullmoon's neck.

Duke Fullmoon laughed. He called out, "1.25 billion!"

However, just as Duke Fullmoon's voice fell, from the ordinary rooms, Lin Ming once again called out, "1.26 billion!"

Lin Ming's voice was calm and steady as if he didn't even care about these points.

Duke Fullmoon's complexion immediately darkened.

He stood up, his gaze blazing as he stared at Lin Ming's direction. His eyes seemed as if they could pierce through the isolating array formations around Lin Ming's room and kill everyone within.

"1.3 billion!"

At this time, another person put in a bid. This person was not Lin Ming nor were they Duke Fullmoon. Rather, they also came from the VIP suites. This voice was deep and sonorous, accompanied with a profound aura; they were clearly also a master.

There were many World Kings and Great World Kings present that used the spear. They would absolutely desire this Empyrean spirit treasure level divine spear.

Duke Fullmoon fell silent, not immediately responding. It seemed as if he were waiting for Lin Ming to shout out another bid. He knew that Lin Ming was also a martial artist that used a spear; he would definitely be persistent in bidding on this one.

After waiting for some time and without Lin Ming shouting out a bid, Song Wen began to count down. This caused Duke Fullmoon's eyes to twitch with rage.

With this, it was clear that Lin Ming was targeting him!

"1.35 billion!" Duke Fullmoon shouted out.

And at this time, just as he thought, Lin Ming immediately followed up, "1.36 billion!"

Lin Ming's voice remained tranquil, completely disregarding Duke Fullmoon's rising anger.

The two men stood in sharp contention!

“This is impossible! Where would he come up with so many points from?” Shadow Overflow wrinkled his eyebrows. According to the information he obtained, Lin Ming had between 1-2 billion points. After buying the nameless ancient pill, he should have 700-800 million points left. Even if he borrowed some points, it would have been incredible if he could borrow 300-500 million points, so how could he shout out this sky high bid of almost 1.4 billion points?

“He might be deliberately duping me so that I will have to pay a higher price!”

In Duke Fullmoon’s opinion, Lin Ming would want this Violet Gold Spear even in his dreams. But since he couldn’t afford it, this brat would simply take the opportunity to con him.

Before, Duke Fullmoon had purposefully made it clear he wanted to scam Lin Ming, and now Lin Ming was doing it in return!

“Duke, what will you do? Will you give up? Do you want Lin Ming to fall into his own trap and lose the qualifications to the auction and be punished by the Divine Runic Masters Guild?”

“No! I must win this spear no matter what! And this Lin Ming is someone extremely valued by the Divine Runic Masters Guild. Even if they punish him it won’t be anything too serious.”

Duke Fullmoon stood up, irritated. He paced back and forth in his VIP suite.

What he always lacked was a good spear. Today, no matter how expensive this Violet Gold Spear was, Duke Fullmoon still had to buy it.

This was because after another 20 some years, the final trial would begin!

Within the entire Asura Road, the final trial was the most valuable mystic realm, the one that held the most and greatest treasures. It was singularly unique without any other comparison. Duke Fullmoon would definitely not miss out on this chance!

However, even Divine Void Divine Kingdom had a limited quota of people they could bring to the final trial.

Within Divine Void Divine Kingdom, Duke Fullmoon was only a Duke subordinate to the Nine Nether Province. He was considered an excellent talent in the Nine Nether Province, but when placed within the entire Divine Void Divine Kingdom, he wasn't the best. This was because Divine Void Divine Kingdom was far too large and there were geniuses pouring out from everywhere. It was difficult to blossom in splendor with so much competition!

With Duke Fullmoon's current comprehensive abilities, he only grasped a 30% chance of standing out. But with this Violet Gold Spear, his chances could rise to 60-70%!

Thus, this bidding war was one that Duke Fullmoon could only win, he could not be defeated here!

At this time, that third person who bid 1.3 billion suddenly shouted out a higher price. "1.4 billion!"

This person was able to smell the thick explosive atmosphere between Lin Ming and Duke Fullmoon. He was also eager to see Lin Ming and Duke Fullmoon wrestle each other to the ground.

"Good! Very good! One after another you want to compete with me, then show me just how long you can compete for! 1.6 billion!" Duke Fullmoon cried out, suddenly increasing the bid by 200 million!

1.6 billion was the ideal bid in Duke Fullmoon's mind. In his estimation, this spear should not surpass that price.

Hearing this bid blow up out from nowhere, many people were left dumbfounded.

It had to be known that in a bid for an Empyrean spirit treasure, nearly all bidders were World Kings, Great World Kings, or half-step Empyreans at the limit. Empyrean level supreme elders simply wouldn't participate in a bidding war for an Empyrean spirit treasure. They had their own Empyrean spirit treasures, ones that were far more useful than Empyrean spirit treasures cultivated by others.

At 1.6 billion points, that was a price more than enough to force a World King to shrink back. Even for Great World Kings, only relatively wealthy ones amongst them could put forth such a high bid.

For a time, the entire arena was left quiet and peaceful. It seemed that no one was willing to shout out another price.

When it concerned such a tremendous amount of money, even Duke Fullmoon found it hard to remain calm. He picked up the glass of wine from the table and slowly sipped it, finally calming his nerves this way.

He had to buy this spear no matter the cost. What he feared now was someone increasing the price further.

"1.6 billion, is there a higher bid?"

Song Wen shouted out. No one replied, but Song Wen seemed to possess a great capacity for patience. He shouted out again and again, each shout causing Duke Fullmoon to have the desire to rush out and punch him in the face.

"1.6 billion, going once!"

Song Wen finally began the final countdown.

"1.6 billion, going twice…"

Song Wen deliberately drew out his words, hoping for a higher bid to appear.

And at this time, a calm voice echoed out from Lin Ming's room –

"1.61 billion."

This bid was faint and indifferent. It was as if Lin Ming wasn't bidding a price, but rather speaking a random number.

"What!?"

The glass was crushed to nothing in Duke Fullmoon's hand. The bright red wine splashed onto the floor like blood!

He thought that a bid of 1.6 billion was the limit, and even that the World King who joined in on the bidding had quieted down, not daring to bid another price.

But Lin Ming had randomly shouted out 1.61 billion with no pause at all, as if points were nothing but dirt to him.

Duke Fullmoon was livid with rage. He pulled open the doors to the VIP suite and rushed outwards.

All VIP suites floated high in the air of the arena sky. After rushing out, Duke Fullmoon floated above everyone's heads.

For a time, everyone looked at Duke Fullmoon, not sure why he had come out.

Duke Fullmoon's complexion was deep and grim. He used hateful eyes to glare in Lin Ming's direction. Then, he slowly said, "I suspect you are lying. There is no way you have so many points!"

With these words, the entire arena broke into an uproar.

Duke Fullmoon was not a weakling who was easy to deal with. He knew that Lin Ming wanted to buy this Violet Gold Spear but couldn't afford it. As for himself, he needed this spear and it was impossible for him to give up. Thus, he deliberately aimed at Lin Ming.

As Duke Fullmoon spoke, everyone's eyes turned to Lin Ming and the room he was in.

“In the auction for the nameless ancient pill you already spent a billion points, but now you even called out an additional 1.6 billion points. Do you really have 2.6 billion points? If so, then bring them out so we can all take a good look.”

Duke Fullmoon was aggressive and menacing!

In the private room, Xiao Moxian was a bit anxious. “Lin Ming, what do we do now? This fly isn’t easy to trick, ah… we only have a little more than 1.9 billion points, that’s far short of 2.6 billion.”

Lin Ming frowned and then stood up.

And at this time, Duke Fullmoon laughed out loud. “I know you don’t have that many points! According to what I know, the person in that booth is part of the Divine Runic Masters Guild! I even suspect that he is a bid manipulator!”

Chapter 1632 – Insane?

Chapter 1632 – Insane?

…

…

…

In order to take revenge against Lin Ming, Duke Fullmoon was willing to do anything. Although he didn't specifically state who he was being a proxy bid manipulator for, the meaning behind his words was clear enough.

These actions were done so that the Divine Runic Masters Guild wouldn't favor Lin Ming and protect him. After all, making a request to investigate the wealth of a person was impolite. That was their personal privacy and Lin Ming had the right to refuse.

Now that Duke Fullmoon suddenly threw out these words, everyone began to ramble on in chaos.

'Bid manipulator'. This was an extremely sensitive term to an auction house!

Now that Duke Fullmoon said it loudly to everyone in the arena, how could there not be a massive uproar?

On the auction stage, Song Wen's face immediately darkened. Although he could throw out Duke Fullmoon using the excuse that he was disturbing the auction, this action would inevitably influence the auction itself!

The audience would think that the Divine Runic Masters Guild was doing this from a guilty conscience!

This placed Song Wen in a conundrum.

The reason Song Wen fell into this embarrassing situation due to Duke Fullmoon's words was because the profession of a 'bid manipulator' was far too common in auctions. One could even call it a hidden rule!

A bid manipulator's job was to stir up the atmosphere, raising the price and causing bidders to go crazy.

They would up the bid on items, making bidders take out even more money to win.

Even if they made an error in judgment and won over the real bidders, they could still create a false impression of the incident and then create more support for the next auction of that item. This could be considered advertising for the auction house.

It only took a tiny commission to bring in a far higher income. With such an easy and cheap method, it wasn't a surprise that auction houses would hire these people.

However, the Divine Runic Masters Guild's auction house had existed for hundreds of millions of years. They valued their reputation above all and wouldn't do such heinous things.

Even so, once this topic was raised it would inevitably arouse suspicion!

Thus, the existence of 'bid manipulators' was a sensitive issue at this auction house. The average person wouldn't dare to make such claims, but Duke Fullmoon had the Divine Void Divine Kingdom standing behind him!

Divine Void Divine Kingdom was a titan that was even larger than Divine Rune City. It could be called the top spiritas influence in the Asura Road!

Song Wen's complexion was cold. His eyes exuded a thick killing intent as they locked onto Duke Fullmoon.

The Divine Runic Masters Guild was indeed weaker than Divine Void Divine Kingdom, but they weren't some soft malleable fruit that would buckle at a touch. They controlled a large number of divine runic masters and had a deep divine runic arts legacy. In this aspect, they were nearly the strongest divine runic master organization within the entire inner Asura Road.

Seeing Song Wen's chilling gaze, Duke Fullmoon felt his heart suddenly freeze. Although he knew that Song Wen wasn't his match and the Divine Runic Masters Guild would find it hard to do anything to him, this look still caused Duke Fullmoon to feel weak at the knees.

He could also feel that because of that brief moment of rage just now, he had been far too crude in his actions. To mention such a sensitive topic in front of everyone was the same as offending the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

He hurriedly said. "Everyone, I apologize for my words just now. I was too hasty with what I said and may have accidentally offended some of you. But, I still hope to verify the source of wealth from the bidder in ordinary room #36… according to what I know, he is less than a hundred years old and doesn't seem to have a strong influence supporting him from behind, so I cannot believe that he has 2.6 billion points of wealth!"

Duke Fullmoon wasn't someone who just easily ate a loss and he certainly wouldn't be a fool and allow Lin Ming to freely con him. If Lin Ming wanted to trick him then he also had to be prepared to face a counterattack.

In this situation, it was naturally impossible for Lin Ming to quietly remain in his room.

Lin Ming opened the door leading outside and stepped into the void as if he were walking on an invisible path, floating high in the sky.

Lin Ming's appearance immediately attracted everyone's eyes.

"That's the person who won the nameless ancient pill!"

"I didn't think he would be so young."

"He's not just young but his cultivation isn't too high, he's only at the middle Divine Lord realm! How could such a person have the ability to win the bid for the nameless ancient pill and bid another 1.61 billion for the Violet Gold Spear?"

According to all common sense, it was impossible for a middle Divine Lord realm martial artist to have 2.6 billion points of wealth. Many people became increasingly skeptical of Lin Ming.

Generally, those with status and great wealth would not bother with doing something so dishonorable as being a bid manipulator.

The bid manipulators that auction houses searched for would often be people without status, and these people would often hide out in VIP suits so that no one knew who they were!

With Lin Ming's age and cultivation, it was inevitable that people would suspect he was one of these people.

Facing everyone's skeptical eyes, Lin Ming thought little of it. He only faintly looked at Duke Fullmoon and said, "You seem to know what my total wealth is? Then you should also know I have around 2 billion points?"

As Lin Ming spoke he flicked his fingers and 19 blood red jade slips flew out from his spatial ring.

These jade slips each represented 100 million points and were especially provided by the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

As these red jade slips floated in the sky, many people felt their eyes go red with greed. Many of them had never seen a 100 million point jade slip in their lives.

However at this time, even though Lin Ming took out these jade slips, many people still eyed him suspiciously. If the Divine Runic Masters Guild were to use him as a 'bid manipulator' then it wouldn't be strange for him to have so many points.

Moreover, this was far less than 2.6 billion.

Facing this scene, Song Wen frowned. He didn't think that there would be such an event midway through the auction.

Duke Fullmoon had already torn apart all pretense of politeness with the Divine Runic Masters Guild. Even though he had apologized for his reckless actions he has still planted a seed of doubt within many people's hearts.

And the one they suspected was Lin Ming. To be so young and have such a low cultivation, it was hard for him to convince anyone.

If this became serious, then the total profit margin of this auction would be affected!

After all, the things sold at Divine Rune City's auction were often 20-30% more expensive than the normal transaction price outside. The reason that people came here to compete for treasures was not because it was cheap but because of the variety of treasures here. There were simply far too many rare and valuable treasures that could be won, many of them surpassingly difficult to find. There was nothing that couldn't be bought, only things that couldn't be afforded.

Thus, even bidding at high prices was something everyone was willing to do.

However, once a 'bid manipulator' appeared, many people would suspect that they were being played as fools. This would be disastrous for the prestige of Divine Rune City's auction.

Song Wen was already considering measures for how to properly handle this matter.

And at this time, Lin Ming's complexion was calm as he rode the tidal wave of attention. Facing the hundreds of thousands of elites in the auction arena, including the massive number of World Kings, Great World Kings, and even Empyreans, Lin Ming still remained as calm and serene as before.

This sort of calm could not be faked!

"1.9 billion? That doesn't seem to be enough..." Duke Fullmoon had a victorious smile on his face. Although he felt this move of his had been a bit crude and even offended the Divine Runic Masters Guild, the effect was extremely good. He had directly pushed Lin Ming to the opposite side of all bidders, so how could Lin Ming possibly continue competing with him?

As for offending the Divine Runic Masters Guild, once Duke Fullmoon returned from the final trial he might have built his foundation up enough that he would become an Empyrean in the future. At that time, the Divine Runic Masters Guild could do nothing to him.

"So what if it's not enough? Do you not know that the payment deadline for Divine Rune City's auction is ten days after the end of the auction itself? At that time I'll have raised enough points, so I'll be able to pay the end amount all the same."

Lin Ming said as if everything was a matter of course.

Duke Fullmoon was startled as he heard this, then he laughed. "Ten days after the end of the auction is nothing more than a little bit more than a month from now. As a Divine Lord realm martial artist do you really think you can raise 700 million points in a bit more than a month? Do you think others are as stupid as you are?"

The more Duke Fullmoon spoke, the more mocking and reckless his words became. As the audience heard this, all of them were in uproar. They had no idea where this Lin Ming came from, but the more he spoke the more ridiculous and false his words seemed!

Such a scene even caused the normally unflinching Song Wen to feel restless. The situation was slowly spinning out of control.

And at this time, Lin Ming chuckled. He said, "It's just raising 700 million points in a month. Just because you cannot do this doesn't mean that no one else can! I thought of selling some things in the auction house a few days from now, but with the current situation I guess I can choose to sell them today."

As Lin Ming spoke, he traced his spatial ring and 20 light symbol papers flew into the air. These symbol papers were the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol and Heretical God Symbol that Lin Ming created!

Every divine runic symbol had a ‘Lin’ character on the bottom right corner!

Seeing these 20 divine runic symbols, the entire audience was left befuddled. Just what did this boy mean? Was he saying that these 20 divine runic symbols could be sold for 700 million?!

“He must be joking or something! He is only auctioning those 20 symbol papers? Could those things be worth 700 million points!?”

Lin Ming’s symbol papers didn’t have a wonderful appearance. The symbol papers he used were top grade symbol papers. For a divine runic symbol, what decided the value was the runic structure within, not the symbol paper itself. Lin Ming naturally wouldn’t choose to use such flashy but needlessly expensive goods.

“They don’t really look like much… could he have inherited them? Could they be seventh grade divine runic symbols?” Some people suddenly fantasized. Whether it was people or treasures, things couldn’t be judged by first glance.

If it were 20 seventh grade divine runic symbols that were drawn up with ridiculously expensive materials, then selling them for 700 million points wouldn’t be a problem at all. The price could even surpass that.

Some top seventh grade divine runic symbols could sell for 700 million points. The best seventh grade divine runic symbols were even higher priced than some Empyrean spirit treasures.

However, a divine runic master in the audience shook his head. “You’re overthinking things… that is a fifth grade divine runic symbol. I won’t misread those energy fluctuations.”

The one speaking was a fifth grade divine runic master. He didn't belong to the Divine Runic Masters Guild but was a subordinate of a large influence. He was a respected and revered individual.

Hearing this fifth grade divine runic master's words, everyone was stunned. These were only fifth grade divine runic symbols?

20 fifth grade divine runic symbols? This fellow called Lin Ming wanted to sell them for a sky-high price of 700 million points?

Was this fellow insane!?

Chapter 1633 – Promissory Note

Chapter 1633 – Promissory Note

…

…

…

“Fifth grade divine runic symbols? Are you sure?”

Someone asked the fifth grade divine runic master who spoke with astonishment in their voice.

“Definitely.” The divine runic master stared back at the person ill-humoredly. “I have already been drawing up fifth grade divine runic symbols for over 5000 years, so how would I misread them?”

As the divine runic master spoke, many people saw the divine runic master badge on his chest. Although it wasn’t one issued by the Divine Runic Masters Guild, it still clearly identified him as a fifth grade divine runic master.

Originally, some people thought that the divine runic symbols Lin Ming took out were some top level inheritance he found somewhere, but they were actually so low level!

“He wants to sell fifth grade divine runic symbols on Divine Rune City’s auction stage? Is that boy playing jokes on us?”

“I think he might really be a ‘bid manipulator’ hired by the Divine Runic Masters Guild. He’s probably hired to wildly shout out prices and cause a ruckus to raise bids. This type of person will definitely be jailed by them later. I think that maybe even those 10 blood red jade slips might be fakes!”

If one didn't understand the divine runic arts, it would be hard to judge whether the jade slips that Lin Ming took out were real or not.

"These people are really annoying brain-dead dogs, I can't believe they would actually question the legitimacy and value of Big Brother Lin's divine runic symbols..." Xiao Moxian growled from within the ordinary room.

However, even though she said this she was still feeling uneasy. Just what was the value of these 20 divine runic symbols?

It was true that Lin Ming's revised divine runic symbols were fierce, but there were still only 20 of them.

Towards all these questions and doubts, Lin Ming remained silent. All around him, the divine runic symbols floated up and down, shimmering with a deep brilliance.

But this silence caused the audience's suspicions to be even deeper.

As these people were increasingly crude with their language, a faintly seductive voice echoed out from within the sea of doubts, seemingly especially noticeable.

"The lot of you are truly ignorant and unlearned. Have you never heard of the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol before?"

This magnetic and captivating voice echoed out from a VIP suite.

Everyone's gaze followed the voice to see a beautiful figure stand out.

"Who is that woman?"

The great majority of people present didn't know of Suya, but they knew that the VIP suite Suya came from was rented by an Empyrean Holy Land. In other words, this woman likely came from an Empyrean Holy Land.

“She is the Extreme Star Holy Lands’ Miss Suya. The Extreme Star Holy Lands are at war with the Heaven Strife Holy Lands and Miss Suya is responsible for managing the acquisition of divine runic symbols at the Divine Runic Masters Guild.”

Someone who knew Suya explained.

Everyone was startled. Suya could be considered as someone with status. For her to speak out now, her words naturally carried a certain weight to them.

Suya seemed to not hear the discussions around her. Her eyes remained bright and pure throughout. To her, there was no doubt of Lin Ming’s value in her mind, and this was the perfect time to speak out for him. Giving help when needed was always better than attempting flattery later.

Seeing Suya stand up for him, Lin Ming faintly smiled and politely nodded towards her in the distance, expressing his thanks.

“Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol? What is that?”

Many people were confused. In truth, one couldn’t blame them for not knowing. Those that came to Divine Rune City for the auction were either extremely wealthy characters or rulers of their own domains. However, these people were separated by mountains and rivers and many of them weren’t too understanding of the world of divine runic masters. And there were also some people that weren’t spiritas but were of other races. The Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols were earth-shaking amongst divine runic masters and particularly in the Divine Runic Masters Guild, but outside martial artists didn’t know too much about this.

The inner Asura Road was simply far too large. Even those people with a vast degree of experience would find it hard to know that a small divine runic symbol was able to create such a tremendous change in the war between the Extreme Star Holy Lands and Heaven Strife Holy Lands.

“Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol? This woman seems to value it a great deal?”

Although these people didn't know what the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol was, if this woman held this divine runic symbol in such high esteem then it was clearly something extraordinary. Did this youth create this divine runic symbol?

As many bidders were whispering their suspicions to each other, Suya opened her mouth and said, "Sir Lin, if you must compete for the Violet Gold Spear then I can lend you one billion points in advance."

Although Suya's voice wasn't loud it still spread through the auction arena like a rolling thunderclap, smashing into everyone's ears. For a time, the noisy auction arena fell silent.

Miss Suya was going to lend this young divine runic master a billion points?

A billion points was not a small number. To lend this amount so easily, this proved that Suya clearly trusted this young man named Lin Ming a great deal. She trusted his moral character and trusted in his ability to repay her!

Many people didn't know of the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol that Suya spoke of. And even though there were people present who knew what this divine runic symbol was and began explaining its fierceness to others, these other people still only half believed their words.

But now, with Suya directly lending Lin Ming a billion points, this was clear proof of how valuable this Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol was! If it wasn't then there was no way Suya would have lent this tremendous amount of money.

At this time, in the VIP suite that Suya was in, a man that looked to be in his thirties had a very ill complexion. "Junior-apprentice Sister Suya, please come back in first."

This man was Suya's senior-apprentice brother and also someone that the Extreme Star Holy Lands sent to Divine Rune City to bid for items in the auction.

With Suya, the two of them were responsible for winning a material called a ‘white birch spirit root’. And this material was something directly named by the Palace Master of Extreme Star Heavenly Palace!

Just what sort of character was the Extreme Star Heavenly Palace Master? His strength was considered top level even amongst Empyreans and he was the god of the entire Extreme Star Holy Lands. Normally, just mentioning his name would cause all disciples of the Extreme Star Holy Lands to fall silent.

The reason that Suya was able to stand out and have such success in the Extreme Star Holy Lands was in truth partially because the Extreme Star Heavenly Palace Master recognized her ability to communicate and negotiate with others.

However, just because the Palace Master recognized Suya’s talents didn’t mean that she was allowed to arbitrarily make decisions on her own! The current Extreme Star Holy Lands was stretched for resources. Suya and her senior-apprentice brother had been given authority to use 2.5 billion points in this auction and this was the personal wealth of the Extreme Star Heavenly Palace Master. This wealth was for the express purpose of acquiring the white birch spirit root, something that the Palace Master needed to upgrade his vital origin magic weapon!

If there were any delays and the Palace Master’s enhancement in strength was affected, then Suya and her senior-apprentice brother could die 10,000 times without being able to make up for it!

Now, Suya lent out a billion points in a single breath. This left them with just 1.5 billion points, an amount insufficient to win the ‘white birch spirit root’!

And according to the rules of the auction, all debts had to be paid in full within 10 days of the auction ending.

If Suya were to lend these points to Lin Ming and also simultaneously win the ‘white birch spirit root’, that required Lin Ming to pay back the billion points in a short period of time.

And Lin Ming himself had a great deal of things he needed to buy.

Suya knew that besides the 2 billion points on Lin Ming’s body, he really did only have these 20 divine runic symbols. If Lin Ming had other sources of wealth, why would he have a condition of borrowing 800 million points from the Extreme Star Holy Lands for taking on the mission of drawing up Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols?

But Suya still lent Lin Ming these billion points because she mistakenly believed that he really wanted to purchase this Violet Gold Spear.

After all, Lin Ming was a spear-wielding martial artist and Suya could approximate that Lin Ming really should trade in the Phoenix Blood Spear he used.

“Junior-apprentice Sister, have you gone mad!?” Suya’s senior-apprentice brother had an extremely ugly complexion. As he spoke, he was left a bit breathless from anger.

“Senior-apprentice Brother, you must trust me just this one time. Although I haven’t come into contact with Lin Ming much, I have a clear grasp of his character. He never does anything without certain belief that he can accomplish it. In the past I underestimated him a few times. I thought he had taken on missions that were impossible for him to complete, but the result was that I ended up black and blue with shame. In the end, I had to ignore the shame I felt to apologize to him. He is the type of man that will always be true to his word.”

Suya’s tone indicated she wasn’t worried at all. But, although she seemed calm on the surface, her palms were actually wet with sweat.

At this time she had truly made a great gamble. She was betting everything on the hope that Lin Ming could create a miracle with those 20 divine runic symbols.

Suya had already thoroughly investigated Lin Ming’s background and discovered that he was someone who couldn’t even be described as a freakishly monstrous genius.

Over 20 years ago he had only been a talented third grade divine runic master. But after just a mere 20 some years, he was able to create the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol that not even Shadow Overflow was able to unravel.

There was absolutely a secret hidden on Lin Ming's body!

However, even though Suya made repeated assurances, her senior-apprentice brother turned a deaf ear to all of this. "Junior-apprentice Sister, you have become obsessed with phantoms. I do not agree with you lending out these points. Stepping back, even if Lin Ming could really use those 20 divine runic symbols to earn back the points, Honorable Master will still punish us because we arbitrarily used the points he gave us for buying the white birch spirit root for other purposes. This is a grave crime that you are committing."

As Suya's senior-apprentice brother was speaking, Lin Ming suddenly smiled. "Thank you Miss Suya, but the auction for this Violet Gold Spear has yet to end, thus the auction of my divine runic symbols must be after the Violet Gold Spear. Mister Song, do you think… you can arrange it for me?"

Lin Ming said, turning towards Song Wen.

Song Wen narrowed his eyes as he looked at the divine runic symbols in Lin Ming's hand. Although he could feel that there was something extraordinary about them, he thought the entire situation was absurd. Even if he knew about the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols, no matter how heaven-defying Lin Ming's new divine runic symbols were, it was impossible to sell 20 of them for several hundred millions of points. After all, they were only fifth grade divine runic symbols.

"Little Brother Lin…"

Song Wen had a look of embarrassment on his face. He was afraid that Lin Ming was too overconfident in his abilities and had set the base price for his divine runic symbols too high. If no one were to end up bidding on them then that would truly be a joke.

Lin Ming naturally knew what Song Wen was thinking. He smiled and said, “Mister Song, feel relieved that I am not just auctioning these 20 divine runic symbols. I am also auctioning promissory notes for more. I can sell hundreds or even a thousand. Whoever is willing to purchase in advance, whoever pays.”

As Lin Ming spoke, many bidders almost fell off their chairs.

Promissory notes!? Purchase in advance!?

For several hundred million points to only buy a promissory note? Who did he think he was? Only an idiot would buy these!

Since this auction first began, no one had ever heard of taking money first to buy a promissory note!

Chapter 1634 – 1.99 Billion

Chapter 1634 – 1.99 Billion

…

…

…

Lin Ming's repeated requests and conditions caused even Song Wen to frown.

This was an extremely large transaction and many people were still unfamiliar with Lin Ming's name. Even in the world of divine runic arts, Lin Ming wasn't a widely known individual.

Outside of that, almost no one knew of him.

A junior that was less than a hundred years old and who only had a Divine Lord realm cultivation actually wanted to sell promissory notes in advance; just who would believe him?

Lin Ming simply didn't have any credibility built up at all. In this situation, who would buy the empty promises of a junior for 700-800 million or even a billion points!

"Suya, did you hear him!? He wants to sell a few promissory notes, do you still believe him? How will he do that? It's possible that the Divine Runic Masters Guild doesn't even allow an 'auction item' like that on the auction stage. To sell promissory notes for a billion points, he is taking us all for fools!"

Suya's senior-apprentice brother felt that Lin Ming had gone crazy.

However, Suya tried her best to show a calm expression. “So what if it’s a promissory note, did you forget that when Lin Ming requested to borrow 800 million points from the Extreme Star Holy Lands, we still lent him money all the same!”

“That is completely different! We had already obtained the 2000 Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbols by then and we also know who Lin Ming is! Do you think these other influences here know just who Lin Ming is? If points are so easy to obtain then I might as well write up a promissory note myself and write 10 Empyrean spirit treasures on it and see just who will buy it!”

After randomly lending a billion points, it wasn’t a surprise that Suya’s senior-apprentice brother was so agitated.

In fact, Suya’s heart was rapidly beating like a drum solo right now. Lin Ming actually dared to sell promissory notes at Divine Rune City’s grand auction. This was truly an unprecedented event that would likely not be copied in the future.

As Suya was lost in thought, she felt an icy cold gaze land on her, causing her to shiver.

She turned to see that the one sending her a chilling gaze was Duke Fullmoon!

At this time, Duke Fullmoon’s face was grim and cold. As he looked at Suya, the previous hints of appreciation and desire in his eyes had disappeared and were replaced by a gloomy killing intent.

If it weren’t for Suya appearing from nowhere, Lin Ming wouldn’t have had the chance to compete for the Violet Gold Spear with him!

Because the auction for the Violet Gold Spear had already started, Lin Ming’s auction of his divine runic symbols wouldn’t yet begin. It was unknown whether or not it would be carried out. If Lin Ming said that he would sell those divine runic symbols for a billion points, who would believe him?

Without genuine financial support, Lin Ming wouldn't be able to randomly shout out whatever price he wanted to. Let alone Duke Fullmoon opposing this, not even the Divine Runic Masters Guild would approve! This was a great taboo of the auction house.

But it just so happened that at this time Suya offered to lend Lin Ming a billion points, allowing him to continue competing. This meant that Duke Fullmoon would have to bleed even more!

How could Duke Fullmoon not hate Suya for this.

"Suya, how ruthless of you! I've treated you so well and yet you've done this to me!"

Duke Fullmoon's arctic sound transmission echoed in Suya's ears.

Suya's heart skipped a beat. She quietly responded, "I apologize deeply Duke Fullmoon. I received an Extreme Star Command that ordered me to support Lin Ming with everything I could during this auction. I had no other choice but to comply."

Suya's response was quick. She came up with a reason and pushed all responsibility onto the Extreme Star Holy Lands and showed an involuntary expression. Even though Duke Fullmoon had a deep background he still couldn't do anything to the Extreme Star Holy Lands.

Suya's words left Duke Fullmoon in half-belief and half-doubt. Had Lin Ming's value already risen to such a degree?

He silently flew back to his VIP suite. His dire expression scared Junior-apprentice Sister Qing, making her keep silent without saying a single word

She knew that the current Duke Fullmoon was already enraged to the limit. He could even strike out and kill people at any moment!

Like this, the auction for the Violet Gold Spear continued. Suya and Lin Ming both began moving back to their rooms.

As Lin Ming was turning around, Suya looked at him with deep and trembling emotion in her eyes, her voice exhausted and enchanting as she said with a sound transmission, “Sir Lin, to help you win this Violet Gold Spear I have paid a price in blood. Not only have I offended Duke Fullmoon but I even must fear the potential punishment of the Palace Master because I arbitrarily used the funds he gave us to purchase the white birch spirit root. In the future, you must repay me…”

Although Suya’s breathy words seemed suspect, Lin Ming knew that what she said was true. Even Lin Ming thought that Suya had been too reckless in helping him. These two prices she had to pay were indeed heavy!

However… even though Suya had made such a great bet, the truth was that she didn’t know that Lin Ming had no intention of buying the Violet Gold Spear to begin with. He was only doing this to trick Duke Fullmoon!

Thinking of this, Lin Ming awkwardly rubbed his nose. He couldn’t help but wonder: just what would Suya say once she realized this?

However, with a new actor like Suya entering the field, he could continue wildly shouting out any price he wanted. This also meant that Duke Fullmoon would think he absolutely wanted to win this spear!

Suya was returning, but her senior-apprentice brother didn’t intend to yet.

Lin Ming saw the increasingly poor complexion of Suya’s senior-apprentice brother and said, “This friend, there is no need for you to worry about this matter. You only need to pretend as if you are willing to lend me a billion points so no one questions whether I can continue competing for this Violet Gold Spear. If my promissory notes do not sell then later you do not need to lend me anything. At that time, the Divine Runic Masters Guild will only punish me and not you.”

Lin Ming’s thoughts on the matter were extremely clear. As Suya’s senior-apprentice brother heard this, he was startled. He looked at Lin Ming with surprise.

Indeed, as long as they just made the gesture of lending the points then it would be fine. Like this, no one would question whether or not Lin Ming had enough points and the remaining risks would all be taken by him. If Lin Ming wasn't able to pay the points later then they could simply ignore him. The only loss to them would be a little bit of their reputation.

Although Suya's senior-apprentice brother didn't believe that Lin Ming's promissory notes could sell at such a ridiculously high price, he didn't doubt Lin Ming's skill. To lose a bit of reputation to win over Lin Ming, that was completely worth it.

Thinking of this, he nodded and agreed to 'lend' Lin Ming a billion points.

Seeing Suya's senior-apprentice brother considering the situation again and again before nodding, Lin Ming felt it somewhat funny. He didn't think that something as minor as this auction for the Violet Gold Spear would actually stir up such a giant commotion.

But since the play had already begun, it would be a waste to not bring it to its end. With so many actors joining in on this play, wouldn't it be an insult to their superb performances if he didn't thoroughly damage Duke Fullmoon's finances?

Thus, before Lin Ming returned to his private room, he asked the auctioneer Song Wen. "Mister Song, is it my turn to make a bid now?"

Song Wen was stunned for a moment before nodding. "Because of Duke Fullmoon's question just now, the auction for the Violet Gold Spear was temporarily suspended. But now that Sir Lin has borrowed a billion points, you naturally have the qualifications to continue bidding."

"Great!"

Lin Ming faintly smiled. He looked towards Duke Fullmoon's direction and said, "Duke Fullmoon, since you increased the bid by 200 million just now, then let me express my gratitude and increase the bid by 200 million again. 1.8 billion!"

Lin Ming's voice was light. He spoke as if these 1.8 billion points were nothing but a drop in the bucket to him!

"Express his gratitude…"

"He increased the bid by another 200 million…"

This tone could simply aggravate one to death. If one didn't know of Lin Ming's current situation they might think he had 10 billion points to spend!

In the VIP suites, as Duke Fullmoon heard Lin Ming's voice, his complexion darkened and his lungs nearly exploded with rage!

Shouting out a new bid was fine, but Lin Ming had to use such an indifferent tone like he didn't care at all!

In this, Duke Fullmoon couldn't compare. It was impossible for him to remain calm at 1.8 billion points. This was 200 million points higher than his original limit for the Violet Gold Spear!

At this time, all of the bidders in the arena looked towards the luxury suite that Duke Fullmoon was situated in.

They were waiting to see whether he would increase the bid or give up.

"Guest #36 has bid 1.8 billion. Is there anyone willing to bid a higher price?"

Song Wen asked as per usual, looking through the entire audience. Although he asked everyone, the truth was that his question was only for Duke Fullmoon. His voice was also much more restrained. In truth, there was no need to sound passionate and stir up a frenzy, because Duke Fullmoon's rage had been ignited and he couldn't be any more passionate or frenzied.

Duke Fullmoon was so mad his intestines twisted in his stomach. He wished that he could cut up Lin Ming to tiny pieces. And at this time, whether he wanted to or not, it was impossible for Duke Fullmoon to retreat. This was not a question of face or pride, but because he really did need this Violet Gold Spear.

“1.8 billion… and… 20 million…”

Duke Fullmoon grit his teeth.

Even just adding 10 million caused Duke Fullmoon’s heart to drip blood. All of this was thanks to Lin Ming!

“1.82 billion! Is there a higher bid?”

Song Wen looked towards Lin Ming’s room.

Without missing a beat, Lin Ming said with a devil-may-care attitude, “1.99 billion.”

When Lin Ming’s new price erupted, let alone Duke Fullmoon, even the entire arena audience was left shaking in their seats.

Lin Ming put out a bid of 1.99 billion and the meaning behind it was extremely clear. Many people believed Lin Ming had 2 billion points to begin with, and with Suya lending him a billion, this was 3 billion altogether.

With 1.01 billion deducted from the auction of the nameless ancient pill, this meant that Lin Ming had 1.99 billion left.

In other words, Lin Ming putting out this bid was to say that this was all he had. He was telling Duke Fullmoon that if Duke Fullmoon had the resources to overcome this bid, then the item was his!

This move was sufficiently ruthless!

Many people admired Lin Ming’s courage and boldness. If the average person borrowed a billion points they would be greedy and fearful in case they couldn’t return it. But as for Lin

Ming, he spent these borrowed billion points as if they weren't even money. Even the 2 billion points of wealth he accumulated before were freely spent!

To shout a bid of 1.99 billion without even blinking an eye, just who could match this daring?

"Almost 2 billion, this is incredible. Whether or not this Lin Ming is a madman, he'll become famous today!"

Normally, it was amazing for an Empyrean spirit treasure to be sold for a billion points.

Now one was being sold for twice the price. If it were an Empyrean buying it, then it wouldn't be a problem at all.

But in most situations, only a World King would buy an Empyrean spirit treasure. For a Great World King to buy an Empyrean spirit treasure, they would nearly lose all of their assets to do so, much less this was twice the normal price!

Chapter 1635 – Auction of the Heavenly Fire Symbol

Chapter 1635 – Auction of the Heavenly Fire Symbol

…

…

…

"Big Brother Lin, you've put up all of the money you have… aren't you scared that fly won't follow you?"

Xiao Moxian asked Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission. She knew that Lin Ming was trying to con Duke Fullmoon, but since Lin Ming had put forth such a high price now, she feared that Duke Fullmoon wouldn't follow up with another bid. If so, Lin Ming would have struck himself in the face!

Lin Ming laughed. "I really am a little scared, but Duke Fullmoon is too obsessed with winning that spear. He shouldn't be too fearful of following up. 2 billion, when compared to the 1.6 billion he was willing to pay before, is only 400 million more."

Lin Ming believed that since Duke Fullmoon was willing to shout out 1.6 billion to buy the Violet Gold Spear, then he should definitely have more than 1.6 billion in wealth. He definitely had the resources to follow up with 2 billion!

But before this, in order to buy that spear at the price he wanted, Duke Fullmoon didn't even hesitate to offend the Divine Runic Masters Guild. This proved that Duke Fullmoon had an unsurpassed desire for the Violet Gold Spear!

Stepping back, even in a worst case situation where Duke Fullmoon no longer bid, Lin Ming still found it acceptable if he won the Violet Gold Spear. This spear could indeed be extremely useful to him and Lin Ming could rapidly earn the points needed for it.

“1.99 billion, is there anyone willing to place a higher bid?” Song Wen shouted out. His voice remained calm and frenzied, because there was no need for him to stir up the current tense situation.

Everyone looked towards Duke Fullmoon’s VIP Suite, many of them sympathizing with him.

“This damned madman!” Duke Fullmoon gripped his fists together as if he were crushing something in his palm. As Lin Ming thought, his total wealth did exceed 2 billion, but he had other uses for it. If he were to spend it all on the Violet Gold Spear then he would really lose everything.

“1.99 billion going once!” Song Wen began to count down. Even the worldly and sophisticated Song Wen really thought that Lin Ming wanted to buy the Violet Gold Spear. In truth, he was also rooting for Lin Ming because Lin Ming was a part of their Divine Runic Masters Guild. But as the auctioneer, he needed to follow rules and make sure each countdown lasted for at least five breaths of time.

“1.99 billion going twice…”

Song Wen trailed off.

At this time, a somber voice sounded out from Duke Fullmoon’s room.

“Two… billion…”

In shouting out this price, Duke Fullmoon seemed to have exhausted the last dregs of his strength. For this spear he had really used up everything!

However, when comparing spending all his money to losing the Violet Gold Spear, losing the Violet Gold Spear was absolutely a greater attack on Duke Fullmoon. He could slowly save up his wealth but if he missed out on obtaining the best result he could in the final trial, that would have a direct effect on Duke Fullmoon's strength and future.

Hearing Duke Fullmoon shout out this price, Lin Ming grinned. In this battle between Lin Ming and Duke Fullmoon to see who could con the other, Lin Ming had thoroughly won.

This was not because Lin Ming was smarter than Duke Fullmoon, but because Lin Ming accurately predicted that Duke Fullmoon had to obtain this Violet Gold Spear no matter what, while not needing the nameless ancient pill.

As for Duke Fullmoon, he only knew that Lin Ming needed the nameless ancient pill; he didn't know that Lin Ming didn't have any interest in winning the Violet Gold Spear.

Thus, Duke Fullmoon was doomed to be the one cruelly swindled by Lin Ming.

At this time, a woman's voice echoed out in Lin Ming's ear. "Sir Lin, he really did bid 2 billion. If you wish to bid further I can lend you some more points..."

This was Suya's sound transmission. After Lin Ming had revealed himself to the public he didn't reactivate the isolating array formations around his room, so it was easy for Suya's voice to penetrate into his quarters.

Lin Ming smiled. "No need. I never planned on buying the Violet Gold Spear to begin with. 2 billion points should be the limit. If I bid again then Fullmoon really might give up."

After the dust settled, Lin Ming had no need to hide anything from Suya. From start to finish, his voice remained calm throughout, as if he hadn't been in a dramatic auction that involved 2 billion points but was only playing a little numbers game.

Suya nearly choked on herself as she heard Lin Ming's response. After being stunned for a long period of time, the normally elegant Suya lost her demeanor and stammered out, "You... you... you are trying to trick Duke Fullmoon!?"

She didn’t dare to believe that Lin Ming would make a bluff of 1.99 billion points just for tricking someone! Wasn’t he afraid that Duke Fullmoon wouldn’t follow him? But, the reality was that Duke Fullmoon had fallen for the bait and had been thoroughly ruined by Lin Ming.

In addition, Suya also felt a tad aggrieved. She had withstood a tremendous deal of pressure to lend a billion points that Lin Ming actually didn’t need.

Hearing Suya’s awkward reaction, Lin Ming chuckled. “I apologize Miss Suya. I didn’t anticipate that Duke Fullmoon’s response would be so intense that he would actually label me a bid manipulator and even involve you in the mess. But since things already happened, I figured I might as well continue until the end.

As Lin Ming spoke, Suya actually laughed. She had no idea why she was laughing but she continued laughing for a long period of time. Then, she blinked her eyes and said, “Is this considered you owing me a favor?”

“Uh…” Lin Ming’s froze. “If Miss Suya needs help in the future, then I will surely help as long as it is within my ability to do so.”

At this time, Song Wen had already counted to three. The Violet Gold Spear was successfully won by Duke Fullmoon!

Hearing Song Wen announce the end of the auction, Duke Fullmoon let out a long breath of relief, feeling weak throughout his body.

This was a purchase that involved a massive amount of his total wealth!

But in the end, he had been the one to win!

He shakily stood up, slowly wandering towards the windows and looking out in the direction Lin Ming was in. Lin Ming seemed to sense this and looked towards Duke Fullmoon.

In contrast to each other, Duke Fullmoon was the victor. Although it was a bitter and hard fought victory, he was still the one who won. He wanted to temporarily suppress the pain in his heart and put on a victorious pose.

But just as Duke Fullmoon was almost prepared to smile, the touch of a smile froze on his face.

He saw Xiao Moxian appear from behind Lin Ming. Compared to the relatively indifferent expression on Lin Ming's face, Xiao Moxian was giggling as if she could barely contain her mirth.

Her two shiny canines, beneath the lights of the magic arrays, shimmered like diamonds.

This caused a bad premonition to rise within Duke Fullmoon's heart!

Xiao Moxian's smile was filled with an unmistakable taunting, as if she were laughing at an idiot.

Then, Duke Fullmoon saw Xiao Moxian's cherry red lips move as she uttered words. Even though she was silent, with Duke Fullmoon's eyesight he was able to clearly read her lips.

She was saying, "You stupid dead fly, congratulations for spending 2 billion points on an inferior item with defective runes. If you need to fix the Heavenly Dao patterns in the future, then our Lin Ming will surely be willing to help you. The fee isn't too expensive and we'll make sure that you are satisfied with the service!"

Listening to these words, Duke Fullmoon felt his blood bubbling within him. His mind was overcome with a daze as he nearly fell over!

"Defective!?"

Duke Fullmoon didn't believe Xiao Moxian's words. The Violet Gold Spear was already confirmed to be an Empyrean spirit treasure. How could the weapon that an Empyrean spent so much time and effort to raise be a defective item!?

However, whether or not Xiao Moxian's words were true, Duke Fullmoon had almost affirmed that Lin Ming never wanted to buy this Violet Gold Spear to begin with. He had simply been tricked!

Realizing this point, a brilliant killing intent burst out from Duke Fullmoon's eyes. However, standing not too far away from the increasingly gloomy Duke Fullmoon, Xiao Moxian was smiling, extremely happy and pleased with herself.

Lin Ming reluctantly pulled on Xiao Moxian's hand and simultaneously activated the room's isolating array formation, cutting off the murderous gaze of World King Fullmoon.

He used his finger to tap on Xiao Moxian's nose, jokingly saying, "You really are too childish, are you not happy unless you tell him off? Well this is enough for now. He was a mad dog originally and now he's been upgraded to a crazy wolf."

Although Lin Ming's words seemed as if he were admonishing Xiao Moxian, his smile clearly indicated he wasn't scared of Duke Fullmoon's revenge.

In the past when Lin Ming was only a small figure at the Houtian realm, he had caused Xuan Wuji, the ruler of the South Sea Demon Region, to vomit blood in anger. Afterwards when he was at the Life Destruction realm he had been targeted by Yang Yun. Even when he flew up to the Divine Realm he had ruined the Great World King Tian Mingzi's hand at the Divine Sea realm.

All of the opponents Lin Ming offended in the past had been far more powerful than he had been. And, these people had all been slowly killed off using various methods.

Now that Lin Ming faced Duke Fullmoon who he wasn't much weaker than, he simply didn't care at all.

After being 'admonished' by Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian only laughed out loud once more. She clucked her tongue and said, "Hey, if we didn't tell that big head what happened then how would he be angry at us? Otherwise, that idiot might have thought he profited here."

The auction continued on. Lin Ming closed his eyes in meditation. Following this, there weren't any items able to arouse his interest.

The last auction item for this first round of the auction event was a set of Empyrean spirit treasure flying swords.

Empyrean spirit treasures were rare, and a complete set of Empyrean spirit treasures was even rarer.

This set of flying swords had a total of seven swords and was bought at a final price of 2.8 billion by three Great World Kings working together. Compared to the Violet Gold Spear, this wasn't much more expensive. This caused Duke Fullmoon to be even angrier at what happened.

Like this, the first round of the auctions ended. From start to finish, the two Empyreans hadn't bid on anything at all. It was clear that none of these treasures were able to arouse their interest. The most valuable items of the first auction round had been Empyrean spirit treasures and pills. Even that final set of flying swords wasn't too tempting to an Empyrean. What an Empyrean was mostly interested in was rare and precious materials and heavenly treasures.

After the first round of the auctions ended, Lin Ming found Song Wen and requested that he place the Heavenly Fire Symbols up for auction.

To sell promissory notes, if it were an ordinary person who suggested this, Song Wen would have already told him to screw off to the far edges of the world.

But Lin Ming was different. He had considerable status in the Divine Runic Masters Guild and everyone could see that he had an extremely bright future awaiting him. It was possible that he might even become the next president of the Divine Runic Masters Guild!

Towards this type of person, Song Wen could only give them a little leeway. Moreover, the Heavenly Fire Symbols that Lin Ming put forth were apprised by several divine runic masters, and when it came to the runic patterns within, they could only sigh as they didn't understand many parts of it. Without a doubt, the Heavenly Fire Symbols that Lin Ming took out were extraordinary.

After combining all of this together, Song Wen finally reluctantly agreed to allow Lin Ming to auction off the 10 finished Heavenly Fire symbols. If the final price of them surpassed 40 million then he would allow Lin Ming to auction off promissory notes. This was to avoid everyone making a joke of Divine Rune City's auction.

And Song Wen had one final condition. This was that the promissory notes couldn't have a base price. In other words, the base price had to be zero!

Chapter 1636 – Test

Chapter 1636 – Test

…

…

…

To have a zero base price on promissory notes, the truth was that Divine Rune City didn't want the associated infamy. The general meaning of it was that all transactions for this auction were completely voluntary. The base price would be set to zero and whoever wanted to bid could bid whatever they wanted and the Divine Rune City Auction House would take on no responsibility for this matter.

Although the Divine Rune City Auction didn't publicize the auction of the 'promissory notes' and had no intention of doing so, they had still made it explicitly clear that the auction of the promissory notes would not take place if Lin Ming's 10 Heavenly Fire Symbols sold for less than 40 million. Even so, news of this auction still spread through the city!

Moreover, this news spread like wildfire!

Many martial artists and many influences learned that the Divine Rune City Auction, which was famed throughout the entire inner Asura Road for having anything up for sale as long as one had the money, was actually selling promissory notes.

Moreover, what left one dumbstruck was that the person selling these promissory notes was a Divine Lord realm junior who was less than a hundred years old!

And, this Divine Lord realm junior also didn't have any great influence backing him. He was nothing but a loner, and although there was said to be an amazing master standing behind him, this master had never appeared.

He had seemingly produced a mysterious divine runic symbol and was considerably well known in the world of divine runic arts. But outside of this small community, there hadn't been anyone who had heard of him.

If such a junior were to write down a promissory note and sell it, then others would definitely say that whoever bought this promissory note was an idiot.

If one could sell empty promises at an auction then they too would want to do the same!

They could write down a promissory note for 10 Empyrean spirit treasures, 10 transcendent divine pills, or even 100 seventh grade divine runic symbols, and would they be able to sell this note for 10 billion points?

Many other colleagues in the auction industry were waiting to have a good laugh at Divine Rune City Auction House's expense.

The business of auction houses was highly competitive. The more transactions an auction house had, the more sky high prices they could sell items for, then the more clients and bidders they could attract! Clients would always want to go to an auction house that would auction off their items at the highest price possible! There were many auction houses that could find buyers but not a source of goods!

Divine Rune City Auction House was extremely reputable and even if other auction houses worked together and hired a batch of bid manipulators, they still couldn't shake the iron-fisted monopoly that Divine Rune City Auction House held over the auction business. And now, these other auction houses were all waiting for the Divine Rune City Auction House to fail.

However, no matter what the news was or how many people were waiting to see this bumbling failure occur, the second round of the auctions began on time.

This time, there were even more bidders on the scene.

Many people heard about the sale of promissory notes and wanted to join in on this new experience.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had already entered the auction arena earlier. As they were about to enter their private room, Lin Ming could feel a swift and violent cold light shoot towards them. Lin Ming turned to see Duke Fullmoon appearing like a vengeful ghost in the windows of his VIP suite. The light inside his room was dark, causing Duke Fullmoon to look especially grim and ghostly.

“This stupid fly also came early. But he’s already gone bankrupt so what’s the point of putting on airs.” Xiao Moxian pouted her lips, speaking with disdain.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. “He’s also representing his sect to purchase items, so he likely still has many points in his hands.”

Lin Ming didn’t bother with Duke Fullmoon and went straight to his private room. As he flew up into the skies, many people were looking towards him. By this time, Lin Ming had already become famous!

Today, if he could sell the Heavenly Fire Symbols for at least 40 million then he would be able to accomplish the unprecedentedly magnificent feat of selling promissory notes. But if he sold the Heavenly Fire Symbols for less than 40 million he would become an utter joke.

The first item in the second round of the auctions was 10 zenith black level god runes.

Zenith black level god runes were necessary materials for crafting seventh grade divine runic symbols. There were even some peak sixth grade divine runic symbols that required zenith black level god runes. Thus, these 10 zenith black level god runes were in high demand. In the end, they were bought by a peak sixth grade divine runic master in the VIP suites.

Following that, all sorts of different items were sold. At the sixth auction, Song Wen calmly took out a jade box. After opening it, one could see 10 light and thin symbol papers within.

These were Lin Ming’s Heavenly Fire Symbols!

During the previous round of auctions, Lin Ming had taken out the Heavenly Fire Symbols once, thus many people were able to recognize what these 10 symbol papers were.

“It’s here! Haha, to sell promissory notes, I came today just to watch this event!”

“He’s been crazy after thinking of money too much; to think he actually dares to sell promissory notes!”

All of these words came from spies sent from other auction houses in the inner Asura Road. Now they mixed themselves into the crowds of bidders and their mission was to gather as much information as they could so they could later propagandize this ridiculous matter.

Towards these people beneath the arena stage that had ill intentions, Song Wen ignored them all. He indifferently said, “Ladies and gentleman, these are fifth grade divine runic symbols, Heavenly Fire Symbols produced by a young and rising talent of my Divine Runic Masters Guild. In the last round of auctions you all saw that these were not ordinary Heavenly Fire Symbols. These Heavenly Fire Symbols have undergone many improvements and their effects are far superior to normal. For these 10 Heavenly Fire Symbols, the base price is 20 million points and each increase cannot be any lower than one million points.”

Song Wen lightly spoke these words that had no persuasive power at all. Young and rising divine runic master, many improvements, effects far superior to normal, all of these words seemed untrustworthy to the audience.

And, the most absurd point was that these 10 fifth grade divine runic symbols were being sold for a total scam price of 20 million points!

Fifth grade divine runic symbols usually sold for tens of thousands, and buying 10 of them for a million points was already a tremendous loss. Yet, Song Wen listed the base price of these 10 divine runic symbols as 20 times that ridiculous price.

Setting up such a starting bid was simply a death wish. Many people were looking to see which idiot would bid on these.

However, Song Wen didn’t start the auction. Rather, he pressed some switch on the auction stage and with a loud rumbling sound, the entire auction stage was split apart as the ground sank in.

At the same time, a massive black altar slowly rose from the ground!

This black altar was an array formation!

Its use was to test the various characteristics, might, and attributes of a divine runic symbol.

In the Divine Rune City Auction House, sometimes there would be special divine runic symbols sold. At this time, these divine runic symbols would need to be tested in order to demonstrate the various aspects of a divine runic symbol.

Hu - !

With a powerful grinding noise, the array formation activated!

The entire altar was shrouded in a shimmering white light. A chubby old man with a white beard guffawed as he hopped onto the altar. This old man was no one else but Lin Ming’s old friend – Old Xue.

At this auction, Lin Ming specifically asked Old Xue to test the divine runic symbol!

Chapter 1637 – Heavenly Fire Symbol

Chapter 1637 – Heavenly Fire Symbol

…

…

…

Old Xue's appearance immediately attracted the gazes of everyone present.

"Who is that old man?" Most of the audience didn't know who Old Xue was.

"He is Elder Xue of the Divine Runic Masters Guild, a sixth grade divine runic master."

The reputation of a sixth grade divine runic master was irreproachable. To have a sixth grade divine runic master test a fifth grade divine runic symbol, this left everyone waiting for the results with wide eyes.

Although they didn't know if these fifth grade divine runic symbols could sell for tens of millions of points, if Lin Ming had dared take them out in this auction then they should be spectacular.

At this point, Song Wen took out a soul crystal and placed it in the eye of the testing array formation. In that instant the brilliant light around the altar became even more blazing, shooting up into the world like a column of evanescent light, scattering out everywhere.

The auction arena was extremely broad, but after the array formation on the auction stage activated, the dazzling light covered the entire auction hall arena!

This was a titanic illusory magic array. Once it started, every person within the auction hall arena would fall into the illusory magic array and would find it difficult to discern between reality and illusion.

Boom - !

The scenery in front of everyone suddenly changed.

What entered the eyes of everyone was an endless sea of green foliage that stretched to the furthest horizons.

They were surrounded by dense grass that brushed against the waist, vast and limitless.

Every guest in the auction house, including those in the ordinary rooms and VIP suites, instantly arrived in an ancient primal grassland!

Here, the scene was like the endless Great Desolate that parted the inner and outer Asura Road.

And within these grasslands, the earth began to tremble.

From far away, one could see massive forms appear on the horizon. These forms were like mountains as their vague figures solidified as they closed in.

Rumble rumble rumble!

As these giant monsters approached, the audience discovered they were all vicious beasts.

Their bodies were as heavy as mountains. Every time they stepped forwards the ground would shake like a beating drum, incomparably horrifying.

“That... that... that is a deep blue crystal beast. I heard that two Divine Lord squads from the Blue Lotus Holy Lands perished, and it was likely they encountered a deep blue crystal beast...”

"Seafall beast…"

"Mystic thunder beast…"

"That… that is a Golden Phoenix Crow… it is a variation God Beast that has existed since ancient times and is said to be able to contend with a Great World King and emit true essence heavenly flames…"

As each vicious beast appeared they were soon identified by the audience. With each new creature that arrived, the audience became increasingly pale. These vicious beasts were all found within the Great Desolate!

In particular, the giant Golden Phoenix Crow whose wings blocked out half the sky. As the audience saw this beast, their complexions became even uglier.

Although everyone was well aware that these vicious beasts were only phantoms produced in the illusory magic array, each one of these phantom beasts had extraordinary strengths.

Each bidder was able to clearly perceive the aura of these vicious beasts. They could judge that these vicious beasts were not superficial fakes. Rather, by relying on the accurate simulation of the large-scale array formation, the defensive powers of these vicious beasts were almost the same as in reality.

"Elder Xue, please test the divine runic symbol." Song Wen was a bit surprised as he saw that Elder Xue had stepped forth to test the divine runic symbol. To ask a divine runic master like Elder Xue to personally test his creation, Lin Ming must be confident in his works.

Elder Xue nodded and happily took a divine runic symbol from Lin Ming who had already flown down from his room. He asked, "Before the test begins, are there any special instructions you need to tell me?"

Lin Ming thought for a moment and said, “During the test it’s best to be careful. When the input of power reaches through the 2320th tiny rune, increase the flow of energy. The effect will be much better.”

“2320th tiny rune?” Elder Xue was startled. After a brief pause he nodded.

Standing on the side, Song Wen’s complexion immediately changed. Although he didn’t understand how to draw up divine runic symbols himself, he was still the president of the Runic Pill Trading Organization. Even if he had never eaten pork meat before he would still know how a pig ran.

He had seen sixth grade divine runic symbols before, and the average peak sixth grade divine runic symbol would have around 1500 tiny runes, yet this mere fifth grade divine runic symbol had over 2000 tiny runes?

It seemed this Heavenly Fire Symbol was well worth anticipating.

However, the spies that came from other auction houses, as long as they understood even a little about divine runic arts, were surprised by Lin Ming’s words. Shadow Overflow frowned. This brat, the divine runic symbols he drew up were always so ridiculous!

“I want to take a good look and see just what sort of effect a divine runic symbol with so many tiny runes will have!”

Judging the value of a divine runic symbol, especially an extraordinary divine runic symbol, was an extremely complex and burdensome process.

The average person only knew whether a divine runic symbol was strong or weak, and that was by looking at its grade. But when looking at those especially amazing divine runic symbols that had special effects, although the grade of the divine runic symbol was important, it wasn’t the most important factor.

The reason that Elder Xue agreed to help Lin Ming and test out his divine runic symbol was the shockingly special Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol that Lin Ming produced before. He wanted to see what was so special about this new divine runic symbol.

Like an entertainer preparing his show, Elder Xue began to take out all sorts of strange magic tools and array discs in front of everyone.

One of these magic tools was a set of black gloves, knit with mysterious silken threads.

“I shall begin.” Elder Xue nodded towards Lin Ming.

As Song Wen heard this he drew some circles in the air. Then, ripples began to appear in the void.

Thick and viscous bubbles surrounded everyone, covering them within.

The reason for this was that there was always some risk that came with testing a divine runic symbol. As the auctioneer here, Song Wen had to minimize all chances of an accident occurring as much as possible.

Once all the preparations were complete, Elder Xue no longer bothered with the others. He completely immersed his mind into the fifth grade divine runic symbol in his hands, carefully filling it with his energy.

Looking in from the side, as Lin Ming saw Old Xue earnestly testing his divine runic symbol, he felt a bit unsure in his heart. Although he was confident in the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol that he created, the true might and value of it would depend on the actual results of this test.

Everyone’s eyes focused on Elder Xue’s body, all of them waiting with breath abated.

They were all aware that if this test wasn’t a joke, then they would be witnesses to the birth of a miracle.

As Elder Xue was inputting his energy into the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol, his complexion began to gradually become more dignified over time. After such a long period of time, there was actually no movement from the Heavenly Fire Symbol!

Shadow Overflow grinned a gloating smile. Smelly brat, this time it was his turn to suffer…

But that gloating smile soon froze on his face. Deep in concentration, Elder Xue flicked a finger upon the divine runic symbol, seeming as if he were pulling out a string. Then, a blazing red trail of fire rushed out from the divine runic symbol.

This power of fire flew in the skies like a phoenix, a beautiful vision in the air. Suddenly, the surrounding space seemed to bubble up like boiling water.

Shadow Overflow felt that something wasn't right. At this time, five of the giant vicious beasts that Song Wen created suddenly started rushing towards Elder Xue together.

"Deep blue crystal beast, bone devouring beast… these are all peak Holy Lord level beasts, even beasts that approach a World King. With these several vicious beasts together, even an ordinary World King would feel fear!"

As the vicious beasts wildly rampaged forwards, the entire audience could feel a dreadful pressure. Even if they knew these vicious beasts were formed by the illusory magic array, their aura was still horrifying.

This was also the fierceness of an auction house's array formation. This array formation could be called the most realistic simulation testing array within the entire inner Asura Road.

At this time, a brilliant light exploded from Elder Xue's eyes. The Heavenly Fire Symbol in his hand suddenly scattered out. With a loud rumbling sound, a pillar of flames shot into the skies, forming a mushroom cloud as a sea of flames surged out in all directions.

As a vicious beast broke into the midst of these flames, it suddenly emitted a miserable howl.

Another pained howl sounded out from a different direction. Everyone turned towards this cry. As their eyes focused on what was happening, all they saw was a column of flames shoot straight into the sky.

Under the watchful gaze of everyone, the vicious beasts that seemed as if they could tear open the heavens were drowned in this sea of raging flames. At a speed visible to the eyes, these vicious beasts were slowly charred into a pile of skeletons.

The people looking on were panic-stricken. For a time, the entire arena was left silent, without a single word spoken.

The only sound was the tumbling waves of flames burning in the distance. Even the earth below was melted away into shining lava, shimmering like metal.

It was like an apocalypse of heavenly flames had descended from above.

Shadow Overflow's eyes nearly popped out of his sockets. Even a lofty and conceited dark divine runic master like himself, one of the giants of the dark world, was shocked by this scene.

"This... is this really the might of Lin Ming's fifth grade Heavenly Fire Symbol?" He clenched his fists together. After the shock passed, an unexpected surge of bitterness and jealousy filled his heart... he feared that even a medium sixth grade Heavenly Fire Symbol might not possess such might!

A sixth grade Heavenly Fire Symbol was one produced by a World King! A peak sixth grade divine runic symbol was one created by a Great World King and could be used to contend with Great World King enemies!

Xiao Moxian also gripped her fists tightly, her smile as beautiful as a fire. Her cute canines glittered beneath the light of the raging flames. With this, all of the worries in her heart disappeared, replaced with nothing but pride. As she looked at Lin Ming with both eyes, her eyes shined like little stars.

After some time, the shocked people began to regain their composure.

But, before they could say anything, a deafening phoenix cry filled the air.

Everyone was stunned once again. Above them, the skies suddenly turned overcast, dimming down to shadows.

They looked up and nearly cried out. The hell!? That Golden Phoenix Crow couldn't resist waiting and was rushing out!

Seeing the Golden Phoenix Crow diving downwards, many people paled from fear.

Then, another strange sound caught everyone's attention.

They saw the raging sea of flames that scorched those five vicious beasts to nothing begin to stir up once more. The flames wildly burned, revitalized with new life as they began to swallow all of the power of fire from within a hundred miles.

Every pillar of flames danced like flame phoenixes in the skies, their strength amazing.

Within this cataclysmic crimson sea, a brilliant runic symbol shined like a star from within the center of the seething flames.

This was the fifth grade Heavenly Fire Symbol that had just been used!

The Heavenly Fire Symbol actually reformed itself!

"This… this powerful Heavenly Fire Symbol… can actually reform itself and be reused!" At this time, even Elder Xue who was responsible for the test couldn't help but cry out in praise.

Chapter 1638 – Fire Symbol Reborn

Chapter 1638 – Fire Symbol Reborn

…

…

…

Old Xue could clearly feel that the newly reformed Heavenly Fire Symbol contained an even more terrifying strength!

Before this, Old Xue hadn't discussed matters with Lin Ming so he didn't know what revisions Lin Ming had done to this divine runic symbol. What he wanted was to experience a pleasant surprise during this test, thus Old Xue had agreed to test this completely unfamiliar Heavenly Fire Symbol.

Old Xue had originally seen the miraculous might of this Heavenly Fire Symbol and thought this was the change that Lin Ming had made. And that with such an abnormal increase in its strength, it was impossible to increase the number of times it could be used.

He never thought that Lin Ming could modify two aspects of the divine runic symbol; this was extremely abnormal!

The surrounding audience also saw the Heavenly Fire Symbol reform itself in Elder Xue's hand. They weren't able to respond for some time. In their eyes, a divine runic symbol was a one-time use item. As for the divine runic symbol in Elder Xue's hand, it was just something that had a similar appearance.

For instance, there were some one-time use array discs. After these array discs were used they wouldn't shatter but everything within would be destroyed, leaving it as nothing but an ornament.

As everyone was thinking this, from high up in the sky, that Golden Phoenix Crow could clearly feel the threat of the burning hot flames beneath it. It was different from those other vicious beasts; this Golden Phoenix Crow was a master in manipulating fire energy.

With a cry that refused to admit inferiority, the wings of the Golden Phoenix Crow erupted in flames as it went hurtling downwards.

Old Xue laughed. He poured his energy into the Heavenly Fire Symbol that had just experienced a nirvanic rebirth, quickly galvanizing the 2000 plus tiny runes!

In that moment, the divine runic symbol emitted a blinding light!

Beneath the stunned gaze of everyone, the already used Heavenly Fire Symbol evaporated once more in a hundred-foot high sea of raging flames!

Within these flames, there seemed to be a phoenix being reborn. Its body was surrounded by flames hot enough to melt divine gold, and with a resonant cry it swept towards that Golden Phoenix Crow.

Bang!

The two divine birds formed from the extremes of the power of fire violently crashed into each other, both leaving a burning red tunnel in their wake.

A massive shockwave erupted out from where the two divine birds crashed and spread out through the world. In the aftermath, waves of flames struck the ground, creating tyrannical flame tornados like red dragons shooting to the heavens.

Finally, the collision between the Golden Phoenix Crow and the Heavenly Fire Symbol became increasingly intense, forming a sea of flames around them.

But at this time, in this desperate battle the Heavenly Fire Symbol was able to incredibly swallow the power of fire, growing larger and larger, becoming increasingly solid as it dripped lava from its body.

In the increasingly lopsided battle, the power of fire was being rapidly drained and annihilated from the Golden Phoenix Crow's body…

Bang!

With another loud explosion, the most dense power of fire around the Heavenly Fire Symbol formed into a flaming meteor that viciously smashed into the Golden Phoenix Crow.

The Golden Phoenix Crow was a fire-attribute vicious bird beast and yet at this moment a gaping hole was formed in its body. With a devastating cry it flapped its massive wings, whipping up a hurricane as it fled to the heavens.

As everyone saw this, all of them were left petrified. The Golden Phoenix Crow with strength comparable to a World King was actually severely wounded by a peak fifth grade Heavenly Fire Symbol!

In other words, this Heavenly Fire Symbol could threaten the life of a World King!

"The newly reborn Heavenly Fire Symbol can display a strength even greater than the first time!" Elder Xue was astonished. Although he had great hopes for Lin Ming's Heavenly Fire Symbol, these hopes had now become a great surprise that far surpassed his imagination.

And in fact, when Lin Ming created these Heavenly Fire Symbols he had used Xiao Moxian's nirvanic flames, joining the rules of a phoenix nirvana into the Heavenly Fire Symbol itself. After many rounds of experimentation, he had finally been successful!

A phoenix went through nine nirvanas, becoming more powerful after each one. Similarly, this Heavenly Fire Symbol would become stronger after every use! Of course, it was impossible for the increase in power to be as terrifying as that of a true phoenix's nirvana.

For a time, the entire auction arena was left in utter silence. Everyone's eyes were wide open and their throats twitched.

Completely forgetting the amazing fact that this peak fifth grade Heavenly Fire Symbol could severely wound a World King spirit bird, just the fact that it could be used at least two times was more than enough to leave everyone dumbfounded!

Moreover, the second use was even stronger than the first!

As everyone was at a loss for words, at this time the flames howled in the skies once more as they gathered together. Countless Asura Heavenly Dao lines danced in the center of the flames. Within several breaths of time, these flames reformed into a divine runic symbol!

This divine runic symbol lightly fell into Elder Xue's hand.

"What!? It fused back again!?"

"There's even a third time!!"

The bidders present were all greatly experienced individuals. But yet, today's Heavenly Fire Symbol completely surpassed their comprehension, upending everything they knew.

This caused their minds to shake and to be left utterly speechless!

"This Heavenly Fire Symbol… how many times can it be used?"

Many people realized that if the Heavenly Fire Symbol could reform a third time, then perhaps it might even be able to reform a fourth or fifth time!

For a time, the eyes of everyone in the audience were focused on Lin Ming!

Elder Xue let out a heavy breath and said, "Hey brat, be honest with me, how many times can this Heavenly Fire Symbol be used? Don't tell me that it's over ten or even dozens of times…"

Elder Xue joked. This Heavenly Fire Symbol was vastly different from the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol; the amount of energy consumed was far too great. If it were able to be used several times then that would truly be heaven-defying.

Lin Ming stood at the balcony of his room and chuckled, “Elder Xue, you’re being a bit too dramatic here, how could it possibly be used that many times? The Heavenly Fire Symbol I drew up contains the fires of a phoenix nirvana. My original intention was to copy the nirvana of a phoenix and have it be reborn nine times in a sea of flames! However, it’s a pity that my skills are too crude so I was only able to reach six or seven times in the end. If someone who doesn’t understand the divine runic arts were to use this divine runic symbol then they might not even be able to use it six or seven times but only five times. And, according to the user’s cultivation, every one or two times they use it they must resupply it with energy.”

Lin Ming shook his head, as if he were feeling regretful he couldn’t perfectly fuse the rules of a phoenix’s nine nirvanas into the Heavenly Fire Symbol.

However, Lin Ming’s regretful tone and motions left everyone speechless. If this was called crude skills then how could anyone still live?

“Smelly brat, you calling your own skills crude is the same as slapping me in the face!” Old Xue mockingly scolded. Seeing Lin Ming awkwardly cough and about to apologize, Old Xue waved his hands and said, “It’s fine, I don’t need you to pretend to apologize. Speak honestly. This Heavenly Fire Symbol, after being used, will it be stronger the next time?”

Let alone Old Xue, everyone in the audience realized this point.

Everyone’s ears pricked up as they leaned forwards to listen to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming nodded. “Yes, just like a phoenix going through their nirvana, every time the symbol is reborn it will be stronger. At the last use, the Heavenly Fire Symbol’s potency will increase just less than 30%. This is enough to cause severe wounds to a World King but a Great World King won’t be threatened at all.”

Lin Ming had only produced a peak fifth grade divine runic symbol. In order to severely wound a Great World King, that would require a peak sixth grade divine runic symbol. With

Lin Ming's current strength, he was still far from being able to contend with a Great World King.

After listening to Lin Ming explain all the different characteristics of the Heavenly Fire Symbol, the entire arena was left silent except for the occasional gulp.

Even Song Wen who had seen countless treasures before was shocked. He looked towards Lin Ming with respect in his eyes. With his status and age, he had never looked towards a junior with these eyes before.

"Junior-apprentice Sister... I was a fool. Looking at the might of this Heavenly Fire Symbol it would have been well worth it to lend Lin Ming a billion points! My mouth was too greedy!" Suya's senior-apprentice brother gripped his fists as he recovered from his daze.

If he hadn't prevented Suya from lending a billion points just now then he would have gained a massive advantage from that investment.

In the end, the whole lending scene had been nothing but an act. Although Lin Ming hadn't lost anything, it was not the same as honestly placing his bet on Lin Ming. As Suya's senior-apprentice brother thought of this, he regretted his decision until his intestines turned blue. A rare opportunity was placed right in front of them and yet he had been unable to take hold of it. From this moment on, it was likely that Lin Ming would rely on the fame of this Heavenly Fire Symbol to become even more famous. At that time, wanting to win him over would be vastly more difficult.

"It's no problem. Although it was only an act, Lin Ming promised he would help me." Suya faintly smiled, not blaming her senior-apprentice brother. Her senior-apprentice brother's reaction had been perfectly rational and was the way things should normally have been done.

As some rejoiced, others despaired. In another VIP suite, Duke Fullmoon and Shadow Overflow's two faces were as black as the bottom of a pot!

They were waiting to see Lin Ming make a joke of himself, but the end was that he had created a miracle!

The power of this Heavenly Fire Symbol was countless times greater than the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol!

“This sort of divine runic symbol, how could it be transformed to such a degree!?” Duke Fullmoon gnashed his teeth. Beside him, Shadow Overflow remained silent. What was there to say? Anything he said right now would be nothing but an incoherent mass. In the Asura Road world, there was actually a fifth grade divine runic symbol that was able to stir up so much attention; this far surpassed his imagination.

From just the power alone, this fifth grade divine runic symbol surpassed the strength of a general sixth grade divine runic symbol!

This Lin Ming was truly a monstrously talented freak of the divine runic arts!

After the entire auction hall arena fell silent for half an incense stick of time, many people began to develop greedy thoughts. All of them were waiting for the auction of the divine runic symbols to begin!

It had to be known that if a fifth grade divine runic symbol had the strength of a medium sixth grade divine runic symbol, then its strength far surpassed that of a sixth grade divine runic symbol!

A general sixth grade divine runic symbol required one to be at least a half-step World King to use. And in order to display its full strength, one would need to be a true World King.

But a peak fifth grade divine runic symbol was different. A peak Holy Lord could display its strongest might!

In other words, this sort of divine runic symbol would give a peak Holy Lord powerhouse the capital to survive in the face of a World King!

If an enemy possessed a power that was able to severely wound someone, then even if that power could only be used once in a short period of time, that person would have to carefully weigh whether it was worth it to continue attacking.

This difference in the restrictions for the Heavenly Fire Symbol caused its value to rise several times over!

Chapter 1639 – Doubts

Chapter 1639 – Doubts

…

…

…

At this time, the entire auction was stirred into a frenzy!

Many people stretched out their necks, waiting for the sale of the Heavenly Fire Symbol to begin!

“How come it hasn’t started? I have to buy a Heavenly Fire Symbol no matter what today!” A peak Holy Lord martial artist secretly swore to himself as he gripped his fists. He had a half-step World King blood enemy. If he had this Heavenly Fire Symbol then he would have the capital to take revenge!

It wasn’t just him who had this idea, but many others in the audience. At this time, many people who had mocked Lin Ming’s fifth grade Heavenly Fire Symbols before were now eagerly waiting to buy one of them.

There was also another group of people that were hoping to buy these fifth grade divine runic symbols and then gather a team of researchers to unravel them. If they could somehow encounter a stroke of luck and crack open its secrets then that would be worth a massive amount of wealth!

Of course, if they knew the fate that had befallen Shadow Overflow, they might not have had such thoughts.

Everyone had different thoughts, but without exception all of them were looking forwards to the auction of the Heavenly Fire Symbol, a look of hope and greed in their eyes. At the same time, the suspicious and derisive color in their eyes had transformed into respect.

The Asura Road was a world that revered the strong. If one displayed a mighty enough performance, a shocking enough performance, then one could earn sufficient respect.

This was the fairest law of all.

Song Wen was happy to see such powerful divine runic symbols. But, he also didn't forget what his responsibilities were.

"Elder Xue, can you judge the value of Sir Lin Ming's fifth grade divine runic symbols?"

Everyone calmed down, all of their eyes focusing on Elder Xue.

No matter how powerful this fifth grade divine runic symbol was, the main purpose of this test was to evaluate its price.

Elder Xue thought for a moment. Then, he slowly said, "The potency is equal to a medium sixth grade divine runic symbol, but when factoring in its ability to rebirth itself as well as the lowered requirements for maximum use, its value far outstrips that of a normal sixth grade divine runic symbol by several dozen times. There has never been a similar case before this so it is hard for me to put forth an accurate value. That will be something that must be determined through the auction..."

"Dozens of times over a sixth grade divine runic symbol!?" Someone gasped, their voice shaking. If this were true then many people present wouldn't be able to afford it!

Song Wen faintly smiled. He swept his eyes over the impatient bidders. Seeing the desire thick in their eyes, Song Wen had already begun planning in advance.

He struck his auctioneer mallet on the podium and then stretched out his words as he said, “Sir Lin, our Runic Pill Trading Organization will purchase your 10 Heavenly Fire Symbols! As for the price, that can be discussed later…”

As Song Wen spoke, the entire arena hall was left stunned!

Even Lin Ming was startled. He thought that Song Wen was going to continue with the auction of the 10 Heavenly Fire Symbols, but he never thought that the Divine Runic Masters Guild would want to buy them up instead!

What was the meaning of this?

Could it be that the Divine Runic Masters Guild wanted to buy these Heavenly Fire Symbols to study and collect them?

Lin Ming didn’t believe that the Divine Runic Masters Guild, with its countless masters, needed to use these 10 Heavenly Fire Symbols to fight off some enemy force. Moreover, without an auction it would be difficult to set an appropriate price. After all, this was the first time this sort of Heavenly Fire Symbol had ever appeared so it was impossible to set a base price; everything would have to be determined by the market.

But as Song Wen finished speaking, the arena hall actually exploded in rage!

“Are you joking with us!? You had us watch this scene for half a day and now you aren’t selling them!?”

“You motherfucker, I am going to buy a Heavenly Fire Symbol no matter what, so what is the meaning of your Divine Runic Masters Guild buying anything!?”

“You had us watch this show and then came up with these tricks at the end, it's as if you think we are monkeys!”

Many of the martial artists present were rough desperados. After being stunned by Song Wen's words, they became livid with anger! Martial artists often had short and explosive tempers. Once Song Wen lost control of the scene, this would not be a joke.

However, Song Wen remained calm and composed as he faced this scene. He faintly smiled and said, "Please be patient everyone. I am not saying that there won't be any sold, only that these 10 finished divine runic symbols will not be sold. Didn't we say that there would be a sale of promissory notes? Those can be exchanged for the improved Heavenly Fire Symbols produced by Lin Ming. If any of you wish to purchase in advance then you may bid during the auction for them."

What? The auction for promissory notes would begin like this!?

Many of those present were apoplectic with rage, feeling as if all of their blood was rushing to their head! The completed divine runic symbols wouldn't be sold but the promissory notes would! They all had the impulse to rush up the auction stage and punch Song Wen in the face!

However, this was a seller's market and there was only one place to purchase these divine runic symbols, nowhere else. Even if the Divine Runic Masters Guild played this dirty trick and only sold promissory notes, everyone could only eat their dissatisfaction.

Seeing the audience's reaction, Xiao Moxian's heart blossomed with joy.

"Hehe, look at those snobby fellows who dared to look down on my Big Brother Lin. Now there's nothing to sell to them and they can only pay in advance before receiving anything! This feels great!"

Seeing everyone's resentful expressions, Xiao Moxian couldn't help but gloat a little.

And standing near Xiao Moxian, Lin Ming naturally didn't have these playful thoughts. Rather, he looked towards Song Wen, trying to figure out what his intentions were.

The more he thought, the more Lin Ming couldn't help but praise in his heart. This was truly a skillful move!

If those 10 completed Heavenly Fire Symbols were sold at the start, then because the quantity was too low, the ones buying them would mostly be peak Holy Lord martial artists.

These people would buy them for their personal use. Because they didn't have much wealth, the price wouldn't be too high.

And once they bought them, this would set an approximate base price for Lin Ming's Heavenly Fire Symbols.

Following that, it would be difficult for the auction of the Heavenly Fire Symbols promissory notes to surpass this price.

This was because in everyone's hearts, buying the finished product should definitely be more expensive. As for selling promissory notes, they would be cheaper. After all, this was the risk one paid for promissory notes!

Thus, the sale of these 10 complete divine runic symbols would inevitably affect the auction of the promissory notes. Once an approximate price was formed in everyone's mind, it would be impossible to sell for a sky-high price. It had to be known that these promissory notes would form the bulk of Lin Ming's income, and having such a situation would cause him to suffer a great deal!

On the other hand, if the promissory notes were sold first and not the completed ones, then the promissory notes would sell for a great deal. This was the so-called hunger marketing strategy.

Even though this was a simple matter, Lin Ming could sense how crafty and intelligent Song Wen's decision was. No wonder the Divine Runic Masters Guild would allow Song Wen, someone who wasn't a divine runic master and who also had a low cultivation, to become the president of the Runic Pill Trading Organization.

“Everyone, let us begin the auction of Sir Lin’s promissory notes. These promissory notes will be guaranteed with the reputation of my Divine Runic Masters Guild. Sir Lin, how many Heavenly Fire Symbols do you plan on selling in advance?”

Song Wen slyly smiled as he faced Lin Ming. Facing the disdainful eyes of the crowd, Song Wen turned a blind eye to them all, and in fact became even more confident of himself. The main purpose of this treasure fair was to earn money. As the president of the Runic Pill Trading Organization, he had to place the duty of making money as his top priority.

As for others looking down on him and cursing him in their hearts, he didn’t bother caring at all.

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes. He thought about the amount for the moment and then said to Song Wen, “First sell 500. I will place a soul mark on a divine runic symbol as a promise of debt and when the time comes the person can exchange this divine runic symbol for the promised goods.”

Lin Ming’s voice wasn’t loud, but his words spread to everyone in the audience.

500 promissory notes?

Everyone was stunned. Just how many points was this!?

This motherfucker, wasn’t he earning points too easily!?

Moreover, if this concerned 500 promissory notes, then the final price would involve hundreds of millions and billions of points! This caused many people to almost faint from anger!

If Lin Ming had said these words not too long ago then he would have been called an idiot by everyone. But the current situation was different. After going through the testing array formation, everyone was able to see just how powerful this fifth grade Heavenly Fire Symbol was!

A fifth grade Heavenly Fire Symbol was able to severely wound a World King level vicious beast. If such a thing were placed in a battlefield and used en masse…

Thinking of this, some people began to stream with a cold sweat.

Such powerful divine runic symbols… if an influence were to possess these items then they would absolutely be weapons that could change the tide of a war. And the most important point was that these fifth grade Heavenly Fire Symbols had to be grasped in their hands; they absolutely could not allow enemy forces to obtain them!

Many people realized this point. But… with such a large transaction and also buying only promissory notes… many people were lacking the confidence to bid on them!

What if they couldn't cash them in later?

This was not a small amount. Even an Empyrean Holy Land had to mull over this massive wholesale trade!

As everyone was feeling faint of heart and wavering between bidding or not, a black-cloaked old man flew out like a ghost from the VIP suites.

His long robes trailed behind him as he flew high into the skies above the arena hall. His entire body was covered in a thick black fog, hiding his appearance.

He was Shadow Overflow!

Shadow Overflow's appearance caused Lin Ming to frown. Although he didn't know who Shadow Overflow was, he knew that this fellow was the old man who always followed behind Duke Fullmoon and was extremely hostile to him.

Shadow Overflow's appearance attracted everyone's eyes.

Beneath his voluminous black cloak, Shadow Overflow's lips moved. His hoarse throat began to squeeze out words, "I acknowledge that the might of these Heavenly Fire Symbols is unparalleled! But because this is a massive transaction that has no real items and only promissory notes, I have my suspicions… do these Heavenly Fire Symbols originate from your hands?”

Shadow Overflow’s words were forceful and menacing. As he looked at Lin Ming, the air between them turned cold!

As this was said, many bidders frowned. They also had these doubts in their hearts. In truth, many of them also thought of this. They thought that these Heavenly Fire symbols were not drawn by Lin Ming but were obtained by him from some mystic realm, or, perhaps they were inherited and there were only these 10 and no others.

If so, then these promissory notes written by Lin Ming were nothing but pieces of scrap paper! As for the guarantee of the Divine Runic Masters Guild, so what?

In truth, what Shadow Overflow was really saying was that he found this entire situation hard to accept. A young junior like Lin Ming had actually demolished him when it came to the divine runic arts!

Not only did Shadow Overflow think this, but many other people skilled in the divine runic arts found it hard to believe that Lin Ming could have such attainments in the divine runic arts. It was simply unreasonable!

The appearance of the black-cloaked man didn’t surprise Lin Ming. Even if the black-cloaked man didn’t appear, there would be someone else that stood up to question him.

To sell promissory notes on the stage of the Divine Rune City Auction House, and for an amount that would even give Empyrean Holy Lands pause, this was not an easy matter at all. The representatives of the large influences would be ruined if they were deceived!

Lin Ming moved. His clothes fluttered as he flew through the air and fell atop the auction stage. He faintly smiled and said, “Since you have such doubts, how about I draw one in front of the audience!”

Chapter 1640 – Exposed

Chapter 1640 – Exposed

…

…

…

As soon as Lin Ming finished his words, Shadow Overflow’s lips twitched; he hadn’t thought that Lin Ming would suggest such a thing.

This sort of suggestion was simply being more courageous than the heavens.

When a divine runic master drew up divine runic symbols, they usually did so in the peaceful environment of a divine runic room. Even then, there was a considerable failure rate.

Moreover, this sort of improved Heavenly Fire Symbol had over 2000 tiny runes; the complexity in drawing one up surpassed the majority of sixth grade divine runic symbols!

Under the watchful gaze of the audience, what would Lin Ming do if he failed!?

If his mindset was poor then he would panic after the first failure. Moreover, in order to draw up such a complicated Heavenly Fire Symbol it would require a massive amount of Lin Ming’s soul force. Even if a peak fifth grade divine runic master were to try, they could likely only attempt it once. If they failed they would have to wait several hours for a second try, and the success rate would drop even lower!

In this sort of situation, there was no divine runic master that would attempt to draw up a divine runic symbol that reached the limits of their skill in front of a giant audience. There was only a single explanation for this, and that was Lin Ming had reached an ultimate peak of confidence in his divine runic arts skills!

If Shadow Overflow could think of this, so could the other divine runic masters in the audience. All of them were frightened by Lin Ming's words. He was simply being far too confident. Wasn't he afraid that he would fail?

"It seems that this Heavenly Fire Symbol… is really made by this brat…" Shadow Overflow couldn't help but accept this blow to his self-confidence. But, he didn't think that Lin Ming would dare to boast at such a time.

But, suddenly…

Shadow Overflow's originally gloomy and decrepit face suddenly lifted up with a bizarre smile. Hidden beneath the shadows of his black cloak, his eyes began to shine with a brilliant light.

"Although it may be true you drew up those divine runic symbols, you are far too young and far too arrogant and cannot stand others questioning you. However, what you don't know is that as a peak dark divine runic master, I have special methods to observe and copy the technique of other divine runic masters! If you draw up a divine runic symbol in front of me then that is the same as revealing all of your secrets to me!"

Thinking of this, the avaricious greed in Shadow Overflow's eyes became increasingly thick. When a normal divine runic master drew up a divine runic symbol they would always reveal some secrets. And for these secrets, while orthodox divine runic masters might not be able to discern anything, if they were to be seen by a dark divine runic master, they would be far more easily understood! And Shadow Overflow was someone who was particularly skilled in this field!

In particular, Shadow Overflow had already tried to unravel Lin Ming's Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol before. At the time, Shadow Overflow had already obtained a thorough understanding of the tiny rune system and overall structure of the Nirvanic

Tribulation Flame Symbol. The only question that baffled him was how to fuse in the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws. Now, Shadow Overflow believed he would be able to find the hints to doing so by watching Lin Ming!

Even if Lin Ming failed, Shadow Overflow would still be able to see many things. Moreover, he could even kick Lin Ming while he was down and send that brat rolling off a cliff.

At this time, in the auction hall arena, there were many other dark divine runic masters that had the same thoughts as Shadow Overflow.

These dark divine runic masters all needed to buy materials so they definitely wouldn't miss Divine Rune City's treasure fair auction. Of course, they had hidden their status before entering. Some of these people had even been part of Shadow Overflow's team that tried to copy the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol.

They all held the same thoughts that Shadow Overflow did in their hearts. Many of them were secretly celebrating this event.

"This bull-headed youth is far too hot-blooded and arrogant, he can't even withstand a few insults! To dare to draw up a divine runic symbol publicly, good! Very good!"

"Haha, the master who passed down their inheritance to this brat must be feeling stupid. This brat wants to show off and even have a demonstration of his skills in front of everyone, he's just waiting for us to unravel his inheritances. Once we figure out how to create this Heavenly Fire Symbol, we'll have our own open auction! At that time, not only will money be rolling in but our futures will be limitless! Hahaha!"

Some divine runic masters thought. Their faces began to burn red with excitement and their breaths quickened.

For a time, many dark divine runic masters reached out faint threads of soul force that lingered around Lin Ming. The frenzy in their hearts had been ignited by Lin Ming and they were eagerly awaiting his performance.

These dark divine runic masters that coveted the peak fifth grade Heavenly Fire Symbol had to be at least peak fifth grade; in other words, a peak Holy Lord realm cultivation. Some of them were even World Kings.

These people observed Lin Ming's actions with their dark divine runic secret techniques. They emitted their soul perception, taking note of his every movement. This was an extremely impolite action but none of them were worried because their cultivations were far higher than Lin Ming's, and in addition to their unique dark divine runic techniques that spied on others, even if they were to spy on people with a similar boundary they still wouldn't be discovered.

"Hehe… if you can really prove that then I will certainly believe you will honor those 500 promissory notes. I have no problem with that."

Shadow Overflow licked his withered lips, tamping down the excitement and hope in his heart. He agreed to Lin Ming proving himself by drawing up the divine runic symbol in front of everyone.

"Then hurry up and begin!"

Many people urged from beneath the auction stage. Many of these people were part of the ordinary audience who shouted out purely because they wanted to experience the birth of a miracle with their own eyes. But, many of them were also dark divine runic masters hidden in the crowd.

"Alright."

Lin Ming languidly laid out a divine runic pen as well as a simple array disc commonly used to draw divine runic symbols. But, he didn't immediately take out the materials. Rather, he stood there, his hands behind his back as he slyly smiled at Shadow Overflow.

Seeing Lin Ming's eyes on him, Shadow Overflow felt his heart skip a beat. He didn't know why, but Lin Ming's eyes seemed to see through him, causing a chill to creep up his back.

“W-what are you…”

Shadow Overflow saw Lin Ming stare at him for several breaths of time and faltered a little. He frowned, “How come you aren’t drawing the Heavenly Fire Symbol? Were you just bluffing all this time?”

He was deliberately stirring up Lin Ming, but how could Lin Ming fall for this bait?

Lin Ming suddenly smiled and stared at Shadow Overflow’s obscured face. After a long pause, Lin Ming then slowly said, “Yes, I do believe… I know who you are…”

Shadow Overflow never imagined that Lin Ming would say such words. His body shook and he nearly lost his balance as he floated in the air.

His eyebrows wrinkled together. He pretended to be calm, “I have no idea what you are speaking about!”

“Mm, it’s fine as long as you know who you are… isn’t that right, Grandmaster Overflow…?”

Lin Ming unhurriedly said without a hint of doubt in his voice. His lips curved up in a playful smile. With this, the entire audience was stunned!

Shadow Overflow had risen to fame many years ago and was far more famous and well-known than Lin Ming was!

Even those that didn’t belong to the world of divine runic arts knew the name of Shadow Overflow. Or better to say, they knew of his infamy. He was a notoriously cruel character, evil and vicious, a completely abhorrent person!

Not only did he copy the divine runic symbols of others, but his character was poor and he was sinister and vicious, a bloodthirsty and lustful man!

He plundered the proud young female disciples of small sects to use as his living furnaces, and killed off tens of millions of mortals as a sacrifice to refine his ghost streamer. In short, he was a man that stooped to any evils!

It was also said he gathered thousands of proud women to establish his harem. Wherever he went he would have squads of golden-armored warriors following him as well as dozens of charming maids. He would have flood dragons pulling his carriage and spirit flower petals would sprinkle the ground ahead of him. This opulent transportation was just like a divine emperor travelling abroad!

Towards this type of person, many people felt nothing but utter scorn.

Shadow Overflow's complexion became increasingly ugly. He couldn't figure out how Lin Ming had discovered his identity!

He had never met Lin Ming openly face-to-face, and even when they briefly bumped into each other he had used all sorts of arcane techniques to conceal his cultivation and aura. In this situation, Lin Ming was still able to recognize him!

Could it be that… he had sensed his divine runic arts technique?

How was this possible… he was only a Divine Lord and also a mere human, so how could Lin Ming discover his sense!

Shadow Overflow could not believe this!

And his guess was right; Lin Ming had discovered Shadow Overflow's dark divine runic arts technique!

Lin Ming had inherited Torchriver's memories. Torchriver was not some good or righteous individual and he also had an understanding of the spying arts of dark divine runic masters. As for Lin Ming, because he had a powerful soul force and he also cultivated the Divine Mist Heart Mantra, he had an extremely keen sense. He was able to instantly catch onto Shadow Overflow's spying sense and then contrast it with Torchriver's memories to understand what it was.

A dark divine runic master that he couldn't see the cultivation of, they had to be at least at the sixth grade or peak sixth grade.

Such a dark divine runic master was hostile towards him and had been targeting him from the very start of the auction fair. When all of these factors were combined, Lin Ming didn't need to be a genius to know it was that Grandmaster Overflow who had tried to rashly unravel his Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol and had lost several hundreds of millions of points as a result!

Seeing Shadow Overflow continue putting on an act at this moment, Lin Ming smiled and said, "Grandmaster Overflow, I've heard so much about your grand name before, but, I must apologize for meeting you under such circumstances. I wonder, have you fixed those array discs you broke when you tried to unravel my Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol?"

Lin Ming's words were brutal enough, especially to be said in the presence of everyone. No matter how patient Shadow Overflow was, even he couldn't withstand such shame.

The defeat of that research team was an eternal pain in his heart. Not only was it a loss of wealth but more importantly a loss of his reputation and an impact on his confidence!

From the depths of his soul, he wished that he could flay Lin Ming alive!

And at this time, all of the other dark divine runic masters in attendance felt a foreboding premonition rise over their hearts. Seeing the situation turn bad, all of them withdrew the spying sense they had cast on Lin Ming and restrained their auras in fear of being discovered.

But this sudden change left Lin Ming chuckling. He walked forwards several steps and swept his eyes over the entire audience.

His eyes paused in several places before he slowly said, “I haven’t even started to draw anything so why would all of you retreat like this? Just now it seems there were… 19 senses… hmm, I wonder if I missed any?”

As Lin Ming spoke, all of the dark divine runic masters in the audience felt their hearts skip a beat, a cold sweat forming on their backs!

They had stretched out their sense to peek at Lin Ming, but their sense had been noticed by him. It was just like a few thieves entering a mansion to steal some items. Even if they tried to cover their tracks there would still be clues.

Although they knew there were over a dozen some people that had also stretched out their senses, they couldn’t affirm whether it was truly such a precise number like 19!

Chapter 1641 – Stay If You Want

Chapter 1641 – Stay If You Want

…

…

…

This boy, he was able to discover everyone looking at him, even the much stronger Shadow Overflow? How was this possible?

If Lin Ming discovered these dark divine runic masters, that meant that this young junior far surpassed their attainments in soul force. Thus, it was no wonder that these dark divine runic masters began to drip with a cold sweat!

This was too terrifying!

They even suspected that Lin Ming was an old monster hiding in the body of a youth!

At this time, Lin Ming flicked his hand and dozens of golden shining runes flew into the air. They scattered in different directions like a pack of homing pigeons, zooming to 19 different places where they paused in the skies.

These people sat in ordinary seats and also in ordinary rooms. But without exception, all of them had a peak Holy Lord cultivation or above!

As the audience saw the cultivation of these people, all of them sucked in a breath of cold air!

They weren't idiots. With things having come this far, even those that didn't understand the divine runic arts knew what was happening. These people all spied on Lin Ming but were actually seized by him instead!

And, the key point was that if these people weren't Holy Lords then they were World Kings. Yet, their spying had been discovered by a simple Divine Lord realm junior!

Many people felt this was unbelievable. They stared at Lin Ming's dantian, wanting to see if they could find a clue, but without a doubt all of them verified that he was truly a middle Divine Lord realm martial artist!

What was going on here?

"Is he some old monster in disguise?"

However, a Great World King level powerhouse shook his head and said, "No, only an Empyrean would be able to disguise their cultivation and skeletal age to such a perfect degree beneath the gaze of several hundred thousands of heroes. But, an Emyprean would not do something so boring as to deceive a group of juniors. Not just that, but we even have two strong Empyreans personally attending this event, so wanting to fake anything in front of them is as difficult as ascending to heaven!"

The Great World King's words were a confirmation of Lin Ming's cultivation and age.

This left many people stunned speechless.

And at this time, on the auction stage, Song Wen overcame his initial shock at Lin Ming's abilities. Slowly, his complexion became dark and gloomy. "Those 19 friends marked by runes, could you kindly stand?"

Song Wen's voice was calm and filled with forceful aggressiveness.

These dark divine runic masters, although they couldn't be seen in the light of day, were still people with status. They had never been treated like this before!

No one moved. Song Wen thought little of it. He coldly coughed, saying, "You may be considered our peers, but I must apologize that we do not welcome your kind here. Our Divine Runic Masters Guild has always drawn a clear line with dark divine runic masters!"

Song Wen's original intention was to protect Lin Ming and to prevent any secrets from his drawing of the Heavenly Fire Symbol to leak out. But, he never imagined that as he said this, Lin Ming would instead laugh and smile, saying, "Elder Song, there is no need to do that. As the saying goes, good relations always lead to wealth. Although I pointed them out, that doesn't mean I wanted them to be evicted. If they want to see, they can certainly stay and learn."

"What!?"

Lin Ming's words left everyone dumbfounded, whether it was Shadow Overflow, the other dark divine runic masters, the audience, or Song Wen. Just what was Lin Ming planning?

"Well, however…" Lin Ming suddenly changed his tone.

"I do have a condition. I cannot allow them to freely stay for nothing. To those 19 dark divine runic masters I just marked, if you wish to stay then you need to pay a viewing fee of 30 million points. Of course, if I fail in drawing up my Heavenly Fire Symbol then the fee will be completely refunded."

Lin Ming's words and actions left everyone panic-stricken!

One person was 30 million, that meant 19 people were nearly 600 million!

Wasn't this money just too easily earned!?

30 million was not a small amount. Even the price for a VIP suite was 30 million, and that was something only a large influence like an Empyrean level influence would pay for. As for World King level influences, they would only rent out ordinary rooms.

For instance, these dark divine runic masters were mostly in the ordinary rooms. Of course, the reason for choosing an ordinary room, besides cost, was also because they wished to remain low-key.

30 million points was also a price they could pay. Dark divine runic masters dabbled in transactions of the underworld and all of them were fairly wealthy. Even so, they couldn't take out 30 million points without paying; that price would definitely leave them feeling a bit of pain.

Hearing Lin Ming say such words, Elder Xue was a bit worried. He said with a sound transmission, "Lin Ming, don't be impulsive here. These dark divine runic masters have existed for billions of years and have an immeasurably long inheritance. The number of secret techniques they possess is incalculable. If you let them watch and mimic you then that is too dangerous. If your inheritance was revealed…"

Old Xue was indeed concerned for Lin Ming. Lin Ming's inheritance was far, far too valuable. He feared that Lin Ming would be too confident in himself because Shadow Overflow had failed in unraveling the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol before. After all, copying without seeing and copying with seeing were two completely different concepts.

Before Lin Ming replied to Old Xue, Shadow Overflow smiled and said, "The newborn calf really doesn't fear the tiger. Not only do you not fear us copying you as we watch, but you even want to take our money! Interesting! How interesting! Good, I will put forth these 30 million points!"

With Shadow Overflow's wealth, he certainly didn't care much about 30 million points.

But at this time Lin Ming suddenly sneered. He looked towards Shadow Overflow and spread his hands, "I'm sorry, but it seems you didn't hear me clearly just now. I asked those 19 dark divine runic masters that I marked to pay a 30 million viewing fee if they wished to stay and watch, but you are not included in those 19 people. If you want to stay then the fee is a bit higher at 200 million. Whether you want to stay and watch is all up to you."

“What!?”

Shadow Overflow nearly choked on himself.

He glared at Lin Ming, hate thick in his eyes, “What is the meaning of this!”

Lin Ming simply didn’t bother with Shadow Overflow’s sharp and cutting vision. He indifferently said, “This price is decided by me. If you don’t want to stay then I am not forcing you to! Grandmaster Overflow, you are already so infamous outside that you will surely be able to see more details than these other dark divine runic masters. If I do not charge you a higher fee then it is not fair to any of them!”

“You - !!” Shadow Overflow’s face turned red with rage. Even for him, taking out 200 million would be painful!

Lin Ming’s viewing fees were decided after calculating the net worth of Shadow Overflow and the other dark divine runic masters. It was a price that they didn’t want to pay, but one that they weren’t willing to refuse and give up on.

At this time, Song Wen stepped forwards, “Everyone, if you do not wish to pay the viewing fee then I must ask you to leave. This Divine Rune City Auction originally did not welcome the likes of you dark divine runic masters!”

Song Wen also praised Lin Ming in his heart. This boy was truly not easy to deal with. If anyone underestimated him because of his age, then they would simply be stupid idiots!

To draw up a peak fifth grade improved Heavenly Fire Symbol under the gaze of the audience, to dare allow a group of peak fifth grade and sixth grade dark divine runic masters spy on the process, but to also sit back and receive money, this level of daring was not something an ordinary person could possess!

Even an established sixth grade divine runic master like Elder Xue wouldn’t be brave enough to do this!

“Good! Good! Very good!” Shadow Overflow repeated as he cast off his black cloak, revealing his old and withered face. His filthy eyes were currently shimmering with a faint blood red light.

“Then I will pay this 200 million!”

Shadow Overflow was stirred to anger by Lin Ming!

At this point, it was the same as Lin Ming declaring war on him!

A junior that wasn’t even a hundred years old was declaring war on the infamous Shadow Overflow. If he didn’t dare to meet this challenge then he would be made a laughingstock by everyone he knew!

Shadow Overflow threw out a jade slip with 200 million points within. At the same time, from all over the arena, 19 jade slips flew up one after another, each one having 30 million points within it!

Divine runic masters were proud and arrogant people and even dark divine runic masters were the same. These people did not believe in superstitious nothings, they believed in themselves!

Even if they couldn’t unravel the Heavenly Fire Symbol they would still be able to see many things. This would be greatly beneficial to them in the future. With that, these 30 million points weren’t wanted at all.

Lin Ming received all of these jade slips and gave them to Xiao Moxian. Xiao Moxian looked at the shining point cards in her hands and put all the points within them in a larger contribution points jade slip.

Feeling the contents of the large points jade slip rapidly grow, Xiao Moxian grinned from ear to ear. “Big Brother Lin makes money far too easily. Let alone selling those Heavenly Fire Symbols or selling those promissory notes, you have already earned 800 million…”

As the audience heard Xiao Moxian speak, they seemed to wake up from a stupor. Before this they had been laughing at the idea of Lin Ming selling promissory notes at the Divine Rune City auction, thinking he would make a joke of himself. But now, before the promissory notes were sold, he had already earned 800 million points. This amount of points earned in such a short period of time was far too abnormal!

In the VIP suites, Suya spat out a light breath. She felt more and more that the youth on stage was unfathomably deep. She thought she understood Lin Ming, but the truth was that she never understood him at all. With every step Lin Ming took, she was always amazed by whatever astonishing matter happened next!

800 million points, that was the same as stealing! But, this blatantly wild grab for money was completely justified. To have a group of dark divine runic masters and even the famed Shadow Overflow obediently fork over so much wealth, if Suya had only heard of this but didn't see it with her own eyes, she would think whoever said this was insane!

"Little Brother Lin, you may begin at any time." Song Wen nodded towards Lin Ming. He was also curious where Lin Ming's self-confidence came from. "There is no need to set up a temporary divine runic room, I have already sent people to bring over the required array discs."

To refine divine runic symbols required all sorts of intricate array formations, otherwise Lin Ming's efficiency in drawing up divine runic symbols would be much lower.

"Hehe, what's the point of having array formations? You have an old man here willing to be an assistant!" Old Xue stepped forwards, taking the initiative to volunteer himself.

The main role of an array formation was to help in processing materials. But no matter how good a seventh grade array formation was in processing materials, it wouldn't be as good as having a real sixth grade divine runic master!

To have Old Xue as an assistant, that was an absurdly luxurious matter. Many people who knew Old Xue's status in the Divine Runic Masters Guild were left flabbergasted by this.

"Thank you senior!" Lin Ming felt a warmth in his heart. He could feel Elder Xue's concern towards him. Drawing up a Heavenly Fire Symbol wasn't easy at all. Without the support of large-scale high grade array formations here to support him, having an assistant here would save him a great deal of soul force and make it easier to draw up the Heavenly Fire Symbol.

"Haha, what are you being so polite for? When the divine runic symbol is finished, you can just give me 100 million from those 800 million points you received just now!"

Old Xue laughed. Lin Ming choked on his words. This old man, he really wouldn't change no matter what. The truth was that to Lin Ming giving away 100 million wasn't a problem at all, but he knew that Old Xue was in truth just joking around with him.

Chapter 1642 – Lin Ming VS Shadow Overflow

Chapter 1642 – Lin Ming VS Shadow Overflow

…

…

…

Lin Ming took out a specialized divine runic table from his spatial ring as well as various piles of materials.

As Lin Ming took out the materials, he no longer concealed any of his actions from the spying Shadow Overflow. Shadow Overflow’s neck was stretched out like a rooster as he licked his dry lips. His complete focus was concentrated on Lin Ming’s every move lest he miss a single detail.

“The materials he uses aren’t strange; they are all materials required for drawing a Heavenly Fire Symbol. There are also several more types…” Shadow Overflow mumbled, “They aren’t too cheap but they aren’t too expensive either.”

Shadow Overflow instantly judged.

At this time Elder Xue had already picked up some of the materials and began processing them with precise skills. He removed the inferior parts of materials and then broke them down…

Lin Ming took out some nine-flame grass. His fingertips were like precise scalpels as he made an accurate cut on each blade of grass.

His soul force merged into the nine-flame grass, immediately drawing out the essence of the juice.

A strange tractive force emerged from Lin Ming's palm, cleanly pulling out every drop of essence juice. His fingers seemed to dance in the air, every movement he made like passing clouds and flowing water, smooth and clean, giving off a whole and balanced feeling.

As they said, laymen watched for fun, experts watched for interest.

In the eyes of ordinary people, Lin Ming's movements only had a faint aesthetic sense.

But for some divine runic masters, the more they watched the more immersed they were. Without knowing it, they began to mimic Lin Ming's movements, drawing their hands in the void to capture the precise trajectories of his movements.

They knew that these ghostly movements involved the subtle changes in angle and power of extracting the juices.

These changes seemed ordinary but there was actually a profound meaning behind them. Only these divine runic masters were able to sense some of the mysteries within.

Shadow Overflow's face darkened. Just Lin Ming's movements in extracting the essence of the juice were enough to leave many fifth grade divine runic masters red with shame!

Drawing up a divine runic symbol was in many ways a form of art.

Lin Ming focused all of his concentration into drawing the divine runic symbol. After completing the first step of extracting the essence of the materials, he directly stepped into the next stage.

The divine runic pen dipped into the juice essence and drew a bright path through the air like a chain of stars. A brilliant soul force spilled out into the void, marking the juice essence.

As Lin Ming began to draw up the tiny runes, he perfectly calculated every small change in his mind.

These deductions were accumulated over the last several months. Even the slightest possible change was recorded in his mind. Now, all he needed to do was to perfectly display them.

Every tiny rune was like a tiny flower that bloomed on his fingertips.

Small lines of soul force appeared between the tiny runes, interspersed, connecting them together, revealing a sense of mystery and beauty.

Even for those that didn't understand the divine runic arts, this was a shockingly beautiful scene.

To think that the decidedly dull divine runic arts could be so enchanting.

At this time, Shadow Overflow's eyes were fanatical. His body shivered as he held his breath and focused on Lin Ming's every moment, recording even the smallest detail into his mind.

The other divine runic masters who had spent points all remembered Lin Ming's movements with everything they had.

However, they discovered that they weren't able to follow him!

It wasn't that they couldn't remember Lin Ming's movements, nor was it that they couldn't see the tiny runes he drew up, but because they didn't know what the meaning behind his drawing was!

Even if they used all sorts of dark divine runic analyzing techniques, they still couldn't analyze just how these tiny runes were connected.

Once they missed the tiniest detail, it was easy to be lost on every following stroke.

Some dark divine runic masters had already begun dripping with a cold sweat!

Lin Ming took a long time to draw up the Heavenly Fire Symbol. In the blink of an eye, six hours had passed.

This wasn't an easy process for Lin Ming. His forehead was dripping with crystal clear beads of sweat. As for Xiao Moxian standing beside him, she didn't even dare to help wipe Lin Ming, lest she disturb him.

After those several months of attempts, Lin Ming's chances of drawing up those two improved divine runic symbols had greatly increased.

For the Heretical God Symbol, he had a 60-70% chance of success. As for the Heavenly Fire Symbol, he had a 90% chance of success.

A 90% chance couldn't be considered a guaranteed 100% success rate. But, if Lin Ming revolved the Divine Mist Heart Mantra to the limit and didn't hesitate to consume every last bit of his soul force to draw up the Heavenly Fire Symbol, then he could bring the success rate up to 100%!

As the last tiny rune appeared in the void, the 2000+ runes seemed to come to life. As they floated in the air, they looked like a galaxy, exuding a vast aura of energy.

Om ~ !

A pitch black power of fire submerged into the middle of the runes, carrying with it a strange aura of Laws.

This flame was the nirvanic flames that Lin Ming possessed!

"Xian'er!" Lin Ming said. In truth, he didn't need to say anything; Xiao Moxian was already transferring the nirvanic flames into him where they gathered into the divine runic symbol.

Xiao Moxian's nirvanic flames were far purer than Lin Ming's.

This scene left many in the audience startled with amazement. This black-clothed young girl had followed Lin Ming everywhere. They originally thought she was only a flower vase that was there to look good, but they never imagined the flames she commanded could be so pure. Moreover, her attainments in the Fire Laws seemed to have reached… the seventh level Concept!!

This was a boundary that left many fire-attribute World Kings weeping with shame! And this young girl also seemed to be of similar age and cultivation to Lin Ming.

Just what in the world was this? Wasn't this just a match made in heaven? This was too odd!

At this time, Lin Ming's actions sped up. His hands left afterimages in the air as he fused tiny bits of pitch black flames into the center of each rune.

All of these runes seemed to have been gifted with life. A small dark phoenix was stored into each one, shaking as if they wanted to spread their wings and soar away.

Dark flames jumped over all the runes, dancing amongst them.

Everyone watched with bated breath, not even daring to blink their eyes in case there was the smallest change in the flame runes.

Shadow Overflow watched all the more intensely. He even stopped breathing. The most critical time had come!

What he didn't understand the most was how Lin Ming fused the Asura Heavenly Dao into the divine runic symbol. But now, Lin Ming was beginning this third step, the fusion of the Asura Heavenly Dao!

Lin Ming flicked his finger and a deep blue god rune shot out. This was a rare blue soul level god rune and one of the necessary materials.

At this time, the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws descended, drawing unbelievable lines in space. The path of these lines was elusive and unpredictable. Ordinary people only needed to glance at them a single time to feel dizzy.

“This is it! This is it!”

Shadow Overflow widened his eyes so much that they nearly popped out of their sockets. This was the moment he had been waiting for! But, he was completely unable to understand the pattern of these Laws at all! He wildly roared in his heart. At this time, a brilliant white light flooded out, covering Shadow Overflow’s field of vision. Even so, he wasn’t willing to close his eyes. He stubbornly persisted even as the light scorched him and his eyes turned blood red!

This was a brilliance radiated by the Asura Heavenly Dao. Even a World King powerhouse would feel pained by staring into this light. As for a Divine Lord or Holy Lord realm powerhouse that didn’t understand the Asura Heavenly Dao, they might have simply lost their eyesight by now!

Shadow Overflow’s eyes began to drip blood. He naturally knew that these strange patterns were the true reason as to why Lin Ming’s divine runic arts were so powerful!

However, even though he used all the dark divine runic arts techniques at his disposal, even though his eyes bled, he still wasn’t able to read the patterns or comprehend what was happening!

“How could this be!! Where have I gone wrong!?!?”

Shadow Overflow nearly went crazy as he tried to grasp something. However, time was rapidly passing.

When that endless brilliant glory condensed together, it converged with all the strange Heavenly Dao Law patterns, condensing onto a single ordinary symbol paper.

Heavenly Fire Symbol – complete!

Lin Ming let out a long breath of relief. He had consumed a great deal of energy just now. In order to guarantee a 100% success rate with this Heavenly Fire symbol, Lin Ming hadn't held back any use of his soul force. This also made the Heavenly Fire Symbol he just drew even more perfect!

After finishing all of this, Lin Ming fell onto the divine runic table, propping himself up with his right hand.

As for Old Xue, he had already hurriedly received the divine runic symbol.

Closing his eyes, Old Xue sensed the runic structure within and sighed in praise!

"Good brat, this Heavenly Fire Symbol is even better than the first one I used!"

Old Xue's words caused the audience to gasp in marvel. At this time, without saying a word further, Song Wen immediately activated the testing array formation!

Even though no one suspected Lin Ming any longer, only by witnessing the truth for themselves could they be shocked!

When the dreamscape of the Great Desolate appeared and the vicious beasts manifested, a dreadful explosion filled the air and roiling flames surged forth. Old Xue's actions were quick and decisive. He used the Heavenly Fire Symbol that Lin Ming just made to burn down a World King vicious beast!

This power was far too terrifying! It was even stronger than the first test!

If this were used by a peak Holy Lord, then although the strength would be weaker than that displayed by Old Xue, as long as it struck it wouldn't be a problem to severely wound a World King!

At the conclusion of the test, Old Xue glanced at Shadow Overflow with relish in his eyes. He cheekily grinned and said, "I must say Old Shadow, I think you nearly snapped your neck in half trying to get a good look just now. Tell me, did you discover anything interesting?"

Although Old Xue wasn't a dark divine runic master, he could tell from Shadow Overflow's grim complexion that he hadn't had any harvests at all. At this time, Shadow Overflow's face was darker than the bottom of a pot!

Shadow Overflow didn't say anything. He composed himself, deeply staring at Lin Ming, not bothering to conceal the deep killing intent in his eyes. Then, without further ado, he silently returned to his VIP suite.

"I won't see you off." Song Wen faintly smiled. He stepped onto the auction stage and loudly said, "Everyone, the auction will begin soon. Little Brother Lin..."

"Of course." Lin Ming responded. He took out a special symbol and used a divine runic pen to leave behind a soul force mark. This mark had Lin Ming's unique soul fluctuations within it; it was impossible to fake.

Song Wen used this light promissory note that Lin Ming just drew up and placed it on the auction stage platform. He said, "Everyone, my Divine Rune City Auction House will now auction off Mister Lin's promissory note. If there is no objection, then we shall begin!"

Chapter 1643 – Sky High Auction Bid

Chapter 1643 – Sky High Auction Bid

…

…

…

“President Song, hurry up with the auction. Sir Lin has already proven his strength. If he wishes to sell those promissory notes then Setting Sun City’s Far East Family is willing to bid!”

“I am Great Yang City’s Ouyang Hou, I am also willing to…”

For a time, many people were shouting out loud, urging Song Wen to hurry with the auction.

Seeing this, Song Wen faintly smiled. “Since everyone feels this way I won’t waste your time with idle talk. The auction shall now begin. The base price is zero! Every increase in price cannot be less than 20 million!”

Zero base price?

As Song Wen’s voice fell, everyone was stirred into an uproar.

Song Wen starting the base price at zero was in order to have all the bidders lose any sort of standard in their heart. It was impossible for them to weigh the value of these 500 Heavenly Fire Symbols. Like this, it was possible to produce a sky high bid!

On the other hand, setting a high base bid at the start would cause many people to lose all courage to bid. This would dampen the atmosphere and prevent the fiery competition required.

This was the first time that Song Wen was auctioning promissory notes; before this, he had never tried before. This was simply an amazing precedent, especially for the Divine Rune City Auction House that was renowned throughout the entire inner Asura Road.

If these promissory notes had sold for a low price then the Divine Rune City Auction House would be mocked by their peers. But now, it seemed the chances of that were extremely low!

And once sold for a dramatic amount, Divine Rune City Auction House would actually create a legend!

“100 million!”

Someone shouted out from the lower seats.

“150 million!”

“200 million!”

Just as that person finished bidding another person immediately increased the bid. There were even several people shouting at once.

As the auction started, many of the martial artists in the scattered lower seats were impatiently bidding.

100 million? 200 million?

“This is just a joke!”

The first person who urged President Song, Far East Miao from Setting Sun City, suddenly sneered.

Lin Ming had just drawn up a divine runic symbol and had even received an 800 million advance to do so. Wasn't it just an insult to bid 100-200 million?

At this time, Far East Miao stood up and loudly shouted, "My Far East Family bids 1.3 billion!"

Those with different status and perspective often had decidedly different judgments.

Many people in the lower seats were shocked. They had shouted out 100-200 million just then, but now someone had shouted out a bid of over a billion. This was just a bit too odd for them.

"1.4 billion!"

An indifferent voice shouted out from the VIP suites. It was unknown who the bidder was.

"1.5 billion!" Suya's senior-apprentice brother suddenly shouted after a moment of silence,

The Extreme Star Holy Lands definitely wouldn't miss out on shouting a bid!

As it was, they had already missed a chance to be on good terms with Lin Ming. After experiencing Lin Ming's monstrous talent in the divine runic arts, who would miss out on a second time?

And, what was even more important was that if they obtained these fifth grade divine runic symbols from Lin Ming, the effects they would have on their war against the Heaven Strife Holy Lands would be immeasurable!

Of course, Suya's senior-apprentice brother knew that 1.5 billion was only the start. Wanting to buy these Heavenly Fire Symbols with this amount was far from enough.

"1.8 billion..." On the west side, a crisp voice sounded out from a mysterious VIP suite. As Suya's senior-apprentice brother thought, 1.5 billion fell far short of being enough.

At this time, no one in the lower seats was able to speak.

This was now a battle between the VIP suites!

The shouts of bids had already slowed down. It wasn't that 1.8 billion approached the upper limits of the Heavenly Fire Symbols' value, but because many people in the VIP suites were using secret techniques to contact their headquarters.

Of these people, many of them had tools similar to the Thousand Mile Heartlink. As long as they were all in the same universe they could contact each other no matter how far they were.

"High Elder, there is an urgent matter I must report to you. There is a talented divine runic master that has produced a batch of divine runic symbols… these are promissory notes. Don't be startled, please allow me to explain…"

"Open the image transmitting array. I must transmit an image of the fifth grade Heavenly Fire Symbol to the Sovereign… I must ask the Sovereign to authorize at least 2.5 billion points for us to bid with…"

When Old Xue tested the Heavenly Fire Symbol, there was a good number of people who were interested and had recorded a phantom video with array discs.

As multiple sound transmission stones lit up throughout the VIP suites, more and more influences joined in on the auction!

"I haven't even finished speaking with headquarters and the bid has risen to 2 billion! These damned people!"

Suya angrily thought. She had just applied for 2 billion points with some difficulty, but just as she was about to call out a bid, the current bid had surpassed 2 billion! It seemed that even 2.5 billion wouldn't be enough!

“Junior-apprentice Sister Suya, don’t worry. The Sovereign is already contacting several Elders of the Heavenly Palace to have them help.”

Because of the war against the Heaven Strife Holy Lands, the sect reserves of the Extreme Star Holy Lands had nearly run dry.

To increase the bid again, that would be with the Elders taking out their own private wealth and adding it together. Once the sect regained their strength these Elders would naturally be repaid.

As the bid climbed to 2.3 billion, the entire auction hall arena had calmed down.

To bid 2.3 billion for promissory notes written by Lin Ming, this was simply a crazy scenario!

“2.5 billion!” Setting Sun City’s Far East Miao shouted out between clenched teeth. However, even though he had tossed all his chips onto the table, he still wasn’t able to stop the price from dramatically rising.

And 2.5 billion wasn’t even high enough to give Song Wen a chance to start a countdown. At this time, Suya emerged from her VIP suite. She gracefully floated in the skies of the arena hall and clearly said, “2.6 billion!”

Suya had already applied for all the points she could. Originally, she thought that it was enough but now she realized it wasn’t. The points she had requested had all been reserved. If she had used too many then they really wouldn’t be able to win the white birch spirit root later!

However, the Vice Palace Master had informed her that they could find other solutions to search for points for the white birch spirit root.

Seeing Suya push the bid to nearly 3 billion points, Far East Miao’s complexion changed. Even 2.5 billion wasn’t enough to shake off these competitors. He had wanted to obtain these 500 Heavenly Fire Symbols no matter what and had applied for a massive volume of points to do so. But, he never thought that the auction battle for these promissory notes would intensify to such a brutal degree!

He lifted his hand, wanting to bid once more. However, his hand was shaking already. This was not a small number! It wouldn't be something their Far East Family would be able to easily withstand.

He grit his teeth, wanting to raise the bid once more. But at this time, from the highest sections of the VIP suites, a dignified voice echoed out. "3 billion!"

This voice shocked everyone. They all looked towards the VIP suite that shouted this price and as they did they all sucked in a breath of cold air.

Those were the rooms of Empyrean Lionheart!

Empyrean Lionheart had actually shouted out a price!

Since the auction started, the two Empyreans here had yet to say a single word. It was clear that up until now, there was nothing that was able to arouse their interest.

But now, Empyrean Lionheart actually spoke for the first time, and his first words were to issue a mindboggling bid!

Before this, who would have thought that an Empyrean level character's first words at the Divine Rune City Auction would be to call out a sky high bid, and all for the promissory notes of a Divine Lord realm junior!

"3… 3 billion…"

Hearing Empyrean Lionheart's voice, Far East Miao paled and slumped back into his seat. 3 billion was a bid that caused him to lose all heart to continue bidding. With the background of their Far East Family, they had no qualifications to struggle with Empyrean Lionheart.

To compete with an Empyrean… not everyone had the courage to do so. This was not just pressure that came from a high bid, but pressure that came from strength. How could common martial artists dare to struggle with an Empyrean?

But at this time, from another VIP suite, Suya bit her lips. With an unwilling expression she took a deep breath and called out, “3.1 billion!”

This feminine voice had a powerful piercing strength, spreading through the entire audience. For a time, Suya caught the attention of everyone!

The audience was shocked. This woman dared to challenge Empyrean Lionheart!

At this time, Suya’s milk-white breasts were violently heaving. Her back and her palms were both wet with sweat! To compete with an Empyrean was to directly face their majesty and dignity; this was an incredible level of pressure.

“3.2 billion!”

Empyrean Lionheart spoke out again, raising the bid once more!

“3.3 billion!”

Suya seemed to have been roused to anger. She refused to concede!

“Oh?” Empyrean Lionheart’s eyebrow arched up. He fell quiet for several breaths of time, and then his voice once again spread through the entire audience. “3.6 billion!”

Empyrean Lionheart had poured a powerful momentum into his voice, making anyone who listened feel afraid to disobey.

As soon as this bid of 3.6 billion was called out, everyone in the audience felt their hearts shake!

Suya was also pale white. Through today's sudden development she had been keeping in contact with the Extreme Star Holy Lands even as she engaged in a bidding battle with an Empyrean; she was already unable to continue!

"Junior-apprentice Sister, please give up! Don't fight anymore, we'll have more opportunities in the future." Suya's senior-apprentice brother said, feeling a little bitter.

At this time, Suya's cheeks were blushing red and she was dripping fragrant sweat.

She bit her lips as if she wanted to bid again but she didn't have the energy to break past the barrier of 3.6 billion that Empyrean Lionheart had set up.

At this time, her eyes touched upon Lin Ming. Although his expression was indifferent, his lips still moved as he spoke two simple words to her.

Suya was stunned. Lin Ming had said, "Don't worry."

With these two simple words, Suya felt the tight pressure over her heart lighten.

She knew that Lin Ming would certainly have another way to help her so that she wouldn't need to struggle with something she couldn't win against.

Suya's heart warmed. Her nose burned just a little.

"Thank you..."

Suya replied as she slumped down in her VIP suite. Even if Lin Ming didn't say anything she truly didn't have the means to continue competing for the bid.

"3.6 billion, is there anyone willing to bid higher?"

Song Wen's eyes flitted over the audience. His gaze stopped on the VIP suite of another Empyrean – Empyrean Minor Violet. However, this famous woman Empyrean had yet to say a single word.

He counted down. No one challenged the current bid price.

“Then, I declare that Lin Ming’s promissory note of 500 Heavenly Fire Symbols has sold for 3.6 billion points! Congratulations to Empyrean Lionheart!”

Song Wen loudly proclaimed as he struck his mallet against the podium. At this time, even his hands were shaking!

In Song Wen’s life he had already presided over countless auctions. There were even many treasures he had auctioned off which sold for far more than 3.6 billion. But, to auction a promissory note for 3.6 billion, that was definitely a first!

That meant that on average, every Heavenly Fire Symbol sold for 7.2 million! This was a truly mindboggling price!

By relying on these Heavenly Fire Symbols, Lin Ming had drawn up a single one and had auctioned off 500 in advance for a total gain of 4.37 billion points!

Earning this amount of points so quickly couldn’t even be described as crazy!

The final bid price of 3.6 billion left the entire audience stewing in silence for some time.

After a while, there was a round of applause from the audience that originated from their innermost respect and shock.

Afterwards, through the representatives sent to the auction by the various influences, this news spread out via a variety of means!

If these were ordinary times, then people would suspect this was just some fake hype being created, or that the one buying was an idiot. But, the final bidder to win was Empyrean Lionheart!

Who would dare say that Empyrean Lionheart was an idiot? Empyrean Lionheart’s judgment was far from what an ordinary person could compare with!

Moreover, with the status of an Empyrean, how could they possibly work with an auction house as a bid manipulator?

With this, no one dared to question the veracity of this news!

The Divine Rune City Auction had originally been under the attention of many people and had been a great topic of discussion. But after this event, it was like a wildfire had been set off!

The one to sell the promissory note was only a human, Divine Lord realm junior!

Not just that, but this Divine Lord realm junior had drawn up a divine runic symbol in front of an audience of hundreds of thousands, including even Grandmaster Overflow and over a dozen other dark divine runic masters!

And what was even more ridiculous was that not only did this Divine Lord realm junior not fear these dark divine runic masters copying his techniques, but he instead forced them to hand over almost 800 million points as a viewing fee!

From the complexions of Shadow Overflow and those dark divine runic masters, the audience had been able to speculate that they hadn't been able to learn anything at all, even after paying the fee to spy!

This left many people even more panic-stricken, causing the news to spread further out!

For a time, news of 'an Empyrean spent 3.6 billion points buying a promissory note', and 'a Divine Lord realm junior spent less than a day to earn 4.37 billion points' spread throughout the various intelligence networks. Many people spoke of this in restaurants and city squares. This news could be said to overwhelm the world!

This also caused the popularity of this year's Divine Rune City Auction to dramatically rise!

Because of this news, many people began to rush towards Divine Rune City. Seeing was believing. All of them found it hard to believe that a Divine Lord realm junior was able to accomplish such miracles.

However, matters didn’t end here!

As everyone believed that the auction of the Heavenly Fire Symbol promissory note was the greatest and most explosive news of the Divine Rune City auction, and would even surpass all other news that the other surrounding auction houses would be able to come up with, the Divine Runic Masters Guild actually released yet another astonishing burst of news!

It was that, in half a month, the creator of the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol would hold an auction for another improved version of a divine runic symbol – the Heretical God Symbol!

As for this Heretical God Symbol, its power even surpassed that of the Heavenly Fire Symbol! All representatives of great influences were invited to attend the Divine Rune City Auction!

For a time, many great influences within the inner Asura Road began to stir.

Even many Empyrean level characters started to quietly enter Divine Rune City...

Chapter 1644 – Gathering of Greats

Chapter 1644 – Gathering of Greats

…

…

…

Half a month passed in the blink of an eye.

During this period of time, the treasure fair also auctioned off many valuables treasures, all of them triggering a wave of enthusiasm.

But, what people loved to talk about the most and what attracted the most attention was an auction that had yet to begin – the Heretical God Symbol.

Half a month ago, a Divine Lord realm divine runic master called Lin Ming had used an improved Heavenly Fire Symbol and a promissory note for 500 Heavenly Fire Symbols to create a miracle in the history of the auction hall.

Now, just how amazing would this Heretical God Symbol be, one purported to be stronger than the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol?

Nearly everyone's gaze was focused on the Heretical God Symbol that was soon to be auctioned.

During the last auction, when the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol had severely wounded a powerful vicious beast like the Golden Phoenix Crow and had even reformed multiple times afterwards, the images of this event had been recorded in an array disc and spread all throughout Divine Rune City.

Of those that saw the image recordings, all were left shaking.

It wasn't just the inner Asura Road, but even some influences in the outer Asura Road had heard about this event and were quickly catching up.

After the long wait of half a month, the hope and desire had brewed for so long that it was a volcano waiting to explode.

On this day, the dappled sunlight was bright. The deep blue sky was as clear as a mirror, crystal bright and beautiful.

From the moment that Divine Rune City lifted the guardian array formations that protected the city, all sorts of space channels opened up in the skies. Massive ships emerged from these space channels, all of them powered by potent energy crystals.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The smallest of these ships was more than 30 feet high. They flew forwards like floating treasure palaces, emitting bursts of radiant light.

The hulls of these ships were carved with images of phoenixes and dragons. Innumerable runes shimmered around them like a sea of stars.

"Holy crap, I fear that every single one of those ships is holding a Sovereign level character… incredible, too incredible…" In the crowd of people, a visitor that came from outside of Divine Rune City stared up at the treasure ships in the sky, praising the scene.

"Sovereign?" A local of Divine Rune City looked at this visitor with disdain in his eyes. This visitor's cultivation wasn't high and he had only relied on a little bit of business sense to earn some money. Such a person didn't have status nor did they have much respect. "Each of those treasure ships is seating a concubine. They are the concubines of the ruler of Providence Edge Nation, Xu Wuzi."

"What? Concubines!?" The visitor's eyes widened. He found this hard to believe.

“What’s so strange about it…?” The one speaking seemed annoyed. “Providence Edge Nation’s ruler is an Empyrean that has been safeguarding the destiny of the nation for over 10 million years. He rarely leaves but today he actually came to visit our Divine Rune City. It seems this year’s treasure fair is becoming increasingly splendid!”

“Empyrean?”

The visitor was panic-stricken. This was yet another Empyrean!

The divine runic symbols that Lin Ming created were not of much personal use to an Empyrean. However, they were extremely useful to the influences that these figures raised. In other words, they were sharp weapons of war!

And this auction of divine runic symbols would inevitably involve a large number of points. Only an Empyrean personally attending would be able to instantly increase the price as they wanted. Their subordinates wouldn’t have the courage to do so.

As the day of the auction neared, heroes gathered from all corners of the world. Large numbers of different races and clans rushed in like tidal waves.

The flying castle added on eight space channels constructed with top quality space crystals. These space channels connected to massive sphere-like VIP suites within the auction hall arena.

Looking up from the ground, it was like the floating castle had grown eight long tentacles.

At this time, within the entire castle, everyone single seat and room was packed to the brim.

Several items had already been auctioned at the start, but these items hadn’t been able to stir up much of a wave.

The atmosphere was extremely strange. There wasn’t much movement originating from the VIP suites.

A tall hourglass floated high in the sky. The yellow sand within rustled to the bottom, soon about to finish.

Finally, within the many peaceful rooms, there was movement.

Song Wen wore a meticulously-prepared robe as he stepped onto the auction stage. He smiled and said, “Ladies and gentlemen, you’ve had to wait a long time. The next auction will be for the Heretical God Symbols!”

Song Wen’s voice was brief and potent. Although it was short and to the point, it rumbled through every corner of the castle, spreading into every room.

For a time, the movements in the various rooms slowed down.

The auction for the Heretical God Symbols was finally about to begin!

“Is this Heretical God Symbol even more powerful than the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol?” Many people thought, their eyes burning with a blazing light. Their eyes locked onto Song Wen as he took out a gray spirit stone box.

“This Heretical God Symbol is known as being even stronger than the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol? How is it stronger?”

Many people began to ask from the VIP suites.

In truth, besides the Empyreans, although many people waddled over here like packs of ducks to join the auction for the Heretical God Symbol, almost none of them had hopes of successfully winning the bid.

The previous auction for the Heavenly Fire Symbol promissory note had already left them feeling powerless and frustrated. Moreover, this Heretical God Symbol was said to be stronger than the Heavenly Fire Symbol. It was hard to predict just how high and terrifying the final bid price would be. Thus, most people came because they wanted to see the might of the Heretical God Symbol with their own eyes.

Song Wen had already expected this situation. He placed his hand on the spirit stone box and turned around to look behind. At this time, a black-clothed youth silently entered the auction stage from the back. His aura was restrained, his figure was tall and straight, and his steps were slow and steady, each step he took seeming to resonate with the heartbeats of those in the audience.

This youth was Lin Ming.

The one to personally test the Heretical God Symbol would be Lin Ming!

Only by demonstrating the true potency of the Heretical God Symbol in front of everyone would the following bidding war be at its most intense. This was all in order to raise the final bidding price as much as possible.

“He is the creator!”

In the entire auction hall arena, many people recognized Lin Ming.

As people recognized Lin Ming and pointed him out, Lin Ming could feel countless senses locking onto him from the VIP suites.

In particular, several senses were as deep as the vast sea. Compared to those dark divine runic masters that spied on him just half a month ago, these senses were dozens and hundreds of times more terrifying!

It was clear that the masters of these senses were supreme beings of the Asura Road, many of them being Empyreans!

These senses did not offend Lin Ming nor did they attempt to pry into the situation of his spiritual sea. Even so, they made Lin Ming’s skin tighten as if the vision of these people was more than enough to lock him in place.

Lin Ming didn't waste time. He rubbed his hands against the spirit stone box, tracing strange lines across the surface. The seventh grade divine runic box opened, revealing a simple blue divine runic symbol.

As this symbol appeared, it brought with it an ancient and desolate aura, as if it weren't just drawn up not too long ago.

"What wonderfully mystical Law fluctuations…" Within a VIP suite, a terrifyingly strong old man lowered his hands, his fingers flicking back and forth so fast they created illusions. It seemed as if he were calculating the meanings behind these lines.

However, the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws' dao patterns were left behind by the Asura Road Master. How could an Empyrean level powerhouse hope to unravel their mysteries?

No matter what this old man tried to calculate, the only result was a frown on this face. He was simply unable to understand what these lines meant. All he could conclude was that this was a special inheritance that Lin Ming studied. That powerful and mysterious master behind Lin Ming… just what sort of person was he?

At this time, on the auction stage, Lin Ming held the Heretical God Symbol in his hands, all of his focus concentrated on it.

His two pupils flashed with a blinding electric purple light. In the palms of his hands, pitch black nirvanic flames slowly emerged, crackling as they burned.

A vast and great aura emerged from the center of that symbol.

The uniqueness of the Heretical God Symbol was that it simultaneously utilized the Fire and Thunder Laws!

And Lin Ming was the ideal candidate to demonstrate the powers of the Heretical God Symbol!

The Heretical God Symbol was an extremely special divine runic symbol. Although its origins lay with the Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol, it had already become fundamentally different.

It had all sorts of special effects. If other people tried to use it and didn’t have Lin Ming’s instruction and didn’t learn the way to activate the Heretical God Symbol, they wouldn’t be able to display any of its mysteries!

It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that this divine runic symbol was the manifestation of Lin Ming’s current highest level of skill!

At this time, Song Wen activated the auction house’s illusory magic array.

Bang - !

The world trembled.

At this time, the surroundings weren’t the previous time’s primal grasslands. Rather, it was an endless desert of yellow sand, bleak and dreary.

Immersed in this world of yellow sand, everyone was focused on Lin Ming.

All of them wanted to know – just what was so special about this Heretical God Symbol that the Divine Rune City Auction House had propagandized so much about?

Chapter 1645 – Offensive and Defensive

Chapter 1645 – Offensive and Defensive

…

…

…

Deep in the yellow sands, one could see two faint tornado-like things sweep up into the air.

In the depths of these yellow tornados, two eyes shined like lanterns in the dark.

As the tornados appeared, one could see an approaching creature whose entire body was wrapped in thick earth-yellow scales, bizarre and otherworldly.

“That’s a mystic yellow tihu!”

In the audience, many people immediately recognized the vicious beast produced by the illusory magic array. The mystic yellow tihu didn’t possess a strong striking power but its defenses were extremely formidable.

Deep in the distant Great Desolate, there were powerhouses that used this vicious beast as a moving castle to lead their people around.

The defensive capabilities of this creature were several times that of an ordinary World King! It even achieved the standard of a weak Great World King!

The Divine Rune City Auction House was actually testing the Heretical God Symbol with this kind of vicious beast. If so, that meant they had full confidence in the strength of the Heretical God Symbol!

“Could it be that this Heretical God Symbol can injure a Great World King?”

The entire audience fell quiet. Many people looked at Lin Ming with rapt attention, waiting for the answer to be shown.

Lin Ming took up the Heretical God Symbol in his palm. Pitch black flames and blazing purple thunder flashed together. At the same time, countless Asura Heavenly Dao Laws gathered together, connecting with the thunder and fire in Lin Ming’s palm.

Seeing as the power of thunder and fire fused together with the Asura Laws, in that moment, Lin Ming’s sense and the perception of time seemed to slow down to a crawl, like the slowly flowing grains of sand in an hourglass.

Pulled up by Lin Ming’s soul force, the Heretical God Symbol floated up in front of him.

Lin Ming raised his left and right hands. Using his two index fingers, he pierced towards the Heretical God Symbol, causing two light ripples to spread out like a rock hitting a lake surface.

His two pupils immediately flashed with a jolt of electricity that twined around one ripple.

Then, a thin strand of black fire twined around the other ripple.

In front of him, waves of substantialized soul force appeared. The two ripples began to twist in the air as if they were being manipulated by an invisible hand, quickly twisting until they seemed like images of blooming flowers.

The entire process seemed very slow, but it was also completed almost instantly.

And just a few miles away from Lin Ming, at the edges of the desert, one could see those two faint tornados rolling towards him, leaving a swallowed world in their wake.

As for Lin Ming, he remained motionless. All that remained in front of him were these two flashes of thunder and fire.

The auction house's testing array formation was different from the rented testing array formation at the Divine Runic Masters Guild. The rented testing array formation was only an illusory magic array, but this one being activated right now was actually a true illusory killing array!

If one stood motionless and allowed the array formation to freely attack them then they would definitely be grievously wounded!

"What is Lin Ming doing? Has he not activated that Heretical God Symbol? That mystic yellow tihu is about to trample over him!"

But as everyone saw Lin Ming control the faint circles of thunder and fire around him and yet the Heretical God Symbol didn't activate, some people began to develop doubts. Just what was Lin Ming doing?

If Lin Ming was luring the mystic yellow tihu to close range before he detonated the Heretical God Symbol, then he too would be affected by the explosion if the beast was too close!!

Then, people watched as the mystic yellow tihu crossed the 100 foot line from Lin Ming. That distance was the best chance to detonate the Heretical God Symbol!

At this time, the two groups of energy around Lin Ming began to produce tiny patterns of energy composed of threads smaller than silk. These lines of energy pulled into the void, developing into numerous patterns.

In just a twinkle of the eye, a series of thin energy lines spread out, surrounding Lin Ming. Moreover, these energy lines were all different from each other. They were energy patterns that those present had never seen before, and seemed to contain tens of millions of possible changes within them. Each energy line seemed to entangle with the others, inspiring more and more changes. In just an instant, half of these energy lines that were drawn out developed into threads of shining lightning and the other half developed into glistening threads of fire, rapidly condensing into a red and purple two-colored array diagram.

At this time, the tyrannical tsunami of sand that rushed over struck Lin Ming, but was completely submerged into the thunderfire array diagram in his hand.

Seeing this, Xiao Moxian couldn't help but cry out in alarm. Although she knew in her heart that Lin Ming was safe, she still couldn't avoid her heart clenching upon seeing such a sight.

Bang!

A massive explosion occurred!

The mystic yellow tihu with its incomparably firm body and its maximum velocity crashed into the thunderfire array diagram!

It was a meteor impacting into the earth. A powerful impact swept outwards, bringing up waves of yellow sand that were tens of thousands of tons heavy!

This terrifying strength left the entire auction hall shaking! Everyone found it hard to remain still and some of the weaker martial artists couldn't help but cry out in alarm.

Lin Ming hadn't attacked from beginning to end. Instead, he used the thunderfire array diagram to block the frontal dash of the mystic yellow tihu!

As the yellow sands settled, everyone saw that the mystic yellow tihu had its head left bloodstained after colliding with the thunderfire array diagram. As for the thunder array diagram, it only slightly bent without any sign of breaking! By using the power of the Heretical God Symbol alone, Lin Ming had defended against an attack with the all-out strength of an ordinary World King.

Could this be a defensive divine runic symbol?

Everyone immediately thought. A defensive divine runic symbol was rarely seen and was often much more expensive than offensive divine runic symbols.

But when they heard the description from Divine Rune City, the Heretical God Symbol should have been an immensely destructive divine runic symbol!

Before people had more time to think, Lin Ming suddenly grasped the Heretical God Symbol with both hands and pushed it out.

The palm-sized Heretical God Symbol suddenly rose and countless threads of thunder and fire spun around until they formed a massive vortex, instantly covering the heavens and earth. This vortex formed a giant web that wrapped around the massive mystic yellow tihu.

In that moment, within the endless yellow sands, a brilliant light erupted like a rising sun.

In the middle of this light, crackling bolts of thunder twisted around with a conflagration of raging flames.

The flames and thunder twisted together, roaring like the birth of a fire dragon and thunder dragon.

Several hundred earth-shaking explosions echoed out from the midst of the giant vortex of raging flames and twisting thunder, illuminating the world like a descending apocalypse.

Thunder collapsed the earth as snakes of fire shot to the heavens.

Within this vortex, the mystic yellow tihu roared out again and again, but its howls slowly turned lower and deeper as it gradually faded away…

The explosions produced a brilliant light that formed an incomparably thick swirling column of thunder and fire. As it rapidly spun around, the world seemed to tear apart around it as the surrounding ground caved in, forming a massive crater hundreds of miles deep.

From where the explosions occurred, a pit so deep appeared that one couldn’t see the bottom.

The mystic yellow tihu’s scales had nearly all fallen off. Its giant tail dangled to the ground.

Although it was still living, it was on the verge of death, approaching death with every breath it took.

“Within the Heretical God Symbol, the mark of the Asura Heavenly Dao patterns will reverse in the void to reform yin yang patterns of the Asura Heavenly Dao… this also agrees with the true meaning of the Extreme Dual Polarity Symbol, the absolute polars of thunder and fire… the power is as expected. Moreover, with the revolution of yin and yang, it can attack but also instantly form a defensive barrier when the symbol is activated!”

Drops of sweat dripped down the tip of Lin Ming’s nose. He was extremely satisfied with the performance of the Heretical God Symbol.

In creating the Heretical God Symbol, Lin Ming had consumed a great deal of effort and diligent care. As he created the Heretical God Symbol, his comprehension of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws also became much deeper…

At this time, in all the rooms and seats, everyone had forgotten how to speak.

This was a dual offensive and defensive divine runic symbol!

Normally, divine runic symbols were one-time use items that could either be used to defend or attack. But, the net of thunder and fire formed by the Heretical God Symbol was an offensive and defensive form!

Imagine. Two martial artists were in a life or death battle and both had utilized all of their abilities and were completely exhausted.

At the end, they both used their ultimate finishing blows. But at this time, one side took out a Heretical God Symbol, defending against the opponent’s attack but also erupting with a terrifying attack, directly covering the enemy in a sea of thunder and flame! Just what sort of effect would that have?

Moreover, this Heretical God Symbol had reached a terrifying degree of strength whether it was in defense or offense. Even that mystic yellow tihu with an incredible defensive power comparable to a weak Great World King had been beaten half-dead!

In other words, even if one were a Great World King, if they didn't understand the unique attributes of the Heretical God Symbol and were fooled, they would be placed in an extremely difficult situation, possibly even injured!

For a time, the entire castle fell silent. One could clearly hear the breathing of others even from a long distance.

And at this time, that brutal and violent power of thunder and fire in the skies began to gather together. The lines of the Asura Heavenly Dao condensed, forming endless starlight that sprinkled down.

The power of thunderfire and the Asura Heavenly Dao was sucked into a giant vortex. Then, it shrank until it finally transformed into a perfectly intact divine runic symbol that fell into Lin Ming's hand.

The Heretical God Symbol was reborn!

Seeing this scene, although many people had expected it earlier, they couldn't help but feel their jaws drop down, shocked speechless.

To be reborn and reused, this was the special attribute of the 'Lin' logo!

However, when one considered the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol that wasn't much stronger than the original, it wasn't too amazing even if it could be used multiple times.

Following that was the Heavenly Fire Symbol. It was ridiculously powerful, to the point of being obscene. Moreover, it could also be used multiple times. This was far more impressive and also the reason that they sold for a sky high price of 3.6 billion points.

But now, this Heretical God Symbol was both offensive and defensive, and in the attack process there seemed to be all sorts of incredible changes as if there were many more mysteries waiting to be unlocked, but Lin Ming simply hadn't had the time to reveal them.

This divine runic symbol that could nearly bring the dead back to life in a dire situation, that was so abnormal that it could wound a Great World King, could actually be used multiple times!

This just destroyed all common sense! If one had several Heretical God Symbols in hand, then an ordinary World King would be able to challenge and speak the last words with a weak Great World King!

And if used in a war, there was definitely no need to speak of their efficacy! These were different from the Nirvanic Tribulation Flame Symbol because these Heretical God Symbols could be used in battles between high level figures of the sects. If using a Heretical God Symbol was able to turn certain defeat into victory between a battle of World Kings, then this would be worth an astronomical level of wealth!

It had to be known that every World King was formed by piling up an immense amount of resources!

Thinking of this, the complexions of the several Empyreans in the VIP suites began to change.

Chapter 1646 – Conditions of an Empyrean

Chapter 1646 – Conditions of an Empyrean

…

…

…

“Little Brother Lin’s test has ended. Elder Xue, I would also like to ask you to evaluate the rank of this divine runic symbol.” Song Wen took a deep breath, his eyes excited. He had a premonition that today’s auctions would reach all new heights!

Elder Xue froze for a moment. His eyes reluctantly moved away from the illusory magic array.

“This is…” Elder Xue hesitated for several breaths of time. Then, he said, “Little friend Lin Ming, this Heretical God Symbol… how many times can it be used?”

Elder Xue’s eyes were affable as he looked at Lin Ming.

“About three or four times…” Lin Ming said after thinking about it for some time. If he used it himself, he could use it up to five times, but others didn’t have this ability. “Because it can attack and defend, the flow of energy is extremely great and the burden on the tiny runes is much larger, thus it can only be used this many times.”

Out of the three divine runic symbols that Lin Ming had improved, the Heretical God Symbol was the one that could be used the least number of times.

This was the price of great power. But, this power alone was enough to drive others crazy.

This was a top grade divine runic symbol that could even resist a Great World King!

This power was far more important than the number of times it could be used. If the power was lacking then even if it could be used several times it still wouldn't be as useful as one tremendous attack!

"Formidable might, excellent technique… this divine runic symbol can compare to a superior sixth grade divine runic symbol in power alone, but it also has the characteristic of being offensive and defensive as well as being able to be used multiple times… and, most importantly, the restrictions to use it are far, far lower than those of a superior sixth grade divine runic symbol. Because of all of these factors, its value cannot be compared to that of an ordinary superior sixth grade divine runic symbol. It's impossible for me to determine its exact price. I will have to ask everyone else to make their own judgment."

Elder Xue summarized after thinking for some time.

Superior sixth grade – that was the domain of a Great World King!

"Superior sixth grade!?" Many people were left dumbfounded by this. If Lin Ming's divine runic arts skill continued to rise, then he might be able to draw up a true superior sixth grade divine runic symbol. Perhaps he even might be able to draw up a quasi-seventh grade divine runic symbol!

What sort of concept was a seventh grade divine runic symbol?

If a World King powerhouse used one, they could pose a threat to a half-step Empyrean!

"What a wonderful treasure. Indeed, it is much better than the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol. This trip was not made in vain…"

"Although the Heretical God Symbol takes a decent amount of time to gather enough potential, it can actually defend during this time!"

"This Lin Ming's strength also far surpasses other martial artists of his level. Although he appears to only be at the Divine Lord realm, using that divine runic symbol requires strength at least at the peak Holy Lord realm. If an ordinary Divine Lord martial artist were to use this divine runic symbol their soul force would have completely dried up by now…"

It wasn't known who said this, but these sudden words seemed to wake everyone up from their daze. Because Lin Ming created miracle after miracle, many people forgot that he was a mere Divine Lord realm martial artist.

"If that's the case, then let us begin the auction! The promissory note is still for 500 divine runic symbols. The base price is zero and every increase in bidding cannot be less than 50 million points!"

Song Wen's voice was boisterous. But just as the bidders were about to engage in a crazy bidding war, a light voice called out, "These 500 promissory notes, just when they will be fulfilled?"

This voice echoed out from the VIP suites, carrying with it indescribable vicissitudes, as if these years contained the concept of endless time.

Everyone was startled. They looked up towards the VIP suites and immediately felt a chill crawl up their backs.

The one speaking was the supreme ruler of Providence Edge Divine Nation, Xu Wuzi. Xu Wuzi had broken into the Empyrean realm many years ago, and he also had high attainments in alchemy and the divine runic arts.

And even Empyrean level divine runic masters wanted to purchase Lin Ming's divine runic symbols.

Whether it was the Heretical God Symbol or Heavenly Fire Symbol, their most important characteristic was the lowered requirements that allowed lower level martial artists to use them. This was an ability that not even Empyrean level divine runic masters possessed.

Xu Wuzi was immediately able to see how complex the Heretical God Symbol was. He found it hard to imagine that this was a real fifth grade divine runic symbol!

And correspondingly, the more complex a divine runic symbol was, the more difficult it was to create. The more time that one took to draw up, the likelier the chances were of failure!

A promissory note of 500 Heretical God Symbols was easily said, but the truth was that this order wasn't easy to fulfill, especially if the creator's cultivation wasn't high enough.

Xu Wuzi's vision pierced through the array formations of the VIP suites and fell onto Lin Ming's body.

Song Wen as well as many other bidders also looked at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. "Perhaps… three years."

Currently, Lin Ming's success rate in drawing up Heretical God Symbols was around 60-70%.

Although he could hold a demonstration of drawing up the Heavenly Fire Symbol in front of everyone, he couldn't do the same with the Heretical God Symbol. Even if he used up all of his soul force in drawing up a single Heretical God Symbol, there was still a considerable chance of failure!

Moreover, drawing up a Heretical God Symbol required a tremendous amount of soul force. The most he could do was one per day.

Considering this speed and also the fact that he had to draw up the Heavenly Fire Symbols, he had then stated the time requirement of three years.

This was a deadline that Lin Ming could afford. It was inevitable that his soul force would slowly increase and with every passing day his understandings of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws would become more and more profound. Thus, he might not even need such a long time.

"Oh?"

Xu Wuzi was secretly startled!

Other people didn't know what three years meant, but as a divine runic master Xu Wuzi certainly understood what it meant for Lin Ming to complete 500 Heavenly Fire Symbols and 500 Heretical God Symbols in this time period. Just the Heretical God Symbol alone would completely exhaust the soul force of a sixth grade divine runic master!

"Good! Then I have no problem with bidding on these promissory notes. But, I need a delivery deadline. If I win the bid for the Heretical God Symbols then I hope that every three months the Divine Runic Masters Guild will send the finished divine runic symbols to Providence Edge Nation. If the entire batch of 500 divine runic symbols cannot be completed in three years then I also require the return of all points!"

Xu Wuzi's words left all the other bidders breathless. This condition was more than ruthless!

If Lin Ming couldn't fulfill the promissory notes on time then not only would he lose all points, he would also have to pay the money for the materials as well as lose all the time and effort he invested!

This was the same as tossing away three years of hard work!

Many divine runic masters were left dumbstruck.

However, if one was selling promissory notes, there certainly should be a deadline limit. With these conditions, only someone with absolute faith in their abilities would agree. The difficulty of drawing up this Heretical God Symbol was simply dreadful beyond recognition.

Xu Wuzi's words won the unanimous approval of the many great bidders who came from all over the inner Asura Road! These top characters all had a cultivation at the Empyrean realm. Although they had taken a fancy for the Heretical God Symbol, they wouldn't wildly bid for a promissory note just because of a brief moment of impulsiveness.

Thus before they began, they all decided to put forth this oppressive condition!

Everyone’s eyes turned to Lin Ming.

In this situation, this oppressive pressure wasn’t something that an ordinary person could withstand. Lin Ming’s expression was calm. He thought for a moment and said, “Yes, I agree!”

These simple words were filled with vigor, leaving those who heard them shocked. Lin Ming had actually agreed!

His confidence was bewildering. It seemed that he really believed he could complete these divine runic symbols in three years!

“But… I also hope to put forth another condition.”

Lin Ming changed the flow of conversation. Xu Wuzi’s eyebrows lifted up. He lightly said, “Speak.”

“It’s not special. I only hope that after the bidding is over, the payment is paid with half points and half rare materials.”

Lin Ming had more than enough points right now. What he needed was materials.

And especially rare and precious materials, the kinds that couldn’t be found in markets.

“Good, I have no problem with that!”

Xu Wuzi readily agreed. The other Empyreans also tacitly approved of this.

At this time, Xu Wuzi didn’t bother waiting for Song Wen to announce the start of the auction again. He directly opened his mouth and said, “The auction has started, then? Then I will be the first to bid. 4 billion!”

This bid left nearly everyone in the audience choking on themselves.

Even with a base price of zero, Xu Wuzi had directly started with an initial bid of 4 billion! This caused over 99% of bidders in attendance to fall out of the bidding war. They couldn't even summon the courage to think of shouting out a higher price.

Originally, many of them had thoughts of shouting out several bids. Although they didn't expect to win the Heretical God Symbol, they wanted to bid against Empyreans on the auction stage and also participate in this grand event of the Heretical God Symbol auction. In the future, they could also say to their friends and family that they joined in on this bidding war!

But, they never imagined that Xu Wuzi wouldn't even give them the chance to do so.

From the start, this auction of Heretical God Symbols was a battle between Empyreans!

The entire arena hall fell silent for a time. The auction for the Heretical God Symbols wasn't the heated battle that everyone imagined it would be, with people shouting bid after higher bid.

Rather, this was an extremely somber and wintry war.

Although it was so, every new bid left one panic-stricken!

"4.2 billion!"

A faint woman's voice echoed out. The one calling out this bid was Empyrean Minor Violet. This was only the second bid and yet the price had already reached such heights. Even Empyrean Extreme Star who had rushed here from Extreme Star Heavenly Palace felt himself gasping for breath!

He had a faint premonition that their Extreme Star Holy Lands would lose this time.

These people were simply far too crazy! And their Extreme Star Holy Lands didn't have much wealth remaining.

As Suya saw Empyrean Extreme Star's somewhat ugly complexion, she guessed that for this auction, their Extreme Star Holy Lands had fallen out of contention.

As for whether or not there would be any harvests, everything would depend on her personal relationship with Lin Ming.

However, Lin Ming had already agreed to complete 1000 divine runic symbols within three years, so where would he have the time to draw up divine runic symbols for the Extreme Star Holy Lands?

As Suya was worrying, the bid had already risen to 4.5 billion!

Then, another bid came from Empyrean Minor Violet. It seemed that this woman of mystical origin and strength desired to obtain the Heretical God Symbols no matter the cost.

"4.6 billion!"

Her faint voice echoed through the arena hall. Besides Empyreans shouting out new bids, everyone remained silent. Even the auctioneer Song Wen didn't speak a single word, not even asking if there was anyone wishing to bid a higher price.

"This woman..." Xu Wuzi frowned. He shouted out 4 billion from the start and although this bid seemed exaggerated it was only able to frighten the bidders in the ordinary seats and ordinary rooms. The Empyreans in the VIP suites simply weren't suppressed by him. They bid as they wished to bid and continued to compete if they desired to do so.

"Your Majesty's thoughts must not be thrown into confusion..." An old man cautioned Xu Wuzi from the side. This old man was the Imperial Scholar of Providence Edge Nation. If he was able to speak warning wards to Xu Wuzi, it was clear his status was extremely high.

Even though he was reminded to not be thrown into confusion, how could Xu Wuzi remain calm at this time? He feared that his Providence Edge Nation might soon be sucked into the dreadful flames of war, and the reason for this war was related to the final trial...

At this time, another voice echoed out from the VIP suites, “4.8 billion.”

“It’s Empyrean Deep Gloom!”

Someone cried out in alarm. The positions of the many Empyreans weren’t a secret to begin with. Moreover, just from the aura of these Empyreans and the mounts and spirit ships on which they arrived, most people were able to correctly guess their identities.

“It was a struggle between two Empyreans but now another one has joined it! I have no idea who the winner will be!”

These Empyrean level characters were all exorbitantly wealthy. To them, it wasn’t whether or not they had the money to pay, but just how valuable these 500 Heretical God Symbols were in their minds.

After all, although Empyreans were wealthy, they still had to mull over the worth of spending billions of points.

“4.9 billion!” Xu Wuzi braced himself as he spat out this price. He was already feeling somewhat weak-hearted. If this Empyrean Deep Gloom were shouting at this price at this time, it was likely he came prepared. To him, this bid might only be the opening salvo!

Against such an opponent, Xu Wuzi certainly felt dread!

“5 billion!”

“5.1 billion!”

With this, Empyrean Deep Gloom and Xu Wuzi began to cruelly battle. If they continued struggling like this it was unknown how high the bid would go!

In his VIP suite, although Xu Wuzi had already broken into the Empyrean realm and couldn’t be concerned with most treasures in this world, he still found his palms slick with sweat. It was becoming increasingly hard for him to maintain his composure.

“5.5 billion!” Empyrean Deep Gloom suddenly spat out. By suddenly increasing the price by 400 million, it seemed as if Empyrean Deep Gloom wanted to strike Xu Wuzi to death with this single blow!

Xu Wuzi’s pupils shrank. He opened his mouth again and again but eventually didn’t increase the bid.

And at this time, a clear womanly voice spread through the entire hall. “5 billion points plus a million year dragon saliva grass! These 500 Heretical God Symbols, I will buy them all!”

These sudden words stunned the entire audience. Even Lin Ming straightened up. Million year dragon saliva grass!

What he needed now was dragon saliva grass!

At the Divine Rune City Auction, there was only the jade dragon horn for sale; it was the Dragon Contract that would be auctioned off in several days.

However, there was no dragon saliva grass to be found.

Still, Lin Ming had researched several substitutes for dragon saliva grass. Although they just managed to fulfill the requirements for the Celestial Tyrant Manual, the effects were naturally far inferior to those of dragon saliva grass.

In these past days, Lin Ming had tried to search for dragon saliva grass through several different methods. And, it seems that this news was uncovered by Empyrean Minor Violet.

Before coming to this auction for the Heretical God Symbols, Empyrean Minor Violet had already gathered intel on Lin Ming and came here especially prepared to aim at his needs!

According to the information recorded within the Celestial Tyrant Manual, 500 thousand year dragon saliva grass was sufficient for use. But, Empyrean Minor Violet had suddenly offered million year dragon saliva grass. Just this dragon saliva grass alone was worth over a billion points.

In addition, Empyrean Minor Violet also put forth a bid of 5 billion. In other words, Empyrean Minor Violet's ski-high bid was worth more than 6 billion points in total. On average, every Heretical God Symbol sold for more than 12 million points!

This price was nearly impossible to withstand. Even Lin Ming felt it somewhat ridiculous!

Empyrean Deep Gloom remained completely quiet.

The entire audience fell silent for a long time. Song Wen began counting down from three but no one increased the bid. Finally, this auction was announced as having been won by Empyrean Minor Violet!

With the 6 billion plus points in addition to the wealth that Lin Ming gained from auctioning off the Heavenly Fire Symbols, in just over half a month, Lin Ming had relied on the auction of two promissory notes to obtain a wealth worth 10 billion points.

From hearing this, it was like some bedtime fairytale!

So many great figures had gone crazy about these to promissory notes, and even many Empyrean supreme elders weren't able to afford them. If one didn't witness these events with their own eyes it would be hard to believe!

Many people remained in a shocked state for a long time, feeling nothing but a deep envy and awe. They didn't regain their composure for a long time.

People increasingly admired and became stupefied by this formidable and mysterious youth. He seemed to have emerged from thin air within the inner Asura Road, without any news of him before!

His talent was extraordinary, his strength was unusual, and his divine runic arts inheritance was inconceivable. When this was combined with his young skeletal age, it made Lin Ming a miracle that far outstripped the auction of the Heretical God Symbols!

After several days, the name of Lin Ming and his ‘Lin’ logo was widely spread through the inner Asura Road. Many great influences in the inner Asura Road learned of him!

And according to the speed at which this news spread, it was likely that Lin Ming’s name would soon spread to every nook and cranny of the inner Asura Road!

What people paid the most attention to was that Lin Ming didn’t seem to have joined a sect!

Although Divine Rune City was itself an Empyrean level influence, they were more similar to an alliance of interests and not a true sect.

Divine Rune City also didn’t forbid their divine runic masters from joining other sects.

This also caused many influences to hold out an olive branch to Lin Ming.

Some influences even prepared some rare and precious materials, wanting to invite Lin Ming to join them. As for the fiery Divine Rune City Auction, it became even more lively!

In the Divine Runic Masters Guild, the air above Lin Ming’s residence was filled with spirit boats. Many messengers from great influences wished to meet with him and discuss having him join their sects.

However, regarding this, Lin Ming used the excuse of needing to maximize his time to fulfill the order of 1000 divine runic symbols within three years to throw all of them off!

Lin Ming was well aware that these influences would undoubtedly put forth attractive conditions to joining them. But at the same time, they also wanted to earn even greater returns from Lin Ming.

Lin Ming didn’t plan on staying in the Asura Road for much longer. After the final trial ended, he planned to return to the Divine Realm. If he were to join these influences and accept their gifts, perhaps they might not let him leave so simply.

As for drawing up divine runic symbols for these influences, Lin Ming only needed to draw up a new divine runic symbol and he could easily sell them at high prices, so why would he need to join these other influences and be subject to all sorts of restrictions?

Thus, even if some people offered to find Lin Ming a jade dragon horn in a short period of time if he joined them, he still wouldn’t agree.

Beyond that, there were even those that offered him top living furnaces. Some Empyreans wished to marry off their granddaughters with special physiques so that Lin Ming could dual cultivate with them. But Lin Ming had no interest in this and rejected them all without exception.

Chapter 1647 – Auction of the Jade Dragon Horn

Chapter 1647 – Auction of the Jade Dragon Horn

…

…

…

Because of Lin Ming and the ‘Lin’ logo, the Divine Rune City Auction was even fierier!

Even though Lin Ming’s divine runic symbol auctions had ended, the residual heat had yet to dissipate. The Empyrean level characters hadn’t left and in the next several days all sorts of treasures sold at new heights.

As for Lin Ming, he also purchased a rare material required to refine a variation of soul recovery pill.

This soul recovery pill was not for Lin Ming himself, but was something he was preparing for Empyrean Divine Mist. Before Lin Ming won the auction for the rare material he needed, he had already gone to the Divine Runic Masters Guild to purchase the rest of the necessary materials. Lin Ming felt that with his own current ability in alchemy, combined with his divine runic arts, he could just barely refine a pill that would have an effect on an Empyrean.

During this time, Empyrean Minor Violet also paid the dragon saliva grass to Lin Ming in advance.

The million year dragon saliva grass was a top material amongst top materials.

Normally, dragon saliva grass took 100,000 years to germinate. Then for growing and flowering, that also required another 100,000 years.

After that, in order to mature, there needed to be a Divine Dragon protecting this dragon saliva grass, watering it with saliva daily so that it would eventually grow fruit.

Seizing dragon saliva grass from the claws of a Divine Dragon required an Empyrean to personally go out and capture it!

Thus, the price for this raw material could be imagined!

Lin Ming held the wood spirit jade box in his hands. Looking at the dark jade-colored grass stalk in the box as well as the purple gold-colored fruit, he could feel all his blood energy being pulled by it, as if his blood was about to gush out from his body.

This dragon saliva grass was bred with the life essence of a True Dragon, thus it naturally resonated with Lin Ming's True Dragon bloodline! Even if Lin Ming didn't use this ingredient for alchemy, just swallowing it alone would have immeasurable advantage to him!

Looking at this dragon saliva grass, Lin Ming impatiently wished to start refining the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill.

However, as he thought of his current strength, he knew it would be difficult to ensure success in refining this pill.

He could only suppress the restlessness in his heart and put away the dragon saliva grass.

Then, another five days passed.

The Divine Rune City Auction was nearing its end. On this day, on the auction stage, there was something that Lin Ming had to buy!

On the wide auction stage, two beautiful maids pushed in a small cart. This cart had a jade box that was covered with yellow silk on it.

This jade box was seven foot long. After opening it, one could see a treasure that was as high as a person. This treasure was snow white all over. It resembled a giant sickle that didn't have a handle.

Song Wen personally took out this treasure. For a time, the treasure exuded a vast and bleak aura. This aura condensed into a white dragon phantom in the skies as if it would soar away at any moment!

As everyone present saw this white dragon phantom, they felt their surroundings drastically change. They seemed to arrive in a cold and chaotic world with grim animal bones stretching into the endless distance, just like deep in the Great Desolate.

Dragon Contract!

Lin Ming's eyes brightened. This Dragon Contract was refined with a jade dragon horn and was an Empyrean spirit treasure!

A Jade Dragon was also called a White Dragon. It was an extremely rare species within the ancient dragon race and was snow white all over.

Now, in the entire Divine Realm it was impossible to find the tracks of a White Dragon. In order to find a White Dragon, one would need to go to other lands within the 33 Heavens.

Lin Ming had to refine the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill, and the jade dragon horn was an irreplaceable material. And, this material was also extremely rare. Since it was being auctioned, Lin Ming definitely wouldn't miss it!

With a wealth of 10 billion points to support him, Lin Ming would obtain this Dragon Contract no matter what!

"Everyone, this is a Dragon Contract that a World King powerhouse found in the depths of an ancient ruin! Moreover, this Dragon Contract has the spirit of a True Dragon sealed within it. The spirit of this True Dragon may be summoned to assist you in battle! Not just that, but the Dragon Contract itself is a sharp weapon that may be used to cut down your enemies!"

Song Wen confidently said. As many martial artists saw this Dragon Contract, their eyes shined with avarice.

"What a good treasure! It's another Empyrean spirit treasure, and quite good even amongst Empyrean spirit treasures!"

"Of course, just the materials used to refine it are extraordinary; it requires an extremely rare jade dragon horn. That material alone could sell for 700-800 million points and it was only used to refine this treasure!"

Many martial artists, especially World King powerhouses, felt their eyes light up. Although the World Kings present were spectacularly rich, there were very few of them that had Empyrean spirit treasures. Even Great World Kings were the same.

The response of the audience didn't exceed Song Wen's expectations. He faintly smiled and said, "Now the auction shall begin. The base price is one billion points! Every bid increase cannot be less than 20 million points!"

As Song Wen shouted out this base price, many people suddenly deflated as if a bucket of cold water had been tossed over them. Many people that were originally full of enthusiasm suddenly sighed in dejection.

Just the base price was a billion points. The final winning bid was likely to be far higher. Just where would they have the points for this?

In truth, they had already expected that they wouldn't be able to afford this Dragon Contract. It was just that with this top treasure placed in front of them, they couldn't help but daydream about it. If they could really buy it, just how wonderful would that be? And after daydreaming about this treasure, many of them even imagined that they would soon obtain it.

However, the base price shouted by Song Wen caused all of their daydreams to blow up like bubbles.

“1.02 billion!”

A World King grit his teeth and shouted out from an ordinary room.

“1.05 billion.”

Another World King shouted.

“1.1 billion!”

The bid rapidly rose. Generally speaking, an Empyrean wouldn’t have any interest in an Empyrean spirit treasure. Those that shouted out bids were mostly World Kings, and those that could put forth a bid of a billion points for an Empyrean spirit treasure were undoubtedly extremely wealthy individuals.

At this time, an old voice echoed out –

“1.3 billion!”

The one calling out this bid was an old man in the ordinary seats! To increase the bid by 200 million it was clear that he wanted this Dragon Contract no matter what!

Many people were surprised by this old man. They were shocked that there was actually such a character in the ordinary seats. This old man wore worn out robes and seemed a bit unkempt, but no one dared to underestimate him because his cultivation was at the Great World King realm!

Many older Great World Kings were well aware that they would never make another breakthrough in their lives, thus they devoted all of their time and energy to researching and refining magic tools to increase their overall combat strength.

This old robed man was clearly in this type of situation.

But after the old robed man spoke, Lin Ming opened his mouth and stretched out two fingers. He slowly said, “2 billion!”

This sudden voice startled the entire audience. Even Song Wen was shocked.

When Lin Ming first spoke he had directly increased the bid to 2 billion! In terms of points, he was filthy, disgustingly rich!

Chapter 1648 – All Materials Collected

Chapter 1648 – All Materials Collected

…

…

…

“From 1.3 billion to 2 billion all of a sudden!?”

The bidders present looked towards the room that Lin Ming was in. To an Empyrean, 2 billion was an amount that would hurt but was still something they could take out. But, those that were competing for the Dragon Contract were mostly World King level characters. 2 billion points was definitely an amount that would bankrupt them.

Lin Ming had suddenly increased the bid by 700 million; it wasn’t a surprise that everyone was shocked.

“That is Lin Ming’s bid!”

“So it’s him…”

In these days, the location of Lin Ming’s ordinary room had already been memorized by many people. Lin Ming didn’t use an isolating array formation either so others were able to see him.

“Lin Ming’s bid will make anyone reconsider this auction. The highest bid Empyrean spirit treasure has only sold for 2 billion so far and that was because it was a battle between two tigers…”

The 2 billion point Empyrean spirit treasure that was referred to was the Violet Gold Spear purchased by Duke Fullmoon.

Besides Suya, no one knew that the reason the Violet Gold Spear sold for such a high price was because Lin Ming was deliberately conning Duke Fullmoon.

And in Lin Ming's mind, the Dragon Contract was undoubtedly far more valuable than the Violet Gold Spear!

Just the materials used to refine the Dragon Contract alone were worth over a billion points in total.

Moreover, as the Dragon Contract appeared and Song Wen introduced it, Lin Ming had made a new discovery.

It was that sealed within the Dragon Contract, there was the spirit of a True Dragon. It was possible to summon this spirit to aid one in battle.

The so-called spirit of a True Dragon that Song Wen spoke of was in truth an incomplete dragon soul.

The Dragon Contract had a true wisp of an incomplete dragon soul sealed within it! This was why within the name of this spirit artifact there was the word 'contract'.

A jade dragon horn plus a wisp of a dragon soul, these two divine things were greatly beneficial to Lin Ming. After all, he had the blood of the True Dragon within him. Thus Lin Ming had to win the auction for this Dragon Contract no matter what!

At this time, Lin Ming's eyes moved over to the VIP suite that Duke Fullmoon was in.

In these past days, Duke Fullmoon had been keeping a low profile and was far more subdued than he was in the past. This was because other high level figures of the Divine Void Divine Kingdom's Nine Nether Province had come to Divine Rune City and their goal was also to participate in the grand auction event for the Heretical God Symbol.

Through the array formation of the VIP suite, Lin Ming's eyes and expression were all seen by Duke Fullmoon.

In fact, Duke Fullmoon knew that through the array formations of his suite, it was impossible for Lin Ming to see him. But for some unknown reason, as he caught Lin Ming's gaze, Duke Fullmoon felt his heart chill and he found it hard to keep looking back at him.

This was the pressure that came from Lin Ming continually suppressing Duke Fullmoon all this time!

"This brat!"

Duke Fullmoon clenched his fists. In his eyes, Lin Ming was only a Divine Lord realm boy, and even with all things considered he was only comparable to a peak Holy Lord. Compared to him, the difference was far from being comparable. However, when he faced Lin Ming he actually felt a bit weak of heart. This feeling of inferiority was extremely uncomfortable to Duke Fullmoon.

At this time, Lin Ming's lips moved.

Duke Fullmoon was startled. Even through the walls and the isolating array formation, he could still clearly sound out Lin Ming's unspoken words.

"I indeed have a great interest in this Dragon Contract. If you're thinking of bleeding me out then you can feel free to shout whatever price you want. But, I won't guarantee that I won't stop at any time I wish. If that happens, I hope you have enough points to be responsible for the bid you called out."

Lin Ming said these words with a confident look. Duke Fullmoon felt ill.

His wealth had just been used to buy up the Violet Gold Spear. Anything left remaining was the wealth of Divine Void Divine Kingdom.

This wealth was all required to buy things desired by the Nine Nether King of the Nine Nether Province; he wasn't able to use it as he pleased. If Lin Ming decided to give up the auction and Duke Fullmoon was discovered as having bid an exorbitant price on this Dragon Contract, then he would be deader than dead.

He didn't know just how invested Lin Ming was in obtaining the Dragon Contract. If the events of the Violet Gold Spear were to replay themselves then he really would have no more tears to cry from grief.

If he wanted to struggle with Lin Ming, his entire total wealth now was only around 2 billion points; he simply didn't have the will or the energy to continue competing. Moreover, his need of the Dragon Contract wasn't that intense to begin with. Duke Fullmoon didn't have the courage to play with his life on the line just to try and con Lin Ming out of several hundred million more points.

"Fullmoon, what is it? It seems that Lin Ming is targeting you?"

A blue-clothed old man asked from beside Duke Fullmoon.

This blue-clothed old man was one of the top aides of the Nine Nether King and also possessed a half-step Empyrean cultivation. Within the Nine Nether Province, his status was a level higher than Duke Fullmoon's.

Concerning Duke Fullmoon and Lin Ming's conflict, besides Suya and a select few others, no one knew of it. Thus, after the blue-clothed old man arrived at Divine Rune City, even he hadn't heard any rumors about it.

This question left Duke Fullmoon looking a bit awkward. He vaguely mumbled, "I only competed for a spear against him…"

Duke Fullmoon said, concealing the fact of his conflict with Lin Ming. The blue-clothed old man nodded, "Mm… it's best if you don't have any conflicts with Lin Ming. This young divine runic master will have a limitless future! The Nine Nether King has a particular focus on this type of person. When I came to Divine Rune City, he advised me to be on good terms with him if possible; he will surely be a great help to us! You must know that between the Seven Provinces of Divine Void Divine Kingdom, the competition is extremely fierce…”

The blue-clothed old man seemed to guess what was happening. As he looked at Duke Fullmoon he spoke with deep hidden meanings in his voice.

Hearing these words, Duke Fullmoon felt as if he had swallowed a fly.

“What? You have grudges with Lin Ming?” The blue-clothed old man’s eyes were as bright and illuminating as torches. He could see that the conflict between Duke Fullmoon and Lin Ming wasn’t as simple as stated. “No matter what the reason is, it's best if you resolve these grudges if possible…”

Duke Fullmoon clenched his jaws. He tamped down the bitter sadness in his heart and tried to sound as sincere as he could as he said, “Yes… Fullmoon understands!”

After being maliciously tricked by Lin Ming and then reprimanded by this blue-clothed old man, Duke Fullmoon’s mood could be imagined.

……….

“2 billion points, is there a higher bid?”

Song Wen loudly spoke from the auction stage. Potential bidders looked at each other with dismay. Some hesitated, seeming as if they would shout out a higher bid, but eventually none of them could summon the courage to compete with Lin Ming.

Lin Ming’s wealth was well known by all. It was simply impossible to defeat him.

However, those with different boundaries had differences in vision. Some people had a highly exaggerated valuation of the Dragon Contract, similar to Lin Ming. In the eyes of some people, just that wisp of incomplete dragon soul was worth nearly a billion points!

“2.1 billion!” A pale man with red hair and a red beard, dressed in dark blue robes spoke up!

He was a half-step Empyrean powerhouse. In truth, he already possessed an Empyrean spirit treasure but was highly interested in this Dragon Contract!

He was a loner without any influence behind him. Thus, he didn't care about access to Lin Ming's divine runic symbols nor did he fear offending Lin Ming.

Originally, most people thought that Lin Ming's ridiculous bid would already mark the end of this auction. But, they didn't think that another change would occur.

"Oh? That person is..."

This other person was similar to Lin Ming and sat in an ordinary room without any isolating array formation. This allowed Lin Ming to sense a faint dragon aura coming from his body.

"I see, so this person has a dragon race bloodline relationship..."

Lin Ming frowned a little. There were far too many outstanding existences here. It wasn't strange for someone to have a dragon race blood lineage.

This meant that to this other person, the Dragon Contract was no less useful than it was for Lin Ming himself!

"2.2 billion!" Lin Ming shouted out, his voice calm.

"2.3 billion!" The old man's eyebrows jumped up. He knew that Lin Ming was rich but he didn't know just how valuable this Dragon Contract was to Lin Ming.

This was because of the difference in their bloodline density and purity. The old man's dragon bloodline was similar to a top figure from the Divine Realm's Ancient Dragon Clan. But compared to Lin Ming who had absorbed the supreme dragon bone from the God Beast Mystic Realm, who had trained in the Eternal Demon Abyss and within Tragic Death Valley's God Beast Array Formation where he had undergone a baptism of a Black Dragon's aura, the differences in bloodline was far too vast. This allowed Lin Ming to sense the bloodline of a dragon within the old man but not the other way around.

“2.4 billion!” Lin Ming flicked his fingers. With this calm tone and expression, it was like points were nothing more than a number to him.

With the bid having reached this degree, the old man’s lips twitched. He gazed at Lin Ming’s direction and quietly said, “Young man, the Dragon Contract is inestimably useful to me. You had best not continue competing for it. If you obtain it you will only gain an Empyrean spirit treasure; that is simply a waste of heaven’s gifts! But if I were to obtain it, the benefits it will give me cannot be imagined by you. I know you are rich, but isn’t your strength limited? Gaining some grievances towards you, that might not best the best thing for you…”

The old man’s words were unhurriedly spoken but carried a faint threat to them.

He lifted his hand once more and grimly said, “2.5 billion!”

“Is that right?” Lin Ming chuckled. “I thought that someone else would be competing with me, but I never imagined it would be someone like you. What a coincidence. The Dragon Contract will also be extremely useful in my hands. As for you… you just have a little bit of a dragon bloodline lineage, do you really think it’s necessary to remain so mysterious about it?”

Lin Ming’s words shocked the old man. The old man immediately felt that this youth speaking to him couldn’t be understood. He had clearly restrained his dragon race aura and yet he had been seen through by Lin Ming. How was this possible?

Lin Ming smirked. “If you want to compete then let us do so fairly and openly. Threatening me? Do you think that’s useful?”

“3 billion!”

Lin Ming raised the bid by another terrifying amount, but his expression still remained calm!

This sort of expression, if placed on anyone else, would have felt like an act. After all, 3 billion was an amount that even an Empyrean would have to mull over.

But for Lin Ming, this expression that didn't seem to care about money at all was actually reasonable.

Everyone had already witnessed Lin Ming's horrifying ability to gain wealth. In just half a month and with 2 promissory notes he had earned 10 billion points in wealth. Just who could compare with him?

"You...!"

The old man clenched his teeth and glared at Lin Ming with resentment. But, he remained silent.

No matter how much he desired the Dragon Contract, he could only watch helplessly on as Lin Ming carried it away. 3 billion points had indeed surpassed the limits of his wealth.

"3 billion points, is there a higher bid?"

Song Wen asked several times. When no one put forth a bid, he began counting down from three. Then, in the end, the Dragon Contract was won by Lin Ming!

Hence, to Lin Ming, the Divine Rune City Auction had been perfectly finished. He had obtained everything that he wanted.

Although 3 billion points for the Dragon Contract was bit outrageous, Lin Ming could accept this trade. To him, the Dragon Contract was worth at least 2 billion points to begin with. And now that he had also learned it contained a wisp of a dragon soul, adding in another billion wasn't too great a loss.

Chapter 1649 – The Dragon Egg's Pulse

Chapter 1649 – The Dragon Egg's Pulse

…

…

…

10 days later, in a seventh grade divine runic room at the Divine Runic Masters Guild, Lin Ming was meditating in front of a divine runic table, preparing himself to draw up the 1000 improved divine runic symbols.

In these 10 days, Lin Ming hadn't been idling around. He had been purchasing a massive amount of items.

Besides the jade dragon horn and dragon saliva grass that he obtained through the auction, Lin Ming needed two more rare materials – a heaven devouring snake gallbladder and primal jade quintessence.

These two materials were originally within the Divine Runic Masters Guild's warehouse, so Lin Ming spent 600 million and 800 million points on each respectively to exchange for them. As for the nine sun jades he needed to pay, Lin Ming replaced those with points.

After buying all the materials he needed, Lin Ming still had over 4 billion points remaining!

Lin Ming didn't waste these points. He exchanged them for massive piles of other precious materials from the Divine Rune Masters Guild!

Whenever the Divine Rune City Auction came around, the Divine Runic Masters Guild's warehouse would be at its richest state and have the most pills and treasures available. This was because innumerable influences would arrive from all over the inner Asura Road and would exchange their materials and treasures for points.

Taking advantage of this opportunity, Lin Ming was able to purchase any material that he took a liking to. He was able to contact other people to find any materials that he wanted.

Some people weren’t willing to exchange their treasures for points yet, so in this situation Lin Ming would pay over 20% higher than the market price in points to purchase materials from them.

Lin Ming didn’t mind these extra costs. Many of these materials weren’t available at normal times. Once this hectic period passed, it would be some time before he encountered them again.

In seven days, Lin Ming spent most of the 4 billion some points he had. In the end, he only had several hundred million points remaining.

With these 4 billion points, Lin Ming also purchased an Asura Command that allowed him to travel through the Asura Road. With this Asura Command, whether it was leaving the Asura Road or entering the inner and outer Asura Road, it would be much easier for him.

In addition, Lin Ming also bought another material needed to refine the pill to open the third Dao Palace – a Twinlife Thunder Crystal.

Seeing Primordius Heavenly Palace packed to the brim with materials, Lin Ming was pleased with himself. These materials would last for a long time. His road of body transformation would be paved with these materials.

Of course, it was still too early for refining the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill required to open the second Dao Palace. Lin Ming first needed to complete the 1000 improved Heavenly Fire Symbols and Heretical God Symbols. To him, this was a chance to challenge and temper himself.

After completing this task, whether it was his comprehension of the Asura Heavenly Dao or his soul force, both would be greatly enhanced.

With that, he would be more confident in refining a Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill.

Brilliant arcs of light flashed through the dim divine runic room. Lin Ming's hands swam through the void, leaving behind beautiful traces of light that seemed as enchanting as flowers.

Little by little, tiny runes filled with the power of thunder and fire began to shimmer into existence…

In the divine runic room, all of Lin Ming's soul force was concentrated on drawing up this Heretical God Symbol. Around him, time seemed to lose all meaning…

Beside him, Xiao Moxian was paying attention to Lin Ming as she meditated. During these years, Xiao Moxian's cultivation had far outstripped Lin Ming's progress. As he was spending his time on the divine runic arts, her cultivation boundary was already nearing the late Divine Lord realm.

Practicing the divine runic arts would inevitably influence Lin Ming's cultivation slightly. Although the divine runic arts were greatly beneficial to Lin Ming's soul force and understandings of the Asura Laws, soul force and comprehension of Laws didn't directly increase one's cultivation.

The entire divine runic room was filled with a faint light. Traces of thunder and fire flooded the room, filling it was a mystical aesthetic sense.

The tiny runes were drawn by Lin Ming one at a time. As he drew up the 1300th tiny rune, Lin Ming didn't notice that there was something in his spatial ring that was beginning to cast a strange light.

This wisp of light carried with it a fresh and vibrant aura as it quietly mixed into Lin Ming's soul force…

As Lin Ming was about to tie together two lines of glowing energy, the brilliantly dazzling energy in his hands was actually affected by this strange strength. It caused one of the lines of energy to bounce away and melt into one of the tiny runes.

All of the tiny runes that Lin Ming drew up were infused with a tiny wisp of the power of thunder and fire.

Underneath the influence of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, these two strengths were able to join together in a bizarre but marvelous balanced harmony. But with the sudden surge of this strength, this balance was immediately crushed apart.

First, it was a tiny explosion that blew up in front of Lin Ming. A wild and chaotically imbalanced energy poured out, surging into the other runes.

Soon after that, a horrifying chain reaction spread through the 1000 plus tiny runes!

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Countless small explosions occurred, finally gathering into countless threads of thunder and fire that soared to the skies. Lin Ming dodged to the side as the shockwaves swept over him. Luckily, he was able to revolve his protective true essence in time so he wasn't injured in the explosion.

Even Xiao Moxian who was idling on the side didn't have time to respond. Her cute face was soon covered with black soot.

Lin Ming froze in place, not moving for a long time.

What happened? For what reason was the energy uncontrollable just now? It was clear that he had everything under control just then.

"It seems that in the critical moment of the drawing process, a strange power inexplicably swelled forth and destroyed the balance of energy in the runes…"

Lin Ming earnestly recalled every step he took in drawing up the Heretical God Symbol. He racked his memories, trying to recall when an external strength had appeared and interfered with him.

It was at this time that he felt a seething power emit from his spatial ring.

“Yes, it was this strength!”

He quickly opened his spatial ring and a vast and desolate aura rushed out like a broken dam.

This aura was old and spiritual; it originated from that crystalline jade dragon horn.

Since Lin Ming obtained it from the auction house, there hadn’t been a single movement of the jade dragon horn.

But currently, the sealing runes around the jade dragon horn were flickering, shining with a radiance like the gentle waves of the ocean.

All of this light spread to a silent corner of the spatial ring.

Lying at that location was a little ovoid-shaped object.

Seeing this little thing, Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. An astonished expression raced through his features.

This pitch black object was something he obtained from Empyrean Primordius’ comrade-in-arms deep within the Eternal Demon Abyss, the revered Black Dragon God Beast. It was the black dragon egg.

This black dragon egg needed a tremendous amount of strength before it was able to hatch. From time to time, Lin Ming would supply it with medicines, nine sun jades, and spiritual energy.

Unfortunately, even though this black dragon egg had absorbed a massive amount of spiritual energy, there still hadn’t been the slightest response from it.

He never imagined that today the jade dragon horn would cause the black dragon egg to beat!

Chapter 1650 – Ancient Contract

Chapter 1650 – Ancient Contract

…

…

…

Lin Ming's mind stirred. He took out the jade dragon horn and black dragon egg from his spatial ring. After he obtained the jade dragon horn he had placed it in his spatial ring where he was momentarily keeping the black dragon egg. Because they were now in the same space, there was clearly some change that occurred because of the mutual attraction of their dragon race auras.

The snow white dragon horn was the height of a person. But, when placed next to the dragon egg it seemed the size of a dish.

The pure black egg shell was covered with strange patterns that shifted between light and dark as if the egg were breathing. In the darkness, a soft luster formed from energy surrounded the dragon egg, forming a faint black halo.

And beneath the dragon egg, the snow white dragon horn was emitting a gentle white light.

The sharp contrast of black and white was like a glossy black gem placed in snow.

"Big Brother Lin, I feel that… the jade dragon horn's dragon spirit has been stirred… it's likely resonating with the little thing in the black dragon egg…"

Xiao Moxian said from behind Lin Ming. In a daze, she walked forwards and stood in front of the jade dragon horn.

Her eyes were misty as she looked at the jade dragon horn and peaceful black dragon egg. Her hands were lifted in the air, gently weaving through the glossy light emitting from the jade dragon horn, as if she were running her hands in the waters of a lake.

"It's true, it seems that the dragon spirit within the jade dragon horn is slowly gathering into the dragon egg…" Xiao Moxian dreamily whispered.

Lin Ming closed his eyes, also feeling the same thing.

The dragon spirit within the jade dragon horn was an extremely incomplete and flawed soul. It lacked nearly any sense of self. It was only because of the contract that it was controlled by the master of the Dragon Contract.

Now, although the little being in the black dragon egg wasn't able to control the Dragon Contract, it seemed as if it was relying on the unique relationship between members of the dragon race to slowly absorb the ancient dragon spirit from the Dragon Contract!

And, this ancient dragon spirit didn't seem to resist at all.

Lin Ming linked his divine sense with the Dragon Contract and seemed to sense a faintly sad and depressing atmosphere!

Lin Ming had the dragon race bloodline in his body and this allowed him to faintly communicate with the ancient dragon spirit. He could feel its hopelessness and sorrow…

Because the ancient dragon spirit was extremely incomplete, it lacked almost any sense of consciousness.

But, it still had its instinct.

Hundreds of millions of years ago, it had been caged within the jade dragon horn. Sealed by an ancient contract, it had become nothing but a contract puppet!

Time had passed, a hundred million years and then another hundreds million years, repeating again and again.

It had gone through many masters and had even gone into dormancy deep in the depths of ancient ruins. It had travelled through multiple universes and had taken countless lives. But no matter how long the lifespan of a Divine Dragon was, the end of its existence had finally neared. It had transformed into pure soul energy, but even so it was imprisoned by the contract…

It was still regarded as a puppet without a mind of its own, used as a killing tool for its ever-changing masters to fight again and again…

This type of life left the dragon spirit feeling endless sadness and despair!

And now, a familiar bloodline relation of its people was calling to it, summoning it. Without any resistance at all, the dragon spirit allowed itself to be summoned…

For this dragon spirit, rather than being imprisoned forever in this contract, forever unable to reincarnate, allowing itself to become a part of this new life was actually a kind of salvation…

Lin Ming closed his eyes for a long time. After several hours passed he finally opened them.

Amongst the God Beasts, their bloodlines were few and far between. In order to survive, it was much easier for them to trust each other than to trust a human.

Humans' fighting amongst each other was a common occurrence. In fact, within the great 33 Heavens, whether it was mortals or martial artists of any race, countless lives perished every year.

To struggle for resources, to fight because of grudges, to rob others… innumerable reasons led to the extermination of innumerable lives.

But God Beasts would not do this in most situations. This was because their numbers were far too few. If they fought amongst themselves, it was likely they would all become extinct!

At this time, more and more gentle light emitted from the jade dragon horn. In the void of the divine runic room, the light transformed into a shimmering white dragon. In the midst of this glorious light, an untold number of strange dragon-shaped marks and even life essence began flowing towards the black dragon egg.

This was the essence of the dragon spirit that had been sealed in the Dragon Contract for an unknown number of years. In a sense, it was a type of inheritance.

This was the purest form of its life essence, containing all of its talent, supernatural powers, and so forth.

Lin Ming watched quietly. After a full day passed, the light of the dragon egg began to gradually dim down, and the pulsating lights on the dragon egg also disappeared. The strength of the dragon spirit had completed fused into the black dragon egg, seeming as if nothing had occurred.

Lin Ming silently waited as all of this happened. Even the drawing of the divine runic symbols was momentarily postponed. He was extremely patient. This black dragon egg was his contract beast and their spirits and lives were linked together. He could feel that after absorbing the dragon spirit, the black dragon egg was undergoing a tremendous series of changes!

To hatch a True Dragon, that was absolutely an unfathomably vast project!

Even under the nourishment of countless heavenly materials and limitless amounts of heaven and earth origin energy, this was still a process that required tens of thousands of years. But now, with the ancient dragon spirit fusing its essence into the black dragon egg, this greatly reduced the time it needed to incubate. At the same time, the life essence, talent, and supernatural powers that entered the dragon egg accelerated its growth. Once it hatched, it would definitely be far more powerful than Xiao Moxian's hungry Big Yellow, a Taotie God Beast!

Time slowly passed, a breath at a time. Slowly, over the surface of the black dragon egg, a dazzling and mystical line appeared.

Then another strange and shimmering line appeared.

As these radiant lines slowly appeared, the pitch black dragon egg became crystalline and translucent.

Lin Ming could even faintly hear a small whisper from within the dragon egg, as slight and imperceptible as dust falling in the wind.

After that, vaguely, the outline of a little baby dragon appeared from within the glowing dragon egg, flitting in and out of sight, indistinct and hidden…

It was slowly absorbing the power of the dragon spirit like drinking from a trickling stream. Lin Ming could see at first glance that absorbing the ancient dragon spirit wasn't something that could be accomplished in a single day. Rather, it would take a long time as the process slowly occurred.

This was just like a small little bug eating a massive cake.

After finishing eating and then also absorbing other heavenly materials, just what boundary would this little baby black dragon reach?

The life fluctuations of the black dragon egg began to die down as it changed back to its previous appearance. The only differences were the traces of life marked on the outside of the dragon egg; they still emitted a luminescent light.

This was clearly showing the pulse of life within.

"It seems it will need a much longer time before it can hatch…" Lin Ming gazed at the black dragon egg, satisfied with what he saw. He would allow that little life to slowly digest the power of the dragon spirit.

At this time he had to do his best not to disturb the black dragon egg; he also understood the common saying that one shouldn't try to run before they could walk. This needed to be a progressive, gradual process.

Just as he put the black dragon egg and jade dragon horn in his spatial ring, there was the thumping of a knock on his door.

Who had come at this time?

Lin Ming wasn't happy to be disturbed while he was drawing up divine runic symbols. Xiao Moxian frowned and opened the door. They could see two old men with strange smiles on their faces standing at the entrance. Beside them were two young divine runic masters; they were clearly apprentices.

"Who are you?" Xiao Moxian swept her eyes over them, her vision catching on their divine runic badges. Their divine runic badges were not in the style of Divine Rune City so they clearly weren't divine runic masters of the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

"We felt a chaotic energy just now. It seems that..." The eyes of one of the old divine runic masters looked over Xiao Moxian and swept through the divine runic room. As he saw the messy and chaotic scene he knew that a considerably large explosion had occurred just now. Even the array discs might have been damaged.

"It seems that there was an explosion... is Sir Lin safe?" A tall and thin old man asked. Although he had a smile, one could clearly hear the anxiety and worry in his voice.

The other old man was short and fat. Although he didn't speak, his distraught expression spoke more than enough for him.

These two people had clearly felt the strange fluctuations of energy in the air.

"You are not from the Divine Runic Masters Guild..." Xiao Moxian frowned. Just where did these two old fellows come from? Why were they here?

“I am Zhao Chang, a divine runic master from the Minor Violet Holy Lands. Before, hadn’t Sir Lin said that he would hand over the completed Heretical God Symbols every few months? Thus, Empyrean Minor Violet sent us here to be responsible for this matter and to lend any aid that we can. If there is any matter that you need help with, please feel free to look for us, we will do our best to help you in any manner we can.”

Divine runic master Zhao spoke with a close and friendly tone. As he spoke, he continued to sweep his sense across the divine runic room, trying to get a grasp of Lin Ming’s progress on the Heretical God Symbols.

Xiao Moxian was stunned for a moment before she recovered. It seemed that Empyrean Minor Violent didn’t trust them too much and had sent several supervisors to keep an eye on them!

This caused Xiao Moxian to feel extremely uncomfortable. Her eyebrows twitched and she nearly slammed the door shut. But at this time, Lin Ming stopped her and smiled at the two old divine runic masters as he said, “Please rest assured, I will turn in divine runic symbols every three months, on time. As for this divine runic room, the sound insulating array formation is quite good and it’s nearly impossible for the fluctuations of energy from an explosion to escape. Two sirs, perhaps you were living in the room next door?”

Lin Ming smiled, chuckling a little. He didn’t mind that Empyrean Minor Violet had sent these supervisors to watch over him. To be honest, if he were in Empyrean Minor Violet’s position, he would absolutely send people to keep a close eye on matters. After all, this was a total of 5 billion points added with a 2 billion point dragon saliva grass, and all of this was traded for a promissory note. How could Empyrean Minor Violet not be anxious about this?

Lin Ming’s words left the two old divine runic masters blushing red with embarrassment. Indeed, they were assigned to monitor him at all hours, every day. It wasn’t much different from having moved a bench right outside the door of his room.

However, they couldn’t disturb Lin Ming as he was drawing up divine runic symbols so they didn’t have the chance to enter his room. It was only with this explosion that they took this opportunity to see the progress of his work.

Chapter 1651 – Attention of Peers

Chapter 1651 – Attention of Peers

…

…

…

The two old divine runic masters idled at the door for some time, clearly wanting to go in and ‘sit’. But, Lin Ming didn’t share this intention at all. After a brief conversation, he quickly came up with an excuse that he had to hurry up with the divine runic symbols and closed the door.

Looking at the closed door, the two old men glanced at each other with dismay. They were also people with status and yet they had to spend their days here guarding the door of a junior. But, there wasn’t anything they could do about it. Besides Lin Ming, who else could draw up the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol and Heretical God Symbol? Even Empyrean Minor Violet had taken an extreme liking towards Lin Ming’s divine runic symbols and would occasionally ask about them.

“The situation doesn’t seem too good…” The tall old man said, stroking his beard.

Although they didn’t enter the room they were still able to vaguely get a sense of his progress. During these past several days, Lin Ming didn’t seem to have made any headway in the production of the divine runic symbols and instead seemed to have caused some explosions in his room. That brief accident just now was not just an ordinary failure, it might have been a problem with the creation of the energy structure.

When Shadow Overflow had tried to copy Lin Ming's divine runic symbol, it had also been a problem with the energy structure that had caused the entire divine runic symbol to collapse.

This left them both feeling worried. Was there a problem in drawing up the Heretical God Symbols? If so, would Lin Ming be able to finish the task on time?

In fact, it wasn't just these two old fellows that were paying attention to this.

After the Divine Rune City Auction ended, many divine runic masters had yet to leave. They often visited the Divine Runic Masters Guild, hoping to observe the Heretical God Symbol and the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol.

Originally, this sort of request was a bit outrageous. After all, these two divine runic symbols involved a great deal of secrets. If the Divine Runic Masters Guild refused, they wouldn't have anything to say about the matter.

But what surprised them was that these requests were actually not refused by Song Wen.

All divine runic masters, as long as they applied, could examine the Heretical God Symbol and Heavenly Fire Symbol for three days. But in order to apply there was a condition: divine runic masters had to exchange some of their attainments. In other words, some of their skills and secret techniques in drawing up divine runic symbols.

When Song Wen put forth these request, even Old Xue had to clap his hands in praise. Old Xue couldn't help but sigh in his heart. Although this Song Wen normally seemed like some virtuous and magnanimous character, the truth was that he was a dirty bucket of water filled with tricks.

As for Old Xue himself, he was the opposite. Although he seemed crafty and greedy on the surface, when it came to his own benefits he was honest with his bottom line.

This led to Song Wen having a good reputation with everyone referring to him as a gentleman. In truth, Song Wen was only a miser that took advantages of others. As for Old

Xue, he had a poor reputation. Many people called him an old dog but Old Xue had never truly taken advantage of others.

However, Old Xue knew that wanting to copy the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol and Heretical God Symbol was impossible. The past results of Shadow Overflow were the best example of this. Even if they lent out these divine runic symbols for other divine runic masters to examine and research, they wouldn't be able to produce any results.

On the other hand, with these divine runic masters exchanging their attainments to the Divine Runic Masters Guild, the Divine Runic Masters Guild would have tremendous benefits!

After all, every divine runic master would have different discoveries and experiences when drawing up a divine runic symbol. For instance, if 100 divine runic masters were to draw up a Heavenly Fire Symbol there would be 100 different techniques. Even though the main runic structure was the same, the subtle differences between them were infinitely varied!

Absorbing the experience of a single divine runic master wasn't much at all, but if one could absorb the experiences of many divine runic masters, that was a highly valuable asset!

The truth was that most of these divine runic masters were well aware that it was impossible for them to unravel the Heretical God Symbol and the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol.

Even though they had no hope of unraveling it, they still wanted to experience it and study it themselves.

These two divine runic symbols had a soaring fame in the outer world. Even though many divine runic masters knew this was a trap, they still willingly leapt into it!

This was the craziness caused by one's curiosity and enthusiasm towards the divine runic arts!

For many divine runic masters, even just looking at the Heretical God Symbol had them feeling satisfied.

More and more divine runic masters came and exchanged their attainments for the chance to look over the Heretical God Symbol and improved Heavenly Fire Symbol.

However, as more and more people studied these two divine runic symbols and even conducted research on them, they came to a horrifying conclusion.

That was that the degree of difficulty in drawing up these two divine runic symbols had reached a terrifying level!

Just looking at the tiny runes that comprised the structure of the divine runic symbol, there were 2000-3000 of them.

They feared that even if they knew all the techniques needed to draw these two divine runic symbols and also knew how to fuse together the Asura Heavenly Dao, if they wanted to draw these divine runic symbols themselves, the difficulty would likely be several times greater than that of an ordinary sixth grade divine runic symbol!

It was hard to imagine just how Lin Ming had completed one!

As they all remembered that Lin Ming said he would complete 500 Heretical God Symbols within three years, all of them felt that this was unbelievable. This was simply a mind-boggling workload!

If Lin Ming couldn’t complete the 500 Heavenly Fire Symbols within three years, then Empyrean Lionheart wouldn’t say anything. After all, at the time, Empyrean Lionheart hadn’t placed a condition on Lin Ming to complete the 500 improved Heavenly Fire Symbols within three years.

But Empyrean Minor Violet was different. If Lin Ming wasn’t able to fulfill the promissory note on time, then the points he obtained would be taken back!

For a time, many divine runic masters focused their attention on the Divine Runic Masters Guild. These miraculous divine runic symbols left their hearts itching with desire and not wanting to leave.

Much less, Divine Rune City was considered a holy land of divine runic masters. With so many divine runic masters gathered here they could share and exchange their knowledge. To these long-lived people, three years wasn't anything at all. They would rather stay here and see if Lin Ming could finish this intimidating task.

But Lin Ming secluded himself in his divine runic room, not allowing anyone to enter.

During these days, there were no more movements of the black dragon egg. Lin Ming invested all of his focus into drawing up the divine runic symbols. His hands cut through the void, leaving behind lines of glowing energy…

Time passed like sand in the wind, unknowingly marching by.

At the start, Lin Ming didn't have any problems drawing up the Heavenly Fire Symbol. But concerning the Heretical God Symbol, the process was still as slow as before.

One after another, several small incidents occurred. Luckily, after Xiao Moxian was left covered in soot due to the black dragon egg incident, she had kept her guard up so all troubles were quickly resolved.

After that, Lin Ming became increasingly skilled in his drawing process.

One month….

Two months…

Three months…

The discarded materials piled up as high as hills. But during this process, Lin Ming became increasingly skilled and familiar with drawing up the improved Heavenly Fire Symbol and

Heretical God Symbol. He accurately captured all of the small changes in the energy patterns between the lines.

Slowly, Lin Ming finally became able to draw up two complete Heavenly Fire Symbols in one day. His success rate in a situation where he was conserving his soul force had reached 99%!

As for the more difficult Heretical God Symbol, Lin Ming's success rate was only 80 some percent. Moreover, he could draw at most one a day.

This led Lin Ming to make a decision. He would spend the majority of his energy drawing up the improved Heavenly Fire Symbols and through this process constantly enhance the level of his divine runic arts.

As for the Heretical God Symbol, he would leave that on the backburner until his skill in the divine runic arts reached a certain level. Once he could guarantee a 95% success rate, he would then start drawing them up en masse.

Doing this would save the most time.

And at this moment, the divine runic masters from Minor Violet Heavenly Palace that were keeping guard outside of Lin Ming's divine runic room felt a bit restless.

During this long period of time, Lin Ming hadn't come out to hand over any divine runic symbols.

This left them feeling weak at heart.

Finally, Zhao Chang couldn't help but knock on Lin Ming's door.

Xiao Moxian frowned. First she confirmed that Lin Ming hadn't been disturbed, then she laid down an isolating array formation before she opened the front door with a dark and gloomy face.

Facing Xiao Moxian's eerie face that was illuminated by the dim light and the murderous gaze in her eyes, Zhao Chang stiffened and awkwardly coughed several times. He slowly explained, "Fairy Maiden Xiao Moxian, we are here to receive the divine runic symbols. At the time, Sir Lin said to Empyrean Minor Violet at the auction that he would deliver what he had completed every three months."

Zhao Chang spoke with an upbeat and warm tone, as if he were trying to flatter Xiao Moxian.

Upon hearing this, Xiao Moxian remembered that Lin Ming had indeed said this.

Pulling her ear for a moment, Xiao Moxian walked back inside and took out the completed Heretical God Symbols from a jade box on the divine runic table. Then, she handed them over to Zhao Chang.

The stack was thin and light. After a quick count, there were only 10…

This was because in order to save time Lin Ming decided to take things one step at a time. In a high intensity drawing process, he would first start with the improved Heavenly Fire Symbols to hone his craft further.

As Zhao Chang looked at the mere 10 Heretical God Symbols in his hands, he nearly choked on himself and fainted.

"This… is it?"

During these three months, Lin Ming had only drawn 10! Wasn't this far too slow!?

The promised deadline was three years. At this speed, in three years Lin Ming would only be able to draw 120. This was far away from the goal of 500!

"That's right, this is it. At the time I remember it was said that only completed divine runic symbols would be handed over, but it was never stated how many needed to be handed over per month, right?"

Xiao Moxian rhetorically asked. Zhao Chang was speechless. Indeed, at the auction, Lin Ming only said he would turn in what he had completed every three months, but it was never stated how many would be turned in.

The short and fat old man beside Zhao Chang couldn't help but remind Xiao Moxian, "Fairy Maiden Xiao Moxian, please remember that the agreement was that if the promissory note couldn't be fulfilled in three years, then the 5 billion points and dragon saliva grass must be returned."

The short and fat old man kindly reminded as he felt that it would be difficult for Lin Ming to complete this task. After all, he too had studied the Heretical God Symbol created by Lin Ming and felt that even with his own ability, if Lin Ming were to teach him by hand how to draw up a Heretical God Symbol it would still not be easy at all. There would definitely be a high failure rate.

To complete 500 in three years was a bit too imposing of a condition. After all, in his eyes, Lin Ming was still a youth, not much different from a little child.

Although these two old men had a good character and spoke from the kindness of their heart, Xiao Moxian still didn't appreciate these two old fellows squatting in front of the door every day. She impatiently said, "Thank you for the advice, but please do not worry yourselves. It has only been three months, moreover, Big Brother Lin has more to draw up than the Heretical God Symbols; he still has to draw up the improved Heavenly Fire Symbols!"

"Improved Heavenly Fire Symbols?" Zhao Chang repeated, startled. There was trouble in completing the Heretical God Symbols and yet Lin Ming was still drawing up the improved Heavenly Fire Symbols? He felt that Xiao Moxian had the heart and manner of a child and liked to mindlessly boast. But, he had the good manners and heart not to break apart her little act. He once again kindly reminded her, "The Heavenly Fire Symbols don't seem to have a deadline. Perhaps it might be better to focus on the Heretical God Symbols alone for these three years."

"…Sure." Xiao Moxian simply didn't have the interest or patience to keep on bantering with these two old men. She mumbled a response and then slammed the door shut.

The two old men jumped back as their faces were almost struck by the stone door. They couldn't help but glance at each other in dismay.

Chapter 1652 – Task Complete

Chapter 1652 – Task Complete

…

…

…

"This… why is that little girl so angry?"

The two old men were somewhat depressed. It was rare for a junior to treat them like this. After such a cold reception they were really at a loss for words.

"She is complaining that we are staying out here and disturbing her." The other old man bitterly smiled.

To squat outside one's door every day, it wasn't strange to arouse someone's disgust and annoyance. If it weren't for this being Empyrean Minor Violet's personal command, they wouldn't be willing to squat at the door like some beggars.

"Lin Ming seems to have pushed himself too far. I have no idea if it's really like that little girl said and he's investing a massive amount of energy in the improved Heavenly Fire Symbols. At the time, Empyrean Lionheart hadn't stipulated any deadline so as long as Lin Ming isn't foolish he shouldn't take on too great a burden."

"Lin Ming's not an idiot. Empyrean Lionheart isn't facing a war anytime soon so he has no urgent need for the divine runic symbols. To him, it shouldn't matter if it's three years or five years. My gut feeling tells me that there was a problem in the drawing process. That Heretical God Symbol alone has 3000 some tiny runes, enough to even cause a sixth grade divine runic master to feel fear at heart, so how could it be easy to draw up? Perhaps the previous explosion was because there was a problem with the runic structure. We can only hope that Lin Ming managed to solve the problem…”

As these two old men continued deliberating, they passed these mere 10 divine runic symbols to a messenger from the Minor Violet Holy Lands who passed through numerous channels to deliver them to Empyrean Minor Violet.

In three months, Empyrean Minor Violet had only received 10 divine runic symbols. This small amount caused her to slightly frown. However, it was only slightly frowning. She didn’t say much, only commanding that all the divine runic symbols be delivered to her every three months.

Lin Ming delivering 10 Heretical God Symbols in three months wasn’t a secret at all. In addition, with the numerous people who were paying attention to Lin Ming, this news soon spread.

If he spent three months to complete 10 divine runic symbols, how could he possibly complete 500 in three years?

These people couldn’t help but gossip quietly amongst themselves. Although Lin Min Ming was young, no one dared to underestimate him. At the Divine Rune City Auction he had obtained 10 billion points in just half a month. Whether it was in terms of will or mentality, he was absolutely top notch!

Since he had dared to make a promise that he would be able to fulfill the promissory note of 500 Heretical God Symbols in three years, he had to have some assurance in doing so. After all, if his confident promise at the time was just an act, the future price he would have to pay would be dreadful.

Thus, everyone felt that Lin Ming’s slow speed in drawing up Heretical God Symbols was likely because some accident had occurred.

If he could solve this problem then he might be able to increase his speed. But if he didn’t manage to do so then he would truly lose everything!

This news left many divine runic masters that were on good terms with Lin Ming worried for him. For instance, Old Xue and Old Su were both fretting over his problems.

But there were also many others taking this chance to gloat. They wanted Lin Ming to fail. The materials had been paid for using Lin Ming's money, and if he were forced to pay back the 5 billion points and dragon saliva grass he earned, that would truly be tragic.

Old Su and Old Xue discussed the situation with each other. They figured that Lin Ming should have encountered some problem in the first three months that he wasn't able to solve for the time being. After the first three months, his speed should have increased some more.

But, they never imagined that after six months of time, Lin Ming would only hand over three more Heretical God Symbols!

This left many people speechless. How come he would turn in less each time!?

Good heavens! Old Xue and Old Su were no longer able to sit still. This was not just Lin Ming's problem but something that involved the honor and reputation of the Divine Runic Masters Guild. The three kinds of divine runic symbols that Lin Ming invented were his brand and also the brand of the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

Slowly, the divine runic masters that had gathered at the Divine Runic Masters Guild from all over the Asura Road felt the situation becoming more interesting.

This youth had spent half a month to gather 10 billion points and had made a great show of things. If he wasn't able to fulfill his promises and lost everything, then the miracle of that time would turn into nothing but a joke.

After nine months, Lin Ming only delivered slightly more Heretical God Symbols – five of them!

When placed against the total requirement of 500, this was nothing but a drop of water in a bucket.

Time passed a day at a time. Lin Ming was deep in seclusion and didn't leave. The divine runic symbols he completed were handed over to Xiao Moxian for processing. Lin Ming focused all of his heart and mind on drawing up the divine runic symbols and declined all disturbances.

No one knew that at this time, Lin Ming had already been able to draw up three improved Heavenly Fire Symbols in one day and his success rate had risen to 100%!

With his current soul force and control of the Asura Laws, Lin Ming believed that if he were to stop drawing up the Heavenly Fire Symbols now and immediately start on the Heretical God Symbols, his success rate would be above 95%.

During these nine months, Lin Ming had already completed 390 improved Heavenly Fire Symbols and had just a bit more than 100 left to do. He could complete that in a little more than a month.

Then, ten months passed.

Halfway through the 11th month, Lin Ming completed all improved Heavenly Fire Symbols. All 500 Heavenly Fire Symbols had been perfectly drawn up!

Following that, Lin Ming's divine runic arts had risen to another level. With this experience at his back, he started his work on the Heretical God Symbols.

With the warm up of the Heavenly Fire Symbols, it had become far easier for Lin Ming to draw up the Heretical God Symbols.

From one a day at the start, after becoming more familiar with the process, he began to draw up three every two days.

In over 40 days, Lin Ming drew up more than 50 Heretical God Symbols.

With this, the 12th month had passed. An entire year had quietly slipped by.

The end of the 12th month also signaled the receiving of the completed divine runic symbols.

As many people thought that Lin Ming would complete Heretical God Symbols in the single digits, when Xiao Moxian took out the jade box and opened it, she actually revealed a thick stack of Heretical God Symbols within.

Zhao Chang was stunned as he saw this.

He quickly counted the Heretical God Symbols and noticed there were 52 of them. With a brief probing of his soul force, he could see that all of these were completed Heretical God Symbols!

How come Lin Ming had handed over three and five divine runic symbols, but now there were suddenly 52 divine runic symbols? Did Lin Ming finally manage to draw around one every two days?

As this news spread throughout the Divine Runic Masters Guild, Old Su and Old Xue were overjoyed. There was finally some good news about Lin Ming!

However, a speed of drawing up one every two days still wasn't enough to complete 500 of them in the time left. They could only hope that Lin Ming would increase his speed yet again in the next two years. Only like this would he have hopes of completing the 500.

Old Xue held onto this hope. But, he never imagined that after another three months, Lin Ming would give them all another heaven-shaking surprise!

It had to be known that when Lin Ming drew up the 52 divine runic symbols, he had only used a month and a half to do so. The first half of the three months had been spent on drawing up improved Heavenly Fire Symbols.

However, during the next three months, Lin Ming was spending the entire timespan to do so. He invested all of his concentration in it, only thinking of drawing up Heretical God Symbols.

Thus, during these three months, Lin Ming drew up a total of 135 Heretical God Symbols! He had drawn up two divine runic symbols every three days, no more, no less.

When Xiao Moxian handed over these divine runic symbols, Zhao Chang was left dumbfounded for a long time.

“How come there are so many?”

To hand over 135 all of a sudden, this was over twice the total amount of all the Heretical God Symbols he had handed in before!

“Is it not good to turn in too many?” Xiao Moxian asked. She urged Zhao Chang to hurry up and inspect the goods.

Zhao Chang shook his head and regained his composure. He swept his sense through the Heretical God Symbols and saw that there was no problem with any of them.

How had Lin Ming drawn all of these?

As Zhao Chang was lost in thought, he dazedly passed the 135 Heretical God Symbols to headquarters. As this news spread, Old Su and Old Xue were ecstatic.

As for many other divine runic masters, they were left perplexed.

Lin Ming had handed over Heretical God Symbols a total of five times.

The first time he turned in 10, the second time three, the third time five, and the fourth time was the most normal at 52.

But the fifth time, he actually handed in a ridiculous number of 135.

Could Lin Ming have been deliberately holding back some divine runic symbols the first year? And then for some reason he decided to hand them over now?

Many people had this thought. This was also the most reasonable explanation.

Otherwise, to complete 135 Heretical God Symbols in three months, that was simply unbelievable.

Up until now, Lin Ming had completed 205 Heretical God Symbols in 15 months. If this number was averaged out, that would be around 13-14 completed every month. This was a perfectly acceptable number.

Even so, at this speed, it would still be extremely tight if Lin Ming wanted to complete 500 divine runic symbols in three years. It felt as if he were gasping for time.

Whether or not he could complete the task would depend on how many divine runic symbols Lin Ming would turn in the next time.

Time quickly passed. Soon, six months passed during the second year.

It was time again for the delivery of divine runic symbols.

And this time, when Xiao Moxian took out the divine runic symbols, Zhao Chang's chin nearly hit the ground.

She took out 145 at once!

With this, Lin Ming had now delivered 350 Heretical God Symbols. He was only 150 away from 500!

Everyone didn't even have the time to digest this news or to figure out how Lin Ming had managed to draw up 145 Heretical God Symbols in three months. And following this, after the ninth month of the second year passed, Lin Ming directly left seclusion and handed over the remaining 150 divine runic symbols!

With this, Lin Ming completely fulfilled his promissory note to Empyrean Minor Violet!

As Lin Ming stepped out of his room, his appearance was a bit haggard and exhausted. As Zhao Chang and the other old man saw him, they were both left panic-stricken.

In their eyes, this young man in front of them was no different from a monstrous freak.

The original deadline was three years, but Lin Ming had used a year and nine months to complete it.

As for the difficulty of the Heretical God Symbol, the two old fellows had a deep understanding of it. There were over 3000 tiny runes and innumerable connections and combinations between them; just looking at the possibilities gave one a headache. Even for a sixth grade divine runic master, their soul force might not be enough to complete the task. Moreover, the more and more soul force he used up, the higher the chances of failure became!

How had Lin Ming accomplished all of this?

As this news spread out, the divine runic masters in Divine Rune City were all left startled. In particular, those hoping for Lin Ming to fail and lose all the money he had used to purchase materials were left absolutely flummoxed.

However, they still had a great question in their minds. Lin Ming was clearly able to complete 500 Heretical God Symbols in a year and nine months, so in the first nine months, why had he only turned in such a small number of divine runic symbols every time?

Chapter 1653 – Celebration Banquet

Chapter 1653 – Celebration Banquet

…

…

…

This time, Lin Ming hadn't handed over many Heretical God Symbols at the start, instead handing them all in near the end. This was a slap in the face for the divine runic masters who had doubted him.

In the early part of the first year when Lin Ming had only handed in divine runic symbols in the single digits, many divine runic masters gossiped and said that Lin Ming would definitely be unable to complete the task. There were even some people who said that if Lin Ming could finish his task, they would eat their own divine runic tables like steamed buns.

But in the end, Lin Ming had taken a year and nine months to complete the task. Without a doubt, this left all of his detractors' faces swollen red from shame.

In their deep mortification they began to curse Lin Ming and say that he was putting on an act. If he could clearly complete them early, why would he wait until the final several months to turn them in? If this wasn't putting on a show, what was?

But, although these divine runic masters cursed Lin Ming in their heart, they still understood that Lin Ming's ability to draw up divine runic symbols far surpassed their imaginations!

Towards someone this young but with such an absurdly high level of talent in the divine runic arts, those people that openly gossiped about him decided to take a new approach to the current situation; they decided to scurry away. If they had offended someone like this wouldn't it be better to just hide?

As these people were mulling over leaving Divine Rune City, the Divine Runic Masters Guild was holding a massive celebration banquet. One reason was to celebrate Lin Ming's completion of his task and another reason was to propagandize the successes of the Divine Runic Masters Guild so that more divine runic masters would join them, causing Divine Rune City to grow even stronger.

Lin Ming originally had no interest in attending this celebration banquet, but after Song Wen repeatedly requested his presence and said that it was for the future of the Divine Runic Masters Guild, Lin Ming decided to take up the offer. He allowed them to do as they wished.

Before the celebration banquet began, all sorts of celebrities in the world of divine runic masters began to converge. All of them wanted to experience the magnificent style and elegance of this new legendary divine runic master.

Someone like Lin Ming who had a limitless future in front of them was simply a spirit treasure in human form. There were countless influences that wanted to win him over but he had declined all guests during his seclusion. Since these influences didn't have the opportunity to meet him before, they certainly wouldn't miss the chance at this celebration banquet.

For a time, all sorts of people surrounded Lin Ming. These celebrities of the inner Asura Road greeted him, wanting to get on good terms with him.

This was a scene that Suya definitely wouldn't miss out on. However, she wasn't the only bright spot on the field. Even though she put on her eternally sexy and captivating clothes, she still couldn't cover up the light of the other girls.

In the center of the field there was no shortage of proud beauties from many different great influences. These women all came in their own styles. Some were cute and lovable, some were pure and ethereal, some were exploding from their clothes, and no matter which beautiful young woman it was, Suya didn't necessarily surpass them.

And after Lin Ming arrived, he became the focus of all these young ladies' wiles.

"Grandmaster Lin Ming, you are far too fierce. I've been studying the divine runic arts for more than 10 years but I'm still only just a little first grade divine runic master. But Grandmaster Lin Ming doesn't seem much older than me yet your divine runic arts are skilled enough to transform classic versions of divine runic symbols. You can establish your own sect and begin your own inheritance! When my grandpa returned from Divine Rune City, he had nothing but endless praise for Grandmaster Lin Ming!"

A young girl with snow-white skin and shimmering bright eyes breathily said. Her long dark hair fell down her shoulders like an inky waterfall and as she spoke to Lin Ming her vision was filled with an alluring charm. As she lifted a glass of wine in her hands, her pale white hands contrasted with the deep red wine, seeming especially beautiful.

The grandpa that she was mentioning was an Empyrean supreme elder.

Of course, an Empyrean's granddaughter wasn't anything too great. After all, a general Empyrean had far too many granddaughters. All descendants of Empyreans had to rely on their own abilities and it was quite good for her to become a first grade divine runic master in 10 years.

But to suddenly be referred to as 'Grandmaster Lin Ming', Lin Ming had a strange expression come over his face. To think that he had inexplicably become a grandmaster… it was quite bewildering. "I am not a grandmaster; just refer to me by my name…"

"In my eyes you are a grandmaster… I wonder, if you have any free time, perhaps you could… direct… my divine runic arts…?"

The young girl said, her face blushing red. Just as she was about to speak again, an old man with silver hair approached Lin Ming. This old man wore purple robes and his white hair was frizzy like needles that stuck up from his head. His aura was restrained and his eyes were sharp. Lin Ming could see that he was a master at first glance.

"Half-step Empyrean?"

Lin Ming was surprised as he rapidly made this judgment. A half-step Empyrean, no matter where they were, was considered a formidable existence. Even in Divine Rune City where masters were like clouds, there weren't many half-step Empyreans.

"Little friend Lin, haha… I have already been hearing your famous name for quite some time. Since we can meet like this today, allow me to introduce myself. I am the Vice Palace Master of Lionheart Heavenly Palace. The reason I came this time is on behalf of Empyrean Lionheart…"

The Vice Palace Master of an Empyrean influence?

Lin Ming was startled. This sort of status was quite exaggerated. Compared to the Vice President of the Divine Runic Masters Guild, it was only slightly worse.

As the old man introduced himself he quickly caught the attention of many people. He smiled and said, "Little friend Lin, allow an old man to raise a cup to you. Before this I was worried that the Palace Master's 500 improved Heavenly Fire Symbols wouldn't be able to be fulfilled anytime soon, but now it seems I was overthinking matters. Really, even 500 Heretical God Symbols were completed by little friend Lin in just a year and nine months. Then, drawing up the Heavenly Fire Symbols shouldn't be a problem at all, hahaha!"

The old man heartily smiled, raising his wine glass to Lin Ming.

As for Lin Ming, after a brief moment of surprise he suddenly said, "If the Lionheart Holy Lands want the 500 improved Heavenly Fire Symbols, I have already finished drawing them. If Senior wishes then I can fulfill the promissory note now."

Lin Ming's voice wasn't loud, but most of the martial artists in attendance were already paying attention to him and the silver-haired old man. They were able to clearly hear what they were saying.

For a time, the loud and bustling party calmed down…

Everyone looked at Lin Ming, stunned, not sure whether or not they could believe their own ears.

The silver-haired man was bewildered. The wine glass in his hand also froze in mid air. "You… you finished? 500 Heavenly Fire Symbols… you've finished drawing them?"

The silver-haired old man's throat twitched. He found it difficult to speak.

This old man's response confused Lin Ming. Was this so strange?

He had originally promised a three year deadline and that was to complete both the Heavenly Fire Symbols and Heretical God Symbols. If he hadn't finished them then why would he leave seclusion?

Of course, his results were better than what he had imagined. In less than two years he had completed the 1000 divine runic symbols. Lin Ming was highly satisfied with his own speed.

He lightly clinked his wine glass with the silver-haired old man's and said with a matter-of-course tone, "I've naturally finished drawing them otherwise I wouldn't have left seclusion. If I were to fall behind in drawing up the expensive divine runic symbols that a Holy Land purchased, I would simply have to work overtime, so how would I have the time to drink wine at this banquet?"

Lin Ming thought that his own actions were quite normal. But, everyone present was left dumbfounded. It took them some time to regain their composure.

Not too far away from Lin Ming, Old Xue was enjoying his 100,000 year spirit rhino wine, drinking down cup after cup. But as he heard Lin Ming's words, he nearly spat out all the wine in his mouth. In less than two years, Lin Ming had completed 500 Heretical God Symbols as well as casually completing the 500 improved Heavenly Fire Symbols!

When one considered the difficulty and time required to draw up these two divine runic symbols, this was simply… unbelievable!

"You…" The silver-haired old man licked his dry lips. "Little friend Lin, since when did you complete the 500 Heavenly Fire Symbols that my Holy Lands purchased?"

He asked this question because he had some slight suspicions that Lin Ming might have completed a portion of the Heavenly Fire symbols before the auction had begun.

However, Lin Ming refuted this. He shook his head and said, "It was last year. I first drew up the Heavenly Fire Symbols and after I completed them I began to draw up the Heretical God Symbols. After all, the Heretical God Symbol is a bit more difficult to draw up so it would be easier with the experience of drawing up 500 Heavenly Fire Symbols before that. Fortunately, my success rate increased afterwards. Starting with something simple and then progressively going harder will naturally save more time.

"If the Lionheart Holy Lands had requested that I hand over the completed Heavenly Fire Symbols every three months then I would have handed them in then and there wouldn't have been a need to wait until now."

As Lin Ming spoke, everyone suddenly recalled what happened last year. During the first year, Lin Ming had only completed an extraordinarily small number of Heretical God Symbols, sometimes even handing in single digits of completed ones.

But in the second year, Lin Ming's speed of drawing up Heretical God Symbols rapidly increased!

One time, he even handed in 150 of them!

Originally, many people thought that Lin Ming had finished most of the Heretical God Symbols last year and only turned in the majority of them near the end. They assumed that Lin Ming was putting on some sort of show.

But, they never imagined that Lin Ming simply hadn't been drawing up Heretical God Symbols at all, but had been focusing on drawing up Heavenly Fire Symbols!

As others were worrying over whether or not Lin Ming would be able to complete his task, he hadn't been worrying over this matter at all. Everyone's concern during the first year had simply been unnecessary!

Rather, it could be said that when Lin Ming agreed to a three year deadline, he had factored additional time into the deadline. In fact, he had been referring to drawing up both divine runic symbols within the deadline!

Lin Ming had put extra cushion room in his deadline in order to guarantee an escape route for himself.

Many people froze as they realized all of this. For a time, none of them knew what expression to make. They felt that in front of Lin Ming, their thousands or tens of thousands of years of life had all been a waste!

"I see... so little friend Lin only needed less than a year to draw up the Heretical God Symbols..."

The silver-haired old man mumbled, his mind in jumbles. During the last three months Lin Ming had delivered a total of 150 Heretical God Symbols, all of them complete. He had used the whole three months to do this. In other words, he had been drawing up five divine runic symbols every three days!

This degree of speed left many sixth grade divine runic masters red with shame.

"Little friend Lin, do you have those completed Heavenly Fire Symbols with you?" The silver-haired old man was particularly respectful with his tone. Lin Ming nodded and took out a jade box from his spatial ring. As he opened the jade box, a black-red flame slowly fluttered out, as if the jade box contained a mass of burning black flames.

An incomparably pure energy surged out. Upon feeling this pure strength, even the silver-haired old man who didn't understand the divine runic arts too well knew that these Heavenly Fire Symbols were all top quality!

Seeing was believing. Even though everyone knew that Lin Ming wouldn't lie in this situation, as the 500 Heavenly Fire Symbols appeared before them, this still left a considerable impact on their minds.

Chapter 1654 – Soul Recovery Pill

Chapter 1654 – Soul Recovery Pill

…

…

…

When Lin Ming took out the improved Heavenly Fire Symbols in front of all the heroic elites at the celebration banquet, this caused them all to reevaluate him with a different light in their eyes. Just when they thought Lin Ming was already strong, he always managed to show that he was even stronger than they imagined, leaving them all speechless.

This celebration banquet continued deep into the night before it ended.

With this, Lin Ming fulfilled his promissory notes of 1000 divine runic symbols. As soon as the banquet ended, this news had already spread out wide into the city. As the many circles of divine runic masters learned of this, it was like a large boulder crashing into the world of divine runic arts, sending shockwaves rippling outwards.

Of course, Lin Ming didn't bother with this. As soon as he returned from the banquet he locked himself back into his divine runic room.

He had many other tasks to complete.

Now that he had fulfilled the orders of improved Heavenly Fire Symbols and Heretical God Symbols, he could begin to handle his own business.

The first matter was to refine a Soul Recovery Pill.

This pill was to be made for Empyrean Divine Mist, whose soul force was failing.

If he were the Lin Ming of the past then he might not have had the confidence to create the Soul Recovery Pill.

But for the last two years he had been constantly drawing up improved Heavenly Fire Symbols and Heretical God Symbols day and night. His skill in balancing intricate energy patterns as well as understanding the various changes in the Asura Laws had reached a new level.

Now, he was confident he had at least a 70% chance to successfully create the Soul Recovery Pill.

Creating a Soul Recovery Pill consumed a massive amount of soul force. Moreover, there was an extremely strict environmental demand; the slightest fluctuation of outside energy could be catastrophic.

After clearing up all of the waste materials in the divine runic room and cleaning it until it was shining, Lin Ming arranged a simple soul gathering array.

Sitting in the center of this soul gathering array, Lin Ming began this massive project.

He estimated he would need at least 10 days to refine this nearly transcendent divine pill into one that could have a significant effect on a spiritas Empyrean.

Windbreak stone, resurrection grass, god crow gallbladder…

All sorts of materials were spread in front of him.

Lin Ming opened the Heretical God Force. His right hand whistled as a wisp of heavenly tribulation fire burst to life.

At the same time, Lin Ming stretched out his left hand. He revolved the bloodline in his body and a tiny wisp of life essence left in his body from Xiao Moxian burst out, forming a black nirvanic flame that rose from his left palm!

In essence, nirvana was a heavenly tribulation that a phoenix had to undergo. If they failed in their nirvana, even a phoenix would perish.

These two different flames shared a similar origin. They were both flames that were condensed from the Heavenly Dao Laws and their grades were almost the same.

The jet black flames twisted together with the blazing red flames, slowly spinning as they evolved into a strange array diagram in the array. The phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared behind Lin Ming, and perched on this Heretical God Tree was a dark phoenix!

In these scorching flames, Lin Ming revolved his comprehensions of alchemy to the limit. All sorts of materials were fed to the flames where they dissolved into liquids.

From the start, Lin Ming didn’t take this process lightly nor did he dare to slack off. The soul force within his body gushed out like a wave, rushing into the furnace in front of him.

Runes appeared in his hand, shining with a black light. Then, they fused into the furnace…

Lin Ming kept absolute focus for five days and five nights. Because of the sweat that poured from his body being evaporated, a thin layer of salt appeared over his skin like frost.

He maintained a high intensity consumption of soul force until even he approached his limits. But at this time, the nirvanic flames and heavenly tribulation flames in his hands suddenly extinguished themselves. From the furnace, a mystic pill appeared, filled with a bewildering power.

This pill was jet black. All rays of light that neared this pill were dragged into it and cleanly absorbed.

This was a semi-complete Soul Recovery Pill.

With Lin Ming’s current ability, he still lacked the skills to complete the Soul Recovery Pill in one session.

Following this, Lin Ming rested for two days. Then, he used three days to produce the best medicinal divine runic symbol that he could and placed it atop the Soul Recovery Pill.

After finishing all of this, Lin Ming slumped back onto a stone chair, utterly exhausted.

After a full ten days, this Soul Recovery Pill could be considered more or less complete.

The pitch black Soul Recovery Pill was placed in a jade box. Its surface was smoother than jade, and as one looked into its shiny depths, it made one feel as if their soul was falling into it.

This was a pill with the demonic charm of a soul. If a person with an unsteady will and mind were to look at it, they could even fall into illusion.

But even so, Lin Ming wasn't satisfied with this pill's effects. There were many places that had yet to achieve perfection, but this was also the best he could do within the constraints of his abilities. After all, it wasn't easy to produce a pill that an Empyrean could use.

However, Lin Ming couldn't wait. He had already been gone from Tragic Death Valley for nearly 30 years. According to the 10:1 time flow that occurred within Tragic Death Valley, nearly 300 years had passed there. Empyrean Divine Mist must have inevitably weakened during this time.

In a sense, it was fortunate that Empyrean Divine Mist had weakened this much because in his state even an imperfect Soul Recovery Pill would have a wondrous effect on him.

Lin Ming didn't leave his room yet. Instead, he stayed in the divine runic room for another one to two months, producing another 50 Heavenly Fire Symbols and 50 Heretical God Symbols. He took these divine runic symbols and went looking for Suya.

Suya could be considered as having helped him. Moreover, Lin Ming had promised that he would help Suya. Lin Ming wasn't someone that liked owing anyone favors. Once he left the Divine Runic Masters Guild there were many other matters he would have to complete. Not only did he have to return to Tragic Death Valley but he had to find a place to refine the

Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill and break through the second Dao Palace in the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. After all of that was completed, there was still the final trial.

But before doing all of this, Lin Ming wished to take care of unfinished business.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian found Suya and handed the divine runic symbols to her. Suya was astonished, but she also had a faint feeling in her heart. “Sir Lin, are you planning on going on a long adventure?”

“Mm…”

Lin Ming nodded, not hiding anything from Suya.

Suya sighed. “You are a dragon amongst humans. The Divine Runic Masters Guild isn’t a place that can hold someone like you for long. But as for me, I must stay here. This war… if the Extreme Star Holy Lands win, then I will still stay at the Extreme Star Holy Lands until my old age… in the future, the most I’ll be able to become is the Internal Affairs Envoy. And if we lose, then there is nothing to say. But no matter what happens and where our fates bring us… I’m afraid that our roads won’t cross much…”

Suya didn’t know why she had such a feeling. But, this feeling was quite accurate.

Lin Ming remained silent. Suya was right. The most he would stay in the Asura Road was another 20 or so years. 20 years from now, after the final trial was complete, he would leave the Asura Road and return to the Divine Realm.

The Divine Realm was Lin Ming’s homeland.

Lin Ming was well aware that the great calamity of humanity was bound to be tragic and fierce. Even if he was nothing but a little tree in this great calamity, unable to do anything at all, Lin Ming still had to return.

Because the human race was Lin Ming’s roots.

“Mm… I understand. Please, take care…” Suya took a deep breath and in this moment she seemed far thinner and paler. In truth, she and Lin Ming only had a cooperative relationship. At best, they could be considered casual friends. With such a light and pale relationship, she didn’t have any qualifications to speak out words to ask him to stay. But as she thought about parting here, and perhaps to never meet again, Suya couldn’t help but feel an inexplicable loss in her heart.

She wanted to say something but she eventually only looked at Xiao Moxian with envy in her eyes.

Xiao Moxian paused. She suddenly felt that Suya, this Suya that she had loathed in the past, suddenly wasn’t so annoying. She bit her lips and hesitantly said, “Miss Suya, is there anything you wish to say that isn’t convenient? Perhaps it would be better if I left first?”

Seeing Xiao Moxian’s response, Suya was stunned. Then, she chuckled, her smile bright and friendly. “It’s nothing special. I wish that you and Lin Ming can grow old together until your hair turns white, I wish that you two remain safe and happy, and I wish that your home will be filled with children and grandchildren, all of them dragons and phoenixes…”

Suya had finally said a blessing mostly used by mortals. As for the world of martial artists, although there were blessings and praises, they rarely ever mentioned growing old or having many descendants. This was because martial artists lived long lives and to them descendants were not an extension of their lives. There was also no need to bring honor to their ancestors. When blessings were given, it was usually to wish for others to have breakthroughs in their boundaries and for their strength to increase.

As Suya suddenly spoke out this strange mortal blessing, Xiao Moxian blushed red. She didn’t know what to say for some time.

However, she immediately thought of something else and imperceptibly sighed.

Between her and Lin Ming, it was impossible to have a home filled with children and grandchildren.

This was because the more powerful a race was, the more difficult it was to bear children. God Beasts were the supreme example of this.

Even when two God Beasts of the same race came together, they might not be able to produce a child. As for Xiao Moxian, she was a half-phoenix. Her birth was a miracle of the universe, something that might not occur even within a billion years in the Divine Realm.

With Xiao Moxian, her God Beast bloodline was already far paler than that of a true God Beast. But with Lin Ming, it wouldn't be easy to have children. Although having children wouldn't be as difficult as Xiao Moxian's own birth, it wouldn't be strange if she never became pregnant in hundreds of thousands or even millions of years. In the worst case situation, she would never have children of her own.

Thinking of this, Xiao Moxian was inexplicably moved. She couldn't help but fear such a future.

She wanted to have a child – a child that belonged to her and Lin Ming.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian's minds were connected and he could faintly guess what she was thinking. He gently gripped her hand…

……

That night, Lin Ming bid his farewells to Suya. He also went searching for Old Su and Old Xue and said his goodbyes to them too.

Besides that, he didn't alert anyone else. After all, Lin Ming was far too valuable and had far too much wealth on him. Even if he had a supposed great master behind him serving as a deterrent, he couldn't guarantee that some people wouldn't decide to take the risk to kidnap him.

He first changed his appearance with the Divine Dream Law. Then, Xiao Moxian hid away in Primordius Heavenly Palace. With this, he quietly left through a secret transmission network within the Divine Runic Masters Guild. He blended into the crowds of people and disappeared into the endless night…

The broad and limitless inner Asura Road lay before him. The vast starry skies illuminated the great wilderness.

In this world, there were countless hidden divine treasure troves. Innumerable heroes journeyed through this world, finding their own fortunes, many of them dying in the process.

Lin Ming disguised Primordius Heavenly Palace as a spirit ship. Then, like a meteor, he cut through the skies…

Chapter 1655 – Seeing Empyrean Divine Mist Once Again

Chapter 1655 – Seeing Empyrean Divine Mist Once Again

…

…

…

God Burying Ridge was located in the outer Asura Road, and the outer Asura Road was separated from the inner Asura Road by the Great Desolate. To travel through this expanse was something that not even an Empyrean could do, let alone Lin Ming.

However, Lin Ming had used part of his 5 billion points to purchase an Asura Command. Using this Asura Command, he was able to take an ancient transmission array that teleported him to the outer Asura Road.

Since he left God Burying Ridge, almost 30 years had passed.

God Burying Ridge was still a famous dangerous land within the Great Desolate. Sometimes a trial challenger received missions that sent them to the peripheries or even into God Burying Ridge itself and they would have to hire a guide or two to lead them in. Even so, there was only a narrow chance of surviving that nightmarish land.

Of course, this wasn't a problem to Lin Ming at all.

He flew towards God Burying Ridge almost in a straight line. There simply wasn't much that was able to hinder him.

Just an hour later, Lin Ming arrived at Tragic Death Valley.

This place hadn't changed at all. The entrance of Tragic Death Valley resembled a massive black hole, a door that one could only enter through and never leave.

Lin Ming didn't hesitate. He controlled Primordius Heavenly Palace and flew straight in.

Compared to the gaping black hole entrance, Primordius Heavenly Palace was like a little pebble sinking into a lake. It quietly sank in without arousing the tiniest wave.

As soon as they entered Tragic Death Valley, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian stepped out and arrived at the God Beast Tomb with a familiar ease.

Here was the dwelling where Empyrean Divine Mist stayed.

But as Lin Ming stepped in front of the dwelling and saw Empyrean Divine Mist's situation, he felt his heart ache.

Empyrean Divine Mist's dwelling was constructed in the crevice between two giant God Beast bones. Within this dwelling was a giant soul crystal where Empyrean Divine Mist had sealed away his mortal body. The image he gave off was similar to that of a fly trapped inside amber.

But, the giant soul crystal that was used to maintain Empyrean Divine Mist's life was already ruined. The soul crystal was covered with cracks and many places had been turned to white powder; this was what happened after a soul crystal lost its energy.

Dusting off this powder, Lin Ming finally saw Empyrean Divine Mist sealed within.

At this time, Empyrean Divine Mist's eyes were shut tight. His appearance was old and decrepit, like a piece of deadwood that had long since lost any vibrancy.

His body didn't glow at all nor were there any life fluctuations. He was no different from a dead person.

"Grandpa Divine Mist..." Xiao Moxian whispered, her heart nearly pulled out of her chest. She was afraid of what she saw. During the nine years she spent in Tragic Death Valley, she had been with Empyrean Divine Mist for a great portion of that time and had slowly come to call him grandpa.

Lin Ming frowned. After staring at Empyrean Divine Mist for a long time, he slowly took out the Soul Recovery Pill he had refined.

This Soul Recovery Pill had used up 200 million points' worth of materials. It was the highest level of pill that Lin Ming could currently create.

He gently guided a wisp of the pill's soul recovering essence energy to enter the soul crystal, slowly nourishing Empyrean Divine Mist's dilapidated body.

Lin Ming could feel that Empyrean Divine Mist had yet to completely die. He should have entered a state of suspended animation in which all of his life activities were reduced to nothing.

In truth, this state wasn't much different from true death.

The pill that Lin Ming refined was still almost a transcendent divine level pill. Even a wisp of essence energy was extraordinary. The soul crystal that had lost nearly all of its soul energy began to glow once more after being vitalized by this essence energy.

However, Empyrean Divine Mist himself remained motionless, his eyes still shut tight.

If Lin Ming had anything, it was patience. Slowly, bit by bit, he poured in the divine soul energy from the Soul Recovery Pill. This energy came as thinly and gently as threads of silk. The reason he did this was because he was afraid that Empyrean Divine Mist's crumbling body wouldn't be able to withstand an influx of energy.

This process continued for an entire day and night.

After a fifth of the Soul Recovery Pill's soul energy was consumed, Empyrean Divine Mist's eyelids finally quivered.

Although this movement was almost imperceptible, Xiao Moxian still nearly jumped up from where she was. “Big Brother Lin!”

“I saw it...”

Lin Ming’s expression was extremely focused. His hands and motions remained unhesitant and the energy flow he poured in also remained steady and smooth.

At this time, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian heard an old voice echo in their ears. “You... you came back...”

Empyrean Divine Mist slowly opened his eyes. Seemingly because he had lost almost all of his life force, he opened his eyes with great difficulty.

Although he had regained consciousness, the fires of his life were a dwindling flame in a hurricane. The dignified aura and majesty of an Empyrean had mostly faded away from his body. Currently, Empyrean Divine Mist resembled an old mortal man knocking on death’s door.

“An almost transcendent divine pill level Soul Recovery Pill... on me... this is wasted...”

Empyrean Divine Mist lightly sighed, as if he had already given up all thoughts of living on in this hell.

“Grandpa Divine Mist, how come you don’t want to live on? Don’t you want to take revenge?” Xiao Moxian said with a faintly reproachful tone.

“Revenge? That is too far away...” Empyrean Divine Mist closed his eyes once more, feeling far too tired. His enemy was a True Divinity level powerhouse. With his abilities, revenge was impossible.

Empyrean Divine Mist didn’t even have any hopes that Lin Ming would take revenge for him. Even though he believed that Lin Ming would one day break into the True Divinity realm, that was an incomparably distant matter. Moreover, since both of them would be

True Divinities, why would Lin Ming go all-out in a battle with Empyrean Divine Void for a half-dead man like himself?

Empyrean Divine Mist had long since given up thoughts of revenge.

"This pill… where did you find it?"

Empyrean Divine Mist looked towards Lin Ming. Even though he knew Lin Ming was strong, his cultivation was still limited. It would be extremely difficult for him to acquire a nearly transcendent divine pill level Soul Recovery Pill. Even if he sold all his possessions he might not have the money for it.

"Junior refined it himself." Lin Ming honestly said.

"What?" Lin Ming's words caused a flash of astonishment to cross Empyrean Divine Mist's face.

"You refined it… yourself…?"

Empyrean Divine Mist looked at Lin Ming with disbelief sketched on his face, nearly unable to believe his own ears. "This pill… even a Great World King level alchemist… might not be confident enough to refine it… moreover… there is also the divine runic arts used upon it…"

Empyrean Divine Mist was a spiritas Empyrean, thus he naturally had an understanding of the Divine Runic Arts. He could see that the divine runic symbol on the Soul Recovery Pill stemmed from the hands of some considerably talented individual.

Just as Lin Ming was thinking about how to explain this, Empyrean Divine Mist didn't seem to have any idea of asking. Empyrean Divine Mist sighed and said, "Forget it… you are someone who broke through the God Beast Tomb array formation that no one managed to break through for 10 billion years… it isn't strange… for anything to happen to you…"

Empyrean Divine Mist slowly said, each word seeming to use up a massive amount of his origin energy.

Lin Ming probed Empyrean Divine Mist's situation. In the end, he couldn't help but come to the conclusion that even the Soul Recovery Pill wouldn't be able to bring back Empyrean Divine Mist's life from the brink of death…

Empyrean Divine Mist's life was already ruined. Even if he were to completely digest all the medicinal efficacy within this Soul Recovery Pill, the most he could live for was another few thousand years. Even if Lin Ming continued to refine Soul Recovery Pills for Empyrean Divine Mist, the longest he could live on was 10,000 years. It was impossible for him to live any longer than this.

And these 10,000 years of life would only mean more suffering and more pain for Empyrean Divine Mist.

He had lived in this eternally dark forsaken land. To live for another 10,000 years… was there any meaning to it?

If Soul Emperor Divine Void didn't die, he would never be able to leave.

And with Soul Emperor Divine Void's status as a True Divinity level powerhouse, it was impossible for Lin Ming to kill him before Empyrean Divine Mist turned to ashes.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming suddenly stopped his movements, as if he were coming to a decision.

"Big Brother Lin, what are you…"

Xiao Moxian was puzzled.

Lin Ming hesitated for a long time. Then, he said, "Senior Divine Mist, junior has a divine tool that can hold your soul. But, this is only your soul. You will have to discard your mortal body."

The divine tool that Lin Ming spoke of was the Magic Cube.

The spiritas had mortal bodies, but their mortal bodies were nearly unable to be trained. The main use of their mortal bodies was to serve as vessels for their souls.

Lin Ming asked Empyrean Divine Mist to give up on his mortal body and allow his soul to be sealed in the Magic Cube where he would fall into a deep sleep. When Lin Ming was powerful enough, he could find a way to help Divine Mist recover consciousness and then find a body for him.

At the very least, Empyrean Divine Mist could watch as he took revenge on Empyrean Divine Void for him.

Then he could die in peace.

“Divine tool?” Divine Mist was startled. He could faintly feel that this divine tool that Lin Ming referred to was his secret. If he called it a divine tool then it definitely wasn’t something ordinary. It had to be at least a treasure refined by a True Divinity.

However, he still sighed and said, “It’s useless. Even if it is only my soul, as long as I leave Tragic Death Valley my brother will sense me. When he arrives, you will die…”

“We can try…”

Lin Ming was extremely confident in the Magic Cube. Through these years he had confirmed that the Magic Cube was something that surpassed the realm of True Divinity.

Within the Magic Cube was another world, one separate from all rules.

No matter what rules people created, they had never been able to block the Magic Cube. The only exception had been the Asura Road Master. In some ways, the rules he laid down in the Asura Road could not be violated by the Magic Cube; they could be said to stand even with each other.

Lin Ming didn’t believe that Soul Emperor Divine Void could stand on par with the Asura Road Master.

As for the secrets of the Magic Cube, once Empyrean Divine Mist’s soul was sealed within it and placed in a deep slumber, it would be impossible for him to reveal any secrets, so Lin Ming wasn’t worried about it.

As Lin Ming thought this, he flicked his fingers. From within his inner world, a black cube slowly flew out and began revolving in the air.

When Empyrean Divine Mist saw this black cube, his mind suddenly shook!

From the point of death, Empyrean Divine Mist recovered a great deal of his spirit. He stared at the Magic Cube, surprised and speechless.

His eyes shot wide open. After gazing at the Magic Cube for a long time, he mumbled. “How is this possible… this thing… this is…”

Seeing Empyrean Divine Mist’s reaction, Lin Ming was startled. He asked in return, “Senior, do you happen to know of this divine tool?”

Chapter 1656 – Legend of the Spiritas

Chapter 1656 – Legend of the Spiritas

…

…

…

Empyrean Divine Mist seemed to fall into a long period of recollection. He closed his eyes, deep in thought. After a long time he finally began to slowly say, “I cannot be sure, but if I’m not wrong, this should be the Stone of Eternal Life recorded within the Spiritas Holy Scripture. With this stone, your soul will become eternal and your life everlasting…”

“Spiritas Holy Scripture…” Lin Ming mumbled. He thought back to what he knew and faintly remembered that there was such a book.

Lin Ming had swallowed the memories of dark and perverse divine runic masters like Torchriver. And, these divine runic masters were almost nearly all spiritas. Some of them had even read duplicate copies of the Spiritas Holy Scripture and knew some of the records within. But because these memories weren’t too important to Lin Ming’s training of the divine runic arts, he hadn’t studied them, but he hadn’t tossed them away either.

Now that Empyrean Divine Mist spoke of this term, Lin Ming carefully went back through the memories he had of the Spiritas Holy Scripture.

The Spiritas Holy Scripture could be called the most mysterious and enigmatic sacred text of the spiritas. It was impossible to know just which supreme elder had written the Spiritas Holy Scripture, but there were many things recorded within it. Some things were secrets of the universe, some were notes on the Laws, and some were even prophecies of the future. All of this text had been slowly verified over time!

It was no longer known where the original Spiritas Holy Scripture was. According to some rumors, it was within the hands of a spiritas True Divinity level great emperor. As for the Spiritas Holy Scripture that spread out to the entire spiritas race, that was nothing but a duplicate.

Even though it was a duplicate, this text wasn't something that everyone could read, simply because there were far too many secrets within that were related to the spiritas. It was a strange and mystical existence, and ordinary spiritas martial artists didn't even know of its existence.

Those on the level of Torchriver were only able to come into faint contact with it.

The duplicate copies of the Spiritas Holy Scripture could only reproduce the text of the universe's secrets as well as some archaic prophecies. As for the recordings of the Laws and other such things, those were impossible to copy.

Thus, there was simply no comparing the value of the duplicate of the Spiritas Holy Scripture to the original.

In Torchriver's mind, if someone was able to obtain the original copy of the Spiritas Holy Scripture and also had extraordinary talent, they could cultivate the Laws within the text. They could rely on the information within the Spiritas Holy Scripture to avoid disasters and take control of the world, inevitably becoming someone that ruled the era!

At this time, Empyrean Divine Mist was still staring at the Magic Cube.

Whether it was the dark gray cube shape, the patterns on it, or even the aura that aroused the awe and reverence from the innermost soul of any spiritas martial artist, it was completely similar to the Stone of Eternal Life recorded within the Spiritas Holy Scripture.

This oppression of the soul ignored all boundaries and all cultivations. As long as one stood before this mysterious black cube, one would feel as if this cube was the master of all souls and be unable to resist it!

All of this proved that Empyrean Divine Mist's guess must be correct!

"I never thought… that before I died… I would have the chance to see a divine tool like this. In my prime I could shake the earth and change the winds, but now in my old age I'm in such a sad state. Even so, in the depths of my despair, as my life approaches its end, I was able to catch a glimpse of the Stone of Eternal Life…" Empyrean Divine Mist sighed as he spoke to here. As he looked at Lin Ming, his eyes were shining with a brilliant light.

"Junior… it seems you have already had the Stone of Eternal Life for some time. Perhaps even your current achievements are greatly related to it. You should be well aware of how precious the Stone of Eternal Life is and yet you still took it out in front of me. Aren't you afraid that I'm not actually as weak as I appear to be, and that I might try to wrest the stone from your hands?"

Empyrean Divine Mist suddenly said with a deep meaning in his tone. Even Xiao Moxian felt her heart shrink upon hearing this.

After all, an Empyrean level powerhouse placed far too much pressure on someone. Even an Empyrean on the edge of death was able to release a terrifying pressure, just like an injured tiger facing a mortal.

Lin Ming quietly said, "Senior Divine Mist truly likes to jest. Junior can feel that you really are near the end of your rope, and you simply have no reason to disguise yourself from us and pretend to be so weakened. If you don't possess the power to kill me, then there is no meaning in disguising yourself. On the other hand, if you had the ability to kill me, you simply wouldn't need to disguise yourself anyways. You would have simply just killed me. In fact, there is no need for you to have waited until now. When I first entered Tragic Death Valley and broke through the secrets of the God Beast Tomb array formation you could have finished me then. At that time I was even weaker and you were even stronger…"

As Lin Ming explained his analysis his voice was calm and placid, but he still retained full vigilance.

The truth was that even Empyrean Divine Mist found it hard to correctly judge Lin Ming's strength. Although Lin Ming still wasn't a match for a Great World King, he could use the special environment in Tragic Death Valley, his understandings of the array formations here, his divine runic symbols, and even his comprehension of the Asura Heavenly Dao to struggle with a Great World King and seek a path of survival.

An Empyrean sounded like a terrifying existence. But when compared to a Great World King, they were in fact only a large boundary higher.

How could a completely exhausted Empyrean Divine Mist on the verge of death be superior to a Great World King?

And most importantly, Lin Ming had a trump card in the Magic Cube. Against Empyrean Divine Mist whose mortal body was thoroughly ruined and had nothing left but his soul form, the Magic Cube was his ultimate nemesis.

It was with this guarantee that Lin Ming was willing to take out the Magic Cube. Otherwise, Lin Ming would have protected the Magic Cube until the end. The Magic Cube was his greatest secret. Besides Xiao Moxian and Mo Eversnow, no one else knew about it.

Empyrean Divine Mist gazed deeply at Lin Ming. Then he said, "You're quite brave… in order to save me, you were actually willing to take such a risk. I will remember this favor…"

Empyrean Divine Mist slowly said. He was originally a top extreme figure and he rarely made such solemn promises. "I never imagined you would possess the Stone of Eternal Life. Perhaps… perhaps there really is a chance for me to find a turning point in my life… if I can recover, then I will help you with all my heart and soul!"

As Empyrean Divine Mist finished speaking these words he seemed to have used up all of his strength. His soul fluctuations became chaotic once more. He was simply far too weak. Even with the help of the Soul Recovery Pill, he couldn't speak so many words.

“Senior, what does the Spiritas Holy Scripture have recorded about the Stone of Eternal Life?” Lin Ming asked. Torchriver’s memories about the contents of the Spiritas Holy Scripture were simply far too lacking.

Empyrean Divine Mist was deep in thought for some time, as if he were gathering his energy to speak. Then, in a slow and aged tone, he said, “The Spiritas Holy Scripture records that if one obtains the Magic Cube and then cultivates the Spiritas Heavenly Dao within the Spiritas Holy Scripture to the highest boundary, and then satisfies a few more conditions, there is a chance that they can control the strongest force in the world and live on in perpetuity. That is, an unaging immortality…”

“Unaging immortality…” Lin Ming whispered. Immortality was the dream of all living beings in the universe, the ultimate goal that martial artists pursued.

In a sense, the reason martial artists risked all sorts of life-threatening dangers and unendingly chased after higher realms of cultivation was because of the satisfactions brought from increased strength, but also because they earnestly desired life!

The higher one’s cultivation, the longer they lived. To martial artists, this was a fatal temptation.

Even Lin Ming desired immortality.

To be earth-shaking, to rule over the heavens and earth, to dominate all living beings, to live infinitely brilliantly, to feast upon all the pleasures of existence, just who was willing to then be finally defeated by the tides of time, falling to entropy, slowly weakening and decaying until they turned to dust?

The end of a hero’s road, the withering of beauty – when one imagined the eternal deep sleep and loneliness that came after death, every person would inevitably feel an indescribable fear.

In this world, the strongest person Lin Ming knew of was the Asura Road Master. Lin Ming wondered whether or not the Asura Road Master had broken through the barrier of immortality. Was he now dead, or was he existing in some hidden corner of the world?

Whether or not the Asura Road Master managed to achieve immortality, trying to break through the boundary of everlasting life was as difficult as ascending to heaven. But now, Empyrean Divine Mist actually stated that the Spiritas Holy Scripture recorded a cultivation method pertaining to immortality; how could Lin Ming not be startled!

He once again asked Empyrean Divine Mist about information related to the contents of the Spiritas Holy Scripture. However, the Spiritas Holy Scripture that Empyrean Divine Mist saw was only a copy; the original had been long lost.

Thus, even Empyrean Divine Mist didn't know what one needed to achieve the realm of immortality. Besides possessing the Magic Cube and cultivating the Spiritas Heavenly Dao within the Spiritas Holy Scripture, just what other conditions were required?

....

After his conversation with Empyrean Divine Mist ended, Lin Ming used three days to allow Empyrean Divine Mist to absorb all the essence energy within the Soul Recovery Pill. Then, Lin Ming shattered the decaying soul crystal and pulled Empyrean Divine Mist's soul from his ruined body, receiving him into the Magic Cube and sealing him away!

With this, Empyrean Divine Mist's soul fell into a completely dormant state, frozen within the Magic Cube.

After finishing all of this, Lin Ming didn't yet leave Tragic Death Valley. Instead, he stayed there for some time.

He had many matters he needed to attend to.

One couldn’t instantly reach the late Divine Lord realm; time and patience were required. Lin Ming needed time to consolidate his cultivation and lay the foundation for his next breakthrough.

At the same time, Lin Ming needed to hone his skills in divine runic arts and alchemy in order to prepare for refining the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill. Before the final trial began, he had to break through into the second Dao Palace!

All of this required time.

As for Tragic Death Valley, it was the only place Lin Ming had ever seen which twisted the flow of time but didn’t distort the Laws. Cultivating here was the best place to do so.

Then, Lin Ming took out Primordius Heavenly Palace and flew in with Xiao Moxian, entering a long period of seclusion.

One month outside, one spring and fall in the valley. Training passed without sense of time. Year by year quietly passed.

Before coming here, Lin Ming had spent his contribution points on purchasing a seemingly endless pile of materials from the Divine Runic Masters Guild. And, these materials were all used by Lin Ming on the divine runic arts and alchemy.

If Lin Ming was going to enter the final trial, he needed to draw up some strong divine runic symbols to prepare for emergencies.

Chapter 1657 – Ancient Forbidden Land

Chapter 1657 – Ancient Forbidden Land

…

…

…

In Tragic Death Valley, 15 years passed.

On this day, overwhelming black flames swelled up into the skies. The God Beast Tomb array formation was swept up in these flames.

Within this black sea of flames, a fiery phoenix cried out as it flew in circles in the sky. Then, it dove down, causing a violent explosion!

In this crazy storm of flames, a black-clothed girl stretched her body. As she wandered about in the star-like flames that could melt stone, she seemed like a spirit of flames.

This black-clothed girl was Xiao Moxian.

15 years later, she had stepped ahead of Lin Ming and entered the late Divine Lord realm!

As for Lin Ming, because he studied the divine runic arts, dual cultivated body and energy, and also had to practice alchemy, his speed in the essence gathering system couldn't compare with Xiao Moxian's.

"Big Brother Lin, I broke through!"

Xiao Moxian happily smiled as she suppressed all of the flames. With this, she would be able to help Lin Ming more in the final trial.

After breaking into the late Divine Lord realm and also having undergone her first phoenix nirvana, although Xiao Moxian was slightly weaker than Lin Ming, fighting a weaker ordinary World King wouldn't prove a problem.

"Well done!" Lin Ming said, happy for Xiao Moxian from the depths of his heart. "My divine runic arts have also reached a sufficient level. I now have a good enough understanding if I were to attempt refining the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill… it's almost time to leave. I plan on breaking into the second Dao Palace and then going into seclusion again. Before I enter the final trial, I also must break into the late Divine Lord realm!"

As Lin Ming spoke he took out several rare materials from his spatial ring.

With the dragon saliva grass and jade dragon horn placed together, these two dragon race spirit treasures emitted a strong draconic aura, mixing up the void. In the air, one could hear the faint howling of a White Dragon and an Azure Dragon.

Even the heaven devouring snake gallbladder was excited. It released a deep killing aura, overflowing with a profound desolateness.

A massive python phantom appeared in the skies. Its shimmering silver scales glistened as it hissed, seeming to struggle with the two dragon auras around it.

As for the primal jade quintessence, it remained tranquil. It emitted waves of yellow earthen light, like a turtle that had not moved for tens of thousands of years…

Seeing all of these phenomena occurring within his spatial ring, Lin Ming gripped his fists.

Each material here had taken a great deal of time and effort to obtain. Now, he was finally taking steady steps on the path towards refining the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill.

"Big Brother Lin, you want to refine the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill now?" Xiao Moxian asked in anticipation as she looked at the brilliant lights of the spirit treasures shooting out from the spatial ring.

Looking at Xiao Moxian's hopeful eyes, Lin Ming shook his head. "It's not that fast. The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace are each strange and unusual and even the methods to break into each one are varied and different. This is because in the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, each star represents a different true meaning of the universe's Laws. This true meaning must be understood and added in, and only then can one truly refine the pill required to impact the boundary."

Xiao Moxian's eyebrows twisted together. "But Big Brother Lin, when you attacked the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace's Army Breaker Star, the process didn't seem so complex. You simply put forth an all-out effort and broke through…"

"Not so complex?" Lin Ming chuckled. As he thought of the various preparations he had made in order to break through the first Dao Palace, he could go on for days speaking about them.

"For the first Dao Palace of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, I started by creating a foundation when I absorbed the blood vitality from the great emperor's heart in the Eternal Demon Abyss. Then, I had the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence as the main medicinal force to attack the boundary, the energy from my avatar to support, and finally I even had to rely on your phoenix primordial yin to just barely break through the shackles of the world and refine the Army Breaker Star. At the time, even the God Burying Ridge's dao field killing array helped me by increasing the Buddha-slaying destiny upon my body, allowing me to reattempt the breakthrough even after Tian Mingzi shattered my first attempt. The killing intent of that time had been monstrously large. In terms of helping me impact the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, the truth was that it was no trifling matter."

Lin Ming recalled the scene when he broke through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. It could be said that the overlapping waves had combined together to help him overcome the barrier.

The evil infernal energy in that danger zone hadn't directly helped him break through to the Army Breaker Star, but it had resonated with the nature and meaning of the Army Breaker Star.

Now, to attack the second Dao Palace, the corresponding star was the Ravenous Wolf Star.

If the Laws of the heavens and earth hadn't changed, then breaking through to the Ravenous Wolf Star wouldn't have been difficult. But present times were different. According to what was recorded in the Celestial Tyrant Manual, the Ravenous Wolf Star was ever-changing and hard to capture. Under the current Heavenly Dao rules, if Lin Ming wanted to break into the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace and its corresponding Ravenous Wolf Star, it wouldn't be easy at all.

He planned to use the universe's wild and primal world momentum to suppress the crafty and slippery Ravenous Wolf Star!

So to refine the Ravenous Wolf Star, he needed a certain world trend to combine with it!

In the God Beast Tomb, cold winds howled. Lin Ming's mind was completely immersed in the Celestial Tyrant Manual. His hands cut through the void. The spiritual strength revolved according to the records within the manual, forming faint outlines of mountain ranges, rivers, and galaxies…

Immersed in this training, he forgot the passing of time.

A month passed in the blink of an eye. Lin Ming continually analyzed the method for breaking into the second Dao Palace.

With his comprehensions of the Celestial Tyrant Manual in addition to Torchriver's memories, he mentally searched the endless miles within the Asura Road for the most suitable ancient desolate mystic realm for him to break through to the second Dao Palace.

He slowly scrutinized each possibility and ruled them out. Then, a flash of purple lightning shined in Lin Ming's eyes. He had more or less determined his target.

"Xian'er, let's leave!" Lin Ming said as he stood up.

"Leave Tragic Death Valley?"

“Yes, we’re going back to the inner Asura Road!”

Lin Ming’s decision was decisive. Xiao Moxian looked at him, a bit puzzled, and followed after.

15 years within Tragic Death Valley was a year and a half outside. After this time, Lin Ming returned to the inner Asura Road once more.

His goal this time was Heaven’s Secret.

Lin Ming had gone to Heaven’s Secret before to ask about two different things. The first time he went he asked about information relating to cultivation methods for the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. The second time was to search for evil and cruel divine runic masters like Torchriver.

Heaven’s Secret hadn’t left Lin Ming disappointed. He had received accurate information each time.

Thus, Lin Ming had an unusual level of trust towards them.

Heaven’s Secret was headquartered at Divine Rune City. Returning this time, Lin Ming didn’t alarm anyone as he entered Divine Rune City nor did he reveal his true identity. He let Xiao Moxian stay in Primordius Heavenly Palace as he changed his appearance and entered as a different person.

Lin Ming’s Bodily Rebirth Technique came from Empyrean Divine Dream’s Divine Dream Law. When Lin Ming was at the mere late Divine Transformation realm, his appearance changing technique had been skilled enough to fool a World King.

In the past when Lin Ming first journeyed to God Burying Ridge, he had encountered Imperial Prince Naqi and Mister Zhou at the city gates. Even though Mister Zhou was using a secret searching technique, he still wasn’t able to identify Lin Ming. Then, after they entered Tragic Death Valley to chase after them, Naqi and his retinue had all been annihilated.

Now that Lin Ming's strength had risen by an entire large boundary, the Bodily Rebirth Technique he used now was completely different from the past. Even some weaker Empyreans might not be able to see through his disguise.

This ensured Lin Ming's safety. When he left Divine Rune City he had only left a letter to Old Xue to pass on to the Guild President. Besides that, he only spoke to a few select people before quietly leaving. After all, he couldn't guarantee that there wouldn't be some ruthless desperados that wanted to capture him and force him to refine special divine runic symbols.

Now that he returned to Divine Rune City, he didn't want to use his original identity as to avoid all possible troubles.

The moonlight was bright and cold. Lin Ming walked alone in the dim streets, his shadow stretched out far behind him.

As he passed by the Divine Runic Masters Guild, Lin Ming stopped for some time. The stores on the streets had already closed and there were only the vague figures of people bustling around in a hurry. Some of them were divine runic masters entering or leaving the guild, but none of them spared Lin Ming a second glance. They only regarded Lin Ming as a youth who wanted to become a divine runic master and lived near the Divine Runic Masters Guild. In front of the Divine Runic Masters Guild there were always crowds of youths that dreamed of becoming a divine runic master and would idle by the entrance.

The night wind blew cold, making the night of Divine Rune City seem much more bleak and lonely.

However, Lin Ming didn't enter. As Suya had said, their parting had been for forever.

In the hazy gloom of night, Lin Ming continued walking. His footsteps echoed on the smooth crystal paved road, sounding further and further away…

....

The headquarters of Heaven's Secret stood tall in the center region of Divine Rune City.

In the moonlight, the towering crystalline pavilion seemed profoundly mysterious.

Stepping into the first floor of the building, two blue-clothed youths stopped Lin Ming. Their voices were quiet and their tones were respectful. “Honored guest, please return. Heaven’s Secret Pavilion’s working hours have passed and the pavilion superior within is resting.”

Heaven’s Secret Pavilion had a manager on each floor, and these managers were called pavilion superiors.

The gate guards’ words didn’t dispel Lin Ming’s determination to enter. He faintly smiled and pulled out a crystal card. This crystal card was a receipt of payment but also a symbol of his status as a VIP guest. “I have an important matter to attend to. I might need to go to a higher floor to make an inquiry…”

In Heaven’s Secret, the higher the floor one went to, the more expensive the information.

The gate guard took a look at the crystal card and then hesitated for a moment before inviting Lin Ming inside.

Lin Ming walked straight into the sixth floor of Heaven’s Secret Pavilion and entered the opulent guest room. After waiting for a moment, the rustling of bead curtains signaled the arrival of someone.

A blue-clothed old man walked in. He seemed in good health and spirit and his eyes were sharp and fierce. “The pavilion superiors are already resting and it’s just me, the superior of the sixth floor still remaining. Sir, may I ask what information you are here to inquire about?” The pavilion superior’s eyes gazed at Lin Ming, but he wasn’t able to see through Lin Ming’s appearance changing technique.

“I want to ask about the world of the Asura Road. I need all information there is on certain forbidden zones.” Lin Ming said.

“What places are they?” The pavilion superior asked, his eyelids slowly lifting up.

“Yin Yang Despair Valley, Forsaken Mortal Tomb.” Lin Ming slowly and clearly said.

The pavilion superior shook as he heard these names, bewildered. He gazed deeply at Lin Ming and his eyes widened. Even his breathing became much heavier.

“These two places are amongst the most dangerous life forbidden zones in the Asura Road and they are amongst the most taboo to mention… do you plan on going?”

“Mm.” Lin Ming nodded.

“Alright!”

Heaven’s Secret Pavilion only provided information; they would never persuade their customers to change their mind. If Lin Ming wanted information, they would naturally provide it.

Chapter 1658A – Entering Despair Valley

Chapter 1658A – Entering Despair Valley

…

…

…

The Asura Road had several famous danger zones. For instance, God Burying Ridge, Tragic Death Valley, the Stormy Sea and the Drifting Islands, and so forth…

Of these places, the most dangerous was Tragic Death Valley. As long as one entered it was impossible to leave. Even a peak Empyrean would perish there.

As for Yin Yang Despair Valley and the Forsaken Mortal Tomb, their infamous reputation was not as terrifying as Tragic Death Valley's, but they still had their own peculiarities. They were lands shrouded in a gloom of mystery and magic. People only knew that these places were located deep in the Great Desolate, but without accurate information it was impossible to find their positions.

It was also because of this that Lin Ming went to Heaven's Secret to find information.

Regarding the risks of Yin Yang Despair Valley and the Forsaken Mortal Tomb, Lin Ming wasn't too fearful of them. Because he understood the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws he was particularly adept at dealing with the dangers in the Asura Road.

The pavilion superior pondered for a moment and then said, "About the price for information about Yin Yang Despair Valley, it is 5 billion origin energy runes or 300 million contribution points from the Divine Runic Masters Guild…"

Heaven's Secret Pavilion usually charged a common currency of the Asura Road for their information, such as origin energy runes. But since their headquarters were in Divine Rune City, they could also take contribution points at a discount.

Contribution points in other words could be called items. To go shopping with points was to actually barter with them. The Divine Runic Masters Guild issued points in accordance with certain resources and materials that were turned in. If one had sufficient points, they could trade them in for nearly any materials within the Divine Runic Masters Guild warehouse.

300 million points?

Lin Ming's lips twitched. This price was far, far higher than the information he obtained when he came before. 300 million points was on average slightly less than half an Empyrean spirit treasure, but this price could only be used to purchase some information.

Lin Ming looked at the pavilion superior. The pavilion superior understood what Lin Ming was thinking. He said, "Only very few people have information pertaining to Yin Yang Despair Valley. It is a place that is always moving around, disappearing and appearing within the Great Desolate. In order to collect information related to it, we have had to pay a great price…

"My Heaven's Secret is based on honesty and good faith on our part. We will never sell false information nor will we charge inappropriately high prices. Every piece of information from us is well worth the price. If you have insufficient money then you can collect the amount needed before returning for the information." The old man faintly said, clearly not willing to reduce the price.

"Okay." Lin Ming nodded. As the old man said, Heaven's Secret had already existed for countless hundreds of thousands of years and were considerably prestigious. When Lin Ming had purchased the two pieces of information before, he had found them to be fully satisfactory.

Lin Ming took out a contribution points jade slip with 300 million points.

300 million contribution points was not a small amount. For Lin Ming to take out this amount so casually without needing any time to collect it, even the pavilion superior looked at him with surprise in his eyes as he tried to guess the identity of the young man in front of him.

After receiving the points, the old man leaned forwards and spoke with a lowered voice. "At the end of the road where the red moon disappears, where the coiling ridge giants live, where the sea falls from the heavens and into the endless deep, that is where you will find the place you seek."

These strange and obscure code words fluttered into Lin Ming's mind.

Lin Ming was perplexed. "Red moon? Coiling ridge giants?"

"Yes, the coiling ridge giants are an ancient race that exists in the Great Desolate. Although they appear human, the truth is that they are archaic vicious beats from time immemorial. They can grow up to hundreds of feet high and their species is able to smash apart mountain ridges. Their ancestors once experienced a magnificent golden age, where their royalty was able to stand on par with God Beasts. But since then they have been in slow decline. Yin Yang Despair Valley is the land that they protect, and as for why they are protecting that land, no one knows...

"If you wish to enter Yin Yang Despair Valley, then finding the coiling ridge giants will bring you there. However..."

As the pavilion superior spoke to here he paused, changing his tone. He said, "Although coiling ridge giants are no longer as terrifying as they once were, the especially powerful warriors amongst them can compare with an ordinary World King. As for you..."

The pavilion superior looked over Lin Ming. Lin Ming's cultivation was simply far too low.

“Thank you for the advice.” Lin Ming faintly smiled and stood up. He could contend with an ordinary World King level vicious beast, but if there were many of them then things would become tricky. It could be said that a great portion of Yin Yang Despair Valley’s dangers originated from the fact that it was located deep within the Great Desolate, where endless powerful monsters and mystical existences lived.

…………

The Great Desolate was vast and endless.

In the world of the Asura Road, amazing geniuses had emerged from the countless generations. Of these, even extraordinary individuals, True Divinities, the proud children favored by the heavens had appeared.

But, not once had there ever been someone that arrived at the end point of the Great Desolate.

As for what lay at the terminus of the Great Desolate, no one knew nor could anyone investigate it. Horrifying God Beasts, endless space storms and time traps, all of this caused anyone to shrink back at the thought of approaching.

Some people even suspected that the inner Asura Road and outer Asura Road were two different worlds that were completely separated by the Great Desolate, not connected at all.

Whether it was the proud sons and daughters of the heavens or Empyrean powerhouses, no one had ever returned from the deepest depths of the Great Desolate.

Lin Ming brought Xiao Moxian and flew low in the skies. A full 10 days had already passed.

During these 10 days, they had flown past many mountains and danger zones. They had witnessed many scenes in depths of the Great Desolate that were filled with slaughter and the scent of blood.

This was a truly lawless world without morals or compassion; only the strongest fist survived here.

10 days later, they reached a boundless mountain range that reached high into the skies. It towered in front of Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming.

The pure white snow shined above the endless peaks, giving off a brilliant radiance.

This mountain was over 100,000 feet high. At the top, inexhaustible strong heavenly winds surged about. Those that were slightly weaker would have their souls torn apart by this wind without even their bones left over.

"This is the Red Moon Mountain Range. After the sun of the Great Desolate falls behind this mountain range, the entire Asura Road falls into darkness..."

Xiao Moxian grasped a rough map of the Great Desolate, pointing towards a distant location as she spoke to Lin Ming.

The Great Desolate was the most brutal land in the entire Asura Road. There was endless killings and treacherous environments here. Moreover, it never ended, not even pausing a little.

This was the reason the Great Desolate map was incomplete. Every tiny part of this map had been recorded down by countless trial challengers who had braved the dangers to accomplish missions they were assigned.

Lin Ming had paid a steep price to purchase 10 different maps and then piece them together, just barely managing to understand a good number of areas within the Great Desolate.

First, he discovered that the part of the riddle that Heaven's Secret Pavilion had given him, 'at the end of the road where the red moon disappears', should be indicating this place – the Red Moon Mountain Range.

Here they had to find the coiling ridge giants.

The coiling ridge giants were one of the many terrifying species of creatures that dwelled within the Great Desolate. They were as large as hills and in the legends it was said that the strongest coiling ridge giants could rely on their powerful mortal bodies to wrestle with God Beasts.

Lin Ming silently brought out Primordius Heavenly Palace.

Shua –

The palm-sized Primordius Heavenly Palace suddenly rose up into the skies. In that moment, a majestic aura of grandmist energy exuded outwards, filled with the sound of rustling wind.

Waves of immense pressure surged outwards.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian's bodies flashed as they entered Primordius Heavenly Palace.

After all, this Red Moon Mountain Range was incomparably strange. Compared to other places, the strong heavenly winds high up in the peaks possessed an even greater tearing strength.

Moreover, there were strange powers mixed within. If some adventurers entered they would find their divine souls destabilized and even have the danger of falling into insanity.

Thus, concerning the lands past the Red Moon Mountain Range, even the people of the Asura Road only knew of the vaguest details about them.

In order to prevent any accidents from occurring, leading the way forwards within Primordius Heavenly Palace was the best choice.

Bang!

Primordius Heavenly Palace rose straight up from the ground. Waves of demonic runes appeared from the winds, mixing in with the heavy grandmist energy and seething about.

Like this, Lin Ming rushed straight towards the peaks of the Red Moon Mountain Range.

In not too long, Primordius Heavenly Palace wildly rocked as if they were a boat in the sea being struck by heavy waves.

“There is indeed something strange here.”

With a thought, a liquid mirror appeared in front of Lin Ming, showing everything that was occurring outside of Primordius Heavenly Palace.

The space here was extremely distorted as if someone was continuously punching and damaging it.

Lin Ming saw magnificent and violent forces swirling around him. Fluctuations of soul force, mental strength, and even fist intents howled through the air, flashing with a crystalline line. Incredibly, these forces had substantialized in these ruinous winds.

All of the forces here seemed to have been preserved over time, eventually becoming a part of the strength that protected this mountain range.

The protective array formations of Primordius Heavenly Palace were continuously pummeled and damaged. However, they were then rapidly repaired by the grandmist energy.

“Even Primordius Heavenly Palace is being smashed into such a condition… aren’t these forces a bit too strong?” Xiao Moxian whispered, secretly dumbfounded.

She was well aware that if she rushed into these strange and explosive energies, it wouldn’t be long before she completely exhausted herself trying to survive.

Luckily, Primordius Heavenly Palace was extremely fast. In just several breaths of time they flew out of this distorted space above the Red Moon Mountain Range.

Immediately, all of the wild and savage strength vanished. Primordius Heavenly Palace crossed the snow white mountain peaks and floated high in space.

In front of them, the depths of the Great Desolate stretched as far as the eye could see. In the distant horizon, a round blood red moon hung high in the sky, seeming as if it could crash into the endless dark at any moment. It was both eerie and beautiful.

“…The coiling ridge giants, I’ve found them!” Lin Ming’s pupils shrank as a flash of electricity sparked through them.

Chapter 1658B – Yin Yang Despair Valley

Chapter 1658B – Yin Yang Despair Valley

…

…

…

From a high and commanding position, Lin Ming could see that around a thousand miles away, there were several giants as high as mountains. They had lit up a raging fire that seemed to burn the heavens as they roasted a mountain-sized beast upon it.

“Brother Lin, haha! We’ve finally found the coiling ridge giants. This Yin Yang Despair Valley, Forsaken Valley Tomb is the place that they protect. We should be able to find it soon.” Xiao Moxian said, her smile reaching from ear to ear.

“Yes, but dealing with these wild giants will be troublesome…” Since Yin Yang Despair Valley was a totem-like existence that the coiling ridge giants protected, they naturally wouldn’t let outsiders enter it.

Moreover, these coiling ridge giants were one of the terrifying species that lived in the depths of the Great Desolate. Although they couldn’t be compared with God Beasts, a grown coiling ridge giant could still resist an ordinary World King. Lin Ming could deal with two or three of them, but it would be difficult if more appeared.

“We only need to follow them. According to Heaven’s Secret, the coiling ridge giants only have a small population and are almost always keeping guard over their nearby danger zones. I think the reason they came out this time is to hunt and after their hunt is complete they will return.” Lin Ming confidently said as his eyes passed over the mountain-sized beast that was being roasted.

Xiao Moxian nodded. They focused their attention, patiently waiting.

The three large coiling ridge giants ate for a full two hours, finally finishing eating up that massive vicious beast that hung over the barbecue fire.

Then, the coiling ridge giants burped out loud. They each carried a giant beast over their shoulders and started walking deeper into the Great Desolate.

Bang – Bang – Bang –

Each footstep rang through the air like the beat of a giant drum, shaking the air.

The land surged and shook.

Lin Ming put away Primordius Heavenly Palace, hid his aura, and carefully followed behind the three coiling ridge giants with Xiao Moxian close behind him.

The coiling ridge giants moved fast. Each step left behind a giant footprint in the earth.

After following for an incense stick of time, a ghostly black mountain peak began to appear in the distance.

A single step from a coiling ridge giant could cross over an entire mountain valley. Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had to doggedly chase after them lest they be left behind.

Suddenly, Lin Ming detected something in the air. His surroundings had become much more humid, to the point where it seemed as if the air would begin leaking water.

"What thick air moisture." Xiao Moxian commented, surprised.

The two of them flew 10,000 feet high to look further into the distance. As they saw what was several hundred miles away, both of them were stunned.

High in the sky was a titanic flood of water, endlessly falling. It stretched upwards to the heavens and even with Lin Ming's current strength he couldn't estimate just where it started. The massive deluge of water fell down like an infinite waterfall, with enough force to shatter the world.

Beneath this flood of water was a profound and unfathomable darkness.

Water vapor sprayed all around, turning the entire surrounding area into a wet climate zone.

It was unknown how deep that black abyss was, but even that seemingly inexhaustible flood of water couldn’t fill it. It was hard to imagine just how large the world beneath was.

“This is ‘where the sea falls from the heavens and into the endless deep’! But, where is this water coming from? Why would it be falling down from the skies?” Xiao Moxian muttered to herself, completely bewildered. This strange and amazing creation was simply incredible.

The three coiling ridge giants walked towards the massive sea of water.

Afterwards, with great steps, they walked into the endless waves. Their massive figures were drowned out by the waters.

“These great waters are falling from a mountain peak that is as high as the heavens!” Lin Ming’s soul force was keen and he could faintly feel that behind this endless deluge of water was a ghostly black mountain peak, one so high he couldn’t make out the top.

This massive mountain peak was so high that even several planets stacked together would seem tiny in front of it. It wasn’t something that mortal minds could comprehend.

And they especially couldn’t imagine where the source of this water came from.

“Follow them closely!” Lin Ming called out to Xiao Moxian. In order to prevent any mishaps, the two of them once again took out Primordius Heavenly Palace and began riding in it.

But this time, Lin Ming had shrunk Primordius Heavenly Palace much more than before.

Primordius Heavenly Palace itself contained profound time-space array formations within it and it could shrink or grow to whatever size was needed. Now, Lin Ming turned it into the size of a rock. As he followed behind the three giants, Primordius Heavenly Palace seemed quite common.

Woosh –

Primordius Heavenly Palace emitted a faint aura of grandmist energy as it broke into the rush of water with the three coiling ridge giants.

As soon as they entered the great waters, the endless waves, undercurrents, and massive strengths contained within began to unceasingly tear at Primordius Heavenly Palace.

However, how could an Empyrean spirit treasure be so easily destroyed? A vast strength surged out from the Heavenly Palace, immediately stopping these destructive waves.

Slowly, as Primordius Heavenly Palace cut its way forwards, the force within the waters became weaker.

Faintly, they could make out something a mile away.

A mile in front of them was actually a giant cave.

At the edge of the cave were dozens of coiling ridge giants kneeling on the ground, seeming as if they were worshipping something inside.

One of the coiling ridge giants appeared to be an old man. His body was ash gray and he lay on the ground, motionless.

Nearby was another old coiling ridge giant wearing a strange golden crown. This giant was muttering sacred words and constantly spitting out runes. As these runes appeared, they swallowed the endless spiritual power in the surrounding space and then turned solid gold as they fell onto the skin of the seemingly dead old coiling ridge giant.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian could both feel the great strength of the old coiling ridge giant that seemed to be offering a sacrifice.

Every rune that this giant read out would stir up phantoms in the void. These runes seemed to have been carved into the flesh and blood of the coiling ridge giant, just like the Laws that were carved into the flesh and blood of God Beasts. These types of existences were all favored children of the world!

With so many coiling ridge giants, Lin Ming naturally wouldn't provoke them. This was already considered deep in the Great Desolate and there were countless horrifying and fantastical existences here. Even an Empyrean wouldn't dare recklessly act as they wished.

For now, Lin Ming could only calmly observe what was happening. He couldn't easily enter the cave.

Suddenly, that old giant that was praying shouted out loud. His voice was like a peal of thunder, and even though Lin Ming was hiding within Primordius Heavenly Palace, he still felt his ears shake.

A wave of grandmist energy surged out and only then was this powerful vibrating suppressed.

All of the coiling ridge giants stood up. Four of them were particularly tall and strong, their heads even disappearing into the shadows of the cave.

These four giants lifted up the dead old giant and brought him near the edge of the great waters. Then, they threw his corpse inside, seeming to be burying him this way.

But what was a coincidence was that this massive giant corpse actually started falling towards the area where Lin Ming was!

To Lin Ming, this coincidence was a tremendous misfortune!

The moment that the giant corpse struck the water, the grandmist energy that was being sent out by Primordius Heavenly Palace was also sensed by the worshipping giants.

A lightning sharp vision focused on Primordius Heavenly Palace.

The coiling ridge giants never imagined that there would be some foreign existence hiding in the waves of the water. Moreover, they could feel that this was a powerful entity!

They were angry – they roared!

The boundless soundwaves struck like endlessly crashing shockwaves as they hurtled at Primordius Heavenly Palace. Within these sound waves were also flashing golden runes.

Each rune contained the breath of the Great Dao, a powerful strength that seemed as if it could annihilate everything. This was the special talent of the coiling ridge giant race!

“This is bad!”

Lin Ming was panic-stricken. There were already far too many coiling ridge giants and above that, the old worshipping giant was incomparably formidable!

Luckily, Lin Ming had already achieved a mind state of one with Primordius Heavenly Palace. In this grave and critical moment, countless magic patterns appeared, combining with the surrounding grandmist energy to form layers of defensive barriers.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The layers of defensive barriers were crushed and torn apart by those strange golden runes. Finally, when the attack reached Primordius Heavenly Palace, it caused the entire palace to violently shake! After all, Lin Ming was weaker than a Great World King and he wasn’t able to reach the standards of an Empyrean managing Primordius Heavenly Palace. To persist against a barrage of attacks from these coiling ridge giants that weren’t much weaker than low level God Beasts was extremely difficult.

As the old giant was gathering the other coiling ridge giants to attack once more, Lin Ming controlled Primordius Heavenly Palace and dove deep into the endless black abyss along with the giant's corpse.

The shrunken Primordius Heavenly Palace was sheltered by the corpse. The old giant was only able to roar out several times in vain, and in the end it could only watch blankly on, not daring to do anything else.

It was unknown how long they fell downwards into the abyss. It seemed as if ten days and ten nights had passed.

Lin Ming only felt that Primordius Heavenly Palace was pushed downwards by some massive impact force. At first all he could see around him was the endlessly falling water, but later his surroundings were only the endless dark.

It was like halfway down, the massive deluge of water had rushed into some other channel.

After another long period of time, there was a massive explosive sound. The entirety of Primordius Heavenly Palace finally struck the ground, causing a giant detonation.

Fortunately, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were already prepared. Their bodies were surrounded by layers of grandmist energy and the power of god runes.

Even with all these preparations, their defenses were still crushed beneath the powerful impact force. Lin Ming felt as if all the bones in his body were shaken up.

"Eh? What is this?"

As Lin Ming crawled out from Primordius Heavenly Palace, he could feel an exceptionally terrifying aura rush towards him from all directions.

There was the yin death energy, tyrannical fire energy, arctic ice energy, and even a vast and massive power of water…

He had actually arrived in an incomprehensibly large and mystifying valley.

One side of the valley burned with an inferno of raging flames. Giant skeletons lay within these fires.

Another side was covered with 10,000 year ice. Colossal icicles rose into the air, each one encapsulating a corpse – the corpse of a coiling ridge giant.

All throughout other areas of the valley, there were scattered corpses of coiling ridge giants, their bodies still weakly shimmering with golden runes.

And beneath their feet, they could clearly feel the turbulent waters rushing about.

“This is… Ying Yang Despair Valley, Forsaken Mortal Tomb?” Xiao Moxian’s eyes popped open as she took in the scenes around her, her mind incomparably shocked.

“Be careful!” Lin Ming suddenly felt a strength sweep towards Xiao Moxian.

This strength rushed out from the flaming mountain peaks on one side of the valley. It hurtled towards Xiao Moxian as if it had a mind of its own.

After stepping into the late Divine Lord realm, Xiao Moxian’s strength was beyond ordinary. With Lin Ming’s warning, jet black flames began igniting all over her body.

The flames turned into a black fire phoenix that collided with those mountain flames.

“Mm?” Xiao Moxian originally thought she could annihilate those flames with one strike. However, she never imagined that after those flames struck her own pitch black nirvanic flames, they would be equally matched and dissipate together.

Lin Ming couldn’t help but feel some dread. Xiao Moxian’s strike right now was one that even a World King would have to spend some effort to deal with and yet it had only managed to put those flames out. If those flames had really struck Xiao Moxian, then she would have been injured.

“Big Brother Lin, this is hellfire!” Xiao Moxian was a specialist of fire. She was able to sense the strangeness of those flames just now.

This sort of flame was naturally bred by the energy of the heavens and earth and signaled the presence of a Fire Elemental. If this were several dozen years ago, this sort of fire would have been greatly beneficial to Lin Ming!

But now, this hellfire wasn’t too useful to him. Still, its presence proved that Yin Yang Despair Valley was overflowing with energy. This meant that it would be greatly advantageous to Lin Ming for refining the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill!

Lin Ming closed his eyes and cast out his sense. In this mystic realm he could feel a powerful atmosphere of Laws – this was the Asura Heavenly Dao!

Chapter 1659 – Void Furnace

Chapter 1659 – Void Furnace

…

…

…

The Asura Heavenly Dao was spread throughout the entire Asura Road; this was the same in every single mystic realm.

After all, the Asura Road was created by the Asura Road Master. Although it was unknown how Yin Yang Despair Valley was formed, it should still be linked to the Asura Road Master.

"Let's go…"

Lin Ming drew Xiao Moxian close and began moving forwards with her.

Lin Ming could clearly feel fluctuations from the wild space distortions all around.

It was obvious that the space here wasn't stable.

According to the information he obtained from Heaven's Secret Pavilion, the location of Yin Yang Despair Valley would constantly change within the Great Desolate, and the price to find out this information was considerably high. It seemed that this information wasn't false at all…

However, this sort of danger zone was especially advantageous in helping Lin Ming refine the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill.

Of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, every Dao Palace represented a different true meaning of the universe, a different mystery.

The Ravenous Wolf Star corresponded with the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace. It was strange and cryptic, and of the nine Dao Palaces it could be said to represent the most elusive and nimble true meaning.

Heavenly Retribution – this referred to the power of the world. After a martial artist opened the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace they could rely on it to commune with the heavens and earth, integrating the power of the world into their mortal body and obtaining a terrifying strength, one that could annihilate all their enemies!

Opening the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace required tremendous momentum from the world itself. Only a suitable danger zone could provide them with the chance to succeed.

Lin Ming wasn't in a hurry. He slowly scattered his sense outwards to find a place in Yin Yang Despair Valley that had a rich world strength so he could refine the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill there.

After finishing his plans, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian walked together towards their destination.

Along the way there were many dangerous areas filled with space-time fissures. In addition, there were the dreadful surging flows of energy within the mystic realm. These turbulent flows of energy were similar to the hellfire that had rushed Xiao Moxian.

However, these flows of raging energy all followed the Asura Heavenly Dao. With this, it wasn't difficult for Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian to avoid them.

They carefully arrived at the place that was rich with energy.

If the energy flows within Yin Yang Despair Valley were compared to a storm, then this place would be the eye of the storm. Although all sorts of world energies flooded the surrounding space, this place was actually extremely calm and most suited for refining a pill.

But just in case, Lin Ming still laid down protective array formations to prepare for all contingencies.

After finishing this, Lin Ming put forth a divine runic table and a variety of rare and precious materials. After laboring over the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill for so many years he was finally going to start refining it. Lin Ming was certainly thrilled by this prospect, but his movements were still orderly and calm, not hurried at all.

These were the habits that Lin Ming had picked up over the years by drawing the improved Heavenly Fire Symbols and Heretical God Symbols.

He needed to perfectly organize every detail in this process. Only this perfection would allow him to impact the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace.

His fingers cut a line through the void, drawing a wisp of heavenly tribulation fire towards it. He drew a curved path in the air.

Lin Ming's hands seemed to fly. One at a time, strange energy patterns began to appear, condensing into all sorts of tiny runes.

Xiao Moxian stood on the side blinking, puzzled by this. "Big Brother Lin, aren't you going to refine the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill? How come you are suddenly drawing up a divine runic symbol?"

"I have to refine the improved medicinal runic symbol first."

Lin Ming lightly said. During the years in Tragic Death Valley he had used a full year to thoroughly research an appropriate medicinal runic symbol. This medicinal runic symbol was chosen after being checked for a number of criteria and would be the best one possible for supporting the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill.

Without this medicinal runic symbol, the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill that Lin Ming refined would have much weaker effects.

As Lin Ming spoke, the speed of his movements hastened. The movements of his hands in the air began to leave behind afterimages, as quick as lightning.

In Tragic Death Valley, Lin Ming had long accustomed himself with this medicinal runic symbol and had drawn up many test copies. But, to allow the medicinal runic symbol's medicinal efficacy to reach the highest possible limit and also match the properties of the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill, he needed to draw support from the world momentum here.

In those 15 years within Tragic Death Valley, Lin Ming had reached even higher heights in drawing up a medicinal runic symbol. Now, all of that accumulated practice would finally reveal itself.

In addition with the memories of the three divine runic masters he had absorbed, this tremendous background allowed him to come up with many useful and fresh new ideas.

Moreover, this environment and the faint Asura Heavenly Dao Laws here would help Lin Ming a great deal.

He silently drew runes of the Asura Heavenly Dao towards the tiny runes, constantly transforming the medicinal runic symbol, allowing it to become far more complex and powerful.

Finally, after three days and three nights passed, strange and mysterious patterns appeared in the void where they were drawn by Lin Ming's finger into the tiny runes.

In the blink of an eye, a brilliantly marvelous reaction occurred. A shimmering light bloomed like a lotus flower and all of the runes began to gather together, forming a divine runic symbol that appeared like a snow-white flower petal.

This divine runic symbol emitted a strange fluctuation of energy. Lin Ming finally relaxed, at last able to take a breath of relief. Then he carefully grasped the divine runic symbol – the improved medicinal runic symbol was finally complete. Within this divine runic symbol were the Laws of the Asura Heavenly Dao that existed in the surrounding environment. They were much purer than the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws that Lin Ming had comprehended.

Then, Lin Ming sat down on the ground, entering a deep meditation just like a monk. The reason he came here was to borrow the world momentum of this danger zone to help refine the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill and attack the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace.

And the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws here could also be used by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's thoughts raced. He began to analyze Yin Yang Despair Valley in his mind, combining all of the various powers here, including even the strange space distortions.

However, there was one thing Lin Ming understood above all. Everything in the world of the Asura Road had to conform to the basics of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws.

It could be said that the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws were the true ruler of the world.

Lin Ming's fingers continuously calculated. An unusual strength flowed out from his body, causing the surrounding waves of power to react and wash towards him.

Gradually, strands of flame... white clouds filled with ice... distorted space ripples... thick black death energy...

All of these strengths began to gather towards Lin Ming with him as the center.

In this situation, Lin Ming meditated for a day and a night. He adjusted his condition to its peak state, restoring all of the soul force he used to refine the medicinal runic symbol.

At this time, Lin Ming's eyes flashed open and a brilliant light cut through his pupils like a bolt of lightning in the dark skies. Lin Ming's finger slightly quivered, each quiver causing a tiny trace of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws to appear.

At his side, the Asura Heavenly Dao Law patterns were marking the space around him!

He took out the heaven devouring snake gallbladder, jade dragon horn, and other transcendent materials form his spatial ring.

These materials, beneath the galvanizing world momentum here, manifested phantoms of dragons and snakes that twined together in the skies.

Lin Ming used the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws as the furnace and quickened the world momentum within Yin Yang Despair Valley as the fire to refine to the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill.

The power of elusive and mystical Laws constantly fused with the threads of world strength that surrounded the area, beginning to form strange lines in the air.

Within the void, gradually and faintly, the outline of a giant furnace began to appear…

The furnace spun around, emitting waves of strange forces, seeming as if it were attracting all of the power in the surroundings into it.

Countless runes floated around the furnace like sands in the tide. The furnace sparkled with a magical luster.

Without any hesitation, Lin Ming threw the jade dragon horn, heaven devouring snake gallbladder, dragon saliva grass, primal jade quintessence, and the pile of other materials into the air, allowing the swallowing force of the furnace to pull them all in.

The heavenly tribulation flames within his body surged out from his dantian, turning into a giant flame dragon that dove into the void furnace.

At the same time, Xiao Moxian also summoned her jet black nirvanic flames and sent them hurtling towards the furnace. After coordinating with Lin Ming in alchemy for so many years, their thoughts had already become one.

The dragon formed from heavenly tribulation flames and the dark phoenix formed by nirvanic flames soared up together, emitting dreadful waves of flames.

The dense flames split into countless threads of flames that drilled towards the different rare and precious materials.

Fleeting gaze crystals, three-eyed silkworm silk, all of the various materials began to disintegrate within the raging inferno of flames…

Some medicinal materials with a spirituality began to whine with horror and fear. However, the heavenly tribulation flames and nirvanic flames had already fused together. They were both seventh level Concept flames and could even instantly burn down a mountain peak; the strength of these combined flames was beyond terrifying.

As Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian constantly sent their power of fire into the void furnace, more and more materials within it began to melt, sending out all sorts of enchanting fragrances.

By just smelling these medicinal fragrances once, one would feel as if they had taken a bath in the purest water in the world. Their entire body would feel cleansed and comfortable.

At this time, within the blazing flames, the snow white jade dragon horn began to turn deep red.

A dragon spirit suddenly howled and rushed out, hurtling itself towards the dark fire phoenix and fire dragon.

Although the incomplete dragon soul had long disappeared, the dragon spirit’s instincts were still able to sense a danger outside that threatened its existence.

With a rumbling strike, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian felt their bodies shake.

After all, those two flames were released by them and were connected to their divine souls through a mysterious connection.

Although this dragon spirit was nothing but a mindless puppet, it was still a True Dragon. In the impact, the roiling nirvanic flames and heavenly tribulation flames dimmed down a great deal.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The dragon spirit was infuriated. It attacked everything around it with a barrage of attacks, wanting to escape the imprisonment of this furnace.

However, this void furnace was formed by Lin Ming using the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws that existed in Yin Yang Despair Valley as well as by combining it with all sorts of different strengths.

It was an incomparably mysterious phenomenon. Although the jade dragon spirit was forceful and its attacks caused the entire furnace to shake, it still wasn't able to pass through.

Lin Ming furrowed his eyebrows; he had already expected this.

If he wanted to rely on his own strength to refine the many top grade materials here, it would require a massive amount of time and energy. Moreover, it would be profoundly difficult.

But in Yin Yang Despair Valley, it was a completely different situation.

He could rely on the Asura Laws to summon and borrow the momentum of the world and complete the refinement of the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill!

Chapter 1660 – Completing the Pill

Chapter 1660 – Completing the Pill

…

…

…

Lin Ming's mind blazed with numerous calculations. He thrust out a finger and drew it through the void furnace, immediately causing lines of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws to shine.

The skies above Yin Yang Despair Valley began to violently billow. A massive burst of death energy exploded in the skies and was dragged downwards like a black inverted mountain peak.

Bang!

The jade dragon spirit just happened to be raging in the air above the void furnace. But then, it was suddenly struck by the immense amounts of death energy.

All of it crashed into the jade dragon horn.

At this time, a cruel and brutal aura erupted forth from the heaven devouring snake gallbladder.

A 100 foot long snake manifested in the air, biting towards that death energy and even managing to bite in in half!

Then, the dragon spirit aura within the dragon saliva grass also awoke from its deep unconsciousness. Even the primal jade quintessence began to emit a misty earth brown color. These energies surged out in all directions as if they wanted to desperately crush apart the void furnace and blow it away.

Every impact caused a terrifying shockwave to roll outwards.

The void furnace was formed from countless threads of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws that had been bound together. But as these wild strengths surged within it, they caused the void furnace to constantly inflate like a balloon.

After the Asura Heavenly Dao Law lines absorbed all of these different strengths and continued to expand, they retained their shape without any sign that they would crack apart.

Lin Ming calmly smashed his palm into the ground.

Bang! A massive hole appeared in the ground and a flow of chaotic earth brown air streamed out.

As this brown energy flow streamed out, anything that it touched was invaded with the power of earth. This was actually the purest form of the power of earth – Earth Pith!

Earth Piths were similar to Fire Elementals and Thunder Sources – they were a marvelous strength bred from deep in the earth. Earth Piths contained the purest and thickest earth essence energy. They were normally hidden hundreds of millions or billions of miles in the ground, perhaps only existing in the deepest depths of magma pools. They were extremely hard to detect.

But because Lin Ming had a deep understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, he could rely on the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws to borrow every source of strength within Yin Yang Despair Valley.

As soon as he sensed the Earth Pith hiding deep in the ground below him, he had summoned it, guiding it to the surface.

His fingers drew ghostly lines in the void that corresponded with the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, as if he were building a bridge.

The Earth Pith was slowly drawn upwards, slowly climbing this bridge and entering the void furnace.

In the midst of those several wildly raging spiritual strengths, the pure Earth Pith was like a black profound turtle, filled with great strength and stability, carrying with it an indomitable aura that mercilessly suppressed those strengths!

With a loud rumbling sound, the snake spirit from the heaven devouring snake gallbladder, the dragon spirit aura from the dragon saliva grass, and the spiritual strength from the primal jade quintessence were suddenly struck by this power that came from deep underground.

They were like sharp spears smashing into an indestructible shield.

The Earth Pith was bitten by the snake spirit and dragon spirit to no avail and even the spiritual strength began to wither away.

Slowly, the dragon spirit and snake spirit began to erode. The earth brown luster was even able to wear at at soul force. The two great spirit bodies were originally filled with vitality and shining with a radiant light, but now they had become dark gray, incomparably weak and bleak.

At this time, a mass of earth brown spiritual power shot up into the skies, crashing into the Earth Pith. The mass of spiritual power opened wide like a massive jaw and bit down on the Earth Pith.

Kacha! Kacha!

That spiritual power was actually eating up that terrifying Earth Pith as if it was a snack.

After 3-4 bites, the earth brown spiritual power rapidly expanded and began crashing around into the sides of the void furnace.

Lin Ming was startled. In order to refine the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill a tremendous amount of top grade materials were required, and now these materials had started a war.

This primal jade quintessence was a spiritual object that had lived in the center of a world for billions of years and was also an earth-attribute sacred spirit. Because of this, it was able to absorb the power of the Earth Pith. If the primal jade quintessence was allowed to expand as it pleased, then even if it wasn't able to break through the imprisonment of the void furnace created by the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, it would still make refining the pill incomparably hard.

Lin Ming began to murmur a mantra in his mind. Behind him, the phantom of a giant divine tree slowly appeared. As it flickered into existence, the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation exploded outwards! A dazzling light erupted like thousands of rising suns, all of them following the paths of the Heavenly Dao Laws. Without sentiment or pity, these beams of light stabbed into the key points of the primal jade quintessence's spirit.

In this raging sea of thunder and flames, the recently inflated primal jade quintessence began to rapidly diminish in size.

Without hesitation, Lin Ming punched the void, tearing it apart.

The space here was unstable to begin with. With Lin Ming's understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao, smashing apart space wasn't difficult at all.

A space storm was pulled out by him. The space storm cut a vacuum path in the air as it fired towards the primal jade quintessence within the void furnace.

Cha – cha –

The primal jade quintessence's aura was cut apart like butter in the hot sun.

Death energy, spiritual energy, space storms, Earth Pith strength, Phoenix Blood Spear potential, jet back nirvanic flames…

All of the powers that could be summoned in Yin Yang Despair Valley were pulled into the middle of the void furnace by him.

Not only that, but Lin Ming's hands flickered once more and the air began to shine with the mysterious strength of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws once more. Using these Law lines in the space, he began to stir up a giant vortex.

No matter what strength it was, everything was pulled into that vortex and into the void furnace. The primal jade quintessence and all the other heavenly materials were ruthlessly suppressed!

All of these different billowing strengths raged around like multi-colored rivers of stars, surging waves in a great sea.

All of the strengths within Yin Yang Despair Valley were pulled in and fused together. Even the coiling ridge giant corpses in the icy mountain valleys emitted faint traces of death energy tha gathered into the vortex.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

This was the equivalent of all the strengths within Yin Yang Despair Valley crushing and grinding down the jade dragon horn's dragon spirit and all of the other spirits of the different heavenly treasures.

The void furnace withstood all of this tyrannical strength, rapidly expanding like a balloon.

Even Xiao Moxian was startled by all of these wild strengths smashing into each other. Like a small bunny hopping away she immediately jumped back 10 miles.

Only Lin Ming still floated in the skies like before, his arms spread white. All sorts of energy lines wove around him, constantly repairing and supplementing the void furnace, maintaining its strength and supporting its continued revolution.

In the midst of the furnace, the dragon spirit of the jade dragon horn was the first to give up. Its body stiffened and it began to crack apart.

Soon after that, the spirit of the heaven devouring snake gallbladder was swallowed up by the several strengths and broken down, turning into a snake-like fluid.

Dragon saliva grass, primal jade quintessence…beneath the crashing waves of strength, they were like pills being crushed in a mortar by a medicine pestle, continuously cracking apart into different essences.

Beneath nirvanic flames and heavenly tribulation flames, these essences were catalyzed by the other spiritual forces and began to fuse together.

Red, white, blue…multi-colored hues of liquid were smelting together, constantly attacking each other and wearing each other down…

Lin Ming sat in meditation, his eyes shut even as his hands carefully manipulated the powers floating above him, turning them all into flames.

These flames were not true burning flames, but virtual flames formed from energy. This strength constantly flowed out from all over Yin Yang Despair Valley. Some flames were heated like fiery flames, some were ghostly and ethereal, and some emitted a dreadful aura. All of these flames entered the void furnace and helped in melting the materials within.

Placed in the midst of all these energies, although Lin Ming was only refining a pill, he still had strength constantly flowing into him as if he were immersed in a sea of energy.

His entire body felt comfortable. No matter how many tough calculations he had to make or how many Asura Heavenly Dao Law lines he had to manipulate, or how much soul force he head to use, he didn’t feel tired at all.

This entire Yin Yang Despair Valley had existed here for billions of years already. The strength saved up in this land was alarming.

Lin Ming stayed in this state for a full three years. During this entire time he didn't feel as if the powers in Yin Yang Despair Valley diminished even the slightest bit.

As for the void furnace, all of the strengths that were pulled there by Lin Ming had turned into ghostly azure colored flames – this was a phenomenon that only occurred once flames reached an extremely terrifying temperature.

A great deal of the materials and medicinal essences inside began to slowly absorb these different strengths. Within the center of this endless medicinal efficacy, a life seemed to be forming within it. This existence was blood red and brimming over with an atmosphere of intense life vitality.

Lin Ming knew that the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill was soon about to condense!

After another month, the last drop of liquid fused into the middle of the breeding existence.

An incomprehensibly powerful surge of energy washed out, one that shocked even Lin Ming. This was something that spread out from the breeding existence in the void furnace.

Lin Ming's eyes shot up. A brilliant like exploded in his eyes like a bolt of lightning in the dark.

A snow white runic symbol, the medicinal runic symbol, was thrust into the breeding object.

The object began to give off a blazing heat. Blinding arcs of light shot out from its surface…

Finally, with the sound of cracking glass, a blood red pill appeared within the void furnace, one the size of a heart.

As this pill appeared, dao pattern energy currents appeared around it, making it appear supernatural and strange.

The blood red medicinal fragrance turned into liquid. As the pill floated in this liquid, it exuded an inexplicably formidable pressure.

The pill began to throb like a beating heart, as loud as rumbling thunder.

It was like it wasn't a pill but the heart of a True Divinity.

Lin Ming was ecstatic with joy. This was the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill, the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill! He had finally succeeded!

Suddenly, the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill started to rush about in all directions, wanting to escape from the void furnace.

Lin Ming was surprised. After the medicinal efficacy had been refined to the limit, the pill had gained a wisdom of its own and wanted to escape. Some pills, after escaping, could even cultivate into a spiritual being!

This sort of situation appeared because Lin Ming the materials Lin Ming sued to refine the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill were extremely precious. Moreover, the improved medicinal runic symbol had increased the medicinal efficacy of the pill.

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. The entire void furnace began to shrink and compress in on itself. Within it, all of the massive flames formed from strengths of Yin Yang Despair Valley also condensed. Underneath Lin Ming's control, they constantly poured into the Asura Heavenly Dao Law patterns that formed the furnace.

Immediately, because the void furnace was fused with infinite strength, it began to sparkle with a brilliant light.

Every single wisp of the Asura Heavenly Dao Law lines was filled with an incomparably vast energy!

As for the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill, it was tightly shackled by this tremendous energy!

Chapter 1661 - Forsaken Mortal Tomb

Chapter 1661 - Forsaken Mortal Tomb

…

…

…

Lin Ming’s fingers swiftly flew through the void, continuously leaving behind shining lines of the Asura Heavenly Dao. These lines fell down in a raging storm like a rain of endless needles.

The many lines immediately marked themselves on the heart-like Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill.

The instant that the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill was marked by the runes, Lin Ming could feel it fiercely struggle. It was like a vicious lion wildly thrashing about; this was the pill spirit that developed within the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill.

The pill spirit of the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill was cunning and swift like the Ravenous Wolf Star itself. It was cruel and strange. Facing this pill spirit, Lin Ming’s complexion was indifferent. His fingers flashed and the lines of the array formation pierced through the pill spirit!

The pill spirit’s struggle became more intense and its faint pitiful wails filled the air. The pill beat like a heart yet issued screams; it was extremely ghostly and demonic!

After a quarter hour the pill slowly stopped struggling. Like this, the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill’s spirit was erased by Lin Ming.

The Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill's pill spirit was sly and deceitful; it would not be willing to be swallowed. When Lin Ming was making his breakthrough he would be at his weakest point and if he swallowed the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill at this moment he might suffer a backlash from the pill spirit. This would definitely cause a great deal of trouble so erasing it was the best solution.

Lin Ming tentatively picked up the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill. As he felt the oppressive strength within it, one that seemed as if it could crush anyone to pieces, his heart filled with joy and satisfaction.

Xiao Moxian was also happy. When she broke through the late Divine Lord realm her senses had become even sharper and she was able to keenly feel the explosive strength contained within the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill.

"This thing... Big Brother Lin, do you plan on directly swallowing it like this?" Xiao Moxian licked her lips. At the start she had been thinking that Lin Ming would hurry up and absorb the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill. But now as she felt that unimaginably dense energy within it, her heart began to race.

The Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill was evil and cruel. If Lin Ming swallowed it directly, would he be able to withstand it?

"I must swallow it, but if I do, I'm afraid my body won't be able to withstand it. The world momentum in Yin Yang Despair Valley is lacking. We must find the Forsaken Mortal Tomb and use the world momentum there to suppress the strength of the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill and attack the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace!" Lin Ming's complexion was solemn. His eyes began to sweep over the entirety of Yin Yang Despair Valley.

Looking all around, there were wildly raging currents of fire and thunder, whistling black winds, and even an ice zone that could instantly freeze one's soul. In Yin Yang Despair Valley, destructive forces flooded the entire land and it was still unknown just how they gathered here.

Lin Ming stepped forwards, searching the valley with Xiao Moxian for any clues on the Forsaken Mortal Tomb.

After searching for some time, they discovered that Yin Yang Despair Valley was a dead end. There was only an entrance and no exit. Moreover, even though this place was far smaller than Lin Ming had first imagined, he still wasn't able to find any clues on the Forsaken Mortal Tomb.

"Big Brother Lin, is the Forsaken Mortal Tomb really together with Yin Yang Despair Valley? We can't even find the exit..."

Lin Ming remained silent. His eyes were observing the space in front of him.

The twisting space fluctuations in front of him gave off an extremely strange feeling.

In Yin Yang Despair Valley, the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws were everywhere. Lin Ming rapidly deduced every change in the power of these Laws.

These deductions were like a giant invisible hand that controlled the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, allowing him to utilize them and explore Yin Yang Despair Valley.

As a result, he discovered that the void in front of him was emitting an ancient and bleak aura.

There was something strange here!

His eyes flashed and the Phoenix Blood Spear shot out, smashing into a node in space.

This node just happened to be the weakest point in space indicated by the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws.

The distorted space, underneath the impact of billions of jins of force, began to collapse, like a giant gate that was caving in on itself.

A distant and ancient atmosphere surged outwards, one that seemed to originate from the dawn of the heavens and earth.

Lin Ming looked around and saw that the inside was misty and filled with spiritual strength. It was a vast world with the horizon stretching past his sight.

Then, he quickly rushed in.

Xiao Moxian followed close behind him, also entering.

“This is…”

As soon as he arrived, Lin Ming was shocked by the scene he saw.

This was truly a separate world and the space node leading outside was faintly recognizable high in the clouds.

He and Xiao Moxian floated high in the air, given a bird’s eye view of the breadth and length of this boundless world.

This world seemed to be without end. Just the ground was several hundred miles beneath them!

Looking down, they could see a gray and ancient wilderness stretching to the ends of the skies. Rivers winded through the lands like twisting dragons, surging with strength!

And above this great land were massive shadows that seemed like million foot high mountains.

Lin Ming focused his eyes on these shadows and saw that they were actually incomparably massive black turtles, crawling on the ground like mountains.

Their pointy turtle shells entered high into the clouds, covered in endless fog.

The black turtles emitted a dark aura, one similar to the aura of the Black Dragon Sovereign who lived in the depths of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

These black turtles were absolutely God Beast level divine beings.

“Big Brother Lin, look over there… there are giant coffins on the backs of the turtles…” Xiao Moxian mumbled in shock, her eyes focused far into the distance.

Lin Ming looked over and saw that on the back of every turtle was a massive ancient bronze coffin that towered into the skies, standing tall and firm!

Weng~ Weng~ Weng~

Waves of rich spiritual strength continuously surged out from these ancient bronze coffins, filling the world with energy.

Countless runes followed this flowing spiritual strength, flitting through the skies like rivers of stars.

Seeing these ancient coffins, Lin Ming was panic-stricken. The incalculable aura emanating from them even left him feeling terrified.

These ancient coffins were several miles large in radius, as large as a grand palace. Even if a coiling ridge giant were to lie down in one of these coffins they would only occupy a tiny corner of it.

“This is the Forsaken Mortal Tomb? What is the meaning of the words Forsaken Mortal? Could the people buried within the bronze coffins be those… Forsaken Mortals?”

Lin Ming frowned. In the world of the Asura Road there were far too many legends. This included Tragic Death Valley, the Great Desolate, the Stormy Sea – every land had its own corresponding legends and fables.

There were many variations of these stories. But because these stories had been in existence for far too long, they were no longer credible.

As for the Forsaken Mortal Tomb, legends about this land were very rare. This was probably because when most people entered Yin Yang Despair Valley, they didn't know how to enter the Forsaken Mortal Tomb. Only those who experienced a great stroke of luck would be able to enter this place. As for what the 'Forsaken Mortal' meant, no one was sure.

Some people believed that they were giant servants who fought under the Asura Road Master in the past. There were even some people who believed that these Forsaken Mortals were the ancestors of the coiling ridge giants!

But although the current coiling ridge giants that lived deep in the Great Desolate could be considered a powerful race, they couldn't be compared to the Forsaken Mortals that lived in the ancient past.

The bloodline of the coiling ridge giants had been diluted far too much over time. They were even losing their wisdom and becoming more like vicious beasts.

But even though their intellect had diminished from in the past, their bloodline still held the mark of the 'Forsaken Mortals'. This was also the reason why they felt a deep sense of fear and awe towards the Forsaken Mortal Tomb and defended the edges of Yin Yang Despair Valley.

Lin Ming's desire to enter Yin Yang Despair Valley had evoked a maniacal anger from them. Even so, their veneration of this land could not be changed and when Lin Ming had rushed in they could only watch helplessly on without giving chase.

As Lin Ming was lost in thought, he suddenly saw that in the far off distance where the spiritual strength was the strongest and where the end of the land was, there was an even larger black turtle. Its shell stretched for thousands of miles and misty spiritual power gushed out from it like waterfalls, floating all around it in amounts high enough to hide the world in shadows.

This black turtle was over ten times larger than the other black turtles. Its aura had already surpassed the level of a God Beast and nearly reached that of a True Divinity. Even from such a far distance, Lin Ming was finding it hard to face this presence!

“Let’s go!”

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian flew over to the phantom of the largest black turtle.

As the two flew through the skies they passed many black turtles. In the legends it was said that a black turtle could live for over a billion years and was the longest lived species in the universe. But in this Forsaken Mortal Tomb, without exception, all of these black turtles had turned into bones. Only their grand and colossal shells that rose into the skies seemed to tell of their once brilliant past.

Flying over this graveyard, Lin Ming felt an incomparably sad and dismal aura, one so profound that he nearly lost his mind. In shock, Lin Ming hurriedly revolved the Divine Mist Heart Mantra, only then calming down his racing heart.

Lin Ming turned to glance at Xiao Moxian and discovered that he didn’t need to worry about her. Her God Beast physique made it even easier for her to resist this desolate aura within the Forsaken Mortal Tomb.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian finally arrived on the back of the largest turtle’s shell. This black turtle was so massive that it resembled a planet.

As for the ancient coffin on the black turtle’s back, it was also the size of the mountain. The surface of the coffin was covered with mysterious runes that emitted a majestic spiritual light.

Every beam of spiritual light possessed an astonishing amount of energy. Each beam shot into the sky, creating a vacuum in space.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. Then, he lightly swept the Phoenix Blood Spear over a tiny corner of the spiritual light. Even with this tiny movement he still felt his arm shake and go numb. These lights definitely had an impact force of at least 10 billion jins.

The ancient coffins were sealed shut and bound with runes. With Lin Ming's cultivation, wanting to open them was impossible.

"Forsaken Mortals… these are proud children of the heavens from ancient times that are interred in these coffins…" Lin Ming mumbled to himself. But with that, he no longer bothered with these thoughts.

Currently, there was no meaning in dwelling on these thoughts. After all, they were far too remote a matter for him. What was important was what he had to do now – attack the second Dao Palace, the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace!

Originally, Lin Ming was only making a guess from Torchriver's memories that Forsaken Mortal Tomb would be an ideal place to make a breakthrough. But now that he truly arrived here, he discovered this place was far better than he had anticipated!

There were these incredible and endless black turtles, the unusual ancient bronze coffins that were flush with energy, and most importantly the breath of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws here that flooded every inch of space, ten times stronger than that of Yin Yang Despair Valley.

With the incredibly strong existence of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws that were present here, he could draw in all the strength from within the Forsaken Mortal Tomb, using the momentum here to suppress the Ravenous Wolf Star.

Chapter 1662 – Impacting the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace

Chapter 1662 – Impacting the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace

…

…

…

Ash gray runes flew forth from Lin Ming's fingers, flying all around him.

Before this breakthrough he had to make his final preparations.

These gray runes were formed from the Asura Sutra's Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. The demonic death energy within them followed the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, completely in harmony with the atmosphere in the Forsaken Mortal Tomb.

After all, within the Forsaken Mortal Tomb, besides the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws that occupied every corner of this world, the greatest energy was the dense aura of dead souls.

These runes fell across the sky like scattering stars, creating something that resembled a massive black rune that spanned for 10,000 miles.

Using an entire month, Lin Ming formed a million runes and created a giant array formation. This array formation was meant to protect Lin Ming but also to gather the energy of the world unto his own body.

No matter how formidable the powers within the Forsaken Mortal Tomb were, they had to follow the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws. This allowed Lin Ming the chance to galvanize a portion of this power for his own use.

This time, with Lin Ming as the center, an incomparably large black beam of spiritual strength appeared and spread outwards. This was the Dark Spirit Gathering Array.

In order to impact the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and use the momentum of the world to help him, he needed to be flexible and adapt to the situation.

Lin Ming observed the Forsaken Mortal Tomb and found that he could use runes of the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel to form a simple spiritual energy gathering array formation that resonated with the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws.

Rumble rumble rumble

The array formation activated. A pitch black death energy emerged. Countless threads appeared from the array formation like innumerable black hands, beginning to stir up the death energy from the ancient bronze coffins that were millions of miles away. Even the spiritual strength of the Black Turtle God Beasts began to gather towards this focal point.

The strength that Lin Ming was able to summon in this graveyard was only a millionth of the power present here. Even so, this was more than astonishing!

Xiao Moxian was startled as she watched an infinite number of giant black turtle phantoms appear around Lin Ming before fading away.

After a quarter hour of gathering energy, Lin Ming took out the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill from his spatial ring and swallowed it into his stomach.

After swallowing the pill, Lin Ming felt as if he had swallowed the sun. He was ready to explode from the energy at any moment.

A boiling strength like lava surged out and into Lin Ming's meridians and bones, wildly racing around and wreaking havoc where it went.

Lin Ming had already opened the Eight Hidden Inner Gates and even formed the Purple Temple Dao Palace. In terms of the intensity of his mortal body, he was dozens of times more formidable than an ancient vicious beast.

Even if a planet were to shatter upon him, his mortal body wouldn't be crushed.

But such a powerful body was actually beginning to crack beneath the power of the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill and its galaxy-like strength. His skin, flesh, and bones all shook as if his body would be torn asunder.

His entire body began to expand like a balloon.

At the same time, waves of medicinal efficacy essence broke into every inch of his flesh and blood, making him feel happy and carefree.

He could feel the strength within his body and bones. His skin, meridians, flesh, blood, everything began to transform… evolve…

However, this strength finally fired into nine spots within his body.

These nine spots were like giant vortexes. Mysterious runes appeared within them as the aura of the Great Dao seethed around them.

In Xiao Moxian's vision, she could see these nine spots on Lin Ming's body begin to shine with a blood red light that pierced into the heavens.

This blood red light was incredibly intense, piercing through everything it touched. It began to resonate with a strange power in the darkness, summoning it.

Woosh – Woosh – Woosh

Fantastical beams of starlight suddenly fell down from the heavens, wrapping around Lin Ming's body.

Wrapped in this starlight, Lin Ming felt even stronger and more solid.

Once again, he arrived in the pitch black space that belonged to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

In the cold and still air above him, in the center of the universe, there were nine radiant stars shining, smoldering with arcane power.

These stars exuded a gentle light, one that echoed with the nine spots on Lin Ming's body, instilling within him the strength of stars.

Lin Ming was so comfortable that he nearly groaned. The power of the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill surging within him was actually suppressed just a little bit.

However, he didn't lose his mind in this endless glorious starlight. His eyes focused on one specific star.

This star was the Ravenous Wolf Star!

At this time, the Ravenous Wolf Star was undoubtedly the brightest of the nine stars. The strange and ghostly light it exuded echoed with a spot on Lin Ming's body, causing the power of the stars to pour into it.

As this cold and gloomy starlight entered his body, Lin Ming remained vigilant even as he felt his own strength rapidly increasing. It wasn't easy to absorb the starlight of the Ravenous Wolf Star. He had to maintain absolute focus to prevent any sudden changes!

Slowly, Lin Ming's mortal body began to transform. The boundless medicinal efficacy within the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Power turned into strength, allowing Lin Ming's mortal body to reach new heights in strength.

His body began to shine and give off heat. A glittering luster began to emit from his body, as if he were an ancient piece of jade that was finally being shaken and dusted off, exposing the magnificence beneath. From Lin Ming's pores, he began to emit a milk-like medicinal efficacy, faint and hazy.

But at this moment, a harsh shriek spread to Lin Ming's ears. An incomparably powerful aura of spiritual power appeared, seeming as if it were awakening from a deep sleep.

Bang!

The calm medicinal efficacy that was transforming Lin Ming's body suddenly turned wild. The skin on his body ruptured and blood vessels ripped apart as blood spurted out everywhere!

"Mm!?"

Lin Ming stuffily coughed. As he probed his body, he suddenly discovered that the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill's pill spirit was being revived beneath the endless starlight of the Ravenous Wolf Star!

It was even possible that the starlight of the Ravenous Wolf Star was purposefully intending to arouse the pill spirit that Lin Ming had erased!

As Lin Ming realized this, his mind shook!

A brilliant light flashed through his pupils like lighting – this was the critical moment as he was suppressing his mortal body in order to attack and absorb the Ravenous Wolf Star. If there was a rebellion within his body then this would be a major catastrophe!

If he were under assault from both within and without, he would definitely explode and perish!

Lin Ming's hands moved and he drew pitch black lines of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws in the void.

The energy stored within the Dark Spirit Gathering Array began to gush out as it was activated by the traction of the Laws!

Lin Ming had spent a great deal of time and energy to form this array formation that gathered the power of the world, and the reason for that was to prevent this scene from occurring.

With a deep roar, a black turtle-shaped fluctuation of energy leapt out from the Dark Spirit Gathering Array, turning into a beam of black light. With a howl, it pounced towards Lin Ming.

This horrifying flow of energy sparkled as it disappeared into Lin Ming’s body.

Although this was only the aura left behind by a dead God Beast, when this power was condensed by the Dark Spirit Gathering Array, then by borrowing the momentum of the world here it was more than enough to contend with the strength of the Ravenous Wolf Star!

Suddenly, the aura of the black turtle began to wrestle with the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill Spirit deep in Lin Ming’s body.

One power was beneath Lin Ming’s control, wanting to suppress everything. The other power didn’t want to be shackled, it wanted to escape into the skies.

Rumble rumble rumble!

In the fierce combat, the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill’s medicinal efficacy constantly melted away. Lin Ming took this chance to take hold of all this medicinal efficacy and send it into his muscles, flesh, and blood… into every inch of his body.

His muscles were constantly flushed with an incomparably powerful medicinal efficacy. Lin Ming’s strength rapidly rose.

At the same time he simultaneously guided the movements of the Asura Heavenly Dao Law lines within the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill, squeezing even more medicinal efficacy to leak out.

In the end the balanced Asura Heavenly Dao Laws within the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill collapsed. On the outside, the energy of the black turtle attacked it.

Finally, the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill turned into waves of liquid medicine that ruthlessly exploded.

The raging sea of medicinal efficacy was like snakes and dragons as it broke into Lin Ming's body, thoroughly fusing with him.

Beneath the tremendous scouring of the medicinal efficacy, every pore of Lin Ming's body began to shine with a brilliant light as his strength rose to all new levels.

Occasionally, wisps of blood would shoot out from his wounds like bolts of lightning, blinding to the eyes.

The Heretical God Tree also began to grow. It became majestic and dignified, exuding the power of countless runes.

Roar!

As Lin Ming's strength reached the limit, his body seemed to be on the verge of exploding. Then, Lin Ming's head fell back as two beams of substantialized energy shot out from his eyes like black columns that shot into the skies! As this happened, his body rose up from the ground.

His entire body sparked with arcs of electricity. Like a dragon flying through the heavens, he shot towards the most brilliant Ravenous Wolf Star!

The moment that shot up, the ground beneath his feet began to howl as the energy gathered into a focal point. With a cracking sound, the entire array seemed as if it was being crushed like glass!

Then, the Dark Spirit Gathering Array's mission was already complete. All of the strength contained within it merged into Lin Ming's body!

With the momentum from this boost of power, Lin Ming shot up at an unbelievable velocity. His body burst out with a terrifying blood vitality, his entire body igniting with dazzling flames from the high-speed air friction.

Wherever he went, even the void would be twisted like it would shatter at any moment underneath the overwhelming momentum.

As Lin Ming was about to approach the Ravenous Wolf Star, the void around it suddenly filled with the sound of rumbling thunder.

A strange and vast aura appeared in the air.

Lin Ming remained vigilant. Goosebumps rose up from all over his body. This was his body's instinctual reaction from sensing an inexplicable danger.

Like the last time he impacted the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, lines of the Great Dao appeared in space, binding together to form a giant dao diagram.

On this dao diagram, all sorts of phantoms appeared. There were galaxies, stars, mountains, rivers, birds, animals, insects, and all the myriad life forms in the universe.

In the middle of every pattern were countless tiny flashing runes.

During this second impact, Lin Ming unhesitatingly exploded towards the dao diagram. His strength surged and his blood vitality billowed around him. His fist flashed out in a series of strikes that created sonic booms that echoed like peals of thunder.

Now that the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill had tempered his mortal body, filling it with infinite strength, he was brimming with confidence.

Bang!

His mortal body trampled through the void as his speed increased yet again. His fist that seemed as if it could destroy everything suddenly arrived before the dao diagram.

This dao diagram represented the will of the Heavenly Dao. Every flashing rune within it had infinite variations, each variation possessing a wisp of the Laws.

This was a strength able to suppress all the strength in the world.

Lin Ming’s fist carried with it an indomitable momentum as it came heavily crashing down!

Chapter 1663 – Breaking the Dao Diagram

Chapter 1663 – Breaking the Dao Diagram

…

…

…

The dao diagram in the sky possessed the infinite charm of the Great Dao. As Lin Ming was about to smash into it, the dao diagram emitted a gentle light that shrouded over him.

Lin Ming's current blood vitality was boiling over, but as he was covered by this white light he felt as if all his memories had been seen. It was a strange and uncomfortable feeling.

In the blink of an eye the dao diagram became even larger. In the surface of the dao diagram a black hole appeared, and from this black hole a crystal smooth hand shot out, welcoming Lin Ming's fist without any feeling.

Bang!

As his fist struck this palm, a metallic grating noise sounded out and a brilliantly wild fluctuation of energy erupted.

It was like two stars colliding with each other. Fierce shockwaves spread out from the impact, stirring up a savage tornado of energy.

In the rumbling chaos, the billions and trillions of runes on the dao diagram rapidly dimmed.

"Mm!?" Lin Ming was shocked. Could this crystal smooth hand have been formed from the dao diagram? Strange… how could he feel as if he had met this presence before?

At this time, the dao diagram twisted and a hazy form emerged from the center of it. This person wore a light gauzy dress and her body was filled with endless grace and charm. Her eyes seemed to contain galaxies, her vision able to extinguish all life and see through all lies.

As this person fully emerged from the dao diagram, Lin Ming revealed an expression of utter shock. How could it be her!?

The person that came from this dao diagram was the Divine Realm’s Empyrean Divine Dream!

As he was stunned, the dao diagram distorted again. Lin Ming felt a strange occurrence in the space behind him.

But by the time he discovered this it was already too late.

A fist wrapped in a familiar power solidly pounded into Lin Ming’s back.

This strength was vast and limitless, billowing like waves and causing the space behind him to be torn to shreds.

This impact strength was as violent and brutal as a star. Unexpectedly dense grandmist energy drilled into his body like countless titanic dragons.

Everywhere it went, Lin Ming’s body would crack apart with blood flying everywhere.

In that time, the drops of blood that shot from his body floated in space like rubies. They seemed to breathe with a mind of their own, emanating a dim power.

“Grandmist energy, Grandmist Laws… could it be?”

Lin Ming had been severely injured. His mind raced as he rapidly opened the grandmist space to protect his body. The star-heavy grandmist space formed a wall around him, protecting him and also counterbalancing that terrifying strength that sneak attacked him.

Although Lin Ming already had his guesses, as he truly looked at the person who had ambushed him, he was still left panic-stricken.

The person who sneak attacked him was a tall middle-aged man. He wore black battle armor designed like a dragon king. The battle armor covered his entire body and his face was shrouded, hidden from sight. His mortal body contained a strength that far outstripped Lin Ming and a heavy grandmist energy lingered around his body. Just from standing there this person resembled an undefeatable war god!

In just one glance, a name floated in Lin Ming's mind – Empyrean Primordius!

Although he hadn't seen Empyrean Primordius before, he could still confirm that the person who sneak attacked him had the same aura and shape as Empyrean Primordius!

"Empyrean Primordius!?"

Seeing Empyrean Primordius, Lin Ming was shocked, but then he slowly calmed down, his complexion turning even colder. His eyes flashed with a brilliant light. He thought out loud, "What a good Ravenous Wolf Star! I was going to absorb you into my body to open the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace with the power of your starlight, but to think you would attempt to revolt against me!"

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred and all of his blood vitality began to boil. Energy from the Purple Temple Dao Palace crazily revolved and the power of a True Dragon gushed forth from his form. Lin Ming's cracked and wounded body began to slowly regenerate.

From the time that Lin Ming approached the dao diagram and punched it, to the appearance of two Empyreans and Empyrean Primordius even severely wounding him, all of this had happened in a fleeting moment, as quick as a bolt of lightning.

However, Lin Ming understood that no matter what, it was impossible for Empyrean Divine Dream or Empyrean Primordius to appear here. One was in the Divine Realm and it was unknown whether or not the other was alive, so how could they appear in the Forsaken Mortal Tomb? Moreover, with Empyrean Primordius and Empyrean Divine Dream's strength, if they wanted to kill him all they needed to do was wave their hand and he would suffer a cruel and miserable death. Why would they need to punch him hard enough to only crack his flesh open?

After careful observation, Lin Ming could clearly feel that these two great ‘Empyreans’ were filled with blood vitality, their auras were exactly as Lin Ming had remembered, and even their appearances seemed the same, the truth was that they lacked the world dominating aura of a true Empyrean!

Not just that, but Lin Ming discovered that faint traces of the Laws wrapped around the bodies of these two ‘Empyreans’, Laws that gave off the aura of the Great Dao.

Without a doubt, these two Empyreans were nothing but phantoms. When Lin Ming recalled that strange light that enveloped him earlier, he could confirm that the sly and resourceful Ravenous Wolf Star had used the Heavenly Dao Laws here to reproduce images of these Empyreans as well as certain characteristics of their strength, all in order to threaten him. After all, in Lin Ming’s mind, whether it was Empyrean Divine Dream or Empyrean Primordius, he felt nothing but the deepest sense of respect and awe towards them.

These two extreme Empyrean characters were both leaders of humanity!

This Ravenous Wolf Star was proficient in attacking the heart and mind. Although this illusion attack seemed easy to break through, when that white light had absorbed Lin Ming’s memories it was enough to affect his spiritual sea. If it weren’t for Lin Ming having cultivated the Divine Mist Heart Mantra and his soul force being incomparably powerful, then even if he knew that these two Empyreans couldn’t appear here he still wouldn’t have been able to realize they were simulations created by the Ravenous Wolf Star.

At that time, Lin Ming would have to fight against these two leaders of humanity that he revered and respected, and during this battle he wouldn’t be able to display his true combat strength.

After being alerted, Lin Ming became even more vigilant, Because of the severe attack he had received, his mortal body had cracked and he had lost a great deal of blood energy. Afterwards, when he had galvanized the power of a dragon to regenerate, this had caused him to use up a part of the energy he had saved in himself.

Without having established the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace, without having shattered the Ravenous Wolf Star's dao diagram, it was absolutely not good news for him to use up so much strength.

This Ravenous Wolf Star was cunning and tricky. If Lin Ming wanted to absorb it into the corresponding Dao Palace within his body, it wouldn't be simple at all.

After a brief moment of thought, he traced his spatial ring. A round and plain pill appeared in Lin Ming's hand.

This pill was the nameless ancient pill that Lin Ming had obtained at the Divine Rune City Auction!

Lin Ming had spent a billion points to purchase this ancient pill. It was a transcendent divine level pill.

Lin Ming didn't directly swallow this ancient pill. After all, the power contained within this ancient pill was unfathomably great. If he were to swallow it now, he wouldn't be able to suppress its strength. The Ravenous Wolf Star definitely wouldn't miss this chance to attack him.

Lin Ming only held the nameless ancient pill and used his divine soul to draw out the energy from the ancient pill. He absorbed the essence of the pill into his body through his acupoints.

The pure and vibrant power of the ancient pill continuously flowed into his body. His body that had just been severely wounded began to be nourished and revitalized.

But at the same time, how could the Ravenous Wolf Star give Lin Ming the chance to recover? The phantoms of the two Empyreans rushed together at the same time, revolving the Grandmist Laws and Divine Dream Laws that Lin Ming remembered. Their powers came shrouding down from the skies, overwhelming!

Facing the attacks of these two Empyreans, Lin Ming didn't draw back. Although he knew these two Empyreans were fakes, he had no intention of battling them. His only goal here was the Ravenous Wolf Star; there was no meaning in fighting these two phantoms that the Ravenous Wolf Star condensed with Laws!

Lin Ming summoned Primordius Heavenly Palace.

Then, he flew inside!

Bang!

With a loud explosion, the protective array formations around Primordius Heavenly Palace wildly shook. The attacks of the two Empyreans all fell onto Primordius Heavenly Palace!

And placed within Primordius Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming opened the Heretical God Force. A raging strength suddenly broke out from his inner world.

With this strength and with the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, he began to galvanize the powers within the Forsaken Mortal Tomb once more! The black turtle energy that filled the air and the remaining residual wills from the ancient bronze coffins were all dragged towards him.

Whether it was the black turtles or the Forsaken Mortals, they were all existences from billions of years ago that were stronger than Empyreans.

The leaders amongst them could even compare with True Divinities!

In a moment, chaos occurred around him as phantoms appeared, enough to blot out the skies. There were blurry phantoms of black turtles and forsaken mortals, all of them shimmering into existence around Primordius Heavenly Palace. These phantoms immediately surrounded the Empyrean Divine Dream and Empyrean Primordius which the Ravenous Wolf Star had reproduced with the Heavenly Dao Laws.

By drawing upon the momentum of the world within the Forsaken Mortal Tomb, Lin Ming was trying to preserve as much of his own strength as possible to absorb the cunning Ravenous Wolf Star. As for these two Empyrean phantoms, using the momentum of the world to suppress them was more than enough.

Of the black turtle death energy and residual will of the Forsaken Mortals, even if Lin Ming was only able to borrow a millionth of this strength, it was still an incomparably terrifying power. This power was condensed by the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws where they immediately clashed with the Ravenous Wolf Star’s Heavenly Dao Laws.

Bang! Bang! Bang! The surroundings began to shake as even the void was being torn to shreds.

The moment that the Empyrean phantoms were suppressed by the momentum of the world, Lin Ming stepped out of Primordius Heavenly Palace. He faced the dao diagram in the skies, fiercely grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear, and then hurtled himself upwards.

The black turtle death energy and the indestructible and mysterious strength within the ancient bronze coffins were slowly pulled upwards by the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws where they gathered upon the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Gradually, the Phoenix Blood Spear shined with an even more brilliant light. It was like a blood phoenix spreading its wings, soaring to the ends of time.

In that moment, Lin Ming seemed to hold a sun in his hands. The Phoenix Blood Spear pierced into the skies!

Within a spark of time, the Phoenix Blood Spear was thrust out innumerable times. Each spear strike was able to tear open the void and cut apart planets.

The Phoenix Blood Spear howled in this crazy dance. It was like innumerable fire phoenixes hurtling forwards without end. Countless runes of raging flames swept up in a tornado.

Lin Ming’s blood heated up as if it were burning. The tangled power formed fire red runes that covered his entire body.

As all of the spear potential gathered together, it violently struck a single point on the dao diagram. Lin Ming’s bodily strength also erupted to its limits.

Kacha!

With a wild bang, a brilliantly dazzling divine light flashed out. Countless golden fragments went flying into the air. This massive dao diagram had been shattered by Lin Ming’s all-out spear attack!

Chapter 1664 – Receiving the Ravenous Wolf

Chapter 1664 – Receiving the Ravenous Wolf

…

…

…

Ka ka ka!

The skies were shattered by Lin Ming and a terrifying explosive sound tore through space. The moment that Lin Ming broke the nine star dao diagram, a surging force came gushing out from it like a thick purple python that rumbled into Lin Ming's body.

As this strength entered Lin Ming's body, it was like withered grasslands in a spell of drought finally receiving rainwater. In an instant, the massive blood vitality that he had used up was suddenly refilled by this strength. At the same time, a strange rhythm plunged into Lin Ming's body, causing the runes that marked his flesh and bones to shine.

But at this moment, in the battle between the endless black turtle death energy and the golden giants formed from the residual will and spiritual strength of the ancient bronze coffins, as they were fighting against the phantoms of Empyrean Divine Dream and Empyrean Primordius, that battle finally came to a conclusion.

After all, the phantoms of Empyrean Primordius and Empyrean Divine Dream were only simulations created by the Heavenly Dao Laws; how could their strength be compared to true Empyreans?

The two phantom Empyreans were finally savagely suppressed by the world momentum Lin Ming had borrowed from the black turtles and the ancient bronze coffins.

In instant that the Empyreans phantoms were crushed apart, the Laws that formed them were also shattered.

These Laws belonged to humanity's body transformation system and could be called the Nine Star Heavenly Dao Laws.

From an external appearance, the essence gathering system and body transformation Laws were highly different. The essence gathering system Laws were infinitely complex and diverse Heavenly Dao runes, but as for body transformation's Nine Star Heavenly Dao Laws, they were like a roiling galaxy of stars. As starlight shined down, monstrous blood energy would cloud out the skies, filled with vibrant vitality!

These Laws appeared to resemble the power of stars.

At this time, the Ravenous Wolf Star above Lin Ming began to shine with an ever brighter light. The shattered half of the Heavenly Dao array diagram fiercely shook as a giant whirlpool of starlight appeared around it, seeming as if it would sweep up all the strength of these Laws back to where they were.

"I don't think so!"

Lin Ming sneered. In order to attack the second Dao Palace he had made preparations for a long time. How could he allow the Nine Star Heavenly Dao array diagram to reabsorb the Laws and restore its strength?

In the brief flash his fingers flew and lines of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws flew out, creating a giant net.

As this net appeared it began to absorb all of the surrounding spiritual energy, becoming increasingly solid and bright.

The Nine Star Heavenly Dao Laws were one of the Laws of the 33 Heavens. But as for the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, they did not belong to the 33 Heavens, but were a set of Laws that the Asura Road Master created himself. Even so, the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws were no weaker than the 33 Heaven Laws. After all, the Asura Road that was supported by the Asura Laws could stand on par with the 33 Heavens.

The Asura Heavenly Dao instantly stopped the vortex that was caused by the nine star dao diagram.

Lin Ming was like a flash of electricity as he plunged towards the shattered Nine Star Heavenly Dao Laws. All of the acupoints over his body opened and his mouth spread as he suddenly swallowed in this starlight.

Xiu –

It was like the galaxy was being sucked in. Lin Ming was pulling in the surroundings so hard that even space distorted. The absorption force was incredible.

Immediately, the pure power of the Nine Star Heavenly Dao Laws was continuously swallowed into Lin Ming's body.

Bang –

Lin Ming's inflated body began to crack open once more.

But this time blood didn't shoot out. All that happened was his muscles and blood emitting a brilliant light. Within his body, on his bones, it was like stars had branded him, making him shine with splendor!

The light of these stars held a deep and profound meaning. Behind Lin Ming, phantasmal specks of light wove into a river of stars that poured down behind him like a silver waterfall.

Lin Ming's body was immediately filled with vitality. Waves of blood energy surged within him.

Currently, Lin Ming had yet to open the second Dao Palace. But just by swallowing a little bit of the strength from the Nine Stars Heavenly Dao Laws, this was incomparably better than swallowing spiritual medicines.

As his strength wildly surged upwards, Lin Ming soared through the skies. His body emitted a blinding light as if he were the sun itself.

His body seemed as if it would explode at any moment, but it remained extremely tough and tenacious throughout.

Finally, the True Dragon blood within him shot into the heavens.

The Heretical God Tree appeared behind him, a lifelike image nearly substantialized into reality. It towered high and lofty, a fire dragon and thunder dragon dancing atop the crown. They were the true meaning of thunder and fire that he had grasped.

Waves of strength radiated out from the pores of his skin, causing ripples to spread through the void and even piercing through space.

When the last of the Heavenly Dao's vitality was swallowed up by Lin Ming, at this time, when he stepped forwards the sound of muffled thunder exploded through space. With another step, he shot upwards once again.

In the blink of an eye, Lin Ming arrived in front of the dao diagram. The Purple Temple Dao Palace opened. He grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear, his strength revolving to the limit as he solidly smashed his spear into the cracked nine star dao diagram!

The cracked nine star dao diagram violently trembled, like an iceberg on the verge of collapse.

Sharp cracks appeared in the dao diagram, followed by a piercing sound. These sound waves condensed into reality, escaping into the real world where they slashed into the earth and left fissures thousands of miles long in the Forsaken Mortal Tomb.

However, on that seemingly limitless dao diagram, a clear crack appeared, a deep ravine hundreds of miles deep.

"Still not enough!"

Lin Ming cried out, thrusting his spear forth once more. The True Dragon blood condensed into the shape of a True Dragon. Following this spear, it clawed towards the dao diagram, throwing itself at the crack.

One strike –

Two strikes –

….

1000 strikes –

…

All of Lin Ming's bodily strength gushed out like an exploding volcano. In an instant, thousands and tens of thousands of spear strikes were thrust out, each spear puncturing the center of the dao diagram's crack, constantly expanding it.

The center of that crack was the epicenter of an earthquake. More and more ruptures spread out for thousands of miles in all directions.

The entire dao diagram violently trembled, emitting loud creaking noises like shattering glass.

Finally, explosive sounds echoed out from Lin Ming's joints, and carrying winds manifested from the dragon energy around him. He hurtled towards the dao diagram.

Traces of the Great Dao and the destroyed bits of starlight were fractured into even smaller spots of luminous light.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! The entire dao diagram finally burst apart.

Shimmering starlight leaked out from the cracks of the dao diagram, falling down in raging torrents. Massive pieces of it fell onto Lin Ming's body.

Lin Ming's continuously shining body shined with an even brighter light, like a supernova, blinding to the eyes.

His bodily strength began to climb and climb again.

When the last wisp of starlight was absorbed into his body, Lin Ming was able to summon sounds of wind and thunder by raising his hand. The space around him constantly shook.

With his increasing strength, his confidence also rose.

In that moment, Lin Ming was confident that a punch of his would be able to tear apart the world, crushing all of existence.

Even Xiao Moxian who was watching all of this from below felt frightened.

Just by seeing Lin Ming's body she felt an inexplicable feeling of dread – this was a dread against a powerful blood vitality that originated from her half God Beast bloodline.

Of course, this was also because Xiao Moxian hadn't undergone enough nirvanas. If Xiao Moxian were to complete nine nirvanas then she could easily achieve a terrifying boundary that surpassed an Empyrean.

Lin Ming stepped in the void and with an explosive sound his figure flashed and disappeared. In an instant, he tore through the void, arriving in front of the glorious Ravenous Wolf Star!

That incomparably massive Ravenous Wolf Star was only the size of a ruler now. It was like the Ravenous Wolf Star had sensed Lin Ming's arrival and had hidden itself in the deep darkness.

But with Lin Ming's profound understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, he was able to instantly perceive the Ravenous Wolf Star.

Without looking, he thrust his hands into the void. Instantly, his hands felt as if they were submerged in roiling magma.

What he touched in that moment was the core of the Ravenous Wolf Star.

In that moment, even though his body surged with the power of life, he still felt the unusual aura within the Ravenous Wolf Star.

He directly grasped this star and swallowed it into his body.

Bang!

It was like being submerged into an endless sea filled with violent clouds of thunder, like being dropped in infinite volcanoes, like falling into an impenetrable black hole…

An incomparably powerful aura, one that carried with it boundless majesty and rage, one that caused the heart to race, suddenly submerged into Lin Ming’s body and exploded.

The Ravenous Wolf Star, sly and cunning. At the same time, it also represented the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace!

This Dao Palace communicated with the world, casting down punishment on behalf of the heavens.

Now, this punishment descended on Lin Ming.

The Heretical God Tree phantom behind Lin Ming was whipped about by violent winds. The dragon phantom formed by the True Dragon blood was torn asunder by the black hole. The heavenly tribulation fire of the seven different true meanings was suffocated by the meaning of deep water of heavenly tribulation…

The runes in his blood and flesh were attracted by the black hole and began to savagely break apart.

Within Lin Ming’s body, everything turned chaotic. Even his soul force came under influence. As waves of heavenly retribution struck Lin Ming his blood vitality swelled up.

This was the final meeting on their narrow path and the final revolt of the Ravenous Wolf Star. After coming this far, how could Lin Ming let all his efforts go to waste?

Countless lines of the Asura Heavenly Dao laws were pulled up by Lin Ming's soul force, thrusting into his body and rumbling into the midst of the power of heavenly retribution.

Immediately, these Asura Heavenly Dao Law lines were like a giant net that trapped the beast, stubbornly stopping the final crazy attack of the Ravenous Wolf Star.

Bang! The Ravenous Wolf Star exploded.

Beneath the purest and most glorious starlight, black star-like runes were contained within. They melted into Lin Ming's flesh and blood, fusing together with him.

"This… this is a part of the Heavenly Dao Laws, representing the power of heavenly retribution, the true meaning of heavenly retribution…"

Lin Ming's entire body was immersed in pain but also a strange twinge of joyful pleasure.

The Great Dao's true meaning of heavenly tribulation; this made his soul shiver and his body quake in excitement.

At the same time, the faint traces of pain began to spread throughout his body. This was the mark of the Great Dao entering his body, an impact that even caused pain to his divine soul.

But with the passing of time, all of the power of starlight began to revolve in Lin Ming's body, forming a mysterious and marvelous Dao Palace.

This Dao Palace had a magnificent hall that shined with a blazing light. Within it, black energy filled the air and cracks of lightning whipped about. There were even waves of horrifying fire, burning so hot it seemed that they could burn down the universe.

This extreme majesty represented the punishment of the Heavenly Dao. It connected together with Lin Ming's flesh and blood foundation and even his divine soul.

This allowed Lin Ming to feel a powerful aura. All of those black runes in his flesh and blood began to sparkle, resonating with him.

The Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace had finally opened!

Chapter 1665 – Preparation Is the Key to Success

Chapter 1665 – Preparation Is the Key to Success

…

…

…

Lin Ming clenched his fists together, a divine light shining in his eyes. In order to break through this Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace, Lin Ming had put forth an unimaginable amount of effort. And now, he had finally succeeded!

As he felt the strength surging in his body, Lin Ming impatiently wanted to fight.

Ever since he left the Marvel Blue Nation he had yet to fight a truly powerful opponent.

Closing his eyes deep in meditation, Lin Ming carefully felt the strength of the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace.

The first two Dao Palaces of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace – Heavenly Retribution and Purple Temple.

Of them, the function of the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace was to use the body of a martial artist as a medium to commune with the heavens and earth.

The body was a microcosm unto itself and could correspond to stars in the universe. In the boundless world, the so-called power of heavenly retribution was ultimately the strength of the Heavenly Dao.

After the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace opened, a martial artist could use the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace as a communication medium to allow the body to bear the power of the heavens and earth!

No matter how powerful one's mortal body was, how powerful could it be? Even royal God Beasts could only compare to extreme Empyreans.

But the power of the heavens and earth was different. Their power could be described in an infinitely varied number of ways.

For instance, when a star exploded and a black hole was formed, this was a strength that would even suck in an Empyrean and turn them into nothing.

Of course, with Lin Ming's current strength wanting to simulate such a strength was far from possible. He still had a long road ahead of him.

"Power of the heavens and earth..."

Lin Ming gripped his fists, feeling the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace in his body communing with the heavens and earth, absorbing the surging energy within the world. This sort of feeling was the legendary union with the world.

To have the heavens and earth stand on the same level as the mortal body; when Lin Ming's cultivation reached the peak, fighting with him would be tantamount to fighting against the entirety of the heavens and earth!

When a martial artist's body transformation technique stepped from the Eight Inner Hidden Gates into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, the truth was that this was essentially equal to finishing cultivating the mortal body and instead beginning to cultivate the Laws of the Nine Stars.

The Nine Star Laws were one of the 33 Heavenly Dao Laws. If they hadn't been sealed because of some unknown reason, they wouldn't be much worse than the saint race's body transformation technique. They would only be a bit more difficult to cultivate.

The origin of the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace's strength came not from a martial artist's body but from the momentum of the heavens and earth. Thus, no matter how long a battle was, a martial artist wouldn't overdraw their physical strength. This was one of the reasons why the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was so formidable!

"Now my body doesn't need the skills within the Celestial Tyrant Manual to reach 20 billion jins. This is the same as the strength of twin dragons!"

Lin Ming felt that just making gestures with his hand could affect the momentum of the world. Astral essence flooded his body like a surging sea, his supernatural strength gushing like a tide!

Besides being able to draw support from the momentum of the world, Lin Ming's mortal body had also become far more intense. The Heavenly Dao true meaning of the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace had fused into his flesh and blood.

His body had become terrifying to an amazing degree and his strength had rapidly risen. As he opened his eyes, purple lightning flashed in his pupils. His current strength and aura were extraordinary.

"Big Brother Lin, did you already break into the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace? Amazing!"

As Lin Ming landed on the largest ancient bronze coffin, Xiao Moxian didn't know why but she felt a hint of inexplicable sadness. Just then when she watched Lin Ming attack the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace, his body had cracked open and was being torn apart… but she actually wasn't able to help at all. This made her feel something that she couldn't define with words.

Moreover, Lin Ming had spent these last 30 years working wholeheartedly towards breaking into the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace. He had paid many prices, and Xiao Moxian had seen all of this occur with her own eyes. In the Asura Road, Lin Ming had no one backing him and no large influence supporting him. All of the materials and resources he needed were things that he struggled for a little at a time!

At the Divine Rune City Auction, everyone had seen Lin Ming's blinding halo and had seen him use his exquisite divine runic symbols to suppress the crowd and had even played with Shadow Overflow and the other dark divine runic masters in the palm of his hand. But, which one of them had seen Lin Ming spend years in his divine runic room in order to draw up divine runic symbols? He had not rested for days at a time, exhausted the strength of his divine soul without end and even relied on the Divine Mist Heart Mantra and Soul Recovery Symbols to restore his soul force and continue. He had worked without rest, and oftentimes he would collapse on the ground, his face pale and his eyes bloodshot!

All of that work had finally paid off in today's accomplishments!

Everyone guessed that Lin Ming had some secret on his body, and Xiao Moxian also faintly knew what Lin Ming's secret was. But, if someone thought that just relying on this secret would have allowed Lin Ming to arrive where they were, they would be utterly mistaken. The reason Lin Ming was able to stand where he was today was because his mentality and iron will played a great role.

At this time, Lin Ming could be said to be mind-linked with Xiao Moxian. He could vaguely feel just what Xiao Moxian was thinking. He moved forwards, gently cupping her cheek in his palm as he said, "For me to come this far, I'm already very lucky. After this final trial ends, I must return to the Divine Realm to face the great calamity of humanity. The road I need to walk is still long.

"As must I…" Xiao Moxian took a deep shuddering breath. The solemn road before her, the calamity of humanity, there were many things she had to face. Not only did she need to face the saint race but also those that might already have turned towards the saint race – the monster race and her grandfather.

If this was before, Xiao Moxian would have felt it impossible to resist the decision of her people. But now a deep fighting spirit had ignited in her mind. Only by being powerful would she have the ability to argue with her race and face the great calamity.

Moreover, as Lin Ming continued to grow stronger, Xiao Moxian had to hasten her pace and follow him. She would not allow herself to be cast off by him. She would definitely complete her nine nirvanas!

When Lin Ming broke into the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace, his body obtained endless benefits.

Even just sitting down, he could feel the blood within him surging like a river. There was also a great deal of majestic starlight that had yet to be absorbed. Even some of the medicinal efficacy of the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill and nameless ancient pill still remained in his blood and marrow.

This made it so that every time he breathed, misty white air would spray out from his nose, filling the air around him with clouds of medicinal fragrance.

“There is still a great deal of energy within me that hasn’t been digested… although I broke into the second Dao Palace, I have less than 20 years from the final trial beginning. I absolutely cannot be negligent in my preparations. This Asura Road world is vast and boundless and there are countless geniuses and powerhouses here, yet, when they enter the final trial they all fail. In the last 100 million years, the highest completion percentage has only been slightly more than eighty and there are also many chosen prides of heaven that perish in the final trial…”

Lin Ming didn’t underestimate the final trial. This would be the most important battle he would face in the Asura Road and he had to make sure all his preparations were complete.

“Then I’ll use this period of time to borrow the spiritual strengths within the Forsaken Mortal Tomb to make another breakthrough!” Lin Ming thought to himself.

During this breakthrough into the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace, Lin Ming had come perfectly prepared for all situations. Thus, the difficulty he encountered was far less than when he tried to break into the first Dao Palace.

The final trial of the Asura Road could be imagined to have many uncertainties and dangers.

From this moment on, he would need to do his best to prepare yet again.

“Xian’er, I want to attack the late Divine Lord realm here.” Lin Ming said to Xiao Moxian, his eyes sparkling.

Xiao Moxian’s eyes curved up and a smirk appeared on her face. “The final trial will arrive in a dozen plus years. You can calmly cultivate here. As for me, I won’t be idling around either. I will cultivate together with you. I’ll make sure that you won’t be able to leave me behind that much!”

“Good, then let’s do this together.” Lin Ming looked at the animated Xiao Moxian, his eyes following her slim and graceful figure as he smiled.

Time passed. Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian spent their time cultivating together in this mysterious danger zone.

The two were both extremely proud children of heaven. As their bodies twined together, a misty brilliance emerged from them. Lin Ming’s True Dragon aura wove together with Xiao Moxian’s Dark Phoenix aura, soaring into the skies.

A resonant dragon’s howl, a clear phoenix’s cry, an aura filled with thunder and fire spread out in all directions, dispersing all shadows.

As the two of them dual cultivated longer and longer, the True Dragon phantom and Dark Phoenix phantom in the skies became increasingly realistic.

One dragon, one phoenix, they were like the sun and the moon, brilliant and lustrous.

Countless dazzling and mystical runes overflowed from their bodies, revolving in wild waves around the two…

In the Forsaken Mortal Tomb, days of cultivating were incomparably long.

As Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian dual cultivated year after year, the auspicious power of their dragon and phoenix became even more formidable.

Three years later –

All of the medicinal efficacy within Lin Ming's body, as well as the starlight glory he harvested after breaking through the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace, was completely fused into him. His body seemed to have returned to its origin, without leaking out even the tiniest amount of strength.

As for the strength accumulated in his body, it had reached a terrifying degree.

At this time, Lin Ming's eyes turned towards the death energy around him and the residual will around the ancient bronze coffin.

"Essence energy of the heavens and earth, come unto my body!"

Lin Ming flicked his finger and shot out a gray rune. The air shook as strange ripples appeared in space. Suddenly wisps of the black turtle death energy began flooding his body.

This was a rune of the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel could absorb the remnant souls of devils. When Tian Mingzi died in the past, his soul had been sucked into the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. This time, the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel was absorbing the spiritual energy that filled the entirety of the Forsaken Mortal Tomb; it was simply too wonderful.

When Lin Ming cultivated by himself, he would bring out the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel and begin swallowing and refining the black turtle death energy and the residual wills that exuded from the ancient bronze coffins.

These residual wills were all muddled and without sense of self. If Lin Ming didn't have an extremely sharp perception he simply wouldn't have been able to realize this power existed.

As wisps of residual will from the Forsaken Mortals fell onto the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel that was formed by the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, they were like soldiers meeting a general, immediately becoming calm and docile.

The black turtle death energy and the phantoms of gold-armored giants floated in the air. Slowly, Lin Ming absorbed them into the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, refining them into the purest form of energy that constantly filled Lin Ming's body.

There was far too much energy within the Forsaken Mortal Tomb. Lin Ming was only able to absorb an extremely limited amount of it. But after accumulating this energy again and again every day, it brought about amazing changes to Lin Ming's body.

These changes were an accumulation of quantity that led to a qualitative change. Without noticing it, Lin Ming's inner world was flooded to the limit with energy. Lin Ming's cultivation was already taking great steps towards entering the late Divine Lord realm.

Chapter 1666 – Late Divine Lord

Chapter 1666 – Late Divine Lord

…

…

…

Spring passed to fall and then back again. Within this Forsaken Mortal Tomb, Lin Ming constantly cultivated. In the blink of an eye, five years had gone by.

Lin Ming's hair continued to grow and whenever it was too long Xiao Moxian would cut it for him. For these five years, Xiao Moxian hadn't cut her hair at all. Because her hair wasn't short to begin with, the current Xiao Moxian's hair looked like a black waterfall that fell to her ankles, blooming like a rose.

Lin Ming sat in meditation, faint traces of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws continuously spinning around his body like countless threads of black silk.

Moreover, these black silk threads were twined together with the strange runes from the ancient bronze coffin. Through analyzing these, one could comprehend the true meaning of those mysterious runes.

Another three years passed.

Eight years later…

With Lin Ming's effort, the energy within his body became increasingly rich.

Just by simply sitting on the ancient bronze coffin, his entire body emitting a brilliance like a divine Buddha.

Countless runes appeared on his skin, shimmering into existence within his flesh and blood. They floated in the void, automatically absorbing the essence of the heavens and earth.

The true meaning of the ancient bronze coffin's runes unexpectedly appeared in the void around him. Their essence had already been comprehended by him.

"These are runes derived from the Asura Heavenly Dao. With these runes on the ancient bronze coffins, they are able to form massive spirit gathering arrays and swallow the essence energy from the heavens and earth to constantly nourish whatever it is that lies within these ancient coffins… if these runes were to fuse into my flesh and blood, then during battle they would automatically absorb the essence energy of the world on their own… even if the speed isn't too fast, there are actually endless advantages to them…"

As Lin Ming spoke to himself, he formed seal after seal.

12 years later…

On this day, Lin Ming could clearly feel something change within him. His heart beat like a drum, every beat like a bolt of thunder, every beat causing the earth to quake along with his heart.

With a thought, a plain-looking pill flew into Lin Ming's palm. This pill was the nameless ancient pill that Lin Ming had won at the Divine Rune City Auction.

Before, only a tiny bit of the essence energy from this pill had been absorbed by Lin Ming. 90% of its medicinal strength still remained.

Lin Ming directly swallowed down this nameless ancient pill. Then, a deep and robust strength broke into his inner world.

The current Lin Ming was far stronger than he was in the past. After subduing the Ravenous Wolf Star and opening the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace, even the swelling stormy strength of the nameless ancient pill was unable to shake the root of Lin Ming's foundation!

By borrowing this strength and all the accumulations he made during the last 12 years, Lin Ming finally began his breakthrough into the late Divine Lord realm!

There was a loud rumbling sound in his dantian and a wisp of deep blue spiritual strength appeared, wrapped with mysterious runes and filled with an immense aura that brimmed over with vitality.

Waves of spiritual strength, death energy, and the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws began to wildly attack the borders of Lin Ming's inner world.

The Purple Temple Dao Palace appeared and waves of astral power impacted the world with tens of billions of jins of force. As all of this strength attacked the inner world, mountains were shattered and created, rivers were broken and formed...

Ka ka ka!

Thunder recklessly cast down and flames swept through the skies. The Heretical God Tree floated high in the air, sending out peals of tyrannical thunder, frantically expanding the boundaries of the inner world.

Wherever this strength went, space would explode into pieces.

However, this terrifying annihilating power of thunder and fire hid a shuddering vitality within it.

Following the destructive paths of the thunder and fire, a faint bright green color would appear in the world.

Through all these various strengths, the small world began to grow with marvelous changes occurring everywhere. A strange and misty life force spread throughout, becoming increasingly vibrant.

Such a change continued for over two months. Then, light began shooting out from Lin Ming's pores. The evolution of his inner world was reaching its finale and the medicinal efficacy of the nameless ancient pill had also been fully absorbed by him.

In that instant, Lin Ming's eyes flashed open. A terrifying aura erupted from his body. However, in the next moment, all of it was restrained, completely vanishing from the senses!

Even Xiao Moxian, who was looking at Lin Ming, couldn't feel his existence.

Lin Ming's aura seemed to have completely melted and fused into the world surrounding him.

The small world within his body also developed a strange connection to the outside.

The reason such a change occurred was that Lin Ming had finally broken into the late Divine Lord realm. But more than that, it was because he had already opened the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace, allowing his body to commune with the heavens and earth, achieving a state of becoming one with the world.

"Big Brother Lin, you finally reached the late Divine Lord realm! The next boundary is a half-step Holy Lord and then the Holy Lord realm. After Big Brother Lin reaches the Holy Lord realm, I have no idea what your strength will be like. I even wonder if you'll have a chance of surviving in the presence of an Empyrean…" Xiao Moxian hopefully whispered.

"Empyrean?" Lin Ming shook his head. "An Empyrean is far too strong. Even if I am at the Holy Lord realm I doubt I will be able to compare to even the weakest of Empyreans. Just the Great World King boundary is an enormous span. If I want to cross two large boundaries to challenge someone, I don't think that is possible at all."

Before this, Lin Ming had often been able to jump two large boundaries to fight. But, this had basically been the Divine Sea realm against the Divine Lord realm, or Divine Transformation realm against the Holy Lord realm.

However, the boundary that separated a Great World King and an Empyrean was far too large. And, those that manage to reach that realm were all outstanding existences. During their youth, they too were able to jump ranks to fight. If Lin Ming wanted to jump past two boundaries to fight characters like these, that would be as difficult as ascending to the heavens.

"Mm… fighting an Empyrean is a bit too exaggerated, but when you complete the final trial, your strength will further increase yet again. At that time, no one will be able to predict just where the limits of your strength are!"

"Final trial… perhaps it might not be so simple." Lin Ming shook his head. He wasn't able to predict just what completion percentage he would obtain after the final trial ended. "It's not a good time for us to leave here yet. My late Divine Lord foundation is unstable and there is still a limitless amount of black turtle death energy and all sorts of strengths here. We can take this spiritual strength as food to consolidate both our late Divine Lord cultivations and stabilize our inner worlds."

Lin Ming wasn't in a hurry to leave; he still had several years before the final trial would begin. Before that, he still had to draw up a batch of divine runic symbols to use so that he would have additional trump cards when facing the dangers in the final trial.

During these next several years he had to consolidate his cultivation and steadily stand in the late Divine Lord realm.

As for Xiao Moxian, she also needed to cultivate so that she could attempt to reach the peak of the late Divine Lord realm.

…….

What Lin Ming didn't know was that during this period of seclusion, a considerable event was occurring in the Asura Road.

On one day, a blue phoenix appeared in the skies above the central province of Divine Void Divine Kingdom. This was a true Phoenix God Beast with a pure bloodline. And on this phoenix's back was a mysterious woman wrapped in an icy blue dress.

This woman's face was covered with gauze. As she stood there she seemed lofty and proud, someone that renounced the world and took solace in herself. As she appeared she attracted the attention of many people, and finally, she even alarmed the Divine Sovereign of the Divine Void Divine Kingdom – Soul Emperor Divine Void.

Soul Emperor Divine Void had already reached the True Divinity realm. Even so, he intentionally left seclusion to personally meet this blue-clothed woman…

Chapter 1667 – Soul Empress Sheng Mei

Chapter 1667 – Soul Empress Sheng Mei

…

…

…

In an endless sea of clouds, a deep blue palace floated. This palace was like a crystal sculpture and its walls were inlaid with rows of soul crystals.

These soul crystals were similar to nine sun jades in value. To the spiritas, they were extremely luxurious cultivation goods. But now, just on the outer walls of this palace, there were tens of thousands of them.

Just by walking in this soul crystal palace, one could feel a rich soul origin energy spreading out in all directions. Even if a mortal with no martial talent were to live here, they would slowly be nourished by the energy of the soul crystals and transform into someone with an incredible soul force. Their thoughts would be quick, their memory photographic, and their words wise.

At this time, within this Soul Palace, there was another world. This world wasn't solemn and dignified, but a lush green paradise with spirit trees wildly growing everywhere and with flowers in full bloom. Rivers of water fell down celestial mountains in waterfalls, like hundreds of thousands of threads of white silk. Even spiritual birds and beasts flew through the air and ran on the ground, their calls delightful to the ears.

In a peach garden within this paradise, a blue-clothed woman stepped on the wind. Beside her was a blue phoenix. This blue phoenix had already shrunk to 100 feet long and its entire body burned with blue flames. One didn't feel a burning heat from these flames. Rather, as one approached it, they would feel their soul freezing.

This sort of blue flame was called deep blue ice flames, a terrifying fire no weaker than Xiao Moxian's nirvanic flames. They were flames exclusive to the phoenix race. Nirvanic flames were possessed by the Fire Phoenixes whereas deep blue ice flames were possessed by the Ice Phoenixes.

This deep blue ice flame was incomparably terrifying. Moreover, this blue phoenix was nearly grown up and its bloodline was part of the phoenix race's royalty. If a martial artist were to approach the flames on its body, their body would be frozen into an ice sculpture by the terrifying cold even as their soul was burned by the flames and turned to ashes.

As this floating blue-clothed woman stepped into this otherworldly paradise, four young beautiful girls wearing veils and standing gracefully bowed to her.

These young girls didn't know the status of this blue-clothed woman, but if Soul Emperor Divine Void were to personally welcome her in Divine Void Heavenly Palace, then her status could be imagined!

Many maids in Divine Void Heavenly Palace were secretly speculating on who this blue-clothed woman was.

Many of them believed that someone who was taken so seriously by Soul Emperor Divine Void might have the chance of being a True Divinity level existence. However, within the entire Asura Road, spiritas True Divinities were unfathomably rare. Moreover, these rare people only included a few amongst their numbers. And, if one looked beyond Soul Emperor Divine Void, all of the other characters were nothing more than legends. Some of these people had legends tracing back a billion years, and now these people had likely died. Not just that, but even their legends were unreliable. It was unknown whether these people were truly True Divinities or not.

But, as everyone considered all the legends they knew of every single spiritas True Divinity to exist, none of them matched this blue-clothed woman. This woman resembled someone that was 17 or 18 years old. It was hard to imagine that someone so youthful could be a True Divinity.

Walking alone, all maids within Divine Void Heavenly Palace fell to their knees.

Among these people there were even high level figures of Divine Void Heavenly Palace. But, even Great World King powerhouses had to bow before this woman.

“This woman, just who is she?”

After this blue-clothed woman walked past, the Vice Internal Affairs Envoy of Divine Void Heavenly Palace asked with a sound transmission.

“I have no idea… she might be a True Divinity, right? At the very least she should be an extreme Empyrean!”

“Impossible. I could feel that she is only at the early Empyrean realm. The only possibility is if she is hiding her cultivation and only then would she have the chance of being at the True Divinity realm. But, I don’t think a True Divinity would do something so boring as hiding their cultivation in front of us.”

Although the blue-clothed woman had a mysterious status she didn’t hide her soul sea. It wasn’t difficult for those at the World King realm or above to see her cultivation boundary.

But this boundary of just barely having entered the Empyrean realm, that left everyone puzzled.

How could a low level Empyrean possibly receive such a courteous reception from Soul Emperor Divine Void?

As everyone was discussing with sound transmissions, the blue-clothed woman continued forwards.

The entire ground was covered with a spring that shined like diamonds. Water trickled out and flowers bloomed. The blue-clothed woman went straight to the deepest parts of the palace. Here, a white-clothed middle-aged man was already waiting.

This man was handsome, with skin as fair as gems. He wore his hair up and adorned with a star crown. His eyebrows were smooth and gentle and his hands were slender and filled with power. All of the energy within him was gathered tight without any being leaked out. From appearances, he seemed like a poor scholar of the mortal world. However, with every step he took, every flower and tree in this world, all the birds, and spirit beasts would look towards this man with awe in their eyes as if they saw their own sovereign king. Wherever this man went, flowers would bend over, birds would land, and spirit beasts would kneel!

This man was the master of Divine Void Divine Kingdom and within the Asura Road, disregarding the legendary existences that may or may not exist, he was the sole spiritas True Divinity supreme elder known by all!

Because of this he was titled the Soul Emperor of the Asura Road. This meant that he was the number one existence amongst all spiritas that lived in the Asura Road!

“Sheng Mei…”

The man turned around, looking at the blue-clothed woman moving slowly towards him. His eyes flashed with a brilliant light. “It seems your Grand Reincarnation Art has already reached the sixth revolution. As long as you have enough time you’ll reach perfection of the sixth revolution sooner or later…”

The blue-clothed woman remained silent. Sheng Mei was her name, but she also had a title – that was, Soul Empress Sheng Mei!

However, Soul Empress Sheng Mei did not come from the Asura Road, but came from the 33 Heavens!

“Six revolutions isn’t difficult. What is difficult is the final three revolutions, the seventh, eighth, and ninth…” Sheng Mei’s voice was calm and her expression placid.

“Haha! Six revolutions isn’t difficult?” The man shook his head as he laughed. “Only you would dare to say such words. Once you complete your nine revolutions and your deep blue ice phoenix completes its nine nirvanas, I fear that within the great heavens and earth, there won’t be a single person that can hinder your step!”

Soul Emperor Divine Void gave Sheng Mei an incredibly high evaluation.

However, Sheng Mei only lightly sighed, as if there was some knot she couldn’t untie in her heart. She didn’t reveal any joy at the grand future that Soul Emperor Divine Void painted for her.

Soul Emperor Divine Void’s heart moved and he seemed to realize something. He hesitated for a moment and then said with a gentle cajoling tone, “Sheng Mei, I’ve never understood something. With your talent and ability, why do you place yourself under the yoke of that person, helping that old geezer who has already lived for several hundreds of millions of years? You can absolutely establish your own sect. If you and I join together, then by relying on our strength, ruling over the entire 33 Heavens won't be difficult at all!”

Soul Emperor Divine Void had great ambitions. This wasn’t the first time that he had said such words to Soul Empress Sheng Mei.

Towards Soul Empress Sheng Mei he felt a great deal of admiration and respect. There was even… adoration and desire!

When Soul Emperor Divine Void was young he had indulged in his carnal nature before. But after stepping into the True Divinity realm, there was no woman that was able to enter his eyes. Right now, within his harem, there was not a single person left.

If there was a person that could draw the admiration of someone as proud and arrogant as Soul Emperor Divine Void, that person’s perfection and magnificence could be imagined.

However, in front of Sheng Mei, Soul Emperor Divine Void had never revealed any of this to her. He was well aware that wanting to pursue Soul Empress Sheng Mei was impossibility difficult. She was someone whose heart was higher than the heavens, and wanting to intrude on her life wasn't easy.

Even the 'old geezer' who Soul Emperor Divine Void referred to was only someone that Sheng Mei assisted; they were in no way dual cultivation companions.

It was just that Soul Emperor Divine Void was confused this entire time. Why was someone so proud like Soul Empress Sheng Mei assisting some old fellow who was over a hundred times older than she was?

"I need… three spots." Sheng Mei suddenly said. The reason she came to Divine Void Heavenly Palace this time was for these three spots.

"Spots for the final trial? Although these spots are precious, to me, giving away a few isn't difficult at all. If you ask then let alone three, I can even give you 10! The only thing I don't like is that after you increase your strength, you will still desperately work for that old thing…"

Soul Emperor Divine Void's voice was indifferent. In such a scene, anyone else would have felt uncomfortable.

Sheng Mei was silent for a moment. After several breaths of time, she emotionlessly said, "Even without you, I can still obtain spots for the final trial. It would only be much more difficult. For these three spots, I can provide you with adequate rewards. If you still refuse then I can only bid my farewells."

Even if Sheng Mei needed help, her tone still wouldn't be that of defeat. Soul Emperor Divine Void reluctantly shook his head, saying, "Fine, then there's nothing I can do… three spots, I'll give them to you. Are these three spots to help you prepare for the completion of the sixth revolution?"

"Yes…"

Sheng Mei's cultivation method, the Grand Reincarnation Art, was unique and special. Every revolution of the Grand Reincarnation Art was to live a new life, starting from zero.

After reincarnating, her cultivation boundary would drop by several large realms. Then, she would have to re-cultivate!

This sort of cultivation method could not be practiced unless one was a peerless genius. It required that one have a cultivation speed at least 10 times that of an ordinary genius. Otherwise, if one's cultivation speed couldn't keep up, there would be a situation in which their boundary would actually drop lower overall.

"If you can complete the sixth revolution, then your talent, foundation, and accumulation of Laws will reach an unimaginable boundary… in the past, you created a record with an 83% completion rate, even surpassing the saint race's Good Fortune Saint Son, Wumo, and becoming the highest completion percent that the entire 33 Heavens and Asura Road have seen in the last 100 million years!

"This time, I fear you will shatter your own record. Perhaps… you can achieve 90%?"

Soul Emperor Divine Void smiled, shaking his head. Every time Soul Empress Sheng Mei reincarnated, her talent would gather and increase!

This sort of freakish cultivation method originated from only the heavens knew where. Perhaps even the Asura Road Master hadn't anticipated such a situation when he created the final trial.

Soul Emperor Divine Void had some faint speculations on where this Grand Reincarnation Art came from, but he couldn't confirm his suspicions.

"90?" Sheng Mei's eyebrows shot up. She calmly shook her head. "How could I achieve 90% completion… that is a number that only exists in legends. Let alone the sixth revolution, I doubt I will achieve that even at the seventh revolution. I suspect that ever since the Asura Road smelting trial appeared, no one has ever managed to break through this number 90. My goal this time is only 85 or 86%…"

Sheng Mei’s tone was bleak and indifferent. Soul Emperor Divine Void gently chuckled. “Even an 85% completion rate is unprecedented. There is no one that can match you in the past and no one that will surpass you in the future!”

Chapter 1668 – Lin Ming Leaves Seclusion

Chapter 1668 – Lin Ming Leaves Seclusion

…

…

…

When it came to information about the completion percentages of the Asura Road's final trial, because it had existed since time immemorial and countless people had participated, the ordinary martial artists of the Asura Road didn't know the best results of the final trial over the years.

But Soul Emperor Divine Void knew. He even had detailed information on the best trial challengers that participated in the last billion years. Out of all these people, those that achieved 80% or above only totaled a mere 10; this included the Good Fortune Saint Son and Soul Empress Sheng Mei.

As for an 85% completion rate, that had never occurred before. Thus, this was why Soul Emperor Divine Void had said 'there is no one that can match you in the past and no one that will surpass you in the future', when it came to describing Sheng Mei's potential result.

Sheng Mei only shook her head, saying, "3.6 billion years ago, in the great calamity of that samsara, that also symbolized the beginning of a new era. Whenever these times come, heroes will pour forth from the world and there will be those that undergo trials and surpass all results of the ancient past. It could even be said that in the next hundred years or thousand years there will be several geniuses that will surpass 80%. If so, then those heroes that rise during this inexorably new era will surely not disappoint…"

Soul Empress Sheng Mei's tone was calm, but her words carried with them a world-dominating aura.

Her heart was higher than the heavens and she feared no rivals or competition. Rather, what she hoped for was a great world in which heroes emerged from all over. Only on this grand stage where she competed with numerous proud children of heaven would she have the chance to break past her limits and achieve the ultimate goal of her dreams.

....

News about a blue-clothed woman riding a phoenix into Divine Void Divine Kingdom soon spread throughout the entirety of the Asura Road.

An Ice Phoenix God Beast was not something to pay particular attention to, the key issue here was that Soul Emperor Divine Void had personally come out of seclusion to greet her. When they left the depths of Divine Void Heavenly Palace, there was also no division between who left first and second. This sort of feeling was like Soul Emperor Divine Void placed this young blue-clothed woman on an equal pedestal with himself.

Like this, there were countless people that tried to guess this blue-clothed woman's status.

This blue-clothed woman wasn't purposefully trying to remain mysterious. After appearing in front of others several times, her identity was finally recognized.

Although the young woman cultivated the Grand Reincarnation Art, every time she reincarnated her looks would be the same, only seeming younger and more perfect. And the last time she attended the smelting trial, there were many people who had witnessed the beginning and end of the grand event, and she had left an extremely deep impression on these people.

In the last 100 million years of the Asura Road final trial, only two people had surpassed an 80% completion rate. The Good Fortune Saint Son was one with an 81% completion rate and the other was Sheng Mei, with an even more exaggerated 83% completion rate.

Compared to the Good Fortune Saint Son, Sheng Mei was an even more mystical existence. No one expected that many years later she would reappear in the Asura Road. Moreover, Soul Emperor Divine Void would personally come out to receive her, and do so with utter respect and courtesy!

This left many people confused. According to any logic, no matter how talented this young spiritas woman was, no one could say with absolute certainty that she would become a True Divinity in the future! After all, as a genius grew, they would always experience accidents.

And Soul Emperor Divine Void was already a True Divinity level powerhouse. Why would he consider a young genius as someone on equal standing as him?

To say that this was because the young spiritas woman's background was extremely prominent and famous wasn't a good enough explanation, because Soul Emperor Divine Void came from the peak of prominence already.

Did this young spiritas woman have a special physique, or was she someone blessed by destiny and ordained for some higher role in the future?

Many people made guesses all over the place, but no matter what speculations they had, they were sure of one thing. This was that the talent of this young spiritas woman was horrifying, far more horrifying than they could imagine!

The appearance of this young spiritas woman was also easily connected to the upcoming opening of the final trial.

Was she actually thinking of entering the final trial a second time?

In everyone's opinion, although the final trial wasn't limited to just one attempt, the rewards offered at the end would only be given once to that percentage of completion. For instance, someone that had an 80% completion would obtain the 80% completion reward. If they attempted the final trial again and obtained 80% again, they would receive no rewards. They would only receive another reward if they completed 81%.

As to what degree of the final trial one could complete, that mainly looked at one's talent. The rules of the final trial were even more favorable to juniors. Generally speaking, one only needed to participate once to know the result they would receive at any time in the future. Only if they had an amazingly massive lucky chance or their cultivation talent shot up rapidly would this change. Otherwise, no matter how many times they entered, their completion percentage would essentially stay the same. For this reason, who would waste a quota spot that had been obtained through people experiencing countless dangers and risking their lives? Who would be willing to do such a thankless thing?

Everyone had their own ideas. But as time passed, talk about this mysterious young spiritas woman slowed down.

The seasons changed and time passed. Two years later, the greatest and most famous mystic realm in the entire Asura Road, the one with the best treasures, was finally about to open.

Within the inner Asura Road, this was a vastly important matter!

Qualifications to enter the final trial were not easy to obtain. Every qualification spot required one to collect a massive number of rare and precious god runes. When the mystic realm opened, there were normally only several hundred qualifications in the entire inner Asura Road.

And there were several hundred Empyrean level influences in the inner Asura Road. Of these influences, some of them had multiple qualification spots. This meant that there were many Empyrean level influences that weren't even able to obtain the qualifications.

As the day for the opening of the final trial approached, the entire inner Asura Road was roused into a zealous fervor.

....

At this time, deep within the Great Desolate, a dark and primal mountain suddenly began rumbling!

The rocks cracked and the earth trembled. A black palace tore through the mountain, ripping through space and shooting out like a meteor!

In the nearby mountain valleys, dozens of coiling ridge giants stood up. They were hundreds of feet tall and grasped giant tridents.

These coiling ridge giants were shocked by the sudden explosion. As they turned their heads they saw the black palace racing forwards like a comet out of the forbidden zone they guarded. Without a doubt, this action touched upon their reverse scale.

All of them wildly shouted out and crazily gave chase!

Sha! Sha! Sha!

Over 10 giants threw their weapons!

These weapons were millions of jins heavy. With a terrifying strength poured into them, these weapons were streaks of blazing light as they crashed into the black palace.

But in the moment of impact, a barrier lit up around the black palace, blocking all the attacks.

The black palace shook. Beneath the massive impact force it raced forwards even faster. In the blink of an eye it vanished into the horizon, leaving the dozens of giants running after it, roaring. However, the black palace opened the distance between them more and more.

This black palace was Primordius Heavenly Palace.

After secluding himself for over 10 years, Lin Ming finally exited the Forsaken Mortal Tomb. Currently, his present strength was incomparable to that of the past!

Now that he left seclusion, he had one goal – that was the final trial!

Primordius Heavenly Palace cut through the skies of the Great Desolate, turning to the direction of the transmission array to the inner Asura Road and rapidly flying towards it!

Chapter 1669 – Asura Sea

Chapter 1669 – Asura Sea

…

…

…

Deep within the inner Asura Road, there was a vast and endless sea called the Asura Sea.

The Asura Sea was connected to all large bodies of water within the Asura Road. It was incomparably large, unfathomably deep.

Even if a star were to sink into the Asura Sea, it would be completely submerged in the waters.

This terrifying sea had sea beasts and dangerous fish that reached unbelievable sizes. Even Empyrean level powerhouses weren't willing to fly deep into the Asura Sea, lest they meet these terrifying sea creatures.

However, in these past few days, this Asura Sea that people rarely visited was actually becoming increasingly lively.

From time to time there would be high level martial artists flying across the sea. Sometimes there would be giant troops appearing and disappearing.

All of this was because the final trial's mystic realm was located atop the Asura Sea!

The final trial could be called the most important part of the Asura Road world. Some people even believed that when the Asura Road Master created the Asura Road in the past, it was to develop a foundation for the final trial to continue his inheritance.

But no matter whether or not these stories were reliable or what the truth was, it was without doubt that the final trial was the grandest event in the entire Asura Road!

All the various influences in the Asura Road certainly wouldn't miss out on such a grand event. If an influence had a disciple participating in the final trial they would certainly come to closely watch the results. Even for influences that didn't have any disciples participating, they would still come to gather information – information on their enemies' disciples or their allies' disciples and how they grew.

Beyond that, there were many curious individuals that came to join in on the fun. This grand event gathered all sorts of heroic individuals. With such a great scene, who would miss out on it?

....

At this time, at the border area of Divine Void Divine Kingdom, there was a massive sect that occupied vast swathes of land. This sect's buildings were grand and magnificent, and at the mountain entrances, dozens of great array formations were laid down. If Lin Ming were here, then even under his high standards he would still judge these as top array formations. Once these array formations were activated together and under the management of a top powerhouse, even several Empyreans working together would find it difficult to break through!

For a sect to have such grand array formations, their background should be deep and there should be many young elites pouring forth from their ranks. However, the truth was the opposite. This sect was sparsely populated and didn't seem to have any life to it at all. The array formations around the mountains remained unopened and unused, doing nothing but gathering dust.

This was because although these array formations were incomparably powerful, they used up too many energy stones far too quickly. The sect simply wasn't able to keep up the supply of energy stones, thus these array formations only served as decorations now.

Without a doubt, this was a sect that had once been glorious beyond comparison, but was now in steep decline.

At this time, in a grand hall of the sect, a black-clothed man and green-clothed girl were kneeling on the ground. Standing in front of the two of them was an old man with thick white hair and beard.

“Moonpond, Soulsky, the two of you are the final hopes of our Divine Mist Holy Land… ever since Empyrean Divine Mist went missing, our sect has had to withstand the other influences nibbling away at us, and now we are no longer as radiant as we were in the past. In order to train you two… the sect could be said to have given all of our resources. This time, master has also paid a great price to obtain two spots in the final trial for you both. I only hope that you will not disappoint the sect!”

This old man’s face was covered with wrinkles. His body was old and bent and his fires of life were as frail as a candle in the wind, ready to extinguish at any moment; this old man was in the final years of his life…

Looking at this dying old man, no one would imagine that he was once just a tiny bit away from becoming an Empyrean. In the past, he followed Empyrean Divine Mist to adventure through the world and wage war with their enemies. In the entire inner Asura Road, his name had been earth-shaking and people panicked in his presence. But after Empyrean Divine Mist went missing, he had been tricked and wounded by his enemies and now he ended up in this state.

The two youths remained kneeling. Although they didn’t speak, their eyes showed their determination.

“Go then my children. Although Empyrean Divine Mist might have perished in the past, the heavens have not abandoned my Divine Mist Holy Lands. For master to run into you two in the final thousand years of my life, that is my fortune. You two are the last remaining wealth of the Divine Mist Holy Lands. Now, my only wish is that you two can become

Empyreans in the future and allow my Divine Mist Holy Lands to be restored to its former glory!"

The old man's voice was bleak and lonely, making the souls of those who listened to him tremble. Behind him stood a towering black stone statue. This statue's appearance was shaped exactly like Empyrean Divine Mist's in Tragic Death Valley. The statue's eyes stared off into the far distance, its eyes filled with awe and indifference.

At the same time, in the bordering Divine Void Divine Kingdom, it was a completely different scene.

Within Divine Void Heavenly Palace, in a starry world, Soul Emperor Divine Void floated high in the skies, his clothes white like snow. His entire body emitted the light of Laws. With just a wave of his hand or a step of his foot, space twisted and churned!

In front of him, innumerable young elites knelt on the ground, lined up in rows. These kneeling disciples extended all the way backwards, and looking to the far end, one could see that there were hundreds of thousands of people!

But at the front of these hundreds of thousands of disciples were 10 martial artists kneeling side by side. These 10 individuals had cultivations ranging from the late Divine Lord realm to the ordinary World King realm. They were outstanding figures chosen from all of these disciples and elected to enter the final trial on behalf of Divine Void Divine Kingdom!

"You are all outstanding elites of Divine Void Divine Kingdom. I want all of you to reach at least 70%! Out of all the different influences participating I want you all to be first!"

This deep and dreadful voice echoed through this world, even causing the stars in the sky to tremble.

In front of Soul Emperor Divine Void, all of the disciples of Divine Void Divine Kingdom knelt downwards. And behind them there were seven tall figures. These figures were all wrapped in cloaks, their bodies overflowing with terrifying fluctuations of Laws.

These seven people all had Empyrean realm cultivations.

Seven Empyreans! They were all the rulers of Divine Void Divine Kingdom's seven provinces!

Divine Void Divine Kingdom was undoubtedly the number one spiritas influence in the entire inner Asura Road. But, this didn't mean that there was no opponent that could match them.

The rival of Divine Void Divine Kingdom was also a True Divinity Holy Land, one of the saint race – Heaven Union Divine Kingdom.

.....

Within the inner Asura Road, one saint True Divinity influence and one spiritas True Divinity influence, the two of them represented the ultimate strength of their respective races. Their struggles and rivalry were in a sense the struggle between the saints and spiritas!

"You have one opponent, and that is Divine Void Divine Kingdom!" Within Heaven Union Divine Kingdom, Divine Sovereign Heaven Union also personally mobilized his disciples. His figure was concealed in the dim void and it was impossible to make out his appearance. All anyone saw was a figure that stood high like an iron tower.

"The final trial is under the gaze of all people, but no matter how many heroes converge at the Asura Sea, their eyes will focus on us and Divine Void Divine Kingdom! During this final trial we must become the focal point of everyone's attention! You must not disgrace me! Suppress Divine Void Divine Kingdom and allow the saints to be proud and prosper. If so, then all of you shall be generously rewarded! Otherwise, if you fail me then you must sit in confinement for 100 years!"

Divine Sovereign Heaven Union's voice was vibrant and powerful, echoing through the starry skies!

………

As influences from all over set out towards the Asura Sea, the day for the opening of the final trial finally approached.

Rumble rumble!

Just as the sun was dawning and the sky was filled with haze, a loud explosion rang through the entire coastline.

On the calm sea surface, whirlpools appeared all over that were thousands of miles wide. A giant long-necked sea beast the size of a mountain shot out from deep within the sea.

As this sea beast appeared, it carried with it a ferocious and cruel aura, making all who saw it feel shocked and intimidated.

Above the sea beast stood two troops of blue-armored warriors. They grasped tridents in their hands that sparkled with electricity and their expressions were resolute.

Between these blue-armored warriors stood a handsome youth with skin as fair as jade. This man was the Crown Prince of an Empyrean level influence that dwelled in the Asura Sea, a clan of seafaring people.

Countless mermen shot out from the surface of the water, grasping gleaming weapons in their hands. Their momentum was overwhelming and dreadful.

Before these people came to a stop, at this moment, a strange howl echoed out from the skies.

All they saw was a massive ink-black giant beast descend, as if it had fallen down from the galaxy. Black clouds surrounded its body and it brought with it an unparalleled deadly aura.

Sitting above this pitch black giant beast was a man with a long scar on his face.

This man’s eyes were cold and shined with a sharp golden light. It was like this person could shoot out countless swords with just a single glance.

From the layer of clouds behind him, three-headed birds shot out. Each bird had numerous warriors standing guard atop its back.

In the blink of an eye, from the waves, a massive golden carriage shot up from the water’s surface, pulled by 16 flood dragons.

These flood dragons were massive, looking like islands that moved across the sea. Wherever they went, stormy waves would rise up, causing the vast sea to churn.

Sitting in this golden carriage was a tall fat person, as round as a mountain of meat. He held a beast leg as thick as a bucket and was gnawing on it. As he ate, he also glanced at the people around him.

Black turtles floated on the surface behind this golden carriage, following its path. Tens of thousands of figures stood on these black turtles and were cheering as loudly as they could.

Even though these people were all different, all of them were outstanding individuals within the Asura Road!

Today, they had all gathered here. Amongst them, some were friends and some were enemies. But no matter who they were, their goal here today was the final trial.

“Hoho, it’s quite lively. There are so many young heroes here.” Suddenly, in the skies above, the white clouds began to change shape, turning into a staircase of white clouds.

A rich-looking man stood tall and proud, wearing a crown on his head and dressed in bright yellow robes. Behind him were gaggles of beautifully swaying young women, all of them stepping down the stairway of clouds as they followed the man.

With every step this man took, it was like the sea below him resonated with him.

The many gathered chosen prides of heaven looked up at this newcomer.

“Eclipse Palace’s Palace Master?”

This Eclipse Palace Master was a half-step Empyrean. In the past he had killed countless people and was a fierce and ominous figure. But for the last million years, he had been living quietly in seclusion. However, he had decided to come out for this grand event.

Afterwards, more and more people arrived. The young master of the Hundred Thousand Foot Cliff, the proudest son of the Aurora Holy Lands, the head monks of Bountiful Fields Temple… one at a time, high level figures from the influences that ruled over the Asura Road began to appear in abundance.

After all, the qualifications for the Asura Road’s final trial were far too important.

At this time, on the coast of the Asura Sea, a hundred mile long observation pavilion had been set up. On this observation pavilion were tides of people, and all of these people were powerhouses that originated from all over the Asura Road. However, many of these people hadn’t reached a level of talent that allowed them to compete in the final trial, thus they were only able to look on from a distance.

And, there were over 30 of these observation pavilions set along the coast of the Asura Sea. On these observation pavilions, all that gathered were elites of the world.

Chapter 1670 – The Mystic Realm Opens

Chapter 1670 – The Mystic Realm Opens

…

…

…

The Asura Sea surged with crowds of people. In this bustling scene, a small squad of three men and two women rode in on flying puppets.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were in this squad.

Besides Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, the three others were Mo Brightmoon and the two companions she brought.

Just several days ago, Lin Ming and Mo Brightmoon had contacted each other according to the method they had established 50 years ago. Then, together, they rushed over to the Asura Sea.

Today's Mo Brightmoon wore a tight, red-colored suit of martial clothing that contrasted with her slender figure. To her side was a man wearing a bamboo hat.

This man seemed like a mortal in his thirties. He was stern and grim and his eyes flashed with electricity. He carried a heavy saber on his back that was half the height of a normal person. His aura was collected and his gait was like a leopard in the jungle. Just from looking at him one could tell he was an assassination master that was skilled in concealment.

This man's code name was Thousand Slaughter and his cultivation was at the peak of the ordinary World King realm.

Like Mo Brightmoon, he was also an assassin. Although his talent wasn't considered to be at the pinnacle, his true combat strength left one bewildered. According to Mo Brightmoon, Thousand Slaughter was definitely someone able to fight three martial artists on the same step as him. Just by his rich combat experience and instinct alone, this allowed him to face off one against three.

In a sneak attack situation, Thousand Slaughter's combat strength was even higher. His striking power was amazing.

The reason that Thousand Slaughter participated in this final trial was to search for a turning point to break into the Great World King realm.

A martial artist like Thousand Slaughter usually came from a background of wandering martial artists, or, he might have even been a commoner. For these people, they had to struggle for every step as they grew up and their road was far more difficult than that of disciples of other large influences. His road was basically carved at the point of his saber.

An incomparably precious chance like being able to participate in the final trial was usually monopolized by the many large influences; it was almost never their chance to participate.

Behind Thousand Slaughter was a delicate and feminine-looking man who appeared to be just over 20 years old. He had a stunningly beautiful appearance and his voice was calm and neutral. As one looked at him, it was hard to tell whether he was a man or a woman.

This man's name was Fanny Fafa. Although he was a man, he had an extremely rare pure yin physique. This was a cause of envy for many women, because a woman with a pure yin physique would be exceptionally beautiful and they would hold an invisible and magnetic attraction for the opposite sex. Moreover, this physique bestowed upon them a rare cultivation talent. In terms of the joys of the bed, this type of woman was even more outstanding in the world, thus many martial artists dreamed of being able to dual cultivate with a woman that had a pure yin physique.

Women with pure yin physiques were already extremely rare; men with pure yin physiques were even rarer.

This Fanny Fafa cultivated a pure yin cultivation technique that was biased towards women, so this caused Fanny Fafa to be even more feminine in appearance.

Although Fanny Fafa appeared delicate, in a true battle he was even harder to deal with than Thousand Slaughter. His techniques were strange and unpredictable.

"So many people..."

Xiao Moxian was stunned by the seas of people she saw. According to what she knew, this final trial was an extremely dangerous and secretive mystic realm with only several dozen people participating. Of those that entered, whether they lived or died would depend on their own destinies.

But, she never imagined such a grand scene.

"Of course... this is a grand event of the Asura Road. During every final trial there will be numerous peerless talents emerging from the shadows, so many large influences will send people here to attend the opening ceremonies. If these geniuses that emerge are from large influences then they can gather information on them, but if these geniuses just happen to be wandering martial artists or from small scattered sects, the large influences might be able to win them over..."

"So it's like this. It's no wonder that when the Good Fortune Saint Son and the mysterious spiritas woman completed the final trial and achieved an 80% or higher completion rate, this information passed out so far and wide that even minor characters in the Asura Road know of it."

Lin Ming thought out loud. The minor character he spoke of was naturally Soulwhite. When Lin Ming first learned information about the final trial, it was Soulwhite who had told him.

As Lin Ming was thinking, suddenly, in the distant east, massive 100,000 foot long beams of light appeared.

Looking over there, one could see a marvelous giant divine mountain appear, its upper mountain peak piercing into the sea of clouds. As it sped forwards, it brought about massive rumbling sounds in the air that left the world in turmoil.

Wherever it went, massive tsunamis would appear in the sea.

On that magnificent divine mountain, there were a million silver warriors bathed in strange runes and holding icy cold spears in their hands.

These million warriors were tall and strong, their features hidden in the dazzling radiance exuding from the glorious divine mountain.

“That is… Divine Void Divine Kingdom’s Boundless Divine Mountain!

“It really is Boundless Divine Mountain! What a tremendous display of power!”

Someone cried out from the sea of martial artists.

But, everyone knew that the reason Divine Void Divine Kingdom brought forth the Boundless Divine Mountain was to be a demonstration of their might. In this momentous event of the Asura Road, Divine Void Divine Kingdom and Heaven Union Divine Kingdom were the two main leads; everyone else couldn’t help but feel weakened! Together, the two Divine Kingdoms would engage in a brutal battle of life or death within the final trial.

“Boundless Divine Mountain?” Lin Ming asked. Beside him, Mo Brightmoon said, “This Boundless Divine Mountain is said to be a spirit treasure that has reached the limits of the Empyrean level. After another million years of refining, it might surpass an Empyrean spirit treasure and become a True Divinity spirit treasure! This treasure is eternally changing, with 10,000 different variations. It is an offensive and defensive fortress and is said to be Soul Emperor Divine Void’s most precious spirit treasure.”

“Soul Emperor Divine Void…” Lin Ming thought for a moment. This person was Empyrean Divine Mist’s ultimate blood enemy.

“To become a True Divinity level spirit treasure in a hundred million years? Isn’t that much better than Big Brother Lin’s Primordius Heavenly Palace?”

Xiao Moxian muttered by Lin Ming’s side, her cheeks flushed red.

Lin Ming smiled. “Soul Emperor Divine Void is, after all, a True Divinity. It wouldn’t be strange for things he refined to reach the limit of Empyrean spirit treasures… as for Empyrean Primordius, he lacked destiny. If it weren’t for the accidents that befell him in the past, he likely would have become a True Divinity sooner or later.”

Lin Ming said. But Xiao Moxian suddenly thought of something else. She chuckled and said, “100 million years to refine a True Divinity spirit treasure? He might not have that much time. At that time, who knows who will be refining that Boundless Divine Mountain? What do you think, Big Brother Lin?”

Xiao Moxian playfully smiled as she spoke, her beautiful face shining with a dazzling brilliance. Luckily, she had spoken to Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission. If she had spoken out loud then those around her would have thought her crazy, and if this were known by those from Divine Void Divine Kingdom then she would have drawn a fatal disaster upon her head!

The meaning behind Xiao Moxian’s words was something only Lin Ming could understand. In a sense, Soul Emperor Divine Void was Lin Ming’s enemy. Xiao Moxian was confident that within 100 million years, Lin Ming would be able to surpass him in strength, and perhaps even kill him! At that time, Boundless Divine Mountain would no longer be refined by Soul Emperor Divine Void, but by Lin Ming.

Thus, she had dared to say this.

“This treasure is actually quite nice. It could be a good substitute for Primordius Heavenly Palace.”

Xiao Moxian said again. Hearing this, Lin Ming didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. Within the entire inner Asura Road, Soul Emperor Divine Void was like a living god. If the average person saw him they would keep silent and even fall to their knees beneath the presence of such a higher existence. But, Xiao Moxian actually had plans to kill him and steal his treasures. If Soul Emperor Divine Void were to find out that a mere peak late Divine Lord realm girl was thinking of killing him and stealing his items then who knew what expression he would have.

As Lin Ming was at a loss for what to say, an inexplicably vast aura emerged from the center of the sea.

Rosy clouds appeared like smoke, filling the air with a thick mist that shined with a gorgeous light. These peculiar clouds actually emerged from nowhere in the void.

In the skies above, massive swathes black clouds began to gather.

These clouds were not ordinary. Rather, they were filled with roiling lightning, and one could clearly see horrifying blue streaks appear within.

These black clouds contained the purest Thunder Souls of the heavens and earth.

Space began to surge, just like the sea waves beneath it.

"This is..." Lin Ming was stunned. This sort of change in the heavens and earth faintly felt as if another world was trying to push its way into their own!

"Could it be that the final trial is about to begin?"

Lin Ming mumbled to himself, shocked. On the side, Mo Brightmoon was also witnessing the opening of the final trial for the first time. In the past, she had been a low-key person so when would she have had the time or desire to join the crowds and watch such a momentous event?

As the world began to twitch, the people on the observation sea pavilions began to cry out in alarm.

In succession, small groups of people flew out from the observation pavilions and towards the central area of the sea.

Many of these people were young martial artists. Although they were strong, they didn't have background nor the qualifications to enter the Asura Road's final trial. Now that the final trial was opening, although they couldn't enter, they still wanted to fly close to feel the aura and experience the entrance of the final trial for themselves. Because there was an extremely unstable space storm brewing, if they were not careful then they would be sucked in and killed, without even their bones left over.

The final trial was located within its own separate sealed off world, one that appeared in the void and hadn't yet revealed itself. But just the endless rolling thunderclouds in the skies above were enough to startle the mind.

Gradually, more and more people arrived at the center of the sea, making it increasingly noisy.

After an entire day of waiting, the sealed space of the final trial hadn't moved much.

It was only that in the void, a number of strange strengths began to emerge – a pure flame aura that seemed to come from the depths of a volcano, and a dense black and cloudy death energy. The entire area began to feel as if it were the yellow springs underworld, making one feel horrified…

But the proud children of heaven from some great influences did not fear these strengths. Rather, they were overjoyed.

Many people used secret techniques that suited this situation and drew support from these formidable strengths to begin cultivating these strengths.

On the third day –

Rumble rumble rumble!

There was a sound like a great door that was being slowly pushed open by a mystical force.

At the center of the sea, in the void, a pitch black crack began to appear.

This crack constantly expanded with the surging tides, revealing a darkness that flashed with intermittent sparks of lightning.

The crack began to rapidly expand, finally even blocking out the skies and sun. Countless primal runes appeared, carrying with them the most primeval source strengths of yin and yang, volcanoes, thunderclouds, and much more, seething in the air.

Many people could see that within the unfathomable black crack, there were countless threads of spiritual strength that wove together like mountain ranges, sparkling with light.

This was an endless array diagram and the building-sized runes that formed it shined with a light that even reached through that vast darkness. These runes seemed to contain the infinite possible changes of the great universe, signaling the coexistence of dangers and lucky chances…

Everyone was shocked and also excited – the Asura Road’s final trial had finally opened.

Chapter 1671 – Entering the Final Trial

Chapter 1671 – Entering the Final Trial

…

…

…

The entrance to the final trial had already opened. An incomparably large pitch black crack tore through the world, as if a colossal pair of hands had reached up into the skies and ripped apart the heavens. Behind this terrifying crack was a strange and incredible world.

Just by looking at this world, one felt their mind, divine soul, and even blood energy be attracted towards it, as if their very being wanted to tear out of their body.

Awoo-! Awoo-!

From behind this black crack, a horrifying sound poured forth like the roars of a primeval great beast.

A massive amount of heaven and earth origin energy and an endless amount of seawater was swallowed into this crack, forming a giant black vortex.

Within this terrifying black vortex, one could see faintly visible phantoms. Within these phantoms there were God Beasts and peerless powerhouses alike. Their powerful auras wove together with the lines of the Heavenly Dao Laws, making even those people watching from several hundred miles away feel like their souls were shaking.

This was the final trial!

Disregarding the dangers and tests within, disregarding the incomparably precious trial qualifications that were ridiculously difficult to obtain, just entering alone was something that many young elites would not be able to summon up the courage to do! This sort of suppressive feeling came from the momentum of the world, making them feel as if they were facing the entire universe!

Out of the hundreds of thousands of people watching from around the Asura Sea, most of them were only observers. None of them dared to truly break into the entrance of the final trial.

At this time, runes filled the skies and a vast aura spread out in all directions. Several men and women flew through the skies. These men and women wore feathered robes and their heads were adorned by a crown of star-like gems. Their bearing was magnificent and with a single glance one could see they were elite disciples of a great sect!

“Those are people from Divine Void Divine Kingdom!”

As Lin Ming saw these people appear, he also recognized someone – Duke Fullmoon!

“It's that stupid annoying fly again. To think we would run into him here also, it’s even worse than being haunted by ghosts!”

Xiao Moxian’s expression was filled with disgust. To think that this Duke Fullmoon who had pestered Lin Ming at the Divine Rune City Auction, constantly hounding him like some rabid dog, would actually enter the final trial. As she thought of encountering this person, Xiao Moxian felt as if she had stepped in dog shit.

“Then again, isn’t this fellow not so young anymore? How did he obtain the qualifications to enter Divine Void Divine Kingdom’s group for the final trial?”

Xiao Moxian asked, puzzled. According to her estimations, World King Fullmoon was at least several thousand years old. Without accumulating strength for so much time, it was impossible for him to become a World King. And one didn’t need to be a genius to know that there was extremely intense competition within Divine Void Divine Kingdom for spots in the final trial. There were countless disciples eagerly wanting to enter!

Lin Ming said, “Several thousand years isn’t too old. To an Empyrean that lives for a hundred million years, this is still a baby. And in this final trial, normally those that are several hundred years old or thousands of years old will participate for their sect. For instance, the Good Fortune Saint Son seemed to have entered the final trial around the time he was at the Saint Lord realm…”

Although those that participated in the final trial were young, they normally weren’t as young as Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming. Even with the time in Tragic Death Valley included, Lin Ming was only around 120 years old.

The people flying through the air immediately became the focus of the crowd. Within the group of trial challengers, there was a young man wearing a dragon crown, his long hair trailing behind him as he trod on the wind.

“It’s finally opened! I’ve awaited this day for far too long!”

This young man’s star-like eyes shined with a brilliant fighting spirit. Behind him, the several heroic elites of Divine Void Divine Kingdom, including Duke Fullmoon, were treating him with respect, faintly taking him as their lead.

However, this young man’s cultivation was the lowest amongst everyone from the Divine Void Divine Kingdom; he was only at the half-step Holy Lord realm.

A half-step Holy Lord youth was actually able to command so many Holy Lords and World Kings behind him.

“Who is this person?”

Lin Ming couldn’t help but ask.

“He is the Divine Void Third Crown Prince.”

Mo Brightmoon began to explain. A ‘Crown Prince’ of Divine Void Divine Kingdom was nothing but a title; they in no way referred to the true son of the Soul Emperor Divine Void. Currently, Divine Void Divine Kingdom had seven Crown Princes, each one belonging to one of the seven great divine provinces that comprised it. Every Crown Prince was an elite amongst elites, and they were the future rulers of their lands. Even the next Soul Emperor would be selected from amongst the Crown Princes. As for the Third Crown Prince, he was considered to be one of the strongest of the seven Divine Void Crown Princes.

“So that’s how it is.” Lin Ming said, suddenly realizing the situation. No wonder this Third Crown Prince was able to command so many people with the lowest cultivation. In a situation where he was able to survive, then it was best to enter the final trial at the youngest age possible in order to obtain greater advantages.

As for someone like Duke Fullmoon who only entered the final trial at the World King realm, the truth was that his talent was considered relatively poor.

“Look behind that Divine Void Crown Prince at the woman following him; that is the Crown Prince’s Imperial Concubine…”

At this time, standing behind Mo Brightmoon, Fanny Fafa suddenly spoke up. His voice was soft and gentle. If one didn’t see him and only listened to his voice, they might even think him a woman.

“The Imperial Concubine’s cultivation is even higher than the Divine Void Crown Prince’s…”

As Fanny Fafa said, there was truly a young woman following behind the Third Crown Prince, her appearance as beautiful as a flower. She exuded sex appeal from every inch of her body and her charming looks were cute and flirtatious. At first glance, one could see she was a truly outstanding existence. And, her cultivation was at the peak Holy Lord realm, a full large boundary higher than the Divine Void Crown Prince.

“It’s not anything strange.” Fanny Fafa chuckled as he spoke. He said in a strange and meaning-filled hushed voice, “You might not know, but that Imperial Concubine was especially raised to be given to the Divine Void Crown Prince so that he could dual cultivate with her. When the Divine Void Crown Prince deflowered the Imperial Concubine, he must have obtained a great advantage! The Imperial Concubine also has a pure yin physique, but her physique might not be as…pure…as mine… hehehe…”

Listening to Fanny Fafa, Lin Ming nearly choked on himself. He rubbed his nose and subconsciously took a step back. He couldn’t help but sigh with emotion. The Divine Void Crown Prince’s treatment was far too good. Not to mention the resources he had growing up or the final trial spot he was given, there was even a dual cultivation companion specifically raised for him by his sect.

As Lin Ming was lost in thought, another group flew in from the other side of the skies, standing in sharp opposition to the Third Crown Prince and his troop. This team was led by a fat young man who wore a bright yellow robe embroidered with a five-clawed dragon, just like the robes of a mortal emperor.

“It’s people from Heaven Union Divine Kingdom!”

Some people looking cried out in alarm. Heaven Union Divine Kingdom was the only colossal influence in the inner Asura Road that could directly contend with Divine Void Divine Kingdom!

“That fat youth must be Bigflame, the direct disciple of Sovereign Heaven Union. His status is no worse than that of the Divine Void Third Crown Prince…”

“Now there’s something fun to watch.”

A mountain couldn’t hold two tigers. Moreover, Divine Void Divine Kingdom and Heaven Union Divine Kingdom were in sharp opposition to each other from the start. As the Divine Void Third Crown Prince and Bigflame met each other, their vision seemed to turn into tangible essence that violently collided in the skies!

These two people were both peerless proud sons of heaven from True Divinity influences. With both of them being such proud characters, once they met they naturally had to compete to see who was lower and who was higher!

“You are that so-called Third Crown Prince from the Divine Void Divine Kingdom?” Bigflame looked at the Third Crown Prince and laughed, clearly not fearing him in the least.

The Divine Void Third Crown Prince sneered and unhurriedly said, “Did you come here especially to provoke me today? How interesting! My Divine Void Divine Kingdom has long been fighting your Heaven Union Divine Kingdom. During every final trial, the fights between juniors make for the fiercest battlefield. There is even a tradition of gambling fights. How about it? Do you want to make a bet with me today?”

“Haha! Aren’t you just overconfident in yourself? My goal this time is to obtain at least 80%. If you want to make a bet with me then you had best consider your own worth first!”

Bigflame arrogantly boasted. The Divine Void Third Crown Prince only laughed in response. 80%? It was like this person thought he would achieve that just by saying it.

“You sure speak a bunch of crap. I have three Nirvana Origin Balancing Pills. Do you want to make a bet?”

“Nirvana Origin Balancing Pill?” Bigflame’s eyes lit up and he licked his lips.

The martial artists watching from around the sea had also heard of the Nirvana Origin Balancing Pill before and their eyes shined in response. This was a pill on the transcendent divine level, but in a True Divinity Holy Land, many transcendent divine pills came from the hands of a True Divinity so the effects were normally much better than those of an ordinary transcendent divine pill.

Only the extreme genius of a True Divinity influence would be able to take out a top pill like this for a bet.

The final trial hadn't begun and yet there were already sparks flying between these two proud sons of heaven. With this, one could see just how intense the competition in the final trial would be. In addition to the horrifying pressure that exuded from that soul-freezing entrance as well as the droves of elites that came from all the large influences around the Asura Road, even if many of the martial artists present weren't able to participate in the final trial, just being able to be here to witness such a grand event left them all inexplicably excited!

"Good! If you want to give me pills then I won't stop you!" Bigflame laughed. He led the group from Heaven Union Divine Kingdom towards the incomparably massive black crack that was the final trial, and then they all disappeared without leaving a trace.

Seeing this, the people watching from around the sea all sucked in a deep breath. If they were sucked in by such a terrifying black vortex wouldn't they just lose their lives?

As these people were feeling weak of heart, the Divine Void Crown Prince also led his own people and rushed into the black vortex!

The oppressive feeling that originated from the final trial was simply far too strong. Even the proudest and most extraordinary children of heaven wouldn't say they didn't feel at least a hint of fear upon facing that dreadful black vortex.

As the people from Divine Void Divine Kingdom and Heaven Union Divine Kingdom entered, squads from all the different influences began flying towards the black vortex.

In the midst of all these flying martial artists, Lin Ming actually glanced the form of a blue-clothed woman.

This blue-clothed woman's movements were light and sprightly. In the wild and fierce storm of energy, she seemed as if she were taking a casual stroll through the woods. Her step wasn't quick, but in just several moments she arrived before the massive vortex of the final trial. Then, like a blue flower petal, she was sucked into the vortex, immediately vanishing from sight.

"That woman is..."

As Lin Ming saw this blue-clothed woman, he felt a strange movement in his heart. Just a moment ago, when the high-spirited Bigflame and Third Crown Prince were arguing, Lin Ming hadn't felt much at all. But in this brief moment when that blue-clothed woman fluttered about like a spirit in the wind, this actually left a deep impression on Lin Ming's mind.

Just by seeing this woman's form, Lin Ming felt his heartbeat speed up.

"It's her... she really came..."

In the crowd, there were some well-informed individuals with extremely sharp eyesight. Even from a distance and in the crowds of people, they were able to accurately see this blue-clothed woman's form.

This blue-clothed woman was always low-key in her actions, but many people knew that she was the true lead of the final trial!

"83% completion rate, isn't she satisfied with her past record?" An old man from the side of the Heaven Union Divine Kingdom muttered, his withered lips twitching.

When Bigflame and the Divine Void Third Crown Prince had made a bet, these old men hadn't placed that event in their eyes. To them, it was merely a little spirited tussle between juniors.

But the appearance of this blue-clothed woman actually caused the old man's complexion to change!

"What a dreadful woman... she is even more dreadful than Soul Emperor Divine Void..." A hoarse voice croaked out from behind the old man. This other person was wrapped in a red cloak and his body exuded a terrifying fluctuation of Laws. "Luckily for us she is someone from the 33 Heavens so she will not return to the Asura Road so easily, otherwise, the balance between the saints and spiritas within the inner Asura Road would be broken by her…”

“Mm. The Asura Road is separated from the 33 Heavens by a barrier of Laws that was laid down by the Asura Road Master. No matter how powerful the spiritas of the 33 Heavens are, it won’t affect us. I just have no idea what completion percent this horrifying woman will have and what rewards she will obtain. Really, she is truly a cause for envy…”

The previously speaking old man said, sighing with emotion. The rich rewards of the final trial were truly something they would be jealous about!

As these two old men were discussing with each other, in the dreadful storm of energy, a squad of five people flew low at sea level as they approached the massive black vortex.

The vortex churned, stretched out for thousands of miles. In front of this black vortex, the five people were nothing but grains of sand in front of a mountain, common and unnoticeable. As they submerged themselves in the black vortex, they didn’t even cause a tiny splash.

Lin Ming had finally stepped into the final trial. This would be the last story he left behind in the Asura Road.

Chapter 1672 – The Worries of Old Su

Chapter 1672 – The Worries of Old Su

…

…

…

When Lin Ming flew into the final trial he kept a low profile, just like the blue-clothed woman. In addition, he was very fast so there were many people that didn't notice him.

However, there were some considerably strong people with keen eyesight who were familiar with Lin Ming and saw his back.

"That person is… the Divine Runic Masters Guild's Lin Ming?" The one who spoke was a World King powerhouse. He had attended the Divine Rune City Auction in the past so he had an extremely deep impression of Lin Ming.

"Lin Ming? The creator of the Lin symbols?"

Many people had never seen Lin Ming but knew of his name. He was someone who created the myth of gathering 10 billion contribution points in half a month, and this was a story that spread throughout the entirety of the inner Asura Road.

"Isn't he only at the Divine Lord realm? Moreover, he's a divine runic master… is he planning on entering the final trial?"

In everyone's opinion, those young geniuses with extraordinary combat talent wouldn't choose to become divine runic masters.

People had limited time and energy, and the occupation of a divine runic master was an extremely time-consuming ordeal. Even Lin Ming, who possessed the heaven-defying Magic Cube and had absorbed the memories of three divine runic masters, still had his own cultivation speed delayed considerably due to studying the divine runic arts.

Of course, disasters and blessings came together. Because he studied the divine runic arts, Lin Ming had an even deeper understanding of the Asura Laws. These were all things that occurred later.

As for other geniuses they didn't possess something as ridiculous as the Magic Cube, if they placed all their time in studying the divine runic arts then their combat talent would naturally be left behind.

In many people's opinion, Lin Ming's talent in the divine runic arts had reached the pinnacle of possibility. If he didn't invest a massive amount of time into the divine runic arts then there wouldn't be anyone who believed this.

In this situation, most people subconsciously believed that Lin Ming, who lacked cultivation time, would have a dismally low combat efficiency. Otherwise, he would be too abnormal an existence.

But now he actually flew into the final trial mystic realm with a mere Divine Lord cultivation. This left everyone watching outside stunned. If Lin Ming were to perish inside, wouldn't that just be too great a pity?

"This boy, just what games is he playing..." On the observation pavilion, Divine Rune City's Old Xue and Old Su had also arrived some time ago. These two old geezers had already reached the limit of their cultivation and the only thing that grew for them every day was their hair. They spent most of their time idling about with their hobbies and of course wouldn't miss such a lively event. Since they were here, they naturally spotted Lin Ming.

As Old Su saw Lin Ming fly into the final trial mystic realm, he was a tad worried. There were many Holy Lords and World Kings gathered inside! Moreover, these people were all outstanding characters amongst their cultivation step. And beyond that, there were also the dangers of the final trial. If Lin Ming were to enter with a mere Divine Lord realm cultivation, it would undoubtedly be disastrously risky for him! Old Su didn't want such a divine runic arts prodigy to die inside.

"Hey, don't look down on him. That little fellow's strength isn't as simple as you think it is. We have no idea just what level he is. We've worried for him before, but it's all been in vain. He's a smart young boy. If he dares to enter the Asura Road then he should have some confidence in his ability. I have no idea what completion percentage he will obtain though… if it's 70% then that really is too abnormal."

Old Xue had an unusual amount of faith in Lin Ming.

"70%… you sure are optimistic. If he can survive that hell and come out alive then I'll already be thanking the heavens and earth. His talent is good, but in the end he is only at the Divine Lord realm. Can he really jump two large boundaries to fight a World King genius? I fear that he will be harmed by someone inside. Even his enemy Duke Fullmoon is in there. If that person is thinking of assassinating Lin Ming…"

As Old Su spoke to here he was a bit scared. In Divine Rune City, Lin Ming would have the protection of the Divine Runic Masters Guild as well as that mysterious master of his.

But in the final trial, Lin Ming could only rely on himself!

Killing in there was not uncommon! Even unparalleled geniuses still needed to be past the Divine Lord realm so they would have the ability to ensure their own safety. Only then would someone dare to enter the final trial.

As these two old men were speaking, within that dreadful vortex of energy that spanned from the heavens to earth, another familiar form appeared.

This form wasn't some stranger; it was the Extreme Star Holy Lands' Suya.

The two old men glanced at each other, surprised. They didn't think that Suya would also enter the final trial.

"This girl's strength cannot be underestimated. Moreover, she is interested in Lin Ming. I hope that she will look after him..." Old Su mumbled. In front of him, the overwhelming storm of energy became increasingly fierce...

…………

As Lin Ming approached the strange world of the final trial, he felt goosebumps rise all over his body. He could hear a strange sound in the void; it was the incomparably pure sea of energy trembling.

This strange world appeared to be a massive black vortex. Any beam of light that neared it was distorted and swallowed up.

Xiao Moxian anxiously held onto Lin Ming's hand.

As Lin Ming felt Xiao Moxian slip her hand into his, he reached out and gently wrapped his hand across her waist. With his right hand he waved the Phoenix Blood Spear, sending out a wave of energy that gradually calmed down the strange energy.

With a resolute shout, Lin Ming decisively rushed into this unusual new world.

Woosh woosh woosh –

Beside him, a succession of proud heroes from the Asura Road hurtled in, all of them rushing ahead to be first.

The final trial was extremely dangerous.

The final trial had a very high mortality rate.

...These were all things that those who participated were well aware of. But, the heaven-defying lucky chances within were enough to make their eyes go red with envy.

Waves of thick energy crashed onto everyone like a violent stormy sea.

Every wave of energy was like the impact of an ancient beast. Even Lin Ming felt a considerable amount of pressure. However, after having broken into the second Dao Palace, his mortal body was a hundred times more solid than those vicious beasts from ancient times. Although he was hindered, he didn’t suffer any injuries.

Lin Ming spread his hands wide, his muscles and bones popping as they extended outwards, withstanding the violent flow of energy. Xiao Moxian grasped onto Lin Ming, protected beneath him.

Xiao Moxian could feel a warm flow of energy surround her and a smile crossed her face. With her current strength she was more than capable of withstanding this violent flux of energy, but she rather enjoyed this feeling of being protected by Lin Ming.

His speed was fast, and by relying on his bodily strength he was able to drill through the brutal flow of energy like a hot knife in snow.

As the energy flows crashed into him, all of them scattered on his body.

To the rear, Mo Brightmoon and the two others followed close behind.

Thousand Slaughter furiously slashed out with his golden saber, spiritual strength shooting into the skies, creating nine phantoms of ancient demonic taoties.

These taoties were each massive and terrifying. As they appeared they began to desperately swallow up all of the energy around them, treating the flow of energy like delicious food.

These taotie phantoms constantly grew, but in the process of swallowing they were shattered by the impact of energy. As they broke apart they continued to reform; it was a peculiar sight.

But for better or worse, Mo Brightmoon and the others were all sheltered from the violent flux of energy.

Lin Ming noticed this and was slightly surprised. He realized that Thousand Slaughter's golden saber was some rare divine weapon so he paid more attention to it.

As Lin Ming looked at the golden saber in Thousand Slaughter's hand, Thousand Slaughter was also secretly shocked by Lin Ming's strength.

He had once heard Mo Brightmoon mention this youth. Besides the divine runic arts, this Lin Ming had aspects to him that were beyond the norm. He and Fanny Fafa hadn't believed these tales much, but as they saw Lin Ming use his body alone to resist the wild waves of energy whilst his speed was even faster than the taotie phantoms, he was left speechless.

Without a doubt, this Lin Ming was far stronger than he was.

"In this world there are actually people that can be so abnormal just by the strength of their bodies? Luckily, he's our ally." Fanny Fafa's eyes widened as a splendid light flashed in his eyes.

Within the flow of energy, all sense and sight was twisted up by the wild fluctuations around them. Besides their own squad, it was impossible to see any further.

Hu - !

The wild flow of energy finally reached its end. As if finally passing through walls of water, the pressure on Lin Ming's body lightened.

A bizarre land appeared in front of them.

All they saw were a sea of mountain peaks rising up and down in the world like floating islands, vast and endless.

Each mountain peak was covered with vibrant life. There were falling waterfalls and lush green trees. But for some reason, they give off an unrealistic feeling to Lin Ming.

As if everything he saw was fake.

In the distance, he could see surging rivers filled with strange black water.

There, the land was desolate and shrouded in a pale gray atmosphere.

Lin Ming stood on the ground and let Xiao Moxian down. He carefully observed the world in front of him.

“Weird. These things seem both real and false… Moreover, the energy here is peculiar as if there’s some risk, but for some reason I can’t make out what it is.” Lin Ming mumbled.

Faintly, he could feel an inexplicable danger, as if some viper were eyeing him from a hidden nest.

“Why aren’t we walking?” Thousand Slaughter’s strong and tall body arrived behind Lin Ming. He looked down at him from a towering position, asking him in a low and deep voice.

His high bamboo hat left behind a shadow that covered Lin Ming.

Mo Brightmoon also looked at Lin Ming, a bit puzzled.

Fanny Fafa giggled, “Killing has never been the forte of a divine runic master. Sir Lin, if you don’t wish to lead the way then allow me the honor.”

A feminine voice brought with it a faint yin chill. The sound was like a cold snake running over the body, making one feel alarmed.

As Fanny Fafa laughed, his body fluttered up as if he was weightless. As he passed by Lin Ming, his eyes swept over his body, carrying with it a faint sense of ridicule.

When Lin Ming had demonstrated his amazing bodily strength, he had left Fanny Fafa surprised. This had ignited Fanny Fafa’s competitive spirit, one that all martial artists had.

His methods were all extremely strange. His body emitted strands of silk-like milky white spiritual power that probed the surroundings.

This spiritual power spread out, covering the skies and earth.

Lin Ming's complexion changed. As he realized what Fanny Fafa was doing, he shouted out, "Don't move!"

But it was too late.

The milky white threads of spiritual strength spread out and submerged in all directions, vanishing from the world as if something had swallowed them up.

Fanny Fafa's complexion changed. At this time, the originally empty space above them suddenly seemed to be stimulated by something.

The void tore open and an icy cold black energy filled the air.

Four figures threw themselves onto the ground from this black energy, all of them carrying with them a fierce and blood-drenched aura.

Chapter 1673 – Completion Percent

Chapter 1673 – Completion Percent

…

…

…

At this time, in front of Lin Ming and his group, four dark gold skeletons appeared.

Each skeleton was filled with a tyrannical and horrifying aura. The void of their sockets shined with a dark reddish black light and they held blood-rusted bone knives in their hands.

With a simple slash, even the void was split asunder. A space storm formed, sweeping towards Fanny Fafa.

This sudden change caught Fanny Fafa by surprise. He released countless milky white threads of spiritual strength that condensed in the air like iron, forming layers and layers around his body.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

The barrier of spiritual strength collided with these bone knives that had torn apart space. A grating metallic sound filled the air as sparks flew out.

At this time, Lin Ming's figure flushed forwards. With a rumbling sound his fist crashed into the skull of one of the skeletons.

After breaking into the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace, a single wave of his hand could summon 10 billion jins of strength. Even an ancient vicious beast would have been ripped asunder.

Dong - !

As the fist came crashing down, the air blocking its path was squeezed so hard that it became like iron, solidly forming a column of air.

The incomparably tough bones shattered like tofu. Soon after, a second fist came smashing out, even extinguishing the dark ruby flames in the sockets of the skeleton.

Soon after, the Phoenix Blood Spear came thrusting out. In the blink of an eye, thousands upon thousands of spear strikes pierced out, each spear bringing with it enough strength to crush a planet. The bones they struck were directly blown away.

At this time, Mo Brightmoon also attacked. Her fingers waved and a strange crescent moon-shaped rune appeared atop her fingertips. The rune slashed out into the wind, breaking through the void, the enormous pressure imprisoning a skeleton.

With a loud shout, the crescent moon rune shined with an incandescent brilliance. The sharp blade of the rune tore through the skeleton, the slicing maelstrom of energy turning it into powder.

Thousand Slaughter's figure flashed and he disappeared like gods and ghosts, immediately reappearing behind another skeleton warrior. His golden saber was able to find the weakness of the skeleton warriors in a single stroke – the little wisp of will hidden deep in its body.

The deep black aura of a taotie sparked and an immense swallowing force spread out, swallowing up that wisp of will.

The skeleton warrior's body immediately disintegrated, vanishing into the wind.

The entire process lasted only several breaths of time.

The four skeleton warriors were destroyed and the space in front of the group began to peel apart, breaking down. Jet black runes began to scatter out.

Those distant mountain peaks and the raging black rivers all vanished from sight.

The surroundings also began to dim down.

The boundless death energy and cold yin energy around them suddenly surrounded them from all directions.

Beneath their feet, they were stepping on seals designed in the images of different kinds of vicious beast, some of them still glowing with a strange and fantastic light.

The entire atmosphere became grim and gloomy.

"This sort of place..." Looking at the pitch black darkness in front of them that seemed to have no end, Xiao Moxian immediately lit a little flame.

Light spread out, scattering all the shadows.

Everyone was startled. They could see that in front of them was a vast tunnel extending to forever, one with scattered skeletons lying all around it.

Each skeleton glowed with its own color. Some were dark gold and some were purple gold.

The purer gold-colored the skeletons, the thicker the death energy emanating from them.

"This should be an ancient grave..." Lin Ming slowly said as he looked at the various sacrificial patterns engraved upon the walls.

"Those mountain peaks and rivers, they should have been an illusion..." Fanny Fafa frowned; he had been completely unable to see through the illusion. Luckily, the golden skeletons weren't too strong. If they were comparable to a World King, then the battle just now would have been dangerous.

"There are hidden spatial array formations everywhere – do not act rashly. A moment ago, you touched an array formation that transmitted us here." Lin Ming calmly judged the situation.

Now, he finally knew why he had a restless feeling ever since he arrived.

This was because he discovered that everywhere here vaguely conformed to the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws. Moreover, he didn't understand many of the Laws here.

These Laws were closely related to the array formations arranged all over this place. If they were even slightly touched, there would be tremendous problems.

Everyone felt a chill crawl up their backs as they heard Lin Ming speak. If there were array formation traps everywhere then they had to be especially careful as they walked forwards.

However, the Lin Ming standing in front of them seemed to have some strange ability to sense these array formations, as if he had some safeguard against them…

Fanny Fafa and Thousand Slaughter couldn't help but look towards Lin Ming. Although they didn't want to admit it, they had to. This young divine runic master who invented the 'Lin' divine runic symbols was far different from any other divine runic master they had encountered.

"Follow close behind me and pay careful attention to my steps. This array formation… I've seen it in an ancient text before…"

Lin Ming thoughtlessly came up with a reason. Although the others felt that this so-called 'ancient text' that Lin Ming spoke of was a bit odd, at this time they had no reason to doubt him.

Sensing the strange array formation rules around him and also fusing in the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao and the power of illusions, Lin Ming led the way for the group.

After all, his comprehensions of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws became increasingly profound with every year. Using these comprehensions he was able to break through some of these array formation traps.

Thousand Slaughter followed close behind Lin Ming, maintaining full vigilance of his surroundings even as he guarded Lin Ming's rear. In this final trial, only perfect cooperation would allow them to go further.

Mo Brightmoon was originally an outstanding killer. A crescent moon-shaped ring appeared on her hand, sparkling with light and emitting traces of spiritual energy that seemed to cut through the void. It was clear that this was a powerful spirit treasure.

As the group followed close behind Lin Ming, they carefully made their way through the tunnel.

As they walked forwards, by relying on Lin Ming's exceptional senses, they were able to discover and avoid several strange space traps.

The pitch black and gloomy road was filled with a pervasive death energy that lingered about.

In the tunnel, the fierce cracks and bloodstains covered the walls. The bloodstains had already dried up and were difficult to discern.

It was clear that they had originated from countless years ago. It was unknown just how many times fierce life or death battles had been fought in this tunnel.

Kacha –

After some time, at a wall in front of them not too far away, an unusual sound echoed out.

There was an extremely strange image on this wall.

The image was painted with a special kind of liquid and was over 30 feet tall. The image showed several demonic beings, all of them with two horns and cruel crimson fangs. This was an image of man-eating fierce ghosts.

Although this was a mere painting, Lin Ming didn't know why but he felt the crimson-eyed fierce ghosts were looking at them, their eyes blazing with green.

"Sir Lin?" Fanny Fafa suddenly asked.

Lin Ming thought for a moment, looking at the fierce ghost drawing in front of him. The Asura Road Master's methods were beyond mortal comprehension. In this final trial, any strange and unusual matter could occur.

Lin Ming and Fanny Fafa could both feel something off with the painting. And as they were looking carefully at it, the panting began to slowly move towards them.

It drew closer and closer.

Everyone raised their guard.

Puff! Puff!

Suddenly, a terrifying black energy burst out from the fierce ghost drawing. Then, the group of demonic fierce ghosts actually leapt out from the drawing.

The air was immediately filled with the thick and pungent scent of blood.

At this time, from the walls around and above them… fierce ghosts popped out from all directions, immediately surrounding Lin Ming, Mo Brightmoon, and everyone else.

Originally they thought there were only several fierce ghosts but there were actually far more than they imagined. Moreover, the way they hid themselves surprised Lin Ming.

Of course, this was only surprise.

The power of the Heretical God Tree began to crazily swell up from within Lin Ming. A bolt of lightning shot out from Lin Ming's palm, rumbling into the fierce ghosts and blowing up a good number of them.

At this time, the crescent moon ring on Mo Brightmoon's hand also emitted a brilliant cyan light.

Each beam of cyan light emitted crackling sounds in the air. As they struck the fierce ghosts, they emitted heaven-shaking explosive sounds.

Fanny Fafa flung his voluminous sleeves forwards. Like a sharp blade, a beam of energy cleaved ahead, sweeping out. As this beam of energy struck the fierce ghosts they were cut in half…

After a moment of chaos, the tunnel was suddenly peaceful. The drawing of fierce ghosts and the blood red lights in their eyes had dimmed down.

"Let's go."

Lin Ming rushed ahead, deeper into the tunnel.

Along the way, the group encountered several more waves of danger. But before each battle, Lin Ming was always able to sense it happening and would promptly warn the group.

All of these traps and hidden attacks that were originally impossible to guard against suddenly became far less dangerous.

And, the power of these sneak attacks was inferior to the squad of five. None of them thought that there were any difficulties in the first level of the trial.

But, what they didn't know was that in other places, there were some weaker squads that were finding it extremely difficult to move forwards. They were given headaches by the illusion array formations here, and some of them had even suffered casualties.

Hu - !

After chopping down a giant-sized bloated corpse, Lin Ming's palms tingled with numbness. Beside him, Thousand Slaughter and Fanny Fafa were also gasping for breath in great heaving gulps.

They moved forward faster and faster, and the things they met became increasingly dangerous.

Just now they finished dealing with a wave of corpses summoned by an array formation. This attack nearly caused some of them to be injured.

However, luckily Lin Ming's body was incredibly tough and Fanny Fafa also had a strange supernatural talent that allowed him to imprison his opponents with spiritual power.

With these two abilities, it became much easier for them to deal with these brainless corpses.

Woong – Woong – Woong –

Suddenly, the sound of crashing tides appeared from not too far away.

Everyone look forwards to see a black vortex of energy appear in front of them, just like when they first entered the final trial.

As everyone saw this they were overjoyed. This must be the entrance leading from the first level to the second level!

Everyone quickly leapt forwards.

Within this vortex of energy, there was also a wild flow of energy. But with the experiences of the past, none of them were affected at all by it.

As the waves of energy flowed over Lin Ming, he felt something strange in his mind.

Final trial, completion rate – 20%

Chapter 1674 – Sinister Tricks

Chapter 1674 – Sinister Tricks

…

…

…

Completion, 20%?

Lin Ming perked up and looked towards everyone else. At this time, Mo Brightmoon, Fanny Fafa, and the others were also looking at Lin Ming. It was clear that they also received the information on their completion percentage.

"20%, you?" Lin Ming asked.

"The same."

Mo Brightmoon and the others glanced at each other. This completion percentage was better than they had anticipated. After all, when walking all the way here the truth was that they hadn't encountered any true dangers at all.

"The completion percentage should be more difficult the later it is. After 80%, it is likely that every point will be more difficult than the last. Our current completion percentage isn't strange at all."

"Let's go."

Ho - !

The group finally emerged from the endless wild flow of energy and landed on the ground.

Here, dark winds howled, carrying with them a dry and desolate aura as they swept over the scattered gravel on the ground.

The sky in front of them was unusually high, as blue and transparent as sapphires.

In the far off distance, the shapes of the mountains were vague, resembling the outline of some sleeping great beast.

Beneath their feet was a vast rough land of sand and stone. Thick weeds grew up periodically, many patches as high as a person. There were only several ghostly-looking trees scattered around; the plant life here was sparse.

This was a windswept wilderness, bleak and dreary.

“This is the second level, right?” Xiao Moxian flew up into the skies a little, looking around before falling down next to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. He didn’t know just how many levels the final trial had. Now that he came here himself, the first few layers weren’t too dangerous at all.

“Don’t worry, let’s rest up first.”

Lin Ming proposed. According to what he knew, the final trial would likely last for several years. Now that everyone had just passed the first level, they had inevitably consumed some of their energy. Since they didn’t know what the second floor was going to be like, they might as well stay here and adjust themselves to their peak condition. This was the safest plan of action.

As Lin Ming spoke, Mo Brightmoon and the others sat in meditation. Without noticing it, Lin Ming had already become the core of the team. On the first level of the smelting trial, everyone had been able to witness Lin Ming’s performance with their own eyes so they naturally listened to his opinion.

However, before the group had meditated for long, a sudden sad and high-pitched scream echoed out from the south of the wilderness.

“Mm?”

Lin Ming frowned. Someone was here!?

In the first level, they had touched a space trap and were transported somewhere else. After that, they hadn’t met any other groups; it was likely they had been cut off from the other groups. But here in the world of the second level, this place was vast and boundless; perhaps there were other squads here.

Should they go and investigate the source of that sad scream?

The other people glanced at each other before looking towards Lin Ming, wanting to solicit his opinion.

If they went to investigate what happened, it was likely they would encounter some dangers.

“Let’s go take a look. But be a bit more careful. If there’s anything wrong then we’ll flee at once.” Lin Ming succinctly stated.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

The group of people rushed towards the direction of the scream like bolts of lightning.

The group fell onto a barren rocky hill a few miles away, looking towards the area that the horrible scream came from.

Lin Ming’s vision was as sharp as an eagle’s. With one glance he could see a gaping cave going into the ground, one that was covered with a giant bloodstain.

The blood was fresh and hadn’t yet coagulated. Besides that, there weren’t any other clues as to what happened.

It was clear that some macabre death had just occurred here.

At this time, from different directions in the distance, there were the deafening sounds of a sonic boom.

Lin Ming and the others felt their minds chill. They all restrained their auras together.

A milky white spiritual strength emerged from Fanny Fafa's hands, cutting through the air and thoroughly covering the group's auras.

Lin Ming couldn't help but be curious about this milky white spiritual strength. This sort of strange spiritual strength seemed to be Fanny Fafa's supernatural talent. It was an extremely strange and complex ability. He really had no idea just what cultivation method Fanny Fafa practiced.

"Fourth Junior-apprentice Brother's soul lamp has been extinguished and his wisp of soul disappeared here. That bloodstain's aura also belongs to Junior-apprentice Brother. Where is he? Could there be something strange in that cave?"

Both of the two people that flew over were tall and vigorous-looking. One of them was covered with transparent raging flames. These flames exuded a powerful momentum that surrounded the cave with the bloodstain.

The other person held a strange divine runic symbol in their hands.

As the divine runic symbol appeared, it emitted a pitch black fire energy.

"Big Brother Lin, that fellow is using the divine runic symbol you created!" Xiao Moxian whispered to Lin Ming as if she had discovered the funniest thing in the world. Her eyes were locked onto the divine runic symbol in the person's hand.

Lin Ming's vision was keen. He was immediately able to see the 'Lin' character marking the bottom right of the divine runic symbol. Indeed, it was one of the Lin logo divine runic symbols, and also the extremely expensive Heavenly Fire Symbol too. He couldn't help but smile a little upon seeing this.

It seemed that these Lin logo divine runic symbols had spread to the upper levels of the Asura Road. The one who bought the Heavenly Fire Symbols was Empyrean Lionheart, but Empyrean Lionheart's sect wasn't experiencing war anytime soon, so it was possible for them to sell a portion of the divine runic symbols to others.

Then again, Lin Ming had produced just over a thousand of these specialized fifth grade divine runic symbols. If a person was able to possess one then they should have some status in their large influence, otherwise it simply wouldn't be their turn to wield it.

Rumble rumble rumble! The divine runic symbol smashed into the cave tunnels.

There was a continuous blast of explosions echoing from within. Flames soared to the heavens and all of the soil and rock around the cave was instantly melted by the high temperatures.

Sharp shrieks sounded out. A number of figures fled from the burning cave, their bodies blackened. These creatures had thick tails extending from their backs and had bodies similar to a person's, but their appearance was like a beast.

As these strange beast creatures appeared, runes began to shine on their foreheads. They rushed towards the person that used the Heavenly Fire Symbol, a beam of black lightning shooting out from between their eyebrows towards the two people.

"Shit!"

The trial challenger who held the Lin symbol was angered. Just as he was about to use the Heavenly Fire Symbol in his hand yet again, his companion stopped him. "Don't be in a hurry, we must save it."

The fierceness of the Heavenly Fire Symbol lay in the fact that even if a martial artist were at their weakest state, completely exhausted of strength, using the Heavenly Fire Symbol would still result in an all-out attack that remained the same no matter what condition the martial artist was in.

They definitely had to save this divine runic symbol as much as they could to use in critical moments to preserve their lives.

Bang!

With an explosive sound, the black light emitted by the monsters fell onto the ground, causing a dreadful eruption of power.

And as this violent fluctuation of energy shook the mountain, more and more monsters began emerging from all over!

The aura of these monsters was actually at the peak Holy Lord realm! One or two of these monsters wasn't scary, but with dozens of them gathered together, that was truly horrifying!

In particular, the black light these monsters shot out could gather together and produce an effect of locking down space. These black lights were like a giant spider web, making it so that the two martial artists couldn't escape even if they wanted to.

"We must last until Senior-apprentice Brother arrives!"

Even facing such a dangerous situation, the disciple who spoke wasn't afraid at all. Rather, he put forth over 10 array discs and used these array discs to battle these monsters.

As for his companion, he wasn't weak either. He pulled out his sword, displaying fierce and swift sword skills, perfectly coordinating his attacks!

It was clear that those people who had the qualifications to enter the final trial were all extraordinary.

At this time, a keening howl echoed out, as if something was flying towards them and tearing apart the atmosphere as it did. The two martial artists turned and were immediately overjoyed. “Senior-apprentice Brother has arrived!”

Lin Ming and the others turned towards the sound and saw someone rapidly flying towards them. Lin Ming frowned as he did. Really, enemies crossed paths far too often. This person was none other than Duke Fullmoon!

After entering the final trial’s first level, because they triggered trap array formations, the disciples of Divine Void Divine Kingdom were transmitted to separate areas. But they were truly incredible individuals. Even though they were split apart they were able to pass the first level of the trial and arrive at the second level.

As soon as they entered the second level they were able to use all sorts of methods to contact their companions. The two disciples who were surrounded by the monsters were subordinates of Divine Void Divine Kingdom’s Nine Nether Province; they were fellow disciples of Duke Fullmoon.

“It’s that fellow again, he keeps on haunting us like ghosts!” Xiao Moxian gnashed her teeth, thinking over multiple ways she could try to put Duke Fullmoon to death in this final trial mystic realm.

“Senior-apprentice Brother!” As the two disciples were overjoyed, at this time, some of the monsters that surrounded them began rushing towards Duke Fullmoon!

These monsters were all bloodthirsty to the point of craziness. Before Duke Fullmoon attacked they had already taken the initiative!

“Che!”

Duke Fullmoon immediately slowed down before coming to a stop in the air. Face these twenty some monsters, he frowned, hesitating somewhat.

He could see that these monsters were difficult to deal with. Even for him, they would be a great deal of trouble.

He began considering whether or not acting to save these two junior-apprentice brothers would harm himself. If the risk was too great then he would rather turn tail and run.

But at this time, Duke Fullmoon discovered Lin Ming's existence.

Lin Ming and his group were far too obvious. In their haste when they rushed over they had only restrained their auras and hadn't set up a concealment array formation, thus Duke Fullmoon had detected them.

"It's you!?"

After noticing Lin Ming, Duke Fullmoon was stunned. He clearly didn't expect to see Lin Ming here.

In a spark of lightning, the 20 some monsters had already reached less than a thousand feet in front of Duke Fullmoon.

Duke Fullmoon maniacally grinned. "The road to heaven you choose not to walk, but the gates of hell you would rush through!"

Without further ado, Duke Fullmoon took these monsters chasing after him and rushed towards Lin Ming!

His plan was clear; it was to drag Lin Ming down with him and have him share in the pressure of dealing with these monsters.

If possible, he would even look for a chance to use these monsters to kill Lin Ming or at least severely wound him. At that time, although he might not be able to obtain Lin Ming's divine runic arts inheritances, he could still obtain the other secrets on his body.

"This damned bastard!"

Xiao Moxian was enraged. This Duke Fullmoon was cunning enough. The area he was flying in was from their rear; this just happened to trap Lin Ming and the others between the monsters!

Chapter 1675 – Blue-clothed Figure

Chapter 1675 – Blue-clothed Figure

…

…

…

"Haha! Brother Lin, what a small world, we keep meeting each other everywhere!"

Duke Fullmoon wantonly smiled as he rapidly flew towards Lin Ming. At the same time his fingers flexed as he thrust out hundreds and thousands of energy threads.

These energy threads didn't have much power behind them; their only function was to hinder the movements of Lin Ming and his group. Duke Fullmoon wanted Lin Ming to stay here.

In Duke Fullmoon's eyes, Lin Ming was only a divine runic master. No matter how formidable his divine runic arts were, his combat strength was likely nothing to speak of. Lin Ming's cultivation was only at the late Divine Lord realm and he had lived a mere hundred some years of life. Moreover, Duke Fullmoon was sure that Lin Ming had lived an ascetic life for these past years and had invariably invested a massive amount of time in studying the divine runic arts, leaving his combat strength in utter shambles!

Duke Fullmoon already bore a grudge against Lin Ming and he also secretly envied the secrets that Lin Ming possessed. Even if there were not secrets on Lin Ming's body, if he killed Lin Ming he would still be able to obtain the massive amount of wealth and rare materials he kept on him.

This final trial was the best chance to kill Lin Ming. He didn't need to consider the Divine Runic Masters Guild nor did he need to consider the mysterious master that stood behind Lin Ming. As Duke Fullmoon thought of all this, a fierce smile crossed his face!

"You little shit, you want to die!?"

Fanny Fafa's eyebrows rose in anger. He had walked through the Asura Road for many years and assassinated many people, but rarely had anyone tried to plot against him.

Now that this Duke Fullmoon was dragging many monsters towards them, it was clear he wanted to use them as his spear and then profit from their disaster.

Although Fanny Fafa didn't fear these monsters, he couldn't swallow the rage from being used by others!

"Don't move!"

At this time, Lin Ming stopped Fanny Fafa!

In this situation, as long as they attacked they would fall into the trap because no matter who they attacked, it would be disadvantageous for them. If they attacked Duke Fullmoon, those monsters would rush towards them. But, if they attacked the monsters, that would be the same as doing exactly what Duke Fullmoon wished for and acting as his spears.

No matter what, if Lin Ming and the others attacked, they would definitely fall into a brutal melee with the monsters.

And now, more and more monsters were catching up. Although the combined strength of Lin Ming's group was more than enough to fight these monsters, participating in such a meaningless fight in this danger-ridden final trial wasn't wise at all. If they consumed too much strength and encountered some other trap, that would be far more dangerous for them.

“Sir Lin?” Fanny Fafa asked, puzzled as he kept looking at the 20 some monsters that Duke Fullmoon was bringing towards them. If Lin Ming didn’t attack, wasn’t that the same as waiting for death?

“Allow me.”

Lin Ming stepped forwards and stood in front of Fanny Fafa. He took out a divine runic symbol from his spatial ring. This divine runic symbol had a ‘Lin’ character that shined on the bottom left!

In the past when Lin Ming left Divine Rune City and returned to Tragic Death Valley to rescue Empyrean Divine Mist, he had cultivated in Tragic Death Valley for a considerable amount of time. In that period he had drawn up a massive number of divine runic symbols in preparation for this final trial.

This divine runic symbol was named Heaven’s Divide. It was a peak fifth grade divine runic symbol and also an improved divine runic symbol. Moreover, it could only be used one time!

For a divine runic symbol to be used once, that meant that its complete strength would erupt!

As Lin Ming crumbled the divine runic symbol, countless lines of the Asura Laws spread outwards, surrounding his group, overlapping again and again!

For a time, space seemed to tear apart. Fanny Fafa, Mo Brightmoon, and the others all felt as if they were instantly placed into a different dimension!

“This is…”

Fanny Fafa, Mo Brightmoon, and the others were all surprised. They looked towards Lin Ming with disbelief.

This move was marvelous.

The torn space distorted, becoming a separate world. This space isolated all origin energy fluctuations even as it served as the best protective barrier!

This was a top grade group-wide defensive divine runic symbol!

In that moment, Duke Fullmoon looked on helplessly as the originally nearby Lin Ming and his group suddenly disappeared into thin air!

“What!?”

Duke Fullmoon’s complexion immediately became extremely ugly.

He was well aware that Lin Ming had hidden himself in a spatial tear in front of him, but there wasn’t anything he could do about it!

He had personally witnessed the power of Lin Ming’s divine runic symbols himself. If an ordinary World King powerhouse were to use the Space Laws to conceal themselves, then Duke Fullmoon had the confidence he had the methods to break through it. But facing Lin Ming’s divine runic symbols, Duke Fullmoon didn’t have the same confidence.

Moreover, there were also 20 some monsters chasing behind him. With Duke Fullmoon’s strength, where would he have the ability to defend against these monsters and unravel Lin Ming’s divine runic symbol at the same time?

“You damned little beast!”

Duke Fullmoon cursed out loud. He had only been thinking about Lin Ming’s abhorrent combat strength and had neglected the fact that Lin Ming’s divine runic arts were able to make up for those flaws. If he just thought about this then he would have realized Lin Ming inevitably carried with him a massive number of divine runic symbols, and the various uses of these divine runic symbols and their might could be imagined!

No matter who it was, wanting to attack Lin Ming wouldn’t be simple at all!

As Duke Fullmoon thought of this person who was clearly far inferior to him and yet was able to use luxurious divine runic symbols as if they didn't cost money at all, he felt incomparably wronged. There was simply nothing he could do about this.

But at this moment, Duke Fullmoon had no time to think about these matters, because those 20 some monsters chasing him from behind had already surrounded him!

"Damn!"

Because of Duke Fullmoon's rage and grief, he already had a green-tinted face. His current predicament wouldn't be easy to solve no matter what!

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Without saying anything, those monsters that chased after Duke Fullmoon opened their mouths and began releasing a strange light.

These beams of light were extremely compact. As they cut through the void they emitted a sound like sabers scratching on glass, grating to the ears!

Duke Fullmoon immediately fell into a fierce struggle!

His strength began to rapidly deplete.

Not just that, but more and more monsters began catching up. Duke Fullmoon felt nothing but deep regret. If he had known that this would happen then he would never have come to rescue those two trouble-stirring junior-apprentice brothers of his!

The truth was that the second level wasn't too risky to begin with. But, Duke Fullmoon's two junior-apprentice brothers were too arrogant and conceited in their own strength and abilities and had gone too far in their actions as a result. Instead of avoiding these monsters, they had used Lin Ming's Heavenly Fire Symbol to blow apart their den. If they hadn't done this then they wouldn't have fallen into such a bitter battle.

"If I'm in a bad situation, then don't think you lot can stay uninvolved!"

Duke Fullmoon was truly incredibly strong. Even though he was under siege from these monsters, he was still able to rush through them and constantly guide these monsters and their black beams of light towards the area Lin Ming was at.

However, how could the improved one time use Heaven's Divide symbol that Lin Ming carefully drew up be so easily defeated?

In particular, these monsters only had brute force behind their skills; they didn't have a deep understanding of the Laws.

Lin Ming cleverly used the Space Laws contained within Heaven's Divide to twist the nearby space, causing those beams of black light to bend around the group's location.

From the outside, it was like the area Lin Ming was in was only the surface of water. As the beams of light struck the barrier, they refracted, passing around Lin Ming's group and causing no harm to any of them.

"Big Brother Lin, you're so fierce!" Xiao Moxian hugged Lin Ming's arm.

In terms of strength, Lin Ming was formidable. But because he frequently entered dangerous situations that far surpassed his level, even his heaven-defying strength was often lacking.

However, Lin Ming was able to make use of all sorts of other methods, finding a singular path in a supposedly impossible situation to turn the tide and completely overcome the impossible.

"This move... is a bit fierce, haha..."

Fanny Fafa sighed in praise. Mo Brightmoon also let out a sigh of relief as she looked towards Lin Ming with a strange light in her eyes.

However, Lin Ming shook his head, "This sort of divine runic symbol isn't easy to create. My time and materials were limited so I was only to draw up a few of them. Every time I use one I'll have one less. Moreover… bending these black lights will continuously consume the energy within the divine runic symbol. If this continues, I estimate the barrier will collapse within an incense stick of time…"

Lin Ming's voice was indifferent. He didn't reveal any pride or contentment at using this ingenious method. Instead, all there was in his eyes was a faint killing intent. This killing intent was focused on Duke Fullmoon!

Lin Ming was disgusted by this person to begin with. And today, this person even tried to use these monsters to kill him, arousing Lin Ming's killing intent even further!

"Sir Lin, could you be thinking of…" The normally silent Thousand Slaughter suddenly spoke as he vaguely sensed Lin Ming's intentions.

"Please, just call me Lin Ming. And yes, you should all be prepared. After an incense stick of time passes, we'll all attack together and cut down that Duke Fullmoon! He isn't weak. Amongst ordinary World Kings, he can be considered amongst the top! Do not underestimate the enemy!"

Mo Brightmoon and the two companions she brought over were extraordinary existences amongst ordinary World Kings. However, Duke Fullmoon was a disciple from a massive influence so he would definitely have some life-saving methods up his sleeve. Wanting to kill him here wouldn't be easy at all.

Lin Ming quietly traced his spatial ring. Within this spatial ring were many offensive divine runic symbols. Once the Heaven's Divide barrier collapsed, he would not only attack with his full strength but also support it with the attack of divine runic symbols!

As Fanny Fafa witnessed Lin Ming's various methods as well as his deep eyes that locked onto Duke Fullmoon like a viper eyeing its prey, he felt an inexplicable chill crawl up his spine.

He discovered that even though he had given a sufficiently high appraisal of Lin Ming, the result was that he had never been able to clearly see the abilities of this youth from beginning to end. To be an enemy of this young man was a truly terrifying matter.

Like this, half an incense stick of time passed…

Duke Fullmoon’s entire body was stained with blood. The more he fought the more ruthless and vicious his moves became. Just by himself, he had killed over 10 of these monsters! But because these monsters continuously caught up to him, their numbers never seemed to drop.

“Damn it all!”

Duke Fullmoon’s complexion became increasingly angry. At this time, he already felt that it was impossible for him to kill off these monsters. And if he wanted to escape, it wouldn’t be easy with the spider web of black lights covering everywhere around him. In order to withdraw he would definitely have to pay some price!

He would need to burn some of his blood essence or use the life-saving cards obtained from his sect.

As Duke Fullmoon thought of using up one of these cards, he felt as if someone had pulled out his heart. He had two life-saving cards in hand and each one was exchanged with a massive amount of sect contribution points. These cards were to be used in the final trial. If he were to use one up in just the second level of the final trial, how could he not feel pain?

As he was burning with anger, his eyes blazing with rage, he passed all of this hate onto Lin Ming. If Lin Ming wasn’t tricky and cunning and had obediently acted as his spear, then how would he have ended up in such a horrible situation?

As Duke Fullmoon grit his teeth and was prepared to take out one of these cards, at this time, a chilly blue light covered this entire desolate and blood-drenched land.

This blue light was clear and ephemeral, seeming as if it had flowed forth from the furthest stretches of time, bringing with it a strength that stunned the mind.

This blue light was incomparably cold. But at the same time, it was as vivid as a spring breeze, carrying with it a vibrant life force!

Wherever it visited, plant life began to bloom upon the bleak land. Strange and unusual ice flowers, cold plums, and snow lotuses began to appear in abundance. For a time, the entire sky was covered in an ethereal haze of cold frost!

As those rage-filled monsters were covered in this cold blue light, all of them immediately stiffened. They seemed to lose all desire to attack and instead became extremely docile.

The dozen some monsters were all covered with ice crystals. As if enthralled by the blue light, they all knelt on the ground, lying prostrate as if they were worshipping their totem.

"This… what sort of method is this!?"

Behind the protective barrier of the divine runic symbol, Lin Ming was astonished. If the master of this blue light had used some thunder technique to annihilate all of these monsters then he wouldn't have been surprised at all.

But, she was actually able to compel these monsters to lose all desire to attack and kneel in worship instead.

This was a technique he had never heard of before!

"Could this be… a spiritas ability?"

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. Because he cultivated the Divine Mist Heart Mantra, Lin Ming knew that when a spiritas martial artist's soul force reached a terrifying boundary, they could use their powerful soul force to affect the mind of an enemy, even control them! Weaker martial artists could have their souls captured by this soul force and be turned into living puppets without realizing it.

“This method, could it be her…?”

Lin Ming’s mind chilled. He immediately recalled the figure of the blue-clothed woman.

At that time, amongst the numerous heroic elites that had plunged into the black vortex of the final trial, only the blue-clothed woman had left a profound impression upon Lin Ming.

She kept a low profile and Lin Ming had only caught a glimpse of her. But whether it was the Divine Void Third Crown Prince or Sovereign Heaven Union’s direct disciple, Bigflame, Lin Ming could feel that they were both inferior to even 1% of this blue-clothed woman.

In the next moment, Lin Ming was able to confirm his suspicions.

On the distant horizon, there was a peerless woman in a blue skirt flying towards them as she stepped on the wind.

Her face was shrouded in a strange wave of energy, making her appearance seem hazy and unreal.

However, her figure was tall and graceful. Her black hair fell down like a waterfall and accentuated her abundant chest. Her entire body exuded a mysterious and sacred aura, forming a peculiar contrast.

As Duke Fullmoon saw this blue-clothed woman, he was immediately ecstatic.

“Soul Empress, over here!”

The truth was that Soul Empress Sheng Mei couldn’t be considered an ally of Divine Void Divine Kingdom. As for Duke Fullmoon, who was merely a subordinate of Divine Void Divine Kingdom’s Nine Nether Province, there was absolutely no way he could come into contact with an existence like her.

The reason Sheng Mei had rescued Duke Fullmoon was only because she owed Soul Emperor Divine Void a favor.

Her steps were soft and supple. Although she was originally on the horizon, in just several steps she arrived in front of everyone. Like a fairy maiden descending from heaven, she floated down, landing on the earth.

Chapter 1676 – The Gate of Laws

Chapter 1676 – The Gate of Laws

…

…

…

Blue light shined on the vast wilderness. Ice flowers and snow plums grew everywhere…

Soul Empress Sheng Mei fell upon the largest snow lotus. Her slender feet were like a butterfly, her lithe body seeming to have no weight.

"Soul Empress!"

The happy Duke Fullmoon hurriedly bowed, his face full of attentiveness.

What kind of character was Soul Empress Sheng Mei? Even Soul Emperor Divine Void had to treat her with respect. It could even be said that she was an existence on the same level as Soul Emperor Divine Void!

In front of Soul Empress Sheng Mei, Duke Fullmoon was nothing more than a little ant. For Sheng Mei to personally rescue him, Duke Fullmoon felt extremely flattered.

Sheng Mei didn't look at Duke Fullmoon. Rather, she faintly glanced over at Lin Ming's direction.

Within the space distortion, Lin Ming frowned. This woman was terrifying beyond description. Without a doubt, the five of them combined together wouldn't be her match.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment and then lifted the barrier of Heaven's Divide. Towards this dreadful person, a barrier on this level wasn't any different from paper.

As he looked at Sheng Mei, he was put under a dreadful pressure!

He couldn't see this woman's strength at all!

Sheng Mei stared deeply into Lin Ming's eyes. A strange color appeared within her smoky eyes.

"You... what is your name?"

Sheng Mei suddenly asked for Lin Ming's name. This caused Lin Ming to feel a sudden chill cross his body. It had to be known that within this final trial that was filled with numerous young elites, he was extremely common and unnoticeable. Beside those people who participated in the Divine Rune City Auction during that eventful year as well as those who kept up with news about the divine runic arts, very few people bothered paying attention to Lin Ming.

The Divine Void Third Crown Prince and Bigflame, the direct disciple of Divine Emperor Heaven Union, were both the leads of this final trial.

But even these two leads weren't able to enter Soul Empress Sheng Mei's eyes.

Yet, currently, Sheng Mei had taken the initiative to ask Lin Ming for his name. This was similar to a human asking an ant for their name. Lin Ming couldn't help but keep his mind and heart vigilant about this change in events.

He took a deep breath, suppressing the turbulent thoughts in his heart and calmly saying, "My name is Lin Ming!"

Sheng Mei softly hummed. "Your soul is quite special; it is a bit like a special soul physique recorded in the Holy Scripture of my people. But what a pity, you are nothing but a human so your soul is destined to only be alike. If you were a spiritas then I might have accepted you as my disciple..."

As Sheng Mei spoke, she lightly smiled. This was a smile of pure appreciation. But as this smile fell into Lin Ming's eyes, his heart shook!

Special soul physique recorded in the Holy Scripture!?

Was it… the Magic Cube!?

Lin Ming remembered that the second time he had seen Empyrean Divine Mist, he had said that there was an ancient text which existed within the spiritas legends – the Spiritas Holy Scripture. Within the Spiritas Holy Scripture, the existence of the Magic Cube had been recorded – it was known as the Stone of Eternal Life.

When Sheng Mei had mentioned the Holy Scripture, it was 99% likely that it was the Spiritas Holy Scripture that Empyrean Divine Mist had mentioned. Was this so-called special soul physique spoken of within the Holy Scriptures also related to the Magic Cube?

In that moment, Lin Ming could feel a cold sweat dripping from his palms!

Luckily, even this terrifying woman in front of him didn't realize the existence of the Magic Cube in his inner world.

Perhaps because Lin Ming had possessed the Magic Cube for such a long time, his soul might have been subtly influenced by the Magic Cube. This made Sheng Mei mistake Lin Ming's soul for having some similarities to the special soul physique recorded in the Spiritas Holy Scripture.

This sort of soul was named the Eternal Soul. The rarity of such a thing couldn't be described with words!

Compared to that, Xiao Moxian's half God Beast bloodline was nothing at all. Although a half God Beast physique was rare, it wasn't strange for it to occur every billion years in a universe. But as for the Eternal Soul recorded in the Spiritas Holy Scripture, it hadn't appeared in the entire 33 Heavens for several great calamities in a row.

Thus, Sheng Mei only casually spoke. She would never believe that a human like Lin Ming would possess the Eternal Soul that was mentioned in the legends of the spiritas, something that had already vanished from existence 10 billion years ago.

However, after hearing Sheng Mei's words, Duke Fullmoon felt an intense surge of jealousy.

This was clearly the first time that Sheng Mei had seen Lin Ming, but she had actually said that she would accept Lin Ming as a disciple if he were a spiritas!

Duke Fullmoon knew that Sheng Mei was a person whose heart was higher than the heavens. In her entire life she had never received a disciple, much less a male disciple!

If Duke Fullmoon could become Sheng Mei's disciple, he would even be willing to sacrifice half his lifespan!

But after she appeared, she didn't even bother glancing at someone like Duke Fullmoon who was on 'her' side, but had instead spoken to an 'outsider' like Lin Ming. This caused Duke Fullmoon to feel somewhat ill.

Lin Ming was only a human, so why?

Lin Ming's divine runic arts were fierce but to someone on the level of Sheng Mei, what meaning did the divine runic arts have?

As Duke Fullmoon was depressed, Lin Ming stood rigidly on the ground. His inner world's fluctuations had been reduced to their lowest levels, and even as he maintained absolute vigilance he kept his appearance as calm as he could.

Then, Sheng Mei finally turned, about to leave.

Lin Ming's mind relaxed a little. To him, every second felt like a year. He was looking forwards to this terrifying woman disappearing as hastily as she came.

But then, Duke Fullmoon called out to Sheng Mei.

“Soul Empress!”

Duke Fullmoon summoned the courage to say. Lin Ming was nervous as he heard this. He really wanted to just kill this damned idiot and get him over with.

“What is it...”

Sheng Mei turned her head and glanced at Duke Fullmoon.

Seeing Sheng Mei’s cold eyes on him, Duke Fullmoon suddenly felt weak at the knees. He gulped and stuttered out, “T-those people over there, they...”

For a time, Duke Fullmoon was at a loss for words. There was no way he could ask Sheng Mei to help him kill Lin Ming, but he wasn’t willing to miss such an opportunity.

Sheng Mei faintly frowned. “You aren’t asking me to handle your grudges for you... are you?”

Sheng Mei could immediately see that Duke Fullmoon had a grudge with Lin Ming and the others.

“No... I wouldn’t dare!” Duke Fullmoon quickly denied. Just what status did he have? He was already thanking the heavens and earth that Sheng Mei had saved him. He and Sheng Mei weren’t even from the same influence, so what qualifications did he have to ask her to help him take revenge?

As for using the secrets on Lin Ming’s body to tempt Sheng Mei, Duke Fullmoon didn’t know whether these supposed secrets really existed or not.

He only thought that Lin Ming was far too young to have such extraordinary skill in divine runic arts. As for what was going on with Lin Ming, Duke Fullmoon couldn’t say it clearly himself.

To the influences within the Asura Road, the greatest value that Lin Ming possessed was to draw up divine runic symbols and create a massive amount of wealth. But, what lure did wealth have to someone like Sheng Mei, whose status was similar to a True Divinity level character?

It was likely there was nothing on Lin Ming's body that could tempt Sheng Mei.

As Duke Fullmoon was lost in thought, Sheng Mei had already floated away. Left behind, Duke Fullmoon watched Sheng Mei's parting back with an ugly complexion.

He looked at Lin Ming and Lin Ming looked at him.

Duke Fullmoon had three people on his side; Lin Ming had five.

As their eyes met in midair, sparks flashed between them, followed by surging killing intent!

They each wanted to kill the other!

At this time, Lin Ming was considering what his chances were of killing Duke Fullmoon in a situation where he couldn't sneak attack him. And, would Duke Fullmoon's other squad members catch up? And most importantly of all, Lin Ming didn't know about how Soul Empress Sheng Mei would take this. Was she planning on guaranteeing the lives of Divine Void Divine Kingdom's disciples in this smelting trial?

All of these doubts made it so that Lin Ming didn't attack.

As for Duke Fullmoon, he dreaded the many divine runic symbols Lin Ming had on him, as well as the several companions with him.

"You little bastard, consider yourself lucky!" Duke Fullmoon sneered. "You think you can do whatever you want just because of some divine runic symbols? You should remember to save them as much as you can and not use them all up, because if that happens I will kill you as easily as butchering a dog or a chicken!"

"Really, aren't you afraid that the wind will cut your tongue with your constant babbling? I'm confused, just which family was so lazy as to forget to tie up your chain. As a dog, you should have the awareness of a dog. Just who do you think you are? If it weren't for the Soul Empress appearing just now you would have already died." Xiao Moxian had never been someone who was willing to lose in a war of words. As Duke Fullmoon started cursing at Lin Ming, she immediately opposed him.

"Heh, you bitch, aren't you Lin Ming's woman? I will soon make you regret choosing this kind of man. At that time… you might even enjoy it."

Duke Fullmoon lecherously smiled before he turned and left.

The two other disciples of Divine Void Divine Kingdom hurriedly followed behind, keeping a close tab on their surroundings.

Seeing the three people about to vanish, Mo Brightmoon felt her sword blade. She frowned, "Are we going to let them leave like this?"

"Just this time." Lin Ming indifferently said. Duke Fullmoon was already on his kill list. It was just that there were too many variables involved so he hadn't attacked.

…………

After the brief battle just now, Lin Ming's squad continued forwards carefully.

If they could avoid the monsters on the second floor they would avoid them. They tried to keep the battles to a bare minimum.

Like this, they went deeper and deeper into the wilderness. And the deeper they went, the thicker the chaotic energy in the skies became.

In the endless distance, they could vaguely see the appearance of a massive metal door, like a mountain range that stretched to the ends of time.

Waves of profound and quiet runes scattered out from the metal door. They were incomparably vast and mysterious.

Seeing these metal doors that constantly emitted a golden light, Mo Brightmoon's eyes flashed, a strange color covering them.

"The Gate of Laws… according to the information I purchased before, this is the entrance to the third level. The Gate of Laws that leads to the third level is particularly special…"

"Oh? Special?" Lin Ming stopped and asked, startled.

"That's right. Starting from the Gate of Laws, the disparity between the different martial artists in the final trial will be pulled even further apart… the strong will be better, obtaining even higher points and better rewards. As for the weak, they will be directly eliminated."

Mo Brightmoon said, a restless anticipation in her eyes. With her own level of talent, what sort of scene would she see when passing through the Gate of Laws…?

Chapter 1677 – Difficulty and Completion Percentage

Chapter 1677 – Difficulty and Completion Percentage

…

…

…

As Lin Ming walked towards the Gate of Laws, increasingly powerful auras appeared one after another. The powerhouses that had completed the first level and were scattered over the world of the second level began coverging towards the Gate of Laws.

These people were all extraordinary disciples of their large influences. After passing through the fierce battles of the first and second floor, not too many of them perished. Only some extremely unlucky martial artists who had been surrounded by monsters had died.

"It's that fellow, the whatever Crown Prince from Divine Void Divine Kingdom is coming!"

Xiao Moxian suddenly commented as they neared the Gate of Laws. Lin Ming looked back to see several men and women wearing feather robes with star crowns on their heads. They were surrounding a young man wearing a dragon crown with his hair hanging loose around him. This young man stood atop the head of a silver python that was as large as a mountain. The silver python twisted as it moved forwards, leaving deep gullies in the earth.

This young man was dashing and high-spirited, showing disdain for all heroes.

He was the Divine Void Third Crown Prince!

As the Divine Void Third Crown Prince appeared, so did Duke Fullmoon.

At this time, Duke Fullmoon was flying high in the air as he followed behind the Third Crown Prince. There was a faint smile on his face as he looked towards the people up ahead with a commanding gaze.

The other disciples of Divine Void Divine Kingdom didn't dare to stand upon the head of this giant silver python. This silver python was the contract beast of the Third Crown Prince. It was an arrogant beast that didn't allow anyone else besides its master to ride it.

Although this silver python wasn't a God Beast, it had an ancient bloodline relationship with a God Beast. It was said that if this silver python was able to grow four feet and grow horns atop its head, it would evolve into a silver dragon. Of course, the road to that path was beset with difficulties and the chances of it happening were impossibly low.

And at this time, a phoenix-like cry spread through the air. Brilliant waves of flames rolled up in the skies as a massive phoenix-looking firebird appeared. Just by flying, this firebird filled the skies with raging flames, immediately causing the temperature of the surroundings to become boiling hot.

On the back of this firebird was a fat youth wearing a bright yellow five-clawed dragon robe. This fat youth was Bigflame, the direct disciple of Heaven Union Divine Kingdom's Divine Emperor.

The Divine Void Third Crown Prince, Bigflame, the top disciples of the True Divinity influences had arrived.

"Bigflame, you arrived here quite fast. I thought perhaps your luck might be worse than I thought and that you could be surrounded by the monsters here. If that were to happen, your fat body would disappear..."

The Third Crown Prince taunted as he saw Bigflame show up.

“Haha! I must thank the Crown Prince for worrying over me. When I arrived I was indeed frightened miserable. Luckily, I managed to somehow stumble my way over here. How could I compare to someone as peerlessly wise and skilled as Crown Prince your highness? You could likely lay down on the floor and still arrive here. Ah, that’s right, at this Gate of Laws, does the peerlessly wise and skilled Crown Prince plan on challenging the heaven-step difficulty level?” Bigflame’s words were kind and subservient, but if one wasn’t an idiot they could clearly hear the taunting within them.

The Divine Void Crown Prince frowned as he heard these words.

He knew that the most important part of Bigflame’s words was at the end. Bigflame wanted him to challenge the heaven-step difficulty of the Gate of Laws!

The final trial’s Gate of Laws was extremely special. Before this, all trial challengers were placed together and could pass levels in groups. But at the Gate of Laws, every person would be separated and also had to choose their difficulty.

No matter what difficulty they chose, as long as they passed through the Gate of Laws they would reach the third level.

What was different was that the higher the difficulty one chose at the Gate of Laws, the better the rewards would be and the higher the completion percentage would be.

Of course, this also meant greater dangers!

Every difficulty was divided into four possibilities – perfect completion, partial completion, barely passing, and death.

If one perfectly completed their difficulty, their rewards would be higher and the final trial completion percentage would be higher!

At partial completion, rewards and completion percentage would be reduced.

As for barely passing, there wouldn't be any reward and the given completion percentage would also be the lowest. Still, they would be able to safely enter the third level.

As for death, there was no need to mention it. It was the worst result in the Gate of Laws, where one perished within!

The heaven-step difficulty was one of the highest levels of difficulty within the Gate of Laws.

Since ancient times, countless proud children of heaven had participated in the final trial. But, those that dared to choose the heaven-step difficulty were extremely rare!

As for those who had chosen it, there had never been anyone who had managed to perfectly complete it. Just partially completing it and surviving through the end was an extraordinary result!

Although the Divine Void Crown Prince was arrogant, he was well aware of his own abilities. He estimated that if he chose the heaven-step difficulty, the most he could do was just barely pass it or only complete a small percentage of it.

Although he would likely be able to reach the third level, the completion percentage would be too low and the rewards wouldn't be too great either. Moreover, he would also have to risk a high chance of dying there. Who would be willing to do something so stupid?

This Bigflame was clearly trying to stir him up with dark intentions in his mind. The Divine Void Crown Prince wasn't an idiot so why would he fall for such an obvious ploy?

Instead, he sneered and mockingly said, "I have self-awareness of my own abilities. I naturally do not have the skill to challenge the heaven-step difficulty, but I am more than capable of playing in the earth-step difficulty. If Brother Bigflame is so proud of your own skills, then you should certainly try the heaven-step difficulty yourself, haha!"

The Divine Void Crown Prince's voice was extremely loud. At this time, before the Gate of Laws, many disciples of large influences had gathered and they were all looking at him.

These people knew that Bigflame and the Third Crown Prince already had a gambling bet between themselves. Now, in front of the Gate of Laws, they were still stood in sharp opposition!

“Hehe, how interesting, two descendants from True Divinity level influences are trying to provoke each other into entering the heaven-step difficulty of the Gate of Laws.”

Not too far away, many people were watching the fun play.

“They’re just messing around and trying to one-up each other. They both know that trying to provoke the other party won’t have any effect. With their strength, they might be able to perfectly complete the earth-step difficulty, but as for the heaven-step difficulty, just forget about it!”

As these people were speaking, their discussions naturally fell into Lin Ming’s ears.

As he listened to these people speak and in addition to the explanation that Mo Brightmoon had given him, Lin Ming already had a rough understanding of the Gate of Laws.

When choosing a difficulty in the Gate of Laws, it was best to choose one that could be perfectly completed. In that way, one would have the greatest harvests. At the very worst, one had to choose a difficulty at which they could at least achieve 90% or above.

As Lin Ming was thinking this, a sudden sound of footsteps left him feeling icy cold!

In front of the Gate of Laws he could see a blue-clothed woman floating high in the air. Her body seemed to merge with her surroundings, making it difficult to notice her existence.

Lin Ming could confirm that just a moment ago, this blue-clothed woman hadn’t been there. But now, she had suddenly emerged in the skies above, as if she had teleported there.

“Soul Empress!”

As the blue-clothed woman appeared, the Divine Void Crown Prince quickly hurried forwards to greet her. In front of her, he didn't show any arrogance at all. He had already witnessed the attitude with which Soul Emperor Divine Void had treated her.

Sheng Mei faintly looked over at the Third Crown Prince and slightly bowed.

As for the previously flagrant Bigflame, he had no intention of moving forwards. Instead, he looked on from the distance, utterly silent.

Bigflame knew that in the 33 Heavens, the saints were at war with the spiritas! As a saint from the Asura Road, he wouldn't be sucked up into their affairs. Even so, it was likely that this Sheng Mei didn't have any good impressions of him at all. It was best to hide away as much as possible.

"Who is that blue-clothed woman? Why would the Third Crown Prince be so respectful to her?"

Because Sheng Mei kept a low profile, many martial artists didn't recognize her. As they saw that even the Third Crown Prince was bowing to her, they were stunned.

"Don't you know who she is? Haven't you heard that several years ago in the Divine Void Divine Kingdom, there was a grown Ice Phoenix that descended upon their land, even forcing Soul Emperor Divine Void out of his seclusion? And that woman is the person who arrived on that Ice Phoenix! She is the one who holds the record for the highest completion percentage, 83%! I heard that for these last several years she has been staying at Divine Void Divine Kingdom and her status is on par with that of Soul Emperor Divine Void!"

"What!? This... the record of the highest completion percentage? Isn't she the one that already obtained a completion rate of 83%? Why would she come to the Asura Road's final trial again? Isn't that just a waste of qualifications?"

Many people asked, puzzled. The Asura Road was simply far too large. Even if Sheng Mei had caused a giant stir in Divine Void Divine Kingdom, many people still hadn't heard of her.

“Hehe, it’s not as simple as you think!” The one who spoke before mysteriously said. He began to whisper in a cryptic tone, “If she came again, then she naturally believes 83% is not her limit! This mysterious spiritas woman has an extremely unique cultivation method, one that makes her talent grow stronger and stronger. She has already surpassed all common logic!”

“What!?” Many martial artists looked at each other in fear. 83% wasn’t her limit?

Then what degree would she reach?

As for a cultivation method that constantly increased one’s talent, they had never heard of that before.

“This kind of cultivation method exists?”

“I’ve only heard rumors about it. Moreover, this blue-clothed woman’s cultivation is far too confusing. Some people say she is an early Empyrean and some people say she is an ordinary World King; it's as if her cultivation is always changing. But, one point is for certain is that whether she is an Empyrean or World King, she can easily pinch us to death without any effort at all. Although we are standing here with her, the truth is that we are on completely different levels. In her eyes, we are nothing more than ants!”

The martial artist who spoke deeply sighed. Everyone here was a proud child of the heavens. In their own large sects and families, they were heroic figures that stood at the peak of their generation. But here, they were actually considered to be no more than ants. No matter what, this left them feeling uncomfortable.

However, they had to acknowledge the truth. This spiritas woman stood on par with Soul Emperor Divine Void, with no inferiority or superiority between them. And, Soul Emperor Divine Void was a True Divinity supreme elder. As for the rest of them, they already considered it the highest honor to have an Empyrean praise them a few times. The disparity between them could be imagined!

As all of this talk fell into Lin Ming's ears, he lost himself in thought for a moment. He had some faint ideas about this spiritas woman.

In the past, when he first entered the Asura Road, he had heard Soulwhite mention that in the last 100 million years, there had been two people who had obtained an 80% completion rate and above – the Good Fortune Saint Son and a mysterious spiritas woman.

Lin Ming thought that the Good Fortune Saint Son and the mysterious spiritas woman were the greatest geniuses of their race's youths.

But now, it seemed that he had misunderstood everything. This mysterious spiritas woman was not some junior, but a high level figure of the soul race!

Chapter 1678 – The Gate of Laws Opens

Chapter 1678 – The Gate of Laws Opens

…

…

…

"The spiritas' Soul Empress… if she comes from the 33 Heavens then she would definitely know about the war between the saints and the spiritas…"

Lin Ming was worried about the war between the saints and the spiritas in the 33 Heavens; this was an event greatly interlinked with humanity's great calamity.

The enemy of an enemy is a friend. From this perspective, the spiritas had no conflicts of interest with humanity.

It was only that the spiritas of the 33 Heavens were far too mysterious. It seemed that because there was still a completely intact space barrier between the Divine Realm and the universes of the spiritas, Lin Ming's knowledge of them was limited.

As all these thoughts flashed through Lin Ming's mind, at this time, a supple voice sounded out. "Sir Lin, it's been a while since we've seen each other…"

This was a familiar voice. Lin Ming turned, startled, and saw that just a few hundred feet away, there was a woman wearing a slim and tight-fitting dress.

This woman was calm and composed and her figure was curvy beyond belief. She had an extremely elegant style, and when combined with her dress, she seemed like a classical beauty.

This woman was Suya!

Her current style was completely different from how it was 20 years ago.

At that time, Suya had exuded sexual appear. Every heave of her milky white breasts within her plunging necklines made her seem like some sort of intoxicating succubus that had arrived in the mortal plane.

But the current Suya wore a simple light layer of practical clothing. She seemed elegant and fresh, just like the young daughter of a noble family.

Xiao Moxian's jaw dropped; it was like she hadn't recognized Suya at all.

"Little sister Xian'er, you remain beautiful as always." Suya smiled. For a time, the air seemed to brighten and fill with a rose haze.

"Big sister Suya is also as beautiful as I remember." Xiao Moxian sweetly said, her little canines flashing. After their last parting, she and Suya had inexplicably improved their relationship. Now that Xiao Moxian saw Suya today, she couldn't help but feel a sincere liking towards this woman.

Such a noble and dignified young woman would be appreciated by any man or woman that saw them.

"It's been a while since we've seen each other. I didn't think we would meet in the final trial..." Lin Ming didn't know what he felt as he saw this current Suya. He gestured towards Mo Brightmoon and the others, saying, "Miss Suya, these are my companions. We are participating in the final trial together..."

As Lin Ming introduced his team, just as he was about to say something, the entire Gate of Laws began to emit a blinding light!

Everyone was shocked and they all turned towards it. The unimaginably large Gate of Laws began to rumble open and even the earth shivered as it did so. A horrifying aura poured out over everyone like an unending waterfall.

Everyone that faced the Gate of Laws felt an enormous pressure. This was a triple aspect pressure, one that simultaneously pressed down on their soul, body, and inner world. Even if these people were all chosen prides of heaven, they still found it hard to withstand!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Like a million thunderclaps sounding off at once, the two giant doors that blocked off the skies began to slowly pull open!

The Gate of Laws was opening!

The moment that the Gate of Laws began to open, an ancient and vigorous atmosphere that contained the power of the Great Dao surged outwards. All of the martial artists outside were soaked in the power of the Great Dao. For a time, everyone was shocked. It was like they were enlightened, their mind and soul filled with infinite inspirations!

Even Soul Empress Sheng Mei who had already been baptized by this aura of the Great Dao felt inspirations rise in her mind, as if she were about to perceive more of the Laws.

“No wonder it’s called the Gate of Laws.”

Lin Ming was stunned upon feeling this aura. This sort of feeling was similar to a human martial artist that was crossing their Ninefall, the moment that the Law fragments would descend from the heavens and mark the martial artist’s flesh and bones with the Laws.

However, the Heavenly Dao contained within the Gate of Laws was far too profound. Moreover, in such a short period of time, the martial artists weren’t able to perceive too much; they hadn’t even been able to perceive a millionth of what washed over them.

Even Lin Ming was only able to verify the Asura Sutra within the aura of the Great Dao. Unfortunately, the aura of the Great Dao disappeared before he could make a breakthrough…

“What a pity…”

Lin Ming shook his head. It would be great if he could comprehend a bit more.

The other martial artists all opened their eyes. The things they comprehended were naturally far inferior to what Lin Ming had comprehended. The Laws within the Gate of Laws contained all phenomena to exist in the heavens and earth. Not only was there the Asura Heavenly Dao but also the incomparably complex 33 Heavenly Dao Laws.

No matter what race one was from or what cultivation method they studied, everyone would receive some benefits from the aura of the Great Dao in front of the Gate of Laws.

At this time, the Gate of Laws had already opened. Everyone looked towards the Gate of Laws to see that within the gate was an endless starry sky. And high within this starry world were four space-time gates standing side by side.

These space-time gates all resembled a circular portal. Endless origin energy gathered around them, slowly spinning, make them seem like mysterious black holes.

There were tremendous differences amongst the four space-time gates. From left to right, the space-time gates became increasingly small. The leftmost gate was several hundred miles wide, resembling a star. It was dark gray. As for the rightmost gate, it was only 10 miles wide and a deep blood red in color. This swirling dark red portal made one feel fearful and apprehensive as an inexplicable dread rose within them.

“This gate…”

Lin Ming looked towards the smallest space-time gate. He vaguely sensed that the smaller a space-time gate was, the more terrifying the aura it emitted!

The martial artists peacefully stood in front of these four massive space-time gates. They were about to make a decision that would affect their future potential and even their entire lives!

“The smaller the space-time gate, the more difficult it is!”

Many people who understood the situation in the final trial said.

“Is it? No wonder the rightmost gate has such a terrifying aura exuding from it. It’s like there is some dreadful ancient God Beast hiding within it. Is this the heaven-step difficulty that the Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame were speaking of?”

Many people had heard the Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame heatedly exchanging words with each other just now. The Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame both didn’t dare to choose the heaven-step difficulty. This was something they wouldn’t dare to touch, and even the earth-step difficulty would be somewhat difficult for them.

“No…”

At this time, Bigflame spoke up. He shot a glance at Soul Empress Sheng Mei and began to slowly say, “The heaven-step difficulty is the second space-time gate from the right. The second from the left is the earth-step difficulty. As for the first one on the left, the largest space-time gate, that is the easiest mortal-step difficulty…”

Bigflame had acquired a tremendous amount of detailed information on the final trial. Before coming here, he had thoroughly researched these materials and knew as much as anyone else did about these four portals within the Gate of Laws.

“What, isn’t the heaven-step difficulty the hardest one? The rightmost blood red space-time gate…”

Many people were shocked as they heard this. Their eyes suddenly moved towards the space-time gate on the rightmost side, the one that was also the smallest. As everyone stared at this gate, they felt a sense of dread swell up within their bodies, as if their very souls would be sucked inside. It was hard to look towards this gate for an extended period of time.

“That space-time gate is the Asura difficulty…”

Bigflame shook his head. Although the heaven-step difficulty was hard, there had always been peerless existences since ancient times who had dared to challenge it. For instance, if one wished to obtain a final 80% completion rate or above, they had to choose the heaven-step difficulty gate.

But the Asura difficulty was a true life-forbidden zone. In the Asura Road, anything that could be described with the word ‘Asura’ was incredibly horrifying!

“Asura difficulty…”

Many young elites gulped, their mouths drying up. They didn’t know just what to say.

Many people quietly looked over to Soul Empress Sheng Mei. They were all wondering – did Sheng Mei have the smallest chance of challenging the Asura difficulty?

“Don’t worry about others. The rest of you should quickly choose the difficulty you want and stand in front of the corresponding space-time gate. In a little bit, the space-time gate will send out a space vortex that will swallow you in. At that time, every person will enter their own independent trial. Whether or not you can pass will all depend on yourselves. Don’t expect anyone else to come to your aid!”

Bigflame stepped on the feet of a few junior-apprentice brothers who were lost in a daze. As he sternly spoke to them he glanced over at the Divine Void Crown Prince.

At this time, the Divine Void Crown Prince was already standing in front of the second space-time gate from the left – that was the earth-step difficulty.

Bigflame sneered and slowly waddled his way over.

A good number of people chose the earth-step difficulty gate along with the Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame.

Fanny Fafa slapped his hands together and said to Lin Ming, “Good brother Lin, I will go first. I feel that this earth-step difficulty is just around the level that I can handle. Would you join me? Or perhaps…”

As Fanny Fafa spoke, he looked towards the heaven-step difficulty gate. There was not a single person standing in front of it. In Fanny Fafa’s opinion, Lin Ming’s talent was beyond compare. If he chose the heaven-step difficulty, although there might be some difficulties, it was a challenge he could more than handle.

It had to be known that one didn’t need to perfectly complete the trial of the Gate of Laws. As long as one could complete a portion of it, they could safely pass.

Fanny Fafa had selected the earth-step difficulty space-time gate and he wasn’t planning on perfectly completing it. He was well aware of his own talent and knew that he was a bit lacking when compared to the Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame.

Lin Ming only smiled, no responding.

Fanny Fafa recognized that Lin Ming hadn’t finished deciding which difficulty he wanted. He said, “Alright, then I shall go first.”

Fanny Fafa nodded at Lin Ming and then stood before the earth-step gate.

Mo Brightmoon and Thousand Slaughter glanced at each other. After speaking a few words with Lin Ming, they also joined Fanny Fafa.

They didn’t possess Fanny Fafa’s pure yin body and in terms of talent, they were slightly lower. But, the two of them weren’t willing to choose the lowest level mortal-step space-time gate.

"Sir Lin, the benefits will be greatest if you choose the difficulty that you can perfectly complete. Try not to push yourself too far." Suya said to Lin Ming before she left.

The truth was that Suya had never seen Lin Ming fight, but, her intuition told her that Lin Ming was different from ordinary divine runic masters; he shouldn't be weak.

"Mm, thank you..."

Lin Ming lightly smiled and watched as Suya stepped before the earth-step gate.

Then, more and more martial artists began to make their choice. In terms of proportion of people who chose, the mortal-step gate accounted for around 60% and the earth-step gate accounted for 40%.

The front of the heaven-step gate was completely empty.

At this time, only a few people had yet to make their choice. This included Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, as well as Soul Empress Sheng Mei.

Everyone's eyes turned to Soul Empress Sheng Mei. They were all waiting to see her choice.

Chapter 1679 – Lin Ming's Choice

Chapter 1679 – Lin Ming's Choice

…

…

…

Without a doubt, Sheng Mei was the most powerful person in this final trial. Everyone was curious as to what difficulty she would choose.

Sheng Mei's expression was indifferent. Her steps slowly moved forwards and her slim body fluttered like a blue flower petal in the wind.

The direction she chose was the second gate from the right, the heaven-step space-time gate!

"It's the heaven-step! Soul Empress Sheng Mei has chosen the heaven-step difficulty!" Many spiritas martial artists exclaimed, startled.

"Hey! To the Soul Empress, just what is the heaven-step gate? The last time the Soul Empress was in the final trial she also chose the heaven-step difficulty. If the Soul Empress chooses the heaven-step difficulty then it's likely she can already perfectly complete it."

To perfectly complete the heaven-step difficulty. To those listening, this was already a legend!

And at this time, nearly everyone had made their choice. The only ones missing were Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian.

Lin Ming speechlessly rubbed his temples, a bit exasperated.

His original plan was to have everyone enter their space-time gates and then he would choose. Like this, it wouldn't arouse anyone's interest no matter what he chose.

But, the space-time gates just happened to activate all at once, sucking everyone in. If so, then Lin Ming had no other options but to make his choice under the eyes of everyone.

Lin Ming looked at Xiao Moxian. Xiao Moxian said, "Big Brother Lin, I've chosen."

"Mm..."

Lin Ming nodded. The truth was that at this time, not many people were paying attention to Lin Ming; they were only looking at Soul Empress Sheng Mei, wanting to see what choice she would make. As for Lin Ming, not many people cared for him.

Of course, there were always at least some individuals keeping a sharp eye on Lin Ming. For instance, Duke Fullmoon.

Duke Fullmoon stood behind the Third Crown Prince, glaring at Lin Ming. With so many people here it was impossible for him to launch a sudden attack. He would have to wait until he reached the third level and then look for a chance to have some fun with Lin Ming.

However, Duke Fullmoon hadn't thought that even now, Lin Ming still wouldn't have made his choice. Instead, he stood before the four space-time gates, deep in thought.

He began to slowly understand the reason why Lin Ming still hadn't made his choice.

It must be because although Lin Ming had a high comprehensive combat efficiency, the reason for this was also because of his divine runic symbols. But in the Gate of Laws, these external objects were useless!

Thinking of this, Duke Fullmoon mockingly jeered.

"You little beast, are you scared? The Gate of Laws tests a martial artist's talent and external items cannot play any role! Don't think you can rely on your divine runic symbols; no matter how powerful they are they will still be nothing more than scraps of paper! I hope that you can emerge from the Gate of Laws alive, then I can personally kill you and take all of your treasures, hahaha!”

Duke Fullmoon recklessly laughed.

Lin Ming coldly looked at Duke Fullmoon, ignoring his provocation. However, Duke Fullmoon had managed to warn Lin Ming about something. That was that in the Gate of Laws, all external items were useless.

Thinking about it, this was also well within reason. If external items could be used then this wouldn’t be a true test of a martial artist’s talent.

Seeing the Gate of Laws slightly tremble, as if the space vortex was brewing, Lin Ming shook his head. “Forget it, it doesn’t matter if others think I’m an idiot…”

Lin Ming already expected that his choice would cause the many people here to think he was nothing but a brain-dead lunatic. And in truth, this was an inevitable matter…

Xiao Moxian stepped out before Lin Ming. Her step was light and sprightly, like a beautiful butterfly floating forwards. Although her step didn’t seem quick, she arrived in front of the space-time gate she chose in the blink of an eye.

Her choice was the heaven-step difficulty. She stood beside Soul Empress Sheng Mei.

For a time, even Sheng Mei looked at Xiao Moxian with surprise.

For such a young and delicate young girl to stand next to Sheng Mei, this sight was simply too dazzling.

The originally noisy crowd calmed down for some time. Everyone discovered that there was something strange about the atmosphere, and as they discovered the reason, they all looked towards Xiao Moxian.

As they looked at Xiao Moxian they were all dumbfounded. Everyone already had high expectations of the heaven-step difficulty; they looked at her with their eyes wide open.

Just what background did this young girl have that she would choose the heaven-step difficulty?

Suya also covered her mouth. For better or worse, she had known Xiao Moxian for a long time and now considered her similar to a little sister. Although she could feel that Xiao Moxian's talent wasn't ordinary, she hadn't thought that she would have the confidence and courage to choose the heaven-step difficulty!

And before everyone had time to respond, something even more ridiculous occurred!

They saw a black-clothed young man stroll past the heaven-step difficulty gate, towards the rightmost gate. That was the Asura difficulty space-time gate!

As for Duke Fullmoon, who had been watching Lin Ming from the start, his original mocking smile had completely frozen. He watched with utter disbelief as Lin Ming neared the Asura difficulty space-time gate, his mouth having dropped open, dumbfounded.

"What... what is he doing?" Duke Fullmoon muttered to himself, his eyes wide open. This couldn't even be called crazy!

Could it be that Lin Ming recognized he couldn't pass so he had sunken into despair and completely thrown everything to the wind?

No... even though Duke Fullmoon mocked Lin Ming, he also knew that Lin Ming's cultivation speed was quite quick. Even if Lin Ming's true combat strength was garbage, passing the lowest level mortal-step difficulty shouldn't be a problem.

Moreover, passing and perfectly completing were two entirely different concepts. If one wished to enter the third level, that wouldn't be difficult at all.

As Duke Fullmoon was lost in thought, Lin Ming had already stood in front of the Asura difficulty gate.

In front of that giant space-time gate, there was only Lin Ming standing there. It was simply far too eye-catching a sight.

All the martial artists watching felt their jaws drop as they looked at Lin Ming. In their eyes, Lin Ming had gone mad!

“Lin Ming… he…”

Even Suya, who held Lin Ming in high esteem, was shocked by this. As for Mo Brightmoon who had accompanied Lin Ming here, she also didn’t expect him to make such an exaggerated choice.

As for the others, they all looked at Lin Ming like he was particularly ‘special’. Did this person have some sort of mental issue? Where had this fool come from?

“He is probably… the Divine Runic Masters Guild’s Lin Ming…”

Out of the many young elites present, some of them had attended the Divine Rune City Auction that Lin Ming had participated in, thus they recognized him.

Within the inner Asura Road, Lin Ming could just barely pass as a well-known figure.

As soon as Lin Ming and the ‘Lin’ logo was mentioned, many people realized who he was. There were some people here who just happened to be using those ‘Lin’ logo divine runic symbols.

“Lin Ming, the creator of the ‘Lin’ logo? Isn’t he a divine runic master? Then why would he…”

No one could figure out what was happening.

A divine runic master attending the final trial wasn’t anything too strange. But, the key point here was that in the final trial, this Lin Ming had decided to choose the Asura difficulty that no one had chosen in hundreds of millions or even billions of years. This left everyone wracking their minds for just what was going on.

It had to be known that in the Gate of Laws, there was the persistent danger of death!

As everyone was speaking, Soul Empress Sheng Mei only quietly looked at Lin Ming. The discussions of these martial artists were also heard by Sheng Mei. From what she knew, this Lin Ming wasn’t an ordinary person.

However, even she couldn’t complete the Asura level difficulty. She simply didn’t believe that there was a junior who surpassed her in talent.

“Are you sure you know what concept the Asura level difficulty is?”

Sheng Mei parted her cherry red lips and asked Lin Ming. These could be called words of comfort. According to common logic, an unimportant figure like Lin Ming could make any choice he wanted to and Sheng Mei wouldn’t bat an eyelash. However, she felt that there was something special about Lin Ming, thus she made an exception to ask him. Of course, she was only asking him this once. If Lin Ming didn’t want to listen to her then she wouldn’t say anything else.

Facing the eyes of so many people as well as Soul Empress Sheng Mei’s question, Lin Ming was left speechless. He only wanted to complete the trial in a very low profile manner that didn’t draw any attention.

He replied, “I thank Soul Empress for the concern, but if no one has chosen the Asura difficulty in so many hundreds of millions of years, who is to say what the difficulty will be like? Moreover… no matter which gate it is, it seems that there are many degrees of completion… I don’t need to perfectly complete it, just barely passing it will be fine for me…”

In all fairness, Lin Ming couldn’t guarantee what results he would have once he entered the Asura difficulty gate.

He had two advantages he could rely on. The first was his combat strength that far surpassed others of his step, and the second was his understandings of the Asura Heavenly Dao.

In the past, the Good Fortune Saint Son had chosen the heaven-step difficulty and obtained a final completion rate of 81%.

Lin Ming believed that if he went up another level of difficulty, he should have some chance of completing it!

Taking a step backwards, even if the Asura difficulty was far too abnormally difficult, then he could definitely give up all thoughts of rewards and simply work to maintain his life.

With all of these factors combined, Lin Ming had thus chosen the Asura difficulty.

However, as Lin Ming's words fell upon Sheng Mei's ears, they sounded like the words of a proud and high-spirited youth. She simply shook her head, not trying to advise him anymore.

As for everyone else, their eyes on Lin Ming were as if they were looking at a fool.

Those that were able to participate in the final trial were all outstanding elites of their generation. However, an idiot had appeared out of nowhere. Since it wasn't their job to manage him, they might as well join in on the fun.

"You would rather die in the Gate of Laws?" Duke Fullmoon coldly sneered as he looked at Lin Ming and spoke in a mocking tone.

Lin Ming didn't bother with Duke Fullmoon. He simply sat cross-legged in the air and shut his eyes in meditation. At this time, Mo Brightmoon and Suya's worried sound transmissions echoed in his ears. Really, Lin Ming's choice had caused many people to worry about him.

Lin Ming felt a headache creeping up. Just as he was about to explain his choice, a loud rumbling came from the incomparably massive Gate of Laws.

As the Gate of Laws trembled, four space-time channels began to wildly form and revolve!

The energies that permeated the second floor and the aura of the Laws began to swirl together, sweeping up into a giant origin energy vortex!

In the vortex, everyone could feel a horrifying suction strength pull upon their bodies. In this vortex, even a World King powerhouse was nothing but a leaf in a storm, completely unable to control their body.

Everyone cried out in alarm. But in the next instant, they were all sucked into the space-time channels where they vanished from sight.

“What a terrifying strength. It’s like the momentum of the world, a force that cannot be disobeyed…”

As Lin Ming was swept up in the brutal energy vortex, he guarded his inner world and kept his mind pure and bright. He watched as the blood red space-time channel came increasingly close. Then, like a pebble in the sea, he submerged into the channel without raising a single ripple…

Chapter 1680 – Asura Difficulty

Chapter 1680 – Asura Difficulty

…

…

…

After having experienced an intense feeling of spatial warping, Lin Ming felt his body shake. After that, the deep blood red color that flooded his eyes disappeared, leaving him in a deep and quiet ancient land.

The place where Lin Ming stood was atop a timeworn cliff, with walls that stretched down to infinity. In front of Lin Ming was a narrow aerial bridge.

This aerial bridge was only 10 foot wide. Beneath the bridge was an impossibly distant valley that he couldn't see the bottom of. Looking down, one could sense the atmosphere of timeless years exuding from the valley, as if falling in there would be the same as falling into the eternal past.

Moreover, in front of Lin Ming, there were also hundreds of floating weapons.

There was a sword, spear, saber, dagger, hammer, chain, whip, shield, ruler, and so forth. There could be said to be every type of possible weapon available to him!

There were even different weapons of the same category. For instance, within spears there were also hard spears, flexible spears, lances, short spears, overlord spears, and so forth. Any weapon that could be thought of could be chosen.

Seeing these weapons, Lin Ming had a faint guess of what was happening. His mind touched upon his spatial ring and as he tried to search it he discovered that it was indeed blocked.

No external items could be used here.

One could only choose a weapon available within this trial and rush through the Gate of Laws depending on their own ability!

Lin Ming's eyes swept out and he chose a plain nine foot long spear from the weapons. As he shook it, a horrifying shaking force slammed up his arm, vibrating the air.

It was unknown what material this spear was made from, but the quality was wonderful to the point of leaving one flabbergasted. Lin Ming didn't doubt that the materials used in this spear were more than enough to craft an Empyrean spirit treasure.

But, this spear in Lin Ming's hand wasn't an Empyrean spirit treasure. In fact, it wasn't even a spirit artifact. This was only a simple and ordinary spear. No matter how perfectly flexible it was or how impeccably sharp it was, there was no array formation carved into the spear shaft. Thus, this spear wasn't able to increase a martial artist's strength; it was a mere weapon.

This was simply a waste of heaven's treasures.

But when Lin Ming took this spear in hand, he felt his fighting spirit be ignited by it. Before he entered the final trial, he had heard that what this final trial tested was a martial artist's comprehensive talent and not their absolute strength.

However, from the past until now, everything Lin Ming had encountered were indiscriminate dangers. For instance, those traps and monsters he encountered could be easily overcome by someone strong. Those weak would have already perished without even their bones left.

Now, in the Gate of Laws, this trial was undoubtedly a test of one's talent. From this point on, the disparity between the various trial challengers would be pulled open.

As Lin Ming stepped on the aerial bridge, he immediately felt a dreadful pressure crushing down on him.

This pressure was like there was a God Beast not too far away from Lin Ming, greedily eyeing him!

For those that were too weak, just this pressure would have made their minds shake and unable to display even 50% of their true strength. Like this, they would have already lost from the start.

Lin Ming took one step forwards at a time. No enemies appeared. Rather, the pressure on him became increasingly heavy.

Lin Ming continually adjusted his breath, keeping his mindset in a state of calm.

Walking by himself, above this unfathomably deep abyss, the horrifying aura from the abyss rolled up into the skies, causing Lin Ming's clothes to flap in the wind. After some time, Lin Ming turned around to see that he had actually walked a considerable distance away from where he began.

Looking at the distant scenery behind him, Lin Ming was stunned. It turned out that he hadn't been standing on a cliff. Rather, he had been standing on a sculpture that was unimaginably large!

This sculpture was that of a giant war god. From where Lin Ming was standing, he could only make out the mountain-like head of the sculpture. The rest of it was wrapped in dense fog, making it impossible to clearly see.

"Asura..."

Inexplicably, this word popped into Lin Ming's mind. Without knowing why, he felt that this sculpture was an Asura…

Every edge and turn of this incomparably massive statue represented the infinite true meaning and intense will of the Asura Road Master. There were countless mysteries contained within it.

The Great Dao was like a vast moat; only the brave would find victory!

Lin Ming's mind surged with lofty thoughts and heroic ambitions. In the past, the Asura Road Master had relied on his strength to create a great world that stood beside the 33 Heavens.

This sort of courage and daring even infected Lin Ming. He wanted to be the same as the Asura Road Master, creating his own world, establishing his own Laws, and paving his own road of martial arts.

One step at a time, Lin Ming firmly and decisively moved forwards.

Suddenly, the void in front of him began to shake like a rippling lake surface.

Hu - !

A fierce roar seemed to arrive from the endless flow of time, bringing with it an endless killing intent, raging and wild.

A massive snow-white God Beast phantom appeared in front of Lin Ming. Its two pupils contained an endless killing intent. This was a White Tiger God Beast!

Soon after, the heavens and earth moved again. Space was torn apart and an Azure Dragon flew forth, its body as long and winding as a mountain range as it clawed at the skies. Its entire body was covered with a vibrant blue spiritual strength that exuded life force.

Following that, a Vermillion Bird God Beast appeared, one that blocked out the skies. Deep beneath the ground, a mysterious creature began to move. This was a Black Turtle God Beast!

God Beast Grand Array!

No wonder there was such a tremendous pressure here. This strange land was suppressed in all directions by a God Beast Grand Array.

Ancient God Beasts originally evolved from the Laws of the heavens and earth. Each type of God Beast represented the purest manifestation of the Great Dao and each one grasped the strongest source strength of their attribute.

Now that the God Beast Grand Array appeared, Lin Ming felt like a heavy mountain was pressing down on his heart. Goosebumps rose all over his body.

If he wanted to walk to the end of this bridge, he naturally needed to pass this God Beast Grand Array that suppressed this land.

Lin Ming's blood began to boil as he thought of this. All of the fighting strength in his body was stimulated, becoming increasingly wild.

He stepped forwards, one step at a time. The terrifying pressure fell onto him like a waterfall, pressing down so hard that it made his bones emit loud explosive sounds and caused his entire body to shake!

This was a horrifying array formation. Lin Ming estimated that the strength of this array formation was set by the skeletal age of a trial challenger. Only then would it be accurate in testing a person's talent.

Lin Ming thought that his own talent was already near the peak of all races in the 33 Heavens. Even so, facing this God Beast Grand Array, Lin Ming was hard-pressed to continue.

From this alone it could be seen how arduous the Asura level difficulty was!

Heretical God Force!

Lin Ming's thoughts focused and the phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared behind him. Above the crown of the Heretical God Tree, the power of thunder and fire wildly crackled and blazed!

With the support of the Heretical God Force, Lin Ming continued forwards. But, the pressure still became increasingly horrifying.

Even though he opened the Heretical God Force, Lin Ming was finding it hard to withstand this suppressive force.

Purple Temple Dao Palace!

Lin Ming's entire body crackled. His flesh and bones released deafening explosive sounds as starlight from the nine heavens appeared out of nowhere. This starlight fell onto Lin Ming's body like a river of stars, soaking him in power, causing his strength to rapidly rise!

Underneath the support of this titanic strength, Lin Ming took step after step into the God Beast Grand Array.

His body emitted explosive sounds again and again. His clothes disintegrated and his blood vessels popped up on his skin!

Then, with a roar that shook the heavens and cracked the earth, the White Tiger came hurtling towards Lin Ming.

This phantom carried with it a roiling blood-slaughtering intent as it hurtled towards Lin Ming.

On the aerial bridge, Lin Ming was shocked. He quickly retreated, but as he was doing so he was bombarded by waves of terrifying energy. In that moment, monstrous waves tumbled in Lin Ming's mind. He watched as his surroundings disappeared and he suddenly reappeared in a primal execution ground.

Giant demon carcasses dotted this black and blighted land.

This air was filled with the scent of death and decay.

The massive White Tiger God Beast stood between the heavens and earth, its blood red pupils fixed on Lin Ming.

Its killing intent substantialized, so thick and sharp it cut through air.

....Kill...Kill...KILL...!

A powerful killing intent lingered in the air, screaming out at the mind.

Even Lin Ming was infected by this killing intent.

"Kill! Kill! Kill your way to your bloody road, kill your way to your eternal Great Dao!" At this time, the strong killing intent surged into Lin Ming's heart, immersing his entire body in the will to kill...

For a time, Lin Ming slowly lost control of his body. He gradually moved towards the side of the aerial bridge, about to step off it.

But just as he was about to step off into the endless abyss, faintly, endless starlight began to flow out from within Lin Ming's bones, filling him with life vitality, infinitely varied and subtle.

From within this inexhaustible life force, all sorts of strange mysterious runes began to float up.

These runes were the fragments of the heavenly retribution dao diagram that Lin Ming had shattered when he broke into the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace. This starlight was filled with life and the Great Dao, and had fused into his muscles and bones.

In this crucial moment, these runes had responded.

Some runes flashed like wisps of lightning. They slashed out, slamming into Lin Ming's mind.

Lin Ming felt his mind shake. Suddenly, he was panic-stricken as he realized he was being surrounded by an endless killing intent.

This White Tiger God Beast's attack was not just physical but also misled the divine soul. A White Tiger was the essence of Buddha-slaughtering killing intent. If someone were to be fully infected by this Buddha-slaughtering killing intent, then they would lose their will and become nothing but a mindless slaughter puppet...

Lin Ming woke up. This chaotic flow of energy was the White Tiger God Beast's Buddha-slaughtering road. If it weren't for the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace within his body striking out with lightning and awakening him from his stupor, he would have been in a dangerous situation.

"This place is indeed a land filled with cunning dangers!"

Lin Ming focused his mind. He could faintly feel that after stepping into the Gate of Laws, battles would not just be slaughter battles fought with true essence. Moreover, this would be a battle of wills and Laws and many other aspects. Here, one could obtain great harvests, but at the same time, the dangers were equally risky.

With a thought, he shook the long spear in his hand.

"Celestial Tyrant Manual – Hundred Layered Waves!"

Each strike of the long spear tore through the void, carrying with it brutal strength of 10 billion jins. Even a planet would be crushed by this attack.

This massive strength rushed out like waves, layering upon each other and rapidly growing.

Finally, this boundless force combined into a single point, condensing within this mysterious long spear.

As this spear thrust out one final time, it was with a force similar to a supernova, blinding to the eyes.

Rumble! Rumble!

Lin Ming's spear stabbed towards the giant White Tiger that lay across the dark lands.

This White Tiger phantom was in no way a true God Beast; it was only a wisp of aura from the God Beast Grand Array.

Ka –

In that moment, with the sound of crashing thunder, a massive wound was blown into the White Tiger. The shattered pieces of the White Tiger blew out; these were runes of the Great Dao marked with the power of 'killing intent'.

Within the formidable White Tiger God Beast phantom, a flaw had appeared!

Chapter 1681 – The Narrow Road

Chapter 1681 – The Narrow Road

…

…

…

After Lin Ming severely wounded the White Tiger phantom, a wisp of blood red aura from the Great Dao appeared in Lin Ming's sea of consciousness.

This aura slowly fused together with his flesh and blood, merging with his awareness.

"This is…" Lin Ming was startled. When he damaged the White Tiger phantom just now, a bit of the power and Laws contained within it had converged into Lin Ming's body, allowing him to become aware of many more things.

It seemed that even though this Gate of Laws was filled with death and slaughter, it also represented a lucky chance.

"In this place I might be able to temper my understandings of the Heavenly Dao Laws… the source strength of a God Beast's Heavenly Dao, that is a rare chance…"

Lin Ming thought to himself, his mind calming down. On the thin aerial bridge, the strong heavenly winds rocked against him, but his heart remained as steady as a mountain. Then, at this time, the giant Azure Dragon in front of Lin Ming roared towards him, its deep blue Azure Dragon aura hurtling into Lin Ming.

The moment that the Asura Dragon attacked, the surrounding scene turned into that of an endless sea. The Azure Dragon raged above it, all-powerful, an existence swollen with arrogance.

The more Lin Ming fought, the more his blood boiled over. He opened the two Dao Palaces within his body and wildly revolved the Heretical God Force. Underneath the support of his brutal strength, Lin Ming was like an ancient vicious beast as he crashed onto the back of the Azure Dragon!

Billions of jins of dreadful strength came pounding down. The Azure Dragon howled out in pain and misery as it was sent flying away. Lin Ming stepped forwards, chasing after it!

For the current Lin Ming, because he had opened two Dao Palaces, his body transformation technique had become his strongest attack method. On the other hand, his essence gathering system lagged behind.

Strike after strike, Lin Ming's spear potential was endless and majestic. It came crashing down like mountains, unstoppable.

Lin Ming rode upon the Azure Dragon, violently struggling with it in a wild barrage of attacks. However, it was only a God Beast phantom and was unable to withstand Lin Ming's onslaught.

For a time, blue scales shattered as blood rained down over the earth!

Lin Ming had slaughtered the Azure Dragon in a life or death struggle!

Thus, of the four God Beast phantoms, two had disappeared. The remaining shattered grand array was far less threatening to Lin Ming. Lin Ming became fiercer the more he fought, soon killing all of the God Beast phantoms!

After massacring all of the God Beasts, Lin Ming's entire body was bathed in blood. His arms and his body shivered. This was the side-effect of overdrawing his strength in physical combat, but also because of the bubbling excitement from the battle!

With a deep breath, Lin Ming slowly calmed down his heated blood and thoughts. At this time, on the aerial bridge the terrifying pressure was still as dreadful as before, without the slightest hint of diminishing. Rather, after Lin Ming broke through the God Beast Grand Array, this pressure became far more powerful!

Underneath this terrifying pressure, an ordinary martial artist would find it difficult to breathe, much less continue fighting.

“This pressure hasn’t decreased… it seems I have to adapt to the pressure in the Gate of Laws, it might follow me throughout this entire trial. If I cannot adapt to it then sooner or later I won’t be able to withstand it anymore and I’ll be defeated from this alone.”

As Lin Ming was thinking this, he sat down in meditation.

Just now, Lin Ming had torn apart the Four God Beast Grand Array, and the four God Beast phantoms had been overflowing with the aura of Laws. This was marvelously similar to the God Beast Array in Tragic Death Valley, even though the methods were different.

After breaking apart the array formation, the source Heavenly Dao Laws of these God Beasts had scattered into the air. This was the perfect time to meditate and perceive these God Beast Laws.

God Beasts were the favored children of the heavens. Runes of the Great Dao were inscribed into their flesh and bones, an incomparably mysterious miracle of nature.

Lin Ming began to adapt to the terrifying pressure on this aerial bridge even as he absorbed the power of the God Beast Laws!

Since the Gate of Laws had the word ‘Laws’ in its name, Lin Ming guessed that the ‘Laws’ themselves were part of the rewards from this trial!

When ordinary people entered the Gate of Laws, who wouldn’t do everything in their ability to pass it as quickly as possible while obtaining a perfect completion? There wasn’t anyone as insane as Lin Ming who would think of training atop this thin aerial bridge underneath the pall of such a terrifying pressure.

Of course, the reason Lin Ming dared to do this was because of his formidable strength as well as his comprehensions of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws.

This was also the origin of his confidence.

Lin Ming was a quiet old tree, motionlessly sitting on the aerial bridge. Strong heavenly winds blew around him, causing the bridge to gently tremble. Like this, he meditated for three days and three nights.

From start to end, the pressure on the aerial bridge hadn’t faded even the tiniest bit. But, Lin Ming adapted more and more to it. Beneath this pressure, Lin Ming’s muscles and bloodline were tempered, his entire body undergoing subtle and minute changes.

Where there was pressure, there would naturally be resistance. In these three days, all of Lin Ming’s cells swallowed energy to resist this heavy pressure. As every single cell within Lin Ming’s body was being tempered, he adapted more and more to the terrifying pressure in the Gate of Laws! Lin Ming’s essence, energy, and divine, all expanded.

Gradually, Lin Ming was shrouded in a fog of substantialized spiritual power.

Finally, his eyes flashed open, his pupils shining with purple lightning. His aura was like a sword that shot into the skies.

With a leap upwards, the world momentum that flooded the aerial bridge, covering this entire land in billowing waves of pressure, was broken through by Lin Ming like a fish swimming against a river. Lin Ming’s feet landed solidly on the aerial bridge as he hurtled forwards at a breakneck pace!

To run forwards under this terrifying pressure, the pressure that Lin Ming had to withstand could be imagined.

However, after opening two Dao Palaces Lin Ming had a body that could withstand all of this. Soon, the boundless aerial bridge beneath his feet disappeared and Lin Ming entered a new and strange world.

In front of him was a vast white light.

High in the skies, he could make out an impossibly large continent floating in space, one that exuded a primeval and vibrant aura.

Rumbling winds crashed about like peals of thunder, echoing out from all directions.

A boundless aura constantly poured down from this ancient floating continent.

Lin Ming was well aware that the world of the final trial was the carefully created masterpiece of the Asura Road Master. Every single inch of this world contained endless profound meanings.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming jumped straight into the skies like a rising meteor, pouncing onto the ancient continent.

Peng!

After he landed on the ancient continent that floated 100,000 feet in the air, Lin Ming looked around.

This place was not what he imagined. Atop this ancient continent, there were actually endless numbers of golden gates.

These golden gates were as large as mountains; it was difficult to see their edges. He could only sense an incomparably vigorous atmosphere exuding from them, like the titanic pressure of a spiritual god.

The aura from every golden gate was like a torrential tide, crashing into Lin Ming's heart and mind. This caused every nerve in his body to be alert for danger, his entire body shaking.

"Just what is in them?"

Lin Ming had trained in martial arts for many years and his heart and will were as solid as a rock. But in front of these giant gates, even he was panic-stricken. In ordinary times, only the aura emitted from an Empyrean level powerhouse would create such a pressure on him.

At this time, every golden gate emitted a brilliant golden light that covered Lin Ming.

Like being caught by countless hands, Lin Ming felt every wisp of golden light searching his entire body.

He was like a helpless little baby, completely exposed beneath this endless golden light.

Immediately, the light coming from the golden gates dimmed down, suddenly turning silver.

At the same time, there were also changes in the vividly dangerous auras exuding from the golden gates. The auras became much stranger, far more ghostly. Then, one of the golden gates opened and an icy cold aura filled the air.

Lin Ming knew that perhaps this gate was the entrance to the second part of this trial. As he remained vigilant of everything around him, he carefully stepped inside.

Hu - !

Snow and ice filled the world, sweeping in from all directions, carrying with it an icy coldness that seeped into the bones.

The skies were cloudy and gray, piling up in the heavens, seeming as if they were made from ashes.

Trees, rivers, and even the endless mountain ranges around him were covered in sheets of frozen snow and ice.

After Lin Ming broke into the second Dao Palace of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace – the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace, his mortal body had reached unprecedented levels of intensity. There were few humans in the last billion years that possessed bodies comparable to his own.

By raising his hand, he could shatter a moon.

And yet, even with such a powerful mortal body, he could feel an icy chill needling into his flesh, piercing into his blood vessels and bones, and seeping into his organs.

Suddenly, an ice mountain a mile away began to crack and collapse. An even more dreadful cold atmosphere gushed out from that shattering ice mountain.

An icy cold aura rushed towards Lin Ming, like an incoming ice-white tsunami on a frozen sea…

But Lin Ming didn’t sense this.

At this time, there had already been some people who had passed the Gate of Laws.

Those who passed through the Gate of Laws first were the trial challengers who had chosen the easiest difficulty.

Amongst them, many only used a little more than three days to walk to the end of the Gate of Laws and smoothly reach the third level…

Chapter 1682 – Reward

Chapter 1682 – Reward

…

…

…

“We passed! We’ve made it to the third level!”

The first batch of trial challengers had successfully passed the Gate of Laws and had reached the third level. They were immediately overjoyed.

“It’s not hard at all!”

“Haha, if I knew this earlier I would have chosen the earth-step difficulty, I estimate that I could have passed that one too!”

A young elite arrogantly proclaimed. The trial challengers that selected the easiest difficulty had mostly perfectly completed their trial. Before, because they had taken too many factors into consideration, they hadn’t dared to choose the harder difficulty. But now, because they had perfectly passed their trial they couldn’t help but develop ideas that they could have chosen a higher difficulty.

As they were all excitedly discussing, they also looked at the scenery of the third level. As they saw their surroundings, they looked at each other in confusion.

The final trial’s third floor was simply a vast white earth, seeming to stretch to infinity and beyond. It didn’t seem like there was anything special here nor were there any dangers.

But, floating in the skies above this white earth were innumerable immortal palaces!

These immortal palaces came in different sizes The smallest were the size of a mortal house, the medium ones were around the size of a royal palace, the larger ones were around the size of large mountains, and the biggest one was even the size of a small planet!

Moreover, the larger an immortal palace was, the more horrifying the aura it exuded. In particular, the immortal palace that was as large as a planet was engraved with countless runes of the Great Dao. Between these endless runes were also reliefs of God Beasts. There were winding Azure Dragons, Phoenixes in nirvana, Kirins running; their numbers and variety were endless.

These reliefs were also covered with runes, all of them giving off an incredibly shocking feeling. It was like there was some spiritual god living within this immortal palace!

From looks alone, one could guess that the largest immortal palace must have some great mystery within it!

“What place is this? Are these immortal palaces the test…?”

Many young elites asked in a daze as they saw the immortal palaces above them. They had an urge to fly up and investigate these immortal palaces.

“This isn’t a test, but the reward! Within every immortal palace is a lucky chance. In the third level of the final trial, there is no danger, only rewards!”

Someone amongst the young elites said. He had a detailed understanding of what generally occurred in the final trial.

The final trial didn’t have dangers on every level. Some levels were designated as reward zones and also to allow trial challengers a place to rest. The third level was such an example.

“Rewards!?”

Hearing this word, the eyes of many heroic young elites began to shine!

Rewards of the final trial, this was no trifling matter!

“Haha, we are the first group of people to pass the Gate of Laws. First come, first serve!”

“Haha, our gains are too great!”

These young elites glanced at each other and then flew upwards like a swarm of locusts. Their speed was quick as they flew towards the largest planet-sized immortal palace in the air.

Even an idiot would understand that the largest immortal palace with the most terrifying aura would also possess the best lucky chances!

Thinking of the legends of many lucky chances related to the final trial, all of their eyes turned red with greed. They rushed up as fast as they could, even ready to slaughter each other to get to their destination.

The martial artists in the front of the pack didn’t hesitate to use secret techniques to hasten their flight. As they saw the great and mysterious immortal palace became closer and closer, they nearly drooled!

However, just as they were about to rush into the immortal palace, all of them cried out in pain and misery. Their bodies had been severely wounded!

They had all crashed into a wall they couldn’t see!

“Ahhhhh!”

A pitiful scream echoed out in the air. The trial challengers had long gone crazy with greed and had displayed the limits of their speed. Now, before they had time to respond, they all smashed into this invisible barrier!

“Fuck! What happened!?”

Everyone either rubbed their heads or hugged their chests, their breaths ragged.

This immortal palace had been sealed away by an enchantment!

Some martial artists attacked the enchantment. Although they knew they couldn't break it, they still wanted to give vent to their rage.

However, they didn't expect that all their attacks would strike the enchantment and then bounce back, slamming into them instead. They all wailed as they were struck, vomiting out blood as they fell down from the skies, nearly killed by their own actions.

"Requirement to enter the immortal palace – 50%!"

In that moment, this thought swiftly passed into the minds of many people.

They were all stunned. What? There was a completion percentage requirement?

They also remembered that after they passed through the Gate of Laws, their completion percent had only been a bit more than 30%. But, this immortal palace required 50%!

They were a little less than half off!

The crowd of trial challengers glanced at each other in blank dismay. They immediately understood that they had no fate with the largest immortal palace.

Although they were depressed, they still rallied their hearts and continued to the next, slightly smaller immortal palace. They had already been taught a good lesson by that mountain-sized immortal palace. This time, they all flew outside the next smaller one and carefully studied the barrier.

After a brief investigation, they discovered that there was a completion requirement of 45%!

All of them were scared silly. They thought that the lucky chances of the third level were first come first serve, but now they discovered that there wasn't a free meal in this world.

In helpless desperation, they lowered their requests and went to an even smaller immortal palace, one of the ones the size of a mortal's royal palace. Although they already had a foreboding premonition in their heart, the result still left them feeling pained. The requirements for these palaces were still around 40%! They still couldn't enter!

All that was left over were the immortal palaces the size of little houses.

These smallest immortal palaces appeared like little thatched huts. Looking at them, one could feel an incomparably thin aura of Laws. Although they were clearly the worst immortal palaces available, they could only choose these.

After a brief investigation, the completion requirements for these small palaces were around 30%. Depending on the strength of their auras, the completion percentage required differed by 3-5%. For these people that had just passed through the Gate of Laws, it was just right.

After discovering this frustrating and despair-inducing reality, many people had faces like a frozen eggplant. All of their previously lofty ambitions and thoughts had wilted away to nothing.

They originally thought they had perfectly passed the Gate of Laws and thus were in good moods. But after arriving on the third level and choosing a reward, they realized they were nothing but garbage in the eyes of the Asura Road Master.

The 'immortal palaces' that looked like little thatched huts – could there be anything worse?

In terms of number alone, there were as many of these little tiny immortal palaces as there were grains of sand in a desert. It was without doubt that there would be nothing of high value found within these tiny immortal palaces. Compared to the largest immortal palace that was the size of a small planet, as well as being the only one there was, the disparity was far too great!

However, it was likely that no one would be able to enter the largest immortal palace. As for the slightly worse immortal palace that was the size of a mountain, maybe only an extraordinary genius like Soul Empress Sheng Mei would have the ability to enter...

Thinking of this, everyone felt just a little bit better.

Everyone began to choose immortal palaces that were within their reach and flew in. No matter who it was, after entering the third level, they would only have one chance to choose an immortal palace.

As the first batch of trial challengers to enter the third level began choosing their rewards, Lin Ming was still engaged in a bitter battle within the Gate of Laws.

In the endless frosty white air, there was an over 30 foot high giant whose entire body was covered in an armor of snow and ice. Rocks burst apart on the ground as it moved and the nails on its hands were each five feet long, looking like sharp swords, capable of slicing apart the toughest of defensives. At this time, this frost giant was slashing at Lin Ming.

These sword-like nails of snow and frost cut through the void, even freezing the air and creating visible channels of ice.

The icy chill was concentrated on the sharp edges as they chopped forwards.

Lin Ming's heart turned cold. Immediately, the long spear in his hands thrust out thousands of times.

Every spear thrust was enough to rip open the void and sweep up giant space storms. The might and momentum of this attack was endless.

At the same time, the power of the Heretical God Tree swelled forth, growing behind Lin Ming. Every leaf blazed with a wisp of seventh level Concept-fused heavenly tribulation fire.

Woosh woosh woosh - !

Over a dozen wisps of heavenly tribulation flames focused on the point of the long spear, causing the entire spear head to suddenly ignite with a raging flame.

Bang!

The spear collided with the freezing air and icy nail-swords of the giant.

A brutal shockwave swept out, causing ripples to rush out in all directions. Terrifying ravines were torn into the ground from the aftermath and shockwaves.

Lin Ming was forced several hard steps back. As for the frost giant, its entire body shook as it was continuously pushed backwards.

Every time the frost giant took a step back, it would leave a deep impression in the ground.

“How strong!” Lin Ming was shocked. This bodily strength of this frost giant was no less than his! This Asura level difficulty of the Gate of Laws was well worth its reputation. It was actually able to create such a freakish monster.

As this frost giant was forced back by Lin Ming, the ice armor on its body cracked in several places and the corners of its mouth bled a creamy white liquid.

As this liquid appeared, the air filled with a strange and wonderful fragrance.

“That seems to be… nine yin ice marrow?”

Chapter 1683 – Trial of Laws

Chapter 1683 – Trial of Laws

…

…

…

Lin Ming had slowly studied alchemy over a period of dozens of years, and had some knowledge of rare materials that came from spiritual lands. As he sniffed the air, he could smell that the liquid flowing out from the frost giant's lips was nine yin ice marrow, an extremely precious alchemy material. Was this frost giant formed from nine yin ice marrow?

Before Lin Ming could finish his thoughts, the frost giant rushed forwards like a wild beast. All over its ghostly skin, snow-white runes began to appear like drifting snowflakes falling atop its body.

Every rune shined, emitting bursts of the power of ice and snow that left the heart racing.

The frost giant punched out again and again at the earth. With every strike, the ice runes on its body would pierce through the ground like the roots of a tree, beginning to spread through the frozen earth, constantly expanding…

Just as Lin Ming realized what was happening, there were movements beneath his feet.

A massive ice spike broke through the ground and shot towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was startled. He flipped himself over, easily dodging this ice spike.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Numerous dense ice spikes shot out from the ground, shooting through the void and chasing him as if they were manipulated by countless hands. Every ice spike was covered with shining ice runes.

These ice spikes blocked all the surrounding space, giving Lin Ming no chance to evade!

Seeing so many ice spikes chasing after him, Lin Ming grit his teeth and the grandmist space erupted out from his body. The star-heavy grandmist energy overwhelmed all!

Ka ka ka!

A massive number of ice spikes exploded within the grandmist space. However, pieces of the broken ice spikes still thrust into Lin Ming's body! Blood rained into the air!

This battle was abnormally brutal!

As the frost giant saw that Lin Ming was wounded, an icy light shined in its eyes. It stepped forwards, wanting to tear Lin Ming to pieces.

But at this time its body stiffened. It looked down with incredulity towards its chest. At its chest, at the area where Lin Ming's last spear strike had created a crack in the armor, there was a massive wound. A black-clothed martial artist had sneak attacked it and thrust a spear through its chest!

Ka ka ka!

Countless shards of ice burst to pieces. The black-clothed martial artist's spear was unstoppable! Billions of jins of strength pushed forwards, tearing open that impossibly hard ice armor and piercing all the way through the back!

"Roarr!"

The frost giant pitifully cried out, its large body shaking in the air. The one who sneak attacked it was a black-clothed martial artist completely similar to Lin Ming in appearance; it was Lin Ming's avatar, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone!

Within the rules of this mystic realm, no external items could be used. But, this Essence Spirit Embryo Stone wasn't counted among these objects and was considered a part of Lin Ming's natural combat strength, allowing him to summon it at all. A moment before now, while Lin Ming's true self was attacking the frost giant, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was lying in wait, waiting to strike at the frost giant's weak point and bring it down in a single strike!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Chunks of ice fell to the earth. From within the disintegrating body of the frost giant, a rich aura of Ice Laws began to pour out.

However, Lin Ming didn't cultivate the Ice Laws. Even if he tried to perceive it, he still wouldn't obtain any good harvests.

Lin Ming wasn't interested in these Ice Laws. Rather, he looked at the pile of scattered ice chunks and reached out his hand. With a wave, he grasped at the void and grabbed onto a mass of thick milky white liquid, as if it were milk from 10,000 year stalactites. Then, without further ado, Lin Ming swallowed it all down!

This was the nine yin ice marrow that was contained within the frost giant. Swallowing it down like this could be called a waste of heaven's resources. If it were used in alchemy, the results would be much better.

But Lin Ming had no choice. He had to rapidly restore his strength and there was no time for him to rest. In this situation, he definitely wouldn't let go of this nine yin ice marrow.

At this time, with a loud rumbling sound, the silver door that Lin Ming just entered began to slowly dim down and fade away.

As Lin Ming blinked, he had once again returned to the ancient continent. In front of him, countless numbers of golden gates stood once more! In just several breaths of time, with a creaking sound, another gate turned silver and began to rumble open in front of him!

Past the entrance of this gate, another completely different world appeared.

Here, green trees towered to the skies, filled with vibrantly lush tones and vitality.

But, this vivid vitality also contained a wild killing intent.

“The second gate…”

Lin Ming took a deep breath. His body was still dripping blood. And because he just had just eaten the nine yin ice marrow, a terrifying cold energy was still recklessly surging through his body. He hadn’t had enough time to absorb it all.

And now, a new gate had opened before him. Lin Ming knew that he would have to face another battle!

Without a doubt, from all the golden gates atop this floating ancient continent, he would have to battle through every one that turned silver! And, he was afraid that he wouldn’t be given any time to rest at all. This would be an arduous and difficult protracted battle!

And within each gate, the Laws contained inside were different.

Whether it was the elemental Laws of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, thunder, or wind, or perhaps the Laws of Yin and Yang, the Laws of the divine soul, the Laws of body transformation, God Beasts, Nine Stars, divine runes, every Law possible was contained here. These were fully comprehensive Gates of Laws!

The Laws here were not just the Asura Laws, but all the Laws within the 33 Heavens.

Thus, this was why the gate leading from the second level to the third level was called the Gate of Laws!

To fight here was not just a test of a trial challenger, but also a lucky chance.

By passing through battles of these different Laws, one could temper their own cultivation and comprehensions. If an unrivalled genius were to fight here, they would become stronger with every successive battle!

This required that a trial challenger have formidable strength, rich combat experience, infinite endurance, and a monstrous comprehension of the Laws. Moreover, it required that a trial challenger have exceptional perception where they could constantly perceive and absorb what was happening during battle.

Only with all of this could one pass this test!

As Lin Ming fought to here, he could faintly feel the difficulty in this trial slowly increasing. If he couldn't adapt to this increasing difficulty then he would sooner or later be eliminated.

The world of Laws didn't give Lin Ming a chance to rest. A blue light shot out from the silver gate, wrapping him within and sucking him inside.

Past this gate was a vast primitive jungle. Any casual tree was as thick as dozens of people and a thousand of feet high!

A blue flood dragon circled above the crown of a 1000 foot high great tree, its greedy eyes locked onto Lin Ming!

Lin Ming wiped the blood from the corners of his mouth, a brilliant fighting intent flashing in his eyes.

"Roar!!"

The blue flood dragon roared and came hurtling towards Lin Ming!

Lin Ming's thoughts focused. Atop his head, the phantoms of nine celestial stars hung high in the skies. A grand and magnificent Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace floated within the sea of Lin Ming's inner world. In the midst of this Dao Palace, the power of heavenly retribution contained within the myriad beings in existence sparked to life. There was crackling thunder, blazing heavenly fire, and even the icy yin chill of the nether world…

“Momentum of the world, gather unto my body!”

Lin Ming growled. The Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace suddenly rose up in the space of Lin Ming’s inner world, spanning through the heavens and earth, emitting brilliant beams of radiance. For a time, with the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace as the medium, the power of the heavens and earth poured into Lin Ming’s mortal body!

The Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace was able to connect to the momentum of the world and wield the power of heavenly retribution. Within the small universe that was a person’s body, it was able to correspond with the true, boundless universe, communing with the heavens and earth, allowing a martial artist to become one with the world.

When this Dao Palace opened to the extreme and displayed its true potential, the heavens would rain blood, the earth would shatter, the void would tear apart, and even gods and ghosts would cry!

In that moment, Lin Ming felt his strength erupt to the limits. Starlight from the highest nine heavens gathered into Lin Ming’s inner world, carrying with it a heavy and titanic potential as it went slashing towards the blue flood dragon, suppressing it. The ultimate death energy contained within the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace, the symbol of heaven’s punishment, was like the ultimate poison as it invaded the life-filled aura of the blue flood dragon.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The blue flood dragon’s body slowed as it faced a grave situation. The vigorous life-force energy it erupted with had been stopped and suppressed. This blue flood dragon was like a sly fish, leaping up and around, searching for openings, wanting to swim against this river of energy and attack Lin Ming!

However, Lin Ming had passed through innumerable fights before. How could he give this blue flood dragon any chances to do that?

In a battle, if Lin Ming found the method to seize the flow of battle and defeat his enemy, he absolutely wouldn't let them go. With a loud shout, all of his true essence crazily revolved. His two hands flashed, forming countless seals that carried with them the aura of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, all of them hurtling towards the blue flood dragon.

Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

Whorl whorl whorl whorl –

A dense and thick death energy turned into a black vortex that went crashing into the blue flood dragon.

The blue flood dragon had already been unable to handle the power of heavenly retribution. In this situation, it had been smashed into by the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel.

The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel was refined with the spirits of evil ghosts and demon kings. It was a gathering of extreme yin energy and slaughter energy. It was a power that suppressed the blue flood dragon's wood-attribute life aura to the extreme.

Moreover, the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel originated from the Asura Sutra. It was one of Lin Ming's strongest attacks!

Immediately, beneath the dual barrage of the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace and the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, the blue flood dragon howled in pain again and again. Its radiant blue body dimmed as it wildly struggled!

Xiu!

Lin Ming took this chance to hurtle forwards along with the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone. In tandem, two spears thrust into the blue flood dragon!

Puff!

Spear light exploded. The blue flood dragon was nearly ripped in half by Lin Ming's attack. Its blood rained to the earth!

Within the hail of rain that covered the world, Lin Ming grabbed onto a bright blue flood dragon gallbladder. This fist-sized blue flood dragon gallbladder wildly beat like a living heart.

Without hesitation, Lin Ming swallowed this blue flood dragon gallbladder.

This battle was too brutal. He had to find some way to sustain himself through these battles, otherwise even with his endurance he still wouldn't be able to last much longer.

As the blue flood dragon gallbladder entered his stomach, it turned into a rich and pure wood-attribute origin energy that flooded his body, revitalizing him.

This blue flood dragon was not a true flood dragon, but one that was manifested from a wooden spirit root. This blue flood dragon gallbladder wasn't a true blue flood dragon gallbladder either, but the essence of the wooden spirit root.

Now, the essence of the wooden spirit root had been eaten up by Lin Ming.

As Lin Ming was engaged in a series of brutal battles, Xiao Moxian and Soul Empress Sheng Mei, who had both chosen the heaven-step difficulty, were also engaged in fierce combat.

The Gate of Laws contained every Law within the 33 Great Daos. Every Law condensed into an enemy and in order to pass through the trial, one had to strike down every opponent.

Xiao Moxian was younger than Lin Ming thus her difficulty was a bit lower. The enemies she faced were naturally much weaker than the ones Lin Ming faced.

But Sheng Mei was different. Although she had chosen a lower difficulty, because of her skeletal age, the enemies she had to face were dozens or hundreds of times stronger than Lin Ming's opponents!

In Sheng Mei’s trial, every time she fought, the void would shatter and the earth would shake!

Chapter 1684 – Black Asura

Chapter 1684 – Black Asura

…

…

…

The different difficulties of the Gate of Laws were tremendously different from each other. The easiest difficulty might take only several days to end, but the harder difficulties could take dozens of days.

Lin Ming had already undergone innumerable slaughters on countless battlefields atop this ancient continent!

His hair was scattered and his clothes were torn and ragged. There was an unknown number of wounds that covered his entire body.

Of these wounds, some were so deep they revealed white bone. Some cut through his meridians, and some had nearly torn apart his arms, shoulders, and even thighs!

If he hadn't cultivated the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, then these severe wounds alone would have caused Lin Ming to lose all his combat strength. He would have died countless times in this trial already.

Peng!

Lin Ming held a long spear in his hands and swept outwards. Electric light rose from all directions and flames filled the air. An over 200 foot giant was crushed by Lin Ming's attack!

Blood shot out. The giant's body wildly shook. As it crashed against the earth, it caused the ground to quake.

Dark energy without the slightest sheen began to flicker atop the surface of the giant's body, turning into all sorts of strange Law runes. In the next moment, the giant's corpse disappeared.

The Great Dao of the 33 Havens was infinite and all-encompassing. There were countless variations, and the Heavenly Dao Laws that this giant used were something that Lin Ming had never seen before!

Lin Ming had killed this giant, but he had also paid a steep price to do so. On his back, there were deep three foot long wounds that stretched from his shoulders to his thighs. Even his ribs were exposed to the air. This was damage left behind by an axe cutting down on Lin Ming's back!

This giant strength was over 10 billion jins and its axe could sunder the earth. Even though Lin Ming's mortal body intensity neared that of a God Beast, a direct strike like this was still more than enough to give him a severe wound!

Even so, Lin Ming relied on his stubborn will to continue onwards and strike down this black giant!

Fresh blood continuously flowed from his body. Lin Ming sunk energy into his dantian. On his back, his blood vessels surged as his meridians and flesh started to regenerate. However, compared to when he first entered this Gate of Laws, his regeneration speed was clearly far slower.

No matter how great Lin Ming's endurance was, he was nearing his limit after undergoing all these fights.

Moreover, in the previous battles, many of the enemies that Lin Ming struck down were formed from heavenly materials. Lin Ming swallowed these heavenly materials afterwards to restore his strength.

But every advantage came with disadvantages. Although Lin Ming was able to restore a great deal of his strength, the massive amount of energy had remained within Lin Ming's body as he was unable to refine it all in the little time he had. This also caused his blood vitality to surge chaotically, leaving him in a horrible condition.

But even though Lin Ming was dancing on the edge of his limits, he was still able to display a dreadful combat strength and cut down all the powerful enemies he encountered. Many times, when his back was pushed to a wall, he was able to erupt with an even greater strength, becoming stronger the more he fought!

These types of people were naturally born fighters; Lin Ming was the perfect example.

But even until now, the fights still hadn't ended nor was there any rest. The golden gates atop the ancient mainland encompassed the 33 Heavenly Daos, and each opponent was able to come up with new methods of attack one after another, all of their abilities dazzling and wonderful.

Although Lin Ming had cut down every enemy he encountered, he felt nothing but increasing awe in his heart.

To be able to establish such a Gate of Laws meant that the Asura Road Master had an unfathomably profound understanding into any Great Dao of the 33 Heavenly Daos.

This caused Lin Ming to inexplicably remember the words that had been left in the preface of the Asura Sutra.

'The 33 Heavens, the boundless Great Dao. My resolve is to seek the peak of all martial arts. I spent 3.3 billion years to travel through the 33 Heavens, cultivating 33 lives. One life one Empyrean, one life one Divinity. What I seek is the highest truth of the Heavenly Dao…'

Without a doubt, the Asura Road Master had cultivated the 33 Heavenly Daos and had synthesized them together. Only then was he able to form the Asura Heavenly Dao that existed independently and outside of the 33 Heavenly Daos!

In order to achieve all of this, the boundary required was hard to imagine. Just what sort of daring was that!

Lin Ming himself was only a mere hundred some years old. Compared to the Asura Road Master who had lived at least 3.3 billion years, the disparity was too great.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The golden gate entrance faded away once more; this represented the end of this world. Without caring for his wounds, Lin Ming's surroundings faded and he returned to the ancient continent.

However, this time, Lin Ming was startled. He discovered that almost all of the countless golden gates in front of him had disappeared. Now, in front of Lin Ming, there was only a single gate remaining!

This great gate was much heavier than the other golden gates. The surface of this gate was covered with an ancient relief, one that resembled a war god!

This gray war god rode a giant dragon, his entire body wrapped in chains. He held a dragon spear in his hand, seemingly all-powerful, unparalleled in the world.

Then, this final golden gate began to open! The boundless aura of the Great Dao gushed out from the entrance.

In that moment, Lin Ming's surroundings vanished once more and the ancient continent faded away. Lin Ming seemed to arrive in some vast and wild desolate land. At the end of this wasteland was a black demon carrying a dragon spear. He wore blood red armor and his armor was wrapped with heavy chains. His deep red hair was scattered in the wind and he rode a giant black dragon beneath him!

This character was the exact same as the one illustrated on the gate's relief!

Without knowing why, a single word appeared in Lin Ming's mind – Asura!

It seemed that this black war god in front of him was the so-called Asura!

Was this the final opponent of the trial of Laws?

Lin Ming grasped his long spear and stood straight. For a time, he felt an incomparably horrifying pressure!

It seemed that this Black Asura was far more terrifying than an Empyrean. Just standing there at the end of this vast wasteland, the aura alone left Lin Ming gasping for breath.

Against such an enemy, what hopes did he have of winning?

As Lin Ming held onto his spear, his back began to drip with sweat.

He didn't fear any challenge. But in the end, his cultivation was limited and he was not some invincible being. If he faced off against a slightly stronger opponent, he could rely on his will, skill, and endurance to win. But when facing an absolute powerhouse, Lin Ming was actually helpless.

He knew that if he were to fight against this Black Asura, it would be nothing but a futile struggle!

At this time, the Black Asura moved. He leapt down from that giant black dragon!

"Roar!"

The instant that the Black Asura landed on the ground, the black dragon behind him emitted an earth-shattering roar. The ground shivered and boulders cracked apart. A dreadful shockwave swept over Lin Ming, sending his hair flying backwards. By supporting himself with his spear, he managed to stand his ground. However, the blood vitality within his body was sent fiercely tumbling about as if he had been severely wounded!

Just a single roar from that black dragon had this much power behind it. This was not something that a mere God Beast phantom could accomplish. It might be that the black dragon at the end of this wasteland was a true God Beast!

"God Beast..."

Lin Ming's eyes were solemn. Compared to the roar of the black dragon when Lin Ming first entered the Eternal Demon Abyss's thousand mile forbidden zone, this roar far surpassed it!

Lin Ming lifted his spear and focused his mind. If this fight was inevitable then his only choice was to struggle as best as he could!

Crackle crackle crackle!

The Black Asura stepped forwards, one step at a time, his thick armor striking against itself. From behind the Black Asura, a black wheel condensed. Within this black wheel there were countless demonic phantoms, all of them still painfully struggling with each other in eternal torment.

Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

Lin Ming recognized that this black wheel was the Asura Sutra's Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

Lin Ming was only able to form and sustain the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel for a short period of time. But, this Black Asura was able to condense the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel behind himself, turning it into something that increased his strength.

From where Lin Ming stood to the ends of this wasteland was a distance of 100 miles. But, that Black Asura only took several steps to cross this 100 mile distance and stand in front of Lin Ming.

Lin Ming raised his vigilance to the limit. But at this time, the Black Asura opened his mouth to speak. Ever since Lin Ming entered this final trial, this was the first time he had heard an enemy here speak!

The Black Asura's voice was heavy and dark, like the sound of metal striking metal.

“Withstand my three moves then you shall pass the Gate of Laws!”

Three moves!

Lin Ming’s pupils shrank.

This wasn’t defeating the Black Asura, but withstanding three of his moves. If so, there were some hopes after all.

“Six hours! I will give you six hours to rest and restore your condition. Then, I will attack. After every move I shall allow you six more hours to rest. If you cannot meet my strike then you will die!

“If you do not have faith in yourself then you may give up midway. In fact, you may choose to give up now and you will pass the Gate of Laws all the same.”

As the Black Asura slowly spoke, Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred.

To give up now meant that he wouldn’t be able to perfectly complete the trial. Since Lin Ming chose the Asura level difficulty, he naturally had to try perfectly completing it.

Otherwise, he might as well have chosen the heaven-step difficulty.

Lin Ming didn’t say anything. Instead, as he held onto his spear, his eyes blazed with fighting spirit. His manner already spoke what choice he had made. He absolutely could not give up here.

“Good!” The Black Asura said with his ice cold voice, devoid of any feeling. “If you can withstand my three moves then I shall grant you something. It is also one of the most precious rewards within the entire Asura Road’s final trial!”

“One of the most precious rewards?”

Lin Ming’s mind began to race. He already knew that the different levels of difficulty of the Gate of Laws corresponded to different rewards.

And in terms of individual difficulties, perfectly completing, partially completing, and barely completing also gave different rewards.

For those like the Divine Void Third Crown Prince, they would choose the second difficulty in order to ensure they could perfectly complete it.

Since Lin Ming chose the unprecedented Asura difficulty, he was already anticipating what the rewards would be like.

And now, according to the Black Asura's words, this reward would be one of the most precious rewards in the entire final trial! This caused Lin Ming to look forwards to this even more! The Asura Road's final trial was left behind by the Asura Road Master, and the preciousness of the treasures that the Asura Road Master left behind could be imagined.

Compared to that, the sum of the countless heavenly materials that Lin Ming ate before was nothing at all.

Lin Ming didn't ask the Black Asura what the reward was. Instead, he stabbed his spear into the ground and immediately sat down in meditation.

The energies within Lin Ming were chaotic. Right now he had to sort out all of these energies. Only then could he restore himself to his peak condition and resist the Black Asura's attack!

One didn't need to be a genius to know that the Black Asura's attack would shake the heavens and earth. And of these three moves, it was likely that each would be stronger than the last!

Chapter 1685 – Three Moves

Chapter 1685 – Three Moves

…

…

…

Time was life. To Lin Ming, these six hours were incomparably precious.

With Lin Ming's current physical condition he was in an extremely bad situation. His body had innumerable wounds and he was severely exhausted of true essence and blood vitality!

Because of the continuous battles, Lin Ming hadn't had any time to recover at all. This had left him barely able to sustain himself through the fruits of his battle, supplementing his inner energy with those dozens of types of heavenly materials.

However, which one of these heavenly materials was easy to refine?

Lin Ming didn't have time to refine them within his body, leading to all sorts of different attributed energies building up within him. This caused all of the energy within his body to turn chaotic!

Now, within the next six short hours, Lin Ming had to refine all of these different types of energy, straighten out his meridians, and restore his blood vitality, all while he transferred energy to heal his wounds. This was a nearly impossible task!

If it were a normal martial artist, then let alone six hours, even three days and three nights wouldn't be enough time.

Even though Lin Ming had absorbed the blood of a True Dragon and True Phoenix, and even opened two Dao Palaces of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, wanting to accomplish all of this was extremely difficult.

In other words, when the Black Asura had given Lin Ming six hours to recover, he hadn't intended for Lin Ming to restore himself to his peak condition to begin with.

In that moment, Lin Ming took a deep breath and shut his eyes, completely entering into an ethereal trance-like state.

During his time at Mount Potala, Lin Ming had stepped into the Irreproachable Stupa and entered the extreme pure lands of bliss there. Underneath the shade of a Bodhi tree, he had imitated what the human Empyrean Emperor Shakya had done and meditated for 33 days. In this time, he completely focused the ethereal martial intent, Samsara martial intent, and Primordius martial intent together, mixing them into a singular unified martial intent.

Now, in this crucial moment that concerned Lin Ming's life or death, he displayed this fused martial intent to enter a completely focused and selfless state!

As Lin Ming sat down, an independent space seemed to form around him, isolating him from the vast wasteland.

Faintly, the phantom of an old tree seemed to appear behind Lin Ming.

This tree was similar to the Heretical God Tree. But, compared to the Heretical God Tree phantom that appeared behind Lin Ming, it was far older and more vigorous. Its bark was cracked open and only several leaves decorated its crown. But every leaf dripped verdant green, glistening with a gem-like brilliance as if it were carved from the most wonderful green jade.

As Lin Ming used his fused martial intent to recover, the phenomenon of a Bodhi Tree appeared behind him. For a time, petals fell around him and the sounds of spirit springs echoed in the air. It was like a separate utopia had developed around Lin Ming.

As the Black Asura saw this scene appear around Lin Ming, a flash of surprise appeared in his icy cold eyes. He had never imagined that Lin Ming, someone who was wrapped in endless infernal energy, someone who violently fought and was bathed in constant blood and slaughter, would have such a tranquil and harmonic martial intent.

Two hours, four hours…

Lin Ming sat within these lands of pure bliss, motionless, like he had cast away all desire and become a Buddha.

Whether it was the Samsara martial intent or ethereal martial intent, both were martial intents that leaned towards the tenants of Buddhism. They perfectly suited Lin Ming's cultivation within Mount Potala.

Finally, six hours passed. Before the Black Asura spoke a single word, Lin Ming's eyes flashed open.

Nearly all of the chaotic energies within Lin Ming's body had been cleanly refined. The wounds on his body were also restored. Although he wasn't at his peak state, it wasn't much different.

He stood up, faced the Black Asura, and took a deep breath as he shouted out, "Let's go!"

The Black Asura was different from all other enemies that Lin Ming had encountered in the final trial so far. This Black Asura had its own will and thoughts, and Lin Ming even suspected that he was related to the Asura Road Master. Perhaps he was an artifact spirit left behind by the Asura Road Master, or perhaps it was an incarnation produced from a tiny wisp of the Asura Road Master's consciousness.

Without a single word spoken, the Black Asura suddenly punched his fist towards Lin Ming!

This fist thrust out without any sign, nor did there seem to be any strength gathered unto it. It was only a simple punch. But as this Black Asura punched out, the void in front of him seemed to squeeze together due to the horrifying fist potential.

The power of countless Laws gathered from all directions, converging onto the Black Asura's fist. For a time the Black Asura's fist created its own unyielding momentum!

"This is my slaughter fist intent. If you can receive it then you'll have passed the first attack!"

The Black Asura's icy metallic voice echoed out. His first strike wasn't quick, but because of the horrifying fist potential behind it, Lin Ming was covered within it, his body stiffening and making it hard for him to move.

Suddenly, it seemed as if countless demons and ghosts appeared, ranting and raving in Lin Ming's ears. Lin Ming seemed to arrive on an Asura battlefield. There was an endless smell of blood and death. Corpses lay everywhere and rivers of blood flowed!

This Asura war god was originally a death god. This slaughter fist intent was formed from the endless infernal energy and countless lives that the Asura war god had slain!

If Lin Ming's mindset wasn't firm, he would drown in this slaughter fist intent. Even his consciousness would be melted away by this infernal energy and he would lose sense of his own existence.

In order to withstand the Black Asura's fist, not only would Lin Ming have to face the physical fist but also the tremendous slaughter intent behind it!

After understanding this, Lin Ming fiercely bit down on his tongue, using the pain to wash away any haziness in his mind. At the same time, the blue soul battle spirit flew out from within Lin Ming's spiritual sea!

Woo – Woo – Woo –

The battle spirit howled out, slashing apart the void.

The higher level a battle spirit was, the more difficult it was to enhance. Lin Ming's current battle spirit level was already at small success of the blue soul level. Moreover, there was grandmist energy condensed within it, making it that much stronger!

As the battle spirit appeared, the immense amount of evil spirits and demons contained within the fist intent were broken apart by the blue soul battle spirit. For a time, the mournful howls of ghosts filled the air!

The Black Asura's slaughter fist intent was horrifying. Even though he had only displayed a fraction of his true strength, this was enough to cause Lin Ming's battle spirit to be mired in air. It wasn't like the past, where the appearance of the battle spirit brought with it an unstoppable might!

Ca!

Cruel demons and evil spirits were torn apart by the blue soul battle spirit. At the same time, the light of Lin Ming's blue soul battle spirit also rapidly dimmed!

This sudden turn of events caused a light of astonishment to appear in the Black Asura's eyes. He never imagined that a human like Lin Ming would have such outstanding attainments in the aspect of battle spirits.

Meanwhile, the Black Asura's fist strength became even fiercer and crazier. It was like a rising tsunami, shattering the void!

An indescribably terrifying strength fell onto Lin Ming's body in torrents!

Because of the blue soul battle spirit's counterattack, there wasn't much slaughter intent left in the Black Asura's fist. However, just the striking power of this fist was more than horrifying!

This strike smashed into Lin Ming!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. The spear in his hands thrust outwards as he opened the Purple Temple Dao Palace and Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace together!

For a time, Lin Ming's bodily strength rose to dozens of billions of jins. With the support of the Celestial Tyrant Manual, his strength neared that of ten dragons!

His spear collided with the Black Asura's fist!

It was like a meteor crashing into the earth. The ground rose up, lifted and blown away by the terrifying shockwaves that reverberated outwards!

In this tyrannical storm, Lin Ming felt a terrifying energy run down the long spear and into his body. His arms shook and blood vessels cracked apart all over his arms. The energy broke into his body, and no matter how tough his body was, it still caused his blood to tumble and his organs to be injured!

Lin Ming was sent soaring backwards like a broken kite falling from the skies. In a single strike, he was forced back dozens of miles before he came to a skittering halt. He stabbed his spear into the wasteland to support himself. Both of his arms were slick with blood.

In just a breath of time, Lin Ming stood up once more. He looked at the Black Asura that stood still several dozen miles away!

A blazing fighting spirit burned ever bright in his eyes.

The Black Asura looked at Lin Ming with surprise. He hadn't thought that Lin Ming would still be able to stand after this strike.

This was because the blue soul battle spirit had broken through most of the slaughter fist intent, making it so that Lin Ming only had to withstand the physical attack of the fist itself. This caused the pressure of the attack to be reduced by a great deal. When added in with the fact that Lin Ming opened two Dao Palaces and his body was terrifyingly strong, it wasn't too difficult for him to withstand this strike!

“You have six hours to rest.”

The Black Asura expressionlessly said. Even though he was dozens of miles away, his voice was clear as it sounded out next to Lin Ming’s ears.

“No need! A quarter hour is enough!”

Lin Ming’s words were firm and filled with confidence. He gripped his spear and began moving towards the Black Asura.

“How amusing!”

The Black Asura’s hard lips moved, as if he were faintly smiling.

“Since you are so confident, then… very well! Prepare yourself to withstand my second attack!”

As he spoke, the dark gray Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel that slowly spun behind the Black Asura flew up and fell in between his hands.

His second strike was clearly the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel.

Lin Ming’s eyes were cold and resolute. Step by step, he walked towards the Black Asura. As he walked, the ruptured flesh and blood vessels on his arms began to wriggle. His muscles and blood vessels rapidly regenerated, becoming whole again. With the support of his dual dragon and phoenix bloodlines, Lin Ming possessed a terrifying resilience!

To call out a quarter hour was not because Lin Ming was arrogant or too full of himself, but because he wanted to rely on the fighting spirit that bubbled over in his body to contend with the Black Asura in a single go!

Lin Ming’s steps were slow and steady. In a quarter hour’s time, he had walked a mere several dozen miles!

At the time arrived, he just happened to reach the front of the Black Asura once more.

Then, the Black Asura attacked!

The spinning Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel released 10,000 beams of ghostly light. Howls filled the air, like the cries and screams of 10,000 ghosts and demons, alarming to the ears!

A dreadful demonic strength gushed out around the wheel, burning around it like brilliant black flames. These flames transformed into a monstrous being with three heads and six arms. Behind this Asura phantom, two massive wings spread forth and unfurled in the air. This Asura phantom's six arms each held different weapons, and in front of its body was also a Wheel of Samsara!

The Black Asura thrust out his palm. This Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, like the legendary Wheel of Samsara that ruled over all threads of fate, hurtled towards Lin Ming!

And at this time, the Heretical God Force within Lin Ming opened. His body erupted with energy to its limits as countless lines of the Asura Laws gathered in front of him, condensing into a black wheel.

This black wheel had infinite cruel demons condensed within it and it was also being held against the chest of a three-headed six-armed Asura war god. This wheel that Lin Ming summoned was exactly the same as the wheel that the Black Asura used – it was also the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

Seeing this, the Black Asura was startled. Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel against Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel! This trial challenger also cultivated the Asura Heavenly Dao!

Chapter 1686 – Profound Laws

Chapter 1686 – Profound Laws

…

…

…

“Interesting…”

The Black Asura lifted his hands and the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel came crashing down!

Lin Ming didn’t retreat at all. With the sound of a whirling vortex, a strange black spiritual strength shot out from his body, slowly floating atop the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel.

The black spiritual energy slowly transformed into a phantom.

Roiling with dread, a black robed man appeared within the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. He wore bronze armor and had the appearance of a demon. As he towered like a mountain, he emitted a black light, his pupils dark and gloomy.

This man was none other than Tian Mingzi!

In these past years, using the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, Lin Ming had swallowed the souls or residual wills of many powerhouses.

Among these were his mortal blood enemy Tian Mingzi, the residual will of the desolate mortals within the Forsaken Mortal Tomb, the aura of the God Beast phantoms he had destroyed, and their Laws.

These powerful phantoms created infinite changes within Lin Ming's Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. Even the space around him trembled.

As this terrifying aura of dead spirits rampaged in all directions, a brilliant light shined in the Black Asura's eyes. He didn't think this youth would have such a gentle and calm ethereal martial intent but also such a cruel and powerful Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

None of these powerful existences sealed within the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel were a trifling matter. The Black Asura found it hard to imagine just how Lin Ming had sealed them in.

And there was actually someone in front of him who dared to use the same skill! To the Black Asura, this was a provocation.

Within the Black Asura's heart, mighty waves began to form.

The obsidian pupils of the Black Asura began to swirl like a shadow vortex. All of the black lines of the Asura Heavenly Dao in the air were galvanized to an even greater degree of the power of the Asura Laws, all of it gathering in the black wheel.

The wheel expanded again and again and the Asura phantom also grew, as if it were about to soar into the heavens.

Where the black flames went, even space itself was melted away by the flickering dark power. The holes it formed in space dotted the sky like a honeycomb. The power of space poured out of these tears, rampaging in all directions.

The jet black flames blotted out the skies and came sweeping towards Lin Ming.

"This move, how will you meet it?" The Black Asura's voice was icy cold, carrying with it a momentum that seemed as if it could destroy all wills.

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. He could feel that the dark flames before him contained dense and innumerable Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, some of them containing the power of Laws that he had never comprehended before.

The gigantic and powerful pitch black flames seemed as if they could burn apart the universe.

But a heroic and daring spirit surged within Lin Ming's heart. Even if he were to be defeated, he still would not retreat!

"10,000 demons, life and death, I am the lord of demons!"

Lin Ming cried out in his heart. As he did, a blood red light flashed in his eyes. A great blood essence blood energy shot out from his skin, nose, and mouth, brilliantly shining as it flew into the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel.

In the middle of this Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, the Asura war god developed a faint similarity to Lin Ming.

The endless blood essence formed into a giant phantom of Lin Ming. This phantom grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear, its infernal energy soaring to the heavens. In the midst of these 10,000 demons, it was like the lord of demons had appeared. Its lofty and arrogant aura rose as it commanded all the demons and spirits like Tian Mingzi to meet the incoming enemy.

In that moment, the momentum of this attack was no less than the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel that the Black Asura had sent out.

In the void, one could only see two massive spinning wheels collide against each other, smashing against each other like two grinding pans.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Each time they collided and fought, the surrounding space would be torn apart. The phantoms within the black wheel violently battled and engulfed each other. A space storm formed and even they were sucked into the swirling black vortex where they disappeared without a trace.

Vast tracts of space were twisted apart. As some ruptured pieces of demonic energy fell to the ground, they were as heavy as mountains and created unfathomable deep craters.

Lin Ming had invested a tremendous amount of life essence into the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, so he could directly feel the spinning power of it.

Every time the wheels clashed, it was like a massive grinding pan was viciously crashing into his body. His previous injuries had yet to recover and blood shot out from his wounds. As this blood shot out from his body, they did so with such force and speed that they created holes in space.

An agonizing pain that rose from the depths of his soul occupied the entirety of Lin Ming's mind.

But at the same time, in this most direct collision, Lin Ming's life essence was able to touch against the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel that the Black Asura had formed.

"What is that?"

His life essence could clearly feel the unique exquisiteness of the Black Asura's Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel that the Black Asura formed was far more profound and large.

As for the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel that Lin Ming had formed, when compared to the Black Asura's, it was the same as comparing the home of an ordinary mortal to the majestic castle of a noble.

Although Lin Ming had the support of auras from all sorts of powerhouses, when his wheel faced the more perfect Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel from the Black Asura, it began to lose ground…

The reason for this gradual loss was not because of a difference in strength, but because of a difference in the subtle exquisiteness of the Laws!

Finally, with a loud rumbling sound, the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel that Lin Ming formed completely exploded.

At the same time, the Black Asura's Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel was also crushed into a ball of black energy. But as it stood, this remaining amount was still terrifying. It carried with it a dreadful annihilating momentum as it came hurtling towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's heart skipped a beat and all the hair on his body stood on end. This black energy was the essence of the Black Asura's Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. If he were to be struck by it, perhaps he would perish here!

After burning a great amount of his life essence and in addition worsen his wounds, Lin Ming was embattled from all sides. His current condition was miserable beyond compare, and his divine soul seemed like a candle flickering in the wind, almost unable to withstand the continued burden.

But he never thought of giving up. He would not die here!

"Purple Temple Dao Palace – open!"

Gritting his teeth, blood began flowing from Lin Ming's eyes.

Suddenly, a star seemed to rise up from Lin Ming's body, shining down on the world like a bright moon.

Within Lin Ming's body, the massive accumulation of vitality and life force was opened by the Purple Temple Dao Palace.

Within his body, the roar of a distant dragon could be heard.

Ancient and primal, its vivid aura seemed to travel through the river of time from the distant past until now. A giant Azure Dragon appeared, rushing out from Lin Ming's flesh and blood.

The Azure Dragon spanned the heavens and earth, emitting the majesty of a noble dragon. It violently clashed with the essence of the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel.

Within the void, the Azure Dragon was shattered like glass by the small black ball of energy.

As for that small black ball of energy, it was reduced to a tiny speck that struck Lin Ming.

This tiny speck rushed into Lin Ming's body.

Standing high in the air, Lin Ming's entire body shook. His blood red pupils turned incomparably strange and ghostly as a black vortex slowly swirled within them.

Puff, puff!

A deep and heavy force began to explode within him.

In the next moment, countless bones shattered in his body. Lin Ming vomited out a mouthful of blood and fell to the ground like a broken kite.

The Black Asura stepped through space and immediately appeared in the skies above Lin Ming's ruined body. Standing high, he indifferently looked down at Lin Ming.

"Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, hm... He is so young and yet he cultivated the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. In this era, this truly is a miracle..."

The Black Asura appeared lost in thought.

At this time, lying on the ground, Lin Ming felt endless streams of pain piercing into his brain, making him feel as if his head would explode.

But at the same time, an even greater surprise appeared within Lin Ming's heart.

He had obtained some new Asura Laws. They were like worms in his blood, floating in his marrow.

These things were comprehensions of the Black Asura's Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel after colliding with it and having a part of it smash into his body.

These were truly things comprehended with valor and blood.

As he comprehended these new things, his bones and muscles that were destroyed by the Asura Laws began to rapidly recover under Lin Ming's control.

His inner injuries, beneath the influence of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, began to rapidly swallow spiritual power from the surroundings to regenerate.

Broken bones began to mend together. Within, his marrow gurgled as fresh blood was produced. His pale complexion began to slowly restore with a rosy tint.

Within the Black Asura's pitch black pupils, he could clearly see every minute change occurring within Lin Ming's body.

So, when these new Asura Heavenly Dao Laws appeared, even the Black Asura revealed a different expression.

"Eh? Not only wasn't he killed by my Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, but he seemed to have grasped even more things about the Asura Heavenly Dao..."

A strange expression formed on the Black Asura's face.

Such a trial challenger was far too terrifying!

In that strike just now, the Black Asura estimated it would be extremely difficult for Lin Ming to withstand. After all, Lin Ming's understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao was far too limited and it was impossible to compare their two Myriad Demon Karmic Wheels.

But in the critical moment when Lin Ming faced the aftermath of the Black Asura's attack, he had opened the Nine Stars of the Dao palace, using his powerful mortal body and blood vitality to forcefully withstand the Black Asura's attack. Although Lin Ming's body had been ruined, he had still been able to preserve the source of his life.

The Black Asura hadn't thought that when Lin Ming was on the precipice of life and death, he would actually obtain new comprehensions into the Asura Heavenly Dao!

When facing this type of person, if one didn't kill them, they would only become increasingly strong. They were the type to make breakthroughs in battle. This was an extremely dreadful kind of enemy!

"You have six hours. Afterwards, you will receive my third move!"

As the Black Asura's voice fell, he vanished. He remained cold and callous throughout, not showing the least bit of leniency in his role as the examiner in this trial.

Lying on the ground, Lin Ming struggled to sit upright. With only six hours, he didn't dare to waste the tiniest bit of time.

Lin Ming entered the fused martial intent and his mind became completely empty. Behind him, the vague phantom of a Bodhi tree appeared once more.

During these six hours, he grasped the chance to recover his wounds. Lin Ming's ruined body continued to rapidly regenerate!

There was still a great deal of the power of the many heavenly materials that Lin Ming had swallowed up within his body. Now, he refined these energies to make up for his missing blood vitality.

When the time arrived, Lin Ming’s eyes flashed open.

At this time, he was slightly excited. When he faced the Black Asura’s Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, recklessly facing it head on had been the right decision to make. This had allowed him to obtain many deeper comprehensions into the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws.

These sorts of comprehensions could not be matched by any rewards.

Chapter 1687 – Pass

Chapter 1687 – Pass

…

…

…

After slowly adjusting his mental state, Lin Ming could feel the sea deep aura of the Black Asura swell forth around him. He looked up and saw the void being ripped apart. The indifferent Black Asura flew high in the skies, looking down at him from a commanding position.

Lin Ming calmed his thoughts.

"Are you ready?" The Black Asura asked.

"Come!"

Standing in place, Lin Ming was as tall and straight as a spear. His aura was sharp, like a blade that could pierce a hole through the heavens.

The Black Asura didn't speak anymore. He deeply gazed at Lin Ming. No matter what happened, this young man deserved another look.

The Black Asura reached out a hand. The originally empty void beside him was forcefully pulled open like slides, revealing a crack in space.

From this crack, the Black Asura grasped a long spear!

This spear was the weapon the Black Asura used and also the dragon spear carved upon the relief of the gate! In the last two moves, the Black Asura hadn't used a weapon, instead fighting his opponent unarmed. But this time, he resorted to bringing out his weapon!

At this moment, Lin Ming closed his eyes, his entire body gushing out with energy. His hair flapped in the wind and his strength started to rapidly rise.

A True Dragon soared through the heavens, its boundless aura grand and magnificent, its claws shredding space to pieces.

A Fire Phoenix carried with it an overwhelming sea of flames that blocked out the skies.

One dragon and one phoenix acted as guards. As the dragon and phoenix appeared, their radiance illuminated the world, alarming all.

At the same time a massive sea of lightning appeared in the skies, filled with vitality and sparkling with beams of electricity. Above this sea of lighting bloomed a giant flame lotus.

These two powers actually managed to come together in an incredible harmony, blending together as one. Each one shone with an unbelievable destructive force.

This was the thunder and fire heavenly tribulation that dwelled within Lin Ming's body!

In the great skies of this wasteland, more changes began to occur.

The overlapping layers of gray clouds were torn apart by countless mysterious beams of light. Swathes of stars appeared in the heavens, their starlight falling down like a descending galaxy, all of their strength flowing into Lin Ming.

Lin Ming bathed in this mysterious strength. His skin shimmered as more and more strength rose within his body.

One at a time, giant stars began to appear in the heavens. There were nine in total, all of them sparkling in space, floating up and down.

At the same time, nine spots on Lin Ming's body projected a blinding starlight, dazzling to the senses.

As if he himself were becoming a shining star.

The stars above him resonated with him like nine beating hearts.

Of the nine stars, two were particularly radiant, as bright as suns in the noon sky. They were the Purple Temple Dao Palace and the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace.

The mystical strength emitted from the Purple Temple Dao Palace fused into Lin Ming's body. Large amounts of life potential and yang energy ignited within him, making his body feel hot and dry. Faint drops of life energy started to drip out from every pore on his body. They were as bright as fresh blood, like his body could not contain the overwhelming amount of boiling blood vitality within him.

The Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace galvanized the momentum of the world, quickening its flow. Heavenly fire, thunder, raging currents, netherworld energy, all sorts of powers of the Heavenly Dao howled in the void.

Lin Ming could truly feel the incoming threat, the threat of death. If he could not block this spear, the only path left to him was death!

At this time, the Black Asura attacked!

A spear thrust out. A strange vortex seemed to manifest itself, swallowing in all light within this great wasteland.

Lin Ming was suddenly shrouded in absolute darkness.

But what was darker than this darkness was the swift and fierce spear light that came shooting out at him.

This spear light was condensed within the aura of the Asura Great Dao! Lin Ming was familiar with this aura, but he also found it strange. Without a doubt, this was a domain of the Asura Heavenly Dao that Lin Ming couldn't comprehend!

Space groaned as it shattered like glass in massive tracts.

The spear seemed as if it could pierce through the universe. Lin Ming felt as if it were impossible to resist, as if this spear contained the power of Laws as deep and profound as the endless hells.

As this long spear targeted him, his entire body fell into fear, leaving him unable to move.

This was the weird response produced by the body when they encountered something incomparably terrifying.

Realizing the abnormality of his body, Lin Ming's heart filled with dread and awe. Without a doubt, the Black Asura's last attack would shake the heavens and sunder the earth.

No matter what, he had to withstand this spear strike!

"Open!" Lin Ming roared out. Behind him, an ancient green tree began to rapidly rise, sending out a lofty and towering momentum. The branches and leaves of the tree grew thick and lush, generating so fast that they seemed to become a forest.

Lin Ming grasped his long spear. As he gathered his spear potential, grandmist aura wildly appeared. In front of him, space began to shiver and twist. Grandmist space appeared, bringing with it a great strength that seemed as if it could imprison everything.

These strengths were so great that the ground beneath Lin Ming's feet began to crack and disintegrate, turning into the tiniest specks of dust that drifted into the air. Fissures split open the ground, spreading out in all directions.

The ground beneath Lin Ming gave way to space, as if an unfathomable abyss opened up beneath him. He grit his teeth, and with a loud shout all of this strength poured into the pitch black spear in his hands.

Bang!

The towering Heretical God Tree collided with the Black Asura's spear light and was immediately pierced through. However, a tiny amount of the spear's black energy also dissipated in the process.

Soon after, the phoenix and dragon crashed into the spear light. The powers of thunder and fire heavenly tribulations, the Purple Temple Dao Palace, the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace, thick essence energy that filled the air, all of this crashed upwards like a blood red meteor surrounded by a storm. Together with the misty grandmist space that carried with it the aura of the beginning, everything struck the pitch black long spear.

All of these strengths were enough to shock the world, and each one was more mysterious and powerful than the last!

The pitch black spear was annihilated at a speed visible to the naked eye. Mysterious Asura Heavenly Dao runes were torn off the spear light like motes of light and destroyed, creating tiny primitive black holes.

It was strange and captivating.

“Good!”

An unusual expression appeared on the Black Asura's face. He faintly stared at Lin Ming. The black spear he shot out only had 10 foot or so left remaining. But the grandmist space that Lin Ming summoned began to crack and the grandmist energy within it was already extremely transparent.

“It’s still not enough!” Lin Ming clenched his teeth and cried out once more. A deep bass sound echoed out from within his body, as if his body itself had become a universe. The strange vibrato seemed to emit from the deepest point within him.

Above Lin Ming’s spear point, a pitch black energy vortex appeared. As this vortex appeared, it was like a stone had been dropped on a lake surface as intense spatial ripples appeared all around.

Whorl, whorl, whorl!

The surrounding space began disintegrating. A wild space storm appeared and swept out in all directions, sharper and deadlier than a hail of blades.

All of the strengths within this world, even the remnant strength of the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel floating in the void, was sucked in by this vortex.

This was a technique from the Divine Seal Art created by Empyrean Divine Seal – Eternal Darkness!

A black hole was the hardest celestial body in the universe. With this black hole as a shield, he welcomed the incoming spear light!

With this move, Lin Ming’s body was thoroughly exhausted. His blood vitality was in deep debt and only the Purple Temple Dao Palace within him was fanning the fires of life within his body, giving him enough energy to move.

Seeing this black hole sweep up into the skies, the Black Asura’s complexion slightly changed.

The black spear was swept into this dark vortex. Within it, endless detonations of thunder and fire exploded.

Woosh, woosh, woosh!

The energy blown off the spear light came hurtling towards Lin Ming!

At this time, Lin Ming had already given his everything and it was impossible for him to resist the shockwaves of the spear light. His body was struck and steams of blood shot out like arrows from his body.

Lin Ming was like a fading candle in a storm. His body wavered, swinging about like a broken swing. Unable to suppress the injuries within his body, he suddenly vomited out a mouthful of blood.

But at this time, the endless explosions stopped. A small but sharp, black long spear rushed out from the black vortex, shooting towards Lin Ming.

In that moment, Lin Ming's pupils shrank. He was already a lamp without oil. It was impossible for him to block this strike.

Lin Ming's heart skipped a beat. He thought he would die in the next moment!

However, this feeling was only for a fleeting moment. As the black spear shot through Lin Ming's face, although it was still sharp and threatening, it actually passed straight through his body.

It turned out this was only the Black Asura's spear intent!

Although the spear intent was strong, the entire black spear's Asura Heavenly Dao strength was already worn down to nothing. To Lin Ming who understood the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws to an extent, this only scared him and couldn't threaten his life.

"Three moves passed..."

This was the last thought that flashed through Lin Ming's mind. In the next moment, his body fluttered down from the skies like a piece of cotton...

At this time, Lin Ming's true essence, astral essence, spirit essence, and blood vitality were completely exhausted. His consciousness dimmed as he fainted.

Chapter 1688A – Taunt

Chapter 1688A – Taunt

…

…

…

All of the heavenly materials Lin Ming ate had been slowly absorbed by him during his prolonged battle. Slowly, the essence of these materials subtly integrated into his body.

In truth, to the current Lin Ming whose mortal body, soul, and inner world were already extremely powerful, these heavenly materials weren't too advantageous.

To Lin Ming, the most precious things he obtained was the harvest he made in the Laws during those seemingly endless battles.

The opponents he faced in the Gate of Laws all had different combat methods, utilizing different Laws. After experiencing the might of these Laws, Lin Ming was able to broaden his horizons and obtain a far greater harvest.

In particular, during his final battle with the Black Asura, which gave Lin Ming an even deeper understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao. However, all of this required time to digest.

Although Lin Ming seemed unconscious, the truth was that all sorts of fragments of the Great Dao Laws were submerged in his spiritual sea, slowly fusing into his very being and giving him new understandings.

As Lin Ming was continuing his trial, what was happening outside the Gate of Laws, on the third level of the final trial, was a completely different scene altogether.

The first group of people who successfully reached the third level were the weakest of the trial challengers. They were people who chose the easiest mortal step level difficulty, and within the mortal step level difficulty, one only needed to cross the aerial bridge to pass. There was no need to step onto the ancient continent and battle the numerous opponents that manifested from the Laws of the 33 Heavens.

As such, they only needed 3-4 days to pass the Gate of Laws. Afterwards, they could obtain their rewards and enter the fourth level.

But this fourth level was far more perilous than the last two levels! There was a dramatic rise in difficulty!

On the fourth level, it could be said that every step was filled with murderous intent, every step was a life or death crisis!

After a good number of trial challengers perished, many others decided to give up continuing the final trial and return to the third level. After all, these people were all extraordinary individuals of their respective influences and they had a glorious future awaiting them. After they visited the fourth level they realized that with their strength, they were far more likely to die than to survive. For them, they definitely wouldn’t go there just to die in vain.

Without a doubt, the final trial had many great lucky chances within. But if one didn’t even have their life, what use were these lucky chances?

So, more and more people returned to the third level. The third level was a place without danger; it was only meant for trial challengers to receive their rewards and rest. These people planned to wait here until the end of the final trial arrived. At that time, they would all be collectively teleported back to the inner Asura Road, at some random place above the Asura Sea.

And at this time, the Gate of Laws began to slowly spin as another batch of trial challengers emerged.

The one leading the group was a high-spirited young man wearing a star crown – he was the Divine Void Third Crown Prince!

“Your Highness Crown Prince!”

As the Divine Void Third Crown Prince appeared, many people who came from influences closely related to Divine Void Divine Kingdom came to greet him.

“Congratulations Crown Prince Your Highness on obtaining victory and perfectly passing the trial!”

Someone immediately sensed the mood and began to flatter him as much as he could. Just by looking at the Crown Prince’s energetic and happy expression, one could correctly guess that his trial had gone smoothly.

And in fact, he wasn’t wrong. The Divine Void Crown Prince had obtained the highest completion percent possible in the earth-step difficulty at 36%.

“Indeed, this level of accomplishment is truly worthy of Your Highness the Crown Prince! I think that Your Highness’s earth-step difficulty was far too low, perhaps the heaven-step difficulty would have been just right, haha!”

After confirming that the Divine Void Crown Prince had indeed perfectly passed, many people began to compliment him. However, the Divine Void Crown Prince’s smile didn’t last too long. Soon after, the Gate of Laws shook once more.

Bigflame, the direct disciple of Heavenly Union Divine Kingdom’s Divine Emperor had appeared.

Bigflame also had a wide smile on his rotund face. It was clear to everyone that he too had perfectly passed the trial. This left the Divine Void Crown Prince frowning a little. When he was undergoing the earth-step difficulty, the process hadn’t been too easy for him. He was originally hoping to roll over Bigflame with his score, but now it seemed they had both emerged even with each other.

For a time, the Third Crown Prince and Bigflame became the focus of the entire audience. The two of them could be said to be brimming with success. Although the earth-step difficulty was only the second level of difficulty, it wasn't simple at all. Perfectly passing was an extremely difficult task and even many proud children of heaven from the various great influences here had only completed a part of it.

For the two to perfectly pass, they would be praised once they returned to their respective True Divinity Holy Lands.

At this time, Suya, Mo Brightmoon, and the others were all looking towards the blood red Asura level difficulty exit from the Gate of Laws. In such a festive atmosphere, the two of them were actually feeling worried and anxious.

Because of their profound trust in Lin Ming, even though he had chosen the Asura level difficulty that no one had passed in billions of years, they still anticipated a miracle to occur.

Lin Ming had been far too hasty in choosing the Asura level difficulty. Before others had enough time to fully explain to him the situation, the Gate of Laws had opened and sucked him in.

They didn't think Lin Ming could complete much of the Asura level difficulty. As long as he passed through alive, they would already be thanking the heavens and earth.

"What is it? Junior-apprentice sister Suya, do you have any troubles on your mind?"

A light voice echoed out, causing Suya to frown. She turned to see a robed man walking towards her with a smile on his face. This person was Duke Fullmoon!

Duke Fullmoon had chosen the earth-step difficulty. Although he didn't perfectly complete it, his performance had been adequate and he had obtained a great many things from the battles. From this alone, Duke Fullmoon was more than satisfied.

Although the Third Crown prince and Bigflame were the two who blossomed in splendor within the Gate of Laws trial, Duke Fullmoon was still in an extremely good mood. At this time, he held onto a folding fan, slowly fanning himself with an imposing expression on his face.

He certainly knew what Suya was worrying about. The reason he deliberately brought it up was to bring Suya down a notch.

He remembered that at the start of the Divine Rune City Auction, when he met Suya at the entrance, Suya had treated him coldly because of Lin Ming's presence.

Duke Fullmoon had kept this memory to heart.

"Its nothing."

Suya's voice was cold and desolate, as if she didn't care about Duke Fullmoon's presence at all.

Duke Fullmoon thought little of it. He chuckled and said, "What, are you still thinking that Lin Ming will come out alive? It seems that junior-apprentice sister Suya really has a deep affection towards this Lin Ming. But what a pity… heroes in their youth simply do not know their own weight. To choose the Asura difficulty so recklessly just to win the attention of others, and yet the result is that no one cares about him. All his grandstanding has come to nothing…"

Duke Fullmoon smiled, his eyes sweeping over everyone else.

Nearly everyone was gathered around the Divine Void Third Crown Prince and Bigflame. Indeed, no one cared about Lin Ming.

In this final trial, Lin Ming wasn't able to arouse much interest at all. After all, these people weren't familiar with him and only knew he was the creator of the 'Lin' logo divine runic symbols.

When Lin Ming chose the Asura level difficulty, the others were startled, but that was all. After a moment, they realized Lin Ming was just putting on an act and he likely had some mental problems. Soon, everyone put this matter at the back of their minds. Now, they were all busy trying to be on good terms with the Third Crown Prince and Bigflame. The Third Crown Prince and Bigflame both came from True Divinity level influences and their talent was also extremely good. If those here could be on good terms with them, this relationship might be of help to them in the future.

As the Third Crown Prince and Bigflame were surrounded by a crowd of people, they slowly floated upwards. They were about to choose their own immortal palace reward.

But at this time, the Gate of Laws violently shook once more.

A blue-clothed woman flew out from the Gate of Laws!

Her clothes floated behind her and her entire body shined with pale blue Law runes. She was like an immortal fairy exiled from the highest nine heavens.

This person was Soul Empress Sheng Mei!

She had perfectly passed the heaven-step smelting trial difficulty. Not just that, but her clothes were unstained and her appearance was otherworldly. It was clear she still had a great deal of strength remaining!

Everyone was stunned. They soon looked up at her.

“Sheng Mei! She came from the heaven-step difficulty!”

“Too fierce! Look at her unbothered appearance, it seems she has perfectly completed it!”

Some people cried out in alarm. But Sheng Mei didn’t bother with these people. Instead, as soon as she appeared, she flew directly towards an immortal palace.

The immortal palace she chose was as large as a mountain. The one she chose was a second-rank immortal palace!

Woosh!

Soul Empress Sheng Mei flew into the immortal palace without stopping at all. The entire process was like a comet passing through the skies, free and easy, filled with beauty.

“She is truly worthy of being called Soul Empress Sheng Mei. Even after completing the heaven-step difficulty she is still so calm. We are far inferior to the likes of her,” the Divine Void Crown Prince whispered, his face still as happy and joyful as a spring breeze. He didn’t envy Sheng Mei’s results at all, because he and Sheng Mei never stood on the same plane to begin with. So, there was no reason to compare himself with her.

She was someone who stood at the peak of the entire soul race. Within every spiritas of the 33 Heavens, she was the highest status woman there was. She was a character that could stand on par with Soul Emperor Divine Void, so there was no meaning in competing with her.

“Haha, Crown Prince is too modest. Soul Empress Sheng Mei is a divine being, but if the Crown Prince is compared to Soul Empress Sheng Mei, the differences aren’t too great! Crown Prince can still show disdain for all other heroes!”

Many people began to flatter once more. They couldn’t match up to Sheng Mei, but they could establish relations with the Divine Void Crown Prince. So, when Sheng Mei appeared, she didn’t steal the limelight of the Divine Void Crown Prince.

As many people were speaking, the Gate of Laws shook once more.

Chapter 1688B – The Shadow In the Vortex

Chapter 1688B – The Shadow In the Vortex

…

…

…

Everyone was stunned and looked towards the Gate of Laws. They saw that it was the exit of the heaven-step difficulty that was shaking.

“Mm? Someone else came out?”

Before everyone had time to respond, a black-clothed young girl came hurtling out!

This young girl had a simple and beautiful appearance. Her body was slender and her complexion was only slightly pale. There was a bit of blood that stained her clothes.

It was clear it hadn’t been easy for her to pass the Gate of Laws!

This young girl that looked to be 17-18 years old was actually Xiao Moxian!

“Eh… she also passed?”

Many people were surprised. They originally believed that if Xiao Moxian were to enter the heaven-step difficulty, the chances were she would have more misfortune than good luck. But they never imagined she would successfully pass the trial.

“It isn’t strange. If I enter the heaven-step difficulty I can also pass, but my completion percent would be far too low. The benefits simply aren’t worth the cost,” the Divine Void Crown Prince suddenly spoke at this time.

Although it sounded like he was boasting, he was actually correct. If he could perfectly complete the earth-step difficulty, that meant that even though he could pass the heaven-step difficulty, he would at most obtain a 40-50% completion rate. But with this completion rate, the rewards wouldn't be as good as perfectly completing the earth-step difficult.

"That woman was with Lin Ming, right?"

"Yes, she's likely Lin Ming's woman. I really underestimated her. Even so, look at her… It seems she has reached her limits. She probably barely passed."

"Haha, that might not be so." The Divine Void Crown Prince shook his head. As he looked at Xiao Moxian, there was a hint of appreciation in her eyes. "It's already impressive for her to pass the heaven-step difficulty. Now, I'm curious as to what her completion percent is. 20%? 30%? Or perhaps she just barely managed to pass?"

"Little sister Xian'er, are you okay!?"

Seeing Xiao Moxian's bloodstained clothes, Mo Brightmoon felt her heart tighten. When Xiao Moxian had chosen the heaven-step difficulty, she had indeed felt nervous. But because she had experienced Xiao Moxian's strength, she knew that even though Xiao Moxian couldn't compare to Sheng Mei, she should still be able to survive the Gate of Laws without a problem.

Now, she saw Xiao Moxian come out. Although it seemed Xiao Moxian had approached her limits, at least she was safe and well. Mo Brightmoon could finally relax.

"I'm good." Xiao Moxian gripped her fists. Although her tumbling blood vitality was in an extremely poor state, she still had an excited expression on her face.

"Little sister Xian'er, you must make haste and adjust your condition."

Suya quickly took out a wound recovery pill. She and Mo Brightmoon didn't ask about Xiao Moxian's completion percent. This was not the right time to ask about such matters. Xiao Moxian's wounds came first, and they were also still worried about Lin Ming.

“Really, women are no inferior to men. I must say I admire her…”

Duke Fullmoon rubbed his chin, watching Xiao Moxian with a brilliant light in his eyes.

This woman’s talent was far too amazing. Even though she barely passed, she still surpassed over 95% of those present!

Moreover, she had outstanding looks. This caused Duke Fullmoon to feel not so good in his heart. How had such a good piece of cabbage been grabbed up by a pig? That boy Lin Ming was far too blessed when it came to women!

Luckily, Lin Ming was far too stupid and entered the Asura level difficulty like the fool he was. Chances were, he had already died by now. If this was true, this woman was now alone!

Thinking of this, Duke Fullmoon began to develop tempting thoughts. He thought of taking Xiao Moxian under his wings. Since he was rising to fame, he needed to build up his own power and forces. If he could capture Xiao Moxian’s body and mind, she would undoubtedly be an excellent dual cultivation partner. Not only could he drink deep in his lust for her, but it would also be a great help for himself.

“This miss is called Xian’er, right? What amazing abilities you have! It seems we have had some misunderstandings before, but to meet today in the final trial could be called a stroke of luck. As they say, you won’t know someone unless you fight them. No matter what problems we’ve had in the past with each other, allow me take the initiative to apologize for anything I might have done wrong. How about we clean away any past animosities we might have?”

Xiao Moxian was already sitting down, about to enter meditation to restore her wounds. After she received Suya’s pill and was about to swallow it down, she heard this disgusting and repugnant voice sound out in her ears. As she looked up, she saw Duke Fullmoon swinging his fan, looking down at her with a proud and happy expression.

It was like Xiao Moxian had just finished a wonderful meal, and just as she was basking in the enjoyment of it, she discovered a giant fly on her plate. Not only did any happy feelings she had had disappear, but she was even a little enraged.

"You want to apologize? Isn't your skin too thick? Who do you think you are? I don't even remember who you are," Xiao Moxian icily said, not bothering with Duke Fullmoon.

"Haha, Miss Xian'er is too playful. Don't we martial artists have photographic memories? How could Miss Xian'er possibly not remember me?" Duke Fullmoon said, putting on his most noble and elegant demeanor. Since he had thoughts of taking in this woman, he naturally had to endure her temper a little.

But who knew that Xiao Moxian wouldn't fall for his act? She ignored him, treating him as if he was nothing more than empty air.

Xiao Moxian swallowed the pill and started to meditate.

Duke Fullmoon frowned. Even he had limited patience. In front of so many people, Xiao Moxian had done the same as slapping him across the face. He naturally didn't feel good about this.

He spoke, his voice much icier, "Smart birds and beasts know where to make their home, and wise men understand their circumstances. You aren't counting on your lover leaving the Gate of Laws, right? Hehe! If he kept a little lower profile, with his little cheap tricks in the divine runic arts he might have caused some small influences to have some interest in him. But what a pity…"

Duke Fullmoon coldly sneered.

But this sneer actually caused a deep killing intent to flash in Xiao Moxian's eyes. She was originally a daughter of the demon and monster race, and towards her enemies, she would feel no pity, nor would she show mercy. In particular, this Duke Fullmoon had actually touched upon her reverse scale of rage, cursing Lin Ming to die!

It had to be known that even though Xiao Moxian had 120% confidence in Lin Ming, this final trial was still established by the Asura Road Master. The difficulty Lin Ming chose was the hardest one there was, so how could it be easy to pass?

Xiao Moxian feared Lin Ming would try to chase perfection and choose to challenge some test that surpassed his limits, finally meeting danger. As Xiao Moxian heard Duke Fullmoon speak such words, a deep and profound killing intent began to swell up within her!

She subconsciously traced her spatial ring. But this action caused Suya's heart to skip a beat. Suya quickly stopped Xiao Moxian by saying, "Little sister Xian'er, don't be impulsive. There are many people here, you absolutely cannot start a fight!"

Duke Fullmoon's complexion had completely darkened. He finally became aware that this woman belonged to Lin Ming until her death and would never submit to anyone else. If so, he was done being kind to her.

"You want to kill me? How interesting! It seems you would rather do things the hard way! I urge you to consider your circumstances some more. With your strength and your background, do you have the capital to contend with me? If that little beast Lin Ming were still alive and the Divine Runic Masters Guild was here to support you, I might fear you a little. But now, who else do you have?"

As Duke Fullmoon spoke, the Gate of Laws trembled once more.

Duke Fullmoon was startled. He turned to look. At this strange time, just who would come out? As Duke Fullmoon saw what was happening, surprise flitted across his face. This time, it was the exit to the Asura level difficulty that was shaking!

For a time, the noisy crowd calmed down. Even the Crown Prince and Bigflame who were ready to soar towards their immortal palace rewards stopped, surprised that there was something occurring at the exit to the Asura level difficulty.

The deep red Gate of Laws was the color of blood. It's shaking was abnormal. Not only did violent surges of energy start spinning around, but even the power of Laws nearby stirred up.

The feeling it gave off was as if there was a terrifying storm developing within the Gate of Laws!

"There's a change in the Asura level gate, or could it be..."

The Divine Void Crown Prince felt his heart turn cold. This sort of feeling was as if there was a problem itself with the Asura level gate! As if some extraordinary accident was about to occur!

As for the words yet to be spoken, he didn't finish them. He thought it might be Lin Ming coming out, but he soon overruled these thoughts.

As the Divine Void Crown Prince's voice fell, all of the other martial artists immediately raised their guards. In the final trial, anything was possible. If there was a problem with the Asura level gate, it could be a multitude of things. For instance, there could be a terrifying flow of energy rushing out, or it could even be some of the powerful enemies used to test trial challengers! Nothing would be strange!

In this sort of situation, no one was willing to bet their lives on chance. In particular, the weaker young elites began to retreat.

And at this time, with a loud bang, an explosion that shook the heavens and earth blew out. The Asura level gate violently detonated!

A savage flux of energy swept out. All of the martial artists outside were surprised. They quickly raised shields of true essence or astral essence to protect themselves, but many of them were still sent flying backwards.

There were some of them that already planned to turn tail and run. Even the Divine Void Crown Prince and the others were completely vigilant of their surroundings.

As for that violent flux of energy, it didn't last for long. It soon gathered back together, converging at the Asura level gate, forming a blood red vortex!

Everyone was bewildered. As they looked towards that blood red vortex, they immediately saw a silhouette appear. This person had disheveled hair and ruined clothes, slowly stepping out and dragging a spear behind him. Every step this person took seemed to resonate with the heartbeats of all martial artists outside!

The flexible armor covering his body had been shattered to pieces and his boots were nothing but strips of barely intact cloth. It was hard to imagine what sort of ruinous battle he had just been in. But in contrast to his harried appearance, his eyes flashed like bolts of lightning in the night sky. Even the blood red light of the Asura level gate was unable to cover up the blinding light of his spirit!

His eyes shook everyone present, as if they were all seen through by him.

The moment this person's shadow appeared, Duke Fullmoon froze like statue. For a long time, the only movement was his wildly twitching throat. He gulped again and again, and then finally said with a trembling voice, "That person... that man... that is Lin Ming!??!"

"Lin Ming! The Divine Runic Masters Guild's Lin Ming!"

Many people cried out together with Duke Fullmoon.

Lin Ming had come out! He had come out from the Asura level difficulty Gate of Laws!?

This was... unbelievable!

In this moment, as Suya saw Lin Ming, her eyes became wet. Her understanding of Lin Ming was far worse than Xiao Moxian's. She originally thought Lin Ming's chances of survival were slim, with nine chances of death and one chance of life. But now that she saw Lin Ming appear, she was ecstatic!

Lin Ming's completion percent was unimportant. As long as he could emerge alive, that was all that mattered.

"Big Brother Lin, you really passed!"

Xiao Moxian happily shouted. She ran towards Lin Ming and flew into his arms like a gust of wind.

According to what she knew of Lin Ming, since Lin Ming was able to come out, he would inevitably have obtained a massive harvest from the Asura level difficulty. Lin Ming's character was that of one who didn't concede easily. No matter what he tried to do, as long as he did it he would put his all into it!

"Big Brother Lin…" At this time, Xiao Moxian sniffed. Even though she was confident in Lin Ming, emotions were irrational. She feared that Lin Ming might have experienced some accident. Only upon feeling Lin Ming's warm and solid chest did she feel relieved.

"I'm fine." Lin Ming gently rubbed Xiao Moxian's head. He let out a long sigh. This trial hadn't been easy at all. Facing the Black Asura's last attack, he had nearly lost his life then and there.

Chapter 1689 – Flying Towards the Immortal Palace

Chapter 1689 – Flying Towards the Immortal Palace

…

…

…

Suya naturally couldn't show such open emotions like Xiao Moxian. With Lin Ming's safe return, she tried to remain as calm and serene on the outside as she could.

"Sir Lin, thank the heavens and earth you managed to come out safely."

Mo Brightmoon also came forwards. She asked with concern, "Lin Ming, are you wounded?"

Looking at Lin Ming's appearance, it was hard to imagine what sort of brutal battle he had just undergone. That sort of scene must have been shocking.

Behind Mo Brightmoon, Fanny Fafa and Thousand Slaughter also rushed up to congratulate Lin Ming.

Thousand Slaughter heavily patted Lin Ming's shoulder, not saying anything. Although they had only met some time ago, he and Lin Ming had fought side-by-side and there was some camaraderie between them.

Lin Ming's teammates and friends, all of them celebrated his arrival. As for the other martial artists, they were still stewing in their shock, unable to regain their composure.

The storm in the Asura level gate just now was unusually fierce and wild, leaving all of them panic-stricken. They never imagined the real reason for this storm was that Lin Ming had completed the Asura level Gate of Laws trial.

Asura level difficulty. It had already been unknown billions of years since anyone had chosen this path. No one knew just what sort of scene would occur after passing it.

“How can this be… he’s clearly a divine runic master, and learning the divine runic arts requires a massive amount of time. In particular, to reach Lin Ming’s level in the divine runic arts required an incredibly long time. I heard he has a skeletal age of a hundred years and his divine runic arts have reached unbelievable heights, so how can his individual strength be so abnormal? Can he really be some old monster in disguise?”

“Old monster? There’s no need to lie to us! There’s no meaning in doing so anyways. Don’t forget, the higher your skeletal age in this trial, the more difficult the trials will be that you face. If you think Lin Ming is really an old master, could he pass the Asura level trial?”

It was unknown who said this, but the hearts of everyone suddenly went cold!

That’s right! If there was a martial artist over 10,000 years of age that stepped upon the ancient continent and faced the manifestations of Laws here, the opponents they would face might be at the Empyrean level!

To fight Empyrean after Empyrean, just who could withstand that?

The Gate of Laws smelting trial was the same as confirming Lin Ming’s age. So, everyone that suspected Lin Ming’s talent wasn’t able to say a single thing to him.

“This brat!” Duke Fullmoon’s lips twitched, his heart burning with anger. “He just barely managed to pass that trial in such a miserable condition. He injured himself in order to crawl into the limelight and show off, and yet to do so he gave up his chance of perfectly passing! What’s there to be proud of!?”

Duke Fullmoon's jealousy towards Lin Ming had already reached the pinnacle. He was well aware that no matter what Lin Ming's completion percentage was, his talent had surpassed his own by a great amount.

Duke Fullmoon's words were not approved by anyone else. In the world of martial artists, those with strength had status, those with strength had respect!

Some people sighed beside Duke Fullmoon. "Even if his completion percentage is zero, that is also too freaking amazing. I fear even the Divine Void Third Crown Prince or Bigflame wouldn't have the courage to say they could enter the Asura level difficulty and come out alive, even with zero completion percentage. Moreover, Lin Ming is a divine runic master, so combat is for him something he only does on the side…"

Many people repeatedly mentioned Lin Ming's attainments as a divine runic master. But they couldn't help but do this; his skills in the divine runic arts were too well known.

As these words fell into Duke Fullmoon's ears, he felt them extremely grating to hear. However, there were some people that agreed with Duke Fullmoon; for instance, the Divine Void Third Crown Prince and Bigflame.

They were originally the leading heroes of this final trial. And because they had perfectly completed the earth-step Gate of Laws, there were many people that gathered around them to flatter them. They had been in high spirits this entire time, but now Lin Ming's appearance had snatched away their limelight and also struck them in the face.

Now it seemed that their self-satisfied accomplishments, everything that they were so excited and ecstatic over, was the same as the plays of a clown.

They could lose to Soul Empress Sheng Mei; that was the natural state of affairs. But they would not allow themselves to lose to a junior like Lin Ming.

"If you can't obtain any completion percentage, it's useless anyways! The rewards of the final trial are decided by the completion percentage you have at the end. If your completion percentage is low, what meaning is there in even attempting it?" The Third Crown Prince coldly snorted.

Bigflame also lowered his voice as he said, "I also want to know just how many completion percentage points this grandstanding fellow has."

There were no eternal friends or enemies, only eternal benefits.

Bigflame and the Third Crown Prince originally hated the sight of each other, but that was because they were both struggling to take the spotlight in this final trial and become the top person here. That would be the greatest honor for them and also the greatest honor for their sect. Their struggles here were the same as their struggles for their own future.

But now, their limelight had been stolen by Lin Ming, so what use was it to continue struggling against each other?

As such, Lin Ming had now become their common unifying enemy. The two of them immediately banded together to present a unified front.

At this time, Lin Ming was talking with Suya, Mo Brightmoon, and the others. He just learned from Suya what the reward for the Gate of Laws was. As he looked up, he could see the countless immortal palaces that filled the skies!

These immortal palaces filled the heavens like stars. There were large ones and small ones, all of them in varied styles and sizes.

"Lin Ming, if you wish to enter the immortal palaces you will need a sufficient completion percentage."

"Even the lowest level one, the immortal palaces the size of a thatched hut, require at least a 30% completion. But the imperial palace sized immortal palaces, they require 35%!"

"As for the mountain-sized immortal palaces that Sheng Mei entered, they require a 40% completion!"

As Suya spoke, she looked at Lin Ming with some worry in her eyes. She was afraid Lin Ming wouldn't have enough completion percentage to enter the imperial palace sized immortal palaces. If this were true, Lin Ming would truly have suffered a loss; otherwise, if he were to enter the heaven-step difficulty with his strength, he might have been able to compare with Sheng Mei!

"Oh? So there were such rules..."

Lin Ming also found it strange. When he passed through the Gate of Laws, the Black Asura had said that as long as he could receive three moves, he would be given a reward, and that this reward would be one of the most precious rewards in the Asura Road's final trial!

But after passing the trial, he had yet to see anything. Right now, he learned that these rewards were all held within the immortal palaces!

As Lin Ming recalled how the Black Asura had described the reward as 'one of the most precious', Lin Ming felt his blood rush to his head. He impatiently wanted to know just what the reward was.

His eyes soon locked onto the largest immortal palace in the sky, the one the size of a planet. That immortal palace had the most terrifying aura. It was also expected that the precious reward the Black Asura described would be in that immortal palace!

When Suya saw Lin Ming was looking at the planet-sized immortal palace, she sighed and said, "That planet sized immortal palace is the only one of its kind within the entire third level. Even if you pass through the heaven-step difficulty you still wouldn't have enough completion percentage to enter. I fear only through perfectly passing the Asura level trial would one be allowed to enter. My estimation is that in the last several billion years, there has never been anyone that has entered. As for what rewards are inside, no one knows."

In Suya's heart, that immortal palace was no different from a bedtime story. It was only meant to be looked at, not obtained.

"No one has gone in for billions of years?"

Lin Ming's eyebrows arched up. This wasn't too surprising. All he had to do was recall how abnormally difficult the Gate of Laws had been for him to realize this. He already had an extremely high level of talent and also understood the Asura Heavenly Dao, which gave him a massive advantage. But even so, he had nearly lost his life in order to pass.

"That's right. These immortal places are not just the area to take your reward, but also the entrance to the fourth level. If your completion percentage isn't enough, you can't even enter the fourth floor."

Suya gave a detailed explanation. At this time, Lin Ming grasped Xiao Moxian's hand and said, Come, let's go take our rewards, and then go to the fourth level!"

As Lin Ming spoke, he turned to Mo Brightmoon and the others and said, "Everyone, let's go together."

"Great!"

Mo Brightmoon, Thousand Slaughter, Fanny Fafa, and Suya all nodded and flew upwards.

Lin Ming flew in the front. His speed wasn't quick but his movements seemed weightless. Soon, he flew up thousands of feet. The immortal palaces were coming closer and closer.

At this time, Lin Ming discovered something strange.

Besides his group of people, no one else had moved.

The rewards were in the air but no one went to take them. Rather, they sat beside ancient trees, laid down on the ground, floated in air, or were doing nothing at all. They weren't even recuperating or discussing potential tactics for the fourth level.

Rather, they were all looking at Lin Ming.

On the faces of these people were a multitude of emotions. There was curiosity, playfulness, admiration, ridicule, and more. But without a doubt, every single one of them was waiting for Lin Ming to make his choice!

Lin Ming immediately understood what was happening. They all wanted to see just what his completion percentage was.

And they couldn't be blamed for wanting to know. Lin Ming was the only one in the last billions of years to have chosen the Asura level difficulty, and the only one they had ever heard of surviving. They all wanted to know just what his completion percentage was.

The Divine Void Third Crown Price traced his chin, a happy and thoughtful expression on his face.

The Asura level difficulty was something even Soul Empress Sheng Mei could only complete a portion of. And if one completed only a portion, they could only choose the second rate mountain sized immortal palaces or the third rate imperial palace sized immortal palaces.

If Lin Ming barely managed to pass and his completion percentage was too low, perhaps he might only be able to choose the hut sized immortal palace.

If Lin Ming rumbled out from the Asura level gate, passing through endless slaughter and facing epic fights that shook the heavens to do so, and even nearly losing his life in the process, if he were to choose the hut-sized immortal palace in the end then that would be far too great a joke!

As long as he could mock Lin Ming, he could naturally restore the shame he felt.

At that time, he would enter his imperial palace sized immortal palace and slap Lin Ming across the face!

Bigflame was also thinking the same thing as the Third Crown Prince. As for Duke Fullmoon, there was no need to mention him. No one wanted more than him to see Lin Ming smash his head into a barrier.

Lin Ming's movements slowed. He frowned. He hadn't expected such a scene to occur. If he didn't choose his immortal palace, everyone would just be waiting for him.

Lin Ming originally didn’t want his choice to be seen by others, but now it seemed unavoidable. Moreover, it seemed many martial artists remaining in the third level were considerable weaker. For instance, the first batch of martial artists that passed through the Gate of Laws had chosen their rewards before entering the fourth level. But because they couldn’t withstand the dangers of the fourth level, they were forced back to the third level where they had to wait until the final trial ended and were teleported out. In any event, it was impossible for Lin Ming to wait for them.

Chapter 1690 – Entering the Planet Sized Immortal Palace

Chapter 1690 – Entering the Planet Sized Immortal Palace

…

…

…

“Big Brother Lin, what are you worrying about?” Xiao Moxian softly asked as she saw Lin Ming’s frown.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment, but then said, “I just don’t want my choice to be seen by others in order to prevent the news from passing out. There might be those with evil intentions coveting my reward. Even if the reward cannot be transferred to others, there might still be those who will harm me in order to confirm what occurred!”

The final trial created by the Asura Road Master was far too important. There would likely be some old monster that would ignore all convention and shame to attack him. If so, even the Divine Runic Masters Guild couldn’t shelter him. If the treasures left behind by the Asura Road Master were compared to improved divine runic symbols, they were simply of two completely different categories!

“This brat, isn’t he going?”

“Hehe, he probably found out the immortal palaces require a completion percentage, so now he’s scared.”

The Divine Void Crown Prince and Duke Fullmoon were both waiting to see Lin Ming make a joke of himself. Now that they saw Lin Ming suddenly pause midair, they thought he was likely panic-stricken after discovering the requirements for entering into the different immortal palaces.

With so many people watching him make his choice, Lin Ming was probably fearful he would embarrass himself.

“How interesting. I want to take a good look and see just what you will do!” Duke Fullmoon smugly said, pleased with himself. Who cared how much talent Lin Ming had? For him to produce such laughable results in the end, that was truly a joke!

Thousand Slaughter and Fanny Fafa also stopped in surprise as they saw Lin Ming come to a pause.

“Brother Lin, what’s the problem?”

“Nothing…”

Lin Ming idled for a moment, pondering his choice. News about this event would only be spread out once the final trial ended. Moreover, it seemed that the trial challengers would be teleported to random places above the Asura Sea. In the vast Asura Sea, he would only teleport into the midst of a group of old monsters if he had extremely poor luck.

Moreover, even if he were teleported into the midst of some old monsters, they still wouldn’t immediately know what rewards Lin Ming had obtained from the final trial. In fact, they might not even know who he was.

At that time, it wouldn’t be too difficult for Lin Ming to leave, and he also had the Asura Command. As long as he had a little time, he could activate the Asura Command and return to the outer Asura Road!

The outer Asura Road was far safer. From there, Lin Ming could leave the Asura Road and return to the Divine Realm. When he did, his nearly 60 year journey in the Asura Road would come to a conclusion!

Thinking of this, Lin Ming didn't bother with the potential consequences any longer. Even if those old fellows of the Asura Road had designs on him, what could they do?

Lin Ming smiled. He started to move forwards again, much faster than before, immediately zipping out from the group!

In the final trial's third level, the different sizes of immortal palaces were at different heights.

The highest number, the thatched hut sized immortal palace, hung at a generally lower altitude. As for the larger immortal palaces, the bigger they were the higher they floated.

Lin Ming was extremely quick. In the blink of an eye, he passed through the innumerable smaller immortal palaces and towards the third ranked ones!

"Is he going to enter the third ranked immortal palaces?"

The Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame frowned. In order to enter the third ranked immortal palace, that required that one achieved a considerably higher completion percent in the earth-step Gate of Laws difficulty. Of the many people still remaining on the third level, over 90% of them failed to enter the third ranked immortal palaces; they could only choose the lowest, fourth ranked immortal palaces.

If Lin Ming chose the third ranked immortal palaces, that would be the same result as the both of them. If so, they wouldn't have any superiority to him.

Moreover, the key point was that Lin Ming had chosen the most difficult Asura level Gate of Laws, and had even achieved a high enough completion percentage within to enter the third ranked immortal palaces. That's was simply far too amazing a result!

As the Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame were slowly falling into a melancholic depression, Lin Ming rapidly flew over the third ranked immortal palaces and towards the second ranked immortal palaces!

"What!?"

"Could he be choosing the second ranked immortal palaces? That is what the Soul Empress chose!"

After perfectly passing the heaven-step difficulty, the Soul Empress had chosen a second ranked immortal palace!

If Lin Ming were to accomplish the same after entering the Asura level difficulty, wouldn't that mean his talent was higher than the Soul Empress'?

Many people felt this was far too unbelievable!

However, before they had time to respond, something even more shocking occurred. Lin Ming actually passed by the second ranked immortal palaces and turned towards the highest ranked immortal palace – the only one of its kind within the third level, the legendary planet sized immortal palace!

"What is he doing?"

Let alone the Divine Void Crown Prince, Bigflame, Duke Fullmoon, and their lackeys, even Suya and Mo Brightmoon were left staring with eyes wide open. They stared blankly on as Lin Ming flew towards that incomparably vast immortal palace, the one that shined brightly like a sun!

In the legends, there hadn't been anyone in the last several billions of years who had managed to step into that immortal palace. Could that palace be Lin Ming's goal!?

But Suya had already clearly explained to Lin Ming just how difficult it was to enter the largest immortal palace!

Everyone revealed incredulous expressions. Only Xiao Moxian smiled with a hint of pride.

Lin Ming's speed was like lightning. In the blink of an eye, he had already rushed within close distance of the immortal palace and was still hurtling towards it without pause!

"He's insane!"

"The toad wants to eat swan meat. Just because he lived through the Asura level difficulty he thinks he can enter the first class immortal palace!?"

"Haha, wait for him to hit the wall!"

When Lin Ming flew towards the third ranked immortal palaces, Bigflame and the Divine Void Crown Prince already had ugly complexions. But when Lin Ming flew towards the first ranked immortal palace, their mocking expressions returned once again.

This was a place where not even Soul Empress Sheng Mei could hope to enter. In order to enter, one had to perfectly complete the Asura level difficulty! That was an impossible task.

With Lin Ming's current speed, he would hit the immortal palace's barrier at full speed. To see such a sight was, simply too wonderful!

Everyone waited for Lin Ming to be brutally beaten by his own hubris.

The brief distance was covered in the blink of an eye. Lin Ming's form was covered in the endless divine light of the planet sized immortal palace.

The array formation barrier of the immortal palace was right in front of him!

Completion requirement – 45%!

Lin Ming didn't hesitate. He hurtled forwards at breakneck pace, seeming as if he didn't see this protective barrier at all.

Hu!

Like a swallow flying through a plume of smoke, Lin Ming's form instantly passed through the shield and submerged in that radiant light, completely vanishing from sight. He had entered the immortal palace!

In that moment, the smiles of Bigflame, the Divine Void Crown Prince, and Fullmoon all froze over!

Everyone else watching was also left completely dumbfounded!

Lin Ming, he… did he really just enter!?

“I… am I seeing things…?”

The tubby Bigflame gulped, his lips twitching as he stared straight up into the air.

Not only had Lin Ming survived the Asura level Gate of Laws, but he also entered the planet sized immortal palace. Just what sort of joke was this?

Did this mean that Lin Ming had perfectly completed the Asura level Gate of Laws? How could that even be possible?

All of the martial artists in the third level were dumbfounded. For a long time, none of them could speak. But the facts were placed right in front of them. The barrier of the immortal palace could not lie!

Like this, they had all confusedly borne witness to a miracle that happened for the first time in billions of years!

“I don’t believe this… the planet sized immortal palace’s barrier…” Duke Fullmoon’s voice trembled. He wanted to say that there was some problem with the barrier of the immortal palace but he couldn’t say the words in the end. The array formations the Asura Road Master laid down had continued without problem for billions upon billions of years. Through the vast river of time, countless talents had entered this level, as many geniuses as there were sand grains in the desert, but there had never been a case where there were problems with the barriers of these immortal palaces!

There was only a single explanation and that was that Lin Ming had indeed perfectly passed the Asura level difficulty. His talent surpassed even that of the Soul Empress!

As for the Soul Empress, she was a character who could stand side-by-side with Soul Emperor Divine Void. If Lin Ming and the Soul Empress were to be compared now, besides the difference in their cultivation and overall strength, he surpassed her in many other aspects!

This conclusion was far too shocking. Everyone felt it was hard to accept this.

And at this time, Xiao Moxian also moved. She flew straight towards the second ranked immortal palaces!

Xiao Moxian had followed after Soul Empress Sheng Mei and chose the heaven step difficulty. However, Soul Empress Sheng Mei had passed the trial far more calmly than Xiao Moxian had. But the reason for this was because Xiao Moxian wasn't familiar with the situation in the trial like Sheng Mei was, which inevitably caused her to use up a great deal more strength, even injuring her origin energy a little. Even so, Xiao Moxian had still perfectly passed the heaven step difficulty and obtained a high completion percentage!

So, it was natural for Xiao Moxian to choose the second ranked immortal palaces.

Like an agile bird, light and quick, she flew into a second ranked immortal palace without anything hindering her!

Seeing Lin Ming fly into the first ranked immortal palace and then Xiao Moxian fly into a second ranked immortal palace, everyone was left petrified. Or rather, it could be said they were numbed of all feelings!

Chapter 1691 – The Immortal Palace

Chapter 1691 – The Immortal Palace

…

…

…

The planet-sized immortal palace was vast and ethereal. This was a mysterious ancient land no one had opened for billions of years. As Lin Ming stepped past the gates of this immortal palace, he immediately felt as though he had stepped into an alternate world; the atmosphere here was extremely different from that of the Asura Road.

All sorts of strange powers flowed around Lin Ming, rushing about like a tide!

Lin Ming knew these powers were Laws.

In the Gate of Laws, Lin Ming had fought off opponents that represented the Laws of the 33 Heavens. Now he had gained a considerable understanding towards the Laws of the 33 Heavens. He could faintly feel that within the confines of this immortal palace, there was also the strength of the 33 Heavens' Laws!

In the past, the Asura Road Master had cultivated the Laws of the 33 Heavens and established his own Asura Heavenly Dao. This immortal palace held the Laws of the 33 Heavens.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and stepped forwards. The tall and grand winding corridors were all made of some unknown divine stone. This sort of divine stone had been here for billions of years, experiencing the weathering of the vast river of time, yet it still remained bright and spotless.

Like this, Lin Ming arrived at the end of the corridor. He could see a palatial door, carved with gold and jade.

When Lin Ming stepped in front of this door, the door actually started to swing open!

For some time, a brilliant radiance spilled forth. As Lin Ming saw what was inside, his heart shook!

At the end of this corridor was actually a great world!

This great world had mountains and rivers, lakes and seas. And where Lin Ming was, where the door opened into, was high in the air, hundreds of thousands of feet up. He had a bird’s eye view of the boundless world laid out before him!

On the continent of this world there was an endless road built from blue stone slabs. From the ground, it extended into the infinite heavens until it disappeared into the clouds of mist.

A cold wind blew through the air, dissipating some of the mist. He could see that even further in the distance, that endless blue stone road still stretched onwards. This blue stone road was simple and desolate, seeming to contain the aura of inexhaustible years.

Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred. He dove down from where he was and stood atop the blue stone road.

“Mm?”

Suddenly, Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. His eyes were attracted to something right in front of him on the blue stone road, in the center of a stone slab.

Right in front of him was a deep foot imprint.

Although it looked like an ordinary footprint, when this image reflected in Lin Ming’s eyes it left him shocked. He could clearly feel a potent and awe-inspiring aura from this footstep, one as sharp and wild as a savage blade!

What sort of person could leave their footprint behind on this highest tier of rewards? After so many years, their footprint still existed as before, emitting such a dreadful aura!

Lin Ming composed his thoughts. He resolutely moved forwards on the blue stone road. Impartial and without bias, his foot stepped onto that footprint, perfectly fitting inside.

Bang!

A peal of thunder rang out in his mind. The world began to change. A horrifying bang echoed out like a rolling cloud of thunder, leaving Lin Ming's ears shaking from the shock.

As his vision cleared, he discovered he was surrounded by countless dense auras.

One by one, all sorts of giant, horrifying, and blood-thirsty warriors surrounded him. They wore metal armors and wielded spears, halberds, sabers, swords, and more. There was every weapon that could be imagined here.

These giants all had weapons over 10 feet long that were stained with blood. They exuded a cruel and ominous killing intent, making one's heart race. And each one had a blood vitality so dense and pure that it created a halo of flame-like energy around them, making them seem like embodiments of dread.

Out of all these giants, there was one that was over 30 feet tall and had an aura so deep and vast, it was like an ocean. This giant had white hair that fell down his back like a waterfall, and he wore a shining silver war armor. He indifferently stared at Lin Ming.

These eyes were incomparably terrifying. Lin Ming didn't doubt that with this gaze alone, this giant could cause a peerless powerhouse's soul to shatter and fade away, forcing them to fall into an infinite abyss.

Facing these giants, Lin Ming discovered he wasn't a match for any one of them!

If so, that meant these giants were at least all unrivalled Great World King powerhouses!

However, what was strange was that even under so much killing intent, Lin Ming was still capable of withstanding their combined suppressive pressure. Moreover, he did so with ease!

Even that white haired warrior with the deep aura couldn't suppress Lin Ming.

This left Lin Ming startled. He subconsciously looked at himself and discovered that he had completely changed in appearance.

At this time, his body was wrapped in thick dragon-like muscles. He had blood red hair that fell down his back and his chest and arms were completely covered with black scales. These scales didn't come from some Empyrean spirit treasure but emerged from within his body. On his face, strange demonic runes glowed. These demonic runes all seemed to faintly resonate with the Asura Heavenly Dao.

His looks had changed. His forehead was as sharp as a sword and his eyes were like sabers. He looked ferocious, untamed!

He grasped a dragon spear in his hand and the aura he exuded was enough to cause the surrounding space to gently tremble. This was an incomparably formidable feeling that Lin Ming had never experienced before.

Like a vast galaxy could be sundered in half by his spear!

This person was…

Lin Ming faintly realized that he had turned into this war god. The scenes he was seeing weren't an illusion, but something that had happened in the past! In other words, these were the residual memories of this war god!

Because he stepped onto the blue stone road and stepped on a footprint, Lin Ming could see the memories of this war god. And in these memories, Lin Ming was him. He stood as this war god did, facing his enemies!

"Kill!"

Lifting the spear, the war god stepped forwards. A terrifying spear light pierced forwards, penetrating through 4-5 giants and killing them in a single strike!

For some time, ruined limbs and flesh flew everywhere. Blood rained out.

“This sort of feeling is…”

The moment the war god attacked, Lin Ming could feel everything that he did! Everything he heard, saw, and felt, were all what the war god had experienced in the past. Every movement of the war god, every flow of energy, how every Law was applied, Lin Ming experienced them from beginning to end, as if he were the one fighting!

And these flows of energy and uses of Laws all left Lin Ming bewildered. This form of combat was considerably different from what he knew!

In particular, the Laws the war god used were that of the Asura Heavenly Dao. Moreover, his Asura Heavenly Dao had the 33 Heavens’ Laws fused into it, making it incredibly mystical. What Lin Ming could comprehend was limited, but even this tiny bit of comprehension left him shaking with understanding.

The black armored war god leapt up and descended like a meteor. Every now and then he slowed down, and other times he would burst forth with an unbelievable speed, leaving nothing behind but countless afterimages.

Every movement was clear, swift, and fierce, without the slightest use of unnecessary strength. This could be called the perfect combat technique.

This combat skill combined with this powerful strength was astoundingly powerful.

“Who is this war god?”

Lin Ming couldn’t help but wonder. Could this be the mysterious Asura Road Master?

Chapter 1692A – The Blue Stone Road

Chapter 1692A – The Blue Stone Road

…

…

…

Bones piled like mountains, while flesh and blood flew in all directions!

The black armored war god slaughtered for three days and three nights! Every opponent he faced was incomparably formidable!

The black armored war good didn’t have a single inch of unmarred skin. As he stood atop the mountain of corpses, his pupils still emitted a bright light, as if there was a brilliant flame burning deep within his soul.

Suddenly, the black armored war god let out a roar to the skies. His voice was like thunder, shaking the world. A blood red aura shot out from his body, soaring into the heavens.

On the blue stone road, Lin Ming seemed to have fallen into a nightmare.

His blood vitality tumbled and a faint blood red aura emitted from his skin. His body shivered and he immediately woke up, completely sober.

After awakening, the faint blood red aura that surrounded his body vanished into the air. But a lingering will still surrounded him, causing his heart to race.

As Lin Ming looked down, he could see he had only taken a single step on the blue stone road.

But this single step had left Lin Ming indescribably shocked. After all, whether it was the black armored war god or his enemies, all of them were unimaginable existences.

Who were they? Ancient races…?

The black armored war god was similar to the Black Asura that Lin Ming faced at the Gate of Laws. Their weapons were both dragon spears, but there were some differences in their appearances.

Lin Ming didn't know if that black armored war god was the Asura Road Master. But he could feel that although the black armored war god was extremely powerful, he didn't surpass the realm of a True Divinity. To compare him to the Asura Road Master was far too difficult.

As for the enemies the black armored war god faced, they were a race that Lin Ming had never seen before, nor had he read about them in any ancient texts. It was clear they were of an ancient race that once existed 10 billion years ago.

He hesitated for a moment, then took the second step forwards.

With this step, Lin Ming stepped onto another blue stone slab.

As soon as he stepped on this second one, the world around him rapidly changed once more.

Strong gales howled around him. Mighty waves crashed into the air with a raging anger.

Huala!

Waves of salty sea water whipped onto his body, a bone piercing cold. The sea water all around him was deep, blood red and the air was filled with the thick taste of blood.

Thunder Hydras as large as mountain ranges were scattered throughout the sea, their giant corpses bobbing on the water's surface, seething up and down with the waves. Thick gushes of their natural divine blood essence flowed into the sea.

In the midst of this blood, there was the faint sparkling of the power of thunder.

Thunder Hydras were an extremely powerful God Beast tribal race. In the sea, they were a nearly unrivalled existence. But now, so many of them had died.

The black armored war god grasped a pitch black dragon spear as he floated high above the sea. His body exuded a strange strength that echoed with the world around him, causing all the blood tides to stop 30 feet away from him.

In the center of the sea of Thunder Hydra corpses, there was an even more titanic Thunder Hydra. This Thunder Hydra was constantly swallowing the blood and flesh of other Thunder Hydras, fusing together with the remnant corpses.

Bolts of thunder as thick as buckets twined around this Thunder Hydra.

Its pupils shimmered with arcs of swirling electricity, like a yin yang dao diagram composed of the power of thunder. Just by looking at these strange eyes, one could feel their soul disintegrate.

These nine heads had 18 pupils that could suck in the divine souls of others. Every single eye was focused on the black armored war god that floated above the sea water.

The black armored war god’s eyes were cold and dense. As he stared at this unfathomably large Thunder Hydra, there wasn’t the slightest sign of fear on him. Rather, his chest bubbled over with a boiling fighting spirit.

Bang!

The black armored war god’s vigorous figure collided with the ruler of the Thunder Hydras!

It was like two stars smashed into each other. A massive impact strength spread outwards, turning into a giant hurricane that cut open the endlessly deep sea, continuing downwards without end.

The aftermath of this strike nearly pierced through the world.

A surging strength exploded in all directions.

With this clash, the black armored war god was struck by innumerable bolts of thunder. His entire body glistened with flashing arcs of electricity.

His body was left in a frighteningly dreadful state.

But at this time, strange lines radiated in the black armored war god's eyes.

These lines were ancient and potent, containing the faint power of thunder within them. These lines could actually swallow up the lightning that raged about the black armored war god, allowing him to comprehend the Thunder Hydra ruler's thunder-based supernatural powers from within…

As for the Thunder Hydra ruler's supernatural powers, they were composed of countless mystical runes that faintly resonated with one of the 33 Heavens' Great Daos.

Placed within this sort of comprehension, Lin Ming also felt something. Within his inner world, there were faint arcs of electricity emerging from the Heretical God Tree, mysteriously hovering in the air…

This moment didn't last too long before it disappeared. Lin Ming returned to the blue stone road and took a third step.

This scene was still that of the black armored war god. The black armored war god had met an opponent that could stand on par with him – the king of an ancient race that stood 30 feet high. The king had two eyes that shined like stars in the void. Every time he breathed, there would be substantialized runes emerging from him like floating stars. They surrounded him like spiritual beings lying prostrate around their king.

From this aura, from this momentum, one could see that this ancient king was no weaker than the black armored war god!

Suddenly, the ancient king kicked forwards. Some of the runes atop this ancient king's hand condensed into a mountain that came crashing down atop the black armored war god.

The black armored war god's pupils shined. With a loud roar he welcomed the mountain of runes, jumping straight into the skies to meet this threat.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Every strike contained a strange coordination of Laws and energy; this left a deep and novel impression on Lin Ming.

The black armored war god's battle with the ancient king was earth-shaking and heaven-sundering.

The sea for 10,000 miles all around them surged and boiled, rapidly evaporating.

The two fiercely fought for one day and a night. Runes rushed into the black armored war god's body, causing his muscles to blast apart and his bones to shatter.

Lin Ming could feel that the black armored war god's blood vitality was being rapidly exhausted!

'His opponent… is strong!" Lin Ming's hear shook. But he knew that the black armored war god's opponent, this king of an ancient race, had actually sustained even heavier injured. His rock-like body seemed on the verge of collapse and his bones and muscles were exposed. These bones and muscles were like condensed runes, wrapped with the shining power of Laws and exuding a terrifying aura.

Suddenly, the ancient king's eyes glimmered with a fantastic light. On his broken body, his entire left hand actually disintegrated. From his flesh and blood, he had brought out the strongest source runes.

As these runes appeared they glowed as bright as stars, emitting a terrifying light that spread out in all directions and rumbling towards the black armored war god.

In that instant, the black armored war god was shackled down by these strange runes, rendering his entire body immobile.

Bang!

The black armored war god was suppressed by the runes and his blood was being forcefully squeezed out of his body. The blood floated in space, exuding an increasingly strong medicinal fragrance as more and more life was pressed out of the black armored war god's body.

Lin Ming was bewildered. He didn't think that the amazingly strong black armored war god would end up in such a dangerous situation.

However, before Lin Ming had time to respond, from the deepest depths of the black armored war god, the raging fire that was about to extinguish suddenly burst into an unimaginable conflagration, causing his soul to stir and be set aflame.

In that instant, the flesh and blood that floated in space suppressed, was pulled back into the black armored war god's body, completely revitalizing him. With a loud roar that boomed like thunder and shook the hills, a blood red aura shot out from the black armored war god, impacting the heavens.

With a loud rumbling, a boundless life essence energy directly crushed apart all the suppressive runes.

The black armored war god shot up from the ground once more, his body surging with a mysteriously burning, hot fighting spirit.

The ancient king was panic-stricken. He hurriedly moved to defend and shoot out more runes, but all of them were swallowed up by the black armored war god.

The black armored war god's spear strikes were like a hail of rain. Endless light blazed out, like 10,000 suns exploding together. The ancient king got covered under this assault, and in the next moment, a storm of blood rained down…

The king of an ancient race was cut down by the black armored war god.

Chapter 1692B - The Blue Stone Road

Chapter 1692B - The Blue Stone Road

…

…

…

The limitless blue stone road continued onwards.

Everytime Lin Ming stepped onto the next blue stone slab, he would see another battle of the black armored war god. The slaughters continued without end, the black armored war god becoming increasingly strong.

Lin Ming didn’t know who the black armored war god was. All he saw were the proud children of heaven from ancient races, geniuses of other universes, and primeval God Beasts, and all of these top existences got extinguished under the hands of the black armored war god.

In the frenzied battles, the fighting intent of the black armored war god, his mysterious and endless variations of martial arts, his skill in battle, everything was like waves of inspiration that Lin Ming slowly became aware of.

Like waves in a storm, all of this roiled within Lin Ming’s mind. Mysterious runes and the faint power of Laws entered into his flesh and blood, marking him.

This sort of awareness was unfathomably profound but also extremely vague.

Although he couldn’t understand these things any time soon, their influences still subtly changed him, greatly benefiting him.

He could clearly feel some unknown changes occurring within his body. The Asura Heavenly Dao Laws within him were even more profound and in terms of the source of thunder and fire, he had an even deeper understanding.

Even the Purple Temple Dao Palace and Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace floating within his sea of consciousness had a vast momentum that was different from before.

Walking over the blue stone road, one step at a time, Lin Ming's surroundings changed once more. This time, he was no longer a black armored war god, but a tall man in white clothes.

The white robed man had a red dot on his forehead. He sat beneath a hundred million year old divine tree, his body seemingly fused into his surroundings.

Verdant green ribbons of energy dangled down from the boughs of the tree, lingering around the white clothed man. All sorts of life essence were slowly being absorbed by him.

This was an extremely marvelous feeling. As Lin Ming manifested as this white clothed man, all he could feel was some strange resonance occurring between the world and his flesh and blood, as if something wanted to drill out from his body.

He closed his eyes, silently comprehending…

The next step was still the white-clothed man. This white-clothed man was different from the black armored war god. There was no endless slaughter, but endless cultivation. His method of cultivation, his comprehension of Laws, they left Lin Ming feeling entirely different things and obtain a different harvest.

For a long period of time, the memories Lin Ming experienced were all of the white-clothed man.

But afterwards. There was a change in the main lead of the memories once again. This time, the owner of the memories had become a god king wielding a golden sword!

The strength of this god king was similar to the black armored ward god. A single strike of him could sunder the heavens and shatter the earth! No one could be his enemy!

Lin Ming discovered that after every section of the blue stone road, the main lead of the memories would change. Although their auras had some similarities, their appearances were different and the Laws and cultivation methods they utilized were as different as the heavens and earth.

Many of these Laws were something that Lin Ming had never experienced before. Without a doubt, these were all various aspects of the 33 Heavenly Daos!

But who were these people?

Lin Ming was puzzled. Their strength seemed around the True Divinity level, but where had so many True Divinities come from?

Could these people all have stepped within this planet-sized immortal palace in the past?

But as soon as this thought appeared in Lin Ming's mind, he immediately refuted it. This was because the Asura level Gate of Laws was simply far too ridiculous a trial to pass; it was a heaven-defying act to perfectly cross it. Although Lin Ming couldn't say there had never been anyone that stepped into the immortal palace since the final trial began, he at least knew that there definitely weren't so many outstanding proud children of the heavens born in the last 10 billion years.

Could the memories of these peerless powerhouses recorded in the blue stone road have been the followers of the Asura Road Master?

If the Asura Road Master was an existence that surpassed a True Divinity, it wasn't strange for him to have so many True Divinities subordinate to him!

Lin Ming stepped forwards, step after step. The further he walked the taller and straighter his posture seemed to become, and his aura also became far more profound.

In the midst of all these changes, a silent and hidden strength emerged from the world, trailing around Lin Ming's body, vaguely beating in harmony with him…

Through constantly experiencing, watching, and comprehending, Lin Ming's steps became increasingly heavy.

At the start, Lin Ming only had some rough understandings into the memories of the blue stone road. But the further Lin Ming climbed up, the more and more insights he gained from the memories.

As all of these deductions and comprehensions passed through Lin Ming's mind, beads of sweat began to drop down his forehead. The deeper his understandings became, the more Lin Ming realized just how unfathomably mysterious these Laws were.

Slowly, mysterious runes started to appear, swallowing in all of the secret strength that wrapped around the blue stone road. These runes shined like motes of light, little stars that slowly fled into Lin Ming's boy, vanishing into his flesh and blood without a trace.

The more Lin Ming comprehended, the stranger his aura became. Sometimes his aura was light and as simple as clouds, like he had become one with the world. Sometimes his aura was majestic and grand, and still sometimes his aura was sad and shrill, enough to make ghosts and gods shudder.

At this time, Lin Ming arrived at the end of the blue stone road. He already stood 100,000 feet high in the sky, overlooking a boundless sea of clouds beneath him.

As Lin Ming was about to step foot on this last blue stone slab, he was actually startled.

This blue stone slab seemed extremely special. It was clearly only 10 feet wide, but as it fell into Lin Ming's eyes, it seemed endlessly spacious, wide to the point of being endless, nearly taking up the entirety of Lin Ming's sight.

Up until now, the aura of this final blue stone slab was the most intense that Lin Ming had ever seen. Just by approaching it, even he felt terrified and at a complete loss for words.

Lin Ming wasn't in a hurry to step foot on the final level of the blue stone road. he guessed that the special reward the Black Asura mentioned in the Gate of Laws was likely located on this final blue stone road. Even so, Lin Ming instead decided to calm himself down. Without hastening his step to find this so-called reward, he instead sat down and began meditating.

Sitting deep in meditation, Lin Ming slowly recalled all the memories he had experienced along the way here.

As Lin Ming recalled them, his mind suddenly shook!

"I know... I finally know which True Divinity supreme elders had their memories recorded in the blue stone road!" Lin Ming whispered to himself. He should have realized this earlier. Of those memories, they had been from 33 different people, no more and no less!

This number allowed Lin Ming to immediately understand who they were.

Chapter 1693 – Holy Scripture

Chapter 1693 – Holy Scripture

…

…

…

Of the 33 True Divinities along the blue stone road, although they had different appearances, their auras were actually quite similar.

Lin Ming had neglected to consider one possibility, and that was that these 33 True Divinity powerhouses were actually a single person!

Lin Ming remembered the words the Asura Road Master had left behind in the preface of the Asura Sutra: “The 33 Heavens, the boundless Great Dao. My resolve is to seek the peak of all martial arts. I spent 3,3 billion years to travel the 33 Heavens, cultivating 33 lives. One life one Empyrean, one life one Divinity. What I seek is the highest truth of the Heavenly Dao…”

To cultivate 33 lives.

One life one Empyrean, one life one Divinity!

As for the memories within the blue stone road, there were 33 True Divinities. It was a perfectly matching number.

In other words, these 33 True Divinities were likely the 33 reincarnations of the Asura Road Master!

He had cultivated 33 lives, cultivating a singular Heavenly Dao Law in each, spending a hundred million years each time to become a True Divinity! Moreover, the battles he fought during those lives, the cultivation memories, and the Laws he realized, all of them were cast into this blue stone road for his future descendants to observe and emulate!

Thinking of this, Lin Ming was utterly shocked. 33 reincarnations, each one cultivating all the way to the realm of True Divinity?

Just what sort of concept was that?

If the Asura Road Master had truly surpassed the realm of True Divinity, Lin Ming suspected that the method he used to do so was to fuse together the True Divinity realm of these 33 reincarnations!

As he quietly felt the aura of the final blue stone slab, he could faintly feel that even though it was vast and terrifying, upon closer inspection it actually comprised 33 auras.

The Asura Road Master had reincarnated 33 times and had comprehended entirely different things during each of these 33 lives. Afterwards, everything he comprehended had been fused together. This was truly an incredible accomplishment.

On the blue stone slab, thin strands of the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws bound together, incomparably thick, resembling a limitless abyss that blocked off everything. Even if someone were to stand here and wanted to take the final step forwards, it wasn't easy at all. They would need a powerful strength or a profound understanding of the Laws as a foundation.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment, then his fingers drew a brilliant path through the void, one that harmoniously resonated with the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws atop the blue stone slab.

The blue stone slab that was blocked off by countless tight strands of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws began to slowly unravel beneath Lin Ming's hands…

Lin Ming finally stepped up onto the final blue stone slab.

Once he did, his surroundings suddenly changed.

Lin Ming could feel the memories within the blue stone road once more. But this time, the one Lin Ming became was none other than the Black Asura that tested him within the Gate of Laws!

This time, the Black Asura held a dragon spear, a full head of red hair falling down his back. He mounted a great dragon and his skin shimmered with a metallic luster as his entire body was covered with strange and mystical runes.

He stood within the pitch black coldness of space. Beneath his feet, trillions upon trillions of stars glittered. His pupils were like two blazing suns, emitting a terrifying light that lit up the endlessly distant darkness.

In that infinitely distant place, there was a man with a similarly terrifying aura, walking in from the other end of the galaxy.

Wherever this man walked, large tracts of space would be smashed apart. The power of innumerable stars was forcefully drawn out by this man and swallowed into his body.

This man's figure stood right in front of Lin Ming but was blurry. It was like thousands, hundreds of thousands, millions of copies of this man were walking towards him, all interposed over each other, giving off a mountain-heavy pressure.

Pa! Pa!

Lin Ming's heart raced. Even though he knew this man was nothing but a phantom, this was more than enough to shake his mind and make his heart tremble.

At the same time, a look of unprecedented earnestness appeared on the Black Asura's face.

The Black Asura's strength was as deep and vast as the sea; it could be called impossible to rival. Lin Ming even suspected that this Black Asura was the Asura Road Master's true self!

Just what proud son of heaven could be a worthy rival to the Asura Road Master?

Lin Ming looked at the man's figure. He wasn't a human, spiritas, or saint, he was from an ancient race that Lin Ming had never seen before. This caused Lin Ming to suspect something; 10 billion years ago, could the universe have been ruled by this ancient race? And after several great calamities, these ancient races declined. After which, the humans, saints, and spiritas gradually rose to prominence?

At this time, the shadow figure seemed to say something. His outline swayed and distorted as he spoke. With every word he uttered, an incomparably massive rune would appear in the void.

Lin Ming couldn't hear this shadow figure's words. All he saw were those massive magical runes hurtle forwards, large enough to cover a world as they came crashing down on the Black Asura like a meteor.

The Black Asura forcefully tore open space like two cloth curtains, revealing a deep abyss. As those howling runes came crashing down, all of them entered into this strange space and disappeared.

As the shadow figure saw his own attack be so easily resolved, he lightly smiled, not thinking much of it. The shadow figure thrust out his hand, ripping open a spatial split and taking out a thick ancient book!

This ancient book had a black cover. And on its cover there were two incomparably old words. If Lin Ming hadn't studied the first volume of the Asura Sutra in Tragic Death Valley, he would've never recognized these two words.

"…Holy Scripture?"

Lin Ming was left in a daze. This shadow figure seemed to use this book as a weapon, and this book was called the Holy Scripture!

To use a book as a weapon, this was the first time Lin Ming had seen this. As for the name of the Asura Sutra, Lin Ming inexplicably recalled something: Empyrean Divine Mist had mentioned in Tragic Death Valley – the Spiritas Holy Scripture!

Was the Holy Scripture in the shadow figure's hands related to the Spiritas Holy Scripture?

This thought immediately flashed through Lin Ming's mind. He could faintly feel he had touched upon a great historical secret that spanned through the entire 33 Heavens and originated from the river of time 10 billion years ago.

At this time, the shadow figure opened the Holy Scripture in his hands. His lips moved and magical seals emerged from his mouth.

The Black Asura had been standing on a barren star, but in an instant, he was transported into a cruel hell world.

The blood waters of the yellow springs billowed around him, wildly rushing about. Endless bones sank and floated, each one emitting a strange aura of spiritual death energy. All of this swept up together into a titanic wave of blood that rushed towards the Black Asura.

Not just that, but all around him were a number of divine Buddha-like powerhouses with kind and gentle expressions. They sat on lotus flowers fashioned from pure white bones, their body releasing a glorious radiance.

Countless powerhouses tore through the void, bringing with them an endless strength as they hurtled towards the Black Asura.

Seeing all of this, Lin Ming was left dumbfounded.

He could see all of this through the perspective of the Black Asura, and he knew it was no illusion but a true great world. That shadow figure could produce life from nothing, using the Holy Scripture to create a Yellow Springs World to attack the Black Asura.

The strength of this mysterious man had truly reached a terrifying degree. It was no wonder that even the invincible Black Asura felt as if he had met an even opponent and was taking this battle with utter seriousness.

The Black Asura's eyes flickered with a divine light. Facing all the attacks from this Yellow Springs World, a pure black spear appeared in his hands.

On this black spear, the auras of innumerable dharmic abilities and supernatural powers swirled about. There was omnidirectional polar ice energy, great sun truefire, the true secret source power of thunder, unending fearless battle intent, the will of endless spirits…

Every strength was something the Black Asura had comprehended in battle or from his opponent's bodies.

Even though these numerous and diverse strengths were brought together, in the Black Asura's hands, they all flowed in perfect harmony.

The spear tore through the void. In the infinite emptiness, it emitted a radiance that lit up the darkness of space.

In that instant, all of the mysterious strengths howled through the Yellow Springs World. Countless pillars of glorious light spread through the world, all of them emitting a terrifying level of energy.

The roiling yellow springs river was burnt away and dried up by the mystical source power of all fire. The white divine Buddha beings were torn up by incomparably sharp primal sword intent, even their lotus thrones made of bones were shattered to dust.

Endless mountains of bones collapsed and the earth cracked open.

The Yellow Springs World rapidly disintegrated, withering away beneath the rumbling powers of the Black Asura.

As the mysterious shadow man watched his Yellow Springs World collapse, there wasn't the slightest of change in his vast abyss-like aura. The only difference was a glimmer of vigilance that appeared in his eyes as he looked at the Black Asura.

At this time, the aura the Black Asura released became increasingly vast and his momentum began to reach terrifying levels.

All of the strengths he had comprehended over the last billions of years completely erupted at this moment.

The Black Asura's face began to change, becoming blurry as if he were carrying on him every single battle intent in the world, every Law in the universe. It was like his body became a horrifying universe that gushed out with endless mystical strength.

Bang!

With a single thrust of his spear, his strike shot towards the endless horizon. Wherever this spear strike passed, planets would shatter, stars would dim, and even the universe trembled. Dreadful space storms followed in its wake, sweeping out and enveloping all.

The overlapping layers of mysterious power carried with it all the secret forces of the 33 Heavens. This strength crushed through the endless space, smashing into the man on the other end of the galaxy.

That shadow man's complexion finally changed!

This attack of the Black Asura fused together all Laws of the 33 Heavens! It could even be said to have surpassed the 33 Heavens!

Rumble, rumble, rumble!

The shadow man wildly retreated, his body breaking apart space. He shot out endless powers of Laws, trying to stop the Black Asura's completely comprehensive attack that contained the powers of the 33 Heavens and also a trace of something that stood aloof from it.

"The power of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws..."

Only Lin Ming knew in his heart that this horrifying strength that left the man on the other end of the galaxy panic-stricken was the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws!

This was the unique power of Laws that stood outside the 33 Heavens. Whether it was now or 10 billion years ago, this strength was enough to shock the world. It was the masterpiece of the Asura Road Master, the ultimate power he established after comprehending the Laws of the 33 Heavens to a great extent – the Asura Heavenly Dao! Its might was beyond any mortal description!

Bang!

The brilliant light pierced through all.

The mysterious man also disappeared in the spear light of the Black Asura. All that was left was the Holy Scripture in his hands still shining with a dreadful light, one that even the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws couldn't cover, as if the light of this book was unparalleled in existence!

Hu!

In the next moment, everything vanished.

Lin Ming fell to his knees, his entire body shaking and dripping with sweat. His body had nearly collapsed.

Just now, the final strike of the Black Asura had contained all the powers of the 33 Heavens' Laws. Just a single look was enough to consume all of his soul force.

Even so, he couldn't even deduce a millionth of what had just happened.

Chapter 1694 – The Final Reward

Chapter 1694 – The Final Reward

…

…

…

Standing on the last blue stone slab, Lin Ming finally let out a long sigh of relief.

Witnessing the final strike of the Black Asura just now, that fleeting moment had been enough to shock Lin Ming's heart and soul.

Walking this far, Lin Ming had experienced far too many things. Many experiences had surpassed his ability to understand them. However, the scenes on the blue stone road had all allowed Lin Ming to personally feel and live through them and they had left a profound mark on his memories. By accumulating all of these experiences, they would provide a great benefit to Lin Ming in cultivating the Asura Heavenly Dao in the future.

Even if these accumulations didn't directly enhance Lin Ming's strength by much right now, they were undoubtedly a priceless wealth he had obtained.

However, just this wealth alone wasn't enough to be called one of the most precious rewards in the entire final trial!

In the Gate of Laws, the reward the Black Asura mentioned should be something else.

As Lin Ming came to the end of the blue stone road, he took one more step forwards. Because this was the end, with this final step, Lin Ming stepped into the void.

After stepping into the void, Lin Ming felt his surroundings change. He had arrived into a black space filled with mist.

This black space was quiet and terrifying. As Lin Ming walked within this space he could clearly hear his breathing and heartbeat. Faintly, there were light flows of energy that wound about the black space.

These dim flows of energy came in three different colors. There was grayish black, pitch black, and dark jade. As Lin Ming felt these three flows of energy, his mind shook. One of these three flows of energy was grandmist energy!

Lin Ming cultivated the Grandmist Laws. So, he had an extremely deep understanding of grandmist energy; it was impossible for him to be mistaken.

As for the other two flows of energy, Lin Ming had once come into contact with the dark jade colored one. When he had trained at Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, he had touched upon it when he studied the Divine Dream Law.

This dark jade color energy flow was spirit source!

Grandmist energy was the source of all matter in the universe. In other words, the source of ‘essence’.

Spirit source was the source of the universe’s Heavenly Dao. In other words, the source of ‘divine’.

As for the last flow of energy, that was undoubtedly the source of all energies within the universe – genesis energy, the source of ‘energy’.

The three great source powers of the universe’s ‘essence, energy, and divine’ were all contained within this black space.

And these three source strengths slowly revolved around a singular point in space. As Lin Ming looked towards it, he could see that the space near it twisted about. In the deepest point of that space distortion, there was a single drop of viscous red liquid calmly floating about.

This drop of red liquid emitted an aura as deep and vast as the sea. The surrounding space was twisted because of the terrifying energy released from this drop of red liquid. The three source strengths revolved around this drop of red liquid, clearly stabilizing and enhancing it.

This was a drop of blood!

Moreover, this drop of blood of contained an indescribably dense aura of the Great Dao Laws. At the same time, this drop of blood also contained a terrifying energy and power of will!

The aura that this drop of blood exuded was familiar to Lin Ming. It left his mind shaking.

In these past days, as Lin Ming walked down the blue stone road, he had lived some of the past experiences of the Asura Road Master. It was like he had personally accompanied the Asura Road Master throughout his journey.

He was extremely familiar when it came to the aura of the Asura Road Master. And in front of him, that drop of blood that shined like a star, was branded with the dreadful aura of the Asura Road Master!

If he wasn’t mistaken, that drop of blood was left behind by the Asura Road Master!

Even though 10 billion years has passed, the vast essence energy and Heavenly Dao Laws contained within it hadn’t dissipated in the least!

On the contrary, after being nourished by these three source strengths of the universe, this blood drop became increasingly dense and brilliant. Facing it, one found it difficult to breathe!

“This is… the final reward of the Asura level Gate of laws? A drop of blood left behind by the Asura Road Master?”

Lin Ming clenched his fists, his heart loudly beating in his chest.

The reward the Black Asura had mentioned, one of the most precious within the entire final trial, was a drop of his blood!

After spending the last several days in the star-like immortal palace, Lin Ming had walked down the blue stone road and had experienced and lived through the memories of the Asura Road Master that had been left there. These memories gave Lin Ming new enlightenments, new feelings, allowing him to enhance his comprehension of the Laws. Although it was an extremely precious treasure, this still couldn't allow Lin Ming to leap forwards in strength in a short period of time, nor could it fundamentally alter Lin Ming's body and grant him a more terrifying strength or talent.

But the final reward at the end of the blue stone road, this drop of Asura's blood, was actually completely different!

10 billion years ago, the Asura Road Master had experienced endless battles and grasped the Laws of the 33 Heavens in his hands. He stood above the 33 Heavens and had created his own road.

For such a character, every tiny particle of his skin, flesh, blood, and bones was considered a priceless treasure. Each tiny part of him was marked with the true meaning of the Laws.

In this world, there were countless legends of martial artists randomly stumbling into the tomb of a senior martial arts powerhouse, and then comprehending the true meaning of a unique martial arts from their bones, obtaining an extraordinary inheritance in the process.

And this was particularly true for an outstanding existence like Asura. Within a single drop of his blood, there were undoubtedly things contained that surpassed Lin Ming's imagination.

Suppressing the bubbling excitement in his heart, Lin Ming stepped forwards in the void, slowly approaching the drop of Asura blood.

In the void, those three great source strengths seemed to become disturbed because of Lin Ming's arrival. Although they seemed calm and peaceful, the truth was that they were unfathomably dangerous.

A single wisp of grandmist energy was heavier than a star. If a mortal body were to be placed within it, they would simply be crushed to nothing.

As for genesis energy, it contained an energy as fiery and wild as the sun. If this energy was poured into a martial artist's body, that martial artist would immediately turn to steam.

And for spirit source, that was the source of all mental strength and soul force. If spirit source were to enter a martial artist's spiritual sea and they couldn't withstand its terrifying strength, their spiritual sea would collapse and they would turn into mindless zombies.

But now, these three wild source strengths didn't hinder Lin Ming. Instead, they unexpectedly revolved around him, faintly nourishing his essence, energy, and divine. This caused his blood vitality to become increasingly vivid and exuberant, his inner world to become more prosperous and lush, and his soul to become even more tempered…

Lin Ming would pause for a long time after every step he took, as if he were pondering on something.

And at this time, the drop of blood suspended in the void seemed to be galvanized by something. It began to beat like a heart.

This beating tempo just happened to sync with Lin Ming's own heartbeat. It caused all of his bloody vitality to resonate! It was like a summon calling out to Lin Ming's bloodline, driving him forwards. This sort of feeling emerged from the depths of Lin Ming's very being, an unexplainable feeling.

At this time, a light voice echoed out from behind Lin Ming. "Do you know what that is?"

Lin Ming was startled. He immediately turned his head.

Standing not too far behind him was a black armored warrior holding a long spear, appearing from nowhere like gods and ghosts. This black armored warrior was the Black Asura from the Gate of Laws!

Chapter 1695 – Asura Blood

Chapter 1695 – Asura Blood

…

…

…

"Senior Asura!"

Lin Ming respectfully bowed.

In the Asura level Gate of Laws, the Black Asura's three moves had nearly killed him. Even so, Lin Ming felt nothing but a heartfelt respect towards the Black Asura.

"Do you know what that is?"

The Black Asura asked one more time as he gazed at the drop of mystical blood floating in the void.

Lin Ming politely said, "If junior isn't wrong, then that is a drop of blood left behind by the Asura Road Master!"

"You are a smart boy… however, that is not just a drop of blood."

The Black Asura wasn't surprised that Lin Ming had guessed the origin of this blood drop. Lin Ming has passed through the blue stone road and had withstood a baptism of memories from the 33 reincarnations of the Asura Road Master. If he couldn't guess that this drop of blood was left behind by the Asura Road Master then he never would have had the qualifications to pass the Asura level Gate of Laws.

Lin Ming didn't speak, instead waiting for the Black Asura to continue.

The Black Asura sighed and said, “He is the one who refined this drop of blood. In the past, he took a single drop of his blood essence and fused the 33 Heavenly Dao Laws into it, also integrating into it the power of his divine soul and source energy. Then, he placed it into the Eternal Divine Furnace and slowly tempered it with fires made of Laws gathered from the 33 Heavens. With each of the various Laws from the 33 Heavens he fired up this drop of blood for 10,000 years each time, using up a total of 330,000 years to refine this drop of blood…”

As the Black Asura spoke, Lin Ming was shocked. To refine a single drop of blood for 330,000 years? This was a length of time that even stunned Lin Ming.

Lin Ming asked, “The Asura Road Master used 330,000 years to refine this drop of blood?”

Lin Ming felt this unbelievable. Just what sort of peerless supreme elder was the Asura Road Master? His time was inevitably extremely precious. Although his lifespan was incalculable, spending 330,000 years on a single drop of blood as an inheritance was far too shocking.

The Black Asura shook his head. “It’s not as you think. After he placed the drop of blood into the Eternal Divine Furnace, he poured in the Laws of the 33 Heavens and then laid down a great array to maintain the fires of Laws. These 330,000 years were with it being independently refined within the Eternal Divine Furnace.”

“So that’s how it was…” Lin Ming nodded. Although the Asura Road Master had refined this drop of blood from beginning to end, the Laws, power of the divine soul, and source energy within this drop of blood originated from the Asura Road Master himself. That was an existence that surpassed the boundary of a True Divinity – just how precious were these energies? It was simply impossible to imagine!

However, the Black Asura’s explanation left Lin Ming a bit puzzled. The Black Asura had referred to the Asura Road Master as ‘he’. Lin Ming originally thought that the Black Asura was a phantom left behind by the Asura Road Master, but the way the Black Asura referenced the Asura Road Master had shut down Lin Ming’s guess.

“Senior… the way you referred to the Asura Road Master…”

Lin Ming finally couldn’t help but curiously ask. The Black Asura seemed to understand what Lin Ming wanted to know and calmly replied, “The one who refined this Asura blood is the main body of the Asura Road Avatar. He had 33 avatars, and as for me, I am but a single incarnation left behind by one of those avatars…”

“I see…”

Lin Ming was dumbfounded. The incarnation left behind by an avatar was already so powerful; it was hard to imagine just what realms the Asura Road Master’s strength had reached.

“Thank you Senior!”

Lin Ming bowed once more. Without a doubt, the reason the Black Asura remained here was in order to preside over the final trial. As for him obtaining one of the greatest lucky chances in the final trial, in a sense this was all thanks to the Black Asura.

“Take the drop of blood. This is one of the most precious rewards in the final trial…”

As the Black Asura spoke he turned around and left. His form gradually faded into the thick darkness.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and walked in front of the drop of Asura blood. With another bow of utmost respect, he began to slowly approach that drop of blood.

As Lin Ming approached the drop of Asura blood, he could feel all of his blood vitality being drawn forwards by it. The energy within his inner world was stirred up, wanting to howl outwards!

Lin Ming suppressed his restless blood vitality. Then, he stretched out both hands to grasp that drop of Asura blood!

The moment that he touched the drop of Asura blood, Lin Ming felt as if he had grasped a blazing hot sun!

A vast surge of heat transmitted out from the drop of Asura blood.

An ancient and mystical strength erupted from the drop of Asura blood, continuously rolling towards Lin Ming.

The Asura Road Master had fought his entire life – just how vast was his essence energy and blood vitality? The essence contained within a single drop of blood was like the moon and stars, stretching to the endless distance!

This drop of blood essence was incomparably heavy. When Lin Ming held it in his hands, it was like a pervasive drop of mercury, seeping into his pores and into his body!

For a time, Lin Ming's body that was as tough as divine iron began to fill with a seemingly infinite amount of life essence energy, expanding like a balloon without end.

His flesh and blood, his skin, every cell in his body bubbled as a vast life force surged within him.

This sort of infusion continued for a long time. Lin Ming only felt as if there was magma flowing in his blood vessels!

Chi chi chi!

Lin Ming could feel his own flesh and blood being burnt beneath the tremendous strength of this blood essence!

Although the Asura blood raged like a firestorm, it didn't resist Lin Ming absorbing it at all. Otherwise, if it wanted to swallow Lin Ming's body instead, even if Lin Ming used every method at his disposal he still wouldn't be able to resist against this single drop of Asura blood!

Roar!

With a resonant dragon's cry, an Azure Dragon phantom appeared behind Lin Ming. Then a keening phoenix cry echoed out in the world as a phoenix phantom also appeared behind him.

This was the dragon and phoenix bloodline within Lin Ming's body. Summoned by the call of the Asura Road Master's blood essence, these two bloodlines were stimulated!

Whether it was a True Dragon or True Phoenix, both were magnificent God Beasts when grown up, even comparable to Empyreans. There were some royal God Beasts with rare bloodlines, such as phoenixes that underwent nine nirvanas, that could compare with True Divinities!

But in front of the Asura Road Master, even a True Divinity was nothing at all.

Thus, this was why just a single drop of the Asura Road Master's blood essence was able to stir up the dragon and phoenix blood within Lin Ming!

A dragon roared and a phoenix screeched through the skies. Lin Ming's mortal body emitted explosive crackling sounds!

When all of this life essence entered Lin Ming's body, an even more terrifying aura began to emerge from him.

This aura was similar to the Asura battle mark left behind in the drop of Asura blood, as well as some strengths of incomparably mysterious Laws!

This endless mystical power of Laws brought with it a primal and vigorous strength that fused into Lin Ming's skin, flesh, and bones, finally even merging into the deepest depths of his soul.

On the blue stone road, Lin Ming had experienced countless battles that the Asura Road Master had gone through.

He had obtained a massive number of comprehensions.

But, these comprehensions remained obscure and hazy, like a fog he couldn't see through. Lin Ming only comprehended a superficial amount of these experiences, and most of those Laws were like mysteries hidden in the fog; he wouldn't be able to comprehend them for some time.

But now, the deep meaning of the Laws contained within the Asura blood, as well as a tremendous amount of combat comprehensions directly merged into Lin Ming's body.

Many cryptic things that Lin Ming couldn't understand began to shine in his mind, becoming clearer.

Peng –

A flaming fighting intent gushed out and Lin Ming's entire body began to change. His face became blurry like the waves of a tumbling ocean, like he was wearing a mask of flickering flames. His hair turned blood red and his body rose up, taller and more solid.

A wild and limitlessly violent momentum burst out from his body.

Peng –

Another mystical strength shot out. Arcs of sizzling lighting wrapped around his body, turning into pitch black thunder armor that wrapped every inch of Lin Ming's body in flashing electricity.

This power of thunder that twisted around Lin Ming carried with it the aura of life and the aura of death. Beneath Lin Ming's feet, the ground turned to black coal even as lush green grass broke upwards, shimmering with life.

Peng, peng, peng…

A profound and fathomless strength burst out from Lin Ming's body, and his appearance began to change once more.

It was like his body had metamorphosized, becoming like Asura from 10 billion years ago.

As each mystical strength erupted from his body, his aura, facial appearance, temperament, figure, everything would also have strange changes.

At the same time, the surrounding space of the world was influenced by these mystical strengths, distorting without end.

In his mind, a tremendous amount of combat techniques and ways of utilizing and circulating these mystical strengths began to appear within Lin Ming's heart, rapidly increasing his strength.

This sort of strength was different from ones he had gained in the past.

His strength at this moment was a kind of comprehensive strength. For some martial artists, combat skills, experiences, use of mystic abilities, and even a fighting spirit formed from a tempered divine soul, and all of these required a long period of accumulations.

But at this time, Lin Ming had already harvested a colossal amount of accumulations.

As more and more strength erupted from his body and more and more comprehensions flowed into his mind, the mystical powers gushing out from Lin Ming's body became increasingly potent.

Finally, his constantly changing facial appearance began to gradually condense. Even his momentum and temperament became sharper, gaining form.

Behind Lin Ming, the mystical strengths and Law runes condensed into the phantom of an Asura. This Asura phantom had three heads and six arms, grasping a weapon in each hand. Its eyes all stared in different directions, each eye revealing a strange and unusual power. Black energy, heart-freezing ice, raging plasma fire, lingering thunder…

The Asura phantom swirled in space, slowly attaching onto Lin Ming's body. Then, mysterious curse seals began to appear on Lin Ming's face.

These mysterious curse seals were similar to the marks that covered the face of the black-armored war god and the Black Asura; they contained the mysteries of the Asura Heavenly Dao!

At the same time, Lin Ming's bones began to shine with runes. All sorts of mystical strengths from the heavens and earth gathered and formed armor that covered his skin. Lin Ming's hair began to crazily grow and his joints exploded as his body grew!

Like this, Lin Ming grew half a foot higher! His muscles became denser and the outline of his body far more perfect.

After stimulating the strength of the Asura Road Master's blood essence, Lin Ming had undergone a body metamorphosis!

"This is..."

Lin Ming looked down at his hands. His hands were covered with curse seals. The power of the Asura blood howled within Lin Ming's body. It was like an unimaginable strength was wildly raging within his body, a strength so great that it could not be used up, wishing to be vented.

Roar!

Lin Ming's head fell back and he roared towards the heavens. His voice was like an incomparably sharp divine sword that pierced through the heavens! Because of this shout, the entire world seemed to tremble!

At this moment, Lin Ming felt as if he had been reborn!

Chapter 1696 – Rudimentary Dao Palace

Chapter 1696 – Rudimentary Dao Palace

…

…

…

A terrifying strength flooded through Lin Ming's body. Although the power of the Asura blood had fused into Lin Ming's flesh and blood, it had yet to be thoroughly absorbed by him. Rather, it should be said that Lin Ming had only absorbed a small part of this Asura blood and there was still a tremendous amount of this energy within him that was still continuously fusing into his meridians, divine soul, and inner world.

On Lin Ming's face and body, those mystical curse seals became deeper in color like blood flowing across his features, shimmering without end.

Lin Ming could feel that there was an incredible amount of strength within his body, so vast that he nearly couldn't contain it and would burst apart at any moment.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

At this time, the Asura blood that had no place to vent this energy burst into Lin Ming's spiritual sea and inner world like a storm!

Although this drop of blood was originally only the size of a pearl, Lin Ming's spiritual sea and inner world were actually swept up into a raging red sea!

Blood red waves as high as mountains engulfed the world, wildly rampaging about!

Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, the blue soul battle spirit bore the brunt of this impact. It was completely sucked up in this Asura blood!

The spear-shaped battle spirit was soaked in this Asura blood, seething about. The essence of the Asura blood wildly plunged into the spear-shaped battle spirit. Lin Ming felt his spiritual sea shake as a severe pain lit up every inch of his mind!

The Asura blood contained the will of the Asura Road Master. Even for Lin Ming, withstanding this will was no easy matter!

Hum –

The battle spirit shivered, sending out a clarion cry!

It was like Lin Ming's battle spirit was unable to withstand the tempered forging of this will, as if it would crack apart at any moment!

Lin Ming grit his teeth, persisting through the pain. He was well aware that his blue soul battle spirit had long reached the peak of small success and was nearing the boundary of large success. If he could absorb the power of the Asura blood and withstand the baptism of the Asura Road Master's will, his blue soul battle spirit would reach large success at the barest minimum!

Perhaps it might even reach blue soul perfection.

And as Lin Ming was withstanding the baptism of the Asura will, a gut-wrenching pain transmitted from his dantian. With a cough, he nearly fell down to his knees!

Looking into his inner world, Lin Ming's complexion changed!

At this time, massive turbulent waves crashed through the mountain valleys of his inner world and even the lakes and rivers were swallowed up by an unimaginable amount of waves. Up in the sky, the clouds were washed away by this torrential tide of blood energy!

This red tide hurtled towards the boundaries of Lin Ming's inner world, unstoppable. These boundaries were immediately torn asunder by the terrifying energy, forcing Lin Ming's inner world to constantly develop!

In that moment, Lin Ming was panic-stricken!

With the rapid development of the boundaries of his inner world, that meant he would soon break through to the next boundary!

And looking at this wild and overwhelming momentum, if Lin Ming allowed this to continue then it was possible for him to break through straight into the Holy Lord realm!

However, just several years ago Lin Ming had reached the late Divine Lord realm. If he were to directly jump past the half-step Holy Lord realm and into the Holy Lord realm, that would be far too quick.

When a martial artist cultivated the martial path, they had to proceed in an orthodox and orderly fashion.

This was because in walking down the road of martial arts, it wasn't just an issue of accumulating cultivation. One also had to perceive the Heavenly Dao Laws and master their martial skills. Many peerless geniuses would intentionally suppress their own cultivation until they couldn't contain the energy within their bodies any longer. Only then would they make a successful breakthrough and step into the next boundary.

Lin Ming had continuously done so. After breaking through Ninefall, entering the Divine Sea, then Divine Transformation, every step he took had been steady and solid, with him consolidating his foundation to the limit. Whether it was in comprehension of laws or martial skills and techniques, he far surpassed all other martial artists of his level!

But now, Lin Ming had just broken through to the late Divine Lord realm. If he jumped past the half-step Holy Lord realm and became a Holy Lord this would instead greatly weaken his foundation. Although this would give him a tremendous power boost in combat strength for a short period of time, if he wanted to recover from this in the future he would have to spend an even greater disproportionate amount of time and energy. The gains simply weren't worth the losses.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming grit his teeth. Using all the strength of his body he forcefully suppressed the terrifying energy fluctuations of the Asura blood!

Chi chi chi!

Within Lin Ming's inner world, the Heretical God Tree madly grew. Roots radiated outwards, digging down and plunging into the Asura blood, wildly absorbing its essence. The pure source energy also entered into Lin Ming's inner world, forming ancient and vigorous runes of the Asura Heavenly Dao. These runes reinforced the boundaries of Lin Ming's inner world even as they sealed away the Asura blood, wanting to suppress the remaining energy.

However, the Asura blood was simply far too powerful. Even if Lin Ming used the Heretical God Tree and the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws it was still far too difficult to suppress!

The Asura Heavenly Dao could seal away the Asura blood, but in a situation where the disparity in strength was far too great, there was a limit in the amount that Lin Ming could seal away.

Peng!

With a loud explosive sound, the boundaries of Lin Ming's inner world began to break down once more!

The raging red sea smashed against the barriers of the inner world, rapidly developing the chaotic space and expanding it. If this continued then Lin Ming would reach the Holy Lord realm sooner or later!

And such a barbaric method of developing the inner world was the same as razing the land; it would instead ruin Lin Ming's foundation.

In this critical moment, Lin Ming shouted out once more. Above his head, a black void seemed to rip open as a mysterious and radiant starlight fell down like a river of stars, flowing all over Lin Ming's body.

Brilliant stars appeared above Lin Ming's head, nine of them in total!

Lin Ming was well aware that just relying on the essence gathering system was no longer enough to contain the terrifying strength of the Asura blood – he had to use the body transformation system!

Humanity's Nine Stars of the Dao Palace were not permitted by the Heavenly Dao. In order to break through a boundary, each time required a massive volume of energy. Lin Ming summoned the nine stars of the heavens above him because he wanted to use the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace to contain the Asura blood!

Since the Asura blood was so incomparably powerful, he would contend with it using the power of the Heavenly Dao!

Chi chi chi!

Lin Ming's entire body was bathed in mercurial starlight. His bodily strength began rapidly rising upwards.

Without hesitation he opened up the Purple Temple Dao Palace and the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace. Using the power of the stars, he forcefully sundered apart the sea-like Asura blood!

Underneath the quickening of the power of stars, the tumbling red waves turned into nine red columns of water that shot into the air like crimson dragons, rushing out from Lin Ming's inner world and into his flesh and blood!

Nine fluctuations of energy constantly converged into the nine Dao Palaces within Lin Ming's body!

Of these nine Dao Palaces, only the Purple Temple and Heavenly Retribution Dao Palaces had been completely opened. As for the other Dao Palaces, their rudimentary form hadn't been formed. For a time, from nine points in Lin Ming's body, a blinding starlight shot out. This starlight fused together with the power of the Asura blood and turned blood red, an enchanting and captivating sight!

At this moment it was like Lin Ming's body had become a star!

The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, especially those seven Dao Palaces that had yet to open, were like fathomless pits that recklessly swallowed the power of the Asura blood. As the raging red sea entered these points, it vanished without a trace!

The pressure on Lin Ming's inner world suddenly lightened. Within Lin Ming's inner world, the areas where those nine Dao Palaces should be began to shine. The areas of the seven unopened Dao Palaces actually began to faintly form seven bright red rudimentary forms of Dao Palaces.

These rudimentary Dao Palaces were ethereal and misty. After fusing together with the terrifying power of the Asura blood, they faintly brought with them the dreadful aura of the Asura Laws…

This rate of absorption continued for three days.

During this period of time, Lin Ming's mind was extremely tense. Using the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws and the power of the stars, he guided the terrifying energy within the Asura blood to vitalize the seven Dao Palaces within his body. Moreover, Lin Ming's battle spirit also continuously withstood a baptism of the Asura will, being tempered and enhanced without end.

Without noticing it, Lin Ming's battle spirit became increasingly radiant, as it shined like blue-green jade.

And within his body, the seven rudimentary Dao Palaces became increasingly clear. Looking around, one could see a misty blood fog that contained a horrifying blood energy.

When the last dregs of the Asura blood's strength were absorbed, Lin Ming felt his entire body collapse downwards and his vision blur.

His body gently trembled. Then, he lost consciousness as he slumped to the ground.

After consuming his strength for three days and three nights, Lin Ming had completely overdrawn the power of his essence, energy, and divine, leaving him in a lethargic and nearly catatonic state. Now, he finally fell into a deep slumber…

After sleeping for an unknown period of time, Lin Ming finally opened his eyes. He propped himself upwards and looked at his hands and body. Those mystical curse seals that covered his body were already gone.

However, they hadn't vanished and had instead hidden themselves within Lin Ming's flesh and blood. As long as Lin Ming summoned the power of Asura, these curse seals would be activated and reappear on Lin Ming's skin.

Through these curse seals, Lin Ming could better utilize the power of the Asura Laws and his combat strength would rise to another level!

Lin Ming also returned to his original height and the scales on his body had vanished. Just from looking at his appearance, there wasn't any difference from before he had absorbed the Asura blood.

But, Lin Ming knew that his strength had taken a comprehensive leap upwards!

Because Lin Ming had forcefully suppressed his cultivation it had only risen by a small boundary, reaching the half-step Holy Lord realm!

From the late Divine Lord realm to half-step Holy Lord, Lin Ming had only used several years. Although this speed was still too quick it was only the difference of a small boundary; wanting to make up for the damage to his foundation wouldn't be difficult at all.

As for his battle spirit, beneath the baptism of the Asura will, it had finally broken through blue soul small success and reached blue soul large success, even approaching blue soul perfection.

And above all that, Lin Ming's greatest harvest was the nine Dao Palaces within his body!

The Purple Temple and Heavenly Retribution Dao Palaces had been covered with a faint red light after being nourished by the Asura blood. They were like rubies soaked deep in blood.

As for the other seven Dao Palaces, only the rudimentary forms of the Dao Palaces had appeared; they hadn't truly opened. But in the future, if Lin Ming were to use medicines to open these Dao Palaces it would actually be much easier, and when he opened them, the Dao Palaces would be that much more formidable!

Lin Ming took a deep breath and stood up on his feet. He could feel a dreadful strength contained within his body, one that he wanted to hurry up and release!

After absorbing the Asura blood, Lin Ming's strength had completed an evolution upwards. But, because such a terrifying strength had entered into Lin Ming's spiritual sea, inner world and nine Dao Palaces, his body wasn't able to adapt to all of these changes any time soon.

This caused some disruptions in Lin Ming's aura. At the same time, it was mixed with the Heretical God Force, grandmist energy, black hole aura, and the Asura Heavenly Dao aura.

If Lin Ming wanted to thoroughly master and unite all of these strengths together, the quickest method to do so would be to fight! In a high intensity battle where he tempered his own combat strength, only then would all of these strengths fuse together!

Thinking of this, a brilliant flaming fighting spirit burst out from Lin Ming's eyes. With large steps he walked forwards, heading towards the fourth level of the final trial!

Chapter 1697 – Black Dragon Spear

Chapter 1697 – Black Dragon Spear

...

...

...

The sky was gray and dim, as if it had existed in a state of perpetual twilight since time immemorial.

Nine dark blood red suns hung high and hazy in the heavens, emitting a weak heat.

Hu - !

One side of the earth was covered with blazing hot winds. The winds spun and howled, scorching the earth black.

The ground was bare and desolate. Dark red peaks twisted in the distance within the heat, distorting like undulating flames in the wind.

On another side of the earth, there was a world wrapped in snow and ice. The forests, mountain ranges, rivers, everything was covered with ice. This was a world of ice, a cold and gloomy yin chill that permeated everything.

Burning heat and freezing cold, these two sides were clearly divided in this strange land even as they struggled with each other. It was a strange and marvelous sight.

A cutting slithering sound transmitted from deep within the fields of ice.

On the distant horizon, a silver mountain-like outline appeared. Upon a closer look, one could see that this was an incomparably massive silver python rapidly snaking over the round.

As it winded its way forwards, it smashed apart icebergs, leaving massive cracks in the ice sheets.

And standing atop this silver python's head was the Divine Void Third Crown Prince. His expression was still haughty and imperious, looking down at all with disdain. The only difference was that the dragon crown on his head was crooked and his clothes were stained with blood as if he had undergone a vast slaughter battle, and the process hadn't been easy either!

Closely following behind the Divine Void Crown Prince were two people flying through the winds. One was Duke Fullmoon and the other was a young man with thick muscles wrapped over his body and eyes that exploded with a sharp light.

This other young man had deep scars crisscrossing his body that were tainted with some black energy, as if he had been struck by some mysterious curse strength.

Duke Fullmoon also didn't have his smiles of days past. One of his eyebrows had been ripped in half and his complexion was macabre.

After stepping into the final trial's fourth level, the difficulty rose dramatically once more! Even a squad of outstanding martial artists would fall into perilous situations if they weren't careful!

In these lands there were ghosts, evil races, and all sorts of monstrous beings, all of them having the terrifying strength of a World King and above!

Thus, this was the reason why some trial challengers that passed the Gate of Laws had returned to the third level even though they knew that the fourth level was abundant with lucky chances. They simply didn't dare to continue venturing deeper in this cursed land.

Once they returned to the third level, this meant that to them, the final trial had ended.

As for Duke Fullmoon and the Divine Void Crown Prince's squad, they were a union of power and power. Even so, after arriving on the fourth level, they had experienced cold and brutal battles!

"Crown Prince Your Highness, there is an unusual aura over there..." Duke Fullmoon said with some doubt as he looked at some place in the distance where ice and fire met together.

In that area, he could feel a demonic aura that rose to the heavens!

Standing beside the Crown Prince, a tall and burly young man took out a strange map that had been pieced together. The map illustrated a dense terrain covered with colored lines.

This was a map of the final trial that was handed out by Divine Void Divine Kingdom. In truth, using this map as a reference point wasn't too useful, because the world of the fourth level was created by the elemental powers of metal, wood, water, fire, and earth. Each one of these elemental lands had rare treasures, and every now and then these elemental regions would shift and transform, migrating to other areas. Thus, each time this trial occurred there would be different dangers and different lucky chances.

If they were to spend a great deal of time and effort piecing together a map now, at the next final trial that map would only be 20-30% usable.

The tall and burly man frowned. He said, "Crown Prince Your Highness, Duke Fullmoon, the deeper we head into the fourth level the more dangers there will be. In the fourth level, our squad is already considered quite a ways in. In the battles just now we've experienced some struggles and have sustained some minor wounds. The area that Duke Fullmoon mentions is even deeper in, and if we go there we might have to face greater dangers..."

The deeper one ventured into the fourth level, the more dangers there were. But correspondingly, the better the lucky chances were!

In the middle of the fourth level, there had already been many squads that had members die because of the various dangers here. Many squads had reached the middle of the fourth level and stayed there, waiting for the entrance to the fifth level to open.

In almost every case, the entrance to the fifth level would appear in the middle of the fourth level. As for everything past that, that was a land filled with treasures and lucky chances. However, there was killing intent spread through every inch of land. The strong could journey in, but the weak had to give up.

In this final trial, there was only an extremely small number of squads that were willing to venture deep into the fourth level. As for the Divine Void Crown Prince, his squad was one of these.

The Divine Void Crown Prince's complexion changed as he weighed the advantages and disadvantages. Riches and glory always came with danger. Lucky chances like this weren't common, so with such a lucky chance placed in front of him, how could he be willing to leave?

After a moment of thought, the Divine Void Crown Prince gloomily said, "To cultivate the martial path is to struggle with the heavens at every step. Many people struggle to find lucky chances, and if there is a lucky chance placed in front of us and we do not try to grasp it, why do we still cultivate the martial path? Let's go and take a look!"

As the Divine Void Third Crown Prince spoke, a brilliant light shot out from his eyes. He gazed towards the direction where that massive aura was surging out from and pointed his hand outwards.

The silver python beneath his feet was an intelligent creature and was able to feel the fluctuations in its master's thoughts. With a loud roar, a cloud-piercing, stone-cracking sound echoed through the world as it rapidly accelerated forwards, towards the area that the Divine Void Third Crown Prince indicated. As the silver python's massive form tore through the air, a sharp whistling sound howled out. Innumerable mountain peaks were crushed and an equal number of rivers were cut off beneath the silver python.

Duke Fullmoon and the young man launched their movement techniques and followed close behind. The young man's name was Juku. Of the two of them, Duke Fullmoon was a World King and Juku was a half-step World King. However, Juku still possessed the combat strength of a World King.

After a quarter hour passed, the silver python's speed slowed. They finally stopped in front of a pitch black land that was cracked and scorched.

A vast and irresistible aura transmitted from the space above this land.

In the void, the powers of freezing cold and burning flames howled as they twisted around a mountain-sized jet black rock shaped like a square.

All around this rock were mysterious giant runes, floating and sparkling.

As the Divine Void Crown Prince stood high atop the silver python, he was just able to see that at the top of this massive square rock, at the very center, was a True Dragon!

This True Dragon was pure black and only 10 feet long. The Divine Void Crown Prince had never seen such a small True Dragon before. Its body was covered with scales and it clawed at the void, roaring out as it did so. Its dark eyes flitted back and forth, as sharp and bright as lightning. A deep atmosphere of blood and death surrounded it.

The Divine Void Crown Prince was startled. Why was there a dragon here?

The final trial mystic realm had existed for 10 billion years already. It was impossible for a Black Dragon to survive for such a long time. Moreover, this Black Dragon was only 10 feet long; it was simply unthinkable!

Not only was the Divine Void Crown Prince shocked, but Duke Fullmoon and Juku were equally dumbfounded.

They glanced at each other and then back towards the Black Dragon. But as they looked again, the scene they saw was different.

What Black Dragon was there? At the center of the black rock, it was clearly a black long spear that was stabbed into the rock! This spear was covered with a vast and pure demonic strength. The demonic strength gathered together, condensing into the phantom of a Black Dragon that danced in the air.

This spear was 10 feet long and the dark spear shaft shined with an icy metallic luster. The spear head was stabbed into the center of the rock so it was impossible to see. But, even though it was stabbed into the black rock, one could still feel that it was incomparably sharp, as if it could tear apart all of space. Even from hundreds of thousands of feet away, one still felt as if the sharp point of the spear head was hanging above their head, ready to come falling down at any moment and grind one to dust. It was a feeling that left the heart racing.

"This is…"

The Divine Void Crown Prince was shocked.

Was the Black Dragon just now an illusion? Had they mistaken that dragon-shaped demonic energy for a Black Dragon?

If one of them had seen incorrectly then that might have been acceptable, but for all three of them to see the wrong thing, that was unusual!

As the saying went – divine spear like dragon. Could it be because this spear truly held the charm of a dragon, thus at first glance they had thought it to be a True Dragon?

"This is a divine spear. I fear that its grade might surpass an Empyrean spirit treasure!"

The Divine Void Third Crown Prince's pupils shrank and his breathing became a bit ragged and loud. Greed shined in his eyes.

If Lin Ming were here he would have instantly identified that this black spear was in fact extremely similar to the dragon spear that the Black Asura had held in the Gate of Laws!

If so, then the significance of this spear was beyond extraordinary!

“Haha, to find this spear is Your Highness’ great lucky chance as well as our great lucky chance!

As Juku gripped the pieced-together map, all the muscles on his body began to bulge out.

Duke Fullmoon also gulped; after all, he too was a spear master. However, he was well aware that with the Divine Void Third Crown Prince standing right beside him, it wouldn’t be his turn for such a good thing. Still, he could drink a little of the soup afterwards.

And indeed, the Third Crown Prince said, “Don’t worry, I will not take sole possession of this spear; after all, my weapon is not a spear. I will take this spear and gift it to our Divine Kingdom and we shall be rewarded with unimaginable riches!”

The Divine Void Crown Prince was skilled in manipulating emotions and thoughts; he naturally wouldn’t do something so stupid like betraying the heart of his subordinates.

“Your Highness, allow me to fetch it!” Juku eagerly said.

“Be careful!”

The Divine Void Third Crown Prince nodded.

Juku suppressed the excitement in his heart and flew into the air. After moving forwards a thousand feet he remained high in the sky. Facing the black spear he traced his spatial ring and took out two blood red puppets. These puppets were created by a World King level puppet master and in the hands of a martial artist familiar with puppet techniques, they could display a strength at the late Divine Lord realm.

In the final trial, a late Divine Lord puppet wasn’t worth mentioning at all; it simply wasn’t much use in battle. But, using them for exploring the way was extremely useful.

Juku guessed that this Black Dragon Spear wouldn’t be easy to obtain. In order to grow up to the level he was at, he couldn’t be an idiot. If he were to recklessly try to take such a great treasure, he might be sending himself into the jaws of death. To use puppets to explore the way first was the most appropriate plan!

Woosh! Woosh!

The two puppets fired towards the Black Dragon Spear, one right one left!

As the puppets approached the Black Dragon Spear, the demonic energy gathered around the dragon spear became wild and violent. The demonic energy turned into a black dragon phantom that plunged towards the two puppets. In an instant, the two puppets were melted to nothing!

Juku was startled; he immediately took several steps back. Indeed, this spear wouldn’t be easy to take. He had to find some other method to do so.

As he was deep in thought trying to think of some other way, his complexion immediately changed. He watched blankly on as the terrifying demonic energy melted away the two puppets and then hurtled towards their puppet master like it had a mind of its own!

Chapter 1698 – Bloodthirsty Black Dragon

Chapter 1698 – Bloodthirsty Black Dragon

…

…

…

This dragon-shaped black energy was able to determine and locate its true enemy!

Juku’s complexion rapidly changed and he hurriedly drew backwards. However, that Black Dragon was far too fast. Although its body was only ten feet long, it hurtled through the air like a bolt of black lightning, immediately overtaking Juku!

Juku roared out loud and took out a heavy sword from his spatial ring, slashing down at the approaching Black Dragon phantom.

Juku’s cultivation wasn’t as high as Duke Fullmoon’s, but in terms of talent he was slightly superior. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for him to obtain a spot in the final trial. As his heavy sword came slashing down, soul force gushed out like a tsunami.

However, that Black Dragon phantom ignored all of this. In rushed into that sea of soul force and split it apart. Not only did the Black Dragon not collapse but it instead swallowed up all of Juku’s strength!

For a time, Juku was scared out of his mind. He rapidly touched his spatial ring, taking out a black-red divine runic symbol, but, the Black Dragon phantom was far too fast. Before Juku could activate the divine runic symbol, it had already bitten him!

Chi chi chi!

The Black Dragon phantom turned into countless threads of bloody black energy. It drilled into Juku's ears, nose… every single inch of Juku's body.

For some time, Juku's body wildly shook as black energy filled him. His originally tall and vigorous body began to wither away…

"Juku!"

Everything that occurred just now had happened in the blink of an eye. The Divine Void Crown Prince's complexion paled; he didn't dare to go forwards!

In this fearful pall, he didn't even dare to take a breath or turn around and escape, lest he alarm that terrifying Black Dragon!

"Damnit!"

The Divine Void Crown Prince clenched his jaws but he was helpless to do anything. He could only hold his breath and restrain his aura to avoid being detected by the Black Dragon.

After some time, a pile of broken bones, a husk of wrinkled skin, and a divine runic symbol that had just been taken out but not yet used began to scatter down from the air.

Seeing this, Duke Fullmoon couldn't help but shiver. His palms were already slick with a cold sweat. Luckily he hadn't been the one to attempt taking the black spear or his fate wouldn't have been much better; he was only a little stronger than Juku and there was an extremely limited number of things he could have done.

As the Black Dragon phantom in the air ate up all of Juku's essence energy and blood vitality it began to appear increasingly lifelike. It roared out again and again, its cold and grim pupils flashing with a gluttonous light. It stared at the Divine Void Third Crown Prince and Duke Fullmoon.

Caught in the phantom's gaze, Duke Fullmoon and the Divine Void Crown Prince felt as if they had fallen into a sea of ice!

Juku had died and they had only been able to watch helplessly on, not being able to assist him and not being able to run away. With the speed of the Black Dragon phantom that they witnessed with their own eyes, even if they used all of their strength to leave they still wouldn't even be 30% of its speed. They would be overtaken in the blink of an eye!

What they feared the most was the Black Dragon phantom discovering them. And now, as the Black Dragon phantom looked at them they both paled, their minds shaking!

Even so, they didn't dare move a single step!

After the Black Dragon phantom stared at the Divine Void Crown Prince and Duke Fullmoon for a quarter hour, leaving them both drenched with sweat, it turned tail and flew back to the giant rock, fusing back into the Black Dragon Spear and disappearing from sight.

It was only then that the Divine Void Crown Prince and Duke Fullmoon were able to let out a long breath of relief!

It was like all the strength had left their limbs, leaving them wobbly and exhausted. Their clothes were also wet; this experience was no different from suffering through a grueling war. To them, this short quarter hour felt as long as an entire year!

"How terrifying..."

Duke Fullmoon said, his voice shaking as he spoke. When facing a threat of true and unavoidable death, a martial artist's response wasn't much better than that of a mortal.

"What a heavy demonic energy... I finally know how that demonic energy formed... perhaps that Black Dragon phantom killed too many people and the hatred, resentment, and grievances of these victims gathered together, condensing into such a heavy demonic energy!"

"That Black Dragon phantom might be an artifact spirit... when we first didn't see the dragon spear and saw the Black Dragon, that might not have been an illusion. It was just that in the brief split-second, the Black Dragon had hidden itself in the spear... thus we had taken it as the dragon spear. This fellow… might have intentionally hidden itself in the spear so that we would lower our guard and draw closer. It wants to use our blood and flesh as its food!”

“What a clever beast! In these past years who knows how many extraordinary elites have been killed by it, their blood nourishing it all this time. It must have consumed an incalculable amount of strength! But, what is strange is that it has clearly discovered us, but even though it desires flesh and blood it still doesn’t attack us.

“There might be some rule or contract restricting it. For instance, it cannot provoke others on its own initiative unless it’s been attacked first…”

Duke Fullmoon and the Divine Void Crown Prince were considered as people with strong wills. Although they were scared pale and shaking just now, after the danger had passed they were able to quickly calm down and analyze the situation.

“What should we do, give up?” Duke Fullmoon stared at the Black Dragon Spear. Although he wanted this spear, he also knew that he didn’t possess the ability to wield it, much less be able to obtain it. He wouldn’t be able to use many of the advantages from obtaining the spear, and obtaining it by himself was simply impossible.

Lucky chances always had to be contrasted to their dangers. With this, Duke Fullmoon developed the thought of retreating.

But the Divine Void Crown Prince actually licked his lips as if he were secretly considering something. Although he knew it would be tremendously dangerous, he still wasn’t willing to give up like this…

……….

“Too dangerous! Too dangerous!”

In the middle of the fourth level, two youths had just experienced a thrilling, soul-stirring escape from danger! Just then they had encountered a giant diamond ape!

This giant diamond ape was a ridiculous monster. Even the combined all-out attacks of the two youths weren't able to injure its fur. As for the attacks of the giant diamond ape, just the aftermath alone was enough to shatter the two youths' protective true essence.

Originally, for these two youths to encounter such a disastrous monster, in ten encounters they would die ten times with no hopes of survival. Luckily, the giant diamond ape wasn't the most intelligent of monsters. Just when the two had fallen into hopeless despair, they had used an illusion technique to deceive the giant diamond ape and thus escape this danger.

After fleeing, their bodies had been drenched with a cold sweat and their hands and feet were feeling clammy.

"Big Brother, we're lucky you were smart enough to simulate our appearances with an illusion and use that to lead the monster away. That thing is simply the most terrifying vicious beast I have ever seen!" One of the two youths said as he raggedly gasped for breath.

"Second Brother, now isn't the time to relax. The giant diamond ape will discover it has been tricked sooner or later, and when it does it will become enraged. With our speed, it definitely might be able to catch up to us. We should flee this land as soon as we can."

As the two people were discussing fleeing, they looked at the boundless canopy of trees in front of them. These boundless giant trees pierced into the heavens, making them both feel strangely uncomfortable.

These trees were all massive, and not even 20-30 people would be able to encircle them.

The thick leaves layered over each other and a single leaf was the size of a bathtub. Originally, only a dim light filtered into this land, but walking into that forest would be the same as entering an utterly dark night.

These two youths were a pair of genius brothers that came from an ancient martial family at the far east side of the Asura Road. They had experienced repeated life or death situations to finally arrive at this area in the fourth level.

But, they never imagined that just after escaping one danger, there would always be another perilous danger just waiting around the corner!

“Awooo!”

At this time, the roar of a vicious beast echoed out from the forest. This terrifying sound, joined together with a horrifying aura, washed out like an endless tidal wave. For a time, all of the nearby plants were sent flying away as the earth shook.

The two youths were also sent tumbling away by this voice and aura. For a time their faces were paper-white and they were at a loss for what to do. There was the giant diamond ape behind them and an unknown danger in front of them. This was truly a calamitous dilemma!

Bang –

From deep within the forest a terrifying explosion suddenly rang out, followed by the pained howls of giant beasts. It was like a thundercloud was rolling through the dense foliage.

Waves of energy transmitted out from the distance, like a sun was exploding, emitting a blinding light as a torrential torrent of essence energy rocketed to the horizon.

This strength was so great that the two youths felt a tingling feeling creep over their scalp and they nearly slumped to the ground.

“Big Brother, in front of us… is probably… something even more terrifying…”

The younger brother who spoke was already dripping wet with sweat. As he looked at the forest in front of him that not a single ray of light could penetrate, he felt weak at heart.

Without a doubt, there was a brutal slaughter occurring within the depths of the forest!

The two brothers were at a loss of what to do. After ten breaths of time passed, the battle with the forest began to quiet down. Afterwards, a shadowy figure leapt out from the distant woods, impacting towards the heavens like a meteor! Then, as if this figure had discovered something, it suddenly switched directions in midair and hurtled towards the two brothers!

With an explosive rumbling, this figure crashed in front of the two brothers. The earth beneath them started cracking apart like a spider's web!

Dust scattered in all directions. An astonishing scent of blood filled the air, blasting into the noses of the two youths.

In that moment, standing in front of the two brothers was a man-shaped monster that seemed to have dug its way out from the pits of hell.

This monster stood tall and its hair hung loose. Its entire body was wet with dark red blood and black scales covered its body. These scales were absolutely not some kind of armor, but a part of its body.

It was normally impossible for a person to appear like this.

This man-shaped monster turned its head. Its two pupils were partly blocked by its loose hair, but even then they projected a horrifyingly sharp light.

Looking at these two pupils, the two youths were frightened out of their wits. Without a doubt, they were absolutely no match for this man-shaped monster.

This monster could kill them in but a mere instant.

Just by standing here, they felt as if they would die soon!

And at this time, the man-shaped monster actually didn't attack. Rather, its lips moved and it asked, "You two… do you know… where there are stronger monsters?"

The two youths were left dumbfounded. This monster could speak! Moreover, the way it spoke wasn't like a monster!

"It… it's… a person!"

The younger brother cried out in alarm. As they realized this they were both overjoyed. Looking carefully, they discovered that even though this person was bathed in blood and looked unbelievably fierce, and its body was also covered with scales like a monster's body might be, its face actually seemed quite familiar.

After staring for several breaths of time, the two youths nearly fell over in surprise.

This sword-sharp forehead, this swift and fierce look, as if his face were carved from sabers, this person was clearly…

“Y-y-y-y-you…” The young brother stuttered, pointing at this man-shaped monster, “Lin… Lin Ming!”

The two of them never would have imagined that this man-shaped monster was Lin Ming!

Chapter 1699 – Venturing Deeper Into the Fourth Level

Chapter 1699 – Venturing Deeper Into the Fourth Level

…

…

…

These two brothers didn't recognize Lin Ming at the start. With a martial artist's senses, it would normally be impossible for them to make such a foolish mistake if they looked carefully. But at this time, Lin Ming's entire body was covered with scales and he was half a foot higher. His hair was thick and wild, like a savage born from the jungle.

Moreover, the scales around his body were dyed red with blood and his clothes had been torn to unrecognizable bits. It was impossible for one to see a trial challenger here; rather, all one could think of was an Asura demon from hell.

Before, these two brothers were already scared silly by the giant diamond ape, and as they saw this death star appear before them, all they could think was 'it's over, it's over, it's all over, we're all dead here'.

It was only when they realized this monster was Lin Ming that they relaxed a little. Even so, the shock in their hearts didn't dim in the least. If they weren't wrong, then the one that had been in that dreadful fight in the forest was Lin Ming!

Lin Ming looked at these two speechless ancient martial family geniuses. His voice was low as he asked, "Where… are stronger monsters?"

The two youths were stunned, not immediately answering. They had just been sent scurrying about by monsters and now Lin Ming was asking them where to find stronger ones?

What was he planning on doing?

Lin Ming frowned a little. Now that he entered the fourth level, he not only sought treasures here but also to temper and gain experience!

In the star-like immortal palace, Lin Ming had absorbed the drop of Asura blood. But because the strength contained within the Asura blood was excessively huge, he had been forced to divert it into the nine Dao Palaces. This meant that the astral essence, spirit essence, and true essence within Lin Ming's body were affected and their equilibrium was in disorder. Even the Heretical God Force, grandmist energy, black hole energy and Asura Heavenly Dao Laws within him had been affected, all of them becoming slightly restless.

With so many chaotic energies swirling within him, Lin Ming needed to straighten them out and have them fuse with his body. And, the best method to do so was to fight! Fight without end!

Thus, in the fourth level, while the other geniuses here were diligently searching for treasures and avoiding all the various monsters and dangers, Lin Ming was different.

To him, this fourth level was a training zone. He searched for monsters on his own initiative and fought them. Not only was he adjusting the strengths within his body but he was also honing the combat skills and fighting spirit from the Asura blood.

Lin Ming had spent far too long in the star-like immortal palace. He hadn't been in the fourth level for long, and when he first appeared, all that was around him was an endless forest. There was a considerable number of monsters in this forest but after a massacre that lasted for a full day and night, Lin Ming felt that although there was a high quantity of monsters here, their quality and strength were lacking. This wasn't enough to satisfy him.

In particular, after he stimulated the strength of the Asura blood, these monsters weren't even able to withstand three of his moves.

Thus, when he discovered these two trial challengers he dropped in front of them to ask where there were stronger monsters.

At this time, there was a loud rumbling sound on the distant horizon. Soon, an over 60 foot tall giant diamond ape hurtled towards the three young men!

This ape was like a madly rushing ox, its speed reaching unbelievable velocities. At first it was on the horizon, but in just the blink of an eye it was within a thousand feet of the group!

In that moment, the two martial family youths both paled!

"G-g-g-giant diamond ape! It's found us!"

"Shit! This is bad, we must scatter!"

The two youths shouted. But before they could even respond, beside them, the devil-like Lin Ming that was thick with the smell of blood suddenly moved. A brilliant fighting spirit ignited in his eyes and his figure flashed, leaving the two youths behind in a cloud of dust. Like a meteor rising into the sky, he shot straight towards that giant diamond ape!

The two youths were left dumbfounded. They even forgot about escaping.

In their experience, this giant diamond ape had a simply unimaginable strength. Yet, Lin Ming was hurtling towards it!

They didn't doubt that Lin Ming was some sort of freakish genius that could instantly kill them, but facing this giant diamond ape that didn't seem to possess any weakness at all, could Lin Ming really do anything?

Bang!

A massive impact force burst out from the collision of ape and man!

A blinding divine light burst out like a sharp sword, piercing into the heavens!

The giant diamond ape released a pained roar. Its chest had been punched by Lin Ming, leaving behind a deep hollow!

One of its ribs had been forcefully smashed apart by Lin Ming's fist!

"F-fist…"

The two youths gulped, their throats twitching. They knew that Lin Ming's weapon of choice was a spear, but when facing this giant diamond ape that hadn't been injured by their all-out attacks, Lin Ming had only needed to use a fist to wound it!

Was he planning on fighting the giant diamond ape in hand-to-hand combat?

"Roar! Roar! Roar!"

The giant diamond ape was enraged!

This rage had come from being injured by a mere little human. The wound had been a provocation of its might and dignity!

The giant diamond ape grabbed at Lin Ming. But, Lin Ming's speed was as fast as a bolt of lightning. His figure flashed and he immediately vanished from the giant diamond ape's reach. In the next moment, Lin Ming's right foot landed atop the giant diamond ape's long arm.

Then, using this ape's arm as a foothold, Lin Ming shot towards the giant diamond ape's head!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Lin Ming punched out again and again, smashing at the giant diamond ape!

His fists tore through the void and cracked open the earth. Each fist contained an unimaginable strength!

The power of thunder and fire!

The power of heavenly tribulation!

Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

Grandmist Laws!

Asura Heavenly Dao!

All of these different strengths sparked atop Lin Ming’s fist! In the fierce barrage of attacks, all of these strengths began slowly fusing together!

In this close melee combat, every strike was like the strike of a forging hammer, hammering at the different strengths within Lin Ming’s body, allowing him to comprehensively master and understand them!

Without using weapons, allowing the feel of every strike to vibrate through his flesh and bones, this method of tempering in allowing Lin Ming’s body to directly accept the impact was far better!

For a time, energy wildly surged out. The roar of thunder filled the air as blood energy shot through the skies!

A thousand feet away, the two youths’ jaws dropped open as they saw this earth-shaking battle. Their minds trembled and their bodies shook.

This was far too terrifying. This simply wasn’t a strength that a human should have. Without using a weapon, Lin Ming was fighting the giant diamond ape in a hand-to-hand melee!

Rumble rumble rumble!

The speed of Lin Ming's fist strikes reached the limit. Even so, the giant diamond ape had a horrifying defensive power. Although Lin Ming's fists contained the strength of several dragons, he still couldn't fatally injure the beast.

But with fist after fist accumulating, the internal organs of the giant diamond ape, including its blood vessels, fascia, everything began to develop heavy internal injuries.

However, in such close range melee, no matter how fast or nimble Lin Ming was, he was unable to completely avoid all of the giant diamond ape's attacks.

Lin Ming punched at the giant diamond ape's eyelids, smashing in one of its eyes. The giant diamond ape suddenly roared out loud and brought a hand crashing down on Lin Ming's back!

Kacha!

With a loud explosive sound, the black scales on Lin Ming's back solidly withstood this strike!

This horrifying impact force was like being struck by a planet. Lin Ming was sent flying backwards, crashing through and snapping several dozen old trees. Finally, with a thunderous sound, he crashed into the ground, sending endless plumes of rock and dirt splashing upwards.

"This... this..."

The two ancient martial family juniors were left in a daze, unable to come up with any words. To have one's body be directly struck by the giant diamond ape, what sort of concept was that?

Perhaps even a saint World King powerhouse would be split in half by the attack!

Just as this thought flashed in their minds, before they could decide whether or not they should continue fleeing there was a stir in the wreckage. In the area where Lin Ming landed, there was a loud eruption of chaos as a blood-drenched Lin Ming leapt upwards from the cracked earth like a wild tiger!

Many of the scales on his back had broken apart, but they didn't completely shatter. Rivulets of blood began leaking out from between the scales.

These scales were far beyond any normal armor!

The scales were engraved with runes of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws. As an impact force spread through the layers of scales, it would be rapidly reduced. Then, when the impact force reached Lin Ming's true body, it wouldn't have enough strength to truly wound his organs and meridians!

As the giant diamond ape saw this, fear finally began to fill its eyes.

It roared at Lin Ming, wanting to intimidate, but Lin Ming was unmoved. One step at a time, Lin Ming moved forwards.

The giant diamond ape retreated again and again, terrified.

Finally, it wasn't able to withstand the dreadful pressure rolling off of Lin Ming. To the shock of the two ancient martial family geniuses, the beast turned tail and fled!

"It's running… running away!"

"The giant diamond ape, an ancient vicious beast, was actually forced to run away by Lin Ming's fist…"

The two youths were inexplicably shocked.

But at this moment, Lin Ming stepped forwards and chased after the beast!

Although the giant diamond ape wasn't the smartest of beasts, it possessed an amazingly fast movement speed.

However, when compared to Lin Ming, it was simply far too slow!

In just several breaths of time, the beast had been overtaken by Lin Ming.

On the distant horizon, another brutal fight began!

Lin Ming still didn't use a weapon. The giant diamond ape howled out mournfully again and again!

Lin Ming's fists struck solid flesh again and again!

Finally, too many internal injuries had accumulated. The giant diamond ape vomited out a mouthful of blood that was awash with bits and pieces of organs.

After countless punches by Lin Ming, the giant diamond ape that was as large as an iron tower was struck dead, all of its organs having been burst apart. It keeled over to the ground.

Lin Ming stood on the corpse of the giant diamond ape and pulled out the monster crystal from within its body, placing it into his spatial ring. Then, he slowly walked away.

As the two ancient martial family youths saw the entirely bloodstained Lin Ming walking over to them, they felt all of their courage shatter. It was hard for them to withstand the terrifying pressure released by Lin Ming!

This was because the infernal energy swirling around Lin Ming's body was too heavy. In addition to the power of the Grandmist Laws, Asura Heavenly Dao, and Heretical God Force that lingered around him, these invisible energies created an intangible force field with him at the center. If a normal martial artist were to stand in the range of this force field, they would find it difficult to withstand!

Even these outstanding trial challengers from ancient martial families weren't an exception!

"Where… are stronger monsters?"

This was the third time Lin Ming had asked this question.

The two youths felt their arms trembling. They had already confirmed that this freak Lin Ming had come to the fourth level to fight!

His main purpose here was not to seek treasures, but to fight! He was no different from a madman!

“Deep… deeper in… the deeper you venture into the fourth level, the stronger the monsters will be. In the fourth level, the deeper it is, the more lucky chances there are, but the dangers will also be correspondingly greater… in the fourth level… besides the Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame’s squads… there are not many other squads… that are willing to go so deep…”

The older of the two martial artists haltingly said as he pointed towards a direction. That direction he pointed in led deeper into the fourth level.

Chapter 1700 – Plot

Chapter 1700 – Plot

…

…

…

At the third level of the final trial, when a martial artist received their reward they would be teleported alone to the fourth level. But, those that received the same level of rewards took around the same amount of time to do so, thus they entered the fourth level at nearly the same time. Even if they were transmitted to random locations, they could still quickly find one or two of their companions to form temporary squads.

However, for Lin Ming, because he had spent too much time on the blue stone road, he arrived much later than everyone else. By this time, many people had already been fighting for several days.

"Deeper into the fourth level… I understand…"

Lin Ming nodded at the two youths and turned around, slowly heading deeper into the fourth level.

Strong winds howled and the scent of blood filled the world. As he sped forwards, his back was as straight as a spear, standing proudly upon this desolate wasteland, filled with a heroic and daring momentum!

The nine suns in the skies slowly fell down beyond the horizon, signaling the approach of night.

Lin Ming was like a death god wandering the night. Whether it was the forests, wilderness, or glaciers, he advanced in a straight line. No matter what monsters, evil races or demonic beings came at him, he didn't use his spear but fought them with his hands!

Like this, Lin Ming crossed past the middle of the fourth level and continued towards the back.

This was a black and red swamp. In the night, the swamp emitted a misty black fog which contained the rotting aura of peerless powerhouses and desolate ancient vicious beasts that had perished here. If a lower level martial artist were to breathe in the gas here, all the flesh of their body would melt away!

Within this terrifying black fog, a massive number of cruel and vile spirits and ghosts would be born. To a trial challenger, this was a danger zone amongst danger zones!

If a common squad were to arrive here, they would have turned tail and fled.

But Lin Ming actually walked directly into this land!

Chi chi chi!

Behind Lin Ming, the phantom of an Asura appeared. This Asura held a massive wheel in his hands, and spinning above this wheel were countless phantoms of suffering demons. This was the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel rose up into the air, revolving and forming a giant vortex. A tremendous amount of the black fog was sucked into the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel and refined into pure energy!

Wu wu wu ~

The ear-piercing howls of malevolent spirits rose up through the world. Because Lin Ming was recklessly swallowing up the black fog in this swamp, he had aroused the evil spirits here. Ghostly purple flames flickered as spectral beings appeared in front of Lin Ming.

A giant python corpse brought its giant head up from the rancid swamp mud. Its gaping maw emitted black gas that could melt away divine iron…

Seeing this, Lin Ming simply smiled.

These ghosts and spirits deep in the fourth level didn't leave him disappointed. Whether it was in numbers or strength, they far surpassed the evil beings that lived in the periphery of the fourth level.

With an explosive roar, Lin Ming opened the Heretical God Force. Power erupted from his body and the phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared behind him. The power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation came pouring out, sparkling!

Whether it was thunder or fire, they were the nemesis of ghosts. Lin Ming wrapped himself in thunder and flames and hurtled towards these spectral spirits!

Rumble rumble rumble!

A terrifying explosion of air surged out. Flames ascended, arcs of thunder twisted about. Each and every ghost was pierced through by Lin Ming's thunder and fire, turned to ash and sent scattering into the wind!

A terrifying strength exploded in the air. The corpse python howled as its decayed body was rapidly swallowed up by the power of Heavenly Dao Judgment's thunder and fire!

Woosh –

With a light sound, a piece of information thrust into Lin Ming's mind.

A thought appeared in Lin Ming's consciousness – fourth level, completion, max!

He had completed the fourth level to the maximum possible?

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. As he slaughtered his way through the fourth level he hadn't been paying attention to the growth of his completion rate.

When Lin Ming first passed the Asura level Gate of Laws, his completion rate had reached 45%. As for the third level, there were only rewards there; Lin Ming's completion rate hadn't increased.

And now, in the fourth level, Lin Ming's completion rate rose by 15%, reaching all the way to 60%!

This number was already the maximum allowed. No matter how many more monsters he killed this number wouldn't increase.

However, Lin Ming didn't bother with this. The reason he came to the fourth floor was to slaughter as many enemies as possible to temper himself, not for completion percentage!

Kill!

Kill everything!

Kill! Kill! Kill!

Lin Ming wildly laughed and broke into the crowds of monsters and ghosts, his fists sweeping out. Thunder and fire howled around him as he killed ten ghosts in a single step!

……….

As Lin Ming was crazily fighting and tempering himself, deep in the fourth level, beneath the icy cold skies, the Divine Void Crown Prince and Duke Fullmoon had come to a pause.

They didn't approach the black rock in front of them nor did they dare approach the Black Dragon Spear. But, to leave just like this wasn't something they were willing to do.

"Your Highness, there are only a dozen or so more days until… the channel to the fifth level opens. We must find a solution as soon as possible or give up on the dragon spear."

Duke Fullmoon explained. In truth he had already given birth to the thought of retreating. Even if he helped in obtaining the Black Dragon Spear, the advantages he would obtain would be limited.

It was better to give up on this futile quest and save his own life.

The Divine Void Crown Prince's complexion darkened. The fourth level was shaped like a massive rectangle. The trial challengers started on one end and the further they went towards the other end, the deeper into the fourth level they would go and the greater the risks would be. Generally speaking, the passage from the fourth level to the fifth level would always appear around the middle of this rectangle.

In other words, as long as one arrived at the middle of the fourth level they would be able to enter the fifth level.

Once the channel to the fifth level opened, it would also take time to turn around and arrive at the middle.

Moreover, they had to kill a sufficient number of monsters in order to obtain the max completion percentage here. Up until now they had only slain 60% of the required monsters. They weren't as fierce as Lin Ming who was wildly killing his way through this level. Rather, they had to be selective in choosing their enemies and avoid the terrifying fellows that lurked here.

As the Divine Void Crown Prince was lost in a dilemma, he heard a whistling sound come from the distance.

He looked up, his guard raised, to see a brilliant flame approaching from the far off horizon.

This flame blotted out the skies. In the center of these flames, a fat youth in bright yellow imperial robes was sitting on a firebird, flying over towards them.

And behind this fat youth was a young warrior covered in silver armor that radiated a dazzling light, as if his armor had been encrusted with stars.

This warrior hurtled through the sky, the air rippling around him. Visible ripples followed him in the air, clearly demonstrating his formidable strength.

“Bigflame?” The Divine Void Crown Prince’s eyes filled with disgust. At this time this tubby fellow had actually come here. Really, enemies crossed paths far too often!

However, this was also well within reason. Out of all the squads in the fourth level, there was only an extremely small number of trial challengers that had the courage to venture this far. Bigflame’s group was one such squad.

Thus, bumping into him here wasn’t a coincidence at all.

Suddenly, a ruthless hostility flashed through the Divine Void Crown Prince’s mind. He extracted his weapon, killing intent surging out from him as he faced Bigflame!

He said to Duke Fullmoon with a sound transmission, “Fullmoon, follow me and put on a good play!”

Duke Fullmoon immediately understood what was happening and extracted his weapon. The two people turned towards Bigflame, one left one right, as if they were guarding the Black Dragon Spear behind them. As they faced the disciples of Heaven Union Divine Kingdom’s Divine Sovereign as well as that amazingly strong silver armored warrior, it seemed as if they were ready to fight at any moment!

“What? You want to fight?”

Seeing Duke Fullmoon and the Divine Void Crown Prince be so vigilant, Bigflame happily smiled. “There’s no need to be so tense, we’re just a little bit disharmonious, right? There’s no need to fight as soon as we see each other! You should know that our two sides have similar strength. If we fight, it won’t be good for anyone!”

Bigflame sneered. But at this time he caught sight of the massive black rock behind Duke Fullmoon and the Divine Void Crown Prince.

As well as the Black Dragon at the top of the rock!

“Dragon!?” Bigflame was shocked. However, he immediately shook his head. “No, that’s not right! That’s a dragon spear! Hahaha! That is a treasure surpassing the level of an Empyrean spirit treasure! We’ve really struck a big lucky chance this time!”

Seeing this dragon spear, Bigflame’s eyes shone with a greedy light!

As Bigflame flanked the Divine Void Crown Prince and Duke Fullmoon who had raised their weapons, he said, “No wonder they’re being so vigilant. So it’s because there is a treasure here.”

“Bigflame, this Black Dragon Spear is already mine! You had best get out of my way!” The Divine Void Crown Prince icily said as he stared at Bigflame.

Bigflame didn’t even bother looking at the Divine Void Crown Prince; his burning gaze was locked onto the Black Dragon Spear, his emotions bubbling over with excitement.

When he entered the fourth level his group had searched for lucky chances everywhere. But up until now, they had only picked up some medicinal herbs that weren’t too precious as well as several remnant pieces of ancient cultivation methods. These harvests weren’t enough to satisfy Bigflame.

It wasn’t until he ventured deep into the fourth level that he was attracted by a vast and terrifying aura. Thus, he arrived here only to discover that the Divine Void Third Crown Prince and Duke Fullmoon had already arrived a step early.

“You two should be the ones getting out of my way! That treasures is mine and mine alone!” Bigflame’s chubby face stretched as he smiled. Then, he took out a blood red saber from his spatial ring and slashed it out. A great saber light filled the air, covering Duke Fullmoon and the Third Crown Prince.

At the same time, Bigflame launched a movement technique. His round body was unexpectedly fast, as speedy as a bolt of lightning. As Duke Fullmoon and the Third Crown Prince were covered in his saber light, he swooped down to grab the Black Dragon Spear!

His speed was incredibly fast. Just as he was about to step onto the black rock, a vague restless nervousness appeared in his heart – strange, something was wrong here… this treasure… could it really be obtained so easily?

Could the Divine Void Crown Prince have deliberately allowed him to take it!?

At this time, Bigflame suddenly caught sight of something from the corners of his eyes. There, at the wasteland below him, was the withered corpse of someone. This person's face was already mutilated to the point of being indescribable, but what was abundantly clear was that this withered skin bag of bones was new.

This person had just died here!

Bigflame immediately felt that the situation was dire!

As the most favored direct disciple of Heaven Union Divine Kingdom's Divine Sovereign, Bigflame was no fool. He forcefully stopped himself in midair and hastily drew backwards!

In the blink of an eye, Bigflame had returned to his original position. He hadn't alarmed the Black Dragon Spear but his forehead was dripping with a cold sweat. Just now he had taken a trip to the gate of death!

Bigflame sneered, his eyes filling with murderous intent as he looked towards the Divine Void Crown Prince. "Hehe, what a clever plan you had!"

The Divine Void Crown Prince shrugged, "It seems you aren't as dumb as I thought. You were actually able to see through my plans… what a pity!"

The Divine Void Crown Prince didn't care about Bigflame. He just didn't think that Bigflame would find a clue in the crucial moment and escape this calamity.

Bigflame savagely grinned, “What use is there in harming me? You probably couldn’t take the dragon spear yourself. On the contrary…”

As Bigflame spoke to here he sensed something and turned around. On the far off horizon, there was another swift and fierce aura rapidly approaching!

“How interesting, it seems someone else has arrived!”

Chapter 1701 – Trap

Chapter 1701 – Trap

…

…

…

A horrifying sonic boom rolled through the air. This person was coming at an astonishing speed. At first he was far off in the horizon, but in a mere instant he had arrived within several tens of thousands of feet from the group.

As the Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame saw this person, they were both left stunned.

This person was bathed in blood and had killing intent brimming from his head to his toes. Even so, they were able to immediately recognize that this person was Lin Ming!

“Lin Ming! So it was him!”

The Divine Void Crown Prince’s complexion was grim and gloomy. He wouldn’t bear any contempt towards Lin Ming because of his cultivation. Just because Lin Ming had perfectly passed the Asura level Gate of Laws, this alone caused the Divine Void Crown Prince to feel a deep sense of fear towards him!

“This little beast!”

Duke Fullmoon clenched his jaws. He hated Lin Ming to the extreme.

The Divine Void Crown Prince’s thoughts stirred and he immediately recovered Juku’s withered corpse from above the black rock.

Bigflame saw this happen from the corner of his eyes. He coldly sneered, “What, you think you can trick Lin Ming just by hiding that corpse? You think he would fall for something like that?”

A strange light flashed in the Divine Void Crown Prince’s eyes and he savagely smiled. “This Lin Ming has a great destiny upon his body and entered that planet-sized immortal palace. It's hard to imagine just what rewards he obtained within. Aren’t you interested in finding out? If we can draw support from this spear to bring him down, then everything he has will be ours! At that time, even if we can’t obtain the Black Dragon Spear, just the treasures on Lin Ming’s body will be a great harvest!”

The Divine Void Crown Prince’s words caused a greedy light to shine in Bigflame’s eyes.

Indeed, the rewards within the planet-sized immortal palace were a mystery. Just what was inside that immortal palace? They couldn’t imagine just what the scene inside was even in their dreams.

In the legends, no one had been able to enter that immortal palace for billions of years. But, Lin Ming was able to enter. Just thinking this sent Bigflame reeling in jealousy!

It was definitely a top treasure left behind by the Asura Road Master!

If the reward from the planet-sized immortal palace was some cultivation method jade slip, magic tool, spirit treasure, or something like that, then they could take it for themselves after killing Lin Ming!

If it was a pill then Lin Ming might not have been able to eat it up due to the limits of his cultivation. If so, they could wrest away that also!

Even if it were something like comprehensions or martial intents that they couldn’t obtain from Lin Ming’s corpse, that didn’t matter.

This was because once Lin Ming died, they would be able to obtain all other treasures on his body. With Lin Ming's young age and yet possessing such an abnormal degree of strength, it was highly likely there were many secrets on his body!

Thinking of this, everyone felt their hearts burn with covetousness.

They looked at each other and immediately formed a united front.

As for Duke Fullmoon, he only wished he could loudly applaud the Divine Void Crown Prince's suggestion. Although he didn't have much confidence facing Lin Ming alone, this black spear's evil nature was simply far too outlandish. Duke Fullmoon didn't believe that Lin Ming had the ability to tame this demonic spear. At that time, Lin Ming might end up meeting the same fate as Juku. His flesh and blood would be swallowed up and he would end up as a pile of skin and bones!

Imagining Lin Ming's tragic and horrible death, Duke Fullmoon felt overjoyed!

As for Bigflame and the silver-armored warrior behind him, they were incomparably envious towards this Lin Ming who they had considered nothing but an ant beneath their feet earlier. If they could kill him they would all be happy!

……….

As this time, Lin Ming also discovered the Divine Void Crown Prince, Bigflame, and the others. In particular, that Duke Fullmoon. This fellow was simply a ghost that wouldn't stop haunting him; Lin Ming had already developed thoughts of killing him.

"Mm? That is…"

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. His gaze locked onto the black rock behind the Divine Void Crown Prince. On this giant black rock there was a dragon spear, its demonic energy so pure and dense that it caused Lin Ming's pupils to shrink!

"The is the dragon spear that the Black Asura held!"

Lin Ming certainly recalled that within the Gate of Laws and on the blue stone road, the Black Asura had held a dragon spear, one exactly like this dragon spear in front of him!

Lin Ming couldn't confirm whether or not this dragon spear had once been one of the Asura Road Master's weapons. But no matter what he thought about it, out of all the weapons Lin Ming had ever seen in his life, this Black Dragon Spear was the highest ranked one!

For a time, Lin Ming's thoughts blazed for this spear. He earnestly desired this spear!

But Lin Ming didn't immediately do anything. He had also been watching the actions of Duke Fullmoon, the Divine Void Crown Prince, and the others from the corner of his eye.

These people had clearly already discovered the Black Dragon Spear and yet they were wandering around the periphery, just over 10,000 feet away, seemingly without any intentions of taking the spear away. This left Lin Ming with deep suspicions as to what was happening.

He focused his mind, revolving the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws in his heart and overlapping them with what he saw in front of him. To his shock, he discovered that in the gray demonic energy swirling around the Black Dragon Spear, there was a massive number of dead spirits contained within!

These dead spirits possessed a strong vengeful atmosphere and infernal energy. It was clear that they had once been peerless geniuses before their deaths, but after they had been struck down by the Black Dragon Spear, their souls were imprisoned within the demonic energy, forever unable to leave!

This sort of situation was similar to the... Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

A light lit up Lin Ming's mind. The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel could imprison the souls of powerhouses and absorb their will and energy.

And the scene in front of him was simply like the Black Dragon Spear had condensed its own Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. After swallowing up the blood essence, souls, and force fields left behind by these peerless masters, it had condensed these energies together, creating a near tangible essence that became a powerful attack method of the Black Dragon Spear!

Like how Lin Ming could use the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel to slay his enemies, the Black Dragon Spear could use this demonic energy it condensed to kill its enemies!

"Could this demonic spear have a mind of its own and have managed to cultivate the Asura Heavenly Dao?"

Realizing this, Lin Ming's thoughts turned cold!

A top grade spirit treasure had its own artifact spirit, and it wasn't strange for an artifact spirit to have its own consciousness. But for this artifact spirit to be able cultivate on its own, that was a bit astonishing. For some reason, Lin Ming felt that the demonic energy around this spear was too heavy; it was far too evil!

This caused Lin Ming to raise his guard. He didn't take another step forwards.

"This brat isn't coming over."

Duke Fullmoon frowned. He didn't think it would be easy to fool Lin Ming but he never imagined that Lin Ming would be cautious to such a degree. With the treasure right in front of him he actually stood several tens of thousands of feet away.

If so, then wanting to borrow the strength of the Black Dragon Spear to kill him would be difficult.

"Haha, why if it isn't Sir Lin!"

The Divine Void Crown Prince suddenly heartily laughed. From tens of thousands of feet away, he cupped his fists together and slightly bowed at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming looked at the Divine Void Crown Prince and sneered, saying, “Do we know each other very well?”

Lin Ming’s words weren’t polite. In life or death situations within these danger zones, even fellow disciples from the same sect would be plotting against each other, ready to stab each other in the back if necessary. Here, Lin Ming wasn’t even on friendly terms with these people and it was likely everyone here wished they could place each other in a deathtrap and seize treasures from the corpses.

In this situation, Lin Ming was disinclined to listen to the long-winded prattling and lies of this Divine Void Crown Prince.

However, the Divine Void Crown Prince seemed to care little about Lin Ming’s mocking tone. He smiled and said, “Sir Lin, you seem to have some misunderstanding? People aren’t friends at the start, but don’t they slowly get to know each other? I have a great deal of admiration towards Sir Lin’s talent!”

Lin Ming didn’t speak, allowing the Divine Void Crown Prince to say what he wanted.

“Sir Lin, let me be honest with you. I truly desire to be friends with you. Honest people don’t need to speak in riddles. We are all intelligent people here. As you know, I am a Crown Prince of the Divine Void Divine Kingdom, but what you may not know is that there are seven people with the title of Crown Prince in the Divine Void Divine Kingdom! Moreover, in the future, this number may even increase! Between the current seven Crown Princes, the competition is already extremely brutal. Although I have some advantages, they aren’t too obvious. I very much hope to make friends with some heroes, and if I could win the support of Brother Lin then my future road will surely be far smoother!”

The Divine Void Crown Prince spoke at a moderate pace. His words seemed fair and reasonable and even the way he referred to Lin Ming had changed, becoming ‘Brother Lin’.

“And?”

Lin Ming said without any expression. It was impossible to tell whether he believed these words or not.

“Haha! Brother Lin is frank and to the point! I like it! I certainly wouldn’t ask Brother Lin to help without offering anything in return. The Divine Void Divine Kingdom has rich resources and I am positive that Brother Lin will find something that interests you. Moreover, even now there is a lucky chance right before us. Brother Lin, aren’t you interested in the Black Dragon Spear behind me?”

The Divine Void Crown Prince spoke with a happy smile on his face. Without even thinking about it, it was obvious that a spear master like Lin Ming would be tempted by this Black Dragon Spear.

Lin Ming remained silent.

At this time, Bigflame laughed, “Third Crown Prince, your plan is quite meticulous. Are you planning on obtaining someone’s favor with something that even you cannot obtain? If you could have taken that spear then why would you have needed to wait until now!”

The Divine Void Crown Prince still had a smile on his face. “It’s true, I cannot take this spear. But, if I had Brother Lin’s help in addition to Brother Bigflame’s help, then there is a possibility of success!”

“Oh? Then what’s your plan?” Bigflame asked.

The Divine Void Crown Prince thought for a moment and then said, “The danger of this spear lies in the demonic energy that covers the spear body. It can turn into a Black Dragon that can swallow the blood and essence energy of a martial artist! But, there is only a single Black Dragon. As long as this Black Dragon can be distracted then one can naturally obtain the spear!

“Now, if our three sides cooperate, we can have two sides block the Black Dragon while the third takes the spear. I know that Brother Lin doesn’t believe me, so how about I and Brother Bigflame distract the Black Dragon while Brother Lin takes the spear?”

As the Divine Void Crown Prince spoke, Bigflame's heart skipped a beat. He wanted to object but held himself back.

He didn't know what the Divine Void Crown Prince was planning but he knew that the Divine Void Crown Prince was targeting Lin Ming. If so, then he would certainly join forces with the Crown Prince. However, his only fear was that the Divine Void Crown Prince would also find some way to harm him.

He couldn't help but be vigilant about this.

"Oh?" Lin Ming faintly smiled. The Divine Void Crown Prince's plan was highly advantageous to him. "What is the specific plan for implementing all of this?"

The Divine Void Crown Prince said, "Simple! First we will lure out the Black Dragon! However, this Black Dragon phantom is far too strong. No matter who tries to lure it out they will be in tremendous danger. Thus, the safest method is to use a puppet. Brother Lin comes from the Divine Runic Masters Guild and there are surely many refining masters there, so Brother Lin should have some high-grade puppets, right?"

"I do." Lin Ming nodded.

"Then there's no problem! With these high grade puppets and Brother Lin's famed divine runic symbols, we should be able to keep off the Black Dragon's first attack. Then, we can help stand in front of Brother Lin and lay down a grand array formation to intercept the Black Dragon!"

As the Divine Void Crown Prince spoke he flew towards the Black Dragon Spear and floated on the edge of the black rock. Indeed, the area where he stood would be in front of Lin Ming and also within the path that the Black Dragon would have to take.

However, Bigflame felt weak at heart. For a time, he didn't dare to follow. No matter how he saw it, the position that the Divine Void Crown Prince chose was extremely dangerous!

The Divine Void Crown Prince turned to look at Bigflame, a little smug smile on his face. He said, “Brother Bigflame, do you not dare to come over? A lucky chance is placed right in front of you so why are you timidly dawdling over there?”

Chapter 1702 – Demonic Energy Force Field

Chapter 1702 – Demonic Energy Force Field

…

…

…

Bigflame frowned, not sure just what type of snake medicine that Divine Void Crown Prince was trying to sell.

In the current situation, Lin Ming, who was farthest away from the Black Dragon Spear, was in the safest position.

Of course, Bigflame was fully aware that the Divine Void Crown Prince was trying to trap Lin Ming. The only question was just what the Divine Void Crown Prince's plan was. Looking at where he was currently standing, if he neared the Black Dragon Spear any more and aroused the dragon soul within, they would definitely bear the brunt of the damage.

Bigflame maintained a calm expression and slowly flew forwards with the silver-armored warrior. He maintained absolute vigilance as he did so.

At this time, the Divine Void Crown Prince was already beginning to lay down a great array formation.

He was gambling that the Black Dragon Spear would only attack those that recklessly tried to take it away; this was how Juku had died. As for the Divine Void Crown Prince and Duke Fullmoon who were standing not too far away, they had been left completely safe.

Looking at the Black Dragon Spear in the distance, the Divine Void Crown Prince also felt a little weak at heart. He had no way to predict if something would randomly occur.

He was putting his full effort into laying down this grand array formation. And indeed, his every action was meticulous because this array formation was also to save his life. Beside him, Duke Fullmoon was also helping.

"Your Highness, will Lin Ming help?"

Duke Fullmoon asked, his voice lacking confidence. He always felt that Lin Ming was a bit strange and unpredictable.

"If he does, we will turn and run and then profit from the aftermath. If he doesn't then we'll need to further consider our plans..."

The Divine Void Crown Prince said, his eyes not leaving the Black Dragon Spear. With this array formation supporting them, it wasn't like they wouldn't have the ability to resist the Black Dragon Spear. If some accident occurred they would still be able to survive for some time.

Beside them, Bigflame and the silver-armored warrior also pitched in to help. All sorts of divine runic symbols, array discs, and other treasures were brought forth like they didn't cost money at all.

As the two sides were busy at work, Lin Ming floated behind them. His gaze was deep and heavy; it was impossible to tell what he was thinking.

As the array formation was finished, the Divine Void Crown Prince turned to look at Lin Ming, saying, "Brother Lin, we're prepared. Please take out your puppets."

"Puppets?"

Lin Ming smiled, still not moving.

Now, with three sides here, each side could be said to be plotting their own plans. Lin Ming also had his own intentions here.

He was trying to calculate if he were to suddenly sneak attack the Divine Void Crown Prince, Bigflame, Duke Fullmoon, and the silver-armored warrior, just what his chances would be of killing them all off!

From the start, Lin Ming didn't plan on cooperating with them to take the spear. He wanted to kill them all off and then take the spear by himself! If so, then even if the dragon spear attacked him, Lin Ming could use up every method at his disposal to subdue the dragon spear and wouldn't need to worry about someone ambushing him from behind.

However, even if Lin Ming tried his best, wanting to kill everyone here wasn't possible! As long as the four of them scattered in different directions then even if Lin Ming brought forth the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone avatar, he still wouldn't be able to chase them all down.

And if these people were to escape, news of what occurred would spread out. It would be known that he tried to kill the disciples of two True Divinity level influences. This would undoubtedly set off a great storm.

These two True Divinity level influences were the most terrifying forces in the Asura Road! Let alone their core disciples, people even didn't dare to provoke their ordinary disciples!

If someone was discovered as having killed off their core disciples, the consequences would be disastrous!

Even if he ignored those two great influences, what Lin Ming feared the most in this final trial was the person who remained aloof and distant, but still had some connection to the Divine Void Holy Lands – Soul Empress Sheng Mei. The Divine Void Crown Prince was different from Duke Fullmoon, he was a core disciple of Divine Void Divine Kingdom. If Sheng Mei knew that he had killed off the Divine Void Crown Prince, just what sort of reaction would she have?

Thus, Lin Ming didn't attack them, because if he did he needed to make sure he could exterminate them all.

As these thoughts percolated in Lin Ming's mind, a thick killing intent flashed in his eyes several times. Even so, he suppressed all of these feelings and didn't attack. Although eliminating these four people and taking the spear himself was the simplest and most direct method, he still wasn't able to do that.

Then… there was only another choice left. First, he would try to take the spear and reveal a weakness in his defenses. Once the four people thought they had a chance and developed greedy thoughts, he would use this opportunity to kill them all off.

With this plan it was much more likely that Lin Ming would be able to exterminate the four people. But, this also meant he would have to take a much greater risk!

It was because Lin Ming didn't completely understand this Black Dragon Spear!

"Brother Lin, are you not planning to help? Why? Could it be that Brother Lin doesn't want to take any risks at all? If we join hands to take the treasure, aren't Brother Lin's actions just too insincere? We're already standing at the front, taking on the most dangerous role, so what is Brother Lin waiting for?"

The Divine Void Crown Prince shouted at Lin Ming, putting on a face full of discontent.

Lin Ming remained silent. After some time, he faintly smiled and said, "There's no need to hurry!"

He slowly flew forwards until he was 10,000 feet away from the Black Dragon Spear. Then, he emitted every sense possible to probe the Black Dragon Spear. He investigated the eerie and horrifying demonic energy. With this, he was able to confirm that this demonic energy wrapped around the Black Dragon Spear was the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel recorded within the Asura Sutra.

The Asura Sutra was both righteously good and diabolically evil. As for the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, it was a tyrannical demonic cultivation method, able to gather the cruel and fierce spirits for one's own use.

"This Black Dragon Spear hasn't obtained the true lineage of the Asura Sutra. Just how could this be...?" After probing, Lin Ming discovered that the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel displayed by the Black Dragon Spear was incomplete. There were many places that were filled with mistakes. Now that this incomplete method was being used by this evil spear, it seemed even gloomier and bizarre than the true Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

If it wasn't the complete Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, then that meant there were flaws!

Lin Ming was looking for these flaws.

"Brother Lin! Why haven't you done anything yet!"

The Divine Void Crown Prince impatiently said. He was afraid that his plan had been seen through by Lin Ming. He already decided that if Lin Ming didn't do anything then he wouldn't recklessly do anything to Lin Ming either. Towards this mysterious young man, he couldn't help but feel a faint sense of dread.

"Do something? Okay!"

Lin Ming suddenly nodded, leaving the Divine Void Crown Prince surprised. Had this fellow fallen for the trap just like this?

"You finally fell for it? Wonderful! Birds die for food and people die for wealth. The nature of a person is insatiable greed to begin with, and with a lucky chance placed right in front of them, no one is capable of resisting. Even if this Lin Ming suspects me, there is finally nothing he can do to withstand the temptation of the Black Dragon Spear. If he wants to take the risk, then that's far too good..."

The Divine Void Crown Prince rapidly thought, his mind racing. Beside him, Duke Fullmoon's breathing also quickened, his pulse accelerated. He quietly gripped his spear, a ruthless light flashing in his eyes.

This Lin Ming wasn't easy to deal with but that Black Dragon Spear was simply far too evil. As long as Lin Ming moved then the two tigers would battle and they could sit back and watch the fight.

Drawing back 10,000 steps, even if that Black Dragon Spear couldn't kill Lin Ming, there wasn't any loss to them. If the four of them joined together, then even if they didn't have absolute confidence in killing Lin Ming, Lin Ming still wouldn't dare to attack them.

In other words, the truth was that they were already in an invincible position!

"I will draw out the Black Dragon phantom. The lot of you protect me."

As Lin Ming spoke, he flew towards the Black Dragon Spear.

Seeing this, the Divine Void Crown Prince's heart skipped a beat. "Brother Lin, you don't plan on using a puppet?"

The Divine Void Crown Prince was originally planning on having Lin Ming lure out the Black Dragon phantom with a puppet, but Lin Ming actually decided not to use a puppet but to go in himself. Could it be that he didn't fear the dangers enough?

"To not use a puppet and fly in himself, isn't this just a death wish?" Bigflame was shocked!

"It seems this brat only had a high level of talent, but he's actually a moron." The silver-armored warrior commented from beside Bigflame. It seemed they had all been too nervous about this. If they knew about this earlier then there wouldn't have been a need to go through all this trouble.

"Don't be careless. Who knows what tricks he's planning to play."

Bigflame and the Divine Void Crown Prince certainly wouldn't believe that Lin Ming was a fool, otherwise there was no way he would have passed the Asura level Gate of Laws.

"No matter, with the four of us joined together and raising our guards, we are in an impregnable position!"

Duke Fullmoon said with a sound transmission. Out of everyone here, he had come across Lin Ming the most. Lin Ming's previous performance at the Divine Rune City Auction had left a profound impact in his heart. After having his plans continuously torn down, Duke Fullmoon felt a lack of confidence when facing Lin Ming.

The four people stared blankly on as Lin Ming flew towards the Black Dragon Spear.

8000 feet!

5000 feet!

3000 feet!

1000 feet!

500 feet…

Lin Ming closed in, a little at a time, slowing down the closer he was. Finally, he was as slow as a walking mortal.

As he approached, his aura became increasingly deep and his eyes increasingly swift and fierce. On his face, blood red curse seals began to appear and explosive crackling sounds echoed out from within his body. He even seemed to grow taller…

Not too far away, Bigflame, Duke Fullmoon, and the others were all staring at Lin Ming with utter focus, locked onto his every move and action!

He was only 200 feet away!

The four people held their breath. Lin Ming wasn't planning on using some trick, but was actually thinking of luring out the Black Dragon phantom that lingered around the Black Dragon Spear.

Was he insane!?!?

At this time, a black fog rose up from all around the Black Dragon Spear!

A terrifying black energy surged towards Lin Ming like a tidal wave!

Within this seething black fog was a clawing Black Dragon. Its eyes were blood red, and just by looking into its gaze, one felt as if they would fall into an endless abyss!

At this time, the Black Dragon evilly smiled. “Blood energy… a stranger’s blood energy… what a rich blood energy… what an extreme delicacy, this is the greatest delicacy that I have ever encountered, the richest blood energy I have ever seen… good! Too good! You will become my most delicious meal! You will become a part of me! Let me eat you!”

The Black Dragon’s voice was filled with deceit and ruthless cruelty. Demonic energy surged around it as its voice seemed to transmit from all directions of the world. It was like the heavens and earth were shrouded in this voice!

For a time, Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. He discovered that he was covered in a massive force field!

This force field was like an independent space. There was nothing but pitch black darkness everywhere. If he reached out his hand, he wouldn’t even be able to see his five fingers!

Wu! Wu! Wu! Wu! Wu! Wu! Wu!

Horrifying ghost cries sounded from all directions. This was like a cave of 10,000 ghosts. Just by entering this land, one would be swallowed up by 10,000 ghosts!

“This is a domain sent out by the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, formed from the countless demonic souls that it has absorbed. This Black Dragon Spear, just how many people has it killed? Moreover, all of these people are outstanding existences!”

Lin Ming's mind chilled. Without a doubt, this Black Dragon Spear had existed in the final trial for a very, very long time! It had also slain a tremendous number of trial challengers!

But, what was strange was that Soul Empress Sheng Mei should also have come here, so why didn't she subdue this Black Dragon Spear?

With Soul Empress Sheng Mei's transcendent methods, no matter how strong or ghostly this Black Dragon Spear's methods were, it still wouldn't be able to escape her grasp!

Chapter 1703 – Deal

Chapter 1703 – Deal

…

…

…

But at this moment, Lin Ming didn't have time to think about why Soul Empress Sheng Mei didn't come here to subdue the Black Dragon Spear. The thick black fog had already surrounded him.

With a sizzling sound, even space itself was being melted away by the black fog!

Lin Ming was covered within the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel domain, completely separated from the world. In his field of vision, the Divine Void Crown Prince and Duke Fullmoon had both vanished.

"He's been surrounded by that black fog!" Ten thousand feet away, the Divine Void Crown Prince saw all of this happening, a sharp light shining in his eyes! "This brat, I have no idea what sort of mental problems he has. If he used a puppet to draw out the Black Dragon phantom then we'd still have to put in a great deal of effort, but now that he has been directly sucked up by the black fog, that is much more convenient for us. That black fog has a terrifying corrosive attribute, and any flesh and blood that touches it will instantly be dissolved into goo. When Juku was covered in that black fog, he instantly withered away to nothing but skin and bones!"

Juku's strength was similar to that of a World King. The Divine Void Crown Prince didn't doubt that Lin Ming was stronger than Juku, but no matter how strong Lin Ming was he wouldn't be stronger than a half-step Empyrean. As long as he was covered by that black fog, it would be impossibly difficult for him to escape unscathed.

Standing beside the Divine Void Crown Prince, Duke Fullmoon also looked on with disbelief etched on his face. "Something's wrong. This Lin Ming is a freakishly monstrous genius, so how would he die so easily?"

Duke Fullmoon muttered. His sense was blocked out by that black fog so it was impossible for him to probe Lin Ming's situation.

The Divine Void Crown Prince said, "He definitely won't die so easily. I think he must have some sort of special technique and wants to rely on this to struggle with the Black Dragon Spear. However, he likely doesn't know just how fierce that dragon spear actually is. In the fourth level of this final trial, what is tested is not just talent, but also one's cultivation!"

The final trial's first, second, and fourth level were trials that didn't discriminate. Those with higher cultivations would be able to profit more.

As for the Gate of Laws, that was a test of talent. Those with a younger skeletal age would have an advantage.

In the Divine Void Crown Prince's eyes, Lin Ming was truly a monstrous talented genius, but in terms of cultivation and combat strength, Lin Ming likely wasn't much better than they were. If he were to encounter a ghostly spirit treasure like this Black Dragon Spear, he would fall into crisis along with the rest of them.

Even if he had some special card in hand that he could use to escape, he would likely come out half-dead. At that time, it would be far easier for them to eliminate Lin Ming.

"Lin Ming underestimated his opponent too much. He is young and full of daring energy, so he likely hasn't received many setbacks on his way to where he is. He thinks that no one can match him in this world, that he can obtain anything he wants!"

“We must prepare our attacks. At this time, we absolutely cannot allow Lin Ming to escape! Everyone, use your ultimate techniques, whatever trump cards you have hidden up your sleeves! This is our good fortune!”

It wasn’t just the Divine Void Crown Prince, but Bigflame was also making his preparations. If Lin Ming was swallowed up by that black fog and reduced to dregs then that would be far better for them, but if Lin Ming managed to wriggle his way loose then they would display a thunderous barrage of attacks to exterminate him!

At this time, they all brought out their ultimate techniques without holding anything back. And to give them their due, each of these people had astonishing methods!

They were people that came from True Divinity influences and would always have some final trump card for desperate situations. Even if Lin Ming was in his peak state and facing these four people, he would have to evade their all-out attack. If he were to meet their barrage head on he would die or be severely wounded!

Chi chi chi!

A terrifying amount of energy began to slowly brew in the hands of the four people.

The Divine Void Crown Prince took out an incarnation jade slip. This jade slip possessed the avatar phantom of an Empyrean. However, in order to activate this incarnation, that would depend on the Divine Void Crown Prince’s cultivation and strength.

As for Bigflame, he took out a strange little flag. This small flag burned with vague black flames; it was clear that this was some terrifying treasure!

Although Duke Fullmoon and the silver-armored warrior possessed trump cards that were inferior to those of the Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame, what they had still allowed them to increase their overall strength by half over their peak state for a short period of time!

With these four attacks striking together, even a peak Great World King would have to earnestly face it without any hint of holding back!

And at this time, 10,000 feet away, the black fog sent out by the Black Dragon Spear became increasingly strong and thick.

This black fog carried with it a demonic energy, and as the Divine Void Crown Prince said, it also possessed a dreadful corrosive attribute. If a World King were to touch it they would immediately die, without any chance of survival! If the Divine Void Crown Prince or Bigflame were to have any part of their body be tainted by this energy they would have to cut off that body part lest their entire body rot away!

Although Lin Ming was stronger than the Divine Void Crown Prince, he wasn't ridiculously stronger. Facing this black fog, he also wasn't able to withstand it with his mortal body.

Thus, Lin Ming summoned his own Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

The black fog around the Black Dragon phantom was the power of Laws gathered by the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. Moreover, the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel used by the Black Dragon phantom was incomplete.

Now, the complete Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel summoned by Lin Ming was the ultimate nemesis of this black fog!

Wu – wu – wu –

Countless demonic phantoms rapidly spun within the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. On the surface of the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, a giant black vortex appeared. A massive amount of the demon energy left behind by the powerhouses that died here, their force fields, will, remnant souls, everything was recklessly sucked in by Lin Ming's Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

Lin Ming was using his own Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel to wildly plunder the demonic essence within the Black Dragon phantom's Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

Seeing this occur, the Black Dragon phantom was enraged!

This demonic energy essence was gathered from slaughtering countless outstanding geniuses over the course of billions of years, and yet this energy was being wantonly swallowed up by Lin Ming! How could it not be angry!

"Stop!!!"

With a roar, the black fog in front of Lin Ming distorted, condensing into the form of a cruel and wicked dragon, its eyes blood red and its expression fierce and grotesque!

Lin Ming remained unmoved and the motions of his hands didn't slow. At the same time, the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel separated him and this Black Dragon phantom, forming a shield that blocked it off.

"You are seeking death!"

The Black Dragon phantom roared, opening its jaws and spitting out blood red runes. These runes spun through the void, dazzling to the eyes.

"I curse you! I curse your cultivation to fall, your blood essence to be severed!

"I curse you! I curse you forever, to perish for eternity, to never have a peaceful end!

"I curse you! I curse you to perish here, for your soul to suffer the agony of 10,000 lives in hell!"

The Black Dragon phantom loudly chanted. These blood runes it spat out were actually a secret curse technique!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank and he traced his spatial ring, pulling out three deep red divine runic symbols. Without hesitation, he crumbled all three divine runic symbols together!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Terrifying waves of thunder and flame wildly surged outwards, producing a cataclysmic explosion!

These three divine runic symbols were Heretical God Symbols that Lin Ming had drawn up. A normal Heretical God Symbol could be used several times, but the Heretical God Symbols that Lin Ming prepared for this final trial could only be used once.

He had concentrated every ounce of strength of the Heretical God Symbol into a single use. With this, the might of this Heretical God Symbol was twice that of an ordinary one!

Now that Lin Ming burned three Heretical God Symbols together, an unimaginable amount of energy erupted!

The power of thunder and fire swelled outwards like a tsunami! Whether it was thunder or flames, they were strengths that suppressed dark and ghostly powers the most. All of the curse seals that floated in the air were torn to nothing by Lin Ming's power of thunder and fire!

At the same time, changes began to occur around Lin Ming's body. The curse seals covering his face became deeper and brighter in color. Black scales appeared on his body. With a punch of his fist, the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel howled outwards!

After throwing out three Heretical God Symbols, Lin Ming launched another attack with his body. This was the advantage of divine runic symbols; they minimized the strength that a martial artist used!

Whorl whorl whorl!

The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel wildly spun about. Like a massive spinning saw, it went slashing down at the Black Dragon phantom!

The Black Dragon phantom was violently angered. As it looked at Lin Ming's Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, it reached out with its claws!

Ka ka ka!

The Black Dragon phantom's claws crashed into the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. With a loud sound, black light transmitted in all directions!

The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel was a tyrant that suppressed forces like ghosts, demonic spirits, and will bodies. And, this Black Dragon phantom was nothing but a body of will; it simply wasn't able to do anything to the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. As it lashed out with its claws, the most it could do was just barely manage to send Lin Ming's Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel spinning away. As for its claws, they dimmed down. It was clear that it suffered considerable damage just now.

"Who are you, where are you from? Why would you understand the Asura Heavenly Dao!?"

The Black Dragon phantom's eyes were icy cold. The atmosphere around it became increasingly fierce and dangerous as it burned more and more demonic energy within its body, seeming as if it would go all-out at any moment!

The Black Dragon phantom never imagined that it would encounter someone who understood the Asura Heavenly Dao. Because of this, it was being suppressed in every aspect!

It wasn't too strong in itself. Its strength lay in the demonic energy that it had gathered over billions of years – in other words, the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. By using the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, it was able to melt away the flesh and blood of its enemies.

The heavier the demonic energy gathered by the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, the stronger it would become. Moreover, the Black Dragon phantom had only killed outstanding geniuses. With such a terrifying level of demonic energy gathered onto it, even someone like Juku had instantly died!

But Lin Ming wasn't affected by these tricks. Lin Ming also possessed the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel and his boundary of the Laws was higher. Because of this, the demonic energy released by the Black Dragon phantom became Lin Ming's vitalizing tonic instead!

"And where did you come from? Your Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, where did you learn it?"

Lin Ming asked in reply. As he spoke, the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel in his hands sucked in more and more demonic energy condensed by the Black Dragon phantom. This caused Lin Ming's Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel to become increasingly lifelike, increasingly powerful!

Seeing this, the Black Dragon phantom's eyes turned bright red as if they would drip blood at any moment. "I am the guardian of the Black Dragon Spear! Stop your actions now, otherwise I will kill you even if I must sacrifice all my cultivation!"

As the Black Dragon phantom roared, Lin Ming simply sneered, not caring about such threats. However, the movements of his hands indeed slowed down and the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel's absorption of the surrounding demonic energy nearly came to a halt. "I'm fine to stop here, but I want to make a deal with you!"

"Deal? Fine, then give me the complete Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel cultivation method!"

As the Black Dragon phantom spoke, both fear and greed filled its eyes as it looked at the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel in Lin Ming's hands. It recognized that Lin Ming's Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel was clearly of a much higher boundary in Laws and completion!

The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel was far too significant for the Black Dragon phantom in gathering demonic energy; it naturally wanted the complete cultivation method.

Chapter 1704 – Cooperation

Chapter 1704 – Cooperation

…

…

…

“You want the secret cultivation method to the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel?” Lin Ming stared at the Black Dragon phantom in front of him. “Aren’t you just a greedy lion opening its mouth wide? You don’t even know what I want from you yet you immediately say you want the complete Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. Do you think I would agree to that?”

Lin Ming calmly said. The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel was part of the inheritance that the Asura Road Master left behind, the first volume of the Asura Sutra. Since he had learned it he naturally wouldn’t carelessly pass it on to others. Moreover, Lin Ming didn’t have a jade slip with the Asura Sutra on it so wanting to pass it on was nearly impossible.

“Hehe, I’ve already more or less guessed what you want from me. You want me to help you kill those four people outside! I can already see that you lot are all on different sides and plotting and planning against each other. That fellow with a star crown? I think he wishes for your death even in his dreams! However, you’re quite the fierce one. You pretended to be tricked by them in order to get close to me and have me join forces with you to kill them off together. To cooperate with such a sinister and cunning person like you is the same as acting against my own interest. If I do anything wrong then I’ll be eaten up by you until I don’t even have any bones left! Without sufficient advantages, why would I bother risking myself for the likes of you?”

Lin Ming chuckled. “It seems you are confusing your current predicament. Your fiercest ultimate ability is the demon energy that you’ve gathered around you for so many years, but what a pity it is useless against me. Instead of harming me, it has become my tonic instead. If we fight do you think that you can defeat me?”

As Lin Ming spoke he had already taken out the Phoenix Blood Spear. Atop the Phoenix Blood Spear, the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel whistled as it spun around, recklessly swallowing demonic energy. “If you want to fight with me then let’s fight. Let me take a good look at just how much demonic energy you’ve managed to scrounge up.”

Lin Ming activated the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel with all his strength. It was like a bottomless pit, absorbing demonic energy without end.

And now, the Black Dragon phantom wasn’t able to do anything to Lin Ming. If this battle were to continue then the Black Dragon phantom would only be placed in an increasingly bad situation!

“Brat, consider yourself ruthless enough! I do not want your Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel’s cultivation method, but you must give me the accumulated demonic energy within your own Myriad Demon Karmic wheel!”

“Do you think you have the qualifications to negotiate any conditions with me?”

Lin Ming menacingly said. Atop the Phoenix Blood Spear, the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel spun even faster.

Seeing Lin Ming’s Phoenix Blood Spear and the rapidly spinning Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, a trace of fear appeared in the Black Dragon phantom’s eyes. It clenched its jaws and said, “As a person you should always leave behind a road for others. Don’t force me into a dead end. The reason you haven’t fought me yet and decided to try to make a deal is because you want to kill those four people outside but fear you cannot handle them on your own! Moreover, you are also plotting against me this entire time in order to obtain the Black Dragon Spear!”

This Black Dragon phantom was an intelligent being and was able to guess Lin Ming’s schemes.

Listening to the Black Dragon phantom speak, a peculiar light shined in Lin Ming's eyes. He toothily smiled and said, "Me plotting against you? You aren't even the artifact spirit of the Black Dragon Spear! You aren't its guardian either. This Black Dragon Spear's artifact spirit has already disappeared and you are nothing but a bird occupying a nest that you didn't make. Using the Black Dragon Spear as a foundation, you constantly killed geniuses from all over, absorbing their strength to cultivate!"

Lin Ming already thought something was wrong. In his impression, even if this Black Dragon Spear wasn't the Asura Road Master's weapon it should still have a deep connection to him. Moreover, this Black Dragon phantom was far weaker than what the Black Dragon Spear's artifact spirit should be like! And if it really were the Black Dragon Spear's artifact spirit, it shouldn't be asking someone to teach it how to cultivate the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel to begin with.

Thinking of all these things, Lin Ming decided to be unreservedly ruthless. Since he had determined that this Black Dragon phantom wasn't the Black Dragon Spear's artifact spirit, there was no need for any scruples. If this Black Dragon Spear was truly refined by the Asura Road Master and this phantom was indeed the Black Dragon Spear's artifact spirit, it would naturally be impossible for Lin Ming to harm it as he pleased.

"You will return the demonic energy you just swallowed! That is my final bottom line! Otherwise I'll fight you until we both die!" The Black Dragon phantom roared.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then nodded, "Deal!"

Since he had to cooperate with this Black Dragon phantom he couldn't be too outrageous in how he handled matters. His hands formed seals and the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel began to spin in reverse, releasing the demonic energy it had just absorbed!

Seeing this demonic energy, the Black Dragon phantom roared and rushed forwards, recklessly swallowing it. In the blink of an eye it had swallowed all of the demonic energy!

Soon, it looked at Lin Ming, a fierce expression marring its face. “Insufficient! You definitely swallowed far more of my demonic energy than this!”

“I will return the first half and after the four people outside have been killed, I’ll return to you the second half. Did you think I would return all of the demonic energy to you like this? If I did that, what would I do if you were to go back on your promise?”

The Black Dragon phantom coldly snorted and gloomily said, “You had best not be playing with me!”

Then, as it was speaking, the Black Dragon phantom suddenly removed the force field it had laid down!

Hu - !

As the force field dispersed, many ghosts and fierce demons went flying away!

The isolating space disappeared. And at this time, a brilliant light lit up in front of Lin Ming!

In that instant, the Divine Void Crown Prince, Duke Fullmoon, Bigflame, and the silver-armored warrior all attacked together!

They had already been gathering their potential for a long time. Moreover, they had all taken out their ultimate trump cards, waiting for this one instant. With a surprise attack, they would defeat Lin Ming!

A terrifying fluctuation of energy broke through space. In order to ensure a sure-kill strike, the four of them had held nothing back. This was a strike that even a peak Great World King would have trouble blocking!

Ka ka ka!

In that moment, the space around Lin Ming tightened, nearly collapsing in on him! The energy of this joint attack had locked in the surrounding space. Avoiding was no longer possible!

In ordinary times, if Lin Ming were to force his way out of the Myriad Demon Force Field conjured by the Black Dragon phantom, he definitely wouldn't be in peak condition and the result from being struck by this attack could be imagined. But even if Lin Ming was in his peak state, if he were struck by this attack he would still be severely wounded or killed.

To sit down and wait without losses and then take advantage when someone was down, this move of the Divine Void Crown Prince and the others could be called utterly cruel and evil!

"What a great Divine Void Crown Prince! What a great Bigflame! What a great Black Dragon evil spirit!"

Seeing these four mighty flows of energy hurtling towards him, a thick killing intent blazed out from Lin Ming's eyes.

He knew that the Black Dragon phantom had likely detected that the Divine Void Crown Prince and the others were planning on striking him when he was down, and waiting for the chance that the isolating force field was lifted to attack him. Even so, it hadn't given him any warning at all! It clearly wanted to see him struck dead, or at least grievously wounded, with this attack!

Just before Lin Ming was about to be enveloped by that storm of energy, a melodious ring resonated through the world! This deep and profound sound seemed to come from the nothingness of the earliest epochs, bringing with it a vast atmosphere of the Great Dao Laws.

In the next moment, the void above Lin Ming's head was torn open by an invisible strength, revealing a fathomless abyss. A dark bronze bell fell down from the void, covering Lin Ming.

This ancient bell was the Primordius Bell!

Guang!

With a loud ring, the Primordius Bell smashed into the black rock. Every single attack struck the walls of the Primordius Bell!

Clang!

The Primordius Bell violently shook as it was rung by these four flows of energy!

A visible sound wave echoed out like ripples. Space violently shook and the massive amount of energy contained within that sound wave formed an annihilating shockwave!

It was unknown just what material the black rock beneath Lin Ming's feet was made from. No matter how powerful the sound wave was it wasn't able to damage the black rock at all. But not too far away from the black rock, the earth was shattered by the sound waves. Rocks ruptured and mountains collapsed like sand sculptures!

The Divine Void Crown Prince and the others were naturally enveloped in this destructive sound wave too!

Not only had their joint attack failed to injure Lin Ming, but it struck the Primordius Bell, causing them to receive a counterattack instead!

Peng peng peng!

The sound waves struck their protective shields, causing them to all shake. Because they had just attacked Lin Ming with everything they had, bringing out all their trump cards, their current situation was extremely poor. Now that they were struck by the sound waves, they all felt their blood vitality tumbling within their bodies.

"What happened!?"

"What sort of magic tool is that!?"

The Divine Void Crown Prince and the three others were all left breathless and demoralized. Their well-planned attack had failed to harm Lin Ming, making it feel as if they had struck empty air. And at this time, their complexions changed. Above their heads, they saw a 10 foot long Black Dragon phantom come hurtling towards them!

"Hehehe! You four can be my food!"

Wu wu wu –

With a cry of endless ghosts and demons, the pitch black force field came shrouding down once more, covering the Divine Void Crown Prince, Bigflame, and the others within it!

"Hey brat, hurry up and attack!"

The Black Dragon phantom looked at Lin Ming. Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light. He put away the Primordius Bell and stepped forwards!

Chapter 1705 – Beatdown

Chapter 1705 – Beatdown

…

…

…

Underneath the protection of the Primordius Bell, the Divine Void Crown Prince and the others' attacks weren't able to harm Lin Ming at all.

With this, Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and hurtled towards them instead!

Seeing Lin Ming threateningly rush towards them as well as the Black Dragon phantom that was roiling with demonic energy, the Divine Void Crown Prince's complexion changed. "Everyone scatter!"

The Divine Void Crown Prince was a decisive person. He had been waiting for the two tigers of Lin Ming and the Black Dragon phantom to struggle with each other and then benefit from the fallout, yet now not only had Lin Ming and the Black Dragon phantom not fought but they instead formed a temporary alliance!

Whether it was Lin Ming or the Black Dragon phantom, the Divine Void Crown Prince felt nothing but fear in his heart. When facing these two at the same time, there was no road left but escape!

"You want to run? Hahaha, it's too late! You have already been caged within my Myriad Demon domain, it is no longer possible for you to run away!"

The Black Dragon phantom wildly cackled, letting the black energy within its body gush out without reserve to cover the Divine Void Crown Prince. The demonic force field created by this black energy was able to form a separate world. In terms of caging in others, this Myriad Demon Force Field was far superior to Lin Ming's grandmist space!

If Lin Ming tried to use the grandmist space to surround and bind down the Divine Void Crown Prince and the three others, it would actually be impossible to do so.

This wasn't because the grandmist space wasn't as exquisite as the Myriad Demon domain, but because the Black Dragon phantom had used hundreds of millions and even billions of years to kill outstanding elites and accumulate demonic energy. Only like this was it able to form such a powerful force field!

The Black Dragon phantom wasn't too strong by itself, but when it used the demonic energy it saved up, whether it was offensively, defensively, or caging in others, it was nearly invincible! If it weren't for the major flaws within the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel that it cultivated, Lin Ming absolutely would not be its match.

"Damnit! Break for me!"

Bigflame crazily roared. He grasped a blood red saber and slashed out at the Myriad Demon domain's enchantment.

The Myriad Demon domain violently shook, but the demonic energy was simply far too dense and potent. No matter what Bigflame tried to do, he was unable to pierce through it.

Bigflame was left breathless with rage. "Divine Void Crown Prince, what a splendid deed you have done! Didn't you say that if we didn't attack the Black Dragon phantom then it wouldn't try to kill us!?"

Before Bigflame arrived, Juku had tried to take the Black Dragon Spear, but the result was that he was instantly eaten up by the Black Dragon phantom. At the time, the Black Dragon phantom had discovered the Divine Void Crown Prince and Duke Fullmoon but didn't attack them on its own initiative. Thus, the Divine Void Crown Prince had speculated that the Asura Road Master had set down some rules stating that the spear guardian couldn't attack others on its own but had to wait for others to attack it first.

But, these were only his speculations; he couldn’t guarantee this was true.

If he wanted to kill Lin Ming and obtain his secrets then he would have to take certain risks. Now, it seemed that his gamble had been wrong.

This Black Dragon phantom wasn’t a spear spirit at all, but a demon!

In other words, there were no rules limiting it!

The Black Dragon phantom howled out in laughter. “You think that just because you don’t attack me I can’t kill you? Haha, how naïve! The reason I didn’t attack you before was because you were too far away. The demonic energy I’ve gathered lingers around the Black Dragon Spear, unable to reach out to you fast enough, thus I didn’t eat you up. But now, you’ve actually delivered yourself to my door on your own, so why would I allow you to leave!? Hehe, you all seem to be outstanding young elites, if I eat you that will greatly help me!”

A greedy light shined in the Black Dragon phantom’s eyes. But, it didn’t directly attack the Divine Void Crown Prince and the others. Instead, it continued to strengthen its enchantment, surrounding them.

“Brat, hurry up and attack! I’ve already surrounded them with everything I have, the rest will depend on you!”

The Black Dragon phantom bellowed at Lin Ming.

The Black Dragon phantom couldn’t cage in all these people and attack all on its own, otherwise there would be nothing for Lin Ming to do.

Lin Ming raised his spear and rushed forwards. He didn’t trust the Black Dragon phantom’s words. The Black Dragon phantom surely had some hidden methods and strength left over, either to protect itself or to ambush Lin Ming.

Even so, Lin Ming had to fight.

He was the one who proposed the deal. In a way, killing the Divine Void Crown Prince and the three others was far more advantageous to Lin Ming. Moreover, he needed to completely kill off all four of them without leaving a single witness alive!

Grasping the Phoenix Blood Spear, the crimson curse seals on Lin Ming's face deepened. On his back, more and more scales appeared. Facing these four people, he used the power of the Asura blood!

"You little beast, do you really think you can face off against the four of us together!? Good! Then we'll kill you first and deal with that Black Dragon phantom afterwards!"

Seeing Lin Ming hurtle towards them on the wind, Bigflame's complexion was ferocious. He knew that the current situation was as bad as it could be, but he still had to summon every ounce of fighting spirit he could and desperately risk everything in fighting Lin Ming.

Moreover, he didn't believe that a half-step Holy Lord like Lin Ming had such a freakish level of strength that he could kill all four of them together.

But at this time, the Divine Void Crown Prince shouted out, "Don't waste your energy on him!"

"What!?"

Bigflame frowned.

"Haven't you already suffered enough at the hands of this little beast!? I can guarantee you 100% that if we continue dealing with this little beast we will all die here!"

The Divine Void Crown Prince anxiously shouted. If Lin Ming and that Black Dragon phantom joined forces, their combined strength was absolutely stronger than the four of them together. If they wanted to kill Lin Ming first and then deal with the Black Dragon phantom, that was nothing more than the daydream of a moron.

“Fullmoon, you and Bigflame’s follower keep Lin Ming busy for now. Me and Bigflame will try and break through this domain!”

The Divine Void Crown Prince forced himself to calm down. After running so many various contingencies through his mind, this countermeasure sounded the most reliable. Compared to killing off Lin Ming and the Black Dragon phantom, breaking out of the domain and escaping was far easier.

“What... I...” Duke Fullmoon paused upon hearing this. To have him and someone else face Lin Ming?

Duke Fullmoon originally thought that Lin Ming was a mere divine runic master without much combat strength, but after Lin Ming perfectly passed the Asura level Gate of Laws, he suddenly felt faint of heart when thinking about fighting Lin Ming. He completely lacked all confidence!

“What, do you want to die here together?”

The Divine Void Crown Prince’s voice was ruthless and harsh, his expression ferocious. This made Duke Fullmoon’s heart turn cold. He could only brace himself and face Lin Ming. At this time, Bigflame’s follower, the silver-armored warrior, was also standing beside him.

Two against one!

“Attack him together. Right now, Lin Ming and that Black Dragon phantom are likely plotting against each other so he won’t fight with all of his strength. We may be able to fight him here.”

Duke Fullmoon said to the silver-armored warrior with a sound transmission.

But, the silver-armored warrior indignantly sputtered out, “Humph! That boy is only a half-step Holy Lord and I have the strength of an early World King! His cultivation is an entire boundary lower than mine. I don’t believe that his strength can reach such ridiculous degrees!”

As the silver-armored warrior spoke, he grasped a black saber and slashed out at Lin Ming!

"Limitless Saber!"

The silver-armored warrior wasn't some weakling. Anyone that was able to step into the fourth level, and especially come this deep in, was an outstanding genius!

With a slash of his saber, stars began to flash in space. All of this starlight gathered onto the silver-armored warrior's blade, sweeping towards Lin Ming's throat!

"The power of stars?"

Lin Ming was a little startled, but that was it; he thought little of this attack. When the saints' body cultivation methods that used the power of stars were compared to his own Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, that was the same as ants against elephants.

Lin Ming shouted out loud. From behind him, two massive stars appeared. These two stars were the Ravenous Wolf Star and the Army Breaker Star!

The Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace and Purple Temple Dao Palace opened together. Lin Ming's strength instantly rose to that of five dragons!

The silver-armored warrior and Lin Ming were both body transformation martial artists, but they cultivated different body transformation Laws. Compared to Lin Ming's strength, the silver-armored warrior simply couldn't compare!

Bang!

With a loud explosive sound the silver-armored warrior's saber light was shattered by Lin Ming! The Phoenix Blood Spear came thrusting out, smashing into the silver-armored warrior's saber!

Clang!

With a sound of metal striking metal, the silver-armored warrior's saber was struck away by the Phoenix Blood Spear. Billions of jins of strength erupted at the same time. The silver-armored warrior's palm split open and blood flew out. His saber was sent flying away by Lin Ming!

The Phoenix Blood Spear swung back. Lin Ming stepped forwards, his fist smashing into the silver-armored warrior's chest!

Through layers and layers of armor, Lin Ming's fist exploded forwards. The impact was so forceful that the silver-armored warrior's body bent like a shrimp!

Puff!

The silver-armored warrior spat out a mouthful of blood!

Lin Ming raised his spear and thrust it out once more, about to pierce through the silver-armored warrior's chest!

As the silver-armored warrior saw this spear about to take his life, his complexion immediately changed. Lin Ming's strength had surpassed the limits of his imagination. In their brief exchange, he wasn't even able to resist a single attack! If this was a life or death battle, he feared he wouldn't even be able to block Lin Ming for five breaths of time!

"Lin Ming, you are far too arrogant!"

At this time, Duke Fullmoon also attacked!

Even if he was unwilling to do so, he had no choice but to join in the battle at this moment!

He and the silver-armored warrior were hanging on the same thread. If the silver-armored warrior died, his death would only come that much quicker!

Duke Fullmoon didn't hold anything back in this attack. As his sword came falling down, a brilliant blaze of purple light followed behind it. This sword light contained a soul attack!

“It looks like you really want to die!”

Lin Ming didn’t even spare a glance at Duke Fullmoon’s soul attack. The Phoenix Blood Spear swept out as the Heretical God Force erupted!

Kacha!

Sword light disintegrated. Duke Fullmoon’s body twisted at a strange angle and a deep purple light shout out from between his eyebrows, fusing together with the shattered sword light and shooting towards Lin Ming’s spiritual sea like a hidden viper.

“Strike for me!”

Duke Fullmoon’s eyes were crazy. As a spiritas he was most skilled in soul attacks. However, Lin Ming seemed to completely ignore this soul attack. Lin Ming stepped forwards and turned the Phoenix Blood Spear, smashing it into Duke Fullmoon’s face.

“Ahhh!”

Duke Fullmoon cried out pitifully. Lin Ming’s spear smashed through his protective spirit essence like glass, and the weakened Phoenix Blood Spear struck the left side of Duke Fullmoon’s face.

Duke Fullmoon only felt a nearly unbearable pain in his face. The entire left side of his face had been pulled off, revealing bone, and even his nose was shattered. With this strike, his face had almost been completely disfigured!

However, at this time, Duke Fullmoon’s soul attack also sank into Lin Ming’s spiritual sea!

“Die!”

Duke Fullmoon covered his bloody face, his eyes cruel and poisonous. Although he had been disfigured by Lin Ming, his soul attack had struck him. As long as Lin Ming lost his presence of mind for even a brief moment, that would be enough time for him and the silver-armored warrior to rush forwards and severely wound him.

However, even after Lin Ming was struck by Duke Fullmoon’s soul attack he seemed to care little of it. He raised his Phoenix Blood Spear and moved towards Duke Fullmoon.

After a few breaths of time passed, Duke Fullmoon’s complexion completely paled. Duke Fullmoon’s soul attack seemed to have disappeared into a sea without any hope of returning.

W-what?

Duke Fullmoon’s breath caught in his throat, his entire face turning as white as funeral paper!

Chapter 1706 – To Use Another's Knife To Kill

Chapter 1706 – To Use Another's Knife To Kill

…

…

…

As a spiritas, Duke Fullmoon's strongest offensive abilities were soul attacks. Thus, when he fought, there would ordinarily be soul attacks within his strikes.

Wanting to block Duke Fullmoon's physical strike wasn't difficult at all. But, wanting to keep off his soul attack was different. Many enemies of his had fallen beneath this strange soul attack.

When Duke Fullmoon and Lin Ming clashed, the soul attack had already struck Lin Ming. According to all previous occurrences, even if Duke Fullmoon couldn't immediately kill his opponent, they should still suffer soul damage and lose their consciousness for a short period of time. During this, Duke Fullmoon could seize the chance to strike again and obtain absolute victory.

However, he never imagined that Lin Ming would appear completely unaffected. This shocked Duke Fullmoon.

"You… do you have some soul defense Empyrean spirit treasure?"

Duke Fullmoon said, his voice wavering. He was already wallowing in fear. He could faintly feel that here, today, he might die!

Lin Ming's strength far surpassed his imagination. Even if the Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame had the ability to pierce through the Myriad Demon domain, he still wouldn't be able to last until then.

Duke Fullmoon wasn't too old and he had a grand and glorious future awaiting him. There was even a slight chance for him to step into the Empyrean realm. To Duke Fullmoon, death was an incomparably frightening matter!

"Lin Ming! Although I have opposed you many times, I have never tried to truly harm you. If you let me go, I will allow you to place a slave seal within me. I am willing to be your faithful servant."

Duke Fullmoon said with a sound transmission. This startled Lin Ming. Generally speaking, martial artists would rather die than live on as mindless slaves without any personality of their own, but Duke Fullmoon actually took the initiative to offer himself up. This made Lin Ming have an even lower opinion of him.

And at this time, a flash of cold brilliance shined in Duke Fullmoon's eyes. His body leapt up like a serpent as a glimmer of purple flickered between his eyebrows.

In that instant, he had burnt a wisp of his divine soul!

When a martial artist combusted their blood essence they could exchange it for a boost of power. But a spiritas had an even more ruthless ability than burning one's blood essence, and that was burning their divine soul!

This was because the divine soul was the very life essence of a spiritas. Once a spiritas burnt their divine soul they would receive permanent damage that was nearly impossible to recover from. In order to survive, Duke Fullmoon actually chose to burn his divine soul.

Absolute hate burst out from within Duke Fullmoon's eyes. Originally he had some chance of stepping into the Empyrean realm, but burning his divine soul now was the same as giving up any hopes of becoming an Empyrean. Unless he had a massive lucky chance in the future it would be impossible for him to make a breakthrough.

All of this was thanks to Lin Ming. How could he not hate Lin Ming to the bones?

As long as there was life there was hope. In order to survive this disaster, Duke Fullmoon had bet everything!

The moment that Duke Fullmoon burnt his divine soul, the silver-armored saint warrior burnt his blood essence. Both of them attacked Lin Ming!

His saber cut through the void. 12 stars shined within the saber light, like a river of stars that was falling down, covering all!

Seeing this scene, Lin Ming stepped back and directly took out the Primordius Bell!

As Lin Ming stepped into the half-step Holy Lord realm, his ability to control an Empyrean spirit treasure became increasingly skilled.

Clang!

The Primordius Bell sounded out. The loud ring of a bell echoed, carrying with it the bass of the Great Dao as it shook the world!

Although Lin Ming didn't fear Duke Fullmoon or the silver-armored warrior, the two of them were risking their lives with their attacks and it was impossible for him to disregard their strikes. After all, he had another enemy waiting in the shadows, and that was the Black Dragon phantom.

If he were to retaliate with all his strength, he might give the Black Dragon phantom a chance to attack.

Rumble rumble rumble!

A wild power fell onto the Primordius Bell like crashing waves. Duke Fullmoon's divine soul attack was extremely cunning and slippery; it was able to seep into the Primordius Bell's sound waves and attack Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

But after being weakened by the sound waves, this attack wasn't able to pose any threat to Lin Ming.

The moment that Lin Ming's spiritual sea was besieged by the soul attack, the soul attack was destroyed by Lin Ming's blue soul large success battle spirit, immediately disintegrating.

Lin Ming retreated again and again. Within the Primordius Bell he was able to block off the majority of the impact from the attacks so that his body didn't suffer any damage at all!

"Damn it! Damn it all!"

Duke Fullmoon was so harried that he nearly vomited blood. His all-out attack wasn't even able to injure Lin Ming in the least. This sort of feeling was simply indescribable.

"It's a shame, but why don't you just die here…"

Lin Ming's fingers flickered as the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel appeared above his head, constantly spinning around. Countless Asura Law runes floated around it, lending it a strange mystical atmosphere.

Lin Ming planned to kill Duke Fullmoon and the silver-armored warrior as soon as possible. As long as he killed these two and only Bigflame and the Divine Void Crown Prince were left over, even if they tried to escape in separate directions Lin Ming had the confidence that he could stop them both!

And at this time, changes were occurring on the other side of the battlefield. The Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame discovered that Fullmoon and the silver-armored warrior weren't able to last much longer!

"We don't have any time; this is our only chance. Otherwise, once Lin Ming kills Brightmoon and your follower, he will join together with the Black Dragon phantom to kill us both. We will both undoubtedly die then!"

"We have to break through this Myriad Demon enchantment!"

The Divine Void Crown Prince grit his teeth as he spoke and burnt a wisp of his divine soul. As he did this, he felt a stabbing pain in his heart. No matter how much he regretted this, he had no other choice.

His entire body was covered in a golden glow. Behind him, nine halos formed, as if he were some divine being!

Chi chi chi!

The void itself was pierced through by this soul force. The Divine Void Crown Prince's eyes had turned a deep blood red. And beside him, Bigflame also burned his life essence!

To the saint race, their blood essence was no less important than the divine soul was to the spiritas!

These two people had truly gone all out.

And at this time, not too far away from them, the Black Dragon phantom playfully smiled. It slowly manifested its main body in the void, constantly forming runes with its claws to reinforce the Myriad Demon enchantment.

The originally thick Myriad Demon enchantment became even thicker, as thick as the crust of a world, impregnable!

"Jejejeje! How naïve! Too naïve! Do you think that with the power you have from burning your blood essence and divine soul, you will have the strength to break through my illusion? This is the demonic energy that I've spent billions of years gathering! Once I lay down my Myriad Demon domain, not even a peak Great World King can hope of leaving!"

The Black Dragon phantom wildly cackled, its voice grating on the senses! It was like it simply didn't care about the Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame's final attack.

At this time, Bigflame and the Divine Void Crown Prince looked at each other and nodded.

"Strike!"

The two shouted together. With this, they lashed out!

As they burnt their blood essence and divine soul, they each also took out a jade slip from their spatial rings. One jade slip was shimmering purple and the other was blood red!

These were incarnation jade slips left behind by Empyrean powerhouses from their influences. Once they used them they could summon an Empyrean phantom. For a short time, they would be able to contend with a weaker Great World King!

And at this time, as if their minds were linked, Bigflame and the Divine Void Crown Prince began to galvanize the powers within the incarnation jade slips. These two jade slips wildly shook as the energy structures within revolved to the limit. The two Empyrean incarnations summoned by the two jade slips began to rapidly inflate!

They wanted to have these two jade slips explode together!

Originally, the incarnations within the jade slips were equal to a weaker Great World King. But if they exploded, releasing all the energy at once, this strike was absolutely comparable with the all-out attack of a peak Great World King!

“Attack!”

In that instant, Bigflame and the Divine Void Crown Prince changed the trajectory of their strikes. They no longer attacked the Myriad Demon domain’s enchantment, but the Black Dragon phantom’s main body!

Humm!

The two jade slips violently trembled. Two geniuses from True Divinity influences both used their ultimate trump cards without holding anything back! Bigflame took out a longan-sized blood red pill from his spatial ring and swallowed it down. After swallowing this pill, all of the muscles on his body began to grow and his appearance became cruel and fierce. His originally fat and round body became slender and filled with dense muscles like a cheetah as he hurtled towards the Black Dragon phantom.

When Bigflame attacked, he completed his body metamorphosis using a secret technique. Amongst the saints there were several bloodlines that had the ability to metamorphosize one's body, and Bigflame was one such person!

They had already calculated that the Black Dragon phantom was using all of its demonic energy to arrange the Myriad Demon enchantment.

If so, then to attack the Myriad Demon enchantment at this time was the stupidest route possible to take. The most likely result of that would have been the failure of everything they tried!

But if they attacked the Black Dragon phantom's main body then the result would be completely different!

Since the Black Dragon phantom had released the majority of the demonic energy in its body, that meant its main body was at its weakest point.

As long as they could exterminate this Black Dragon phantom then the Myriad Demon domain would collapse all on its own!

But at this time, the Black Dragon phantom didn't reveal any worry at all. It smirked, laughing as it said, "It seems you've finally come up with a plan to break through my Myriad Demon domain. Not bad, you two don't seem as stupid as you look. But what a pity – do you think your attack will be able to touch me?"

The Black Dragon phantom cackled and its body disappeared like ghosts and gods as it turned tail and ran.

"Chase after it!"

The Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame were both enraged. After paying such a deep price for this attack, how could they allow the Black Dragon phantom to escape?

Their attacks, along with the exploding Empyrean incarnations, changed directions and chased after the Black Dragon phantom!

Every sense within their body had already locked onto the Black Dragon phantom. They swore that no matter what, they would kill it! They only had this one chance to do so! If they failed then they would both die without a doubt!

However, as the Black Dragon phantom fled, it changed its trajectory once more.

Duke Fullmoon and the silver-armored warrior's complexions changed as they discovered this. As they were engaged in a brutal battle with Lin Ming, they noticed that the Black Dragon phantom, Bigflame, and the Divine Void Crown Prince were all heading towards Lin Ming!

And they weren't too far away from Lin Ming!

As Lin Ming saw this, his vision turned dark as he looked at the Black Dragon phantom.

"Hahahaha! You brat, I've lured the attacks of these two people, their exploding Empyrean incarnations, and my main body to attack you all at once! This is the trap that I've especially set up for you. Not let me see just how you can escape from this! You wanted to use me as your spear and kill these four people, subdue the Black Dragon Spear, and even destroy me while you were at it. Do you think I am a fool!? You want to plot against me? Why don't you just die instead!"

Chapter 1707 – Outplayed

Chapter 1707 – Outplayed

…

…

…

The Black Dragon phantom had already been calculating how to deal with Lin Ming. Because Lin Ming possessed the complete Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, the Black Dragon phantom's demonic energy was useless against him. And without the demonic energy, the Black Dragon phantom simply couldn't do anything to Lin Ming.

In this sort of situation, how could the Black Dragon phantom wholeheartedly cooperate with Lin Ming to kill the Divine Void Crown Prince and the others?

Wasn't that just digging its own grave?

However, Lin Ming swallowed in a massive amount of demonic energy using his Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. This demonic energy had cost the Black Dragon phantom hundreds of millions and even billions of years to condense. Because of this, the Black Dragon phantom couldn't help but admit defeat for now and not struggle with Lin Ming.

Thus, joining forces temporarily was a helpless choice that the Black Dragon phantom was forced to make.

From the very moment that the Black Dragon phantom attacked the Divine Void Crown Prince and the others, he had been thinking about how to utilize them to attack Lin Ming. It had then deliberately used the Myriad Demon domain to surround the Divine Void Crown Prince and the others, making them feel as if they were in a hopeless situation. Then, underneath their bubbling desperation they would definitely all bring out their ultimate techniques.

After that, the Black Dragon phantom would intentionally reveal its main body in order to guide Bigflame and the Divine Void Crown Prince into attacking it. Only like this could it rely on their strength to be the knife used to kill others, dealing Lin Ming a fatal blow!

After killing Lin Ming, Duke Fullmoon and the silver-armored warrior would be caught up in the chaos and likely die in the aftermath.

As for the Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame, they definitely wouldn't be any better off. They would have inevitably severely wounded their origin energy. At that time, escaping from the Myriad Demon enchantment would be nothing more than a dream!

The Divine Void Crown Prince, Bigflame, Duke Fullmoon, the silver-armored warrior, and even Lin Ming, the five of them together would become food for the Black Dragon phantom!

If it could swallow up so many outstanding talents, it would be tremendously beneficial!

As for the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel that Lin Ming already brought out, it would also become one of the Black Dragon phantom's spoils of war. In the future, the Black Dragon phantom could meditate on this Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. Although it wouldn't be able to discern the complete Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel cultivation method from this, it could still improve the method it used to gather and condense demonic energy.

This was a good plan with multiple purposes. As long as it succeeded, every advantage would be its own!

After cultivating for another stretch of time, it could then take possession of the Black Dragon Spear and use the spear as its body, roaming through the world. It could transform into a person, an ancient vicious beast, or even a God Beast, becoming a ruler of its own territory!

These were all plans that the Black Dragon phantom had been secretly plotting for. It had placed the Divine Void Crown Prince and the others in its palms. Even Lin Ming was placed in the perfect death trap!

Of course, the premise of all this was that its attack could kill Lin Ming!

The Black Dragon phantom wasn't worried about this; this was because the Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame had given it surprise after surprise. They actually intended on exploding the Empyrean incarnations they brought with them, combined with the attacks of their main bodies. In addition to the Black Dragon phantom's own attack, these three forces joined together would even lay low a peak Great World King!

It was impossible for Lin Ming to block all of this!

Of course, the Black Dragon phantom didn't forget Lin Ming's spirit treasure – the Primordius Bell!

The Black Dragon phantom had a vivid memory of the terrifying defensive capabilities of this spirit treasure.

It chose to reveal its main body the moment Lin Ming summoned the Primordius Bell, all so that it could cut off Lin Ming's final thread of hope!

Every step of this plan had been meticulously prepared. It was evil and sinister to the extreme!

"Myriad Demon domain!"

The Black Dragon phantom roared out. Demonic energy gushed out like a falling star, turning into countless runes that sealed the space around Lin Ming's Primordius Bell!

Using its domain, it forcefully separated Lin Ming and the Primordius Bell!

At the same time, the space around Lin Ming was blocked off by the domain. The demonic energy condensed into thick black ropes that wrapped around Lin Ming!

With this, let alone using the Space Laws to escape, it would be difficult for him to open his spatial ring.

The demonic energy that the Black Dragon phantom condensed was extremely firm. No matter how Bigflame or the Divine Void Crown Prince tried to attack it, they hadn't been able to break through it. As for Lin Ming, although he could use the Asura Laws to dissolve this demonic energy, it would still take him some time to do so.

But, the Black Dragon phantom absolutely would not give Lin Ming the slightest chance to recover!

"Die!"

After sealing away the Primordius Bell and eliminating all avenues of escape or resistance, the Black Dragon phantom roared out, its body suddenly ballooning.

Within a split-second, it grew to a hundred feet in length. It opened its gaping jaws, gray flames gushing forth from its maw. These gray flames swept up into the exploding Empyrean incarnations that had reached their critical stage. All of these attacks joined together and went rumbling towards Lin Ming!

As long as Lin Ming was caught up in this attack, he would definitely die here!

Facing this strike that blotted out the skies, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light!

He tried to move the Primordius Bell, but because the Primordius Bell was being suppressed by the demonic energy it remained completely still.

"Don't bother wasting your energy! Today you will die here!"

The Black Dragon phantom roared out. Even as it was suppressing the Primordius Bell, it was also luring the exploding attacks of the Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame. With this, the Black Dragon phantom had exhausted all of its strength for this moment. It had to succeed!

But at this moment, a great feeling of dread welled up from within the Black Dragon phantom's heart, as if some massive danger was imminent!

"Did I forget something!?"

The Black Dragon phantom was startled. But at this time it could no longer take back its strike. It could only continue forwards with everything it had.

In that moment, 30 feet away from the Black Dragon phantom, the void was torn open. A man appeared, his entire body covered with black scales and his face emblazoned with blood red runes. He was an Asura death god, stepping out from a tear in space!

This Asura death god had a cruel and ominous expression. Even so, one could clearly make out Lin Ming's appearance. This was what Lin Ming looked like after he underwent a body metamorphosis using the power of the Asura blood!

At this time, Lin Ming's entire body was exuding energy. Killing intent rolled off him in tumbling waves.

He grasped a black spear and looked at the Black Dragon phantom with a mocking indifference. This gaze was as if Lin Ming was already looking at something dead!

"You... you... how is this possible!?"

Because the Black Dragon phantom had invested all of its strength into the Myriad Demon domain and also attacking Lin Ming, its main body was completely undefended!

Facing Lin Ming's attack, it had absolutely no chance of resisting it!

"Who the hell is that!?"

The Black Dragon phantom suddenly turned to look at the 'Lin Ming' that it was luring the barrage of attacks towards. That Lin Ming remained indifferent as he held onto the Phoenix Blood Spear. Facing this volley of attacks that overwhelmed the skies, he seemed not to care at all.

"An illusion!?"

The Black Dragon phantom first thought that Lin Ming had used an illusion to trick it. But, this was impossible. How could an illusion engage Duke Fullmoon and the silver-armored warrior in such a chaotic battle? Moreover, how could it transfer power from so much energy and Laws? And whether it was the aura of the first Lin Ming's body or the second Lin Ming's body, they had exactly the same fluctuations of energy as someone real. The Black Dragon phantom simply wouldn't make such a basic mistake.

How could this be!?

"It's regretful. All of your plans were perfect, but what you didn't know what that I had an avatar! When I first proposed to make a deal with you, did you think I wouldn't know you were planning on killing me? But, although I knew you had some little trick up your sleeves, the only problem was estimating when you would sneak attack me. Moreover, you are nothing but a sinister and sly little creature. If you were to ambush me, the only time you would do so is if you had full confidence you would succeed. If that were to happen when I wasn't paying attention, then all my plans might have been flipped over!

"Thus, after we came to an agreement and you withdrew your Myriad Demon force field, I had to cover myself in the Primordius Bell to defend against the joint attacks of the four. But while I was in there, I also exchanged myself with my avatar!

"My avatar has a mortal bodily intensity approaching that of a saint race Empyrean! It simply doesn't fear any attack! After switching out my main body, there was no longer any need for me to dread your little tricks and sneak attacks. My main body has been hiding all this time in order to guard against all possible contingencies!

"I left the Phoenix Blood Spear and Primordius Bell to my avatar, and even left my battle spirit in my avatar's spiritual sea. Then, I remotely activated the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel in order to assist my avatar in attack. All of this was so that you wouldn't have any suspicions against me. Then, the moment when you attacked me, that would be the moment

I killed you instead! Now, all of your demonic energy has been used for other purposes, so how will you block my all-out attack?”

Although Lin Ming’s explanation seemed long, it took a mere instant for all of this to appear in the Black Dragon phantom’s mind.

In that moment, the Black Dragon phantom wildly trembled!

When Lin Ming covered himself in the Primordius Bell he had already switched himself for his avatar! Lin Ming’s main body went into the Primordius Bell, but it was his avatar that had emerged!

In other words, its carefully planned strike was all done against Lin Ming’s avatar!

“Ahhhhh!”

The Black Dragon phantom wildly roared. It had lived for countless eons and had used countless methods to gather countless accumulations. It was an utterly sinister and deceitful being, but today, facing a junior, it was actually the one that had been tricked instead!

“I am unwilling!”

The Black Dragon phantom roared out, its voice shrill and desperate. Lin Ming didn’t give it any chance to recover. He immediately thrust his spear forwards!

This black spear was the one Lin Ming obtained from the Gate of Laws. Although it couldn’t increase his strength it was still incomparably hard. There was almost nothing that could destroy it!

At the time, Lin Ming had brought this black spear out with him from the Asura level Gate of Laws and had conveniently kept it with him. Now, it finally came in handy!

Lin Ming opened the Heretical God Force to the limit. The power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation was poured into the black spear. At the same time he also galvanized the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao and Divine Seal Art!

A swirling black hole was shot out by Lin Ming. Space warped as the area around the Black Dragon phantom was locked down!

The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel hummed as it was summoned forth by Lin Ming. The Asura Heavenly Dao just happened to be the ultimate nemesis of the Black Dragon phantom.

Then, all of this strength erupted together!

The Black Dragon phantom miserably cried out again and again. Beneath the horrifying blaze of this energy, its body was scorched to smoke, nearly extinguishing to nothing!

The Black Dragon phantom roared in pain. Its body turned into countless fragments as it desperately tried to struggle free and flee. However, how could Lin Ming give it such a chance?

Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

Ka ka ka ka!

The black Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel came pressing down. This wheel was supremely skilled in suppressed the power of ghosts and spirits. It could imprison the wills and souls of powerhouses.

Then, a black vortex appeared above the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. The fragments of the Black Dragon phantom were all sucked up into this vortex, instantly sealed away!

The Black Dragon phantom pitifully roar. Through all these years it had kept hidden within the Black Dragon Spear, swallowing the flesh and blood of countless proud children of heaven, and then using the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel to seal in their souls. It never imagined that one day it would be the one sealed away by the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

Chapter 1708 – Killing the Crown Prince

Chapter 1708 – Killing the Crown Prince

…

…

…

The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel revolved. Within the wheel, countless demonic phantoms appeared. These fierce demons all obeyed Lin Ming's command. They sent out tendrils of dark will that sunk into the Black Dragon phantom, disturbing its consciousness, making it impossible for it to work itself free!

"Ahhh!" Most of the Black Dragon phantom's bodily fragments had been sealed away. No matter how much it roared out in pain it was impossible for it to change the outcome!

"You brat, there will be a day when I tear you to shreds! I will torture your soul, make it so that you will never enter samsara! You will suffer forever and ever in the eternal pain of hell!"

As the Black Dragon phantom was about to be sealed into the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, it let out one final curse. However, as Lin Ming heard this curse he simply chuckled.

His fingers moved as he thoroughly sealed in the Black Dragon phantom.

"You want to torture my soul? What a pity, your soul is about to be refined by me and become a slave within my Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel…"

As Lin Ming spoke he completely sealed away the Black Dragon phantom. Then, from behind him, a massive explosion rocked the world!

The massive amount of demonic energy brought forth by the Black Dragon phantom, as well as the attacks of the Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame, had exploded together!

Originally, Lin Ming's true self should have withstood this attack. Beneath the spatial lock of the Black Dragon phantom's demonic energy, it would have been impossible for Lin Ming to avoid this attack. And, this was two Empyrean incarnations exploding at once. Even a peak Great World King wouldn't have the ability to defend against this strike. Although Lin Ming's defensive capabilities were high, he likely wouldn't have been able to escape!

However, Lin Ming had already exchanged himself with the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone. The Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was a completely different situation. Its mortal body had been constantly nourished by the God Beast Tomb Array for billions and billions of years using the blood vitality and essence energy of all sorts of mighty God Beasts. Its physical strength had already reached incomprehensible degrees, nearly indestructible.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The world shook as energy wildly surged out. The Essence Spirit Embryo Stone avatar was sent flying away by the terrifying explosion of energy, all of its clothes being torn apart with even its flexible armor being shattered! This avatar was powerful, but even its body was stained with blood after being struck by the explosions of these Empyrean incarnations. But, these were only bloodstains; the avatar hadn't been truly wounded.

Moreover, these minor wounds were regenerating at a visible speed!

As for Duke Fullmoon and the silver-armored warrior, they were a different story. Because they weren't too far from the avatar, they were caught up in the horrifying explosion. Even though they were only struck by the shockwaves of the attack, their entire bodies were still soaked with blood and they were both miserable sights to look at!

"Ahhh!"

Duke Fullmoon cried out. Beside him, the silver-armored warrior's spine shattered and his organs were in a complete mess. He spat out a mouthful of blood as he floated on the edge of life and death!

The Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame's attack hadn't been able to do anything to Lin Ming. But, it had instead nearly killed Duke Fullmoon and the silver-armored warrior!

Not just that, but they had given Lin Ming the opportunity to seal away the Black Dragon phantom!

For a time, within the Myriad Demon domain that had yet to dissipate, the only sound left was the panting from the severely wounded Duke Fullmoon, Divine Void Crown Prince, and Bigflame.

"Lin Ming… you…"

The Divine Void Crown Prince's voice shivered!

Although he hadn't heard Lin Ming's sound transmission, he had been able to piece together what happened just now!

The Black Dragon phantom had lured out their attacks to suddenly attack Lin Ming. When the Divine Void Crown Prince had discovered this, he felt that the Black Dragon phantom was evil and calculating to the extreme. It had placed Lin Ming in a death trap with ten chances of death and zero hopes of survival!

But in that final moment, the entire situation had been flipped upside down. The Black Dragon phantom had been sealed away by Lin Ming, and the strongest attacks that they had burned their blood essence and divine soul to strike out with actually fell upon Lin Ming's avatar. Even so, they hadn't been able to truly wound his avatar at all!

As for that Black Dragon phantom, it had been sealed away by Lin Ming! Lin Ming's methods had been quick and ruthless!

From the start when Lin Ming had decided to cooperate with the Black Dragon phantom, they had both been plotting against each other. But in the end, the methods that Lin Ming used were beyond anyone's expectations.

In comparison, the plan that the Divine Void Crown Prince originally had of profiting from the chaos now seemed laughable.

After Lin Ming sealed away the Black Dragon phantom, he grasped the black spear and slowly walked forwards. His entire body was covered with scales. He appeared like a wicked ghost crawling up from the pits of an Asura hell, terrifying to the extreme!

Facing such a Lin Ming, whether it was the Divine Void Crown Prince or Bigflame, they both lost all courage to face him!

Their current situation was extremely bad. Because they had burnt their divine soul and blood essence in that last all-out strike, their current state wasn't even that of their peak condition. Facing Lin Ming, whose overwhelming momentum was like a sun, they couldn't think of any plan that would ensure their survival.

"Lin Ming… do you really want to kill us? We come from the two largest influences in the inner Asura Road, and the divine rulers of our Divine Kingdoms are both True Divinities. If you kill us then the only future left for you in the Asura Road is death! Moreover, don't forget that Soul Empress Sheng Mei is also in the final trial! There are some things you shouldn't know about, right? The reason the Soul Empress was able to enter the final trial was because my Divine Void Divine Kingdom gave her a spot!"

The Divine Void Crown Prince threateningly said. He knew that begging for mercy at this time was a futile gesture. If there were any hopes of Lin Ming allowing him to live, it would be because Lin Ming had some reservations about the potential fallout of their deaths. That was their only chance of surviving.

But unfortunately, he was mistaken. Just as the Divine Void Crown Prince spoke, Lin Ming had already shot upwards.

Chi!

The black spear thrust out, piercing through the void!

Meanwhile, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone avatar also rushed outwards, blocking off the escape route of the Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame!

Lin Ming wouldn't give them the slightest chance of escape.

"Let's fight!"

Seeing that there was no chance of escape, the Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame decided to place all their chips on the table!

Bigflame once more burnt his blood essence and the Divine Void Crown Prince also burnt his divine soul!

The two of them had already used their trump cards. Now, all they could do was rely on their own powers to attack Lin Ming.

"Yellow Springs Swords Array!"

The Divine Void Crown Prince formed seals with his hands and shot out 12 flying swords. On each of these 12 flying swords there was an eye formed from flesh and blood! These eyes were covered with blood vessels, looking extremely strange and macabre!

The Divine Void Crown Prince punched his own chest and spat out a mouthful of blood. The blood splashed onto the 12 swords and the eyes on the swords became an even brighter red. Any martial artists with insufficient cultivation would only need to glance at these swords to feel their souls being drawn in, their minds falling into illusion!

Without a doubt, these eyes each contained a divine soul attack!

The Divine Void Crown Prince was a spiritas and after using a variety of arcane abilities, his divine soul attacks were even deadlier than those of Duke Fullmoon!

Chi chi chi!

12 brilliant ruby red beams shot out from the swords, covering Lin Ming!

At the same time, Bigflame stepped forwards. Loud crackling sounds rang out from his body. His large body was now thick and tightly muscled. His skin shone with a metallic luster as if it were filled with an explosive strength!

He grasped a blood red saber and slashed out at Lin Ming.

The Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame were both outstanding elites of their generation. Now that they joined together, their divine soul attack and physical attack both shot out at Lin Ming!

Facing the attacks of these two, Lin Ming seemed completely unmoved.

The moment that the 12 bright red divine lights flashed out, a deep blue light flashed out from between Lin Ming's eyebrows. The large success blue soul spear-shaped battle spirit howled outwards, circling through the skies, tearing apart those 12 red lights!

"What!?"

The Divine Void Crown Prince was shocked. Although he already expected that his attack wouldn't be able to harm Lin Ming, he never imagined that his Yellow Springs Swords Array would be so easily shattered. Lin Ming's battle spirit had already reached an inconceivable boundary. It was hard to imagine that a human could have such accomplishments.

Could it be… he had no weakness?

Facing such an opponent, the Divine Void Crown Prince felt suffocated!

And at this time, after shattering the Yellow Springs Sword Array, Lin Ming took a step forwards to welcome Bigflame's strike!

Nine massive stars appeared behind Lin Ming. Their brilliance fell onto him like a waterfall, light shining out in the world!

Lin Ming's bodily strength rose to that of five dragons. Astral essence wildly galloped outwards, causing the surrounding space to collapse!

His pupils shrank. The black spear howled out like a flood dragon, smashing towards the approaching Bigflame!

Rumble rumble rumble!

The black spear and blood red saber collided. A divine light erupted, recklessly shooting out!

Nine stars brought down their shining radiance. Bigflame's saber light was only able to resist it for a brief moment before being torn apart by Lin Ming's black spear light!

The spear light's shockwaves contained a horrifying strength that struck Bigflame's chest.

Bigflame shook, his entire body feeling as if he had been struck by a mountain. His ribs cracked as he wildly vomited blood.

Lin Ming didn't give Bigflame any chance to recover. With a single step forwards, the black spear smashed into Bigflame's stomach, bending him like a shrimp. Bigflame's organs were already struck into a bloody mess by Lin Ming.

Seeing this, the Divine Void Crown Prince felt despair surge within his heart.

"Lin Ming, I'll kill you like a dog!"

The Divine Void Crown Prince shouted. But at this time Lin Ming had already reached him. He was like a black Asura death god, judging all to death with a single strike!

Puff!

The spear thrust through the Divine Void Crown Prince’s protective spirit essence. After burning his divine soul two times, the Divine Void Crown Prince was almost exhausted of all strength; he simply didn’t possess the ability to contend with Lin Ming.

It was impossible for him to resist this spear. The cold spear light pierced through his chest and projected from his back!

Blood shot into the air!

“Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!”

With a whirling humming sound, the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel came grinding down, covering the Divine Void Crown Prince’s body. “Those who try to kill must face death themselves. Since you plotted against me, me killing you is only conforming to the principle of cause and effect in the Heavenly Dao. Your soul will be sealed within the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel to be used by me!”

Lin Ming’s voice was cold and indifferent, the sentence passed down by a death god. The Divine Void Crown Prince felt a powerful attraction force on his spiritual sea, making it feel as if his soul was about to be sucked out!

This agonizing soul-tearing pain caused the Divine Void Crown Prince to wail in agony!

In despair he lost all ability to resist. His body was ruined and his soul was sucked into Lin Ming’s Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, directly sealed away!

After resolving the Divine Void Crown Prince, Lin Ming turned and shot towards Bigflame!

Chapter 1709 – Killing and Sealing Them All

Chapter 1709 – Killing and Sealing Them All

…

…

…

Black spear light pierced through the void. Covered in black scales, Lin Ming was a life-reaping death god!

As for Bigflame, he was already completely exhausted of strength. It was no longer possible for him to compete with Lin Ming.

Bigflame roared out and slashed his saber at Lin Ming. Ignoring all consequences, he combusted his blood essence a third time!

However, because he had combusted too much blood essence, the blood essence he burnt now only gave him an extremely limited amount of strength.

"Lin Ming, if you kill me you will eventually accompany me in death! Sooner or later my Heaven Union Divine Kingdom will find out about your sins and they will pull out your marrow and refine your soul! Your family, your friends, your women, everyone will be killed off!"

Bigflame cursed out loud.

"Are those your last words? How meaningless." Lin Ming simply didn't bother with him. The grandmist space came shrouding down and all of Bigflame's shouts were sealed within the force field, unable to pass out.

“Slaughter Demon Array!”

Bigflame wiped his blood onto his saber. As the saber absorbed this blood it became an even deeper red and began to emit an ear-piercing hum.

However, no matter what he tried, no matter what methods he had remaining, it was impossible for him to change the outcome of him dying.

Lin Ming’s thoughts focused. Atop the black spear, a dreadful strength began to gather, condensing and spinning as it turned into a black hole vortex.

Eternal Darkness!

Space distorted. Bigflame’s saber light was torn apart by the massive gravitational force of the black hole and even his protective astral essence shattered. In the next moment, Lin Ming’s black spear pierced through Bigflame’s heart.

Hum hum hum - !

The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel came grinding down as it sealed away Bigflame’s soul.

Thus, Bigflame and the Divine Void Crown Prince, two proud sons of heaven, had been killed off by Lin Ming.

After dealing with these two people, Lin Ming raised his spear and moved towards Duke Fullmoon. At this time, because he had been caught up in the explosive shockwaves, Duke Fullmoon’s entire body was matted with blood and his face was a pale white.

Beside him, the silver-armored warrior was already unconscious and had lost all combat strength, soon to be dead from his wounds.

As Duke Fullmoon looked at Lin Ming, his lips trembled. Facing imminent death, a martial artist’s fear could surpass even that of a mortal.

After all, a martial artist lived a far more splendid and wonderful life than a mortal. This feeling of controlling the world, of standing above all other mortal beings, this was an enchanting feeling one could become drunk on.

Duke Fullmoon had honor, wealth, high status, and so many other things that he didn't have enough time to enjoy. He wanted to become an Empyrean and receive the worship of countless trillions of lives, all of them prostrating themselves before him. For someone like him, dying in this damned land was one of the most terrifying matters possible.

"Lin Ming... don't kill me." Duke Fullmoon clutched his chest, his voice shaking as he spoke. Blood constantly dribbled down from the corners of his mouth. The explosion of the Empyrean incarnations had harmed the source of his life, causing severe wounds that were extremely difficult to recover from.

"I know much information on many rare treasures. Moreover, I also have many treasures hidden around. All of these things I can give to you! If you don't believe me, you can place a slave seal in me and control my thoughts. I can..." As Duke Fullmoon saw the killing intent in Lin Ming's eyes become increasingly thick and heavy, he began to panic, losing all sense of thought.

"You want me to plant a slave seal within you?" Lin Ming smiled. When Duke Fullmoon attacked Lin Ming, he had used a variation of a slave seal spell to try and momentarily paralyze him. Unfortunately for him, his attempt had failed.

Lin Ming continued, "I'm sorry, but the things you mention I have no need for. The only thing I want is for you to die."

"W-w-w-wait!" Duke Fullmoon said, his face paling even further. But at this time, Lin Ming had already thrust out his black spear.

Woosh!

As the spear thrust forwards, the Space Laws tightened around Duke Fullmoon, binding down his futile struggles.

“Ahhh!”

Duke Fullmoon’s eyes turned blood red. With a final light sound, Lin Ming’s spear thrust through his heart.

Duke Fullmoon’s pupils instantly lost their focus. He looked at Lin Ming with disbelief in his eyes. He lifted his hands, grabbing onto the spear shaft, his entire body shaking.

“Lin Ming… there will be a day… when your bones are turned to ash…” Duke Fullmoon sputtered out. His eyes were thick with hatred. Every time he spoke a word, blood would gush out from his throat.

Lin Ming placed his right foot on Duke Fullmoon’s chest and kicked, lifting out his spear. A fountain of blood shot out three feet high before splashing back down.

“You still want to curse me in the last moments before your death? I’ve taken countless lives in my life, and if curses were actually useful I fear I would have died over 10,000 times by now…”

As Lin Ming spoke he swept out his spear and cut through Duke Fullmoon’s throat.

Duke Fullmoon’s neck bent and he died on the spot, filled with everlasting regret and with grudges unsatisfied.

Whorl whorl whorl!

The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel came spinning out. Duke Fullmoon’s soul was also imprisoned by Lin Ming’s Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel.

Like this, all of Lin Ming’s enemies had been resolved.

At this time, the Myriad Demon force field had already dissipated. Lin Ming flicked his fingers, shooting out little black fireballs that turned the corpses of the four dead martial artists into ashes.

As for their spatial rings, they were all taken by Lin Ming.

After a brief examination, he found a massive amount of pills, cultivation method jade slips, magic tools and so forth.

Just in Empyrean spirit treasures there were three. The Divine Void Crown Prince, Duke Fullmoon, and Bigflame each possessed one. As peak disciples of True Divinity influences, it wasn't strange for the Divine Void Crown Prince and Bigflame to possess an Empyrean spirit treasure.

As for Duke Fullmoon, his Empyrean spirit treasure had been bought from the Divine Rune City Auction with 2 billion points – it was the nameless ancient spear.

At the time, Lin Ming had intentionally shouted out higher prices in order to trick Duke Fullmoon into spending more. As a result Duke Fullmoon had to bleed out his wealth in order to buy this spear. And now, after so many years, this spear fell into Lin Ming's hands. Sometimes life could truly be ironic.

Of course, Lin Ming didn't even bother glancing at this spear for too long. What he wanted now was the Black Dragon Spear.

Besides the Empyrean spirit treasures, there were also many cultivation method jade slips and ordinary spirit treasures. Lin Ming wasn't too interested in these things. Although Heaven Union Divine Kingdom and Divine Void Divine Kingdom naturally had peak transcendent divine mights or even True Divinity level cultivation methods, it was impossible for these cultivation method jade slips to end up in the hands of junior disciples. As for Duke Fullmoon and the silver-armored warrior's jade slips, they were of a far lower quality. Simply speaking, none of their possessions were too tempting to Lin Ming.

After taking inventory of the spatial rings, Lin Ming was considerably disappointed in Bigflame's possessions. He only had a few precious blood energy pills that caught Lin Ming's attention, as well as some bloodstones, a type of crystal similar in value to nine sun jades. Bigflame was in truth extremely wealthy, but this wealth mostly came in the form of contribution points from Heaven Union Divine Kingdom. Naturally, these types of contribution points weren't useful to Lin Ming at all.

As for the Divine Void Crown Prince, his possessions gave Lin Ming a pleasant surprise.

After killing the Divine Void Crown Prince, Lin Ming also extracted an item from his inner world, a gray bracer. After investigating this bracer, he found that it was actually a spatial storage treasure. Although it wasn't an Empyrean spirit treasure, the difference wasn't too far off. And in this bracer, there was a massive amount of rare and precious materials as well as a pile of soul crystals.

Soul crystals were the energy stones of the spiritas, equivalent to nine sun jades of humanity. After a quick count, Lin Ming found that the Divine Void Crown Prince had over 2000 soul crystals in this bracer.

With all of those rare and precious materials added on, the Divine Void Crown Prince's wealth left Lin Ming dumbfounded.

Perhaps even a poor Empyrean might not be as wealthy as this.

"This Divine Void Crown Prince probably found the divine depository of some dead Empyrean, otherwise he wouldn't be so wealthy."

Lin Ming quickly surmised. It wasn't strange for a character like the Divine Void Crown Prince to have such a lucky chance.

Even so, that lucky chance was Lin Ming's benefit now. Lin Ming had used up far too many nine sun jades in the Asura Road, and now with this extra boost of wealth, he immediately became ridiculously rich again.

Lin Ming put the bracer into his inner world. After finishing all of this, he didn't go to take the Black Dragon Spear. Rather, he thought for a moment and then took out the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel once more.

Because the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel had absorbed a massive amount of demonic energy, it had neared a saturated state. The surface of the wheel glowed with a ghostly black light, causing anyone who looked at it to fall into a daze.

Lin Ming began to move his fingers, forming hundreds of seals. Black energy started to emit from the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel – this was the Black Dragon phantom that Lin Ming had sealed away.

This black energy tumbled in the air, as if it wanted to fuse back together. But every time it tried, it was scattered by the Law curse seals released by Lin Ming.

“Stop struggling. Your body has already been scattered by me and your primordial spirit sealed away. You are already finished.” Lin Ming lightly said.

“Brat, you are truly ruthless!” Thoughts filled with murderous intent spread out from the black energy. But then, these murderous thoughts became those of cackling laughter. “You think that you can obtain the Black Dragon Spear because you sealed me? Keep on dreaming! If you have the courage then kill me, but if you do then you’ll never obtain the Black Dragon Spear, hahaha!”

Chapter 1710 – Swallowing the Memories

Chapter 1710 – Swallowing the Memories

…

…

…

"Oh? I won't be able to obtain the Black Dragon Spear if I kill you?" Lin Ming looked towards the Black Dragon phantom and clasped his hands behind his back as if he simply didn't care about its threat.

The Black Dragon phantom diabolically grinned. Since it was imprisoned by Lin Ming, it knew that escape was futile so it gave up its struggles. "That's right, if you don't believe me then you can try yourself. I used a full billion years to take the Black Dragon Spear as a foundation to lay down the Myriad Demon Grand Array. Within this array formation, there is an amount of demonic energy as vast as the sea. For these past several billion years I have been constantly killing off trial challengers to accumulate their energy, otherwise why do you think I would bother!"

"Oh? So that's how it is…"

Before this, Lin Ming had already discovered that the Black Dragon phantom itself wasn't too strong. But, using the demonic energy it gathered it was able to instantly kill a top master like Juku. However there was a condition in order to accomplish this, and that was that it had to be within a certain range of the Black Dragon Spear. In other words, it had to take advantage of the array formation present in order to display its greatest combat strength.

As for this Black Dragon Spear's array formation, it had been strengthened over billions of years and was exceedingly firm. Wanting to forcefully break through it was a near impossibility.

Lin Ming pondered for a moment and then his fingers glided through the air. Tiny faint runes spread out. At the corners of Lin Ming's eyes, tiny Asura curse seals began to appear. He wanted to use the Asura Heavenly Dao to see through the flaws of this array formation.

The Black Dragon maniacally laughed. "Don't waste your time. The grand array I laid down has nothing to do with the Asura Heavenly Dao. It's only that afterwards I managed to obtain an incomplete cultivation method for the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. Because I could sense the profundity within this cultivation method, I then decided to integrate it into the array. Do you think that just because you understand the Asura Heavenly Dao you can break through my array formation? You are far too naïve! I spent billions of years on this array, constantly reinforcing it with sacrifices of flesh and blood. No matter how high your cultivation or your understanding of array diagrams is, you will never be able to break past it!"

The Black Dragon phantom chuckled, completely confident in its array formation.

"I see." The curse seals around Lin Ming's eyes began to fade away. If what the Black Dragon phantom said was true, it would take a considerable amount of time to break through this array formation. At best, Lin Ming would need to spend dozens of days here before he could take the Black Dragon Spear. But, that was far too long a time. He still needed to go to the fifth level.

"Thus, you had best release me. The truth is that you and I have conflicts of interest. I admit that I had wanted to swallow you up, but in this world there are no eternal enemies, only eternal interests. If you release me then I promise you I will help open the array formation and you can take the Black Dragon Spear. After that, you and I will both mind our own business. The river water will not interfere with the well water. How about it?"

The Black Dragon phantom temptingly said as it saw Lin Ming remain silent.

"Of course, I will need you to take a heart demon oath and also place a curse on yourself. In addition, you will also need to sign a blood contract before I am willing to help you break the array. Otherwise, there is no way I can believe you."

Seeing Lin Ming still deep in thought, as if he had no other plan, the Black Dragon phantom's expression became increasingly confident.

It secretly thought, "This brat, he definitely desires the Black Dragon Spear. If he cannot obtain it, he will never give up. In a situation where he has no other method he will definitely choose to cooperate with me. As for my ancient blood contract, as long as he signs it he will receive a curse, hehe… at that time, once I am released and can return to the array formation I can look for a chance to turn defeat into victory and swallow him whole!

"This little beast, if I do not imprison and torture his soul for 10,000 years I will never be able to rid the hatred within my heart!"

As the Black Dragon phantom was deep in thought, a fierce light lit up in its eyes!

But at the same time, it also felt uneasy. Lin Ming was not easy to deal with. It had personally experienced Lin Ming's cunning with its body, and it wasn't sure if its plan could be implemented too smoothly.

Lin Ming rubbed his chin, staring at the Black Dragon phantom. As if realizing something, a brilliance began to shine in his eyes, making the Black Dragon phantom feel a little weak of heart.

It was as if all its thoughts just now had been seen through by Lin Ming. It put away its thoughts of betraying Lin Ming, afraid that Lin Ming was reading its mind.

"What… what are you looking at, have you finished making your decision?"

The Black Dragon phantom ominously said. Even so, it lacked energy in its heart.

At this time, Lin Ming smiled, "I have."

“Heh! A wise man can adapt to the current trends. If you kill me there is no advantage for you. Rather, the Black Dragon Spear is the most important to you. Hurry up and undo my seal and then sign the blood contract with me. You are a crafty and sinister little boy. It’s impossible for me to believe your words alone. Only a contract and a heart demon oath are things I will believe in.”

The Black Dragon phantom looked at Lin Ming, its thoughts wildly racing. This was the most crucial period. It had to lure Lin Ming into agreeing to its conditions. However, it always felt that Lin Ming’s thoughts were too deep and it had never been able to grasp his true thoughts.

“Alright, then I will undo your seal.”

Lin Ming smiled and waved his hand, bringing the grandmist space shrouding down over him and the Black Dragon phantom, completely isolating them from the outside. Under the cover of the grandmist space, no senses were able to search within. Whether someone wanted to leave or someone wanted to enter, they would have to break through the grandmist space’s enchantment first in order to do so.

Seeing this, the Black Dragon phantom laughed. “You even laid down your force field. Are you afraid that I’ll run away? Hah! You really worry too much.”

As the Black Dragon said this, it sinisterly smiled in its mind. “Run? Why would I run? How can I give up this array formation that I spent billions of years forming? If I ran away my losses would be far too great. I must swallow you and restore my lost blood energy. Since you plundered my demonic energy, I will make sure you pay it back twofold!”

Although the Black Dragon phantom was crazily shouting out in its heart, it remained calm on the surface.

At this time, Lin Ming raised his right palm upwards. Atop his palm, space distorted and a black vortex appeared.

He shook his head, “The reason I laid down this force field is not because I am afraid you’ll run away, but because I needed to conceal something. Something that I cannot allow anyone else to discover.”

As Lin Ming spoke, a black cube began to appear above his palm.

This black cube was mysterious and simple. Its surface was covered with all sorts of strange lines. This was the Magic Cube!

Seeing this black cube, the Black Dragon phantom’s pupils shrank. It didn’t recognize the Magic Cube but it felt a deep fear swelling forth from the depths of its being.

“What is that?”

The Black Dragon phantom calmly asked, trying to put up a brave front. Although it didn’t know what this object was, it fell chills zapping its heart.

Lin Ming said, “I call this the Magic Cube. It is an ancient divine tool. Of my current achievements, over half of them are thanks to this object…”

Lin Ming seemed to be casually speaking, but as the Black Dragon phantom heard these words, its mind began to shake. “What is the meaning of this?”

If what Lin Ming said was true then this Magic Cube was undoubtedly his greatest secret. Yet, he was revealing his secret to it…

Before the Black Dragon phantom could respond, the Magic Cube shot out a dark light like the end of times. In a brief instant, this light covered the Black Dragon phantom. The Black Dragon phantom felt as if its soul was covered in corrosive acid. It began to emit painful shrieks!

“Ahhhh!”

The Black Dragon phantom wildly struggled. However, its entire body was sucked into the Magic Cube and torn apart by the terrifying black vortex!

“You… what are you doing!?”

A pained howl spread into Lin Ming’s mind. Lin Ming’s complexion was cold and indifferent. He lightly said, “I wasn’t interested in you to begin with, but since you said that I cannot take away the Black Dragon Spear without your help, I’ve decided to wipe away your soul mark and read your memories. I will find out the method to break through the array formation myself.”

“Wha… what did you say!?!?”

The Black Dragon phantom was shocked. Before it could respond to Lin Ming’s words, its consciousness was rapidly submerged in the horrifying vortex of energy as its very sense of self was being slowly wiped away, leaving it in endless pain!

This feeling of having one’s soul mark written off was beyond description. The Black Dragon phantom felt like its soul was being shredded to bits by 10,000 blades, gnawed upon by countless insects!

Before long, the Black Dragon phantom’s soul mark had completely vanished, turning into nothing but pure memories. As its soul mark vanished, this also signaled its true death.

Lin Ming thrust out his hand and swallowed all of these memories!

Swallowing ownerless memories wasn’t easy for Lin Ming. He needed a long time to process them all.

And, this Black Dragon phantom had lived for billions of years and experienced far too many complicated things. Lin Ming directly discarded all unnecessary memories, otherwise he would never be able to read through all of them even given hundreds of years.

A massive amount of memory fragments was tossed away by Lin Ming. Through the countless streams of information, Lin Ming searched for things that were useful to him.

This process continued for a long time. Slowly, Lin Ming came to understand many things.

This Black Dragon phantom wasn't a true dragon to begin with. It was originally an evil spirit and after it found the Black Dragon Spear, it slowly fused with it, using the Black Dragon Spear as its foundation to cultivate.

The reason that it appeared in the shape of a dragon was because there was a fragment of remnant dragon will left within the Black Dragon Spear. This was because the artifact spirit of the Black Dragon Spear had been a true dragon spirit, but this dragon spirit had already vanished long before the evil spirit had found it.

Otherwise, the Black Dragon Spear would never have allowed an evil spirit to enter.

After this evil spirit entered the Black Dragon Spear, it fused with the black dragon aura in the spear shaft and gained the characteristics of a dragon. But, its true nature always remained cruel and sinister.

For so many years, this evil spirit had used the changing terrain of the fourth level to avoid characters like Sheng Mei that could truly pose a threat to it. Only when people like the Divine Void Crown Prince appeared would it reveal itself in order to tempt them close and steal away their flesh and blood essence.

As Lin Ming discovered this he was secretly dumbfounded. This evil spirit was truly crafty! A great reason he was able to subdue it was also because of luck.

As he was thinking this, his thoughts perked up. In the memories of the evil spirit, Lin Ming had finally found the method to open up the array formation!

The demonic energy gathering array formation around the Black Dragon Spear wasn't too profound, but after being refined for billions of years, this simple array formation was nearly impossible to unravel. Now that Lin Ming found the related memories, it finally became incomparably easy to undo.

Chapter 1711 – Receiving the Dragon Spear

Chapter 1711 – Receiving the Dragon Spear

…

…

…

Lin Ming used a full two days to process the Black Dragon phantom's memories. The useful memories were all recorded in his mind. As for the leftover energy of the Black Dragon phantom, that was gathered and placed into his inner world.

In a corner of Lin Ming's inner world there was a jet black oval-shaped object, as lustrous and shiny as black jade. This was the black dragon egg.

Lin Ming's idea was extremely simple. Since the Black Dragon phantom had absorbed some fragments of remnant will from the Black Dragon Spear's dragon spirit, then it really did have the legitimate strength of the dragon race. Since he had killed the evil spirit he naturally couldn't waste this strength. Allowing the dragon egg to absorb it was just right.

The remaining energy of the Black Dragon phantom turned into a thick mist that gathered around the dragon egg. Beneath Lin Ming's control, the dragon egg was like a sponge that absorbed the black mist like water. For a time, the lines atop the dragon egg became even deeper and more profound.

After finishing all of this, Lin Ming let out a light breath of relief.

To hatch a dragon egg was an extremely long process. Lin Ming had already nourished the dragon egg with all sorts of heavenly materials and God Beast energies for over 60 years. All of these auras and energies had gathered completely into the dragon egg and became a part of its strength. The strength within had reached a strange and dreadful amount. After the baby dragon hatched, it would possess a powerful mortal body.

After the dragon egg absorbed all of the black mist, Lin Ming moved towards the Black Dragon Spear.

As Lin Ming stepped atop the ancient dark rock, he could feel an icy wind breeze past him, chilling to the soul.

Wu wu wu - !

The cries of ghosts echoed in the air. The evil spirits and fierce ghosts contained within the demonic energy had once been outstanding elites. After being killed by the Black Dragon phantom, their souls had been imprisoned within, forever unable to die in peace. Their once glorious futures had been turned into nothing but fleeting clouds.

As Lin Ming thought of this, he was filled with emotion.

The road of martial artists was exorbitantly dangerous. A single wrong step could lead one beyond and hope of redemption.

After Lin Ming arrived a hundred feet away from the Black Dragon Spear, the rich and potent demonic energy was already thick to the point of substantializing into ghostly beings that shot towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was already prepared. He moved forwards in a strange pattern according to the memories of the Black Dragon phantom. With every step he took, he stepped upon a singularity point of the array formation. At the same time, Lin Ming constantly formed seals that shielded him from the demonic energy.

Lin Ming walked closer and closer to the Black Dragon Spear. He could already feel the horrifying aura of the weapon.

This was a spear that had lost its artifact spirit. Even so, the terrifying atmosphere around it was enough to leave one alarmed and shaking in fear.

Without a doubt, this spear had once drunk its fill of blood from countless powerful existences.

These existences had all been heroes of the world or ancient desolate variation races. Amongst these existences were unrivalled geniuses, Empyreans, True Divinities, archaic God Beasts, and also the masters of many races that were long extinct.

Divine bodies, variation bodies, divine blood… there was an incomprehensible number of rare physiques that Lin Ming could never imagine. 10 billion years ago, geniuses with limitless potential had sprung up one after another.

At that time, humans, saints, and spiritas had been small and weak species. The ancient races ran wild through the 33 Heavens. Wars raged between the races all year round and heroes poured forth into the vast universe!

This spear was stained with the blood of all those powerhouses. After another 10 billion years of accumulating energy and being nourished by the Laws of the 33 Heavens and the rich heaven and earth origin energy within the final trial, as well as the flesh and blood of so many dead trial challengers, the quality of the spear had reached unimaginable boundaries.

But, where had the Black Dragon Spear’s artifact spirit gone?

Did it follow the Asura Road Master and leave?

Or could it be that it wasn’t able to withstand countless years of erosion and had faded from the world?

All sorts of speculations flashed through Lin Ming’s mind. But what was without a doubt was that if the artifact spirit was still within the Black Dragon Spear, the spear’s might would increase by several times over.

To be more accurate, if the Black Dragon Spear still had its artifact spirit then it wouldn't be only a simple weapon; it would be able to fight on its own.

And because the Black Dragon Spear had once followed the Asura Road Master, or at least his avatar, the artifact spirit likely understood the Asura Heavenly Dao. Its strength was likely extraordinary and it had probably reached an Empyrean level cultivation.

In other words, even an Empyrean might not be a match for the Black Dragon Spear's artifact spirit.

Lin Ming slowly approached. It was only after an hour that he arrived in front of the Black Dragon Spear. The shaft of this ancient weapon had been baptized within the river of time and didn't have the slightest bit of shine to it. There were dense red lines that faintly shined on the shaft, as if blood had stained the weapon and had been left through the years.

"These lines..."

Lin Ming was shocked. According to common logic it was impossible for ordinary blood to contaminate such a divine weapon and especially impossible for it to leave behind any traces. Moreover, after 10 billion years, no matter what blood it was, it should have already turned to dust.

But now, no matter how he looked at these lines, they came from bloodstains. There was only a single explanation, and it was that this blood came from the incredibly powerful existences that had been slain beneath the Black Dragon Spear.

Only such divine blood would be able to leave behind these stained lines on such a weapon.

Lin Ming inexplicably remembered the final step of the blue stone road where he had seen the ghost of some ancient race's god king. That person likely surpassed the boundaries of True Divinity, or was at least an extreme True Divinity!

Could this blood be his?

Lin Ming was silent for a moment. After he stood there for a long time he took a deep breath and grasped the shaft of the Black Dragon Spear.

For a time, countless images flooded through Lin Ming's mind. It was like he had been placed upon an ancient Buddha-slaying battlefield with the flames of war rising from all directions. He saw a divine pillar of light shoot into the endless blue skies. He saw the catastrophe of the world, where countless god kings perished…

All of these ghostly images had happened over billions of years. But to Lin Ming, they all passed through his mind in a flash.

Ka ka ka!

Crimson Asura Heavenly Dao curse seals appeared over Lin Ming's body. The Black Dragon Spear was constantly pulled out by him. The cold spear point was pulled free from the mysterious black rock. The Black Dragon Spear that had been slumbering here for 10 billion years was finally able to see the light of day.

As Lin Ming grasped this spear in his hand, the first thing he thought was…

This is heavy!

This spear was absolutely the heaviest weapon Lin Ming had ever encountered. The dreadful weight surpassed 10 billion jins. It was hard to imagine just what the material used to forge it was.

Even with Lin Ming's strength, wielding this spear was extremely straining!

And the most unusual thing of all was that this spear shaft actually retained flexibility. It was just that this flexibility required a terrifying strength in order to show it. With Lin Ming's current bodily strength, even if he opened all his Dao Palaces and bent the spear shaft with all his strength, he would only be able to bend it a little. It was impossible for him to bend it like a crescent moon.

"Incredible."

Lin Ming whispered. He was confident in his body transformation technique, but in front of this spear, his strength seemed lacking. Whether it was the spear's weight or elasticity, with Lin Ming's current boundary in cultivating his body, he still had far too many problems.

Realizing this, Lin Ming thought it was a bit laughable. Duke Fullmoon and the others tried so hard to obtain this spear, but by relying on their cultivation system even if they succeeded in obtaining this Black Dragon Spear, they would only be able to look at it. None of them would have been able to wield it.

In front of this Black Dragon Spear, Lin Ming's body transformation system boundary was lacking. So, he tried another method. He revolved the essence gathering system and prepared to move the spear. Without any hesitation he opened the Heretical God Force. Behind Lin Ming, the phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared.

Origin energy surged forth like a tide, rising up around the Black Dragon Spear!

Hum hum hum - !

The Black Dragon Spear welcomed it all. Every tiny ounce of energy was poured into it. It was like trying to fill a bottomless pit. No matter how much energy Lin Ming poured into it, it was impossible for him to fill it up!

Lin Ming exhausted all of his true essence, pouring all of his strength into the spear until he reached his limit. Even so, the spear didn't have any major reaction, only emitting a faint black light on the spear shaft. If this were any other weapon then with the amount of energy that Lin Ming poured in, it would have already been radiating a blazing divine light as if it would burn down.

After completing this experiment, Lin Ming could only ruefully smile. He had determined that with his current strength, he could just barely manage to wield this Black Dragon Spear. And, he wouldn't even be able to display a tenth of the spear's strength. Even if he used the essence gathering system, he also needed to open the Dao Palaces in order to swing this spear freely.

If he attacked with this Black Dragon Spear, although he would obtain an immense striking power, the energy and blood vitality he would have to consume was simply astonishing.

“It seems I can’t use the Black Dragon Spear freely right now. Only when I’m facing a powerful enemy can I take out this spear as a final trump card. Moreover, this spear already surpasses an Empyrean spirit treasure. If news of it were to spread out then there would likely be many people coveting it. I fear I would have to face the hunt of countless supreme elders…”

As Lin Ming was thinking this he put away the Black Dragon Spear.

Although he had obtained this divine weapon, in ordinary times Lin Ming would have to use the Phoenix Blood Spear. Only in times of desperation when all his other cards had been used could he use this spear.

The Phoenix Blood Spear could be called a weapon that had grown up together with Lin Ming. In the future, the Phoenix Blood Spear would be slowly refined into an Empyrean spirit treasure and eventually develop its own true artifact spirit. But, the only problem was that this process would take an extremely long time, at least tens of thousands or even hundreds of thousands of years. Only then would the Phoenix Blood Spear be able to reveal its fearful strength. But for the current Lin Ming, this rate of growth would take far too long.

As Lin Ming turned to leave, he saw that in the distant horizon, a massive pillar of divine light shot up into the skies, piercing through the horizon!

Lin Ming was startled. As he focused his eyes he could see the dazzling divine light and above that were countless dark clouds. Because of this pillar of divine light, a jet black space crack was slowly opening up in the sky.

This space crack became increasingly large and wide. Even from such a great distance away, Lin Ming could faintly see the images within this space crack. It was like another world was contained within!

Lin Ming's mind stirred. "This is… the opening of the final trial's fifth level…"

It wasn't just Lin Ming who saw this, but all other martial artists on the fourth level also saw this scene. With this, everyone's ventures and struggles in the fourth level began to slowly die down…

Chapter 1712 – The Sky Piercing Steps

Chapter 1712 – The Sky Piercing Steps

…

…

…

Within the final trial, each level was different so Lin Ming didn't know what the scene in the fifth level would be like. As he watched the space crack from far away, he could see a world that seemed to be flooded with infinite energy. Beams of glorious divine light shot out from the skies, twisting in one's vision like ripples, expanding like drops of oil in water.

Lin Ming launched his movement technique and flew towards the space crack!

Lin Ming had already ventured deep into the fourth level. From where he was, there was a considerable distance until he reached the middle of the fourth level.

When Lin Ming caught up to the center of the fourth level, there were already many trial challengers that had arrived earlier.

In order to survive the life and death slaughters of the fourth level and arrive here, each and every person was a peak character. There was a faint infernal energy that lingered around their bodies. They all stood in their own corners, quietly meditating.

Above their heads, countless arcs of thunder flashed. The terrifying space crack was like the maw of an ancient vicious beast, hidden within the vault of the heavens.

"Grandmaster Lin Ming!"

Lin Ming suddenly heard someone call out to him. He turned and saw two youths in torn clothing jogging up to him, their appearances extremely distressed.

These two were talented young brothers from the Far East Family, an ancient family of martial artists. After they arrived at the fourth level they had been chased by a giant diamond ape but had been luckily rescued by Lin Ming.

Afterward separating, they were besieged by dangers on all sides. By relying on a variety of methods they managed to flee the disasters and wait until the spatial entrance to the fifth level opened.

On the fourth floor they hadn't come across any great lucky chance but they had found some reasonably decent medicinal herbs. And most importantly, their final completion percentage had risen to over 40%. After the final trial ended they would be able to obtain more rewards.

"Oh, it's you two."

Lin Ming nodded and greeted them in return. He looked up at the skies. From such a close distance Lin Ming could already see the space of the fifth level; it was an ancient world that exuded a dark bleakness. The height of this crack was over a hundred miles up in the air.

"The entrance to the fifth level has already opened. Can we not enter yet?"

Lin Ming turned and asked the two Far East Family youths.

The two youths shook their heads, "We can't enter yet. There is a horrifying pressure falling down from the entrance to the fifth level. After flying several thousand feet, the Laws are restricted and it is impossible to continue flying upwards. There is also a pressure that is impossible for us to withstand."

Some people had already attempted to go to the next level. When the entrance to a new level in the final trial opened there would always be some people hurrying up to enter first, thinking that there might be some great lucky chance awaiting the first to arrive.

But they had only managed to fly a few thousand feet before losing the ability to fly further up. One by one, these people all plummeted down like birds that had lost their wings.

“Flying is restricted…”

Lin Ming rubbed his chin, a thoughtful look on his face. According to the description of these two youths, the pressure would become increasingly dreadful the higher one went. Even if Lin Ming were to try flying up it would be impossible for him to reach the space crack. Thus, he had no idea how he would enter.

As Lin Ming was thinking, a cold breeze wafted past him, making his heart chill. He looked towards the distant horizon to see a white beam of light rapidly approaching.

The cold bone-freezing chill that Lin Ming felt had been emitted from that direction.

Lin Ming focused his gaze. He could see that the white beam of light was actually a beautiful woman in blue clothes

The ground shrank beneath her feet. Wherever she passed, the entire world would be wrapped with a layer of snow and ice… forests, rivers, and even mountains, everything was frozen over in large tracts.

“Soul Empress Sheng Mei!”

Lin Ming’s heart skipped a beat and he held his breath. Facing someone like Sheng Mei who could decide his life or death instantly, Lin Ming felt a little harried. This was especially true since he had just killed the Divine Void Crown Prince!

Everyone had already discovered Soul Empress Sheng Mei approaching. In a moment she arrived in front of the crowd. Thin threads of icy blue fire floated around her body, as if it were bringing an endless winter to the world.

This biting cold constantly radiated out from her body, spreading all around. Even the wasteland beneath her feet became covered with white frost.

Those that could arrive at the center of the fourth level were all outstandingly strong proud children of heaven. Even so, several people weren't able to withstand that strange cold air and quietly drew back several steps.

"This cold air…"

Lin Ming's pupils shrank, looking at the blue-clothed woman in front of him with a little bit of surprise. In his impression, although Sheng Mei was a proud and lofty character, she usually remained low-key and kept to herself. It was unlike her to be so aggressive and imperious today.

Looking closer at Sheng Mei, Lin Ming noticed someone different about her. At her waist, there was a peculiar ribbon that seemed like it was made of scales and yet not made of scales, made of silk but not made of silk.

Countless tiny runes floated around the ribbon like sand in a desert storm, sparkling around it.

The cold air that seemed as if it could freeze all of existence was being emitted by this strange ribbon.

"That thing is…"

Lin Ming was stunned. If he wasn't wrong then this ribbon was likely something Sheng Mei had obtained from the fourth level!

After Sheng Mei appeared, her gaze casually swept over the surroundings. Then, her vision rested on Lin Ming for a brief moment, a hint of interest appearing in her eyes.

This Lin Ming… compared to the last time she saw him, he was much stronger, as if he had been completely reborn. Moreover, there was some inexplicable ghostly black energy that wrapped around him. It was unknown just what he had experienced in the fourth level.

“How interesting…”

Sheng Mei’s lips curved in a slight smile. She was in a very good mood right now and the reason was the ribbon at her waist.

Lin Ming’s guess wasn’t wrong. The last time Sheng Mei entered the final trial she had discovered this ribbon. But, she hadn’t taken it, only leaving a special mark on it. Afterwards, Sheng Mei gathered herself from her previous defeat and after arriving at the fourth level, went straight towards where the mark was. After a great deal of trouble, she finally obtained this ribbon.

This ribbon was not an offensive spirit treasure. Its use was to gather and converge the cold energy between the heavens and earth. It would be extremely useful to Sheng Mei in nourishing her Ice Phoenix.

Sheng Mei indifferently smiled. Then at this time, she was slightly startled. She looked up at the shattered space above her head.

Lin Ming also looked up.

Rumble rumble rumble!

High in the air, the chaotic energy began to spin around, becoming a massive black vortex.

Faintly, one could see star-bright runes shimmer around it.

These runes were like isolated floating islands, vast and limitless, carrying with them a unique aura along with the power of Laws.

Every rune was different. Some were ancient and profound, making Lin Ming feel as if he could feel the wonders of the beginning of the universe.

"This is…"

Everyone looked up to the heavens.

Many of these people had already been waiting at the entrance to the fifth level for a long time. But because flying was restricted here, they weren't able to enter. Now, these changes occurring within the world was likely the turnaround of the situation.

Hum –

All of the runes began to shine together, releasing a magnificent light that shot deeper into the black vortex, as if they were summoning something from within.

Gradually, from the deepest depths of the black vortex, a dim light responded.

Vast and boundless fluctuations of strength that caused the heart to race began to come closer and closer.

A crimson rune fell down, accompanied by twisting red lightning that was as thick as a mountain.

As the rune struck the earth, the ground shivered and split apart, forming a vast hole that was over 10,000 feet wide.

More blood-colored runes crashed down like meteors, leaving massive gaping holes that eventually coalesced into a pitch black abyss.

Witnessing this horrifying momentum, Lin Ming was secretly panic-stricken. At this time, he was still over a hundred miles away from the red lightning. After absorbing the Asura blood, his spirit, body, and soul force had all rapidly improved, and his mentality had been tempered greatly. Even so, he still couldn't help but feel his heart shake at this scene before him.

As for the geniuses nearby, they all paled. The massive pressure exuding from the black vortex as well as the giant runes falling down with arcs of lightning pressed down on them, extremely difficult for them to withstand.

Of them, some were heavily wounded and began shaking.

The light shooting out from the black vortex became increasingly dazzling. Then, with a resounding ring, a vast white platform, surging with sparkling dawn light, slowly revealed itself as it blocked out the skies.

Bang!

The stone platform fell onto the ground!

This platform was primal and pure, as if it had been born at the beginning of the universe. It contained the atmosphere of endless years. Just looking at it, one was unable to see from edge to edge.

Atop this platform there were mountains and streams, raging rivers, flowers and insects, birds and beasts, all of them filled with life. Their vitality formed infinite flows of origin energy that surged like an endless river!

On this stone platform, life had been bred just like a planet! But outside of it, there were some strange Laws that locked in the space so that none of the essence energy within could flow out.

Countless dense runes shimmered along the outside of the stone platform, protecting the world within.

“This world’s strange Laws belong to one of the 33 Heavens...” Feeling the power of Laws within the world of this ancient platform, Lin Ming felt his heart racing.

The black vortex in the skies continued to spin, with more and more light shining out.

This time, a deep crimson platform came falling down, one rank with the smell of blood.

This blood red platform was slightly smaller than the previous white stone platform. On this platform there were billowing yellow spring rivers. An appalling blood-drenched aura winded about the platform like snakes of blood.

White bones piled up like mountains and demons slaughtered each other throughout the platform. Outside of this bloody world, one of the Laws of the 33 Heavens lingered about it…

Hu – Hu – Hu –

One after another, more and more stone platforms fell down from the swirling black vortex.

Each platform was ancient and desolate, carrying with it one of the differed Great Dao Laws of the 33 Heavens.

These stone platforms were each smaller than the last. As they stacked atop each other, they were like stairs that rose up, straight to the heavens.

Slowly, people began to understand. Because the space around the entrance to the fifth level restricted flying, it was impossible for them to fly up. They would have to crawl up these giant stone platforms.

These were sky piercing steps that the final trial had prepared for them.

Although these were only stairs, the momentum they gave off was beyond terrifying!

Everyone was shocked speechless. But in a corner, Lin Ming’s eyes focused and his pupils contracted. His stared at this incomparably massive stairway to heaven before him, rough waves rising up in his heart.

After counting all the stone platforms there just happened to be 33 of them!

This sort of structure, this majestic feeling…

Wasn’t this… the Divine Seal Altar?

Lin Ming was bewildered. Dozens of years ago he had joined the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, and the goal of the semifinals had been to climb up the Divine Seal Altar!

But, the Divine Seal Altar then was only an imitation created by Empyrean Vast Universe. Could the true Divine Seal Altar have been in the Asura Road’s final trial all along?

Chapter 1713 – Climbing the Divine Seal Altar

Chapter 1713 – Climbing the Divine Seal Altar

…

…

…

The 33 stone platforms each resonated with each other like chords of music in a strange sympathetic harmony. Countless runes flashed and wove together, stretching to the ends of time, emitting a fearful, heart-stopping pressure.

Compared to this massive Divine Seal Altar, the largest mountain in the fourth level was nothing but a little stone.

It was like every step of this Divine Seal Altar was its own ancient world.

However, what shocked Lin Ming the most was that he could faintly see large phantoms on every step. The aura of Laws emitting from these phantoms were all different, but they fused together flawlessly with the Great Dao Laws of the stone platforms, perfectly harmonious.

As for the peak of the Divine Seal Altar, the giant space crack there released endless beams of energy and arcs of lighting. The flashes of light carried with them a terrifying strength, one able to tear through space and reach into the far off distances.

Giant tornados emerged from the pitch black abyss that had been dug out from the earth. The surrounding martial artists found it hard to remain steady.

"Divine Seal Altar… it's really the Divine Seal Altar…"

Lin Ming could already confirm that every step of the 33 levels of this Divine Seal Altar contained different Laws. It could be said that within this entire vast world, the only one who possessed the ability to create something so magnificent was the Asura Road Master.

But what about Empyrean Divine Seal's Divine Seal Altar?

Could it be that... Empyrean Divine Seal was the Asura Road Master's reincarnation within the Divine Realm?

Lin Ming immediately thought. The Asura Road Master had reincarnated 33 times. One life one Empyrean, one life one Divinity. According to the preface of the Asura Sutra, the Asura Road Master had used 100 million years during each reincarnation to become a True Divinity powerhouse. Afterwards, he had fused all 33 reincarnations together and surpassed the boundaries of a True Divinity.

If this were true, then Empyrean Divine Seal was unlikely to be the Asura Road Master's reincarnation. This was because the Asura Road Master had lived 10 billion years ago. 10 billion years ago... that was a time when ancient races filled the universe, each one striving for supremacy. At that time, the Asura Road Master should have already experienced his 33 reincarnations and established the Asura Road.

As for Empyrean Divine Seal, he had only existed 3.6 billion years ago. During that era, the three races of humans, saints, and spiritas ruled the 33 Heavens. The difference in time was far too great.

Moreover, Empyrean Divine Seal was a tragic story. He seemed to have perished because of humanity's calamity. If he really was the reincarnation of the Asura Road Master then perhaps he wouldn't have died saving humanity.

Even his Divine Seal Altar seemed to have shattered. The reason Empyrean Vast Universe had been able to create an imitation of the Divine Seal Altar was because he had obtained a fragment of the True Divine Seal Altar. Otherwise, Lin Ming wouldn't have seen the phantom of Empyrean Divine Seal when he climbed up the 33 steps of the Divine Seal Altar.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming came up with his own hypothesis. 3.6 billion years ago, Empyrean Divine Seal should also have come to the final trial, and he saw this same scene as he tried to go from the fourth level to the fifth. After climbing the 33 steps, Empyrean Divine Seal had relied upon the comprehensions he obtained here to create his own Divine Seal Altar.

Afterwards, that Divine Seal Altar became one of Empyrean Divine Seal’s lifetime magic weapons.

Lin Ming found it hard to keep his calm. He never thought that 3.6 billion years ago, Empyrean Divine Seal also climbed up this ancient 33 step altar.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and turned his head to look at Soul Empress Sheng Mei. He only saw her staring at the Divine Seal Altar, he eyes shining with a splendid light as she too found it hard to remain calm. From her expression, this was clearly the first time she had seen the Divine Seal Altar.

The tests one faced in the final trial were ever changing and not every situation would be identical. During the last final trial that Soul Empress Sheng Mei attended, she had probably experienced something else when she went from the fourth level to the fifth.

“What large stone steps! Are we supposed to crawl our way up?”

Many martial artists were left utterly speechless as they stared at the incomparably gigantic Divine Seal Altar.

“It looks like that’s what we will have to do. It’s impossible to reach the fifth level by flying. We’ll have to crawl up, and this stone altar doesn’t look easy to crawl up at all.”

“Heh, every trial from here on out is far, far harder. Let’s rush up and get as much as we can completed!”

Many martial artists looked at each other, their resolves steeled. It wasn't easy for many of them to arrive this far. As for the fifth level of the final trial, that would undoubtedly be far more difficult than the fourth!

Unless there was some major upset, they would likely be stopped here.

"Go!"

For a time, numerous trial challengers shot up towards the Divine Seal Altar, climbing up high!

The ground beneath their feet shattered from the recoil force. Using all sorts of secret techniques, they were like fish diving through the dragon gate, soaring towards the top of the Divine Seal Altar!

Beneath the space crack leading to the fifth level, one could still fly up to around a thousand feet. But the further one went, the greater the pressure would be.

Many martial artists flew up around a thousand feet and weren't able to withstand the dreadful pressure anymore. They fell onto the walls of the Divine Seal Altar and were forced to grab the rough stone cliffs. Then, with their grip on the stone cliffs, they propelled themselves upwards once more.

Again and again, these trial challengers would jump up hundreds of feet at a time; they were considerably fast.

Beneath the Divine Seal Altar, Lin Ming watched all of this occur from the corners of his eyes. He soon discovered that the pressure falling down from the Divine Seal Altar affected different people in different ways. Martial artists with higher cultivations experienced a suppressive force far more intense than those with lower cultivations.

"The higher one's cultivation, the more pressure there is?"

It wasn't just Lin Ming that discovered this, but many other trial challengers also. The pressure coming from the skies above the Divine Seal Altar revolved according to some strange Laws. The higher one's cultivation, the greater the repulsing force was. Thus, martial artists with higher cultivation had no advantage here at all.

If one only had a high cultivation but was a complete mess in every other aspect, they would truly suffer climbing upwards.

In other words, the Divine Seal Altar was a test of one's foundation.

"How interesting… the Gate of Laws' difficulty was dependent on my skeletal age, but the difficulty of this Divine Seal Altar is dependent on my cultivation. When I broke through into the half-step Holy Lord realm on the third level, it seems that it made this Divine Seal Altar more difficult for me to climb instead…"

In this final trial, an endless variety of methods could be brought out to test a trial challenger. Their talent, absolute strength, foundation, comprehension of Laws, all sorts of qualities could be tested here without end.

Lin Ming immediately thought of all this and increasingly anticipated just what the last levels of the final trial would be like. But, he didn't immediately climb up the Divine Seal Altar. Within his heart, he felt faintly restless.

So much time had passed and yet he hadn't seen a hint of Xiao Moxian.

Although Lin Ming felt that with Xiao Moxian's strength and destiny, it was impossible for her to meet some calamitous danger in the fourth level. But, worry was irrational to begin with. If he didn't see Xiao Moxian, Mo Brightmoon, and the others appear, he couldn't help but find it hard to remain calm.

On another side, Sheng Mei also didn't move. She floated 100 feet higher in the air, her blue clothes fluttering about her, her eyes as deep as moons and her black hair as soft as snow.

There was a man standing behind Sheng Mei. This man had a naked upper body and his entire chest was covered with strange mysterious tattoos. His muscles were thick and overlapping, as if they had been shaped by the endless washing of water. He emitted a deeply masculine but magnificent atmosphere.

When Sheng Mei requested three spots from Soul Emperor Divine Void, the two extra spots were for her followers.

This man was one of them. Throughout this entire time he had kept an extremely low profile, not revealing the least bit about himself. Even Lin Ming wasn't able to judge his strength.

"Lady Soul Empress, this level seems disadvantageous to us..." The tattooed man looked at the Divine Seal Altar, frowning as he spoke.

Sheng Mei lightly shook her head. "It's far from being disadvantageous. This is a fair test, one that doesn't look at age and only at one's foundation. From here on out, the trials we face will not discriminate. Cultivation will not bring one any advantages, but... I never needed those advantages to begin with."

Sheng Mei said with supreme confidence.

The final trial's nondiscriminatory trials were the most basic of trials. In these tests where trial challengers would obtain greatly different results from each other, everyone would be placed at the same starting line.

The Gate of Laws was this way and so was the Divine Seal Altar.

The fifth level of the final trial would also be like this.

Towards these things, Sheng Mei had already mentally prepared herself.

"Dragonscar, let's go."

As Sheng Mei spoke she flew towards the Divine Seal Altar. Behind her, Dragonscar followed closely.

As Sheng Mei flew up into the skies, because her cultivation was far too high, the pressure she had to withstand was far greater. As her true essence fiercely collided with the pressure of Laws, the friction emitted a dazzling divine light!

Chi chi chi!

Underneath the impact of this divine light, the layers of ice crystals that floated around Sheng Mei began to shatter in abundance, freezing the void!

The momentum with which Sheng Mei climbed the Divine Seal Altar was one that no other martial artist could compare with.

For a time, many trial challengers slowed their pace to look at Sheng Mei, their eyes full of awe and praise.

Even beneath a pressure that far surpassed what anyone else was experiencing, Sheng Mei was still able to rise like a rising beam of light, her speed far faster than the rest!

Chapter 1714 – Xiao Moxian's Change

Chapter 1714 – Xiao Moxian's Change

…

…

…

Underneath the gazes of everyone, Sheng Mei only used half an incense stick of time to climb up the first step of the Divine Seal Altar. The next fastest person was only three-fourths of the way up.

"Too fierce!"

Many trial challengers exclaimed. They knew that the pressure Sheng Mei had to withstand was dozens or even hundreds of times greater than what they had to bear. Even so, she was the first to climb up the Divine Seal Altar's first step. It was impossible to measure this difference!

However, the trial challengers also remembered that besides Sheng Mei, there were several other monstrous geniuses amongst them.

For instance, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian as well as Bigflame and the Divine Void Crown Prince.

"Bigflame? The Divine Void Crown Prince? Where did the two of them go?"

By now, the entrance to the fifth level had been open for some time. But, many people had yet to arrive. If others didn't arrive it was fine, but for chosen prides of heaven like Bigflame and the Divine Void Crown Prince to still be missing, this caused everyone to feel as if something was wrong.

"There is also that woman in black clothes who always followed Lin Ming around. She's a ruthless person too, so how come she isn't here yet?"

Everyone glanced at each other, feeling a bit strange.

At this time, Lin Ming still hadn't moved. He stared off into the distance, scanning the horizon. Although he was trying to remain calm he found it difficult to tamp down the growing unease in his heart. Xiao Moxian was really far too slow, making it so that he inevitably started to imagine various scenarios.

As for the Divine Void Crown Prince that had gone missing, Sheng Mei simply didn't seem to care for him at all nor did she have any intention of looking into his disappearance. This startled Lin Ming. It seemed that in Sheng Mei's eyes, someone on the level of the Divine Void Crown Prince simply wasn't worth her paying much attention to. In the Divine Void Divine Kingdom, there would normally be someone every generation or two that was able to obtain a title of Crown Prince. After accumulating for so much time, there was a considerable number of them, to the point that Sheng Mei couldn't be bothered with them.

Lin Ming silently waited. Slowly, many trial challengers had climbed up the Divine Seal Altar's first step and were preparing to climb the second.

Finally, Lin Ming let out a long breath of relief and stood up. At the furthest edges of his vision that he could see into the wasteland, he could sense Xiao Moxian's familiar aura.

Before long, several shadows appeared on the horizon. Their speed was quick and they soon arrived in front of Lin Ming. They were Xiao Moxian, Mo Brightmoon, and the others of their group. Even Suya was together with them.

The several people were safe and without any major injuries. In the midst of the crowd was Xiao Moxian. Her clothes were torn in several places and she appeared a little exhausted. Even so, her eyes shined with excitement.

"Big Brother Lin!"

Seeing Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian joyfully shouted out.

“Xian’er, how come you’re so late…”

Xiao Moxian looked a bit distressed but she was in extremely jolly spirits. Lin Ming finally felt relieved upon seeing this.

“Hehe…”

Xiao Moxian smugly smiled, waiting for Lin Ming to take a guess. But at this time, Lin Ming’s keen senses discovered that there was something different with Xiao Moxian’s aura.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were nearly linked together in their thoughts, thus he was naturally able to feel the changes in her body. He discovered that her blood energy was far more concise and the nirvanic flames within her body were even more potent.

A breakthrough?

Lin Ming was stunned. But as he looked at her inner world, he saw that she was still at the late Divine Lord realm.

Xiao Moxian’s cultivation speed was originally faster than Lin Ming’s, but because he had stepped into the star-like immortal palace, she had been left in the dust by him instead. Now, Lin Ming was already a half-step Holy Lord, and as for Xiao Moxian, she would find it difficult to make a breakthrough in the next several years.

Xiao Moxian only cultivated the essence gathering system. She didn’t make a breakthrough in her cultivation and yet her blood energy was far more vibrant; this was quite unusual.

Lin Ming even discovered that within her body, her primordial yin energy was slowly reforming.

When Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming first dual cultivated, although Xiao Moxian had obtained tremendous benefits from Lin Ming’s body, her primordial yin energy had still been taken away by Lin Ming. Now, there was a faint tendency that it was reforming; how could Lin Ming not be surprised by this?

Lin Ming suddenly understood what had happened. He asked with happy surprise, “Xian’er, you completed your second nirvana!?”

This was no small matter!

A phoenix could undergo nine nirvanas. Although the seventh, eighth, and ninth nirvana were the most difficult, and the first six were easier, this was only relatively speaking!

In order for a true royal Phoenix to complete the first six nirvanas, it would require innumerable years of accumulations. But for Xiao Moxian, she had only needed another 60-70 years to complete her second nirvana!

“That’s right!” Xiao Moxian ecstatically replied. “I obtained a lucky chance on the fourth level so I was able to complete my second nirvana, otherwise it might have taken me several hundred more years!”

Lin Ming was also happy as he heard the bubbling joy in Xiao Moxian’s voice. During this adventure into the Asura Road, Xiao Moxian had accompanied him the majority of this time but she hadn’t experienced many lucky chances for herself. Besides the one time in Tragic Death Valley when she obtained the method to cultivate the Asura Heavenly Dao, she hadn’t had any other lucky chances. But now, at this final trial, she managed to finally obtain her own great lucky chance.

“That’s wonderful.”

Lin Ming said from his heart. Xiao Moxian was a descendant of the Demondawn Clan as well as a descendant of a royal Phoenix God Beast. But, a Phoenix God Beast, even a royal Phoenix, was nothing in front of a heaven-defying existence like Soul Empress Sheng Mei. If a royal Phoenix managed to complete nine nirvanas they would be able to step into the True Divinity boundary, but there were beyond few royal Phoenixes that managed to do so.

As for Sheng Mei, as Lin Ming saw it, she had almost reached the boundary of True Divinity. What she wished for, the challenge she faced, was likely the peak of True Divinity!

In this situation, a royal Phoenix was definitely inferior to Sheng Mei.

Yet, Xiao Moxian was different. While she possessed the talent of a royal Phoenix, she had also inherited the cultivation talent and learning ability of the Demondawn Clan!

Although a royal God Beast possessed a bloodline that defied the heavens and could reach the Empyrean boundary just by growing up, in terms of cultivation ability they were actually flung far behind by other races, like the humans, saints, and spiritas. This was the balance of nature. The stronger one's bloodline was, the more difficult it was to procreate and their ultimate potential was also limited in its ability to adapt.

But Xiao Moxian broke this careful balance. She possessed a royal God Beast bloodline foundation as well as a peak perception and cultivation talent. In addition, as she followed Lin Ming and experienced her own lucky chances and fortuitous encounters, her potential was unimaginable.

Completing her second nirvana in the fourth level of the final trial was only the beginning. She would definitely have increasingly exaggerated achievements in the future!

At this time, Mo Brightmoon smiled. "This time we had to rely on Miss Xian'er to survive. The ghosts and evil spirits in this mystic realm are simply far too formidable. If it weren't for Miss Xian'er successfully undergoing her nirvana at the crucial moment and then using her enhanced nirvanic flames to burn away the ghosts, it might be unknown whether or not we would have been able to return alive..."

Mo Brightmoon lightly said. Lin Ming was able to discern a great deal from her words. It seemed that their experience in the fourth level had been filled with dangers.

After glancing over at Thousand Slaughter and Fanny Fafa, Lin Ming discovered that they were wounded. They had consumed a great deal of blood vitality and had obviously passed through a desperate battle.

Lin Ming knew that in order for Xiao Moxian to complete her second nirvana, she needed a safe environment to do so. If this were true, then she would have needed Mo Brightmoon, Fanny Fafa, and the others to serve as her protectors.

It could be imagined just how perilous the situation had been.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and looked at Mo Brightmoon, Suya, Fanny Fafa, and Thousand Slaughter. He clearly said, “I thank you all…”

“Haha, Brother Lin there is no need for such words! We only did what we should have done. Anyways, without Miss Xian’er here, I fear we would have perished in this damned haunted land. The fourth level of the final trial is truly steeped step by step in all sorts of killing intents!”

Fanny Fafa honestly said. Although his lilting feminine voice was a bit strange when combined with these frank words, Lin Ming could still feel the sincerity within them.

“Rest up, then we’ll climb the Divine Seal Altar!”

Lin Ming turned and looked at the massive Divine Seal Altar behind him.

Before this, Mo Brightmoon and the others had already seen the soul-stirring scene. They were just about to ask Lin Ming what had happened.

Seeing so many people climb up, Mo Brightmoon asked, “Is this the entrance to the fifth level?”

“Indeed!”

Lin Ming nodded and proceeded to explain the rules of the Divine Seal Altar.

A brilliant light shined in Xiao Moxian’s eyes. She said, “Big Brother Lin, isn’t this thing something you climbed up before?”

In the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, Xiao Moxian had also been a part of Lin Ming's tournament sub-zone. However, she hadn't attended the semifinals where the Divine Seal Altar was placed. Even so, she learned later that Lin Ming had been the one to climb up its steps to the top.

Lin Ming said, "Perhaps Empyrean Divine Seal's Divine Seal Altar is related to the final trial. We'll find out once we climb up!"

As Lin Ming spoke, Mo Brightmoon and the others sat down to meditate. With the support of various pills, it wasn't long before they restored themselves to top condition.

And at this time, many trial challengers had crawled up to the third and fourth steps of the Divine Seal Altar.

"Let's go!"

Lin Ming stood up, his clear and deep voice ringing out.

Chapter 1715 – Sheng Mei's Thoughts

Chapter 1715 – Sheng Mei's Thoughts

…

…

…

"Lin Ming's moved."

On the Divine Seal Altar, many people looked down to see Lin Ming start climbing up the steps.

"Finally. I wonder what his performance will be like."

Lin Ming's talent had already been proven within the Gate of Asura. Still, many people found it unbelievable. After all, Lin Ming had come out of nowhere. He wasn't like Sheng Mei, someone who had an unbelievably deep background and status and had also attempted the final trial before and obtained above an 80% completion rate.

Although no one doubted that Lin Ming had a terrifying talent, one still needed to verify this with their own eyes. This was like participating in a grand tournament with countless masters all around, and then encountering a seemingly common opponent who casually ended up being the top master of the entire universe. One would always find this difficult to accept.

Many people were paying attention to Lin Ming right now, including even Sheng Mei.

"Empress, it seems you are paying a particular amount of attention to that youth…?"

Beside Sheng Mei, her follower Dragonscar commented.

Sheng Mei lightly nodded. “This person has a very special soul. It even seems a little like that special soul physique recorded within the Spiritas Holy Scripture…”

“Spiritas Holy Scripture?”

Dragonscar was startled upon hearing this.

To the spiritas of the Asura Road, the Spiritas Holy Scripture was nothing but a legend. Although there might have been some people who had seen a duplicate copy of the Spiritas Holy Scripture before, for a divine text of such a level, it was similar to the Asura Sutra to begin with and was simply impossible to duplicate. The so-called duplicate copy would only contain some superficial knowledge and would be missing far too much information; it just wouldn’t be of much value.

As a follower of Sheng Mei, Dragonscar actually knew the whereabouts of the true Spiritas Holy Scripture.

The Spiritas Holy Scripture was in the hands of Divine Sovereign Soul Rapture, and Divine Sovereign Soul Rapture was the existence that Sheng Mei followed orders from. He was a dreadful character that had lived for countless years, the ultimate powerhouse of the spiritas!

Even though Dragonscar had followed Sheng Mei for so many years, he had never seen Divine Sovereign Soul Rapture’s true form yet. He had only heard his voice, but just that voice alone was enough to cause Dragonscar’s mind to shake with fear and his soul to freeze.

Dragonscar didn’t doubt that a major part of the reason why Divine Sovereign Soul Rapture was able to rule the spiritas of the 33 Heavens for so many years was because of the Spiritas Holy Scripture.

In fact, there was a possibility that the reason why Divine Sovereign Soul Rapture was able to reach his current cultivation boundary was because he had a lucky chance during his youth and stumbled upon the Spiritas Holy Scripture.

The common people might not know where Sheng Mei's Grand Reincarnation Art came from. This was a supernatural cultivation method similar to the nine nirvanas of a phoenix. After every revolution one would have to reincarnate and their boundary would drop by several large realms. Afterwards, one would have to cultivate from the start again!

This was a cultivation method that only a peerless genius could practice. This was because unless someone possessed a cultivation speed ten times that of a genius, the more they cultivated the lower their boundary would be. But, if one could successfully train in this cultivation method then they could forcefully enhance their bodily talent and cultivation talent. It was a truly heaven-defying technique!

To restart from zero nine times, every life was a whole new accumulation of learning. The reason that Sheng Mei was able to have her current achievements was because of her own monstrous talent as well as the Grand Reincarnation Art.

Within the inner Asura Road, the Soul Emperor Divine Void also held a deep admiration and respect for the Grand Reincarnation Art. This mystical heaven-defying cultivation method nearly seemed as if it were creating its own independent set of Laws. It absolutely wasn't something that an ordinary True Divinity could hope of creating.

As for the origin of the Grand Reincarnation Art, Soul Emperor Divine Void had some guesses, but none that he could confirm. However, Dragonscar actually knew the true origins of the Grand Reincarnation Art.

It came from the Spiritas Holy Scripture – it was a part of it!

As for who was the one who wrote the Spiritas Holy Scripture, that was a mystery that had yet to be solved. It wasn't even known if the person who composed the Spiritas Holy Scripture was a spiritas to begin with.

Maybe even Divine Sovereign Soul Rapture wouldn't be able to answer this question.

Now that Sheng Mei suddenly said that Lin Ming had a special soul physique that was recorded in the Spiritas Holy Scripture, how could Dragonscar not be shocked?

“Empress, do you mean… the Eternal Soul?”

“Yes, it’s that. But it’s only a faint similarity. If he really did possess the Eternal Soul then I would have to bring him back to the spiritas no matter what.”

Dragonscar was left bewildered. He looked at Lin Ming once again. But, unfortunately, he had very few understandings of what the Eternal Soul really was and was only faintly aware of its existence. This sort of soul physique had already disappeared from the 33 Heavens for 10 billion years.

This Eternal Stone as well as the Stone of Eternal Life were closely tied together with the ephemeral concept of immortality within the legends.

Lin Ming having something that resembled the Eternal Soul was more than shocking.

As Dragon Scar was thinking this, Lin Ming had already climbed up the first level of the Divine Seal Altar.

Climbing the Divine Seal Altar was a relatively relaxed exercise for Lin Ming. As he scaled the rough stone walls of the Divine Seal Altar, Lin Ming calmly perceived the Concepts contained within it.

Without a doubt, the Divine Seal Altar of the inner Asura Road could not be compared with the imitation Divine Seal Altar crafted by Empyrean Vast Universe. The main difference here mostly came from the different Concepts within the two altars.

This Divine Seal Altar contained Concepts within each step that correlated to one of the Laws of the 33 Heavens.

When Lin Ming passed through the blue stone road he had already enlightened himself upon these Laws of the 33 Heavens, thus now that he climbed up the Divine Seal Altar, he was realizing these Laws once again.

These Laws of the 33 Heavens were mostly strange to Lin Ming. Even if he carefully comprehended them, he would only understand a limited amount. Still, he slowed his speed and slowly mulled over these feelings. This was a rare chance for him. He would do his best to bury these Laws in his heart, where they would be equal to planting Law seeds.

“Lin Ming isn’t fast at all. Is he reserving his strength?”

Dragonscar commented. He had been carefully watching Lin Ming climb up the Divine Seal Altar. It wasn’t too difficult to climb up the Divine Seal Altar. After all, the 33 steps of the Divine Seal Altar were only the stairs for a trial challenger to go from the fourth level to the fifth. Along the way, a good portion of people would be eliminated, but there would be a decent number of trial challengers that climbed up to the fifth level.

“No, he’s feeling and comprehending the Concepts…” Sheng Mei pressed her eyebrows together as she looked at Lin Ming. “Just what is he thinking… could he be thinking of comprehending the Laws of the 33 Heavens…?”

The Laws of the 33 Heavens were all-encompassing, a completely comprehensive system. Even so, no matter how they were divided they had to fall into one of three categories – soul forging, body transformation, and essence gathering.

Each of these systems possessed 11 types of Laws, each one suitable to different races of the 33 Heavens. One might not even be able to cultivate the Laws of their own race, much less the Laws of other races. In Sheng Mei’s eyes, this was simply impossible.

For a single person to dual cultivate body and energy, or even dual cultivate body and soul, was already extraordinary. To cultivate all three systems was aiming far too high.

As for cultivating all 33 Laws, to Sheng Mei that was simply the thinking of a madman.

In fact, Sheng Mei’s thoughts were correct. Even for the Asura Road Master, it was impossible to cultivate every one of the Laws. Even if he spent 100 million years cultivating each of the Laws, it was impossible for him to achieve the limit in ones that didn’t suit him.

However, the Asura Road Master had used another method to solve this problem.

That was… avatars.

If his true body wasn't suited to cultivating some Laws, then he only needed to create an avatar that was.

Lin Ming's Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was one such example.

Time slowly passed. More and more trial challengers began crawling higher and higher. Those that were able to arrive here were all outstanding elites amongst all outstanding elites of the Asura Road. As they welcomed the pressure of the Divine Seal Altar on their bodies, there was yet to be anyone who couldn't withstand the pressure. At most the difference came in those who had to slow down.

These people were different from the group of people that Lin Ming accompanied in the semifinals of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. At that time at Gravemoon Star, out of all the martial artists that climbed up the Divine Seal Altar, not including Lin Ming and Dragon Fang, the most outstanding genius there had been the Skydark Holy Lands' Nether Limitless. There weren't even any Empyrean descendants.

As for Nether Limitless, he was only the core disciple of a Great World King influence. Compared to these core disciples of Empyrean and True Divinity influences, he fell far behind.

………….

Six hours later, many martial artists had already climbed up 20 some steps.

As for Soul Empress Sheng Mei, she had reached the 30th step.

At this time, Lin Ming was on the 22nd step, slowly feeling the Law Concepts atop the Divine Seal Altar. Slowly, Lin Ming realized that although this trial of the Divine Seal Altar between the fourth and fifth level was a test, it was also a form of enlightenment. In the past, the Asura Road Master left behind many ways in which a trial challenger could enlighten themselves, but, there were simply far too few people that could comprehend anything from these experiences. Even Lin Ming was only able to leave behind Law seeds within his heart. Compared to perceiving the Laws of the 33 Heavens, this was far too great a difference.

“On this Divine Seal Altar, the crux lies in the Law Concepts, and not the pressure… reaching the top isn’t difficult at all…”

Lin Ming suddenly thought. As he looked at the height of the space crack leading to the fifth level, one would need to climb to at least the 31st step to enter, otherwise they would be eliminated.

However, according to the previous elimination rates of the trials, not too many people should be eliminated. In other words, the majority of trial challengers should be able to make it to the 31st step.

Chapter 1716 – The Final Trial's Fifth Level

Chapter 1716 – The Final Trial's Fifth Level

…

…

…

The Law Concepts on the Divine Seal Altar were trickles that flowed beneath Lin Ming's feet. As he withstood this baptism of Concepts, he climbed up to the 26th step. Although he wasn't fast at the start, he slowly caught up to everyone else. This was because at the front, most of the martial artists there had started to slow down due to the pressure of the Divine Seal Altar.

After all, there was no time limit in climbing up the Divine Seal Altar. If one slowed down a bit they could naturally restore a bit more of their strength.

At the 28th step, the pressure was terrifying.

But at this time there had yet to be a trial challenger that was eliminated. At the 29th step, the dreadful pressure gushed down like a raging waterfall. Not only was this pressure placed on the body, but it was also a pressure of energy and a pressure of the soul!

Some trial challengers immediately felt their strength verging on collapse!

"Damn it… I can't even feel my hands and feet anymore and I don't have much spirit essence left, but there are still several tens of thousands of feet until the next step…"

A red-clothed fatty from an Empyrean influence mumbled. He had already climbed 50,000 feet up the 29th step and his physical strength was reaching its limit.

"How come none of these people seem tired? Could I… could I be the one with the weakest foundation here?"

The Divine Seal Altar's 33 steps were a test of one's foundation. If one had a higher cultivation but was weak, they were destined to be eliminated here.

The rough walls of the Divine Seal Altar had already worn out the fingers of the fat red-clothed youth and had covered them with blisters. He felt his arms and legs become heavy, and was finding it increasingly difficult to continue. His entire body dripped sweat. Although he continued to try his best, his speed was still as slow as a turtle. Meanwhile, the top of the 29th step was nowhere in sight.

Woosh!

At this time, a wild flow of energy rushed towards him. Without rhyme or reason, this flow of energy crashed into the red-clothed fatty. With a pitiful cry his body went falling down…

To fall from a height of several tens of thousands of feet under the terrifying pressure of the Divine Seal Altar, one would suffer horribly if they were to hit the ground. This spiritas fatty, at the final moment, fiercely bit down on his tongue to sober himself up. As the wind whistled in his ears he forcefully grit his teeth, stimulating his spirit essence and forming a barrier of spirit essence around his body.

Peng!

The fatty smashed into the stone ground of the Divine Seal Altar. His spirit essence barrier shattered and he howled in pain. His spine had cracked and he was bleeding all over.

For better or worse, he had managed to save his life. But, it was no longer possible for him to climb up the Divine Seal Altar.

Thus, in the test from the fourth to the fifth level, at the 29th step, someone had finally been eliminated!

And this was only the first elimination. More and more people were nearing their limits.

Climbing up the Divine Seal Altar was something that would take several days. The trial challengers that dared to climb its walls needed to have an endurance that far surpassed the norm. The endurance of the spiritas martial artists was limited. Like the red-clothed fatty, many of them exhausted their spirit essence and reached the edges of their persistence.

In terms of endurance, the saints with their billowing blood vitality had a clear advantage. But, they also had a disadvantage, and that was that their soul force was limited and they found it hard to withstand the pressure on their minds and souls. Soon, the weak ones were defeated because of their lack of soul force.

By the 30th step, at least 20% of the trial challengers were unable to continue climbing.

From the 30th step to the 31st, the difficulty increased by yet another level. But, this was an extremely crucial step, because after climbing up to the 31st step, one would be extremely close to the entrance of the fifth level! As long as one climbed just a little bit more they would be able to enter the fifth level!

And as long as they could enter the fifth level then their completion percentage would rise yet again. They could reach 65% or even 70%.

No matter what influence one came from, a completion percentage of 70% was extremely shocking. In the future, this completion percentage would be a brilliant record and banner of their successes, one that hung over their road of martial artists. They would be given glory and assigned more resources, and this completion percentage would be highly beneficial to their future growth. Moreover, the rewards for obtaining a 70% completion rate were extremely rich, enough to arouse the envy of many people.

By relying on these daydreams, many trial challengers pushed themselves to continue even if they had exhausted the last dregs of their strength. They forcefully overdrew their life, all in order to reach the 31st step.

As soon as they reached the 31st step they fell to the ground, not even having the strength to sit in meditation, let alone do something like climb up the even more terrifying 32nd step.

As they were resting they opened their eyes and saw that Soul Empress Sheng Mei had already mounted the 32nd step of the Divine Seal Altar and was beginning to climb up the 33rd step. Even though she faced the horrifying pressure that fell from the 33rd step, she still ascended at a breakneck speed, her movements like passing clouds and flowing water!

They knew that Sheng Mei's cultivation was more than a large boundary above their own. The pressure she had to face was over ten times what they encountered. Even so, it seemed as if nothing could impede her ascent.

"How fierce..."

"She truly is worthy of being called the Soul Empress. She can definitely reach the top..."

"Reaching the top isn't much at all. Even if this stone altar had a 34th step or a 35th step, Sheng Mei would climb up all the same. Haven't you seen that the follower she brought with her will also reach the top soon...?"

It wasn't just Sheng Mei, but Dragonscar was also keeping pace with her. He too was climbing up the 33rd step, but it seemed his pace was a bit slower and he was finding it more difficult.

From the 31st step to the 32nd step, many people had already decided to give up. But, there were three or four trial challengers that rose to the challenge. Among these people were a black-clothed youth and a green-clothed girl that stood out. After Sheng Mei and Dragonscar they were the next fastest two people.

This man and woman clearly knew each other. They bloomed out from the crowd of trial challengers as they almost reached the top of the 32nd step.

"Who are they?"

“I don’t know, I’ve never seen them before.”

The black-clothed youth and green-clothed girl were unknown characters; no one even knew their names. And it was also impossible to tell what influence they came from by looking at their clothes.

These two people were drenched with sweat but they still stubbornly continued climbing up the 32nd step.

“These two people are… strange…”

On the walls of the Divine Seal Altar, Lin Ming thought for a moment. Somehow, he felt that the aura around this man and woman was a bit familiar, but he was sure that he had never seen them before. Because there were too many people in the final trial, Lin Ming had never noticed these two.

“Brother Lin, I don’t think I can continue much longer. I fear I won’t be able to climb up the 32nd step…”

A soft and lilting voice echoed out. Lin Ming turned to look at Fanny Fafa. Along the way, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had climbed up with Fanny Fafa, Suya, and the others. In addition, because their speed was slow, they were only in the lower-middle of the trial challengers. While the first group had already climbed up the 32nd step, Lin Ming and the others were only 10,000-20,000 feet up the 31st step.

“Mm… even you climbed up the 31st step, that is enough to enter the fifth level.”

As Lin Ming spoke he discovered that not too far away from Fanny Fafa, Suya was also dripping wet with sweat. Her cheeks were flushed red and it was clear she was reaching her limits.

Feeling Lin Ming’s gaze, Suya squeezed out a smile. “Sir Lin, this is also my final step. If I try to climb up any more then I fear I will overdraw my strength or even fall down. If that happens it will affect my own strength and cause me to be restrained on the fifth level…”

“Okay…”

Lin Ming nodded. Of his group, only he and Xiao Moxian wouldn’t have a problem reaching the top. As for the others, it would be a bit too difficult for them to climb up the 32nd step.

After Suya and Fanny Fafa, Thousand Slaughter and Mo Brightmoon also gave up. They loosened their grip on the stone walls and gently fell back down to the 31st step. As for Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, they naturally mounted the 32nd step.

After mounting the 32nd step, Lin Ming only saw several people here. It seemed that most trial challengers stopped at the 31st step.

Lin Ming glanced over at the black-clothed youth and green-clothed girl that were meditating and restoring their energy. He hesitated for a moment and then asked them, “My name is Lin Ming, may I ask where you two are from…”

The trial challengers of the final trial mostly didn’t know each other. They were nothing but strangers whose roads crossed in this mystic realm. But as Lin Ming suddenly asked this question, it caused the two of them to be startled.

They clearly recognized Lin Ming. Towards this chosen pride of heaven who passed through the Asura level Gate of Laws, they felt a deep sense of awe. This was the universal respect that one held towards powerhouses.

The two people glanced at each other. The green-clothed girl was the first to speak, “Moonpond.”

“Soulsky!” The black-clothed youth said right after.

“Moonpond, Soulsky… I’ve indeed never heard these names…” Lin Ming nodded and faintly smiled. Well, at least they were acquainted now.

“Big Brother Lin, are you interested in those two?” Xiao Moxian asked with a little surprise. In her opinion, Lin Ming was someone who rarely took the initiative to greet strangers.

“They just give off a strangely familiar feeling.” Lin Ming didn’t explain further and began to climb up the 33rd step.

Most of the trial challengers that mounted the 32nd step had to rest in meditation. Only Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian didn’t need any rest. They climbed up the rough stone walls, their speed not slowing in the least as if this massive pressure they faced didn’t exist at all.

This left everyone watching them secretly dumbfounded. No one doubted that Lin Ming would be able to reach the top, just like no one doubted Sheng Mei either.

At the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting when Lin Ming ascended from the 32nd step to the 33rd step, he had to face the power of heavenly tribulation. But at this final trial’s Divine Seal Altar, that didn’t occur at all. Rather, there was only a more terrifying pressure as well as a deeper baptism of the Laws of the 33 Heavens.

And as Lin Ming climbed up several hundred feet, Sheng Mei had already reached the top of the 33rd step!

Seeing Sheng Mei reach the top, Lin Ming took a deep breath. Although he knew that her talent was extraordinary, she had reached the top extremely fast and also did so easily, as if it wasn’t a problem at all. This left Lin Ming secretly shocked.

This Sheng Mei was even more terrifying than Divine Dream!

As Sheng Mei reached the top, the entire Divine Seal Altar began to shake. The space crack leading to the fifth level began to slowly close up!

Ka ka ka!

The space crack constantly closed in and squeezed out. According to this trend, all those below the 31st step of the Divine Seal Altar would be pushed away, while those at the 31st step and above would be able to smoothly enter the fifth level.

Chapter 1717 – Overlord

Chapter 1717 – Overlord

…

…

…

Sheng Mei mounting the top of the Divine Seal Altar’s 33 steps was like a signal. Those trial challengers who failed to reach the 31st step could only stare on unwillingly as the space crack began to slowly close up, sealing them away in the fourth level.

Currently, their position was only several tens of thousands of feet away from the space crack. Normally this distance would only take the blink of an eye to cross, but today it had become an unpassable moat.

As the space crack began to close up, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian trudged on against the intense astral winds and dreadful pressure to climb up the 33rd step.

After completing two nirvanas, it wasn’t difficult for Xiao Moxian to climb up and her speed was no slower than Lin Ming’s.

“These two people are quite fearful…”

Dragonscar breathlessly said from beside Sheng Mei. Although he had just managed to follow behind Sheng Mei, it was a strenuous task for him to climb up the 33rd step.

If there wasn’t an accident then it would only be the four of them that reached the top of the 33 steps. That was Sheng Mei, Dragonscar, Lin Ming, and Xiao Moxian. As for Moonpond and Soulsky, their hopes dimmed with every second. The most they would be able to reach would be halfway up the 33rd step.

“Indeed… these two people might be a great boost to our efforts to pass the fifth level…”

Dragonscar was startled upon hearing Sheng Mei. “Soul Empress… are you planning to try rushing past the final trial’s fifth level?”

Dragonscar knew about the final trial’s fifth trial. In fact, it could be called the limit of the final trial.

Whether it was the Soul Empress or the Good Fortune Saint Son, neither of them had been able to pass the fifth level in the past!

And in fact, according to what Dragonscar knew, for the last billion years no one had been able to pass the fifth level’s trial. Until now, it was still a complete mystery as to what lay past the fifth level.

“That’s my plan… but my hopes aren’t too great. Even if I am unable to pass the fifth level my completion percentage should be 85% or above… if there is even the slightest chance of me passing the fifth level, then my completion percentage will be 88% or even higher…”

Sheng Mei sucked in a deep breath. 88% was considerably close to 90%!

But a completion of 90% was a leap upwards. The rewards from this completion percentage were unimaginable!

As Sheng Mei and Dragonscar spoke, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had already climbed past 25,000 feet and were only several thousand feet away.

At this height they still hadn’t slowed down. As for the others, they had already given up. At this time, the trial of the Divine Seal Altar had more or less ended.

Half an hour later, Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming smoothly ascended to the top.

Standing at the top of the 33rd platform, Lin Ming directly faced Sheng Mei and Dragonscar. Standing in front of them, Lin Ming could clearly feel an icy cold aura wildly gushing out from Sheng Mei, as if she was the source of endless winter wind.

This was an unrivalled woman, one that made all others feel inferior in their heart. Just by casually standing there, she was like a fairy of the highest heavens, ethereal and ephemeral.

“Lin Ming, right…?”

Sheng Mei parted her deep red lips and asked Lin Ming.

To many people, it was the greatest of glories to be remembered by Soul Empress Sheng Mei. This was because in her eyes, most people were as worthy as ants.

“I am Lin Ming. I greet senior Soul Empress.”

Lin Ming cupped his hands across his chest and slightly bowed.

Sheng Mei nodded. “There is no need to be overly polite. Your achievements in the future will be limitless, and perhaps they might surpass my own…”

Sheng Mei’s voice was light. Although these were words of praise for Lin Ming, they were actually extremely grating on Xiao Moxian’s mind as she heard them.

In her opinion, Sheng Mei was only someone that had passed the heaven-step difficulty Gate of Laws. Although she had perfectly passed it with ease, she was far from being comparable to Lin Ming who had passed the Asura level Gate of Laws. And yet, she actually said that Lin Ming’s future achievements might surpass her own.

If Sheng Mei had passed the Asura level difficulty too then Xiao Moxian wouldn’t have any opinion on this. After all, it was as it should be for a senior to speak encouraging and appreciative words to a junior.

‘But hell, you only passed the heaven-step difficulty, so what qualifications do you have to say all that crap?’

Xiao Moxian was originally a fearless character who dreaded neither the heavens nor the earth. Even in front of Soul Empress Sheng Mei, she felt no jitters at all. She raised her chin, curled her lips, and muttered, “My Big Brother Lin’s future will naturally be limitless.”

Although she didn’t say that Lin Ming would inevitably surpass Sheng Mei, her expression and pose indicated her intent.

Regarding this, Sheng Mei only faintly smiled, not replying.

But nearby, Dragonscar frowned and his gaze became much colder and gloomier.

When Sheng Mei was speaking with others, then as a follower, Dragonscar naturally wouldn’t say anything. But Xiao Moxian’s words had left him far too disgruntled.

He coldly coughed and said, “The finch doesn’t know the beauty of the swan and the mole cricket doesn’t know the passing of spring and fall. In life, it’s best not to be so needlessly arrogant. The Empress’s future achievements cannot be imagined by the likes of you. What you have seen so far of the Empress is only the tip of the iceberg. You think you have seen the Empress’s limits? What a joke!”

Dragonscar sneered. He originally thought that Sheng Mei’s praise of Lin Ming just now was far too exaggerated. Future achievements that surpassed her own? Wasn’t that just polite praise to encourage a junior? Yet not only did Lin Ming not respond, but the girl next to him didn’t even appreciate the kindness. One Xiao Moxian and one Lin Ming, both ungrateful.

In the 33 Heavens, no one dared to speak like this!

Although Sheng Mei had only passed the heaven-step Gate of Laws, one couldn’t forget that Sheng Mei had only cultivated the sixth revolution of the Grand Reincarnation Art. There was still the seventh, eighth, and ninth revolutions, and they were the most difficult and most terrifying to practice.

Once Sheng Mei cultivated the seventh revolution she could challenge the Asura level Gate of Laws.

Once she completed the eighth revolution she could likely pass it with ease.

As for the ninth revolution, it was unimaginable what she would be like!

Moreover, Dragonscar was faintly aware that even though Sheng Mei had been following Divine Sovereign Soul Rapture for all these years, the truth was that she was slowly brewing a plan that was unimaginably terrifying!

Although Dragonscar didn’t know what this plan was, what he could confirm was that if this plan succeeded, then Sheng Mei and Divine Sovereign Soul Rapture would reach inconceivable heights. It might even allow the spiritas to control all of the 33 Heavens!

Of course, this was one of the greatest secrets of the spiritas. Dragonscar naturally wouldn’t reveal anything.

In this situation, Xiao Moxian naïvely thought that Lin Ming’s future achievements would surpass those of Sheng Mei. Dragonscar naturally couldn’t help but snort in contempt.

Xiao Moxian wasn’t convinced. Just as she was about to continue arguing, Lin Ming pulled her back. And at this time, Sheng Mei also stopped Dragonscar. She icily said, “Dragonscar, do not be rude!”

Dragonscar immediately stopped. He respectfully said, “Yes, Empress.”

Towards Soul Empress Sheng Mei, Dragonscar was absolutely loyal. This was a respect and reverence that came from his heart.

Sheng Mei nodded and said to Lin Ming. “At the fifth level I fear I might need your help…”

Lin Ming was surprised. With Sheng Mei’s strength, she actually needed his help?

Sheng Mei didn't explain in further detail. She said, "After a while you will understand what I am speaking of. Let us go first. This fifth level is very special..."

As Sheng Mei spoke, the space crack to the fifth level had completely closed and thoroughly separated them from the fourth level. The pressure upon the Divine Seal Altar suddenly vanished and everyone felt their bodies lighten. They all let out a heavy sigh.

Standing on the 33rd step of the Divine Seal Altar, Lin Ming could see the entire space of the fifth level.

The fifth level wasn't as vast and boundless as he had imagined. Compared to the fourth level, the fifth level was far, far smaller and would only have occupied a tiny corner. In fact, if Lin Ming focuses his sense into a straight line, he could make out the boundaries of this world.

This was a broad wilderness. The earth was a desolate wasteland and clouds hung high in the skies, a deep crimson red that seemed as if it would drip blood at any moment.

Within the air, a dreadful burning heat percolated about. Streams of flame seemed to flutter atop the ground. The rocks and gravel seemed to burn.

A tyrannical and wild aura rushed towards them, making the mind shake!

"This level is..."

Feeling this burning hot wilderness, restlessness surged in Lin Ming's heart. It seemed that this was a truly terrifying level!

Many of the other trial challengers on the Divine Seal Altar were thinking the same thing. But due to the temptation of lucky chances, they were eager to leap down the Divine Seal Altar and see what the fifth level was like. After all, many lucky chances were first come first serve, and they were willing to take this risk.

"You all... would do best to not continue forwards."

At this time, a cold voice passed into everyone's ears. They paused and looked back. The one who had been speaking was Sheng Mei.

Sheng Mei's clothes floated about her as she descended from the Divine Seal Altar like a fairy maiden exiled to the mortal world. "In your current state, entering the fifth level will be far too perilous. There will only be dangers, no lucky chances. Rather, it could be said that the lucky chance in the fifth level can be obtained after defeating the Overlord of the fifth level. And, the Overlord's strength is extremely terrifying. No matter which one of you it is, if you encounter it alone then you will die without a doubt."

Sheng Mei's words caused everyone to feel a chill crawl up their backs. No one dared to suspect her words. They all stood motionless.

"Rest here for three days and then we shall continue onwards together. The fifth level is extremely special and I do not have the confidence that I can pass it alone, thus I will require the cooperation and support of everyone here."

As Sheng Mei spoke, everyone was shocked. Sheng Mei wanted their support?

With Sheng Mei's strength, it would only take a single thought to kill any one of them here, but she actually said she wanted their support?

What was so peculiar about the fifth level, that even Sheng Mei feared it so? And what use would they be?

Without questioning, everyone began to rest and meditate. If this level could have Sheng Mei be so serious, just how dangerous was this level?

Undoubtedly, a single mistake and they would lose their life!

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian also sat down to rest. The further they progressed in the final trial, the more dangerous it would become. They wouldn't overestimate themselves either.

Like this, three days slowly passed and everyone restored themselves to their top condition. And at this time, Sheng Mei stood up. She faintly said, “Let us go…”

Chapter 1718 – Undying Inferno

Chapter 1718 – Undying Inferno

…

…

…

With Sheng Mei's words, everyone stood up and fell down the Divine Seal Altar, fully stepping into the fifth level. After the rounds of eliminations, with Lin Ming included, there were just around 20 people.

The scorching hot sands rustled beneath their feet. A furious heaven and earth origin energy buffeted them, making them all feel something strange.

"Mm? My cultivation…"

The trial challengers were startled. As they examined their inner world, they discovered that some invisible Laws were imprisoning their strength, causing them to grow weaker and weaker. Falling down from the World King realm, they stumbled into the half-step World King realm before descending into the peak Holy Lord realm, and rapidly into middle Holy Lord realm, before finally stopping at the early Holy Lord realm.

"I… my cultivation is only at the early Holy Lord realm?"

One of the martial artists was shocked. He was used to having a half-step World King cultivation, but now he had suddenly fallen to the early Holy Lord realm. This made him feel extremely insecure, like a mortal martial arts master having their martial arts ruined, becoming a completely average person. No matter what, they would always feel a bit strange in their heart.

"Me too!"

Everyone noticed that a similar situation was occurring to all of them. Whether they were World Kings, half-step World Kings, or peak Holy Lords, after stepping into the fifth level their cultivation was restricted to the early Holy Lord realm.

Only Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were exceptions. To their amazement, they discovered that their cultivation didn't decrease. Rather, some strange Laws fused into their inner world, causing their cultivation to dramatically rise, all the way into the early Holy Lord realm!

"So the fifth level of the final trial sets a standard for cultivation. Everyone's cultivation will become like this..."

Lin Ming suddenly realized. No wonder Sheng Mei had said she would need to draw on their support in the fifth level. Her cultivation had also fallen to the early Holy Lord realm! In the final trial, no one could violate the absolute rules.

"What strange rules. The methods used to test us in this final trial are more curious than the last!"

Some martial artists sighed with emotion. From non-discriminatory trials, to the Gate of Laws that had a difficulty based on one's skeletal age to test talent, to the Divine Seal Altar that was more difficult depending on one's cultivation in order to test one's foundation, and now to this fifth level that limited one's cultivation so that everyone's cultivation was the same. If so, then on this fifth level what was tested was one's attainments in cultivation methods and understanding of the Laws!

"So that's how it is. What interesting rules. Although my cultivation dropped to the early Holy Lord realm, my comprehension of Laws and skill in cultivation methods remain the same. I am far stronger than an ordinary Holy Lord realm martial artist!"

A trial challenger discovered. In the end, at the fifth level, the higher one's cultivation was, the longer they had cultivated, the more they would profit here.

Someone that had cultivated for 1000 years, comprehended Laws for 1000 years, and trained in a cultivation method for 1000 years, would be completely different from someone who had only been alive for 100 years. Even if they were all at the early Holy Lord ream, the difference in combat strength would be enormous.

In other words, the rules of the fifth level were highly advantageous to them.

The ones with the disadvantages would be Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian.

Their cultivations hadn't been at the Holy Lord realm to begin with. Now that they were forcefully lifted to the Holy Lord realm, their combat strength was likely ordinary.

"This Lin Ming… he might suffer a loss here."

"Yes… we must take advantage of this situation and obtain as much completion percentage as we can. We must try and reach at least 70%."

Many martial artists discussed with sound transmissions.

Someone asked, "Soul Empress, is this fifth level really so difficult? Even with Soul Empress's strength, it is still impossible to pass?"

Sheng Mei didn't answer this question. Amongst the crowd, someone said, "Concerning the fifth level, I've heard something before. It seems that no one has passed this fifth level in the last billion years…"

This person's faint words caused a chill to crawl up everyone's spines. For the last billion years, no one had passed!

"That's right, this is why anything past the fifth level has always been an enigma…"

"That's scary!"

Many people were left speechless. It seemed that they could only hope of earnestly following behind Sheng Mei and supporting her. Only then would there be some hopes of passing.

“Soul Empress, what is the Overlord of the fifth level?”

Sheng Mei slowly led the way. Her voice was haunting as she said, “The Overlord of the fifth level – the Undying Inferno. In reality, it is an amalgamation of incomparably terrifying Fire Elementals. Although it resembles a phoenix in form, it is in no way a God Beast.

“Because it doesn’t possess a main body, it is nearly indestructible. Once we approach it, it will release incomparably blazing hot flames that can instantly scorch a peak Great World King to death. These flames will bake away flesh and skin, tempering the bones into tempered golden bones. And these tempered golden bones will become a puppet of the Undying Inferno…”

As Sheng Mei spoke, everyone was shocked. Without a main body, it simply couldn’t be destroyed. And the flames that it released could instantly burn away a Great World King, and those who dared to challenge it would be turned into puppets!

If the cultivation of these people hadn’t been suppressed, then a peak Great World King wasn’t too far off a dream. As for Sheng Mei, she could definitely instantly kill a Great World King herself.

But now, everyone’s cultivation was limited to the early Holy Lord realm. When facing the Undying Inferno that could instantly kill a peak Great World King, wanting to withstand its attack would be immediately dangerous. No one had the courage to do so.

Even Sheng Mei would find it difficult.

“No wonder the Soul Empress said she needed our help. I fear that in the fifth level, it requires the cooperation of everyone here to pass…”

So far in the final trial, there had been solo fights as well as small squads working together. Now, in the fifth level, it was total cooperation between everyone left remaining.

“The last time I entered the fifth level of the final trial, It was this Undying Inferno that I was not able to defeat…”

As Sheng Mei spoke, everyone pricked up their ears. Facing such a terrifying Undying Inferno, if Sheng Mei requested their assistance, then that proved there was a small chance she could strike down that Undying Inferno and enter the sixth level.

And according to her words, as long as the Undying Inferno was killed, then everyone could pass to the next level. This left many of them excited. In a team situation, even if it was Sheng Mei who would inevitably provide the main strength and obtain the highest completion percentage, they would still be able to drink a little of the soup.

If they could enter the sixth level, that would truly be the greatest glory of their lives as well as the greatest capital they could use to consolidate their positions in their sects.

After all, this was a legendary level that no one had managed to pass in the last billion years. If they could experience the fabled sixth level themselves, they could truly live without regrets!

Thinking of this, everyone’s hearts began to heat up with wild thoughts. Even so, they peacefully and respectfully listened to Sheng Mei.

After a moment of silence, Sheng Mei continued to say, “The Undying Inferno cannot be destroyed, that is true, but every time it attacks it will release the fire essence within its body. Once this fire essence is exhausted, it will turn into a phoenix egg and experience a nirvana in a bath of flames!

“And this will be our only chance to attack…

“Facing the Undying Inferno, I will lay down a battle array. All of you will assist me in the battle array. We will resist the impact of the Undying Inferno until it exhausts all of its fire essence and turns into a phoenix egg. Then, I will attack with everything I have!

“If I can succeed and pierce through the eggshell then I will be able to kill the Undying Inferno! If I fail, then the Undying Inferno will undergo a nirvanic rebirth and reform into the shape of a phoenix. But at that time, it will not be a flame form, but an ice form. In other words, it will become the Undying Polar Ice. At that point, we will have to give up…”

As Sheng Mei said this, everyone was amazed. There was such a strange monster? This monster was able to spew out its own fire essence in exchange for greater striking power, and once it exhausted its essence it could undergo a nirvanic rebirth to turn into an ice form monster!

“I see. The Soul Empress focuses on the Ice Laws, so if she were to face the blazing flames of the Undying Inferno, her striking power would be extremely high. However, if she were to face the Undying Polar Ice, then the Empress’s striking power would be reduced instead. Thus, it is impossible to attack a second time…”

Many people understood Sheng Mei’s plans. There would only be a single chance to strike.

If they were defeated they could only retreat, otherwise their lives would be in danger.

As everyone was thinking this, the heat waves rushing towards them became increasingly strong. Suddenly, not too far away, the sandy soil erupted as golden skulls burst out.

“Skulls!”

Some trial challengers called out. These heads had no flesh and blood and their empty eye sockets burnt with a ghostly flame. They were creepy and macabre.

“Those are the golden skeletons!”

Beside Sheng Mei, Dragonscar bellowed out as he took out a heavy sword.

Kacha! Kacha!

The golden skeletons crawled out from the ground, rushing towards the group.

Everyone definitely remembered what Sheng Mei had said before. Trial challengers that were killed by the Undying Inferno had their bodies scorched away and refined into golden skeletons that became its puppets.

It was clear that these bones were the so-called golden skeletons. If they were to die in the fifth level this would also be their fate!

“First clear out these golden skeletons. These fellows have a terrifying defensive power and nearly limitless strength. They are equal to middle Holy Lord saint martial artists, but are deficient in cultivation methods and Laws. Do not get close to them!”

As Dragonscar spoke, an icy aura gushed out from within Sheng Mei, covering the surrounding space. With Sheng Mei as the center, the entirety of space within 1000 feet of her seemed to separate from the outside world.

A cold and dark wind blew past, as if it emerged from the nine nether abyss. On the originally scorching hot earth, a thick crust of frost suddenly appeared. Those golden skeletons seemed to freeze as their motions slowed and even the soul fires burning in their eye sockets dimmed down, as if they were candles fading away in the wind.

“Domain…”

Lin Ming could see that what Sheng Mei used just now was an extremely high ranking domain.

This domain not only greatly weakened the threat of the golden skeletons, but most important of all, it formed an independent space that didn’t leak out any energies that Lin Ming and the others used. Like this, they wouldn’t alarm the Undying Inferno.

Otherwise, if the Undying Inferno were to rush over here, the situation would become much worse.

“These golden skeletons have too great a defensive power to crush. Extinguish the soul fires in their eyes to kill them.”

Sheng Mei faintly said. These golden skeletons were only the opening appetizer of the fifth level. Compared to the Undying Inferno, they were far too weak.

Chapter 1719 – Reaping Souls

Chapter 1719 – Reaping Souls

…

…

…

“Attack!”

Someone shouted.

Those that were able to arrive on the fifth level were outstanding elites amongst outstanding elites. They were all proud children of heaven of their respective races and were able to accurately gauge the combat situation.

Now that the golden skeletons were weakened by the freezing ice domain released by Sheng Mei, this was undoubtedly the best chance to destroy them all.

A purple-clothed spiritas youth attacked first. In an instant, countless white lights drilled out from his flesh, like endless strands of silk that tore through space. These threads emitted brilliant waves of white light as they whistled through the air, passing over everyone’s heads with staggering momentum.

Some of these white lights crashed onto the metal-hard bodies of the golden skeletons. There was a loud grating sound like metal striking on metal as the golden skeletons weren’t wounded at all. This amazing defensive power proved Sheng Mei’s words.

But there were still some white lights that crashed into the eye sockets of these golden skeletons.

As long as the white lights fell into the eye sockets of the golden skeletons, the ghostly flames within crackled as they were slowly extinguished.

Several golden skeletons that had just risen froze where they were… without the support of soul force, their bodies began to collapse, like brick and stone buildings caving in.

In the crowd, Dragonscar’s aura erupted. Snow-white scales appeared on his body as a billowing origin energy surged through the world, astonishing all.

He wildly dashed around, his body so fast that blazing white flames were produced from the friction between him and the air. Horrifying shock waves reverberated around him as he leapt a hundred feet into the air and came diving back down. A bolt of lightning seemed to flash within his arms as he forcefully shattered the eye sockets of one of the golden skeletons.

There was also a proud son of heaven from the saint race. By relying on his amazing bodily talent, he punched at one of the golden skeletons. Originally, this punch was able to shatter mountains and rivers, but as it struck the golden skeleton he only managed to sink it into the earth, and even his fist had torn apart.

As the golden skeleton began crawling up from the ground once more, the saint youth genius finally learned his lesson. He began to strike at the quiet ghostly fires in the skeleton’s eye sockets…

This battle unfolded like a clash royale. Everyone fought with heated spirits!

“Hahahaha! Feels great!”

“These golden skeletons are too weak! It only takes one step to kill ten!”

At this time, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian also attacked. Lin Ming shot out spear lights with his fingertips, easily extinguishing the soul fires in the golden skeletons’ eye sockets.

As for Xiao Moxian, she released a mass of black flames that were as thin as willows.

Although these flames seemed small, when they touched a golden skeleton they rapidly inflated as if they would grow to destroy the world. As long as they covered a golden skeleton, the soul fires in their eyes would rapidly be destroyed.

Although these golden skeletons had a formidable combat strength comparable to a middle Holy Lord saint martial artist, their weaknesses were too obvious. They were easily focused down by others.

As Sheng Mei slowly moved forwards, all of the golden skeletons that crawled out from the sandy earth were quickly cut down by the numerous proud children of heaven, not able to create any trouble for the group.

Suddenly, the sandy world before them disappeared.

Thick twisting beams of fires flowed about like a den of pythons, exuding a spectacular heat that gushed out in all directions.

Within this endless sea of flames was a giant mass of phantasmal flames that surged with a strange strength, floating up and down like a lonely island.

But even more than that, it resembled a fire phoenix.

This bizarre mass of flames had dazzling wings and a great body formed from pure fire essence. It was over a thousand feet tall, enough to block out the skies.

The space behind it was completely burnt down by the hot flames, exposing nothing but an endless abyss of darkness.

From time to time, small sparks of fire would shoot out from its body, and large holes would be burnt in space by these small sparks, like someone touching a piece of cloth with a burning torch.

Although the group hadn't yet approached, they could feel an astonishing pressure exuding from that fire phoenix's flame-formed body. It was a pressure deep enough to cause their souls to shiver, as if they could be grinded into the ground at any time by the pressure alone.

Strange fire runes seethed around the fire phoenix's entire body, like layers of flattering stars.

As the runes flickered they released a dreadful conflagration of flames that turned into thick fire tornados on the ground. The fire tornadoes tore through the earth, burning and combusting until they left behind deep rivers of fire.

Space storms howled from the tears in space, wildly spinning around.

Even the freezing ice domain that Soul Empress Sheng Mei released began to evaporate due to the unimaginable power of fire.

Hu – hu – hu –

Within the sea of flames, tiny red bubbles of fire popped out, revealing golden skeletons that came crawling out.

The soul fires that burned within their eyes were far more powerful than those of the golden skeletons that Lin Ming had encountered before. Red light shot out from them, making the heart race.

The color was also far deeper than that of ordinary golden skeletons, and the aura they released was far more dreadful.

Lin Ming scanned his eyes around. There were around 400-500 golden skeletons that had appeared so far, and more and more were slowly crawling out from the sea of flames.

"Undying Inferno!" Someone gasped, panic-stricken as they stared at the fire phoenix composed of pure flames within the sea of fire.

As if it were aroused by this cry, the Undying Inferno that was resting with the roiling flames suddenly opened its eyes.

It was like a sun exploding, a supernova…

Bang –

Two terrifying masses of fire shot out, seeming as if they could penetrate through the world as they hurtled towards the person that had shouted just then!

These flames were incredibly quick. They directly pierced through Sheng Mei’s freezing ice domain and rushed towards that person!

Sheng Mei’s eyebrows pressed together. The attacked speed of the Undying Inferno was far too fast, not giving her enough time to save him. Moreover, she hadn’t laid down the battle array yet so she couldn’t rescue him if she wanted to!

With a light crackling sound, the person’s flesh and blood began to boil and burn, their entire body being scorched away. With a miserable scream, even the earth beneath their feet began to melt into a metallic magma due to the extreme heat.

Rah - !

Suddenly, a golden skeleton rushed out from the husk of the dead martial artist. Its body crackled and it raised its fiery fists as it rushed towards the group.

Then, a person’s figure flashed. It was Dragonscar. He grasped his heavy sword and rushed out. His heavy sword weighed as much as a mountain and in two strikes, the golden skeleton’s soul fires that burned in its eyes were extinguished.

Seeing this flaming golden skeleton on the ground, some people sucked in a cold breath, unable to restrain a feeling of grief in their hearts. Just a moment ago, this person had fought by their side. He seemed to have been a genius of some ancient clan…

If one was killed by the flames of the Undying Inferno they would turn into a golden skeleton. Although Soul Empress Sheng Mei had already informed them of this, with the bloody truth placed in front of them it still left them terrified.

Within her freezing ice domain, a rare earnest expression appeared on Sheng Mei's face. The ribbon that wrapped around her body began to shimmer with giant runes. Every time these runes shimmered, they would release an indescribably profound aura of Ice Laws.

The aura of these Ice Laws rippled out, spreading through the void for 10,000 feet. Some of these ripples even neared the range of the Undying Inferno.

The freezing cold air directly collided with the strange flames, releasing horrifying energy fluctuations that detonated again and again.

Sheng Mei's entire body released a peculiar icy aura as her delicate hands repeatedly moved in the air. Unbelievably beautiful wisps of essence energy scattered out all over, floating down like snowflakes.

Then, twining together with the power of Laws released by the strange ribbon, countless seals appeared as Sheng Mei formed an exquisite array formation with her as the center.

Within this array formation, everyone, including Lin Ming, felt the power of ice begin to condense around their bodies, forming a type of armor.

Although the armor had the power of mystic cold within it, its defensive capabilities were extremely high. Those people that were feeling suffocated from the burning heat just now suddenly returned to their normal states.

"This is the Extreme Cold Battle Array that I've laid down. Within this array formation, the might of the Undying Inferno's flames will be greatly weakened. Everyone follow my lead and do not leave this battle array!"

Sheng Mei's voice was deep and awe-inspiring, ringing out in the hearts of everyone present.

Everyone felt a chill crawl up their backs. None of them dared to neglect her orders – they had already learned from the mistake of that youth who had been scorched into a golden skeleton.

The fire phoenix-shaped Undying Inferno felt the freezing cold energy in the air and seemed to be stimulated by it. Overwhelming flames filled the skies as the Undying Inferno flew in circles. All of space for a million miles turned into a sea of flames, limitless and boundless.

On the ground, massive mountain ranges began to crack apart and disintegrate. Tongues of flame fell down from the void, transforming everything into molten lava flows.

The world was filled with fire and death, as if it were the eve of the apocalypse.

"You dare to anger me!? All of you will die!!"

The Undying Inferno raised its head, a contemptuous look in its eyes.

Its voice crashed into everyone's minds like a peal of thunder. Then, the Undying Inferno unfurled its wings. From space, a blaze of crimson flames appeared and came crashing down, like a rain of tiny meteors.

A violent storm appeared, racing towards the area where Lin Ming was.

At the same time, more and more golden skeletons shot out from the sea of flames, all of them rushing towards Lin Ming and the others.

However, even though they were extremely fast, as soon as they entered the Extreme Cold Battle Array their movements slowed down as if they were mired in a swamp, becoming extremely slow.

Even so, these golden skeletons were far stronger than the previous ones. Wanting to kill them wasn't easy at all!

Moreover, there was also the threat of the Undying Inferno. The fiery meteors it released were crashing down from the skies. Although these meteors were wrapped in layers of Ice Laws and slowed down when they entered the Extreme Cold Battle Array, if everyone was forced to deal with these then they would be far too overstretched!

For a time, the trial challengers were caught in a brutal struggle. The battle with the golden skeletons also entered a stalemate!

Minus the youth that had just died, no one had yet been injured. But if this battle were to continue, they would inevitably suffer losses. Moreover, the Undying Inferno had yet to truly attack. As for them, they were constantly wasting a tremendous amount of energy in battle with the golden skeletons. If this were to continue then things would rapidly become more and more dangerous.

If they couldn't withstand this siege of golden skeletons until the Undying Inferno turned into a phoenix egg, then they would fail. There was even a chance that all of them would be exterminated!

In this situation, Sheng Mei still hadn't moved. She focused all of her attention on maintaining the Extreme Cold Battle Array as well as guarding against the Undying Inferno's fatal strike!

"Damn it, these fellows are just endless!"

"Just how many are there? Can we ever finish killing them all…?"

Many trial challengers were in a critical situation. The previous levity and happy atmosphere as they cut down the first golden skeletons had disappeared, replaced by a deep seriousness and even a trace of fear and dread.

And as everyone had fallen into a brutal melee, some people discovered that Lin Ming had separated from the group and had flown ahead with the black-haired girl. They almost neared the edge of the Extreme Cold Battle Array as they floated in the air.

Pitch black mystical runes shot out from Lin Ming's palm.

"What is he planning on doing?"

Someone asked, startled. But at this time, they couldn't care about Lin Ming. What was important was saving their own lives.

Suddenly, a black light flashed out from Lin Ming's fingertips, carrying with it the aura of the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. This light shot into the air and rapidly expanded into a giant vortex. From within this vortex, all sorts of sad screams and wails spread out.

Faintly, one could even see the outlines and shadows of countless demons and ghosts, hideous and horrifying.

When this vortex appeared, even those near it felt as if their souls would be sucked in.

As this vortex grew larger and larger, the golden skeletons that slowly moved within the Extreme Cold Battle Array began to stir, becoming restless. They all looked up into the air, their ghostly red fire eyes looking at the air in puzzlement.

Bang –

The giant vortex suddenly descended, wrapping all of the hundreds of golden skeletons within. Then, a golden skeleton roared out loud as the strange fires in its eyes flew out and began to stream towards the black vortex.

The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel excelled in suppressing ghosts, spirits, demons, and souls of dead martial artists. Facing these golden skeletons, summoning the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel to extinguish the soul fires in their eyes was the best possible method!

As for the terrifying defensive power of the golden skeletons, that was all useless before the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel.

For a time, the burning flames within the golden skeletons' eyes were swept up like candles in a raging storm, crazily inhaled by the black vortex!

Hu hu hu!

As the soul fires within these golden skeletons' eyes were extinguished, their bodies fell down like waste wood, shattering as they struck the ground.

In an instant, a massive tract of golden skeletons had fallen down, as if they were nothing but stalks of wheat being reaped.

Seeing this scene, many people felt a cold sweat drip down their back. This Lin Ming, just what sort of abnormal cultivation method did he use to kill them? This was just too fast!

"A little bit of suction and they all died. Just what is that black wheel!?"

"How horrifying. Let alone that wheel destroying those golden skeletons, I even felt as if my soul would be sucked in!" A spiritas martial artist said with trepidation. As a spiritas he was highly sensitive to things of the soul.

The trial challengers present originally believed that Lin Ming's cultivation time was limited and he was far too young, so in terms of Laws and cultivation methods he would be at a disadvantage. But, they never imagined that this single move Lin Ming displayed would leave them all in the dust!

This difference wasn't minor at all. As they all remembered their thoughts that they would be able to obtain a tiny advantage due to their age, they realized they had been far too naïve.

Because of Lin Ming's Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel suddenly reducing the pressure on everyone, they were all able to conserve more of their energy.

From a distance, Sheng Mei looked at Lin Ming, a strange light shining in her eyes. Indeed, Lin Ming had not disappointed her. Like this, she could save more of her strength so that she would be able to pour more power into piercing through the phoenix egg that the Undying Inferno would leave behind.

Chapter 1720 – Wrath of the Phoenix

Chapter 1720 – Wrath of the Phoenix

…

…

…

Rumble rumble rumble.

Meteors howled in the sky. On the ground, more and more golden skeletons began to crawl out and attack from above and below.

However, Sheng Mei stood guard in the center of her Extreme Cold Battle Array, her complexion unwavering. Her hands continued moving in the air as if she were drawing numerous countless invisible lines that melded with the Ice Law runes she laid down. As the flaming meteors fell, it was like they crashed into a surging sea, immediately weakening.

With their frozen ice armor, several saint geniuses dared to use their physical bodies to resist the golden skeletons wreathed in flames.

After some unknown period of time, those within the Extreme Cold Battle Array finally survived the waves of attacks.

“If this continues then the Undying Inferno’s strength will be slowly worn down…” Several trial challengers crushed apart a meteor and let out a long breath of relief.

Everyone else also seemed to relax a little.

According to what Sheng Mei had told them, their task here was to survive the attacks of the Undying Inferno. As long as the Undying Inferno turned into a phoenix egg then it would be time for Sheng Mei to take the stage.

Towards Sheng Mei, the present trial challengers had a near blind trust in her. Her cultivation seemed to be at the Empyrean realm and her Laws and cultivation methods were unfathomably profound. Even though her cultivation had been suppressed to the Holy Lord realm, she was still an extremely terrifying character that no one needed to worry about.

However, Lin Ming's complexion remained as dignified as before. This land was the space of the final trial that the Asura Road Master created himself. The Asura Laws were densely proliferated through every inch of the land.

Through the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, he was able to feel that the strength of the Undying Inferno was weakening at a slow rate.

Unlike everyone else here, he realized the true state of the Undying Inferno.

Wmmm –

Suddenly, strange fluctuations emitted from the space around the Undying Inferno.

"Ants, you have truly aroused my ire! All of you, die!"

The Undying Inferno seemed to transpire and change. The flames roiled about, slowly condensing into a person's angered face. It was clear that the mere fact that a group of ants was able to last for so long was already the gravest of insults to the supreme existence of the fifth level.

Waves of strange Law fluctuations spread out from the Undying Inferno, spreading through the ground.

Like a giant invisible palm smashing the ground, the earth began to shake.

The ground started to be sundered open. Large tracts of rocks were sucked out and turned into strands of flowing lava. Faint traces of earth origin energy were extracted and sucked out.

At the same time, the immense mystic energy within the golden skeletons was sucked out. Silken strands of golden liquid shot forth from their bodies, melding into the Undying Inferno.

From between the heavens and the earth, all sorts of energies were being swallowed up by it.

In a brief moment, the originally weakened Undying Inferno suddenly erupted with a heaven-shaking aura, even seeming stronger than before. Its body swelled out, its massive wings seemed like flaming mountain ranges.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Suddenly, mountain-thick beams of flame shot out from the Undying Inferno’s body towards Lin Ming and the others.

Everyone had just managed to catch their breath. Now that they saw these massive columns of flame hurtling towards them, so large that they blocked out their field of vision, all of them were left panic-stricken.

“Such a fierce aura, how can we win!?”

The aura that the Undying Inferno erupted with couldn’t match that of an Empyrean, but it wasn’t too far away! This terrifying flux of energy caused the martial artists present to shiver, a deep despair and hopelessness rising up in their hearts.

This was the true might of the heavens and earth! It simply wasn’t something that mortals could prevent…

The first to bear the brunt of this strike was the glass-thin barrier of the Extreme Cold Battle Array.

The seemingly formidable Extreme Cold Battle Array was struck by raging columns of fire. Millions upon millions of runes were destroyed and the Ice Law runes rapidly dimmed as they emitted harsh creaking sounds.

The countless threads of power formed from mysterious Ice Laws became like glass. Beneath the blazing heat, they began to melt and crack apart.

At the same time, the countless columns of fire weren't slowed by too much. With a loud explosive sound, one of the trial challengers who couldn't dodge in time was directly struck by one.

In the midst of the conflagration, the person was immediately turned into a golden skeleton that came crawling out. Then, this golden skeleton was also chopped down by those nearby…

In the center of the battle array, Sheng Mei deeply frowned.

An even stronger mystic strength burst out from her body. The air around wildly whistled.

On her body, the strange ribbon that wrapped around her began to flutter upwards.

This mysterious ribbon contained the source strength of the Ice Laws. As it suddenly rose up into the air, it seemed as powerful and mighty as a raging river.

Waves of mystic ice runes exuded out from it, disintegrating into the air and forming a freezing chill that rapidly wound about the entire Extreme Cold Battle Array.

The Extreme Cold Battle Array that was on the verge of collapse began to reform. The runes scattered in the air began to shine with a luminescent light once more.

Within the Extreme Cold Battle Array, the trial challengers were hurriedly trying to dodge the columns of flame that came crashing down from above. Suddenly, they felt an immense power of ice latch onto their bodies, making their ice armor even more potent.

Bang!

Another mountain-thick column of flame came crashing down. This time, thanks to the strengthened Extreme Cold Ice Array, the Ice Laws began to rise up once more.

Ice and fire originally repelled each other. Now that the Ice Laws were strengthened, the columns of flame that came falling down slowed by a precipitous amount and they were also weakened.

Lin Ming keenly realized that the threatening and imposing Undying Inferno seemed to have weakened its life essence energy to send down those mountain-thick columns of flames…

The Undying Inferno was being perpetually weakened!

Its origin was the power of fire. Sheng Mei's power of ice was absolutely able to use up its life source.

The massive amount of world essence energy it swallowed just now was indeed extremely powerful, but the truth was that it was only manipulating this strength to attack others. And, in order to control this nearly limitless world power, it needed to consume a great deal of its source strength.

After realizing this, Lin Ming's thoughts perked up. This was the true critical moment. As long as they could endure past this period then they could use up all of the Undying Inferno's strength and force it into a phoenix egg where it would begin its nirvanic rebirth!

At that time, Sheng Mei would be able to launch her own attack.

As Lin Ming was thinking this, Sheng Mei suddenly spoke. She clearly said, “Everyone join together and smash apart the columns of fire in the array. The Undying Inferno is in a weakening state; to destroy these columns of fire is the same as ripping off its wings!

Even in the midst of the crazy explosions occurring all around, this clear voice spread into everyone’s ears.

Lin Ming was startled. Sheng Mei’s cultivation had fallen to the early Holy Lord realm but her mentality and sensations were still extraordinary. In such a state, her perception of the situation was still able to match him while he was using the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws.

As everyone listened to Sheng Mei’s words they seemed to shake themselves out of a stupor.

Dragonscar took the initiative to rush out. He leapt straight up into the air.

He couldn’t wait to attack; he was afraid that if this continued much longer then something would happen to Sheng Mei. It had to be known that even though Sheng Mei hadn’t yet attacked, she was the absolute main force out of everyone here and the center of the battle array. Whether it was resisting the golden skeletons or weakening those mountain-like flame columns, everything she did used up a great deal of her strength!

This Extreme Cold Battle Array was the core of their combat strategy. Without Sheng Mei, they might have all been killed off by the Undying Inferno already.

The only thought in Dragonscar’s mind was to quickly cut down these flame columns and lighten the burden on Sheng Mei’s shoulders.

He definitely wasn’t stupid enough to go outside and resist these columns of fire. Compared to the powerful Undying Inferno, he was far too small and weak.

He spotted one of the fire columns. It had been greatly weakened by the Extreme Cold Battle Array and was falling at a much slower pace.

Dragonscar attacked. As soon as he attacked it was like 10,000 thunderbolts striking out at once. A wild and tyrannical energy surged out like a tsunami, recklessly shooting towards the flame column!

But that flame column was even more terrifying. No matter how wild Dragonscar's attack was, it still continued to impact the Extreme Cold Battle Array. All around it, Ice Law runes began to shatter and melt.

"Everyone join together, focus your attacks!"

Dragonscar shouted out loud. No one dared to tarry. They all put forth their greatest strengths. Several of them joined together to attack a flame column, slowly dissipating it.

Dragonscar fought in the sea of fire and was brushed by the flames several times. Even though his skin and muscles were burnt through, he still grit his teeth and furiously fought!

And amidst these people, Lin Ming didn't join forces with anyone. With his strength alone, he was able to resist a flame column!

The Phoenix Blood Spear shot through space like a rainbow, tearing apart a 1000 foot long space channel.

At this time, just by raising his hand his body contained the strength of several dragons. Now with a strange strength fused within him, forcefully increasing his cultivation to the early Holy Lord realm, his inner true essence had also increased.

A dreadful strength, in addition to his howling true essence, came crashing together like overlapping waves.

With such tremendous strength, the air resistance from waving his spear became terrifying to the extreme. Underneath the strength of his spear, the air compressed into walls as hard as iron that pounded into the flame column.

Paka!

A gap was cracked open in the flame column.

Afterwards, Lin Ming struck out with his spear several more times, expanding the opening again and again until it became a deep ravine that couldn't be restored.

Bang!

With a loud explosion, the core runes of the entire flame column began to shatter, causing the whole structure to collapse…

After bringing down this flame column with unstoppable momentum, Lin Ming didn't stop moving. He immediately leapt towards another flame column and proceeded to hack it down!

Although the battlefield was chaotic, many people still witnessed Lin Ming's dreadful strength.

"Too fierce… this Lin Ming, he's nothing but a monstrous genius!"

Everyone was flabbergasted. Even Sheng Mei, who was devoting her concentration to controlling the Extreme Cold Battle Array, had a flash of astonishment appear in her eyes. Her thoughts towards Lin Ming's strength changed once more.

Under the joint efforts of the trial challengers, there were less and less of the flame columns that the Undying Inferno sent hurtling down.

With so many people bravely battling, this caused the pressure on Sheng Mei to quickly reduce for some time.

But at this moment, the Undying Inferno in the skies roared, emitting an enraged shriek.

Its massive form began to shrink. From a mountain range to a mountain to a hill, it finally shrank to 30 feet in size.

However, the power of fire gathered on its body had also condensed, becoming pure and potent to the extreme. Its entire body seemed to be covered with a blood red halo.

All around it, light distorted and space melted away. This power of fire had reached a terrifying extreme!

Chapter 1721 – Victory or Defeat?

Chapter 1721 – Victory or Defeat?

…

…

…

Sheng Mei's complexion changed. She immediately thought of a possibility.

In an instant, the Undying Inferno sparkled with dazzling flames as it immediately arrived in front of the Extreme Cold Battle Array like a bolt of lightning.

This was true refined source strength of the Undying Inferno – it was enough to crush a planet!

Everyone was inexorably horrified. The Undying Inferno had arrived too fast, so fast that none of them were able to react!

Boundless burning power of fire combined with a tyrannical and overwhelming power. The Extreme Cold Battle Array began to tremble once more.

Some of the shattered runes fell away, allowing the majestic fire power to enter.

Wherever the power of fire went, it would turn everything into liquid flame sludge.

One after another, the runes of the Extreme Cold Battle Array began to break apart.

Everyone felt their hearts sink into despair.

This empowered Extreme Cold Battle Array wasn't able to resist the core mystic strength of the Undying Inferno, let alone their mortal bodies!

At this time, Sheng Mei's pupils began to swirl, becoming deep and dark like fathomless pools. A six-petal snow flower design began to appear within her eyes as a cold light emitted from them – this was her vital soul force!

As her soul force shot out into the Extreme Cold Battle Array, the shattered runes and soon-to-break Extreme Cold Battle Array were immediately revitalized, once more shining with a dazzling light.

Each rune glowed with an icy white atmosphere. Spirit power burst out, blinding the eyes. Even the power of fire in the air froze and was forcefully extinguished.

Bang!

The luminescent Extreme Cold Battle Array collided with the Undying Inferno's life essence.

Each strike of the Undying Inferno was able to shatter a planet.

But no matter how much it tried, all of its attacks were blocked by Sheng Mei's vital soul force-empowered Extreme Cold Battle Array.

Every collision would cause numerous runes to dim down and fade away. But with Sheng Mei's support, more and more runes were born, rapidly glistening in the air...

An intense energy storm swelled forth in all directions, tearing apart space and ripping open the earth, destroying all things in its path. It was truly terrifying.

Flame swept up in tornados. More and more ice runes were destroyed!

Under this dreadful assault, Sheng Mei began to drip crystalline beads of sweat.

At this time, her concentration was utterly focused. The six-petal snow flower design in her pupils had turned icy blue in color. These pupils were similar to Dragon Fang's Three Lives Pupils; they were different methods that brought out equally wonderful results. By using a secret technique, the shape of her pupils changed, allowing Sheng Mei to erupt with an even greater strength!

Seeing Sheng Mei in such a state, Lin Ming's complexion was earnest. This Undying Inferno had surpassed his imagination. Sheng Mei was using up far too much strength!

Even if they persisted until the Undying Inferno became an egg, the following attack would still have to rely on Sheng Mei.

After all, against a fire phoenix egg, only attacking it with the power of ice could result in the greatest lethality.

As for Lin Ming, his cultivation methods were biased towards thunder and fire. Using fire to attack a fire phoenix egg was an exercise in futility.

Dragonscar also saw beads of sweat drip down Soul Empress Sheng Mei's face. He gripped his fists, unable to stop his heart from racing with anxiousness.

"The Fire Phoenix hasn't died yet! How could it be so tenacious!"

Dragonscar howled in his heart.

And at this time, through the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, Lin Ming could feel the strength of the Undying Inferno rapidly weakening!

"Mm? The Undying Inferno is dying..."

A happy expression crossed Lin Ming's face. If this continued then the Undying Inferno wouldn't be able to attack more than five times.

Soon, the other people also discovered that the impact strength behind the Undying Inferno's strikes was weakening.

The Fire Phoenix's flame body started to become increasingly dim in the air. The flames around its body shrank to dim strands that fluttered about.

However, it was still as wild and crazy as before, attacking the Extreme Cold Battle Array until it died!

Finally, as the Undying Inferno attacked the great vaulted barrier of the Extreme Cold Battle Array once more, the flame energy within its body was actually frozen by the Extreme Cold Battle Array, causing it to rapidly fade.

“Yes!”

“This Undying Inferno will be extinguished soon, haha!”

A breathless youth said, wild with joy as he saw the flames around the Undying Inferno beginning to extinguish.

But at this time, as the central force of the battlefield, Sheng Mei had yet to speak a single word. Even uttering a single syllable could release the energy within her, causing her strength to collapse.

Then, from the area where the Undying Inferno had just been extinguished, strange changes began to slowly occur in the midst of the dim flames.

Within the glow of flames, strange and mysterious lines of the Great Dao began to appear.

Hu – hu – hu –

Terrifying waves of energy swept out. The earth shook once more. Alarming cracks spread through the ground like an endless spider web, and from these cracks, blazing flames shot up, soaring to the heavens!

These flames howled in the air, all of them rushing towards the area where the Undying Inferno had been extinguished!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Horrifying flame explosions rang through the air, reverberating through space like a supernova was occurring right before their eyes! A terrifying heat swept over them. Even a planet would be instantly turned to be molten lava by this degree of burning heat!

The Extreme Cold Battle Array fiercely shook. Millions of runes extinguished as they tried to withstand this dreadful firestorm.

And at this time, in the center of the flames, all of the fire energy became increasingly dense. It was gathering into a massive egg the size of a mountain!

Thump! Thump! Thump!

Loud heartbeats rang out from the thick egg shell, like the steady beat of a great drum, showing off the exuberant life force within.

And this beating sound seemed to pass into the hearts of everyone present, making it feel as if their very beings were sympathetically resonating with it. There was an unspeakable discomfort that percolated within their chests.

The Undying Inferno was being reborn in a bath of flames!

At this moment, Sheng Mei's fingers began rapidly twisting as she shot out numerous Ice Law runes. The strange ribbon that wrapped around her floated in front of her, glowing with an icy cold light!

This ribbon was the lucky chance that Sheng Mei had obtained on the fourth level. Although it wasn't an offensive magic tool, it could actually enhance Sheng Mei's power of ice.

At this time, Sheng Mei's jade-smooth complexion dripped with little beads of crystalline sweat, revealing a faint trace of stubbornness.

Victory or defeat, everything would be decided in one strike!

Ka ka ka!

Strange explosive sounds crackled all around Sheng Mei. The sea of fire vanished, replaced by limitless freezing ice.

This everlasting ice even froze the void and shattered it to pieces. And from the cracks of the frozen void, an ancient glacier began to flow out!

A resonant and mournful Ice Phoenix cry spread out from within Sheng Mei's body. Then, an Ice Phoenix emerged from her inner world!

This was not a phoenix phantom but a true God Beast. It was Sheng Mei's mount, a royal Ice Phoenix!

Before, regardless of what attack she had to face from the Undying Inferno, Sheng Mei had not summoned her Ice Phoenix. This was because she needed the Ice Phoenix to conserve its strength, all to aid her in this final strike!

"Royal Ice Phoenix!"

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. Sheng Mei was actually able to possess an Ice Phoenix of royal lineage as her contract beast.

However, beneath the peculiar Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, even Sheng Mei's Ice Phoenix had its cultivation suppressed to the early Holy Lord realm!

The Ice Phoenix cried out. A dreadful icy wind howled about it. It dove into the ancient glacier, fusing together with it. Then, the massive glacier suddenly rose into the air. The enormous glacier began to fall like a river of white stars, crashing into the mountain-sized egg!

Everyone watched with bated breath.

Even after experiencing dozens of attacks from the Undying Inferno and having consumed a great deal of her strength, Sheng Mei was still able to use her Ice Phoenix as support and display such a terrifying striking power!

Where the titanic glacier went, space froze and cracked open like glass. With an overbearing momentum it crashed into the giant egg!

Ka ka ka ka!

A sound of shattering ice spread out with enough power behind it to freeze the souls of powerhouses. Waves of mystic Ice Law runes gushed out onto the fiery giant egg, covering it with a thick layer of frost.

With the extreme cold everfrozen glacier to attack the fiery giant egg, all of that horrifying cold energy reckless seeped into the egg, wildly attacking it!

In that moment, a crack appeared in the surface of the giant egg!

As this crack appeared, it began to widen a little bit at a time. Everyone was stunned, their eyes widening. Had they succeeded?

The great egg shell began to slowly split apart. A cold air fell down to the earth, as if it came from the highest frozen mountains.

Time seemed to come to a standstill. Everyone watched as the massive egg was frozen by the freezing glacier, becoming a giant block of ice. Above this block of ice, tiny cracks appeared and one could see faint traces of the Great Dao Fire Laws swirling about. Then, the heartbeat of the great egg also began to slowly die down…

Everyone kept their eyes locked onto the great egg, watching for any changes. They had no idea just what the result was.

After a moment of silence, the surface of the great egg released a crackling sound as a pillar of flame shot up into the skies, breaking through the cage of freezing ice and shooting into the horizon.

Everyone was on edge, their minds alert. This was a critical stage; they all thought that the Undying Inferno might rush out at any moment.

However, just an instant later, the entire great egg shattered, turning into a mass of flame that fused underground.

They did it?

No one was able to determine just what happened. Even Sheng Mei pressed her eyebrows together in thought. She had already swallowed down a transcendent divine pill, rapidly restoring her origin energy even as she kept watching against any sudden changes and dangers.

Lin Ming spread out his sense, trying to use the Asura Laws to investigate the situation of the Undying Inferno.

For a time, there was only absolute silence.

The sea of fire receded and the flowing lava solidified. The violent fire origin energy that flooded the world began to rapidly dissipate.

“We really did it!”

Seeing the dark wasteland that was immersed in the sea of fire begin to reveal itself once more, many martial artists relaxed, joy starting to appear on their faces.

“Yes!”

Dragonscar vigorously gripped his fists together, overjoyed from the depths of his heart.

These changes rapidly continued until they swept through the entire fifth level. The sea of fire had really vanished, disappearing until there was nothing left.

“Can we really enter the sixth level?”

“That’s right, haha, even if I cannot pass the sixth level no matter what, I am more than satisfied with taking a look at it!”

"Indeed! We will leave behind a legend! A legend that hasn't appeared for a billion years!"

As many trial challengers were excitedly speaking, they all looked at Sheng Mei. Without a doubt, Sheng Mei was the pillar of their group.

But at this time, Sheng Mei's complexion was still dignified. She hadn't relaxed at all.

Sheng Mei's expression caused Dragonscar's mind to chill. "Empress, what is it...?"

Sheng Mei frowned. She gloomily said, "Haven't you discovered that since the sea of fire receded, the temperature has already become lower than normal. In fact, it is dropping even more..."

"What?"

Hearing Sheng Mei's words, everyone was panic-stricken. Indeed, as she had said, without them knowing the temperature had dropped below freezing and it was continuing to drop!

Chapter 1722 – Completion Percent

Chapter 1722 – Completion Percent

…

…

…

Originally, because of the Undying Inferno and the terrifying sea of fire, the temperature in the fifth level was enough to melt rock. Even though Sheng Mei continuously activated the Extreme Cold Ice Array and even crushed apart the fire phoenix egg with her everfrost glacier, she still wasn't able to cause the temperature to fall.

But now, after the Undying Inferno dissipated, the temperature began to plummet at an alarming rate.

Soon, from the molten temperatures, this became a land of arctic ice!

A cold and dark wind wildly howled about and even the moisture in the air instantly froze, turning into ice crystals. A thick layer of frost began to cover the ground.

The rivers of lava turned into frozen rivers. Cold energy sank into the body, making everyone feel as if their souls would freeze here!

"This… this is…"

Dragonscar had already realized a single terrifying possibility. But, he wanted with all his heart to believe that this wasn't true. He turned to Sheng Mei, "Empress, is this because of your everfrost glacier? I think that…"

Sheng Mei lightly sighed. She interrupted Dragonscar and shook her head.

“Em… Empress…”

“We’ve lost… the Undying Inferno has become the Undying Polar Ice…” Sheng Mei whispered.

“What!?”

Although the trial challengers could feel that something was wrong, Sheng Mei’s sudden words shocked all of them.

Before this they had already consumed a tremendous amount of their strength to struggle through a brutal battle. Even Sheng Mei had released that unrivalled attack. But even so, they still hadn’t been able to kill the Undying Inferno.

This Undying Inferno was far too ridiculous!

Such a powerful fifth level Overlord, how could anyone possibly pass?

“Even that powerful everfrost glacier wasn’t able to kill the Undying Inferno?”

“This… this Undying Inferno truly lives up to its name… it cannot die!”

“T-t-then what do we do?”

Some trial challengers sputtered out, at a loss of how to deal with the current situation.

Sheng Mei shook her head and said, “We have already lost so we can only return to the fourth level. It seems I underestimated the strength of the Undying Inferno.”

Ultimately, the last time that Sheng Mei had arrived at the fifth level, after her cataclysmic battle with the Undying Inferno she had only thought up a possible method to defeat it. Today was her trying out that method, but she had no idea whether it would succeed or fail.

Sheng Mei soon regained her composure. All of the years of preparation had been destroyed, but she didn't lose faith. Currently she was only in the sixth revolution of the Grand Reincarnation Art, and there was still the seventh, eighth, and ninth revolutions – sooner or later she would pass the fifth level.

It seemed that her hopes of passing the fifth level at the sixth revolution had been too naïve. After all, the vision of the Asura Road Master was far too high, so it was normal for her not to pass even at the sixth revolution.

"Return?"

Hearing Sheng Mei say this word, the martial artists looked at each other in dismay, at a loss for words. They thought that they could leave behind their own legends and be recorded in the historical texts of every major sect in the Asura Road, but now, all of those dreams had been popped.

"That's our only choice. We've used up too much energy. If we don't leave now then we won't have another chance."

As people were speaking, their misty breath instantly turned to ice crystals. The temperature had fallen to a point where even heaven and earth origin energy was being frozen.

But still, some people weren't willing, "There might be a mistake. Since the Undying Inferno hasn't died… how come we don't see the phoenix egg?"

Lin Ming said, "There is no need for the phoenix egg to form; the entire fifth level is the breeding ground for the Undying Polar Ice. When the cold energy in this world has risen to the extreme, it will naturally gather together and reform into an Ice Phoenix.

After comprehending the Asura Heavenly Dao, Lin Ming could foretell what was soon about to happen.

Sheng Mei looked at Lin Ming with surprise. This young man's insight was truly keen for him to realize the situation in the fifth level.

And at this time, information appeared in everyone's minds. This information told them their completion percentage!

Everyone felt their hearts shake. Most of them had over 60% with an extremely small number over 70%.

When they completed the Gate of Laws their completion percentage had been over 30%, after the fourth level it was around 50%, and then after the Divine Seal Altar and the battle with the Undying Inferno, the final number had settled around 65-70%.

This number left them depressed and frustrated. Let alone the legendary 80%, most of them didn't even reach 70%.

But at this time, Sheng Mei also received a message – 86%. Compared to the last time she was here, it was a mere 3% higher.

Although it was only 3%, after reaching 80%, increasing the score by a single percent was incomparably difficult!

Her score had surpassed 85%. As the Divine Void Soul Emperor had said, there was no one that would be able to match her in in the past or future!

However, Sheng Mei was still unsatisfied with this percentage. She couldn't help but glance at Lin Ming, "Lin Ming, your completion percentage… what is it?"

As Sheng Mei spoke, everyone looked over to Lin Ming. They also wanted to know.

This freak of nature had passed the Asura level Gate of Laws.

His completion percentage…

Just how high had been able to go?

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then said, “85.”

Although this completion percentage didn’t seem like much to Lin Ming, as this number fell into everyone's ears they sucked in a breath of cold air. 85%! That already broke past Sheng Mei’s past record. But this time, Sheng Mei was likely to have created a new record.

Lin Ming was also curious about Sheng Mei’s completion percentage. He asked her, “And the Soul Empress?”

Everyone waited with bated breath as they turned back to Sheng Mei.

Sheng Mei was silent for a moment and then clearly said, “86%.”

Sheng Mei was even higher!

Everyone looked at each other with surprise. Some people were stunned speechless. They were already shocked enough when Lin Ming had perfectly crossed the Asura level Gate of Laws and thought he would have the highest completion percentage, but now their thoughts had been completely reversed.

“The Soul Empress is fierce… I thought Lin Ming would be slightly higher…”

“This is just on par for normal! Lin Ming probably had around 5% more than the Soul Empress after the Gate of Laws, but in the fifth level we had to face the Undying Inferno and it was the Soul Empress who led the way. It is impossible for anyone to compare with her heaven-defying comprehension of Laws. Rather, Lin Ming dropped a little… after all, he is too young, so this is a handicap he cannot overcome.”

After Lin Ming had completed the Gate of Laws his completion percentage reached 45. This was proven when he was able to step into the planet-sized immortal palace.

After crossing the fourth level and killing so many monsters, his completion rate had risen to 60%.

Then, after climbing up the 33 steps of the Divine Seal Altar, his score had risen to 75%. Up until then, his score had been perfect.

But on the fifth level the one leading the force and also the one with the greatest role had been Sheng Mei. Facing the Undying Inferno, whether it was defending or attacking, it was almost Sheng Mei alone. No matter how much everyone tried to support her, they were just that – supporting actors. Thus, Lin Ming obtained another 10% but Sheng Mei's score rose by 16%. After combining everything, Lin Ming was slightly worse.

Although Lin Ming's completion percentage was lower than Sheng Mei's, it was enough to bewilder all the trial challengers present.

"How terrifying, if Lin Ming comes again and his skeletal age rises a little more, he might be able to obtain 88% or 89%!"

A trial challenger said. But, his words were immediately refuted by someone else.

"Don't be silly, do you think completing the final trial is so simple? And you even thought of 89%! Do you know what sort of concept that is? Even someone who will become a True Divinity might not be able to achieve such a higher score! After reaching 80%, every single point more is incomparably difficult!"

"In the future, after several hundred more years pass and Lin Ming's comprehension of Laws becomes higher, if he enters the final trial again then he might be able to obtain an 87% completion rate. That is the limit, but that is already more than high enough…"

As everyone was speaking, Xiao Moxian smirked, thinking otherwise.

Beside Lin Ming, Mo Brightmoon and Suya also tried to comfort Lin Ming. After all, Lin Ming was still young. Once his comprehension of Laws rose then he could always come again. And with Lin Ming's future status it wouldn't be hard to obtain the complete sets of god runes needed to enter.

At this time, Dragonscar said, “We must go now. The Undying Polar Ice will emerge soon. If we delay then we won’t be able to leave.”

Hearing Dragonscar’s words, many people felt disappointed.

To return back to the fourth level also meant that their journey into the final trial would end here.

Although the trial challengers had only been in the final trial for several months, they had experienced countless slaughter fests and perilous dangers here, and it felt as if they had spent several years here instead. Even after all of that their completion percentage was still low. Thinking that they had to return now, everyone was at a bit of a loss.

However, remaining was also impossible. They were just not a match for the Undying Polar Ice. Some people had already turned around and were ready to leave. But at this time, an icy voice rang out, especially clear in the chilling winds…

“Everyone, please wait a moment…”

“Mm?”

Everyone was startled. They stopped their steps and turned around to see a black-clothed Lin Ming standing not too far away from them. Standing right beside him was the black-clothed Xiao Moxian.

The one who spoke just now was Lin Ming.

“What is it?”

Everyone looked at Lin Ming with a puzzled expression. They didn’t know why Lin Ming had stopped them.

Lin Ming paused for a moment and then said, “The Undying Polar Ice… we can try to battle it.”

His slow and calm words passed through the cold wind, causing everyone to shiver!

“What!?”

Hearing Lin Ming’s words, the martial artists were stunned. They glanced at each other, aghast.

The Undying Inferno couldn’t be killed, and that was with Sheng Mei using her ice-attribute cultivation methods that restrained it. In this situation, how could they fight with the Undying Polar Ice?

“Lin Ming, stop joking around. The Undying Polar Ice is likely as strong as the Undying Inferno, just that the attributes are different. We were only able to rely on the Soul Empress to attack, and that is also because the Soul Empress trains in ice-attribute cultivation methods so cracking open a heated rock isn’t too difficult for her. But to freeze open a rock of ice, that is impossible.”

Some martial artists frowned, thinking that Lin Ming was playing with them.

“It's getting colder and colder here. Let’s not talk any nonsense. We have to hurry back to the fourth level. If the Undying Polar Ice emerges then we might not even have a chance to escape.”

Seeing the surrounding ice energy begin to permeate into their inner worlds, a trial challenger spoke out in a flustered panic. If the Undying Polar Ice were to attack them, that wouldn’t be funny at all.

Chapter 1723 – Undying Polar Ice

Chapter 1723 – Undying Polar Ice

…

…

…

Some trial challenger began urging others to leave faster.

At this time, more and more bone-chilling winds were sweeping through the fifth level. All of the heaven and earth origin energy seemed to have developed a faint tendency of gathering back together.

The Undying Polar Ice would soon be reborn!

In such an environment, Lin Ming remained as calm and composed as before. He didn't bother with everyone speaking amongst themselves, but looked to Sheng Mei and asked, "Soul Empress, I want to ask, if the Undying Polar Ice attacks, will your array formation last until the Undying Polar Ice exhausts itself of energy and turns into a polar ice egg?"

Lin Ming was clear that Sheng Mei's attacks belonged to the ice-attribute and the Undying Polar Ice was also an ice-attribute existence. To rely on Sheng Mei to attack the polar ice egg was not a realistic idea.

But if she couldn't attack, that didn't mean she couldn't defend.

Just like Sheng Mei's ice attacks couldn't harm the Undying Polar Ice, the Undying Polar Ice also couldn't easily wound Sheng Mei.

Ice against ice, neither side could do much to the other.

Moreover, ice-attribute cultivation methods always had a natural advantage in the defense aspect. For Sheng Mei, defending against the Undying Polar Ice should be much easier than defending against the Undying Inferno. Before, it was using ice to repel fire, but now it was ice to ice, both of the elements mutually promoting each other.

Sure enough, Sheng Mei nodded, “If it is just defending against the Undying Polar Ice then I should be able to withstand it until it turns into an egg. But since I have used up a considerable amount of my energy, it will be far more dangerous for you. If there is the slightest mistake then it is possible someone will die…”

As Sheng Mei spoke, the temperature had dropped so low that the surrounding martial artists had no choice but to revolve the energy within them to restrain the frost energy in their bodies.

They had already learned their lesson from the Undying Inferno; everyone now held an instinctual fear of the Undying Polar Ice! And for Lin Ming to ask such questions at this time, all of them felt anxious.

“What are we all doing here? Let’s hurry back to the fourth level.”

“That’s right, if the Undying Polar Ice appears then we’re all done for!”

Some people ignored Lin Ming and began striding straight back to the fourth level. But after just several steps, Lin Ming’s words made them pause again.

Lin Ming calmly looked at Sheng Mei and clearly said, “If the Empress can defend against the Undying Polar Ice’s attacks until it turns into an ice egg, then you can leave the task of shattering that egg to me. I believe I have a certain chance of success…”

Lin Ming’s words not only shocked the trial challengers present, but even Sheng Mei.

Lin Ming wanted to destroy the ice egg!?

The fire phoenix egg was something that not even Soul Empress Sheng Mei had been able to destroy, and now Lin Ming wanted to try it all the same? Was he insane?

No one doubted his talent, but he had simply cultivated for far too short a time.

Even though everyone here now had an early Holy Lord realm cultivation, it was impossible for Lin Ming to compare with Sheng Mei. There was an essential difference between the Law comprehensions of an Empyrean and a half-step Holy Lord!

Moreover, Sheng Mei was an outstanding genius amongst all Empyreans to begin with. In the future she might become a monstrous character, a True Divinity powerhouse!

Sheng Mei looked at Lin Ming with surprise. She didn't think he would come up with such a proposal.

"You are confident you can crush open the ice egg?"

"I can only say I'll give it a try..." Lin Ming said, not fully confident. Lin Ming wasn't arrogant enough to think that he could surpass Sheng Mei even if both were at the Holy Lord realm. Just because Sheng Mei could do things didn't mean that he could do the same.

But, there was a difference. When they fought the Undying Inferno, whether it was in defense or offense, it was a battle mostly driven by Sheng Mei. The pressure on her had been too great. To immediately attack the phoenix egg after having to withstand dozen of high energy impacts, it wasn't a surprise if she wasn't able to display her true peak strength.

Although she had summoned her Ice Phoenix, the Ice Phoenix was also suppressed to the early Holy Lord realm. Its supportive abilities couldn't have been considered too heaven-defying.

But if Lin Ming were to attack then it would be different. The task of defense could be taken over by Sheng Mei and he would be solely responsible for attacking!

Lin Ming cultivated the Fire Laws. Once he released the Heretical God Force, the terrifying heavenly retribution flames he released from the Heretical God Tree would be the nemesis of ice!

Not just that, but Lin Ming had the tyrannical power of thunder to boost his flames, as well as even more powerful techniques.

“Lin Ming, are you messing with us? To fight with the Undying Polar Ice is to put our lives on the line, and you want us to persist all the way until it turns into an ice egg just so you can give it a try?”

Many trial challengers were speechless upon hearing Lin Ming’s words. Many of them were already nearing exhaustion, and if they wanted to continue fighting the Undying Polar Ice they would have to brave great dangers and take great risks. A single misstep and they would die here!

Such a great price was all traded for a single chance of attack, and that chance of attack was only to allow Lin Ming a little try. It wasn’t a surprise that they were all worked up over such a thought!

“Lin Ming, just from you being able to pass through the Asura level Gate of Laws, you obtaining an 85% completion rate truly isn’t high. If you return like this, you might be unwilling to… but, you are also young and your comprehension of the Laws will rise in the future. It won’t be difficult for you to reach 87% the next time you come, so why do you have to be in such a hurry to risk such perils?”

The martial artist who spoke thought that Lin Ming wasn’t satisfied with his current 85% completion rate. After passing through the Asura level Gate of Laws, it wasn’t a surprise that he was unhappy Sheng Mei obtained a higher score. Thus, this was the impetus driving him to propose a ridiculous idea like fighting the Undying Polar Ice.

It had to be known that just fighting the Undying Polar Ice and doing great damage to it would earn one a good completion percentage, even if the monster didn’t die.

This was the case with Sheng Mei, otherwise her completion percentage should have been lower than Lin Ming's.

Realizing this, many people were uninterested in his proposal. Some even snorted with contempt. To raise his completion percentage by a little, he wanted them all to take such a risk. How could they possibly agree?

A trial challenger crossed his arms across his chest and coldly sneered, "You want to give it a try? Heh, let's be honest here. You're just unhappy that Soul Empress Sheng Mei was the main pillar for offense and defense, so because you didn't feel too good about that, you want to try attacking once just so you can fish for more completion percentage? If we were to help you then our completion percentage would be pitifully small. If you are responsible for attacking, then whether or not the ice egg is destroyed your completion percentage will still rise! Let me give you some advice. None of us here are fools so don't take us for one. It's impossible for you to use us as your spears!"

The trial challenger who spoke before was tactful with his words. But the one speaking now was directly taunting Lin Ming, his words grating to the ears.

"I also have no interest in this. I apologize but I'm not in the habit of having all my efforts become someone else's rewards." Someone grimly said.

These people all began leaving together. If Lin Ming truly could succeed then they could enter the sixth level and leave behind a billion year legend. If this was possible then they were willing to take the risk, no matter how great.

But many people simply didn't believe that Lin Ming possessed the destructive capabilities to break through the ice egg. Even the likes of Sheng Mei had failed. If Lin Ming were to fail then all the risks they took would be converted into completion percentage for someone else. Only a fool would do something so stupid.

Lin Ming's gaze swept over these people as they left, not a single response on his face. If these people left then so be it, he didn't want them here either!

He turned towards Sheng Mei. Her attitude was the most important! Even when facing the ice-attribute Undying Polar Ice, her combat efficiency in the battle would not be much different than his own.

Sheng Mei thought for a moment. She asked, “What are your chances of success?”

“Maybe around 40-50%...” Lin Ming listed a vague figure. It was impossible to justify such probabilities.

“40-50%?” Sheng Mei’s lips slightly curved up, as if she were tempted.

Dragonscar saw Sheng Mei’s expression and knew what she was thinking. His heart began to burn with nervousness. “Empress! You...”

He knew that Sheng Mei had consumed a tremendous amount of her soul force so it absolutely would not be easy for her to resist the bombardment of the Undying Polar Ice. She might even need to pay a certain price for attempting it. Dragonscar didn’t want to see this!

Sheng Mei waved her hand and stopped all of Dragonscar’s following words. Towards this youth that kept creating miracles, she held a bit of curiously as well as a bit of belief that he could continue bringing forth more miracles.

“Alright. Then I will manage defense and you will manage offense!”

Sheng Mei’s voice was clear and resonant, bringing with it the momentum of endless mountains and rivers.

“And all of you?”

Sheng Mei turned to look at Suya, Mo Brightmoon, and the others.

“Haha, Brother Lin, why are you even asking us this now? We’re already standing on your side.” Fanny Fafa chuckled as he spoke.

Thousand Slaughter didn't speak, only taking out his saber.

As for Mo Brightmoon and Suya, their smiling faces already indicated their choice.

"Good! Then we have enough people. Everyone else, if you wish to work with us in passing this obstacle then you may stay. If you don't wish to stay then I won't see you off!"

Lin Ming indifferently said.

Many other martial artists were enraged upon hearing this. This damned fellow was too arrogant! Did he think he was invincible or something!?

"Good! Very good! You are crazy enough! I can't wait to see what your end will be like. Let's go!"

The martial artists that taunted Lin Ming sneered one more time and began walking out. But as they began walking, they discovered after a while that there were only eight people in their group, but ten people had stayed back.

Of these ten people, six of them were Lin Ming and his group, Sheng Mei and her follower, as well as a black-clothed youth and green-clothed girl. They were the two that Lin Ming had met atop the Divine Seal Altar, Moonpond and Soulsky.

Following Sheng Mei, Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, and Dragonscar, then Moonpond and Soulsky were the strongest ones here!

Seeing these two people stay, Lin Ming smiled. "Good. We don't need the others. It didn't matter if they stayed behind to begin with."

Out of the original 18 remaining, the 10 of them represented at least 99% of the group's combat strength. Just Lin Ming and Sheng Mei alone were each worth more than hundreds of those that had left; they were dispensable cannon fodder.

Lin Ming's words enraged the ones leaving. He had actually said that it didn't matter if they stayed or not! This Lin Ming had never placed them in his eyes to begin with.

“Brat, you’ve got guts!”

One of the leaving trial challengers wickedly said. But, he only said this to vent his anger. He didn’t dare actually attack Lin Ming because he knew that he would never be able to defeat him.

And at this moment, the earth shook once more. The thick frosted ground was torn apart from the vibrations and a massive plume of cold energy shot up into the skies like a phantom, gathering high up in the air!

The source of all cold energy in this world seemed to be suspended a thousand feet up high.

Suddenly, snow white runes scattered out, exuding mysterious and unpredictable Ice Laws.

One could vaguely see small groups of ice energy dissipate out in the air.

The threads of milk-white ice energy in the air became extremely wild and savage.

Cold energy gathered together, twining into bundles, condensing more and more. It was like a snow white dragon swimming around a mass of spiritual ice energy, crazily revolving.

Even the space storms that appeared through the space cracks that the Undying Inferno had pierced through began to freeze over.

Even the wild flows of space energy weren’t able to withstand this strange cold energy!

Everyone felt their hearts wildly shake. This ice energy was exuding a massive pressure.

“The Undying Polar Ice, it finally came out!” Lin Ming breathed in deep, his eyes shining with fighting spirit.

Chapter 1724 – Umbral Heaven Ice Array

Chapter 1724 – Umbral Heaven Ice Array

…

…

…

"Let's hurry and get out of here!"

"Leave them behind to deal with the Undying Polar Ice! We've got to make it to a safe area!"

The eight trial challengers leaving were shocked and filled with dread as they witnessed the earth-shaking scene of the Undying Polar Ice being born. But from that initial shock and fear, it slowly became a gloating schadenfreude.

No matter how powerful the Undying Polar Ice was, it was Lin Ming that would have to withstand it; it had nothing to do with them.

The eight people all launched their movement techniques and used their energies to break past the massive ice crystals floating in the air, shuttling through the wild and frenzied cold winds.

Because the Divine Seal Altar's transmission channel had closed, they were temporarily unable to leave the fifth level. But as long as they were far away from the Undying Polar Ice they shouldn't suffer any major disasters. After all, when they first arrived at the fifth level they were quite a distance from the Undying Inferno and hadn't suffered any attacks.

As the eight people flew away, terrifying snow gales and ice storms blew through the world. Massive chunks of ice fell on the ground, immediately covering the ground in thick glaciers.

Lin Ming and the others soared into the air. Sheng Mei once again created the Extreme Cold Ice Array around her, enveloping everyone.

Immediately, everyone felt the pressure on them be reduced. Lin Ming looked towards Sheng Mei and couldn't help but admire her strength. He could tell that a dreadful amount of energy was required to maintain this Extreme Cold Combat Array, and a normal Holy Lord would only be able to keep it up for half an incense stick of time before being completely drained.

Yet not only was Sheng Mei able to persist for such a long time, but she also managed to control the Extreme Cold Battle Array to a profound degree that was able to withstand the strikes of the Undying Inferno and Undying Polar Ice. The reason she was able to accomplish this was because she had an incredibly deep understanding of the Ice Laws and could utilize her origin energy to its full potential. She was even able to absorb the power of ice from the world and minimize the use of her soul force.

But, even though Sheng Mei was able to perfectly accomplish all of this, it still placed a tremendous pressure on her to face the Undying Polar Ice in continuous battle.

"Empress..."

Seeing the heavy burden of defense fall on Sheng Mei's thin and delicate shoulders, Dragonscar felt inexplicable pain in his heart.

"Focus your heart on the battle before you!"

Sheng Mei icily said as she saw Dragonscar be distracted. Dragonscar grit his teeth and turned his head towards that horrifying snowstorm that was breeding in the air.

As he turned back he also maliciously stared at Lin Ming, warning him that he better not be playing tricks here or he would never forgive him.

Lin Ming didn't bother arguing. At this time, words had become meaningless. This battle would be his only way of proving his words.

"Take these..."

Lin Ming took out thick stacks of divine runic symbols and passed them to Suya, Mo Brightmoon, Fanny Fafa, and the others.

These were divine runic symbols that Lin Ming had drawn up in Tragic Death Valley, all in order to prepare himself for the final battle. Taking them out now when they were all standing on the blade's edge was the perfect time to do so.

The greatest advantage of a divine runic symbol was that its strength wasn't too related to the user's strength. Even if Lin Ming didn't use them, the strength wouldn't be much weaker.

Suya and the others received the divine runic symbols, feeling their heavy weight in their hands.

"Use them freely. Don't bother saving any." Lin Ming warned.

Suya, Mo Brightmoon, and the others all looked at each other, speechless. Every single one of these divine runic symbols was priceless. To recklessly use them was the same as burning money. But, Lin Ming was extremely rich and also a divine runic master so he had the capital to burn as much as he wanted.

"This boy..."

Dragonscar's pupils shrank. He was someone that could instantly judge the quality of treasures and he could see that these divine runic symbols were extraordinary!

Rumble rumble rumble!

The ice storm became increasingly intense. The wild winds reverberating in the air were like volcanic eruptions and endless thunderclaps!

The glaciers on the ground were cut open by the ice storm, causing massive fissures to open up. Giant chunks of ice flew into the air. It was like a divine being was using saber light to carve down mountains and open rivers. If a mortal's body were sucked up into such an ice storm they would instantly perish without even their bones left!

And in this ice storm, the ice energy that was emitting strange and mystical Ice Laws suddenly began to condense together, forming an ice essence soul.

This ice essence soul contained an incomparably terrifying cold energy. All around it, even the void began to freeze and shatter!

Ka ka ka!

As the cold energy condensed to the extreme, cracks appeared in the ice essence soul. Pure freezing ice energy gushed out from the cracks, forming a giant ice blue phoenix in the air!

This ice phoenix looked up towards the heavens and released a shrill cry. Icy cold energy shot up into the air, causing the entirety of the boundless skies to freeze into limitless ice crystals.

Then, its icy eyes that emitted a horrifying aura suddenly locked onto Lin Ming and the others within the Extreme Cold Battle Array.

"Undying Polar Ice!" Xiao Moxian slightly shook as she felt a great pressure push down on her. She was originally of the fire-attribute Dark Phoenix lineage and this Undying Polar Ice was her natural inborn nemesis.

Everyone's complexion turned solemn. This was a critical situation!

"I have returned from the earth and yet you remain here to offend my invincible divine might. There are no words to excuse your crimes, only death!" The Undying Polar Ice's dreadful voice rumbled in everyone’s hearts. It was like an invisible mountain was pressing down on them, horrible to the extreme.

For a time, Ice Law runes began to shimmer all over the body of the Undying Polar Ice. It opened its boundless wings and countless white lines spread through the world, carrying with them the endless freezing aura of the Ice Laws that rapidly proliferated like weeds.

Wherever it went, there would be crackling freezing sounds as even space began to rupture apart.

As the white lines collided with Sheng Mei’s Extreme Cold Battle Array, the glass-like battle array emitted the sound of metal striking metal. The entire Extreme Cold Battle Array shivered, clearly withstanding a tremendous pressure.

However, the millions and millions of runes that formed the Extreme Cold Battle Array began to shine with incandescent light. The ancient freezing cold energy began to absorb the aura of the Ice Laws contained in the white lines.

As it was, even though the runes of the Extreme Cold Battle Array were being constantly destroyed, they could simultaneously absorb the aura of the Ice Laws to restore themselves.

“Sheng Mei’s Ice Laws… are above those of the Undying Polar Ice. Far, far above!”

Lin Ming’s eyes brightened. Sheng Mei was indeed Sheng Mei. Even though her strength was suppressed to the Holy Lord realm and she was weaker than the Undying Polar Ice, in terms of Laws she actually suppressed it instead!

“Interesting. Then, let me see just how long you can last!”

The Undying Polar Ice cried out and unraveled its wings to their full extent, wide enough to blot out the skies.

Countless pillars of ice shot out, tearing through the void as they hurtled down onto the people within the Extreme Cold Battle Array.

Dang! Dang! Dang!

The Extreme Cold Battle Array emitted more heavy striking sounds as massive runes shattered again and again, crushed as easily as glass. Many sections broke down, seeming as if the entire array would collapse at any moment.

The Undying Polar Ice wanted to use its absolute strength to trample over Sheng Mei's Laws.

Sheng Mei's complexion changed. From her two pupils that resembled six concentric ice crystals, a dark light began to shoot out.

This black light was twined together with runes; it was threatening and suppressive.

Her two pupils seemed to become black vortexes, as deep as the fathomless abyss. A mystic strength constantly revolved within as more and more black light shot out.

This was another variation of pupil-type cultivation methods. The eyes were the windows to the soul and the eye techniques of the spiritas could mean soul attacks, illusions, or a nearly endless number of other attack methods. Many soul cultivation methods used the eyes as the medium to channel soul force. However, compared to Dragon Fang's Three Lives Pupils, Sheng Mei's pupil techniques had the flavor of shattering all existence and swallowing it up.

As Sheng Mei's pupils changed, all of the runes around the Extreme Cold Battle Array began to change with them. They started to dazzle with black ice energy.

In the blink of an eye, the Extreme Cold Battle Array became as dark as ink. Still, faint traces of black freezing energy rose up like countless pieces of frozen ice, covering everyone within.

“Primal Chaos Law Eyes and the Umbral Heaven Ice Array… Empress! You…!”

Dragonscar cried out, his voice shaking. The Primal Chaos Law Eyes and Umbral Heaven Ice Array were higher evolutions of the state of her Laws. If she still had her Empyrean realm strength then using these two secret techniques wouldn't be difficult at all. But now, Sheng Mei was only at the early Holy Lord realm; she would just barely be able to use these two techniques and she might even have to use up her source soul force!

"Focus on yourself!"

Sheng Mei's voice was frosty, her expression as calm as ice. Just looking into her eyes that seemed like an endless abyss was enough to make one's hands and feet go cold. Dragonscar didn't dare to say another word.

He knew that speaking any more would just disturb her mentality. He could only grit his teeth and focus on his own battle.

The ice pillars that the Undying Polar Ice shot out emitted terrifying sonic booms as they smashed into the Umbral Heaven Ice Array.

The Umbral Heaven Ice Array was different from the Extreme Cold Battle Array. It was far colder and far darker, and the inside rippled with mystical strength. The freezing black darkness formed by the array formation suddenly shot out like the quills of a porcupine to meet those innumerable ice pillars.

With each collision, two types of Ice Laws smashed into each other, tearing apart large tracts of space. But even as space tore open it would be directly frozen shut; it was an extremely unusual sight.

At first glance, it was like the sky was filled with countless snow-white patches.

However, this array formation withstood the endless attacks of the Undying Polar Ice, resisting and weakening them a great deal.

The surrounding earth, even if it were struck by shards of the Ice Laws, would be torn open with wounds as great as rivers and large as mountains. The might of this collision was astonishing.

Seeing this, Lin Ming was shocked.

“Sheng Mei is indeed terrifying! It’s unimaginable that she could display this kind of combat strength at the Holy Lord realm. Not just that, but the power of her Laws seems to be infinitely varied. Each time she uses one of her Laws it is extremely formidable!”

As Lin Ming was thinking this, his eyes touched upon Sheng Mei’s proud and focused face. He discovered that crystal beads of sweat were dripping down her nose and then turning into ice crystals that fell down like pearls.

Without knowing why, Lin Ming was touched by this scene, as if he pitied her and couldn’t endure seeing it.

He could imagine just what sort of pressure Sheng Mei was facing. One only needed to look at Dragonscar’s visibly shaken response to understand it. In this battle he could only succeed, he could not fail!

Taking a deep breath, Lin Ming’s eyes became calm and tranquil. He shut his eyes and closed off his senses, allowing his mind to enter into an ethereal state.

Behind Lin Ming, an auspicious light began to glow. Faint petals fell around him and the sweet trickling murmur of spirit springs filled the air. In this environment of spiritual springs and falling leaves, the phantom of an old tree appeared.

This old tree’s bark was withered and its leaves had mostly fallen off. But, the tree trunk and roots were powerful and vigorous, like the claws of a dragon. The few leaves that remained shined and glittered as if they were carved from the purest green jade.

This was the Bodhi Tree. When Lin Ming was at Mount Potala, he had meditated under a Bodhi Tree and fused the Samsara, ethereal, and Primordius martial intents together. Now, Lin Ming summoned this fused martial intent, forming a pure land of ultimate bliss around him.

No matter what crazy storms raged outside, whatever attacks came crashing down, nothing could disturb him. He had already completely handed over the task of defense to Sheng Mei. As for him, he wholeheartedly invested his focus into adjusting his condition, preparing for the final fatal strike!

Chapter 1725 – The Cold Plum Blossom Resists the Snow And Wind

Chapter 1725 – The Cold Plum Blossom Resists the Snow And Wind

…

…

…

"Attack together!"

Dragonscar bellowed. He fiercely grit his teeth and all-consuming golden light appeared around him. This soul force flowed down into his hands, turning into a pair of golden soul force swords. As these golden swords were placed together, their golden light was blinding.

His feet touched the ground and then he shot into the skies, hurtling towards the ice pillars!

After Dragonscar, everyone else began to take action. The Divine Mist Divine Kingdom's Moonpond and Soulsky were the next to move. Soulsky took out a long sword and slashed out 10,000 sword lights. As for Moonpond, her actions were far more unusual. Her slim body became dim in the snowstorm as if she were disappearing. Then, a faintly translucent light appeared around her like a halo; this was an extremely strange variation soul force.

This soul force then unexpectedly fused into the pitch black Umbral Heaven Ice Array.

The entire Umbral Heaven Ice Array began to suddenly shine with a strange light. The runes became increasingly bright and dazzling and the defensive strength of it increased even more.

“Mm? Support-type soul force?” Dragonscar was surprised. He gave Moonpond a deeper look. In his eyes, Moonpond’s talent wasn’t too outstanding, but her support-type soul force was exceedingly rare. Those with a support-type soul force usually didn’t possess much combat strength on their own, but they could use their soul force to support the attacks and defenses of others.

If the one she assisted was weak then her use would be small. But if the one she assisted was strong, then her own use would be several times greater than anything she could accomplish herself. For instance, if Moonpond were to lend her soul force to Sheng Mei, then with Sheng Mei’s comprehension of the Laws, she could use this soul force ten times more effectively!

This would greatly lighten the burden on Sheng Mei.

For a moment, Sheng Mei also opened her eyes, a brilliant light shining in them as she looked at Moonpond.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The space for a thousand miles was torn to shreds by the violent collisions, with countless holes riddled in the void. However, the invisible power of ice forcefully froze and solidified this ruined space immediately.

Besides the area that Sheng Mei’s Umbral Heave Ice Array covered, the vast earth was suffering an apocalyptic disaster. Dreadful shockwaves rang out, smashing into the ground and creating fathomless pits and deep ravines.

In this violent combat, Lin Ming’s divine runic symbols played a considerable role.

Out of the ten people that remained, Suya, Mo Brightmoon, Fanny Fafa, and Thousand Slaughter were the weakest of the bunch. Compared to Sheng Mei, although their added combat strength wasn’t negligible, they could still only play a limited role.

But with Lin Ming's divine runic symbols in their hands, everything was different. These divine runic symbols could be used several times each. Once activated, they could withstand the impact of an ice pillar and greatly reduce the burden on Sheng Mei.

Hu – hu – hu – !

The blazing light of Heavenly Fire Symbols and Heretical God Symbols lit up the heavens. The blazing flames burned bright. As the ice pillars shot into the seas of fire they began to rapidly melt away.

"Haha, Brother Lin's divine runic symbols are too fierce!"

Fanny Fafa happily laughed. He grasped the divine runic symbols and shuttled through the ice storm, his entire body wreathed in burning hot flames so that the freezing storm couldn't harm him. This method of combat was truly admirable.

After a long bombardment of attacks, the Undying Polar Ice in the skies suddenly went quiet.

But at this moment, everyone within the Umbral Heaven Ice Array held their breath. They could feel a dreadful rage brewing.

This was the rage of the Undying Polar Ice.

Billions upon billions of motes of gray ice energy shimmered with ice runes. Then, in the air, they formed ice phoenix claws that were as large as a mountain.

Shua!

These sharp claws carried with them the dreadful anger and will of the Undying Polar Ice. They tore through the air, raising up giant storms and endless waves as they came falling onto the Umbral Heaven Ice Array.

The strength was titanic, like a star exploding.

This momentous impact caused an eye-piercing white radiance to spread out.

Finally, the two different Ice Laws entangled and were destroyed together.

The entire Umbral Heaven Ice Array was torn apart. It was like some great monster had taken a large chunk out of it; it was truly terrifying.

Puff!

Moonpond suddenly shook. She had poured her soul force into the Umbral Heaven Ice Array and had been supporting Sheng Mei this entire time. Now, she trembled and blood shot out from her mouth, ears, nose, eyes, and she nearly fell unconscious where she was.

Because she had fused her own soul force into the Umbral Heaven Ice Array, once the array was damaged, Moonpond and Sheng Mei would naturally bear the brunt of the attack.

And in terms of endurance, Moonpond was far worse than Sheng Mei.

“Junior-apprentice Sister!”

Seeing Moonpond severely wounded, Soulsky was extremely worried and anxious.

Even Sheng Mei paled by several points. She waved her right hand and summoned a moon-white light that covered the severely wounded Moonpond. She said to Soulsky, “She’s fine, there’s just been some damage to her spiritual sea.”

As Sheng Mei spoke, a vast chunk of the Umbral Heaven Ice Array had broken apart and the cold energy from outside was beginning to pour in.

Chi chi chi!

A terrifying cold wind fell upon everyone. Even though they were wearing ice armor which blocked out most of the cold energy, they still felt their bodies chill and their souls nearly freeze over.

Suya And Mo Brightmoon quickly ignited a group defensive divine runic symbol to reduce the pressure for everyone. At the same time, they also protected Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian who were both within Lin Ming's fused martial intent pure lands.

"This Undying Polar Ice is horrifying!"

Everyone looked up at the seemingly limitless Undying Polar Ice in the skies, their complexions grim and dignified.

"Lin Ming, are you alright?"

Suya asked with concern. However, Lin Ming didn't respond. He only quietly remained beneath the Bodhi Tree, surrounded in the pure lands of ultimate bliss. All around him, faint Asura runes shimmered in and out like stars in the night sky. It was as if he was already separated from the world.

From far, far away, the eight trial challengers that had run away were watching everything happen within the Umbral Heaven Ice Array.

Seeing that Moonpond was wounded to the point of vomiting blood and yet Lin Ming was still meditating beneath an old tree, all of them were left speechless.

"That woman called Moonpond has already spat out blood but he's still meditating. It seems he's really good at sitting."

"How crafty of him. Even now he hasn't helped once. And Lin Ming's woman, she hasn't done anything either…"

The woman these people referred to was Xiao Moxian. From the start until now, Xiao Moxian had joined together with Lin Ming in his Bodhi Tree pure lands, her mind also entering an ethereal state.

Originally, there were just ten people available. Without Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, that meant there were only eight people left to defend.

The last time there were still 18 people that could defend against the Undying Inferno. Now, there were only eight people. In terms of numbers, they were over half down. In particular, without the unusually strong Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, it wasn't strange that the pressure placed on the ones defending was much higher than it should be!

"Lin Ming, that arrogant brat, he said it didn't matter if we stayed or not! Very well, then let's stand here and see just what happens to them!"

The eight people that retreated were all of the mindset to watch a good play at the expense of others. They were all looking forwards to Lin Ming and the others falling into peril. This was a normal psychological mindset for these people. Since they weren't participating in the battle, they naturally didn't hope that the battle would begin to veer towards a good outcome. In fact, the eight people thought that a good result would be if Lin Ming and his group were all beaten to a pulp, and the best result would be if several of them died.

At the same time, contradictorily they also hoped that nothing would happen to Soul Empress Sheng Mei. Although Sheng Mei came from the 33 Heavens, her etherealness, her perfection, her power, all of that quickly made her into the goddess of all the spiritas in the Asura Road. This was especially true for the eight trial challengers since they were mostly men. Towards Sheng Mei, they held nothing but infatuated admiration.

And at this time, the Undying Polar Ice started its attack once more!

Its massive form soared up into the skies and it began to recklessly absorb all the ice energy between the heavens and earth!

Massive glaciers that were miles wide were shattered into chunks, turned into countless shards of crushed ice that were sucked into the Undying Polar Ice's body. This momentum alone was already panic-inducing!

"That's scary…"

"They're all going to die…"

Many people's eyes were focused on this manic frenzy that was condensing in the world.

Whether it was human, saint, spiritas, or anything that possessed intelligence, everything would feel an instinctual fear upon facing such a world-shaking momentum!

After brewing for ten breaths of time, a pair of terrifying phoenix claws fell down from the world storm like falling mountains, carrying with them the strength of an unstoppable barrage!

Waves upon waves of icy storms set off massive tides of ice that were tens of thousands of feet high. They were like giant ancient beasts that wanted to swallow the Umbral Heaven Ice Array whole!

"Miss Mo! Mister Fanny! Thousand Slaughter!"

Suya cried out. But in truth, there was no need for her to shout. Mo Brightmoon and the others, including even Soulsky, were rapidly shooting out divine runic symbols as if they weren't worth money at all.

For a time, the Heretical God Symbol, Heavenly Flame Symbol, all sorts of tyrannical energies wildly galloped through the skies, wreaking havoc where they went, sweeping through the world!

Peng!

In just a moment, all of the blazing flames were swallowed up by the raging waves of ice!

The improved divine runic symbols that Lin Ming drew up were extraordinarily strong. After the raging tsunamis of ice swallowed the fires of the divine runic symbols, they visibly slowed. However, that was only slowed. The momentum, the unparalleled momentum that seemed all-powerful, still impacting towards them as before!

Chapter 1726 – Lin Ming Makes His Move

Chapter 1726 – Lin Ming Makes His Move

…

…

…

Facing this terrifying attack, Suya, Mo Brightmoon, and the others had already lost their use. As long as they took a single step outside of the Umbral Heaven Ice Array then they would undoubtedly die! Dragonscar's muscles were also frozen all over and he had nearly exhausted his soul force, thus the role he could play now was limited. During the battle with Undying Polar Ice he had been the closest to it, thus he had withstood the most ice energy.

As for Moonpond, who came from Divine Mist Divine Kingdom, she was on the verge of unconsciousness and had lost all combat strength.

She could no longer help support the Umbral Heaven Ice Array!

If so, then the only one everyone could depend on was Sheng Mei!

In that moment, Sheng Mei's slim figure faced the horrifying ice explosion. This ice explosion swept out for 80,000 miles, seeming as if it was able to destroy the world. The two were completely disproportionate!

But because she had withstood the previous attack, Sheng Mei's complexion was pale. However, her back was straight and firm, like a proud plum blossom in a blizzard! Her ten fingers moved and within the pitch black vortex of her eyes, countless crystalline ice flowers seemed to fall, as if her pupils contained a world where it was snowing.

"Empress…"

Dragonscar gnashed his teeth, his voice trembling. He watched helplessly on as the delicate Sheng Mei, surrounded by a faint icy haze, faced the might and momentum of the world!

Bang!

A terrifying explosion completely enveloped the Umbral Heaven Ice Array. The entire world violently shook and countless glaciers split apart and were sent flying hundreds of thousands of feet into the air!

In this horrifying ice storm, a strange and wistful song spread out, touching and sweet.

This song was ethereal and untouched, like the sounds of nature.

Even the sparse plant life of this world seemed to rise up in excitement.

The song was melodious and deep. The countless glaciers began to disintegrate and scatter, filling the world with endless falling snowflakes.

The raging tide of ice had passed and the frozen sky also revealed itself once more. The people within the Umbral Heaven Ice Array that were covered by countless glaciers became visible again.

This Umbral Heaven Ice Array was already covered by the all-consuming cold energy of the Undying Polar Ice and a thick layer of frost had formed over it. The barrier was frail, on the verge of shattering at any moment,

A misty blue light shimmered. Sheng Mei stood proud and inviolable in the snow. Behind her, the phantom of a goddess appeared. This goddess' appearance was blurry and her appearance was vague. Her entire body was surrounded by drifting ice and blue silk ribbons. The beautiful and haunting song that was sung just now had come from the lips of this goddess.

Bright red blood flowed out from the corners of Sheng Mei's mouth, winding down like a snake and contrasting with her pale porcelain skin. It was like a red plum blossom in the snow, infinitely beautiful and sorrowful.

Sheng Mei… was injured…

From the moment the final trial began until now, this was Sheng Mei's first injury!

At this moment, for some unknown reason, just looking at Sheng Mei made one feel an inexplicable ache in their heart.

"Empress, quickly take away the World Apotheosis!"

Dragonscar begged with tears in his eyes. Although he was only Sheng Mei's servant, in his heart, her safety was far more important than his life!

The World Apotheosis that Dragonscar spoke of was the goddess phantom behind Sheng Mei. It was summoned by her and was a manifestation of her divine soul.

Some of the most talented spiritas martial artists were able to create an incarnation of their soul that would appear behind them. This was called a World Apotheosis.

Each person's World Apotheosis was different.

A spiritas' World Apotheosis was similar to the indestructible diamond vajra body that a saint martial artist could cultivate; it was an extremely higher boundary of cultivation within the spiritas.

However, because Sheng Mei's cultivation was limited to the Holy Lord realm, in addition to the massive amount of energy she consumed in facing the Undying Inferno, it was exceedingly difficult for her to summon her World Apotheosis. To do so affected her soul source.

Sheng Mei shook her head, "The Undying Polar Ice will likely attack one more time…"

Everyone already realized that the cold air within the world had weakened by a great deal.

That previous strike just now had used up a great deal of the Undying Polar Ice's strength and it had begun to weaken. Even so, it hadn't used up all of its strength. It still had enough power for one final strike, and this strike absolutely would not be easy to withstand!

"But, Empress..."

Dragonscar was at a loss for words. He could only grit his teeth, heft the heavy sword in his hands and move by her side. He knew that Sheng Mei would not heed his words and that further arguing would only affect her mood.

Terrifying cold energy started to ferment in the skies once more. The Undying Polar Ice raised its head to the heavens and let out a clarion cry. Its body started to shrink more and more.

From the size of a mountain, it rapidly shrunk to a hundred foot wide.

This was also because the Undying Polar Ice had used up a great deal of its strength. It began to compress its strength and reduce the range of attack. By doing so, the might of its attack would naturally be higher.

At this time, the goddess phantom behind Sheng Mei produced an ice blue divine sword. Together with Sheng Mei, it faced the impact of the Undying Polar Ice!

A World Apotheosis was a part of a spiritas martial artist's soul. Once it was injured, it would also injure the soul source of the martial artist.

As for Mo Brightmoon, Suya, and the others, they also gripped the few remaining divine runic symbols they had, ready to face the final strike of the Undying Polar Ice. Although it was hard to say if the divine runic symbols in their hands would be able to play any useful role, it was better to do something than nothing. No one wanted to stand there and wait for death.

The many trial challengers were all in a perilous situation. They focused everything they had to resist this strike!

Cold energy compressed more and more. The Ice Phoenix circled in the skies. Then, it opened its beak and a blade-sharp beam of icy light began to form in it.

“You lowly, pathetic ants. Do you really believe you can withstand my anger? Keep on dreaming!”

For a time, the Ice Phoenix’s body lit up with a divine ice blue light! All of its energies began rapidly fusing into this attack!

Ka ka ka!

The space near the phoenix’s beak began to crack apart. A terrifying ice energy gathered, forming a thin beam of potent energy that shot forwards like the blade of a divine god!

This divine light recklessly cut forwards, ripping through the void. Although it seemed infinitely slow, it was actually faster than lightning!

This sort of strange visual illusion occurred only because this icy blue light was able to freeze even time!

“This… this power!!”

Dragonscar’s mind shook!

Dragonscar was also someone that had climbed up the 33 steps of the Divine Seal Altar. Although it had been difficult for him, he was still undoubtedly a heroic elite. His talent far surpassed Bigflame and the Divine Void Crown Prince’s and his sight was equally fantastic. With just a glance he was able to see how terrifying this Undying Polar Ice’s attack truly was!

“How can we possibly block this?”

Everyone’s minds trembled. Facing this blue light, the pressure upon them all was unbelievable!

Sheng Mei’s pupils shrank and her palms became wet with sweat. The was the Undying Polar Ice’s final strike and the power behind it had surpassed her imagination. She could feel that her own Umbral Heaven Ice Array would definitely be pierced through by this beam of light!

If the Undying Polar Ice continued using the same attacks as before, Sheng Mei was confident she could block it even if she was injured in the process. But, the Undying Polar Ice had condensed its final attack into a beam of light that was only as thick as a rice bowl. Once struck, her Umbral Heaven Ice Array would shatter!

If the ice array shattered, the consequences would be inconceivable. Most martial artists present would die, at most three of them leaving. Even if Dragonscar didn’t perish here he would be grievously wounded!

In that moment, Sheng Mei clenched her teeth, a rare look of hesitation in her eyes. Then, they focused like she had come to a resolution of her thoughts. Over her entire body, icy blue flames ignited.

“Empress, you… you… you are burning your source soul force!?”

Dragonscar cried out from beside Sheng Mei.

The higher one’s cultivation, the more talented one was, the more precious their source soul force and blood essence were.

Sheng Mei’s source soul force had already reached an unimaginably precious degree. Once she lost some, not even a transcendent divine pill would be able to make up for a tiny bit!

But now, she planned to burn her own soul and possibly even discard a portion of her World Apotheosis in order to incite her greatest strength and engage in a life or death battle with the Undying Polar Ice!

If Sheng Mei did this then her divine soul was bound to suffer massive damage!

And Sheng Mei's soul was extremely unique. Even with Divine Sovereign Soul Rapture's astonishing methods, it was likely he wouldn't be able to fully cure her. This would cause her future achievements to be affected!

"Empress, have you gone mad!?" Dragonscar's eyes turned blood red. He was well aware that if Sheng Mei didn't burn her source soul force, the Umbral Heaven Ice Array definitely wouldn't be able to withstand the Undying Polar Ice's final strike!

If that happened, then everyone else besides Sheng Mei in the Umbral Heaven Ice Array would die. Maybe even Dragonscar would perish here.

However, even if Dragonscar had to give his life, he didn't wish to see Sheng Mei receive the smallest wound!

In Dragonscar's eyes, Sheng Mei's source soul force was far more precious than everyone else's lives added together.

The truth was that with Sheng Mei's cultivation and talent, she was absolutely able to retreat and avoid this strike. Although this would signal her end in the final trial, she could return next time. But, she had no intention of doing this.

"Get out of my way!"

Sheng Mei's icy voice shouted out!

She had already firmed her resolve. She didn't know whether it was because she had fought side-by-side with these people or because she felt some faint sympathy towards one or two people here. Normally Sheng Mei couldn't care less about the lives of inferior martial artists, but today she hoped that this group wouldn't die.

Moreover, she had a faint premonition that if she were to run away by herself, it would bring about a loss that she would forever regret. This inexplicable feeling forced her to stay and not retreat!

In that moment, between Sheng Mei's eyebrows, the mark of a six-leaf snow flower appeared. This mark was like a third eye, shining with a blazing light and surging with wild origin energy. Sheng Mei's hair began to wildly sweep up all around her.

As the icy blue flames burned on Sheng Mei's body, as her divine soul was soaking in these flames, within the group, Lin Ming's eyes suddenly flashed open!

His eyes were like two bolts of lightning crashing down in an ice storm, piercing through all!

Even with her back to Lin Ming, Sheng Mei could still feel this intense substantialized vision.

"Lin Ming? You - !"

Sheng Mei was startled. She didn't know why Lin Ming had woken up from his meditation, but when he opened his eyes, his body had already hurtled forwards.

He was like a dormant great dragon that had awoken from slumber. His body shot into the skies!

At this time, he ran out of the Umbral Heaven Ice Array and directly faced that terrifying ice blue light.

"Lin Ming!!"

Sheng Mei was bewildered.

No matter how strong Lin Ming was, it was impossible for him to withstand that freezing blue light. That beam of light had reached a preposterous level of strength. Even Sheng Mei had to admit that it would be difficult to resist even after burning her soul force.

Seeing the freezing blue light howl towards him, Lin Ming’s gaze was cold and decisive. Within his eyes, an inverted image of the blue light appeared, shooting out like a pair of divine blue swords!

Chapter 1727 – Turn the Tide

Chapter 1727 – Turn the Tide

…

…

…

It wasn't just Sheng Mei who saw this amazing scene occur, but also everyone else within the Umbral Heaven Ice Array and even the eight trial challengers standing far off near the center of the fifth level's entrance. All of them were shocked speechless; could Lin Ming be thinking of committing suicide!?

"Sir Lin!"

Suya and Mo Brightmoon felt their hearts skip a beat! Lin Ming had moved far too suddenly and even if they believed Lin Ming was strong, they didn't think he had the ability to directly resist the Undying Polar Ice's final strike.

Facing that freezing beam of light, even a half-step Empyrean would perish. With Lin Ming's current strength it was impossible for him to block it!

"This fool, he is courting death! If even the Soul Empress cannot block it, then him running forwards like a fool is no different than a bug in front of a cart!"

The far off watching trial challengers had previously despised Lin Ming for sitting in meditation behind a woman, but the truth was that they all understood this was the most intelligent plan. However, as they saw Lin Ming rush forwards towards the Undying Polar Ice, his actions were the same as bringing about his own death.

If they were to take 10,000 steps back and look at the wider picture, even if Lin Ming were to withstand this strike, this also meant that it would be impossible for him to have the strength to destroy the Undying Polar Ice's egg form. According to the previous agreement, Sheng Mei was responsible for defending against the Undying Polar Ice and Lin Ming only needed to adjust his condition and wait until the Undying Polar Ice turned into its egg form, and then he would thunder out with his strongest attack!

Lin Ming had already adjusted his condition for an extremely long time, and now he couldn't bear it and had rushed out to attack. To everyone else, this felt as if all his efforts were going to be wasted!

Facing that howling ice blue light, Lin Ming didn't fear it but met it head-on!

His entire body was wrapped in thunder and flames. However, when compared to the ice blue beam of light that could even freeze time, the flames raging on Lin Ming's body were nothing at all.

This also caused Sheng Mei's heart to tighten. She faintly felt that Lin Ming would explode into action ahead of time and rush out. In truth, she didn't want to burn her source soul force, but even so, she couldn't sit idly by and not help Lin Ming.

She didn't know what his plans were. Had he decided to give up on attacking the Undying Polar Ice?

At that moment, Sheng Mei also hurtled forwards. Purple soul flames blazed around her body as the six-leaf snow flower shimmered between her eyebrows. She flew straight towards Lin Ming.

Even if they had to give up on killing the Undying Polar Ice, she couldn't allow Lin Ming to die here like this.

However, Lin Ming had taken the initiative and his speed was far too fast. It was impossible for her to catch up!

Just when Lin Ming was less than 10,000 feet from colliding with the freezing blue light, a shadow rushed out from his inner world!

This shadow held a giant shield in its hands, welcoming the attack of the freezing blue light.

This was Lin Ming's avatar – the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone!

Pa pa pa!

All of the joints within the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone began popping and exploding. The strength that came from being nourished in the God Beast Grand Array for billions upon billions of years completely erupted into a horrifying bodily strength, rapidly surpassing that of ten dragons!

The Essence Spirit Embryo Stone's comprehensive combat strength was inferior to that of Lin Ming's true body. But in terms of bodily strength alone, in terms of frontal impact and the ability to endure strikes, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone actually far exceeded Lin Ming.

If Lin Ming could be called a master martial artist of the mortal world, then the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was a wild tiger.

A mortal expert could defeat a wild tiger, but in many specific situations, a wild tiger was far more useful than a mortal expert.

For instance, at this very moment!

At this time, behind the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, a phantom of the God Beast Tomb Array appeared. And in front of the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, the incomparably massive shield it held was the Primordius Gate!

The primeval and simple Primordius Gate's surface was covered with innumerable strange lines of the Grandmist Laws. These lines were all formed from the primal energy of when the universe was being formed, and were naturally carved onto ancient divine stones.

To take the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone as the lance and take the Primordius Gate as the shield!

"Essence energy avatar, third seal – release!"

Lin Ming shouted out loud. In that instant, a boundless and incredible strength erupted from the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone!

In the past, when Lin Ming inherited the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone avatar from the bronze temple, it had three seals placed on it, each more powerful than the last.

These seals were left behind by the Asura Road Master. At the bronze temple, Lin Ming had released the first seal and with this strength he had developed his inner world and broke through the Divine Lord realm.

The second seal was released when he was in Bai Qi's Tomb, in the battle against Tian Mingzi. Lin Ming had bet everyone on this gamble and had released the second seal. In combination with Xiao Moxian's primordial yin, he broke past the body transformation's Heavenly Dao array diagram and entered the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace boundary!

Finally, there was the third seal. It was the most powerful seal and with Lin Ming's previous cultivation he had been unable to release it. But now, he was able to do so!

Facing the Undying Polar Ice, Lin Ming opened it without hesitation!

For a time, there was nothing but a terrifying thunderclap ringing in the air. Like countless volcanoes erupting, like countless God Beasts roaring!

The Essence Spirit Embryo Stone's body suddenly rose and grew. The energy in the sky seemed to be sucked in by a massive vortex, gathering towards the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone.

An indescribably horrifying strength gushed out like a landslide. As this strength filled up the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone avatar and even flooded out, all of that extra energy hurtled towards Lin Ming's main body!

Lin Ming was already prepared for this. Releasing the seal of the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone inevitably meant that he would have to welcome a powerful flow of energy. He shouted out loud and opened his inner world wide, completely absorbing the entirety of that raging tide of power.

For a time, Lin Ming's entire body erupted with a blazing divine light. Every inch of his blood vessels, meridians, muscles, everything contained a tightly compressed and dreadful strength.

Above Lin Ming's head, the sky of endless snow and ice disintegrated. Nine blazing stars appeared, letting their luminescent starlight fall down like waterfalls.

And of these nine stars, two were particularly bright. Their starlight corresponded to two Dao Palaces in Lin Ming's body.

A black electric light shot forth from the Purple Temple Dao Palace, instantly entering Lin Ming's body.

Thump – Thump –

A vast and boundless life vitality gushed out from the depths of Lin Ming's body. All of his blood began to race, issuing sounds like surging tides crashing into each other.

Each inch of his skin began to shine with starlight. His blood tumbled and surged, overbrimming with power.

The Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace shot out a strange mystic strength. From all of Lin Ming's pores, it was like trillions of arcs of electricity shot out, dissipating into the void.

And at this time, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone welcomed that deep blue freezing light!

This scene caused every martial artist's pupils to shrink. They could already see that this figure holding the massive stone gate was Lin Ming's avatar.

Was he planning on discarding his avatar?

As this thought raced through everyone's minds, there was a loud bang as the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, holding the Primordius Gate, collided with that blue beam!

Kacha!

The void shattered. The Primordius Gate was nearly instantly frozen. The Essence Spirit Embryo Stone and the Primordius Gate were both sent flying away together!

No matter how powerful the mortal body of the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was, after this terrifying strike, its arm bones were likely shattered!

A horrifying cold energy froze the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone and Primordius Gate into an ice sculpture. For a flesh and blood body, even the mortal body of a peak Great World King saint would have their body instantly frozen and then cracked into pieces!

However, within the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, an incomparably terrifying blood vitality suddenly burst out. This blood vitality burned like a brilliant conflagration of flames, directly impacting into the skies!

This burning blood vitality was actually able to forcefully resist the cold and make it so that the power of ice wasn't able to invade the meridians of the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone!

Beneath this smoldering blood vitality, even the ice surrounding the avatar began to slowly melt away.

"What!!?"

Behind the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, Sheng Mei was dumbfounded. This avatar was able to rely on its blood vitality alone to resist the cold energy of the Undying Polar Ice. Just how powerful was this avatar's blood vitality? It was simply unimaginable!

Even an adult God Beast might not be able to rely on its blood vitality alone to resist the freezing cold impact of the Undying Polar Ice. But, Lin Ming's avatar had a powerful blood vitality, one that blazed like a massive fireball and it was actually able to resist the strike! Just how was this avatar refined?

In terms of the power of blood vitality alone, this avatar far surpassed Lin Ming's main body!

Although all of these thoughts raced through Sheng Mei's mind, she didn't divert any of her attention. She could instantly see that the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was not enough to withstand the evercold light of the Undying Polar Ice!

No matter how pure and potent the blood vitality of the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, or how strong its body was, it was still unable to compare with the Undying Polar Ice. It was knocked away by the freezing blue light, and that freezing blue light continued hurtling towards Sheng Mei and everyone else!

But because that freezing blue light was blocked by the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, a great deal of its power had been weakened.

In that moment, as Lin Ming saw the freezing blue light shooting towards him, his steps moved and he used the Space Laws to avoid its attack path.

Sheng Mei immediately understood what had happened. Lin Ming only used his avatar to block the momentum of the freezing blue light; he still planned to maintain his strength and attack the Undying Polar Ice's egg form.

As for the remains of the freezing blue light, that would be handled by Sheng Mei!

Now, the freezing blue light had 30-40% of its initial energy diminished. If Sheng Mei wanted to resist this strike, she wouldn't need to burn her source soul force anymore.

When Lin Ming struck out in that final moment, he had not only retained his strength but also protected Sheng Mei. Moreover, his plans remained unchanged; he was still planning to strike down the Undying Polar Ice.

Such methods, such daring boldness, all of that left Sheng Mei shocked, even feeling admiration!

Throughout all her long years of life, Sheng Mei had never felt admiration towards a junior!

Primal Chaos Law Eyes!

Umbral Heaven Ice Array!

Sheng Mei cried out. The purple soul flames that covered her body hid themselves as she no longer had to burn her source soul force. Even so, the six-leaf snow flower mark between her eyebrows glowed with an ever-brighter light!

A touching song spread through the world once more. The peerless goddess behind Sheng Mei, her World Apotheosis, also attacked.

The deep ice blue sword came slashing down. The ribbon that fluttered around Sheng Mei flew high in the skies, covering all space around for a hundred miles!

Kacha!

The Undying Polar Ice's freezing blue light crashed into Sheng Mei's Umbral Heaven Ice Array!

The frozen Essence Spirit Embryo Stone crashed into the Umbral Heaven Ice Array like a meteor. As for the freezing blue light, it was blocked outside!

The entire ice array wildly shook and countless chunks of ice fell down. Hundreds of thousands of runes around the array formation dimmed to nothing, completely vanishing altogether!

Seeing the chance, Mo Brightmoon, Suya, and the others threw out all the remaining divine runic symbols in their hands. Heavenly fire burned in the skies and arcs of thunder twisted about. After being weakened again and again, the terrifying freezing blue light became darker and darker until it finally failed to pierce through the Umbral Heaven Ice Array.

With the cooperation of everyone here, the Undying Polar Ice's final strike had been staved off!

Chapter 1728 – Ice Egg

Chapter 1728 – Ice Egg

…

…

…

“They blocked it, they really blocked it!”

Seeing the freezing blue beam of light scatter into sparkling motes in the sky, everyone within the Umbral Heaven Ice Array was excited. They felt as if they had just taken a round trip through the gates of hell.

Even though none of them had much strength left over, they were burning with incomparable joy in their hearts.

“Great! Awesome!”

Dragonscar gripped his fists together. Even though his entire body was soaked in blood, there was a stupidly happy smile on his face.

He was certainly happy. This was because even until the end, Sheng Mei hadn’t burnt any of her soul force. She only used up some origin energy and would be able to fully recover after some rest, not suffering any side effects at all. There wasn’t anything more important than this.

“This Lin Ming is really terrifying!”

Dragonscar looked up at Lin Ming in the sky. At this time, he had opened two Dao Palaces and the power of thunder and fire was twined around his entire body – he gave off a noble and striking momentum.

He originally thought that Lin Ming wouldn't help in defending, but at the very end it was because of Lin Ming that they were able to cross this most difficult pass.

It wasn't just Dragonscar that was thinking this, but many others had this thought. Far away, the eight trial challengers were also staring at each other in blank dismay. They had all fled from danger because they didn't believe this battle could be won.

They didn't believe that Lin Ming would be able to crush the ice egg and they thought it was unlikely that Sheng Mei would be able to block the Undying Polar Ice's attacks. Rather, it should be said that even if Sheng Mei was able to block the Undying Polar Ice's attacks, there was still a high chance they could die here.

In this sort of situation, it was a completely reasonable decision for them to leave. But now, they never imagined that the ten individuals would be able to withstand the attack of the Undying Polar Ice without any deaths.

Hu hu hu –

Cold air recklessly howled. 100,000 feet high in the skies, although the Undying Polar Ice's final strike had consumed most of its strength, it still hadn't faded from the world. It continued to maintain its Ice Phoenix form, but its body was extremely blurry.

"You stupid ants, you have truly provoked my anger! Originally I didn't want to kill you, but now I have changed my mind! All of you can die here!"

The Undying Polar ice roared, its terrifying voice resounding through the world, horrifying!

Bang!

With a loud explosion, the Undying Polar Ice's ice energy poured into the earth. The glaciers covering the ground began to thicken at an alarming rate!

"What? How can the Undying Polar Ice still have such terrifying strength left?"

Everyone was shocked. They had no idea just what the Undying Polar Ice was doing.

And at this time, the continually quiet Sheng Mei's complexion changed. She finally understood what the Undying Polar Ice was doing. It had indeed consumed too much energy so it was impossible for it to send out another wave of attacks, but it was still able to use the last dregs of its strength to freeze the space node connecting the fourth and fifth levels!

She said, startled, "Be careful, it is sealing up the space channel to return to the fourth level!"

Sheng Mei's words shocked everyone present. The Undying Polar Ice wanted to cage them in here!

The fifth level had a multiple space node. If a trial challenger gave up on killing the fifth level's Overlord, they could retreat to the entrance. After a period of time, the space node would atomically expand and open, forming the channel from the fifth level to the fourth level.

Otherwise, if a trial challenger was able to strike down the fifth level's Overlord then another spatial node would open, forming the channel from the fifth level to the sixth level.

The Undying Polar Ice used its power to freeze the space node, thus postponing the opening of it. And, in a mere half incense stick of time, the Undying Polar Ice would complete its second nirvana and reform into the Undying Inferno!

Once this happened, it would be impossible for the exhausted group to block its attacks once more!

"Damnit!"

“This beast wants to lock us in here!”

Mo Brightmoon, Moonpond, Dragonscar, and the others with them remained calm. As for the eight trial challengers that had withdrawn to the entrance, they felt their hands and feet turn numb. Once the Undying Polar Ice completed its nirvana, the consequences could be imagined.

And at this time, Sheng Mei was tranquilly sitting in the void, her eyes still emitting a mystic light. A black vortex appeared above her head, absorbing and condensing heaven and earth origin energy so that it wildly merged into her body.

At this time, she was incomparably calm. No matter what happened, she had to restore her strength as soon as possible. Only then would she be able to deal with the ever-shifting situation.

The Undying Polar Ice’s cold eyes focused on Lin Ming. It could clearly feel the killing intent on Lin Ming; this human would surely attack him.

“Hahaha! Human, you want to kill me?

“Interesting! How interesting! Then let me see what methods you have to kill me! You can either forcefully withstand my nine nirvanas or you can pierce through my nirvanic egg. But, in my nirvana state as the Undying Polar Ice, my shell’s defense is even greater than it is as the Undying Inferno! I will wait for you, hahahaha!”

The Undying Polar Ice recklessly laughed. Its body grew smaller and smaller as energy dissipated from it.

Lin Ming’s eyes were icy cold. His aura erupted. The terrifying strength unsealed from the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone still roiled within his body, wanting to break free from him.

He sunk his energy into his inner world. A large tree began to rapidly bloom behind Lin Ming – this was the Heretical God Tree.

But this time, it didn't seem like a phantom of the Heretical God Tree at all, but a true and sublimely supreme divine tree!

This divine tree was covered with ancient marks, as if an Azure Dragon had forcefully grasped onto the bark. The branches and leaves that decorated the crown were lush and verdant, each one showing off a differently styled leaf.

Some leaves billowed with flames, emitting the source Fire Laws of Heavenly Tribulation.

On other leaves lingered arcs of crackling thunder, roaring and crackling.

This was the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation that lived in harmony above the Heretical God Tree. These two powers of heavenly tribulation emitted an inexplicably powerful pressure, causing the surrounding space to distort as if it would collapse at any moment.

The Heretical God Tree had appeared in its true form and the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation also displayed its true meaning. Faintly, plumes of enchanting flames mixed together with arcs of lightning, like dragons of thunder and fire twining together. This was the peak manifestation of Lin Ming's understanding of the Heretical God Force.

The powers manifested once more and rose. Within the heavenly tribulation flames, there even seemed to be fire phoenixes crying out and stretching their wings. Within each flame there was a phoenix phantom dancing about like a captivating dream.

The Undying Polar Ice stared at the Heretical God Tree behind Lin Ming, a sneer forming on its face. Finally, its energy was completely exhausted. The endless power of Ice Laws between the heavens and earth collapsed and the blue light swirling in the world also dimmed.

In the next moment, the cold energy within the world seemed to be summoned by something. It wildly rushed towards the Undying Polar Ice, as all the power of Ice Laws retracted into the body of the Undying Polar Ice.

Hum –

Ripples of cold energy crazily circled in the air, forming a giant blue vortex. At the center of this vortex, all of the cold energy gathered together, becoming increasingly thick and tangible as it formed a massive ice egg!

This ice egg was like an oval-shaped ice mountain. All around it, runes shimmered like stars as a mystical bright luster emitted from it.

Lin Ming against the ice egg!

Dark strong winds howled. Lin Ming's black clothes flapped in the endless ice storm, his hair dancing wildly around him.

Everyone held their breath. In their field of vision, it was like the only image left was Lin Ming's figure!

This was the final strike. No matter how magnificent or wondrous the previous battle had been, if this final strike were to fail then everything would have been for naught. Everyone here would die…

Then, a spear appeared in Lin Ming's hand.

This spear appeared so abruptly that no one noticed where it had come from; it was like it had always been in Lin Ming's hands.

The spear was pitch black without the slightest sheen to it. The spear tip was cold and sharp, bringing with it a primal and boundless aura. The fierce aura seemed as if it were a dragon itself being born within it.

"What spear is that?"

Everyone was shocked. Even from far away they could still feel the horrifying aura on the spear, rendering them unable to move.

They could intuitively feel that this spear was peerless. It certainly must have cut down countless powerhouses during its existence, many of them characters that were unimaginably fearful!

Lin Ming took a deep breath and closed his eyes, feeling the murderous intent within the Black Dragon Spear. With his current strength, he was unable to incite the full power of the spear.

Just attacking once with the Black Dragon Spear would use up the majority of Lin Ming’s strength, so this wasn’t a weapon he could bring out whenever he wanted. For him to bring out this Black Dragon Spear now indicated that he was ready to engage in a final life or death struggle!

With another deep breath, Lin Ming’s body seemed to darken. A thick smell of blood gushed out from within Lin Ming’s body, as if an ancient death god were being born from within him.

His entire figure emitted a strange blood red mist, thick and dense. Dragon scales emerged from beneath Lin Ming’s skin, wrapping around his entire body.

His hair lengthened, growing long. His black hair seemed to become dyed with fresh blood, becoming a vivid bright red.

Pa pa pa!

His joints crackled and popped. His body rose, becoming taller.

Red flames seemed to cover his face, condensing into a blood red mask of curse seals. A mystic power of thunder lingered around his body, turning darker until it became a pitch black armor of thunder that constantly flashed around him.

Lin Ming had awoken the Asura blood within his body, undergoing a body metamorphosis to become an Asura death god!

“What kind of power is this!?”

As everyone looked at Lin Ming who had body metamorphosized into an Asura, and also feeling that overwhelming killing intent that poured forth from his body, even those that were standing far away felt their breath catch in their throats.

The Asura blood contained billions of years of essence of the Asura Road Master. Now that Lin Ming stimulated it, his blood vitality roared to the limit of extreme. To all martial artists, this aura aroused an instinctual fear from within them.

Lin Ming stepped forwards. The void seemed to turn into firm ground beneath his feet, even cracking apart.

Dong. Dong. Dong.

Step by step, Lin Ming became increasingly fast as he hurtled towards the ice egg.

The thunder and fire heavenly tribulation atop the Heretical God Tree was galvanized. It flowed into the Black Dragon Spear, causing countless star-motes of thunder and fire to swirl above it.

Chapter 1729 – Exterminating the Undying Polar Ice

Chapter 1729 – Exterminating the Undying Polar Ice

…

…

…

As Lin Ming rushed towards the ice egg, a sharp phoenix cry split through the endless skies.

A blazing flame phoenix rushed out from the crowd of people, flying straight towards Lin Ming.

"That is…!"

Everyone was shocked.

"That is Xiao Moxian!"

Some people recognized Xiao Moxian, but they didn't dare to believe it was her. At this time, even Xiao Moxian had undergone a body metamorphosis into a Dark Phoenix, just like Sheng Mei's Ice Phoenix contract beast.

Both of these two phoenixes were of royal lineage!

However, Sheng Mei's was an Ice Phoenix that was covered with ice whereas Xiao Moxian was a Dark Phoenix, her entire body burning with brilliant flames!

Xiao Moxian cried out, her call echoing in the heavens. Pitch black flames shot out from her body, rolling up into the sky. After completing two nirvanas, she had gained the ability to transform her body into that of a True Phoenix!

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian flew through the air together, their speed becoming faster and faster, their two figures nearly fusing into one!

Annihilating nirvanic flames completely poured into Lin Ming's Black Dragon Spear.

The Black Dragon Spear's spear light spread a thousand feet further. The tip of the spear point burned with nirvanic flames, perfectly melting together with the power of thunder and fire heavenly tribulation as it tore through space.

Lin Ming gathered all of his potential for this strike. He opened the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, bringing with him billions and billions of jins of strength. In addition to the Asura blood having been awakened within him, his body felt as if it contained the strength of infinite dragons. Even if a star were to stand in front of Lin Ming, it would be shattered all the same!

Such terrifying strength all rested within the dim Black Dragon Spear. As if the spear itself sensed Lin Ming's monstrous killing intent, it began to hum with excitement.

Ka ka ka!

It was like a black dragon soaring through the world. The thick mist around the ice egg was constantly torn apart by the Black Dragon Spear. The power of Ice Laws that gushed out was able to freeze anything, but even that was forcefully obliterated by the billowing power of thunder and fire!

The Black Dragon Spear itself weighed more than 10 billion jins. Under such a high speed impact, its destructive might could be imagined! Moreover, the power of thunder and fire that twisted around the shaft was able to suppress the Ice Laws to the limit. With Lin Ming's powerful mortal bodily strength added on as well as the blood-drenched mystic strength of the Asura blood, the power behind this strike had reached the pinnacle!

Endless power of Fire Laws, endless power of Thunder Laws, Lin Ming's strike was like a bombardment of endless blood red meteors and falling bolts of thunder.

Rumble rumble rumble!

At this time, Lin Ming's entire body roiled with inexhaustible power. His entire body had become a blazing meteor, carrying with it an indescribable momentum. Finally, he smashed into the ice egg!

In one potent strike, reckless heavenly tribulation fire, nirvanic flames, destructive thunder tribulation, all of it attacked every inch of the ice egg! The entire ice egg was instantly surrounded by burning flames and raging thunder!

Thunder and fire collided. Each collision could turn endless mountains and rivers to ashes, could evaporate entire seas!

Underneath this strength, the seemingly inexhaustible Ice Law runes atop the ice egg began to tremble and break down!

Ka ka ka!

With a frightening sound, atop the ice egg that possessed incredible defensive powers, a crack appeared!

The Asura Heavenly Dao Laws that Lin Ming practiced gave him an unbelievably sharp insight. Even through the savage and tyrannical onslaught of energy, he was still able to instantly deduce the location of this almost imperceptible crack!

The Ice Laws lingered around this crack, wanting to fuse the crack back together.

But, how could Lin Ming give it such a chance?

In that moment, a sharp light burst out from Lin Ming's eyes. The Black Dragon Spear seemed to become a flaming black dragon, directly crashing into that singular point on the ice egg!

Kacha!

With a loud explosion, the crack was torn open!

Lin Ming grit his teeth, suppressing the severe pain in his arms and brought the Black Dragon Spear crashing down again and again!

This Black Dragon Spear was over 10 billion jins heavy. Just by wielding it, the inertia alone would cause a massive pressure to rip through Lin Ming's body. No matter how powerful Lin Ming's body was, he still couldn't withstand the burden and his muscles constantly tore.

Blood rained down, gas to the flames.

Lin Ming's eyes were blood red. Spear after spear, the crack grew longer and longer beneath this unprecedented barrage.

"This… this…"

Those trial challengers looking far off from the distance were shocked. Even Sheng Mei had stopped restoring her wounds, her bright eyes staring straight at Lin Ming, unblinking.

This high intensity barrage continued unabated. Every strike could easily slaughter a World King.

It was hard to imagine that this was the attack of a junior.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Within the horrifying explosions of energy, wild dragon roars and resounding phoenix cries wove together!

The ice egg cracked apart more and more. And at this time, Lin Ming could already feel the cruel soul sealed within the ice egg howl at him in warning.

This was the Overlord of the fifth level – the soul of the Undying Polar Ice!

Lin Ming diabolically grinned. He had already become an incarnation of an Asura, his killing intent blotting out the world like a demon. This cold and gloomy soul aura was only able to arouse his killing desires!

You want to run away?

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He could feel the soul trying to escape deep into the earth!

He certainly remembered what happened when Sheng Mei attacked the Undying Inferno's egg. Although the egg shell had cracked, the soul had fled underground where it slowly bred into the Undying Polar Ice.

How could Lin Ming allow the same mistake to occur twice?

One difference between him and Sheng Mei was that he thoroughly understood the Asura Laws. He had long been prepared for this.

In an instant, countless Asura runes shot out from Lin Ming's body, locking in the space for 1000 feet and blocking every possible escape direction of the Undying Polar Ice's soul.

In the final trial, no matter where, the Asura Laws were the supreme Laws, the ultimate adjudicator; it was a simple task for him to imprison the Undying Polar Ice's soul that had lost all strength.

"Human, you are seeking death!"

The Undying Polar Ice was enraged. Its cruel and oppressive aura spread into Lin Ming's mind, but Lin Ming only sneered, "The one seeking death is you!"

Lin Ming burnt 20% of his blood essence with the Gate of Life. Then, his strength erupted once more. With his bloodstained arms, he moved the Black Dragon Spear and stabbed it into the ice egg's crack, thrusting straight ahead.

"Die!"

Lin Ming's voice was cold and his expression was ferocious and callous. In that moment, dragons of fire and thunder burst out from the Black Dragon Spear, rumbling into the ice egg!

Bang – Bang – Bang –

The power of thunder and fire detonated. The inside of the ice egg was turned into a cataclysm of flames. The Undying Polar Ice's soul was caught up in this explosion. It sent out heart-tearing screams as it was burned and refined by these flames!

"Human, you and I cannot live under the same skies!"

"Then I'll suppress you and take away your chance!" The Asura-metamorphosized Lin Ming wildly laughed. He shot out the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, locking onto the Undying Polar Ice's soul within the ice egg.

At the same time, the ice egg was unable to withstand the series of explosions occurring within it, and it began to blast open. The massive ice egg started to collapse!

Crash! Bang! Bang!

Endless sheets of ice fell down, covering the ice and even submerging Lin Ming.

In that moment, the Undying Polar Ice had been killed by Lin Ming!

Chapter 1730 – Souls of Ice and Fire

Chapter 1730 – Souls of Ice and Fire

…

…

…

After the ice egg shattered, the scattered pieces of crushed ice were swallowed up by the power of thunder and fire.

Bang!

With a loud blast, the heap of ice exploded, sending countless chunks of ice flying everywhere!

Lin Ming raised the Black Dragon Spear and rushed out from the ice debris. His entire body was covered with blood that was nearly frozen over.

There were countless wounds on his body and muscles all over him were torn. His blood vessels had burst apart in many areas. These wounds weren't caused by just the Undying Polar Ice, but from the fact that his body couldn't withstand the burden of the Black Dragon Spear.

The Black Dragon Spear was simply far too heavy. Moreover, the energy needed to move it was mind-boggling. For Lin Ming to destroy the ice egg in a short time, he was forced to overdraw his energy.

At this time, the power from the Asura blood had yet to leave him. He was still in his Asura body metamorphosis state, looking like a death god that crawled out from the blood ponds of hell.

Bang! Crash!

Behind Lin Ming, as the Undying Polar Ice died, massive glaciers began to split apart, melting in raging floods and waterfalls that flooded the land.

Crazy waves soared into the sky. But because there was an invisible force field around Lin Ming, none of the water was able to approach him. It simply swept away from his side.

Seeing this scene, all of the trial challengers held their breath, unable to summon any words.

After Lin Ming activated the Asura blood, his aura was far too powerful. That invisible force field surrounding him gave off a deeply oppressive feeling!

Besides Sheng Mei, even Dragonscar, Soulsky, and the others also felt themselves panting for breath as they faced Lin Ming's Asura slaughter energy.

As for those eight trial challengers in the distance that had fled earlier, they were even more despondent.

When the ice egg exploded, their chins nearly hit the ground. They couldn't believe that the fifth level Overlord, the existence that even Sheng Mei couldn't kill, had been slain by Lin Ming!

How could this have happened?

"The Undying Polar Ice died like this?"

Although the truth was before them, the eight of them still found this reality hard to accept.

This was because they had run away earlier.

Even if the Undying Polar Ice was slain, it had nothing to do with them!

“Maybe… maybe it hasn’t died… Sheng Mei also destroyed the Undying Inferno’s phoenix egg, although she didn’t do it so thoroughly like Lin Ming did. Even so, the Undying Inferno was reborn later. Perhaps the Undying Polar Ice has temporarily gone underground… and it hasn’t died…”

A trial challenger said with unwillingness in his voice. He didn’t want to think that after he had wavered and left earlier, this junior Lin Ming that was far younger than him had completed the seemingly impossible trial, and he had nothing to do with it!

If he couldn’t obtain something, he definitely didn’t want others to.

But at this time, the eight people suddenly shook. A message had popped up in their minds, informing them that the fifth level trial had been completed.

The fifth level Overlord had really died!

And their completion percentage hadn’t increased at all.

“It’s over. We…”

The eight trial challengers stood there in a daze, their eyes losing focus.

The requirement to enter the sixth level was to participate in striking down the fifth level Overlord. But as for them, they had withdrawn in the final stage and had excluded themselves from the trial. In other words, their journey in the final trial had come to an end.

They had missed out on entering the sixth level!

As they realized this, they regretted it to the point of their intestines turning green.

This was the final trial’s sixth level!

The sixth level – just what sort of concept was that?

It was a billion year legend. In all that time, no one had set foot in it!

If they could have stepped foot in the sixth level and returned to their sect then the honor they would have received, the glory, the worship of countless young disciples…

They would also have received the rewards and lucky chances of crossing the fifth level. It might even have changed their lives and affected their future achievements…

Thinking of this, not only did their livers hurt, but their hearts hurt, their balls hurt, and they felt sick as their intestines twisted into knots.

The eight of them stared at each other in dismay, wanting to smack themselves with both hands…

Because of their fear, they had missed out on a once in a lifetime opportunity!

At this time, Sheng Mei, Dragonscar, Brightmoon, and the others had all landed from the sky and were running towards Lin Ming.

They had also received the message from the final trial. Although they had confirmed that the Undying Polar Ice had died, Dragonscar, Fanny Fafa, and the others still weren't able to regain their composure yet.

Although the Undying Polar Ice had been killed because they all worked together, the truth was that besides Sheng Mei, Lin Ming, and Xiao Moxian, the others only played a limited role in the battle.

In particular Lin Ming – his performance was far too spectacular!

Dragonscar watched as Lin Ming's body metamorphosis gradually faded away, his scales vanishing into his body. He was at a loss for words. When he first saw Lin Ming he had despised him due to a sense of superiority. But now, he gulped and obediently stood behind Sheng Mei, not daring to say anything.

Originally Lin Ming was supposed to manage offense while Sheng Mei managed defense. But in the end, Sheng Mei had overdrawn her own soul force, causing her to leak blood from her lips, and even during this time Lin Ming was still sitting in meditation, adjusting his condition. Dragonscar had certainly seen this and he felt that all of the advantages were taken by Lin Ming and the price Sheng Mei had to pay was far too high.

But during the Undying Polar Ice's final attack, the originally meditating Lin Ming suddenly woke up and played an important role in defending against the strike. If it weren't for Lin Ming then Sheng Mei would have burnt her source soul force and the others might have died.

What Dragonscar felt most unbelievable was that even after Lin Ming moved to help Sheng Mei defend, he still managed to kill the Undying Polar Ice. Such a heaven-defying method truly left Dragonscar no choice but to deeply admire him.

No matter which race it was in the 33 Heavens, all of them admired powerhouses. Dragonscar's superiority originally came from Sheng Mei. He didn't believe that there was anyone in existence that could compare to her. At just the sixth revolution, there was nearly no one that could rival her talent beneath the True Divinity realm. As for the seventh, eighth, and ninth revolution, it was even more difficult to imagine.

But now, Lin Ming's appearance had far surpassed Sheng Mei. The natural feeling of superiority in Dragonscar's heart was also destroyed.

In the future, Lin Ming would rise to heights that were hard to imagine. It was simply impossible to judge with Dragonscar's current experiences.

"Lin Ming…"

Sheng Mei looked at Lin Ming and took a deep breath. Her voice was faint and ghostly, "I originally thought that humanity's destiny had come to an end… but I never imagined that after 3.6 billion years, someone like you would appear. Perhaps… you are humanity's good fortune…"

Sheng Mei's word seemed like high praise towards Lin Ming, but Lin Ming heard something else. A light shined in his eyes. He asked, "Is humanity's destiny already exhausted?"

Sheng Mei's words concealed a hidden meaning. That was that she believed humanity would likely perish in the great world calamity!

"Empress, are you saying that humanity will perish underneath the saints?"

Lin Ming pressed the question.

3.6 billion years ago, another great calamity descended. The barriers separating the 33 Heavens weakened, vanished, allowing alien races to invade. During this great calamity, humanity's destiny became increasingly weak. True Divinities died, geniuses were on the wane, and compared to the saints and spiritas, humanity became far, far weaker.

Now, if humanity couldn't overcome this great calamity, it was likely that they would perish.

Sheng Mei didn't directly respond. Instead, she vaguely said, "Within birth there is death, the cycle of samsara turns again and again. Nothing is permanent. The Heavenly Dao can change… even stars can burn out, much less lives and races. 10 billion years ago, the ancient races were magnificent beyond compare, but even they vanished without a trace… in the river of time, the destruction of humanity isn't strange at all…"

Sheng Mei seemed as if she was speaking of eternal truths, but within her words, Lin Ming could hear a little regret and unwillingness. Sheng Mei, was she really willing to enter samsara and die?

Inexplicably, Lin Ming thought of the Spiritas Holy Scripture and the Stone of Eternal Life recorded within it…

Eternal Life. To a martial artist, these two words were an irresistible temptation…

“The destruction of humanity isn’t strange at all…?” Lin Ming silently mumbled to himself. He didn’t have an answer to Sheng Mei.

He would not allow humanity to be destroyed in this great calamity. The human race was his roots. Without the roots, how could the leaves survive?

As Sheng Mei and Lin Ming were speaking, the cold energy that the Undying Polar Ice gathered had already dissipated. The entire fifth level had been restored to the state it was at during the beginning. The glaciers melted, turning into lakes. Even the temperature turned back to normal.

And above the largest lake, a gray wheel was slowly floating. Atop this wheel, the phantoms of countless demons appeared. It looked evil to the extreme.

The gazes of all trial challengers were focused on this wheel. This was Lin Ming’s Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

And within the center of the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, there were two masses of soul fire. One soul fire was flame red and emitted a terrifying heat. The other was ice blue and exuded a chilling cold.

Extreme heat and extreme cold, these two masses of soul fire were sealed within the center of the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, peacefully coexisting with each other.

Without needing to think, one could tell that these two masses of soul fire were left behind by the fifth level’s Overlord. The flame red soul fire was the Undying Inferno and the ice blue soul fire was the Undying Polar Ice!

These two masses of soul fire were rare treasures of the fifth level Overlord!

For a time, everyone looked at Lin Ming. As the one who had finally struck down the fifth level Overlord, they would have to ask Lin Ming how he wanted to distribute these two soul fires.

Lin Ming reached out his hand. The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel flew back to him, spinning above his palm.

Seeing the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, Sheng Mei's hands slightly moved. She could feel that this Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel contained all sorts of mysterious changes, and she was unable to see through any of them for a time.

This cultivation method was obviously extraordinary.

Lin Ming gently touched the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, guiding the ice blue soul fire to fly out. As the ice blue soul fire flew through the air, it left behind a path of frost, even freezing the void around it.

From far away, the trial challengers could feel a cruel and evil aura from this mass of ice blue flames. This was the Undying Polar Ice's tyrannical soul! Although its body had been destroyed, its soul hadn't died!

Lin Ming looked at Sheng Mei. With a flick of his fingers, this soul fire flew towards her.

"Soul Empress, the polar ice soul fire that the fifth level Overlord left behind will be handed over to you. The remnant will of the Undying Polar Ice is still within and it won't be easy to absorb, but I don't think this can stop the Soul Empress..."

During this trial, Soul Empress Sheng Mei's role was without doubt; she accounted for nearly half the effort. By all reasonable principles, half of the treasures that the fifth level Overlord left should be given to her.

In particular, the Undying Polar Ice was a treasure of the extreme cold attribute. It was inestimably useful to Sheng Mei and could be considered a great lucky chance.

As for the others, it was impossible for them to absorb it.

Chapter 1731 – Lin Ming's Completion Percent

Chapter 1731 – Lin Ming's Completion Percent

…

…

…

Sheng Mei stretched out her pure white hands and cradled the Undying Polar Ice's soul fire.

She cultivated the Ice Laws and had an extremely keen insight into the power of ice. She could feel that the Undying Polar Ice's soul fire in her hands possessed an incredibly pure and potent essence of ice. Although she had attainments in the Ice Laws and had absorbed many ice-attribute heavenly materials, none of those heavenly materials were able to compare to the current soul fire in her hands.

The rewards that the Asura Road Master left behind were truly extraordinary!

Taking a deep breath, Sheng Mei received the Undying Polar Ice's soul fire. She truly did need this. With this soul fire, she had hopes that her strength would be able to rise in a short period of time. This would create a much better foundation for when she had to step into the Grand Reincarnation Art's seventh revolution.

And at this time, within Lin Ming's hands, there was still one more soul fire. This soul fire originated from the Undying Inferno and was the polar opposite of the Undying Polar Ice. The heat emanating from this soul fire was astonishing, strong enough that it seemed as if it would melt down the void.

Lin Ming's fingers moved and he formed runes of the Asura Heavenly Dao to completely seal the Undying Inferno's soul fire. Then, he flicked his fingers and this soul fire flew towards Xiao Moxian.

"Xian'er, this soul fire is for you."

The ball of flames fluttered through the air and into Xiao Moxian's hands.

Xiao Moxian's pitch black eyes shined as she stared at the soul fire in front of her. She could sense a strong attraction from it, as if its attributes were simply tailor-made for her.

Xiao Moxian's God Beast bloodline originated from the Dark Phoenix. The Dark Phoenix originally represented the idea of destruction, and this Undying Inferno's soul fire also contained the attribute of destruction!

As long as she absorbed this soul fire then she could complete her third nirvana in a short period of time, allowing her strength to further increase and break into the Holy Lord realm.

However, Xiao Moxian looked at Lin Ming and hesitated for a moment. "Big Brother Lin, you also cultivate the Fire Laws. If your heavenly tribulation fire absorbs this soul fire it will likely evolve once more. If you give this to me then there's nothing left for you.

"Moreover... you have to open the third Dao Palace soon. If I remember correctly, the third Dao Palace is the Extreme Polar Dao Palace, and you need to form the foundation of the Dao Palace with the source energies within you. Big Brother Lin's two source energies should be fire and thunder, but in order to continue you will need a top grade Thunder Source and top grade Fire Elemental to form the foundation of the third Dao Palace. This Undying Inferno's soul fire is just perfect for that."

As Xiao Moxian spoke, Lin Ming shook his head, "When I form the foundation for the Extreme Polar Dao Palace, it's enough for me to use an Empyrean level Fire Elemental and Thunder Source. As for the Undying Inferno's soul fire, the truth is that it isn't a Fire Elemental at all, and its characteristics are too strong. Trying to use it to form the foundation for the Extreme Polar Dao Palace is far too wasteful. Moreover, I would need to find a Thunder Source on the same level which would be nearly impossible.”

Currently, the soul fire in Xiao Moxian’s palm could be considered peak True Divinity in grade.

If Lin Ming used such precious flames to form a part of the third Dao Palace’s foundation, that was simply wasting the treasures of heaven.

Moreover, Lin Ming dual cultivated fire and thunder. If his attributes were imbalanced then that wouldn’t be good for him at all.

Rather, if he were to leave it to Xiao Moxian, someone who only cultivated the Fire Laws, then she would be able to display the peak potential of this soul fire!

And… the more powerful Xiao Moxian was, the more advantages Lin Ming would have when they dual cultivated.

As Lin Ming said this, Xiao Moxian didn’t decline any more. She carefully took the sealed soul fire and put it away. As for the Fire Elemental that Lin Ming needed for the third Dao Palace, Xiao Moxian also seemed to have some possible ideas…

At this time, Lin Ming turned to everyone else. He said, “I’m sorry… the fifth level Overlord only left behind two treasures. After dividing them, there isn’t anything left for you all… if I find some precious spirit treasures or materials from the next level, I will offer them to you all first. What do you think?”

Hearing Lin Ming’s apologetic tone, Fanny Fafa chuckled. “Brother Lin, where do those words come from? In truth, from start to finish we haven’t been able to help much at all, especially me. Even if I did help several times, what I used were Brother Lin’s divine runic symbols. At the end, we all had to depend on Brother Lin, the Soul Empress, and Miss Xian’er in order to bring down the fifth level Overlord. Basically, all of us have already benefited far more than we put in. Not only did our completion percentage increase considerably but we also have a chance of experiencing the legendary sixth level. If any of us were to think of divvying up your treasures at this time then our facial skin would be far too thick."

Everyone approved of Fanny Fafa's words. In the battle, they had only been able to play a limited role. It was fine for Lin Ming to be polite to them, but it went against all their morals to take advantage of the situation and demand treasures.

To be able to obtain more completion percentage was something they were more than satisfied with. As for those eight trial challengers that had withdrawn earlier and thus didn't participate in bringing down the Undying Polar Ice, all of them had despondent expressions and were sick with regret.

As everyone was discussing rewards, another piece of information appeared in their minds. And, this information was their current completion percentage after striking down the fifth level Overlord!

Immediately, everyone held their breath, their minds alert.

If everything went as expected, this completion percentage would be their final result. None of them thought they would be able to pass the sixth level.

Lin Ming also focused his mind and carefully listened to his own completion percentage. He didn't know what his performance in the fifth level was like. The final trial was just far too difficult; he didn't have any hopes that he would be able to perfectly complete it.

Lin Ming looked up and subconsciously glanced at Sheng Mei. He saw that Sheng Mei was also looking at him.

Two pairs of eyes met. Sheng Mei faintly smiled and didn't speak. It was clear that they were both curious as to what the other's result was.

The results were soon confirmed. Everyone glanced at each other, a happy expression on their faces.

“What are all your completion percentages?”

Someone couldn’t help but ask.

“I am 71%. That’s far better than what I was thinking!”

Fanny Fafa was the first to speak. As long as one could obtain at least 70%, that was an extremely good result.

If Bigflame and the Divine Void Crown Prince hadn’t been massacred by Lin Ming on the fourth level, their final completion percentage might be around 75.

Only an unrivalled genius of an entire race would be able to surpass 80%.

“Mine is 72%...”

“Mine is 70%...”

Mo Brightmoon and Suya each said. When they passed through the Gate of Laws, their completion percentage was in the thirties. After passing through the fourth level and the Divine Seal Altar, their completion percentage grew by another 26-27%. As for the fifth level, they obtained less than 10% for defeating the Undying Inferno and Undying Polar Ice. This was because their contributions to the battle weren’t too much.

Even so, they were more than satisfied. Their completion percentage from the fifth floor was like a free reward. If it weren’t for Lin Ming and Sheng Mei, they wouldn’t have received anything at all.

Everyone looked at Moonpond and Soulsky. The two of them seemed to have an amazing background and their talent was superb. Their completion percentage should be relatively high.

“77%.”

“Mine is 78%.”

The two people spoke. Moonpond's completion percentage was a point higher than Soulsky's. This was because Moonpond's supportive cultivation method had played a significant role in defending against the Undying Polar Ice.

Then, there was Dragonscar.

His completion percentage was 79, just shy of reaching 80.

"What a pity…"

Someone said.

Dragonscar shook his head. "It's not a pity at all. If Lin Ming didn't kill the Undying Polar Ice then my score would have been at most 76%…"

As Dragonscar spoke, he turned Lin Ming. What he was interested in the most was what Lin Ming, Sheng Mei, and Xiao Moxian's final scores were.

Without a doubt, all three of them should surpass 85%.

In fact, when the Undying Inferno transformed into the Undying Polar Ice, Lin Ming's completion percentage was already 85. As for Sheng Mei, she was just a tad over Lin Ming, with 86%!

This time, it was hard to imagine how high their completion percentage would go… would it possibly be at 90%?

This incredulous thought immediately flashed through many people's minds.

Everyone held their breath and there was even a bit of awe as they looked at Lin Ming. 90%, that was truly a myth! It could be said someone who was bound to become a True Divinity would reach around 85, 87, or 88%.

It was also because of this that they all faintly felt that wanting to reach 90% was just impossible.

“Xian’er, what did you get?” Lin Ming looked at Xiao Moxian.

“87...” Xiao Moxian smoothed out her hair and chuckled, revealing two cute canines as she smiled at Lin Ming.

This number left everyone sucking in a breath of cold air.

87%. Without a doubt, that was truly at the level to become a True Divinity. In other words, the young black-clothed girl that stood beside Lin Ming would become a True Divinity in the future!

Although no one was surprised by this result, to have the final trial approve and recognize this result, everyone still found it hard to accept.

This was because in their original impression, this black-clothed girl was only Lin Ming’s woman. And if his woman was so powerful, how could there still be any justice left in the world!

“Soul Empress?”

Lin Ming looked at Sheng Mei.

Sheng Mei thought for a moment and then calmly said, “I have two points more than Miss Xian’er.”

“89%!?”

Someone cried out in shock. This number was just one point from reaching 90%!

“Too great!” Dragonscar couldn’t help but grip his fists behind Sheng Mei, excited from his heart. It had to be known that Sheng Mei was only in her sixth revolution of the Grand Reincarnation Art. At this pace, she would be able to break past 90% during her seventh revolution.

As for the eighth and ninth revolution, that would be even higher!

Sheng Mei could clearly see Dragonscar's thoughts. She shook her head, saying, "You're overthinking this. Even during my seventh revolution it will be impossible for me to break this record. During the seventh revolution, if I come alone it will be impossible for me to kill the fifth level Overlord. And if I ask someone to help, our completion percentage will inevitably be divided, thus 89% is already my limit. The only exception is if… I can perfectly pass the Asura level Gate of Laws…"

As Sheng Mei spoke, everyone was left flabbergasted. Sheng Mei said she was stuck at 89%. Although this was only a single percent from 90, the truth was that this single percent was a massive gap!

Thus it could be seen just how great the disparity was from a completion percentage in the eighties and one at 90.

As everyone was thinking this, they recalled Sheng Mei's words and seemed to remember something. They all looked towards Lin Ming.

When Sheng Mei said that she would need to perfectly pass the Asura level Gate of Laws to reach 90%… hadn't Lin Ming passed through that!?

If so…

"Sir Lin, your completion percentage…"

Suya's voice trembled as she asked this.

Lin Ming took a light breath and then said, "My completion percentage is… 92%."

Chapter 1732 – The Sixth Level

Chapter 1732 – The Sixth Level

…

…

…

92%!

For a time, all the trial challengers fell quiet. Although they had already thought that Lin Ming's completion percentage would surpass 90%, after confirming this result, they still felt shocked and found it difficult to respond.

He had really surpassed 90%!

Disregarding 90, even 85 was incredibly rare in the world. Before, in the eyes of the trial challengers, 85 was a nearly unachievable goal.

"92…"

Sheng Mei took a deep breath, her eyes looking at Lin Ming. Lin Ming had surpassed 90%. This was a result she had already expected.

For the gap between 89 and 90, Lin Ming had already taken the first step and crossed it.

"You're three points higher than me… but in the Gate of Laws, your completion percentage was higher than mine by five points…"

Logically speaking, when passing through the fifth level and killing the fifth level Overlord, Sheng Mei's contributions to the battle were similar to Lin Ming's. Moreover, Lin Ming had been the one to cast out the final strike. If so, then Lin Ming's completion percentage he obtained in the fifth level should be no lower than Sheng Mei's. In other words, Lin Ming's current completion percentage should be 5 higher than Sheng Mei's, and should be at 94%.

But the truth was that Lin Ming's completion percentage was only 92. It seemed that after reaching 90, any further growth was extremely difficult. Compared to the previous times, completion percentage was twice as hard to obtain.

If this were true then Sheng Mei even suspected whether 100% completion was possible in the final trial.

Lin Ming was also having similar thoughts. He could faintly feel that perfectly completing the final trial was an impossibility.

"Sir Lin, your results are truly unprecedented since the past, and matchless in the future..." Suya looked at Lin Ming, already at a loss for what to say. She never imagined that the young divine runic master she casually encountered at the Divine Runic Masters Guild could create such a miracle.

"And this is only the fifth level. If we enter the sixth level and Sir Lin completes it, won't he reach 95%?"

If it was 95%, that was even more unimaginable.

95%...

Lin Ming thought for a moment. He felt that the sixth level might be completely different from what he had imagined. It would be likely extremely difficult to pass the sixth level, or even impossible.

"I think that... our current completion percentage is already rather high. If we pass the sixth level, then the Soul Empress will cross 90% and Xian'er also might surpass 90%. I believe that things might not be as we think..."

“Mm? Sir Lin, are you saying…” Mo Brightmoon said, her thoughts stirring.

“The sixth level… won’t be simple. No matter what it is, let’s restore ourselves before we step into the sixth level!”

Lin Ming had already become one of the main pillars of the group. His prestige in the team was no less than that of Sheng Mei.

Everyone followed Lin Ming’s idea and began to sit down and meditate. Before, they had consumed far too much energy, especially Dragonscar and Moonpond. Dragonscar’s entire body was bathed in blood and Moonpond’s spiritual sea had been damaged.

As for Mo Brightmoon, Suya, and the others, they had nearly used up all the divine runic symbols Lin Ming had passed to them. After stepping into the sixth level, their performance would depend on their own strength. It could be imagined that the sixth level was far more terrifying than the fifth. With their strength, it was unlikely they could play a large role.

Sheng Mei and Xiao Moxian chose not to absorb the soul fires yet. The soul fires left behind by the Undying Inferno and Undying Polar Ice were extraordinary treasures. If they wanted to absorb them, they would have to make a long series of preparations, wait until they were in their peak condition, and then find the safest and quietest environment they could before slowly absorbing the soul fires. This was to prevent any accidents from occurring.

The environment of the final trial was clearly not suitable to do all of this.

As the people were resting, the space nodes hidden in the fifth level appeared. An invisible power of space gathered and slowly spun, forming a purple portal – this was the entrance to the sixth level.

Looking at this mysterious space portal, everyone felt a little unsure. No one knew where this space portal went or what lay behind it.

Time slowly passed. Sitting in meditation, Lin Ming was surrounded by a faint vortex of origin energy. His body that had been torn by wielding the Black Dragon Spear began to regenerate at a visible speed. His muscles grew back and his meridians recovered. In just two hours, Lin Ming had healed his outer wounds.

After another four hours, Lin Ming had adjusted his body to its peak condition. He slowly opened his eyes, "Have you all recovered?"

"I have no problem."

Sheng Mei's voice was indifferent. Out of everyone here, Sheng Mei had consumed the most strength but her restoration speed was mind-boggling. This startled Lin Ming. It was like Sheng Mei had no weaknesses at all.

If it weren't for her being suppressed to the early Holy Lord realm, Lin Ming had no idea just how terrifying her strength would be.

"Let's go!"

Lin Ming stood up and started to move towards the mysterious portal. They had already come this far – there was no reason to back down.

Lin Ming walked at the front, followed closely behind by Xiao Moxian. Then there was Sheng Mei and Dragonscar, followed by Mo Brightmoon and her group. Finally, there was Moonpond and Soulsky.

The space portal was right in front of them. The deep purple surface of the portal was like a mirror. Lin Ming didn't slow down; he stepped right in.

In that moment, Lin Ming felt space and time distort around him. He couldn't see anything clearly and even his own consciousness seemed to be isolated.

It was like a long time had passed but also as if everything had happened in an instant. The surroundings became clear once more. Lin Ming discovered that he had arrived in a completely independent space. As he looked behind himself, he saw that Xiao Moxian, Sheng Mei, and the others that had followed him had all disappeared.

"Mm? I'm the only one left..."

Lin Ming was startled. Could this sixth level be a solo trial?

All of these thoughts flooded Lin Ming's mind. He carefully examined his surroundings and discovered he was standing in a chaotic space with mystical Law lines all around him.

There was no earth beneath his feet and it looked like he was standing on the void. But, it seemed incomparably real and it was also extremely flat.

"This is..."

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. He could see that not too far away, there was a massive ancient bronze book that was covered with plain and simple words.

Seeing these writings, Lin Ming's heart shook. These words were... Asura Sutra: Volume Two!

"Asura Sutra!"

Lin Ming's eyes brightened. Through the years on the Asura Road, a great deal of his accomplishments were in part thanks to the Asura Sutra. But, Lin Ming only knew the first volume of the Asura Sutra and his understandings were incomplete. Now, he finally saw the second volume of the Asura Sutra in front of him.

The second volume of the Asura Sutra; just what was recorded within?

The Asura Road Master's Asura Sutra stood independent of the Laws of 33 Heavens, but also simultaneously covered the three great categories of essence, energy, and soul.

The first volume of the Asura Sutra that Lin Ming had seen before focused on the body transformation system. What could this one be?

Lin Ming took a deep breath and carefully walked up to the Asura Sutra.

It seemed that… the sixth level didn’t have a test, but was a reward level for trial challengers!

As he thought about it, the first and second levels of the final trial had been tests that were filled with perils.

As for the third level, there weren’t any dangers there, only rewards.

At the same time, the fourth and fifth levels were also filled with dangers. Following this pattern, the sixth level should be a rewards level.

“If my reward is the Asura Sutra, what rewards will the others obtain?”

As Lin Ming stepped in front of this ancient bronze book, he saw that it was exactly the same as the one he saw in the bronze immortal temple within the God Beast Tomb Array.

This ancient book had stood tall here for countless years. It was a heaven-shaking sacred text that recorded the secrets with which the Asura Road Master surpassed the realm of True Divinity.

However, with Lin Ming’s current level, there were far too many areas within the first and second volumes of the Asura Sutra that he couldn’t understand.

He could only remember these things and then slowly digest them, perceiving them over time…

Lin Ming bowed towards the ancient book. Just as he was about to open the cover, he discovered that behind this ancient book was also a bronze coffin.

This bronze coffin was wrapped with thick chains and carved on the surface of it were the images of numerous fierce demons. All of them seemed lifelike, as if they could leap out at any moment.

Chapter 1733 – ‘Divine’

Chapter 1733 – ‘Divine’

…

…

…

“Bronze coffin…”

Looking at the ancient bronze coffin behind the bronze book, Lin Ming’s first thought was of the ancient bronze coffin within the immortal temple and the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone that had been sealed within.

Could there be a similar avatar within this one?

This thought inevitably crossed Lin Ming’s mind. The Asura Sutra that the Asura Road Master created covered a breadth of Laws that was far too vast to imagine. Inevitably, there was a situation where there were Laws that were not suitable for the Asura Road Master to cultivate.

The 33 Heavenly Daos were all-encompassing. There were cultivation methods more suited for the spiritas and cultivation methods more suited for the saints.

No matter how heaven-defying one’s physique was, it was impossible for a singular person to cultivate all Laws.

Thus, even if one spent 100 million years cultivating certain Laws, one still might not have any noticeable achievements in them.

Even the Asura Road Master wasn't able to avoid such a situation. Thus, the Asura Road Master created a system of avatars. By using his source essence, energy, or divine, or even all sorts of heavenly materials, he could refine his own avatar. Then, he could divide a part of his consciousness and seal it into the avatar.

These avatars could be used to cultivate Laws that his main body couldn't. When these avatars reached large success in their cultivation, they could reintegrate with the main body. When all of these avatars fused as one, he could break free from the shackles of the Heavenly Dao!

Realizing all of this, Lin Ming began to grow hot with excitement. He already possessed the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone that could cultivate body transformation Laws. Then, what sort of avatar was within this second bronze coffin?

The essence gathering system? Soul forging system?

Lin Ming didn't immediately open the ancient bronze coffin. Rather, he opened the snap lock on the bronze book and began to turn the pages.

On the title page of the ancient book, the few first words were –

"If the Heavens have no path, then I shall follow the Heavenly Dao. If the Heavens give me no path, then I shall establish my own Heavens!"

These words were drawn illustriously with magnificent strokes, like winding horned dragons. Just by looking at them one found it hard to breathe and their soul would shake.

This wasn't the first time that Lin Ming had seen such words. These words were the basis of the Asura Sutra!

Within the lines of words was a daring boldness and aggressiveness that left one filled with dread and awe. Moreover, these were not mere empty words, because when the Asura Road Master had written 'then I shall establish my own Heavens', he had indeed achieved this.

This great Asura Road was the Heavens which the Asura Road Master created.

"I wonder whether I'll be able to create my own great world after cultivating the Laws of the 33 Heavens?"

As Lin Ming was thinking this, he turned the page and began reading the text of the Asura Sutra.

Each word in the Asura Sutra seemed to contain an endless demonic atmosphere. Just by looking at it, one felt as if their soul was being sucked in.

Lin Ming even felt that the words themselves had a soul, that they were living!

This discovery left Lin Ming shaken. Perhaps, the truth was that these writings were like soul curse seals. Like the souls of dead powerhouses that were sealed within the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, perhaps these writings were similar sealed souls that were then used to create words!

If this were so, this Asura Sutra Volume Two would have been written using the souls of billions and trillions of powerhouses…

Thinking of this, Lin Ming felt a tinge of fear and apprehension.

If this Asura Sutra Volume Two was written with souls… could this Asura Sutra Volume Two be about the 'divine'?

The Asura Sutra was comprised of three volumes. The first volume of 'essence', and if the second volume was 'divine', then the third was undoubtedly about 'energy'.

And if the Asura Sutra Third Volume wasn't here, could this mean that Lin Ming's completion percentage wasn't enough?

"Maybe… if I surpass 90% then I can read the second volume of the Asura Sutra, and in order to gain the third volume, I will need to obtain 95%, or even 100%!"

Lin Ming frowned as he thought of this.

He was feeling a bit worried. Was it really possible to pass through the fifth level and obtain perfection in the final trial?

In the fifth level, Lin Ming had Sheng Mei's help when facing down the Undying Inferno and Undying Polar Ice. Even then he had only just been able to pass. According to his previous experiences in the final trial, it was simply impossible to perfectly pass.

Moreover, his final completion percent had been 92. This number didn't seem balanced at all.

This was because after Lin Ming passed the first level he had obtained 20% completion.

After perfectly passing the Asura level Gate of Laws, his completion percent was 45.

After the fourth, it was 60%.

After the Divine Seal Altar, 75%.

Throughout these tests, he had perfectly completed them all, all the way until he arrived at the fifth level.

And after overcoming the fifth level, his completion percent was only 92.

This caused Lin Ming to feel faintly offended.

He even suspected that the truth was that it was impossible to perfectly pass the fifth level.

According to what Sheng Mei had said, the fifth level required the cooperation of a team. Perhaps this was because the fifth level was too difficult, thus everyone had no choice but to join forces.

If a person could pass through the fifth level by themselves, what completion percent would they be at? Would it be 95%?

Thinking this, Lin Ming felt more and more that he wouldn’t be able to obtain the complete Asura Sutra.

He shook his head, no longer thinking about these things. He continued to read through the Asura Sutra, withstanding the soul pressure from the words and carefully reading through them.

At the Pulse Condensation realm, Lin Ming had already developed a photographic memory. Even so, he found it incredibly straining to remember the writings within the Asura Sutra.

This was because the exterior appearance of these words wasn’t important at all. The most important factor was that every word contained its own Concept, and wanting to remember these Concepts was a massive challenge.

Moreover, there were Law lines between every word. Wanting to memorize these lines was also no trifling matter.

If Lin Ming hadn’t already perceived the contents of the Asura Sutra First Volume, wanting to memorize the second volume would have been far, far harder.

“How unfortunate… it would be much better if I could carry away the Asura Sutra.”

Lin Ming couldn’t help but develop such thoughts. Now that he read the Asura Sutra, he realized cultivation boundary was simply too low compared to the Asura Road Master’s. There were many things he couldn’t understand so he could only forcefully remember them.

As time passed, Lin Ming would eventually gain a higher understanding of the Asura Sutra. But, if he wanted to confirm these understandings he would need to compare them to the original copy of the Asura Sutra. If he tried to verify his comprehensions with memorized images, it would eventually be limited.

In this sort of situation, it was impossible for Lin Ming to obtain a thorough and complete comprehension of the Asura Heavenly Dao.

As these thoughts passed through Lin Ming's mind, he looked back at the ancient bronze book in front of him. With a little bit of unwillingness in his heart, he tried his best to push the ancient bronze book. As he expected, it didn't budge even a single bit.

This Asura Sutra couldn't be taken away.

He could only reluctantly accept this fact. Lin Ming sat down in front of the ancient bronze book, adjusting his mindset as he started to calmly comprehend the Asura Sutra Volume Two.

This Asura Sutra Volume Two focused on the road of soul forging, and page after page was filled with all sorts of mysterious Law lines and words. It was extremely arduous for Lin Ming to read through it and memorize the contents. He had to withstand the soul pressure from the words and simultaneously consume a tremendous amount of soul force.

Soon, Lin Ming felt that he had overdrawn his soul force.

Whenever this occurred, Lin Ming would use a Soul Recovery Symbol and meditate with the Divine Mist Heart Mantra. After recovering part of his soul force, he would start reading through the Asura Sutra once more.

Time slowly drifted by. Like this, ten days and ten nights passed.

Lin Ming finally read through the Asura Sutra Volume Two and barely managed to memorize the contents within.

As Lin Ming expected, the first and second volumes of the Asura Sutra were similar. In order to practice them, one needed to form an avatar.

Moreover, the requirements to create this avatar were extremely harsh. A martial artist had to split apart 30% of their divine soul to create an avatar or refine one using miracle materials of the heavens and earth.

If Lin Ming took the first path then it would cause his divine soul to be extremely weakened for a long time, leaving him in a precarious state. He would also need all sorts of heavenly materials to make up for the damage to his soul.

To the current Lin Ming, this was an unacceptable route. With the great calamity before him, he was trying every possible method to increase his own strength so how could he possibly weaken his own divine soul?

Luckily, there was the ancient bronze coffin behind the book of the Asura Sutra Volume Two. Without a doubt, this ancient bronze coffin contained a divine soul avatar left behind by the Asura Road Master.

Taking a deep breath, Lin Ming walked over to the ancient bronze coffin.

This ancient bronze coffin had lain here for billions of years, yet not a single speck of dust marred its surface.

Lin Ming remained in front of the ancient bronze coffin for a long time. Then, he deeply bowed towards it. With both hands, he gently caressed the surface of the ancient coffin and felt the thick chains that bound it.

These heavy chains were made from some unknown divine metal. Every chain link was carved with strange runes of the Asura Heavenly Dao. These runes seemed to have been washed through the infinite river of time, but the power of Laws within was still as dense as before. All around them, Lin Ming could clearly feel an invisible force field.

The function of this force field wasn't to defend against foreign invasions and attacks, but to… seal!

It was used to seal away whatever was in the ancient bronze coffin.

Just what was the soul forging avatar within the ancient bronze coffin?

Lin Ming's thoughts began to race.

In the past, the first avatar that the Asura Road Master left behind was refined from an Essence Spirit Embryo Stone. That Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was a rare world stone that accumulated heaven and earth origin energy. Only after passing through billions and billions of years and undergoing all sorts of lucky chances could such a stone be bred.

The Asura Road Master had taken this miraculous wonder stone and used it to create the essence energy avatar.

And now, the Asura Sutra Volume Two divine soul avatar – just what had the Asura Road Master used to create it?

Facing this unknown object, Lin Ming felt a bit wary. He sat in meditation for four hours, restoring himself to his peak condition. Then, he stood up.

He faced the ancient coffin and formed seals with his hands. In an instant, tens of thousands of Asura Law runes were shot out. These Asura Law runes echoed with the runes atop the chains. For a time, the entire ancient coffin radiated a dim shimmery haze.

Then, crackling sounds filled the air.

The chains binding the ancient coffin began to release themselves…

Chapter 1734 – Emperor Jade

Chapter 1734 – Emperor Jade

…

…

…

Pressing his hands over the lid of the ancient bronze coffin, Lin Ming released the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. Strength erupted within his body, rising to tens of billions of jins. With a loud rumbling sound, the dustless lid that had lain over the ancient bronze coffin for billions of years was pushed open by Lin Ming!

And as Lin Ming pushed open the cover, the entire sixth level began to shake, as if some ancient great beast was awakening here!

Ka ka ka!

The ground shook and everything began to collapse in massive tracts, revealing a pitch black abyss. And from this abyss, a massive black divine stone slowly rose out.

This is…

Lin Ming's mind shook. Unconsciously, his hands stopped pushing open the ancient coffin's lid. His eyes looked down and fixed upon that massive black divine stone. This black divine stone was clearly a sculpture, and one that he had seen before! This sculpture was the same as the giant stone sculpture in the Asura level Gate of Laws. It was a sculpture of an Asura war god!

This Asura war god grasped a black dragon spear and wore a suit of battle armor. His body was covered in dragon scales and his hair was wild and free, his momentum awe-inspiring!

Standing in front of this Asura sculpture, Lin Ming could feel a rich slaughter energy rolling off of it, making it difficult to breathe. Even his heart was flooded with tyrannical, archaic, and unbelievably cruel emotions, making one almost lose their sense of self.

In the sixth level, this Asura war god sculpture had reappeared after opening the ancient bronze coffin. Just what was this sculpture made from?

Lin Ming was somewhat startled. If the sixth level contained such a mechanic, there had to be some special significance to it.

Lin Ming's first guess was that the soul avatar that the Asura Road Master forged might be sealed within this Asura war god sculpture. But, he soon rejected this idea.

This was because after pushing open the ancient bronze coffin, he was able to sense a vast soul aura coming from within it. It was clear that the soul avatar was slumbering within the coffin.

Then this Asura sculpture...

Lin Ming pondered for a moment and walked towards the sculpture. As he carefully probed it, he faintly discovered that there was an extremely potent power of Space Laws contained within it. All of the power of space within the sixth level seemed to be attracted by the sculpture and was slowly converging towards it.

"This is... a space node?"

Lin Ming thought. There was a space node contained within the Asura sculpture!

And in the final trial, this sort of space node undoubtedly represented the entrance to the next level.

The seventh level!?

Lin Ming took a deep breath. If the sixth level was only for rewards, then going by previous experiences his completion percentage wouldn't increase here. The truly difficult to pass test would be the seventh level!

And this level would inevitably be far more difficult than the fifth level. Even Lin Ming didn't believe he had the slightest chance of passing the level. He could try to go as far as he could in the seventh level with the mindset of obtaining as much completion percentage as possible.

"The space node to enter the seventh level is actually sealed in the Asura sculpture… I wonder what the meaning behind it is? Is there something special about this sculpture?"

Lin Ming thought it was strange. It would be reasonable for the entrance to the seventh level to directly open, but the entrance was actually sealed within the Asura sculpture. Lin Ming's first thought was that this Asura sculpture might be related to some test.

In the final trial, from the second to third level he had to pass through the Gate of Laws and from the fourth level to fifth level he had to ascend the Divine Seal Altar. These two passages between levels hadn't been easy to pass at all.

Thus, if this Asura sculpture was some sort of test then it wouldn't be surprising at all.

As Lin Ming was thinking this, a strange image suddenly caught his attention.

He discovered that atop the Asura sculpture's war armor, there were three grooves lying side-by-side, and Lin Ming had seen the shape of these grooves before!

Near these grooves, there were also several lines of characters carved into the stone. These words were in the same language as the Asura Sutra.

What they said was –

"33 Heavens, Asura inheritance, passed down to the unrivalled genius, passed down to the one with great destiny, passed down to the fated one!"

"The word of Fate, to be predestined or not, if you are fated then even through the endless universes you will still find my inheritance, but if you are not fated then even if your talent is unrivalled you shall never enter the gate."

"I left behind three emperor jades of essence, energy, and divine. The emperor jades have spiritual powers, and if you are fated then they shall fall into your hands. If you lack fate then no matter how much hardship you undergo to find them you shall never succeed. Bring the three emperor jades to this land and open wide the gates to the seventh level."

Lin Ming was startled after reading these carved words beside the grooves.

The final inheritance of the Asura Road. In order to receive it, one needed to be an unrivalled existence, possess a great destiny, and also be the fated one. A trial challenger required all three of these characteristics in order to obtain the approval of the inheritance.

The first several levels of the final trial, including the entire test that was the Asura Road itself, could be considered repeated verifications of a trial challenger's talent and destiny. But in order to go from the sixth level to the seventh level, one needed 'fate'.

The manifestation of the symbol of fate was to possess the three token emperor jades of 'essence, energy, and divine'!

Only by simultaneously possessing all three emperor jades could one enter the seventh level.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and retrieved two jade pendants from his spatial ring. Rather, it was more accurate to say that there was one complete jade pendant and one fragment.

This complete jade pendant had been obtained by Lin Ming in the Hunter game. Because of this jade pendant, Lin Ming had been able to enter God Burying Ridge, fall into Tragic Death Valley, and escape from there and continually pass through absolute killing zones. Utilizing those killing zones, Lin Ming had brought down three top masters: Mister Zhou, Mister Ash Murder, and Tian Mingzi.

It could be said that Lin Ming's life was saved because of this emperor jade.

As for the emperor jade fragment, Lin Ming had bought that from Old Xue's stall at the Divine Runic Masters Guild.

Old Xue didn't know what this emperor jade fragment was, but his intuition told him it was unusual. Yet no matter how much he studied it over the years, he had never been able to discern its secrets. Finally, he thought it was some Empyrean spirit treasure fragment and sold it to Lin Ming.

Because this emperor jade fragment had too many flaws in the Asura dao patterns within it, it wasn't too valuable. Even so, Lin Ming kept it in his spatial ring.

Now, taking out these two emperor jades, they just happened to match with the shape of the grooves.

Without a doubt, he would have to collect all three emperor jades and then place them in the grooves to open the portal to the seventh level.

If he couldn't, then he could only stare helplessly on at the entrance to the seventh level, but without the ability to enter.

"This sort of rule..."

Lin Ming was speechless.

According to any common logic, in the massive Asura Road, to find three tiny emperor jades was as difficult as searching for a needle in the endless ocean. It could even be called an impossible mission.

But, according to that Asura Road Master's viewpoint, these three emperor jades were extraordinary. They were emperor jades of 'fate', and possessed strange and incredible Laws. As long as one's fate reached a certain point, one wouldn't even need to look for these emperor jades, but they would take the initiative to seek out the person instead.

If one couldn’t collect all three emperor jades, then one could only say that their fate was lacking.

“My fate is lacking…”

Lin Ming looked at the whole emperor jade and the emperor jade fragment in his hands, bitterly smiling. He thought that his lucky chances were enormous to be able to obtain two emperor jades so far, but after entering the sixth level he realized that his fate was insufficient. In order to enter the seventh level he needed to obtain all three emperor jades.

Moreover… the second emperor jade in his hands was already fragmented. If it was a token left behind by the Asura Road Master, how could it break apart so easily?

This question flashed through Lin Ming’s mind. He felt that this didn’t make sense at all.

He tarried in front of the sculpture for some time. Then, after some hesitation, he tried to place the two emperor jades into their respective grooves.

These three grooves were in different shapes. Lin Ming first put in the complete emperor jade; the shape fit in perfectly.

Then, Lin Ming tried to fit in the emperor jade fragment into another groove.

At this time, something startling occurred.

When the broken emperor jade was placed into the groove, it suddenly began to emit a dim light. Countless motes of light gathered into the emperor jade, and in the next moment the emperor jade melted into liquid light that covered the entire groove.

“Mm? This is…”

Lin Ming’s eyes widened. After several breaths of time the liquid slowly solidified, forming the complete emperor jade that perfectly fit into the groove.

“The emperor jades can repair themselves?”

Lin Ming mumbled, dumbfounded.

If so, then even if the emperor jade was shattered into several fragments it would be fine as long as he could obtain one. To him, this could just reluctantly be called good news.

But… he simply had no clues about the whereabouts of the third emperor jade. Where would he be able to find it?

Chapter 1735 – Soul Spring Divine Embryo

Chapter 1735 – Soul Spring Divine Embryo

…

…

…

The appearance of the emperor jades also announced that Lin Ming's adventure through the final trial had come to an end. No matter what, it was impossible for him to find the third emperor jade any time soon.

With this, his final trial completion percentage was 92.

The truth was that in the trial of the fifth level, Lin Ming hadn't been able to perfectly complete it. In the end, he was simply too young and his comprehension of Laws was lacking. After he became a World King or Empyrean and then returned to the final trial once more, he might be able to perfectly complete the fifth level.

As these thoughts raced through his mind, Lin Ming stepped in front of the ancient bronze coffin. He placed his hand on the coffin lid, his body straining as it bent like a bow.

His muscles tensed and strength surged from his feet. Lin Ming pushed open the ancient coffin's lid once more, thoroughly opening it.

The moment that the ancient coffin was opened, Lin Ming took a deep breath and drew backwards. The Phoenix Blood Spear had already leapt into his hands.

A raging strength surged in Lin Ming's meridians. He looked at the ancient coffin with his guard up in order to prevent any possible dangers.

The heavy ancient coffin quietly lay on the invisible land of the sixth level. After being opened by Lin Ming, there was no movement from within.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment. All he saw was a pitch black aura, shimmering with glittering runes, gushing over the edges of the ancient coffin. It was impossible to see what was inside.

However, those waves of black aura caused his heart to sway. It was like there was an endless abyss contained within, bringing with it a mystical strength that seemed as if it could swallow his consciousness.

“This… what a vigorous and pure soul force!”

Lin Ming was shocked. He suddenly realized that the pitch black aura that was overflowing from the coffin like a waterfall was actually soul force so dense that it had substantialized. Even though his soul force had been tempered harder than diamonds, it was still seriously influenced. He could feel an inexplicable danger.

As if there was something dangerous lying dormant beneath that black fog.

“Open!”

After rushing all the way to the sixth level, Lin Ming’s will and decisiveness were incomparably solid. Although this black fog soul force was terrifying, it only served to stimulate his curiosity even more.

The Phoenix Blood Spear had been through countless slaughters and had been tempered numerous times by Lin Ming. Thrusting out the spear, it was like a blood phoenix flew forth. Endless mystic strength shined and even runes seemed to fall like large glowing stars.

Bang!

In a moment, hundreds of millions of spear lights were shot out at once. The fog of soul force that seemed as if it came from nether springs emitted a crackling sound. The soul force suddenly scattered as it was forcefully shaken out.

Rah!

With a sudden loud roar, a demonic energy filled with cruelty rushed out from the ancient coffin.

A pitch black demonic energy formed into a giant demon hand. It sparkled with dark metallic light and clashed with the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Lin Ming was forced backwards several steps, each step pressing down with 10 billion jins of force. Every step he took cracked open the void and his blood vitality tumbled. He suddenly found his steps unsteady.

As for that demon hand, it faded after colliding with the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Then, the contents of the ancient coffin were revealed to Lin Ming.

As he clearly saw what was inside, his pupils shrank.

“This is…”

Within the coffin, a massive body appeared, one over 50 feet high that exuded the boundless pressure of a king. This body wore a black crown emblazoned with purple and gold designs as well as a black nine dragon robe.

This black purple-gold crown was covered with strings of pearls, each pearl as large as a person’s skull. Each one was formed from a demon king, each of them roaring and howling and releasing a fierce and sinister aura.

The entire purple-gold crown had countless strings of pearls covering it. In other words, there were countless demons struggling atop it.

As for the black nine dragon robe, it was flowing with nine True Dragons that were brimming with death energy. They winded about the robe, carrying an indescribably massive soul force. Occasionally, the head of a dragon would drill out of the robe, its crimson greed-filled eyes staring at Lin Ming.

"This is the divine soul avatar refined by the Asura Road Master!?" Lin Ming's eyes widened, staring unblinkingly at the nine dragon imperial robe.

Suddenly, he could feel a rush of heat within his body. The suppressed Asura blood in his body surged and Lin Ming was able to catch a glimpse of something unusual.

In the space of the final trial, the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws were ubiquitous, pervading every inch of this land.

As the Asura blood throbbed, Lin Ming was able to discover that this demon king's demonic energy body was not a true material body, but one that was created from resentment and violence-filled soul force.

And deeper within, there was an even darker and vaster soul force.

That mass of soul force was as vast as the ocean. As the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws that Lin Ming sent in to probe touched this soul force, they were immediately swallowed clean.

"This is the Nether Springs Divine Embryo… in the past when I fought the ancient races, cutting down countless rulers, the souls of these sovereigns were used by me, tempered in the Great Dao of the 33 Heavens and cast into this Nether Springs Divine Embryo.

"This Nether Springs Divine Embryo is the spirit essence avatar of the Asura Sutra's second volume. This avatar has a potent inborn soul force and its potential is limitless. It can seize the good fortune of the world and arouse the jealousy of the Great Dao… this avatar can hold life essence and follow the thoughts of the main body…"

Suddenly, a deep and mysterious voice transmitted from the deepest depths of the dark, sounding out in Lin Ming's consciousness.

Lin Ming immediately understood that this was a wisp of thought that the Asura Road Master had left behind in this space. Even after billions of years it hadn't been extinguished.

"...A portion of these ancient sovereigns' resentment has yet to be melted away... if you wish to completely obtain this divine soul avatar, you must defeat the remaining resentment of these ancient sovereigns..."

As the voice spoke to here, it scattered away.

He had to wipe out the remaining power of resentment?

Lin Ming's eyes began to shine with a fighting spirit. Every ancient sovereign had experienced hundreds of millions of years of war and slaughter. Through the endless years, they remained until now, not extinguishing even in this vast space. Just how terrifying had they been?

Facing this demon king body that wore a black purple-gold crown in front of him, Lin Ming realized it was formed from the resentment of these ancient sovereigns.

Even though it was only a tiny portion of resentment left behind by the remnant souls of these ancient sovereigns, and even though 10 billion years of weakening had passed, they absolutely had to be extremely terrifying existences.

However, if he wanted to obtain the acknowledgement of the Asura Road Master as well as this divine soul avatar, this was what he would have to do. Lin Ming's eyes blazed with a zealous fighting spirit as he hurtled himself towards that demon king body.

Bang!

The demon king body's endless demonic energy suddenly rushed into Lin Ming's body!

Lin Ming's eyes turned vacant. Countless black curse seals appeared over his body, as if dark earthworms were wriggling all over him.

His two pupils had already become black vortexes, slowly spinning around.

Lin Ming's demonic energy soared to the heavens. His body remained motionless. His fists stayed in the center of the divine soul avatar's black fog, like he had turned to stone.

But in his mind, Lin Ming had fallen into a strange demonic illusion world.

In front of him was an endlessly bleak world, like an eternal twilight was laid out before him.

Countless skeletons spread out beneath his feet, each skeleton as large as a mountain.

This entire space was filled with a fierce and cruel hostility, thick to the point that one could choke on it.

Nine black dragons of different shapes loomed on the horizon, their bodies like mountain ranges, the outline of their figures like gray clouds.

Dozens of fierce ancient sovereigns floated in front of Lin Ming, all of them exuding the pressure of a king.

Each one had a terrifying aura, able to summon wind and thunder by raising their hands or taking a step. Faint arcs of electricity shimmered in their eyes.

Without a word, the nine black dragons on the horizon as well as the dozens of ancient demon kings all hurtled towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming knew that the significance of this battle was monumental. His chest began to burn with a fervid fighting intent.

Roar!

An Azure Dragon burst out from Lin Ming's body, rising to the skies.

With a phoenix cry, a Fire Phoenix roiling with flames shot out from Lin Ming's body.

One dragon, one phoenix, they were the True Dragon bloodline and Fire Phoenix bloodline within Lin Ming's body. At this time, in the battle within his consciousness, they manifested into their source spirits.

At the same time, the Phoenix Blood Spear in Lin Ming's hand also cried out. Endless raging flames melted onto his body, contouring onto him and forming a suit of flame armor, giving him the feeling of infinite strength. This Phoenix Blood Spear was not the true Phoenix Blood Spear, but the manifestation of the Phoenix Blood Spear's artifact spirit that had yet to truly awaken.

Meanwhile, behind Lin Ming, the Heretical God Tree appeared, its boughs growing into the heavens.

This giant tree seemed as if it could tear down the world, emitting the inexhaustible power of the Heretical God Force. On every leaf, there were tiny fire phoenixes and thunder dragons flying about.

This was the spirit of the Heretical God Tree as well as the auras of heaven and thunder heavenly tribulation within Lin Ming's body.

As more and more Laws appeared like overlapping waves, the momentum of Lin Ming's soul force began to rise without end.

As the threatening ancient sovereigns rushed forth, the void split in half and two incomparably massive stars appeared.

A palace shimmered atop each of these stars, radiating a mystical power.

These were the Purple Temple Dao Palace and Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace that Lin Ming had broken through.

These two Dao Palaces, although they couldn't manifest in the outer world, they had always existed in Lin Ming's sea of consciousness, exuding a vast aura of the Heavenly Dao.

In this sort of soul force collision, the function of the two Dao Palaces to strengthen Lin Ming's body wasn't useful at all.

However, these two Dao Palaces represented the Heavenly Dao Laws and were more than enough to clash with the residual resentment of these ancient sovereigns.

Bang! Bang!

The two titanic stars gushed with endless starlight, bringing with them the two Dao Palaces as they came crashing down. Two of the mountain range-like black dragons rushed towards Lin Ming's body that was formed from soul force, but were crushed to nothing by these two Dao Palaces.

Bang –

The two stars fell onto the earth along with the ruined bodies of those black dragons.

Just how immense was the impact of this soul force? Even the dozens of ancient sovereigns, formed by resentment-filled soul force, were struck by the shockwaves. The entire world began to collapse.

The world transformed. Lin Ming felt endless waves of soul force swell towards him from all directions, entering his body.

A golden sea tumbled beneath him. They had unexpectedly arrived at his sea of consciousness.

A battle of soul force was highly risky, as well as incredibly strange.

After arriving at his own sea of consciousness, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. His body began to grow, his head reaching higher than the clouds as he became even larger than the remnant souls of these ancient sovereigns.

He formed fists with his hands and smashed out at one of the ancient sovereigns.

The Heretical God Tree behind Lin Ming also began to move. Every branch emitted strange Laws that drilled into the void, sweeping towards those ancient sovereigns.

Infinite heavenly tribulation fire gushed out into space, followed by miniature thunder dragons that wove together, forming a mystic thunderfire in space.

In that moment, Lin Ming's soul force surged. He began to engage the group of ancient sovereigns in a brutal melee, mercilessly striking them!

Chapter 1736 – The Second Avatar

Chapter 1736 – The Second Avatar

…

…

…

Immersed in the world of consciousness, engaged in combat with the remnant souls of ancient races, Lin Ming remained motionless where he was. Like this, a month passed.

Through the endless slaughter, Lin Ming's face would often turn white and many times blood would seep out of his nostrils and ears. Whenever this occurred, a blue light would flash out within Lin Ming's world of consciousness, cutting all like a divine sword. This was Lin Ming's large success blue soul battle spirit.

Ca!

The prolonged war became increasingly fierce, increasingly brutal. A massive number of ancient remnant souls were cut down and slain by Lin Ming's blue soul battle spirit!

Each ancient sovereign's resentment was sundered by Lin Ming's soul force. However, these residual resentments were extremely tenacious; even if they were sliced in two they could still stitch themselves back together and rush at Lin Ming.

In the air, pestilent black dragons flew about, their mountain range-like bodies buffeting the Heretical God Tree. Branches entangled the giant black dragons, pulling them in. If it wasn't a black dragon being torn to shreds of pitch black soul force, then it was branches and leaves being chewed up.

Countless heavenly tribulation flames and heavenly tribulation thunder crashed together, annihilating enemies and dissipating.

………

Month after month passed. Slowly, blood no longer dripped down from Lin Ming's nose and the corners of his mouth. The pure brilliance in his eyes became increasingly bright.

On this day, Lin Ming suddenly roared out loud. His statue-like body emitted a thick black gas.

This black gas shot out from every pore of his body whereupon it began to disintegrate in the void.

As it was destroyed, one could hear mournful grieving cries.

The demon king body in front of him, formed from resentment-filled souls, began to break down.

Within Lin Ming's originally motionless pupils, flashes of purple lightning shined once more. The blue soul battle spirit that was probing the divine soul avatar began to struggle again, accompanied with raging heavenly tribulation fire and endless heavenly tribulation thunder!

Suddenly, an overwhelmingly monstrous hatred began to sweep out from the black fog around the divine soul avatar.

This hatred was like a poison dragon, breaking into Lin Ming's sea of consciousness and turning his heart cold.

In this mass of chaos, a figure of black fog appeared. It shot out strands of soul force that were like snakes, attacking Lin Ming.

"Mm? This divine soul avatar also has wisdom of its own!"

Upon discovering this, Lin Ming's eyes shined with a cold light. He had even forcefully crushed the remnant resentment of the ancient divine sovereigns, so why would he be afraid of this little spiritual wisdom of the divine soul avatar?

With a loud cry, a terrifying sword of thunder and fire shot out from his eyes, slashing through the void and slicing the enemy's soul force into countless fragments.

Pa! Pa! Pa!

Several agonized cries echoed out from the divine soul avatar. Then, the last of its resistance vanished.

Lin Ming's entire body was like a cannonball as it hurtled into the divine soul avatar.

He only felt a buzzing in his mind as a dark soul force spread throughout his entire sea of consciousness.

This soul force shimmered, exuding the endless pressure of a king.

There were countless mystical runes left behind from ancient times. They were hidden in the pitch black soul force, emitting an infinite strength that shocked the heart.

Within his sea of consciousness, his life spirit began to create an avatar that resembled a stark naked Lin Ming – this was his life spirit avatar.

As this life spirit avatar appeared, all sorts of strange and mysterious strengths gushed out from its body.

This life spirit avatar rose from the ground and then rushed into the divine soul avatar, sinking into it.

It was unknown how many souls of ancient kings had been used to create this divine soul avatar, but it was surely an incredible number.

If Lin Ming wanted to fuse his vital soul force into it, it would undoubtedly be astronomically difficult.

Outside in the real world, Lin Ming fell into a petrified state once more.

Every pore of his body began shooting out arcs of black light.

Within his pupils, billions upon billions of ancient runes appeared, gathering and dissipating, gradually spreading throughout his entire body from his flesh to his bones to even his divine soul.

This process continued for an unknown length of time. Slowly, Lin Ming opened his eyes. Where his pupils had been, two pitch black vortexes swirled, revolving with soul force.

Majestic black light burst out from every inch of his body, winding about his body like wandering dragons.

In the space before him, the black lights gathered until finally all of the black light had flowed out from his body.

Slowly, someone appeared in front of Lin Ming. This figure's body was as black as ink and their smile and face were exactly the same as Lin Ming's.

However, this pitch black Lin Ming's face was dim and blurry like the rippling surface of a lake; it wasn't a clear sight.

As this black Lin Ming raised his hands, dense substantialized soul force rose about him. Mystical power surged out from his body. The body of this black Lin Ming actually exuded a dense evil aura!

Lin Ming's first avatar was the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone. Its blood vitality had been vigorous and potent, like an unrivalled war god.

But this second avatar was the Soul Springs Divine Embryo. Its body billowed with demonic energy like an ancient fierce demon. Its eyes were as dark as the abyss, seeming to absorb all light reflected within them.

If a martial artist with insufficient cultivation were to look into the eyes of this Soul Springs Divine Embryo, they would feel their soul fall into illusion, as if they were trapped in an endless abyss.

“I’ve finally succeeded!”

Lin Ming let out a long breath. By dividing a part of his life spirit as the foundation, absorbing the soul force left behind by the ancient kings, as well as using the imprisoning array formation left behind by the Asura Road Master, he had been able to form his divine soul avatar.

Because his life spirit essence was left within the divine soul avatar, Lin Ming could clearly feel that the divine soul avatar’s strength was as deep and vast as the sea; it was a truly formidable force.

With a thought, the divine soul avatar divided again and again. From one to two, from two to four… finally, 16 black Lin Mings appeared, all of them exactly alike.

The divine soul avatar had no true substantial body so it was possible for Lin Ming to have it split apart. However, each copy only had a sixteenth of the original’s power.

Lin Ming was overjoyed. As long as this divine soul avatar existed, even if his own life spirit had received heavy damage he could still absorb the power of his divine soul avatar to rapidly regenerate.

In battle, when facing the spiritas, this would be a tremendously useful ability.

It had to be known that generally speaking, one’s soul force was far more difficult to restore than the physical body. When one’s body was harmed, as long as their source essence wasn’t damaged then they could rapidly recover.

But if one were to lose their soul force, they could only practice a cultivation method like the one that Empyrean Divine Mist left behind and slowly recover.

Now, he had this divine soul avatar that possessed such exuberant soul force. In the future he could even gradually expand the divine soul avatar's strength.

In theory, the more powerful the divine soul avatar was, the more times it could divide itself.

With another thought, all of these divine soul avatars rushed into Lin Ming's body.

Puff!

As these divine soul avatars shot towards him, one of them held a halberd filled with the aura of an ancient king, boundless like a dragon, as it leapt back into Lin Ming. This caused Lin Ming to pale, his body slightly shivering.

Although there was some pain, he still had a happy expression on his face.

Just now, he had used this divine soul avatar as a weapon to attack his own soul. He wanted to test the striking power of the divine soul avatar and the results had left him pleasantly surprised. His soul force was already powerful but this divine soul avatar was still able to pierce through his defenses. Even so, because their souls originated from the same source, there were no true injuries.

In the attack just now, Lin Ming could faintly feel that there were still some anomalies left in the divine soul avatar. A tiny portion of the ancient sovereigns' remnant souls remained within. It would take some time to completely refine them.

In order to thoroughly take hold of this divine soul avatar, it would require time to completely fuse with it.

After obtaining the divine soul avatar, the black fog of soul force in the ancient bronze coffin began to dissipate.

All around, the entire world fell into a deathly silence.

Lin Ming wasn't in a hurry to leave. His eyes fell onto the mountain-like ancient bronze book before him.

"Sheng Mei said that this final trial would last for several years. Sometimes, it would be normal for someone to be stranded in a level. However, in five years, the final trial's exit would open and all trial challengers would be forcefully cast out…

"This Asura Sutra Volume Two is vast and incomprehensible, filled with an endless variation of subtle mysteries… since I cannot bring this out and there is still some time until the five year deadline to leave the final trial, I might as well stay here to further comprehend the Asura Sutra. This is my great lucky chance, I must understand as much as possible since I won't have another chance to look once I leave…"

Feeling the boundless aura exuding from the ancient bronze book, Lin Ming was filled with regret. He couldn't bring the Asura Sutra out with him and thus the amount he could learn was limited.

When it came to the Asura Sutra that was the Asura Road Master's inheritance, he didn't dare to slack at all.

Chapter 1737 – Three Years

Chapter 1737 – Three Years

…

…

…

Lin Ming had already decided his plans. Until the time within the final trial came to an end, he would stay in the sixth level and study the Asura Sutra.

In any case, this was the sixth level reward space. No matter who was at the sixth level they would have their own lucky chance. Lin Ming wouldn't be able to find Xiao Moxian for some time nor was he worried for her because the sixth level simply didn't have any dangers.

As for the seventh level, if he couldn't go there then it was definitely impossible for others.

Lin Ming focused all of his attention on the ancient bronze book. As his thoughts moved, his entire being floated up until he was a mere 10 feet away from the bronze book. He could feel the powerful soul aura emanating from the words.

As his mind was immersed in the Asura Sutra, Lin Ming could feel the words filled with a thick demonic energy rush towards him, as if each word was an imposing demon god.

Seemingly because he had refined his second avatar, when Lin Ming looked through the ancient bronze book again, he seemed to have even more insights into it. Within his sea of consciousness, the world shook as if giant demon gods had appeared. The skies roiled as all sorts of mystical runes formed Law lines around these illusory demon gods…

Then, giant golden swords appeared, slicing through the demonic energy that rolled off of these demon phantoms.

Like this, Lin Ming floated in front of the ancient bronze book. Every time he looked at a word he would have to suppress the soul force emanating from it, and then carefully ponder the endless true meanings contained within.

Years passed without sense of time.

On the words of the ancient bronze book, every divine soul aura was gradually suppressed by Lin Ming.

Each pitch black character formed a star that floated high above his sea of consciousness.

In the end, the soul force that shimmered above the ancient bronze book turned gloomy.

The entire Asura Sutra Second Volume appeared in Lin Ming's sea of consciousness.

This second volume spoke about cultivating one's soul force. Compared to the soul force cultivation method passed down by Empyrean Divine Mist, it contained far more unique and incomprehensible mysteries.

Lin Ming had already assiduously cultivated the first volume of the Asura Sutra and had formed a foundation through doing so. Now, it was twice as easy for him to cultivate the second volume while spending half the effort. The true meaning of every word, every rune's Law lines, all of them danced in the air, allowing him to gradually comprehend the essence of their mysteries.

Slowly, every mysterious word of the Asura Sutra Volume Two dazzled with strange soul force as they slowly danced around Lin Ming…

Lin Ming's mind was immersed within the boundless text. He simply didn't feel the passing of time.

At the same time, at another space within the sixth level –

A pitch black flame lotus bloomed. The flame lotus was a thousand feet wide and long and shot blazing conflagrations straight into the skies.

All of the space within a hundred miles was filled with a vast destructive fire energy.

And in the center of the black lotus, Xiao Moxian's entire body floated naked. Her black hair cascaded down her body like an inky waterfall, gently covering her perfect figure.

In the space between her eyebrows, there was a little flame spirit that seemed as if it was melting the void around it. This little flame spirit was breaking down as it constantly fused into Xiao Moxian's body.

The little flame spirit was the Undying Inferno's spirit.

Just how terrifying was the Undying Inferno? Even this tiny piece of its spirit cost Xiao Moxian over a year of time before she was able to adapt to it and start swallowing it.

As this life spirit fused into Xiao Moxian's body, runes that represented the source of fire began to appear over her skin like curse seals.

Slowly, her entire body started to project beams of pitch black light. Rippling feathers containing the aura of the Great Dao began to drill out from her body.

These black feathers shined with mystical fire runes. They began to wrap around Xiao Moxian as she slowly absorbed the Undying Inferno's life spirit.

Over time, a dark and massive egg appeared in the void, exuding a vast power of fire.

Xiao Moxian was infinitely close to her third nirvana. There was a long road separating the second and third nirvana. Of course, because she had just completed her second nirvana not too long ago, it would be impossible to finish everything at once without accumulating over time.

Before her third nirvana, she had to draw support from the Great Dao Laws of a Phoenix's nirvana, and then fuse together the Undying Inferno's life spirit with her own, concentrating them together. Then, through unending struggle, she could comprehensively master the power of fire and allow it all to become a part of herself...

Meanwhile, at another space in the sixth level.

A similar event was occurring.

However, as opposed to the incandescent sea of fire that Xiao Moxian was bathing in, in this space the entire earth had been frozen to the hardest of extremes for a thousand miles.

Soul Empress Sheng Mei was also naked, her entire body wrapped in deep blue freezing ice. Her exquisite body was curled up like a baby, her arms wrapped around her knees and her two eyes shut tight. Because of the refraction of light, it was impossible to see her sublime curves through the ice.

Vast waves of the power of ice, sparkling source Ice Laws, all of it gathered around Sheng Mei's body in flowing waves.

Between Sheng Mei's eyebrows, a tiny ice phoenix mark appeared, shining with the most source power of ice, echoing and resonating with Sheng Mei's body.

This ice phoenix mark was the remaining spirit mark left over after Sheng Mei completely refined the spirit of the Undying Polar Ice.

Tiny rivulets of black blood essence emitted from Sheng Mei's snow white skin, emanating a terrifying power as if a star was dissipating.

As it dissipated, even space itself seemed to be squeezed and shattered by the massive force.

At this moment, Sheng Mei was reaching perfection of her sixth reincarnation!

When she entered the sixth level, she already had massive accumulations and an unfathomable background. Now, with the spirit of the Undying Polar Ice that Lin Ming had given her, this gave her even more confidence to reach perfection of her sixth reincarnation.

Thus, in this incomparably safe sixth level, Sheng Mei had chosen to push herself to perfection of the sixth revolution, enhancing her bodily strength and soul force to the peak of the sixth reincarnation.

As long as she completed all of this, she could finally begin to wholeheartedly prepare for the seventh reincarnation.

In the Grand Reincarnation Art, the seventh, eighth, and ninth revolutions were the most difficult. Even Sheng Mei still lacked the confidence to face the last three revolutions.

She didn't fear that she couldn't complete the last three reincarnations, but was afraid that her accumulations would be lacking, leading to her reincarnations not reaching perfection. If this happened, this it would have a permanent negative influence on her road of martial arts and place a limit on her future achievements. But, with the Undying Polar Ice's spirit, this gave Sheng Mei far more confidence.

……….

Without the three emperor jades, no one could open the final trial's seventh level.

The seventh level was also likely the final level…

When Fanny Fafa and the others entered the space of the sixth level, they all tried to find a passage to the seventh level. But, all of them failed. Thus, unanimously, they all decided to stay in the sixth level and digest the massive harvests they had gained.

However, compared to Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, and Sheng Mei, their harvests were far less.

A completion percentage of the early seventies was simply far too different from the high eighties and low nineties.

What Fanny Fafa, Mo Brightmoon, and the others obtained were all cultivation methods of the Laws of the 33 Heavens that perfectly suited them.

……..

Time passed and the third year arrived. It was nearly time for the end of the final trial.

Lin Ming floated in front of the ancient bronze book, deep in meditation. The pitch black soul force around him had become increasingly light and blurry.

Within his mind, the words of the Asura Sutra Second Volume shimmered like black stars.

The Asura Sutra was the condensed essence of martial arts that the Asura Road Master had gained throughout his lifetime, and thus filled with infinite secrets. Although Lin Ming had read and comprehended as much as he could, all he understood was an extremely tiny part.

He wasn't able to understand the majority; he would need time to slowly and thoroughly study it.

However, the parts of the Asura Sutra that he didn't understand were all forcefully recorded in his sea of consciousness with soul force; he wouldn't forget them.

When the last word of the Asura Sutra Volume Two was recorded in his mind, Lin Ming slowly opened his eyes.

With a light flick of his sleeves, black light rippled out from him.

At this time, Lin Ming's eyes appeared exceptionally bright.

"It seems… it's almost time to leave." Lin Ming realized. After wholeheartedly cultivating the Asura Sutra Volume Two for over two years, he slowly discovered that it was much easier for him to understand the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws within the final trial, as if everything was in perfect harmony with himself.

He could faintly feel that this space was emitting a mystic strength that was repelling him.

Once this mystic strength gathered to a certain point, it would directly teleport him out. In other words, the time at which the final trial ended was rapidly approaching.

Chapter 1738 – The Final Reward

Chapter 1738 – The Final Reward

…

…

…

As time passed, Lin Ming could feel the repelling force of the Asura Heavenly Dao become increasingly intense. At the rate this force was accumulating, Lin Ming guessed he would be transmitted out from the final trial in around a day.

"I wonder how Xian'er and Mo Brightmoon are doing…" Lin Ming couldn't help but wonder. In the sixth level, everyone would have their own respective lucky chances. He had no idea what Xiao Moxian had obtained here or how much her strength increased.

As the power of space was brewing and the exit of the final trial was about to open, Lin Ming saw that in front of the ancient bronze book, countless Law lines gathered, gradually forming into a square array diagram.

This square array diagram was similar to the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel but there were many other things included. Within it shimmered countless magnificent and phantasmal lines and numerous ice crystals.

Although these lines seemed dense and incomparably complicated, Lin Ming could make out many clues from just a single glance.

His heart began to beat faster. These lines were similar to the Asura Heavenly Dao Law lines that appeared when drawing up a divine runic symbol…

Looking more carefully, the astonishment in Lin Ming's eyes became increasingly bright.

“This array diagram is not just the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, but an array diagram formed from the union of all three volumes of the Asura Sutra. Moreover, these beautiful lines are similar to those that appear when I’m drawing up a divine runic symbol…”

If he were only a divine runic master then he might be confused about seeing these crystalline lines. After all, these lines seemed extremely messy, and besides seeing some enchanting figures, everything else looked strange.

But Lin Ming’s grasp of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws had reached an unbelievable degree. He quickly looked at these chaotic crystalline lines and was able to dismantle the infinitely powerful divine runic symbol refinement process.

With how each line overlapped and crossed, they were able to produce trillions and trillions of geometric changes.

Besides being materials that hadn’t been refined into divine runic symbols, the divine runic symbol refinement lines recorded on these ice crystals could be called perfect.

“These ice crystals must be divine runic symbol wisdom in crystallized form that the Asura Road Master personally refined in the past!”

Realizing this, an ancient voice suddenly sounded out in Lin Ming’s mind.

“Ten of nine, the peak of numbers, may inherit the Asura Heavenly Array Diagram. This array diagram is formed from the three forces of grandmist energy, genesis energy, and spirit source. Take the Asura Heavenly Array Diagram and fuse it into the flesh and blood, growing a microcosm of the Asura Road within the body. Sunder the Great Dao of the 33 Heavens and wander through the 33 Heavens with the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws unhindered.”

As this information flowed into Lin Ming’s mind, he was immediately overjoyed.

He suddenly recalled that after someone was able to obtain the approval of the final trial, the most important reward a trial challenger could obtain was the ability to bring the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws back with them to the 33 Heavens.

If this Asura Heavenly Array Diagram was buried within the body, it was the same as having a mini Asura Road world within oneself. He would be able to use the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, and even the many Laws within divine runic symbols could be used in the 33 Heavens.

The divine runic arts were different from the inscription technique of the 33 Heavens. The difference lay in the fusion of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws and god runes within the inscription symbol itself.

The reason that the divine runic arts were useless outside of the Asura Road world was because the 33 Heavens' Great Dao pushed back and repelled the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws. Generally speaking, a martial artist wouldn't have the incalculably mighty ability of the Asura Road Master to defy the will of the heavens and establish their own Heavenly Dao. Thus, they couldn't use the Asura Laws.

But with this Asura Heavenly Array Diagram, Lin Ming had no need to fear the 33 Heavens' Great Dao!

Realizing this, Lin Ming no longer hesitated. His body flashed as he rushed into the center of the Asura Heavenly Array Diagram.

The moment that Lin Ming rushed in, the endless runes of the array formation swept towards him like a whirlpool, sinking into his body and rapidly shrinking within him until they completely fused into his body and blood essence.

The array diagram was formed from highly compacted source strengths of essence, energy, and divine; the impact of this fusion was astonishing.

It was like countless stars were breaking into his body. Even though Lin Ming's body had been tempered to an incredible degree, it still caused his blood vitality to tumble and seethe.

Two hours later, Lin Ming had slowly absorbed all of the Laws. Within his inner world, the Asura Heavenly Array Diagram had formed, slowly revolving.

Whorl –

Runes emitted the mystic source strength of a universe, flooding Lin Ming's inner world. Because of this, even the boundaries of his inner world began to develop and expand outwards.

In that moment, Lin Ming felt his cultivation come infinitely close to reaching the Holy Lord realm. As long as he wanted to, he could break through at any time.

And at this moment –

The complete Asura Heavenly Array Diagram took root in Lin Ming's body, completely integrating with his flesh and blood, becoming a part of him.

The vast power of the Asura Dao Laws within the final trial surged up, roaring out into the outer world.

……….

Inner Asura Road, Asura Sea –

In the broad Asura Sea, waves crashed up in smoky clouds, limitless and without end. Some people had once tried to find the end of the Asura Sea, but even if they rode top quality spirit ships and sped to the depths of the Asura Sea, they still weren't able to find its limits. As for trying to use great void shifts to traverse long distances, this sort of travel would cause one to be easily lost in the chaotic fluctuations of space and time, unable to find the exit afterwards.

It was like the Asura Sea itself represented the end of the Asura Road world. And this end blurred in with the chaotic power of space. The space here was perilous and filled with cruel dangers; there was no one able to truly arrive at its end.

Not only was the Asura Sea infinitely broad, it was also unfathomably deep.

Even a star could be submerged within its great waters. Beneath the surface, ancient sea beasts lived, approaching colossal, incomprehensibly large sizes. Among these sea beasts, there were even many God Beast level existences.

Although it was said that there were many buried treasures hidden in the Asura Sea, because the water was too deep and there were too many dangers, it was nearly impossible to find them; one would only find life-threatening emergencies. Thus, very few people came to the Asura Sea.

But on this day, deep in the Asura Sea, there were over a hundred thousand people gathered.

These people were all outstanding individuals from different influences. There were senior supreme elders and also extraordinary young elites. All of them floated above the sea waters with overwhelming momentum, many of them riding opulent spirit boats and spirit ships.

This scene was truly magnificent.

The reason for this was that recently in the skies above the Asura Sea, space storms constantly flashed as if there was something horrifying brewing there. And according to previous experiences, this meant that the exit to the Asura Road's final trial was about to open at last!

The final trial that had gone on for several years was finally coming to an end!

To the many influences of the Asura Road, this was an incredibly significant event!

If there were influences who had sent disciples to attend the final trial, there was no need to mention just how important the opening of the final trial's exit was to them.

Even influences who hadn't sent any disciples to participate still came to the Asura Sea to see what outcomes others had.

They all wanted to see what the completion percentage of other geniuses from large influences were like. This completion percentage would reflect to a great degree the future achievements that martial artist would be able to reach. If there was a sect who had a trial challenger that reached 77-78%, this would meant that in the future they would reach the half-step Empyrean realm, and there was even a considerable chance they would become an Empyrean!

The birth of an Empyrean. In an Empyrean level influence, there was no need to mention how important this was. They would unhesitatingly spend every resource possible to chase after such a goal!

In truth, the birth of an Empyrean was an event worth great celebration even in a True Divinity level influence, one for which heroes from all over the world would be invited. For instance, the Divine Void Divine Kingdom. If one ignored Soul Emperor Divine Void, then Divine Void Divine Kingdom only had seven Empyreans.

So, any influence that could produce a trial challenger with 77-78% completion would absolutely draw enormous attention.

As for a completion percentage of 79, that was even more exaggerated. Such a character had an extremely high possibility of becoming an Empyrean and perhaps even a powerhouse amongst Empyreans.

A step higher than that was 80% completion! That was a mythical score. Although there was only a single percent between 80% and 79%, the truth was that it was as far as the heavens and earth. In the last 100 million years, there were several such people who had appeared with this score, and nearly all of them had become Empyreans, with many close to becoming True Divinities!

However, there were no influences that dared to hope for this completion percentage. In this round of the final trial, only Sheng Mei had a chance to uphold this legend. But, Sheng Mei was someone from the 33 Heavens and had nothing to do with the Asura Road.

In the Asura Sea, the various great influences set themselves up according to their strengths.

There were dozens of large and small sea platforms. The central platforms, the seats of honor, naturally belonged to those of Divine Void Divine Kingdom and Heaven Union Divine Kingdom.

At this time, whether it was Divine Void Divine Kingdom or Heaven Union Divine Kingdom, they both had core disciples attending the final trial. The Divine Void Divine Kingdom's Third Crown Prince and Heaven Union Divine Kingdom's Bigflame had both entered, and they were destined to be the most brilliant and dazzling characters of the final trial. They had also made a bet beforehand, causing everyone to anticipate their confrontation even more.

In a sense, the results of the final trial were also a competition between the futures of the Heaven Union Divine Kingdom and Divine Void Divine Kingdom. Both sides had attached great importance to the final trial.

The group leader of Heaven Union Divine Kingdom's team here was a direct disciple of Divine Emperor Heaven Union – High Prince White Feather, a half-step Empyrean.

As for the Divine Void Divine Kingdom's side, their team was led by the Third Imperial Scholar of the Divine Void Divine Kingdom, Imperial Scholar Sun. He was also a half-step Empyrean.

The two platforms that these two great influences stood upon were less than 200 feet apart. As they glared at each other from across the sea, they both stood in sharp opposition.

High Prince White Feather comfortably reclined on his kirin throne, a smile dangling on his face. To one side, a beautiful maid was holding up a screen for him and on his other side, another beautiful maid was hand feeding him rare and precious spirit fruits. This sort of pose was similar to that of an emperor of the mortal world enjoying himself; he looked extremely relaxed.

High Prince White Feather also had a look of confidence. He looked at Imperial Scholar Sun, who had a table next to him with a jar of celebratory wine. He smiled and said, “Imperial Scholar Sun, you even have the celebratory wine prepared? It seems you’ve prepared it for the Third Crown Prince? Imperial Scholar Sun seems to have already assumed that the Third Crown Prince will return in glory, but it seems you prepared the festivities too early… you might need to be careful of accidentally slapping yourself…”

High Prince White Feather taunted. Heaven Union Divine Kingdom and Divine Void Divine Kingdom were both respective leaders of the saints and spiritas in the Asura Road. They were both hostile to each other to begin with, and now that they were sitting near each other it was normal for them to engage in verbal battles in their boredom.

Chapter 1739 – The Exit Opens

Chapter 1739 – The Exit Opens

…

…

…

Facing High Prince White Feather's taunting words, Imperial Scholar Sun cackled. His fingers rhythmically tapped on the armrest as he leisurely said, "There is no need to speak so arrogantly, otherwise the one who will have to leave from shame might be you."

Whether it was Heaven Union Divine Kingdom's Bigflame or Divine Void Divine Kingdom's Third Crown Prince, both were amongst the most outstanding young disciples of their generation. In the future it was likely they would become Empyreans.

In this final trial, except for the anomaly known as Sheng Mei, everything was theirs for the taking. Whether it was High Prince White Feather or Imperial Scholar Sun, they both had absolute confidence in their influence's disciples.

"Hahaha!" High Prince White Feather laughed. "Very good! Then, let us take a good look at whether the Third Crown Prince or Bigflame has a higher completion percentage! However, I only fear that your joy will turn to sorrow. If there is anything that might have happened to your precious disciples… hehe!"

"That is what I am cautioning you about. Since ancient times, it has been common for peak disciples to perish in the final trial. If Nephew Bigflame were to recklessly try to show off his power and have some accident befall him, that would truly be regretful."

The barbs between Imperial Scholar Sun and High Prince White Feather became increasingly cruel and sinister. At this time, winds and clouds began to surge. The power of space rapidly converged above the sea.

The final trial's exit was about to open.

Everyone's minds tightened. The originally boisterous scene suddenly quieted down. Everyone waited in complete concentration for the exit path to open!

In the final trial, the truth was that there was more than one exit path. Besides the largest one, there were many small exits and the trial challengers would be transmitted to random locations. It wasn't necessarily true they would be transported out to this location. Thus, many people had already prepared sound transmitting talismans and signal flares to call out to their disciples as soon as possible.

As everyone was preparing to receive and greet their disciples, at this time, monstrous waves formed atop the sea. From the distant horizon, a majestic golden mountain came flying towards them, bursting out with flashes of golden brilliance.

This divine mountain had just appeared on the horizon but in the blink of an eye it had arrived in front of everyone, as if it had appeared out of thin air. This mountain was incredibly high, and the peak was buried deep in the clouds, unable to be seen. Wherever the mountain went, gargantuan waves would rise up and the earth would quake.

"Boundless Divine Mountain! Soul Emperor Divine Void's personal transportation!"

Just the appearance of Boundless Divine Mountain wasn't worthy of surprise. This was because Soul Emperor Divine Void didn't necessarily need to be on Boundless Divine Mountain; many times it was used as a spirit ship. But, what shocked everyone was that there was a faintly terrifying pressure emitting from Boundless Divine Mountain, as if there were a spiritual god at the summit of this divine mountain!

This sort of pressure made one feel awe from the depths of their heart. It even caused their soul to shiver!

From such a great distance atop the divine mountain, this existence could actually cause the hundred thousand plus people to have their minds quake in fear, and even cause World Kings to tremble. This was a pressure that only a True Divinity could possess!

“This… how can this be… Soul Emperor Divine Void, he came here personally?”

“This is only a trial for juniors, it shouldn’t be enough to alarm him…”

Just what sort of status did Soul Emperor Divine Void have? No matter how significant the final trial was, Soul Emperor Divine Void still wouldn’t come to greet the disciples. In ordinary times only a half-step Empyrean would be sent out to manage these matters.

But the current situation was different and that was because Soul Empress Sheng Mei was also participating in the final trial. Her status almost stood on par with Soul Emperor Divine Void’s. And, the most important factor was that Sheng Mei was a woman who Soul Emperor Divine Void admired from the depths of his heart.

Sheng Mei had already been in the final trial for several years. Moreover, this final trial was extremely important to Sheng Mei and concerned whether or not her sixth reincarnation would be able to reach perfection. This was why Soul Emperor Divine Void personally came out to greet her.

The appearance of Soul Emperor Divine Void caused all the martial artists present to hold their breath. No one dared to needlessly speak; they simply quietly waited for the exit paths of the final trial to open.

As for Boundless Divine Mountain, it remained peacefully floating above everyone’s heads, waiting for the exit to open.

A few hours passed. Slowly, dusty pink clouds rose like smoke, condensing in the skies above the Asura Sea. Multicolored heaven and earth origin energy gathered from all directions, condensing into a thick mist that was incomparably gorgeous.

Chi chi chi!

In this mist, thunder and fire sparked.

The wild waves became increasingly turbulent. At this moment, a thousand mile long vortex began to form.

As this vortex appeared, the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy became increasingly violent. A massive space gate appeared, like the maw of a giant beast that was ready to swallow the world.

The final trial that had lasted for over three years had finally ended!

The appearance of the space gate also meant that the trial challengers would be transmitted outside soon.

“We can finally find out the results!”

“I wonder how many trial challengers perished this time, and what are the results of the survivors?”

“It’s certain that Sheng Mei will be number one, but I don’t know if she managed to create a new record or not. And, we need to find out whether the Divine Void Crown Prince or Bigflame did better.”

Everyone began to wildly discuss. Even Divine Rune City’s Old Xue and Old Su were mixed up in the crowd. In their old age, the chances of making another breakthrough were slim to none. Thus, they spent their days idly enjoying themselves. If they weren’t out taking strolls then they were setting up their stalls. As for such a grand occasion as this, they certainly wouldn’t miss out on it.

Moreover, there was a junior that they were paying particular attention to – that was Lin Ming.

“I wonder how that brat Lin Ming did? I really cannot understand him. In the last several years he’s given me many pleasant surprises in the divine runic arts for my eyes to enjoy, and now all of a sudden he became a talented martial artist. I have no idea when he managed to collect the necessary sets of god runes to earn the qualifications to enter the final trial…”

“Let’s wait and take a look. Although I’ve never seen this boy fight before, he’s always managed to surprise me. In terms of combat, he should definitely have some talent. I don’t think his results will be bad.”

As Old Su and Old Xue were speaking, a trial challenger had already appeared from the portal.

He appeared several hundred miles away from the group, but to these martial artists this distance wasn’t anything at all. He was soon received by the people from his sect.

As he appeared, more and more disciples were transmitted out. They were all transmitted in a scope of tens of thousands of miles in the Asura Sea. Every sect used their own unique sound transmitting talismans to call out to their disciples.

“What’s your completion percentage?”

“How far did you go?”

“What rewards did you obtain?”

As the trial challengers returned to the welcome embrace of their sects they were rapidly peppered with questions.

Trial challengers with a high completion percentage naturally replied with pride. As for those with a low completion percentage, they hung their heads and answered in shame.

Many of them had poor results and had withdrawn from the final trial midway, forced to wait the three years until they were transmitted out of the final trial.

Seeing the trial challengers all emerge in droves, Heaven Union Divine Kingdom’s High Prince White Feather had a confident expression on at all times. His maid stood by his side, feeding him a peeled spirit fruit.

At this time, from beside High Prince White Feather, a disciple suddenly said, “High Prince Your Highness, some of our disciples have returned!”

“Oh?”

High Prince White Feather’s eyes brightened. Focusing his eyes, he could see that on the distant horizon there were five disciples rapidly flying towards him. They all wore star crowns and had similar sect clothing on. They were disciples of Heaven Union Divine Kingdom.

As the disciples of Heaven Union Divine Kingdom appeared, they immediately attracted the attention of many people. Out of all the influences present, Heaven Union Divine Kingdom was one of the leads. It was impossible not to notice them.

They all wanted to take a look and see what the results of the chosen prides of heaven from Heaven Union Divine Kingdom were like.

High Prince White Feather stood up. He glanced at Imperial Scholar Sun with a hint of mocking superiority. Then, he turned to the arriving disciples of Heaven Union Divine Kingdom and welcomingly laughed.

“Good! Very good! In this final trial, you have all returned with merits. When you return to the sect in the future you will definitely be vigorously cultivated. Your futures will be wonderful!”

High Prince White Feather boisterously praised. As he spoke, the five disciples gulped, as if they were afraid of something.

High Prince White Feather noticed this but didn’t care much. He was only speaking polite words just now. In truth, he didn’t care about the results of these disciples at all; he only cared for Bigflame.

“Bigflame? How come he isn’t with you all?”

As High Prince White Feather asked this question, the ears of many nearby martial artists pricked up. As Imperial Scholar Sun heard this, he also carefully listened even as he continued rapping his fingers. He similarly cared about Bigflame's completion percentage.

However, the complexions of the five disciples had turned ugly.

"Mm? What is it?" High Prince White Feather frowned.

"Senior-apprentice Brother Bigflame, he... he... hasn't... come out yet?" These disciples asked with fear in their voices. They looked in all directions, holding onto some hope that Bigflame was here.

However, even as more and more trial challengers arrived, they didn't discover Bigflame's shadow at all.

The response of these disciples caused High Prince White Feather's face to darken. "What are you all hesitating for? If there's something to say then spit it out!"

The disciples awkwardly looked at each other and then said, "Reporting to Your Highness the High Prince... this disciple didn't see Senior-apprentice Brother Bigflame in the fourth level. Even when the channel to the fifth level opened, Senior-apprentice Brother Bigflame still didn't appear and we didn't see him afterwards either. We thought that perhaps... Senior-apprentice Brother Bigflame was stranded somewhere on the fourth level...and when the final trial ended, he would be transmitted out..."

The disciples said, their voices weak and quivering. In truth, there was something that they didn't say, and it was that in such a situation, the logical conclusion was that Bigflame had died in the final trial.

"What did you say!?"

As High Prince White Feather heard this he was immediately shocked.

Bigflame disappeared in the fourth level? If he didn’t come out even now, then it was likely something had happened to him!

How could this be possible!?!?

And at this time, Imperial Scholar Sun began to wildly cackle, “Unfortunate, unfortunate, far too unfortunate! I wonder what sort of accident befell Apprentice Nephew Bigflame? If he went missing in the fourth level and still hasn’t come out then… wouldn’t his fate likely have been more unfortunate than fortunate?”

Imperial Scholar Sun loudly and openly said, pouring as much salt as he could on High Prince White Feather’s wounds.

But seeing Imperial Scholar Sun’s appearance, the several Heaven Union Divine Kingdom disciples glanced at each other, a strange look on their faces. They suddenly said, “Senior is from Divine Void Divine Kingdom? Your Third Crown Prince also went missing with Senior-apprentice Brother Bigflame; has he come out yet?”

This sudden question caused Imperial Scholar Sun’s face to stiffen. His expression immediately became quite wonderful indeed.

Chapter 1740 – Legend

Chapter 1740 – Legend

…

…

…

"What did you say?" Imperial Scholar Sun's eyes widened as he glowered at the disciples of Heaven Union Divine Kingdom.

"I said that the Divine Void Third Crown Prince has also gone missing and neither he nor our Senior-apprentice Brother Bigflame have been seen since the fourth level. From Senior's response, it seems that the Third Crown Prince hasn't appeared yet. If so… then… his fate is likely no better…"

A Heaven Union Divine Kingdom disciple said. But, his words had touched upon Imperial Scholar Sun's reverse scale.

Imperial Scholar Sun hissed, "Stop speaking nonsense!"

Although his words were rough, a strong sense of unease had appeared in his mind. Even though the disciples of Heaven Union Divine Kingdom were hostile towards the Divine Void Divine Kingdom, he didn't think that they would speak recklessly about such things, because these types of matters were too easily seen through. If they were to speak lies then their words would eventually come back to haunt them.

The several disciples of Heaven Union Divine Kingdom had 'believe it or not' expressions on their faces and didn't argue back. At this time, someone standing near Imperial Scholar Sun said, "Lord Imperial Scholar, Senior-apprentice Brother Yang has returned!"

Just as this voice spoke out, Imperial Scholar Sun grabbed onto it like a life-saving thread. He quickly turned and saw five people flying towards them from the far off horizon.

These people were the trial challengers that Divine Void Divine Kingdom had sent out. One of them was the one referred to as Senior-apprentice Brother Yang.

The first thing Imperial Scholar Sun did was try to search for the Third Crown Prince amongst the group. However, he didn't see him.

This caused his heart to turn as cold as ice.

"Where is the Third Crown Prince!?"

He didn't wait for the Divine Void disciples to steady themselves before he aggressively approached them and asked.

"The Crown Prince, he..."

After having Imperial Scholar Sun ask them this question right to their faces, the several disciples were dazed for a moment, not knowing how to respond.

"Where did he go!?"

Imperial Scholar Sun was breathless. Right now he didn't care about the Third Crown Prince's completion percentage; he just wanted to see the live person.

"Well..." The several Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciples looked at each other in dismay. Finally, Senior-apprentice Brother Yang said with fear in his voice, "Reporting to the Imperial Scholar, his Highness the Crown Prince... as well as Duke Fullmoon... disappeared on the fourth level and their whereabouts are unknown. We tried looking for them but... afterwards, there was a giant staircase of 33 steps leading from the fourth level to the fifth level, and after I climbed to the 31st step I entered the fifth level, and after that I didn't see the Crown Prince."

The Senior-apprentice Brother Yang was one of those people who had followed Lin Ming and the others to fifth level and helped confront of the Undying Inferno. But, he was also one of those that were afraid of the Undying Polar Ice that appeared afterwards and left the group at a critical moment.

"He's missing..."

Imperial Scholar Sun mumbled to himself. He fell back into his wooden chair, a stunned expression on his face.

The Divine Void Third Crown Prince was of their Sun Family bloodline and was also the most outstanding disciple from their family. Because of this reason, Imperial Scholar Sun had been chosen to lead the delegation to greet the Third Crown Prince. But now, he discovered that the Crown Prince was missing and had likely suffered some fatal accident. This information was naturally a great attack to him.

For a time, Imperial Scholar Sun had no interest at all in bickering with High Prince White Feather.

At the same time, High Prince White Feather had no intention of kicking Imperial Scholar Sun while he was down. Right now, they could be called fellow sufferers grieving together. Because Bigflame was missing, he too had fallen into despondency.

Originally, the Divine Void Divine Kingdom and Heaven Union Divine Kingdom were the stars of the final trial. With their overly dramatic and tragic end, this caused more and more martial artists to notice them.

Everyone now realized that two of the most outstanding disciples from Divine Void Divine Kingdom and Heaven Union Divine Kingdom, Bigflame and the Third Crown Prince, had gone missing in the final trial and had likely suffered some tragic end!

The two of them had been the main leads of the final trial and they had even made a bet based on their results. But currently, the final trial's exit had been open for some time already and seemed to be closing soon, and yet the two of them hadn't appeared. The hopes of them showing up became more and more uncertain, and the surrounding people couldn’t help but start speaking in hushed whispers.

“Bigflame and the Third Crown Prince both perished?”

“Unbelievable… that two extremely talented individuals with chances of becoming Empyreans in the future would die here. The final trial is far too dangerous!”

“Indeed… although many people survived, the truth is that most of them don’t have a high completion percentage. Many of them had given up on the fourth level. If they really had to struggle for great lucky chances then that would have been extremely perilous for them. Before, I envied those people who found such great lucky chances but now that I see it, if we were to go it’s unknown whether we could come back out.”

As everyone was speaking, an enchanting blue light shot over their heads, followed by a faint cold wind.

As everyone was startled, they looked up to see a blue beam of light arcing across the endless skies and disappearing into Boundless Divine Mountain. The speed was so fast that some people even wondered whether or not that was an illusion just now.

The cold wind gradually dissipated, but a vague and ethereal pressure remained in the air, not fading for a long time.

“Soul Empress Sheng Mei!”

“Yes, she seems to have entered Boundless Divine Mountain…”

Everyone took a deep breath, their words filled with reverence.

For the last 100 million years, Soul Empress Sheng Mei had maintained the top final trial record of 83% completion, even suppressing the Good Fortune Saint Son and leaving behind a legend that would last for a hundred generations.

And this time, without a doubt, Soul Empress Sheng Mei had created an even higher record!

It was horrifying just thinking about it. Outstanding young elites like the Divine Void Third Crown Prince and Bigflame had likely perished in the final trial, yet Sheng Mei had not only easily returned, but created new records!

This difference was simply far too great.

"Soul Empress… what was her completion percentage?"

Someone couldn't help but ask. They began looking towards the several Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciples that had returned from the final trial.

Of these disciples, some of them had joined with Sheng Mei in combatting the Undying Inferno. Because of their hesitancy and fear, they had been a single step away from entering the sixth level and becoming legends in their own right. Otherwise, they could have easily obtained a completion percentage in the seventies.

Hearing this question, Senior-apprentice Brother Yang replied, "The Soul Empress, she is likely at… 89%…"

On the fifth level, when Sheng Mei, Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, Dragonscar, and the others had killed the Undying Polar Ice, the ones who had left weren't too far away. With their extremely keen hearing, they were able to hear what was happening far away. Thus, when Sheng Mei, Lin Ming, and Xiao Moxian joined forces to create a miracle, they had faintly heard what Sheng Mei's completion percentage was. To them, this hadn't been too shocking, but had seemed perfectly normal.

But when this information fell into the ears of those present, it was like a bolt of lightning smashing down from nowhere.

"W-what… what!? 89%!? Are you joking with me?"

The one who asked was shocked. Let alone them, even Imperial Scholar Sun and High Prince White Feather suddenly regained their composure from their sorrow of losing their top disciples. They both looked towards the disciple who had been speaking with disbelief etched on their features.

This number was far too bewildering. For a time, all of them were unable to accept it.

“89%... are you sure?”

“It’s true...” Senior-apprentice Brother Yang gulped, a bitter smile on his face. He had been just a step away from leaving behind his own legend; how could he not be filled with regret?

“How can it be so high!? Do you know what sort of concept that number is? In the stories, even those who become True Divinities will only reach 85% or above! She... how... how can her score be so high?”

Imperial Scholar Sun muttered to himself again and again. He simply couldn’t regain his wits.

Senior-apprentice Brother Yang helplessly said, “It wasn’t so high to begin with, but because they killed the fifth level Overlord they were able to enter the sixth level and thus their score increased by several points. Originally, the Soul Empress’ completion percentage wasn’t so exaggerated...”

The more Senior-apprentice Brother Yang spoke, the more bitter he felt. Speaking these words was the same as picking at his scabs.

“Killing the fifth level Overlord and entering the sixth level?”

Imperial Scholar Sun and the others sucked in a breath of cold air. Although they didn’t know what the fifth level Overlord was, they did know that the sixth level was a legend. In the last billion years, there hadn’t been anyone who managed to accomplish the magnificent feat of entering that mysterious land.

“The Soul Empress is really fierce, she actually killed the fifth level Overlord…”

High Prince White Feather gulped. Even though the saints were hostile to Sheng Mei’s spiritas race, he couldn’t help but admire such a powerful woman.

However, these words caused a strange look to appear on Senior-apprentice Brother Yang’s face.

“This is…” Although he didn’t want to, he couldn’t help but say, “The one who killed the fifth level Overlord wasn’t the Soul Empress…”

“Mm?”

Everyone paused. They all looked towards this Senior-apprentice Brother Yang.

“If it wasn’t Sheng Mei then who was it?” High Prince White Feather asked, puzzlement on his face.

“It… it was that fellow called Lin Ming.”

Speaking Lin Ming’s name, Senior-apprentice Brother Yang couldn’t help but sigh in his heart. Really, this was what it meant to be inferior to others. Lin Ming’s horrifying performance on the fifth level had left him shocked and awed, and he knew he could never catch up to this Lin Ming no matter how hard he tried.

“Lin Ming? You’re speaking of…” Imperial Scholar Sun was stunned. He queerly said, “Are you telling me it’s that boy from the Divine Runic Masters Guild?”

Many people hadn’t heard Lin Ming’s name before. Although he could be called a celebrity within the Asura Road, the truth was that Lin Ming was only a big figure within the professional circles of divine runic masters, so it wasn’t strange if others didn’t know of him. But, when he entered the final trial, there had been a good number of people that recognized him.

Because a divine runic master invested so much time into studying the divine runic arts, their combat ability was normally nothing to mention at all. It was already fantastic for young divine runic masters to be able to follow the cultivation pace of their peers, let alone participate in the ruthless final trial.

Thus, when Lin Ming appeared many people had started to talk about him and so others knew of his existence.

And now they were being informed that Lin Ming had killed the fifth level Overlord. They couldn't help but glance at each other, dumbfounded. What was the meaning of this?

"Do you need to use the divine runic arts to kill the fifth level Overlord?"

Some people couldn't help but make this association. They didn't believe that Lin Ming surpassed Sheng Mei in strength.

But these people were soon disappointed. Senior-apprentice Brother Yang shook his head and said, "No... in order to kill the fifth level Overlord what you need is strength. When the fifth level Overlord was in the state of the Undying Polar Ice, only Lin Ming had the ability to kill it. He really did have the true ability to kill the fifth level Overlord. Moreover... his completion percentage was even more exaggerated..."

As the disciple spoke to here, he slowly said, "...He had 92% completion."

With this number, the entire audience of martial artists fell into a deep silence.

"...92%?"

Everyone held their breath, unable to believe this...

Chapter 1741 – Law Proclamation

Chapter 1741 – Law Proclamation

…

…

…

A completion rate of 92%. This couldn’t even be described as a legend. It was simply outrageous.

Imagine. A future True Divinity needed 85%-87%. This was completely different from 92%.

Whether it was 70 to 80, or 80 to 90, there was a distance as great as the heavens and earth between them. It was almost impossible to look up at a score as high as 92%

“Impossible! You must have made a mistake!”

High Prince White Feather looked towards that Senior-apprentice Brother Yang with disbelief.

Senior-apprentice Brother Yang coldly said, “What meaning is there in me lying to you… moreover, many people will know of this soon. Even if I lie, it will be seen through. Also, once the final trial ends, those with a completion rate surpassing 80% will have their names inscribed with lines of the Heavenly Dao. You can naturally see it for yourself.”

The final completion rate for trial challengers had never been a secret. Part of the reason was that trial challengers spread out the information themselves, but another reason was that these results were shown through the world Laws, especially for those with high completion rates. For instance, in the past Sheng Mei and the Good Fortune Saint Son had their completion percentages spread throughout the entire Asura Road.

When Lin Ming had casually suppressed a little robber gang, even one of their members, Soulwhite, had known of the completion percentages for Sheng Mei and the Good Fortune Saint Son. This was a matter that could not be hidden.

Senior-apprentice Brother Yang’s words caused the audience to go silent once more. Their stunned expressions looked as complex as a divine runic symbol. All of them were unable to find the appropriate words.

Some of these people had once gone to the Divine Rune City Auction and had seen Lin Ming personally sell promissory notes for billions of contribution points. Just a month of work and Lin Ming had amassed billions of contribution points, even causing Empyreans to engage in a bidding war.

That scene had left a sharp and vivid memory in their minds, one that they would never be able to forget.

In particular, when Lin Ming had calmly drawn an improved divine runic symbol in the face of hundreds of thousands of people without any fear of failing at all. Not just that, but he even did so with 20 dark divine runic masters eyeing him. No matter how high their cultivations they had all been grasped by Lin Ming. He simply didn’t care about their spying techniques at all. Rather, he let them sit there and collected viewing fees from them, allowing them to watch as they liked.

Such boldness, such daring, they couldn’t help but admire him.

Now, over 20 years had passed and Lin Ming had reappeared in the final trial, creating yet another miracle.

This caused everyone to find it hard to connect these two peerless individuals together.

An extremely talented divine runic master as well as a monstrous battle freak that surpassed a peerless genius like Sheng Mei.

Were these two really the same person?

Where did he find so much time? Where did he find the energy to accomplish all of this?

At the same time, a similar scene was occurring on Boundless Divine Mountain.

Of course, the one respectfully listening this time was Soul Emperor Divine Void, and the one speaking to him was Soul Empress Sheng Mei.

Originally, Soul Emperor Divine Void had placed down a celebration banquet to greet Sheng Mei, arranging all sorts of top heavenly materials to cook up spirit foods and spirit wines, all of it set on a grand table. The cost of this celebration feast was even more expensive than an Empyrean spirit treasure.

As soon as Sheng Mei entered Boundless Divine Mountain, Soul Emperor Divine Void had raised a glass to congratulate her as well as inquire into her completion percentage. After learning she obtained an 89% completion rate, he was naturally stunned.

Although he knew that Sheng Mei was amazing, he didn’t think it would be so exaggerated. After praising her for some time, Soul Empress Sheng Mei suddenly informed him that her completion percentage wasn’t the highest, but there was also Lin Ming with an even more exaggerated 92%.

This caused Soul Emperor Divine Void to stand up where he was, lost in a frozen daze for some time.

If these words hadn’t come from Sheng Mei’s lips but from someone else, Soul Emperor Divine Void would have thought they were making careless jokes. But Sheng Mei was someone with a naturally serious personality who never made such jokes.

“Lin Ming… he… where did he come from?”

Soul Emperor Divine Void asked Sheng Mei after being silent for ten breaths of time, incredulity thick in his voice.

"He is a human genius from the 33 Heavens. He should originate from the Divine Realm. If it weren't for Lin Ming, my completion percentage would only be 86. For me to achieve an 89% completion rate, I must thank him for that..."

To reach the sixth level with an 89% completion rate, this had given Sheng Mei rich rewards. The Asura Road Master was someone who had comprehensively understood the Laws of the 33 Heavens. No matter which trial challenger came, no matter what Laws they practiced, he could pass down peerless insights to them.

In addition, there was the Undying Polar Ice's soul fire. This allowed Sheng Mei's strength to increase by another level and allowed her Grand Reincarnation Art to reach perfection of the sixth revolution.

Hearing Sheng Mei's words, Soul Emperor Divine Void's throat twitched a little. He ruefully smiled, "If what you say is true, then he is indeed a peerless monstrous talent... however, Sheng Mei, you need not underestimate yourself. After all, your Grand Reincarnation Art has yet to reach completion. Once you complete your nine revolutions and come to the final trial again, obtaining a score past 92% won't be difficult for you at all..."

Sheng Mei shook her head, "I don't know if I can surpass 92% or not, but what I am sure of is that after several hundred or thousand years, if Lin Ming returns to the final trial he will definitely surpass a 92% completion rate. In this universe, it isn't only I who is growing. Although those with normal levels of talent won't change, this isn't true for those that are gifted with unsurpassed talent..."

When Sheng Mei spoke of those gifted with unsurpassed talent, those she spoke of was a range restricted to the top geniuses of an entire race. Only such a character, born in a race every billion years, would be able to borrow the momentum of the world's great calamity to be born!

In the 33 Heavens, those with unsurpassed talent were the Good Fortune Saint Son, Lin Ming, and Sheng Mei! Although Sheng Mei didn't care much about the Good Fortune Saint Son, she actually felt a deep sense of admiration towards Lin Ming.

She had said to Lin Ming that his appearance was the good fortune of humanity. However, as to whether or not this good fortune could help humanity weather the great calamity, Sheng Mei hadn't told Lin Ming her thoughts…

In fact, she also knew that humanity's great calamity wasn't as simple as it seemed to be…

"Are you saying that Lin Ming will surpass 92% in the future? If so… then that is even more terrifying! Hey… where is this Lin Ming now?"

Soul Emperor Divine Void suddenly asked Sheng Mei.

Sheng Mei lightly looked at Divine Void and serenely said, "You shouldn't be asking this because you have some dark intentions towards Lin Ming, right?"

Towards a character on the level of Soul Emperor Divine Void, the current Lin Ming had absolutely no ability to resist.

Lin Ming was just far too monstrous a talent, but elephants were also killed because mortals coveted their ivory tusks. If Lin Ming didn't have the protection of some super influence then others would inevitably form thoughts of cutting him down early.

"Mm?" Soul Emperor Divine Void seemed to sense something from Sheng Mei's tone, "You seem to be… protecting him?"

"You can say that." Sheng Mei confidently stated. "He must have obtained a great lucky chance in the final trial, but his lucky chance isn't what others can obtain. Even if Lin Ming dies, I fear you cannot take his lucky chance. I know your character; do not move against him…"

Sheng Mei said, a light warning in her words.

“Why do you protect him? Is it because he helped you in killing the fifth level Overlord, allowing your completion percentage to increase by three points?” Soul Emperor Divine Void said with surprise as he looked at Sheng Mei. In truth, he hadn’t said anything about harming Lin Ming at the start. After all, when it came to peerless geniuses like Lin Ming, it was hard to harm or kill them even when they were small and weak.

This type of person often had countless lucky chances on their body and an endless number of life-saving cards. If one couldn’t catch such a person, then making them a foe was absolutely not a good idea.

Thus in ordinary circumstances, unless one was crazy, few influences who didn’t have any hatred at all would try to harm those who ended the final trial with a high completion percentage.

“That’s part of the reason…”

Sheng Mei trailed off before not explaining any further. She clearly had no intention of speaking of her other reasons.

Soul Emperor Divine Void also remained silent. He knew it was meaningless to continue pressing the question.

At this time, above the Asura Sea, the final trial’s exit passage had completely closed.

When the exit passage closed, the heavens and earth began to change. Countless Asura Law lines began to gather from all over, forming massive words in the endless skies above the Asura Road.

These words were each a thousand miles large and stretched out for hundreds of thousands of miles. They filled the entire Asura Sea with a magnificent and overpowering momentum, ancient and boundless!

What these words recorded were the completion percentages of Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, and Sheng Mei.

Of these words, the most eye-catching was Lin Ming's name and his completion score of 92%. Countless Laws gathered to form the words, and just by looking at them one felt their blood vitality tumble and their inner world tremble.

Under the vast words formed by the Heavenly Dao, anyone, even Soul Emperor Divine Void, felt extremely small.

The hundred thousand plus people on the Asura Sea, whether they were senior supreme elders or heroic young elites, all felt shock from the depths of their hearts.

As for Old Xue and Old Su who had already heard the news, they stood beneath the vast skies for an entire two hours looking at these words, unable to summon anything to say.

They originally thought that Lin Ming's results 'wouldn't be bad', but this 'wouldn't be bad' had them both living in something that felt like a dream.

With such a miracle, the name Lin Ming was destined to leave behind an endless legend in the Asura Road!

This massive Law proclamation continued in the skies above the Asura Sea for nine days and nine nights before slowly scattering.

However, before the Law proclamation faded away, the name of Lin Ming had already spread through every intelligence network, large influence, and spy organization in the entire Asura Road.

Even those in the outer Asura Road were only two or three days behind in news. After that, everyone knew of this event.

After all, everyone paid an extreme amount of attention to the final trial. Once the results were announced, the news would rapidly spread!

For a time, countless influences wanted to know who Lin Ming was and where he came from.

Some of these influences had dark thoughts against Lin Ming, but most of them simply wanted to greet him and form good relations.

If they could achieve such a goal, they were willing to pay a steep price.

Whether it was heavenly goods, top grade materials, all sorts of spirit treasures, magic weapons, cultivation methods, or proud daughters of heaven to be used for dual cultivation, everything imaginable was offered up.

However, all of these influences failed in their goal.

After the final trial ended, Lin Ming hadn't appeared in public at all.

Together with Xiao Moxian, the two of them seemed to have vanished from the world, completely disappearing…

Chapter 1742 – To Settle All Ties

Chapter 1742 – To Settle All Ties

…

…

…

A short time after being transmitted from the final trial, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian found each other. Then they contacted Mo Brightmoon and met up. Together, the three of them used the Asura Command to leave the Asura Sea. At this time, the people above the Asura Sea didn't even know that Lin Ming had created a miracle of obtaining a 92% completion rate.

Lin Ming quietly left, not wanting to stand atop the waves of attention. When the exit passage of the final trial opened, influences from all over would gather and there would likely be some people intending to plot against him. He naturally didn't want to be targeted by these people.

The final trial had already ended and now he planned to return to the Divine Realm in the near future. But before doing that, there was a matter he needed to finish.

This matter was only a matter of convenience for Lin Ming, but it could also give him decent benefits. To him, this could be considered his final mark in his adventures through the Asura Road.

One month later, Setting Sun City –

Setting Sun City was located in a remote area of the inner Asura Road. However, there were some nearby areas that were rich in spiritual energy, and thus this land was occupied by an Empyrean level influence – the Far East Family.

This also made Setting Sun City a bustling marketplace. As one of the inner Asura Road's largest intelligence networks, Heaven's Secret naturally wouldn't miss out on such a large city. In Setting Sun City, there was also a branch division of Heaven's Secret. Every day, many martial artists would come to this Heaven's Secret branch division looking for information, and on this day, a common-looking black-clothed youth happened to visit.

This black-clothed youth was of medium height and carried a heavy sword on his back. His looks were ordinary and there were circular demon tattoos on his face, making him look a bit fierce.

He walked through the streets, a faint slaughter energy rolling off of him, causing people to unconsciously avoid him.

Like this, he walked to Heaven's Secret.

"Mister, how do you do? What rank of news would you like to ask about?"

The doorman felt his heart jump as he saw this black-clothed youth. After waiting at the doors of Heaven's Secret for so many years, he had naturally seen all sorts of characters. His intuition told him that this black-clothed youth in front of him wasn't simple at all.

"I am looking for someone, a Great World King..."

The black-clothed youth lightly said. The doorman's pupils shrank. Although this black-clothed youth didn't seem too old, he actually searched for a Great World King. Of course, he wouldn't ask this guest what his reasons were. He respectfully bowed and waved his hand in welcome, "Of course, please follow me to the sixth floor."

The black-clothed youth nodded and followed the doorman into Heaven's Secret Pavilion.

In the middle of a chamber on the sixth floor of Heaven's Secret Pavilion, a blue-clothed old man was solemnly sitting behind a table.

The entire pavilion was filled with a fragrant smoke that resembled fog.

The doorman introduced the black-clothed youth to the chamber and then respectfully drew back, head bowed.

“I hear that this guest wishes to inquire into news about a Great World King. May I ask which Great World King this is?” The blue-clothed old man was tall and thin. His hands rested above a white jade cutting board and his voice was calm like a mountain.

The cutting board continued to shimmer with the strange power of runes, as if endless information was constantly surging atop it.

The blue-clothed old man’s eyes unwittingly swept over the black-clothed youth in front of him, as if he were trying to see through his origins.

This black-clothed youth emitted an extremely strange aura. The blue-clothed old man’s probing was immediately sensed.

Just looking at this black-clothed youth, besides the vigorous man-eating demonic aura that seemed to roll off him, he seemed to constantly fade in and out of the world, as if he could disappear at any time. It was an extremely strange feeling.

The old man looked for a long time but eventually gave up on discerning this young man’s origins.

The black-clothed youth thought for a moment and then calmly said, “Dark divine runic grandmaster, Shadow Overflow. I am looking for him about some matters.”

“Grandmaster Overflow?”

The blue-clothed old man’s eyebrows shot up. He gently traced his beard. When the average person asked about Shadow Overflow, it was usually to make deals that couldn’t be seen in the daylight. He guessed that this black-clothed youth was in a similar situation.

He didn’t ask much. He simply put forth the fee for the information and then drew several strange lines atop a jade slip.

After some time, the information within the jade slip started to rapidly reorganize itself, sparkling.

In the void, several brilliant characters began to appear.

“Darktide City, Tigerhunt Cave.”

Once he had carefully read the meaning behind these characters, the blue-clothed old man began to slowly answer.

After obtaining this answer, the black-clothed youth bowed. The demonic circles on his face emitted a faint black light; it was impossible to know what expression he was making.

Slowly standing up, the black-clothed youth left a nine sun jade on the table. Then, his figure flickered and he disappeared.

....

“Darktide City, Tigerhunt Cave.”

The black-clothed youth chewed over the name of this area. As he flew through the skies he was like a black rainbow arching through the heavens.

And as he was flying, this black-clothed youth’s appearance gradually changed. The demonic tattoos on his face slowly hid themselves, he became taller, and the edges of his face became sharper and more contoured.

This person was Lin Ming.

The reason he had changed his appearance to go to Heaven’s Secret and ask about Shadow Overflow was to complete the last matter he wanted to seal in the Asura Road.

That was… killing Shadow Overflow.

Firstly, Shadow Overflow had a grudge against Lin Ming and Lin Ming could sense that this person was sinister and cruel, always taking revenge for the smallest slights. Although the chance that he would be able to harm Lin Ming in the future was extremely small, Lin Ming didn't want to give him the tiniest chance to do so.

Many years ago, when Lin Ming was in the Seven Profound Valleys he had offended the Seven Profound Valleys' Acacia Faction's Ouyang Family. Because of that, Lin Ming had been taught a profound lesson. Due to his carelessness, Qin Xingxuan had nearly been killed by the Ouyang Family.

From that point on, Lin Ming had firmed his resolve. When it came to enemies that could harm him, his family, or his friends, he would treat them ruthlessly without the slightest bit of mercy, cutting down the problem at the roots as soon as possible. Sometimes, even the most common-seeming characters could come back to bite like a viper in the grass.

Also, there were other reasons Lin Ming wanted to kill Shadow Overflow.

Lin Ming had grasped the Asura Heavenly Array Diagram and now he could bring the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws back to the 33 Heavens. Before leaving the Asura Road, he wanted his divine runic arts to be even more perfect.

Shadow Overflow was a giant amongst all dark divine runic masters and had mastered the wide breadth of knowledge of the dark divine runic arts. He was highly adept at applying various Laws and principles to different situations.

Shadow Overflow's memories of the dark divine runic arts were extremely tempting to Lin Ming.

These were memories he had to obtain.

They would allow him to save many years of work.

……..

The setting sun was like inky blood. A towering city stood in the midst of a howling sandstorm. The exposed city walls were rugged and simple, seeming as if they could collapse at any moment. The entire area was cold and desolate.

Several decayed sentry towers stood behind the city gates.

No one manned these sentry towers. There were only carrion vultures resting above them, sending out sharp cries.

“This is Darktide City?”

Lin Ming pulled down his black hood, biting his lips as he stood in the dusty sands and looked at the bleak sand-swept city in front of him.

According to the information he gathered, Darktide City was a well-known crime capital in the outer Asura Road. It was an extremely evil and malevolent city.

Here, rogues and thugs ran rampant.

Most of these thugs had committed a number of evil deeds. Darktide City just happened to be at the junction of many nearby Holy Lands and Divine Kingdoms. Thus, because it was under no one's jurisdiction, it had become a paradise for numerous criminals.

Lin Ming didn’t think that such a famous crime capital would be desolate in such a manner; it was really startling.

If he hadn’t obtained information from Heaven’s Secret, Lin Ming would never have thought that the famous dark divine runic grandmaster Shadow Overflow would live in such a grim place.

“Mm?”

Suddenly, Lin Ming became keenly aware that there were slight energy fluctuations in the skies.

These types of fluctuations were even weaker than fluctuations of light. However, because of the incredible sensitivity of Lin Ming's senses, he was able to instantly lock onto the locus of changes in the air.

His lips curved up in a faint sneer.

Putting on an ignorant appearance, Lin Ming flipped his black hood back on and slowly walked towards the city entrance.

Behind him, a strong big fellow drilled out of the void, draped in translucent wings. This person carried a metal trident that shined with strange runes. He was impressively a member of the monster race.

"Human?" The monster fellow showed a greedy smile.

Then, this fellow saw a strange divine runic symbol slowly flutter down from the air.

The divine runic symbol had a clear word written upon it – Imprison!

This word exuded threads of mystic power. The wind rose and in the next moment a web of golden wires shot out, tightly wrapping around the monster fellow, tightly locking onto his flesh and blood!

"Ahhh!"

The monster fellow cried out in alarm. However, in the next moment, all his cries were sealed off, leaving him unable to cry. He wasn't able to summon any monster essence from within his body, making him seem like a dead dog being hung in the air.

The monster fellow revealed a look full of panic and dread.

Lin Ming floated up, looking down at this robber with imposing contempt. A faint killing intent shined in his eyes, making this monster fellow's heart shake and sweat drip down his back.

“Tell me, what is the situation of Tigerhunt Cave? Do you know someone called Shadow Overflow?” Lin Ming icily said to the monster fellow.

As Lin Ming spoke, his pupils changed color, becoming a deep dark abyss. If a common martial artist were to look at Lin Ming now, they would feel as if their soul was being sucked into his eyes.

This was an arcane skill of the Asura Sutra’s second volume. As the monster fellow met Lin Ming’s eyes, his body shook, his eyes glazed over and his expression turned blank. His sea of consciousness had been thoroughly muddled by Lin Ming’s soul force.

In the next moment, the monster fellow opened his mouth and spoke of everything he knew.

The monster fellow happened to be someone from Darktide City’s Tigerhunt Cave. From his mouth, Lin Ming had been able to learn a great deal of useful information.

Gently shaking his robes, Lin Ming’s figure began to dim among the yellow sands, disappearing into the void.

As for that monster fellow, he tumbled to the ground, his eyes still blank and his face pale like an idiot. His spiritual sea had suffered irreversible damage and from this point on he was ruined.

From the moment that Lin Ming entered this monster fellow’s mind, he had learned that he normally raped and pillaged, killing others to steal their possessions. Facing a villain like this who only committed evil deeds, Lin Ming would show no leniency. Removing one such person was the same as saving many lives.

Chapter 1743 – Killing Shadow Overflow

Chapter 1743 – Killing Shadow Overflow

…

…

…

Although Darktide City was in name a city, the truth was that it encompassed a massive region. Within this region were innumerable gangs of murderers, robbers, various influences, and even dark divine runic masters.

Tigerhunt Cave was located beneath Sunflare Mountain at the very center of Darktide City.

When the last rays of blood red light struck Sunflare Mountain, waves of glorious light would emit from the base of the mountain.

As if daytime was rising where the light came from.

If one looked carefully, they would see that this brilliant daylight was composed of countless divine runic symbols.

This formed an extremely formidable tidal wave of defense.

The giant Tigerhunt Cave was carved into the mountainside. It was over 10,000 feet wide.

Magnificent structures towered into the skies, illuminated with candle-like lights all over. It was a beautiful and enchanting sight.

The massive structural complex had no guards. From within, one could only hear the laughs and frolicking screams of women.

A hundred meters from the periphery of Tigerhunt Cave, Lin Ming circled around a rocky peak.

Beneath the waves of light from the divine runic symbols, his figure constantly shimmered like an image on the rippling surface of a lake. It was hard to make out his appearance.

After emerging from the space of the final trial and obtaining the second volume of the Asura Sutra, Lin Ming had reached the pinnacle in attainments of soul forging Laws. This sort of understanding manifested in Lin Ming's previously learned cultivation methods. By using a bit of soul force with the Divine Dream Law and combining it with the power of space, he was able to freely move and deceive the eyes of ordinary martial artists.

As he arrived in front of the defensive divine runic symbols, he narrowed his eyes. He scanned the palatial structures within Tigerhunt Cave, a trace of killing intent passing through his eyes.

One hand gently followed the trajectory of a nearby divine runic symbol, creating an energy line.

Lin Ming slowly perceived the energy structure. Then, after a moment, he forcefully opened up a gap within the supposedly impregnable divine runic symbols.

His form flickered as he passed inside.

Tigerhunt Cave.

There was a lustrous palace resplendent in gold and jade, covered in beams of shimmering energy. The palace rose high into the air.

Coming from within the central hall of this grand palace, there was the sound of lively chatter.

There was currently a banquet feast being held in the palace. The sounds of cheers and boisterous laughter lingered in the air.

At this banquet feast was a crowd of dark divine runic masters in long black robes.

Sitting at the highest seat of honor was the infamous Grandmaster Overflow, one of the top dark divine runic masters of the Asura Road.

The other dark divine runic masters surrounded Shadow Overflow like planets around a sun. Some of them were a little drunk and had flushed faces.

Beside them were beautiful young girls carrying platters of wine and meat, their bodies only covered by the thinnest layers of gauze. Their large chests and slender waists were clearly illuminated with each light step they took.

The entire feast was filled with the smell of wine and meat, mixed with the fragrance of a young girl's flavors.

"Grandmaster Overflow, recently our business has become increasingly good. All of that is thanks to Grandmaster's luck." A middle-aged dark divine runic master said, raising a glass of wine as he flattered Shadow Overflow with a drunk smile.

"Haha, if things continue like this then in the future, all of the dark divine runic masters around Darktide City will have to work under the grandmaster." Someone laughed out loud.

Facing these people's flattery, Shadow Overflow only ominously smiled. His smile was a bit cold. As the present dark divine runic masters saw Shadow Overflow's expression, they all shrunk their necks. They knew that Shadow Overflow was likely in an extremely poor mood.

If one had to think of a reason, it was all because of the results of the Asura Road's final trial. There had been a certain individual who had created a miracle and obtained a 92% completion rate, and this person was none other than Shadow Overflow's sworn enemy, Lin Ming.

This meant that Lin Ming possessed unimaginable talent. In the near future, he could kill Shadow Overflow as easily as stepping on an ant. In this sort of situation, Shadow Overflow felt as if a mountain was constantly pressing down on his chest, leaving him unable to take a single breath.

So in recent days, whenever someone mentioned Lin Ming's name, Shadow Overflow would look as if he had taken a cup of poison.

With Lin Ming in the Asura Road, as long as he grew up, Shadow Overflow would never be able to publicly appear for the rest of his life. He would have to live like a little underground mouse.

The other dark divine runic masters had correctly guessed Shadow Overflow's thoughts. One of them said, "Grandmaster Overflow, I've already contacted some intelligence networks and underworld influences to search for Lin Ming's whereabouts. As long as there is any news found about him then we can release the information to those influences who have dark intentions towards Lin Ming. I'm sure they will be extremely interested..."

"That's right, although it's difficult for us to take out Lin Ming, those evil influences are ruthless and cruel. They will definitely covet the secrets and lucky chances that Lin Ming has!"

Several dark divine runic masters grinned as they spoke. Hearing these words, Shadow Overflow was finally in a better mood. He said, "That little beast, this time he really did put himself in the limelight, but a tree outside of the forest will be blown down by the wind. Since he's made himself so high profile, there are innumerable influences targeting him. I hope that those dark influences can kill him, but I guess we'll have to wait to see the play."

As Shadow Overflow spoke, hatred flashed in his eyes.

He threw back the blood red wine in his glass in a gulp. As long as he thought of Lin Ming being killed, his entire body would shiver with excitement.

“You little beast, just you wait. And that little witch that follows him, it's best if they are both ruined together.”

Thinking of the black-clothed girl that followed Lin Ming, Shadow Overflow suddenly fiendishly grinned. Without any indication he reached out and grabbed one of the beautiful maids nearby, ruthlessly kneading her milk-white breasts.

The maid paled. She bit her lips but she was only able to look at Shadow Overflow with a pleasing smile.

“Hehe…”

Shadow Overflow lasciviously chuckled several times. He grasped the maid by the waist and then turned to walk towards the back gardens.

In the darkness, an indifferent Lin Ming followed him like a god of death arriving in the midst of night.

The divine runic symbol traps arranged in the air or placed on the ground were nothing in front of him. He could skillfully bypass them all.

This was also because Lin Ming had cultivated the Asura Sutra Volume Two. With that, his understanding of the Laws of divine runic arts had gone even further. To him, these traps existed in name only.

Pah –

Another barrier of divine runic symbols was broken open by Lin Ming.

His clothing fluttered around him. Like an owl, he flew deep into the back gardens, blending in with the endless darkness.

.....

The thinly-clothed maid was tossed onto a bed. Staring at her creamy white body, a pleased grin appeared on Shadow Overflow's face. To the current Shadow Overflow, beauty no longer had any temptation for him. What he liked was recklessly ruining and conquering nubile young maids in order to give vent to the sadness and feelings of suppression in his heart.

Just as he was about to throw himself onto the maid, he suddenly froze.

Although he had to spend a great deal of his time and energy on the divine runic arts, his strength and cultivation were still those of a Great World King. He had sharp senses and was able to detect a strange, thread-thin fluctuation of strength in the air. He slowly turned his head, looking towards a window lattice

There, hovering in the air, was a tall black-haired youth.

He wore a black robe and his entire body seemed wrapped in darkness. Strange circular demonic tattoos rippled along his neck, constantly moving without end. As he looked down from his commanding position, his stare was cold and ruthless, like a hawk staring at its prey.

"You... how did you get in?" Shadow Overflow felt his scalp tingle and all the hairs on his body rise up. He was a sixth level dark divine runic master and he had extremely deep attainments in the divine runic arts. Within Tigerhunt Cave, he had laid down layers upon layers of array formations and trap divine runic symbols. Because of this, he simply didn't need any guards.

With such a solid and complex defense, how did this black-haired youth come in? His intuition was screaming to him that something was wrong here.

He didn't know who this unexpected intruder was. This intruder's face was covered by his strange dark demonic tattoos, making it impossible to clearly see his face.

Shadow Overflow didn't know why, but this youth gave off a familiarly repugnant feeling, one that aroused his loathing.

"No matter who you are, since you dare to intrude upon my lair then die!"

Shadow Overflow coldly sneered. As a sixth level dark divine runic master, he had experienced and weathered countless storms before.

Towards this unknown visitor, although he was startled he wasn't afraid. He didn't think that this person's cultivation was too high.

His hands wove lines in the void. The originally calm space began to bubble and explode with energy like raging lava.

The surrounding walls were all covered with colorful God Beast drawings. And now, they seemed to come alive, releasing a strange mystical power of fire.

At this time, Lin Ming could also clearly feel that Shadow Overflow's chamber seemed to come alive. The glistening dyes used to draw the murals on the walls began to shine and emit a turbulent essence energy – they were clearly manufactured from wonderful fire-attribute heavenly materials.

In front of Shadow Overflow, a lifelike fire rune was drawn, one that looked like a snake formed from flame. The fire essence energy in the dyes on the murals started to be energized and drawn into the middle of the rune.

Everything was actually a mighty and massive divine runic symbol.

Lin Ming was startled. He didn't think that Shadow Overflow had filled his entire chamber with materials used to draw a divine runic symbol and could instantly summon them to defend against enemies.

In a moment, a blazing hot divine runic symbol appeared, so hot that even the air began to bubble. The ground instantly cracked and melted away. Lin Ming was directly surrounded by these flames. The demonic tattoos on his body and the black energy around him began to burn, rapidly dissipating.

As the demonic energy dissipated, it also caused Lin Ming's face to be revealed. Since he came to Shadow Overflow's lair, he hadn't changed his appearance.

Shadow Overflow was now able to clearly see Lin Ming's face.

As Shadow Overflow saw this face that had haunted him like a nightmare, he suddenly felt as if he had fallen into an icy lake.

"It's you! Lin Ming!?"

Shadow Overflow's withered old eyes opened wide. He looked at Lin Ming with hate and fear, "You, you actually dared to enter my mansion!?"

No matter what, he never imagined that while the dark divine runic masters under his command were searching everywhere for information about Lin Ming's whereabouts in order to share it with evil influences, Lin Ming would actually come to him on his own initiative and try to attack him.

But Lin Ming didn't even have a Holy Lord cultivation. Was it possible he thought he could kill a Great World King?

Shadow Overflow certainly wouldn't doubt Lin Ming's talent, but for a half-step Holy Lord to kill a Great World King, Shadow Overflow didn't believe Lin Ming had this ability!

Chapter 1744 – Leaving the Asura Road

Chapter 1744 – Leaving the Asura Road

…

…

…

Because of Shadow Overflow’s sudden attack, the entire chamber was turned burning hot. And when this energy burned through the demonic tattoos that covered Lin Ming’s body and was released from the control of Shadow Overflow’s soul force, it began to rapidly spread everywhere.

Flames spread all around, burning up the entire chamber, turning it into a conflagration of hell.

The young maid that had been tossed on Shadow Overflow’s bed cried out in alarm. Her clothes had caught fire and she would soon be swallowed up by the tongues of fire.

With her cultivation, it was naturally impossible for her to resist the shockwaves from the fires.

Seeing this, Lin Ming frowned. He flicked a finger and a rune came whistling out, covering the maid. After the rune absorbed all of the flames it transported her far outside.

Shadow Overflow saw all of this happen. A severe and mercilessly cold light flashed in his eyes, “You dare to divert your attention at such a time? Die!”

Shadow Overflow shouted out loud. He grasped three divine runic symbols from his spatial ring and threw them towards Lin Ming.

These three divine runic symbols all formed different shapes as they hurtled towards Lin Ming. They all possessed darkness-attributes. As they shot through the void, they covered space in endless chaos.

These were sixth grade divine runic symbols that Shadow Overflow kept on himself for self-defense. Facing Lin Ming, he cast them all out without a hint of hesitation!

Hu –

The entire room was swallowed by the energy of the divine runic symbols. Within a terrifying black vortex, the walls, furniture, bed, everything was twisted into ash and then even the ash disappeared. This sort of disappearance was not disintegration or tearing, but complete annihilation, leaving not even the tiniest bit of matter to prove that they existed in the world once.

This was the terror of the Concept of Darkness. Although Shadow Overflow's combat strength wasn't much, the divine runic symbols he drew up were considerably strong.

By the time the darkness scattered, the entire palace had been razed, everything disappearing without a trace.

This also included Lin Ming.

In the midst of the ruins, the only one left was Shadow Overflow. As he looked at the mess around him, he maintained absolute vigilance.

Although Lin Ming was only a half-step Holy Lord, Shadow Overflow didn't have the slightest thought of underestimating him. In his opinion, this junior had countless methods to use and in addition to that he even obtained a 92% completion rate in the final trial. Shadow Overflow had no choice but to be careful.

"Did he die…?"

Shadow Overflowed gripped a divine runic symbol in one hand, his eyes cold. He didn't think anything would be able to survive in that horrifying black vortex.

But at the same time, he also didn't believe that someone like Lin Ming would die so easily.

At this time, Shadow Overflow's pupils shrank and the greatest sense of crisis he had ever felt in his entire life washed over him. From not too far away, space tore open and a bright red spear thrust straight towards him.

What followed this spear was the vast and boundless grandmist force field. It covered all space in a thousand foot radius.

Lin Ming had hidden himself in a space distortion to avoid Shadow Overflow's attack. Now as he thrust out his spear, there was grandmist energy that blocked all directions for Shadow Overflow to dodge in.

"This brat!"

Shadow Overflow's face distorted grotesquely. From every pore on his body, black light shined out. Black energy surged, causing space itself to twist and surge.

This black energy instantly formed a 50 foot high demon soul with fiendish features and wearing pitch black armor.

Every scale of the armor had a howling ghost head stretching out of it.

The demon soul was filled with surging soul force that filled the air with evil and pestilent energy.

"Blood Pond Hell!"

Shadow Overflow shouted out loud. In that moment, the surroundings for a thousand feet all around turned into a suffocating hell, filled with a thick yin chill.

He took out a ghost banner from his inner world. This ghost banner had many demon souls sealed within. Then, all of these demon souls came rushing out, filling the world with the howls of ghosts and the cries of gods!

These demon souls had already substantialized into reality; this was the manifestation of an extremely potent soul force. The demon souls plunged towards Lin Ming, their claws stretched out as a massive space storm followed them.

As these ghosts rushed towards Lin Ming's from all direction, they emitted sad and pained cries. The sound waves crashed against the mind, making one feel intense fear.

"Divine soul attack?"

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. As a dark divine runic master and also a spiritas, Shadow Overflow possessed a number of soul attacks, all of them the kind that the spiritas were skilled in.

But to Lin Ming, this attack wasn't anything at all.

Wu – Wu – Wu –

As the fierce ghosts cried out, Lin Ming's spear light was swallowed up by them. Then, they all continued rushing towards Lin Ming.

Even within the grandmist space, Lin Ming could still feel a soul force wanting to sink into his body, making him turn cold.

"These ghosts aren't bad!"

Spiritas martial artists excelled in raising fierce ghosts to swallow the souls of enemies. To many martial artists, dealing with these malicious spirits was the same as living a nightmare. But to Lin Ming, they were actually a tonic.

Lin Ming stretched out his hands. On his fingertips, faint traces of a strong aura of dead soul began to percolate. Black sparks appeared in his hand, slowly forming an ink black wheel that spun around.

Lin Ming cast out seal after seal, all of them impossibly complex. Then, behind him, the faint figure of an Asura appeared.

As this Asura martial god appeared, the wheel began to spin even faster.

The entire black wheel suddenly rose up, blocking out the skies. Dark purple Heavenly Dao runes began to spin along, like planets circling a star.

Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

Then, before any of the strong demon souls that leapt towards Lin Ming were able to reach him, all of them were pulled up and sucked into the endless vortex created by the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel.

Wuwuwu - !

The ghosts howled in sorrow. One by one they were torn to pieces, turning into pure soul energy that was absorbed by Lin Ming.

“You…!”

Shadow Overflow’s eyes were blood red. Watching those demon souls blow up one at a time, he felt his heart drip blood. Those demon souls had been raised over tens of thousands of years and were fed countless lives to be produced. He had even fused a part of his own life spirit into them to refine them. Now they were being twisted into pieces and absorbed by Lin Ming; how could he not be angry?

He hurriedly wanted to take back those ghosts, but he discovered that the black wheel Lin Ming summoned was like an all-consuming black hole. Once a ghost fell into the traction range of that black hole, it couldn’t escape.

Even Shadow Overflow’s life spirit was swallowed up.

“Ahh!”

Shadow Overflow cried out miserably.

He felt a severe pain in his spiritual sea. Blood leaked out of his nose and mouth.

His life spirit being swallowed caused tremendous damage to him.

With a loud cracking sound, the ghost streamer he held was also twisted and broken by that endless black soul storm.

“This is… what sort of cultivation method is that!?”

Shadow Overflow was panic-stricken. He was heavily bleeding from all orifices on his head. His body swayed and his face was as pale as funeral paper.

Lin Ming couldn’t be bothered with speaking to Shadow Overflow. He turned his hand and the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel was received back into his body. These souls that Shadow Overflow raised were a considerably nourishing tonic to Lin Ming.

At this time, Lin Ming calmly stretched out his right hand. Motes of dark light condensed in his palm, shining with a mystic strength.

After several breaths of time, a dark gray cube appeared in his palm, brimming with an ancient and powerful aura.

Seeing this object appear, the already bleeding Shadow Overflow’s entire body turned cold. His body shivered as if he had seen the most terrifying demon to ever exist.

“What is that!?”

Shadow Overflow cried out in horror. As a spiritas powerhouse, he had an instinctual fear towards the Magic Cube. This was a suppression that came from the deepest depths of his soul.

“Die.”

Lin Ming didn’t wait for Shadow Overflow to respond. He flicked his fingers and the gray Magic Cube turned into a beam of light that shot into the space between Shadow Overflow’s eyebrows.

In that moment, Shadow Overflow felt his body shake. He trembled, clawing at his head, his old face crazily distorting. “You… what did you put in my spiritual sea!?”

As Shadow Overflow spoke, he felt a terrifying pain spread through him in agonizing waves, as if he would be torn apart at any moment.

Lin Ming’s expression was indifferent. He faced Shadow Overflow and reached out his hand.

Shadow Overflow felt a giant invisible hand catch him and bring him floating up into the air. His expression was that of absolute pain and his withered face was twisted into an unrecognizable mess. He pulled at his hair like he wanted to tear open his head.

At this time, Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred. He turned his head and saw five black-robed men rushing towards his location in a panic.

“What’s going on! Who are you!?”

These five black-robed men were the dark divine runic masters that had been at Shadow Overflow’s banquet feast. They had originally been in their own rooms, ravishing the maids they had chosen. But when they felt horrifying energy fluctuations spread out they all quickly put on their clothes and rushed over to see the scene of Shadow Overflow being grasped in the air by Lin Ming.

"You… you are… Lin Ming!?"

Some of these dark divine runic masters had gone to the Divine Rune City Auction, thus they recognized Lin Ming.

Upon saying this, everyone's complexion changed. They glanced over at Shadow Overflow who was being gripped by Lin Ming, then, a feeling of intense fear rose in their hearts. Without further thinking, they all turned tail and ran!

"None of you may leave."

Lin Ming coldly said. Within Shadow Overflow's spiritual sea, the Magic Cube began to release an even more dazzling black light!

An invisible black vortex started to revolve in Shadow Overflow's spiritual sea, becoming increasingly large. The vortex completely swallowed Shadow Overflow and even those dark divine runic masters that tried to run were caught in the vortex, all of them twisted up by it. No matter how much they shouted out in anguish, all of them were sucked up into the vortex, none of them able to resist its terrifying strength as they were ripped to death.

A moment later, the black vortex disappeared, turning into a gray cube that flew back into Lin Ming's body.

Shadow Overflow, as well as those several dark divine runic masters, had their souls torn to shreds and swallowed into the Magic Cube.

Beneath the unique corrosive ability of the Magic Cube, their souls turned into pure memory fragments that were sealed within the Magic Cube space.

After Lin Ming killed these people, he turned and flew up without hesitation, shooting straight into the horizon!

As he was flying, he waved his right hand and took out a plain command token from his spatial ring.

It was unknown what metal this command token was made from. On the front was written ‘Asura’, and on the back there was the carving of a demon.

This was the Asura Command that allowed one to freely pass in and out of the Asura Road.

With the Asura Command in hand, Lin Ming activated it.

In the next moment, the Asura Command released a dim bronze light that enveloped Lin Ming. Then his figure became increasingly dim. After half an incense stick of time, he completely vanished.

Like this, Lin Ming left the Asura Road. His 80 years of adventure in the Asura Road had finally come to an end…

Chapter 1745 – Return to the Divine Realm

Chapter 1745 – Return to the Divine Realm

…

…

…

A boundless starry sky, limitless, without end.

Somewhere in this vast space, at this moment, a giant space distortion appeared. Space split open and a space storm rushed out from the crack, followed by two women and one man.

These three people were Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, and Mo Brightmoon.

After all these years, Lin Ming had finally returned to the Divine Realm – this was the homeland of humanity.

Feeling the extremely familiar world Laws around him, Lin Ming took a deep breath, filled with emotion. It felt as if everything he had known was a lifetime ago.

But compared to Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian was actually ecstatic. Facing the endless void, her childlike playfulness came back in full force. She placed her hands near her mouth and shouted out as loud as she could in the void, “I’ve returned! I, Ji Xian’er, have finally returned!”

Empty space originally had no medium to carry sound waves, but, Xiao Moxian was able to use the power of Space Laws and move space, using space fluctuations as the medium for communication and allowing her voice to travel out for thousands and thousands of miles.

Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had been away from the Divine Realm for around 80 years. During this time, around 20 years was spent in Tragic Death Valley. Thus, in the Divine Realm, the truth was that around 60 years had passed.

In one parting, so many years had passed. The time that Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian spent in the Asura Road was twice the time they had spent in the Divine Realm. It was no surprise that their reflection upon returning was so intense.

However, compared to Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming, there was someone who had an even more intense reaction.

That was Mo Brightmoon.

She stood in the void of the Divine Realm, familiar with the aura of Laws from her homeland. Without sensing it, hot tears filled her eyes.

How many years had it been? Even she couldn't remember.

But today, she had finally returned to the Divine Realm.

She recalled when she had been hunted down by Tian Mingzi. She remembered the scene of when her older sister had sacrificed herself to activate the Magic Cube. In that moment, her heart ached. In these years, although Mo Brightmoon had searched for her big sister, she never dared to imagine there would come a day when they could meet again.

"Lin Ming… you said that my big sister is in Divine Dream Heavenly Palace?"

Empyrean Divine Dream had been famous for a long time and Mo Brightmoon naturally knew her great name. Mentioning such a place, Mo Brightmoon was awed.

"Yes. We should go to a nearby planet to purchase a star chart. With Primordius Heavenly Palace's speed, it shouldn't take over a month to reach Divine Dream Heavenly Palace."

Hearing Lin Ming speak about returning to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Xiao Moxian seemed to remember something and she felt as if she lost something important in her heart. Her joy upon returning to the Divine Realm rapidly faded away, leaving her sad and upset.

Facing the endless starry skies, Xiao Moxian's eyes blurred as she lost herself in her thoughts.

"Miss Xian'er, are you okay?"

Mo Brightmoon asked with concern, noticing the change in Xiao Moxian.

"I'm fine."

Xiao Moxian casually responded, unable to summon any energy.

Looking at Xiao Moxian's despondent appearance, Lin Ming fell silent, not saying a single word.

He naturally knew what Xiao Moxian was thinking.

In the past, he and Xiao Moxian were in Bai Qi's grave where they were forced into a dead end by Tian Mingzi. Lin Ming exhausted every method he had and finally won the chance to catch his breath, momentarily escaping into Primordius Heavenly Palace.

There, within Primordius Heavenly Palace, he had bet everything on a single throw of the dice and attempted to break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. But in the critical moment he had been foiled by Tian Mingzi and nearly failed!

Following this, Xiao Moxian ignored all repercussions and recklessly gave her primordial yin to Lin Ming, allowing yin and yang to fuse together. With this, Lin Ming was able to equalize the tyrannical energy from the Grandmist Spirit Bead essence in his body, and then crush the heaven and earth dao diagram, rushing all the way into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

At the time, when Xiao Moxian made this decision, she had undergone countless struggles.

After all, the demon race and monster race were more inclined towards joining forces with the saints than they were joining forces with humanity. In their estimation, in anyone's estimation, they felt that in this great world calamity it was far more likely the saints would emerge victorious.

Even the Empyreans of humanity couldn't help but acknowledge this.

If the demon and monster races joined together with the saints, they would inevitably be ranked under them in the future. But, this fate was better than being completely annihilated by the saints.

Xiao Moxian was a proud daughter of heaven who originated from both the monster race and demon race. It was likely that she would be married off to the Good Fortune Saint Son in the future. If it was known that she was with Lin Ming, it could be called a betrayal of her people.

However, during her days in the Asura Road, Xiao Moxian continued following Lin Ming. As if she were living a wonderful dream, she didn't allow any of those troublesome matters to cloud her mind. Or, perhaps it had been a way for her to escape the chains of her fate.

But now she had awakened from her dream and had no choice but to face the brutal reality laid out before her.

Lin Ming had to return to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. As for Xiao Moxian, she had to return to Demondawn Heavenly Palace.

From this place, they would separate. As for what would happen in the future, Xiao Moxian couldn't imagine it.

For a time, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were both silent.

Lin Ming looked at Xiao Moxian, his eyes recording every curve of her beautiful face. Time seemed to blur as his thoughts returned to Bai Qi's Tomb. Those words that Xiao Moxian said to him reverberated in his ears…

…If you were to die with me here, would you regret it?…

…But Lin Ming, I don't want you to die. I will give you my everything… and when you break through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and escape from here, you will live on for a billion years, a trillion years, and my blood will always follow you…

Remembering all of this, Lin Ming was filled with emotions. He hesitated for a moment and then opened his mouth to ask, "Must you go back?"

If Xiao Moxian were to return, then Lin Ming could imagine that she wouldn't be able to hide what happened between him and her from the demon race and monster race.

This was because Xiao Moxian's bloodline was special. She had given her primordial yin to him, and anyone that was specifically probing for this could find out the truth.

The atmosphere of the Divine Realm was originally biased towards being conservative. In the Divine Realm, there was a high importance placed on the chastity of a woman. In addition to the marriage union with the saints, if all of this were to be discovered then she would find it difficult to gain a foothold in the monster race or demon race. She would inevitably face tremendous pressure.

Lin Ming didn't want to see this occur, thus he asked this question. If Xiao Moxian hid herself in the Magic Cube space then no matter how heaven-defying Empyrean Demondawn's methods were, he would never be able to find her.

But, doing so was the same as Xiao Moxian abandoning her people. With her personality she would never agree to such a thing.

And indeed, Xiao Moxian shook her head. "Big Brother Lin, we must part here. If possible, I will try to change my grandfather's mind…"

As Xiao Moxian spoke to here, her complexion paled. In truth, saying she would try to change her grandfather's mind was just random words. How could someone like Xiao Moxian change such an important decision of the demon race and monster race? This was a decision that concerned the survival of their two races.

Lin Ming silently nodded, not speaking.

"Big Brother Lin… if destiny wills it, our paths will cross again."

As Xiao Moxian spoke, she threw herself into Lin Ming's chest and deeply kissed him.

Then, without pause, her figure flickered and she disappeared from Lin Ming's chest like a dark fairy.

She turned into a black beam of light and submerged into the endless darkness. Her slender figure disappeared into the vast starry skies.

Lin Ming looked at the direction Xiao Moxian disappeared in, gazing off into the distance for a long time.

Beside Lin Ming, Mo Brightmoon was puzzled. She waited for a long time and finally couldn't help but ask, "Lin Ming, what is the deal with you and Xiao Moxian?"

Lin Ming was silent. After a long period of reflection, he began to speak to Mo Brightmoon about his history with Xiao Moxian, his karmic ties to her, the cause and effects of their relationship.

Mo Brightmoon listened with a slight frown. She never imagined that this relationship concerned the life and death of different races. To try and overcome the hostility of two races for marriage, it was unlikely there would be a good ending, especially for Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian who would never abandon their races.

Mo Brightmoon said, "Lin Ming… according to what you said, it will be extremely difficult for you to be together with Xiao Moxian. The only exception is if… you are powerful,

powerful enough that you can interfere in the high level decisions of the demon and monster races…”

Listening to Mo Brightmoon’s words, Lin Ming wryly smiled. “How can I not also understand this truth? But for me to reach that degree of strength, I have no idea how many years or months it will take. At the very least, only when I have the ability to resist a True Divinity will my words have power in this great world calamity and be able to influence the decisions of the monster race and demon race. Before then, anything I say is simply empty talk.”

Lin Ming shook his head over and over.

What he needed was strength! Strength to struggle with a True Divinity!

However, no matter how heaven-defying Lin Ming’s talent was, it was impossible for his strength to reach the True Divinity realm in hundreds or even thousands of years. He needed to experience an extremely long period of accumulation!

“Come, let’s return to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.”

“Mm, okay.”

Mo Brightmoon nodded. Because of Lin Ming’s matters, her joy of seeing her big sister again was a little diluted. She truly wished from the bottom of her heart that there would be a good ending between Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian.

Like this, Lin Ming and Mo Brightmoon used Primordius Heavenly Palace as a spirit ship, rapidly flying through the void.

As Lin Ming and Mo Brightmoon were flying towards Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Xiao Moxian had already returned to Demondawn Heavenly Palace – Demondawn Heavenly Palace was much closer.

Just as she reached the periphery of Demondawn Heavenly Palace, before entering, Xiao Moxian discovered a change. And this change caused her to recall something. At once, she felt even more helpless. She darkly sighed...

Chapter 1746 – Monster Emperor’s Grand Longevity Feast

Chapter 1746 – Monster Emperor’s Grand Longevity Feast

…

…

…

At this time, in front of Xiao Moxian, the entirety of Demondawn Heavenly Palace was concealed in a sea of fog. Arranged around the Heavenly Palace were all sorts of great arrays.

These great arrays came in numerous colors and between them were nine rainbow bridges that spanned thousands of miles. Beneath the brilliant arcs of light, all sorts of wonderful spirit flowers and spirit grasses grew, all of them blooming together in auspicious glory. It was a beautiful sight to behold.

All of these spells and array formations were not for defensive purposes but purely for ornamental value. In Demondawn Heavenly Palace, a place that was usually shrouded in solemn dignity, they normally wouldn’t decorate the area with these types of array formations.

If these types of array formations were to appear in Demondawn Heavenly Palace there could only be a single possibility, and it was that there was some grand celebration occurring.

As Xiao Moxian considered the time, she suddenly realized that this year was likely the Monster Emperor’s longevity feast.

In the Divine Realm, the various rulers of influences would hold grand birthday feasts, and these events only occurred once every 10,000 years. Every time these longevity feasts were held, it would be done in as grand a manner as possible. These celebrations were not just a symbol of an individual's status, but a manifestation of their respective influence's strength.

Xiao Moxian calculated the time. After being in the Asura Road for so long, nearly 60 years had passed in the Divine Realm. It was indeed about time for the Monster Emperor's longevity feast to occur.

And in these years, because the great calamity was beginning, the Divine Realm was in a perilous state. Demondawn Heavenly Palace and the monster race were originally close to begin with, but now they had become even closer. The two influences could be said to have drawn back together in order to protect themselves in these tumultuous times.

In this sort of situation, if the Monster Emperor were to hold his longevity feast, Demondawn Heavenly Palace would also open array formations, decorating the entire land in festive delights to congratulate the monster race.

And during the Monster Emperor's longevity feast, Empyrean Demondawn was sure to personally attend. Moreover, the Monster Emperor would invite heroes from all over the world to join in the celebrations.

As the proudest daughter of heaven of both the monster race and demon race, Xiao Moxian would naturally represent the younger generation. She would also be the lead junior in the longevity feast.

In this situation, it could be imagined just how much attention Xiao Moxian would receive.

Whether it was other influences, Demondawn Heavenly Palace, or the monster race, all sorts of high level figures would be looking at her.

At that time, it would be even more difficult to conceal what had happened between her and Lin Ming.

In this sort of great scene, if it was discovered that her primordial yin had been lost then it would undoubtedly be a vicious slap to the faces of the monster race and demon race. Her family would lose all honor and her days would not be any better off.

After Xiao Moxian saw the changes around Demondawn Heavenly Palace, these were all things that she deduced could happen.

Xiao Moxian was even thinking of quietly hiding away to avoid the limelight and then return to Demondawn Heavenly Palace later. But at this time, her entire body shook. A deep and bass voice sounded out in her ears.

“Xian’er, you’ve finally returned! I was very worried about you! It’s good that you’ve returned to us! I have already sent a sound transmission to Imperial Concubine Scarlet to arrange a welcoming reception for you. Return to the palace and rest. Three days from now I will leave seclusion and you and I will both go to the monster race to congratulate the Monster Emperor at this longevity feast!”

This dignified voice was filled with a nearly imperceptible gentleness and concern. This was undoubtedly the voice of Empyrean Demondawn!

As soon as Xiao Moxian appeared at the Demondawn Great World, Empyrean Demondawn had immediately sensed it. With his incomparably powerful sense and his bloodline relationship with Xiao Moxian, he was the first to notice her arrival.

Xiao Moxian had spent so many years at the Asura Road that it would be a lie to say Empyrean Demondawn wasn’t worried about her.

Although he knew that Xiao Moxian had a great destiny upon her, he had been constantly worried until he could see her safely return. Now that she was back, he could finally feel at ease.

“Grandfather…”

Hearing Empyrean Demondawn’s voice, Xiao Moxian didn’t know what sort of taste she felt. She could only try her best to put on a happy smile and say, “I’ve made Grandfather worry over me. Xian’er has returned, but I don’t need a welcoming reception or anything like that. Grandfather can rest well in seclusion.”

“Haha! This is how we must do things. Since you came back from the Asura Road, this is a major event of my Demondawn Heavenly Palace and also a matter that I must inform the entire world of! Then again, in these past days there have been far too many celebratory events and wonderful occasions occurring, it’s been far too busy! You take a rest first. Three days from now I will leave seclusion and you can help me arrange matters about the longevity feast. Later, we will go to the monster race and Monster Concubine Archess will greet us. We’ll also hold your welcome celebration then, haha!”

Empyrean Demondawn happily laughed. But as Xiao Moxian heard this, she felt bitterness swell up in her heart. To her, all of these celebrations were nothing but trouble. If she didn’t handle things perfectly then these celebrations might become a tragedy instead.

As for informing the entire world or something like that, this left Xiao Moxian utterly speechless.

However, Xiao Moxian was already the pre-ordained future Palace Master of Demondawn Heavenly Palace. Since she returned safely from the Asura Road, this was naturally something that had to be announced to the world so that she could also show off her glory.

But to all of this, Xiao Moxian wasn’t too worried. What she worried about was that Monster Concubine Archess.

Concubine Archess was not the average person. ‘Archess’ meant that she was the first, the head of all the imperial concubines. Her status was only inferior to that of the Monster Empress.

Moreover, Xiao Moxian had heard that this Concubine Archess possessed a profound cultivation and her plans were deep and intricate. This was how she managed to earn the trust and favor of the Monster Emperor.

This Concubine Archess had been specially chosen to manage the gates of the monster race and welcome Empyrean Demondawn. Empyrean Demondawn was a character on the same level as the Monster Emperor and if he came to give his birthday greetings then the Monster Emperor would naturally treat him with the utmost respect and courtesy. Thus, the Monster Emperor had Concubine Archess especially receive Empyrean Demondawn to show off the close relationship between the monster race and demon race.

It wouldn't be easy for Xiao Moxian to hide the truth from this woman.

Moreover, in the future, as more and more grand figures arrived, wanting to hide the truth from all of these people would be increasingly difficult!

If she was discovered, especially in front of the monster race…

Thinking of this, Xiao Moxian took a deep breath. If she really couldn't conceal matters then the only option was to be open and honest and confess everything to Empyrean Demondawn. But doing so would lead to her confinement in her room and it would no longer be possible for her to communicate with Lin Ming.

But this was a better choice than to be found out on the day of the longevity feast. If that happened the situation would be even worse, and even Lin Ming would be forced to stand atop the precipice and be denounced by everyone.

However, as she thought that she would have to be parted from Lin Ming like this, Xiao Moxian immediately lost all spirit to do anything.

She looked at Demondawn Heavenly Palace. No matter how wonderfully colored the array formations were, how brilliant the rainbows and dazzling mists of light, how enchanting all the world treasures there were, all she felt was loneliness and suffering.

She had always been a free and easy individual. But now she had to worry about the reputation of her chastity, as well as the major events that were happening within her race. All of this meant inevitable headaches, worrying over the outcome of what would happen.

"I have three days... I must make use of this time to restore as much of my primordial yin energy as I can so no one can see anything."

As Xiao Moxian was thinking this, she flew towards Demondawn Heavenly Palace.

At this time, a group of people flew out from Demondawn Heavenly Palace, led by a beautiful woman. Behind this woman were several dozen nubile maids.

This beautiful woman was Empyrean Demondawn's favored concubine. She had come out especially to greet Xiao Moxian.

"Congratulations Miss for returning from the Asura Road and becoming stronger yet again!"

The beautiful woman was all smiles. Although she was Xiao Moxian's elder, her words faintly took Xiao Moxian as the one to be respected. This was a reasonable matter. Xiao Moxian possessed an extremely high status in Demondawn Heavenly Palace. If juniors saw her they had to bow and even many Elders had to flatter and treat her well.

"I've troubled Aunty Scarlet. You even came out to meet me." Xiao Moxian suppressed the worry in her heart and put on her best cute and lovable smile. With her cultivation, it was naturally easy to hide the truth from these people who possessed a low cultivation.

"Miss is too polite, just what sort of words are those. By all reasoning, we should have sent a team of people to greet you as soon as you returned to the Divine Realm. However, you were also a bit hasty. How could you return to the Divine Realm so quickly and not inform us beforehand? I would have been able to prepare a lavish feast for your arrival. Unfortunately, the entire Heavenly Palace is preparing for the Monster Emperor's longevity feast right now so there isn't enough manpower to prepare your welcome reception."

The beautiful maid smiled as she spoke. As for the maids beside her, they helped drape a phoenix cloak around Xiao Moxian and led her into a jade bird carriage where they slowly flew back to Demondawn Heavenly Palace.

As they flew back, the jade bird carriage was buffeted by strong astral winds. For some reason, Xiao Moxian felt a bit dizzy.

She held onto her forehead, feeling a little hot.

“Miss, are you alright?”

The beautiful woman discovered that Xiao Moxian was acting a bit strangely, thus she asked a question in worry. It looked as if Xiao Moxian was feeling uncomfortable.

“I’m fine.”

Xiao Moxian gently smiled, also a bit puzzled herself.

This sort of feeling was like a mortal having a cold. Of course, to such a strong martial artist like Xiao Moxian, suffering from something like a common cold was nothing more than a joke.

“The pressure must be too great...”

Xiao Moxian took a deep breath. There was indeed a tremendous deal of pressure on her mind. Could this be causing the true essence in her inner world to flow turbulently?

Xiao Moxian explained the situation to herself like this and then forgot about it.

“This is probably because Miss has been tired out from adventuring through the Asura Road. With so many battles, you surely must have consumed too much energy. Now that you’ve returned to the Divine Realm and are able to relax, it’s inevitable you will feel tired.”

The beautiful woman thought about matters and gave an explanation she also thought was reasonable.

Xiao Moxian only gave a perfunctory smile.

Upon returning to Demondawn Heavenly Palace, many maids and disciples had already received the news of Xiao Moxian's return and were preparing to welcome her. They spread petals on the floor and sprinkled purifying water along her path.

Under the accompaniment of over ten palace maids, Xiao Moxian arrived at Nine Phoenix Pond to bathe and change her clothes.

Afterwards, with Xiao Moxian refusing everything, she pushed back all plans for an evening dinner.

She used the excuse that she was tired and retired to her room.

The comfortable silk sheets and large bed didn't arouse Xiao Moxian's drowsiness. She immediately sat down in meditation and began to revolve the heaven and earth origin energy within herself.

She had to gather as much primordial yin energy as she could in these three days so that Empyrean Demondawn, the monster race, and the other powerhouses wouldn't be able to discover anything.

After two nirvanas, Xiao Moxian's primordial yin energy had restored a little. But because she then dual cultivated with Lin Ming, it was inevitable that it would be affected once again.

Of course, while passing her primordial yin to Lin Ming, she had also obtained an extremely powerful pure yang energy from him.

This pure yang energy originally allowed Xiao Moxian to reach yin yang harmony. To her, it was extremely beneficial; this was the significance behind dual cultivation.

But now Xiao Moxian had to suppress this pure yang energy, sealing it in the depths of her inner world. Otherwise, it would expose her secret.

Slowly, her primordial yin energy began to grow. As for the pure yang energy, it was gradually sealed up.

But for some unknown reason, Xiao Moxian felt as if she was easily tired. Just relaxing a little, she felt her strength constantly passing away from her. Moreover, as she sat in meditation adjusting her breath, she fell dizzy several times. This caused her to feel that there was something strange occurring within her.

Chapter 1747 – Xiao Moxian's Worries

Chapter 1747 – Xiao Moxian's Worries

…

…

…

"What is wrong with me…?"

Sitting in meditation, Xiao Moxian opened her eyes. She found that she was wet with sweat and even her forehead was covered with beads of sweat.

This was not due to tiredness from meditation, but because of weakness!

Her body was weakening, causing her to sweat!

"What is happening?"

Xiao Moxian's eyebrows pressed together. At such a critical moment how could she encounter such a strange occurrence?

With Xiao Moxian's cultivation and strength, although she couldn't fight Lin Ming in a head-on battle, that was only compared to him. Amongst others of her generation, Xiao Moxian was a crane amongst chickens; no one could hope to be her opponent.

Along with the pure yang energy she had absorbed from Lin Ming and her heaven-defying half-phoenix body, her blood vitality was extremely powerful. Let alone sitting in meditation for an entire day, she could easily handle fighting all day and all night.

But now, the more she sat in meditation, the more tired she became. All of the strength she gathered was slowly weakened.

“No, there’s something wrong with my body.”

As she recalled the dizziness she felt when she rode in the carriage, Xiao Moxian was increasingly confident that there was some problem with her body. One time could be called an accident, but it was impossible for repeated cases to be a coincidence. There was absolutely something wrong here.

She quickly investigated her body, probing her meridians, flesh and blood, organs, and even spiritual sea. There were no problems with any of them.

Only in her inner world were there some differences.

“This is…”

Xiao Moxian was surprised to find that within her inner world, there was a strange vortex slowly absorbing all of the origin energy within her.

Generally speaking, a martial artist’s inner world was a whole world, in other words a ‘seamless’ world. It was impossible for a leaking point to exist!

But now, it seemed as if there had been a hole poked within Xiao Moxian’s inner world.

A massive amount of origin energy was continually passing out from this hole.

And as this origin energy passed out, it didn’t completely disappear but stayed within her body. It didn’t affect her cultivation, only making it so that she couldn’t summon this strength.

“How could this be?”

Xiao Moxian panicked a little. She was not in the mood for such a joke to be played on her right now. Every bit of cultivation was important to her and she needed to use all of it to condense her primordial yin energy and suppress the pure yang energy within her.

If there was a problem with her cultivation, the chances of her being exposed were even greater.

“What is this vortex? Just how is it absorbing and confining my power? It is the aftermath of having absorbed the Undying Inferno?”

Xiao Moxian immediately thought, startled. If the Undying Inferno’s soul wasn’t extinguished, then perhaps it might be thinking of wresting away her strength and stealing her body. This was not a minor matter at all!

Thinking of this, Xiao Moxian raised her vigilance to the limit and immediately locked onto this ‘vortex’ within her mind, ready to engage the Undying Inferno in a brutal battle in her spiritual sea at any moment.

However, Xiao Moxian soon discovered that the situation was completely different from what she had thought.

The vortex had a gentle atmosphere, completely different from the tyrannical and cruel aura of the Undying Inferno. Faintly, Xiao Moxian could even feel something akin to her flesh and blood in this vortex, as if there was some small and weak soul calling out to her.

She had no idea why, but this feeling left Xiao Moxian moved. A deep sense of tender love began growing in her heart, as if this little soul in the vortex was more important than her life. This sort of feeling was beyond description, but was still ingrained into her very bones.

“This… this is…”

Xiao Moxian was stunned. On her bed, she wasn’t able to respond for a long, long time.

After confirming the situation several times and reexamining her body, verifying her acupoints, checking her bloodline and meridian channels, she finally understood what had happened…

This so-called ‘vortex’ was in truth a small and immature soul. And for such a soul to appear within her, there was only a single explanation. Her dual cultivation with Lin Ming had resulted in her pregnancy!

This vortex, the energy mass within it, was her and Lin Ming’s child!

“I actually… have a child…”

At this moment, an indescribable feeling filled Xiao Moxian’s heart. She felt as if all her thoughts were drowned in a fog, her entire mind turning blank.

Before this, Xiao Moxian had never made any preparations to ward against pregnancy. This was because the more powerful a race was, the more difficult it was for them to become pregnant. Moreover, Xiao Moxian was a half-phoenix and she was of a completely different race from Lin Ming.

If they wanted to produce a living crystallization of their love, that was something that might not happen even after countless hardships and attempts. It was possible that there might not be any children between them for the rest of their lives.

But she never imagined that after she left the Asura Road, she would find out she was pregnant.

This happiness had come far too suddenly. Originally, she had already mentally prepared herself to never have any children in her life. In the Asura Road, whenever she thought of this matter, she would feel pain in her heart. For a woman to not be able to have a child with the man she loved most, this sort of regret could be imagined.

To hold her and Lin Ming’s child in her arms, this was something that Xiao Moxian yearned for in her dreams. And now her dream had suddenly come true.

But what followed the arrival of this happiness was endless worry!

This child had come at the worst time possible.

Whether it was her or Lin Ming, both of them were too weak right now and neither had the ability to change the course of the world. It wasn't even known if they could be together in the future.

Moreover, within this upcoming grand calamity, the birth of this child would involve the survival of many races. To this unborn child, such a heavy fate was far too cruel.

"How… how could this be…"

Xiao Moxian rubbed her stomach, a strange taste in her mouth.

Joy, happiness, sorrow, worry, all sorts of moods passed through her, making it impossible for her to feel at ease.

But what was without a doubt was that with her pregnancy, it would be far, far more difficult to conceal her affairs with Lin Ming.

Luckily, there was a single point to rejoice, and this was that the child within her was not ordinary at all. She wouldn't have a pregnancy like a mortal would, gathering natal energy and giving birth after ten months. If that happened then she really would be seen through.

Xiao Moxian had a special physique and Lin Ming also had all sorts of strange bloodlines in his body. Not only did he have the blood of a phoenix and dragon within him but he also possessed a drop of Asura blood. Compared to the bloodlines of a dragon or phoenix, this sort of bloodline was incomparably more precious.

Whether it was Xiao Moxian or Lin Ming, they both possessed a heaven-defying talent and divine body. Currently, the child formed between them was only the purest group of blood essence. Its growth would be an extremely slow process that would continue for dozens of years. Even hundreds of years passing before birth wouldn't be strange at all. But during this period, this child was already able to substantialize in the inner world of its parent and commune with the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy.

"It's either good fortune or disaster… and if it's disaster then it cannot be avoided…"

As Xiao Moxian said this, she clenched her teeth and sat back down in meditation, continuing to accumulate her primordial yin energy. With things having reached this step, she could only walk forwards one step at a time, taking things as they came.

Even though there was only the slimmest chance of making it through this, Xiao Moxian had to furiously struggle for it.

Right now, she absolutely could not honestly speak to Empyrean Demondawn about her and Lin Ming's matters.

If she wasn't pregnant, then if she frankly spoke of her relationship with Lin Ming to Empyrean Demondawn, the most he would have done was confine her to her room and cut off all communications she could have with Lin Ming. But now that she was pregnant, if Empyrean Demondawn or the monster race were to find out, it was hard to imagine what fate this child would suffer!

If this child suffered any accident, to Xiao Moxian, that would be the cruelest thing in the world. She would rather die than have anything happen to her child.

Thinking of this, Xiao Moxian couldn't help but grip her chest. She found it difficult to breathe.

During this longevity feast, in front of all the great characters of the Divine Realm and possibly even representatives of the saints… if her pregnancy was to be revealed…

Xiao Moxian didn't dare to imagine the consequences. Even her fingers began to shiver.

If such an occurrence were to truly occur, if the monster and demon races still chose to ally with the saints, then this child would become the shame of the monster and demon races.

They would definitely decide to kill it before it was born…

Drops of sweat began to run down Xiao Moxian's fingertips.

She was afraid. She was truly, truly afraid.

A chill crossed her body and even her arms and legs felt ice cold.

But at this time, she could faintly feel the small life within her suddenly send out a call. This was a call that came from the soul. Inexplicably, this call warmed Xiao Moxian, as if at that moment courage had bloomed in her heart.

At the longevity feast, if she were indeed exposed, even if everyone within the Divine Realm were to ridicule and mock her, even if they all pointed at her, even if Empyrean Demondawn and the monster race were furious with her, Xiao Moxian wouldn't care at all.

However, if someone dared to move against the child in her belly, if her grandfather didn't care about their familial love, then she could only threaten them with her death!

As Xiao Moxian was filled with countless worries, Lin Ming had arrived at Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

The phantasmal and ethereal Divine Dream Heavenly Palace remained unchanged from 60 years ago. Mo Brightmoon looked at the magnificent jade palace, finding it hard to remain calm. According to what Lin Ming had told her, her big sister was in this palace!

Chapter 1748 – Greeting Divine Dream

Chapter 1748 – Greeting Divine Dream

…

…

…

For 50,000 years, Mo Brightmoon had been constantly worried over her big sister.

She used all sorts of ways and means to find her, but just how vast was the Divine Realm and the three thousand boundless worlds of the lower realms? To look for a single person, that couldn't even be called something as simple as finding a needle in a haystack.

In addition, there was also Tian Mingzi. His existence forced Mo Brightmoon to hide her status, making her search even more fruitless.

"Big Sister is actually cultivating at Divine Dream Heavenly Palace… I wonder just what realm her strength has reached…"

Mo Brightmoon was happy for her big sister from the depths of her heart. She also took joy in the fact that her big sister had met Lin Ming.

And at this time, several white-clothed women flew out from Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, welcoming Lin Ming and Mo Brightmoon.

"Sir Lin, Honorable Master invites your presence."

The white-clothed woman in the lead had a World King cultivation.

In Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, there were only a mere several hundred disciples. Compared to the super large influences of the Divine Realm who often had a hundred billion plus disciples and clansmen, their numbers simply weren’t worth mentioning at all.

However, the disciples of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace were the elites amongst all proud daughters of heaven. The disciples who came here, as long as they grew up, would reach a half-step World King cultivation at the barest minimum.

Lin Ming and Mo Brightmoon followed these disciples and flew into Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. And just as they passed through the grand gates of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming saw a blue-clothed woman hurriedly racing over. This woman had just received the news in her seclusion room and had rushed over to meet Lin Ming.

Seeing this blue-clothed woman appear, Mo Brightmoon froze where she was!

There was no need to guess, no need to doubt. Almost instantly, she was able to confirm that this woman who she had actually never seen before was her big sister Mo Eversnow!

Because Mo Eversnow and Lin Ming had been forced into the Blood Slaughter Steppes, her soul had then fused with the mortal body of the deeply slumbering goddess. Now, her appearance was considerably different from how she was 50,000 years ago.

But because they were sisters, because of the strange soul resonance between them, Mo Brightmoon was able to recognize Mo Eversnow.

And at this time, Mo Eversnow also saw Mo Brightmoon.

Her body shook and her beautiful eyes opened wide as she looked at Mo Brightmoon with an inconceivable expression. She froze where she was.

Just now when Mo Eversnow had learned that Lin Ming had returned, she didn’t care about what breakthroughs Lin Ming had made or how much his strength had increased. All she worried about was whether Lin Ming had suffered heavy wounds or whether there were hidden injuries left in him.

But, she never imagined that Lin Ming would return with a woman, and this woman was clearly her younger sister, Mo Brightmoon!

“Big Sister… it… it’s me… Little Moon!”

A rough and bumpy road of 50,000 years, Mo Brightmoon had withstood unimaginable pressure and experienced endless sorrows.

And the instant Mo Brightmoon saw Mo Eversnow, all of these tightly wound emotions burst out from her. Mo Brightmoon threw herself at her big sister, hugging her tightly as tears welled up.

At this time, there was no need for words. As the two sisters tightly held each other, it was as if their hearts and minds had already merged…

Seeing this scene, Lin Ming revealed a happy smile.

On this day, Mo Eversnow’s most ardent goals and wishes could be said to have come to a perfect conclusion. Now all that was left was to rebuild the Verdant Feather Holy Lands.

To the current Lin Ming and Mo Eversnow, this wasn’t a difficult matter at all. It would simply be a question of time.

Lin Ming quietly drew back. He followed the white-clothed woman to greet Empyrean Divine Dream.

As for the two sisters, he didn’t want to disturb their emotional reunion.

After passing through several winding corridors, the white-clothed woman pushed open a leafed door. The moment this leafed door was opened, a shocking scene was revealed behind it.

Behind this door was an incomparably vast world. Countless celestial mountains floated high above a sea of clouds. Lush green spirit plants grew everywhere, and even spiritual springs and rivers fell down from the mountains in waterfalls, cascading into the world like limitless threads of white silk.

Among these numerous celestial mountains, there was a floating plain. This plain resembled a mountain that had its top half sheared off, revealing a completely smooth tract of land.

And above this plain, there was a simple bamboo house. Thick and luxurious grass grew tall with the natural fragrance of bamboo everywhere.

Lin Ming fell down in front of this bamboo house. As he did, he saw a white-clothed woman in front of it, gathering the nectar of flowers. Her appearance resembled that of a young woman in her twenties.

This nectar was condensed from rich heaven and earth origin energy and was also produced from these spiritual plants. To a martial artist, it was similar to milk from 10,000 year stalactites. This was immortal springs divine water, and whether it was for refining pills or drinking, it was extremely beneficial.

“Junior Lin Ming pays his respects to Senior Divine Dream.”

Lin Ming respectfully bowed. Towards this leader of humanity in his eyes, Lin Ming had always held the deepest reverence and awe.

Divine Dream looked at Lin Ming and smiled. She lightly said, “58 years, 6 months, and 12 days. You’ve finally returned…”

Divine Dream calmly stated the exact duration of Lin Ming’s journey in the Asura Road, leaving him startled. Although an Empyrean had an extremely accurate memory, for her to speak out this time proved that she had been worried about his progress in the Asura Road smelting trial.

“Half-step Holy Lord! Very good!”

Divine Dream was pleasantly surprised as she noted Lin Ming's cultivation. This degree of cultivation had surpassed her original estimations.

When Lin Ming first entered the Asura Road, he had only been at the middle Divine Transformation realm. Now, he had grown by an entire large realm and a half. Moreover, from glancing over Lin Ming's inner world, she could see that his foundation was solid and his combat strength was definitely extraordinary.

Lin Ming responded, "Junior stumbled into a strange mystic realm in the Asura Road. Within, time flowed at a rate ten times faster than the outside. However, what was most mysterious was that although the flow of time was changed, the world Laws remained unaltered so that one could cultivate normally within. Junior stayed inside for 20 years, so in truth I have cultivated for 80 years. Adding onto the many fortuitous encounters and lucky chances I obtained, I managed to reach the half-step Holy Lord realm."

"Oh? There is such a place?" Divine Dream was startled. To establish an independent space and change the flow of time, it was inevitable that the Laws would be twisted. She didn't think that such a wonderfully strange land existed in the Asura Road.

"80 years to become a half-step Holy Lord is still more than astonishing. Lin Ming, through your adventures in the Asura Road, your harvests have truly been great this time. Your battle with the Good Fortune Saint Son that he agreed to was in 100 years so you still have more than 40 years remaining. You must focus on your training so that after the period of 100 years is over, there can be a battle to decide just who is stronger and who is weaker."

Originally, when Lin Ming agreed to fight the Good Fortune Saint Son in 100 years, no one favored his chances of victory. The saints had jeered at him, labeling him an idiot, and even the human Empyreans felt that Lin Ming had been too rash!

Empyrean Divine Dream also had her concerns and apprehensions about this matter. At that time, Lin Ming had only been at the Divine Transformation realm whereas the Good Fortune Saint Son was about to break into the Saint Lord realm!

The disparity could be imagined!

And now, Lin Ming had finally caught up to the Good Fortune Saint Son's boundary from 60 years ago. However during these 60 years, the Good Fortune Saint Son had also made considerable progress!

This was the reason why Empyrean Divine Dream had said these words so that Lin Ming would take advantage of the 40 years he had remaining and practice wholeheartedly.

In response to Empyrean Divine Dream's words, Lin Ming remained quiet, not saying anything.

Empyrean Divine Dream continued, "Lin Ming, according to what I know, the Good Fortune Saint Son has also made great strides in his cultivation these past years. Do not forget – he has the Grandmist Spirit Bead."

The Grandmist Spirit Bead was one of the most precious treasures in existence; it was unimaginably beneficial to a body transformation martial artist!

Although Lin Ming possessed the Magic Cube that was not inferior to the Grandmist Spirit Bead, what he focused on were the two great systems of body transformation and essence gathering. As for the Magic Cube, it was a divine tool of the soul. Although the Magic Cube was also extremely beneficial to Lin Ming, it still couldn't directly increase his cultivation.

As for the Good Fortune Saint Son, he could use the Grandmist Spirit Bead to temper his body!

From this point alone, the Good Fortune Saint Son had an overwhelming advantage over Lin Ming. Lin Ming didn't doubt that if the Good Fortune Saint Son were to return to the final trial, he would definitely surpass a completion rate of 81%.

He was truly a formidable opponent.

However, no matter how strong the Good Fortune Saint Son was, Lin Ming had complete confidence in himself.

This was because as his strength rose in the Asura Road, his cultivation was only responsible for a tiny part of it.

No one was able to look at him and discern the increase in his hidden strength. Not to mention the two heaven-defying lucky chances of the Asura blood and the Asura Heavenly Dao, just opening two of the Dao Palaces from the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had increased Lin Ming's true cultivation far past that of a half-step Holy Lord.

And concerning the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace that had nearly completely vanished from the 33 Heavenly Daos, besides Empyrean Primordius, there was no one that could recognize it.

"That's right, after several months, it will be time for the Monster Emperor's grand longevity feast. The monster race has publicized this longevity feast throughout the world and I have also received a letter of invitation. If you do not have any other matters to attend to, then go together with me. This time, the ones that the monster race has invited are not just the demon race and human race..."

Divine Dream's voice was light and casual, as if she were speaking about some minor matter. But, Lin Ming could hear the meaning behind her words.

Not only had the monster race invited the demons and humans, but they undoubtedly also invited a third race – the saints!

For the Monster Emperor's grand longevity feast, even the saints were invited. The implicit meaning of such an action was obvious.

The monster race had invited Empyrean Divine Dream and the great figures of humanity as a courtesy and part of proper etiquette – it was impossible not to invite them.

But inviting the saints was irrelevant to any sense of courtesy. After all, the saints were invaders to this world and not inviting them was normal.

But, the monster race had purposefully invited these invaders. This meant that with the monsters and saints, even if they hadn't formed an alliance, their relationship wasn't bad!

If there wasn't an accident, then the Monster Emperor's grand longevity feast would be a time for the saints to demonstrate their might!

The saints would take this opportunity to show off their strength and possibly even reveal their alliance with the demon and monster races, dealing humanity a giant psychological blow!

The saints were originally far stronger than the human race. If the demon and monster races were to defect to the saints, then before the great calamity fully arrived, all the human martial artists might have lost what little confidence they had.

But even in this situation where she clearly knew what would happen at the longevity feast, Empyrean Divine Dream would still go and she would also bring the strongest lineup with her to contend with the saints and their demonstration of their might!

On the surface, Lin Ming was the number one young heroic elite of humanity; he would naturally have an indispensable role!

Thus, although Empyrean Divine Dream had been seeking Lin Ming's opinion and asking if he wanted to go together, the truth was that Lin Ming knew he couldn't decline, otherwise it would weaken humanity's momentum.

"Monster race... that is also the homeland of Xiao Moxian's mother. I too want to take a look and see what the monster race is like." Thinking like this, Lin Ming said, "Junior has no other matters to attend to. I may accompany Senior Divine Dream to go together."

“Mm, good!” Empyrean Divine Dream nodded in satisfaction. “But, there is also one more thing I must mention. For the Monster Emperor’s grand longevity feast, it is within reason for the Good Fortune Saint Son to be invited. Without accident, you will meet him there. If he tries to taunt you, you must not fall for his tricks and come into conflict with him. Remember, you still have around 42 years of time to prepare for your fated battle. Do not fall for his provocations. I have heard that the Good Fortune Saint Son has recently made an important breakthrough in his martial arts and has finally practiced the fifth level of the Good Fortune Divine Arts!”

Chapter 1749 – Towards the Monster Race

Chapter 1749 – Towards the Monster Race

…

…

…

"Oh? The fifth level of the Good Fortune Divine Art?"

Lin Ming asked, curious. Although he was confident in facing the Good Fortune Saint Son, it was always best to have a better understanding of the enemy.

"Yes, this Good Fortune Divine Art is a top cultivation method created by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. Its rank even surpasses that of a transcendent divine might. In other words, it is a True Divinity cultivation method. Even my Divine Dream Law is lacking!

"This cultivation method is incredibly difficult to learn and cultivate. Even if an Empyrean tried, they would suffer layers upon layers of troubles. But, the Good Fortune Saint Son was able to cultivate it to the fifth level. My guess is that the Grandmist Spirit Bead played a considerable role in this."

Empyrean Divine Dream said, sighing. With the Grandmist Spirit Bead in his possession, whether it was the Good Fortune Saint Son's cultivation ability or combat prowess, everything would be even more formidable. In addition to his originally heaven-defying talent, it would be far too difficult for a junior of humanity to surpass him. To the geniuses of the human race, this wasn't a fair battle to begin with. Only Lin Ming had a chance of comparing to him, but unfortunately, Lin Ming was just far younger than the Good Fortune Saint Son was.

"40 years from now the day of your decisive battle with the Good Fortune Saint Son will arrive – you must be careful. This Good Fortune Divine Art can move the power of good fortune itself; its might is beyond imagination." Empyrean Divine Dream cautioned.

Lin Ming nodded. "Yes, this junior understands."

……..

Time passed. Soon, three months flew by.

The Monster Emperor's longevity feast would start in just several days.

At this time, in the endless starry skies, a pitch black giant spirit ship slowly flew through the air.

This spirit ship was several hundred thousand feet long. As it flew through space, it resembled a massive ancient beast.

In this spirit ship, within a grand hall, Xiao Moxian stood behind a porthole. She was garbed in an elegant dress as she looked out, unspeaking.

At this time, she was going to the monster race to celebrate the Monster Emperor's longevity feast!

"Xian'er, what are you thinking of?"

Behind Xiao Moxian, a low and deep voice rang out. And as soon as she heard this voice, Xiao Moxian's thoughts froze and her fingers faintly shivered.

She let out a light breath and suppressed her racing heart. Slowly turning around, she put on a happy smile and said, "Grandfather."

Behind Xiao Moxian stood a large middle-aged man. He was over a head taller than an average man and his shoulders were extremely wide and strong. His forehead was sharp, as if it had been carved by sabers.

He wore a black robe and cloak. As the hem of the cloak dragged along the ground, it exuded a mystic and dignified atmosphere.

This person was Empyrean Demondawn! Amongst Empyreans, he was a peak existence. Looking at the entire Divine Realm, the number of people who surpassed him in strength could be counted on one hand.

Facing Empyrean Demondawn, Xiao Moxian was certainly flustered!

Before this she had already been called to see Empyrean Demondawn several times. Xiao Moxian had to summon all of her will and martial arts skills in order to conceal what had happened.

This was thanks to the fact that Xiao Moxian had crossed two nirvanas and restored some of the primordial yin energy within her. In addition to her isolating her inner world, the changes didn’t seem too great.

After undergoing her two nirvanas, whether it was in terms of aura or the nirvanic flames within her, she was much stronger than before. Empyrean Demondawn would have been able to instantly see through all of this. But because Xiao Moxian was pregnant, it made it look as if her aura wasn’t powerful at all. Rather, it appeared as if she had weakened.

Thus even now, Empyrean Demondawn didn’t know that Xiao Moxian had undergone two nirvanas. Instead, he felt it was strange. After Xiao Moxian ventured through the Asura Road and her cultivation increased by a considerable amount, how come her foundation seemed ordinary and even sloppy?

It was because of this reason that Empyrean Demondawn had carefully and repeatedly urged Xiao Moxian to not increase her cultivation at the cost of her foundation.

“Xian’er, you… your aura seems to be a bit chaotic?”

Empyrean Demondawn had extremely sharp senses. He could faintly feel that there was something wrong with the origin energy flowing throughout Xiao Moxian.

“I’m fine Grandfather. I probably spent too much time in the Asura Road. The world Laws are different there and I had adapted to them. Now that I’ve come back to the Divine Realm, I’m not used to it so that caused some disorder in the heaven and earth origin energy within my inner world. I’ll be fine with some more time.”

Xiao Moxian lied, coming up with some excuse.

“Mm… the Laws of the Asura Road are truly different and the heaven and earth origin energy there is different from in the Divine Realm.” Empyrean Demondawn nodded, accepting Xiao Moxian’s explanation.

Although Empyrean Demondawn had discovered there was something strange with Xiao Moxian these past days, he didn’t think it was because she was pregnant. Rather, he would never have guessed in his wildest dreams that it was because she was pregnant. This was because in his eyes, this little granddaughter of his was a naturally haughty and proud individual. Let alone something as ridiculous as being pregnant, even her dedicating her love and attention towards a man was an incredibly difficult matter.

Thinking of this, Empyrean Demondawn faintly frowned. He suddenly remembered a marriage proposal that the saints kept suggesting. Of course, for this he wanted to ask Xiao Moxian’s opinion.

If Xiao Moxian didn’t like the Good Fortune Saint Son at all, how could this marriage be carried out?

“Xian’er, I want to ask you… about the Good Fortune Saint Son… what do you think of him?”

As Empyrean Demondawn asked this question, Xiao Moxian nearly jumped up where she stood. She definitely knew why he had asked this question. She decisively shook her head and said, “I don’t like him at all!”

After being directly cut off by Xiao Moxian, Empyrean Demondawn didn’t have the chance to say the good words about the Good Fortune Saint Son he wanted to say afterwards. He helplessly frowned and said, “Well alright, you rest for a while first. After an incense stick of time we’ll arrive at the monster race. This year, the Monster Emperor’s longevity feast is an extremely important event. If you are still feeling ill I can help you take a look and see what is afflicting you.”

“Thank you Grandfather, but I’m fine.” Xiao Moxian quickly refused. If Empyrean Demondawn were to probe her inner world the results could be imagined. She feared that once this happened, she absolutely would not be able to conceal the truth any longer.

“Mm… okay.”

Empyrean Demondawn nodded and turned to leave.

Xiao Moxian let out a long breath of relief. She turned towards the porthole, feeling her hands and palms wet with sweat.

And at this time, outside of the porthole, she could see that the spirit ship had already arrived on a mainland. This mainland was covered with vast verdant forests. The trees were thousands of feet high and would take several hundred people to encircle them.

The monster beasts raised within these massive forests were extremely terrifying. This was the territory of the monster race!

Faintly, deep in a forest, Xiao Moxian could make out a city of the monster race. Within the sprawling city there was a massive black pagoda that seemed as if it was holding up the skies. This was the Heaven Lifting Black Pagoda where the Monster Emperor dwelled.

After an incense stick of time, the black spirit ship slowly descended towards this heaven-supporting pagoda. The black spirit ship was hundreds of thousands of feet long, but in front of the Heaven Lifting Black Pagoda, it seemed like a fly buzzing around a tree, simply not worthy of mention at all.

The spirit ship steadily descended. Empyrean Demondawn and Xiao Moxian both flew down, accompanied by many attendants. And beneath the spirit ship, thousands of monster disciples were already lined up in a procession, waiting.

The one leading them was a beautiful woman dressed in a coat of white fox fur – this was Monster Concubine Archess.

The moment Xiao Moxian saw Monster Concubine Archess, she tightened her inner world and restrained her aura. But, she kept a cute and lovable smile on her face at all times, remaining completely calm throughout.

“Junior Xiao Moxian greets Concubine Archess.”

Xiao Moxian greeted in the manner of a junior.

“Humph!”

Monster Concubine Archess snorted. She was utterly respectful towards Empyrean Demondawn, but towards Xiao Moxian, there was even a hint of disrespect in her tone!

Xiao Moxian was stunned. She didn’t know just what Monster Concubine Archess meant by this.

Xiao Moxian’s thoughts raced, a strange feeling coming over her. She felt that Monster Concubine Archess was extremely unfriendly towards her, and even her eyes were as sharp as swords. It made Xiao Moxian feel as if she had been seen through.

“How did I offend her?”

Xiao Moxian thought, puzzled. At the same time, she was even more careful in concealing her aura. She had an extremely bad feeling of foreboding…

………

And as Xiao Moxian and Empyrean Demondawn arrived at the monster race, there was also another spirit ship flying towards the monster race's world. This spirit ship wasn't overly large, but it shimmered with a clear radiance, as if it were carved from the finest crystal.

On the side of this spirit ship was a mysterious symbol. This was a word of an ancient language in the Divine Realm, meaning 'Dream'.

The spirit ship naturally belonged to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

With the arrival of the Monster Emperor's longevity feast, Lin Ming accompanied Empyrean Divine Dream to go to the monster race's world.

"During the Monster Emperor's longevity feast I should be able to see Xian'er. I wonder how she's been doing in Demondawn Heavenly Palace."

Xiao Moxian would definitely participate in the Monster Emperor's longevity feast. Lin Ming was a little worried about how she was doing.

"The Good Fortune Saint Son… he really came…"

At this time, Empyrean Divine Dream's voice echoed out in Lin Min's ears. Looking out a porthole, Lin Ming could see that several hundred miles away, there was a giant floating fortress.

This fortress was bright silver all over and covered with sharp spikes. It looked extremely fierce.

"This is the Good Fortune Saint Son's transportation?"

Lin Ming's pupils shrank.

Empyrean Divine Dream nodded.

Chapter 1750 – Gathering of Greats

Chapter 1750 – Gathering of Greats

…

…

…

The ancient monster race had existed since time immemorial. In the Divine Realm, the monster race wasn't too powerful. Compared to humanity, they were considered small and weak. However, the monster race wasn't limited to just the Divine Realm; within the other universes of the 33 Heavens there also existed the monster race.

According to legend, the monster race was an ancient race that had existed 10 billion years ago and had continued spreading out.

10 billion years ago, the three great races of humans, saints, and spiritas were by no means the rulers of the world. Rather, they could be called extremely weak and small races.

The ones who ruled in that era were the various ancient races.

The kings of these ancient races could destroy the heavens and annihilate the earth just by raising their hands.

And in that time when many ancient god kings existed together, the monster race's unrivalled Monster Emperor was equally able to dominate his own region.

However, as time passed, far too many great elites and supreme elders rose up from the ranks of the ancient races. These powerful figures started countless wars, and whenever the God Lamenting Wall weakened, the entire 33 Heavens would be drowned in the flames of war.

Yet there was nothing that could withstand the erosion of time.

Slowly, the ancient races declined. The monster race was far luckier; at least they survived until the present.

And now for the last several billions of years, the 33 Heavens had become the world of the spiritas, saints, and humans.

But as more time passed, of these three great races, humanity also began to slowly decline. In particular, in the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago humanity had suffered a catastrophic attack.

Only the Divine Realm, under the leadership of Empyrean Divine Seal, had been able to obtain an arduous victory, managing to continue until now.

Of course, in the eyes of the saints, humanity was barely managing to hold on to a feeble and pathetic existence.

The annihilation of humanity was only a matter of time!

At this time, in the massive silver fortress, a tall youth in white robes was reclining in a luxurious chair. A glazed wine glass was in his hands, gently dangling and swaying.

Within the wine glass the bright red liquid rippled, looking like blood.

Beneath the white-robed youth, a beautiful maid draped in the thinnest silks was kneeling on the ground, massaging his legs with even and strong strokes. From her rhythm it was clear she was extremely skilled at this.

This white-robed youth was the Good Fortune Saint Son.

“Humanity...”

A dark and playful smile appeared on the Good Fortune Saint Son's face. He drank the rest of the wine, a bit of the red liquid dripping down the corners of his lips and making him look fierce.

“To allow you to linger on for 3.6 billion years, it's about time for your era to come to an end. As for the monster and demon races, if you obey me then there will still be a small place for you to stand and assist my people. Otherwise, your fate will be the same as the humans'.”

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke, there was a cracking sound as the glazed wine glass in his hands was crushed to shards.

The Good Fortune Saint Son rose up. His cloak fell down and the maid at his feel also quickly bowed her head to the floor.

The Good Fortune Saint strode towards a porthole. At this time, outside the porthole, he could see countless spirit ships in the air.

These spirit ships carried heroes and elites from all over that the monster race had invited.

Amongst the many spirit ships, giant monsters stood up around the Heaven Lifting Black Pagoda. All around the Heaven Lifting Black Pagoda flew flood dragons, blue luans, and many other spirit beasts that had bloodline relations to God Beasts.

These spirit beasts were all raised by the monster race. The monster race were not lacking such spirit beasts!

The monster race even had true God Beasts in their ranks.

And these God Beasts had often already cultivated to the boundary where they could take human form. Those with poorer bloodlines were inferior to Empyreans, but there were also God Beasts with top royal bloodlines that were second only to the Monster Emperor in terms of strength or status.

“Many human Empyreans have also arrived. It seems they want to struggle for the support of the demon and monster races before their grand calamity truly arrives…” The Good Fortune Saint Son rubbed his chin, a diabolical smile crossing his face. “This is also fun. During the Monster Emperor’s longevity feast, I will have them all thoroughly lose heart. I will have the demon and monster races clearly demonstrate their alliances and crush all the fantasies that those old geezers of humanity have!”

At this time, the doors of the grand hall were pushed open and a charming voice sounded out. “Hohoho! Holy Son Your Highness, if you wish to complete such a matter, it isn’t difficult at all!”

Behind the Good Fortune Saint Son, a young girl wearing a rainbow-colored robe of feathers entered the room with a smile.

“That old man from the monster race already favors us. As for Empyrean Demondawn, he has no strong opinion on the matter. His only worries are that the little granddaughter of his will not be obedient and agree to the marriage. But with Your Highness Holy Son’s methods, isn’t dealing with a little girl that’s just a hundred years old an incredibly easy matter?”

The rainbow-clothed young girl said, her expression and voice full of jealousy that the Good Fortune Saint Son was about to conquer yet another woman.

The Good Fortune Saint Son laughed. “This Xiao Moxian has quite the character! She won’t be easy to win over, but only women with character are worthy of conquering, hahaha!”

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke, he wrapped his hand around the rainbow-clothed young girl’s snake-like waist and pulled her into the opulent chair beneath him…

……

For the Monster Emperor’s grand longevity feast, heroes and rivals were gathered together!

It wasn't just Empyrean Demondawn and Empyrean Divine Dream, but soon after, Empyrean Vast Universe, Dark Demon Monarch, and other such great figures of the human race began to arrive one after another at the core of the monster race.

With so many grand figures, it was impossible for the Monster Emperor to greet them all. He could only send high level figures to meet them and arrange them separately.

However, for an important guest like Empyrean Demondawn, the Monster Emperor went to personally greet him.

At this time, within Heaven Lifting Black Pagoda, Monster Concubine Archess was already leading Empyrean Demondawn, Xiao Moxian, and their subordinates to the main hall of the black pagoda. And in this main hall there was a 1000 foot long table made from pure white jade. Set out on top of the table were all sorts of spirit foods that had an astronomical price. If a mortal ate these spirit foods they would live for several hundred years more and if a martial artist were to partake in this food, their body would grow strong and healthy and their inner world would be nourished; it was extremely beneficial.

"Brother Demondawn, haha, I haven't seen you for such a long time!"

The Monster Emperor had a close and tight relationship with Empyrean Demondawn. As Empyrean Demondawn passed through the doors, the Monster Emperor quickly strode forwards to greet him.

"It's only been 20 years. This time, I went into seclusion for just 20 years and came out especially for my silly brother's longevity feast." Empyrean Demondawn chuckled in return. Like this, the two of them sat across from each other in the seats of honor.

As for Xiao Moxian and Monster Concubine Archess, they sat down according to their status.

During the reception, after the Monster Emperor exchanged three cups of wine with Empyrean Demondawn, his attention inevitably shifted onto Xiao Moxian!

Xiao Moxian was the proudest daughter of heaven from Demondawn Heavenly Palace. Looking at the entire monster race and demon race, there had been no juniors who could compare with her martial talent for the last billion years.

Moreover, she was closely related to the monster race and demon race as well as being the key reason for the alliance between the two races. It was natural that the Monster Emperor would pay close attention to Xiao Moxian's growth.

Now that Xiao Moxian had returned from the Asura Road, by all rights he should ask her some questions.

"Xian'er, this time in the Asura Road, what harvests have you had? Come and tell us all! Your cultivation has risen quite rapidly!"

Xiao Moxian's cultivation speed was number one within the entire Divine Realm. At 26 years of age she had broken through the middle Divine Sea realm. Even the Lin Ming from that time was left in the dust by her.

Now that Xiao Moxian had reached the late Divine Lord realm, she was just half a step from becoming a Holy Lord!

This cultivation was certainly high. But, what was strange was that everyone could faintly feel that Xiao Moxian's aura wasn't as strong as they thought it would be. In fact, it could even be considered… a little small and weak!

This surprised the Monster Emperor. In his experience, this sort of situation in truth meant that… Xiao Moxian's combat strength wasn't formidable at all!

For a peerless genius, their combat strength amongst others of their realm was far, far more important than their cultivation speed!

If one's cultivation was low but they could jump ranks to fight, this indicated that they had tremendous potential.

But if one's cultivation was high and their strength was only on par with those of their realm, that was a sign they would only be able to cultivate for another realm or two before exhausting all their potential.

As the Monster Emperor looked over Xiao Moxian's situation, it seemed a bit similar to the second possibility.

This left the Monster Emperor worried. Some geniuses had amazing potential when they were young. But slowly, as they grew, their potential would exhaust itself.

This was not good news at all!

This was why after being asked such a question by the Monster Emperor, Xiao Moxian tensed up!

She had been using all of her strength to suppress the pure yang energy within her and also to maintain the appearance of her primordial yin energy so that the supreme elders present wouldn't discover the changes within her. Xiao Moxian suppressed her racing heart and forcefully spoke out with a calm tone, "Your Majesty Monster Emperor flatters Xian'er too much. My talent is low and I haven't had many fortuitous encounters in the Asura Road these past years. I simply cultivated in an orderly manner and managed to obtain several stalks of immortal grass so that my cultivation speed rose by a great deal. However, in truth, I'm afraid that my strength hasn't increased by much. If I had to say then I must admit that I have wasted away my time in these past years. I have failed the hopes of Your Majesty and am deeply ashamed."

Xiao Moxian concealed the heaven-shaking fortuitous encounters she experienced in the Asura Road. This was because with her pregnancy, her strength had sharply fallen. In addition, she also had to suppress the pure yang energy within herself, making it so that she could only summon a pitiful amount of power.

Whether it was how her condition looked from the outside, or how her situation really was, the truth was that in the end Xiao Moxian's strength was lacking right now.

In this situation, if Xiao Moxian were to speak about the fortuitous encounters she experienced in Tragic Death Valley or the final trial, she simply wouldn't be able to explain it.

If she had so many fortuitous encounters, how could she be so weak?

Thus, she could only say that she had wasted away her time cultivating in the Asura Road.

Hearing Xiao Moxian's words, Empyrean Demondawn felt a little awkward. No matter how it was said, Xiao Moxian was his granddaughter and was also closely related to Demondawn Heavenly Palace. As for the monster race, Xiao Moxian could only be considered a granddaughter to them from her mother's side and their relations were a bit further apart.

If Xiao Moxian's performance in the Asura Road wasn't wonderful at all, and not only did she not increase her potential but instead wasted her talent, Empyrean Demondawn would naturally feel ashamed.

"Haha, Xian'er is too modest. The rise in your cultivation alone is already extraordinary. Looking at the entire Divine Realm, who could compare with Xian'er's cultivation at such a young age? As for those several stalks of immortal grass, they should be on the level of transcendent divine medicines, right? In terms of combat strength, Xian'er should also be able to contend with a peak Holy Lord martial artist."

The Monster Emperor slowly said as he placed down the copper cup in his hand. According to common sense, if a martial artist at the late Divine Realm, close to a half-step Holy Lord, was able to jump up a boundary and fight with a peak Holy Lord, this martial artist would be considered a shockingly rare talent.

But for a monstrous genius like Xiao Moxian who couldn't be explained by common sense, such an achievement wasn't anything at all. Rather, one could say these expectations were quite low.

In the Monster Emperor’s eyes, Xiao Moxian should be able to barely contend with a weak World King. Only then would this match her previous performances.

Chapter 1751 – Distress

Chapter 1751 – Distress

…

…

…

Facing the Monster Emperor's questions, Xiao Moxian felt a pained bitterness. In her weakened state, she might not even be able to deal with a peak Holy Lord!

And if she really couldn't deal with a peak Holy Lord, the matter of her grandfather losing face would only be a minor consequence. What she worried about was that someone would think there was something strange going on with her and decide to inspect her inner world for problems. If that happened, everything would be over.

But at this time, a high yet harsh voice echoed out, dripping with unfriendliness, "I think that Your Majesty is too generous with Miss Xian'er. Let alone a peak Holy Lord, I'm afraid she will find it difficult to deal with a late Holy Lord martial artist. For Miss Xian'er to go to the Asura Road this time, perhaps it really must have been a mistake. Or, maybe Miss Xian'er has exhausted all of her potential. If so, then even if she didn't go to the Asura Road, I fear nothing would have changed…"

When these words were spoken, the entire welcoming reception fell into utter silence!

Everyone looked towards the origin of the voice – the one speaking was Monster Concubine Archess!

At this time, Monster Concubine Archess had just finished eating a beautiful spirit fruit and was using a handkerchief of divine silk to wipe her cherry red lips.

Her movements were careful and delicate, like she was rubbing an exquisite jade sculpture. Such a scene was originally filled with an aesthetic sense, but when combined with the words she had just spoken, it caused the previously slightly embarrassed Empyrean Demondawn's complexion to darken.

Even if Xiao Moxian's potential had indeed been exhausted, no one was allowed to speak of it!

"Concubine Archess, what are you trying to do?"

Empyrean Demondawn's voice was ice cold. He had always been an aggressive individual and was very fond of Xiao Moxian, doting on her a great deal. So how could he allow his own granddaughter to be insulted like this! "According to what Concubine Archess says, Xian'er isn't amazing at all. Then let me ask you, in your Hydra Clan, are there any juniors in Xian'er's realm that can compete with her? If there are then bring them out to fight!"

Empyrean Demondawn's words were forceful and menacing. As he said them, Xiao Moxian felt her heart tighten. She didn't think that the situation would devolve to such a scene. If she really did have to fight then that would undoubtedly be extremely bad.

This Monster Concubine Archess, just what had she done to offend her? A woman with such a status shouldn't be trying to needle her at every possible moment during such a grand event.

Even the Monster Emperor faintly frowned. He shouted, "Concubine Archess, just what kind of words are you saying! Even for an unrivalled genius, there will always be periods where they lag behind, but none of that matters as long as they can continue to display magnificent results in the future! Moreover, even if Xian'er does lag beyond, she still far surpasses all other geniuses of her age. It's only that the expectations we've placed on her are far too heavy!"

The Monster Emperor's words could be called returning a bit of face to Xiao Moxian and Empyrean Demondawn.

But Monster Concubine Archess didn't seem to appreciate this kindness. It was like she had taken the wrong medicine today, causing every single one of her words to be filled with explosive provocation.

She faintly smiled and continued to say, "Your Majesty the Monster Emperor need not take offense, this concubine was simply carelessly speaking. Throughout the endless ages there have been many talents who have lagged behind for a small period of time but maintained their glorious rise afterwards. But, there have also been many geniuses who have failed afterwards, their potential being completely exhausted and vanishing from sight… what Empyrean Demondawn said is true, there is no genius in my clan that can compete with Miss Xian'er. Indeed, in the past, there was one such genius who could. He went to the Asura Road together with Miss Xian'er and afterwards he didn't return. Even the lifesoul jade slip he kept in the clan had been shattered…"

Monster Concubine Archess' words were cold and critical. Upon hearing them, Xiao Moxian froze. She finally realized just why Monster Concubine Archess had been targeting her at every opportunity.

So it was because of this… the genius of the monster race that they had sent to accompany her to the Asura Road, Monster Prince Duyu, had come from the same clan as Monster Concubine Archess.

"That's right, Monster Prince Duyu was from the Hydra Clan…"

Xiao Moxian thought, her heart bitter.

At God Burying Ridge, Monster Prince Duyu hadn't liked Lin Ming at all. When Lin Ming was being chased by Mister Zhou, Imperial Prince Naqi, and the others, Monster Prince Duyu was afraid that he would be sucked into his mess and thus he had suggested that their group rid themselves of Lin Ming, and then he and Xiao Moxian could follow the group and leave. This was also because he was hoping that Mister Zhou would find and kill Lin Ming.

But then Xiao Moxian had stubbornly stuck together with Lin Ming, causing Monster Prince Duyu's plan to fail.

After that, Xiao Moxian was forced into Tragic Death Valley with Lin Ming and had not heard any news of Monster Prince Duyu since. In fact, she had nearly forgotten about him.

Now that she heard Concubine Archess' words, it was clear that Monster Prince Duyu had died in the Asura Road, and he had likely been killed at God Burying Ridge!

In Xiao Moxian's heart, this Monster Prince Duyu was an unimportant character. But to the monster race, he was indeed a genius, especially to Concubine Archess' Hydra Clan. He had been a direct descendant!

Amongst the younger generation of the Hydra Clan, Monster Prince Duyu had been the most outstanding junior there was. But he had died in the Asura Road. How could Monster Concubine Archess not be sad about this, how could she not be angry!

Hearing Monster Concubine Archess mention Monster Prince Duyu once more, the Monster Emperor's complexion darkened. "Concubine Archess, are you trying to put the blame of Duyu's death atop of Xian'er? As the head of the harem, how could you not understand the simple truths of the world? The Asura Road smelting trial is originally filled with perilous risks, and life and death are both decided by one's destiny. If Duyu died in the Asura Road then the only one that can be blamed is him for lacking in destiny, it had nothing to do with Xian'er. Do you think that Duyu was killed by Xian'er?"

"Hohohoho! You are asking what responsibility she has? Don't you know that Xiao Moxian is nothing but a little witch that loves to draw disasters upon herself? As soon as she arrived at the Asura Road she provoked a City lord, causing the City Lord to fight Old Blue, the guardian that the monster and demon races sent to protect Xiao Moxian and Duyu! In the end, both of them were wounded! At this time, according to Duyu's original intentions he should have returned to the Divine Realm. If he came back then there wouldn't have been any problem at all!

“But what did Xiao Moxian do? She took advantage of the time when Old Blue was closed up in seclusion recovering from his wounds and ran away! After that, because Duyu was worried she would encounter some accident, he went to find her and finally tracked her down after a great deal of hardship! But even after suffering so much to find her, she didn’t listen to Duyu’s advice at all and refused to return. Finally, because Duyu was concerned for her safety, he followed her and ended up dying!

“After that, Xiao Moxian actually managed to come back safely all by herself. If she had some amazing accomplishments then I would have nothing to say, but what did she do in those dozens of years at the Asura Road? Is she strong? Her cultivation is high but her foundation is absolute garbage!”

The more Monster Concubine Archess spoke, the more zealous and vehement her words became. Her eyes were like knives as she glared at Xiao Moxian.

Xiao Moxian paled. “Concubine Archess, the matter is not as simple as you think… I never asked Duyu to follow me!”

When Xiao Moxian went to the Asura Road, she had indeed stirred up a City Lord. But that wasn’t because she had provoked him on purpose, but because her results in the smelting trial were too outstanding and the rare reward she obtained was coveted by the City Lord.

Following that, Xiao Moxian had indeed shown her wild side and refused to return to the Divine Realm. But while Monster Prince Duyu did follow her, it wasn’t because he was worried about her safety but because he had other plans.

Monster Prince Duyu wanted to obtain Xiao Moxian. However, Xiao Moxian had already long been annoyed by him. Yet no matter how much she tried, she couldn’t get rid of his nagging presence.

Of course, Monster Concubine Archess absolutely wouldn’t listen to any of this!

“Hohoho! Did you all hear that!? She didn’t want Duyu to follow her! It was only that Duyu was worried for her safety and tried to help her! To think a dog you feed with such painstaking care would bite you in return!”

The more Monster Concubine Archess spoke, the coarser and ruder her words become. Empyrean Demondawn suddenly humphed coldly. As he did, a terrifying energy fluctuation spread out, causing all of the platters and dishes on the table to jump up!

“Enough!”

For a time, everyone calmed down.

Empyrean Demondawn’s eyes burned as he looked at Monster Concubine Archess. His voice was as cold as the winters of the nine nether hells. “I don’t know what happened nor do I care. I also do not care to listen to your explanation or Xian’er’s. I will only ask you one thing – just what are you trying to do?”

As a top Empyrean, within the entire Divine Realm, Empyrean Demondawn was only inferior to a handful of people. Once his anger was aroused, his momentum could stir up stormy seas and monstrous waves. In the entire main hall, all of the martial artists were covered underneath this horrifying pressure, all of them gasping for breath!

As for Monster Concubine Archess, she bore the brunt of this pressure. Even though she was a half-step Empyrean, she still found the aura difficult to withstand.

And this was with Empyrean Demondawn suppressing his aura. If he fully released his aura, it would be a dream for Monster Concubine Archess to continue sitting where she was.

But this Monster Concubine Archess was also a ruthless and vicious character. In the harem that was filled with blood-drenched competition, she had managed to climb up to the top. She was an inherently aggressive character, and even facing Empyrean Demondawn’s pressure she didn’t flinch at all. Instead, she coldly said, “I want Xiao Moxian to meet my palm! I will suppress the strength within my palm to that of a peak Holy Lord! Didn’t His Majesty say that Xiao Moxian could contend with a peak Holy Lord martial artist? Then, for her to meet my palm won't be difficult at all! After this palm I will no longer investigate this matter. No matter what achievements Xiao Moxian has, no matter what her status is in the future, even if she becomes the ruler of the monster race, that will have nothing to do with me!"

Although Monster Concubine Archess' latter words seemed free and daring, the truth was that it was all a show. This was because the Monster Emperor still had an extremely long life ahead of him. Although Monster Concubine Archess was much younger than the Monster Emperor, her cultivation was inferior to his and it was hopeless for her to break into the Empyrean realm in the future; she would never outlive the Monster Emperor. And let alone Xiao Moxian ruling the monster race, even if she did, Monster Concubine Archess would have already died of old age by then. She simply didn't need to fear Xiao Moxian at all.

"A palm strike from a peak Holy Lord?" Empyrean Demondawn coldly smiled. He looked at Xiao Moxian, "Xian'er, meet her palm!"

Empyrean Demondawn's voice did not brook any disobedience!

He believed that it was impossible for Xiao Moxian to be unable to block Imperial Concubine Archess' strike when she had suppressed her cultivation.

Drawing back 10,000 steps, even if Xiao Moxian's strength was lacking and she was wounded to the point she spat blood, that would only be losing a bit of face; there would be no harm to her life. As for any hidden wounds left behind, with Xiao Moxian's unique physique she could quickly recover.

"Grandfather, I..."

Xiao Moxian felt bitter over the situation. In her peak state, let alone the strike of someone that had suppressed their strength to that of a peak Holy Lord, if she tried her best she could even withstand a strike from a Great World King.

But currently, she was pregnant; it was impossible for her to transfer too much strength.

“Mm?” Hearing Xiao Moxian’s timid tone, Empyrean Demondawn’s complexion became cold and gloomy. He always spoke in a strong manner and no one dared to refuse his orders. In such a scene, how could he possibly allow his momentum to be weakened?

Chapter 1752 – Poison

Chapter 1752 – Poison

…

…

…

"The strike of a peak Holy Lord, you won't even meet it!?"

Empyrean Demondawn's tiger-bright eyes looked at Xiao Moxian, a burning anger growing within them!

In his impression, Xiao Moxian was someone that didn't fear the heavens or earth. Her character was just like Empyrean Demondawn's when he was young, thus Empyrean Demondawn was extremely affectionate towards her. Not only did his granddaughter possess a top ranked talent in the Divine Realm, he also approved of her disposition and way of living.

But today, Empyrean Demondawn would never have imagined that facing the arrogant taunting of Monster Concubine Archess, Xiao Moxian would endure her insults!

This caused Empyrean Demondawn to feel as if he had lost all face.

Xiao Moxian hadn't made much progress in the Asura Road, and whether it was because of destiny or her potential was lacking, that wasn't something she could control.

But now, she didn't dare to face a palm from Monster Concubine Archess – this was a matter of her courage.

As a top talent of the Divine Realm, the late Divine Lord Xiao Moxian didn't even dare to meet the palm of a peak Holy Lord. This caused anger to surge in Empyrean Demondawn's heart; he struggled to contain it!

"Hohoho! Xiao Moxian, if you don't dare to meet my palm then you can apologize to my clan and also mourn for Duyu for one year. After that, I will consider the matter finished and won't pursue it any longer!"

After hearing Monster Concubine Archess' words, Empyrean Demondawn was on the verge of violently storming out. He looked at Xiao Moxian, the anger in his eyes brewing like a volcano ready to explode.

Xiao Moxian's face paled. The corners of her lips twitched. She took a deep breath and said, "Fine... then I will meet your palm!"

It wasn't that she feared Empyrean Demondawn's anger, but that she couldn't observe mourning for Monster Prince Duyu.

The so-called observing mourning for one year meant that within this year, one couldn't drink, have sex, or have any other forms of entertainment, all in order to express one's sorrow and grieving. To Xiao Moxian this wasn't difficult at all; she could easily go into seclusion for a year.

But to observe mourning, that was something only done by children for their parents or a wife for her husband. If Xiao Moxian were to observe mourning for Monster Prince Duyu, the reason would not be because of the former, but because of the latter. This was an impossible choice for her.

As Monster Concubine Archess spoke, even the Monster Emperor frowned. He felt that Monster Concubine Archess had stepped over the line.

Empyrean Demondawn coldly snorted. His expression calmed down as he slowly sat back in his seat.

In the great hall, Monster Concubine Archess created a force field, isolating the space within. Within this space, there was only her and Xiao Moxian.

Facing Xiao Moxian, Monster Concubine Archess jeered with hatred.

“You killed Duyu and all I need is for you to meet my palm. How easy for you.”

As Monster Concubine Archess spoke, she stretched out her slender right hand. With a crackling sound, scales began to form over her skin and her fingertips turned into sharp nails.

For a time, the origin energy around Monster Concubine Archess started to wildly gather about her. Xiao Moxian didn’t say a word, simply quietly withstanding Monster Concubine Archess’ pressure.

At this time, Monster Concubine Archess had already suppressed her energy to that of a peak Holy Lord. Concerning this, Monster Concubine Archess didn’t play any tricks, otherwise Empyrean Demondawn would stop her.

After four or five breaths of time, Monster Concubine Archess suddenly moved. Behind her, a massive black phantom appeared.

This black phantom was a hydra.

Monster Concubine had activated the power of the hydra bloodline within her!

A potent poison gas, thick with the power of darkness, erupted from within Monster Concubine Archess!

These strengths had reached an extremely high boundary of Laws, far surpassing those of a Holy Lord.

Although Monster Concubine Archess had suppressed her cultivation to that of a peak Holy Lord, she hadn’t limited her skill in Laws or any other aspects.

With a peak Holy Lord cultivation and activating the strength of her hydra bloodline as well as using the limits of her Laws, the power of this strike was equal to that of an ordinary World King!

In particular, that poisonous power was especially horrifying!

The Concept of Poison was an extremely bizarre and unconventional Concept for martial artists to learn. When a mortal used poison, it was often refined from some poisonous plants, insects, snakes, or other such creatures. For a high level martial artist, the poisons they used were refined from poisonous heavenly materials or taken from the corpses of dangerous poisonous creatures. The toxicity of these things could not be compared to common poisons.

And a step above that, when one reached Monster Concubine Archess' boundary and their Concept of Poison reached large success, the poison would no longer be a material thing, but a type of energy. Once she started using her poison-type cultivation method, the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy would transform into an incredibly poisonous and corrosive energy. An Empyrean poison master could even turn an entire world into a world of poison energy, making the whole world a death trap!

In her battle against Xiao Moxian, Monster Concubine had used her Poison Laws. If she managed to wound Xiao Moxian, it would be easy for these poisons to remain in her body, continually causing damage. This was an extremely cruel and sinister move!

"Ji Xian'er, let me see how you block my strike!"

Monster Concubine Archess coldly sneered. The current Xiao Moxian had a messy foundation and her strength was a complete mess. For her to block this strike was nothing more than a dream, because the power behind it had already exceeded the limit of her strength.

Xiao Moxian's thoughts focused. In truth she had already expected that this Monster Concubine Archess who loathed her would not let her off so easily. But, she never thought that Monster Concubine Archess would be ruthless enough to use such a dangerous poison technique. Xiao Moxian naturally didn't fear these poisons, but the embryo within her wouldn't be able to withstand them. Xiao Moxian would not allow her unborn child to be harmed, not even in the slightest!

Xiao Moxian was in a critically bad situation. Not only did she have to conceal all the secrets within her body but she also had to block this strike; it was simply impossible.

She grit her teeth. Then, endless pure black flames wildly rolled up from all directions, billowing towards Xiao Moxian!

At the same time, the phantom of a Dark Phoenix manifested behind Xiao Moxian. This Dark Phoenix was incomparably clear, each feather revealing the most minute texture and detail.

The moment that the Dark Phoenix appeared, the limitless black flames became far more terrifying. These flames seemed to contain a wild and uncontrollable momentum of the Great Dao that could burn down the world, one that originated from the most ancient of times. These roaring flames came from the spirit of the Undying Inferno that she defeated at the Asura Road's final trial!

The tumultuous flames were swallowed up within Xiao Moxian. The nirvanic flames within her had already added in the might of the Asura Heavenly Dao!

This mysterious and ancient strength surpassed the knowledge of everyone present. Even the many other World Kings and half-step Empyreans present widened their eyes as they saw these black flames, their hearts shaking.

"These flames… how is this possible!?"

The Monster Emperor had originally been leaning back in his seat. As he saw these flames appear, his entire body tensed and he sat up straight.

No matter how one saw it, it seemed that Xiao Moxian was sick and her strength was weak. But, no one would have imagined that when facing Monster Concubine Archess, the aura of flames around her body would actually explode to such terrifying heights!

“This is…”

Empyrean Demondawn’s eyes blazed brightly. The flames that Xian Moxian released were in truth not that strong, but the Law Concepts were extremely high; she had already steadily entered into the seventh level Concept of the Fire Laws.

To possess a higher boundary in the Laws was another matter. As long as one’s talent was high enough and with the accumulation of time, then even a peak fire-attribute Great World King would be able to steadily enter the seventh level Concept of the Fire Laws.

But, what surprised Empyrean Demondawn the most was that the quality of these flames had reached an inconceivable degree!

Different flames had different qualities. The lowest rank was fire used by mortals. Then, going up rank after rank, Xiao Moxian’s nirvanic flames were nearly the highest rank flames possible.

Yet now, the flames that Xiao Moxian displayed seemed to have used the nirvanic flames as a foundation and gone a level further. An incomprehensible strength had fused together with the nirvanic flames, adding on a finishing touch!

Empyrean Demondawn originally thought that Xiao Moxian had wasted away her time cultivating in the Asura Road, but now it seemed that things weren’t as simple as they appeared!

“Perhaps… she can really block it…”

Even the normally calm and dignified Empyrean Demondawn was excited when it came to the future growth of his granddaughter. His heart tightened.

“So what if the quality of your flames is high? You are still weak!”

Monster Concubine Archess struck out with her palm. Besides suppressing her cultivation, she had pushed all other aspects to their limit!

Chi chi chi!

A dreadful darkness and power of poison erupted outwards. Even space itself was melted by this poison!

Xiao Moxian was surrounded by the poison energy. As long as this poison energy gathered, even a top spirit artifact would be corroded to slag. A normal martial artist would be melted away without even their bones remaining!

As everyone was expecting Xiao Moxian to use her Fire Laws that contained a strange strength to burn away the poison energy, what actually happened left them all startled.

Xiao Moxian didn’t explode with her nirvanic flames. Rather, she used the nirvanic flames to protect her body and forcefully withstand Monster Concubine Archess’ strike.

“Mm?”

Empyrean Demondawn frowned. This sort of combat method was simply the same as passively sitting there and being smacked around. Why didn’t she counterattack?

Even if Xiao Moxian wasn’t strong enough, even if her counterattack would definitely fail and even result in her being injured, she still shouldn’t weaken her momentum and allow others to bully her!

Chi chi chi!

The radiant nirvanic flames turned most of the clouds of poison energy into nothing!

After fusing with the Asura Heavenly Dao, Xiao Moxian’s nirvanic flames were now of an extremely high quality. However, she could only move a limited amount of strength. One reason was because the embryo within her possessed the bloodlines of a dragon and phoenix, and had also inherited the power of the Asura blood, thus it was absorbing too much energy from her. And a second reason was that she had to use a great deal of her strength to conceal the pure yang energy within her and maintain the semblance of her primordial yin energy.

In this situation, how could Xiao Moxian withstand Monster Concubine's poisonous strike which utilized the Laws of a half-step Empyrean?

The black nirvanic flames were slowly weakened by the endless poison energy. In that moment, Xiao Moxian's protective true essence was also slowly being corroded by the poison energy.

Chi chi chi!

After the poison energy corroded Xiao Moxian's protective true essence, it began to invade her meridians and blood vessels, even corroding her blood!

Strands of black energy began to multiply within her blood.

Even her marrow was contained by this poison energy. It was as if drops of acid were being injected into her, extremely agonizing!

However, Xiao Moxian grit her teeth. All the energy she could summon was quietly transferred to her inner world, protecting the unborn life within her...

Chapter 1753 – Who Is He

Chapter 1753 – Who Is He

…

…

…

Xiao Moxian's entire body was being corroded by poison energy. The agonizing pain of her blood being burned by poison was beyond description. This sort of pain was the same as having concentrated acid mixed into her blood, as if her marrow was crackling like heated oil.

She gripped her fists, withstanding the waves of pain. All of her remaining essence was used to protect her inner world. With things having come this far she could only quietly continue in hopes that she wouldn't be discovered. Otherwise, the matter of her pregnancy would become known.

Black blood began to drip from the sides of Xiao Moxian's lips.

As this black blood flowed out, Xiao Moxian's heart skipped a beat and her complexion changed.

The baby in her stomach was connected to her own bloodline. If her blood was corroded by the poison to the point of turning black, no matter how much energy she summoned she would not be able to cut off the streams of black blood from entering the baby within her!

The fetus was at its earliest developmental stage. Xiao Moxian absolutely could not allow it to be affected.

Ignoring the violent poison energy all around her, she forcefully revolved the nirvanic flames within her body and had the terrifying burning heat flood her blood vessels, crazily burning away the poison energy!

For a time, Xiao Moxian’s body became a battlefield. The poison energy intensely fought with the nirvanic flames. The pressure on Xiao Moxian’s mortal body could be imagined.

Even though she had a half God Beast body, withstanding such pressure still caused her blood vessels to explode and blood to shoot out.

Monster Concubine Archess grinned as she saw this. She could faintly feel that Xiao Moxian wouldn’t be able to last much longer.

Just as she was about to put forth more energy, a furious voice slammed into her ears like a thunderclap!

“Fuck off!”

With an explosive sound, Monster Concubine Archess felt a tyrannical and fierce strength rush into her body, causing her to violently shake and directly smashing her away.

Peng!

Monster Concubine Archess was blown away and sent crashing into the table. Countless glazed dishes and bowls were shattered and her entire body was drenched in the dregs of spirit foods and spirit drinks, making her look extremely miserable.

Seeing this, the Monster Emperor thought of moving. But in the end he didn’t.

He let out a long breath. He never thought that today’s welcoming reception would have such a scene.

In a pile of debris, Monster Concubine Archess propped herself up on her arms, gnashing her teeth as she looked at Empyrean Demondawn.

Facing the angry and mighty Empyrean Demondawn, it was impossible to say she wasn't afraid.

The savage battles of the demon and monster races were far more barbaric than those of the humans.

If the races of the Divine Realm were compared to those of the mortal world, then the monster and demon races were comparable to primitive nomadic tribes and barbarians. For a battle to suddenly occur at a banquet wasn't strange at all. Even if Empyrean Demondawn were to heavily wound Monster Concubine Archess, that would also be a likely possibility!

"One move has already passed!"

Empyrean Demondawn's voice held a faint trace of killing intent. Monster Concubine Archess stood up from the mess, circulating the energy within her and using the power of darkness to clean away the food that stained her. Soon, her clothes seemed as if they were completely new.

As for Xian Moxian, her face was still wan. A great deal of Monster Concubine Archess' poison was still in her body.

Empyrean Demondawn looked at Xiao Moxian and suddenly walked over to her.

"Grandfather..."

Xiao Moxian held her breath. The poison that Monster Concubine Archess left behind within her wasn't fatal at all; resting for a day would have been more than enough to completely recover. But now that she was pregnant, everything had become far more complicated.

If Empyrean Demondawn helped then he could certainly rid her body of all of the poison instantly. But, there was a 100% likelihood that the secret of her pregnancy would be discovered.

When Empyrean Demondawn was a hundred feet away from her, Xiao Moxian subconsciously stepped back. Her heart had caught in her throat. She was unable to find any excuses to refuse her grandfather's help.

At this time, Empyrean Demondawn had already reached out a hand towards her.

"Xian'er! What are you hiding from me?"

Empyrean Demondawn's voice was filled with fury. He had already felt that something was wrong, but he just didn't truly suspect Xiao Moxian. However, when he saw Xiao Moxian use her nirvanic flames as well as her strange actions that didn't conform to her normal behavior, he had confirmed that she was hiding something!

"In the Asura Road, just what happened to you?"

Empyrean Demondawn grabbed onto Xiao Moxian's arm.

Xiao Moxian's heart shrank. Suddenly, she felt it nearly impossible to breathe. It was no longer possible to hide the truth!

She was like a puppet, directly held by Empyrean Demondawn.

As Empyrean Demondawn's energy rushed into her blood vessels, Xiao Moxian felt the world slow down to a crawl. All sight and sound seemed to fall away…

Chi chi chi!

A black vortex appeared in Empyrean Demondawn's palm. In just a moment, all of the poison within Xiao Moxian was swallowed up by the black vortex.

This was Empyrean Demondawn's Heaven Absorbing Demon Art.

The poison was eliminated and the agonizing pain in her body also disappeared. But compared to the suffering in her heart, that physical pain hadn't been anything at all.

Time passed, one breath of time after one breath of time. To Xiao Moxian, every breath of time was as long as a year.

She didn't dare to look at Empyrean Demondawn's face. She didn't even dare to breathe.

As for Empyrean Demondawn, he remained completely quiet. As he grabbed Xiao Moxian's arm, a long period of silence passed.

Rivulets of sweat dripped down Xiao Moxian's back and forehead. She felt as if she could collapse at any moment.

"Brother Demondawn…"

At this time, the Monster Emperor finally spoke up.

Before, he had already been suspicious about Xiao Moxian's bodily state. He felt that her primordial yin energy wasn't as steady as it should be, and her energy was in utter chaos.

But when he considered that it might be because Xiao Moxian didn't consolidate her foundation in the Asura Road, the Monster Emperor didn't care too much about this matter. But then, in the battle just now, he saw Empyrean Demondawn's expression.

The Monster Emperor seemed to faintly realize what happened.

"All of you, leave!"

The Monster Emperor waved his hand and the monster race martial artists began to file out. They never imagined that things would develop to such a degree. When Monster Concubine Archess and Xiao Moxian had begun to fight, all of them had fallen silent, none of them daring to utter a single word.

Whether it was Xiao Moxian or Monster Concubine Archess, they both had a status far above their own.

"You also leave."

The Monster Emperor looked at Monster Concubine Archess.

Monster Concubine Archess clenched her teeth and silently withdrew.

Before she left, she cast a deep look towards Xiao Moxian. She had already faintly guessed what might have happened. Monster Concubine Archess possessed a half-step Empyrean cultivation and in the monster race her status was only inferior to that of the Monster Empress and several great God Beasts.

She carefully observed Xiao Moxian and had discovered several questionable points.

After a time, in the entire hall, there was only Empyrean Demondawn, the Monster Emperor, and Xiao Moxian left.

“Tell me, who is he?”

After remaining silent for a long time, Empyrean Demondawn finally spoke up. At this time, he was like a furious lion.

Xiao Moxian trembled. She looked up towards her grandfather.

Empyrean Demondawn’s eyes had turned blood red as if they could swallow her alive!

Xiao Moxian bit her lips and remained silent.

“Good! You don’t want to tell me!? Fine! Then I’ll just refine the bastard in your womb! In any case, a bastard of unknown origin is the shame of my demon race!”

As Empyrean Demondawn spoke, he lifted his left hand. A brilliant black vortex appeared in his palm. This vortex was his Heaven Absorbing Demon Art. As long as this black vortex was thrust into Xiao Moxian’s stomach, whether it was the baby’s forming soul, its flesh and blood, or its energy, all of it would be devoured without a single speck remaining!

Seeing Empyrean Demondawn raise his hand, Xiao Moxian closed her eyes and decisively said, “Grandfather, if you will do that then kill me as well. If I cannot protect my child then I do not wish to live in this world any longer!”

Xiao Moxian’s voice was resolute.

The Monster Emperor’s heart skipped a beat. He was well aware that with Xiao Moxian’s character, she would stay true to her words. If Empyrean Demondawn really did as he threatened then Xiao Moxian would instantly commit suicide!

“Brother Demondawn, calm down!”

The Monster Emperor quickly spoke out. He could feel that this time, Empyrean Demondawn was truly angered!

In the past, no matter what Xiao Moxian did, Empyrean Demondawn would always accommodate her. No matter what trouble she stirred up, no matter who she provoked, he would always play damage control and deal with the aftermath. But this time, she had touched upon his bottom line!

The Monster Emperor feared that in his violent rage, Empyrean Demondawn would do something he could not take back.

If anything happened to Xiao Moxian, it would be a tremendous loss to the monster and demon races!

Even the baby in Xiao Moxian’s womb needed further consideration. It had to be known that it was extremely difficult for a God Beast to become pregnant, especially for someone like Xiao Moxian. Once they had a child, after that child grew up they would definitely become an amazingly outstanding individual. To rashly kill such a child was too great a pity!

“…You want to threaten me with your death?”

Empyrean Demondawn's complexion turned cold and grim. "In the Divine Realm, no one can threaten me, not even you! Do you not believe I don't have a hundred methods to make it impossible for you to commit suicide?"

Empyrean Demondawn's voice was ferocious. But, Xiao Moxian was also a stubborn and proud character. She clenched her teeth and said, "Even if you have 100 methods to lock in my energy so that I cannot kill myself, it is impossible for you to continue that for the rest of my life. As long as that spell is undone then I will instantly abandon my meridians and die!"

Facing Empyrean Demondawn who was roiling with killing intent, no one dared to speak to him like that. Even Monster Concubine Archess, whose status was in the top 10 of the monster race, didn't dare to say a single word when she was struck to the point of spitting out blood in the face of everyone.

It was because when facing the enraged Empyrean Demondawn, the pressure was simply too great. No one knew for sure whether or not he would instantly strike to kill at any moment!

"Hehehe! Good! You truly are my good granddaughter. Is that little animal really worth you protecting him? That you would threaten me with your own death!? Do you think that just because you don't say anything, I won't know? The bloodline of the bastard within you has the aura of a True Dragon as well as the aura of a human. When you went to the Asura Road, Divine Dream Heavenly Palace's Lin Ming also went. Along with the aura of a True Dragon and humanity, who else could it be but him?"

Chapter 1754 – House Arrest

Chapter 1754 – House Arrest

…

…

…

After Empyrean Demondawn suddenly mentioned Lin Ming's name, Xiao Moxian trembled and didn't speak again.

Xiao Moxian hadn't thought that Empyrean Demondawn would know that the father of the child was Lin Ming. But, thinking about it more carefully, even if he did know then there was nothing he could do.

Lin Ming was someone related to humanity's great calamity, and it wouldn't even be an exaggeration to call him one of the hopes of humanity. In this case, how could Empyrean Divine Dream allow anything to happen to Lin Ming?

"Ruthless! Far too ruthless! So it really is him!" Empyrean Demondawn's killing intent surged out in all directions. "That little beast, even in the tempering grounds of the Asura Road he still messes around in love affairs like a playboy and even went so far as to deceive my granddaughter!"

Empyrean Demondawn's voice shook with rage.

At this time the Monster Emperor said, "This Lin Ming, he might have known that my monster race and the demon race were planning to ally with the saints and also knew that Xian'er's marriage was the key to this. Thus, he decided to take advantage of the time he was in the Asura Road and trick Xian'er of her chastity, ruining all our plans before they began!

He even left behind a child within Xian'er, making everything an absolute mess! This move of his is ruthless enough!"

Hearing the Monster Emperor say that all of this was a deliberate plot that Lin Ming had planned, Xiao Moxian was unable to remain silent.

She looked towards the Monster Emperor and coldly said, "Monster Emperor Your Majesty, you may blame me, but you cannot use such words to frame Lin Ming. Before this he didn't know that you planned to ally with the saints nor did he trick me. Me being with him is also on my own initiative."

"Shut up!"

The already enraged Empyrean Demondawn suddenly burst out. His fist punched towards Xiao Moxian's stomach!

This sudden move caused Xiao Moxian's complexion to change. Even the Monster Emperor held his breath.

"Demondawn, you - !"

The Monster Emperor was too late to stop Empyrean Demondawn. With a loud cracking sound, Xiao Moxian was sent flying away like a broken kite. She felt a terrifying strength pour into her inner world, rushing towards that tiny life within her.

"Ahh!"

Xiao Moxian cried out in panic. A cold sweat ran through her. She thought that Empyrean Demondawn planned to kill her child!

However, after falling to the ground, Xiao Moxian discovered she wasn't wounded in the least. Rather, she discovered that the power Empyrean Demondawn placed within her body had simply formed a group of black energy that locked down her inner world. As for the place the black energy locked down, it was where the fetus within her was!

Xiao Moxian paled. “What did you do?”

Empyrean Demondawn didn’t respond. He flicked his fingers, pushing her acupoints and sealing away all her true essence.

Then, Xiao Moxian felt sore and weak, as if she had reverted to being a mortal girl.

“I do not like being led by the nose.”

The originally enraged Empyrean Demondawn’s voice had calmed down. However, his calm voice still gave off an extremely oppressive feeling. “I have placed an energy lock within your stomach. With your cultivation, it is impossible for you to unravel it. With just a single thought from me the energy lock will collapse and create an energy vortex of the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art, killing the fetus in you!

“You might have thought that I wouldn’t be able to bear destroying such a talented baby, and you are right, I truly cannot bear to do so. But compared to the survival of the monster race and demon race, compared to the future of our people, what can an unborn child be considered as?”

The monster and demon races were in a precarious situation, caught in a raging storm all around them. Even if this baby was destined to become a True Divinity in the future, this wasn’t meaningful to them at all because it was a matter that might occur dozens of millions of years from now. And by that time, the monster and demon races might have been long annihilated in the great calamity!

Moreover, no one could say whether or not the fetus within Xiao Moxian would be able to become a True Divinity in the future.

Now, what Empyrean Demondawn and the Monster Emperor had to consider first was how to preserve the existence of their monster and demon races.

“You want to use my child to threaten me?”

Xiao Moxian looked at Empyrean Demondawn, her voice trembling.

"Originally I didn't want to force you, but… you have left me far too disappointed." Empyrean Demondawn's voice was deep and resonant. As he looked at Xiao Moxian, his eyes were filled with indisputable anger.

"You knew long ago that our demon and monster races planned to ally with the saints. Yet you disregarded the interests of your people and gave away your most precious thing to that little beast Lin Ming! Who gave you this right? Everything you have now, your bloodline, your body, all of it was bestowed upon you by the monster and demon races. Do you think that your most precious primordial yin energy belonged to you alone, that you could give it to whomever you pleased?"

One's body, their skin, their hair, all of it was granted to them by their parents. In the extremely traditional demon race, in the eyes of Empyrean Demondawn, Xiao Moxian's actions were no different from betraying them.

"Starting from this day forth, you cannot leave. I will seal away your strength. Ten days from now, at the longevity feast, the Good Fortune Saint Son will publicly propose your marriage to me. I want you to agree to it! Otherwise, your child will not live on the eleventh day!"

Empyrean Demondawn gloomily said. Xiao Moxian shivered as she heard this.

"That's right… at the longevity feast ten days from now, Lin Ming will also be there. When you agree to the marriage proposal it will also be in front of him, so you had best prepare yourself to do so. And… after I seal away your strength it will be impossible for you to send Lin Ming a sound transmission. Whether you want your child or whether you want your so-called love, make your own choice!"

Empyrean Demondawn's words were knives that stabbed into Xiao Moxian, leaving her heart bleeding.

Was there any crueler situation in the world?

Her own grandfather was threatening her with the life of his unborn great grandchild.

To have her, in front of the person she loved the most, agree to marry someone she loathed above all.

Moreover… she would have no chance to explain the situation to Lin Ming. She would cruelly hurt Lin Ming and then have to face his endless disappointment.

Thinking of this, Xiao Moxian's heart shrank. As she looked at her own grandfather, she felt that his face had become unfamiliar to her.

"I will give you one final warning. You absolutely must not think that I cannot bear killing your child, so… do not disobey me anymore. From this day on, forget Lin Ming. As for your child, as long as you do not disobey me, I will do everything in my power to hide it from the saints until it can be born. But, the child will also have no relation to Lin Ming."

As Empyrean Demondawn spoke, he turned and left.

And behind Empyrean Demondawn, the Monster Emperor shook his head again and again. He said, "Xian'er… you are too naïve, too pure, too young. I know that you hate your grandfather, but in the future you will come to know that everything he did was for your own good. If he were to allow you to do as you wished, then the alliance between our monster and demon races with the saints will break apart. In the upcoming great calamity, it is likely we will all perish! At that time, just what will you be considered as? Without the roots, just what will you do? Will you just follow Lin Ming around like a grieving dog? Do you know that you aren't even Lin Ming's official wife? Do you believe that Lin Ming will always share the same affection with you in the future?

"A man's vow is the same as dog shit. The so-called love is nonsense and sacrificing yourself for love is the height of stupidity. Moreover, if you decide to sacrifice yourself for love, you will also drag down the monster and demon races with you, placing my people, your people, in a perilous state. Knowing this, do you still wonder why your grandfather is so angry today? Even I am disappointed in you. Remember, in a world of martial artists, strength is all. What use is love? Can you eat it?

“Moreover, it’s unknown whether or not that Lin Ming can live for much longer. He reached past his limits and agreed to a hundred year duel with the Good Fortune Saint Son. At that time, even if he doesn’t die, he will be beaten into a crippled state. Will you take revenge for him? Do you think he will still be able to take revenge for himself in the future? The saints will not give him the chance!

“Give up on him. When you become an Empyrean in the future, when you become a True Divinity and the world is in your palm, you will understand just how naïve you have been!”

As the Monster Emperor said this, he also turned and left.

Soon, maids pushed open the doors and brought Xiao Moxian away.

After passing through several winding corridors, Xiao Moxian was brought to an extremely luxurious room. There were rugs made of peacock feathers and the smell of incense made of heavenly materials wafted in the air. Even when eating meals or bathing, there were always eight maids constantly supervising and helping her at all hours.

However, there was a single point. After Xiao Moxian entered the room, she wasn’t able to take even half a step out again.

She had been placed under house arrest here in order to wait for the Monster Emperor’s longevity feast ten days from now. At that time, in front of Lin Ming, she would have to agree to the Good Fortune Saint Son’s proposal.

And, what pained her most was that she wasn’t able to tell Lin Ming her reasons for doing so. She couldn’t even tell him of her pregnancy. And after the longevity feast and even after the child was born, it would have no relations with Lin Ming. He might not even know that he had a child.

“I have to… before the longevity feast begins… inform Lin Ming of the situation…”

Chapter 1755 – Demondawn's Turmoil

Chapter 1755 – Demondawn's Turmoil

…

…

…

Three days later –

In a massive silver battleship outside Heaven Lifting Black Pagoda, the Good Fortune Saint Son sat above a stone bed, deep in meditation.

Then, a flame flickered in front of him.

This was the light of a sound transmitting talisman. A brief ray of thought penetrated into the Good Fortune Saint Son's spiritual sea along with it.

Reading this message, the Good Fortune Saint Son grinned.

"Your Highness Saint Son, what are you so happy about?"

A rainbow-clothed girl tittered and asked from beside the Good Fortune Saint Son.

The Good Fortune Saint Son narrowed his eyes. He played with the burning embers of the sound transmitting talisman and leisurely said, "The Monster Emperor has sent me a message. Xiao Moxian has agreed to marry me. As long as I propose at the longevity fest, she will agree!"

"Hohohoho! Congratulations Your Highness!" The rainbow-clothed girl happily said. "I've already said that Your Highness Saint Son is a dragon amongst men. There are countless teams of proud daughters among the saints that are just waiting for the Saint Son to visit them. How could this Xiao Moxian possibly refuse Your Highness? If Your Highness Saint Son is willing to dual cultivate with her and take her primordial yin, that is her good fortune!”

The rainbow-clothed girl smirked as she spoke. She really did think that Xiao Moxian had obtained a great bargain by being able to latch onto a thigh of the Saint Son. This was because after the great calamity was over, the saints would capture the Divine Realm and rule the world. As for the Good Fortune Saint Son, he would eventually become the new Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. At that time, Xiao Moxian would be a favored imperial concubine of the Saint Sovereign, so of course she would easily profit from all this.

“Humph! This is simply a union of benefits. The Monster Emperor and Empyrean Demondawn are both eagerly waiting for me to hand over the method of becoming a True Divinity! However, even if I hand over the method to them their chances of breaking into the True Divinity realm are less than 1%, and even if they can, that is something that will only happen dozens of millions of years from now.”

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke, he walked to a window. Looking out the porthole at the Black Pagoda of the monster race, the smile on his face became increasingly wide.

At this time, the rainbow-clothed girl reached out from behind the Good Fortune Saint Son and held onto his waist. In a spoiled tone she said, “That seductress has a physique that is very suited to dual cultivation, so being able to take her primordial yin is extremely beneficial. Although Your Highness Saint Son has a new love, you shouldn’t forget your old flames either!”

As the rainbow-clothed girl spoke, a hand gently rubbed against the Good Fortune Saint Son like a spirit snake.

“Haha!” The Good Fortune Saint Son grabbed the woman’s arm and pulled her into his chest. He laughed, saying, “How could I forget the old. You follow me from your heart, but that Ji Xian’er might not be the same. If she knows her limits and takes care of me calmly and without reserve, then I might give her a proper status.”

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke, he picked up the rainbow-clothed girl and tossed her into the luxurious great chair. As she cried out in shock, the Good Fortune Saint Son had already thrown himself onto her.

For a time, the only sounds that filled the room were heated pants and moans.

And behind this extravagant and obscene scene, outside of the porthole, the monster race's Black Pagoda stood tall, standing between the heavens and earth like an ancient dragon rising to the sky…

A gray moon hung high in the sky. Cold starlight sprinkled down, covering the Black Pagoda.

At the peak of the Black Pagoda, at a summit that stood a million feet up into the air, a black-robed man stood quietly, his gaze looking out a hundred miles towards the Good Fortune Saint Son's silver battleship.

The black-robed man's looks were cold and decisive. The edges and lines of his face were sharp and distinct. His eyes were like black gems, shining with a profound light.

This man was Empyrean Demondawn. He had stood here for three days and three nights, not moving in the least. He was like a black stone sculpture that had stood here since time immemorial.

"Haa…"

A faint sigh sounded out from behind Empyrean Demondawn. A middle-aged-looking man in a red robe slowly stepped onto the summit. This person was the ruler of the monster race, the Monster Emperor.

"Demondawn, if Xian'er doesn't agree, will you really kill the child in her womb?"

Empyrean Demondawn slightly shook. He turned his head, In the bright moonlight, his profile was illuminated a dark silver gray.

He humorlessly chuckled. “If you ask such a question, we must first be able to hide the matter of her pregnancy before even considering it!”

Empyrean Demondawn shook his head once more. He loathed Lin Ming from the depths of his heart for stealing away his granddaughter’s chastity, and wished that he could tear Lin Ming to shreds. But no matter what happened, the reality was that the child in Xiao Moxian’s womb had the bloodline of their monster and demon races. Moreover, when he investigated the child with his energy, he discovered that it was beyond ordinary.

The child possessed a True Phoenix bloodline and True Dragon aura. Moreover, it also possessed a strength he could not understand. Although Empyrean Demondawn didn’t know what the origin of this strength was, it made his heart inexplicably race. Moreover, this child hadn’t formed a true fetus form and yet it was already able to affect heaven and earth origin energy as well as the Laws. This sort of talent was far too terrifying!

If the saints discovered the existence of this child, they absolutely would not allow it to be born in the world. They would destroy it before then!

The Monster Emperor said, “The energy lock you sealed away Xian’er’s dantian with comes from the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art. It can swallow all origin energy as well as the pure yang energy and fetal energy within her. During the longevity feast, as long as Xian’er doesn’t reveal any flaws or arouse the suspicions of the saints, she should be able to conceal what happened...”

When Empyrean Demondawn had placed an energy lock within Xiao Moxian, although it was to threaten her, the main purpose was to protect her.

“We must hide the truth, otherwise the consequences will be inconceivable!” Empyrean Demondawn grimly said.

At the longevity banquet, if Xiao Moxian’s pregnancy became known by the Good Fortune Saint Son and also made public there, the results would be unimaginable!

This wasn’t just a strike against the Good Fortune Saint Son’s face, this was completely ripping apart his face.

In a situation where the saints were making a marriage alliance with the demon and monster races, the fiancée Xiao Moxian had already been stolen away by the top genius of humanity, Lin Ming, and even carried his child. The Good Fortune Saint Son’s head would turn so red it would likely blow up.

Everyone under the heavens would laugh and jeer at the Good Fortune Saint Son.

Even within the saint race there would absolutely be some people and influences who didn’t like the Good Fortune Saint Son and would take advantage of this to stir up chaos.

At that time, the Good Fortune Saint Son would be blinded with rage and it was likely that their alliance would be ruined!

It had to be known that compared to the saints, the monster and demon races didn’t have much strength at all.

The saints didn’t necessarily need to ally with the monster and demon races. Their purpose in doing so was to strike at the confidence of humanity so that the saints would suffer fewer losses.

But on the other hand, if the monster and demon races didn’t ally with the saints, there was a 99% chance that the two races would be exterminated in the great calamity.

The safest path to take was naturally to kill the child in Xiao Moxian’s womb.

But, Empyrean Demondawn was well aware that if he did this… he would lose his granddaughter forever.

The next time they met in the future, it would be as blood sworn enemies!

“That damned little beast!”

Empyrean Demondawn suddenly gripped his fists, his knuckles crackling. He wished he could tear apart Lin Ming!

The truth was that dozens of years ago, not long after Xiao Moxian arrived at the Asura Road, Monster Prince Duyu had sent Old Blue a message which included the news Xiao Moxian was travelling together within someone. Monster Prince Duyu's message had been filled with grievances. At the time, from the clues given, Empyrean Demondawn suspected this person was Lin Ming.

At that point, whether it was Empyrean Demondawn or the Monster Emperor, neither of them ever thought that things would develop to this stage.

"Lin Ming… agh! If it wasn't for the great calamity then it would have been appropriate for Xian'er to be with him. But what a pity, the times will not accommodate them. The great calamity is soon to arrive and he is too young. I estimate that within the next several hundred years, the true great calamity will erupt. At that time, Lin Ming will not be any older than 500 years. A 500 year old junior, what use will he be in the face of a great calamity that has swept up the fates of two races? He is simply asking for death!"

The Monster Emperor shook his head. Let alone Lin Ming, just how much could Empyrean Divine Dream do when faced with the terrifying might of the saint race?

"Humph! Live to 500 years? It's already more than enough for him to live long enough to fulfill his 100 year battle with the Good Fortune Saint Son!" Right now, Empyrean Demondawn felt bothered whenever Lin Ming's name was mentioned. This wasn't just because Lin Ming had left a massive pile of trouble for them to cover up, but also because Empyrean Demondawn felt that Lin Ming had stolen his granddaughter from him. From his previous exchange with Xiao Moxian, he noticed that every time she spoke up it was to help Lin Ming, even opposing her grandfather to do so! How could he not be angered!

"A hundred year battle… I really do hope that Lin Ming can win or at the very least not lose in an ugly manner. But unfortunately… that is impossible…"

The Monster Emperor said, dark clouds rising in his heart. In the depths of his heart he certainly hoped that humanity could survive the great calamity. After all, when the humans ruled the Divine Realm, the monster race was able to live on. But if the saints were to rule the Divine Realm, it was unknown what their situation would be.

Even though the Monster Emperor knew this logic, he had no other choice he could make.

When one was weaker than someone else, they could only bow their head in defeat.

Empyrean Demondawn let out a deep sigh. He looked in the distance, his eyes filled with bleak sorrow.

Facing the changing momentum of the world, he felt a deep sense of powerlessness.

It was like becoming an Empyrean was all in vain.

Whether it was his granddaughter's happiness or the future of the monster and demon races, everything was spiraling out of his control.

If this was all he could accomplish in the entirety of his life, that was truly too much of a failure...

.....

As Empyrean Demondawn and the Monster Emperor were at a loss for what path to take, in Xiao Moxian's room, the entire chamber was filled with an intoxicating fragrance.

A 100 square foot pool was filled with scintillating flower petals. The air was blurry with mist.

"Miss, please undress."

Several maids wearing thin gauze knelt on the ground, each of them holding a variety of bathing tools as they waited upon Xiao Moxian.

Looking at the carefully mixed pool of water, Xiao Moxian's demeanor was blasé. She removed her layers of clothing, revealing a perfect body.

She gently lifted her right foot, her pearly toes stepping onto the walls of the pool. Her snow white legs were so enchanting that they left one blinded with beauty.

She slowly stepped into the pool, her body sinking in.

The mist was like a dream. Xiao Moxian submerged herself in the pool. The several maids respectfully walked near Xiao Moxian, taking off their thin gauze clothes and stepping into the pool with her, beginning to help wipe down her body.

Her porcelain perfect skin dripped with crystalline beads of water. Her body was like a flower collecting the morning dew, leaving one mesmerized.

"Miss, please take this off."

Several maids wanted to help Xiao Moxian wash her chest, but strung at her chest was a strangely exotic necklace.

With this necklace in the way, it was naturally inconvenient to wash her chest.

"You leave, I will wash myself."

Xiao Moxian frowned, as if she were unhappy that these maids were touching her chest.

The several maids panicked as they saw Xiao Moxian become somewhat disgruntled.

"Leave!"

Xiao Moxian's voice was harsh. But, her right hand grasped her necklace, holding it tight!

To Xiao Moxian, this necklace held extraordinary significance...

Chapter 1756 – Thousand Mile Heartlink

Chapter 1756 – Thousand Mile Heartlink

…

…

…

"But, Miss…"

The several maids kneeled in the water, confusion and panic coloring their faces. The Monster Emperor had commanded them to not allow Xiao Moxian to leave their line of sight for even a single moment. Although it was said to be serving her, the truth was that it was monitoring her.

With Xiao Moxian's character, she wouldn't sit around and do nothing. She would try everything within her power to make something happen. If no one was watching over her at all moments, who knew what would happen. The Monster Emperor and Empyrean Demondawn wouldn't feel relieved either.

"Leave!" Xiao Moxian's expression was cold. "When I'm bathing I do not like others staring at me from the side."

"This…"

The several maids looked to each other. If Xiao Moxian was telling them to leave, they really didn't know what to do.

"Miss, please don't cause trouble for us. We are merely following the Monster Emperor's orders and cannot leave you. At most we can stand near the door."

The several maids moved out and quietly fell back to the entrance.

Xiao Moxian's bathing chamber was extremely large and the entrance was around a hundred feet from the bathing pool.

When the maids left, Xiao Moxian quieted down. She took a deep breath and slowly sank into the water.

Her shimmering skin and luscious curves submerged into the water. Finally, even her head went down under. Her long black hair was like a black rose blooming in a lake as it scattered outwards…

Warm waves of water rippled along her body. Although this should have been comfortable, at this moment Xiao Moxian only felt exceptionally lonely.

She slowly traced the strange and exotic necklace hanging down on her chest.

This necklace couldn't be called beautiful at all. In fact, many people would consider it somewhat ugly. The chain was overly thick and uncomfortable to wear, and the design itself was crude and simple, without any feminine elegance.

The reason Xiao Moxian carried this necklace with her was because it was the first gift Lin Ming had given her.

It had a pleasant-sounding name – the Thousand Mile Heartlink.

After Xiao Moxian was placed under house arrest by Empyrean Demondawn, all of her strength had been sealed away. Besides her extraordinary physique, in all other aspects she was similar to a mortal.

In this situation, it would be difficult for Xiao Moxian to contact Lin Ming and impossible for her to tell him about her upcoming marriage proposal from the saints.

However, because of this necklace, everything had turned around!

Lin Ming had purchased this necklace at Divine Rune City's treasure fair before the auction began. He had spent 30 million contribution points in order to buy it.

This necklace could record a person's soul aura. The owner of this necklace could contact the person whose soul aura was recorded within. No matter how far apart they were, as long as they were in the same universe, they could contact each other!

However, this necklace could only be used to communicate between two specific people. Due to its niche function and the high cost to create one, its price had been incredibly high.

Even an Empyrean spirit treasure was only several hundred million points. In other words, this necklace was worth a tenth of an Empyrean spirit treasure.

Another restriction was that this necklace was limited to the Asura Road in use. However, before she and Lin Ming left the Asura Road, he had tinkered with the necklace and told her she could use it in the Divine Realm.

Xiao Moxian had already recorded Lin Ming's soul aura in the necklace. Now, it was her first time using it.

Her thoughts focused on the Thousand Mile Heartlink. Xiao Moxian began to whisper Lin Ming's name…

She was extremely afraid. With her strength being sealed, she didn't know whether she had the ability to use this necklace. But now she could only try her best, even if there was no hope left.

Xiao Moxian's chanting whispers carried with them her final hopes and message. She sent them into the unknown void, and beneath the mysterious pull of the Laws, they departed from the monster race's great pagoda, veering towards the silver spirit ship that was flying away from Divine Dream Heavenly Palace…

………

“Lin Ming the Monster Emperor’s grand longevity feast will begin in several more days. Tomorrow we will go to the monster race’s Black Pagoda.” In the silver spirit ship, Empyrean Divine Dream was advising Lin Ming.

Lin Ming bowed, “Junior understands, Senior Divine Dream. I will prepare to my best.”

“You don’t need to make any special preparations. The only reason I am telling you this again is to urge you not to come into conflict with the Good Fortune Saint Son at the banquet. He cannot do anything to you. If he provokes you, you need not pay attention to him. Do not forget, you are far younger than he is. No one will laugh at you for ignoring him. Rather, they will simply think that the Good Fortune Saint Son is bullying you. Do you understand?”

“I understand…” Lin Ming nodded. In truth, he didn’t mind waiting the full hundred years to fight the Good Fortune Saint Son. Because if that were true, the Good Fortune Saint Son would have even less of a chance of victory!

And concealing his own abilities would also give him an advantage.

Just as Lin Ming was about to request to leave, at this time, he shook and froze on the spot.

An unbelievable sound transmission rang out in his mind, the contents of it leaving him shocked!

“W-what?”

Lin Ming was left at a complete loss. “Xian’er said… she’s pregnant? I… I actually… have a child…”

All of this had happened far too quickly. With the great calamity approaching, Lin Ming simply didn’t want to have any children at all. He was afraid that after the child was born, it would have to face a cruel and brutal war.

But the plans of the heavens superseded those of man.

For Xiao Moxian, having a child was originally an incredibly difficult matter. When Lin Ming was together with Xiao Moxian, he had listened to her more than once speak about how she might never have any children in her lifetime. Because of this reason, Xiao Moxian had always been covered in a faint layer of gloom.

Now that Xiao Moxian was finally pregnant, this should have been an event worthy of endless excitement and joy.

But from Xiao Moxian's tone, Lin Ming could hear no joy or happiness. Rather, there was only worry and sorrow.

Lin Ming's heart felt gripped. He was well aware that in her current situation, this child would place her in danger!

He anxiously said, "Xian'er, has the matter of your pregnancy been discovered?"

Lin Ming tried to respond to Xiao Moxian's voice with his soul force. As he asked this, on the other end of the Thousand Mile Heartlink, Xiao Moxian trembled, tears quietly flowing from her eyes...

With her having lost her strength, even with the Thousand Mile Heartlink she wasn't sure that she could contact Lin Ming. Now, as she had nearly lost all hope in despair, as she had to face the threats of her heartless grandfather, as she had to soon agree to marriage with the Good Fortune Saint Son, she had finally heard Lin Ming's voice.

Xiao Moxian could no longer suppress the feelings within her heart.

"I've been discovered... I didn't know I was pregnant at the start, otherwise I would have waited until the child was born before returning to the monster race... Big Brother Lin, what can I do? I've already been placed under house arrest by Grandfather. My grandfather, he..."

Xiao Moxian related all of her experiences in the monster race and demon race to Lin Ming, including Empyrean Demondawn threatening her with her child's life to agree to marriage with the Good Fortune Saint Son.

Pa!

On the stone bed that Lin Ming was sitting on, a crack suddenly appeared!

This was because due to Lin Ming's rage, energy had involuntarily rushed out from his body.

Empyrean Divine Dream was startled upon seeing this. "Lin Ming, what is it?"

At that moment, Empyrean Divine Dream had felt a strange energy spread into Lin Ming's spiritual sea. As for what it meant, she didn't know.

Empyrean Divine Dream also didn't understand the Asura Laws.

Lin Ming remained silent, not able to immediately reply to Divine Dream. At this time, Xiao Moxian's voice sounded out in his mind once more.

"Big Brother Lin, I don't want to agree to the marriage, but I cannot lose my child..."

As Xiao Moxian was soaking in the bathing pool, her tears washed into the water, making it slightly salty...

Lin Ming could understand the meaning within Xiao Moxian's words. For the child within her womb, she was willing to do anything. In a situation where she had no choice, she could only agree to marry the Good Fortune Saint Son.

This was something Lin Ming could absolutely not accept.

Lin Ming gripped his fists, his knuckles releasing explosive crackling sounds.

In the end, he was just far too weak!

If he could completely annihilate the saint race by himself, would Xiao Moxian have to face all of this?

“Don’t worry, you will always have me… I will not allow anyone to harm our child nor will I allow others to steal you away. You do not need to consent to the Saint Son’s marriage but do not offend your grandfather either. Leave the rest to me.”

Lin Ming’s words echoed through the Laws of the Thousand Mile Heartlink and into Xian Moxian’s ears.

For a time, this was the only sound in Xiao Moxian’s world.

Don’t worry, you will always have me…

With these words, it was like all of Xiao Moxian’s grief and sorrow had instantly disappeared.

In her life, she always believed that she could stand alone, that all she needed was to be strong. But after meeting Lin Ming and especially after discovering she had a child, she discovered that she also desired to be protected and cared for…

Chapter 1757 – Longevity Feast

Chapter 1757 – Longevity Feast

…

…

…

"Lin Ming, what happened? Did someone send you a sound transmission?"

Empyrean Divine Dream looked towards Lin Ming, asking him once more.

Lin Ming took a deep breath. Then, he truthfully said, "Yes… someone sent me a sound transmission – it was Xiao Moxian."

"Xiao Moxian?" Empyrean Divine Dream looked at Lin Ming with surprise. "It seems you met with Xiao Moxian in the Asura Road?"

Empyrean Divine Dream naturally knew that when Lin Ming went to the Asura Road to adventure, Xiao Moxian had also gone there. It wasn't strange for them to meet in the Asura Road and even become friends.

And if Xiao Moxian were to send Lin Ming a sound transmission now, Empyrean Divine Dream thought it would be Xiao Moxian disclosing some inside information on the monster and demon races to Lin Ming.

Towards anything related to the monster and demon races, Empyrean Divine Dream certainly was concerned. This was because their attitudes towards the saints and humans were connected to the great calamity.

If the monster and demon races were to ally with the saints, that would be a massive blow to the confidence of humanity.

“What did Xiao Moxian say?”

Empyrean Divine Dream asked, highly concerned about the contents of the sound transmission.

Seeing Empyrean Divine Dream’s concerned expression, Lin Ming bitterly smiled. He slowly said, “She said she is pregnant, and that the child… is mine…”

After Lin Ming said these words, even the normally ethereal Empyrean Divine Dream who never seemed as if anything could affect her mood, suddenly flashed her eyes wide open.

“You… what did you say?”

Empyrean Divine Dream looked at Lin Ming with utter disbelief etched on her face. “Xiao Moxian… is pregnant with your child. You…”

The shock value of Lin Ming’s words was too great. Empyrean Divine Dream wasn’t able to come up with an immediate response.

She knew what status Xiao Moxian had in the monster and demon races. She was even faintly aware that Xiao Moxian was one of the main chips in the potential alliance between the monster and demon races with the saints.

But now, Xiao Moxian was carrying Lin Ming’s child. If the Good Fortune Saint Son were to find out about this, no one knew just how he would react.

“Does Empyrean Demondawn know about this?”

What Divine Dream was concerned about the most was Empyrean Demondawn’s stance on this matter.

Lin Ming nodded and briefly reiterated Xiao Moxian’s heartbreaking experiences.

After Empyrean Divine Dream listened to him, she let out a deep breath. She had already expected that this would be the route he would take.

"Lin Ming... about this... I don't have a good solution yet either..."

Empyrean Divine Dream shook her head. Lin Ming was originally a perfect match for Xiao Moxian, and they even had a child together. If there was no great calamity, she could definitely bring Lin Ming to the demon race to propose and help facilitate the marriage.

Unfortunately, that was now impossible. No matter how much more talented Lin Ming was, it was a useless endeavor.

To the monster and demon races, what they cared about was the present. As for things in the future, that could be left to discuss in the future. With the upcoming eruption of the great calamity, both of their races were in a perilous state, teetering on extinction. Who knew whether or not they would still have a future?

Lin Ming fell silent. Empyrean Divine Dream said, "Lin Ming, don't be impulsive. Some matters simply cannot be helped. I will try my best to change Empyrean Demondawn's mind, not just for you, but also for the human race. No matter how slim our hopes are, this is something I must do.

"A few days from now will be the longevity feast. I know that you will be in an uncomfortable and even unbearable mood, but no matter what, you must not enrage Empyrean Demondawn. His most beloved granddaughter is now pregnant with your child, and he must loathe you from the depths of his heart. If you argue with him at the longevity feast it will only add oil to the fire and make matters even worse."

As Empyrean Divine Dream spoke, she stood up and floated away.

These past days, she had been constantly negotiating with the monster and demon races, trying to get a hold on what stance they planned to take in the great calamity. But, the results had left her feeling anxious.

Perhaps humanity really would lose two allies in the monster and demon races.

If so, then Lin Ming's love towards Xiao Moxian would undoubtedly turn into tragedy.

Thinking of this, Empyrean Divine Dream's mood was shrouded in dark clouds.

The monster and demon races could bow their heads in submission, but humanity… had no path of retreat!

Time passed a day at a time.

Xiao Moxian was placed under house arrest in her chambers. All day she would spend her time eating, bathing, sleeping, or idling around.

The Monster Emperor had come to see Xiao Moxian several times. However, Xiao Moxian remained completely silent as if she didn't see him.

The Monster Emperor could only let out a deep sigh at this. He knew that whatever he said was useless.

For the sake of their races, for the survival of their people, they had to sacrifice Xiao Moxian; this was simply far too unfair to her. Especially now, they had even threatened her with her child…

Thus, each time the Monster Emperor visited he could only order the maids to serve Xiao Moxian attentively and leave behind some nourishing heavenly materials before quietly leaving.

These heavenly materials were processed by the maids and turned into soups, dishes, and other forms of meals. As for Xiao Moxian, she welcomed this and ate it all down.

No matter how sad she was, Xiao Moxian wouldn't go on a hunger strike out of spite.

All of the spirit medicines, every bowl of spirit food, Xiao Moxian would earnestly eat them up, all for the child in her womb.

She was well aware that the child she had with Lin Ming possessed extraordinary talent. Although the child was still only in its most basic form within her stomach, it was actually able to absorb heaven and earth origin energy.

In any event, she could not waste this child's talent and affect its growth.

While Xiao Moxian was under house arrest, more and more heroes from all over the universe began catching up to the monster race.

The monster race's Black Pagoda became increasingly lively.

Great influences from all over had converged here. Just looking at human Empyreans alone, there were over a dozen of them.

As for the saints, they also brought several top Empyreans. They followed the Good Fortune Saint Son and moved into the most opulent and distinguished mansion in the monster race's Black Pagoda.

Every day, there would be people from the monster and saint races entering and leaving the mansion that the saints were living in.

All sorts of top quality items and beautiful women were brought into the mansion. The banquets there continued without end and every night the air was filled with music and song.

The human Empyreans saw all of this, but they were helpless to do anything.

During this time period, Lin Ming also entered the monster race's Black Pagoda.

From the moment that Lin Ming stepped into the Black Pagoda, he didn't take a single step out of his room. Rather, he sat alone in his chamber.

All around Lin Ming, heaven and earth origin energy slowly gathered, flowing through his meridians. A black wheel quietly floated in front of him.

His naked upper body revealed a sublime musculature, his lines perfect.

His inner world contained an unfathomably deep strength…

For the rest of the days, Lin Ming spent every moment in cultivation.

In the limitless road of martial arts, this period of time was nothing to speak of. But with these several days of cultivation, Lin Ming was able to adjust his body, divine soul, and inner world to their peak condition.

He already had a foreboding feeling that this longevity feast would be filled with tension. It was likely that swords would be drawn!

"Empyrean Demondawn… Good Fortune Saint Son…"

Lin Ming quietly spoke these two names. In front of him lay a simple black spear. This black spear seemed to have been condensed through the endless rivers of time. Just by looking at it, one felt their heart tremble!

This spear was the Black Dragon Spear that Lin Ming had obtained in the final trial.

With the divine spear in his hand, Lin Ming quietly rubbed the spear shaft. The cold brightness of it shimmered in the dark chamber.

He had been sitting here all night. The sun was soon to rise.

And today was the Monster Emperor's longevity feast!

Chapter 1758 – Reunion of Young Elites

Chapter 1758 – Reunion of Young Elites

…

…

…

"Sir Lin, are you ready? Senior Divine Dream wishes to inform you that it is time to leave."

The voice of a maid echoed out from the other side of Lin Ming's room. Lin Ming lightly said, "I understand."

After wrapping the spear shaft with a strip of cloth, Lin Ming put the spear away and stood up.

Although this was called attending a grand longevity feast banquet, to Lin Ming it was the same as stepping onto a battlefield.

At this time, Lin Ming heard Xiao Moxian's sound transmission.

"Big Brother Lin, my grandfather just came and placed several spells on my body so that no one can make out any differences in me. My time in the longevity feast will be short. Moreover, I will need to agree to the Good Fortune Saint Son's proposal in front of everyone…"

Xiao Moxian's voice was a bit restless.

Lin Ming only said, "Do not agree to him. Leave everything else to me."

"Mm."

Hearing Lin Ming's voice once more, Xiao Moxian's heart warmed and her unease faded away.

"Miss, please hurry, we still must comb your hair and help you change clothes."

At this time, Xiao Moxian heard the shout of a maid. They were worried that Xiao Moxian was planning some little trick to cause a problem at the longevity feast. If that happened, even 10,000 deaths wouldn't be enough of a punishment.

"I'm coming." Xiao Moxian coldly said. It had been difficult for her to get some time alone from these maids and she couldn't delay them too long.

………

Two hours later, the Monster Emperor's grand longevity feast finally began.

The group that Lin Ming traveled with gathered at a specified area.

On the fresh grass, two white-clothed women were talking and laughing. Although their appearances were clearly different, they gave off a feeling of similarity.

As the two women stood there, when combined with the wonderful background around them, it brought a completely natural sense of harmony.

"Senior-apprentice Sister… Miss Mo…" Lin Ming was surprised to see these two women. These two were the sisters Mo Eversnow and Mo Brightmoon. Originally, Mo Eversnow and Mo Brightmoon had stayed at Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, so Lin Ming didn't think they would suddenly arrive at the monster race.

"Lin Ming, you finally left seclusion…" Mo Eversnow looked at Lin Ming, her eyes deep and complex. Now that she was reunited with her sister, all of her wishes had been brought to completion.

The truth was that Mo Eversnow had already come several days ago. But in these past days Lin Ming had been deep in seclusion in order to confront the scene of the longevity feast, thus she only saw him today.

She had learned from her little sister than Tian Mingzi had been killed by Lin Ming using tricks and tactics. Although Lin Ming had drawn support from a death zone, for him to do so still left Mo Eversnow incomparably shocked.

To know that the deep hatred and animosity she had been shouldering for 50,000 years had been avenged all of a sudden, Mo Eversnow felt it all a bit unreal.

“Senior-apprentice Sister… you also came?”

Compared to dozens of years ago, Mo Eversnow seemed to have stepped onto a completely different road of cultivation. Even Lin Ming found it hard to see through her boundary.

This didn’t mean that Mo Eversnow was stronger than Lin Ming. But, because she had borrowed the mortal body of the goddess from the primal god race, Heavenly Empress Xuanqing, in many cases it was impossible to judge her strength using common sense.

Lin Ming could confirm that in these past several dozen years, Mo Eversnow had been following Empyrean Divine Dream in Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, training in the cultivation methods left behind by the ancient primal god race. It was inevitable that her strength would ascend to a completely new level.

The Laws of the god race were also one of the 33 Heavenly Daos.

“Mm… when Miss Frost Dream left seclusion, we came together.”

As Mo Eversnow spoke, amongst the many attending maids from Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming could see a blue-clothed girl looking like a fairy that had fallen from the heavens, elegant and unstained by the mortal world.

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. This blue-clothed girl was Frost Dream, someone Lin Ming hadn't seem for a long time!

Lin Ming already knew that Frost Dream was a reincarnation avatar of Divine Dream. As he looked at Frost Dream once more, he could feel that her aura was becoming increasingly similar to Divine Dream's.

Perhaps in the near future, the two of them would fuse together as one.

At that time, Empyrean Divine Dream would truly step into the realm of True Divinity. However, it was unknown whether or not she could accomplish that before the great calamity erupted.

Lin Ming turned towards Frost Dream and faintly smiled, greeting her. Frost Dream slightly bowed in response, not saying anything. From the time he met her, she had always had a cold and distant personality.

"Lin Ming, when you killed Tian Mingzi, did you happen to keep his bones or head?"

Mo Eversnow grit her teeth beside Lin Ming. The hatred she felt towards Tian Mingzi was far too entrenched in her bones. She wanted to see Tian Mingzi's severed head with her own eyes.

Lin Ming shook his head, "Tian Mingzi's mortal body has already been destroyed. But, his soul is sealed in my Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. After the longevity feast ends, I can show him to Senior-apprentice Sister."

"Great!"

Mo Eversnow took a deep breath, gripping her fists tight. She said in a low voice, "Lin Ming, thank you..."

"Senior-apprentice Sister, there is no need to thank me like a stranger..."

Lin Ming smiled. At this time, Empyrean Divine Dream arrived.

"Let us go."

She lightly said. At the same time, Empyrean Divine Dream also cast Lin Ming a deep look. Lin Ming understood the significance in her gaze. She hoped that he would act accordingly in the longevity feast and wouldn't suffer a loss.

Lin Ming nodded, expressing that he knew what he had to do.

Empyrean Divine Dream didn't say anything further. Everything that could be said had already been said. She believed that with Lin Ming's personality, he would never do something that was beyond his control.

Like this, the group flew into the skies!

As Lin Ming followed Divine Dream to the longevity feast, he was actually shocked by the inside background of the monster race.

So, it seemed that sealed within the monster race's Heaven Lifting Black Pagoda, there was actually a sea.

The sea was incomparably proud. Origin energy was thick in the air as high and mighty waves tumbled about.

Without a doubt, this was a world that the monster race had sealed within the Black Pagoda. However, this world was far too large. To seal such a large world into the Black Pagoda, this was too shocking. At least, Lin Ming didn't believe that the Monster Emperor had the ability to accomplish such a feat.

"The monster race has an extremely deep background. In the ancient past, their people also produced True Divinities..." Divine Dream faintly said from beside Lin Ming. "In the past, the monster race used to be one of the ancient races. 7-8 billion years ago to 10 billion years ago, the monster race was incomparably magnificent. Compared to humanity's inheritances, theirs were far, far longer. Unfortunately, they have already declined, and it's unknown just how much longer they will be able to continue living on for..."

Empyrean Divine Dream sighed as she spoke. Lin Ming knew that as she spoke about the monster race, she was also worried about the human race.

If the rabbit dies, the fox also grieves; it was easy to have sympathy for someone in similar distress. Humanity's future was just as muddled and chaotic as the monster race's was...

In the vast universes of the 33 Heavens, there had never been a race which was able to live prosperously forever...

"Is the god race also an ancient race?"

Lin Ming suddenly asked, looking at Mo Eversnow. Mo Eversnow had possessed the body of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing, and Heavenly Empress Xuanqing had come from the primal god race.

"Yes. 10 billion years ago, out of all the ancient races, the primal god race was the most powerful of them all, thus the reason they dared to call themselves the god race. Their race has a small population, but every individual among them is extraordinary beyond belief. The god race is likely the most perfect race that the heavens have ever created!"

The second time that Lin Ming went to the Eternal Demon Abyss, he had heard from the remnant soul of Empyrean Primordius' disciple about the god race. The god race possessed a formidable divine soul, mortal body, and inner world. They were able to cultivate essence, energy, and divine. From the moment they were born they possessed great strength and a talent that defied the will of the heavens. Not just that, but their lifespan was ten times longer than that of a human.

They were indeed existences that defied heaven's logic.

Unfortunately, even such a race wasn't able to prosper forever. Their people declined over time, and several hundred thousand years ago they had neared extinction.

It seemed that afterwards, Heavenly Empress Xuanqing and Empyrean Primordius had built the Samsara Road together. Their goal was to draw support from the mighty strength of reincarnation through samsara and find the thread of hope for the survival of the primal god race.

But in the end, they had failed.

The Monster Emperor's longevity feast was on an island deep in the center of the sea.

This island alone was 800 miles in diameter. All around this island were smaller islands that surrounded it like planets around a sun, dotting the landscape.

And in the seas amongst these islands, there were countless massive monster beasts, patrolling back and forth.

There were deep sea black turtles, horned sea flood dragons, heaven-swallowing pythons, sea hydras, and so forth.

These sea beasts were titanic in size and each one surpassed a Holy Lord in strength. All of them obeyed the commands of the monster race. If they were to battle, they would be a terrifying force.

"Senior Divine Dream! Brother Lin Ming!"

Suddenly, in the far off distance, a voice echoed out. Someone strode forwards in greeting, sending their regards first to Empyrean Divine Dream and then Lin Ming.

This person was unexpectedly White King, Empyrean Vast Universe's core disciple. At the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, he had fought with Lin Ming on the arena stage!

Behind White King, there was a large and strong team of people. It was clear that Empyrean Vast Universe had also come.

"Long time no see."

Lin Ming greeted. As he saw White King again, he felt his heart fill with emotion. For this longevity feast it was likely that all of the top young elites of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, those like Dragon Fang, Hang Chi, and Jun Bluemoon, would also come.

Of course, one of the main leads of this event, Xiao Moxian, was also one of the top geniuses from that year's First Martial Meeting.

However, at the time of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, Lin Ming would never have thought that he would one day come together with that overly arrogant and sometimes insufferably cute Xiao Moxian.

It could only be said that fate was far too wonderful.

Almost a hundred years had passed since that First Martial Meeting. Thinking back to those days, everyone had been far too young and filled with passion. Now that they met again, it was natural to be filled with emotion.

Chapter 1759 – Meeting The Saint Son

Chapter 1759 – Meeting The Saint Son

…

…

…

Lin Ming's expectations were correct. After arriving on the island, he soon ran into another acquaintance – Mount Potala's Hang Chi.

Hang Chi wore linen robes; it was plain and clean.

Mount Potala's group only consisted of three people, making them seem a bit lonely. Battle Buddha Emperor Shakya and Great Limitless Buddha hadn't come.

"Benefactor Lin, it's been awhile."

Hang Chi gathered his palms together, a bright smile on his face. Even after so many years, he hadn't changed at all.

After Hang Chi looked over Lin Ming's cultivation, he was a bit amazed before immediately relaxing. He wryly smiled and said, "Benefactor Lin is truly an outstanding individual. This poor monk's cultivation used to be higher than Benefactor Lin's by two small boundaries, but now I have fallen behind instead."

Hang Chi shook his head.

Lin Ming's current cultivation had slowly left the rest of the younger generation in the dust.

And in truth, cultivation was only secondary. What was terrifying about Lin Ming was his combat strength. In the Asura Road, Lin Ming had studied the Asura Sutra as well as inherited the Asura blood; his combat strength had reached incomprehensible levels.

“Brother Hang Chi is too modest. Come, let us go together.”

Lin Ming bowed in return. He had an extremely good impression of Mount Potala. In the past, Great Limitless Buddha had given him a deep graciousness. If it wasn’t for Mount Potala’s Bodhi Tree, it would have been incredibly difficult for Lin Ming to fuse his three martial intents together.

The further they went into the island, the more heroic young elites and outstanding people there were.

At the center of the island there was a massive dangling palace; this was where the Monster Emperor’s longevity feast would be held.

All around the palace were soaring spirit birds and auspicious beasts. As they flew through the clouds and mist, they were beautiful to behold.

In addition, there were divine carriages, spirit boats, and private vehicles from all sorts of great influences, all of them exorbitantly expensive. When they were all gathered together, they created a magnificent scene.

To be able to sit at the innermost seats of the palace, all of those people were heroes amongst heroes. Just counting Empyrean level powerhouses there were over 20 of them.

And as for the elites of the younger generation, although they could also enter the innermost depths of the palace they could only sit on relatively far seats. This included Lin Ming.

As for Mo Brightmoon and Mo Eversnow, those that lacked enough strength or status, they could only sit in the same position as Lin Ming.

After that, the followers of the various great influences were only able to stay outside the dangling palace.

Lin Ming arrived at his seat and sat down. As he closed his eyes in meditation, he suddenly felt a sharp and fierce killing intent shoot towards him.

This killing intent caused Lin Ming's heart to chill. He nearly extracted the Phoenix Blood Spear.

As he turned his head to look towards the direction of this killing intent, all he saw was a tall man standing on a stone platform, his eyes locked onto him like two bolts of thunder.

This person was Empyrean Demondawn!

Lin Ming's breathing deepened. He could feel a massive pressure push down on him. In the grand longevity feast it was naturally impossible for Empyrean Demondawn to strike out at Lin Ming, but even so, he couldn't suppress his anger and tried to use his aura to shock Lin Ming. If it were an ordinary half-step Holy Lord martial artist, being suppressed to death by Empyrean Demondawn's aura was something that could occur in just a moment.

"Brat, you still dare to come here!? It seems your courage isn't small!"

Empyrean Demondawn's voice was ice cold. His sound transmission struck like a thunderclap in Lin Ming's ears, as if he wanted to shatter Lin Ming's eardrums.

"Senior Demondawn."

Lin Ming cupped his fists together. In the depths of this aura that was as wild and dangerous as a storm, he could only barely maintain his calm.

If Empyrean Demondawn were to increase the pressure then he would have to open the Heretical God Force and use more strength. At the end, he might even need to use the Asura blood.

“Who the hell is your senior, stop trying to act close to me! You stole away my granddaughter’s primordial yin and I will never forget this matter! Even if Divine Dream is protecting you, sooner or later I will have you pay for what you did!”

Empyrean Demondawn’s voice was aggressive and fierce. Lin Ming could only remain silent. Like Empyrean Divine Dream said, Empyrean Demondawn was in a furious rage right now. Moreover, his original temperament was cruel and ruthless and he hated others arguing against him. Thus, if Lin Ming were to say anything else at this time, it would simply have the opposite effect.

“Brat, from this day on Xian’er has nothing to do with you! Who do you think you are? In this great calamity you are nothing more than an ant. You think you’re invincible just because you have a little bit of talent? In front of a True Divinity, what use is your talent!”

Empyrean Demondawn was breathless with anger. He increased his pressure again and again, intending to force Lin Ming into an embarrassing situation.

Lin Ming frowned. He would soon need to open the Heretical God Force to withstand this pressure.

But at this time, not too far away from Lin Ming, Empyrean Divine Dream spoke a gentle “Mm.” Although this simple sound was as light as a spring breeze, it immediately blew away all of Empyrean Demondawn’s formidable momentum.

“Demondawn, at this longevity feast it seems as if you’re not in the best of moods?”

Empyrean Divine Dream lightly said. Empyrean Demondawn’s words caught in his throat. As he looked at Empyrean Divine Dream, he took a deep breath.

Although he had only used a small amount of strength in his aura to suppress Lin Ming just now, all of it had been scattered away by Empyrean Divine Dream’s faint voice. This left Demondawn shocked.

Her level of cultivation had reached an inconceivable boundary.

“This Divine Dream… how can she already be close to becoming a True Divinity?”

Facing the serene and indifferent Divine Dream, Empyrean Demondawn felt as if he were looking into a bottomless lake. He simply couldn’t imagine what boundary she had reached.

If Divine Dream was already a half-step True Divinity, then if she fused together with Frost Dream, it wouldn’t be impossible for her to break into the realm of True Divinity!

If Divine Dream was able to break through the boundary of True Divinity then humanity’s strength would have to be reexamined once again. Although they would still be inferior to the saints, they would at least have some capital to contend with them.

As Empyrean Demondawn and Empyrean Divine Dream were confronting each other, at this time a brilliant divine light filled the palace. A golden divine carriage flew into the main hall, pulled by several horned flood dragons!

“Who is that?”

“How arrogant, they actually drove their carriage into the main hall!”

Many young elites were startled. Their carriages and spirit boats had all been parked outside of the palace, and as for their followers, they definitely weren’t allowed to take a single step inside.

As everyone looked towards the carriage, they saw a white-clothed youth standing proudly upon it. And beside him was a seductive young woman.

In front of this man and woman was a middle-aged man in battle armor. This middle-aged man had an aura as deep as the sea, no worse than that of Empyrean Demondawn!

Without a doubt, this middle-aged man was also a peak Empyrean!

“Saint Empyrean!”

“The Good Fortune Saint Son!”

Someone cried out in alarm. During the years that Lin Ming ventured into the Asura Road, the Good Fortune Saint Son had already become well known by everyone in the Divine Realm. In front of the Good Fortune Saint Son, there wasn't a single junior within the Divine Realm that was able to summon the energy to face him.

This was because dozens of years ago when the Good Fortune Saint Son first came to the Divine Realm, he had challenged many mighty masters of humanity.

These masters weren't common people of their generation. Even so, they had all lost to the Good Fortune Saint Son!

Several years ago, the Good Fortune Saint Son had even defeated a human Great World King!

After that battle, the Good Fortune Saint Son's reputation and prestige had been pushed to a terrifying new height.

Upon mentioning the name of the Good Fortune Saint Son, the juniors of humanity weren't able to summon any fighting fervor at all. Even if they hated him or criticized him in their hearts, they couldn't help but accept his strength. The difference was just far too great!

"So it was the Good Fortune Saint Son. No wonder they arrogantly entered like this, even driving their carriage into the main hall!"

"Lower your voice! Be careful that he doesn't hear you! Although he can't do anything to you at this longevity feast, afterwards he might come to the gates of your sect and challenge your Sect Master. If that happens you'll really be in bad luck!"

Several people said. Immediately, many people that were dissatisfied with the Good Fortune Saint Son suddenly shut up.

At this time, the Good Fortune Saint Son arrived at the area of the Empyreans and sat down in a grandiose manner, his legs splayed out wide.

Sitting on the side of the Good Fortune Saint Son was the human race's Empyrean Traceless. Empyrean Traceless frowned, but eventually didn't say anything.

In all fairness, if the Good Fortune Saint Son was able to defeat a Great World King, that meant he had some ability to contend with the supreme elders of the older generation. The key factor among this was his young age. After several hundred more years, it was likely he would reach an Empyrean level of strength, so sitting in this area was also well within reason.

Moreover, the monster race had a close relationship with the saints, so they definitely wouldn't oppose the actions of their guests.

“Haha, it's been many years since I've seen Your Highness the Saint Son and yet your strength has increased even more!”

On the side of the monster race, someone immediately sent out a warm welcome; this person was an Imperial Scholar of the monster race. “Middle Holy Lord realm!”

Several high ranking ministers of the monster race sighed in praise.

The Good Fortune Saint Son had broken into the middle Holy Lord realm several years ago and his strength had greatly increased. It was also at that time he had defeated a human World King. Now with several years having passed, the Good Fortune Saint Son's foundation had consolidated and he was likely stronger than before!

“It's just the middle Holy Lord realm, not much at all.” The Good Fortune Saint Son shook his head, as if all these achievements were normal to him. In fact, it would have been strange instead if he didn't manage to achieve this.

“Haha, that's right, this truly isn't anything much at all. The Saint Son's goal should be to reach an Empyrean level of strength within the next several hundred years!”

Another high level minister of the monster race flattered.

The Good Fortune Saint Son faintly smiled. With a careless tone he said, “It should be 200 years. In 200 years I will be able to fight an Empyrean, no longer than that…”

His words were brazen and cocky. But even so, the young elites of the Divine Realm could only listen without refuting him. If he were to grow at his current speed, he really would be able to confront an Empyrean in 200 years.

The Good Fortune really might be able to defeat a weak Empyrean at the World King realm. And with the Grandmist Spirit Bead, it was completely possible for him to break into the World King realm within 200 years.

“Saint Son Your Highness is truly daring!” The ministers of the monster race said together.

Beside Lin Ming, White King curled his lips and said in a low voice, “What a condescending fellow!”

White King’s words weren’t spoken through a true essence sound transmission. Although he was quiet, the Good Fortune Saint Son had extremely sharp senses so he was able to hear them.

The Good Fortune Saint Son turned and glanced towards White King. He simply didn’t care about White King, but instead turned towards Lin Ming who was sitting beside him. The sight of Lin Ming left him slightly surprised.

Soon, he seemed to recall something. A devious smile spread on his face.

“I never imagined you would also come. It seems that for our hundred year battle, you still have 40 or so years remaining? Hahaha! Make sure you enjoy these remaining 40 years, because after that you won’t be able to enjoy your life any longer.”

In the Good Fortune Saint Son’s eyes, a character on the level of White King wasn’t worth looking at more than once. The only one he cared about a little was Lin Ming.

Chapter 1760 – War of Words

Chapter 1760 – War of Words

…

…

…

The Good Fortune Saint Son and Lin Ming stood in sharp contention, immediately drawing the attention of everyone present.

In the past during the negotiations of humanity and the saints, Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son had agreed to a life or death duel in 100 years. This matter had caused a great stir within the entire Divine Realm. It could be said that there was no one who didn't know of this.

Now that the Good Fortune Saint Son mentioned it, everyone naturally knew what he was speaking of.

Everyone looked towards Lin Ming, waiting to see how he would respond. Empyrean Divine Dream furrowed her eyebrows. She sent a sound transmission, "Lin Ming, do not be provoked by him. If he taunts you, that is proof he is concerned about you. Your talent is something that the saints fear, they will do everything in their power to immediately exterminate you!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son's character was well known by all. He believed he was unrivalled by all below the heavens and above the earth.

But for him to reach this step also meant he wasn't an idiot. It was because he sensed that Lin Ming would become a future disaster that he targeted him.

He wanted to take advantage of the present when Lin Ming was still small and weak to cut Lin Ming down.

To a martial artist, superiority through age was highly evident when they were young. When everyone was a hundred years old, even a difference of 10 years was a great disparity.

But when one was several thousand years old, tens of thousands of years old, or even millions of years old, a difference of a few hundred years was nothing more than floating clouds.

Lin Ming sat quietly in his seat, his hand holding a teacup. Towards the Good Fortune Saint Son's provocation, he merely sneered.

"60 years ago when you and I agreed to a duel, at that time you were at the peak of the late Saint Lord realm, just a step from entering the Holy Lord realm. Then, you were able to resist a World King! However, I was only at the middle Divine Transformation realm, and the difference in strength between us was far too great. Now 60 years have passed and you are at the middle Holy Lord realm while I have already risen by a large boundary and a half, becoming a half-step Holy Lord. The differences in our cultivations have become increasingly small. Once another 40 years pass, what do you think will happen then? Who gave you the confidence to believe you would defeat me?"

Lin Ming's voice was calm and steady. As some martial artists listened to him they immediately checked his inner world. And, just like Lin Ming had said, he was indeed a half-step Holy Lord!

Through Lin Ming's adventures in the Asura Road, his cultivation had risen by a large boundary and a half. This cultivation speed was truly that of a monstrous genius!

40 years from now, it was possible that Lin Ming could step into the middle Holy Lord realm!

If so, then his disparity with the Good Fortune Saint Son would decrease even further.

However, the Good Fortune Saint Son laughed as he heard Lin Ming's words. "How ridiculous! Who cares if your cultivation increased rapidly? You went to the Asura Road, obtaining some lucky chances, and thus your cultivation progressed astronomically in a short period of time. You still have a long period in your future where you must consolidate your foundation. Do you think you would really break into the Holy Lord realm any time soon? You simply overestimate yourself!

"The current you still has some differences from the boundary I was at 60 years ago. Not just that, but in these 60 years my strength has made considerable progress. I chose not to focus on increasing my cultivation too quickly but concentrating on studying my cultivation method. Now, my understanding in my cultivation method has made a qualitative leap upwards and this leap is not something that a frog in a well like you could ever understand!"

As the Good Fortune Saint Son mentioned his cultivation method, the martial artists present suddenly recalled a rumor.

That was… that the Good Fortune Saint Son had cultivated the Good Fortune Divine Art to the fifth level!

And this Good Fortune Divine Art was a True Divinity level cultivation method. Compared to Divine Dream's Divine Dream Law, it was an entire level higher!

Once he cultivated this technique, it would naturally be terrifyingly powerful!

"It is said that once one reaches the fifth level of the Good Fortune Divine Art, one has the power to summon and move the power of good fortune!"

Someone who had heard about the Good Fortune Divine Art spoke out loud.

"It's normal. The Good Fortune Saint Son has the Grandmist Spirit Bead so how could his cultivation speed have been so slow? It seems that it was all because he was perceiving the Good Fortune Divine Art, thus his cultivation progress was delayed a little. If he perceives his cultivation method, then although his cultivation progress might be a bit slow, the progress of his strength would actually be faster. The current Good Fortune Saint Son is even more terrifying than I thought!”

Someone said, shocked. If things continued like this then it really wouldn’t be long before the Good Fortune Saint Son was able to defeat an Empyrean.

And once he could contend with an Empyrean then the Good Fortune Saint Son would truly become a leader of the saints, standing on par with the supreme elders of the older generation!

At that time, no one would be able to refer to him as someone of the younger generation.

The Good Fortune Saint Son’s words caused him to slowly suppress Lin Ming with a creeping momentum. However, Lin Ming simply smirked and indifferently said, “What a coincidence. While you spent the past 60 years perceiving a cultivation method, I have also spent the past 60 years perceiving a cultivation method. I wonder, between our cultivation methods, just which one is weaker?”

The cultivation method that Lin Ming mentioned was naturally the Asura Sutra!

However, as Lin Ming’s words fell onto the ears of others, these people felt the words lacked in energy. Even the human martial artists felt it was a bit hard to listen to.

What the Good Fortune Saint Son practiced was a True Divinity level cultivation method.

Just what was Lin Ming’s cultivation method?

Before the Good Fortune Saint Son could say anything, his four followers actually laughed out loud.

“You also practiced a cultivation method? Can your cultivation method compare with the Good Fortune Divine Art? Hahaha! This is too hilarious, are you an idiot? I really can’t stand such embarrassment.”

These minions weren't weak and their cultivations were even one or two small boundaries above the Good Fortune Saint Son's. Some were at the late Holy Lord realm and some were at the peak Holy Lord realm. Of course, their foundation couldn't compare with the Good Fortune Saint Son's, and their age was far older than his. They didn't have much potential remaining. Without a great heaven-defying lucky chance, it was impossible for them to break into the World King realm.

However, a peak Holy Lord was still a peak Holy Lord; even if they were minions, they couldn't be underestimated. Moreover, if they dared to jab their arms into the conversation between the Good Fortune Saint Son and Lin Ming, it proved that their status wasn't low either.

Lin Ming glanced at the four followers. They were sitting not too far away. After the Good Fortune Saint Son took his seat, the followers he brought had casually seated themselves near Lin Ming, White King, Hang Chi, and others of similar status.

Many other people had seen them before. Although they weren't happy with this, they didn't say anything.

If the Good Fortune Saint Son sat with the Empyreans, then that could be ignored. But for his lackeys to sit with the young heroic elites of humanity, didn't that mean the young heroic elites of humanity were on the same level as status as the Good Fortune Saint Son's minions?

Lin Ming sneered, "A pack of minions, who gave you the right to sit there and pretend to be on the same level as me? According to the customs of the longevity feast, servants aren't allowed to enter the palace. The lot of you should pack up and fuck off!"

No one thought that Lin Ming would be so aggressive with his words. Not only did he call them all minions but he also ordered them to leave!

In the Divine Realm, a peak Holy Lord could be called a ruler of their own land. Yet, they were being insulted by Lin Ming.

For a time, everyone was left dumbfounded. Divine Dream also slightly frowned. The way Lin Ming acted seemed as if he didn’t heed her words of caution at all…

These four people were all infuriated. Even nobodies still had pride of their own. If they were scolded like this by Lin Ming today and endured it, they would never be able to lift their heads high in the future.

The four minions directly stood up, their auras erupting and their killing intents all locking onto Lin Ming!

Chapter 1761 – Meeting Xiao Moxian

Chapter 1761 – Meeting Xiao Moxian

…

…

…

“Brat, are you looking to die!?”

The four minions surrounded Lin Ming. However, Lin Ming sat calmly in his seat, simply not getting up at all.

“You’re calling us minions? Hehe… just who do you think you are? Your status is given to you by humans, and when humans no longer exist, you’ll be nothing at all; even calling you a minion then would be too much for you! How much longer do you think you’ll be able to be so arrogant?”

The words of the four minions were forceful and menacing. Although they didn’t clearly state it, there was a hidden meaning in their words – that humanity would eventually be completely wiped out by the saints.

At that time when the young elites of humanity lost the asylum of their race, they would be as pitiful and pathetic as homeless dogs. They might as well become slaves of the saints.

It was also because of this reason that the saint martial artists were filled with energy and were incredibly conceited.

Although they were servants, they didn’t feel as if they were below humans. Rather, they felt as if their statuses were no different from those of the top young elites of humanity.

As these four people spoke, many of the human martial artists present frowned. Lin Ming slowly stood up from his seat, his aura as deep as a sea. Facing him, one couldn't help but feel their heart skip a beat.

"Hey, you want to fight?" The four minions said.

Although the four minions said this, the truth was that they were afraid. After all, this was the Monster Emperor's grand longevity feast and there were many Empyreans present. The four of them were borrowing the momentum and reputation of the saints to be cocky loudmouths, but it was impossible for them to strike out at Lin Ming at this longevity feast with so many Empyreans watching them.

Moreover, they didn't know the limits of Lin Ming's strength.

The group of four consisted of late Holy Lords and peak Holy Lords. If they couldn't even face Lin Ming, they would lose all face for the saint race.

"Step back!"

At this time, the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke up, his voice gloomy.

"Your Highness Saint Son..."

The four minions grit their teeth. Seeing the Good Fortune Saint Son's cold gaze, they drew back.

The Good Fortune Saint Son looked at Lin Ming and chuckled. "What? Both of us are here to celebrate the Monster Emperor's longevity feast, and the longevity feast hasn't even started yet you're trying to fight with my followers. If this is all you are then I have no interest in fighting you 40 years from now."

The Good Fortune Saint Son's words dripped with a mocking tone, immediately placing Lin Ming on the same rank as his followers. If Lin Ming were truly someone with status, then there would be no point in facing off against his subordinates.

In the face of this taunting, Lin Ming maintained a smile throughout. “If the upper beam isn’t straight the lower beam will be crooked. Your servants know not the rules and loudly blather on as they please even when their master is speaking, not understanding the situation at all or knowing what to do. Really, even though these dogs were raised by you I have no idea what their master has taught them. If they are released on the street and randomly go around biting people then aren’t others allowed to beat them down with a stick?”

Lin Ming’s words struck back with equal harshness. His words caused the four minions to tremble. In such a situation there was nothing they could do; they could only endure the humiliation. The four of them had mocked Lin Ming but in the end they had brought trouble upon their own heads.

In regards to this, Empyrean Divine Dream faintly frowned with worry. Before this she had cautioned Lin Ming not to come into conflict with the Good Fortune Saint Son, but it seemed as if Lin Ming hadn’t heard her at all. Rather, it appeared he was deliberately targeting the Good Fortune Saint Son.

“This Lin Ming… what is he planning to do…” Empyrean Divine Dream looked towards Lin Ming, wanting to say some words, but eventually didn’t. In her mind, when Lin Ming did something he always acted within his limitations with full knowledge of the consequences.

“Your skills at being glib aren’t too bad.”

The Good Fortune Saint Son disdainfully laughed. “Do you even know your own strength? You are a mere half-step Holy Lord! 40 years from now, you should be able to break into the middle Holy Lord realm and achieve my current boundary. If that is true then I might be a little bit interested in you. Otherwise, you would be far too boring.”

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke, a hearty laugh echoed out. “Hahaha! Your Highness Saint Son, Sir Lin, the two of you are outstanding heroes and the day of your hundred year duel hasn’t arrived so there’s no need to act so unfriendly!”

At this time, a middle-aged man walked into the hall.

This middle-aged man stood tall and straight. His skin was fair and his eyes were profoundly deep. His black hair hung down to his waist. He had a majestic appearance, one that overflowed with a dashing heroic spirit.

This person was the true ruler of the monster race – the Monster Emperor.

The Monster Emperor's appearance caused everyone present to calm down.

Lin Ming also respectfully bowed. The Monster Emperor was secretly paying attention to him. Lin Ming was well aware that the Monster Emperor knew about the matter of him taking Xiao Moxian's primordial yin as well as her pregnancy.

However, he didn't show obvious loathing like Empyrean Demondawn did. Rather, he maintained a calm and pleasant demeanor as if he knew nothing about that situation at all.

From this point, it couldn't be said that the Monster Emperor's background was deeper than Empyrean Demondawn's. Rather, the Monster Emperor was someone that was good at concealing his true emotions and intentions. As for Empyrean Demondawn, he was blunt and inclined to go straight to the point. If Lin Ming had to compare the both of them, he naturally would pay more attention to the former.

As the Monster Emperor arrived, the Empyreans present rose up one at a time to congratulate him.

And at this time, there was an announcement of another higher level figure that arrived.

It was an old acquaintance of Lin Ming's – Empyrean Vast Universe.

After Empyrean Vast Universe greeted the Monster Emperor and Divine Dream, he turned towards Lin Ming, a look of appreciation evident on his face.

In truth, the reason that Lin Ming set a hundred year duel with the Good Fortune Saint Son was because of Empyrean Vast Universe. Since Empyrean Vast Universe was protecting

Lin Ming, the Good Fortune Saint Son had challenged Vast Universe to a duel in 300 years. Because Empyrean Vast Universe had been placed upon the crest of the waves, Lin Ming had instead spoken out to accept the challenge.

And from this point alone, Lin Ming owed graciousness to Empyrean Vast Universe.

“What a good young fellow, half-step Holy Lord! You’re just a step away from reaching the Holy Lord realm, in fact… you can break through whenever you want!”

Lin Ming’s cultivation speed left Empyrean Vast Universe flabbergasted. In the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, Lin Ming had rolled over the competition. Amongst the other young elites of the Divine Realm, none of them were able to face him.

“White King, you should also learn a little from Lin Ming. You don’t have to do much. If you had even a fifth of Lin Ming’s achievements I would be more than content.”

White King was Empyrean Vast Universe’s apprentice and was also standing beside Lin Ming. As he faced Empyrean Vast Universe’s judging eyes, he secretly complained in his heart. To compare him with Lin Ming, wasn’t that just too difficult?

“Senior Vast Universe praises junior too much…” Lin Ming said. As he was about to exchange some more pleasantries with Empyrean Vast Universe, his body suddenly shook and the words he was about to speak caught in his throat. He froze where he stood.

He looked towards a corner of the main hall. From a side door, a black-clothed young girl had stepped out.

This young girl was accompanied by eight maids that walked with her. Her figure was slender and she was wearing a black formal dress. Her face was covered by a veil, only revealing a pair of beautiful eyes, making her seem like a dark enchantress of night.

She was Xiao Moxian.

Xiao Moxian's current appearance was different from her usual style of dress. She had rid herself of her previously playful demeanor and gained a ladylike feeling, as soft and delicate as water.

However, Lin Ming knew that this sort of delicate and weak feeling wasn't an act at all. Because Xiao Moxian's cultivation had been sealed and she was also pregnant, she could really be called delicate and fragile right now.

Xiao Moxian's appearance immediately drew everyone's eyes.

Empyrean Demondawn had placed several cleverly crafted spells on Xiao Moxian's body. No one knew that her cultivation had been sealed away, but only thought that she was deliberately concealing her aura.

And during this banquet, Xiao Moxian was the leader of the juniors from the monster and demon races. Thus, no one would do something so rude as to investigate her inner world. Even if they did, they would only find the Heaven Absorbing Demon Art within her, nothing else.

After Xiao Moxian appeared, her beautiful eyes looked over those present – she was searching for Lin Ming.

However, with her cultivation sealed away she couldn't release her sense. To look for a single person in this massive longevity feast hall was not easy at all.

"I'm at the front left of you…"

At this time, a familiar true essence sound transmission echoed in Xiao Moxian's ears. She trembled and looked towards Lin Ming.

As their eyes met, countless words seemed to be exchanged through them.

Xiao Moxian bit her lips and kept quiet. Tears seemed to shimmer in her eyes.

However, their eyes met for only a few breaths of time. Afterwards, Xiao Moxian turned towards the Monster Emperor.

From beginning to end, there was a pair of cold eyes looking at the both of them. The owner of these eyes was Empyrean Demondawn.

At this banquet, Empyrean Demondawn didn't allow Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming to have any communications at all.

"Isn't that Xiao Moxian? I haven't seen her for several years but I never thought she would already turn from a naughty tomboy into a gentle and graceful woman!"

Someone in a guest seat praised.

"Whether it is the past or present, she can always leave one fascinated. Moreover, her physique is special. Anyone that can marry her and dual cultivate with her is truly blessed and honored!"

Several guests discussed amongst each other. Many handsome young elites looked towards Xiao Moxian, admiration and awe in their eyes.

Even though so many years had passed, Xiao Moxian and Frost Dream remained the two most outstanding young women in the entire Divine Realm.

They didn't have any expectations of Frost Dream – no one could win her over.

Thus, Xiao Moxian naturally became the dream lover of countless men.

"These stupid humans. They don't know that Empyrean Demondawn and the Monster Emperor have already agreed to my marriage proposition! It won't be long before that goddess of your hearts is waiting upon my crotch!"

Not too far away, the Good Fortune Saint Son listened to these young elites talk, a smug smile on his face.

Xiao Moxian was a yummy little dish he was destined to eat. As the Good Fortune Saint Son thought of taking Xiao Moxian from the young elites of humanity, he felt filled with a deep sense of accomplishment.

In particular, after listening to the discussions of these young elites from the Divine Realm and then looking at the admiration in their eyes, a feeling of superiority rose in his heart.

Not only would he eventually destroy the Divine Realm in the future but he would even steal away the most peerless beauty of the Divine Realm. This conquest left the Good Fortune Saint Son extremely satisfied.

He playfully looked at Xiao Moxian, playing with the teacup in his hand.

Because the Good Fortune Saint Son was sitting in a seat near the front, he was quite close to Xiao Moxian. Xiao Moxian could faintly feel the Good Fortune Saint Son's gaze on her, and she turned to look at him.

Seeing Xiao Moxian look at him, the Good Fortune Saint Son's smile became even wider. He laughed and whispered, "Don't worry, there is not even an incense stick of time left. Once the longevity feast begins I will take out a congratulatory gift. At the same time as I offer this gift, I will also discuss marriage with Empyrean Demondawn and the Monster Emperor. At that time, you will be mine."

Chapter 1762 - The Method Of Becoming A True Divinity

Chapter 1762 - The Method Of Becoming A True Divinity

…

…

…

As Xiao Moxian felt the Good Fortune Saint Son's predatory eyes on her, she was filled with disgust. However, in front of the Monster Emperor, she could only turn her head and ignore him.

"Your Highness Saint Son, you seem to be quite interested in that half-phoenix body girl?"

The Empyrean who came with the Good Fortune Saint Son to celebrate the longevity feast slowly commented.

This saint Empyrean's title was Shatter and he was a peak Empyrean. The reason he followed the Good Fortune Saint Son here to the Monster Emperor's longevity feast was to display the strength of the saints as well as to protect the Saint Son.

"This Xiao Moxian's physique is extraordinary. If I can dual cultivate with her then it will be a great help to me in attacking the sixth level of the Good Fortune Divine Art."

The reason that the Good Fortune Saint Son was able to break into the fifth level of the Good Fortune Divine Art was because a number of coincidences had luckily come together. As for the sixth level of the Good Fortune Divine Art, it was far more difficult. Without reaching the Great World King realm, the Good Fortune Saint Son didn't have any confidence in success.

But if he could dual cultivate with Xiao Moxian, taking her primordial yin and also fusing with her God Beast blood, that would be greatly advantageous to his body transformation technique.

With that, he might be able to attack the sixth level of the Good Fortune Divine Art at the World King realm.

Even if he were to fail he would still be able to gather experience.

The earlier he broke into the sixth level of the Good Fortune Divine Art, the more benefits he would have. It would form an even more superior foundation when he tried to break into the realm of True Divinity in the future.

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke, almost all the great guests that the Monster Emperor invited to his longevity feast arrived.

Rulers of influences from all over delivered congratulatory gifts in droves.

Most of these were Empyrean level treasures. If they were placed at the Divine Rune City Auction, they could sell for several hundred millions of points.

Empyrean Vast Universe gifted the great egg of an ancient desolate beast. Empyrean Traceless gifted an Empyrean spirit treasure that was dug out from an ancient ruin.

In the Divine Realm, reciprocating favors was an extremely important unspoken rule.

After being gifted these treasures, the Monster Emperor would eventually have to return the favor in the future.

As for Lin Ming, White King, and the other juniors, they naturally sat still in their seats. It wasn’t their turn to deliver congratulatory gifts.

And at this moment, it was time for the Good Fortune Saint Son to step on stage.

He laid down his teacup and strode atop the divine altar. Behind him followed his four followers. The four followers held two items; one was an exquisite pill box and the other was a simple jade box.

These two items immediately attracted everyone’s gaze; they wanted to see just what sort of gift the Good Fortune Saint Son would send out.

After arriving in front of the Monster Emperor, the Good Fortune Saint Son ordered his follower to open the pill box. This pill box contained a dark green pill the size of a longan. A fragrant medicinal scent wafted into the air, refreshing to the senses.

All of the martial artists present had discerning eyes. They could see at a glance that this was a transcendent divine pill.

A transcendent divine pill was a pill that an Empyrean level supreme elder could take. It could help an Empyrean level martial artist increase their cultivation or consolidate their foundation. It was a rare treasure, and if one were to fall into a World King influence, it would set off a bloody war of terror.

However, in the scene of the Monster Emperor’s longevity feast, a transcendent divine pill wasn’t much at all.

For instance, the Empyrean spirit treasure that Empyrean Traceless gifted was far more precious than this transcendent divine pill. For the Good Fortune Saint Son, someone who came from a True Divinity influence, to take out such a congratulatory gift, it was simply far too lacking.

Many human Empyreans were watching with critical eyes. They all wanted to see what the saints would be willing to put out. After all, there was still another box – just what was in it?

“Haha, what a wonderful transcendent divine pill!”

The Monster Emperor happily laughed. One of his disciples standing beside him moved forwards and received the pill.

The truth was that to the Monster Emperor, who was almost a peak Empyrean, this transcendent divine pill didn't have much use at all. The most it could do was help raise a God Beast.

But at this time, the Good Fortune Saint Son picked up the simple jade box from his follower's hands. The previous pill box had been opened by his follower, but this time the Good Fortune Saint Son was personally opening the jade box.

Within this jade box were layers of yellow silk. And above these layers of silk was a pure black jade slip.

This jade slip resembled black agate, shimmering with a profound light.

The Good Fortune Saint Son slowly picked up this jade slip, a happy expression on his face. "The previous transcendent divine pill was only for Your Majesty to casually appreciate. This... is the true gift..."

"This is..." The Monster Emperor looked at the Good Fortune Saint Son. He didn't know why, but the black jade slip in the Good Fortune Saint Son's hands made his heart beat faster.

"Your Majesty Monster Emperor, this is an inheritance fragment that my saint race's Good Fortune Saint Sovereign obtained when he ventured into an ancient ruin. Although this inheritance is incomplete, it actually records the methods of breaking into the realm of True Divinity. Today, I bring this out as a present for Your Majesty's longevity feast."

The Good Fortune Saint Son's voice wasn't loud, but his words spread through the entire audience!

For a time, everyone was utterly shocked!

In particular, many Empyreans present shot up from their seats to get a closer look.

All of their eyes locked onto the black jade slip.

The method to break into True Divinity!

No one imagined that the Good Fortune Saint Son would take out such a precious congratulatory gift at the Monster Emperor's longevity feast.

Some Empyreans felt their hearts begin to race.

3.6 billion years ago, during the last great calamity, the saints waged a great war against humanity. Humanity had put forth the complete power of their race to survive and even Empyrean Divine Seal perished in the flames of war.

In that war, although humanity managed to force back the saints, their foundation had been severely damaged and countless inheritances had been cut off. Ever since then, there had never been a human supreme elder who had managed to break into the realm of True Divinity.

Many people suspected that the reason no human was able to break into the realm of True Divinity was because they had lost their most precious inheritances. In other words, the cultivation methods for breaking into True Divinity!

Now that the Good Fortune Saint Son suddenly brought out such a black jade slip that contained the lost knowledge, how could the Empyreans present not be excited!

For a time, the Monster Emperor's mouth turned dry. He stared at the jade slip in the Good Fortune Saint Son's hands and couldn't help but probe it with his sense. And, the Good Fortune Saint Son didn't stop him either.

The Monster Emperor could feel the ancient and complex Laws within, leaving him shocked. With his sight, he could naturally make out many things. He could feel that this black jade slip truly did contain the methods to break into True Divinity!

"This..."

The Monster Emperor's fingers trembled. No one could understand the temptation that the realm of True Divinity held towards an Empyrean.

Once one became an Empyrean, they could freely wander the world, ruling all within their sight. However, there were still many things they couldn't reconcile with.

They couldn't see the end of the road of martial arts and their lives were limited to a hundred million years. They couldn't help but want to break into True Divinity, stepping further onto the road of martial arts, climbing higher so that they could see further ahead!

Even Empyrean Demondawn wasn't able to remain calm upon seeing this jade slip.

The road of True Divinity, that was his lifelong pursuit!

"This move, is far too ruthless..."

In the honored seats, Empyrean Divine Dream's eyebrows pressed together. As she saw the black jade slip in the Good Fortune Saint Son's hands, she didn't feel any temptation or excitement at all.

Rather, dark clouds began to cover her mind.

In a sense, the Monster Emperor's longevity feast was a competition between the humans and saints. Each race would reveal their own strength and value and the monster and demon races would choose the one with more to offer.

Of course, from the very start the monster and demon races were already favoring the saints. The saints were simply far stronger than humanity was. Humanity wasn't able to compare with them.

Even if Empyrean Divine Dream had already mentally prepared for the monster and demon races to ally with the saints, she never imagined that the Good Fortune Saint Son would take out the method to becoming a True Divinity at this longevity feast!

Whether it was the impact to the monster and demon races, or whether it was the impact to the human Empyreans present, this was a blow of incalculable damage!

It had to be known that humanity also had many Empyreans that were stranded before the gates of True Divinity. For them, True Divinity was a boundary they yearned for even in their dreams.

The saints took out this jade slip in order to easily subdue the monster and demon races.

Now, the problem was whether or not there were dastardly traitors that would appear amongst humanity's Empyreans. Because of their desire for the method to break into True Divinity, would any of them switch sides and join the saints?

It was said that traitors were worse than dogs. Although everyone understood this truth, whether it was the mortal world or the world of martial artists, during every war there would always emerge a large number of traitors that were willing to sell out their allies.

The reason they did so was because the benefits of joining the other side were far too attractive. Even if these people had to live as slaves or dogs, to them it was still better than dying in battle for their race, because if they died they would really have nothing left!

As Empyrean Divine Dream thought of this, she found it increasingly difficult to remain calm. Although the Good Fortune Saint Son's actions were brazen and ostentatious, the truth was that this was simply a façade he put up. Every action he did was to push humanity further and further towards the edge of the abyss!

This was true in the previous negotiations between the humans and saints where he put forth all sorts of impossible unfavorable conditions to lay down the future downfall of humanity. Not just that, but he simultaneously forced Empyrean Vast Universe to a challenge that was eventually received by Lin Ming.

It was also true in the following dozens of years when the saints and humans confronted each other. He directed the saint race's armies to slowly nibble away at the territory of the Divine Realm.

Or even, for these past years, the Good Fortune Saint Son had repeatedly challenged human World Kings and Great World Kings, defeating them one after another and striking at the confidence of humanity and pushing the momentum of the saints to the peak!

Finally, at the Monster Emperor's longevity feast began, the Good Fortune Saint Son took out the method to break into True Divinity. This was almost the final straw that crushed humanity's last hopes.

Facing this sort of opponent, Empyrean Divine Dream felt deep unease, her back pushed to the wall!

It had to be known that the Good Fortune Saint Son was only several hundred years old and he also possessed the Grandmist Spirit Bead; his future was limitless!

He was the chosen descendant of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. In the future he would inevitably become the scourge of humanity, perhaps even becoming the one to dig their grave!

Originally, the supreme elders of humanity hoped that they could drag on the time before the great calamity truly erupted. The longer it took, the more beneficial it was because this allowed more time for the juniors of humanity, those like Lin Ming, Frost Dream, and Dragon Fang, to grow up.

But now, it seemed that the more they dragged on, the worse the situation became for them.

Currently, the human race seemed as if it would soon lose the monster and demon races as allies. And then, perhaps in just a few dozen more years, humanity would start to slowly crumble from within due to the pressure of the saints, and there would be people in their ranks surrendering on their own volition.

Once someone surrendered, there would be more and more that followed at an ever-increasing pace. If so, humanity would soon perish!

To subdue the enemy without fighting, this was the Good Fortune Saint Son's plans.

While the saints were at war with the spiritas, he was unable to spare enough power to annihilate the humans for the time being. However, by increasing the pressure step by step, he could slowly disintegrate humanity from within. After all, with the pressure slowly increasing over time, there would inevitably be those within the human race that couldn't withstand it and would betray their people!

This move, it was truly incredibly vicious!

Chapter 1763 – The Saint Son Proposes Marriage

Chapter 1763 – The Saint Son Proposes Marriage

…

…

…

“Humph! This method to break into True Divinity, I’m afraid it might only be a method for your saint race – just what use is it to human, monster, or demon races!”

At this time, an angry and energetic voice rang out. The one who spoke was Empyrean Vast Universe.

He had easily seen through the saints’ plans.

He had to salvage as much of the situation as he could. Otherwise, once the events of this longevity feast were spread out, in addition to the betrayal of the monster and demon races, that would be far too negative an impact on humanity!

“Haha? Vast Universe, right? What? 60 years ago I challenged you to a duel in 300 years and yet you didn’t dare to accept it. In the end, you even had a suicidal brat take up the challenge. Did you think everyone would easily forget this matter?

The Good Fortune Saint Son looked at Empyrean Vast Universe, his face full of ridicule and contempt.

At the same time, he looked at Lin Ming, a taunting light in his eyes. The suicidal brat he referred to was naturally Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's face darkened, not speaking. As for Empyrean Vast Universe, his voice caught in his throat. All the blood in his body seemed to rush to his face.

He had always had a strong momentum and was also one of the overlords of humanity. When had there ever been someone weaker than him who had dared to go against him? Even those that had a higher status had to give him a little face.

But now, he had been intimidated twice by a junior. And even after being bullied in such a manner he didn't dare to agree to the challenge. This was simply outrageous!

"Vast Universe, don't be impulsive, he is deliberately provoking you! He is also trying to rile up Lin Ming – do not underestimate this person's plotting!"

At this time, Empyrean Divine Dream's true essence sound transmission echoed in Empyrean Vase Universe's ears.

Vast Universe took a deep breath, grit his teeth, and endured the shame. In this tense atmosphere where all swords seemed to be drawn he had actually flinched. Without a doubt, he had weakened humanity's momentum.

After being played with by a junior in the palm of their hand and also suppressed again and again, Empyrean Vast Universe felt an unprecedented level of anger and aggrievement.

But there was nothing he could do. In 300 years, he really wouldn't be able to defeat the Good Fortune Saint Son.

Those that were weaker than others could only allow themselves to be oppressed!

Seeing Empyrean Vast Universe sit back down in his seat, a victorious smile appeared on the Good Fortune Saint Son's face.

Then, he turned and looked at Lin Ming, a little doubt in his heart. "This brat, he was incredibly arrogant just now, so why did he remain so calm?"

As the Good Fortune Saint Son thought this, he didn't kick Empyrean Vast Universe or Lin Ming while they were down. Instead, he turned to the Monster Emperor. After all, the main purpose of him coming to this longevity feast was to solidify the alliance between the saints and the monster and demon races, at the same time planting the seed of surrender in the hearts of the human Empyreans. He wanted them all to understand that as long as they betrayed their race and defected to the saints, they could equally obtain the method to break into True Divinity.

The Good Fortune Saint Son traced the black jade slip in his hands, leisurely saying, "Someone is suspecting that the inheritances recorded within this jade slip are only suitable for the saints and not the monster or demon races. Heh, this person is nothing more than a frog in a well! After being stranded in the Divine Realm for 3.6 billion years, it seems not being able to take a look at the wider world has truly limited your horizons!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son's words were impudent to the extreme. But whether it was the monster or demon races, or the human Empyreans, they could only keep on enduring.

Even if they were incomparably angry, they couldn't help but acknowledge that what the Good Fortune Saint Son said was a fact!

For the last 3.6 billion years, let alone being stranded in the Divine Realm and not being able to see the other Heavens, they had even lost the history of humanity from 3.6 billion years ago. All of that knowledge had been lost to the river of time, fading to dust. Many things were simply unknown.

This was because in the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago, nearly all human Empyreans had died. Countless sects were annihilated and their inheritances severed. An incalculable number of historical jade slips had been destroyed.

Seeing no one daring to refute him, the Good Fortune Saint Son smiled and continued to speak, "You all might know that in ancient times, in the vast universe of the 33 Heavens, that was when hundreds of races were fighting for hegemony. In that era many world-shaking kings were born within the ancient races! And these ancient kings, if placed in the current era, would all be of the True Divinity level!

“And according to the inheritances left behind in ancient ruins, it can be inferred that in the age when ancient races battled to rule the world, there were even existences that appeared who surpassed the realm of True Divinity! As for these mighty figures, although they were all buried in the sands of time, their inheritances were still passed down from generation to generation…”

“In the Saint Convocation Heaven, there exists a Primeval Realm Ruins. In these ancient ruins, it isn’t surprising to occasionally find shattered inheritances! Of course, because so much time has passed it is nearly impossible to find any inheritances from these ruins as they are unimaginably scarce as well as extremely incomplete. However, with the deep background of my saint race, we have accumulated many of these fragments over billions of years!

“And among these are inheritances of the monster and demon races!

“Whether it is the monster race or the demon race, both are descendants of the ancient races. Your histories were once wondrous beyond compare, at least ten times more magnificent than the humans are now! In the ancient ruins of your ancestors, it isn’t anything for us to find fragments of inheritances that contain knowledge about how to break into the realm of True Divinity! In a sense, these things belonged to you all originally! If you take grasp of this chance you can even reestablish the glory of the demon and monster races from 10 billion years ago!”

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke to here, his words had caused the hearts of all the monster youths present to bubble over with excitement, leaving them bound in fascination!

During these years in the Divine Realm they had been constantly subjected to the oppression of humans. This included their territory and their resources, leaving them with nothing but suppressed anger.

In particular, their ancestors were once even more dazzling than humanity was. How could heroic and valorous feelings not surge in their heart upon knowing this? They all wanted to reproduce the glory of their race from 10 billion years ago, so that every member of the monster race could live proudly!

The Monster Emperor took a deep breath, startled. What the Good Fortune Saint Son described was something he longed for in his dream. What leader of a race wouldn't hope to further the prestige of their people? If he could do so, he would be remembered for ages to come.

But the Monster Emperor knew that to accomplish this was nearly impossible.

"This Good Fortune Saint Son can really deceive the minds of the people."

The Monster Emperor remained secretly alert. But, just because he wasn't affected didn't mean that the youths of his people weren't. All of them were burning with passion, feeling as if the alliance with the saints was more or less settled.

At this time, the Good Fortune Saint Son turned to the humans and said, "In the Primeval Realm Ruins, there are also cultivation methods suited for humans. Have you wondered why, after the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago, there has yet to be a True Divinity appear amongst your ranks? Do you think it is because humanity is too weak?"

The Good Fortune Saint Son rhetorically asked, shaking the hearts of the young human elites present. These young elites certainly wouldn't believe that humans were weak, because humanity was also once endlessly glorious. At their peak time, they were in no way inferior to the saints or the spiritas.

"Yes, humanity isn't weak at all. They have an unparalleled ability to learn and adapt, and in the essence gathering system, you all have a superiority that the other races cannot hope to compare with. However, 3.6 billion years ago, your Empyreans nearly went extinct and their inheritances were lost. Because of this, humanity had to start from the beginning. No matter how amazing your talent is, your vision was caged within the scope of the Divine Realm, making it incomparably difficult to break through the realm of True Divinity.

"Us saints come to the Divine Realm to invade. This I will not deny. What we want are resources. But, to you humans that understand the trend of the times, we have no evil intentions at all. In a way this is even a chance for you. During every great calamity, that is also a time when countless rivals rise up from the ranks. If it weren't for the invasion of my saint race, your horizons would still be limited and it would still be impossible for you all to break into the realm of True Divinity. But now, the tides have turned..."

The Good Fortune Saint Son slowly said.

Empyrean Traceless and Empyrean Vase Universe had extremely ugly complexions and even Empyrean Divine Dream was finding it hard to maintain her calm.

The words of the Good Fortune Saint Son had turned black into white. He had painted the invasion of the saints as a chance for the heroic elites of the Divine Realm to break into the realm of True Divinity!

But his words each cut to the core, leaving one unable to refute them!

The human race in the Divine Realm indeed had no True Divinities, and the reason for this was truly because they lacked the inheritances as well as the methods.

And in terms of accumulated knowledge, humanity could not compare with the saints. It seemed that the Primeval Realm Ruins that the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke of were connected to Saint Convocation Heaven and the saints could freely enter and leave at will.

"Primeval Realm Ruins..."

Empyrean Divine Dream pondered for a moment. In the Divine Realm of the 33 Heavens, because of the existence of the God Lamenting Wall, news of other universes was extremely limited. The human Empyreans simply never knew that this Primeval Realm Ruins even existed.

If what the Good Fortune Saint Son said was true, then this Primeval Realm Ruins contained all sorts of rare and precious inheritances, as well as all sorts of valuable antiquities. Such a land truly left one jealous.

This longevity feast seemed to become the Good Fortune Saint Son's monologue. Even so, his words had caused a massive change in the minds of the martial artists present.

At this time, the Monster Emperor said, "Your Highness Saint Son, you wouldn't be giving me this congratulatory gift for nothing in return, right?"

The Monster Emperor laughed as he looked at the Good Fortune Saint Son, waiting for his reply. It was naturally impossible for such a precious gift to be given so easily.

And in fact, the Good Fortune Saint Son's reply had already been decided ahead of time.

"Haha, Your Majesty Monster Emperor is frank and to the point. Great! This being the case, then I will also be blunt. Of these two gifts, the first is a transcendent divine pill intended to celebrate this longevity feast. As for the second, the inheritance fragment of the monster race, the method to break into True Divinity, it is also a congratulatory gift, as well as a betrothal gift!"

With this, the Good Fortune Saint Son looked at Xiao Moxian.

He loudly announced, "Borrowing Your Majesty Monster Emperor's grand longevity feast, I would like to take this inheritance jade slip as a betrothal gift and become engaged to Miss Ji Xian'er!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son's clear and steady voice spread throughout the entire audience.

For a time, everyone was stunned.

All of their eyes focused on Xiao Moxian.

The Good Fortune Saint Son was proposing marriage to Xiao Moxian!

And once the Monster Emperor and Empyrean Demondawn agreed, the alliance between the monster and demon races with the saints would be a done deal!

At this time, the human Empyreans couldn’t sit still!

Although they realized that the demon and monster races might ally with the saints, they never thought it would be today. Moreover, it came in the form of an engagement, and even in the presence of all the human Empyreans there!

The Good Fortune Saint Son did this because he wanted to push humanity to the precipice of despair!

“Hahaha!” The Monster Emperor laughed. “Your Highness Saint Son is an outstanding individual and in the future will even become the supreme Saint Sovereign of the saint race. Naturally, you are a good match with Xian’er. I have no objections, but must ask for the opinion of Empyrean Demondawn and Xian’er…”

As the Monster Emperor spoke, he smiled towards Empyrean Demondawn and Xiao Moxian.

He waited for their reply.

Chapter 1764 – Lin Ming Proposes Marriage

Chapter 1764 – Lin Ming Proposes Marriage

…

…

…

"The Good Fortune Saint Son is far too ruthless. With things having reached this stage, it is impossible for Demondawn not to agree!"

Sitting near Empyrean Divine Dream, Empyrean Vast Universe's forehead was wet with sweat.

The Monster Emperor's grand longevity feast had become the stage for the Good Fortune Saint Son.

From the start, his momentum was like a rainbow, every step he took intimidating to the extreme. At the final moment, he even took out the method to break into True Divinity!

If Empyrean Vast Universe were in Empyrean Demondawn's position, he naturally wouldn't have any reason to refuse the proposal.

After all, the relationship of the humans with the monster and demon races wasn't too harmonious to begin with. In a single universe, it was inevitable that there would be struggles over resources. Hundreds of millions of years ago, the demon and monster races even went to war with some human influences.

"The Good Fortune Saint Son wants to push us into a hopeless situation…"

Beside Empyrean Vast Universe, Empyrean Traceless's complexion was solemn and grim. Around him, the power of space shivered and even light distorted. He was an Empyrean who focused on the Space Laws, and the nervousness in his heart caused the strength in his body to leak out and shake the void.

All eyes turned to Empyrean Demondawn.

They were all aware that Empyrean Demondawn was the one to make the final decision here. According to the traditions of the Divine Realm, all weddings that involved the young elites of large influences had to obey the orders of the parents or Patriarch. The young elites themselves couldn't take responsibility and make their own decision.

Empyrean Demondawn's eyes swept over the human Empyreans, disregarding their different expressions. Finally, he looked at the Good Fortune Saint Son.

He spoke, his voice low and deep, "Your Highness Saint Son, may I borrow that jade slip to take a look?"

"Of course."

The Good Fortune Saint Son easily agreed. He flicked his finger and the black jade slip flew into Empyrean Demondawn's hand.

Empyrean Demondawn closed his eyes, sinking his sense into the jade slip and reading through the Laws within. A moment later, he opened his eyes.

It was as the Good Fortune Saint Son had said; this jade slip was not fake. It was indeed an incomplete inheritance spread down from ancient times, and likely originated from a True Divinity.

However, how could it be so easy to break into the realm of True Divinity? Moreover, this inheritance jade slip was highly incomplete. Empyrean Demondawn estimated that even if he obtained this jade slip, his chances of breaking into the realm of True Divinity were only 1-2%, possibly even lower.

However, this tiny fraction of a chance was an irresistible temptation to him!

After all, everything depended on oneself. Empyrean Demondawn had great confidence in his own abilities!

He laid down the jade slip and slowly said, one word at a time, “Your Highness Saint Son is a peerless individual. In addition to such a precious betrothal gift, the sincerity you have shown is more than enough. I have no objections.”

Speaking here, Empyrean Demondawn looked at Xiao Moxian. “Xian’er, do you have any opinions?”

These words contained a momentum that could not be disobeyed. His eyes were like the starry skies, making one’s mind tremble upon seeing them.

In large influences, young elites couldn’t decide their own wedding; all marital decisions depended on the will of the Patriarch or Sovereign. The young elites themselves had no right to refuse. But in this situation, if Xiao Moxian were to disobey him, it would be a great loss of face.

Everyone looked at Xiao Moxian. Xiao Moxian paled. Facing the terrifying pressure exuding from her grandfather, facing the burning gaze of all those present, she gripped her fists and clenched her teeth before slowly parting her lips.

But at this time, a voice suddenly rang out.

“Wait one moment!”

This voice left everyone stunned. They turned their heads, looking towards the origin of this voice.

They saw that outside the honored seating section, in the area where young elites sat, a black-clothed youth was slowly standing up.

His sword-straight eyebrows slanted towards his temples and his appearance was resolute and proud. His long black hair hung loose and his momentum was extraordinary. Just by standing there he resembled a spear, noble and dignified!

This person was Lin Ming.

For a time, everyone was left dumbfounded. They never imagined that at this point Lin Ming would stand up.

Just what was he planning to do?

At the very start of this longevity feast, Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son had stood in sharp opposition to each other. But afterwards, he quieted down, maintaining total silence. It was only at this critical moment that he stood up and left everyone dazed.

“Lin Ming… I knew you would not stay quiet…” Empyrean Divine Dream lightly sighed. Amongst all the human Empyreans present, she was the only one who knew the true story behind all that happened.

With Lin Ming’s character, he would never watch as his own woman was taken away by the Good Fortune Saint Son.

Empyrean Divine Dream only hoped that Lin Ming knew what he was doing and didn’t suffer a loss to the Good Fortune Saint Son.

She had already firmed her resolve. Today, no matter what, even if she had to expose the totality of her true strength, she would protect Lin Ming from harm.

“Lin Ming! Hehe, you’re just like a ghost that won’t stop haunting me!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son looked at Lin Ming with a thoughtful expression. Today he had already grasped all trump cards in his hands. He didn’t believe that Lin Ming would be able to stir up any trouble.

“Brat, what are you doing!?”

A loud voice erupted. The one shouting was Empyrean Demondawn!

His tiger-bright eyes stared at Lin Ming, his vision seeming as if he could cut Lin Ming to pieces. He knew what happened in the past between Lin Ming and his granddaughter and he wished that he could tear Lin Ming to shreds. However, at this longevity feast, Divine Dream, Vast Universe, and other human Empyreans were present so he couldn't do anything to him. Thus, he had chosen to ignore him.

But he never imagined that Lin Ming would summon the courage to dare stand up at this time!

"Senior Demondawn." Lin Ming respectfully cupped his fists together and bowed. Facing the violent waves of horrendous pressure that were washing off of Empyrean Demondawn, Lin Ming focused the energy in his dantian and opened the Heretical God Force, allowing his breath to remain calm throughout.

This action alone left many of the guests present secretly bewildered.

It was said that Lin Ming was the number one young elite of humanity, and his talent was no less than the Good Fortune Saint Son's. Seeing him, it seemed that the stories were true.

Empyrean Demondawn's eyes were terrifying. He coldly said, "I don't need your hypocritical greetings. Whatever you have to say, quickly spit it out!"

Lin Ming said, "This junior has always been enamored with Miss Xian'er. Borrowing this longevity feast, this junior would like to discuss marriage with Senior Demondawn, and hopes that Senior Demondawn would betroth Miss Xian'er to me."

Lin Ming's words were steady and moderate. But, they still caused the jaws of everyone present to hit the floor.

Just what kind of situation was this!? Lin Ming wanted to stand opposite the Good Fortune Saint Son and also propose marriage!?

Wasn’t this just bringing trouble upon his own head?

One didn’t need to be a genius to know what Empyrean Demondawn’s choice would be. If Lin Ming were compared to the Good Fortune Saint Son… they simply couldn’t be compared at all.

The influence that stood behind the Good Fortune Saint Son could give Empyrean Demondawn the hopes of soaring into the heavens. But what Lin Ming could offer the monster race was nothing but annihilation.

Empyrean Demondawn was no longer looking at Lin Ming with anger, but with utter disbelief. Wasn’t this just the greatest joke in the world?

Was Lin Ming right of mind? Could he be any more stupid?

Empyrean Demondawn had just agreed to the Good Fortune Saint Son. Now, Lin Ming had chosen this time to propose marriage. Did Lin Ming think that Empyrean Demondawn would renege on his words?

“Hahahah!” At this time, the Good Fortune Saint Son laughed out loud, and did so raucously and without end.

His laughing was too mad, too insolent. It caused everyone to look at him.

“This is too funny! Too funny! This is just the funniest joke that I have ever heard in my life! Originally, my marriage proposal today should have been a happy day, and I was worried that there wouldn’t be any fun involved. But, who would have thought that an idiot like you would have jumped out of nowhere to be my clown! Well done!”

Facing the Good Fortune Saint Son’s taunts, Lin Ming tranquilly replied. “You really are confident in yourself. The both of us have proposed marriage and it is a fair competition. Do you believe you will have the last laugh?”

Lin Ming’s words caused the Good Fortune Saint Son to look at him like an idiot.

“Has your brain been addled? Things have already come this far, so how could you not know who will have the last laugh? Why don’t you find a mirror and take a good look at yourself, in what way can you compare with me!? I have taken out the method to becoming a True Divinity as a betrothal gift! What do you have?”

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke, even the human martial artists found the scene hard to continue watching.

In terms of betrothal gifts, Lin Ming would have to follow the Good Fortune Saint Son. And compared to the method to break into True Divinity, anything Lin Ming took out would appear poor and shabby.

Seeing Lin Ming’s defiant expression, the Good Fortune Saint Son laughed, ridiculing again and again, “It seems you don’t think your face is swollen enough? Do I need to slap you until your face is round and red? Are you still not satisfied? Well, allow me to thoroughly make you give up!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son turned to Xiao Moxian. He said, “Miss Xian’er, I never thought that during my proposal to you, there would also be an idiot jumping out to ruin things. I hope that this hasn’t affected Miss Xian’er’s mood. Now, since me and this fool are both proposing to Miss Xian’er, I wonder just who Miss Xian’er will choose?”

In this marriage proposal, only two people were truly involved – Empyrean Demondawn and Xiao Moxian.

Empyrean Demondawn had already agreed. As long as Xiao Moxian also agreed, then there wouldn’t be any problems at all.

And, the Good Fortune Saint Son had already received a message from the Monster Emperor before coming here. He knew that Xiao Moxian had already agreed to his marriage proposal, thus he confidently asked her now.

For a time, everyone’s gaze turned back to Xiao Moxian.

The Good Fortune Saint Son and Lin Ming had both proposed. Now, it was time for her to make her choice!

The Good Fortune Saint Son didn't know of what had happened between Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, but, the Monster Emperor and Empyrean Demondawn did. They frowned, their eyes sharp as they looked at Xiao Moxian.

"Xian'er, do not forget the child in your womb! In order to guarantee its life we must take a tremendous risk! If you work with me then that child has a slim chance to survive. Otherwise, once the Good Fortune Saint Son suspects that you were involved with Lin Ming, the child within you will undoubtedly die!"

Empyrean Demondawn warned. His voice was like a thunderclap in Xiao Moxian's ears!

Xiao Moxian's body shook and she turned paper white.

She had to face her grandfather and the Monster Emperor, the burning gazes of all present, and even the threat to the child in her womb.

With all of these factors burdening her, the pressure she had to face could be imagined!

She clenched her teeth, her eyes looking over the audience.

One by one, she swept over Empyrean Demondawn, the Monster Emperor, the Good Fortune Saint Son, the guests, and finally, her gaze fell onto Lin Ming.

As their eyes met, it was as if every emotion in the world, every ounce of love and affection was contained within them.

…Lin Ming…do you regret?

…I don't.

And I won't.

She took a deep, shuddering breath and parted her lips. Her body shook, as if every word she spoke exhausted all the strength within her, overdrawing her life –

“I…choose… Lin Ming!”

Just four words, without any true essence poured into them.

However, these words spread over the entire audience.

For a time, every single guest fell silent.

Xiao Moxian’s final choice had actually been Lin Ming!

Hearing this, the Good Fortune Saint Son began to shake, his complexion turning incredibly ugly!

Chapter 1765 – Spear Drawn

Chapter 1765 – Spear Drawn

…

…

…

She chose Lin Ming! How was that possible!?

The Good Fortune Saint Son's originally handsome face almost instantly turned liver red!

In the presence of so many people, he had spoken while utterly confident in himself, but now he had been struck silly by Xiao Moxian!

Before this he had clearly communicated with Empyrean Demondawn and the Monster Emperor, neither one of them expressing any problems, and even Xiao Moxian had agreed to the marriage proposal at the longevity feast. But now she had backed down from her promise!

At this time, everyone present began to speak in hushed whispers.

"Xian Moxian actually chose Lin Ming? What's going on here?"

"Empyrean Demondawn clearly never thought this would happen. There must be something suspicious going on."

Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son's conditions were clear to all present; it was easy to see just who was the superior choice. In all fairness, even if any of the young human elites were in Xiao Moxian's position, they would have chosen the Good Fortune Saint Son.

Moreover, Empyrean Demondawn had chosen the Good Fortune Saint Son, so how could Xiao Moxian shame her grandfather in front of so many people?

In this sort of situation, there was only a single explanation. That was that between Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming, there was already some profound relationship, and they had already pledged themselves to each other!

And now Lin Ming proposing marriage might have been something that he and Xiao Moxian had discussed before already!

Upon realizing this, many people's complexions changed. They looked towards the Good Fortune Saint Son with gloating eyes, waiting to see the play unfold.

Everyone thought that Lin Ming leapt up because there was something wrong with his head and he was simply asking to be punished.

But now, it seemed that Lin Ming had already won the prize. As for the Good Fortune Saint Son, he had merely come afterwards as a clown, nothing but a sucker.

As the Good Fortune Saint Son felt the thoughtful and mocking eyes of these people upon him, his lungs nearly exploded with rage!

He had lived his life high-spirited and full of pride. Since when had he received such an insult?

"Demondawn, what a good granddaughter you've taught!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son glared at Empyrean Demondawn.

Empyrean Demondawn was also surprised and furious right now. As he looked at Xiao Moxian, a thick killing intent burst out from his eyes.

During this longevity feast, Xiao Moxian's choice had stripped him of any face he had!

"You unfilial girl, what use have I of you!"

In his rage, Empyrean Demondawn's eyes had turned blood red. He lifted his hand and aimed a slap towards Xiao Moxian!

This palm caused a violent wind to stir up. Empyrean Demondawn certainly couldn't bear killing Xiao Moxian, but this slap could still tear her skin!

Seeing this, Lin Ming felt his heart tighten. He wanted to intercept the slap but he knew that if he were to act out at this time, he would suffer the full might of Empyrean Demondawn. Empyrean Demondawn would take advantage of this situation to severely wound him, and in his rage, Empyrean Demondawn might even try to take his life.

Lin Ming could only watch helplessly on. Xiao Moxian bit her lips and closed her eyes.

And just as Empyrean Demondawn's palm was about to strike Xiao Moxian's face, a gentle and soft blue light wrapped around his palm like a ribbon, causing it to halt where it was.

Peng!

The pale blue ribbon of light suddenly tightened. Empyrean Demondawn stiffened. He turned his head and saw that the one who bound his hand was Empyrean Divine Dream.

Empyrean Divine Dream simply raised her right hand, an icy blue ribbon of ephemeral light flashing out from her hands and winding around Empyrean Demondawn's. It was impossible to tell whether this ribbon was a beam of light or a magic tool.

Empyrean Demondawn looked at Divine Dream with smoldering anger.

"You are stopping me?"

"That's right. I am stopping you..." Empyrean Divine Dream's voice was cold and desolate. She stood up, facing Empyrean Demondawn.

She felt that Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian's actions had truly and maliciously torn apart Empyrean Demondawn's face, and his fury was justified.

But, she always stood on the side of humanity.

No matter what happened, she would support Lin Ming unconditionally.

Thus, although her words were calm, they were filled with a potent and forceful momentum.

If this is the limit of your strength, so what if I stop you?

“You…!”

Empyrean Demondawn felt his blood shoot towards his temples. He was originally breathless with anger, and now he also bumped into this aggressive Empyrean Divine Dream. And, what was worst was that he couldn’t untangle this blue ribbon from his hand. The blue ribbon seemed to contain a sly soul force. As it wrapped around his hand, the soul force pierced into his own spiritual sea, aiming towards his soul with thousands of icy blue steel needles. As long as he even thought about moving his right hand, an agonizing pain would shoot out from his spiritual sea.

“Divine Dream… has already reached this level?”

Empyrean Demondawn felt his palms become wet with sweat. As he looked at Divine Dream again, he had already slowly calmed down.

He grimly said, “Marriage matters are decided by me. You all are nothing but bystanders. What right do you have to interfere in the family matters of my Demondawn Heavenly Palace?”

Empyrean Divine Dream said, “I naturally cannot interfere in the family matters of your Demondawn Heavenly Palace. It is only that… the Good Fortune Saint Son proposed marriage and you happily agreed, but when Lin Ming proposed marriage, you hatefully glared at him. After that, when Xiao Moxian chose Lin Ming, you immediately moved to slap her in the presence of everyone here. Do you think that our Lin Ming is so easy to insult?”

Empyrean Divine Dream's voice was clear and resonant, going straight into the hearts of most of the human guests present. As they listened to her, they also felt that Empyrean Demondawn was too great a bully.

"Hahahaha!" Empyrean Demondawn laughed. "Divine Dream! I know what you are thinking! You simply do not want to see the monster and demon races ally with the saints! You would try everything in your power to destroy the marriage alliance! Good! Very good! In I, Demondawn's life, what I hate most is others using ruthless methods to force me to do something! The more you try to force me, the more I will never allow your plans to succeed!

"Today, allow me to tell you something! The alliance between the monster and demon races with the saints was decided by me! This marriage is also decided by me! Marriage of the children has always been the decision of the parents and elders; this is a completely justified matter! No matter how you try to twist things, I am the one standing on principle here! Let me take a good look and see just how you will take away my granddaughter today!"

Empyrean Demondawn's words were the same as tearing apart any semblance of respect. Originally, with the humans present here, the demons and saints wouldn't have flagrantly proposed an alliance. Rather, they took the circuitous route of proposing a marriage alliance. After all, they had to consider the feelings of all the human martial artists present. But now, Empyrean Demondawn had acknowledged his alliance with the saints in front of everyone. This caused the complexions of all the human guests to immediately become ugly.

Divine Dream frowned. With things having come this far, today's events could no longer be salvaged!

Many people felt that Lin Ming's actions of suddenly proposing marriage today and standing in sharp opposition to him were far too inconsiderate. Indeed, while Lin Ming had slapped the Good Fortune Saint Son's face and had made him a public cuckold, although this was enjoyable to see, what would change?

His extreme actions had instead aroused the fury of Empyrean Demondawn, causing him to slide towards the saints even faster.

And no matter how powerful Empyrean Divine Dream was, it was impossible for her to use force to take Xiao Moxian away from here.

Then, Xiao Moxian would still have to marry the Saint Son. And because of today's matters, whether it was in the demon, monster, or saint races, she would receive a cold shoulder from all of them and likely be mistreated by the Good Fortune Saint Son in the future!

Thinking of this, many people looked towards Lin Ming, feeling that he was just far too young and naïve. But now, he had ridden the tiger and could no longer climb down. Just how would today's events end?

At this time, Lin Ming's face darkened. He looked towards the furious Empyrean Demondawn and said, "Senior Demondawn, I respect you as a senior and will allow you to insult me as you please. But, I hope that you will not reach for a yard after taking an inch… after all, there are some matters that both of us wouldn't like to be publicized, right?"

Lin Ming's words left the martial artists present stupefied.

As a junior, Lin Ming dared to speak like this to an Empyrean, warning them not to take a yard after taking an inch! Was he looking to die!?

However, what surprised everyone was that even though Empyrean Demondawn was bristling with rage, he didn't erupt. Rather, he maintained total silence, glaring at Lin Ming with eyes filled with hate.

He certainly knew what 'matters' Lin Ming was speaking of – it was the matter of Xiao Moxian's pregnancy!

If news of this were to be revealed, the Good Fortune Saint Son might immediately storm away in a rage!

At that time, the alliance between the monster and demon races with the saints might be ruined.

Lin Ming's words had struck at his most fatal point!

Empyrean Demondawn couldn't understand how Lin Ming knew of Xiao Moxian's pregnancy. He had clearly sealed away her strength with layers of spells and placed her under house arrest. But now, as he recalled Lin Ming's proposal and Xiao Moxian's betrayal, it was likely they had come to this agreement in advance!

This caused Empyrean Demondawn to feel as if he had been played by two juniors.

"This brat, he shouldn't rashly destroy Xian'er's reputation like this..."

Empyrean Demondawn felt a little fear. He didn't dare to push Lin Ming too far. If he pushed Lin Ming over the cliff, Empyrean Demondawn would not only lose his alliance with the saints but also lose Xiao Moxian. In the future when they met, his granddaughter would treat him like an enemy.

"What's wrong? Empyrean Demondawn is enduring the insult? What does Lin Ming have on him?"

Everyone glanced at each other, making all sorts of guesses.

At this time, the Good Fortune Saint Son felt his intestines twisting together. He didn't know what game Lin Ming and Empyrean Demondawn were playing, but now he felt that at this time, he had been made a fool.

He felt that staying here any longer was meaningless.

Even if he were the one to win Xiao Moxian's hand in marriage at the end, he would still be ridiculed by all the young elites of the Divine Realm.

"Lin Ming, you remember for me. 40 years from now in our life or death battle, I will break apart all your meridians and make you beg for death! You only have 40 years of freedom left. Make sure you enjoy the final years of your life!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son looked at Lin Ming as if he were looking at a dead man, his eyes filled with absolute confidence. It was as if 40 years from now, killing Lin Ming would be no harder than slaughtering a chicken or butchering a dog.

But at this time, something occurred that left the Good Fortune Saint Son completely dumbfounded.

He stared blankly on as Lin Ming quietly extracted the Phoenix Blood Spear from his spatial ring. The spear point was cold, the light reflecting off it menacingly!

Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and pointed it straight towards the Good Fortune Saint Son. His aura suddenly invisibly exuded outwards. At this time, Lin Ming was like an unrivalled divine spear, reckless and fierce!

He clearly and calmly said, “Since we must fight, why wait the full hundred years? Let’s settle this today!”

“What!?”

The entire audience wasn’t able to believe their own ears!

Chapter 1766 – No Road Out

Chapter 1766 – No Road Out

…

…

…

Today, everything Lin Ming did had repeatedly shattered all expectations. First he had proposed marriage to Xiao Moxian, and then Xiao Moxian agreed to him. Finally, and most outrageously of all, he challenged the Good Fortune Saint Son!

“Lin Ming, you - !”

At the very start, Empyrean Divine Dream had remained calm and serene. But when she heard Lin Ming’s words, her heart skipped a beat. She could no longer keep still!

All of the human Empyreans had shocked expressions. Every one of them was startled beyond compare.

In their minds, Lin Ming had only just caught up to the boundary that the Good Fortune Saint Son was at 60 years ago. Moreover, in these 60 years, the Good Fortune Saint Son had made incredible leaps in his strength. His cultivation method, the Good Fortune Divine Art, had broken into the fifth level and his cultivation base had reached the middle Holy Lord realm!

No matter how it was said, the Good Fortune Saint Son was the number one powerhouse within the entire younger generation of the saints!

Before this, everyone believed that the Good Fortune Saint Son's talent was about the same as Lin Ming's. In this case, how could the middle Holy Lord Good Fortune Saint Son lose to the half-step Holy Lord Lin Ming?

If so, then his title of the Good Fortune Saint Son would be nothing but a joke!

Lin Ming was the hope of humanity. Even though there were many Empyreans present that had just met Lin Ming for the first time, they were extremely concerned about his safety. They didn't want anything to happen to him.

"What are you saying? You want to challenge me?"

The Good Fortune Saint Son looked at Lin Ming with disbelief thick in his eyes. Lin Ming's unexpected challenge towards him had surpassed his scope of understanding.

Before a hundred years was up, at the half-step Holy Lord realm, with a difference of a large boundary and a half, this Lin Ming wanted to challenge a middle Holy Lord.

Moreover, he also possessed the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

Was he insane?

Looking at the bright blood red Phoenix Blood Spear, the Good Fortune Saint Son smiled, and his smile was cruel and diabolical.

This sort of smiling face was the same as that of a wild beast that had seen its most delicious prey.

"You really have no idea of death or danger! Since you want to die today, let me help you along! I will sever all your meridians and crush you beneath my feet like an ant!"

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke his aura suddenly erupted. Just now, he had been seething with rage because of Lin Ming's impudent actions and had long been wanting to give vent to his anger. Since Lin Ming knocked on his door, he would welcome him in!

Feeling the Good Fortune Saint Son's killing intent, Lin Ming sneered. "You want to kill me and I want to kill you. But unfortunately, even after I defeat you I cannot kill you."

Lin Ming was well aware that at the monster race's grand longevity feast, he couldn't kill the Good Fortune Saint Son.

Even if the Good Fortune Saint Son was defeated, that saint peak Empyrean would save him.

Moreover, there were likely to be many life-saving cards on the Good Fortune Saint Son's body, perhaps a True Divinity incarnation or even a peak Empyrean hiding in his spatial ring, ready to help at any moment.

Otherwise, how would the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign allow the Good Fortune Saint Son to freely bring the Grandmist Spirit Bead wherever he wanted? In this longevity feast, if all the human Empyreans present were to join together to attack, they could easily annihilate the Good Fortune Saint Son!

"If I defeat you, I won't kill you, but I want you to roll out of the Divine Realm and out of the monster race!"

Lin Ming's voice was loud and clear, spreading through the entire audience. These words caused the Good Fortune Saint Son's several minions to shake with rage. With the way Lin Ming was speaking, it was as if his victory over the Good Fortune Saint Son was already decided.

"This Lin Ming is too arrogant, just who does he think he is!?"

"His head must have been kicked by a donkey. For His Highness Saint Son to kill him, only 20% of his strength will be needed!"

These followers all bore a grudge against Lin Ming and their teeth itched to chomp on him. All of them wanted to see Lin Ming die a miserable death.

The Good Fortune Saint Son looked at Lin Ming and finally understood Lin Ming's meaning. "Hahaha! I thought it was strange that you would go insane and deliver yourself to my door for a fight. But it seems you were forced to act out of desperation since you have no path to take out of here. So, you want to use this battle to save your engagement? You think that if I lose, I'll give up on this marriage, right?

"I think you really must have gone insane? Why do I need to agree with you? It's a pity, but with your current strength, even if we fight it will be useless. 40 years from now, I might be a little interested in you, but now, you are nothing more to me than a chicken or a dog!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son's aura became increasingly strong.

Lin Ming coldly said, "If you and I fight, it is impossible for it to be a life or death struggle, so there naturally must be a gambling stake! I want your Grandmist Spirit Bead, but even if I beat you up so badly that no one can recognize you I fear that I still won't be able to obtain it!"

Lin Ming was well aware that with a treasure on the level of the Grandmist Spirit Bead, there would be an unfathomable layer of protections over it. With just a thought, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign might be able to take it back, otherwise how would he dare to leave the Grandmist Spirit Bead with the Good Fortune Saint Son? The Grandmist Spirit Bead alone was countless times more precious than the Good Fortune Saint Son's life!

If he wanted to defeat the Good Fortune Saint Son to obtain the Grandmist Spirit Bead, that was simply a fantastical daydream!

Hearing Lin Ming mention the Grandmist Spirit Bead, the Good Fortune Saint Son frowned, not replying.

He knew that Lin Ming was trying to deliberately stir him up. The Grandmist Spirit Bead was an extremely important matter and no matter how much he believed he could easily defeat Lin Ming, he would not disclose even the smallest secret about it. Compared to a divine artifact like the Grandmist Spirit Bead, the alliance and marriage were nothing at all!

Lin Ming saw the Good Fortune Saint Son's silence and said, "If I win, not only do I want you to cancel your marriage proposal to Ji Xian'er but also take out a True Divinity cultivation method suitable for humans!"

Lin Ming was like a lion opening wide his maw, immediately demanding such exorbitant conditions!

As these conditions were tossed out, all of the human Empyreans present were shocked!

"Lin Ming..."

Empyrean Divine Dream took a deep breath. As she looked at Lin Ming, her eyes filled with a complex light.

She knew that the reason Lin Ming wanted a True Divinity cultivation method suited for humans was not to use for himself, but to help salvage the confidence of humanity.

Just before this, the Good Fortune Saint Son had implied that as long as any human Empyreans were willing to submit to the saints, they could obtain the method to break into True Divinity.

To the Empyreans of humanity, this was an unfathomable temptation!

Even despite the righteous cause of their race, there would inevitably be some Empyreans that were tempted. And once the betrayals began, the will and heart of the people would be shaken.

But now, Lin Ming said that as long as he won, the Good Fortune Saint Son would have to take out a human True Divinity cultivation method. This was the same as him ruining the Good Fortune Saint Son's evil plot.

Of course, the premise of all this was that Lin Ming could really win!

Thinking of this, Empyrean Divine Dream had no idea how to feel. Lin Ming was only a junior and yet he was shouldering so much!

With so many seniors present, in the end they all had to rely on a junior like Lin Ming to obtain the method to break into True Divinity.

Facing Lin Ming's proposed conditions, the Good Fortune Saint Son coldly sneered. "It's true that my saint race has True Divinity breakthrough cultivation methods, but how do you know if I've brought any of these inheritances with me?"

The Good Fortune Saint Son wouldn't use these sorts of inheritances so it was normal for him to not bring them with him.

Lin Ming laughed. "It's not easy for you to return to the Saint Convocation Heaven from the Divine Realm. Crossing through the God Lamenting Wall is an extremely troublesome matter and since you've already decided to use a human True Divinity breakthrough cultivation method to shatter the unity of the Divine Realm's Empyreans, how could you not carry around these inheritances? Otherwise, wouldn't you simply arouse the suspicions of those thinking of following you?"

Lin Ming's words were sharp and aggressive.

The Good Fortune Saint Son looked at Lin Ming, his eyes darkening. He originally thought Lin Ming had been cornered and acted out of desperation for a woman, but now it seemed that Lin Ming's schemes were deeper than he thought. He wanted to borrow this battle to shatter the plans he had for the humans!

"Good! Good! Good! It seems I've looked down on you! Yes, I indeed have a human method to break into True Divinity, but don't think I'll take it out in vain! Although it is impossible for you to obtain whatever I take out, you still have to put out something which can at least catch a second glance from me for this gambling bet. Do you have anything like that?"

The Good Fortune Saint Son's gaze was brilliant, like a starving beast.

Although he knew in his heart that it was impossible for him to lose to Lin Ming, he would never let Lin Ming play such tricks on him.

With the Good Fortune Saint Son's words, everyone turned to Lin Ming. Lin Ming wanted many things, but if he couldn't take out enough equivalent treasures then there was no need for the Good Fortune Saint Son to comply with him.

The Good Fortune Saint Son's minions also had contemptuous expressions.

Lin Ming's background and status had long been determined. His total net worth simply couldn't compete with the Good Fortune Saint Son's. Otherwise, when the Good Fortune Saint Son mocked Lin Ming for not bringing out a congratulatory gift, Lin Ming wouldn't have remained silent.

Lin Ming said, "Since I want to make a gambling bet with you, I naturally have to bring an equivalent treasure."

As he spoke, he quietly extracted a black spear from his spatial ring. This spear had a thick killing intent and wasn't the least bit glossy at all. As it appeared, the Laws around it seemed to quiver, as an ancient and vicious atmosphere exuded from it.

This was the Black Dragon Spear!

The Black Dragon Spear might not be the holy weapon that the Asura Road Master used himself, but it was at least a weapon that one of his reincarnations used!

"This is..."

As the peak Empyrean protecting the Good Fortune Saint Son saw this holy weapon, his eyes popped wide open.

"Peak True Divinity spirit treasure!"

He suddenly blurted out. Out of everyone present, he had the broadest field of vision and had seen many treasures that were excavated from the Primeval Realm Ruins.

Yet, none of those treasures he saw could compare with this black spear!

This weapon had absolutely reached the level of a peak True Divinity spirit treasure. As for whether or not this treasure surpassed that level, he couldn't know, because that exceeded his field of vision!

"Peak True Divinity spirit treasure?"

As the martial artists present heard this, all of them glanced at each other with shock. The Good Fortune Saint Son's minions also stared on with moon-like eyes. A peak True Divinity spirit treasure could only be raised by a peak True Divinity powerhouse. And, this sort of peerless powerhouse was rare even in the most ancient of eras!

From the past to the present, these types of spirit treasure had nearly vanished!

Just this black spear alone far, far surpassed the value of an ordinary True Divinity cultivation method!

Lin Ming gently traced the Black Dragon Spear's shaft. After taking out the Black Dragon Spear, he had cut off all means of retreat and was determined to fight to the bitter end! This was a battle with his life and his property on the line!

"Good Fortune Saint Son, what kind of cultivation method can you bring out? It should be some extremely incomplete True Divinity cultivation method, right? If you can't do that, then your so-called True Divinity influence is far too poor. Can you not even compare with a little junior like me?"

Lin Ming asked the Good Fortune Saint Son in reply, his words imperious.

Chapter 1767 – Nine Orifice Exquisite Pill

Chapter 1767 – Nine Orifice Exquisite Pill

…

…

…

“You…”

The Good Fortune Saint Son took in a deep breath – he never imagined that Lin Ming would pull out such a treasure.

Generally speaking, when comparing the same level of treasure, a spirit treasure was slightly less valuable than an inheritance.

But what Lin Ming took out was a peak True Divinity spirit treasure and what the Good Fortune Saint Son took out was only an extremely incomplete True Divinity inheritance.

Looking at the two items, the difference was far too great.

After fishing through his spatial ring, the Good Fortune Saint Son reluctantly took out an almost complete human True Divinity inheritance.

Even in the Good Fortune Saint Palace, there was an extremely small number of these inheritances.

Lin Ming probed the contents of the inheritance with his sense and was able to discern that it was indeed a cultivation method.

He had studied the Asura Laws, a cultivation method that already surpassed a True Divinity cultivation method. With that as his foundation, his ability to appraise True Divinity cultivation methods was beyond the understanding of the average person.

He could just barely judge the exquisiteness of the Laws within. What the Good Fortune Saint Son took out was only a low rank cultivation method, but its advantage was that it was complete.

After Lin Ming investigated the jade slip, the other Empyreans present also did so, unable to withstand their curiosity. Even the Monster Emperor probed with his sense.

However, besides Divine Dream, none of the other Empyreans had ever touched upon the domain of True Divinity. For a time, they had difficulties discerning the profound principles within.

“A lower-middle rank True Divinity cultivation method. Do you really plan on using that little thing to bet against my Black Dragon Spear?” Lin Ming tauntingly said. But as he spoke, his words shocked the Empyreans present. How had Lin Ming seen through the rank of the cultivation method?

He was only a half-step Holy Lord, and yet he was familiar with the boundaries of a True Divinity cultivation method?

Moreover, from the expressions of the Good Fortune Saint Son and that peak saint Empyrean, it seemed that Lin Ming’s judgment was correct!

“Humph! Even if I take out a more precious cultivation method, so what? You think you can obtain it?”

The Good Fortune Saint Son taunted back. But taunts were taunts; if he wasn’t able to take out an equivalent amount in treasures then he really wouldn’t have any face left. He also took out another jade slip fragment and pill.

This cultivation method was even worse. In fact, the entire Good Fortune Saint Palace only had these two human cultivation method inheritances. Their grades were extremely ordinary and the second set was highly incomplete.

But as for the pill, it was of an exceedingly high quality, nearly reaching the level of a True Divinity spirit pill.

"Nine Orifices Exquisite Pill! Although this is a transcendent divine pill, its level nears that of True Divinity. It was originally refined by His Majesty the Saint Sovereign for me to break into the World King realm! The materials required to make this pill are extremely rare and its value is no less than that of an incomplete True Divinity cultivation method fragment!"

As the Good Fortune Saint Son bragged, Lin Ming looked over the pill, overjoyed in his heart. That was actually a pill refined by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, a top quality body transformation pill!

"This is really an unexpected harvest!"

Lin Ming thought to himself. In truth, he didn't care about the rank of the human True Divinity cultivation methods at all.

As long as he had a True Divinity cultivation method, no matter high or low its grade was, it could stabilize the hearts of the human Empyreans and make it so that they didn't defect to the saints.

This was enough.

To expect any human Empyreans to practice this True Divinity cultivation method and complete their breakthroughs in time to help in the great calamity was simply unrealistic. This was because their chances of doing so were pitifully low to begin with, and a breakthrough would require millions of years anyway.

In the great calamity, this would be of no help at all.

Lin Ming withdrew his sense and flippantly said, “With all that random stuff added together, it’s just barely enough.”

These few words had the Good Fortune Saint Son feeling wretched enough to vomit blood.

He felt very aggrieved. He had taken out all sorts of treasures, including even the Nine Orifices Exquisite Pill that he couldn’t bear to eat, and yet it was being described as ‘random stuff’ by Lin Ming.

However, in all fairness, it really wasn’t much to look at when compared to Lin Ming’s black spear that came from nowhere.

Then, Lin Ming turned to Empyrean Demondawn.

His words were no longer polite, because he knew that being polite had no use now. “Demondawn, the Good Fortune Saint Son has already agreed, now it’s you. If I win, I will take away Xian’er!”

Just this gambling fight with the Good Fortune Saint Son wasn’t enough. If Empyrean Demondawn didn’t agree, it was meaningless.

Empyrean Demondawn sneered. “You think you can win? What a joke!”

“Since you already think I cannot win, what’s the problem of making a promise to me?”

Empyrean Demondawn disdainfully said, “I don’t believe you have any chance of winning but I also don’t like being played by others, especially a junior like you. Why should I bother with you!?”

“Is that so…” Lin Ming traced his dantian and a black light projected out from his inner world, forming an image projection in the space near him.

In this projection there was actually a titanic black egg shown. The surface of this egg was covered with patterns, looking mystical and ancient.

Through the eggshell, if one looked extremely carefully, they could see a strong and healthy life within, one that constantly exuded waves of life aura like crashing waves!

“This is…” Empyrean Demondawn was panic-stricken. “Dragon egg! And it is a royal dragon egg!”

The monster race possessed God Beasts, but they were extremely rare. As for royal God Beasts, there were even less of them!

Empyrean Demondawn never imagined that Lin Ming would put out a royal dragon egg.

Moreover, what was rare was that this dragon egg had developed extremely well in Lin Ming’s inner world. Once it hatched it would soar into the heavens, becoming a powerful young dragon!

“This brat, where did he get so many treasures!”

First it was a peak True Divinity spirit treasure and then afterwards a dragon egg. These were things that even Empyrean Demondawn didn’t possess!

Many of the extraordinary characters present were stunned. Perhaps even just a part of Lin Ming’s treasures was worth far more than their total assets combined!

“If I lose, then this dragon egg is yours!”

Lin Ming grit his teeth as he spoke. This was the life legacy left behind by Senior Black Dragon; he absolutely could not lose!

“I can’t believe you are willing to!”

Empyrean Demondawn’s eye burned brightly. He could actually sense that this dragon egg had already become one with Lin Ming and they shared both flesh and blood. Once it hatched from the egg, it would be greatly helpful to Lin Ming’s strength. If he were to leave this egg at the monster and demon races, that would be a tremendous loss to him.

He was staking everything he had on this single gamble – could he really defeat the Good Fortune Saint Son?

Just as Empyrean Demondawn thought of this, he immediately felt it was impossible.

“Good! If you can win then I will let you take away Xian’er. But at the same time, I will also announce that me and Xian’er have cut off all ties as a grandparent and grandchild!”

Empyrean Demondawn’s words were watertight. Drawing back, even if Lin Ming won and Xiao Moxian married him, there wasn’t any loss.

In that sort of situation, Lin Ming would already have been heaven-defying to the extreme!

This sort of heaven-defying talent would be enough to make up for his disadvantage in age!

Even if he couldn’t play much of a role in the great calamity, it wouldn’t be easy for the saints to kill him either!

Once the great calamity arrived, Lin Ming could quietly endure and cultivate. Then, one day, he could rely on his strength to reverse the heavens!

At that time, if Xiao Moxian were to follow Lin Ming, Empyrean Demondawn could feel relieved about her.

And even if Empyrean Demondawn had chosen wrongly in this great calamity and wasn’t able to bear the consequences of his failure, even if he were killed, Xiao Moxian could still rebuild the demon race and allow them to continue onwards.

As for him cutting off his relations with her, that was to draw a clear boundary between them, so there were more escape routes for her.

If he really did choose wrongly, then cutting off relations could help protect Xiao Moxian.

Xiao Moxian shivered, remaining silent.

Lin Ming said, “Not only will I take away Xian’er, but if I win I want to take something from you – the Annihilation Fire Elemental.”

When Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had killed the Undying Polar Ice, they had obtained the Undying Inferno’s soul fire afterwards.

Lin Ming had given the soul fire to Xiao Moxian, but she had initially refused. This was because Lin Ming would soon attempt a breakthrough into the third Dao Palace of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace – the Extreme Polar Dao Palace. At that time, he would need to choose two types of source strengths to serve as the catalyst. To Lin Ming, the two source strengths most appropriate were Fire Elementals and Thunder Sources.

Xiao Moxian wanted to give the Undying Inferno’s soul fire to Lin Ming to help him break through the Extreme Polar Dao Palace, but he refused.

One reason was because it would just be a waste of such a treasure. Moreover, it would be incomparably difficult for him to find a Thunder Source that was of similar quality to the Undying Inferno’s soul fire to pair with it.

Later, Xiao Moxian told Lin Ming that in Demondawn Heavenly Palace, there was an Annihilation Fire Elemental that had been saved for her. It could be used to help Lin Ming break into the Extreme Polar Dao Palace.

Now, Lin Ming natural took advantage of this moment to bring it up.

Empyrean Demondawn slightly frowned but didn’t refuse. The Annihilation Fire Elemental was originally to be given to Xiao Moxian. Although he had always been harsh and demanding of her, everything he did was for the demon race and to guarantee the foundation of their people. He also hoped that she would live a long and good life.

“Fine!” Empyrean Demondawn agreed.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and turned toward the Good Fortune Saint Son. With this, everything else had been settled.

All that was left over was…

To fight!

Chapter 1768 – Scorching Blood Sun

Chapter 1768 – Scorching Blood Sun

…

…

…

In this battle with the Good Fortune Saint Son, Lin Ming had bet nearly everything he had!

To win, was to forge a future for humanity and allow them a chance to breathe and gather themselves!

To lose, was to lose the Black Dragon Spear, to lose the black dragon egg, and to lose Xiao Moxian. This was a price that Lin Ming absolutely could not withstand!

As for how strong the Good Fortune Saint Son truly was, Lin Ming had no absolutely no idea.

If he were to fight the Good Fortune Saint Son at the end of the full 100 years, then he would have absolute confidence in victory. But now, because of what happened with Xiao Moxian, he had no choice but to fight here and now.

In this battle, Lin Ming didn't know how many cards the Good Fortune Saint Son would have in his hands, nor did he know what kind of cultivation method the Good Fortune Divine Art was.

Thus, for this battle, Lin Ming had already thrown everything he had on the table and cut off all paths of retreat. He was determined to fight until the end!

On the other side, the Good Fortune Saint Son similarly couldn't understand Lin Ming.

As for the depths of Lin Ming's strength, not even Xiao Moxian was completely clear.

"I really have no idea where your courage comes from…"

The Good Fortune Saint Son stared at Lin Ming's Black dragon Spear. Towards that spear, he felt nothing but incomparable jealousy. As long as he defeated Lin Ming, that spear was his!

He couldn't take a liking to something like an Empyrean spirit treasure, but as for a peak top level True Divinity spirit treasure, let alone possessing one, he had only ever seen two in his entire life.

"If you want to deliver me your treasures, then come!"

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke, his body flashed and he flew out from the main hall.

Lin Ming followed close behind.

In the blink of an eye, the two left the divine palace and flew a hundred miles away, floating high above the skies of the primal jungle island beneath them.

All around them great mountains towered and massive trees loomed!

This world was located within the monster race's Black Pagoda. It was an ancient ruin opened up by an ancient True Divinity level powerhouse and the space here was as stable as a boundless true universe. No matter how Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son fought here, it would be impossible for them to cause this world to collapse.

Behind Lin Ming, the other Empyreans and young elites flew out in abundance, including even the Monster Emperor and Empyrean Demondawn.

All of them were watching this battle.

And outside of the divine palace, all of the young disciples that were waiting, as well the massive number of monster race disciples and followers, were all shocked as they looked up and saw Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son fly high up in the air, confronting each other, and then the droves of high level figures that flew after them.

What was going on here? Why did it seem that Lin Ming was going to fight the Good Fortune Saint Son?

Before they could think further, there was a loud ring as the Good Fortune Saint Son drew out a heavy sword from his spatial ring. This heavy sword was pitch black and didn't give off any light at all. It was as long as a person and looked incredibly heavy.

The heavy sword's blade had no edge, but with a weapon of this level, whether there was an edge on the blade no longer mattered.

Seeing this heavy sword appear, the human Empyreans present felt their hearts shake. "This is..."

The aura emitting from the Good Fortune Saint Son's sword was clearly far inferior to Lin Ming's Black Dragon Spear. But, it was far, far mightier than any ordinary Empyrean spirit treasure!

"That is a True Divinity spirit treasure, but amongst the lowest level..."

Empyrean Divine Dream faintly whispered. Her words caused everyone's hearts to skip a beat. They felt that Lin Ming was inferior to the Good Fortune Saint Son, but by relying on the Black Dragon Spear, he should be able to make up for a part of the difference. Yet now, the Good Fortune Saint Son had also taken out a True Divinity spirit treasure!

The Good Fortune Saint Son diabolically grinned. "I am skilled in all weapons. Swords, sabers, spears, anything I touch I can wield! Your spear shall be taken by me!"

Although he was arrogant and insolent, he wouldn't lower his guard. He didn't believe that Lin Ming would be so stupid and freely deliver such treasures into his hand. But no matter what cards Lin Ming had up his sleeve, he had absolute confidence he would win!

And at this time, Lin Ming did something incredibly mind-boggling.

They saw Lin Ming put away the Black Dragon Spear and take out the Phoenix Blood Spear once more. He wanted to use the Phoenix Blood Spear to fight the Good Fortune Saint Son!

The eyes of all martial artists present turned as wide as full moons.

What was Lin Ming doing? Things had already come this far and he still wanted to hold back? Was he insane?

The Phoenix Blood Spear was only an ordinary spirit artifact. It could just barely manage to face an Empyrean spirit treasure, much less a True Divinity spirit treasure. It might even be instantly split in half by the Good Fortune Saint Son's sword!

"Lin Ming! You brat, what are you doing!"

Empyrean Vast Universe was already breathless with anxiousness.

But Lin Ming remained unperturbed. He still used the Phoenix Blood Spear to face the Good Fortune Saint Son.

The Black Dragon Spear was almost 20 billion jins heavy. In order for Lin Ming to use it, he would have to consume his strength at an alarming rate. In the past, when killing the Undying Polar Ice, Lin Ming using the Black Dragon Spear in a single all-out attack had exhausted nearly half his strength.

After that, Lin Ming entered the final trial's sixth level and obtained the Asura Sutra's second volume. With several years of training, his comprehension and skill in the Asura Laws increased by leaps and bounds. Finally, he could use the Asura Laws to control the

Black Dragon Spear to barely utilize a few percent of its power. However, this had to be done when a battle reached its most white-hot stage.

Otherwise, he would rapidly exhaust his strength and no longer be able to defeat the Good Fortune Saint Son. At that time, Lin Ming would only be able to wait to be struck down.

In a way, it was similar to a long distance contest. If he sprinted at the start it would be impossible to keep running near the end. Only at the final stretch where he ran with everything he had would he be able to fight for victory.

At this time, the Good Fortune Saint Son came to a conclusion as to why Lin Ming put away the Black Dragon Spear. He laughed and said, “I understand now. It’s true that you have a peak True Divinity spirit treasure, but you simply aren’t able to use it! Even for the heavy sword in my hands, I was only able to move less than a tenth of its power after breaking through to the fifth level of the Good Fortune Divine Art. And, this edgeless heavy sword is amongst the worst of True Divinity spirit treasures, whereas your Black Dragon Spear is a peak True Divinity spirit treasure. It’s unbelievable how much strength it must take to wield, so how could the likes of you possibly use it??”

The Good Fortune Saint Son’s words were like a bucket of cold water that was poured over Empyrean Vast Universe’s entire body, making him feel chilled to the bone!

All of the human Empyreans present felt their hearts drop. They had been hoping for the Black Dragon Spear to show some miraculous effect in battle, but it seemed that this spear could not be used because Lin Ming wasn’t able to control it!

Then what was the point of fighting!?

Did Lin Ming plan on using the Phoenix Blood Spear to contend with the Good Fortune Saint Son’s True Divinity spirit treasure? Wasn’t this just a hopeless struggle?

The Good Fortune Saint Son became even more arrogant, more brazen. “I was also afraid of that spear because I thought it might contain the battle spirit of some True Divinity, but now it seems that you cannot even use it. Just how do you plan on fighting with me? Just sit down and die!”

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke his body shot forwards. The astral essence around him shot out like endless golden divine swords, making him seem like a scorching blood sun, making it impossible for others to look at him.

His sword cut down. As his long hair scattered, a wild and savage light burst out from his eyes.

From the heavy sword, a several hundred thousand foot long black light split apart the blue skies. The towering mountains and massive trees were swept up by this sword light. For a time, stones crashed to the ground and pieces of shattered wood swirled in the air.

This sword light left all the young elites holding their breath. Even though they were dozens of miles away, they felt their mortal bodies nearly be crushed by the terrifying momentum alone.

It was hard to imagine that this was a battle between juniors. Even those lords who had ruled for several hundred thousands of years were humbled in the face of such power!

Facing this sword, Lin Ming’s complexion was earnest and dignified. In a situation where he couldn’t use the Black Dragon Spear, his weapon became his weak point. It would be hard to directly confront this attack!

He drew back and opened the Heretical God Force. The power of thunder and fire erupted, wrapping around his body. A boundless and ancient strength rose up, completely surrounding Lin Ming!

This was Lin Ming’s grandmist force field, an offensive and defensive ability.

Ca!

As the black sword light broke into the barrier of the grandmist force field it was rapidly weakened by the grandmist space. Then, Lin Ming thrust out the Phoenix Blood Spear again and again. With the support of his immense bodily strength, the weakened sword light was pierced through by Lin Ming's spear.

A crazy and furious energy erupted outwards. Lin Ming was forced back 100 miles and wherever he went, mountains and rivers would disintegrate and the earth would be hollowed out. It was unknown how many towering ancient trees were twisted to pieces by the energy and evaporated into ash!

The Good Fortune Saint Son's black light seemed to contain a dark demonic strength to it. Any object that was swept within would be completely annihilated, leaving almost nothing behind. As the young elites saw the millions upon millions of ancient trees be destroyed in the maelstrom, all of them felt streams of cold sweat dripping down their back.

If they were sucked into that black sword light, even just the tiniest bit, perhaps they would turn to nothing but ashes.

At this time, there was a loud explosive sound as the black sword light completely dissipated.

Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear, standing proud and tall in the wild fluctuations of energy.

"He withstood it, he withstood the Good Fortune Saint Son's first sword strike. However, that wasn't a true frontal confrontation but rather avoiding the sharpness and then using his own force field to diminish the sword light. As for what Lin Ming finished off with his weapon, that was in truth just a tiny part of it."

An Empyrean commented. In just one move, the battlefield that Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son had been fighting on was razed. Where Lin Ming had withdrawn by a hundred miles, a massive chasm formed with everything within it annihilated.

This was the horrifying scar that the Good Fortune Saint Son's sword light left upon the land.

All of the human Empyreans present were nervous. Although Lin Ming didn't suffer a loss in that strike, he wasn't able to directly confront the Good Fortune Saint Son. This made all the human Empyreans feel doubt in their hearts.

"Hey, all you can do is run away?"

The Good Fortune Saint Son held his black heavy sword in his hand, slowly flying in the air like a peerless war god. The bright light of the sun shined in his hair, casting a blinding golden light.

"You cannot withstand my attack directly… so you want to use skirmish tactics to fight me. If you don't want to face me then should I chase you around like a mouse everywhere? Since I use a True Divinity spirit treasure I consume strength faster than you, and no matter how much strength I have I will suffer a loss. So, you want to use that tactic to slowly reduce my strength? A well thought out plan, but what a pity it is nothing but a dream! This time I'll make sure there's nowhere you can run!"

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke, wild astral winds rose up all around him. These strong astral winds blew into the void, constraining the power of space!

With a light crackling sound, the space surrounding Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son was locked up like a cage.

"Let's see how you'll run away this time!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son maliciously grinned, rushing forwards. And as he did, the space cage also tightened!

With Lin Ming's strength he could naturally break through this space cage and escape, but in the brief moment it took him to do so he would be overtaken by the Good Fortune Saint Son.

“Die! I will split you and your spear in half together!”

As the Good Fortune Saint Son hurtled forwards, his black sword slashed through space!

Chapter 1769 – Good Fortune Divine Art

Chapter 1769 – Good Fortune Divine Art

…

…

…

Sword potential soared through the heavens as dark winds swallowed the world. The boundless black sword light seemed as if it would destroy the very foundation of this independent space, severing the pillars of the world!

Facing this titanic sword strike, everyone felt as if the apocalypse had come and the world would collapse and be annihilated.

Lin Ming grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear. The 10 foot long spear shaft gently shivered in this catastrophic sword light!

The Phoenix Blood Spear was only a spirit artifact. For it to face a True Divinity spirit treasure, even one that could display less than a tenth of its true power, was far too difficult.

Everyone looked at Lin Ming and held their breath. Without the Black Dragon Spear, how would he block the Good Fortune Saint Son?

But if he couldn't use the Black Dragon Spear as he pleased, then facing this terrifying sword light that filled the heavens and earth, the Phoenix Blood Spear might be cut in half!

Wu – wu – wu – !

The Phoenix Blood Spear violently trembled, emitting keening cries as it was unable to withstand the burden!

Lin Ming's complexion changed. His greatest weakness right now was his weapon, and at the start he really was planning on using guerilla tactics to slowly whittle down the Good Fortune Saint Son's strength.

However, the Good Fortune Saint Son didn't give him this chance. This move not only blocked out space, but it also forced him to directly meet his enemy!

Up until now, the Good Fortune Saint Son was the strongest opponent Lin Ming had ever faced!

Hum –

The vibrations traversing the Phoenix Blood Spear became increasingly intense. Seeing it reach its limits, Lin Ming turned his right hand and the Phoenix Blood Spear disappeared into his spatial ring. In the next moment, another spear appeared in Lin Ming's hand. This spear was gold all over and blazed with a brilliant golden light!

This spear was named the Purple Gold Spear and was the Empyrean spirit treasure spear Duke Fullmoon used a sky high price of 2 billion contribution points to win at the Divine Rune City Auction. At that time, it had been Lin Ming's intention to mess with Duke Fullmoon and cause him to lose more wealth.

Afterwards, Duke Fullmoon had been killed by Lin Ming and this spear finally fell into Lin Ming's hands.

In terms of quality, this Purple Gold Spear was far inferior to the Good Fortune Saint Son's black divine sword. However, it was far harder than the Phoenix Blood Spear. At the very least it wouldn't break in half within the turbulent sword light.

Ca!

The Purple Gold Spear violently collided with the black sword light. Massive chunks of golden light were swallowed up by the black sword light.

Lin Ming was forced back again and again. As for the Good Fortune Saint Son, he pushed forwards with unstoppable force, his every sword strike aiming for Lin Ming's neck.

Pa!

Lin Ming struck the barriers of the space cage!

The Good Fortune Saint Son hurtled forwards. The astral essence around his body blazed like a scorching sun. With his black hair wildly flying about, he was like a peerless war god.

His arms were as sharp as swords and energy erupted from his body like waves in a stormy sea. His blood vitality billowed upwards, shooting straight into the starry skies!

"He's been suppressed!"

Seeing this scene, the human Empyreans nearly felt their hearts leap out of their chests. The Good Fortune Saint Son was just far too strong and the blood vitality and physical strength he possessed was nearly that of a grown God Beast. It was simply impossible to match him!

On the other hand, although Lin Ming had taken out an Empyrean spirit treasure, the grade of this spear wasn't even too high amongst Empyrean spirit treasures. It was still far too difficult for him to use this spear to block the Good Fortune Saint Son.

Now, Lin Ming had been forced back to the edges of the space barrier. He could only forcefully withstand the Good Fortune Saint Son's strike!

"Even if you could use a True Divinity spirit treasure you would be far from my match, much less the current you that cannot use a True Divinity spirit treasure. Now, watch as I take your head!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son cruelly chuckled. He could finally strike Lin Ming with everything he had. After this strike, all of Lin Ming's meridians would be torn to pieces and his organs would be reduced to a puddle of goo!

Facing the Good Fortune Saint Son's sword, Lin Ming's pupils shrank. At this time, a blue divine light shot out from deep within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, pouring into the shaft of the Purple Gold Spear.

This was Lin Ming's large success blue soul battle spirit!

By fusing his weapon with his battle spirit, he could just manage to bridge the difference in weapon grades!

In that instant, Lin Ming opened the Heretical God Force to the limit. Behind him, the phantom of an ancient and massive tree appeared. The bough towered into the skies, blocking out the clouds and shrouding the sun.

Even when that annihilating black light shined upon the crown of this ancient tree, it found it difficult to penetrate through.

All of the energy condensed, forming a giant vortex in front of Lin Ming. Lin Ming thrust out his spear, sweeping through the void.

Eternal Darkness!

Bang!

A terrifying eruption exploded between Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son. A tide of energy cracked open a massive fissure in the ground, and even the sea that was hundreds of miles away began to violently rage and storm as tsunamis started to form.

Lin Ming grasped the Purple Gold Spear, solidly clashing with the Good Fortune Saint Son!

Spear to sword, it was a simple but brutal collision!

Lin Ming's muscles began to bulge. His meridians and blood vessels expanded, and with a loud cracking sound, the space barrier behind him collapsed from the pressure!

“What?”

The Good Fortune Saint Son never thought that Lin Ming would manage to block his direct strike.

Although the Good Fortune Saint Son hadn’t used his complete strength nor had he used the Good Fortune Divine Art, in his opinion, the strength he used now should still easily be able to defeat Lin Ming.

Especially since Lin Ming’s weapon was far inferior to his own.

“The Good Fortune Saint Son’s sword light was terrifying but it was still blocked by Lin Ming. And Lin Ming has only a half-step Holy Lord cultivation…”

A hundred miles away where members of the monster race had gathered, the young elites were all quietly watching this battle. Although they had heard that Lin Ming possessed a talent that defied the will of the heavens, today was the first time they witnessed it with their own eyes.

“Amongst the juniors, no one can compare to Lin Ming’s heroic daring. If the young elites of my race were compared to him, it would be no different than fireflies to a bonfire. It's no wonder he had the courage to challenge the Good Fortune Saint Son.”

To fight the middle Holy Lord Good Fortune Saint Son with a mere half-step Holy Lord cultivation, and also with a weaker weapon, everyone thought that Lin Ming would be quickly defeated. But in two continuous moves, Lin Ming still hadn’t fallen.

Just this alone was more than enough to be proud of!

“Your Highness Wumo, what are you doing? You must hurry and defeat this Lin Ming. In this battle you have the advantage of cultivation so you must thoroughly obtain victory. You must not only defeat him but also rout the confidence of the humans, otherwise it is the same as you having lost! Do you not see the expressions that these human Empyreans are making? Destroy their hope, make it so that they lose all courage to resist our people!”

At this time, a sound transmission from a saint Empyrean echoed in the Good Fortune Saint Son's ears.

The Good Fortune Saint Son took a deep breath. As the dignified Saint Son of the entre saint race and also with a middle Holy Lord cultivation, if he couldn't defeat a mere Lin Ming who wasn't even a Holy Lord yet and also drag out the battle for a long time, that simply couldn't be justified.

At this time, the Good Fortune Saint Son had fallen completely silent.

He turned his burning eyes towards Lin Ming. "I will acknowledge that I have underestimated you. Your strength has surpassed my imagination, but even so, that will not change the outcome. You will still be miserably beaten by me."

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke, the astral essence surrounding him turned pure gold, as if there was a golden sun burning within his body.

As the color of the Good Fortune Saint Son's astral essence changed, his aura also experienced an earth-shaking transformation.

"This is..."

Many of the human masters present had keen senses. They realized that the Good Fortune Saint Son was undergoing some type of transformation at this moment, and his strength was rapidly ascending.

"This is the Good Fortune Divine Art! Several years ago when the Good Fortune Saint Son defeated a human Great World King, he used this golden astral essence!"

Amongst the human Empyreans, there were some that had witnessed the battle between the Good Fortune Saint Son and the human Great World King. Through that battle, they had gained a profound impression of the Good Fortune Divine Art.

The ordinary Good Fortune Saint Son and the Good Fortune Saint Son who used the Good Fortune Divine Art were two completely different concepts. Moreover, the current Good Fortune Saint Son had even broken into the fifth level of the Good Fortune Divine Art!

“Lin Ming, be careful of him! This Good Fortune Divine Art is an upper or even peak True Divinity cultivation method!”

Empyrean Vast Universe’s sound transmission echoed in Lin Ming’s ears.

Because his experience was limited, he couldn’t clearly distinguish what grade of cultivation method this Good Fortune Divine Art was.

With Empyrean Vase Universe’s words, Lin Ming’s heart skipped a beat. A superior or even peak True Divinity cultivation method!

Lin Ming didn’t know what level True Divinity the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was, but what was without doubt was that through all the years of the saints, they should have obtained many rare and precious inheritances from the Primeval Realm Ruins.

Moreover, the saints possessed an unfathomably deep background. Their martial arts civilization and inheritances had never been cut off like humanity’s had, thus humans were incompare with them.

In this sort of situation, even if the Good Fortune Saint Son wasn’t a superior True Divinity, it wouldn’t be a surprise if he possessed a superior or peak True Divinity cultivation method.

If so, then Empyrean Divine Seal’s Divine Seal Art would most likely be inferior to the Good Fortune Saint Son’s Good Fortune Divine Art!

As Lin Ming thought of this, his complexion became increasingly grim.

And at this time, all of the strength of the world seemed to be summoned by an invisible call. All of it started gathering towards the Good Fortune Saint Son.

This strength consisted of not just heaven and earth origin energy, but all the strengths of the world.

Light, heat, microscopic ions in the air, the power of life, the power of the rocks, the power of streams, all of it began to gather towards the Good Fortune Saint Son!

With his own eyes, Lin Ming could see changes occurring hundreds of miles away.

Grass and plants began to wither and fall. Those towering old trees that reached the skies rapidly atrophied, becoming nothing but dead wood.

The rivers running through the forests evaporated, revealed dried up riverbeds.

This sort of feeling was as if the entire river had been sucked dry of its essence energy and vitality, and had undergone something similar to death. And all of the dissipated essence energy and vitality was completely absorbed by the Good Fortune Saint Son.

As the forest was completely destroyed, birds began to scatter. The land began to shake as all the creatures were filled with a manic fear. Beasts fled from the forest, as if they had encountered the most terrifying existence.

They crazily struggled in the withering forests, but just a moment later, all of these creatures emitted agonizing screams and their bodies burst open and they turned into masses of blood fog.

All of this blood fog also began gathering towards the Good Fortune Saint Son!

It was like the Good Fortune Saint Son was wresting away all the strength of the world, using it to strengthen himself!

This strength could no longer be called heaven and earth origin energy, but the power of good fortune.

The Good Fortune Divine Art was a technique that seized the good fortune of the world!

The so-called good fortune was that of nature. In a universe, besides the mortals that lived there, it was the sum of everything!

When a person seized the power of good fortune then the world would lose its spiritual energy and vitality, slowly moving it towards entropy, towards death and decay.

This was a truly cruel and overbearingly tyrannical cultivation method!

If a True Divinity were to use this ability, they could suck dry a great world!

Chapter 1770 – Seizing the Power of Good Fortune

Chapter 1770 – Seizing the Power of Good Fortune

…

…

…

“Good Fortune Divine Art! This is the Good Fortune Divine Art!”

As the human Empyreans present as well as the young elites saw the Good Fortune Saint Son absorb the power of good fortune, all of them were shocked.

Only a few of these people had ever seen the Good Fortune Divine Art with their own eyes, and of those that had, none of them knew how many levels existed within it.

The Good Fortune Divine Art could be called the strongest cultivation method within the entire saint race!

In the legends, it was said that it was created by the ancestors of the saints and then supplemented through multiple generations of True Divinities, becoming ever more perfect. Now, the current Good Fortune Divine Art had long been the most core inheritance of the entire saint race!

It had to be known that the Heaven Lifting Black Pagoda the Good Fortune Saint Son was fighting in was also called a miraculous structure. Even so, the Good Fortune Divine Art could still absorb the strength from within it. This was just how overbearing the Laws of the Good Fortune Divine art were!

Once the Good Fortune Divine Art was used, it would annihilate all life vitality within a space. Wherever the Good Fortune Divine Art passed, all would be barren; not a single blade of grass would remain green!

The greater the strength of the one using it, the more terrifying the degree of annihilation. In the myths, it was said that in the most ancient times the first ancestors of the saint race had gone to war and that in the great worlds they visited, they would leave behind endless tracts of deserts filled with nothing but deathly silence. The destruction would continue for over a trillion miles and even after a billion years it still wouldn't be completely restored.

"The Good Fortune Saint Son has finally used the Good Fortune Divine Art!"

"What a terrifying Good Fortune Divine Art. Is there any junior that can actually be his opponent? When the Good Fortune Saint Son defeated a Great World King of my race, he still hadn't been this strong."

Empyrean Vast Universe said. His forehead was dripping with a cold sweat!

This was truly worthy of being called a peak True Divinity cultivation method. How could anyone fight it?

Even if Empyrean Vast Universe knew that Lin Ming had obtained Empyrean Divine Seal's inheritance atop the Divine Seal Altar, the Divine Seal Altar that Lin Ming climbed was in truth only a tiny fragment of the ancient Divine Seal Altar. The Divine Seal Art that Lin Ming cultivated was naturally extremely flawed.

Moreover, even if it was the complete Divine Seal Art, it still couldn't compare with the saint race's Good Fortune Divine Art that had been continuously perfected over billions of years!

And it just so happened that in this completely disadvantageous situation, the importance of the battle was far too great!

Disregarding the fact that Lin Ming had bet nearly everything he had, just Xiao Moxian alone was related to the monster and demon races' futures. If Lin Ming suffered a horrible defeat, the consequences would be inconceivable. Not to mention the monster and demon races and their alliance with the saints, Lin Ming alone would suffer a calamitous setback and his future development would be affected.

With this sort of loss, even if Lin Ming tried as hard as he could to obtain revenge, he still wouldn't be able to make up for it!

The human Empyreans all looked at Lin Ming.

At this moment, Lin Ming grasped his golden spear, flying arrogantly amidst the raging power of good fortune.

Strong winds rose from all directions and his clothes flapped about him. His long hair recklessly scattered upwards!

His figure was like a spear, straight and tall. But, people knew that on his strong shoulders he was carrying far too many burdens!

This battle concerned not just his reputation, wealth, and momentum, but it also concerned the fate of humanity within the upcoming great calamity and whether or not they would be able to catch a breath in this struggle!

If there was even a slight possibility that Lin Ming could win this battle, it would galvanize humanity's momentum, giving them more and more strength to push forwards. In the long night of the great calamity, this would be the spark to light the hope of humanity!

At this time, the sorrowful humans needed a win!

Many human martial artists and even Empyreans felt as if humanity was nothing but a pig on the butcher block!

"Lin Ming..."

Dozens of miles away from the battlefield, Empyrean Divine Dream took a deep breath and fell silent.

The weakening of humanity, what did Lin Ming owe them?

His weapon was an ordinary Empyrean spirit treasure and his cultivation methods were Empyrean Divine Dream's Divine Dream Law, Empyrean Primordius' Primordius martial intent, and also the severely incomplete Divine Seal Art.

Weapons and cultivation were among the two most important factors in one's comprehensive combat strength, and yet he couldn't compare with the Good Fortune Saint Son in either. As for the resources he consumed growing up, they were likely incomparable to what the Good Fortune Saint Son had taken.

The Good Fortune Saint Son even had the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

In this condition, Lin Ming had to win a nearly impossible victory. He was just a hundred year old junior. While he hadn't taken much of humanity's resources at all he had been forced to shoulder the life or death burden of his race!

Empyrean Divine Dream quietly stared at the battlefield, an unspeakable emotion in her heart.

And at this time, the Good Fortune Saint Son's aura had risen to the peak!

His hair had turned pure gold and divine light shone from his body, as if he were a burning sun!

"Hahaha! Lin Ming! After using the Good Fortune Divine Art, this is my strongest battle state! I want to see just how you can still fight with me!" The Good Fortune Saint Son arrogantly said. He poured his astral essence into the void and a cage of space tightened around Lin Ming, imprisoning him once more.

Wuu –

Atop the Good Fortune Saint Son's black sword, an incomparably mournful sound echoed out.

This sound seemed to be from the Great Dao, but for some reason as this sound fell into their ears they felt a heart-tearing, soul-aching pain. The martial artists with weaker cultivations even wished that they could rip open their chests and dig out their hearts. Their sadness and sorrow had reached the heights of agony.

"This is the lament of the world!"

A human Empyrean suddenly shouted.

"To have a world fall into decline, a dying world will emit a mourning lament! This sound is something that weaker martial artists will find difficult to withstand."

Just the aftermath of the Good Fortune Divine Art had such power. And once all of the power of good fortune was gathered together, the might and potential of this power would be unimaginable!

At this time, the Good Fortune Saint Son attacked. His aura seemed swollen with arrogance, unparalleled in the world. His black sword blazed with a brilliant golden light as it shot through the world like a rainbow!

When this strength reached the extreme, even a lower quality Empyrean spirit treasure would shatter!

"I have wrested away the good fortune of the world and can also deprive you of your good fortune! Now, I will sever your good fortune! I will shatter your destiny! I will kill you, exterminating your life and blood vitality! I want to see just how you'll use that garbage spear to block me!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son's killing intent erupted from his body, crashing down at Lin Ming along with the violent black sword light!

At this moment, everyone’s hearts paused.

Facing this dreadful strike that overwhelmed the skies, Lin Ming opened the Heretical God Force to the limit. The blood vitality within his body shot into the skies, as if a Divine Dragon was being borne unto the world. Behind Lin Ming, the phantom of a boundless True Dragon appeared!

At the same time, above him, nine great stars appeared. These stars seemed to possess the inherent infinite strength of the Great Dao. Endless strands of starlight fell down, like trillions upon trillions of faint silver ribbons that converged into Lin Ming’s body, all of them gathering into the Purple Temple Dao Palace and the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace!

Lin Ming had never opened the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace as he did today, to the limit of his limits! This even overdrew upon his life potential!

As the power of the two Dao Palaces erupted, two wheels appeared, one on his left hand and one on his right hand.

The wheel on his left hand was ash black, and seemed to contain millions of pained demonic souls, all of them incomparably fierce. This was undoubtedly the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel!

As for his right hand, a purple wheel appeared. This wheel was like an endless vortex that gathered the power of the world. It didn’t have the thick terrifying feeling of the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, but instead seemed to contain countless profound martial intents and Laws within.

This was not the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel but another Asura wheel described within the second volume of the Asura Sutra – the Myriad Essence Reincarnation Wheel.

The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel originated from the first volume of the Asura Sutra, the one that focused on cultivating the mortal body. But, what it absorbed were actually evil thoughts and souls.

As for the Myriad Essence Reincarnation Wheel, it originated from the soul forging Asura Sutra Volume Two. But what it absorbed was origin energy and the deepest meaning of the Laws.

If so, then the Asura Sutra Volume Three that cultivated origin energy would produce an Asura wheel that absorbed essence energy and blood vitality.

The three volumes of the Asura Sutra were not isolated from each other. Rather, they complemented each other.

Lin Ming was currently missing the third volume of the Asura Sutra so he was only able to summon two Asura wheels. Although it was far inferior to the strength of summoning three wheels that mutually promoted each other, it was still extraordinary enough.

As Lin Ming summoned these two wheels, the Laws of the Asura Heavenly Dao began to wildly surge out from his body!

This was the first time in the 33 Heavens that Lin Ming used the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws.

As the Asura Laws filled the endless heavens and earth, an indescribably ancient and boundless energy scattered outwards. Countless mystical Law runes fused into the void!

This strength was actually able to faintly replace the power of good fortune, replenishing the world and slowly relaxing the mourning lament of the world.

Those low level martial artists who felt a deep and inexplicable sorrow in their hearts suddenly felt much better.

“This is...”

The human Empyreans were astonished. They didn’t know what strength Lin Ming was using, but what they could tell was that the Laws he used had reached incomprehensible heights!

Before they could judge further, Lin Ming's two Asura wheels had already collided with the Good Fortune Saint Son's black sword light.

Bang!

Monstrous black tides rose in the air, piercing through the void. Beneath the terrifying storm of energy, the earth that had already become a desert began to wildly rip apart, as if all that remained in the world was that horrifying annihilating force that swallowed all of creation!

But even in this apocalyptic storm, the two wheels that Lin Ming summoned remained like incomparably firm eternal rocks, unshakeable!

No matter how the power of good fortune washed over him, Lin Ming's eyes remained icy cold, like an Asura reborn. The strength of the two Dao Palaces opened and a dreadful strength of 60-70 billion jins erupted within his body. He took these two wheels and recklessly cut forwards!

Ca!

The sword light formed by the power of good fortune was constantly torn apart. Lin Ming continued with unstoppable force. In the unending onslaught of pressure, his body released explosive crackling sounds. His muscles popped up and his meridians nearly broke in half!

However, his hands still grasped onto the two Asura wheels. He slaughtered his way forwards like a magnificent and peerless war god!

As Lin Ming's momentum reached the peak, there was a terrifying dragon roar that impacted into the deep blue skies, passing through the entire world. The power of good fortune that the Good Fortune Saint Son gathered unto him had been forcefully cut off by Lin Ming.

In that moment, the sword light had shattered. The blood vitality within Lin Ming wildly tumbled and his arms were stained with blood.

To overdraw his strength to battle, this naturally consumed a tremendous amount of energy!

But, the Good Fortune Saint Son had also used up a similar amount of energy!

Lin Ming suddenly looked up, staring at the Good Fortune Saint Son, his eyes like two bolts of lightning piercing through the night sky.

“This is the Good Fortune Divine Art? What a wonderful method of seizing the power of good fortune! If you have anything better, then it's time to show me what you’ve got!”

Although Lin Ming’s voice seemed exhausted, it actually carried with it an indescribable boldness and arrogance. For a time, all the martial artists present, whether they were Empyreans or young elites, fell silent…

Chapter 1771 – Golden Sandstorm

Chapter 1771 – Golden Sandstorm

…

…

…

Strong winds howled. Yellow sands rolled up as the entire sky was filled with chaotic energies.

These energies contained Lin Ming's Asura Law as well as the Good Fortune Saint Son's Good Fortune Divine Art.

And beneath the two, the originally endlessly beautiful mountain ranges and lush green forests had been turned into a grim desert. Littering this desert were massive craters and a terrifying abyss that had been formed by the Good Fortune Saint Son's last sword strike. This abyss continued for over a thousand miles, extending past the horizon!

Rumble rumble rumble!

With a loud sound the ground began to shake. From the end of the abyss, a raging tsunami came flooding in.

This was because the abyss had split through the entire island, crossing into the sea, bringing back a turbulent tide.

The endless sea water flushed into the infinite grains of yellow sands, filling up the massive craters.

Seeing this scene, all of the martial artists present were left speechless.

The Good Fortune Saint Son's Good Fortune Divine Art was indeed horrendously terrifying, but even so it had still been blocked by Lin Ming!

That was a peak True Divinity level cultivation method – how had Lin Ming been able to block it?

The young elites of the monster and demon races were completely stunned. As for the young human elites, after a moment of silence, all of the blood in their hearts seemed to ignite as if they had been struck by some tremendous force!

This was proof that the young elites of humanity could also fiercely contend with the saint race's Saint Son. In a situation where the cultivation method and weapon was inferior, they were still evenly matched in battle!

But unlike the easily excited juniors, the human Empyreans glanced at each other, an extreme look of disbelief flooding their eyes.

They had extraordinary eyesight and could more rationally analyze the battle. Lin Ming's cultivation was less than that of the Good Fortune Saint Son's, and even in terms of foundation, the Good Fortune Saint Son was extremely solid.

With the difference in their weapons added along, according to any sensible logic, Lin Ming should never have been able to directly face the Good Fortune Divine Art.

But what had actually happened had defied all expectations!

Moreover… Lin Ming hadn't used the Divine Seal Art. This also meant that the two strange wheels in Lin Ming's hands were likely an even more mystical and profound cultivation method than the Divine Seal Art was.

"This sort of cultivation method seems to be its own independent set of Laws. Is this a lucky chance that Lin Ming stumbled upon in the Asura Road?"

Empyrean Vast Universe mumbled, still shocked. In the growth of a truly outstanding youth, oftentimes no matter where they went they would burst out with a glorious light. The Asura Road was no exception.

And in Empyrean Vast Universe's mind, even if Lin Ming's cultivation method was slightly better than the Good Fortune Divine Art, it would still be difficult for him to fight with the Good Fortune Saint Son.

"Lin Ming... has been injured. The meridians in his arms have broken in many places, and the move he used just now seems to have affected his life source..."

A chilling voice sounded out. The one speaking was Empyrean Divine Dream. In her mind, she recalled the vast starlight that had appeared above Lin Ming just then.

This sort of starlight gave Empyrean Divine Dream an incomparably strange feeling.

As if it was also its own independent Laws.

If so, then what Lin Ming did just then was the same as using two completely independent sets of Laws.

"That starlight..."

As she recalled what happened, Empyrean Divine Dream seemed to faintly recall something. Suddenly, she sharply breathed in and slowly said, "Lin Ming, it seems that he... broke into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace! Nine stars appeared and two gathered unto his body, that perhaps means he has already opened two Dao Palaces..."

A light voice spread into the ears of all human Empyreans present. The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had long been lost to time. Empyrean Divine Dream had never seen it herself; this was only her guess.

For a time, all the human Empyreans were shocked silent.

The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

How was this possible!?

That was a road of cultivation that had been sealed away by the Heavenly Dao Laws. After the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago, no one had been able to cultivate the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

There was said to be a single exception and that was Empyrean Primordius. However, he had drawn support from the heaven-defying divine tool that was the Grandmist Spirit Bead in order to shatter past the limits and open the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

"Could Lin Ming have obtained the Grandmist Spirit Bead!?"

Some powerhouse of humanity blurted out. But as he spoke out these words, he discovered that the several human Empyreans in front of him had turned their heads and were giving him strange looks.

This human powerhouse's voice caught in his throat and he reddened with embarrassment. He secretly knocked himself on the head for his stupidity. The Grandmist Spirit Bead was in the Good Fortune Saint Son's hands!

If Lin Ming had really obtained the Grandmist Spirit Bead, then could the Good Fortune Saint Son and Good Fortune Saint Sovereign both be idiots, bringing along some fake item?

In other words, in a situation where Lin Ming didn't possess the Grandmist Spirit Bead, he had forcefully relied upon his own heaven-defying strength to break past the shackles of the Heavenly Dao. This was far too terrifying an action!

If Lin Ming really did break through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, then it could be explained how Lin Ming was able to receive the Good Fortune Saint Son's Good Fortune Divine Art. This was because after opening two Dao Palaces, although Lin Ming's cultivation resembled that of a half-step Holy Lord to outsiders, the truth was that once his body transformation cultivation was added on he actually surpassed the boundary of a half-step Holy Lord!

Empyrean Divine Dream's words were confirmed in the next moment.

The Good Fortune Saint Son stared brilliantly at Lin Ming, his gaze full of disbelief. "The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace… you actually…"

The Good Fortune Saint Son had once looked through records of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace within the ancient texts of the saint race. After all, this was also another body transformation route of the Great Dao. Even if it wasn't suitable for the saints to cultivate, the saints had still saved up far too many ancient texts, and this included knowledge on the Great Dao of 11 body transformation systems of the 33 Heavenly Daos.

Ironically, the records that the saints possessed concerning human cultivation methods were far more detailed than the records possessed by the humans themselves. This was how the Good Fortune Saint Son was able to recognize the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

Lin Ming's breakthrough of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace caused the Good Fortune Saint Son to feel disbelief and fear at the same time. This Lin Ming was far too horrifying. By relying on his strength alone, he was able to forcibly shatter the shackles of the Heavenly Dao!

"So you had broken into the Nine Stars of the Heavenly Dao, no wonder you dared to make such a heavy bet in this battle with me. Your true cultivation has in actuality already surpassed that of a half-step Holy Lord! But even so, it is impossible for you to win!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son said, gritting his teeth.

He originally had been thinking of completely rolling over Lin Ming. Whether it was before he had used the Good Fortune Divine Art or after he had used the Good Fortune Divine Art, he had poured all of his terrifying strength into each strike in order to immediately settle the outcome of the battle, so he could prove just how great the disparity was between him and Lin Ming.

But afterwards, the Good Fortune Saint Son discovered just how tenacious Lin Ming really was. Even though he had been suppressed again and again, he was like a tough weed in the wind, uncrushable!

To completely overwhelm Lin Ming was already far too difficult. He had to lengthen the fight, seeking flaws in Lin Ming's defenses and using up his strength!

"I can't hurry myself to victory. I've been pouring too much strength into each move, I must calm down first."

At this moment the Good Fortune Saint Son had already tossed away all thoughts of underestimating his opponent. He planned to use his attack speed and amazing strength to engage in an extended battle, using his rich combat experience to finally emerge victorious!

He was well aware that Lin Ming had also consumed a great deal of energy and even touched upon a wisp of his own life source. If Lin Ming wanted to receive his attacks, it wouldn't be easy for him at all!

Bang!

The power of good fortune began to gather within the Good Fortune Saint Son's hands once more.

The power of good fortune mixed with his astral essence, spreading into the surrounding space. For a time, the void around the black sword's blade began to shiver with mysterious Space Laws. And, these Space Laws caused the hearts of the martial artists present to tremble.

There was a saying that the sharpest object in the world was not swords or sabers but space itself.

The power of space could cut through all!

The Good Fortune Saint Son's heavy sword had no sharp edge to begin with. Although it was still extremely strong, it lacked razor sharpness. But now, the Good Fortune Saint Son took the Space Laws as the edge to make up for this. Moreover, the degree of sharpness far surpassed ordinary weapons!

Woosh!

The Good Fortune Saint Son's figure turned into a golden beam that shot forwards!

His speed was like a ray of light, so fast that it was hard to discern his presence.

The giant heavy sword was crazily swung about by the Good Fortune Saint Son. Wild astral essence and the power of good fortune stirred up a storm that swept through the world.

Endless yellow sands soared into the skies, forming an all annihilating sand rain in the air.

In that instant, the Good Fortune Saint Son slashed out dozens of times!

This sword strike speed wasn't too fast, but it couldn't be forgotten that what the Good Fortune Saint Son used was a True Divinity spirit treasure!

"You want to compare speed?"

Lin Ming's pupils shrank – speed had never been his weakness.

The power of the nine stars continued to pour into Lin Ming, causing his form to rapidly fluctuate. He grasped the golden long spear and reduced the range of the grandmist space to the surface of his skin in order to defend against the power of good fortune and also to resist the energy impact!

Ka ka ka ka ka!

The heavy sword fiercely collided with Lin Ming's golden spear! Each time, Lin Ming's arms would violently shake!

In that brutal and crazy sandstorm, after having the Good Fortune Saint Son's power of good fortune poured into it, it formed a tremendous pressure on Lin Ming's grandmist space.

"They've disappeared!"

"They're fighting it out in the sandstorm. Because they're too fast it's impossible to see them clearly, all I can see are blurry afterimages!"

Most of the people watching this battle were young elites. With their eyes, they could not follow the speed of Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son.

They could only hear the sounds of horrifying explosions from the sandstorm, like endless billowing thunderclaps, enough to make one's mind shake with fear!

In that intense collision, the amount of energy consumed in every breath of time was incomparably terrifying. Even an ordinary World King would soon be sucked dry of energy!

Although that crazily spinning golden sandstorm resembled a dream-like fantasy, the truth was that it was a sandstorm of hell. If someone with insufficient strength were to enter it they would be grinded down until even their bones were gone!

"Lin Ming…"

Outside the golden sandstorm, Xiao Moxian held her hands together, her ten fingers restlessly moving, her palms wet with sweat!

With her cultivation, she could clearly see what was happening to Lin Ming in that golden sandstorm!

Every time he fought with the Good Fortune Saint Son, he would withstand a tremendous pressure on his arms. Even blood would shoot out!

Seeing Lin Ming receive the barrage of intense strikes, Xiao Moxian's eyes turned red and tears flowed out.

Not too far away from Xiao Moxian, Empyrean Demondawn could see his granddaughter's reactions from the corner of his eyes. A strange and unspeakable feeling percolated in his heart.

If possible… he even hoped that Lin Ming could win.

But, could he do this?

From beginning until now, the Good Fortune Saint Son had occupied the winning side in this battle, continually suppressing Lin Ming. Even the fierce combat within the sandstorm was the Good Fortune Saint Son going on the offensive. Lin Ming was only defending!

And with the battle having reached such a heated state, even the defending side wouldn't have much strength left!

Chapter 1772 – The Might of the Spirit Bead

Chapter 1772 – The Might of the Spirit Bead

…

…

…

Although Lin Ming had consumed a great deal of energy, the Good Fortune Saint Son was the same!

In every collision, although Lin Ming's arms would be wetted with fresh blood and his meridians would break, he relied on his terrifying recovery ability to slowly restore the damage to his meridians.

This allowed Lin Ming to never be defeated. His tenacity exceeded the expectations of all present.

Woosh!

A heaven-shaking, earth-shattering sword strike cut through the endless sandstorm. This sword strike seemed to sunder the pillars that supported the world, and even the heavens seemed as if they would fall down!

The entire island was severed by this sword strike. An endless abyss formed, continuing for over 10,000 miles and stretching right into the sea!

The sea within the world of the Black Pagoda was countless hundreds of thousands of feet deep. Underneath the terrifying pressure, the wild sea tides gushed in, filling up the abyss.

Large tracts of land collapsed, turning into endless grains of sand that fell into the sea!

The Good Fortune Saint Son's sword strike had split apart all land for thousands of miles, the same as splitting a small planet in half!

The sandstorm began to calm down. But, the atmosphere entered into a state of unprecedented calm.

The Good Fortune Saint Son was flushed red and his breathing was rapid.

As for Lin Ming, even though his breath was gathered and steady, his entire body was still stained wet with blood.

The meridians in his arms were broken in innumerable places!

The golden spear in his hands was also covered with numerous dense sword marks!

These sword marks were shallow but it couldn't be forgotten that this golden spear itself was an Empyrean spirit treasure and was a weapon refined by an ancient Empyrean. Even so, it had been scarred with so many sword marks. From this one could see just how strong the Good Fortune Saint Son's attacks had been!

Although it seemed that the Good Fortune Saint Son had the upper hand, some people watching actually discovered that this wasn't as true as they thought.

"The strength of Lin Ming's mortal body isn't much worse than the Good Fortune Saint Son's..."

A human Empyrean said with shock.

Originally, people thought that because Lin Ming was a human martial artist and his cultivation was low, he wouldn't be able to last long against the continued onslaught of the Good Fortune Saint Son. But, the truth was that by relying on the horrifying toughness of his body, he had persisted the entire time!

In terms of enduring the continued consumption of strength, Lin Ming had taken the upper hand!

The Good Fortune Saint Son wielding a True Divinity spirit treasure from the start until now had caused him to expend a tremendous amount of strength. As for Lin Ming, he used an Empyrean spirit treasure and he focused on defending. Even if he had to take a small wound he would do so in order to conserve energy.

Over the course of this battle, Lin Ming would spend energy at a far slower pace than the Good Fortune Saint Son did!

Moreover, even though Lin Ming had opened the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and affected his life source, the human Empyreans discovered that although Lin Ming was slowly burning his life source, it didn’t diminish at all!

“It is the Gate of Life…”

Empyrean Divine Dream eerily said. Although humanity had lost records of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, they had still maintained inheritances about the Eight Inner Hidden Gates.

The Gate of Life was an extremely important gate within the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. It brought with it the ability to regenerate one’s life source and blood essence to a certain degree and built a solid foundation for Lin Ming to desperately release the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

“The tide of battle is slowly changing. If they continue to fight like this, Lin Ming will be on the winning side!”

Some human Empyreans came to this nearly unbelievable conclusion. This was a completely unexpected result.

The decisive battle between the Good Fortune Saint Son and Lin Ming was like a long distance competition held in the mortal world. Lin Ming followed behind the Good Fortune Saint Son, allowing him to be in the lead first.

The Good Fortune Saint Son was strong and Lin Ming was also strong. However, he only fell behind the Good Fortune Saint Son by a little.

But during this time, Lin Ming had been secretly conserving his strength, planning to surpass the Good Fortune Saint Son in the final moment!

To force the Good Fortune Saint Son into this sort of situation had surpassed the imaginations of all present.

“Your Highness Wumo, stop hesitating!”

At this time, the angry sound transmission of a saint Empyrean echoed in the Good Fortune Saint Son’s ears.

With the fight having continued until now, it had been more than enough for Lin Ming to greatly show off his glory. Even though their saint race’s Saint Son had a far higher cultivation than this human youth, he still hadn’t been able to end the battle. This meant that their saint race’s Saint Son was inferior to the young elites of humanity!

The Good Fortune Saint Son clenched his teeth. Suddenly, his aura completely condensed within his body. He looked at Lin Ming, his eyes blazing.

“You have done well! Your tactics, strength, everything you have has surpassed my imagination! I cannot help but acknowledge that you are the most terrifying opponent I have faced in my life. But even so, you will lose all the same!

“Originally, I didn’t want to use this move…”

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke, a dazzling light burst out from his chest. In the next moment, a startling scene occurred.

The Good Fortune Saint Son thrust his hand into his chest and pulled out a bloody bead!

This bead was dark and dense, emitting a thick black light. For a time, the skies were covered in chaos. All the martial artists present felt as if their hearts would be swallowed up by this chaos!

“Grandmist Spirit Bead!”

Some martial artists cried out in panic. Even Empyreans also felt fear and apprehension upon facing this Grandmist Spirit Bead!

The Good Fortune Saint Son had finally used the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

The Good Fortune Saint Son had his pride. As the dignified Saint Son and also possessing a middle Holy Lord realm cultivation, he should have been able to rely on his own strength to completely roll over this human martial artist that was much younger than he was.

However, he had failed again and again. The Good Fortune Saint Son had then given up on rolling over Lin Ming and decided to defeat him in a high intensity melee.

But, that plan also failed.

With that, the Good Fortune Saint Son had no choice but to bring out the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

After bringing out the Grandmist Spirit Bead, the Good Fortune Saint Son felt wretched in his heart. As the Saint Son, he couldn’t defeat this human martial artist that had a lower cultivation, and even had to rely on the strength of the Grandmist Spirit Bead to obtain victory in the end. This was completely unreasonable!

Even if he won, it would still be a great loss of face!

However, winning was always better than losing.

“Lin Ming…” On the side of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Mo Eversnow and Mo Brightmoon both tensed up. The Good Fortune Saint Son was finally willing to go all-out. Would Lin Ming be able to withstand the attack of the Grandmist Spirit Bead?

Xiao Moxian's forehead dripped with sweat. Lin Ming had already been injured many times, and although the wounds weren't heavy, they had accumulated over time. Lin Ming may have possessed a formidable body, but it still wouldn't be easy for him.

And now, the Good Fortune Saint Son had summoned the Grandmist Spirit Bead. The battle was reaching its climax!

Lin Ming quietly stared at the spinning black bead. He took a deep breath.

It had finally appeared!

He had been continually keeping his final cards in hand all in order to contend with the Good Fortune Saint Son's Grandmist Spirit Bead. If he were to use all his master moves before the Good Fortune Saint Son took out the Grandmist Spirit Bead then he would have exhausted all his strength. Then, when the Good Fortune Saint Son did summon the Grandmist Spirit Bead, he could only sit and die!

The reason Lin Ming had such concerns was that no matter what happened, he didn't dare to use the Magic Cube to struggle with the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

The reason that the Good Fortune Saint Son could freely and openly use the Grandmist Spirit Bead was because he had the entire saint race supporting him from behind.

But, if Lin Ming were to use the Magic Cube, the consequences would be disastrous.

Lin Ming possessed the Magic Cube. This was a secret that no one knew besides him, Xiao Moxian, and Mo Eversnow knew. It was a world creation class divine artifact. It was enough to arouse the greed of the saint race's True Divinities, and especially the soul race's True Divinities!

Just the Black Dragon Spear alone was not enough for a True Divinity level powerhouse to desperately struggle for it.

But, the appearance of the Magic Cube might even force the spiritas and saints to enter into a temporary ceasefire. Then they could join forces to attack humanity and steal away the Magic Cube!

If so, the result would be him and humanity perishing together.

Thus, even if Lin Ming lost to the Good Fortune Saint Son in this battle, he still couldn't bring out the Magic Cube.

If Lin Ming couldn't use the Magic Cube, he would have to retain all his strongest cards in order to battle the Good Fortune Saint Son's Grandmist Spirit Bead!

"So that is the Grandmist Spirit Bead! The Good Fortune Saint Son has finally laid down his arrogant heart. Lin Ming, he... is in danger..."

Most of the martial artists present had never seen the Grandmist Spirit Bead before. This was because nearly all who saw the Grandmist Spirit Bead with their own eyes had died!

Still, the name of this divine tool struck like a peal of thunder in their ears!

Most people didn't know of the existence of the Magic Cube or the Purple Card. To them, this Grandmist Spirit Bead was the number one divine tool to ever exist!

"What a terrifying aura. Even though I'm so far away and I'm not being targeted by the Grandmist Spirit Bead, I still feel my blood vitality tumbling in me, as if it's about to be sucked away by that bead!"

A human master said, panic-stricken. He had a half-step World King cultivation.

Even a half-step World King was still affected by the aura of the Grandmist Spirit Bead, feeling as if the flow of blood in their body would reverse.

Then, without a doubt, if the Good Fortune Saint Son were to attack this half-step World King with the Grandmist Spirit Bead, it would only take an instant for his body to collapse, turning into endless flesh and blood essence that was absorbed by the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

Not to mention one half-step World King, even if many half-step World Kings and even ordinary World Kings were gathered together, they would still be instantly slain by the Good Fortune Saint Son!

Such a result left one drowning in despair!

This was the might of a divine tool!

Chapter 1773 – The Eruption Within the Silence

Chapter 1773 – The Eruption Within the Silence

…

…

…

Strong winds howled. The giant island had already been sundered apart. Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son faced each other in the skies, and between them the black Grandmist Spirit Bead floated, shimmering with a divine light as if it were a black sun, making one unable to look at it.

“Lin Ming, if you cannot win, then admit defeat. The tide flows in but it will also flow out. Your talent surpasses that of the Good Fortune Saint Son and you will definitely catch up to him in the future. Do not try to put on some brave front!”

At this time, Empyrean Vast Universe’s sound transmission echoed in Lin Min Ming’s ears, filled with a nervous and worried tone. After the Good Fortune Saint Son took out the Grandmist Spirit Bead, a heaven-shaking reversal in the battle had occurred!

“I thank you for your concern Senior, but this junior knows what he is doing.”

Lin Ming rapidly replied. His mind was completely focused on the Good Fortune Saint Son, staring at him with unblinking eyes.

Lin Ming could feel the terrifying strength of the Grandmist Spirit Bead. As the one facing the Good Fortune Saint Son, he had to bear the full brunt of the Grandmist Spirit Bead’s vast pressure!

All of his blood vitality and essence energy seemed to be affected by the Grandmist Spirit Bead, restlessly moving within his body as if everything wanted to rush out!

Lin Ming grimaced. He could faintly feel that after summoning the Grandmist Spirit Bead, the Good Fortune Saint Son had experienced a qualitative change.

The Good Fortune Saint Son’s ability to utilize the Grandmist Spirit Bead in truth surpassed Lin Ming’s ability to utilize the Magic Cube!

This was also within reason. Because the Good Fortune Saint Son was a body transformation martial artist and the Grandmist Spirit Bead was also a divine body transformation treasure, the two of them complemented each other!

Moreover, the Good Fortune Saint Son had the guidance of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. Lin Ming simply couldn’t compare with these advantages.

“Lin Ming, you have lost! Because with the blood energy support of the Grandmist Spirit Bead I can use my Sovereign Blood body metamorphosis! Do you know why, within the saint race that is filled with countless heroes, I alone have become the singular Good Fortune Saint Son? That is because my bloodline is the supreme Sovereign Bloodline. Out of all the bloodlines of the saints it is ranked number one!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son growled.

The saints were a race that possessed a variety of different bloodline variations. In this way, they were similar to the monster race. The monster race possessed the phoenix bloodline, hydra bloodline, black turtle bloodline, and so forth.

Each bloodline gave one a different corresponding talent and ability.

This was the same amongst the saints.

The most common and visible manifestation of a saint martial artist’s bloodline to aid in their combat strength was – body metamorphosis!

A bloodline body metamorphosis would stimulate the greatest potential of a saint martial artist's mortal body, allowing their combat strength to increase by several times!

When Lin Ming fought Naqi, this was the also the same.

The reason that the Good Fortune Saint Son hadn't used his body metamorphosis so far in the battle was not because he wanted to save his strength but because his bloodline was simply far too formidable. Once he used his body metamorphosis, he would rapidly use up his energy and even affect his life source.

In addition, the Good Fortune Saint Son's weapon was a True Divinity spirit treasure. That meant that no matter how much energy the Good Fortune Saint Son poured into his weapon, the weapon would absorb all without reserve. The result of this was that the Good Fortune Saint Son would only be able to attack several times before exhausting his energy. If he couldn't defeat Lin Ming by then, the result could be imagined.

But now, with the support of the Grandmist Spirit Bead, everything was different.

The Good Fortune Saint Son could rely on support from the Grandmist Spirit Bead to maintain the Sovereign Blood body transformation for an extended period of time and defeat Lin Ming!

As he spoke, the power of good fortune within the world once more swept towards the Good Fortune Saint Son!

The great desert beneath them began to expand!

Even the sea was affected. Once the fish lurking in the sea were caught in the scope of the Good Fortune Divine Art, they all lost their strength and life and slowly floated up to the surface, dead.

Then, the bodies of these fish and sea beasts disintegrated, turning into a blood fog that was absorbed by the Good Fortune Saint Son.

The power of good fortune completely fused into the Good Fortune Saint Son's body. At that same time, the Grandmist Spirit Bead also burst out with brilliant black beams of light. Within this light was a billowing blood energy. It erupted from the Grandmist Spirit Bead and poured into the body of the Good Fortune Saint Son.

For a time, the Good Fortune Saint Son's entire body was covered with a flaming gold divine light. His body emitted explosive crackling sounds and his tall figure began to grow!

His muscles inflated and golden scales covered his body. Strange runes were etched onto the surface of these scales, making them look like the scales of a dragon.

His hair also turned pure gold. From his elbows and knees, ferocious bone spikes jutted out, looking incomparably vicious!

After the Good Fortune Saint Son transformed, the power of his blood energy was like a roaring conflagration, burning into the deep blue skies!

"Hahaha! I can feel this power once more, what an intoxicating feeling! Soon, even without the help of the Grandmist Spirit Bead I will still possess this strength. At that time I will even be able to contend with a half-step Empyrean!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son's head fell back as he roared out to the skies. His joints cracked again and again. His aura was like that of an unrivalled war god, unsurpassed in the world!

Seeing this scene, the human powerhouses all held their breath. Now, they were worried that Lin Ming would perish here!

Although there were many human Empyreans present, the Good Fortune Saint Son after transforming was simply far too strong. Moreover, the Grandmist Spirit Bead was a spirit treasure that surpassed the boundary of True Divinity. They were all afraid that Lin Ming would be directly swallowed up by it and even an Empyrean wouldn't be quick enough to save him.

The loss to humanity would be far too great!

"This damned Good Fortune Saint Son! His own strength wasn't enough to suppress Lin Ming so he has to bring out this Grandmist Spirit Bead divine tool. If Lin Ming loses here, there is no justice at all!"

Some young human elites said as they gnashed their teeth.

The inside background of humanity was far too poor. Growing up, the young human elites were far too lacking compared to the young elites of the saints when they had to compare resources, inheritances, and other aspects.

But as everyone was worrying over Lin Ming, he actually took a deep breath and put the Purple Gold Spear back into his spatial ring.

He turned his hand and a black spear appeared in his hand. This spear was as heavy as a planet and its appearance alone caused the surrounding space to faintly twist.

This was the Black Dragon Spear!

Seeing Lin Ming suddenly take out the Black Dragon Spear, the young elites watching all felt their eyes go as round as full moons.

"Black Dragon Spear! Lin Ming finally took out that Black Dragon Spear, a peak True Divinity spirit treasure!"

A young elite cried out in alarm.

"Wasn't it said that Lin Ming couldn't use the Black Dragon Spear?"

"There should be some sort of limit, otherwise Lin Ming would have used it already!"

In battling the Good Fortune Saint Son, Lin Ming had cut off all roads of retreat and had resolved to fight to the end. Tactics, skills, strength, he used everything at his disposal. It was impossible for him to hold back his strength.

If the Black Dragon Spear appeared only now, that meant Lin Ming's control of the spear was far from enough.

"Three moves… I can only use the Black Dragon Spear three times…"

Lin Ming whispered to himself as he glared at the Good Fortune Saint Son's altered form.

If he couldn't beat the Good Fortune Saint Son in three moves, then all that awaited him was defeat!

"Haha! You want to use the Black Dragon Spear to face the Grandmist Spirit Bead? You are far too naïve! That spear is indeed a peak True Divinity spirit treasure, but just how much of its strength can you use? How many spear strikes can you thrust out? You have already used up far too much of your bodily strength. When you tried to fight me with that golden spear of yours, you barely managed to hold on as it was. Now that you've brought out the Black Dragon Spear, your defeat is imminent!"

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke, he lifted his black sword and strode forwards.

After using the Grandmist Spirit Bead, the Good Fortune Saint Son had no more reservations. Since he had already lost face anyways, he might as well quickly settle this battle!

The Good Fortune Saint Son stepped forwards in space, one step at a time. As he did, his momentum grew stronger and stronger, his steps seeming to drum along with the hearts of those present.

"He is gathering his momentum!"

An Empyrean said. Through movements or attacks, one could gather their momentum, slowly pushing their strength to the limit and then striking out with the final fatal blow!

There were many specific martial skills that could achieve this effect, and it was clear that the Good Fortune Saint Son was doing so. If one couldn't break his gathered momentum then they would have to face a terrifying attack.

For the current Lin Ming, that meant defeat!

As for Lin Ming, he actually grew more and more silent. He even closed his eyes, constraining all of his aura to his body so he resembled an ancient bell.

One that was extremely showy and one that was extremely restrained, the two martial artists formed a sharp contrast with each other.

In that moment, the terrifying aura that the Good Fortune Saint Son sent out completely surrounded Lin Ming.

This was a completely crushing momentum!

The Empyreans present all burned with anxiousness!

Pressing forwards a step at a time, the Good Fortune Saint Son's momentum had nearly reached the peak. A grin appeared on the corners of his lips – he was almost ready to attack.

But in this instant, the silent Lin Ming suddenly erupted!

All of the energies within his inner world, in that moment, poured into the Asura blood that was sealed in his body!

An indescribably terrifying fighting intent shot out from Lin Ming's body!

Piki paka!

Lin Ming's entire body emitted explosive crackling sounds. The boundless and vigorous Asura power rushed into Lin Ming's skin and muscles like a raging tide. In that moment, it was like a True Dragon was reviving within him!

For a time, the mystical power of Laws dissipated into the air, surging around Lin Ming's body.

His body began to grow taller and the lines of his muscles grew even more perfect. His hair turned as red as blood. Even his looks changed, becoming far more resolute, far more murderous!

A limitless furiously raging aura stormed out from his body. After this transformation, he was like an Asura that had climbed out from the depths of hell!

The power of the mysterious Asura Laws condensed on Lin Ming's face, turning into Law curse seals. Black dragon scales jutted out from his skin, forming a solid layer of armor!

Chi chi chi!

Thunder and fire howled out from within his inner world, twining around the black dragon scale armor, making him seem like a war god of thunder and fire.

And behind Lin Ming, Law runes and mystical strengths condensed, forming a massive Asura phantom. This Asura phantom had three heads and six arms, each arm grasping a different weapon as it blocked out the skies.

An incalculable and majestic fighting intent erupted from the Asura phantom. This fighting intent completely overwhelmed the momentum gathered by the Good Fortune Saint Son, instead forming a counter suppression!

In just an instant, all of the Good Fortune Saint Son's gathered momentum had shattered!

This is…

Whether it was the human Empyreans or the masters of the monster and demon races, or whether it was the saints present or the young elites present, all of them stared with utter disbelief at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming, he… could also undergo body metamorphosis!?

Body metamorphosis was not just a change in appearance. The main factor was that Lin Ming’s strength took a tremendous leap forwards! In terms of momentum, he even suppressed the Good Fortune Saint Son!

Seeing this scene, the Monster Emperor gulped, his throat twitching. He looked at Empyrean Demondawn with incredulous eyes and said. “I… why do I feel that Lin Ming’s body metamorphosis is… is even stronger than the Good Fortune Saint Son’s Sovereign Blood body metamorphosis that he relied upon the Grandmist Spirit Bead to use? How is this possible?

Chapter 1774 – Peak Showdown

Chapter 1774 – Peak Showdown

…

…

…

After galvanizing the Asura blood within him, it wasn't just Lin Ming's strength that had increased, but there was also a world-shaking change in his aura.

At the start, Lin Ming's aura was incomparably swift and relentless, carrying with it an unstoppably firm will. It seemed as if no matter what stood in front of him he could still pierce through it.

But after utilizing the Asura blood, Lin Ming's aura had become as fathomless as the bloody seas of hell, carrying with it a terrifying killing intent!

Even for the many masters present, even Great World Kings, when they faced Lin Ming they felt their minds and bodies be invaded by that vast killing intent, nearly causing them to suffocate as they gasped for breath.

"Lin Ming… still had such a hidden card? From the start he had kept back this last resort in order to deal with the Good Fortune Saint Son's Grandmist Spirit Bead!"

Many human Empyreans suddenly realized.

The reason Lin Ming had been suppressed by the Good Fortune Saint Son since the start was not because he was weak, but because he was saving his strength and energy.

The Good Fortune Saint Son’s Grandmist Spirit Bead had long since been factored into his plan!

When he challenged the Good Fortune Saint Son at the Monster Emperor’s longevity feast, this wasn’t an impulsive decision he had made on the spot. Rather, he had come up with a thorough strategy and had been gathering his momentum all this time for this challenge!

This was the only reason he dared to recklessly bet everything he had!

After understanding this, everyone felt frightened and awed. This young man Lin Ming was just completely incomprehensible. Just when they thought they understood everything about him, they realized that what they knew was only the tip of the iceberg.

After not seeing him for many years, he left everyone’s line of sight and when he returned he soared into the heavens once more!

“What a terrifying youth… if he continues to grow, it’s certain he will become a True Divinity…”

The Monster Emperor said with a heavy sigh as he placed a hand on Empyrean Demondawn’s shoulder.

Lin Ming had even been able to shatter the shackles of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace with his own strength. To create another miracle and break through the realm of True Divinity, that shouldn’t be difficult for Lin Ming at all.

Empyrean Demondawn remained silent. He couldn’t help but admit that Lin Ming was the most terrifying youth he had ever seen in his life. Even the Good Fortune Saint Son was far inferior to him!

At just 100 years old, he had begun to show his towering might and potential. If it weren’t for the great calamity of humanity, he would absolutely become a character like Empyrean Divine Seal from 3.6 billion years ago, perhaps even surpassing him!

Thinking of this, Empyrean Demondawn's heart trembled.

Empyrean Divine Seal… didn't he also appear during a great calamity?

Perhaps… to Lin Ming, this great calamity wasn't a disaster, but might actually be… a lucky chance!

As long as he could withstand the great calamity then Lin Ming would obtain an unbelievable advantage. He would be a phoenix reborn through nirvana, soaring to unimaginable heights!

"Perhaps Xian'er should really be with him…"

Empyrean Demondawn quietly thought to himself.

He thought… that perhaps… he had made the wrong choice…

But no matter what, he couldn't rely on his own subjective judgment to decide these matters and gamble the future of his people.

Even if Lin Ming could survive the great calamity and become a True Divinity, that didn't mean that his demon race would be equally able to survive the great calamity with Lin Ming. Oftentimes, when a peerless genius arose, the influences that they grew up with would experience unprecedented catastrophes. This was because the inside background of these influences was far too lacking and they couldn't withstand the destiny that these unrivalled geniuses brought with them. In the end, all that awaited them was doom and destruction.

Empyrean Demondawn didn't believe that the monster and demon races possessed such a background.

At this time, in the skies, the Good Fortune Saint Son was beginning his attack.

The Grandmist Spirit Bead hung high above his head. Countless ribbons of black light flowed out, sealing the surrounding space.

"Lin Ming!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son's eyes were cruel and vicious. Facing Lin Ming, he already felt a deep sense of frustration!

Originally, this should have been a battle that he easily won no matter what. However, with things having come this far, he had even taken out the Grandmist Spirit Bead but still wasn't able to suppress Lin Ming. This caused the Good Fortune Saint Son to be enraged.

"I will kill you!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son clenched his jaws. Towards this person known as Lin Ming who completely suppressed him in terms of talent, the Good Fortune Saint Son desperately wanted to destroy him!

Woosh woosh woosh –

More and more black silk ribbons appeared. This was the Grandmist Spirit Bead's force field. After being enveloped in this force field, Lin Ming felt the blood vitality of his body gushing out and even the power of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was greatly limited.

Grandmist Spirit Bead… it was truly worthy of being regarded as the highest rank divine tools in existence. Even Lin Ming, who had an extremely solid foundation of blood energy, still found this enormous pressure difficult to withstand.

Then, at this time, the Good Fortune Saint Son moved!

His body hurtled forwards. The golden power of good fortune erupted from his body like a volcano, dyeing the endless skies a glorious morning gold!

Scorching hot power swept through the blue skies. It was like a golden sun had shattered in the skies, turning into endless rays of golden light!

Although this was the Good Fortune Divine Art, after using the Sovereign Blood body metamorphosis, the Good Fortune Saint Son's utilization of the Good Fortune Divine Art was completely incomparable to before!

Seeing this scene, Lin Ming also no longer held back.

He opened the Heretical God Force to the limit. Behind him, the massive phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared once more. Its vast power poured itself into the Black Dragon Spear.

This Black Dragon Spear was a True Divinity spirit treasure. No matter how much power Lin Ming poured into it, it would welcome all without reserve!

Perhaps even stimulating 10% of the Black Dragon Spear's strength would be enough to suck Lin Ming dry of energy!

At the fifth level of the final trial, Lin Ming had only used one move with the Black Dragon Spear to crush the Undying Polar Ice.

For that one move, the strength Lin Ming poured into the Black Dragon Spear was nearly equal to half his total energy.

"First spear!"

Lin Ming grasped the Black Dragon Spear. Dozens of billions of jins of strength erupted from within him. Strength rose from his waist. Blood vessels bulged on his arms. With hands as heavy as a mountain, he thrust the spear straight out!

Behind Lin Ming, the giant Asura phantom fused into his body. Asura Law runes wildly danced in the air. In order to conserve as much strength as possible, Lin Ming used the power of the Asura Laws to stimulate movement of the Black Dragon Spear.

Rah - !

The Black Dragon Spear's clarion cry rang out, like a dragon roaring into the deep blue skies!

The Good Fortune Saint Son's black sword collided with Lin Ming's spear!

An unimaginably violent force erupted, tearing the surrounding space to shreds!

The mortal bodies of the two opponents were as solid as divine iron. In such a violent collision, anything that wasn't at least an Empyrean spirit treasure would be turned into ash. As for the energy waves, they blasted out onto the bodies of the two with metallic ringing sounds, forcefully withstood. Even the space storms that swept out were stiffly shouldered all the same.

Kacha!

With a loud explosion, the Good Fortune Saint Son's black sword light was stiffly torn apart by Lin Ming's Black Dragon Spear!

The Black Dragon Spear moved forwards with unstoppable force, pushing straight through!

Lin Ming's right arm sank and dozens of spear lights shot out from the Black Dragon Spear. They were like massive mountains, locking down the heavens!

The Good Fortune Saint Son had immediately fallen into an encirclement of Lin Ming's spear lights!

"Lin Ming has the upper hand!"

Some human Empyreans cried out in shock. They never imagined that Lin Ming's strike would actually break through the Good Fortune Saint Son's sword light, and even soon hit his body!

"Scales of the Sovereign Blood!"

Seeing Lin Ming's spear thrust towards him, the Good Fortune Saint Son bellowed out loud. The golden scales covering his body began to emit a blinding radiance. He had actually chosen to forcefully withstand Lin Ming's spear strike!

Although 80-90% of Lin Ming's attack power had been blocked by the black sword light, the remaining 10-20% was still something that would not be easy to resist!

If the Good Fortune Saint Son chose to withstand this strike with his body he would absolutely be injured!

In that moment, Lin Ming's strength gushed out. The True Dragon blood within him began to boil over! The two Dao Palaces within him erupted with an incredible strength again and again!

As he struck out with the Black Dragon Spear, he vigorously pulled back his spear and thrust out nine times, using the skill of the Hundred Layered Waves to superimpose the strength of these nine spear strikes together!

These nine spears strikes had no energy poured into them and were used with Lin Ming's bodily strength alone. This was because Lin Ming had just used his first move and it was impossible for him to summon the strength for the second move too quickly. Thus, he could only use his bodily strength to stiffly stab out his spear several more times to increase the might of the attack; this was already the limit of what he could do.

Kacha!

The Black Dragon Spear heavily smashed into the Good Fortune Saint Son's chest.

The horrifying striking power of a peak True Divinity spirit treasure was hard to imagine! Even though Lin Ming's spear strike had been weakened again and again, it still cracked apart the Good Fortune Saint Son's protective astral essence and shattered his golden scales, causing him to vomit a massive amount of blood!

"The Good Fortune Saint Son has been injured!"

Whether it was the human guests or the martial artists from the monster and demon races, they all gasped in shock. Ever since the battle started, this was the first time that the Good Fortune Saint Son had been injured!

Moreover, this was not a minor wound, but a severe injury that caused the Good Fortune Saint Son to vomit blood. Lin Ming with his half-step Holy Lord cultivation had actually forced the Good Fortune Saint Son into such a situation. Moreover, the Good Fortune Saint Son had even used his Sovereign Blood body metamorphosis as well as having summoned the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

The body-metamorphosized Lin Ming was far too terrifying. He was like an Asura of hell. Gods who blocked his way would be cut down, buddhas who blocked his way would be slain!

Chapter 1775 – Another Miraculous Move

Chapter 1775 – Another Miraculous Move

…

…

…

Pa!

The bloodstained Good Fortune Saint Son suddenly grabbed onto Lin Ming's spear shaft. After activating his supreme Sovereign Blood body metamorphosis and also using the Scales of the Sovereign Blood, his defensive ability had reached a terrifying degree. Even though he forcefully withstood Lin Ming's attack and had been injured to the point of spitting out blood, the spear hadn't pierced through his body.

"Mm?"

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. The Black Dragon Spear was like a living True Dragon in his hands, constantly breaking into the Good Fortune Saint Son's protective astral essence!

With both sides deadlocked, the Good Fortune Saint Son lifted the black heavy sword with one hand and fiendishly grinned.

"Lin Ming, you're dead!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son's voice echoed in Lin Ming's ears. Lin Ming was suddenly startled. From behind, he could feel a thick killing intent!

"Lin Ming, be careful!" Xiao Moxian cried out in alarm.

The many human Empyreans were also tense. At that time, a sharp black light was shooting straight towards Lin Ming from behind. And the center of the black light was the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

If Lin Ming continued to thrust his spear he could undoubtedly heavily wound the Good Fortune Saint Son, but at the same time he would also be struck by the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

If Lin Ming was struck by the Grandmist Spirit Bead, the injuries it would cause to his body could be imagined!

“Take back the spear and defend!”

Empyrean Vast Universe’s sound transmission crackled like thunder in Lin Ming’s ears!

He originally thought that the Good Fortune Saint Son seemed strangely weak in his collision with Lin Ming just now, but now it seemed that the reason was because he had split off a portion of his strength to control the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

The Good Fortune Saint Son would attack Lin Ming from the front and then use the Grandmist Spirit Bead to sneak attack him from behind, placing him in a pincer attack!

In this situation, even if Lin Ming took back his spear to defend, he had just attacked and his true essence was in a mess. He would still suffer heavy losses to the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

How the fight progressed after that could be imagined!

But if Lin Ming didn’t take back his spear to defend, the situation would be even worse. Only the heavens would know what consequences Lin Ming would suffer after being struck by the full strength attack of the Grandmist Spirit Bead. At worst, Lin Ming could even die here! Compared to death, simply losing to the Good Fortune Saint Son was much better.

This was the Good Fortune Saint Son's sure-kill plan. With this attack, Lin Ming would likely lose. This was a truly vicious attack!

However, at this time Lin Ming seemed as if he simply didn't hear Empyrean Vast Universe's sound transmission. He continued to hold onto the Black Dragon Spear as before, thrusting it straight towards the Good Fortune Saint Son's chest, utterly disregarding the Grandmist Spirit Bead that was hurtling towards him.

Within the brutal waves of energy, Lin Ming exuded a dense killing intent. The Asura phantom behind him clawed at the air like a demonic spirit trying to rip apart the skies!

"You... do you really want to die?"

The Good Fortune Saint Son was shocked. He never imagined that Lin Ming would be so ruthless and would continue attacking him even at the cost of being heavily wounded by the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

Seeing 90% of his own protective astral essence being broken by Lin Ming, the Good Fortune Saint Son's eyes flashed with a vicious light. He fiercely said, "Good, then if you want to die let me help you. Even if I have to withstand this attack the most I will suffer is a severe wound!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son grit his teeth, revolving the little amount of strength he had left to the limit!

"The one dying is you!" Lin Ming fiercely grinned.

Puff!

The Good Fortune Saint Son spat out a mouthful of blood as the Black Dragon Spear thrust through his chest. Then, he grabbed onto the Black Dragon Spear's shaft, looking at Lin Ming like he was looking at someone already dead.

After using all his energy in this strike, Lin Ming absolutely wouldn't be able to dodge the attack from the Grandmist Spirit Bead. And, his injuries would be far more severe!

It was even possible that the Grandmist Spirit Bead's strike would greatly damage Lin Ming's blood vitality and leave behind hidden wounds that hindered his future achievements. These thoughts made the Good Fortune Saint Son feel even better!

But as the black light of the Grandmist Spirit Bead was about to strike Lin Ming's back, a figure rushed out from Lin Ming's inner world!

This figure was similar to Lin Ming before he activated his body metamorphosis. The figure wore black clothes and its blood vitality soared into the heavens, billowing into the skies like a rocket!

"What? This is..."

In that instant, it seemed as if Lin Ming had split into two. Everyone's eyes widened. Just what was happening?

Woosh!

As this black figure appeared, a black wheel appeared under it. This was Lin Ming's Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. And in the hands of this black figure was the Purple Gold Spear that Lin Ming had been using before!

This black-clothed figure that suddenly appeared was Lin Ming's avatar – the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone!

The Essence spirit Embryo Stone revolved its astral essence to its limits, combining it with the horrifying blood vitality that had been tempered within it for billions and billions of years. It grasped the Purple Gold Spear and shot towards the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

Kacha!

The Purple Gold Spear in the Essence Spirit Embryo's hands smashed into the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

In that moment, the originally not too flexible Purple Gold Spear tightly curved, seeming as if it would break apart at any moment!

The arms of the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone exploded with blood shooting into the wind!

And once this blood shot out, it was all absorbed by the Grandmist Spirit Bead, making for an extremely ghostly and macabre sight.

For a time, energy erupted outwards. Behind Lin Ming, a violent detonation swept out, the raging strength like tides in a storm, flushing into Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son and causing them both to tumble away.

The Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was the essence energy avatar personally refined by the Asura Road Master!

Even if the Grandmist Spirit Bead was a peerless divine tool, the Good Fortune Saint Son could only bring out a limited amount of its strength. In the fierce collision, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone had only been struck to the point of losing blood.

And a part of the avatar's essence energy had also been absorbed by the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

But this wasn't a problem at all. The essence energy could be restored through the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel by sacrificing some of the souls within it.

Because the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone had moved to block over 99% of the Grandmist Spirit Bead's attack power, Lin Ming hadn't suffered from the shockwaves at all.

As the young elites witnessed this, all of them were dazed. They didn't know just what words to say.

As for the Good Fortune Saint Son, he said with an incredulous voice, “How is this possible… how could you possibly have such a terrifying flesh and blood avatar!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son had clearly seen that the appearance of the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone was the exact same as Lin Ming’s. This was undoubtedly Lin Ming’s avatar!

But the avatar’s body contained a terrifying blood vitality, one that was even greater than the Good Fortune Saint Son’s by an unbelievably large margin. He simply couldn’t believe this was possible!

At this time, Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son had briefly exhausted themselves of energy. They lost their balance in the air and were sent flying away by the wild fluctuations of energy.

The Gold Fortune Saint Son tried to adjust his breathing and blood vitality, wanting to summon enough astral essence to attack Lin Ming once more.

Lin Ming simply sneered.

From his inner world, another figure shot out!

This figure wore purple clothes and a vast soul force gushed out from its body, as if it were a fathomless abyss of soul force. It formed a sharp contrast with the previously black-clothed Lin Ming!

“What!?”

The Good Fortune Saint Son’s eyes nearly popped out of his head.

All of the martial artists present cried out in shock, “There’s another one!?”

This purple-clothed figure was naturally the second avatar – the Soul Springs Divine Embryo!

This Soul Springs Divine Embryo stood atop a purple wheel – the Myriad Essence Reincarnation Wheel. It grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and hurtled straight towards the Good Fortune Saint Son!

In terms of defensive power, the Soul Springs Divine Embryo was far inferior to the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone. But, its attacks were far more strange and cunning, nearly impossible to guard against!

The Good Fortune Saint Son could barely believe his own eyes. The Soul Springs Divine Embryo was aiming its spear at his chest, and the point where it aimed was where Lin Ming had wounded him before!

In Lin Ming's battle against the Good Fortune Saint Son he used every method he could, taking advantage of all possibilities to add wounds upon wounds.

Seeing this spear point about to pierce him, the Good Fortune Saint Son's face turned as pale as paper! Because he had exhausted his strength in the last attack he hadn't been able to summon more astral essence. In other words, he couldn't resist this attack!

Puff!

The Phoenix Blood Spear pierced into the Good Fortune Saint Son. The Good Fortune Saint Son's chest collapsed inwards. However, his mortal body had been tempered innumerable times and was fused with almost endless essence, making it as hard as divine iron. Even though the Phoenix Blood Spear penetrated into his chest, it still wasn't able to tear through his heart!

"That was close... but it seems this avatar isn't too strong..."

The Good Fortune Saint Son immediately thought. But before he could rejoice, he felt an agonizing pain within his spiritual sea. The Phoenix Blood Spear contained a spiritual strike that was attacking him like a hidden viper!

The Soul Springs Divine Embryo's strike had contained a soul attack!

"Ahhh!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son screamed out loud, his body shaking. The pain brought through a soul attack was several times that of a physical attack. The Good Fortune Saint Son grabbed his head, fiercely struggling with himself.

"Die!"

Lin Ming had recovered his strength again in the several breaths of time he had. He grasped the Black Dragon Spear and attacked the Good Fortune Saint Son once more!

When his main body used the Black Dragon Spear he could use three moves total – this was the second!

For a time, joyful dragon and phoenix phantoms appeared behind Lin Ming. In that moment, his aura climbed to new heights!

Chapter 1776 – Victory or Defeat

Chapter 1776 – Victory or Defeat

…

…

…

From within Lin Ming's inner world, wild true essence and astral essence erupted. A dazzling brilliance covered the skies, as if a sun was exploding within him, causing everyone to close their eyes from the brightness.

Behind Lin Ming, nine massive stars appeared once more. Their vast starlight poured down like a waterfall, converging into Lin Ming's body!

Paka paka!

Lin Ming's joints released crackling explosive sounds. He bit down on his lip and spat out blood essence, brilliantly burning it!

By combusting his blood essence through the Gate of Life, Lin Ming's strength rapidly climbed to the peak, soon approaching that of ten dragons!

The scattered wounds marring Lin Ming's body also began to rapidly regenerate. In that moment, as he grasped the Black Dragon Spear, his long hair recklessly fluttering in the wind as he stood proud in the skies, he seemed full of an invincible might!

"This brat!" Empyrean Demondawn took a deep breath, a trace of fear and shock in his eyes. Lin Ming was just far too terrifying. In his battle with the Good Fortune Saint Son, he had experienced a brutal prolonged fight and had consumed a mind-boggling amount of energy, and his meridians and blood vessels had been torn in countless areas. Even so, in the final moments he was still able to erupt with such an overwhelming level of strength.

As for the Good Fortune Saint Son, he had been severely wounded by Lin Ming to the point of vomiting blood!

This was the saint race, a race renowned throughout the 33 Heavens for their body transformation technique. Out of all the races, they possessed the number one mortal bodily strength and endurance. By relying on their mortal bodies alone, they could struggle with True Dragons!

Yet at the end, Lin Ming's endurance and physical strength actually surpassed that of the Saint Son.

How could Empyrean Demondawn not be amazed?

"Lin Ming!"

Facing this spear, the Good Fortune Saint Son gnashed his teeth.

His current situation was far worse than Lin Ming's. His blood vitality was in a chaotic mess and his organs were damaged in many places. The astral essence around him had scattered and he could gather less than 50%.

All he could do now was rely on the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

The Good Fortune Saint Son roared out loud. He suddenly bit down on the tip of his tongue and burnt a wisp of his blood essence!

Seeing this, the entire audience of martial artists was left bewildered.

The Good Fortune Saint Son had been forced by Lin Ming to burn his blood essence!

Although the Good Fortune Saint Son's supreme Sovereign Blood was incomparably powerful, that didn't mean he had the ability to willfully burn it as he pleased. Once he burned a little, it meant he had that much less. And, the Good Fortune Saint Son's bloodline was extremely special. Once he burned some of his blood essence it would be immensely problematic to make up for. This move clearly indicated that the Good Fortune Saint Son had gone all out.

Hu –

The Grandmist Spirit Bead fiercely spun, creating a dark red vortex. The Good Fortune Saint Son spat burning blood essence into the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

The Grandmist Spirit Bead then emitted an increasingly brilliant red light!

"I will swallow all of your flesh and blood essence energy!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son had bet everything on this. He poured the totality of his strength into this attack.

His remaining strength was clearly less than Lin Ming's. He could only use the Grandmist Spirit Bead to make up for this deficiency.

The moment that the Grandmist Spirit Bead shot out, Lin Ming also attacked!

The Heretical God Force erupted. A tyrannical and savage power of thunder and fire turbulently poured into the Black Dragon Spear.

The spear thrust out. Like a mysterious vortex, all of the light in the skies was swallowed up by this spear, immediately causing the world to darken.

Everyone was shrouded in this darkness. Only the Black Dragon Spear in Lin Ming's hands remained blindingly brilliant!

Hu – hu – hu – !

The maddening aura of the Asura Great Dao condensed. The surrounding space began to shatter like glass, large tracts of space collapsing in on itself.

Lin Ming's spear strike already contained the charm of the Gate of Laws' Black Asura's final strike. This spear seemed as if it could pierce through the entire universe!

This was the power of the Asura Laws, as horrifying as the abyss of hell!

Lin Ming's momentum was like a rainbow. A giant Asura phantom formed around him. With the support of this Asura phantom, Lin Ming struck out at the Good Fortune Saint Son!

And at the same time, two figures flew towards Lin Ming from two sides. Of these two figures, one wore purple clothes and one wore black clothes; they were Lin Ming's two avatars. They each held onto their spear, sending out their all-out attacks, completely fusing together with Lin Ming's strike.

This heaven-shaking spear light smashed into the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

Kacha!

An earth-shattering explosion burst out. The Grandmist Spirit Bead violently trembled. The surrounding space was like glass smashed with a hammer, all of it shattering to pieces!

Countless Asura Law runes flashed out from the destroyed space like stars.

"Retreat! Quickly retreat!"

Some martial artists cried out in alarm. In the face of such terrifying strength, even if they stood a hundred miles away they would still be swallowed up and annihilated!

But at this time, the human and monster races both had Empyreans take action. They set up shimmering light barriers that blocked the dreadful shockwaves of energy.

The energy crashed into the Empyreans' light barriers. After causing them to fiercely shake, it returned like a lowering tide. The endless sand and sea water was swept into the air where it instantly disintegrated into the finest powder before scattering through the world.

For a time, it was like a massive meteor had crashed into the island. The entire island had been hollowed out and a crazy amount of water vapor soared upwards, rapidly condensing into dark clouds in the skies before falling back down like an endless rainstorm!

Endless sea water gushed in, filling up the titanic crater in the center of the island. Waves roared and ceaseless rain poured, making it seem like the end of the world.

“What happened?”

Many young elites looked at each other in dismay. They hadn’t been able to clearly see the results of the final strike.

Someone looked at the many surrounding Empyreans. All they saw was that there were several human Empyreans who were even shivering.

Among these people were Empyrean Vast Universe and Empyrean Traceless. The two of them had clenched their fists so hard that blue veins were visible and their knuckles had turned white. It was like space itself was breaking beneath their grasp!

After their cultivation reached the Empyrean realm, there was little that could cause them to lose their composure like this. The reason they had such an intense reaction, even shaking, was because their excitement had reached the limit. In their eyes there was nothing but absolute disbelief, interwoven with a zealous joy and trepidation!

Few understood the situation as well as they did. Humanity was lost in an eternal night, drowning in sorrow and misery without an end in sight. To them, this battle between the Good Fortune Saint Son and Lin Ming was of monumental importance!

This duel was enough to ignite humanity’s flames of hope!

“Could it be…”

Seeing the response of the human Empyreans, the hearts of the young elites present trembled. They turned their heads and looked towards the saint Empyrean.

Not too far away, the saint Empyrean floated high in the void. Even within the endless drops of falling sea water, not a single one was able to touch him. However, his complexion had become dark and gloomy enough to drip water!

The response of the saint Empyrean had confirmed their guesses.

“Lin Ming… won… he won!?”

As this thought flashed through all of the young human elites’ minds, the heavy rain finally finished falling. In the boundless mist, there was only a single proud figure remaining. This figure grasped the Black Dragon Spear, his long hair slicked back through the rain.

This person was Lin Ming!

And opposite Lin Ming, the Good Fortune Saint Son had disappeared in the endless mist, having completely vanished from sight.

As if… he had sunk into the sea…

Chapter 1777 – Change in the Inner World

Chapter 1777 – Change in the Inner World

…

…

…

"Your Highness Wumo!"

The saint Empyrean's complexion was ugly. His figure flashed and he instantly appeared in front of Lin Ming.

Shua!

The saint Empyrean glared at Lin Ming. The two of them were only several miles apart. To an Empyrean, this distance could be covered in less than a thousandth of a split second.

This caused the human Empyreans present to tense up. Immediately, the energy fields of several human Empyreans covered Lin Ming to deter against any and all possibilities. They were afraid that this saint Empyrean would turn mad and suddenly attack Lin Ming.

"Humph."

The saint Empyrean coldly coughed. He flew down, shooting into the sea like an arrow.

Bang!

The sea waves splashed up hundreds of feet high before gradually dying down.

After several breaths of time, the sea waves exploded once more. The saint Empyrean flew nonstop from the sea. In his left hand was the dim Grandmist Spirit Bead and in his right hand was the Good Fortune Saint Son who no longer resembled a person at all.

In that final collision with Lin Ming, the Good Fortune Saint Son's body had been cracked apart in countless places. His right hand dangled uselessly at his side and it was clear all his bones there were broken. There were only a few muscles and meridians still connecting it.

On his body, his golden scales had cracked open and blood flowed out. This blood was also gold in color; this was the Good Fortune Saint Son's source blood from his Sovereign Blood body metamorphosis.

This sort of blood was several times heavier than mercury. As it flowed out, no sea waves or rain was able to wash it away.

The Good Fortune Saint Son… had been defeated!

Even though he had used the fifth level of the Good Fortune Divine Art, even though he had finally summoned the Grandmist Spirit Bead and released his Sovereign Blood body metamorphosis, even though he didn't hesitate to burn his blood essence and put forth every single one of his skills, in the end he had been defeated by Lin Ming!

He had not been defeated because he had underestimated his opponent; he had poured forth the entirety of his martial arts skills. The reason he had lost was because he was weaker than Lin Ming!

"I can't… believe this!"

The Monster Emperor stood high in the air. Facing the violent waves, his mind inexplicably shook.

"His speed and strength are without flaws and his utilization of Laws has reached the peak. Even his mortal body is perfect to the extreme, no worse than that of the saint race's

Saint Son. In time, when Lin Ming's cultivation reaches large success, just who will be able to stop him?"

The Monster Emperor couldn't help but think to himself.

Lin Ming's age couldn't be compared to the Good Fortune Saint Son's at all. The difference in the levels of talent couldn't be called a minor difference, but a disparity further apart than the clouds and mud!

If things continued at this rate, Lin Ming wouldn't even need 200 years before he could fight with an Empyrean!

At that time, without accident, Lin Ming's cultivation wouldn't even be at the World King realm.

To fight an Empyrean before even reaching the World King realm, this was a terrifying prospect!

"Demondawn..." The Monster Emperor turned to look at Empyrean Demondawn. Empyrean Demondawn was also left speechless.

In this world, if there could be said to be someone who could resist the invasion of a race alone, then perhaps that person would be Lin Ming.

Empyrean Demondawn looked at Lin Ming. All the human and monster Empyreans, all of the young elites present, everyone turned to look at Lin Ming.

Within their shining eyes was awe and fear, admiration and excitement, all the spectrum of emotions flashing in them.

Today, Lin Ming had written his own legend.

This would be an event recorded in the annals of history. If humanity still persisted for another 3.6 billion years, then after that time the ancient texts of humanity would record

Lin Ming’s name, possibly even describing him with more words than Empyrean Divine Seal!

Perhaps even if humanity were to perish and the saints were to rewrite history with their own illustrious victories and merits, Lin Ming would be the one point they couldn’t erase!

The vapor in the air became increasingly light. Lin Ming was covered in a faint misty light, and around this light fluttered endless Asura Law fragments. The two Asura wheels still slowly spun beneath Lin Ming’s feet.

At this time, Lin Ming was heavily wounded. The bones in his left arm were completely shattered and his organs and meridians were broken in many places. Fresh blood flowed out from his body, slowly washed away by the thick watery mist and rain.

His true essence, astral essence, and spirit essence had been used up. Even the combat efficiency of his two avatars had reached near zero.

Even so, in the end Lin Ming was the one still flying in the air and the Good Fortune Saint Son had already fallen unconscious.

Puff!

Lin Ming’s body shook and he spat out a mouthful of blood. He shivered and the Asura Law runes around him flashed with a dazzling light.

“Big Brother Lin…”

Xiao Moxian’s heart tightened. Not too far away, Mo Eversnow and Mo Brightmoon were gripped with fear. They found it hard to restrain themselves from rushing forwards.

Although Lin Ming had defeated the Good Fortune Saint Son, he had still withstood many terrifying attacks. If these attacks accumulated, who knew what their effects on Lin Ming would be.

Maybe even though he was standing, the truth was that he was grievously wounded within and he was nothing but a lamp that had run out of oil.

Seeing Lin Ming's condition, the saint Empyrean sneered.

"Humph! The Grandmist Spirit Bead's attack isn't that easy to resist. Even if you block the frontal attack of the Grandmist Spirit Bead, your life source will still be affected and you will lose a tremendous amount of blood vitality. It isn't strange for there to be hidden wounds left behind!"

In this battle, the Good Fortune Saint Son had combusted a wisp of his blood essence but still wasn't able to defeat Lin Ming. Instead, Lin Ming was the one to obtain victory and glory. The saint Empyrean was naturally unhappy about this.

But as he saw the changes in Lin Ming's situation, he finally found something to rejoice over.

The saint Empyrean's words caused the hearts of many people to skip a beat. Out of essence, energy, and divine, the Grandmist Spirit Bead was the peak divine tool that controlled essence – this included blood essence. If one was attacked by the Grandmist Spirit Bead, it wouldn't be unusual for their blood essence to be lost.

If this were true, then the consequences would be dreadful.

"Hehe! Although Lin Ming won, he did so by stubbornly persisting until the end. Although the wounds caused by the Grandmist Spirit Bead aren't enough to endanger his life, they will inevitably affect his future achievements. Lin Ming's bloodline is powerful; perhaps the highest bloodline in humanity, but at the same time that also means restoring his own blood vitality is that much more difficult! The blood vitality essence energy that was sucked up by the Grandmist Spirit Bead, how will he make up for that?"

The saint Empyrean jeered again. Although Lin Ming had defeated the Good Fortune Saint Son, he would still find some places to push back. If Lin Ming had some hidden wounds and it appeared that he had overdrawn upon his life to barely defeat the Good Fortune Saint Son, that was a far better story of events.

“Big Brother Lin!” The saint Empyrean’s words caused Xiao Moxian to cry out in worry. She wanted to probe Lin Ming’s situation, but because her cultivation had been sealed she couldn’t fly up.

As for Mo Eversnow, her figure flickered and she flew up towards Lin Ming. She took out a transcendent divine pill from his spatial ring, one that Empyrean Divine Dream had given her, and prepared to feed it to Lin Ming.

But at this time, Empyrean Divine Dream actually blocked Mo Eversnow.

“Don’t panic, Lin Ming’s body is strange… it might not be as simple as an injury. There is a change occurring in his inner world.”

After being reminded by Empyrean Divine Dream, Mo Eversnow discovered that there were indeed massive changes occurring within Lin Ming’s inner world.

Because of that violent battle just now, Lin Ming’s inner world had come under repeated attacks of brutal energy, actually causing a fissure to appear within.

The boundaries of his inner world had started to break open!

“This is…”

Mo Eversnow was startled!

The sneering saint Empyrean’s complexion also changed as he saw this.

If the boundaries of an inner world shattered, it could mean the total collapse of that inner world. The consequences of such an event were inconceivable. At the best he would lose his cultivation and at the worst he would perish here.

But there was also a second possibility, and that was a martial artist was making a breakthrough in their cultivation! When a martial artist was making a breakthrough the boundaries of their inner world would tear apart and then reform.

And when a Divine Lord broke through to a Holy Lord, the great world within them would transform into a small universe. This heaven-sundering upheaval was a drastic change; it was common for a martial artist to vomit blood.

“Could Lin Ming be…?”

Mo Eversnow held her breath. And at this time, all around Lin Ming, the dispersed power of the Asura Laws began to wildly rush towards him!

The surging power of Asura drove the energy within the world along with it.

The world’s power of good fortune had been previously seized by the Good Fortune Saint Son. But after the Good Fortune Saint Son was defeated, the raging power of good fortune also dissipated, scattering through the world.

But now, all of this power of good fortune followed the scattered Asura Laws in the skies and swept towards Lin Ming’s inner world.

“What!?”

Seeing this scene, the saint Empyrean’s eyes turned wide.

For the inner world to open wide and greedily suck up all the energy of the world, this meant that Lin Ming was making his breakthrough!

He had just said that Lin Ming’s life source had been affected by the Grandmist Spirit Bead, leaving behind hidden wounds and even possibly hindering his future achievements. This would be a normal consequence of surviving an attack from the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

But in the blink of an eye, Lin Ming had begun to converge the power of the world within himself to complete a breakthrough!

Even the power of good fortune that the Good Fortune Saint Son wrested from the world was absorbed by Lin Ming, becoming a gift to him!

Chapter 1778 – I, Holy Lord

Chapter 1778 – I, Holy Lord

…

…

…

“How is this possible…”

The saint Empyrean was in a state of utter disbelief. After Lin Ming fiercely battled the Good Fortune Saint Son, although he had still managed to remain standing in the end, his body was in a mess. He had an unknown number of meridians injured and had lost a great deal of blood vitality. In this situation where he hadn’t even had time to heal, how could he experience a breakthrough?

Lin Ming was already a half-step Holy Lord. Once he made a breakthrough, he would be a Holy Lord!

In simpler words, a half-step Holy Lord was ultimately still a Divine Lord. From Divine Lord to Holy Lord, this was leaping a large boundary upwards, a whole new level for a martial artist.

The inner world of a Divine Lord martial artist was like a continent high in the skies, and above the earth were twisting rivers and towering mountains, complete with all sorts of plants and other life forms.

But a Holy Lord realm martial artist was different. Their inner world’s continent would shatter and reform into a planet. As for their inner world, it would become a universe capable of holding this planet. This meant that a martial artist’s strength would rapidly soar but also involve all sorts of risks.

Many martial artists would undergo all kinds of preparations, waiting until they were in their peak state before daring to make this breakthrough. Even then, they didn't necessarily have full confidence in success, much less someone like the current Lin Ming.

"I will be his protector!"

Empyrean Vast Universe's figure flashed and he arrived in front of Lin Ming. He released an energy as great as a cosmos, rapidly surrounding Lin Ming within it.

He did this to prevent the saint Empyrean from playing some trick on Lin Ming. After all, a martial artist was weakest during their breakthroughs, and the slightest interruption could cause severe wounds.

No one anticipated that Lin Ming would be making a breakthrough at this time.

This was simply because at the final trial's third level, after Lin Ming fused with the Asura blood, the energy within his inner world had already reached the limit. He had been ready to break into the Holy Lord realm ever since then!

But during the final trial's third level, Lin Ming had suppressed his breakthrough in order to further consolidate his cultivation. This caused his cultivation to pause at the half-step Holy Lord realm.

And now, with his violent duel with the Good Fortune Saint Son, Lin Ming had displayed his greatest strength again and again, repeatedly impacting his inner world with a tyrannical level of energy. Finally, the suppressed energy within Lin Ming had erupted!

His breakthrough was now an unstoppable event.

Ka ka ka!

Within Lin Ming's inner world, a massive continent dozens of times larger than an ordinary martial artist's began to rapidly sunder open!

The ground cracked and lava came gushing out. Lin Ming paled and blood flowed out from the corners of his lips!

To an essence gathering system martial artist, their inner world was their life source. Once that inner world shattered, a martial artist would definitely suffer the backlash.

Lin Ming's foundation was countless times more formidable than that of others of his level. Whether it was mortal body, meridians, or capacity of his dantian, all of it could compare favorably with a Great World King. But correspondingly, because Lin Ming's inner world was far too magnificent, once it began collapsing it would create a terrifying explosion. This sort of explosion was something that even a World King would find difficult to bear.

And Lin Ming had already exhausted all his strength. It wouldn't be easy to persist through this.

"Brat, you are more than ruthless! After today, you are your own myth!" Empyrean Vast Universe shouted at Lin Ming.

Although Lin Ming's entire body was drenched in blood, Empyrean Vast Universe wasn't worried that he would die here at all.

Lin Ming had an incredible destiny upon his body. Even facing the Good Fortune Saint Son who had his own rainbow-like destiny, Lin Ming had defeated him. So how could Lin Ming possibly die here during his breakthrough to the Holy Lord realm?

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

The energy of the world howled. A crazy power of good fortune rushed forth like a wave of tsunamis, all of it swelling towards Lin Ming. Behind Lin Ming, the Asura war god phantom appeared once more. An infinite amount of mysterious Asura Laws wildly surged out, causing the land to be immersed in a world of independent Laws.

The energy within Lin Ming's inner world was like a snowball rolling down a hill, becoming larger as it went. Soon, it reached a critical point; it would completely erupt!

Rumble rumble rumble!

The sound of echoing thunderclaps transmitted from Lin Ming's inner world. The continent in Lin Ming's inner world completely collapsed at this moment.

Massive tracts of the continent disintegrated into fragments, mixing together with the lava, broken mountains and rivers. Everything collapsed in on itself.

Lin Ming spat out a mouthful of blood. His face was pale and he was dripping sweat!

At this moment, the minds of everyone present tightened. Even Xiao Moxian clenched her fists, burning with worry.

Even though she knew that it was unlikely for Lin Ming to experience any accidents during his breakthrough, love was never rational to begin with. Her heart had already leapt into her throat.

Rumble rumble rumble –

The explosions within his inner world continued without end. Then, within Lin Ming's completely ruined inner world the vast power of laws rained down, completely condensing atop the remnants of the continent.

An invisible attraction force appeared. All of the fragments of the continent gathered together, condensing into another form.

And at this moment, in the deep center of the continent's fragments, a small black hole appeared. This small black hole released a mighty gravitational force, causing all of the nearby continent fragments to firmly stick onto it, compressing even tighter!

This was a special effect of the Divine Seal Art. Due to the celestial body condensed through the Divine Seal Art, a martial artist's planet would be a hundred times more compact and a hundred times heavier!

As the planet reformed, more and more crazy auras erupted from Lin Ming's body.

The surrounding origin energy in the air, the power of good fortune, all of it chaotically rushed towards this point, creating countless energy vortexes.

These energy vortexes came in different sizes. Because of their appearance, the Laws of the world began to stir up. Some martial artists weren't able to deal with the sudden change around them and stumbled before falling down from the skies.

"Ahh!"

Someone cried out in shock. With the cultivations of the martial artists present, they wouldn't suffer any wounds even if they fell to the ground. But, this sudden feeling of being unable to control the energy within the world combined with losing the ability to fly made many of these young elites with insufficient cultivations feel terrified.

Luckily, they had their own masters or elders standing nearby to send out beams of true essence to grab onto these people.

Even many Divine Lord realm martial artists felt unsteady. They couldn't help but summon more true essence in order to stabilize themselves.

At this time, more and more energy vortexes appeared in the skies. From afar, the entire heaven was lit up with endless divine light, as if countless tiny suns had appeared on the horizon, innumerable and stretching without end.

When the weaker martial artists were caught in the range of these energy vortexes they felt an extreme pressure push down on them, making them feel nauseous.

"This is..."

Another young elite cried out in alarm.

"This is the aura formed by a peerless powerhouse!"

A human Empyrean slowly said. Lin Ming had inherited the legacy of the Asura Road Master, and in the Asura Road Master's many lives he had gone on innumerable expeditions. Countless ancient kings had fallen to his hands!

And many of these ancient kings had cultivations comparable to a True Divinity!

Through 3.3 billion years of battle, the Asura Road Master had killed these countless peerless powerhouses and their aura had gathered together. This was an extremely terrifying concept!

Even if Lin Ming had only inherited less than a thousandth of this, it was still enough to intimidate the many young elites present. It was difficult for them to withstand this pressure!

"Is this the breakthrough of a Holy Lord? Although the momentum isn't as great as an Empyrean breakthrough, a Great World King cannot hope to match up to this…"

On the saint race's side, the saint Empyrean paled. He was a peak Empyrean but because of the breakthrough of a junior breaking into the Holy Lord realm, he had nearly lost his mind. This was because the momentum of Lin Ming breaking into the Holy Lord realm was far too vast. If he were to break into the Empyrean realm in the future, just what would happen then?

Would even a great world break apart?

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

With a sharp cutting sound, the many energy vortexes spinning between the heavens and earth began to rush into Lin Ming's inner world!

The light shining out from Lin Ming's body became increasingly bright. As the massive number of energy vortexes converged within him, it made him look like an exploding sun, blinding to the eyes.

In this situation, many young elites turned as white as a ghost. They found it difficult to breathe.

When this momentum reached the limit, there was a resounding explosion as horrifying light waves erupted from within Lin Ming. A tremendous pressure gushed out!

This sort of feeling was like numerous Divine Dragons roaring out together!

The vast sea was pushed away and hollowed out by the air waves, creating a giant blue bowl that extended for hundreds of miles!

At the edges of this bowl, the rough sea waves raged up and down. Every single wave was like a blue mountain, grand and majestic as it soared into the skies.

Behind Lin Ming, a black phantom that was hundreds of feet high appeared. This black phantom had three heads and six arms. Each arm was as thick and sturdy as a pillar that supported the skies and also held different weapons. The aura of this phantom had reached the pinnacle of possibility; this was the Asura war god phantom!

If the young elites present weren't protected by their respective masters and Elders, they might have already vomited blood and been grievously wounded upon facing this giant!

Roar!

The black phantom leaned back its head and crazily howled into the skies. Its cry broke into the dome of the world and trillions of pillars of water shot into the skies. At this time, the entire Heaven Lifting Black Pagoda fiercely shook!

In the midst of this savage howl, even common Holy Lord realm martial artists were soon unable to withstand it!

After several breaths of time, there was a rustling sound as the giant black phantom rapidly shrunk before submerging into Lin Ming's body and completely disappearing from sight.

In the frenzy of energy, Lin Ming slowly opened his eyes. His eyes sparked with arcs of lightning, as if his gaze alone could penetrate into the skies.

As for the aura of his body, it was completely restrained without the least bit flowing out.

This was because when Lin Ming's inner world had reformed, it had taken a black hole celestial body as its core. All of the strength within his inner world had condensed into this black hole with only a tiny amount leaking out.

At this moment, Lin Ming had finally broken into the Holy Lord realm!

"Holy Lord realm… it really is the Holy Lord realm…"

Not too far away, the saint Empyrean had already long lost his previous haughty calm.

At the end of Lin Ming's battle with the Good Fortune Saint Son, the Good Fortune Saint Son had completely exhausted himself and it was likely this battle would affect his future cultivation. But on the other hand, not only did Lin Ming not have any permanent damage but he had broken through his cultivation base and become a Holy Lord!

The disparity was simply beyond description…

Chapter 1779 – The Rewards of Victory

Chapter 1779 – The Rewards of Victory

…

…

…

To an entire race, a single Holy Lord realm martial artist wasn't anything at all.

Amongst the human race of the Divine Realm alone, there were several hundred Empyreans, 3000 rulers of great worlds, the numerous Great World Kings of the many Empyrean Heavenly Palaces as well as those that were hidden, and as for ordinary World Kings and Holy Lord realm martial artists, they were simply innumerable.

When an ordinary martial artist broke into the Holy Lord realm, to someone on the level of an Empyrean, that was the same as a tiny bug breaking out of its cocoon. It simply wouldn't arouse their interest.

But, Lin Ming breaking into the Holy Lord realm left all the Empyreans present shocked speechless for a long time.

The half-step Holy Lord Lin Ming had already been strong enough to suppress the Good Fortune Saint Son. Then, just how strong would he be after becoming a Holy Lord?

If the current Lin Ming were to fight with the Good Fortune Saint Son again, just what sort of scene would that be?

Not too far away, the Good Fortune Saint Son had already awoken from his unconsciousness and swallowed a recovery pill.

Today was the most frustrating day he had experienced in his life.

During his battle with Lin Ming he had even burnt a bit of his blood essence and still lost. Even so, the damage to his mortal body was nothing compared to the blow to his deepest feelings.

In particular, after the battle finished, the seriously wounded Lin Ming had broken into the Holy Lord realm and had cast him further behind by a larger margin. When this was combined with the fact that Lin Ming was younger than he was, this left him unable to summon the courage to chase after him.

“Your Highness Wumo…”

Beside the Good Fortune Saint Son, the saint Empyrean sighed in his heart. When the saints invaded the Divine Realm, the Good Fortune Saint Son had won a series of victories. First he had led the grand army of the saints in an expedition through the Bright Luster World, obtaining countless accolades, and after that he had continuously challenged human World Kings and even a Great World King, beating them all one after another!

For the last several dozen years, the momentum of the saints had risen to the top of the wave. At the same time, the morale of humanity had been pushed into a pit. The Good Fortune Saint Son was originally someone with illustrious and nigh undefeated exploits, but today he had been defeated by Lin Ming and it had been an absolute loss!

The saint Empyrean didn’t know how to comfort the Good Fortune Saint Son. He could only say, “Your Highness, the day for our saint race to conquer the Divine Realm is not too far away. At that time… Lin Ming will absolutely not have had the time to grow. A dead genius is no genius at all…”

As the saint Empyrean spoke, the Good Fortune Saint Son didn’t seem to hear him at all. The Good Fortune Saint Son gripped his fists together, releasing explosive crackling sounds from his knuckles. He could not tolerate such a defeat. Even if the saints were to destroy humanity in the end, he had still lost to Lin Ming – this was an unchangeable fact as well as the ultimate disgrace of his life!

“Wumo! You have been defeated! According to our agreement, take out the methods for humanity to break into True Divinity as well as the Nine Orifices Exquisite Pill, and also cancel your marriage proposal to the demon race!”

Lin Ming grasped the Black Dragon Spear and pointed it towards the Good Fortune Saint Son. Killing intent gushed out from his body, forming a sound like rolling thunderclaps that stunned the world!

At this time, because Lin Ming had just made his breakthrough, his originally damaged body and energy had been restored by over half. Thus, as he spoke, his aura was extremely powerful. The sound waves of his voice caused space to shiver and the already severely wounded Good Fortune Saint Son found this difficult to withstand. His body shook and his complexion paled.

The saint Empyrean beside him released a wisp of astral essence and poured it into the Good Fortune Saint Son. Only then was the Good Fortune Saint Son able to relax.

To the Good Fortune Saint Son, this was an unprecedented humiliation. In the past, when hadn’t it been him who had used his aura to suppress and frighten others? Even when Empyreans were present, the Good Fortune Saint Son was still able to rely on the Grandmist Spirit Bead in his body to remain composed.

But now, his meridians and organs were damaged and his astral essence was in utter chaos. He was completely unable to stimulate the Grandmist Spirit Bead at all.

He had been entirely suppressed by Lin Ming.

The Good Fortune Saint Son gnashed his teeth and glared at Lin Ming with eyes that could kill. He waved his arm and two jade slips and a pill box shot out like arcs of lightning!

Pa!

The jade slips and pill box fell into Lin Ming's hand. The pill box shattered, immediately revealing a longan-sized pill. The pill was a deep green and had a fragrance that warmed the heart and mind. This was the Nine Orifices Exquisite Pill.

The Nine Orifices Exquisite Pill was a pill whose grade neared the True Divinity level. It had been personally refined by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and the materials used to refine it were extremely rare. It was a true miracle medicine for body transformation martial artists. For Lin Ming, it was extremely useful.

As for the two jade slips, they were True Divinity cultivation methods that could be used by humans. One was relatively complete and one was extremely incomplete.

Lin Ming cultivated the Asura Heavenly Dao thus these jade slips weren't too useful to him. But for the Empyreans of humanity, their significance was completely different!

As the many human Empyreans present looked at the two jade slips in Lin Ming's hand, their eyes shined.

These were human cultivation methods for breaking into True Divinity!

In the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago, the inheritances of humanity had been severed and breaking into the realm of True Divinity had become a myth that was no longer possible. To the Empyreans of humanity, this had become a pain forever lodged in their hearts.

Although they were clearly aware that even with these two sets of cultivation methods it was still incomparably unlikely for them to become True Divinities, there was still a ray of hope. For those dedicated to traversing the road of martial arts, what they feared the most was not that it was dangerous or arduous, but that there was no hope to continue at all.

For a time, the several human Empyreans present couldn't help but use their senses to probe the jade slips. Hope shined in their eyes without reserve.

Each one of them had extraordinary levels of experience. They were naturally able to see that these jade slips weren't fakes, but real True Divinity level cultivation methods!

"Humph! These half-dead geezers, do they really think they can break into True Divinity with this? Even if I gave them the jade slips it would still be useless!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son ferociously thought in his heart. Not only was becoming a True Divinity nearly impossible, but even if they could, who knew when that would happen? When an Empyrean cultivated, they used millions of years or hundreds of thousands of years as the unit of time. In the Good Fortune Saint Son's eyes, humanity would have long perished by then.

Even so, these two jade slips that Lin Ming won had an extraordinary significance for humanity…

"Lin Ming, you have really helped us a lot…"

Empyrean Vast Universe thanked from his heart. Beside him, Empyrean Divine Dream also slightly bowed. Although these two True Divinity cultivation methods didn't have much use to Lin Ming, he had still put forth the Black Dragon Spear in a gambling bet with the Good Fortune Saint Son. And, that Black Dragon Spear was definitely highly significant to Lin Ming!

Lin Ming had won these two True Divinity cultivation methods all in order to stabilize the hearts of the Empyreans of humanity and so that the Good Fortune Saint Son couldn't use these cultivation methods to bewitch them. Otherwise, humanity wouldn't even need the saints to attack. There would inevitably be traitors in their ranks that would cause humanity to be in an even more precarious position.

"We all owe Lin Ming our gratitude." Empyrean Divine Dream softly said. As she looked at Lin Ming, there was a complex emotion in her eyes.

The Divine Realm First Martial Meeting was when Divine Dream had first seen Lin Ming. At that time, Lin Ming had still been weaker than Hang Chi and Frost Dream and his talent was slightly inferior to that of Xian Moxian. Back then, she had only paid a minor amount of attention to him, not attaching too much importance to him in her heart. She never imagined that so many years later, Lin Ming would have such legendary accomplishments!

His growth could not be described with common sense.

“How terrifying. I fear that in another 100-200 years… Lin Ming will catch up to me…”

Empyrean Vast Universe wryly smiled as he looked at Lin Ming. He felt nothing but heartfelt joy at seeing Lin Ming’s breakthrough but he also felt it was unbelievable. 100-200 years from now, Lin Ming would only be a few hundred years old. To have strength comparable to an Empyrean at this age was mind-boggling.

It could only be said that Lin Ming’s talent defied the will of the heavens to begin with, and with the shifting trends of the world brought about by the great calamity, this allowed his achievements to surpass any reasonable logic.

“In this grand world, heroes will pour forth from the ranks. At that time, Lin Ming will inevitably be the one leading them. As for the other young elites, they will surely shine brilliantly, but no matter how dazzling they are they still won’t outshine Lin Ming…”

The new was constantly replacing the old. At that moment, Empyrean Vast Universe felt the true weight of his age.

Although he was an Empyrean, this great calamity was not his stage. Only Empyrean Divine Dream, Great Limitless Buddha, Emperor Shakya, Empyrean Demondawn, and other such peak Empyreans had the ability to stand upon the stage of the world. For them there was even a faint ray of hope that they could take one more step forwards and break into the realm of True Divinity!

In the skies, Lin Ming put away the Nine Orifices Exquisite Pill. With a wave of his arm the two jade slips shot out and fell into Divine Dream’s hand.

"Senior Divine Dream, these jade slips will be left in your care. I believe you are much more suitable for keeping them."

Divine Dream could be called the leader of humanity. If the jade slips were given to her it would give her words that much more weight. After all, Divine Dream was only the nominal leader of humanity and many Empyreans might not be willing to listen to her. But with these two jade slips, she would be the one controlling power and authority. Just who would dare not listen to her?

Divine Dream grasped these two jade slips that were still warm from Lin Ming's touch and heavily nodded. She would receive this gratitude. Although Lin Ming owed a graciousness to her, it was far inferior to how Lin Ming had just repaid the favor.

"Cultivate in peace then. Leave the war matters between humanity and the saints to me." Empyrean Divine Dream said with a sound transmission.

"Great."

Lin Ming could faintly feel that the true outbreak of the great calamity wasn't too far away. He had to make use of this remaining time as well as he could and increase his strength as much as possible!

Lin Ming clenched his fists and turned around, looking straight at Empyrean Demondawn and the Monster Emperor.

"Senior Demondawn! Senior Monster Emperor!"

Lin Ming's voice was filled with energy. Facing these two Empyreans his aura shined brilliantly, not weakening in the least!

Demondawn silently looked towards Lin Ming, speechless.

Today, Lin Ming's actions, all of his performances, could no longer be described as those of a peerless character. Rather, he could be called the number one junior within the entirety of the 33 Heavens!

Whether it was strength, talent, character, bearing, courage, or perseverance, he was simply perfection personified.

By all reasoning, such a character would have countless influences struggling to court him. Innumerable rulers and powerhouses would send out all of their most outstanding disciples, daughters, and granddaughters to Lin Ming, even as concubines.

In peaceful times, even Empyrean Demondawn would be glad and assured to see Xiao Moxian together with Lin Ming.

But now… the situation was completely different…

"Senior Demondawn, junior wishes to propose marriage. Please betroth Xian'er to this junior!"

Lin Ming cupped his fists together, his voice ringing out clear and loud.

As his voice spread through the audience, Xiao Moxian trembled. Her eyes were wet with tears.

At the start when Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son decided to battle, Xiao Moxian had been extremely worried for him. Later, when Lin Ming fiercely fought the Good Fortune Saint Son without falling back at all, she had felt a deep sense of pride. And now, after Lin Ming defeated the Good Fortune Saint Son, she felt endless joy.

Finally, Lin Ming had broken through to the Holy Lord realm and underneath the eyes of all present, he had proposed marriage a second time. Xiao Moxian's thoughts were in upheaval and she was finding it hard to restrain herself!

Chapter 1780 – The Flames of Hope

Chapter 1780 – The Flames of Hope

…

…

…

The first time Lin Ming proposed marriage he had been mocked as someone who was doing nothing but bringing shame upon himself. But the second time he proposed marriage, his words caused the expressions of the many Empyreans present to change.

When Xiao Moxian had journeyed with Lin Ming in the past, she had no expectations of any happy ending for them. Although she had stated several times that she didn't have any wild hopes of them ending up together in the future, what kind of girl didn't want to end up married with someone they sincerely loved?

Thus, Lin Ming had solemnly proposed twice.

At this time, Xiao Moxian's emotions were in upheaval. She could no longer think clearly, but she knew that within her lifetime she would always keep this memory in her heart. Even if she were to perish in the future great calamity because she chose Lin Ming, she would have no regrets in her life!

As Empyrean Demondawn saw the range of emotions pass over his granddaughter's face, he deeply sighed. Then, he waved his hand and took back the true essence lock he had placed within her. Immediately, strength was restored to Xiao Moxian. She felt her body lighten and then she turned to look towards Empyrean Demondawn.

From her angle, all she could see was his back.

That back was tall and strong, a sight she had gazed upon since her birth. But at this moment, for some reason Xiao Moxian only felt an infinite sorrow from that back.

“Go…” Empyrean Demondawn gloomily said.

“Henceforth you are no longer my granddaughter. The demon race also has no relations with you. Follow Lin Ming and assist him well. Make sure that his achievements are peerless. If there is even the tiniest shred of hope, perhaps he will obtain the power to turn the tide and rule the world. If so… please ask him for your sake… to leave a single incense stick for the demon race…”

Empyrean Demondawn’s voice reverberated in Xiao Moxian’s ears. At this time, he didn’t seem like the matchless ruler of the demon race, but only a poor old man whose actions had been compelled by circumstance. And in his heart, he had always felt nothing but the deepest love and concern for his granddaughter…

“Grandfather…”

Xiao Moxian bit her lips, unsure what pained feeling was rising in her heart. “Can’t you believe in Lin Ming? Believe in humanity? Do you really believe that there is no chance for humanity to survive the great calamity?”

“Humanity…” Empyrean Demondawn shook his head. “There are some things that you do not know. Three days from now, come and see me with Lin Ming. I will give you something and also tell you something…”

After Empyrean Demondawn finished speaking he didn’t stay any longer. During the monster race’s grand longevity feast, because of the battle between Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son, the longevity feast itself had become irrelevant.

The Good Fortune Saint Son also had no interest in dawdling here any longer. He immediately left the monster race and returned to the Bright Luster World.

As for the human martial artists, most of them stayed to celebrate the Monster Emperor's birthday. As for this longevity feast becoming as bizarre as it did, it had completely run counter to his expectations.

Originally, the human and monster races couldn't be called friends or enemies. But now, they were sharing drinks around the same table. This left the young elites of the monster race feeling this was all too weird.

All of this was because of Lin Ming.

After the Monster Emperor's grand longevity feast ended, three days passed.

News of Lin Ming defeating the Good Fortune Saint Son had been spread through all great influences into every intelligence network, soon reaching the entire Divine Realm.

The Good Fortune Saint Son had repeatedly challenged the World Kings and Great World Kings of humanity and had won again and again. The armies of the saints had pressed upon the territory of the human race and the Divine Realm was in a precarious position, teetering on unrest. At this time, humanity desperately needed a victory!

Moreover, this was a tremendous absolute victory that had been completely unexpected!

Before this, people only knew that Lin Ming had a 100 year duel with the Good Fortune Saint Son. Even if they didn't have much faith in Lin Ming to begin with, none of them imagined that after just 60 years, when there was still 40 years remaining, Lin Ming would have already defeated the Good Fortune Saint Son!

A half-step Holy Lord had battled and surpassed a middle Holy Lord!

Even though the Good Fortune Saint Son had used every possible move in his arsenal, including the Grandmist Spirit Bead, he still wasn't Lin Ming's match!

And, what was most terrifying was that after Lin Ming defeated the Good Fortune Saint Son, he had made use of that momentum to break into the Holy Lord realm and awe everyone present!

For a time, news was spread with headlines such as 'Lin Ming defeated the Good Fortune Saint Son and subdued the monster and demon races afterwards' or 'Lin Ming broke through the Holy Lord realm with strength nearing that of a half-step Empyrean' by every large intelligence network.

As the countless human martial artists of the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds heard this news, all of them seemed to be shot with a cardiac stimulant. They were filled with a zealous joy and celebrated daily.

In all the restaurants there would be people retelling the tale of how Lin Ming defeated the Good Fortune Saint Son.

Even though these stories had numerous embellishments, the people shouted out loud for them to be repeated as they were excited to the extreme.

Lin Ming's victory was the same as announcing to all of existence that the young elites rising from the ranks of humanity were not weaker than those of the saints!

All of the young Linmaniacs from various influences took Lin Ming as their goal and idol, worshipping him.

As for those Empyreans in their Heavenly Palaces and those that stayed in hidden worlds, they all praised Lin Ming's accomplishments. Many of them even rushed to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace the same day, preparing to wait for the return of Divine Dream and Lin Ming.

If one had to look for a reason, it was definitely because of the two human True Divinity cultivation methods that he had obtained. Many supreme elders that were stranded at the late Empyrean realm couldn't sit still upon hearing this news.

Cultivation methods to break into True Divinity, this was far too important for them!

Of course, only very few people could be like these Divine Realm Empyreans and go to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace to wait there for Lin Ming and Divine Dream to return. For the vast majority of martial artists, it was impossible to see Lin Ming. They could only step back and try to flatter some of the influences that were on good terms with Lin Ming.

For instance, the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

Because of Lin Ming, the current Ancient Phoenix Clan now had an amazing status.

They were given all sorts of precious resources, and many young talents rushed to join the Ancient Phoenix Clan. These Linmaniacs dreamt of becoming disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan like their hero was.

This also caused the Ancient Phoenix Clan to increase the threshold of disciples they accepted again and again.

Young disciples were the future of a sect. To have so many outstanding disciples also meant that a sect would have wonderful prospects.

And in order to allow the Ancient Phoenix Clan to rapidly develop and not delay the growth of these young disciples, Divine Dream Heavenly Palace specifically sent some World King level powerhouses to go to the Ancient Phoenix Clan as teachers.

At the same time, these people also brought cultivation resources and superior inheritances.

If this continued, the Ancient Phoenix Clan would soon become a World King Holy Land. Even becoming a Great World King Holy Land was only a matter of time and accumulation.

Because of the fierce duel between Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Son, the Ancient Phoenix Clan had become a bustling land filled with activity.

In the skies above the Ancient Phoenix Clan, countless people from innumerable large influences arrived. All sorts of spirit beast mounts, extravagant spirit ships, and majestic spirit boats filled the skies, blocking out all sight.

And as for Lin Ming's first wives, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan, as well as his little sister Lin Xiaoge, they obtained the endless attention and care of others.

After being in the Divine Realm for all these years, Lin Xiaoge sometimes went to the Ancient Phoenix Clan and sometimes went to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. And no matter where she went, she was guided with the full ability of those influences and numerous resources were given to her. When added with her not-too-bad perception to begin with, she was now at the late Divine Lord realm.

Although Lin Xiaoge had the ability to leap ranks to fight, she wasn't as heaven-defying as a true Empyrean descendant. Even so, for her to have such a cultivation at this age was more than enough to be proud of.

And at this time, amongst those people visiting the Ancient Phoenix Clan, many of them were Great World Kings.

A Great World King was the ruler of a great world. To the Ancient Phoenix Clan, they had once been legendary existences, able to annihilate the Ancient Phoenix Clan with a turn of their hands.

But even these people didn't have the qualifications to contact Lin Ming.

Even Empyreans were politely waiting at Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, so what were Great World Kings considered as? Thus, they could only come to the Ancient Phoenix Clan and greet Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan.

A wife's status was as great as their husband's. As these extremely high level overlords saw Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan, they were extremely polite and even faintly respectful.

The various precious congratulatory gifts piled up high in the cultivation chambers of Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, and Lin Xiaoge. If any one of these gifts were casually taken out, they would be enough to cause Holy Lord powerhouses to engage in a life or death battle for them. They were the ultimate stabilizing treasures of Holy Lord level Holy Lands.

But now, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan had enough of these treasures to fill entire rooms.

They couldn’t decline them even if they wanted to.

And as these overlords of various influences were currying favor with those close to Lin Ming, Lin Ming was actually together with Xiao Moxian. They were accompanied by Empyrean Divine Dream and avoided all eyes, quietly arriving at the Heaven Lifting Black Pagoda to see Empyrean Demondawn.

Just a while ago, Empyrean Demondawn had told Xiao Moxian that he had some words to say to them.

As for Empyrean Divine Dream following them, that was in order to protect Lin Ming. After all, the monster and demon races were not the allies of humanity. Even if Divine Dream didn’t believe that Empyrean Demondawn would use some disgraceful methods to deal with Lin Ming, she still had to plan for all possibilities.

Chapter 1781 – Demondawn's Advice

Chapter 1781 – Demondawn's Advice

…

…

…

Although the Monster Emperor's grand longevity feast had ended, the surrounding disciples in the Black Pagoda would still be enjoying a celebration banquet for another month.

When Lin Ming, Divine Dream, and Xiao Moxian entered the Black Pagoda, they didn't alert anyone at all. As they passed through the Black Pagoda, they entered a transmission array and went straight to the top.

Here, there was a giant hall. This hall had no light and was incomparably dark. But with Lin Ming and the others' eyesight they naturally weren't affected by such things. They could clearly see the back of a tall figure standing in the hall, wearing a long black cloak. This person was undoubtedly Empyrean Demondawn.

"Grandfather…"

Xiao Moxian called out softly, her voice shivering. To reunite with her grandfather in such a situation, Xiao Moxian was left in an extremely complex mood.

Empyrean Demondawn turned and wasn't surprised to see Divine Dream slowly following behind Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian. He only faintly said, "Sit."

Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, and Divine Dream took seats around the table with Empyrean Demondawn sitting across from them. After a long period of silence, he took off a ring from his finger and slid it across the table towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was startled. He glanced at Empyrean Demondawn and used his sense to probe the contents of the spatial ring. Upon inspection, he was surprised.

The inner space of this spatial ring was as broad as a miniature world; it was impressively an Empyrean spirit treasure level spatial ring.

At Lin Ming's level, ordinary Empyrean spirit treasures weren't too precious at all. But Empyrean spirit treasure level spatial rings were still exceedingly rare because refining such an object was extremely difficult.

An Empyrean spirit treasure level spatial ring possessed an extremely stable inner space and could hold extremely large objects.

As Lin Ming continued investigating the inner space of the spatial ring, he discovered a medicine garden filled with all sorts of rare and precious medicinal herbs. The medicine garden exuded a thick spiritual energy and was of an extremely high quality.

In particular, at the center of the medicine garden was a red spirit orchid. This spirit orchid was three feet tall and each leaf was as sharp as a sword that emitted a dense cold air. Lin Ming didn't doubt that if he could fold a leaf from this spirit orchid, he could use it as a sharp sword.

And at the center of this spirit orchid was a fist-sized fruit. This fruit was in the shape of a phoenix and looked remarkably lifelike. Even the textures of the phoenix feathers were evident, as if it were a mini-phoenix frozen in time.

Even though Lin Ming was far away from the spatial ring he could feel the terrifying fire origin energy contained within this phoenix fruit. If a fire-attribute martial artist were to swallow it, the advantages they would obtain could be imagined.

Moreover, Lin Ming could see that this fruit wasn't fully mature yet either. Once it matured, it would experience a qualitative leap upwards!

"This fruit…"

Lin Min was startled. He looked towards Empyrean Demondawn.

"This is a nirvana fruit. It has already been growing for several hundred thousands of years. Later when Xian'er was born, I planned to gift this to her. This medicine garden has a great deal of precious and rare medicinal herbs, but these herbs are deliberately chosen to act as the fertilizer for the nirvana fruit. They aren't meant to be picked, but rather allowed to wither and fall so that they can become compost in the soil beneath the nirvana fruit.

As Empyrean Demondawn spoke, Lin Ming was secretly dumbfounded.

When a poor mortal family planted medicinal crops, they would use fertilizer to nourish them. These fertilizers, besides being made from human and animal excrement, also included the ashes of plants. Some dead plants were even directly buried into the soul so that they could rot and be used as fertilizer.

When Empyrean Demondawn planted this nirvana fruit, he used all sorts of rare and precious medicinal herbs as the fertilizer, allowing them to ripen and then wither, falling into the soil.

These rare and precious spirit herbs had absorbed the spiritual energy of the world and gathered a nearly endless amount of essence. After they fell, this essence would also fuse into the soil where it would be absorbed by the nirvana fruit. Because of this, the quality of the nirvana fruit could be imagined.

Within the Empyrean spirit treasure level spatial ring, besides the nirvana fruit, there was also a pile of violet sun crystals on the other side of the medicine garden as well as a good number of nine sun jades.

Finally, there was something that caught Lin Ming's attention the most. In a space within this world, there was a slowly burning black flame.

This mass of flames burned peacefully as if it wasn't hot at all. But from this flame, Lin Ming could feel a terrifying annihilating aura.

Without a doubt, this was the Annihilation Flame Elemental that Empyrean Demondawn had agreed to give to Lin Ming.

If Lin Ming wanted to open the third Dao Palace – the Extreme Polar Dao Palace, what he needed was a pair of Empyrean grade Fire Elementals and Thunder Sources. Now he had obtained the Fire Elemental and was only missing a suitable Thunder Source.

"The things in this ring are for you and Xian'er. I agreed to give you the Fire Elemental already, and as for the nirvana fruit and other objects, those can be considered Xian'er's dowry. You are someone that has had countless lucky chances in their lifetime and will experience even more, so the things I can offer you are limited."

Empyrean Demondawn slowly said to Lin Ming. Many of the lucky chances Lin Ming obtained were at the True Divinity level. No matter how deep Empyrean Demondawn's background was, his treasures were limited to the peak Empyrean level, such as Empyrean spirit treasures and cultivation methods. Even if he took these things out they wouldn't be of much use to Lin Ming.

"Thank you Empyrean Demondawn."

Lin Ming took the ring in both hands and respectfully accepted it.

"Senior, you previously requested this junior to come here in order to give me something as well as to tell me something. May I ask what that something is?"

Lin Ming asked. Empyrean Divine Dream also leaned towards Empyrean Demondawn. Empyrean Demondawn was a very serious person, and if he were to solemnly invite Lin

Ming to a meeting it was likely that what he wanted to say was no trifling matter, and perhaps even involved the situation of war between humanity and the saints.

“Mm… it involves this upcoming great calamity…” Empyrean Demondawn laid down a soundproofing enchantment that shrouded everyone inside.

After hearing the words ‘great calamity’, Lin Ming’s heart chilled. Indeed, this was something related to the great calamity.

“As you know already, the saints came to my demon race and the monster race in order to form an alliance. You might think that us allying with the saints is to act against our interests, but the truth is that… because the saints wanted to hastily form the alliance, they disclosed some information to me and the Monster Emperor…”

As Empyrean Demondawn said this, Lin Ming straightened up and carefully listened with perked ears.

“The first is that because of some reasons, the True Divinities of the saints are unable to leave for the time being. As for whether or not this is because of their war with the spiritas or because they have some other more pressing matters to attend to, I do not know nor can I guess…

“The second is that the time for the saints to attack humanity is coming soon. It is not too far away at all… perhaps when those saint True Divinities have finished whatever it is that is occupying them, they will launch a full-on onslaught on the Divine Realm. This time might be more than a hundred years away or as short as several dozen years. Thus… you do not have much time remaining…”

Empyrean Demondawn’s voice was slow and heavy. But as these words fell into the ears of Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, and Divine Dream, it was like all three of them had been struck by a massive weight!

“You said that… the full-on onslaught of the saints could erupt within a hundred years?”

Empyrean Divine Dream eyed Empyrean Demondawn. A rare harried expression was in her eyes.

No wonder the monster and demon races had so quickly and decisively switched sides to the saints. Even if Lin Ming proved his potential and talent, he still wouldn't have changed Empyrean Demondawn's original plans.

This was because there was just too little time before the great calamity truly erupted.

A mere hundred years. No matter how talented Lin Ming was, it was impossible for him to become as strong as a True Divinity in that time span.

Rather, it should be said that if Lin Ming had the ability to face a weak Empyrean a hundred years from now, that would already be extraordinary!

But how could a Lin Ming who had the strength of a weak Empyrean have any effect in a great calamity that involved the extinction of a race?

Empyrean Divine Dream couldn't help but glance at Lin Ming. Lin Ming had bowed his head and was frowning. Empyrean Demondawn's words had covered his heart in dark clouds.

If what Empyrean Demondawn said was true, then there really was far too little time remaining.

The information he obtained originally was that the spiritas were at war with the saints. According to Lin Ming's estimations, the spiritas had strength similar to the saints, so it was impossible for them to be defeated within a hundred years.

That left a single possibility remaining, and that was that because of some event occurring to the saints and the spiritas, they had come to an agreement to reach a temporary ceasefire.

If so, then that was truly bad news!

In a mere hundred years, what could Lin Ming do?

"What I said just now came from the mouth of the Good Fortune Saint Son. And, my feeling is that what he said wasn't a lie. Lin Ming, I hope that you all take care of yourself and put your best into it. I do not wish to see your entire race be exterminated..." Empyrean Demondawn looked at Lin Ming. "And Lin Ming, I will give Xian'er to you. Please, look after her for me."

As Empyrean Demondawn said this he stood up, clearly signaling the dismissal of the others.

Xiao Moxian looked at Empyrean Demondawn and her heart tumbled with pain and sorrow. But in the end, she didn't say anything at all, instead following Lin Ming out of the grand hall.

Before she left, she looked back one final time to see that Empyrean Demondawn had already turned around and was departing. His tall back with his long and heavy cloak slowly faded into the endless darkness...

....

The short meeting with Empyrean Demondawn caused Divine Dream and Lin Ming to both suddenly awaken from the lingering joy after defeating the Good Fortune Saint Son.

If the full-out invasion of the saints really erupted within a hundred years then humanity wouldn't be prepared at all and they would be utterly defeated.

And if a saint True Divinity were to personally lead the troops, it would be nearly impossible for human Empyreans to stop them!

"Lin Ming... for the next several years, don't go out. You have just broken into the Holy Lord realm so consolidate your foundation at my Heavenly Palace... I will use everything in my possession to seek all possible lucky chances for you, so that your cultivation can increase as much as possible. I hope that within a hundred years, you will have strength equal to that of the weakest of Empyreans..."

Less than a hundred years left humanity with far too little time. Divine Dream also didn't know how to help Lin Ming. Just through going into seclusion one's cultivation wouldn't grow too quickly. Now that Lin Ming had reached the Holy Lord realm, it would be impossible for him to immediately move up to the next step. He needed time to slowly accumulate energy.

Empyrean Divine Dream had already formed a well-thought out plan. If the saints were to truly begin their large-scale invasion within a hundred years and humanity wasn't able to stop them, then their only choice was to send Lin Ming away ahead of time. As long as Lin Ming survived and broke into the True Divinity realm in the future, there would always be a hope that humanity would be able to one day reestablish itself.

However, after listening to Empyrean Divine Dream's suggestion, Lin Ming shook his head. He said, "There is only a hundred years left. This junior still has some plans where we might be able to struggle for some hope..."

"Oh?"

After hearing Lin Ming's thoughts, Empyrean Divine Dream looked at him with surprise in her eyes. "What do you plan on doing within the next hundred years?"

With Lin Ming's current boundary, no matter what he tried to do Empyrean Divine Dream feared that there wouldn't be much meaning to it. Compared to the entire saint race, his strength alone was far too weak.

Lin Ming said, "Junior wishes to go somewhere and see someone. Perhaps then there can be a change..."

Chapter 1782 – Lin Ming's Plan

Chapter 1782 – Lin Ming's Plan

…

…

…

"Oh? See someone?"

Empyrean Divine Dream's thoughts stirred. If Lin Ming wanted to see someone at this time then this person naturally wasn't some common character. Moreover, Lin Ming clearly implied that this person could influence the situation between the saints and humans; this left Empyrean Divine Dream puzzled. Amongst the entirety of humanity, Empyrean Divine Dream couldn't think of a single such person. "Is it someone you met in the Asura Road?"

Empyrean Divine Dream couldn't help but think this. If Lin Ming had met some True Divinity level character in the Asura Road then this person might have the smallest chances of helping and indeed changing the fate of humanity. But, why would a True Divinity powerhouse easily involve themselves in the great calamity? In order to resist the entire saint race, a single True Divinity wasn't enough, because the saints themselves likely possessed more than one True Divinity in their ranks.

As for what rank of True Divinity the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was, that was impossible to guess.

Lin Ming said, "Indeed, this person is someone that junior encountered in the Asura Road. But, in order for this junior to find her, junior will need the help of Senior Divine Dream. Junior once heard that Senior Divine Dream ventured into the Soul World, grasping the principles there and dual cultivating essence and soul and finally establishing the Divine Dream Law, right?”

Empyrean Divine Dream looked at Lin Ming with surprise. “Are you saying you want to go to the Soul World?” She had originally thought that Lin Ming would return to the Asura Road.

Lin Ming nodded. Passing through the God Lamenting Wall to go to the Soul World was difficult. As for passing through the Asura Road, a martial artist had to use the Asura Command to do so, and the Asura Command only returned a martial artist to their original universe.

Lin Ming said, “Junior wishes to see a spiritas Empyrean. She is an acquaintance of mine…”

“Big Brother Lin, do you want to see Sheng Mei?” Xiao Moxian suddenly asked. If Lin Ming was looking for a spiritas elder, her first thought was naturally Sheng Mei.

At the very least, if they found Sheng Mei they would be able to clarify some matters. They would be able to find out why the saints were entering a truce with the spiritas. To humanity, this was an extremely important matter.

“Spiritas Empyrean?” Divine Dream asked, surprised. “An Empyrean… do you think she’ll be of help if you find her?”

“I’m not too sure…” Lin Ming couldn’t say with absolute certainty what would happen. If he found Sheng Mei, even if there wasn’t much she could do to help him there were at least some hopes.

“Senior Divine Dream, the person that junior wishes to see may only be an Empyrean but she is an extremely high level figure within the spiritas race. Junior wishes to find out from her just why the saints and spiritas would form a truce in the middle of their war, and whether or not humanity could pay some price to form an alliance with the spiritas.”

The enemy of an enemy was a friend. If humanity could ally with the spiritas then this great calamity might not be so terrifying.

"Form an alliance with the spiritas!"

Divine Dream's eyes lit up. If this was possible then humanity would truly find a slim hope to survive!

But forming this alliance might not be so simple.

Not to mention that humanity might not be able to fulfill the conditions that the spiritas put forth, Lin Ming wanting to find Sheng Mei in the massive Soul World wouldn't be easy at all.

To travel an ultra-long distance across the nearly limitless space of the universes of the 33 Heavens as well as be responsible for such an important mission that concerned the life or death of an entire race, this responsibility all fell onto Lin Ming's shoulders. Divine Dream deeply sighed. "Lin Ming, in these past years you have done far too much for the human race. To think that the many Empyreans of humanity would have a junior like you bear such weight on your shoulders..."

Lin Ming said, "Senior Divine Dream, please don't consider me an outsider. Humanity is my roots. If humanity is exterminated then I will become a leaf without roots... in any event, I will try my best to help humanity survive this great calamity. Concerning the question I asked Senior Divine Dream about the entrance to the Soul World, may I ask whether or not it still exists?"

"It is still there... it's just that..." Empyrean Divine Dream pressed her eyebrows together, pausing for a moment before continuing to say, "It is a transmission array in an ancient ruin that I once stumbled upon during my youth. It is something passed down by unknown predecessors of humanity from 3.6 billion years ago, or even 4-5 billion years ago. For me to have my current achievements, a great reason for that is because I discovered this ancient ruin.

“This ancient ruin is in an extremely mysterious space. And because of some strange reasons, there is a crack in the God Lamenting Wall at this area…”

The walls dividing the 33 Heavens were by no means perfect. For a very small number of exceptions there were sometimes ‘wormholes’ or ‘black holes’ that broke through the space barriers in extremely mysterious places.

However, even if such mystical places existed it was still nearly impossible for a martial artist to pass through. But, if there was a True Divinity level powerhouse that was willing to sacrifice a portion of their cultivation, they could transform these mystical lands and form a connection through the barriers dividing the 33 Heavens.

When the saints first entered the universe of humanity to kill Empyrean Primordius and steal away the Grandmist Spirit Bead, that was all due to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign personally creating a connection that passed through the God Lamenting Wall.

However, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn’t find a wormhole or other crack in the wall. Rather, he used his powerful cultivation to penetrate a hole through the God Lamenting Wall.

But the ancient ruin that Empyrean Divine Dream mentioned was different. This place was originally a weak point of the God Lamenting Wall to begin with, and due to the efforts of the unknown ancient True Divinities, these places had become something similar to a transmission array connecting two universes that could be preserved for a long time.

After listening to Empyrean Divine Dream, Lin Ming was startled. To transform a weakened space and form a transmission array connecting through the God Lamenting Wall, this was truly an extremely skilled method. Perhaps even an ordinary True Divinity would be unable to do so, and one would need to be an outstanding existence amongst all True Divinities to succeed.

The history of humanity had once been grand and illustrious, with countless peerless elites rising from the ranks. But all of these people had been forgotten in the sands of time with nothing left behind…

Even the ancient ruin that Empyrean Divine Dream found had been left behind by some unknown ancient human sovereign.

Empyrean Divine Dream said, “Lin Ming, only I know the location of that ancient ruin. It is just that because so much time has passed, the transmission array has become too dilapidated to maintain stability. If you want to forcefully enter then I fear it will be incredibly dangerous…

“The transmission array passes through the God Lamenting Wall where there are unfathomably fatal space storms. My worry is that you won’t be able to withstand them…”

“They are that strong?” Lin Ming was shocked. Empyrean Divine Dream already had a complete understanding of his strength and still had such worries. It could be seen from this just how horrifying those space storms were.

Empyrean Divine Dream said, “The terrifying space storms are just one aspect… another aspect is that the transmission array has become extremely frail over the ages, and it is now the same as a rotten plank bridge. If you use too much force on this fragile little bridge and furiously fight you will be able to force back the space storms. But the bridge itself might not be able to withstand the damage and could break apart. If so, you won’t even have bones remaining!”

Hearing Empyrean Divine Dream’s description, Lin Ming felt a chill crawl up his spine.

If he used too much strength then the transmission array itself would collapse, meaning he still wouldn’t be able to cross it!

Thus for this transmission array he would have to find some way to display the greatest efficacy with a limited level of strength. Only then would he be able to barely pass.

Perhaps in the entire Divine Realm there weren’t even a handful of people that could fulfill such harsh requirements…

Empyrean Divine Dream said, “Millions of years ago when I passed through the ancient transmission array it was in a much better state. But that is just how things were. After I crossed, the transmission array broke down even further. If you want to cross now, I have no idea what the situation will be like…”

Empyrean Divine Dream looked at Lin Ming, her lake-clear eyes filled with worry.

Lin Ming responded, “Even if it's difficult I must try. It is always better than waiting in the Divine Realm for that hundred year deadline to come and death to take us all. Moreover, when I go to the Soul World it’s to look for Sheng Mei but also to gain experience and temper myself. I won’t find that by secluding myself in the Divine Realm…”

In the Divine Realm there was no longer anyone that could contend with Lin Ming. To rule a tiny peaceful corner of the vast cosmos would be disadvantageous to Lin Ming’s growth.

Only journeying into the greater world and developing his field of vision, finding new and stronger opponents and struggling for more lucky chances would allow Lin Ming to grow into the person he needed to be.

“Since you have already firmed your resolve I will not try to change your mind. Lin Ming… you are humanity’s hope. Don’t forget that. For all of humanity, no matter what you try to do, nothing will be as important as making sure you stay alive. As long you are alive, that will be the greatest victory for us. If you can continue living for several hundred years or even millions of years, there will come a day when humanity will see the light of dawn once more!”

“Mm… I understand…”

Lin Ming took a deep breath and gripped his fists. The higher a martial artist’s cultivation was, the more difficult it was to go further. From a World King to an Empyrean, from an

Empyrean to a True Divinity, these two large boundaries required an unbelievably long period of accumulations. This could not be substituted with any lucky chance.

Although Lin Ming might be able to compare with the weakest of Empyreans a hundred years from now, that was only in terms of fighting strength. In cultivation alone, it was unlikely Lin Ming would have broken into the World King realm.

There was still a long road ahead of him.

And the saints would not give him the time to walk down that road.

This was why Empyrean Divine Dream said that as long as Lin Ming lived on, that would be the greatest victory.

“I wonder what level I’ll reach several hundred years or even millions of years from now? At that time, will I be able to fight the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign?”

As Lin Ming thought of this, his heart filled with a heroic daring and fighting intent. This great calamity was a disaster to all of humanity, but at the same time it was also the seed for a great prosperous age to grow with countless lucky chances all around. Every young genius in the Divine Realm would be baptized in the fires of the great calamity.

Waves struck the shore but when the tides washed away, the real gold would emerge. For those that died, their deaths would be a loss, but for those that lived, all of them would become extraordinary individuals.

“Senior Divine Dream, when junior goes this time, my future will be uncertain. This junior would like to request that Senior Divine Dream takes care of my family, friends, and wives.”

As Lin Ming spoke to here, he looked at Xiao Moxian. “Xian’er, you should also stay at Divine Dream Heavenly Palace…”

“Big Brother Lin…” Xiao Moxian stiffened. As she looked at Lin Ming, there was some grievance in her eyes, and a bit of unwillingness. She had just reunited with Lin Ming and was now able to follow him in the future, but Lin Ming had decided to go to the Soul World and part ways for now. Of course she felt uncomfortable about this.

“I understand…” Xiao Moxian whispered, forcing out a smile. “Big Brother Lin, I will wait in the Divine Realm for your return.”

“I’m sorry…”

Seeing Xiao Moxian’s smile, Lin Ming felt even sadder. If possible he would definitely have loved to bring Xiao Moxian with him. No matter how perilous the Soul World was, he was willing to live and die with her.

But Xiao Moxian was pregnant.

Moreover, the child within her had an unusual level of talent. Before it took form, it was already able to absorb the power of the world. This was the reason why Xiao Moxian’s combat strength had dropped so drastically.

In this sort of situation, if Lin Ming brought Xiao Moxian to the Soul World to adventure he would definitely have all sorts of scruples. There would be many dangerous places he wouldn’t dare to go.

During this journey to the Soul World the perils were unknown, and in a sense it was the same as cutting off all paths of retreat. If he had too many worries it would be impossible to accomplish anything important. Then in this case it would be better to leave Xiao Moxian in the Divine Realm and have her cultivate in peace. This would be beneficial to both Xiao Moxian and their child.

Chapter 1783 – The Phoenix Clan's Grand Celebration

Chapter 1783 – The Phoenix Clan's Grand Celebration

…

…

…

One month later, at the Divine Realm's Crimson Light World, the Ancient Phoenix Clan with a hundred million years of inheritance was celebrating an unprecedentedly grand event.

The many Elders of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, the 72 Palace Masters, no matter if they were deep in seclusion, refining pills, or out on a mission, all of them were notified to immediately stop and return to the headquarters of the Ancient Phoenix Clan to celebrate this grand event.

However, even though the Elders and Palace Masters of the Ancient Phoenix Clan had gathered together, none of them were able to stand within the central palace and could only wait outside. This was because there were simply far too many renowned figures at this grand event.

These figures were the rulers of the Divine Realm that the Ancient Phoenix Clan would have found nearly impossible to contact in the past.

But now, all of these people had raced to the Ancient Phoenix Clan and were exceedingly polite.

Within these groups of people there were World Kings, Great World Kings, and even legendary Empyreans!

For a time, countless heroes of the Divine Realm had converged upon the Ancient Phoenix Clan. This was something that disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan would never have dreamt of in the past.

The Ancient Phoenix Clan was only a peak ordinary Holy Land. Who would dare to imagine that there would be a day when so many high level figures would gather at the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters, the level of people no less than those that had gone to the Monster Emperor's grand longevity feast?

And, this grand event was not a clan member breaking into the World King realm or a new Patriarch taking over, but was because of a junior – Lin Ming was hosting his marriage here.

And at the same time this was also to celebrate Lin Ming's victory over the Good Fortune Saint Son!

Within the Divine Realm, Lin Ming could be said to be known by all; he was at the height of his fame!

A half-step Holy Lord had fought the Good Fortune Saint Son, defeating him to obtain the cultivation methods to break into True Divinity. Then, he forced Empyrean Demondawn's hand to betroth Xiao Moxian to him. After accomplishing all of this he had broken into the Holy Lord realm, overawing all present.

These achievements set off tumultuous waves all throughout the Divine Realm. Even Empyrean powerhouses would have a slight awe in their faces and voices when they spoke of Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's current strength already surpassed that of many Great World Kings and wasn't too far away from that of an Empyrean. Thus, Lin Ming could no longer be regarded as a junior but as someone of the older generation, a figure who would one day become a leader of humanity.

Originally, Lin Ming hadn't wanted to hold a victory celebration or anything like that. With the great calamity approaching time was far too urgent for him so where would he have the thoughts to do such things?

But according to Divine Dream, the current human race was filled with too much sorrow and suffering. They truly needed a victory celebration to propagandize the defeat of the Good Fortune Saint Son and inspire the morale of humanity.

Therefore, this grand event was held with great gusto and jubilation.

And because Lin Ming didn't have much time remaining, he wanted to return to the Ancient Phoenix Clan to hold his wedding before he went to the Soul World. Thus, it was decided that he would hold his wedding and this victory celebration at the same time and this was the reason why so many high level figures of the Divine Realm had gathered at Crimson Light World.

The current Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters had long been given news in advance to prepare for the victory celebration. They established a titanic array, gathering over a thousand floating celestial mountains that had hundreds of thousands of brilliant rainbows soaring between them. Phantasmal light filled the air, beautiful to the eyes. Between the magnificent rainbows there were also glorious jade places floating about, continuously tumbling up and down. Countless rare spirit flowers, spirit trees and other world treasures bloomed in full beneath the support of many spells.

Thick heaven and earth origin energy condensed into raindrops. Innumerable luxurious spirit ships, dazzling divine carriages, and jade-crafted spirit boats flew through the skies. A near infinite seeming number of saint beast mounts flew about, bathing in the hazy and ephemeral mists of spiritual energy. Looking from afar, everything seemed like a paradise of gods.

This great array that held so many Empyreans and Great World Kings couldn’t be arranged in time by the Ancient Phoenix Clan alone. Because the Ancient Phoenix Clan had obtained news in advance, they worked together with several great influences of the Crimson Light World and many high level array masters sent by Empyrean Heavenly Palaces to complete all the arrangements within a month.

For these arrangements, these great influences had put forth more than enough capital.

After all, this wasn’t just for Lin Ming, but also to help perfectly manage the victory celebration and boost humanity’s morale!

“Vast Universe Heavenly Palace Palace Master – Empyrean Vast Universe!

“Traceless Heavenly Palace Palace Master – Empyrean Traceless!

…..

“Ruler of the True Martial World – the True Martial World King!

“Chief Disciple of Dark Demon Monarch – Sage Skyvalley!”

…….

The master of ceremonies presiding over this event constantly shouted out shocking names and titles without end. These people all had a shocking status, and even half-step Empyreans and the 3000 Great World Kings could only be lined up in the back.

As the disciples of the Ancient Phoenix Clan heard these horrifying names, all of them were somewhat panic-stricken.

Before this, it had been impossible for them to see any of these characters no matter what they tried. To ordinary martial artists, these figures were like spiritual gods, haughty and aloof!

Because of this grand event, the Ancient Phoenix Clan could be said to be rising to fame. As the Elders and Patriarchs of the other three God Beast Clans looked on at the festivities, a strange feeling percolated in their hearts.

The truth was that a hundred million years ago, the four God Beast Clans explored the God Beast Mystic Realm together and found four incomplete God Beast corpses buried deep underground. That find had been the foundation that helped them develop to their current state. However, they were also limited to this scale and their background restricted them from further development. But now, because of Lin Ming's presence, the Ancient Phoenix Clan had leapt straight into being a top influence of the Divine Realm. Even Empyrean Heavenly Palaces had to give them several points of face.

The disparity was just far too great.

"Haha, Lin Ming, if you continue at this rate it won't be long until you become an Empyrean. Even stepping into the True Divinity realm is just a matter of time."

"Hehe, what Vast Universe said is right. Moreover, when Lin Ming becomes a True Divinity he will surely be an outstanding individual amongst all True Divinities!"

Many human Empyreans rushed to congratulate Lin Ming.

Lin Ming bowed towards them one at a time like a respectful junior would.

Although these Empyreans spoke to Lin Ming as if he was their peer, Lin Ming had no choice but to be respectful to them. After all, these people were his seniors and they were countless times older than he was.

Like this, the victory celebrations continued for three days.

As for news of the grand calamity arriving early, Empyrean Divine Dream didn't reveal this yet. She planned to convene a secret meeting of Empyreans after the victory celebration was over in order to prevent panic from spreading.

Thus, at this grand event, many human Empyreans didn't know about the news of the great calamity. They all drank and enjoyed themselves to their heart's content.

One reason was for congratulating Lin Ming and another reason was because of the True Divinity cultivation methods that Lin Ming had obtained after defeating the Good Fortune Saint Son. What Empyreans didn't wish to break into True Divinity even in their dreams?

Moreover, according to what the Good Fortune Saint Son had said, these two True Divinity cultivation methods had been obtained from the Primeval Realm Ruins and were no trifling matter. All of them certainly wanted to see them.

……….

Five days later, at nightfall…

Lin Ming sat in a beautiful garden surrounded by lush and enchanting spirit plants. In front of Lin Ming was a stone table that had platters of fragrant spirit fruits and 100,000 year spirit wine piled atop it. If a low cultivation base martial artist were to enjoy any of these spirit fruits or wines, their cultivation would rapidly increase, and their body and inner world would benefit.

"Big Brother… are you planning to leave again?"

Sitting in front of Lin Ming were three women. They were Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, and his little sister, Lin Xiaoge.

Because of Lin Ming's reputation, these three women who were closely related to him had received endless attention and care over the years. Even the rulers of large influences were respectful upon seeing them.

But, what was most unfortunate was that even though Lin Ming was the most important man in their lives, he had been gone for a great deal of time. Lin Ming had gone to the Asura Road for 60 years and when he finally returned he attended the Monster Emperor's grand longevity feast, and soon after he would have to go to the far off Soul World.

Once Lin Ming went to the Soul World, it was unknown just when he would return.

Only in the days before the victory celebration was Lin Ming able to enjoy his time with Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu. For these days, Lin Ming completely laid down all thoughts of cultivation and training and spent all his free time with Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan, enjoying a rare and happy time.

Lin Ming sighed. “I have to go, but before that I must take a trip down to the lower realms. You should all come with me too…”

“Lower realms?”

Mu Qianyu was startled. “Do you plan on returning to the Sky Spill Continent?”

“Yes. I have to return to the Sky Spill Continent and take something. For me it is quite important…”

As Lin Ming spoke, both Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan were shocked. In their opinion, the world of the Sky Spill Continent was only a world of the lower realm and there shouldn’t be anything there that was too valuable to the current Lin Ming.

There was only the Eternal Demon Abyss, an ancient ruin left behind by Empyrean Primordius. However, Lin Ming had already gone there.

Chapter 1784 – Return

Chapter 1784 – Return

…

…

…

Sky Spill Continent –

Deep in the 8000 Mile Black Swamp, the clouds were dark and gloomy like ink.

The only light here was the flashes of lightning occasionally shimmering in the layers of clouds.

In the endless depths of lightning, it sounded as if infinite rumbling chariots were passing by. Bolts of lightning as thick as giant pythons tore through the skies like ferocious beasts, making it clear that this was an absolute life forbidden zone of the Sky Spill Continent – the Sea of Miracles!

In the Sky Spill Continent there were many so-called life forbidden zones, but most of these life forbidden zones were not guaranteed deathtraps. For instance, if a peerless powerhouse were to enter they could still rely on their dreadful cultivation to safely enter and leave. However, no matter what martial artist entered the Sea of Miracles, all of them perished here!

Even in the past when Yang Yun began his grand plan to drag in all the heroes of the world and subjugate them, he had done so by taking advantage of the moment when the Temple of Marvels that floated above the Sea of Miracles had fluttered to the edge of the area. Only then did he begin his plans. Otherwise, if Yang Yun were to pierce deep into the Sea of Miracles he would have died all the same.

On this day, the Thunder Dominion that was formed high above the 8000 Miles Black Swamp was bustling with activity.

Golden battle chariots galloped through the endless clouds to arrive here. They broke into the furthest edges of the Thunder Dominion, using flying flood dragons to rush into the surrounding area.

Standing on the largest golden chariot was a heroic and vigorous-looking young man and woman.

The young man was handsome and dashing, with a face as soft as jade. The woman was a peerless beauty of her time, her looks completely glamorous.

These two people were royalty from the nearby Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. They were both proud children of heaven.

In the last hundred years, the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom had grown much stronger. Currently, they had expanded enough to consider the outermost edge of the 8000 Mile Black Swamp as a tempering field for the disciples of the royal family.

However, the depths of the black swamp where the Thunder Dominion shined high in the skies was still a restricted area that no one dared to step into.

“This is the Thunder Dominion. Our goal here is to stay at the edge for several days. If we can catch a few earth-step Thunder Souls, then our father sovereign will definitely hold us in much higher regard.” The handsome young man said, his face filled with excitement. He looked sufficiently confident as he stared into the depths of the glittering Thunder Dominion.

Although the Thunder Dominion held numerous risks and perils, this was also a land of great lucky chances. If one could travel through the Thunder Dominion they could surely train their martial arts and temper themselves to a new level.

In particular, it was said that there were incredible divine treasure troves hidden within this land. These types of rumors lit the heart on fire.

“Big Brother, we must be careful. Last time, Thirteenth Brother and Seventh Brother had Divine Sea realm Protectors but they were still severely wounded by the rolling thunder. If we recklessly enter then we might suffer the same dangers they did…” The beautiful young woman said, not too optimistic. There were some vague worries in her tone.

“What the Princess says is true. The Thunder Dominion is extremely perilous and all of us must be at full alert upon entering. Even if the Divine Sovereign personally came he still wouldn’t dare to venture in too deeply… the depths of the Thunder Dominion is a true absolute life forbidden zone that no one care enter…” A loud voice echoed out from behind the golden chariot.

The one speaking was a middle-aged half-step Divine Sea master.

The young Prince thought otherwise upon hearing this. He certainly knew that the Thunder Dominion was risky, but if he didn’t take these risks to try for better rewards, how could he establish a foothold amongst the many Princes of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom?

Just as he was lost in thought, the Prince suddenly saw that deep in the Thunder Dominion where mist filled the air, arcs of blue thunder fell down, seeming as large as a mountain.

As the thunder passed through the heavens and earth, it was like the galaxy was falling into the world. Massive star-like runes glittered in the air, bringing with them an unstoppable momentum as they blasted into the Thunder Dominion.

Staring into the middle of this dazzling thunder, the young Princess suddenly covered her mouth. She raised a shaking arm, pointing towards the direction of the thunder as she shakily said, “There… that… in the middle of the thunder, there are some people…”

The half-step Divine Sea Protector quickly looked towards where the Princess was pointing. With vision that was sharper than a hawk's, he could see that in the endless arcs of electricity, there were several vague shadows…

"What is happening? That is already dozens of miles deep into the Thunder Dominion… could a middle or late Divine Sea master have arrived?"

Several dozen miles deep into the Thunder Dominion contained an annihilating thunder that could strike outsiders with a ruinous power. Of the powerhouses of the Skill Spill Continent, only middle and late Divine Sea martial artists dared to intrude so arrogantly.

At this time, where the mountain-like thunder fell, it was like a giant rock had crashed into a calm lake surface. With a loud eruption the originally much calmer Thunder Dominion suddenly began violently rioting.

The layers of black clouds floating high above the Thunder Dominion suddenly appeared far more ferocious and sinister. Waves of thunder rose up, piercing into the heavens.

Arcs of golden red thunder as thick as pythons shot out from the depths of the Thunder Dominion. These arcs of thunder were accompanied with a horrifying destructive aura that swept out with an unstoppable momentum.

Wherever this golden red thunder went, the void would tear apart and the black fog would be annihilated.

"This is bad!"

That half-step Divine Sea Protector was panic-stricken. The thunder at the edge of the Thunder Dominion was already terrifying enough, but this golden red thunder should originate from dozens or hundreds of miles deep into the Thunder Dominion and was far more powerful.

Without thinking much further, the Protector slapped his hands atop the golden chariot. The runes decorating the chariot shined with a golden light that created a golden barrier around it.

Bang!

The moment after the barrier activated, the golden chariot was submerged in an endless sea of golden red thunder that savagely and continuously attacked the golden shield.

A massive human phantom appeared behind the half-step Divine Sea Protector that helped support the barrier.

At the same time, in the pupils of the Protector, he was able to see deep into the Thunder Dominion and clearly make out the figure of the person who had accompanied that mountain-like thunder.

The moment he saw the facial features of the black-haired youth who was illuminated in the Thunder Dominion, the Protector was horrified. A name resounded in his heart, that of a supreme youth who had once mastered the entire Sky Spill Continent.

In the past, the Protector was a sixth stage Life Destruction martial artist that had attended a martial arts meeting for the younger generation. At that time, he had watched with his own eyes as many Divine Sea supreme elders, those figures that were considered heaven-shaking existences of the Sky Spill Continent, had surrounded this youth with reverence and awe in their eyes. This was a scene he could never forget.

“How is this… that person… returned?”

The half-step Protector shivered and froze where he was.

The young Prince and Princess beside him had rarely seen their Protector lose his composure like this.

They couldn’t help but think, who is ‘that person’ the Protector spoke of?

And at this time, that person's lightning-illuminated figure had already disappeared. It was only after a long daze that the Protector was able to gather his composure. Flustered, he quickly took out a symbol talisman from his spatial ring and ignited it, then throwing it into the air…

Such a major event was absolutely something he had to report to the Nine Furnace Divine Sovereign.

…………..

Lin Ming calmly looked at the raging Thunder Dominion in front of him. He allowed the golden red thunder to crash upon his body as it pleased, all while a golden Thunder Source crackled and swirled in the palm of his hand. This scene left him sighing with emotion.

The events of the past rose up in his mind like a rising tide.

This was his home world.

Long ago, he had been chased by his enemies into this area, and through a stroke of fate managed to obtain a great lucky chance. With his back against the wall, he had been forced into the 8000 Mile Black Swamp by the Asura Divine Kingdom and had to risk his life several times. Afterwards, he returned here for the Temple of Marvels where he fought Yang Yun and nearly died.

These scenes that flashed through his mind seemed to have occurred just yesterday.

Xiao Moxian was floating nearby. On her beautiful face was a little bit of curiosity.

"Big Brother Lin, this is the Sky Spill Continent you were born at? Even though this is just a tiny corner of the lower realms, it actually has such a strange and marvelous land. I can feel that deep in this Thunder Dominion there exists some powerful spiritual treasure."

The Thunder Dominion seemed to be disturbed by the sudden arrival of the group. Massive bolts of thunder fell down without end.

Flashing within the middle of every volley of thunder were faint thunder runes. It was a strange sight.

But as this thunder fell onto Xiao Moxian, it also had no effect at all.

Instead, the arcs of thunder were caught by the black nirvanic flames that shrouded Xiao Moxian and were constantly swallowed up.

“Big Sister Xian’er’s senses are truly sharp. It’s incredible!”

Lin Xiaoge laughed from beside Xiao Moxian. After the victory celebrations were finished, Xiao Moxian, Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, and Lin Xiaoge had become familiar with each other.

At the very start when Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu met Xiao Moxian, all of them were a bit cautious of the other side. Xiao Moxian had a special and unique status and as the latecomer it was natural for it to be a little awkward.

But afterwards, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan learned what Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming had gone through and experienced in Tragic Death Valley and also that they were later forced into a dead end in Bai Qi’s Tomb by Tian Mingzi. Without any way out of that disaster, Xiao Moxian had given herself to Lin Ming. At the intersection of all sorts of coincidences lining up, she had helped Lin Ming break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace to launch his counterattack and finally strike down Tian Mingzi.

After learning of all this, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan felt nothing but the deepest gratitude towards Xiao Moxian. If it weren’t for Xiao Moxian, Lin Ming really might have died to Tian Mingzi.

As a result, the relationship between the three women had become much closer.

For this trip to the lower realms, Xiao Moxian had come with them. Originally there was an enchantment that surrounded the Sky Spill Planet that had been laid down by a peak Empyrean. Powerhouses that didn’t originate from the Sky Spill Planet were unable to enter this world. However, Xiao Moxian had hidden herself in the Magic Cube and within the Magic Cube that was unrestricted by the Laws, they were able to bypass Empyrean Primordius' enchantment and smoothly enter the planet.

Lin Ming said, "The Sky Spill Planet has a massive hollow that pierces through the entire world. One end of this hollow is the Eternal Demon Abyss and the other end is the Sea of Miracles. The Eternal Demon Abyss was left behind by Empyrean Primordius in the past, and if I'm not wrong, this land is where Empyrean Thunder Punishment left behind his own inheritance and ancient ruin. When Empyrean Primordius struck out and pierced all the way through the Sky Spill Planet, Empyrean Thunder Punishment was struck all the way through to here and before he died he conveniently left behind his inheritance, which was the reason why the 8000 Mile Black Swamp and the Thunder Dominion was formed.

"There are some strange thunder aura fluctuations in this Thunder Dominion. In the end, it is still an Empyrean ruin. Since you are all here you must be extra careful." Lin Ming nodded towards the others, carefully warning them.

Xiao Moxian said, "What could thunder of this level do to me? Big Brother Lin, hurry and go. Me and the two big sisters will stay here with Xiaoge to await your good news. The power of thunder here is also quite unique and the heaven and earth origin energy is rich. I want to study it a little..." Xiao Moxian lightly rubbed her stomach, feeling the little life forming within her. After coming here, she actually felt her child stir up a little.

Perhaps because this child was Lin Ming's flesh and blood, the little life had an inexplicably incredible affinity to the power of thunder. Now, it was actually slowly swallowing up the surrounding thunder as if it were breathing.

As for the black nirvanic flames that surged around Xiao Moxian, the reason they appeared was because the little life within her had triggered them.

Chapter 1785 – Thunder Punishment's Inheritance

Chapter 1785 – Thunder Punishment's Inheritance

…

…

…

"Mm, sounds good."

Lin Ming nodded. In the past, Empyrean Thunder Punishment was also a superior Empyrean if not a peak Empyrean. Any place of inheritance he established would not be easy to enter. Xiao Moxian was pregnant, and as for Lin Xiaoge, Mu Qianyu, and Qin Xingxuan, they were far from his strength. He didn't want them to recklessly experience any dangers by entering deep into the Thunder Dominion.

"Go early and come back early!" The women looked at Lin Ming, a soft color in their eyes.

Lin Ming lightly nodded. Then, his gaze shifted to deep into the Thunder Dominion. With a wave of his sleeves he broke into the storm like a bolt of lightning. Time didn't wait for anyone and with the full saint race invasion coming faster than thought, he needed to go to the Soul World as soon as possible. Before going to the Soul World, Lin Ming needed to make another breakthrough and increase his strength.

And the fastest way to make that breakthrough was to open the third Dao Palace – the Extreme Polar Dao Palace.

According to the Celestial Tyrant Manual, the Extreme Polar Dao Palace required two different types of energy to direct and catalyze the breakthrough. Lin Ming chose thunder and fire and in order to refine the pill required for the Extreme Polar Dao Palace, he needed an Empyrean level Thunder Source and Fire Elemental. Lin Ming had already obtained the Annihilation Fire Elemental from Empyrean Demondawn but now lacked a Thunder Source. With this, he naturally thought back to Empyrean Thunder Punishment.

It was certain that in the past Empyrean Thunder Punishment had possessed a top grade Thunder Source. Otherwise after he died there wouldn't be such a massive Thunder Dominion that appeared above the Sea of Miracles and the 8000 Mile Black Swamp.

Now, Lin Ming only wanted to obtain the Thunder Source as soon as possible and combine it with the Annihilation Flame Elemental to make his breakthrough.

Bang!

Arcs of thunder lashed at Lin Ming like endless whips. But, they all vanished upon touching him without causing any damage at all.

After breaking over 40 miles deep into the Thunder Dominion, the power of thunder became increasingly strong.

This was different from the last time that Lin Ming had entered the Thunder Dominion. Now, the true meaning of thunder within Lin Ming had already reached the seventh level boundary.

Facing this rumbling thunder, all of it turned into endless thunder runes and source Thunder Laws within Lin Ming's eyes. The thunder and fire above the Heretical God Tree within his body began to resonate with this thunder, helping him unconsciously clarify the true meaning of thunder and gladdening his heart.

Flying further in, the thunder light began to turn a deep purple.

Thunder roared through the world, turning into purple pythons and winding about.

A power of thunder a hundred times greater than before smashed into Lin Ming. As a result, all of this power of thunder was swallowed up by Lin Ming, intermingling with the thunder and fire that hovered atop the boughs of the Heretical God Tree.

As Lin Ming broke further and further in, the deep purple thunder light turned a destructive black… and then back to gold…

Zizizi!

Arcs of multi-colored thunder twined around Lin Ming, finally condensing into traces of dense thunder runes that percolated in his muscles, as if he was a god of thunder being reborn.

After delving further into the Thunder Dominion, Lin Ming's understanding and experience in the Thunder Laws became even deeper.

When Lin Ming reached 90 miles into the Thunder Dominion, the thunder turned from golden red to an ephemeral purple gold.

Not too far in front was the 90 mile edge of the Thunder Dominion. A purple white dreamy light suddenly appeared like a sea amongst parting clouds, seemingly endless.

This mystic light was like the glow of a sunset. It illuminated the world, captivating the heart with a breathtaking beauty.

Lin Ming could feel that even though this purple white light appeared as calm as a placid sea, there was actually a wild and strange strength contained within it.

"We're finally here." Lin Ming whispered. His deep eyes looked through the dreamy mystic light in front of him and sighed.

The last time he entered the Thunder Dominion, he was able to sense that the most dangerous place was this 90 mile Thunder Dominion.

In his eyes, the dreamy mystic light before him became massive thunder runes that floated up and down like chains of islands.

Within these runes was the existence of the true meaning of thunder, making his heart itch.

Lin Ming was well aware that this place was the true edge of Empyrean Thunder Punishment's inheritance.

As he continued forwards, the dreamy thunder continued washing over his body.

The Heretical God Tree within Lin Ming's inner world rose. Endless thunder dragons hovered above the branches. As more and more power of thunder intruded here, it turned into thunder runes that stayed within him.

In the past this illusionary thunder would have horrified him. But now, it wasn't able to harm him at all.

In a single breath he pierced a hundred miles deep into the Thunder Dominion. It was like his entire body was covered in a silver-white layer of armor, an extremely ghostly sight.

"Mm?"

On Lin Ming's normally expressionless face, a rare solemn look appeared.

At the 100 mile Thunder Dominion, the thunder here was absolutely still. Thunder balls quietly floated in the air, seeming peaceful.

As for Lin Ming, with his current divine sense he was able to clearly see that the distortions around the thunder balls were shattered space. This space formed a cage around each thunder ball, sealing the thunder ball at its central point.

Deeper past these thunder balls, there were islands that floated up and down, emitting a strong aura of vitality.

And even further in there were increasingly intense fluctuations of life. Deeper in there were continuous mountain ranges and snaking rivers, all of them exuding the blood vitality of powerful life forms…

Lin Ming had seen these sights before. But as he saw it now, he was even more shocked.

In his vision, trillions of runes tumbled about like grains of sand, condensing into thunder balls.

And from the rules in which the thunder balls were arranged, he could make out clear lines.

These thunder balls were a continuous wall, each thunder ball as large as a brick. Within the walls of thunder balls were mountain ranges, rivers, and so forth.

Every thunder ball contained an inexplicably mystical force, each one resonating and constantly shifting along with the others. With the way these billions upon billions of transformations constantly changed, this should be a heaven-shockingly grand array.

Lin Ming didn't doubt that if he tried to forcefully enter past the thunder balls and triggered them it would set off a chain reaction of explosions.

This sort of explosion would be enough to crack apart a planet. Although he wouldn't die he would be severely wounded.

And the initiation of the chain reaction might automatically activate other mechanisms that Empyrean Thunder Punishment had left within, causing all the inheritances to be lost. The gains just weren't worth the cost.

Lin Ming's eyes flashed. He calmed his mind and deeply pondered how to deal with this situation. Empyrean Thunder Punishment's inheritance had been carefully hidden in the deepest depths of these thunder balls. If he wanted to enter he would need to unravel this thunder ball array formation.

Lin Ming currently had a ridiculous accumulation of knowledge. The Asura blood had contained a part of the Asura Road Master's infinite memories, and he had also swallowed up the memories of the dark divine runic grandmaster Shadow Overflow and several others. In terms of understanding array formations and the structure of runes, he had a vast breadth of expertise.

His pupils shined with a brilliant light. Within his gaze, every fluctuation and change of energy in the thunder ball array formation was clearly reflected.

He sat cross-legged in space and began to rapidly deduce the formulaic structures in his mind.

Gradually, an abstract of the entire thunder ball array formation appeared in his mind like a divine runic symbol's structural diagram.

Through the endless deductions, the innumerable changes were peeled away like threads of a cocoon.

Suddenly, a sharp light burst out from within Lin Ming's eyes like bolts of lightning. He stood up and thrust out the Phoenix Blood Spear.

As the spear thrust out, a cold red light drew a strange path through the air that conformed to the Heavenly Dao Laws and instantly arrived in the middle of the thunder balls. The extremely fierce spear light rumbled into a central point of the sealed space.

Within the originally perfectly fitted wall of thunder balls, an area began to shake and tear open like a slit in fabric.

A sparkling mystical power of thunder gushed out like starlight from the slit.

This strange mystic power of thunder was completely different from anything Lin Ming had experienced in the Thunder Dominion so far. It carried with it a vast and ancient aura, as if it had flowed out from the rivers of time, filled with a life of its own.

As some thunder balls bumped into these star-like power of thunder, they actually began to form lush branches and leaves that were overflowing with vitality. It was a strange sight to witness.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

As this small hole appeared, Lin Ming instantly shot out a million spear strikes, alternatingly hitting areas all over the thunder ball array formation and making the hole even larger.

The thunder ball array formation began to shake. Finally, an opening the size of a person was exposed with an endless power of thunder wildly surging out of it.

It was like a door of light had been opened.

Behind this door was still the gruesome roars of ancient beasts that seemed as if they could shake the world. There was also the outlines of massive mountain ranges that stretched out to the horizon, floating up and down within the thunder barrier.

Lin Ming's heart chilled. He knew that he couldn't miss this chance and quickly rushed in.

After entering the depths of the 100 mile Thunder Dominion, he could feel the atmosphere of boundless years past.

Beneath his feet was ground completely formed by condensed thunder crystals. In the far off distance he could make out innumerable islands that floated in the void.

And above these islands were giant trees that exuded an immense mystic power of thunder.

Every tree had countless condensed thunder dragons that circled around the trunk.

The trees were around the height of two people. They were surrounded by verdant green grass that shimmered with the power of thunder, making it an extremely strange sight.

Lin Ming could see that in the far off distance, there was a massive mountain range blocking the way that towered into the skies where it was hidden by thunder clouds.

At the summit of this mountain range was an inexhaustible mass of thunder clouds that converged into an endless vortex, seeming timeless and magnificent.

One could even faintly make out that on the peak of the highest mountain, there was a giant palace.

This palace was so high that it was impossible to see the end. All one could see was that the mountain-sized golden gates emitted an endless mystic power of thunder.

It was like a giant sun was burning without end at the top.

"...The land of inheritance!" Feeling the aura emanating from the palace, the Heretical God Tree within Lin Ming and the many thunder dragons that wound about it began to cry out in excitement.

Lin Ming could clearly the seventh level true meaning of thunder. It actually emitted an incredibly desirable aura as if it had a spiritual wisdom of its own.

Like there was something within the golden palace that was calling out to him.

Lin Ming was heated with excitement. Just as he was about to rush over, he heard a loud sound; it was the roar of a beast that seemed to echo through the heavens and earth.

"Mm?"

Lin Ming was startled. After all, this was a land of inheritance formed after Empyrean Thunder Punishment died. Although it was inferior to Empyrean Primordius' inheritance, it was still extremely terrifying.

Even though Lin Ming had stepped into the Holy Lord realm, he still remained vigilant upon entering here and didn't dare to lower his guard.

The roar that shook the world had come from within the golden palace.

Lin Ming's mind went on alert. His footsteps crossed the void and he soon reached the summit of the mountain peak, right in front of the grand golden palace.

Chapter 1786 – Entering the Land of Inheritance

Chapter 1786 – Entering the Land of Inheritance

…

…

…

The palace of dark purple thunder crystals stretched into the skies. A gate of two massive carved doors blocked Lin Ming like twin towers.

As soon as he approached the doors of this palace, Lin Ming could feel a suffocating and unfathomably deep aura, one as vast as the sea that was emitted from every inch of the structure.

Just as Lin Ming was about to open the doors of the palace, his heart suddenly chilled.

Roar!

A deafening cry spread out from the golden gate.

On this golden gate, the originally lifelike carving of a thousand foot thunder dragon came to life.

It broke free from the golden gate and clawed at the air. Its body carried an incredibly vast electric current that crackled space.

As the thunder dragon hovered in front of the door, a terrifying thunder aura gushed out from its eyes as it regarded Lin Ming as an invader.

“I am the guardian spirit beast of an Empyrean Holy Land! For those that dare tread foot upon this sacred ground and defile this land, all that awaits is death!”

The dragon's head dropped down and its lantern-like eyes filled with purple electricity tightly stared at Lin Ming. Its voice was deep and bass, like a roiling thundercloud obliterating everything before it.

As if it wanted to suppress the will of everyone it encountered.

Lin Ming only faintly frowned, not flinching in the least.

Towards Empyrean Thunder Punishment, he held a little bit of vigilance in his heart. As for things like awe and reverence, he didn't feel any of that.

That fellow had once been Empyrean Primordius' sworn brother in the past, but he actually secretly colluded with the saints to betray him. In the end, Empyrean Thunder Punishment had been struck down and killed by Empyrean Primordius, and the place where he fell became Thunder Punishment's land of inheritance.

Towards an Empyrean who had such a filthy character, Lin Ming didn't have the tiniest bit of goodwill.

The only reason he came here was to take away something he needed.

If anything dared to stop him, he would cut it down and continue on.

After defeating the Good Fortune Saint Son and stepping into the Holy Lord realm, Lin Ming's combat strength had reached an unprecedented level, so why would he be afraid of some mere guardian spirit that had been deeply slumbering for a hundred thousand years?

The Phoenix Blood Spear released a resonant cry. A crimson flame phoenix flew out, swirling around the Phoenix Blood Spear with an intense fighting spirit.

A red light shot out of Lin Ming's flesh and blood, following and joining with his spear strike as it cut a beautiful path through the air that followed the Heavenly Dao. Like a rainbow, the spear tore through the void, curling up endless blood red waves of air.

With a loud blast, the spear cut directly into the purple thunder dragon's reverse scale.

In an instant, a purple electric light collided with the radiant spear light, causing waves of energy to spread out.

In the high heavens, all thunder clouds for a hundred miles were washed away by the terrifying waves of energy.

This purple dragon that seemed unbearably arrogant issued a mournful scream. A massive number of dragon scales the size of a boulder were instantly shattered into several pieces by the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Every dragon scale that fell off turned into pure thunder energy that tore through space before eventually dissipating.

"Mm? It still hasn't died? It truly is worthy of being a thunder spirit condensed through the years by Empyrean Thunder Punishment's land of inheritance. Its strength is about that of a Great World King." With a single spear strike Lin Ming was able to accurately judge the strength of this guardian spirit beast.

After all, his spear strike contained over 800 million jins of strength.

If this thunder dragon was able to survive his spear strike, it must be considerably strong.

Although Empyrean Thunder Punishment was someone that lacked any sense of morals, in the end he had still been a superior Empyrean with an immeasurably deep level of strength in the past.

The thunder dragon was enraged. For the last 100,000 years it had guarded this Empyrean land of inheritance. On the Sky Spill Planet, there was not a single being that dared to offend its draconic majesty.

But now, there was someone that had caused it pain. The thunder dragon even perceived a threat to its existence.

As a guardian spirit, its instinctual desire was to eliminate this threat.

In its sparkling purple pupils, stars began to shine. Thunder balls the size of comets began to appear in the skies, blocking out the heavens.

Each thunder ball contained a dreadful annihilation aura. Thunder clouds accompanied them, all of them restlessly stirring up.

In an instant, these countless thunder balls fell towards Lin Ming like a meteor shower.

Lin Ming frowned. The Heretical God Tree appeared behind him and began to rise, growing taller and towering upwards.

In an instant it became a lofty tree over 10,000 feet high, its crown reaching into the skies.

On one side of this tree was a carpet of purple leaves. These purple leaves emitted a terrifying aura and resembled thunder dragons, emitting a true meaning of thunder that couldn't be resisted.

On the other side of the tree, fire phoenixes perched on the branches. Heavenly tribulation flames burned, even burning holes in space.

The thunder dragons sent out a dreadful dragon majesty as they soared upwards. As the thunder balls came crashing down, the thunder dragons seethed with excitement. They opened their jaws wide in anticipation and began swallowing up the thunder balls.

Every time these thunder dragons swallowed up a thunder ball, arcs of purple electricity would spark over their bodies and they would roar in comfort. They would even grow larger.

It was clear they benefitted greatly from this.

As the purple thunder dragon in the skies saw all of this its heart shook. These thunder balls were a manifestation of its life spirit and the explosion of a single one was enough to severely wound a Holy Lord realm martial artist.

But, that strange large tree had appeared, and it was even occupied by countless thunder dragons that could gobble up the thunder balls?

This caused the massive purple thunder dragon to be even more enraged.

A dragon’s roar came bellowing out from its throat. Its massive figure rose up into the air, breaking through the clouds of thunder.

Its massive body turned into a bolt of lightning as it hurtled towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming’s eyes exploded with a sharp light. Ripples of condensed essence energy appeared around his body as his blood vitality began wildly raging like a flooded river.

The surrounding void began to tremble with his every gesture.

With a single step, the ground split apart, causing a massive gully several hundred miles long to appear.

Like an arrow he shot up into the skies. Without avoiding or evading, he directly collided with that purple thunder dragon.

Amongst the human race, the toughness of Lin Ming’s mortal body was unparalleled.

After opening the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and also breaking into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, Lin Ming had been able to use his mortal body to completely roll over the Good Fortune Saint Son. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that his moving body was comparable to a moving planet.

Even if he only opened a single Dao Palace right now, he would still be completely fearless of this purple thunder dragon that was formed from countless arcs of thunder.

Bang!

Lin Ming’s momentum was like a planet as he smashed into the purple thunder dragon.

In an instant, endless arcs of thunder swirled up from the giant dragon’s claw and bombarded Lin Ming’s body.

Zizizi! Zizizi!

As this endless thunder fell onto Lin Ming's body, all it could do was leave behind the faintest black marks on the surface of his skin.

Seeing such a tough body, the purple thunder dragon couldn't help but feel fear.

Lin Ming's blood vitality surged. His spear strikes struck out like infinite waves. In an instant, innumerable spear shadows appeared in space as their strengths superimposed upon each other.

Finally, the entire Phoenix Blood Spear began to hum and cry. Thunder and fire wove together atop the spear point, like thousands of purple and red solar flares were occurring at once. Massive tracts of space collapsed and endless space storms howled out from the holes, increasing the potential behind the spear strike even further.

The spear directly nailed into the purple thunder dragon's head.

Ka ka ka.

With a deafening cracking sound, the purple thunder dragon screeched in pain. A slit had appeared in its extremely hard head.

After all, this purple thunder dragon had only been formed by a tiny bit of Empyrean Thunder Punishment's essence energy and blood vitality before he died.

It was because it had been tempered for 100,000 years that it had been able to substantialize its own body.

But even with such a body, how could it resist Lin Ming's heaven-shaking strike?

The entire purple thunder dragon was finally torn apart through the slit by the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Bang!

A world-shattering explosion erupted. Endless thunder essence energy spewed out into the world before quietly dissipating.

At the same time, the golden gates with the purple thunder dragon carving also dimmed down.

Then, in the moments after that, the golden gates began to loudly swing open.

As the gates opened, the mysterious sound of the Great Dao constantly echoed out from within, accompanied by words that shook the world.

Every word inspired the soul and awakened the mind to truth.

Every word absorbed the mystical power in the void and emitted a faint trace of thunder energy.

All of this floated in space.

"...This is someone explaining the source Great Dao of the power of thunder..."

As Lin Ming listened to these sounds, a trace of surprise appeared on his face.

He had already grasped onto the seventh level of the true meaning of thunder. In terms of the Thunder Laws, he possessed a profound understanding.

After listening for just a little bit, he immediately understood just what this strange language was trying to say.

These were all things he had never heard of before. They were an understanding of the essence of the Great Dao of Thunder that was far deeper than what he knew.

"This is the Great Dao of Thunder left behind by Empyrean Thunder Punishment."

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. After intruding into the Thunder Dominion it was extremely important for him to obtain the Thunder Source left behind here. But, if he could temper his own Thunder Laws and obtain a deeper understanding that Empyrean Thunder Punishment once possessed, that would also be a lifelong benefit.

As he stepped into the grand hall of the palace, Lin Ming felt a great and powerful aura, like a mountain pressing down on his heart.

He was startled and looked towards the direction where this aura came from.

In that direction, he could see a faint tall figure standing in the center of the hall.

This figure wore a purple black robe that exuded an aura of thunder. Its entire body surged with the mystic power of thunder and even the ground beneath its feet became hazy, as if it had transformed into thunder essence energy.

Just by glancing at this figure, Lin Ming's heart shook. This person was simply a god of thunder. Even the true meaning of thunder in the Heretical God Tree was galvanized by this person's shadow. A strange flow of the Dao beat in tandem around this figure, scattering in all directions without end.

However, in the center of this person's chest was a fist-sized hole.

In the center of this hole was the aura of chaos. It gathered there, unable to be dispersed as it also released a powerful pressure.

The strength of this pressure surpassed that of almost every other Empyrean Lin Ming had encountered so far. Even so, it was incredibly familiar.

This pressure belonged to an ancient Empyrean – Empyrean Primordius!

That chaos energy was also the most source essence energy of the universe – grandmist energy.

"That hole is the fist wound left behind by Empyrean Primordius? Could this be Empyrean Thunder Punishment's corpse!?" Lin Ming gulped in shock.

“Well done. After so many years, someone was finally able to enter here…”

At this time, a voice filled with grandeur and majesty resounded in the grand hall.

This sudden voice filled with Lin Ming with surprise. He focused his eyes, staring at the figure in front of him and finally making out his dragon-like beard and deeply contoured features.

Chapter 1787 – Thunder Punishment's Remnant Soul

Chapter 1787 – Thunder Punishment's Remnant Soul

…

…

…

In the darkened hall, the figure in front of Lin Ming that he originally thought was a corpse suddenly rose up, its eyes flashing open!

For a time two green lights lit up the hall. Those sharp eyes pierced through the darkness like twin bolts of lightning.

Lin Ming was aghast. He took a sudden step back. To encounter such a situation here would leave anyone creeped out.

"Thunder Punishment hasn't died?"

This thought raced through Lin Ming's mind, causing a cold chill to crawl up his back.

Lin Ming had originally suspected that Empyrean Primordius hadn't died.

If that were true then it wouldn't be strange for Empyrean Thunder Punishment to have not perished either, but instead be severely wounded like Empyrean Divine Mist and have sealed himself away to maintain his life.

If so, then this situation wasn't good at all.

Facing this person who had once been sworn brothers with Empyrean Primordius and whose strength reached the upper levels of Empyrean powerhouses, Lin Ming didn't dare to take any rash actions before understanding the situation more.

"After so many years, someone was finally able to enter here... what a rare sight..." Empyrean Thunder Punishment's voice constantly fluctuated, but the tone remained slow and deep.

Lin Ming silently looked out at Empyrean Thunder Punishment as he rapidly assessed his strength. He could faintly feel that Empyrean Thunder Punishment was currently in a very poor state.

"Is he a remnant soul...?"

Lin Ming wondered. If only a remnant soul remained that had attached onto Empyrean Thunder Punishment's corpse, then to the current him this wouldn't be too terrifying at all.

"Is Senior the one who created the Thunder Dominion? Could this place be the land of inheritance that Senior left behind?" Lin Ming falsely asked.

"Indeed. This Thunder Dominion was created by me 100,000 years ago." Empyrean Thunder Punishment's heavy voice droned on. "For you to arrive here is your good fortune!"

As Thunder Punishment spoke these words his eyes blazed at Lin Ming, wanting to completely see through Lin Ming's inner world.

Feeling the probing of Empyrean Thunder Punishment's divine sense, Lin Ming's thoughts chilled. He hurriedly hid away things that shouldn't be seen by Empyrean Thunder Punishment like the black dragon egg, Primordius martial intent energy, and other things.

Even the overly powerful Asura Laws and the black hole created by the Divine Seal Art were covered up. This was because if Empyrean Thunder Punishment were to find such things it would naturally arouse suspicion.

It was impossible for a normal martial artist of the Divine Realm to possess such things.

After hiding these away, Lin Ming's inner world became far more ordinary. Even so, his more ordinary inner world left Empyrean Thunder Punishment shaken just as it was. He looked at Lin Ming with amazement in his heart.

He originally assumed that Lin Ming might be some interstellar wanderer who had accidently stumbled onto the Sky Spill Planet and who also possessed ordinary talent. Even so, Empyrean Thunder Punishment still had to leave his inheritance with Lin Ming, because asking for a top talent to come to some remote place like the Sky Spill Planet was just impossible.

If Empyrean Thunder Punishment could hand down his inheritance he would be more than content. But, he never imagined Lin Ming's talent would be so extraordinary.

"Your talent is much better than expected..."

Empyrean Thunder Punishment felt this was unbelievable. In truth, his ability to sense talent was limited and because he was only a leftover remnant soul, the force behind this divine sense was also ordinary. If Empyrean Thunder Punishment were to know what Lin Ming's true battle strength was, he might have been shocked unconscious.

"Senior's praise is too much. This junior's talent is mediocre. It's only through some lucky chances that I've found some heavenly materials to consolidate the foundation of my blood vitality and obtain my current achievements." Lin Ming casually explained.

"Heavenly materials? Empyrean Thunder Punishment repeated, startled. He immediately nodded. "Yes, your blood vitality billows into the sky, and it even seems to contain the aura of a God Beast. Without many heavenly materials to support you it would indeed be impossible for you to reach such heights. This proves that both your destiny and foundation are outstanding and that you are sufficient to become my descendant."

Empyrean Thunder Punishment leaned forwards a little, his gaze focusing on Lin Ming's face, as if waiting for an elated expression to show up on it.

However, Lin Ming's face remained stiff, without any response at all.

This left Empyrean Thunder Punishment frowning a little. But thinking about it further, perhaps this youth simply didn't know who he was, so he wouldn't be aware of what the significance behind his inheritance was.

Thus, Empyrean Thunder Punishment lightly coughed and said, "You probably don't know my identity. In the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds, I am the Empyrean of Thunderlight World – Empyrean Thunder Punishment. In the past I freely roamed the Divine Realm and my strength was also amazing even amongst Empyreans. The Thunder Punishment Heavenly Palace that I established was a peak Empyrean influence of the Divine Realm that had gathered countless outstanding geniuses. My Heavenly Palace even approached the number one Empyrean influence of the Divine Realm – Mount Potala!

"If I choose you as my descendant then that is completely different from taking you as a disciple. A disciple is someone to be taught my inheritance, but as a descendant not only would I teach you my complete inheritance but you would also possess all my treasures and take on my legacy. That is the same as inheriting the entirety of an Empyrean. Since you have already cultivated to such a boundary you should understand the meaning behind my words, right?"

As Empyrean Thunder Punishment spoke, he looked at Lin Ming expectantly. Lin Ming stiffly nodded, "Understood."

"Mm..."

Empyrean Thunder Punishment dragged on his word, seeming a bit reluctant to continue. "For you to not panic in the face of such a lucky chance proves that your disposition is quite good. It's no wonder you've achieved such achievements at such a young age."

As Empyrean Thunder Punishment spoke, his figure suddenly rose up. He stepped through the void, one foot at a time, until he arrived right in front of Lin Ming.

That old and solemn face stopped just a foot away from Lin Ming's own. From this distance, Lin Ming could feel a massive pressure slowly press down on him, as if a god of thunder had traversed the river of time, walking through 100,000 years to meet him.

Although Empyrean Thunder Punishment only had a wisp of his remnant soul remaining and not much strength left, this was the pressure of an Empyrean. Lin Ming raised his guard.

He could feel that the remnant soul in front of him contained the source of thunder. Although it was just a remnant soul he couldn't underestimate it.

"Are you willing to inherit the whole of my legacy?" Empyrean Thunder Punishment slowly spoke, his words drilling into Lin Ming's ears.

Although Empyrean Thunder Punishment was secretly unwilling, he had still once been a supreme martial artist. He didn't want his lifetime of knowledge to be lost to the world, vanishing without a single successor.

Lin Ming's thoughts raced. He asked, "Inheriting Senior's inheritance shouldn't be so simple, right? May I ask what conditions there are?"

"Haha! Smart young boy!" Empyrean Thunder Punishment laughed out loud. The pupils that he stared at Lin Ming with emitted a strange light, becoming increasingly hazy like a dream.

"...if you want to inherit my legacy, you must make an oath..." As Empyrean Thunder Punishment spoke, his pupils became increasingly profound and tinged with a deep hatred.

"I want you to vow that after you inherit my legacy, in your lifetime you must seek out all the roots and branches of that old dog Primordius and kill them all off. If you cannot complete this task then you will be punished by the heavens and your divine soul will be annihilated!"

As Empyrean Thunder Punishment spoke, he couldn't hide the strong killing intent behind his words.

A strange color filled Lin Ming's complexion. In truth, he already expected this kind of oath.

"Kill off all the roots and branches of Empyrean Primordius? Isn't that just wanting me to commit suicide? I am the only one who inherited Empyrean Primordius' legacy after all."

As Lin Ming was thinking, Empyrean Thunder Punishment continued to say, "In addition to that, in the future you must gather soul-restoring heavenly materials for me. I only have a wisp of remnant soul remaining, and although my body has been preserved for 100,000 years using a secret technique, it has already reached the point of decay and cannot be further used. You must help me in my rebirth!

"I have a secret skill that can use the power of thunder to refine a living soul and suck out their soul essence to make up for my own lacking soul force. You must gather souls for me, the more powerful the better. Those souls that possess talent that can fight past their levels, those have the best effects!"

The power of thunder was originally the nemesis of souls. If a powerful soul was struck by thunder it would be turned into soul force essence. As for spirit marks and so forth, all of that would be turned to nothingness and there wouldn't be any side effects to absorbing the leftovers.

And Empyrean Thunder Punishment was a master of thunder arts. This sort of demonic soul-restoring devil arts could be said to perfectly suit him.

"If I am to understand it, then after inheriting Senior's inheritance I must endlessly kill people to help restore Senior's soul?" Lin Ming asked.

"That's right. The road of martial arts is a path of murder and destruction to begin with. Not only must you help restore my remnant soul but after doing so you must find me a suitable body so that I can seize it and be truly reborn!"

Chapter 1788 – Thunder Punishment Sword

Chapter 1788 – Thunder Punishment Sword

…

…

…

As Empyrean Thunder Punishment finished speaking, Lin Ming coldly sneered in his heart. So, it seemed that this land of inheritance that Empyrean Thunder Punishment left behind was not just because he wanted not only to pass on his legacy, but to have his wisp of remnant soul be reborn.

And to use this thunder-type cultivation to refine the essence of souls to nourish his soul force, this was something that required one to reap an incalculable number of lives.

However, what Empyrean Thunder Punishment said was not wrong. The road of martial arts was one filled with murder and destruction. As long as one was a martial artist it was inevitable that their road would be paved with the lives of others. Lin Ming, Primordius, Xiao Moxian, all of them were the same in this regard. Lin Ming himself cultivated the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, a soul refining cultivation method similar to what Empyrean Thunder Punishment suggested.

However, up until now, there was a single line that Lin Ming had never crossed – he had never deliberately gone to take innocent lives.

"What, you aren't interested? Heh, if this were 100,000 years ago and I were to release news that I was receiving a descendant, who knows who many people would stampede over each other to kneel at my feet, hoping that I would accept them. Yet here you are, still hesitating!"

Empyrean Thunder Punishment frowned, extremely annoyed.

Lin Ming lightly said, "Junior is naturally interested and what Senior says is also correct. For great accomplishments, killing some people isn't much at all. Moreover, up until now I have also slaughtered innumerable people. However, this Empyrean Primordius though…"

Lin Ming quietly raised this point. He wanted to understand some of the events from 100,000 years ago.

However, Lin Ming's question seemed to poke at Empyrean Thunder Punishment's sore point. Empyrean Thunder Punishment coldly said, "Humph, that old dog Primordius was originally my sworn brother but because of a mere treasure he turned against me and finally attacked me. He thrust me through this planet, destroying my body and tearing apart my soul. What a cruel and vicious man! My millions of years of cultivation were instantly destroyed and now all that's left over is this wisp of remnant soul. My only choice was to seal myself away here and linger about, waiting for my chance to come. If I cannot destroy his legacy how could I possibly rest!?"

Empyrean Thunder Punishment's tone was sharp and filled with malice. Lin Ming quietly listened. It seemed that Empyrean Thunder Punishment's explanation of events was completely different from what the Black Dragon had said.

Lin Ming wouldn't blindly believe any side. However, according to Divine Dream's third-party view of events, in addition to the invasion of the saints, the tomb of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing, and other references, Lin Ming could judge that what Empyrean Thunder Punishment said wasn't too true.

The so-called treasure that caused Empyrean Primordius to turn against him was undoubtedly the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

As for why they had become enemies, there were many possibilities. Perhaps Empyrean Thunder Punishment thought that he was owed a part of the Grandmist Spirit Bead, or perhaps Empyrean Thunder Punishment wanted to borrow the Grandmist Spirit Bead to practice his devil arts, but Primordius hadn't allowed this, and eventually their conflicts and contradictions had accumulated and accumulated and finally erupted.

It was far too normal for such a valuable treasure to arouse the greed of others.

Lin Ming maintained his composure. After a period of silence, he said, "So that's what happened. Then, the two requests that Senior spoke of are well within reason."

"Haha, great!"

Empyrean Thunder Punishment nodded. "Since that's the case, then accept my inheritance. The moment you accept my inheritance my remnant soul will also temporarily reside in your body. I will plant a curse seal in your spiritual sea, so don't think of violating the oath you made!"

As Empyrean Thunder Punishment spoke, his remnant soul suddenly surged upwards. A mass of pale green soul force began to rise up from his body, forming into runes.

These runes seemed to swim around like fish. Wrapped in Thunder Punishment's remnant soul, they appeared in the skies of Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

After some time, Empyrean Thunder Punishment's remnant soul slightly dimmed. At the same time, a cruel and chaotic soul force appeared.

Hu hu hu –

Ghostly cries swept through the air. Above Lin Ming's spiritual sea, rows of grisly green curse seals appeared. These curse seals were formed by soul force.

Empyrean Thunder Punishment had divided a portion of his remnant soul's strength to carve curse seals into Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

A martial artist's spiritual sea was an extremely fragile and delicate place. Once someone else intruded upon this area, there were all sorts of dangers that could happen. Empyrean

Thunder Punishment believed that by taking the initiative to come here he could control the situation.

With his own soul force submerged into Lin Ming's spiritual sea, this would make it so that Lin Ming wouldn't dare to play any tricks.

"Now you can be considered my descendant. From this point on, my remnant soul will reside in the middle of your soul. If you violate your oath then I will energize the curse seals in your spiritual sea and destroy your mind and soul." The phantom of Empyrean Thunder Punishment's remnant soul slowly said.

At this time, Lin Ming possessed an extremely powerful soul force. He could clearly detect that these pale green curse seals were in fact a part of Empyrean Thunder Punishment's remnant soul.

In order to completely control him, Empyrean Thunder Punishment didn't hesitate in further splitting apart his extremely incomplete remnant soul.

"Now I shall pass my inheritance to you." After planting his curse seals in Lin Ming's spiritual sea, Empyrean Thunder Punishment didn't worry about Lin Ming any more. It was clear he was highly confident in his remnant soul curse seals.

"My inheritance is contained within a spirit treasure called the Thunder Punishment Sword. In the past, this sword cut down countless powerhouses and has become incomparably formidable… I placed a spell on it so it recognizes only my aura. If anyone else were to approach that sword and try to use outside force to influence it, it would self-implode… the entire Thunder Dominion would also no longer exist." Empyrean Thunder Punishment spookily said.

After listening to this, Lin Ming felt a chill shoot up his back. Luckily he hadn't recklessly acted just now. If he had truly extinguished Empyrean Thunder Punishment's remnant soul first then the consequences would have been inconceivably dire.

At this moment, information in the form of memories passed out from Thunder Punishment's remnant soul.

In an instant, Lin Ming knew the location of the Thunder Punishment Sword. Moreover, he discovered something even more important – the foundation of the Thunder Dominion was the top grade Thunder Source he was searching for. It was also sealed beneath the Thunder Punishment Sword.

Lin Ming followed the routes in his mind and flew through the Thunder Dominion for half an incense stick of time until he reached a broad open hall. This hall had countless murals of Empyrean Thunder Punishment in the past, images of him leading armies and expeditions to slaughter in all directions; it was an incredibly majestic sight. It was clear that this was a palace that Empyrean Thunder Punishment had personally built in the past.

Here, mountains of thunderstone shined down onto the hall like suns.

The most primal aura of the source Thunder Laws filled every nook and cranny of this hall.

And the richest aura of source Thunder Laws originated from the grand throne in the center of the hall.

Nine dragons circled above this throne, emitting an inexhaustibly frenzied power, inspiring awe and fear.

Lin Ming's figure was like a bolt of lightning. He tore through space and instantly arrived in front of that nine dragon throne.

He had been acknowledged by Empyrean Thunder Punishment and Empyrean Thunder Punishment's remnant soul also existed in his spiritual sea. Thus, the strange thunder aura of Empyrean Thunder Punishment also exuded from his body.

Those nine dragons wildly roared as Lin Ming approached. But almost immediately they sensed that Lin Ming was emitting the aura of Empyrean Thunder Punishment. Like obedient little dogs, they drilled back into the throne.

The entire throne seemed high and lofty, a dignity and honor that rose above mortals.

But Lin Ming actually knew that this was only a representation of the Thunder Punishment Sword.

The truth was that this throne was formed by the melted dragon bone hilt of the Thunder Punishment Sword.

Two arms climbed up the giant throne. Then, Lin Ming focused strength into his dantian and endless blood vitality swelled up his arms.

The nine dragon throne had been firmly planted into the hall of carved thunder crystals. But with strength approaching a hundred billion jins, Lin Ming forcefully ripped it up.

The mountain-like hall violently shivered. Finally, a dazzling sword blade showed itself…

An incomparably great and distant aura emanated from the great sword.

Shrill hisses filled the air. Several hair-thin dragons dissipated from the sword blade and into space, immediately piercing holes into the void.

Just by drawing up a little of the blade, the Thunder Punishment Sword showed just how powerful it was – it was absolutely a top Empyrean spirit treasure!

Lin Ming's body surged with more and more blood vitality. A bit at a time, he constantly pulled out the giant Thunder Punishment Sword.

The entire hall wildly shook, quaking without end as the walls and ground groaned. It seemed that the entire structure could collapse at any moment.

Bang!

With a final pull, the 1000 foot long Thunder Punishment Sword was completely drawn out from the ground by Lin Ming.

In that instant, Lin Ming felt as if he were holding onto a raging thunder dragon, one that desperately wanted to escape.

But immediately, Empyrean Thunder Punishment's remnant soul sent out traces of his aura.

As this remnant soul aura brushed against the Thunder Punishment Sword, the sword seemed to fear it and began rapidly shrinking, its atmosphere of resistance also weakening.

Lin Ming couldn't lose this chance. He spread out the power of the Heretical God Tree, letting it trickle out of him like streams of water.

Ka ka ka!

Along the way, thunder dragons roared and fire phoenixes burned. Lin Ming constantly fused as much strength as he could into the Thunder Punishment Sword, wanting to leave as much of his mark in the sword as possible.

Empyrean Thunder Punishment's main body had long perished, and in a sense, this sword no longer has a master. The only problem had been that Empyrean Thunder Punishment's remnant soul had left a bit of his will inside the Thunder Punishment Sword, but beneath his own initiative, Empyrean Thunder Punishment had taken back this will himself.

With this, before long, this sword had completely become Lin Ming's treasure.

Chapter 1789 - Inheritance in Hand

Chapter 1789 - Inheritance in Hand

…

…

…

After the Thunder Punishment Sword was pulled out by Lin Ming, the entire hall seemed to come to life.

Pata, pata –

The beating sound like that of a heartbeat began to originate from beneath the Thunder Punishment Sword.

With every beat, every inch of the hall seemed to resonate with it.

“Thunder Source! This is the top grade Thunder Source that Empyrean Thunder Punishment used to use!”

Seeing the object beneath the Thunder Punishment Sword, Lin Ming took a deep breath. To him, this Thunder Source was far more important than the Thunder Punishment Sword.

Empyrean Thunder Punishment’s Thunder Source was like a little thunder dragon. It burrowed deep within the hall, glowing with a scintillating silver-white luster.

Its little form moved up and down. With every fluctuation a destructive source power of thunder seemed to gush out from its body, piercing through the void and escaping into space.

All around the Thunder Source were also countless thin thunder plants, all of them brimming with life.

Life and destruction were two sides of the same coin. This was why the power of thunder was so terrifying and strong.

It was clear that the existence of this Thunder Source was why the Thunder Dominion had existed without end for 100,000 years.

“This is it.”

Lin Ming carefully stretched out his hand. Before he touched the Thunder Source, he could feel threads of silver-white lightning jump up and shoot onto his arm.

Even though Lin Ming had a mortal body more formidable than some God Beasts’, this silver-white lightning still caused a needle-like ache to spread through his arm.

Feeling this pain, Lin Ming was instead overjoyed. The more powerful the Thunder Source was, the more satisfied he was with it.

Leaning down, the blood of a True Dragon surged within Lin Ming. Layers of dragon scales appeared, wrapping around Lin Ming’s arm.

He directly grasped the small Thunder Source.

With True Dragon scales protecting his arm, the powerful arcs of lightning that leapt out from the Thunder Source only smoothly slid over the scales instead, leaving nothing but the shallowest of marks.

After taking hold of the Thunder Source, Lin Ming discovered that wanting to lift it up was the same as wanting to pull up a tiny star. The energy within this Thunder Source could be imagined.

Soon after, the Thunder Source turned into a massive thunder vortex that began resonating with the massive amount of power of thunder around it.

Whorl whorl whorl –

Inside the golden hall, from within every piece of thunder crystal, faint traces of the power of thunder continuously leaked out.

The source of thunder contained in the surrounding murals released a dazzling light.

Then, from outside the golden hall, from the endless depths of the Thunder Dominion, thunder began to restlessly stir. Purple gold, golden red… silver white… the color of all sorts of thunder began surging towards the golden hall.

The endless power of thunder completely poured itself into the Thunder Source.

Seeing this turbulent flow continue for over an incense stick of time, Lin Ming could sense that the Thunder Source was becoming increasingly heavy and increasingly pure.

The little traces of lightning that dissipated from the Thunder Source began to directly tear open the void and cause terrifying space storms to run out.

Hu - !

Only when the Thunder Source finally fell still did Lin Ming let out a long sigh of relief.

As for the grand golden hall that was releasing a magnificent glow of heavenly thunder, it now resembled a sickly patient that had all of their essence energy and blood vitality sucked out and had lost all its previous shine.

The entire hall had dimmed down. The thunder crystals still glowed with a faint light. The surrounding murals that depicted Empyrean Thunder Punishment's previous exploits and accomplishments no longer seemed like fierce demons in the dimmed light, but like mortals instead.

Even outside the Thunder Dominion, the infinitely rolling thunder that filled the world began to rapidly fade away.

Lin Ming knew what was happening. All of this had been created by the Thunder Source.

The Thunder Source could be called the origin of all the strength within the Thunder Dominion. Now that he had pulled out the origin, all of that previously scattered strength was also returning to the Thunder Source.

The thunder phenomena outside naturally weakened by a tremendous amount.

"...My lifetime of inheritance is contained within the Thunder Punishment Sword. Since you have now obtained the Thunder Source, do not delay any further and begin inheriting my legacy... hold that sword and stab it into the nine dragon throne, and allow all the strength within your body to resonate with it... as long as you can become one with it and commune with it, then you have succeeded. The Thunder Punishment Sword is also the mystic key to take control of the Gold Thunder Temple... you will inherit my everything... of course, at that time, the curse seals I placed into your spiritual sea will completely activate and the mark will enter your soul." Empyrean Thunder Punishment's ghostly voice echoed out from behind Lin Ming.

Lin Ming took a deep breath. The Thunder Punishment Sword and also the texts within it that were related to the source of thunder were all marvelous treasures, inferior only to Empyrean Primordius' inheritance.

However, the curse that Empyrean Thunder Punishment placed within him was extremely problematic. After all, Empyrean Thunder Punishment had once been a superior Empyrean with an incredible level of strength. Even though all that existed of him now was a wisp of his remnant soul, this was still a terrifying existence to deal with.

Focusing his thoughts, Lin Ming finally firmed his decision on what to do.

He seized the Thunder Punishment Sword and then inserted it into the nine dragon throne he had just pulled it out of.

Bang!

Strength began pouring out from every inch of Lin Ming’s body, rumbling as it entered the Thunder Punishment Sword.

The Thunder Punishment Sword began to release a brilliance as bright as a sun. A milky white radiance completely wrapped around Lin Ming and the Thunder Punishment Sword.

At the same time, a strange sensation spread up from the Thunder Punishment Sword and into his body.

It was like the Thunder Punishment Sword had become a part of his flesh and blood. Soon after, every piece of material in the hall began to merge with his flesh and blood, becoming a part of his body.

Bokah, bokah, bokah –

Lin Ming could feel that his heartbeat was following the energy fluctuations of the entire Gold Thunder Temple.

As these fluctuations became increasingly intense, the energy shooting out began to latch onto the Gold Thunder Temple and aggressively fuse with it.

Xiu!

The Heretical God Tree appeared behind Lin Ming. It broke into the skies, emitting mystic strength that sparkled as if began fusing with the hall.

The color of the entire Gold Thunder Temple began to resemble that of the Heretical God Tree, becoming deeper and darker in color.

A True Dragon winded out from Lin Ming’s body, soaring into the heavens. The power of an azure-colored God Beast began filling up the surrounding space.

All of these strengths were drawn out by this strange resonance, bringing about slight changes to the Gold Thunder Temple.

“Gold Thunder Temple… so it was this all along…”

The moment Lin Ming’s thoughts completely fused with the Gold Thunder Temple, he was able to make out the entire internal structure and image within the Gold Thunder Temple.

With this, he was able to confirm one thing. This Gold Thunder Temple was in truth the Temple of Marvels that floated above the Sea of Miracles.

In the past when Lin Ming still ventured through the Sky Spill Planet, he had killed Xuan Wuji and had gone to the central four Divine Kingdoms of the Sky Spill Continent. There, he had received an invitation from the Nine Furnace Crown Prince, Yang Yun, to attend the feast upon Nine Flower Lake. This Nine Flower Lake was where Lin Ming first heard about the Temple of Marvels.

From the rumors, the Temple of Marvels was a living mirage, vague and phantasmal, incomparably mysterious. Even a Divine Sea supreme elder couldn’t hope to approach it.

Afterwards, for some unknown reason, the Temple of Marvels floated out from the Sea of Miracles. Yang Yun took the chance of exploring the Temple of Marvels as bait and lured all the heroes of the world to enter the Temple of Marvels where he could capture them in his net.

To the Lin Ming of that time, the Temple of Marvels could be said to be filled with rare treasures, but it was also steeped in perils at every step.

Lin Ming never thought that there would be a day when he would receive the entire Temple of Marvels into his own inner world.

As Lin Ming was about to receive the Temple of Marvels, suddenly, within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, the curse seals that Empyrean Punishment placed within him began to sink down!

According to the terms of the curse contract set by Empyrean Thunder Punishment, the moment Lin Ming received the inheritance was when the curse would activate.

The instant Lin Ming felt the curse about to rush into his spiritual sea, he focused his thoughts towards his inner world. He no longer concealed the energy of his inner world but allowed all of it to gush out like a raging sea!

And amongst this turbulent strength, the most eye-catching was a grayish black cube – this was the Magic Cube.

The Magic Cube was the divine tool of the soul and was the object most able to restrain soul force in the universe. The curse seals formed by Empyrean Thunder Punishment just happened to be created using a part of his remnant soul.

No matter how powerful Empyrean Thunder Punishment had been in the past, it was impossible for a fraction of a remnant soul to resist the Magic Cube.

Kacha!

With a loud explosive sound, the curse seals that Empyrean Thunder Punishment placed in Lin Ming's spiritual sea were all destroyed!

At the same time, from the depths of Lin Ming's soul, all of the strength contained within erupted outwards. This was an aura that seemed to resemble the origins of the universe. It spread out with an unstoppable momentum, rolling over everything in its way.

"What!?!?"

Empyrean Thunder Punishment cried out in alarm. This sudden change left him panic-stricken. He originally thought that he would use the curse seals to immediately control Lin Ming, but he never imagined Lin Ming would use some unknown methods to burst out with an incredible strength that directly destroyed his curse seals.

The curse seals were connected to Empyrean Thunder Punishment and their destruction caused a backlash against the remains of his remnant soul. His figure violently shivered as it became blurry!

Chapter 1790 – Destroying Thunder Punishment

Chapter 1790 – Destroying Thunder Punishment

…

…

…

“You!!” Empyrean Thunder Punishment’s remnant soul violently shivered. He looked at Lin Ming, burning with rage. “You deliberately hid your strength to fool me!?”

At the same time Empyrean Thunder Punishment was furious, he was also panic-stricken. He was now just a remnant soul. Compared to his previous magnificence from 100,000 years ago when he had been a superior Empyrean that stood above all others, his strength had dropped precipitously. Even so, his insight was not something that an ordinary martial artist could hope to compare with, so how had he been played around with by a Holy Lord realm junior?

This boy, just what methods had he used?

As Empyrean Thunder Punishment was surprised, he felt an extremely familiar aura erupt from within Lin Ming’s inner world. Besides being familiar, this was also an aura that he loathed to no end.

For a time, his entire body seemed to light up with arcs of electricity as lightning burst out from his eyes.

His originally phantasmal figure began to rapidly rise as his momentum grew.

An inexplicable killing intent leapt out, wrapping around Lin Ming.

"Grandmist energy! You actually have grandmist energy within you!" Empyrean Thunder Punishment's voice rang like layers of thunderclouds, echoing in the hall as it was filled with disbelief and wrath.

Lin Ming remained silent. The light of the Thunder Punishment Sword in his hand slowly faded away.

With a thought, the entire Gold Thunder Temple began to rapidly shrink, sending out endless runes that carried the true meaning of thunder within them. Finally, the temple turned into a palm-sized version in his hands that was easily held in his grasp.

Without fully extinguishing Empyrean Thunder Punishment's remnant soul, Lin Ming wouldn't be able to use the Thunder Punishment Sword and Gold Thunder Temple without worries.

"When you betrayed Empyrean Primordius in the past, did you ever think there would come a day when it happened to you?" Lin Ming lightly said. The light around him began to distort, becoming chaotic as it formed a strange field around him.

"Primordius martial intent! Good! Very good!" Empyrean Thunder Punishment's pupils shrank. His form couldn't help but shiver, even as a hateful light burst out of his eyes and locked onto Lin Ming.

"So you had already inherited the legacy of that old thief Primordius before coming here, and then you hid your aura to deceive me!"

Empyrean Thunder Punishment gnashed his teeth. This brat was actually the descendant of Empyrean Primordius!

He had waited for 100,000 years in this Thunder Dominion, existing in the state of a remnant soul. Yet, the only one who came to visit him after all this time was a descendant of his blood enemy. And what left Empyrean Thunder Punishment most perplexed was that he hadn't been able to see through the illusions created by this junior, and as a result he had submissively given away his inheritance.

“Brat, you are seeking death!”

A sharp light burst out from Empyrean Thunder Punishment’s pupils. A powerful ghostly force thrust out from his eyes, mixed in with rumbling thunder as it rushed into Lin Ming’s body.

Facing the enraged Empyrean Thunder Punishment, Lin Ming simply thrust out his hand. Then, an icy cold aura gushed out from his body, an aura that contained the screams of 10,000 demons and countless ghosts.

Pitch black soul force condensed into a massive wheel, with Asura phantoms pushing it from above.

This was the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel.

Just as the overlapping layers of ghostly thunder were about to explode, all of it was diverted to the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel and then slowly grinded away.

As this thunder was slowly grinded away, soul force dissipated from it before completely vanishing.

Seeing this, Empyrean Thunder Punishment’s complexion darkened. This was not a technique that a junior could possess.

“Who are you, it is impossible for you to be a Holy Lord realm martial artist!”

In Empyrean Thunder Punishment’s opinion, it was utterly impossible for any Holy Lord realm martial artist to fight with him. At the start, he had carefully verified that Lin Ming was indeed just a Holy Lord martial artist, and this was the reason he believed that Lin Ming could never escape his control.

Lin Ming simply didn’t bother with Empyrean Thunder Punishment’s nonsense. The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel slowly revolved, floating beneath his feet.

“Humph! Do you really think I can’t do anything to you?” With Empyrean Thunder Punishment’s cold cough, a strange sound emitted from his body. All around him, runes that contained the world Laws began to continuously appear.

These runes formed thunder dragons in the sky. As they soared into the wind, it seemed as if the entire world had become one of thunder.

In an instant, these infinite thunder dragons opened their bell-like eyes, dark and gloomy and emitting bursts of thunder light.

At the same time, meteor-sized thunder balls appeared in space, all of them exuding a strange mystic power.

Countless invisible hands seemed to appear in the air. Suddenly, Lin Ming felt as if he couldn’t control his body.

“This is a force field? With just a wisp of a remnant soul you can spur the power of the Laws as well as form this thunder force field?” Lin Ming was surprised. Empyrean Thunder Punishment was indeed far too powerful. His mortal body had been destroyed and his inner world no longer existed. Yet, by just relying on his remnant soul he was able to form such a formidable thunder force field.

Although Empyrean Thunder Punishment put on a brave front, the truth was that he was in a critical situation. He no longer possessed the power of his past, and this strange young man in front of him simply had far too many strange secrets.

Thunder Punishment thrust his hands out into the void. The power of thunder drawn out by this soul force began to wildly rage about. 10,000 thunder dragons howled. The void began to shake and contract upon Lin Ming as if it wanted to thoroughly swallow him up.

Lin Ming remained unworried. Without expression, he calmly stretched out a hand. Motes of black light condensed in his palm, sparkling. Then, these motes of light gathered together on Lin Ming’s palm, turning into a black cube that exuded an ancient and vast aura.

As the Magic Cube appeared, the surrounding space fell into a deathly silence.

Although the Magic Cube was currently just the size of a hand, it gave off an extremely offsetting feeling. It was like a black universe, encompassing all, terrifying and dense.

Every mote of black light was like an endless black vortex that emitted endless mystic strength.

Any soul force-condensed thunder dragons that approached were mercilessly pulled in by an invisible hand and swallowed up, completely disappearing. After they disappeared their connection with Empyrean Thunder Punishment's soul force was severed.

Seeing this black cube appear, Empyrean Thunder Punishment began to shiver and his complexion completely changed.

His current form was nothing more than a remnant soul, making his existence sensitive to the Magic Cube. As a remnant soul, he felt an instinctual fear towards this divine tool. Just by looking at this black cube it felt as if the last dregs of his soul would be sucked up.

"What is that!?"

Empyrean Thunder Punishment didn't recognize the Magic Cube. Although he knew about the Grandmist Spirit Bead, he had no knowledge of the Magic Cube.

From the middle of the Magic Cube, an all-annihilating black light suddenly erupted outwards.

As this black light expanded in all directions, it swept through the world.

The thunder force field that had been suppressing Lin Ming collided with the black light. Then, the thunder force field began to rapidly break down and be destroyed. Empyrean Thunder Punishment's spirit mark within it was also wiped away.

It was all swept up by the black light and then swallowed.

Seeing this, Empyrean Thunder Punishment began to show visible panic. His soul force was so incredibly fragile in the face of the black light that it would collapse on the first strike?

Finally, he could feel the terrifying strength contained within that black light, one that seemed as vast and deep as the endless seas.

“If you were a ruined body, I wouldn’t be able to do anything to you. Too bad for you, you are nothing but a remnant soul, and this thunder force field is also formed by you using your soul force to move the Laws. After all, you don’t have an inner world so the amount of heaven and earth origin energy you can use is limited, thus of no threat to me at all.”

Lin Ming’s voice was indifferent. He directly summoned the Magic Cube.

For a time, a horrifyingly great energy vortex appeared in the skies.

Black light swept out. Empyrean Thunder Punishment felt a terrifying strength cover his body. This was a power of Laws that no one could resist. He wildly shouted out but the black light had completely covered him.

Whorl – whorl – whorl –

The Magic Cube began to expand. Empyrean Thunder Punishment roared out, “What is that!? Just who are you!?”

Empyrean Thunder Punishment was terrified. Although he hadn’t seen the Magic Cube before, he had seen the Grandmist Spirit Bead. He had a faint feeling that this cube was in no way inferior to the Grandmist Spirit Bead divine tool! Everything that occurred today had completely surpassed his imagination.

He had inexplicably encountered this terrifying youth who had come out of nowhere. Not just that, but this youth was in possession of an incredible divine tool that perfectly suppressed him, one which possessed a power he could not fathom!

This didn’t make any sense at all!

“Just die as a confused ghost.”

Lin Ming coolly said. He poured more strength into the Magic Cube.

From the black vortex, Empyrean Thunder Punishment’s pitiful wails could be heard.

He maliciously cursed out all the hatred in his heart, unwilling to die here. His ending was just far too miserable. His inheritance had been stolen away by the descendant of his blood enemy and now even his remnant soul was being eliminated!

How could he not hate this!?

However, no matter how much he cursed or struggled, a mere wisp of a remnant soul wasn’t able to cause a ruckus in front of the Magic Cube.

Time marched on. After an incense stick of time, Empyrean Thunder Punishment’s words slowly died down.

Lin Ming wasn’t in a hurry at all. He leisurely activated the Magic Cube to continue refining for a quarter hour before ordering it to stop.

At this moment, the spirit mark within Empyrean Thunder Punishment’s remnant soul had been completely erased by the Magic Cube.

“He was indeed worthy of being called a top Empyrean. His wisp of remnant soul didn’t even possess a tenth his original soul force intensity, and had even been weakened over 100,000 years. Yet I still had to summon the Magic Cube to subdue him. Otherwise, I fear that just relying on the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel alone wouldn’t have been enough to kill him.” Lin Ming tranquilly stated as he slowly took back the Magic Cube.

He knew that the moment he finished fusing his energies with the Thunder Punishment Sword and the Gold Thunder Temple, Empyrean Thunder Punishment would begin integrating the curse into his soul. At this time, Lin Ming would have no choice but to reveal his strength and also his status as Empyrean Primordius' successor. Thus, Lin Ming had already kept the Magic Cube prepared.

After starting the battle with Empyrean Thunder Punishment's remnant soul, he summoned the Magic Cube.

The Magic Cube was a divine tool that was the ultimate nemesis of all masters that used soul force. Even the remnant soul of a top Empyrean wasn't its match.

As Empyrean Thunder Punishment's remnant soul was destroyed, the entire Gold Thunder Temple and Thunder Punishment Sword were carefully put away by Lin Ming.

By the time Lin Ming finished all of this, several hundred miles from the center of the Thunder Dominion, the terrifying and billowing thunderclouds had mostly vanished.

As the thunderclouds disappeared in massive tracts, large swathes of a black swamp were revealed beneath Lin Ming.

In the midst of the darkness, Lin Ming grasped the glittering Thunder Source. The Thunder Source emitted wave after wave of shimmering arcs of electricity, as if it were a thunder emperor being reborn.

"I've obtained the Thunder Source. With the Annihilation Flame Elemental and some top grade Twinlife Thunder Crystals… I've fulfilled the conditions to refine the Extreme Polar Pill. After I do that, I can break through the Extreme Polar Dao Palace…" Lin Ming pondered. After he broke through the third Dao Palace, his strength would rise even further.

With that, he could go to the Soul World and seek out Sheng Mei!

Chapter 1791 – Opening the Extreme Polar Dao Palace

Chapter 1791 – Opening the Extreme Polar Dao Palace

…

…

…

Looking up at the high skies, the stars shined brightly.

In the distant periphery of the Thunder Dominion, a group of people from the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom arrived, riding up in a golden chariot. They didn't dare enter the depths of the Thunder Dominion itself.

The uproar coming from the Thunder Dominion was far too great, causing everyone to be alarmed.

They could see that in the deepest depths of the Thunder Dominion, dazzling bolts of thunder came rumbling down, as if the entire Thunder Dominion was about to be blasted open.

It seemed as if some people were engaged in a fierce battle, but with their strength it was impossible for them to see clearly.

Suddenly, everyone saw a blinding eruption occur from the depths of the Thunder Dominion.

The light was incredibly harsh and blinding. Just a single glance at the sight caused tears to fall.

Afterwards, massive swathes of the power of thunder began rapidly rushing back to the center of that brilliant light like a receding tide.

In just half an incense stick of time, the originally perilous Thunder Dominion was extinguished of all light. All that remained in the skies were some scattered thunder clouds; one couldn't feel any power of thunder anymore.

"This is... what's happening?"

The people from the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom were dumbfounded.

From the most ancient of historical records, the Thunder Dominion that existed above the Sea of Miracles – a place where even Divine Sea supreme elders would die if they entered – had suddenly vanished! This was simply incredible!

At the same time, at a place 30 miles deep in the Thunder Dominion, Xiao Moxian, Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, and Lin Xiaoge were watching this occur with happy expressions.

Out of the group, Xiao Moxian was the strongest. With her vision, everything that occurred hundreds of miles away was reflected in her pupils.

"Big Brother Lin has received the Thunder Source..."

Xiao Moxian could see a dark place in the center of the Thunder Dominion.

Lin Ming sat in the midst of the void, his hands each holding onto the Annihilation Flame Elemental as well as the top grade Thunder Source. From afar it seemed he was holding a black sun and a purple sun in his hands.

A strange and mystical power of fire heavenly tribulation emitted from the pores of his body, carrying with it a rhythm like a beating lotus flower.

Every time this flame flickered, space would be burnt away like paper and massive space storms would howl out.

One could see from this just how hot these flames were.

Lin Ming's hands were wrapped in electricity as he started to draw in the void. Runes appeared, each of them carrying the true meaning of the Dao as they locked in this part of the world and struck against the strange heavenly tribulation fire.

In a moment, the surrounding space distorted as the form of a furnace appeared in front of him.

After that, he tossed all sorts of heavenly materials, the Twinlife Thunder Crystals, top grade Thunder Source, and Annihilation Fire Elemental into the furnace.

With this, he began refining!

The entire refining process didn't take too long. But in Xiao Moxian's eyes, this sight was more than enough to stir the soul.

As Lin Ming reached the end of the refining process, truefire spewed out from every inch of his skin, rumbling into the furnace…

Seven days later, a massive explosive sound blasted out. A 100,000 foot thunder dragon and fire phoenix tore through the world, flying in tandem. Even the gray barrier that guarded the entire Sky Spill Planet was struck, the impact almost enough to shatter planets.

The momentum of the sound was titanic and without end.

At this time, in front of Lin Ming, a fist-sized pill appeared, one that resembled yin and yang fish swimming together.

One side was blue thunder and the other side was red fire, both of them emitting a terrifying energy.

Lin Ming swallowed this pill in a single motion. A booming explosion began sounding out in his body like thunderclaps.

After some time, his forehead, eyes, nose, everything began to erupt with a blinding brilliance that impacted into the horizons and scattered away the dark clouds.

From the originally gloomy skies, it was like some faint summons was being sent out as starlight began to fall down.

Nine vast and shining stars appeared high above the endless starry skies, arranged in a strange manner that was filled with profound meaning. Their light tore through the infinite dark, shining down and creating a separate world.

One of these stars in particular shined like a sun at noon. Its radiance was dazzling, seemingly carrying with it an incredible mystic strength.

This star was named Cherished Kismet and was one of the nine stars. As it bloomed with a brilliant divine light, the starlight fell down like a silver waterfall that contained a dreadful strength. Even Xiao Moxian felt goosebumps rise on her arms.

From the void, lines of the Great Dao appeared, condensing into a strange pattern that blocked out the dazzling stars above.

The true meaning of two peak strengths filled the space around the dao diagram, like a dragon and a phoenix protecting it together.

This was the Heavenly Dao array diagram that hindered humanity from breaking into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. This dao diagram was filled with an inexplicable charm, as if it were alive.

"...Extreme Polar Dao Palace... Big Brother Lin is finally starting his breakthrough!" Seeing this occur, Xiao Moxian was both nervous and happy.

In her eyes, Lin Ming suddenly erupted with an incredible strength that was accompanied by the thick smell of blood.

Loud explosions occurred non-stop within his body like endless thunderclaps, as if a True Dragon were awakening within him.

His figure rose and pitch black scales emerged from his body, forming armor around him. His aura climbed, becoming increasingly wild and swift, fierce with a brutal savageness. Behind him, a massive six-armed and three-headed Asura phantom appeared. This Asura phantom seemed to have crawled out from a blood pond of hell. Its two pupils burned like twin suns, releasing a dreadful light.

Lin Ming looked up towards the most brilliant star in the sky. Then, at this time, a towering tree began to rise behind him, as grand as a mountain.

This tree stabbed into the skies. Countless thunder dragons flew around it and innumerable fire phoenixes twined around its branches. The momentum it released was astonishing.

A pitch black spear appeared, like an ancient vicious dragon tearing through time to arrive here. The power of the world and all the surrounding Laws twisted around this black spear and were torn apart.

As this spear appeared, the numerous thunder dragons and fire phoenixes around the tree flew down to twine around it.

Waves of blood vitality also began gathering at the spear point.

Then, this black spear began to roar like a demon god. A blinding light erupted from the spear point, like thousands of supernovas occurring together.

Bang!

Lin Ming shot up from the ground, his feet stepping on space.

Beneath the tremendous impact of his strength, the space under his feet shattered like glass.

Man and spear shot upwards, becoming one.

All that was seen was the black spear in Lin Ming's hands. Like a black dragon it endlessly attacked the dao diagram in the starry skies.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Every strike of the black spear caused all the power of the world within a hundred miles to be drawn towards it. It swallowed all of this power, every strike impacting the dao diagram with the force of a burning star.

The entire dao diagram began to ripple.

Waves of dazzling Grand Dao lines fell down with starlight. As they struck Lin Ming's body, the impact was as heavy as a planet…

Time passed quarter hour after quarter hour.

During this time, parts of the dao diagram would shatter and starlight would fall down.

There were also times when Lin Ming approached exhaustion. He would open the Purple Temple Dao Palace to stimulate his potential and begin rushing upwards once more.

Shockwaves tore through the void, causing the black starry skies to collapse like glass…

Lin Ming's figure was completely covered with starlight and blood. As he collided with the dao diagram again and again, everything seemed to blend together as one.

Just as Lin Ming's strength reached its limits, there was an explosion and a heaven-shaking noise that echoed through the world.

The dao diagram above Lin Ming loudly shattered and the lines of the Great Dao dissipated like clouds of smoke.

From the void, the glittering Cherished Kismet Star shined, its starlight flowing into Lin Ming's body.

His broken bones and torn flesh began to visibly mend.

"Extreme Polar Dao Palace… I broke through!"

Lin Ming took a deep breath. After breaking past two Dao Palaces before, breaking into the Extreme Polar Dao Palace was much simpler.

One reason was that he had made sufficient preparations. Whether it was the Annihilation Fire Elemental that Empyrean Demondawn gave him or Empyrean Thunder Punishment's Thunder Source, both were top powers of thunder and fire.

Another reason was that Lin Ming was stronger than before and he had also broken past the shackles of the Heavenly Dao. In breaking into the third Dao Palace, it was far more familiar.

The third Dao Palace, the Extreme Polar Dao Palace, corresponded with the Cherished Kismet Star.

This palace was located in Lin Ming's inner world. After opening the Extreme Polar Dao Palace, Lin Ming could guide the power of the nine stars to enter his inner world and fuse with the energy within.

And the energy within Lin Ming's inner world was mainly thunder and fire. This was the equivalent of adding the power of a star into the power of thunder and fire.

With this, Lin Ming's thunder and fire origin energy would rise to another level.

As Lin Ming examined his own inner world, he found that at the central point of his inner world's planet, the giant Heretical God Tree was bathing in the endless mercurial starlight, beautiful to the extreme.

Because he had broken into the Extreme Polar Dao Palace, the Heretical God Tree had benefitted from this and had become even more verdant and hardy.

Thus, Lin Ming’s strength rose again. For him to enter the Soul World alone, this provided him with more confidence.

There wasn’t much time left before the great calamity truly began.

Chapter 1792 – Towards Soul World

Chapter 1792 – Towards Soul World

…

…

…

Three days later, Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom –

Lin Ming's actions at the Thunder Dominion were far too gargantuan. It was impossible for him to not arouse the attention of the four great Divine Kingdoms.

In addition, some people had already notified the high level figures of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom. Thus, when Lin Ming finished breaking through the third Dao Palace of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and left the 8000 Miles Black Swamp, a group of Divine Sea powerhouses was already waiting for him.

Lin Ming returning to the Sky Spill Continent once more was a momentous event; no one wanted to miss it.

However, none of these Divine Sea powerhouses ever imagined that after arriving at the 8000 Mile Black Swap they would witness such a ridiculous scene occur. The entire Thunder Dominion along with the Temple of Marvels had been taken in by Lin Ming.

This was an absolute life-forbidden zone of the Sky Spill Planet that had existed for 100,000 years. And now, because of Lin Ming's return, it had completely vanished in a single night.

The Sea of Miracles, also known as the Ocean of Endless Storms, had turned into a normal sea. This sort of strange phenomenon caused many Divine Sea powerhouses to be dazed for a long time, as if they were living in some sort of dream.

Lin Ming didn't bother much with these dazed high level figures of the Sky Spill Planet. He simply politely greeted them and then brought Mu Qianyu, Lin Xiaoge, Qin Xingxuan, and Xiao Moxian to fly straight towards the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom.

The Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom was one of the four Divine Kingdoms of the Sky Spill Continent. With Lin Ming's current cultivation his sense could already easily cover the entire Divine Kingdom.

He flew as fast as a bolt of lightning. In less than a quarter hour of time, he arrived above a grandiose jade palace. This was the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom's imperial palace.

Lin Ming's sense covered the entire imperial palace. Right after, his figure flashed as he fell straight down, followed by the others.

He landed in a courtyard.

The courtyard was quiet and tastefully decorated. Several species of spirit bamboo were planted, their fragrance warming the heart and mind.

In this courtyard, there was a middle-aged man sitting down at a stone table, brewing some tea in the shade. Lin Ming's sudden arrival caused the man to be startled for a moment. Right after, a woman also heard the commotion and came outside. As she saw Lin Ming, she was inexplicably surprised.

Seeing this middle-aged man and woman, Lin Ming's heart filled with emotion.

"Father, Mother, your son has returned to visit you..."

……

Since the last time Lin Ming returned, 70 years had passed in the blink of an eye.

Originally, Lin Ming once had the thought of bringing his parents up to the Divine Realm.

However, as he realized that the great calamity would soon erupt in the Divine Realm and the fate of humanity was also unknown, he decided it was better to have them stay in the lower realms where it would be relatively safer.

Lin Ming's parents had already missed their chance to cultivate. He also didn't have any desire to have his parents cultivate martial arts. Instead, what he could do was use a variety of heavenly materials to lengthen their lifespans to several thousands of years.

Thus, as Lin Ming saw his parents now, the two of them still looked like a husband and wife in their mid-thirties. Even the wrinkles on his mother's face had vanished beneath the revitalization of so many heavenly materials.

After Lin Xiaoge ascended to the Divine Realm, Lin Ming's parents also had another baby boy. This boy was Lin Ming and Lin Xiaoge's little brother.

For these highly traditional parents, if they didn't have their children and grandchildren around them, then even if they lived for several thousand years they would still feel lonely and empty within.

Even after 70 years passed, the Lin Family didn't have many descendants. Even so, they were undoubtedly the number one family of the entire Sky Spill Planet. Whether it was Lin Ming's parents of the descendants of their family, all of them had extraordinary statuses.

Currently, the Lin Family had developed to seven or eight people. At this speed, the Lin Family would soon grow into a flourishing family tree. As for Lin Ming's parents, this was the happiest scene for them.

In particular, after the two parents met Xiao Moxian and learned she was carrying Lin Ming's flesh and blood, they were even happier than before.

As for Xiao Moxian, she was a bit wary. She never imagined the scene would unfold this way when she met Lin Ming's parents.

Xiao Moxian’s sense was extremely keen. She could clearly feel the abundant love and care coming from the gentle eyes of these two elders.

Then, she thought back to her grandfather. No matter when it was, Empyrean Demondawn had always maintained his dignity and grandeur. Although it was true that he loved Xiao Moxian, his love was deep and heavy, sometimes to the point of leaving her gasping for breath.

Such a contrast naturally had Xiao Moxian feel a heartfelt closeness towards Lin Ming’s parents.

As Lin Ming saw the smiles of his parents, his increasingly prosperous family, and also the respect and fear of the juniors, he felt comforted.

He increasingly realized just how great the burden on his shoulders was. Humanity had to cross the great calamity and survive no matter what; only then could such a peaceful happiness be sustained. Otherwise, if the Divine Realm perished it would only be a matter of time before disaster reached the lower realms.

In the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom, Lin Ming enjoyed a rare time of leisure and joy.

Besides only doing the necessary meditation every day, he would accompany his mother to discuss cooking recipes and play chess and brew tea with his father.

These days continued for a full month. Then, Lin Ming bid his farewells to his parents and embarked on his journey once again.

The day that Lin Ming returned to the Divine Realm, all of the Lin Family members and nearly all the Divine Sea powerhouses of the Sky Spill Continent, including many high level figures of all four Divine Kingdoms, gathered to see him off.

The scene was grand and even festive.

After all, in the eyes of many the Divine Realm was a land filled with lucky chances everywhere. But no one knew that as Lin Ming left this time, he was in truth shouldering a life or death mission for humanity. His journey was one that was doomed to be filled with incomparable perils…

“It’s time…”

Lin Ming looked towards Xiao Moxian, Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, and also Lin Xiaoge who was still crying in her mother’s arms. He took out Primordius Heavenly Palace and all of them flew inside. Right after, they broke through the void and flew straight to the Divine Realm…

……..

After Lin Ming returned to the Divine Realm he flew towards Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. Empyrean Divine Dream was already waiting for him.

“You’ve finished your matters?” Empyrean Divine Dream looked towards Lin Ming and her thoughts stirred. She could faintly feel that after leaving for just over a month, Lin Ming’s aura had become even more intense than before.

“I’ve finished.”

“Mm. Then, let us go…”

After Empyrean Divine Dream finished speaking, a beam of light covered Lin Ming. Without using a spirit ship, the two of them simply stepped through space.

If they didn’t use a spirit ship, that also meant the entrance to the Soul World wasn’t too far away from Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. Lin Ming wasn’t surprised by this. The entrance to the Soul World was far too important and it was natural that Empyrean Divine Dream would want to protect it. When she was choosing the area to establish Divine Dream Heavenly Palace she likely considered the entrance to the Soul World first.

"Take this..."

Empyrean Divine Dream gave Lin Ming an ancient transmission symbol. Strange runes were engraved atop it, and Lin Ming was in fact quite familiar with these runes – they were Asura Law runes.

"This is the transmission symbol I obtained from the Asura Road in the past. It will protect you in the transmission."

"Mm, I understand." Lin Ming probed the transmission symbol with his sense and soon understood how to use it.

At this time, Empyrean Divine Dream had brought Lin Ming to a place where space was completely twisted. In this space, she continually used arcane space techniques, seemingly shuttling through the complex space labyrinth.

This space route was incredibly puzzling. If there wasn't someone leading the way, then even for Lin Ming it would take an immense amount of time to find the way out.

He also had no idea how Divine Dream had arrived here in the past.

"Perhaps she had some sort of jade slip map..."

As Lin Ming was thinking, he discovered that along the way he could make out some ancient array formation ruins and even the skeletons of the dead.

Lin Ming didn't know who these skeletons had once been. If they were truly characters from billions of years ago, that was truly shocking.

These skeletons had managed to be preserved here for billions of years without turning into dust. From this alone, one could imagine the cultivations they possessed when they were alive.

But these powerful existences had all perished here. Just what was the reason for that?

"Here it is."

Empyrean Divine Dream stopped. In front of her and Lin Ming was an ancient altar.

This altar was covered with mottled lines. After so many years passed, no matter how powerful an array formation was it would still slowly weaken until it completely faded.

This transmission array before him clearly wouldn't last for much longer.

Lin Ming stood before the altar, feeling its vast and ancient aura. The dust here had fallen into a thick layer. As he stepped into it, the dust covered his foot.

Lin Ming slowly approached the altar, mounting the steps one at a time.

When he reached the top of the altar and saw what was there, he was shocked.

It turned out that the middle of the altar was hollow. As he looked down into the altar all he could see was a fathomless abyss, an abyss that had no light and no bottom. It was unknown just what was inside.

Lin Ming tried to probe it with his sense but discovered that as he sent his sense inside, it was difficult to take back. His heart chilled. He finally realized that this abyss was not some ordinary pit, but a place that was constantly flooded with a fierce and violent power of space.

This meant that the abyss itself led to a different space.

And the abyss itself was the space channel!

In other words, this was the entrance to the Soul World!

This was also the so-called weak point of the God Lamenting Wall that Empyrean Divine Dream had mentioned. An ancient True Divinity had forcefully established a connection between the two universes and turned that connection into a transmission array. Even so, for what reason had the ancient True Divinity created this transmission array?

“Lin Ming, is this really what you have decided? At the other end of this abyss is the Soul World, but the runes of the transmission array have become incredibly frail, on the verge of collapse. I have no idea how much more energy it can withstand, and the transmission array itself hasn’t been used for tens of millions of years. If you wish to go to the Soul World, it will be far more perilous then when I used this transmission array in the past.

“Moreover, even if you go to the Soul World it is unknown what you can accomplish. It's also unknown whether you can find Sheng Mei or even form an alliance with her…”

Empyrean Divine Dream shook her head. Although she hoped that humanity could form an alliance with the spiritas, probability and common sense didn’t favor them.

What could Lin Ming offer that would tempt the heart of Sheng Mei?

If humanity was compared to the spiritas, then humanity was just far too weak.

Lin Ming stood before the abyss for a long time, silently probing the transmission array. Using his own knowledge of array formations he constantly calculated the risks involved.

Then, Lin Ming slowly drifted upwards. He looked towards Empyrean Divine Dream and said, “I humbly request Senior Divine Dream to please take care of my family. I must go to the spiritas no matter what, regardless of what the result will be…”

As Lin Ming spoke these words, he turned towards the black fathomless abyss and leapt down…

Chapter 1793 – Dreamsoul Heaven

Chapter 1793 – Dreamsoul Heaven

…

…

…

Cardinal Sky World was one of the larger great worlds within Dreamsoul Heaven's 3600 great worlds.

The main continent of Cardinal Sky World was an incredibly vast area, but most of the land here was covered by snow and ice at all times, similar to the Snowfall World within the Divine Realm.

Because of the snow that covered the entire world, many martial artists of Cardinal Sky World cultivated the power of ice. Of course, they were different from humans. Spiritas lived here and they communed with the Ice Laws through soul force. Moreover, their Ice Laws were used to supplement the effects of their soul attacks, making them strange and nearly impossible to defend against.

In Cardinal Sky World existed a large influence called Zenith Palace. Zenith Palace didn't have many disciples, but they had produced extraordinary individuals since time immemorial and were a highly reputed sect.

At this time, at the outside edges of Zenith Palace, wind and snow drifted about, making the entire landscape misty. A group of Zenith Palace disciples were exploring an ice field. There were over 20 disciples; half of them were women and half were men.

The one in the lead was a white-browed old man. Beside him followed a peerless woman. She wore white clothes and her face was hooded by a veil. Her temperament was ethereal, like a blooming ice lotus.

"High Master, I don't know if the previous intelligence was accurate... we've searched for several days already but haven't found any traces of the hornless ice dragon."

The bloodline of a hornless ice dragon was inferior to that of a True Dragon but it was still a peerless spirit beast. A hornless ice dragon was an absolutely important creature. If an influence could obtain it and raise it into their guardian God Beast, the advantages could be imagined.

The old man shook his head, "We've only been speculating. Several days ago, north of Zenith Palace, the power of space suddenly turned chaotic and the cold energy there increased, even affecting the land for 10,000 miles. The Palace Master has an extremely sharp sense. According to what we know, an existence that can stir the Space and Ice Laws as well as possess such momentum should likely be a hornless ice dragon..."

Seeing the woman still frowning with doubts as if this explanation didn't seem too likely, the old man smiled and said, "This sort of lucky chance can only be found through a stroke of fate. Even if we do find the hornless ice dragon it's not necessarily true that we can subdue it. This sort of spirit beast might not be willing to surrender itself to our sect, and if it doesn't then that will be extremely troublesome."

As the old man spoke, a disciple suddenly spoke up, "If we can't subdue then we can kill it and use it for alchemy! The medicines produced from a spirit beast like a hornless ice dragon must surely be the most precious kinds!"

However, the disciple's opinion caused the old man to maliciously glare at him, "You damned bastard idiot, do you know how much good fortune of the world has to gather and for destiny to accumulate over time for such a divine being to be bred? How could you dare think of killing it for alchemy? That will only draw disaster upon our sect!"

As the old man reprimanded, the disciple shrunk back, not saying a word.

Many martial artists possessed an incredible strength that could shake the heavens and earth, but they also held onto a firm faith of destiny, karma, and samsara. Many of these martial artists wouldn't want to do something that could harm their own destiny.

"Look, the glacier in front of us has been destroyed again..."

The old man pointed at a glacier not too far away. This glacier had originally been massive but it had been sheared in half by something. The top had completely vanished.

This situation couldn't be considered too amazing. The old man from Zenith Palace could easily accomplish this, but to encounter this same situation again and again for the entire surrounding 10,000 miles was out of the ordinary.

Just where would there be such a strong person that was so bored they would shear off the tops of a million glaciers for 10,000 miles just for fun? That would just be a great joke.

The veiled woman nodded. This didn't resemble the actions of a martial artist, but a vicious beast experiencing heavenly tribulation, nirvana, or some other similar phenomena, and then leaving behind these traces during their furious struggle for survival.

As she was thinking this, not too far away a disciple cried out in alarm.

"Mm? Did you discover the trail of the hornless ice dragon?"

The sect Elder's heart stirred. If the hornless ice dragon was present there would surely be some more movement than this. If they could just find a scale of the hornless ice dragon, that would be wonderful progress.

Everyone hurried over. All they saw was a female disciple that looked around 17-18 years old staring and pointing at a bulge in the snow. She said, "There's someone buried there..."

"Person?"

The old man was disappointed upon hearing this. He shook his head with the peerless woman beside him. In the Great Desolate Glacier it was common to find the corpses of those who died here. It might be a mortal who had perished from the cold or starvation, or even a martial artist who fell here. Every year countless lives were lost within the Great Desolate Glacier, and many of them were forever buried beneath the snow, sealed for eternity.

“It's just a dead person. There’s no need to make such a fuss about it.”

Someone admonished the young girl who cried out in alarm.

The female disciple looked a bit aggrieved. She said, “I thought it was a corpse without any life force, but then I saw his finger move.”

“Mm? He’s still living?”

The old man was amazed. The veiled woman was also startled. She said, “Rescue him from there!”

Several disciples hastily dug out the snow, revealing a pale young man.

“It’s a young man, he looks around 20 years old and he really is alive..”

The veiled woman was astonished. The youth wasn’t breathing but his blood vitality was still running through him, and it didn’t seem weak either.

However, he seemed to have been injured by something so his state was a bit messy. It was impossible to see what his cultivation was.

“Bring him back to the spirit ship and give him some medicines. Whether or not he can continue living will depend on his good fortune.”

The veiled woman ordered. Then, she continued with the others to search for the hornless ice dragon.

Several days ago, the massive space storm that swept out for 10,000 miles had even changed the surrounding climate. In the eyes of Zenith Palace, even if it wasn't a hornless ice dragon there should be some rare treasure being born.

Since they came here with such fanfare, they might as well return with some harvests.

…….

Several maids brought the freezing youth to a room. They acted according to the orders of the veiled woman and fed him medicines, attending to him with the utmost care.

"Miss and the Twelfth Elder are too kind to rescue this unknown person. Who knows if he is a good or bad person? Maybe he did something extremely evil and was only reaping the consequences of his actions."

"That might be true, but why would our Zenith Palace fear any evil people? In the entire Cardinal Sky World there isn't a single influence that dares to move against us…"

The two maids spoke. They were certainly annoyed at having to care for an unknown youth.

"Zenith Palace… Cardinal Sky World… this should be the Soul World…"

Lin Ming thought to himself.

The youth that Zenith Palace rescued was the recently arrived Lin Ming.

The truth was that for these last several days he had been lying in the snow and wind. Although it seemed as if he was in a coma, he knew what was happening around him with absolute clarity.

He also saw the scene of the old man and veiled woman 'rescuing' him.

In fact, without these people 'rescuing' him, he would have recovered in a few days anyways.

As Lin Ming recalled the space storms he encountered when travelling from the Divine Realm to the Soul World, he still felt a lingering sense of fear. That had been an utterly terrifying journey, one that had far surpassed anything Empyrean Divine Dream had estimated possible.

Otherwise Empyrean Divine Dream would never have allowed Lin Ming to take such a risk.

Not even Lin Ming had thought such dangers were possible.

Initially, Lin Ming was able to use his own strength to deal with the space storms; this wasn’t too difficult. Lin Ming’s cultivation of Laws was extraordinarily profound. He had already practiced using the least amount of energy possible to display the maximum effect.

However, the transmission array had decayed for far too long; it was already weakened to the point of ruin.

When Lin Ming was halfway through the transmission journey, the fallout of energy shockwaves had just happened to strike upon a weak point in the space channel.

Although these energy shockwaves weren’t too strong, them hitting a weak point caused a crack to appear in the space channel.

As this crack appeared, it was like the widening maw of a death god, leaving Lin Ming in a cold sweat.

With that, the space storms became even more crazy and fierce. This was the annihilation storm that existed in the gap between two universes. Once one was struck by it, flesh and blood would melt away and all things would be destroyed without even dust remaining.

Lin Ming had struggled with everything he had and was forced to use more and more strength. This caused the already cracked space channel to repeatedly expand!

Lin Ming hastened his speed. He had to rush out of the exit before the entire space channel collapsed.

But in the end, he hadn't been able to make it in time. Just as Lin Ming was close to the exit, the entire space channel began to cave in on itself.

This caused Lin Ming to take desperate action. He summoned Primordius Heavenly Palace.

The summoning of Primordius Heavenly Palace meant the appearance of an Empyrean level strength. This caused the space channel to collapse even quicker. Although Lin Ming entered Primordius Heavenly Palace, the power of that horrifying space storm still gushed out from the space channel like a mighty torrent, wildly attacking the shields of Primordius Heavenly Palace and rapidly consuming its energy.

In the end, even the energy of the shields had been completely exhausted. Although Lin Ming was hidden within Primordius Heavenly Palace, he had to face the direct baptism of the space storm!

No matter how high Lin Ming's cultivation was, having to withstand the strong astral winds that existed in the gap between two universes was impossible for him. He was swept out, receiving severe wounds that caused him to vomit blood and his meridians were also torn apart.

In the final moments, Lin Ming received the extremely damaged Primordius Heavenly Palace and then summoned Empyrean Thunder Punishment's Temple of Marvels. Only with the Temple of Marvels' final bastion of support was Lin Ming just barely able to make it out of the exit.

But at the end, even the Temple of Marvels had been depleted of energy and it also lost a great deal of its spirituality. It was clear from this just how terrifying the space storms that existed in the gap between two universes were.

This was a power that not even an Empyrean could contend with. Only a True Divinity could sacrifice a part of their cultivation and break through the barriers of the God Lamenting Wall.

When the energy of the Temple of Marvels was depleted, Lin Ming was heavily wounded yet again. He grit his teeth and broke into the Soul World. But when he entered the Soul World, a space storm spread out for 10,000 miles, causing destruction everywhere. A million glaciers had been blown apart and instantly evaporated. Luckily, no one had been in this part of the Great Desolate Glacier, otherwise countless lives would have been lost.

In one trip, the energy of two Empyrean spirit treasures had been used up. Without a long period of allowing them to repair and also supplying them with energy, these two Empyrean spirit treasures wouldn't be able to be used for some time.

But this wasn't a problem at all. These spirit treasures could be slowly nourished back to their original state. The crux of the problem here was that Lin Ming had received heavy wounds.

This left Lin Ming feeling bitter. His adventure to the Soul World hadn't gotten off to a good start…

Chapter 1794 – The Human Race of the Soul World

Chapter 1794 – The Human Race of the Soul World

…

…

…

"Eh? You're awake!"

As Lin Ming sat up on his bed, thinking about what his next step should be in the Soul World, a young girl pushed open the door. She carried a basin of hot water with a white towel hanging from it.

This young girl only looked to be around 15-16 years old. Her small face was flushed red and her skin was smooth and vibrant. Her large eyes shined brightly, looking quite lovable.

However, as Lin Ming saw this young girl, he was actually quite shocked.

He rubbed his chin, a strange expression on his face.

As Lin Ming stared at this young girl, his behavior caused her to blush. She wasn't sure just what to do.

"Sir, you…"

For a young girl who had no experience between the sexes to be stared at by a man in such a manner was considered impolite. However, due to her young age and low status as a maid, she wasn't sure just what do say.

Luckily, Lin Ming had already withdrawn his gaze. He asked her, a bit puzzled, “You… are a human?”

Just a moment ago he had been looking at the young girl’s stomach and had clearly seen the existence of a dantian.

Only a human cultivation method would form a dantian – this was the basis of the essence gathering system.

However, there was something strange here. For human martial artists of the Divine Realm, even if they solely cultivated the essence gathering system they would still start with the first six stages of body transformation. It would begin with strength training, then flesh training, viscera training, altering muscle, bone forging, and finally pulse condensation. All of this was to form a foundation for the future Houtian, Xiantian, and later phases.

But this young maid in front of him clearly cultivated a dantian and yet her bodily strength hadn’t been trained at all. She was a weak normal woman, and this left Lin Ming feeling a bit strange.

Was the Soul World’s essence gathering system cultivation method different?

Moreover, to see a human maid in the Soul World…

“I am… what about it?”

The young girl’s dark eyes were wide open, shining as she looked at Lin Ming. From her expression she was confused about what he had said.

“Oh…” Lin Ming didn’t ask any further, instead falling deep into thought.

This small discovery brought Lin Ming a great deal of information. As he organized this information, Lin Ming felt as if he had encountered a considerably bad situation.

During this trip to the Soul World, wanting to see Sheng Mei would be more difficult than he anticipated.

He looked at the young maid and asked, “Are there many humans here? What percent of the population are they?”

The young maid looked at Lin Ming with surprise, not sure why he would ask such a bizarre question. “There are many humans, but I’m not sure what percent they make up. It is likely less than the spiritas, and especially true on the Cardinal Sky World. This is the central region and most people were are spiritas.”

The maid’s reply confirmed Lin Ming’s speculations.

However, to confirm he continued to ask, “Have the humans here formed any large influences? For instance… World King level influences?”

The young maid thought for a moment and shook her head, a bit lost. “Humans aren’t good at cultivating. We cannot compare with the spiritas. For a World King powerhouse to appear in our people is far too difficult. Sir, are you a Xiantian or Revolving Core martial artist? Unfortunately, it will be extremely difficult for you to cross seven or eight stages of Life Destruction, and if you can reach the Divine Sea realm in the future, every step after that will be far more difficult than the last…”

The young maid mumbled, secretly blaming Lin Ming for having her talk about her vulnerable points. These sorts of things were common knowledge so why did she have to explain them?

However, this was strange. This young man looked as if he had a decent level of cultivation so how come he didn’t know anything at all? Had he just popped out of a mountain somewhere?

Perhaps he was really the hand-taught disciple of a hidden master who had just recently come out of the wilds, but it was far too rare to see a powerful hidden human master.

As the young maid thought this, she laid down the basin and began wringing out the towel.

As for Lin Ming, he was lost in his thoughts.

From what the young maid had said, Lin Ming could confirm many things.

First of all, this was indeed the Soul World, but not the core universe of the Soul World.

Lin Ming recalled the words that Empyrean Divine Dream had once said to him. Billions of years ago, humanity had truly been one of the three peak races of the 33 Heavens, unlike now when they were one of the three great races in name only and had long since been in decline.

When humanity was at their peak, they had occupied several of the 33 Heavens; it had been more than the Divine Realm.

But afterwards, as the God Lamenting Wall vanished again and again, and great wars with the saints and spiritas broke out repeatedly, the human universes were slowly eaten away.

Finally, all that was left to the humans was a single Divine Realm. The other universes were all conquered by the spiritas and saints.

Without a doubt, this universe that Lin Ming came to was one of the human universes that the spiritas had seized billions of years ago.

This world had once been part of humanity's territory.

After it was captured by the spiritas, they established their influences here, began developing the resources, and grew in population.

However, the spiritas weren't cruel or merciless. They allowed the indigenous human race to continue living on.

However, as massive numbers of spiritas migrated here and then multiplied over 3.6 billion years, they slowly took full control of this universe. In terms of population size they even surpassed the humans.

And, the key point was that the spiritas had seized control of all main sources of resources in this universe. Humanity had devolved into mostly common mortals that held onto remote lands.

And amongst the humans, very few masters were born. Although many humans entered sects, they were all reduced to the role of a servant like this maid. If one had to put it in pleasant terms, they were simply janitor disciples.

Because too much time had passed, humans themselves thought that they were weak, inferior to the spiritas. As the young maid had said, humans believed they weren't suited to cultivating and could never compare to the spiritas.

If their strength couldn't compare to others' then they were on a lower level than the spiritas. For their core resources to be taken was also normal in this situation. No one would revolt and no one would think to revolt!

Moreover, from the tone of the young maid, it was also extremely difficult for human martial artists to cross Life Destruction.

This made Lin Ming feel as if he had returned to the Sky Spill Planet. Only on a lower realms world like the Sky Spill Planet would human powerhouses worry about crossing Life Destruction.

And the reason for all of this was undoubtedly because the humans of the Soul World lacked the very core of a race's prosperity – inheritances!

Lack of inheritances and cultivation methods would make it increasingly difficult for humans to cultivate. This was because humans possessed a dantian and their spiritual sea was relatively weak. To have them cultivate the spiritas cultivation methods was simply a waste of effort!

Lin Ming didn't need to ask to know that billions of years ago when the spiritas seized this universe, they also severed humanity's inheritances here.

Then, they seized all the core resources and established great influences all over. In the subsequent generations of humanity when they lacked resources and inheritances, just what could they do?

It was even possible that all their history was lost.

In the mortal worlds, it was already unclear what happened several thousands of years or even hundreds of years ago, much less something that occurred billions of years ago!

Without those sects with incomparably glorious inheritances, it was impossible to maintain historical records that stretched back millions and billions of years.

Perhaps amongst the humans of the Soul World there still existed some vague legends about how humanity had once been glorious beyond compare, with kings appearing amongst their ranks. But if these stories were still spoken of then they were likely considered nothing but fantastical myths and bedtime stories.

After several billion more years, perhaps the human race in the Soul World would further degenerate until there was nothing left but a few sparse pockets, and finally even they would vanish…

Thinking of this, Lin Ming wasn’t sure just what taste was in his mouth.

This was the sorrow of a race being captured by others. Would the Divine Realm also follow in the footsteps of this world and turn to dust?

In fact, the saints might take an even more drastic method. After seizing the Divine Realm they might recklessly start slaughtering all humans upon sight, causing the process to be even shorter.

Lin Ming gripped his fists. He did not want to see this occur. The Divine Realm was already humanity’s last bastion of hope.

And as he thought of his mission here – to see Sheng Mei, Lin Ming also worried about this.

According to his speculations, this was not the spiritas' core universe, but was a universe that the spiritas had wrested away from the humans billions of years ago. If so, then Sheng Mei might not even be in this universe!

Of the 33 Heavens, it wouldn't be strange if the spiritas controlled six or seven or eight of them. Although he had entered the Soul World, the chances that he had entered the same universe that Sheng Mei was in was extremely low!

And such a character like Sheng Mei likely kept her whereabouts a mystery to begin with. To search for her in such a massive possible area, wasn't that easier said than done?

Moreover, Lin Ming also didn't know how difficult it was to pass between the several universes of the Soul World.

Hopefully it wasn't as ridiculous as crossing from the Divine Realm to here.

As Lin Ming was lost in his thoughts, the young maid had already cleaned the towel and was about to wipe Lin Ming's face.

Lin Ming took the towel and looked at the naïve and innocent girl in front of him. He softly said, "I'll do it myself..."

The young girl was embarrassed and let go of the towel. Her large watery eyes looked at Lin Ming with curiosity. She couldn't help but ask, "I hear that Sir was buried in the snow lands for a long time. Did you happen to run into your enemy there?"

"No, I met a storm."

Lin Ming casually explained, not wanting to deceive this naïve young girl.

"Oh! Could it be that space storm that enveloped a 10,000 mile area several days ago? That was scary! At the time, someone who was standing far away said they saw a deep purple dragon pierce through the skies! I really mean it when they say it pierced through the skies! It descended from the highest heavens like some spiritual god, causing all glaciers for 10,000 miles to break in half. The Elders of Zenith Palace say that it was the sign of a hornless ice dragon being born. That's likely some ferocious saint beast. The reason that Zenith Palace sent an Elder out here is to subdue this hornless ice dragon."

Hearing the girl say these words, Lin Ming held onto the towel in a daze, not able to say anything. When he forcefully broke through space barrier to arrive here, his entire body had been wrapped in the Temple of Marvels' power of thunder as he pierced through the void. He never imagined that others would see this as a giant dragon and cause such big stir that they also mistook his arrival as the birth of a hornless ice dragon.

Really… he had no idea whether to laugh or to cry.

No wonder the people from Zenith Palace had come wandering around where he fell and even found him.

They never would have dreamt that he was the 'hornless ice dragon' they were looking for…

Chapter 1795 – Akashic Dream Battlefield

Chapter 1795 – Akashic Dream Battlefield

…

…

…

“Zenith Palace is searching for the hornless ice dragon to subdue it and make it their guardian beast?” Lin Ming thoughtlessly asked, not expecting the young maid to know anything.

The young maid nodded and said, “Yes, but the most important reason is because they wish to have the hornless ice dragon fight in the Akashic Dream Battlefield…”

Akashic Dream Battlefield?

Lin Ming was startled. He never imagined this young maid would know such information. Just what sort of place was this Akashic Dream Battlefield? Could it be the spiritas’ battlefield against the saints?

Lin Ming earnestly wanted to know just what the current situation was between the saints and the spiritas.

As he was thinking about it, the young maid asked with some envy in her voice, “Sir, if you can survive that terrifying storm, your cultivation should be quite fierce… could… could you be a Life Destruction martial artist?”

The young girl originally wanted to say Revolving Core, but she thought this young man should be a little better, and thus she asked him if he was at Life Destruction.

In her eyes, if Lin Ming could reach Life Destruction at such a young age then that was already extraordinary.

In the future there would be high hopes that he could break into the Divine Sea, Divine Transformation, or even Divine Lord realm. To humanity, this was a rare level of talent.

As she spoke she peeked at Lin Ming's expression and discovered that he didn't seem to be denying it at all. To her, this immediately confirmed her speculations. This youth was indeed a fierce young man.

Looking at the girl's expression, Lin Ming felt a bit sad. He thought back to how humanity was said to have once been one of the three great races of the 33 Heavens and was incomparably glorious. Billions of years ago, there appeared many unrivalled heroes like Empyrean Divine Seal.

Even in present times with their inheritances severed and the hopes of reaching True Divinity nearly suffocated to death, there were still peerless masters that appeared like Emperor Shakya, Empyrean Primordius, and Empyrean Divine Dream. These characters were all just a single step away from stepping into the realm of True Divinity.

But now, in the Soul World, they had fallen to such depths.

This was because humans here lacked confidence in themselves.

Once a race lost all belief in their own strength, then there was only a single fate left for them – to be slaves.

However, Lin Ming couldn't blame this on the humans of the Soul World, because this was an environment created for them that they were born in.

Lin Ming lightly sighed. Looking at the young maid before him, he could see that her road of martial arts would be long and rough. He took pity on her and took out a pill bottle from his spatial ring.

The pills in this bottle were those used by low level martial artists. To the current Lin Ming they were of no use and there was no reason for him to hold on to them.

He kept these pills in his ring because he planned to give them to his juniors as a greeting gift during the times he returned to the Sky Spill Continent.

However, even though these were pills for junior martial artists, with Lin Ming's current level of vision they were still priceless medicines that these low level martial artists could only obtain through a stroke of fate.

"This is for you."

Lin Ming passed over the pill bottle.

"This is..."

The young maid took the pill bottle in a daze and blankly opened it. A heartwarming fragrance spread out. Without a doubt, these were all top quality pills that Lin Ming had given her.

"This is too precious..."

The young maid was at a loss. But at this time, the door opened and two young girls walked in.

The young maid was shocked. She quickly put away the pill bottle in fear that it would be seen.

"Eh, you're awake?"

The two maids casually said as they looked at Lin Ming.

These two maids were both spiritas and their cultivations were equal to a human Xiantian realm martial artist. Compared to the young human maid, they were considerably stronger.

It was obvious they also had a high status amongst the maids. The human maid appeared meek and cautious in front of them.

Lin Ming remembered the voices of these two spiritas maids; they had been the ones complaining about being ordered to take care of him.

“Since you’ve awoken, follow us. Miss wishes to see you.”

“Oh.” Lin Ming nodded. Since he had just arrived at the Soul World there were many things he didn’t understand. How to find Sheng Mei, what the situation was between the spiritas and the saints – he was completely in the dark about all of this. Not just that, but he was even wounded at the moment. His best route would be to find a considerably large influence to stay at for a little while and unravel his current conundrums before leaving again.

Thus, Lin Ming didn’t refuse the summons of this ‘Miss’ at all. After he rose, he spread out his sense like a web.

He discovered that he was within an ice spirit ship. When everyone in the ship including the maids was counted, there were just several hundred people. It seemed that this was a team that Zenith Palace had temporarily sent out to look for the hornless ice dragon.

On the spirit ship, the strongest ones were the old man and the veiled woman.

The woman had an elegant temperament and was a beauty. Her skin was fair and her two eyes were icy blue, seeming to be as smooth as crystal jade.

And sitting beside her was a 50-60 year old looking white-robed old man. He had a benign appearance and his aura was restrained.

At this time, these two people were talking about something.

They didn’t lay down any sound-insulating enchantments thus the content of their conversation all fell into Lin Ming’s ears.

Although Lin Ming was injured, his soul and the intensity of his divine sense hadn't been affected. He could easily spy upon these two people talking without any worries of being discovered.

"Elder White, it doesn't seem that we can find this hornless ice dragon. Perhaps we were mistaken, or perhaps the hornless ice dragon has already dug through the glacier and escaped. Either way, it will be increasingly difficult for us in the sect wars a month from now. Currently our sect is accumulating battle merit points at a worryingly slow rate. If this continues our situation will be troublesome."

"Mm... a year ago our Zenith Palace was nearly completely annihilated in the Akashic Dream Universe. Besides you and Jadehall, the other disciples did horribly. On average they all received less than ten merit points. Even amongst influences of the same rank this is too embarrassing. I fear that if this continues, we won't be assigned many resources from Cardinal Sky World..."

As Elder White and the veiled woman spoke, Lin Ming had a strange complexion on his face.

Zenith Palace was nearly 'annihilated' in the Akashic Dream Universe?

Then could the people searching for the hornless ice dragon be ghosts or something?

Naturally, none of this made sense. But slowly, the more Lin Ming listened, the more guesses he had. These guesses caused his heart to leap into his throat. He anxiously wanted to confirm them.

"Hey, make sure you don't let your eyes just wander about. The one you're about to see is the direct disciple of our Zenith Palace Master, Senior-apprentice Sister Jaderiver, someone who possesses a postnatal spiritual ice body. Although Senior-apprentice Sister Jaderiver currently has the status of a disciple, she is already treated on the same level as an Elder. In the future she might even become the next Zenith Palace Master. Do you have any idea just what kind of concept the Zenith Palace Master is?"

The young maid looked at Lin Ming's listless expression. With his stupid appearance she was afraid he would randomly cause a ruckus with the high level figures of Zenith Palace, thus she gave him a warning.

Lin Ming couldn't be bothered arguing with this kind of maid. His eyebrows arched up and he asked, "Is Zenith Palace a World King influence?"

After investigating that Elder White's cultivation just now, he should be a half-step World King. If so, then he could infer from this that the Zenith Palace Master was most likely a World King. Moreover, it was possible that Zenith Palace had more than one World King. On a great world, such an influence was considered not too shabby.

"That's right!"

The young maid looked at Lin Ming with surprise. She didn't expect this fellow to know that much.

"Miss, I've brought the human here."

Another maid notified the veiled woman.

This veiled woman's thoughts stirred. She paused the conversation she was having with the old man.

"You've already rescued this human, but instead of having him leave, you summoned him here? Are you hoping to learn news of the hornless ice dragon from him?" Elder White shook his head, clearly not thinking Lin Ming would have any valuable information.

"Not only that. I just think that this person has a formidable blood vitality and his inner world is also extraordinary. It's a bit strange to me. Perhaps he is some amazing character..."

As the veiled woman said this, the old man was about to respond but eventually didn't and shook his head instead.

By now, Lin Ming had already walked into the room.

The room wasn't too large but the décor was extremely unique and wonderful. There were ice crystal objects everywhere and abundant spiritual energy filled the room. The chairs that the veiled woman and Elder White sat on were crafted from ice jade. A faint mist dissipated from them. It was clear they weren't ordinary treasures.

As Lin Ming entered the room, the veiled woman bid the maid pour Lin Ming a cup of spirit tea and then waved for him to take a seat.

"Sir, may I know your name?"

"My name is Lin Muk."

Lin Ming casually made up a name.

"Ah, then it is Sir Lin. Sir Lin, for what reason did you come to the Great Desolate Glacier? And why were you injured?"

As the veiled woman asked this question her eyes stared at Lin Ming, as if she wanted to completely understand his cultivation.

With Lin Ming's severely wounded state, his cultivation seemed to be between the Divine Sea and Divine Lord realm.

Lin Ming said, "I will answer all of Miss's questions. But before that, I have some questions of my own that I hope Miss can cast light on."

"Oh? What questions does Sir Lin have?"

Lin Ming said, "I am someone from the wilds. I've been training with my master since I was a child and just recently left his protection, so I know nothing of the outside world. As I was adventuring through the world I heard someone mention the Akashic Dream Battlefield and that sects of the Soul World would be engaging in sect wars within this place. May I ask what this Akashic Dream Battlefield is?"

Lin Ming guessed, and rightfully so, that his question sounded extremely stupid and might even rouse the suspicions of this Miss. After all, if this was something that even a young maid knew then it should be common knowledge.

However, he couldn't care about this much. After all, in a mere World King influence like this there was no need to have too many scruples.

With his regenerative abilities, although his current wounds were serious they wouldn't take too long to recover from.

And indeed, that veiled woman looked at Lin Ming with surprise, "You haven't heard of the Akashic Dream Universe?"

Lin Ming shook his head.

"Your master actually never told you about this…" The veiled woman thought this was bizarre. Although Lin Ming had said he was someone who lived in the wild mountains and had never left before, still, his master should have taught him such common knowledge.

"The Akashic Dream Universe is a dreamland universe shared by all people of the Soul World. There, everyone exists in the form of soul energy. This universe is broad and boundless and covers all seven Heavens that make up the Soul World. From any place within the Soul World's seven universes, one can use their own spiritual sea to connect to the Akashic Dream Universe.

"In the Akashic Dream Universe, a martial artist's cultivation, strength, Laws, everything will be copied over exactly as in reality, and this even includes weapons and pills. If two martial artists fight in the Akashic Dream Universe, that is no different from them fighting in the outside world…"

As the veiled woman explained this, Lin Ming's heart shook.

In truth, he had already faintly guessed what was happening.

This Akashic Dream Universe was in truth similar to the Divine Dream World that Empyrean Divine Dream had arranged for use in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting.

But, the Akashic Dream Universe was countless times larger than the Divine Dream World!

The number of martial artists that the Akashic Dream Universe could hold was trillions and quadrillions times more than the Divine Dream World!

“The spiritas actually had such a place…”

Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. He was well aware of just how significant it was for an entire race to possess this sort of universe!

Chapter 1796 – Zenith Palace

Chapter 1796 – Zenith Palace

…

…

…

After understanding what the Akashic Dream Universe was, there was no need to ask about the Akashic Dream Battlefield. Lin Ming had originally thought that the Akashic Dream Battlefield was a place where the saints and spiritas fought each other, but now it seemed that it was clearly a specified area within the Akashic Dream Universe where sects fought against other sects in massive wars.

In the Akashic Dream Battlefield, one could freely slaughter at will.

Like the Divine Dream World, even if a martial artist were killed on the Akashic Dream Battlefield they wouldn't die in reality. At most they would suffer some damage to their soul force that might take days or weeks to recover from.

However, the significance behind all of this was beyond the ordinary.

To a martial artist, the fastest method of growth was to fight endlessly.

In an intense battle their cultivation would be tempered and their foundation would become more solid than before.

And to a sect, holding a war that involved nearly all of its disciples would have the disciples of their sect be even more united with each other, as well as enhancing their collective combat strength and teamwork abilities.

It was impossible for such a chance to train the members of an entire sect to appear within the Divine Realm. Once a sect war broke out in the Divine Realm, that was a true life or death slaughterfest where oftentimes entire lineages were exterminated.

As for depending on the Divine Dream World, that wasn't a realistic option. This was because every time Empyrean Divine Dream opened the Divine Dream World she had to pay a heavy price to do so. The Divine Realm First Martial Meeting had the support of a nearly infinite audience as well as profits from ticket sales and other such item sales. And other than that, Empyrean Divine Dream herself was ridiculously rich. Even so, it was impossible for her to frequently open the Divine Dream World.

But with the support of the Akashic Dream Universe, the various great influences of the spiritas could often engage in mass war exercises. Their combined combat strength could be imagined!

And from what the veiled woman had said before when she was speaking to Elder White, it seemed that this Akashic Dream Battlefield also had some sort of battle merit point system. The more merit points one accumulated, the richer the rewards they could obtain. Even a sect's resources were dependent on the distribution of merit points. Because of this, the disciples of the sects were even more enthused to go to the Akashic Dream Universe.

No wonder the spiritas were so aggressive and imperious and had managed to gradually become a peak race over the billions of years. The Akashic Dream Universe must have played a large role in this!

Lin Ming felt that as humanity slowly declined, it wouldn't be strange for them to eventually lose to the spiritas.

"How was the Akashic Dream Universe formed?"

Lin Ming asked again. It was impossible for such a mystical universe to have been formed by a spiritas Empyrean or True Divinity, or even groups of them. They simply didn't possess the required amount of energy to do so.

The veiled woman said, “I fear the Akashic Dream Universe has already existed for 10 billion years by now. As for how it was formed, there are several different theories. A common one is that 10 billion years ago, the first ancestor of all spiritas was a being that surpassed the realm of True Divinity. He established the Akashic Dream Universe and evolved it into a spiritual world with its own set of independent Laws, allowing it to be passed down through the generations of his people.”

The veiled woman’s words caused Lin Ming’s heart to skip a beat.

An existence that surpassed a True Divinity!

Lin Ming would never forget that in the Asura Road’s final trial, on the third level at the planet-sized immortal palace, he had borne witness to the Asura Road Master fighting against a mysterious opponent.

Could the Akashic Dream Universe have been founded by this person?

Lin Ming felt that the chances of this were considerably high.

To form a separate spiritual universe that lasted for at least 10 billion years, for it possess its own Heavenly Dao rules and to operate independently without any need for external energy, such skilled methods were truly mind-boggling.

Even the Divine Dream World that Empyrean Divine Dream established much later had likely taken inspiration from the Soul World’s Akashic Dream Universe.

Assuming that Empyrean Divine Dream would one day surpass the realm of True Divinity, her Divine Dream World had a chance of evolving into a miracle just like the Akashic Dream Universe.

“Miss Jaderiver, I also have one more question I would like to ask.” Lin Ming had already learned the veiled woman’s name from the maid who brought him here.

“Please ask.” Jaderiver indifferently said.

"Since I left the wild mountains, I heard that the saints and spiritas were engaged in a great war. Is there a truce at the moment?"

Lin Ming never imagined that this question would have Jaderiver shaking her head, "I don't know the specifics of this. That would be a game between the high level figures of the spiritas and saints. For characters like me, that is something that goes far beyond what we would ever know about."

Jaderiver's words left Lin Ming faintly frowning.

The high level figures of the saints and spiritas… if so, then the saints not widening the flames of war was probably something limited to Empyrean influences and True Divinity influences. This also meant that there was no truly irreconcilable difference between the saints and spiritas. As a result, it would be even more difficult for the spiritas to make an alliance with humanity.

"Even if I cannot persuade Sheng Mei to help form an alliance, since I've come to the Soul World I must see her anyways. And most importantly of all, I have to gain experience here… only with strength will I be able to play a greater role in the great calamity. At the very least I should be able to survive…"

A great portion of the reason that Lin Ming came to the universe of the spiritas was to adventure. In the Divine Realm it was already almost impossible to find an opponent.

"I've answered your questions. Now, it's time for you to answer mine."

Jaderiver faintly smiled as she looked at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming nodded.

Jaderiver's questions mostly involved Lin Ming's inheritance, cultivation methods, master, and so forth. He simply didn't understand why she asked such questions.

"What is she getting at?"

Lin Ming couldn't help but ask himself. He used the standard of the Ancient Phoenix Clan's Phoenix Cry Palace to answer Jaderiver. He concocted a background where he used the inheritances of the Ancient Phoenix Clan and where his master was Fairy Feng.

Lin Ming answered in accordance to what a Life Destruction or Divine Sea martial artist should know of. Not just that, but he naturally downplayed his talent, making his story seem seamless.

Then, Jaderiver asked about the hornless ice dragon. Lin Ming stuck to his original story. He stated that he had never seen the hornless ice dragon and that he had landed in his current predicament because of the terrifying space storm that appeared out of nowhere.

Lin Ming's answers left Jaderiver frowning a little. She originally believed that if Lin Ming was able to survive the space storm, there was likely something special about him. And even after trying to ask some trick questions she still hadn't been able to dig anything out of him. It appeared that Lin Ming was just an ordinary human youth with talent.

She looked at Lin Ming after some time and asked, "Do you have any interest in staying at Zenith Palace?"

Lin Ming was surprised. "Zenith Palace recruits human disciples?"

"Occasionally."

Lin Ming thought for some time. Thinking about the words of the young human maid, it was true that Zenith Palace had some human disciples. This left Lin Ming puzzled. Didn't the core inheritances of Zenith Palace only suit spiritas? What was the reason for bringing in humans? After all, it was impossible for humans to study the inheritances of Zenith Palace.

Jaderiver smiled, "If you join Zenith Palace then Zenith Palace will provide you with resources. I believe that it will be far better than you cultivating by yourself. I'm positive these resources will tempt you."

Hearing Jaderiver's words, Lin Ming felt even more doubtful. Humans shouldn't be welcomed anywhere in the Soul World. As they were considered an inferior race here it was normal for them to be discriminated against.

Humans that were janitors and servants likely made up a great deal of the population.

So why would Zenith Palace actually help bring in humans instead?

Jaderiver could see Lin Ming's thoughts. She chuckled, "I know you think this is strange. Good, then let me be honest with you. The Zenith Palace Master has created a dual soul and energy cultivation method. By implanting a virtual dantian into the body of a spiritas martial artist, they can use this virtual dantian to cultivate the essence gathering system. I've also practiced this sort of cultivation method.

"Now, what we need are some human geniuses so that we can reference the way energy revolves in your dantian to perfect our virtual dantian."

Jaderiver's explanation caused Lin Ming to frown. So this was actually dual soul and energy cultivation!

Although humanity's ancient inheritances had been severed by the spiritas, they should have kept the most outstanding of the inheritances. The large spiritas influences didn't completely destroy these inheritances but rather retained them for future use. If certain heaven-shocking rare geniuses were to appear amongst the spiritas that could dual cultivate soul and energy, then they could use these inheritances to their advantage.

Lin Ming himself was the greatest beneficiary of the dual cultivating system.

After taking the best inheritances of humanity, the spiritas then caged in the geniuses of humanity to observe their dantians. This was treating them no differently than animals to be experimented upon. After being inspired to create their virtual dantian method, they were then able to cultivate the essence gathering system.

This was a well thought out plan!

Even so, this sort of situation was something that many human martial artists wished for in their dreams. Jaderiver had already stated that the resources of Zenith Palace were precious beyond compare.

“Okay, then I will join you.”

Lin Ming agreed. His original idea was to enter a small human sect, recovering from his wounds while looking for a chance to enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

The Akashic Dream Battlefield was the only place where Lin Ming thought he could find Sheng Mei.

As long as he caused a great enough commotion in the Akashic Dream Battlefield, this would bring the attention of the high level spiritas figures upon him.

Now Zenith Palace was trying to win him over. With this, Lin Ming could skip a step and use his status as a disciple of Zenith Palace to enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield. This was likely the easiest route.

As for observing Lin Ming’s dantian, if they wanted to discover anything useful about it then they could continue dreaming on.

“Great!”

Seeing Lin Ming agree, Jaderiver was in a good mood. The more talented a human disciple was, the more value there was in referencing their dantian. As for the humans of the Soul World, their cultivations and strengths were each worse than the last.

Amongst the humans with their weak foundations and low levels of talent, wanting to find good seedlings was far too difficult.

Although Lin Ming’s talent wasn’t too extreme, it was still much better than that of the previous human disciples they had found.

Then, on the same day, the disciples of Zenith Palace started their journey of returning to base.

Lin Ming also calmly trained in his own chamber, rapidly restoring his body.

As Lin Ming was quietly cultivating, he noticed that a divine sense had locked onto him and was continuously monitoring him.

"Soul Lord realm martial artist..."

Lin Ming could look at the intensity of this divine sense to judge that the person spying on him was no more than a tiny minion, someone no stronger than a human Divine Lord.

Lin Ming lightly laughed, not caring much at all. He was a stranger that had suddenly joined in on this spirit ship. It was normal for someone to monitor him in this situation. Rather, he would feel disturbed if that didn't happen.

Then, Lin Ming sent out his divine sense. He observed the changes all around him as if he were avoiding someone trying to take advantage of him.

In the end he was on the spirit ship of an alien race. He couldn't help but remain guarded.

At this time, Lin Ming's eyes suddenly shot open and he frowned.

Just now, the divine sense that Lin Ming had cast out had witnessed an extremely uncomfortable scene.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment before standing up and walking through the door.

The divine sense monitoring Lin Ming also continued following him...

Chapter 1797 – Dispute

Chapter 1797 – Dispute

…

…

…

"Hand it over, otherwise we'll mess you up!"

A cold girl's voice sounded out. Her words had a bullying tone to them.

At this time, in the maidservants' room, three beautiful young girls were holding their arms against their waists as they surrounded a small and weak 15-16 year old looking girl.

This young girl was pale and her fists were tightly clenched together. She subconsciously guarded her chest, clearly indicating just how much fear she was feeling right now.

"You lowly slut, delay any further and we'll kill you! Hurry up and hand it over! When we entered the room we saw you panic and hide the pill bottle and we even smelled the medicinal fragrance. Don't try to deny it!"

These three beautiful young girls were all spiritas maids. The young human girl they were bullying was the maid that Lin Ming had given a bottle of pills to.

To Lin Ming, these pills didn't have any use at all. But to these young maids who were still struggling at the Houtian or Xiantian realm, these medicines were incomparably precious treasures.

When these maids had entered Lin Ming's room they had smelled the light medicinal fragrance and were able to discern just how precious these pills were. They were definitely pills that could nourish one's energy and soul. Whether it was for a human or a spiritas, they were highly beneficial.

Thus, they began to form thoughts of stealing them. However, they naturally couldn't reveal these thoughts in front of Lin Ming, after all, even though Lin Ming was only a mere human, he seemed to be a martial artist at the Life Destruction realm or above and they were not his match. But now that these pills had fallen into the hands of this young girl, the situation was different.

One couldn't only look at the demeanor that these spiritas maids adopted in front of their superiors; normally, they arrogantly rampaged around. The human maids were instead the ones forced to wash their clothes and do other tasks.

"Hurry up! Those pills aren't something that a low class human like you should have!"

The maid with the highest status amongst the three, and also the leader of the maids, grabbed onto the young girl's collar and slapped her face repeatedly. Her tone was threatening as she said, "So you want to do this the hard way, right? Be careful or I might rip your face off!"

The head maid began to pinch the young girl's cheeks and slowly twisted the skin into a circle. Even as the head maid smiled, the young girl's face was already twisted red.

The young girl held back her tears. She forcefully opened her eyes, not allowing any tears to fall or showing any pain. She clenched her fists and grit her teeth, saying, "This is something that the young sir gave me, it is not yours!"

"Haha! You little slut, you must have formed a crush on that human and thought that he would take you in as his concubine, right? Just who do you think you are? Take a good look at yourself in the mirror! You're nothing but an inferior human maid, even if you died no one would care! If you died we would simply toss you off the side of the ship like we would a dead dog! Let alone you, even that 'sir' you speak of is only some human that was found frozen outside! Although he might be considered a master amongst us, in Zenith Palace amongst the Elders, Protectors and core disciples, he is just a dog!"

The maid shoved the young girl over.

The young girl wobbled and fell to the floor. Her head hit the wall behind her with a thick thumping sound.

The young maid had started cultivating the essence gathering system before training in the six stages of body transformation. Because of that, this strike caused her sight to blur. Even so, she grasped her fists and didn't say a single word.

In this universe where spiritas ruled, it was common for humans to be discriminated against and bullied. This young girl was clearly aware that strength was everything.

Because she was weak, she could only allow herself to be pushed around like this.

For a young human girl to be killed by others and have her treasures stolen, that was a commonplace scene.

But now, she had managed to seize an opportunity with these medicines that the young sir had gifted to her. This allowed her to see the light of hope for making a breakthrough. How could she give up this chance and resign herself to her fate?

Perhaps in her entire life, this would be the only chance for her to crawl onto her feet and walk as a proud human.

"Ho! What a stubborn bitch! I can take it from you whether you want to or not, but if I do then your fate will be miserable!"

The head maid sneered as she spoke.

And at this time, another young maid said, "There's nothing in her ring!"

As the maid spoke, she grabbed an extremely low quality spatial ring from the young girl's finger and crumbled it. From inside fell out a pile of clothes, ordinary weapons, and some medicinal herbs.

These were the entirety of the young human girl's possessions.

The head maid crushed these inferior medicinal herbs beneath her feet, jeering as she said, "Then she must be hiding them on her body. It's impossible for her to have the time to refine such high quality pills or to swallow them all in one go. Tear apart her clothes until she's naked. We'll slowly look for what we're searching for."

"Okay!"

As the other two maids spoke she rushed forwards and began to pull the young girl's clothes. With a ripping sound, part of her clothes tore apart, revealing her bellyband.

"Ahh!"

The young girl screamed out loud. But, the two maids' actions became even more fervent.

"I found it!"

A young maid raised a pill bottle. After opening it, several jade-green, bean-sized pills rolled out.

"What great pills! Are these Blue Miracle Pills or something else? It seems that almost frozen human's wealth isn't too poor!" The maids laughed and looked towards that young girl.

"Finish her up. Tear off all her clothes and lash her!"

As the head maid spoke, she felt a sudden chill rush over her, causing her heart to skip a beat. She quickly leapt backwards and turned around in midair.

"Who!?"

The three maids were immediately vigilant. They discovered that a man had appeared behind them. This man's face was dark and was emitting a thick killing intent.

"It's you!"

The maids naturally recognized Lin Ming. However, they weren't afraid of him. In this spirit ship there wasn't anything that Lin Ming could do to them.

"Sir!"

At this time, the young girl cried out as she saw Lin Ming appear. Sadness, injustice, grief, all sorts of feelings rushed up in her chest before they came out as scalding tears in her eyes. Her knees seemed to give out as she tumbled over like a broken kite.

Her pills were taken and her clothes were torn; there was nothing in her heart but shame.

"You're fine..."

Lin Ming suddenly said. He didn't know what he was feeling in his heart. He had only crossed paths with this young girl once and didn't even know her name, but right now, because of her bitter and painful experiences, he felt nothing but anger for her!

The reason might be because they were both from the human race. From this young girl's bitter experiences he was able to see the future of the Divine Realm. This was the sorrow of a race that had their lands fall into enemy hands.

"You want to save this little slut? I never imagined you would be interested in such trash. Fine, to show you some face, we won't press this issue anymore."

As the head maid spoke, she received the pills.

The maids simply didn't fear Lin Ming's threats at all. Even if Lin Ming was strong, he was nothing but a mere human. This was a spiritas spirit ship; just what could he do here?

"You are courting death!"

Just as Lin Ming said these words, he took great strides forwards and punched out, smashing the head maid in the face!

Peng!

With a dull thump, the maid screamed out loud as she hurtled backwards and smashed into a wall, vomiting a great mouthful of blood.

“You… you hit me…”

The head maid said as she spat out blood. Her teeth had been knocked out and her face was filled with disbelief.

The other two maids were stunned. They never imagined that Lin Ming would be so reckless to attack them on this spirit ship.

“As well as you two!”

Lin Ming unfolded his arms like an eagle opening its wings. The two young maids were unable to put up even the slightest bit of resistance as they were smashed backwards. They screamed out loud and vomited mouthfuls of blood.

This was the first time that Lin Ming had struck women who weren’t able to fight back at all, and where he also didn’t show them mercy.

With the premise that he didn’t take their lives, he tore apart their meridians. With a low level martial artist’s restorative abilities, it would take at least a month of recuperation before they healed from this.

Pa!

Lin Ming flicked his finger and the head maid’s spatial ring exploded. He took back the pill bottle he had originally given the young girl.

These pills didn't have any value to Lin Ming to begin with. But, he would rather feed them to dogs than give them to these three spiritas maids.

"Insolence! How dare you!"

At this time, a man's icy voice resounded in the air. Lin Ming frowned. He knew that someone had been monitoring him the entire time. Now that he wounded someone, the people from Zenith Palace would immediately know of this.

He calmly untied his outer robe and draped it over the ragged young human girl.

The young girl grabbed onto Lin Ming's hand, alarmed.

With that shout of 'insolence', she immediately understood that a high level spiritas had arrived. It was likely Lin Ming would be sucked into a mess because of her actions.

"Sir..."

The young girl's eyes were filled with guilt. In this situation, Lin Ming would definitely suffer a loss.

"Put on some clothes first."

Lin Ming calmly said. Then, he slowly turned around. Behind him, a youth with red eyebrows walked in. This youth was thin and had freezing cold eyes. His temperament seemed as if his entire being was carved by an ice saber and his cultivation was at the late Soul Lord realm.

As the red eyebrow youth appeared, the three spiritas maids perked up as if they saw their savior. They all cried and crawled over to him.

"Lord Yi, find justice for us!"

The several maids sobbed, their tears overflowing.

That Senior-apprentice Brother Yi looked over the injuries of the three spiritas maids. Then, his expression became increasingly cold. “You ride my ship and yet strike my people. Just who gave you the courage to do this?”

“You want to fight?”

Lin Ming frostily said, not wanting to drag things on. It was true that he was injured but a skinny camel was still larger than a horse. To deal with this unimportant figure in front of him wouldn’t take any effort at all.

It was just that if he were to fight with this Senior-apprentice Brother Yi, there was no way he could continue to stay at Zenith Palace. Currently, Lin Ming still wasn’t able to contend with the peak masters of Zenith Palace; his wounds left him unable to fully call upon the energy in his inner world.

“Hahaha! Did I hear correctly?”

Senior-apprentice Brother Yi loudly laughed. “You actually asked if I want to fight? You aren’t my match! You can’t even see through my boundary, all I would need is my little finger to crush you to death!”

Senior-apprentice Brother Yi coldly sneered, readying himself to attack. But at this time, from not too far away, an old man walked up and whispered something in his ears.

Senior-apprentice Brother Yi’s red eyebrows wrinkled. “What? This human garbage was chosen by Senior-apprentice Sister Jaderiver?”

“Yes, Miss believes that his talent is adequate and wants to borrow him to further perfect her virtual dantian. Thus it would be best if you don’t injure him, otherwise it will be hard to explain the situation to the Miss.”

As the old man spoke, he looked at Lin Ming and disdainfully said, “Consider yourself lucky this time! Next time I will make sure you walk around without any teeth.”

Chapter 1798 – Akashic Dream Battlefield Opens

Chapter 1798 – Akashic Dream Battlefield Opens

…

…

…

The red eyebrow youth called Senior-apprentice Brother Yi walked away. The other three spiritas maids also stood up in a panic and hurried behind him, silently enduring the pain from having their meridians torn by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming didn't stop these people from leaving. Originally, he had already expected that the status of humans wasn't too good in the Soul World, and the reason the veiled woman from before was so polite to him was because she needed his help and also because of her personality. She was someone who had stood at the top for a long time and had developed a sense of deep superiority in her heart. She didn't need to show disdain or contempt in her words to improve her own status.

But those people with slightly lower status were different. In front of their lords and masters they were timid and polite, but in front of others they blustered about.

"Get up…"

Lin Ming stretched out a hand and pulled up the young maid.

"I'm sorry…" The young maid quietly murmured as she bit her lips. She felt as if she had needlessly sucked Lin Ming into her problems.

"It's no problem… what is your name?"

“My name is Wanyue.” The young maid whispered.

“Mm.” Lin Ming nodded and returned the pills that were taken from her. Thinking about it a bit more, Lin Ming added on another bottle of pills. Then, without paying attention to the young maid’s refusals he turned and left.

He needed to maximize his time to restore his strength.

His wounds would need several days before they could fully recover. Until Lin Ming was restored to his peak state he would find it difficult to remain tranquil.

Like this, Lin Ming rested in the spirit ship until they arrived at Zenith Palace.

Zenith Palace was located atop a million foot high snowy mountain.

And in the surrounding mountain range, there were areas swathed in array formations. In these areas, spirit springs gushed up and lush grass grew abundantly. All sorts of rare world treasures bloomed, making this land seem like a fairytale.

Witnessing this scene, Lin Ming wasn’t impressed at all. He had already seen places that were hundreds of times more beautiful.

“This is your residential area.”

Someone said to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming looked at the human residential area of Zenith Palace. There was no array formation here thus the buildings were wrapped in a world of ice and snow. Of course, to a martial artist this level of cold wasn’t much at all.

This living area had a richness of spiritual energy that was only a tenth of what the highest peak had.

Lin Ming wasn’t surprised by such a scene. In this bitter cold, to lay down a spiritual energy-gathering array formation that worked all year round would consume a considerable amount of resources.

In this area there were many human martial artists; most of them came from the surrounding regions of Zenith Palace and they stayed here to cultivate. Sometimes they would be summoned to the peak of Zenith Palace so that the Zenith Palace Master could observe their inner world.

In this land, the best dwellings had been occupied by others already.

Lin Ming casually chose a residence. This was a mansion, and although it was large in size the furnishings were barren and simple and the spiritual energy here was barren.

Lin Ming didn’t care for these details. As soon as he entered he began meditating.

As for that young maid Wanyue, she also lived in this area. She voluntarily chose to stay in Lin Ming’s palace and help tend to his daily needs.

The days passed in peace.

In this snowy area, very few people came, making it seem a bit lonely.

Lin Ming was glad for this. In these past days, his wounds had been rapidly recovering.

At the same time he also studied the inheritance left behind by Empyrean Thunder Punishment.

The current Lin Ming had no lack of top grade cultivation methods. Empyrean Thunder Punishment’s inheritance could only be considered a superior transcendent divine might; its grade wasn’t too high.

But, the key factor was that it was extremely well suited for Lin Ming. Moreover, he also had the support of Empyrean Thunder Punishment’s ready-made memories and his experience. With this, Empyrean Thunder Punishment’s inheritance provided a good deal of inspiration to Lin Ming in controlling the power of thunder as well as perceiving the Thunder Laws.

Simultaneously, Empyrean Thunder Punishment’s memories allowed Lin Ming to further understand what happened in the war 100,000 years ago.

The start to end of the war was almost exactly as Lin Ming had speculated. Unfortunately, Empyrean Thunder Punishment’s memory of events only lasted until he had been struck by Empyrean Primordius’ strongest attack and sent piercing through the Sky Spill Planet. After that, his soul had been scattered and his origin energy completely exhausted. All that was left over of him was a wisp of a remnant soul.

All matters that occurred afterwards, Empyrean Thunder Punishment had no idea of.

Like this, a month passed.

On this day, the meditating Lin Ming suddenly stood up. He wanted to leave the human residential area.

“Sir, is there some matter?”

Wanyue asked with surprise.

“Mm.”

Lin Ming didn’t speak further. He flew up and towards the peak of Zenith Palace.

He had already understood from Jaderiver and that Zenith Palace Elder that the sect wars within the Akashic Dream Battlefield would be occurring in a few days.

And in truth, in Zenith Palace, many disciples had converged in the main square before the central palace. These disciples were all outstanding individuals of Zenith Palace.

Among them were the elites from the core disciples as well as some people who were considerably older. These older people tended to be at the Holy Lord realm or above and were the backbone of Zenith Palace.

“There are three more days! That is when the war within the Akashic Dream Battlefield begins! When you enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield, you will need to stay there for a full three years!”

Standing in front of all the disciples of Zenith Palace was a grandiose white-robed old man. This old man was Zenith Palace’s Vice Palace Master.

“During these three years you will run into all sorts of enemies. This includes opponents from other sects as well as nightmare beasts. Cut them down to gather merit points!

“And the more merit points you gather, the more unimaginable the rewards you can exchange them for!

“Besides the resources handed down by Zenith Palace, the most important factor of all are the heaven-shaking rewards from the Akashic Dream Universe!

“The rewards of the Akashic Dream Universe are no trifling matter. In the legends, the Akashic Dream Universe was created by the first ancestor of all spiritas and the lucky chances within are incomprehensibly great. The highest rewards can even move the heart of a True Divinity!

“Of course, this is all far too distant for you. If any of you can open yourself just a small space within the Cardinal Sky World then that is more than enough to be proud of. This will allow your future road of martial arts to be free from many troubles!

“All of you should be aware that today is your good fortune as well as your opportunity! In these past years, amongst the World King influences of Cardinal Sky World, the results of my Zenith Palace haven’t been too great. Your results this time are directly correlated to the destiny of the sect! Empyrean Cardinal Sky has already sent out a proclamation that anyone who has outstanding results in the Akashic Dream Battlefield will be personally taken in as a disciple by him. All of you should be well aware of what it means to become a disciple of Empyrean Cardinal Sky!

“Not to mention the other benefits, just being a disciple of Empyrean Cardinal Sky will make you a candidate to be the next Zenith Palace Master! And as long as you can break into the World King realm in the future, that is a Highest Elder!”

The white-robed old man passionately spoke out. As the disciples of Zenith Palace heard this, all of them began to bubble with excitement.

If one could be received as a disciple by Empyrean Cardinal Sky, they could be the next Zenith Palace Master!

In addition, there was also the heaven-shaking rewards of the Akashic Dream Universe and the support of Zenith Palace’s resources.

This was a golden chance – just who would miss out on this opportunity?

This was all because Zenith Palace had started to decline in these last years. The two World King masters of Zenith Palace were well into their old age. Not only could they not enhance their cultivation boundaries anymore, but instead their vitality began to dissipate further with every passing day.

According to this trend, in less than 100,000 years, the two sect-stabilizing World Kings of Zenith Palace would drop to the weakest of World Kings in terms of fighting strength.

At that time, the grade of influence that Zenith Palace was would surely drop down by one.

And to train another World King powerhouse in these 100,000 years seemed far too unlikely.

This was the reason why Zenith Palace spared no expense in raising the younger generation. The accumulated inside background of the sect, their many resources, all of these things were used up without hesitation. Zenith Palace had staked everything in this gamble in the hopes that they would be able to produce an outstanding junior that was able to support them in the future.

"I ask the Vice Palace Master and all other Elders to feel at ease. Within the Akashic Dream battlefield, we shall write our own legends!"

"That's right! For the sect and for ourselves, we'll slaughter our way through the world!"

The disciples of Zenith Palace all shouted out together, their ardent chants filling the skies.

But at this time, there was the sound of splitting air. A blue-clothed youth cut through the vast blue sky at an incredible speed, flying straight towards the meeting square.

This youth was Lin Ming.

"Who is that!?"

The disciples of Zenith Palace were just starting their chant when an uninvited guest broke his way in. The high level figures of Zenith Palace frowned. Just where had this human come from? Moreover, to be so public with his actions and fly high in the skies was an extremely impolite action.

"Lin Muk?"

Jaderiver was certainly present. She immediately recognized Lin Ming and was stunned for a moment. Where had he come from?

"Lin Muk, what are you doing! Hurry up and come down!"

Jaderiver began to develop a headache. Just what was going on here?

Lin Ming fell down. The reason he came here was to borrow one of Zenith Palace’s spots to enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield. Since he came here to request help, he naturally couldn’t be too reckless in his actions nor could he start a fight.

Chapter 1799 – Stealing the Stage

Chapter 1799 – Stealing the Stage

…

…

…

“Brat, so it’s you again!”

A red eyebrow youth looked up at Lin Ming. This youth was Yi Fan, the young man who had come into conflict with Lin Ming aboard the spirit ship.

He didn’t think that Lin Ming would actually show up out of nowhere during the assembly meeting for the Akashic Dream Battlefield; it seemed that he was tired of living.

According to the rules of Zenith Palace, if a low level disciple were to interrupt the speech of the Vice Palace Master during an important occasion, that was a sin of tremendous disrespect.

“Jaderiver, Yi Fan, you know him?”

The white-robed Elder looked towards Jaderiver, frowning.

“Yes…”

Jaderiver braced herself and nodded. She looked at Lin Ming and glumly said, “Lin Muk, how come you aren’t training in your residential area but instead came to the high peak?”

“Miss Jaderiver.” Lin Ming cupped his fists together. “I heard that the Akashic Dream Battlefield will be opening soon and would like to be granted a spot to enter. I wonder if the Akashic Dream Battlefield has any limits on race for entrance?”

Lin Ming's words caused the entire audience to die down.

He wanted a coveted spot to enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield? Who the hell did he think he was!

"Hahaha! Are you trying to make me laugh myself to death!? You are nothing but a human and yet you're so arrogant! Only 9300 people can enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield and the list of names was decided well over three months ago! Besides 3000 disciples that were predetermined, the 6000 some leftover spots were all decided by a grand tournament held between the disciples of Zenith Palace, passing through layers upon layers of competition before they were able to win a spot!

"Every Zenith Palace disciple that could obtain a spot is an outstanding individual that can dominate martial artists of the same level and look down upon their peers with disdain! And yet you actually spoke of wanting to take a spot from these people, what an idiot!"

Yi Fan recklessly laughed. Although his words were contemptuous, this was also what the other spiritas martial artists present were thinking. They all thought that Lin Ming was just some brain-addled idiot.

"Oh? The list of people has already been determined?" Lin Ming hadn't expected this. Before, Jaderiver said that they could enter the Akashic Dream Universe from any place in the spiritas' seven universes.

Now it seemed that only location wasn't limited. But as for wanting to enter the Akashic Dream Universe, there were inevitably other restrictions. Not just anyone could casually enter as they pleased.

Zenith Palace could only send 9300 people. Then, smaller influences were likely able to send in even less.

Lin Ming's voice lowered. He said, "Then I would like to know, is there a limit to races that can enter the Akashic Dream Universe?"

“Who cares if there isn’t? You don’t have the qualifications to begin with!” Yi Fan sneered.

“Then… give me your qualifications.” Lin Ming calmly said as he looked at Yi Fan. “Since the spots are decided through competition within the sect and I am also a disciple of the sect, once I defeat you I should obtain your qualifications, right?”

“You!! You want to die!?”

Hearing Lin Ming’s brazen words, Yi Fan was enraged.

With a ringing sound, Yi Fang’s sword left its sheath. He pointed it straight towards Lin Ming!

“Since you’re in such a hurry to die, let me help!”

Yi Fan flew into the sky as he spoke. His eyes locked onto Lin Ming’s dantian.

Because Lin Ming had been injured before, his inner world had been in chaotic tatters. But now, Lin Ming had completely recovered and there was no need for him to conceal his inner world, thus Yi Fan was clearly able to discern Lin Ming’s cultivation.

“What? Early Holy Lord realm? So you are a Holy Lord realm human?”

Yi Fan’s words startled all the Zenith Palace disciples present. They all looked towards Lin Ming’s dantian and could feel the light aura of a micro universe from within.

In other words, his inner world had developed starry space and even bred planets.

“Early Holy Lord?” Jaderiver’s eyes flashed with astonishment. So the Lin Muk that she had rescued was actually an early Holy Lord realm martial artist.

In the Soul World, human Holy Lord realm martial artists were extremely rare.

Generally speaking, a human had to possess great talent and come across many lucky chances as well as have an extremely high degree of talent to just barely be able to break into the Holy Lord realm. Moreover, the Holy Lord realm was the terminus of human cultivation. To take a further step into the World King realm was impossible.

“Humph! Who cares if you are a Holy Lord? No wonder you have the guts to rush to the highest peak. Do you think that just because you are a Holy Lord you are that great? In Zenith Palace, a Holy Lord isn’t anything at all! Moreover, you are nothing but a human Holy Lord, you don’t even enter my eyes!”

What Yi Fan despised the most was human martial artists. In the Soul World, human martial artists were in a miserable state and it was nearly impossible for them to keep up with spiritas martial artists of the same level. In fact, even when facing a spiritas that was a small boundary lower, they still might lose.

Moreover, Yi Fan was an extraordinary core disciple of Zenith Palace and his cultivation was at the peak of the late Soul Lord realm; he wasn’t too far from the Holy Lord realm.

The reason he was able to obtain a spot to enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield was not because he competed through the tournament but because he was elected and directly granted an entry token.

A talented disciple of a World King Holy Land possessed more than enough skill to jump ranks to fight. Even a spiritas Holy Lord might not be his match, much less a human Holy Lord!

“Senior-apprentice Sister Jaderiver, this person wants to walk down the road of death. Me killing him is also within reason so you should look for some other human to perfect your virtual dantian instead!”

As Yi Fan spoke, he slashed his sword down at Lin Ming.

His sword chopped towards Lin Ming’s forehead. Sword light shot out. Yi Fan had also combined a soul attack in this strike, going for a one hit kill!

In this situation, many of his fellow sect disciples were watching. If he couldn't destroy Lin Ming in one strike then even if he won he wouldn't have any face to greet them.

And at this time, Lin Ming also retaliated.

Facing someone like Yi Fan, Lin Ming had no need to use any transcendent divine might. Rather, he formed a spear with two fingers and cut downwards, sending out a brilliant divine light.

In that moment, many Zenith Palace disciples were forced to shut their eyes. That dreadful divine light was a nearly substantialized spear light. Just by looking at it they felt as if it would pierce their skulls, and even their souls shivered.

Peng!

Blood sprinkled down. Yi Fan cried out in pain and was flung backwards, his sword also sent scattering away.

His figure flew back a thousand feet before slamming into the ground like a meteor. He continued tumbling backwards until he crashed into an ice sculpture, causing it to explode into countless shards.

All of this happened in a split second. The entire audience was left in a silent daze.

The result of this brief exchange was completely unexpected.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Yi!”

Several disciples quickly ran over to help Yi Fan.

Lin Ming had held back. In Zenith Palace's territory he certainly wouldn't take Yi Fang's life, but this strike was more than enough to keep him bedridden for a long period of time.

Since Lin Ming had already said he wanted to substitute for Yi Fan to enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield, severely wounding Yi Fan so that he would have to spend a few months recuperating was the most appropriate decision.

“What was that? What happened just now?”

Many Zenith Palace disciples hadn’t been able to clearly see just what Lin Ming did.

“This human instantly struck down Senior-apprentice Brother Yi Fan! Moreover, he didn’t even use a weapon, he just used his fingers!”

The Zenith Palace disciples all looked at each other in shocked dismay. They couldn’t believe that a highly ranked core disciple had been defeated in such a manner.

Although Yi Fan was only a late Soul Lord martial artist, he could easily jump ranks to right. If one said he was equal to a Holy Lord realm spiritas martial artist, no one would refute that.

But in front of this human, he had been utterly devastated. The disparity was just far too great.

“This human martial artist is also a genius, a king amongst his level! Perhaps he might not be much worse than a middle spiritas Holy Lord or even late spiritas Holy Lord!”

“That’s too exaggerated. If so, then isn’t it likely he’ll break into the World King realm?”

To the disciples of Zenith Palace, the World King realm was a legend.

For the last million years of the sect, they had arduously accumulated a total of two World Kings. And in the future, it would be difficult for them to raise another World King to succeed the previous ones.

To break into the World King realm – wasn’t that easier said than done?

"No matter what, he is absolutely a master. He might not be any weaker than Senior-apprentice Sister Jaderiver!"

"Perhaps he might barely be able to compare with Senior-apprentice Sister Jaderiver. Although it was a Holy Lord against a Soul Lord, with a boundary difference dividing them, it was still incredible that he could win so easily. A human was actually able to grow to such a degree..."

That spear light Lin Ming shot out just now was only aimed at Yi Fan, but even so, the other martial artists who saw it felt as if they themselves had been pierced by the spear light and had been left panic-stricken.

And at this time, Yi Fan was also lying in a sludge of ice and bloody water. As he looked at Lin Ming, his eyes were blurry.

"You... you..."

"I only want your qualifications; I have no interest in killing you." Lin Ming gloomily said. He no longer looked at Yi Fan but instead turned to the approaching Vice Palace Master.

"Senior Vice Palace Master, this Yi Fan had said that there was no limit to race in entering the Akashic Dream Universe, right?"

After being questioned by Lin Ming, the white-robed old man's complexion turned ugly.

If Lin Ming was a spiritas then the Vice Palace Master would have been overjoyed if he had defeated Yi Fan with a single move. He would have regarded Lin Ming as the most precious of treasures.

But, the situation was different.

Lin Ming was a human.

A human disciple might be part of Zenith Palace in name, but the truth was that none of them existed in the high level ranks of Zenith Palace. Zenith Palace had always regarded humans as not being a part of their own, and felt a bias towards them as those of an inferior race.

“Yes, there is no restriction…”

The Vice Palace Master’s voice was low and deep. He looked towards the approaching Jaderiver.

Jaderiver also felt this entire situation unbelievable. Lin Ming’s strength had far surpassed her estimations.

As she recalled the location where she first found Lin Ming, a strange feeling surged in her heart. Why had Lin Ming appeared at the same time that the hornless ice dragon had, and why had he been injured? Was all of this a coincidence?

“Third High Master, the situation is like this…”

Jaderiver’s lips moved as she quickly explained to the Vice Palace Master about Lin Ming’s status using a sound transmission.

The white-robed old man carefully listened, his eyebrows shaking.

Such an outstanding disciple was actually not a spiritas; this left him feeling a deep melancholy.

If Lin Ming had been a spiritas then he could be raised with their full support and he might even become a World King in the future.

The white-robed old man looked at several Zenith Palace Masters that were standing nearby.

These people were all high level Elders of Zenith Palace. They glanced at each other, wanting to form a consensus of opinion. Finally, the Great Elder of Zenith Palace spoke up.

“Allow him to join the Akashic Dream Battlefield. Although he is a human, as long as he carries a battlefield token of my Zenith Palace then he is also a disciple of my Zenith Palace. This time, there will be 9300 people participating in the Akashic Dream Battlefield. Besides Jaderiver and a few others, I fear no one else can keep up with this human. Let him enter so he can also help support the ranks.”

“Support the ranks… aiya, even a human is stronger than us. Has Zenith Palace declined so much that we have to rely on a human junior to support us? This is just too pitiful.”

Zenith Palace Elders began to speak amongst themselves. Their words were the same as stating that Lin Ming had the qualifications to enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

Chapter 1800 – Entering the Battlefield

Chapter 1800 – Entering the Battlefield

…

…

…

Like this, it was decided that Lin Ming would enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield. The rest of the spiritas disciples present felt as if they were living a dream. What happened today was far too strange. A human had rushed into their meeting site and instantly defeated core disciple Yi Fan without using a weapon, thus obtaining the qualifications to enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

Their Zenith Palace would actually be sending a human into the Akashic Dream Battlefield. This was something that hadn't happened for hundreds of thousands of years.

"Lin Muk, what were you doing on the Great Desolate Glacier? Don't try and tell me you only passed by."

Jaderiver felt the situation was strange. Lin Ming was mind-bogglingly strong and had also appeared in the same area as the space storm; she couldn't help but link them together.

"It's true, I was just passing by. I had just left the mountains not too long before that."

Lin Ming had no intentions of revealing anything related to the Divine Realm. The existence of a space channel that crossed the 33 Heavens was far too important a secret.

Jaderiver shook her head. There had been far too many flaws in Lin Ming's words. "No matter what the situation is, the reality is that I brought you into Zenith Palace. In the eyes of all present, you suppressed Yi Fan. Let alone slapping his face, you completely tore down any face he had. Since you high-handedly demanded a spot into the Akashic Dream Battlefield, I hope that when the time comes you will listen to orders and try your best. After all, this is a war between sects and the strength of an individual is limited. If you can gather enough merit points and contribute a decent amount to Zenith Palace then that will be greatly beneficial to you."

Jaderiver seriously said. Lin Ming hummed in agreement. Right now he still had to rely on Zenith Palace.

Afterwards, the name list for those entering the Akashic Dream Battlefield was revised. Yi Fan wasn't kicked out. Rather, Zenith Palace used their connections to abruptly add on another entry spot.

Even though Yi Fan had been injured by Lin Ming he was still a strong soldier of Zenith Palace; his combat strength couldn't be underestimated.

After being struck silly by Lin Ming, whenever Yi Fan saw Lin Ming walk around he felt a deep sense of hate, but also fear.

The 9000 plus disciples of Zenith Palace that were participating in the Akashic Dream Battlefield were divided into groups. Lin Ming was placed in the first squad of the first group, and the captain of this squad was impressively Jaderiver.

"Miss Jaderiver, before I heard the Vice Palace Master say that those who obtain enough merit points in the Akashic Dream Universe can exchange them for heaven-shaking rewards, and some of these rewards could even tempt a True Divinity. Would you happen to know what sort of rewards these are?"

When the Vice Palace Master had been vividly speaking in order to muster excitement, Lin Ming had heard all his words with his sharp hearing senses before he rushed into the meeting site. After hearing all of this, he had become curious as to the details of the matter.

Jaderiver rolled her eyes at Lin Ming. "What are you asking about these things for? These simply aren't things that you nor I can hope to reach for. Certainly, if there was something that would tempt True Divinities then these True Divinities would send their disciples to take them. But in the last several billion years there have been many disciples from True Divinity level influences entering the Akashic Dream Universe, and yet they haven't been able to take out too much."

"Oh? Then that means there have been people that have taken rewards out?" Lin Ming asked, sensing the meaning behind Jaderiver's words.

"Just because someone can take out such a reward every billion years doesn't mean you can too. Stop dreaming."

At this time, a female disciple standing near Jaderiver suddenly interjected. Her name was Xiao Chi and she was also a core disciple of Zenith Palace.

"I was just curious." Lin Ming's eyes twitched. He really wanted to get to the end of this question.

Jaderiver helplessly shrugged. She said, "It is rumored that within the Akashic Dream Universe there are many treasures that are deeply buried. Amongst these treasures are top divine objects. For instance, legends state that there are divine soul springs, golden pages, undying divine medicines, and so forth."

Lin Ming perked up, "Golden pages?"

"Mm, they are parts of an incomplete ancient text. I heard they are something that can even move the hearts of True Divinities. There are other things that can tempt True Divinities of course. For instance, undying divine medicines that can lengthen the lifespan of a True Divinity level powerhouse. If a True Divinity were to refine these medicines into pills then they could create pills that surpass a transcendent divine pill, in other words, pills of a True Divinity level. These pills contain the perfectly exquisite Laws of the Great Dao, and after swallowing them one can perceive the Great Dao Laws. For an Empyrean trying to break into the True Divinity realm, they are an immeasurable boon."

Jaderiver had only heard some rumors and didn't know the exact details of things. But her words caused Lin Ming's heart to shake. Golden pages, undying divine medicines... was it possible that these golden pages were from an incomplete version of the Spiritas Holy Scripture?

The possibility was high. If the Spiritas Holy Scripture and Akashic Dream Universe both originated from the hands of the first ancestor of all spiritas, then these golden pages were extremely likely to be related to the Spiritas Holy Scripture. And, the Spiritas Holy Scripture was of utmost importance to the True Divinities of the spiritas.

"Besides the golden pages from something that might be the Spiritas Holy Scripture, there are also divine soul springs, undying divine medicines, and other treasures... it seems that everything within this Akashic Dream Universe is quite extraordinary. It's worth looking forward to..."

As Lin Ming was thinking this, his thoughts began to heat up.

The reason he was going to the Akashic Dream Universe was not just to search for Sheng Mei but also to struggle for lucky chances.

There were still three days until the Akashic Dream Battlefield opened. During this time, Lin Ming didn't do anything at all. Rather, he sat in meditation and adjusted himself to his peak condition.

Three days afterwards, the Akashic Dream Battlefield officially opened.

All disciples participating in the Akashic Dream Battlefield convened at the highest peak. Each person was given a token.

"Pour your energy into the token and you will be able to sense the existence of the Akashic Dream Universe. Afterwards, your spirit will enter while your mortal body will be sealed in a separate space. It is an extremely safe procedure!"

A white-robed Elder loudly proclaimed as he stood atop a high platform.

Lin Ming felt much more relieved upon hearing this. To have his spirit enter the Akashic Dream Universe and his mortal body sealed away in some separate space was perfect for him. If his mind entered the Akashic Dream Universe he wanted to ensure that no one would be able to harm his mortal body while he wasn't there.

"Very good. The time has arrived. Everyone, prepare to enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield!"

Not too far away from the white-robed Elder, there was a massive incense burner. This incense burner had a thick coiled incense burning within it, and this incense had now burned to its end.

"All disciples of Zenith Palace, listen to orders – open the Akashic Dream Universe!"

As the white-robed Elder spoke, every disciple of Zenith Palace poured their energy into their token. Lin Ming also did this.

9301 tokens began to emit a dim halo after absorbing the energy. As these halos gathered together, they combined as one, becoming an extremely brilliant and beautiful sight!

The entire sky was lit up with by the multicolored energies.

And at this time, the 9301 tokens projected thin beams of light. These thin blue beams shot into the endless skies, forming a bridge that spanned the heavens and earth, penetrating hundreds of thousands of feet upwards.

Chi chi chi!

For a time, the skies were pierced through by these 9301 beams of light. The power of space dissipated outwards, forming a massive dark red and purple space gate.

This space gate was like an ephemeral dream. The constantly shimmering purple and red surface changed again and again, as if a kaleidoscope of whole new worlds was within it.

For a time, all of the disciples of Zenith Palace that carried a token felt an irresistible traction force lift up their bodies and send them flying towards the space gate.

Lin Ming felt himself hurtle forwards faster and faster. As he flew, everything seemed to become further and further away. A tremendous tearing power started to work upon his spiritual sea.

His mortal body began to separate from his soul.

He stared helplessly on as his mortal body grew further and further away until it was sealed in a chaotic space. At the same time, his soul form was sucked into that red and purple space gate. After this, everything turned hazy in his mind.

This space gate was extremely mystical and there were countless exquisite Laws contained within that Lin Ming couldn't understand at all. But, it was clear that these Laws were connected to the soul forging system.

Lin Ming couldn't bother with delving deeper into this. All he felt was an agonizing headache as if his soul was being constantly distorted by some great strength.

He didn't know how long these feeling continued for. In the next moment, Lin Ming's body shook and he had arrived in an unknown world.

This area was bleak and desolate. The ground beneath him was sparse wilderness. The skies were high and far and covered in thick layers of clouds. It was a depressing sight.

"This is the Akashic Dream Universe?"

Lin Ming closed his eyes, allowing his sense to spread out like a web. All he felt was that there was an ancient and vast aura flooding this land.

This sort of feeling caused Lin Ming to think as if this universe was a world left behind from ancient times. Even through billions of years it had maintained its once glorious scenery.

And at this time, Zenith Palace disciples began to pop up all around Lin Ming. As they appeared, some of them stumbled to catch their footing. All of them were pale; it was clear they were feeling queasy from travelling through that space gate just now.

No matter how powerful one's soul force was, one wouldn't feel comfortable upon entering the Akashic Dream Universe. This was because the stronger one's soul force was, the greater the backlash they would receive upon entering the space gate.

As the many Zenith Palace disciples appeared, the curtains for the sect wars had officially been lifted.

Chapter 1801 – Emperor God Wall

Chapter 1801 – Emperor God Wall

…

…

…

“The resting city is just ahead, so let’s go there first.”

Jaderiver said. Zenith Palace had sent more than 9000 disciples to participate in the Akashic Dream Battlefield and she wasn’t the decision maker.

The decision makers were the several half-step World Kings that had joined in. They were Elders of Zenith Palace and this also included the Vice Palace Master, the white-robed old man who had been hosting the meeting conference.

Entering the Akashic Dream Universe had no restrictions on age. Rather, it looked at whether or not someone was an outstanding individual and just how much potential they possessed.

Generally speaking, if one was doomed to never be able to take another step forwards in their cultivation road then there was no need for them to enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield. Only those who had hopes of going further down their road of martial arts would come here to struggle for a lucky chance.

The city within the Akashic Dream Universe was extremely lifelike and none of it felt like an illusion at all. Touching anything gave a feeling no different than interacting with objects in the real world.

The truth was that the spiritual world and real world were never clearly distinguished to begin with. In fact, there were even some spiritas martial artists who theorized that the current 33 Heavens was nothing more than a dream of a sleeping creator god.

This city was incomparably broad and a massive number of outstanding elites were also gathered here.

Many more martial artists continued to hasten their way to the city.

Of these people's cultivation, the lowest amongst them were at the Soul Sea realm, a spiritas cultivation realm equivalent to the human Divine Sea realm. As for the highest, they were Great World Kings, and more than one at that.

Lin Ming guessed that there were likely also half-step Empyreans here, and even true Empyrean supreme elders; he just hadn't seen them yet.

As they arrived not too far from the city, Lin Ming looked up at the city gates that rose a thousand feet high. Above these gates were two strange spiritas characters.

Lin Ming had previously studied the language of the spiritas. He could see that these characters said – Emperor City!

Each character was the size of a large house and they were drawn in an illustrious manner. The aura they gave off was intimidating.

Even Lin Ming couldn't help but feel a faint sense of awe and dread upon seeing these characters.

Emperor City was surrounded by walls on three sides, each side stretching out nearly a thousand miles long. As for the rear side of the city, it was backed up against a giant divine mountain.

This divine mountain was as smooth as a mirror and was covered with a canopy of runes.

As Lin Ming and the others approached within a hundred miles of this divine mountain, they felt a tremendous pressure.

Ordinary Zenith Palace disciples could not approach. As they tried, they felt all of their blood vitality, spirit essence, and soul force being pulled upon by this pressure, making the energy within them nearly explode outwards from their bodies.

Jaderiver said, “This is the Emperor God Wall. It has already existed for countless years and is the divine object of Emperor City. It is said that it was stained with the blood of peerless God Kings and their aura has yet to dissipate even after billions upon billions of years have passed. And, what we see now is only a projection of the Emperor God Wall. The true Emperor God Wall is not here, but every city has a projection of the Emperor God Wall.”

As Jaderiver spoke, the disciples of Zenith Palace were shocked. Even Lin Ming was left flabbergasted.

It was only a projection yet it exuded such a terrifying pressure.

Then, just what would the true Emperor God Wall be like!?

Some of the outstanding disciples of Zenith Palace strode within several miles of the God Wall. At this distance, they could see many martial artists tirelessly moving forwards as well as some others meditating beneath it.

“They are cultivating, trying to use the pressure of the Emperor God Wall to aid in their breakthrough.”

A Zenith Palace Elder explained.

By being beneath the Emperor God Wall, one would have to withstand a terrifying pressure. This pressure could burden one’s soul and spirit essence, and even directly work upon the martial artist’s body that was sealed away in a separate space to further temper their blood vitality, allowing them to make a breakthrough. It was an incomparably mysterious phenomenon.

“This cultivation isn’t too bad. Eh, there are also some characters on the God Wall.”

A Zenith Palace disciple exclaimed. Lin Ming looked up, able to clearly read the runes written atop the Emperor God Wall.

These runes were ancient and mysterious, consisting of the spiritas language from billions of years ago.

Not even Lin Ming could fully understand them.

“These carvings are…” A Zenith Palace disciple asked.

“They are the rules, as well as the divine objects within the Akashic Dream Battlefield. Look at the third row, that is the Wild God Creed. In the legends it’s said to be a holy text left behind by the first ancestor of the spiritas. The fourth row lists the Weeping God Springs. It is said to be a deep spring that can even help cleanse the marrows of a True Divinity supreme elder. If one could obtain that God Springs’ water to use for alchemy, they could make True Divinity level medicines. As for the fifth row…”

The one speaking was the white-robed Vice Palace Master. His understanding of the Akashic Dream Battlefield was more deep than Jaderiver’s, and as he slowly introduced the various objects, everyone who listened to him was left dumbfounded. Although they clearly knew they couldn’t obtain any of these things, just hearing about it was more than enough to cause their blood to boil over with excitement.

“How do we obtain these things?” Lin Ming asked. As for the other disciples of Zenith Palace, although they didn’t think they could ever obtain these treasures they were still curious about how one obtained them.

The Vice Palace Master said, “Some of these divine objects can be exchanged for using an incredible amount of merit points. As for some other things, they require achievements, lucky chances, or various other items to exchange for them.”

As he spoke, another Zenith Palace disciple said, “Look, there are also names carved upon the God Wall!”

Hearing this disciple’s shout, many people looked down. As he said there were indeed names of powerhouses left behind on the Emperor God Wall.

These names were all written in different handwriting styles and they emitted a dreadful aura. One could instantly see that they weren’t left behind by ordinary mortals.

“Those that can leave behind their names are mostly Empyreans as well as a small number of Great World Kings. They are all proud children of heaven that have existed through the history of the spiritas. There are some people that weren’t Empyreans when they left behind their names, but they would eventually become Empyreans in the future. Rather, it should be said that most of them became extreme Empyreans, and a few of them even managed to step into the realm of True Divinity.”

The Zenith Palace Elder’s explanation left everyone bewildered. Even amongst the spiritas, True Divinities were a mythical existence. It was hard for ordinary martial artists to imagine what they were like.

“Mm? Sheng Mei!”

Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. Amongst the many names, he could make out Sheng Mei’s!

Sheng Mei had also carved her name above the God Wall.

“Soul Empress Sheng Mei, her talent cannot be imagined. Through the vast 33 Heavens, no one can surpass her.”

Jaderiver thought that Lin Ming had come from the wild mountains and didn't know about many matters, thus she briefly introduced Sheng Mei. Sheng Mei was absolutely the heroine of the spiritas, and as Jaderiver mentioned her name, she felt awe and pride.

"Not everyone can leave behind their name on the Emperor God Wall. These people have all achieved some peerless accomplishments or have accumulated merit points to a terrifying degree. Only then can they leave behind their name on the Emperor God Wall."

Another Zenith Palace Elder explained.

At this time, everyone was startled. They watched as a decrepit one-legged old man with scattered hair walked towards the Emperor God Wall.

Because this person only had one leg, he seemed to hop as he walked. In addition to that, his entire face was marred with horrifying scars, making him seem like a ghost walking around during daytime.

"Just who is that? What a scary-looking old man."

Standing beside Jaderiver, Xiao Chi couldn't help but cover her mouth in shock.

"Stop spouting nonsense!" A Zenith Palace Elder hurriedly said. However, Xiao Chi's words had already been heard by the one-legged old man.

The old man's hearing was extremely sharp. He suddenly turned his head, revealing a grisly and humorless smile.

With this, everyone could see that he had a Great World King cultivation.

All of the disciples from Zenith Palace paled.

"Hehe."

The one-legged old man diabolically grinned. As he stared at Xiao Chi, Xiao Chi shivered and a cold chill ran up her back. She felt as if she were being stared at by some viper.

“Our junior was being foolish. Senior, please forgive her.”

“Whatever. I am someone that bears deep grudges.” The one-legged old man simply didn’t place the Zenith Palace Vice Palace Master in his eyes. As he turned back and walked forwards, he left behind an endless killing intent.

For a time, Xiao Chi’s face turned as white as funeral paper. “Elder, I…”

No one thought that in Emperor City, just a few words could draw a catastrophe upon oneself.

The several Elders of Zenith Palace all had ugly complexions. That one-legged old freak had a bizarre personality. If one annoyed him, they definitely wouldn’t have a happy ending.

And at this time, a gloating laugh rang out. “Haha, congratulations everyone from Zenith Palace! You just arrived and yet you’ve already drawn a winning ticket. Looking at your expressions, it seems you’ll all be wiped out sooner or later.”

These words caused the disciples from Zenith Palace to frown.

They turned to see a middle-aged fat man jovially walking towards them, laughing all the while. Behind him was a large group all wearing the same uniform; it was clear that they came from the same influence.

“Eh? There’s even a human! Has Zenith Palace degenerated so much that they must even send a human to participate in the Akashic Dream Battlefield?”

The fat man openly mocked Zenith Palace as he saw Lin Ming.

“Forget about him, let’s go.” The Vice Palace Master was clearly acquainted with the fat man, but their relationship seemed extremely bad. He didn’t want to have any accidents occur. Within the confines of Emperor City, fighting wasn’t allowed.

Just as the Vice Palace Master was leading the disciples to leave, the skies suddenly darkened. A massive ancient vicious beast emitted a terrifying slaughter energy as it flew over the city gates and fell atop a tall pagoda within the city. This ancient vicious beast was huge and as it unfolded its wings, its wingspan was nearly a hundred miles wide, almost camouflaging the skies. The towering pagoda that it fell upon seemed as small as a toy.

A horrifying howl pierced through the heavens, making the ears tingle with numbness.

“What an amazingly dreadful aura. Just what kind of ancient beast is that?”

Many Zenith Palace disciples asked, horrified.

“That is a leviathan roc! Although it has an impure bloodline it can almost compare with a God Beast. It is even stronger than most half-step Empyreans.”

A Zenith Palace Elder whispered, his breath catching in his throat.

“I know this leviathan roc, it is Empyrean Heavencore’s personal mount. This isn’t even its complete form. When it fully manifests its body, its wingspan can reach a thousand miles!”

As everyone was speaking, the leviathan roc suddenly opened its gaping jaws. An army of martial artists walked out from within the stomach of the leviathan roc.

In the legends, the leviathan roc had a separate world contained within its body. It could easily swallow mountains and rivers, much less something as small as hundreds of thousands of disciples.

These disciples that marched out from the stomach of the leviathan roc were all from Heavencore Heavenly Palace.

Besides the outstanding young elites of Heavencore Heavenly Palace, there were also the core disciples and the martial artists that made up the backbone of Heavencore Heavenly Palace.

Lin Ming was vigilant as he saw this. Amongst these people, there were many World Kings, Great World Kings, and even half-step Empyreans!

They were all disciples of Heavencore Heavenly Palace. However, some of these people had already followed Empyrean Heavencore for 100,000 years and were no longer considered juniors.

These people possessed a profound cultivation. The reason they came to the Akashic Dream Battlefield was in hopes of going further in their cultivation. For instance, a Great World King becoming a half-step Empyrean, or a half-step Empyrean becoming a true Empyrean.

“This is an Empyrean level influence…”

Some people sighed in admiration. Just any one of these high level Heavencore Heavenly Palace disciples could easily sweep away Zenith Palace.

Far too many masters had gathered at the Akashic Dream Battlefield. It was destined to be an unrivalled war.

Chapter 1802 – Empyreans Involved

Chapter 1802 – Empyreans Involved

…

…

…

More and more martial artists began gathering at Emperor City. Many large sects had several tens of thousands or even hundreds of thousands of disciples arrive.

Among these people, Lin Ming saw a great deal of half-step Empyreans. However, he didn't see any true Empyreans.

"There are so many World Kings, Great World Kings, and even half-step Empyreans. This is my first time entering the Akashic Dream Battlefield and my cultivation is just at the early Soul Lord realm. If I face opponents like these won't I be instantly evaporated?"

A young Zenith Palace disciple timidly asked.

The Vice Palace Master shook his head, saying, "Our war will occur within the Akashic Dream Battlefield. The Laws there are special and will suppress everyone's cultivation to the Soul Lord realm. As for those that haven't reached the Soul Lord realm, their cultivations will be forcefully enhanced to that boundary, making everyone's cultivation the same. Even so, a half-step Empyrean powerhouse isn't someone you can deal with, because their comprehension of Laws and their skill in cultivation methods have reached an unimaginable degree. Even if you are both at the Soul Lord realm, it will only take an instant to kill you!

"But that doesn't mean you have no chance of escape. If dozens of you see a half-step Empyrean you can all scatter in different directions. This will give you a chance of survival."

The Vice Palace Master explained.

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred; so there were such rules.

This was also reasonable. Lin Ming had seen many inheritance lands in the past that had similar rules. To lessen the disparity brought about by age, everyone's cultivations would be equalized. In order for the most outstanding individuals to obtain the inheritances, all that would be tested was one's talent and potential.

As everyone was speaking, howling winds suddenly rose up. Turbulent black clouds came roiling over from the horizon, blocking out the sun.

In this extremely gloomy environment, ghostly howls filled the air. Everyone felt an inexplicable sense of fear. As they all looked up into the skies they seemed to see endless ghosts dancing about amongst the dark clouds.

For a time, all the disciples of Zenith Palace were frightened. Even the Vice Palace Master had an extremely ugly complexion.

"It's Empyrean Myriad Ghost! That old geezer, he's here to make a mess!"

"Empyrean! Even an Empyrean came to the Akashic Dream Battlefield?"

The Zenith Palace disciples looked at each other, panic etched in their eyes.

Even an Empyrean had arrived! Even if their cultivation was suppressed to the Soul Lord realm, an Empyrean level powerhouse was far too powerful an existence and could instantly wipe out their group.

This Akashic Dream Battlefield was truly a convergence of masters!

"Normally there is no desire for Empyreans to come here. After an Empyrean is a True Divinity, and only the tiniest minority of Empyreans have been able to take this final step. Coming here for them is just a waste of time, and there isn't anything they can learn through messing around with you juniors. But this Empyrean Myriad Ghost has an extremely eccentric and strange personality… I wonder just what he came to the Akashic Dream Battlefield for… all of you make sure to hide from him and have no contact with him at all.”

The Vice Palace Master urgently said.

“It’s a waste for an Empyrean to come? Since they are strong, wouldn’t it be easier for them to gather merit points and achievements to exchange them for rewards?”

Lin Ming asked. Some Zenith Palace disciples who had come to the Akashic Dream Universe for the first time also perked up their ears. This information was extremely important to them.

The Vice Palace Master simply shook his head, “Merit points are for the young; they aren’t something us old fellows can obtain. This is because after the three years are over, the final amount of merit points after being settled is based upon age. For instance, if an Empyrean that has lived for tens of millions of years enters the Akashic Dream Battlefield and slaughters their way to a billion merit points, their merit points are divided by their age, thus they might have a measly several hundred left remaining. There just isn’t anything they can exchange for with this amount.”

As the Vice Palace Master spoke, Lin Ming was suddenly enlightened about the situation. All things considered, the Akashic Dream Battlefield was a stage set for the younger generation, and this was also a reasonable premise. If the Akashic Dream Battlefield was a land of inheritance, then inheritances naturally had to be passed onto the young.

If old fellows like the Vice Palace Master came, they came not for the merit points but for the experience of fighting with martial artists of the same level.

After all, in the real world these older martial artists rarely had the opportunity to fight with other martial artists of the same age and boundary.

And without fighting, it would be difficult to hone their cultivation.

"He can't obtain any merit points nor can he find anyone of his level to fight… is that Empyrean Myriad Ghost really here to cause a ruckus…"

The Vice Palace Master mumbled.

Some Empyreans had extremely peculiar personalities. For instance, there might be some Empyreans who didn't obtain any advantages from the Akashic Dream Battlefield during their youth, thus they also didn't want anyone else to obtain benefits.

It was true that an Empyrean couldn't obtain merit points, but they also possessed the ability to ensure that no one else did either. For instance, they could do this by continually slaughtering everyone else…

If this were true, then during this venture into the Akashic Dream Battlefield, the low level disciples would truly be having a miserable time.

As the Vice Palace Master was lost in thought, at this time a vast slaughter energy as deep as an ocean covered the entirety of Emperor City, enveloping everyone. For a time, a horrifying pressure spread outwards and all the light within the city disappeared. The martial artists were stranded in this thick black chaos, leaving them suffocating.

"This is… the chaos force field, the signature domain of Chaos Demon God, another Empyrean!"

"I understand now. The reason Empyrean Myriad Ghost came to enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield this time is so that he can fight with Chaos Demon God. Both of them don't like each other to begin with, but if they fought in the real world then that would be an earth-sundering battle between two Empyreans. Moreover, if there were any wounds, those would be losses that neither side could afford! So, the two of them must have agreed to meet in the Akashic Dream Battlefield. Like this, there won't be any problems with the two of them fighting!"

The Zenith Palace Elders wryly smiled to each other as they realized this.

A battle between two Empyreans was bound to affect the little fish. The low level disciples of Zenith Palace were in for a tragic time.

If they were sucked into the battle, they wouldn't even have ashes left over.

"All of you must be careful after entering the Akashic Dream Battlefield. Make sure you avoid those two old monsters at all costs. Aiya, what horrible luck this is."

The Vice Palace Master sighed with emotion.

At this time, Lin Ming had regained his composure. He asked, "Senior Vice Palace Master, junior has a question he would like to ask."

"Mm? What is it?"

Seeing the one asking another question was Lin Ming, the Vice Palace Master faintly frowned. It seemed all this disciple did was ask questions again and again.

"Junior would like to know just how many merit points are required to exchange for a golden page?"

On the Emperor God Wall, the rules for obtaining rewards from the Akashic Dream Battlefield were listed. However, because these rules were all written in the ancient language of the spiritas, Lin Ming found them difficult to read.

The Vice Palace Master was speechless. This disciple was far too curious. Just why did he want to know all of this?

"You sure have many worries. What you should be concerning yourself with is thinking about how to survive. The honest method of these sect wars is too kill as many enemies as possible. As for that golden page, that is something that hasn't been exchanged for in the last several hundred millions of years. It requires a billion merit points, so don't get your hopes up about obtaining it."

The Vice Palace Master impatiently responded. Lin Ming smiled, “Thank you Senior for the guidance.”

“All of you rest early and don’t bother caring about such meaningless things. At dawn tomorrow we will be entering the Akashic Dream Battlefield. At that time, I also hope that you all will be able to fight for a little bit of glory for our Zenith Palace!”

The last several times that Zenith Palace participated in the Akashic Dream Battlefield, their results had been ordinary at best. This left the high level figures of Zenith Palace feeling anxious.

Like this, all disciples of Zenith Palace looked for a place to rest. Although Emperor City was large, there were even more martial artists. Most rooms were already occupied.

Spirit ships, cave dwellings, and other such magic tools couldn’t be brought in, so many martial artists spent the night sitting in meditation in the air.

At the dawn of the next day, the morning was misty and bright. Rays of morning light sprinkled down, reflecting from the Emperor God Wall and shining upon all the martial artists present.

Everyone was covered in this sunlight. Finally, this sunlight turned into countless motes of light that converged into everyone’s tokens.

“What is this?”

A young disciple asked with surprise.

“This is elementary spirit source. In truth, this is what the so-called merit points consist of. By killing your opponent you can plunder their token’s elementary spirit source and take it into your own. This is what merit points are!”

As people were speaking, at this time the entire Emperor City began to tremble. The great earth seemed to be split apart by a titanic divine sword. From the area where the land had split open, purple divine fire gushed out, burning up the skies.

A giant space gate slowly appeared above the sundered earth. It was like a purple sun had appeared in the world.

“The Akashic Dream Battlefield has opened. Let’s enter!”

Throughout all of Emperor City, countless disciples launched their movement techniques and flew towards the space gate.

This space gate was several hundred miles wide. The martial artists present all appeared like tiny specks in front of this massive space gate. From afar, it was like infinite locusts migrating towards the space gate.

Lin Ming also joined in. And at this time, the Vice Palace Master lit a rune. With it, all disciples of Zenith Palace were covered in a halo of light.

Covered in this halo of light, Lin Ming passed through the purple space gate…

Chapter 1803 – Bait

Chapter 1803 – Bait

…

…

…

Hu - !

Endless beams of light passed over Lin Ming's sight. After an unknown period of time, his environment brightened; he had arrived in some unknown world.

Emperor City had vanished. All around them was bleak and desolate earth. The land was marred with gaping scars as if a terrifying war had occurred here.

Mountains and rivers had been sundered in half or leveled off, and massive craters marked the land. There were even dreadfully deep abysses, as if some mighty supernatural being broke open the earth with their weapon.

And in the skies, there were numerous listless planets. These planets lacked even a little bit of life and resembled barren stones.

This was the Akashic Dream Battlefield!

The Akashic Dream Battlefield was but a miniscule portion of the Akashic Dream Universe. After entering this land, one needed to stay for a full three years.

During these three years, no one would be able to probe what was happening within the Akashic Dream Battlefield. Only when all the martial artists completed their journey into the Akashic Dream Battlefield three years from now would the results be known.

The disciples of Zenith Palace were all gathered here. As for the disciples of other influences, they had vanished; they had been transmitted to other locations.

This sort of situation clearly occurred because the Vice Palace Master had crumbled a talisman before he entered the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

Lin Ming had glanced over this talisman. It was an inscription symbol and its use was likely to make the disciples of Zenith Palace be transported to a location far away from the others.

The spiritas were a race skilled in inscription symbols. Many spiritas martial artists even carried inscription symbols on them in battles.

“Everyone, listen to my orders. We are a whole – do not separate from the group, otherwise you will be eaten up without any bones remaining. This is a war of sect against sect, the strength that an individual can display is limited!

“Obey all orders. For those that can obtain merit points, my Zenith Palace will never be stingy with rewards!”

As the Vice Palace Master spoke, everyone began to set off in droves.

The Akashic Dream Battlefield had special rules. Here, Lin Ming could already feel his cultivation being suppressed by the Laws.

His inner world was imprisoned and the true essence he could erupt with was greatly limited. Even the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had been restricted. Although he could still open three Dao Palaces, he could only gather a twentieth of the previous power of stars he was able to.

“My cultivation has been suppressed to the early Divine Lord realm…”

Lin Ming thought to himself. Looking around, he could see that everyone was in a similar situation.

Only some low level disciples were an exception. For them, not only did they not weaken but they felt a strange power that wasn't theirs pour into their body, causing their strength to rise. This was a never-before-felt feeling.

"These conditions are even more advantageous to me!"

As Lin Ming thought this, he slowly moved away from the crowd. Slowly, he submerged into the darkness, his figure disappearing from the crowd without a trace.

No one present had been able to discover this. It was only when the disciples of Zenith Palace reached their destination did someone ask...

"Mm? Lin Muk?"

Jaderiver was startled. Lin Ming had disappeared.

Lin Ming was a member of her squad. When they first entered the Akashic Dream Battlefield just now she had also seen Lin Ming, but he had disappeared from sight not long after.

Jaderiver's words caused the Elders of Zenith Palace to immediately release their divine senses to search for him. After they swept their senses through the crowd, their complexions turned ugly.

Zenith Palace had a large troop of over 9000 people. If they all moved together it was really too difficult to detect if a single person disappeared.

"A foreign human indeed isn't reliable."

A Zenith Palace Elder indignantly said.

"He took up one of our spots just to run away as soon as he came to the Akashic Dream Battlefield!"

"Could he have betrayed us?"

Several Elders glanced at each other, their complexions ugly. Although Lin Ming was a human, they all had to admit that his strength was excellent. He would have been a great boon to Zenith Palace in the Akashic Dream Battlefield and would have helped them obtain many merit points, but before any fighting had started he had already disappeared.

“I apologize… I…”

Jaderiver was at a loss for words. She was the one who had introduced Lin Ming to Zenith Palace, and when he had asked to enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield later, she had also supported him with her manner. But now that such a situation had occurred, she clearly wasn’t able to lift her head.

“Well, I wouldn’t go so far as to say that he betrayed us. The token he used to enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield is provided by our Zenith Palace, so his merit points will also contribute to the total merit point score. Even so, we should be a little more careful. He might have been bribed by some other influence to disclose information about us.”

As the Vice Palace Master said this, the other Elders present appeared depressed.

“Let’s go somewhere else then. If that human reveals our position and we are ambushed here then the situation will be bad for us.” Someone proposed.

“Alright, it seems that’s all we can do.”

…………

At this time, a thousand miles away from where the Zenith Palace group was, Lin Ming was flying over a vast wilderness. He released his sense, investigating the surrounding area.

According to the Vice Palace Master’s explanation, Lin Ming was considering how many merit points he needed to obtain.

His skeletal age had yet to reach 130 years.

In order to exchange for the golden page, one needed a billion merit points!

According to the rules of the Akashic Dream Battlefield, at the very end of the three years when merit points were being calculated, the total would be divided by the martial artist's skeletal age. In other words, Lin Ming needed to obtain almost 130 billion merit points in order to exchange for that golden page.

130 billion!

Lin Ming didn't know what sort of concept that number was, but what he was sure of was that this was a truly terrifying number.

He would need to endlessly slaughter in order to reach it.

Moreover, listening to the Vice Palace Master's words, this Akashic Dream Battlefield was not as simple as killing others to obtain merit points. There were also other lucky chances to be found.

Whether it was for the golden page or other lucky chances, Lin Ming was doomed to not be able to follow the mass army of Zenith Palace. They would simply be stones that weighed him down, making his every movement inconvenient.

As Lin Ming was thinking this, he had already flown for an hour. This Akashic Dream Battlefield consisted of an incredibly broad area. Even though he had been flying for such a long time, all he could see was endless wilderness.

And at this time, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred and he slowed down.

He could see that there was a swamp not too far away, and in this swamp there was some strange flower blooming.

This flower had no roots, branches, or leaves, but instead had a lush flower the size of a basin; it appeared exceptionally bright.

Lin Ming could sense a light divine soul fluctuation originating from it, as if this flower had a soul. And these divine soul fluctuations were subtly influencing Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

Lin Ming didn't doubt that this was a medicinal herb that would be greatly beneficial in nourishing one's divine soul.

"Is this a medicinal herb bred within the Akashic Dream Battlefield?"

This medicinal herb in front of him wasn't too precious; he believed this was only the beginning.

He began to slowly approach. But at this time he suddenly came to an abrupt stop.

After sweeping his sense over the swamp, Lin Ming revealed a sneer.

He carelessly walked towards the red flower and reached out to pick it. But just as his fingers were about to touch the flower, from a hundred feet in front of Lin Ming, the muddy ground suddenly burst apart. With a loud roar that shook the earth, a giant black lizard that was hundreds of feet long suddenly leapt out from the swamp!

This black lizard had blood red eyes and its body was covered with scintillating black scales. Its jaws opened wide enough to swallow a house and then a tongue as thick as an adult man shot out like a spear, hurtling towards Lin Ming!

It wanted to capture Lin Ming and swallow him whole!

"I've been waiting for you."

Lin Ming was already prepared. Without even a change in expression, he waved his hand and a red spear appeared in his grasp – this was the Phoenix Blood Spear.

Woosh!

The Phoenix Blood Spear shot through the skies, carrying with it a howling power of thunder and fire that pierced into the black lizard's mouth with unstoppable momentum.

Puff!

Blood shot out. The black lizard was pierced through by the Phoenix Blood Spear, followed right after with a shower of blood.

"Rahh!"

The black lizard roared in pain and anger. After being pierced by Lin Ming's spear, it shot towards him, wanting to use its massive body to roll over him.

Lin Ming simply flicked his finger and the Phoenix Blood Spear reversed as it came hurting back and pierced through the black lizard's back as easily as tofu. At this time, the power of thunder and fire contained within the Phoenix Blood Spear also detonated, and with a loud explosion the black lizard's back was blown to pieces.

The explosive shockwaves were accompanied with endless fragments of flesh and blood. The black lizard's spine and ribs were completely shattered and its massive body was blown in half.

Facing this endless rain of blood and flesh, an invisible barrier shimmered around Lin Ming, protecting him from any contamination.

After easily killing the black lizard, Lin Ming didn't even pause. He bent down and picked up that deep blood red flower.

After breathing in the rich soul fragrance of the flower, he quietly said, "Come out. I know that lizard was not some wild creature, but your contract beast..."

Lin Ming indifferently said, a light killing intent in his words.

There were powerful nightmare beasts that inhabited the Akashic Dream Battlefield, but this black lizard hadn't been one of them. Before landing here, Lin Ming had already felt a group waiting on the sidelines for an ambush.

Some people had decided to use this spirit flower as bait to set up a trap to kill anyone who dared approach it. If one was too impatient to pluck the treasure they were likely to fall for the trap.

At that time, with the black lizard attacking from the front there would also be other martial artists sneak attacking from behind. Unless one was far stronger than those ambushers they would be sure to suffer a loss here.

Unfortunately, Lin Ming had instantly killed the black lizard. This caused the other martial artists lying in ambush to not dare to attack.

Lin Ming slowly turned, looking at a grassy area in the swamp. He coldly said, "It seems you want me to invite you out."

As he spoke he immediately attacked. He flicked his fingers and spear lights came shooting out!

"No! Ahh!"

Miserable cries ran out. Eight martial artists came rolling down on the ground. Their bodies had bloody holes pierced through them by the spear lights.

They all looked at Lin Ming, panic in their eyes.

As soon as they entered the Akashic Dream Battlefield they had set up a trap here and had laid in wait. But, they never imagined their first prey would be powerful to the point of instantly killing their contract beast.

Chapter 1804 – Reinforcements

Chapter 1804 – Reinforcements

…

…

…

The martial artists that rolled out from the tall patch of grass were all covered in blood. They wore similar sect clothing; it was obvious they came from the same influence.

Their tactics were to take advantage of the unprepared and to fight with a numbers advantage in order to slowly gather merit points. Although this method wasn't the most efficient, it was far safer.

However, in their first attempt they had really managed to kick an iron wall; this was just their own unluckiness.

"Young hero, please show mercy and don't kill us!"

Seeing Lin Ming overflowing with killing intent, the martial artists were terrified.

Although their lives wouldn't be in danger if they were killed in the Akashic Dream Battlefield, the chance to enter this land wasn't easy to obtain. They didn't want to die just as the sect wars began.

After being killed in the Akashic Dream Battlefield, one's body would be stranded in a separate space and forced to live out the remaining three year period there. The taste of this punishment wasn't good at all.

Lin Ming didn’t say a word. The Phoenix Blood Spear howled and flew back into his hand. Then, he indifferently looked at these martial artists and pointed his spear straight at the forehead of a yellow-clothed man.

Lin Ming could feel that this yellow-clothed man was the strongest of the group; he should be the leader.

“Young hero, our Imperial Beast Sect is a Great World King influence that has a history spanning hundreds of millions of years. In the history of our sect, there have even been two Empyreans that have appeared. It’s just that for the last few tens of millions of years we haven’t been able to produce an Empyrean, and thus our influence has been downgraded. Even so, we still have a deep background. Young hero doesn’t need to kill us. We have some precious inherited information from our sect if young hero would like to take a look at it.”

As the yellow-clothed man spoke, his arms trembled as he lifted a jade slip and passed it to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming swept his mind over it. There wasn’t any problem with this jade slip. Then, he probed it.

After sifting through the jade slip, Lin Ming’s interest was piqued. This jade slip recorded many regional materials within the Akashic Dream Battlefield. There were even places listed where heavenly materials might appear as well as danger zones where nightmare beasts appeared more often.

Although the records within the jade slip were rough, it was good for referencing.

As Lin Ming was looking through the jade slip his thoughts stirred. He realized that while he was probing the jade slip, the furthest disciple of the Imperial Beast Sect had quietly reached out his hand and traced his spatial ring, taking out a talisman.

As this talisman appeared, it immediately burnt up and completely vanished.

“You sent a sound transmission talisman to request reinforcements?”

Lin Ming immediately thought. His eyes flashed with a murderous light. But, he maintained his composure, only looking at the eight martial artists in front of him.

His eyes were as deep as the nine nether abyss. Just looking into his gaze made one feel a shiver crawl up their spine.

“What… what do you want?”

The yellow-clothed martial artist asked with a fear-tinged voice.

They had indeed sent a sound transmission talisman requesting assistance from the sect. Although he thought his actions were discrete, he still felt weak at heart. He was afraid that Lin Ming would discover what they did and kill them all.

With them being severely wounded, it would only take Lin Ming a few breaths of time to kill them all.

The disparity was too great.

Lin Ming didn’t respond. He fiddled with the jade slip in his hands, spreading out his sense to the surrounding 100 miles.

His actions had the yellow-clothed martial artist exhaling in relief.

“This idiot hasn’t discovered anything at all. Just you wait! You are already dead!”

The yellow-clothed martial artist clenched his jaws, but on the surface he maintained a timid and terrified expression.

Time slowly passed. Soon, on the distant horizon, over ten small spots appeared in the skies, illuminated from behind by the sun.

These small shadows were extremely fast. In the blink of an eye they became as large as a palm in everyone’s sight. They were actually a group of flying dragons!

Each flying dragon had a wingspan that spread out over a hundred feet wide. Their claws were sharp and their teeth were gruesome. Each one resembled a vicious demon, terrifying to the extreme.

And standing on the backs of these flying dragons were many martial artists. These martial artists were all wearing sect clothing similar to the clothing that the martial artists who Lin Ming wounded had.

These were clearly reinforcements.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

As the flying dragons landed, they kicked up a giant sandstorm. On the backs of these flying dragons were more than 30 martial artists. The leader amongst them was a middle-aged man as thin as a string. His eyes were cold and gloomy and his momentum was intimidating. He obviously had a high status in the Imperial Beast Sect.

“Hahaha! Protector Sun, you finally made it!”

As the yellow-clothed martial artist with the gaping wound saw this middle-aged man, he began to recklessly laugh as if he had seen his savior. Not even the wounds marring his body were able to tamp down on his happiness.

“Protector Sun really came just on time!”

The other martial artists struggled to stand up. This included the martial artist that Lin Ming had seen spying on him and who had used the sound transmitting talisman to send a message.

The Imperial Beast Sect had come extremely fast. It seemed that they weren’t located too far away.

“It’s this little animal. He killed my black lizard and severely wounded us all, even stealing my material jade slip.”

The yellow-clothed man glared at Lin Ming, his expression full of spite and hate.

“That’s right, this is him. Protector Sun, don’t let him die easily. Make sure he suffers before that!”

“You were so arrogant just then, but now we’ll plant poisonous bugs in your body so you can experience what a pain worse than death is!”

As the reinforcements arrived, the originally heavily wounded martial artists all cried out with joy, their faces beaming with a fiendish delight.

“This is him? A human youth did this to you all? What a useless bunch.”

Protector Sun looked at Lin Ming, disdain written all over his face.

“Protector Sun be careful, this person is extremely fierce.” As the yellow-clothed martial artist saw Lin Ming remain as poised as before, without any panic on his face, he suddenly felt a bit weak at the knees.

“12 breaths of time…” Lin Ming suddenly said, “From the time that you notified the reinforcements to come here, you used a full 12 breaths of time. That was quite fast of them. These reinforcements must have laid down traps elsewhere to kill the martial artists of the Akashic Dream Battlefield, right?”

As Lin Ming swept his eyes over the crowd, he grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and pointed it at the ground, without any haste or dread in his tone.

Hearing Lin Ming’s words, Protector Sun looked at Lin Ming with incredulous eyes. He sneered, “You’ve already stepped on the road to death and yet you’re so arrogant about yourself. Since you attacked my Imperial Beast Sect, that is already an unforgivable crime. Allow me to take your life!”

As Protector Sun spoke he immediately attacked right afterwards. Although he felt contempt at Lin Ming's words, he still remained vigilant throughout. Thus, with this strike, he didn't hold back at all.

Protector Sun drew out a heavy sword from his spatial ring. With a chop of the sword, a thin purple fog poured out.

Lin Ming didn't need to look to sense that this sword contained a powerful inherent soul attack.

He used his foot to lift up the Phoenix Blood Spear. With a sweep of his spear, the power of thunder and fire erupted, like a red and purple wave gushing out together!

With a loud explosion, Protector Sun was sent flying backwards.

He cried out to the heavens in alarm. Lin Ming's attack power had surpassed his comprehension. His protective spirit essence had been nothing but snow that rapidly shrank in the sunlight.

His face turned paper white. He wanted to take out an inscription symbol from his spatial ring, but the turbulent waves of thunder and fire had completely burnt through his spirit essence and had broken into his body, causing his organs and meridians to be damaged.

Peng!

Another explosive sound rang through the air.

Half of Protector Sun's body had been baked black.

A pile of broken bones and chunks of meat went flying everywhere. Blood splashed all over the audience. Right now, Protector Sun's breathing weakened with every second; he wouldn't live for much longer.

"Protector Sun!"

The Imperial Beast Sect disciples were startled. They weren't even able to react to this sudden change.

"How could this happen?"

In the eyes of the Imperial Beast Sect disciples, Protector Sun was an incomparably powerful existence. Not only was he an outstanding individual but his cultivation was profoundly deep.

After entering the Akashic Dream Battlefield, a martial artist's cultivation was suppressed. But, their comprehension of Laws didn't change and they were something that ordinary martial artists couldn't deal with. Yet, Protector Sun had been instantly killed by someone!

"I was originally hoping you would all call some more people for me to earn some merit points, but in the end you only called 30 or so. How disappointing..."

Lin Ming's words were like the whispers of a demon. As the yellow-clothed martial artist heard them, he felt all his hairs standing on end.

So this human had already realized they had sent a secret message, and the reason he intentionally waited here was to kill people and take their merit points?

"Everyone run! Scatter and run!"

The yellow-clothed martial artist screamed, as if he had just been awakened from a dream.

But at this time, Lin Ming finally moved. His speed reached an incredible velocity. The long spear in his hands was like the sickle of a death god. With every movement of his spear, someone's head would fall down.

These people were all inferior to Protector Sun, so just where would they find the strength to revolt against Lin Ming?

Almost as soon as they met face to face, Protector Sun had suffered a most miserable death.

In the blink of an eye, blood dyed the floor and many Imperial Beast Sect disciples flew away in all directions as they tried to escape. But, these people were all pierced through by Lin Ming's spear light!

Puff! Puff!

A flying corpse fell down from the skies. The scene was extremely terrifying.

"De… demon…"

Just before dying, the yellow-clothed martial artist spoke out some final words as he choked on his blood.

Lin Ming picked up his spear and directly pierced through the yellow-clothed martial artist's heart.

In just ten breaths of time, he had solved the battlefield problem.

Lin Ming appreciatively held the jade slip in his hands. This jade slip that the yellow-clothed martial artist handed him could be called an unexpected harvest.

Chapter 1805 – Weeping Blood God Springs

Chapter 1805 – Weeping Blood God Springs

…

…

…

After Lin Ming killed the disciples from the Imperial Beast Sect, he felt energy dissipate from their corpses and merge into the entry token he carried with him.

These energies formed tiny motes of light within the entry token.

As Lin Ming probed the entry token with his sense, information reflected back into his mind – he now had a total of 2100 merit points.

“Only 2100 merit points. Compared to the merit points required for a golden page, this isn’t even a drop in the bucket.”

Lin Ming shook his head.

These 2100 merit points would be divided by his total age when the three year deadline came. In truth, he had only obtained a dozen some points.

And to exchange for the golden page he needed a billion merit points. The difference was far too great.

“The stronger the opponents I kill, the more merit points I’ll obtain.”

Lin Ming could feel that of the nearly 40 Imperial Beast Sect disciples he just killed, the one to give him the most merit points was that Protector Sun; Protector Sun had given him almost a thousand merit points. As for that yellow-clothed youth, he had given several hundred merit points and the remaining people had only given several dozen merit points.

The worst of all these people had only given him single digits merit points; it was a completely negligible number.

In other words, if Lin Ming wanted enough points to exchange for the golden page then he would need to kill top powerhouses without end. This included the Great World Kings, half-step Empyreans, and even Empyrean powerhouses here.

The higher the original cultivation of the person he killed, the more merit points he would receive.

“I wonder how many merit points I can get from killing an Empyrean?”

Lin Ming whispered to himself in anticipation. Two Empyreans had entered this Akashic Dream Battlefield – Chaos Demon God and Empyrean Myriad Ghost.

If he could slay these two fellows then they would surely give him a considerable number of merit points.

“I’m quite lucky. During my first time entering the Akashic Dream Battlefield there were also two Empyreans that joined in. I really might be able to collect the full billion merit points required. However, this Akashic Dream Battlefield is far too large. It won’t be easy to find them.”

Lin Ming thought to himself. If Zenith Palace were to know of his thoughts, it was impossible to tell what their reactions would be.

Zenith Palace would be doing everything in their power to avoid these Empyrean powerhouses but Lin Ming actually wanted to search for them on his own initiative.

“The Akashic Dream Battlefield is only open for three years. I can’t just aimlessly wander around. If I continue at my current speed, I won’t be able to gather a billion merit points before the Akashic Dream Battlefield ends. I have to look for some place where many powerhouses gather so I can go wild and kill them all. For instance, some place where heavenly materials are born…”

As Lin Ming was thinking this, he put away the merit point token in his hands and took out the jade slip that the yellow-clothed youth had passed to him. As he swept his mind through the jade slip, information rapidly appeared in his mind.

“Soul Cave… Undying Ruins…”

Lin Ming soon selected these two places where heavenly materials would appear. He chose them because they were the two ruins that were easiest to find.

In particular, the Soul Cave was in an almost fixed position.

Lin Ming activated his movement technique and shot straight towards the Soul Cave.

His speed wasn’t too fast and he encountered several ambushes along the way.

Those that tried to sneak attack him were all martial artists from small sects. They gathered in groups and had been lying hidden in ambush, wanting to secretly attack martial artists that passed by and take their merit points.

Chi chi chi!

As Lin Ming flew through a mountain valley, several sword lights shot out from the underbrush, forming a web of sword lights that covered him.

Lin Ming had already noticed these people long before they noticed him.

He flicked his fingers and sent spear lights shooting out.

With a cacophony of miserable cries, all of those people who tried to ambush Lin Ming were instantly killed.

In a mere moment, he had obtained another thousand plus merit points.

According to the rules of the Akashic Dream Battlefield, after Lin Ming killed a martial artist, he would obtain a fixed number of merit points based on their skills and cultivation, and also a portion of the merit points they had accumulated.

Thus, as Lin Ming killed these people who had also slaughtered many others, he obtained more points than usual.

“Hey friend, your skills aren’t too bad!”

After Lin Ming killed these ambushers, a voice called out to him.

Lin Ming turned his head to see a purple-clothed girl flying towards him as she rode a rainbow luan. Following close behind her were seven martial artists in tight-fitting black combat clothes.

These black-clothed martial artists stepped through space, their steps vague and their auras deep and powerful. Lin Ming was surprised. He suspected that before these seven black-clothed martial artists had their cultivations suppressed, they had been at the World King realm.

Although it wasn’t easy to distinguish a person’s cultivation realm because their cultivation was suppressed in the Akashic Dream Battlefield, it was possible to approximate their original cultivations from their auras.

“Seven World Kings…”

Lin Ming was startled. The truth was that he didn’t place any World King powerhouses in his eyes. But, if this young girl could have a retinue of seven World Kings following her around in the Akashic Dream Battlefield, this meant that she had a considerably high status!

Perhaps not even a core disciple of an Empyrean Holy Land would have such a great lineup of guards.

Could she come from a True Divinity Holy Land?

Lin Ming's heart turned cold. The seven universes of the spiritas was truly a land of crouching tigers and hidden dragons, with masters all around. It wouldn't be strange if a core disciple of a True Divinity Holy Land were to appear at the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

"If she really is a disciple of a True Divinity Holy Land, I might be able to find out something about Sheng Mei from her."

Lin Ming immediately developed the thought of befriending this young purple-clothed girl that had come from nowhere.

However, he maintained a vigilant guard.

"My name is Lin Muk. I wonder who this miss is...?"

"Violet Cloud."

The purple-clothed girl briefly responded. It was impossible to find out anything valuable from this information.

"Good brother, do you plan on going to the Soul Cave?"

The purple-clothed girl looked up and down at Lin Ming, sizing him up. She clearly recognized that Lin Ming was a human. For a human to achieve this level of strength was bewildering.

Moreover, she wasn't able to distinguish what Lin Ming's cultivation had been before it was suppressed. This left her even more puzzled.

"Yes."

Lin Ming didn't hide anything. This was the road leading to the Soul Cave and he wasn't too far away right now.

“How about we go together? Not only are there many masters in the Soul Cave but there is also a tremendous number of nightmare beasts. If we cooperate, our combat strength will be much higher.”

Lin Ming originally wanted to get to know this purple-clothed girl and dig out some information about Sheng Mei from her. He readily agreed, “Sure!”

With Lin Ming joining them, the group expanded to nine people.

“Princess, why are you having an outsider join us? And he isn’t a spiritas, nor do we know what his character is like. In this trip to the Soul Cave he might not be able to play any role and yet we will have to split a portion of our treasures to him.”

A black-clothed martial artist asked from behind Violet Cloud.

“With another person that means we are that much stronger. We will have to face many opponents this time, and this human is quite strong if he was able to instantly kill those martial artists. With your cultivation suppressed, you can’t do that, right? He will be greatly helpful to our group… as for treasures, those are things that aren’t even in our hands. If we can’t obtain any harvests then there will be nothing to divide anyways. It's too early to be worrying about something as trivial as dividing treasures…”

As the purple-clothed girl spoke, the black-robed World King could only silently nod.

In all fairness, this human was indeed strong. After these seven World Kings had their cultivations suppressed, they had to admit that none of them were Lin Ming’s match.

“This is a human genius; I wonder what influence he comes from. What a strange sight.”

The wilderness was vast and endless. An infinite swamp stretched to the horizon with tall patches of grass littering the landscape. The occasional roar of nightmare beasts resounded through the skies, making one’s heart race.

“In front of us is the Soul Cave. This is an extremely strange spirit land. In the past, a divine object once appeared within it – the Weeping Blood God Springs.”

The information of the purple-clothed girl was clearly far more detailed than that of the Imperial Beast Sect.

Lin Ming perked up. Weeping Blood God Springs?

He had seen this name on the Emperor God Wall before. It was said to an incomparably precious divine substance that could be used to refine True Divinity level pills. It was something that could even tempt True Divinities!

“What is the Weeping Blood God Springs?”

Lin Ming couldn’t help but ask. Something that could stir the desires of a True Divinity was no trifling matter.

The purple-clothed girl responded, “This Soul Cave can breed spirit source. In ancient times, because this spirit source was far too dense, it finally gathered together and formed liquid; in other words, a soul springs. As for the Weeping Blood God Springs, it is rumored that in ancient times a peerless God King mixed in his own blood within the soul springs, transforming it into what it is now. But, the Weeping Blood God Springs developed a wisdom of its own and escaped into the earth, completely vanishing from sight. After that, no one was able to find it.”

The purple-clothed girl shook her head. Lin Ming was startled upon hearing this story.

Liquid formed from spirit source? Then, just how rich and pure was this spirit source?

In the past when Lin Ming entered the Asura Road’s final trial, he had experienced spirit source himself. This was an extremely important source strength for all soul forging martial artists.

Lin Ming didn't doubt that Empyrean Divine Dream's spirit source was also obtained within the Soul World.

As for the ancient peerless God King that the purple-clothed girl spoke of, could it have been the one who created the Akashic Dream Universe, the mysterious first ancestor of the spiritas?

Chapter 1806 – The Soul Cave

Chapter 1806 – The Soul Cave

…

…

…

Although the Soul Cave was called a cave, the truth was that it was a massive canyon. It was situated between two mountains that were hundreds of thousands of feet high and filled with a faint purple fog all year round. It was an extremely mystical place.

At this time, outside of the Soul Cave, a massive number of martial artists had gathered.

These people came from influences all over the Soul World. Lin Ming glanced over them and didn't see anyone from Zenith Palace.

This was just because Zenith Palace was far too weak and didn't have the qualifications to enter the Soul Cave. To try and venture into the Soul Cave with their level of strength was no different from seeking death.

"Violet Sun Divine Kingdom, hehe… I knew that the Violet Cloud Princess wouldn't miss such a momentous event."

In the crowd of people, a strange-looking creature spoke up.

This life form was twice the height of the average person and had golden purple scales covering his body. There was also a pair of curved horns jutting out from his head.

Lin Ming was startled. Just what sort of race was this?

From looks alone, this being seemed to be from the monster race, but Lin Ming could feel that this golden purple being was from a race different from the Divine Realm's monster race. Rather than monster essence, this creature emitted a dense soul energy.

"This person is…?"

Lin Ming asked with a sound transmission.

"He comes from the spirit race and he is the spirit race's Purple Chestnut King."

Violet Cloud briefly explained.

"Spirit race?" Lin Ming repeated. This was the first time he had heard of such a race.

"They are descendants of an ancient race. You've never heard of them before?"

The Violet Cloud Princess looked at Lin Ming with puzzled eyes, not caring about it too much. Every universe of the 33 Heavens was occupied by different mixes of races. Besides humans, saints, and spiritas, there were also many other minor races that often only occupied a part of a universe. It wasn't strange if one didn't know about one race or another.

The current spirit race was one such example. Even though the spirit race didn't have many members remaining, they were still a very powerful race that had produced many peak Empyreans in the last billion years. Even now they were being supported by a peak Empyrean.

A peak Empyrean was an existence just beneath a True Divinity. No one in any universe could underestimate them.

The Purple Chestnut King glanced at Lin Ming once and then ignored him. Instead, he called out to his many followers. These followers consisted of powerhouses from other races, but right now they all obeyed the orders of the Purple Chestnut King.

The members of the spirit race had a talent that surpassed that of the humans, saints, and spiritas. It wasn't an exaggeration to say they were favored by the heavens, and this Purple Chestnut King was a particularly outstanding individual of his race.

Behind the Purple Chestnut King were several powerful influences. Amongst them was a handsome and heroic spiritas youth who led over a thousand disciples here. These disciples all had a beyond average level of skill, and when combined together was able to form a terrifying strength.

They all noticed the arrival of the Violet Cloud Princess.

"We've just enough people. Open the array!"

The robed spiritas elite spoke up. Everyone began preparing themselves. The purple fog around the entrance of the Soul Cave was itself a variation of a force field. In order to break this force field, one needed a formidable strength.

Right now, everyone present, whether they were a Great World King or a young elite, all had their cultivations suppressed to the Divine Lord realm. It was impossible to break through the force field with the strength of a single person; everyone had to join forces.

For a time, the many elites present attacked with their followers. Brilliant beams of light cut through the skies and impacted against the purple fog at the entrance of the Soul Cave.

Chi chi chi!

The purple fog began melting away. A moment later, a giant hole was torn in it.

"Let's go!"

Many elites began rushing in, their followers right behind them. This Soul Cave was extremely broad and could easily fit several thousands of people walking in side by side.

Roar!

As soon as people began entering the Soul Cave, ghostly green eyes began appearing in the darkness; these were the shimmering eyes of the wild beasts that lived here.

"It's soul beasts."

Some martial artist said. Soul beasts were also called nightmare beasts, and were the energy life form monsters that existed in the Akashic Dream Universe.

These monsters were divided into the weak and the strong. Those that were stronger even had the strength of a World King. For these martial artists who had their cultivation suppressed to the Divine Lord level, it was impossible to face these creatures.

The howls of wolves filled the air and Lin Ming got a good sight of these monsters. The leader was a gray wolf the size of a giant cow; these were called dream devouring wolves.

Without the need for orders, many of the martial artists directly lashed out. For a time, countless brilliant lights filled the air. Lin Ming was also one of those attacking.

He thrust out spear lights with his fingers, piercing through the heads of several gray wolves and instantly killing them.

And as he killed these dream devouring wolves, Lin Ming noticed that the number of merit points in his token was gradually increasing. Killing these soul beasts also gave merit points.

Without a doubt, the stronger a soul beast was, the more merit points they would give.

The groups of people continued forwards, leaving corpses in their wake.

Some martial artists flushed red, the light in their eyes becoming increasingly bright. It was obvious they could also feel the number of merit points in their tokens increasing and this clearly had an intense stimulating effect on them.

All of a sudden, Lin Ming noticed a strange aura rushing towards him from up front.

Looking up ahead, he could see that at the very front of the group, the Purple Chestnut King and the robed spiritas elite had both paused where they were.

In the increasingly narrow cave, a massive carved copper gate had appeared.

This copper gate seemed to be wet, and exuded a mystical aura that seemed to exist all year round. Carved upon this copper gate were the heads of two fierce ghosts, each with demonic features and vile green fangs.

Strange ghostly sounds passed out from the copper gate, as if 10,000 fierce ghosts were wildly screaming and crying from within.

No one knew why but they all felt their hearts speed up. Even Lin Ming noticed a strange atmosphere falling over everyone.

He noticed that upon arriving here, everyone's eyes became far more focused and cautious.

"This is the Gate of Ghosts and Gods. It is an extremely bizarre place within the Soul Cave, and the inside is filled with perils..."

Violet Cloud's sound transmission suddenly popped up in Lin Ming's mind.

"Thank you." Lin Ming replied. Out of everyone here, only Lin Ming had an almost nonexistent understanding of the Soul Cave.

"The Gate of Ghosts and Gods has come. After entering, there is a danger that your soul will be torn apart and your main body's spiritual sea might even be injured... if you don't want to die then hurry up and screw off!"

The Purple Chestnut King said from the front. An eerie light shot out from his pupils as he traced the contours of the thick copper gate.

The death that waited within also meant that one would be removed from the Akashic Dream Battlefield. Although this wasn't true death, many of the martial artists present were unwilling to see this happen.

Moreover, the Purple Chestnut King even said that there was a chance that one's true spiritual sea would suffer damage upon death.

Even so, no one left. Anyone that was able to arrive at this step could be called a hero of their generation. How could they leave so easily?

The Purple Chestnut King gave his warning and didn't glance back to see anyone's reaction. Countless runes shimmered in his palm like a galaxy. Slowly, a ten foot high blue palm materialized in front of him, emitting a vast aura of Laws.

Lin Ming's eyebrow arched up and he gazed at the Purple Chestnut King's strong and tall back. With Lin Ming's current comprehension of many different Laws, he could feel just how mighty the power of Laws in front of him was.

He made a rapid judgement in his heart. This Purple Chestnut King should have an amazing level of talent to begin with and his comprehension of Laws even surpassed that of an ordinary World King.

The Purple Chestnut King raised that great blue palm. Then, like a meteor striking the earth, he repeatedly smashed it onto the ghost heads carved into the copper gate.

Pa! Pa! Pa!

Strange sounds rang out. Like something cracked open in the copper gate, the gate began to slowly open.

Bang!

All of a sudden, a black fog so thick that it was substantialized began gushing out, followed by the roars of maddened and fierce ghosts. Within the black fog were the blurry phantoms of countless dead spirits.

These dead spirit phantoms were all cruel and vicious. But among them there were spiritas, saints, humans, and even those from all sorts of different races.

“Kill!”

The crowd roared out together. Without any mercy, the groups of martial artists slaughtered their way forwards.

These groups of dead spirit phantoms were clearly much stronger than the soul beasts.

The Heretical God Tree swayed within Lin Ming. He reached into himself with his mind and drew out a wisp of heavenly tribulation fire into his palm. A flame lotus suddenly erupted around him, rumbling towards a dead spirit phantom.

Beyond Lin Ming’s expectations, the dead spirit phantom had thrust out a hand and summoned turbulent fluctuations of soul force. As this soul force collided with the flame lotus there was a fierce explosion.

“These dead spirit phantoms are from those who’ve wandered in here. The dead martial artists here still have their spirit marks; be careful.”

Beside Lin Ming, the Violet Cloud Princess began to overflow with layers upon layers of mystical purple energy. As the dead spirit phantoms collided with this purple energy, all of them exploded.

Lin Ming remained alert. A light layer of dragon scales covered his fist and his blood vitality surged within him. He punched out at an incoming dead spirit phantom, causing it to burst apart.

As the dead spirit phantom exploded, the Violet Cloud Princess unconsciously glanced at Lin Ming's dragon scale-covered fist.

Just entering the Gate of Ghosts and Gods, over 10 martial artists had perished.

However, Lin Ming, the Violet Cloud Princess, and her seven World King followers were all safe.

These nine people guarded each other, working in tandem to steadily enter deeper and deeper into the Soul Cave.

As the fierce killing within the Soul Cave became increasingly savage and unbridled, the difference in strength amongst the various groups began to slowly reveal itself.

The Purple Chestnut King, heroic spiritas elite, and Lin Ming and the Violet Cloud Princess' group of nine pushed forwards at the forefront.

Following 10,000 feet behind them were other groups of people.

As they continued forwards, only then did Lin Ming discover that this Soul Cave was infinitely deep and profound; it wasn't as simple as a mere cave.

In here, there were even underground rivers and underground volcanoes. All sorts of bizarre monsters appeared, challenging them at every step.

Along the way, Lin Ming plucked a black and shiny monster spirit flower from a giant fallen skeleton. This was said to be a spirit medicine that could help a spiritas break into the Holy Lord realm.

Lin Ming carefully put it away. Although he didn't have any use for it now, he could definitely trade it with a spiritas in the future for some medicine he could use.

The Violet Cloud Princess and the others also found their own harvests.

"What is that?"

As they continued walking, Lin Ming suddenly saw the peak of an underground mountain in front of him. There seemed to be some great sun shining high in the air, emitting a dim light.

This brilliance was shrouded with layers of dim haze and mist-covered clouds.

Then, Lin Ming froze. He could faintly feel the strength of a mountain pressing down on him, pushing so hard that his spiritual sea shook and his breath caught in his throat.

Chapter 1807 - Spiritual Storm

Chapter 1807 - Spiritual Storm

…

…

…

“What a powerful soul force!”

Lin Ming’s heart raced.

With his own eyes he could see a wild and reckless soul energy violently spinning around, forming a purple storm. Just by approaching this storm, he felt as if his spiritual sea would be shattered by the powerful soul force.

Not too far away, the Violet Cloud Princess, Purple Chestnut King, and the others also stopped where they were, a solemn look on their faces. Their every movement and gesture appeared to be hindered, as if they were mired in some swamp; it was clear that their souls were being suppressed just as much if not more than Lin Ming’s.

“Mm? This is…?”

Although Lin Ming’s soul force was suppressed, his divine sense remained as sharp and formidable as before.

He could feel that at the peak of this mountain, there was a dense rain and dew that contained an intense aura of divinity, making every pore on his body open wide with longing.

He wanted to step onto the peak of this mountain and obtain that rain and dew.

However, just as he took a step forwards, the spiritual storm that enveloped his spiritual sea began to flare up again, becoming increasingly heavy.

Lin Ming flushed red and his breathing turned heavy.

“We’ve reached Limitless God Mountain. This is a famous spiritual mountain located in the Akashic Dream Battlefield. It is said that there was once an unrivalled powerhouse that stepped atop this mountain and left behind an unsurpassed inheritance. However, this mountain is strange. There is a powerful spiritual storm that wraps around it and it can even affect your true body’s soul source... once, there was a powerhouse who tried to forcefully make his way up Limitless God Mountain, but his soul source received a grievous wound and he turned into an idiot...

“If a human were to try and enter, it would be especially perilous...”

The Violet Cloud Princess glanced at Lin Ming. Although she acknowledged that Lin Ming was strong and his comprehension of Laws was outstanding, as a human he simply couldn’t compete with the soul force of a spiritas. In terms of resisting the pressure of this spiritual storm, a spiritas had an immeasurable advantage over a human.

“Thank you for the advice, Princess.” Lin Ming took a deep breath. He sank his energy into his dantian and guarded his divine soul to withstand this massive pressure.

At the same time, the Purple Chestnut King and the heroic young spiritas emitted a dim purple halo of light. They used the power of their spiritual seas to resist this spiritual storm.

As they stepped forwards, excitement began to appear on their faces. It was clear just how eager they were for this soul rain.

The Purple Chestnut King was from the spirit race thus he had a natural superiority when it came to the soul. In this, he even surpassed the spiritas.

On this Limitless God Mountain, he had a nearly unsurpassable advantage!

At this time, Lin Ming took a sudden step backwards. A black vortex rose up in his spiritual sea.

Clang!

Like a divine weapon leaving its sheath, Lin Ming erupted with a soul force and momentum that soared into the heavens. Like a spear that was able to penetrate through the world, he pierced a hole through the leaden pressure of this spiritual storm.

Lin Ming calmly stepped forwards, one foot at a time.

“Eh?”

Seeing this, the Violet Cloud Princess could tell that some sort of change had occurred within Lin Ming. He was now even able to resist the inexhaustible spiritual storm that was being released from Limitless God Mountain.

Weng! Weng! Weng!

From within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, a blue spear rose up, roaring like a dragon that had awakened from a deep slumber. It howled forwards, carrying with it an overwhelming potential as it smashed into the spiritual storm spinning in the skies.

This blue spear carried an incredible spiritual strength and exuded a matchless momentum. It was the large success blue soul battle spirit that Lin Ming had formed in the past.

In the Akashic Dream Battlefield, the Laws had suppressed Lin Ming’s cultivation to the Divine Lord realm, and even his mental strength and soul force had greatly diminished. Even so, his battle spirit remained just as strong.

A battle spirit could attack soul force; it was an extremely strange and powerful tool. In the past, Lin Ming had used his battle spirit to cut down many powerful foes.

His large success blue soul battle spirit also carried with it grandmist energy; its quality far surpassed other battle spirits of the same level.

Bang!

The spiritual storm cracked open. The pressure on Lin Ming's spiritual sea also relaxed.

With his blue soul battle spirit cutting a path through his spiritual sea, even though his suppressed soul force was weaker than that of the Violet Cloud Princess and the others, Lin Ming was actually not any slower than them.

One step at a time, the closer he approached Limitless God Mountain the more intense the spiritual storm he faced was.

At the same time, within his spiritual sea, his blue soul battle spirit was engaged in a fierce battle with the spiritual force field, slowly supporting Lin Ming's steps forward.

In front of Lin Ming, the Purple Chestnut King already had beads of sweat dripping down his forehead. Even so, he maintained his brave and daring demeanor. The only difference was that a sharp light flashed in his eyes as he furiously struggled with the spiritual force field from Limitless God Mountain.

"That human is also following?"

Suddenly, the Purple Chestnut King noticed that just three steps behind him, the white-clothed human youth was following him at a leisurely pace. In fact, there wasn't even a drop of sweat marring his face.

Although the human was slow, the Purple Chestnut King hadn't been able to leave him behind.

The Purple Chestnut King's expression froze as he frowned. How was this possible? A human also arrived at this point?

Although the Violet Cloud Princess was a woman, she was still a proud child of heaven. The Purple Chestnut King recognized her qualifications to walk side by side with him. But now, a human also caught up with his pace.

In surprise, a gloomy light shined in the Purple Chestnut King's eyes.

He was an incredibly, insufferably arrogant person, and was considered a genius of the spirit race. Even so, he was being followed by a mere human which he felt was simply impossible. A human's advantage lay in their ability to cultivate energy but they were neophytes when it came to the soul, so why was he able to keep up?

From beside Lin Ming, the heroic spiritas youth also glanced at Lin Ming, an unfriendly light in his eyes.

At this point, only a sparse few people were able to make it to this distance.

The weaklings of the groups also tried to reach Limitless God Mountain, but just as they stepped foot at the base of the mountain, they screamed out loud as they were crushed and swept away by the spiritual force field.

There were also some who feared the spiritual pressure coming from Limitless God Mountain and hesitated in moving forwards. They looked towards the advancing individuals with envy in their eyes but they still didn't dare to take the risk of going forwards.

Some people could see that at the front of the leading group, there was a human youth.

"How could there even be a human climbing up? That's really… really…"

The martial artist didn't know what to say. As spiritas martial artists, they had lost to a human when it came to soul force.

This was like a group of chess masters deciding to play against a checkers master, but the end result was that all those chess masters were defeated by the checkers master. This was an utter shame on their name.

None of them had any face left!

“Don’t worry, in the Soul World there is no space for a human to enjoy glory. He will likely fail halfway, and even if he can reach the end he will inevitably consume a great deal of energy. If this human obtains any lucky chances we can kill him together and steal them away.” Someone indignantly huffed.

Finally, Lin Ming slowly stepped halfway up the mountain.

The scene in front of him had changed.

He had stepped into a hazy pall of light rain.

This light rain was the dim fog he had seen from the base of the mountain.

After being touched by this light sprinkle, Lin Ming felt the rain drill into his body, flooding into his spiritual sea and rapidly restoring his spent soul force. Moreover, it constantly nourished his soul and expanded his spiritual sea.

“What a rich and potent… spiritual strength. This is rain formed from spirit source!” Lin Ming immediately understood just what this light rain was.

Only spirit source so rich that it had substantialized to rain could rapidly supplement his soul force like this.

Even his battle spirit was vitalized by this spirit source; it grew larger, becoming increasingly fierce and powerful.

Lin Ming didn’t hurriedly rush to the top. Instead, he looked around at his surroundings.

He discovered that this light drizzle of rain was formed from a murmuring stream on the side of the god mountain that constantly splashed up.

This stream was magnificent beyond compare. Although it splashed into the skies, it didn’t emit any sound at all.

Wherever the stream flowed, all the mountain stone around it was stained a crystalline jet black and emitted an extremely strong soul force.

“Those are peak quality soul crystals, just a little of that is a priceless treasure.” Lin Ming’s pupils shrank as he saw the soul crystals.

Before long, his eyes moved away from the soul crystals. He sat down where he was and began meditating. Like a whale sucking in water, he breathed in deeply, breathing in the wandering spirit source mist around him, allowing it to flood into his body where he absorbed it.

As he did this, the Violet Cloud Princess, Purple Chestnut King, and the others had almost simultaneously chosen the same action.

After all, no matter how it was said, this spirit source mist was the most important of treasures. It could nourish and cleanse one’s soul force and even enhance one’s cultivation. It was far more important than some external treasure.

After an incense stick of time, Lin Ming slowly opened his eyes.

He noticed that the soul force in his spiritual sea had nearly doubled. A great deal of spirit source mist that hadn’t yet been fully refined hovered above his spiritual sea, forming something akin to a layer of defense.

It cleared his senses, making him feel refreshed. When facing the spiritual force field released by Limitless God Mountain, Lin Ming felt much more assured.

“Humph.” At this time, a cold cough sounded out from in front of Lin Ming.

The tall Purple Chestnut King coldly jeered at Lin Ming, a disgusted light clear in his blood red pupils. This Limitless God Mountain had been formed through the countless years, and a great deal of the spirit source mist had been absorbed by him, Lin Ming, the Violet Cloud Princess, and the spiritas youth.

If this human wasn't here than the Purple Chestnut King would have clearly been able to absorb more spirit source mist. At the very least, he was unhappy that he had to divvy up a portion of this lucky chance to a human like Lin Ming. He didn't feel happy about this at all.

However, he didn't say anything. He faintly felt that Lin Ming was not a peaceful or kind-hearted individual. There was no point in mindlessly fighting Lin Ming right now.

He continued advancing forwards.

"I never imagined that as a human, you would have such attainments in the aspect of battle spirits." The Violet Cloud Princess' words echoed in Lin Ming's mind.

Lin Ming had revealed all sorts of peculiarities the longer she traveled with him, leaving her marveling with surprise every time. She thought that perhaps this human had some great secrets on him; she really didn't know where he had come from.

"If there is another lucky chance, let's join together and fight for it. I'm not on good ground with that Purple Chestnut King; we can be considered enemies."

The Violet Cloud Princess tried to pull Lin Ming over to her side. At this time, because of the spiritual storm, her followers weren't able to catch up to them. With an ally by her side, that meant her team would be that much stronger.

Lin Ming nodded. Without saying much else, he quickly moved forwards.

Chapter 1808 –Kirin Fruit

Chapter 1808 –Kirin Fruit

…

…

…

The closer one neared to the peak, the more powerful the spiritual storm that was released by Limitless God Mountain.

At the end, even Lin Ming felt some formidable strength pressing down in his spiritual sea and trying to force him down the mountain.

Luckily, he had swallowed a tremendous amount of spirit source mist just a while ago and was able to support the continued use of soul force, allowing him to slowly climb upwards.

Although everyone was trying their best to climb up, they were all within a close distance of each other.

As Lin Ming almost reached the peak, he saw a brilliant light splash down at him as if a sun was rising just up ahead.

As this light fell onto his body, it warmed him and nourished his spiritual sea.

"What light is this? Just by touching me it can nourish my soul force?" Lin Ming was amazed.

He followed the path of the light and saw a rumbling stream of water falling down from the top of the mountain.

Beneath this great flow of water was a giant rock.

In a crevice within the rock, a fist-sized medicinal herb grew. It was covered with dew and emitted a blinding light. Its entire body was crystal bright and dazzling.

That brilliant sunlight had originated from this medicinal herb.

Shua shua shua –

The eyes of the four people here, Lin Ming's included, completely fell atop that spirit fruit.

They could see shadows wriggling atop the fruit, as if there was a small life being bred within.

"That is a… kirin?"

Lin Ming stared at the shadow in the fruit. Because the light was far too bright, he could see through the walls of the fruit and make out the fine scales and mysterious pattern of Laws within. He could feel that there was a kirin being bred within this fruit.

Was this a hatching kirin fruit?

"What kind of fruit is this? It's far too mysterious! It actually transformed and is ready to evolve into a living spirit body… the medicinal fragrance is terrifyingly rich." Lin Ming's heart began to shake.

Soon, he understood what had happened. The faint traces of spirit source crashing down from the spirit stream had washed over this rock for endless days and nights, slowly accumulating atop it.

Without a doubt, this fruit contained a massive amount of the purest spirit source strength. Moreover, it also possessed a uniquely divine substance; it was incomparably precious.

One after another, more and more people withstood the spiritual storm blowing down from Limitless God Mountain and approached.

As they saw the mystical fruit that was breeding a kirin within, everyone's breath caught in their throats. A greedy light flashed in their eyes.

A short old spiritas man couldn't restrain himself. He raised his hands and rushed towards the kirin fruit.

But as his hands reached out, a pair of golden purple arms came drilling out from the center of the old man's chest.

Afterwards, the old man cried out in pain and sorrow and his entire body was torn in half. Blood, muscles, and pieces of intestines were flung to the floor.

The one who attacked the old man was the Purple Chestnut King. His purple red hair danced recklessly in the air and a severe light shined in his pupils. Spirit race powerhouses almost ten feet tall stood behind the Purple Chestnut King. As his hands dripped with blood, his aura became swift and fierce, arousing fear and alarm like a wandering death god.

“You think you are good enough for this treasure? It seems you don't know what it means to die.”

The Purple Chestnut King disdainfully said.

“Heh, the treasure belongs to whoever has the skill to obtain it. Purple Chestnut King, do you think you can obtain it alone?”

Those that were able to arrive here were no ordinary martial artists. After the Purple Chestnut King's ruthless and cruel actions, although everyone remained vigilant they didn't feel any fear at all. Some considerably strong people almost simultaneously broke through the layers of pressure coming down from Limitless God Mountain and hurtled towards the kirin fruit.

In a moment, everyone further approached Limitless God Mountain.

At this time, the spiritual storm spread out, becoming far fiercer. In this stormy sea, everyone was beaten up and whipped by the wild winds and the world seemed to shake.

Someone cried out in misery as their head exploded. They weren't able to withstand the violent spiritual storm and died on the spot.

However, those heroes with true foundations were not blocked by Limitless God Mountain's spiritual storm.

"It seems you all want to die."

Seeing so many rush forwards at once, a callous light flashed in the Purple Chestnut King's eyes. He had already seen just how precious this kirin fruit was; it was absolutely a treasure that would even cause Empyreans to relentlessly battle for it. He wanted to possess this treasure alone and considered anyone who wanted to take it his enemy.

On his back, a strange soul force shimmered as millions of runes appeared. These runes grew up and gathered, forming into a pair of light wings that were ten feet long.

Ping! Ping! Ping! Ping! Ping! Ping!

The light wings flapped. The tall and formidable Purple Chestnut King had whipped up a tornado.

At the same time, he sped towards those six or seven people that were rushing forwards and punched out at all of them.

Brilliant purple light shot into the world. Soul force surged and a series of explosions rang out. Some nearby spirit trees and plants were dislodged in the fierce impact, as if they had been cut down by a sickle.

This scene caused everyone to suck in a breath of cold air. After all, these spirit trees and flowers hadn't even broken at the top of Limitless God Mountain, but in that brief exchange just now they had been torn down by that horrifying strength.

Some people were panic-stricken. The Purple Chestnut King was actually stopping all those who dared to rush forwards and was eliminating them all. In a one on one battle, perhaps no one was his match.

Violet Cloud had also been blocked by the Purple Chestnut King's punch just now. Her thin eyebrows pressed together as she felt somewhat insulted. After many years of not seeing him, the Purple Chestnut King's strength had risen even further.

She sent Lin Ming a sound transmission, "Brother Lin, let's attack together! The Purple Chestnut King is from the spirit race and is a favored pet of the heavens. It is said that he is at the half-step World King realm and even then he is able to jump ranks to defeat a Great World King. In the future he is someone that might become a peak Empyrean! If we join forces we can suppress him together, and after that we can divide the spoils equally."

Violet Cloud put forth her conditions. However, Lin Ming shook his head, "No need."

His figure flashed like gods and ghosts. He fluttered over alone to that kirin fruit.

He had been closely observing the kirin fruit all this time and didn't rush into action, so the Purple Chestnut King hadn't noticed him.

Seeing Lin Ming's movements, the Violet Cloud Princess was dumbfounded. She didn't think that Lin Ming would refuse her reasonable terms and run towards the kirin fruit alone.

Did he think he was stronger than the Purple Chestnut King?

Seeing Lin Ming leisurely move forwards, the Purple Chestnut King fiendishly grinned. Killing intent erupted from his body; he had long been wanting to kill this human brat.

From his body, monstrous ripples of gold spread out, covering the area for hundreds of feet around him. The golden light began to sweep towards Lin Ming like the waves of the ocean.

Every golden ripple contained a terrifying number of shimmering runes.

Feeling the terrifying golden ripples rush towards him, Lin Ming didn't show any expression at all. He was able to immediately see that this was the Purple Chestnut King's unique force field. If a weaker martial artist were to enter this force field then they wouldn't be able to die even if they wanted too. Even then, he wouldn't be able to display his true combat strength either.

Lin Ming's thoughts focused. From his inner world, a loud rumbling sound spread out.

In a vast sea of true essence, three vast and boundless palaces floated up, slowly appearing as they were lifted by three massive stars.

Each palace shined with dazzling starlight. As this endless mystic strength was released, mystical lines of the dao appeared, seeming to resemble a mysterious and unreachable goal.

As these three palaces floated in Lin Ming's inner world, they completely suppressed the force field that the Purple Chestnut King had released.

These three palaces were the three Dao Palaces Lin Ming had opened.

Every Dao Palace possessed the mark of the Great Dao. Although they couldn't be thrown out towards enemies, they were still more than enough to resist the impact left by the force field in his inner world.

Lin Ming felt the pressure on him lighten up. The Phoenix Blood Spear shot forwards like a dragon swimming through the ocean, running out from his spatial ring and roaring in the air, causing the surrounding soul force to wildly shiver.

Lin Ming's mind stirred. Endless strength erupted from his body and man and spear became one. The energy within his hand was like thousands of suns imploding together. Waves of spear strikes gathered together, forming a radiant column of light that was unstoppable.

In an instant, Lin Ming pierced out with his spear tens of thousands of time, each spear strike contained a near endless mystic strength, completely crushing the golden ripples to nothing.

The endless golden ripples twisted with the sea of spear light and were then completely submerged.

"W…what!?"

The Purple Chestnut King cried out. By the time he discovered something was wrong, it was already too late for him.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

Infinite howling spear phantoms appeared in front of him, as if they were passing down a summons from the true god of death.

From the back, the Purple Chestnut King felt his scalp tingle with fear. He exploded with a roar and spat out a mouthful of essence energy and blood vitality.

The drops of blood condensed in the void, forming a thick wall of blood.

He cried out pitifully and was forcibly cast back over a hundred feet.

Atop his massive body, endless spear lights had produced bloody holes. Even so, the Purple Chestnut King hadn't died and was only severely wounded.

Lin Ming's spear had heavily wounded the Purple Chestnut King but it wasn't able to kill him. This left Lin Ming surprised. Although he didn't put his full strength behind his attack, it was still far more than enough. For this Purple Chestnut King to not die left him surprised. It seemed that the spirit race was far more formidable than he first thought.

Lin Ming was only surprised. As for the others still on Limitless God Mountain, all of them were shocked speechless.

"This… this is…"

The Violet Cloud Princess' eyes widened. She never imagined such a scene would occur.

She originally had a deep grudge against the Purple Chestnut King and was well aware of what his limits were.

She believed that if she and the Purple Chestnut King had the same level of cultivation, she wouldn't be his opponent. This was because this Purpled Chestnut King was a descendant of an ancient race that existed 10 billion years and also came with a top bloodline.

If there was a race that could exist for 10 billion years and only decline now, then that meant this clan wasn't as simple as he first thought. Right now, the fact that they had existed for this long was a testament to their strength!

As for the Purple Chestnut King, he was one of the most outstanding individuals amongst the juniors of the spirit race.

Yet such a person had been defeated by Lin Ming's spear and his entire body marred with blood holes. This difference was too great!

Moreover, the Violet Cloud Princess suspected that Lin Ming wasn't using his full strength.

"Goodness… what a strong fellow."

The Violet Cloud Princess' normally calm expression was replaced with one of shock and disbelief. At this time, Lin Ming no longer spared the Purple Chestnut King a glance. Without slowing down, he plunged towards the kirin fruit. He had to obtain this fruit at all costs!

Chapter 1809 – Cutting Down the Soul Beasts

Chapter 1809 – Cutting Down the Soul Beasts

…

…

…

“Stop him!”

The heroic spiritas youth cried out loud as he saw Lin Ming soon about to grab the kirin fruit.

It was true that Lin Ming was strong, but at this time in the face of a heavenly material that could be refined into a True Divinity level pill, everyone was willing to recklessly risk their lives.

After all, even dying to Lin Ming wouldn’t matter, because there were no true deaths in this Akashic Dream Battlefield.

As the other martial artists saw this, greed shined in their eyes and they threw themselves at Lin Ming.

But Lin Ming was far too fast; he had already cast himself away from everyone else!

The moment that Lin Ming was about to reach the kirin fruit, it howled out loud. The phantom within the kirin fruit began to rapidly wriggle about.

This shocked many of the martial artists present.

This kirin fruit had a mind of its own and could even move!

Lin Ming's mind turned cold. He could sense intense life fluctuations coming from the space in front of him.

A thousand alarms went off in his mind. His body suddenly changed direction at an unbelievable angle as he hurtled past the space in front of him like a meteor.

His body movements forcefully created an air passage as he transferred 30 feet to the side.

Roar!

In front of Lin Ming, the void split apart and a massive claw came reaching out, emitting strange black fluctuations. As the ripples from this claw touched the lower hems of Lin Ming's robes, his robes instantly turned to ash.

"What is that?" Lin Ming breathlessly whispered as he felt a terrifying death aura wash over him.

All he saw was a giant hazy and bony bird appear in the dim space in front of him.

This bird forced Lin Ming backwards. Then, its body began to fade away as it hid in distorted rays of light, vanishing from sight.

"This is… what an intense death aura. This soul beast is too strange, it actually has remarkable talent in hiding itself…" Lin Ming murmured, surprised.

At this time, several martial artists greedily rushed forwards, even running past Lin Ming. But as they saw the giant bird they didn't even have time to be dazed.

Before they even approached the kirin fruit, the leading martial artist was struck by a pitch black wing that zoomed out from the void. Black flames burned his body, instantly reducing him to ash.

At the same time, a tall and burly martial artist was nearly about to be cut in half by a black wing. Shocked, he instantly released jade-white soul force around his body that condensed into a rope-like chain.

Pa!

This soul chain wrapped around the bird’s wings.

Caught off guard, the soul beast’s movements were bound. The burly martial artist wanted to use this chance to retreat and save his own life, but the pupils of that soul beast suddenly burst out with a blinding black light.

This light smashed into the head of that burly martial artist, burning it away.

“This is my chance!”

After living through countless great battles, Lin Ming had a supernatural ability to grasp the flow of battle.

This moment was just when the strange soul beast had yet to recover from using its last move.

Lin Ming’s spear shot forth like a beam of lightning. The large success blue soul battle spirit howled through the air, turning into a shining beam of light that thrust through the chest of that soul beast and shot out from its back.

The soul beast cried out in pain before exploding into pieces.

“Mm? This is so many merit points!”

Lin Ming discovered that his merit points token suddenly became boiling hot.

In just a moment, his merit points had risen by several million! This was multiple times the total merit points that Lin Ming had earned after slaughtering his way through the Akashic Dream Battlefield for these last days.

It was obvious from this that the soul beast he just slayed was an extremely formidable life form within the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

The kirin fruit continued to emit a sun-bright light. As it stared helplessly as the soul beast was struck down, its cries became even more panicked.

Its loud screams became louder and more insistent.

After killing that strange soul beast, Lin Ming didn't stop at all. He rushed towards the kirin fruit.

He knew that this kirin fruit had a spiritual wisdom, but what he found strange was its actions. Just what was the kirin fruit crying out for?

However, there was no martial artist that would allow Lin Ming to freely snatch away the kirin fruit.

A thin martial artist sprung out from the ground, attacking Lin Ming. His soul force had condensed into a black whip and scales covered his body, making him exude a faint aura of soul beasts. This was the combination of a soul beast's soul and soul force runes; an extremely bizarre technique.

A black whip cut through the air, flowing as if it were made from black liquid metal. As it slashed through the air it cut open the void, ruthlessly forcing Lin Ming to retreat.

However, Lin Ming refused to step back. By stiffly relying on his arm, he punched at the dark metal whip, causing the sound of ringing metal to fill the air.

Ding!

Flames splashed out in all directions.

As everyone saw this they were shocked – what an incredibly strong mortal body!

Lin Ming borrowed the force behind that whip's strike to hasten his speed.

At the same time, he shot out spear lights with his hands, causing the heads of those trying to sneak attack him to explode!

This sort of strength was formidable to the point of being terrifying!

Whoever got in his way died without exception. For a time, no one dared to attack him.

Although the treasure lay before them, against this Lin Ming who was just a vicious beast masquerading in human form, it was impossible to seize the kirin fruit. The only thing they would receive was their own deaths.

How could a human be this strong?

As Lin Ming was about to reach the kirin fruit, he held his breath and raised his guard. Just as he was going to reach out, he felt an inexplicably horrifying aura gush out from the direction of the kirin fruit.

"What is that?"

Lin Ming's eyes suddenly focused on the rock that the kirin fruit was growing out of.

In this area, his divine sense was blinded by the endless spiritual storm that swirled around him. He could only rely on his eyes to make out his surroundings.

At this time, he thought that the kirin fruit was growing on a black rock. But now that he was only 30 feet away, he was able to clearly see what was in front of him.

How was that a rock? It was clearly a bone.

This bone was immense. It stretched out on both sides and was covered by layers of gray soil, thus one wasn't able to make out what it really was.

At this time, the bone was emitting a dreadful pressure as if it were reacting to the kirin fruit's cries.

Lin Ming realized something was wrong. The giant bone released a dazzling light and a mist suddenly erupted from it, forming a giant water ape that was over 20 feet tall.

As this water ape appeared it roared in anger. Its fists were covered with hairs, each hair as sharp as a steel needle. It punched the air, causing the void to distort. Then, it smashed its fists at Lin Ming's chest.

At this crucial moment, Lin Ming raised his spear to block the water ape soul beast's fists. His entire body shook as if he had been struck by a mountain.

The massive impact force caused him to take several steps back.

Just as he was about to obtain the treasure, this bewildering soul beast had actually blocked him. Lin Ming frowned.

Shaking his spear, endless spear lights shot through space like a kaleidoscope, all of them striking the water ape.

One soul beast and one human, both of them seemed to possess infinite strength, and they used soul technique after soul technique.

The water ape shot out endless bucket-wide water arrows, causing massive holes to appear all throughout Limitless God Mountain.

Lin Ming's aura was also extraordinary. His spear weaved about like a dragon and tiny True Dragon scales began appearing on his body. Then, an Azure Dragon drilled out from his body, clawing at the air as it fought by his side.

Some martial artists tried to rush into the battlefield of Lin Ming and the water ape but were sliced up by the sharp winds swirling about.

Even the stronger Purple Chestnut King and heroic spiritas youth were concerned with their own thoughts and didn't participate in the battle. As they looked upon the battlefield, their complexions were extremely ugly.

Lin Ming was just far too strong. Even if they tried to take advantage of these two tigers duking it out, there was still nothing they could do against him.

At this time, the diamond-hard stone beneath Lin Ming's feet abruptly had a 10 foot deep hole blasted into it.

He didn't need to look back to know that the heavily wounded Purple Chestnut King and the heroic spiritas youth were both eyeing him with greed in their eyes. However, he simply didn't care about them at all. He had to obtain this kirin fruit at all costs. With his formidable foundation of strength, even if someone tried to profit from his battle he still wouldn't fear them.

"I have to quickly finish this battle and make sure none of them have a chance to do anything!"

With this thought in mind, Lin Ming's eyes flashed. At that moment, the water ape punched out again, causing a monstrous wave of soul force to sweep towards Lin Ming.

Unexpectedly, Lin Ming didn't try to avoid this attack at all. Rather, a faint black light shined atop his blue soul battle spirit.

This black light rapidly expanded.

Whorl whorl whorl!

It eventually erupted into a giant black vortex.

His figure flashing, Lin Ming grabbed onto the fists of the water ape.

A torrential fist strength rushed through Lin Ming's body, all of it withstood by him. After breaking into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, his mortal body surpassed some royal saint bloodlines in terms of durability and intensity. Even so, blood still trickled down from his eyes, nose, and ears.

At the same time, a blue spear-shaped battle spirit dove forwards like a dragon, smashing into the water ape's body along with the black vortex.

This black vortex was a black hole!

Aoo!

The black hole exploded. Even the powerful water ape that was nourished by the power of spirit source all day and night began to break apart beneath the force of the black light...

Chapter 1810 – Decimation

Chapter 1810 – Decimation

…

…

…

"Attack together!"

As the soul beast began to break apart, the Purple Chestnut King suddenly bellowed out. At his side, a lightning-bright glow flashed past him; it was the heroic spiritas youth, shooting out bolts of black lightning from his hands.

These bolts of lightning shined with star-like runes and emitted a terrifying aura.

From all other directions, several more martial artists released their soul force, trying to attack Lin Ming and prevent him from taking the kirin fruit.

Unfortunately, they were too late. Lin Ming wanted to obtain the kirin fruit at all costs so how could he easily give up?

He used the grandmist force field and his formidable strength to forcefully withstand all the attacks. Then, he grabbed the kirin fruit, tearing it away no matter how much it tried to struggle.

The moment Lin Ming did so, his complexion changed. He could feel that the instant he picked the fruit, it was like he had alarmed some ancient vicious beast.

The giant bone that the kirin fruit grew on began to violently shake, emitting the roar of an ancient vicious beast.

Lin Ming shook. He could feel an ancient and boundless energy rush into his body, causing his meridians to break in many places and his organs to tear apart!

Lin Ming couldn't help but cough up a mouthful of blood. Blood also began to leak out from all over his face. This strange power had caused him to suffer severe wounds and be greatly weakened!

Just what was this?

Lin Ming was startled. But, he grit his teeth and put away the kirin fruit.

And this was Lin Ming. If anyone else had picked the kirin fruit then perhaps they might have died from the backlash of that horrifying strength.

And even Lin Ming had been severely wounded.

The shining radiance that pervaded the entirety of Limitless God Mountain began to rapidly dim down as soon as the kirin fruit was plucked.

The numerous martial artists watched as Lin Ming obtained the kirin fruit, greed and fear mixing in their eyes. Lin Ming had already clearly demonstrated his strength to everyone just now; no one here was his opponent.

"Luckily he suffered a backlash when he picked the fruit and was heavily wounded. Everyone, let's attack together and take back the fruit. We have so many people, how can we possibly be scared of an injured human?" A martial artist loudly roared, sneakily hidden in the ranks of the crowd.

Just as this person shouted out, Lin Ming's electric eyes focused on him.

"Sneaky like a rat, you deserve to die." Just as Lin Ming spoke, a bead of crystalline blood appeared from between that person's eyebrows, as eye-catching as a gem.

A beam of spear light had shot out from Lin Ming's palm and pierced through that shouting person's head like a beam of invisible lightning.

With a loud popping sound, the person's head exploded and his body toppled to the ground.

For a time, many of the martial artists present fell silent with fear.

The feeling of strength they felt from this youth before became even more profound.

"Pathetic lowborn human, everyone, let's kill him together!"

At this time, the severely wounded Purple Chestnut King could no longer endure waiting. Strange ripples of energy began emitting from his body.

He discovered that he wasn't Lin Ming's opponent in a one versus one, however, he could drop all pretenses of honor and stir up all the martial artists present to attack him together.

As long as they killed this human, then he would be able to make up for the fact that he had been grievously wounded by a human here.

Lin Ming arched an eyebrow. He focused power into his toes and erupted with a dreadful velocity, even causing the mountain stone beneath him to shatter. The feeling he gave off was like a meteor racing through the skies. As he tore open the void, he rushed straight towards the Purple Chestnut King, engaging everyone there in a group melee.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Lin Ming was like a demon god. He broke into the group of spiritas martial artists and began to freely massacre everyone near him.

All sorts of soul forces shined and exploded. Magnificent lights shot up into the skies, impacting into the horizon. The entirety of Limitless God Mountain rang nonstop with the deafening sound of endless thunderclaps.

The Violet Cloud Princess didn't join in on the battle. Her eyes glittered as they remained locked on Lin Ming.

"Humanity… since when have they produced such a talented character? His comprehension of Laws is unbelievably profound… his mortal body is as intense as a God Beast's, and even his soul force is amazing. This is just incredible!"

All she saw was the wounded Lin Ming fighting within the group of martial artists. Besides the Purple Chestnut King and the heroic spiritas youth able to fight him on slightly more even terms, everyone else was being quickly cut down. Lin Ming thrust out spear after spear, causing the heads of martial artists to explode every few breaths of time.

Moreover, his fighting methods were savage and brutal. With the intensity of his mortal body, he could completely ignore the attacks from some weaker martial artists.

Lin Ming killed his way through the crowd. With every martial artist that died, he felt his token become increasingly hot as the number of merit points within shot up.

The Purple Chestnut King stared helplessly on as one of his soul attacks struck Lin Ming from behind, only to leave behind a minor wound. Not only was his attack almost negligible, but Lin Ming instead thrust out his spear and blew apart the head of another martial artist. A sudden surge of fear rose up in the Purple Chestnut King's heart – this human was far too terrifying.

He was clearly injured and yet he remained so ferocious. If he were in his peak condition, what would that be like?

The Purple Chestnut King grit his teeth and scales exploded on his body, releasing a burst of strange runes.

This was an inscription symbol. As soon as it appeared, the surrounding space froze and began to emit an icy cold energy.

Even the void began to freeze over.

The Purple Chestnut King's scales exploded again and again as he released these strange inscription symbols three times.

He suddenly thrust out a soul force technique that resembled a black spider web. All of those inscription symbols hung atop this spider web-shaped soul technique.

Lin Ming originally had his back to the Purple Chestnut King. As he felt a strange power begin gathering behind him, he swiveled around.

As he turned, he came face to face with a great blinding explosion.

A stormy cold strength that seemed to freeze space, an incomparably powerful annihilating gravitational strength, an endless surge of the true meaning of thunder, all of these powers turned into a hail of arrows that shot towards Lin Ming with enough strength to crush a star.

“Mm? Inscription symbols?” Lin Ming was startled. These inscription symbols possessed ancient and profound Concepts; they weren’t ordinary at all.

Waves of heaven-shaking explosions sounded out. The spiritual storm that wrapped around the entirety of Limitless God Mountain was stirred up, becoming increasingly violent as it roared like waves in a storm.

Lin Ming’s figure was completely swallowed up by this wild energy storm. A massive plume of energy rose up as destructive thunder, fire, and frost mixed together.

Some weaker martial artists were struck by the energy waves and were sent hurtling dozens of feet away.

“He’s dead…”

This thought cut through everyone’s minds. But before they could discern what really happened, there was a sudden change in the center of the energy storm.

A towering tree appeared, rapidly growing into the heavens. This tree carried with it rippling waves of mystic strength, accompanied by tongues of destructive heavenly tribulation flames as well as howling thunder dragons.

The branches of this great tree were like endless great whips. They tore through space, causing a massive storm to be swept up.

A monstrous power of fire joined together with the thunder dragons as they tore open a gaping hole within the energy storm.

"This is..."

The Purple Chestnut King's voice shivered as he saw this. He had tossed out every single ancient inherited inscription symbol he had on him and yet this human had survived...

Suddenly, a beam of spear light shot out from the energy storm and smashed into the Purple Chestnut King.

Then, with a rumbling explosion, the shadow of a person followed right behind – this was Lin Ming.

Puff!

The Purple Chestnut King vomited a mouthful of blood and was sent flying away. Lin Ming's strike had sent him soaring, but because he was heavily wounded he wasn't able to kill the Purple Chestnut King.

Lin Ming turned into a beam of light as he rushed towards the cave entrance!

He didn't know what had happened when he picked the kirin fruit. When he did, an unknown strength had surged up from the giant ancient bone and into his body.

He had to look for a safe area to examine if anything had happened to his body.

"Chase him!"

The Purple Chestnut King gnashed his teeth. His eyes had always been aimed at the top and his strength and talent surpassed the many young geniuses of the spirit race. Even so, in this Soul Cave he had randomly bumped into this strange human youth who had caused him to be defeated again and again.

He took out a pill from his spatial ring and swallowed it down. A bizarre red color flushed through his face. Then, without waiting, he ran after Lin Ming.

The other masters of the spirit race all followed him.

Some martial artists clearly knew they weren’t the opponent of this human youth but they weren’t willing to give up. This kirin fruit could be refined into a transcendent divine pill so how could they allow it to fall into the hands of others?

They also rushed out to chase Lin Ming. But because they weren’t too strong to begin with and they were slow in their steps, by the time they left the cave Lin Ming had already disappeared from sight; he was just too fast.

Only the Purple Chestnut King and some others were barely able to keep up with him.

………….

Hu – hu – hu –

Strong winds howled. Lin Ming flew forwards with lightning speed. Pangs of pain throbbed from all over his body.

Lin Ming’s organs had been seriously battered and his blood vessels had exploded in countless places. However, his mortal body was simply ridiculously strong. Every inch of his body emitted a dazzling shimmer as his wounds began to wriggle like bugs. However, a strange energy hindered him, stopping his body from rapidly regenerating.

“My wounds are heavy. I’ll have to spend some time recovering…”

Lin Ming gloomily thought. If he was caught by others and a great war exploded around him, he would suffer wounds upon wounds. This wouldn’t be a good outcome for him at all.

He grit his teeth and used a void-breaking movement technique. Space seemed to lose meaning to him as his figure turned hazy and he flew over a cliff.

The Akashic Dream Battlefield was vast and boundless, vacant for the most part. Mountain ranges continued without end and giant underground caves and passages wound through the ground beneath him.

Lin Ming looked for an especially rugged terrain with many hiding spots where he could hunker down.

He passed another several mountains and dove through numerous rivers. With this, he easily lost the people that had been chasing him.

The severely wounded Purple Chestnut King slowly recovered as he pursued Lin Ming. However, his strength couldn't compare with Lin Ming's to begin with. He could only gaze helplessly as he was left behind by Lin Ming, who eventually vanished into a string of endless mountain ranges.

"How hateful!"

Looking at the endless mountain ranges in front of him, the Purple Chestnut King stomped his feet.

Slowly, the other masters of the spirit race appeared behind him, gathering at his location.

"Use an image transmitting symbol and send an image of that brat to all the nearby groups of masters. Tell them that he has the kirin fruit..." The Purple Chestnut King said, grinding his teeth together.

On this day, all of the masters that were exploring areas near the Soul Cave received a piece of information – a kirin fruit had appeared at the Soul Cave and was taken away by a human boy.

As for this fruit, although many people hadn’t seen it before, just from looking at its image and the phantom of a kirin manifested within it, one could tell it was no ordinary treasure.

For a time, a great upheaval was stirred up within the Akashic Dream Battlefield. Numerous masters set out towards the Soul Cave…

Chapter 1811 – Mysterious Little Girl

Chapter 1811 – Mysterious Little Girl

…

…

…

The vast mountain ranges were distant and mysterious. The endless peaks of mountains continued on without end, all of them shrouded in a thick and viscous black fog.

The mountains were barren and without any sign of life. There was nothing but strange rugged stone littering the ground.

The air was cold and grim, deathly still.

From the depths of the distant mountain ranges, horrifying roars would echo out, shaking the world, as if some ancient vicious beasts were awakening from their slumber.

Lin Ming cautiously moved forwards until he found a hidden cave. Only then did he sit down and relax his thoughts.

He immediately pulled out the kirin fruit.

As the kirin fruit appeared, a rich medicinal fragrance wafted out, forming mist as tangible as a white dragon that filled every inch of the cave.

Lin Ming only needed to take a whiff of this medicinal fragrance to feel as if his body was being cleansed by a pure running stream, filling him with comfort.

Chirp! Chirp!

The kirin fruit still wildly struggled. But because it wasn't able to manifest a form yet, it wasn't able to escape.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment. In order to bring out the highest level of medicinal efficacy from this fruit, it had to be used for alchemy; he shouldn't directly swallow it. But now, he had received heavy wounds and there was some unfamiliar energy pulsing through his body that was influencing him.

In addition, the massive explosions from those inscription symbols had caused his meridians and blood vessels to be broken in numerous places.

All of these things needed to be dealt with. When he was running away he had no time to deal with these problems but now he could rest for a moment to recover from his injuries.

Lin Ming thought for a bit. He pinched off two leaves from the kirin fruit and then swallowed them.

Although it was only two kirin fruit leaves, after swallowing them Lin Ming felt them melt within his body. Then, a moment later, a sun seemed to erupt within him.

A potent extreme strength stirred up rough waves in Lin Ming's spiritual sea. The monstrous waves surged forwards, reaching into the skies.

"What a strong medicinal efficacy, what a good spirit source strength..."

Lin Ming didn't dare to delay. He revolved all of his blood vitality and started to coordinate it with the medicinal efficacy of the kirin fruit leaves in his body to heal his wounds.

The blood vitality in his body began to gush like a flooded river...

After two days and a night, Lin Ming opened his eyes. A brilliant flash of light lit up his pupils; his soul force had reached a new peak yet again.

The injuries he had previously sustained had now completely vanished.

Lin Ming couldn't help but recall the image of that arrogant and scaled Purple Chestnut King. From his heart, a dense killing intent rolled out.

But soon, he immediately dispelled these thoughts. He inspected himself and found it strange upon discovering that there were no changes with his body. The backlash caused by that peculiar energy had been so easily healed?

Thinking about it further didn't bring him any new ideas. Rather, he pulled out the kirin fruit and looked at it.

In two days and a night, this kirin fruit actually managed to manifest two front hooves. As it appeared in Lin Ming's hand, its legs began to rapidly twitch as it tried to escape from his grasp.

"This thing, if it were to fully manifest then wanting to cage it would be difficult… I'll have to completely refine its spiritual wisdom." Lin Ming grabbed the kirin fruit.

Chirp! Chirp!

After being grasped by Lin Ming, the kirin fruit began to panic. Sounds seemed to come from within it and it seemed incomparably terrified.

"This little thing…"

Such a strange and magical kirin fruit left Lin Ming feeling more and more amazed. It was just no different from a little life form. For a time, Lin Ming hesitated in exterminating its mind.

Then, from deep in the cave, the sound of pattering footsteps echoed.

"Who's there?" Lin Ming asked, raising his guard. His muscles tightened and his electric eyes focused on the entrance of the cave.

The cave Lin Ming was in was deep and limitless, with tunnels running in all directions. But for the sounds of footsteps to appear here and at this time, this left Lin Ming bewildered.

Why would there be someone here?

At one of the cave entrances, beneath Lin Ming's eagle-sharp eyes, a timid little girl in a red dress ran out.

This little girl appeared to be around 15-16 years old. She had black hair that fell down like a waterfall and her appearance was exquisite. However, she seemed somewhat dazed. In particular, her eyes attracted the most attention. Her two pupils were profound beyond reasoning, and there seemed to be blood red lights faintly smoldering within them.

At this time, as she looked at Lin Ming, there was clearly a hint of hesitation and dread in her eyes.

As she appeared, she gave off an extremely peculiar feeling as if she were completely in sync with this world, as if she were some being that had emerged from the good fortune of this land.

In Lin Ming's divine sense, she seemed no different from an ordinary stone or a blade of grass.

"D… d-d-don't eat it…" The red-dressed little girl said to Lin Ming.

Her voice was beautiful and lilting, but she spoke slowly and stuttered, as if she struggled to speak each word.

"Who are you?" Lin Ming didn't dare to lower his guard. His eyes remained locked on her body.

He believed that news of him taking the kirin fruit would have already spread out by now. There were likely countless people searching for his whereabouts, but, this little girl was clearly not one of them. It was puzzling just how she managed to show up in this hidden cave.

Lin Ming waved his right hand and extracted a spear. As this spear appeared it quietly trembled, filled with desires of bloodlust.

Seeing the bright spear, the red-dressed girl was scared and pedaled several steps back. She clearly wanted to escape, but as her eyes fell on the kirin fruit in Lin Ming's hand, she hesitated and stopped.

"Y-y-y-you… if you don't eat it, I… c-c-can… give you… something g-g-good." The red-dressed little girl didn't answer Lin Ming's question but was instead concerned for the kirin fruit. Her words seemed to be a little faster than before but she still stuttered as if she wasn't skilled at speaking.

The kirin fruit's small eyes turned towards the red-dressed little girl, a look of affection and excitement within them. It chirped at the little girl as it tried desperately to escape from Lin Ming's grasp and into her embrace.

"I-I-I-I can use this to… t-t-t-trade with you." The red-dressed little girl revealed a worried look as she heard the kirin fruit's cries.

Her hand opened and a dazzling light burst out, revealing a red crystal the size of a soybean.

Lin Ming's eyes focused on this gem. But as this gem appeared in the red-dressed little girl's palm, it melted and became a drop of blood.

Pata! Pata!

As this drop of red liquid appeared, it emitted sound waves that made the heart race, as if it were a beating heart itself.

These fluctuations were mysterious and carried with them a massive soul force. Even Lin Ming could feel his own heart begin to beat in tandem with this red liquid.

“This is…” Lin Ming carefully stared at the drop of red liquid. His intuition told him that this wasn’t blood, but whatever it was, it still contained a titanic life energy as well as spirit source.

A brilliant light burst out from Lin Ming’s eyes, runes shining within them. He wanted to completely understand what this drop of water was.

But this drop of water was deep and infinitely profound. It was wrapped by an enigmatic strength, making it so that Lin Ming couldn’t see through it.

Even so, he could feel that this was a truly terrifying drop of water.

From this drop of water, an incomparably powerful and intensely holy aura gushed out. The spirit source strength contained within it had also reached unfathomable levels.

The value of this water drop was impossible to estimate, but it was undoubtedly a top treasure that stood upon the pinnacle of rarity.

As for whether or not it was more precious than the kirin fruit, Lin Ming wasn’t able to distinguish that with his current eyesight.

“T-t-t-this is spring water… I found… from inside a cave… I… I t-t-took it… and a-a-after that… the spring disappeared. It… should be very precious.” The red-dressed girl hurriedly explained as she feared Lin Ming wouldn’t look at it. She constantly gesticulated with her hand.

“Cave? You mean the Soul Cave?” Lin Ming asked. He naturally remembered the legends. It was said that there was once a spring in the Soul Cave but it had disappeared. Could that have been… the Weeping Blood God Springs?

As Lin Ming recalled these four words his eyebrows flew up. The Weeping Blood God Springs was absolutely the most precious of treasures that could exist in the Soul Cave.

It was said to have condensed the blood of a peerless god king that once lived in times long past. Once, there were even True Divinities who entered the Soul Cave for the Weeping Blood God Springs, but after the springs disappeared, True Divinities naturally wouldn't visit the Soul Cave.

He suddenly had doubts as to who this mysterious red-dressed little girl was. Just who was she? She had appeared from nowhere like a ghost and she even had a treasure from the Weeping Blood God Springs. Moreover, she was clearly familiar with the kirin fruit, and from how things were it seemed that the kirin fruit was intimate with this little girl and the little girl was also concerned about it...

Chapter 1812 – Hidden Treasure

Chapter 1812 – Hidden Treasure

…

…

…

Lin Ming's eyes focused on the red-dressed little girl's bare feet. Even though the path here was covered with jagged rocks, incredibly as she moved she appeared to be walking across the surface of smooth water, completely in tune with her surrounding environment.

"Who are you?"

Lin Ming asked once more. However, the little girl only flushed red. She gripped her fists, not saying anything else.

Lin Ming slightly frowned; he was completely unable to see through this little girl's boundary. She felt like a mortal, but his intuition told him that the truth wasn't so simple. She must possess some sort of mystical ability and he couldn't see what the limits of her strength were.

Lin Ming's silence caused the little girl to tense up. She parted her lips and said, "Is… i-is… it not enough?"

The little girl also felt that the thing she took out wasn't valuable enough. At least, it wasn't enough to satisfy Lin Ming. He still might eat the kirin fruit.

She thought about it for a moment and then said, "I… I-I-I-I… know of a place where treasure is hidden. I can t-t-tell you, but you can't e-e-eat it."

It was clear just how dear the kirin fruit was to her.

“What place with hidden treasure?” Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred.

“I-I-I… can’t say it clearly… if y-y-y-you come with me… you’ll see…” The red-dressed little girl seemed to have not spoken any words for an extremely long period of time. Her words lagged behind her thoughts as if she needed time to consider what they were.

Lin Ming deeply peered at the little girl. With his cautious personality, he shouldn’t go to such an unknown place. But, this little girl really didn’t seem to have any evil intentions at all.

“Lead me to this hidden treasure area. I won’t eat the kirin fruit.”

Upon hearing Lin Ming say he wouldn’t eat the kirin fruit, the red-dressed little girl finally seemed to relax. The kirin fruit also chirped out loud, clearly happy.

The red-dressed little girl brightly smiled as she saw how happy the kirin fruit was. Two deep dimples appeared on her cheeks, making her look lovable.

“G-g-g-great, I will l-l-lead the way.” The little girl vigorously nodded as if she were afraid Lin Ming would back out of his promise.

“No need to hurry. Before we go I’ll absorb that drop of god springs.” Lin Ming said. He looked towards the red-dressed little girl, “Help me stand guard outside so that no one enters here.”

Lin Ming was still vigilant against this mysterious little girl. After all, when he absorbed the drop of god springs his defense would be in a weakened state.

“A… alright.” The red-dressed little girl nodded.

After the little girl walked a distance away, Lin Ming laid down a simple protection enchantment and stepped into it. Then he directly swallowed that drop of god springs.

Soon, Lin Ming was covered in an endless blood light.

Traces of the blood light seeped into his skin, completely enveloping him.

The blood light became increasingly thick, rushing towards Lin Ming more and more as it wrapped him up.

Pata! Pata!

This blood light seemed to form a giant translucent cocoon of blood that beat like a heart.

With every beat, it was like a god king was striking a drum, the sound like a rolling thunderclap.

The cave as well as the entire mountain began to shiver.

Like this, Lin Ming closed up for over 20 hours.

Outside, night fell and then the sun rose yet again. But in the cave, it was utterly dark throughout.

At this time, beams of light shot out from the blood cocoon, slowly tearing it open.

Lin Ming appeared from within, a strange blood strength permeating his body. Countless faint runes shimmered upon his skin, seeming to shine and dim along with his heartbeat.

This bodily phenomenon occurred for some time before disappearing.

“What a great treasure! My soul has become 50% stronger and there is also a great deal of strength I haven’t been able to absorb but was saved in my inner world! Even my boundary has increased… it is close to the middle Holy Lord realm. In fact, if I wanted to I could make a breakthrough right now!”

Lin Ming discovered that there was a great strength rushing through his inner world like a raging river.

The kirin leaves from before as well as this drop of Weeping Blood God Springs had caused a tremendous amount of excess power to be stored within him. Since he couldn't absorb it yet, all he could do was compress this energy within his inner world and slowly absorb it.

With this, it would become increasingly difficult for him to keep suppressing his cultivation so that he didn't make a premature breakthrough.

His cultivation was more than high enough. Right now, what he lacked was time. If he had another 100 years, then that would be ideal!

After absorbing the drop of Weeping Blood God Springs, Lin Ming could faintly feel as if he became more familiar with the surrounding environment. It was like the drop of blood within him was the same as the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

"This sort of familiar feeling… should be because I absorbed that drop of god springs…" Lin Ming suddenly realized.

And at this time, his complexion changed. He felt that the red-dressed little girl had returned.

He waved his hand and a wisp of heavenly tribulation fire flew out from his palm, turning into endless flame runes that slowly settled on his body and turned into a robe.

As for the red-dressed little girl, she was curiously looking at Lin Ming, a dazed look on her face and without any fear or suspicion at all. It was clear she didn't know of the differences between men and women.

"You said there was a hidden treasure somewhere?" Lin Ming asked the red-dressed little girl.

"I-I-I remember…"

The little girl quickly waved her hands. She was ready to go at any time.

Bang!

Lin Ming left his cave and turned into a beam of light as he rapidly flew over the mountains. He followed the red-dressed little girl's instructions and flew towards the hidden treasure area.

As he passed by an underground river that was surging with black waters, he saw a red wild cow galloping through the river, its entire body awash with blazing red flames.

Its entire body sparked with flames. As its hooves struck the ground, the water around it all evaporated due to the high heat and even the river mud was melted into a dark yellow sludge; it was a bizarre sight.

Lin Ming was considerably startled. This soul beast's strength was about as strong as the soul beast he encountered at Limitless God Mountain.

Such a powerful soul beast was actually engaged in battle with someone in the river. The soul beast's opponent was an old man that possessed a terrifying blood vitality and intense soul force. The old man was releasing an endless power of Ice Laws, enough to freeze massive tracts of the river to suppress the cow. On the side of the river, several white-robed youths had set up an array.

"Half-step Empyrean? Or…"

Lin Ming was careful; he didn't arouse the attention of these people. On the Akashic Dream Battlefield, there was an endless number of masters! Those he fought in the Soul Cave had only been a miniscule portion of them. There were also many half-step Empyreans and Empyreans still wandering about.

He continued forwards. Strangely, the red-dressed little girl who was following him had disappeared. But he could clearly feel an intense fluctuation of energy emit from beneath his feet, closely following behind him.

In the Soul Cave, Lin Ming's divine sense was blinded by a strange dark power. It was hard for him to detect what was occurring beneath his feet.

Yet, he was completely aware that the energy fluctuations beneath him were definitely those of the mysterious red-dressed little girl.

Could it be…

At the Soul Cave when he first picked the kirin fruit, a strange energy had rushed into his body, severely wounding him.

This energy, could it have been this red-dressed little girl?

Lin Ming had this idea before. This was because after he took the kirin fruit's leaves to heal himself, the strange energy within him had disappeared, inexplicably vanishing without a trace.

Originally, Lin Ming felt that this strength wasn't simple at all and shouldn't have disappeared so easily.

And what followed right after that was this little girl suddenly appearing from nowhere in his secret cave. This was also a reasonable explanation.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming's heart began to beat faster. If this little girl had any evil intentions when he had been trying to heal himself, he definitely would have suffered some miserable fate.

Luckily, this little girl's thoughts were pure, without any hint of malice.

Just who was she?

And at this time, from the far off distance, a tremendous roar erupted. The nearby mountains shook and beams of essence energy emerged from the far off mountains that pierced through the void.

Lin Ming's thoughts focused. This was definitely a battle between powerhouses. He had to be more careful… after all, any hidden treasure here must be extremely precious and he didn't want to attract droves of people who wanted to come and struggle with him.

This hidden treasure area was located deep in the Soul Cave. Lin Ming cautiously continued forwards. To his amazement, he discovered that there were far more powerhouses in the Soul Cave than when he had first come here.

Finally, Lin Ming came upon a stretch of forest that was covered in a thick mist.

The ancient trees towered high into the air.

Incredibly, each tree was as great as a mountain and he wasn’t able to see the top of them at all. This left Lin Ming whistling in awe at this breathtaking sight.

“Mm?”

Suddenly, Lin Ming discovered that brilliant fireworks had appeared above him.

These fireworks were purple gold in color and exuded a familiar aura. Soon, the fireworks slowly shifted into a face in the void – it was Lin Ming’s own face!

Lin Ming frowned. For something like this to occur now, he already guessed just what had happened.

Like this, Lin Ming’s complexion darkened.

Chapter 1813 – A Grand Killing Feast

Chapter 1813 – A Grand Killing Feast

…

…

…

"It's that boy!"

"That's right, it must be him!"

Lin Ming looked up. Above his head, on the branches of a towering ancient tree, there were several spirit race martial artists standing there. Their scales reflected a dark light.

They had just been climbing upwards towards something that resembled the nest of a giant bird.

And above them were the brilliant fireworks that illuminated Lin Ming's figure.

These fireworks were clearly released by these people.

"Hehe, I never thought that while we were trying to catch the eagle sparrow we would bump into you here. Really, this is what they mean by searching far and wide only to find what you're looking for so close at hand. Be a good little boy and hand over the kirin fruit. If you do we'll let you die a happy death. Even if we can't give you a true death in the Akashic Dream Battlefield, we still have methods to cage you here and make you beg to die!"

A spirit martial artist with blue scales covering his face menacingly shouted at Lin Ming.

Before this, they had already received the news that the Purple Chestnut King had spread everywhere, and they had been mad with envy because of it. As for how strong this human youth was, they had only heard some vague rumors but didn't have a clear understanding.

In particular, they had nothing to be careful about because Lin Ming was a human. To them, Lin Ming was simply a mortal child carrying a piece of precious jade and wandering the streets at night.

Wasn't he just looking to die?

"Human brat, don't think of running away. You are already a mouse that's being searched for by our people in the Soul Cave… once we kill you, not only can we obtain the treasure but we can also receive the bounty reward."

Lin Ming looked at the flames still burning in the skies. They were clearly projecting out a clear signal. Everyone within several hundred miles would see this signal and would rush over here.

He originally came here to take a treasure, and the location of this hidden treasure was somewhere in these ancient woods.

From this spirit youth's words, Lin Ming obtained a great deal of information.

Someone knew he had obtained the kirin fruit and had posted a large bounty on his head in a short period of time. They had even used some sort of method to inform so many people that Lin Ming had the kirin fruit on him. Such methods were likely only possible by the Purple Chestnut King or that heroic spiritas youth.

At this point, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with killing intent. He burst upwards like a tornado, howling towards those several spirit race martial artists. These people were nothing but a disaster – he needed to quickly slay all of them and then go find the treasure.

It was the first time that these spirit race martial artists had seen Lin Ming. They heard he was fierce for a human, but the truth was that in the depths of their hearts, they had looked down on him exactly because he was a human. They didn't believe that Lin Ming was too strong at all.

As they saw this human hurtle towards them, the several spirit martial artists wildly cackled. Glistening blue lights began to flicker between their eyebrows as an intense soul force surged about them.

Light wove together in the skies and shot outwards from the group. Some lights resembled spears, some resembled snakes, and all of them were aimed at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming didn't even take out his spear, instead, he used his fists.

His fist smashed into the void. Air compressed beneath his strike and a wave of iron-hard air shot forwards.

Bang!

The air wave punched out by his fist completely crushed apart the spears and snakes condensed from soul force. Without stopping, the air wave struck a spirit youth.

Seeing his soul projection technique broken so easily and feeling the great strength behind that air wave, the spirit youth wanted to dodge. However, it was already too late.

With a loud ripping sound, the spirit youth was struck by the air wave and blew apart into bits and pieces of ruined blood and flesh.

Without waiting for the other spirit youths to respond, Lin Ming raced upwards like a bolt of lightning. His fists were like the wrath of the heavens, instantly blowing up the remaining spirit youths.

This was a completely one-sided battle.

How could these people compare with Lin Ming's terrifying inside background? Even the stronger Purple Chestnut King was severely wounded after a single punch by Lin Ming, much less these ordinary spirit youths. Moreover, Lin Ming hadn't even been in his peak condition back then.

After slaying these spirit youths, Lin Ming looked up at the fireworks that still lingered in the skies. His eyes were bright, like two stars shining in the skies.

"They posted a bounty on my head? Then let them come… my merit points aren't enough."

Lin Ming received the spirit youths' merit points.

These merit points were considerable. This was because these spirit youths had killed a large number of people and a good portion of their total accumulated merit points was also taken by Lin Ming.

"I need a billion merit points to exchange for the golden page. Then, I'll collect them here. I will set up a grand killing feast and everyone is invited to this party. If I were to look for people to kill then even three years might not be enough time."

As Lin Ming was thinking this, he sat down in the air.

And the area he sat in was right underneath the signaling fireworks. He was overflowing with confidence!

The thick smell of blood still hadn't dispersed from the ancient forest. With rustling sounds, several dark forms suddenly flashed into sight, their eyes sparkling with an electric light.

"Who sent the signal? Mm? Some people died here… people from the spirit race."

"It must be that little human garbage who obtained the kirin fruit. We must hurry. To think that he could kill these spirit martial artists in such a short period of time, mm, he doesn't seem weak at all. But, only like that will things become interesting."

One of the dark figures said as he released a soul force technique.

A mass of soul force was released into the air, where it wildly distorted as if it were trying to reflect several different rhythms. Finally, the soul force condensed into a black arrow that shot straight up above their heads, like a hunting dog that had caught the scent of its prey.

“Someone’s above us?” The person who released the soul technique asked, puzzled. He looked upwards.

Looking from afar, he could see that at the top of an ancient towering tree, on a branch as thick as a water barrel, there was a black-haired human youth indifferently sitting there.

His eyes were as bright as stars and he tranquilly stared down at them from a commanding position.

The space around him trembled as the Laws faintly circulated in it, making him seem incomparably mysterious.

The five people who were tracking this human felt a tingling sensation creep up their scalps. This human had managed to hide his aura so well that they didn’t discover him even when he was above their heads!

However, was this human right in the head? He didn’t run, but instead chose to wait here for them?

Even if he were stronger than the rumors said, as waves upon waves of martial artists arrived, they would absolutely kill him!

“You fellows aren’t slow at all.”

Lin Ming said with approval. He leapt down from the ancient tree and sized up these five people.

All he saw was that these five people had strange scarves wrapped around their heads. He didn’t know what these scarves were made from, but they seemed connected to their bodies.

Countless runes shimmered atop these scarves and many crimson lines ran through them, spreading out just like blood vessels.

Lin Ming had arrived at the Soul World not too long ago, so it could be said he didn't know many things.

"What kind of race are you?" Lin Ming faintly asked. He had a great interest in the mythical ancient races. After all, he had a considerably deep connection to the primal god race, and the primal god race had once been one of these ancient races.

One of the blood scarf people suddenly laughed as if he had heard the funniest joke of all.

"To think you don't know about our blood race. It seems humans are truly dumb and ignorant!"

"They can't be blamed. Many humans are raised in cages or they are just frogs in a well that have never left their universe before, so how would they know about an ancient race like our blood race?"

Several of the blood race martial artists laughed and mocked Lin Ming.

"What a crazy brat. It's incredible that you haven't run by now. Then, let me see just what you're made of!" A short and thin blood race martial artist who resembled a little monkey shouted. He licked his lips and cackled.

"Attack together!"

He roared out. He didn't underestimate Lin Ming and try to kill him alone, but instead commanded his entire group to strike together!

These people were clearly far stronger than those spirit race youths from just now.

Lin Ming's divine sense swept out. Although the Akashic Dream Universe had Law restrictions of all sorts and Lin Ming didn't understand the blood race cultivation system at all, he could vaguely sense the general strength levels of these people. The monkey-like martial artist was the most powerful and obviously the leader of this pack.

"Is he an ordinary Holy Lord or a peak Holy Lord? If these are five peak Holy Lords then their merit point numbers will be quite high." Lin Ming casually thought out loud.

The five blood race martial artists had extremely sharp hearing. As they heard Lin Ming's words, all of them were incensed.

From the start, they could feel the obvious contempt Lin Ming felt towards them. But now that they heard Lin Ming regard them as nothing but merit points, this was just something they would not stand for!

"A lowly human actually dares spout such words to our blood race! Then, show me just how you plan to kill me!"

"Interesting, how interesting! I want to slowly play with you and see just what methods you have."

At this time, Lin Ming's pupils shrank. He discovered the sharp sound of splitting air transmitting from the far off distance; some people were approaching at high speed.

Time was of the essence. First he would cut down these random fellows in front of him.

His inner aura suddenly erupted. Endless flames wrapped around his left arm. It seemed like a True Phoenix was perching on his arm, screeching out loud and exuding endless mystic strength.

An Azure Dragon drilled out from his right hand before turning into dragon armor. Dragon scales wound around his arm and the terrifying aura of a True Dragon spread through the skies, shocking the mind.

The power of a dragon and phoenix collided in space and twisted together. As the phantoms of a dragon and phoenix cried out loud, even space began to shake.

The complexions of the five blood race martial artists changed.

What strength was this? The blood of a God Beast?

The five martial artists had extraordinary experience and were able to recognize the bloodlines within Lin Ming's body.

After all, their cultivations had been suppressed to the Soul Lord realm. Facing the strength of pure blood from a True Dragon and Fire Phoenix, alarm and dread surged in their hearts. How could such pure God Beast blood be present within this human?

Bang!!

A horrifying explosion erupted. Although Lin Ming's boundary was suppressed, the true meaning of a dragon and phoenix rejoicing was still completely displayed beneath Lin Ming's skill.

The power of a phoenix and dragon blended together, multiplying each other's strength.

Endless flames and an incomparably potent strength erupted everywhere. It was like a volcano had exploded.

The five blood race martial artists were forcefully struck by this attack.

Blood shot out from the five blood race martial artists that wove into a net of blood around them. Even so, this blood net was still smashed apart by the boundless strength as if it didn't exist at all.

The figures of the five martial artists were all swept into this titanic strength.

After Lin Ming struck out with this attack, he no longer spared the five blood race martial artists another glance.

His token began to heat up, informing him that his merit points were rising yet again.

This method of gathering merit points – wasn’t it too simple?

Lin Ming closed his eyes and probed the number of merit points he obtained. Every time he killed an enemy, if their original cultivation was one boundary higher, it meant that they would give ten times or more the number of merit points, and this exponentially increased. If so, then if the one he killed was an Empyrean, that would truly be a considerable number of merit points.

Lin Ming put away his token. His deep eyes flashed like lightning in the dark. He had already locked onto the fastest person hurtling towards him in the void.

He could also sense a massive wave of people flying towards him.

It seemed that the kirin fruit was truly a godly treasure; it was able to draw so many people here!

Chapter 1814 – Blood Stains the Forest

Chapter 1814 – Blood Stains the Forest

…

…

…

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Although they were separated through the dense forest by a thousand feet, Lin Ming was still able to rely upon his sense to clearly see each martial artist that was rushing to his location. Most of them were spiritas but there were also a number of races he had never seen before.

In the next moment, a horrifying fluctuation of energy ravaged through the forest. Massive trees cracked apart and shattered. The surrounding dense forest was nearly flattened and all that was left over were rows of large stumps; the towering trees had all been sent flying away!

The newcomers had blown apart the forest. They were afraid Lin Ming would use the forest as cover to escape.

Shua! Shua! Shua!

Instantly, over 20 divine senses locked onto Lin Ming. Those that were able to reach this area did not possess low cultivations.

After all, the rumors said that Lin Ming had suppressed the Purple Chestnut King and was a genius in his own right.

"29 people..."

Lin Ming observed his situation. He drew out the Phoenix Blood Spear. With a keening cry, spear wind recklessly lashed out.

"Just turn into merit points already!"

Without further speaking, Lin Ming shot forwards!

His actions startled the 29 martial artists who had just arrived. What was happening here? They had so many people encircling him, so shouldn't this human be trying to run?

Yet not only had the human waited for them to arrive, but he even said he wanted to turn them into merit points; this was simply ridiculous.

"Attack! Get rid of this madman!"

"Kill him first. As for his treasures, those will belong to whoever has the ability to seize them!"

No one went easy on Lin Ming. Even though Lin Ming was a junior and most of the newcomers were middle aged men or even old men, none of them had the martial arts spirit of fighting one on one. After all, rumors said that Lin Ming could even suppress the Purple Chestnut King.

Piki paka!

Lin Ming emitted crackling sounds from all his joints. Nine stars appeared high in the skies, and three Dao Palaces shined brightly within him. His feet stepped on the ground and he rushed out.

His first target was a middle-aged man who had pushed his way to the front. Lin Ming could feel that this middle-aged man was the strongest of those present. This meant that before this middle-aged man's cultivation was suppressed by the Laws of the Akashic Dream Battlefield, his boundary might have been that of a World King.

The middle-aged man demonically grinned. He grasped a heavy sword and chopped. A dazzling sword light slashed out, tearing through the skies.

“Pathetic human, I’ll chop off your head!”

The middle-aged man shouted out. But in the next moment, thunder and fire wove together into a sea of purple and red in front of him. With a loud rumbling explosion his sword light was swallowed up by the sea of energy and the power of thunder and fire detonated in front of him. He vomited a mouthful of blood and was sent flying away, his body charred completely black.

He had been violently and instantly killed!

“What!?”

The others didn’t even have time to respond. At this moment, Lin Ming swept out the Phoenix Blood Spear, killing in a circle around him. Seven or eight people were brutally killed as their heads were sent soaring into the air, blood erupting from their severed necks like water fountains!

A massive number of merit points flowed into Lin Ming’s token. He felt his body heat up, as if he were stimulated by the intense smell of blood. Killing! Killing to his heart’s content!

Then, Lin Ming realized that more and more people were catching up!

This was because the spirit race martial artist from before had cast out a signal flare, and this signal flare seemed to utilize a marvelous inscription technique. Before it dissipated it rose higher and higher into the air, turning brighter and brighter, catching the attention of more and more people.

This also meant more and more challengers were arriving.

The ruckus Lin Ming had stirred up in the Soul Cave was too great. In addition to the Purple Chestnut King deliberately spreading news of what happened, many people had learned of Lin Ming.

At this time, several dozen people had gathered. As they arrived, they witnessed with their own eyes as Lin Ming's spear totally annihilated everyone around him, cutting off the necks of seven or eight people and causing their blood to drench the world.

They naturally recognized Lin Ming's appearance; he was completely similar to the fireworks in the sky. This meant he was the human that had obtained the kirin fruit.

For a time, all of them were shocked speechless. They unconsciously slowed down, stopping several miles away and not daring to approach.

These people had only come here to adventure and temper themselves. They weren't too strong to begin with and didn't think they could obtain the kirin fruit anyway; they just wanted to join in on the liveliness. And as they arrived, they saw the scene of Lin Ming slaughtering everyone around him.

"That blue-robed old man who just died… isn't that the Blue Cloud Sect's Elder Bai… I remember he had a half-step World King cultivation…"

A martial artist who had just arrived trembled as he spoke, his voice faltering. He had extremely good eyesight and could clearly see that one of the heads that had been soaring into the air was that of the Blue Cloud Sect's Elder Bai. On the planet that the Blue Cloud Sect was located on, Elder Bai was absolutely an overlord of the land!

When Lin Ming had swept out his spear and killed so many people, they had subconsciously thought that he had only slain cannon fodder and useless minions. But now, it seemed that Lin Ming was actually slaying peerless powerhouses!

To Lin Ming, these peerless powerhouses were no different than chickens or dogs. He killed them by the batch.

This was just far too terrifying!

From what they could see, Lin Ming wasn't old at all, and even seemed to be younger than the Purple Chestnut King, so how could he be so strong?

And what was even more incredible was that he was a human.

In the Soul World, the human race that had been suppressed on all sides was synonymous with 'weak'.

"All of you, die."

Lin Ming attacked again and again, his speed as phantasmal as ghosts and gods. The 20 some martial artists that arrived were systematically killed by Lin Ming. Their heads were blown off or their hearts were pierced. Their blood rained down to the earth and their organs flew out!

Some people were scared silly and tried to run away.

However, Lin Ming simply stepped forwards and space shrank beneath his feet, instantly bringing him behind those that were running away. Without expression, he thrust out his spear!

Puff!

His spear pierced through a martial artist's chest, causing blood to fly out. Out of the 29 people, 22 of them had been killed already!

The remaining seven had ashen complexions. They all used their best techniques to flee this execution ground.

But at this time, a boundless force field covered the surrounding space, sealing all seven people within.

This was the grandmist force field.

The star-heavy grandmist energy immediately locked down their movements.

“Damn it all!”

“No!”

The seven people madly roared out. They attacked the grandmist space with everything they had, but all of their efforts failed.

They watched as Lin Ming’s spear light was soon about to swallow them all up.

“Stop!”

At this time, someone shouted out loud as more and more martial artists arrived. Of these people, some shared the same types of robes that some of the seven soon-to-die martial artists wore. It was clear they originated from the same sect.

However, Lin Ming remained indifferent, completely disregarding this shout.

The Phoenix Blood Spear slashed out.

With a loud slicing sound, blood shot out. After Lin Ming swept out his spear, the seven people had all been cut in half at the waist.

“How vile!”

The dozen plus people who just arrived had uncertain and gloomy expressions. They hadn’t figured out just what had happened yet, but as they looked at the scene around them they could see that Lin Ming had already killed many people!

Many of the dead had torn up corpses, their blood flowing out in streams.

Lin Ming’s head immediately swiveled like a hawk spotting its prey, locking onto those people who had shouted out for him to stop just now.

As his eyes blazed at them, the courage of these people nearly broke apart. Just what kind of eyes were these? The killing intent and hostility gushing out from them was terrifying to behold, as if they were the eyes of a people-eating demon.

"We... should..."

Several of these dozen plus people already formed thoughts of drawing back and escaping. But at this time, Lin Ming was like a death reaper hunting the night. He stepped forwards, rushing towards these newcomers on his own initiative!

"It's too late! Attack!"

The dozen plus people were shocked. They all drew their weapons.

However, what they didn't notice was that just several miles away, those people that were too scared to do anything were looking at them with fear and pity in their eyes.

In the opinion of these distant people, these dozen plus newcomers were dead because they hadn't been here to see just how brutal Lin Ming had been in his actions, or how impossibly fierce he was. If gods stepped in his way he would kill gods, if buddhas blocked his path he would cut down buddhas!

The Blue Cloud Sect's Elder Bai was a half-step World King, and yet he had died no differently than some chicken, instantly killed where he had stood!

This was a horrifying demon. Anyone that dared to look down upon him with disdain just because he was a human would be killed until they couldn't die anymore.

It could be said that the moment those dozen plus people had shouted out 'stop', their destiny had been sealed – they would undoubtedly die!

....

"Junior-apprentice Sister, there seem to be some signaling fireworks in the distance..."

On a vast grassland, a troop of several hundred people was crossing over mountains and rivers. After experiencing a war that had lasted for several months already, they were all exhausted.

These people all wore similar icy blue robes – they came from Zenith Palace.

Zenith Palace was only a World King influence and because their World Kings were far too old, it was impossible for them to make another breakthrough in their lifetimes. Thus, they didn’t enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

The fiercest martial artists Zenith Palace were able to send to the Akashic Dream Battlefield were only several half-step World Kings. Thus, the disciples of Zenith Palace were aware of their own limits and didn’t think about trying to wander their way into a danger zone like the Soul Cave.

They knew that with the abilities of Zenith Palace, entering such a place meant they would be eaten up without any bones remaining.

Chapter 1815 – Kill Them All

Chapter 1815 – Kill Them All

…

…

…

Zenith Palace had extremely clear goals. The reason they came to the Akashic Dream Battlefield was to hunt down the trial challengers from some smaller influences and gather merit points so they could exchange them for sect rewards later.

Of course, if Zenith Palace obtained a high number of merit points then that would also be proof of their strength. At that time, Empyrean Heavencore would naturally bestow rewards upon them.

This was their final goal.

Now, after passing through several months of battle, Zenith Palace had already lost 40% of their disciples.

There were still more than two years remaining until this session of the Akashic Dream Battlefield ended and yet they had lost 40% of their disciples. This caused the Zenith Vice Palace Master to have a gloomy complexion for the last several days.

Their luck had been poor. As soon as they entered the Akashic Dream Battlefield they had run into several formidable opponents, and had suffered serious losses in the massive battles that occurred.

Without a choice, the Zenith Vice Palace Master was forced to divide the remaining sub 6000 disciples into groups depending on their strength. The strongest disciples were taken out and put together to form an elite squad. Like this, they wouldn't be burdened and their combat efficiency would also be higher.

Now, this squad of around a hundred people consisted of the outstanding elites from Zenith Palace. This included the Vice Palace Master, Jaderiver, Yi Fan, and many others.

Yi Fan was somber. Zenith Palace had met so many powerful enemies and lost so many disciples. To him, the reason they suffered so much must have been because Lin Ming had betrayed them and given out their information.

His speculations were all baseless, but the truth was that he didn't need proof nor did he need to find out whether or not this was truly Lin Ming's fault.

This was because Lin Ming had once beaten up Yi Fan under the gaze of everyone and this caused Yi Fan to hate Lin Ming to the core. Thus, he didn't mind taking advantage of this moment to make sure Lin Ming's name was pushed into the gutter.

Moreover, Lin Ming had quietly separated from the main group as soon as he had entered the Akashic Dream Battlefield and hadn't been seen since. This caused many people to suspect that Lin Ming was actually the 'spy'.

Lin Ming appearing at Zenith Palace was strange to begin with and he also came from some unknown origin. Above all, he was a human, someone that the spiritas would never consider one of their own!

For these past days, Yi Fan had constantly attacked Lin Ming. Due to this, Jaderiver also appeared ill. She was the one who had brought Lin Ming into Zenith Palace, so all of these accusations were the same as saying she had brought a traitor into their ranks.

Even so, Lin Ming's actions inevitably aroused Jaderiver's suspicions and she didn't have any energy or rationale to explain them.

In this situation, they continued passing through the barren mountains and rivers. The small influence that was Zenith Palace, who didn't know much of what was happening right now, suddenly saw the brilliant fireworks that stained the skies.

By the time they saw the fireworks, the fireworks had already risen up very high into the air and had spread far and wide. Anyone could make out that these fireworks were in the design of a person's face. As for who this face belonged to, they weren't able to immediately distinguish.

“What is happening up there? Should we go take a look?”

A disciple suddenly proposed.

Jaderiver frowned. She didn't want to cause any problems, but as she looked at the face in the far off fireworks, a familiar feeling came to her.

“How come this face looks a little like... Lin Muk?”

Jaderiver muttered to herself with doubts in her heart.

The Vice Palace Master shook his head, “It should only be a coincidence that they look alike. There is no reason that Lin Muk would have someone cast a signal flare into the sky because of him. This sort of signal flare is activated with inscription techniques and it is considerably difficult to create as well as prohibitively expensive. The signal can spread to a wide range and the one launching it should be someone from a large influence. As for the person depicted by the signal flare, it should be one of their most wanted criminals...”

The Vice Palace Master explained. In his opinion, if a large influence were to place a bounty on someone and in this manner, that person was likely some extraordinary figure. No one in the ranks of their Zenith Palace was capable of receiving such treatment.

“Bounty? Now that Vice Palace Master says that, I actually recall something. Just several days ago, the spirit race was issuing out news that they had placed a bounty on someone, and this person seemed to have stolen some sort of precious spirit medicine from the Soul Cave and caused an uproar in the Akashic Dream Battlefield.”

Although Zenith Palace had been engaging in guerrilla warfare in the wild mountains and plains for these past several months, because they had many people there were always some disciples that managed to obtain news passing through the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

“Oh? Precious spirit medicine…”

The Vice Palace Master’s thoughts stirred. He glanced at the other high level figures from Zenith Palace and then finally said, “Let’s go take a look from afar and see what the situation is like. If there is any danger then we’ll immediately leave.”

In the Akashic Dream Battlefield, many people had the same idea as Zenith Palace.

Their total war strength was weak so it was impossible for them to even think of obtaining some top spirit medicine that could tempt an Empyrean or even a True Divinity.

They only wanted to join in on the fun and see just what was happening.

Of course, there were also some people hoping to come and pick up some easy advantages. They didn’t think they could obtain these precious spirit medicines, but if they ran into any corpses of powerhouses they would be satisfied with sifting through them.

Thus, underneath the incitement of the great fireworks in the sky, more and more martial artists arrived at the razed forest area.

These people only stood at a distance, not daring to go forwards.

And at this time, in a giant circle that everyone was standing on the side of, the center was filled with countless scattered bodies.

Every corpse was mutilated and torn apart; their deaths had been miserable.

Because there were too many martial artists that had come, the corpses formed a thick layer over the ground!

Their blood had gathered into flowing streams. As for Lin Ming, he grasped his spear and floated in the air above the pile of corpses. Killing intent surged out from his body, making him seem like an unrivalled asura!

His merit points had already reached 10 billion!

Of course, these merit points had to be divided by his age. In truth, he had less than a hundred million. With this amount he couldn't even exchange for a tenth of the golden page.

From this alone it could be seen how difficult it was to obtain a golden page!

Woosh!

At this time, Lin Ming hurtled forwards. He rushed in a direction and swung his spear. Spear light swept out and a divine brilliance radiated into the skies. Several heads immediately rolled to the ground!

"You!!"

The companions of these dead people were enraged. They had originally come to steal the precious spirit medicine, but the Lin Ming in their eyes was far too ferocious; they didn't dare to attack him. They only watched from a far off distance as spectators, but even so they never imagined that they would be sucked into this mess!

"Why do you kill us?!"

Someone angrily shouted, unable to do anything to Lin Ming.

"Those who kill should expect to be killed. You cannot hide your killing intent so don't bother making excuses about your intentions!"

As Lin Ming spoke, the grandmist force field came shrouding down. The entire group fell to the ground, completely trapped in this force field!

For a time, blood red light flashed in the air as howls and screams filled the force field. No one was able to contend with Lin Ming!

This wasn’t even a battle but a massacre. The disparity was too great!

The surrounding martial artists saw the bloody lights flashing in the force field and felt a cold chill crawl down their backs. They had all heard Lin Ming speak. Lin Ming had sensed that those people had thoughts of killing him, thus he attacked them.

This was what he meant when he said those who kill should expect to be killed.

In other words, even though Lin Ming was engaged in a titanic battle that had continued for a long time, his sense had already thoroughly locked onto everyone nearby. None of their movements had escaped his eyes!

Just how terrifying was that!?

“Run!”

Some people who held killing intent towards Lin Ming immediately began to run away. Their confidence had utterly collapsed!

But at this time, Lin Ming flicked his fingers. Spear lights shot out and a massive number of martial artists were pierced to death!

This moment had become their lives’ most unforgettable scene!

They had encountered a demon, a demon who they had no strength to resist!

A tremendous number of merit points merged into Lin Ming’s token. Lin Ming felt the token in his inner world heat up, as if it would start to combust on its own.

This was a situation that rarely appeared in the past, where one's merit points increased so dramatically and rapidly!

It had to be known that the people Lin Ming killed were not weak. Besides the merit points that they had themselves, they also had merit points they plundered after killing others.

Now, all of their points belonged to Lin Ming.

At this time, from outside the completely unrecognizable jungle, the sound of rustling footsteps drew close.

A hundred plus martial artists were rapidly making their way here.

In this area, many influences had gathered.

But, this squad of martial artists wasn't worthy of attention at all. The size of their group was small and there weren't any masters in their ranks. All they had were several half-step World Kings and peak Holy Lords to stand out.

As for the others, a great number of them weren't even at the Holy Lord realm, but just the Soul Lord realm.

A Soul Lord realm martial artist showed their true strength in the Akashic Dream Battlefield, where one's cultivation was restricted to the Soul Lord realm. Because of this, the strength they displayed was similar to what it was in the real world. Without the increase in their strength brought about by their comprehension of Laws and cultivation methods, they simply didn't possess much combat strength here.

As this squad appeared, Lin Ming felt them approach. He looked towards them with surprise.

This was because he had recognized several familiar people. This squad was the ‘top’ squad of Zenith Palace and had gathered all of their elites. Lin Ming naturally remembered who they were.

As Lin Ming glanced at them, the martial artists from Zenith Palace were all stunned.

Jaderiver, Yi Fan, the Vice Palace Master, as well as the several Zenith Palace Elders, all of them stared back at Lin Ming with eyes as wide as full moons. They froze where they were, completely unable to respond to what they saw.

Wasn’t this… Lin Muk!? It was really him!

Chapter 1816 – Brilliant Fireworks

Chapter 1816 – Brilliant Fireworks

…

…

…

The many disciples of Zenith Palace hadn't responded to what they saw yet.

But at the next moment, a thick smell of blood flooded their senses.

Lin Ming floated in the void. Beneath his feet, a massive pile of corpses was stacked up in thick layers!

Blood, torn flesh, dismembered corpses, this was an indescribably ghastly scene.

This was…

Jaderiver froze.

Beside her, Yi Fan had also paled. The many Elders of Zenith Palace were panic-stricken; they didn't know just how this had happened.

Jaderiver's wide eyes stared at the blood still dripping down Lin Ming's spear, unable to find the words to say.

All of these people, had they been killed by Lin Muk?

From these dead martial artists she was able to feel a strong force field. This was because those that had died had been too strong in life, and after dying, their strength had gathered together instead of dispersing.

Yet such a group of powerhouses was piled up like a heap of dead dogs!

Lin Ming didn't greet those people from Zenith Palace. Zenith Palace had only been a small springboard he used when he first came to the Soul World in order to obtain information on Sheng Mei and enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield. He had deliberately distanced himself from Zenith Palace because of this. Moreover, right now he had caused too great a stir in the Akashic Dream Battlefield. If others knew about his connections to Zenith Palace, then a World King influence like them wouldn't be able to suffer the consequences.

Lin Ming fell on the ground and swept out his divine sense. He found a spirit race martial artist and then reached down to grab a spatial ring from their finger.

People looked at Lin Ming, unsure what he was trying to do.

With such formidable strength, he likely had plenty of lucky chances and treasures. But by all reason, he shouldn't be interested in the wealth within a spirit race martial artist's spatial ring.

Lin Ming probed the ring. After several breaths of time, he found some inscription symbols from within it.

Lin Ming scanned these inscription symbols and soon understood how to use them.

Everyone was dumbfounded. Were these inscription symbols so special? Why would this death god care about them?

And at this time, Lin Ming suddenly flung out his hand and the inscription symbols flew into the air. Not just that, but Lin Ming had also flooded them with his true essence as well as fusing the Asura Road's divine runic arts into them, making them even more potent than before.

With a loud explosive sound, the inscription symbols completely exploded. In the next instant, a mind-boggling sight occurred.

These inscription symbols recklessly released dazzling fireworks into the skies, all of them brilliantly burning as they gathered into an image of Lin Ming.

With the strength of several inscription symbols gathered together as well as Lin Ming's strength flowing through them, this caused the image of Lin Ming to be dozens of times larger than before and higher than before. It was absolutely an eye-catching sight!

Everyone watching felt their jaws drop, unable to say anything.

These were the signal flares used by the spirit race martial artists that had been chasing Lin Ming.

The previous signal flare had already burnt away by now and the fireworks had dimmed down. Thus, Lin Ming had decided to cast more up for another round!

And these were even more brilliant than before!

For a time, Lin Ming's appearance reappeared in the dark skies. His dashing and heroic face, his sharp and fierce aura, it was like he was taunting all the elites of the world!

What was he trying to do?

He wasn't satisfied with these numbers of people and wanted to kill more, to kill to his heart's content!

Lin Ming's intentions were now clear to everyone. He wanted to tell all the nearby martial artists that he was waiting here for them. No matter how many people came, he would kill that many!

Was he some inexhaustible killing puppet? He had slain so many people and battled for such a long time, and yet he wasn't tired at all?

The people from Zenith Palace were already completely dazed. This scene also made them understand what had happened.

Before, Jaderiver thought that the image formed from fireworks in the sky looked similar to Lin Ming.

This meant that Lin Ming was the person who the spirit race had placed a bounty on. In the Soul Cave, he had obtained a precious spirit medicine that could even tempt the heart of a True Divinity. Moreover, not only was he not captured, but now he was standing here not running, waiting for people to come hunt him down so he could kill them all one at a time and gain merit points while doing so!

This method was simply frightening!

And in the next moment, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He looked into the distant horizon.

Through the layers of bloody mist and red clouds in the skies, Lin Ming could clearly see what was happening in the distance.

Two groups were rapidly approaching.

The group in front was led by a tall and sturdy spirit race martial artist. This martial artist was covered in purple scales from head to toe.

He was a king of the spirit race's younger generation – the Purple Chestnut King.

And not too far away from him was the heroic spiritas youth.

Accompanying them were masters of their various influences, all of them hurtling towards Lin Ming at a breakneck pace. And amongst these masters were many Great World Kings!

As Lin Ming saw these two groups of people, he viciously smiled. He had been waiting for such a long time and now two big fish were finally approaching the bat.

They must have a great deal of merit points.

"Brat, you're dead!"

After the Purple Chestnut King received the signal, he didn't immediately chase after Lin Ming. Rather, he sent his own men after Lin Ming while he gathered powerhouses from his people.

He knew just how strong Lin Ming was. After that defeat at Limitless God Mountain, some martial artists had spread out news about his strength so he had risen to fame.

Indeed, it was true that many people learned Lin Ming had obtained the kirin fruit. At the same time, the Purple Chestnut King's defeat had been vividly recounted.

The Purple Chestnut King was an extremely arrogant individual. He already disliked the spiritas martial artists of the Soul World, and now with these people endlessly mocking him, it left him choking on his rage.

Thus, this time, he had to kill Lin Ming in order to recover some of his honor.

Even if he had to win in a disgraceful manner by relying on the strength of his sect, he couldn't care too much about this. He fully realized that he wasn't Lin Ming's opponent.

"Elder Feng, in a bit make sure you all attack with everything you have. This brat is not easy to deal with!"

The Purple Chestnut King growled, his chest burning with hate.

"Your Highness, rest assured we will not underestimate the enemy!"

This Elder Feng was one of the Great World Kings of the spirits, moreover he was a peak existence amongst Great World Kings.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

The Purple Chestnut King had caught up and had brought five Great World Kings along with him, as well as a good number of ordinary World Kings. In addition, many Holy Lord followers were right behind them.

This was a terrifying force.

And not too far behind the Purple Chestnut King, the heroic spiritas youth had also brought a formidable force. His squad consisted of four Great World Kings and seven or eight ordinary World Kings.

It had to be known that these two martial artists originated from peak Empyrean level influences. The direct disciples of an Empyrean influence would mostly reach the World King level.

As these two terrifying teams arrived, their aura caged in the entire audience, leaving everyone shocked.

When had the martial artists from small influences ever experienced such a scene?

Even though these two teams had their cultivations suppressed, the auras emanating from their bodies were still those of top powerhouses. As these auras exuded out into the world, it left the low level martial artists reeling.

Without a doubt, any single one of these newcomers could easily eliminate one of the weaker sects present without any chance of revolt.

This was the same for Zenith Palace.

And all of these people had come for Lin Ming!

The disparity in these lineups – wasn't it just too great?

At this time, Lin Ming was standing atop the wind. His body wasn't stained with too much blood, and he seemed rather relaxed. Behind him, an inexplicable gray strength was gathering.

The Purple Chestnut King wanted to find a hint of fear on Lin Ming's face but he was left disappointed. Lin Ming was a shard of ice, completely unmoved by what was happening around him.

This caused the Purple Chestnut King to become even gloomier. He didn’t think Lin Ming was a fool. In other words, if Lin Ming was calm, then Lin Ming must be far stronger than he originally anticipated!

Lin Ming was already confident in his skills to the point where he completely disregarded a circle of Great World King level powerhouses besieging him!

“Assemble!”

The Purple Chestnut King roared.

The five spirit race Great World Kings didn’t show off. Facing this junior that was countless years younger than them, they began to stand with the Purple Chestnut King, lining up shoulder to shoulder.

Soul force surged out like rivers from their bodies, forming into a massive phantom giant made of soul force.

This phantom was almost large enough to reach the heavens and contained an incredible amount of soul force.

“Human boy, go die!”

As the array formation finished gathering, the Purple Chestnut King shouted out loud. The massive phantom giant they summoned was one of the supernatural powers of their spirit race.

They could gather the soul force of several people together to multiply their strength and form an incomparably formidable soul form.

This giant soul form sent its mountain-like palms crashing down upon Lin Ming.

As Lin Ming saw this, he instantly formed millions of seals.

The gray strength behind him suddenly rose up. Countless runes sparkled. Between the heavens and earth, they formed a three-headed and six-armed figure, a titanic asura warrior phantom.

This asura warrior was slowly pushing a massive wheel.

The wheel had countless howling demons and weeping ghosts. Their cries and hisses were strange and chilling.

Lin Ming glared at the Purple Chestnut King, his slaughter energy soaring to the heavens.

In the void, two titanic figures violently struck each other.

This strike was astonishing.

The giant demon wheel pushed by the asura warrior began to grind down on the soul form. Black energy filled the air, emitting a humming sound. The void shivered and the earth shook; the potential behind their strikes was extraordinary.

As for that soul form, its fists rained down like a storm. Every time they crashed down it was like a falling mountain wrapped in soul force, with enough momentum to break through a world. Everyone was bewildered upon seeing this.

Rumble rumble rumble –

Countless runes shimmered like stars. They were struck and then annihilated.

A storm of energy spread out in all directions, cutting massive fissures into the earth.

Some spectators standing relatively close were swept up by the storm, many of them crying out in pain and misery as they were sent tumbling away.

But as the fight continued, the Purple Chestnut King's fierce expression began to fade away, instead replaced by wide eyes of disbelief.

The complexions of the five Great World Kings with him also changed. They understood just how powerful the soul form giant they summoned was. In the past, they had even used it to block a 50% strength attack from a sovereign of the spirit race. Yet now, their soul form giant was equally matched by this strange asura warrior in front of them?

Wait, something was wrong! Their soul form giant was actually disintegrating!

Five spirit race Great World Kings had joined together with the Purple Chestnut King in a formation, and yet they were being suppressed by a single Lin Ming. The asura phantom that Lin Ming summoned was also more formidable than that soul form!

Chapter 1817 – Killing the World Kings

Chapter 1817 – Killing the World Kings

…

…

…

Although the spirit race's soul body was overbearingly tyrannical, it was still a manifestation of soul force. Moreover, when truly compared, it wasn't as perfect or as powerful as the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel.

The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel that Lin Ming displayed was the inheritance of the Asura Road Master, someone who had surpassed the Great Dao Laws of the 33 Heavens, someone who had possessed the ability to destroy and create worlds. To control the life and death of myriad demons was in a sense a new boundary far from anything else. Within the karmic wheel was the profound true meaning of samsara and also an inherent restraint on soul force.

In terms of background of soul techniques, this soul form manifestation simply could not compare with the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel.

After the soul force was forcefully pushed back by the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel being pushed by the asura warrior, its entire body began to shake.

With every crushing impact, tumbling waves of the true meaning of samsara as well as those endless demons and ghosts began to swallow up the soul form manifestation.

By the time the Purple Chestnut King and the others discovered something was wrong, over half of the mountain-sized soul form's body had been sucked up.

“Just what are you all still watching for!? Hurry up and attack!”

The Purple Chestnut King shouted out at the heroic spiritas youth.

Originally, the heroic spirit youth had thoughts of allowing two tigers to fight on the mountain. He wanted to have the Purple Chestnut King’s group engage Lin Ming in a bitter life or death battle and then benefit from their fallout.

But now, as he saw the Purple Chestnut King and the others soon about to be exterminated by Lin Ming, he realized his previous ideas had been far too naïve. The Purple Chestnut King and his followers were not Lin Ming’s match at all.

“Attack!”

The heroic spiritas youth cried out. At this time, the four Great World Kings at his side as well as eight ordinary World Kings all fired towards Lin Ming!

And at this time, Lin Ming was fighting with the soul form created by the Purple Chestnut King’s squad. He wasn’t able to defend, otherwise the soul form manifestation would roll over him instead.

“This is our chance!”

The four spiritas Great World Kings’ eyes blazed with a cold light, their killing intent surging out.

Their attacks included blinding sword lights, overwhelming waves of freezing ice, phantoms of ancient beasts, and even clouds of endless energy. Their barrage contained a variety of Laws that were soon about to sweep over Lin Ming!

And even now, Lin Ming didn’t move at all. This caused others to think that he would die in the next moment.

But then, something startling occurred!

From within Lin Ming's inner world there was the sound of a loud thunderclap. Two forms rushed out from his inner world!

Rumble rumble rumble!

A horrifying explosive noise shook the void. These two forms were like unrivalled victors, unstoppable!

One figure wore black clothes and grasped a gold spear. The other figure wore purple clothes and held a wheel in his hands. However, both of them had an appearance completely similar to Lin Ming's.

Avatars!?

In a situation where Lin Ming's true body had no ability to defend himself right now, he still had two avatars!

In a moment, the joint attack of the four Great World Kings was torn apart by Lin Ming's two avatars!

The black-clothed Lin Ming was like a peerless Asura, his speed climbing to the extreme. Not just that, but he simply ignored the attacks of the four Great World Kings. As those waves of cold ice, energy clouds, and sword lights struck this black-clothed Lin Ming's body, all of them did nothing at all, not even able to leave behind a scar.

Even if this black-clothed Lin Ming didn't use a spear, his body itself was an unequalled divine weapon. Now, with endless divine light radiating from his body, he hurtled towards the spiritas Great World Kings.

How could this avatar be so strong!? Its body was as hard as a divine weapon, just how could anyone fight it!?

Kacha!

The purple gold spear swept out and a Great World King wildly gushed blood!

The black-clothed Lin Ming was the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone that was personally refined by the Asura Road Master. Its mortal bodily strength was even greater than Lin Ming's. A Great World King that had their cultivation suppressed to the Soul Lord realm simply wasn't able to stop this avatar's onslaught.

As for the purple-clothed Lin Ming, he was even stranger. He was the Soul Springs Divine Embryo and an incarnation of source soul force that possessed a power that was the nemesis of divine souls. As soon as this Lin Ming attacked, he was able to directly strike at a martial artist's spiritual sea. To a spiritas martial artist, the spiritual sea was the foundation of their martial arts.

Peng!

Another Great World King was grievously wounded. His face turned paper white and he began bleeding from his head. His spiritual sea had clearly suffered catastrophic damage.

And at this time, a voice shouted out –

"Break!"

Lin Ming's true body suddenly rose up. The mountain-sized asura warrior phantom also appeared behind him.

With a punch that carried a staggering strength of over 10 billion jins, the asura warrior smashed the central region of the soul form.

The spirit race's soul form had mostly dissipated already. Now, it was unable to withstand Lin Ming's momentous strike.

Bang!

With a deafening explosion, the soul force runes that dotted the soul form manifestation began to break apart and disintegrate. A pitch black soul force spread out like coils of snakes.

The Purple Chestnut King and the others had merged their spirits into a soul form manifestation.

Now that the soul form exploded, all of them received a dangerous backlash. They cried out in pain and spat out a mouthful of blood as they were sent flying dozens of feet away.

At the same time, the demon ghosts within the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel began to shimmer. The pitch black rays of soul force and the dissipating soul form manifestation were recklessly absorbed by the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel grew as it continued pushing towards the Purple Chestnut King and the five Great World Kings.

The Purple Chestnut King was panic-stricken. Suddenly, he felt just how indescribably terrifying that wheel with endless demons and ghosts howling within was. He had been wounded and his soul force was wildly surging within his body. Right now, he felt as if the massive black wheel pressing down towards him was like an endless vortex; he simply didn't know how to resist it.

The other five Great World Kings also had agitated soul force. Facing the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel that had swallowed up their soul form manifestation, all five of them cried out in misery.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Three Great World Kings were crushed by the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, dying on the spot!

The other two also suffered near-fatal wounds!

Then, Lin Ming used the Space Laws. With a single step, he nearly teleported right next to the Purple Chestnut King.

The Purple Chestnut King's complexion paled and his hairs stood on end.

"You..."

A deep growl came from his throat. There was no longer any time for words – Lin Ming's Phoenix Blood Spear had already pierced through his throat!

Puff!

The spear tore through his throat and spine before leaving from the back of the neck.

The Purple Chestnut King wanted to spit out his last words, but he had been silenced. His two wide eyes were filled with disbelief.

Lin Ming's movements were extremely fast. He waved his spear and cut off the Purple Chestnut King's head. The entire process flowed as smoothly as a spring stream.

It was only when Lin Ming left through the void did blood start erupting from the Purple Chestnut King's head, blowing up over 10 feet high into the sky.

The many martial artists present were dumbfounded upon seeing this. Among the spirit race's royal family, the Purple Chestnut King had been the strongest of the younger generation. Yet, this strong individual had been slain by Lin Ming after having been on the Akashic Dream Battlefield for just several months.

And now, with a loud rumbling sound, the grandmist force field came shrouding down, caging in the surrounding space.

From the two great influences, only six Great World Kings were left. Whether they were heavily injured or just suffered minor scratches, they, along with the dozen plus ordinary World Kings, were covered in the force field.

Lin Ming had himself but also possessed two avatars. They guarded three directions, surrounded by World Kings.

He would wipe away all of these people!

As the World Kings realized this, all of their complexions darkened.

This was a hunt that Lin Ming was familiar with, as well as a massacre!

As for them, they were Lin Ming's prey!

Huala!

Behind Lin Ming, the black asura phantom appeared once more. The two great wheels in its hands were like the scythe of a death god, ready to harvest the lives of others.

Blood splashed out. No one could contend with Lin Ming!

The disparity was just far too great.

On this battlefield where everyone's cultivation was set to the same level, a Great World King was nothing at all!

There was no chance anyone could escape through a stroke of luck. When the nine Great World Kings joined forces, they still hadn't been able to kill Lin Ming. Rather, they were killed by him instead.

One by one, Great World Kings perished. Even the heroic spirit youth had his heart pierced by Lin Ming's spear and was instantly killed.

This heroic spiritas youth as well as the Purple Chestnut King both provided Lin Ming with many merit points. It seemed that the two of them had already killed a great number of trial challengers.

The merit points of the Purple Chestnut King and the heroic spiritas youth had all been taken away from other trial challengers. Now, all of it was returned to Lin Ming.

The token within Lin Ming's inner world seemed to burn up in a blaze of flames. The growth of merit points within had already reached a terrifying degree.

Then, the last World King was slaughtered by Lin Ming. Blood rained down to the ground. The grandmist force field gradually faded away as Lin Ming began gathering his scattered aura.

The air was filled with the thick scent of blood.

Corpses littered the ground, and now over 20 more of them had been added to the mix. Compared to the many martial artists that Lin Ming had killed before, adding in another 20 some wasn't considered much at all. However, these people all had abnormal identities.

Nine Great World Kings, two top geniuses of peak Empyrean influences, as well as over a dozen ordinary World Kings, all of them had been slain by Lin Ming!

From all over the Akashic Dream Battlefield, more and more people began catching up to watch what was happening. As for those that were drawn in by the signal flare, they were utterly shocked, unable to say any words.

Too strong! Strong to the point of frightening others!

Before this, some people wondered if Lin Ming had sufficient energy to continue. But now, it seemed that this Lin Ming was actually a vicious beast in human form. His endurance and power had reached an inconceivable boundary.

Some people suspected that he was restoring his strength even as he fought. In this kind of battle, the amount of energy he consumed was about the same as the speed with which he regenerated.

If this continued, he would be able to fight without end.

Some figures that were hidden in the pitch black forest began to quietly sneak away. They were also people that had once thought of killing Lin Ming.

But, this human only needed to face them to make them feel an indescribably terrifying pressure push down on them. As for attacking him now, no one was willing to do something so ridiculous.

For a time, over 10,000 people surrounded this battlefield. But, they all simply looked at Lin Ming; no one wanted to fight him.

“This person… is he really the Lin Muk we rescued?”

The Zenith Vice Palace Master looked at Jaderiver. At this moment, Jaderiver’s mind was drawing a blank. Why would he suddenly appear next to their Zenith Palace? This human youth could possess a horrifying background, have experienced massive lucky chances, or perhaps even be an incomparably monstrous genius when it came to talent.

Or, perhaps he possessed all three!

But no matter what, there was one thing they were certain of. It was impossible for such a genius to appear from nowhere. As he was rising, he should have caught the attention of countless individuals with his halo of excellence. But as it were, none of them had heard of him before!

They feared that maybe even Soul Empress Sheng Mei might not be much stronger than this Lin Muk.

It was hard to imagine that he was actually human.

If he appeared at Zenith Palace, there must have been some unknown reason for it!

Chapter 1818 – Empyrean Myriad Ghost

Chapter 1818 – Empyrean Myriad Ghost

…

…

…

"After killing these Great World Kings my merit points have risen. After my age is factored in, I still have more than 300 million!"

Lin Ming realized as he looked at his token.

In the Akashic Dream Battlefield, there was far too great a difference between killing the weaklings and killing Great World Kings.

It could be said that the weaklings were almost negligible.

Only killing these peerless powerhouses held any significance.

"300 million still isn't enough… I'm missing 700 million. If I want to exchange for the golden page, I still have a lot of work to do."

Lin Ming played with the token in his hand. This ordinary token was now as hot as flames. Many martial artists were staring at it, their hearts filled with longing.

If they could kill Lin Ming then they could obtain not only the kirin fruit but also a massive number of merit points. This was far too tempting an offer. However, no one dared to attack. In fact, when Lin Ming's gaze swept over them they all retreated together, none of them possessing the courage to face Lin Ming directly.

Those from Zenith Palace were also filled with fear and awe. The points in Lin Ming's token might be far more than the total amount that Zenith Palace had earned for the last several tens of thousands of years.

Before, Empyrean Heavencore had published a list of resources that points could be exchanged for. They wondered whether or not Lin Ming's merit points were considered to also be Zenith Palace's. If so...

As the Zenith Palace Elders realized this, they looked at each other with a strange light in their eyes. Empyrean Heavencore, as an Empyrean level character, would keep true to his word, especially one that he publicly made. And if Lin Ming's merit points could truly be exchanged for resources, then perhaps Empyrean Heavencore would be bankrupted...

"There's not many powerhouses left..."

Lin Ming scanned the strength of the remaining people and discovered only a few auras that were worthy of his attention.

Moreover, these remaining powerhouses were considerably far from Lin Ming. They were all standing at carefully chosen locations, ready to escape at any moment.

After all, these people had come to the Akashic Dream Battlefield to freely slaughter to begin with. While they were all hunters, at the same time they were also prey.

In a situation where they knew they were inferior to Lin Ming, they certainly didn't want to get too close to him. Otherwise, a single misstep and they would become the hunted prey.

Lin Ming noted these people's movements. No matter how strong he was, these people were far too scattered. Moreover, they had also prepared themselves to run to begin with, so wanting to chase after all of them was nearly impossible.

As for killing just several of them, that was only a waste of effort.

What he needed was a billion total merit points!

“No one’s going to attack?”

Lin Ming muttered to himself. He faintly frowned. If things continued like this, how could he increase his number of merit points? If he had to search all over the Akashic Dream Battlefield and find people to kill himself, that was simply far too inefficient a method.

He thought for a moment and then immediately perked up. “Red-dressed little girl… I know that you are nearby. Do you mind if I use the kirin fruit a little?”

Lin Ming’s sudden words caused the flow of energy around him to become a little chaotic. The voice of a startled girl said, “Y-y-y-you, what do you p-p-plan on doing?”

She was panicked. And once she panicked, she spoke even faster.

The kirin fruit was still in Lin Ming’s possession. Before finding the hidden treasure that the red-dressed little girl talked about, Lin Ming naturally couldn’t hand it over. After all, Lin Ming couldn’t help but remain on guard against this little girl. She was just far too mysterious.

The red-dressed little girl was scared that Lin Ming wanted to swallow the kirin fruit. She quickly said, “If you e-e-eat it… it won’t w-w-work, you d-d-don’t have the time to digest it!”

The red-dressed girl reminded Lin Ming. To swallow something like the kirin fruit in this situation was akin to suicide. The massive influx of chaotic energy in his body would be fatal.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. He couldn’t imagine why the red-dressed girl was so anxious about this spirit medicine.

“I’m just taking it out a little. I won’t harm it.”

As Lin Ming spoke, he took out the kirin fruit from his spatial ring.

As the kirin fruit suddenly appeared, it presented itself in the eyes of these ten thousand plus martial artists. For a time, people didn’t immediately understand what was happening.

As the kirin fruit saw so many bewildered eyes on it, it began to chirp without end.

The kirin fruit already possessed spiritual wisdom, thus it knew just how valuable it was to a martial artist. It was absolutely a wonder medicine that even Empyreans would fight for. For them, this was a massive lucky chance.

Now that the kirin fruit appeared in the greedy gazes of so many people, it was like an unrivalled beauty being stripped naked and thrown into a pit of frenzied sex perverts.

What followed could be imagined!

There were so many people present – wouldn't this stir up an unprecedented massacre?

However, what surprised the kirin fruit was that even though the ten thousand plus martial artists were staring at it with shock, many of their eyes having turned red and many of them gulping loudly, none of them dared to attack!

Their throats twitched as if they were eager to give it a try. But just as they were about to attack they seemed to recall something horrifying and would immediately shrink back.

What a joke. The Lin Ming in front of them could even kill Great World Kings en masse, so who would dare to attack him? The sea of corpses beneath his feet was the best example of those who had tried!

"It's the legendary spirit medicine that Lin Ming stole away! That's it!"

Someone wiped the drool from their lips. The rich source soul energy left him taking deep breaths in and out, as if he could absorb just a little bit of that spiritual energy.

Although they had never seen this spirit medicine before, this sort of aura could not be faked.

"The fruit is in the shape of a kirin that's almost completely manifested! This is a spirit medicine found from the Soul Cave; its value cannot be imagined. In the past, even True Divinity level powerhouses stepped into the Soul Cave to search for spirit medicines and the

Weeping Blood God Springs. But after the Weeping God Blood Springs disappeared, Empyreans and True Divinities no longer went to the soul cave. I never thought that something like this kirin fruit would ever appear in the world again. Just how did it come to be?”

Many martial artists longed for the kirin fruit. Those with the strength of a World King all had maddened eyes.

The Akashic Dream space was extremely strange, a fantastical and unique existence. Although they were all spirit bodies here, if they managed to obtain the kirin fruit and swallow it, their actions would be directly reflected in their true bodies, even allowing their true bodies to increase their cultivations.

Perhaps even this kirin fruit could be brought out of the Akashic Dream Space.

This was what some spiritas Empyreans had hypothesized in the past. The dream was reality, reality was a dream, everything existed with spirit source as the foundation.

“This human brat is too arrogant! Because no one is attacking him, he deliberately brought out the kirin fruit. This is the same as announcing to the world that the kirin fruit is with him, and anyone who kills him can take it!”

“He wants to draw in those who don’t fear death to attack and then kill them instead, taking their merit points!”

Many people thought that Lin Ming’s methods were far too egoistic; he was simply looking down on all the heroes of the world. But currently, when facing Lin Ming, no one dared to attack!

Like this, Lin Ming sat cross-legged in the void. The kirin fruit slowly spun above his head. The little kirin fruit cried out nonstop, clearly shocked by what was happening.

And spinning near the kirin fruit was also a blood red token. This was the token Lin Ming entered the Akashic Dream World with. This token contained a massive amount of merit points. If one could kill Lin Ming, then the majority of these merit points would be theirs.

And this merit token could only be obtained with true strength; one would have to kill Lin Ming in order to receive it. If they stole it, were given it, or obtained it through other methods, it would be regarded as invalid by the Laws of the Akashic Dream World.

Like this, Lin Ming floated in the air with the kirin fruit and red token spinning above him. As for what lay below him, there were the corpses of endless peerless powerhouses piled up high. It was like an Asura hell with rivers of blood flowing out!

Mysterious spirit objects emitted bursts of light. Combined with the rivers of blood, this formed a powerful visual impact that left everyone feeling floored.

As for the Lin Ming who was in the middle of all of this, he was undoubtedly an unrivalled war god. No one could summon the courage to resist him.

Even if greater enticements were placed in front of them, no one dared to attack.

If Lin Ming was anyone else, they could use the advantage of numbers to slowly whittle away at his strength. But, this monstrous freak Lin Ming seemed to have endless strength, so much that no one could imagine resisting him!

However, just because these people didn't dare to attack didn't mean that everyone was the same…

After Lin Ming sat in meditation for an hour, above his head, the skies began to suddenly darken…

Giant dark clouds gathered in the skies, and every cloud seemed to contain endless meandering ghosts, all of them weeping in pain.

A visual phantom appeared, one that was dark red and had a river-like appearance. Many bone lotuses floated above this river, making it look like the yellow springs of hell.

The surrounding temperature rapidly fell, filled with the true meaning of cold.

An aura as heavy as seas and mountains gushed out from the endless dark clouds, making everyone's hearts feel heavy, as if this entire forest had turned into the underworld.

"Jeje." A sharp and grating laugh resounded from above. "Junior, you are far too arrogant. I came to see just how long you can last, but I never imagined that no one would dare to fight you. After no one approached you, you thought to take out the spirit medicine in front of them. Did you really think that there was no one in this world that could take it from your hands? Hahaha, you are far too naïve!"

This voice left the martial artists present shuddering.

This aura, this pressure… Empyrean!?

Even though their cultivation was suppressed, an Empyrean's aura remained the same. This was because their aura was almost equal to the Laws themselves. Many Empyreans had passed through heavenly tribulation. To a certain limited degree, they could be considered even with the Heavenly Dao Laws!

Of course, this 'even' was only within the domain they were skilled in. For instance, a fire-attribute Empyrean could reach the heights of the Heavenly Dao rules in the Fire Laws. If an Empyrean wanted to resist the full and comprehensive Heavenly Dao, that was an impossibility.

"Empyrean… Empyrean Myriad Ghost, Empyrean Myriad Ghost has come!?" Many people cried out in alarm. They had never seen Empyrean Myriad Ghost's techniques before, but they could confirm that this other party was an Empyrean. When combined with the ghosts dancing about in the skies, they correctly guessed just who this newcomer was.

"This is bad, that god of disaster has come. We won't be sucked into this mess, right?"

Many people were frightened and began to rapidly retreat. Empyrean Myriad Ghost had clearly come to take the kirin fruit; no one wanted to be drawn into a fight of this level.

For a time, everyone drew back over a dozen miles before slowly coming to a stop.

Of course, to the martial artists present, even if they were dozens of miles away they could still clearly see what was occurring on the battlefield.

“I’ve finally reeled in a big fish…” Lin Ming’s lips curved up in a smirk. It was inevitable that an Empyrean would appear. After all, the kirin fruit was just far too precious. Even an Empyrean would drool over it.

Lin Ming had already roused up such a great storm; how could the Empyreans here not know about it?

Chapter 1819 – Fighting an Empyrean

Chapter 1819 – Fighting an Empyrean

…

…

…

"Human, do you think you are undefeatable in this world just because you defeated several Great World Kings?"

From the skies, a dark cackling voice spread out. The one speaking clearly felt that there was a considerable number of Great World King corpses scattered on the ground.

"The disparity between an Empyrean and a World King is not what you could hope to imagine! Do you think a Great World King is just a single level away from an Empyrean?"

Although there was still a half-step Empyrean level between a Great World King and an Empyrean, this half-step Empyrean was not considered a full boundary but half a boundary. In other words, half a step.

If one had to truly state it, there was indeed just a single level separating a Great World King from an Empyrean.

But, this single level was a monumental difference!

This was because an Empyrean often had to cross heavenly tribulation and would be reborn in the process. The Laws of an Empyrean were on a completely different rank from those of a Great World King, and the power of these Laws stood on equal ground with the Heavenly Dao. They could even be brought into the Akashic Dream Battlefield!

This difference was the same as the heavens and earth.

Bang!

Empyrean Myriad Ghost's aura erupted, filled with a matchless arrogance, one that looked down upon everyone in this world. As he spoke, a massive pressure came pressing down, shocking many of the martial artists present and making them nearly fall to the ground!

And this was a situation where Empyrean Myriad Ghost's cultivation had been suppressed. If Empyrean Myriad Ghost was in his peak state, it was hard to imagine just how oppressive this pressure would be.

This was how terrifying an Empyrean was!

For a time, everyone had to shoulder the burden of this Empyrean pressure. Everyone retreated together, but their eyes remained vivid with fear. Most of those present had never seen an Empyrean fight before and as they saw Empyrean Myriad Ghost's momentum at this time, they couldn't help but shiver with fear.

With everyone at the Divine Lord level, just who could block such an attack!?

Everyone's eyes fell on Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's actions within the Akashic Dream Battlefield had indeed been far too rampant. Originally, with his strength, if he were to remain a little more low profile then he could have continuously hunted down World Kings and Great World Kings in secret. At the end, it wouldn't have been hard for him to obtain first place in merit points. Moreover, he even had the kirin fruit. He could return home with riches and glory!

But it seemed he wasn't satisfied with this. He actually took out the kirin fruit to taunt those around him, finally causing an Empyrean to move!

Once Lin Ming was killed by an Empyrean, he would lose the kirin fruit as well as his merit points. This would be a tremendous loss!

“Even if he defeated nine Great World Kings he still can’t defeat an Empyrean. Even the weakest of Empyreans can easily kill nine Great World Kings without allowing them any chance to escape.”

“That’s right, and this Empyrean Myriad Ghost isn’t too bad, he seems to be an intermediate Empyrean.”

Empyrean Myriad Ghost’s Yellow Springs Temple was located in a great world within the Soul World – the Yellow Springs World. Empyrean Myriad Ghost was a renowned and infamous individual, and Yellow Springs Temple was an Empyrean influence he had established by himself. For many years, countless individuals had dreamed of entering Yellow Springs Temple, and the name of Empyrean Myriad Ghost reverberated like a thunderclap through the Yellow Springs World.

Then at this time, Empyrean Myriad Ghost suddenly attacked.

He stood still himself, but above his head, snow white bone claws came crashing down from the dark clouds, lit by endless motes of grave lights. The grave lights crackled around the white claws as they pierced through the void.

Roar - !

A terrifying dragon’s roar shook the earth. From those billowing black clouds, there was actually a giant bone dragon hidden within!

Even for an Empyrean it was difficult to subdue a God Beast. But, finding the complete skeleton of a God Beast was relatively much easier. Now, this giant bone dragon hiding in the clouds was a murder weapon that Empyrean Myriad Ghost had refined himself, and the material used to make it was the complete skeleton of a True Dragon!

This bone dragon’s claws carried with them an overwhelming potential as they came rumbling down at Lin Ming.

Of course, this bone dragon's strength was also suppressed by the Akashic Dream Battlefield's Laws.

Lin Ming fiercely looked up, an electric light racing through his eyes. From beneath his feet, waves of wind spread out in a circle.

Within his body, three Dao Palace opened wide their gates. Lin Ming's body began to release the sound of deafening thunderclaps.

Waves of blood essence and blood vitality were wildly stimulated.

Lin Ming stood tall and straight like a spear. Then, an overbearingly tyrannical aura gushed out from him, followed by a dreadful blood energy.

Without evading or dodging, he shot up into the skies with his spear, violently colliding with those mountain-sized bone claws!

Lin Ming's spear light was incomparably small when compared to the mountain-sized bone claws, but as the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace were opened within his body, his profound bodily potential erupted, giving him an incalculable level of strength.

In the outside world, Lin Ming's strength was calculated with the power of dragons. This was a true dragon-subduing level of strength!

Like a meteor, Lin Ming's spear light crashed into the bone claws.

Ka ka ka!

With an explosion that seemed to tear apart the heavens and earth, the bone dragon wailed in misery. Atop the seemingly unstoppable bone claws, countless runes shimmered. These runes were inscribed onto the junctions of the dragon bones and were the work of Empyrean Myriad Ghost. But under Lin Ming's tremendous impact force, these runes began to radiate a blinding light as they started to visibly disintegrate.

Then, even the parts of the dragon bones connected to these runes began to crack!

A massive dragon bone claw was thus broken by Lin Ming. The joints shattered and bones came flying off!

Although Lin Ming hadn't truly shattered the dragon bone and had only caused it to break apart, to the many people watching from below, it appeared that Lin Ming had crushed the giant bone dragon with a single strike!

Even though there was such a disproportionate difference in their bodies, this sort of mind-boggling scene had occurred. Everyone was left utterly shocked!

Was this the strength that a Divine Lord realm martial artist was supposed to possess?

Rahh!

The bone dragon howled out in agony. Lin Ming's eyes flashed like lightning. He stepped forwards with the Space Laws and hurtled forwards. First he needed to deal with this bone dragon!

Empyrean Myriad Ghost's mind quaked. He thought that even if the bone dragon alone couldn't defeat Lin Ming, it was still enough to suppress him. But, he never imagined that the bone dragon would be defeated in front of Lin Ming!

The cracks rapidly expanded and more and more bones came flying off. Lin Ming was fast and unstoppable!

His entire body was covered with purple Asura Law runes. The bone dragon's runes were constantly destroyed and the dark clouds around him dispersed.

Finally, Empyrean Myriad Ghost moved.

He naturally wouldn't watch helplessly as the bone puppet he refined with difficulty was reduced to a pile of broken bones by Lin Ming.

His bent body was covered with a dense and mystical black gas. Every inch of his skin that was exposed to the black gas had numerous malicious ghosts crawling and roaring out loud.

Shua!

Empyrean Myriad Ghost's speed was like ghosts and gods. He shot towards Lin Ming.

And in this moment, Lin Ming looked down. Blazing fire stars seemed to burn in his eyes. His sword-sharp divine sense immediately locked onto Empyrean Myriad Ghost!

At the same time, his aura became even more terrifying. All of the strength within his inner world erupted out together!

From the start, his goal had never been the bone dragon but Empyrean Myriad Ghost!

Woosh!

With a wave of his hand, the Phoenix Blood Spear was placed into his inner world. Then a black spear appeared in its place – the Black Dragon Spear.

As this spear appeared, space and time seemed to be cut apart by it, making everything come to a pause.

And what was also cut apart was Empyrean Myriad Ghost's fierce and arrogant expression.

This spear!!

As Empyrean Myriad Ghost looked at this spear, he didn't know why but an inexplicable sense of fear and alarm surged in his heart. His intuition told him that this spear carried with it an extremely terrifying aura! Perhaps in ancient times, this spear had cut down True Divinities!

This brat, just how could he have such an unrivalled weapon!?

Empyrean Myriad Ghost had no time to think about these thoughts, because at this time, Lin Ming attacked him!

Lin Ming wielded the Black Dragon Spear. The dreadful spear light carried with it star-like runes as it shot forth like a river of stars.

Empyrean Myriad Ghost's complexion turned cold. Although he was surprised, he wasn't panicked. Seeing this spear light continuing to expand in front of him, he pushed out his left hand and began to grind space within it.

His entire palm changed as it was covered with black lights.

Every black light had skeletons floating within it. His palm was like a grinding pan that contained 10,000 ghosts, completely crushing the overwhelming spear light.

"Suppress!"

Empyrean Myriad Ghost shouted out loud. Not just that, but he also raised his right palm, bringing it together with his left palm.

As two palms gathered together, even space shattered as endless black fog spread out.

In the midst of this black fog, there were the sounds of rumbling thunderclouds as well as endless ghost towns looming in the fog.

The Yellow Springs River appeared, bleached bones rising high in its tide.

In this river, deep ghost temples floated up and down. 10,000 ghosts cried out from within, as if the Yellow Springs themselves had been brought here.

All strength in the surrounding area was completely swallowed up by this darkness.

Green grasses as well as the surrounding towering trees were tainted by traces of this black gas and rapidly dried up before decaying.

"Yellow Springs Ghost World!?"

A surrounding martial artist cried out in panic. This martial artist flew back several thousand feet further away, lest he be contaminated with even a tiny bit of the black gas.

This Yellow Springs Ghost World was the one of the peak comprehensions of Empyrean Myriad Ghost's Ghost Laws. It could manifest a small world to suppress an enemy. Even though Empyrean Myriad Ghost's cultivation had been suppressed, he could still use this Yellow Springs Ghost World technique!

The fiercest aspect of this Yellow Springs Ghost World was not in its ability to suppress enemies. Rather, its fiercest aspect was the fact that it could refine the suppressed enemies and make them a part of the Yellow Springs Ghost World.

Like this, the Empyrean Myriad Ghost's Yellow Springs Ghost World would become increasingly perfect, increasingly powerful.

Lin Ming rushed towards Empyrean Myriad Ghost. Facing this Yellow Springs Ghost World that covered such an incredible range, it was impossible to try dodging it. Rather, he grasped the Black Dragon Spear and raced directly into the Yellow Springs Ghost World like an arrow.

Bang!

The darkness was blown apart. Lin Ming's figure was completely swallowed up by the Yellow Springs Ghost World.

"He raced into the Yellow Springs Ghost World!"

Many people cried out in shock. To enter Empyrean Myriad Ghost's domain was the same as seeking death. In particular, Lin Ming's original cultivation boundary had been far weaker than Empyrean Myriad Ghost's.

Seeing Lin Ming's figure swallowed up, Empyrean Myriad Ghost's face didn't show any signs of relaxing. He slowly closed his hands, wanting to draw back in these Yellow Springs Ghost Laws and completely roll over Lin Ming.

But at this time, his entire body shook and his complexion changed.

He could feel a strength that made his mind shake erupting from the Yellow Springs Ghost World.

“…What?”

In the middle of the Yellow Springs Ghost World, the countless ghosts that had been climbing over Lin Ming and gnawing him, wanting to eat him up, had all disappeared without a trace.

Then, that black spear shot forwards, carrying with it an unknown and unstoppable power of Laws that seemed to annihilate all of existence.

And, this black spear was wrapped with numerous arcs of lightning. The arcs of lightning also spun around Lin Ming, exterminating any ghosts that came near him.

Every trace of lightning carried with it a vast and profound aura. This was the power of the top grade Thunder Source that Lin Ming had obtained from Empyrean Thunder Punishment.

Empyrean Thunder Punishment had been a superior Empyrean. Now that his power of thunder had been completely absorbed by Lin Ming, Lin Ming was able to display the potential of this power to its peak!

And the power of thunder was the ultimate nemesis of ghosts and spirits!

Chapter 1820 – Poison Laws

Chapter 1820 – Poison Laws

…

…

…

The Thunder Source in Lin Ming's hand gathered into a roaring thunder dragon.

As this thunder dragon appeared, countless thunder runes began sparkling around it. Each rune was like a massive ball of thunder, emitting a terrifying power of thunder.

Empyrean Myriad Ghost was immediately able to sense the terror of this power of thunder. How could a human baby have grasped such a profound source power of thunder?

Before he could process this, the thunder dragon roared and began smashing into the ghosts within the Yellow Springs Ghost World.

Bang!

A terrifying explosion rang out as the collision between the thunder dragon and ghosts turned into a series of deafening detonations. Two horrifying strengths crushed each other beneath the sizzling light of thunder before vanishing together!

The power of thunder possessed an inborn ability to suppress all evil beings and ghosts. It was the nemesis of Empyrean Myriad Ghost's technique.

However, Empyrean Myriad Ghost had been an Empyrean for a long time already and his Yellow Springs Ghost World had reached much higher heights in the Laws than Lin Ming was at, thus both powers exploded together when they smashed into each other!

Countless ghosts howled and faded away even as the thunder dragon also dissipated. But, Lin Ming's Black Dragon Spear continued on without stopping. It forcefully tore open a section of the Yellow Springs Ghost World and thrust straight towards Empyrean Myriad Ghost.

Crimson light flashed in Empyrean Myriad Ghost's eyes. A fierce ghost phantom erupted in his hands and collided with the Black Dragon Spear's spear light.

Bang!

Endless black light shot out, accompanied by the roaring of the thunder dragon. Empyrean Myriad Ghost's ghost claws rapidly expanded as they came racing towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming stabbed out the Black Dragon Spear. The power of the stars from the highest heavens completely merged into Lin Ming's body and a formidable strength flared up from within him, surging towards the ghost claws in waves!

Ka ka ka ka!

In that moment, a crack appeared in Empyrean Myriad Ghost's ghost claws. And right after that, the ghost claws were shattered!

In the moment of explosion, Lin Ming's thoughts focused and popping sounds crackled from his bones. As for Empyrean Myriad Ghost, his heart chilled and he immediately began drawing back.

Between Lin Ming and Empyrean Myriad Ghost, the air was filled with waves of the mystic power of thunder. For a time, the entire audience fell silent.

When Lin Ming fought the bone dragon, it was fine that he took the upper hand. After all, the bone dragon was only a puppet refined by Empyrean Myriad Ghost. But following that, when Lin Ming fought Empyrean Myriad Ghost in a frontal battle, he hadn't been the weaker one at all!

This was an Empyrean!

In the minds of common martial artists, an Empyrean was an unreachable existence. Even if an Empyrean's cultivation was suppressed in the Akashic Dream Battlefield, they still retained access to their transcendent methods!

Yet, a human junior was able to brutally battle an Empyrean on even terms; this was inconceivable!

"You... who are you?"

Empyrean Myriad Ghost was shocked. It was impossible that a peerless genius like Lin Ming could remain unknown.

"In the Soul World, humans are nothing but mortals raised in cages. They lack strength and they have no inheritances. For the last billion years, a human Empyrean has never appeared amongst their ranks. But as for you, you possess such strength. As long as you don't perish in the future, becoming an extreme Empyrean is the least you will accomplish! You possess the blood of a dragon and phoenix and the power of your inheritances is incredible. Moreover, you have an acute understanding of the ancient mystic Laws. You simply don't resemble a human born in the Soul World at all."

Empyrean Myriad Ghost had an extraordinary level of experience. After observing the clues, he began to suspect Lin Ming's background.

Lin Ming frowned; he didn't want others to know he came from the Divine Realm. So, he maintained complete silence. Within his body, the Asura blood began to restlessly stir.

Empyrean Myriad Ghost was indeed a formidable opponent. His comprehension of Laws surpassed Lin Ming's. For instance, Empyrean Myriad Ghost's Yellow Springs Ghost World was far inferior to Lin Ming's grandmist space in terms of quality, as it was an Empyrean force field created by a peak Empyrean. But because of the differences in their comprehension of Laws as well as the disparity in their backgrounds, Lin Ming's grandmist space wasn't able to suppress the Yellow Springs Ghost World.

But Laws were not the only factor in a battle. In many other aspects, Lin Ming surpassed Empyrean Myriad Ghost.

For instance, the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. For instance, the power of the phoenix and dragon blood within him. For instance, the Asura Laws!

These were superiorities that even an Empyrean might not possess!

And at this time, the bubbling Asura blood within Lin Ming's body had reached the pinnacle. His body emitted explosive crackling sounds. He grew taller, his hair turned blood red, and black scales appeared over him, covering him in a layer of armor.

A horrifying and potent aura erupted from within Lin Ming like a howling dragon. Behind him, a massive Asura phantom appeared, standing indomitable and imperious, seeming to hold the universe in its hands.

In this moment, Lin Ming had used the Asura body metamorphosis. With this, his strength had reached its zenith!

This sudden change caused all the martial artists to gasp out loud in shock. Lin Ming had actually been holding back and now he had erupted with an even more terrifying power.

It was hard to imagine just where the limits of this human lay.

It had to be known that in the past, in the fifth level of the Asura Road's final trial, Lin Ming had used the Asura body metamorphosis and his greatest attack to break open the Undying Polar Ice's egg.

At that time, Lin Ming was able to stand on par with Sheng Mei!

Now, facing Empyrean Myriad Ghost, Lin Ming was naturally overflowing with momentum.

The Black Dragon Spear pointed towards Empyrean Myriad Ghost's head, the spear wind oppressing!

This scene caused Empyrean Myriad Ghost to truly become enraged. His face turned incomparably grim and cloudy. Never before in his life had he been provoked like this by a junior.

"Then let me show you the strength of an Empyrean!"

Rays of black light burst out from within Empyrean Myriad Ghost's eyes, as if twin black suns had risen in his pupils.

His body began to turn hazy and drops of blood appeared from his pores.

Each drop of blood condensed into a meteor-sized demon head in skies. They hissed and roared, emitting waves of fierce noxious aura.

At the same time, every demon head began to chant in a strange and harsh tone.

The surroundings began to change, as everything was covered with a thin layer of frost that carried with it the true meaning of cold.

Lin Ming discovered that his legs began to sink down, as if the void itself had turned into an endless swamp.

Countless thick bones drilled out from the ground, grasping towards everything above.

Even the corpses of the many martial artists that Lin Ming killed before were grabbed by these bones. With loud sizzling sounds, these corpses emitted plumes of green smoke. In the next moment, everything melted, without even broken bones remaining!

Like this, the mountain of corpses turned into black and red goo which emitted a smell that burnt the nose. This macabre sight caused one's scalp to itch.

"Mm?"

Lin Ming's eyes shrank. Empyrean Myriad Ghost's technique contained an extremely strong corrosive power; these were the Poison Laws. Once a martial artist touched these Poison Laws, their flesh and blood would be constantly eaten away.

The bones tumbled in the void, rushing towards Lin Ming like endlessly long pythons!

Lin Ming's electric eyes glared at Empyrean Myriad Ghost. His body also began to turn hazy.

An aura as deep and boundless as the sea erupted from his body.

Black light covered him, blinding to the eyes. Curse seals appeared on his skin, spreading outwards.

A terrifying light shot out from his pupils, making them seem like twin black vortexes.

"Break!"

As Lin Ming shouted out loud, all around him bones began to blow up in swathes.

Lin Ming was like a demon god reborn. Becoming one with his spear, he became like a black dragon. Completely disregarding space, he tore through the void and the floating demon heads, firing straight towards Empyrean Myriad Ghost!

With a thrust of his spear, the mountainous piles of bones were destroyed.

Empyrean Myriad Ghost thrust out his hands, forming millions of runes. All sorts of Ghost Laws emerged from him, even distorting space.

All of this energy condensed into a thick, pitch black ghost wall.

As for Lin Ming's spear, it thrust into this ghost wall, pushing straight into it!

Bang!

In the intense collision, endless poison gas was broken apart. At such a short distance, it was impossible for Lin Ming to escape the shockwaves of energy. The inexhaustible poison gas surged towards Lin Ming's body, striking at his protective true essence.

Chi chi chi!

Lin Ming's protective true essence was constantly corroded by the poison gas!

After his protective true essence melted away, his body was touched by the poison gas and his black scales began to corrode, with bloody pus flowing out from them.

As Empyrean Myriad Ghost saw this, he diabolically grinned.

"You want to severely wound me at all costs so that we mutually suffer? How could I give you that chance?"

Empyrean Myriad Ghost had seen through Lin Ming's plan; Lin Ming had been intending to ignore all injuries and forcibly pierce through the black wall to wound him.

However, the poison gas he released wasn't easy to deal with at all. Once this corrosive power entered a martial artist's body, it would spread through a person's meridians, corroding their energy, body, and blood vitality.

With the support of these Poison Laws, even touching a tiny bit of this poison gas was fatal.

Empyrean Myriad Ghost's figure flickered as he drew backwards.

He had to avoid Lin Ming's attack. Facing Lin Ming, he no longer held any disdain towards him at all. He knew that as long as he dodged Lin Ming's attack and allowed his poison gas to continue corroding Lin Ming's body, he would win.

Seeing Empyrean Myriad Ghost engage in these guerilla tactics, the surrounding martial artists were left in a daze.

“As an Empyrean, he would actually use such skirmishing tactics against a junior to whittle them to death. This isn’t glorious at all…”

“Don’t speak so carelessly. All that matters here is winning. Don’t think that this human is some common junior! Although Empyrean Myriad Ghost’s tactics seem somewhat shameful, it is the wisest choice!”

Many spiritas martial artists spoke up on behalf of Empyrean Myriad Ghost. After all, Lin Ming was still a human.

After dodging Lin Ming’s attack, Empyrean Myriad Ghost’s lips curved up in a wide smile.

Lin Ming’s merit points were useless to him, but that kirin fruit was something he longed for even in his dreams. It was a miracle object for nourishing the soul and could even help him break into the superior Empyrean boundary!

After several more exchanges, he would win.

However, just as Empyrean Myriad Ghost moved, wanting to avoid Lin Ming’s attack once more, his complexion changed. He swiveled around.

Behind him, energy crazily surged. A black-clothed Lin Ming as well as a purple-clothed Lin Ming had appeared. Each held a wheel in their hands as they came hurtling towards Empyrean Myriad Ghost.

“Mm!?”

Empyrean Myriad Ghost was shocked.

Avatars!

Lin Ming’s two avatars had blocked Empyrean Myriad Ghost’s paths of retreat. Not just that, but the massive Asura phantom fell down from the clouds, directly covering Empyrean Myriad Ghost!

Empyrean Myriad Ghost simply didn't have time to make a choice; he could only battle the two avatars and meet their strikes!

These two avatars were divine objects personally refined by the Asura Road Master himself. Although they were restricted by Lin Ming's cultivation and couldn't display their true heaven-shaking strength, in this Akashic Dream Battlefield Empyrean Myriad Ghost's cultivation was also suppressed. If these two avatars joined together they actually formed a terrifying combat force.

Bang!!

Two Asura wheels smashed into Empyrean Myriad Ghost's devil arts.

For a time, ghost fog surged out and divine light pierced into the skies!

Chapter 1821 – Exterminating Myriad Ghost

Chapter 1821 – Exterminating Myriad Ghost

…

…

…

As the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone and Soul Springs Divine Embryo joined forces, their strength multiplied to incredibly powerful levels. Moreover, Lin Ming’s two avatars did not fear death and their defensive abilities were astonishing. When attacking an enemy, they only went on the offensive, without any thoughts of defending.

The void was torn apart like rags and endless ghosts were annihilated. Empyrean Myriad Ghost felt his blood vitality tumbling within his body even as an intense pain struck his spiritual sea.

And in this moment, Lin Ming’s main body also attacked. His speed reached extreme levels. He shot through the energy storm that surrounded Empyrean Myriad Ghost and thrust out his spear!

Bang!

Lin Ming had poured the entirety of his strength into this strike.

Within his body, the Asura blood boiled over! Infinite Asura Laws erupted from within him, roaring like 10,000 God Beasts!

“Damn it!”

Empyrean Myriad Ghost's face twisted into a grotesque image. He thrust out his palm, and from it a hand-sized ghost streamer flew out. This ghost streamer rose through the wind, quickly growing to ten feet in size. From the ghost streamer, countless ghosts wailed together.

This was the billion ghost streamer that Empyrean Myriad Ghost had personally refined. There were a billion ghosts sealed within it!

The Black Dragon Spear smashed into this ghost streamer like an endless bolt of thunder. Innumerable ghosts instantly died within the ghost streamer!

Chi-la!

The sound of ripping fabric filled the air.

The Black Dragon Spear continued with overwhelming force; it pierced right through the ghost streamer!

A violent surge of energy washed out. The billion ghost streamer was torn apart by the Black Dragon Spear!

"What!?"

Empyrean Myriad Ghost's eyes turned red. Lin Ming's mighty strength had completely surpassed his imagination.

He watched as the Black Dragon Spear was about to pierce through his body. And because of Lin Ming's two avatars attacking him, Empyrean Myriad Ghost had already used up his moves and was yet to recover. It was impossible for him to resist this attack.

In this critical life or death moment, Empyrean Myriad Ghost gave up all thoughts of avoiding. Rather, he stretched out a demonic claw and slashed at Lin Ming's chest!

"Junior, if you want to kill me then I'll crush your heart!"

Lin Ming’s eyes were cold and resolute. He ignored Empyrean Myriad Ghost’s threat and welcomed the ghastly claws. His spear stabbed forwards without hesitation!

In that instant, the Asura blood surged within him. The power of Asura gathered at his chest, forming a layer of solid black scales.

Puff!

Lin Ming’s Black Dragon Spear thrust through Empyrean Myriad Ghost’s protective spirit essence as if it were tofu. Then, it penetrated through his chest, causing blood to spew out!

At the same time, Empyrean Myriad Ghost’s sharp claws also crashed into Lin Ming’s chest.

The black scales shattered and blood flew in all directions. Lin Ming’s chest was torn up by Empyrean Myriad Ghost, with several ribs breaking!

“How...”

Although Empyrean Myriad Ghost had torn apart Lin Ming’s chest, his eyes still filled with an incredulous light. His demon claws were the pinnacle of sharpness. Moreover, the corrosive power of the Poison Laws also coated his claws. In the outside world in a situation where his cultivation wasn’t suppressed, if his claws struck something then even an ordinary Empyrean spirit treasure would lose a great deal of its spiritual power and be severely damaged.

And even though this claw was suppressed by the Laws, it still possessed a heaven-defying attack power. Yet, Empyrean Myriad Ghost hadn’t been able to thrust his claw into Lin Ming’s chest and grab his heart. Lin Ming’s mortal body was as hard as divine iron.

“You’ve already used your moves and it’s impossible for this hasty attack of yours to break through my defenses.”

If this were Empyrean Myriad Ghost's all out strike, then Lin Ming wouldn't have been able to resist it with his body even if he revolved the Asura blood to its limits. But, this hasty attack was something he could defend against.

"You're finished!"

Lin Ming grasped the Black Dragon Spear, pouring a wild amount of strength into it. For a time, above Empyrean Myriad Ghost's body, the wound caused by the Black Dragon Spear suddenly began spinning, becoming a dark black hole.

Within this hole, a massive vortex shined with a black light, emitting a strange mystic strength that swallowed all.

Empyrean Myriad Ghost's face distorted. He revolved his energy to the limit to resist the corrosion of this black light and force the Black Dragon Spear out from his body.

But as soon as he tried, his body violently shook. He turned around.

Behind him, two figures had appeared like ghosts and gods. The dense cold light of their weapons reflected on his body; it was too late to dodge!

Puff! Puff!

Two sharp weapons pierced through flesh. Behind Empyrean Myriad Ghost, the black-clothed Lin Ming and purple-clothed Lin Ming had attacked together. A golden spear and a purple sword thrust out, piercing through Empyrean Myriad Ghost's body!

Blood gushed out. Empyrean Myriad Ghost had been simultaneously struck by three weapons, and these three weapons were all held by three different Lin Mings.

This scene was truly alarming!

"I… I…" Empyrean Myriad Ghost vomited a great mouthful of blood. The endless Ghost Laws on his body fluttered out, trying to resist that horrifying black light. But no matter what he tried, it didn’t matter. Beneath the corrosion of the black light, his body began to slowly disintegrate.

In the Akashic Dream Battlefield, the feeling of dying was the same as in reality. As an Empyrean, when would Empyrean Myriad Ghost have experienced such a feeling? As he stared at Lin Ming, his eyes clouded over with disbelief.

He had been defeated beneath the hands of a junior! How could he accept this!?

“I hate you! If my cultivation hadn’t been suppressed, I would have slaughtered you like a dog!”

As Empyrean Myriad Ghost spoke, blood spewed out from between his lips. Lin Ming coldly poured more energy into the Black Dragon Spear. Fissures began to appear all over Empyrean Myriad Ghost’s body, dripping with blood.

Ka ka ka!

Empyrean Myriad Ghost’s body continually broke down. Soon, with a loud explosive sound, Empyrean Myriad Ghost’s body burst into an endless cloud of blood that rained to the ground.

After several breaths of time, in the place where Empyrean Myriad Ghost had existed, all that remained was a hazy blood mist as well as the tattered remnants of ghost energy…

Like this, an Empyrean of his generation had disappeared from the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

Watching from the sidelines, the entire audience of martial artists fell silent.

This human had killed an Empyrean!

In the Akashic Dream Battlefield, the strongest existence was an Empyrean. To kill an Empyrean proved that Lin Ming was invincible within the Akashic Dream Battlefield!

Who was he!?

"Devil!"

Some people cried out in fear, as if no one in this world was a match for this human.

The disciples of Zenith Palace had already lost all ability to speak. The strongest Highest Elder of Zenith Palace was only an ordinary World King, and amidst ordinary World Kings he was amongst the weaker ones. Even so, to them, a World King was a lofty and unattainable existence.

As for a Great World King, that was no different from a spiritual god to them. And an Empyrean… that was something they could not imagine. With a wave of a hand, an Empyrean could destroy a trillion lives.

Yet such an existence had been killed by this human junior! Even in the Akashic Dream Battlefield where cultivations were suppressed by the Laws, they simply couldn't wrap their minds around this.

In their impression, an Empyrean should never be defeated.

In particular, what they couldn't accept the most was that not too long ago, Lin Ming was still in their Zenith Palace. Many people had shouted at Lin Ming and Yi Fan had vowed to take revenge against him.

As they recalled that scene, the disciples of Zenith Palace suddenly developed ugly complexions. Why had this human appeared at Zenith Palace?

"I suspect that… the space storm at the Great Desolate Glacier… was likely caused by this Lin Muk…"

The Zenith Vice Palace Master suddenly said, causing the several Elders of Zenith Palace to shrink their necks and a cold chill to crawl up their backs. That terrifying space storm had sheared off a million glaciers and all of this was because of this junior…

Thinking about it, this was extremely likely. Otherwise, how could there be such a coincidence that he would appear there and at that time?

“No matter what, he is only a traveler. He should have been severely wounded and temporarily rested at Zenith Palace. In truth, he has no feelings towards Zenith Palace and will eventually depart on his own…”

Jaderiver suddenly said, a hint of sadness in her voice. She was a woman whose heart was higher than the heavens. But as she saw Lin Ming who was destined to leave them and who also possessed such incredible achievements, she couldn’t help but develop a sense of inferiority…

……

At this moment, Lin Ming grasped the Black Dragon Spear, his entire body stained red with blood. Countless scattered ghost spirits wound around him, continuing to emit their last sobs and howls. Standing in the midst of all this, Lin Ming resembled a death god. For everyone present, this was a sight that they would never forget in their lifetimes.

“It’s over. I’ve killed an Empyrean!”

At this time, Lin Ming held his token, feeling it grow hotter and hotter. All sorts of emotions surged in his body.

This was the first time that Lin Ming had struck down an Empyrean, and he was also a middle ranked Empyrean!

Although his cultivation was suppressed, killing him had made Lin Ming excited to the point of trembling.

He desired strength far too much!

With the great calamity imminent, Lin Ming needed the ability to at least contend with an Empyrean. Only then would he be able to play a minor role in the great calamity.

And even this goal seemed extremely distant for Lin Ming.

The token grew increasingly hot, as if it would melt down.

The merit points grew at a mind-boggling pace!

Lin Ming watched as his merit points rapidly rose. In a short time, they almost doubled in number!

After killing an Empyrean, the merit points Lin Ming obtained were equal to the sum total from everyone else he had killed so far!

Lin Ming took a deep breath, a fervent light in his eyes.

At this time, his chest was also bleeding. But the blood vitality had already gathered there, slowly regenerating the wound caused by Empyrean Myriad Ghost.

As those below watched this, they had no idea what to say.

Not only did this human have incredible combat strength, but his recovery abilities were also dreadful. He was simply a God Beast in human form, perhaps even more abnormal than a God Beast!

In the future, once he grew, just how terrifying would he become?

At this time, Lin Ming swallowed a pill. The reason he had taken an attack to kill Empyrean Myriad Ghost was in truth to force the battle to a quick end. To him, suffering some injuries wasn’t much at all, because his regenerative capabilities were amazing.

Rather, consuming a massive amount of energy was the most dangerous scenario for Lin Ming.

He didn’t want to be exhausted of energy in such a dangerous environment. After all, there was still an existence in the Akashic Dream Battlefield that could threaten him.

If he retained his strength, then even if he couldn’t defeat the enemy he could still escape. But if he exhausted all of his energy and was killed by this person, then that would be the same as gifting himself to others.

“An Empyrean is truly formidable…”

Lin Ming recalled the battle. In terms of Laws alone, he was slightly inferior to Empyrean Myriad Ghost. He had relied on other aspects to win.

“If I wasn’t facing Empyrean Myriad Ghost but Sheng Mei, then even if our cultivations were suppressed to the same boundary, I could not face her…” Lin Ming quickly judged his own strength. Just because he had been able to crush the Undying Polar Ice’s frozen egg didn’t mean that he was equivalent to Sheng Mei at the same cultivation boundary.

Chapter 1822 – Chaos Demon God Retreats

Chapter 1822 – Chaos Demon God Retreats

…

…

…

In terms of strength, a middle Empyrean like Empyrean Myriad Ghost couldn't be compared with a lower Empyrean like Sheng Mei. Moreover, the difference was considerable.

Back at the final trial's fifth level, Lin Ming appeared to have accomplished something that had been impossible for Sheng Mei. But the truth was that in that battle, Sheng Mei had been far more useful than Lin Ming was.

In the first struggle with the Undying Inferno, Sheng Mei by herself was responsible for the majority of defending against the Undying Inferno as well as attacking it afterwards.

In the second round, when facing the Undying Polar Ice, Sheng Mei had also been responsible for the majority of the defense. Lin Ming had only needed to complete the final strike.

With Lin Ming's understanding of the Asura Laws as well as the inherent suppression of his techniques and also the support of the Black Dragon Spear, he was finally able to crush open the Undying Polar Ice's egg.

But in a true life or death battle, one had to look at Laws, force fields, techniques, and so forth. Just the feat of breaking open the Undying Polar Ice's egg couldn't explain everything.

"The death god is looking at us!"

Sensing Lin Ming's vision on them, many people felt fear and apprehension. Lin Ming's gaze was like a bolt of lightning, cause a shiver to crawl up their backs and their hearts to skip a beat.

"Don't tell me he's going to attack us!"

Someone said, their voice trembling. They already began to think of turning and running.

The truth was that they had already finished watching the fun. Now, everyone here who had the qualifications to be killed by Lin Ming was already dead, and there was no one else worth noticing.

"He shouldn't. At this point, we're just little bits of rice to him. Our several thousand merit points shouldn't be worth a glance to him."

Someone said. Although this was a strike to their self-confidence, it was simply a statement of facts. Lin Ming's target was World Kings, Great World Kings, and even Empyreans!

And indeed, Lin Ming wasn't looking at these people. Rather, his gaze pierced through these people, locking in on some place in the far off distance.

The place where Lin Ming looked seemed to contain a chaotic atmosphere. And Lin Ming's gaze pierced through this chaos as if he saw through everything!

"Since you've come, why not reveal yourself?"

Lin Ming coldly said. He had sensed that at the end of his battle with Empyrean Myriad Ghost, a divine sense had locked onto him, but this person hadn't done anything.

There had been a single instant eruption of killing intent as if this person wanted to sneak attack Lin Ming at the moment he had killed Empyrean Myriad Ghost. But in the end, this killing intent had dimmed down.

Now, this sense was continuously hidden in chaos, hard for even Lin Ming to detect.

Before, the reason that Lin Ming had mutually wounded himself was to preserve the amount of energy he had remaining, and it was all because he needed to deal with this enemy who was hiding in the perimeter.

Lin Ming's words shocked everyone present!

"What? Someone's hiding and hasn't revealed themselves!?"

Someone cried out in alarm. They followed Lin Ming's vision but all they saw was void that tumbled with a faintly visible aura of chaos as well as the boundless terrain of the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

Those who came to the Akashic Dream Battlefield were all outstanding individuals of their generation and were not fools. After sifting through the information they knew, they quickly guessed just who Lin Ming was speaking about.

To be able to hide himself in nothingness and deceive all those present, spying on Lin Ming in secret, and to have the courage to do all of this, perhaps the only one capable was Chaos Demon God!

Chaos Demon God was also a middle Empyrean. He was the sworn blood enemy of Empyrean Myriad Ghost. The reason he came to the Akashic Dream Battlefield was in order to fight Empyrean Myriad Ghost. However, Empyrean Myriad Ghost had eventually been slain by Lin Ming instead!

Before this, Chaos Demon God had likely exchanged a few skirmishes with Empyrean Myriad Ghost. But without a doubt, the two of them hadn't been able to do much to each other.

In other words, Chaos Demon God was at the same level of strength as Empyrean Myriad Ghost.

If Lin Ming were in his peak state, then Chaos Demon God wouldn't be his opponent.

However, Lin Ming was currently wounded, and through that long battle he must have consumed a considerable amount of strength. In this case, Chaos Demon God had still only kept on spying, not attacking Lin Ming!

Even when Lin Ming was fiercely battling Empyrean Myriad Ghost and there were plenty of excellent opportunities to launch a sneak attack, Chaos Demon God had held back his desire to strike.

No one believed that this was because Chaos Demon God didn’t like to do things like sneak attacks. The value of the kirin fruit was enough to cause an Empyrean to ignore any morals they had before. This meant that even in that fierce battle, Chaos Demon God still didn’t have full assurance he could defeat Lin Ming!

At the very least, he didn’t have any confidence that he could prevent Lin Ming from escaping.

Thus, he decided not to attack.

In the void, Chaos Demon God remained silent. The overlapping waves of chaos seemed like mystic illusions that contained endless mysteries, completely incomprehensible to anyone.

Lin Ming didn’t move. He remained sitting where he was in the air. At the same time, he rapidly absorbed the pill in his body to restore his strength and revolved his blood vitality to regenerate his wounds.

The flesh on his chest wriggled as it regenerated, slowly restoring itself.

He didn’t attack Chaos Demon God because he didn’t have confidence he could kill two Empyreans in a row. But conversely, if Chaos Demon God attacked he also couldn’t do anything to Lin Ming.

Even if Chaos Demon God had chosen to attack Lin Ming when Lin Ming was attacking Empyrean Myriad Ghost with the final strike, Lin Ming could still have used his two avatars to defend against any potential sneak attacks.

The gray fog scattered. In the far off distance within the swirling chaos energy, after Lin Ming's words, everyone began to faintly feel the pressure coming out from that space, causing their hearts to race.

"I can really feel the aura of an Empyrean! Perhaps Chaos Demon God has already been here for some time!"

"Of course he would come. Just what kind of character is Chaos Demon God? How could he not have sensed such a ruckus? Why wouldn't he have rushed over?"

"If Chaos Demon God joined forces with Empyrean Myriad Ghost they probably could have defeated Lin Muk."

"That's impossible... Chaos Demon God and Empyrean Myriad Ghost are blood sworn enemies of each other, so it's almost impossible for them to join forces. Moreover, even if they did, Lin Muk would still have been able to run away, and I don't think either of them would have been able to catch him!"

Many people sighed with emotion. Such a result was simply unbelievable!

This stalemate continued for a long time. Then, a boundless voice echoed out, "Truly, I cannot harm you! You and I have no enmity, so today I shall not attack you, nor do I wish to fight you in the future. We will both mind our own business and neither of us shall interfere with the other!"

Chaos Demon God compromised, making a deal with Lin Ming!

But Lin Ming didn't want a compromise like this, because within Chaos Demon God's words there seemed to be a subtle meaning. It was that if he didn't attack Lin Ming today and didn't take the opportunity to sneak attack him, that was the same as doing Lin Ming a favor.

Lin Ming coldly sneered, "Yes, you and I have no enmity, but today, if I were weak, would you have not tried to steal away my kirin fruit because we don't have enmity with each other? The only reason you don't attack me is because you don't have the confidence that you can kill me!"

Lin Ming's words stood in sharp opposition, measure for measure!

The chaos demon energy in the void began to violently shake, becoming disorderly. Chaos Demon God furiously shouted, "What are you trying to say!?"

"Let me tell you something. If you want to attack me today, then go ahead and do it. If you don't attack, I won't consider this any favor done. If we meet in the future, whether we are friends or enemies is another story altogether!"

Lin Ming's voice was indifferent and his momentum was aggressive. In truth, he didn't want to force a character like Chaos Demon God to the end. After all, this other person was a middle Empyrean. If Lin Ming left the Akashic Dream Battlefield and he bumped into a center Empyrean, he wouldn't have the chance to run away. To offend this kind of enemy wasn't a wise move at all.

But Lin Ming needed a billion merit points and was currently missing 400 million. He was worried that if he didn't kill Chaos Demon God then he wouldn't be able to collect these 400 million merit points.

For the legendary golden page, Lin Ming would rather offend Chaos Demon God!

"Humph!"

At this time, a cold humph filled with killing intent spread out. The martial artists present were startled. They thought that Chaos Demon God was about to attack.

However, slowly, he eventually hid himself once more. The tumbling chaos energy retreating, disappearing like sweeping winds and scattering clouds, vanishing from sight.

Chaos Demon God had fled!

Because he had felt a threat from Lin Ming.

Although Lin Ming had considerable injuries, Chaos Demon God could still feel that in the short quarter hour, Lin Ming had recovered a considerable amount.

The wound on his chest had healed by over 80%!

Lin Ming might still have some hidden card in his hand. Or, perhaps he could recover some more while fighting using guerilla tactics, or perhaps he could even absorb some of the essence energy from the kirin fruit to heal himself.

But no matter what happened, it was likely that Chaos Demon God wouldn't be able to do anything to Lin Ming. Rather, he could be bitten by Lin Ming in return.

At that time, he would be even more disgraced. The gains didn't equal the losses.

Chaos Demon God had a much more careful and subtle personality than Empyrean Myriad Ghost. Thus, when he retreated, he quietly disappeared, not leaving behind a trace of his aura.

As Chaos Demon God withdrew, all of the martial artists present relaxed. But at the same time they also felt a faint sense of regret. They thought that they could bear witness to another unrivalled battle, but in the end nothing had happened.

"Even Chaos Demon God gave up first. This boy… is far too terrifying. Even when injured he can still fight an Empyrean!"

"His recovery ability is extraordinary. His Laws, foundation, techniques, inner world, blood vitality, mortal body, even his spiritual sea, everything is perfect. He's just some freakish monster!"

No one knew what Lin Ming's skeletal age was, but what they could faintly feel was that he was undoubtedly a truly dreadful genius!

Chapter 1823 – Hidden Treasures

Chapter 1823 – Hidden Treasures

…

…

…

News of Lin Ming killing Empyrean Myriad Ghost and forcing Chaos Demon God to retreat soon spread throughout the entire Akashic Dream Battlefield.

The two Empyreans had originally entered the Akashic Dream Battlefield to duel each other, but their battles hadn't been seen by anyone, nor had they gone all-out. Rather, they had only exchanged a few initial probing strikes. But now, they were both ruined by Lin Ming. One had been directly killed and the other had fled in the eyes of all present.

This was a simply unimaginable situation!

For a time, the terrifying name of Lin Muk spread throughout the entire Akashic Dream Battlefield. This was news that came from Zenith Palace.

The young disciples of Zenith Palace couldn't help but brag about their relationship with Lin Ming, thus they naturally used the name he had given them – Lin Muk.

On the Akashic Dream Battlefield, people felt fear and awe upon hearing this name. This was especially true for the World Kings and Great World Kings here. They were afraid that they would accidently bump into Lin Ming and wouldn't even have any hopes of escaping, eventually becoming a part of Lin Ming's merit points.

However, none of this news spread outside the Akashic Dream Battlefield. Once the Akashic Dream Battlefield was sealed up, no one would know what occurred within until the full three years had passed.

However, Lin Ming simply didn't care about any of this at all.

Alone, he trod deep into the vast desolate woods. Not too far behind, a little girl followed.

She wore a bright red dress and her rosy feet were bare as she stepped upon the wind. Her snow white toes were like ten pearls, glowing with a crystalline light.

In this forest there were countless giant ancient vicious beasts, in other words, soul beasts. These soul beasts were particularly fierce and would launch continuous ambushes, creating a good deal of trouble for Lin Ming.

However, what surprised Lin Ming was that the little girl simply fluttered forwards, unnoticed by these soul beasts.

No matter how formidable the soul beasts were, they would just run past her without sparing her a glance.

From deep within the ancient forest, there was a mystic and formidable aura that emanated outwards.

Lin Ming also discovered the existence of this aura. He grew increasingly sure that the hidden treasure the red-dressed little girl spoke of was this existence.

This ancient forest seemed to have existed for countless billions of years. Each leaf was as large as a house.

Any rays of light that shined down were blocked by layers of thick leaves, filtering out to a dim haze that left mottled shadows on the ground.

"What is that?"

Lin Ming suddenly paused. In the forest, his figure flashed, instantly travelling hundreds of miles.

Soon, he reached the edge of the ancient forest. What he suddenly saw in front of him was a vast outcropping of rocks, a stone forest that towered in an open space for hundreds of miles.

This stone forest was vast. As Lin Ming leapt up to the canopy of the trees, he looked down and saw that the shape of this stone forest resembled that of a hand.

The five fingers were represented by five massive towering stone formations.

The way that the central region was set up resembled a palm.

This stone forest was covered in a dense blanket of brilliant light that dazzled the eyes.

Waves of strange runes shot up from the stone forest, rising up like a river of stars.

A bird soul beast that had a wingspan of over 30 feet flew out from the forest and into the broad skies. However, it carefully avoided the stone forest, as if there was something terrifying within it.

This caused Lin Ming's mind to chill.

The stone forest should be the hidden treasure trove that the little girl spoke of. However, this hidden treasure area contained a horrifying aura.

Lin Ming frowned. He drew back his gaze from the stone forest and slowly turned around.

Behind him, atop the ground that looked like rocky sand, the red-dressed girl was calmly floating.

"You said that the hidden treasure area is in this stone forest?" He knew that this little girl was extremely timid, thus he tried to keep his voice as gentle as possible.

“Mm.” Looking at the stone forest, a strange and lonely look crossed the red-dressed little girl’s face, followed by confusion. Then, she looked towards Lin Ming and rapidly nodded.

Chirp chirp!

The kirin fruit cried out, revealing a horrified look as it stared at the stone forest. It was unknown just what it was afraid of.

But why would Lin Ming care about whether this little fruit was scared? He put away the kirin fruit and said, “Let’s go!”

Lin Ming called out to the little girl. Then, he cautiously approached the mysterious stone forest.

But before long, he suddenly stopped, a look of amazement crossing his face.

All he felt was an invisible, mountain-like atmosphere enveloping him. A tremendous pressure fell upon every inch of his skin, pressing down on his shoulders. Even though he had billions of jins of strength, he still found it onerous to move.

Every joint in his body emitted popping sounds. However, he was still 10 miles away from the stone forest.

But what startled him the most was not this formidable and invisible aura, but the fact that within this aura, there was a familiar feeling.

It was because this aura was not just simple soul force. Rather, it contained the power of ‘energy’, from the essence gathering system.

This was a simply unthinkable matter. The Akashic Dream Battlefield was only a small part of the Akashic Dream World. The Akashic Dream World itself was a treasure left behind by the first ancestor of all spiritas, an existence that surpassed the realm of True Divinity.

Everything inside should be formed from the purest soul force, so how could such a pure and rich power from the essence gathering system have appeared here?

Lin Ming was puzzled. He let out a deep breath and his blood vitality began to surge within his body, flowing like an endlessly raging river.

From every pore of his body, an invisible astral energy shot out, forcefully resisting the strange pressure that was everywhere around him.

Hu - !

Hu - !

After energizing the blood vitality essence energy within his body, he forcefully split apart the potent pressure like a river, causing it to flow around him.

Step by step, he slowly approached the mysterious stone forest.

“Mm? What is this power? This… power is clearly one of the 33 Heavens’ Great Daos.

“This is also another Great Dao power of the 33 Heavens…”

The closer Lin Ming came to the stone forest, the more shocked he became. He began to feel more and more Great Dao systems as he approached the stone forest.

Moreover, what was most peculiar of all was that even though these powers didn’t belong to the Akashic Dream World, they weren’t suppressed, weakened, or even repelled.

This completely subverted Lin Ming’s understandings of the 33 Heavens’ Great Daos.

“To leave behind such a tremendous aura that contains the Great Daos of the 33 Heavens… could this stone forest have been left behind by a True Divinity level character? No… even a True Divinity level character shouldn’t possess the power of so many Great Daos from the 33 Heavens… as far as I know, the only one who has managed to grasp the power of so many Great Daos, through the endless ages, has only been the Asura Road Master…”

As Lin Ming was thinking about all of this, he reached less than a mile from the stone forest.

Even though his body was as intense as an ancient vicious beast, at this time, he was being suppressed by the Great Dao aura of the 33 Heavens. His skin and his bones constantly distorted as wave-like ripples passed over him. Even his face twisted beneath the unimaginably huge pressure, continuously changing.

Every inch of Lin Ming's body felt as if it were being grinded by a pan; the pain was agonizing.

Lin Ming took another step forwards –

Hum! Hum! Hum!

From his originally quiet dantian, the Asura Heavenly Array Diagram began to quietly tremble and hum. The array formation that was fused into his flesh and blood began to emanate waves of the Asura Heavenly Dao's strength.

The Asura Heavenly Array Diagram was left behind by the Asura Road Master and was formed by combining the three source energies of 'essence, energy, and divine'. It could reform an image of the Asura Road within his body, so that the power he obtained from the Asura Road wouldn't be suppressed and repelled by the Great Daos of the 33 Heavens. This array diagram that fused into Lin Ming was one of the ultimate rewards he received from the Asura Road's final trial.

In ordinary times, as long as Lin Ming didn't use the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws then the Asura Heavenly Array Diagram would remain dormant, without any movement at all.

But at this time, it actually resonated with some strange force and was opening on its own.

Even the numerous divine runic symbols that Lin Ming had on him didn't remain calm. The Asura Heavenly Dao Laws within them also began to emit keening cries.

"This is… the aura of the Asura Road Master!?"

Lin Ming’s sharp senses perceived the aura of the Asura Road Master. Moreover, it was from the mysterious stone forest.

This vast and boundless aura seemed to contain a momentum that could swallow the universe. Even as Lin Ming was shocked, he still felt an intimate familiarity with it.

Moreover, as this aura appeared, the auras of the 33 Heavens’ Great Daos were suddenly weakened. The pressure on Lin Ming lightened by a great deal.

More and more suspicions appeared in Lin Ming’s mind. Why would the aura of the Asura Road Master appear here?

This was the Akashic Dream World.

Did the Asura Road Master… also step into the Akashic Dream World before?

This thought suddenly flashed through Lin Ming’s mind, leaving him feeling inexplicably astonished.

Chapter 1824 – Ancient Ruins

Chapter 1824 – Ancient Ruins

…

…

…

Lin Ming looked towards the red-dressed little girl. The little girl's vacant look confirmed that he wouldn't be able to obtain any valuable information from her, such as why the aura of the Asura Road Master was kept here.

The two slowly approached the stone forest. For a time, the entire stone forest seemed to come alive with movement. Flower petals formed from the Great Dao began to fall down from the skies, turning into strange runes that blocked out the world.

Lin Ming and the little girl were also blocked out. It was an incomprehensible defensive array formation.

"Wah!"

The little girl cried out in surprise. The soul force she emitted seemed to come into conflict with this aura and was bounced back by the array formation, nearly causing her to be injured.

However, the little girl surprised Lin Ming yet again. Her body seemed to be weightless. As she was pushed back by this strange energy, she fluttered backwards like a piece of cotton.

Like this, she flew backwards several dozen feet before gently landing.

"What's wrong?"

"T-t-this place is a b-b-bit strange. Every time I come I will be b-b-bitten by something strange… b-but last time it wasn't so s-s-strong…"

After being with Lin Ming for such a long time, the little girl's voice seemed to smooth out, as if all her previous speaking problems were because she hadn't spoken with anyone for far too long a time.

Lin Ming couldn't help but look at her and ask, "How old are you?"

The red-dressed little girl revealed a dazed expression. After a while she shook her head and said, "I d-d-don't know… I s-s-seem to have slept for a long time, b-but for some reason, I woke up afterwards and I ended up h-here… and then… I… o-often see outsiders come h-here and try to catch me… as well as my friends…"

The red-dressed little girl spoke with a frown, as if these were memories she didn't want to remember.

Lin Ming was dumbfounded. This little girl's life experiences were far too strange.

According to what she said, she had likely lived for a long time already and had been deeply slumbering for most of the time.

And as for the outsiders, they were naturally the trial challengers that came to the Akashic Dream Battlefield. When these people searched for treasures in this mystic realm, they undoubtedly disturbed the rest of the little girl, and the spirit medicines they tried to take were similar to spiritual medicines like the kirin fruit who were able to manifest themselves.

"No wonder this little girl was guarded when she saw me, and seemed to fear me. Just who is she? Why does she seem like Fishy…?"

Lin Ming suddenly recalled Yan Littlefish. Although Fishy seemed like an ordinary little girl on the outside, she was actually an enigma that could eat violet sun stones and nine sun jades as if they were candy.

She also didn't remember how long she had lived. But, her age didn't match her mindset. It seemed that her thoughts had stayed at the level of a little child, always a bit dull and silly.

Her appearance had also never changed. She always resembled a little girl in her early teens, never growing, never aging.

"This array formation… is naturally formed by the 33 Heavens' Great Dao, it is not made by mortal hands. In order to enter, one has to follow the Great Dao Laws of the 33 Heavens." Lin Ming thought for a moment. His eyes focused on the array formation in front of him. Within his pupils, tens of thousands of runes were reflected, weaving together in the skies like endless stars, vast and profound…

There were similarities between this array formation and divine runic symbols.

He had studied divine runic symbols for many years and had absorbed the memories of many divine runic masters. His background was deep and he was confident that he could solve this array formation.

For some time, he began making innumerable deductions in his mind.

Slowly, he found a vein of the defensive array formation. Spear light flicked out from his fingertips, loudly smashing into a node of the array formation.

Like a giant stone falling into a calm lake, strong ripples began to spread outwards.

The entire array formation suddenly collapsed.

This incomparably dense stone forest began to decay and collapse at a speed visible to the eyes.

This was an erosion produced by endless years of weathering. Lin Ming was shocked to see this.

The earth beneath his feet began to violently shake. The surrounding space started to change. In an instant, the stone forest in front of him had disappeared.

Hu - !

An ice cold wind howled above him.

The world in front of him turned into an incredibly bleak and desolate wasteland. The rugged stones in the ground emitted a chilling aura.

Not too far away, a hellish black abyss was exposed to the air, emitting a boundless mystic strength.

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. His figure flickered and he appeared hundreds of miles away. As he arrived at the edge of the black abyss, he peered inside.

His entire body shook. The black abyss was fathomless, without anything visible at all. Rather, he felt two auras that caused his heart to tremble.

One of these auras was an incomparably pure black energy, one that released an unspeakable oppressive feeling, as if all living beings to exist had to bow before it.

It was vigorous and powerful.

This was a mass of soul force that had reached the pinnacle of purity, and even contained the feel of the Great Dao.

Without a doubt, this was the limit of soul force. The purity and depth of this soul force far surpassed even that of Soul Empress Sheng Mei.

As this soul force surged, there were infinite changes within.

Just by glancing at it, one’s heart would race, feeling as if their divine soul would be swallowed up.

As for the other aura, it was one that Lin Ming was familiar with – the aura of the Asura Road Master.

This aura carried with it the strength of the Asura Heavenly Dao, as deep as an endless ocean. It was majestic and daring, with a killing intent that soared into the heavens, seeming capable of crushing the universe itself.

These two auras had existed in this space since time immemorial, faintly struggling with each other and colliding with each other, with no distinction of rank between them.

“Who is this person? They can contend with the Asura Road Master on the same level?”

Lin Ming was surprised. He discovered that this soul force that fought with the Asura Road Master’s remnant aura was not any worse.

Because of the peerless array formation here, this soul force as well as the Asura Road Master’s aura had been sealed in an independent world, not dissipating even after billions upon billions of years. Rather, it faintly formed its own Heavenly Dao system and continuously grew.

Countless runes spun out, vividly dancing in the darkness of space.

Lin Ming revolved the power of the Asura Laws and looked at these runes with rapt attention. Even though his eyes became a little sore, he made a bewildering discovery. These runes that danced in the air were like history books, recording unimaginable scenes within them.

Lin Ming discovered that at the end of the abyss beneath him, there was yet another abyss, one that was deep and without end.

Within that abyss, a grand aura also surged outwards.

That abyss was incredibly dense, riddling this entire world like a honeycomb.

“Could this be an ancient battlefield from when the Asura Road Master was fighting with someone else?”

Lin Ming thought, dumbfounded. The Asura Road Master had lived billions of years ago. Such a broken world could only appear if struck by a great strength.

Just as he thought this, the black clouds of energy that camouflaged the void began to fade away.

Stars twinkled in space, distant and cold in the endless void.

Trillions of stars continued without end, even hanging above his head. Looking up, he could make out strange stones and inexhaustible mountain ranges.

These stars emitted a boundless mystical power of stars.

Lin Ming was standing on a star, but amongst the boundless stars in the universe, it was only an ordinary one.

Taking a broad look around, he could see that the innumerable stars around him were tattered and riddled with holes, verging on the point of collapse.

Even further away, at the center of the galaxy, there were massive wreckages of annihilated stars burning there.

At the center of the galaxy, there were no more stars or dust. Rather, there was only a pitch black and burning red light shining endlessly from within.

These two lights were like two universes. With just a single glance, Lin Ming’s chest violently trembled, as if he had been struck by some large invisible hand.

Strong. These were two absolutely strong forces.

Time passed. Even the erosion of time wasn't able to cause these two groups of power to disappear.

Instead, they formed the Laws of the heavens and earth, becoming like yin and yang, mutually elevating and constraining each other, growing together.

They were like infinite suns exploding. An incomprehensibly powerful mystic strength was imprisoned, seeming to exist for eternity.

"Mm? This is?"

Lin Ming could vaguely see an image...

The Asura was standing in the pitch black cold of space. He wore black armor and his pupils shined with a terrifying light.

He was fighting a man with a similarly terrifying aura. This man walked the distant end of the galaxy where they began to fight each other.

The Asura's fist shadows were vigorous and vast, each fist shadow strike tearing apart the universe. Endless stars cracked apart, swallowing up the man that walked in from the other side of the galaxy.

In these endless shadows, the man pulled out a strange ancient black book.

He began to recite scriptures. The scriptures turned into ancient words that spread out from the Asura's rain of fist shadows.

Every ancient word changed into columns of soul force in the void. They tore through the galaxy and collided with the Asura's fist shadows. Terrifying fluctuations of energy spread out, tearing apart large tracts of space and destroying millions of stars...

This battle continued for a mind-boggling period of time. It was unknown how many years they fought or how many billions of stars were crushed.

In the end, the mysterious man's forehead was scratched by the Asura Road Master's fist shadows. His star-heavy blood fell down, crashing into the boundless space below.

With this, a mysterious page from the ancient black book in the man's hands also fell down…

After this scene, all illusions collapsed. Lin Ming reappeared at the edge of the giant abyss. Asura runes shimmered in front of him.

What Lin Ming saw just now were the records contained within the runes born from the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws…

Lin Ming took a deep breath – the mysterious man that fought with the Asura Road Master was naturally the ancient first ancestor of the spiritas.

The center of the galaxy had been their final battlefield.

In the Asura Road's final trial, at the end of the mysterious blue stone road, Lin Ming had seen the Asura Road Master fight with this mysterious man.

But the outcome of that battle had been unknown.

However, Lin Ming now knew the final result – the ancient king of the spiritas had lost to the Asura Road Master!

But, the Asura Road Master had also been injured.

Moreover, the incomparably ancient and mysterious book had a golden page fall out from it, making it incomplete.

Chapter 1825 – Middle Holy Lord

Chapter 1825 – Middle Holy Lord

…

…

…

Without a doubt, that fallen golden page was a part of the Spiritas Holy Scripture. As for this part of the Akashic Dream Universe, it was likely a mystic realm left over from before the first ancestor of the spiritas collapsed.

As for the void here, it was probably the ancient battlefield between the Asura Road Master and the first ancestor of the spiritas.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming was shocked. His heart began to surge with heated blood even as his eyes brightened.

If so, then there were traces and marks here left behind by a battle between two peerless masters.

To a martial artist at Lin Ming's level, this was an unimaginable wealth.

Faint lines of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws continuously dissipated from his fingertips, resonating in sympathy with the remnant battle aura left behind by the Asura Road Master in that deep black abyss.

Bang!

An incomparably pure aura of the Asura Heavenly Dao began to flow into Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

He could clearly feel the battle between the Asura Road Master and the ancient spiritas king. The subtle utilizations of the Asura Heavenly Dao's power was completely reflected in his mind.

With his current understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao, he slowly verified these truths.

In the past when he had walked down the blue stone road, Lin Ming had passed through the spirit marks left behind by the Asura Road Master and had watched on as the Asura Road Master fought in innumerable great battles.

But that had only been watching. It was different from now, where he could combine his realizations with the marks left behind on the ancient battlefield by the Asura Road Master.

It was like he had become one with the Asura Road Master. The things he could comprehend were even more profound.

He could feel in his body as the Asura Road Master fought with his enemy, understanding each minute change in the use of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws.

These comprehensions were all slowly verified with his previous understandings of the Asura Heavenly Dao. Slowly, Lin Ming was able to grasp the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao even tighter, allowing his understandings to rise once more.

Lin Ming sat down on the edge of the abyss and slowly meditated.

In the dark void, countless Asura runes fluttered about. These Asura runes were like the text of a history book, having recorded endless mysteries.

Lin Ming slowly entered deep into an ethereal state. Behind him, a withered old tree with strong dragon-like roots began to slowly appear, taking root in the void. The tree spread out its elderly branches and leaves, and all around the tree, falling petals appeared, like a noble immortal wonderland.

This was a phenomenon that occurred when Mount Potala's Bodhi tree appeared. It was a pure land of ultimate bliss within this world.

Beneath the Bodhi tree, Lin Ming had fused together several different martial intents. This allowed him to enter a completely concentrated state whenever he wished, without sound without touch, without sight without sense.

Lin Ming meditated like this, oblivious to the passing of time. He constantly sifted through the runes, obtaining realizations from the mysteries within.

"…These changes have allowed the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao to reach the pinnacle, this is truly perfect… no wonder the ancient spiritas king wasn't able to defend himself even though he tried his best.

"…So the power of the Asura Heaven Dao Laws was used like this. With such a stunning evolution, it is in no way inferior to the essence of the 33 Heavens' Great Daos…"

Lin Ming floated in the void, star-like runes spinning around him as he slowly perceived the aura of the Asura Road Master.

Every tiny change that occurred when the Asura Road Master fought with the ancient spiritas king appeared in his mind.

Like this, six months rapidly passed.

Lin Ming's figure, from the edge of the abyss, began to enter the ancient galactic battlefield.

He endlessly sensed the battle aura left behind by the Asura Road Master. His comprehensions of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws became increasingly profound.

The surrounding blood red power of the Asura Heavenly Dao's aura formed into faint red strands that wrapped around Lin Ming.

From a distance, it looked as if Lin Ming had been bound in a crimson cocoon.

This cocoon was large, like a blood red meteor.

Sitting cross-legged within, Lin Ming was utterly immersed in his contemplative state.

The Asura Heavenly Array Diagram within him constantly hummed. The giant Asura phantom appeared, pushing a massive wheel. It slowly fused with the blood red cocoon. In the surging chaos, new changes gradually appeared.

Unknowingly and unwittingly, Lin Ming's Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel and other Asura martial skills that Lin Ming learned through the Asura Sutra began to constantly evolve, transforming once more.

Even the Asura phantom that pushed the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel began to fill up with flesh and blood, emitting a terrifying momentum. Its pitch black pupils began to blaze with a crimson light…

At the end, the blood red cocoon surrounding Lin Ming became increasingly thick until it almost reached the size of a planet.

Lin Ming flew closer and closer to the center of the ancient galaxy battlefield. Finally, with a loud rumbling sound, he fused together with the strongest battle runes left behind in the battle between the Asura Road Master and the ancient spiritas king.

The blood red cocoon began to rapidly revolve within the ancient galaxy battlefield. Bursts of red light flashed out and exploded as if a sea of thunder was rumbling within.

Inside the blood red cocoon, Lin Ming was sitting naked in the void, like an ancient Buddha deep in contemplation.

Every pore on his body emitted a blinding light. Dense crimson curse seals crawled over his body like countless centipedes.

Every curse seal contained the rhythm of the Great Dao and emitted the roars of dragons and tigers.

These curse seals were the most ancient texts of the Asura Sutra. Originally, these texts had only been recorded within Lin Ming's spiritual sea where they floated like stars, obscure and enigmatic, completely incomprehensible.

But now, Lin Ming perceived the battle marks left behind by the Asura Road Master, and he slowly fused with these battle marks, allowing them to be felt through his body.

Then, these battle marks resonated with the Asura Sutra texts within his spiritual sea. Some areas which he was confused about before were suddenly crystal clear.

The texts of the Asura Sutra that contained endless mysteries and strength began to thoroughly mingle with Lin Ming's flesh and blood, becoming a part of his body.

In that moment, Lin Ming's comprehension of the Asura Heavenly Dao rose even further, becoming increasingly perfect…

The dazzling blood red cocoon also began to dim down until falling completely silent. Gradually, it seemed to become a part of the ancient galaxy battlefield, turning into a blood red meteor that didn't exude any strength at all. It was icy cold and deathly still.

This condition continued for an unknown period of time. It seemed to be a single breath of time, and it seemed to be an entire era of a universe.

Bang!

The icy cold meteor that was the blood red cocoon loudly shattered and dissipated into the void.

Middle Holy Lord realm!

In that instant, Lin Ming knew he had broken into the middle Holy Lord realm. Although his cultivation was still suppressed to the Divine Lord realm in the Akashic Dream Battlefield, he knew that as long as he left this place, his cultivation would instantly return to that of a middle Holy Lord, completely unstoppable.

Lin Ming had repeatedly suppressed his cultivation in order to consolidate his foundation. And now, his cultivation could no longer be suppressed. It was a like a pot that was filled with too much liquid and couldn't help but flow out.

Since it couldn't be suppressed, Lin Ming didn't try to either.

He planned to wait once he reached the peak of the Holy Lord realm and started towards the World King realm. He would go into seclusion for dozens or even a hundred years in order to consolidate his cultivation and have his foundation become as stable as it possibly could.

This was in order to offset the problems caused by his cultivation rising too quickly.

Lin Ming slowly stepped out. His aura was restrained and every pore on his body was as smooth as the finest jade, not releasing any power at all.

He simply walked through the galaxy. With every step he took, parts of broken stars would disintegrate beneath the mysterious beat of his steps.

Step after step, he finally reached the outermost edge of the galaxy.

He waved his hand and a purple robe covered his naked figure.

And at this time, the red-dressed little girl was sitting on the broken star, quietly watching Lin Ming approach. Her eyes shimmered with a divine light; it was unknown just what she was thinking.

She seemed a bit dazed, a bit surprised, and even a bit confused.

As if she didn't recognize Lin Ming at all.

“This was truly a trove of hidden treasure. My harvests here were great. Thank you.”

Lin Ming's voice echoed like billowing thunderclaps, spreading in all directions and causing winds to surge.

Everything around him trembled. Some massive rocks that were damaged directly collapsed and crashed to the ground.

This was clearly a lion-like phenomenon that only occurred when one's strength became incredibly formidable.

The red-dressed little girl jumped up in fright. She shrank inwards.

"…Y-y-you scared me."

Lin Ming laughed in embarrassment and awkwardly rubbed his nose. This time he had experienced the last battle between the Asura Road Master and that ancient spiritas king.

He had fused together with the battle marks left here by the Asura Road Master and had obtained endless benefits.

He could clearly feel the strength within his body that was as vast as a sea. He had taken another step towards breaking into the critical point of the World King realm.

Moreover, he had an even better grasp of the Asura Heavenly Dao. Those previously confusing places were now clear to him. With this miraculous enlightenment, it was just like being reborn.

At Lin Ming's current level, wanting to take a single step forwards wasn't easy at all. Now that he had such a tremendous harvest, he was naturally overjoyed.

Chapter 1826 – Exit

Chapter 1826 – Exit

…

…

…

Deep within an ancient forest –

In a deathly silence, far off in the endless distance, a crimson pillar of light erupted, soaring into the heavens, seeming as if it could pierce through the world.

Awoo - !

In the forest, a three-headed wolf soul beast was feasting on the remnants of a spiritas youth. It suddenly looked upwards and saw the crimson beam of light. Then, its entire body shook as bits of flesh dropped down from its jaws. It tucked its tail between its legs, turned around, and fled into the forest.

For a time, an inexplicably dreadful aura expanded outwards, causing countless soul beasts to escape deep into the ancient forest.

In the middle of a dust storm, Lin Ming stepped onto the void, walking out from an endless abyss.

The crimson light in his hands slowly dissipated.

Behind him, a vortex swirled above the deep abyss. Countless runes sparkled with a mystic strength, slowly closing up the abyss.

This mystic land that wasn't easy to approach to begin with fell into a deep slumber once more.

In the mystic realm that the red-dressed little girl had guided him to, Lin Ming had mainly perceived the Asura Laws. As for the ancient powers left behind by the first ancestor of the spiritas, although Lin Ming had become aware of them, he hadn't been able to perceive much. If he had to think of a reason, this was simply because he didn't understand the ancient Laws used by this spiritas king. No matter how talented Lin Ming was it was impossible for him to break into Laws that stood at such heights, thus the things he could understand were limited.

"If I could just look at the true Spiritas Holy Scripture then that would be great..." Lin Ming suddenly murmured.

All clues indicated that the Spiritas Holy Scripture was in the hands of the current spiritas Soul Emperor.

And this person was the supreme leader of the spiritas. The seven Heavens of the spiritas took him as their leader.

Even Sheng Mei had to serve the Soul Emperor; she was considered one of his subordinates.

Soul Empress Sheng Mei. The title of Empress was similar to that of Emperor. However, that didn't mean she was the queen of the spiritas. Rather, she could be regarded as the second ranked existence of the spiritas.

In terms of status alone, Sheng Mei cast off the Good Fortune Saint Son by countless miles. They were two completely incomparable existences.

"Mm... why are you still following me...?"

Lin Ming turned his head. Behind him, the red-dressed little girl was hugging the kirin fruit in her hands, a shy expression on her face.

“I’ve given the kirin fruit back to you. Our deal has ended.”

Lin Ming said. But, the red-dressed little girl continued to stare at him with a blank expression for a long time. She nodded, but didn’t move away.

Lin Ming was surprised. “Do you have something you want to say?”

He could feel that the red-dressed little girl wanted to speak but was hesitant to do so.

The little girl parted her lips and said, “Y-y-you have a very nice smell on your body… i-it… is a very f-f-familiar feeling…”

“Mm?”

Lin Ming was stunned. He didn’t know what the little girl meant.

Familiar smell? Could it be Yan Littlefish?

Lin Ming immediately thought of Yan Littlefish. Because he had come into contact with Yan Littlefish for a period of time, he had the aura of Yan Littlefish on his body. Could this red-dressed little girl be related to Fishy?

Lin Ming was about to speak, but the red-dressed little girl’s eyes actually moved down to Lin Ming’s stomach. “Over there… is something I am familiar with…”

Lin Ming subconsciously traced his stomach. This spot caused a strange color to come over his face. A thought flashed in his mind.

For a human, this area was where the dantian was located. When a martial artist stepped into the Divine Sea realm, the dantian evolved into an inner world. The area that the red-dressed little girl was looking at was Lin Ming’s inner world.

Although the red-dressed little girl’s eyes were incomparably pure and soft, Lin Ming could feel that her gaze was extremely sharp, as if she were seeing through his inner world.

Unknowingly, Lin Ming revolved his true essence to seal up his inner world. But even so, the red-dressed little girl continued to stare unblinkingly at Lin Ming's stomach.

As if she was confirming something.

It couldn't be…

An idea popped into Lin Ming's mind, one that caused his heart to shake and his breath to quicken.

Could this red-dressed little girl be looking at the Magic Cube!?

A nice smell, a familiar feeling…

Lin Ming certainly wouldn't think that he himself was extraordinary enough to arouse any intimate feelings in the red-dressed little girl. If so, then the most likely explanation was that she was referring to the Magic Cube in his inner world!

This was because Lin Ming always felt that this red-dressed little girl had the greatest connection to soul force.

Her life experiences were certainly not simple.

If the red-dressed little girl was truly referring to the Magic Cube, then she was the first being that Lin Ming had encountered who could sense the Magic Cube in his inner world!

Even when Lin Ming was deep beneath Immemorial Imperial City and encountered the Ancient Elysium Seal, that old monster who had served Empyrean Divine Seal and lasted through the previous great calamity still hadn't been able to sense the Magic Cube. Only when he brought it out did it recognize the Magic Cube.

But now, in the presence of this red-dressed little girl, Lin Ming hadn't used the Magic Cube at all and yet she had still recognized it; this caused him to feel an inexplicable sense of crisis.

As he looked at the red-dressed little girl, his eyes became uncertain.

The red-dressed little girl's heart skipped a beat and she subconsciously took a step back, somewhat afraid of Lin Ming. She had seen the haunting light in his eyes.

"Y-y-y-y-y-ou..." The red-dressed little girl nervously said, her voice beginning to heavily stutter once more. She stubbornly hugged the kirin fruit to her chest like a frightened little rabbit.

Seeing the red-dressed little girl in such a state, Lin Ming let out a long sigh. As he thought of himself just now, he felt a deep sense of shame.

These past years he had been far too sensitive and had unwittingly formed the habit of strangling any crises before they could rise. However, he could sense that this red-dressed little girl was guarded against any other strangers, but towards him, she held a rare trust.

All of this was likely because of the Magic Cube.

The Magic Cube had caused a transformation to Lin Ming's soul, becoming faintly similar to something which Sheng Mei had said before – the 'Eternal Soul'.

And to this red-dressed little girl who had a profound connection to soul force, this Eternal Soul likely gave her a deep sense of familiarity.

"I-I-I... won't say anything..."

The little girl rapidly breathed out. At these times, she was quite intelligent. She discovered that there was some secret in Lin Ming's inner world that she couldn't tell anyone.

"Do you want to come with me?"

Lin Ming asked after thinking for a little while.

The red-dressed little girl's pitch black eyes went wide. She stared at Lin Ming for a long time and then slowly nodded, "Mm."

"Okay, let's go then." Lin Ming turned and flew away.

As for the red-dressed little girl, she turned into pure soul force and followed Lin Ming.

She was silent and without presence – not even an Empyrean could discover her.

As Lin Ming flew, he probed the token in his spatial ring.

"My merit points have risen to 600 million, but I still need 400 million!"

Lin Ming frowned, a cold light glittering in his eyes.

In the Akashic Dream Battlefield, just around less than a year had passed.

He still had two years remaining. He had to hunt enough masters and collect the remaining 400 million!

The power of his divine sense rippled outwards, spreading out for hundreds of miles. Lin Ming discovered there were very few martial artists around him.

Because of his killing spree just now, killing the Purple Chestnut King, annihilating Great World Kings, and even slaying Empyrean Myriad Ghost, it seemed as if this entire landscape had become a desolate wilderness, a place people subconsciously avoided. They were likely scared that Lin Ming would appear nearby.

In the current Akashic Dream Battlefield, Lin Ming had become a dark star.

"Since no one's here, I'll just have to look for them."

…………..

Akashic Dream Battlefield, atop a 100,000 foot cliff.

The winds were cold.

A giant nest hung on the edge of this 100,000 foot cliff, as if it were trying to block out the skies.

Each piece of grass used to construct this nest was as large as a giant log.

Waves of brilliant light emitted from the nest.

In the middle of this nest, a group of people in different colored robes were respectfully kneeling, afraid to even take a deep breath.

At the center of the nest there was the corpse of a giant roc beast. Its bloody wounds had already coagulated.

This roc beast contained a horrifying combat strength in the Akashic Dream Battlefield. But now, it had been slain and its meat had been torn off.

A bonfire had been lit. A fat middle-aged man was draining away blood from the roc beast even as he grinned at the group of kneeling people.

In front of him were dense rows of fragrant spirit medicines and all sorts of heavenly materials, all of them shining with a gorgeous light.

“Jejeje, Severed Soul Palace, Dragon Fang Faction, your loyalty isn’t too bad. I will accept these treasures. The soul beasts that you want to kill, I will help you kill them. As for the Leafnet Valley and Mount Qin, since they are your enemies, I can conveniently wipe them from the Akashic Dream Battlefield while I’m at it.” A monstrous light shined in the fat middle-aged man’s eyes as he smiled.

Leafnet Valley and Mount Qin were both small sects from the Soul World, similar in size to Zenith Palace. Although they were small sects, they still had half-step World Kings leading them on this trip to the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

Yes, the fat middle-aged man's tone considered these groups to be as little as ants. He said he could casually exterminate them all.

As for his words, the ones kneeling to him were clearly convinced they were true.

The two groups that were spoken to were suddenly ecstatic with joy.

"Thank you, Lord Allheart."

"If Lord Allheart is willing to help, that is truly the good fortune of my Dragon Fang Faction."

"Of course. As a Great World King, even a World King would collapse in a single blow before him. Even this giant roc beast was instantly slain by Lord Allheart... those people from Leafnet Valley are in for a bad spell of luck this time. Once they are eliminated, we'll be able to stay here longer and can obtain more merit points that we can use to exchange for things outside! In the Soul World, the difference between our sects will slowly increase and we can begin our plans to suppress them!"

"Lord Allheart, we will definitely obtain more treasure to offer tribute to you..." Someone carefully said.

But then, their words were interrupted by a loud explosion.

This explosion was caused by someone slowly walking towards them.

After several breaths of time, everyone saw someone's shadowy figure slowly approach – it was a black-haired youth.

"In this area there is only you, a single Great World King?" The black-haired youth looked up at Great World King Allheart who had just been desperately eating food.

This black-haired youth was Lin Ming, who had just left the ancient galaxy battlefield.

He had flown for a long time and had finally found his first prey.

Chapter 1827 – One Billion Merit Points

Chapter 1827 – One Billion Merit Points

…

…

…

“Brat, you’re asking to die!”

“You dare speak to Lord Allheart like this? Not even a god can save you now!”

“So it’s nothing but a human bastard. It seems he doesn’t know how to spell the character death!”

The elites of the various sects began to stir up, violently shouting at Lin Ming.

Some people were already preparing to attack Lin Ming. In their opinion, Lord Allheart wouldn’t bother personally getting rid of a stupid baby like this who didn’t know the difference between the heavens and earth. They wanted to help Lord Allheart and gain a bit more of a favorable impression.

However, just as all of them stood up and were preparing to dismember Lin Ming, they discovered that Lord Allheart had actually turned blue. The spirit food in his hands had fallen out of his grip, rolling around everywhere.

As Lord Allheart’s eyes stared at Lin Ming, they were filled with disbelief.

This caused everyone to be confused. For some reason, it seemed that Lord Allheart was afraid of this youth.

“You… you are that… Lin… Lin Muk!?”

Allheart suddenly gasped. As one of the masters of the Akashic Dream Battlefield, he had gone to see the battle between Lin Ming and Empyrean Myriad Ghost. When he saw the fireworks in the skies, he planned to grab onto some advantages during the chaotic mess.

But after he saw Lin Ming's aggressive methods when he killed nine Great World Kings and began subduing even an Empyrean, he had already fled far away.

That had been a vivid memory. How could he forget Lin Ming's face!?

"What!?"

As everyone heard this name, all of them stared with wide eyes. They had never met Lin Muk before but they had heard his name.

For a time, everyone looked at Lin Ming with panic on their faces.

That was right… Lin Muk was a human, and this youth in front of them was also human!

"The death star has come. Everyone quickly run!"

It was unknown just who shouted this but once the first person began fleeing, everyone else followed suit, so scared that they almost peed their pants.

Allheart's grin had fallen away. He looked at Lin Ming with wide eyes, all of his guards up.

"You are Lin Muk? Good, I've been wanting to experience your moves and see whether you are worth your name. Take my saber!"

Suddenly, endless soul force shot out from Allheart's eyes, shaped like sabers.

Every blade tore through space, emitting an infinite mystic power that was shrouded in strange black energy.

After using this move, Allheart diabolically grinned, seeming as if he were sure to win.

But in the next moment, he wildly fled through the void like a black tornado. He wasn't an idiot to stay here and actually fight. This freakish human had actually forced Chaos Demon God to retreat, so even if he ran away, no one would laugh at him for it. However, if he were to become Lin Ming's merit points, it simply wasn't worth it.

Lin Ming stepped forwards. The red spear in his hands rose like a rising red dragon, emitting endless crimson strength.

Woosh - !

Spear and man became one. The endless soul force sabers were completely twisted apart by his momentum, all of them breaking apart.

In Allheart's horrified and panicked eyes, the long spear was like a dragon that pierced through him, instantly killing him.

As for the other influences who were fleeing, they felt a formidable and familiar aura immediately disappear behind them, leaving them frightened out of their minds. Lord Allheart had died just like that? That was a Great World King... they had to run away quicker otherwise they would become a part of that death star Lin Muk's merit points!

However, they didn't realize that Lin Ming was only watching them recklessly flee without the faintest hint of interest in chasing after them.

These people were simply too mediocre. Even if he killed them, the merit points he could obtain would be limited.

“I have to kill some more Great World Kings... I wonder where that Chaos Demon God is hiding... the Akashic Dream Battlefield is too large and he is also skilled in concealment techniques. If he tries his best to hide himself from me, it will be almost impossible to find him!”

Feeling the merit points in his token rise by a little, Lin Ming was still unsatisfied.

"In this Akashic Dream Battlefield, the various influences have sent out their outstanding elites. The sect masters should have decent merit points."

As Lin Ming thought this, he rapidly flew away.

…………..

Like this, Lin Ming blazed a path of slaughter through the Akashic Dream Battlefield. He constantly searched out prey and killed them all, allowing his merit points to slowly grow.

As Lin Ming expected, Chaos Demon God didn't appear again.

Once one entered the Akashic Dream Battlefield, they had to stay for the full three years and would be unable to leave midway.

Thus, Lin Ming could confirm that Chaos Demon God was hiding somewhere.

As a glorious and renowned Empyrean, he naturally wasn't willing to serve as a stepping stone for a junior.

When Chaos Demon God didn't attack Lin Ming when he was wounded, Lin Ming had already guessed Chaos Demon God's plans.

Besides Empyreans, even Great World Kings and half-step Empyreans were not easy to find.

As Lin Ming continued his endless massacre, the name of Death God Lin Muk spreading out far and wide. The high level figures from many influences trembled in fear upon hearing this name, dreading that they would meet him.

Like this, a year passed.

Lin Ming experienced innumerable battles. However, none of these opponents had been able to make him seriously fight. Even so, searching for them in this giant Akashic Dream Battlefield was a good way of tempering Lin Ming's skills.

He was like an extraordinary hunter that was becoming increasingly familiar with his hunting abilities.

Death God Lin Muk became a nightmare-like existence in the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

Slowly, several more months passed. Lin Ming's merit points nearly reached a billion; killing another Great World King should be enough.

He flew across a nameless mountain valley. As he was flying over, bursts of medicinal fragrance met his nose.

He could see that deep within the mountain valley, there were small shards of ice slowly spreading out, cold to the extreme.

Within this ice was intermittent waves of fresh medicinal fragrance that gladdened the heart.

This was a spirit medicine, and around this spirit medicine, many people were gathered, including some people that Lin Ming was familiar with.

"This profound spring lotus was discovered by our Zenith Palace first, yet you still want to steal it!" Jaderiver shouted out loud at the people surrounding her.

A profound spring lotus was said to be one of the better spirit medicines found within the Akashic Dream Battlefield. One could refine this profound spring lotus into incense sticks, and lighting a single incense stick could help a spiritas cultivate their divine soul. It was extremely beneficial to their soul force.

The elite squad of Zenith Palace had passed through days of battle. Now, their original numbers of a couple hundred had been reduced to a little more than 40 people. Moreover, their Vice Palace Master had also suffered tremendous internal wounds.

If this continued, then the remaining disciples of Zenith Palace would find it hard to last until the three year deadline of the Akashic Dream Battlefield. But luckily for them, even if their entire squad was eliminated, their accumulated merit points would remain; it wouldn't reset to zero with their deaths.

These people that surrounded Zenith Palace came from three different large sects. Of them, Skycave Cult was the most powerful one amongst them; they were originally several times larger than Zenith Palace.

This time, Zenith Palace had discovered the profound spring lotus. But at the same time, Skycave Cult and the other sects had also discovered it and had only been a single step behind. Zenith Palace had merely been the closest ones.

"You Zenith Palace people, you're nothing but a bunch of old and disabled weaklings. If you know your limits then hurry up and screw off. Otherwise, not only will you not obtain this spirit medicine but you'll also have to leave your corpses here!" A Great Elder of the Skycave Cult smirked.

As this Great Elder looked at the people from Zenith Palace, it was like he was already looking at a group of dead people.

The people from the other two groups also had cold and gloomy expressions. They stared at the people from Zenith Palace, remaining motionless.

At this time, everyone from Zenith Palace had ugly complexions.

"Haha, all of you screw off, that spirit medicine is mine!" A mocking voice echoed through the mountain valley. Everyone looked up to see a fat man standing atop a mountain peak with a wide smile on his face.

When this fat man had just entered the Akashic Dream Universe, he had an argument with Zenith Palace at Emperor City.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

A group of people leapt down from the 100,000 foot mountain peak, landing on the ground like a pack of lithe leopards, right in the middle of a group of people.

Seeing this fat man and his group, the severely wounded Zenith Vice Palace Master had an increasingly ugly complexion. Zenith Palace had already suffered terrible casualties and now they bumped into this group of people brought by the fat man; their situation was becoming increasingly worse.

“Hehe, all of you from Zenith Palace, I’ve already placed tracking marks on your bodies. I didn’t have much hope for you all, but I never imagined you would obtain such a rare treasure. Senior Solitude!”

The fat man shouted out loud. Then, from the void, a one-legged old man with tattered robes and disheveled hair stepped down from the air, his entire body covered with dense soul force runes.

“One-legged World King!”

Someone said with a sound transmission, not daring to say a single word. This one-legged old monster was a peak Great World King. In the past he had entered seven cults, but had been expelled from each one. However along the way, he had cultivated deep and extraordinary abilities. He was a bizarre and eccentric man, prone to tantrums during which he went on frequent killing sprees.

Upon seeing the One-legged World King appear, the Zenith Palace disciple called Xiao Chi was inexplicably frightened.

The One-legged World King was a petty and vindictive individual who never forgot his grudges. Several years ago at the Emperor God Wall, Zenith Palace had bumped into this One-legged World King and Xiao Chi had inadvertently blurted out a comment about him.

At the time, the One-legged World King had threatened to kill her.

“Senior Solitude, according to our previous agreement these spirit medicines will be handed over to you. As for these people, you simply need to beat them half to death so that our Divine Wind Valley can kill them and obtain some merit points.”

The fat man grinned, his eyes shining as he swept his gaze over everyone.

“Despicable!” Jaderiver indignantly shouted. She never imagined that the fat man would secretly move against Zenith Palace and also join forces with the One-legged World King to eliminate them.

“It’s not a problem!” The One-legged World King said, not even placing this crowd of ants in his eyes.

And just as he was about to attack and kill all these ants, he suddenly felt his back turn cold. He swiveled around, and at some unknown time, a black-clothed youth had appeared behind him. This black-clothed youth was staring at him with indifferent eyes, as if he were looking at a corpse.

“I’m missing one more. You’ll do just fine.”

Lin Ming looked at this One-legged World King and naturally remembered who he was.

“What!?”

The One-legged World King didn’t immediately respond. He hadn’t seen Lin Ming before, because he hadn’t been present for Lin Ming’s battle against Empyrean Myriad Ghost.

Lin Ming didn’t bother saying anything more. He grasped the Phoenix Blood Spear and thrust out right towards the One-legged World King’s chest!

“You are courting death!”

The One-legged World King was incensed. He never thought that this youth who didn’t know the disparity between the heavens and earth would actually attack him. It was like he was trying to commit suicide.

He wanted to strike Lin Ming to death with a palm. But just as he lifted his hand, Lin Ming's spear seemed to pass through space, piercing through his chest with an unbelievable speed.

Puff!

The One-legged World King's protective spirit essence tore apart like wet paper!

The Phoenix Blood Spear twisted, crushing the heart and causing blood to shoot out!

The One-legged World King was still in the stance of lifting his hand. His eyes were filled with disbelief. He didn't know how his heart had been so easily pierced by someone.

Bang!

Lin Ming's true essence erupted. Blood gushed out from the One-legged World King's head as his meridians were ripped to shreds, completely cutting off his life.

Like this, a Great World King was killed like a minion upon someone's spear. It seemed no different from a mortal dying.

"A billion merit points… I finally have it."

Lin Ming pulled back his spear. The corpse of the One-legged World King fell down to the earth like a tumbling dead dog…

Chapter 1828 – The End of the Battlefield

Chapter 1828 – The End of the Battlefield

…

…

…

"Senior… Senior Solitude!"

The fat man's face turned ashen. In his opinion, the One-legged World King was a god-like existence, yet he had been killed like a chicken?

He felt as if he were living in some bizarre dream.

Lin Ming's spear seemed average and simple, so why hadn't the One-legged World King been able to avoid it?

Rather, in the fat man's thoughts, even if the One-legged World King decided not to dodge, that spear still shouldn't have been able to harm him at all.

Not only was the fat man in a daze, but so was everyone else. With their eyesight, they naturally weren't able to discern the mysterious Laws within Lin Ming's spear strike, nor were they able to judge how fast Lin Ming's spear had been. Because of the confusion brought by the Space and Time Laws, Lin Ming's spear gave off the feeling of an endless illusion, making it seem incomparably slow.

"You… you're that human from Emperor City!"

The fat man remembered Lin Ming. At Emperor City, Lin Ming's status as a human had left an impression on him. However, his complexion now changed, as if he seemed to recall something horrifying.

He wasn't an idiot; he instantly thought of who Lin Ming might really be!

However, before he could even say anything, the Phoenix Blood Spear was also piercing towards his throat!

As the fat man saw this spear coming towards him, he wanted to move away. But in that moment, he felt his body locked down by an inexplicable power of Laws, rooting his every action in place. All he could do was stare haplessly on as this spear came shooting towards him.

"This is the reason why Senior Solitude wasn't able to avoid that killing strike?"

This was the fat man's last thought in the Akashic Dream Battlefield. With a light popping sound, the spear penetrated through his throat.

The fat man's life had been instantly severed.

Two people had continuously died, included among them a top master like the One-legged World King. Even so, Lin Ming didn't erupt with any aura at all, and he didn't even seem to take a single step anywhere.

Such a scene was truly frightening.

"Death God Lin Muk..."

Someone sputtered out. They weren't ignorant when it came to the news that was being spread around. They knew there was a horrifying youth who had slain Empyrean Myriad Ghost and had been hunting down World Kings and Great World Kings.

To them, a Great World King was an unreachable existence. But to Lin Ming, they were only walking merit points.

They recalled what Lin Ming had said when he killed the One-legged World King.

"A billion merit points… I finally have it."

With this, how could they not know who Lin Ming was?

"He's killed enough to reach… a billion merit points."

Everyone found this hard to imagine. The merit points that Lin Ming mentioned must be after his skeletal age was factored in. The original amount must be an astronomical figure.

Lin Ming turned his head and looked at the gathered people, causing them all to be scared witless.

"Screw off!"

Lin Ming harshly said. Towards these weaklings, he couldn't be bothered to kill them.

With this, people scattered in droves, fleeing in all directions.

However, the many disciples of Zenith Palace remained. This was because their Senior-apprentice Sister Jaderiver hadn't moved.

Jaderiver looked at Lin Ming. She wanted to speak but hesitated.

Lin Ming looked at Jaderiver. During this trip into the Akashic Dream Battlefield, Lin Ming had crossed paths with the disciples of Zenith Palace twice; they could be considered as sharing a strand of fate. Moreover, when Lin Ming entered the Akashic Dream Battlefield, he had used a token from Zenith Palace to do so.

"The profound spring lotus is yours."

Lin Ming had already heard the name of this spirit medicine from Zenith Palace and the other influences here. As a spirit medicine that was worth less than a transcendent divine pill, Lin Ming had no need for it at all.

If he gave this spirit medicine to Zenith Palace, it could be considered as completing their cycle of karma.

“Lin Muk…”

Jaderiver seemed to want to say something, but just as she parted her lips, Lin Ming’s figure had already disappeared into the endless skies. The only thing left was his voice that echoed through the mountain valley.

As time passed, the name of Death God Lin Muk experienced an unprecedented peak, but afterwards, talk of him began to die down. He appeared a few more times until finally he completely vanished.

However, at this time, most of the masters within the Akashic Dream Battlefield, not including Chaos Demon God who was still hiding somewhere, had already perished.

As for Lin Ming, he returned once more to the mystic realm where the Asura Road Master and the ancient spiritas king had fought. He began to peacefully meditate on the Laws in that ancient ruin once more.

His cultivation had risen far too quickly; he needed time to stabilize himself.

Time slowly passed. Lin Ming calmly meditated at the edge of the abyss. As for the red-dressed little girl, she hovered like a ghost in that mystic realm, often wandering in a daze around Lin Ming. She would sit on a pitch black cliff and look into the stars shining in the distance, as if remembering something that had occurred in times long gone.

Lin Ming didn’t know what the red-dressed little girl was recalling, but he could feel that during these past days her speaking had become increasingly smooth, and she didn’t stutter as much as she used to.

With this, the three year deadline arrived…

………..

Outside the Akashic Dream Battlefield, at Emperor City –

A powerful aura surged into the skies.

The clouds in the sky were torn apart like pieces of cloth.

A magnificent palace emitted a sun-bright light, dazzling as it floated in the void, exuding a sense of awe and power.

Standing outside the palace were a number of maids. All of them had their auras restrained; it was clear they had amazing cultivations.

There was also a mountain-sized golden chariot that emitted a boundless light. It faintly struggled with the floating palace, making others unable to look directly at it.

There was also a powerful figure standing high in the clouds, shrouded in shadows. It was impossible to see his appearance, but he exuded a vast aura that was as deep as a sea. He was definitely some absolute powerhouse, and no one dared to underestimate him.

These were great influences from all over. They came here to meet the proud children of heaven who had entered the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

“The Akashic Dream Battlefield will close soon. My descendants certainly must have shined with glory, suppressing all the other heroes.”

“Purple Chestnut will certainly have brought honor to my spirit race.” A tall king of the spirit race said.

“Hehe, just being a genius isn’t enough to rise to prominence. There are some old monsters in there. This time, I wonder just how many so-called geniuses of their sects must have been defeated within.” Someone said. Indeed, a genius was terrifying, but compared to those old monsters that had been cultivating for a long time, they were naturally of a lower level.

If these old monsters disregarded their status to attack these young elites, then those young elites would suffer serious losses.

The scene became increasingly grand. Many influences had entered the Akashic Dream Battlefield. Now, they all rushed to Emperor City to greet the opening of the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

The Akashic Dream Battlefield was only a tiny part of the Akashic Dream Universe. The Akashic Dream Universe was far too broad and encompassed the seven Heavens of the Soul World. There was more than one Akashic Dream Battlefield, and these different Akashic Dream Battlefields opened at different times.

Wanting to enter the Akashic Dream Universe was easy, but wanting to enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield was different. One required tokens, and even large influences had limited numbers of tokens.

High in the skies, a limitlessly large purple gate exuded a glorious light, blinding to the eyes.

An inexplicable strength flowed outwards.

This gate had been closed for three years, and now it was finally opening. This also signaled the end of the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

“They’re coming out.”

Someone excitedly shouted from the crowds of people. There were some ordinary influences who were particularly concerned about their results. They hoped that their disciples were able to pressure their rivals and gain some face for their sect.

For many disciples, the results from the Akashic Dream Battlefield concerned the future development of their sect. How could they not be nervous!?

In that moment, the purple gate rumbled open. Horrifying air waves burst out, following by innumerable figures that whizzed by.

A powerful scent of blood and iron filled the air.

Many influences moved forwards to greet these people.

A youth flew in front of an old man and took out a token. The old man chuckled happily.

“My good child, you’ve done well. Hehe, you’ve truly brought a smile to grandpa’s face.” The old man lovingly patted this youth’s head. He could sense the light shining from the merit points token and could tell that his grandson had killed many people. He was extremely proud of his grandson’s achievements.

“Wonderful, it seems my Blood Tree Clan did quite well. You’ve killed five or six people each... mm... and this also includes a peak Holy Lord powerhouse? Good, I am very satisfied.” The Blood Tree Clan Elder said, looking towards the several Blood Tree Clan youths. They had strange turbans wrapped around their heads that exuded a mystical strength; it was quite bizarre.

“What? Our sect only has you remaining? Who did this!?” Another Elder howled out in sorrow. As he looked at the scarred disciples in front of him, his slaughter intent soared to the heavens.

“The Deep East Family... actually plotted against you all... good, very good, I didn’t think they would be so vicious!” Another sect master said through a clenched jaw.

All of the various disciples began to vigorously search for their own disciples in the throngs of people.

Some influences were pleased to see their disciples have outstanding results. Some influences gnashed their teeth, preparing to retaliate against their enemies.

For a time, the scene was bustling with activity.

In front of the Emperor God Wall, masses of people milled about.

Chapter 1829 - Fall of an Empyrean

Chapter 1829 - Fall of an Empyrean

…

…

…

The boundless Emperor God Wall had stood tall for countless hundreds of millions of years.

The pressure that rolled off the Emperor God Wall was as oppressive as a cage. No one dared to approach too close. As for those people with poor cultivations, their spiritual seas would be directly crushed to smithereens if they were too near.

Suddenly, in front of the Emperor God Wall, a dazzling light shined out.

From the crowds of people, several hundred robed youths raised up their tokens together.

Their tokens began to erupt with a glorious brilliance.

Each ray of light shined upon the Emperor God Wall and was intercepted by a rune.

These runes turned into a number in the void.

As more and more beams of light shined out from the tokens, all sorts of numbers formed in space, finally becoming a numerical value.

“93,420 merit points!”

In front of many disciples, a sect Elder with a snow white beard shivered with excitement as he read this number.

This was the total number of merit points obtained by everyone in their sect.

“Wonderful!” A Sovereign from a small sect wearing an embroidered robe smiled brightly. This result had far exceeded his expectations.

It was considered a good result to have a hundred disciples emerge from the Akashic Dream Battlefield, but this time, there were several hundred people leaving. This was an event worth celebrating.

These merit point would provide their sect with many advantages.

The sects and various influences gathered in front of the Emperor God Wall, using their tokens to exchange for merit points.

Those from the same sect could combine their tokens together so that their merit points would become the total merit points of the sect.

Some smaller sects were ecstatic. They discovered that the number of people who survived this round of the Akashic Dream Battlefield was far higher than before.

Some of these smaller sects even managed to obtain several tens of thousands of merit points; this was far too lucky. These merit points also indicated that their sects were quite strong. The sect leaders all grinned from ear to ear, bursting with joy.

In front of the Emperor God Wall, all sorts of voices rose up.

The proud children of heaven from many influences appeared together, meeting those who waited for them.

But there were also some influences that were extremely gloomy, the expressions of their people dark and somber.

These influences discovered that their people actually didn’t appear.

“The entire spirit race together only has 890,000 merit points?” In front of the Emperor God Wall, the spirit race influence’s merit points were displayed for all to see.

This immediately caused a loud disturbance and intense discussion.

“How is that possible? The spirit race is such a large clan so it’s unbelievable that their total merit points are less than 3 million. But this time they actually have less than a million.”

“Hey, did you all notice that the Purple Chestnut King hasn’t appeared? Did he die inside?” Some influences were beyond shocked as they saw this.

“Aish…”

A spirit race Elder was enraged, his voice rising like a billowing thunder cloud, causing the air in front of the Emperor God Wall to violently ripple.

“Who killed the Purple Chestnut King of my people? Who killed my spirit race’s five Great World Kings?”

“Hmm? How come the shaman hasn’t appeared?”

“Where did Elder Duanmu go? Was he killed inside?”

From the camps of some large influences, angry roars began to sound out.

In front of the Emperor God Wall, embarrassing scenes began to take place. There were some large influences that couldn’t even obtain a million merit points.

In comparison to the harvests of the smaller influences, the contrast was far too sharp.

Many people were startled to discover that from those large influences that couldn’t reach a million merit points, their shamans or Great World Kings had perished.

The truth was that because of their age, these Great World Kings couldn't provide many merit points to the sect to begin with. However, they could play a great deterring role; they were considered the protective talismans of these sects.

With a Great World King accompanying these groups, the situation would be completely different. But if these Great World Kings died, the sect teams might be eaten up by others without anything remaining.

Soon, the relative disparity in merit points increased by several times.

"...What did you say? The Purple Chestnut King and the five Great World Kings were all slain by a human called Lin Muk?"

From the spirit race camp, a lion-like old man roared out loud, angrily shouting at a spirit race youth.

The youth trembled as he responded. Death God Lin Muk brought far too great a pressure to him.

"The geniuses I taught were... all killed by Lin Muk? Who is this Lin Muk?"

Many sects listened, startled. They didn't know who Lin Muk was.

"How arrogant! Thoroughly investigate that person's status for me, I will make sure he regrets being born!" A Great World King influence's sect leader shouted out in a rage, his eyes flashing with a cold killing intent.

And at this time, some influences above the Great World King level were having their own suspicions.

"How come the old ancestor hasn't emerged yet?"

The Yellow River Palace was slowly floating in the sky.

Those who stood above the palace walls were half-step Empyreans or Great World Kings. Their strengths were outstanding. However, each one was covered in dense ghost energy and followed by ghostly phantoms that endlessly howled. It was hard to tell if they were people at all.

These people were from Yellow Springs Palace, a sect created by Empyrean Myriad Ghost.

“Could it be that the old ancestor is still engaged in a massive killing spree within?”

“It shouldn’t be. The reason the old ancestor came here was for an ancient rival of his. He shouldn’t be interested in these juniors, and in any case the Akashic Dream Battlefield will be closing soon. The old ancestor should have come out by now.”

“Maybe that old scumbag Chaos is bothering the old ancestor.” A Yellow Springs Palace disciple guessed.

A number of divided opinions rang out as more and more Yellow Springs Palace disciples chimed in. Slowly, they began to suspect something had happened, and faintly felt an unlucky premonition approach.

“Did Empyrean Myriad Ghost perish? Was he killed by Chaos Demon God?”

A large influence couldn’t help but wonder as they watched this all happen.

“Empyrean Myriad Ghost is the domineering and rampant kind of person. If he won then he should already be swaggering his way out. Now the Akashic Dream Battlefield is closing soon and he still hasn’t appeared, that might mean he was killed by Chaos Demon God.” Someone boldly suggested.

As many people heard this, they felt this was the most reasonable explanation.

As the people from Yellow Springs Palace heard these discussions, they became angry and even more worried.

“Something’s wrong, even Chaos Demon God hasn’t emerged!”

Someone discovered that across from them, Chaos Divine Palace was also floating up and down, the people within keeping their auras restrained. Chaos filled the air around them as they quietly waited for their Empyrean to appear.

Facing the glowering gaze from those of Yellow Springs Palace, the people from Chaos Divine Palace stared back, their eyes just as fierce and filled with a thick slaughter energy.

As the great purple gate was about to close, a vast chaos aura as deep as a sea enveloped everyone present.

“It’s the old ancestor, the old ancestor has come out!” In the camp of Chaos Divine Palace, someone began to cheer out loud.

They saw an old man in jade green robes appear, his entire body covered with chaos energy.

This old man’s pupils emitted a terrifying chaotic light that shot out in all directions.

As he appeared, everyone was alarmed.

“Haha! My Chaos Divine Palace’s old ancestor has emerged!”

“Truly worthy of being our old ancestor, he even slew that old thief from Yellow Springs Palace! My Chaos Divine Palace is truly above all else!”

“That’s right, how could Yellow Springs Palace possibly hope to compete with my Chaos Divine Palace?”

Everyone was watching as Chaos Divine Palace began celebrating. As for those from Yellow Springs Palace, their faces turned as purple as frozen eggplants. All of them were agitated; it was obvious that their previous guesses appeared increasingly true.

Many disciples from Chaos Divine Palace moved forwards to greet Chaos Demon God. But as they approached, they were all sent flying away with a thick air wave summoned by Chaos Demon God.

“Old ancestor!”

A disciple cried out in panic. However, Chaos Demon God didn’t seem to hear this at all, not even bothering to glance in the direction of these disciples. Without even going to Chaos Divine Palace, his face darkened, becoming incredibly dreadful. His figure flashed and he flew off into the distance at an incredible speed.

The people from Chaos Divine Palace looked helplessly on as Chaos Demon God flew far away. All of them were left in a silent daze.

“Where did old ancestor go?”

“Old ancestor seems to be in a bad mood…”

“What do we do now?”

“Hurry up and chase after him!” The people from Chaos Divine Palace were frightened. The higher level disciples began to quickly activate the palace and break through the void, chasing after Chaos Demon God.

Crowds of confused outer court disciples were left floating in the air, all of them dumbfounded. They had absolutely no clue as to what had just happened.

“What’s wrong with that old geezer Chaos Demon God? If he truly won the battle then he shouldn’t be so quiet. Could he have been defeated? If so, then what about our old ancestor?”

The people from Yellow Springs Palace saw Chaos Demon God fly away without a single word. Each of them looked at his vanishing back, their thoughts even more confused.

“What… what did you say!?”

As the many disciples of Yellow Springs Palace were stunned, a loud surprised voice suddenly echoed out.

The cry came from a Great World King Holy Land. And, the one who shouted out loud was this Holy Land's shaman, who had just said he would make Lin Muk regret being born in this world.

"You... say that again?" The old Great World King had a look of utter disbelief crossing his face.

"Yes... yes... what this disciple said is that Empyrean Myriad Ghost started a battle not long after entering the Akashic Dream Battlefield, but... he was killed by Lin Muk. Lin Muk was also severely wounded, and at that time Chaos Demon God had arrived. But, Chaos Demon God didn't dare to attack Lin Ming. After that, Chaos Demon God went missing for the rest of the three year timeline and only appeared today..."

Because of the Holy Land shaman's shout, many people had turned towards him. As they heard what this disciple was saying, all of them were left speechless.

Empyrean Myriad Ghost, an Empyrean level powerhouse, had been slain by Lin Ming. How was this possible!?

As for Chaos Demon God, according to what the disciple had said, he undoubtedly feared Lin Ming, thus he had hidden for all this time and had only appeared today.

An Empyrean had been scared by a human to the point where he didn't dare make an appearance in the remaining three year timeline. Just how could this happen?

The remaining disciples of Chaos Divine Palace all glared at this disciple, but they had no way of refuting this. Their old ancestor leaving in an angry rage without saying a single word was the best proof of what had happened.

As for the shaman who had threatened Lin Ming, he was at a loss for words.

He knew that his disciple wouldn't rashly speak about such important matters. Moreover, the many survivors who had come out from the Akashic Dream Battlefield were all nodding with terrified expressions, confirming what had happened!

The shaman remained silent as the people from Yellow Springs Palace came rushing down from the skies. This time, the only person who entered the Akashic Dream Battlefield from their Yellow Springs Palace had been Empyrean Myriad Ghost. Yellow Springs Palace had no other disciples enter, thus they had no idea what the situation was inside.

“What is his cultivation!?”

The people from Yellow Springs Palace asked.

“I’m not sure.” The Great World King influence disciple shook his head. “It shouldn’t be too high, and his skeletal age wasn’t too old either. He is also a human. Besides Empyrean Myriad Ghost, around 90% of the Great World Kings that died in the Akashic Dream Battlefield were probably because of him…”

Chapter 1830 – Guru Kunyuan

Chapter 1830 – Guru Kunyuan

…

…

…

As the disciple spoke he gulped at the same time. He knew that after mentioning that this person had a low skeletal age and was also a human, it would cause a great reaction.

And indeed, as soon as he finished speaking, the noisy crowds fell silent.

A human had struck down Empyrean Myriad Ghost but had also killed numerous World Kings. Even Chaos Demon God had been forced to patiently hide away for three years in the Akashic Dream Battlefield. Just how could this be!?

The human race had far too many of their inheritances severed and many of their transcendent divine mights and higher grade cultivation methods were controlled by the various large spiritas influences. And on the road of martial artists, understandings of the Heavenly Dao Laws were slowly accumulated generation after generation. A single person had a limited ability, and no matter how talented they were, without inheritances it was impossible to have high achievements.

“He couldn’t have found the ancient ruins left behind by some ancient human supreme elder, right…?”

“That’s possible… but just where did this Lin Muk come from? No one knows anything about him?”

Many disciples who safely came out from the Akashic Dream Battlefield were forcefully interrogated.

However, they all unanimously shook their heads.

At this time, the disciples from Zenith Palace were all terrified.

When Lin Ming was slaughtering his way through the Akashic Dream Battlefield, the young disciples couldn't help but brag to everyone and anyone about Lin Ming and how Lin Ming was related to Zenith Palace.

Luckily, the Zenith Palace Vice Palace Master, Jaderiver, and the others had discovered this and had promptly put an end to it.

In Jaderiver's opinion, Lin Muk had shown graciousness to Zenith Palace. But as the matters about Lin Ming grew increasingly large and dangerous, it was best that a small fish like Zenith Palace pretend as if they didn't know Lin Muk in order to prevent any accidents from occurring.

Otherwise, with Zenith Palace's background, it wouldn't strange if they were completely exterminated in a slightly large storm.

"What do we do…" The Zenith Palace Vice Palace Master muttered, a bitter expression crossing his face.

He was afraid that these influences would decide to vent their rage and frustrations on them.

Jaderiver was also at a loss of what to do. Paper couldn't be used to wrap fire. As these various large influences probed Lin Muk's background, they would eventually find that it led back to Zenith Palace.

“We can only state the facts. That is that we aren’t truly related to Lin Muk and only encountered him by chance. Don’t mention that we saved Lin Muk. For such a terrifying character, even if we didn’t bump into him he still would have awakened sooner or later…”

“I hope so… they won’t involve us just because we met Lin Muk… right?”

As Jaderiver was speaking to the Vice Palace Master, they heard a resounding beast’s roar spread through the air. Jaderiver looked up to see a giant ancient vicious beast pass over the skies of Emperor City, releasing an endless pressure. It stopped right in the open fields before the Emperor God Wall.

This vicious beast was a roc. Its wings spread for a hundred miles wide and its dread-inducing aura covered everyone like a mountain.

The roc opened its beak, and a thick spiritual energy gushed out.

A tall old man with a square jaw and wide shoulders slowly walked out from within the roc.

Following behind him was a team of elite martial artists with sharp appearances.

The old man’s eyes emitted a brilliant light. This light slowly swept over those present.

“Guru Kunyuan!” Jaderiver said, startled.

Compared to the numerous influences at Emperor City, Guru Kunyuan’s arrival was considered relatively common. But to Zenith Palace and those influences around Zenith Palace, Guru Kunyuan was a top master!

This was because these influences were located at the Cardinal Sky World and were subordinate to Cardinal Sky Heavenly Palace.

As for Guru Kunyuan, he was a direct disciple of Empyrean Heavencore and possessed a half-step Empyrean cultivation. It was said that he had a chance of breaking into the Empyrean realm in the next million years. Although this was only a faint hope, it still allowed Guru Kunyuan to be a highly revered figure within the entire Cardinal Sky Heavenly Palace.

This person had a short-fused temper and was not known to be friendly at all.

Seeing him, the people of some small influences from Cardinal Sky World ran up to respectfully greet him.

“Greetings, Guru.”

“Zenith Palace salutes Guru Kunyuan.” A crowd of people bowed with reverence.

“What are your harvests this time?” Guru Kunyuan didn’t bother exchanging niceties; he went straight to the point. The reason he came this time was to inspect the harvests of those that entered the Akashic Dream Battlefield. To the small influences that were attached to Cardinal Sky Heavenly Palace, this inspection was extremely important.

According to the merit points they earned, these small influences would be able to obtain rewards from Empyrean Heavencore.

“Guru, our sect brought 9000 people to the Akashic Dream Battlefield and we have 820 who survived. Our merit points are 87,000.”

“Guru, our Incense Mountain brought 8000 disciples into the Akashic Dream Battlefield and we have 670 who survived. Our merit points are 56,000…”

After listening to Guru Kunyuan’s words, the Sovereigns of some small influences began speaking out the merit points their sects earned.

As Guru Kunyuan heard this, he pleasantly smiled. It was a bit surprising. These small influences had harvested a number of merit points much better than in the past. Could the overall strength of Cardinal Sky World’s sects have increased?

“Zenith Palace, how come you aren’t speaking?” Guru Kunyuan suddenly saw that the Zenith Palace Vice Palace Master had a strange complexion on his face, as if he were hesitating to speak.

It wasn’t just the Vice Palace Master who had an awkward expression, but even the core disciple Jaderiver seemed a bit terrified.

The other influences had already finished reporting, and now only Zenith Palace was left dawdling. Guru Kunyuan’s eyes were like sharp blades as he looked at the people from Zenith Palace.

“Our Zenith Palace has obtained 186,500 merit points…” The Zenith Palace Vice Palace Master said as everyone looked at him.

After this trip into the Akashic Dream Battlefield, Zenith Palace had just around a thousand people remaining. From the elite squad that Jaderiver was in, 30 people had survived. And these 30 people contributed nearly half of these merit points.

“Mm?” Guru Kunyuan was amazed. He recalled that during the last trip into the Akashic Dream Battlefield, Zenith Palace had only harvested several tens of thousands of merit points. Yet, this time they had obtained around 180,000. They had made considerable progress from the past.

“Not bad. Honorable Master Heavencore will be happy to hear this. When the rewards are handed down, your Zenith Palace will enjoy great benefits.”

Guru Kunyuan said with satisfaction.

As the high level figures of Zenith Palace heard that Empyrean Heavencore would bestow upon them great rewards, they all looked at each other, not sure of what to say.

The Zenith Palace Vice Palace Master ambiguously said, “The truth is that our Zenith Palace obtained far more merit points than this…”

“Oh? Zenith Palace has even more merit points? You should have said so earlier!”

Guru Kunyuan was startled to hear this. The Zenith Palace Vice Palace Master had said that their Zenith Palace had obtained far more merit points, but 180,000 merit points was around the limit for a small influence. Just how many more could they possibly have obtained?

“If Zenith Palace has more than 200,000 merit points, then I shall take responsibility and grant you even more rewards!” Guru Kunyuan promised. He thought that Zenith Palace would be excited upon hearing this, but he didn’t think their complexions would twist and they would seem worried.

“What? Are you suspecting that I don’t have the ability to fulfill my promise?”

Guru Kunyuan coldly said, clearly unhappy!

Chapter 1831 – Rapidly Rising Merit Points

Chapter 1831 – Rapidly Rising Merit Points

…

…

…

"No… that's not what I mean… it's just that the situation is a little special so our merit points might not be as simple as just 200-300 thousand." The Zenith Palace Vice Palace Master said with a constipated expression, finding it hard to explain. If possible he didn't want to mention their relationship with Lin Ming, but it seemed things wouldn't go their way.

"What are you being so wishy-washy about! If it's more than 200-300 thousand, then could it be 500 thousand or even a million? That's about the same as a Great World King influence!"

Guru Kunyuan frowned. Some unlucky Great World King influences might not even have a million merit points.

As Guru Kunyuan was unhappy with the Vice Palace Master's attitude, suddenly, on the Emperor God Wall, Zenith Palace's merit points began to rise once more.

"Mm?"

Guru Kunyuan was startled. It seemed that what the Zenith Palace Vice Palace Master said was true; Zenith Palace had more merit points to be countered still!

The merit points rapidly grew, breaking past 200 thousand in the blink of an eye.

"Great!"

Guru Kunyuan nodded. His originally disgruntled expression softened.

In the end, all that mattered were results. If Zenith Palace had good results, then Guru Kunyuan was willing to forgive Zenith Palace for any mistakes they made.

In several moments, the merit points rose to 250,000. Moreover, they continued to quickly increase without slowing down, soon breaking past 300 thousand.

Guru Kunyuan looked at those from Zenith Palace and said with a deep sense of satisfaction, "Well done, your results have truly not shamed you. Rest assured, I will follow my previous agreement and reward Zenith Palace well."

However, before he finished speaking, Zenith Palace's merit points had risen to 350 thousand.

With this, Guru Kunyuan was a bit surprised.

Around 180 thousand merit points should have been the limit of an ordinary World King influence. He never thought they would also reach 350,000 – that was something worth celebrating.

"Old Lao, you fellows didn't do badly at all! I didn't expect you to be hiding something like this! Could you have prepared some secret weapon?"

Guru Kunyuan stroked his beard, the smile on his face becoming ever brighter. When he shouted at the Zenith Palace Vice Palace Master and called him Old Lao, that was an extremely intimate name.

As Guru Kunyuan said, there were indeed some sects that would prepare top secret weapons to bring to the Akashic Dream Battlefield. For instance, Zenith Palace had gone to the Great Desolate Glacier in order to subdue the hornless ice dragon.

As the Vice Palace Master who was called out in such a close manner by Guru Kunyuan, he didn't seem flattered at all. Rather, his expression appeared a bit bitter.

He knew what was happening. Zenith Palace's merit points were rising so quickly because Lin Muk must have finally poured the merit points from his token onto the Emperor God Wall.

Following that, Zenith Palace's merit points would grow, and this speed would become increasingly fast as the growth rate rose exponentially.

"400 thousand! Zenith Palace has truly amazed the world this time!"

Behind Guru Kunyuan, there were some Elders who had followed him here. They were also disciples of Empyrean Heavencore and were all congratulating Zenith Palace together.

"Old Lao, how come you have such an ugly expression? Are you worried that my Cardinal Sky Heavenly Palace won't fulfill the promised rewards? I must say Old Lai, you are being too petty about this. Do you think our dignified Empyrean Heavenly Palace would be so stingy about some rewards? Even if you obtained 500-600 thousand merit points we would still be able to reward you with more than enough."

However, as this disciple spoke, he slowly fell quiet. This was because Zenith Palace's merit points already reached 500 thousand.

Seeing this number continue to rise, a look of doubt crossed his face.

"How come it's still rising? It's already at 500 thousand."

"Unbelievable. Zenith Palace has defied the will of the heavens this time. Soon they'll catch up to some less fortunate Great World King influences."

"For an ordinary World King influence to surpass a Great World King influence, that is a rare feat!"

“Mm, something like this hasn’t occurred too often since ancient times. Normally this sort of thing would only happen when an astonishing genius is born into an ordinary World King influence.”

As the disciples of Cardinal Sky Heavenly Palace were discussing, they were looking over the disciples of Zenith Palace, trying to identify if there was some unrivalled genius amongst their ranks.

“600 thousand… no, it will soon reach 700 thousand!”

Several Cardinal Sky Heavenly Palace disciples were left bewildered. 700 thousand… that would soon surpass the spirit race!

The large spirit race clan only had just over 800 thousand merit points. It was said that they didn’t send out too many disciples and many amongst their ranks had been cut down by some ruthless individual. Even so, no one would suggest that their merit points would be lower than those of Zenith Palace!

“Something’s wrong here…”

Guru Kunyuan frowned.

“It is a bit exaggerated, but still something worth celebrating. If there truly is a peerless genius with astonishing combat strength that is also young enough, they would be capable of affecting the balance to such a degree.”

Behind Guru Kunyuan, some Empyrean disciples chuckled as they spoke.

However, these smiles quickly faded. This was because Zenith Palace’s merit points broke past a million.

One million! Wasn’t this just too ridiculous!?

By all common sense, no matter how fierce Zenith Palace was they still shouldn't be so incredible. If there was some unrivalled genius that appeared at Zenith Palace, then their name should have been heard throughout Cardinal Sky World by now.

"1.5 million, heavens!"

As Zenith Palace's merit points broke past a million, the rate of increase suddenly sped up. Before it rose by 100 thousands, now it rose by 200 thousands.

This left many disciples in a stunned shock.

"Something's definitely wrong!"

The Empyrean disciples of the Cardinal Sky World all rose to their feet, their eyes like perfectly round circles as they stared unblinkingly at the Emperor God Wall.

"3 million, isn't this just defying the heavens?"

People soon discovered that the larger the merit points value, the more terrifying the speed of increase. According to the previous rate, if the speed continued to rise it would soon reach 8 or 9 million.

But at this moment, they realized they were mistaken; the result was far more monstrous than they guessed.

20 million!

Many Empyrean disciples felt their eyeballs nearly pop out of their heads.

And at this time, the other influences also noticed the changes occurring on the Emperor God Wall. The merit points of a small influence were crazily rising!

"What... what's going on!?"

Everyone looked towards the Emperor God Wall. 20 million! Even for an Empyrean Holy Land that sent out their brightest team of elites and achieved the limit of what they could, it would still be hard to reach this number of merit points!

Then… 30 million… 40 million… 50 million…

Guru Kunyuan's face had already turned blue. Just how high would these merit points go?

As for his previous promise of granting rewards to Zenith Palace no matter how many merit points they had, that was a nightmare. Zenith Palace already had 50 million merit points. If it rose any more, then wouldn't the entire Cardinal Sky Heavenly Palace be bankrupted?

"A hundred million! Heavens!"

The chins of many Empyrean disciples nearly fell to the floor.

This situation was beyond all comprehension.

This definitely wasn't caused by Zenith Palace. There must have been some change within the Akashic Dream Battlefield!

After reaching a hundred million, the merit points began to rise by nearly 20 million at a time.

Seeing the number wildly surge up as if it were trying to knock all other numbers out of the way, many people's lips twitched, none of them able to speak.

200 million… 300 million… 400 million…

"How is this happening?"

A Great World King sect leader angrily shouted. This number was far too extraordinary!

"It must be that Lin Muk, it has to be him. Besides him, there is no one else."

“Lin Muk, either he must come from that small sect or he was borrowing their token!”

Many disciples who just emerged from the Akashic Dream Battlefield soon understand what was happening. Although this terrifying merit points value was shocking, it wasn’t out of the realm of disbelief. Rather, they thought it was quite normal.

“How many merit points will he have?”

As everyone began clamoring out loud, Zenith Palace’s merit points soon reached 800 million.

“A billion, it’s definitely going to hit a billion!”

Someone suddenly realized. With a billion points, they could exchange for one of the top tier rewards on the Emperor God Wall!

“That Lin Muk hunted down and slaughtered so many masters all to obtain a top tier reward! Heavens, he actually managed to gather a full billion merit points! Could he be wanting to exchange for the golden page? How horrifying!”

As everyone was shouting out loud, the Zenith Vice Palace Master was startled upon hearing this. Just before they entered the Akashic Dream Battlefield, Lin Ming had asked him about the conditions for exchanging for the golden page. Back then, the Vice Palace Master had been impatient with his questions because he thought it was an impossibility. But now, it seemed that Lin Ming might actually succeed in obtaining it!

If so, then the reason he caused such a tremendous commotion in the Akashic Dream Battlefield and widely publicized his possession of the kirin fruit was all in order to lure countless powerhouses to him so he could kill them!

What a terrifying young man!

And as everyone thought, Lin Ming’s merit points finally stopped at 1.07 billion. This was just enough to exchange for the golden page.

“Where is Lin Muk?”

Someone asked out loud. For a time, everyone’s eyes panned over the crowd.

However, there were too many people standing in front of the Emperor God Wall. With all of these large influences gathered together, it was an extremely messy and chaotic scene. Wasn’t wanting to look for a single person in this sea of people easier said than done?

Moreover, this Lin Muk had most likely hidden his identity, and had probably changed his appearance!

After all, Lin Muk had offended far too many people in the Akashic Dream Battlefield. Moreover, with him wanting to do something so attention-grabbing like exchanging for the golden page, it would be impossible for him to show his true appearance to those here.

As everyone was looking for Lin Muk, the entrance to the Akashic Dream Battlefield closed. If one didn’t leave the Akashic Dream Battlefield before the entrance closed again, then all martial artists within would die. Of course, their true bodies wouldn’t die, but their merit points would be erased.

“Lin Muk is among us!”

Someone shouted out in a bass voice. But, no one knew where he was.

This was a ruthless youth who could even kill an Empyrean at the same cultivation level. If he wanted to hide, wasn’t finding him easier said than done?

Moreover, out of the martial artists present, the one with the highest cultivation was only a half-step Empyrean. After Chaos Demon God left, there were no true Empyreans here.

Who could find Lin Ming?

“That human, the small influence he came from is...”

Many people suddenly thought of looking for the small influence that Lin Ming had entered through. They soon found Zenith Palace!

For a time, the Zenith Vice Palace Master and Jaderiver's complexions turned gray.

What should have come had now come.

Their Zenith Palace had no place to hide.

But luckily for them, they only had a passing relationship with Lin Ming. If they were honest, then they wouldn't be sucked into this mess.

"No wonder, so that youth who killed Empyrean Myriad Ghost was brought by you..."

Guru Kunyuan said with realization. Only now did he understand the Vice Palace Master's constipated expression.

Soon, Jaderiver and the Vice Palace Master were taken away to be questioned. As for Guru Kunyuan, he didn't stop them from being whisked away. After all, there were no consequences to dying in the Akashic Dream Universe, and fighting in Emperor City was forbidden to begin with.

Chapter 1832 – Next to Sheng Mei

Chapter 1832 – Next to Sheng Mei

…

…

…

"Great Desolate Glacier? You're saying that human was buried deep in the snow, half his body iced over, and when your Zenith Palace went there to look for the hornless ice dragon, as a result you ended up finding Lin Muk instead?"

Those from Zenith Palace were taken off by a number of great influences and interrogated separately, so the truth about how they found Lin Ming was soon known.

Zenith Palace naturally didn't dare to hide anything concerning Lin Ming, including how they had misunderstood Lin Ming's strength at the start, and even how they planned to use him as an object of study to further perfect their soul and energy dual cultivation method.

"Early Holy Lord? What are you saying! Are you saying that when you ran into that human he was only at the early Holy Lord realm!?"

Upon hearing of Lin Ming's cultivation, the several Great World Kings present stood up. Those from Yellow Springs Palace were particularly agitated.

"Old man, are you saying that Lin Muk was only at the early Holy Lord realm?"

The direct disciples of Empyrean Myriad Ghost were all morbidly thin like bags of bones. However, each one was exceedingly tall. One of these tall disciples was an old man with green hair. He picked up the Zenith Vice Palace Master as easily as a chicken.

The Zenith Vice Palace Master turned ash white. In front of such a character, his status was nothing to speak of.

“This lowly servant doesn’t dare to lie.”

The Vice Palace Master reluctantly said.

“Are you saying that my honorable master was defeated beneath the hands of an early Holy Lord realm junior!?”

The green-haired old man’s eyes turned blood red, as if he could devour the Vice Palace Master alive. The disciples of Yellow Springs Palace were all covered with a gloomy yin energy and their conduct was strange and bizarre. If they really did eat others it wouldn’t be a surprise at all.

The Vice Palace Master’s palms began to sweat. He grit his teeth and nodded, “Unless Lin Muk was deliberately tricking me… but, it should be true that his skeletal age is extremely low…”

Facing an interrogation from so many large influences, the pressure on the Zenith Vice Palace Master was far too great. If any one of these large influences were stirred up then there wouldn’t be any good result for them at all. There was the possibility that the entirety of Zenith Palace would be annihilated.

“Humph!”

The green-haired old man angrily coughed. Empyrean Myriad Ghost had lost to such a little bastard that he was getting enraged just thinking about it. He had a lot of grievances to vent but didn’t know just who to vent them on.

And at this time, a middle-aged man standing nearby said, “Old Green, stop being angry just because you’ve been disgraced. All the clues indicate that this Lin Muk is indeed a junior and a monstrously talented individual, to the point that none of us can imagine. If you take out your anger on Zenith Palace it won’t be of any use.”

The middle-aged man came from Chaos Divine Palace.

Chaos Divine Palace and Yellow Springs Palace were sworn enemies of each other. But at this time, both of their old ancestors had been defeated by a junior. There was no need to mention Empyrean Myriad Ghost who had been killed by Lin Muk, but even Chaos Demon God had been forced into hiding for the remainder of the three years, not daring to appear in front of Lin Ming. It was only when the Akashic Dream Battlefield opened once more that he left in a huff.

With a common enemy, the originally contentious relationship between Chaos Divine Palace and Yellow Springs Palace loosened a little.

“We have to discuss countermeasures and how to look for Lin Muk. He has offended so many people in the Akashic Dream Battlefield that he’s become the enemy of the public. Moreover, there is definitely some secret on his body, otherwise it would have been impossible to grow to such a degree. Perhaps he obtained an extraordinary ancient lucky chance of some sort.”

In ancient times, humans had been no weaker than the spiritas. There were some human supreme elders who had hidden vaults of astronomical value!

“Yes, in any case we must find this fellow. I suspect he has already left Emperor City by now. What a pity, after a martial artist enters the Akashic Dream Battlefield their true body will be sealed away by the Laws in a different space so it will be impossible to find. Otherwise, everything would work out easier if we could find his true body.”

Many high level figures of these large influences began to form plans together. Lin Ming had slapped all their faces in the Akashic Dream Battlefield and he also likely had some profound treasure hidden on his body. And most important of all, Lin Ming was only a little junior that hadn’t grown yet. In this sort of situation, how could they let Lin Ming go?

As the Elders were plotting together, a loud noise began to rise from outside.

“What is it!?” Old Green roared out, “What are you all making so much noise for!”

“Elder, someone has neared the Emperor God Wall. It might be…”

Before this person finished speaking, the green-haired old man rushed outside, accompanied by the other high level figures of large influences, all of them overflowing with killing intent.

The Emperor God Wall released a horrifying pressure at all times, disallowing anyone from approaching too close. This was true no matter how talented one was and even Empyreans weren’t an exception.

No one could violate the Laws of the Akashic Dream Universe.

But there was one exception. This was if a person had obtained the qualifications to leave behind their name on the Emperor God Wall. Then, the Emperor God Wall would allow this person to approach and carve their name.

Now that someone was approaching the Emperor God Wall, they all thought of one person – Lin Muk!

Bang bang bang!

Masses of people hurtled towards the Emperor God Wall. They could see that in the far off distance, a blue-clothed youth was flying towards the Emperor God Wall with a smug expression on his face. The horrifying pressure that scared off all others didn’t seem to exist to him at all. As he approached the Emperor God Wall on the wind, his steps seemed calm and stable.

From everyone’s angle, they could only see this youth’s back and not his appearance.

“It’s him, it’s Lin Muk!”

Many people immediately surmised. During this round of the Akashic Dream Battlefield, only Lin Ming managed to obtain the approval of the Emperor God Wall and approach so easily.

"This damned brat!"

Someone angrily said before they flew towards Lin Ming. But before this person could get too close, he was unable to continue due to the massive pressure exuding from the Emperor God Wall.

But, he had already been prepared for this. As he reached the limit for how far he could go, he suddenly threw out his sword.

"Fuse with my soul force, Spirit Sword!"

This person poured all of his soul force into this sword. The sword shot through the air, approaching Lin Ming's back.

However, this sword was also governed by the Laws of Emperor City as well as the pressure from the Emperor God Wall. The sword only managed to fly out several thousand feet before it exploded into pieces and the soul force attached to it was also torn apart. The person who threw the sword stuffily coughed, taking several steps back as he paled.

He had suffered a severe backlash.

"Don't be reckless, it is impossible for us to approach the Emperor God Wall! And it is also extremely dangerous for anyone who dares to attack near it!"

Someone blocked everyone else. From start to finish, Lin Ming hadn't even turned his head as he continued flying towards the Emperor God Wall.

"What do we do? Do we just watch on as he does whatever he wants?"

Someone said with deep unwillingness. Many people shook their heads; they were indeed helpless in this situation. They could only stare blankly on as Lin Ming flew forwards. And, what was most depressing was that they couldn't even see Lin Ming's face.

"This human, he wants to carve his name on the Emperor God Wall."

The Emperor God Wall itself was a titanic divine mountain and one of the natural walls of Emperor City. As Lin Ming flew towards the Emperor God Wall, he seemed like a tiny speck of dust against a massive mountain, nearly unnoticeable.

Lin Ming flew higher as he chose the spot to carve his name.

Carving one's name on the Emperor God Wall wasn't difficult in itself. What was difficult was earning the qualifications to do so.

Finally, he stopped. The area he chose didn't seem particularly special, but if one looked to the side, they would see two more characters written in a flowing and beautiful manner – Sheng Mei!

These two characters were drawn like twin phoenixes dancing in the skies, and contained the deep meaning of numerous Laws. If an influence could copy these two characters, it would become the most precious inheritance of their sect.

Ca!

Lin Ming drew out a black spear – this was the Black Dragon Spear!

As this spear appeared, a vast and ancient aura erupted outwards. Even the Emperor God Wall didn't seem completely capable of suppressing this aura.

"The place the human chose is next to Empress Sheng Mei. He wants to carve his characters next to Empress Sheng Mei's!"

"This is - !?"

Some people cried out loud as they realized Lin Ming's plan.

Sheng Mei was a goddess of the spiritas. Now, a human wanted to carve his name next to their people's goddess. This touched upon the fragile mentality of all spiritas martial artists present.

It was like this action was mercilessly taunting the spiritas martial artists of this generation, because none of them had been able to win the qualifications to carve their name on the Emperor God Wall. For the last million years, in the entirety of the spiritas' seven Heavens, only Sheng Mei had earned the rights to leave behind her name on the Emperor God Wall.

As for them, all of them were ordinary martial artists that hadn't been recognized.

Now, a mere human was actually planning to carve his name near Sheng Mei's to be on par with her, even making it faintly feel like a couple flying together.

How could they not be incensed by this?

"This bastard!"

Some people gripped their fists in a rage. At this time, Lin Ming finally moved. The Black Dragon Spear was flourished in an epic manner. The sharp spear edge drew on the Emperor God Wall, emitting a crisp sound of stone on metal. At the same time, countless sparks flew out!

Lin Ming's writing was as smooth as dancing dragons and phoenixes, and every line he drew contained a rumbling god-killing intent. Looking at the characters he drew was like watching an Asura on a golden chariot tear their way through an endless battlefield of slaughter, overwhelming all enemies!

Countless stone shards flew out, but these shards were reabsorbed by the Emperor God Wall, only leaving behind the drawn lines. But, what startled those watching was that Lin Ming didn't leave behind the name Lin Muk, but had drawn out – Polar Ice Lin!

"Polar Ice Lin, is that Lin Muk's title?"

"We don't even know if Lin Muk is his true name. He probably just made it up on the spot when he ran into those disciples of Zenith Palace."

There were many suspicious points about why Lin Ming had suddenly appeared on the Great Desolate Glacier. It likely involved some great secret, so it was reasonable if he gave out a fake name.

People didn’t even know if the title of Polar Ice Lin was true or not.

“I’m about to be aggravated to death!”

Old Green shook as he spoke. Everyone could only stare helplessly on as Lin Ming drew these characters right next to Sheng Mei’s. Yet, there was nothing any of them could do.

“Block off Emperor City!”

Someone roared.

“It’s too late. There aren’t any Empyreans present, and even if there were they still wouldn’t be able to near the Emperor God Wall. We can block off three sides of Emperor City, but to Lin Muk this doesn’t matter at all.”

“His actions are purposefully provoking the goddess of my people! This is an unforgivable crime!”

“Curse him! If one day I can carve my name atop the Emperor God Wall, I will ruin his characters!”

A spiritas genius unwillingly said. But, no one could agree with his words. Even his friends from his own sect didn’t believe he had even the smallest chance of carving his name atop the Emperor God Wall.

Chapter 1833 – Golden Page

Chapter 1833 – Golden Page

…

…

…

After carving the title of Polar Ice Lin into the Emperor God Wall, Lin Ming felt that his mind had become connected to it. All sorts of thoughts crossed his mind and some things seemed to be within his reach.

“Golden page…”

Lin Ming meditated in his mind. He thrust out a hand and his entire hand sank into the Emperor God Wall. As he pulled it back, a thin golden piece of paper appeared in his grasp.

This was the golden page that was exchanged with a billion merit points!

Lin Ming was excited. He found that this golden page was different from what he had thought.

He originally thought that the golden page would be a heavy piece of gold paper, around the size of a normal tome.

But, he never thought that the golden page in his hand would be as soft as gauze. As he grabbed it, he felt just how large it was. After unfolding it, it was almost three feet long, just like a small kasya worn by a monk.

The golden page was extremely soft, as smooth as silk. When it was placed against the sun, it was nearly transparent.

However, it was extremely heavy. In Lin Ming's impression, if he held something so heavy in his hands it should hang down due to its own weight and would be difficult to shake. But the truth was that as he held this golden page in his hands, it had an airy feel to it, seeming as if it would flutter in the wind.

"What a mysterious object…"

Lin Ming could feel that this golden page was extraordinary. As he looked at it he could see thick lines of runes engraved into it. Among these runes, two particularly large ancient characters stood out, illuminating the page like two dark golden moons, shining with a sacred light.

These two characters spelled – Holy Scripture!

Holy Scripture, only two words but containing an incomprehensibly domineering momentum. With just these two words as its name, there were no other embellishments. This was enough to prove just how powerful this golden page was.

It contained unsurpassed mysteries and endless true meanings!

"Holy Scripture, is this the so-called Spiritas Holy Scripture?"

Lin Ming could feel that the golden page in his hands was a remnant of the Spiritas Holy Scripture, however its name was not Spiritas Holy Scripture but instead only Holy Scripture. This caused Lin Ming to suspect whether or not the word Spiritas had been added to the front of Holy Scripture afterwards.

In truth, was the creator of the Spiritas Holy Scripture even the first ancestor of all spiritas? This wasn't necessarily the truth, but only the history that had been created by the spiritas. As for whether or not it was correct, that was another issue altogether.

What Lin Ming could confirm was that the creator of the Holy Scripture was an existence that had arrived at the pinnacle of the soul forging system. In terms of cultivation systems, it was similar to that of the spiritas.

Lin Ming continued to look through the cicada wing-thin golden page. He found that there were far too many tiny runes covering the page, and each rune was incredibly difficult to discern clearly. In fact, if one focused too much, an unknown force would pierce into one's spiritual sea, causing a stabbing pain to the eyes and soul.

Was this a remnant spirit mark left behind in the Holy Scripture, or perhaps even a bit of soul force?

Lin Ming was amazed. This golden page was far too strange. Even with his current strength he found it incredibly difficult to read. Just looking at a single rune made him feel as if he would overdraw his soul force.

At this time, a flow of information passed into Lin Ming's mind. His thoughts stirred as he perked up to attention.

This information was vague, but it gave Lin Ming an approximate feeling. Although he had exchanged for the golden page, the truth was that he had only been able to 'borrow' it. As for the borrowing duration, that was actually Lin Ming's lifespan.

As long as Lin Ming was alive, this golden page would be lent to him. But if he died, the golden page would be reabsorbed into the Emperor God Wall.

"This is..."

As this information passed into Lin Ming's mind, all sorts of thoughts raced through him. There were likely many of these golden pages, but because of the restrictions of the Laws, no matter how much time passed it would be impossible to exchange for all the golden pages of the Emperor God Wall.

If so, then the so-called original Spiritas Holy Scripture might not be the original copy after all.

Instead, it was a replica slowly formed over the billions of years of history of the spiritas, with people exchanging for golden pages throughout time and making copies of them.

But this replica was incomparably far from the true authentic work. One could even say that they couldn't be compared at all.

That meant that even someone who possessed the Spiritas Holy Scripture would covet the golden page in his hands.

As these thoughts passed through Lin Ming's mind, he sucked in a deep breath. It was impossible for him to hide the news that he had exchanged a billion merit points for the golden page. Now, he would become the focus of the public.

Luckily, this was the Akashic Dream universe. If Lin Ming were in the real world, things would undoubtedly become far more dangerous for him.

"I can't read this here – I have to leave first."

Lin Ming didn't need to turn around to realize that there was a massive commotion occurring behind him. As he floated in front of the Emperor God Wall, an innumerable number of people had gathered behind him, all of them wanting to shred him to pieces and steal away his golden page.

Unfortunately for them, the Emperor God Wall's terrifying pressure meant that these people couldn't even cast their divine sense towards him.

Even so, they had already transmitted this news through various means.

Currently, it had only been half an hour since everyone had emerged from the Akashic Dream Battlefield, and powerhouses had yet to catch up. But as time passed, more and more masters would arrive here.

In the incomparably massive Akashic Dream Universe, there were undoubtedly many Empyreans and possibly even True Divinities.

Lin Ming didn't want to wait at the Emperor God Wall until an Empyrean arrived. By that time, he wouldn't be able to leave at all.

After putting away the golden page, Lin Ming shot into the sky, instantly soaring up hundreds of thousands of feet. Then, like a sparrow, he flew directly over the mountain-like Emperor God Wall and vanished over the other side.

“He ran away!”

“He’s crossed the divine mountain! We can’t chase after him!”

In Emperor City, three of the city walls were over a thousand miles long. However, on the north side where the divine mountain was located, that mountain range stretched for countless tens of thousands of miles, acting as a natural moat that no one could cross unless they had the qualifications to approach and carve their name.

As many people looked at Lin Ming, flames nearly spewed out from their eyes. They had been forced to watch on as Lin Ming left his name right next to Sheng Mei’s on the Emperor God Wall, took his reward, and then pompously flew away.

“I hate him!”

Old Green roared out, stamping his feet on the ground. He beat his fists against his chest, so angry that his liver and gallbladder hurt. Ignoring the secret that Lin Ming had on his body, just the value of that golden page was incomprehensible!

Yet, no one in their sect was capable of obtaining it. Even asking for a tenth of the required merit points was completely impossible.

“That is the treasure of us spiritas, yet it was taken by a human!”

“Debased human, he’s stolen away what belongs to us! The most sacred treasure of my soul race! How could it have fallen into the hands of a human!?”

“We must kill him and take it back!”

At this time, the animosity between the spiritas and Lin Ming had extended far past the Great World Kings and Empyrean that he had killed in the Akashic Dream Battlefield. Now, he had touched upon the reverse scale of many large spiritas influences and had even taken away a treasure that True Divinities would be jealous of!

As these various great influences spread this news, Lin Ming had already crossed the Emperor God Wall and flown into the vast depths of the Akashic Dream Universe.

His flight speed was extremely fast. As he flew, his body emitted crackling sounds as his form changed. He shrank, becoming shorter and thinner, and his looks became increasingly ordinary. His eye sockets deepened. If he were thrown into a crowd of mortals, it would be impossible to notice him.

Lin Ming's application of the Bodily Rebirth Technique had reached an extremely high boundary. In addition to his deep cultivation and strength, even an Empyrean might not be able to see through his camouflage.

But if Lin Ming were to meet a True Divinity, he didn't have any confidence that he would be able to fool them. However, what sort of character was a True Divinity? In the seven Heavens that comprised the Soul World, there were likely not more than a handful of True Divinities, so Lin Ming didn't worry about them at all.

Lin Ming thought about it. He folded up the golden page and placed it near his chest, against his heart. His body became a series of afterimages as he vanished into the horizon.

Although the war in the Akashic Dream Battlefield had ended, Lin Ming didn't plan on leaving the Akashic Dream Universe just yet. He had come here to adventure and also to find Sheng Mei.

In the seven universes of the Soul World, Lin Ming didn't even know which one Sheng Mei was residing in. For him to find Sheng Mei like this was far, far too difficult.

Thus, the best way to do so would be to cause a massive disturbance in the Akashic Dream Universe and force Sheng Mei to seek him out on her own initiative.

Lin Ming already anticipated that the matter of him leaving behind his name on the Emperor God Wall and right next to Sheng Mei's would soon enter into the universes of the spiritas, and subsequently pass into her ears.

This was the reason Lin Ming deliberately left behind such a title next to Sheng Mei's name.

Chapter 1834 – Seventh Revolution Sheng Mei

Chapter 1834 – Seventh Revolution Sheng Mei

…

…

…

The main universe of the Soul World was also the largest universe of the Soul World's seven Heavens. This universe had 4800 great worlds and their martial arts civilization had been inherited continuously for over 8 billion years.

The so-called inheritance that continued for over 8 billion years meant that for the last 8 billion years, there had been no great calamities that ruined them. Rather, they only developed to higher heights without ever being destroyed.

This allowed this universe's martial arts civilization to reach an inconceivable degree of glory.

And the background of the spiritas' main universe had reached depths so great that it was almost impossible to imagine!

From 5 billion years ago, after the spiritas' main universe had existed for over 3 billion years, True Divinities began to appear amongst the ranks of the spiritas martial artists. The birth of a True Divinity required not only the accumulation of inheritances but also a deep background and the support of a great destiny.

For a shallow universe like the Divine Realm, it was hard for enough threads of destiny to gather together to nurture the ascendance of a True Divinity.

Generation upon generation of True Divinities would also leave behind their own inheritances that accumulated over time. These were the enlightenments of existences that stood above Empyreans. It was a mind-boggling level of wealth.

The spiritas possessed more than seven universes, and over half of the entire soul race's strength was concentrated in their main universe. In this universe, the most bustling first-order world was also the hub world of the spiritas. Here, ordinary World Kings had only average statuses. Here, Empyreans numbered in the double digits and above Empyreans there was even a True Divinity.

This True Divinity was none other than the Soul Emperor, the ruler of the Soul World's seven Heavens. He was the highest existence amongst the spiritas.

The Holy Land he established was called the Soul Rapture Holy Lands. Without a doubt, it was the largest influence of the spiritas!

The Soul Rapture Holy Lands occupied over half the land of the great world's central continent. There were broad smelting trials and innumerable mystic realms. The training conditions here was so rich that geniuses of other influences could only hope to live here.

At this time, within the Soul Rapture Holy Lands, in a small world filled with the atmosphere of spring –

This small world was warm and pure.

The morning sunlight sprinkled down, scattering upon the floor like golden yarn. All sorts of spirit grasses and flowers grew, and spiritual dew condensed on these plants. A single drop of this dew, if it fell into the outside world, would be considered the water of a divine spring and stir up a storm of blood and chaos.

But here, this was only the most common of flower dew. It would gather every morning and then evaporate as the sun rose.

In this immortal fairyland, there was an ordinary table, and in front of this table was a chair carved from white jade, not seeming special at all. A pair of pale feet casually stepped atop the green grass in front of this chair, the toes like pearl drops.

These were the feet of a magnificent woman. She wore purple clothes and her legs were straight. Her curves and her face were perfectly molded, like the most exquisite forms of art.

A blue bird fluttered on her shoulder. This bird was gorgeous and its feathers were dazzling. Its eyes were like twin sapphires.

At this time, the woman was completely entranced. As the sunlight fell upon her pitch black hair that fell like an inky waterfall, it reflected a purple gold gloss.

In her hands and lying on the table was a thin piece of golden paper, nearly invisible in the sun.

Countless tiny runes were written atop this golden paper. She carefully read through the mysterious principles of these runes. Sometimes, her nose would wrinkle and her eyelashes would move, and she would even sway about, leaving behind faint shadows that were beautiful to behold.

If Lin Ming were here he would naturally recognize what this was. The golden paper that this woman was looking at was one of the golden pages from the Holy Scripture.

As for this woman, she was Soul Empress Sheng Mei.

The bird on her shoulder was her contract beast – The Deep Blue Ice Phoenix.

After many years, the Sheng Mei of today was different from before. She gave off a feeling as if she had broken free from her cocoon and had been reborn. Her temperament became increasingly perfect, like she was an immortal from the highest heavens, making all mortals beneath her feel naught but inferiority.

This was because...

Sheng Mei had finally completed the seventh revolution of her Grand Reincarnation Art. Like a phoenix through nirvana, she had obtained a new life!

And all of this was also partly thanks to Lin Ming.

Because of Lin Ming's help, Sheng Mei had obtained an even greater lucky chance from the Asura Road's final trial. With this lucky chance, she had been able to use it to complete the seventh revolution of the Grand Reincarnation Art.

Currently, Sheng Mei was deeply perceiving the Spiritas Holy Scripture, in preparation for attacking that mythical eighth revolution.

She had a faint premonition that the eighth revolution would be incomparably hard. It would cost her a massive amount of time and require an incomprehensible amount of energy and effort to complete.

And the most mysterious ninth revolution that only existed in legends, even Sheng Mei didn't have the slightest bit of confidence in completing it.

This was because the spiritas' Soul Emperor was also stuck at this step, unable to cross it.

Although the Soul Emperor hadn't succeeded, Sheng Mei still wanted to try attacking the ninth revolution. In her road of martial arts, she desired to stand at the peak of all martial arts and see what the scenery there was like.

Just as she was about to put away the golden page and set out, at this time, not too far away, there was a light tinkling sound in the spirit springs not too far from her.

A beautiful rainbow fish leapt up from the springs, jumping in front of Sheng Mei. It put out a token and then swished around before splashing back into the spirit springs.

"Mm?" Sheng Mei's eyebrows pressed together. She picked up the token. "What happened?"

During her seclusion, no one was allowed to disturb her. To be delivered a token now likely meant it was some serious matter.

She swept her sense through the token and thoroughly investigated the contents. A surprised look flashed through her eyes.

“Polar Ice Lin, that is the title someone carved on the Emperor God Wall, right next to my name. Moreover, he has a golden page and he is even a human…”

In the entire 33 Heavens, there was only a handful of people that would be able to carve their names into the Emperor God Wall. In addition, this person was surnamed Lin and was also a human. With all these factors added together, Sheng Mei suddenly recalled someone.

And that name Polar Ice Lin. This Polar Ice… it was likely that…

Sheng Mei unconsciously thought back to the final trial’s Undying Polar Ice. Polar Ice Lin – could it be Lin Ming?

Otherwise, it was impossible to explain such coincidences in the world.

A human had chosen to carve the name Polar Ice Lin right next to her own. It was extremely likely that Lin Ming wanted to tell her something – that he had come to the Soul World.

“Lin Ming…”

Sheng Mei stood up, a thoughtful look on her face. “He wants to see me?”

Towards Lin Ming, Sheng Mei couldn’t quite describe just what she felt. They could be considered enemies as well as friends. But what a pity – he was not a spiritas.

“The golden page in his hands should be the second wood page. For this page, I should see him at least once.”

Like this, Sheng Mei flew out from the small world.

……………

At this time, in a remote mountain deep within the Akashic Dream Universe, Lin Ming had opened up his own cave dwelling and was quietly reading through the golden page.

Scanning this golden page placed an enormous burden on his eyes, often making his eyes and mind hurt. It was like countless needles poking at his thoughts. He couldn't help but put the golden page down periodically and take a rest before starting reading again.

Reading this golden page required a strong soul force. With Lin Ming's current strength, he was just barely able to do it.

However, Lin Ming discovered that even though there was a piercing pain to his spiritual sea as he read through the page, as he read through it day after day, he also noticed that his soul seemed to be constantly tempered throughout.

The direct manifestation of this was that he could read the golden page for longer and longer periods of time with each attempt.

The more Lin Ming read, the more he discovered that the writer of the Holy Scripture was also an era-shaking peerless character.

But, it was unknown just why he had engaged in a life or death struggle with the Asura Road Master.

Like this, Lin Ming used an entire month to read through the golden page.

He also finally knew just what was recorded within the Holy Scripture.

The Asura Heavenly Dao could be called, in a way, a comprehensive summary of the Laws of the 33 Heavens, a way of standing on par with the Great Dao of the universe.

And, this Holy Scripture was the exploration of a martial artist, the excavation of their complete life potential.

"Law of Reincarnation…"

"Art of Eternal Life…"

Lin Ming was amazed.

The Law of Reincarnation was the Grand Reincarnation Art that Sheng Mei cultivated; it was one of the most essential parts of the Holy Scripture. However, besides the Law of Reincarnation, there was an even more terrifying arcane technique within the Holy Scripture, something that could truly be described as defying the will of the heavens.

Its name was – the Art of Eternal Life.

Eternal Life. That sounded like an unbelievable concept. If a martial artist could achieve immortality then as long as they lived, their strength would constantly increase. If they could live for 10 billion years, just how strong would they become? What level would they reach? It was impossible to imagine!

A mystic stone, after experiencing the infinite washing of time, could eventually become an Essence Spirit Embryo Stone. So, if a pig were to experience the infinite tempering of years, even it could eventually accumulate the good fortune of the world and obtain enlightenment, becoming a monster, and then a monster emperor, and sooner or later rule a world.

The Art of Eternal Life complemented the Law of Reincarnation. But, in order to cultivate the Art of Eternal Life, one needed an Eternal Soul. And this sort of mythical soul had already vanished for billions and billions of years.

As for the Art of Eternal Life, it became nothing but a story…

"Eternal Soul…"

Lin Ming's thoughts chilled. He certainly remembered that in one of his encounters with Sheng Mei in the past, Sheng Mei had said that his soul was similar to the Eternal Soul.

In the past, Lin Ming believed that this was because of the Magic Cube. The existence of the Magic Cube had caused some sort of fundamental mutation to Lin Ming's soul.

Lin Ming couldn't help but think – was his soul the Eternal Soul?

"With my soul, can I succeed in cultivating the Art of Eternal Life?"

According to the records of the Holy Scripture, it was nearly impossible to cultivate the Art of Eternal Life. In fact, it wasn't a perfect cultivation method. Even the creator of this cultivation method, the author of the Holy Scripture, had only completed a part of this Art of Eternal Life in the past.

Even the one who wrote the Holy Scripture hadn't been able to eventually obtain eternal life.

Eternal life – it was a curse upon the Heavenly Dao, something that the Heavenly Dao would never allow.

Even universes would eventually perish, much less life.

"I wonder if I can see the boundary of eternal life after surpassing a True Divinity..."

Lin Ming inexplicably thought. He had no idea whether the Asura Road Master was alive or dead.

"This Holy Scripture is a peerless treasure. Unfortunately, I only have a single page. If I can obtain other pages, then my understandings towards life will reach new heights. If I can cultivate the Grand Reincarnation Art, then let alone the seventh, eighth, or ninth revolution, as long as I can complete six revolutions my strength will greatly increase!"

As Lin Ming thought of this, he became increasingly excited. It had to be known that a good portion of Sheng Mei's strength was due to the Grand Reincarnation Art!

The Asura Sutra and Holy Scripture were both peerless cultivation methods that spoke of the true meaning of the Great Dao. One explored the limits of the universe and the other explored the limits of a martial artist. If both could be gathered together, just what would that be like?

Chapter 1835 – Reward

Chapter 1835 – Reward

…

…

…

The mountain that Lin Ming hid himself in was shrouded by strange clouds. These clouds tumbled about, endlessly mysterious and filled with energy.

In the midst of dust, Lin Ming was sitting down, slowly reading through the golden page.

The majority of the Asura Sutra's focus was on the Laws and the mysterious Asura runes.

As for this golden page, most of its writings were descriptive texts. These texts connected together to create all-encompassing and esoteric passages.

In these ancient passages, each word, each stroke, was filled with infinite Concepts. Just reading them aloud made Lin Ming feel as if his spiritual sea was expanding and connecting to the universe.

The endless starlight of the world seemed to shine down on Lin Ming's spiritual sea, vitalizing his soul and making his entire body feel comfortable as if he were standing in a light spring breeze.

He felt as if he could see the starry void of the universe. Countless stars were born and destroyed as galaxies swirled around him. And these stars, all of these galaxies, seemed to constitute a part of a person and be just a part of their body.

A person’s body was like a universe, and the universe of a body could correspond to the universe of the world.

In this massive body, the heartbeat, breathing, the peristalsis of its stomach, everything flowed in a methodical order, corresponding to the paths of the heavens and earth.

If the Asura Sutra cultivated the outside world, then the Holy Scripture cultivated the inside world.

The Holy Scripture was not limited to cultivating one's ‘essence, energy, and divine’. Rather, its final goal was to perfectly fuse ‘essence, energy, and divine’ together into one sublime form.

When a martial artist’s essence, energy, and divine completely integrated together, it would form a perfect cycle.

And if one possessed the Eternal Soul and was able to cultivate the Law of Eternal Life, then they could exist forever in this world as a true immortal.

This was the absolute state of perfection that was written of in the Holy Scripture.

“The Holy Scripture indeed has endless subtleties to it… just reading these passages makes me feel as if my body and divine soul are growing without end…”

Lin Ming muttered. Just reading the golden page, he could feel subtle changes occurring to his body and divine soul.

He already knew that the golden page was the second wood page of the Holy Scripture. Each page of the Holy Scripture could be considered an independent wealth of knowledge and texts, but when gathered together, they were also a complete whole.

Currently, the second wood page in front of him didn’t record any defensive or offensive techniques. Rather, all it recorded were cultivation methods. In other words, how to cultivate the body into its own universe.

Lin Ming guessed that the other pages of the Holy Scripture also didn't record any offensive killing techniques. Even so, the Holy Scripture was far more terrifying than other top cultivation methods that contained such attack methods.

If one could gather and cultivate all the pages of the Holy Scripture and fuse them together as one, a martial artist could reach a boundary that was so high it was hard to imagine. Just by raising a hand they would be able to commune with the world and attain perfection.

If one could practice the Holy Scripture and cultivate the body's universe into perfection, and then practice the Asura Sutra and fuse the 33 Heavenly Daos together, similarly reaching perfection of the world universe, then whether it was inside or outside, one would achieve transcendence. By comparing these two together, verifying them and fusing them as one, just what boundary could one reach?

If one could unify the Holy Scripture and Asura Sutra, fusing together the universe of the body and world, then that would truly be becoming one with all of existence, becoming invincible!

Time slowly passed, one day at a time.

Lin Ming activated his fused martial intent and sat deep in meditation within the Bodhi tree's land of ultimate bliss. Endless dense texts reflected in his pupils, each word overflowing with profound meanings. His eyes swirled like giant raging vortexes that seemed as if they could swallow everything.

All of the surrounding soul force was unconsciously swallowed through every pore of Lin Ming's body, slowly cleansing his body and even his divine soul.

This state continued for an unknown length of time. Then Lin Ming's eyes slowly opened.

"The mysteries of the Holy Scripture are no less than those of the Asura Sutra. But in the past, the master of the Holy Scripture was defeated by the Asura Road Master… what was the reason for that? As for the Asura Sutra, its original name was the Heavenly Sutra, but it was later given the Asura Road Master's name afterwards…"

As Lin Ming mumbled to himself, he firmed his resolve. He would go and seek out the other golden pages.

He would combine the Heavenly Sutra with the Holy Scripture.

Perhaps in the last 10 billion years, there had not been a single person who dared to attempt such a monumental mission.

Even so, wanting to find the other golden pages of the Holy Scripture was easier said than done. Just from the existence of the second wood page, that meant there had to be at least 10 pages of the Holy Scripture.

After emerging from the distant mountain, Lin Ming's eyes gazed into the endless horizon. Although infinite clouds of fog obscured his line of sight, Lin Ming's pitch black eyes sparkled and all of the fog disappeared from his vision. Not even mountains and rivers were able to block his sight.

After thoroughly reading the golden page, incredible changes occurred within Lin Ming's body once more. His divine sense had become sharper and his eyes were like the eyes of heaven, able to see through all lies and illusions.

"I might be able to obtain more information in the city…"

Looking through the endless vast mountains and never-ending fog, he could see a bustling city in the far off distance…

……….

Oceanguard City –

This was a large city located within the Akashic Dream Universe. Dozens of medium and large-sized sects were located nearby. The daily crowds of people shuffled in and out like the tides and constant streams of merchants and customers flowed around.

In the Akashic Dream Universe, there were countless cities like Oceanguard City.

Spiritas martial artists came here to train and hone themselves within. To do this they had to spend a tremendous amount of soul force, inscription symbols, and all sorts of other items.

Many merchants had set up shop within, selling various spirit medicines and heavenly treasures. Over time, this accumulated until this area became a prosperous city.

Almost all of the great influences, in order to train their respective talented disciples, would establish strongholds in the Akashic Dream Universe and develop their forces within.

Lin Ming walked through the crowd, seeming quite ordinary amongst the streams of people passing through the city gates.

Behind Lin Ming, a little girl followed him. She wore simple plain clothes and looked extremely ordinary.

This was the red-dressed little girl that Lin Ming met in the Akashic Dream Battlefield. Up until now, Lin Ming didn’t know her name because she herself had already forgotten it.

It was clearly the little girl’s first time coming out of the Akashic Dream Battlefield, and as she was exposed to all the excitement and activities around her, a little bit of fear and joy lit up her eyes. Her large eyes randomly flitted in all directions as she gazed at the shops and the people doing business there.

At this time, Lin Ming had also changed his appearance. He now appeared as a large fellow with a long dragon beard; he didn’t seem cute or handsome at all. A faint infernal energy rolled off his body. His posture was tall and straight and he swaggered as he walked, clearly unafraid of being recognized by anyone.

Simultaneously, his divine sense flowed like mercury around him, constantly probing the movements of the surrounding martial artists.

The strength of conditions of all martial artists in a radius of several miles appeared in Lin Ming's mind.

Their cultivations were basically all below the World King realm. When Lin Ming chose Oceanguard City to inquire about news, one of the main reasons he did so was because Oceanguard City and the surrounding several million miles were covered in one of the unique Laws of the Akashic Dream Universe, making it so that no martial artists with a skeletal age over 3000 years was able to enter.

This Law was the equivalent of Lin Ming's protective talisman. It had to be known that even Mount Potala's Emperor Shakya, a peerless genius who divided himself into a billion avatars and sent them to cultivate in the mortal world and who even had hopes of breaking into the realm of True Divinity, had still only become an Empyrean at 10,000 years of age.

Even if the spiritas wanted to find a genius that was more powerful than Emperor Shakya, there couldn't be many of them.

This Oceanguard City was a large city with both fish and dragons mixed within. There were people here from all walks of life.

The reason Lin Ming came here was to find out some information.

"That..." The little girl suddenly called out to Lin Ming. "That... seems to be you."

The little girl pulled Lin Ming's hand and whispered to him in a hushed voice, her pale finger pointing in the direction of a grand city wall.

On the city wall there was a massive image stone, and what was projected from atop it was the image of a youth.

This youth had black hair and was clearly Lin Ming.

Lin Ming frowned as he saw this.

His eyes swept over other areas in the city and he discovered that there were many similar image stones, all of them showing his appearance.

And below these image stones, bounties were posted.

“Yellow Springs Palace posts a reward for the capture of the human known as Lin Muk (or Polar Ice Lin). Anyone that can provide a clue leading to his capture will obtain 2000 top grade soul crystals and five transcendent divine pills.”

“The spirit race posts a reward for the capture of the human known as Lin Muk (or Polar Ice Lin). Looking for his whereabouts. The reward is seven transcendent spirit medicines and 3000 top grade soul crystals.

Looking at them all, there were over 30 bounties posted. Each bounty had rich rewards listed. Top grade soul crystals were a divine stone formed by peak spiritas masters in the Akashic Dream Universe by condensing the purest soul force and combining a hint of elementary spirit source within it.

These soul crystals could be directly used to cultivate. Although their effects were worse than spirit medicines, their advantages lay in the fact that the soul force contained within them was naturally pure and thus they commanded an exorbitant price.

At this time, many people surrounded Lin Ming’s bounty posts. Some people who just entered the city were looking at these bounties, their eyes shining.

“Such rich rewards and yet they are only looking for a human. Moreover, they only want tips as to where he is and no one even needs to capture him. Just who is he to be so valuable?”

“Seven transcendent spirit medicines, five transcendent divine pills… since when did Empyrean level medicines become so cheap? If we can not only provide tips but also capture him, then won’t we instantly be rich?”

Several people asked, nearly drooling.

However, they soon received the disdainful looks of others.

“Catch him? Keep on dreaming! This Lin Muk is a true monstrous genius! In the Akashic Dream Battlefield he killed an Empyrean at the same step! After that, he took the golden page and left behind his name on the Emperor God Wall. In the Akashic Dream Battlefield, my sect also had a World King that perished beneath Lin Ming’s hands, and to kill a World King at the same step, he only needed to use a single move…

“Forgetting all of that, even if we could just obtain Lin Muk’s golden page, that is worth far more than several transcendent divine pills.”

Most people who didn’t know of Lin Ming were stunned upon hearing this. As they weighed their own capabilities, they knew that it really was a dream for them to capture Lin Ming.

However, if it were only providing clues to his location, there was a slight possibility.

Chapter 1836 – Fallen God Mountain Range

Chapter 1836 – Fallen God Mountain Range

…

…

…

From the crowd, the voice of some noisy people constantly drilled into Lin Ming's ears.

Lin Ming didn't underestimate the martial artists of the Soul World, thus he was extra cautious. In a city where no one's skeletal age surpassed 3000, combined with the Bodily Rebirth Technique, he didn't believe even an Empyrean could recognize him.

Lin Ming believed that no one here would realize who he was.

He moved throughout the crowd without drawing attention, casually making his way into the depths of Oceanguard City where a giant glazed octagonal pagoda stood high.

The pagoda's top half was hidden in clouds, and a chilling energy rolled off of it, emitting a strange and mystical strength.

On the outer walls of this pagoda, one could see precious treasure mirrors radiating out rippling waves of light.

Countless runes sparkled, raining down around the pagoda like a hail of light.

On every level of the pagoda, one could see deacons standing guard.

This eight-sided pagoda was the main reason Lin Ming had come to Oceanguard City.

The Akashic Dream Universe was mysterious and vast. There were endless lucky chances waiting to be found as well as endless dangers.

Moreover, the various races all came here to adventure and gain experience. With all of the various influences woven together, it formed a complex society.

Information in particular was extremely important. There were some large influences who traded information as their lifeline and they had constructed these eight-sided turrets throughout many large cities of the Akashic Dream Universe.

In a way, it was similar to Heaven’s Secret of the Asura Road.

Slowly walking towards the main hall of the pagoda, a guardian deacon stared at Lin Ming but didn’t say a single word.

Lin Ming didn’t speak. He walked to the first level of the pagoda and took out a spirit medicine.

This spirit medicine was one of the treasures Lin Ming found in the Soul Cave; it could be used by a World King to attack the Great World King realm and was valued by many people.

Seeing this spirit medicine, the deacon’s eyes flashed. “A medicine second only to a transcendent divine spirit medicine. You may inquire into any information below six stars. What type of information are you searching for?”

“Holy Scripture, golden pages.” Lin Ming said with vigorous energy, his voice matching his burly outer appearance.

In the Akashic Dream Universe, the truth was that there were many legends and pieces of information regarding the golden pages. Wanting to find out the methods to obtain them wasn’t difficult, but completing these requirements was a completely different matter.

For instance, in the Akashic Dream Battlefield, one had to exchange a billion merit points to exchange for a golden page.

The deacon quieted down. Then, a gentle light rushed out from the hall and shrouded Lin Ming.

Lin Ming didn't resist. A long section of information was directly poured into Lin Ming's mind.

This information involved news about several golden pages, one of them even involved stealing away a golden page from Polar Ice Lin.

Seeing this information, Lin Ming was left speechless. He should steal his own golden page?

In addition, the information also stated that Sheng Mei and the Soul Emperor had golden pages in their hands.

Of course, with Lin Ming's current ability it was impossible for him to think of obtaining the golden pages of a True Divinity Holy Land.

Lin Ming's expression didn't change. Slowly, he found something he wanted as he sifted through the information. That was… Phantom God Spirit Cliff.

Phantom God Spirit Cliff!

Lin Ming was startled upon seeing these words. He hadn't been in the Akashic Dream Universe for too long thus he had never heard about the Phantom God Spirit Cliff. The reason he chose this location was because it was marked. This area was within a million miles of Oceanguard City and those who could come were also restricted in their skeletal age by the Laws. It was relatively safer.

"I want to know more information about the Phantom God Spirit Cliff." Lin Ming said.

"Of course. We will give you information about Phantom God Spirit Cliff for free."

The deacon slowly said. Then, more information appeared in Lin Ming's mind. Lin Ming didn't refuse it, completely accepting it.

After learning this information, Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath – Phantom God Spirit Cliff was an extremely strange place.

Atop this cliff, there were countless shrine platforms. The legends said that if one could gain enlightenment on these shrine platforms then one could obtain a golden page.

“Successfully gain enlightenment? What is considered as gaining enlightenment?” Lin Ming muttered, surprised. Although this task sounded simple, the truth was that it was likely impossibly difficult.

There was not a single golden page that would be easy to obtain.

Lin Ming looked towards the deacon. The deacon shook his head, saying, “As for what it means to successfully gain enlightenment, I am not sure of the details. But, I know that it is enormously difficult to obtain this golden page from Fallen God Mountain Rage. Do you plan on going to the shrine platforms to grasp the principles there? Every year there are countless geniuses that go to the Fallen God Mountain Range to attempt this, but none of them have ever succeeded. Some people even suspect whether or not this golden page exists.”

“No one has succeeded? The Soul Empress hasn’t succeeded either?” Lin Ming asked. Sheng Mei’s talent was without doubt. The deacon shook his head again, “It’s obvious isn’t it? Otherwise the golden page would have already been taken away by the Soul Empress. Why would it still be there?”

The deacon said. Lin Ming fell silent.

As the deacon said, the golden pages that were still available now were still there because the countless masters and young elites of the Soul World weren’t able to take them. All of them had an extremely high difficulty.

As for those that could be taken, they were already taken.

Sheng Mei hadn’t been able to successfully gain enlightenment…

Lin Ming frowned. Wanting to obtain this golden page wouldn’t be easy at all!

Although he knew that this task would be filled with difficulties, Lin Ming still wanted to give it a try.

A peerless treasure like the golden pages required not just strength but also a great destiny. Lin Ming had already comprehended one of the golden pages, and he believed that he didn’t lose out when it came to either strength or lucky chances. If there was even the slightest hope he could succeed, he naturally wouldn’t miss out on this chance in the Fallen God Mountain Range.

Reorganizing his thoughts, Lin Ming’s figure flickered and he disappeared, shooting straight in the direction of the Phantom God Spirit Cliff.

……………………

In the endlessly far horizon, in a mystical land.

Massive stars shined.

Between two radiant stars, there was an incomparably large mountain range, so vast it seemed like pillars that held up the heavens.

In the middle of this mountain range that stretched to the far off distances, there were numerous opulent palaces.

Each palace exuded a mysterious and boundless aura.

If an outsider were to come here, they would cry out in alarm. The atmosphere of these palaces was so vast that it seemed like an Empyrean lived in each palace.

On this day, at the base of the central divine mountain, a group of people were kneeling on the floor. Of these people there were several old men who were standing respectfully.

These old men restrained their auras as they attempted to minimize their presence. But, one could see that they each possessed an immeasurably deep strength.

These old men were Elders of the spirit race, as well as some unfamiliar old men. However, each one possessed strength at the Great World King realm or above.

Even Chaos Demon God was within this group of people.

“Lin Muk… Polar Ice Lin…”

An old voice echoed out, without any hint of emotion.

Chaos Demon God had come to narrate the events of the Akashic Dream Battlefield. As to who he was narrating to, they were the master of this divine mountain range – Great Brahmic God King.

The golden page that Lin Ming possessed could even arouse the interest of a True Divinity.

“Oh mighty Great Brahmic God King, please find justice for us. This Lin Muk has stolen away the kirin fruit of us spiritas and has killed innumerable Great World Kings of my people… yet, we still don’t know where Lin Muk is now. I beg Great Brahmic God King to shower us with your divine glory so that we may find this human thief.”

“These are the clothes that the little human thief once wore and bear remnants of his aura.”

A rumbling sound echoed through the mountain range for tens of millions of miles, causing the ground to shake.

A piece of clothing fluttered upwards, wafting towards the depths of the endless mountain range. This piece of clothing was something that Lin Ming had once worn at Zenith Palace when he changed clothes there.

After a long period of time, the divine mountain emitted a blinding light.

Each ray of light seemed to stretch to the endless distance, illuminating the emptiness of space.

An ancient voice echoed out, seeming as if it were filled with the endlessness of the years. Every syllable seemed to condense runes in the void and rang like thunderclaps to the ears.

This was an order that could only be obeyed, a transcendent boundary of speaking with the sound of the Great Dao.

"Endless light, shines endlessly far. According to the 33 Heavens..."

Hearing this voice, everyone couldn't help but restrain their excitement. Great Brahmic God King was using his transcendent techniques. He could search for anyone's whereabouts in the infinite Soul World just by having a wisp of their aura.

....

The wind howled. Lin Ming crossed over rivers and mountain peaks, finally arriving at a bleak and empty land.

The mountain peak he stood atop now was filled with bizarre and grotesquely-shaped rocks. A cold wind whistled through the air, blowing nonstop from the side.

Many mountains were spread out in front of him, and in front of them was a bottomless abyss. Here, everything was bare, without a hint of life.

The only colors here were the despairing hues of dark brown earth and gray rocks.

And in the distant horizon, Lin Ming could see a strange mountain range.

The entire mountain range shimmered with a faint star-like light.

Lin Ming had keen eyesight. He could see that every mote of starlight was actually a shrine platform.

Every shrine platform exuded a mystical spiritual strength.

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. In a flash, he soon arrived at a nearby mountain peak.

"This place is the Fallen God Mountain Range."

Lin Ming didn't need to look through the jade slip that the pagoda provided him with to know that he had found the Fallen God Mountain Range.

Because many powerful auras greeted him.

These were the auras of peerless young elites and masters!

Within the Fallen God Mountain Range, there was a golden page buried here. As long as one could successfully grasp the principles, they could take it away. There were countless individuals who wished to try their luck.

And because of the Laws restricting skeletal age, no martial artists above 3000 years of age could come here. Thus, this was a land where young geniuses gathered. Every large influence would send the peerless disciples of their generation here to try grasping the principles.

At this moment, as Lin Ming looked at a nearby cliff, he could see that thousands of people had already gathered.

The pitch black abyss spanned the distance in front of this mountain range, right beneath the mountain cliffs. On the cliff edge there were innumerable shrine platforms, and one could see many people sitting on them. Their bodies were shrouded in spiritual energy as they closed their eyes deep in meditation.

Deep in the abyss, one could still make out the faint figures of people…

Chapter 1837 – Jade Lifestone

Chapter 1837 – Jade Lifestone

…

…

…

“There are many elites here…”

Lin Ming stood on the cliff, sweeping his divine sense around him. He discovered that there were many peak Empyrean descendant level geniuses.

Whether it was in size or number of masters, the Soul World far outstripped the Divine Realm. Thus, they also naturally had numerous times more peerless geniuses than humanity did.

With so many elites gathered together, this was a truly grand scene!

There were even people that stayed here for a dozen years or dozens of years. There were even people who casually stopped by to cultivate at the Fallen God Mountain Range.

However, cultivating at the Fallen God Mountain Range wasn’t necessarily the wisest choice. This was because the Laws here were extremely volatile, and without an absurdly high level of perception it was impossible to make sense of these Laws.

“The spiritas are really formidable. They are likely even stronger than the saints…”

Lin Ming couldn’t help but acknowledge that the disparity in strength between humanity and the spiritas was greater than he had imagined.

Lin Ming firmly believed that the reason the spiritas were able to develop to such a scale was linked to the existence of the Akashic Dream Universe. This was a land of unimaginable wealth, inheritances, and other such buried treasures. The Divine Realm simply had nothing they could compare with this.

But for some reason, the saints were reluctantly able to compare with the spiritas. So, what advantage did the saints possess?

To Lin Ming, great strength didn't come without reason, and decline didn't come without reason either.

The saints had stood tall for such a long time and still remained as glorious as they were; there had to be a reason for this.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

From beneath the cliff, in the pitch black abyss, people constantly flew out.

Those that flew out all had despondent expressions and seemed extremely tired.

They had servants waiting for them atop the cliff, all of them running forwards to greet their masters.

"That is the Vice Hall Master of Blood Dragon Hall. In the past, he was one of the proudest sons of heaven of the Daydream Skyworld. His skeletal age is just over 1200 years. I wonder if he managed to grasp any enlightenments beneath the Phantom God Spirit Cliff!"

Someone said as they discovered this top character.

Although there was a skeletal age restriction of 3000 years here, in practice, it was mostly those that were around a thousand years old who came here to attempt attaining enlightenment. The 2000-3000 year old peerless geniuses had already come to the shrine platforms numerous times in the past and didn't want to waste any more time here. After all, the Fallen God Mountain Range had a very poor cultivation environment.

“Mm? Isn’t that Golden Sun Temple’s Young Master Wanyan? He is also one of the greatest geniuses of his generation at Golden Sun Temple. There are far too many amazing elites here today!”

Someone cried out in praise. Even though there were outstanding people all over Fallen God Mountain Range, people with Young Master Wanyan’s talent were still rare.

“White Bloodjade, he is also a proud son of heaven.”

Another person said in hushed whispers. The crowds of people began discussing these extreme talents that had flown up from the shrine platforms.

Still, so many peerless characters had failed one after another. Even so, there wasn’t any shame or surprise, nor were there any regrets – this was because failure was the norm!

In fact, no matter how great one’s reputation was or how over-exaggerated and blown out of proportion one’s talent was, no one believed that one could truly gain enlightenment on the shrine platforms.

It was simply impossible!

Even Soul Empress Sheng Mei had been forced to give up. If others could succeed where she failed, wouldn’t that be a joke?

Who was Soul Empress Sheng Mei? Without any refutations, she was known as the number of junior amongst the spiritas. Whether it was in strength, foundation, comprehension of Laws, cultivation method inheritances, or anything else, no one was able to compare with her.

“Even Soul Empress Sheng Mei failed. I suspect that there really is nothing here. Maybe whatever is here has already vanished because far too long a time has passed…”

Someone muttered with suspicion thick in his voice. In fact, many people already had this idea circling in their minds.

“In the past, how long did the Soul Empress stay here for enlightenment?”

As everyone was speaking, a large fellow with a dragon beard walked over and asked out loud with a booming voice. This large fellow was Lin Ming. Because he used the Bodily Rebirth Technique to create an illusion of a spiritas martial artist’s spiritual sea, no one was able to sense he was a human.

Many people rolled their eyes at Lin Ming. For outstanding elites, when their cultivation speed reached the extreme and far surpassed their speed in their old age, then even being 2000 years old seemed young.

As for Lin Ming… he simply really wasn’t worth a second glance. If he were in the mortal world, most people would think he was some conman selling pork on the street.

This sort of person also came to the Fallen God Mountain Range to join in on the fun?

“I must say old uncle, you shouldn’t come to this place to play around. This Fallen God Mountain Range is already crowded as it is.”

No one was able to see Lin Ming’s skeletal age; the effects of the Bodily Rebirth Technique were far too realistic.

“I’m just casually looking around. I wonder how long the Soul Empress spent trying to gain enlightenment here in the past?” Lin Ming asked once more. This was a crucial point for him.

If Sheng Mei spent a short period of time here then Lin Ming had some hopes of succeeding. But if Sheng Mei spent eight years or 10 years here without any results at all, then things became a great deal more troublesome. He didn’t have that much time to waste here.

Many people weren’t sure why Lin Ming asked the question he did. But at this time, a white-robed youth said, “108 days! Not one hour more or one hour less. During these 108 days, the Soul Empress tried to gain enlightenment 72 times and managed to light up the third soul sea!"

The white-robed youth accurately listed these numbers. As for what lighting up the third soul sea meant, Lin Ming had no idea.

At the eight-sided pagoda, he only asked for information about the golden pages, and didn't ask about the special circumstances related to the Fallen God Mountain Range.

Lin Ming looked at this white-robed youth. This youth had a handsome appearance and a dashing aura. From a single glance, one could see that he came from an amazing background and had considerable achievements.

"A character whose talent surpasses White King..." Lin Ming secretly noticed. Empyrean Vast Universe's direct disciple was White King. Although this wasn't considered much to Lin Ming, not everyone was able to surpass White King in terms of talent.

"Soul Empress Sheng Mei is so fierce!" Someone cried out in praise. "108 days to light up three soul seas! Some people can't even light up two soul seas in 10 years! I wonder why Soul Empress Sheng Mei didn't continue meditating; perhaps she might have grasped more of the principles."

Many people asked out loud. They also didn't know the particulars about Sheng Mei's attempt.

"The Empress said that three soul seas is only the start; it becomes far more difficult afterwards. But even the Empress didn't have confidence she could succeed. Moreover, her time is precious and there were many other matters she had to attend to..."

The white-robed youth who spoke seemed to be extremely knowledgeable about Sheng Mei. The others couldn't help but ask him, "How come you know the details so clearly? It sounds like you personally heard of it in the past."

The white-robed youth proudly said, “Of course I know what I’m talking about. I’m from the Soul Rapture Holy Lands, so why wouldn’t I know? I have even seen the Soul Empress in person before!”

As the white-robed youth spoke, his words were like stone splashing into a calm lake. For a time, everyone looked at him, some of them with dazed expressions.

This white-robed youth came from the Soul Rapture Holy Lands, the same Holy Land as Sheng Mei! Moreover, he had even seen Sheng Mei with his own eyes!

“I remember him, he is a core disciple of the Soul Rapture Holy Lands, Jade Lifestone!”

Someone said, recalling the white-robed youth’s identity. Then, many people cast envious gazes at this white-robed youth. He actually came from the same Holy Land as Sheng Mei! For a heroic young elite like him, his future achievements would be limitless.

“Senior-apprentice Brother Jade, how did you see the Soul Empress?”

“Senior-apprentice Brother Jade, have you seen the Soul Empress fight before? What is it like?”

Many people asked Jade Lifestone in droves, some of them extremely zealous. To the spiritas, Sheng Mei was akin to a living goddess.

Many of the spiritas worshipped Sheng Mei. This was a deep reverence that came from the heart. Although many of these young outstanding elites admired Sheng Mei to the extreme, none of them had any impure thoughts towards her. This was because Sheng Mei was far too holy and perfect, to the point where no one dared to profane her image.

Jade Lifestone was also one of Sheng Mei’s adoring fans. With a slightly haughty tone, he began to narrate how he saw Sheng Mei.

As Lin Ming saw Jade Lifestone speak with such fervent enthusiasm he was left speechless. After a while he asked, “Where is the Soul Empress now?”

He wanted to see Sheng Mei. Having a general idea of where she was would be a good start.

Jade Lifestone frowned upon being interrupted. He looked towards the person asking the question and discovered it was that large and plodding dragon-bearded fellow.

To someone who was born handsome like Jade Lifestone and who was also picky about others' appearances, he naturally didn't have a favorable impression towards Lin Ming who currently looked like a perverted uncle who slaughtered pigs for a living.

In addition, Lin Ming interrupting his words had brought Jade Lifestone's impression of him even lower. Even if they were both fans of Sheng Mei, Jade Lifestone still disliked Lin Ming.

"Why do you care where the Empress is? Are you thinking of going to see her?"

Lin Ming traced his beard, hiding a smile. He chuckled and said, "I'm just a little curious about where the Soul Empress would be. This little brother, you wouldn't happen to know, right?"

"Humph, of course I know, there's no point in you trying to rile me up. I'll tell you that the Soul Empress is currently deep in seclusion within the Soul Rapture Holy Lands as she completes the seventh revolution of the Grand Reincarnation Art. Moreover, she will finish soon; this isn't a secret at all. However, there is no need for you to care about where she is, as it's useless whether you know or not."

Lin Ming was startled to hear this. Soul Empress Sheng Mei was completing the seventh revolution of the Grand Reincarnation Art. If so, then her strength would rise yet again!

Just what boundary would she have reached?

Lin Ming counted the cards that he could bring out in front of Sheng Mei. He had to admit that even though he was looking for Sheng Mei to negotiate with her, he was in far too disadvantageous a position.

This disadvantage originated from the decline of humanity. It was hard for a single man to change this.

"If the Soul Empress left seclusion would she come to the Akashic Dream Universe?"

Lin Ming asked once more. Jade Lifestone slowly said, "The Soul Empress can naturally come to the Akashic Dream Universe if she wants, because this is a trial land for the spiritas! However, don't go around thinking you can see her here. Wherever the Soul Empress goes, let alone you, not even I can follow her!"

Lin Ming didn't bother with Jade Lifestone's attitude. He asked again, "And about lighting those three soul seas that this good brother just mentioned, what is that exactly?"

Lin Ming's last question not only caused Jade Lifestone to frown, but everyone else also rolled their eyes once more.

This person asked so many useless questions.

Jade Lifestone carelessly said, "Although we all came to the Fallen God Mountain Range to test our luck or experience it for ourselves, the least you could do is try and learn some of the most basic knowledge before coming here. The shrine platforms have soul sea marks carved into them. The more enlightenment you can grasp, the more soul sea marks light up. If you can light them all up then that is the sign that you have successfully gained enlightenment. However, these are only legends. Only in ancient times were there people able to succeed."

Chapter 1838 – Enlightenment on the Shrine Platform

Chapter 1838 – Enlightenment on the Shrine Platform

…

…

…

Through a simple conversation with Jade Lifestone, Lin Ming had a much higher understanding of what this ‘enlightenment’ was.

Even though Jade Lifestone and the other martial artists didn’t like Lin Ming too much, they didn’t look down on him. Although Lin Ming didn’t look like an elite of any kind and he clearly came to take a look for the fun – weren’t they the same? There wasn’t a point to people who all never reached the finishing line laughing at each other.

Almost all those at the Fallen God Mountain Range had come to experience what attempting enlightenment on the shrine platforms was like. Very few of them had true confidence in themselves that they would succeed.

Of course, even those that were confident in themselves only had disappointment as their harvests.

Seeing Lin Ming fly towards the shrine platforms beneath the cliff, these people only teased him several times before no longer bothering with him.

Every year, countless individuals came to the Fallen God Mountain Range.

Perhaps they were ordinary martial artists and perhaps they were peerless geniuses. But in the end, all of them were only temporary travelers who never accomplished anything.

Lin Ming stepped on the wind. A light mountain breeze wafted up from the abyss, mixed with a refreshing light mist.

In the sea of spirit fog, countless shrine platforms stood tall.

These shrine platforms all seemed forged from jade. They were square-shaped with sharp corners and edges.

The shrine platforms were only three feet long and wide, but they stood tens of thousands of feet high. They were cut into the cliff and marked with strange runes. From afar, it seemed as if they were rooted into the depths of the earth, like tall and slender totem poles that were thrust into the ground.

Lin Ming soon saw the soul sea marks atop the shrine platforms. They were pieces of clouds carved atop the cliff; beautiful and exquisite.

Some of these clouds had already lit up, symbolizing the results of some martial artists that were sitting in meditation on the shrine platforms.

Although there were many shrine platforms, there were even more martial artists. Every shrine platform was already occupied.

Lin Ming patiently waited, but he didn't plan on blithely waiting for a random person. He swept out his divine sense and searched for someone whose aura was a little chaotic.

These types of people mostly didn't possess much patience. Hopefully they would leave soon.

Lin Ming noticed a purple-clothed woman with a pair of small horns rising from her forehead. It was unknown what race she was from but her cultivation was only at the Soul

Transformation realm; she was a true junior. She was likely not much older than Frost Dream when she had participated in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting.

She was clearly overdrawing her soul force trying to grasp the principles atop the shrine platform and was suddenly pushed away.

Lin Ming's eyes and feet were fast. His figure flickered and he immediately occupied the shrine platform that the purple-clothed girl fell off from. Because he had a large figure, this small shrine platform was suddenly mostly taken up by him.

This sudden movement caused many of the waiting martial artists to roll their eyes.

"You..."

The purple-clothed girl looked at Lin Ming. She saw an overly tall and large dragon-bearded fellow suddenly rush onto the seat that was still warm from her body heat, and she flushed red with anger.

"What about it?" Lin Ming traced his thick beard.

The purple-clothed little girl couldn't find the words to speak. She could only give up on the shrine platform and fly up from the cliff in a huffy rage.

Like this, Lin Ming started attempting to grasp the principles. In order to do that, he needed perception as well as luck. Even though so many years had passed, no one had succeeded. Some people even suspected that the Dao here had changed without them knowing it.

Lin Ming was also curious about what 'enlightenment' here really meant.

Lin Ming opened the Eight Inner Hidden Gates' Gate of Opening. The Gate of Opening enhanced one's perception. Moreover, Lin Ming's Gate of Opening was not normal. He had perfectly opened the Gate of Opening, and this had provided Lin Ming with a terrifying enhancement to his perception.

When this was combined with Lin Ming's understanding of the Asura Sutra and its countless and complex Asura runes, as well as his studying of the divine runic arts, his comprehension ability had reached a mind-boggling level.

At the same time, Lin Ming entered a perfect ethereal state. He focused his heart and released his mind. Three fused martial intents appeared, and behind Lin Ming a Bodhi tree appeared, its sparse branches with their lush, jade-green leaves stretched out.

In this immortal land of ultimate bliss, Lin Ming's focus was as steady as an ancient lake that had never been disturbed.

With all these conditions joining with each other, Lin Ming began to perceive the Laws of the shrine platform.

The runes marked atop the pillars of the shrine platforms began to flow into Lin Ming's spiritual sea. Here, Lin Ming was like a little lonely boat, quietly drifting through a sea of Laws.

"The Laws of the shrine platform are similar in some ways to the Holy Scripture, but they are also completely different..."

Lin Ming's eyesight was extraordinary. He was someone who had seen the Holy Scripture and Asura Sutra, and he could tell that the Laws of Fallen God Mountain Range's shrine platforms were inherited from the Holy Scripture.

In fact, even the aura here seemed to echo with the golden page he had on him, their true meanings superimposing upon each other.

In order to prevent any accidents from occurring, Lin Ming had placed the golden page into his inner world. As he touched his divine sense upon the page, a strange cord of resonance seemed to form.

Like this, Lin Ming sat in meditation for a day. He discovered that even though cultivating wasn't good at the Fallen God Mountain Range, it was actually highly beneficial for him if he were only trying to perceive the mysteries of the golden page.

Slowly, Lin Ming gained an increasingly profound understanding of the second wood page. Three days later, Lin Ming could sense something extra in his spiritual sea. Because of this, there was a change to his spiritual sea, and with a light cracking sound, one of the carved clouds on Lin Ming's shrine platform lit up with a sparkling light.

This was the soul sea mark of the shrine platform.

Now, it had been lit up by Lin Ming.

"Mm... someone made progress. It's so bright too, you rarely see that!"

At the Fallen God Mountain Range, countless people came to grasp the principles every year, so lighting up a soul sea mark wasn't much at all. But for a soul sea mark to emit such a blinding light after lighting up, that was actually extremely rare.

The brighter the light was, the more a martial artist had grasped the principles. This also meant their potential was greater.

At this time, even though Lin Ming had only lit up the first soul sea mark, it was still more radiant than those people who had lit up three or four soul sea marks already.

"Who is so fierce...?"

Many people looked at Lin Ming's shrine platform. As they realized who he was, a strange complexion came over their faces.

"It's actually him..."

Jade Lifestone from the Soul Rapture Holy Lands had been attempting enlightenment on a shrine platform too. As he saw Lin Ming and his performance, his face twisted as if he had eaten a fly.

If it were anyone else he wouldn't find it strange, but... why was it him?

This person clearly didn't seem extraordinary at all, nor was he young, so how could this person have such a high degree of perception? This was just a joke!

Jade Lifestone looked at Lin Ming's shrine platform which was nearly completely covered by Lin Ming's large butt. He looked at the strongly shining soul sea mark and contrasted it to his own three dimly shimmering soul sea marks. At that time, Jade Lifestone felt as if 10,000 crows were flying above his head.

"How is this possible? This fellow looks like he should be selling pork on the side of the street so how is he better than me? Before this, he even asked me what it meant to light up three soul sea marks and it seemed as if it were his first time coming to the Fallen God Mountain Range. Was that all an act?"

Jade Lifestone felt sick to his stomach. He didn't believe this was Lin Ming's first time at the Fallen God Mountain Range.

He quickly stabilized his mind and returned to trying to grasp the principles. After being surpassed by this uncle-like Lin Ming, he was in a bad mood.

"Miss..."

"I see it..."

The purple-clothed girl with two little horns jutting out from her forehead was watching Lin Ming, her mouth slightly fallen open, a bit unwilling to admit defeat. The shrine platform that Lin Ming was sitting on had been hers, and when Lin Ming sat on it, it suddenly dazzled with a blinding light. But when she had tried, there had only been a dim glow.

"Could it be that perception is inversely related to one's good looks? He is so old and hideous yet his comprehensions are so deep, and I am so cute yet... ugh..." The purple-clothed girl turned red with shame and no longer thought about it. After resting for three days her soul force had recovered and she could attempt the shrine platform again.

When Lin Ming lit up the first soul sea mark he created a small commotion, but the disturbance quickly died down. Although Lin Ming's comprehension ability was rare, it wasn't too uncommon. Through the many years there were lots of people with achievements similar to Lin Ming's, but in the end they had all fallen short.

The shrine platforms of the Fallen God Mountain Range weren't simple at all.

Many people recognized it as a matter of fact that Lin Ming had come to the Fallen God Mountain Range before. Otherwise, to light up the first soul sea mark in three days and also to such a degree – that was just unbelievable.

But soon, they were even more shocked.

Another 40 days passed. Lin Ming had been at the Fallen God Mountain Range for a month and a half now. On this day, another soul sea mark lit up on Lin Ming's shrine platform, dazzling with a blinding light.

This was the second soul sea mark. Lin Ming felt as if another layer had formed in his spiritual sea and his soul force became increasingly deep. He had obtained considerable benefits from attempting enlightenment here.

Of course, these advantages were because Lin Ming's enlightenment results were almost perfect, far above what the average person could compare with.

Chapter 1839 – Identity Revealed

Chapter 1839 – Identity Revealed

…

…

…

In the hazy pall of spiritual light, Lin Ming was bathed in the brilliant luster of the shrine platform. In this halo he was a solemn monk, meditating in a deep trance like an ancient Buddha.

His dazzling aura sharply contrasted with his appearance.

On the cliff, many people were left speechless.

This old uncle with a full beard was unexpectedly fierce.

"This fellow, he was just pretending to be a sheep. This definitely isn't the first time he's been here and he must have already comprehended a lot before."

Someone said with utter certainty in their voice.

But even if one came here many times and tried to grasp enlightenment repeatedly, to obtain such a deep understanding was still something worthy of praise.

This was because for many people, even if they tried meditating here for dozens of years, they might only light up their fourth or fifth soul sea marks. And as for the brightness of those soul sea marks, they were completely different from Lin Ming's.

Compared to Lin Ming's soul sea marks, theirs were like a little candle in front of the bright night moon.

In the world of martial artists, strength reigned supreme. Many people immediately discarded their earlier thoughts of belittling Lin Ming.

Among these people, Jade Lifestone had haunted eyes. He didn't want to admit that he had been wrong from the start. An inexplicable surge of anger filled his heart, "Yes, enlighten yourself, keep on enlightening yourself, I don't believe that once you go further you can continue singing so loudly all this time.

"When Soul Empress Sheng Mei attempted enlightenment in the past, she was far better than this. Even so, she stopped at three soul sea marks."

Jade Lifestone unhappily said. No matter how many times Lin Ming had come in the past, this didn't change the fact that he was now inferior to Lin Ming.

It was because these were inalterable facts that Jade Lifestone found them hard to bear.

And indeed, Jade Lifestone wasn't wrong.

On the 90th day of grasping the principles, Lin Ming began to feel the difficulty rise.

The lines on the shrine platform weren't as simple as they seemed.

Gradually, the lines on the shrine platform began to turn hazy and emit a mysterious rhythm.

Each line had an inexplicable attraction emanating from it, making Lin Ming's divine soul be lost within them.

He felt as if he were standing in an endless labyrinth and had lost all sense of direction.

Moreover, the paths of this labyrinth winded about, with walls as high as mountains. It was impossible to see where they led. Everyone was covered in a thick pitch black fog, a black cage with a terrifying aura that made his heart quicken.

Facing this vast sea of Laws, a sense of powerlessness grew in his heart.

But all this knowledge, the texts of the golden page that were fused into his body and divine soul, all of those comprehensions he had obtained, began to emit a brilliant light that resonated with the mysterious strength in the darkness.

In that originally meandering labyrinth, beams of golden light would periodically appear.

This golden light appeared throughout the entire labyrinth in a profound sequence.

Lin Ming accepted this stroke of good luck and followed the golden lights…

In the outside world, his body began to shake. His body that was covered in a soft light seemed to gently sway.

100 days.

Lin Ming found it difficult to continue forwards.

Then, another 10 days passed. With this, he surpassed the 108 days that Sheng Mei had spent here.

111 days. 112 days.

At 115 days, Lin Ming's shrine platform began to shine with a brilliant radiance that illuminated his surroundings.

"Three soul sea marks!"

Lin Ming exhaled a long breath of air. At the same time, he deeply frowned.

His speed was slower than Sheng Mei's.

But, this was also reasonable.

Shen Mei had read the Spiritas Holy Scripture before and her understandings of the golden pages naturally surpassed Lin Ming's. Even if Lin Ming had the support of the Asura

Sutra, it was still impossible for him to surpass Sheng Mei in comprehending principles of the soul forging system.

Thinking this, Lin Ming felt there were countless hurdles blocking his way from becoming thoroughly aware of the principles here and obtaining the golden page.

“No wonder they said it was the same as impossible to come to the Fallen God Mountain Range and obtain the golden page here… even when a True Divinity was in their youth and came here, they still failed…”

Lin Ming sighed in his heart. He was completely unsatisfied with his current results.

However, if those people watching Lin Ming were to know his thoughts, they would probably have killed themselves in disgust.

“Three soul sea marks, and he can make them shine with such a powerful divine light!”

It wasn’t a surprise to anyone that Lin Ming had lit up three soul sea marks. This was because they had already recognized that Lin Ming had come to the Fallen God Mountain Range before, so it wasn’t strange if he could light up the fourth or fifth soul sea marks.

But, what amazed them was that the three soul sea marks that did light up blazed like suns. None of those present were able to compare.

They looked at Lin Ming with disbelieving expressions. No matter how they looked at Lin Ming he didn’t seem like a top genius from some large influence.

Some people nearly stamped their feet on the ground. This fellow was actually so much stronger than they were. This feeling was as if some spirit medicine had been eaten up by a pig.

“This person probably disguised themselves. Maybe he’s a peak genius from some sect… if he could do what he did, he’s definitely not some nobody.”

Jade Lifestone muttered to himself as he stared at Lin Ming.

“He’s likely hiding his identity.” Some other proud sons of heavens from other ancient influences commented, finding this entire situation suspicious.

In order to gain enlightenment on the Phantom God Spirit Cliff, one needed an extraordinary background as well a certain comprehension into the highest Laws of the spiritas. These highest Laws were all parts of top secret inheritances, so where would ordinary martial artists ever be able to study them?

“I wonder where he is from? Are there any large influences with such an ugly elite…?”

The purple-clothed girl with two horns thought to herself, finding it hard to accept Lin Ming’s appearance.

But Lin Ming completely ignored all the whispers around him.

In his ears, all he heard were the divine sounds of the world. The texts of the golden page that had fused into his body and divine soul, as well as his comprehensions of them, floated within him like giant stars, exuding endless true meanings. Their shining light granted him a great deal of inspiration.

He could feel his soul force billowing like a vast tide. He had gained great benefits here once more.

Although there were many advantages, Lin Ming was still worried about how he would obtain the golden page here.

Then, a timid voice echoed in Lin Ming’s mind.

“H-h-h-hey… just now… there are some things that you seemed to have… mistaken…”

This voice startled Lin Ming. It was the red-dressed little girl he had met in the Akashic Dream Battlefield!

She had turned into a pure energy form that lingered around Lin Ming. No one was able to discover her presence.

The reason she suddenly spoke up now was because she realized there were errors in Lin Ming's enlightenment.

This shocked Lin Ming. His three soul sea marks had shined so brilliantly, but he was actually wrong in his approach?

"Where was my mistake?"

Lin Ming quickly asked with a sound transmission. He knew that the red-dressed little girl wasn't ordinary, but he didn't think she would be able to see through the profound and complex principles of the shrine platform's Laws.

But before the red-dressed little girl could reply, the skies suddenly changed color. A dreadful fluctuation of energy began to rise up from all around.

Lin Ming was startled. He looked up into the skies.

What just happened?

Rumble rumble rumble!

The air trembled, as if there was thunder brewing.

Dark clouds formed, blotting out the skies.

This sudden change left everyone panic-stricken. They all looked upwards, not sure what was happening.

And at this time, with a loud tearing sound, a divine sword seemed to cut through the skies. The gray clouds above the Phantom God Spirit Cliff were violently torn apart.

A misty light converged into a shining sea of light, one that appeared without any indication.

This light drowned out the skies. It was omnipresent, covering every person there.

Each ray of light seemed to originate from the nothingness of ancient times, seeming to illuminate all their hearts.

A vast aura spread outwards, making everyone's hearts shake.

Beneath this shining light, all of the martial artists at the Phantom God Spirit Cliff were frightened. Beneath this light they felt completely powerless, nearly overcome with a desire to prostrate themselves on the ground in worship.

"Endless light, endless life, illuminate the 33 Heavens..."

From the heavens, after the sea of light appeared, a deep and boundless ancient voice followed right after.

As this voice appeared, countless motes of light formed in the air, constantly wandering around those present.

"Great Brahmic God King!"

"It's the old ancestor! The old ancestor's divine sense! Why would it be here!?"

Some of the chosen prides of heaven here had accompanied their honorable masters to the divine mountain before, or even came from the influence there. Now, these people all felt fear in their hearts. They fell to their knees.

"What? This sense comes from the Great Brahmic God King?"

"Great Brahmic God King... this is the sense of a God King!"

On the cliff, there were still some people on the shrine platforms who didn't know where the origin of this mystical light was. After finding out, they fell to their knees, sincerely bowing.

The Great Brahmic God King was one of the top powerhouses of the Soul World. He was worthy of their worship.

"God King!?"

Lin Ming was bewildered. What was a God King? A True Divinity?

Lin Ming didn't want to believe this, but even if this existence wasn't a True Divinity, the title of God King wouldn't be given to anyone below an Empyrean.

And from the responses of the elites present, this person was likely a True Divinity!

Even an Empyrean couldn't bring out such a reaction. At the Akashic Dream Battlefield, after Empyrean Myriad Ghost and Chaos Demon God had appeared, although the young elites present had been afraid of them, they didn't all fall to their knees.

A True Divinity was able to permeate their divine sense into the Fallen God Mountain Range; how was this possible?

"A True Divinity is powerful to this degree? Even though their main body cannot enter the Fallen God Mountain Range, they can still cover this area with their sense? Even affecting this area?"

A foreboding premonition rose in Lin Ming's heart. If a True Divinity's sense had come here, then there had to be a reason…

A cold sweat seeped down Lin Ming's back. Then, it should be to track him!

Just as this thought flashed through Lin Ming's mind, a beam of divine light fell down from the skies and covered him.

As Lin Ming was covered in this mystical light, it was like he had been struck by a bolt of lightning, like countless meteorites were smashing into his spiritual sea.

Luckily, Lin Ming's divine soul was extremely formidable. Otherwise, his spiritual sea might have already collapsed upon being covered by this divine sense.

"A True Divinity's strength!"

Although he already had a guess, the impact on his spiritual sea by this light confirmed to Lin Ming that this person who sent the divine sense here was a True Divinity. And worst of all, this True Divinity had come for him!

In an instant, Lin Ming's limbs went cold, as if he had fallen into an icy lake!

A True Divinity had locked onto him!

"Damn."

Lin Ming grimly thought. As he was covered in this light, he felt his divine soul be attacked by some strange marks.

Beneath the influence of these marks, his Bodily Rebirth Technique melted away like snow beneath the scorching sun. His beard disappeared… his muscles deflated… his face became thinner…

Lin Ming's true appearance had been revealed.

Chapter 1840 – Surrounded

Chapter 1840 – Surrounded

…

…

…

Lin Ming's change was far too conspicuous. This was because as the divine light was gathered onto him, everyone's eyes were focused towards him.

"Isn't that the bearded uncle…?"

"That's him, the shrine platform he's sitting on still has three soul sea marks lit up. Moreover, their light is also stronger than the others'."

Many people remembered where Lin Ming had been sitting. As they saw his rapidly changing appearance, they were left dumbfounded.

What was going on?

"He wasn't old at all, he's a youth!"

"He was hiding his appearance…"

The purple-clothed girl with horns had her mouth fall open as she watched Lin Ming turn from that scary-looking uncle to a dashing young man; the difference was too great.

Why did he conceal his appearance? Did he have some enemy?

But just as this thought passed over everyone's hearts, they also realized something.

"This person looks familiar."

"I saw a bounty on him at Oceanguard City!"

"He's Lin Muk!"

Someone cried out in alarm. Most of the martial artists at Fallen God Mountain Range had been here for some time already as they tried to gain enlightenment, thus they didn't recognize Lin Ming's name.

"Who's Lin Muk? What's going on? Why would a True Divinity be looking for him?"

Fallen God Mountain Range had a skeletal age restriction, so no matter how powerful a True Divinity was, they could only send their sense here. And they likely had to pay some price to do so. But, why would they cause such a grand scene to look for a mere junior?

"This Lin Muk is the one who killed Empyrean Myriad Ghost at the Akashic Dream Battlefield! Moreover, he cut down countless World Kings and Great World Kings to finally collect a billion merit points and exchanged them for a golden page, and also left behind his name on the Emperor God Wall."

"Not only does he have the golden page but he also has a spirit medicine beyond the transcendent divine level; I've heard it has already manifested into a kirin form."

"There are several influences that have posted a sky high bounty for him. If we can kill him then that will be a great lucky chance for us!"

Soon, many people began speaking of Lin Ming. As Lin Ming's accomplishments were spoken out loud, the martial artists that had been meditating at the Fallen God Mountain Range for a long time let out exclamations of surprise. This Lin Ming was so fierce?

He was being hunted down by so many people; no wonder he was hiding his appearance.

As for before, this could also explain how he had been able to light up three soul sea marks so brilliantly.

Jade Lifestone looked at Lin Ming, his complexion alternating between red and white. He really found it hard to believe that this was Lin Ming's first time at the Akashic Dream Universe and that he had even slain an Empyrean at the same level. This was simply a monstrous genius that others couldn't compare with at all.

For a time, many people began to surround Lin Ming.

They knew that many influences had posted an incredible bounty for him in Oceanguard City.

Standing upon the shrine platform, Lin Ming's complexion had turned black. After being covered with the sense of a True Divinity, he no longer bothered with maintaining any semblance of a disguise. Instead, he drew out the Phoenix Blood Spear.

This Great Brahmic God King was actually able to bypass the rules of the Akashic Dream Universe to a certain extent. Were True Divinities powerful to such a degree?

Thinking about it, a True Divinity truly could disobey the rules of the world.

For instance, in piercing through the God Lamenting Wall that divided the 33 Heavens, or displaying such tremendous supernatural abilities in the Akashic Dream Universe.

After all, a True Divinity was only a boundary lower than the Asura Road Master and the author of the Holy Scripture.

"So you were Lin Muk!"

A gloomy voice shouted out. With innumerable ringing sounds, people drew their weapons.

As these people did so, they all blocked Lin Ming's paths of escape.

Like this, Lin Ming became the public target.

Many people looked on with gloating expressions. Who cared how powerful Lin Ming was? In this kind of environment it was impossible for him to escape.

He wouldn’t be able to keep that golden page.

“Your name is Lin Muk? We have no previous enmity or injustice with you, but you have offended far too many people and the treasures you possess are far too valuable. You should also understand what it means for a man’s own wealth to ruin him by arousing the greed of others. So, don’t blame us for this. If you want to blame someone, only blame those who posted a bounty for you.”

At this time, three people stood up and took positions in three different directions around Lin Ming.

They all held swords in their hands.

“The Three Feather Prodigies.”

Someone said, startled. The Three Feather Prodigies were extremely famous. They were known as the most outstanding disciples to appear in the Phoenix Feather Holy Lands for the last billion years. Even here at the Fallen God Mountain Range they had considerable accomplishments in grasping the principles and had lit up their fifth soul sea marks.

In particular, if these three people joined forces, their overall combat strength would double!

“Originally we only needed to provide clues about your whereabouts to get the bounty rewards, but since the Great Brahmic God King has found you there is no point in doing that anymore. We can only subdue you and bring you in. Don’t blame us for kicking a man when he’s down!”

The boss of the Three Feather Prodigies sneered and slashed his sword at Lin Ming!

“You think you have the qualifications to kick me when I’m down? I want you to get the hell out of my way!”

Lin Ming suddenly roared out loud. His joints crackled and his aura changed, immediately becoming like a raging and endless sea.

Bang!

With a loud explosive sound, Lin Ming’s spear seemed to pierce through the skies. The gorgeous spear light crossed through the air and smashed into the boss of the Three Feather Prodigies.

“Big Brother!”

The Three Feather Prodigies had fast responses. They moved together to resist Lin Ming’s attack. However, with a cracking sound, the spear light erupted and billions of jins of strength gushed out. The world shook and space disintegrated.

The Three Feather Prodigies’ fused sword light immediately shattered like glass. The soul force spirit essence they poured into their sword light was also completely wiped out.

The three of them cried out in shock as they were sent tumbling away. As for the boss, he was sent soaring back hundreds of feet as blood spewed out from his body.

“What!?”

Everyone was shocked. The Three Feather Prodigies were defeated just like that?

“Mm? They didn’t die?”

A cold light sparkled in Lin Ming’s eyes. He moved forwards and chased after the Three Feather Prodigies. His spear swept out, cutting through the skies. One of the Three Feather Prodigies was sliced in half by the Phoenix Blood Spear, his blood dyeing the heavens.

“Third Brother!”

The remaining two of the Three Feather Prodigies felt their eyes turn red with rage. However, they weren't Lin Ming's match.

Lin Ming's feet flickered as space seemed to lose meaning beneath him. He nearly teleported next to the remaining two, his spear falling down once more.

Puff! Puff!

With two light sounds, these two people had their hearts pierced by Lin Ming's spear.

With this, the Three Feather Prodigies were slain by Lin Ming. Their deaths had been so sudden and brutal that even their true bodies had been wounded and it would take them some time to heal themselves.

After killing these three people, Lin Ming turned around without missing a beat. The Phoenix Blood Spear and his hand were already dyed crimson with blood!

"Death God Lin Muk!"

Seeing Lin Ming like this, some people couldn't help but cry out the title he was given.

He was just far too strong. Even outstanding elites like the Three Feather Prodigies had been slain like farm chickens.

"Horrifying!"

Many people said, frightened. For a time, none of them dared to move forwards.

Although they were well aware that Lin Ming would die sooner or later since he was surrounded by so many people, no one wanted to be one of the first to attack him.

Those that did were destined to be killed by Lin Ming, and would have no chance of receiving the bounty reward.

For a time, all of those martial artists that thought of killing Lin Ming stopped in their steps, deciding to observe instead.

At this time, a heaven-shaking roar transmitted from the skies above.

“Lin Muk, I’ve finally found you!”

“Lin Muk, you killed countless people of my spirit race at the Akashic Dream Battlefield, even harming their spiritual seas! I will make you pay for this blood debt!”

“Lin Muk, in the Akashic Dream Battlefield my boundary was suppressed so I was killed by you, but now this is a fair battle in the Akashic Dream Universe! I will slay you and take revenge!”

Howls and roars overflowed from the skies.

“Mm?”

Lin Ming was startled. He sensed several strong auras that were rapidly arriving.

Looking up, he saw several shadows in the midst of the sea of brilliant light.

These people were sent from the influences he was enemies with. They weren’t too far from the Fallen God Mountain Range to begin with, and after obtaining the news they quickly hurried here using a transmission array.

Amongst these people, Lin Ming even saw the Purple Chestnut King. At the Akashic Dream Battlefield when Lin Ming had struck down the Purple Chestnut King, it hadn’t taken him any effort at all. But at that time, the Purple Chestnut King’s cultivation had also been suppressed. Now, he re-entered the Akashic Dream Universe so that he could kill Lin Ming in a situation where his cultivation boundary wasn’t suppressed and wipe out his previous disgrace.

“You all… even managed to make a True Divinity move…” Lin Ming’s eyes burst out with a murderous light. He never imagined he would be caught in such a situation where his whereabouts would be found by others. It seemed that he had really underestimated the heroes of the Soul World, and completely misunderstood the powers of a True Divinity.

Chapter 1841 – Clash

Chapter 1841 – Clash

…

…

…

More and more people arrived. Dozens of squads had come with women and men, each one of them shining with radiant light. It was clear they were all uncommonly strong.

However, none of these people surpassed the ordinary World King realm. In fact, only a very small minority were ordinary World Kings.

To become a World King by 3000 years of age, anyone who could accomplish this was a genius amongst geniuses.

As for becoming a Great World King by 3000 years of age, that was a true monstrous genius. This sort of person could easily become an Empyrean before they were 10,000 years old, and in the future they would likely become an extreme Empyrean with even a small chance of attacking the True Divinity realm.

This type of person was exceedingly rare even in the entire Soul World. And even if there was one, they wouldn't be spending much of their time here. Thus, even though Lin Ming was surrounded by all these large influences, it would be incredibly difficult for them to come up with a Great World King that was less than 3000 years old any time soon.

"Lin Muk, I'll kill you in the Akashic Dream Universe first, and then I'll bury you in the real world!"

A vicious light shined in the Purple Chestnut King's eyes.

He had led a group of his spirit race people here to encircle Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's eyes darkened. Since he dared to come here to gain enlightenment, he was already prepared for this sort of situation. He had chosen this spot because of the restriction of the Laws, so even if there were masses of people trying to kill him, he didn't fear them at all.

However, he had been secretly marked by a True Divinity. This was something that Lin Ming feared.

"If you want to kill me, then I'll just kill you all first!" With his identity already exposed, Lin Ming no longer hid his strength. A terrifying aura erupted from his body, impacting into the heavens.

He moved without stirring the wind. The Phoenix Blood Spear cried out as if it were an eternally bloodthirsty beast that was awakening. A large tract of the cliff was illuminated in a blinding red light and a dreadful smell of blood filled the air.

This roiling killing intent locked onto all the people standing in the distance.

The people who arrived were mostly from the influences he had slaughtered in the Akashic Dream Battlefield. There were influences like the spirit race and Yellow Springs Palace, but there were also many other martial artists who came here for the golden page or for the bounty.

Facing so many outstanding individuals, Lin Ming was even marked by a True Divinity. No matter where he went he would be a torch in the dark, unable to hide.

Then he might as well make his stand here and massacre everyone!

At this time, a white-clothed woman stepped out from the crowd. Her cultivation was at the ordinary World King realm.

A normal World King that appeared in front of Lin Ming would have been instantly cut down. But, this World King was different. She was only 1300 years old and if she encountered another great lucky chance, she might even become an Empyrean when she was 10,000 or so years old. If so, she would even have a small chance of becoming a True Divinity.

In other words, Lin Ming was facing a martial artist who was only slightly inferior to a young Emperor Shakya!

“I am from Great Brahmic God Mountain and am one of the Great Brahmic God King’s disciples. Today I have come here by the bidding of my honorable master to take your life!”

The woman’s voice was cold, with no hint of emotion in her eyes.

The surrounding martial artists on the shrine platforms sucked in a deep breath. Great Brahmic God Mountain! A True Divinity disciple!

Even in the main universe of the Soul World, a True Divinity was a legendary existence. Wherever a True Divinity disciple went, they would rouse feelings of absolute inferiority!

They didn’t know who this white-clothed woman was, but they didn’t doubt that she was a terrifying opponent!

“Senior-apprentice Sister Icydew, be careful around that brat! He has a stronger spear and also two avatars! Those two avatars have an unbelievable defensive power.”

Beside the white-clothed woman, the Purple Chestnut King warned her as he glared at Lin Ming, listing all of Lin Ming’s cards one at a time.

“There’s no need for words!”

The white-clothed woman’s voice was cold. She stretched out her hands and her fingers rapidly moved. Shards of ice began to fall down around her as the surrounding temperature rapidly dipped!

Weng!

A dreadful cold energy burst outwards. Even the rocks were suddenly covered with a layer of frost and the air became bone-bitingly cold.

For dozens of miles around, parts of the mountain froze over and began to fall down.

This was a horrifying level of power.

The geniuses standing on the shrine platforms near Lin Ming suddenly widened their eyes, their complexions changing. They knew that this was the attack of an ultra-powerhouse. They flew up from the shrine platforms, all of them hurriedly fleeing the waves of ice cold energy.

Lin Ming no longer had anywhere to hide. His killing spirit rose and his spear radiated a blinding light. In the void, the spear was wrapped in a massive sun-bright inferno. Lava seemed to tumble around in the air, carrying with it the inexhaustible power of heavenly tribulation power as it smashed into the freezing waves of cold energy.

Heavenly fire raged, bringing with it the true meaning of fire as it sank into the waves of ice and snow.

Two forces of extreme hot and extreme cold crashed into each other. Airwaves crazily swept out, wreaking havoc in all directions.

On the mountain peak, there were some servants of the young elites present. Some of these people weren’t able to move in time and were caught up in the energy waves. With miserable cries they were directly ground into paste.

In this strike, the two forces were evenly matched!

The white-clothed woman frowned. In that collision just now, she had felt Lin Ming’s enormous strength; he was a formidable opponent.

“Humph! This isn’t the Akashic Dream Battlefield where our cultivation boundaries are suppressed! Pathetic, give up any thoughts of escape!”

In the void, another World King level powerhouse began to move. With his entire body shrouded in dense demonic energy, he secretly attacked Lin Ming.

This martial artist came from Yellow Springs Palace. Although he was also a World King, he was nearly 3000 years old and had just barely managed a breakthrough. Although he was still an early World King, he was still far inferior to Icydew, whether it was in terms of talent or strength.

Hidden in the crowds of people, he took out a blood red jar that was filled with splashing black blood.

This black blood gushed out and transformed into a massive blood river. The blood river crashed about, emanating a cold yin chill.

In the midst of this blood river, devils bobbed up and down. With the pressure of a falling mountain, a terrifyingly monstrous demonic energy was emitted. Even the air melted away beneath this demonic energy, creating large swathes of nothingness. It was a fearful power.

This was an extremely cruel and violent magic tool. Everyone drew as far away as they could lest they be touched by this blood red light.

The proud children of heaven that were on the shrine platforms all flew away, afraid that the blood river would touch them and make it impossible for them to be saved.

Lin Ming glanced at the black blood. He could feel that the blood red jar was strange, but in terms of strength, this was much weaker than Icydew. His eyes flashed with a cold light and a black spear leapt into his hands, one that emitted a boundless ancient power. This was the Black Dragon Spear!

Many people who understood Lin Ming thought that he would choose to fight with the Phoenix Blood Spear in order to save his strength. But at this time, Lin Ming actually drew out the Black Dragon Spear; this was completely unexpected.

Woosh!

Spear light soared up. The Heretical God Tree appeared with countless tiny thunder dragons wrapped around it, each one carrying the endless true meaning of thunder. Then, these thunder dragons began to transform into tiny sand-like motes of thunder power.

These motes of thunder bloomed with infinite arcs of lightning and smashed into the blood river and the devils within like countless stars.

The heavens and earth became a vast expanse of blinding white for a moment. Then, lightning rumbled and the world shook.

The martial artist that was carrying the blood red jar was the first to bear the brunt of this attack. He was instantly submerged into the waves of lightning.

“Ahh!”

A frightening detonation rang out. Within the resounding claps of lightning, a youth in blood red robes soared upwards, avoiding the sheets of lightning.

The blood river and devils he released had been swallowed up by the power of thunder and had been completely destroyed. Even the blood red jar in his hands had a pitch black crack in it.

This crack still shined with the mystic power of lightning that tore apart the black runes swirling around it and prevented the blood red jar from restoring itself. Between the youth’s eyebrows, star-like motes of thunder shined, emitting endless thunderclaps that caused the blood red-robed youth to vomit blood again and again. It was clear that this blood red-robed youth had been severely wounded.

Everyone standing far away in the air was left amazed. This blood red-robed youth was clearly a World King genius, but he had been grievously wounded after a single strike from Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was about to rush forwards and finish off this person with his spear, but suddenly a wall of ice blocked his path; the one who was stopping him was that Icydew once more.

Shua!

Lin Ming faced Icydew. The long spear in his hands had changed, replaced by the Phoenix Blood Spear once more!

Kacha!

The Phoenix Blood Spear turned into a beam of light that thrust through the ice wall. Spear light shot out, blasting open chunks of the ice wall that rained down in all directions!

This left everyone surprised. Lin Ming was constantly switching his spears?

But they immediately understood what happened.

Lin Ming didn’t have confidence he could severely wound Icydew with the Black Dragon Spear in a single move. Thus, he had chosen to fight her with the Phoenix Blood Spear to conserve his strength.

But to deal with those who were relatively strong but couldn’t compare with Icydew, he would use the Black Dragon Spear so he could defeat them in a single move and save his strength.

“Rather than wounding ten fingers he would rather break off one. This Lin Muk is decisive!”

“Facing so many opponents he’s still saving as much strength as he can. What a terrifying enemy.”

The surrounding martial artists immediately understood Lin Ming's plan.

And at this time, more and more people attacked Lin Ming.

They had no intention of fighting one on one – they chose to swarm him together!

Seeing energy of divine light cover the skies, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with bolts of thunder. He rapidly drew back!

"There are too many enemies and there will be more and more of them catching up! If I can't break my way out of here then I'll die sooner or later and the golden page will be taken away!"

Lin Ming frowned as he looked at the people who were wrapped in divine light.

He had to hurry!

Ping!

Lin Ming kicked out at the nearest man. The blood of an Azure Dragon roared within him, carrying with it the endless draconic power. Like a True Dragon diving into the sea, the kick was like a shadow as it smashed outwards.

This kick contained billions of jins of strength, enough to shatter air itself.

The man was startled; he didn't think Lin Ming would take the initiative to attack him. Soul force condensed into a wall to resist this attack.

But as a result, the soul wall was crushed by this kick and the man's chest was caved in by the kick. With several cracking sounds, the man's bones broke all over and he was sent tumbling away as he vomited blood.

These people were all proud children of heaven with the strength of a peak Holy Lord. But in front of Lin Ming, they didn't even have the strength to resist.

"This human's mortal body is far too terrifying!"

"Part of us focus on attack and part of us focus on defense. Join together and use as many divine soul attacks as you can. There's no need to show mercy or honor here!" The Purple Chestnut King shouted out. Clearly fearing Lin Ming, he didn't step forwards at all.

At this time, killing Lin Ming was all that mattered. Anything like a martial arts spirit was a secondary matter.

Even the arrogant Icydew didn't refuse joining forces with the others. This was because she knew that she wouldn't be able to defeat Lin Ming one on one.

With direct orders that came from the Great Brahmic God King himself, she had to complete her master's commands no matter the cost.

Chapter 1842 – Killing, Killing, Killing

Chapter 1842 – Killing, Killing, Killing

….

…

….

Dozens of figures threw themselves towards Lin Ming.

In the skies, endless radiance sparkled and hails of thunder and fire billowed. Divine pagodas came falling down with a mountain-like suppression and massive palms split open the void… all sorts of soul techniques came raining down.

Moreover, these soul techniques contained strange soul attacks within them.

Lin Ming's complexion was dignified. Even if his fighting strength was amazing and his mortal body was incomparably powerful, he was still pressured when facing crowds of elite martial artists.

The peak Holy Lords among these people could fight an ordinary World King.

The ordinary World Kings could struggle with a Great World King.

Arcs of lightning wove themselves around Lin Ming. The grandmist space appeared to deal with all of these attacks, but it was still constantly weakened.

Lin Ming gripped his fists. At this moment he was being sieged from all sides. If he waited here then there would inevitably be more and more people arriving.

He reached out into the void and stirred up a massive black vortex. The Black Dragon Spear appeared in his grasp once more, exuding waves of surging slaughter energy.

Lin Ming poured his true essence into the Black Dragon Spear. The spear began to emit a space-piercing black light, as if it were a vicious dragon being rudely awoken.

Bang –

A deep and dull explosion rang out from within Lin Ming's flesh and blood.

Following this deep sound were endlessly rolling thunderclaps that continued non-stop.

In his pitch black pupils, sand-like runes began to wink in and out of existence. Crimson energy started circling him like a blood dragon.

Scales jutted out from his skin, forming a black suit of armor that wrapped around him. His killing aura soared to the heavens.

Lin Ming had awoken the Asura blood.

In a brief moment, his bodily strength multiplied by several times and his defensive capabilities rapidly stormed upwards.

Dang! Dang! Dang!

His feet stepped on the void. Every step he took caused space to split open as if it were the ground.

He shot into the skies like a rising comet. The Black Dragon Spear emitted endless black light as the soul techniques crashing towards him began disintegrating one at a time.

With the Phoenix Blood Spear in his left hand and Black Dragon Spear in his right, he fired towards the severely wounded blood red-robed youth.

He'd kill him while he was down!

The blood red-robed youth sat cross-legged in the air, black soul force surging around his forehead, trying desperately to eliminate the star-like motes of light that flickered between his eyes. As he saw Lin Ming appear in front of him, his complexion turned white.

Several half-step World Kings nearby noticed Lin Ming's plan.

They all reached out, trying to capture Lin Ming.

Lin Ming didn't pause. The Phoenix Blood Spear emitted a blinding light, piercing through all the phantasmal great palms that reached towards him.

Lin Ming's spear broke apart a flood dragon created by soul force. Then, the Black Dragon Spear drew a beautiful arc in the air and severed the heads of these half-step World Kings. Their blood began to gush out like fountains!

And at this time, Icydew's eyes flashed with a sharp light. She appeared beside Lin Ming like ghosts and gods. Her right hand reached out with pinched fingers as she tried to strike Lin Ming's ribs.

Wherever her fingers went, space froze over, as if a massive river of ice was galloping towards Lin Ming.

"Die!"

Lin Ming had erupted with the strength of the Asura blood and now he was a dragon in human form. His strength had more than doubled and it was no longer possible for Icydew to stop him.

Peng!

A terrifying explosion rang out and the endless cold ice was shattered by Lin Ming. Even the frozen combat armor worn by Icydew completely broke apart.

Icydew cried out in alarm and rapidly drew back, her chest dripping with blood.

“What!?”

Icydew was shocked. Lin Ming was actually this powerful!? She thought Lin Ming was originally just a tad stronger than she was, but after undergoing this body metamorphosis, his strength had multiplied.

At this time, Icydew could only stare helplessly on as Lin Ming pierced towards the blood red-robed youth at an inconceivable angle.

The blood red-robed youth panicked. He had been a renowned martial artist for a long time already, but when facing this Black Dragon Spear, he felt his divine soul tremble. His hairs stood on end and he tried to flee backwards. The crimson jar in his hands rose up, rumbling towards the Black Dragon Spear.

This was an extremely evil magic tool that had been refined by his honorable master using 100,000 years. It contained the resentments of a trillion anguished spirits and was extremely durable.

But this magic tool was instantly pierced through by the Black Dragon Spear. The trillion spirits within were then sucked up by the black energy circulating around the Black Dragon Spear.

Woosh!

The blood red-robed youth from the Yellow Springs Palace had just managed to retreat a thousand feet, but almost instantly he was run through by the Black Dragon Spear. In his horrified eyes, his blood essence was completely sucked up by the Black Dragon Spear as his body turned into a leather bag of bones that slowly fell to the ground.

Lin Ming killed the blood red-robed youth with a single spear strike. The death of a World King genius had occurred in an instant.

However, during this brief moment, Lin Ming also came under attack from others.

He was being bombarded from all sides!

Although the grandmist space blocked the majority of these attacks, many soul techniques still struck his body. Yet, after stimulating the Asura blood, his incredible defense allowed him to resist it all!

And as this sight fell into the eyes of those present, they felt nothing but abject horror.

“My attack would have severely wounded an ordinary World King, but he wasn’t injured at all?”

“My strike just now could pierce through a small planet, but he didn’t even spit blood… he even killed that World King from the Yellow Springs Palace…”

A cold chill swept through the hearts of those present. All of them looked at each other, able to feel that this human youth was incomprehensibly fierce. Someday in the future, although he might not be able to harm the spiritas as a whole, he might be a scourge upon their various influences!

“To all the heroes at the Phantom God Spirit Cliff, this human called Lin Muk snuck into our Akashic Dream Battlefield and used despicable means to kill my people, even angering the Great Brahmic God King to the point where he took personal action to seek this human… to all fellow martial cultivators, let us kill this human together! If anyone has accomplishments during this battle then my people will give you a large reward, we can even double the posted bounty!”

The Purple Chestnut King shouted out from a safe position far away from the battlefield. His voice spread out for hundreds of miles.

On the Phantom God Spirit Cliff, there were innumerable proud children of heaven from different influences trying to grasp the principles here.

Although the average level of these people couldn't match with the martial artists that had rushed here to kill Lin Ming, there were still some peerless young elites hidden in the crowd where they remained unknown.

If these people could be used, they would be a considerable force.

After the Purple Chestnut King spoke, some people didn't wish to be used as a weapon by these influences and quietly withdrew.

But there were some people who had harbored a burning envy towards Lin Ming for lighting three soul sea marks in such a short period of time. Moreover, with Lin Ming's status as a human added on and the total amount of bounties offered for him, they were tempted.

"If you take the lead we will naturally help."

A martial artist on a shrine platform said. They already considered Lin Ming as a fish on a chopping block, but this struggling fish just had a few more bones than usual.

"Kill him! Strike together!" Someone from the Yellow Springs Palace cried out loud.

"As long as we kill him in the Akashic Dream Universe then his true body will be ejected from the separate space and the Great Brahmic God King can use his transcendent methods once more to find him! At that time, we can kill him however we want!"

Outside the battlefield, the Purple Chestnut King yelled out.

"Hahaha! Lin Muk, I want to see just how you'll die then!"

The Purple Chestnut King's eyes were fierce. Lin Ming's thoughts turned cold. He had already experienced the Great Brahmic God King's methods once and he didn't doubt that he could be found again!

If he died here, then losing the golden page wouldn't be the only consequence!

In the end, the reason Lin Ming was in such a crisis was because he didn't completely understand the methods of a True Divinity.

At this time, the people from the Yellow Springs Palace took the initiative to attack. Endless ghosts blocked out the skies!

Behind them, several whistling sounds rang through the air as the people atop the shrine platforms flew towards Lin Ming. Arcs of blazing light radiated from their bodies as the world seemed to surge around them.

"You want to kill me?"

Lin Ming's eyes turned blood red. Black light shot out from his body. The Black Dragon Spear thrust into the void, causing a pitch black light to appear.

Soon, the pitch black light expanded again and again, carrying with it a billowing power of chaos. Like a black hole, it emitted an inexhaustible power to swallow everything.

The dozen plus martial artists that flew towards Lin Ming weren't able to stop. The black hole swallowed them all and specks of their flesh and blood rained down from the skies.

The thick stench of blood filled the air.

These people had been killed in such a violent manner that even in the real world their divine souls had been injured. Moreover, these injuries weren't minor at all!

But at the same time, as Lin Ming attacked, his back was also ambushed by several people.

There were far too many people here! They came in swarms larger than the time Lin Ming had been surrounded in the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

And, these people didn't have their cultivations suppressed. Many of them had a cultivation base higher than Lin Ming.

Rumble rumble rumble.

These people were all elites of their era and their striking power was astonishing. Beneath the barrage of star-bright beams of light, Lin Ming avoided the majority of them but was still struck by a good number of attacks. No matter how strong his defensive capabilities were, after being bombarded by so many people his blood vitality still swelled up and his inner energy turned chaotic.

Blood began flowing down the scales on Lin Ming's back.

"I have to move! I can't just stand here in the middle and let them attack me, otherwise I'll just exhaust myself and die!"

Lin Ming immediately thought. He turned his head and an infinite mystical strength erupted once more. His icy cold gaze swept through the spiritas martial artists that had attacked him from behind.

"I'll start with you!"

Lin Ming shouted out. He stepped on the void and his velocity reached the limit.

He revolved the Space Laws, instantly appearing in front of those who had ambushed him, causing everyone else to lose their target.

"Be careful!"

Someone cried out in alarm. But, it was too late!

The Black Dragon Spear swept out and a terrifying killing intent erupted. The heads of three ambushers exploded into bits, their brains and blood spraying outwards!

This brutal way of dying frightened the other martial artists. If they died in such a manner, and especially with their heads blown apart, this would inevitably cause major damage to their spiritual seas. Even their true bodies would suffer debilitating losses and would require at least a year to recover from. Moreover, they wouldn't be able to fully recover without the use of miracle medicines.

“Kill him!”

In the skies, someone from the Yellow Springs Palace attacked!

Just as he attacked Lin Ming, Lin Ming instantly vanished, appearing not too far away from him. As for those other martial artists that had been standing near Lin Ming, they were caught in the radius of the missed attack. The ghosts sent by the Yellow Spring Palace martial artist swallowed them whole, leaving their ear-piercing screams to fill the air.

The feeling of being swallowed up by these ghostly spirits was no better than having one’s head blown apart, and it also caused major damage to one’s divine soul.

“Damn it!”

The one who attacked was stunned. He had actually accidently killed those on his side.

But in that brief moment of surprise, Lin Ming had appeared in front of him. With arctic eyes, the Black Dragon Spear in his hands slashed out like the scythe of a death god!

Blood bloomed like a red lotus…

Chapter 1843 – Tragic

Chapter 1843 – Tragic

…

…

…

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Lin Ming was like a god of death, endlessly harvesting life. As for those martial artists who were killed by Lin Ming, their hearts were blown up and their spiritual seas shattered into pieces.

This was a ruthless and brutal killing method that horrified all of the martial artists present.

Even in the Akashic Dream Battlefield, if they were killed like this by Lin Ming then they would still have to pay an enormous price.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Starlight from the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace poured into Lin Ming's body. His body emitted crackling sounds as he swept away all obstacles in his path!

And with Lin Ming's speed, nearly no one was able to lock onto him. Their attacks missed, even striking nearby people.

"Lock him down!"

The Purple Chestnut King roared to the crowd.

At this time, a yellow-haired youth from Chaos Divine Palace flew out, a turtle shell in his hand.

This turtle shell was strange. As soon as it appeared, it emitted an endless chaotic light, immediately transforming into a bizarre soul beast as large as a mountain that roared like thunder.

This soul beast looked like a giant taotie from afar. The hairs down its mouth were as thick as buckets and the light of chaos shimmered around it. Simple runes exuding soul force shined on its forehead, spreading through the heavens and earth and exuding an overwhelming atmosphere. It opened its maw and swallowed, drawing in all of the nearby soul force.

“Mm? Heaven swallowing beast!”

The spiritas martial artists immediately recognized this soul beast. In the legends, once this beast grew into an adult it could even swallow up the life force of a planet, turning it into a dead rock.

This heaven swallowing beast in front of them had been killed by Chaos Demon God before it was an adult and then had its soul sealed into this ancient turtle shell and refined into a magic tool.

As this turtle shell was taken out, the spirit essence of the heaven swallowing beast could be released to swallow everything nearby, including even nearby allies.

In ordinary times, a direct disciple that held this turtle shell wouldn’t think of using it. This was because every time this heaven swallowing beast’s spirit essence was used it would be weakened until it was finally ruined.

But now, facing Lin Ming, he could only take it out.

“Junior-apprentice Sister Icydew, if you and I join together we can seal up the surrounding space and cage in this Lin Muk to kill him!” The yellow-haired youth said to Icydew.

Icydew frowned. As a proud disciple of the Great Brahmic God King, to join forces with so many others to strike down a human left her feeling frustrated. But now she had no other choice; she could only coordinate attacks with these people.

She took out a soul tool that looked like a fish scale.

This scale came from a Deep Sea Leviathan God Beast, and inherently carried the true meaning of the Ice Laws. It had been personally refined by her master and was considered her best soul tool.

As this soul tool appeared, a chilling wind spread out, even freezing the nearby space.

Soul force surged within her body. The strange fish scale rose up against the wind.

Countless ice runes rapidly froze the space around Lin Ming and the heaven swallowing beast, creating a ten thousand foot cage of ice and snow around him.

This cage of ice and snow trapped Lin Ming with everyone else.

As Icydew activated the fish scale, more and more ice runes grew around the cage of ice and snow, making it increasingly thick.

“Mm?”

Lin Ming frowned as he saw the surrounding space freeze around him. He could no longer increase his speed. Then, the heaven swallowing beast opposite of him locked its blood red pupils onto him as they bloomed with a boundless light.

A terrifying swallowing strength covered him, causing his speed to fall.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Inside the freezing enchantment, strands of energy exploded, shaking the world.

"The heaven swallowing beast's swallowing power can lock down the void. Lin Muk will be unable to use his previous speed. He will die beneath a barrage of our attacks."

The yellow-haired youth from Chaos Divine Palace shouted out, "Attack together!"

Icydew's freezing enchantment didn't block the attacks of anyone else. For a time, everyone struck out together; the air lit up with countless beams of divine light!

To Lin Ming, the individual strength of these people wasn't anything at all. But when they were all combined together, it was enough to shatter a planet!

"He's dead for sure!"

The Purple Chestnut King stood outside the freezing enchantment, his lips curved up in a fierce smile. No matter how great Lin Ming's defensive powers were, it would be impossible to live through such a terrifying barrage of attacks.

The moment that Lin Ming was covered in this divine light, an inexplicably vast aura violently surged out from the freezing enchantment.

This aura was sly and treacherous, like a deep crimson sea.

As the various elites of the Soul World surrounding the freezing enchantment felt this aura, all of them shivered in the depths of their divine soul.

This Lin Muk – he could still resist?

A shocked light flashed in Icydew's eyes. The fish scale soul tool in her hand violently shook and the light within it weakened. Even the numerous floating Ice Law runes began shattering in droves as they were constantly annihilated. This was proof that her freezing enchantment had just suffered a horrifying impact.

Ka ka ka!

A crack appeared in the freezing enchantment; it was being slowly torn apart.

Rumble rumble rumble!

All of the divine light exploded together. At the center of the freezing enchantment where Lin Ming was standing, the dim phantom of a black-armored warrior stood high, pushing a massive wheel.

In every revolution of the wheel, endless Asura fighting spirit shined within. Countless runes glittered like stars inside it, making it feel as if even gods and buddhas would be extinguished within this black wheel.

Beneath this giant wheel, the previously inordinately arrogant heaven swallowing beast was being slowly crushed. With loud cracking sounds, every impact caused countless soul force runes to break apart and the heaven swallowing beast to weaken.

This black wheel was the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel and Myriad Essence Reincarnation Wheel overlapping on each other.

In the separate space within the stone forest, in that ancient galactic battlefield, Lin Ming had obtained endless harvests when he witnessed and comprehended the final battle between the Asura Road Master and the ancient spiritas king.

His comprehension of the Asura Sutra became far more profound and with that, the associated Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel became even stronger.

The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel had an inherent ability to crush apart all source force and evil spirits. Besides the Magic Cube, it could be called one of Lin Ming’s strongest methods to deal with the spiritas.

Rumble rumble rumble!

All of the divine lights of these attacks fell atop the wheel and were completely swallowed up by it.

However, the wheel also withstood a tremendous impact!

Lin Ming's blood vessels rose up, his meridians appearing!

"He cannot keep withstanding this! He has consumed too much energy and his aura is weakening!"

"That black spear is fierce, but it also sucks out a massive amount of his true essence!"

In the crowd, many people shouted out loud. But at the same time, all of them were dumbstruck to the extreme. Lin Ming was far too horrifying an enemy. Even under such an onslaught of attacks he was still able to persist.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

More people attacked. Some martial artists that were observing the battle from the shrine platforms also joined in on the melee. They saw Lin Ming decisively killing all those nearby and hadn't attacked because they feared they would be drawn into the mess and destroyed. But now as they saw Lin Ming besieged by innumerable people, like an elephant being slowly whittled down, they also took this chance to join in. They wanted to be the last straw that crushed his back.

More and more people joined in. Lin Ming was the target of all.

In this world, there would never be a lack of people who were willing to take advantage of someone when they were down. Moreover, Lin Ming was from a different race, and the spiritas geniuses were jealous of his achievements and talent.

These people never wanted to see others do well. Thus, seeing Lin Ming in distress and also with bounty rewards to take, they didn't mind giving Lin Ming an extra kick.

Bang!

An even more horrifying explosion lit up the skies. A crack appeared in the Asura phantom's giant wheel. Blood began to flow down the corners of Lin Ming's lips.

His eyes were blood red with rage and his body erupted to the peak with killing intent.

This was the sorrow of being from another race. The more he dazzled with glory, the easier he would be classified as a foe!

“Hehe, die!”

The Purple Chestnut King also attacked. Before this he had been hiding safely on the sidelines of the battlefield, but now as he saw that Lin Ming was nearly exhausted, he finally chose to move forwards and attack with everything he had. He tossed out all sorts of inscription symbols, wanting to tear Lin Ming to pieces.

Lin Ming’s eyes blazed with a fierce murderous intent.

Woosh! Woosh!

From Lin Ming’s inner world, two figures rushed out.

The speed of these two figures approached extreme velocities. One figure rushed towards the shrine platforms to finish off the weaker martial artists and another one hurtled towards the Purple Chestnut King!

“Be careful!”

Someone cried out. But, it was too late.

The figure flying towards the shrine platforms was the purple-clothed Lin Ming, the Soul Springs Divine Embryo. His movements were like ghosts and gods; in an instant, several geniuses on the shrine platforms had their spiritual seas pierced through.

At the same time, the black-clothed Lin Ming, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, also reached the Purple Chestnut King.

“Damn it!” The Purple Chestnut King roared, “Do you think a mere avatar can harm me!?”

The Purple Chestnut King extracted a heavy sword from his spatial ring and cut down towards the black-clothed avatar. A divine soul attack was contained within his sword light!

Bang!

A terrifying collision occurred. The black-clothed Lin Ming's mortal body had been refined endlessly through billions of years and had long become indestructible. In terms of bodily strength, this avatar was stronger than Lin Ming. As for the Purple Chestnut King's divine soul attack, it was unable to do anything to the black-clothed Lin Ming, because within the avatar's spiritual sea, what was condensed there was the murderous thoughts of the Asura Road Master.

Puff!

The Purple Chestnut King spat out a mouthful of blood as he tumbled away. He had been defeated in a single strike!

The Purple Chestnut King hadn't even been able to contend with an avatar. The disparity was far too great!

The black-clothed Lin Ming continued his onslaught. It joined forces with the purple-clothed Lin Ming and began slaughtering the surrounding martial artists. With these two avatars fighting together, their combat strength reached incomprehensible levels. They cut down swathes of martial artists and were no less ruthless in their methods. The martial artists that died had their heads burst open!

Blood rained down from the skies.

But at this time, Lin Ming had also consumed his strength to the limit. The black wheel in the Asura phantom's hands had thoroughly disintegrated!

Lin Ming had been severely wounded and was bleeding all over.

His chest and stomach were stained with blood and a great number of his ribs were broken. His organs were torn in multiple places and his meridians were ripped. This was an extremely tragic battle.

No matter how strong he was, he couldn’t withstand the bombardment of so many people.

“He’s almost done for.”

Someone said. But as their voice fell, they heard a pitiful cry echo through the air. The Purple Chestnut King had his heart pierced through by the combined attack of the two avatars.

The Purple Chestnut King howled in fear, panic coloring his face. He had just been killed by Lin Ming in the Akashic Dream Battlefield not too long ago, and his divine soul had yet to fully heal from that. Now, he was suffering a similar fate.

“No!”

The Purple Chestnut King screeched. After being continuously killed twice, this would create heavy damage to his divine soul, to the point where it would affect his future achievements.

Peng!

The black-clothed Lin Ming’s expression was indifferent. His fist came punching out, directly exploding the Purple Chestnut King’s head!

Chapter 1844 – Change

Chapter 1844 – Change

…

…

…

As red blood and white brains rained down, the martial artists present were left terrified. The Purple Chestnut King had been killed by Lin Ming once more!

To die twice in the Akashic Dream Universe within two or three years, and in such a brutal manner, it was highly likely that the Purple Chestnut King would suffer severe wounds to his soul that would be hard to recover from.

And at this moment, Lin Ming attacked once more. The full weight of the Black Dragon Spear came smashing down on the turtle shell floating in space.

Kacha!

The turtle shell cracked and the yellow-haired elite was panic-stricken, his heart trembling. This was a treasure granted to him by Chaos Demon God; he absolutely could not lose it!

As his heart raced with fear, the yellow-haired youth thrust forth his hand and cast out a soul technique. A flood dragon of soul force flew into the void, wanting to snatch back that turtle shell.

Lin Ming ignored the wounds covering his body. The broken Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel began to forcefully revolve once more, wiping away that soul technique. Then, he thrust out a hand and grabbed the simple-looking turtle shell.

The turtle shell was covered with all sorts of ancient and solemn runes. It was a mass of soul force condensed by an Empyrean, but after being rubbed by the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel, the light of these runes immediately dimmed down.

Lin Ming reached out and wrapped the turtle shell with layers of seals before placing it in his spatial ring.

As the yellow-haired youth felt his mental connection with the turtle shell severed, he was so angry he nearly vomited blood.

"Continue the barrage! Turn him to ashes!"

The yellow-haired youth roared out in rage. He could sense that Lin Ming was already a spent force, but he didn't think he would still be so strong.

"Lock in the space, don't let him escape!" A disciple from Great Brahmic God Mountain stood up. He led the main force here to kill Lin Ming.

"Junior-apprentice Sister Icydew, use the freezing domain once more!"

The disciple turned and said to Icydew. He was an extremely calm and collected yellow-clothed youth.

Icydew took a deep breath. Because she was a proud character, she felt that her actions were dishonorable. But, she wouldn't defy her master's orders nor would she hold back.

Ca!

An ice flower bloomed. The void froze over once more, slowing down Lin Ming's speed.

She was amongst the strongest martial artists here. Although she had an ordinary World King cultivation, she could kill a Great World King.

With other people protecting her, there was nothing Lin Ming could do to her.

"To all those at the Fallen God Mountain Range, I've come here as the representative from Great Brahmic God Mountain to say this. Today, as long as you fight and do your best to bring down Lin Muk, you will obtain 10 top grade soul crystals as a reward, provided by Great Brahmic God Mountain. If you are unfortunately killed by Lin Ming in battle, then the reward will be doubled. Moreover, Great Brahmic God Mountain will provide spirit medicines to heal you and remove the soul wounds you receive from dying in the Akashic Dream Universe."

Standing besides Icydew, the yellow-clothed youth spoke to those present.

His cultivation was also at the World King realm.

In the Soul World, it was incredibly rare to find a Great World King below 3000 years of age. But, to find ordinary World Kings below 3000 years of age was much easier.

This youth was also a core disciple from Great Brahmic God Mountain. Although he was less talented than Icydew, he managed the daily affairs of Great Brahmic God Mountain and his words held great weight.

By killing Lin Ming, the golden page on him would belong to the Great Brahmic God King. Compared to such a priceless treasure, some soul crystals and spirit medicines weren't anything at all.

And indeed, as the martial artists on the shrine platforms heard this yellow-clothed youth's words they were all stirred up. To them, 10 top grade soul crystals was an unbelievable amount of wealth.

"Attack together!"

"Dying doesn't matter. Great Brahmic God Mountain has come here and offered their own resources in front of everyone. They won't go back on their spoken words."

More and more people joined the battle. This Fallen God Mountain Range was originally a gathering place for geniuses, and now these waves of people surrounded Lin Ming, making it impossible for him to escape!

Without a doubt, this was because Lin Ming had great treasures on his body. But, it was also because he was of a different race. In the Soul World, humans were simply servants to be pushed around.

In the eyes of these people, Lin Ming was nothing but a walking bag of soul crystals and rewards.

As for the value of his life and survival, no one cared at all.

The battlefield in space was horrendous. Countless runes shattered and soul force broke apart.

Vast waves of potent strength swelled up, twisting apart the void and causing space to boil.

Lin Ming was completely drenched in blood. Although the fused Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel and Myriad Essence Reincarnation Wheel had split open, it wasn't fully destroyed just yet!

This was because after Lin Ming killed these numerous elites, he was able to draw out spiritual energy and blood essence from their broken bodies to restore himself.

However, his restorative abilities weren't as fast as the rate at which he used up energy.

The light of the two wheels faded as more and more cracks appeared over their surface.

The massive Asura phantom also began to weaken. Only its two pupils continued to emit the same bloodthirsty red light as it killed more people. It still projected a terrifying killing intent that made one's heart race.

More and more wounds crisscrossed Lin Ming's body. His blood-drenched body stood proud in space, completely covered with dense curse seals.

His scales had been broken in numerous places and there was not a single unharmed inch on his body. Blood wet his clothes, broken bones pierced through his skin, and his long hair was in a wild mess; he looked like a fierce devil that had climbed out from a mountain of corpses!

And at the same time, the number of geniuses that Lin Ming slayed was also innumerable.

Their bodies fell in mountains, piling up between the shrine platforms and forming rivers of blood!

This battle had reached unprecedented levels of savagery!

Enemies lay in all directions. The proud children of heaven were without end!

Lin Ming's slaughter energy soared to the heavens. He killed and killed, killing until those geniuses on the shrine platforms lost all courage. A portion of them only surrounded Lin Ming, not daring to move forwards. They had lost all their previous haughty demeanor.

However, Lin Ming's condition was becoming increasingly worse. Luckily, he had his two avatars supporting him. When he joined forces with them, they cut down all the incoming elites, and those that died would have their heads blown apart, their spiritual seas sundered!

Lin Ming's message was clear. Whoever wanted to kill him would have to pay the price. Even with the spirit medicines from Great Brahmic God Mountain, the destruction of their spiritual sea would likely leave behind invisible wounds.

"He's too terrifying!"

The more everyone fought, the more horrified they became. They knew that Lin Ming couldn't last forever, but even though he seemed completely exhausted he was still recklessly harvesting lives.

“Monster!”

The descendants from Chaos Divine Palace were left in a cold sweat. As for Yellow Springs Palace, they were in an even more miserable state. Of the original group of people they had brought here, only two were left.

This caused their originally pale faces to turn utterly white without a hint of blood. Their main form of combat was to release ghosts, but these ghosts were negated by the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. Not only were they negated, but they could even act as energy supplements to the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel. It was because of this that Lin Ming had focused on them, causing them to die even quicker.

“Where did this human come from? The humans in the Soul World have never produced such a hero before.”

“We must eliminate this human as soon as possible, otherwise he will become a disaster upon our heads in the future!”

Many large influences had suffered major losses. But because they had an overwhelming advantage in numbers, none of them wanted to leave. Fallen God Mountain Range was originally a gathering spot for elites, and the ones Lin Ming killed so far were only the tip of the iceberg.

It was impossible for Lin Ming to kill them all.

As soon as he showed weakness he would be immediately eaten up by the tides of people!

The spiritas martial artists around Lin Ming were like giant wolves surrounding their prey. They wouldn’t attack together, but would instead constantly use up their prey’s strength until their prey fell over. Then, they would strike.

Peng!

Another peak Holy Lord martial artist from Great Brahmic God Mountain had their head pierced through by Lin Ming's spear. The spear penetrated to the other side, the brain still attached to it. This martial artist was as dead as he could possibly be.

Following that, the spear point turned back and burst open the head.

But at the same time, another wound appeared on Lin Ming's chest. Because the Asura scales had been ripped open, their protective effect was extremely limited, and even Lin Ming's protective true essence had become extremely frail.

But in that moment, silence fell over the battlefield, as if time itself had frozen over.

Bursts of auspicious light gently fell down, illuminating the Fallen God Mountain Range.

Everyone was startled – what was happening?

They looked up to see a faint blue shadow appear in the distant highest heavens. This was a mind-boggling distance away from the Fallen God Mountain Range. In fact, one could say that this blue shadow was still in the starry space, but because it was too large, everyone was able to see it.

It was like a miniature planet.

The blue shadow approached at an incredible speed. As it flew forwards, everyone could hear the echoing screech of a phoenix.

This was clearly a phoenix God Beast!

"Deep Blue Ice Phoenix!"

Someone cried out in alarm. This was the phoenix with a royal sovereign's bloodline flowing through it. It was far more powerful than an ordinary phoenix.

Everyone watched as the blue phoenix let loose a deep cry. The blue phoenix unfurled its two wings and stretched them out for over a thousand miles, blocking out the skies. Endless blue flames appeared everywhere. These flames carried with them an endless cold, the purest of the Ice Laws. Massive tracts of surrounding space began to freeze over.

In contrast to this terrifying cold energy, the freezing domain that Icydew used before was nothing but child's play.

At this time, a dim blue figure could be seen standing above the ice phoenix's back, tall and lofty as if she stood in the profound darkness of a star.

Beneath her feet, endless blue flames flowed out. Mystical Laws scattered out around her, and dao patterns circulated by her side, forming motes of ice that shimmered like stars.

She was like a fairy that descended from the highest heavens, elegant beyond mortal means and without equal.

As she flew forwards, mountains and rivers shined below her. Everything was covered in a sacred and halcyon halo of light.

Just this endless halo of light alone contained an incredible momentum that caused everyone's heart to shiver.

"Soul… Soul Empress Sheng Mei!"

"It's the Soul Empress!"

Someone cried out in bewilderment. For a time, all the elites that surrounded Lin Ming were left in a stunned daze.

Although this person's appearance remained as hazy and unclear as before, the appearance of the Deep Blue Ice Phoenix and this unfathomable aura already revealed this person's identity – that of Soul Empress Sheng Mei!

Some proud children of heaven had excited expressions cross their faces. Soul Empress Sheng Mei was a legend amongst the younger generation of the spiritas. She was the most beautiful existence below the heavens, heroic and invincible.

She had become an Empyrean long ago, and her cultivation far surpassed those of the same generation.

Many proud children of heaven regarded her as their lifetime's goal and diligently cultivated to chase after her shadow. If they could only see one side of her face, that was enough to leave them incomparably excited.

"She is Soul Empress Sheng Mei? Is she here to attempt enlightenment? Or to kill Lin Muk?"

Some geniuses asked out loud, their voices shaking with elation.

"No matter what the reason, Lin Muk will die."

"Yes, if the Soul Empress is here to grasp the principles, she might just conveniently kill Lin Muk. No one among the same generation can match the Soul Empress. However, this lowly human is lucky to be able to die under Soul Empress Sheng Mei's hands."

Chapter 1845 – Sheng Mei Arrives

Chapter 1845 – Sheng Mei Arrives

…

…

…

Sheng Mei’s appearance left the many proud children of heaven dazed but also excited.

In particular, the most excited one of all was the Soul Rapture Holy Lands’ Jade Lifestone.

The Soul Rapture Holy Lands was far too large, and Jade Lifestone was a disciple not worthy of any special mention. The time that he had managed to luckily catch a glimpse of Sheng Mei was at a grand ceremony, and that had been from several hundred miles away.

Now that he saw Sheng Mei arrive with his own eyes and also at such a close distance, his cheeks turned red and he waved his hands.

“Soul Empress!”

With the Soul Empress here to help, Lin Ming would die without a doubt. As for the golden page, that would also end up in her hands.

Realizing this, the disciples from Great Brahmic God Mountain had ugly complexions. They didn’t believe that anyone on their side could hope to negotiate with Sheng Mei, but neither were they willing to give up on the golden page so easily.

The freezing enchantment that Icydew laid down existed only in name to Sheng Mei. From the far off distance in the starry skies, she simply took a step forwards and vanished, instantly reappearing within the center of the freezing enchantment, right in front of Lin Ming.

She wore a blue dress and a halo of light shrouded her body, making her seem mysterious and sacrosanct.

Because of the halo of light and the hazy mist that drifted around her, it was hard for the surrounding martial artists to see her face. They could only feel her sacred and potent aura, one that made them all wish to fall down in worship.

Everyone thought that Lin Ming would be immediately killed by Sheng Mei. After all, in front of Sheng Mei, Lin Ming was nothing but a little baby without any strength to resist.

“This brat is too lucky, to think he can die beneath the Soul Empress’ hands.”

“What kind of character is the Soul Empress? If she only came for the golden page then the Empress wouldn’t need to do anything at all. The lot of us are more than enough to kill Lin Ming!”

Jade Lifestone said. Many people nodded in agreement. How could they allow the Soul Empress to dirty her hands by killing such inferior human trash?

Although they would have to pay a considerable cost to kill Lin Ming, they were willing to do this for Sheng Mei.

For a time, more and more martial artists came to the Fallen God Mountain Range, eagerly approaching him, wanting to kill him. The presence of Sheng Mei was even better than the rewards announced by the youth from the Great Brahmic God Mountain.

Facing all of this, Lin Ming remained silent, only looking at Sheng Mei.

As for Sheng Mei, she also looked at Lin Ming. Her pupils were deep and a ghostly light bloomed within them, as if she were able to pierce through all the complexities of the human psyche.

Currently, Lin Ming was bathed in blood and innumerable scales were shattered. There was not a place left unscathed on his body and mountains of corpses and rivers of blood lay beneath him.

He was a death god of the battlefield!

And standing opposite Lin Ming was a graceful and elegant goddess, one that stood above the sins of the mortal world.

The smell of blood and death formed an incomparably stark contrast with the radiant beauty.

It was like Lin Ming and Sheng Mei represented two polar extremes of the martial arts world!

Time seemed to slow to a crawl. Two peerless geniuses in Lin Ming and Sheng Mei stared at each other. And all around, countless masters of the Soul World surrounded them. The shrine platforms were silent as the martial artists stood up in attention, mystical Law runes shimmering around.

Before this, Lin Ming never imagined he would meet Sheng Mei in such a situation.

“So it really was you.”

Sheng Mei said, her voice simple and charming. She didn’t pour any spirit essence into her words, but they were heard by all the martial artists at the quiet Fallen God Mountain Range.

“You finally came.” Lin Ming replied.

The two voices were clear. For a time, everyone was stunned.

Sheng Mei knew Lin Muk?

This Lin Muk was a bizarre character that had come from out of nowhere, but Sheng Mei knew who he was?

Thinking more carefully about it, everyone couldn't help but acknowledge that Lin Muk's talent had already reached incomprehensible levels.

He might even be no worse than Sheng Mei!

And these two peerless geniuses were old acquaintances?

Realizing this, many people were left speechless. Because Lin Ming was a human they had subconsciously considered him as coming from a lowly background, a weak and inferior sect. After all, he was nothing but a mere human.

As for these Soul World martial artists, including Jade Lifestone, when they faced Lin Ming they still felt an inborn sense of superiority even though their strength and talent were far worse.

This was because they were spiritas, because they came from large influences and were the proud elites of these influences.

As for Lin Ming, no one knew where he came from. They assumed he was a human boy who had managed to stumble into a mind-boggling lucky chance.

Thus, when facing Lin Ming, they looked at him like a rich noble living in a capital city would view a bumbling newly wealthy merchant from the countryside.

Even if these nobles weren't as rich as these newly wealthy merchants, they would still despise the merchants for being lower class.

But now, Sheng Mei's words left everyone dumbfounded.

This Lin Muk, just what was his deal? How could he know Sheng Mei? Could he have come from some top influence?

In the Soul World there clearly weren't any great human influences. Could he have come from another universe?

Many people couldn't figure out what the reason was.

And now, listening to Sheng Mei's tone, although she didn't place Lin Ming on the same status as her, he was at least worthy of her treating him earnestly. And Sheng Mei leaving seclusion and crossing countless miles to come all the way to the Fallen God Mountain Range was clearly in order to see Lin Ming.

On the other hand, everyone else, including the disciples from the Soul Rapture Holy Lands like Jade Lifestone, didn't even enter Sheng Mei's eyes. They didn't even receive a greeting from her. This was also a reasonable matter. An emperor wouldn't personally greet the poor, even if they were his own citizens.

Time slowly passed, Lin Ming's wounds wriggled about as they slowly regenerated.

Because Lin Ming had used up too much energy, his wounds restored at a snail-slow speed. It was clear that his current condition was extremely poor.

Looking at Lin Ming's wounds, Sheng Mei said in a quiet voice, "It seems you were waiting for me to see you all this time? However… your current situation isn't good at all. If I was late by just a single step, I fear you would have died here. Losing the golden page is already a grave enough consequence, but even your true body would be targeted by the Great Brahmic God King. With the Great Brahmic God King's strength, finding your true body wouldn't be too hard at all. At that time, you wouldn't be able to leave the Soul World alive."

A faint victorious smile hung on Sheng Mei's face.

Compared to Lin Ming, Sheng Mei was indeed a superior existence. This was because of the disparity in their backgrounds and the disparity in their strength, something that couldn't be bridged so easily.

Moreover, Lin Ming needed Sheng Mei's help.

“I might not have been able to keep the golden page, but I don’t think my true body would have had any problems.” Lin Ming calmly said. Even though he was in a disadvantageous position, he didn’t appear weak at all.

“Oh?” Sheng Mei remarked, surprised. “You still have the assurance to escape to the heavens, even when hunted down by a True Divinity?”

“I won’t sit and wait for death.”

Lin Ming also had an escape route, and that was to retreat into the Asura Road. He had the Asura Command and could return to the Asura Road with it. The only problem was that returning there wasn’t an easy task, and it required a long period of set-up time in which he couldn’t be disturbed during the process.

During this period of time, if Lin Ming was locked down by the sense of a True Divinity then the results could be imagined. Lin Ming didn’t doubt that a True Divinity possessed the ability to cross the void of a trillion quadrillion miles and affect his spiritual sea to remove his disguise.

“Your cultivation… seems to have fallen.”

Although Lin Ming could feel Sheng Mei’s terrifying aura, as he probed her soul sea more carefully, he discovered that her cultivation had fallen to the World King realm and she was no longer an early Empyrean. Even so, she still maintained the pressure of an Empyrean. The pressure she exuded also felt far more terrifying than any common Empyrean’s.

This was because she had completed the seventh revolution of the Grand Reincarnation Art.

Through every revolution of the Grand Reincarnation Art, one’s cultivation would fall and their skeletal age would fall with it. The more thorough one’s reincarnation was, the larger the change would be.

“It will continue falling with time…” Sheng Mei confidently said. After completing the Grand Reincarnation Art’s seventh revolution, her cultivation would continue falling for the next year. The lower it fell, the better the effects would be.

And after that when Sheng Mei cultivated again, her cultivation speed would reach incredible degrees. It could even jump several boundaries in a few years.

“You came to the Soul World specifically to look for me?” Sheng Mei asked. Lin Ming had created such a large disturbance in the Akashic Dream Battlefield and had even written down the name Polar Ice Lin right next to hers. All of these signs indicated that he had come to the Soul World to look for her.

If Lin Ming couldn’t find Sheng Mei, then his only option was to have Sheng Mei find him instead.

“State your purpose. I know it’s impossible for you to come here to discuss old times, but… if you came here because of the war between humanity and the saints, and you think that humanity can ally with the spiritas, then I can only tell you that you have made this trip in vain. That is an impossible matter because doing so has no benefits for the spiritas.”

Sheng Mei’s words caused Lin Ming to frown. Although he already expected that negotiations wouldn’t progress smoothly, he didn’t think that Sheng Mei’s first words would nearly suffocate him to death and leave him with no room to argue.

Seeing Lin Ming’s expression, Sheng Mei confirmed her speculations. She sighed and said, “It seems I was right. Besides this, I can’t imagine any other reason you would come to the Soul World to seek me out. In order to come to the Soul World, you must have paid a deep price…”

The journey to cross the barriers of the 33 Heavens was extremely arduous unless there was a previous connection that was already established through the God Lamenting Wall. Otherwise, even Sheng Mei would find it almost impossible to pass through.

Lin Ming looked at Sheng Mei and Sheng Mei looked at Lin Ming. As their eyes met, they fell into an awkward silence.

Then, Lin Ming asked, “Are the spiritas not a match for the saints? The two races had a war erupt between them in the past, so why has that stopped now?”

Sheng Mei replied, “The spiritas and the saints truly do both wish to swallow the other, and there was a great war that erupted between them, but… this is a matter of the past. Now, because of some reasons, the war has momentarily been put on pause. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and the spiritas’ Soul Emperor have reached a temporary armistice. After the saints complete a certain matter they will begin their annihilation of humanity, and to them, exterminating humanity isn’t difficult at all. Depending on yourself… there is nothing you can do!”

Sheng Mei indifferently said. What she said was nothing but the facts. Compared to the saints, Lin Ming was far too weak.

“What is the reason for this armistice?” This was what concerned Lin Ming the most.

Sheng Mei refused to answer. “That involves the secrets of my race. I cannot tell you.”

Lin Ming’s complexion darkened. He took a deep breath and slowly said, “Then, what if I put out enough chips?”

“Mm?” Sheng Mei was surprised. She looked at Lin Ming, unable to imagine what chips he could put out.

Chapter 1846 – Chips

Chapter 1846 – Chips

…

…

…

There were no eternal friends, only eternal benefits.

Lin Ming only had the slightest bit of friendship with Sheng Mei; at best they could be considered fellow peerless elites that sympathized with each other. He couldn't count on Sheng Mei helping him based upon the little bit of friendship that they shared.

In this situation, it was extremely difficult for Lin Ming to negotiate with the spiritas on behalf of humanity.

Lin Ming recognized that the spiritas and the saints had come to some prior agreement of benefits. It was even possible that in order for the saints to annex humanity, they had paid a certain price to the Soul Emperor in exchange for a temporary armistice.

In any case, Lin Ming believed that the spiritas and saints were still mortal enemies. Sooner or later, there would be a horrendous blood war that erupted between them. When it came to ruling the universe, there could only be one victor.

Currently, Lin Ming wanted to ally with the spiritas. Then, he would use this point and also take out chips that were more tempting than what the saints could offer!

This was equal to Lin Ming alone putting out a wealth that was greater than an entire race.

This sounded inconceivable, thus Sheng Mei couldn't believe it. No matter what sort of lucky chance Lin Ming encountered, it was hard to shake the decisions of an entire race. For instance, even the Black Dragon Spear or top treasures like the kirin fruit wouldn't be able to move the Soul Emperor.

She calmly looked at Lin Ming, waiting for his reply.

Their conversation had long since switched to private sound transmission. The surrounding martial artists weren't able to hear them at all. Although they knew Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were talking, they didn't know what they were talking about. For a moment, none of them knew what to do.

The disciples of Great Brahmic God Mountain were terrified. They had obeyed orders to come here and kill Lin Ming and obtain the golden page, but with the domineering Sheng Mei having joined the fray, they could only watch helplessly on.

To attack in the presence of Sheng Mei, none of them had the courage to do so.

Lin Ming slowly twisted his spatial ring, constantly gathering his aura into his inner world where he covered the Magic Cube with layers upon layers of energy.

The Magic Cube was Lin Ming's most important tool, and something that the Soul Emperor and Sheng Mei longed for even in their dreams. This was because in order to cultivate the Holy Scripture's Law of Eternal Life, they needed the Magic Cube.

However, it was impossible for Lin Ming to take out this chip. Instead, he had to hide it the best he could, otherwise the consequences would be unimaginable.

Facing Sheng Mei's gaze that seemed to pierce through everything, even if Lin Ming was confident that she couldn't sense the Magic Cube, he still subconsciously hid it away.

"Before I take out my chips, I have a question to ask you. You just said that the saints need to complete a matter before they can launch a full assault on humanity. I would like to know what this matter is? Or, how long before the saints finish this matter? How much time does humanity still have?"

Before Lin Ming came to the Soul World, he had already heard Empyrean Demondawn mention this.

The invasion of the saints would come far earlier than they had anticipated. This left Lin Ming feeling ill at ease. He wanted to hear the truth from Sheng Mei's mouth.

Sheng Mei thought for a moment. "I suppose there is no problem in me telling you. There is a rebellion in the Primeval Realm Ruins. Do you know what that is?"

Primeval Realm Ruins!

Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up and he nodded.

He naturally knew what this was. When he fought the Good Fortune Saint Son, he had heard about the Primeval Realm Ruins from him. From the description it seemed to be an ancient world filled with a massive amount of mystic realms and divine depositories, and even leftover inheritances from supreme elders of times long past.

Many of the saints' inheritances had been excavated from the Primeval Realm Ruins. This included the methods of breaking through to True Divinity that Lin Ming had obtained from the Good Fortune Saint Son. They had been dug out from the Primeval Realm Ruins.

Sheng Mei said, "The Primeval Realm Ruins are located within the territory of the saints. But, neighboring the Primeval Realm Ruins is another universe, and in this universe, what lives there are all ancient races! 10 billion years ago, a hundred races struggled for a dominion, and they prevailed for some time with countless illustrious characters appearing amidst their ranks. Afterwards, they slowly declined, but even so when they join together they are a terrifying strength.

"During the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago, parts of the God Lamenting Wall that divided the universes weakened and endless war broke out. The saints decided to move against the ancient races and eliminate them, because this is something that concerned the ownership of the Primeval Realm Ruins, thus it was of the utmost importance. Now, they wish to finish the task they started in the past and annihilate the descendants of these ancient races before they deal with humanity. This period of time might continue for 80 years or a hundred years; I cannot calculate the true time."

So it was like this....

Lin Ming sighed. Without a doubt, the Primeval Realm Ruins was a divine trove of endless treasures. If the saints managed to guard this divine trove then they would have a natural advantage.

It was just like the spiritas guarding the Akashic Dream Universe.

In this sort of situation, the saints would slowly leave humanity behind. In the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago when the God Lamenting Wall had faded and humanity had been defeated, it wasn't difficult to understand why.

After all, as long as the saints had a few people that obtained some world-shaking inheritance from the Primeval Realm Ruins and were promoted to True Divinities, they would be far stronger than humanity.

A True Divinity was an overwhelming superiority in a war between two races.

But compared to the spiritas, the saints seemed to... have no upper hand.

"Very well. I have already answered your question. You can put out your chips now." Sheng Mei looked at Lin Ming and lightly chuckled, curious as to just what he could put out.

"First, the golden pages!" Lin Ming clearly said, his eyes shining as he looked at Sheng Mei. "There are still 80 to 100 years before the saints begin their full invasion of humanity. During this time period, I will help you gather the remaining golden pages within the Akashic Dream Universe. But, I have a condition, and that is that every time I obtain a golden page, I can give it to you but at the same time I also hope to borrow a golden page to perceive from you. Afterwards, I will return it. I believe that with the Soul Rapture Holy Lands' deep background, you should have collected more than one golden page?"

Lin Ming put out his first chip. Hearing this, Sheng Mei laughed.

"You're quite confident in yourself. What an amusing plan!"

There was a faint hint of irony in Sheng Mei's tone, "This bargaining chip of yours is the same as using things that belong to us spiritas as advantages to give to us. Moreover, you want the golden pages of my Soul Rapture Holy Lands. This is an incredible benefit to you, yet you consider it a bargaining chip?"

"I don't care whether or not the golden pages belong to the spiritas. As it stands, you cannot obtain them all at present, right?" Lin Ming responded. He didn't panic because of Sheng Mei's words; he had already anticipated this rebuttal.

Sheng Mei shook her head, "They are truly difficult to obtain right now, but you are far too confident in yourself. Do you think you can accomplish anything?

"The easy-to-obtain golden pages have long since been taken away in the Akashic Dream Universe, and those that are left over are incredibly difficult to take, each harder than the last. When the first ancestor of the spiritas created the Akashic Dream Universe in the past, the standard he used was the standard of 10 billion years ago. Back then, endless heroes rose in the ranks of the people at a level that the present day cannot compare with. If you want to take the golden pages, then that is the same as being equal to the strongest standards of talent from 10 billion years ago, otherwise there is no chance at all. You don't seem to understand anything. You want to tell me you can collect all the golden pages in 80-100 years? How can I possibly believe you?

"I will admit that you are a proud son of heaven and I will even acknowledge that at the same cultivation realm, your combat strength might be above mine. But do not forget, my Grand Reincarnation Art has yet to reach perfection. After completing the seventh revolution my talent rose once more, but even with this I do not have confidence in obtaining the golden pages.

“For instance, take this Fallen God Mountain Range as an example. Wanting to thoroughly grasp the principles on the shrine platforms and obtain a golden page, isn’t that easier said than done? Moreover, this involves Laws of the spiritas, and in this domain I far surpass you!

“The reason I came to the Fallen God Mountain Range is also to conveniently attempt enlightenment after completing my seventh reincarnation. I do not believe you have the slightest chance of surpassing me!”

Sheng Mei had her own pride and belief in herself, thus she wouldn’t easily believe Lin Ming.

However, Lin Ming wasn’t intimidated at all. He lightly said, “Everything depends on the individual. Without effort, nothing can be accomplished. Empty actions are meaningless. What you have said is the truth, and perhaps there are some golden pages I cannot obtain, but at the same time, there are some golden pages that you cannot obtain. So, if you don’t try, how will you know? And I also have two more bargaining chips.”

“Then continue speaking.” Sheng Mei indifferently said. Lin Ming’s first bargaining chip wasn’t able to move her at all.

“Secondly, the Law of Eternal Life!”

Lin Ming shockingly said. Sheng Mei’s eyes blazed with a sudden light. Even though she was normally ethereal and indifferent, even she couldn’t maintain her previous calm. “What did you say!?”

Her eyes looked through Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, as if she wanted to gaze into his soul.

At this time, Lin Ming was extremely tense. He also had no choice but to throw out the bait that was the Law of Eternal Life. This was because he was well aware of just how little weight the golden pages held. As Sheng Mei said, the golden pages belonged to the spiritas to begin with, and whether or not he could obtain them was another story.

Sheng Mei looked at Lin Ming for a long time. Lin Ming said, “I can study the Law of Eternal Life with you; there might be some unexpected effect.”

Sheng Mei revealed a doubtful and puzzled light as she listened to Lin Ming speak. She muttered, “You are clearly not a spiritas, but your soul has some characteristics of the Eternal Soul, yet it isn’t the same at all. How strange…”

The Law of Eternal Life required the Eternal Soul to direct it and act as a catalyst. Although Sheng Mei was a peerless genius of the spiritas, she didn’t possess an Eternal Soul.

The temptation of the Law of Eternal Life was far too great, surpassing even that of the Grand Reincarnation Art. Who didn’t want to become immortal? Sheng Mei found herself unable to reject this condition. Even if she felt that Lin Ming didn’t possess a true Eternal Soul and they could never cultivate the Law of Eternal Life, there was at least still a dim ray of hope.

Sheng Mei fell silent. After a long time, she slowly said, “If you really have an Eternal Soul, then if you willingly give me half of your source soul force, then perhaps I… might really have the smallest chance of spying upon the mysteries of the Law of Eternal Life…”

The mortal body could be forcefully seized, but the soul could not. The soul was far too fragile an existence. If one tried to use strength to capture it, then the soul would perish, leaving behind nothing of value at all.

But Sheng Mei didn’t believe that Lin Ming could cultivate the Law of Eternal Life, because in her opinion, Lin Ming’s soul wasn’t perfect. Even so, there was a tiny bit of hope, and for this tiny bit of hope she was willing to take a gamble.

“Then… my last chip. If the spiritas ally with humanity and humanity can pass through this disaster, then I am willing to fight for the spiritas for 10 million years to annihilate the saints!”

Lin Ming could see the ambitions that the spiritas had to swallow up the saints, thus he put out his final chip – himself!

Chapter 1847 – All of You, Disperse

Chapter 1847 – All of You, Disperse

…

…

…

"You've even made yourself into a bargaining chip? It seems you really are willing to do everything you can." Sheng Mei faintly smiled. "To go to war for the spiritas for 10 million years and destroy the saints? For a race that is already in steep decline, is it worth it? You entered the Asura Road, entered the Soul World, and I don't know what price you must have paid to do so or what dangers you experienced along the way, but all that you've done cannot change the end result. With your miniscule amount of strength do you really believe you can affect the rise and fall of an entire race?

"In the past when the saints invaded the Divine Realm, Empyrean Divine Seal had already broken into the boundary of True Divinity, and even so he failed, much less the current you. The saints will not give you the slightest chance!

"Do you know that when you came to look for me, hoping to form an alliance between humanity and the spiritas, in the time you were proposing your conditions I was already able to feel a tiny strand of dissolute mourning from you."

Sheng Mei's words were like needles that jabbed into Lin Ming's innermost feelings. Lin Ming's thoughts shook. As he looked at Sheng Mei, his breath caught in his throat.

"You are a young Divine Dragon that hasn't fully grown into your own skin, and yet you wish to place such heavy shackles upon yourself? Is it worth it? I advise you to give up on humanity. With your talent, there is no need for you to tie yourself to the sinking ship that is humanity. You cannot imagine what your future can be like. If you follow me we can create a foundation that will last for billions of years! Your talent is even beyond mine. Together, we can study the ancient inheritances and create our own legends, becoming existences that usher in a new, prosperous era! Just like the Asura Road Master! Just like the first ancestor of the spiritas!

“In the past, the Asura Road Master and the first ancestor of the spiritas each left behind their own worlds. 10 billion years later, they are still revered by the people, and all bow before their name. But… do you know anything about their races? Do you know which race the Asura Road Master comes from, or what race the spiritas’ first ancestor comes from? The Spiritas Holy Scripture may be called the Spiritas Holy Scripture, but the truth is that the golden pages never mention the spiritas to begin with. As the most powerful race in the 33 Heavens, us spiritas recklessly formed relations with the first ancestor to call ourselves his descendants!

“When your strength stands high above an entire race, what significance does that race still have for you? If they can do this, why can’t we?

Sheng Mei’s voice was ghostly, her words containing a horrifying ambition. In that moment, she was like a sorceress that tempted the will of all mankind, her every word filled with the power to lead the heart astray.

In that moment, Lin Ming really did fall into a daze. But, he quickly composed himself. He could feel a powerful soul force emanating from Sheng Mei that filled her words with an incredible attractive power, making it so that anyone who listened to her couldn’t help but desire to comply with her wishes.

“Me and you, a foundation for billions of years? One era will not accommodate two peerless characters. In the past, the Asura Road Master and the creator of the Holy Scripture fought a life and death battle. Moreover, within the ranks of the spiritas there is also the true master of the Soul Rapture Holy Lands – the Soul Emperor. How could he not also desire to establish his own foundation that will last for billions of years?”

Lin Ming's words were chilly, but his heart was all over the place.

He couldn't see the road ahead of him, he couldn't completely understand Sheng Mei, and he definitely did not know just what the mysterious Soul Emperor desired.

Everything was nothing but a jumbled mess. In these changing times he was nothing but a tiny splash of water. No matter how much he struggled his actions didn't seem worthy of mention at all.

From when he had stepped onto the road of martial arts until now, this was the first time he had felt such a deep sense of hopelessness.

Even when he was 15 years old and left Green Mulberry City to go to the capital of the Sky Fortune Divine Kingdom, even facing his childhood girlfriend Lan Yunyue who left him for someone else, even when the army major tried to put up obstacles in his way, even when he had no place to go and was forced to go to Great Clarity Pavilion to work in the kitchen deboning beasts, he had never felt so useless.

At that time, he had believed that as long as he was diligent enough and put in enough effort, he would be able to succeed. No matter how thorny the path was before him, he would struggle for a brighter future with his will and perseverance.

But now, Lin Ming felt that even if he wanted to put in as much effort as he could, he didn't even have a direction he could go in. There was nothing but confusion all around him.

However, even if he was confused, he knew that even in Green Mulberry City where he grew up, there were people he knew. In this world, there were still people he considered his friends and family. There was the Lin Clan, his parents, the disciples of Divine Phoenix Island, the Ancient Phoenix Clan, Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, Lin Xiaoge, Mo Eversnow, Xiao Moxian, Senior Divine Dream, Empyrean Vast Universe…

There was also the person who he had never met before but had died trying to resist the saints in battle – Empyrean Primordius. And there was Empyrean Primordius' comrade who had entrusted Lin Ming with his greatest legacy, the Black Dragon. There was also the ancient goddess, who had handed over her body to Mo Eversnow and saved his life…

Finally, there was even Lin Ming's unborn child…

In several breaths of times, the countless people that Lin Ming had encountered through his journeys flashed through his mind. After growing for over a hundred years, he had come into contact with innumerable people. Some of them were only passing acquaintances, but some of them he shared extremely deep and complex relationships with. Some had helped him grow and given him a new lease on life. Some of them were elders who had recognized and supported him. Some had saved his life before. And some were even his wives.

They were all a part of humanity.

Humanity had nurtured him and made him who he was.

And now, these people had to fight together with humanity, even if their strength was insignificant.

They might all perish and be annihilated along with the rest of humanity.

To live alone and for himself, this caused Lin Ming to feel an inexplicable emptiness.

A person always needed a group to recognize them.

When everything was destroyed, when his family and friends were all gone, leaving him all alone, then even if he could grasp the heavens and earth in his palm in millions of years, even if he could rule over the universe by himself, what meaning was there in that?

Even if he obtained eternal life, what remained would be nothing but eternal loneliness and eternal torment.

"I will not abandon my roots, nor will I have my child be born into a world where his own race doesn't exist anymore."

Lin Ming muttered, as if he were telling Sheng Mei this and also telling himself.

Sheng Mei looked at Lin Ming and lightly said, “I just didn’t want to see you ruined because of this. But since you insist, I won’t try to change your mind any longer. However, if you only wish for the spiritas to intervene with the saints, your chips are far from enough…

“The only exception is if you can obtain all the golden pages and also help me find the approximate path to cultivate the Law of Eternal Life. If so, then I can probably change the decision of the spiritas and have them attack the saints so that humanity has more time. But… I don’t think you have this ability.”

Sheng Mei put forth her own conditions. But upon hearing this, Lin Ming felt his heart drop to the pit of his stomach. Not to mention the golden pages, but just helping Sheng Mei find the approximate path to cultivate the Law of Eternal Life left Lin Ming completely clueless. The only possible way would be for him to give Sheng Mei the Magic Cube.

Lin Ming found it hard to imagine. With Sheng Mei’s talent, if she were to obtain the Magic Cube, what boundaries would she reach?

At this time, Sheng Mei turned around and looked at all the young elites surrounding Lin Ming. She faintly said, “All of you, disperse!”

These words brooked no room for argument. Everyone felt their hearts skip a beat.

“Empress!”

The disciples from Great Brahmic God Mountain nearly collapsed to the ground. The Great Brahmic God King had even used his Boundless Great Art, using up a part of his cultivation to seek out Lin Ming’s whereabouts. And after that, many disciples had died and they had even shouted out a sky high price to have all these people attack Lin Ming to kill him. But with Sheng Mei’s few words, she wanted them all to leave?

Then all of their efforts would be wasted!

If they returned like this, how could they face the Great Brahmic God King?

If they still wished to kill Lin Ming, they would have to attack Sheng Mei first. But to attack the Soul Empress of the spiritas, none of them had the courage to do so.

Even if they tried, they would be instantly slaughtered by Sheng Mei. They were on completely different levels!

“Soul Empress! I am here because the Great Brahmic God King has decreed that we must kill Lin Muk, and we have paid an immeasurable price to do so. But because of Empress’ few words, we must give up midway? Empress, aren’t you pushing us too far?”

The leading yellow-clothed disciple from Great Brahmic God Mountain said.

But Sheng Mei’s complexion simply turned a bit colder. The surrounding temperature rapidly fell and the yellow-clothed disciple felt his heart freeze over. He lost all courage and desire to say anything else.

“I will explain matters to the Great Brahmic God King myself. Now, you may all leave. Otherwise, don’t blame me for being ruthless.”

Sheng Mei’s attitude was overwhelming, causing the disciples of Great Brahmic God Mountain to all have rapidly racing hearts, like a drum in quick tempo. They all lost their will to continue. Let alone Sheng Mei’s status, just her strength alone was more than enough of a qualification to have them all retreat.

“How is this Lin Muk related to the Soul Empress?”

Many people thought to themselves, puzzled. They didn’t know what Lin Ming had spoken to Sheng Mei about in their sound transmissions, but they could confirm that Lin Ming had some unusual relationship with Sheng Mei, one that wasn’t ordinary at all. Otherwise, Sheng Mei would not have spoken with Lin Ming for such a long time.

“This brat, is he also from a large influence?”

“It seems we made a mistake. We’ve really kicked the wall this time.”

Many martial artists on the shrine platforms glanced at each other in blank dismay. They had long since severed all thoughts of killing Lin Ming after Sheng Mei’s order.

Everyone began to draw back one after another. None of them dared to disobey Sheng Mei.

Only those from Great Brahmic God Mountain were unwilling to retreat. Although they could agree with not killing Lin Ming, they still needed to take away the golden page he had on him. But, this was refused by Sheng Mei.

“I will take the second wood golden page to Great Brahmic God Mountain myself and allow the Great Brahmic God King to view it. But if you wish to take it yourselves, that is impossible. I will repeat myself one last time. Leave now, or don’t blame me for being heartless!”

As Sheng Mei spoke, a cold energy wafted out from her body. Covered in this cold energy, everyone from Great Brahmic God Mountain felt as if they had reverted to common mortals and had been thrust into a field of endless snow and ice. They turned cold from their head to their toes.

Finally, they bowed their heads in submission and began to leave.

In several breaths of time, no one was left remaining.

Although Sheng Mei had driven them away, she wouldn’t needlessly offend the Great Brahmic God King. She would agree to let him look at the second wood golden page and also provide him with adequate additional compensation for today.

After all, he was still a True Divinity powerhouse of the spiritas. This was a factor Sheng Mei had to take into consideration.

The truth was that the relations between the spiritas True Divinities weren't perfectly harmonious. They would only unite together when facing an external threat.

After everyone left, Sheng Mei looked at Lin Ming. She said, "Let's begin. Your first condition; we will exchange golden pages, one for one!"

Chapter 1848 – First Wood Page

Chapter 1848 – First Wood Page

…

…

…

Sheng Mei's words caused Lin Ming's thoughts to shake.

Exchanging golden pages was a condition that was more advantageous for Lin Ming. This was because Sheng Mei had already read through the replica of the golden pages, but Lin Ming hadn't seen anything at all.

At this time, Sheng Mei gathered her hands together. Between her palms, golden rays of light began to shine out as a golden page seemingly spun from silk started to slowly appear.

As the people on the distant edges saw this, they all held their breath. For almost all of these people, this was their first time seeing a golden page.

"First wood, it is also the first of the golden pages."

Sheng Mei faintly said.

Lin Ming's golden page was the second wood page, and thus the second page, one directly connected to the first page.

If they could be linked together and studied from the start, the advantages would naturally be tremendous.

For Sheng Mei to take out the first wood page more than showed her sincerity.

Sheng Mei also said, “There are only 10 golden pages. But, the Spiritas Holy Scripture includes more than 10 golden pages. There are also many other things.”

As Sheng Mei spoke, the golden page had already fluttered into Lin Ming’s hands.

As for Lin Ming’s second wood golden page, he passed it to Sheng Mei.

The two people exchanged pages and started to meditate upon them.

Lin Ming sat on a shrine platform, his heart no longer thinking of anything else. His senses were focused and it was like the bells of nature were echoing in his ears, allowing him to meditate even more calmly.

The surrounding area seemed to have become a completely separate space, severed from the outside world.

In his hands, the golden page he had exchanged with Sheng Mei slowly fused into his inner world and spiritual sea, turning into countless motes of star-like light that surged within his divine soul.

His spiritual sea was filled with raging waves. In a deep trance, Lin Ming soon arrived in front of a pitch black mirage world.

The land he was in seemed to be made from nothingness, but if he touched anything, he could feel it was incomparably solid.

The chilling space was empty and filled with eerie mysteries.

In the far off void, countless people were covered in mystical halos, exuding endless light. They whispered in a low voice, their chants echoing through the air.

These verses were obscure; he couldn’t understand even a single word. But his flesh and his divine soul could feel a clear power emanating from them.

This was a mysterious feeling, one he could only sense but not explain.

This feeling allowed him to see many things, marvelous images passing through his eyes like grains of sand falling in a storm.

He saw a tree of heaven, its towering crown reaching high, piercing into the distance like a mountain and stabbing into the skies. This tree began to crackle and burn. Essence energy shot out and its life force was cut off. It crashed into the ground, reduced to ashes… after the wind and rain, the ashes of the great tree melted into the earth, vanishing without a trace.

He saw a boundless sea with fish dragons leaping and leviathans stretching out for 90,000 miles. The entire sea was lively and amazing. But in the blink of an eye, the skies filled with a sun-bright fire and the seawater evaporated. The sea became a mulberry field…

He saw vast planets with countless lives on them. Eagles screeched in the endless skies and tigers roared and wolves howled in the forests. There were bustling cities, adrift in the smoke and smells of a mortal world… but as the years passed, the sky began to break apart and the earth collapsed. Fire and water raged all around and the bustling world became one of terror and disasters, all life fading away in the chaos.

One after another, countless images wove together before him, manifesting and then being destroyed.

All the images exuded an icy cold death energy, endless bursts of destruction…

Lin Ming seemed to become a towering tree, a sea, a star. With incomparable clarity, he was able to sense how he was destroyed, how he died.

“Death… is just all things returning to their home…” Lin Ming sighed, his heart becoming even more desolate.

Endless scenes of death caused a certain feeling to percolate in Lin Ming’s mind.

With death, there was inevitably life. These were the two most important stages of life!

As this thought appeared, it became a cloud of smoke rising into the highest heavens, uncontainable.

Those figures chanting in the void were like suns. They began to emit a dazzlingly bright light that illuminated all directions.

Bang!

...From the towering tree of heaven that was burned down by the raging fires and reduced to ashes, those ashes began to nourish the earth. From where it collapsed, small seedlings appeared. Rain fell from the skies and strong winds helped it grow straight and tall. Blades of green grass grew, each one seeming lofty and filled with grandeur...

...From the dried sea, winds rose up. Thousands of rivers began to swell up from all directions, scouring the world left and right, slowly merging together into a boundless sea once more...

...From the center of the shattered planet, a nucleus began to form once more. For billions of years it gathered the spiritual power of the infinite universe, growing once more. The planet gradually expanded, and life began to appear on its surface...

Each scene was filled with inexhaustible bubbling vitality.

At this time, Lin Ming was a seed. He stretched out his limbs, absorbing nutrition from the ashes of the towering tree. He became a sapling and started to slowly grow.

He was a dry sea bed. From the deathly stillness, infinite water vapors began to gather, wetting the land once more.

He was a cold and lonely planet nucleus. Through billions of years of loneliness, he accumulated the thinly spread out spiritual essence of the universe, eventually giving birth to endless life forms...

From the infinite chanting, Lin Ming realized the experiences of life to death, from death to life. He became all things, repeating the cycle endlessly.

Again and again and again.

His heart went from desolate to vigorous, from vigorous to desolate, continually being tempered…

He suddenly understood. The texts that floated in his spiritual sea began to resonate with the endless chanting.

He became a blade of grass, as well as a towering tree.

He became a drop of water, as well as a vast sea.

He became a planet nucleus, as well as a giant planet.

He was everything, and everything was him.

“The universe is samsara, space and time are infinite…” Lin Ming silently read the simple texts, each word shining in his heart, floating in the void of his mind like stars.

Floating in his spiritual sea, the ancient texts of the golden page began to resonate with his words. The runes started to release a fervent cheer, becoming increasingly bright.

Although some texts still remained obscure and puzzling, the current Lin Ming had already comprehended the essential true meaning contained with the golden page that Sheng Mei had traded him.

The Asura Sutra that the Asura Road Master left behind could be said to speak about the ultimate Heavenly Dao that stood atop the 33 Heavens; it was the power of the universe.

Then, the golden pages left behind amongst the spiritas spoke about returning to one’s true origins.

I am the universe. I am the myriad of existence!

……….

On the shrine platforms nuzzled into the sheer cliffs, Soul Empress Sheng Mei was grasping enlightenment not too far away from Lin Ming.

The icy cold energy had frozen a thick ice wall a thousand feet around her. Strange runes flashed along them, making it impossible for others to see what was occurring inside.

As for the soul sea marks, from the moment Sheng Mei sat down on the shrine platform and started to perceive the second wood golden page, these soul sea marks also began to light up.

On the 100th day, the fourth soul sea mark had already started to emit a dim light.

On the cliff, some proud children of heaven from various races tittered in excitement upon seeing this.

“The Soul Empress is truly fierce. The last time she was here she lit up three soul sea marks in 108 days. Now, in just 100 days she is already able to have the fourth soul sea mark shine with a dim light. In time completely lighting it up will be no problem at all. Perhaps this time the Soul Empress really might be able to obtain the golden page from this Fallen God Mountain Range.”

“Of course. The last time the Soul Empress was here she had only completed her sixth revolution, but now she has completed her seventh. There is no comparing the her from back then to her now. Moreover, Lin Ming gave her the second wood golden page, making her even more powerful.”

Jade Lifestone smiled. As someone who was originally here at the Fallen God Mountain Range to attempt enlightenment, he naturally didn’t leave with those from Great Brahmic God Mountain. He stayed at the cliff to continue his enlightenment.

Soul Empress Sheng Mei came from the same Holy Land he did. If Sheng Mei was strong, that was also something he could be proud of.

However, as he glanced at Lin Ming, who was at a shrine platform not too far from her, a complex light filled his eyes.

This character Lin Ming was the same as an enigma. He made the heart race.

“This brat has a terrifying combat strength. I wonder how far he can go.”

Jade Lifestone didn’t dare to look down on Lin Ming’s background anymore.

Then, on Lin Ming’s lonely shrine platform, the light of the first soul sea mark began to shine.

Following that, the second and third soul sea marks lit up.

This meant that Lin Ming had finally finished perceiving the golden page and was beginning to grasp the Laws on the shrine platform.

The light was blinding, like a miniature sun rising. It was even brighter than Lin Ming’s previous attempt, and no worse than Sheng Mei’s.

The proud children of heaven found it hard to not pay attention to what was occurring.

Sheng Mei and Lin Ming, two peerless geniuses, had arrived at the Fallen God Mountain Range. Could they create a miracle here?

Chapter 1849 – Mysterious Woman

Chapter 1849 – Mysterious Woman

…

…

…

At this time, Lin Ming was like an ancient well on the shrine platform, calm and serene.

Although there were many things he was still unsure of, he had already become aware of the true meaning of the golden page Sheng Mei had traded him. Now, he only needed time to slowly verify the truths within the golden page and master it.

However, just comprehending the true meaning of the golden page alone gave Lin Ming many benefits.

Soul force surged like a tide within his body, washing through him without end and making him feel as if he were being reborn.

Without stop, he began to rapidly grasp the principles atop the shrine platform.

He knew that as long as he obtained more golden pages and verified them with each other, it would be much easier to master them.

Luckily, this fleeting feeling had appeared.

Within his divine soul, the texts of the two golden pages resonated with each other, emitting clarion sounds of nature that sobered Lin Ming's mind.

After another day passed, the fourth soul sea mark smoothly lit up.

But after that, comprehending anything further became increasingly difficult.

The dark shrine platform was shrouded in a great power that emitted an endless mystical strength.

Not knowing when, Lin Ming discovered that he seemed to have stepped onto some narrow winding path. There was nothing but haze around him. He couldn't make out his surroundings nor where he needed to go.

Within this misty haze, he was like a lonely boat in a pitch black sea, helpless and lost, floating quietly in the world.

Even the sparkling lights in front of him that had exuded mysterious sounds had disappeared. It was like he had been completely cut off from the outside world.

"This feeling is..."

Lin Ming's thoughts tightened. If he couldn't escape from this strange maze, then the following comprehensions would be increasingly difficult.

To grasp the principles of the shrine platforms of the Fallen God Mountain Range was an incredibly arduous task. Since ancient times, countless spiritas martial artists had attempted to gain enlightenment here, but all of them had been defeated one after another. This included even young True Divinities!

Thus, some people even suspected that the rules of the world had already been blocked here. No one should be able to obtain any results.

Although Lin Ming believed in himself, he didn't think he was stronger than those spiritas True Divinities when they were young.

Nearing the bottleneck, Lin Ming became increasingly cautious.

At this time, within Lin Ming's mind, he tried to recall some contents of the first and second wood golden pages.

The true meaning of the golden pages that he had comprehended began to shine like stars, emitting the sound of the Great Dao from within him like a great bell that thundered in his mind.

The surrounding thick mist dispersed and the black sea vanished.

In front of him, another road appeared. It was simple and plain, leading to some point in the endless horizon, as if it led to the past, as if it led to the infinite possible futures…

Lin Ming's eyes brightened. Another bizarre roar sounded out in his head. After obtaining some comprehensions, the world suddenly fell black once more.

The endless mist covered him again, hindering him from taking even a single step forwards.

"How should I keep walking down the road?" Lin Ming pondered. He tried sensing the existence of the world around him. His comprehensions of the golden pages also became increasingly profound.

But, the fifth soul sea mark was like an endless moat that blocked his way, an obstacle that he would never be able to surmount.

As Lin Ming fell into a torpor, not too far away from him on another shrine platform, Soul Empress Sheng Mei was silently meditating.

Waves of sky-blue light from the Great Dao emanated from her. But, the fifth soul sea mark still didn't light up.

To grasp the principles atop the shrine platform was an extremely long process. It wasn't something that one could complete in 100-200 days. There were even people who stayed for 10 or more years at a time.

Even for the likes of Lin Ming and Sheng Mei, wanting to take away the golden page here was an extremely difficult task.

Time passed a day at a time.

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were like statues, completely motionless. Their soul forces had reached unbelievably profound levels. For many people, sitting on the shrine platforms in meditation for a few dozen days would exhaust their soul force, but to Lin Ming and Sheng Mei this wasn't any problem at all.

This was because they knew how to conform to the world Laws here and conserve their soul force. At the same time, their restorative abilities were incredible.

In this aspect, Sheng Mei was far more powerful than Lin Ming. Lin Ming might not compare with Sheng Mei, but because he possessed the Magic Cube his soul had similarities with the Eternal Soul and the stability of his soul was extraordinary.

"How terrifying. They have already sat there for 10 months without moving. From the looks of it, they can sit there for several years without any problem at all."

"Lighting up the fifth soul sea is difficult beyond compare... even Soul Empress Sheng Mei won't find it easy..."

"That Lin Muk is also stranded at the fifth soul sea mark. Nothing's happened for quite some time..."

"Although this human brat is strong, his strength lies in the essence gathering system. In gaining enlightenment atop the shrine platform, it is impossible for him to compare with the Soul Empress. I think that... the Soul Empress will light the fifth soul sea mark soon..." Someone quietly spoke, afraid of disturbing Sheng Mei.

On the shrine platform, Lin Ming was still struggling with his thoughts.

In front of him was a vast wilderness flooded with endless fog.

He could not see where the road was.

He walked alone. Beneath him were blue stones, just like the blue stone road he once walked upon at the Asura Road's final trial.

"Every golden page is connected to the others, but their true meanings are all greatly different… the reason my enlightenment here was so fast at the start was because of my previous experiences and also because I have comprehended the true meaning of two golden pages. After the start, the difficulty suddenly increased. My background was also used up in the first part of grasping the principles."

Lin Ming mumbled to himself.

At this time, a voice echoed in his ears. "Eh? Someone's here carving characters on the stone."

Lin Ming was startled. This voice was clearly from the red-dressed little girl that had always been following him.

He turned his head and saw that in his sea of consciousness, the red-dressed little girl was sitting around. Her eyes were bright and wide and she struggled to see through the hazy fog before her. Her pupils shimmered with a strange light, as if she could see through the thick fog.

"What did you say? Someone's carving characters?" Lin Ming's heart quickened. He didn't ask how this little girl appeared in the world of his consciousness. It seemed as long as something involved soul force or the mind, there was nothing that could block this red-dressed little girl.

What he cared the most about was that on this blue stone road, there was someone else here that he couldn't see.

This was clearly because the road in front of him was covered by some strange strength. Lin Ming was completely unable to see through the source of this strength, but the red-dressed little girl was. Her origins were a puzzle, making one feel her very existence was inconceivable.

“Mm, it’s a pretty aunty. She’s using her finger to write on the blue stone…”

A woman?

Lin Ming was bewildered. Who could this person be?

“What is she writing?”

Lin Ming asked. The red-dressed little girl’s large eyes widened as she blinked again and again. Then she whispered, “They are v-very complex characters; I don’t understand them at all. But this aunty… I… f-feel she’s familiar…”

The red-dressed little girl said, lost in her thoughts.

Lin Ming’s heart skipped a beat. Familiar?

He simply had no idea what status this red-dressed little girl had. And who was this woman that was carving characters? Could they be mother and daughter?

And what were the characters that the woman was carving?

“That aunty is starting to draw pictures. There are water currents… people… planets… people on the planets… small blades of grass, soil, fire…”

The red-dressed little girl said without end. These images weren’t connected at all. As Lin Ming heard them, he was still left puzzled.

Thus, he decided to calm his mind and use his eyes to look as hard as he could at the blue stones on the side of the road.

However, as he stared unblinkingly at these blue stones, he felt his eyes hurt as if a biting wind was tearing into them.

The blue stones emitted a light that stabbed into his eyes like countless golden needles.

Lin Ming had a feeling that what the woman carved down were Laws.

Everything within the heavens and earth followed the Laws of the universe; life was no exception.

The red-dressed little girl stood beside Lin Ming, occasionally speaking. Lin Ming firmly remembered every word she said.

Lin Ming continued watching, always watching. Even though his eyes had become bloodshot, he never relaxed.

And then one day, he could see the blurry shadow of a person standing beside the blue stones.

Long hair. Blue clothes. This person emitted a terrifying aura.

This was indeed a woman, a woman that caused Lin Ming's heart to race. Her long hair fell down her back like the river of time, making one lose themselves in a daze just by looking at her.

He was unable to distinguish what boundary this woman had reached. He only saw her quietly pace around the blue stones. Sometimes she would be deep in thought, and sometimes she would lower her head and carve some things into the blue stones.

As if she were finishing a piece of art.

Lin Ming stiffened, unable to move. He could confirm that this woman wasn't just some illusion. An aura exuded from her, one that seemed like the endless flow of time. It was a familiar feeling, one he had felt back in the final trial and at Tragic Death Valley. This was a terrifying aura of the endless years, one that came from over 10 billion years ago. He couldn't follow it nor could he sense the point from which it originated.

"This is a phantom left behind from 10 billion years ago?"

Lin Ming thought out loud. This aura had been preserved until now, even after such a mind-boggling period of time had passed. It left Lin Ming feeling fearful and apprehensive.

What sort of woman was this? Perhaps, the scene that the red-dressed little girl saw was that of the Akashic Dream Universe being formed, and the images that the woman carved down were the Laws that were recorded in this world. This was the best explanation he could find.

It was even possible that this woman was the one who had created the enlightenment shrine platforms of the Fallen God Mountain Range.

However… the one to create the shrine platforms, shouldn’t that person be the creator of the Holy Scripture?

In a dreamland, Lin Ming had seen the creator of the Holy Scripture twice already. He was also the person who had battled the Asura Road Master in the past. Although Lin Ming had only glanced at him, he could confirm that this person was a man.

What was going on here?

Lin Ming felt his thoughts turn chaotic. The characters from 10 billion years ago and their relations were a complete riddle to him. He couldn’t help but turn his head and look at the red-dressed little girl. This little girl might also be a character that existed 10 billion years ago, otherwise why would she feel that this woman was familiar?

If this were true, then what role did she play in the past? Why would she fall asleep for so long? Why would she still exist? Why would there not be such a strong aura of endless years emanating from her body?

Countless puzzles ran through his mind. But currently, he didn’t have time to think about these matters. He looked towards the woman’s hand, trying to see what she was carving. However, the writings shined with a mystical light, making Lin Ming unable to see them clearly.

Chapter 1850 – Eye

Chapter 1850 – Eye

…

…

…

"Just what are these carvings?"

Lin Ming anxiously thought. His eyes stung with a torturous pain. Looking at this divine light was like being stabbed with needles.

This continued for some time. Lin Ming's eyes had turned blood red; he was at his limit.

Looking straight at these runes carved by an ancient peerless character, this was an extreme test on Lin Ming's soul force.

In the next moment, Lin Ming's body shook and blood flowed from his eyes.

He fell to the ground, propping himself up on his knees as he continued watching the woman write.

"Brother Lin, d-d-don't look, your eyes are bleeding… if y-y-you continue to watch your eyes will collapse…"

The red-dressed little girl panicked as she saw Lin Ming's horrible appearance, and as she panicked she began to stutter again.

"I'm fine…"

Lin Ming waved his hand, not caring at all about the problems with his eyes.

“B-but…” The red-dressed little girl was concerned about Lin Ming.

Lin Ming’s heart warmed. He remembered that the little girl said he had a nice familiar smell coming from him, and it was because of this that she was attached to him. Ever since coming out from the Akashic Dream Battlefield, she had continued to follow him.

Lin Ming looked at the little girl, a gentle light in his eyes. “I don’t know your name, and you probably don’t know it either. Would it be alright if I call you Ruby from now on?”

The little girl tilted her head, nodding, seeming to be a little excited. “S-sure.”

“Mm… well, Ruby, I’m fine…”

Lin Ming grit his teeth, continuing to look at the mysterious woman’s writing.

He focused all of his concentration on what she was writing, ignoring the blood dripping down from his eyes.

He didn’t have much time remaining. The war between the saints and humanity would erupt in just several dozen more years. He couldn’t just watch helplessly on the sidelines as everything and everyone he cared for was annihilated.

And now, in this brief period of time, even though he was cooperating with Sheng Mei he was afraid that he wouldn’t be able to fulfill her conditions. This was because one of them was to have him find the path to cultivating the Law of Eternal Life, and for Lin Ming this was impossible – unless he offered up the Magic Cube!

If so, then all Lin Ming could do was increase his strength as far as possible. He had a faint guess that if he could combine the Heavenly Sutra and Holy Scripture together, achieving perfection of within and without, simultaneously cultivating the universe of his body with the universe of the world to the limit, he would be able to reach an inconceivable boundary. Maybe with this he would be able to have his own strength rise drastically in a short period of time, enough so that he could help resist the great calamity.

Of course, he feared this so-called short period of time was likely far more than several dozen years…

Even so, Lin Ming had to try his best to obtain a golden page!

If Sheng Mei obtained the golden page of the Fallen God Mountain Range then there wouldn’t be anything for Lin Ming. But if he were to obtain it, he could use it to trade for another golden page with Sheng Mei. That was equal to obtaining two.

Then, Lin Ming would have four golden pages.

Although it was impossible for Lin Ming to perceive the entirety of the Holy Scripture through four golden pages alone, his hopes would be much greater than before.

He clenched his teeth, not blinking his eyes even as he overdrew on his soul force.

At this time, in the outside world, Lin Ming’s body was also undergoing a severe response.

“That Lin Muk, his eyes are bleeding…”

Several people noticed Lin Ming’s situation and were at a loss for words. Many martial artists would overuse their soul force when they tried to grasp the principles, and they would pale and be forced to withdraw.

But this Lin Ming persisted until he bled from the eyes; this was the first time they had heard of someone going this far.

“His soul force is unstable as if he’s consumed a great deal of energy. He is clearly overdrawing his soul force.”

“I’m speechless. If he doesn’t draw back now and continues to forcefully continue, is there any meaning to it…”

“Grasping the principles on the shrine platform is only something that everyone attempts; there is no hope to actually become thoroughly enlightened. At this Fallen God Mountain

Range, it has been countless years since anyone has comprehended anything. Even the several True Divinities of the Soul World came here during their youth but returned without any benefits, yet this human boy is actually pushing himself this far. It seems he really is an idiot.”

Someone said with an amused, gloating expression. In truth, to many people, even someone like Soul Empress Sheng Mei would find it near impossible to obtain the golden page of the Fallen God Mountain Range.

For better or worse, Sheng Mei still had a thread of hope. At least, one of her die-hard fans like Jade Lifestone believed she would be able to succeed.

“He’s bleeding from the nose now…”

Some people glanced at each other in dismay and some people laughed. Many of them had smiles of schadenfreude.

Not only were they repulsed by Lin Ming, they were also jealous of him.

Their background was the number one race of the universe – the spiritas. Yet, they couldn’t compare with a human. This left them feeling uncomfortable in their hearts. But now as they saw Lin Ming end up like this, they felt much better as if they had vented a good deal of their frustrations.

How could a mere human think of obtaining the inheritances of their soul race?

“He has only lit up the fourth soul sea mark, but to completely grasp the principles of the shrine platform one has to light up seven soul sea marks. The disparity is incredible. Does he really think he can attain complete enlightenment in a single go?”

“I think this boy might have gone mad…”

Some people laughed.

They looked at Lin Ming and then looked at Sheng Mei.

Sheng Mei was still as calm as before. Her slender eyebrows were only slightly pushed together, but as for Lin Ming, he had ended up in such a state. The difference between them was far too great. Moreover, as time passed and Sheng Mei lit up more soul sea marks, the disparity would only increase.

Perhaps Lin Ming wouldn't even be able to light up the fifth soul sea mark.

....

"The beautiful aunty is drawing a fish..."

Ruby suddenly said. Every time she saw the mysterious woman draw something she could speak out what she saw. Ruby saw all of this easily, as if she were watching someone draw lines in sand. As for Lin Ming, he couldn't see anything no matter how much he struggled.

"Fish... rivers... the rhythm of the Dao..."

Lin Ming felt as if the mysterious woman's hand had been thrust into the infinite river of time. It was impossible for him to clearly see it.

He persisted past his limits. His eyes were covered with blood and he nearly became blind.

The mysterious woman lightly stepped about like a celestial goddess. She sat down on a blue stone, every movement and every action she took filled with the aura and rhythm of the Laws.

She seemed to be deep in thought. Her endlessly long hair hung down like the curtain of night, concealing her appearance, making it impossible for anyone to see her.

After an unknown period of time she stood up and began drawing again.

"She's drawing an eye!"

Ruby said. No matter what the mysterious woman did, nothing could hinder her from seeing.

"Eye..."

Lin Ming's field of vision had already turned crimson. The figure of the mysterious woman blurred in his eyes.

Then, the mysterious woman turned around and glanced at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's body shook; he spat out a mouthful of blood!

He fell to his knees, feeling an incomparable burning heat between his eyes.

"Eyes..."

Lin Ming grit his teeth and bit his lips until they bled. Even his consciousness seemed to become blurry. But, he summoned the final dregs of his strength and watched the blue stone beneath the woman's hands.

He could faintly feel that success wasn't too far away. As long as he could persist just a little longer, there would be clarity!

However, what worried Lin Ming was that at this time he could no longer see anything at all.

Everything in his eyes was blood red!

He approached unconsciousness. But just as he was about to fall over, he didn't know why but within his field of vision, he could faintly see an eye!

Rather, it should be said that this eye was an image that directly imprinted itself into his mind, thrust there without passing through his own two eyes.

Lin Ming could feel an agonizing ache between his eyebrows. Faintly, it was like a little bit of starlight gathered in this space, converging towards the point between Lin Ming's eyebrows.

Hum - ! Hum - ! Hum - !

The world trembled. This world of consciousness seemed to tear apart and endless starlight fell down. In the skies, nine stars appeared high in the air, all of them burning like scorching hot suns.

Infinite starlight fell down like a river of stars.

Lin Ming experienced a splitting headache, as if his head would be forcefully cut off by this starlight!

“This is...”

Lin Ming clearly felt that between his eyebrows, there was a burning heat that felt like it would melt away his skull. But endless starlight gathered there, slowly forming a Dao Palace!

“Daevic Eye? Daevic Eye Dao Palace?”

Lin Ming’s heart shook. Of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, this was the Celestial Eye Dao Palace!

This Dao Palace didn’t have any specific striking power, but once opened, it would directly enhance a martial artist’s divine sense, so that they could spy upon the secrets of heaven and see through the infinite mysteries!

“I actually accidentally opened a Dao Palace...”

Lin Ming muttered, gasping for breath. His forehead was covered with blood, but within this thick blood, a mystical eye seemed to flash.

Previously, when Lin Ming opened the Purple Temple Dao Palace, Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace, and Extreme Polar Dao Palace, he had relied on gathering numerous spirit medicines to accomplish those feats, but this time in opening the Daevic Eye Dao Palace, Lin Ming simply relied upon his own strength and accumulations to forcefully open it.

Chapter 1851A – Moon and Star Struggle For Brilliance

Chapter 1851A – Moon and Star Struggle For Brilliance

…

…

…

Whether it was martial artists, mortals, or perhaps even animals, there was a natural hollow between their eyebrows where the third eye was hidden. This third eye had already degenerated into the brain, and was known by some as the upper dantian; this was also the daevic eye.

If one could open their daevic eye, they could gain the power to see through all mysteries and obtain an unparalleled perception.

But currently, Lin Ming's daevic eye had just opened and was still bleeding. He hadn't thoroughly opened it, but had just barely managed to. It was naturally impossible for him to see through all matters, but he could hazily make out the hand of the mysterious woman.

The moment that the woman's fingers fell upon the blue stone, the surrounding Heavenly Dao Laws gathered unto her, combining with the power of life and turning into runes that carved themselves into the blue stones.

With her fingers as the pen, with the Laws as the ink, everything this woman drew seemed to be alive.

Flowers, plants, insects, birds, beasts, everything was lifelike. Even rocks and rubble, or even the simplest words were brimming over with life. The mysterious woman's two hands seemed to grant all dead things a spirituality of their own, filling them with an impossible vitality.

Lin Ming even had a feeling that as long as the mysterious woman blew upon the designs she drew, they would jump to life. Like the mythical brush of god, everything she drew seemed as if it would become reality.

Lin Ming consumed a massive amount of soul force. Still, he continued to persist and read the Laws that the woman wrote down.

He felt that everything the mysterious woman carved down was something that always seemed to fall through his fingers.

The disparity in their boundaries was just far too great, so great that even just looking at the mysterious woman draw caused him to overdraw his soul force and find it difficult to continue.

“There’s no point in being too greedy.”

Lin Ming suddenly awoke to this point. This woman carved down far too many Laws. Every blue stone had marks she left behind, and these marks all contained inherent Laws. Although they all interpreted life itself, every interpretation held a different meaning.

If Lin Ming wanted to comprehend the meaning of all these Laws, a situation would appear where everything would fall beyond his reach.

After realizing this, Lin Ming calmed his mind. Then, he focused all his attention on the pattern that the mysterious woman just drew.

This pattern was in the shape of a raindrop, only the size of a mung bean. Compared to the previous carvings such as the flowers and beasts, this design was extremely simple. It consisted of only several strokes and the mysterious woman only took a few breaths of time to complete it.

Even so, this simple image revealed extraordinary meanings.

Lin Ming stared at this raindrop, completely immersing his every thought into it, going into a trance-like state.

In a dreamy haze, he saw the raindrop divide into two, two divide to four, four divide to eight, continuing on and on, becoming increasingly crowded until it was a pall of rain that stretched out without end. Within the cloud, faint arcs of lightning flashed, like silver snakes flying through the air. It was a mesmerizing scene.

Such a scene left Lin Ming utterly immersed within it.

Rain, was the convergence of water vapors from all longs. Its life was to grow in clouds high in the skies, and its death was to fall onto the earth, fall into the sea, and return to the world...

Its life was extremely short. A single drop of rainwater was also insignificant.

But the endless rainwater nourished all things. It nourished life. Flowers and birds, insects and beasts, all thrived because of rain!

A single drawing of a raindrop seemed simple, but it contained a Concept of Endlessness. As Lin Ming slowly felt the infinite mysterious within, he forgot the passage of time.

He soul force was constantly being used up, but the Concept of Endlessness subtly nourished his spiritual sea. Within his originally depleted spiritual sea, drops of rain seemed to appear, each drop made of incomparably pure source soul force. Through the revitalization of this rain, Lin Ming felt his own energy begin to fill back up.

Such a change manifested its effects on Lin Ming’s body.

His pale complexion slowly became ruddy. However, the blood that flowed from his eyes and ears still stained his face, making him seem fierce.

“This brat, he seems to have managed to live through it?”

Many people were surprised. Under ordinary circumstances there would occasionally be martial artists who appeared on the shrine platforms that overreached past their limits, causing their situation to become increasingly worse until they fell over.

Lin Ming clearly wasn't able to last much longer, but color had suddenly returned to his face. Something strange was happening.

"This is just the final radiance of a setting sun. Watch, he'll collapse soon enough. Originally, all of us came here for the experience without any hopes of gaining harvests, but this boy is truly a rare creature. He isn't a fellow spiritas and he also excels in the essence gathering system, yet he came waddling over here with thoughts of the inheritance that our spiritas ancestors left behind. In this great world all strange sights are possible."

"Especially with his current appearance. He was just bleeding heavily from his head just now. I really think he might be drunk..."

Several people loudly laughed. But at this time, someone cried out.

"What's happening, Empress Sheng Mei is also..."

With this shout, everyone turned their attention away from Lin Ming and towards Sheng Mei. Sheng Mei was the most outstanding elite of the spiritas and also the leading character of all those who came here to attempt enlightenment.

They were left panic-stricken by what they saw.

Sheng Mei's current situation wasn't good either.

The hazy soul force around her body became increasingly unstable as if it could dissipate at any moment. The color had disappeared from her beautiful face and it was clear she had consumed a massive amount of soul force.

"Empress!"

Some people nervously cried out. They were all admirers of Sheng Mei.

"Do not disturb the Empress!"

Jade Lifestone shouted out loud. On the Fallen God Mountain Range, a martial artist would spend the majority of their time in rest. After all, there was a limited number of shrine platforms. Ever since Jade Lifestone saw Sheng Mei arrive, he hadn't spent much time trying to grasp the principles, but instead spent the majority of his time focused on her current state. Now that something was happening to her, he immediately noticed it.

After almost an entire year, this was the first time that Sheng Mei's soul force seemed to weaken. To use one's soul force to gain enlightenment was risky to begin with and Jade Lifestone didn't allow anyone to disturb him during this process. Now that some minor phenomena were occurring under unknown circumstances, he naturally couldn't allow anyone to disturb her either.

"Even a peerless existence like Empress Sheng Mei whose talent defies the heavens, will also encounter a situation where her soul force weakens?"

People began to think. As they looked at the increasingly ruddy Lin Ming, they felt this strange. Just what was Sheng Mei experiencing?

"The Empress possesses a potent soul force, but she likely consumed a great deal of it too..."

Someone began to say, voicing everyone's thoughts. But at this time, around Sheng Mei, a dim halo appeared. This halo grew larger and larger, spreading out like waves.

Seeing this, everyone on the cliff began to fidget with excitement. This was...

Hu - !

The light completely diffused outwards. Fog wound around Sheng Mei's shrine platform. The fifth soul sea mark had lit up!

"Empress Sheng Mei has lit up the fifth soul sea! It's only been one year!"

In truth, for the martial artists who visited the shrine platforms, many of them had already lit up their fifth soul sea marks.

In fact, many of those proud children of heaven that were currently here had already lit up their fifth soul seas.

But, they often had to spend five years or more before the soul sea marks emitted the dimmest of lights, like a candle flickering in a storm.

No one managed to accomplish this as fast as Sheng Mei nor were their soul sea marks as bright as Sheng Mei's. Her soul sea mark was like a brilliant boom, emitting a holy and enchanting light.

"Truly worthy of being the Soul Empress. Even though she seemed to be overdrawing her soul force, that was a critical moment in grasping the principles, thus the reason for her appearance. Still, she managed to break through that hurdle."

Some people heavily praised. To light the fifth soul sea so quickly caused many people to think that this time, Sheng Mei really might be able to obtain the golden page of the Fallen God Mountain Range.

But the possibility wasn't too high. For time immemorial, countless people had tried and failed, including even young True Divinities.

The impossible difficulty of grasping the principles on the shrine platforms had become firmly rooted in the hearts of the people.

As these people were speaking, behind them, another dim halo spread out, rippling like waves.

"Mm!?"

Everyone was shocked. They turned and were amazed to see that not too far away, Lin Ming's shrine platform was emitting a faint light like a lighthouse in the dark sea.

"It's Lin Muk!"

"He also lit up the fifth soul sea mark? How is this possible!?"

"Also within a year! He's comparable to Empress Sheng Mei!"

Watching these ripples of light grow increasingly large and dense, everyone was so shocked their jaws nearly hit the ground. With this phenomenon occurring, they could confirm that Lin Ming had also lit up the fifth soul sea mark!

"Why would this happen? He's clearly a human so why would he be able to comprehend our spiritas inheritances?"

People glanced at each other with dread, unable to say a single word.

Many of them also felt a deep sense of frustration and despondence. In truth, the reason they endlessly mocked Lin Ming and hoped that he would falter was because they were afraid of him. They were afraid he would really manage to comprehend something here and would cast them all away.

This was because in terms of combat strength and talent, Lin Ming already left them all in the dust. At the same boundary he was easily able to roll over them all!

As the top spiritas youths of their universe, they always held a certain pride in their innermost feelings.

They acknowledged that they couldn't defeat Lin Ming in battle, but at the very least in terms of soul force and mental power, they wouldn't be worse than he was.

But the reality they were shown made them a joke.

This was just like a go master playing against a chess master. They would play go first and even after a single move they realized they would fail and lose 100% to Lin Ming.

But even after trying to play chess, they discovered that even in chess they fell far behind Lin Ming, and extremely far behind at that.

Unable to win even in their own specialty, this could be called being trampled to the ground. Just what kind of proud children of heaven were they? Compared to Lin Ming they were just a joke!

These people didn’t know that the truth was the creator of the Holy Scripture wasn’t the ancestor of the spiritas. And, the inheritance he left behind belonged to all life, to those who possessed the ability to take it. It had nothing to do with any race!

Chapter 1851B – Life and Death

Chapter 1851B – Life and Death

…

…

…

At this time, the outstanding spiritas elites on the Fallen God Mountain Range all had ugly complexions, as if their parents had died in front of them.

In particular, those that mocked Lin Ming and said he was forcing himself had burning red faces. Even though they still wanted to mock Lin Ming, the facts were laid out in front of them. Rather than smacking themselves in the face again they decided to simply shut up.

“This Lin Muk, is it really the first time he came to the Fallen God Mountain Range!?”

Someone asked in hushed whispers. However, before he finished speaking, an even more unbelievable matter occurred.

The halo of light around Lin Ming grew increasingly bright, overlapped again and again as it diffused outwards. First it seemed like ripples, then it seemed like surging waves. Wave after wave, even the surrounding space for hundreds of feet was affected. Faintly, a blinding radiance shot up into the skies from around Lin Ming’s head, filling the world with a brilliant luster. It was like a star was shining, leaving everyone shocked to the extreme.

This sort of phenomenon even surpassed Sheng Mei’s!

Sheng Mei’s light was like a bright full moon, but Lin Ming’s light was like a blazing star. Every person produced different phenomena as they tried to grasp the principles on the shrine platforms. This was because every martial artist comprehended different Laws on the shrine platforms. No martial artist could comprehend the complete Laws of the Holy Scripture, but only a tiny part of them.

According to the difficulty of this part of the Laws, as well as different levels of comprehensions, various phenomena could occur that differentiated the strong and the weak.

But now, if one had to ask if Lin Ming's phenomenon was greater or Sheng Mei's phenomenon was greater, everyone would have to say that the light radiating off of Lin Ming's shrine platform was a bit more dazzling!

"Empress Sheng Mei actually cannot compare with this Lin Muk?"

Many people felt as if they were living in a dream. Although Soul Empress Sheng Mei was only at her seventh revolution and still had a tremendous capacity for future growth, who could say that Lin Ming also didn't have equal potential?

"Stop speaking nonsense! Empress Sheng Mei lit the fifth soul sea mark first, and phenomena cannot be differentiated based on how bright the light is! How can we hope to understand Laws of such complexity?"

Many of Sheng Mei's diehard supporters argued. They weren't willing to believe that Lin Ming had surpassed Sheng Mei.

And at this time, whether it was Lin Ming or Sheng Mei, neither person knew what was happening in the outside world.

Trying to grasp the principles was like climbing a thin ladder to the heavens. It was an endless and lonely path.

Their minds were completely focused, without the least bit of distraction.

After lighting the fifth soul sea mark, the journey to light the sixth soul sea mark would be long indeed.

Lin Ming was like an ancient tree rooted in rock, standing solid and steady on the ground.

Sheng Mei was like a lake without wind or waves, incomparably quiet and peaceful.

The phenomenon that Sheng Mei saw was different from what Lin Ming saw. She forcefully relied on her incredible talent and her understandings of life and the soul to seek out a path in that dense fog.

But as for Lin Ming, he was always staring at the image of a raindrop. He looked at this small raindrop day after day in a trance-like state.

It was only when he felt that he had comprehended everything he could from this raindrop image, and that the other Laws were impossible to understand even if he could see them, that he slowly stopped.

And as he shifted his eyes, Lin Ming discovered that the mysterious woman had already disappeared.

Moreover, this part of the world had grown dim, as if a pall of dark clouds covered this land.

“Senior has disappeared…”

Lin Ming said with some regret. As the mysterious woman vanished, the Laws she left behind also vanished. The innumerable Laws she carved down were all incomparably exquisite, containing endless mysteries within them. If one could copy them and bring them outside, then any single one would be a top miracle treasure. Even True Divinity Holy Lands would regard them as priceless treasures that would be passed down as core inheritances.

However, even though Lin Ming had fallen into a mountain of treasures, the treasures he had managed to take away were limited. He had only become aware of the raindrop diagram and even then he hadn’t completely grasped it.

It could only be said that the difference in boundaries was far too great. Lin Ming still had a long road ahead of him.

As Lin Ming regretted that he wasn't able to comprehend more things, the skies became increasingly dark. Black clouds overlapped and a ghostly fog rolled towards him.

The blue stones were covered by this darkness. They slowly lost their blue luster and began to turn as black as ink.

The blue stones turned to black stones.

The black stones were quiet and plain. As Lin Ming looked at them, he didn't know why but he felt that they were all like tombstones.

This was an extremely bizarre feeling. Moreover, this world was clearly filled with an unspeakably suppressive atmosphere.

Thick black fog filled the air, completely shrouding the world. Once again, Lin Ming couldn't see the road ahead of him.

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He revolved the Daevic Eye Dao Palace, wanting to see through this thick fog.

However, layers of hazy death energy filled the heavens and earth, covering the point between Lin Ming's eyebrows and making it so that his daevic eye wasn't as keen.

Lin Ming could feel the point between his eyebrows be covered in a mass of black energy. To be described by a fortune teller, Lin Ming's forehead had gone black.

"The daevic eye can't see through this..."

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He faintly felt that what flooded his surroundings was the Concept of Death.

If a life was born, death naturally followed.

Death, was the home which all life returned to.

There was no life that could live forever. Even a great race had their prosperity and decline. Even a universe was born and eventually destroyed.

If one could rid themselves of death… then that was the legendary Law of Eternal Life. But… even the creator of the Holy Scripture wasn’t able to perfectly summarize the Law of Eternal Life.

In this situation, all life had to experience the concept of death, and this was also the most important part of life. This was because for all lives, the time they were alive was insignificant compared to the time they were dead.

“But how do I comprehend the Concept of Death?”

Comprehending death was far more difficult than comprehending life. This was because Lin Ming was a living being to begin with, so understanding life was easier for him. It was impossible for Lin Ming to commit suicide to experience death.

As all sorts of thoughts were racing through Lin Ming’s mind, a red light flashed and Ruby appeared beside him. She said, “Brother Lin, t-t-t-there’s some people there…”

Ruby pointed towards the black fog. Lin Ming couldn’t see through it at all.

“What sort of people?” Lin Ming asked, startled.

“Many… many people. They all look different. Some have wings. Some have horns. Some have tails. And some don’t even look like people but look like fierce beasts or strange beasts. They are all crawling out from the ground beneath the black stones.”

“Crawling out from beneath the black stones?” Lin Ming’s mind chilled. That was the same as crawling out from a grave. No wonder he had felt that these black stones were similar to tombstones.

Yet even now, Lin Ming couldn’t see these figures that Ruby spoke of.

“Ah…” Ruby gasped.

“What is it?” Lin Ming hurriedly asked.

“They… they are being killed. Someone’s killing them. That… that person is… so scary. They are holding a scythe in one hand and a black book in the other…”

“Scythe? Black book?” Lin Ming’s thoughts raced. These two things caused him to think of legendary depictions of the god of death.

In particular, that black book caused Lin Ming to form even more associations.

He remembered that in the ancient ruins within the Akashic Dream Battlefield, in the great battle between the Asura Road Master and the creator of the Holy Scripture, the creator of the Holy Scripture had been holding a black book in his hands.

“What kind of book is it? Is this person a man or a woman?”

“A black book. There’s a blood red pattern upon it. A man…”

Ruby rapidly breathed out. For some reason after this black figure with his black book appeared, she felt a deep sense of unease swell within her.

Lin Ming could already confirm that the black book Ruby spoke of was likely the black book he had seen in the ancient ruins within the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

If so, then was this person the creator of the Holy Scripture?

Then who was the mysterious woman from before?

Lin Ming’s thoughts became increasingly tangled. Were there two creators of the Holy Scripture?

Without a doubt, the black figure that Ruby saw was more similar to the creator of the Holy Scripture that he had seen in the ancient battlefield ruins. At the very least they were both men.

"Black book. Are they really golden pages?"

Before this, Lin Ming had always believed that the golden pages were parts of the Holy Scripture that had fallen down. And, the portions that had been collected and organized together formed the Spiritas Holy Scripture that was in the hands of the Soul Emperor. But now, it seemed that he had been mistaken.

In fact, just thinking about it a little more carefully, the golden pages were far too large. When they were fully unfolded they were the size of a small kasya; they just didn't seem like pages at all. Moreover, there were only 10 golden pages. If one had to form a book with them, then this book would be far too large and far too thin.

"Unfortunately, I cannot see the form of this killer and I also don't know what the appearance of this mysterious black book wielder is like..."

Lin Ming revolved the daevic eye but was still completely unable to pierce through the black fog. The mysterious death energy was even able to cover up the vision of his daevic eye.

He was faintly aware that after comprehending the raindrop diagram, he had likely lit up the fifth soul sea mark. But what followed after that was the sixth soul sea mark!

The fifth soul sea mark was life and the sixth soul sea mark was death!

At this point, Lin Ming felt that grasping the principles on the shrine platform was no longer as simple as obtaining a golden page from the Fallen God Mountain Range.

This was a chance! A turning point that allowed him to peep into the Law inheritances of the Holy Scripture's creator!

Thinking of this, Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath and became increasingly excited.

The Asura Road Master and the creator of the Holy Scripture were two peerless characters that existed 10 billion years ago. But, the two of them walked down completely divergent roads of martial arts.

One focused within, one focused without – if he could simultaneously obtain the inheritances of these two peerless powerhouses and cultivate the outside and inside worlds, just what boundaries would he reach?

If he could fuse the two together then his future achievements would be unimaginable!

He might even surpass the Asura Road Master and surpass the creator of the Holy Scripture, establishing a new boundary that had never been reached before!

Realizing this, Lin Ming was increasingly sure that the shrine platforms on the Fallen God Mountain Range were in truth a rich trove of inheritances and also a massive lucky chance. However, wanting to obtain any enlightenment from here was far, far too difficult. Since ancient times, countless spiritas elites had attempted to grasp the principles here, but they had all returned with nothing.

Because so many people failed over the years, many people arrived here with thoughts of only ‘giving it a try’ and believed that not comprehending anything here wouldn’t be a loss at all. The simply didn’t think about obtaining the golden page and only wanted to come here and take a brief look around.

In fact, many people believed that it wasn’t suitable to cultivate here for a long period of time because the Laws were chaotic. But, they didn’t realize that it was because of these chaotic Laws that they couldn’t comprehend anything.

Chapter 1852 – The Concept of Death

Chapter 1852 – The Concept of Death

…

…

…

At the Fallen God Mountain Range, there were a considerable number of young elites that could light up the fifth soul sea mark after spending five or six years here. But, the light of their soul sea marks would be dim, like a candle fading in the wind.

In this sort of situation it would be impossible for them to light the sixth soul sea mark.

Thus, within the history of the spiritas, it was extremely rare for anyone to manage to light the sixth soul sea mark. If one did, they would inevitably become some great figure in the future.

Of these people there were peak Empyreans and True Divinities. Even the worst amongst them were ordinary Empyreans and these ordinary Empyreans had bumpy roads growing up or had exhausted their potential midway.

The sixth soul sea was incredibly difficult to reach. It was a miracle to light it up.

And now, whether it was Lin Ming or Sheng Mei, both were rushing to the sixth soul sea, challenging this enormously difficult checkpoint.

As it stood, no one believed that Lin Ming or Sheng Mei would fail the sixth soul sea checkpoint. This was because those that failed all shared a common factor, and that was that they barely managed to open the fifth soul sea mark. However, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's fifth soul sea marks shined like stars and moons, shocking anyone who saw them.

In the opinion of those watching, it was only a matter of time until Sheng Mei and Lin Ming lit up the sixth soul seas.

Grasping the principles atop the shrine platforms wasn't something accomplished quickly. When ancient True Divinities were in their youth and came here to attempt grasping the principles, they would often spend ten years or longer here.

And these young True Divinities would come here on several occasions, grasping different principles and experiencing different things each time.

As Lin Ming thought, the shrine platforms of the Fallen God Mountain Range were more than just vehicles for one to obtain the golden page. Rather, they were a profound inheritance left behind by the creator of the Holy Scripture. How much one could comprehend all depended on one's ability.

Ancient True Divinities even regarded this as a cultivation land.

"It is said that the Great Brahmic God King spent five years here to light the sixth soul sea, and then tried grasping further principles for another six years but failed to accomplish anything. A thousand years after that when the Great Brahmic God King was almost 3000 years old, he returned to the Fallen God Mountain Range once more. At that time, he was a peak Great World King and nearly a half-step Empyrean, but his attempt at enlightenment remained unchanged from the past and he wasn't able to light up the final soul sea mark."

In the crowd, someone recounted the history of the peerless characters that came from the Soul World.

"I don't know how long Empress Sheng Mei will take, but her results will definitely be better than those of the Great Brahmic God King!"

"There's also that Lin Muk. Although I don't want to admit it… he is really too fierce. Perhaps… he really might be able to create a miracle."

The Great Brahmic God King had spent five years. If Sheng Mei or Lin Ming were able to accomplish the same in four years, that would already be a world-shocking event.

This was equivalent to surpassing a True Divinity when at the same boundary!

In particular, the Great Brahmic God King was someone who had shocked the world with a single feat during his youth, a peerless character who grew up overwhelming everyone around him. He wasn't like some True Divinities who slowly matured and only displayed their incredible potential during the World King or Empyrean realm.

At this time, within the world of his mind, Lin Ming had used a full month but still wasn't able to see the black shadow that Ruby spoke of.

All he saw was black fog filled with death energy all around him. This black fog seemed to possess the power to destroy all, making it so that no one could see through it.

Moreover, the continuous consumption of soul force left Lin Ming a bit impatient. After Lin Ming comprehended a part of the Life Laws, he originally was able to absorb soul force from the world to restore himself, thus he didn't need to rest. Even sitting in meditation for 10 years at a single time shouldn't be a problem.

But in this world of death, the Concept of Life was suppressed and Lin Ming could feel the life force within him constantly leaking out. Once he exhausted the entirety of his strength, he would have no choice but to awake from his meditation and leave the shrine platform to rest.

Lin Ming didn't want to give up halfway during his attempt at enlightenment. Trying to grasp the principles like this meant that he would have to comprehend from the start again and would waste a massive amount of time. Moreover, his comprehensions wouldn't form a whole, making it so that there would be certain areas lacking in his enlightenment.

"Ruby, is that person's shadow there?"

Lin Ming asked. Ruby pointed towards a direction and said, “Over there, just 30 feet away, he’s killing a vicious beast!”

After Lin Ming heard this a severe light flashed in his eyes. He shot forwards like an arrow, firing straight towards the direction that Ruby pointed in. And the distance he went was exactly 30 feet!

“Ahh!”

Ruby was frightened to see Lin Ming’s sudden movement. This was because the place where Lin Ming stopped was right in front of that black shadow’s scythe!

“Brother Lin!”

Ruby paled. At this time, the scythe was already slashing Lin Ming!

Shua!

The scythe cut across Lin Ming’s body. As the blade bit into his body, he could feel the sharp black edge and the aura of death within it. In that moment, he felt as if his own soul would be severed.

An incomparably rich death energy poured out from the scythe blade and poured itself into Lin Ming’s body, making his heart nearly stop. In that moment, Lin Ming thought he had really been killed! Even his fires of life began to rapidly fade away because of this strike!

However, this was only a fleeting moment. The shadow left and the vicious beast lay dead. As for Lin Ming, he had only been casually cut through.

Lin Ming fell to his knees, his entire body streaming with a cold sweat. That strike had consumed a massive amount of his soul force, and he even thought that his spiritual sea would be sliced in half!

As the scythe cut across his head, Lin Ming felt the world around him disappear. All that was left over was the scythe formed from death itself, swallowing everything!

“How terrifying! A mere phantom left behind from 10 billion years ago actually possesses such power!”

Lin Ming understood what happened. It was impossible for the scythe phantom from 10 billion years ago to possess any material striking power. But the moment it cut across his soul force, he felt as if he had thoroughly died. This was because the blade contained the Concept of Death!

This Concept of Death had stayed here for 10 billion years without vanishing. When the Concept of Death entered his body just now, Lin Ming felt as if he had experienced a period of death.

If one’s soul wasn’t powerful enough and attempted what Lin Ming just tried, their soul would have been cut in half by that scythe. With the destruction of the soul, the body would also die!

In other words, the master of the Holy Scripture’s scythe phantom from 10 billion years ago was still able to pass through the endlessly glorious river of time and kill people!

Just what sort of terrifying might was that?

Lin Ming took a deep breath and stood up. He looked towards Ruby. Ruby’s small face was still ashen and she covered her wide mouth with her hands.

“I’m fine.” Lin Ming said. He couldn’t understand her. There were far too many secrets on this little girl’s body. She could easily see through everything but she also seemed to know nothing about the mysteries of the Laws.

“That person’s shadow, where is he again?”

Lin Ming asked. Ruby hesitated and pointed in another direction. Lin Ming rushed there once more.

Lin Ming experienced another moment of death. But, what was different was that this time, the mysterious black book formed an endless vortex that sank into Lin Ming's heart.

In that instant, Lin Ming felt his heart decay and the flow of blood in his body come to a complete stop. His entire body froze, eventually become bones.

This feeling was like witnessing his death with his own eyes. Witnessing his corpse slowly rot over countless thousands of years until only a skeleton was left remaining.

These two experiences were both moments of death, but the feeling they gave Lin Ming were completely different.

"Now… where is that person's shadow?"

Lin Ming asked Ruby to point out the direction once more.

Like this, Lin Ming determined the position of the shadow and ran over again and again. Every time he would experience a moment of death, but what he comprehended was different each time.

Slowly, the black energy between Lin Ming's eyebrows became increasingly thick. He also consumed his soul force at an increasingly rapid rate.

At this time, changes began to manifest on Lin Ming's body in the outside world. Dark clouds seemed to cover his face and a faint death energy exuded from his body. His strength rapidly passed away and he seemed on the verge of death. Eventually, even black blood began flowing out from the corners of Lin Ming's lips.

Seeing this, the spiritas martial artists gathered around the shrine platforms were left speechless.

Last time when Lin Ming was lighting the fifth soul sea, he appeared to have overdrawn his soul force and had startled bleeding from his head, almost completely exhausted. But before long, he was bursting with energy once more. Moreover, after Sheng Mei lit the fifth soul sea, Lin Ming had lit his fifth soul sea right after and the phenomenon that followed his was far superior to Sheng Mei's. Those people that were mocking Lin Ming all had their faces slapped and their reputations torn down.

And before that when Lin Ming first came to the Fallen God Mountain Range to attempt enlightenment, the result was that he had been locked down by the divine sense of a True Divinity and teams of martial artists took transmission arrays to catch up to this place and kill Lin Ming. Those people had been elites from Great Brahmic God Mountain, characters who had managed to become World Kings when they were a thousand years old and had high chances of becoming Empyreans in the future. These many proud children of heaven led an assault on Lin Ming, even posting a sky-high bounty reward so that the other young elites at the Fallen God Mountain Range would help strike down Lin Ming.

These young elites at the Fallen God Mountain Range had watched as Lin Ming fought until his entire body was bloodied and the situation had reached incredibly tragic levels. When Lin Ming seemed on the verge of defeat, these people had stepped into the fray, hoping to pick up some small advantages, but finally, they met horrible ends.

As the young elites present thought back to the scene of a year ago when swathes of people were being slaughtered, they felt a cold chill creep down their back!

Now, these young elites at the Fallen God Mountain Range watched on as Lin Ming's complexion darkened, seeming as if he had been poisoned and would die soon. They glanced at each other, not sure what feeling was in their heart.

They felt that a freakish person like Lin Ming should really be punished by the heavens and struck down by a bolt of lightning. Every time when he seemed almost exhausted and his situation was dire, he would suddenly erupt with some ridiculous strength, frightening everyone that was watching him.

But, even as some people were left speechless, some still hadn't given up. They said in a low voice, "This time, he really must be in trouble."

There were too many martial artists surrounding the shrine platforms and there would always be those who didn't believe in superstitious nonsense.

There were also some people that looked at Sheng Mei. They felt that her current situation was also poor. After all, when comprehending the Concept of Death it wasn't easy for one to restore their soul force. Even someone like Sheng Mei had to suffer layers of problems as she tried to grasp the principles.

Sheng Mei's enlightenment was vastly different from Lin Ming's. But, she also faced endless death energy all around her. Even if Sheng Mei's understandings of the Concept of Death had reached a nearly unimaginable level, she still found it hard to find a way out from this endless death energy in a short period of time.

In this environment where there was only death and no life, Sheng Mei's soul force was similarly being slowly used up.

Chapter 1853 – Overtake

Chapter 1853 – Overtake

…

…

…

Time passed, day by day.

No matter how deep Lin Ming's background was or how solid his foundation, his strength wasn't endless. It was impossible for him to be cut down an infinite number of times by the shadow.

He didn't just sit there and wait for moments of death and these scythes weren't needlessly suffered. Every time Lin Ming experienced a moment of death, his understanding into the Concept of Death became increasingly profound. Slowly, Lin Ming could already absorb the spiritual energy in this land of death to slowly restore himself.

Although his rate of regeneration couldn't catch up to his rate of consumption, the situation was much better than before.

A month passed. On this day, as the black book emitted black energy light that broke into Lin Ming's body, the golden pages within Lin Ming's body began to be drawn towards this black energy, quietly humming.

In that moment, the scene in front of Lin Ming flickered and he could see a dim shadow!

Lin Ming found himself short of breath. His heart was caught in that black light and started rapidly and tenaciously beating.

He saw it!

He had finally seen the shadow that grasped the Concept of Death!

Although it was only the briefest of glances, this still left a profoundly indelible mark on Lin Ming's innermost feelings!

This person was the creator of the Holy Scripture that he had seen in the ancient battlefield ruins!

And the feeling this person gave off was one of infinite killing intent. Compared to the mysterious woman from before, they represented two polar extremes!

That mysterious woman seemed to be the mother of all existence, filled with an incomparably boundless vitality. But for this shadow in front of him, it was like there was a fathomless blood pond from hell within his body.

One represented life, one represented death, they were two extremes of existence!

As for the golden pages that trembled within Lin Ming's body, they faintly resonated with the mysterious black book. The Concepts of Life and Death flowed within them.

Lin Ming had a faint understanding of what happened. Perhaps the legendary Spiritas Holy Scripture was in truth only this black book!

As he recalled the contents of the golden pages, he vaguely felt that the golden pages and black book were both true parts of the Holy Scripture. But, the golden pages were of life, and the black book was of death.

What the Soul Emperor controlled should be the complete and original book of death.

As for the pages of life, the Soul Emperor had copies.

In addition, he also had several of the golden pages.

In other words, the Soul Emperor nearly possessed the entire Holy Scripture!

Thinking of this, Lin Ming realized just how terrifying the Soul Emperor was. Many times, whether a race could be called the strongest race or a sect could be called the number one sect looked not at the population or number of masters, but the most powerful existence amongst them.

The greatest powerhouse often determined the level of an influence.

The reason the spiritas dared to call themselves a peak race of the universe was likely because of the Soul Emperor and the Holy Scripture.

Of course, the saints' Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wasn't weak either. This was because the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign possessed the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

Between the original copy of the Holy Scripture and the Grandmist Spirit Bead, Lin Ming found it hard to decide which divine object was a greater influence on a martial artist's growth.

However, now was not the time to think of such things.

Lin Ming took advantage of his rapid progress in comprehending the Concept of Death and began to absorb the soul force in this land of death. At the same time, he continuously looked for the phantom of the Holy Scripture's creator, withstanding his attacks and comprehending the mysteries of the Concept of Death in that brief moment.

Time and time again, Lin Ming experience moments of death.

Slowly, the restoration of his soul force had caught up to the rate at which he was consuming it.

Several more months passed. Lin Ming's restorative rate began to grow larger than his rate of consumption. His physical strength, vitality, and energy started to quickly recover.

Between Lin Ming's eyebrows, the daevic eye shined bright. Every movement of the shadow seemed to slow to a crawl, allowing Lin Ming to gain a better understanding of them.

He withstood the attacks of the shadow without end. Later, he even began to imitate the shadow, copying his movements and the changes in his aura.

The more Lin Ming tried to copy this shadow, the more he could feel just how terrifying this other person's boundary was. Even though the actions seemed simple and plain, they actually contained endless mysteries.

Month after month, Lin Ming was lost in a drunken trance.

And in the outside world, the martial artists around the shrine platforms watched helplessly on. Indeed, this cockroach-like Lin Ming couldn't be underestimated.

If anyone thought Lin Ming was good to bully just because he showed some signs of weakening, they would absolutely suffer a miserable fate.

But at the same time, Sheng Mei also restored herself.

Her talent was amazing. She didn't have the red-dressed little girl following beside her and giving her pointers, but instead relied completely on her own intuition to find a path to the Concept of Death in the thick black fog. Her road in grasping the principles had been far more difficult than Lin Ming's.

Like this, Sheng Mei and Lin Ming spent over two years on the shrine platforms.

News of Sheng Mei and Lin Ming's competition and the fact that they had opened the fifth soul sea and were rushing towards the sixth had long since spread throughout the Akashic Dream Universe.

For these last two years, more and more martial artists rushed towards the Fallen God Mountain Range. Many of these people were outstanding elites of various great influences.

However, they only watched from a distance. In fact, the shrine platforms nearest to Sheng Mei and Lin Ming were empty.

An invisible soul force domain shrouded the two people, making it difficult for others to approach.

Time quietly passed.

Another year passed. Now, it had been three years!

When a martial artist reached the Holy Lord realm their cultivation speed would drastically slow down. To these long-lived martial artists, three years of life could be called a single round of meditation.

By now, whether it was Sheng Mei or Lin Ming, they had already completely adapted to using their soul force in this land of death. Now they could expend all their efforts on comprehending the Death Laws.

Seeing Lin Ming and Sheng Mei competing on par with each other, many people didn't know what to feel.

Was this human really that heaven-defying?

Disregarding the essence gathering system, Lin Ming was able to roll over all other spiritas martial artists in comprehending the inheritance left behind by the ancient ancestor of the spiritas, even competing evenly with Sheng Mei!

"I believe that the Soul Empress will win."

Jade Lifestone said with certainty. As Sheng Mei's die-hard supporter, he secretly cheered her on.

By now, three years and six months had passed.

On this day, a shocking scene occurred.

On the shrine platform that Lin Ming was sitting on, a massive amount of world soul force gathered around him. Endless brilliance began to radiate outwards, shooting into the highest heavens, surging through the void and covering all space for a hundred miles. A glorious halo appeared with rosy clouds, followed by melodies of the Great Dao.

“What?”

“It… it has only been three and a half years… could it be…”

No one dared to believe what they saw, nor were they willing to. But reality was cruel and merciless. On the shrine platform that Lin Ming sat upon, situated within a sheer cliff, strange runes began to light up. Like burning flames, a shimmering divine light shined out, emanating true meanings of the Great Dao and causing the world around the Fallen God Mountain Range to resonate!

The sixth soul sea mark had been lit!

This scene was witnessed by the countless elites of the Soul World. At this moment, they felt as if something shattered in their hearts, making them feel nauseous.

The entire soul race… was compared to a single human.

This human came alone and only had a middle Holy Lord cultivation with a less than 200 year skeletal age. However, there was not a single spiritas able to compare with him!

Their pride as the number one race of the 33 Heavens had been crushed by a mere human!

Even Sheng Mei hadn’t been able to overtake him!

This was just the greatest joke of all!

Many people clenched their fists. Jade Lifestone bit his lips so hard that they turned deep purple.

“Soul Empress Sheng Mei will surely light the sixth soul sea mark soon. Soon…”

He prayed in his heart. This prayer was also the fervent hope of the countless spiritas martial artists present.

However, reality was indifferent to their pleas. Another two months passed and there was no stir from Sheng Mei's side.

At this time, Sheng Mei pressed her eyebrows together, as if she had met some bottleneck in her enlightenment.

To grasp the principles atop the shrine platform was far too difficult. These were the Law inheritances left behind by the master of the Holy Scripture!

Lin Ming had the mysterious red-dressed little girl to point out the way. Whether it was the Concept of Life or the Concept of Death, she was able to immediately see through them. Although she didn't understand the Laws, her words gave tremendous inspirations to Lin Ming.

But as for Sheng Mei, she suffered far more by relying on herself.

It was only when four months passed, making it a total of three years and 10 months, that Sheng Mei's shrine platform lit up with a divine light.

For a time, innumerable bright clouds gushed into the skies, shooting into the heavens and catching the attention of all!

Chapter 1854 – Enlightenment For 10 Years

Chapter 1854 – Enlightenment For 10 Years

…

…

…

“The Soul Empress has finally lit up the sixth soul sea.”

Many people looked towards Sheng Mei. To light up the sixth soul sea in less than four years was already a heaven-defying achievement. Compared to the Great Brahmic God King in the past, she was faster by over a year.

But compared to Lin Ming, she was late by several months.

As everyone watched more carefully, they could faintly feel that although the glow of Sheng Mei’s divine light was similarly dazzling, it seemed to hold a faintly inferior momentum compared to Lin Ming’s.

In terms of comprehending the Concept of Death, Sheng Mei had been forced to take many detours. She also consumed far more soul force than Lin Ming did.

And what followed was the most critical moment.

Many people didn’t know what to feel. Once one lit up the seventh soul sea mark, that was considered as having obtained complete enlightenment and one could obtain the golden page buried within the Fallen God Mountain Range.

In truth, when one reached enlightenment of this level, obtaining the golden page became secondary. As long as one could completely grasp the principles they would be able to obtain a massive advantage and their understanding into the Life Laws would reach staggering heights. It would play a tremendous role in a martial artist's future cultivation.

This sort of lucky chance left others seething with envy.

At this time, within the world of his mind, Lin Ming had already touched upon the threshold of the final soul sea mark.

This final space had no mysterious woman nor was there the peerless death god with his scythe and black god.

Rather, what lay here was a simple stone platform.

Lin Ming sat atop this stone platform, calmly lost in his arduous enlightenment.

The auras of life and death brimmed around the stone platform. Countless Law runes circled about.

Between Lin Ming's eyebrows, the daevic eye emitted a dazzling sun-bright light. All the Law runes were caught in his divine sense, without a single one escaping his notice.

The final enlightenment was to fuse together the two great Laws of Life and Death.

The difficulty of this level would depend on a martial artist's perception and whether or not their previous enlightenments were thorough.

If a martial artist just barely managed to grasp the Concept of Death before reaching this point and attempted the final fusion like this, it would be like drawing water without a source; it was naturally impossible to succeed.

For the last 10 billion years, all the young True Divinities had failed in attempting to reach the seventh soul sea mark. This wasn't because their perception was lacking but because the sixth soul sea mark, the Concept of Death, had been far, far too difficult to understand. Even those young True Divinities had barely managed to comprehend it and had consumed far too much energy in the process.

But to Lin Ming this wasn't a problem at all, because his comprehensions of the Concepts of Life and Death were extremely solid.

All he needed to do was fuse the two together.

This was an extremely long process. With Lin Ming's comprehensive capabilities after opening the daevic eye, he gradually fused them together without resorting to any shortcuts.

Time slowly passed. Whether it was Sheng Mei or Lin Ming, both were lost in a trance.

And at this time, many young elites had journeyed to the Fallen God Mountain Range to witness these two peerless geniuses with their own eyes. They wanted to be present when this legendary historical miracle occurred.

Because the timespan was far too long, many young elites came and left, left and then returned. They watched Lin Ming and Sheng Mei try to reach enlightenment. Some people even came into contact with the soul force domain that Lin Ming and Sheng Mei emitted and were able to gain some minor benefits in understanding the Concepts of Life and Death.

Of course, the young spiritas elites that could accomplish this were all extremely talented individuals, people with astonishing perceptions.

"I wonder whether Lin Muk or Empress Sheng Mei will be able to thoroughly comprehend the mysteries of the Phantom God Spirit Cliff. For so many years, young True Divinities have meditated on these shrine platforms and eventually failed, and it's always felt a bit too fantastical to me…"

Two peerless characters had appeared together, and what was most ridiculous was that one of them was a human. This left everyone scratching their heads in confusion.

"And these two people are both younger than the Great Brahmic God King was and their talent is far more terrifying. In the future they will definitely become True Divinities. For them to create a miracle here isn't an impossibility. Perhaps the two of them might even surpass the ancient elites of 10 billion years ago."

10 billion years in the past. That was the peak of the martial arts civilization. The kings and elites of that era were on average far more powerful than those of today.

As for the current martial arts civilization, the truth was that they had undergone a tremendous decline before slowly redeveloping. If an elite of the current era could surpass those of the ancient past, that was an amazing achievement.

"History cannot be changed so easily. There are many people who believed that the rules of the Fallen God Mountain Range's Phantom God Spirit Cliff have slowly changed over time. That after 10 billion years, this place is no longer suitable for enlightenment. Moreover, the ones who said these things were supreme spiritas elders. I believe there should be some truth to their words."

Every person had a different opinion.

Many people waited here. Some tried to attempt enlightenment, some tried to cultivate, and like this three years passed…

Many elites from Empyrean influences came to the Fallen God Mountain Range and even elites from True Divinity level influences. They all used recording crystals or photographic array discs to record the scene of Lin Ming and Sheng Mei attempting enlightenment, and then hurried back to report their information.

From all over, hundreds and thousands of large influences had gathered.

For a human with heaven-defying talent to suddenly appear in the Soul World, this naturally caught the attention of all these influences.

In addition, they were also concerned with Sheng Mei's current condition now that she had completed her seventh revolution.

Another three years passed.

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were like statues, completely motionless.

Up to this point, nearly 10 years had passed since they started grasping the principles atop the shrine platforms.

In the considerably long history of the spiritas, no one had ever managed to thoroughly comprehend the inheritances of the Fallen God Mountain Range. Because of this, no one knew how long Lin Ming and Sheng Mei would continue in this state.

Time passed. Spring and fall came and left, and the tenth year soon finished. Suddenly, a vast divine light fell from the void, scattering all the fog from the Fallen God Mountain Range. This divine light was like a holy blade that thrust into the skies above the Fallen God Mountain Range before eventually falling down onto the shrine platform where Lin Ming was.

Lin Ming, together with the shrine platform that was several thousands of feet high, was completely shrouded by that pure divine light.

For a time, crazy winds rose throughout the entire Fallen God Mountain Range. Soul force crazily converged, gathering into a massive vortex that swirled around Lin Ming.

Endless soul force revolved, forming a massive spiral-shaped arm that sucked up all the Law fragments around the Fallen God Mountain Range. The center of the vortex slowly fell down, forming a titanic funnel that dropped onto Lin Ming.

As everyone saw this they were incomparably shocked. They could faintly realize that Lin Ming's enlightenment was reaching its final crescendo. In other words, he would really light the seventh soul sea mark soon.

Everyone stared blankly on as the runes on Lin Ming's shrine platform shined. Light spread all over, lighting up the entire shrine platform like a rising sun.

The seventh soul mark had lit up.

Seeing this scene, even though the spiritas elites had steeled their minds for it, they were still left dumbfounded. They found it hard to come up with any words.

This was because they knew this was a moment where history was being rewritten. Lin Ming had created a history of his own.

And what they found the hardest to accept was that the one who created this history was actually a human. He had taken away the inheritance that no spiritas elite had managed to take through all these years.

This result left all the spiritas elites feeling frustrated.

As for supporters of Sheng Mei like Jade Lifestone and the others, they felt sick to their stomachs.

“This is…”

A spiritas elite suddenly pointed towards the skies. In that purple vortex, blue and black energies circulated, like a yin yang diagram.

These two energies twined together, mutually relying on and enhancing the other.

This scene continued for an incense stick of time. Slowly, these two energies dissipated, spreading out and becoming outlines of runes in the skies. These runes spread out far and wide into the horizon, each one containing the infinite charm of the Great Dao, making the heart race.

“These are runes condensed from the source Laws of the Concepts of Life and Death.”

The elites present included several World King level powerhouses. As they originated from large influences they had extraordinary experiences. When they saw these life and death runes form with their own eyes, their minds trembled.

As everyone heard a World King speak, they all turned to look at the spinning runes in the skies. Most of them were unable to ascertain the mysteries contained within the runes, but they could still clearly feel just how terrifying these runes were. This was because the aura of these runes was able to faintly affect their souls and blood energies, causing their entire beings to resonate with them!

These were the source Laws of Life and Death!

Many martial artists who came to the Fallen God Mountain Range might not be able to comprehend any profound principles, but they still knew that on the shine platforms, the main focus was on the Laws of Life and Death.

When these two Laws joined together, they created existence itself.

Seeing these dancing runes in the air, these martial artists were left seething with jealousy. If they could just obtain a single rune and perceive it then the benefits to their cultivation could be imagined!

And as their eyes blazed with greed, they focused their vision on these Law runes in the wild hopes that they would be able to comprehend something. But suddenly, the vortex accelerated in speed before slowly settling down and converging on a single point.

Winds whipped up. With Lin Ming as the center, all of these Law runes swept into him, as if he were a whale drinking in water.

“Mm?”

“…This is - !!”

Everyone’s eyes widened. They watched helplessly as the hundreds and thousands of Law runes plunged into Lin Ming’s body, vanishing like snowflakes falling into water.

The highest truths of the Heavenly Dao had formed mystical runes that carved themselves into Lin Ming’s bones and blood.

Law fragments evolved into runes, burying themselves into his flesh.

“This… this…”

Many people felt their jaws drop down. They couldn't come up with anything to say.

For many elites of large influences, their eyes were red with desire.

They would be more than satisfied with obtaining just a single one of these precious source runes. But what a pity, these wishes were nothing but a wild dream. All of them had been completely absorbed by Lin Ming!

Just what kind of lucky chance was this!? It left them jealous enough to vomit blood!

“I want one! Just a single one is fine!”

Some people whined and stomped their feet.

These life and death runes sealed themselves within Lin Ming, becoming a part of him. Even though he wasn't able to perceive all of them now, as his cultivation increased he would slowly be able to master their mysteries with twice the results and half the effort. This was the lucky chance one obtained after thoroughly comprehending the principles atop the Fallen God Mountain Range. It was similar to when Lin Ming was baptized by the world Laws during his Ninefall.

Chapter 1855 – Golden Page In Hand

Chapter 1855 – Golden Page In Hand

…

…

…

In the outside world, lighting the seventh soul sea mark seemed as if it had only taken a short period of time. But to Lin Ming, it was like an incomparably long stretch of time has passed.

In that moment, he could feel his body covered in that spinning soul force vortex. The innumerable Law fragments converged into his body.

These Laws were far too mysterious. For a time, it would be impossible for Lin Ming to perceive them, thus he swallowed them all into his body.

The current Lin Ming was in an extremely delicate state. Although his consciousness was blurred, he still had absolute clarity of everything that was occurring around him.

For a thousand miles around this area of the Fallen God Mountain Range, every plant, every martial artist, their expressions, their words, Lin Ming could feel them all clearly. Even the hidden ants in the dirt were clearly felt by Lin Ming.

This was the power of life and death.

For a thousand miles around the Fallen God Mountain Range, Lin Ming could keenly sense all lives as well energies of life and death.

In a trance, a pure golden light flashed into existence within Lin Ming's field of vision.

In that moment, Lin Ming was surrounded by a force field. A vast sea of golden energy surged around him. A thin golden page recklessly danced in this raging tide of energy.

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He grabbed onto this thin golden page.

He fixed his eyes upon it; it was the first metal page!

The east of wood, the south of fire, the center of earth, the west of metal, the north of water.

The first metal page was the seventh golden page!

Without further ado, Lin Ming fused the golden page into his body.

A vast energy of life and death broke into Lin Ming's flesh and blood and meridians, wildly circulating about.

After grasping the principles atop the Phantom God Spirit Cliff, Lin Ming's comprehensions of the Concepts of Life and Death were completely incomparable to the past.

As for the ten golden pages, they all spoke of the Concepts of Life and Death. If Lin Ming were to perceive them now, he would be able to do so at an astronomical rate.

The body was a universe, and within this universe, one could form their own Heavenly Dao, controlling all Laws!

This was why it was believed that with the universe of the body, every person was the ultimate master of their own universe. If they could thoroughly grasp the profound and complex principles of the body's universe then they could release the full potential of their existence and obtain an unimaginable strength.

As for the creator of the Holy Scripture, he was someone who walked to the peak of this road.

He had even recognized that if he could completely comprehend the profound principles behind life and death, he could step into the boundary of immortality.

For a time, Lin Ming's shrine platform blazed with countless lines. The seventh soul sea mark rumbled like an endless mantra that contained inexhaustible mysteries.

And after Lin Ming thoroughly grasped the Laws, he still sat in meditation. Many people didn't understand why.

“This brat, just what is he doing? Why is he sitting on the shrine platform still? Didn't he reach thorough enlightenment?”

“He has opened the seventh soul sea mark and his grasp of the principles has reached perfection, so why hasn't he come down!?”

Many Soul World martial artists said with envy thick in their voices. They often sat on the shrine platforms for only several months before their soul force was exhausted and they were forced down. But Lin Ming actually stayed up there for a full ten years to grasp the principles and light up the seven soul sea marks completely. Even so, he still sat there on the shrine platform like some elderly man without any intention of waking up. How could they not be enraged by this?

“He is perceiving the golden page.”

At this time, a World King elite from an Empyrean influence sighed. When the mysterious world Law runes came out, many of the martial artists with insufficient cultivation were only able to see the charm of the Great Dao as it danced everywhere in the air. But as a World King, and an extremely talented one at that, he also saw a golden page flash within those Law runes like a wisp of golden light before sinking into Lin Ming's body. Afterwards, Lin Ming continued with his enlightenment.

In a single go, Lin Ming had lit up seven soul sea marks after grasping the principles for ten years without needing a single breath of rest in the middle. Then, he even continued to perceive the golden page. The intensity of the soul force required for this and his comprehension of the Laws left one sighing with praise!

Many martial artists felt their jaws drop as they heard this World King speak. They were at a loss for words.

To even continue perceiving the golden page now, was his spiritual sea made of divine iron or something?

“Isn’t he tired? Doesn’t he need to rest?” Someone asked, puzzled.

The World King shook his head, “His understanding into the Concept of Life must have reached an incredibly high boundary. By just relying on the Concept of Life he should be able to derive energy from the surrounding world to nourish his spiritual sea, so that his soul force continues to restore itself…

“For these last ten years on the shrine platform, Lin Ming’s comprehension of the Laws has been making leaps and bounds forwards. Although it can’t be called a state of sudden enlightenment, it is similar. In this state, he won’t easily wake up. If I were him I would also do the same…”

The World King who spoke had an extraordinary level of experience. Those who could become World Kings before 3000 years of age were all abnormal individuals and with their eyesight they could naturally see what Lin Ming was doing.

“What? Sudden enlightenment for ten years!?”

Many people were stunned silent. A state of sudden enlightenment could only be discovered through a stroke of fate. In one’s entire lifetime, they might encounter such a state only a dozen or so times, or even a few dozen times. Each time, entering this state for several hours was already more than amazing, and to be in this state for an entire day could be called a great lucky chance.

But to enter a state of sudden enlightenment for ten years, that was simply… incredible!

Since when had periods of sudden enlightenment become so cheap?

Some people cursed in their hearts.

The World King could sense the thoughts of these people. He shook his head, saying, “It’s not that he entered sudden enlightenment for ten continuous years, but that he regularly entered sudden enlightenment during these ten years. Every time he did so he would experience something different. When he invested all of his heart and mind into comprehending the Laws, that could be called a state of sudden enlightenment. This is because he is too strong and also because the Laws atop the shrine platform are too exquisite. Once one is submerged within them, it is easy to enter such a state. Unfortunately for you and me, even though we know what is happening it is still impossible for us to comprehend the Laws atop the shrine platform. This is just like entering a treasure mountain but having no ability to dig out the treasure. At the end we can only leave after picking out a few bits of gold scattered on the ground. The difference between us is just far too great…”

The World King sighed. The Laws at the Fallen God Mountain Range weren’t actually chaotic; it was just that they weren’t able to comprehend them.

“And in truth, the Soul Empress is also in a similar state, but… the difference is she’s just a tad slower than Lin Muk.”

Someone looked towards Sheng Mei. At this time, Sheng Mei was shrouded in a gentle and mysterious halo of light, like a holy goddess from the highest heavens.

She was completely oblivious to what was happening in the outside world.

“Soul Empress…” Jade Lifestone gripped his fists. As one of Sheng Mei’s most fervent supporters, he certainly wasn’t feeling good about how things had turned out.

In fact, Sheng Mei’s performance was already more than heaven-defying. However, an even more monstrous genius had arrived and forcefully surpassed Sheng Mei…

Grasping the principles was a lonely and bitter experience.

Martial artists who sat in meditation would often forget the passing of the years. When they closed and opened their eyes, dozens of years could pass as if they had awoken from some deep dream.

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were also the same.

Like this, another two years passed.

One night, Sheng Mei's shrine platform began to emit soft ripples of light. People watched with amazement as a bright and round moon rose up behind Sheng Mei. Brilliant moonlight glowed with the light of the Great Dao, and a faint palace could be seen floating within it. The lilting song of a goddess echoed outwards, and this enchanting immortal tune accompanied the aura of the Great Dao, making people feel lost in ecstasy within the melody.

"Soul Empress!"

Someone excitedly said. Sheng Mei had finally lit up the seventh soul sea mark!

Between the heavens and earth, endless soul force gathered, condensing into a blue lake that floated above the shrine platform. This lake had fish, plants and shrimp within it. The plants glittered like carved crystals and the fish and shrimp were brimming with spirituality.

The aura of the Concepts of Life and Death condensed in the lake waters, forming all sorts of mystical runes. These runes wandered in the water, filling everything with an auspicious and peaceful feeling.

"After the Soul Empress lit up the seventh soul sea, she also formed Law runes!"

Someone cried out in alarm. This was the same as Lin Ming.

However, Lin Ming's Law runes formed in a massive soul force vortex, whereas Sheng Mei's law runes formed in the peaceful waters of a lake.

From opening the fifth and sixth soul sea marks, the phenomena that appeared on Sheng Mei's shrine platform were completely different from the phenomena that Lin Ming produced. Although Sheng Mei's phenomena were beautiful and sacred, they missed a bit of Lin Ming's swift fierceness and overwhelming aggressiveness.

The runes within the lake waters began to converge into Sheng Mei's body. For a time, Sheng Mei's entire body was drenched in this lake water, her clothes floating and rippling about her, making her seem like a beauty not of this world.

A moment later, all of this lake water submerged into Sheng Mei's body, vanishing without a trace.

Then, Sheng Mei's eyes flashed open. Her clothes fluttered about her and she stepped onto the wind, floating like a goddess exiled from the highest heavens, ethereal and untainted by the world.

She had secluded herself from the world for 12 years, immersing herself in the world of her mind. She had no idea what happened in the outside world.

“Soul Empress!”

“The Soul Empress is awake!”

Many people excitedly said. The Soul Empress had also thoroughly grasped the principles atop the Fallen God Mountain Range, the only difference being that she was slower than Lin Ming.

Sheng Mei didn't care about the excited martial artists all around her. In truth, compared with 12 years ago when Sheng Mei first started grasping the principles, there was over a dozen times the number of martial artists present. Now, whether it was space in the skies or on the ground, the Phantom God Spirit Cliff was piled up with crowds of people. Even those people who had been grasping the principles atop the shrine platforms had stopped as they noticed Sheng Mei wake up. They all turned to look at her.

After being stared at by all these people, and even with there being dozens of times more martial artists than there were originally, Sheng Mei's expression didn't change at all. She was slowly savoring what she had experienced and obtained in these last 12 years.

"I… have finally become aware of the Laws atop the shrine platform. Although I have only perceived the tip of the Laws here, I have still done so! Once I complete my eighth revolution, I can return to the Fallen God Mountain Range and comprehend even more things!"

Sheng Mei has grasped the principles for 12 years and fully realized just how difficult it was to do so. It was no wonder that for billions of years, there hadn't been a single spiritas martial artist that had managed to completely open the seven soul sea marks.

It was just far too difficult a task. Even young True Divinities weren't able to accomplish this.

But Sheng Mei was someone who had read the almost complete Spiritas Holy Scripture and also experienced seven reincarnations; this was equivalent to undergoing seven cycles of life and death. Thus, her understandings towards the Concepts of Life and Death had reached a mind-boggling boundary. In this case, even though she came to the shrine platform to grasp the principles, she was still barely able to perceive the true meaning of the Laws here.

Others simply wouldn't have her lucky chances, so the possibility of them successfully grasping the principles was nearly zero!

Chapter 1856 – Win And Lose

Chapter 1856 – Win And Lose

…

…

…

Recalling the 12 years of grasping the principles, in particular opening the sixth soul sea mark, the difficulty of this trial left one dumbfounded. Even Sheng Mei had nearly fallen off the shrine platform, unable to continue.

If this had happened, Sheng Mei would no longer have been able to completely grasp the principles in a single attempt. It would inevitably have been a tremendous disappointment.

As all these thoughts raced through her mind, she looked towards Lin Ming. She saw that Lin Ming was still sitting on his shrine platform, not finished with his meditation.

Sheng Mei always believed that Lin Ming was strong, perhaps even stronger than she was at the same cultivation boundary, but in terms of understanding existence and the Laws of Existence, it was impossible for Lin Ming to compare with her.

In terms of grasping the principles atop the shrine platform, Sheng Mei had absolute confidence she could suppress Lin Ming.

Thus, when Lin Ming proposed conditions in forming an alliance with the humans and spiritas, that was the reason why her response had been so cold; because she didn't believe that Lin Ming would be able to fulfill his conditions.

Now that she saw Lin Ming immersed in his meditation still, she wasn’t surprised at all. However, she didn’t feel any deep sense of achievement either, because in terms of the Existence Laws, it would be natural for her to win against Lin Ming.

But after several breaths of time passed, her expression froze.

Something was wrong!

She looked at the shrine platform Lin Ming sat upon and could see the seven soul sea marks shining brightly. Moreover, that final seventh soul sea mark was like a dazzling sun, illuminating the world.

“This is…”

Sheng Mei was startled. How could this be!?

Lin Ming had finished a step ahead of her and had thoroughly comprehended the Laws atop the shrine platform. And now, he had likely already obtained the golden page and was perceiving it as well as the life and death runes that had fused into his body. She had no idea just how long he had been in this state!

As for Sheng Mei, she had just lit up the seventh soul sea mark. That was equivalent to being utterly defeated by Lin Ming even with a home field advantage!

“This is…”

Although Sheng Mei was normally indifferent and blasé, the truth was that she had always possessed a proud heart. In the Asura Road’s final trial when she faced the Undying Polar Ice, it was Lin Ming who had performed the final strike. But in that battle, Sheng Mei had played an offensive and defensive role, and her performance went far beyond Lin Ming’s.

Thus, Sheng Mei hadn’t lost in the Asura Road.

But now, atop the Fallen God Mountain Range's shrine platforms which should have been her specialty, the domain which she excelled in, she had actually lost.

She felt this was simply unbelievable.

She didn't underestimate herself nor did she not accept the facts laid out before her. She just found it hard to believe…

"No wonder I didn't obtain a golden page after completely grasping the principles here!"

Sheng Mei suddenly realized what happened. The golden page had been taken by Lin Ming first!

She took a deep breath and looked towards Jade Lifestone. She knew that Jade Lifestone was a disciple of her Soul Rapture Holy Lands.

"He… when did he light the seventh soul sea mark? How much earlier was he?"

Sheng Mei's sound transmission startled Jade Lifestone. Of all people, Sheng Mei had sent him a sound transmission!

Although he was a disciple of the Soul Rapture Holy Lands, he had never exchanged words with Sheng Mei before. He had only seen her profile from a far off distance.

But now, Sheng Mei actually sent him a sound transmission. Although it was because of Lin Muk, this was more than enough to leave him bubbling with excitement.

It was just that Sheng Mei's question left him a little depressed after the initial excitement wore off.

Sheng Mei had lost. In his opinion, she was an omnipotent existence, a talent that was unprecedented since ancient times even through the entire 33 Heavens. Even so, she had lost to a human.

“R-reporting to the Soul Empress… Lin Muk used ten years… he was earlier than the Empress by… two years.”

Because of his happiness, Jade Lifestone’s voice trembled.

“Two years…”

Sheng Mei’s pupils shrank. She was fully aware of just how difficult grasping the principles atop the shrine platform was. She thought she had reached the peak of possibilities in terms of speed, but she had been two years behind Lin Ming!

How had he accomplished this?

As she recalled the Concept of Death from the sixth soul sea mark as well as needing to fuse the Concepts of Life and Death together for the seventh soul sea mark, Sheng Mei was at a loss to explain just how Lin Ming had done this in a short ten years of time.

“How terrifying…”

This was the first time that Sheng Mei had felt such terror from Lin Ming. Besides the Soul Emperor, there had never been anyone who had given her such a feeling! And the reason she felt such a feeling from the Soul Emperor was because his strength was truly horrifying. When the Soul Emperor was young, the truth was that his achievements were similar to those of the Great Brahmic God King. It was only when he became an Empyrean that he soared into the heavens, and one of the chief reasons behind this was naturally the Spiritas Holy Scripture.

As for Lin Ming, his raw talent was frightening. It left anyone lost in his dust!

After composing herself, Sheng Mei sighed. Then, she sat down and began meditating on the shrine platform.

Faintly, a strange feeling appeared in her heart. She looked in Lin Ming’s direction, and the place she looked at was behind him.

“Mm?”

Sheng Mei lightly said, her eyebrows pressing together.

In that brief moment she had felt a faint life form behind Lin Ming, an incomparably pure power of soul force that was even purer than her own.

“Ah…”

Ruby was startled. She quickly hid in Lin Ming’s spiritual sea.

This was the first time that she had encountered someone able to sense her. When she saw Sheng Mei successfully grasp the principles, she had been filled with curiosity and had come out to take a look. But, she didn’t expect that she would be noticed by Sheng Mei.

Her keen divine sense far surpassed that of an Empyrean.

“An illusion…?” Sheng Mei slightly frowned. She didn’t believe there was a problem with her divine sense, so she attributed what she experienced just now to something on Lin Ming’s body.

She didn’t know that the reason she lost to Lin Ming wasn’t because her perception was inferior, but because of that incomparably pure soul force she had just felt.

Lin Ming had that mysterious little girl aiding him, but Sheng Mei had depended on herself alone.

If the two of them had fairly competed, the results would have been completely different.

Of course, no matter what the reason was, Lin Ming running into that red-dressed little girl could be called his lucky chance and Sheng Mei was defeated all the same.

At this time, many people felt pity for Sheng Mei.

They sighed deeply over the injustice of Sheng Mei losing. She should have been able to obtain the golden page and become a legend, but she was late by just a single step and had been suppressed by Lin Ming.

For at least 2-3 billion years, there had never been anyone who managed to take a golden page from the Fallen God Mountain Range. But now, because of a mere two years' difference, Sheng Mei had missed out. How could everyone not feel regret for her?

"If Empress Sheng Mei completed the eighth revolution she would have definitely defeated Lin Muk."

Sheng Mei's fans secretly discussed, still not convinced of the results.

Sheng Mei naturally heard these discussions. She shook her head. By the time she had completed the eighth revolution, perhaps, Lin Ming's achievements would have risen once more…

After realizing she lost, there was nothing Sheng Mei couldn't accept. She sat in meditation, waiting for Lin Ming to comprehend that golden page.

Now, she had a great interest in the road that lay before Lin Ming. In humanity's great calamity, just where would Lin Ming go?

Lin Ming's comprehension of the golden page continued for another year.

A year later, Lin Ming's eyes flashed open.

His eyes seemed to have infinite Laws circulating within them. The aura of life in his left eye, the aura of death in his right eye, the two auras connected together, bringing about the charm of the Great Dao.

After perceiving a third golden page, Lin Ming's understandings into the universe of the body had reached new heights.

Moreover, the hidden dangers that existed within him because of his cultivation increasing too quickly were completely eliminated during these 13 years.

For these 13 years, Lin Ming had only comprehended the Laws and didn't cultivate at all. Otherwise, breaking into the late Holy Lord realm wouldn't have been difficult at all.

"If I have enough time, if I can see the complete Holy Scripture and then obtain the third emperor jade and the complete Asura Sutra, perhaps I will be able to fuse the inner and outer universes and reach unprecedented heights of martial arts…"

As these thoughts flashed through Lin Ming's mind, his heart suddenly skipped a beat. In front of him, someone had locked their gaze onto him.

Lin Ming looked forwards and two pairs of eyes met, colliding in midair. Lin Ming saw the otherworldly Sheng Mei.

For this year she didn't take even half a step off the shrine platform. She simply waited there, perceiving the Law runes that had integrated into her flesh and blood.

"How did you accomplish this?"

Sheng Mei asked, going straight to the point.

"Luck."

Lin Ming didn't lie nor did he clearly state the truth. Him finding the red-dressed little girl was indeed a stroke of luck.

"Very well."

Sheng Mei shook her head. She waved her slender white hands and two golden pages flew out from her soul sea, fluttering like silk into Lin Ming's hands.

"According to our previous agreement, these are for you. After perceiving all of them, return the four golden pages back to me. Afterwards you can take away two. However, I advise you not to have any wild dreams of saving humanity. The great war of the saints might be closer than you think…”

As Sheng Mei spoke these words, she floated upwards. All that was left over were four golden pages floating in Lin Ming’s hands. The soft pages were like silk to the touch, incomparably real…

Chapter 1857 – Samsara of Life and Death

Chapter 1857 – Samsara of Life and Death

…

…

…

Lin Ming left. He had obtained far too many comprehensions at the Fallen God Mountain Range and needed time to digest and fuse them.

During the 13 years, the True Divinity mark placed within him had slowly faded away. And with Sheng Mei's appearance, few people were willing to target him in an obvious manner.

But Lin Ming was still careful. After leaving the Fallen God Mountain range had once more used the Bodily Rebirth Technique and created a new identity for himself before re-entering the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

After grasping the principles atop the Fallen God Mountain Range for so long, the Akashic Dream Battlefield had long since opened again.

But this time, Lin Ming didn't come to the Akashic Dream Battlefield to kill others for their merit points. Rather, he went to the ancient galactic battlefield to cultivate.

Lin Ming didn't alert anyone. He easily arrived at the ancient forest within the Akashic Dream Battlefield, bypassing the layers of spells to enter the ancient ruins.

This was where the Asura Road Master and the creator of the Holy Scripture had fought 10 billion years ago.

The reason he chose to come here was because this was a land where the auras of the Asura Road Master and Holy Scripture creator had fused together.

Lin Ming held great ambitions. He wanted to cultivate essence, energy, and soul, simultaneously fusing together the universe of the body with the universe of the world, creating a road of martial arts that had never been seen before!

Thus, this ancient galactic battlefield was the best training place for him.

The four golden pages had fused into his flesh and blood and divine soul. At this time, Lin Ming was like an elderly abbot, his thoughts clear and serene.

In his mind, only the vast texts of the golden pages as well as those vague runes of existence fused into his body appeared.

This time, he wanted to comprehend the true meaning of the runes of existence and blend them together with the four golden pages.

The ancient galactic battlefield was pitch black and filled with a deathly silence. Lin Ming wandered through the ruins of this galaxy, stepping over countless shattered stars and planets as he went towards the most central point.

In the area where the first ancestor of the spiritas had left the strongest spirit mark, Lin Ming found a broken star nucleus and sat down within it.

Not too far away, Ruby had manifested and was following him.

As Ruby appeared, the surrounding strange black runes were stirred up by her. They were like fish that saw food, swimming towards her before sinking into her body.

Lin Ming sighed upon seeing this. Ruby was like an inherent being born of the Laws. Not only could she see through all Laws but Law runes would chase after her on their own initiative. He really couldn’t imagine what her origins were.

Lin Ming quickly entered the fused martial intent state. Behind him, the Bodhi tree slowly spread out, its lush leaves shining as he started to perceive the runes of life and death.

Soon, Lin Ming immersed himself into a completely convoluted realm, becoming one with the icy darkness around him.

In his mind, the ancient texts recorded atop the golden pages thundered loudly. The endless writings floated up and down like mountains, containing limitless mysteries.

After thoroughly grasping the principles atop the shrine platform, it was far easier for Lin Ming to read these golden pages now. He didn't feel the agonizing pain of needles stabbing his eyes nor was he in a situation where he couldn't read the words. This was because he had already immersed himself in them and was able to extricate them.

The golden pages were things passed down from the infinite past, the essence of the legacy of someone who had been able to create their own universe. Wanting to completely master them in a short period of time was impossible.

Every time Lin Ming comprehended the golden pages he would only comprehend a small part of them. Much of their contents still slumbered deeply within him, shrouded in a thick fog, obscured and unclear.

The reason he came here now was to shorten the time it would take him to slowly digest these accumulations.

A ghostly light began shining out from between his eyebrows, as if an eye were opening.

This was a mystical light, one that seemed as if it could illuminate the past, present, and future. It shined upon the fighting runes left behind by the Asura Road Master and the spiritas ancestor, making them also release a bright luster.

This strange eye was the Daevic Eye Dao Palace that Lin Ming had recently opened.

As the Daevic Eye Dao Palace appeared, it seemed to illuminate the universe in all directions, clearing away the fog and uncertainty.

Many of the blurry texts of the golden pages that were shrouded by fog within Lin Ming's spiritual sea began to shine as the endless light of the Daevic Eye Dao Palace warmed them. The texts began to become increasingly loud, and a large portion of the thick fog surrounding them dissipated, as if a sun was breaking through the endless morning horizon.

Every word was like an ancient god king, whispering as they spoke of infinite true meanings.

Lin Ming didn't understand these sounds of the Great Dao at the start. But gradually, his body and divine sea were impacted by the sounds of the Great Dao.

Some texts began to pervade his nearly indestructible body. On his skin that was as tough as stars, tiny characters appeared like tadpoles swimming in water, followed with innumerable images.

...Some supreme elders were soaking up stars in the center of the universe, turning into ancient suns that lit up the endless expanse...

...A god king used his flesh and blood to build up a world. His energy turned into rain that nourished all life...

More and more true meanings appeared that enlightened Lin Ming's divine soul. The endless information was like raging rivers as it rushed into him.

As time passed, his understandings of the golden pages became increasingly profound.

The surrounding world, as well as the battle runes left behind in the ancient galactic battlefield by the ancestor of the spiritas, began to flicker once more after so many years of silence as they started to shine with a marvelous harmony.

These runes were faint traces of black energy, incomparably nimble and inspiring.

Every wisp of black energy contained a distant scene of the old spiritas ancestor. Every scene depicted a true meaning of the old spiritas ancestor displaying the Holy Scripture…

Black energy swirled around Lin Ming. The endless runes of the golden pages rumbled in response. Even the old battle runes left behind by the old spiritas ancestor were dyed in shining gold.

Lin Ming immersed himself within all of this, lost in waves of enlightenment that he couldn’t take himself out of.

…Universe… space and time… life and death…

Gradually, the ancient texts immersed in his skin began to glow. Then, his flesh and blood, bones, and even his divine soul began to roar out together.

As this thunderous sound spread out, he fell into a trance and went utterly still.

First his heart stopped and his blood flow came to a standstill. A single breath extended for such a long time that it seemed to completely vanish.

He sat solitarily in that icy dark ancient galactic battlefield. Within the void, he seemed to melt into the shattered star nucleus where he was.

An unknown period of time passed. His skin and flesh started to dry up, and rings began to appear around his bones like mysterious marks.

He remained motionless as before, even with his vitality seemingly cut off. If another martial artist were to see him in such a state they would definitely be surprised, because his current appearance resembled that of true death.

After another period of time, Lin Ming’s skin began to flake away, turning into dust that scattered into the world. However, from beneath this old skin, baby-like crystalline skin started to appear, filled with vitality, like the new spring after winter.

As time passed, Lin Ming’s blood vitality became increasingly vibrant. His body was like the most perfect heavenly material, sparkling with a brilliant light. His fires of life were a raging conflagration, filled with a potent strength. Every breath he took seemed to cause the essence energy of the world to tumble about, and if this essence energy were collected it could be refined into precious miracle medicines.

During the process of enlightenment, the runes of existence within his body had further fused with him, allowing him to experience a transformation of life and death.

First, the vitality of his mortal body was severed, and as he lay on the verge of death, new life emerged!

Lin Ming opened his eyes. In the endlessly dark galaxy, his two eyes seemed to radiate like twin stars.

His back flew upwards and his entire body was naked. However, he still sighed with emotion as he shook his head.

“What a pity, I only have the runes of life and death and the four golden pages. I don’t have the complete Holy Scripture nor the black book… the golden pages represent the Life of the Holy Scripture and the black book represents Death. Without having seen the book of death, it's impossible for me to comprehend death to the extreme!

After grasping the principles this time, Lin Ming’s understanding towards the meaning of life and death contained within the Holy Scripture had reached new heights.

If he could fuse together with the black book and become fully aware of the Concept of Death, then it wouldn’t be so simple as shedding off his old skin. Rather, he could allow his body to decay, his flesh and bones to completely collapse.

That was true death.

And when death reached the extreme, he could use the golden pages of life to undergo rebirth after death. He would glow with the strongest vitality and remold his mortal body to obtain new life.

This was the same as being reborn. In other words, reincarnation. Even his skeletal age would change; this was truly changing the rules of the heavens and earth.

This was the origin of the Grand Reincarnation Art that Sheng Mei cultivated.

After undergoing a cycle of death and rebirth, that was the same as being reincarnated through samsara once.

After that, if one could fuse together the Eternal Soul then they could cultivate the Law of Eternal Life and exist forever within the world.

That was the complete Holy Scripture.

"The black book… I'd really like to see it…"

Lin Ming thought with some regret. If he could cultivate both the black book and golden book, then every reincarnation would push his strength to new limits.

Unfortunately, he would never be able to obtain the black book. Even if he requested it from Sheng Mei, she wouldn't be able to lend it to him. The key point here was that Sheng Mei also didn't possess the black book, because the black book was in the hands of the Soul Emperor.

Perhaps this black book was the greatest lucky chance of the Soul Emperor's life. How could the Soul Emperor politely pass off his life's greatest lucky chance to others?

Out of everything Lin Ming possessed, only the value of the Magic Cube surpassed that of the black book. But wanting to trade away the Magic Cube was naturally impossible.

Helplessly shaking his head, Lin Ming waved his arm. Endless power of existence condensed on his body, forming a long light purple robe.

He called out for Ruby who hid herself in his body. Then, they left the galactic battlefield.

He thought that a long period of time had passed since his enlightenment. Perhaps the Akashic Dream Battlefield had opened and closed several times already.

Lin Ming left the ancient battlefield and also left the forest. He wanted to find someone to ask when the Akashic Dream Battlefield's entrance would open.

At this time, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred and he froze where he was. Not too far away, he could see a lake. This lake was beautiful like liquid jade, and what was strange was that there wasn't even the smallest wave. It could be called extremely peaceful, or even still to the point of death.

Around the lake, there was no grass, only a gray rocky shore. Someone was sitting on an embankment, a rod in his hands as he fished from the lake.

From afar, this person was a youth.

Lin Ming looked at this youth's back, staring for a long time. He didn't know why, but he could feel a strange aura from the youth's back.

Chapter 1858 – The Old Youth

Chapter 1858 – The Old Youth

…

…

…

This youth didn't have the aura of Laws around his body and his foundation was ordinary. His cultivation wasn't high, but as he sat there fishing, he seemed to meld together with the surrounding environment in perfect harmony.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment and then walked towards the youth.

The youth clearly sensed Lin Ming approach. However, he continued fishing as before, sitting on the side of this lake which was like a well that had never been touched.

"Are there fish here?"

Lin Ming suddenly asked. His understanding towards the Laws of Existence had reached an extremely high boundary and he could feel that this lake lacked any vitality at all. There was no life within it, and there weren't even plants in the water or shrimp or fish within. It was just impossible to fish for anything here.

"There aren't."

The youth's voice was a little dreary, without any emotion at all.

As the youth spoke, he didn't turn his head. Lin Ming could see the youth's hands that were grasping the fishing pole. His hands were as beautiful as a woman's, his ten fingers were slender and his nails seemed made of crystal. As he held the fishing pole he seemed as stable as a sculpture.

On his right thumb, there was a simple jade ring. This ring had Law runes carved within it, seeming mysterious yet exceedingly simple.

“If there aren’t any fish, what are you fishing for?”

Lin Ming asked, puzzled. He could confirm that this youth wasn’t ordinary at all. This was a thought purely based on his intuition.

“Fishing for a Concept.”

The same dreary voice said. Listening to the youth made one feel strange.

“The Concept of Death?”

Lin Ming asked in return. In this lake that had no vitality at all, what it possessed the most was the Concept of Death. If one tried to comprehend the Concept of Death here, that was actually possible.

But, there was only a possibility. Compared to the shrine platforms of the Fallen God Mountain Range, the difference in the Concept of Death present there and here couldn’t even be described as the heavens and earth. The Concept of Death here was just far too shallow.

The youth in front of him had a mysterious identity and was clearly no ordinary mortal. Yet, he was still fishing here for a Concept. This left Lin Ming confused.

What could be perceived here? This was only a dead lake.

But Lin Ming didn’t rashly respond. He carefully felt the surrounding Laws and determined that there wasn’t anything strange about them. The location of this area was ordinary, near the outer boundaries of the forest, and the soul beasts nearby weren’t powerful either. At the bottom of the lake there were some corpses of dead animals, but most had been dead for hundreds of thousands of years and had turned into fragile fossils. Those animals had also been ordinary creatures when they were still alive.

Combining all of these factors together, this was still only an extremely ordinary dead lake.

Although Lin Ming had already determined the specifics of the lake, he didn't randomly draw a conclusion. He just asked in response, "Is there something special about this lake?"

The youth shook his head, "There isn't anything special; it's quite ordinary."

Then, the youth laid down the fishing pole and turned around.

Seeing this youth's face, a look of amazement flashed in Lin Ming's eyes.

The youth's eyes were glazed and incomparably dirty. Only an old man on the verge of death would have such eyes.

Although the youth had fair and crystal-bright skin, Lin Ming could feel the endless years exuding from his body, as if he had walked here from the beginning of time.

As if… hidden within this youth, there was an unbelievably old soul.

"You are…"

Lin Ming subconsciously stepped backwards, maintaining absolute guard of his surroundings.

He felt that it wasn't an accident that he ran into this old youth here.

But, he had no idea just who this old youth was.

The youth looked towards Lin Ming and didn't respond to his surprise. Rather, he began to say, "Your sense of purpose is too strong. Things that are valuable to you, you will pursue.

But things that are worthless, you will give up. For instance, this lake. If you had passed by this lake I'm afraid you wouldn't even have spared it a single glance…"

Lin Ming fell silent. This was how things should be. It wasn't just him, but every normal person in the world was basically the same.

Even for those eminent monks of Mount Potala that had obtained enlightenment, even though they stood aloof from the world and didn't pursue any desires or emotions, that journey in itself could be called a pursuit.

The youth looked at Lin Ming. Although Lin Ming's image didn't even reflect in his dirty eyes, Lin Ming still felt as if he had been completely seen through.

Lin Ming held his breath, completely restraining his mind and raising his guard to the limit.

"Senior, who are you?"

Lin Ming changed his greeting. The youth only looked at Lin Ming and shook his head.

"Your life could be called breaking through all obstacles in your way, moving forwards with unstoppable momentum. You desperately rush towards the peak of martial arts and you far surpass all others of your generation. From the time you bloomed, you took few detours.

"But to gain this you also lost something. The road of martial arts is more than the most mysterious and the greatest of the Heavenly Dao Laws. There are also ordinary, everyday experiences. You are missing a section of your path…"

"Such as this lake?" Lin Ming quietly asked. He could feel that this old youth's words contained some of the highest truths. But, he wasn't able to immediately comprehend them all.

The so-called ordinary things, just what were they?

The youth gently smiled, not directly replying, “Your road might be called too smooth. In the past you might have experienced some setbacks, but those are far from enough. You are invincible amongst your peers. In battle you sing nothing but victory and have defeated countless rivals. It could even be said that you have never experienced true defeat. But, that might become your limitation, making it impossibly difficult for you to step onto the peak of martial arts!”

The youth’s words were like a bolt of lightning that lashed through Lin Ming’s mind.

Never experienced true defeat?

In Green Mulberry City, he had lost in emotions to Zhu Yan and had lost Lan Yunyue.

At Divine Phoenix Island he was forced to flee by Xuan Wuji and become a fugitive at the Holy Demon Continent.

Afterwards, when he visited the four Divine Kingdoms he had been plotted against by Yang Yun and nearly had his body wrested away by the Ancient Devil.

And when he reached the Divine Realm, he had fought with Tian Mingzi twice, knocking on death’s door both times.

And from the youth’s words, these weren’t true defeats, but only minor setbacks.

“For one whose road of martial arts is too smooth, for one who isn’t forced to take detours, for one who sings nothing but hymns of victory, it is instead easy to fall into a bottleneck, making one forever unable to step onto the peak of martial arts.”

Lin Ming realized what this youth was saying and didn’t continue trying to find out who he was.

He knew that if this other person intended to reveal his status, he would naturally know.

And at this time, the youth had already stood up.

He lifted the fishing pole. The ring on his thumb emitted a phantasmal green light. As he looked at Lin Ming, a thoughtful and intriguing light shined in his eyes.

Lin Ming and the youth looked at each other. This other person's dirty eyes left a profound impression upon him.

"Were you especially waiting for me here?"

Lin Ming's thoughts chilled. To come face to face with someone of unknown origins whose strength far surpassed his own, he naturally felt uneasy about it.

But the youth only gently smiled and disappeared without another word.

He stepped onto the lake and vanished into the fog.

Lin Ming took a deep breath. This mysterious old youth filled him with a deep sense of dread and apprehension.

"Brother Lin, that person is… terrifying…"

After the old youth left, Lin Ming heard a timid voice echo in his mind; it was Ruby.

"What did you see?" Lin Ming asked. Perhaps Ruby had seen things he could not.

"I don't know… I didn't even dare to look at him. I hid away and was too scared to breathe, because he might have discovered me…"

Ruby said, trying to gather her scattered wits.

"Mm… I understand. Don't show up so frequently in the future…"

Ruby's words left Lin Ming with some faint guesses.

He quickly asked a trial challenger in the Akashic Dream Battlefield and confirmed when the Akashic Dream Battlefield would be opening once more. He also discovered he had been here in seclusion for a full 16 years.

In other words, adding in the time he was on the shrine platform grasping the principles as well as the three years he spent in the Akashic Dream Battlefield, he had been at the Akashic Dream Universe for 32 years already.

To Lin Ming and other martial artists that lived long lives, 32 years was only a brief flicker of time. But, this was actually almost half the time until the great calamity of humanity would descend.

War could erupt at any moment.

Lin Ming left the Akashic Dream Battlefield and re-entered the Fallen God Mountain Range. This was the meeting area he had arranged with Sheng Mei. As long as he returned here, Sheng Mei would obtain news of it.

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's meeting was so that he could return the golden pages to her.

"You saw him?"

Sheng Mei arrived in the deep of night, appearing right behind Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's eyebrows arched up. He turned to look at her.

At this time, Sheng Mei was wearing long robes of deep dark red, her eyes seeming to contain shattered stars. Against the backdrop of the night, she was like a umbral goddess, exuding a mystical and noble air.

The night wind gently blew. Sheng Mei's cloak fluttered about her. The atmosphere was chilling. It was hard for Lin Ming to tell what she was thinking from her expression.

"Him? That mysterious youth?"

Sheng Mei's question confirmed Lin Ming's guess. But, this confirmation sent a chill crawling up his spine.

Sheng Mei's silence was the same as nodding her head.

“I saw him…” Lin Ming took a deep breath. He looked at Sheng Mei, his complexion having changed. “That old youth… is the Soul Emperor?”

Chapter 1859 – Sheng Mei's Sigh

Chapter 1859 – Sheng Mei's Sigh

…

…

…

Sheng Mei's question implied that she knew who the mysterious youth was. But someone that Sheng Mei knew who was so incredibly powerful that Lin Ming couldn't understand him at all, and who also made him feel fear and apprehension, Lin Ming couldn't think of anyone else besides the Soul Emperor.

"Yes."

Sheng Mei slowly nodded. She wasn't surprised that Lin Ming could guess the identity of that youth.

The Soul Emperor was the one who held ultimate control of the spiritas and the seven Heavens of the spiritas. Although the spiritas had many True Divinities, these True Divinities took the Soul Emperor as their ruler.

Towards this immeasurably deep and mysterious character, Lin Ming was filled with dread.

"If he didn't discover Ruby, he shouldn't have discovered the Magic Cube…"

Lin Ming felt his back drenched in a cold sweat. When he met the mysterious youth, Lin Ming had tried his best to restrain his every thought and emotion. Even so, he felt as if he had been completely seen through.

Luckily, the Magic Cube was originally a supreme divine tool of the universe and Ruby was also an extremely mysterious character who could even see through the Laws left behind by the creator of the Holy Scripture.

These were two existences that surpassed the imagination of others. If they hid their aura as best they could, it was normal if even a True Divinity couldn't discover them.

Moreover, according to what Lin Ming learned before, the Soul Emperor should never have seen the Magic Cube before.

"The Soul Emperor… why is he here to especially see me?"

Lin Ming thought, awed. Without a doubt, the Soul Emperor had been deliberately waiting for him on the banks of that dead lake!

The Soul Emperor had said that Lin Ming's road was too smooth and not conducive to him reaching the true peak of martial arts. These words had left a deep impression in Lin Ming's mind, but he didn't believe that the Soul Emperor had been there just to leave behind these words and help guide his cultivation.

As Lin Ming spoke, his eyes blazed and he stared at Sheng Mei. He waited for her response; this was something that concerned his life!

The Soul Emperor was far too powerful. Although humanity had no conflicts of interest with the spiritas right now, and could even be called loosely connected part-allies, Lin Ming was still alarmed by being noticed by this figure who possessed unimaginable strength and could control his life or death at any moment.

Sheng Mei sighed, not replying.

Lin Ming continued to stare at Sheng Mei. "Why are you sighing?"

"I'm sighing over your destiny…"

Sheng Mei quietly said.

Lin Ming grew increasingly cold. “Why are you sighing for my destiny?”

Sheng Mei shook her head, not saying anything.

Lin Ming also fell silent.

After the two remained quiet for a quarter hour, Sheng Mei suddenly looked at Lin Ming, her eyes glistening like stars.

“Lin Ming, let me ask you one more time. Are you willing to abandon humanity, abandon everything, and follow me in reaching the peak of martial arts, probing the limits of the road of martial arts, establishing a vast world that lies separate from the 33 Heavens and becoming the rulers of that world?

“You and I can even become like the Asura Road Master and Holy Scripture master from 10 billion years ago. We can cultivate the Law of Eternal Life and live forever in this world.”

Sheng Mei’s words were filled with a dark temptation. Moreover, as she spoke, Lin Ming could feel an invisible force field covering the both of them, isolating out all sounds.

He didn’t know why, but the look that Sheng Mei cast his way caused his heart to race.

In that moment, he intuitively felt that Sheng Mei’s eyes were filled with sincerity and hope, causing one to be unable to refuse her…

In Lin Ming’s impression, Sheng Mei was a strong woman filled with ambition and calculating plans. Through the time he had been in contact with Sheng Mei, on the surface it looked as if they got alone happily and when they cooperated it even seemed as if their thoughts were in sync.

But in the depths of his heart, Lin Ming had always been wary of Sheng Mei. If Lin Ming held 120% trust towards Xiao Moxian, Qin Xingxuan, and Mu Qianyu, then towards Sheng Mei he might not even have 20% trust.

But this time, for some unknown reason, Lin Ming thought that Sheng Mei's words were true, words that came from her heart. Lin Ming wanted to refuse her, but he couldn't seem to summon the words even though they lay near his lips.

This was because he could faintly feel that Sheng Mei had summoned a great determination to say what she said, and this might be the last time she asked. And that if he were to refuse her now, he would be refusing something important.

"The Soul Emperor… how can he allow my existence?"

Lin Ming slowly asked beneath Sheng Mei's sound-blocking enchantment.

Without a doubt, the Soul Emperor was also someone who held vast ambitions. If the Soul Emperor still had a long time left to live, how could he allow a competitor from a different race to grow?

Even if the Soul Emperor didn't have much lifespan remaining, he still needed to choose a descendant, and he absolutely wouldn't choose a human to inherit his legacy.

"Me and the Soul Emperor are different from what you imagine. I am only asking you – will you agree?"

Sheng Mei's words were ambiguous. She didn't explain anything to Lin Ming, only continuing to look at him with sincere hope in her eyes.

In that moment it seemed as if she wasn't the Soul Empress Sheng Mei that dominated the spiritas and looked down at the world, but a delicate woman who aroused one's deepest sympathies.

"I don't understand…"

Lin Ming quietly said. Sheng Mei's actions today left him startled.

Sheng Mei shook her head. “I only want to ask you this and know your answer. If you agree then I will explain the doubts you have in your heart, but if you refuse, I’m afraid that in the future, perhaps…”

Sheng Mei didn’t continue speaking. Her last words left Lin Ming feeling something strange in the pit of her stomach, as if saying them would hurt her.

Lin Ming knew that if he agreed to Sheng Mei’s conditions, it was possible that she would teach him the nearly complete Holy Scripture!

To Lin Ming, this was an unimaginable advantage!

“You can’t wait?”

Lin Ming already took a step back. The so-called ‘wait’ was to wait until he grew into an extreme Empyrean that neared a True Divinity, to wait for him to possess enough strength to contend with the saints’ Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and even turn the tide of the war.

At that time, once humanity was safe then he would have more choices he could make. He could wholeheartedly chase the peak of martial arts.

However… Sheng Mei shook her head.

“No.”

She refused without brooking any compromise, leaving Lin Ming stunned.

“Why?”

“I don’t have time.”

A nervous look flashed in Sheng Mei’s eyes.

Didn’t have time?

Lin Ming took a deep breath, trying to compose his racing heart. At that moment, in his mind, images of his parents, Xiao Moxian, Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, Lin Xiaoge, Empyrean Divine Dream, Empyrean Vast Universe, and even Empyrean Primordius who left him his legacy, flashed like a panorama. There was the Black Dragon of the Eternal Demon Abyss and the countless individuals of humanity who had crossed paths with him, aiding him, supporting him…

These were things he could not discard.

A human was never an independent existence. They needed human society, and also to be recognized by others.

Lin Ming couldn't allow himself to become independent, desolately climbing towards the peak of martial arts all by himself.

To withstand an immortal life of loneliness.

That was an unimaginably despairing fate.

Eventually… he grit his teeth and shook his head.

"I refuse!"

Hearing Lin Ming's deep voice, a look of disappointment crossed Sheng Mei's face. She looked at Lin Ming and slowly closed her eyes. Beneath the starlight, her long lashes seemed to shiver.

The truth was she had already expected Lin Ming's answer. Otherwise he wouldn't be Lin Ming at all.

With a sigh, Sheng Mei turned around, looking at the boundless starry skies.

Her outstanding figure was outlined with her dark red dress. As it fluttered in the wind, she exuded an infinitely beguiling charm.

She was like a goddess of the heavens and earth, controlling creation, perfect and immovable. But at that moment, within her star-bright eyes, she also revealed endless loss.

Why did she ask again?

Perhaps… she just needed a reason to give up…

“Lin Ming… you are a moth drawn to the flame. Although you know there is a raging fire in front of you, you still desperately plunge into the roaring flames…

“Me, I am also a moth…”

Sheng Mei’s voice was like flowing starlight that cut through the night sky.

Lin Ming was silent. Indeed, he was a moth.

The saints were strong to an incomprehensible point. Perhaps, no matter how hard he tried, even if he exhausted the totality of his potential and burned his life, he still might not be able to stop the invasion of the saints.

But Sheng Mei… what were the flames she faced?

“Your words, sound familiar…”

Lin Ming sighed. He remembered when he was 15 years old and had just stepped onto the road of martial arts, he had lacked raw medicines to help cleanse and heal his body. And for a mortal, if they lacked the materials and medicines to nourish their body, they might overdraw themselves and be disabled for the rest of their life.

In the past he had gathered money to purchase these medicines. He had drawn up inscription symbols and went to various city squares, auction houses, and inscription association stores, but because he wasn’t famous, he had received nothing but a cold shoulder.

As a result, the scene of his failure had been witnessed by his first love, Lan Yunyue.

At that time, the advice Lan Yunyue gave him was similar to Sheng Mei's…

"I remember… that when I was a mortal, an old friend of mine warned me not to be stubborn and practice martial arts. She didn't want me to spend the rest of my days disabled on a bed. But, my answer was…

"The path of the martial artist is like a flame. Practicing the martial arts will only cause pain. The dangers are countless and the road is filled with obstacles. Everyone who walks down it will eventually turn to ash, but the true martial artist will be reborn from these ashes. Even if I am only a small and weak moth, I will walk into the flames without hesitation. I will fight my destiny for a one in a million chance that I will experience my own samsara and be reborn as a flaming phoenix. And even now, I am no longer a moth…"

As Lin Ming spoke these words, he didn't know what he felt in his heart.

He knew that he was discarding an easy road to take, and choosing to walk down one filled with thorns and obstacles, and he didn't even know whether or not he could reach the end of this road.

And when he chose to take this road, he seemed to have hurt Sheng Mei. Even so, Lin Ming didn't know what difficulties Sheng Mei had that she couldn't bring up…

"Forget the words I've said tonight."

Sheng Mei suddenly calmed down. She turned around, the disappointment in her eyes already completely vanished, replaced with cold indifference.

It was as if what Lin Ming had seen and heard was just an illusion. As if that pitiful Sheng Mei had never existed at all.

She was the same as she had always been, the Empress of the spiritas, dominating the world, looking down upon all others!

"Lin Ming, a worm that lives amongst the dead leaves and fallen branches will never understand the beauty and greatness of this world. You have far too many chains shackling you down. The road of martial arts is to struggle for life with the heavens, and to climb to the peak of martial arts is to crush the heavens beneath your feet. Since ancient times, those that were willing to discard all others naturally possessed extreme talents of their own, and yet they were still defeated, much less someone like you who has chosen to place such a great weight upon yourself and shoulder the destiny of your race. Don't you know the story of Empyrean Divine Seal from 3.6 billion years ago? He was a truly peerless character, a True Dragon of the world, but he also chose to shoulder the destiny of humanity and in the end he died in battle. What a pity, what a loss!"

Sheng Mei softly sighed. Lin Ming shook his head. "I am not Empyrean Divine Seal. My road is one I will walk down myself. And the choices I make, I will not regret them in the future!"

Chapter 1860 – A Hundred Million Years

Chapter 1860 – A Hundred Million Years

…

…

…

Lin Ming's last words were calm but steadfast.

Beneath the shimmering moonlight, Sheng Mei and Lin Ming looked at each other, neither speaking for a long time.

Lin Ming didn't know just what Sheng Mei was thinking.

He even faintly felt that if he were to part ways with Sheng Mei today, if they were to meet again in the future their relationship would no longer be the same.

"Your golden pages."

Lin Ming waved his hand and four golden pages flew towards Sheng Mei.

Sheng Mei received the golden pages and turned to leave. But at this time, Lin Ming called out to her, "Wait one moment!"

Sheng Mei stopped. With her back to Lin Ming, her black hair fluttered in the night wind. Bathed in starlight, her entire body sparkled with a gentle brilliance.

"I have a question… you can choose not to answer." Lin Ming said after a moment of hesitation.

"Speak…" Sheng Mei faintly said. She knew that even if Lin Ming called out to her, he wouldn't have changed his mind.

"I want to ask… when you asked me to leave with you, was it to follow you, or follow the spiritas?"

Lin Ming always felt something was off, as if Sheng Mei had something she couldn't say. Every time she sent a sound transmission she also isolated herself from the outside so that no one could eavesdrop. Even amongst the spiritas she seemed to be wary of something. This made Lin Ming feel that the situation was a bit unusual.

Since she didn't want the spiritas to eavesdrop on her, then that meant the words she spoke must have vaguely involved some secret.

Sheng Mei indifferently said, "You have already refused, so what meaning is there in asking another question? Following me or following the spiritas, is there a difference?"

"Yes, I want to know."

Lin Ming's reply was firm. Sheng Mei suddenly turned around, her deep and silent gaze focused on Lin Ming, her pupils shining like black gems. As the two pairs of eyes met, the decisiveness in Lin Ming's eyes caused Sheng Mei's thoughts to tremble for the briefest moment.

As if in that moment, her originally frozen heart began to slowly warm, the layers of ice she formed melting away with Lin Ming's words.

"Following me…" Sheng Mei's sound transmission echoed in Lin Ming's ears. "To go somewhere with me, to not return to the Divine Realm, to not return to the Soul World, to go somewhere for a hundred million years, far away from the storm of the great calamity. To discard everything else, that is a silly proposal… isn't it? The truth is that when I asked you I already knew it was impossible…"

Sheng Mei shook her head. Even though she knew it was an impossible proposition she still asked Lin Ming to rid herself of the last wild hopes in her heart.

If she didn't give it her all and strive for everything she wanted, then there would always be regrets.

What Sheng Mei wanted was not Lin Ming's answer. What she wanted was only… to not leave behind any regrets.

"A hundred million years!?"

Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air.

Living for all this time, he was still only a mere 150 years old. A hundred million years was an unimaginable span of time. Even most Empyreans only lived for a hundred million years!

And if Sheng Mei proposed that they leave together for a hundred million years, that was in truth acknowledging that both she and Lin Ming would be able to break into True Divinity. And in fact, there was no need to doubt the veracity of this.

"Why?"

Lin Ming was confused. Was this 'place' somewhere in the 33 Heavens? Or was it separate from the 33 Heavens? In order for a genius to grow, they needed an ever broader stage. He didn't believe that staying in one fixed place for a hundred million years was conducive to increasing one's cultivation.

So why had Sheng Mei made this choice?

"There is no need for you to know." Sheng Mei said, without any intention of explaining herself further. "Two of these golden pages originally belong to you, but I fear you cannot bring them away yourself otherwise you will be drawing a fatal disaster upon yourself. Right now you are far too weak to protect them. This is your compensation."

Sheng Mei waved her arm and a golden jade slip flew into Lin Ming's hand.

As Lin Ming looked over this jade slip, his heart shook.

This jade slip was a compilation of the 10 golden pages!

Of course, this was only an imitation, but even an imitation was extremely precious, because in order to create an imitation of the golden pages one needed to be at least a True Divinity level character to reproduce 10-20% of the original's charm. Moreover, a massive amount of time and energy would be required.

It was impossible for an Empyrean to copy them.

For Lin Ming alone, the value of this jade slip surpassed the two golden pages. This was because Lin Ming had already looked through the golden pages and recorded their contents.

And since Lin Ming gave the golden pages to Sheng Mei, that was the same as shaking himself off from the focus of the large influences. At the very least he wouldn't be instantly chased down and hunted.

In this sort of situation, Lin Ming didn't have any more life or death blood enemies in the Soul World. Humanity wasn't hostile with the spiritas to begin with, and in the Akashic Dream Battlefield, Lin Ming had only slapped the faces of some large influences; it wasn't an irreconcilable difference. And, with everyone knowing about the connection between him and Sheng Mei yet not fully knowing how they were related, no one would risk offending Sheng Mei just to kill off Lin Ming.

In just this point, Sheng Mei had helped Lin Ming a great deal.

"Thank you." Lin Ming said from his heart. Although the reference value was lower than the original golden pages, it was still the complete book.

It was only a pity that Lin Ming didn't have the black book.

“There is no need to thank me. I received your two original golden pages and they are far more valuable than this imitation jade slip. This is simply a transaction, and since it is a fair trade there is no need for you to owe me anything.”

Sheng Mei coldly said. As Lin Ming listened to her he could hear a resolute tone in it, making him feel inexplicably dispirited.

If it was said that there was a hint of friendship between him and Sheng Mei, then that friendship could be said to have been severed or even frozen away by Sheng Mei.

“You and I will meet again in the future. But, the only change is that we will be enemies. I will not hold back, but unfortunately… you are too weak, and I cannot bear to destroy you…

“Let me tell you something else. I believe you only have 20-30 years before the saints mount their full invasion against humanity. You have no capabilities of stopping them. But since you have stubbornly chosen to walk down this road filled with thorns, you should continue to stubbornly press on.”

20-30 years?

Lin Ming’s thoughts darkened. Perhaps it might be as Sheng Mei said and there wouldn’t be anything he could do, but in any case he wouldn’t run. No matter how brutal or disastrous the great calamity was, humanity would still have those that lit the incense for them in the future…

“You said that before the saints invaded humanity, they had to wage war in the Primeval Realm Ruins. So, are you saying that in another 20-30 years, the ancient races within the Primeval Realm Ruins will be thoroughly suppressed by the saints?”

“Yes. The various ancient races are descendants of the races that existed 10 billion years ago. Amongst them, the most powerful one is the primal god race. They harbor the decree of the gods and even the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign must respect them!”

“What!? Primal god race!?”

Lin Ming was bewildered!

The primal god race was the race that the goddess of the ancient grave in the Eternal Demon Abyss – Heavenly Empress Xuanqing, came from. When Empyrean Primordius established the Samsara Road in the past, a part of the reason he did so was to prop up and help the primal god race.

But afterwards, he had been defeated.

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that the primal god race was the most perfect race molded by the hands of heaven. Their souls, mortal bodies, and inner worlds were all formidable and they were able to triple cultivate essence, energy, and soul. They were strong as soon as they were born and possessed talent that defied the heavens. Moreover, their lifespans were ten times longer than those of humans.

This was a race that even the heavens envied. They were powerful to a ridiculous extreme, but their fertility rate was despairingly low.

No matter how powerful a race was, if they couldn't procreate and expand then they would only slowly decline. Many people believed that the primal god race was so powerful that the Heavenly Dao decided to no longer abide their existence, thus starting their trend towards annihilation.

Lin Ming wouldn't forget the benevolence of the primal god race.

In the past within the Sky Spill Continent, because of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing, there was the Forsaken God Clan that existed there which could trace their roots back to the primal god race. Of course, the bloodlines of the Forsaken God Clan had become unbelievably thin, and in truth they were closer to humans. When Lin Ming was forced into a dead end by the Asura Divine Kingdom, it was the Forsaken God Clan that had taken him in under the shelter of Shibai. Lin Ming was then able to launch his counterattack against the Asura Divine Kingdom and shock the entire continent in a great battle after reaching Life Destruction.

Afterwards, when Lin Ming was chased down by Tian Mingzi it was again Heavenly Empress Xuanqing who had saved him. In fact, it was Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's body that now housed Mo Eversnow's soul.

How could he forget all of the kindness they had shown him? Now that he heard Sheng Mei say that the primal god race would soon be exterminated by the saints, it was impossible for him to remain calm.

Yet, he was too weak to stop that from occurring.

"I… how can I go to the Primeval Realm Ruins?"

Lin Ming asked through grit teeth.

Sheng Mei looked at Lin Ming and coldly laughed. "Why do you want to go? Even though you would be walking towards your own doom you still want to help bury the primal god race?"

Sheng Mei mocked. Lin Ming clenched his fists so hard that he drew blood from his palms. He knew that everything Sheng Mei said was the truth!

Yet again, Lin Ming felt sorrow over how weak he was!

He had lived for 150 years, singing nothing but victory all this way, so how could he feel so powerless?

Zhu Yan, Xuan Wuji, Yang Yun, Tian Mingzi, all of these incomparably powerful enemies had far surpassed his boundary in the past, and yet he had defeated them one at a time. But the saints, they were an entire race!

How much time would he need before he could surpass them?

"Does the primal god race possess True Divinities?" Lin Ming took a deep breath, returning his mood to normal. He knew he needed to remain calm.

He feared he wasn't able to help the primal god race, but he couldn't sit back and watch them be destroyed. He needed to understand the specifics of the situation and analyze them for a potential breakthrough.

Perhaps there was the thinnest thread of hope.

"True Divinity? If the primal god race had a True Divinity why would their people face extermination?" Sheng Mei sighed. "The primal god race are the favored children of the world. If a True Divinity is born amongst their ranks, that True Divinity will be far more powerful than an ordinary True Divinity. In addition, because they possess the decree of the gods, even the saints don't dare to recklessly go against them. Otherwise, even if the primal god race perished it is highly possible that they would drag down two saint True Divinities with them. There are no True Divinities who are willing to be sacrificial victims in a war between two races.

"Thus, the saints decided to act only when a hundred million years passed after the last True Divinity of the primal god race died! Within the 33 Heavens, the primal god race was once the most magnificent, most glorious, largest, brightest race of the entire martial arts civilization, also possessing the deepest background. Even if the current saints and spiritas were to be added together now, they likely wouldn't even compare to half of what the primal god race was at their pinnacle. 10 billion years ago, the reason so many outstanding young elites and peerless sovereigns appeared was because the primal god race was far too talented! But what a pity, this vast and ancient race couldn't escape the samsara of life and death in the end. The curse of the Heavenly Dao has now brought them to the brink of destruction..."

Chapter 1861 – Struggle

Chapter 1861 – Struggle

…

…

…

Sheng Mei sighed deep with emotion, as if she were also sighing over her own destiny.

Lin Ming didn’t know what Sheng Mei had to face that she wanted to flee it for a hundred million years, but what he knew was that Sheng Mei was someone with great ambitions.

Just like she had said –

A worm that lives amongst the dead leaves and fallen branches will never understand the beauty and greatness of this world!

And a worm was a creature that wouldn’t live past the winter. Because of its short life, it didn’t know the dangers of a world filled with ice and snow.

But what about martial artists? Wasn’t it the same?

10 billion years ago, those supreme elders might have seemed heaven-shaking and world-breaking, but were they able to see the world 10 billion years later? The current Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was also all-powerful, but would he be able to see the future of 10 billion years from now?

Sheng Mei was unwilling to live for a mere several hundred million years. She wanted to live longer than that, to witness everything the universe had to offer!

“Although the primal god race didn’t have any True Divinities they were still able to contend with the saints for so long. Is it by virtue of the so-called ‘decree of the gods’?”

Lin Ming found it difficult to believe that a single decree could threaten the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

“The so-called ‘decree of the gods’, do you even know what they are? Do you know how deep their origins are? They are items left behind by the many peerless god sovereigns of the ancient past. It is even said that within these decrees of the gods, there are those left behind by the Asura Road Master. Because of this, there is a viewpoint that exists which believes the Asura Road Master came from the primal god race!”

“What!?”

Lin Ming was dumbfounded. The Asura Road Master was from the primal god race?

“What else do you think is possible? He is a character that existed 10 billion years ago. 10 billion years ago, humans, saints, and spiritas, the three great peak races of the current era had yet to rise. There were only the numerous ancient races that aren’t worthy of mention now. It's impossible that any of these small races possessed the destiny or background to give birth to unrivalled existences like the Asura Road Master or the Holy Scripture creator. The spiritas may have declared to the world that the creator of the Holy Scripture is the first ancestor of the spiritas, but the reality is that this is only a justification for them to thoroughly inherit the Akashic Dream Universe.”

Sheng Mei ruthlessly mocked. Her words caused Lin Ming’s thoughts to stir, as if she were contemptuously scoffing at the actions taken by the high level figures of the spiritas.

“So that’s how it is…”

Lin Ming recalled the Asura Road Master triple cultivated essence, energy, and divine. He had 33 avatars and studied the 33 Heavenly Daos each to the boundary of a True Divinity.

This was an unimaginable achievement! For the three races of humans, saints, and spiritas, this was especially true.

But the primal god race was different. Their souls, bodies, and inner worlds were all incredibly potent, and they were strong by birth alone, possessing the talent to cultivate essence, energy, and divine.

This point just happened to agree with the Asura Road Master's road of cultivation!

The truth was that the Asura Road Maser existed 10 billion years ago. Through such a long period of time, the martial arts civilization of the universe had suffered numerous calamities and history had been lost to the sands of time, everything becoming vague and unknown.

It was hard for martial artists of the modern era to trace back what race the Asura Road Master originated from. But without a doubt, the primal god race was the likeliest choice.

Similarly, the creator of the Holy Scripture probably had a terrifying background.

Sheng Mei seemed to have seen through Lin Ming's thoughts. She sighed and said, "The great emperors and sages of the ancient past almost all possessed inborn divine bodies and variation bloodlines. Lin Ming, if you wish to become a god and cast your own emperor's road, leaving behind an eternal legend, then the premise of all of that is… you can become a god…"

Sheng Mei's voice was calm but Lin Ming knew that the 'become a god' she referred to was not as simple as reaching the True Divinity realm, but was to reach the extreme True Divinity realm or even surpass it!

To surpass True Divinity, wasn't that easier said than done? Even if humanity were at peace and he possessed the entire legacy and resources of his race, he still might not be able to accomplish that!

Much less now, when humanity was experiencing a great calamity soon. Lin Ming would lose his backing and struggle in the endless surging waves. If he were just a little bit careless, his body and soul would be destroyed…

"Empress, I have a question… how many Heavens do the saints control?"

Lin Ming asked. He wanted a rough approximation of the saints' strength; that would be greatly helpful to him.

"Seven, the same as my spiritas, although their overall strength is slightly inferior!" Sheng Mei said with certainty. In a sense, the Akashic Dream Universe, to a race, was far more useful than the Primeval Realm Ruins. After all, the army-style training of the Akashic Dream Battlefield was something that the Primeval Realm Ruins didn't have.

"Seven… then, if the spiritas and saints each possess seven Heavens, the numerous ancient races possess one, and the Divine Realm is also one, then I only know of 16 Heavens… there are also the universes of 17 Heavens remaining. Are there other races?"

Lin Ming asked, feeling a bit depressed. In the past, humanity stood on par with the saints and spiritas, but now they only possessed a single Heaven.

Of course, there was still a large number of humans. Many of them were distributed across the various territories of the saints and spiritas, and could be called slaves.

Now humanity, which had once been one of the three great peak races, only had the advantage of numbers left for them.

Sheng Mei shook her head, "There aren't that many races. Of the 33 Heavens, many of them are gaping deathtraps or wildernesses. Some of them have chaotic Laws, some of them have thin origin energy, and some of them are even filled with powerful vicious beasts – all of these problems are the ongoing consequences left behind by the great wars of the hundred races from ancient times. But… the truth is that this isn't a problem. Chaotic Laws can be sorted and straightened out, thin origin energy can be nourished and revived, and vicious beasts can be slain, however… the key factor is that for these universes, the God Lamenting

Wall that separates the Heavens hasn’t weakened much, even during the last cycle of samsara 3.6 billion years ago. Because of this, it is difficult for anyone besides a True Divinity to enter the other Heavens. Thus, whether it is the saints or spiritas, it is difficult for any influence to expand into them and this is the reason that they are currently isolated. However, in the future there will definitely be races that rely on their background to slowly expand throughout the entire 33 Heavens!”

“I understand...”

Lin Ming took a deep breath. It was clear that the martial arts civilization was at its most glorious 10 billion years ago. At that time, it was likely that all 33 Heavens were fully developed.

But afterwards, due to certain reasons, many ancient races declined and even went extinct. The martial arts civilization devolved into its early stages and had to be redeveloped from the start. Now, the masters of the current era were far inferior in quality and quantity to those of 10 billion years ago.

Perhaps as time passed, the spiritas would really be able to restore the martial arts civilization to the golden age of 10 billion years ago. But perhaps after that, they might also wither away.

To rise, to fade, and then to begin the cycle once more, that seemed to be a kind of Heavenly Dao rule.

Facing such a great rule, even peerless characters like the Asura Road Master and the creator of the Holy Scripture were unable to prevent it.

“How do I go to the universe where the primal god race is?” Lim Ming asked Sheng Mei. Since the spiritas were able to wage war with the saints and the saints were able to wage war with the ancient races, that meant the spiritas must possess a method to reach the ancient races.

“You really wish to go?” Sheng Mei looked at Lin Ming, her eyebrows pressing together. She originally wanted to tell Lin Ming that the time of humanity was nearing its end, but she never imagined he would want to go to the primal god race.

“Yes!”

Lin Ming didn’t aimlessly want to go to the primal god race. The primal god race might be related to the Asura Road Master, and based on this point alone he had to go take a look, and at least see what the decree of the gods that the Asura Road Master left behind were.

Sheng Mei stared at Lin Ming. She knew that once Lin Ming made a decision it was nearly impossible to change his mind. This was just the sort of person he was.

She shook her head, “I have no idea if you’re brave or a fool. If there is a day when you really must face doom, then it is always better to die under my hands than to die to the saints…”

As Sheng Mei spoke, she flew upwards. Her graceful form was covered in endless moonlight, as if she were stepping on the wind as she floated to the skies.

Like this, she left, not even turning her head once as she brought her previous confusion and her new decisiveness away with her.

Lin Ming watched Sheng Mei disappear into the horizon. He felt a sense of sudden melancholy that he couldn’t explain…

The next time they met, what would the situation be like?

The vicissitudes of life were ever-changing, being flipped and turned in the surging waves. In this great world, no one was able to do as they liked.

Lin Ming was a young eagle that had just learned to fly. Facing the upcoming storm, he was unable to reach the lofty skies. However, Sheng Mei was powerful and had completed her seventh revolution of reincarnation. Once she stepped into the Empyrean realm once more, her true combat strength might reach the boundaries of a True Divinity!

Even so, in her life she was burdened by a tremendous weight, one that left her lonely and lost.

As Sheng Mei had said, whether it was him or her, they were both moths flying towards the fire. Even though they both clearly knew there was a raging flame in front of them, they still desperately rushed into it.

Beneath the arrangement of fate, even if the initial moments were happy, the results might surpass all imagination. Even friends could turn into foes, opposing each other to life and death.

However, even knowing this, they would still follow the paths they had chosen and walk down their roads. This was because… they both held fast to their hearts and possessed their own beliefs!

If only life stayed like the first time we met. Suddenly, looking back through the rivers of time, nothing fills the eyes but mist.

I must struggle in the dust and chaos. Even if I am only a small wave, I will still bravely move forwards…

Chapter 1862 – Primeval Universe

Chapter 1862 – Primeval Universe

…

…

…

“Brother Lin, are you leaving?” A shy voice sounded out. It was Ruby.

“Mm… I must leave. If I have the chance to return then I will definitely help you solve the riddle of your life.” Sheng Mei had long since left the vast forest. Lin Ming had been standing beneath the great starry skies for several hours.

He didn’t want to bring Ruby away. She was an energy body formed from pure soul force and if she left the Akashic Dream Universe she wouldn’t have a physical body. Although she would still exist, it would feel like a bird losing its wings. If she went to the catastrophic universe where the hundred ancient races dwelled, she might not be able to play a major role and would easily fall into danger.

Plus, with the uncertainty of Lin Ming’s own continued existence lying on the edge, he decided to leave by himself.

“Mm… then I… will wait for you to return.”

Ruby clenched her small fists and vigorously nodded. Towards Lin Ming, she felt a natural affinity. This was because of the Magic Cube and the Eternal Soul…

Over the years, Lin Ming’s soul had been nourished by the Magic Cube and had become extremely pure. It now possessed a trace of never-changing attributes.

This was also another reason why Lin Ming was special in Sheng Mei's eyes.

Lin Ming deeply looked at Ruby. Then, he floated upwards and decisively turned away, welcoming the endless night winds as he quickly flew.

………

This was a desolate and bleak universe.

In this universe, the heaven and earth origin energy was particularly thin, only 60-70% that of the Divine Realm's. But this universe was actually flooded with a boundless primal aura, as if it had existed for a trillion years.

There weren't many stars in this universe. As for those that still hung in the skies, they seemed gloomy and dark, as if they were on the verge of being extinguished.

Lin Ming calmly sent out his divine sense and discovered that in the starry skies, there were many hidden black holes. Black holes were formed from the death of stars and were one of the most terrifying types of celestial bodies to exist in the universe. They were condensed from the overwhelming might of the Heavenly Dao Laws and even an Empyrean wouldn't be able to come out if they entered.

"This universe seems to be fading…"

Lin Ming stood before the porthole of a spirit ship. He sighed. In the boundless universe, there was life as well as death. When a universe had existed for a long time, many stars would begin to die out one after another, becoming black holes. This was one of the signs of a universe moving towards entropy.

This process took an incomparably long time, perhaps even a hundred billion years.

"I never thought that the universe of the primal god race and other ancient races would be like this…"

Although Sheng Mei was almost hostile with Lin Ming, she had still arranged for people from the Soul Rapture Holy Lands to help Lin Ming enter the universe that the saints ruled over and subsequently enter this Primeval Universe.

This was a long journey. They had to pass through several God Lamenting Walls and the process lasted for over a year.

Wishing to make a trip that crossed several universes wasn't easy at all. One had to use great void shifts countless times, consuming endless amounts of energy stones like nine sun jades. Even a Great World King would lose all their wealth in this attempt.

And at this time, Lin Ming discovered that in the starry space there was a giant floating temple.

This temple shimmered all over, dazzling to the eyes.

From this temple, Lin Ming could feel a familiar aura. That was astral essence, an energy as deep and vibrant as the sea!

The saints!

"Halt, identify yourself!"

Thousands of miles away from Lin Ming, a group of martial artists rapidly flew towards him, blocking his way.

These saint martial artists wore golden combat armor and held thick halberds and lances in their hands. They surrounded Lin Ming's spirit ship.

"Come out!"

The leading saint martial artist shouted, his voice causing space to shake.

Lin Ming calmly flew out from the spirit ship. He had already used the Bodily Rebirth Technique to change his appearance and had even concealed his status as a human. Even an Empyrean wouldn't be able to see through Lin Ming.

"Mm? Someone of our race. What influence are you from?" This aggressive squad of saints had a Holy Lord as their leader. It was naturally impossible for them to see through Lin Ming's disguise.

"I am just a lonely wandering martial artist. I came to the Primeval Universe in order to fight and temper myself."

In a war that involved two races, it wasn't something that could be accomplished by several influences. Rather, all martial artists within the race could freely enter as they please to sharpen their skills in battle and also obtain valuable war loot.

For instance, the attack on the primal god race was coordinated by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. It involved over 150 Empyrean influences participating in addition to countless World King and Holy Lord level influences.

With all of these influences gathered together, the temporary army they formed was incomparably massive and chaotic.

Many saint martial artists could temporarily enter the army and become members of the army. They could take this opportunity to temper themselves, just like Lin Ming had said. Thus, it wasn't sudden or a surprise for Lin Ming to appear here.

"Don't move."

The leading Holy Lord martial artist said. He took out an array disc and scanned Lin Ming, confirming his status once more. This was to prevent any spies from infiltrating their ranks.

However, it was impossible for such an ordinary array disc to penetrate through Lin Ming's Bodily Rebirth Technique.

The array disc didn't have any response. The Holy Lord sergeant nodded and tossed a token towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming took this token and glanced at it. The writing on it said – 'Sergeant Number: Holy Lord level 12,968. Subordinate under Empyrean White Heaven, First Mixed Legion."

Seeing these words, Lin Ming was shocked. In a battle between races, the scale was truly astronomical. In a legion led by an Empyrean, there were over 12,000 Holy Lords.

In the past when humanity fought with the saints, Empyrean Divine Seal had led several hundred Empyreans and over a million Holy Lords in battle. This left a deep impression on Lin Ming.

In such a dreadful war, unless one's individual strength reached that of a peak Empyrean or True Divinity, it was difficult to display much of an effect.

Lin Ming received the token and like this joined the saints' army.

The reason he joined the saints' army was mainly to uncover information. He had come to the Primeval Universe alone. In such a vast world he didn't have a map or a guide and he didn't know anything at all.

If he continued like this, he could wander around for a thousand years without finding the primal god race.

But if he joined one of the saints' legions, that was different.

Like this, Lin Ming stayed in the saints' army for several days, carrying out training exercises and combat practice.

Fighting in a legion was completely different from fighting one-on-one. In a situation with outstanding martial artists present, a short period of training could improve the overall combat strength of the team.

During this training period, Lin Ming deliberately stayed far away from the giant temple. This was because he could faintly feel a horrifying aura emitting from the temple. It was likely that this Empyrean White Sky was in command of the temple.

With Lin Ming's current level of strength he didn't want to come into any contact with an Empyrean. If he had to face an Empyrean he wouldn't be able to run, much less escape.

During training, Lin Ming was able to learn a great deal of information from the conversations between the sergeants.

The situation in the Primeval Universe was more complex than Lin Ming had first imagined.

In the Primeval Universe, there were over 70 ancient remnant races. These remnant races were the descendants of the races that had been incredibly prosperous 10 billion years ago. Even though they fell into decline, they still possessed deep backgrounds.

It wasn't just the primal god race that possessed the decree of the gods; the other races also had them.

The most powerful of them was the primal celestial race.

10 billion years ago, the primal celestial race was also swollen with pride and power, unexcelled in the world.

According to the rumors, it was said that in the past, of the 33 Heavens, the god race occupied 18 Heavens and the celestial race occupied 15 Heavens!

The two races had divided the 33 Heavens between themselves, unlike today where many universes existed in a semi-obsolete state.

During ancient times, the other races were in truth races that co-existed in the universes that the god race and celestial race had captured.

Now, since the saints wanted to annihilate the Primeval Universe, their main threats came from the god race and celestial race. If the peak Empyreans of these two races desperately burned away their own lives and also used the decrees of god left behind by the Asura Road Master, they could absolutely cause heavy losses even to a True Divinity!

These so-called heavy losses weren't as simple as injuries. At the level of an Empyrean or True Divinity, their vital essence energy reached unimaginable heights and it was difficult for even rare heavenly treasures to make up for the losses they suffered. If a True Divinity were to suffer grievous wounds that caused damage to their vital essence energy, it would likely have a tremendous influence on their remaining strength and lifespan.

But although Lin Ming learned so much information, he still didn't figure out how to find the primal god race. The primal god race had united several races together and had gone into hiding in a place called the Chaos Star Ocean.

This Chaos Star Ocean had once been the core of a titanic galaxy. But, the galaxy had withered away, and this core region was flooded with numerous space storms and black holes. If one recklessly rushed in and was sucked in by a black hole, that would mean certain death!

After understanding all of this, Lin Ming wasn't surprised at all. The races of the primeval race were able to struggle with the saints for so many years with so few numbers, so they naturally must have something they could rely on.

If these ancient remnant clans fought on equal ground with the saints, the war situation would likely be completely different.

Lin Ming patiently waited for a chance to contact the primal god race. Two months passed, and on one day, a chance appeared before Lin Ming.

A squad of the primal god race had their whereabouts scouted out by the saints. And the group who discovered them was the legion that Lin Ming was a part of.

Lin Ming was suddenly shifted to the front lines. He accompanied a crowd of saint martial artists to surround this primal god squad. As for their orders, they were to capture them alive!

“Gather up!”

Before the legion set off, a sergeant shouted out loud.

“Hurry up and don’t dawdle around. Do you think this is your hometown? If you join the army that means you must follow the mindset of the army! Those who disobey orders will be executed!”

A World King loudly roared. He came from the White Sky Holy Lands and could be called part of the true army. As for this mixed legion that had people of all various levels of strength, he loudly reprimanded them and even attacked them at times.

This was the tradition of an army, completely different from that of a sect.

In this hastily formed mission, the saints had transferred over a hundred Holy Lords. The one leading them was a red-clothed man, a direct disciple of Empyrean White Sky. He had a Great World King realm cultivation.

And behind him also followed three ordinary World Kings, amongst them the one who had just shouted. There were also other direct disciples of Empyrean White Sky, but their status and talent were inferior to that of the red-clothed man.

“Is everyone here? I am the commander of this troop, Red Leaf. Now, set off!”

The red-clothed man dispensed with all the small talk. He brought the mixed legion and soared to the skies!

Chapter 1863 – Entering the God Race

Chapter 1863 – Entering the God Race

…

…

…

Primeval Universe, Chaos Star Ocean –

Blood surged, the sounds of death and battle boiled in the air.

Beams of brilliant light shot out like eternal rainbows, colorful and heroic, piercing through the void and shaking it.

Kacha! Kacha!

In the midst of the violent fluctuations of energy that ripped through all directions, massive asteroid belts broke up and disintegrated.

This area had long been eroded through the endless years, decayed to the point of collapse. Now that this exceptionally brutal war broke out, the asteroids instantly turned to ash.

The war drums of the saints rumbled, echoing through this ancient universe like billowing thunderclouds.

Wu - ! Wu - !

Horns bellowed into the air, cracking open the starry skies. Sonic ripples spread through, inciting the morale of the saint martial artists.

Where drums and horns beat together, endless massacres broke out. Beams of divine light ripped through the battlefield.

Lin Ming mixed his way into the spirit ship of the saint martial artists. As he passed through this part of the battlefield, he saw many ancient remnant races still desperately fighting and crying out.

These ancient remnant races were mostly celestials and the followers of the celestials.

The primal god race only accounted for an extremely small portion of these martial artists.

The entire god race consisted of only several tens of millions of people. Compared to the other larger races of the 33 Heavens who consisted of unknown trillion quadrillions of people, the god race couldn't even be considered a drop in the bucket.

In fact, even 10 billion years ago, the primal god race didn't have a high population. At the very least, they couldn't compare to the raw numbers of the great races of the current era. At that time, within the universes ruled by the primal god race, the main residents were the other races that followed the primal god race. These races often had populations several hundreds of millions of times greater than the primal god race.

The primal god race was just like their name to these races. Their powerful members were the same as gods.

Gods could control the universe, but the number of gods was always far less than all other living beings.

The scenes of war were merciless and tragic. Some of the ancient race martial artists possessed three heads and six arms, some had glowing golden bodies, some exuded shining auras of power, some possessed billowing blood vitality, some had massive horns, but all of them were incredibly talented when it came to fighting.

When these powerhouses gathered together, their blood energies seethed and fused, seemingly boundless and containing endless fighting strength.

But although these ancient races were powerful, they were surrounded by enemies ten times their numbers. The saint martial artists encircled them like ants!

These saint martial artists weren’t weak either. Each one had extraordinary talents, powerful bloodlines, or formidable martial arts inheritances. As they all activated their bloodlines, their appearances became fierce and savage, and even when they died they would go down biting and kicking at the ancient races.

Although the ancient race martial artists fought bravely, two fists could not fight four hands. Their boiling blood vitality and fierce actions were soon submerged by the sea-like offensive.

Moreover, some influences of the ancient races were separated by the saint martial artists using calculating methods. They were divided and then conquered, suffering massive casualties!

“This battle is intense. Although the ancient races are using the terrain to their advantage and engaging the saints in guerilla warfare, the saint martial artists eventually find them. Once the saints find them, it's just a mass slaughter from then on. The ancient races may be strong but they are too few in number and it is difficult for them to procreate. If this continues then they won’t be able to last for much longer…” Lin Ming grimly thought, his heart heavy.

Seeing these ancient races heroically battle with the murderous saints, an inexplicable feeling of frustration and sorrow shook Lin Ming’s heart. Dozens of years from now, would this be the same scene in the Divine Realm?

Humanity was numerous, far higher in number than these ancient races. If the saints thoroughly seized control of the Divine Realm it was still impossible for them to completely eliminate all humans.

After all, besides the 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm, there were still countless other medium and small worlds and dimensions, as well as the vast lower realms which consisted of over a billion worlds. Wanting to eliminate humanity was an incomparably vast project.

But the saints didn't need to utterly eliminate humanity. As long as they destroyed the inheritance of humanity and killed off the likes of Divine Dream, Emperor Shakya, and other leading Empyreans, completely wiping away the Empyrean Heavenly Palaces, and then killing the top talents like Dragon Fang, Hang Chi, and Jun Bluemoon, that would be eliminating the hopes of humanity. From then on, humanity could be considered as ruins.

Humanity would still have members surviving into the future, but they would be like those that lived in the Soul World. They would devolve into an inferior race of slaves, ruled by others and barely able to maintain their existence.

"Did you see the war just now? That was Empyrean Gilded Heaven's legion. They apparently found a stronghold of the celestials and have organized the army to lay siege to it, and will be claiming victory any time now. Conservatively speaking, this time they will be killing hundreds of thousands of celestial martial artists and millions of their followers! This is a great military merit. Not only will we obtain a massive amount of war loot, but these military merits mean rich rewards from the upper command!"

The commanding Great World King Red Leaf roared out. His words roused the fervor of the saint martial artists. The reason this legion had joined the battle between races was in order to find lucky chances and obtain military exploits.

"Although our mission isn't to kill hundreds of thousands or millions of enemies, our opponents are not the celestials but the primal god race. If we capture them alive the rewards will be unfathomable! Everyone, raise your spirits!"

Red Leaf's words caused many martial artists to bubble over with zeal. With this, Red Leaf was extremely excited.

The scale of battle they had to undertake wasn't large, but if it went smoothly their harvests would be considerable. The bodies, souls, and energy seas of the primal god race were all valuable treasures. They could be slowly refined and turned into top treasures and pills.

The group of people marched forwards. These people all had at least a Holy Lord level cultivation. Even in a battle between two races, the strength of a Holy Lord couldn't be underestimated.

They avoided the intense parts of the battlefield as much as possible, sneaking through the darkness of the void.

"We've arrived, it's here!"

Red Leaf suddenly waved his hand and all the saint martial artists stopped in their tracks. In front of them was a dark space that was camouflaged to look like a black hole. But as Lin Ming swept his divine sense through it, he knew that in truth this was only an illusion; it was actually a stronghold of the primal god race.

"Attack!"

With a loud command from Red Leaf, over a hundred Holy Lords struck together. The divine lights of numerous astral essences pierced through the void, ripping through the primal god race's great array formation.

Bang!

A horrifying explosion lit up the world. In front of the saint martial artists, an independent world appeared. This world existed in a crevice of space, and had houses, mountains, rivers, rice fields, and also primal god martial artists quietly living there.

From appearances, this was not some war stronghold, but a simple village.

And it was only an ordinary village of the primal god race, because there were the elderly, women, and children running about.

Although the god race martial artists far surpassed other races in terms of talent, not all of them could cultivate to the Holy Lord realm. In their race there were many ordinary martial artists. Of course, these ordinary martial artists were far more powerful than ordinary martial artists of other races.

From looks alone, the god race didn't have any external differences from saints or humans. But, their inherent essence, energy, and divine were of completely different levels. If stripped out, they were all precious materials.

"Capture alive those you can. As for those you cannot, kill them all and take away their corpses!"

Red Leaf ruthlessly ordered. A manic bloodthirst clouded his eyes.

The primal god race village before him left him incredibly excited, because he could see young girls and children living there.

The young girls of the god race, if they were virgins, would be extremely nourishing to his cultivation if he were to ravish them.

As for the children of the god race, they could be turned into medicines. The effects were even better.

In the private transactions of the saint race legions, the prices of the god race's young girls and children were dozens of times higher than other members'.

"Haha, all of you die!"

"Kill them all!"

More than 100 Holy Lords and three World Kings attacked together. The god race village in front of them wasn't too large. No matter how heaven-defying the talent of the god race was, it was impossible for a tiny village like this to harm a Great World King.

Woosh!

Suddenly, a divine arrow cut through the skies and a saint Holy Lord in the front was pierced through the chest, immediately sent flying backwards.

During the time he was sent flying away, the divine arrow twisted apart the saint martial artist's heart and lungs, causing blood to gush out from his body and sever his life!

"Mm?"

Red Leaf sneered. "Interesting, there's a fierce youth here and his skills aren't too bad!"

Red Leaf thoughtfully looked towards the center of the village. There was a youth holding a bow with an early Holy Lord level cultivation. But, this early Holy Lord was able to kill a late Holy Lord with an arrow and even ignore the powerful bodily defenses of the saints. This strength was extraordinary; he was surely some astonishing genius.

Bang!

The youth hurtled into the skies. His body was covered in war armor and dense arcs of electricity wrapped around him. His eyes were angry and defiant.

He kicked out and sent a saint martial artist hurtling a thousand miles away, causing him to violently vomit blood.

Chapter 1864 – God Race Royalty

Chapter 1864 – God Race Royalty

…

…

…

This god race youth’s two continuous attacks caused the locust-like swarm of saint martial artists to halt their advance.

Seeing this, Lin Ming was slightly surprised. This youth’s talent already surpassed many Empyrean descendants’. A small god race village actually had such an outstanding elite. If a large influence of the god race with a deep background were to raise such a genius, how terrifying could he be?

“Interesting. Senior-apprentice Brother Red Leaf, let me play with him.”

A World King standing behind Red Leaf grinned and moved forwards. He took out a spear, a flame burning on its tip.

Facing this saint World King, the god race youth’s complexion was solemn. He could feel the terrifying aura rolling off this opponent, and from what this World King had said, the ‘senior-apprentice Brother Red Leaf’ he referred to was clearly stronger. From Red Leaf’s body, the god race youth could feel an aura as deep as the sea, making his heart race!

Behind the god race youth, the other primal god race villagers all had worried and fearful expressions. Their tiny little village didn’t have much war strength, so how could they ward off the assault of a hundred Holy Lords, several World Kings, and a Great World King?

“What enmity does my primal god race have with you saints? You want to annihilate my people’s bloodline and use our children for alchemy!?” The primal god race youth angrily shouted. Thunder gathered in his palms and a vast lightning storm seemed to grow within his maddened eyes.

“Haha, what sort of question is that? How pathetic! In this universe, the strong devour the weak! Who made it so that your flesh and blood are valuable medicines, and that the women of your people are the best living furnaces for dual cultivation? Who told you to possess so many resources? Your people were once brilliant in the past, but now it’s time for you all to permanently leave the stage of history. My saint race will rise without stopping, and you will perish while we do so!”

The saint World King laughed.

The god race youth simmered in grief, hatred roiling in his heart. He flew straight up from the ground, impacting into the skies!

“Even if I must die, I will drag you down with me!”

The god race youth bellowed. His flesh and blood began to emit an even more dazzling brilliance and his skin started to shine with a golden light. Runes flashed on his body, exuding an inexhaustibly potent power. The void shook and his crystalline bones emitted a majestic aura that caused the world to shake.

“This bloodline…” Lin Ming was startled. He could feel that this bloodline was slightly similar to the Asura blood the Asura Road Master had left behind. Of course, compared to the Asura Road Master, the difference was far too great. When he had heard Sheng Mei say that it was rumored that the Asura Road Master came from the primal god race, it seemed that these weren’t baseless stories.

“Hey, he actually has the king bloodline! If I cut you down then my merits will be great, haha!” The saint World King laughed with joy as he sensed the god race youth’s bloodline.

The god race's king bloodline could be called the most precious bloodline in the world. The pure king bloodline had already vanished from existence, but there were still some lineages left behind. Although they were impure, they were still extremely valuable.

"What an accidental harvest!"

Many Holy Lords were excited. They were part of a mixed legion so they were often sent to the edge of the battlefield. Because of this, they had some complaints in their hearts. They thought they would never be able to seize some of the primal god race's treasures or important figures, but they never imagined they would find a god race youth with a king bloodline in this tiny village.

But something was strange. This god race youth with the king bloodline, why would he be in this small village?

"Take him alive!"

Red Leaf shouted. The youth's bloodline had caused his complexion to change.

At this moment, there was a dreadful explosion. The god race youth attacked. His move was like falling landslides and tsunamis that struck towards the saint World King with overwhelming pressure.

This move was brutal and crazy, and even the void tore apart. The saint World King's original grin disappeared as he saw this. Although he had already given a high appraisal to this youth's strength, it seemed that he might have underestimated him.

An early Holy Lord could emit an attack that could threaten an ordinary World King?

However, this was only a threat; the disparity in their cultivations was far too large. The saint World King took a step back, his blood vitality soaring to the heavens. White bone blades grew out from his skeleton, jutting out from his body. They shined with mystical runes, making him look like a deadly hedgehog.

This was a common battle technique amongst the upper level martial artists of the saints – body metamorphosis.

Bang!

The two people collided. The god race youth's complexion flushed red and blood leaked out the corners of his lips. Although his cultivation was an entire large boundary behind, he was actually only suppressed and not seriously wounded.

How could he be so strong!?

Many saint martial artists were shocked. The disparity between an early Holy Lord and ordinary World King was no different than a moat. Yet in this one collision, all that happened was that he bled a little.

The primal god race lived up to their reputation. The king blood of the god race was terrifying to the extreme!

The god race youth violently fought with the saint World King. Although he was fierce, every time they collided his body would be torn by the saint's bone blades, exposing deep wounds.

But this god race youth possessed a horrifying level of endurance. Although he was repeatedly injured, he relied on his conviction to become increasingly savage the more he fought!

On the other hand, even though the saint World King was clearly stronger, he still couldn't capture his opponent for a long time. He was soon breathless from frustration.

"How terrifying!"

Some saint martial artists cried out in surprise. "If the primal god race numbered in the trillions, there would be a qualitative change in their war strength and they could even threaten us saints!"

“No wonder the god race was able to achieve supremacy 10 billion years ago when a hundred races rose up together. If it weren’t for the heavens cursing the god race, then there wouldn’t be a race that could compete with them!”

The saint martial artists discussed. They couldn’t help but admire the god race. Hearing these conversations, Red Leaf frowned and violently shouted, “All of you shut up!”

Although Red Leaf was also left amazed by the god race’s potential, he didn’t want to lower military morale. “Stop dragging things on. The longer we delay, the more problems there will be. All of us will capture him together!”

Red Leaf suddenly said. He was preparing to attack himself and the other two World Kings moved forwards with him, all of them approaching the god race youth.

He was afraid that this god race youth possessed some uncommon status and there would be reinforcements arriving.

Seeing this, the martial artists in the god race village were filled with despair.

“A’Gu…”

The elderly in the village gripped their fists. A young girl’s eyes filled with tears. The youth fighting in the skies was named A’Gu.

He came from the royalty of the primal god race. But, because of certain intrigues within the royal family, he was forced to flee when he was a child. He ran away to this little village and grew up here. From the start, no one knew about A’Gu’s previous life and thought of him as nothing but an ordinary child.

A’Gu had grown up together with the village. The feelings that the villagers held towards A’Gu was as thick as blood.

When the saints invaded and the flames of war began burning through the Primeval Universe, A’Gu had returned to this village. Now possessing a little bit of strength himself, he had desired to establish an enchantment around this village to make sure they could live in safety, and then wait for a chance to move the entire village to a safer place. But before he could do all of this, some of the villagers had been discovered by the saints.

A'Gu's cultivation was far too low. He was just barely able to cope with a World King, and now with other World Kings and even a Great World King advancing towards him, nothing awaited him but defeat!

"Even... if I die... I will make sure none of you are happy..." Seeing three other World Kings join the fray, A'Gu revealed a twisted smile. Crimson light began to shine from the bones of his arms.

A dangerous aura enveloped everyone.

"Mm? This is bad, he wants to burn away the entirety of his king blood! Stop him!" Red Leaf coldly said.

Even if this god race youth burned away his king blood he still couldn't pose a fatal threat to them. But, it would mean the loss of his king blood.

"A'Gu!"

The villagers cried out in sorrow. Burning away the entirety of his king blood was the same as suicide.

However, his opponents formed a sharp contrast to him. The saints ferociously roared, "Hey! You brat, your body no longer belongs to you! Your blood is precious and cannot be wasted! You think I'll just let you do as you please?"

A saint World King cackled, about to attack the god race youth.

But at this time, a loud explosion erupted from behind the saints.

They were startled and turned around to look. They saw that high in the air, an unfamiliar saint youth had destroyed the void, crushing the space channel that allowed them to enter. Behind the saint youth, a dim enchantment appeared, covering the surrounding space.

This enchantment glittered with mystical runes, completely incomprehensible to the mind.

“You… what are you doing?”

Beside Red Leaf, the three saint World Kings were stunned.

The other hundred saint martial artists were also unsure what happened. They could feel something was wrong.

To destroy the space channel and also cover this area in an enchantment, these actions weren’t something that the average person could easily accomplish!

It had to be known that saint martial artists mainly focused on the strength of their mortal bodies. They rarely used array runes, and even if they did it wouldn’t be so advanced.

The array runes that this saint youth laid down were incomprehensible even to Red Leaf.

Red Leaf’s complexion darkened.

He carefully observed this strange saint race youth. But no matter how he looked, he couldn’t see any camouflage. This person’s cultivation, race, and appearance didn’t seem fake at all.

But, his actions proved he wasn’t here with good intentions.

“What is the meaning of this? Who are you?”

Red Leaf suspected that this person was a spy who had infiltrated into their ranks!

After all, in a great war between races, the origins of members in a mixed legion were extremely complex and it wasn’t surprising for a spy to sneak their way in!

After destroying the space channel and laying down an enchantment, the saint youth drew out a spear from his spatial ring. This saint youth was Lin Ming who had used the Bodily Rebirth Technique.

He had been biding his time for so long and had only taken action now because he wanted to take advantage of the time when the saints were attacking the god race village to lay down the sealing enchantment. This enchantment had array symbols of the Asura Heavenly Dao engraved into it. And, its purpose was to prevent these saint martial artists from escaping!

Lin Ming's identity was far too sensitive, especially to the saints!

Although he could hide his appearance with the Bodily Rebirth Technique, he couldn't hide his moves.

Moreover, his cultivation was at the middle Holy Lord realm. When his combat strength was contrasted with his cultivation, and in addition to his moves, if any saint martial artists ran away and spread news of what they saw, perhaps even including a battle array disc, then people like the Good Fortune Saint Son would definitely be able to guess his identity.

Once the saints discovered he had come to the Primeval Universe, what would happen then?

Lin Ming didn't dare to imagine it!

Thus, choosing the correct time to attack was extremely important to Lin Ming. Defeating these people wasn't hard, but to kill off every single one of them was a challenge!

Chapter 1865 – A’Gu

Chapter 1865 – A’Gu

…

…

…

“This brat, he’s looking to die!”

After seeing Lin Ming block off the space channel, everyone began to emit a faint killing intent. The saint martial artists were furious.

As for the primal god race villagers, they never imagined such a sudden change would occur.

“A’Gu, do you know this person? Did the royal family send him to rescue you?”

A beautiful blue-clothed girl sent A’Gu a sound transmission. She had adored A’Gu for a long time, and the truth was that even as a common village girl her feelings were reciprocated. But because of the difference in their backgrounds, neither of them had the courage to be open about their emotions.

“No… I don’t know him and he doesn’t seem like a member of the ancient remnant races.”

A’Gu looked at Lin Ming, finding it hard to discern his cultivation. If this person was only a middle Holy Lord, how could he possibly be the match of so many powerhouses?

“I don’t know this brother’s good name, but let’s join forces!”

A’Gu said in the common language of the saints. He was worried that Lin Ming wasn’t a match for these people. But, just as he spoke, Lin Ming moved.

Behind Lin Ming, colossal stars appeared, floating up and down. As soon as he moved forwards he opened the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and simultaneously galvanized the power of thunder and fire within his body.

He couldn't hold back here. When dealing with the entire saint legion as well as the Great World King, it would be difficult to make sure not a single one of them escaped.

Hu - ! Hu - ! Hu - !

Flames surged in the skies and the void was flooded with lightning, as if countless purple and red snakes were twining themselves through the world. The scene was bizarre and horrifying.

Then, Lin Ming thrust his spear. The spear he used was the Black Dragon Spear!

After such a long time, Lin Ming used the Black Dragon Spear once more. Although he couldn't wield it however and whenever he wished, he could still last for a long time.

Whorl –

The massive Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel and Myriad Essence Reincarnation Wheel came rolling out. Endless runes followed, flowing together with the flames and thunder. It was like a river of stars had exploding into existence, completely covering the saint martial artists.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Ten saint martial artists were immediately covered with this terrifying force field. Their mortal bodies instantly exploded to pieces before being vaporized into ashes by the power of thunder and fire!

Right after, their souls and energies were absorbed by the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel and the Myriad Essence Reincarnation Wheel!

"What!?"

Seeing this, many people paled. They had guessed that Lin Ming was powerful, otherwise it would have been impossible for him to lay down an enchantment that they couldn't break free from. But, they never thought he would be powerful to such a degree!

Ten Holy Lords had been executed just by facing him!

"Get in formation!"

A saint World King shouted, already frightened.

A hundred saint warriors were all in a critical situation, facing a powerful opponent. They projected astral essence and converged it together, forming a drop of cream-colored blood.

This was the saints' battle formation – the Saint's Blood Array. When displayed with a hundred saint martial artists working in tandem, it possessed an earth-shaking might!

The superiority of this battle formation lay in the fact that it was easy to learn and practice, and thus suitable for a mixed legion like this.

This blood was strange. As soon as it appeared it began to crazily swallow heaven and earth origin energy, eventually growing into a small bone that glittered with profound runes.

This bone revolved in the void, automatically dragging in nearby energy. In the blink of an eye it grew into a bone giant that was 10,000 feet tall. The bone giant projected a mystical strength that poked holes in the surrounding void.

Roar!

The bone giant hurled itself towards Lin Ming!

But at this moment, a brilliant light bloomed between Lin Ming's eyebrows. The daevic eye slowly flickered open. This was Lin Ming's fourth Dao Palace – the Daevic Eye Dao Palace!

Beneath the illumination of the daevic eye, the energy flow within the bone giant became absolutely clear down to the minutest detail. Lin Ming could see every weakness, every point where the fusion was incomplete!

The mixed legion was nothing but a hastily crafted force and their coordination couldn't be considered spectacular. Beneath the gaze of Lin Ming's daevic eye, numerous weaknesses were exposed.

Lin Ming grasped the Black Dragon Spear and impacted forwards. His body turned into a beam of spear light that thrust into a point seventy feet below the bone giant's ribs.

Rumble rumble rumble!

With a loud bang, Lin Ming's energy flooded into the bone giant, causing the originally unstable energy structure to collapse. Soon, the entire bone giant caved in on itself!

"This…"

Many people were stunned silent. The battle formation formed by a hundred martial artists was directly smashed to pieces by Lin Ming's spear strike! Just who was this person!?

"This is impossible!"

The Holy Lords could not accept this. Although their individual strength wasn't worth mentioning, when their strengths all superimposed upon each other, even a half-step Empyrean would have to earnestly defend against their attack. Still, it had been easily broken by Lin Ming!

"He clearly saw the weakness of the bone giant!"

Someone cried out in alarm. He was unable to imagine how Lin Ming had instantly seen through the flaws of their battle array.

They didn't have time to respond. At this time, Lin Ming had rushed into their ranks!

Peng!

A Holy Lord had his head smashed open by Lin Ming's spear, immediately dying where he stood!

Then, Lin Ming erupted with energy. The strength of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace gushed out from within him. He was unstoppable, like a tiger diving into a flock of sheep – all that remained was slaughter!

Lin Ming had already recently experienced two great killing scenes within the Akashic Dream Universe and was now familiar with what to do. Moreover, at the Fallen God Mountain Range, the peerless geniuses Lin Ming faced were far more formidable than these saint Holy Lords!

"Who is he!?"

Seeing Lin Ming instantly kill over 20 people like some unrivalled demon god, many people began dripping with a cold sweat.

The vast skies were dyed red with blood and corpses fell like rain. Some saint martial artists already had thoughts of escaping. The martial artists of this mixed legion had mostly joined the war of races in order to find some lucky chances, but if they knew with certainty they would die, no one would want to sit around and wait for their death.

"You are courting death!"

Red Leaf attacked. He was enraged upon seeing Lin Ming slaughter his troops. As soon as he attacked he did so with all of his power behind it. His body rose, growing taller, and scales appeared on his skin. His blood vitality soared to the heavens, making him seem like a bloodthirsty demon lord!

Kacha!

His attack collided with Lin Ming's. The two could both feel the horrifying strength of their opponent!

In the violent strike just now, Lin Ming and Red Leaf were both forced back. But at that time, two figures flew out from Lin Ming's inner world. They were Lin Ming's avatars, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone and the Soul Springs Divine Embryo!

These two avatars had also changed their appearance, looking exactly like the current Lin Ming.

Although their appearance changing technique wasn't too exquisite, in the confusion and chaos of battle, it was impossible for Red Leaf to see through them.

"Mm!?"

Red Leaf was panic-stricken. He saw two figures that looked exactly like Lin Ming rush out from within him and realized these were his avatars. But because he had just attacked, it would be hard to resist their strikes!

"Junior-apprentice brothers!"

Red Leaf summoned the three other World Kings. They recklessly hurtled forwards, but how could they be a match for Lin Ming's two avatars?

A crazy and brutal collision occurred. In a single exchange, they were sent flying away, one of the World Kings heavily wounded.

The primal god villagers watched all of this in a daze. They certainly knew just how strong those three saint World Kings were, but they watched on as this mysterious middle Holy Lord realm youth fought, his cultivation not much higher than A'Gu's.

"Fierce!"

A brilliant light flashed in A'Gu's eyes. He took this chance to rush forwards, grasping his long bow and using it as a sword to wildly slash forwards!

He had to take advantage of this opportunity to assist Lin Ming!

The bow’s bowstring was sharp beyond imagination. It could even slice open space.

“Ahh!”

With a pitiful cry, the World King that had just been heavily wounded by Lin Ming was sneak attacked by A’Gu. One of his legs had been chopped off!

“You’re looking to die!”

This World King turned to strike A’Gu. But, A’Gu wasn’t much weaker than an ordinary World King to begin with and this enemy was already exhausted; he easily avoided the strike.

“The one dying is you!”

A’Gu launched another brutal attack. The World King was not his opponent and was forced to retreat again and again in defeat!

“Run!”

Someone cried, horrified. This was a peerless death god. They had no idea where this person came from and why he had infiltrated their legion.

This was only one of the legions subordinate to Empyrean White Heaven, and all they were attacking was a small village of the primal god race. This strange youth was so strong, so why would he have been bored enough to meddle in such trivial matters, deliberately infiltrating this unit and launching an ambush to save a village?

Dozens of Holy Lords shot into the skies. They began to bombard the enchantment that Lin Ming had laid down.

For a time, brilliant divine lights lit up the heavens. With loud rumbling sounds, the enchantment violently shook. A massive stone gate appeared within the enchantment, resisting over 90% of the attacks!

This stone gate was ancient and boundless. It was the Primordius Gate!

The Primordius Gate possessed only ordinary striking power, but its defensive capabilities were outstanding. Using it to stabilize the enchantment was the best choice!

The saint martial artists launched a barrage of attacks. But, the Primordius Gate withstood the majority of them and remained steadfast no matter what struck it. Around the Primordius Gate, many Asura runes intensely sparkled. The light of these runes dimmed, but they never disappeared.

Faintly, it was like a bit of the Concept of Existence had fused into these Asura runes. The runes drew in energy from their surroundings, glowing brighter and dimming, but never disappearing.

"How can it be so solid!?"

Many people were left flustered with panic. At this life-or-death moment, they had abandoned their attempts to attack Lin Ming but still couldn't manage to break open this enchantment.

"Combine your attacks with an array!"

Someone shouted out. They gathered their energies once more, forming the Saint's Blood Array and summoning the bone giant again.

But the moment that the bone giant appeared, its every weakness was seized by Lin Ming's daevic eye.

In an instant, countless bolts of thunder flashed, smashing into the mystical strength of the bones. It was like an endless hail of thunder crashing down onto the bone giant.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Tens of thousands of collisions occurred in a single breath of time. The entire bone giant was blown apart!

Lin Ming wouldn't allow the bone giant to freely attack the enchantment. Although the bone giant was filled with weaknesses, its striking power was considerable. His enchantment might not be able to resist it.

"Die!"

Lin Ming billowed with killing intent. Between his eyebrows, the Daevic Eye Dao Palace shimmered, completely locking down the image of Red Leaf.

All of Red Leaf's weaknesses were seen through by Lin Ming!

Life and Death Samsara!

In order to bring the battle to the fastest conclusion and prevent any accidents from occurring, when Lin Ming thrust out his spear he also used the power of the golden pages. These were the results of grasping the principles atop the Fallen God Mountain Range's shrine platform.

For a time, horrifying Life and Death Laws enveloped Red Leaf.

Red Leaf suddenly shook and his eyes turned misty and confused. It was like he had fallen into an incomparably long river of time, the years rapidly passing by around him.

Death energy spread through his body. He could feel his own mortal body decay and his fires of life fade away.

Puff!

Red Leaf heard a light popping sound and then felt something cold in his chest. The confusing and befuddling haze disappeared and his field of vision became clear one more.

As it did, he saw Lin Ming right in front of him with an indifferent expression, and the Black Dragon Spear already piercing through his heart.

Chapter 1866 – God Race Headquarters

Chapter 1866 – God Race Headquarters

…

…

…

The moment that his heart was pierced, Red Leaf's face distorted. He grabbed the Black Dragon Spear, his body violently shaking as horror filled his eyes.

The powerful strength of a saint's mortal body didn't allow him to immediately die. But, he wished he could immediately die, because a feeling more terrifying than death had enveloped him!

He could feel a horrifying power swallow up his soul and the fires of his life. His entire body was flooded with death energy as his life rapidly faded from him. His hair lost all luster and the sockets of his eyes caved in; his entire body was rapidly decaying.

The process of a mortal decaying over years was instantly reduced to a mere several breaths of time. Like this, Red Leaf, beneath the Black Dragon Spear, was turned into a bag of bones.

Pa pa pa!

The bones fell down, crumbling to bits in the skies. As they landed on the ground, they collapsed into ashes that were then blown away by the wind without leaving anything behind.

Seeing this scene, even Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. This was the Concept of Death that he had comprehended from the Fallen God Mountain Range and then verified through the golden pages.

This was the first time he had used it!

A Great World King who was part of the saint race, which was renowned for their formidable bodies, had not only been killed in several breaths of time but even the mortal body they tempered for so long had decayed to ashes that vanished into the air!

If he could obtain the black book and complete the Holy Scripture, the power of his Life and Death Samsara would reach unimaginable heights!

As the one using this move, even Lin Ming was shocked. As for the others, they were all drenched in horrified sweat!

The saint martial artists present were well aware of how strong Red Leaf had been. Even among Great World Kings, he was in the upper echelons in terms of strength. Yet, he had been slain by Lin Ming without even bones remaining!

“His cultivation is just a small boundary higher than mine, so how could he…”

A’Gu grasped his bow, unsure of what to say. As a royal of the god race, he had held absolute self-confidence about his talent within his heart. Amongst his contemporaries, there were few that could stand on equal footing with him. At the early Holy Lord realm he was able to defend against ordinary World Kings, and that was already an amazing feat. But compared to this mysterious saint youth in front of him, his strength was nothing at all.

He was well aware that this saint youth’s moves and the strength he displayed had all manifested through the power of a middle Holy Lord, without passing it at all!

The only possibility would be if he were an extreme Empyrean that was deliberately suppressing their strength to fight. But, why would an extreme Empyrean be so bored as to do this, and not directly use their Empyrean level strength to kill off everyone instead of acting in such a farce?

"Wait… w-wait!"

Seeing Lin Ming raise the Black Dragon Spear and step onto the void once more, approaching them, the saint martial artists were scared out of their wits.

Two World Kings faced Lin Ming, their complexions pale. "You… who are you, what do you want? We'll do anything you wish, so please don't kill us…"

The saint World Kings said with shivering voices.

Lin Ming indifferently looked at these saint martial artists. "You invaded this god race village. When you invaded other races, did you ever think that their lives were as valuable as your own?"

As Lin Ming spoke, his murderous intent had locked onto all the saint martial artists.

Forced back by Lin Ming's killing intent, a World King grit his teeth and shouted, "Scatter in different directions! Break through the enchantment!"

As soon as he spoke, the World King flew up, impacting towards the enchantment!

Astral essence crazily revolved around his body and he wildly combusted his blood essence. He wanted to use his own body to shatter the enchantment!

And following right behind this World King, many other saint martial artists chose to burn their blood essence together. In a life or death moment, all of these saint martial artists had gone crazy, possessed by their panic.

Compared to their lives, what could burning their blood essence be considered as?

But even though they burned their blood essence together, none of them dared to attack Lin Ming but instead focused on bombarding the enchantment that locked in the void. If they could break past it and run outside, then with so many Holy Lords fleeing in different directions it would be impossible for Lin Ming to catch them all no matter how powerful he was.

“All of you are staying behind!”

Lin Ming’s voice was chilling, seeped with carnage!

He and his two avatars struck together!

Even Red Leaf wasn’t Lin Ming’s opponent, much less these saint Holy Lords. This was nothing by a one-sided massacre. None of them could contend with Lin Ming. Even Red Leaf’s junior-apprentice brothers, the World King powerhouses, were instantly slain by Lin Ming!

“This is…”

Seeing blood dye the blue skies, A’Gu paled. Lin Ming was slaughtering people who didn’t possess any power to resist him, but he didn’t show any leniency at all. He was a cold-blooded death god.

A’Gu had seen these saint martial artists slaughter his fellow god race members. At that time, A’Gu wished he could kill them all without reserve. But now, as he saw these saint martial artists exterminated in large swathes by Lin Ming without any chances of resisting, he found he couldn’t bear this scene.

Although he was powerful, he couldn’t be like Lin Ming and stain his hands red with blood. In the face of this absolutely ruthless massacre, he found it hard to calm his heart.

“What are you thinking?”

At this time, an indifferent voice echoed from behind A’Gu. Spooked, he immediately turned around.

The black-clothed Lin Ming was standing behind him, his hand grasping the Black Dragon Spear. Although the spear shaft wasn't stained with blood, Lin Ming's clothes were dyed crimson.

The legion of saints had been thoroughly annihilated by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming had even used the Concept of Life to scan the entire battlefield. As long as he sensed the aura of a person, he would kill them, lest there be a single clue of his presence remaining.

"N-nothing!"

A'Gu gripped his long bow and backed away from Lin Ming, caution in his eyes.

Even now he didn't know what Lin Ming's goal was or why he had saved them.

"Mercy to your enemies is cruelty to yourself. If you allow a single one of them to escape, your village will suffer total destruction. The moment they stepped out of this world they would have immediately used a sound transmission jade slip to send news of what happened, and the next time they attacked to destroy this village, the one they sent would have been a half-step Empyrean or even a true Empyrean! At that time, both you and I would die."

The mission of annihilating a little village wouldn't alarm an Empyrean. But because of the unique existence of Lin Ming, alarming an Empyrean would be the least of the troubles.

"I know… I'm sorry." For A'Gu's life, he had mostly fought with the vicious beasts of the Primeval Universe. As for the number of times he had killed people, there were actually considerably few moments. He knew that Lin Ming's rebuke was completely reasonable and he also realized that Lin Ming didn't have any dark intentions towards him.

A'Gu hesitated for a moment and probingly asked, "You… you aren't a saint martial artist?"

A’Gu felt that Lin Ming’s techniques and combat methods were different from those of the saints.

“I’m not.” Lin Ming shook his head. “My race is the same as yours, invaded by the saints… I want to see the leaders of your primal god race. Could you open the way for me?”

Lin Ming asked, getting straight to the point.

If he wanted to enter the headquarters of the primal god race he would need people guiding him, otherwise he wouldn’t be able to find it. And even if he did find it, he wouldn’t be able to enter.

“You want to see… the leaders of the god race?” A’Gu looked at Lin Ming, a stunned expression on his face.

The headquarters of the god race was one of the greatest secrets of the god race. It involved the life or death of their god race as well as the decrees of the gods. Even if Lin Ming rescued their entire village, he wouldn’t be so muddled as to lead him there.

After thinking for some time, A’Gu said, “I will inform a special messenger from headquarters to have them come see you…”

Chapter 1867 – The Goddess's Necklace

Chapter 1867 – The Goddess's Necklace

…

…

…

After the invasion of Red Leaf, A'Gu had no choice but to relocate the village. Their position had been discovered and a legion had been sent to exterminate them, but in the end they were the ones destroyed. They would have to leave before reinforcements came.

"You… just who are you?"

In the void, a middle-aged man in golden war armor stood in front of Lin Ming. He was the messenger from headquarters that A'Gu spoke of.

If Lin Ming wanted to enter the god race headquarters he would first have to obtain this person's trust. To lead someone of unknown origin into their headquarters was undoubtedly a dangerous and foolish action.

"I am from the human race and wish to see the leader of the god race." As Lin Ming spoke, he had already lifted his disguise.

Going to the god race headquarters, there was sure to be a number of detections cast on him. An appearance changing technique wouldn't be able to deceive these people.

Seeing Lin Ming's appearance, the god race messenger was stunned, not expecting this in the slightest. Lin Ming's appearance changing technique was actually exquisite to such a degree.

“Human race? The human race located at the Divine Shifting Heavens? It is reported that your people have also been invaded by the saints. If you wish to see the leader of my god race, is it because you want to form an alliance? Your explanation makes sense, but why should I believe you?”

The golden-armored man stared at Lin Ming. He had already listened to A’Gu’s description of Lin Ming and wouldn’t underestimate this youth at all.

Lin Ming reached out his right hand and gently traced his spatial ring. A necklace appeared, hanging down from his fingers.

This was an extremely oddly shaped necklace. The necklace itself was as thick as one’s little finger and the chain of hoops seemed to be made of some sort of iron, plain and simple-looking. At the end of the chain, a thick palm-sized metal square hung, an inch thick. The center of the metal square had a hole in it that seemed to have originally been inlaid with a gem, but the gem was taken away afterwards.

“Mm?”

The golden-armored man was dumbfounded. “This is…”

This necklace was the one Lin Ming had found in the ancient tomb of the goddess in the Eternal Demon Abyss, the necklace worn by Heavenly Empress Xuanqing.

In the past, Lin Ming had taken the necklace away with him the first time he entered the ancient tomb of the goddess. Afterwards, when he entered the Divine Realm and participated in the First Martial Meeting, he had pawned this necklace to Starbind Bank in order to purchase the Boundless World Pill.

Afterwards, when Lin Ming obtained second place in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, shocking the world, Starbind Bank directly forgave Lin Ming’s debt and also returned everything he pawned in order to build better relations with him.

Now that Lin Ming took out this necklace, it was clear that the golden-armored man recognized it.

The man's complexion changed again and again. He hoarsely said, "That is a keepsake of the royal family's bloodline. Why would you have this necklace?"

The golden-armored man looked at Lin Ming with incredulity in his eyes. His reaction was severe.

Lin Ming said, "I and this necklace have a strange karma together. If I go to the god race headquarters, I will naturally speak of my story in detail. If you are afraid that I will send out a message and expose the location of your headquarters, then you can block out the space around me and isolate my divine sense."

Lin Ming flicked his finger and the necklace was placed away. "Should we go now?"

The golden-armored man deeply gazed at Lin Ming and nodded.

....

Chaos Star Ocean was flooded with black holes and dead stars. An ordinary spirit ship shuttled back and forth within this chaotic star territory. The route it took was extremely complex, passing through several space vortexes before transferring to another place.

From start to finish, Lin Ming sat within the spirit ship, surrounded by an array formation for a hundred feet around him. As long as Lin Ming's divine sense spread out beyond this scope it would be immediately detected, thus it was impossible for him to remember this route nor convey information about where he was.

After some time, Lin Ming felt the spirit ship shake, as if they had passed through some array formation barrier. He stepped towards a porthole and saw a massive white temple outside.

In front of this temple was an incomparably magnificent and grand statue!

This could even be called the largest statue that Lin Ming had ever seen. It was several thousand miles high and seemed to be carved from a small planet!

It was unknown how many years this statue had existed for, but the surface of it was covered with dust and filled with the concept of endless years. Even so, every line and curve condensed infinite true meanings and an overwhelmingly strong will.

And this statue was that of – the Asura Road Master!

Seeing this statue, Lin Ming knew that he had arrived at the god race headquarters.

“Disembark!” The golden-armored messenger brought Lin Ming down from the spirit ship. “In a while you will see my god race’s Great Elder as well as Heaven’s Son Morin!”

“Great Elder… Heaven’s Son Morin?”

Lin Ming had no understanding of the command structure within the god race nor did he know what status these two people had.

A spacious and broad corridor opened before him. The floor tiles gleamed. Lin Ming could feel that every floor tile was carved with array formations, each one possessing a protective function. These array formations were unusual. If a small sect obtained a single one, they could use it as the protective array formation of their sect to guard the entrance.

Stood on both sides of the corridor were silver-armored god race martial artists. These god race martial artists all had an early Holy Lord realm cultivation, slightly lower than the messenger that had guided Lin Ming here. And, Lin Ming could faintly feel that these god race Holy Lords all possessed the ability to jump ranks to fight, at least able to cross one or two small boundaries.

At the end of the corridor was a grand hall. There was a row of thrones, and at this time there were 16 Elders of the god race sitting on the thrones.

Among these 16 people were both men and women, and the three in the center each had Empyrean realm cultivations!

The others were either half-step Empyreans or Great World Kings.

And besides these 16 people, there was also a god race youth standing in this hall. He had an ordinary World King cultivation but his aura was as vast as a sea. It was clear he possessed an extreme talent.

With the 16 sitting Elders and the youth, there were 17 god race members here, all of them exuding a tremendous pressure. This pressure covered the entire hall. If a martial artist lacking in cultivation were to step into this hall, their meridians would buckle beneath the pressure and they would die drowning in their blood!

As Lin Ming stepped in here, his footsteps slowed down and he frowned. Although he could withstand pressure on this level, he didn't appreciate it.

This wasn't the attitude of welcoming a guest, but a method of testing him and weighing his abilities.

Lin Ming was well aware that the god race was a proud and arrogant race. In order to gain their approval, one needed strength, strength that they were forced to recognize.

"Name?"

The moment Lin Ming entered the hall, the centermost Elder spoke up.

His voice was filled with energy, leaving the ears tingling.

Lin Ming looked straight at this Elder. He had a wide bone structure but was actually quite thin. His cheekbones jutted out and he had deep sunken eyes. When combined with his long and pale hair, he gave off a macabre feeling.

Middle Empyrean?

Lin Ming judged this old man's strength as a middle Empyrean. If so, it was impossible for him to be the leader of the god race. This was because when he spoke with Sheng Mei, Sheng Mei had said that the god race possessed several peak Empyreans. If a peak Empyrean used the decrees of the gods they could even pose a threat to a True Divinity.

The reason Lin Ming came here was to see the leader of the god race and discuss ways to resist the saints.

However, Lin Ming's status was too low. As a mere middle Holy Lord realm martial artist, it was naturally impossible for him to see the leader of the god race. In truth, for him to be granted an audience with the Great Elder was proof that the god race paid some attention to him.

"My name is Lin Ming!"

Lin Ming decisively stated his name without concealing anything. It was highly likely that the god race didn't know of his name because the Divine Realm and Primeval Universe were completely isolated from each other.

And indeed, there was no response from the Great Elder. The Great Elder asked, "You have a keepsake of the royal family bloodline?"

"Yes."

Lin Ming stretched out his right hand. A necklace dangled on his index finger.

Lin Ming discovered that the moment he took out this necklace, the eyes of the god race Elders brightened. They filled with excitement and fervor.

In particular, the World King realm god race youth present. As he looked at this necklace, hope flickered in his eyes. Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. It seemed that this necklace was more than just a keepsake; it definitely had other uses!

After all, if Heavenly Empress Xuanqing wore this necklace in the past, how could it be some common object?

“This necklace is originally a keepsake of my god race. Now that you have brought the necklace here, you should return it to my people! Bring it...”

As the Great Elder spoke, he stood up.

Lin Ming frowned. He held the necklace tightly.

In the past when he was at the ancient tomb of the goddess, the only reason he took this necklace was because he heard the voice of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing. This was equivalent to Heavenly Empress Xuanqing passing the necklace onto him. Afterwards, a remnant phantom of her soul had appeared and approved of Lin Ming taking care of it. Recalling this, Lin Ming was naturally unwilling to return the necklace with a few words from this Great Elder.

“What?”

Seeing Lin Ming not handing over the necklace, the Great Elder’s complexion turned grim and he coldly said, “That is something which originally belongs to my race. Is it possible you want to take it for yourself?”

The Great Elder’s words concealed a sharp edge.

Lin Ming’s face darkened. After all, whether it was going to the spiritas or now coming to the god race, Lin Ming had expected that nothing would go smoothly for him.

He was only a single person and his cultivation wasn’t high either. In the face of a war between races, he didn’t have any function at all. In addition, he was from an alien race. Because of this, trying to get the god race to take him seriously was impossible.

Lin Ming wasn’t naïve enough to believe that the leader of the god race would warmly receive him just because he saved a small village.

It was because of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing that Lin Ming wanted to come to the primal god race and repay his debt of gratitude to them. At the same time, he also wanted to use the primal god race to further delay the saints and give humanity a chance to breathe.

But the primal god race didn’t know any of this. All they knew was that Lin Ming was just a hairless little child whose cultivation wasn’t even at the World King realm. In a race that possessed many Empyreans, wasn’t it ridiculous to think that a mere hairless little child could save them?

Still, even though Lin Ming knew he couldn’t obtain the approval of the god race, he didn’t expect them to demand the goddess’s necklace as soon as he arrived.

It was obvious that once they took the necklace they wouldn’t return it.

It seemed that he had far underestimated the value of this necklace!

“I didn’t say that I wouldn’t return the necklace, it’s just… the reason I came to the god race is to see your leader…”

“His Majesty the God Sovereign is currently in seclusion. You cannot see him, but I can stand in his place. Is this about forming an alliance between the humans and our god race? You only need to speak to me about this. First, return the keepsake of my people.”

The Great Elder directly interrupted Lin Ming. Although his tone was calm, his expression clearly stated he had little patience remaining.

Chapter 1868 – God Race's Forbidden Land

Chapter 1868 – God Race's Forbidden Land

…

…

…

The god race's Great Elder was a middle Empyrean. As for Lin Ming, he was only a middle Holy Lord. Between the two, two large boundaries separated them, and the second large boundary – the disparity between a Great World King and an Empyrean, was a particularly devastating difference.

In the Great Elder's opinion, him speaking so kindly and nicely to Lin Ming was already giving him more than enough face. But seeing that Lin Ming didn't have any intention of handing over the necklace, this caused him to lose a great deal of patience.

At this time, the World King god race youth standing in the hall walked towards Lin Ming and stood in front of him.

He looked Lin Ming in the eyes and gently smiled, saying, "I am Heaven's Son Morin. Friend, this necklace is extremely important to our god race. Since you have saved a village of our god race and you yourself are extraordinary, we do not wish to embarrass you. Return the necklace to us!"

Although the World King youth's expression was polite, his words held a veiled threat. Moreover, he couldn't hide the arrogance inherent in his bones.

Lin Ming looked at this person; so this was Heaven's Son Morin. It was clear that Heaven's Son was a title and Morin was his name.

This was an outstanding young elite of the god race. His talent and his achievements were much higher than those of A'Gu.

"I came to the god race for my own reasons. You haven't asked me what I am here for and yet you want me to hand over the necklace? If I hand you the necklace, should I just leave then?"

Lin Ming mockingly said.

"You came to our god race to form an alliance, right? About that, it is a matter we can slowly discuss. But before then you must hand over the necklace as it is something only we can use. I hope that you don't try to make us do things the hard way here!"

Heaven's Son Morin spoke in a threatening voice thick with anger!

Lin Ming sneered in his heart. "Form an alliance? My human race is in the Divine Realm and you are in the Primeval Universe. Just meeting once requires one to pass through numerous universes, so what's the point in forming an alliance? That is nothing but a nominal statement I made. The reason I came to the god race is not to form an alliance.

"As for this necklace, the reason I have it is because I received it through the behest of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing. You all, could it be you wish to steal it!"

Lin Ming's voice rang out full of energy. Upon mentioning the name of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing, the necklace in Lin Ming's hand emitted a dim blue light The faint aura of endless time exuded from this necklace, making the heart race.

And this aura quietly swirled around Lin Ming, as if taking Lin Ming as its master. This caused the god race martial artists present to change their complexions.

This necklace had followed Lin Ming this far, and with the bidding of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing, there was the momentum of it recognizing him.

Seeing this scene and also remembering Heavenly Empress Xuanqing, the Elders present felt their hearts skip a beat. For a time, the entire hall fell silent.

Everyone glanced at each other, not speaking.

Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's death had been an enormous attack to the god race. This was because she originally had tremendous hopes of becoming a True Divinity!

And what the god race lacked now was a True Divinity!

If Heavenly Empress Xuanqing had been able to become a True Divinity then the saints would have rethought their decision to attack the god race, because the god race also possessed the decrees of the gods.

"Even if you received the behest of the Heavenly Empress, that cannot solve everything. This necklace belongs to the god race and you cannot use it, and taking it away is also useless to you. In the past, the Heavenly Empress was unable to return the necklace to the god race, thus she charged you with handling the necklace. Now that it has returned, it isn't something you can possess. The truth is that this necklace concerns the war between us and the saints, therefore… I hope you understand our situation. Even if we must force you to turn your back on the orders of the Heavenly Empress, we still must take it back!"

Another Elder said.

His cultivation was at the lower Empyrean realm.

Once one reached the Empyrean realm, jumping ranks to fight became far more difficult. This was true even for the god race. While the god race could overcome a small boundary to fight World Kings as a Holy Lord, when one became an Empyrean, it was impossible to jump ranks to fight unless one was a shocking talent. Otherwise, the strength of Empyreans between most races was the same. A lower Empyrean was a lower Empyrean, they simply couldn't overcome the gap to fight those higher in cultivation.

Lin Ming looked at the Elder who spoke, a bit surprised by his words. He asked, “Then can you tell me what use this necklace has?”

The Elder turned and looked at the Great Elder, clearly asking for his opinion.

Seeing the Great Elder nod, the Elder slowly said, “This necklace is in itself a True Divinity level spirit treasure, and its core is a heavenly god stone that is mounted in the center. Unfortunately, this necklace was damaged once, causing the heavenly god stone to break out from the necklace. You only have the necklace and not the heavenly god stone, thus it has no current uses. And that stone is not in the possession of my people.”

These words startled Lin Ming. He looked at the necklace in his hands.

At the end of the necklace there hung a palm-sized metal square that was an inch thick. The metal square had a hole in the center. When Lin Ming obtained it from the ancient tomb, he originally thought there might have been something mounted there, and now it seemed his guess was correct all along.

The Great Elder said, “If one can place the heavenly god stone into the necklace and repair it, then the necklace can be restored. Its name is the Chain of Calamity and in terms of might alone, it isn’t considered anything at all amongst True Divinity spirit treasure. While it cannot directly change the result of a war between two races, the true value of the Chain of Calamity is that it is the key to open the forbidden land of my people.”

“Forbidden land?” Lin Ming asked, stunned. “What forbidden land?”

“10 billion years ago… my race’s ancestor, Heavenly God Asura, left behind a forbidden land that included relics and parts of his inheritance. Heavenly God Asura left behind teachings to his people. According to these teachings, the Chain of Calamity can be used to open the forbidden land when a great calamity appears…”

What the Great Elder spoke of was a secret of the primal god race. Many god race people didn’t know of it.

During the vast period of 10 billion years, the primal god race had experienced more than one calamity, and the forbidden land had been opened before. But, it seemed that every time the forbidden land was opened, the situation within was different, so no one knew what to expect from within.

“Heavenly God Asura?” Lin Ming was bewildered, “You mean the Asura Road Master?”

“Exactly!”

The Great Elder’s answer was a bolt of lightning that raced through Lin Ming’s mind. It was like something had electrified his heart, making his heart race.

This feeling was…

Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. If the Asura Road Master’s relics were located within, then perhaps…

He didn’t know why, but he had an intense premonition that the third emperor jade was located within this so-called god race forbidden land!

The Asura Road Master had left behind three emperor jades, each representing one of essence, energy, and divine. Once one gathered them all together, then they could open the last level of the Asura Road’s final trial!

But obtaining these three emperor jades all depended on one’s destiny.

At the entrance to the seventh level, the Asura Road Master had left behind these words.

‘33 Heavens, Asura inheritance, passed down to the unrivalled genius, passed down to the one with great destiny, passed down to the fated one!’

‘The word of Fate, to be predestined or not, if you are fated then even through the endless universes you will still find my inheritance, but if you are not fated then even if your talent is unrivalled you shall never enter the gate.’

‘I left behind three emperor jades of essence, energy, and divine. The emperor jades have spiritual powers, and if you are fated then they shall fall into your hands. If you lack fate then no matter how much hardship you undergo to find them you shall never succeed. Bring the three emperor jades to this land and open wide the gates to the seventh level.’

Since the emperor jade of fate was termed ‘fate’, then in order to obtain it, everything depended on one’s fate.

The emperor jades contained profound and strange rules. If one was fated, then even if they didn’t seek out the emperor jades they would still be able to inexplicably gather them all.

Now, the reason Lin Ming had this strange premonition was because of the effect of this so-called ‘fate’!

It was even possible that the Asura Road Master had already pierced through the secrets of heaven, and had used this to calculate his own destiny as well as the destiny of his successor. These three emperor jades might have been arranged in advance by the Asura Road Master, everything falling within his plans.

“The third emperor jade, is it really in the god race forbidden land?”

Lin Ming’s heart wildly raced. He gripped his fists, finding it hard to compose himself. No matter what, he had to go to this forbidden land!

If he could collect the entire Asura Sutra, then his strength would rise by astronomical leaps!

“Now, return the necklace to my people!”

The Great Elder looked at Lin Ming and thrust out a hand. He had said everything he could say, and even explained some of the secrets of the god race.

This was naturally because Lin Ming came to their god race with good intentions and had even saved one of their villages.

Currently, he was already showing a tremendous level of tolerance towards Lin Ming!

If Lin Ming couldn’t appreciate this, then he wouldn’t hesitate to attack!

Lin Ming looked at the Great Elder and tightly grasped the necklace in his hands. He slowly and calmly said, “I can return it to you, but I have a condition. I wish to enter the forbidden land!”

Chapter 1869 – The Old God Sovereign

Chapter 1869 – The Old God Sovereign

…

…

…

“What? You want to enter my people’s forbidden land?”

Hearing Lin Ming’s statement, the Great Elder’s complexion darkened.

Since it was called a forbidden land it was naturally of vital importance to the god race. How could they allow a human to enter as they pleased?

Moreover, entering the forbidden land this time wasn’t for youths to temper themselves, but involved the life or death of their race.

“A limited number of people can enter the forbidden land. Since it concerns the life or death of my race, those that can enter are essentially Empyrean level characters of my people, the powerhouses of the older generation. They enter in order to seek a turning point to bring back our race from the edge of destruction, and it is not for youths to grow and gain experience. There may even be Empyreans of the celestial race joining, so there is no spot for you!”

The Great Elder didn’t want to waste a precious spot. His refusal was clear.

However, as Lin Ming heard these words all he heard were loopholes. “So you are saying that those who can enter the forbidden land are ‘essentially’ Empyrean level characters of your race?” Lin Ming emphasized the word ‘essentially’. He looked at Heaven’s Son Morin and said, “Since you say ‘essentially’, that must mean there are exceptions. Will Heaven’s Son Morin be entering also?”

Lin Ming’s words were needles that drew blood. Heaven’s Son Morin was part of the younger generation so what use could he play in the great calamity? It was clear that he was entering to gain experience.

Lin Ming’s words caused Heaven’s Son Morin to scowl. He angrily said, “Whether I enter or not is an internal matter of my god race, it isn’t something that an outsider like you can be pointing fingers at!”

Lin Ming sneered. “I may be an outsider, but this Chain of Calamity was passed to me by Heavenly Empress Xuanqing. It was I who inherited her request and I who brought this necklace here. If it wasn’t for me, you wouldn’t be able to open the forbidden land to begin with!”

As Lin Ming spoke, energy spontaneously surged from his body. As for the Chain of Calamity in his hands, it faintly echoed with Lin Ming’s energy and emitted waves of blue light. This blue light was similar to the light of endless years, bringing with it a simple and boundless feeling, as if this blue light had flowed from the beginning of time.

Seeing this, the god race martial artists present felt their pulses quicken. They didn’t know whether or not the Chain of Calamity had truly recognized Lin Ming as its master, but they could confirm that it was indeed absolute truth that this human youth had received the will of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing.

“If you really disregard this human and ignore the will of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing, it is hard to imagine what could happen. If an accident occurs when we repair the chain of calamity…”

A god race Elder sent a sound transmission. It had to be known that this Chain of Calamity was a True Divinity spirit treasure. In ordinary circumstances, repairing a True Divinity spirit treasure required a True Divinity to do so. But, their god race lacked True Divinities and thus they could only have several Empyreans join forces and even use a part of the strength from the decrees of the gods to repair the necklace.

"Old Three, your thoughts are overwrought!" The Great Elder shook his head, "The Heavenly Empress once attempted to use the Samsara Road to snatch back our god race's destiny and rid us of the curse that hinders us from reproducing. But, the result is that the saints stuck their foot in and caused everything to fall into failure. Even the Chain of Calamity was lost in the Divine Realm! In this case, the Empress shouldn't have been able to find someone appropriate to return the Chain of Calamity to us, thus she was forced to choose this human boy. Heavenly Empress Xuanqing exhausted every method and all of her strength in order to restore our god race, so how could she possibly allow an accident to occur in a matter that concerns the life or death of our people just for a human boy? When we repair the Chain of Calamity, the Empress will surely bless us!"

The Great Elder said with utter confidence. Everyone also felt this was reasonable. But, the Third Elder frowned, "Your words may not be wrong, but the Empress was kind and this human has shown graciousness to our god race. It is unreasonable for us to directly refuse him like this. But… a spot is too precious, and after deducting the spots that we must give the celestials, we just don't have any left over. How about we establish a qualifying test so that he can give up on his own…"

"Test?" The Great Elder's fingers rapped against the armrest. He shook his head, "Don't underestimate this human youth. He is an outstanding individual, and perhaps… he might not be much worse than Morin…"

As the Great Elder spoke, the god race Elders present were astounded. Some people felt incredulous and even Heaven's Son Morin slightly frowned.

Heaven's Son Morin acknowledged that Lin Ming was an outstanding young elite, but he wasn't convinced that the difference between them wasn't too far.

Lin Ming was a genius, but he was only at the middle Holy Lord Realm. As for Morin, he was a World King!

The difference in age and cultivation would both appear in a qualifications test.

"Great Elder..."

Heaven's Son Morin spoke with a sound transmission but the Great Elder interrupted him. "I know you aren't convinced of this, but we will not discuss this matter for now. First, let us consider a test. Old Three's words have reminded me of something. There is one test that I believe he cannot pass, because... he is not of the god race."

As the Great Elder spoke to here, he smiled. The other people immediately understood just what the Great Elder was plotting.

Lin Ming's talent and potential were formidable, but in the end he couldn't change his race. If a test concerned the god race bloodline, then Lin Ming would have to admit defeat.

"Lin Ming, If you want a spot, it is possible. However, you must pass the assessment of my people. The contents of the assessment are impartial, and if you cannot pass then I am sorry for that."

The Great Elder leisurely said, already crossing out Lin Ming in his heart. Lin Ming frowned; he had no idea just what they were saying with sound transmissions just now.

As Lin Ming was thinking of what to say, the atmosphere in the entire grand hall suddenly changed.

A vast but gentle sea-like power slowly swelled forth. The pressure released by the Empyreans and the other Elders was completely washed away by this strength.

"Mm? This is..." Lin Ming was shocked. This was a terrifying strength...

He turned his head to see an old god race man slowly walking towards him, holding onto a walking stick made of withered wood.

This elderly man had long silver hair that shimmered with a brilliant luster. In contrast to that, his face appeared aged and his fires of life were fading away, as if on the precipice of death. Even so, he gave off an incomparably horrifying feeling, as if a universe were contained within him.

“Your Majesty God Sovereign!”

Seeing the old man enter, the other Elders all rose up in salute, deeply bowing in respect. As for the stubborn and unruly Heaven’s Son Morin, he knelt down on a knee, showing even deeper courtesy than the Elders. For a time, the only one standing tall and straight was Lin Ming.

This old man was the God Sovereign of the god race?

Lin Ming was amazed. As he looked at this old man he wasn’t able to distinguish his cultivation at all. But according to what Sheng Mei said, the god race shouldn’t have any True Divinities. In other words, this old man was an extreme Empyrean.

But for some reason, the feeling that this old man gave off was even more terrifying than other extreme Empyreans, as if the entirety of the universe had to submit to him!

“Since you’ve seen His Majesty the God Emperor, hurry up and kneel!”

The Great Elder angrily shouted.

Lin Ming bowed. This was the respect one owed to seniors and elders, as it should be.

Lin Ming’s bowing manners were the same as the god race Elders’. This caused Heaven’s Son Morin to feel ill at heart. His cultivation was clearly higher than Lin Ming’s and yet Lin Ming was standing while he was kneeling.

Just as Heaven’s Son Morin was about to say something, the god race God Sovereign heaved a deep sigh. He looked at Lin Ming, a profound sorrow in his eyes as he asked, “You saw Xuanqing?”

“Mm…” Lin Ming nodded. He knew that the god race God Sovereign was asking him whether or not he had seen Heavenly Empress Xuanqing’s corpse. “Heavenly Empress

Xuanqing’s remains were calm and at peace. She was beautiful and vibrant, as if she had just fallen asleep…”

Although he already knew Xuanqing had died, as the God Sovereign heard this news from Lin Ming’s lips and that he had even seen her corpse, he felt a stabbing pain in his heart.

“Come with me, I will lead you to a place…”

The god race God Sovereign looked at Lin Ming and then slowly turned around. Lin Ming was startled – a place?

Lin Ming didn’t ask where they were going, and only followed close behind the god race God Sovereign. He could feel from this old God Sovereign’s body a deep compassion and empathy, and even a faintly heavy sorrow. This feeling left Lin Ming’s heart racing. He had never felt this feeling from anyone before.

Lin Ming left the grand hall, leaving the god race Elders staring at him with a look of complete loss in their eyes. Where was the old God Sovereign planning to take this human?

“Senior God Sovereign, you are Heavenly Empress Xuanqing’s…”

“I am her father.”

The God Sovereign calmly said. After this, he no longer spoke.

The god race’s Heavenly Empress was the same as the spiritas’ Soul Empress; both were a title. Without a doubt, if Heavenly Empress Xuanqing still lived, she would be the next God Sovereign.

But what a pity, she perished far too early. As for the current god race, Lin Ming had only seen young elites like A’Gu and Heaven’s Son Morin. If Heaven’s Son Morin was the number one young elite of the god race, then the god race was in a worrying situation!

After all, their numbers were far too small. Even if the god race were extremely talented and everyone was a dragon, without a massive base population it was difficult to give birth to a true peerless character.

As Lin Ming thought this, he followed the God Sovereign through a series of corridors. The further he walked, the more he felt he was headed deep beneath the temple.

The God Sovereign's pace was slow. Although he was capable of crossing tens of millions of miles with a single step, transferring through the void as he pleased, in this temple he moved a single step at a time. As his footsteps fell on the dark ground, light muffled echoing sounds filled the air.

Lin Ming felt that the deeper he went, the more ancient the surrounding atmosphere became. It seemed that no one had come to this place for a very long time already. The heavy and simple tiles on the ground were like thick history books that recorded the immeasurably long time that this temple had experienced.

At this time, the God Sovereign came to a stop. "We're here..."

The old God Sovereign stood before a thick, ancient bronze gate. Behind this bronze gate, dreadful roars sounded out, filled with mourning and causing one's courage to shake. Soon after, there was a loud rumbling sound of crashing metal, as if an unbelievably terrifying existence was locked in chains!

Lin Ming's steps paused. He took a deep breath. As this horrifying roar fell into his ears, he didn't know why but it summoned an inexplicable sadness in his heart, an emotion he couldn't get over.

The old God Sovereign pointed to the bronze gate, "Go and see for yourself."

Lin Ming took a deep breath and pushed open the bronze gate. In that moment, Lin Ming felt as if he wasn't opening a gate, but a thick tombstone.

Behind the ancient gate was a dark and isolated world, similar to a pitch black abyss.

Chapter 1870A – Of the Heart

Chapter 1870A – Of the Heart

…

…

…

A chilling cold gloom rushed outwards. In this dark world, Lin Ming could see ancient bronze coffins. These ancient bronze coffins were shockingly large and wrapped in loud clanking chains. It was unknown just whose corpses lay inside.

"There are 12 ancient bronze coffins altogether!"

Lin Ming thought, startled. He could faintly feel that within each bronze coffin slumbered a horrifying existence, but he simply didn't know what they were.

However, what caught Lin Ming's attention was not these 12 ancient bronze coffins, but what lay at the end of these coffins; it was an incomparably fierce and hideous beast!

This vicious beast had four thick legs and alarmingly sharp claws. Its entire body was covered in scales and thick black hairs grew out from its body, making it seem like some legendary demon beast from hell.

Lin Ming could sense from within this vicious beast a smell of blood that was as deep as an ocean, as if this beast had taken countless lives.

At this time, the horrifying vicious beast was staring at Lin Ming with its ghostly green eyes. Its four limbs and its titanic form were entangled in layers of chains. When Lin Ming heard the crashing of metal from outside, it was clearly because this vicious beast had been struggling against the chains.

As Lin Ming looked at this demonic beast, he was inexplicably shocked. He didn't know why, but he could feel a familiar aura from this vicious beast, one that left him filled with disbelief.

"This… this is…" Lin Ming stared at the demonic beast. It was wrapped in black energy, and this black energy was incomparably familiar.

"That is…"

Lin Ming looked at the god race's God Sovereign, his eyes filling with fear.

Roarr!

At this time, the demonic beast let out an earth-shaking roar. The chains shackling its body tightened and emitted loud cracking sounds.

A terrifying momentum rushed out like a surging storm. Even its saber-sharp claws that were able to rend the void reached less than 10 feet away from Lin Ming.

But Lin Ming remained motionless. He looked at the god race's God Sovereign, waiting for his answer.

Then, the God Sovereign opened his mouth and slowly spoke, as if he were speaking from across the shores of time. "Its name is… Yuan Chi. Before he became like this, he once had a title. His title was… Empyrean Primordius…"

The God Sovereign's words were like a bolt of lightning that smashed into Lin Ming's ears.

For a time, Lin Ming froze solid, unable to summon any words.

Empyrean Primordius… this was Empyrean Primordius?

Lin Ming looked at the demonic beast. It violently struggled against its chains. Its pupils had lost their clarity and it lacked any intelligence at all. It wildly roared, wanting to break free from the shackles of the chains and tear Lin Ming and the old God Sovereign to pieces.

“How could this be!?”

Lin Ming found this difficult to accept!

He had already guessed that Empyrean Primordius hadn’t died. Regarding this, the Black Dragon Sovereign living in the Eternal Demon Abyss had been unable to give him an absolute answer.

What Lin Ming was sure of though was that the corpse of Empyrean Primordius was not within the Eternal Demon Abyss.

But, Lin Ming would never have imagined that Empyrean Primordius, who domineeringly wandered the Divine Realm, nearly becoming a True Divinity, would actually turn into such an appearance.

Just what had happened?

“Your Majesty God Sovereign, this is...”

The God Sovereign shook his head, his withered face wrinkling like a walnut. “In the past, Primordius was heavily wounded by the saints and his mortal body was ruined. The saints wished to capture Primordius alive and refine his body, drawing out the essence of the Grandmist Spirit Bead. But, Primordius broke free from their siege and fled with his tattered body, finally escaping into the Primeval Realm Ruins’ Dark Abyss."

Dark Abyss?

Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred. He had no idea what the Primeval Realm Ruins were like. It was said that this land contained countless lucky chances and innumerable inheritances, and it was the most important reason the saints were able to prosper and rise to their current lofty heights. The reason the saints wished to exterminate all the remnants of the ancient races was because of these ruins.

“What sort of place is the Dark Abyss?” Lin Ming asked.

The old God Sovereign said, “It is the most dreadful place within the entire Primeval Realm Ruins. It is a bottomless abyss of space and time. Within it exists a massive number of abyssals, cruel and horrifying demons of the Dark Abyss. The deeper one goes, the more terrifying these abyssals are… it is said that the abyssals were sealed away by Heavenly God Asura and his rival, the master of the Holy Scripture. 10 billion years ago, the abyssals were responsible for the apocalypse that fell upon the ancient races.

“Whether these rumors are true or false, there is one thing which is certain, and that is that not even True Divinities dare tread into the innermost depths of the Dark Abyss. In the past, Empyrean Primordius was forced into the Dark Abyss, but because his mortal body was ruined and he himself was nothing but a lamp without oil, he was unable to survive in that land, let alone take revenge. So in order to live on, he did something that no one had ever done before…”

“What did he do?” Lin Ming looked at Empyrean Primordius, his heart racing with fear.

“He seized the body of an abyssal…” As the old God Sovereign spoke to here, he let out a long breath.

Normally, when a martial artist seized the body of another they would carefully consider the process again and again. First, a martial artist would make sure that the body they seized was far weaker than themselves, and their talent also had to reach the extremes. At the same time, all sorts of preparations were required in order to ensure that the spirit mark of the target was cleanly wiped away!

But even in such a situation, after successfully seizing the body of another, all sorts of residual leftovers would remain. After all, the body wasn’t their own to begin with. If body and soul weren’t perfectly compatible with each other, then that would cause one’s talent to drop and their cultivation to rise at a snail's pace. If the will of the seized target was too strong and there were spirit marks remaining, these spirit marks would invade the soul of the seizer and cause a split personality.

For instance, the Ancient Devil that emerged from the Sea of Miracles hadn't seized Yang Yun's body in the past. Rather, he used Yang Yun as a chess piece and chose Lin Ming as his final target. But in the end, the Ancient Devil failed to seize Lin Ming's body.

As for Empyrean Primordius, what he took over was an abyssal. In terms of soul force, mortal body, or inner energy, they were powerful in all aspects, like incarnations of demons. Wanting to seize their bodies was easier said than done!

The old God Sovereign said, "It is more accurate to say that Primordius fused his ruined body and soul with an abyssal, melting them together as one. Now… I fear that Primordius has lost any remnants of his mind and has completely fused with the abyssal's soul, becoming like he is now."

"He fused as one with the demon?" Lin Ming looked at Empyrean Primordius, unsure of what to say.

In the past he had fantasized that because of some reasons, Empyrean Primordius had hidden himself away in some corner of the universe. Or maybe, when the great calamity erupted, Empyrean Primordius might appear at a crucial moment, perhaps even making another breakthrough and coming close to the realm of True Divinity!

Although he might not have been able to turn the tide, his appearance would have at least given humanity a chance to recover!

But reality was cruel. A generation's peerless proud son of heaven had ended up with such a fate!

Lin Ming silently stepped in front of Empyrean Primordius and deeply bowed.

However, even though Lin Ming’s body exuded a vague grandmist energy, the pupils of Empyrean Primordius were still filled with bloodthirst, completely disregarding Lin Ming’s status as the grandmist successor.

Roar!

Chapter 1870B – Of the Heart

Chapter 1870B – Of the Heart

…

…

…

The shackles went taut once more.

The fierce and sharp claws were like swords, able to pierce through stars. They tore open space less than half a foot in front of Lin Ming!

The tips of the claws almost reached Lin Ming's eyes.

Looking at the bloodthirsty eyes of Empyrean Primordius, Lin Ming felt an inexplicable sense of bitterness.

Although he had never met Empyrean Primordius before this, Empyrean Primordius was still an important master who had a tremendously important influence on his life. Lin Ming hoped that while Empyrean Primordius was in his most difficult times, he would be able to help him. However… in the end he realized he was just a useless and lonely person.

Sheng Mei's refusal, Primordius' fate, all of this left Lin Ming filled with a sense of utter powerlessness.

"He… cannot return to how he was?" Although Lin Ming already knew what the answer would be, he still asked this question with unwillingness in his tone.

The old God Sovereign shook his head, "When Primordius took over the abyssal he was still able to preserve his logical mind and speak words. But afterwards… when his soul completely fused with that of the abyssal, he slowly became how he is now. In order to protect him I could only shackle him here with the dragon-trapping cables…

“100,000 years have passed. I fear that he has already forgotten everything of the past. All that remains in his heart is his hatred towards the saints… the saints took everything of his. They crushed his dreams and aspirations, and even killed the woman he loved above all…”

“The woman he loved above all?” Lin Ming was startled. “Is that Heavenly Empress Xuanqing?”

The old God Sovereign nodded. “Yes… the two of them once wanted to use the Samsara Road to establish the Grandmist Samsara Dao, and then develop that into something that could stand on equal ground with the Laws of the 33 Heavens. And using that as the basis, they wanted to establish their own independent world, copying Heavenly God Asura…

“Primordius and Xuanqing shared a common goal, and they were both peerless elites of their generations thus they were able to easily match together. They chased after their dreams, eventually falling in love with each other…”

The old God Sovereign’s quiet words left Lin Ming dumbfounded!

To copy the Asura Road Master, establish a separate Heavenly Dao and create a world!

Just how great a wish was this!

Yet, one was an unrivalled woman close to becoming a True Divinity, and the other was a genius of humanity that possessed the Grandmist Spirit Bead. If the two joined hands, there was really a chance they could succeed!

Perhaps even…

Lin Ming suddenly recalled Sheng Mei. When Sheng Mei asked him to leave with her, was it also for this goal?

He and Sheng Mei were similar to Xuanqing and Empyrean Primordius.

One was an unrivalled woman and the other was a peerless human who controlled one of the three divine artifacts of the universe.

If Lin Ming went together with Sheng Mei, perhaps they really could establish their own independent world and become existences similar to the Asura Road Master. Unfortunately… he could not!

Lin Ming didn't know what feeling percolated in his heart. After a period of silence, his thoughts stirred. In this profoundly chilling land, Lin Ming could see hideously twisted words carved deep into the ground.

It seemed that when Empyrean Primordius became a demon but was still able to preserve his mind, he had carved these words with his claws.

It was the language of the Divine Realm. In these years, Lin Ming had already become accustomed to using the languages of the saints and spiritas, and now seeing the language of his home, he felt a certain closeness to it. But, the contents of the words carved into the ground were shocking, leaving Lin Ming speechless.

Just several words – 'I, even if I become a demon, I will not regret!'

These words contained a tragedy and sorrow that was difficult to describe. Lin Ming fell silent for a long time.

Become a demon?

Lin Ming recalled the first time he had stepped into the Road of Emperor and saw the words Empyrean Primordius had left behind – "The masterless rivers of stars in the endless cosmos, I shall rewrite the infinite history!"

In the past, just how daring and high-spirited were these words? But now, there was only sadness…

And besides these words, there were also other characters.

Moreover, there were many of them. They connected together in rows, also carved by claws. The strokes twisted like worms without any sense of beauty, but the rugged and fierce way in which they were carved left the soul shaking.

‘Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill all enemies! Hate! Hate! Hate! Hate! Hate forever!’

‘I have become a demon, and I fear death no more. But once I die in this strange land, will my ashes return to my homeland?’

‘Time to time clarity returns to me, time to time I am lost in chaos. I know that one day I will devolve into a base beast. On that day, do not kill me, and do not seal me away forever. Wait until the great army of the saints arrives and let my demon body enter the camp of the saints, drinking thirstily of their blood, devouring my fill of their flesh! Let me die heroically in battle!’

‘I have made a vow. I will suffer the most bitter and excruciating pains in the world, all for a single chance to slaughter the saints and have them perish!’

…

‘Xuanqing, if there truly is life after death, I hope that I will be able to walk beside you again, hand-in-hand, building our world of Samsara, living a hundred million years without regret!’

…

The writing became increasingly distorted, until finally it was difficult to recognize.

Sometimes thick demonic energy was emitted from the words, shocking the heart!

Sometimes they were pitiful and pained, as if recalling the nostalgia and guilt that Primordius felt towards Xuanqing. Seeing these words, the heart quaked and the eyes became wet…

Lin Ming stood there for a long time, seeming to relive the scene from tens of thousands of years ago when Empyrean Primordius was locked away in this dark world with dragon-trapping cables, left to struggle with this pain by himself.

After seizing the body of an abyssal, he would have to resist the soul-rending pain and terror of being invaded by the abyssal's spirit mark. Such a pain was unfathomable!

And originally, Empyrean Primordius had possessed a magnificent future as well as the Grandmist Spirit Bead. He should have been able to create his own history, but because of the saints he had lost everything and even his lover died for him.

Beside Lin Ming, the old God Sovereign quietly said, "Not many of our god race know that Primordius seized the body of an abyssal and is locked away here. I still remember the past, when Primordius was about to fall into depravity. During those brief moments of clarity he still cultivated the body transformation Laws and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, all in order to temper his demon body and prepare for the final war with the saints...

"At that time, the pain he withstood to his soul cannot be imagined. And he was well aware that there would come a day when he wouldn't be able to persist. I once asked him whether or not he would like me to end his life for him.

"Primordius said that he had already expected this result when he seized the body of an abyssal. But, he wasn't willing to die like this, because even if he fell into madness and lost the last traces of his sanity, becoming nothing more than a mindless beast, he still desired to one day break into the camp of the saints and perish together with the saint powerhouses...

"Many years have passed, and I often come to see him. He has already fallen into madness for a long time and lost all memories he once had. Now, the saints have arrived and started to kill my people and annex our lands. But I still cannot be cruel enough to unleash Primordius into battle. I know that once he breaks into the ranks of the saints, he will surely die in battle, just as he wrote. But no one would be able to recover his bones and his corpse would remain forever unable to return home..."

The old God Sovereign’s faint words were filled with inexhaustible grief. In a sense, Primordius was his son-in-law. Towards Primordius, he likely felt the same love as a father felt for their son…

The old God Sovereign let out a long breath and looked at Lin Ming. “Child, I can feel the same aura as Primordius emanating from your body. In addition with the Chain of Calamity you took out, I expect that you have gone to the place where Primordius fought and Xuanqing died in battle, even obtaining their inheritance?”

What the old God Sovereign felt within Lin Ming was the grandmist energy. This was the only reason he brought Lin Ming to this place where Primordius was caged, and allowed him to see Primordius.

Lin Ming quietly nodded…

Chapter 1871 – Selfless

Chapter 1871 – Selfless

…

…

…

“Child, pass me the Chain of Calamity. To repair it will require several months. When the Asura forbidden land opens, you will be granted a spot. Treasure it well. As Primordius’ descendant, you cannot let his legacy decline…”

The old God Sovereign stretched out his right hand and his fingers that resembled withered tree branches emitted a phantasmal light. His index finger gently touched Lin Ming’s forehead, and then motes of divine light gathered there, bringing with them a warm energy.

Lin Ming didn’t resist. He could feel the essence, energy, and divine that was gathered within the old God Sovereign’s body, a power of divinity that also embodied a universal love and compassion.

Finally, this light formed a mark between Lin Ming’s eyebrows.

Lin Ming could feel this wasn’t a normal mark. It also possessed protective properties.

After placing this mark, the old God Sovereign gently gasped, as if a little tired. It seemed that what he just did had consumed a considerable amount of strength.

Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred. “Your Majesty God Sovereign… you…”

“I’m fine.” The old God Sovereign waved his hand. “Child, I have placed the rune of the God Sovereign within you. Now that our great calamity is arising, the god race is panicking in places high and low… with the opening of the Asura forbidden land, many people wish to enter and seek out a lucky chance in order to protect themselves during this misfortune…

“Your arrival in the god race may have brought a sliver of hope to us, but you have also become competition to those in the god race. I will give you one of the spots but there will inevitably be those who criticize my decision. There may even be some people who act against you. In my eyes, you are still a child. Although your talent is good, you are too weak. This God Sovereign rune is personally placed on you by me, and will protect you from harm within the god race…”

The old God Sovereign lightly said, as if this were a minor matter not worthy of mention. But, Lin Ming was moved by these words. He didn’t think that the old God Sovereign would treat him like this. He remembered that even Morin, who obtained the title of Heaven’s Son, didn’t have such a God Sovereign rune between his eyebrows, but the old God Sovereign had actually marked him.

Moreover, Lin Ming could sense that placing this God Sovereign rune within him wasn’t easy at all.

The old God Sovereign had given him and not Heaven’s Son Morin this mark, and this was also the first time they had met.

“Senior God Sovereign…” Lin Ming wasn’t sure what to say. Towards this person who had given him a drop of graciousness, he had to return it with an entire spring’s worth.

“Don’t feel sorry.” The old God Sovereign could see through Lin Ming’s thoughts. He shook his head and said, “You returning the Chain of Calamity to my race is already a great favor to us. Moreover… I can feel an extraordinary strength from your body. Your aura even surpasses that of Primordius during his youth.

“Primordius possessed everything. But in the end, what he lacked was that last point of destiny. Before he grew, the saints sent out numerous Empyreans to strangle him to death. Child… let me give you a piece of advice. As long as you live, there is nothing more important than that, but if you can live then you will be… the future…”

As the old God Sovereign spoke these words, he gently patted Lin Ming’s shoulder and then turned to leave.

Lin Ming looked at the hunched back of the old God Sovereign slowly vanish into the darkness, an inexplicable sorrow in his heart.

He could feel that the old God Sovereign didn’t have much time remaining in this world.

The fires of his life were dwindling away, as if they would extinguish at any moment.

Throughout Lin Ming’s many years, he had seen and experienced many elders who had looked after him as much as they could. For instance, she who seemed icy cold on the outside, but actually deeply worried about humanity in the depths of her heart – Empyrean Divine Dream. There was also the one who seemed carefree and easygoing, but was stubbornly loyal and kindhearted – Empyrean Vast Universe. But, none of them were like the old God Sovereign, whose heart seemed as broad as the skies and as deep as the earth, seemingly able to tolerate everything.

The power of divinity that wrapped around his body was filled with a selfless love. His appearance was old yet kind, and his soul sea held an immensely profound wisdom and intellect. Such a person was naturally born to be a spiritual leader of his people.

Towards Lin Ming, the old God Sovereign didn’t ask what race he was or what his background was. It was only because he recognized Lin Ming that he provided all the help he could to Lin Ming. The concern he showed was just like an elder taking care of a junior.

This sort of selfless sentiment was rarely seen even amongst the humans.

The love of parents could be called selfless, but that was because a child was an extension of their parents' life. To love one's own child was naturally how things should be, but loving the children of others was rare.

As the old God Sovereign left, there was only Lin Ming and Empyrean Primordius remaining in this dark space.

In the darkness, Empyrean Primordius opened his ghostly green eyes that were bloodshot and filled with a hungering thirst.

Lin Ming sat down before Empyrean Primordius.

His entire body exuded the misty aura of the Grandmist Laws. Faint traces of grandmist energy surrounded Empyrean Primordius.

Lin Ming galvanized his martial intent, trying to connect to Primordius' heart. In this situation, he moved forwards a step at a time, trying to approach Primordius.

After being shrouded by this familiar grandmist aura, Primordius' eyes seemed to be a tiny bit less confused. The hostility that rolled off of him had reduced a little.

Lin Ming held his breath, revolving his strength to the limit. Black protective scales appeared on his body. He knew how terrifying Primordius was. Although Primordius had lost his thinking ability, the body of an abyssal was incomparably powerful. After having its body seized by Primordius, it could be called a union of power and power.

One step… two steps… three steps… Lin Ming slowly walked forwards, floating in the void of the darkness. He had already flown within range of the chains' reach. If Empyrean Primordius were to suddenly move, he could attack Lin Ming!

Lin Ming's guard was raised to the max. He stood a foot away from Empyrean Primordius, facing those terrifying eyes.

"Senior Primordius, you may not remember me, but my name is Lin Ming. I am your descendant, and I would like to help you…"

Lin Ming silently sent a sound transmission, attempting to rouse Empyrean Primordius' consciousness that was lost in the soul sea of the abyssal devil.

He thrust out a trembling hand that touched the giant forehead of the abyssal.

The abyssal forehead was icy cold and contained a dreadful killing intent.

In that moment, Lin Ming used the Magic Cube, trying to connect to the spiritual sea of the abyssal.

But the moment that the energy of the Magic Cube connected to the abyssal –

Empyrean Primordius' muddled eyes suddenly bloomed with a blazing killing intent. In an instant, it was like an ancient demonic beast had awakened within Empyrean Primordius' mind.

Lin Ming's heart skipped a beat. Without thinking, he rapidly drew backwards!

At the same time, he revolved his protective true essence to the limit. A giant stone gate appeared out of thin air in front of Lin Ming – this was the Primordius Gate!

Roar!

Empyrean Primordius howled and slashed out a massive claw with all his strength. The claw tore open the void and solidly struck the Primordius Gate!

Bang!

A deep bass sound shook the heavens and earth. Even though Lin Ming had drawn back at full speed, he had still been struck by this terrifying strength. His protective true essence immediately burst apart and his mortal body was forced to directly withstand this strength!

He gave a muffled cough as both his arms shattered and most of the scales on his back broke apart, revealing ghastly wounds!

Puff!

Lin Ming spat out a mouthful of blood. He was sent hurtling backwards like a meteor where he heavily smashed into the 12 giant ancient bronze coffins!

The ancient bronze coffins seemed to be forged from celestial bodies, completely still. As Lin Ming fell onto them, a resonant metallic strike rang through the air. Lin Ming could feel as his organs were jumbled about and his bones broke!

However, the energy Empyrean Primordius attacked him with still rampaged within his body, recklessly destroying him from within!

But at this time, the God Sovereign mark that the old God Sovereign had left between Lin Ming's eyebrows began to emit a faint misty light. A warm spring-like energy gurgled into his organs, neutralizing the majority of Empyrean Primordius' tyrannical energy.

Lin Ming slumped to the ground. He ruefully smiled. Due to that casual attack from Empyrean Primordius just now, he had taken a quick trip to death's door.

Luckily for him he was able to respond in time and was already prepared. With the powerful defensive abilities of the Primordius Gate and the protection of the God Sovereign mark, he had ended up alive.

It was good that Lin Ming's recovery abilities defied the heavens. Even so, he wouldn't be able to fully regenerate without 8-10 days of rest.

He had used the Magic Cube just now to probe Empyrean Primordius' situation, and learnt more about what happened 100,000 years ago.

Because he had to use the Magic Cube, this was the only reason he personally dared to brave the risks. He didn't want his secrets to be revealed to others. It wasn't that he didn't trust the old God Sovereign, but the importance of the Magic Cube was too great. Even for Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan who he absolutely trusted 120%, he still hadn't told them about this.

Concerning the Magic Cube, the fewer people knew, the better. For an extreme example, if these people were captured by the saints and had their souls searched, the news of the Magic Cube would be revealed.

After paying some prices, Lin Ming had obtained what he wanted.

He deeply sighed. In these last 100,000 years, Empyrean Primordius' soul had long since completely fused together with the abyssal. Wanting to separate the two with the Magic Cube was almost impossible.

Moreover, whether it was Empyrean Primordius or abyssal, both had left behind an incomparably formidable soul and will. Although Lin Ming had been able to strip down the spirit marks of souls in the past, those were for those that had died. To do so to living souls, and such powerful ones at that, was sure to produce resistance and a strong backlash. This was an impossible task.

Lin Ming sighed again. Then, at this time, he felt something in his heart. At this moment, faint waves of beating life transmitted from his inner world!

This beating life was intensely powerful, leaving Lin Ming overjoyed. He struggled to push himself onto his feet and took out a pitch black egg from his inner world – this was the dragon egg left to him by the Black Dragon.

He placed the black dragon egg outside the range of Empyrean Primordius' chains. For a time, all of the surrounding grandmist energy faintly gathered towards it. The runes atop the egg began to shimmer, emitting brilliant lights.

Empyrean Primordius' bloodthirsty eyes became confused once more as he saw this dragon egg.

At the same time, the life fluctuations coming from the dragon egg became increasingly fierce. Lin Ming could even feel that the small life within this black dragon egg had taken rudimentary form. These waves of life fluctuations were its heartbeats!

Chapter 1872 – Primordius' Heart

Chapter 1872 – Primordius' Heart

…

…

…

Seeing this, Lin Ming was aware that the black dragon would soon hatch!

Of course, this so-called hatching process would take years.

The hatching of a God Beast was an extremely long process to begin with. With the black dragon egg following Lin Ming, it had already taken numerous shortcuts to get where it was, thus it only used a short 100 years to grow to such a degree.

At this time, Lin Ming stroked the cold and smooth surface of the black dragon egg, not sure what was in his heart.

In the brief moment when Lin Ming tried to probe Empyrean Primordius' mind, as well as combining it with what the old God Sovereign and Empyrean Divine Dream had told him, he could imagine what had happened 100,000 years ago.

With this, he was able to confirm the reason and process of what happened in that great war atop the Sky Spill World 100,000 years ago.

Before, Empyrean Divine Dream had said that Empyrean Primordius' homeland was the Sky Spill Continent, and he also had an extraordinary link with the Sky Spill Planet.

Empyrean Primordius cultivated the Grandmist Heavenly Dao and dual cultivated body and energy. As for grandmist energy, it was the source of all matter that eventually evolved into all of existence during the formation of the universe. In the universe, whether they were planets, stars, or other celestial bodies, they were all evolved from grandmist energy. If Empyrean Primordius wished to cultivate the Grandmist Laws to the peak he would need to draw support from a celestial body and fuse it to himself.

And the Sky Spill Continent, as Empyrean Primordius' homeland and in addition to the amazing link between them, was perfectly suited to aiding Empyrean Primordius with the power of a planet.

Thus, the Sky Spill Planet became the starting point for Empyrean Primordius to form his own world!

Empyrean Primordius wanted to establish his own separate Heavenly Dao. That was… the Grandmist Samsara Dao.

At the same time, the woman that Empyrean Primordius loved above all, Heavenly Empress Xuanqing, also wished to join him in forming a great world that stood independent of the 33 Heavens.

At that time, she had wished to use the Grandmist Samsara Dao to reverse the cruel destiny of the primal god race, breaking free of the curse that hindered their ability to procreate and caused their decline!

The two of them had enormous ambitions. Everything they wished to do was heaven-defying!

But, the two of them had incredibly lucky chances that defied logic as well as talent that matched their aspirations and ambitions!

They constructed the Road of Emperor in the Sky Spill Continent. In truth, this Road of Emperor was an incomplete divine tool, and the foundation for Empyrean Primordius to establish the Grandmist Samsara Dao!

The Road of Emperor was connected to the 12 Skysplit Towers and drew in energy from this. As for the killing rules of the 12 Skysplit Towers, the twelve-winged Heavenly Demon, and so forth, they were all part of the Samsara Laws.

In the past when Empyrean Primordius managed the 12 Skysplit Towers, they had run in such a way.

Everything was incomparably perfect.

If things continued like this, then with enough time Empyrean Primordius might really have been able to succeed.

But, Empyrean Primordius never imagined that his sworn brother – Empyrean Thunder Punishment – was a spy placed in the Divine Realm by the saints. News that Empyrean Primordius possessed the Grandmist Spirit Bead was also passed to the saints through this spy.

Because of this, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn't hesitate to sacrifice his essence energy and even cause his boundary to drop in order to forcefully break through the God Lamenting Wall and send a number of peak Empyreans and an army of saints to join together with Empyrean Thunder Punishment and bring down Empyrean Primordius.

But because the God Lamenting Wall had been forcefully pierced through and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's boundary had dropped, he seemed to have been afraid that Empyrean Primordius would launch a final counterattack at the point of death and try to bring them both down together. Thus, he didn't personally come.

Even so, although the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had temporarily fallen in cultivation boundary, it would still have been impossible for Empyrean Primordius to threaten him. But because the spiritas were also greedily eying the situation, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had to be extremely careful. He didn't want to add wounds upon wounds, thus he remained in the Saint Convocation Heavens to manage the war.

This war was incomparably brutal.

In order to break through Empyrean Primordius' Samsara Heavenly Dao, Empyrean Thunder Punishment brought with him a massive number of masters from the Divine Realm. With their blood and corpses, he sundered the incomplete Samsara dao field that Empyrean Primordius had laid down.

And following that was a battle between Empyreans that even included the entire Sky Spill Planet being pierced through. A permanent curse was left behind on the Blood Slaughter Steppes and as long as a Divine Sea powerhouse or above entered, they would have sufficient energy to activate the curse and would be killed by the Blood Slaughter Steppes. This caused all life on the Holy Demon Continent to dread this land!

In the final battle between Empyrean Primordius and the saint Empyreans with Empyrean Thunder Punishment, the result was that both sides had been grievously wounded.

Empyrean Thunder Punishment died and the numerous peak Empyreans of the saints also approached death! The great strength of Empyrean Primordius and Heavenly Empress Xuanqing had completely surpassed their imaginations!

However… when the saint Empyreans were forced to retreat due to their heavy wounds, it was likely Empyrean Primordius had lost the Grandmist Spirit Bead at this time.

He lost his love, lost the Grandmist Spirit Bead, and everything he had tried to form over tens and hundreds of thousands of years had been utterly destroyed. During this time, Empyrean Primordius fell into fathomless despair!

He hated!

He hated to the extreme!

He wanted to slaughter his way into the world of the saints and kill the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, using the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's blood to pay homage to Xuanqing. But with his strength, this was far too unrealistic.

Moreover, what left him in despair the most was that he wouldn’t even have the chance to endure the pain and cultivate, finally being able to take revenge.

This was because at the time, the God Lamenting Wall had yet to recover. The Divine Realm and Saint Convocation Heaven were still open as before, being able to pass between the two universes.

He could even feel that he had been marked by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s divine sense!

Although this was only Lin Ming’s speculation, he didn’t doubt it. It was just like when he had been at the Fallen God Mountain Range, only to be suddenly marked by the Great Brahmic God King!

If a True Divinity possessed this ability, why couldn’t the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign mark Empyrean Primordius?

It had to be known that Empyrean Primordius had already possessed the Grandmist Spirit Bead for a long time by then, and his mortal body had been tempered repeatedly, making it an extremely precious treasure, one that was powerful to unimaginable levels. In a way, it was similar to the Eternal Soul which Lin Ming nearly had.

In this situation, could the body cultivating saints really give up on Empyrean Primordius’ mortal body?

Moreover, Empyrean Primordius’ talent was too heaven-defying. If such a peerless character who possessed such a deep hatred for the saints was left behind, that would eventually lead to tragedy. If he were allowed to freely go then perhaps in the true great war between saints and humanity, the saints would have a True Divinity opponent!

Thus, the saints had to choke Empyrean Primordius to death!

Empyrean Primordius also knew what was happening, because he could feel the True Divinity mark on him.

Thus, after quickly leaving behind his inheritance, he made a resolution; that was to sacrifice himself…

He was fully aware that after being locked on to by a True Divinity, no matter where he went the saints would find him. Even his battle comrade the Black Dragon might die and the inheritances he left behind would be destroyed. If so, then his final hopes would be dashed.

In order to preserve his inheritances and protect his Black Dragon friend, Empyrean Primordius had no choice but to break into the space channel that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had opened and rush into the Saint Convocation Heavens!

This was equal to entering the tiger's den by himself!

As for doing this, he had already resolved his determination to die here.

He knew it was impossible to return to the Divine Realm ever again. He didn't tell the Black Dragon of his departure, and the Black Dragon might not even have been aware that Empyrean Primordius had been locked on to by the divine sense of a True Divinity.

It was because of this that when Lin Ming returned to the Eternal Demon Abyss again and asked the Black Dragon about Empyrean Primordius' whereabouts, the Black Dragon hadn't known anything at all.

When Empyrean Primordius left by himself, he knew his situation couldn't even be described as ten chances of death and one chance of life. Thus, he left the most valuable Empyrean spirit treasures he had, which included the Primordius Gate, Primordius Bell, and Primordius Heavenly Palace, all behind, for his future descendants to come and take.

He didn't have the heart to watch the unparalleled beauty of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing slowly fade away after her death, eventually rotting and turning into bones.

Thus, he gouged out his own beating heart and placed it within her body, where it lay beating for 100,000 years.

He knew there was no significance behind this, that it was impossible to revive Heavenly Empress Xuanqing.

But the reason he did this was to forever protect the woman he loved, to protect the final pure bliss in his heart…

Until he died, he wanted those beautiful days to live on…

Thus… when Lin Ming found Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's body, she still seemed filled with life as before. From this point alone, it was clear how deep Empyrean Primordius' feelings were towards Heavenly Empress Xuanqing.

Lin Ming recalled the words that Empyrean Primordius had left behind –

'Xuanqing, if there truly is life after death, I hope that I will be able to walk beside you again, hand-in-hand, building our world of Samsara, living a hundred million years without regret…'

These words, how much hate did they contain, how much unwillingness?

After finishing all of this, Empyrean Primordius left. He concealed himself from the Black Dragon and brought his pursuers chasing after him…

No one knew where he went.

No one knew how lonely and tragic the road he had taken was…

In the Saint Convocation Heavens, Empyrean Primordius was naturally hunted down once more.

It was even possible that those chasing him down had passed back through the space channel between the Divine Realm and Saint Convocation Heaven.

Under the besiegement and hunting of so many people, Lin Ming found it hard to imagine how Empyrean Primordius had crossed the Saint Convocation Heavens and entered the Primeval Realm Ruins.

At this time, Primordius no longer had his heart, and hadn't even brought Primordius Heavenly Palace, the Primordius Bell, or the Primordius Gate with him!

By sheer willpower alone, he slaughtered his way into the Primeval Realm Ruins, tumbling down in a shower of blood.

Empyrean Primordius had long since chosen the Dark Abyss.

Perhaps, before Empyrean Primordius had first started establishing the Grandmist Samsara Dao, he had gone to the Primeval Realm Ruins, just like how Divine Dream had gone to the Soul World. Empyrean Primordius knew that the deepest depths of the Dark Abyss were a place where even True Divinities dared not venture.

He didn't want his body to be used by the saints, thus he hurtled towards the Dark Abyss!

Following that, it was like what the old God Sovereign had described.

When Empyrean Primordius fled into the Saint Convocation Heavens, struggled his way into the Dark Abyss and even seized the body of an abyssal, Lin Ming couldn't imagine just how much hardship and how many bitter tribulations he had gone through!

Now, he had become a demon. All that was left over in his heart was a thick hatred, one that would last until the ends of time!

After straightening out all of these events, Lin Ming could only sigh about where fate led a person. A peerless individual like Empyrean Primordius, who knew favor and gratitude, who had dominated the world, had actually ended up in such a state. How heartbreaking was this!

The only thing worth celebrating was that Primordius' inheritance still remained as well as the Black Dragon, and the protections he discarded also remained intact...

This was likely because the saints didn't think that the inheritances of a single Empyrean could change anything. And as the Lamenting God Wall slowly closed, wanting to return to destroy them would have cost a considerable price.

Chapter 1873 – Chosen

Chapter 1873 – Chosen

…

…

…

In the darkness that was as thick as water, grandmist energy filled the air.

Lin Ming meditated within this dark space. In front of him, the black dragon egg slowly floated. A trace of grandmist energy condensed upon the dragon egg, causing it to flash with a faint black light.

He had already sat in meditation here for three days in this dark space, comprehending the Concepts left behind by Empyrean Primordius as well as nourishing the black dragon egg with these concepts.

But at this time, Lin Ming's mind stirred. He heard the sound transmission of the old God Sovereign – the repair of the Chain of Calamity would begin soon, and all that needed to be done first was to settle the name list of those who would enter the forbidden land.

Lin Ming stood up, leaving this dark space.

………………………

The great white hall was vast and solemn. Looking up, one could see the endless starry skies, boundless and without end.

In the center of this hall was a giant round table crafted of black stone, and above this round table, ancient runes of the god race shined.

At this time, many people were already waiting in the grand hall.

As Lin Ming walked in, he immediately attracted the attention of those present.

This included Heaven's Son Morin. His gaze locked onto the area between Lin Ming's eyebrows and his eyes began to turn red.

This was because he saw the God Sovereign mark left there.

"The God Sovereign mark!"

Heaven's Son Morin gripped the armrest of his chair and nearly stood up. But at this time, the Great Elder of the god race held him down.

"Great Elder, how could the old God Sovereign have left the God Sovereign mark on him! He is just an outsider, so how could..."

Heaven's Son Morin had a complexion so ugly that it looked as if he would die at any moment. As the single greatest seedling of the god race's younger generation, he still hadn't received the blessing of the God Sovereign mark.

Although the God Sovereign mark didn't have any tremendously useful function in itself, it was a symbol of status, signaling that one had been approved by the God Sovereign.

"It's correct that the old God Sovereign left behind the mark, but... his blood vitality is chaotic, as if he has been injured."

The Great Elder said from beside Heaven's Son Morin. Heaven's Son Morin was stunned. He looked at Lin Ming and saw that his situation wasn't too good.

At this time, although Lin Ming's bloodstains had disappeared, after being struck by Empyrean Primordius the wounds left behind were no trifling matter. Even his organs and meridians had received damages that were yet to recover.

“This brat, I don’t know what tricks he used on the old God Sovereign. When the old God Sovereign led him away I have no idea where they went or what he was given.”

Heaven’s Son Morin indignantly said, his voice dripping with envy. He was a direct descendant of the god race’s royalty and Lin Ming was only a human, yet the old God Sovereign had made such a choice.

It wasn’t just Heaven’s Son Morin who noticed this. Many others also noticed the God Sovereign mark between Lin Ming’s eyebrows. For a time, they all spoke in hushed whispers.

“This is the boy? The one who brought the Chain of Calamity back to the god race?”

“The old God Sovereign has left the God Sovereign mark between his eyebrows. Could it be that he is planning to give this boy one of the spots to enter the Asura forbidden land?”

“Impossible. Only six people may enter the Asura forbidden land… we must still give the celestials two spots, leaving us four. That’s not enough for the Empyreans amongst our people. Perhaps even Heaven’s Son Morin might not be able to obtain a spot…”

As everyone discussed, some spoke with sound transmissions and some spoke out loud. They looked at Lin Ming, thoughtful gazes in their eyes.

When Lin Ming arrived at the black stone table, he chose a position far away and quietly sat down. The discussions of these people also fell within his ears.

“So there can only be six people on the name list… that’s less than I thought. I wonder why the celestials will be given two spots. The remaining numbers just aren’t enough for the god race.”

Lin Ming swept over those present. There were ten Empyreans here alone!

With a mere four spots available, there would definitely be no spots apportioned to them. As for middle Empyreans or upper Empyreans, those that were too old, those that lacked potential, or those with insufficient strength would also not be chosen.

The spots would only be left to the most powerful Empyreans with the brightest futures. This was because they would be able to play a role in the great calamity as well as prop up the god race’s future.

As for the juniors, if any one of them wished to obtain a spot in such a situation, it would be incredibly difficult!

At this time, another group of people entered the grand hall.

These people all wore black combat uniforms and their skin was pale gold. Their eyes were deep and a pair of strange-looking wings of light grew out from their backs.

These wings of light shimmered with strange runes, as if galaxies circled within them, lingering about.

Celestials!

This group that arrived all had auras as vast as a sea, unfathomably deep. Their eyes glittered with electric lights, each one possessing uncommon levels of strength.

“Honored guests have arrived. We welcome you.”

A deep voice rang out. The old God Sovereign’s figure appeared out of nowhere, as if he had always been standing in this grand hall. A light happy smile hung on his old face as his deep eyes looked at the powerhouses of the celestials.

The appearance of the old God Sovereign was completely different from what Lin Ming had seen before. The previous heavy sorrow had disappeared, replaced by an immeasurably deep aura, one like a stormy sea.

However, Lin Ming could also feel a trace of something unusual from the old God Sovereign's manner.

The last time he had seen the old God Sovereign, he had appeared aged and slow. In truth, that was the state that most accurately reflected his current situation. But now, facing the celestials, he was in a completely different state. It could be seen from this that although the celestials and god race were allies and partners, they also competed against each other. Not all of them were on good terms with each other.

"To Bagui of the celestials greets Your Majesty God Sovereign."

The middle-aged man leading the celestials was vigorous and proud, like dragons moving and tigers striding. His bow towards the old God Sovereign was neither arrogant nor subservient, and he immediately looked indifferent towards the old God Sovereign once more.

Although To Bagui had a high status amongst the celestials, in terms of rank he was far inferior to the old God Sovereign. It was perfectly within reason for him to bow.

At this time, To Bagui's aura was as deep as a pool. It was far heavier than many of the god race powerhouses' present.

Battle Sovereign To Bagui...

As the various members of the primal god race in the grand white hall saw this celestial, a brilliant light bloomed in their eyes.

The celestials were said to be headed by two sovereigns. The Patriarch of the celestials was their ruler, and as for To Bagui, he was actually the strongest powerhouse amongst his race. He had become an extreme Empyrean ages ago and had earned the title of Battle Sovereign.

With the invasion of the saints and the deteriorating state of the battlefield, the strongest forces of the celestials had still come here to the primal god race. It was clear just how great the importance was that they placed on the Asura forbidden land.

Without a doubt, the Battle Sovereign would enter the forbidden land!

"We greet Your Majesty God Sovereign." The other celestials bowed together.

10 billion years ago, the celestials were weaker than the god race. In even more distant times, the celestials had been vassals of the god race.

But afterwards, as the population of the celestials grew and their talent also surpassed that of other races, they slowly became independent, eventually occupying a number of universes not much fewer than the god race. Now, although the destiny of the celestials neared exhaustion, their numbers were still far greater than those of the primal god race. Today, every celestial that came had an overwhelming aura and they looked upon the god race as if they were equals.

In the grand white hall the several god race Elders present had complex emotions as they saw the expressions of the numerous celestial powerhouses present.

The primal god race of today was no longer the primal god race of days past. The celestials had become the earthshaking race within the Primeval Universe that could command the winds and waters, and in total strength they were no weaker than the primal god race.

And with the invasion of the saints, the celestials that possessed far greater numbers than the god race were able to resist the saints far more effectively.

This was the celestials? The primal god race had to give two spots to the celestials in order to resist the saints together?

Lin Ming secretly appraised the celestials and soon found several outstanding people amongst them.

Several were extraordinarily strong. They were clearly powerhouses amongst celestial Empyreans. Their two pupils blazed with brilliant splendor, and just by standing there it seemed as if the endless dao beat from their bodies, causing space to shake.

“I’m just a bag of old bones, there’s no need to be so courteous.” The old God Sovereign said with a smile. He lifted his hands and divine light sparkled in his eyes. “The restoration of the Chain of Calamity will begin soon, but before that we must decide on the list of candidates who will enter the Asura forbidden zone.”

“We have come here for that matter. Your Majesty God Sovereign, how many elites have the god race planned to send into the Asura forbidden zone?” To Bagui said.

“I have already decided this matter.” The old God Sovereign still had the casually happy smile on his face. He turned towards the martial artists of the god race. For a time, everyone held their breath.

All important matters of the god race had always been decided by the old God Sovereign. Only when the God Sovereigns decided to relinquish their authority on matters was it the turn of others to speak.

But, it was obvious that the old God Sovereign had decided who would enter the Asura forbidden zone by himself.

Not to mention the absolute authority of the old God Sovereign that all others had to submit to, the most vital point was that the Chain of Calamity’s god stone was in the old God Sovereign’s hands!

This god stone was even more important than the Chain of Calamity’s main form. Without it, opening the Asura forbidden zone was nothing but empty talk.

To Bagui and the other celestial powerhouses were silent. Only To Bagui’s eyes twinkled; it was unknown what he was thinking.

In the grand white hall, a pall of silence fell over all.

The primal god race only had four spots for those that could enter the Asura forbidden zone. But, there were more than four martial artists who met the required conditions.

Some god race powerhouses knew that they wouldn't be chosen, but they also belonged to their own respective factions within the god race and those that they favored. They naturally wished to push these people forwards.

Without a doubt, this would be an extremely difficult game.

The silence was shattered by the old God Sovereign.

"Then, I will now announce the names of those that will enter the Asura forbidden zone. The first person is Shenku!"

The old God Sovereign said with an even tone. Just as his voice fell, the eyes of all god race martial artists present turned to a middle-aged man.

This middle-aged man took a deep breath and stood up.

A god race Empyrean – Shenku. He was only a middle Empyrean but he was a mere 80,000 years old. He had a wonderful future awaiting him, and although it wasn't likely he would become a True Divinity, becoming a peak Empyrean wouldn't be a problem.

"Second person, Lanlu!"

The old God Sovereign spoke the name of another person, this one a woman. Her temperament was elegant and ethereal. Her cultivation was lower, only at the early Empyrean realm, but she was a mere 13,000 years old. Compared to humanity's War Buddha Emperor Shakya, she was only 2000-3000 years late in becoming an Empyrean.

"Third person, Diwuhen!"

The old God Sovereign spoke another name. This person was the youngest peak Empyrean amongst the god race and was only 2 million years old. His strength was incomparably deep and he ranked amongst the top couple of martial artists of the god race!

In truth, there was nothing to say about these three candidates being chosen – many people had already guessed that they would be the ones selected. Now was the key moment… the fourth spot!

Chapter 1874 – God Decrees

Chapter 1874 – God Decrees

…

…

…

The first three spots were basically impossible to compete for, because Shenku, Lanlu, and Diwuhen had a momentum that was far too strong. It wasn't difficult to imagine them being chosen.

But the fourth spot was different – there were far too many candidates!

Even Heaven's Son Morin had a chance.

Although Lin Ming looked down on Morin's talent, that was only because his level of judgment was far too high. Towards those geniuses that couldn't become True Divinities in the future, he felt they were all so-so.

In fact, according to the current trend of development of those within the god race, Morin had high hopes of becoming a peak Empyrean.

The title of Heaven's Son wasn't in vain.

But, he was far too young and his cultivation was only at the World King realm. Even if his strength increased he still wouldn't be helpful in the great calamity. Thus, he worried, afraid that the old God Sovereign wouldn't choose him.

And now the old God Sovereign seemed to be particularly looking after Lin Ming, making him even more anxious.

“His Majesty God Sovereign shouldn’t have lost his mind so badly to give such an important spot to an outsider!”

At this time, many people were sharing the same thoughts as Morin. The Great Elder patted Morin’s shoulder, indicating for him not to be worried.

The Great Elder also fantasized about being chosen, but he felt his chances weren’t too high.

The high level figures of the god race were divided into internal an external positions. Internal positions were Elders; they managed internal affairs. The external positions were war generals, responsible for managing the battlefield.

The ones that the old God Sovereign chose were all war generals. Elders, even the highest of Elders, basically had no hopes.

“The last spot…” The old God Sovereign folded his hands behind his back, his profound eyes sweeping over the faces of those present. “The last person is… Lin Ming!”

The old God Sovereign’s voice was calm; this was something he had already long known about.

However, no one else had been aware of this. Their reactions were intense.

This was a single stone throw bringing up a thousand waves!

Lin Ming!?

Not to mention the god race, even the celestials weren’t able to conceal their astonishment. They were extremely familiar with the powerhouses of the primal god race, and those that entered the Asura forbidden land had to be the strongest powerhouses as well as those with the most latent potential.

For instance, although the old God Sovereign was powerful, his potential had come to an end, so he wouldn’t enter.

As for Lin Ming, he was clearly at the middle Holy Lord realm and they had never heard his name before.

“The one the God Sovereign chose… could he be a hidden bloodline descendant?” The celestials’ Battle Sovereign To Bagui asked. He looked at the old God Sovereign with puzzlement in his eyes. But in that wizened old face which looked like a well that had never been stirred, he couldn’t discover any useful information at all.

“No, something’s wrong, that youth isn’t of the god race, but… an alien race?”

This discovery astonished To Bagui.

As for the powerhouses of the god race, they were no longer able to sit still!

The invasion of the saints, the arrival of the great calamity – entering the Asura forbidden land could be called the final chance for the primal god race to resist the saints.

Priority for such a valuable chance first needed to be given to Empyreans that could help in the war.

And if a spot was to be given to a junior, that spot should at least be given to a genius of their own race. How could they give such a massive lucky chance to an outsider?

After the shock came the anger.

“Your Majesty God Sovereign, I cannot understand this!”

An Elder directly stood up. To question the God Sovereign was deeply disrespectful, but in such chaotic times many people couldn’t attend to these formalities.

“I beg Your Majesty God Sovereign to reconsider.”

Another Elder stood up.

The Great Elder and Heaven's Son Morin were forcefully holding themselves back from standing up. Heaven's Son Morin's eyes had turned blood red and his fists were gripped so tightly that blue veins stuck out. He grit his teeth, holding in his words.

Other powerhouses of the primal god race spoke in turn, their words deeply sincere.

But, the old God Sovereign only said, "Have you all forgotten who brought back the main body of the Chain of Calamity?"

Without a doubt, Lin Ming had done a great favor for the god race.

"Of course I remember..." At this time, the Great Elder spoke up, "When Lin Ming first came to our god race, I was the one who received him, but... these matters must be separated. Lin Ming passed through multiple universes to return Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's Chain of Calamity to us – this benevolence, our god race will remember. But it cannot be forgotten that the Chain of Calamity originally belonged to our god race to begin with, so Lin Ming was simply returning something to its rightful owner. To pick up someone's wealth and return it, isn't that just the correct moral action?"

What the Great Elder said was absolutely justified. His eyes swept towards Lin Ming. Lin Ming only remained silent, not refuting this point.

The Great Elder smiled with victory. He continued to say, "Your Majesty God Sovereign, our god race aren't those that forget favors or don't know how to express thanks. Regarding Lin Ming, I believe we should heavily reward him. The god race has many treasures, and these can be granted to him at will, and even ancient divine techniques can be wholeheartedly taught to him. But, the Asura forbidden land was left behind by the ancestor of our people. In order to enter, one needs the accumulation of destiny. As a human, Lin Ming doesn't possess the god race bloodline at all. If he enters the territory of the Asura forbidden land he will not be able to penetrate as deeply as the young elites of our primal god race. It is simply a waste of nature's gifts.

“And with the great calamity approaching, Lin Ming is only a junior with a middle Holy Lord realm cultivation; there isn’t any use for him at all. The spots are limited… I ask Your Majesty God Sovereign to please think carefully of this decision.”

The Great Elder’s words were approved by many god race martial artists present.

Not to mention those that had hopes of struggling for the fourth spot, even those that didn’t have any hopes of entering the Asura forbidden land didn’t want to see a human like Lin Ming take away one of the lucky chances of their people.

For a time, many Elders stood up, opposing the God Sovereign.

Seeing this scene, the Great Elder was more than satisfied. His words were truly reasonable and matched common sense; they were sure to win the approval of the others.

At this time, Heaven’s Son Morin also stood up, his voice filled with energy, “Your Majesty God Sovereign, if you wish to compensate Sir Lin then I, Morin, am willing to help. My clan will contribute more than enough treasures…”

If he could enter the forbidden land, Morin didn’t mind bleeding a little. Regarding this, Lin Ming only faintly smiled. The treasures of Morin’s clan? To Lin Ming, they might only be dregs unworthy of mention.

However, he didn’t argue. He knew that with his current status, speaking was in vain.

At this time, the old God Sovereign straightened himself and lightly said, “I am only informing you of the decision I made, not discussing it with you all. I will not be reconsidering this matter. Those that oppose will be handled according to the rules of our people.”

The old God Sovereign’s voice was slow and meandering, as if he were talking about something immaterial. But, no one could raise their voice to resist him!

For a time, all the god race martial artists froze.

The old God Sovereign had mentioned the rules of their race!

If they followed the rules of the race, then this was naturally the rule that said the God Sovereign could not be disobeyed. This was no minor charge.

Within the god race, the old God Sovereign was kind and wise, loved by many. But if he became severe, he left people shivering in fear!

Although he was old, he possessed absolute authority within the god race. No one dared to disobey him.

One reason was that the other extreme Empyreans like Diwuhen were rocks that were found by the old God Sovereign's sharp eyes and polished into the gems they were today. They had been personally taught by him.

And, the second reason was that the god decrees left behind by the Asura Road Master were in the old God Sovereign's hands!

The words of the old God Sovereign seemed overbearing and unreasonable, just like some petty tyrant. But placed within the god race, these words represented the highest command; no one could violate them.

"But…"

Heaven's Son Morin was anxious, but facing the old God Sovereign he wasn't able to summon any courage.

The other Elders also didn't dare to speak, even though the discontent in their hearts had accumulated to the maximum.

For a time, all their hatred turned to Lin Ming. Lin Ming could immediately feel each gaze, filled with hate and dripping with envy, lock onto his body. If looks could kill, he'd have died countless times already.

Under the eyes of so many people, Lin Ming remained silent as before, without losing his composure.

Seeing Lin Ming's performance, To Bagui traced his chin, a thoughtful look in his eyes. Indeed, this youth was extraordinary.

However, this alone was surely not enough to have the old God Sovereign support him to such a degree. There had to be something special about this boy.

"Your Majesty God Sovereign, you remain as wise as ever!"

At this time, To Bagui stood up and spoke with a wide smile.

It had to be known that even if the old God Sovereign resisted all opposition and continued to support Lin Ming, although the others wouldn't dare to say anything, they would still remain dissatisfied with what happened. This was the old God Sovereign overdrawing his authority!

Perhaps even the old God Sovereign's several apprentices weren't too happy about their master's actions...

"Battle Sovereign, there is no need to exchange useless pleasantries. Let us get straight to the point. According to our earlier agreement, the god race and celestials will work together to repair the Chain of Calamity. I believe that the Battle Sovereign has already brought those things..."

"Of course!" To Bagui took out a small box from his spatial ring and placed it atop the table.

This box seemed common, but after it was brought out it affected the surrounding Laws, even causing tiny vortexes to gather around it.

It was clear that whatever was in the box was extraordinary!

"From ancient times, the ancestors of my people have left behind three god decrees!"

God decrees?

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred and he intently stared at the box. Repairing the Chain of Calamity required god decrees, and when fighting the saints, god decrees could also be used.

The god decrees left behind by the Asura Road Master, if used by a peak Empyrean, were enough to threaten the life of a True Divinity!

This sort of mysterious god decree left behind by the ancient supreme elders had far too many uses.

If he had the chance, Lin Ming certainly had to observe what it was.

He saw To Bagui carefully open the box and take out three withered and yellow symbol papers from a bed of yellow silk. These symbol papers looked ordinary, even somewhat rough. The paper used to make them was strangely thin, and the runes drawn atop them were like wriggling worms that exuded an incomparably ancient aura.

However, upon seeing these three symbol papers, Lin Ming was stunned.

These… these were the god decrees?

Weren't these divine runic symbols he studied at the Asura Road?

These lines, these runes, they were far too familiar. Lin Ming was also familiar with the Laws inherent within them!

The so-called god decrees left behind by the ancient elites of the past were divine runic symbols?

If so, then the ancient supreme elders that left behind their god decrees likely stemmed from the same lineage as the Asura Road Master!

And the so-called Asura Road Master’s god decrees were divine runic symbols drawn up by him!

Chapter 1875 – Smokeless

Chapter 1875 – Smokeless

…

…

…

The three ordinary and wrinkled yellow symbol papers seemed to contain an infinitely enchanting charm, gathering the gaze of all the primal god powerhouses present.

A strange light leapt into the old God Sovereign’s eyes. Inside, a black vortex seemed to swirl. A beam of black light shot out, lingering atop the pale yellow symbol paper.

His eyes contained the power of strange Laws. They were able to pierce through stars and gaze through the vastness of space, but upon touching the yellow symbol papers, they only shook a little before calming down.

“These really are god decrees left behind by ancient celestial God Sovereigns. The Laws inside can be used to repair the Chain of Calamity.” The old God Sovereign smiled, nodding his head.

As the other powerhouses of the primal god race saw how powerful these common-looking god decrees were, they let out sighs of relief.

The celestial powerhouses had smug expressions crossing their faces.

The Chain of Calamity was a True Divinity level magic tool. After being damaged, the Great Dao Laws inside would also be harmed.

And those Great Dao Laws were also of the True Divinity level. It was basically beyond the capabilities of an Empyrean level powerhouse to repair it.

Even if they used rare materials to bond the Chain of Calamity, in order to renew the Laws within they would have to use an upper True Divinity level god decree to make it whole once more.

Repairing the Chain of Calamity wasn't a simple task.

Every step had to be brought to the peak of perfection.

First, one had to discern just how many threads of Great Dao Laws within the Chain of Calamity were damaged, and then one had to extract the corresponding Great Dao Laws from the god decrees, fusing them together with the True Divinity magic tool to repair it.

But in order to achieve perfect synchronization, the fusion process required a massive amount of time and effort. At the least three or four upper Empyreans would have to work together.

In the primal god race, they also had god decrees passed down through their people. But, the god decrees in the hands of the primal god race didn't have sufficient Laws to repair the Chain of Calamity.

That was unless they used… the god decrees left behind by the Asura Road Master himself.

But the Asura Road Master's god decrees were the greatest weapons the primal god race had to deter and frighten the saints. How could they possibly use them to repair the Chain of Calamity?

In this sort of situation, the primal god race could only seek help from the celestials.

And it was because of this that the primal god race readily agreed to the terms and gave two entry spots for the Asura forbidden land to the celestials.

Looking at the god decrees, the god race martial artists nodded together.

At this time, the old God Sovereign said, “If there is no problem, then we shall begin repairs now.”

To Bagui hesitated for a moment, not answering.

“Oh? Is there some problem?” The old God Sovereign’s eyes looked towards To Bagui. His eyes seemed as if they could see through everything.

“My apologies…”

To Bagui shook his head. The primal god race members were stunned. At this critical moment could it be that the celestials planned to renege on their previous agreement?

“A situation has arisen within my people. Before coming here, there was a meeting of the high level figures within my race…” To Bagui said, sounding a bit chagrined.

“Get to the point.”

The old God Sovereign still had a kindly expression, but his eyes became several points sharper and fiercer, making it so that others didn’t dare to look at him.

To Bagui took a deep breath and frankly said, “Everyone here should be aware just how precious the god decrees are to our ancient races. Using one means there is one less, and they aren’t things that can be duplicated. For numerous hundreds of millions of years, whether it is the celestials or god race, there were many superbly talented individuals who had given everything to research these god decrees. However, even True Divinities weren’t able to unravel their mysteries, as if something has always been missing…

“My celestial race has far too few of these god decrees remaining. With the saints invading the Primeval Universe, because of the bigger picture, we celestials are willing to take out these three god decrees to repair the Chain of Calamity. This is a great risk to us. So… I hope we can obtain another spot to enter the forbidden land…”

To Bagui’s words seemed as if he were trying to negotiate, and one could even sense an incomparably sincere and friendly tone to them. But from how overwhelming his eyes were, the god race martial artists knew that this matter was something the celestials had decided far in advance, and they also wouldn’t budge on this issue either.

For a time, the entire meeting site was stirred into a great uproar. Many primal god race martial artists felt suffocated within their chests, as if their hearts were being set on fire!

Just what sort of lucky chance was the Asura forbidden land? And there were only six spots! Moreover, it was originally a lucky chance that belonged to the primal god race. For them to give the celestials two spots was already showing them extreme favor. But, they didn’t think that the celestials would try to take a yard after taking an inch, and would ask for another spot.

“The conditions have already been decided beforehand!” The god race Elders angrily said.

“I understand that, but when the conditions were drawn up that was in a situation where the main body of the Chain of Calamity had yet to be found. That is something which concerns the previous generation, and at the time, the great calamity hadn’t begun yet. Aren’t the god decrees also precious? However, every situation has to be considered on its own merits. Now, the god decrees concern the survival of my people!

“As for violating the previous agreement, my race will provide sufficient compensation. Moreover, I believe that the juniors of my celestial race will not waste this spot. At least, they will be a far better choice than certain individuals.”

As To Bagui spoke, his eyes glanced towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming frowned. He was perplexed at being suddenly drawn into this mess. But, with his cultivation and also as a human, it was normal for him to be rejected by others again and again.

He looked towards the three god decrees.

Without a doubt, these were divine runic symbols drawn and left behind by ancient True Divinities 10 billion years ago that were part of the Asura Road Master's lineage.

And according to what To Bagui said, these divine runic symbols could not be reproduced. This was because even if there was a True Divinity present, none of them had the ability to use the Asura Heavenly Dao within the 33 Heavens.

Extrapolating from what To Bagui said, they had always been missing a certain 'something'.

Thus, even if they studied the divine runic arts, none of them were able to copy the god decrees.

To Bagui looked at Lin Ming. Many others also turned to Lin Ming.

After the anger that flashed over the god race martial artists disappeared, a complex gloating expression reappeared in their wake. Although the celestials had broken their promise and slapped the god race in the face, this was a matter that didn't concern them. The one that should be worrying the most was that young human boy.

Many people were already unhappy that the old God Sovereign had designated Lin Ming as one of the people to enter. But because they were overwhelmed by the old God Sovereign's pressure, none of them dared to argue this point.

Now with the celestials exerting their own pressure, if one person had to be removed from the four chosen, that person would be Lin Ming!

Otherwise, the old God Sovereign's apprentices wouldn't agree with him either.

Now, how would the old God Sovereign deal with the situation?

"Battle Sovereign, your conditions are far too much!"

The Great Elder frowned as he spoke, but his tone was quite amiable. If this were before then he wouldn't have shown such goodwill to the celestials. But now that the entire Primeval Universe was facing a great calamity, they really did need to win over the celestials.

"With the great calamity descending upon us, the god decrees are also important to my people. If we cannot obtain another spot then we would rather not enter at all. After all, it is unknown what any of us can obtain from the forbidden land! With the god decrees, a single additional one will guarantee the survival of my people that much more."

To Bagui refuted, leaving no room for compromise. He wasn't joking at all.

"And besides..."

To Bagui suddenly flicked his fingers and a mote of dazzling light shot out. The mote of light rapidly spun in the air, growing until it became a white jade palace.

The front doors of the palace opened and a peerless woman flew out. Her figure was extraordinary and her face was shrouded in mystical light. Countless runes flashed around her like a storm of sand, making one unable to see her clearly.

Her wings were shining red, like billowing flames. Her entire body exuded an unpredictable rhythm that seemed to beat in harmony with the surrounding world.

Her cultivation was at the Great World King realm.

"Celestial Goddess Smokeless greets the seniors of the god race."

The woman's voice was like the keening of a phoenix. Every word she spoke seemed to be condensed from the true meaning of the Great Dao, floating up and down in the void as they shined with infinite understandings.

It was clear she was displaying her strength to its limit. For a Great World King to expose their strength in front of a crowd of Empyreans, that was an extremely arrogant and bold move to begin with. But, this woman named Smokeless indeed had the capital to do so!

“At just the Great World King realm boundary, she has the momentum of an Empyrean. Moreover, just her words seem to resonate with the Laws in this ancient grand hall… this woman is terrifying. If she has enough time she will become a True Divinity!”

As Lin Ming observed this celestial woman, a brilliant light flashed in his eyes.

Whether it was the god race or the celestials, neither of them had True Divinity powerhouses any longer. Otherwise, they wouldn’t have remained passively taking the attacks of the saints. If there really was a junior with high hopes of becoming a True Divinity, then this was unimaginably valuable to the god race and the celestials!

As the other primal god race powerhouses saw the strength displayed by this woman, their lips began to twitch. What Lin Ming saw, they naturally could see too.

The celestials actually possessed a junior with the talent and potential to become a True Divinity in the future!

It was no wonder that they requested another spot; it seemed it was all to support this woman named Smokeless.

Heaven’s Son Morin tightly gripped his fists, goosebumps rising all over his body. Without a doubt, this celestial woman, whether it was in strength or talent, was far above him!

“How hateful… I am already faintly inferior to that Lin Ming, but I’ve never truly fought him so I might not necessarily lose. But now, I am an entire level lower than this Smokeless. I just cannot summon the courage to contend with her!”

Heaven’s Son Morin hated everything to the extreme. Being the number one junior of the god race sounded glorious, but the old God Sovereign hadn’t placed him in his eyes. Even the God Sovereign mark had been given to the outsider Lin Ming.

“Smokeless? I remember now…”

The old God Sovereign's voice seemed to echo in the air. "The Celestial Patriarch found you, a little baby girl frozen in ice, within a land of extreme cold… your origins are strange and afterwards you went out to adventure but it was said that you died. I never imagined that when the great calamity arrived, you would return safely and your strength would have risen yet again…"

The old God Sovereign looked at Smokeless and slowly nodded. "How rare, how rare… after experiencing a catastrophe and not dying, you instead made a breakthrough. Your future achievements are without limit. In all my years, I didn't expect such an outstanding character to appear once more…"

The old God Sovereign's voice was touched with a trace of sadness. The ancient remnant races had indeed declined.

In the far off past, they once ruled the entirety of the 33 Heavens. Even if the saints and spiritas were added together, they had still been several of times stronger. But now, they didn't even have a single True Divinity.

"Your Majesty God Sovereign, what do you think of Smokeless? Does she have the qualifications to enter the Asura forbidden land?" To Bagui asked with a smile.

Chapter 1876 – Lin Ming's Request

Chapter 1876 – Lin Ming's Request

…

…

…

"Smokeless… indeed has the qualifications to enter the Asura forbidden land." A faintly happy smile continued to hang on the old God Sovereign's face. The invincible glory that billowed from his body hadn't weakened in the slightest.

"Haha, many thanks for the praise, Your Majesty God Sovereign!"

To Bagui laughed and the celestial powerhouses also smugly glanced at each other. The primal god race's old God Sovereign had an extraordinarily high level of judgment. It was rare for any youth amongst the god race to be praised by him.

But just now he had praised Smokeless twice. This was more than enough for the celestials to feel proud of her.

"Smokeless, hurry and thank His Majesty God Sovereign." To Bagui said to Smokeless. He was satisfied with her display of strength just now.

Smokeless smiled at the God Sovereign and bowed, then returned to the ranks of the celestials.

Looking at Smokeless, the old God Sovereign nodded. "Very good."

These two words were brief and succinct, each word heavier than gold.

“However…” The old God Sovereign changed the topic, “Of those that I chose, the child Lin Ming also possesses the qualifications to enter the Asura forbidden land. His talent is almost the highest I have seen in my life…”

The old God Sovereign’s words shocked all the martial artists present.

“Almost the highest he has seen in his entire life?”

None of them dared to think that the old God Sovereign would use such words to describe Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was also dumbfounded. In truth, he had never exposed his true strength in front of the old God Sovereign, so he didn’t know why the old God Sovereign had come up with such an estimation.

This judgment was just a bit too incredible, right!?

“Your Majesty God Sovereign’s assessment is indeed high!” To Bagui faintly smiled. But, he didn’t believe in the old God Sovereign’s words. He felt that the old God Sovereign couldn’t back down from his words, thus he had forcibly elevated Lin Ming with praise.

Between Lin Ming and Smokeless, it was obvious who had the qualifications to enter the Asura forbidden land. Ignoring their talent, Smokeless’ cultivation was far higher than Lin Ming’s. In addition to that, for better or worse, Smokeless was also part of the ancient remnant races and Lin Ming was a human. In terms of bloodline, Lin Ming didn’t have any advantage at all.

“Talent can only be determined through competition, but… what a pity, little friend Lin’s cultivation doesn’t seem too high. There is no way to compare their talents.”

To Bagui’s voice was faintly mocking, as if he were deriding Lin Ming’s cultivation.

If Smokeless was also a middle Holy Lord, she could fight a round with Lin Ming. But currently, Smokeless was a Great World King, an entire large boundary higher than Lin Ming. If they fought, wouldn't that just be bullying?

Let alone the celestial powerhouses, even the powerhouses of the god race didn't believe the old God Sovereign's words; his words seemed completely unfounded.

The old God Sovereign was left speechless. The current scene had left him in a dilemma. He truly hoped that Lin Ming could obtain one of the spots. This wasn't just because Lin Ming had returned the Chain of Calamity, but because his talent was also extremely high. Moreover, Lin Ming was the successor to Empyrean Primordius and also shared a strand of fate with Heavenly Empress Xuanqing.

These were all reasons why the old God Sovereign favored Lin Ming, but they weren't every one.

Lin Ming was able to obtain the Chain of Calamity and pass through multiple universes to safely arrive at the primal god race, at the time when they needed to open the Asura forbidden zone the most.

The difficulty to accomplish this, just how great was it? The old God Sovereign felt that Lin Ming was fated to enter the Asura forbidden land.

As if the reason he passed a trillion trillion trillion miles was all in order to enter the Asura forbidden land.

With such a fate supporting him, it was highly likely that Lin Ming would find his good fortune within the Asura forbidden land!

But now, the celestials had hidden their depths and had revealed the miraculous woman known as Smokeless.

Smokeless was clearly very young, even younger than the primal god race's Heaven's Son Morin. Yet, her achievements were higher than his. Her potential was infinite.

“The calamity has arrived, so how come such youths with unlimited potential haven’t appeared within my primal god race… perhaps the destiny of my god race has really come to its natural end…”

The old God Sovereign silently sighed.

“Your Majesty God Sovereign, have you made your decision? Will you agree to the request of my people?” To Bagui aggressively asked. If the old God Sovereign didn’t agree then they would have no means to enter the forbidden land.

The celestials weren’t trying to be threatening; it was also because the god decrees were far too valuable.

For a time, the eyes of everyone focused on the old God Sovereign.

Facing pressure from the celestials, facing Smokeless’ infinite potential, and with the invasion of the saints behind all of this, if the old God Sovereign continued to choose Lin Ming to enter the Asura forbidden land, then he would inevitably have to bear the consequences of doing so. His prestige would suffer a major blow.

Seeing the old God Sovereign remain silently lost in thought for such a long time, Lin Ming hesitated for a moment and then stood up.

“Your Majesty God Sovereign, to discuss the spots to enter the Asura forbidden zone before repairing the Chain of Calamity, that seems far too early to do so. Wouldn’t it be better to repair the Chain of Calamity and then discuss matters again?” Lin Ming said in a bass voice, his words thick with sincerity.

For a time, everyone in the grand hall turned to Lin Ming.

“Repair the Chain of Calamity first and then discuss the spots? Heh, are you suspecting that even with my race’s god decrees, the Chain of Calamity still cannot be repaired?”

To Bagui coldly sneered, “If my celestial race helps repair the Chain of Calamity, what will happen to that spot?”

“Your Majesty Battle Sovereign seems to have misunderstood. I am not suspecting whether or not the celestials have the ability to repair the Chain of Calamity, but am only thinking of other possibilities. Perhaps your repair method might not be the best method…”

What!?

Lin Ming’s words caused the celestial martial artists to glare at him in rage. The god race martial artists were also left speechless.

Could this Lin Ming have gone mad? As a Holy Lord, he was wondering whether the many celestial Empyreans possessed the ability to repair a True Divinity spirit treasure?

Those that could help to repair a True Divinity spirit treasure were all upper or peak Empyreans. Moreover, god decrees left by superior True Divinities had to be used. How could a mere junior think of questioning the process!?

“Who gave you the courage to dare question us? How ridiculous!”

To Bagui’s words became gradually colder. Because the old God Sovereign appreciated Lin Ming, he had given several points of respect to Lin Ming. He could feel that there was something unusual with Lin Ming, otherwise how could the respected old God Sovereign hold him in such high esteem?

But as To Bagui heard Lin Ming’s current words, he only coldly humphed again and again.

This junior was arrogant to the point of stupidity!

On the side of the god race, the old God Sovereign also faintly frowned. He didn’t know what Lin Ming was thinking, but he didn’t think that Lin Ming would do something muddle-headed like this.

"Although your words are stupid to the point that I don't even want to bother arguing with you, since you've said them, I will personally demonstrate the ability of my celestial race. If my people can smoothly repair the Chain of Calamity, you will give us your spot!"

As To Bagui spoke, he placed the three god decrees on the black table.

Lin Ming had already seen the celestials' god decrees. These three god decrees were indeed left behind by outstanding existences amongst True Divinities!

True Divinity. In the current 33 Heavens, only peak races possessed them, and there were only a scant several of them. Even in ancient times 10 billion years ago, they were still extremely rare existences.

As for outstanding True Divinities, they were even rarer!

Moreover, only the lineage of the Asura Road Master was able to leave behind god decrees. And with the endless flow of time, in the current age, the god race and celestials had an extremely limited number of god decrees in hand.

The three god decrees in front of To Bagui had been safely preserved for 10 billion years already.

No matter how powerful a force field, no matter how powerful the Laws, after such a long time it was inevitable that there would be weakening.

From 10 billion years ago until now, these god decrees had already fallen by a level.

The god decrees created by upper True Divinities might only be as strong as those created by ordinary True Divinities.

Originally, in order to repair the Chain of Calamity, the truth was that using ordinary True Divinity god decrees was more than enough. But as the power of Laws within the god decrees slowly faded away, only the god decrees left behind by upper True Divinities would work.

After carefully observing these three god decrees, Lin Ming who had been standing behind the old God Sovereign suddenly walked forwards. “May I look at one of these god decrees?”

“Insolence!”

The celestial Elders were enraged. “Human brat, you shouldn’t bite off more than you can chew. The god decrees are 10 billion years old, supreme treasures passed down from generation to generation amongst my people. They are incomparably sacred treasures. Moreover, each one has immeasurable influence within the Primeval Universe. Do you think you can look at one just because you want to? If you damage a single one, not even a thousand deaths can make up for it!”

“I only want to probe with my divine sense, I won’t move it at all. If the god decrees are so fragile that they will explode by being touched by my sense, how could they still be used to face your enemies? I fear that if you took one out when you face the saints, it would already be blown to ashes by the Empyreans or True Divinities of the saints before you could activate it.”

Lin Ming’s words were slightly mocking. The numerous celestial powerhouses angrily glared at Lin Ming. So many Empyreans were present and yet a mere Holy Lord realm boy was brashly talking like this in front of them. Wasn’t this too improper?

And at this time, To Bagui waved his hand, quelling the anger of the celestial powerhouses. He looked at the old God Sovereign first and saw that he didn’t have any intention to stop Lin Ming, but instead allowed Lin Ming to continue disgracing himself.

If so, then he didn’t plan on giving the old God Sovereign any face either. He sneered and said, “How interesting. If you didn’t have one of the spots to enter the Asura forbidden land then I wouldn’t be bothering with you to begin with. Since you wish to take a look then I will let you do so. I would also like to see what sort of mess you will make and just how you’ll settle things then!”

As To Bagui spoke, he pressed his hands on the black stone table. The three god decrees slowly fluttered in front of Lin Ming, falling three feet before him.

The power of divinity gathered around the god decrees, slowly forming a black force field. As they agreed, Lin Ming wouldn't be able to touch them, and even if he wanted to he couldn't pass this force field.

"Your Majesty God Emperor, what is he thinking? Our god race will become a laughing stock to the celestials..."

The god race powerhouses didn't know what Lin Ming could possibly accomplish. But, the old God Sovereign seemed to be tacitly allowing his actions.

"Even the previous God Sovereign wasn't able to perceive anything, so what can this human brat do?"

The many god race Empyreans were left speechless. The god decrees had been passed down for so many years. Not to mention the ancient past, even just a billion years ago there had been a god race God Sovereign who had broken into the realm of True Divinity and had studied the god decrees, but in the end his efforts had come to nothing.

And the truth was that he had used a 1000 thousand years to deduce many of the Laws.

These Laws formed a self-contained system. They seemed perfect, each one mutually complementing others, as if there were endless possibilities in how they could grow.

But... it was still no use!

A perfect set of Laws that couldn't be learnt by everyone, that couldn't attack, couldn't defend, and couldn't even be used in alchemy or anything else, what was the use of it?

Thus, the god decrees could not be perceived nor could they be copied. They could only be considered one-time use magic tools. Every time one was used, there was one less in existence!

Chapter 1877 – Repairing the Decree

Chapter 1877 – Repairing the Decree

…

…

…

Lin Ming stood before the black stone table, a mere three feet away from the god decrees. He stood still, allowing his divine sense to sink into them.

The celestial powerhouses all had thoughtful smiles on their faces. As for the primal god race powerhouses, they all had complex moods; they felt as if they were being seen as jokes by the celestials.

“What are you all thinking? This Lin Ming isn’t even a part of our god race. Even if he shames himself here, it has nothing to do with our god race!”

Heaven’s Son Morin indignantly said.

“Let him be. If he loses face then that is the same as his Majesty God Sovereign losing face, but since His Majesty had consented to this then there is nothing we can do.”

The Great Elder said with finality before composing his mind.

And at this time, Lin Ming didn’t pay attention to the reactions of the many powerhouses around him.

He had already entered into the fused martial intent state, his mind completely focused on the three wrinkled yellow god decrees before him. In his eyes, a mystical aura began to gradually flow over from them.

He could see the revolution of the Asura Heavenly Dao. Faint traces continuously circulated within the god decrees.

These three god decrees were the work of ancient upper True Divinities; they were far beyond normal. With Lin Ming's current level of strength, it was absolutely impossible for him to create imitations of them.

But, just comprehending the truths within and polishing some of the flaws might actually be possible!

After all, the Laws were interlinked and Lin Ming had obtained the true legacy of the Asura Road Master. In particular, after he entered the ancient galactic battlefield within the Akashic Dream World, his comprehension of the Asura Sutra and his ability to utilize the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws had reached frightening degrees.

"Mm?"

Suddenly, a strange light flashed through Lin Ming's face. He could feel his divine sense falling into an endless black hole, as if he were being sucked in by the energy of the god decrees.

"The celestials' three god decrees have eroded through 10 billion years of time, and sections of the Great Dao that formed them have been damaged. Thus, in the lines, there are energy black holes that swallow my divine sense..."

Understanding what was happening, Lin Ming didn't take back his sense. Instead, he allowed it to revolve around the energy black hole, constantly deducing how to repair it.

"These are True Divinity level god decrees after all. My ability is lacking, but I should be able to unravel some of the Laws..."

Lin Ming's eyes became increasingly bright. Without noticing it, over an hour had passed.

To the martial artists present, this amount of time wasn't anything at all. Since they believed Lin Ming was playing games with them, they started to become impatient.

"Your Majesty Battle Sovereign, how long will we continue waiting?"

Smokeless asked. She wasn't impatient, but she simply felt that for so many powerhouses to surround a junior and watch him play around with treasures and also wait for such a long time, this scene was far too stupid.

And at this moment, Lin Ming suddenly stopped.

He looked towards the old God Sovereign and said, "Your Majesty God Sovereign, do you have a god decree drawn up by an ordinary True Divinity? I would like to reference it."

Lin Ming had made far too many requests, again and again playing tricks. Many people felt they were nearing the limits of their endurance.

Looking at these three god decrees wasn't enough, but now he wanted to play around with the old God Sovereign?

The old God Sovereign didn't refuse him nor did he ask Lin Ming what he wanted to do with an ordinary True Divinity god decree. He simply flicked his fingers and with a flash, a god decree flew out from his spatial ring, shooting towards Lin Ming.

If a martial artist could break through to the realm of True Divinity, that meant their talent was enough to overwhelm all, far surpassing all others in the vastness of space.

There were few True Divinities as it was, and upper True Divinities were even rarer. Even in ancient times this was also true.

Thus, there were correspondingly few god decrees left behind by upper True Divinities. As for god decrees left behind by ordinary True Divinities, there were many more of them.

After the old God Sovereign tossed out the ordinary True Divinity god decree, Lin Ming grasped it in his hand. He placed it between his middle finger and index finger, probing it with his sense.

A god decree left behind by an ordinary True Divinity was far simpler.

And at the same time, over the last 10 billion years these god decrees had also been eroded by time. The Great Dao lines had received minor damages.

As for the strength within these god decrees, a great deal had leaked out!

However, a True Divinity was still a True Divinity. Even if the strength had leaked out, the god decrees drawn by a True Divinity could not be compared to those drawn by an Empyrean.

This was because the height of the Laws was completely different.

Lin Ming investigated this god decree for another hour. Many of the celestial martial artists had reached the end of their fuse.

“He’s playing so many tricks.”

Someone derided. But, seeing that To Bagui was calmly watching without any worry, these people also silently waited.

“Let him stumble around until he falls over. At that time, I wonder if the god race will still fight for his spot?”

“Mm, at that time the god race’s old God Sovereign won’t have anything to say about it either!”

Thinking that they would receive the spot from all of this, many of the celestial Empyreans began to warm up with happiness.

Of the three spots for the celestials, the Battle Sovereign would take one, and the second would undoubtedly go to Smokeless. But as for the last spot, they all had a chance to obtain it!

Such a lucky chance, who wouldn't desire it?

As all these people were plotting their strategies, at this time, Lin Ming suddenly stirred. He placed the old God Sovereign's god decree together with the three other god decrees.

The four god decrees were lined up together.

At the same time, Lin Ming began to activate the Asura Heavenly Dao Diagram within his body.

The dao diagram had been obtained from the Asura Road's final trial and had fused together with his flesh and blood. It was equal to creating a miniature Asura Road world within his body, allowing him to utilize the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws as he pleased.

And most importantly, this dao diagram had been personally created by the Asura Road Master, and the Laws contained within it were the most primitive and fundamental true meanings of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws.

Omm –

As the Asura Heavenly Array Diagram began, Lin Ming's aura started to change, as if the essence of the 33 Heavens' Heavenly Daos was gathering unto him.

Within his skin, his flesh, his bones, infinite Asura Heavenly Dao Law runes began to sparkle, releasing limitless mystical strength.

"Mm… this is…"

In the grand hall, whether it was the primal god race or celestials, their ancestors were all from the lineage of the Asura Road Master. Now that Lin Ming suddenly erupted with the aura of the 33 Heavens, they were left bewildered.

This mysterious aura as well as these incomparably familiar yet plain-looking runes… how could Lin Ming be able to use them?

The most source Law runes of the Asura Heavenly Dao flashed, as if they were the peaks of towering mountains.

Each peak released endless light and a boundless might, as if a rumbling river of stars was surging into the middle of the god decree.

And the object Lin Ming chose was the god decree the old God Sovereign had lent to him.

As the originally silent and motionless god decree felt the most primitive power of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, it began to awaken like a great beast stirring from its deep slumber.

With a loud humming sound, light shot out from the yellow god decree.

Each ray of light was as deep as a sea, shaking the world.

These beams of light seemed immensely powerful, but as they pierced Lin Ming they went straight through his body without affecting him at all.

As this strange scene fell into everyone’s eyes, even those that didn’t want to admit it couldn’t help but acknowledge that Lin Ming had his own peculiar methods.

As the power of the god decree was energized, Lin Ming found an opportunity. His hands traced exquisite arcs in the air, causing a wisp of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws to change paths and flow into the middle of the god decree.

The path of this wisp of light was unpredictable. The power of strange Laws surged, heartily wandering within the god decree.

"What is he doing?"

Many people felt that something was wrong. At this time, no one dared to look down on Lin Ming again.

They could clearly see that Lin Ming was carving a rune into the god decree!

This was a god decree left behind by a True Divinity? How could a mere Holy Lord leave a rune atop it?

Lin Ming's ten fingers flashed, his face solemn. Beads of sweat ran down his forehead and temples. As his understandings into the internal structure of the god decree became more profound, he became increasingly alarmed.

A trace of his life essence followed along the ghostly path of the god decree's Asura Heavenly Dao Laws. It was like he was continuously bumping into an endless wall of steel.

"Here..."

After a long period of time, he suddenly saw a trace of damage within the interior of the god decree.

In terms of repairing divine runic symbols, Lin Ming could be called a veteran. His fingers slowly swiveled in the air as he formed beautiful runes that constantly marked the area where the Law lines were broken.

Within each path, an infinite number of changes was possible.

To repair these divine runic symbols that had existed for 10 billion years already, Lin Ming didn't even need materials, because the materials were already gathered and readied; they had all been incorporated into the symbol paper.

Everything would be fine as long as Lin Ming could rewrite the damaged Laws.

Lin Ming focused his mind, constantly deducing the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws and patching up the damages…

However, these were still god decrees drawn up by True Divinities. Even a minor repair not worthy of mention required Lin Ming to use up a tremendous amount of energy. Not only did he need to thoroughly comprehend the Laws, but he needed to supplement them with an enormous amount of the power of divinity.

To Lin Ming, this was a gigantic use of energy.

More and more sweat tumbled down Lin Ming's forehead.

But at the same time, he continued to repair. The god decree emitted a brilliant light, blazing to the eyes and making one unable to look directly at it.

Lin Ming's figure was enveloped in this radiance, making him seem blurry.

"He… what is he doing?"

Whether it was the martial artists of the god race or celestials, they were all stunned.

Even an Empyrean couldn't understand Lin Ming or the Laws he was using.

Although they couldn't understand, they were still all people with extremely sharp vision. This light and the charm of these Laws were not only mysterious but contained unimaginable truths within.

What Lin Ming was doing, none of them could understand.

"Something's wrong! No… this… the power within the god decree is increasing!"

A celestial powerhouse's eyes popped wide open. He could clearly feel that in the blazing light, the god decree beneath Lin Ming's hands was slowly strengthening!

That ordinary True Divinity god decree was now slowly overtaking the three god decrees created by an upper True Divinity!

How was this possible!?

“Could this boy have referenced our celestial race’s god decrees to transform the old God Sovereign’s god decree and make it stronger!? Am I dreaming here!?”

To Bagui suddenly thought of this possibility. But, this was a completely absurd conclusion, one he couldn’t accept at all!

Chapter 1878 – New

Chapter 1878 – New

…

…

…

The god decrees had existed for so many billions of years and yet no one had been able to completely understand them, much less improve or copy them.

But now, reality was laid out before them. Lin Ming had actually referenced the three upper True Divinity god decrees to transform an ordinary True Divinity god decree. This was simply incredible!

Let alone To Bagui, even the god race's old God Sovereign was utterly shocked.

The old God Sovereign had lived for innumerable years and his judgment had reached a nearly omniscient level. He intuitively felt that Lin Ming was extraordinary.

But no matter what his intuition told him, he never would have imagined that Lin Ming could repair god decrees.

The light bloomed increasingly strongly, completely covering Lin Ming within it. The mysterious Asura Law runes danced in the air. Lin Ming's hands raced through the skies, the speed of his movements becoming faster and faster!

Beneath the gaze of all present, the energy fluctuations within Lin Ming's god decree also became increasingly strong!

In terms of energy, it would soon reach the three god decrees brought by To Bagui!

At this time the celestial powerhouses could no longer sit still.

For the ancient remnant races, these god decrees were incomparably precious. Using one meant one less in existence. Yet, they could be transformed by a Holy Lord junior?

The upper True Divinity god decrees brought by the celestials, ones that they were almost unwilling to give up, were now almost similar in energy fluctuations to an ordinary True Divinity god decree that had been fiddled around with by Lin Ming. Didn't this mean that their previous protection and worship of these upper True Divinity god decrees was nothing but a joke?

If a junior could create and improve these god decrees, weren't they just not valuable at all!?

"Your Majesty Battle Sovereign, if that human boy is able to complete the transformation and remake the ordinary god decree with the same level of strength as a peak god decree, then the primal god race won't need us to open the forbidden land at all."

A celestial Elder suddenly said.

As To Bagui heard this, his expression became far more interesting.

The reason that the primal god race would request the help of the celestials and ally with them was because they only had the strongest god decrees left behind by the Asura Road Master as well as those left behind by ordinary True Divinities; they were lacking god decrees left behind by upper and middle True Divinities.

This was because there were far too few upper True Divinities. The primal god race had also inherited god decrees left by upper True Divinities, but for various reasons they had used them up.

But with Lin Ming, this problem no longer existed.

The peak Empyreans of the primal god race would absolutely be able to repair the Chain of Calamity by themselves!

"How could this be, I just cannot understand…"

To Bagui felt his thoughts fall into utter chaos. He didn't know how Lin Ming accomplished what he did, but this was the indisputable truth.

He originally wanted to blackmail the god race into giving up even another spot, but now, the god race didn't need them at all. They might not even receive a single spot!

Everything had been lost!

To Bagui fell into depression. He madly desired this lucky chance, and Smokeless also needed this opportunity!

Smokeless was the hope that would stabilize their celestial race in the future.

"This boy must have some secret!"

To Bagui said with a voice dripping with hate as he gripped his fists. Even if someone killed him he would never have believed that Lin Ming's perception was so powerful that he could unravel the god decrees that not even True Divinities could understand, and do so in a short two hours. In other words, the peerless God Sovereigns of the ancient remnant races were nothing but a joke before him!

But so what if he had a secret? Seeing how the old God Sovereign was supporting Lin Ming, Lin Ming would likely become a treasure of the primal god race.

To transform an ordinary god decree into a top god decree, he more than deserved such treatment!

Perhaps even the entire primal god race would prostrate themselves to this boy.

At this time, no matter what anyone else was thinking, Lin Ming paid no attention to any of them. His focus was tense and his forehead was dripping wet.

He had underestimated just how terrifying a True Divinity level divine runic symbol was.

Even if he thoroughly understood the Laws, he still lacked strength. Wanting to completely restore these divine runic symbols that had been eroded over 10 billion years was excruciatingly difficult.

Moreover, his physical condition was in a poor state!

His body shook. Because he was exhausting himself of his strength, Lin Ming's fingers trembled and the runes nearly exploded around him.

If the runes collapsed, then even though the god decree would be fine, most of the work Lin Ming put into repairing it would be destroyed!

Lin Ming frightened himself for a moment. And, this scene was noticed by the old God Sovereign. The old God Sovereign was able to clearly feel that Lin Ming, wrapped in the blazing light, had a much weaker aura than before.

That's right… Lin Ming was injured before, and he had yet to fully recover.

Many people recalled that when Lin Ming first entered the grand hall, his blood vitality had been unstable and his meridians and organs had been broken in various places!

His injuries were due to Empyrean Primordius.

These were deep wounds caused by a peak Empyrean. Even if Lin Ming had prepared himself earlier and had blocked over 95% of the damage, the remaining amount was still no laughing matter.

"This boy, he can still repair the god decree after being injured? This is…"

Heaven's Son Morin was speechless. Lin Ming's actions had left him lacking even a little bit of confidence. The difference was too great!

At this time, the old God Sovereign flung wide his sleeves and a great sun seemed to explode from within his body. Billowing strength rolled towards the old God Sovereign before transforming into a gentle divine light that shot into Lin Ming's body.

This gentle divine light slowly sank into Lin Ming.

Normally speaking, the power of an Empyrean powerhouse was formidable and unruly. If it entered the body of a junior, they simply wouldn't possess the ability to control it. But, the power shot out by the old God Sovereign was gentle to the extreme, allowing Lin Ming to freely use it as he wished.

For a time, Lin Ming felt like his body was a dry field that was suddenly experiencing a revitalizing rain. His strength immediately returned.

With the Laws guiding the way and with the support of the old God Sovereign's power, the repair process of the god decree became extremely smooth.

Another two hours passed. Lin Ming's repair process was nearing its finale.

In that moment within the void, endless Asura runes gathered together, forming a giant purple vortex, all of it being slowly sucked into the god decree.

For a time, divine light shot into the heavens. The runes of the god decree sparkled, each one resonating with each other.

The feeling this scene gave off was as if the god decree had been resurrected!

It formed a sharp contrast with the three withered yellow god decrees lying down beside it. Those three god decrees appeared dark and gloomy, as if they would turn to dust at any moment.

"Lin Ming... he revived the old God Sovereign's god decree!"

Someone was able to see the essential difference. The god decree that Lin Ming repaired seemed entirely brand new.

Compared to the celestial race's three god decrees, Lin Ming's repaired god decree had even greater levels of energy!

"How could… this be…"

A celestial powerhouse cried out.

With any reasoning, Lin Ming being able to repair the god decrees should have been a major accomplishment worthy of all the ancient remnant races celebrating. But in this situation, the celestials weren't able to summon any joy at all.

"Great!" Lin Ming had overdrawn his strength and propped himself up on the black stone table. He passed the god decree to the old God Sovereign.

As the old God Sovereign took the god decree in his hands, his face was full of smiles. As he looked at Lin Ming, his eyes were filled with praise, appreciation, and love.

He could feel that the god decree he passed Lin Ming had undergone a massive change.

"Good! Very good!"

The old God Sovereign loudly acclaimed.

At this time, the other god race martial artists also sent out their divine senses together, probing the god decree that Lin Ming had repaired. They were all left dumbfounded.

Even the Great Elder that had criticized Lin Ming before had completely shut up.

In the world of martial artists, strength was all!

With strength, one naturally obtained respect.

"This is incredible. My god race has many ordinary True Divinity level god decrees left. If they could be repaired by Lin Ming, just what scene would that be!"

A god decree drawn up by a True Divinity, if brand new, for example the one that Lin Ming had just repaired, if that were activated by a peak Empyrean then that was the same as the all-out attack of a True Divinity level powerhouse.

It could instantly kill a peak Empyrean of the same level. At the very least, their opponent would be severely wounded and lose all combat strength. Then, they could even be captured!

The significance of this was far too great!

It had to be known that the most threatening enemy to the ancient remnant races was not True Divinities like the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, but peak Empyreans!

The truth was that in this war, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had never fought at all.

This was because the primal god race still had the Asura god decrees left behind by the Asura Road Master! If the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign were to personally come, then the primal god race would be willing to take out all their Asura god decrees and bombard the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign with them. If they could kill the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign using such a method, then the world would be purified.

But if a peak Empyrean came, using an Asura god decree on them was a waste, and using other god decrees was useless. This was a worrying situation!

However, with the god decrees that Lin Ming repaired, restoring them to a brand new state, none of this was a problem anymore.

Chapter 1879 – The Celestials’ Concessions

Chapter 1879 – The Celestials’ Concessions

…

…

…

Realizing the function that Lin Ming’s ability to repair the god decrees would have for the war situation, every god race Empyrean’s eyes began to shine.

At this time, even if those like the Great Elder were envious of Lin Ming, they were also excited. This was a monumental matter that concerned the life or death of their race!

Compared to the survival of their people, the interests of an individual were secondary.

“Lin Ming, did repairing the god decree cause any bodily harm to you?”

The old God Sovereign asked. He was worried that doing so had caused Lin Ming to overdraw on his life.

Lin Ming shook his head. “I’ve just used up a bit of my energy and soul force. I should be able to fully recover after several days.”

In the presence of so many people, Lin Ming extended the required recovery time a little.

The truth was that he only needed one or two days to restore himself, and if the old God Sovereign helped him then the time period needed would be even shorter.

“Great! Then you can sit in meditation and restore yourself. Afterwards I will give you another god decree for you to repair. Once we collect three, we will open the Asura forbidden land. This is a great favor that you have done for my god race; we shall never forget this!"

The old God Sovereign's face lit up. With his usual demeanor, he rarely lost his calm like this.

"Your Majesty God Sovereign has no need to speak so seriously. The god race's war with the saints originally concerns the fate of my human race. If junior helps the god race to the full extent of my abilities, that is also helping my own people. It's something that should be done to begin with."

Lin Ming's voice was humble and without the least bit of trying to take credit. This point caused many god race powerhouses to develop a favorable impression towards Lin Ming. According to common sense, if Lin Ming were able to repair god decrees for the god race then he should also be able to propose any condition he wished; this was entirely within reason.

"Ningchu, Legion King, Skylift, Diwuhen! The four of you prepare yourselves! After Lin Ming repairs the three god decrees you will then repair the Chain of Calamity! With the Laws contained within the god decrees and the joint energies of your four, there shouldn't be any problems repairing it!"

The old God Sovereign immediately spat out the names or titles of four Empyreans. These four Empyreans were the strongest within the entire primal god race. And amongst them, Diwuhen was the strongest but also the youngest.

The four Empyreans stepped forwards as one, respectfully standing behind the old God Sovereign.

Amongst the four of them, three were the old God Sovereign's disciples.

Seeing this situation, To Bagui could no longer remain silent.

The worst possible situation had occurred – the old God Sovereign was planning to cast aside their celestial race!

In terms of inheritance lineage, the truth was that the celestials were also part of the Asura Road Master's lineage. The difference was that 10 billion years ago, the celestials were nothing but a vassal race, a minor branch to the god race.

If they could enter the Asura forbidden land, that was naturally a tremendous advantage to the celestials.

But now, he watched as the god race members busily gathered around Lin Ming, as if the celestials had nothing to do with this matter.

"Your Majesty God Sovereign!"

To Bagui anxiously shouted.

"Oh? What matter does the Battle Sovereign have to say?" The old God Sovereign smiled, his expression filled with meaning.

The winds and the tides could change at a moment's notice. The celestials had been aggressively pushing the god race, but now the roles had been overturned. Now it was the celestials that were struggling to find a foothold. And, this ridiculous change was all brought about by a junior; it was simply incredible.

To Bagui glanced at Lin Ming with a strange complexion. He said, "Your Majesty God Sovereign, there is no need for us to play around with words. My celestial race desires two spots. Any conditions Your Majesty wishes can be considered."

To Bagui said, getting straight to the point. He was already prepared for a massive hemorrhage.

The truth was that the celestials and god race were brother races. With the great calamity before them, the two could be said to be dependent on each other. If uniting as one wasn't enough to win the war, if they were to even fight, that would only mean defeat would come that much quicker.

It was impossible that the old God Sovereign didn't understand this point. To Bagui didn't want to waste his time with idle banter.

From looking at the allocation of resources alone, the god race only needed four spots; anyone else entering would be a waste. At the same time, what the celestials needed the most were two spots. For this reason they were willing to pay a deep price. After all, even blood brothers had to settle accounts between themselves.

"I want two of the three god decrees."

The old God Sovereign said, pointing towards the three upper True Divinity god decrees laid in a row.

He didn't intend to take advantage of someone when they were down. Before, the celestials had wanted to use these three god decrees to exchange for three spots, coming out to one spot per god decree.

Now that the celestials wanted two spots, the old God Sovereign demanded only two god decrees. This was a completely justified request.

"Thank you..." To Bagui said, feeling ashamed in his heart. His voice lacked energy. He didn't know if Lin Ming had the ability to repair upper True Divinity god decrees, but if he did then their power would truly be heaven-defying!

After thinking for a little, he said, "I would like to ask Little Friend Lin here to repair the god decrees of my people. I wonder if..."

Because Lin Ming had exposed a part of his strength, To Bagui became increasingly respectful when he spoke of Lin Ming.

“This is something you can discuss directly with Lin Ming. I have no right to make decisions for him.” The old God Sovereign smiled, looking towards Lin Ming.

For a time, the eyes of the celestial martial artists turned towards Lin Ming.

“Little Friend Lin…”

To Bagui hesitated. As the number two figure within the entire celestial race, he eagerly yet helplessly looked at Lin Ming, as if begging with his eyes.

Lin Ming calmly responded, “I can naturally repair god decrees for the celestials, but… if I were to do so I would also have other conditions. We can discuss them in detail when the time comes.”

“Naturally… my celestial race won’t have Little Friend Lin help for nothing.”

To Bagui smiled as he spoke. But as this sight fell in Smokeless’ eyes, it made her feel uncomfortable.

The celestials were an ancient race and they had a once glorious history. Even though they had declined in the present era, the bloodline of the celestials was still not something that the spiritas, humans, or saints could hope to compare with. Thus, the celestials had a pride that belonged to them alone, a pride that was engraved into their bones!

But now, To Bagui as a peak Empyrean was actually speaking so politely to Lin Ming, a Holy Lord. And this Lin Ming didn’t even seem to be appreciating such kindness. This made Smokeless feel ill to her stomach.

“This boy… I have no idea what lucky chance he obtained that he is able to repair the god decrees, but he actually reaches for a yard after taking an inch…” Smokeless indignantly thought. “What a pity that his cultivation is too low. Otherwise, if he and I were at the same cultivation realm I would definitely have challenged him!”

Currently, Smokeless wasn't convinced by Lin Ming at all. But she didn't reveal her emotions, and instead only icily glared at Lin Ming.

At this time, Lin Ming had already moved towards a quiet room; he intended to meditate and restore himself.

……………………

Several days passed. Lin Ming had repaired three god decrees!

And on this day, it was time to repair the Chain of Calamity!

The old God Sovereign's black pupils sparkled with a mystic power, causing the surrounding palace to tremble in tune with him.

The air hummed. The massive pillars that rose up all over the palace emitted massive beams of energy, weaving together to form a pure energy space. From afar, it looked like a giant translucent crystal, isolating out everything with absolute certainty.

Repairing the Chain of Calamity was a monumental event that couldn't receive any disturbances at all.

A crystalline enchantment shrouded down, covering the four strongest god race and celestial powerhouses, sheltering them from any outside influence.

Since the celestials had decided to join in, the people who would repair the Chain of Calamity had also changed. With the help of the celestial powerhouses, the chances of success were much higher.

Lin Ming stood at the side, his eyes gazing into the spherical energy crystal.

The four powerhouses stood above the Chain of Calamity. They held the three god decrees that Lin Ming had repaired in their hands.

Each god decree contained dense strands of the 33 Heavens' Great Dao aura. This incomparably pure aura gushed out endlessly, making the hearts of those watching quicken.

Bang!

A god race Empyrean was the first to move. Blood shot out from the pores of his arms.

This was the pure god race bloodline. It contained the aura of endless years, standing testimony to the primal god race's once glorious civilization.

The blood bloomed with incandescent light. In the midst of this light, one could hear dragons roaring and phoenixes keening.

Even though Lin Ming was standing a hundred feet away, he still felt a pressure as heavy as a mountain exude from that blood, making him feel oppressed.

"This is the pure bloodline strength of the god race... incredible, it far surpasses the bloodline inherited by the saints..."

Lin Ming's eyes fixated on the blood, unblinking. His soul force surged within him and the surrounding pressure weakened by a great deal. The bloodline power released by a peak Empyrean was difficult for even an ordinary World King to withstand.

The pure drop of god race blood slowly floated in the air, as if it were an ancient and solemn star shining in the skies. It emitted a distant and boundless strength before hurtling into a god decree.

After the god decree absorbed the god race Empyrean's blood essence, a crimson glow lit up the world. The mystic power of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws within turned into runes that rumbled like massive tumbling mountains.

Faintly, one could see towering and hulking god kings appear, sitting on the runes, their pupils shooting out a terrifying light even as their monstrous blood vitality raged within them.

The god decree emitted a phantasmal voice that seemed to come from times long past, as if the god decree were coming to life.

Soon after, the other powerhouses followed suit. They offered their own bloodline power to blend into the remaining god decrees.

The god decrees shined with an increasingly bright light, as if they were exploding stars. The entire grand hall was wrapped up in a blinding luminosity.

This was the power of a True Divinity spirit treasure. When Empyrean spirit treasures were born they would often summon heavenly tribulation, much less a True Divinity spirit treasure.

Light completely blinded Lin Ming for a moment. But, Lin Ming didn’t need to see with his eyes at all. Rather, he could sense that within the light, a terrifying amount of energy was being formed and destroyed along with all sorts of sparkling runes…

This white light shined for an entire day and night before slowly dimming down.

As the white light vanished, the energy sphere also faded away.

The four god race and celestial powerhouses were pale. Their auras had diminished compared to the start.

They all sat on the ground and began meditating, restoring themselves.

At this time, a faint sound rang through the air, as if it came from the world itself. It was remote and mysterious.

A snow white lotus flower flowed within these sound waves, blooming in the void.

At the furthest edges of the pitch black skies, a mysterious black road appeared, stretching all the way to the grand hall.

At the end of this great road, the Chain of Calamity glistened with endless power. It was wrapped in a mysterious aura as it suddenly appeared in front of everyone.

It was impossible to unravel the mysteries within.

“A True Divinity magic tool has been reborn. An auspicious sign appears.” On the old God Sovereign’s aged face, a happy smile appeared.

The Chain of Calamity had been repaired. Now, all that was left was to open the Asura forbidden land.

Perhaps the Asura forbidden land would offer them a chance to turn the tide in this great calamity!

Chapter 1880 – Entering the Forbidden Land

Chapter 1880 – Entering the Forbidden Land

…

…

…

Ten days later, the Empyreans who helped repair the Chain of Calamity had fully recovered. Lin Ming had also restored himself to his peak state.

Today, the Asura forbidden land would be opened.

The list of people to enter the Asura forbidden land had also been finalized. They were – To Bagui, Smokeless, Lin Ming, Shenku, Lanlu, and Diwuhen.

The last four people had been personally chosen by the old God Sovereign. Smokeless didn't need to be mentioned. Just the Battle Sovereign To Bagui was faintly the number one master of the entire celestial race, but he still had plenty of potential remaining. He was one of the main pillars in resisting this great calamity!

The old God Sovereign led the way. His right hand was held out in front, the Chain of Calamity hanging on the end of his index finger. The Chain of Calamity emitted a misty light that caused the surrounding space to change.

Somewhere in the far off distance, it was as if the end of space and time existed there. Thundering rumbles and vibrating hums continued without end.

This sort of shaking was like the ringing of a bell.

The fluctuations were like a tide. Everyone could feel the powerful fluctuations. These fluctuations even passed through the void, causing surrounding stars to resonate with it.

Within the white grand hall, the primal god race and celestial powerhouses were excited upon seeing this. They all peered deep into the endless void.

Although they couldn't see anything and could only sense the aging universe and infinite darkness, this couldn't stop their eyes from heating with enthusiasm.

"After the Chain of Calamity was repaired, the Asura forbidden zone already started to resonate with it."

An old god race powerhouse said. In the history of the god race, the Asura forbidden land had been opened less than a handful of times. There were many True Divinities who didn't have the good fortune to see it, and those present had never imagined they would be fortunate enough to live during a time when the Asura forbidden zone would be opened and personally bear witness to it.

"The Asura forbidden land is the holy land of my people. Unfortunately, this holy land will only appear when the god race stands on the precipice of life or death…

"In the past, many outstanding god race members that became True Divinities weren't lucky enough to enter the Asura forbidden land. But now that it has been opened, my race is already declining and those chosen to enter barely meet the qualifications…"

The god race powerhouse deeply sighed with emotion.

"It's time…"

The old God Sovereign's robes whipped about around him. The light projecting from the Chain of Calamity grew ever bright, wrapping everyone within it.

In the next moment, Lin Ming felt the heavens and earth change positions as a spell of dizziness overtook him. As he opened his eyes again he could see that he had arrived in a mysterious realm.

This world was hot to the point where even he found it unbearable.

Looking around, the surroundings were empty. Only at the central region was there a surging mass of lava.

This lava continued without end, seeming as if it were larger than a great world.

Flames occasionally gushed into the air. Each plume of flame was like a burning star that roared into the world.

This sight awed the heart.

"Just what kind of lava is this? How terrifying, even my skin is finding it hard to withstand being baked by the heat..." Lin Ming mumbled, shocked, as he looked at the blazing flames.

The Chain of Calamity hovered above this mass of lava, releasing a mystical sound.

And the flows of lava also emitted shockwaves that stirred up an inexhaustible amount of lava. The sounds echoed into the air, resonating with the sound coming from the Chain of Calamity.

The movements within the flowing lava became increasingly intense. Waves of the dao appeared like twisting dragons – the Great Dao of Freezing Cold, the Great Dao of Deep Water, the Great Dao of the Heavens and Earth...

As these dao fluctuations appeared, the surrounding lava was frozen, swallowed, or neutralized with some other method. Soon, this area began to rapidly clear.

Rumble rumble rumble.

Slowly, as more dao fluctuations gushed out, waves of chilling and withering aura shot outwards. At the deepest depths of the lava, a vast mysterious space was revealed.

The entrance was dark and deep. Lin Ming could feel something familiar coming from it; the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws was overflowing from within.

The Asura forbidden zone, an ancient ruin left behind by the Asura Road Master, had finally been opened!

Lin Ming felt increasingly sure that the third emperor jade he was searching for was located in this ancient ruin.

“This feeling, could it be the ‘fate’ that the Asura Road Master spoke of? If so, then I must obtain this emperor jade of fate no matter what.”

Lin Ming gripped his fists. To him, the most valuable treasure within the Asura forbidden zone was the emperor jade of fate. It was something that involved the complete inheritance of the Asura Road Master. And with the complete inheritance of the Asura Road Master, Lin Ming could become that much stronger to fight the invasion of the saints!

“Enter.”

The old God Sovereign’s profound eyes touched over everyone’s faces. He waved his sleeves and an enormous strength caught hold of everyone. Lin Ming and the others were immediately sent tumbling into that vast space.

“Mm?”

After entering the Asura forbidden land, the moment that Lin Ming felt solid ground he couldn’t help but be surprised.

After all, he had gone to the Asura Road. That world could be considered as overflowing with life, countless existences freely wandering about. But in the world he was in now, there was only a pale yellow star above him that emitted a faint glow.

The surrounding light was dim. Dark gray clouds piled up high in the skies, locking out the light and casting the world into an eternal twilight.

This was a dead world. The feeling it gave off was that of a great world having reached the end of its existence, soon to collapse into nothing!

In everyone's eyes, they could see giant obelisks rise into the heavens like towering mountains.

The Tomb of the Left King Longya, the Tomb of Heaven's Son Yongun, the Tomb of God King Luho…

"Left King Longya was a peerless genius from almost 10 billion years ago. Afterwards he disappeared without a trace, but he actually died here…"

"Heaven's Son Yongun was rumored to have been the strongest peerless genius of my race in ancient times. He had high hopes of following the Asura Road Master's steps…"

The celestial and primal god race powerhouses were stirred to emotion as they looked upon these graces in front of them.

Those that died here were all once world-shaking existences of the primal god race.

It had to be known that they existed billions or even 10 billion years ago. Even through the unimaginably long river of time, they were still recorded here as before. It was obvious from this how strong they had been in life.

As a martial artist walked upon their own road, travelling their own journeys, they would often regard the great existences of the past as their own goal.

Now that they saw these once fabled characters quietly turned to grave soil in front of them, fading from the world, they felt 10,000 different emotions cross their hearts.

The passing of the years was the most terrifying weapon of all!

The tombstones that marked the graves were ominous, like mountains that pressed upon the hearts of those present. It was as if these tombstones were trying to show them that the destiny of the god race and celestials had already reached its natural end.

Strong winds howled, as sharp and grating as knives as they grinded against the rocks on the ground.

Although these strange winds wouldn't injure these people, it still made them intuitively feel that this land was far bleaker and more dangerous than they had thought.

However, those that could enter here were all individuals with great wisdom and courage. Their hearts of martial arts were as solid as stone, almost without the slightest flaw.

Although this scene was depressing, it couldn't shake their confidence.

Suddenly, from deep within the earth, an icy cold strength quietly spread out.

The sandy and rocky earth began to frost over at a speed visible to the eyes.

"Be careful." Battle Sovereign To Bagui said.

A giant figure suddenly leapt out, its body was miles long. It hurtled into the group of people.

Lin Ming's eyes shined with a sharp light as he immediately discerned what it was. This monster that leapt out was similar to a vicious beast, but it was invisible and intangible, nothing but a mass of shadows.

And in the shadows were two glowing red eyes, making it seem bizarre and horrifying.

Its strength was majestic and razor sharp. As soon as it appeared it lashed out, causing a shockingly deep fissure to be torn through the ground.

This sort of dreadful momentum that seemed as if it could split apart everything left everyone feeling chilled.

Within the group of people, a slim figure rushed out. Her hair flapped behind her like a black waterfall and her two eyes were like brilliant moons, emitting a dazzling coldness.

Her fingers flickered as she produced several seals. Red wings flashed behind her, breaking open the void as she collided with the shadow beast.

Bang!

A powerful shockwave blasted out and black blood spewed into the skies.

Even though the celestials' proud elite Smokeless seemed delicate, she was able to erupt with an astonishing degree of strength.

She was like a god king that descended to the world. Her skin, flesh, and blood exuded a blinding brilliance. Her fists struck out so hard that even the air in front of her shook, as if she were some invincible being.

The horrifying shadow beast that seemed as if it could tear apart all actually cracked apart beneath her fists. It began to wail as its body disintegrated.

The shadows exploded at once. The many dark moon-shaped runes that covered its body dispersed into the air, even as they began to break apart beneath the furious strength.

With a loud bang, the massive shadow beast had been dissolved into countless runes that scattered into the world.

This monster was originally a being formed by a Law force field.

Seeing this, Lin Ming's eyebrows shot up. He had clearly seen that Smokeless had used her body, in particular her fists, to commune with the world. She saved up a tremendous amount of the Great Dao's primal power in order to make such an earth-shaking blow.

The intensity of her mortal body left one flabbergasted.

And the celestials were similar to the god race in that their essence, energy, and divine were all powerful. If Smokeless' mortal body had been cultivated to such a degree, what heights did her 'energy' and 'divine' reach?

As Lin Ming observed Smokeless, he faintly felt that what she excelled in the most was not bodily strength but perhaps 'energy' or 'divine'.

If she only used her mortal body to fight, then she was simply trying to hide her true talents.

"Truly worthy of being the ally of the primal god race. The celestials are also the favored children of the heavens and earth."

Lin Ming exclaimed in his mind.

But at this time, after the strange shadow was eliminated, Smokeless' lightning sharp gaze swept over Lin Ming, a light provocation within it.

Lin Ming's mind stirred. He could see a slight smile on Smokeless' lips.

Before repairing the Chain of Calamity, Lin Ming had stepped into the limelight by displaying his skills. Afterwards, even the celestials' Battle Sovereign To Bagui had to speak to Lin Ming in a humble tone.

This had left Smokeless feeling ill in her heart.

But now, she was able to give vent to these feelings. This was because in the Asura forbidden land, one's progress clearly depended on one's martial strength. And in terms of her own strength, Smokeless was absolutely confident in herself!

By depending on her mortal body alone she was able to erupt with such strength. If she exhausted all of her hidden cards, then with her Great World King cultivation she would be able to protect herself and flee against the weakest of Empyreans.

"No wonder the Battle Sovereign was willing to pay such a deep price to bring Smokeless into the Asura forbidden land."

Diwuhen nodded from beside To Bagui. His status wasn't much different from To Bagui's.

"Smokeless' strength is far beyond this, let's slowly watch. If this road isn't too dangerous, then let's not help. Allow the younger generation to clear the way."

To Bagui folded his arms across his chest, a smile on his face. As he spoke, his gaze, either by design or accident, swept over Lin Ming.

In truth, there were only two of the so-called 'younger generation' here – Smokeless and Lin Ming.

Chapter 1881 – Tricks

Chapter 1881 – Tricks

…

…

…

The god race and celestials were brother races, but at the same time they also competed with each other. Previously, the celestials had been humbled and paid a sufficient price to barely obtain two spots to enter the Asura forbidden land. Naturally, they were tamping down the grievances in their heart.

After entering the Asura forbidden land with great difficulty, To Bagui hoped that his celestial race would be able to have proud results here.

To Bagui weighed his own strength and felt that he wasn't much stronger than the god race's Diwuhen, thus he placed his hopes on Smokeless instead. He hoped that Smokeless would be able to rely on her extraordinary talent to dazzle the world within the Asura forbidden land and obtain the greatest lucky chance here.

As for juniors, there was only Smokeless and Lin Ming.

These two people naturally had to be compared with each other.

Woosh woosh woosh!

From all directions, a number of shadow birds flew forth, blocking out the world. They rumbled towards the group like endless bolts of black lightning.

Now, it wasn't just Smokeless that acted. To Bagui also moved, however, he didn't kill these shadow birds but instead casually cut open space and split them up.

His intention was to help temper Smokeless. Isolating some of the shadow birds away was to prevent Smokeless from being surrounded on all sides and suffering too many dangers.

Ca!

Divine light surged out. Smokeless displayed her mighty supernatural powers. The power of divinity erupted from her body as her two slender palms emitted a brilliant light.

Her palms contained an inconceivable strength, as if they were the sharpest weapons in the world. With a slice of her palm, a massive tract of the void was torn apart like paper, causing an entire part of the sky to be cleared out.

The overwhelming shadow birds were sundered by a single strike of Smokeless' palms, disintegrating into countless runes!

The god race Empyreans didn't help, instead allowing Smokeless to do as she pleased. Her attacks were a work of art; it was hard to imagine that such a formidable strength was contained within her delicate body.

Kacha!

Three shadow birds were cut apart. Smokeless' eyes shined with the light of six stars, as heavy as crashing mountains. All threats were completely blocked and broken by her.

During this process, Lin Ming simply watched from the side, carefully analyzing the Law runes that constituted the shadow birds even as he simultaneously appraised Smokeless' strength.

Smokeless indeed had the capital to attack the True Divinity realm.

Chi!

With a light sound, the last shadow bird was shattered into runes. Smokeless drew back her powers, taking a light breath and remaining in high spirits as before.

She walked away from the battlefield. As she passed Lin Ming, she glanced at him.

A beautiful voice suddenly wafted into Lin Ming's ears.

"This Asura forbidden land is a place to gain experience and temper yourself. Will you only look and not do anything? Then isn't your trip here in vain?"

Smokeless loftily said. Lin Ming faintly smiled, "Very well. When I watched Miss Smokeless fight those shadow birds, I was also able to deduce some combat methods."

Lin Ming's words left the Empyreans surprised.

Smokeless was also a little stunned. In all fairness, Lin Ming's cultivation was slightly low. For him to fight these shadow creatures was likely a bit too difficult.

Smokeless had intended to only taunt Lin Ming a little but she didn't think that he would agree. To have him fight these shadow creatures was a tad unfair.

"There's no need to be brave. You might end up injuring yourself." Smokeless said. Although it seemed as if she were mocking him again, the truth was that there wasn't any malice behind her words.

Lin Ming smiled in response. He fiddled with a symbol paper in his hands. After those shadow creatures had exploded, he had gathered their runes.

In the end, these shadow creatures were nothing but spontaneous manifestations of energy released from the array formation of the Asura forbidden land. They were not worth fearing at all.

As everyone moved on, many of them looked forwards to how Lin Ming's performance would be.

Diwuhen kept his mind locked onto Lin Ming at all times. Taking care of him was an important mission that the old God Sovereign had personally handed down to him. Of everyone present, Lin Ming was the weakest and the Asura forbidden land still contained perilous dangers. As someone able to repair god decrees, Diwuhen couldn't allow Lin Ming to fall into any danger.

As the group walked several miles forwards, dangers appeared once more.

This time it was no longer birds, but a massive demon wolf. From the aura of this demon wolf it was clearly far beyond the birds from before.

Its blood red eyes stared at Lin Ming and the others, overflowing with killing intent.

"Be careful!"

Diwuhen cautioned. The one to deal with this demon wolf should have been Lin Ming, but he felt that Lin Ming might find this task difficult so he reminded him.

Roar!

The demon wolf howled and rushed forwards like lightning.

In this instant, the Battle Sovereign and Smokeless' pupils both shrank as they stared at Lin Ming!

By any reasoning, this demon wolf's power and momentum was not something a Holy Lord realm genius could deal with. Smokeless believed that if she were at Lin Ming's boundary, she wouldn't be a match for this demon wolf.

This was the disparity brought by absolute strength!

If Lin Ming didn't fight, he was well within his rights.

Smokeless was already prepared to help. But, the demon wolf was too fast. As it hurtled forwards, Lin Ming had already stepped up, standing in front of the group.

"Lin Ming!"

Diwuhen erupted with energy. If Lin Ming wasn't a match for this demon wolf then he would immediately rescue him!

But in this brief instant, Lin Ming suddenly pressed out his palm and patted down on the demon wolf's head!

"What!?"

Everyone was shocked. Lin Ming didn't take out a weapon but instead planned to use his bare hand to deal with the demon wolf!

Even Smokeless rarely frontally collided with enemies when using her palm. Rather, she attacked from the sides.

But in that moment, Diwuhen discovered that Lin Ming's hand was shining with a pale golden light.

Was that the light of Laws?

Clang!

For a time, the deafening ring of a bell thundered outwards. Above Lin Ming's palm, a massive golden light erupted, followed by the energy of countless Laws. It formed a giant wall of sacred writings that blocked him off against the demon wolf!

Bang!

The demon wolf crashed into the golden wall of sacred writings and emitted a pained howl!

"God decree?"

Diwuhen, the Battle Sovereign, Smokeless, and the others were all shocked. So Lin Ming had been holding a symbol paper in his hands.

The moment that this symbol paper was shot out of Lin Ming's palm it exploded, forming a golden wall of mantras that blocked the demon wolf.

"This symbol paper... is the one Lin Ming was holding just a moment ago!"

Diwuhen remembered. When Smokeless killed off a massive number of shadow creatures, the others had been watching from the side. Lin Ming was no exception. The only difference was that he held a symbol paper in his hands and collected the scattered runes released by the exploded shadow creatures. From the start, no one cared. They only thought that Lin Ming was collecting these runes to do some research when he returned. But they never thought that after an incense stick of time, the runes Lin Ming gathered could display such a terrifying strength!

As the demon wolf struck the golden wall of sacred writings, it also suffered severe injuries and was dazed for a moment. Lin Ming was quick of hand and eye. He quickly stepped forwards, the Law runes shining in his hands as he repeatedly slapped the demon wolf.

Each one of his attacks hit the weak point in the Laws of the demon wolf's body!

The demon wolf was originally a spontaneous manifestation of Laws and energy that had seeped out from the Asura forbidden zone's great array formation. This demon wolf and its body of Laws couldn't be called solid and could even be said to be filled with holes. Simply put, there was no need for a melee of any sort. As long as he could break apart the rough Law structures then it would wither away and die by itself.

Peng!

With an explosive sound, the demon wolf blew apart, its body scattering into runes.

Lin Ming gripped a new symbol paper and waved his hand, gathering up all of the runes and sealing them into the symbol paper.

“This is…”

Seeing this, the martial artists present were left speechless.

The demon wolf had been destroyed this easily?

To them, this demon wolf wasn’t considered anything at all. But to a Holy Lord realm martial artist, it was a terrifying existence.

But Lin Ming didn’t seem to use any energy at all to kill the demon wolf. Moreover, he gathered the runes from when it died and exploded so that he could use them again.

This was just merciless!

“He absorbed the runes into the symbol paper and turned it into a god decree…”

An Empyrean said with disbelief. The powerhouses of the god race and celestials all had amazing eyesight. Although they didn’t understand the Asura Laws, they were able to see that Lin Ming didn’t frontally defeat the demon wolf by himself but had relied on certain tricks to do so.

This couldn’t be considered Lin Ming’s true strength.

“You… just where did you learn the inheritance of god decrees? Will you only use god decrees? You cannot rely on your own strength to fight?”

Smokeless said with a flushed face, her words lacking some energy.

When this demon wolf appeared, she didn’t expect Lin Ming to fulfill his words. In fact, she was a Great World King, and her competing like this with a middle Holy Lord realm martial artist was just senseless.

Smokeless only wanted Lin Ming to suffer a little loss once and consider it done, but she didn't think he would display his skills once again and steal the limelight.

Naturally, Smokeless felt suffocated once again.

"If I have a way to easily handle my enemies, why would I choose a method that requires more work?"

Lin Ming rhetorically asked. Smokeless felt as if something had lodged in her throat.

She could only keep her mouth shut.

Diwuhen smiled. "Little Brother Lin, you obtained the true legacy of the god decrees? Then in this Asura forbidden zone, you should be like a fish in water. There are many dangers here you can use the power of Laws to avoid, right?"

Diwuhen's thoughts were what the other Empyreans were thinking. If so, then Lin Ming had profited greatly.

Lin Ming shook his head, "Senior Wuhen must be joking with me. How could it be so easy? What I've studied is only the tip of the iceberg when it comes to the Asura Laws. Only at certain times can they display miraculous effects.

"Whether it was the shadow creatures or demon wolf that just appeared, they are all formed from energy that has leaked out from the Asura forbidden land's great array formation and then spontaneously evolved into monsters. Their Law structures are simple and filled with hundreds of flaws. If I break open the Laws within their bodies I can naturally kill them. But, if I faced the true Asura array formation, my superficial skills would be of no use at all. I can only honestly continue forwards as the Asura Road Master intended, without skipping any steps."

Lin Ming's words caused the Empyreans to bow. Indeed, if they faced the complete array formation laid down by the Asura Road Master, then everything Lin Ming showed so far would be of no use. If Lin Ming followed them he would also have to accept the test of the array formation in a fair manner.

Chapter 1882 – Cold Ice Mirror

Chapter 1882 – Cold Ice Mirror

…

…

…

The Asura forbidden land was an isolated world, incomparably huge.

The group continued forwards. After half an incense stick of time, they encountered more dangers. These dangers were all monsters that were spontaneously evolved from energy which had leaked out from the Asura forbidden zone's array formation.

They had no solid form to begin with and weren't too threatening. Lin Ming was able to use the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws to easily kill them.

The Empyreans didn't help, instead watching Lin Ming and Smokeless fight.

However, no matter how magnificent Smokeless' attacks were and how beautifully artistic her abilities were, she also seemed a bit clumsy and crude in front of the simple movements of Lin Ming, who looked as if he were taking apart blocks of wood. Although there was clearly an easy method, when it came to her, she had to consume countless times more energy!

Smokeless hoped that they could quickly clear off all these non-threatening monsters and enter the true array formation. As long as they could enter the true array formation, Lin Ming's little tricks would be of no use and she would be able to display her true talent and amaze everyone.

Slowly, the group ventured further and further in.

The surrounding temperature began to drop. On the ground beneath their feet, snow and ice started to appear. As they entered this region, Lin Ming tried to use the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws to commune with the Asura forbidden zone and find out what was occurring. But, he discovered that the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao in this region had closed up, without the smallest gap for him to peek through.

Although he could still sense the Asura Heavenly Dao, it didn’t resonate with the Asura Heavenly Array Diagram within his body as before.

This caused Lin Ming to immediately put up his guard.

From this point on, the road might not be so easy.

Finding no shortcut, Lin Ming could only honestly follow the four Empyreans and slowly search.

Wind and clouds began to gather in the skies. Snow and ice billowed on the ground.

Gradually, the cold energy became increasingly dense. The power of Laws condensed here, forming a thick plain of ice beneath their feet. Lin Ming could faintly feel that they had already walked into the array formation laid down by the Asura Road Master!

Even after 10 billion years passed, even if the array formation had leaked out a considerable amount of energy, even forming numerous shadow creatures on the periphery, the array formation laid down by the Asura Road Master still left one feeling fearful and apprehensive.

Perhaps even if this array formation were to exist for several dozen billion more years, it still wouldn’t disappear. This was because the array formation itself might draw in energy from the universe to sustain itself and continue revolving.

“Be careful!”

To Bagui and Diwuhen shouted together. They were unable to predict how the grand Asura array formation would revolve, but by relying on their sharp senses as peak Empyreans they were able to feel anomalies occurring here, even without Lin Ming warning them.

Everyone immediately stepped back. At this time, the icy ground tore open!

Ka ka ka!

As massive chunks of ice shattered, a 10,000 foot long ice valley appeared in front of everyone!

One couldn’t see the bottom of this valley. Invisible cold energy rushed out from it and into the skies, as if it could freeze the soul.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The earth roared. From within the icy rift, something seemed to be rising.

The group of six slowly retreated, all of them shocked.

They saw an incomparably smooth ice mirror rise up from the valley, reflecting the entire world.

This mirror was so large it seemed to have no edges. The surface seemed fathomlessly deep. An inexplicably vast aura surged out from within it.

Rosy clouds floated within and the air was filled with a dense fog, beautiful and fascinating. Everything inside was obscured in a dim haze, making it impossible to distinctly see what was occurring within.

Lin Ming stood before the mirror. He could feel a gargantuan attractive force pulling on him, as if countless small hands held fast to his divine soul and wanted to drag him in, the feeling swaying the mind.

Even if he cultivated the Asura Sutra and inherited a great deal of the Asura Road Master's power of Laws, the power released by the icy mirror still made him feel strange.

This ice mirror was clearly formed by the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws. But, it was an infinitely marvelous and unique combination that was vast and complex beyond imagination.

"Could this be..."

Diwuhen furrowed his eyebrows.

"Mm? You know what this is?" To Bagui asked with surprise. Since ancient times, the Asura forbidden zone hadn't even been opened a handful of times, and each time it opened there was a different situation within so the land itself was still a mystery.

"I've only heard some rumors. This seems to be a magic tool that Heavenly God Asura used in the past and left behind in our race's forbidden land, where it turned into the giant Cold Ice Mirror. As for what it actually is or what it does, I have no idea."

10 billion years was far too distant a time. A great deal of history had become blurred.

"There seems to be a world within. I feel as if it is summoning us forwards. If I'm not wrong, then all of us must enter."

Smokeless solemnly said. Although she felt a deep awe towards the Asura Road Master's array formation, deep in her heart she still felt excitement and anticipation.

She wanted to see just what sort of test the Asura Road Master had left behind.

She couldn't help but glance at Lin Ming, "We must enter together. Should we go in first?"

Smokeless asked without fear. This was the arrogance possessed by a genius. Because they had confidence in their own talent, they didn't fear dangerous risks.

The Asura Road Master wouldn’t establish an absolute death trap. As long as it wasn’t a death trap, she had confidence she could pass it.

“If we must enter then let’s enter.”

Lin Ming readily replied, leaving Smokeless a little surprised.

After all, only Diwuhen had heard traces of some long ago rumors… just what was this thing? What would be the result of entering?

No one knew…

But at this time, Diwuhen shouted, “Stop messing around! If anyone is going in first, it will be us!”

Whether it was Smokeless or Lin Ming, they were vitally important to the ancient races. In particular Lin Ming, who was able to repair god decrees. Diwuhen would not allow any harm to come to Lin Ming.

“This is an unknown danger zone. Me and Brother Wuhen have the highest cultivations of us all, so we’ll lead the way.”

To Bagui said, taking a step forwards.

At this moment, his mind shook. This was because on the smooth surface of the Cold Ice Mirror, he could see a dim figure appear. This person wore archaic war armor that seemed to have experienced a gloriously long time as it exuded the endless aura of passing years. When combined with the history of the Cold Ice Mirror, no one doubted that the character reflected in the mirror was the projection of a martial artist from 10 billion years ago.

Ancient martial artist!

Everyone realized, bewildered. It was long ago decided that the era of 10 billion years ago was when the martial arts civilization was at its most glorious golden age. At that time, the ancient races had countless geniuses with formidable talent and their inheritances were richer than in the present. Thus, many outstanding individuals had been born.

Now, they had to fight with these ancient martial artists?

“Defeat your opponent or last for 1000 breaths, either path is victory.”

To Bagui suddenly said. This was the information he just received in his mind.

Hu - !

The figure in the Cold Ice Mirror sat cross-legged in space, his body emitting bursts of blazing flames.

These flames were not ordinary flames, but shot out from this figure’s skin, flesh, and blood. It even contained the infinite true meanings of the Great Dao of Heavenly Fire. The fire runes brought with them the sounds of the Great Dao. As they spun around the figure’s body, they released a dazzling brilliance.

Beneath the light of the winding flames, the person’s appearance became clear.

This person resembled a middle-aged man. He had a pair of light wings behind him, and he was a body formed from pure energy.

“Mm? Ancient Empyrean, and his cultivation is lower than mine...”

To Bagui said, clearly shocked. This person’s cultivation was that of an upper Empyrean. Compared to him, this ancient martial artist was slightly lower.

But at this time, more figures appeared in the Cold Ice Mirror!

In front of each person, a figure appeared!

“This is...”

Smokeless looked at the woman who appeared in the mirror. This other person was also a woman, but her race and looks were different. Only her amazing figure was similar to her own.

This woman wore a veil and her aura was swift and sharp. Her cultivation was slightly lower – it was at the peak of the ordinary World King realm.

Similarly, a youth also appeared before Lin Ming.

The youth’s aura was gloomy and dark. He gripped a heavy sword. As he faced Lin Ming, his body surged with black flames that carried a terrifying demonic energy.

Lin Ming could see that this youth’s pupils were as bright as fresh blood, shining with bursts of killing intent!

This youth’s cultivation was also lower than Lin Ming’s, at the peak of the early Holy Lord realm.

“So that’s how it is, I have to fight him… of us six, we each have to fight a virtual opponent, and their cultivation is also slightly lower than our own.”

Lin Ming immediately understood. The energy bodies in the mirror should be virtual characters created by the Asura Road Master using array formations. But, the standard used must have deferred to the standard of peerless geniuses from the ancient era!

This was because Lin Ming could already feel that the auras these characters possessed were all terrifying!

Chapter 1883 – Ancient Geniuses

Chapter 1883 – Ancient Geniuses

…

…

…

Peerless geniuses from the ancient era, what kind of characters would they be?

It was far too distant a time, and they could no longer be judged. In the various ancient books, it was widely recognized that the ancient era was when the martial arts civilization was at its most glorious. The quality and quantity of geniuses that existed back then far outstripped the present era.

Thus, Lin Ming increasingly anticipated this battle.

“I never thought that I would be able to step into the array formation laid down by the Asura Road Master and cross over 10 billion years to fight geniuses from the ancient past.

“And my opponent’s cultivation is actually lower than mine, at the early Holy Lord realm.”

Lin Ming looked at the youth who gripped a heavy sword within the Cold Ice Mirror, a strange feeling in his heart.

The Cold Ice Mirror determined the cultivation of this virtual opponent based upon the intruder’s cultivation.

Over the years, although Lin Ming had fought those at a lower boundary than him, it had usually been as one-sided massacres. It had never been as today, where he faced a single opponent who had a lower cultivation than him, who he considered a worthy opponent that could even arouse his interest.

“So these are ancient geniuses from 10 billion years ago, and their cultivations are even lower than ours. This Cold Ice Mirror doesn’t seem to think much of us...”

To Bagui crossed his arms against his chest. As he stared at his opponent in the mirror, his aura began to surge and he gathered his potential!

Although his words seemed casual, the truth was that To Bagui didn’t dare to lower his guard in the slightest.

“Ancient geniuses, huh? I’ve long been wanting to experience them. Today is perfect to do so!”

Diwuhen’s eyes flashed with excitement. After all, even if these ancient geniuses were a small boundary lower than them, they were more than enough to arouse their fighting spirit.

“Let me take the lead.” At this time, a god race Empyrean stepped forth.

“Shenku...” Diwuhen’s eyes glittered.

Shenku waved his hand, laughing as he said, “I will explore the way. Let me take a good look at just what sort of strength these ancient geniuses have compared to us.”

As Shenku spoke he tightly gripped his fists, explosive crackling sounds emitting from them.

In the group of six, his talent was the lowest.

However, he was still an outstanding character amongst Empyreans. He had a confidence that was his alone!

Shenku stepped into the Cold Ice Mirror. The mirror gently shivered before swallowing in Shenku.

Shenku's opponent was a black-caped youth; his cultivation was a lower Empyrean.

Although this virtual opponent appeared as a youth, if they were a real person they would definitely be at least 10,000 years old. Normally speaking, a young Empyrean would appear youthful because their cultivation rapidly advanced.

Hu – hu – hu!

In the Cold Ice Mirror, Shenku and the black-caped youth both spouted out countless flames from their flesh and blood. The aura of the Truefire Great Dao flowed out from them, sweeping across the world.

The two of them were both fire-attribute martial artists.

Moreover, they used the power of divinity.

The so-called power of divinity was a fusion of astral essence, true essence, and spirit essence, three different kinds of origin energy.

The fire that was catalyzed by the power of divinity could burn down the void.

Bang!

The two figures were surrounded by raging flames. Two brilliant suns smashed into each other!

In the world within the mirror's surface, no matter how terrifying the fighting was, it wouldn't affect the outside world.

Moreover, the mirror surface world was boundless beyond compare. It was more than enough for a powerhouse to display the full extent of their strength.

Inside the deep surface, Lin Ming saw flames erupt everywhere, fists and feet blazing about.

Every collision could pierce through a world and scatter the nebulous clouds.

Energy waves swept out in all directions like raging tsunamis, wreaking havoc wherever they went.

The fight was intense. Within the Cold Ice Mirror, Shenku gradually paled.

Purple flames suddenly spouted out from his nose. As they appeared, even the void was pierced through. The surface of the Cold Ice Mirror also faintly distorted.

Every wisp of purple flame turned into a massive purple bird that cut through space, hurtling towards the virtual opponent together.

Unexpectedly, the black-caped youth also spouted out purple flames from his nose. The power of these flames was faintly higher than those released by Shenku.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Another fierce round of combat began.

Shenku was forced back again and again. His physical strength was slowly being consumed, but as for that black-caped youth, the more he fought the more savage he became. The youth's body burned like a sun and the power behind his strikes became increasingly wild and brutal.

"Hah!"

Shenku roared. Flames erupted from his body. He shot towards the black-caped youth like a meteor!

In the surging explosions, the black-caped youth was forced back dozens of miles. His body fluttered backwards like a piece of paper until he finally stabilized himself.

However, upon seeing this, Diwuhen, To Bagui, and the others all fell silent.

In that strike just now, Shenku had held the upper hand. But, the truth was that he had used the mightiest supernatural power that his bloodline could give him. This move could only be used a single time and it also consumed a tremendous amount of life force.

Even so, he hadn't been able to injure his opponent but had only sent him flying away.

The opponent's inner energy flow wasn't disturbed at all. His blood vitality was still vibrant and there was the feeling that he could still fight as intensely as he did!

In comparison, Shenku had used up 60-70% of his strength, unable to continue for much longer. The disparity was clear!

Woosh!

The black-caped youth attacked once more. Shenku barely resisted the attack. This time, the truefire that surged from his bloodline had dimmed by a great deal.

His figure paused in the air. The flames around Shenku turned into wisps that resembled strange-looking tentacles that wanted to pierce through the virtual opponent.

However, as the youth saw this, a sly smile appeared on his face, as if he had a mind of his own.

From the youth's flesh and blood, runes shined bright, forming a brilliant curtain of light that blocked out all the flames.

Peng!

With an explosive ring, Shenku gave a stuffy cough as his body was sent blasting away, directly ejected from the mirror world where he fell onto the floor!

Shenku, defeated!

Diwuhen had been quietly counting the time in his mind. That battle just now had only lasted for 20-30 breaths.

But, the requirements to pass the mirror world's test were to defeat the opponent or last for 1000 breaths of time.

20-30 breaths of time to 1000 breaths of time, this disparity was a little too great.

"So difficult!"

Diwuhen's complexion was ugly. As for Shenku, he had a bitter and rueful look on his face.

His opponent's cultivation boundary had even been lower than his own.

The truth was he had already expected that this black-caped youth wouldn't be easy to deal with. He wouldn't be surprised even if he lost. But, he hadn't expected that he would lose so miserably.

The others also felt awed in their hearts. The geniuses of ancient times were truly terrifying!

"Are you alright?" Diwuhen asked with concern.

Shenku shook his head, saying, "This place is for gaining experience; there shouldn't be any life-threatening dangers."

After being kicked out from the Cold Ice Mirror, Shenku didn't immerse himself in the emotions of his loss. If he was able to enter here, that also meant he was one of the chosen prides of heaven; his heart of martial arts was as solid as a rock.

He didn't say a word. Instead, he swallowed down a pill that overflowed with medicinal fragrance, then sat down and began to meditate to restore his wounds.

The Cold Ice Mirror's surface began to surge like a flowing river. The virtual opponent that matched Shenku gradually faded away, leaving behind five other virtual opponents.

The people standing outside were momentarily at a loss for words.

Lin Ming's eyes twinkled. He had deduced the entire fight just now again and again, recording every minute detail of the battle just then.

"This Cold Ice Mirror is indeed amazing. The virtual opponents it produces actually possess their own thoughts and wisdom..."

After a moment of thought, from the faction of the primal god race powerhouses, a slim figure flashed out.

The one fighting this time was Lanlu. Her pupils were like stars and her skin was pale like snow. Her slim and slender figure stood in the dim light of the mirror's surface.

Across from her, reflected within the constantly changing water bright surface of the Cold Ice Mirror, another peerless woman appeared. This woman wore blue clothes that were in a very simple and plain style. From within her body, the atmosphere of 10 billion years flowed out.

Lanlu's talent was higher than Shenku's. But, no one thought she was a match for her virtual opponent.

"Lanlu!"

Diwuhen wanted to stop her but he was too late. Lanlu had already flown into the Cold Ice Mirror.

Her fingers twisted in the sign of an orchid, her thumb touching her middle finger. Where they touched, light began to shine.

One after another, runes began to bloom around her like fresh flowers.

These flowers were flowers of the Great Dao. They emitted beams of light that surged with a mystic strength, forming a solid defense of flower petals.

From the start she had been in a defensive stance; she had no intentions of going on the offensive.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Lanlu's form divided into two, two into four, four into eight, with more and more appearing until over a thousand copies were there.

Lanlu was actually someone skilled in illusions, and her attainments in this field were extremely high!

"Smart choice."

Lin Ming nodded.

From the information they were told, one only needed to last within the Cold Ice Mirror for 1000 breaths of time; they didn't necessarily need to defeat their opponents.

Lanlu judged her own strength and knew she wasn't a match for her opponent. Then, her decision was to delay for as long as possible.

Thus when facing this unfathomably deep ancient genius, going on the defensive was undoubtedly the best way to preserve the most strength as well as last as long as possible.

Within the Cold Ice Mirror, ripples appeared. A mysterious rhythm of the Great Dao appeared.

The blue-clothed woman stepped forwards. An ice lotus appeared on her fingertip. The attribute she cultivated was the same as Lanlu.

Ca!

The ice lotus instantly expanded. In a moment, the Great Dao flower blocked out the skies, covering one part of the world.

Countless ice crystals shot out, carrying with them a horrifying power of Laws. They pierced through the void, striking Lanlu's illusions and crushing them to pieces.

Peng!

Lanlu's true self managed to block the ice crystals, but at the same time she exposed her position!

The ice lotus revolved and came suppressing down on Lanlu.

A blinding blue light instantly flooded everyone's vision.

In the following battle, Lanlu didn't attack at all. She used all sorts of clever tricks and resourceful defensive techniques and methods to resist the unending onslaught of her opponent.

However, the absolute disparity in their strengths was still there. In just 200 breaths of time, Lanlu exhausted her energy. She flew away, tumbling out of the Cold Ice Mirror in an embarrassing state.

Lanlu had also been defeated. Although she lasted for a longer period, it was still far too distant from 1000 breaths of time.

She had chosen not to attack, but rather rely on her illusion skills to stand on the defensive and delay for time. Even so, she failed!

"What a terrifying opponent..."

"This is the strength of an ancient genius?"

Everyone exclaimed in surprise. Lanlu's opponent had a lower cultivation boundary and Lanlu had clearly been trying to delay for time. Even so, she had been defeated!

“Even illusions don’t work. Breaking through Lanlu’s illusions requires a great deal of strength, and to destroy Lanlu’s 1000 illusions, there has to be at least 1000 attacks. If it were an ordinary martial artist, the first salvo of attacks would have drained most of their strength. But, the virtual opponent didn’t seem affected at all, and continued to launch a wild barrage of attacks afterwards.”

“The enemy is too strong, this is going to be difficult for us to do!”

Chapter 1884 – The Past Versus the Present

Chapter 1884 – The Past Versus the Present

…

…

…

After Shenku and Lanlu suffered continuous defeats, there were only four people left who had yet to take the challenge.

But in To Bagui's eyes, of these four people, Smokeless had the highest hopes of success.

His right hand fell on Diwuhen's shoulder. "I must ask Brother Wuhen, do you think you can win?"

Diwuhen wryly smiled and shook his head. "My talent isn't much better than Lanlu's, and my cultivation method is primarily focused on being on the offensive. This virtual opponent in the Cold Ice Mirror doesn't seem as if my attack method will work on it. The chances of me winning are near zero. But you, your bloodline power is quite special… perhaps… if you bet it all perhaps you might be able to last for a thousand breaths of time?"

As Diwuhen spoke, To Bagui's complexion also turned earnest. His chances weren't high, but what he wanted was to further explore the road ahead so that Smokeless would have more time to prepare herself.

"Brother Wuhen, if all of us fail then what will happen? Will we have come to the forbidden land in vain?" To Bagui said, voicing his worries.

They had come to the Asura forbidden land to struggle for lucky chances. But more importantly, they wanted to find a path for the primal god race and celestials in the great calamity!

If they were to fail advancing forwards because of the Cold Ice Mirror and were forced back with nothing in hand, then they would become the eternal sinners of the ancient races for the rest of time, shaming all of their ancestors!

Diwuhen said, “It shouldn’t be like that. When the Asura forbidden zone was opened in the past, there had always been two types of things able to be obtained in the forbidden land. One was a method to rescue our people and another was an individual lucky chance.

“As long as we enter the Asura forbidden land, even if we cannot pass the test set down by Heavenly God Asura, we should still be able to find a way for our races to survive.

“But… if we can pass Heavenly God Asura’s test, then we will each obtain our own lucky chances. In other words, they will be the inheritances that Heavenly God Asura left behind in the past as rewards.”

“I see…” To Bagui let out a breath of relief. “That’s good. Even if we cannot pass the Cold Ice Mirror, it will only be our own loss. It won’t be something that affects our races…”

Speaking here, To Bagui could only force a smile. He laughed, “Heavenly God Asura shouldn’t have thought that 10 billion years later, his descendants would be reduced to our standard…”

To Bagui shook his head, mocking himself. Then, he headed towards the Cold Ice Mirror.

“Senior-apprentice Brother…”

Smokeless called out to To Bagui. Although there was a giant age gap between them, they were actually fellow apprentice brother and sister.

To Bagui turned and smiled at Smokeless, saying, “If I am defeated then you will be the only celestial left. Watch my battle carefully and make sure you come up with some good countermeasures. Your talent far surpasses all others’ amongst the celestials. You should be able to win!”

As To Bagui spoke, he stepped into the Cold Ice Mirror!

To Bagui’s opponent was a middle-aged man. This man wore a plain set of war armor and had a pair of light wings floating behind him.

His entire body was wrapped in flames, and these flames contained runes of the Great Dao that emitted light through the world.

In that moment, To Bagui’s aura changed, as if a God Beast were awakening within him.

He had been renowned amongst the celestials as the Battle Sovereign for a long time already. As a peak Empyrean, his background was as deep as a sea and impossible to discern.

“Too strong, the Battle Sovereign, he… how could he be so strong!?”

Shenku gasped in surprise, his eyes filled with shock. As a middle Empyrean, the difference in strength between him and a peak Empyrean wasn’t considered too far; he could feel just how strong To Bagui was.

He had seen Diwuhen in his peak state before, and he felt that even Diwuhen was much weaker than To Bagui was.

Diwuhen said, “What To Bagui is using is the power of the Sovereign Sun bloodline. His bloodline can light up like a sun and for a short time stimulate all of his hidden potential. But after using this ability, his strength will rapidly disappear, and even his boundary will temporarily drop. It will be hard to restore himself even with ten days of time.

“This is an all-out method that can only be used in desperate times. Normally speaking, To Bagui won’t use it, because once the period passes in which his full potential is released, he will have no further way to defeat his enemy and can only allow himself to be destroyed.”

Diwuhen explained to Shenku.

Shenku said, “So that’s how it is. The Sovereign Sun bloodline… this sort of bloodline is indeed suited for using within the Cold Ice Mirror. As long as he can last for a thousand breaths of time then he’ll be fine. Whether or not To Bagui’s boundary drops afterwards doesn’t matter.

As Shenku spoke, To Bagui had already stopped before his opponent. He was like a towering mountain, his strength boundless. His snow white light wings were as taut as swords, projecting an incomparable sharpness that seemed as if they could cut apart light.

He advanced forwards a step at a time, his footsteps meandering with a strange rhythm. The entire Cold Ice Mirror seemed as if it would shatter, and the light within twisted and rippled.

The two pupils of the two opponents each clearly reflected each other.

In the next moment, a sharp light flashed in their pupils as they both cried out.

They rushed forwards at an incredibly fast speed, carrying with them a dreadful momentum that seemed as if it could trample down everything as they collided together.

With a rise of their hands, their attacks were like violent storms clashing.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Within the Cold Ice Mirror, splendid sparks of light shot out. Violent strength boiled over, crashing forth like tides. Countless arcs of thunder twined on their fists as they collided again and again.

This incredible supernatural might of thunder turned into a torrential rainstorm that fell unto the earth. The entirety of space seemed to be filled with an endless cloud of blinding white lightning.

As if the apocalypse had arrived.

“Senior-apprentice Brother going all-out is… really strong!”

Smokeless held her hands together. Because of To Bagui’s arrogant and fierce stance, she was infected by his zeal, her fighting spirit seething within her blood.

Indomitable, fierce, and not fearing death, this was To Bagui’s martial arts.

He wouldn’t delay for time. Rather, he would use the strength granted by burning his bloodline to brutally fight for 1000 breaths of time!

“The celestials’ Battle Sovereign is really formidable.”

The several god race martial artists couldn’t help but exclaim as they looked on at the battle.

Bang!

A terrifying power of divinity exploded. Even the void was torn apart by To Bagui’s astonishing attack, with cracks appearing everywhere. The space here was unexpectedly like glass, cracking upon breaking.

However, these spatial cracks soon regenerated, as if they had never existed at all.

400 breaths of time. To Bagui’s attack just then had wounded the virtual opponent for the first time.

A little bit of blood leaked out from the virtual opponent’s chest.

From the first battle until now, this was the first time that the virtual phantom of an ancient genius had been injured.

“He has the upper hand!”

Smokeless shouted, her thoughts tightening. There were still 600 breaths of time left but To Bagui hadn’t shown any trend of slowing down at all. As long as the Sovereign Sun bloodline could last for the full 1000 breaths of time, then he really might be able to pass!

At that time, the virtual opponent changed. The man stood up, his body carrying a deeper, more indistinct aura.

In that instant, it was as if he had changed.

His body was covered with dense runes and electric lights shot out from his eyes. His aura became as deep as the nine nether abyss, impossible to predict.

To Bagui’s pupils shrank. Within his opponent’s eyes, he could feel a horrifying killing intent!

Woosh!

The virtual phantom attacked. Its speed was far faster, nearly impossible to respond to!

Endless supernatural powers turned into all kinds of Great Dao Laws that tore through the void.

Behind the blurry man’s figure, the phantom of a war god appeared, 1000 feet high. This war god was pitch black and it emitted boundless mystic strength, bathed in a mysterious halo of light.

The war god phantom wielded a massive axe that came smashing down at To Bagui.

Bang!

The void cracked like glass once more. To Bagui spat out a mouthful of blood as he was sent tumbling away. Horror and panic filled his eyes.

His body and mind shook. This virtual opponent was only an upper Empyrean, someone with an inferior cultivation to his own, and yet he was so strong!

After suffering a single wound, this virtual opponent had erupted with an even greater strength to directly and heavily wound To Bagui.

To Bagui had seen countless proud children of heaven before, and yet none of them were able to stand side-by-side to the phantom of this ancient genius!

After burning his bloodline strength, he had still been heavily wounded by his opponent. It was then that To Bagui realized he had been defeated, utterly defeated!

In the past, he had once been defeated after burning his Sovereign Sun bloodline. But that was only when his bloodline strength had vanished and he had been extremely weakened.

He had never experienced a moment like today, where he would be defeated by someone else even when he burned his bloodline and was in his most powerful state!

To Bagui gloomily left the Cold Ice Mirror.

His Sovereign Sun bloodline had already dissipated and his entire body felt feeble. He knew that his trip into the Asura forbidden zone had ended; it was impossible for him to go any further.

Just this Cold Ice Mirror was so difficult. Or, perhaps they were just that bad.

“Don’t be disheartened. These virtual phantoms should be almost the strongest geniuses from the ancient era, according to the standards of that time. If this phantom were a real person, they would easily become a True Divinity in the future. It’s not surprising that we cannot compete with it.”

Diwuhen patted To Bagui’s shoulder. He felt that he shouldn’t even try to enter. To Bagui had resorted to using his bloodline strength but even then he had been defeated at his peak state, much less Diwuhen.

“Lin Ming, my god race only has you left.”

Diwuhen ruefully smiled. Lin Ming’s talent had been recognized and strongly approved of by the old God Sovereign. He might be able to create a miracle here.

“Will the Laws you understand be of use here?”

Lin Ming shook his head, “Not a bit.”

Lin Ming’s answer was already expected. Before this Cold Ice Mirror, one could only depend on their true ability. It was impossible to take any shortcuts.

Diwuhen lightly sighed. Their group had been chosen after such a ruckus and they had paid a considerable price in order to enter the Asura forbidden land. If they were only barely able to obtain the method to save their people but returned with nothing else, the resources would really be wasted.

“Smokeless!” To Bagui looked towards Smokeless.

“I understand.” Smokeless nodded. “I won’t lose!”

Smokeless’ voice was confident.

“Good!” To Bagui took a deep breath. He knew that Smokeless would only say this if she were sure of herself. She wasn’t someone to joke around during such times.

At this time, Smokeless had already moved towards the Cold Ice Mirror. She turned and glanced at Lin Ming, a strange expression on her face.

Then, she lifted her foot and stepped into the surface of the Cold Ice Mirror.

Ripples spread out as if on the surface of a still lake. Within the world of the Cold Ice Mirror, Smokeless faced her opponent, another peerless woman who was of similar age. This woman wore a veil and her aura was swift and sharp.

"Even if you are an ancient genius that will become a True Divinity, your cultivation is still lower than mine. I don't believe that you will defeat me!"

As Smokeless spoke, she took out a four foot long sword from her spatial ring. This sword blade glimmered, seeming as if it could pierce through the hearts of those watching!

Hu - !

Smokeless' aura erupted. A blue tornado appeared around her. Although this tornado seemed gentle, it contained a dreadful strength. It could tear down a person's flesh and blood and blow apart their bones!

"Finally, she shows her true skills..."

Lin Ming watched closely. When Smokeless had fought those monsters formed from energy and Law runes, she had only used the strength of her mortal body to fight them.

But now, Smokeless used the full strength of her power of divinity.

Chapter 1885 – True Divinity Spirit Treasure

Chapter 1885 – True Divinity Spirit Treasure

…

…

…

“Smokeless isn’t planning to passively defend, but to go on the offensive…”

Lanlu commented. In her opinion, delaying for time was a slightly safer choice. After all, victory was there as long as they could pass a thousand breaths of time.

To Bagui remained silent. Lin Ming quietly said, “Delaying for time seems like the safer choice, but the truth is that before the battle has begun, it is the same as already acquiescing that you are weaker than your opponent. That means the battle is already half lost!”

Lin Ming’s words left Lanlu surprised. She reddened a little with shame.

Indeed, to a peak genius, drawing out time would only end in their defeat. For them, what they should do was use their peak strength to confront these ancient geniuses!

However, this was based upon believing in one’s own strength, otherwise it would be the same as trying to break a rock with an egg.

At that time, Smokeless’ opponent stood tall, her face blurry and her body burning with blue-white flames. These flames didn’t emit any heat at all, but rather exuded a chilling cold that made the surrounding void freeze over.

This was a duel between a Great World King and a peak ordinary World King!

Smokeless was the first to move. Her aura suddenly soared once more and her black waterfall-like hair danced in the wind. A blue drop of blood leaked down from her finger, merging into the tornado around her. The wind in front of Smokeless began to gather, condensing into a lance made of wild winds!

“Heavenly God Lance!”

Lanlu was stunned. This was the legendary weapon left behind by the number one powerhouse of the celestials during the ancient era. But, this Heavenly God Lance had never been passed down.

According to rumors, the Heavenly God Lance had Laws carved in it by the number one powerhouse of the celestials.

And the chart of these Laws was left behind to the celestials. Now, Smokeless should have been using the chart left behind to the celestials to summon a phantom of the Heavenly God Lance.

Although this was only a phantom, it had the dao rhythm of the Laws from the past number one celestial powerhouse. Its might was no trifling matter!

Woosh!

Smokeless grabbed the Heavenly God Spear and shot forwards. Her body was like a meteor that tore through the clear skies.

And then, Smokeless’ opponent also moved.

The blue-white flames on her body suddenly blazed upwards. From the flame a blue bird flew out, bringing with it an endless freezing cold energy.

The bird flapped its wings, rushing towards Smokeless.

Smokeless’ complexion was cold and decisive. She thrust out towards the bird’s chest.

The spirit bird emitted a shrill cry as its body was pierced through, as if it had suffered a tremendous attack.

However, upon seeing this, the blue-clothed female phantom tauntingly smiled, thinking little of it.

In that moment, blue light sparkled around her and blue war armor covered her body.

Her skin was like transparent crystal. As her hair fluttered upwards, she looked like an unrivalled goddess.

In her hands was another black sword.

As this sword appeared, it emitted a keening cry and absorbed all the Laws in the surrounding space.

For a time, the icy flames tangling around the woman burned even brighter. They expanded outwards, forming a domain!

It wasn't strange for such a peerless genius to possess a domain, but the domain this blue-clothed woman used was beyond ordinary. The Laws unified within it had reached a mind-bogglingly high boundary, even putting an ordinary Empyrean to shame.

This ice flame domain wildly swallowed up Smokeless.

Smokeless grit her teeth. Behind her, blue wind gathered into wings, making her speed reach the limit.

"Hah!"

Winds whipped up in all directions. Law runes recklessly swirled around Smokeless. The ice flames were torn apart; Smokeless had opened her own domain.

Cold wind domain and ice flame domain, these two great domains brutally smashed into each other.

For a time, the world within the mirror was flooded with endless blue light. The skies changed color and icy flames tumbled about. Cold winds dashed through the world, like a gorgeous scene of art!

These two domains interwove.

Smokeless gripped the war lance formed from the Wind Laws and began to fiercely battle the blue-clothed woman!

Two peerless women fought. One real, one virtual, they began to engage in a crazy melee within the twin domains!

This was a world-shaking battle.

Outside the Cold Ice Mirror the celestial and god race powerhouses were all left speechless!

In particular, To Bagui. He had watched with his own eyes as Smokeless returned to the celestials after disappearing for so many years and then revealing her formidable strength. Amongst the juniors of the celestials, no one could stand on par with her. It could even be said that they were all left far behind!

Even so, Smokeless was only barely able to draw equal to an ancient genius that had a lower cultivation than she did.

“The geniuses of the ancient era, just how much stronger were they…”

To Bagui deeply sighed. It had to be known that most of these ancient geniuses came from the god race and only a small minority came from the celestials. The two races once had an incomparably glorious history in the past, but they had slowly declined over the eons. It was said that the Heavenly Dao simply didn’t abide their existence any longer.

“She’s even burnt her Bluesilver blood. Smokeless is giving this everything she has.”

Smokeless’ blood was different from other normal celestial martial artists’. Her blood was dark blue and formed ice crystals in the air. This sort of bloodline was a variation bloodline amongst the celestials. A single drop could freeze a raging river.

If Smokeless could rise to become a peak Empyrean, then her blood alone could leave an entire world trapped in ice.

But now, even when Smokeless used her bloodline strength, she was only able to barely fight to a draw with this ancient genius.

The combat became increasingly intense.

Smokeless’ hair flew upwards like a war goddess. But across from her, the blue-clothed woman released a blinding blue light from all over her body, her body burning with flames as she almost transformed into a phoenix.

She was using her phoenix body to wildly fight with Smokeless.

The flames on her body, after being cut apart by Smokeless, turned into small spirit birds in the sky that continued to attack Smokeless.

These flames each seemed to have a mind of their own and carried with them an attribute of endlessness!

Smokeless soon fell into a siege of flames!

“This endlessly growing flame is too difficult to deal with. If she cannot extinguish them then there will only be more and more!”

Lin Ming saw through what was happening. The flames emitted by the ancient genius were in a way similar to the Holy Scripture creator’s Concept of Life.

If one could cultivate this Concept to large success, that would be incredible!

Flames turbulently surged. Smokeless also realized the danger she was in. If this continued she would be thoroughly swallowed up by the flames.

She grit her teeth, relying on her willpower to erupt with the strength of her bloodline once more.

Chi-la!

Thick ice flames were cut apart. Surrounded by whistling winds, Smokeless launched her icy blue wind-attribute wings outwards, impacting into the blue skies!

The blue-clothed woman frowned. She hurtled upwards, chasing after Smokeless. However, in that moment, a mystical black light covered the blue-clothed woman. Countless Asura runes danced within that black light.

As the blue-clothed woman was shrouded, her body shook. Then, beneath the eyes of those watching, she turned into a wisp of blue smoke that scattered into the wind, vanishing without a trace left behind.

All that was left over was Smokeless flying alone in the air, watching with a stunned expression.

“Mm? What happened?” Shenku was startled. The blue-clothed woman was clearly winning and yet she had suddenly vanished.

“The time was reached, 1000 breaths!”

Standing beside Shenku, To Bagui finally relaxed. Although the others hadn’t been counting, To Bagui had been keeping track of every single second in his heart, hoping that the time limit would quickly be reached.

Although they had barely won, they had still won in the end.

A smile appeared on To Bagui’s face.

“Smokeless, good job.”

To Bagui shouted.

“Truly terrifying. It's hard to find anyone in my god race that can compare with Smokeless’ talent…”

Diwuhen praised in his heart.

However, completely different from the excited Diwuhen and To Bagui, as Smokeless came fluttering down from the skies her expression was a bit depressed, and even unhappy.

She was well aware that if the time limit didn’t exist, her chances of winning didn’t surpass 20%.

Ultimately, she was a loser.

She had lost to an opponent of a lower cultivation boundary.

As Smokeless grew up, she had always been the one jumping ranks to fight others. Today was the only time when someone else had jumped ranks to suppress her.

She had only been able to win by utilizing favorable rules. Such a victory naturally couldn’t make her happy.

To Bagui was able to see Smokeless’ thoughts. He said, “You still won. Out of all of us, you’re the only one to have won. Isn’t that enough?”

To Bagui was able to say from a different perspective.

“Smokeless, don’t be so harsh on yourself. During the ancient era, the martial arts civilization was much more prosperous than it is now. Their inheritances were far more powerful and it was a time when countless heroic rivals rose up together. In an environment with so many geniuses fighting together, that would also affect their rate of growth. It’s not something that the conditions of the current era can compare with. If you were born in ancient times, you would certainly be no worse than that woman you faced in the mirror."

The civilization of martial arts had its rises and declines. The essential reason for such a cycle was because the inheritance of martial arts was easy to sever.

This was because it was impossible to easily copy cultivation method jade slips.

For instance, take True Divinity cultivation methods as an example. These mostly existed as singularly unique copies left behind by their creators. If their descendants wanted to copy it, then they would have to fully comprehend and train in the True Divinity cultivation method. In other words, this was equal to asking someone to cultivate all the way to a True Divinity. The conditions for copying a jade slip of this level were simply too harsh.

In this situation, if a True Divinity died in battle without passing down a jade slip, it was possible for the line of their inheritance to be broken.

In 10 billion years, for all sorts of different reasons, there were many broken inheritances.

It was also because of this reason that some peerless powerhouses would spend a tremendous amount of effort to construct a land of inheritance before their death. This was so they could choose an appropriate successor and permanently preserve their legacy.

As To Bagui comforted Smokeless, the Cold Ice Mirror trembled once more.

A stream of light flashed. This stream of light flew out from the Cold Ice Mirror's profound surface and into Smokeless' hand.

"Mm? This is...?"

Everyone was shocked. They quickly looked over.

They could see the light slowly converging into Smokeless' hand, forming into a circle-shaped object.

This was a bracelet!

Seeing this, To Bagui already guessed what it was. His breathing quickened.

“This is something left behind by Heavenly God Asura!”

“Incredible!”

The god race martial artists all widened their eyes, their complexions changing. A treasure left behind by Heavenly God Asura; that was serious!

“What is it?”

Everyone circled around Smokeless.

To Bagui excitedly caught Smokeless’ hand, “Let us see!”

Within Smokeless’ hand was a strangely shaped bracelet. This bracelet was like two snakes twisted together. It was dark gold in color and flooded with a mysterious aura.

“True Divinity spirit treasure!”

Diwuhen sucked in a deep breath, a look of envy crossing his face.

Smokeless’ victory had been rewarded with a True Divinity spirit treasure.

Chapter 1886 – Lin Ming Fights

Chapter 1886 – Lin Ming Fights

…

…

…

True Divinity spirit treasures were also divided into grades. The True Divinity spirit treasures left behind by lower True Divinities were naturally ordinary.

But for some outstanding True Divinities, for instance upper True Divinities, or those that had surpassed True Divinity such as the Asura Road Master and the creator of the Holy Scripture, the True Divinity spirit treasures they left behind would be of a completely different level. This bracelet in front of everyone was such an example.

As something that came from the Asura forbidden land's Cold Ice Mirror, any rewards here would have come from the Asura Road Master. It must be something extraordinary.

The functions behind this True Divinity spirit treasure had yet to be revealed, but without a doubt it would prove a great boost to Smokeless in the great calamity.

"It should be a treasure that Heavenly God Asura left behind in the past. Any True Divinity spirit treasures were long since useless to him. He must have placed these treasures in the Cold Ice Mirror for his descendants."

"Those that can last 1000 breaths of time against their opponent can obtain a True Divinity spirit treasure. Then what if they killed their opponent? What then?"

Diwuhen and To Bagui asked, filled with anticipation.

But unfortunately, they could only fantasize about the possibilities. Wanting to find out the truth was far too difficult.

Diwuhen shook his head. He looked at Lin Ming and said, “Lin Ming, everything is up to you now. You are someone who His Majesty God Sovereign favors. I believe you will be able to create your own miracle.”

Diwuhen was only able to sigh in admiration as he saw Smokeless last 1000 breaths of time within the mirror.

He also had high hopes for Lin Ming. This was because the old God Sovereign had said that Lin Ming might be the most talented individual he had ever seen in his life.

Diwuhen had absolute faith in the judgments of his master. He was sure that Lin Ming’s performance would be no worse than Smokeless’.

As long as Lin Ming could last for 1000 breaths of time, their god race could also obtain a True Divinity spirit treasure on their side.

Otherwise, if only the celestials obtained a treasure and the god race were to return empty-handed, that would be far too ugly a sight.

“Don’t feel pressured. It’s fine as long as you try your best!”

Diwuhen slapped Lin Ming’s shoulder. Lin Ming nodded and moved towards the Cold Ice Mirror.

He passed by Smokeless. Smokeless’ eyes moved from her True Divinity bracelet that she wore on her right wrist to Lin Ming’s face.

“This time you don’t have the support of the Laws and the difference in our boundaries is also wiped away. This is a fair competition for the both of us. Since the god race’s God Sovereign has given you such a high estimation, I am also looking forwards to seeing your strength.”

A smile hung on Smokeless' lips. In her eyes, everything about Lin Ming was a puzzle.

She didn't know where Lin Ming had obtained an inheritance concerning god decrees, nor how he managed to learn it.

His opportunities and his luck left one seething with envy. But besides luck, Smokeless believed that this human youth must have some remarkable aspect to him. But as to what that was, she had no idea.

Now was the time when she could see his true strength.

Lin Ming glanced at Smokeless and faintly smiled. Without responding, he calmly stepped into the Cold Ice Mirror, as if he were simply crossing through a door.

Lin Ming's opponent was a youth wielding a heavy sword, his eyes filled with a gloomy yin chill and his aura restrained. The feeling this youth gave off was like that of a cheetah ready to burst into action. Once prey appeared, this youth would ferociously pounce forwards, striking down his enemy!

Without a doubt, this was a peerless genius!

Ca!

The Black Dragon Spear appeared. The pitch black divine spear shimmered with an icy cold godly light.

Presently, Lin Ming was able to use the Black Dragon Spear with skill and relative ease. Although he couldn't display the true potential of the Black Dragon Spear, he also wouldn't be drained of strength after using it several times.

Seeing the Black Dragon Spear appear, the god race and celestial powerhouses were startled.

This was also a True Divinity spirit treasure. Moreover, this didn't seem like an ordinary True Divinity spirit treasure at all.

"This boy, he has so many lucky chances!"

Shenku cried in alarm.

To Bagui said with some envy, "His luck is too good. But, good luck is only one of the conditions to become a peerless powerhouse. Besides that, you also have to look at one's true abilities. Otherwise, no matter how many lucky chances you have they will all be wasted."

As To Bagui spoke, Lin Ming rushed forwards!

The Black Dragon Spear was pointed straight towards the heavy sword-wielding youth's chest. Behind Lin Ming, nine stars floated in the skies, the vast power of stars pouring into Lin Ming like an endless waterfall. The strength within his mortal body instantly climbed to unbelievable heights!

Ka ka ka!

Space shattered. In front of Lin Ming, that heavy sword youth also stepped forwards, his face still gloomy and his eyes filled with killing intent. The pure black heavy sword was like the scythe of a death god, cutting down all life.

The two people hurtled towards each other like meteors. As they collided, spear and sword clashed.

For a time, a terrifying strength erupted in front of Lin Ming and the heavy sword youth!

In that instant, Lin Ming opened the Heretical God Force. The power of thunder and fire wildly erupted from his body and a terrifying vortex of energy fell down from the clouds, swallowing everything!

Peng!

The heavy sword flew away. The black-clothed youth's right palm cracked open, blood gushing out. Lin Ming's gigantic strength had forcefully knocked the heavy sword from the youth's hand.

This was the disparity of absolute strength!

The moment the heavy sword was sent tumbling away, the black-clothed youth's sword light also weakened a tremendous amount. With a light cracking sound, Lin Ming's spear light had already invaded the youth's protective power of divinity.

The black-clothed youth's complexion changed. He rapidly drew back, wanting to escape from Lin Ming's attack range.

However…

It was too late!

Lin Ming stepped forwards, his movements containing unbelievable Laws. The grandmist force field erupted, locking down the surrounding space!

Immediately, the black-clothed youth was shackled by this formidable strength!

The black-clothed youth was only able to stare helplessly on as the Black Dragon Spear thrust towards him.

Puff!

With a faint sound, the black-clothed youth's protective power of divinity tore apart like paper. The long spear thrust towards him. The black-clothed youth wanted to summon a shield, but the Black Dragon Spear's momentum was too fast, too great. The black-clothed youth's body had been tempered for a long time, but even so, before the sharp Black Dragon Spear it had no ability to resist at all.

Blood shot out!

The Black Dragon Spear broke into the black-clothed youth's chest, piercing right through him!

The black-clothed youth hurtled backwards with Lin Ming. Beneath the incredible impulse of Lin Ming's strike, both of them went hurtling downwards like a meteor!

With an explosion, the two people soared through the wide skies until they smashed into a 100,000 foot high glacier.

A turbulent strength erupted, crazily blowing into the glacier. With a crackling rumble, the 100,000 foot high glacier began to collapse!

The earth trembled. Massive chunks of ice fell to the floor. Countless pieces of ice, mist and dust soared into the air, blocking out the skies!

The black-clothed youth vomited a mouthful of blood. His body had been torn open and his organs broken. He had been buried in the endless slurry of ice, his body long since lost deep within it.

Peng!

With a loud crack the black-clothed youth's body exploded beneath the ice, turning into countless runes that scattered in the air.

Lin Ming grasped the Black Dragon Spear and floated high in the skies. Beneath his feet, an endless river of ice wildly raged.

Like this, the battle ended.

Outside the Cold Ice Mirror, To Bagui, Diwuhen, Shenku, Lanlu, and Smokeless were utterly shocked. Smokeless' eyes were as wide as moons and filled with disbelief.

Everything had been like a dream.

Lin Ming's opponent was an ancient genius. Before this, she had also personally experienced how terrifying an ancient genius was.

Even though their opponents had been at a lower cultivation, they still weren't able to slay them.

But in front of Lin Ming, a similar ancient genius had been instantly cut down!

The entire fight had lasted less than two breaths of time. Lin Ming himself had barely made two attacks.

In fact, he had only summoned his true essence. One could even consider that just one move.

"This... what is this?" To Bagui's jaw fell down. He turned and asked Diwuhen.

Diwuhen was also lost in a daze. He had heard the old God Sovereign say that Lin Ming's talent was beyond ordinary, and because of his faith and trust in the old God Sovereign, he also believed Lin Ming was special.

But this 'beyond ordinary' was a bit too beyond the ordinary!

"The one he killed just now, was that really a similar opponent to ours?"

A woman's voice asked, filled with hesitation and uncertainty. Smokeless was simply unable to believe her eyes.

When the four previous people entered the Cold Ice Mirror, they had all faced inconceivably formidable opponents. Their strength seemed endless, their defensive capabilities extraordinary, and no matter what ultimate moves were used, these opponents blocked them all.

But Lin Ming's opponent was like a piece of mud, dead upon touch.

The disparity was far too great.

If their opponents were really the same, then Smokeless felt that she was nothing but a joke.

To Bagui took a deep breath and looked deeply at Lin Ming in the Cold Ice Mirror. He forced a smile and said, “When Heavenly God Asura laid down this array formation he certainly made it impartial towards anyone that entered. It’s true that Lin Ming’s opponent was strong, and we also felt that. But, Lin Ming was simply stronger; he has already surpassed the standard of an ancient genius. In such a situation, for someone with a lower cultivation boundary to challenge him is simply asking to be instantly killed.”

To Bagui sighed as he spoke.

For such a genius like Lin Ming, if an opponent of a lower cultivation boundary were to fight him, that was simply the same as tossing vegetables in his face. It was nothing more than committing suicide. This was the same even for ancient geniuses!

This was because Lin Ming might be described as the most amazing genius to appear within the 33 Heavens for the last several billions of years!

“Surpassed the standard of ancient geniuses?”

Smokeless’ heart shook. She felt that the current her was far worse than the ancient geniuses, but Lin Ming had already surpassed them.

The disparity was far too great.

At this time, Lin Ming had already flown towards the entrance of the Cold Ice Mirror. He put away the Black Dragon Spear and stepped out from the Cold Ice Mirror.

As the five others waiting outside looked at Lin Ming, their eyes looked as if they were staring at a monster.

This Lin Ming, it was far too simple to describe him as someone ‘sure to become a True Divinity in the future’!

Even though they were both geniuses, the evaluation that the celestials and god race had given Smokeless was – ‘someone that had a chance of becoming a True Divinity in the future’.

“Let alone becoming a True Divinity, he will not be a normal True Divinity. Even when the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was young, he absolutely wasn’t Lin Ming’s match…”

Diwuhen thought. He increasingly felt that Lin Ming would play an unimaginable role in this great calamity. Perhaps… he might be able to shoulder the task of reversing the fate of the god race. Of course, this was all under the premise that Lin Ming was willing to shoulder such a heavy burden.

As everyone was lost in their own thoughts, Lin Ming looked towards the Cold Ice Mirror, waiting for his reward.

Smokeless had lasted for a full 1000 breaths of time. Although she wasn’t a match for the ancient genius, she had still obtained a True Divinity spirit treasure left behind by the Asura Road Master as a reward.

Then what would he obtain?

Lin Ming waited, but the Cold Ice Mirror remained quiet, not sending out any reward. Instead, Lin Ming could faintly feel a trace of unusual aura percolating within the Cold Ice Mirror.

Chapter 1887 – Another Battle

Chapter 1887 – Another Battle

…

…

…

“Reward? How come there’s no movement? There should at least be a True Divinity spirit treasure, and it should also be of a higher grade.”

Shenku asked, a bit puzzled. This was because the Cold Ice Mirror remained quiet for far too long.

“The situation isn’t as simple as it seems. I feel that the Laws within the Cold Ice Mirror are throbbing.”

Diwuhen said. Lin Ming was a bit startled. He had discovered something strange with the Cold Ice Mirror, but that was because he was extremely sensitive to the Asura Laws.

But Diwuhen didn’t understand the Asura Laws at all, yet he was still able to feel the palpitations within the Cold Ice Mirror. This was likely the so-called intuition that masters had.

Once someone reached the level of a peak Empyrean, even if their talent wasn’t considered too high by Lin Ming’s standards, they still had amazing experience and intuition.

Lin Ming traced his ring and moved towards the Cold Ice Mirror.

“Lin Ming?”

Diwuhen asked. At this time, countless Asura runes danced in the air in the world of the Cold Ice Mirror, gathering in the skies to form a runic tornado.

From these runes, a youth ran out. Black lightning curled around his body and he grasped a saber as he stepped on the wind.

This saber had a ghost head carved into the hilt, and beneath this ghost head were two words – Evil God!

These two words were written in the language of the ancient god race. The strokes were long and winding, revealing a mystical aura. The two words joined along with the youth's blood red pupils. A pair of black wings flashed out from his back. He was like a true evil god that had flown out from the depths of hell!

"This is..."

Everyone was stunned; there was another opponent!

Lin Ming stepped into the world of the Cold Ice Mirror, grasping the Black Dragon Spear and facing this new enemy.

This new opponent's cultivation was at the late Holy Lord realm.

A small boundary higher than Lin Ming.

From the early Holy Lord heavy sword youth to this current evil god with his saber, there was a sudden increase of two small boundaries, completely passing over the middle Holy Lord realm.

This scene left the Empyreans watching staring at each other in blank dismay.

They originally that after defeating the opponent in the Cold Ice Mirror, that would be considered as passing the test. They didn't think that after killing their opponent, a stronger opponent would appear, emerging without end!

"So that's how it is. Before Lin Ming's reward is handed out, he has to fight more opponents. According to his success, that will decide what his final reward will be?"

Diwuhen guessed. This guess was highly reasonable. If so, then Lin Ming's reward would truly be extraordinary. It would absolutely not be something that an ordinary True Divinity spirit treasure could compare with!

"Lin Ming's strength should have been assessed by the Asura Laws. If he is facing a late Holy Lord realm martial artist, that means the Laws here have determined that Lin Ming's talent has surpassed the standard of ancient geniuses!"

To Bagui uttered, his heart filled with shock.

Currently, Lin Ming was jumping ranks to fight ancient geniuses.

It had to be said that these ancient genius phantoms were all manifested from the standard of a True Divinity. If Lin Ming could jump ranks to fight these people, what sort of future achievements would he have?

Perhaps he might become an extreme True Divinity.

Or even…

As To Bagui thought to here, his mind shivered. He didn't dare to continue with this line of thinking. Above extreme True Divinity existed those like the Asura Road Master and the creator of the Holy Scripture. The strength of those two individuals was impossible to estimate, as they had already surpassed the scope of his understanding.

At this time, within the mirror world, black thunder surged without end around the evil god youth.

Even from a distance, one could feel a strange eeriness from this black thunder, as if it could scorch away one's marrow.

"Evil god and thunder?"

Lin Ming chuckled, a brilliant fighting spirit leaping into his eyes. “When I was in the lower realms in the past, I once obtained the title of Evil God. And today, it’s a coincidence that you are also called Evil God and use thunder. To cross 10 billion years and for us to fight here, this could be considered fate.”

Lin Ming felt that these martial artist phantoms within the Cold Ice Mirror weren’t purely virtual creations. Rather, the Asura Road Master had used some ancient geniuses as templates and adjusted their various strength levels and Laws.

10 billion years ago, these phantoms were likely real people, but they weren’t necessarily so outstanding.

Lin Ming stepped on the void, moving forwards one step at a time. Then, suddenly, he attacked.

Spear light erupted. Within the void of the mirror, faint cracks appeared and regenerated. Lin Ming’s speed rapidly drew to the extreme!

But at the same time, in front of Lin Ming, the evil god youth’s eyes also flashed with a brilliant divine light.

The saber in his hands chopped down. A dreadful saber intent wrapped around the saber blade. A saber strike that seemed as if it could sunder the skies smashed into Lin Ming’s spear light.

Bang!

The terrifying collision caused energy to wildly shoot outwards.

As for Lin Ming and the evil god youth, neither of them were forced a single step back. That brief exchange just now had only been a probing strike.

Lin Ming discovered that the thunder which twined around the evil god youth had merged into the surrounding space. The faint aura of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws gathered along with the thunder, all of it pouring into the evil god youth's body to slowly supplement his strength.

"Thunder Laws' Concept of Life?"

Thunder could grow endlessly and even form life. In the legends, in the most primeval of times when the world was just born and everything was in chaos, it was a bolt of thunder striking the ancient seas that caused life to be born.

If one understood the Concepts of Thunder, then a martial artist with extremely high attainments in the Laws could derive energy from thunder to restore themselves. This wasn't strange at all.

However, this caused Lin Ming to frown. He didn't want to waste too much energy on this youth. So, he intended to cut off this youth's ability to communicate with the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy.

In the blink of an eye, Lin Ming instantly made a decision.

The Asura Heavenly Array Diagram within his body rose like crystal columns, the tinkling sound sweeping out in all directions.

On these crystal columns, the endless power of the Asura Laws flooded outwards, wrapped in the melody of the Great Dao.

Amongst the sparkling light, the Asura Heavenly Array Diagram wrapped around Lin Ming and the evil god youth.

Weng!

The array diagram emitted a boundless mystic strength, pressing down on the power of thunder. The Asura Heavenly Array Diagram within Lin Ming had been personally carved by the Asura Road Master, and the heights of the Laws within had reached the peak of possibility.

The two strengths constantly collided, at the same time isolating the evil god youth from his connection with the mirror world.

This sudden change caused a look of surprise to cross the youth's face.

Although his communication with the world had been severed, he still fearlessly threw himself towards Lin Ming.

The saber in his hands surged with black thunder, sweeping through the world. This thunder wove together, forming endless numbers of black lotus flowers within.

Lotuses were born in the sea of thunder; this was the substantialization of the Thunder Laws. Lin Ming knew that in terms of Thunder Laws alone, this youth's attainments were higher than his own!

Up to now, Lin Ming had placed the entirety of his efforts on cultivating the Asura Laws and Holy Scripture Laws, thus he had temporarily postponed his advancement in the Thunder and Fire Laws as well as the Space and Time Laws.

This was because he felt that the Asura Sutra and the Holy Scripture were the foundation of all Laws within the world. One representing the outer universe, one representing the inner universe – the two great Laws covered nearly all the learnings of martial arts, encompassing everything.

As for the Thunder and Fire Laws, Space and Time Laws, they were simply branches.

To lay down the foundation was the most important objective of all!

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Each black lotus flower emitted a terrifying aura, as if they were stars.

Even Lin Ming's heart shook. He knew that his opponent was uncommon.

All the black lotus flowers shook together, releasing Great Dao runes that billowed with ghastly black flames, all of them sweeping towards Lin Ming.

“Mm?”

Just from facing this, Lin Ming felt a tremendous pressure. It was as if an endless river of stars was violently impacting towards him, continuously striking his flesh and blood!

The black lotuses bloomed with thunder. Their strength was incomparably strange. Not only did they attack his flesh and blood, they also struck at his divine soul.

In that moment, within Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, thunder recklessly blazed through even as black flames ignited everywhere.

Each arc of thunder, each black flame, constantly wore down his soul force.

However, when Lin Ming had cultivated in the Soul World, he had experienced a transformation near rebirth several times. His soul force was as fathomless as a sea; it was impossible for a normal divine soul attack to wound him.

Although he had been restrained, Lin Ming didn’t panic at all. Waves of soul force gushed out from his spiritual sea. Wild waves rose up, resisting those black flames.

Without hesitation, Lin Ming opened the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. The Black Dragon Spear fused with the power of the nine stars. A spear thrust out, smashing through space with an overwhelming momentum.

Shua! Shua! Shua!

Countless black lotus flowers were smashed apart by the Black Dragon Spear.

The Black Dragon Spear carried with it a tremendous blood vitality, forcefully pushing out the thunder that eroded Lin Ming’s divine soul.

The two intensely collided in the skies. Lin Ming constantly battled with the phantom youth.

The brutal battle scene caused the celestial and god race martial artists to cry out in surprise. They found it hard to imagine that humanity could produce a genius that reached such a degree of talent.

They had no idea what Lin Ming cultivated, how his background was so deep, or why his strength seemed endless. Even the strongest talent born in the last 10 billion years within the god race and celestial race would have to be inferior to Lin Ming.

At this time, the phantom youth's saber thrust into a black lotus within the sea of thunder. Countless black runes scattered out, all of them pouring into the black lotus.

All of the lotuses hummed, quickly transforming into a singular massive black lotus. It was like a crashing world, rapidly suppressing Lin Ming.

As those outside watched this sudden reversal, they were left stunned.

And then, they noticed that the boundless black lotus flower experienced another change.

Dazzling black light emerged from within the lotus flower. A black spear tore through it like a fierce dragon, forcefully breaking it apart.

The black lotus flower exploded. Endless runes dimmed and were destroyed, dissipating in droves.

The phantom youth's complexion changed. He rapidly retreated.

But it was too late. A bolt of black lightning slammed into his body, screaming and shooting out with endless power.

The phantom youth was shocked. His body violently trembled and black blood sprayed out from his chest. His skin and inner organs began to rapidly collapse.

The phantom youth had suffered grievous wounds. Using the last of his strength, he gathered all of the Thunder Laws within his body. For a time, a wave of even more powerful black thunder hurtled towards Lin Ming, bringing with it the pressure of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Behind Lin Ming, a giant Asura war god phantom appeared. It held two great wheels, blocking the entirety of this attack!

This impact continued for several breaths of time. Behind Lin Ming, the Asura phantom was like a peerless demon god, blocking everything.

Peng!

The phantom youth could no longer persist. His heavily wounded body had finally been completely exhausted of all energy.

His body began to disintegrate, turning into countless Asura runes that faded into the skies...

Chapter 1888 – Enigma

Chapter 1888 – Enigma

…

…

…

“He won again. His opponent had a higher cultivation boundary, but in the end even he was killed. Moreover, he was an ancient genius…”

The god race and celestial powerhouses looked at each other in stark shock. To jump ranks to cut down an ancient genius, that was far too heaven-defying.

Smokeless remained silent. She didn’t know just what to say.

“Could there be more…”

Smokeless muttered to herself. But as she spoke, her words caused everyone’s minds to shake!

Smokeless was naturally speaking of Lin Ming’s next opponent!

Lin Ming had instantly killed a martial artist of a lower boundary, and had even killed a martial artist of a higher boundary. But now, it seemed that perhaps this was not the end!

To Bagui looked into the world of the Cold Ice Mirror. He could feel the Laws of the world palpitating. Could there really be a third opponent?

If so, could this new opponent’s cultivation be at the peak Holy Lord realm?

At this moment, Lin Ming grasped the Black Dragon Spear. He still didn't leave the mirror world, but waited within.

There was no need for him to suspect anything. He had already determined that the ancient genius he just cut down wouldn't be the end of this.

According to Lin Ming's speculations, if he killed his opponent, another match would appear. If he could drag out the battle to 1000 breaths of time without killing his opponent, then that would still be considered victory, but the battles would come to an end.

At this time, the Asura Laws reflected in Lin Ming's eyes danced in the air.

Motes of divine light gathered, forming a sphere of light above Lin Ming.

This sphere of light was incomparably mystical, carrying with it an ancient and terrifying aura.

"What is that?"

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. He could faintly feel that whatever was in that sphere of light was a treasure!

Moreover, it had to be something truly incredible.

As Lin Ming looked at this sphere of light, he could feel all the blood in his body be drawn in by it, as if his blood would howl out of his body!

"Supreme treasure!"

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with light. That thing might be his reward!

At this time, it wasn't just Lin Ming who saw this treasure floating high in the air. Even the peak Empyreans felt their hearts shake as they saw this treasure.

"What could it be?"

Diwuhen asked with bated breath. Just from the aura alone, his emotions quivered and surged!

Smokeless had obtained a True Divinity spirit treasure before this. But, Diwuhen could feel that the value of this treasure was at least ten times that of Smokeless'!

Lin Ming stepped through the void, slowly flying towards the treasure.

But at this moment, ahead of Lin Ming, there was a distortion in space. A woman appeared in front of him like a ghost.

This woman was slender. Her back was towards Lin Ming and her rosy bare feet floated high in the black starry skies.

She wore a long black robe and a thick black cloak fell down behind her. On the thick cloak, dark black metal spaulders were mounted. The feeling she gave off was one of mystery and power, as if this woman had fused together the heroic spirit of a war goddess and the slaughter intent of a demon goddess.

Cold wind flapped through the air. The woman's black hair recklessly flew upwards. Her black cloak fluttered in the air. From head to toes, she seemed to melt into the dark night around her.

Lin Ming raised his guard as high as he could.

This was a terrifying woman. He didn't know why, but he faintly felt that this woman's aura was somewhat familiar.

"This person is..."

Lin Ming stepped backwards. He grasped the Black Dragon Spear, his blazing eyes locked onto her.

Lin Ming felt that this other person had already completely manifested, and there wasn't the slightest feeling of any virtual illusion to her. Lin Ming could even feel her potent blood energy and her raging fires of life.

As if the woman standing in front of him wasn't a virtual simulation created by the array formation at all.

But a real person!

Lin Ming believed that if he didn't know she was condensed from the Laws at the start, then by investigating her with his own divine sense, he would have never realized she was just a virtual phantom.

"Her cultivation is… late Holy Lord! Similar to the person I just killed!"

Such a cultivation left Lin Ming surprised. According to his previous thoughts, his opponent's cultivation should rise more and more each time.

But the reality was different.

However, Lin Ming believed that the test would inevitably become more and more difficult. In other words, this woman before him might only have a late Holy Lord realm cultivation, but she would actually be far, far stronger than the youth he had just cut down!

"A greatest genius from the ancient era?"

This thought blazed through Lin Ming's mind.

But then, the woman turned around.

Her two limpid eyes seemed to cross the river of 10 billion years to stare at Lin Ming.

However, the moment the woman's two eyes met his own, Lin Ming felt a shock pass through his entire body!

These eyes seemed to contain the galaxies from space, containing endless mysteries.

But Lin Ming was startled not because of this, but because these eyes… were very familiar!

“These eyes are…”

Lin Ming was shocked beyond comprehension. Images flickered through his mind, finally stopping on the sight of a certain beautiful face.

“Yes, these are her eyes. Her gaze is just like that of the woman in front of me…”

Sheng Mei!

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath.

He had seen Sheng Mei multiple times before. Sheng Mei’s eyes, her gaze, they were things that could not be simulated by others.

Perhaps even in a vast sea of people, divided by endless crowds of people, Lin Ming could still immediately distinguish Sheng Mei’s eyes from a group of millions.

However, as he looked at this woman’s face, her appearance was actually covered by a black veil. It was impossible to see what she looked like.

Laws covered her veil, making it so that Lin Ming couldn’t see through it.

On the woman’s jade-smooth forehead, Lin Ming saw a bright red flower mark. This flower mark was drawn with cinnabar dots. There were nine flower petals, but the final flower petal was small, as if it hadn’t fully stretched out.

“Is this really… Sheng Mei?”

Lin Ming felt this unbelievable. This woman in front of him should be someone from 10 billion years ago, so why would her eyes look so similar to Sheng Mei’s?

“In this world, could there truly be such an impossibly marvelous woman?”

Smokeless muttered from outside the Cold Ice Mirror. She was already stunned.

She only felt that before this woman, she was nothing but a pale firefly in front of the bright moon, completely eclipsed.

Of course, what caused her to pale was not her appearance.

In fact, when it came to martial artists, when the beauty of one's appearance reached an extreme, the disparity between them wouldn't be too great. For instance, Smokeless herself was as beautiful as the moon, and even if she was inferior in appearance to this woman, the difference wasn't too significant.

What Smokeless truly lost in was aura and temperament.

She felt that this peerless woman in the mirror was a true goddess, the source of all Laws in the universe, the beginning of the heavens and earth. She made all others feel inferior.

And at this time, standing beside Smokeless, Diwuhen, To Bagui, Lanlu, and Shenku were similarly stunned. For a long time they were frozen where they were. Their hearts raced with thoughts. This peerless woman… she once existed in history?

It seemed… that there had never been any record of her?

Diwuhen and To Bagui looked at each other. To Bagui shook his head, indicating that in the records of the celestials, there had never been anything about this black-clothed woman. Otherwise, he should at least be able to find several similarly amazing women to compare her to.

But, 10 billion years ago, most ancient True Divinities had been male.

Even if there were female True Divinities, none of them were able to compare to the aura of this peerless woman.

Such an impossibly perfect woman, how could there not have been legends left behind about her?

Her unrivalled elegance and talent, how could something so extraordinary be covered by a river of 10 billion years?

Could it be… she died midway?

If she wasn't able to break into True Divinity, then no matter how peerlessly talented or graceful she was, it would be impossible for her legends to be recorded in history. This was well within reason.

As everyone was lost in their thoughts, a clarion voice echoed out, like a lilting immortal tune rising from the nine nether abyss, causing everyone, including Lin Ming, to be dazed.

"Defeat me, and you will obtain the object behind me."

The woman's cherry red lips parted as she spoke. Her faint smile was enchanting, leaving one intoxicated.

"You… can speak?" Lin Ming was astonished. He could feel that this woman in front of him was just far too similar. "Who are you?"

Lin Ming asked the question in his heart. He really wished to know just why this person would have eyes so similar to Sheng Mei's.

Crossing 10 billion years of time, Lin Ming wouldn't believe that Sheng Mei was this person's reincarnation or that they were somehow blood-related. After all, far too long a time had passed.

The woman simply didn't reply to Lin Ming's words. Or rather, she replied with actions – she stretched out her right hand, casually stroking the air and ripping open a space crack, revealing a pitch black void.

From the void, she took out a sword, a sword that was black all over. On the sword blade, the image of a demon god was carved…

Chapter 1889 – Mysterious Woman

Chapter 1889 – Mysterious Woman

…

…

…

The mysterious woman who extracted the black sword from the void floated in the air, overflowing with peerless grace and measure.

What surprised Lin Ming was that the black sword in the woman's hand was clearly a supreme divine weapon, but as she held it, she didn't exude the least bit aura of fierceness, nor did she emit any killing intent.

Even her aura began to turn ethereal, becoming one with the heavens and earth.

If Lin Ming closed his eyes, he might have thought that there wasn't anyone in front of him at all.

With sword in hand, the woman simply raised her arm and slashed it straight down at Lin Ming.

Shua!

The sword broke through space. For a time, all the starlight in the skies was swallowed up by this sword.

The sword light contracted together, forming a thin line no thicker than a baby's finger. But within this thin line was infinite strength. This strength twisted space and time, killing straight forwards!

The strength contained within this sword light was no longer purely the power of divinity, but also contained the sword master's killing intent, combined with the will of the Heavenly Dao!

A single gesture, a single command, a raise of the hand to summon the Great Dao of the world!

When the opponent was heaven, when the opponent was the Dao, then fighting her was the same as fighting against the world.

Facing this strike, Lin Ming's pupils shrank. He rapidly drew backwards. He was unable to understand how an ethereal being without the slightest killing intent he could sense could emit such a disastrously terrifying attack.

He didn't use his spear to resist this attack but instead traced his ring. In front of him, a massive gate made of chaos stones appeared.

This was the Primordius Gate.

Chi!

The thin sword light thrust into the Primordius Gate, causing it to violently shake!

Although this woman held unparalleled talent and elegance, her cultivation was simply far too low; she was unable to pierce through the Primordius Gate. But at this moment, something bizarre occurred.

The sword light that she shot out scattered as it struck the Primordius Gate, spreading out like a spider web as it covered the entire gate and passed around it, gathering and reforming behind the gate.

Woosh!

The sword light separated from the Primordius Gate and continue slashing towards Lin Ming!

“What!?”

Lin Ming’s eyes widened.

The celestial and god race powerhouses were also panic-stricken. This sword light seemed to have a mind of its own!

This woman could actually control her sword light to such a degree…

“You are not my match. Although your talent could even dominate the rivals of the ancient past, the Laws you cultivate are far too vast. With your boundary, you are unable to control them. With such shallow comprehensions, you cannot compete against me.

“My comprehensions of the Laws are far deeper than yours. I have the incarnation of the Heavenly Dao. You fighting me is the same as you fighting against the vastness of the universe. You will lose here!”

The woman’s sound transmission instantly reached Lin Ming’s mind. And at this time, the sword light also reached him.

Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. At that moment, an Asura war god phantom appeared behind him.

This Asura war god was grand and majestic, an indomitable being. It stood tall, gripping a massive black wheel that crushed all before it.

This black wheel was the fusion of the Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel and the Myriad Essence Reincarnation Wheel.

Zhi zhi zhi zhi!

A fierce collision sounded in the air. As the sword light stabbed into the black wheel, it emitted an eye-piercing sound that made one’s teeth ache.

Lin Ming's eyes were solemn. Behind him, nine stars emerged from thin air, emitting endless starlight that covered him.

He immediately opened four Dao Palaces from the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. His muscles bulged out and the power of his bloodline billowed from his body, impacting straight into the deep skies.

Ka ka ka!

Under the support of this formidable power, the two fused wheels forcefully obliterated the woman's sword light.

Seeing this, the mysterious woman was startled.

"A terrifying bloodline and a dreadful mortal bodily strength. With them you can actually surpass the boundaries of your Laws and block my strike. Still, what I said remains true. The Laws you cultivate are too grand and you cannot control them. Facing the incarnation of the Heavenly Dao, you will still lose to me!"

The mysterious woman caressed the black sword's blade. The black sword emitted a bass howl like a dragon.

In the next moment, she slashed out her sword once more. Sword light tore through the void. This time it was no longer a thin line but a 10 foot wide column of divine light. This divine light of the Great Dao ripped open the void, pouring downwards!

It was clear that this sword light was far stronger than the condensed finger-thin sword light from before!

Lin Ming gripped the Black Dragon Spear, staring right at the sword light. A brilliant divine light burst from his eyes like a crackle of thunder. He sneered.

"So what if you're the incarnation of the Heavenly Dao? Defying the will of the heavens, it's not as if this is my first or second time."

In that instant, Lin Ming cried out loud. His muscles rapidly grew and his joints emitted explosive crackling sounds. His body grew taller as black scales began appearing all over him.

His hair grew longer, turning blood red. Above his two hands, the phantom of a True Dragon and True Phoenix appeared. Behind him the Asura war god holding the black wheel appeared!

Lin Ming had activated the power of the Asura blood. For a time, the Asura Laws shook, affecting the entire mirror world!

After all, the heaven and earth origin energy within this mirror world was all controlled by the Asura Laws. Now that Lin Ming galvanized the Asura blood within him, it caused the surrounding Laws to resonate with him!

Bang!

With a terrifying explosion, Lin Ming grasped the Black Dragon Spear and smashed it onto the mysterious woman's sword light!

The brilliant sword light was sundered in half by Lin Ming's strike!

A storm of energy wildly swept outwards!

"What!? This is!!!?"

Outside of the Cold Ice Mirror, everyone watching was bewildered.

The aura that Lin Ming released just then was similar to their ancestors'!

"Impossible… isn't he a human!? How come the feeling he gives off is a bloodline at least a hundred times purer than our god race's!"

Diwuhen's voice trembled as he spoke. After becoming an extreme Empyrean, there was little that could shake his composure like this.

But now, with the great calamity before them and the life or death of his people on the line, in the darkness when they couldn't find the path to take, they had discovered that Lin Ming had an aura similar to their ancestors'. How could they not be excited!

This was because the bloodline of their primal god race had been at its most magnificent 10 billion years ago, when their ancestors ruled all. From that point on, they had slowly declined as their reproductive abilities grew worse and worse.

If the current primal god race could recover their bloodline from 10 billion years ago, they might also be able to recover their glory from 10 billion years ago!

"Incredible, how could this be?"

To Bagui was also left shell-shocked.

Their celestial race originated from the Asura lineage, and in the past he had gone to the land of inheritance for those of the Asura lineage.

The inheritance totem in that land was similar to the present Lin Ming.

And, what was even more inconceivable was that the aura on Lin Ming's body seemed even purer than the inheritance totem, making them want to kneel and prostrate themselves before him!

"This Lin Ming, just what is he..."

Everyone glanced at each other. Lin Ming was simply a box of riddles.

He was the first to understand the Asura Heavenly Dao and have the ability to repair god decrees.

Then, he had displayed a combat strength far surpassing his boundary. Now he revealed his Asura bloodline.

Before this, even when Lin Ming was able to repair god decrees, Smokeless was still able to maintain a faint arrogance in front of him. This was because she was part of the ancient races, and she was proud of her bloodline!

Even though her race's bloodline had already declined from the past, it still wasn't something that other races like the humans, saints, or spiritas could compare with. Her people could naturally use the power of divinity and they had a superior talent for cultivation. They were a proud race.

But now, facing Lin Ming's Asura blood, Smokeless felt that her own bloodline was nothing but a little firefly in front of the brilliant moon, simply not worthy of mentioning at all.

All of her previous pride and ego had been crushed. She was thoroughly ashamed of herself.

As everyone was shocked, Lin Ming hurtled forwards. He opened the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, the Heretical God Force erupting to its limits!

Fighting intent fused onto the Black Dragon Spear. Lin Ming became one with his spear, shooting towards the mysterious woman like a blazing meteor.

The mysterious woman grasped her peerless black sword, a light leaping into her watery eyes.

A thin layer of divine light covered her body. She wielded her sword and thrust it towards Lin Ming's Black Dragon Spear.

Bang!

Spear and sword crossed. The void shattered, breaking open like an endlessly growing spider web.

The mysterious woman was forced backwards. Her hair flew up and her cloak fluttered about her. She finally stabilized herself after drawing back several hundred feet.

As she held her black sword, a wisp of blood flowed out from between her slender jade fingers.

This wisp of blood was like a red plum blossom blooming in stark white snow, containing a monstrously alluring beauty!

“I didn’t think you’d have such strength…”

The mysterious woman’s expression finally changed. As she looked at Lin Ming, a strange light appeared in her eyes.

“The blood of Asura. It seems you have already obtained a part of his true legacy.”

The mysterious woman had used the word ‘his’.

The ‘his’ she referred to was naturally the Asura Road Master.

But this term caused Lin Ming to feel confused. The Asura Road Master, just how was he related to this woman before him?

Chapter 1890 - Veil

Chapter 1890 - Veil

...

...

...

Lin Ming could confirm that this mysterious woman before him really did exist 10 billion years ago.

She was a phantom, an illusion left behind by an ancient genius. Rather, perhaps it could be said that her strength and her Laws hadn't been adjusted by the array formation but completely reflected her past state.

Such a peerless character, just what was her identity?

Her eyes were so similar to Sheng Mei's. If so, then beneath that veil, would her face also be the same as Sheng Mei's?

Lin Ming's eyes were brilliant as he looked at the woman, as if his gaze and sense could pierce through her concealment. Unfortunately, no matter how he tried he couldn't see past the Laws that covered her veil.

After being stared at so impolitely by Lin Ming, the mysterious woman didn't seem to care at all. She raised the black sword in her hand and wiped the sliver of blood that had leaked from her jade-like hands onto it.

This caused Lin Ming to be startled.

However, when the blood was smeared across the sword's blade, another shocking incident occurred. The black sword absorbed it like a sponge absorbing water, and in the next moment, the sword blade changed color, from black to red!

The sword glowed blood red, as if it had been soaking in a blood pond for thousands of years.

The sword blade revolved with the aura of the Great Dao. A bass rumbling sound echoed in it, as if wild demons were roaring out from within.

In that moment, the mysterious woman's aura changed once more.

It was no longer ethereal, but now it was filled with… killing intent!

Her vision turned sharp and fierce, piercing through the void!

As her eyes locked onto Lin Ming, the mysterious woman said, "Asura's legacy, are you his descendant? Good, I have waited in the Cold Ice Mirror for so many years, and I've long been wanting to experience your strength. Let me see just what sort of character the lineage of Asura is like!"

This mysterious woman's voice held a light taunting tone. Her words left Lin Ming shocked.

"Let me see just what sort of character the lineage of Asura is like?"

These words were clearly dripping with disdain. It seemed that this mysterious woman had a grudge with the lineage of Asura?

It wasn't just Lin Ming, but Diwuhen, To Bagui, and the others outside were all bewildered. They originally believed that this mysterious woman had some significant relation to the Asura Road Master, perhaps even his wife, concubine, daughter, true lineage disciple, or something similar to that. Otherwise, how could she possibly be so mind-numbingly strong?

But now it seemed that she was opposed to the Asura Road Master.

If they were opposed, how would she appear in the Cold Ice Mirror?

Before they could think of a possibility, the mysterious woman had already lashed out.

After being dyed with her fresh blood, her blade had reached incomprehensible levels of speed!

This sword strike didn't bloom with any sword light. But, that bright red sword blade seemed to come to life, as if a blood pond from hell was sealed within it, containing infinite killing intent!

Facing this sword, Lin Ming felt as if his life force would be cut apart by the blade; this would be impossible to survive.

"This is… death?"

Lin Ming was alarmed. The move that the mysterious woman displayed contained inherent Laws that didn't come from the Asura Road Master, but came from the Holy Scripture!

"Holy Scripture – death book!?"

Lin Ming was panic-stricken. Still, even though he was shocked his movements didn't slow down.

The Black Dragon Spear howled, carrying with it the supernatural might of the Asura blood. Laws gathered upon it, violently clashing with the mysterious woman!

His cultivation was lower than hers, but by relying on the great power of his bloodline and his mortal bodily strength, he didn't fall behind at all.

The woman's sword cut apart life force, but Lin Ming's blood vitality was like a fiercely blazing sun. It simply could not be cut in half, could not be extinguished.

However, the longer the battle continued, the more startled Lin Ming became.

The mysterious woman's understandings of the Holy Scripture's Life and Death Concepts had already completely surpassed Lin Ming's imagination, reaching unbelievable heights!

Although the mysterious woman had said he would be defeated no matter what, Lin Ming had thought little of it. But, there was one point she was right about.

That was that the Laws Lin Ming cultivated were far too vast. He cultivated essence, energy, and divine, and the inner and outer universes. It could be said that Lin Ming was dabbling with every Great Dao in the world!

In this sort of situation, with Lin Ming's low cultivation it was impossible for him to have deep attainments.

From either the Heavenly Sutra or Holy Scripture, Lin Ming had only comprehended the tip of the iceberg. If he wanted to fuse the two of them any time soon, that would be impossible.

If so, then facing this mysterious woman who only cultivated the inner universe, when it came to Laws, Lin Ming certainly fell into a disadvantage.

Bang!

A terrifying explosion rang through the world. Lin Ming and the mysterious woman clashed once more.

The two of them drew backwards. The entire surrounding sky had been devastated as if a hammer had been smashing onto a pane of glass, splitting the skies open again and again.

The mysterious woman's complexion was flushed with blood. The wound on her hand grew, with more and more blood streaming out.

As for Lin Ming, scales had broken all over his body and his inner aura was in disorder.

This was a brutal battle.

On both sides, one was an ancient genius and one was a modern genius. Moreover, they were evenly matched!

Outside the Cold Ice Mirror, Smokeless was long since unable to express the shock she felt. Just the mysterious woman's titanic strength left her crying out in praise. But what was even more incredible was that in the current era of martial arts that had long since declined, how could a miracle like Lin Ming be born in the 33 Heavens?

This was really a battle between Holy Lord realm opponents?

"You… your Laws are lower than mine, and your cultivation is lower than mine, yet you can fight to a draw with me. I believe this is because you utilize the power of the Asura blood. But soon you will exhaust your strength. I don't think your blood vitality can remain so potent for much longer. Your life force is exuberant so you have lasted until now, but… you don't seem as if you can drag things out to a 1000 breaths of time?"

There was still a long time until 1000 breaths of time passed. And as the mysterious woman said, because Lin Ming had used the Asura blood and erupted with so much power, he consumed his strength that much more quickly. Even though he had a terrifying endurance ability, it would be difficult for him to continue this battle much longer.

"If things continue like this, then you can last for another 100 breaths of time before my attacks wear down the rest of your strength. If so, then I will have won by default. However, I don't wish for this to happen. I want to defeat you while you are still propped up by the power of the Asura blood and defeat you at your full strength!"

As the mysterious woman spoke, her black hair fluttered upwards and a dao pagoda appeared behind her.

This dao pagoda had six levels, and the pagoda seemed to be suppressing countless races, gods, and even demons.

After the dao pagoda appeared, the mysterious woman's aura rapidly climbed to an astonishing height. Moreover, this time it was no longer just the Concept of Life or just the Concept of Death, but a fusion of them both.

The mysterious woman had never attacked with the fused power of life and death. But now, she was going to attack with the entirety of her strength. In fact, with her present cultivation it was incredibly difficult for her to perfectly fuse together the Concepts of Life and Death, but once she did, then with her profound attainments in the Laws the power behind this strike could be imagined.

Facing this strike, Lin Ming's complexion was solemn. Two figures rushed out from his inner world, standing beside him. These were his avatars.

With the appearance of these two avatars, the mysterious woman was left stunned. "Essence, energy, soul, three embryonic bodies, of them, you have two… to think your Asura Heavenly Dao was originally already cultivated to such a degree. I suppose your next step will be to fuse together the Laws of the 33 Heavens. Really, you have surprised me. However, that is as far as you go. You cannot block my final strike. You have already consumed more than half of your strength, but I am still gathering my potential to strike you with everything I have!"

No matter what the mysterious woman said, it didn't affect her attack.

The majestic dao pagoda carried with it the ancient and boundless will of the Great Dao as it came hurtling down at Lin Ming!

"Life and Death Samsara!"

The mysterious woman brought her hands down. Like a star crashing to earth, the vastness of space seemed to fall down with it!

For a time, the surrounding void was completely fixed in place. The entire mirror world seemed to have solidified, making it impossible to struggle.

In that moment, Lin Ming moved.

He knew just how dreadful this woman’s attack was and he didn’t plan to avoid it in the least. He grasped the Black Dragon Spear and hurtled towards it!

The mysterious woman had spoken correctly. Even if Lin Ming displayed his full strength and burned his blood essence, he still wouldn’t be a match for this strike!

Whether it was the Holy Scripture or Heavenly Sutra, the degree to which Lin Ming cultivated them was far inferior to the mysterious woman!

With the great disparity between their Laws as well as the massive amount of strength he had already used up, he would lose without a doubt!

Then, in that moment, Lin Ming made a decision – he planned to simultaneously use the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra Laws!

But… to simultaneously use two Laws, that was the same as unifying the Heavenly Sutra and Holy Scripture. Wasn’t that easier said than done?

With Lin Ming’s current cultivation and his comprehension of Laws, it was impossible for him to achieve this.

However, he had another method.

He didn’t need to completely fuse together the two great Laws. Rather, he only needed to temporarily join them together for use.

He himself couldn’t use the two Laws at the same time, but… he had his avatars!

At that instant, Lin Ming moved!

He burned his blood essence. His blood vitality boiled over, growing without end. And then in the next moment, it returned to a deathly silence!

These were the Concepts of Life and Death. They rushed through his body along with the ten golden pages and the Laws he had grasped atop the shrine platform at the Fallen God Mountain Range. Everything ran through his heart like a raging river.

And at the same time, on both sides, his two avatars revolved their energies accordingly. The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel and Myriad Essence Reincarnation Wheel revolved in their hands.

With his true self as the inner universe and his two avatars as the outer universe, together they simultaneously utilized the two Laws. Like this, all of Lin Ming's strengths erupted to their limits!

This was also the strongest attack that Lin Ming could use!

Woosh!

The Black Dragon Spear howled, guiding the two great Laws and Lin Ming's martial arts will to fire towards the mysterious woman.

"What? Not only do you understand the Holy Scripture but you've cultivated it to such a degree!?"

The mysterious woman was startled. She never thought Lin Ming, who had fallen into a perilous state and would lose without a doubt, during his final moments would actually use the Holy Scripture Laws and fuse them together with the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws to emit such a terrifying strike!

Lin Ming's Laws were inferior to her own, but by combining these two Laws together, he was able to make up for the disparity!

At this time, the mysterious woman had no time to think about how Lin Ming, as the descendant to the Asura legacy, would have managed to cultivate the Holy Scripture to such a degree, nor did she have time to discern whose attack was stronger. At this moment all she could do was attack with everything she had, striking out with the God Demon Samsara Pagoda!

Rumble rumble rumble!

The Samsara Pagoda howled, crushing the world!

But facing this titanic force, Lin Ming showed no fear. Holding the Black Dragon Spear, he broke into the pagoda!

The Samsara Pagoda violently shook. Countless runes broke apart, disintegrating!

As for the gods, demons, and intelligent lives sealed within the pagoda, they were also killed off by the terrifying spear light!

Laws danced in the air. Energy howled. Lin Ming's mortal body forcefully withstood with dreadful energy storm. The black scales that covered his body splintered off, dripping with blood!

But by relying on his will alone, he courageously moved forwards, unstoppable!

Peng! Peng! Peng!

Floor after floor of the God Demon Samsara Pagoda was pierced through by Lin Ming!

In that intense collision, Lin Ming's arms were left covered with blood. The bones of his arms nearly revealed themselves beneath his wounds. But he grit his teeth, recklessly rushing forth.

"Open for me!"

Lin Ming roared. The roof of the Samsara Pagoda violently exploded open and Lin Ming broke out like an unsealed dragon, soaring into the air!

Gripping the Black Dragon Spear, his momentum was like a ray of light, thrusting straight towards the mysterious woman's throat!

His speed reached the extreme. With the Samsara Pagoda broken and her attack just used, the mysterious woman couldn't summon any new energy; it was impossible for her to defend!

Seeing Lin Ming's disheveled hair and his entire body stained with blood, he rushed forwards like an ominous Asura war god. The mysterious woman's complexion paled!

Even with the absolute disparity between the depths of their Laws, Lin Ming had actually managed to break through her Life and Death Samsara!

His terrifying conviction and momentum left her bewildered.

The Black Dragon Spear's spear point was already less than ten feet away from her jade-white neck; she could already feel the chilling cold of the spear point in the air.

In the next thousandth of the moment, her protective power of divinity would be relentlessly torn open by the Black Dragon Spear and her throat would be pierced through!

Even if she had far more strength remaining than Lin Ming, even if her background was far deeper than Lin Ming's, facing this spear light, none of that was useful!

Peng!

With an explosive sound, the mysterious woman's protective power of divinity shattered open. The Black Dragon Spear continued unabated!

Her face paled. But, she didn't cry out in alarm; she simply closed her eyes.

Yet in that last moment, Lin Ming veered the angle of his spear point, changing the trajectory so that the spear instead scratched the mysterious woman's cheek!

The mysterious woman simply felt a cool feeling pass her face. Startled, she subconsciously traced her cheek. She discovered that her veil had been torn away by the Black Dragon Spear!

A trace of blood flowed down her cheek.

And at this time, Lin Ming had already rushed past the mysterious woman like a bolt of lightning.

The veil had been torn to pieces by the Black Dragon Spear's terrifying spear light. Lin Ming himself continued for another thousand feet before he came to a stop in the void. He fell to his knees, nearly every drop of his strength used up.

He was no longer able to maintain the power of the Asura blood. The shattered scales on Lin Ming's body slowly faded back into him. With a deep breath, he turned around and looked towards the mysterious woman.

The mysterious woman's back was to him. Her cloak was ripped apart and there were many tears in her clothes. But, she didn't look distressed or embarrassed at all. Rather, she gave off a chilling and poignant atmosphere.

The mysterious woman slowly turned around and looked at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's final act of mercy had allowed her to live. Although Lin Ming no longer had the strength to fight back, she knew that she had been defeated.

"You… are truly incredible. Even though your strength is beneath mine, you were actually the one to win…"

As the woman spoke, Lin Ming also saw her face. Her appearance was as perfect as a bright moon, almost completely similar to Sheng Mei's…

Chapter 1891 – Reward

Chapter 1891 – Reward

…

…

…

“Just who are you…”

Lin Ming looked at the mysterious woman. After tearing off her veil with the Black Dragon Spear, he was able to confirm the guess he had all along. Her appearance was almost an exact copy of Sheng Mei’s, and it was impossible for such a coincidence to occur.

This woman had some unknown connection to Sheng Mei.

Was Sheng Mei also someone from the god race?

As this thought crossed through Lin Ming’s mind, he immediately thought it impossible.

In his impression, Sheng Mei cultivated spirit essence as well as the cultivation methods of the spiritas. If she was someone from the god race, she would have cultivated the power of divinity. This would have made her even stronger.

The mysterious woman looked to Lin Ming and faintly smiled. “You asked who I am. Is there a meaning to that? You and I are divided by the endless river of time, we have never crossed paths…”

As the woman spoke, she turned to leave.

But at this time, Lin Ming said, “I have seen a woman. Her appearance is exactly the same as yours. And, she is someone from my era.”

Lin Ming's words caused the woman to pause. She turned around and stared at Lin Ming with surprise.

"Is that so..."

The woman's voice was light and airy, without any hint of what she was thinking in her heart. She stepped upon the wind and vanished into the boundless mirror world, melting into the world and disappearing without a trace.

Lin Ming watched as the mysterious woman left. For a long time he remained silent.

The mysterious woman's appearance was a mystery left behind in Lin Ming's heart.

Sheng Mei's life, just what had she gone through?

Lin Ming recalled that after he finished cultivating in the ancient galactic battlefield of the Akashic Dream Universe, he had run into the Soul Emperor, and then afterwards he had met Sheng Mei.

Sheng Mei asked him whether or not he was willing to abandon humanity and leave alone with her, going to some distant place for a hundred million years.

At that time, Sheng Mei seemed to have things she couldn't bring up.

But Lin Ming also had things he couldn't lay down. Thus, he chose to refuse her.

Now, in this Asura forbidden land, Lin Ming recalled all the words that Sheng Mei had said to him and had various thoughts in his heart.

All these complicated ideas gathered together, and Lin Ming didn't know where the truth lay.

As for Sheng Mei, he didn't know when they would next be able to meet, or whether he would be able to ask her all the questions he had.

"Lin Ming, are you okay!"

Outside of the Cold Ice Mirror, Diwuhen and the others rushed over, all of them unable to calm their mood.

In particular, the god race martial artists; they understood that the primal god race had really picked up a treasure this time.

Lin Ming took the saints as his enemy. His appearance had brought a tremendously favorable turn for the god race.

"That last spear strike, does it have a name?"

Smokeless asked. Before that final strike she had thought Lin Ming was likely to lose. But in the final showdown, the battle had experienced a sudden reversal. That spear strike was simply stunning!

Lin Ming shook his head. At this time, he felt something. He looked up into the skies.

Within the skies of the mirror world, the floating sphere of light was falling down towards Lin Ming.

For a time, everyone held their breath. They knew that this sphere of light was Lin Ming's reward!

People didn't know what this reward was, but they could feel the terrifying aura of a true emperor rolling off from it.

As if the grade of this treasure already surpassed the True Divinity level.

"Could this be an ultimate weapon used by the Asura Road Master?"

Everyone thought, their eyes earnest and curious. Although this was Lin Ming's treasure and wasn't too related to them, they were still all excited at the chance of being able to experience such a divine object.

The sphere of light slowly fell into Lin Ming's palm, gradually manifesting into reality.

Everyone looked closely. All they saw was that the space in Lin Ming's palm seemed to have collapsed. Infinite energy wrapped around Lin Ming's palm, as if he were holding a universe within his grasp.

And in the center of this universe was a black vortex that sucked in all light as well as isolated out everyone's senses. No matter how hard they tried, they couldn't see what was within.

However, Lin Ming had a faint feeling of what it was. The energy in his palm caused him to feel a summoning from the Laws.

If it was said that he was grasping a universe in his palm, that wasn't wrong. Yet this was no ordinary universe, but a self-made inner universe.

Contained within was the inherent aura of the Laws – these were the Existence Laws.

It was like countless lives were born and then extinguished in this universe, life and death spinning round and round…

In a flash, all the aura of the Laws converged. Lin Ming finally realized that the truth was the object in his palm was a drop of blood.

This was the blood drop of a great emperor. It exuded an endlessly terrifying aura, floating up and down like a star.

Within it was the deep meaning of the Life and Death Laws as well as the dreadful will of a great emperor.

The aura of this blood drop was extremely familiar to Lin Ming. And, this familiarity caused his mind to shake.

In the Akashic Dream Universe, from the golden pages that Lin Ming had obtained, the aura within those pages was the exact same as that exuding from this drop of blood.

If he wasn't wrong, then this drop of blood was left behind by the creator of the Holy Scripture.

"It's not Asura blood, but blood of the Holy Scripture creator…"

This left Lin Ming extremely shocked.

Why would blood from the creator of the Holy Scripture be left in the Asura Road Master's forbidden land?

Lin Ming couldn't help but recall the grand battle he had witnessed in the ancient galactic battlefield between the Asura Road Master and the creator of the Holy Scripture.

In that battle, the creator of the Holy Scripture had been wounded by the Asura Road Master. The Holy Scripture had shattered and he had lost a great deal of his divine blood.

Could it be that the Asura Road Master collected the divine blood from the Holy Scripture creator and sealed it away in his own forbidden land so that his successors could take it as their lucky chance?

Lin Ming stared at this drop of blood. This was no ordinary drop of blood, but was the essence congealed from a tremendous amount of blood.

After 10 billion years, not only had the essence energy within it not diminished, but because of the Laws of Life and Death, it actually grew stronger and stronger, like an aged wine. The more time passed, the more precious it would become.

"I have already absorbed the Asura blood. If I absorbed a drop of blood from the creator of the Holy Scripture, what would happen then?"

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment. The drop of blood fell onto his palm and melted into his body without the slightest ripple.

He planned to absorb and refine this drop of blood here. By doing so, he would be stronger in case there something else he needed to face in this Asura forbidden land.

As for Diwuhen and the others, since their interests were so closely intertwined with his own, they would naturally serve as his protectors.

Lin Ming sat cross-legged in the void, calmly composing himself. He felt the great currents of energy within his body. At this time, within his spiritual sea, dreadful waves were rising up into the air.

In that moment it was like he hadn't fused with a drop of blood, but had fused with a vast and profound universe.

This drop of blood seemed to have numerous trembling galaxies, trillions of stars glistening together.

Each star was a complex and exhausting character. With the countless stars gathered together, they formed an endless scripture.

On this ancient scripture, there was a dim figure sitting above it all.

Just by sitting there, he seemed to be sitting in the infinite past, sitting at the end of all time. It was like he had died, without the least bit of life vitality.

Around him, the limitless void began to shake and collapse. Death energy lingered around him without end.

Massive galaxies were annihilated beneath his feet, decaying to tatters, turned into ashes that scattered in the icy cold of space.

At this time, the ancient scripture gently shivered and began to emit a gentle, luminous light. At the end of this universe, standing in hazy opposition, there was another silhouette.

This figure was that of a woman.

Compared to the man that seemed dead, this woman was as bright as a moon. Her body exuded a magnificent brilliance. Each wisp of brilliance that she released seemed to have a small figure sitting within it, chanting holy texts and filling the air with life. Her light swept through the galaxies, illuminating the pitch black cosmos.

Covered by the curtain of her light, many dim and gloomy stars began to shine with a potent life force. Many of the dead stars began to experience a wondrous change. Grass filled with life burst out from the ground and towering trees drilled up from the rocks. Birds flew through the wide skies and beasts galloped through the fields. Leviathans swam through the waters, submerging and stretching out without end…

“A single drop of blood contained the two different mystic strengths and boundaries of life and death. They oppose each other, but coexist in the same universe…” Lin Ming began to enlighten himself on this ancient sutra, his mind seeming to have risen above the mortal coil.

This blood contained the deep meanings behind the Holy Scripture. Compared to the golden pages, it was even more precious!

This was an extraordinary lucky chance! The advantages that this had for Lin Ming comprehending the Laws of the inner universe were unimaginable!

“Before this, I’ve only looked at the life section of the Holy Scripture. In other words, the golden pages. But, I’ve never looked at the death pages. Yet this drop of blood has not only deepened my understanding of the life pages but also allowed me to faintly extrapolate what is contained in the death pages, obtaining a deeper meaning of death…”

Lin Ming had once grasped the principles upon the shrine platform at the Phantom God Spirit Cliff. He had resonated with the world and had seen many different sceneries of time. His comprehensions of the Holy Scripture were no trifling matter.

Now, within his spiritual sea, some of those golden page texts that he hadn’t yet comprehended began to rumble, resonating with the mysterious and vibrant power within the blood he had absorbed.

Lin Ming knew to take advantage of this chance. The Daevic Eye Dao Palace opened and a dazzling light shot out, bringing with it a power that could pierce through all mysteries, shining upon the ancient scriptures.

Some obscure and unknown texts began to shine. The mists that shrouded them retreated, revealing a cold and weak light beneath it all.

This cold light was bizarre. Although it was weak, it continued without end, like an eternal flame that would never extinguish. It shot through the endless darkness… slowly breaking through time and space until it reached the Soul World and then delved into the Akashic Dream Universe.

As the mysterious Akashic Dream Universe was shot through with this cold light, from all parts of the Akashic Dream Universe, wisps of incomparably pure and boundless mystic power shot back out, following the path of the cold light and gathering into Lin Ming's mind.

Bang!

Lin Ming's entire body shook. From his flesh and blood, light began to emit, resonating with the ancient scriptures all around him, completely enveloping him.

This strange light was black on one side and white on the other, like a yin yang diagram. It contained the true meanings of life and death as it wrapped around Lin Ming…

Gradually, the Laws turned into a black and white cocoon of light.

Nestled within, Lin Ming would beat with life from time to time, and other times he would be deathly still…

Chapter 1892 – Peak Holy Lord

Chapter 1892 – Peak Holy Lord

…

…

…

Within the cocoon, Lin Ming experienced a long, long dream. In this dream, he witnessed a great calamity sweep through cosmos!

The scale of this great calamity was far more terrifying than the invasion of god race by the saints; it was one that affected nearly every race in every universe!

He saw demons rampaging, he saw countless lives perishing, trillions of quadrillions of miles of space being wiped clean of life as great worlds were destroyed one after another.

This horror of this calamity even changed the rules of the Heavenly Dao. It caused some universes within the 33 Heavens to be annihilated of civilization, turned to wilderness…

And this era was the era in which the Asura Road Master and the creator of the Holy Scripture lived.

Lin Ming seemed to pass through 10 billion years of time to witness all of this.

There were blurred fragments, but the scenes within left Lin Ming shocked beyond comprehension.

Those dreadful devils overwhelmed the skies. The worst amongst them were Holy Lords, and there were countless additional World King and Great World King demons.

Not just that, but there were numerous Empyrean level and True Divinity level demons.

The greatest powerhouses of the ancient races fiercely warred with these demons, exhausting all of their energy.

Many races were completely exterminated…

But for humans, saints, and spiritas, during this time they were still small races. Through virtue of their weakness they survived and multiplied, slowly seizing the 33 Heavens and developing their own martial arts civilization.

The accumulated wisdom of the universe declined, but rose again and began to vigorously flourish…

This process was like the alternating pattern of life and death.

Glory was life, destruction was death…

Lin Ming felt that without a doubt, the scenes he saw were memories within the drop of blood.

“These demons… are they the so-called abyssal devils? The Primeval Realm that stands separate from the 33 Heavens… could it be the entrance connecting the abyss and the 33 Heavens?”

This explanation was the most reasonable. The Primeval Realm was likely to be the entrance to the abyss, thus it wasn’t able to be destroyed. This was why it remained for 10 billion years, eventually becoming a ruin.

“The boundless universe, all lives in the cosmos, the civilization of martial arts… in this world, nothing can escape the samsara of life and death. Life and Death Laws are the most common Laws in the universe; they are everywhere. If so, then can the Law of Eternal Life really exist?”

All sorts of thoughts flashed through Lin Ming’s mind. Unconsciously, he saw his mortal body slowly fuse together with the blood cocoon, gradually transforming.

On the surface of the blood cocoon, innumerable runes appeared. They faintly circulated with a bright light, emitting a dense rosy glow.

This scene continued for an unknown period of time. At a certain moment, the Asura Laws within the mirror world began to gather together.

These Law fragments formed a giant vortex that funneled into the blood cocoon. At the same time, in the blood cocoon, the Asura blood within Lin Ming began to resonate with the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws!

Hum –

A dreadful sound reverberated outwards. From time to time, black scales appeared on Lin Ming's body and then hid themselves again. His joints emitted crackling explosive sounds as if the Asura blood within him was violently clashing with the blood of the Holy Scripture creator.

The two different bloodlines waged war with each other, nearly taking Lin Ming's body as their battlefield.

An agonizing pain echoed through Lin Ming like a tide. His flesh and blood tore apart again and again, collapsing and disintegrating. A massive amount of blood leaked out, flowing into the cocoon.

At that moment, it was like Lin Ming's body was soaked within a blood pond.

However, even watching his body being ruined, Lin Ming's heart was as still as placid water, without any panic at all.

This was similar to the deep meanings of the Life and Death Laws. To break something down and then reform it. Without experiencing destruction, how could one experience new life?

As for those endless waves of pain, Lin Ming relied on his willpower to endure every last bit of it. Thus, even in such a situation he was able to remain in an ethereal condition.

His cultivation rapidly rose!

He instantly broke past the barrier of the late Holy Lord realm. But, his cultivation continued to dramatically increase!

His mortal body continued to break down, until even white bone was exposed. Lin Ming only staunchly defended his inner world and spiritual sea, allowing his mortal body to undergo all of these transformations and allowing the two surging energies within him to continue washing away his meridians.

He believed that these two strengths within him would inevitably fuse together. Otherwise, wouldn't the Asura Road Master have left behind a death trap in his forbidden land instead of a reward? If his successor who inherited the Asura Heavenly Dao legacy was to obtain this drop of blood from the creator of the Holy Scripture, would it really be poison?

The pain of fusion continued for a long time. Lin Ming's flesh and blood, and even the black scales, slowly rotted away, scorched black until they finally fell off.

But beneath this ruined flesh and blood was new flesh and blood, crystalline and pure white, like warm jade.

Ten days passed. The Asura Heavenly Dao Laws had completely gathered into the blood cocoon.

And at this time, with a snapping sound, a visible crack presented itself on the surface of the blood cocoon.

Diwuhen and the others had been constantly keeping watch over the surroundings. As they noticed this change, they all turned to look. Lin Ming was emerging!

The blood cocoon split a little at a time until it completely tore open. Within, Lin Ming was sitting down, drenched in blood and mucus.

Feeling the aura of the outside Laws, Lin Ming opened his eyes and slowly stood up. His clothing had already been completely destroyed but his body was wrapped in the light of the Great Dao Laws. He looked like a blazing sun, making one unable to see him clearly.

“Has he already refined the blood?”

Diwuhen muttered.

“He should have. It’s really enough for anyone to feel envy…”

A complex look flashed in To Bagui’s eyes. While he didn’t know which ancient peerless character had left behind this drop of blood, in terms of quality it had already completely surpassed the limits of his understanding. Such a lucky chance, how could he not envy it?

At this time, the light of the Great Dao condensed, forming into new clothes that draped over Lin Ming.

Lin Ming’s cultivation had unexpectedly risen to the peak Holy Lord realm!

The blood of two existences that were Beyond Divinity had violently clashed within his body, the fallout causing Lin Ming’s cultivation to rise to the late Holy Lord realm and break past it into the peak Holy Lord realm!

Such a rapid pace of cultivation had never been experienced even by Lin Ming.

Diwuhen, Smokeless, To Bagui, and the others were all left incomparably shocked. “Peak Holy Lord?”

“This is too fast! Even a genius often needs several hundred years to rise from the middle Holy Lord to peak Holy Lord realm…”

“But to surpass two small boundaries all of a sudden, would that make his foundation unstable?”

Everyone wondered, worried. No matter which race, their geniuses always suppressed their cultivations to temper their comprehension of Laws.

Otherwise, if one’s cultivation rose too quickly but their Laws couldn’t follow them, then the gains simply weren’t worth the losses.

For instance, take a martial artist that cultivated the Fire Laws. If they entered into the Holy Lord realm after comprehending the sixth level Concept of Fire as opposed to entering the Holy Lord realm after comprehending the seventh level Concept of Fire, the effects of entering the Holy Lord realm would naturally be completely different between the two.

This was especially true for Lin Ming. The Laws he cultivated were far too vast and his understandings into them weren’t profound enough. If he couldn’t gain a deep comprehension of these Laws and made cultivation breakthroughs rapidly and randomly, that would inevitably affect his future achievements.

Towards all of this, Lin Ming remained silent.

Indeed, his cultivation boundary had risen far too fast. From the early Holy Lord realm to the peak Holy Lord realm, he had only used a mere several dozen years. Compared to other geniuses, he was at least ten times faster!

He would have to make up for the consequences of having his cultivation progress so rapidly. In other words, Lin Ming would have to spend a long, long time at the peak Holy Lord realm before he broke into the World King realm.

Breaking into the World King realm would be an important step in Lin Ming’s road of martial arts. He couldn’t be even the least bit careless about it.

Then, Lin Ming examined his body.

He discovered his inner world had expanded yet again. The size of his inner world was actually much broader than many World King level powerhouses' inner worlds. Even so, Lin Ming could feel that within his body, the two strengths which belonged to the Asura Road Master and Holy Scripture creator still stood opposite to each other like water and oil, unable to fuse.

They each occupied a part of Lin Ming's body, faintly opposing each other with equal force.

"Indeed… wanting to fuse these two strengths together is far, far too hard…"

Lin Ming sighed. The road he wanted to walk down was one that no one had ever walked down even in 10 billion years.

To many geniuses, if they could only cultivate their inner or outer universe and bring it to the limit, that was already an unimaginable achievement.

And wanting to fuse the two together, that was just the wishful thinking of a crazed idiot.

Lin Ming had a faint premonition that these two strengths were lying in ambush deep within his body. If he couldn't fuse them together then they would slowly develop with time. For himself, this might be an extremely dangerous matter…

To fuse together two Laws that were Beyond Divinity, as well as to consolidate his foundation and break into the World King realm…

These two brutally difficult missions were like two large mountains that lay in front of Lin Ming's road of martial arts. To cross over them one at a time, that was easier said than done.

"At the very least… it will take a hundred years to consolidate my foundation and break into the World King realm. But a hundred years from now, just what sort of situation will the Divine Realm be in?"

Lin Ming silently thought to himself, gripping his fists.

Chapter 1893 – Six Supreme Treasures

Chapter 1893 – Six Supreme Treasures

…

…

…

After Lin Ming absorbed the blood essence from the Holy Scripture creator, the earth began to shake. The massive Cold Ice Mirror that stood tall in the world started to descend, falling back into the earth.

And at the same time, in front of Lin Ming and the others' eyes, a blue stone road appeared. This blue stone road rose into the skies, and at the end, a shrine emerged.

This shrine was old, emitting the aura of endless years. It had floated in the skies for an unimaginable span of time.

Around the shrine was a giant array formation. This array formation contained a terrifying energy. Thick chains wrapped around the shrine like black dragons, fixing the shrine in the skies.

The shrine should have already existed here, but it was covered by the Cold Ice Mirror before.

Everyone glanced at each other. Just what was in this shrine?

"This is the final road. If I'm not wrong, then this is the Asura Shrine recorded in the ancient texts of my god race. If there is a path to salvation in the Asura forbidden land, then it should be sealed within that Asura Shrine!"

Diwuhen suddenly said, his voice quivering. With the end so close, he couldn't contain his excitement!

He felt a deep anticipation but also a deep fear.

He anticipated that there was something within the Asura Shrine which could turn the tide of war. But, he also feared that this was nothing but a one-sided wish from their side; he was afraid that there was no way to save their primal god race.

"This blue stone road, can we go up?"

Smokeless frowned. She felt that only Lin Ming had managed to pass the test of the Cold Ice Mirror and she had barely been able to mix herself into the pool of victors. As for the others, they weren't close at all.

In this situation, did they have the qualifications to step into the final shrine?

Smokeless' words caused Diwuhen to hesitate for a moment. He paused at the blue stone road and then carefully said, "The ancestors are merciful. Even if I have lost honor for the god race, I am still their flesh and blood descendant. With the destruction of our race arriving, even if we are useless trash the ancestors still shouldn't be indifferent towards us and let us perish…"

As he spoke, Diwuhen raised his robes and knelt on the floor, deeply bowing towards the shrine.

Behind Diwuhen, Shenku, Lanlu, and the others also knelt, all of them deeply bowing towards the shrine.

After kneeling for ten breaths of time they stood up. Then, Diwuhen took a slow and careful step forwards and stepped onto the blue stone road. Finally, he discovered that he wasn't forced back by the array formation.

Diwuhen was overjoyed. He stepped forwards, allowing the others to step onto the blue stone road.

“We can go.”

On this road, Diwuhen was covered with a strange feeling. It was like his entire being had become ethereal, as if he were withstanding a baptism of the endless Laws of the universe.

Shenku, Lanlu, and the others also followed up on the blue stone road.

Then there was Lin Ming. He looked at the blue stone road, finding it similar to the blue stone road he had encountered in the Asura Road’s final trial, within the planet-sized heavenly palace. The blue stone there had also contained the aura of Laws.

Everyone carefully moved towards the Asura Shrine.

The road didn’t seem too long, but everyone walked for an entire day.

They walked extremely slowly, allowing themselves to become aware of the Laws here as much as possible.

Finally, the six people neared the shrine.

Lifting their eyes, they saw the entire temple shrouded in blue light. There was a formidable energy contained within that grew endlessly, not seeming like it had experienced 10 billion years at all.

The great doors of the shrine were shut tight. But as the group neared, the doors swung open.

Diwuhen and To Bagui walked at the front, cautiously leading the way into the Asura Shrine.

There were no dangers within the shrine. Lin Ming could feel that the Laws here were peaceful; most of them were defensive array formations. As long as no one tried to destroy the shrine then there wouldn't be any killing intent.

The passage leading into the shrine wasn't too long. The six stepped in, their feet walking on tiles that had been untouched for countless hundreds of millions of years. Light pattering sounds echoed within.

At the end of the passage was a vast grand hall. This grand hall was over a thousand feet long and wide, similar to a city square.

The light of the Laws illuminated this hall, making the entire hall shine as if it were daytime within.

As the six people entered the grand hall, they could see an altar at the center.

This altar was only several dozen feet high, but had a stairway of nine steps. Each step was carved with beautiful images with faint, multi-hued lights sparkling from them, bursting with auspicious sights.

But at this time, no one bothered with the stairs. Instead, all of their eyes were focused on the skies above the altar.

There, floating in the air, were six items, each one of them completely different from the others.

Standing outside the altar, because of the light of the Laws and their shadows, it was hard for people to immediately discern what these six items were.

"What a powerful aura. These were left behind by the Asura Road Master!"

Lin Ming could confirm that these six items were not ordinary treasures at all!

Beside Lin Ming, Shenku, To Bagui, and the others were all panting loudly. Because of these precious treasures it was hard for them to suppress their mood.

These were supreme treasures from 10 billion years ago. Any one of them was countless times more precious than a True Divinity spirit treasure.

“Mm? There are words here…”

Smokeless suddenly said. Everyone followed her gaze to see that somewhere on the altar, there were words of the primal god race carved onto it.

No one present had a problem understanding the primal god race language; they soon understood what it meant.

It was the division of treasure.

Of the six treasures, only three could be chosen.

Of these three, one belonged to them all.

But as for two others, they belonged solely to the person who had passed the Cold Ice Mirror. In other words, they belonged to Lin Ming!

Seeing the rules of assignment, everyone glanced at Lin Ming with envy. To choose three treasures and for two of them to go to Lin Ming, this was truly enough to arouse one’s envy.

Of course, because of the protection of Laws in the Asura forbidden land, as well as the old God Sovereign’s support of Lin Ming, and also the immeasurable function that Lin Ming had in helping the ancient races survive this great calamity, no matter how much anyone envied Lin Ming, none of them would think about plotting against him.

“Choosing treasures!”

Diwuhen sucked in a deep breath, his voice shaking. The reason they came to the Asura forbidden land was for this moment.

Whether or not they could see a ray of hope in the dark, all of that would depend on what these treasures were.

The group slowly flew towards the altar. They could feel the vast power of Laws swell towards them like a wave.

The first treasure was facing the group; it was a large furnace.

This furnace was 30 feet high and had a simple and plain design. There were runes carved onto it, with a taotie diagram and all sorts of other flowers and birds.

These carvings didn't seem exquisite at all. In fact, they appeared rather rough. Looking at the furnace there didn't seem to be anything special about it, as if it were some common bronze antique found within the mortal world.

However, for this furnace to be placed here, everyone knew that it had to be some uncommon treasure. Without a doubt, it was likely some supreme magic tool that the Asura Road Master carried with him in the past.

"There are markings within the furnace!"

Smokeless suddenly said. Everyone looked in to see that within the furnace, there were dense small writings. These writings were in the language of the primal god race, each word flooded with the power of mystical Law runes. They were faint, seemingly covered with fog, making one unable to see them clearly.

"This furnace is a Beyond Divinity level supreme treasure."

A brilliant light flashed in Lin Ming's eyes. This furnace – he wanted it!

Not to mention the terrifying strength of the furnace itself, just the runes and writings within the furnace left him blinded with desire. If he could perceive them then the advantages would be unimaginable.

"What an excellent furnace..."

Diwuhen sighed in praise. But, he only looked. This furnace was precious, but it wasn't enough to save their god race. Not to mention anything else, just its terrifying grade of Beyond Divinity meant that it wasn't something the average person could operate.

Perhaps even an extreme Empyrean might only be able to display a few percent of the furnace's power. How could anyone think of killing the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign with this alone?

The group continued to look.

On the side of the furnace was a pill box.

The pill box was completely sealed, as if there was a separate universe within.

Lin Ming didn't know what pill it was nor could he smell the medicinal fragrance. Everything had been blocked out.

But, Lin Ming could faintly feel that there seemed to be the rhythm of a heartbeat echoing from the pill box, exuding an incredible life force as if there was some spiritual existence being bred within.

"The pill has manifested spirituality?"

The Asura Road Master has left behind a pill that had been enshrined on this altar for 10 billion years. Just what would it be like now?

This pill had likely become an existence similar to the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone. Upon opening this pill box, the pill might fly out into the skies, developing its own mind and intelligence, even being able to cultivate on its own!

Such a pill left everyone shocked. Shenku and Lanlu even wondered whether they would be able to keep the pill from running with their current level of strength after opening the box.

Wanting to prevent it from escaping wouldn’t be easy, and as for swallowing it, the difficulty of that task could be imagined.

“A pill on this level, would swallowing it cause the body to explode with energy?”

As To Bagui spoke, he looked at Diwuhen. Diwuhen shook his head, indicating that he wouldn’t choose this pill, because the pill wasn’t enough to save their people.

Diwuhen looked at Lin Ming. Lin Ming was silent. He alone could choose two items, so he wasn’t in a hurry.

The third item was a black symbol paper. This symbol paper had dense and complex runes drawn across it.

This was a divine runic symbol as well as a so-called god decree.

This was different from the god decrees Lin Ming had seen before that had already turned yellow. This god decree contained an incomparably horrifying strength. The power of Laws within hadn’t faded in the slightest even after 10 billion years, and instead faintly enhanced.

“This god decree…”

Lin Ming’s eyes brightened. He looked at the lines atop the god decree, slowly analyzing its function…

The fourth supreme treasure was a small green bottle. This bottle exuded a halo of light. As Lin Ming probed it with his sense, he felt a familiar aura.

He had felt an aura like this before, in the planet-sized heavenly palace at the Asura Road’s final trial. He would absolutely not mistake what this was – it was the aura of Asura blood.

This green bottle contained a drop of Asura blood. And from the aura it exuded, it was even beyond that of the drop of blood within the planet-sized heavenly palace!

“This doesn’t seem like an object of salvation either…”

As Diwuhen spoke, he felt his heart tighten. In this Asura forbidden land, would there not be anything that could save their people?

Chapter 1894 – Lin Ming's Choice

Chapter 1894 – Lin Ming's Choice

…

…

…

Out of these four items Lin Ming had seen so far, he had difficulty deciding which to choose. Each one would be useful to him, so which should he select in the end?

At this time, Lin Ming's gaze swept towards the fifth supreme treasure.

This treasure was the most unusual. It was a jade ship the size of a palm. The jade ship was covered with array formations and emitted a deep blue divine light all over it. Although this divine light was bright, it was gentle, without glaring in the least.

This palm-sized jade ship was undoubtedly a Beyond Divinity level supreme treasure.

But after clearly seeing this jade ship, it wasn't just Diwuhen, but To Bagui also began to sweat.

Of these five treasures, none of them seemed able to force back the saints!

"Jade ship… should we have all the people of our races take refuge in this jade ship?"

Smokeless muttered. Diwuhen shook his head.

"It's useless. Even if this is a Beyond Divinity level treasure ship, it will be difficult for us to display its strength. Once we are surrounded by a True Divinity, that means we will be intercepted. At that time we would be nothing but a turtle in a jar. Even if the Good Fortune

Saint Sovereign could not break apart this treasure ship quickly, he could easily kill us once this treasure ship exhausts itself of energy…”

What Diwuhen had described was something Lin Ming had personally experienced for himself.

Before, he had used Primordius Heavenly Palace to flee from Tian Mingzi and had ended up in such a situation.

Although Tian Mingzi wasn’t able to break apart Primordius Heavenly Palace, he was actually able to slowly exhaust the energy within it.

Once that time came, he would have died.

Then, there was the last treasure.

This last treasure was the smallest. It was shrouded in divine light, making it difficult to see what it was.

Everyone focused their senses into threads and slowly probed this light before verifying what the supreme treasure appeared to be.

It was a piece of jade the size of a baby’s palm. The jade was carved with numerous mystical runes. Besides that, it didn’t seem particularly special at all.

“This…”

Diwuhen’s voice shivered. He looked at this jade piece and was unable to discover anything strange about it, nor did he understand its function.

By relying on this, could they defeat the saints?

Diwuhen, To Bagui, and the others felt as if they were drowning in despair. Of these six treasures, could any of them be the salvation their people needed?

However, at this time, as Lin Ming looked at the sixth and final supreme treasure his heart began to race with excitement.

The emperor jade of fate!

It was impossible for him to be mistaken. This sixth supreme treasure was the emperor jade of fate he had been searching for all this time!

Those with fate would encounter it eventually, those without fate would never meet it. This was the final mysterious key needed to open the last level of the Asura Road's final trial!

Unfortunately, it wasn't time for the final trial to open, otherwise Lin Ming would have wanted to re-enter the Asura Road and use the two other emperor jades he had with this one to open the final divine treasure trove!

Lin Ming's change in state of mind was undetected by anyone else.

They were all stuck making a difficult choice. This choice was just far too important.

Diwuhen said, “Choose, but be careful. These six treasures concern the future of not only the ancient remnant races, but even the future of the entire 33 Heavens. They are something that will change the result of the great calamity. In choosing the treasure, we must consider the choice carefully and make sure we unravel and understand the functions of each supreme treasure!”

As Diwuhen spoke, the truth was that he was speaking to Lin Ming. He knew Lin Ming was proficient in the Asura Laws, and only he could easily see through the functions of these supreme treasures.

Of these six supreme treasures, they were – the jade ship, emperor jade, god decree, furnace, pill, and Asura blood.

For To Bagui and Diwuhen, it was far too difficult to differentiate just which supreme treasure would be the most valuable.

“Or maybe…”

Diwuhen looked at the god decree. If he had to choose from the six items, he would think that the god decree of which they currently hadn’t discovered the function would most likely be the treasure of salvation.

If they could rely on it to kill the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign…

“Little Brother Lin, look at the god decree. Its function is…”

To Bagui asked Lin Ming, hope thick in his voice.

Lin Ming’s eyes moved to the god decree. In truth, he had been paying attention to the god decree for a long time already.

It was impossible for him to repair or to duplicate a divine runic symbol personally drawn up by the Asura Road Master. But to simply discover its function, that was within the realm of possibility.

Slowly, he began to discern the lines atop the divine runic symbol, gradually extrapolating just what its use was.

Everyone impatiently huddled around Lin Ming, waiting for him to finish.

“Choose this!”

After an hour of silence, Lin Ming slowly and clearly said.

“Oh? This is…”

To Bagui and Diwuhen’s eyes shined. These past days they had gotten to understand Lin Ming’s character. They knew that if he said such things, he naturally had a reasonable explanation.

Perhaps they might be able to find a favorable turn in this great calamity!

"This god decree, can it kill the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign?"

Diwuhen couldn't help but ask. Yet Lin Ming shook his head, "No… it has no striking power, and it is not an offensive god decree."

"What?" Diwuhen staggered backwards. "That is…"

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then said, "If I'm not wrong, then this god decree can be used multiple times. And its function is to… shuttle through the 33 Heavens. In other words… to pierce through the God Lamenting Wall!"

Lin Ming's words were shocking. Everyone was stunned.

Pierce through the God Lamenting Wall?

The path to salvation, then wasn't it… to flee?

Diwuhen and To Bagui looked to each other. They knew that in the universes of the 33 Heavens, there were some Heavens that were complete wildernesses. These universes had no smoke of the mortal world, and there were few intelligent life forms. But, this didn't mean that they were completely unsuited for survival, it was just that the God Lamenting Wall separating these wild universes was too strong, and they were isolated far away from other universes.

If they could flee to these universes then it was possible for them to contend with the saints.

This was because even for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, if he wished to pierce through the God Lamenting Wall he would have to pay a deep price.

"To run away…"

Diwuhen didn't know what taste was on his tongue. He muttered these words again and again.

"This is the only choice…"

To Bagui bitterly sighed and patted Diwuhen's shoulder.

To have them leave the Primeval Universe like this, to leave the homeland that their races had lived in for 10 billion years, it was inevitable that they would be moved by this.

However, for them, this universe had become a dead end…

"The heavens bless my god race…"

Diwuhen meditated in his heart. In the air, he bowed deeply once more, and then reached out with his hands to take the god decree.

Under the protective rules, the array formation around the god decree didn't stop Diwuhen.

Like this, he smoothly took the god decree into his hands.

The soft silky feeling caused Diwuhen's hands to quiver. What he held in his hands was the future of the ancient remnant races!

"Little Brother Lin, we have already made our choice. What about yours?"

To Bagui asked.

Lin Ming hesitated for a moment. From the five remaining items, choosing two of them wasn't easy at all.

After pondering over the choices for ten breaths of time, Lin Ming bowed and then reached out his hands.

First, he took the emperor jade of fate.

No matter what, he had to obtain this item.

He believed that deep in the Asura Road's final trial, that was where the Asura Road Master had left behind his most core inheritance.

"This…"

Seeing Lin Ming receive the emperor jade, they were all surprised.

Smokeless frowned. She looked at Lin Ming, confused.

The first item that Lin Ming chose should be the one that he thought was the most precious.

However in Smokeless' opinion, of the five remaining treasures, the most valuable one was the mysterious pill.

The other items were all external items, but a pill could directly enhance a martial artist's strength; its value was naturally the greatest.

She couldn't understand Lin Ming's choice. Could this emperor jade be some extraordinary thing? Did Lin Ming see just how precious it was?

"There's still one more."

Lin Ming's eyes swept over the four remaining items, one at a time.

The Asura blood?

The Asura blood was definitely good, but Lin Ming had already absorbed it once. If he absorbed this Asura blood a second time, the effects would be greatly diminished.

Moreover, Lin Ming had already obtained the blood of the Holy Scripture creator.

Lin Ming's plan was to fuse the two different strengths within him through cultivating. Considering this, it would be far easier fusing together the two different powers if they were balanced.

Thus, Lin Ming first gave up on the Asura blood.

Then there was the furnace, mysterious pill, and jade ship!

Lin Ming considered his choices again and again. Finally, he grit his teeth and reached out for the jade ship!

This jade ship was the size of his palm. As it fell into Lin Ming's hand, it spun around, its entire body white and emitting a soft atmosphere.

Thus, Lin Ming finished making his choices. He had chosen the emperor jade as well as the… jade ship!

Chapter 1895 – The God Sovereign’s Decision

Chapter 1895 – The God Sovereign’s Decision

…

…

…

Lin Ming’s second choice was the jade ship.

Seeing this, To Bagui, Smokeless, Diwuhen, and the others were all left stunned.

This jade ship should have once been the personal transportation of the Asura Road Master, a Beyond Divinity level spirit treasure spirit ship.

Creating a spirit ship was far more difficult than forging a weapon or refining a pill, moreover, the materials required for the construction were also far higher. But to Lin Ming, the furnace with the Law runes engraved within or the pill would have been much more useful for his cultivation.

To him, this spirit ship wasn’t too meaningful.

“Lin Ming… you chose this spirit ship, for…?”

Diwuhen had already guessed why Lin Ming made this choice, but he didn’t dare to randomly assume. Thus, he asked Lin Ming this question.

“To escape… otherwise, even with the god decree, none of you will be able to escape the Chaos Star Ocean. Without reaching the edge of the Primeval Universe, there will be no way to break through the God Lamenting Wall…”

Currently, the primal god race and the celestials were under a deep siege by the saints. They had only managed to delay for time by relying on the endless black holes and space-time vortexes within the Chaos Star Ocean.

In this situation, wanting to break through the ranks of the saints was unlikely.

“This…”

Diwuhen and To Bagui were at a loss for how to respond to Lin Ming’s words.

Lin Ming had used one of his chances to choose a supreme treasure to pick the spirit ship, all in order to allow the ancient remnant races a slim ray of hope. This benevolence was far too heavy!

Lin Ming shook his head. “You do not need to thank me. First, the old God Sovereign has treated me well, and second, I am also doing this for my own people. I think that the ancient remnant races can break through the space barrier to fly to the Divine Realm, and then use this spirit ship to carry away a part of the Divine Realm’s people to break through the God Lamenting Wall once more and fly to a wild universe together.”

The great calamity lay before them. Lin Ming was well aware that just by relying on himself as well as the Empyreans of humanity, it would be impossible to resist the saints.

It was inevitable that the Divine Realm would be captured by their enemies.

The Divine Realm had quadrillions of trillions of people as well as millions of worlds. The total number of humans was incalculable. Moreover, they were widely dispersed throughout the vast Divine Realm, so wanting to exterminate them all was a nigh impossible task.

Even if the saints used crowds of Empyreans and World Kings to search through each world and kill all humans they could find, they might not be able to finish the job even with 100 million years.

But, the truth was that the saints didn't need to totally annihilate humanity. Rather, they simply needed to destroy the inheritances of humanity.

As long as they destroyed all the human Holy Lands and large influences, humanity would lose their foundation. They would devolve into the humans that lived in the Soul World, becoming nothing but a race of slaves that were ruled by others. After that they would slowly decline until they were finally destroyed.

Thus… the elites of humanity could not be allowed to die.

Divine Dream, Emperor Shakya, Dragon Fang, Jun Bluemoon, Hang Chi… as well as the many Empyreans, World Kings, Empyrean descendants, the peerless proud children of heaven… these people were all the future of humanity. They represented the greatest achievements in martial arts that humanity had developed. In order for the inheritances of humanity's martial arts to continue onwards, these people were all needed.

With a short hundred years, this was all Lin Ming could do. In fact, this could be said to be the only choice possible in a situation where they were cornered and without a path out…

"Pass into the Divine Realm and join together with the human race?"

Diwuhen was thoughtful. The ancient remnant races allying with humanity was perhaps a good decision. Since they both had the goal of destroying the saints, this was a union of interests.

Of course, such a significant prospect had to be reported to the old God Sovereign so that he could make the final decision…

…….

Like this, the venture into the Asura forbidden land ended.

Lin Ming had obtained what he wanted the most – the emperor jade of fate. What followed next was waiting for the Asura Road's final trial to open.

But before then, he had to assist humanity and the ancient remnant races in evacuating their universes.

All of this was a perfectly ideal situation. But… would the future really develop in the road he wished…?

Lin Ming couldn't judge that.

As they said, man proposes, but heaven disposes!

Even if he failed, even if humanity was destroyed, even if he died, he would not regret the choices he made for himself, he wouldn't regret refusing Sheng Mei.

Everything he did was to follow his heart.

This was especially true after he saw Empyrean Primordius in that dark chamber, and those alarming words he had etched into the ground.

Seeing them had strengthened Lin Ming's belief.

Even if he suffered a cruel death, he wanted to follow his heart and walk forwards, one step at a time!

……

Lin Ming returned to the primal god race. The old God Sovereign had already been waiting for him for a long time.

After seeing everyone return safely as well as after hearing Diwuhen's recounting of what happened, the old God Sovereign was extremely startled. Although he knew that Lin Ming was extraordinary, he didn't think that his performance in the Asura forbidden land would have been so amazing. He had jumped ranks to strike down one of the strongest geniuses from the ancient era.

As for allying the god race with the human race, the old God Sovereign readily agreed to this.

Although taking a detour to the Divine Realm would make their escape far more dangerous, this would be greatly beneficial to the reformation of their race in the future.

Moreover, if it weren't for Lin Ming, they would have had no chance of fleeing; they would have only been able to sit here and wait for death.

"This is a spirit ship left behind by the Asura Road Master?"

Next to a black stone table, the numerous powerhouses of the god race and celestial races had gathered together. An emergency summons had been sent out, calling them all here.

"Yes, we've studied this spirit ship. It can change size at will and there is a separate dimensional space within it, one that is extremely vast. It can completely fit all the ancient remnant races that are currently residing in the Chaos Star Ocean."

Wanting to fit several billion martial artists in the spirit ship wasn't difficult at all. A 30 by 30 mile square plane could fit a billion people, and if divided into levels, it could fit dozens of billions or even hundreds of billions of people. And, this spirit ship was far, far larger than that.

Moreover, those within the spirit ship also carried their own spatial magic tools. These magic tools could also hold people, increasing the holding capacity at exponential rates.

Currently, the god race's population only consisted of a pitiful several dozen millions of people. And these people weren't all located within the Chaos Star Ocean.

Even with the celestials and all the other races added together, the spirit ship could still fit many times more their number.

"The plan will commence one month from now. At the appointed time, we will begin a covert operation and convene all our people here. We will have them all shifted into the spirit ship within 20 days, and afterwards, the spirit ship will set off! The fate of our people will depend on whether or not we can break through the siege!”

The old God Sovereign waved his hand, loudly declaring.

The truth was that this was not a meeting, but simply a notice. An escape plan had been formulated long before this. No matter who or where they were, all had to obey.

Break through…

Hearing these words, the numerous powerhouses present fell silent. They knew that breaking out of the siege wouldn’t be easy. Making sacrifices was an unavoidable matter, and if they were unlucky, it was possible they would all be annihilated.

The great war that would happen 50 days from now, that would concern the life or death of all the ancient remnant races!

After everyone was silent for a long time the old God Sovereign quietly spoke up. “Lin Ming…”

“Junior is present.”

Lin Ming stood up.

The old God Sovereign lovingly looked at Lin Ming. He slowly said, “This is a spirit ship that you brought back. Its name has long been lost to time. Why don’t you give it a new name?”

Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred.

His eyes moved away from the old God Sovereign.

At that moment, his eyes seemed to pierce through the space barrier of the grand hall and gaze into the boundless starry skies.

"Let's call it Hope. The Ark of Hope..."

Lin Ming whispered.

……….

News of Lin Ming, Diwuhen, and the others bringing back the method to salvation from the Asura forbidden land was completely blocked off. Only the high level figures of the god race and celestial race were aware of it. This was in order to avoid anything being revealed to the saints, so that they wouldn't launch a desperate invasion into the Chaos Star Ocean.

Currently, the god race needed time!

The old God Sovereign had chosen to leave a month before the summoning of the people and the start of the plan. The truth was that this was all in order for Lin Ming to repair god decrees.

As soon as Lin Ming returned to the god race, he threw himself into a chamber.

There wasn't much time until they fled. With the god race's current strength, even with the support of the Asura Road Master's spirit ship, wanting to break out of the saint race's encirclement would be mind-bogglingly difficult.

And if they had a batch of high quality god decrees assisting them, this mission would be much easier!

For a time, the entire god race was shrouded in a tense and oppressive atmosphere.

Lin Ming repaired the god decrees without a sense of day or night. His cultivation wasn't high to begin with and these god decrees were top divine runic symbols left behind by True Divinity level supreme elders. Wanting to repair them wasn't easy at all.

Thus, the old God Sovereign had sent out several peak Empyreans to be on standby and assist Lin Ming wherever possible.

These peak Empyreans also considered following Lin Ming to learn some techniques.

At this time, they wanted to learn divine runic arts not to steal anything, but only to help Lin Ming. They wanted to assist him so that there would be more god decrees and stronger god decrees to deal with the saints.

But they slowly discovered that no matter how diligent they were in their studies, they weren't able to learn anything at all.

This divine runic arts technique seemed exclusive to Lin Ming. Besides him, no one else was able to understand anything about it.

Another god decree was repaired by Lin Ming. His soul force frequently ran dry.

Then, he would sit in meditation, slowly restoring himself.

"Lin Ming, his Majesty the Battle Sovereign has bid me to send these soul recovery pills..."

After Lin Ming completed a repair job and was beginning to rest, Smokeless entered his chamber.

In order to break out of the besiegement, the celestials gave every effort they could.

These soul recovery pills that Smokeless brought were top quality pills amongst top quality pills. Several soul forging specialized celestial Empyreans had collaborated in order to refine these, using all sorts of precious soul nourishing materials without hesitating to pay any price.

At this time, no one felt there wasn't anything they weren't willing to give up. They would spend anything as long as it helped that much more.

"Thank you..."

Lin Ming's voice had a hint of exhaustion that was hard to conceal. At this time, his face was white and his eyes were bloodshot. Piles of materials were haphazardly thrown about all over his chamber.

This was because some god decrees were incredibly damaged. Lin Ming even needed to redraw some tiny runes on these god decrees.

Adding runes was even more taxing on Lin Ming. Even if it was just a little, this exhausted his soul force.

Smokeless looked at such a Lin Ming, a complex light in her eyes. Because she had taunted Lin Ming and had even been hostile to him in the past, she felt nothing but a crushing guilt.

"Make sure you rest well..."

Smokeless bit her lips, speaking in a soft voice.

If an ordinary person were to say such words, it would only be considered polite. But to Smokeless who was born arrogant and coldly indifferent, these were rare words.

"I understand. Thank you for the soul recovery pills."

Lin Ming had incredible attainments in the soul; he was naturally able to see how uncommon these soul recovery pills were.

To him, repairing these god decrees under a high period of stress was a good chance to temper himself. And with these precious soul recovery pills, he could wantonly overdraw his soul force without consideration of whether there would be any lasting damages left over.

"Mm..."

Smokeless nodded. She looked deeply at Lin Ming and then left the chamber...

The repair process of the god decrees continued on as intensely as it did before.

At this time, Lin Ming who had overdrawn his soul force numerous times already, didn’t know that in a place countless miles away, something terrifying was brewing.

Chapter 1896 – The Giant Beast in the Blood Pool

Chapter 1896 – The Giant Beast in the Blood Pool

…

…

…

In the deep vastness of space, there was a metal planet.

On the surface of this planet there was a cave entrance that was over a thousand miles wide. The edges of this massive hole were smooth and uniform, clearly not formed by natural forces but forcefully carved out by a powerhouse using their great supernatural might.

This cave was fathomless. If one entered, they would find something even more astonishing. After entering a thousand miles deep, there was a titanic space over ten thousand miles wide in radius. This was the same as the entire planet being carved out from within.

And in this massive space was a crimson blood pond that stretched out for thousands of miles. Blood surged and rippled. Killing intent soared to the heavens, alarming to the senses.

In the skies above the blood pond, a middle-aged man in a rainbow-hued robe quietly floated.

This middle-aged man had deep red hair and his looks were ancient and profound, as if his appearance were carved by a saber.

At this time, his eyes were shut tight and his hands were grasping across his chest, his ten fingers splayed outwards, tightly grabbing onto his shoulders. His lips murmured as if he were reciting some ancient text.

Beneath him, the blood pond seethed and roiled. The scent of blood filled the world. Slowly, countless bubbles slowly emerged from the blood pond, as if it were boiling over with excitement.

More and more bubbles emerged, becoming increasingly dense. The splashing of the blood pond grew larger and larger until finally… with a loud explosion, a massive head thrust out from the blood pond, bringing with it a wave of blood over a hundred miles high that crashed into the horizon!

An endless rain of blood fell down like a torrential waterfall. But, the middle-aged man still remained motionless, his eyes shut tight.

He floated within this torrent of blood, but not a single drop touched his body.

What had just come out of the blood pond was a fierce demonic head. This head was a hundred miles long with a pair of curved horns and a great maw, just like a malevolent red dragon!

This malevolent red dragon wildly roared, its massive head swinging from side to side.

At this time, massive bubbles emerged from the blood pond once more. With a great rumble, another ferocious dragon head hurtled out, tumbling about in the skies.

And following that, fierce dragon after fierce dragon drilled out from the blood pond; it was unknown just how many there were.

If a martial artist were to enter this planet at this time, they would definitely be bewildered. They would think that this blood pond was a giant dragon nest and there were many wicked dragons slumbering within.

However, what followed next was shocking.

After over 30 fierce dragons rushed out from the blood pond, the entire pond of blood began to rapidly lower, drying up...

The surface of the blood pond dropped again and again. Eventually, a titanic 10,000 mile long spherical object was exposed. This ball-like object was the same color as the blood pond, and if one didn't look carefully they might even think it was the same.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Viscous blood poured down from the surface of the sphere like a waterfall, eventually revealing thick black chains.

These black chains overlapped each other, firmly locking down that sphere and completely binding it.

As the blood pond lowered more and more, the sphere began to slowly wriggle. There were even beating sounds from within, like the beating of a heart!

Faintly, one could feel a vast aura of life emitting from this sphere; it seemed to be a mass of flesh and blood.

As for the 30 plus fierce red dragons, at the end of their necks that were hundreds of miles long, they were connected to this massive ball of flesh and blood!

In other words, the 30 plus cruel red dragons were not individuals, but part of a whole!

They were branches of this humongous sphere!

It was hard to imagine what sort of terrifying life form this sphere was. In size alone it was 10,000 miles wide and had more than 30 fierce red dragon heads extending from it, each one emitting a terrifying aura no less than that of a True Dragon!

As this horrifying monster appeared, the rainbow-robed man floating in the skies frowned. Beads of sweat had developed at his temples; he had clearly consumed a great deal of energy.

His lips changed as fast as a bolt of lightning. He continued to chant, his words becoming faster and faster!

The words he spoke formed visible runes in the air that flew towards the bizarre giant monster. Then, like water into an ocean, they submerged into the monster’s body.

The middle-aged man consumed more and more energy. His blood vitality tumbled in his body and astral essence gushed out from him. He became increasingly bright, sparkling like a bright afternoon sun.

“Mark of the Saint Ancestors – Seal!”

The middle-aged man’s eyes suddenly popped open. At that moment, all of the texts he chanted gathered together, forming a massive curse seal that flew towards the monster.

Then, this curse seal reflected atop the middle-aged man’s head. It slowly sank into the monster and disappeared from sight.

Wu wu wu –

Wu wu wu –

The monster emitted a deep and bass cry like an earthquake. The entire planet shook, as if it were affected, thundering together with the monster!

This process continued for half an incense stick of time. Then, with a crashing sound, something strange occurred.

Of the monster’s 30 some dragon heads, one of them suddenly melted away, turning into bright red blood that rained down to the ground.

And after several more breaths of time, another dragon head exploded, turning into blood rain once more.

Like this, the 30 some dragon heads each exploded one after another, all of them turning to blood.

Blood gushed down, soaking the monster. After the monster was soaked in this blood, its main body also began to slowly melt away, like a piece of thick lard being heated into liquid.

Finally, the main body completely disappeared, turned into a blood pond.

To begin with, there was no blood pond in this planet, but instead a transformed giant monster!

When the blood pond completely calmed down, the rainbow-robed man closed his eyes, meditating in the void. Chanting all those texts and using the technique he just did had consumed a great deal of his strength.

As the man was meditating, a flame lit up in front of him. The man frowned and opened his eyes.

"Soul Emperor… that old monster, just why is he looking for me…"

The man's eyes flashed with a strange brilliance. In the next moment he casually tore open the void and stepped forwards. His surroundings changed as he suddenly arrived in a grand hall built of crystal.

Floating in the center of this grand hall was a person's shadow.

This shadow was fuzzy and undefined; it was clearly just an illusion.

This illusion was that of a youth with smooth, fair skin, and black hair that fell like a waterfall. But, what was bizarre was that this illusion's eyes were filthy and spiritless, as if on the verge of death.

Such an appearance made one’s scalp creep.

The old youth looked at the middle-aged man. His lips slightly parted, “You seemed to have exhausted yourself considerably? I wonder what it is that can cause the Sovereign of the Saints to work so hard.”

The rainbow-robed man was the saint race’s Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

“You worry about too many things.” The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign indifferently said, with no intentions of mentioning the spell he just cast. “Just what are you doing here?”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s eyes glared at the Soul Emperor. Although they had come to a temporary truce, they were absolutely not friends.

“I have come here especially to… tell you some news!”

The Soul Emperor’s voice was old and empty, without the least bit of feeling, as if he were speaking words of ice.

“Then speak!”

“There is a person. He has gone to the Primeval Universe. He, is something you might be interested in… his name is… Lin Ming!” The Soul Emperor quietly said. As the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign heard this, his eyebrows leapt up.

“Lin Ming! He has arrived at the Primeval Universe!?”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was certainly not unfamiliar of the name Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was a terrifying youth. At a mere hundred years of age, he could suppress seniors several times his age. He was even able to defeat the Good Fortune Saint Son, someone that was an entire large boundary higher!

If such a person were allowed time, then their future would be unimaginable!

But now, Lin Ming was weak.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign certainly wouldn’t allow Lin Ming to freely grow. He had already planned to kill Lin Ming in the next few hundred years and eliminate all potential problems, cutting the weeds at the roots!

However, before this the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign always had matters he needed to attend to. For instance, dealing with the spiritas or dealing with the saints, or even refining that mysterious blood pond in the planet just now.

But now, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign actually learned from the Soul Emperor that Lin Ming had arrived at the Primeval Universe. This was also the universe that the saints were invading!

If so, then he could completely annihilate the ancient remnant races and conveniently kill off Lin Ming while he was at it.

“Really, you choose not to walk the road to heaven but would rather burst through the gates of hell!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign sneered, a bloodthirsty light shining in his eyes.

Killing Lin Ming was the same as wiping out the hope of humanity!

Chapter 1897 – Raise the Sails!

Chapter 1897 – Raise the Sails!

…

…

…

Soul World, Soul Rapture Holy Lands –

In a grand hall crafted from soul crystals, an old youth stood beside an altar.

His hands were crossed in front of his chest. His eyes were closed and his divine sense stretched out like the tentacles of a monster, piercing through the God Lamenting Wall…

This youth was the Soul Emperor.

In a normal situation, even the Soul Emperor who ruled the entire Soul World would find it impossible to penetrate the God Lamenting Wall with his sense.

But, if he was able to leave a mark on someone ahead of time, then even if that person wasn't in the same universe he would still be able to pass through the 33 Heavens to sense them.

The Soul Emperor and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had both left marks on each other's bodies. As long as they wished for it, they could cross the layers of universes to communicate.

Currently, the Soul Emperor had contacted the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign in order to tell him about news related to Lin Ming.

Ssaaa –

The Soul Emperor's eyes opened. At the same time, the connection between him and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was interrupted. In front of the Soul Emperor, the blurry shade of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign slowly disappeared without a trace.

The Soul Emperor was silent. He descended from the altar, one step at a time. With his long black hair and his snow-white robe, from the back he appeared like an extraordinarily beautiful youth at the peak of his prime.

And standing in front of the Soul Emperor was a woman wrapped in a black cloak.

This woman was Sheng Mei.

At this time, Sheng Mei had lowered her eyes. Her expression was faint and indifferent; it was impossible to tell what she was thinking.

"Has your heart gone soft?"

The Soul Emperor suddenly asked. Sheng Mei pressed her eyebrows together, not responding.

The Soul Emperor smiled. "There is no need for you to put on a play before me. I already have a general feeling of the thoughts within your heart. You personally spoke with Lin Ming and blocked out my sense. Afterwards, Lin Ming went to the Primeval Universe. You spoke with him in private for almost a quarter hour – just what did you talk about?"

A light smile hung on the Soul Emperor's face. But, this smile was terrifying.

Sheng Mei still remained silent. She only stood in the dark hall, looking like a sculpture of white jade that was enveloped in a black cloak.

The Soul Emperor stared at Sheng Mei for ten breaths of time and then chuckled as he shook his head. "Your heartbeat remains the same and there isn't the slightest disturbance to your aura. Even the energy circulating within you is perfectly uniform! You really do not shame the reputation of being called my soul race's Soul Empress. However..."

The Soul Emperor’s voice suddenly changed. The atmosphere around him turned icy cold, his entire body surging with killing intent!

His filthy dark eyes turned murderous. “I will not allow you to disobey me again! You should know just how valuable Lin Ming is to me. He is the key to opening my future! After so many years, I have discovered the turning point for all my ambitions. I will not allow anyone to ruin my plans!”

The Soul Emperor overflowed with killing intent, like cold winds that howled from the nine nether abyss. As Sheng Mei faced this violent killing intent, her protective spirit essence trembled.

She took a deep breath and looked at the Soul Emperor. Her voice was equally cold as she said, “You don’t need to threaten me. I already have no other path to take. Your choice is also my choice!”

Although Sheng Mei said this, she still didn’t know what taste was in her heart. In truth, this so-called choice was not hers alone, but one that Lin Ming helped her make…

Rather, it could be said that Sheng Mei had already expected Lin Ming’s choice, and she was simply using their conversation to once again steady her resolve.

“Good! Good! Very good!” The Soul Emperor said, shouted out good three times. “A worm that lives in the dead leaves and fallen branches will never understand the beauty and greatness of the world, because their field of vision is far too narrow and their life is far too short. They will never be able to live past the winter snows…

“I think you don’t want to become such a worm…”

As the Soul Emperor spoke, he stepped forwards until he was a mere foot away from Sheng Mei.

He wasn’t tall and only had the appearance of a newly minted youth. As for Sheng Mei, she was tall. With that, their eyes were completely even with each other.

As their eyes met, countless complex emotions were contained within Sheng Mei's gaze.

The Soul Emperor's last words were also the words that Sheng Mei had spoken to Lin Ming. But compared to when she had said them, the feelings behind them were completely different…

Time slowly passed.

With the descent of the great calamity, waves would rise and winds would surge!

These were troubled times. Overlords of the various universes were hatching their own plans, taking this one in several billion year chance to realize their ambitions!

Mortal desires were without end. In particular, the True Divinities that stood at the peak of their universes. They had accumulated countless lucky chances and had passed through countless massacres, withstanding innumerable tribulations to arrive where they were. They weren't willing to meekly follow the road that fate had assigned them, they weren't willing to obey the samsara of the Heavenly Dao. They wanted to control their own destinies, rising above the world and grasping the Heavenly Dao in their hands!

As for the Soul Emperor and Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, they were both among them…

…..

"It's time…"

Chaos Star Ocean, primal god race headquarters –

The old God Sovereign stood on the edge of a stargazing platform, looked at the endless galaxies circulating around him.

His old eyes seemed to see through the fog of the universe, peeking into the future fate of the god race.

“Reporting to Your Majesty God Sovereign, all people of the ancient remnant races have already boarded the Ark of Hope. This includes the god race’s 22 million citizens, the celestial race’s 350 million citizens, the roaring bone race’s 810 million citizens, the titan race’s 80 million citizens, the ancient spirit race’s…”

An Empyrean respectfully stood behind the old God Sovereign. Diwuhen had stepped forwards, reporting everything to the old God Sovereign.

The old God Sovereign slowly nodded. “Do they all understand how dangerous this battle will be, and what it means to our ancient races?”

“They understand!” Diwuhen responded with absolute surety. “Everything is ready. We can break out at any time!”

“Good.”

The old God Sovereign finally turned around. He slowly tidied his sleeves. On his sleeves, three pure black symbol papers were attached.

These three symbol papers were god decrees personally drawn by the Asura Road Master!

Seeing these three god decrees, all of the Empyreans present had changed complexions. These god decrees were their greatest trump cards in breaking through!

Otherwise, they would have no way to overcome the hurdle that was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

“Your Majesty.” Three peak Empyreans stepped forwards together and knelt on the ground, their hands raised over their heads in reverence. “Please bestow us the god decrees!”

“You all… are you ready?”

The old God Sovereign looked at these three people, his tone ancient and powerful.

As god decrees left behind by the Asura Road Master, wanting to activate them wasn't simple at all!

If a True Divinity galvanized them, they would be drained of strength. And if an Empyrean were to do so, they would affect their own life source and burn the fires of their lives, greatly diminishing their lifespan!

"Honorable Master, please bestow me a god decree!"

Diwuhen stubbornly lifted his hands.

"It is not your turn."

Two elderly peak Empyreans stood in front of Diwuhen. "Please grant them to us…"

"Mm…"

The old God Sovereign looked at these two old god race Empyreans. They were already over 80 million years old.

With a wave of his hand, two god decrees flew into the hands of the two Empyreans.

"The word of Sealing as well as the word of Striking, the two of you can take one. As for the last one, I will hold it myself…" The old God Sovereign's voice echoed out. As Diwuhen heard this, his heart shook and he quietly drew back.

He knew that he could not change the decision of the old God Sovereign. Out of all the primal god race's peak Empyreans, he was the youngest…

The young and those in their prime, they were the future of the god race after this great war…

"Let us go." The old God Sovereign took a deep breath. "We… will fight!"

…….

In the starry black skies, the void was quiet and endless.

Within the Chaos Star Ocean that was filled with space-time storms and black holes, a pure white spirit ship cut straight through space, flying out without slowing!

At the center of this pure white spirit ship, there was a massive array disc. 12 Empyreans sat in a circle around this array disc, providing energy to the spirit ship.

Countless energy stones burned within the array formation.

Lin Ming stood outside the array formation, quietly watching all of this.

Nearby, he could see the vast endlessness of space rapidly passing him by.

“It’s begun…”

Lin Ming had a faint premonition that this battle to break through would be the spark that lit the explosive flames of war…

The future of humanity, the future of the ancient races, as well as his own future, everything would depend on this battle.

“Reporting to Your Majesty, in front of us lies the saints’ space blockade…” At the bow of the spirit ship, a messenger soldier from the titan race reported the information.

“Run it over!”

The old God Sovereign simply and mercilessly replied. His voice carried a deep killing intent.

“As you will!”

The messenger soldier passed on the command. The entire spirit ship suddenly accelerated.

Bang!

With a loud explosion, the void shook!

The saints’ space blockade had been directly ripped open. The Ark of Hope didn’t slow in the least, piercing through the spatial barrier like an arrow through thin paper.

This was the spirit ship left behind by the Asura Road Master and driven by numerous Empyreans. How could such a massive blockade possibly hope to stop it?

Chapter 1898 – Killing an Empyrean

Chapter 1898 – Killing an Empyrean

…

…

…

"Enemy attack!"

Amongst the fleet of the saints, someone cried out loud.

Hundreds of sound transmitting talismans lit up together, rapidly passing down information through various channels.

"Who dares!? They are courting death!"

Over a hundred saint martial artists rushed out.

These people were mostly small battalion leaders and team commanders. They were originally enjoying themselves and playing around, and now that they suddenly heard the enemy was attacking, their festivities were interrupted and they naturally didn't feel well.

These small group leaders were mostly all Holy Lords. As they saw a massive pure white spirit hurtling towards them, they all stared in a stunned daze.

"High grade spirit ship!"

The saint martial artist in the lead was a tall and fat man with a Great World King cultivation. All things considered, he had good eyesight and was able to immediately recognize that this white spirit ship was extraordinary. It was as large as a small planet and even though it was still hundreds of thousands of miles away, it was clearly visible!

“Do they want to break through the defensive line of our Godstep Heavenly Palace!?

“Activate the defensive array formations and prepare to meet the enemy! Report to Empyrean Godstep what is happening, I think those god race bastards have finally become too bored!”

The fat Great World King immediately ordered. These saint martial artists had gone through numerous battles. Although they were all boisterous and rowdy, when they truly met the enemy they wouldn’t be lazy. They immediately opened the array formation to meet the incoming enemy.

However, the white spirit ship didn’t fire towards their battle array but hurtled in another direction!

“What?”

The fat Great World King was stunned. That direction was where Godstep Heavenly Palace was!

That Godstep Heavenly Palace was personally guarded by Empyrean Godstep!

It had to be known that many Empyrean Heavenly Palaces were themselves top grade magic tools. Their combat strength was amazing.

“Are they insane? Do they want to commit suicide?”

The fat Great World King was dumbfounded.

The other group leaders laughed. “Nothing but trying to break a rock with an egg. They’re just looking to die!”

“With Empyrean Godstep’s status, he shouldn’t be willing to meddle in such a battle. But if they are going to run up to his doorstep to die, no one’s going to stop them.”

People chuckled as they spoke. However, the fat Great World King's complexion was somewhat odd. The situation was too suspicious. That white spirit ship…

As the fat Great World King was thinking, something amazing occurred. The spirit ship shot towards Empyrean Godstep's Heavenly Palace and didn't seem to be slowing at all. From the current trajectory and speed, they were going to collide!

"Insane!"

The fat Great World King was panic-stricken. Such a terrifying strike would absolutely cause a riotous detonation. After the array formation of a high grade spirit ship exploded along with the massive amount of energy stones within, the energy shockwaves produced would suck up every nearby Holy Lord and tear them all to shreds.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Floating in space, Godstep Heavenly Palace began to shine with the luminescence of an array formation. Divine light shot out from within the Heavenly Palace; this was the Heavenly Palace's defensive array formation!

With such a large-scale array formation in addition to the personal management of Empyrean Godstep, even the all-out strike of a peak Empyrean wouldn't be able to shake the barrier.

But the fragile-seeming spirit ship continued rushing forwards. It was the suicidal appearance of someone trying to crack open a stone with an egg!

"This is suicide!"

Many people waited to see that white spirit ship crash and blow up into countless fireworks in the starry void.

However, when the white spirit ship struck the array formation at high speed, the front of the spirit ship also shined with the light of an array formation. Infinite divine light gathered there, forming a massive blade!

The blade recklessly tore through all. With a loud explosion, the Heavenly Palace's array formations were torn asunder!

This was like a knife tearing through ordinary paper, without the least bit of resistance!

Then, the white spirit ship fired forwards with unbelievable speed, straight into Godstep Heavenly Palace.

Bang!

The Heavenly Palace violently shook. The walls were ruthlessly torn through by the white spirit ship. The white spirit ship broke through, crashing into the Heavenly Palace!

A monumental tide of energy swept out. In that single collision, countless saint martial artists within Godstep Heavenly Palace had perished!

Even the World Kings within were sucked in and injured.

However, the white spirit ship continued forth with unstoppable momentum. With nearly constant speed, it pierced through the massive Godstep Heavenly Palace, penetrating all the way from one side to the other, bringing with it a brilliant detonation of fireworks as it passed through!

This sort of feeling was like a javelin piercing right through a target!

At that moment, the entire Godstep Heavenly Palace collapsed. Endless fragments were sent flying away as countless martial artists that were within Godstep Heavenly Palace were thrown into the cold vacuum of space.

As for the white spirit ship, it was like a phoenix flying out from an inferno, continuing to race deep into the universe!

Several hundred thousands of miles away, the fat Great World King and the others looked on with horrified expressions, all of them scared witless.

They thought that this was a futile battle and the white spirit ship would blow apart. But, the white spirit ship had actually come out unscathed while the entire Godstep Heavenly Palace had been destroyed.

The result was the complete opposite to what they had thought!

Heavens, what is that!?

“Who is it!?”

From within the ruins of the destroyed Heavenly Palace, an angry and thunderous voice echoed outwards. A skinny man with a mane of white hair stepped out, chasing right after the white spirit ship.

This skinny man’s hawk-like eyes blazed with a severe light!

He was Empyrean Godstep! His own Heavenly Palace had been ruined; how could he silently endure such an insult?

“Break for me!”

The skinny man shouted and slapped out his palm. His palm transformed into a thousand mile palm that shined with a golden divine light, grasping towards the white spirit ship’s driving array formation. He wanted to destroy the spirit ship’s power source!

Bang!

The golden hand smashed against the white spirit ship. The spirit ship suddenly shook and slowed down.

However, the tremendous impact carried Empyrean Godstep forwards.

“Your Majesty God Sovereign!”

Within the spirit ship, the Empyreans managing the driving array formation suddenly felt the spirit ship slow down, receiving a great resistance. “An upper saint Empyrean is hindering our spirit ship from several tens of thousands of miles away.”

“Erase him, quickly and decisively!” The old God Sovereign’s voice was as cold as ice.

“Yes.”

Three peak Empyreans received the order and flew out from the white spirit ship. Even for a peak Empyrean, wanting to instantly kill an upper Empyrean from tens of thousands of miles away was difficult. After all, even if the opponent couldn’t fight they could still run.

But this time, one of the three peak Empyreans held a yellow symbol paper in his hand. This was a god decree left behind by an ordinary True Divinity, but after being repaired by Lin Ming, its might could no longer be compared to how it was in the past!

Divine light sparkled and the god decree lit up. At the same time, the two other peak Empyreans also assisted in the attack.

Three beams of divine light cut through the void, hurtling straight towards Empyrean Godstep with inconceivable speed.

In particular, the central beam of light was overwhelming, tearing through the cosmos!

“Mm!?”

Empyrean Godstep was alarmed. He could feel a terrifying strength within that middle divine light. Moreover, the strength of the three people attacking him had far surpassed his imagination.

“This is bad!”

Empyrean Godstep cried out in shock. He rapidly drew backwards, but… it was too late!

The light that blossomed from the god decree was too dreadful. After it locked onto Empyrean Godstep, there was no way for him to avoid it!

The brilliant divine light swallowed up Empyrean Godstep.

Meanwhile, the attacks of the other two Empyreans also collided. The three attacks joined together, completely piercing through Empyrean Godstep's body.

"Ahhh!"

Empyrean Godstep howled pitifully. His mortal body was torn apart by the divine lights and his soul was annihilated.

Like this, an Empyrean, and even an outstanding person amongst Empyreans, had been erased from existence, instantly killed in a horrifying manner.

"What?!"

Hundreds of thousands of miles away, the fat Great World King's heart shriveled as he saw this.

In his lifetime, this was the first time he had ever seen an Empyrean die, and an upper Empyrean at that!

In ordinary times, an Empyrean was no different from a god in their eyes, an unreachable existence!

But in that brief moment just then, an upper Empyrean had been instantly killed, turned to nothing but ashes and smoke!

This frightening scene caused the fat Great World King to freeze where he was, looking like a statue.

And beside the fat Great World King, the other martial artists weren't able to withstand such a sight. They shivered and a cold sweat dripped down their bodies.

Just what kind of spirit ship was that!? With a single move it was able to erase an upper Empyrean!

“The ancient races… have they all emerged from their nest?”

The fat World King suddenly realized this possibility. The ancient races finally weren’t willing to resign themselves to being encircled and were planning to break free!

“Quickly report the news!”

The fat Great World King’s mind was in utter chaos. He began to realize that this opening salvo would be the fire that lit the fuse for the final decisive battle between the saints and the ancient races!

In fact, it wasn’t just the fat Great World King who realized this. From the destroyed Godstep Heavenly Palace, many World Kings had rapidly sent out news of what happened. This sudden change of events would soon reach the ears of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

Chapter 1899 – Famine

Chapter 1899 – Famine

…

…

…

Deep within the Primeval Universe, within the center of an icy metal planet –

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign sat atop a massive blood red sphere that was 10,000 miles wide. This crimson sphere constantly wriggled. Fierce dragon heads jutted out from the bloody sphere before melting back into it with a rain of blood, repeating this process again and again…

At the same time, loud sounds rang out from within the center of the crimson sphere.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

With the thunderous roaring of the earth, the entire planet vibrated with this sound.

The terrifying sound echoed through the semi-sealed interior of the planet. If a martial artist with an insufficient cultivation were to stand in this space, they would be affected by the horrifying high energy sound waves. Their body and organs would resonate with the sound waves until they turned to mush.

In this environment, a young man knelt before the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, his hands splayed on the ground in reverence.

“Your Majesty Sovereign Ancestor, your child requests to go to battle!”

This young man had already been kneeling here for a long time. He was tall, with broad shoulders. His facial features were sharp and fierce, a faint hostility creeping in his eyes.

This youth was the person who had been defeated by Lin Ming in the past – the Good Fortune Saint Son.

In that 100 year duel, when only 60 years had passed, the Good Fortune Saint Son had been defeated by Lin Ming. Not only had he been defeated, he had lost in a miserable fashion.

In the face of numerous people with the Empyreans of the saint race, human race, monster race, and demon race present, the Good Fortune Saint Son had been publicly cuckolded by Lin Ming. His fiancé was stolen and he was beaten to a pulp. This event would forever be the greatest shame in his life!

Now, 20-30 years had passed. The Good Fortune Saint Son had endured this humiliation, torturing himself, diligently training, all for the fervent wish he had of wiping away that shame!

But Lin Ming seemed to have disappeared without a trace; no one was able to find him.

It was only a few days ago that the Good Fortune Saint Son learned Lin Ming had entered the Primeval Universe. With this he could no longer sit still, thus he requested to be sent to the battlefront by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

However, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn’t respond.

And just now, he also learned that the ancient races were riding a top grade spirit ship to break through their encirclement. Because of this, the Good Fortune Saint Son volunteered himself for battle once more.

“Your Majesty Sovereign Ancestor, your child can confirm that Lin Ming is riding aboard that white spirit ship. The reason Lin Ming came to the Primeval Universe should have been in order to form an alliance with the ancient remnant races. It even seems that Lin Ming has convinced the leaders of the ancient races. They should be trying to escape the Primeval Universe and flee to the Divine Realm to meet up with the humans!"

As Lin Ming's rival, the Good Fortune Saint Son had somewhat of an understanding of Lin Ming. He was already able to guess part of the truth.

However, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign shook his head. "You are not Lin Ming's match. You have diligently cultivated for 20 some years, but even now… the disparity between you and him has only grown larger."

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's words were like a bucket of cold water tossed atop the Good Fortune Saint Son's head.

"I…" The Good Fortune Saint Son gripped his fists. Although he didn't want to acknowledge it, he was well aware of just how terrifying Lin Ming was.

In the past, Lin Ming was able to jump ranks to defeat him and he was younger, in the prime of his youth. Now, over the past 20 some years, the disparity would only have grown larger and larger.

The Good Fortune Saint Son grit his teeth, saying, "I might not be his match, but I do not need to defeat him head on. As long as I can lead the army to rout him on the battlefield and kill him there, that will equally restore my heart of martial arts! I beg Your Majesty Sovereign Ancestor to allow your child to command the troops into battle!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son deeply bowed. But, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign continued shaking his head. "You don't need to be so stubborn. Many times, when a peerless genius reaches the final stage of their growth and must comprehend the Laws of the heavens and earth and step onto the road of divinity, leading a smooth life without problems and bumps isn't necessarily good…"

"Martial artists are creatures that need setbacks at times, just like a phoenix needs to undergo nirvana… your road has been far too smooth. Experiencing such a strike might not be bad for you. As for Lin Ming, he is the same. Although he had experienced some hurdles as he grew, compared to chasing after the Heavenly Dao, all his problems have been insignificant so far…

“You and Lin Ming both need to fail. However, you have me standing behind you, so even if you are defeated you can start over from nothing. As for Lin Ming, he has no one behind him. Once he is defeated, there is nothing but… death!”

As the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign spoke to here, the massive blood red monster beneath his body seemed to have become infected by his aura. The monster wriggled more and more, causing the entire planet to shake.

“Go, it’s time to end this charade. I will not allow a mere human boy to destroy my plans. Before he has grown, I will kill him!”

Killing intent erupted from the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, recklessly gushing out like a tide.

The Good Fortune Saint Son who was less than 10 feet from the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign felt his heart chill, as if he had fallen into the nine nether abyss!

Even he had never earnestly felt the horrifying might of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign like today.

Wu – wu – wu – !

The crimson monster wriggled more and more. The tiny remaining amount of the blood pond rapidly dried up.

The blood pond had been absorbed by the crimson monster, completely swallowed up!

On the surface of the monster’s body, massive runes began to appear. And, the divine light that these runes shot out all gathered between the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s eyebrows.

In that moment, a rune also appeared between the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's eyebrows. This rune was gold, similar to the runes that covered the monster's body.

"Could it be..." The Good Fortune Saint Son was shocked upon seeing this. He could clearly feel that at this time, the spiritual sea of the crimson monster had become one with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's!

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

With a terrifying explosive sound, from the crimson ball beneath the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's feet, dozens of fierce red dragon heads rushed out. These fierce dragons roared with overweening power, breaking into the walls of the metal planet!

The entire planet violently shook. The wicked red dragons tore apart the earth. Endless energy shot out, firing into the vast nothingness of space.

If one watched this planet from millions of miles away, they would see something horrifying occur.

The planet began quietly collapsing from within!

And in the cracks of the disintegrating planet, boundless blood red light filled the air, becoming thicker and thicker until the entire planet was swallowed!

This sort of feeling was like a monster being born from a mother, but because the monster was too powerful, it even swallowed the mother!

"This... this..."

Seeing such a vast and horrifying sight, the Good Fortune Saint Son's mind shook.

The crimson monster was devouring a planet!

“The holy beast of my race… ‘Famine’…” The Good Fortune Saint Son gulped. “Your Majesty Saint Ancestor! Have you already established a spiritual connection with the holy beast? You can control it!?”

The Good Fortune Saint Son was panic-stricken. He had long known of the existence of their saint race’s holy beast.

Rumors said that this holy beast was originally an extremely terrifying existence even amongst abyssals. Its full name was – ‘The Abyssal Demon – Famine’!

And its special attribute was – to devour all!

The abyss of the ancient ruins was a dreadful place, so frightening that no one could understand it.

The entrance was blocked off by a terrifying enchantment. This enchantment was called the ‘Heaven Sealing Enchantment’.

The Heaven Sealing Enchantment was said to contain the phantoms of the Asura Road Master and the Holy Scripture creator.

Through any reasoning, even an abyssal that surpassed the realm of a peak Empyrean would be unable to break past the Heaven Sealing Enchantment.

But, ‘Famine’ had emerged. As for how it did so, no one knew.

There was only one truth – that after ‘Famine’ left the abyss, its strength had precipitously fallen. Even so, it still possessed a dreadful strength capable of swallowing most True Divinities!

The appearance of ‘Famine’ set off an unprecedented disaster for the saints!

It swallowed a massive number of saint powerhouses and countless saint martial artists, eating them up to make itself more powerful.

But finally, the saint race's ancient Saint Sovereign had led many True Divinities to join forces and besiege 'Famine' with overwhelming strength.

Finally, 'Famine' was grievously wounded. Even 90% of its recovered origin energy had disappeared.

Even so, the saints weren't able to destroy Famine.

In this situation, Famine then signed a contract with the ancient Saint Sovereign.

This was an equal contract. The saints would look for blood and food for Famine to devour, and Famine would fight on behalf of the saints!

Like this, Famine became the holy beast of the saints.

The saints were always ambitious. They wanted to rule the 33 Heavens. However, in the great war 3.6 billion years ago when the saints fought the humans, the saints had paid a dire price!

"Your Majesty Saint Ancestor, wasn't Famine heavily wounded in the battle 3.6 billion years ago by Empyrean Divine Seal burning away his life as the price? Ever since, Famine has fallen into a deep slumber. How did you manage to awaken it?"

The Good Fortune Saint Son couldn't believe his own eyes. More than one saint Empyrean had wanted to awaken Famine, but they had all failed.

But now, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had not only awakened Famine, but even seemed to have gained control of it. This left the Good Fortune Saint Son gasping in disbelief.

Rumble rumble rumble!

A series of terrifying explosions continued. From that giant spherical body of blood, more and more blood dragon tentacles stretched out, digging into the earth of the metal planet and recklessly swallowing its energy!

Strength streamed into Famine's body. But, the entire planet withered away. Its origin energy dried up, the seas evaporated, and massive fissures raced through the world.

Even the dried-up land that had lost all spiritual energy was completely swallowed by Famine. Like this, a giant planet that was tens of thousands of miles in radius was eaten by Famine!

This process lasted less than a quarter hour of time. Such a drastic change in the world left the Good Fortune Saint Son struggling to compose himself.

Although he had heard that Famine possessed the ability to swallow worlds, stories were only stories. Now that he saw these stories come to life with his own eyes, he was utterly shocked.

To pierce through a planet wasn't difficult, but crushing apart a planet was hard. As for completely swallowing up a planet, what sort of mighty power was that?

As a martial artist who wholeheartedly chased after the peak of martial arts, the Good Fortune Saint Son had a zealous obsession with strength.

If… only this strength was his own, how wonderful would that be!

At this time, the Good Fortune Saint Son discovered that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's feet had submerged into the blood of Famine at some unknown time.

Rather, it was more accurate to say that he didn't submerge, but the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's mortal body had already fused together with the blood plasma of Famine, sharing blood vessels.

"Hah!"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign coldly sneered. On his neck, blood vessels rose up like red worms, making him look fearsome to the extreme.

“Swallowing a planet is nothing. 3.6 billion years ago when Famine was in its peak state, it even swallowed up the destiny of the human bloodline – in other words, one of humanity’s Heavenly Daos, the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s words were stunning. The Good Fortune Saint Son was also shocked; he had never heard about this chapter of history before.

Chapter 1900 – Asura Primal God Cannon

Chapter 1900 – Asura Primal God Cannon

…

…

…

In ancient times, human martial artists had been exceptionally strong. Besides the essence gathering system, humans also had high achievements in the body transformation system.

The body transformation system. That was – the first six levels of body transformation, followed by the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and then the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

Many human martial artists chose to walk the road of body transformation. Some human martial artists even chose to dual cultivate body and energy.

In this era, numerous human elites rose up.

But afterwards, in the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago, the rules of the heavens and earth changed and humanity's road of body transformation instead became a curse upon them.

It became rare for people to break into the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. As for breaking into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, that was nigh impossible.

This was why humanity from then on had referred to those who chose to take the route of body transformation as… defying the heavens!

Even in the 3.6 billion years that followed, a mere two humans had ever managed to break into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

One of them was Empyrean Primordius, who relied on the flesh and blood-refining Grandmist Spirit Bead to break through.

The other person was Lin Ming. Although he didn’t possess the Grandmist Spirit Bead, he had inherited Empyrean Primordius’ legacy and wishes. Moreover, there was Xiao Moxian who had given him her primal yin energy and pure phoenix blood, causing Lin Ming’s inner yin and yang to become harmonized. With that, Lin Ming had finally been able to break past the chains of the Heavenly Dao.

And if there was a reason for all these hurdles, it was because the rules of the Heavenly Dao had changed 3.6 billion years ago!

In the past when the saints invaded humanity, many Empyreans and True Divinities had poured their strength into Famine and had it swallow one of humanity’s Heavenly Daos, forcefully severing the connection between humanity and the 33 Heavenly Daos’ Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

To change the Heavenly Dao and the destiny of an entire race, that was a dreadful might which neared the level of a Beyond Divinity existence.

And ever since that great war, the human race which had lost the ability to cultivate the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was like a person who had an arm chopped off.

Following that, inheritances that involved the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace were also slowly lost to time.

Moreover, in that great war, Empyrean Divine Seal and numerous other human Empyreans had sacrificed themselves, causing innumerable inheritances to be destroyed and many Holy Lands to be annihilated.

The result was that the human race began to decline ever since. As for the saints and spiritas, one race possessed the Primeval Realm Ruins and the other possessed the Akashic Dream Universe. These two races became stronger and stronger.

In terms of population, humanity could still be considered one of the three peak races. But in terms of strength, the human race was far inferior to the saints and the spiritas.

“If Famine managed to swallow one of the humans’ Heavenly Daos, how come my saint race wasn’t able to thoroughly conquer humanity in the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago?”

The abyssal demon Famine had already begun racing deep into the universe.

Its speed was unbelievable, swiftly passing through the endless void. The Good Fortune Saint Son stood atop Famine’s planet-sized body, asking a question to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

“In the war 3.6 billion years ago, the only universe that the humans managed to defend was the Divine Realm. In the Divine Realm, my saint race suffered defeat after defeat. If there was a reason for this, then it would have been the leader of humanity at the time, Divine Seal. I have no idea what lucky chance he found, but his strength was even able to suppress the ancient Saint Sovereign! Amongst True Divinities he was almost unrivalled!

“He led the True Divinities of humanity to violently clash with the True Divinities of the saints, even suppressing us… but afterwards, the ancient Saint Sovereign used Famine to devour humanity’s Heavenly Dao of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, drastically weakening them. However, Empyrean Divine Seal was able to meld his Divine Seal Art with the Ancient Elysium Seal in a massive array formation. He took advantage of the fact that Famine had used up the majority of its energy to swallow the Heavenly Dao in order to directly seal away Famine’s soul. This is the reason why Famine fell into a deep slumber ever since that war and had become impossible to awaken!

“Over so many hundreds of millions of years, many peerless Saint Sovereigns appeared amongst the saints, but none of them were able to awaken Famine. Famine, which had lost its soul, then turned into a massive sea of blood called Famine Sea. Many saint Empyreans didn’t know what the use of this wild sea was, but the truth was that it was Famine’s true body.

“Originally, I also didn’t have the ability to awaken Famine. But that changed… when I obtained the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

“Using the Grandmist Spirit Bead, I swallowed in a large portion of Famine’s flesh and blood essence and fused it into my body. Like this, I connected to the bloodline of Famine and was able to have my spirit mark be remembered in the depths of his soul.

“Now, Famine has already become controlled by my spirit mark. It is almost… my avatar!”

Speaking to here, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s voice filled with terror!

His face, neck, chest, all were covered with bulging blood vessels. The blood vessels pulsated, making him look like a demon!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign clenched his fist together, as if the entire universe would be held in his hand!

“With Famine as my avatar, in the vast space of the 33 Heavens no one can stop me!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son’s voice echoed through the cosmos. With his energy as a medium, it spread for millions of miles, causing planets to shake!

Characters on the level of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign each had their own deep ambitions. In this great calamity when the God Lamenting Wall vanished all over, a majority of the 33 Heavens’ universes had nearly merged into one whole. Infinite mystic realms opened, allowing nearly endless resources to be plundered from them. Everything that could not be obtained before was now obtainable. This was the turning point for everyone to realize their ambitions!

…………

At this time, innumerable trillions of miles away, the Ark of Hope had already begun a life or death battle with the main forces of the saints!

Saint Empyreans appeared one after another, all of them trying to stop the Ark of Hope.

The Ark of Hope was a supreme treasure, a Beyond Divinity level spirit ship. However, those driving it were only god race Empyreans. In the hands of Empyreans, the Ark of Hope could only display a miniscule amount of its true strength.

Bang!

With a loud explosion the Ark of Hope broke into an array formation created by several peak saint Empyreans working together; it's speed instantly plummeted 30%.

Ca!

Energy fiercely collided. Divine light brilliantly burnt around the Ark of Hope, making it seem as if they had plunged into a sun.

"Everyone attack together, stop that ship!"

On the saint race's side, a peak Empyrean sent out a sound transmission. They had paid such a great price to encircle the ancient remnant races, how could they possibly allow them to escape in the final moment?

Three peak Empyreans as well as 15 middle and upper Empyreans behind them gathered together, forming a battle array!

With over 18 Empyreans and each one an outstanding existence amongst Empyreans, the might of the battle array they formed could be imagined! In the blink of an eye they could even turn a planet that was hundreds of thousands of miles wide into dust!

Looking at the powerful foes looming before them as well as the terrifying array formation, the old God Sovereign's complexion was cold.

"Prepare… the Asura Primal God Cannon!"

The Ark of Hope was not some simple transportation spirit ship. Massive array formations were carved into its hull and it came with a dreadful weapon. That was… the Asura Primal God Cannon!

Just the Asura Primal God Cannon itself was also another Beyond Divinity level supreme treasure!

When all the great array formations on the Ark of Hope were activated, the energy of the Asura Primal God Cannon would accumulate to its limits. Once the Asura Primal God Cannon emitted a shot, it could easily destroy a star. The subsequent explosion that followed would spread for trillions of quadrillions of miles, eventually destroying the entire galaxy.

Unfortunately, the god race Empyreans were unable to display the true strength of the Asura Primal God Cannon. Otherwise, let alone the battle array of these Empyreans, they would even be able to trample over the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

For a time, countless precious energy stones lit up. They were thrown into the Ark of Hope's array formation without a care of cost, all of them burning together!

Within the array formation, a giant ancient black cannon appeared. The barrel of this cannon was carved with countless Asura runes, each one making the mind shake with fear!

The Asura Primal God Cannon was a magic tool personally refined by the Asura Road Master in the past. As it appeared, a horrifying pressure exuded outwards, passing through the void and causing all the saint Empyreans to tremble at its killing intent.

“What is that?”

The saint Empyreans saw the Asura Primal God Cannon on the bow of the Ark of Hope lock onto them. As they were fixated in its sights, they felt as if they were being glared at by the god of death.

For a time, the infinite energy of the universe turned into motes of lights that gathered into the Asura Primal God Cannon. Then, the void collapsed. With a deafening roar, the Ancient Primal God Cannon shot out a beam of light that was hundreds of thousands of miles thick, piercing through space!

Kacha!

With a furious rumble, the void collapsed like thin ice. Looking from far away, all one could see was endless divine light. Even one's divine sense couldn't see through this light, as everything was completely twisted up by the terrifying energy storm!

"Ahh!"

Two saint Empyreans cried out in pain. As their bodies were covered by the light of the Asura Primal God Cannon, they were instantly reduced to ashes!

Even the powerful mortal bodies of saint Empyreans couldn't resist the impact of the Asura Primal God Cannon.

A single bombardment had directly killed two saint Empyreans. For a time, the might of the Asura Primal God Cannon frightened and deterred all present!

Chapter 1901 – Blast Through the Void

Chapter 1901 – Blast Through the Void

…

…

…

“Damn it!”

In these past years, numerous saint Empyreans had fought through the Primeval Universe while suffering little damage.

But in this battle, three of them had already died before much fighting had even occurred. Moreover… they were all upper Empyreans!

Upon reaching the level of an Empyrean, wanting to defeat a similar opponent wasn’t difficult. However, wanting to kill one was a completely different matter.

After all, every person that managed to reach the heights of an Empyrean was an extreme talent that was blessed with a great destiny. They had experienced innumerable lucky chances as they grew and had countless life-saving cards hidden up their sleeves.

And their own defensive capabilities were particularly powerful, their life force almost unparalleled in tenacity.

But such characters had been instantly annihilated to dust upon facing the white spirit ship, killed without a chance to react. This left the rest of them frightened.

It had to be known that in the all-out war between the humans and saints 3.6 billion years ago, the saints only had several hundred Empyreans die, and most of them were lower

Empyreans and middle Empyreans. Now, to lose three upper Empyreans like this, the losses were mind-boggling.

Several other Empyreans were also severely injured. Their combat strength had weakened. However, their mortal bodies were formidable and their regenerative abilities were outstanding. These wounds slowly healed.

“That spirit ship, how can it be so strong!?”

“Just what sort of ancient treasure is that terrifying!?”

Several Empyreans felt fear rise in their hearts. Before this, they were already accustomed to the ancient remnant races scattering to flee upon the beginning of a fight as they were all immediately routed. To the saints, invading the Primeval Universe was the same as beating up a crippled man; it was a completely overwhelming and one-sided battle. They had never experienced such frustration before.

“Slow them down but do not face them head-on, be careful of that god cannon! The ancient races have countless treasures, once they die they are all ours!”

A peak Empyrean sent out a sound transmission.

At this time, more and more saint Empyreans were catching up!

The saints possessed seven universes, each universe having Empyreans that numbered in the triple digits. With all the universes added together they had over a thousand Empyreans; this was an incomparably terrifying strength.

Compared to this, the ancient races were far too weak. Even with all of them combined together, they only had several dozen Empyreans, even less than humanity.

“In the cannon blast just now, how much energy was used up?”

The old God Sovereign calmly asked as he stood before the Asura Primal God Cannon’s array formation.

“Approximately 2%. At most we can send out 20 cannon blasts; we have to retain at least 60% energy for our protective barriers and the flight array formation. Moreover… if we fire the cannon too many times, we will also consume a considerable amount of strength…”

The Asura Primal God Cannon could burn energy stones to attack, but it needed an Empyrean to manage the array formation.

In order operate a Beyond Divinity level magic weapon, the pressure it placed on the Empyreans could be imagined!

“20 strikes…”

The old God Sovereign placed his palms together, rapping his fingers as he was lost in thought.

Without a doubt, there was a massive disparity in strength between the ancient races and the saints. It was impossible to make up for this difference by depending on the Ark of Hope alone.

Even if they sent out another 20 cannon blasts they wouldn’t be able to kill many more Empyreans. This was because the saint Empyreans were now wary and would avoid the direction of the Asura Primal God Cannon. This made killing these saint Empyreans far more difficult.

“Rush out. Don’t try to fight them.”

The old God Sovereign was incredibly calm. The Ark of Hope was the only thing they could rely on to escape, so they had to avoid the saints as much as they could. As long as they could break out of the encirclement and penetrate past the spatial barrier that surrounded the Chaos Star Ocean, they could use the Ark of Hope to warp forwards with a greater void shift. With that, they would be provided temporary safety.

But the saint Empyreans wouldn’t let the ancient races do as they wished.

In the void of the Primeval Universe, everyone was far away from each other. The low level martial artists had long since fled, leaving behind only the Empyreans.

Only an Empyrean level martial artist could play a role in fighting the Ark of Hope.

A blinding divine light wove through the starry void. Astral essence swelled forth, gushing out like a growing galaxy!

Many Empyreans attacked together. The scene was dazzling to the eyes.

“Slow them down, delay for time!”

Two peak saint Empyreans thrust out their hands. Golden astral essence transformed into giant palms that grabbed onto the Ark of Hope’s hull.

These two Empyreans attacked from a tricky angle. They avoided the Asura Primal God Cannon and chose a relatively safe area.

Soon after, another peak Empyrean summoned a magic tool. This magic tool was a large bronze bell. The bell rolled like an oncoming thunderstorm, smashing into the Ark of Hope!

Bam!

With a loud explosion, the giant bell smashed into the Ark of Hope’s defensive barrier!

The bell collapsed and was sent tumbling away. Although the Ark of Hope wasn’t damaged, the ship had used up a great deal of energy.

“Everyone strike! Move as far back as you can to attack and use up the ship’s energy! This ship should be a peak True Divinity spirit treasure. Although breaking it is impossible, as long as we can exhaust its energy supplies then that ridiculous pack of dead ancient races will be nothing but a turtle in a jar! We will be able to kill them as we please!”

The peak Empyrean who threw the bell shined with a golden light, his voice indifferent as he spoke.

“Haha, that’s right, we don’t need to frontally face them at all!”

The saint Empyreans all drew back, cold sneers on their face. They pulled out all sorts of magic tools and soon endless divine light enveloped the entire void for millions of miles!

The Ark of Hope’s energy was slowly consumed. The Empyreans managing the array formation also consumed their soul force.

The ancient race Empyreans were fighting an enemy with ten times their numbers!

Bang!

The Asura Primal God Cannon blasted out once more!

The thick beam of light pierced through the void, causing a horrifying energy storm to roll up.

However, the saint Empyreans were already prepared. They could keenly feel the Asura Primal God Cannon gathering energy and were able to move away a step ahead. Only a lower Empyrean, because he was too slow and his sense wasn’t too sharp, was sucked up into that energy storm.

After being pulled into the horrifying energy storm, that lower Empyreans was immediately reduced to ashes.

“Damn!”

One of the god race Empyreans managing the Asura Primal God Cannon pounded his fist onto the array formation’s altar. “The magic tool left behind by my ancestors has been shamed beneath my hands. Although the energy is powerful, my abilities are lacking and I cannot kill this damned pack of dogs!”

The Asura Primal God Cannon was too high grade a weapon. If the martial artists of the ancient remnant races wanted to operate it, they simply lacked the ability to freely use it. They were no different from little children picking up heavy axes and trying to wield them.

It required far too much energy to lift the axe and their dexterity was lacking. As long as someone was fast enough and moved just a little, they could easily avoid the strike.

In front of the array formation's altar, Lin Ming silently looked upon all of this. He was rapidly replaying the two blasts of the Asura Primal God Cannon.

The shimmering lights of the array formation's runes reappeared in his mind as he constantly analyzed them…

Then, with another explosion, the hull trembled.

The saint Empyreans were barraging the protective barrier of the Ark of Hope.

Once the protective barrier was destroyed, the saint Empyreans could even invade the Ark of Hope and fight directly with those onboard. Once that happened, the 10 billion plus members of the ancient remnant races onboard would be slaughtered like lambs at the butcher, recklessly killed!

"The hull's energy had been reduced to 95%…"

Someone reported. A gloomy cloud covered the old God Sovereign's face. The leaders of the other ancient races also appeared ill. This was because the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had yet to appear…

The truth was that all the powerhouses present had already decided to bet their lives on this battle and were willing to give up their lives if needed. But if they used up all of their strength before the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign appeared, then their sacrifice would be meaningless.

The ancient races had already come to this point. All the Empyreans present, especially the elderly ones, no longer feared death. Death was not frightening, what was frightening was dying without meaning.

"Let me try…"

At this time, a hesitant and slightly unsure voice sounded out. Everyone turned. The one speaking was the only person in the central control room of the Ark of Hope that didn't even have a World King cultivation – Lin Ming.

"You want to… control the Asura Primal God Cannon?"

The eyes of some of the elderly leaders lit up. Lin Ming had conjured numerous miracles already. If he were to propose something like this, everyone's first reaction was hoping that he could create a miracle once more.

Lin Ming slowly nodded, his eyes still unsure. While he had studied the Asura Primal God Cannon's array formation before this, he hadn't obtained any substantial results.

The array formation was too unwieldy and the Laws involved were far too profound. Moreover, the requirement of absolute strength was extremely high.

After all, Lin Ming had yet to study the complete Asura Sutra; he wasn't omnipotent.

"I can only say I can try, and I will also need your assistance. My strength is far too lacking to activate the Asura Primal God Cannon. I can only try to steer the direction so it is more accurate."

Lin Ming discreetly said after deeply thinking over it.

"Great!"

Hearing Lin Ming's words, many ancient race martial artists immediately perked up, their lowered morale somewhat restored.

In a corner of the room, Smokeless watched all of this occur, a strange light flashing in her eyes. She discovered that unknowingly, Lin Ming's status within the ancient remnant races had become invaluable. Every word and action he took could inspire morale within the Empyreans; this was almost unthinkable.

“Open the array!” The old God Sovereign looked at Lin Ming, a wizened and affectionate smile on his face. Like the name of this spirit ship, what the ancient remnant races needed was hope.

And the peerless elites of the younger generation were the source of this hope. With Lin Ming here, the old God Sovereign felt much more at ease. His life was already winding down to its end. Even if he didn’t live to see the day that the ancient races overcame the great calamity, he could still die in peace.

Weng weng weng – !

Beneath the constant barrage of the saints, the Asura Primal God Cannon’s array formation activated once more!

For a time, the scattered energy within the universe began to crazily stir. The energy in the Primeval Universe was thin, but these energies were varied and profound, with all sorts of origin energies contained within it. Like a whale drinking water, all of these energies rolled up towards the Ark of Hope!

To absorb as much energy from the universe as possible while keeping the energy use of the Ark of Hope to the barest minimum, this was one of the changes Lin Ming made to the Asura Primal God Cannon’s array formation while operating it.

Of course, this change was all based upon Lin Ming’s profound understanding into the Asura Laws.

Chapter 1902 – Guide

Chapter 1902 – Guide

…

…

…

More and more energy accumulated. Lin Ming's complexion was solemn, his composure dignified. To borrow the strength of so many Empyreans and manage such a high grade array formation, this was a tremendous consumption to his divine soul. If it weren't for Lin Ming having adventured through the Soul World for over 20 years, experiencing the ancient galactic battlefield twice and grasping the principles atop the Fallen God Mountain Range, he would have found it impossible to persist.

"Heh! Here they come, they're trying the same old trick again! Why not try something new!"

As the Asura Primal God Cannon began condensing energy, many saint Empyreans immediately noticed it.

"Avoid the muzzle! Have that blast hit empty space!"

"Those ancient race retards, while we're worrying about how to consume their spirit ship's energy they actually do something so stupid like wasting their energy to attack us. That's just what we want!"

Although many saint Empyreans were speaking in a relaxed manner, the truth was that no one underestimated their opponent. They each used their own methods to avoid the Asura Primal God Cannon.

Some distorted space, using the Space laws to erratically drift from place to place and making it impossible to latch onto their position. Some people created layers upon layers of illusions, making it impossible to find their true body. Some people even took out hundreds of puppets to block the line of sight. There were even those that laid down illusory magic arrays to hide themselves.

The Empyreans present were all outstanding individuals even amongst elites. Before this, they had experienced two blasts already and had found out the general rules in order to dodge it. Thus, the methods they used to avoid became increasingly sophisticated, and even lower Empyreans with enough experience were confident they wouldn’t be sucked into the blast.

“These devious bastards!”

Seeing the originally distant and blurry saint Empyreans vanish or create layers of illusions, the ancient race martial artists all had ugly complexions.

Lin Ming remained tranquil as he watched all of this. His hands guided the energy gathered by the ancient race Empyreans as he carefully sensed the Asura Primal God Cannon’s array formation.

This array diagram was all-encompassing and included numerous Laws of the universe’s void.

Calming his mind, Lin Ming’s consciousness seemed to stand in the void of space. Beneath his feet was the Asura Primal God Cannon’s array formation. This array diagram spread out in his mind, covering the surrounding space for countless millions of miles, forming a comprehensive spatial projection in his mind.

And all life within this array diagram, including himself, including the ancient races, including the saints, was shown within this projection without a single omission.

Lin Ming didn’t hurry. He closed his eyes, his mind like a placid lake. His mind tightly wove together with the Asura Primal God Cannon’s array formation, rapidly catching the projection of every person.

Slowly, he locked onto a position. In this position there were nine saint Empyreans, and each one had a cultivation of a middle Empyrean or above.

“Here it is!”

Within the array diagram, Lin Ming’s eyes suddenly flashed open, a cold killing intent bursting out from them!

From his body, the energy gathered by the ancient race Empyreans started to rush out without reserve!

With Lin Ming as the guide and the energy from the many Empyreans as the power source, he began to activate the Asura Primal God Cannon!

Rumble rumble rumble!

The entire Ark of Hope vibrated. Heaven and earth origin energy began to condense in space, forming innumerable spheres of light, all of various sizes.

These spheres of light came in different colors, each one representing different types of energy. Now, they all gathered into the Asura Primal God Cannon as they were inhaled into it!

For a time, the Asura Primal God Cannon emitted a divine light in all directions, as if a sun were being born within!

“What a death wish!” A saint Empyrean sneered. He could feel that the energy within the Asura Primal God Cannon was over twice as large as that of the two previous strikes.

“The more they consume energy the quicker they will die!”

“Everyone be careful, especially lower Empyreans! Make sure to avoid their attacks and have this bunch of ancient race idiots fail!”

The saint Empyreans communicated to each other with sound transmissions, rapidly flying back and forth in the distance. And at this time, the Asura Primal God Cannon erupted!

Bang!

A terrifying explosion echoed out, as if a hundred thousand God Beasts were roaring out as one!

In that moment, the world seemed to lose its color. A beam of divine light millions of miles long lit up the void, seeming as if it would cause the universe to collapse. The brilliant light could even pierce through and blind a World King’s eyes.

For a moment, the saint Empyreans felt as if their five senses had been stripped away.

Their hearts shook. On reflex, they all drew backwards!

“This is bad!”

Some people realized that this cannon blast wasn’t the same!

The saint Empyreans present were all elites. Although their senses were eliminated, they still had their own methods to feel danger in the ruinous tide of energy.

However, as their divine sense touched upon the massive beam of light emitted by the Asura Primal God Cannon, all of them were left panic-stricken.

“What!?”

They watched as the beam of light split apart in the void. One divided to three, three divided to nine, and then each beam of light changed paths, separately veering off into nine directions, shooting towards their targets like the arrows of a divine god!

And in these nine directions, each place had an Empyrean that was locked onto by a divine light!

In that instant, no matter what illusion they used, no matter what technique or avatar ability they tried, no matter how they twisted the void, all of their attempts of evasion were utterly destroyed by the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, leaving them without a place to hide!

Even those saint Empyreans that weren't aimed at felt a sharp and severe light shoot towards their heads. It was like a person had pointed a cold sword at their heads, ready to kill them in the next moment.

"Ahh!"

An Empyrean cried out miserably. The divine lights were far too fast! The Empyreans had been able to avoid the cannon blasts not because they were faster, but because they had calculated the avoidance path ahead of time. But now that they were directly focused on by the divine light, this was a completely different situation!

The Empyrean that cried out was punctured by a beam of divine light. His body instantly evaporated to ashes as he blew up in a cascade of fireworks.

Following that, more and more fireworks lit up the void. Saint Empyreans were killed off by the Asura Primal God Cannon one after another!

An Empyrean that hid in a spatial distortion didn't even have time to cry out. The spatial distortion he hid in was pierced through. The space barrier he made simply wasn't able to block the Asura Primal God Cannon!

Among the others, those that had used an illusory magic array or released puppets were all annihilated without exception, instantly slain where they stood!

Only a peak Empyrean, the one who had struck the Ark of Hope with the giant bell before, was able to use his terrifying strength to forcefully avoid the killing trajectory of the Asura Primal God Cannon!

Bang!

The divine bell covered him. Half the energy from the shockwaves of the Asura Primal God Cannon were absorbed by this peak Empyrean spirit treasure.

The divine bell caved in and the spirit treasure nearly twisted in half. Within, the divine bell old man bled from every orifice. He rapidly retreated in distress. By taking severe wounds and almost ruining his spirit treasure as the price, he had avoided the final fatal blow!

In a brief moment, of the nine Empyreans that were locked onto by the Asura Primal God Cannon, eight had died and a ninth was severely wounded!

The eight Empyreans that died were all middle or upper Empyreans, and the one that was injured was a peak Empyrean. Lin Ming hadn't bothered attacking the lower Empyreans.

Because… it just wasn't worth it!

"This… this…"

Among the saints, many Empyreans were completely shell-shocked.

Even the divine bell old man who had managed to survive the disaster hadn't managed to recover his scattered wits yet. His face was pale. No one had expected that the might of the cannon blast would reach such a degree!

In the blink of an eye, eight Empyreans had perished. Just what sort of concept was that?

Even the all-out strike of a True Divinity might not be able to replicate such an effect!

Within the Ark of Hope, the ancient race martial artists were all overjoyed by the cannon blast!

"Well struck!"

“That felt great!”

Currently, there were only 100-200 saint Empyreans on the battlefield. If a single barrage could kill eight, then they only needed to fire the cannon several more times to eliminate half of them!

Moreover, the key point was that the cannon blast just now had boosted group morale. The originally depressed ancient race martial artists began to burn with confidence once more!

“You were actually able to split the cannon blast into nine beams and have each beam attack a different enemy. Lin Ming, you’ve done well! In our hands, we’ve simply disgraced this magic tool left behind by our ancestors!”

The several ancient race Empyreans that spoke had already tried using the Asura Primal God Cannon. They were well aware of how difficult it was to control the firing direction of the Asura Primal God Cannon. Hitting people with it was already difficult to begin with, let alone dividing the attack into nine.

When they shot out a cannon blast, they wasted over 90% of the energy. However, Lin Ming was able to reasonably divide the energy of the Asura Primal God Cannon; the disparity was just too great.

Lin Ming forced a smile. His face was paper-white. In that cannon blast just now, although he hadn’t used his own body’s energy and had used the energy gathered from the Empyreans, he had still been the one controlling and directing the energies. And to direct the array formation along with that, this had drained Lin Ming. After all, he was only a peak Holy Lord and he had yet to consolidate his foundation.

“The Asura Primal God Cannon’s array formation is too complex and there are highly profound Asura Heavenly Dao rules contained within it. I found it extremely difficult to control and barely managed to divide the blast into nine, moreover, I failed to kill one of those people. If I was a bit more skilled in the Asura Heavenly Dao I would have been able to enliven each beam of light with its own spirituality so that they could actively target enemies. However, that wasn't what happened…

"I overdrew my soul force just then. I won't be able to guide a second cannon blast for some time."

As Lin Ming spoke, the ancient race Empyreans also saw how exhausted he was. Smokeless quickly handed a soul recovery pill to Lin Ming. Of the pills that the celestial race Elders refined without a care for the cost, she still had some remaining.

And at this time, outside of the Ark of Hope, the saint Empyreans had already begun to panic.

"How could that strike just now have strengthened by so much?"

"Could they have been lulling us into a sense of false confidence so they could cut us down at a critical time?"

"It shouldn't be… the first time they attacked we weren't on guard. If they were to use their strongest attack at that time then the effects would have been much better."

Saint Empyreans rapidly passed around sound transmissions, a growing horror evidence in their voices.

Many middle and lower saint Empyreans felt a shadow cast over their hearts. Without a doubt, if they had been aimed at instead of those eight dead others, it would have been them turned to ashes!

No matter how great the heavens or earth were, they placed their own lives at the greatest level of importance.

After all, this wasn't some critical life or death battle for their race. The reason they had joined this war was for the inheritances and treasures of the Primeval Realm Ruins and the many resources promised to them by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. However, if their lives were in danger or if there was a high chance of them perishing, it was inevitable that they would develop thoughts of fleeing.

However, even though ordinary Empyreans were frightened, the many peak Empyreans didn’t retreat. There were 12 of them together and they were the true commanders of the Primeval Universe war!

Chapter 1903 – The Power of the God Decrees

Chapter 1903 – The Power of the God Decrees

…

…

…

The saint Empyreans were naturally able to see how strange the spirit ship was. If they freely allowed it to escape and use great void shifts then it would be even more difficult to chase after them, and because of this they would all be guilty of failing in their duties.

On the other hand, if they could keep the ancient remnant races from escaping, they would be able to obtain generous rewards from the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. These past years, they had been busy guarding the Primeval Realm Ruins. And the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, as the most powerful True Divinity amongst the saints, his resources, whether in quality or quantity, were enough to make others drool with envy!

“The 12 of us can join together. We just have to be a bit more careful!”

A peak Empyrean sent out a sound transmission. The other peak Empyreans nodded.

“That blast just now must have consumed a considerable amount of their strength. If that cannon light divided into nine, there must have been an extreme degree of control behind it. With the soul force needed for such control, they shouldn’t be able to send out such a blast every time.”

A peak Empyrean analyzed the situation. He wore red robes and his figure was tall and wide. Amongst the 12 peak Empyreans, he held the greatest authority.

Magic tools were taken out one after another, forming a wall of light blocking out space.

They moved back, preparing to engage in a battle of attrition once more. They only wanted to delay the Ark of Hope and wait for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign to catch up to the battlefield.

As the supreme commander of the saints' war, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn't stay near the Chaos Star Ocean. The peak Empyreans only needed to hold the battlefield until his arrival.

"These fellows!"

A titan Empyrean gripped his fists; it was easy to see what the saint Empyreans' plans were.

They needed to flee from the Chaos Star Ocean that was blocked in by a spatial barrier and then cross through space using great void shifts. Then, they needed to fly to the nearest edge of the God Lamenting Wall that bordered the Divine Realm, and break through that God Lamenting Wall to enter.

Woosh!

The red-robed peak Empyrean took out a gourd. As he opened this gourd, billowing black smoke gushed out, covering the surrounding space.

"It's Allheaven Demon Smoke!"

Some god race martial artists recognized this demonic item. This was a rarely seen type of spirit treasure. The spirit treasure was in the form of smoke, and once it touched a magic tool it could corrode it.

Chi chi chi!

The Allheaven Demon Smoke sunk through the protective shields of the Ark of Hope, slowly draining away its energy.

"This person is troublesome!"

The celestial Patriarch thoughtfully said. This red-robed Empyrean faced the head of the ship and also faced the Asura Primal God Cannon. To do this meant that he had sufficient confidence in himself, otherwise he wouldn't dare to stand in such a position. The other 11 peak Empyreans all spread out in other directions, encircling the Ark of Hope.

"Break out from the right side, that is where the protections are the weakest!"

Diwuhen suddenly said. The right side was where the old man with the divine bell was standing and he had already been injured by Lin Ming using the Asura Primal God Cannon. His divine bell had lost most of its spiritual power and it had also become deformed; it was clearly weakened tremendously.

If they broke through on that side, the resistance they faced would be much less.

But now, they couldn't yet use the Asura Primal God Cannon. Without Lin Ming using the Asura Laws to guide the cannon, it would be almost impossible to aim the Asura Primal God Cannon in the right direction and hit a target.

"Let me!"

Looking at the saint Empyrean holding the divine bell, a cold light appeared on To Bagui's face. He slowly traced his spatial ring and took out a plain wooden box.

Opening the wooden box, there was a yellow symbol paper inside. This was a god decree left behind by an ancient upper True Divinity and was one of the treasures that the celestials were willing to take out to repair the Chain of Calamity in order to receive three spots to enter the Asura forbidden zone.

But because of Lin Ming, this precious god decree didn't need to be used so it was saved.

Not just that, but in the past month, this upper True Divinity god decree had also been repaired by Lin Ming. It had recovered the damaged energies it had lost over 10 billion years, and now its power was incomparable to how it was just a month ago.

"Wuhen, Whitemark, go with the Battle Sovereign and assist him!"

The old God Sovereign issued an order. Whitemark was one of the peak Empyreans of the god race; it was only that he was considerably old and didn't have much time left remaining.

In Diwuhen and Whitemark's hands, they each grasped an upper True Divinity god decree!

These three upper True Divinity god decrees were the trump cards of the ancient remnant races. Once they used them in battle they would display a terrifying effect, enough to reverse the tide of a battle.

"Look for a chance and rush out of this encirclement!"

The old God Sovereign felt that they couldn't be delayed for much longer. He was well aware in his heart that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would soon catch up to them and that when he arrived, that would be the true final battle!

"You wretches, come and get it!"

To Bagui stepped onto the bow of the Ark of Hope, facing the saint Empyreans in the vast starry space.

Behind him stood Whitemark and Diwuhen.

As the saint Empyreans saw these people suddenly appear, they felt dread coil within them. But, they didn't stop their barrage, instead only saving more strength to deal with any dangerous situations.

"Be careful!"

A saint Empyrean reminded. But at this time, with a loud humming sound, a horrifying divine light began to bloom from around To Bagui, making him blaze like a sun!

The common-looking ancient god decree in To Bagui's hand melted away into light. For a time, countless Law runes spun around. These Law runes fluctuated and changed, finally turning into the phantom of a primal god ancestor.

This primal god ancestor held a long scythe in his hands as it rushed forwards like a god of death!

"Mm!?"

The saint Empyreans were horrified. As people with extraordinary vision, they could naturally see how terrifying this strike was!

As the divine bell peak Empyrean saw this attack his face drained of blood. This attack was specifically aimed at him!

The two peak Empyreans standing on either side of the divine bell old man wanted to help him, but they were locked down by Diwuhen and Whitemark's killing intent.

The two peak Empyreans could see that Diwuhen and Whitemark were also holding onto yellow symbol papers.

Moreover, Diwuhen and Whitemark were both individually strong to begin with. With their killing intent locked onto the two peak Empyreans, the two peak Empyreans were too busy thinking of protecting themselves; neither of them was willing to risk their life to help rescue someone else.

Now, the divine bell old man had to face this god decree that was activated with all of To Bagui's strength!

This was an upper True Divinity god decree. Even though a glorious period of 10 billion years had passed, it still possessed an incredibly destructive power!

"Humph! Do you think I'm easy to bully just because I'm injured!?"

As a peak Empyrean the divine bell old man was arrogant to his bones. Even though he was injured and realized how frightening this strike was, he didn't think he would die like this.

He formed seals with his hands even as he drew backwards. At the same time, he stimulated his protective astral essence to its limits. The divine bell in his hands also spun outwards, emitting a clear ringing sound!

"Nine Suns Illuminate the Void!"

He roared. From the divine bell, nine spheres of light formed by astral essence shot out, linking together in a line in the void. They were like nine suns that came crashing down at the phantom of the death god.

But at this time, the death god also slashed down its scythe!

Hu - !

With a nearly indiscernible sound, like a gust of wind blowing open doors, the death god phantom vanished. It had only appeared for an instant and made this single strike.

This strike didn't seem grandiose at all. The death god had only slashed down his scythe, with barely the whisper of a sound following it.

But this faint trace left behind by the strike remained in the skies. Silence spread, and the void seemed to be cut apart like thin paper, leaving behind a clear rift. As for that divine bell, it struck the tear in space with a ring and was immediately sliced in half.

Seeing this, the divine bell old man was left dazed. From his left shoulder to his right rib, a straight line of blood appeared.

And then, blood sprayed out.

The old man's body shook and almost slipped apart!

"Guru Gold Bell!"

The saint Empyreans were dumbfounded!

From behind the divine bell old man, several peak Empyreans flash stepped towards him like bolts of lightning. As they reached him, they discovered that the divine bell old man's situation was extremely bad; he was dead soon!

Empyreans of the saint race all had extremely formidable mortal bodies; even after suffering a serious physical wound they wouldn't die. But in that strike just now, the death god's energy had pierced through the old man's flesh and blood, directly extinguishing his life force!

This was an irreversible loss that could not be recovered from. In other words, this divine bell old man was done for!

A peak Empyrean had been heavily wounded with one strike and would die in the next moment!

And in frontal combat and in a situation where the divine bell old man wasn't injured, his combat strength wouldn't be much worse than To Bagui's!

"What terrifying power!"

To Bagui gasped, amazed. As one of the leaders of the celestials, he definitely knew how powerful the god decree in his hand had been. He also knew that after being repaired by Lin Ming, its strength should have risen even more.

But he didn't think it would rise to such a degree!

Ever since the war began, this was the first time a peak Empyrean had died!

Generally speaking, when one reached the level of a peak Empyrean they could freely wander through the universe with a wide smile, with almost nothing being capable of threatening them. But in this battle, a peak Empyrean had died!

“Break through!”

The old God Sovereign firmly acted and sent out an order. The Ark of Hope changed directions, hurtling towards the nearly dead divine bell old man!

And on the bow of the Ark of Hope, Diwuhen and Whitemark tightly grasped the two other upper True Divinity god decrees, glaring at the other saint Empyreans!

With the threat of the god decrees present, the two peak Empyreans near the divine bell old man felt their breath catch in their throats. Neither of them dared to stop the spirit ship.

The miserable fate of the divine bell old man was openly displayed in front of them and they didn’t think they were much stronger than he was. Once they were targeted by those terrifying god decrees, even if they didn’t die they would suffer heavy wounds and either directly drop in cultivation boundaries or lose a tremendous portion of their lifespan.

As for the other nine peak Empyreans, they were hundreds of thousands of miles away; they couldn’t immediately help.

Bang!

With a thunderous rumble, the Ark of Hope used its dreadful speed and strength to break past the spatial barrier set down by the saint Empyreans and then rushed deep into the starry cosmos!

The Ark of Hope’s speed was astonishingly fast. With dozens of ancient race Empyreans joining forces to drive it, once the spirit ship broke past the blockade it would be difficult for Empyrean powerhouses to overtake them.

“Have we made it?”

An ancient race Empyrean held his breath. Did they really escape successfully?

Just as this thought passed through the minds of everyone, at this time, the old God Sovereign shook.

The old God Sovereign looked deep into the void of space. Within his old eyes, fear began to rise.

“…Heavens, what is that?”

Chapter 1904 – Good Fortune Saint Sovereign

Chapter 1904 – Good Fortune Saint Sovereign

…

…

…

At the words of the old God Sovereign, the ancient race martial artists all began looking out the porthole.

Through the deep porthole, amongst the endless ocean of stars that was the universe, they could see a dim blood red light.

Then, they could clearly see a massive crimson sphere, one that was 70,000-80,000 thousand miles in diameter.

On the upper part of the crimson sphere, dozens of blood dragons recklessly roared out. Only half the bodies of these blood dragons appeared; they seemed to have been bred from within the crimson sphere, making them look like tentacles.

The blood dragons roared, revealing red fangs.

As the ancient race martial artists saw this titanic and horrifying beast appear, they were all struck dumb.

It didn’t seem like any vicious beast or God Beast they knew of, and the aura it emitted was over a hundred times more terrifying than a God Beast!

Facing this horrifying monster, the ancient race Empyreans felt their hearts quiver!

The crimson monster was incredibly fast. It was originally far off in the distant space, but in just several breaths of time it flew close, like a blood red ghost.

Deep red filled the universe. This feeling was like a drop of blood falling into clear water, slowly spreading out until it covered everyone's eyes.

"This is..."

Even To Bagui, the war-hardened Battle Sovereign that never chose to give up, began to feel fear.

On the side of the primal god race, the old God Sovereign sucked in a breath of cold air. His wizened features had turned completely pale. As he looked out the porthole, he was unable to say anything. His heart began to slowly sink.

He was able to guess just what the origin of this monster was.

Billions of years ago, the ancient races had also fought with the saints. In the texts of the ancient races there were records about this dreadful monster.

But according to the information written down in these ancient texts, this monster should have had its soul erased billions of years ago and plunged into a state of eternal slumber.

Why... why would it reappear here?

Recalling the terrifying description of this monster from the ancient primal god race texts, the old God Sovereign felt as if he were drowning in despair!

"Could this really be... our destiny... do the heavens really wish to annihilate my god race?"

The old God Sovereign whispered. His words were heard by many ancient race Empyreans. They all looked at him with shock, "Your Majesty, what is that?"

At this time, not too far from the old God Sovereign, the celestial Patriarch spoke up. His voice trembled, making him seem far, far older in this moment.

“That is likely… ‘Famine’, the totem holy beast of the saint race… billions of years ago, Famine rampaged through the universes, devouring countless lives, including even many True Divinities.”

“What? Devouring True Divinities?”

The ancient race martial artists all shook.

In the current 33 Heavens, only two races possessed True Divinities – the saints and the spiritas. Even so, the number of True Divinities they had was extremely small! Among them were those who deliberately retired to their homelands and didn’t wish to participate in the disputes of the world, as well as those mysterious True Divinities who people weren’t even sure were still alive.

“I never would have imagined that Famine would still exist…” An old man from the roaring bone race deeply sighed as he shook his head. Many of the Empyreans present hadn’t read the ancient texts, and there weren’t many records of Famine to begin with.

“With our current strength, if we wish to overcome this great calamity we must slay the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign… that was already a nigh impossible mission to begin with, but now even Famine has appeared…”

The roaring bone old man looked away from the porthole. He shakily slumped into a chair, listless.

He was the Patriarch of the roaring bone race and one of the leaders of the ancient remnant races. According to custom, he shouldn’t have said anything that would lower the morale of the troops. But, the gloom in his heart was simply too great.

The appearance of Famine caused him to feel as if the world was collapsing.

“Famine… is it even stronger than the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign?”

Someone asked. The one who spoke up was Lin Ming. He had taken the soul recovery pill and was sitting in meditation. He had also seen the terrifying monster outside the porthole.

“Yes… according to the ancient texts, it is likely stronger than the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, and… it is absolutely more horrifying than the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. It can swallow, swallowing a trillion lives, swallowing even a world. The more it swallows, the more powerful it becomes. The speed at which it can destroy a world is a hundred times faster than the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!”

“I understand…” Lin Ming’s eyes darkened. Facing this new catastrophe, even he began to feel lost.

Humanity had to face the saints which were far, far stronger than them, and they also had to face the mysterious spiritas, whose goals were yet unknown…

The situation of humanity was becoming increasingly complex!

He recalled the strange conversation he had with Soul Empress Sheng Mei and he also recalled his meeting with the old youth, someone who he didn’t even know was a friend or foe.

With the arrival of the great calamity, all forces were surging upwards, everything becoming confusing.

As nothing but a little peak Holy Lord martial artist, no matter how many more lucky chances he had or how powerful his Laws were, in the end, without a formidable cultivation base he would be nothing but a tiny gust of wind in this great calamity. Just what could he do?

Lin Ming felt a sense of morbid exhaustion creep over his heart. In his ears, Sheng Mei’s words unconsciously echoed, “Give up and leave this storm, because all of your efforts will be for nothing… Don’t you know the story of Empyrean Divine Seal from 3.6 billion years ago? He was a truly peerless character, a True Dragon of the world, but he also chose to shoulder the destiny of humanity and in the end he died in battle. What a pity, what a loss!”

Lin Ming closed his eyes. He clenched his fists so hard that his knuckles emitted loud cracking noises!

“Look at that monster’s back!”

An ancient race Empyrean said.

Everyone looked over; they could see that the crimson monster was carrying two people on its back.

One was a tall and middle-aged man wearing a gold cloak. The other was a handsome young man with sharp eyebrows and gloomy eyes.

Seeing these two people, the old God Sovereign’s complexion changed. “That man… is the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign! His body, how could it… has he become one with Famine?”

The old God Sovereign muttered with disbelief thick in his voice. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s legs had sunk into Famine’s body. Moreover, he could see that the flesh and blood of Famine was spreading into the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, their blood vessels linked together.

As if Famine was swallowing the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

However, logic told him this was impossible. Perhaps it was the opposite… the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had swallowed Famine, or perhaps Famine had even become the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s avatar!

“So he… is the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign…”

Lin Ming looked at the man wearing the golden cloak. This was the first time he had laid eyes upon the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. He could feel this other person’s eyes pierce through the vastness of space and gaze upon him.

This was a bizarre feeling. They were separated by a great distance of space as well as the Ark of Hope’s protective shields, so it should have been impossible for him to be seen. But for some reason, Lin Ming felt as if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was looking at him, as if there were no barriers between the two.

And standing beside the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was someone Lin Ming was long since acquainted with – the Good Fortune Saint Son.

At this time, the Good Fortune Saint Son had a wild grin on his face. This was the smile of a victor, carrying with it a hint of pity, a hint of ridicule!

And then, beyond Lin Ming’s imagination, the Good Fortune Saint Son began to speak.

His voice spread through millions of miles of space using energy as a medium.

“Lin Ming! I know you are onboard that spirit ship! Today is the day you die, hahahaha!

“The day of our hundred year duel has yet to truly arrive, right? Unfortunately, you won’t have such a chance. Today you will be killed!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son raved. Lin Ming’s heart skipped a beat; the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign knew he was with the primal god race!

But why would the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign know his whereabouts?

Lin Ming had carefully disguised and hidden himself away and was positive he hadn’t been discovered by the saints.

If his whereabouts were revealed in this sort of situation, then it was either because there was a spy amongst the god race, or Sheng Mei had informed the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign of his location.

The chances of it being a spy weren’t too great. This was because the ancient races didn’t know of Lin Ming’s past history with the saints. Moreover, after the escape plan was finalized, all information was limited to the high level figures of the ancient races in order to prevent anything from being leaked out.

Then… could it be Sheng Mei?

Lin Ming faintly frowned. Although he and Sheng Mei were no longer friends, and might even be enemies, he still didn't believe that Sheng Mei would betray him like this.

Perhaps, when he left the Soul World and entered the Primeval Universe, his location might have been locked down by the Soul Emperor. For the Soul Emperor, this wouldn't be difficult.

"The Soul Emperor… does he want to sentence me to death?"

But as these thoughts flashed through Lin Ming's mind, in the starry skies, that massive crimson sphere suddenly distorted!

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Atop the blood sphere, dozens of fierce red dragons roared and came rushing forwards!

These blood dragons possessed an overwhelming killing intent. They tore through the void, manically racing forwards!

And their target was the Ark of Hope!

"This is bad!"

The Empyreans managing the Ark of Hope's array formation began to panic. They did everything they could to control the array formation and change the direction of the Ark of Hope.

But with their abilities, how could they compare with Famine?

Bang!

A loud explosion rang out. Dozens of fierce dragon tentacles smashed into the Ark of Hope's protective shield!

The Ark of Hope violently shook, nearly spinning around. The Empyreans within were able to use energy to stabilize their bodies, but the common ancient race citizens were far worse off. They cried out in alarm, some of them even injured in the fierce impact.

"Damn it!"

To Bagui was incensed. They were originally about to escape into the heavens and break through the God Lamenting Wall, but at this critical moment they had encountered such a disaster! All of their plans were toppling over!

"That strike just now consumed 2% of the hull's energy!"

A roaring bone race Empyrean reported. Famine's attack had used up 2% of the ship's energy; this was the same as a single blast from the Asura Primal God Cannon. If this continued, they wouldn't be able to last too many strikes before the Ark of Hope's energy was used up!

"Haha! Lin Ming, aren't you strong? What? You don't have the strength to fight back?"

The Good Fortune Saint Son's voice reverberated in space, insolent beyond compare.

Chapter 1905 – Asura Decree

Chapter 1905 – Asura Decree

…

…

…

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The dreadful crimson monster far off in the vast starry space formed numerous blood red dragons that smashed into the Ark of Hope's protective shield.

The Empyreans directing the spirit ship were completely unable to control the its movements. For a time, the entire spirit ship began to violently rock like a small leaf caught in a storm.

"Energy reserves have been reduced to below 90%!"

An Empyrean shouted. If this continued it wouldn't be long before the Ark of Hope's energy reserves were completely depleted. At that time, they would all die!

"The time has come. We can only use our final trump cards."

The celestial Patriarch said. He looked towards the old God Sovereign and sighed.

The so-called final cards were in truth the god decrees left behind by the Asura Road Master.

These were god decrees personally drawn by the Asura Road Master; there was a total of three.

One offensive, one sealing, one support!

As Beyond Divinity level treasures, if a peak Empyrean were to activate these god decrees they would have to burn away most of their life as the cost in order to potentially kill a True Divinity.

Of course, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was not an ordinary True Divinity. To kill the Good Sovereign Saint Sovereign might be impossible, but they should still be able to at least heavily wound him. And if they combined the other two Asura Decrees and the rest of their god decrees, they might really be able to exterminate the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

However, currently, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had somehow fused together with the body of Famine.

The abyssal demon – Famine.

An inconceivable existence with an incomparably terrifying life force. If they only burned part of their lives to activate the god decrees left behind by the Asura Road Master, would they even be able to severely wound it?

Everyone's hearts grew heavy with doubt. If they couldn't severely wound Famine, how could they hope to escape?

The old God Sovereign silently traced his spatial ring. He slowly said, "I never imagined that as we stood on the precipice of life or death, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would show up even more formidable than before. I originally thought that with our god decrees and the peak Empyreans of my race burning their life to activate them, they could at least pose a threat to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. But now it seems that merely burning a part of their life won't be enough… in fact, even a peak Empyrean alone will be insufficient…"

"Everyone… who is willing to step up?"

The old God Sovereign never thought that things would turn out like this.

Only peak Empyreans could activate the Asura Decrees. And in this situation, in order to display the greatest might of the Asura Decrees and damage Famine as much as they could, those activating the god decrees would have to completely burn away every last vestige of their life. In order words… that was to sacrifice themselves!

Moreover, a single person wasn’t enough!

With all the Empyreans of the ancient races added together, there were a total of seven peak Empyreans; this was a relatively high number.

Seven peak Empyreans. Three god decrees.

The old God Sovereign planned to have two peak Empyreans activate the first god decree together!

Two was the best number. The second Empyrean would only be able to increase the might of the Asura Decree by less than half, and a third Empyrean would add even less than that.

Originally, activating the Asura Decrees didn’t mean death, thus the old God Sovereign was willing to appoint others to use them.

But now, using them meant certain death. So the old God Sovereign didn’t force anyone, but instead asked those present.

The old God Sovereign’s elderly eyes swept over the peak Empyreans present. Guilt showed heavily on his face. He also desired to go to battle, but… he couldn’t die now. During this escape, they needed a leader to command the troops, and he was the backbone of the ancient races.

“I am willing to go to battle…”

An old primal god Empyrean said. He was a peak Empyrean and had already lived for 80-90 million years. He was reaching the twilight of his years and didn't have much time left remaining.

"I also want to go…"

"Allow me!"

"I volunteer!"

…….

Peak Empyreans stood up one after another. This great calamity involved the life or death of their people. These ancient race Empyreans had long since hardened their resolves and were willing to die.

Seeing so many Empyreans stand up, the old God Sovereign's wizened eyes filled with tears. Now, he had to choose.

Those he chose would be those that died!

Lin Ming stood not too far away, silently watching all of this occur. Besides the old God Sovereign, the other six peak Empyreans didn't avoid their duties at all. And Lin Ming knew that if the old God Sovereign needed to sacrifice his life, he wouldn't have even blinked in doing so.

This scene left Lin Ming shocked.

A feeling that had long been absent from his heart began to quietly linger within him. He clenched his fists.

Some people fought in order to kill others and steal their possessions.

Some people fought to take revenge and cut down their enemies.

Some people fought to obtain lucky chances and treasures.

But, there were also those who fought and were even willing to sacrifice themselves all for the sake of others, for the sake of the greater good and the continuation of their people…

"Wuhen, Battle Sovereign, the two of you draw back!" The old God Sovereign waved his hand. The Battle Sovereign and To Bagui were both Empyreans in the peak of their prime. They were the hopes and future leaders of the ancient races in this great calamity, and it was impossible for the old God Sovereign to sacrifice them.

"But…"

"Your Majesty…"

Diwuhen and To Bagui's eyes turned red and misty, but the old God Sovereign had directly dismissed them.

"Whitemark, Dugu, I am sorry…"

The old God Sovereign chose two people, both of them peak Empyreans of the primal god race. The old God Sovereign silently closed his eyes, two lines of tears running down his wrinkled face…

"Understood!"

"Great!"

The two old Empyreans stepped forwards. As Lin Ming saw their white hair and bent backs, he didn't know what to feel.

The other ancient race martial artists looked at them and were unable to restrain the sorrow in their hearts.

"If you have any words you wish to say…"

The old God Sovereign asked.

Whitemark was silent. He took out a scroll painting from his spatial ring and a jade pendant. He silently unrolled the scroll. The paper of this drawing was extremely ancient, as if it had been stored away for an illustrious span of time.

The painting on the scroll was of a childish and innocent youth. The youth had a jade pendant hanging from his waist, the exact same as the one Whitemark was holding.

“This is my grandchild. His natural talent couldn’t be considered too great, but he was diligent in his youth and always gave his best efforts. During his youth, he stubbornly left to go adventuring, and he entered the Primeval Realm Ruins to temper himself in the dangers of the mystic realms there. But after that, he didn’t return...”

The old man’s voice was aged and hoarse. This was his only grandchild. The primal god race was a race that wasn’t accepted by the Heavenly Dao. They could not compare to the three peak races because their reproductive capabilities were extremely poor.

They had few descendants, and even then the descendants of Empyreans weren’t necessarily peerless geniuses. The reasons that the humans and saints were able to find talents amongst their ranks was because of their thriving populations. Their innumerable descendants were screened through layer upon layer of tests until the best were remaining.

“If you can find him, please take care of him for me. In my life, he is my only remaining worry...”

The old man passed the two items to Diwuhen.

Diwuhen didn’t know what to feel. He parted his lips as if he wanted to say something, but no words came out. He eventually sighed.

He knew that the chances of finding this young man were nearly nonexistent.

In all likelihood… he had already perished. However, in the primal god race that had low numbers to begin with, they valued their descendants above all and couldn't bear the thought of losing them or even giving up on them.

In particular, now that Whitemark was soon about to die, in his heart he hoped that this own bloodline could continue onwards…

"Dugu, and you…?"

The old God Sovereign looked at the other Empyrean, his eyes wet.

Dugu looked back indifferently, slowly shaking his head.

Compared to Whitemark, Dugu had grown up in the wilderness since his youth, living by drinking the blood of birds and beasts. His disposition was more detached.

Once, he had ventured into the Primeval Realm Ruins as an assassin. His hands were stained with the blood of saint martial artists.

"I have nothing much to say. I have no descendants, only myself…"

Dugu's eyes were neither sad nor happy. Instead, they contained a calm tranquility and an iron-hard resoluteness.

He had once been young, and he had also deeply loved someone.

However… in his long life, the woman he loved was not able to give birth to a child.

The reproductive capabilities of the primal god race were far too low. It was as if the Heavenly Dao had placed a curse upon them…

He had arrived alone in this world and now he would die alone. Perhaps this was his fate for being an assassin, but presently, he was no longer an assassin…

The spirit ship's atmosphere was tense and heavy.

Worry, fear, anger, and even sorrow towards the future.

Every person's eyes flashed with light, their minds filled with thoughts.

Everyone watched as Dugu and Whitemark left.

The two of them stepped onto the bow of the ship.

The Good Fortune Saint Son looked at these two old men on the bow of the ship and diabolically grinned. "Two fools seeking death!"

Beside the Good Fortune Saint Son, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's attention was raptly focused on the two old men.

The two of them were peak Empyreans in the waning years of their lives. This was not enough for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign to feel fear for, but the black symbol paper in their hands was actually startling.

"That is… a god decree? Good! Then let me see just what this ultimate power is like!

The pure black god decree carried with it an endless slaughter aura. Beneath Whitemark's control, it slowly floated upwards.

Whitemark calmly looked at the god decree floating before him. Then, with a resonant shout, a brilliant blood red light lit up his eyes. Winds rose up around his body. His hair fluttered upwards and his robes flapped about.

In this moment, he emitted a blinding light. Vast waves of life force gushed out of him like raging rivers, endlessly surging into the middle of the god decree.

And in the next moment, all of his blood boiled over to the surface, rushing towards the god decree. The old Empyrean's body was soaked in a dazzling divine light.

Then, divine light also lit up around Dugu.

His face was still cold and indifferent, but now it contained a deep unyielding and unwilling gaze!

His life had reached its terminus and this would not change. But, he didn’t want the future generations of the primal god race to share his fate!

“If the heavens must destroy my god race, then with my god blood, let me turn into demonic flames that burn down the skies!”

Dugu’s blood began to burn.

This was the final brilliance released from combusting his very life!

In that instant, the god decree seemed to come alive. Fluctuations emanated from within it.

Although this was only simple fluctuations, it was like a divine weapon that had lain dormant for a trillion years was stirring, releasing a terrifying aura.

A massive black Asura phantom began to slowly appear…

Chapter 1906 – Blood Dyes the Starry Skies

Chapter 1906 – Blood Dyes the Starry Skies

…

…

…

With the appearance of the pitch black Asura warrior standing atop the spirit ship, Lin Ming could feel his heart begin to race. The Asura blood within his body trembled and the Black Dragon Spear fused into his body also began to emit a keening cry.

These forces that were incorporated into Lin Ming's body began to resonate with the god decree's Asura phantom.

"Asura Road Master…" Light passed over Lin Ming's eyes.

Compared to the previous True Divinity level god decrees that had burned away, this aura was abnormally sharp.

As the Asura warrior phantom's image became increasingly clear, the smell of blood and iron also spread outwards, as if the entire surrounding space had turned into a merciless killing field.

A boundless vorpal light shot out from his pupils, casting out through the universe.

The god decree rose up in strength once more. Like a sun, it emitted endless rays of light.

The Asura warrior was covered by this light. A black long spear formed in his hands and he rushed out from the spirit ship, hurtling into the distance.

Rumble rumble rumble.

Outside the snow-white spirit ship, waves of attacks struck like a tide, emitting horrifying sounds like the beating of a great drum that caused the heart to race.

“The Asura Road Master’s god decree? You want to use this to resist me? Lin Ming, as well as those old bags of bones from the ancient races, today you will all become food for Famine!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign ruthlessly sneered, his complexion cold. In his eyes, the primal god race were nothing but a sun finally setting beneath the mountains. Although they still had some qualifications left, against the rising saints and their irresistible momentum, they were nothing but dogs and chickens.

Now, on this day, he wanted this once incomparably glorious race to vanish in the endless flow of time.

Thinking this, a blood red light lit up his eyes.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

The dozens of fierce blood dragons were like infinitely long whips. They all completely halted their attacks and immediately retracted, surrounding the vast crimson sphere.

At the same time, a dragon tentacle fell down onto a giant saint race warship, allowing the Good Fortune Saint Son to drop down.

In a moment, those fierce dragons turned into layers of flesh and blood shields, forming countless walls, surrounding the massive planet-sized ball of flesh.

After being locked onto by the Asura Decree, dodging was unrealistic. Moreover, with Famine’s body being so large, dodging would be impossible to begin with.

The Asura warrior trod through space, a massive black dragon spear grasped in his hand. Endless rays of black light radiated from him.

Each ray of light covered tens of thousands of miles of space.

Some saint race spirit ships that were too close were swept up in the light. Then, like kites caught in an explosion, all of them burst apart into black fireballs. From within the spirit ships, countless pained howls echoed out.

The Asura warrior became one with his spear. Boundless potent might gushed out from him, rippling out in all directions.

The surrounding void began to shake like a tossing sea. Space cracked without end and even nearby celestial bodies began collapsing.

Many saint race spirit ships rapidly retreated. Some of those that were fast enough were able to escape the blinding light, but those that didn't withdraw in time were disintegrated.

The Asura warrior and the long spear in his hands seemed to transform into an endless column of black light that hurtled into the center of that giant blood red ball.

Pitch black light and blood red light covered the endless starry space, making it impossible to clearly see what was happening.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Waves of heaven-shaking detonations occurred. Many pieces of meat scattered outwards and burned away. The void was pierced through all around, causing massive space storms to sweep out.

In the shockwaves of that terrifying attack, even the universe seemed to crack open.

Seeing this occur, the eyes of the primal god race powerhouses in the white spirit ship began to light up with hope.

As for those in the saint race spirit ships, all of them fell quiet, the atmosphere solemn and earnest.

The battle outside had only lasted for a single strike.

But the vast momentum and heaven-collapsing energy made it impossible for anyone to approach. In fact, they likely couldn't even withstand the fallout.

"This is a god decree left behind by God Sovereign Asura? Our Sovereign… there shouldn't be a problem, right?" Someone murmured.

In that dreadful impact, the Asura warrior and his black spear began to slowly fade away.

All that was left over was limitless black lights that continued to burn and emit thunderous rumbling sounds.

And at this time, in the center of the explosions at a place surrounded by endless black light, a fierce blood dragon suddenly shot out.

Then –

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Fierce dragon after fierce dragon drilled out, tearing open the void that was distorted by the black light. Famine's giant bloated body forcefully ripped open the void and pushed out from the horrifying space storms.

"It's alive…"

Seeing Famine appear, the old God Sovereign blanched. Although he had planned for the worst situation to occur, as he really saw this happen he almost suffocated.

Woosh!

A mountain-thick whip of meat penetrated the void and smashed against the Ark of Hope.

This powerful blow was enough to crush a planet. The spirit ship hummed as trillions of runes flashed and dissipated.

"Damn it all!"

The Ark of Hope shakily flew away.

At this time, more and more blood red dragons thrust out, thoroughly scattering the black light that covered Famine.

With this, everyone saw Famine, which had been injured by the Asura Decree.

Within that titanic ball of blood meat, there was a massive fissure that was thousands of miles deep!

A great deal of Famine's flesh had turned into bloody water that spread out. A number of fierce dragons had been cut off and they wriggled on the surface of Famine like worms.

Then, these cut off worms melted away, fusing back into Famine.

Famine could swallow all, and it could even swallow its severed limbs to reabsorb them.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign stoop atop this massive ball of meat, his expression murderous. Blood vessels had torn open and exploded all over his body, causing him to be drenched in blood and seem like a demon.

The Asura Decree's strongest blow had been aimed towards him. If it weren't for Famine blocking the strike for him then he would have been grievously wounded, and there was even a chance he might have died.

"Asura Road Master, you are really fierce... just a wisp of your remnant aura is able to injure me like this! But so what! You are already dead, and now I will make sure all your descendants become extinct!"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had not tasted such pain in a hundred million years. With overweening arrogance, raging anger kindled within him.

Seeing this, those within the Ark of Hope were frightened.

Inside the spirit ship, there was nothing but silence.

“Not even that could kill him!” Someone cried out in fear, their eyes clouding over with despair.

To Bagui’s complexion was somber; he was already at a loss for words. Two peak god race Empyreans had been sacrificed and an Asura Decree had been used, and the only result they managed to get in return was a wound on the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. This caused a heavy pall to fall on everyone’s mind.

Without a doubt, this showed that after the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign fused with that abyssal, his strength had increased astronomically. His vitality now far exceeded that of an ordinary True Divinity and not even an Asura Decree could kill him.

“For you lot to accomplish this... is indeed surprising. But, don’t think you will have a second chance to injure me.” As the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign towered above the massive ball of flesh, his eyes glowed with a cold light.

Space rumbled like an endlessly rolling thundercloud. The sound seemed to link straight into the hearts of everyone, daunting them with a horrifying pressure.

On Famine’s body where the fierce dragons had been cut off, the flesh began to wriggle about. With a gurgling sound, a new fierce dragon thrust out.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign thrust out a hand and pointed towards the white spirit ship.

Rays of blood red light shot out like bolts of crimson lightning. They formed layers of red enchantments that surrounded the white spirit ship.

Each red enchantment was like an invisible great hand, squeezing down with incredible power.

The white spirit ship’s defensive shield emitted cracking sounds. More and more energy rapidly dissipated.

“The ship has less than 85% energy remaining! We won’t be able to hold much longer!” A primal god race Empyrean managing the spirit ship loudly shouted with a shaky voice towards the old God Sovereign.

An anxious and strained atmosphere covered the entire ship along with the increasingly loud squeezing sounds from outside.

Each cracking sound seemed to be squeezing down on the hearts of the ancient race martial artists.

Outside, the saint race spirit ships gathered together. Their war cries blasted out like thunder, reverberating through the cosmos.

What could they do?

Some people clenched their fists. Anger lit up in their eyes along with unwillingness.

Some people closed their eyes in pain. They were once the strongest race with a legacy that continued through the endless years. But now, they had been reduced to this.

More people looked outside, their eyes boiling over with radiance. At this time, Battle Sovereign To Bagui stepped forwards. He shouted out, “Even if we must die, we will die with glory and honor! Your Majesty God Sovereign, please give the order to send out my celestial race! I am willing to lead the numerous martial artists of my people to serve as the vanguard!”

The ancient races were all proud and arrogant people. Their races had once experienced infinite grandeur. In the midst of blood and iron, that was where their lives should bloom with the greatest light. How could they submit themselves to dying cowardly deaths?

The voices of those desiring to fight suddenly rose up like a rising tide.

Empyreans began stepped forwards one after another. In particular, those Empyreans in the prime of their lives were extremely excited, all of them wishing to go out and slaughter as much as they could.

When those two elderly Empyreans had sacrificed themselves, they had done so in order to preserve these robust young Empyreans and have them revive the ancient races in the future.

“Everyone calm down!”

The old God Sovereign angrily scolded. For a time, everyone fell quiet.

“We… have not yet reached a dead end. We still have two Asura Decrees!”

The old God Sovereign lifted his hand. Above his hand, two black god decrees still floated, bathed in a divine light.

As the god race Empyreans saw these two god decrees, their eyes filled with a complex color.

In order to activate an Asura Decree, it required peak Empyreans to combust their life – this was a tremendous price. And even then, they had only been able to wound the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and weren’t able to kill him.

Although they had two remaining, was there still a use for them…?

Seeing the skepticism of the Empyreans, the old God Sovereign said, “We won’t sit idly by, but we won’t die in vain either. These two Asura Decrees are different!”

Chapter 1907 – The Changes of Time

Chapter 1907 – The Changes of Time

…

…

…

"There are two god decrees, one with the word Seal and the other with the word Faith. The word of Seal is a great sealing technique, capable of binding the soul and destroying a spirit mark.

"But the word of Faith is a supportive technique. It can have a martial artist dig out the greatest potential of their life for a short period of time, obtaining a strength ten times greater than what they have!

"However, the target of the word of Faith should be a True Divinity. Only a True Divinity can withstand such a potent power.

"For a peak Empyrean, their body and foundation is more vulnerable and if they were forced to withstand the power of the word of Faith then their body might collapse from the influx of strength. Even if they could withstand it, they wouldn't be able to fight for long. It would be the same as burning away their life for battle…"

As the old God Sovereign spoke, Diwuhen stepped forth.

"Honorable Master, allow me to withstand it!"

"I will do it! The losses to the god race are not small and when it comes to the mortal body, my celestial race is slightly more formidable than the god race." To Bagui said. If an old Empyrean were to have an Asura Decree used on them, then their body would simply disintegrate on the spot. Only a peak Empyrean in the prime of their life would be able to show the potential of the word of Faith.

However, the old God Sovereign shook his head. “You two… cannot withstand it…”

“What… this…”

Diwuhen was worried. He and To Bagui were the two individuals that had the greatest vitality within the ancient remnant races. The ancient races were races that were able to triple cultivate essence, energy, and divine. To Bagui and Diwuhen had both cultivated body transformation before. If they couldn’t withstand it, then who could?

The old God Sovereign took a deep breath as if he were coming to a decision.

“Lin Ming, come with me…”

The old God Sovereign’s words were lonely and desolate. Lin Ming was startled. Faintly, he seemed to realize something.

The surrounding Empyreans were confused about what was occurring. They didn’t know what the old God Sovereign was calling Lin Ming for. Although Lin Ming had amazing attainments in the Laws, in terms of overall combat strength he was beneath the Empyreans present.

“Senior God Sovereign, you…”

Lin Ming hesitated. But, the old God Sovereign only continued forwards, not turning around. The old God Sovereign whispered, “I never thought… I never thought that his words would finally come true…

“In the end, that there would be such a day.

“In the end, he cannot escape the past…”

As the old God Sovereign spoke, they finally arrived in front of a plain and heavy stone door. This stone door was pure black and was carved with mysterious patterns.

Lin Ming had seen this stone door once before. He always felt that it was similar to a tombstone.

When the god race headquarters was evacuated into the Ark of Hope, this secret chamber was also moved in. This stone door was the entrance to the chamber.

Lin Ming was silent. He watched on as the old God Sovereign pushed open the stone door. Behind it he could feel a fierce and brutal… demonic aura!

This demonic aura surged into the vast space, incomparably suppressing. A deep and bass roar howled out like the screams of a wild animal, filled with endless fury and murderous intent, flooding the chamber and echoing without end!

Empyrean Primordius…

Lin Ming listened to the roars in this chamber and his mind filled with inexplicable memories. In the deep dark he saw the two blood red pupils. They were familiar, enough to make his heart quicken.

This ferocious great beast seemed to crawl up from an abyss. Horns jutted out from its head and its grand body was tied down with layers and layers of chains. Its blood red pupils were full of madness and slaughter.

It heavily panted, its horrifying eyes tightly fixated on Lin Ming. Inside these eyes were nothing but bloodthirsty desires!

Empyrean Primordius had once possessed the Grandmist Spirit Bead. Using it, he opened the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and reached large success in body transformation.

He was an extreme talent. If it weren't for the saints trying to kill him off ahead of time then Empyrean Primordius might have been able to complete his Grandmist Samsara Dao and become another Asura Road Master!

Afterwards, although Empyrean Primordius had been grievously wounded and he lost the Grandmist Spirit Bead, he still managed to seize the body of an abyssal.

This abyssal demon's body was even stronger than a God Beast!

The current Empyrean Primordius was a peak Empyrean who had opened the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and had fused with an abyssal.

Because he had lost his rationality, his combat strength was greatly diminished. Even so, in terms of just the mortal body, he had reached the peak!

If… he were supported with the Asura Decree and all the potential of his life were dug out, then he would become unbelievably powerful.

Just how much potential did the current Empyrean Primordius possess? Lin Ming found this hard to imagine!

"God Sovereign, do you plan… to have Senior Primordius go to battle?"

Lin Ming sighed inwardly, not knowing what he felt. A hero who had reached his end, who had lost his road, even so he still desired to rush onto the battlefield, even if this meant dying in foreign lands!

The old God Sovereign silently nodded.

Lin Ming remembered the words Empyrean Primordius had carved into the stone of the chamber –

'I have become a demon, and I fear death no more. But once I die in this strange land, will my ashes return to my homeland?'

‘Time to time clarity returns to me, time to time I am lost in chaos. I know that one day I will devolve into a base beast. On that day, do not kill me, and do not seal me away forever. Wait until the great army of the saints arrives and let my demon body enter the camp of the saints, drinking thirstily of their blood, devouring my fill of their flesh! Let me die heroically in battle!’

Recalling Empyrean Primordius’ words and the current Empyrean who howled and who had lost all the brightness in his eyes, Lin Ming felt a deep and abiding sadness.

The old God Sovereign gently patted Lin Ming’s shoulder. “Do not feel guilty. To die on the battlefield is the greatest desire that Empyrean Primordius repeated to me before he devolved into a mindless demon…”

Even with these words, Lin Ming found this hard to accept. Although this was Primordius’ wish, to have him rush out and sacrifice himself in a state where he had no rational thoughts, Lin Ming found this difficult to understand.

Lin Ming hoped that at least in the end, when Primordius’ life was at its twilight, he could decide for himself and see why he was fighting.

“Senior God Sovereign, can this junior try to awaken just a tiny sliver of Empyrean Primordius’ awareness?”

If Lin Ming could try awakening Primordius’ consciousness, even just a little, then he would be able to realize the Laws. And with being able to understand combat tactics, his battle efficiency would rise dramatically!

“Can you?”

The old God Sovereign was shocked. Lin Ming even had such an ability?

This involved the most mysterious soul domain of the body. Moreover, this was a most troublesome case of soul fusion and disassociation of personality. Even a spiritas supreme elder that was skilled in the soul arts would be left powerless and frustrated.

“If I can ignore all potential damages to his spiritual sea, then perhaps I can try… Senior God Sovereign, could you calm down Senior Primordius as much as you can?”

Lin Ming had once wanted to probe Empyrean Primordius’ spiritual sea, but he was almost killed by the berserk Empyrean Primordius.

The old God Sovereign nodded. An energy that seemed to accept all formed a sea of energy that slowly soaked Empyrean Primordius’ body.

Lin Ming’s complexion was earnest. He took a step towards this horrifying abyssal.

Roar - !

Just as Lin Ming approached a little, Empyrean Primordius howled and slashed out his claws. The great shaking strength passed through the air, aimed at Lin Ming!

But in that moment, a warm and vast energy surged out from behind Lin Ming, counterbalancing the killing power of Empyrean Primordius.

The old God Sovereign was completely focused. He didn’t dare to use too much strength for fear of enraging Primordius. Once Primordius went crazy, even the old God Sovereign wouldn’t be able to stop him. Primordius was a terrifying killing machine!

Seeing this, Lin Ming’s heart settled a little. He floated up and forwards until he was just three feet away from Empyrean Primordius’ giant black head.

Then, using the power of divinity and power of grandmist, Lin Ming slowly stimulated the Magic Cube’s energy, trying to fuse it with Empyrean Primordius’ spiritual sea.

At this time, Lin Ming could no longer care about hiding the Magic Cube.

And the old God Sovereign clearly realized Lin Ming had a soul-related treasure within his body.

“There exists a treasure that can separate a spiritual sea?”

The old God Sovereign was dumbstruck, but, he didn't ask any questions. He naturally realized just how dreadfully valuable such a treasure must be.

Lin Ming had far too many secrets on him, enough to leave one numb.

The energy gradually penetrated into Empyrean Primordius' giant head. Lin Ming was attempting to use the Magic Cube to peel away the abyssal demon's soul. As long as he could destroy a part of the abyssal's soul mark then he would be able to slowly awaken Empyrean Primordius' memories.

The Magic Cube excelled in erasing spirit marks. But because too much time had passed, the abyssal demon's spirit mark had fused together with Empyrean Primordius. If he wanted to erase the abyssal demon's spirit mark without injuring Empyrean Primordius' soul, that was nearly impossible.

Thus, Lin Ming could only disregard any damages that might occur to Empyrean Primordius' soul. He didn't think he could fully awaken Empyrean Primordius; all he needed to do was awaken him a little.

Empyrean Primordius' eyes blurred and his vision turned blank. Lin Ming carefully continued, beads of sweat dripping down his forehead.

He had to be utterly careful; there could not be a single accident.

He knew there wasn't much time left remaining. Facing the wild attacks of Famine, the Ark of Hope's energy reserves reduced again and again. As for the violent vibrations of the Ark of Hope, all of that was weakened by the old God Sovereign's energy in order to reduce the impact of the vibrations on Lin Ming as much as possible.

Chapter 1908 – Love and Pain

Chapter 1908 – Love and Pain

…

…

…

"A little more… just… a little bit more…"

Lin Ming clenched his teeth, unable to spare any effort to wipe the beads of sweat dripping down his face. In a situation where he was completely disregarding any possible damage he might do to Empyrean Primordius' spiritual sea, he was attempting to awaken those long slumbering memories.

Beneath the shrouding of the Magic Cube's divine light, a rare brightness appeared in Empyrean Primordius' eyes.

However, this clarity appeared for just the briefest moment before they were once again submerged by blood red light.

Two different minds alternated back and forth. Primordius' body violently trembled as a pain swelled up from his soul.

Primordius began to struggle. That tough and iron-like body contained an incomprehensible level of strength!

For a time, crackling sounds filled the air as the energy shackles that the old God Sovereign placed on Empyrean Primordius to calm him down began to emit breaking sounds, unable to endure the pressure.

The old God Sovereign's complexion changed.

"Lin Ming! Be careful!"

Once Primordius went out of control, the damage was would be incalculable. With Lin Ming's current degree of cultivation and bodily defense, Primordius would only need a single strike to disintegrate his body!

"Lin Ming, draw back, I cannot hold him for much longer!"

The old God Sovereign's forehead was wet with sweat. However, at this time, Lin Ming's soul force was completely poured into the Magic Cube as he tried to connect with Empyrean Primordius' spiritual sea.

Roar!

Primordius howled, the raging sound as turbulent as tsunamis and collapsing mountains. If an ordinary Holy Lord were to face such a roar then their head would blow up and they would die where they stood.

Peng!

Empyrean Primordius' upper arm shook. The energy shackles binding him there were torn apart!

This process wasn't difficult at all. It was just as if Primordius had broken a little branch in half.

The old God Sovereign paled. Without caring for anything else, he grabbed Lin Ming's shoulder and released his protective power of divinity to the limit. He was ready to pull Lin Ming back at full speed the moment Primordius went berserk.

It was not easy for Lin Ming to awaken Primordius' consciousness. This was because stripping away parts of an individual's psyche would inevitably cause agonizing pain to the soul, enough to make Primordius lose all control.

Roar!

Empyrean Primordius wildly howled. A terrifying energy storm struck the old God Sovereign’s protective true essence, causing his clothes to recklessly flutter in the air and his white hair to blow backwards.

At this moment, something appeared and began to emit a dim blue light in front of the old God Sovereign.

This blue light was soft and inconspicuous. In the wild energy storm it was nearly undetectable. However, the moment that this faint blue light reflected in Empyrean Primordius’ brutal eyes, his body suddenly shook and he instantly calmed down.

This blue light was misty, as if it were the only one of its kind in the world. It slowly floated out from the old God Sovereign’s chest, drifting towards Empyrean Primordius.

As Lin Ming and the old God Sovereign saw this they were both left bewildered. This blue light was the Chain of Calamity!

The Chain of Calamity was a True Divinity spirit treasure used in opening the Asura forbidden land. The body of it had once been worn by Heavenly Empress Xuanxing, and after she died, the Chain of Calamity was entombed with her. When Lin Ming stumbled his way into her tomb, that was when he had taken it.

Could it be…

Lin Ming held his breath. He looked helplessly on as more and more blue light appeared around the Chain of Calamity. This misty blue light eventually faintly gathered into the phantom of a woman.

This woman’s phantom became more and more clear, nearly seeming as if it would manifest into physical reality. Her appearance was as beautiful as the bright moon and her black hair hung down her back like a waterfall of ink.

Her feet were bare. Her skin was glittering and crystalline, as if she were formed from the essence of the stars and moon. Her eyebrows were like a painting and her eyes were as bright as the morning skies. She was a goddess from the highest heavens who had been exiled to the mortal world.

Heavenly Empress Xuanqing!

Lin Ming was panic-stricken. Apparently just before Heavenly Empress Xuanqing had died, she had sealed away a wisp of her soul in the True Divinity spirit treasure that she shared origins with, and had deeply slumbered within it ever since.

In truth, let alone a martial artist that was powerful in the aspect of the soul, even for a mortal, after they died, their personal effects might develop a sense of spirituality. At certain times these items might manifest the appearance of their master from before their death.

And Heavenly Empress Xuanqing was originally at an extremely high boundary. In addition to this True Divinity spirit treasure that surpassed the level of an Empyrean, no one realized that a fraction of her soul was sleeping within the Chain of Calamity.

It was not until a moment ago when Lin Ming attempted to awaken Empyrean Primordius' consciousness that the aura released by Empyrean Primordius finally rekindled Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's soul.

She already didn't have much life left. To awaken also meant her near demise…

Beside Lin Ming, the old God Sovereign trembled. From his wizened and disbelieving eyes, tears began to fall.

As for Empyrean Primordius, as he saw Heavenly Empress Xuanqing, his body violently shook. Within his eyes, confusion and madness struggled against each other. It was as if he were experiencing an enormous pain, one that was unbearable.

Roar –

Empyrean Primordius cried out in pain. An energy storm viciously lashed out like a hail of blades. Lin Ming and the old God Sovereign paled. This sort of energy storm could instantly kill a Holy Lord. As for the wisp of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's soul, she would absolutely not be able to withstand it!

However, just as they were about to move, they discovered that the entire storm had completely avoided Heavenly Empress Xuanxing with nothing striking near her.

"Primordius..."

Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's eyes revealed a deep sorrow. Her voice was dim, as if her words were an illusion...

Gently, she flew toward Empyrean Primordius' side. She slowly reached out a hand and lightly caressed his chest...

She was only a soul form and couldn't physically touch anything. But, Empyrean Primordius immediately calmed down even more.

Within his soul, even if two different consciousnesses were attacking each other as before, causing endless pain to surge within him, Empyrean Primordius still suppressed all of this. His body didn't move even a single inch as he allowed Heavenly Empress Xuanqing to lightly touch him.

This was because...

No matter what he had experienced, no matter what he had become, whether it was in the past or in the future, he could never harm this woman...

"If you can't remember, then don't think about it..."

Heavenly Empress Xuanqing whispered, unable to bear the sight before her. To part for 100,000 years and meet once again, things had actually ended up like this.

He had turned into a demon, losing his sanity. She had died somewhere else, leaving behind only a wisp of her soul. Even though her pain had reached the pinnacle, she was unable to cry…

A soul would not shed tears, but they would feel the limits of pain.

They gently supported each other. Even though there was no real physical touch, in this moment their hearts were still connected. This was because… within each other's hearts and minds they had forever marked each other, a brand that would never be forgotten.

Empyrean Primordius had already completely settled down. The two different personalities within him were no longer in conflict.

Within his eyes, pure brightness showed.

He looked at Heavenly Empress Xuanxing, seeming to remember everything.

He didn't speak, because after fully becoming an abyssal, it seemed he was unable to say words…

Then, he looked at the old God Sovereign.

The old God Sovereign had rivers of tears falling down his face and his lips were quivering.

Although Primordius didn't receive an explanation, it was like he already understood everything that had occurred.

It had arrived at last – the final moment.

The obsessions of his heart would soon be resolved. And, he also saw his most beloved once more.

A short happiness. The final brilliance of life. Everything would burn like a meteor through the skies, becoming an instant of magnificent glory.

“Father…”

Heavenly Empress Xuanqing turned towards the old God Sovereign whose back was hunched over with age. She wanted to cry, but no tears flowed out.

The old God Sovereign’s lips shivered. He wanted to reach out his hand to stroke his daughter’s cheek, but he couldn’t feel her at all.

The old God Sovereign deeply sighed. The one in front of him was his daughter that had died 100,000 years ago, as well as his only direct descendant.

To the primal god race who rarely had offspring, their children were their everything.

His daughter was proud and arrogant and beautiful, and had the life of someone who would step into divinity. But in his old age when his time was coming to an end, she had already taken a step ahead and silently left him. To the old God Sovereign, the magnitude of this attack on his heart could be imagined.

“There is no time…”

Heavenly Empress Xuanqing shook her head. She seemed to understand just what was happening.

She flew away from before the old God Sovereign and landed on Empyrean Primordius’ solid shoulder.

The towering Empyrean Primordius was like a tower of iron, the incarnation of a demon. And above this demon’s shoulder was the perfectly beautiful and elegant Heavenly Empress Xuanqing. Her grace and presence was like that of an ephemeral fairy.

As this image fell into Lin Ming’s eyes, it became eternal…

The old God Sovereign silently took out a god decree. At this time, this black god decree seemed cold and merciless.

The old God Sovereign's heart bled.

If Empyrean Primordius and Heavenly Empress Xuanqing had to burn away their lives in battle, then let it be him who personally lit the flame…

Facing the old God Sovereign, Empyrean Primordius had already composed himself and was calmly waiting for this final battle. At this time, there was a sense of satisfaction in his eyes.

In the final moment he was able to reunite with his love. His life would be able to brilliantly burn in the dark before fading. With this, the obsessions and unwillingness he had held onto for 100,000 years had already faded a great deal.

Then, he looked at Lin Ming. Empyrean Primordius didn't know just who Lin Ming was, but he could feel his own aura on Lin Ming's body.

Without a doubt, Lin Ming was his descendant.

He could feel Lin Ming's great strength. Within the body of this youth there seemed to be a True Dragon deeply slumbering! This youth's potential was inexhaustible!

With such an outstanding person inheriting his final wishes and legacy, even if he were to die in battle he would have no regrets…

Empyrean Primordius didn't say anything, but the old God Sovereign seemed to understand his thoughts.

The old God Sovereign began to quietly chant. The Asura Heavenly Dao Laws started to gather. Beams of divine light shined from the old God Sovereign's body. Drops of blood essence seeped out from between the old God Sovereign's eyebrows and continuously sank into the god decree.

The old God Sovereign was burning his own life.

The word of Faith. He had to pour his life into it to ignite it, and only he was most suited to do so!

From his withered body, an incomparable and potent life force began to rise. Vast waves of energy rushed out like a raging river, merging into the god decree.

The god decree became increasingly bright until it completely burned away, transforming into countless runes that converged into Empyrean Primordius' body.

In this moment, Empyrean Primordius felt an infinite strength stir in his body. His massive mortal body grew once more. A terrifying strength percolated within him like a volcano that would erupt at any moment, a strength that could not be suppressed, only released!

His eyes blazed with fighting spirit. His senses were as sharp as a savage beast as he rushed out of the spirit ship and locked onto Famine and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

Empyrean Primordius had never come into contact with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign before. But at this time, Empyrean Primordius knew that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was his life's greatest enemy.

Only one of them could live beneath the heavens!

Chapter 1909 – Severing the Dragon

Chapter 1909 – Severing the Dragon

…

…

…

The Asura Decree erupted with black flames that burnt through the underground chamber. This underground chamber of the god race could originally be considered an Empyrean spirit treasure, but even it began to melt away beneath these heated flames!

Empyrean Primordius' body was soaked in these flames. His aura began to rapidly climb, soon surpassing the boundaries of an Empyrean!

The Asura Decree was a Beyond Divinity level treasure. Using it as a support, a peak Empyrean could easily rise to the level of a True Divinity!

However, what was difficult was that even a peak Empyrean would find it hard to withstand the strength contained within the word of Faith. It was even possible that their body might collapse and explode from the energy, immediately killing them.

But Empyrean Primordius was different. The intensity of his mortal body had already far surpassed that of most True Divinities.

In particular, the raging anger within his heart pushed him to the limits, allowing his strength to reach an inconceivable degree for a short period of time. All of his life potential was erupting!

On Empyrean Primordius' shoulder, Heavenly Empress Xuanqing turned into a wisp of blue light that sank into his body.

In the final moments of their lives they would be together and die together, never to separate again.

An exit tunnel opened up within the spirit ship. Without turning, Empyrean Primordius flew out. From this point on, he was a demon bent on revenge!

……

Bang!!

Terrifying explosions rocked the vast space. The Ark of Hope was like a little toy that was sent tumbling around. Its protective shield rippled and surged, energy sparks flying.

Beneath the continued onslaught of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, the Ark of Hope's energy reserves began to rapidly decline.

"Lord Patriarch, we only have 50% energy remaining!"

An Empyrean reported to the celestial Patriarch. After the old God Sovereign left, the only one who could manage the chaotic situation was the celestial Patriarch.

The celestial Patriarch's palm was drenched in a cold sweat but he still calmly directed the room. He could not be flustered. Even if his heart was lost and he was panicking within, on the surface he could not show any hysteria.

He didn't know where the old God Sovereign and Lin Ming had gone, nor did he know where they were going. They had already disappeared for a quarter hour; the spirit ship wouldn't be able to last much longer!

But at this time, the celestial Patriarch froze. He looked outside the porthole with utter shock as he watched a towering demon hurtle out from the spirit ship and rush towards the saints.

This demon's goal was Famine!

Although this black demon was massive, compared to the planet-sized Famine, it was far too tiny.

“That is… what is that?”

This demon was far too fast; many people found it hard to see its appearance.

Was this the old God Sovereign’s final trump card?

This thought immediately cut through the celestial Patriarch’s mind. But as soon as he thought this, he discovered that the black demon didn’t rush towards the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign but instead impacted towards… the saint race’s peak Empyreans!

“Mm? That is…”

On the side of the saints, the fused being of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and Famine was stunned. From this black demon, he could feel the aura of an abyssal!

“How is this possible…?”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign could hardly believe his own eyes. There had been an abyssal hiding within the god race all this time?

Within the 33 Heavens, the abyssal demons were a taboo existence. God Beasts could be tamed and forced into becoming a peak Empyrean’s contract beast, but an abyssal could never be brought to heel. Abyssals were incomparably evil beings. Their wisdom was relatively low and they often relied on their instincts to manage affairs. They were the mortal enemies of all intelligent life forms!

Of course, there was always the possibility of something like ‘Famine’ occurring. An abyssal with a high degree of wisdom could establish an equal contract with an intelligent race in order to mutually benefit each other. But, these intelligent abyssals were often peak True Divinity level existences. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn’t believe that such a powerful abyssal would ally with a declining race like the primal god race.

“Just what is going on…”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign hesitated. But at this time, Empyrean Primordius had already rushed towards him with unbelievable speed!

“You are seeking death! Since this is the case, I will devour you!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign coldly sneered. With a thought, a thick dragon tentacle lashed out from the giant body of Famine. This dragon whip instantly passed through ten thousand miles of space, striking towards the black demon!

The power behind this strike already surpassed the level of an Empyrean. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wanted to cut down this unknown black demon and have it become a part of Famine’s flesh and blood.

Rah - !

The blood dragon opened its jaws, biting down on Empyrean Primordius!

In that instant, Empyrean Primordius’ eyes burst out with freezing killing intent! Although his mind was still clear and bright, his eyes had turned blood red!

Roar!

Empyrean Primordius roared. Without changing direction, he shot towards the maw of that giant blood dragon!

Like this, that massive maw would thoroughly swallow Empyrean Primordius!

For a time, all of the ancient race martial artists felt their hearts tighten. They didn’t know how strong Empyrean Primordius was.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign diabolically grinned. But at this time, Empyrean Primordius appeared cold and merciless to the extreme.

Ka ka ka!

With two cracking sounds, two long bone knives shot out from Empyrean Primordius' elbows, stretching out until they became massive crescent moon blades. These blades were a thousand feet long and glowed with a black divine light. With an unparalleled momentum, he slashed out!

Shua!

The void shattered. Empyrean Primordius broke into the blood dragon's jaw, his entire body vanishing!

However, the moment that the blood dragon closed its jaws, two fierce half-moon bone blades slashed out from the blood dragon's cheeks. Blood sprinkled down as the blades continued downwards, unstoppable!

Blood gushed out, dying the void red. The red dragon tentacle futilely struggled wildly, but in front of Empyrean Primordius its flesh and blood was no different from tofu. It had no ability to resist Empyrean Primordius' bone blades!

Like this, from beginning to end, the thousands of miles long red dragon was sliced open!

"What!?"

In that instant, whether it was martial artists from the saints or ancient races, they were all panic-stricken. This demon that had appeared from nowhere had severed one of Famine's tentacles!

Before then, only the god decree left behind by the Asura Road Master had been able to injure Famine!

"Just what are you!?"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's pupils shrank. He could feel a dreadful killing intent from this black demon's eyes, as if they shared some deep and unforgivable grudge.

When did he become enemies with an abyssal?

Empyrean Primordius didn’t speak. On his elbows, those crescent moon blades swung out, causing blood to fly. The entire red dragon tentacle was severed in half by Empyrean Primordius!

After being cut from its mother-body, the tentacle instantly turned into bloody water in the skies. Then, something shocking occurred. Empyrean Primordius opened his mouth and a terrifying traction vortex appeared, swallowing in all of that blood water!

Empyrean Primordius had swallowed Famine’s tentacle.

Famine was known as the existence that could swallow all, but now its own flesh and blood had been swallowed by Empyrean Primordius!

Chapter 1910 – Invincible

Chapter 1910 – Invincible

…

…

…

Crack crack ka!

Empyrean Primordius' flesh and blood and meridians began to emit a thunderous clapping sound. After swallowing Famine's flesh and blood, a greater strength was absorbed into his body. Within him, it was like a swelling volcano was rising, about to erupt at any moment.

"What is that demon? It can even swallow Famine's flesh and blood?"

Within the Ark of Hope, as the ancient race Empyreans saw the black demon they were all confused; they didn't know just what plans to make.

"This black demon has reached the True Divinity boundary and can even absorb Famine's flesh and blood to eat as its own energy. This is terrifying, but… it is not Famine's match."

The celestial Patriarch shook his head. After the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign fused together with Famine, they became a nearly invincible existence. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign represented the highest Laws and the greatest strength, whereas Famine represented an incomprehensible life force and defensive capability.

With the two of them fused together, they had almost no weaknesses!

In this situation, the celestial Patriarch didn't believe there was an existence capable of killing the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. This was what it meant to have an absolute disparity of strength!

"Hahahaha!"

In the void, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign howled with laughter, his cackles resounding through the endless space. "I never thought that there would be a monster like you in the primal god race! However… you seem to be relying on some outside power in order to forcefully raise your strength to the level of a True Divinity? How can someone like you possibly be my match? In the end, you will become nothing but feed for Famine."

As the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign spoke, red dragon heads burst out from his body. These dragon heads wriggled in space, slowly twisting around. On the surface of these red dragons thick layers of bone armor appeared.

The dragons that were made of flesh and blood had now turned into bone dragons.

"This time, do you think your bone blades will still be useful?"

A contemptuous smile appeared on the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's face. With rolling dragon roars, the hundred plus bone dragons rushed towards Empyrean Primordius.

Compared to Empyrean Primordius, Famine's body was far too large. Those terrifying bone dragon tentacles could easily pierce through a planet.

Bang!

Empyrean Primordius suddenly ignited with energy. He turned into a black beam of light that hurtled towards those bone dragons. The bone blades on his elbows slashed out, forming an arc of light that spread for hundreds of thousands of miles!

Blood sprayed out and a bone dragon’s armor shattered. But in the next moment, two bone dragons took its place, each one rushing towards Empyrean Primordius in a pincer attack.

Peng!

The void was smashed apart. Empyrean Primordius was sent flying backwards like a meteor, tumbling away for a thousand miles.

However, his mortal body was incredibly solid. Even after being struck backwards he instantly rose up in space and shot forwards once more!

Seeing this, the many ancient race Empyreans on the Ark of Hope felt their hearts skip a beat. At this time, the doors to the main control room opened up and an ashen man with a hunched back walked in, supported by Lin Ming.

This old man’s face was as wrinkled as a walnut and the sockets of his eyes were pulled in deep. His hair was sparse and his eyes were filthy. His entire body emitted a faint death energy.

This old man was the old God Sovereign, but currently, his fires of life were waning like a candle in a storm, ready to fade at any moment.

“Your Majesty!”

“Master!”

Diwuhen and the many god race martial artists were shocked and saddened as they saw the appearance of their old God Sovereign. Before this, when they saw the demon rush out, they had already guessed that it was related to the old God Sovereign. But now it seemed that the old God Sovereign really had paid a deep price in order to do this. His life was rapidly reaching its end!

“There is no need to panic, I’m not dead yet...”

The old God Sovereign calmly said, as if this was a simple and irrelevant matter. When the old God Sovereign burned the god decree he had preserved a tiny bit of his fires of life because he wasn't able to die just yet. He still needed to guide the ancient remnant races to the Divine Realm.

"Honorable Master..."

Diwuhen fell to his knees. He felt as if a knife was stabbed into his heart and was being twisted around. As Lin Ming stood behind the old God Sovereign, he looked at Diwuhen who was crying tears and deeply empathized with his pain. This was because he understood what Diwuhen was feeling.

Hate. Hate towards himself. Hate towards his own weakness.

"That black demon is..." An Empyrean couldn't help but ask.

"He was once a proud son of heaven who belonged to the human race. He has already become an abyssal. 100,000 years ago, his name was... Empyrean Primordius." The old God Sovereign slowly spoke, his voice aged and gravelly.

"Empyrean Primordius?"

Hearing this name, many ancient race martial artists were bewildered. They understood this part of history. Empyrean Primordius was a true elite, but what a pity, history never gave him the time to grow. Otherwise, perhaps he might have been the turn this great calamity needed. Of course, that was only a possibility; the fused Good Fortune Saint Son and Famine was simply far too powerful. Even if humanity and the god race possessed one or two True Divinities, it would still be impossible for them to contend with the saints.

"We cannot stay... Primordius is not a match for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign..."

The old God Sovereign's voice was gloomy. Everyone was silent. They knew that Empyrean Primordius was sacrificing his life to buy time for them and they couldn't allow him to die in vain.

“Open the energy matrix and pour all of your energy into it. Prepare to break through!”

The old God Sovereign ordered. The Empyreans present were solemn. They were well aware that even with Empyrean Primordius, wanting to break out of this encirclement would be filled with difficulties. This was destined to be a bitter struggle.

Ca!

A bone dragon tentacle was split in half. Empyrean Primordius was bathed in blood, looking like an ascendant demon!

He swallowed Famine’s flesh and drank Famine’s blood in order to restore his own energy. But compared to Famine with his vast, ocean-like life force, Empyrean Primordius’ combat strength was simply too low. Up until now, Famine hadn’t weakened at all.

As the celestial Patriarch had said, Famine was a nearly invincible opponent!

“So… you are not an abyssal, but that body is one that you’ve seized.”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign coldly sneered. From Empyrean Primordius’ spiritual sea, he could feel an aura different from that of a true abyssal. This was no abyssal, but someone from one of the intelligent races.

“To seize the body of an abyssal, you’ve actually caused me to recall someone… 100,000 years ago, there was a human who tried to bite off more than he could chew and attempted to imitate the Asura Road Master by establishing his own Samsara Heavenly Dao. In the end, his plans were toppled by me, and his Grandmist Spirit Bead was taken by me. He fell into the Dark Abyss, unable to escape. And if I remember correctly, at the time there had been a woman by his side, one that came from the primal god race…”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign slowly spoke, a taunting smile on his face. His words were like a knife that cut into Empyrean Primordius’ heart.

Empyrean Primordius' blood red eyes burst out with a thick killing intent. However, he didn't lose his reasoning. He hurtled through the starry sky battlefield, dodging the attacks of the red bone dragons. He could already feel that his attacks weren't enough to threaten Famine. Thus, he needed to attack the core of Famine – the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. However… when comparing his strength against the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's, even if he reached him, how could he possibly defeat him?

"You're done for!"

Standing atop Famine's bloody red body, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign stretched out his hands. From between his hands, a black vortex appeared. A black sphere slowly manifested in it. This sphere was covered with ancient lines, shining blood red as if they had drunk their fill of blood.

Grandmist Spirit Bead!

On the Ark of Hope, Lin Ming's pupils shrank. The item within the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was the Grandmist Spirit Bead. As a True Divinity who specialized in body transformation, if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign emitted an attack with the Grandmist Spirit Bead, its might would be unimaginable!

"Primordius, be careful!"

The old God Sovereign's heart tightened. Originally, it was already difficult to deal with the fused Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and Famine, but now there was also the Grandmist Spirit Bead. Empyrean Primordius had suddenly fallen into a life or death predicament!

"Activate the Ark of Hope's array formation with everything you have! We are breaking out of here!"

The old God Sovereign commanded. And at this time, black flames lit up all over Empyrean Primordius. In his blood red eyes, the shadow of the Grandmist Spirit Bead reflected in his pupils.

After 100,000 years, Empyrean Primordius once again saw this divine tool which had brought him to unimaginable heights but had also sent him crashing down. His heart wildly fluctuated!

“Primordius? I remember this was your name… 100,000 years ago, I wrested the Grandmist Spirit Bead from your hands. Now, I shall use the Grandmist Spirit Bead to kill you and bring our story to its end. You once used the Grandmist Spirit Bead to absorb flesh and blood essence to cultivate your martial artists, so now I shall use the Grandmist Spirit Bead to absorb your flesh and blood essence. I suppose you can consider this a kind of retributive karma, right? Hahaha! Mm… you want to run away? To think you can play tricks on me, you still aren’t good enough!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s complexion became cold and deadly, murderous intent bursting from his eyes! He discovered that the Ark of Hope was revolving energy within its array formation and was attempting to escape.

The truth was that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had already guessed Empyrean Primordius’ goal was to delay for time so that the ancient remnant races could flee.

How could he allow such a thing to happen? In particular, atop the Ark of Hope there was still Lin Ming, someone he had to kill above all!

“How naïve. My sense has been locked onto you all for this entire time. How could you possibly escape? You will all remain here and the ancient races will forever disappear into history!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s thoughts moved and dozens of transformed bone dragons rushed outwards!

These bone dragons roared, their bodies like beams of light as they instantly passed through tens of thousands of miles, smashing and grabbing towards the Ark of Hope!

Bang!

The Ark of Hope violently shook. The hull that was thousands of miles long was tangled by dozens of bone dragons!

And at this time, an enchantment appeared from millions of miles away, sealing Famine, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, and the Ark of Hope within!

This enchantment exuded a grand and violent aura; it was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's good fortune force field. With the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign blocking out the surrounding space with his own force field and using dozens of bone dragon tentacles to tie down the Ark of Hope, the Ark of Hope was now like a bug caught in a spider web, unable to move.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign ruthlessly grinned. "Although you are only ants, I will not allow you the slightest chance to escape! I will give everything to strangle you all to death and bring this all to an end!"

Chapter 1911 – The Final Counterattack

Chapter 1911 – The Final Counterattack

…

…

…

“Damn it!”

On the Ark of Hope, the ancient race Empyreans felt their hearts surge with despair. The bone dragon tentacles shooting out from Famine were extremely powerful. Just a single bone dragon couldn’t be severed even with the all-out attack of a peak Empyrean. Not just that, but there were dozens of bone dragons tying down the Ark of Hope. It would be impossible to break free!

“What do we do?” The ancient race martial artists were worried. Many people looked towards the old God Sovereign. In this critical moment, this old man that was on the verge of death was still the spiritual leader of everyone present.

“Don’t panic!” The old God Sovereign took a deep breath. At the crux of life and death, the old God Sovereign’s voice seemed to possess a strange and mesmerizing charm that calmed everyone down. “We still have a chance, and it is also our final chance…”

The old God Sovereign took out the final Asura Decree – the word of Sealing!

Of the three Asura Decrees there was – the offensive ‘Word of Striking’, the supportive ‘Word of Faith’, and the final sealing ‘Word of Sealing’.

But sealing…

In the minds of those present, the word of Sealing was the weakest of the three Asura Decrees, because it had a weak striking power that could only be used to imprison.

By relying on the word of Sealing, could they reverse the course of fate?

At this time in the void, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had begun his final attack!

The Grandmist Spirit Bead was like a black hole. It floated above the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's head, seething was power!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign spread his arms, allowing energy to recklessly bathe his body. His long hair flew upwards!

On the surface of his body strange curse seals appeared, each curse seal matching those on the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

"Primordius, ancient remnant races, allow me to use this Grandmist Spirit Bead to deliver you all onto the road to hell!"

The Grandmist Spirit Bead emitted a misty red light. The void twisted apart as a horrifying suction force gushed outwards!

Empyrean Primordius howled. On the precipice of life and death, he began to recklessly burn his blood essence. As an abyssal demon and an Empyrean who had opened the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, he possessed an incredibly powerful mortal body. Now that he burnt all his blood essence, the strength that erupted from him could be imagined!

Bang!

Grandmist energy and the power of an abyssal erupted together. But, in the face of the terrifying aura released by the Grandmist Spirit Bead, the strength released by Empyrean Primordius was like a firefly to the bright night moon, simply insignificant.

In the void, the vortex of the Grandmist Spirit Bead became increasingly strong. All of the nearby martial artists in space felt this dreadful swallowing force that seemed to pull at their blood essence, wanting to pull out all the blood from their bodies!

The Grandmist Spirit Bead was the divine tool that represented ‘essence’. It could swallow flesh and blood, but it wasn’t limited to that alone.

This was because within the universe, essence, energy, and divine separately represented matter, energy, and the Heavenly Dao.

As for ‘essence’, that corresponded to all matter and physical things in the universe.

Now, with the Grandmist Spirit Bead being used by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, it could swallow all matter of creation!

Any strength, any light could not escape this swallowing force. It was like a limitless black hole, possessing a terrifying mystic strength.

Paka! Paka!

The surrounding space shattered in massive tracts. The greatest strength released by Empyrean Primordius was only able to faintly slow the Grandmist Spirit Bead for a moment before no longer having any effect.

“We must evacuate!”

The saint Empyreans that helped seal off the Ark of Hope were frightened upon seeing the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign use the power of the Grandmist Spirit Bead. They were scared they would be drawn into that black hole and perish without a trace!

……

“It’s time. This is our final chance...”

On the Ark of Hope, the old God Sovereign took out the word of Sealing god decree.

"I will join you…"

The old celestial Patriarch stood up. He could already see that the old God Sovereign planned to sacrifice himself and combust this god decree.

But the old God Sovereign himself was insufficient.

"It's been almost 100 million years. I will accompany you… on this final journey!"

The celestial Patriarch smiled as he slowly walked up to the old God Sovereign's side.

Seeing this, the ancient race powerhouses all looked dispirited.

Diwuhen and To Bagui shivered. Tears streamed down Smokeless' face. Lin Ming closed his eyes. They all wanted to say something, but in the end they remained quiet.

Because at this time, there was no more meaning in saying anything at all.

The word of Sealing Asura Decree slowly flew up between the old God Sovereign and the celestial Patriarch.

The two old men flew up into the void.

The celestial Patriarch looked at the old God Sovereign and said, "When we were young we explored the Primeval Realm Ruins together. In our lives, I can't remember the number of times we've battled side by side. Even when we had to fight each other, it was for our own people. However… I've always been slightly worse than you…"

The old God Sovereign shook his head. "It's in the past. Today we shall fight together once more, and it will also be our last time…"

Speaking here, the two old men smiled, their smiles bright and confident. The god decree glowed brighter and brighter. The old God Sovereign closed his eyes, saying, "I'll have to rely on you. I don't have much strength left."

"I know."

After speaking these words, the two old men that stood at the pinnacle of the ancient races began to combust like two blazing suns. Their life's essence energy continuously streamed out from every pore of their body, merging into the black Asura Decree.

With every wisp of life essence, the god decree lit up more and more. Slowly, it became blinding. But as for the bodies of the two leaders, they began to stiffen like stone and slowly disintegrate.

The black god decree began to expand at an incredible rate. Ancient and plain runes appeared, each one containing a vast and boundless power. A will from a far off time burst out from the rays of black light.

These rays of light brought with them the infinite aura of an Asura war god, possessing the power of a bottomless prison.

Hum –

Space shivered. As the black light spread out, even space seemed to be forcefully sealed away. Light, dust, all matter and energy and even the most root source Laws began to freeze solid, becoming like pitch black ice. This sight left the heart racing.

With a rustling sound, the bodies of the two old men collapsed and disintegrated into the air. The last wisps of their boundless life force and essence energy merged into the dazzling god decree.

Bang!

The god decree vanished from sight. Instead, what was left behind was a profound darkness, filled with black tentacles as dark as the void that roiled about, innumerable.

These tentacles had trillions of runes shining upon them. They pierced through the void, surging forwards...

All of the ancient remnant race martial artists felt their hearts weighed down by sorrow. This was a strike traded for with the lives of the leaders from two different races.

The two old leaders no longer needed to command this battle because their mission had been completed. If they could not win this battle then there was no meaning to exist. And if they could win, then the ancient remnant races would be able to escape even without their guidance, fleeing to open skies.

…….

“Just die!” A cold and cruel smile appeared on the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s lips. He pressed his hands forwards, pouring all of his strength into the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

Bang!

The power of the Grandmist Spirit Bead rose once more, completely crushing the defensive barriers that Primordius tried to put up. The black vortex grew larger and larger, eventually turning into a massive thousand miles black sphere that could consume all of creation!

Energy shock waves spread outwards like tens of thousands of stars exploding together. Like a boiling tide, all nearby planets started to blow apart one at a time. Even many nearby spirit ships began to flee, lest they be sucked into the vortex.

The black hole formed by the Grandmist Spirit Bead would expand without end until it swallowed all.

Even the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had to consume a tremendous amount of energy in order to use this power that could reverse the heavens and earth. He had to overdraw his strength and even then he found it difficult to control.

But just as Empyrean Primordius was covered by this black hole, a strange and formidable dark strength hurtled out from the Ark of Hope!

This dark strength blotted out the heavens, overwhelming the world. It was like a black sun with countless black tentacles spreading out from it.

As it appeared, vast tracts of surrounding space were instantly imprisoned. Even pure energy shock waves were frozen solid. Even Famine, even the Grandmist Spirit Bead, everything was tightly wrapped up in this sheer pitch black darkness.

“Mm? This is…!!” The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign detected that something was wrong. He discovered that this strange pitch black strength contained an inexplicable divine sealing ability. It was somewhat similar to the Grandmist Spirit Bead in that it shared characteristics with a black hole, but it was actually different from a black hole!

The Grandmist Spirit Bead was a swallowing power, but this dark strength was a seal!

It sealed everything away into a black space, and this space also began to rapidly shrink!

“Asura Decree!?!?”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s heart shook. Such a terrifying strength could only be achieved by an Asura Decree!

Although the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign knew that the primal god race had few god decrees personally drawn up by the Asura Road Master, he actually wasn’t sure what effects they had or what they were used for.

But now, it seemed that the function of this god decree was to create a divine natural space that surpassed the Laws of the 33 Heavens and sealed away all enemies within.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had already been imprisoned and was unable to dodge at all. And worst of all, even the completely berserk Grandmist Spirit Bead black hole would be sealed away with him!

“Damn it all!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign finally understood the plan of the ancient remnant races. He was so angry he wanted to smash his feet against a boulder!

“Break for me!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was incensed. He no longer cared for Empyrean Primordius but instead stimulated the Grandmist Spirit Bead black hole to its limits in order to break free from this divine natural space!

Ka ka ka!

The black hole and spatial barriers collided together. A terrifying and mind-boggling level of energy erupted. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wanted to forcefully break free from this Asura Decree!

For a time, space seemed to be completely swallowed up.

Then, from the god decree left behind by the Asura Road Master, an unexpected shattering sound rang out, as if it would soon shatter!

After the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign fused together with Famine, and also with using the power of the Grandmist Spirit Bead, he could almost break open an Asura Decree!

“You want to seal me away? Keep on dreaming!”

A cruel and merciless light shined in the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s eyes. But in the next moment, his complexion changed. He watched helplessly on as a towering black demon hurtled towards him at full speed!

Empyrean Primordius was also covered by the word of Sealing. When the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign stimulated the Grandmist Spirit Bead black hole to its limits in order to break free from the imprisonment of the divine natural space, Empyrean Primordius had also been freed from the shackles of the black hole. Now, this was his chance to rush forwards.

Yet this time, his target was no longer Famine, but the main body of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

Chapter 1912 – Black Hole Disintegration

Chapter 1912 – Black Hole Disintegration

…

…

…

“You are seeking death!”

Seeing Empyrean Primordius hurtle towards him, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign began to panic.

Even if he was stronger, having to control the incomparably powerful Grandmist Spirit Bead black hole to attack the divine natural sealing space had caused him to exhaust all of his energy.

This was an Asura Decree, a Beyond Divinity level treasure. How could it be easy to break through it?

Yet, in this crucial moment, Empyrean Primordius intended to strike him at his weakest. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn’t have any methods to deal with Empyrean Primordius’ attacks!

At this time, a savage killing intent burst out from Empyrean Primordius’ eyes. He brought his arms together, his two bone blades extended outwards. The dark and dense blades shined with a cold divine light, slashing straight towards the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s throat!

And the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wasn’t able to block this attack!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was enraged to the peak. He was clearly far stronger than Empyrean Primordius, and the ancient remnant races were nothing but bugs he didn't place in his eyes. And yet this crowd of bug-like existences had forced him to this step.

There was no road to heaven, no gates to the earth!

Die!

Empyrean Primordius had already recklessly burnt his blood essence. With his original mortal bodily strength, after burning the entirety of his blood essence he should have been able to rival a True Divinity, and now he was even supported with the Asura Decree – the word of Faith!

Empyrean Primordius' body was covered in black flames. Wherever he went, the void was shattered, everything was crushed!

Empyrean Primordius' strike could not be blocked by an ordinary True Divinity. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was naturally capable of blocking such a strike, but now he didn't have the strength to do so!

Seeing the bone blade soon about to slice through his throat, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign fiercely grit his teeth and desperately attacked!

Crack! Crack! Crack!

He howled into the heavens. Scales formed all over his body. In this life or death moment, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had activated his body metamorphosis!

The saints were a body transformation focused race that was also divided by the quality of their bloodlines. Amongst the saints, martial artists with formidable bloodlines could metamorphosize their bodies, galvanizing their greatest strength.

The Good Fortune Saint Son and Imperial Prince Naqi were examples.

But the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign could not remember how many years it had been since he had used his bloodline power to activate body metamorphosis. This was because he simply never needed it.

In his ordinary state, he was almost the greatest powerhouse of the 33 Heavens.

After fusing together with Famine, he was nearly invincible!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign never would have dreamed there would be a day when he would be forced to use his body transformation by a bunch of ants!

“Get out of my way!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign exploded into a roar, his fast smashing outwards!

His fist was covered with scales and his muscles bulged out like the claws of a dragon.

This fist broke apart the void, colliding with Empyrean Primordius’ bone blades!

Kacha!

With a loud crack, the bone blades shattered!

Even if this was a hasty blow, the strike of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign possessed unimaginable power!

However, the moment the fractured bone blades shattered, they still tore through the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s protective astral essence and stabbed into his chest.

At the same time, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s fist smashed into Empyrean Primordius’ chest.

Bang!

Empyrean Primordius’ towering figure violently shook. His ribs caved in and he spat out blood as he was sent flying backwards!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's strike had heavily wounded Primordius, but his mortal body had been stabbed by Empyrean Primordius' bone blade. Moreover, because the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had to stop what he was doing to attack Primordius, the Grandmist Spirit Bead black hole began to spin out of control!

Whorl whorl whorl!

The pitch black surface of the black hole violently clashed with the divine natural sealing space. A horrifying tide of energy burst outward!

Because the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn't want to give Empyrean Primordius or the ancient remnant races any chance to escape, he had poured all his energy into the Grandmist Spirit Bead to send out an attack. This terrifying black hole could ruin a galaxy; its strength was beyond powerful.

The power that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign cast out was absorbed into the black hole, causing it to accumulate more and grow larger. Within, dangerous streams of power grinded against each other, squeezing each other…

Now that he had lost control of the black hole, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's complexion changed. He could feel the strength within the black hole begin to contract inwards, causing massive tracts of space to collapse and implode.

This entire process was like the explosion of a universe, the terrifying contraction that occurred after it had expanded to its limits.

It had to be known that every wisp of power within the black hole was highly tempered and incredibly pure. It was extremely terrifying.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's complexion became increasingly ugly. Once the strength sealed within the black hole was reduced to the peak, it would then explode. The following annihilating strength would create unimaginable destruction.

This was the same as dozens of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s attacks together. It simply could not be withstood.

“Grandmist Spirit Bead – reverse!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s complexion was fierce. He roused the power of the Grandmist Spirit Bead with all of his strength, trying to reverse the energies within and neutralize the black hole.

Excessive consumption of energy caused all of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s blood vessels to bulge upwards and burst open. At this time he was completely overdrawing on his strength!

He forcefully sucked all of this collapsing energy into the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

However, wasn’t wanting to neutralize all of the energy in a black hole on the verge of explosion easier said than done, especially in such a short period of time? The current Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was now a spent force.

Rumble rumble rumble!

After being neutralized by the Grandmist Spirit Bead, the black hole didn’t explode. But, it started to break apart. In this case, waves of energy still shot outwards!

They were like arrows, each wisp capable of crushing celestial bodies!

Woosh!

Black fluctuations of energy crashed into Famine.

The mountainous expanse of flesh and blood seemed to have been cut open by the blade of a divine god. In an instant, dreadful wounds as deep as canyons formed on Famine’s body.

Another energy fluctuation passed over Famine, severing seven or eight of its bone dragon tentacles.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Waves of black hole power slashed through the void. Famine had suffered heavy damage!

“Ahh!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign howled! His hair was disheveled and his body was dyed in blood. He simply couldn’t deal with the stormy power of this black hole.

If this continued, then Famine would suffer inconceivable damages.

This was because the black hole power possessed a swallowing attribute. It would drain a massive amount of Famine’s blood essence!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign bit down on the tip of his tongue and black light rose in his pupils. The pure source power of a True Divinity began to gush out from him.

As this source power appeared, even the universe started to shake. Countless lines of the Great Dao gathered and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s aura changed. Even his astral essence turned pure gold in color.

In that moment, with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign as the center, a terrifying energy vortex arose within the universe. For billions and trillions of miles around, all of the power of good fortune began gathering towards the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

This strength was not just heaven and earth origin energy, but all sorts of power from the world.

Heat, light, small ions, interstellar dust, everything began converging on the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

This was the Good Fortune Divine Art, the technique to seize the power of good fortune! The so-called good fortune was the sum of all matter and life besides intelligent life forms. By drawing out the power of good fortune within the universe for an attack, the power behind this ability could be imagined!

This was an incomparably overbearing and tyrannical cultivation method. The Good Fortune Saint Son had once used it to contend with Lin Ming, but now that it was displayed in the hands of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, the might of the Good Fortune Divine Art was beyond terrifying!

With the support of the Good Fortune Divine Art, beams of golden astral essence gathered around Famine, forming a giant circular golden shield!

Within this shield, small figures floated up and down; these were the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's True Divinity incarnations.

Each small figure represented a wisp of the universe's source strength, perfect and without flaw.

The moment that the Grandmist Spirit Bead began to veer out of control and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wasn't able to divide his attention too much, he didn't hesitate to use his source strength with the Good Fortune Divine Art. This round golden shield was a peerless martial skill from the Good Fortune Divine Art – Myriad Spirit Creation Shield.

The Myriad Spirit Creation Shield began to shine. An old and distant radiance emanated outwards as sounds of the Great Dao filled the air.

It was like a most precious treasure had appeared from the birthing of the cosmos, representing eternity and immortality.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The violent black hole strength smashed against the Myriad Spirit Creation Shield, colliding and erasing each other.

Massive amounts of source strength dissipated, however the impact wasn't able to reach the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

But at this moment, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had also consumed a tremendous amount of his source strength and greatly overdrawn himself. His fused body of Famine was already cut and pitted, with massive and alarming fissures crossing it.

Even so, there were still those bone dragon tentacles that wrapped around the Ark of Hope!

Over half of them had been cut off, but there were still a dozen some of them that tenaciously clung to the spirit ship!

Although the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign could have withdrawn his bone dragon tentacles to help himself defend, he would rather suffer heavier injuries than allow the Ark of Hope to escape.

He didn't want to let the ancient remnant races flee, especially Lin Ming!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had a dark uneasiness in his heart. He had to kill Lin Ming as soon as possible, but the speed he was growing at was far too fast!

This time, he had suffered a giant loss. Although it seemed that it was because the ancient remnant races had joined together with Empyrean Primordius, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had a strange premonition that in this battle, Lin Ming had played an irreplaceable role.

He needed to kill this human youth. He could not allow him to freely grow. He could not even give him the smallest chance!

"You… die for me!"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's face distorted. His mouth was wet with blood!

He reached out his right hand and grasped towards the Ark of Hope!

With explosive cracking sounds, the 20 plus bone dragon tentacles around the Ark of Hope began to wildly contract, constantly crushing down on the Ark of Hope's protective shield.

Even though the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had been heavily wounded, he still had more than enough power to smash the Ark of Hope and the ancient remnant races to pieces!

The Ark of Hope's energy reserves rapidly fell!

Through the successive attacks and counterattacks, the Ark of Hope had already used up over half its energy. In this situation, the Ark of Hope wasn't able to last much longer. As for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, although he was exhausted, a starving camel was still larger than a horse. The vitality of Famine was strong to the point of disbelief!

"Die!"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign roared out. But at this time, he saw a black shadow fly through a massive wound in his body and… drill into it.

Chapter 1913 – Point

Chapter 1913 – Point

…

…

…

“What?”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s complexion changed. All of his attention just now had been focused on the Ark of Hope. He wanted to obliterate the Ark of Hope’s protective shield and then swallow it, along with the primal god race and Lin Ming.

But during this time period he had suffered a sneak attack.

“It’s you again!!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign fiercely raged, furious. Famine’s body was far too large. After the black hole broke apart, Famine had been forced to withstand over 90% of the black hole’s turbulent energy shockwaves.

And Empyrean Primordius had hidden himself behind Famine. The moment the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign blocked the black hole’s energy shockwaves with the Myriad Spirit Creation Shield, Empyrean Primordius had taken this opportunity to strike!

And what was most ruthless was that Empyrean Primordius didn’t attack the exterior of Famine’s body, but instead chose to rush through the horrifying tearing wounds caused by the black hole energy and break into its body!

Such a sinister method caused the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign to fume with rage!

Puff!

Blood began to gush out of Famine like a river from the wound where Empyrean Primordius had rushed in!

In that moment, Empyrean Primordius had sliced open a giant blood vessel within Famine!

This blood vessel was over a thousand feet thick and it was cut in half by Empyrean Primordius’ bone saber. Underneath a terrifying blood pressure, blood as hot and thick as magma gushed out into space, soaring for thousands of miles!

“Just die!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s eyes gleamed with a vicious light. He changed his plans. He had to kill Empyrean Primordius first, otherwise with Empyrean Primordius freely rampaging through his body, his wounds would only become heavier.

Woosh!

A bone dragon tentacle drilled into Famine’s body like a leech, chasing straight after Empyrean Primordius.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was ruthless. He ignored any collateral damage to Famine’s body and vowed to catch and kill Empyrean Primordius!

As the bone dragon tentacle drilled in, it constantly transformed. It became sharper, more dense, similar to a blood red spear!

And at this time, Empyrean Primordius rushed forwards through the mass of flesh and blood. Before this, Empyrean Primordius’ left bone blade had been shattered by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s punch and his left hand had nearly broken apart at the same time. Now all he had left was the bone blade on his right elbow.

Using this bone blade, Empyrean Primordius hurtled forwards with irresistible momentum. He constantly tore through Famine's body, drilling into it like a razor sharp cone!

"Since you've come, don't think of leaving!"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign surged with energy. Waves of the power of good fortune swelled towards him and Famine's body violently wriggled. At the same time, the Grandmist Spirit Bead floated above the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's head. A stream of ancient runes rushed out, all of them entering into Famine's body.

With the support of this powerful energy, Famine's flesh and blood tightened, becoming more dense even as energy recklessly coursed through it.

These waves of energy smashed onto Empyrean Primordius like an endless tide. The blood became increasingly hot and also started to be filled with a horrifying corrosive power!

This corrosiveness wasn't from physical poisons but from the Heavenly Dao Laws – in other words, the Poison Laws. Even if a True Divinity spirit treasure were bathed in Famine's blood it would still slowly lose its spirituality.

Empyrean Primordius fought with everything he had. As he did, he felt the blood splashing on him become as dangerous as acid. As long as it touched him it would emit puffing sounds and vanish in a plume of white smoke.

The pitch black bone armor on his body began to melt away at a speed visible to the eyes. After a while, a plate of bone armor as thick as a large fist fell down.

The bone armor that was originally as smooth as a mirror begun to form holes due to the corrosive blood.

Some of that corrosive blood even splashed onto Primordius' pupils.

On his deep pupils, runes began to collapse. The sight in front of Empyrean Primordius became hazy and dim, as if he would lose his vision at any moment...

Roar!

Through the layers of hurdles, Empyrean Primordius angrily howled out. A radiant light the color of fresh blood shot out from his pupils, as bright as a sun. The corrosive bodily fluids of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign were burned away by the source essence energy of Empyrean Primordius. A boundless shaking power rushed out, allowing Empyrean Primordius to continue hurtling into the deepest depths of Famine.

....

“The situation is dire!”

Within the Ark of Hope an ancient race Empyrean felt his mind tighten.

Every single action and move that Empyrean Primordius took affected the hearts of the powerhouses within the Ark of Hope.

They could all feel that at this moment, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s body was surging with a potent power of good fortune. His fused body bloomed with a blinding light. Every pore shone, and the flesh and blood seemed to come to life making the heart race with fear.

That strength was so great that even the void would be swallowed up.

But after Empyrean Primordius had hurtled his way into Famine’s body, his aura became isolated from the outside without any way to sense his movements. Even the tear that Empyrean Primordius used to drill into Famine was slowly being covered over by wriggling flesh.

“Primordius is in danger!”

Diwuhen and To Bagui’s faces were dripping with sweat. Whether it was the celestials or god race, their old leaders had died in battle for their people. Now, the destiny of their races had been left in their hands and they had become the true commanders who had to lead the ancient remnant races to escape and survive.

The pressure on their shoulders could be imagined!

“The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign suffered a backlash from the Grandmist Spirit Bead and has taken heavy damage. He even overdrew his essence energy to activate the Good Fortune Divine Art – just how much strength could he possibly have left?!”

A god race Empyrean spat out with hate thick in his voice.

“Even a centipede that is chopped in half won’t die. Famine’s vital life force is too powerful. Even if it only has a tenth of its strength remaining, it isn’t something we can hope to contend with…”

Diwuhen took a deep breath. At this time, he was nearly out of his wits and out of his mind. Once Empyrean Primordius died, the rest of them would soon follow.

As everyone was anxious and worried, in a corner of the control room, Lin Ming had closed his eyes deep in concentration. Within his spiritual sea the Magic Cube slowly revolved, projecting out a phantom of Famine’s body.

His spiritual sea was nearly isolated from the world. All of his soul force was poured into the Magic Cube as he sensed the universe through it.

He was using the Magic Cube to search for that one ‘point’.

Beside Lin Ming, Smokeless was startled. She could faintly feel that at this moment, there was suddenly a strange change in Lin Ming’s soul force, one that was hard to fathom.

It was like waves of a vast and boundless strength, similar to a spiritual god, began to gush out from Lin Ming’s body, so profound that it caused the heart to race.

Other than Smokeless, many Empyreans also discovered that something unusual was occurring to Lin Ming's aura. What they didn't know was that this aura like a spiritual god that made their hearts race didn't come from Lin Ming, but originated from the Magic Cube.

If there was a powerhouse that had a deep understanding of the Magic Cube, they could rely on this feeling alone to confirm that the Magic Cube was within Lin Ming's body. This was because the momentum emitting from his body was too grand, too unique.

But now, no one could care to delve into this. Lin Ming had created far too many miracles. If they could feel a divine nature from his body, no one would think it was strange.

"Lin Ming..."

Diwuhen could see that between Lin Ming's eyebrows, another eye had appeared. This eye shined out with a brilliant divine light, and within his eyes, the phantom of a gray cube seemed to spin around. This cube had mysterious markings that he had never seen before.

As this phantom cube appeared it also instantly hid itself. But as Diwuhen looked into Lin Ming's eyes he had a feeling as if he were losing himself. This feeling left him stunned. As a peak Empyrean it was naturally impossible for him to be enchanted by the eyes of a peak Holy Lord martial artist.

Was it that phantom cube which had appeared for a brief moment just then?

Diwuhen had no time to think about it. At this time, Lin Ming stood up and asked, "Let me try once."

"Mm?"

Everyone was shocked. What did Lin Ming want to try? Could it be that he wanted to deal with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign?

That was impossible!

They watched as Lin Ming slowly walked to the side of the Asura Primal God Cannon. Soul force wildly bubbled around his body. Rays of his soul force gathered around him, forming a beam of light in the void, as thick as a baby’s arm. This beam of soul force connected to the Asura Primal God Cannon. Beneath the revitalization of Lin Ming’s soul force, the Asura Primal God Cannon began to emit waves of faint spiritual light.

So he wanted to release the Asura Primal God Cannon once more!

“Lin Ming, you want to use the Asura Primal God Cannon? The Asura Primal God Cannon is strong, but… Famine is just too powerful. It is nearly invincible. Can you use the god cannon to threaten its life?”

The Asura Primal God Cannon was extremely powerful. With a direct strike it could even easily and instantly kill a peak Empyrean.

But to use it to blast Famine, it was actually far too weak!

After all, even in Lin Ming’s hands the Asura Primal God Cannon could only display a limited degree of strength. It was far inferior to an Asura Decree.

Even an Asura Decree could only heavily wound Famine but not kill it.

“Let’s give it a try. This time, my attack method will be different…”

Lin Ming touched the Asura Primal God Cannon. He had no idea just how many rare treasures of the universe were incorporated into this god cannon, just how many materials were needed to forge it. In the ancient era, this god cannon had once followed the Asura Road Master into battle and had obtained many magnificent war exploits.

Chapter 1914 – The Strongest Joint Attack

Chapter 1914 – The Strongest Joint Attack

…

…

…

"A different attack method?"

When the many Empyreans heard Lin Ming's words they were left surprised. The so-called different attack method, could it be related to the divine aura that emanated from Lin Ming just now?

Lin Ming said, "I'm not sure, but I believe that no matter how powerful an existence is, they will never be invincible. Even the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign must have a weakness."

As Lin Ming spoke, no one asked any more questions. With Empyrean Primordius on the precipice of death there was just no time to talk. Moreover, the key factor was that the Empyreans present had faith in Lin Ming.

He had already created far too many miracles.

"Everyone, help me!" As Lin Ming's voice fell, his blood vitality began to seethe and roil. The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace completely opened and his body emitted loud crackling sounds as his figure rose and black scales appeared all over him. In order to operate the Asura Primal God Cannon the best he could, Lin Ming had activated the power of the Asura blood!

At this time, his blood vessels and meridians began to surge like a flood. Condensed blood vitality and energy shot out from his pores, gathering in the void.

Not just that, but Lin Ming's spiritual sea started to tumble and stir. Soul force roared out from him, gathering into purple pythons that rushed out from Lin Ming's soul. All of these strengths were Lin Ming's true source soul, and now he was pouring all of it into the Asura Primal God Cannon without reserve.

Slowly, the runes atop the Asura Primal God Cannon began to emit a bright and eternally glorious light. Marks started to float in the air, like innumerable faint stars revolving around the cannon that made it seem even more mystical and magnificent.

Just Lin Ming's strength alone was far from enough. At this time, stream after stream of great energy began to flow into Lin Ming's body.

These strengths were as deep and vast as a sea, all of them pouring into Lin Ming like massive rivers and then flowing through him into the Asura Primal God Cannon.

The source of these strengths was all the ancient race Empyreans of the Primeval Universe that were trying their best to struggle for a future within the Ark of Hope.

They had already helped Lin Ming activate the Asura Primal God Cannon once before. Now that they were coordinating with him a second time, this was already a familiar process.

None of them knew what Lin Ming's plan was nor did they know what the chances of success were.

But at this time, none of them asked. They could only desperately push forwards, burning their life source without hesitation to wrestle for the slightest ray of hope!

Many ancient race Empyreans began burning their fires of life. Their appearances started to wither, becoming older.

They had already been powering the Ark of Hope's array formation all this time and they had consumed a tremendous amount of energy. This strength that they poured into Lin Ming was all they had left.

Some older Empyreans barely had enough strength to continue standing and almost slumped over. But even so, they continued to pour their power into the array formation.

The entire Ark of Hope was silent. No one spoke. Only the sound of roiling soul force echoed in the air as all eyes were focused on Lin Ming.

……………………

Lin Ming required time to gather his potential. But at this time, within the body of Famine, Empyrean Primordius had already consumed a tremendous amount of strength and was finding it hard to continue.

The bone armor on his body was almost corroded to nothing and he dripped with blood all over.

Famine's flesh trembled around Empyrean Primordius. The flesh became like walls, pressing down on him. This terrifying strength could even crush a planet, and now it was all being withstood by Empyrean Primordius alone!

Kacha!

With a loud crack, Empyrean Primordius' right bone blade finally cracked as it tried to slice through the increasingly dense flesh and corrosive strength!

Woosh!

Behind Empyrean Primordius, the blood red tentacles chased after him faster and faster. They bore tunnels through Famine's body, soon about to pierce through Empyrean Primordius!

A callous smile unconsciously appeared on the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s face. Although his battle with Empyrean Primordius and the ancient races had caused him to suffer heavy losses, if he could catch Empyrean Primordius and swallow his mortal body then he could restore a bit of his lost essence energy and blood vitality, restoring himself that much faster.

But just as he was about to kill Empyrean Primordius his body shook. The smile on his face froze.

“Killing intent!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s eyes widened. He swiveled to look towards the Ark of Hope.

At this time, the Ark of Hope had fallen utterly silent. Its protective shield had disappeared and now it was only relying on the tough defenses of his hull to continue onwards.

This was because all the power within the Ark of Hope was gathering into the Asura Primal God Cannon and it could no longer maintain its protective shield.

On the bow of the Ark of Hope, the Asura Primal God Cannon began to shake. Rumbling filled the air like countless texts being recited in unison.

In that incomparably ancient and profound cannon barrel, a terrifying strength that could crush billions of miles of space began to condense, turning into a blinding light.

This light became increasingly glorious and magnificent like a supernova. But strangely, there was no sound.

As if the terrifying power of the Asura Primal God Cannon could swallow all sound in the world.

In that moment, the heavens and earth fell silent.

All that existed in everyone’s field of view was a vast white light that swallowed everything as it swept towards the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

“Humph!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign coldly snorted. He had withstood three Asura Decrees, Beyond Divinity level treasures that represented the will of the Asura Road Master. Even then he had only suffered heavy damage. So, this Asura Primal God Cannon that was operated by a pack of Empyreans was nothing at all.

“You want to save Primordius? Dream on!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign contemptuously sneered. Instead of hurting ten fingers he would rather break off one instead. Even if he had to be injured again he would still kill Empyrean Primordius first to prevent all future troubles!

Woosh!

Within Famine’s body, the bone dragon that had transformed into a blood red lance continued to pierce toward Primordius without slowing!

Peng!

Empyrean Primordius’ tattered bone armor was directly pierced through. Blood shot out!

Empyrean Primordius shook. He looked blankly on as a large and massive bone spear thrust through his chest, bringing with it a giant deluge of blood.

But even now, within Empyrean Primordius’ eyes there was no sorrow, no anger, and no regret.

What he had was a firm resolution.

Within his heart was a faint brilliance, one that he could sense Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's aura from. During his final twilight, that pale and light soul force continued to accompany him at his side, leaving him forever enchanted and at peace.

When he broke into Famine's body, his goal was not to destroy it. He was well aware that with his own strength, it would be impossible to sever Famine's life force.

The reason he desperately rushed into Famine, ignoring the corrosion of his bone armor and ignoring the terrifying pressure from the walls of flesh around him, was all in order to penetrate as deep as he could.

Then… he could detonate himself from within!

Gather all of his life force, combust his soul, burn his energy, in his life, a move that could only be used once… the strongest and most glorious final attack!

……

"What? This attack…!"

Seeing the Asura Primal God Cannon's blast shoot towards him, the originally contemptuous Good Fortune Saint Sovereign suddenly changed his complexion.

From this terrifying energy he could feel a soul-destroying aura. And, what was most terrifying was that this energy had locked onto… the singular weak point within Famine's body!

In other words… the spirit mark which the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had left in Famine!

Famine's soul had been sealed away by Empyrean Divine Seal. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had used the Grandmist Spirit Bead to extract the flesh and blood essence from Famine and fuse it into his own body. This was the method he used to establish a connection with Famine. The reason he was able to control Famine's body was because he had left his own spirit mark within it.

The place of this spirit mark was not too far away from the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's main body.

Lin Ming had poured his soul force into the Magic Cube, using the Magic Cube to search until he finally found this singular point!

The all-out cannon blast was aimed towards this area!

Once it was erased, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would lose control of Famine.

There was nothing that was truly invincible!

"How is this possible!?"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was shocked beyond compare. Famine had such a massive body that it was impossible for it to be a coincidence for the enemy to strike solely this point.

But, who was it that had discovered the location of the spirit mark?

"Humph!"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's expression turned fierce and hideous. With several loud popping sounds, all around him dozens of red bone dragons had appeared!

These red bone dragons swirled in front of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, ready to intercept the cannon blast!

Famine's mortal body was extremely formidable. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was fully confident that with these dozens of red bone dragons intercepting the strike, even if the ancient races had discovered his weakness they still couldn't do anything with it.

But at this time, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's complexion changed once more. Deep within Famine, he could feel a power brewing like a volcano.

"Primordius, have you gone insane!?" The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was panic-stricken. The point that this terrifying strength was gathering towards was where Empyrean Primordius was.

At this time, Empyrean Primordius' body had swelled up. His blood vitality and divine soul were being burned to the extreme. Within his pupils there was a complex interweaving of freedom and resolve.

In front of him, a faint soul force condensed, manifesting into the vague phantom of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing.

Heavenly Empress Xuanqing gazed at Empyrean Primordius, her eyes filled with a soft and gentle love.

One was a towering abyssal demon and the other was a soul goddess with no physical body. Both of them hugged each other, and yet this didn't seem out of place at all. Rather, it seemed to be the most beautiful image in existence.

Empyrean Primordius' body was completely soaked in a blinding divine light, like the last flash before a star exploded!

A horrifying strength erupted. At this time, Empyrean Primordius had the strength of a True Divinity and he had the seized body of an abyssal. Once he detonated himself, the power behind the explosion could be imagined!

Moreover, he was deep within Famine and had aimed at the brief moment when the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was at his weakest!

"DAMN IT ALL!!!!"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign roared. But, he could not stop Empyrean Primordius.

Bang!!

A world-shaking explosion occurred, blasting through Famine's body. From the side of Famine, the terrifying explosion burst through his body and swept through space, bringing with it endless pieces of flesh and blood!

The titanic energy storm that Empyrean Primordius became began to tear apart everything in the void around it.

Even the surrounding enchantment of supernatural power was struck by this dreadful strength, instantly blowing up into pieces!

The nearby saint Empyreans all fled. But, many World Kings and Holy Lords were sucked in, all of them dying miserable deaths!

Empyrean Primordius' self-detonation had blown open a gaping wound in Famine. And at the same time, the Asura Primal God Cannon's energy blast also struck the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

It aimed straight towards the spirit mark that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had left in Famine!

Ca!

A divine light melted away all. A horrifying energy beam completely swallowed the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

Chapter 1915 – True Divinity Mark

Chapter 1915 – True Divinity Mark

…

…

…

Divine light cut through the cosmos. A terrifying storm of energy swallowed all, causing space to collapse in a range of a million miles. Space storms recklessly rushed out, swallowing everything, twisting apart even planets.

The massive energy vortex swallowed almost half of Famine's planet-sized body. As for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, it was like someone had thrown acid on him, making his entire body begin to rapidly melt away.

The divine light swept through all, even covering light rays and sound waves. All strength was swallowed within. Several saint race spirit ships were caught in this energy vortex and destroyed, immediately disintegrated. The numerous Saint Lords, Holy Lords, and even World Kings on board were annihilated without even bones remaining!

As for the saint race Empyreans, they all began to run away lest they were also affected!

The entire Primeval Universe seemed to have been severed in half by this divine sword, leaving a terrifying white scar through space.

The middle of this white scar was an absolute death zone. Any spirit ships, World Kings, or Empyreans that fell in would vanish without a trace.

"Hou - !"

From deep within this giant vortex a dreadful demonic roar transmitted outwards, like 10,000 God Beasts howling out together. Giant sonic waves and space storms mixed into the vortex of energy, tearing apart all.

This was the cry of Famine; it was clear that it was suffering agonizing pain.

“Do we still have energy reserves?”

Diwuhen shouted out within the Ark of Hope. The battle had yet to end. Whether it was the Ark of Hope or the martial artists within it, they had all used a tremendous amount of energy and could be described as lamps that had used up all their oil.

“There isn’t much left…”

Smokeless said, sweat dripping down her forehead. Because many of the Empyreans had used up their strength, Smokeless had also stepped forwards to contribute her power.

And at this time, standing beside Smokeless, Lin Ming’s face was pale white. Sweat streamed down his face and within his pupils the image of a gray cube flashed in and out of existence, appearing and then hiding again. But this time, no one had the energy to notice the phenomenon occurring within Lin Ming’s eyes.

“I’ve used up too much energy…”

Lin Ming slumped onto the table before him, taking great heaving gasps of air. Just now, Lin Ming had used the Daevic Eye Dao Palace in conjunction with the divine soul tool – the Magic Cube. With this, he had barely been able to locate the spirit mark point that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had placed within Famine. In the cannon blast just now, out of all the martial artists in the Ark of Hope, the one who had exhausted himself the most was undoubtedly Lin Ming.

“Lin Ming, are you okay…?”

Several Empyreans asked with concern. Lin Ming dismissively waved his hand and struggled to say, “We must leave as soon as possible. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign… isn’t dead!”

Lin Ming had used the Magic Cube to locate the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s spirit mark and was thus extremely sensitive to this spirit mark’s existence. He knew that in the strike just now, he hadn’t been able to erase the spirit mark.

After the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign fused with Famine’s body, their life force was just too terrifying! Even the Asura Primal God Cannon that was powered by numerous Empyreans, and then added on with the implosion of Empyrean Primordius deep within Famine, still wasn’t able to defeat them!

As the ancient remnant races heard Lin Ming’s words they felt as if their hearts were dropped in ice. In truth, they had already prepared themselves for failure. After all, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was too strong. But after seeing that strike just now and the incredible explosion that lit up the universe, a faint and wild hope had still existed in their hearts. However, even that faint ray of hope had disappeared, making it hard for them to accept.

The celestial Patriarch, the old God Sovereign, Empyrean Primordius, Heavenly Empress Xuanqing… peerless powerhouses had burnt their lives one after another to fight, but in the end they only managed to severely wound the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

“Not yet, it’s not over yet, we’re breaking out of here!”

To Bagui shouted. He desperately poured all of his power of divinity into the Ark of Hope’s grand array formation and the other Empyreans followed suit. Now that they had already reached their limits, they had to overdraw their life in order to do this!

And at this time, from where Famine was covered by the energy storm, a thick red dragon tentacle pierced out of that horrifying black vortex, striking towards the Ark of Hope!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had begun his attack once more!

It was only that this red dragon tentacle was dripping with blood; it had clearly suffered tremendous damage.

“I… will… kill… you… all!!” This hatred-filled curse resounded through the cosmos!

Seeing the red dragon tentacle shoot towards them, the expressions of the ancient race Empyreans all changed. They knew that once they were tied down by this red dragon tentacle they were all finished!

This was because there were still many Empyreans within the saint army. Due to that fearful explosion just now, the Empyreans had all scattered and fled as far as they could. They were flesh and blood unlike the Ark of Hope and couldn’t withstand the shockwaves from such a terrifying energy storm.

But currently, the energy storm was weakening and those Empyreans that ran away were rapidly returning!

If they were encircled then the Ark of Hope would never be able to escape!

“Explode for me!”

As everything hung by a single thread, To Bagui suddenly thrust out a withered yellow god decree!

The three Asura Decrees had already been used. What To Bagui held in his hand was one left behind by an upper True Divinity. After being repaired by Lin Ming, the might within it had been restored to its past state. In the hands of the ancient races it was a formidable weapon only inferior to the Asura Decrees.

Bang!

The god decree blasted through space and a powerful shockwave blew away the dragon tentacle. At the same time, the Ark of Hope was pushed away by the impact of the shockwave and went tumbling backwards like a meteor.

“Rush out!”

Diwuhen had already recklessly burned his blood essence. The other Empyreans were also pouring every drop of energy they had into the Ark of Hope’s array formation. Energy roiled and raged and the Ark of Hope violently trembled. It shot forwards like a beam of white light!

Woosh!

An incredible impulse force erupted. After being pushed forwards by this tremendous propulsion, the Ark of Hope turned into a divine beam of light that instantly passed a million miles through the void, shooting deep into the universe!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s force field blockade had already been broken in that explosion just now. For a time, the Ark of Hope was like a fish swimming through the sea, a bird flying through the air, an unstoppable force!

In terms of speed alone, the Ark of Hope surpassed the saint Empyreans by far. Even if it were the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign who had fused with Famine, because Famine’s body was too large it would be hard for him to pursue the Ark of Hope.

Moreover, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had already sustained heavy wounds!

In this battle he had experienced severe injuries! Ever since the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign became an extreme Empyrean, he had never once suffered wounds like he had today.

“Damn it!”

Space was torn apart and blood tentacles stretched out. Famine’s giant body forcefully pushed out from the collapsing spatial vortex.

Over half of its flesh had melted away. From afar, it resembled an apple that had many bites taken out of it, completely rotten.

Blood gushed out all over Famine’s body like numerous erupting volcanoes. The space around it was covered in red mist.

“Lin Ming, ancient remnant races, I will kill you all myself!”

Famine’s losses were deep and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s main body was also dripping with blood. Frightening wounds were left all over him and the flesh and blood there wriggled as if vicious beasts would pop out.

If he wanted to recover, he would need an extremely long period of time!

“Your Majesty Saint Sovereign!”

In front of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign many Empyreans fell to their knees. These Empyreans were all filled with fear. This fight had taken a sudden unfavorable turn, and they were all more or less related to this outcome. They were scared that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would blame them all for this in a fit of anger.

“Just what are you dawdling here for!? Chase them!!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s face darkened. He never imagined that in his first battle ever since he subdued Famine, facing a group of people that were in his eyes nothing more than ants, he would actually be reduced to such a state.

Not only had he been severely wounded but he had allowed Lin Ming and the ancient remnant races to escape.

This was a disastrous defeat!

The saint Empyreans all looked at each other in blank dismay. They had already seen the terrifying speed that the Ark of Hope had fled with after the force field blockade had been shattered. That wasn’t a speed they could overtake at all.

In the large universes of the 33 Heavens, once they lost the Ark of Hope and wanted to chase after them, that was no different from searching for a needle in a haystack. Wasn't that easier said than done?

The exception was if they were a True Divinity that could search a world with their divine sense. Only then would they have a chance of catching up.

But now, they didn't even know which direction to go in.

"Take this!"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign waved his arms and several crimson jade slips flew out into the hands of the peak Empyreans present. As they received these jade slips they were slightly stunned.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign gloomily said, "I have left behind my tracking mark on their spirit ship. If you use these jade slips you will naturally be able to find them. They are nothing but a completely exhausted group of people. Catch them and bring them back, I do not care who has to die in the process!"

During that final attack, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had already realized that it was unlikely for him to be able to hold the ancient races from escaping. Thus, after that attack, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn't try too hard to hold back the Ark of Hope but had instead left behind a tracking mark on the spirit ship!

Chapter 1916 – The Lurking Danger

Chapter 1916 – The Lurking Danger

…

…

…

A True Divinity tracking mark was extremely difficult to erase. At the Fallen God Mountain Range when Lin Ming was grasping the principles atop the shrine platforms there, he had been marked by the Great Brahmic God King. If it weren't for Sheng Mei arriving right on time then Lin Ming's situation would have been dire indeed.

The saint race Empyreans took these crimson jade slips and probed them with their divine sense. They could faintly feel the direction of the Ark of Hope in their minds. It was a small yet brilliant mote of light that was speeding away at an unbelievable speed, rapidly increasing the distance from them.

"There it is!"

The saint race Empyreans' eyes lit up. From just this alone, they dreaded the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. When the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was severely wounded and his spirit mark was being attacked by the Asura Primal God Cannon and was nearly erased, he had still managed to return a strike and leave a tracking mark on the Ark of Hope. This level of ability was extraordinary.

90% of the Empyreans rushed away, chasing after the Ark of Hope!

As for the remaining saint race powerhouses that were dispersed all over, they completely sealed away this part of the universe.

Soon, in that battlefield that had been filled with intense and brutal fighting, there was only the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign left behind with the wounded body of Famine.

In the dark starry space, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's complexion was dim; no one could know what he was thinking.

He remained silent for a long time, quietly assessing all the wounded areas within Famine's body. He frowned.

He had been injured far too heavily. He would need to return to recover from this and the healing period would be extremely long.

Slowly, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign stretched out his right hand. In his palm a black bead slowly revolved. Numerous mystical patterns ran across the surface of this bead, beating like blood vessels.

This was the Grandmist Spirit Bead. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign sucked in a deep breath of air. A thick smell of blood dissipated from the Grandmist Spirit Bead, entering the Saint Sovereign and Famine's body slowly.

He was healing his wounds with the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

The Grandmist Spirit Bead was able to absorb blood vitality and essence. After the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign obtained the Grandmist Spirit Bead he had spent a long period of time venturing all over to find flesh and blood essence to nourish the Grandmist Spirit Bead. Now, he released part of this flesh and blood essence in order to enhance the recovery speed of himself and Famine.

Famine itself already possessed an incredible life force and a mind-boggling defensive power. Even though it had suffered strike after devastating strike, it was only injured, not yet dead.

But correspondingly, once Famine was wounded, recovering from these wounds was difficult. The loss in life force was far too great. No matter what sort of heavenly materials were tossed into Famine, it was like throwing a grain of rice into a field; there just wasn't any noticeable effect.

So even with the Grandmist Spirit Bead it would be a monumental task for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign to completely restore Famine.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign constantly absorbed flesh and blood essence from the Grandmist Spirit Bead. This process continued for two hours.

After that, the light from the Grandmist Spirit Bead became increasingly dense and bright as it surrounded the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's main body. Then, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign separated himself from Famine and flew into the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

After that, the bead slowly sank into Famine's body, burying itself deep within the monster's flesh.

The Grandmist Spirit Bead sank deeper and deeper, falling inwards for over a thousand miles until it reached the center of Famine's body where it soaked itself in a massive pond of blood.

This was the center of Famine. It was an area similar to a giant heart. Every time it beat, the sound was like colliding planets, bass enough to cause space to shake.

The Grandmist Spirit Bead was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's secret escape route. Although he seemed like an unparalleled existence in the world, undefeatable by anyone, the truth was that there were existences within the 33 Heavens that could threaten his life.

For instance… the Soul Emperor!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and the Soul Emperor had formed a devil's contract with each other. For a long period of time, neither party would aggress against the other.

But the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would never believe any contract. He hid himself in the Grandmist Spirit Bead and used it to protect himself, only exposing Famine's body on the outside.

During the healing period he would be extremely frail and weak. If a peak powerhouse of the 33 Heavens wanted to take this chance to strike out against him they would first need to break open Famine's body and obtain the Grandmist Spirit Bead in order to find the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's true body.

If this were to occur then the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign could detonate all the life force energy within Famine's body. The might from such an action could be imagined. If this were to happen, even a True Divinity would instantly perish.

Rumble rumble rumble!

After the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign sank into Famine's body, a massive black vortex appeared beneath it. Then, Famine's massive body slowly fell into this vortex, sinking into the dark chaos before it vanished from sight.

Following that, space restored itself and Famine completely disappeared. Spatial ripples spread out before calming down, as if nothing had happened here. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had taken Famine and vanished together.

....

Meanwhile, deep in space, a white spirit ship was rapidly racing along!

The Ark of Hope had escaped into the vastness of space and had activated the great void shift. Every use of the great void shift crossed a billion trillion miles, spanning innumerable celestial bodies as it raced through the universe!

Within the Ark of Hope, Diwuhen and To Bagui had assumed command. They had taken over the position of the old God Sovereign and were managing the escape.

Now, the two of them had become the pillars of everyone's minds and hearts.

In that previous great battle they had lost the leaders of their two greatest ancient races. Not just that, but numerous respected elders and legendary figures had sacrificed themselves for the common good.

Even so, none of them had time to mope over the past. They were still being hunted and the dangers had yet to end…

The spirit ship's atmosphere was tense and solemn.

For all these years the martial artists of the ancient remnant races had gone on war campaigns without end and were used to their friends and companions dying. Martial artists may stand arrogantly above all of existence, wielding everything in the universe and defying the will of the heavens, but the truth was that once they died they often didn't even have bones left over. There would be nothing left of them but ash and smoke that faded away in the world.

"Everyone, take this chance to restore your wounds as much as possible!" Diwuhen loudly proclaimed.

Once the Ark of Hope was able to fly away at full speed, the amount of energy it used would be far less. Now, there was less than 10% remaining in the Ark of Hope's energy reserves. While it wasn't enough to operate the protective shield, it was sufficient to fly to the Divine Realm.

The Empyreans all swallowed down pills and sat in meditation.

But at this time, Lin Ming's expression was still stern. He thought for a moment and then said, "Everyone… I have a foreboding feeling…"

"Mm?"

Many people looked towards in Ming. These casual words had no reasoning behind them, but was only a simple foreboding feeling that many people felt all the time. It normally shouldn't have been enough to arouse anyone's interest, but since the one speaking was Lin Ming, that was a completely different scenario.

"What is it?"

Smokeless stopped her meditation and looked to Lin Ming. She had consumed far too much strength and her face was paper white, making one feel pity for her.

"I can't say for certain, but I feel that no matter how many times we activated great void shifts, we still never left the perception range of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign..."

Lin Ming's words caused the martial artists present to be stunned. They all glanced at each, looks of fear and unease on their faces.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was far too terrifying an existence, one that they found hard to summon the courage to fight against. If it was true that they still hadn't escaped the scope of his detection, how could they not be scared?

"Why do you have this feeling? A True Divinity's divine sense can search a universe, but the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign has been severely injured so he shouldn't have this ability..."

To Bagui's complexion was ugly. Someone like the Great Brahmic God King could use his great supernatural power to search the world but doing so required an incredible amount of energy. For the current Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, doing this would be difficult to accomplish.

Lin Ming continued, "When I used the Asura Primal God Cannon to strike at the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's spirit mark, I became familiar with his soul force."

What he said was a half-truth. When Lin Ming had opened the Daevic Eye Dao Palace to use the Magic Cube to capture the location of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's spirit mark in Famine, he had been able to feel the unique soul signature of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. So, even if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's divine sense was mixed into many others, Lin Ming could still pick it out.

Now, he felt a strange mental strength linger around them. It was extremely weak, but hadn't left…

If it wasn't for the Magic Cube and Daevic Eye Dao Palace, Lin Ming would never have sensed this.

"Is that so…"

Diwuhen took a deep breath. He could feel the situation devolving further and further. "If we must go to the Divine Realm then we must pass through one of the saints' Heavens. If we really have been locked on by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, then our journey will be bitter indeed…"

If they followed the original plan, then the ancient remnant races would use the Asura Decree obtained from the Asura forbidden land to cross the God Lamenting Wall and directly enter the Divine Realm.

Such a journey was short, but unfortunately, although this special Asura Decree could pierce through the God Lamenting Wall, it still required a peak Empyrean to consume an enormous amount of energy to activate. The many peak Empyreans on the Ark of Hope had already pushed themselves to the point of exhaustion. If they didn't rest to restore their strength it would be impossible for them to activate the Asura Decree.

So, they could only take the risks and pass through one of the saint's Heavens!

Chapter 1917 – Return (A)

Chapter 1917 – Return (A)

…

…

…

The Primeval Universe was one of the 33 Heavens. It was an incomparably vast space, but the Ark of Hope only used several days to quickly reach its end.

As long as they could pass through the God Lamenting Wall here, the other side would be one of the saints' universes.

Currently, the ancient remnant races were racing against death. This was because even if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had managed to lock onto their position, it would still take time to pass on the information.

As long as the ancient remnant races could arrive at the Divine Realm before the armies of the saints intercepted them, then it would be their victory.

"Break through!"

Diwuhen ordered without hesitation. Within the void, the Ark of Hope accelerated without end, turning into a beam of divine light that crossed millions of miles instantly, directly impacting into the God Lamenting Wall.

Because of the great calamity from 3.6 billion years ago, the God Lamenting Wall separating the Primeval Universe and the saints' universe had become extremely weak, nearly disappearing. If a peak empyrean were to strike it, piercing a hole through the God Lamenting Wall wouldn't be difficult at all.

And the Ark of Hope's full speed impact was even beyond the all-out strike of a peak Empyrean.

Woosh!

The Ark of Hope collided with the God of Lamenting. It was like an arrow shooting into an elastic curtain. The God Lamenting Wall stretched forwards, forming a massive cone on the other side.

The Ark of Hope quickly slowed down. The God Lamenting Wall violently shook. Finally, the wall tore open and the Ark of Hope succeeded in passing into the saints' universe from the Primeval Universe.

The moment that they passed through the God Lamenting Wall, the ancient race powerhouses all felt their hearts gripped and went on full alert. They were afraid that behind the God Lamenting Wall, all that awaited them was the trap of the saint race.

But at this time, in this unknown saint race universe, all that existed was quiet space. Stars shined in the far off distance without the shadow of anyone present.

Everything was peaceful to the point of being eerie.

A restless feeling swelled within Diwuhen's heart. But now was not the time to hesitate. He loudly proclaimed, "Full speed ahead!"

The primal god race was currently a worn out force filled with nothing but tired soldiers. But, the Ark of Hope didn't slow down in the least. It passed through space, rapidly activating the great void shift.

Time and time again, the Ark of Hope crossed through this saint race universe.

The ancient races had a magnificent and gloriously long history. They possessed a star chart of the 33 Heavens, a grand map that broadly described the universes of the 33 Heavens.

It also marked where the universes of the 33 Heavens connected with each other and the main races that dwelled within them.

Although this star chart's information was vague, it had an inestimable function for this moment. It could show them the general direction to take, otherwise the ancient races wouldn't know just where to go to find the Divine Realm.

To Bagui looked at the star chart and said, "The universe we're at is called Saint Strife Heaven. Its size is 70% that of the Primeval Universe and within the saints' seven Heavens, it is one with a relatively low number of masters and is comparatively lacking in resources. According to what we know, this Saint Strife Heaven is one of the safer Heavens and there are no True Divinities here. There is a chance we can simply pass directly through and safely arrive at the Divine Realm!"

Even for a True Divinity, wanting to travel through the universe to catch up would require time. Even if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wanted to send out news of their arrival it would still require time. Their successful escape wasn't a hopeless prospect by any means.

Moreover, according to information obtained by the primal god race, the True Divinities of the saint race were in a heated struggle against each other. This was because the situation involved ownership of all the resources within the Primeval Realm Ruins.

Amongst the saint race True Divinities, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was the strongest. He had established the largest influence of the saint race and became the Saint Sovereign of the saint race, commanding all seven Heavens of the saints. He wrested away almost 80% of the saint race's total resources, including the Primeval Realm Ruins and the Grandmist Spirit Bead. Finally, he even managed to subdue Famine's body, making that soulless body into his avatar.

All advantages were taken by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

In this situation, the other True Divinities were certainly discontent.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had launched a great war focused on the primal god race. This war was to plunder the resources of the primeval ruins, and most of these resources would be taken by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

As for the war against the Divine Realm, this was also because of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's ambitions. The other saint race True Divinities weren't necessarily willing to serve as the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's spear.

Amongst all the bad news, this was the only piece of good news.

As they continued passing through space, Diwuhen looked at the star chart, beads of sweat seeping out of his forehead.

"Three more great void shifts and we should arrive at the God Lamenting Wall beside the Divine Realm. There we will be able to pass through the God Lamenting Wall and enter the Divine Realm!"

Diwuhen said. But as he spoke his complexion suddenly changed. In that moment he could feel the Ark of Hope suddenly slow down as if it had fallen into a swamp!

"What's happening!?" To Bagui's complexion also changed. He could feel that the Ark of Hope had entered a giant force field. The surrounding space was sealed!

Bang!

The grand hall housing the Ark of Hope's array formation suddenly shook like an earthquake passed through it. The martial artists managing the array formation were shaken off their positions.

Everyone was left panic-stricken. They looked out the porthole to see dozens of spirit ships before them. They had already been waiting there and had activated their array formations!

The Ark of Hope was a little fly that had landed on a spider's web, unable to move!

And to create an array formation that could intercept the Ark of Hope, the strength of their opponents could be imagined!

"Saint race spirit ships!"

Diwuhen sucked in a breath of cold air. They had been ambushed!

"How could they be so quick!?"

A roaring bone race Empyrean clenched his fists, his voice filled with unwillingness. They were already so close to the Divine Realm! Just a little bit more and they would have been able to flee the Saint Strife Heaven. But now, all of their plans had fallen short!

"From the time that we escaped until now, only several days have passed. During the days we spent traveling through two universes of the 33 Heavens, we did so entirely within the Ark of Hope; it would be impossible for anyone to be faster than us. And logically speaking, even if our location was traced there shouldn't have been anyone here who could have caught up and still had enough time to lay down these array formations... these people should have been transferred here from the Divine Realm..."

In a quiet corner, Lin Ming suddenly spoke up. Although his voice was calm and composed, his words couldn't hide their tinge of weakness. In that battle against the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, Lin Ming had used up far too much energy. He had almost combusted his soul and had been forced to overdraw his mind and soul force.

"Transferred from the Divine Realm, huh..."

To Bagui muttered out loud. Lin Ming's explanation was the most reasonable possibility. The saint races controlled seven Heavens, but in the end they still relied on Empyrean level spirit ships to travel. If they wanted to cross through a universe of the 33 Heavens, it would still require one or two months. In a short several days, wanting to summon so many martial artists to this area of a universe was easier said than done, much less not all Empyreans were commanded by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

However, if the martial artists that were sent to the Divine Realm were ordered to return and intercept the Ark of Hope, then that would be far easier.

"Ancient remnant races, I've been waiting for you for far too long!"

In the void, a loud and grand voice echoed outwards. A red-robed middle aged man slowly flew out from the middle of the saint race forces.

A faint smile hung on his face and he wore battle armor over his robes. His cultivation was at the peak Empyrean realm.

His eyes were like lightning. He casually swept over the Ark of Hope's array formation and could see that its energy reserves were now down to 5%!

Although this was still a Beyond Divinity level spirit treasure, it was impossible for its true potential to be displayed.

"The background of these ancient remnant races is indeed deep. To think they could get their hands on such a supreme treasure. What a pity for them, but all of this will belong to the saints..."

The armored man diabolically grinned. Killing the ancient races and capturing Lin Ming alive, this would be a monumental merit. His fame and prestige amongst the saints would skyrocket and he would also obtain rich rewards from the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

At this time, behind the middle-aged man, space began to distort with ripples.

One after another, saint race Empyreans appeared, their figures slowly appearing as they broke through space.

Their cultivations were amazing and their blood vitality was overwhelming. As they stood in space they were like planets blocking the world. Among them there were several individuals that emanated an aura as deep as an abyss, as if they were unfathomable beings.

These were also peak Empyreans, not much worse than the armored Empyrean who first appeared.

The ancient race powerhouses within the Ark of Hope all had grim expressions. They could feel a great crisis and pressure pushing down on them!

They had fled the tiger's den just to enter the wolf's lair!

And it just so happened that they had used up nearly all of their strength in order to escape the Primeval Universe. Moreover, they only had two peak Empyreans left in To Bagui and Diwuhen. What capital did they have to fight with these saint Empyreans in front of them?

"Must the heavens destroy my people?"

Diwuhen clenched his fists so hard that his hands shivered. The old God Sovereign had sacrificed himself, handing the future of their people to him.

But… in the end, this… was all that resulted…

"Damn!"

Diwuhen's nails dug so deep into his palms that blood began dripping.

At this time, the ancient race Empyreans began moving forwards, standing behind Diwuhen.

They faced the porthole and saw this force of saint Empyreans that was ten times stronger and had been biding their time here. For a time, a tragic desolateness spread in their hearts.

They were well aware that in this following battle, it was likely they would all be annihilated!

Chapter 1918 – Return (B)

Chapter 1918 – Return (B)

…

…

…

“Seal the array and block them in, don’t give them a single crevice to escape from!”

In space, dozens of saint Empyreans assembled together. In addition there were many ordinary World Kings and Great World Kings. These World Kings and even more Holy Lords gathered on spirit ships that were able to combine all of their strength. They brought their energies together to reinforce the massive array net, sealing off all directions of escape for the Ark of Hope.

With its nearly depleted energy reserves, the Ark of Hope simply didn’t have any chances of breaking through.

In the Ark of Hope, all of the ancient race Empyreans were solemn and quiet. In the face of death, no one felt fear. Instead, they silently waited for the final great battle.

“The Asura Primal God Cannon, can we still use it?”

Diwuhen looked at Lin Ming. As he saw Lin Ming’s pale face, Diwuhen couldn’t bear to say these words. He knew that Lin Ming had consumed far too much strength.

Lin Ming fell deep in thought. To open the Asura Primal God Cannon with the ancient race Empyreans in their current conditions as well as using the remaining energy reserves of the Ark of Hope, he feared that even if he recklessly burned his soul he still wouldn’t be able to activate it.

Even if they somehow managed to operate the god cannon, the blast would only be able to kill several saint race Empyreans; it wouldn't be able to change the momentum of the battle.

They had been forced into a dead end.

Looking out of the porthole, every inch of Lin Ming's flesh and blood and bones shivered in pain, on the verge of collapse.

In the Primeval Universe, he had banded together with the numerous ancient race powerhouses, undergoing many hardships together. They had sacrificed themselves in order to heavily wound the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and find a chance of salvation somewhere in the dark. Yet, was everything going to end here?

Just a single step away!

If they could return to the Divine Realm they would be able to find humanity, find life!

"I understand." Diwuhen grimly nodded. "If that's the case, there's nothing else to say.

"Perhaps we cannot protect the bloodlines of the ancient remnant races, but at the least we can protect our glory.

"Perhaps we cannot change the flow of history, but at the least we will use our blood to carve our names in the river of history!"

As Diwuhen spoke, a blazing fighting spirit lit up in the hearts of the ancient race martial artists.

"Us ancient race martial artists, since when did we fear death!?"

"I would rather die with honor than live on dishonorably!"

The ancient race martial artists all strengthened their resolves. And at this time, outside of the Ark of Hope the saint race army also began to move.

“Everyone, this battle is of the utmost importance. Even if success is assured, we cannot underestimate them. Attack together and make sure not a single one of them escapes!”

The one speaking was a saint Empyrean wearing a gold crown. His expression was cold and ruthless, his eyes shining with killing intent.

“Activate the grand array and destroy that spirit ship’s protective shield!” The red-robed saint Empyrean waved his hand. He was the high commander of the saint race army assigned to invade the Divine Realm. The military seal was in his possession and his title was the Saint General, given supreme authority over this army!

He had long received a warning from the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. This pack of powerhouses that had fled the Primeval Universe didn’t have much strength left; they would collapse at the first blow. Their only hope was that mysterious spirit ship.

But at this moment the spirit ship’s protective shield was nearly nonexistent. It wouldn’t be able to last much longer.

As the red-robed saint Empyrean’s voice fell, several peak Empyreans suddenly took the initiative, their bodies becoming dim.

Divine lights from all sorts of astral essence surged within the void, rapidly expanding into a sea of gold. In an instant, all of the heaven and earth origin energy in the surrounding space for millions of miles was swallowed up.

The saint race Empyreans’ attacks were as dazzling as stars. Countless star-like runes came smashing downwards, colliding with the Ark of Hope.

In that heaven-shaking explosion, the Ark of Hope was like a tiny boat in a raging storm, sent tumbling around in the waves!

Within the Ark of Hope, the collision from the energy palm strikes of the saint Empyreans caused everyone within to stumble about. Several exhausted Empyreans nearly toppled over.

Lin Ming violently shook, only managing to stabilize himself after some time.

The several Empyreans driving the Ark of Hope were deathly pale. They were all anxious as they stared at the protective shield outside the spirit ship. That strike just now was the joint attack of dozens of Empyreans, and the power behind it approached that of a True Divinity. The Ark of Hope’s protective shield wouldn’t be able to withstand several more strikes.

After their protective shield shattered, they would have to engage the saint race Empyreans in a battle to the death!

“If we have any remaining god decrees then use them all!” Diwuhen decisively said as he looked towards the starry space outside.

The ancient race’s Asura Decrees and upper True Divinity god decrees had all been used up. All that remained were relatively ordinary god decrees. Although they were weaker, they were now the last attack methods the ancient races had.

Rumble rumble rumble!

In the void, the gold crown saint Empyrean flourished his hands. A wave of attacks roiled towards the Ark of Hope, smashing into it.

And beside him, the Saint General moved his hands in a circle, gathering an incredibly vast amount of strength. Large arcs of electricity appeared like thunder dragons.

It was clear that out of all the saint Empyreans present, these two were the strongest!

Beneath the terrifying barrage of attacks from these two people, the Ark of Hope’s energy reserves began to run dry.

Further out in space, numerous saint Empyreans coldly sneered, their contemptuous eyes locked onto the Ark of Hope.

The moment that the Ark of Hope's protective shield shattered they could directly break into the spirit ship and slaughter the ancient race martial artists within.

But at this time, a strange humming sound rang through the air.

An overwhelming light flowed through space like a river of mercury, covering the space before them.

This light contained an incredibly spiritual divine aura. It shook the void, causing the heart to shake.

As it appeared, massive tracts of space were directly pierced through. It hurtled forwards like a tsunami, annihilating everything in its path.

"Mm!?"

Feeling this heart-racing divine aura, the red-robed Empyrean and the gold crown Empyrean both rapidly drew back.

But, there was still a saint Empyrean that couldn't dodge in time and was engulfed by this golden light!

"Nayou!"

The gold crown Empyrean shouted out. The Empyrean who was swallowed by that light was his friend. But now that he wasn't able to escape in time, his body had disintegrated away without even his bones remaining!

"Damnit!" The gold crown Empyrean's eyes lit up with a fierce murderous intent. "God decree?"

These Empyreans had already obtained information about the ancient remnant races. They knew that the god decrees were left behind by True Divinities of the past, and their might was immeasurable. Even an Empyrean wouldn't be able to withstand them!

"Humph, spread out! I want to see just how many god decrees you have…"

The red-robed saint narrowed his eyes as he issued this order. In any case, these refugees from the Primeval Universe were already caged into the inescapable array formation net. No matter what they tried they wouldn't be able to escape.

And since those within the Ark of Hope still had god decrees, it would be safer to just be a bit more careful and slowly consume them.

At this time, the atmosphere within the Ark of Hope was dignified. The remaining god decrees were relatively weak and there were currently only four remaining. That single strike just now used up two other god decrees and yet they only managed to kill a middle Empyrean. There just wasn't any meaning to that.

And if the saint army were to scatter then the effects of the god decrees would diminish even more. Using them again would be a waste.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Outside the spirit ship, the terrifying barrage rung against their protective shield like the merciless knell of a death god. Many array formation runes had collapsed and broken apart beneath the waves of impact.

The ancient race Empyreans could already hear the sound of the protective shield breaking apart.

Their hearts tightened. This was because they knew that the time to rush outside and kill until they themselves were killed was finally about to arrive.

Diwuhen and To Bagui each grasped two of the remaining four god decrees. They locked onto a target – the red-robed Empyrean, the Saint General!

They knew that in this situation, death was already certain. But what they wanted to do in the final moments before their deaths was to burn away their lives and detonate the god decrees, dragging this red-robed Saint General down to hell with them!

If they could kill the red-robed Saint General then that would also be an attack on the saints.

Bang!

In the ongoing explosions, Diwuhen could hear the sound of the protective barrier breaking apart. He took a deep breath and tightly gripped his weapon. He was ready to hurtle into space and burn away every ounce of his life.

But at this moment, behind Diwuhen, Lin Ming suddenly felt his mind shake. He looked outside the porthole with disbelief in his eyes.

“Wait… wait!”

Lin Ming suddenly shouted. Many ancient race Empyreans were startled; they didn’t know just what Lin Ming had discovered.

“What is it?”

Diwuhen and To Bagui followed Lin Ming’s gaze. But outside the porthole all they could see was the vast deepness of space and nothing else.

They were puzzled. They were all looking at the same area, but did Lin Ming see some favorable turn for them?

“Someone is coming!”

Lin Ming’s complexion changed again and again, his eyes flickering with uncertainty.

His senses could not compare with Diwuhen’s or To Bagui’s, but in that moment he had heard a voice that no one else could. This voice had come from Xian Moxian and the Thousand Mile Heartlink!

Xiao Moxian had come!

Not just that, but there was also the martial artists of humanity! However… just how had they chosen this time to arrive?

Chapter 1919 – Reunion

Chapter 1919 – Reunion

…

…

…

Bang!

After being struck by the joint attack of the saint Empyreans, the Ark of Hope was sent tumbling away. The protective shield covering the ship had been cracked open like an eggshell, with alarming fissures in the runes.

Some of the energy from the saint Empyreans' attacks was already able to pierce through the protective shield and crash into the Ark of Hope.

"Lin Ming, who did you say is coming?"

Diwuhen grabbed Lin Ming's shoulder. In such a critical situation he didn't know whether the people Lin Ming spoke of were friends or enemies.

"The Divine Realm… human martial artists!"

Lin Ming said. At this time, within his mind, the Thousand Mile Heartlink was still reverberating with Xiao Moxian's worried voice.

"Divine Realm! Humans!"

The ancient race powerhouses were stunned upon hearing this. The Divine Realm was separated from the Primeval Universe by another Heaven. Even if the great calamity descended and the God Lamenting Wall became extremely weak, it would be difficult for their races to meet. Even so, the two races had just the tiniest connection between them.

Empyrean Primordius was a human and Heavenly Empress Xuanqing had died in the Divine Realm.

Humanity was once a peak race of the 33 Heavens, but after the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago their inheritances had been severed and their True Divinities had died out. Even most of their Empyreans perished in the conflict and they had become a waning race.

Just what would humanity of the present era be like?

As the ancient race martial artists were stunned, there was a loud detonation as the Ark of Hope's protective shield finally shattered into pieces!

In the midst of the terrifying attack, a beam of energy shot out, causing brilliant fireworks to light up the dark space!

"It's finally broken, heh!"

The gold crowned Empyrean and the Saint General both chuckled. They used their techniques, about to fatally strike down the many martial artists within the Ark of Hope. But at this time, Diwuhen threw out two god decrees without a hint of hesitation!

Woosh!

The god decrees cut through space like a divine arrow, exploding in the cosmos. They formed a dreadful shockwave that swept over a million miles of space.

The gold crown Empyrean savagely grinned.

"Using the same old tricks to delay for time, but you still won't be able to change your fate of annihilation!"

The gold crown Empyrean avoided the god decrees' energy storm and was about to attack once more. But at this time his complexion changed. He turned to see that behind him, just 10,000 miles away, ripple-like distortions began to appear in the pitch black space…

Within these ripples an exquisite white building slowly surfaced. This was a palace!

This white jade palace seemed insignificant compared to the massive spatial ripples around it, like a leaf of jade floating in the water.

But as the gold crown Empyrean looked at this white jade palace he felt something bizarre and weird. Looking at this palace, he felt as if all of existence were unreal and this palace was slowly fluttering towards him from some distant dream.

And following that, right behind this palace, spirit ships began to rush out en masse. These spirit ships were all massive constructions, each one emitting a vast and solemn atmosphere!

And amidst these spirit ships there was a golden great buddha!

This golden great buddha sat upon a lotus throne, its body a thousand miles long, stabilizing the surrounding void. Rays of buddhic light lingered around it, giving it a solemn and hallowed atmosphere. Buddhist chants hummed in the air, ignoring distances of space to resound in the ears of all like a great bell enlightening the mind, so loud that even the deaf could hear it!

Like this, the great buddha flew forwards in space like a giant sun, dazzling to the eyes.

"Humanity!?"

The high commander of the saint race's Divine Realm invasion force, the red-robed Saint General, narrowed his eye as he saw those spirit ships. After preparing for war in the Divine Realm for so many years he certainly recognized the influences of humanity.

The white jade palace originated from Divine Dream Heavenly Palace. As for the golden great buddha, it was from the most glorious and storied human Empyrean Holy Land – Mount Potala. This was Mount Potala's supreme treasure for crossing through space!

"Humanity… these are human martial artists?"

Diwuhen, To Bagui, and the many other ancient race Empyreans had looks of surprise and disbelief twining together on their faces as they saw the forces of humanity arrive.

They had heard that humanity had long been on the decline. In the minds of the primal god race, the entire Divine Realm might be far more populous than the Primeval Universe, but the number of genuine masters probably wasn't much higher. Thus, as they saw this sight before them today, all of them were filled with incredulity.

Whether it was that white jade palace or that golden great buddha, both gave off immeasurably deep feelings.

From a misty sea of white light around the white jade palace, a white-clothed woman stepped forth from the void. Millions of hazy white silk ribbons hung from her body, enveloping her in a faint fog. She was a genius of peerless talent and grace.

Looking at her was like looking at a goddess from a dream. Even though it was difficult to see her appearance, she actually gave off an inexplicable feeling, as if there was always a small voice in one's head informing a person that she was beautiful to the extreme.

Her steps were calm and measured. She held a ribbon in her hand, as if she weren't here to slaughter her enemies but simply taking a leisurely walk through the park, enjoying the sights.

Meanwhile, in the two eyes of the great golden buddha, there were two men in kasyas respectively sitting in the right eye and left eye.

The one in the right eye was an enlightened old monk. He held a monk’s staff, a khakkhara, in his hands, set horizontally above his lap. His eyes were closed as sutras were prayed from between his lips.

And in the left eye was a young monk. His face was sharp and polished. He was an incredibly handsome individual and he wore a crown atop his head. His eyes were as bright as the moon and his lips were red like cinnabar.

This young man wearing the kasya was one of humanity’s most talented Empyreans – Emperor Shakya!

And behind the great golden buddha was a magnificently built bright red divine warship. Atop the bow of this warship, a tall old man wielding a great sword arrogantly stood there. He wore red robes and his aura was aggressive and unfathomably deep.

In the negotiations between the saints and humanity, Lin Ming had once casually acquainted himself with this red-robed old man. He was a peak human Empyrean – Skyrend Godlord!

The four human Empyreans lined up, creating an array in the void. They formed a wall of energy that emitted a dreadful pressure, shocking the cosmos!

Even though both sides possessed peak Empyreans, the momentum of the saints was actually suppressed.

In particular, Divine Dream and Emperor Shakya. One yin, one yang, the two of them together nearly reached the realm of True Divinity!

“Empyrean Divine Dream, Senior Emperor Shakya, Great Limitless Buddha, Skyrend Godlord!”

As Lin Ming saw these four people he was ecstatic!

He had left the Divine Realm for dozens of years and had experienced hurdles and dangers, disregarding his own safety, risking his life and suffering countless hardships all the while. He had already felt constrained for a long time.

Now, when he was alone and without help, he saw the Empyreans of humanity arrive just in time!

“They are… humanity’s Empyreans?”

Diwuhen was shocked as he saw these people, especially Divine Dream and Emperor Shakya! In this great calamity the saints’ momentum had been overwhelming and unstoppable as they went to war in all directions, forcing other races to retreat again and again in defeat.

Some held the belief that the ancient remnant races were in the twilight of their years, soon to perish, and humanity’s destiny had already been exhausted. Although Diwuhen and To Bagui didn’t wish to acknowledge this, they also faintly had this idea in their hearts. But as they saw the sight before them, they actually discovered that humanity possessed mind-boggling peerless geniuses.

For contrast, even if the number one genius of the ancient remnant races, Smokeless, were to grow up, even she wouldn’t compare to Divine Dream and Emperor Shakya.

“Big Brother Lin!”

Lin Ming felt his breath leave him the moment he heard this familiar voice. He followed it to see that not too far behind Empyrean Divine Dream there was a young woman dressed in black. She was slim and elegant with skin as bright as porcelain. Her body was covered in a faint black fog and in the space around her, heaven and earth origin energy and starlight gathered, lingering about her.

The black-clothed woman’s belly was slightly raised. Exuding from it was a potent yet small life force. Even from such a distance, Lin Ming could feel that he shared the same roots as this life force.

This black-clothed woman was Xiao Moxian! Currently she was looking towards the Ark of Hope with worry on her face.

As for Lin Ming's flesh and blood growing within her stomach, it had already been gestating for a long time. This was because for those of a God Beast bloodline, breeding a small life required a tremendously long period of time. But, once the child was born it would have a naturally gifted spiritual wisdom.

Lin Ming's gaze pierced through the Ark of Hope's porthole and looked right to Xiao Moxian.

Xiao Moxian couldn't see Lin Ming but she could clearly feel his existence.

For a time, all sorts of feelings swelled up within his heart. He felt that he owed Xiao Moxian far too much…

During this time Lin Ming was unable to show himself as they were surrounded by the saints.

"Xian'er, how did you know we were in a crisis?"

In the Ark of Hope, Lin Ming used the Thousand Mile Heartlink to speak to Xiao Moxian.

"A woman told us. She wore a black dress and was as ephemeral as fog. She showed us images of you struggling in the Primeval Universe. Although Empyrean Divine Dream was suspicious she still quickly gathered the human elites to race here. Luckily we managed to catch up in time…"

As Xian Moxian happily spoke, Lin Ming was stunned. A black-dressed woman as ephemeral as fog… could it be Soul Empress Sheng Mei?

Only she would know that he was bitterly engaged with the saints.

"Sheng Mei… she saved us?"

Lin Ming didn't know what to feel. There were too many riddles concerning Sheng Mei.

Lin Ming looked towards Empyrean Divine Dream once more. He knew that for Divine Dream to act according to such uncertain news and gather the elites of humanity to rush here was actually an incredibly great risk!

If this was a trap then there was a chance they could all be annihilated...

Even so, Empyrean Divine Dream had relied on her own instinct and judgment to make such a bold and decisive decision. And the reason she took such a risk was mostly to rescue Lin Ming!

Thinking of this, Lin Ming felt inexplicably moved. Empyrean Primordius, Heavenly Empress Xuanqing, the old God Sovereign, Divine Dream, even Empyrean Divine Seal from 3.6 billion years in the past, as well as the warriors of humanity and the ancient remnant races, all of these people were fighting beside him. He was not alone...

……

In the void, the red-robed Saint General stepped forwards. He looked at Empyrean Divine Dream and sneered, "Divine Dream... hehe! To think you would cross the God Lamenting Wall to challenge us. Are you planning to officially declare war with my saint race?"

Although the red-robed Saint General was the supreme commander of the saint race's Divine Realm invasion force, the truth was that they had never actually truly struck at the Divine Realm.

Almost a hundred years ago, the saints sent the Good Fortune Saint Son to Mount Potala. There, the many Empyreans established a contract stating that the battlefield would be limited to the Bright Luster World, and those at the Empyrean level wouldn't directly participate in the battles.

Humanity and the saints had existed in precarious peace.

But today, this temporary and false peace would be broken!

Let the curtains of the true war rise today!

Chapter 1920 – The Might of Divine Dream

Chapter 1920 – The Might of Divine Dream

…

…

…

“Hahaha!” Before Empyrean Divine Dream spoke, Skyrend Godlord was already wildly cackling. “Do you really think we’re cattle to be butchered by you? Do you think I wouldn’t kill off you saint dogs and wait for the pack of you to bite us instead? Today, none of you are leaving here!”

Skyrend Godlord was already enraged. For all these years he had been holding in his anger, his vexation growing more and more. The red-robed Saint General had caused innumerable troubles for him, constantly taunting him with the prospect of an all-out war, so how could he not be angry about this?

“You don’t think any of us are leaving? You sure like to shamelessly boast!” The several peak Empyreans of the saint army began to laugh.

“Since you all want to die a bit earlier then let me fulfill your wish. I’ve always wanted to experience your strength, in particular you, Divine Dream. I heard that you are a peerless talent of your era and are considered the spiritual leader of humanity. Then, let me see just what capital you have today!”

The red-robed Saint General licked his lips, his eyes filled with a plundering aggression as if he could pierce through the dense fog surrounding Divine Dream and see her appearance.

Facing such rude behavior, Empyrean Divine Dream simply stretched out her right hand. On the ends of her fingertips, tiny ice crystals seemed to gather, forming an ice lotus that quietly bloomed.

As this ice lotus appeared, a hazy and mystical atmosphere followed it, as if there was some vague sound from the heavens reverberating through the world.

From a single node, in an instant it swept through the world.

Space dimmed, becoming mystical. Hallucinogenic lights filled the world. A rainbow of light ripples spread out, dazzling the senses.

Divine dream space!

This whole space extended to infinity, seeming to contain some horrifying depth in its magnificence.

The red-robed Saint General frowned. He was directly enveloped in this space.

He was impressed. He was well aware that this woman across from him was considered the person closest to True Divinity within the human race. If it wasn't for the inheritance of the Divine Realm True Divinities being severed long ago, if it wasn't for the fact that she chose to take the extinct path of dual cultivating energy and divine, if she hadn't needed to rely on herself for all this time, then she might have already become a True Divinity!

The red-robed Saint General gripped his fists, explosive sounds echoing out from his joints. With loud crackles, his body grew larger and taller. Golden beams of light shot out from his pupils and he emitted waves of mystical strength. This was the saint race's bloodline body metamorphosis.

The red-robed Saint General didn't underestimate his opponent. From the start he gave it everything he had!

With his bloodline, after using body metamorphosis his golden eyes would be able to penetrate through all illusions. It was a top technique of the saint race.

In the middle of the divine dream space, countless celestial bodies floated about. Innumerable divine mountains hovered in space.

In the midst of that endless fog, every mountain had a ghost of Divine Dream sitting in meditation atop it. Every ghost emitted a vast pressure, the eyes like stars that aimed towards the red-robed Saint General.

Every ray of light transformed into God Beasts in space. They were covered with scales, possessing an ancient and distant will as they roared out loud, sweeping towards the red-robed Saint General.

These God Beasts and all other illusions were formed from the dream, but they were incredibly lifelike. They truly possessed the power of Empyreans and the strength of God Beasts.

Reality was a dream, dream was a reality.

Within the divine dream space force field, everything Empyrean Divine Dream thought of could turn into reality!

On the side of the humans, all martial artists watched with wide eyes. This was the first time they had seen Empyrean Divine Dream fight!

The god race had long heard of Divine Dream's fame, but as to just how strong she was, they didn't know.

Today, they would finally see it!

"An illusion attack?"

The Saint General coldly sneered. His golden eyes burst out with a golden light that could pierce through all. A trillion golden symbols smashed into the surrounding world, but in the blink of an eye they were all crushed by the infinite mystical strength surrounding everything.

His golden pupils that could see through all of existence actually couldn't see through anything in this world. His vision was completely sucked in by Divine Dream's incarnations and those God Beast illusions!

In an instant, the red-robed Saint General's complexion greatly changed.

"This… how is this possible!? Could this space be the real world and not an illusion!?"

The red-robed Saint General felt goosebumps rise all over his body. To transform the real world with but a thought, was that even possible?

Bang!

A dragon-shaped God Beast swept towards the red-robed Saint General. The sharp claws only gently grasped outwards to easily tear open the void, creating a whirlwind of death.

The red-robed Saint General tossed his head back and roared out loud. His fist was as hard as a star, possessing the momentum to crush apart planets. In a single breath he punched out countless fist phantoms, slaughtering the God Beasts around him!

Every fist strike caused a God Beast to suffer heavy wounds, or even be crushed.

These God Beasts were overall slightly weaker than a lower Empyrean, but their bodies were actually incredibly tough. As every God Beast broke apart, the red-robed Saint General was also struck in return, causing his blood to tumble!

Moreover, he soon realized that the shattered God Beasts were actually rapidly reforming, a continuous stream with no end!

The red-robed Saint General was consuming a considerable amount of strength. As for Empyrean Divine Dream, she was at the center of the divine dream space and hadn't even moved her fingers. Her eyes were slightly closed. A dim white holy light covered her, like falling snow. Her posture was as if she were leisurely standing around.

Empyrean Divine Dream seemed as if she hadn't used any strength at all. In fact, it looked as if this battle was not involved with her in any way, as if she had never attacked to begin with.

"This is her world, her battlefield… if I can't break apart this world then her strength will be endless. I will suffer certain defeat!"

The red-robed Saint General's heart shook, immediately believing he understood the basic mysteries behind this world.

To turn the dreamland into reality, this was the so-called divine dream space, Divine Dream's unique ability!

As long as they were within the divine dream space then Divine Dream stood in an invincible position!

"Your thoughts aren't wrong…"

Empyrean Divine Dream suddenly said. With a single glance she had been able to see through the red-robed Saint General's heart. Her awe-inspiring voice contained a thick killing intent.

The red-robed Saint General turned cold; how was this possible!?

They were both peak Empyreans, so how could Divine Dream know what thoughts were in his mind?

As he looked at Empyrean Divine Dream, all of his confidence faded away.

Even his thoughts had been seen through. This was too terrifying!

“What you think of in your heart is your dream. In my divine dream space, all your dreams are open before me. There are no secrets you can keep…”

Empyrean Divine Dream icily said, seeming as if she could drown the red-robed Saint General in ice.

Divine dream space. As its name suggested it was a boundless dreamland and originally possessed an unfathomable effect on the mind.

The red-robed Saint General was placed within the divine dream space. In his shock his mind had fallen to illusion and thus it was naturally easy for Empyrean Divine Dream to pry into his thoughts.

This was a terrifying force field!

Facing Empyrean Divine Dream, the red-robed Saint General felt tiny and exposed, like a naked baby.

If even his thoughts were seen through, how could he fight?

“Is she really only an Empyrean?”

The red-robed Saint General immediately thought, his heart beginning to waver.

And at this time Empyrean Divine Dream naturally detected the flaw in the red-robed Saint General’s mind. She waved her hand and the entire divine dream space rapidly darkened, all light vanishing.

Or, it was more accurate to say that everything vanished, turning into dim chaos.

“Suppress!”

A single word seemed to transmit from boundless celestial temples.

Infinite strength contracted, instantly turning into a massive star-sized 'suppress' character in the divine dream space.

With a loud rumble, even space and time seemed suppressed by this symbol.

When the red-robed Saint General saw this symbol, he felt as if the force of innumerable stars was pressing down on his limbs with an amazing force, firmly keeping him locked down.

He couldn't move!

Realizing something was wrong with his body, the red-robed Saint General felt the coming of an inexplicable horror.

Empyrean Divine Dream's Laws suppressed not his body, but his soul and mind, making him unable to move. If he were to be struck by that 'suppress' symbol which gathered all of the power within the divine dream space, then it was likely he would disintegrate to nothing, with even his soul destroyed!

"Damn! Move for me!"

The red-robed Saint General howled. He grit his teeth and burnt his blood essence!

Every wisp of blood essence pierced through the void, resonating with the world. It was like countless divine wheels spinning around and roaring, wanting to crush apart the mystical strength all around them.

As he burned his blood essence, the red-robed Saint General's formidable strength erupted to its limits. The mystical strength binding him down began to shake and loosen!

Ka ka ka!

The seal was nearly demolished by the red-robed Saint General!

Without a change of expression, without even opening her eyes, Empyrean Divine Dream floated forwards, a lofty beauty that emitted a holy brilliance.

A jade white finger slowly stretched out, casually drawing another ‘suppress’ character in the void!

This ‘suppress’ character rapidly expanded in space, quickly turning into another star-sized symbol that came pressing down on the Saint General.

Bang!

The void shook. The ‘suppress’ character crashed onto the red-robed Saint General’s body. The universe seemed to collapse as everything fell into endless darkness.

The red-robed Saint General seemed to be struck by millions of planets, all of them colliding with him. His bones shattered and his flesh burned. He exhausted all of his strength to stop this ‘suppress’ character.

“I am not willing! How can I be killed by the likes of you in a place like this!!”

The Saint General screamed, his eyes frightening. Boundless and majestic golden energy gushed out from his pores. Like countless small golden dragons roaring, the erupting aura shocked the heart.

He knew that if he really fell into the endless darkness behind him and the world contracted onto him, he would die without a grave.

But no matter how hard he struggled he couldn’t rid himself of the ‘suppress’ character atop his head.

This simple symbol contained an inexhaustible strength that left one drowning in hopelessness.

Then at this time – rumble rumble rumble!

A crazy power surged forth and the divine dream space shivered. From the saint race army, the golden crown Empyrean had attacked.

The flesh of his right hand had turned into a blood red lance that pierced through the void.

This lance was 10,000 feet long and incredibly sharp and dense, impossible to withstand. A boundless blood vitality flooded out in all directions, so potent that it even squeezed out the mystical strength exuded by the stars.

He came from one of the special clans within the saint race. His supernatural bloodline power was this blood red lance. It was known as the strongest lance amongst the saints, able to penetrate everything.

He watched as the red-robed Saint General was soon to be defeated by Divine Dream and had no choice but to help.

When martial artists dueled, others butting their way in or launching sneak attacks wasn't honorable at all. But at this time how could he care about such things?

But as the golden crown Empyrean attacked, his eyes as he looked at Empyrean Divine Dream were filled with bewilderment. Was she an Empyrean or a True Divinity?

Chapter 1921 – Emperor Shakya

Chapter 1921 – Emperor Shakya

…

…

…

Weng weng weng!

The blood red spear was unstoppable. It tore through the cosmos. During a bitter battle between peak Empyreans, another peak Empyrean had launched a sneak attack!

Ca!

The divine dream space was torn open. The blood red spear pierced in, thrusting straight towards the point between Empyrean Divine Dream's eyebrows!

The golden crown Empyrean was crimson with effort; he attacked without holding anything back!

Seeing the blood red spear shoot towards her, Empyrean Divine Dream floated backwards. Her beautiful eyes opened and a light melody began to bloom from between her cherry red lips.

Although the sound was faint, it was enchanting and wondrous.

In that moment the surrounding space seemed to have a marvelous reaction to this faint sound.

Within the pitch black space, starlight surged.

Immediately, heavenly sounds appeared like sunshine reviving the dark world, all of it flowing out from Empyrean Divine Dream's body.

From the emptiness of space sublime luminescence shot out. True Phoenixes appeared, dancing in the universe.

All sorts of beautiful sights began appearing in the dark universe.

Seeing this, Lin Ming's pupils contracted.

Dreamsoul Immortal Melody!

At the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, Lin Ming had personally experienced Frost Dream's immortal melody. It was because of this that he had tied with her.

As this mysterious melody appeared, from within the peaceful world, infinite killing intent rose.

Underneath the hands of Empyrean Divine Dream, the Dreamsoul Immortal Melody was countless times more formidable that Frost Dream's version.

In an infinitely fascinating illusion, divine mountains appeared, floating up and down in space. Towering spiritual trees reached into the skies, on equal ground with the heavens.

These divine mountains floated atop planets. The planets roared as they crashed into that blood red lance.

As for the True Phoenixes, they flapped their wings and flames swept through the world, surrounding the golden crown Empyrean.

Raging flames even burnt through the void, as if a sheet of black paper had been ignited.

The golden crown Empyrean trembled. Beneath the high heat, his flesh and blood seemed to be baking and burning. As the blood red lance was struck by those planets it began to crack apart.

It wasn’t just the primal god Empyreans that were shocked, but even the human Empyreans were left dumbfounded!

“Divine Dream, she seems to have made a breakthrough…”

Skyrend Godlord and Great Limitless Buddha had only ever heard rumors of Divine Dream’s prestige and strength. Neither of them had truly seen her fight.

In the Divine Realm, although Empyrean Divine Dream had used her divine dream space before, it had always been seen as ethereal and wonderful, filled with a mystical rhythm and an exquisite aesthetic sense. Never before had it been used in such a horrifying manner, ringing with killing intent!

The top human powerhouses could feel that from the start, Empyrean Divine Dream had been fighting with everything she had, without holding anything back.

With her own power she contended with two peak saint Empyreans. And, it was obvious that she had completely suppressed the both of them. This was a nearly unimaginable strength!

Skyrend Godlord and Great Limitless Buddha both felt they were far inferior to her.

“This woman, how could she be so fierce!!” Amongst the saint race Empyreans, another person moved. A great black bow appeared in his hands.

He stepped forth into the void. Blood shot out from his hands, forming into a blood arrow.

With a deep roar, the bowstring tightened again without end. All light in the surrounding space seemed to gather on the tip of the arrow, causing everything to tremble.

Endless strength gathered onto the arrow points, aimed straight towards the distant Empyrean Divine Dream.

The arrow point exuded a boundless shaking. Pitch black ripples appeared, spreading out in all directions.

This strength was mighty and forceful, giving off a feeling that it could even pierce through the cosmos, a completely irresistible attack.

All starlight for a million miles began to sway and distort. The essence of the starlight began to gather towards the arrow point.

More and more energy gathered. The arrow began to howl as black light appeared around it.

Woosh!

The blood red divine arrow that gathered the endless starlight pierced through space and vanished without a trace.

This all-annihilating arrow shot to the edge of the divine dream space.

Once the arrow arrived at its target, it would be three against one.

Three peak Empyreans to fight Divine Dream!

And at this time, light bloomed. A golden buddha diagram spanned through space. It was incomparably large and shined with an eternal light, bathing the surrounding space in a warming glow.

In the boundless buddha light, small buddhas appeared.

These buddhas sat cross-legged within the endless buddha light, reciting ancient texts.

The broad texts gathered together, shaking the world.

The great buddha diagram collided with the pitch black arrow.

Waves of ringing sounds echoed through the world.

A boundless explosive light submerged all.

Finally, that black arrow vanished, completely submerged by this buddhic light.

"To bully one with so many, do you really think there is no one in my human race?" A cold voice resounded in space. The one who had moved was Emperor Shakya!

His figure floated in the center of the giant golden buddha diagram. His handsome face was flooded with a chilling killing intent.

It was rumored that even though Emperor Shakya was young, his strength had already surpassed that of Great Limitless Buddha. He was the number one master of Mount Potala!

In his hand, a wisp of black light glowed before being erased, as if he were extinguishing a candle.

His aura was deep and unbreakable like a prison, unfathomably deep. The anger on his face was like a volcano soon to erupt.

Emperor Shakya had blocked that cosmos-shaking arrow, his actions shocking the saint Empyreans. In particular, the peak Empyrean who shot out the arrow had a dignified look in his eyes.

That arrow just now had been condensed from that peak Empyrean's blood vitality and energy. He didn't know how much strength Emperor Shakya had used to block it, but he had used at least 80% of his strength.

Emperor Shakya's body emitted a blinding radiance, like a great sun rising in space, dazzling to the eyes.

His eyes opened and endless buddhic light swirled in his palms, forming a vast dharmic wheel.

In the center of this dharmic wheel, six masses of power appeared, each one containing the irresistible strength of a samsara.

In the center of each mass of power, the figure of Emperor Shakya appeared.

Whorl whorl whorl.

These figures of Emperor Shakya emitted light that distorted the void. Like a boundless vortex, this light covered the world.

Bang!

The six Emperor Shakyas in the center of these six samsaras joined together with Emperor Shakya's true body. They began to drag in the figure of the peak Empyrean with the pitch black bow.

This was a fierce battle!

"You are courting death!"

The saint Empyrean was enraged. He drew his bow and shot again and again.

Woosh! Woosh ! Woosh!

Pitch black shadows tore through the void, carrying with them a heaven-destroying momentum as millions of beams of black light appeared.

These black lights were from the peak saint Empyrean, shooting arrow after arrow.

Each arrow was infused with blood essence, easily able to pierce through a planet.

But those seemingly mighty black arrows were useless in front of Emperor Shakya.

Each arrow was stopped by the endless light of the golden buddha diagram, melting away.

Emperor Shakya's six great avatars formed a buddha diagram with his main body. Within this buddha diagram, every Emperor Shakya was covered with a martial intent.

With the main body and the avatars added together there were seven martial intents – this was the basis of Emperor Shakya's martial arts!

In the past, Emperor Shakya divided himself into a billion avatars, each avatar comprehending seven martial intents on their own and finally fusing them together. In terms of achievements in martial intents, Emperor Shakya had already reached the peak. It was impossible for anyone to surpass him in this aspect!

The seven layers of martial intents suddenly evolved into six samsaras. An incomparably powerful true meaning of the Great Dao swirled in space.

His fists were like planets, his pupils like suns. His vast and boundless aura locked in the surrounding world, suppressing all.

Inexhaustible buddhic light shot out from his body, brutally battling with the saint Empyrean before him.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The sounds of explosions continued without end.

That saint Empyrean with astonishing archery skills was pushed back again and again by Emperor Shakya’s tide-like barrage. Explosions blew up in the void behind him.

As the peak saint Empyrean was forced backwards, the pressure on him increased with each step. His face became increasingly grim!

This saint Empyrean was still able to barely defend against Emperor Shakya. Although he wasn’t Emperor Shakya’s match, the difference wasn’t too great; he wouldn’t be immediately defeated.

But as he turned his head to see Divine Dream fighting the two saint Empyreans, he discovered that their situation was even worse than his own!

There were two of them, and the strength of those two was considered to be at the pinnacle of all saint Empyreans. Yet they were single-handedly beaten down by Divine Dream alone, with a chance that their lives would be ended.

It had to be known that once one reached the level of a peak Empyrean, it was difficult to die unless a True Divinity attacked.

“We should retreat!”

The bow-wielding Empyrean told the other peak Empyreans with a sound transmission. It was already impossible for them to win. Staying here would only mean more casualties.

“Withdraw!”

As the red-robed Saint General desperately resisted the divine dream space’s symbol attack, he grit his teeth and sent out a sound transmission.

The saint race Empyreans all felt humiliated by this. For these past years they had domineeringly wandered through the Divine Realm, and even human Empyreans were afraid to fight them. Yet, today they were the ones being beaten up instead!

Chapter 1922 – Absolute Victory

Chapter 1922 – Absolute Victory

…

…

…

“Good! Well done! The shames of today will be avenged in the future! Just wait for my saint race’s Good Fortune Saint Sovereign to kill his way into the Divine Realm and exterminate your entire race!”

Some saint race Empyreans boastfully blustered. So what if the human Empyreans were stronger? No matter how fierce Emperor Shakya was he was only 10-20% stronger than a normal peak Empyrean, and no matter how overwhelming Divine Dream was, even if she could suppress several peak Empyreans together, if she were to meet the True Divinity level Good Fortune Saint Sovereign then she wouldn’t be his match at all.

“Heh! You still want to run? Keep on dreaming!”

Skyrend Godlord immediately saw through the saint army’s plan of escaping. He roared out loud and waved his sleeves. A clear and holy energy shot out, as if a great universe existed within it. A wave of swallowing power swept towards the group of saint Empyreans.

“A world dancing within the palm.”

Great Limitless Buddha spread out his palms and relics shined in his hands, their brilliance spreading through the cosmos.

Wherever this buddhic light covered, loud Buddhist chants resounded like the eight guardians of Buddhism, devas and yakshas, a trillion arhats... all of them appearing together.

For a time, the surrounding space for a million miles was covered by this seething spiritual light.

On this side of the battlefield, the light of blood shined bright and the smell of death filled the air. Arcs of red lightning and strands of Buddhist chants intersected, collided, causing massive tracts of space to collapse and crack apart beneath the savage impact of energy.

The Heavenly Dao Laws collided and distorted, even muddling space.

A potent strength destroyed all.

However, the saint race Empyreans wouldn't just sit there and wait for death. They counterattacked, resisting the human race together. Many saint Empyreans took out their out Empyrean spirit treasures. Divine light flashed and astral essence turbulently flowed out.

There were saint Empyreans whose fists smashed open the void, like meteors passing through space.

In terms of quantity, the saint Empyreans had the advantage. When they combined their strength together they were able to rival the human Empyreans!

But the many World Kings and Holy Lords weren't as lucky.

Saint race spirit ships were swept into energy storms, instantly blowing up. The martial artists onboard were ejected into the vacuum of space, half of them immediately killed!

"Form the array!"

A saint race Empyrean shouted out loud. In a battle between Empyreans, the strength of World Kings and Holy Lords was almost negligible. But if their strength was gathered together through a spirit ship's grand array formation then their fused strength could not be underestimated.

At the very least, escaping wouldn't be a problem.

The saint race Empyreans were already steadily taking steps to retreat! And once they fled the battlefield it would be hard for humanity to catch up to them.

"Focus your efforts and kill their elites!"

Empyrean Divine Dream said. Her divine dream space covered two saint Empyreans – they were the Saint General and the golden crown Empyrean!

Among the saint army, these were the two strongest individuals.

Divine Dream's intentions were clear: she wanted to cut down these two individuals!

Emperor Shakya joined in. He gave up his assault on the other Empyreans and hurtled towards these two peak Empyreans!

In the seven universes of the saint race there were many Empyreans. But, peak Empyreans were still extremely rare, and every death of a peak Empyrean was still an enormous loss to the saints.

Moreover, these two people were the main commanders in the saint race army's invasion of the Divine Realm!

"Damn it!"

The gold crown Empyrean was incensed as he discovered that Divine Dream had locked onto him!

He howled. His skin and flesh cracked open, revealing white tendons.

These tendons were extremely tenacious; they were a part of his supernatural bloodline powers. As he attached these tendons to his blood lance, the lance hummed and shivered, causing the surrounding space to vibrate and mystical runes to circle around it.

Light gathered, forming an incomparably black divine light.

The lance thrust out. The space around the black light cracked planets, able to pierce through the void and twist the Laws of the heavens and earth.

Woosh!

With this strike, the saint race Empyrean's body shivered. He had clearly consumed a great deal of energy.

The blood lance was like a black hole, swallowing light and energy wherever it went, constantly expanding as it continued forwards with an overwhelming momentum.

As the divine dream space was struck by this attack from a peak Empyrean consuming their blood essence, it was nearly punctured!

But at the same time, Emperor Shakya's eyes glittered with a cold light. His main body as well as those six martial intent avatars plunged into the golden buddha diagram.

Like seven supreme buddhas, they floated like seven stars within the buddha diagram. Endless golden light emitted from their bodies, resonating with the buddha diagram and evolving into six incomparably realistic scenes.

In the fathoms of hell, seas of blood boiled over. Mountains of bones piled high into the skies as hungry ghosts scavenged through the ground, howling with deathly hunger. In the heavens, goddesses fluttered about, the sounds of celestial dragons reaching through the horizon.

Above these six images, a grand golden Buddhist temple stood tall.

Countless ancient buddhas sat atop a mountain of lotus thrones, their ancient mudras flooding this world.

Emperor Shakya had evolved a great world of the six paths of samsara!

Emperor Shakya’s strike contained the true meaning of the six paths of samsara, the seven layers of martial intents, as well as the supreme treasure of Buddhism, the Wheel of Samsara. Together, they formed a strange and singular harmony that emitted a vast might.

This was one of Emperor Shakya’s manifestations after comprehending the true meaning of Buddhist martial intents to their pinnacle.

The true meaning of the six paths of samsara were like grinding pans of the Great Dao that ruthlessly grinded down upon the black hole blood lance.

The buddhas arrived, their light like a tide, their sound like thunder.

The rays of buddhic light were blinding and thicker than a mountain. As they flowed down from up high, the void tore apart and even planets exploded.

This buddhic light finally fell upon the gold crown Empyrean.

Bang!

The saint Empyrean violently shook. Wherever his body was covered in this buddhic light it would explode, causing him to vomit mouthfuls of blood.

And at this time, Divine Dream also attacked!

Within the divine dream space, countless towering trees appeared that blocked out the void for 10,000 miles, bringing with them a premonition of certain death.

The golden crown Empyrean was pierced through the chest by one of these ancient trees, causing him to spit out even more blood.

“Ahhh!”

The golden crown Empyrean cried out in suffering, his face twisted and fierce.

“Arclight!”

The death of the rabbit is also the sorrow of the fox. As the red-robed Saint General saw that it was impossible for his companion to escape, he howled in anger and indignation, wildly burning his bloodline!

The red-robed Saint General no longer cared about consequences. As a saint race Empyrean, his bloodline was his foundation. By burning his bloodline in this manner, it was possible he would even drop cultivation boundaries!

But at the same time, the strength he gained from burning his blood was terrifying to the extreme; it would be similar to half the strength from an ordinary True Divinity.

His body turned into a beam of divine light that directly tore open the divine dream space and fled deep into the cosmos!

But behind him…

With a loud cracking noise, the thunder-like sounds that Emperor Shakya cast out materialized into substantialized sonic waves that rolled out in all directions without end.

The golden crown Empyrean whose body was pierced through by the heaven-towering tree began to crack apart.

He cried out in pain, his entire body dripping with blood. Each drop of blood was amazingly bright. As it splashed out into space it whistled like meteors, containing a potent power.

His body was struck in the thunderous rumble. More and more trees pierced through his body. Finally, his entire body burst apart, turning into a sea of blood fog!

The golden crown Empyrean was one of the commanders of the saints' army within the Divine Realm. But today, he had perished here!

As for the other commander, the red-robed Saint General, he didn't hesitate in suffering heavy losses, even possibly dropping cultivation boundaries, to flee the battlefield.

In this battle, of the saint army's two high commanders, one was heavily wounded and the other had died. This could be called a total victory for humanity!

The divine dream space gradually faded away. Empyrean Divine Dream's sacred and holy figure began to slowly reappear. Her body was bathed in a haze of profound spirit power, without a trace of the mortal world around her.

"We're leaving!"

Empyrean Divine Dream decisively issued a stern evacuation order. It was unwise to pursue a desperate foe. Moreover, this was the domain of the saints, and the human army shouldn't enter too deeply otherwise it was possible for them to suffer annihilation.

At this time, the Ark of Hope flew forwards with extreme speed. In black clothes Lin Ming stepped out from the Ark of Hope. Behind him, Diwuhen, To Bagui, and the other ancient race Empyreans also emerged.

The ancient race Empyreans were overjoyed. They had seen life after death and had also experienced the strength of humanity. They felt as if this trip to the Divine Realm was worth the difficulties!

"Junior Lin Ming greets Senior Divine Dream!"

Lin Ming bowed in the void. At this time he felt extreme gratefulness. In order to rescue him, Divine Dream had accepted the potential risk of utter extermination to arrive here with the elites of humanity.

This was a kindness he would mark down in his mind.

"It's good that you are safe..."

Empyrean Divine Dream said with a long breath. It was only now Lin Ming realized that even though Divine Dream seemed light and indifferent all this time, the truth was that she was slightly pale beneath the fog that shrouded her face.

"Senior Divine Dream?"

Lin Ming asked, concerned. But Empyrean Divine Dream only waved her hand to indicate that she was fine. At this time, Xiao Moxian had rushed forth like a gust of wind to throw herself into Lin Ming's arms.

"Big Brother Lin!"

Since Lin Ming's great battle with the Good Fortune Saint Son, over 20 years had passed. Xiao Moxian had been pregnant all this time as she waited for Lin Ming's return, but during this period she never heard any news about him. This distress she felt during this time could be imagined.

Lin Ming held onto Xiao Moxian, lightly stroking her luxurious black hair. He softly said in her ear, "I'm fine..."

The two people supported each other. But at this time, Empyrean Divine Dream waved her hand and the surrounding scenery instantly changed. Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, and Empyrean Divine Dream immediately arrived in the white jade palace.

"Mm?"

Lin Ming was startled. He thought that Empyrean Divine Dream would first meet with Diwuhen, To Bagui, and the others, but she had instead chosen to directly return to the palace instead.

As soon as they entered the palace, Divine Dream shuddered and a bright white light began shining from within her body. This white light shined bright, moving outwards until it finally separated from Divine Dream's body.

Slowly, the white light condensed into the figure of a person, a young girl…

In space, she held onto her knees. Her body was naked but her thick waterfall of icy blue hair covered her curves. Only her beautiful face and perfect arms and legs showed on the outside. There was not the slightest flaw in her jade-like skin and the tone of her muscles.

At this time, the young girl's eyebrows were pressed together, as if she were in pain. Ths sight was enough to rouse the sympathy of anyone.

This young girl was none other than Frost Dream, the one Lin Ming had fought at the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting!

"This is…"

Lin Ming was shocked. He had already heard that Frost Dream was Divine Dream's plan in order to break into the True Divinity realm. Divine Dream had severed her primordial spirit, reincarnating that portion of her soul in order to create an avatar.

It was said that once Frost Dream became a peak Empyrean, Divine Dream would fuse together with her, and together they would break into the realm of True Divinity, even becoming an outstanding existence amongst True Divinities.

But now, there was still a massive disparity between Frost Dream and a peak Empyrean, yet Empyrean Divine Dream had fused with her?

Was it for that battle just now?

Lin Ming suddenly recalled the battle. Although Empyrean Divine Dream seemed light and unperturbed the entire time and her steps were also calm, the truth was that she had consumed a considerable amount of strength. In order to ensure absolute victory. Empyrean

Divine Dream had chosen to temporarily fuse with Frost Dream in order to be in the strongest state possible for a short period of time!

This state was highly taxing on Empyrean Divine Dream. Thus, her face was pale and she instantly separated from Frost Dream as soon as the battle finished.

Because of many reasons, this sight couldn't be seen by outsiders. So, Empyrean Divine Dream didn't greet the ancient race powerhouses first and had instead immediately brought Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian into Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

Chapter 1923 – Evacuate

Chapter 1923 – Evacuate

…

…

…

“Senior Divine Dream, are you alright?”

Lin Ming was highly concerned about Divine Dream’s situation. In truth he understood that Divine Dream had yet to break into the True Divinity realm; she was just a tiny bit away.

If Divine Dream didn’t temporarily fuse together with Frost Dream and only fought with her true self, then although she could still suppress a peak Empyrean, wanting to prevent them from escaping and killing them was extremely difficult. Moreover, that golden crown Empyrean and red-robed Saint General were both outstanding saint Empyreans.

At this time, blue misty light began glowing around Frost Dream. This misty light gathered on her supple figure, turning into a blue dress.

Frost Dream stretched her body. Floating in the air, she reached back her hands and flipped out her hair. As her long hair fell back in waves, fragrant wind blew through the air, enchanting the senses.

“Miss Frost Dream.”

Lin Ming greeted.

Frost Dream nodded in return, responding with “Sir Lin,” before composing herself and remaining quiet.

Lin Ming then discovered that Frost Dream’s cultivation had reached the World King realm. Compared to himself, she was even faster.

However, this was normal. Frost Dream was Divine Dream’s avatar and had Divine Dream’s soul as her foundation. Frost Dream’s cultivation speed would naturally be exorbitantly fast, and with the invasion of the saints, Divine Dream must have also decided to speed up Frost Dream’s breakthroughs in order to quickly step into True Divinity.

“You’ve heard that it was a black-clothed woman who sent me a sound transmission saying that you were in the Primeval Universe? Do you know who that woman is?”

Divine Dream asked Lin Ming. She clearly had some understandings of the Primeval Universe.

“Junior believes that this woman was likely Soul Empress Sheng Mei.”

Lin Ming said, glancing at Xiao Moxian. Xiao Moxian was astonished, but as she thought about it, it could only be her. That woman had been shrouded in a black fog and was incomparably mysterious. Even so, Xiao Moxian was able to faintly feel the terrifying strength that lurked beneath the surface.

Out of all the woman Lin Ming knew, only Sheng Mei could know so much and have such abilities.

“Let us return first. Now isn’t the time to stay here. This is the saints’ universe; it is too dangerous.”

As Divine Dream spoke, the fleet turned around and flew towards the Divine Realm.

After several great void shifts, the fleet returned to the God Lamenting Wall. Because of the great calamity, the God Lamenting Wall connecting this saint race universe and the

Divine Realm was extremely fragile. Skyrend Godlord was able to forcefully form a connection through it.

The fleet returned to the Divine Realm in glory and victory.

Looking at these familiar starry skies and feeling the familiar heaven and earth origin energy, Lin Ming bathed himself in the atmosphere.

The Divine Realm – he had finally returned!

During this trip he had been gone for over 20 years. He had been to the Soul World and Primeval Universe, risking his life several times and now finally returning safely.

Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, within a grand hall of white jade –

The human Empyreans and ancient race Empyreans had gathered together. Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were also included.

"You are descendants of the ancient races from 10 billion years past?"

For many human Empyreans, this was the first time they learned of the status of these ancient race Empyreans. The fame and magnificence of the ancient races from 10 billion years ago was too far-reaching and resounding. It was only that in the present era, they had declined to a miserable state.

"Yes… we have been fighting with the saints for many years now. The reason we fled this time was Little Brother Lin's suggestion. But during the process, we encountered the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and were almost annihilated…"

Once upon a time, being from the ancient races was Diwuhen's pride. But now he felt that there just wasn't anything to be proud of.

"What! You encountered the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!? Then you…!"

The human Empyreans were panic-stricken at hearing Diwuhen's words. They had encountered the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and managed to survive somehow?

At this time, Divine Dream slowly said, "Everyone, quiet yourselves. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign has been severely wounded by the joint efforts of the ancient race martial artists, Lin Ming, and Empyrean Primordius. He is currently recovering from his injuries, and moreover… the ancient races and Lin Ming have brought the path to salvation for us. Perhaps… it is finally time for our human race to experience a favorable turn…"

As Divine Dream slowly spoke, all of the human Empyreans present were dumbstruck.

The information contained in her words was far too great.

Heavily wound the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign? How had they done that? Moreover… how was this related to Empyrean Primordius who had perished 100,000 years ago?

The path to salvation? What was that?

As the human Empyreans were puzzled, Divine Dream looked at Lin Ming and said, "Why don't you come up and explain it yourself."

Whether it was the ancient races or the human race, Lin Ming was the greatest contributor to there being such a favorable turn!

To bring back the method to salvation from the Asura forbidden land, to renew the god decrees, to contend with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, Lin Ming's function during all of this was irreplaceable.

Lin Ming nodded. At a brisk pace, without showing arrogance or beings subservient, he explained everything that had happened during his adventure through the Soul World and Primeval Universe. The only things he omitted were the strange words Sheng Mei had said to him.

The human Empyreans were dumbfounded upon hearing this.

They knew that Lin Ming had left by himself, headed towards the world of the spiritas to seek out a path to salvation for humanity. But, almost no one had thought he would succeed.

In the eyes of those people, his actions had been nothing more than a joke!

Just what cultivation did Lin Ming have? Before he left, he was only able to defeat a Great World King.

And what humanity faced was a terrifying and massive race that had multiple True Divinities and over a thousand Empyreans!

In the impending universal calamity, Lin Ming couldn't even be called a small wave. Even the human Empyreans felt the situation was hopeless and had nearly succumbed to sitting down and waiting for death.

In such an atmosphere, Lin Ming had gone to seek out a road for humanity to take. Was that even possible?

But the actual result had left them all bewildered.

Lin Ming had truly found the method to salvation. It wasn't a way to directly face the saints, but instead an escape route for humanity!

Just an escape route was not enough. In the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds and innumerable other worlds, there were countless great human influences. If all of these influences had to be notified and evacuated, that would be a mission of monumental proportions. If the saint race decided to launch their all-out invasion of the Divine Realm now then humanity would have no time to flee.

But... Lin Ming had joined together with the ancient races and had managed to wound the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, buying time for humanity in the process. This was just unbelievable!

Many human Empyreans looked at Lin Ming with amazement in their eyes. When Lin Ming left the Divine Realm to go to the Soul World and Primeval Universe, he could be said to have created a miracle.

He had done a great service for humanity and could nearly be compared to Empyrean Divine Seal of 3.6 billion years ago.

“Everyone should be clear on what the method is… that is, before the saints’ total invasion begins, we shall evacuate to one of the wild universes within the 33 Heavens… the Divine Realm has over a trillion quadrillion people and there are even more people in the lower realms. To evacuate them all is a completely impossible task. But, we can evacuate the elites and preserve our martial arts civilization and inheritances.

“In other words, for at least the next 100,000 years, the general human population will have to live beneath the oppression of the saints. As for the elites of humanity, they must face the wilderness of the 33 Heavens, suffering the difficulties to develop it and survive there! As for the future, whether we are eliminated or find a chance to breathe, all of that will depend on the next 100,000 years. In that group of elites who develop within the wilderness, we shall see whether or not we can raise proud children of heaven who can resist the saints.

“If we can, then we shall slaughter our way back to the Divine Realm and destroy the saints. If we cannot, then we can only wait to perish. After all, the God Lamenting Wall is not an absolute protection.”

Empyrean Divine Dream’s words caused the human Empyreans to fall silent.

Of the 33 Heavens, seven Heavens belonged to the spiritas, seven Heavens belonged to the saints, one Heaven was the Primeval Universe, and another Heaven was the Divine Realm.

In total this was 16 Heavens. Besides these 16 Heavens there were also 17 more. These 17 Heavens were death lands or wildernesses. Because of the great hundred race war from 10 billion years ago, these universes had slowly declined. Moreover, the God Lamenting Walls dividing these universes were extremely firm, unlike the walls dividing the Divine Realm and saint universes. The walls between the Divine Realm and saint universes would weaken in cycles until they finally completely vanished.

Thus, for all this time, these 17 Heavens had never had intelligent humanoid life forces exist within them.

If the human elites were to use the Asura Decree to penetrate through the God Lamenting Wall and go to these abandoned Heavens, it would undoubtedly mean a bitter and grueling journey.

Many people would die as they pioneered new lands. Even those that survived would have to face the greedy gazes of the saints, unsure whether they would live to see the next day.

Many human martial artists understood this. They knew just what it meant to escape into the wild universes...

Moreover, they had heavy hearts upon thinking about abandoning the common people of the Divine Realm. But there was nothing they could do about this. After all, the elites of humanity were the targets of the saints. If these elites were killed then that would be the same as wiping out humanity's inheritances.

As for the common folk, the truth was that they held no value for the saints.

The atmosphere in the grand hall become much more gloomy.

Lin Ming had indeed discovered a path for humanity. But, this path was filled with thorns!

Empyrean Divine Dream slowly stood up.

"I, as well as all disciples of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, have already decided to leave the Divine Realm and develop ourselves in the wild universes. As for the rest of you, you can decide whether you wish to join me or stay in the Divine Realm. I understand that you have feelings for your homeland and to abandon the home you've known all your life is a difficult choice. But, sometimes, you have to abandon what you know…

"To leave means facing unknown perils and shouldering the burden of being humanity's hopes and futures.

"To stay means living underneath the heel and oppression of the saints, struggling in battle…

"No matter what path you choose, your journey will be incredibly difficult. My only hope is that no matter when in the future, none of you will easily give up. This is because humanity truly stands on the precipice of life or death. 3.6 billion years ago, we were indeed defeated, but even then we still retained the Divine Realm. But if we are to be defeated again now then we truly will not have any road to escape to."

Empyrean Divine Dream's words were heavy and grim. All of the human Empyreans held their breath. For a time, the entire grand hall was silent, and even the sound of a needle dropping could be heard.

Everyone faintly realized this was an important meeting that concerned the future of humanity!

"I represent Mount Potala to say that we will leave the Divine Realm and follow Divine Dream Heavenly Palace."

The first to speak was Great Limitless Buddha. The truth was that before this meeting began, he had already known of the situation. He was only making his stance clear here.

"I will also follow Empyrean Divine Dream."

"Me too."

Empyrean after Empyrean opened their mouth, all of them willing to follow Empyrean Divine Dream.

To abandon the Divine Realm was the only choice they could make in such a helpless situation.

“Good.”

Divine Dream took a deep breath. “If that’s the case then let us not delay. We will disperse now and assemble the various great influences to prepare the evacuation. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign may be heavily wounded but the most he will need is several years to recover… we must use this period of time to complete the evacuation mission and bring as many people as we can in the time limit.”

Chapter 1924 – Astral Vault God King

Chapter 1924 – Astral Vault God King

…

…

…

Primeval Universe, within the infinite deeps…

In the space that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was hidden in, over 20 saint Empyreans in full battle attire had laid down a Good Fortune Grand Array.

In addition, there were many World Kings and Holy Lords. They were distributed at the edges of the Good Fortune Grand Array, supporting it.

The saint Empyreans had grim complexions.

This was because the Divine Realm's red-robed Saint General had led the dregs of his defeated forces back here.

The golden crown Empyrean had perished and the red-robed Saint General had been forced to burn his blood essence, causing his cultivation to drop. To the saints, this was an unprecedented disastrous loss.

But as these defeated troops came to the Primeval Universe, only then did they learn that the Good Fortune Saint Son, before issuing his order, had been severely wounded by the joint efforts of Lin Ming and the ancient races and was now recovering.

This left them all dumbstruck.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was an outstanding existence even amongst True Divinities. Even with the ancient race Empyreans and Lin Ming added together, how could they possibly have wounded the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign?

"His Majesty Saint Sovereign, he..."

The red-robed Saint General was embittered. He had originally angrily come back, wanting to report the situation to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign so that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would mobilize his full army to trample over the Divine Realm.

But what he learned was actually something almost unbelievable.

"His Majesty has closed up in seclusion – no one may see him!"

The Empyreans responsible for protecting these grounds said. The red-robed Saint General gulped, feeling his head aching.

The saint race was at least 10 times more powerful than the primal god race, so how did that battle turn out with such a strange result?

As the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was in seclusion, the red-robed Saint General could only wait.

He faintly guessed that this period of seclusion would not be short. It would be at least two to three years.

At this time, a terrifying pressure arrived, like a galactic storm sweeping through the cosmos.

Underneath this tremendous pressure, all Holy Lords and World Kings were forced to their knees.

Although the saint race Empyreans weren't suppressed to such a miserable degree, they still felt their hearts race with fear. Without a doubt, this sort of pressure could only belong to a True Divinity!

All of the saint martial artists rapidly bowed towards the void.

They felt a vast sea of astral essence swell towards them. This was proof that the one arriving was a saint race True Divinity!

At this time, the void trembled. A massive face appeared in the space a million miles away. This face seemed to be carved from metal, solemn and mighty, possessing an astonishing character!

As the saint martial artists saw this giant face, they shivered.

Astral Vault God King!

In the saint race's seven Heavens there was more than one True Divinity.

Generally speaking, the True Divinities of the saints were extremely mysterious. They seldom appeared and even the common people didn't know how many True Divinities were in the saint race or what their titles were.

"Astral Vault God King, one of the hidden God Kings of the saint world. It is said that he is a hundred million years older than His Majesty Saint Sovereign!"

"Astral Vault God King, he... shouldn't have come to... harm the Saint Sovereign, right..."

Several peak Empyreans subordinate to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign gulped as they thought of this.

According to rumors, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was on ill terms with Astral Vault God King. It was said that they might have fought before, and it wouldn't be a surprise if there was some sort of personal grudge between them.

Now that Astral Vault God King had arrived, if he really came to take revenge then the Empyreans stationed here would only be able to stare helplessly on as he attacked the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

“Your Majesty Astral Vault...”

Several Empyreans greeted in awe.

“Out of my way!”

Astral Vault God King shouted out loud and these Empyreans were swept away as if they were caught in a storm. They could barely steady themselves as they felt completely helpless in their fear.

They were subordinates of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. It wasn’t likely that Astral Vault God King had any good impressions of them.

Astral Vault God King slowly flew forwards to the space distortion that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had hidden in and sneered.

With a mere thought, a massive metal hand stretched out from space. This hand casually moved and easily tore open the space distortion that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had closed up in. Then, Astral Vault God King stepped inside!

The many Empyreans could only watch. They were unable to do anything nor did they dare to do anything. All they could do was fervently hope that there would be no battle.

If the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was truly pushed to the edge then he would detonate Famine’s body. If so, then all the Empyreans here would perish in the aftermath!

……..

Within the endless darkness, two shadows faced each other. One was Astral Vault God King and the other was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

Within the void, Astral Vault God King’s form was incomparably massive, like a structure formed from metal. He was completely without hair, not even eyelashes. His skull resembled polished crystal, translucent enough that one could faintly see his brain within. His appearance was extremely unique.

"Good Fortune!"

Astral Vault God King's voice was as cold as metal as it filled the space distortion. "How did you end up like this? Weren't you always a skilled one? You called me and Soaring Feather here, is it to beg for help?"

Astral Vault God King's voice had a mocking tone to it. The reason he came here was unexpectedly at the request of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign looked at Astral Vault God King, no expression on his face. He only icily said, "And Soaring Feather?"

Astral Vault God King raised his right hand and twiddled a feather between his fingers. He lazily said, "She didn't feel the need to come and see you herself, but if we speak she will naturally be able to hear us."

"Is that so... I see." Soaring Feather didn't accept his invitation but the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn't care. In the seven Heavens of the saint race, the truth was that there were three True Divinities.

Soaring Feather God King was the only woman amongst them and her whereabouts were always a mystery. She had gone into seclusion long ago and many peak Empyreans didn't even know that there was such a True Divinity amongst the saints.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign looked at Astral Vault God King and unhurriedly said, "The reason I called you here today is because I want you, as well as Soaring Feather, to lead the armies to trample over the Divine Realm and exterminate humanity!"

Although the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was injured, his voice was filled with energy that shook the void.

Astral Vault God King's eyes widened for a moment. Then, he began laughing. "Hahahaha! Did I hear wrongly? You want me and Soaring Feather to exterminate humanity? Why? You don't need to mention something as mundane as the interests of our race to trick me. Although there are advantages to the saints in exterminating humanity, it's nothing at all to me. Did you think I wouldn't know that the reason you want to exterminate humanity is to accomplish your own goals? Why would Soaring Feather and I deign to help you?"

Astral Vault God King aggressively said. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign fell silent. Then, he stretched out his hands. Above his palm, a black bead traced with red lines slowly revolved – this was the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

Seeing the Grandmist Spirit Bead, Astral Vault God King's eyes began to shine. This Spirit Bead was inestimably valuable to a body transformation system martial artist!

"You..."

"If you and Soaring Feather assist me then I will lend you this bead for one million years! But I have a requirement: when you destroy humanity, you must make sure you kill Lin Ming!"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's voice was filled with killing intent. The reason he had hurriedly summoned the other two True Divinities of the saint race here to have them attack the Divine Realm was because he had a deep foreboding feeling in his heart.

He felt that Lin Ming had brought something important back to humanity. If he couldn't eliminate humanity here then the troubles would never end. Once the wildfires burnt down the fields, the new grass would grow once more.

In particular Lin Ming! His continued existence filled the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign with unease.

He was an unknown factor. At the mere peak Holy Lord realm he was able to have such a great impact on the war of the saints against the human race and ancient races. If he was allowed to grow up then he would certainly become a scourge upon the saints.

Before this, he had taken Lin Ming lightly because of his cultivation. Now he was willing to do anything within his power to kill him!

“Grandmist Spirit Bead…”

As the Astral Vault God King looked at this red and black bead, his eyes revealed a deep greed.

“What about it? Do you want to take it forever?” The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign coldly sneered but didn’t take away the Grandmist Spirit Bead. He only glared at Astral Vault God King, saying, “You want to work together with Soaring Feather to take my life while I am injured and steal away the Grandmist Spirit Bead?”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign laid bare the thoughts within Astral Vault God King’s heart. Astral Vault God King only lightly smiled, not responding.

“You can give it a try! But I have ways to make you regret it!”

As the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign spoke, the massive body of Famine began to wriggle underneath him, causing innumerable fountains of blood to gush out.

Astral Vault God King’s pupils narrowed. He looked at the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, suspicion growing in his heart.

He didn’t know what hidden cards the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had, but he was certain that there must be some secret on him.

He even suspected that this concerned the abyssals.

In any case, even if he joined together with Soaring Feather to attack the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, he didn’t have full confidence that they would win. This was a purely instinctual feeling.

To reach the cultivation of the True Divinity realm, that meant one's destiny had accumulated to the peak. Like this, a martial artist would be able to develop vague premonitions in their hearts. Although it wasn't accurate every time, it was extremely valuable for reference.

Chapter 1925 – World Annihilation Crisis

Chapter 1925 – World Annihilation Crisis

…

…

…

Four months later, Mount Potala –

This was the most glorious and oldest Empyrean Holy Land in the current history of humanity. Within Mount Potala, one could deeply feel the inside story of this land. The houses, the winding corridors, the paintings, and even the tiles; everything was deeply marked by history.

3.6 billion years ago, the True Divinity leader of humanity, Divine Seal, had died. Most Empyreans had died in the battle and their Empyrean influences were destroyed with them, forever fading away into the sands of time.

However, Mount Potala had remained fully intact. Within their library pavilions they collected numerous ancient texts on martial arts. All of this played a vital role in the continued development of humanity's martial arts civilization.

At this time, when humanity teetered on the edge of extinction, the many rulers and elites of humanity gathered once more at Mount Potala to face the upcoming storm.

Within Mount Potala, in a secret chamber of a buddhist temple.

This chamber was extremely peaceful. Wafts of incense smoke curled through the air. The walls were decorated with sculptures of towering golden arhats. Between these arhats, eight thick columns supported the ceiling. Each column was carved with a golden dragon that emitted a magnificent atmosphere.

These were the infamous eight celestial dragon columns of Mount Potala. This chamber was one of Mount Potala's treasures, where eminent monks would come to calmly meditate. Now, Lin Ming was sitting on a cushion within this chamber.

In front of him was an old man in plain and humble clothing.

This old man's face was withered and his eye sockets were deeply inset. His skin was dark and gray and there was only a light smattering of hair atop his head. His hair was not silver or white, but dry and yellow, like dying grass. As he sat in front of Lin Ming, his entire body brimmed with a faint death energy, as if he were already dead.

"Lin Ming… I've taught you everything I can… this is the entirety of my life's secret techniques… I hope that it will be useful to you…"

The old man slowly spoke. This old man was Dragon Fang's honorable master – Three Lives Old Man.

Out of all the Empyreans of humanity, Three Lives Old Man was unique and unconventional. Although he hadn't been able to break into True Divinity, he had still managed to use all sorts of arcane techniques to live for 300 million years. He had experienced an incredible span of time and could be called a living history book of the human race.

When Lin Ming returned to the Divine Realm, Divine Dream had convened all peak young elites of the Divine Realm, including Jun Bluemoon, Hang Chi, Dragon Fang, and Xiao Moxian, and began their training.

In this training they were allowed to freely choose from all the secret techniques of human Empyreans – without any hidden at all!

Whatever they wanted to learn they could learn. In particular, Lin Ming was looked after and taken as a priority by all the Empyreans. A revered Empyrean didn't hesitate to consume his own cultivation to help Lin Ming straighten his meridians and eliminate the small problems that had accumulated from Lin Ming developing his foundation so quickly.

But as for the Empyrean technique that Lin Ming finally chose, it was… Three Lives Pupils!

This was also the only secret technique he chose.

The other transcendent divine mights were indeed fierce, but to Lin Ming who studied the Asura Heavenly Dao, they weren't too valuable. Only the Three Lives Pupils would be useful to him. It was an auxiliary technique that could be used to directly increase Lin Ming's combat prowess. Lin Ming would be able to fuse it with his own daevic eye so that they mutually complemented each other. It was as if this secret technique was tailor-made for Lin Ming all along.

On the thick cushion, Three Lives Old Man's eyes were still closed. "You have opened the Daevic Eye Dao Palace and that has made you even more suitable to inherit my secret technique than Dragon Fang. I have barely been managing to maintain a sad existence for 300 million years, and for me to have a direct descendant in Dragon Fang and a half descendant in you, I am glad I can see my own inheritances carried forwards in such a wondrous manner. When I die I can do so in peace…"

As Three Lives Old Man spoke, Lin Ming deeply bowed. He solemnly said, "I thank Senior for the kindness of your guidance."

Three Lives Old Man shook his head. He quietly said, "I should be the one thanking you, and perhaps all of humanity should thank you…"

With Lin Ming's return, not only did he bring back the method to salvation for the human race, but he even brought back a jade slip copy of the Holy Scripture's golden pages.

These golden page duplicates came from Sheng Mei. As a Beyond Divinity level cultivation method, even a duplicate was able to provide a tremendous inspiration to human Empyreans.

This was especially true for Divine Dream, who cultivated energy and divine. The profound comprehensions of the soul contained within the golden pages were perfectly suited to her!

So for these past days, Empyrean Divine Dream had gone into seclusion as she studied the golden pages thoroughly. In these short several months she had obtained incalculable inspirations. This was all in order to establish as solid a foundation as she could so she could step into the realm of True Divinity as soon as possible.

Gradually, the early steps in the evacuation work for humanity had been completed. The evacuation from the Divine Realm was occurring a step at a time!

Those that could leave were the elites of humanity.

“Brother Lin, take this cup of wine!”

A young man handed him a cup of wine. There was a little bit of emotion on his face as well as a little bit of disappointment in himself. This person was White King, a direct disciple of the Vast Universe Holy Lands. He didn’t have some life and death friendship with Lin Ming; they were only acquaintances that had met at the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting and could be considered ordinary friends.

But due to the invasion of the saints, and in a situation where humanity could perish at any moment, even two strangers of the same race could be like brothers…

When parting approaching, the heart was always stirred. Lin Ming drank the wine.

“Brother Lin, you aren’t going?”

Lin Ming shook his head, “I’m not in a hurry…”

Lin Ming traced his spatial ring. This spatial ring contained the third emperor jade of fate. He wanted to go to the Asura Road and enter the seventh level of the final trial so he could obtain the highest completion percentage possible.

Using this, he wanted to struggle for an opportunity to turn the tides of war against the saints!

But currently, the final trial had yet to open…

White King walked away, leaving with the other elites of Vast Universe Heavenly Palace. Elites from other Empyrean influences joined them. What awaited them was a journey into an unknown and wild universe. This would be an adventure filled with hardship and slaughter.

Lin Ming knew that White King was only part of the first group of people to leave. There would be a second group, third group, fourth group…

This would continue until all the elites had left, until all the Empyrean Heavenly Palaces became deserted lands.

Partings occurred everywhere.

Masters sent off their disciples, sect masters sent off their disciples…

Some people drank and bid farewell. Some hugged as tightly as they could.

For those who were left behind, those that were leaving were family members, friends, comrades in arms…

For those that were leaving, they would leave the universe they grew up in, their most beloved homeland, the land of their ancestors, their bloodline, the happiness and laughter, their pain and sorrow…

Lin Ming deeply sighed. He turned and left, no longer participating in these sad partings.

He had too many matters to attend to. Every breath of time, every hour, was extremely precious to him.

Time passed a day at a time. With every period of time, another group of people left. Lin Ming had no idea how many people had departed, but at this time, the situation suddenly changed!

A panic-stricken World King rushed into Mount Potala. He brought with him terrible news – the saints had begun their full invasion of the Divine Realm!

Many people were stunned. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had clearly been grievously wounded by Lin Ming and the ancient races, so how could he have recovered so quickly?

And if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wasn't leading the troops, then if the saint armies were to invade the Divine Realm they were bound to suffer serious casualties!

"How is this possible?!"

Empyrean Vast Universe was completely shocked. Deep in his heart he didn't want to believe such terrifying news. He hoped there had been some sort of mistake!

But following that, the bloodied and almost disabled World King was escorted away and another piece of news was brought in. That was… the human Empyreans guarding the great worlds closest to the saints had all died in battle!

The saints had truly begun their invasion!

Moreover, the scale of this invasion was even greater than the invasion of the Primeval Universe. After all, the Divine Realm battlefield was far broader and every army could be utilized to their limits!

At this time, humanity also learned that there was a True Divinity leading the invasion of the saints. His name was… Astral Vault God King!

Nobody had heard this name before, but just his status as a True Divinity was enough to cause all Empyreans present to feel a heavy pressure!

A great saint army led by a True Divinity, this was simply impossible to contend with!

“So it is another True Divinity of the saints that is leading their armies… the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign is really recovering from his wounds…” Empyrean Divine Dream sighed as she obtained the news. Even though Astral Vault God King was weaker than the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, he still wasn’t something they could deal with.

Astral Vault God King had assembled the armies of the saint race and then took over military control for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. All of this had been done in a mere several months, but at this time, only half of humanity’s elites had been evacuated!

“Summon an emergency meeting!”

This meeting was convened hastily, but all human Empyreans, including some human elites that had yet to evacuate, rapidly arrived.

Humanity now ushered in the greatest crisis they had faced in history!

Chapter 1926 – Feather

Chapter 1926 – Feather

…

…

…

From the moment the meeting was convened, the atmosphere was somber and dignified.

In the Divine Realm there were still many human elites who had yet to be gathered. If the Empyreans were to collectively evacuate the Divine Realm at this time then those elites remaining as well as their descendants would be slaughtered!

“We must speed up the evacuation…”

An Empyrean suggested. In truth, the so-called ‘speeding up’ of the evacuation was simply raising the threshold. They would only bring the most outstanding inheritances and geniuses. Ordinary geniuses would be left behind to fight for themselves.

“That doesn’t make sense… there are some peak talents in the innermost depths of the Divine Realm, even in some medium and small worlds. They are too far away for us to reach. Even if we raised the threshold they still wouldn’t be able to catch up in time.”

Another Empyrean argued. Concerning the invasion of the saints, everyone had their own opinions.

But during this time, Divine Dream remained silent.

A considerable number of people looked towards Divine Dream, waiting for her to express her intentions. By this time Divine Dream had long become the true and unanimous leader of humanity.

It could be said that every decision she made concerned the future of the human race.

At this time, Divine Dream's expression was earnest but her breathing wasn't uneven at all. She was as composed and tranquil as a placid lake.

She opened her mouth. Her voice was slow and unhurried, but each syllable she spoke was filled with a potent power.

"We will meet them head-on!"

"What!?"

Empyrean Divine Dream's words shocked all the Empyreans and young elites present.

Meet the saints head-on?

The saints had a True Divinity powerhouse leading their armies to war – wasn't fighting them the same as fighting a hopeless battle?

"How can we possibly do that?"

A red-robed Empyrean stood up to oppose.

"I didn't say that we must win... the Divine Realm is the homeland of humanity and we are the protectors of the human race as well as gods to countless trillions of quadrillions of lives. Just because the saints have invaded doesn't mean we can abandon all our subjects like this. Even if it is for the future of humanity, I cannot accept such an excuse. There must be some people staying behind in order to stand responsible for humanity...

"Moreover, we have to fight because we must delay for more time to evacuate. Half of the elites still haven't evacuated and we will not discard them."

As Divine Dream spoke to here she stood up. “I will remain… and meet the saints myself. Among you all, those who voluntarily choose to stay behind may do so. The others will leave the Divine Realm and go to the wild universe!”

As Divine Dream spoke many people were panic-stricken. Divine Dream wanted to stay in the Divine Realm?

No! Absolutely not!

This was because to the current human race, Divine Dream’s role was even more important than Lin Ming’s!

Whether it was fighting their way into the wilds of the 33 Heavens or returning to the Divine Realm in the future, none of this could be done without Divine Dream!

At this time, Three Lives Old Man stood up and slowly shook his head. “Divine Dream… It’s enough that I stay behind. I do not have much time remaining and for me to go to the wild universe is just a waste. I have already decided to stay in the Divine Realm and leave behind a lasting memory for the saints.”

Although Three Lives Old Man seemed on the verge of death, he was still an existence that had lived for 300 million years. No one dared to underestimate him nor did anyone know what cards he had hidden up his sleeves.

In particular, during the war against the saints, Three Lives Old Man had long since decided to martyr himself. A desperate and reckless peak Empyrean was a force that even a True Divinity couldn’t ignore.

After Three Lives Old Man spoke, another Empyrean stood up. “Although my human race has declined, our pride hasn’t. Even if we are to be defeated we will be defeated with dignity. I will also stay behind.”

“I… will also remain!”

Another old Empyrean stood up.

Without exception, all of these Empyreans were in the waning years of their lives; their cultivations had already started to drop.

The future of humanity belonged to the young.

Going to the wild universe was the same as beginning from zero. These old Empyreans didn't have that much time to wait.

One after another, elderly Empyreans stood up and decided to stay behind.

Even old Empyreans of the ancient races planned to stay in the Divine Realm. Only Empyreans in their prime like Diwuhen and To Bagui would go to the wild universe and help develop the land there. These Empyreans were the hope of the ancient races.

At the same time, these old Empyreans also wanted to stop Empyrean Divine Dream. No matter what, she couldn't be allowed to stay in the Divine Realm to die; that would be far too great a loss. Humanity still needed her leadership.

Divine Dream shook her head. "I am staying behind but not to die. I am confident that I can survive and eventually leave. And the other Empyreans that stay behind don't necessarily need to sacrifice themselves..."

Divine Dream's words left the other Empyreans shocked.

She was planning on leading the human Empyreans to resist a True Divinity, yet she still had the means to withdraw?

"If it is the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign then my chances are much slimmer. But, the other True Divinities aren't necessarily invincible. Don't forget, we have the Ark of Hope!"

Divine Dream added.

With the Ark of Hope, escape was indeed a possibility!

At this time, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred.

Just as he was about to speak, Divine Dream looked straight towards him and directly shot down whatever plan he was going to propose. “Do not even mention it, you must leave! Moreover, you must leave now!”

“I…” Lin Ming originally wanted to say that the Ark of Hope could display the strongest might in his hands, but Divine Dream was firm in her decision.

“Lin Ming, as long as you live then you will be the greatest threat to the saints. In this battle to delay for time, you are not needed. Rather, your appearance will cause the saints to try and kill you no matter what price they have to pay, causing the exact opposite of the effect that we want.”

Divine Dream's words were approved by the many Empyreans present. Lin Ming had to leave. Staying was not worth the cost.

Lin Ming agreed.

After Divine Dream made her decision, the meeting ended.

The Ark of Hope remained at Mount Potala. Lin Ming and other young elites were led to the back mountains of Mount Potala by some younger Empyreans. Here, there was a crowd of spirit ships, spirit boats, and divine palaces. There were even soaring spirit birds and other mounts.

After a short period of time, Lin Ming and the others would board a spirit ship and travel to the wild universe.

Many people hugged and gave their farewells.

“Hey boy, the human race is going to depend on you. When you go to the wild universe make sure you slaughter your way until you shake up the world!”

Vast Universe lightly punched Lin Ming's chest. Lin Ming was a young elite who had emerged from the First Martial Meeting that was managed by Vast Universe and Divine Dream; he could be called a part of their lineage.

Lin Ming had all sorts of feelings running through his mind. He didn't speak, only nodding and deeply bowing to Empyrean Vast Universe.

Empyrean Vast Universe didn't leave; he chose to remain with Divine Dream.

He was Divine Dream's old comrade-in-arms as well as an old friend. He was also in his prime, but he steadfastly chose to remain because he believed in Divine Dream and because he also believed in himself.

He didn't intend to die in battle, but he did want to fight for a little bit more time for humanity.

Only like this could he give an answer to the countless human lives of the Divine Realm.

This parting could be called a parting of life and death.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and stepped onto the spirit ship, not turning back to look.

But as Lin Ming stepped onto the spirit ship, there was something that occurred which no one noticed. A spirit bird flying in the skies came to a halt above the spirit ship. It spun around, and then a single feather fell off this bird, slowly fluttering downwards.

This feather was common and indistinguishable from an ordinary feather. But as it fell atop the spirit ship, it slowly stuck to the surface and then melted into the hull, vanishing from sight...

Chapter 1927 – Parting

Chapter 1927 – Parting

…

…

…

The infinite universe, the vast and boundless space –

A massive spirit ship quietly sped through the starry space.

This spirit ship was named ‘Epoch’. The name signified humanity’s wish to usher in a new epoch, one where their people would rise to glory once more.

During this trip, Epoch would have to pass through over a dozen great worlds of the Divine Realm before finally arriving at a small world called the Bluesnow Realm.

This small world was hidden within a chaotic ocean of stars. Without accurate coordinates and a guide, it was basically impossible to find this land.

The end of the Bluesnow Realm pushed up against the God Lamenting Wall. And behind this God Lamenting Wall was another universe of the 33 Heavens – a wild universe.

Because the God Lamenting Wall separating the wild universes had never weakened, this universe hadn’t had an intelligent humanoid life form step foot in it for a long time.

Several months ago, 20 human Empyreans were sent to the Bluesnow Realm in order to join together and form a connection through the God Lamenting Wall using the Asura Decree and then maintain it.

Following that, the elites of humanity passed through this connection and entered the wild universe. They quickly sped towards the nearest lands, establishing their own bases to develop the area…

Epoch was an Empyrean level spirit treasure spirit ship. It was naturally far slower than the Ark of Hope, and from start to finish, it would require two months to reach its destination.

And during this long travel, many matters occurred. For instance, the great war between the remaining Empyreans and the saints…

In a grand hall within Epoch, many young elites had gathered.

Dragon Fang, Hang Chi, Xiao Moxian, Jun Bluemoon, Lin Ming, and even the celestial Smokeless…

These young elites had reunited once again.

Back during the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, these young elites had been 20-40 years of age. They were high-spirited back then, looking to climb to the highest mountaintops.

They showed their abilities above the arena stage. They attracted the attention of the cosmos and became renowned to trillions of quadrillions of people. That was an incomparably magnificent time!

And after 100 years of life, they reunited once more. Although they each made considerable progress in their strengths, they actually gathered under such circumstances. Facing the great calamity of the Divine Realm they had been forced to flee from their homeland and become fugitives…

At this time, Xiao Moxian was looking out a porthole, gazing upon the endless starry skies. She rubbed her belly. It was unknown just what she was thinking.

To abandon her homeland and go to an unknown world, it was inevitable that she would feel a deep melancholy in her heart.

But, what she could rejoice in was that Lin Ming would always be there at her side to accompany her.

She silently looked at Lin Ming as he meditated in the grand hall. Xiao Moxian pursed her lips. In this great calamity, Lin Ming had become nearly her everything.

“I wonder how the seniors of my people and Empyrean Divine Dream are doing right now…”

Smokeless whispered, finding it hard to calm her heart.

Beside her, Hang Chi was praying sutras and twisting the buddha beads in his hands, deep in meditation.

Dragon Fang embraced his black sword. He had a pot of wine in his hand and was quietly drinking from it.

At some time, Dragon Fang filled a cup of wine. Then he silently raised it up in the air and slowly sprinkled it to the ground.

Seeing this, Lin Ming sighed. He knew that Dragon Fang was giving his farewells to his master…

In this bitter battle between the humans and saints, Divine Dream, Vast Universe, and some others might be able to return safely. But the older Empyreans had already entered the fray with the determination to die…

Lin Ming stood up and walked over to Dragon Fang. He joined him in drinking a cup of wine.

But at this time, his mind shivered and he nearly fell over.

“Big Brother Lin! What’s happening?”

Xiao Moxian had been looking at Lin Ming and his sudden reaction had left her startled. With his cultivation it was impossible that he would nearly tumble over for no reason at all.

“Lin Ming!”

The others stood up, all of them looking at Lin Ming with concern. Now was an extremely tense time. Even if they were fleeing to a relatively safe universe, all of them were on guard for any abnormalities. Lin Ming’s sudden change left them wary.

“I’m fine…” Lin Ming waved his hand, his complexion somewhat ill.

Just now, he had clearly felt an indescribable divine sense sweep through this hall, nearly causing his mind to fall to illusion. During this time his mind had completely blanked out, and he felt as if a feather had fallen into his spiritual sea, slowly immersing within it.

This feather was simple like an ordinary father, but this ordinariness was what scared Lin Ming.

This was the wisp of someone’s divine sense mark! He had been locked onto by someone!

And, what stunned Lin Ming the most was that no one else had detected it. If he was the only one who had sensed it then that meant this divine sense was most likely aimed at a single person!

This thought left Lin Ming’s palms cold with sweat. Not to mention the terrifying intensity of that divine sense, there was also the fact that this other party’s divine sense had quietly penetrated through the protective wards of Epoch without alarming the many peak Empyreans on board.

This was not something an Empyrean could accomplish.

This other party…

True Divinity!?

In that moment, Lin Ming felt as if he had fallen into a sea of ice. He had been locked onto by a True Divinity!?

This was incomparably horrifying information!

Without the peak masters of the Divine Realm like Divine Dream present, there was no one on this entire spirit ship capable of contending with a True Divinity!

Moreover, even the Ark of Hope wasn't here. They didn't even have the Asura Decrees that could wound a True Divinity…

In this situation, to be locked onto by a True Divinity was the same as being sentenced to death!

"Is it intentionally targeting me… or was it an unconscious probing…"

Lin Ming's limbs were icy cold. He didn't believe that there was a True Divinity randomly passing by, just happening to use their divine sense to investigate this spirit ship…

With a 99% certainty, this other party had come for him!

"Big Brother Lin, just what is going on!?"

Xiao Moxian anxiously looked at Lin Ming, worry filling her face.

"Benefactor Lin, what happened just now? At this time there is no need to hide anything from us. We must all be on the same boat. All these difficulties can be solved together. If we cannot solve them, then there are also the Empyreans here that can help."

Hang Chi slowly said. Lin Ming bitterly sighed in his heart. This was something that not even an Empyrean could fix…

"I'm fine. I just felt an intense foreboding premonition, as if something unfortunate is going to occur."

Lin Ming eventually didn't speak the truth. This was because he wasn't absolutely sure, and also because there was no meaning in saying it anyways. Instead, it would cause Xiao Moxian and the others to panic for no good reason. At this moment, no one here could stop a True Divinity.

It would be the same as telling everyone that he was going to die.

Moreover, the worst thing was that once this True Divinity overtook Epoch, everyone in this spirit ship would be buried along with him!

Lin Ming's words left everyone half-doubting and half-believing him. Indeed, once a martial artist's destiny accumulated to a certain level, they could indeed have strange premonitions which could allow them to avoid disasters.

Lin Ming's unlucky premonition just now… could there have been some problem at the front lines?

Did Empyrean Divine Dream encounter an accident?

Gloomy clouds formed over everyone's hearts. Divine Dream was the spiritual pillar of humanity. If she perished, not to mention the loss in strength it would mean for the human race, but the morale of the people would fall through the ground.

Finally, the group quieted down. During this time Lin Ming gripped his fists, his heart and mind on pins and needles, filled with unease.

That terrifying sense was like the summons of a death god. Would it come again?

Lin Ming thought. And indeed, after a quarter hour, that terrifying sense covered Lin Ming!

This time, the sense was extremely light, like a feather gently crossing over Lin Ming's mind. But the resulting pressure nearly caused his spiritual sea to fall into chaos.

Moreover, this sense brought with it a faint and clear… killing intent!!

As delicate as a feather, a killing intent that left one drowning in desperation!

A True Divinity had truly locked onto him!

This feather was the mark of a True Divinity. Back in the Soul World's Akashic Dream Universe, the Great Brahmic God King had used a similar method to mark Lin Ming.

This was a transcendent secret technique. When a person left behind blood, skin, hair, or even items they used before, these things would be marked with their 'vital characteristics'. Then, by paying a sufficient price and using a certain amount of soul force, one could search the vast cosmos for these 'vital characteristics' and mark the position of the person.

In the past, the Great Brahmic God King hadn't searched too large an area. It was normal for Lin Ming to be found by him.

But this time, the other party was able to search the entire Divine Realm with its 3000 great worlds and countless other smaller worlds to find and lock onto Lin Ming all the same!

Such supernatural powers left Lin Ming drowning in despair!

"Heavens, do you really wish for my end? I have resolved myself to climb to the peak of martial arts, yet I must perish here?"

Lin Ming mirthlessly smiled. The saints really thought highly of him. If he wasn't wrong then the saints had especially sent a True Divinity to hunt him down and kill him.

Currently he didn't even have the strength to fight an Empyrean, but now the enemy had sent a True Divinity to kill him. They had truly laid down the capital!

They wanted to take advantage of the time before he had grown to erase him from existence, forever severing any future troubles!

Lin Ming stood up in an absent-minded daze.

From when he had stepped upon his road of martial arts until now, he had faced death numerous times. But, never before had he felt despair like today!

“Lin Ming, you…”

Smokeless, Hang Chi, Jun Bluemoon, and the others all looked at Lin Ming. They felt that something was wrong.

“What is going on? What are you trying to hide?”

“Nothing.” Lin Ming suddenly smiled, his smile somewhat sad. “I’m sorry, I… don’t think I can go to the wild universe with you all and open up a new world…”

“What!?”

Lin Ming’s few words left everyone shocked. In particular, Xiao Moxian felt her heart shrink.

“Why!?”

Tears began to appear at the corners of Xiao Moxian’s eyes. She bit her lips and stared at Lin Ming, her voice shaking.

Lin Ming looked at Xiao Moxian, his heart mourning. He couldn’t remain on this spirit ship because it would only mean everyone here dying in vain. Even humanity’s gathering point would be exposed.

He wanted to say that he had been locked onto by a True Divinity, but as he saw Xiao Moxian’s teary eyes he couldn’t bring himself to say the words…

He didn’t want his last image of Xiao Moxian before he left to be that of her dying inside.

Moreover, he knew that if he said such words, if Xiao Moxian knew he would die without a doubt, she would not let him leave alone. She would die with him.

Finally, Lin Ming said, “There are some matters I must attend to. I will be leaving first…”

Hearing Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian’s response was to quickly rush over and throw herself into his arms. She tightly grasped him as if letting go would mean losing him forever.

“Take me with you.”

Xiao Moxian had already made up her mind to never let go. She had a faint premonition in her mind that after this parting, she would not see Lin Ming again.

Lin Ming could feel Xiao Moxian gently trembling in his arms and her vulnerable heart. He didn’t know just what taste was in his heart, but eventually he pushed her away. His expression was resolute as he said, “Stop this nonsense. Not only will you not be able to help me but you will only drag me down. If so then I will die for sure!”

Lin Ming’s heartless words and his heartless expression left Xiao Moxian stunned.

The other young elites were also helpless to do anything, but they knew something had happened with Lin Ming.

It was just that he wasn’t willing to tell them.

“If you go like this, the Empyreans on board will not agree.”

Jun Bluemoon frowned. Although he didn’t know what was happening, he could faintly feel that the reason Lin Ming left was for the lives of everyone on board.

“At these times, none of us fear death. What happened?” Dragon Fang stated in a manner more direct than the others. He pulled out his sword.

“I will explain myself to the guiding Empyreans. If I leave, there is still a chance to live. If I stay, I will die.”

Lin Ming turned around after he spoke. To leave the spirit ship he needed to inform the Empyreans in the main control room so that they could open the doors.

At this time, Xiao Moxian held onto Lin Ming once more.

“Big Brother Lin…” Xiao Moxian seemed to exhaust all of her strength as she grabbed Lin Ming’s hand. Her tone was nearly that of begging.

“Do you remember the Monster Emperor’s grand longevity feast where the Good Fortune Saint Son came to propose marriage to me, but you defeated him and married me instead?

“The you of the longevity feast was strong, aggressive, unstoppable. Numerous rulers of the universe were suppressed by you. And that was also the happiest day of my life.

“I have given up my race, abandoned my grandfather, and chosen to follow you to the wild universe. Even so, I have never regretted my decisions, not once, because no matter what I still have you… but… do you want me to lose even you?”

Xiao Moxian’s words were like a knife that thrust into Lin Ming’s heart.

Lin Ming’s body shook. His heart hurt so much he couldn’t even take a breath. He turned to Xiao Moxian to see her crying.

Finally, he held onto her.

He leaned down to her ears and said in a gentle voice, “Look after our child. It… is the continuation of my life…”

Lin Ming no longer tarried. He stepped away, leaving behind the mourning and shaking Xiao Moxian.

She helplessly collapsed against a wall, staring at Lin Ming's back as he vanished into the corridors of the ship…

…….

The hatch leading out of Epoch opened.

A frail figure silently departed from the spirit ship, heading deep into space.

Lin Ming didn't conceal anything from the Empyreans leading the ship and explained everything he could.

Although everyone was willing to join Lin Ming in blood-filled battle, senselessly sacrificing everyone was meaningless. Moreover, those onboard Epoch were the future hopes of humanity…

Like this, Lin Ming left.

In the infinite cosmos, Lin Ming's form appeared more and more lonely…

"Life, really is small…"

Lin Ming looked at the endless space around him. This world would exist for dozens of billions of years or even trillions of years.

Compared to the universe, his life was only a short moment.

Even all those once peerless rulers of history had disappeared by now, turned to dust.

Years from now, would he also be nothing but a grain of dust?

Chapter 1928 – Soaring Feather God King

Chapter 1928 – Soaring Feather God King

…

…

…

In the boundless starry space, Lin Ming took out Primordius Heavenly Palace from his inner world.

This was an Empyrean spirit treasure left behind by Empyrean Primordius that had saved his life several times before. And at this moment when Lin Ming distracted a saint True Divinity by himself, all he had accompanying him was Primordius Palace.

Lin Ming only had a peak Holy Lord cultivation but he was actually being chased down by a True Divinity; this was the same as being sentenced to death.

But Lin Ming hadn't given up the fight just yet. In truth he had already come up with an escape plan, but the caveat was that the chances of success were so low it was depressing.

Lin Ming didn't immediately start his plan. Rather, he controlled Primordius Heavenly Palace and began a great void shift.

He wanted to go as far away from Epoch as possible to avoid drawing them into his disaster.

The lives on board that spirit ship were all extremely important to Lin Ming. Not only were they the hopes of humanity, but they were also his friends, his wife, his child…

He couldn't allow anything to happen to Epoch.

He flew deep into the starry space. And at this time, his heart suddenly shook and his complexion changed. Just then, a voice echoed in his mind!

It was a woman’s voice, one that was faint and cold…

“You, it seems you left your companions?”

This mysterious woman slowly spoke. Lin Ming was startled and he reflexively grit his teeth. He didn’t reply. He knew that the one speaking was the True Divinity who was hunting him down.

This other party was a woman!

Lin Ming began to panic. His current position was at most several billion miles away from Epoch. If this grim reaper woman chose to kill him and then chase after Epoch, she could definitely overtake them.

The consequences would be inconceivable!

“It seems you are worried?” The woman’s tone held a hint of curiosity. “Are you worried about the lives of your companions? I’m quite surprised… your own life is in a precarious state and yet you still have the mind to worry about others. You left the spirit ship on your own initiative, is it because you want to sacrifice yourself to guarantee that your companions will live on?

“It is difficult for me to understand why you made this decision, but I still admire your courage in making such a choice at this time. In order to show my respect, I will tell you my name – I am called Soaring Feather.”

Soaring Feather…

Soaring Feather God King?

Lin Ming had never heard of this name before. There was only a small number of True Divinities in the 33 Heavens, but few people could state the exact number of them. Most True Divinities were in a semi-reclusive state and were all powerful and mystical existences.

"You can rest assured that I have no interest in killing the others. The reason I am here today is because I was entrusted with this task by someone else, and that task was only to kill you. Once you die, I will naturally leave."

The woman's voice echoed in Lin Ming's ears.

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred, "Someone entrusted you with this task?"

"Yes… I owe a favor. I just never thought that they would want me to repay it by hunting down and killing a Holy Lord. Really, this is just unbelievable…"

"I see…" Lin Ming sighed. Not every saint True Divinity wanted to crush humanity into the ground.

At the very least, Epoch wouldn't be destroyed.

However, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had actually commanded the assistance of two True Divinities, one to lead the armies into the Divine Realm and the other to kill him. To have the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign consider him such a serious threat, Lin Ming was left speechless.

A peak Holy Lord being hunted down by a True Divinity was simply the most ludicrous joke in the world.

Lin Ming slowed down and finally came to a stop.

Lin Ming flew out from Primordius Heavenly Palace and put it away. Then, he took out a token from his spatial ring.

This token was extremely ancient and numerous strange lines and runes were carved into its surface.

“Asura Command?”

This mysterious woman was already near enough to Lin Ming that she could see his every action and movement. Moreover, she also knew of the tokens that the Asura Road Master had left behind in the past.

Lin Ming’s plan was to flee into the Asura Road.

Then… he would enter Tragic Death Valley!

It was still a long time until the final trial started once more. If Lin Ming wanted to evade this mysterious woman then there was only a single route open to him – to fly into Tragic Death Valley!

Tragic Death Valley was a death zone. Even if a peak Empyrean entered they would still be trapped inside.

But could a True Divinity also be trapped?

Lin Ming didn’t know if Tragic Death Valley could hold a True Divinity. After all, 10 billion years had passed and the force field must have weakened.

The most glaring example was the Asura Decrees that the Asura Road Master left behind. Those treasures hadn’t been able to kill the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

Moreover… even if Tragic Death Valley could trap this True Divinity, it was unknown whether she knew of the situation of Tragic Death Valley. If she were to choose to follow him inside then it wouldn’t matter if he could emerge later, because he would simply be killed by her within the valley itself.

Drawing back, even if Soaring Feather didn’t chase after him, Lin Ming would become a turtle in a jar after entering Tragic Death Valley.

One year outside was equivalent to ten years within.

If Tragic Death Valley was blocked off by Soaring Feather, when would Lin Ming be forced to stay within until?

In closed door seclusion in the dark, it would be impossible to cultivate to the realm of a True Divinity. Once the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's wounds were healed and he slaughtered his way into the Asura Road, would Lin Ming, who would still be stranded in Tragic Death Valley, still have any way to live?

All sorts of thoughts flashed through Lin Ming's mind.

Moreover, it was possible that Lin Ming would be overtaken by Soaring Feather before he entered Tragic Death Valley.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming bitterly realized just how slim his hopes of escape were.

Soaring Feather God King's voice echoed in Lin Ming's spiritual sea once more. "You took out the Asura Command, do you plan on entering the Asura Road? That only means you will die that much faster."

The Asura Road was not some forbidden land. As long as there was an Asura Command to serve as an entrance, anyone could enter.

And for a True Divinity that could make a connection through the God Lamenting Wall, wanting to enter the Asura Road was far easier.

If Lin Ming wished to flee into the Asura Road then Soaring Feather God King would chase after him.

Although the Asura Road was a vast world, it was far smaller than the Divine Realm. Once Soaring Feather God King and Lin Ming entered together, the distance between them would be shortened.

Lin Ming couldn’t be sure where in the Asura Road he would be transmitted, or how far he would be from Tragic Death Valley. He would have to determine just where he was to know where Tragic Death Valley was.

However, things were different for Soaring Feather God King. She had left a True Divinity mark on Lin Ming so she could chase straight towards him.

Before Lin Ming had figured everything out, Soaring Feather God King might have already reached him.

If so, then it was possible Lin Ming didn’t even have a chance to escape…

However, no matter how uncertain things were, this was the only choice Lin Ming could make. Otherwise, he could only choose to die.

With the Asura Command in his hands, Lin Ming began to pour his energy into it.

However, something was strange. According to Lin Ming’s previous experience he only needed an incense stick of time to enter the Asura Road.

But now, a quarter hour had passed and even though he had poured in a tremendous amount of energy, there was no response in the Asura Command.

Lin Ming frowned. He wildly poured in more energy, but the Asura Command only faintly shimmered, not opening any spatial channel at all.

“What is happening?”

Lin Ming muttered, nervous. Was there a problem with the Asura Command or was there a limit to the number of uses?

Would the heavens not even grant him this slim chance of survival?

“Transmit me, transmit me!”

Lin Ming poured in all of his energy, just like the time he operated the Asura Primal God Cannon. His body, energy, soul, every bit of his strength roared into the Asura Command.

He grit his teeth as his body was bathed in a brilliant divine light. Just as despair grew in his heart, at this time, the Asura Command shook and the void behind Lin Ming began to crack open.

Like a pair of large hands constantly pulling apart space, space fragments collapsed and scattered, revealing a pitch black space channel!

It was unknown just where this space channel went. Terrifying winds from space and time storms blew out from within. Lin Ming didn't doubt that even a planet would be blown to pieces if it were placed within.

Lin Ming was immediately suspicious. Had there been some sort of mutation with the Asura Command?

However, now was not the time to hesitate. No matter what dangers were in the space channel it wouldn't be worse than falling into the hands of that woman.

Lin Ming flew into the space channel. However, just as he approached it, a massive gravitational force like a black hole directly drew him in.

For a time, the world turned upside down. Lin Ming felt as if his entire body would be torn apart. Agonizing pain radiated throughout his whole body. This level of pain nearly caused him to faint!

He grit his teeth, using his powerful willpower to keep himself awake. He knew that to faint here would mean everything was over.

Chapter 1929A – A Beautiful Trap

Chapter 1929A – A Beautiful Trap

…

…

…

Within the void, a terrifying storm brewed. Lin Ming felt countless sharp knives cut into his body as a web of pain radiated throughout him.

At this time, Lin Ming could already confirm that there was a problem with the Asura Command as he used it to transmit him to the Asura Road!

Perhaps it was because he had poured too much strength in or perhaps it was because of some inexplicable relationship with the three emperor jades he had gathered, but in short, this transmission space channel was completely different from what he had experienced in the past.

The last time he had entered the Asura Road, the space storm then wasn't even a tenth as intense as it was now.

If a martial artist weaker than himself was sucked into this space storm they would have already become ground meat.

Peng!

With a solid thumping sound, Lin Ming felt as if he had struck something hard, nearly fainting in the process.

In the next moment, a cool breeze passed over his skin. He opened his eyes and saw that he was in a bleak and desolate gray world.

Gloomy clouds floated high in the skies and the light here was dim.

Scattered rocks covered the ground. These rocks were all of similar size and shape and they also looked somewhat familiar. As Lin Ming looked closer, he could see that they weren't rocks but shattered stone tablets.

The writings on the stone tablets had long worn away and were incomparably strange.

As Lin Ming stepped through this desolate land, he felt as if his entire being was fiercely suppressed.

Where was he?

Lin Ming had no idea where he could be. He spread out his divine sense but couldn't find the edges of this world.

He took out the Asura Command and looked at it. Then, he sucked in a light breath of air.

That plain-looking Asura Command had cracked in half; it was unable to be used again.

What had happened?

An absurd feeling appeared in Lin Ming's mind, as if the world he was in was the true world and everything he had experienced before had been nothing but an illusion.

From the examination of the Seven Profound Martial House, the great tournament of the Seven Profound Valleys, his arrival at the Holy Demon Continent, the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, the invasion of the saints, it was like all of that had been nothing but a dream…

These sorts of bewildering thoughts left Lin Ming flustered.

But at this time, Lin Ming's mind shook. He felt a weak sense gently and swiftly pass over him before vanishing.

This was… Soaring Feather God King's divine sense!

Such a real and deadly killing intent caused Lin Ming to calm down. The strange dream-like feeling of before also disappeared.

Composing himself, Lin Ming looked within himself and saw that the True Divinity mark that Soaring Feather God King left within him was still there. He could even feel the spiritual connection between him and Soaring Feather God King, with the exception that this connection was much weaker than before.

As if he and Soaring Feather God King were in two different worlds.

Perhaps after another period of time, she would find him…

Thinking of this, Lin Ming wryly smiled.

He didn't know how much time he had left to live.

If there was some accident with the transmission, then was this still the Asura Road? If so, where was it in the Asura Road?

Could it be that this was… deep within the Great Desolate?

Lin Ming thought of the Great Desolate in the Asura Road. It was said to be a natural wall that existed between the inner Asura Road and outer Asura Road.

Rumors said that the Asura Road's Great Desolate was endless and not even a peak Empyrean dared to enter its depths. However, as to what was within those depths, that remained a riddle.

Even so, perhaps even the depths of the Great Desolate couldn't stop a True Divinity.

In this universe there didn't seem to be anything that could block the path of a True Divinity. Even the God Lamenting Wall could be broken through if a True Divinity paid a great price…

Soaring Feather God King's mark hadn't weakened at all. In this completely strange and unknown world, Lin Ming had no idea what he could do.

He began to aimlessly search through this world, hoping to discover some favorable turn.

However, this seemed to be an endlessly barren world. There wasn't even a strand of grass or a little bug.

In this boundless world, Lin Ming walked alone. Weak light fell down from above, casting long shadows on the ground.

His tiny figure appeared increasingly desolate on this gloomy world.

In that moment, Lin Ming truly felt an unprecedented solitude.

He suddenly missed Xiao Moxian, missed his own child, missed Mu Qianyu, missed Qin Xingxuan, missed his parents.

He walked forwards. The True Divinity mark that Soaring Feather God King left on him was like a life-sucking curse. From time to time it was strong, from time to time it weakened, but it never left him.

Lin Ming didn't know just what was occurring outside. Did Empyrean Divine Dream manage to escape? Did Xiao Moxian and his child arrive in the wild universe safely?

In a different universe, would his wives and his child live well?

Humanity, was there still a chance for them to rise from the dirt?

Towards all of this, Lin Ming's mind was filled with worries.

He had always been strong of will. For the past 150 some years, even in his most difficult times and even when he suffered the most, he had never given up.

He deeply loved life. He yearned to reach the peak of martial arts.

He blazed a path forwards, without fear. He fought for his family, friends, and for himself. He didn't know how many rivals he had forced down, how many times he had turned the tides!

Xuan Wuji, Yang Yun, Tian Mingzi, Good Fortune Saint Son, powerful enemies were out-strategized by Lin Ming or overwhelmed by him. One after another, they suffered defeat beneath Lin Ming's hands...

In Lin Ming's life, he had rarely been defeated!

He had never been as lost and confused as he was today.

Perhaps no matter how strong a person was, they also had their fragile side.

No matter how outstanding a person was, there would always be a day when they fell into distress...

Lin Ming continued walking, walking, and walking. He discovered that this bleak world had no origin energy, and energy was even being drawn out from his own body.

He didn't how many how many days he walked for. Because energy was continuously absorbed by the surrounding wilderness, he felt exhausted.

This world was extremely strange!

He even seemed like a mortal, hunger and thirst pressing him from all sides.

He knew that this was the result of his energy being exhausted, otherwise he simply wouldn't need food and water.

He sat down on a stone tablet. This stone tablet was cold and pieces of ice covered it.

He broke off a piece of ice and placed it in his mouth.

The melted ice brought with it the bitter taste of soil. The water moistened Lin Ming's parched throat, causing him to feel something faintly familiar.

But at this time, on the far off horizon, Lin Ming saw someone's shadow!

His mind shook as he saw this. He sprung up.

This person's figure rapidly vanished. But, Lin Ming could confirm that he absolutely hadn't misread.

Moreover, it seemed to be that of a woman!

Soaring Feather God King?

This thought passed through Lin Ming's mind but he couldn't confirm it.

Yet he didn't hesitate. He headed straight towards this person's shadow.

He didn't wildly run nor did he fly. He walked forwards one step at a time, slowly drawing out the Black Dragon Spear.

No matter who she was, Lin Ming would face her. If it was Soaring Feather God King then he wouldn't be able to escape anyways.

However, when he truly arrived at the horizon and saw what lay before him, he was startled.

Before him was a giant mirror that towered into the skies.

This mirror resembled the Cold Ice Mirror that Lin Ming had seen in the Asura forbidden zone. It seemed to contain an entirely different world.

The other world contained fresh flowers and trees, birds and animals. It stood in stark contrast to this bleak land.

And the surface of this mirror was the entrance to the other world.

“How come this is like the Cold Ice Mirror left behind by the Asura Road Master?”

Lin Ming wasn’t sure if this was a coincidence. He stepped through the mirror. Lush, fresh grass was thick beneath his feet and all sorts of spirit plants bloomed brightly.

A rainbow of spirit birds soared through the blue skies. Immortal apes shuttled back and forth in the verdant jungles. Bright sunlight fell from the skies, sparkling across gurgling spirit springs in bursts of auspicious light.

Lin Ming was dazed for a long time. Although the difference was only a single step, one side was a dead land and the other side was a paradise.

He had walked through the wilderness for far too long. As he stepped into this mirror world and felt the air that was thick with life, he felt as if everything that occurred was a lifetime ago.

Heaven and earth origin energy had returned. His body began to spontaneously absorb this rich heaven and earth origin energy, continuously restoring itself.

He greedily breathed in the air. He drank from the spirit springs and ate the spirit fruit until his strength was completely restored and slowly returned to its peak state.

He walked forwards. He wanted to see who this woman was.

He didn’t find a woman, but he did see a mountain.

From the top of this mountain, infinite origin energy fell down, as if it were the source of origin energy in this mirror world.

Lin Ming climbed up, slowly ascending the mountain.

At the summit of the mountain, he saw a divine tree.

Chapter 1929B – A Beautiful Trap

Chapter 1929B – A Beautiful Trap

…

…

…

This divine tree didn't have many leaves. Only a single old branch stretched out, twisting like a powerful dragon.

On this branch were two strange fruits.

These two fruits had runes of the Great Dao condensed on them. They seemed like hundred million year old dao fruits that had gathered the essence of the world, causing a person to drool upon seeing them and immediately want to eat them.

Lin Ming was stunned for a long time. This was a heaven and earth divine medicine that had been born from this strange world?

He hesitated for a moment and then reached out a hand, wanting to pick the fruits. But the moment he reached out a hand, one of the two fruits spontaneously flew into his hand.

As if these fruits were fated to be with Lin Ming.

"What fruit is this?"

Lin Ming didn't know what this was, but he was sure that these fruits were no minor matter. They were absolutely pure treasures of the world. If he had to describe their grade, then they were at least at the peak True Divinity level, or even… higher!

Could this be something planted by the Asura Road Master in the past?

Lin Ming suddenly thought. Since he used the Asura Command to come here, it wouldn't be strange if this fruit tree was related to the Asura Road Master.

But the question was, if this really was a divine tree planted by the Asura Road Master then wouldn't it have been growing here for 10 billion years?

Was there a life form that could live longer than 10 billion years?

Lin Ming looked at the fruit in his hand. The Great Dao runes condensed on the fruits could not be fake. He hesitated and then took a bite.

At this time he couldn't bother with considering how to use this fruit for alchemy, nor could he consider his own strength and whether or not his body could withstand eating such a dao fruit.

He was already in a desperate state!

He fervently hoped for a favorable turn; he deeply desired to increase his strength.

The peel of the fruit was very thin and the flesh was completely transparent, just like jelly. As he took a bite it melted in his mouth, extremely sweet to the point that it left one intoxicated.

Lin Ming vowed that he had never eaten something so delicious before. He had never been a gluttonous person, but as he ate this fruit he wished he could swallow it down.

After a dozen some breaths of time, Lin Ming finished eating this fruit.

He even licked clean his fingers and lips.

Afterwards, he waited for the strength of the fruit to erupt within him. Generally speaking, the higher rank a heavenly material was the more terrifying a strength it would erupt with. If a martial artist couldn't withstand this then their body would explode and they would die.

He planned to digest this fruit and then pick the second fruit.

But, after waiting for an incense stick of time, there was no strength erupting within him.

Instead, Lin Ming felt an unprecedented level of comfort.

Heat flowed through him, spreading to every inch of his body, flooding his meridians, flesh, and blood. It even rose into his spiritual sea, causing him to feel intoxicated and tipsy.

His body grew increasingly hot. His mind became dizzy as if he had drunk alcohol. His entire body was comfortable.

He wanted to lie down on the ground and sleep.

Beneath this divine tree, the thick and fragrant grass formed a natural bed.

Just as Lin Ming thought of this, his heart chilled. A creeping feeling came over him.

He turned to see that just three feet away, at some unknown time, a woman had appeared!

It was like she had been standing there for a long time already, and because Lin Ming had eaten the fruit he simply hadn't been able to detect her.

This woman had black hair and her face was wrapped in a dark veil, making one unable to see her appearance. Her eyes were as deep as the night skies, so profound that one could be lost in them with a single glance…

"You…"

Lin Ming wanted to focus his gaze on this woman's face, but as he did he simply wasn't able to maintain the brief moment of soberness he just gained. A burning rush of heat and dizziness blazed up his body once more, slowing his reactions and even limiting his divine sense to within three feet of his body, making it impossible to discern who this woman was.

Soaring Feather God King?

Lin Ming immediately thought. He wanted to trace his spatial ring but he found that his arms didn't obey him.

What was going on…

Lin Ming had a deep foreboding feeling. This woman seemed to be the woman he just saw. Had she purposefully lured him here to eat that fruit?

From what Lin Ming had seen, this fruit should have been a dao fruit that gathered a hundred million years of the world's essence; it shouldn't be a poison.

Moreover… looking at it broadly, even if this dao fruit was a poison it was inevitably an extremely precious poison. Just why waste it on him? This black-clothed woman was obviously much stronger than he was, so if she was able to easily kill him, why use poison?

All sorts of mysteries crossed through Lin Ming's mind. He felt his consciousness become increasingly blurry, circling all around him. He staggered around, and because he was unable to stand he slumped towards the black-clothed woman.

Complex emotions revealed themselves in her eyes.

She stood there like a fairy lost in the world, but she didn't avoid Lin Ming.

Just as Lin Ming was about to fall into her arms, at the final moment he held onto her shoulders, using her to support himself. For a time, Lin Ming's face was mere inches away from hers.

At such a close distance Lin Ming could smell the fragrance wafting off her body and see her two pupils that were like spring lakes. Lin Ming's heart shook.

"You are… Sheng Mei??"

Lin Ming was stunned. At such a close distance, he recognized that this woman was actually Sheng Mei?

This familiar aura and these familiar eyes, he could not be mistaken! And Soaring Feather God King shouldn't be so bored as to try and trick him by changing her appearance into that of Sheng Mei.

The black-clothed woman lightly sighed. She took off her veil, revealing her peerless looks, a face that could shame the moon and dim the world.

Lin Ming had never seen Sheng Mei at such a close distance before.

Her skin was flawless perfection and seemed to faintly radiate the brilliance of the moon. Her eyes were bright and deep, as if they contained undying stars.

She was the goddess of the spiritas, a woman unparalleled in the world.

Her body was covered in mysteries, making one forever unable to see her goals.

But in the next moment, something incredibly surprising occurred. Sheng Mei stepped forwards and her arms twined beneath Lin Ming's arms, tightly holding onto him.

For a time, a warm-jade like touch caressed his chest. The scent of a woman left the mind mesmerized. Never before had such a touch electrified Lin Ming so.

But Lin Ming hadn't lost him mind. He instinctively wanted to push away Sheng Mei. Although he didn't know what the spiritas were planning, he knew that Sheng Mei wasn't an ally of humanity.

"You… you arranged for me to come here?"

Lin Ming suddenly realized this possibility. When there had been an accident with the Asura Command, the reason was not because of the emperor jades or because he had poured in too much energy, but because someone had deliberately manipulated it!

Sheng Mei didn't speak. She held onto Lin Ming and looked at the mysterious fruit tree behind him. She reached out a hand and the remaining fruit flew into her grasp.

Seeing this, Lin Ming's thoughts turned cold. "What fruit is this?"

"It comes from the Primeval Realm Ruins, a strange fruit of the Dark Abyss. In this world it is unique. The Great Dao of the world is condensed within it, and eating it has a great advantage to one's cultivation and foundation. But, it possesses a devilish lure that no one can resist..."

"What?"

Lin Ming trembled. The Dark Abyss!

He had head this name before. The body of the abyssal that Empyrean Primordius seized as well as Famine both came from the Dark Abyss!

From such an evil and horrifying place, there was such a mysterious dao fruit?

This so called devilish lure was...

Lin Ming suddenly discovered it was becoming increasingly difficult to control his body. An inexplicable desire rose from his loins, racing through him.

In his chest, Sheng Mei's body seemed to contain an infinite charm that caused him to slowly lose all reason.

"You made me eat... an aphrodisiac?"

Lin Ming didn't dare to believe this. Just what was Sheng Mei planning?

He could confirm that Sheng Mei possessed an unimaginably powerful pure yin strength. Through her seven reincarnations her pure yin had never been taken. Instead, it had gathered and gathered, reaching an inconceivable level. If someone could take Sheng Mei's pure yin then that would be an unimaginable advantage!

But Lin Ming didn't believe that Sheng Mei would willingly offer him her pure yin.

Then just what was happening?

“Lin Ming, I’m sorry…”

Sheng Mei whispered into his hears. “You are too stubborn, too tenacious. If you chose to willingly leave with me for a hundred million years then you wouldn’t have been reduced to such a state… I’ve already told you, you cannot win against them…”

Sheng Mei’s voice was filled with regret. The scene she once portrayed had been the longing in her heart.

However, because of Lin Ming’s refusal, all those hopes had faded away.

“If you are destined to be destroyed, then you might as well… be destroyed by my hands…”

As Sheng Mei spoke to here her eyes began glistening with tears. She parted her red lips and sucked in a light breath. The mystical dao fruit in her hand broke apart, melting away into the sweetest juice that flowed into her mouth.

As she swallowed down this fruit, a burning heat also rose within her.

Lin Ming was no longer able to control his body. He tried everything he could to suppress the flames of desire within him, but he lacked any ability to do so.

This devilish enticement was too strong. Moreover, there was another point, and that was that the Sheng Mei in his chest was a perfect woman, an unrivalled beauty within the universe. Countless men had gone crazy for her!

“It’s useless. This fruit has condensed the Great Dao of the world and also contains a devilish lure. No one can resist it, whether that is you or me…”

The fruit’s potency had yet to fully stir within Sheng Mei. She was still awake as she and Lin Ming fell over onto the soft grass.

Then, she slowly removed her clothing.

The black clothes starkly contrasted against her flawless body that was as pale as white jade.

Her long and slender legs, her impeccable figure, her full curves, her proud and arrogant charisma, her gentle fingers, every part of her was like a perfect piece of artwork. The naked Sheng Mei blended into the surrounding scenery, creating one of the most beautiful images in the world.

Warm and dappled sunlight sprinkled onto Sheng Mei's figure. With the demonic rhythm, her body blurred within this light, making her an immortal goddess.

She had never appeared naked in front of a man before, but at this moment she wasn't shy at all.

She gently knelt down beside Lin Ming and poured herself atop his body. She held onto him and slowly kissed him.

In that moment, an indescribable feeling passed through Lin Ming. He desperately tried to shove her away, but his body wouldn't listen to him. His arms crossed beneath her and gently held onto her.

His burning hot body revealed a fierce response.

"You… what you want is… my Eternal Soul?"

Lin Ming struggled to speak. The last bit of brightness in his mind was soon about to flicker out.

"If you already planned this then… why wait until today… you clearly could have taken away my Eternal Soul at the Soul World!"

Lin Ming panted. Because Sheng Mei was kissing him, his words were slurred.

Sheng Mei nibbled on Lin Ming's ears. Her hot breath blew against his skin, containing a hot enticement. She gently said, "I don't want to explain myself right now. After today, you and I will part forever and this will be the last time we ever see each other. This will also be my life's most intimate and unforgettable time... I don't want to answer your question because doing so will disturb us. I hope that our union can be perfect..."

As Sheng Mei spoke she placed her pale hands against his chest. Lin Ming's clothing completely vanishing, revealing his solid and muscular body.

Her eyes were wet with tears and she quietly said, "Lin Ming, between you and me, there shouldn't have been such a result. Although nothing can reverse what is done, in the future when I am alone, suffering the long days as I walk to the ends of the universe, I will remember you, and I will remember the you that walked into my heart...

"I will cherish this memory for all of time..."

Chapter 1930 – Soul Source

Chapter 1930 – Soul Source

…

…

…

Sheng Mei slowly melted into Lin Ming. He drowned in her incomparably warm and soft touch.

Lin Ming gradually lost himself. This demonic fruit from the Dark Abyss contained an irresistible power. Whether it was Lin Ming or Sheng Mei, neither of them could resist it.

Soon, they each forgot their hostilities.

Like lovers who had been long separated and met once again, they were inseparable once more.

Sheng Mei's voice began to soften. Her breathing also quickened.

She was like a cat as she bit on Lin Ming's shoulder. Her noble and indifferent persona was completely discarded at this moment. She recklessly grasped around, tangling herself with Lin Ming.

But before this all began, she had already revolved a secret technique of the Holy Scripture to absorb Lin Ming's Eternal Soul.

The soul was the foundation of a person.

The characteristics of the Eternal Soul were completely condensed into Lin Ming's own soul and were closely integrated with his very being. Once it was taken away, the consequences would be unimaginable!

His life would wither and his strength would drop. Like this, let alone rising in cultivation, he simply wouldn't have much longer to live.

But all of this didn't occur as Sheng Mei envisioned. As Sheng Mei lost her consciousness and was under the complete control of her instincts, as she was tangled with Lin Ming, for some reason, a little bit of Lin Ming's soul force remained within him…

Time slowly passed. The two were utterly intoxicated in each other.

Beneath the overbearing potency of that Dark Abyss fruit, not even a True Divinity could maintain their reasoning. With Lin Ming's cultivation, he completely lost all brightness in his mind. He greedily stroked Sheng Mei's soft body, his happiness reaching the peak.

Their souls blended together and even their inner worlds seemed to become one.

Between the two of them, they took from each other and gained from each other countless times.

Until they were both utterly exhausted.

A heavy sleepiness hit them. Like this, the two fell into a deep slumber…

…………

At some unknown time, Lin Ming felt drops of water falling on his face. The cold feeling caused him to slowly regain consciousness.

His body felt utterly weak and a splitting headache tore through him. Even taking a simple breath was incredibly difficult.

A terrifying emptiness rushed through Lin Ming. His eyes popped open, as if he had lost the most important thing in his life.

Eternal Soul!

He panicked. He quickly inspected his spiritual world and nearly suffocated on himself. In the throes of passion, his source soul force had been greedily taken by Sheng Mei. There wasn't much left!

Even his fires of life had become extremely weak.

For a time, Lin Ming was filled with utter disconsolateness.

Because he had eaten that abyssal fruit, his mind had been blurry and he hadn't been able to clearly feel what was happening. But now that he was fully awake, he could feel the pinnacle of pain.

The soul was the most basic foundation of a martial artist. Even for martial artists that practiced the essence gathering system and body transformation system, although they didn't cultivate the soul, their soul source was still extremely powerful!

This was because an essence gathering system martial artist had to control the energy of the world and a body transformation system martial artist had to control their formidable God Beast-like body, and to do this they needed the soul. In other words, the support of a martial artist's will!

In addition, if a martial artist wanted to resist a spiritual attack, they also needed their soul.

A martial artist's source soul force was similar to their fires of life; it was the basis of a martial artist's life. Once they lost it, that meant their life was reaching its end.

Lin Ming humorlessly smiled. He turned to see Sheng Mei standing not too far away.

At this time, Sheng Mei had already dressed herself and had even wrapped her face in a veil. Her proud calmness and indifference had returned, as if she was completely unrelated to the passionate woman from before.

Lin Ming wanted to stand up, but because of his extreme weakness he wasn't able to move.

Lin Ming looked at Sheng Mei and Sheng Mei looked at Lin Ming. The two stared at each other, neither speaking for a long time.

The grass was cold and a mountain breeze blew past them. In this paradise surrounded by celestial mountains, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were like a fated pair, destined to love each other and kill each other. At the summit of this mountain, gazing at one another, this scene seemed to freeze into an eternal image.

Finally, Sheng Mei spoke. She no longer looked at Lin Ming but at the world beneath the mountain.

She whispered, "Hate me..."

Lin Ming bitterly smiled. "What reason do I have to hate you? If it wasn't for you then I would have already been killed by Soaring Feather and would be nothing but an icy cold corpse. In fact, I could even say that without you I would never have left the Soul World and would already have died to the Great Brahmic God King...

"I only hate myself. I hate how useless I am. In this great calamity, I cannot even become a small wave. Let alone the destiny of humanity, I cannot even control my own destiny... really, how laughable I am."

Lin Ming's voice was deeply miserable and helpless.

He was well aware that when Soaring Feather God King chased after him, the reason he had come to this strange world was because of Sheng Mei.

However, Sheng Mei didn't have this ability. Although she was powerful she could not conceal the truth from Soaring Feather. This was likely the work of the Soul Emperor manipulating things behind the scenes!

The Soul Emperor, just what was he planning?

Lin Ming didn't know, or perhaps it could be said that he didn't need to know.

With the loss of his source soul force, his fires of life would begin to weaken…

With his current condition, Lin Ming had no idea how he could stop any of this.

Lin Ming struggled to sit up. He leaned against the abyssal tree behind him and looked at Sheng Mei. A sad smile crossed his lips. "I thought I wanted to go to the Primeval Universe, but were you the one purposefully leading me in that direction?"

Sheng Mei sighed, shaking her head. "I really did wish to persuade you, but you did not listen. I had no other choice. The reason I led you to the Primeval Universe was because I wanted you to leave that place, but… he already discovered you, and he already desired to obtain your Eternal Soul…"

Lin Ming naturally knew that this so-called 'he' was the Soul Emperor.

"Why didn't he do so at the start? Why did he wait until I went to the Primeval Universe, struggle with everything I had, wait until the moment I exhausted myself, nearly losing all hope, before he then moved against me?"

Lin Ming angrily said. His eyes were also beginning to turn red.

He loathed his own incompetence. Everything had been controlled by the Soul Emperor all along!

He… was too weak!

“This is because… when you were at the Soul World, your Eternal Soul was not perfect.” Sheng Mei’s voice was plaintive, a hint of sorrow and frustration in her eyes. “Do you not remember? He said to you that your life had been far too smooth. Although you experienced trials and tribulations, it was still insufficient. You had yet to experience true defeat and your spiritual journey was incomplete, thus your Eternal Soul was also unstable. He couldn’t do anything to you just yet…

“So, when you left the Soul World he plotted to use the hand of the saints to force you to the edge. Your soul, in your despair, in your helplessness, began to slowly transform as you endured these hardships. It became more and more stable, and this was something not even you discovered…

“If it wasn’t for this day where I ruined you, then after experiencing all this you would definitely have made more terrifying progress, perhaps even stepping Beyond Divinity, becoming an unprecedented existence in this universe. But… no one will give you this chance. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign won’t and neither will the Soul Emperor. If you want to blame something, then blame this era in which you were born…”

Chapter 1931A – Love and Hate

Chapter 1931A – Love and Hate

…

…

…

Listening to Sheng Mei's words, Lin Ming bitterly smiled. He was finally aware of the reason why the Soul Emperor had met with him after he left the ancient galactic battlefield at the Soul World, and why he had guided him.

At that time, Lin Ming had thought the Soul Emperor's words were reasonable and true. He even thought that perhaps the Soul Emperor wanted to cultivate him to fight the saints.

Now it seemed his thoughts were far too naïve.

It was only afterwards when Sheng Mei handed him the copies of the golden pages and gave him some words of warning did he become a bit more wary.

But by then it was already too late.

Afterwards, Lin Ming went to the Primeval Universe and joined together with the ancient races to contend with the saints. All of this was within the schemes of the Soul Emperor.

And the reason that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had caught up to him and learned of his whereabouts was likely also the Soul Emperor…

Finally, the Soul Emperor chose the time when Soaring Feather God King was hunting him down. He chose the moment when Lin Ming's life had fallen to its lowest point, when his will was at its weakest, and then caused an accident to occur. In a state where he couldn't distinguish reality from illusion, Sheng Mei had appeared. Through the desires of men and women, he had coupled with Sheng Mei, melding together in body and spirit, joining in perfect harmony, and finally having his source soul force drawn out.

Lin Ming looked at Sheng Mei and his eyes were much gloomier than before, as if at this moment, he felt utterly disappointed in her.

He laughed at himself. He looked at the skies, his voice turning hollow. “You really… are willing to resort to any means possible. In order to cultivate the Art of Eternal Life, you are even willing to use your body as a tool. In the mortal world there are women that can sell their bodies for money. And you, just what distinguishes you from them?

“After you return to the Soul Emperor’s side, will you dual cultivate with him and offer up half of the Eternal Soul? This is where your pride and cold arrogance comes from? Although you and I may be enemies, I could not help but acknowledge you and admire you. In my life, I admire two women above all, and you were one of them. Once, you were like a goddess in my eyes, however in order to chase after the peak of martial arts and the Art of Eternal Life, it seems you are actually this cheap…”

Lin Ming rarely spoke such sarcastic and vicious words. Today, his body and soul were pained to the peak. This was because he knew he had utterly lost. How could he not hate, how could he not loathe?

Not only did he hate himself, but he also hated Sheng Mei. It wasn’t that he hated Sheng Mei harming him, but because she had left him thoroughly disappointed.

Lin Ming’s words were like a blade that stabbed into Sheng Mei’s heart!

Her body shook and her face froze. She had never been insulted like this by someone before and the words left her completely shocked.

All sorts of complex emotions immediately flitted through her eyes. There was extreme anger, but also… grief!

She bit her teeth, almost to the point that she bled. As she looked at Lin Ming, her eyes had become sharp and edged. Her chest heaved up and down, but almost immediately, her complexion paled and the light in her eyes darkened. Her voice became indifferent once more.

“You aren’t wrong, there is no difference… the Eternal Soul originally needs you to voluntarily offer it in order to be effective; it cannot be taken. Since it is impossible to have you voluntarily offer your source soul force, I used this demonic fruit to cause you to lose your sanity and have your mind fall into my illusion. I coupled with you in body and soul so that I could draw out your Eternal Soul.

“Even the copy of the golden pages I gave to you was done so on purpose. The Holy Scripture is divided into the pages of life and the pages of death. The golden pages are the pages of life and the black book comprises the pages of death.

“My focus are the pages of life and I gather vitality within my body. I also had you cultivate the pages of life so that your aura would be more compatible with my own.

“From the start until the end, you were nothing but a chess piece in my game, a paving stone on my road to eternal life.”

Sheng Mei’s words were icy cold and heartless. But, Lin Ming heard something strange within them. Even so, he didn’t care. What meaning was there in investigating such a thing now?

Lin Ming mirthlessly smiled. He shook his head. “Understood. I remember what you told me before, that a worm living in the dead leaves and branches will never know the beauty and majesty of the world. You said the road of martial arts is to struggle with the heavens and trample the heavens beneath your feet. For a mortal to fight the heavens, just how difficult is that? The heavens have existed for hundreds of billions of years… and just how many years can a genius live? No matter how great the destiny upon your body, even being an extreme talent is far from enough… thus, you resorted to any means possible…

"I apologize, I will never be able to be like you. Although I have resolved myself to chase after the peak of martial arts, I still have my own bottom line. I cannot discard my race, my family, my friends, my wives, my child, and thus... I was destined to be defeated...

"It's over. There's no need for you to speak so much to a loser and a dead man like me."

As Lin Ming spoke these words, he seemed to become much older.

Sheng Mei fell silent. Her expression was as still as a placid lake, but her eyes were terrifyingly cold.

As she looked at Lin Ming, her eyes no longer contained an unbearable sadness, but a suffocating calmness.

Her body slowly floated upwards. Her dress fluttered about. She turned around, as if she were about to leave, but she eventually turned around and looked at Lin Ming once more.

Her eyes seemed to contain the infinite indifference of the past.

She said, "This is the Sky Spill Planet. You can stay here and calmly live out the remaining years of your life..."

As Sheng Mei spoke, she stepped on the void and vanished into the skies.

Black flower petals fell down and brushed against Lin Ming's face before fading away.

Lin Ming was stunned. He looked up at the sky, dazed.

Sky Spill Planet?

So, this was the Sky Spill Planet...

After he used the Asura Command to open a space channel, the Soul Emperor should have used his own transcendent methods to forcefully divert the space channel, making it so that he arrived here.

Sheng Mei wanted him to die in his own homeland?

Truly, what a kind and thoughtful charity…

After learning this was the Sky Spill Planet, Lin Ming didn’t feel much. Rather, the expression Sheng Mei had when she left lingered in his mind, causing his heart to ache.

This feeling was like his heart being cut apart. Besides a severe pain, it felt as if he had lost something important…

He couldn’t even breathe.

However, no matter what Sheng Mei’s last thoughts were, Lin Ming no longer cared.

Did a dying ant need to know the thoughts of a god…?

Sheng Mei had said that the Holy Scripture was divided into the pages of life and the pages of death. It was likely the Soul Emperor focused on the pages of death… no wonder his eyes were filthy and ragged, his entire body emitting a faint death energy…

How laughable. Just what point was there in thinking of this…

Lin Ming lay down on the grass. He had already lost his drive and his will.

As for the spirit mark left in him by Soaring Feather God King, Lin Ming no longer cared about that either.

Despair, desolation, loneliness, the loss of his strength, the arriving end of his life, all of this caused him to lose his fighting spirit, to lose the courage to continue living on.

He no longer deeply loved life, he no longer yearned to reach the peak of martial arts.

He was nothing but a loser.

He had ascended from the Sky Spill Planet. From a youth that knew nothing and had nothing, step by step, he eventually became the number one genius of the Divine Realm. His glory was endless and even the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign couldn't abide his continued existence and was forced to expend a favor to have Soaring Feather God King hunt him down.

All of this was enough for him to leave behind a legend, his own fables.

But afterwards, he returned to the Sky Spill Planet as before, still possessing nothing.

The only difference was that his source soul force was stolen away and his fires of life had begun to weaken...

Everything was like a dream.

A person chasing after their dream, from the start, then ran back to the starting point once more. But, the difference was that this dreamer was already far too old and could no longer run.

What a joke...

The sun fell and the moon rose.

Starlight sprinkled down from the skies, but all Lin Ming felt was a desolate cold.

He lay motionless, as if he had died, not even moving an inch.

To him, the passing of time no longer held any meaning.

There was no greater sorrow than a withered heart that had lost hope...

Chapter 1931B – Love and Hate

Chapter 1931B – Love and Hate

…

…

…

In the universe, in the boundless darkness, two figures stood high in space.

These two people were wrapped in black robes. But, one was a beautiful woman and the other was an old youth.

They were Sheng Mei and the Soul Emperor.

"Are you satisfied…?"

The old youth had a taunting smile.

Sheng Mei's expression was cold. She didn't respond.

"I agreed with your final condition. I did not use a dreamland soul refining technique but instead allowed you to conjure up all of this. You gave the primordial yin of your seven reincarnations as well as your body and mind to him, freely offering it all to obtain his Eternal Soul. You gave Lin Ming your most precious treasures, but in the end, his judgment of you came down to nothing but a single word… whore."

The Soul Emperor's tone was thoughtful. Indeed, the Eternal Soul had to be voluntarily offered by Lin Ming, but in this universe, the Soul Emperor was the one with the highest attainments in the complexities of the soul and the spiritual sea. He had his own methods he could use, such as creating a dreamland and using illusions to easily deceive Lin Ming. To trick Lin Ming into offering up everything of his own will wouldn't have been difficult at all.

"You understood all that has happened and all that you have done, but yet you still chose to pour your emotions into him and offer the primordial yin of your seven reincarnations to him... just what use is that? His soul force has been sucked dry by you... oh, there seems to be a little left, enough for him to live for another short span of time, but in the end he will die no matter what. This is just like taking your most precious treasure and tossing it into the trash. Did you do all this just to satisfy your own obsessions?"

The Soul Emperor slowly said. But at this time, Sheng Mei's complexion had become colder than ice.

She clearly and unhurriedly said, "You... shut up!"

The Soul Emperor was stunned for a brief moment, but he still coldly sneered as before.

Sheng Mei coldly said, "Do not forget that we have an agreement. Do not force me, otherwise, I will die against you! And if I die, all your plans will come to nothing!"

A thick killing intent and hate flashed in Sheng Mei's eyes. This killing intent left the Soul Emperor frowning, but he immediately chuckled. "It's these eyes again. That is, I am the most hated person in your life, a person that you want to slice into a million pieces. However... you may hate me, but doesn't Lin Ming also hate you? You took away his everything and left him nothing but a cheap life... oh, that's right, you did offer your sincere feelings to him, but what significance is there in that? It is worthless!"

"I never imagined that even after seven reincarnations, you would still be so mesmerized by that word 'love'. You are just like a little girl with your naïve little expectations of others. Since you want to maintain that fragile and ridiculous bubble in your heart, then I won't pop it for you. I want something else, bring it here..."

The Soul Emperor put out a hand. Sheng Mei grit her teeth, her eyes thick with murderous thoughts. But in the end, she composed herself and completely opened her spiritual sea.

Slowly, from between her eyebrows, countless motes of light condensed, finally forming into a bean-sized deep red and purple sphere of light.

This sphere of light slowly floated away. In the void of space, a constant flow of energy came from this small sphere of light, as if it contained an infinite universe within.

This was… Lin Ming's Eternal Soul. Unless it was offered voluntarily, it could not be taken.

When Lin Ming and Sheng Mei had made love, his mind had completely fallen into her hands. At the pinnacle of joy and passion, he had voluntarily handed it over.

And now, Sheng Mei was giving this Eternal Soul to the Soul Emperor on her own volition.

It was different than what Lin Ming had thought. Sheng Mei didn't retain half of the Eternal Soul but gave it all to the Soul Emperor.

In the boundless starry skies, it was like a mystical seed. As if it could form a world just by being planted.

"The Eternal Soul, it's finally mine!"

Looking at this Eternal Soul, the Soul Emperor's eyes shined with incomparable excitement.

"I did everything in my power in order to nourish it! And now, I have obtained it."

The Soul Emperor licked his lips. He waved his hands and the Eternal Soul fell into his grasp. He smiled, revealing brutally white teeth. Combined with his horrifying face, his smile left one shuddering with fear.

The Soul Emperor excitedly looked at the soul seed in his hands.

He first investigated it with his sense. Once he was sure that it hadn't been tampered with, he slowly pressed this soul seed into the point between his eyebrows.

He was always careful in order to not give anyone a chance to harm him.

As the Eternal Soul entered his body, the Soul Emperor seemed to have obtained the most wonderful thing in the world. He was like an opium addict that had been denied his drugs, finally obtaining a box of the most precious drugs. He was like a sexual deviant who had been deprived of the joys of the flesh for years, finally obtaining the most beautiful woman in the world.

Because of the Soul Emperor's extreme excitement, his face turned fierce.

His filthy old eyes slowly changed, filling with a profoundly pure brightness.

This process continued for two hours.

The Soul Emperor looked more and more like a youth. The depressing atmosphere around him had also dissipated by a great deal.

It was just that his face was still pale white without a trace of blood, so drained that it left one's heart chilled.

"Good, very good!"

The Soul Emperor stretched out his right hand, cracking his knuckles.

"I will agree to your request. As for Soaring Feather God King, I will deal with her myself. Of course, this is also for myself... right now, I don't want the saints to notice anything out of the ordinary!"

The Eternal Soul couldn't be directly absorbed by the Soul Emperor. Rather, it had been sealed into his spiritual sea and wrapped in layers of bindings.

Absorbing a soul was easier said than done.

The complex spirit marks would cause the person absorbing it to lose themselves and form split personalities.

Empyrean Primordius was an extremely good example.

Even though the Soul Emperor had profound understandings of the soul, he still couldn't accomplish this. In fact, it would be an extremely long process for the Soul Emperor to refine the Eternal Soul; he would need at least 100 thousand years.

Beside the Soul Emperor, Sheng Mei formed seals with her hands, creating layers of illusion space that completely sealed away the Sky Spill Planet.

This enchantment she casually created could last for tens of thousands of years.

The Soul Emperor disdainfully smiled. "You want to protect this planet? The saints may have invaded the Divine Realm, but they are only interested in the Divine Realm itself, not the mortal realms. At least, this will be true for the next several tens of thousands of years..."

Sheng Mei didn't speak. She quietly turned around, tore open the void and departed.

Chapter 1932 – Sword Mountain

Chapter 1932 – Sword Mountain

…

…

…

The sun and moon passed by; spring left and fall came.

In this wilderness, Lin Ming seemed to have fallen into an eternal sleep.

His body was covered with fallen leaves and then dust. Layer after layer, he was covered.

This immortal fairyland was originally nothing but an illusion. Now that Sheng Mei left, the illusion also vanished.

Not too far away from Lin Ming, wild animals frequently emerged from the untamed forests.

There were starving corrupt wolves that wanted to eat Lin Ming as their meal, but as they approached they were actually frightened by the aura of the demonic tree beside him, and scurried away with their tails between their legs.

Year after year, Lin Ming lay here, an empty shell.

He could feel his fires of life dimming and his cultivation slowly falling.

With the disappearance of his source soul force, his life force collapsed.

He felt that he couldn’t live for much longer.

The Sky Spill Planet was the world that gave birth to him, and now this world would also become his grave…

He didn't know how humanity was doing. Had they founded their own base in the wild lands and begun developing the new generations?

Empyrean Divine Dream, did she manage to escape being hunted by the saints?

Three Lives Old Man, did he live his life without regrets?

There was also Empyrean Vast Universe… relatively speaking, he wasn't too strong and he wasn't too old. Still, he stubbornly followed Empyrean Divine Dream to venture into that battle with nine chances of death and one chance of survival. Was he fortunate enough to escape alive?

Lin Ming lightly sighed. At this time he no longer possessed the qualifications to care about these things. He was an infinitely gifted talent of the heavens, and was even recognized as someone who was destined to become an extreme True Divinity, perhaps even reaching the boundary of the Asura Road Master.

But in the end, his cultivation had only reached the peak Holy Lord realm; he hadn't even managed to step into the World King realm. For all the praise and admiration he received, he was nothing but a joke.

On this day, Lin Ming struggled to slowly stand up. A thick crust of soil and green grass had grown over his body.

He felt that he didn't have much life force remaining, but he didn't want to return to dirt here.

In the final moments of his life, he wanted to visit some places of the Sky Spill Planet and see some sights.

Then, he could tranquilly wait for death to arrive.

He walked away.

He departed this wild land.

He didn’t fly and he didn’t tear through space, even though he could easily accomplish this with his current remaining cultivation.

He only used his own feet. One footprint at a time, he measured this land with each step he took.

His pace was slow but persistent.

He spread out his sense and found the direction he wished to go in.

He climbed over mountains, waded through rivers, swam across seas…

The seas of the Sky Spill Continent were vast. He broke into the rough waves, swimming along with whales as large as mountains. He saw thick bolts of lightning cut through the sky, shattering open the waters. He saw rainbows appear after the rain, stretching through the horizon.

All of these scenes he saw in the deep sea would have left mortals sighing in praise, their minds opened and expanded.

However, Lin Ming was quiet as he saw all of this.

Finally, he crossed this sea. He had already used his sense to investigate his surroundings and knew that this sea was called the South Sea.

The Xuan Wuji that he fought in the past had come from the South Sea Demon Region.

He crossed the South Sea and drew closer to his destination. He wanted to go to Green Mulberry City, return to the place where he lived in his youth and see his past there…

This was his life’s final wish.

He took out a wood spirit jade mask from his spatial ring. The one he chose was the mask he once wore in the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom.

He knew that in the South Horizon Region and Sky Fortune Kingdom, there were many people who had seen his portrait. He didn't want to be recognized by anyone, because he could guess that by this time, the Divine Realm would have fallen into the hands of the enemy.

Although the flames of war had yet to reach the Sky Spill Planet, this was only temporary. If the saints learned that he was at the Sky Spill Planet then the consequences would be unimaginable.

Lin Ming might not care about his own life, but this would bring a grave catastrophe upon the Sky Spill Planet.

All the people on this planet would die along with him.

He wore the mask and continued forwards, one step at a time.

Then, in front of him, a mountain appeared.

This mountain was majestically high and its sides were steep and dangerous. It was like a divine sword that had been stabbed into the ground.

Lin Ming looked at this mountain. He was silent for a moment before he started to climb up.

“Hey, brother, do not crawl up this mountain, you cannot climb it.”

As Lin Ming began ascending the mountain he suddenly heard people speak up behind him. He turned and saw a young man and woman.

They held swords in their hands and were clearly mortal martial artists.

The man was in his twenties and the young woman seemed around 18-19 years old. Their cultivations were respectively at the Houtian realm and Pulse Condensation realm. According to the standards of the mortal world, for two youths to have such a cultivation absolutely meant they were elites.

They were stunned upon seeing Lin Ming's mask, as if they didn't expect such a strange person to appear. This person seemed eccentric and yet wore such a cold and heartless mask. It seemed that they had met a weirdo.

However, they still spoke politely to him. "I can see that you aren't young, but your physical strength is quite good and you also cultivate the martial path. If you want to climb up Sword Mountain, could it be because you wish to seek out the Sword Immortal on this mountain and request to be his apprentice? If so, then I urge you to give up. I don't mean to be rude, but with your cultivation it is impossible for you to climb this mountain, and even if you can, you will not succeed in becoming an apprentice. I heard that after a little more time, Sword Mountain's Sword Immortal will be holding a gathering of swordsman, and at that time all sorts of masters from across the South Horizon Region will be arriving here. But even so, there are many people that cannot ascend the mountain. Because of our masters, we can go up once ourselves!"

As the young pair spoke, the young woman had a somewhat satisfied expression. It was clear they were fellow disciples and their master was also extremely famous in the South Horizon Region.

Lin Ming quietly turned back round. He continued to climb upwards. From start to finish, he didn't say a single word.

His heart had already been burned to ash. The final wish of his life was to see places he had once lived at on the Sky Spill Planet; he didn't want to come into contact with the people here.

To this world, he was only a traveler, a single stroke of the pen...

Seeing Lin Ming's reaction, the youth's mouth fell open. He was left dumbstruck.

But, the youth's junior-apprentice sister stamped her feet and angrily said, "He really thinks our good intentions have evil meanings behind them. A person like this should get what they deserve!"

The senior-apprentice brother sighed. He spread his arms wide and said, "Looking at the strange mask he's wearing and his character, he should be some bizarre character. Let's wait another couple hours for Master to return. I wonder what gift he brought for the Sword Immortal…"

The young pair spoke, no longer bothering with Lin Ming.

They thought that Lin Ming wouldn't be able to last much longer and would descend the mountain in distress, and then they would be at the base of the mountain where they could help him. But, what left them surprised was that Lin Ming climbed up the mountain and vanished without any news, as if he had truly succeeded in ascending to the top.

At this time, Lin Ming was indeed halfway up the mountainside. He could leap over such a mountain with a single step, but today he climbed up, and very slowly at that.

He could feel a rich sword energy coming from this mountain.

In Lin Ming's eyes, this sword energy wasn't strong at all.

But in the mortal world, in particular the South Horizon Region, this sword energy was considerably powerful. Even Lin Ming could feel a mighty and endless force from this sword energy, like surging seas and mountains.

This was a type of Concept, a Concept of the Sword.

The reason the young pair had said that the martial artists of the South Horizon Region couldn't climb up this mountain was likely because of the sword intent here.

In the South Horizon Region, it was extremely rare for there to be such a sword-wielding talent.

However, Lin Ming didn't have a single ounce of interest in this. He only passed by, his face still indifferent as he climbed this mountain.

But at this time, he heard a clear laugh. A blue beam of light tore through the blue skies and ripped apart the clouds.

High in the sky, the vague figure of a blue-clothed man appeared. This man seemed to be around 30 years old.

The man held dual swords and his eyebrows were straight and slanted. He was a dashing and heroic man.

Although this was only a glance, just what sort of eyesight did Lin Ming have? He could clearly see who this man was.

So it was him...

Lin Ming's complexion faintly changed. After more than 130 years, even though this other person's appearance had changed from the past, Lin Ming could still recognize him.

This person was the man he fought in the finals of the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction Martial Meeting. His surname was Jiang, Jiang Baoyun.

Jiang Baoyun. So the Sword Immortal of Sword Mountain was actually him...

Lin Ming was surprised for a brief moment.

That's right... in the entire South Horizon Region, Jiang Baoyun could have been considered an extraordinary young elite. At his age, being considered a Sword Immortal and possessing such a sword intent was also reasonable.

Chapter 1933 – How Can I Defy the Heavens?

Chapter 1933 – How Can I Defy the Heavens?

…

…

…

Sword Mountain was extremely high. The skies above Sword Mountain were awash with light blue and clouds were scattered across; it resembled a beautiful watercolor painting.

Sword Mountain was also extremely cold. On the summit, snow fell year round. But strangely, there was a clear unfrozen spring that flowed out from Sword Mountain. Because of how steep Sword Mountain was, the spring eventually became a waterfall, falling down the skies like a dazzling white dragon that left one sighing in praise.

Lin Ming had ascended Sword Mountain. With his cultivation he could absolutely cross over without alarming anyone. However, he chose to stop here.

Stepping through the pure white snow, he could feel a lonely and cold sword intent. An inexplicable feeling crossed through his body.

After more than 100 years, when old friends met once more, although things may have remained the same, people will always have changed.

On Lin Ming's road of martial arts, Jiang Baoyun couldn't be considered an amazing rival. Compared to those favored children of heaven like the Good Fortune Saint Son and Sheng Mei, he was not worthy of mention at all.

But Lin Ming had a very deep impression of Jiang Baoyun. This was because of his daring pride and his ambition that seemed to reach into the clouds.

But what a pity, the limit of his birth had become Jiang Baoyun's shackles! No matter how high his heart was, he would never be able to break free!

Thinking of this, Lin Ming felt pity for Jiang Baoyun. If he came from some respected great family from the Divine Realm then the result would have been utterly different. However, fate was unfair like this.

Lin Ming paced back and forth across the summit. Over the next several days, more and more people gathered on Sword Mountain.

Those that came were all outstanding elites from across the South Horizon Region.

They came on jade spirit boats, rode on rainbow-hued birds, or even flew themselves.

Lin Ming quietly watched as this all happen. After being accustomed to seeing top God Beasts of the Divine Realm, after being accustomed to seeing Empyrean spirit treasure level spirit ships, he knew that these spirit boats and spirit birds may seem beautiful, but the truth was that they weren't much at all…

Martial artists of the mortal world also had the joys of a mortal.

Recalling the past, during the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction Martial Meeting when Mu Qinghong had arrived on a vermillion bird, she had shocked and awed innumerable people.

At the summit of Sword Mountain, there was a pool. A thin layer of hazy mist floated above this pool. The spring that flowed down the mountain originated from it, and this pool was unfrozen all year round.

Atop this pool, ice lotuses were in full bloom. There were also dozens of waterside pavilions spread out.

The festive party of swordsmen was being held on these pavilions.

As for Lin Ming, as an uninvited guest, he stood in one of the largest pavilions but also a pavilion that was located on the edge. He stood together with the disciples of these great figures of the South Horizon Region.

"Mm? It's you?"

Not too far away from Lin Ming, a 18-19 year old-looking girl was stunned. She was the girl from the young duo that Lin Ming had seen just several days ago.

Her senior-apprentice brother was on this pavilion and he was also surprised at seeing Lin Ming.

Sword Mountain didn't have any guards. This was because it was covered in sword intent, and the average person wouldn't be able to climb up.

"This friend, how did you get up here?"

The young man looked at Lin Ming's icy cold mask and was left a bit dumbfounded.

When he saw Lin Ming at the foot of the mountain, he had thought Lin Ming was some sort of weird person or even a fool. But he never thought that this fool would arrive at the summit before they did.

However, Lin Ming didn't seem to hear this question at all. He looked towards the center of the cold pond, waiting for the tea party of sword arts to begin.

The young man and woman felt as if they had stepped onto a nail, as if they were somehow inviting contempt on themselves.

"This person must be deaf..."

The young woman huffed in anger, her small chest heaving up and down. In truth, she knew that Lin Ming wasn't deaf, because when she had called out to him at the mountain he had turned his head to look at her.

She had purely been trying to help him, but she hadn't expected that he would turn such a deaf ear to everything they said.

As if he was indifferent to all that surrounded him.

"It's fine, Junior-apprentice Sister, you can do with saying a few words less. You seem to have forgotten Master's teachings..." The young man whispered in rebuke. The young woman pursed her lips and no longer spoke.

At this time, the tea party of sword arts finally began.

This sword arts tea part was not some martial arts tournament to see who was stronger, but was for the various sword masters of the South Horizon Region to come together to compare skills and learn from each other's strengths and weaknesses. All of this was to become more aware of what the sword arts truly meant.

Thus, when people attacked, it wasn't to decide victory or defeat, but was to display their extraordinary techniques and heartily and happily demonstrate their sword art cultivations.

In Lin Ming's eyes, the swordsmanship of these people wasn't worth much.

That was until... Jiang Baoyun took the stage.

On this day, Jiang Baoyun wore blue clothes. His eyebrows were like two swords flying at an angle towards his temples. His eyes were deep and profound, like glittering gems.

And behind Jiang Baoyun was a sword case. The sword case was forged from metal, and seemed simple and plain.

Two sword handles stuck out from the top of this sword case; one sword was blue, the other was black.

Everything was the same as that time at the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction Martial Meeting.

Jiang Baoyun wielded dual swords. It wasn't that both swords were used at the same time, but that the two different swords corresponded to different moves.

Now, he was still the same as before.

And Jiang Baoyun's match was Lin Ming's old friend – Jiang Lanjian!

At the Seven Profound Valleys' Total Faction Martial Meeting, Jiang Lanjian had left an incredibly deep impression on Lin Ming. In fact, there was a period of time where Lin Ming needed to hide his true name and had called himself Lin Lanjian instead.

So, after so many years, Jiang Baoyun and Jiang Lanjian considered each other rivals. With brothers and rivals that understood each other on the most basic level it was natural they would progress quickly.

The Jiang Lanjian that appeared after over 100 years shared a greater likeliness to Jiang Baoyun than he did in the past. Jiang Lanjian looked around 30 years of age, and he also wore blue clothes. Although his face wasn't as sharp and swift as the face of Jiang Baoyun, the important point here was that the sharpness lurked in his heart instead. Just by looking at him, one would think he was some treasure sword hidden in a box.

Jiang Lanjian had a bright smile on his face as he said to Jiang Baoyun, "Brother Baoyun, it's been over three years since we last fought! How many moves did we exchange last time?"

"83 moves!" Jiang Baoyun replied.

"Good! Then today, my goal is to break past a hundred!"

Jiang Lanjian was weaker than Jiang Baoyun. But, in the South Horizon Region it could already be considered a miracle for anyone to withstand a hundred moves against Jiang Baoyun.

"Master, you can do it!"

Beside Lin Ming, the 18 year old girl that had come into conflict with him before began to excitedly clap, a beautiful light blooming in her eyes. She was clearly enthusiastic to see her master fight. Apparently, the young duo that Lin Ming encountered were Jiang Lanjian's disciples.

Lin Ming didn't care much about this. Instead, he calmly looked at Jiang Baoyun and Jiang Lanjian's match.

Jiang Baoyun and Jiang Lanjian had both cultivated their own sword intents. For a time, sword beams crossed through space, incomparably brilliant.

Their sword intents even caused the swords of some weaker martial artists to ring out loud. As these rings gathered together, it was like the cry of a dragon, shocking to the mind.

These low level disciples had never seen such a grand scene before!

All of them began bubbling over with excitement.

"Fierce! They are truly worthy of being called the Cloudsword Immortal and Bluesword Immortal! Just now I thought my sword was going to go flying out of its scabbard!"

"They are the two greatest and most extraordinary sword immortals of the South Horizon Region. Generally speaking, there is no swordsman that can contend with them. Before the battle begins, their enemies' swords are already drawn to them! Moreover, I heard that… Cloudsword Immortal and Bluesword Immortal were once fellow disciples of the same sect!"

"That's right! They did come from the same sect. It was only a small and common sect called the Seven Profound Valleys, but it actually produced so many extraordinary individuals. It's simply unbelievable."

The Seven Profound Valleys was only a single third grade sect. Even if placed in a tiny land like the South Horizon Region, it wasn't enough to be glanced at twice. It had to be known that the South Horizon Region's South Sea Demon Region had been a fifth grade sect.

Even Divine Phoenix Island had been countless times stronger than the Seven Profound Valleys. For Jiang Lanjian and Jiang Baoyun to arrive at this step hadn’t been easy for either of them.

“Hey! Don’t try and look down on the Seven Profound Valleys. You might not know this but the Seven Profound Valleys once produced a legendary character. He is someone that comes from the same sect as Cloudsword Immortal and Bluesword Immortal. In the past, during the Seven Profound Valleys’ Total Faction Martial Meeting, this person ranked even above Cloudsword Immortal and Bluesword Immortal and he became the champion of the Total Faction Martial Meeting. After that, he entered the four Divine Kingdoms and stirred up a giant storm. Then his martial arts shattered the void and he ascended to the stars. It's said that his achievements surpass even those of Emperor Shakya from 3000 years ago!”

“You are speaking of Lin Ming, Sage Lin! How can anyone of the South Horizon Region not know of his legend? But he is far too strong, and many people consider him far too remote an existence. His is too mythical an existence so it's hard for people to believe that such a person came from the South Horizon Region.”

“The Seven Profound Valleys must have a raging fire when they pray at their ancestral tablets. But then again, during a period when an extreme talent appears, they can often drive the overall strength of a sect to new, never-before-seen heights. When such a person appears, all other geniuses chase after them together and only then can there be an era where heroes are pouring forth from the ranks. All things considered, perhaps it could be said that Cloudsword Immortal and Bluesword Immortal’s current achievements are due to Lin Ming’s influence!”

Lin Ming, whether it was the South Horizon Region or the central four Divine Kingdoms, was a myth-like name.

However, as these discussions fell into Lin Ming’s ears, he appeared indifferent throughout.

Beneath his icy mask, his pupils were like fathomless wells, as if he didn't hear anything at all.

"Hey! Speaking of Sage Lin, I am most clear about him! My master once personally told me of Sage Lin's matters!"

As everyone began speaking of Lin Ming, the 18 year old girl who encountered Lin Ming at the base of the mountain also impatiently joined the talks.

Her master was her pride. Her master's experiences were also her pride.

With such an excellent time to show off, how could she possibly miss out?

"That's right, Fairy Jiang, aren't you Bluesword Immortal's direct disciple? Hurry and tell us what you know!"

Someone impatiently said.

And this question caused 'Fairy Jiang' to be increasingly playful and exaggerated in her movements. At her side, her senior-apprentice brother shook his head, thinking all of this a little funny and a little embarrassing. He thought to himself, "You're 18 years old already and yet still have the disposition of a child..."

The young girl beamed with joy. She had successfully caught the gazes of all the young disciples. For most of the people here, when Lin Ming was wildly wandering the South Horizon Region their grandfathers hadn't yet been born.

The stories they heard afterwards all came in different versions so they were unable to come to a consensus. Now with someone closely related to someone who was directly present and involved in the past, they certainly listened with relish.

Towards this, Lin Ming had no interest. His heart was a still and dead pond. He felt that in this world, there might not be anything that was able to move him.

But, as Lin Ming's heart was dead, the girl's unintentional words caused his heart that had remained silent for so many years to feel a faint hint of movement…

"…You might not know, but in the past, my master admired Sage Lin the most! And what he admired was not his talent, but his fighting spirit!

"You might have heard rumors that Sage Lin was a Prince of the Nine Furnace Divine Kingdom who entered the South Horizon Region to gain experience and go adventuring. But, that is actually nonsense! My master knows that Sage Lin was actually the child of a mortal family, an extremely common and humble mortal family at that. During his youth, Sage Lin simply wasn't able to practice martial arts, and he even experienced a massive setback. The road of martial arts is bumpy and filled with holes, but Sage Lin continued walking, one step at a time.

"What my master most admired of Sage Lin was his undying spirit and perseverance. Sage Lin's goal in life was to chase after the peak of martial arts, and my master said that perhaps Sage Lin is the person closest to the peak of martial arts!"

The girl's words caused the young disciples to cry out in praise.

"To chase after the peak of martial arts? That's so amazing!"

"I wonder what the peak of martial arts is like? I also want to immediately chase after it!"

Everyone enthusiastically discussed. And as these words fell into Lin Ming's ears, his heart began to fill with emotion!

The peak of martial arts?

Such words were easily spoken. But, only those who stepped onto this road themselves knew how ephemeral a goal it was, just how many terrifying ordeals and trials one had to experience in order to run towards it!

There were so many peerless individuals in this world. How many things had they betrayed, how great of a price had they paid?

A newborn calf didn't fear the tiger. However, the more experiences one gained, the less they had the blazing fighting spirit of their youth, that unfearing and unwavering heart that dared to defy the heavens.

Really… was he old?

Lin Ming recalled the time when he had tried to break into Life Destruction in the past. He had told himself –

'If the heavens wish to destroy me then I will destroy the heavens. If the death god wants to take me then I will cut down the death god!'

The him of that time, just how heroic and daring had he been? But now…

He deeply sighed. An endless sorrow mixed together with the vicissitudes of time in his eyes.

On the cold pond, Jiang Lanjian and Jiang Baoyun's fight was reaching its most brilliant zenith. They danced through the air, their feet leaving only light ripples as they touched upon the lotuses of the pond, not even causing a single splash of water.

Sword energy pierced through the air yet not a single ice lotus was damaged…

They weren't strong, but from their sword intent, Lin Ming could profoundly feel something he once chased – an unyielding fighting spirit…

An inexplicable unwillingness suddenly stirred in his heart. He grit his teeth and tried to stimulate the weak fires of his soul once again. He wanted to use the energy from his own inner world, he wanted to impact the limits of his cultivation, he wanted to open the Magic Cube…

However, the fires of his soul and the fires of his life were far too weak.

Such a massive amount of energy needed soul force to manipulate. His inner world remained quiet like before.

And, the Magic Cube didn't respond at all…

When Lin Ming was at the Divine Lord realm, only then was he able to slowly grasp the ability to use the Magic Cube. Moreover, he hadn't been able to do so whenever he pleased.

But now, compared to when he was a Divine Lord, his soul force was nothing at all.

It was like an ant trying to shake a tree: completely meaningless.

Moreover, what caused Lin Ming to feel the most despair was that even if he could stimulate the Magic Cube, he wouldn't be able to rely on it to restore his source soul force.

Although the Magic Cube was a divine tool of the soul, its abilities lay more in extinguishing a soul and erasing spirit marks. But to restore a soul, that was unlikely to be possible.

Losing his source soul force, losing the fires of his life, that was the same as losing the source of his life.

For instance, no matter how heaven-defying a divine tool, it still couldn't restore the aged and declining Three Lives Old Man to the peak of his youth.

That would violate the most fundamental rules of the world.

Disappointment once again crashed into Lin Ming.

To struggle, to overcome loss with but a single thought. Although this was a simple thought, how many people could cross this bridge? Often in this world, there were many matters that could not be done. This wasn't because one did not want to, but because one simply could not…

He heaved a deep sigh. “I… don’t want to lose my fighting spirit. But if I have fighting spirit… so what? I have lost everything. Just how can I… defy the heavens?”

Chapter 1934 – Old Friends Meet Once More

Chapter 1934 – Old Friends Meet Once More

…

…

…

Atop the cold pond, Jiang Baoyun and Jiang Lanjian’s match was reaching its superheated phase.

Each move condensed the essence of their swordsmanship. The surrounding martial artists cheered out loud, their voices reaching into the heavens.

But at this moment, the surrounding noise served to sharply contrast Lin Ming’s deepest feelings.

Peng!

Metal rang against metal. Jiang Lanjian’s sword was knocked out of his hand.

A blue sword spun out. Sword energy wildly surged, reaching a thousand feet high.

“99 moves, just one away from my goal!” Jiang Lanjian looked at Jiang Baoyun with suspicion. “You shouldn’t have been intentionally doing that, right…”

Jiang Baoyun shook his head. “Nine through nine, all returns to one. My dance of 99 sword moves just then was a single samsara…”

The sword moves also contained samsara?

Before the surrounding martial artists could think of what happened, at this time, Jiang Lanjian's sword came crashing down from the air. Although its accompanying sword energy had weakened a great deal, it still rang out sharply.

This long sword fell onto one of the pavilions.

"Be careful!"

Many young disciples cried out in alarm, retreating as fast as they could.

Ding!

The long sword thrust into the ground, burying itself straight to the sword hilt.

And what a coincidence – the sword had nailed itself to the pavilion stage that Lin Ming was standing on.

The truth was that the sword's landing point was quite far from Lin Ming. But, the surrounding disciples had fled like a pack of surprised birds, leaving only Lin Ming behind, standing motionlessly where he was. He was like a stone sculpture, extremely glaring for some time.

Many people looked towards Lin Ming.

This mysterious person was special enough; he actually wore a wood spirit jade mask. In the South Horizon Region, wood spirit jade was a precious treasure. Not many people knew of it but there were some knowledgeable individuals who recognized it.

The icy cold wood spirit jade mask seemed slightly distorted, giving off a strange feeling.

However, what was weird was that this youth wearing the mask had a restrained cultivation and it was impossible to see what boundary he was at.

This sort of person was either a peerless master or someone proficient in concealing their cultivation, or even a truly ordinary commoner.

But presently, the last possibility didn't seem too likely.

Jiang Lanjian and Jiang Baoyun both noticed Lin Ming. Jiang Baoyun nodded.

"Friend, may I know your name?"

Jiang Baoyun could feel a familiar aura from this youth's body, but he wasn't sure just where he had sensed it before.

Lin Ming remained silent.

"How rude! Cloudsword Immortal asked you a question!"

The Sovereign of a third grade sect scolded Lin Ming. This Sovereign wanted to maintain Jiang Baoyun's authority and enhance his own impression to everyone present. But, Lin Ming remained motionless like before, as if he hadn't heard anything at all.

"You..."

In the South Horizon Region, a third grade sect Sovereign could be considered a top character in their own right, so when had they ever been ignored like this? The Sovereign became enraged and began preparing to teach Lin Ming a lesson.

But then, Jiang Baoyun said, "Sovereign Liu, please be patient."

His words were light but carried a strange tone to them, a calm affinity that caused anyone who heard him to immediately subside their anger.

Jiang Baoyun turned to Lin Ming. "Friend, my name is Jiang Baoyun, an ascetic swordsman of the South Horizon Region. If you have nothing to do right now, then how about coming to my humble abode for a drink. I happen to have a pot of thousand year fog flower wine and I would like to invite a few friends to come drink with me."

Jiang Baoyun's polite words left everyone shocked.

Thousand year fog flower wine! That was made from the spring water of Sword Mountain combined with innumerable rare treasures; it was incredibly advantageous to a martial artist! Countless people would have fought each other to drink a single cup, yet Jiang Baoyun was actually asking this unknown and seemingly mentally disturbed person to drink to his heart's content?

Jiang Lanjian’s two apprentices, the young man and woman, were left staring with wide eyes. This was thousand year fog flower wine!

And the two of them knew that whether it was their honorable master Jiang Lanjian or senior master Jiang Baoyun, both were addicted to alcohol as if it was their life.

Sword and alcohol, those were the two things most essential to their lives.

Jiang Baoyun only had half a jar of this thousand year fog flower wine. Each time he invited his friends to drink he would only have a mere few cups, and yet he was asking this unknown person to drink with him?

Who was he? Wasn’t this the same as a meat pie falling down from the heavens?

Jiang Baoyun’s invitation caused Lin Ming to sigh with emotion. After a period of silence, he finally nodded.

This left many people so depressed they nearly spat out blood.

This idiot simply didn’t know what thousand year fog flower wine was, right? To be so reluctant to drink it, he could anger people to death and not know of it!

“Please!”

Jiang Baoyun straightforwardly said.

The place Jiang Baoyun lived was very simple.

A bamboo house, a few huts, that was all.

The arrangement of the house was also simple.

An old and plain wooden table. Several chairs. A bottle of bamboo. A written poem portrait filled with overbearing sword intent.

And… rows of wine jars.

Jiang Baoyun leisurely took out the thousand year fog flower wine and heated it with warm water. Then, he washed a few cups and filled them.

There were three people in the house.

Jiang Baoyun, Jiang Lanjian, as well as Lin Ming.

After 130 years, these three old friends had unexpectedly reunited.

"Brother, may I know your honored name?"

This question was not asked by Jiang Baoyun but by Jiang Lanjian. He was also curious as to who Lin Ming was.

This individual was a complete enigma, but he could feel that… he was somewhat familiar.

But just based on this familiarity alone, Jiang Lanjian would never have thought, would never have dared to imagine it was that person…

"Very well, if this brother doesn't wish to speak his name, then there is no need to ask. When sharing a drink, all we need to do is raise our cups. Why must we know each other?"

"Let's drink!"

The three people raised their cups and drank the wine.

"Good wine!"

Jiang Lanjian praised.

Jiang Baoyun also savored the aftertaste for a long time. He praised, “The charm of wine comes from the mood of drinking wine. Those that understand wine taste not just the wine but also the mood. From the spiciness when it first enters the throat, to the fresh heat once it is swallowed, to the lasting fragrance that one can mull over. It’s just like life. In the world, countless people struggle. They experience hardship, they experience tribulations, and if they can survive all of that then they can return to their true state and release the mellow fragrance of life.

“For me, whether it is thousand year fog flower wine or some coarse distilled grain wine, the truth is that there is no essential difference, because what I am drinking is not wine, but life…”

Jiang Baoyun’s words caused Jiang Lanjian to laugh and cheer.

As for Lin Ming, his mind shook. He quietly thought about these words.

In a man’s life there was rise and fall, hardship and suffering. Just how many people experienced this?

To overcome this and return to one’s true self, achieving supreme enlightenment and becoming a legend…

The Soul Emperor was right. What he lacked in his life was tribulations.

He had come from nothing and had indeed experienced countless life and death slaughters, walking on the precipice of death innumerable times.

Lan Yunyue’s betrayal, Xuan Wuji’s hunting, Yang Yun’s plotting, Tian Mingzi’s calculations, and then the step-by-step pressure of the Good Fortune Saint Son…

All of these were considered setbacks.

But they weren’t too remarkable.

Because when many martial artists grew up, they all experienced such things.

Lin Ming remembered Dragon Fang; he remembered Jun Bluemoon. They were people who had their own stories, and their experiences, their tribulations, were not necessarily any less than his own.

However, a true great tribulation, a true great setback…

When they encountered it, they simply didn’t know what path to take out.

Chapter 1935A – Revisiting Familiar Lands

Chapter 1935A – Revisiting Familiar Lands

…

…

…

"Brother?"

Seeing Lin Ming quietly looking at his wine cup, Jiang Baoyun couldn't help but ask.

Lin Ming looked up. "Thank you…"

Jiang Baoyun was startled. He didn't know what Lin Ming was thanking him for, but this was unimportant. He openly smiled and said, "It seems that I have hit it off with a new friend. Today, none of us will rest without being drunk!"

Jiang Lanjian also echoed this sentiment. He laughed, "Haha, no drunk no sleep!"

Jiang Baoyun looked at Lin Ming and suddenly said, "Truthfully speaking, you look like someone I knew once, so that was why I invited you here to drink wine."

"Oh…"

Lin Ming fell silent, not speaking too much.

"Friend, you're quite the special one." Jiang Baoyun was stunned. Normally, one would ask just which person they reminded him of, but this masked man only uttered a single 'oh'.

Jiang Baoyun finished off his cup of wine. He recalled that time 130 years ago at the Seven Profound Valleys when he had fought Lin Ming in that unrivalled battle. In his life, that was his most unforgettable fight.

He sighed, saying, “You are indeed somewhat similar to my old friend, but you are actually different. You don’t seem as persevering as he was, but instead like an old man in the twilight of his life. But, that makes the weight on your back seem that much heavier…

“That old friend… I once tried to chase after his footsteps, but he kept running further and further away until I could no longer see him. Now, he should have already stepped onto the road towards the peak of martial arts, after all, that was his dream…”

“The peak of martial arts…” Lin Ming quietly said, somewhat at a loss. “What is the peak of martial arts?”

He asked Jiang Baoyun this question, but he also asked himself.

The truth was that in these past years, Lin Ming already had his doubts as to what the peak of martial arts was.

Countless peerless masters had searched for the peak of martial arts since ancient times.

For the peak of martial arts, Sheng Mei had done everything in her power, even giving up her body.

For the peak of martial arts, Divine Dream diligently strived and struggled.

For the peak of martial arts, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was willing to fuse with an abyssal without any hesitation…

But, just how far did they manage to go?

Not mentioning them, even the Asura Road Master or the creator of the Holy Scripture, the two of them… did they ever reach the peak of martial arts?

Jiang Baoyun said, “As to what that peak is, I don’t know. But I believe that when people see a group of mountains together, they call the top of the highest mountain the peak. If so, then my Sword Mountain is also the peak.”

Lin Ming shook his head, “Sword Mountain… is not enough.”

“Yes, it is not enough! When I mount the summit of Sword Mountain, I can overlook a country, but overlooking a country is far from enough. In this world there are endless mountain peaks. But, there must be a single mountain that is the highest. The higher a mountain peak, the more difficult it is for me. And to me, the most terrifying, the most horrifying thing is that I simply don’t know where this mountain is.”

Lin Ming calmly stared at this wine cup. Perhaps he already knew where this mountain was…

Between the three great universal divine tools, the roads of essence, energy, and divine, the Holy Scripture that cultivated the inner universe and the Heavenly Sutra that cultivated the outer universe. To fuse them together…

This was the highest peak?

Lin Ming wasn’t sure. But what he knew was that when Jiang Baoyun displayed his samsara sword arts, his dual swords weren’t anything at all when compared to the cultivation of essence, energy, divine, or the outer and inner universes.

Even if Jiang Baoyun had reached the limit of his road, that was only the heights of Sword Mountain.

“And will you keep searching?” Lin Ming suddenly asked Jiang Baoyun.

“Why wouldn’t I?” Jiang Baoyun laughed and filled his wine cup once more. “I will never stop searching. I know that my vision is limited and I might never be able to find it, but I will climb up as I did before, unendingly. I do not need to truly reach the highest peak in the world, but as I climb, I will be more than happy to simply see that peak above me!

"This is because when I climb to a new peak, my vision will expand further and I will be able to see where a higher peak lies. And when I climb up that new peak, I will find yet another higher one, and I will keep repeating this…"

"Is there any meaning to it?"

Lin Ming asked.

He knew how short a martial artist's life was. If they took detour after detour, that would only make them waste away their youth.

"There is." Jiang Baoyun solemnly nodded. He tossed back the wine in his cup. "Even if I have to climb without end in my life, even if I forever remain small and never see where the highest peak is, then at the very least… I will keep surpassing myself, I will keep defeating myself."

Defeating myself?

At that moment, Lin Ming's heart shook, as if something touched it.

Defeating himself… in life, a person's greatest enemy was themselves.

Jiang Baoyun was doomed to never be able to step onto the peak of martial arts in his life, but, he still continued to seek it out, because every time he climbed a new mountain peak it would mean he had defeated his old self.

Sometimes, even if a person knew that what they were trying to do was impossible, they would still rush in without hesitation.

A moth to a flame – wasn't this what it was?

Lin Ming was silent. He mulled over these new sentiments in his heart, not speaking.

He had once said that he was a moth willing to fly into the fire.

However, a human was not a moth.

For those who were willing to be moths that flew into the flames, the truth was that when they really did rush into that blazing inferno, they would still see a glimmer of hope within.

In the past, Lin Ming was also like this.

He said he would be a moth that flew into the flames, and he did do that, moreover, he even succeeded.

However, a real moth would not succeed.

For them to fly into a flame, what they faced was certain death.

When one truly saw no hope, when the flames burned brightly before them, how many people would still be willing to rush in?

“Let’s have another drink!”

Jiang Baoyun’s words broke Lin Ming’s reverie. Lin Ming drank another cup of wine.

Cup after cup, the thousand year fog flower wine was finished.

They changed to a new wine. Jar after jar, it was unknown how many jars they drank.

These three normally wouldn’t become drunk. But today, they did.

When a person was drunk, their thoughts would become muddled.

The lives of the people.

The common folk worked for their livelihoods, bustling about.

Nobles and officials engaged in intrigue and plotting for their countries and people.

Common martial artists fought in life and death slaughters to struggle for a higher boundary.

Empyreans and True Divinities schemed for their races and for the survival of their people…

Life was a battle, all muddled up together.

To savor the mellowness and spiciness of life, when the thoughts were truly muddled, perhaps that was when one could truly understand the mysteries…

This was the mood of wine, as well as the abstraction of life…

Lin Ming didn't know how many jars of wine he drank. He only stopped when all three people were lying in a drunken daze on the ground, drifting off to sleep.

With this thought in mind, Lin Ming slept deeply.

It had been many years since he had rested like this.

He didn't worry about humanity's great calamity, he didn't worry about being hunted by a True Divinity, and he didn't worry about his fading fires of the soul.

A rare indulgence, a rare moment of muddled mindedness.

…

The awakening of a dream.

The night was deep.

Jiang Baoyun and Jiang Lanjian were still sleeping. The table was covered with messy bottles and cups of wine, and beside it were several empty wine jars.

Lin Ming looked at them for a while and then stood up.

And at this time, Jiang Baoyun also awoke.

“Leaving?”

Jiang Baoyun looked towards Lin Ming. Lin Ming nodded.

“Where to?”

Lin Ming was silent for a moment before saying, “To another place…”

He had a premonition that this would be the last time he ever saw Jiang Baoyun.

Lin Ming continued, “And you?”

Jiang Baoyun smiled. “Me? I will be searching… for a higher mountain peak…”

Chapter 1935B – Revisiting Familiar Lands

Chapter 1935B – Revisiting Familiar Lands

…

…

…

Lin Ming departed. His visit to Sword Mountain had left him with an inexplicable feeling.

Although during this period he did not perceive cultivation methods, enlighten himself on the Heavenly Dao, or even sit in meditation, Lin Ming knew that in truth, his heart had gone through an unprecedented baptism.

If the fires of his soul were still vibrant, then these feelings and sentiments would bring him unimaginable accomplishments in the future.

However, he still hadn't found a way to restore his source soul force…

He crossed Sword Mountain, passing through a vast wilderness and then arriving at the Sky Fortune Kingdom.

The Sky Fortune Kingdom – the land where he was born and raised.

This land carried far too many memories for him.

Lin Ming stood on a mountain, looking down over the country. In the infinite vastness of the cosmos, this tiny nation was far too small. It wouldn't even be able to be described as a grain of sand in the desert.

But even so, this tiny land was burdened with Lin Ming's memories…

He spread out his sense, easily covering the entire nation.

He found Green Mulberry City; this was the city he grew up in as a child.

In the past, Green Mulberry City was a small town. Its walls were 200 feet high and it had less than a hundred thousand citizens living within.

But in the current era, Green Mulberry City had already surpassed the capital, Sky Fortune City, and had become the number one city of the Sky Fortune Kingdom.

This city was extremely lively and bustling. The streets were wide and spacious and filled with crowds of boisterous people.

This world-overturning change was naturally because of Lin Ming. Lin Ming had come from this city and was the legendary hero of Green Mulberry City. Because of this, innumerable martial artists came to visit, and these martial artists possessed a massive amount of wealth that boosted Green Mulberry's rapid growth.

At the city entrance there were three 30 foot high rock sculptures.

The sculpture in the city was that of Lin Ming. Lin Ming's statue grasped a long spear that pointed straight into the bright blue skies.

Behind Lin Ming, there were two sculptures of peerless women. They were as beautiful as ephemeral fairies; they were Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan.

These three statues were worshipped by countless people every year.

Lin Ming stood at the entrance of the city for a long time, looking around.

Finally, he stepped into the city.

In the busy crowds there was everyone one could think of: students, martial artists, actors, maids, chair-bearers, stall owners selling sesame cakes…

“Come on, take a look! Take a look! Don’t miss out on this! I can crack a stone on my chest and a jar on my head! Those with money come and try, those without money, come and look!” A man with a bare upper body excitedly shouted out to the crowd, his fists cupped together.

“Feng shui can tell your fortune. If you believe, then come and try it, and if you don’t...” A fortune teller had set up a stall to divine the futures of gullible customers.

Lin Ming listened to the sounds all around him. Slowly, he blended into the crowd, become a common and inconspicuous individual. Only the mask covering his face caused people to notice him.

Luxurious carriages could be seen everywhere. Exquisite sedan chairs came one after another.

Some people rode towering horses into the city. Some people walked in with their heads held high, and some people sat at the city entrance in rags, begging atop their straw mats.

“Buy a sesame cake! These are fresh sesame cakes that just came out of the oven! Two pennies for one! Fresh and fragrant, these are made with the secret recipe of my ancestors! Little brother, how about trying one?”

As Lin Ming passed over a stone bridge, an aunty selling sesame cakes shouted out to him.

Lin Ming turned to see an aunty. Her face was wrapped in a scarf. Her exposed skin was reddened from years of sun exposure and harsh winds. She wore simple and coarse clothes, and a pair of worn out shoes.

At this time, she had wrapped a sesame cake with a piece of paper. The hands that held the sesame cake were gnarled with age.

Lin Ming looked at this aunty and felt a burning feeling in his nose. He felt over his body, but he knew he didn’t have any copper coins or even gold or silver.

He couldn’t take out anything from his spatial ring. Any single item taken out and placed in the mortal world would cause a catastrophe.

Thus, he shook his head.

The aunty looked at Lin Ming’s clothes. He didn’t seem like a poor person, but he didn’t have a single penny on him. Perhaps he had forgotten to bring money.

She smiled, “Little brother, did you forget to bring money? It’s already noon, you might not have eaten yet. Here, take a sesame cake, it’s free of charge.”

The aunty took the paper-wrapped sesame cake and stuffed it into Lin Ming’s hands.

Lin Ming took the sesame cake. He stood there, not knowing what feeling was in his heart.

In the past when Lin Ming was still a child, his family circumstances hadn’t been bad or good. His parents managed a restaurant for their clan and would receive money every year. When his mother gave him pocket money, Lin Ming would frequently stroll through the streets, buying sesame cakes and candied fruits.

Lin Ming held the sesame cake in his hands and slowly brought it up to his mouth. He took a small bite.

The mild taste melted in his mouth, bringing with it a unique fragrance.

The flavor hadn’t changed, even after over 100 years.

The only change was… those who ate the sesame cake…

Lin Ming cautiously ate.

This was a food unique to mortals. For many years, Lin Ming had eaten innumerable heavenly materials. Just a tiny bit of what he ate for a single meal couldn’t even be afforded by the entire wealth of a nation. But… he couldn’t remember any heavenly materials that tasted as good as this sesame cake did today. Lin Ming ate it up.

"Little brother, how is it?"

The aunty saw tears form at the corners of Lin Ming's eyes as he ate the sesame cake, and she was flustered a little. "Does the cake not taste good? Or did you have some troubles with your family and run away…?"

"No, I'm fine… thank you, aunty…"

Lin Ming shook his head. He respectfully bowed and then turned to leave.

Lin Ming walked forwards step by step. Along the way, he saw many dignitaries and nobles. He saw young masters riding atop horses and spoiled misses in their sedans.

He saw even more poor people. He saw prostitutes displaying their bodies in front of brothels and he saw beggars begging on the streets.

The life of a mortal was less than a mere hundred years. From young to old, who knew how many peoples had been born and died, living through happiness and suffering.

Lin Ming had seen these sights in his youth. But, he had never truly experienced it.

When martial artists cultivated the Heavenly Dao, that was a type of enlightenment.

And returning to the mortal world and feeling the soil, that was also another type of enlightenment.

Yet, there were far too many people who perceived the Heavenly Dao and far too few people who understood the toils of mortals…

A martial artist stood at too high a height. Compared to an ordinary person, there was a natural moat as great at the skies that separated them; they were naturally unable to feel the sweet, sour, spicy, and all the other tastes of a mortal's life.

Imperceptibly, Lin Ming arrived at the center of Green Mulberry City. Here was where the Lin Family was located.

For the past 100 some years, because of Lin Ming, they had become the number one mortal family clan of the entire Sky Fortune Kingdom and even the entire South Horizon Region.

Even the royal families of great nations weren't as prominent or prestigious as the Lin Family.

No matter who it was or what influence they came from, no one dared to provoke the Lin Family.

In the past, Lin Ming had taken his parents away from the Lin Family and had ended his karma with them. Today, Lin Ming returned to the Lin Family, but only quietly stood at the front gates.

For two hours, Lin Ming watched as all sorts of famed and powerful individuals walked in and out of the Lin Family. Each one was respectful as they walked in, and didn't dare to hurry their steps.

He also saw some disciples of the Lin Family practice their martial artists on the military field, their movements intense and vigorous.

The current head of the Lin Family was an intelligent individual. He understood that one's own strength was the most important thing.

Lin Ming silently looked at all of this and then silently departed. From start to finish, he never passed through the gates of the Lin Family.

Life and death was fated, wealth and honor came and went. The Lin Family should be able to live prosperously for thousands of years, but in this world, there was no such thing as eternal wealth and glory.

Perhaps in the future, this respected family would be ruined, one day reverting to an ordinary family…

In Lin Ming's eyes, this was a natural samsara. There was no need to change it…

Chapter 1936A – A Snowy Night

Chapter 1936A – A Snowy Night

…

…

…

Lin Ming’s last stop in Green Mulberry City was the restaurant that his parents had managed for the Lin Family in the past.

However, the restaurant was no longer a restaurant. It was no longer open for business, but closed up against outsiders.

This restaurant was a treasure land of the Lin Family. Let alone eating a meal, one couldn’t even visit.

Even every new generation of the Sky Fortune Kingdom’s emperor would only be able to distantly pay their respects when they came to visit Green Mulberry City.

In the Sky Fortune Kingdom, the truth was that the Lin Family represented something similar to divine right. They were a force that stood above imperial authority and were insurmountable.

Seeing this restaurant that no one could even enter, Lin Ming seemed to lose interest in revisiting the familiar places.

In revisiting familiar places, he didn’t come to see the sights, but to recall memories.

When the Lin Family restaurant was no longer the same and instead had taken on a completely different significance, Lin Ming no longer wished to go in.

Because, from there, in the end these memories could not be found…

Lin Ming left. He left Green Mulberry City and left the Sky Fortune Kingdom…

Thinking about it, ever since Sheng Mei drew out Lin Ming's source soul force, around seven or eight years had passed.

Lin Ming could feel his cultivation fall every day. Although the tiny amount of source soul force left in his body made it so that he didn't age and turn senile, his weak fires of life weren't able to be summoned. He also couldn't withstand the burden of the massive energy and cultivation contained within his body.

Slowly, these strengths dissipated.

He began to weaken.

He travelled to the north. He passed through villages and eventually arrived at a northern grassland.

This land was not as peaceful as the Sky Fortune Kingdom.

Soldiers and cavalry chaotically wandered about. War happened year-round. Lin Ming walked through the streets and could feel the worry and panic in the hearts of the walking pedestrians. They often had scarves wrapped around their heads, their footsteps hurried and their expressions tense.

War, famine, plagues; to mortals these were three of the most terrifying events.

And once war, famine, and plagues erupted it would likely spread.

On this day, there was heavy snow.

Lin Ming went to a remote mountain. The day was late and the path of the road couldn't be seen. The snow was knee-deep. If this was a valley, an entire person could be swallowed up.

Lin Ming looked at the vast white mountain ridge that was illuminated in a pall of night. He wanted to climb the mountain, but at this time, he suddenly felt inexplicably cold. He couldn’t help but shiver.

Although Lin Ming’s cultivation had fallen, he still wasn’t so weak that he couldn’t withstand the cold on this snowy mountain. In fact, even if the most powerful ice-attribute martial artist of the Sky Spill Planet were to freely attack Lin Ming, he wouldn’t feel anything at all.

But on this day, he felt an inexplicable chill.

This was a coldness that came from the soul, making it nearly impossible for Lin Ming to withstand.

He knew that the wounds Sheng Mei left in him couldn’t be cured. Moreover… they would become increasingly heavy until finally, they took his life.

He used his sense to cover this mountain. He wanted to look for a place to rest.

But as he searched, his mind suddenly shook. He… saw a person, a person he recognized. Although this person’s appearance had greatly changed, Lin Ming was still able to recognize him.

There were far too many shadows of the past on his appearance. And, his saber hadn’t changed for over 130 years…

……..

“This damnable weather, what hellish luck!”

“To hurry on the road on such a snowy night can take a man’s life. I wonder if the cold weather will sicken his highness the crown prince.”

Two youths complained in low voices. They spoke in whispers. On such a snowy and windy night, their voices couldn’t travel too far.

"Just forget it. We have to find the little princess within three days, evacuate from this area and return to our base. If we stay too long then the White Guard will definitely find us."

An old man spoke. He wore a bamboo hat and carried a child in his arms.

He wore a long coat and tried to cover the shivering child in his arms as much as possible. He kept his head lowered as he hurried along.

"What if we can't find her?" A youth anxiously asked…

"If we can't find her then that is the will of heaven…" The old man deeply sighed and shook his head. "If I remember correctly then the cave we stopped by last year is just in front of us. There should still be some hay and firewood left inside, so let's rest in there tonight."

As the old man spoke he searched out the snow road before him. He had a sharp memory, and after a quarter hour he found the cave he remembered from the past.

Everyone let out a long breath of relief. To cross a mountain on a snowy night, that was something they could withstand, but the child with them wouldn't be able to bear it.

The group quickly ran into the cave. They brushed the snow off their bodies and took off their bamboo hats.

Although the cave was still cold, the air inside was dry. And as the old man remembered, there really was hay and firewood within.

They planned to use the firewood to light a fire.

But when they lit the flames, at the moment the cave was illuminated in light, they were all startled and quickly drew backwards.

With sharp ringing sounds, everyone drew out their weapons!

This was because there was someone sitting in the cave. He wore a jade-green mask that had an extremely cold and indifferent expression carved into it. Moreover, this person hadn't made a single sound nor did he release any aura. This was why when the group entered the cave, no one had noticed him.

"Who are you?"

Everyone had their guards raised. This was because they were all being hunted down by the White Guard.

In this remote part of a snowy mountain, a mysterious person had suddenly appeared, making them all feel as if they were in a perilous situation.

"Just a passerby…"

Lin Ming quietly said. His eyes were focused on the old man in the group.

This old man appeared to be around 60 years of age. His face was engraved with the years of wind and frost. From the outline of his face, one could vaguely sense that in his youth, this old man had also once been a considerably dashing individual.

This old man only had a single arm. His hair was white and a full white mustache fell down like whiskers. There was a deep scar on his face. It starting from his eyebrows and extended down to his neck, nearly splitting through his entire face.

Although this old man was extremely vigilant, there was a deep weariness emanating from him. His old and dirty eyes were bloodshot, and one could see that he hadn't slept well for several days.

At this time, the old man held out his sword to confront Lin Ming and simultaneously pushed the child to his back to protect him. This child was also sensible and aware of the situation. He didn't cry nor make noise, but instead quietly stood behind the old man and peeked out at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was slightly moved. The image of this exhausted old man in front of him began to slowly overlap with another image in his mind.

This image wore embroidered robes and a golden crown tied up his hair. He had an elegant sword strapped onto his waist and his appearance was bold and heroic. Moreover, the corners of his lips had a slight touch of taunting contempt to them, as if to show off his disdain for all others.

If it weren't for the deep red sword wrapped in snakeskin that was in the old man's hand, if it weren't for the familiar fire-attribute true essence emanating from this old man…

Then Lin Ming would never have believed that this old man was an old enemy from his past – Zhu Yan.

Zhu Yan.

In Green Mulberry City, Zhu Yan had stolen away his first love – Lan Yunyue.

Afterwards, Lin Ming had firmed his determination to enter the Seven Profound Martial House. He took his small amount of money and travelled to the Sky Fortune Kingdom to partake in the examinations there. Because he just happened to encounter Zhu Yan by chance when he was registering, one of Zhu Yan's friends had Lin Ming secretly expelled from his living quarters in order to curry favor. Because of that, Lin Ming went to Great Clarity Pavilion where he worked as a deboner, and it was there that Lin Ming obtained the Magic Cube.

Afterwards, Lin Ming's cultivation rapidly rose. When his true ability was revealed to the world, this caused Sky Fortune City's royal family to take notice of him and do everything in their power to win him over.

As for Zhu Yan, because there was a grudge between him and Lin Ming, he was forced to endure great pressure and isolation.

Even his lord, the Tenth Prince Yang Zhen, had started to force Zhu Yan's hand in his quest for the throne. Yang Zhen had forced Zhu Yan to break his engagement with Lan Yunyue.

Finally, Zhu Yan was defeated by Lin Ming.

Then, whether it was the Zhu Family or the Tenth Prince, Zhu Yan had lost all value to them. Instead he had become a burden.

Thus, Zhu Yan had been expelled.

From that point on, Lin Ming no longer saw Zhu Yan again. It had been over 130 years since they last saw each other.

Lin Ming never thought that after the day he last saw Zhu Yan, the next time they met, Zhu Yan would already be like this.

The scar on his face. His single arm. His old and exhausted face…

Lin Ming could even see the internal injuries left in his body. These hidden wounds had likely even affected Zhu Yan's road of martial arts.

Because of all of this, Lin Ming could imagine just how much change and hardship Zhu Yan had experienced over the years.

"You… know me?"

Zhu Yan noticed Lin Ming's gaze and was startled.

Lin Ming didn't reply. He leaned against the rock behind him. A little hay covered the ground he sat on. At this time, he still felt that biting cold from within.

This pain that came from the soul was nearly unbearable.

"He… he looks like he's shivering." Someone said in a whisper as they looked at Lin Ming.

"Is he too cold?"

Everyone thought the situation a little absurd. With the sudden appearance of a masked individual, they thought this might be some peerless master sent to assassinate them. But now, this person was violently shivering as if they couldn't stand this cold mountain wind.

"That scared me. I thought it was some master..."

"Don't lower your guard!"

The group chose the corner furthest from Lin Ming and carefully sat down, keeping an eye on him the entire time.

"Old Flame, should we do something about him..." A person said with a true essence sound transmission, "I don't know whether he heard our conversation from before..."

"The snow is heavy and the winds are great. He shouldn't have heard us. And if he did, that proves his cultivation is far above ours. If we fight him, we might be the ones killed instead. So... just don't try to stir up any unnecessary trouble with someone, especially when you don't know what their origin is. Although he looks sick, for some reason I feel strange when I see him."

Zhu Yan slowly said. He no longer went by his old name, but instead called himself by a single character – Flame.

Chapter 1936B – A Snowy Night

Chapter 1936B – A Snowy Night

…

…

…

The group set up a bonfire. They sat around the warm edges eating dried meats and drinking water. The entire time, they remained vigilant against Lin Ming.

The little boy in Zhu Yan's arms was quiet from beginning to end. His large eyes blinked as he stared at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming noticed that this little boy had a thread of red silk hanging around his neck and adorned with a common-looking bronze medal. This bronze medal had a unique flower petal design on it.

Zhu Yan seemed to realize something. Unhurriedly, he slipped the bronze medal into the boy's collar…

After eating, Zhu Yan sat in rest with his eyes closed. But, his attention was focused on Lin Ming the entire time.

He didn't know why, but the more he looked at this person, the stranger the feeling that tickled his mind. He just couldn't identify what it was.

Lin Ming was also looking at Zhu Yan. Over 130 years had passed and the endless changes of mortal life had been and gone. Recalling the proud and arrogant youth of the past, Lin Ming found it hard to imagine that such a person had undergone such a dramatic transformation.

Lin Ming had heard their words when they were outside the cave just then. It was clear that they were searching for children from the royal family.

As Lin Ming crossed through the northern deserts and grasslands, he had seen the turmoil of war and the chaos of battle. He was able to guess just what was occurring.

This was a war of a mortal nation. When a nation was destroyed by another nation, the royal family fled the capital and the prince and princess were separated…

As for Zhu Yan, he and his subordinates were assigned to seek out the lost children of the royal family. It was clear that this was a dangerous mission.

If they weren't careful then they would all be killed.

Lin Ming could feel that Zhu Yan didn't do all of this for glory and riches. This was because Zhu Yan didn't have much life left to live. At his current cultivation boundary, a hundred some years was his limit.

He likely wouldn't be able to wait for the revival of the nation. Moreover, such a defeated dynasty usually found it impossibly difficult to stage a comeback.

Then for what reason did he support all of these meaningless actions that were also extremely dangerous?

As this thought was crossing through Lin Ming's mind, a sheepskin bag of water was tossed towards him.

Lin Ming reached out a hand and grabbed the water bag. The bag was hot in his hands; the water had been heated over the bonfire and then poured into the bag.

This water bag was thrown over by Zhu Yan.

"Aren't you cold? Drink some hot water." Zhu Yan looked at Lin Ming, his eyes wary.

Lin Ming took off the lid and drank a mouthful before tossing the water bag back.

He didn't speak to Zhu Yan. The several people in his group rested in the cave and took turns on watch, but Lin Ming didn't sleep a single moment throughout the night.

Early in the morning, Zhu Yan and the others donned their bamboo hats and left. Their group trudged through the boundless heavy snow, quickly vanishing from sight...

Lin Ming quietly watched Zhu Yan's fading back and also stepped into the snow...

He arrived at a small town. There weren't many people here. Without anyone to sweep away the snow, the ground was a blank white canvas.

Walking through the streets, Lin Ming could feel the coldness within his body becoming increasingly heavy and thick.

Suddenly, his body shook and his face paled. In that moment, an indescribably agonizing pain swelled up from his spiritual sea.

Puff!

Lin Ming spat out a mouthful of blood. The bright red blood splashed onto the front of his clothes. This was a grisly and shocking sight.

Lin Ming trembled. He somehow couldn't support himself and slowly slumped to the ground.

Many people saw him. A woman cried out in alarm and several people began hurrying far away.

As war echoed through the land, everyone remained vigilant of others. They thought that someone had been killed on the streets.

But upon further inspection, they discovered that Lin Ming seemed to have randomly spat out a mouthful of blood.

"What's wrong with him?"

“Who knows? Perhaps he has some hidden wounds that were suddenly stirred up.”

“Look at that mask on his face. He definitely isn’t an ordinary person. He might be someone from the organization, or even an assassin…”

“He definitely knows martial arts, and if so then he was wounded by someone even stronger.”

As people said this they began to draw further and further away. A kind and soft-hearted woman couldn’t help what she was seeing and wanted to aid Lin Ming, but she was stopped by her husband.

“War is everywhere now. Don’t stir up needless troubles. If he is someone from the old dynasty and we rescue him then that will be the death penalty for us.”

People fled far away, as if they were hiding from a god of plagues.

Lin Ming’s body shivered as he withstood this scorching pain. This sort of pain originated from his soul and came from its depletion; it was unbearable.

He felt his strength rapidly drain away. His meridians and blood vessels were crudely and savagely torn open.

The pain continued for a full two hours. The white snowy canvas beneath him was already dyed red with blood. White and red, these two bright contrasting colors formed a fierce and chilling image.

“Big brother, you… are you alright…?”

As Lin Ming nearly fainted from the pain, he heard a shy voice echo out from nearby.

He opened his eyes to see a dirty little girl with big and bright eyes looking at him. She wore a tattered cloth bag over her body and a broken piece of pottery hung across her neck. It was unknown just where she had picked it up from. From the looks of it, she was a young beggar.

"Big brother, if you drink some water you might feel better." The little girl timidly held out a canteen of water. "I haven't eaten and I don't have any food, so I can only give you some water…"

The little girl was extremely pitiable. With the cold weather and her ragged clothing, her small face and hands almost seemed frozen.

Lin Ming wiped the blood from the corners of his lips and shook his head, "There's no need…"

In this era when war ravaged the lands, this little girl was likely an orphan. Her parents had probably died in the chaos of war…

Without her parents, she could only beg for food. But in this tumultuous times when the common people didn't even have enough food to fill their own stomachs, how could they have anything to give to a small child?

Her destiny was likely to die alone, drowning in fear, cold, and hunger…

As Lin Ming thought of this, he felt his heart tighten.

The hardships of a mortal were everywhere.

To a martial artist, these hardships might not even seem worthy of mentioning. But when these hardships befell these mortal commoners, it was actually a monumental matter.

Lin Ming wanted to help this little girl, but unfortunately he didn't have anything to give her. He wasn't even able to give her a steamed bun or a few copper coins.

As he was saddened, he suddenly noticed a thin red thread around the little girl's neck.

Lin Ming had seen this red silk thread before. It was exactly the same as the one that the little boy in the mountain cave had been wearing.

Sweeping out his sense, Lin Ming discovered that beneath this little girl's tattered clothing, there was a bronze medal. This bronze medal had a unique flower design, also similar to the boy's bronze medal…

Lin Ming suddenly recalled the conversation Zhu Yan had with his subordinate. Zhu Yan had said, "Just forget it. We have to find the little princess within three days, evacuate from this area and return to our base. If we stay too long then the White Guard will definitely find us."

Little princess…

Was this little girl in front of him the little princess that Zhu Yan was searching for?

An orphan from the old dynasty. She once lived an extravagant and sumptuous lifestyle every day, but now she suffered the distresses and miseries of the mortal world…

It was likely because she experienced such drastic changes that she was able to sympathize with others at such a young age.

Lin Ming was silent for a moment. He held onto the little girl's hand.

The little girl didn't resist and allowed Lin Ming to pull her along.

Lin Ming spread out his sense, covering an area of several hundred miles.

Then, Lin Ming easily found Zhu Yan and the others. They were stationed in a humble little restaurant, eating a meal as they spoke with the restaurant owner.

Lin Ming turned to the little girl. He said, "Would you like to come with me? I'll bring you to look for your big brother."

Lin Ming's words left the little girl startled. She took a step back, her eyes somewhat wary.

However, Lin Ming's eyes seemed to contain an indescribable feeling, one that seemed filled with kindness and understanding. Slowly, she nodded.

Lin Ming hugged the little girl and packed her in his coat. Then, he moved towards that common-looking restaurant.

The restaurant was only 70-80 miles away from Lin Ming, in another small town.

Lin Ming didn't walk quickly. But for some reason, that distance only took an incense stick of time beneath his feet.

Lin Ming held the little girl and walked into the restaurant.

Zhu Yan and the others were immediately on guard. They all drew their weapons.

As for the restaurant owner, he reflexively acted and closed the restaurant doors.

"It's you... just how..."

Zhu Yan looked at Lin Ming and was surprised to see him.

They had crossed paths twice now. The first time could be called a coincidence but the second time could not.

This common restaurant was in truth one of their secret hideouts. The restaurant owner was actually vice-commander of the royal guard and was a loyal and devoted servant of the emperor.

It was at this time that Lin Ming and the others also noticed the child held tightly to his chest.

Facing so many drawn weapons, the little girl was scared. Her hold on Lin Ming tightened and her small and dirty face paled.

Zhu Yan didn't know who this little girl was, but the boy behind him did.

The boy was stunned for a moment and then finally called out, “Ping’er, is that you?”

The little girl looked at the boy and was dumbfounded. After a long time, tears began to fall down her cheeks. “Big brother! It really is you!”

This little girl remembered that Lin Ming had told her he would lead her to her big brother, but she didn’t think they would really find him.

Half a year ago when their nation perished, that could have been called a parting of life and death. She never imagined that they would see each other once more.

Lin Ming set down the little girl, who ran forward and hugged her big brother.

Seeing this, Zhu Yan was bewildered.

Everyone was also left in a stunned daze. This was no different from a dream.

What was going on?

Why was this masked man holding the little princess?

It was impossible that this was a coincidence. This masked man before them had clearly brought the little princess over to look for them.

How did the masked man know they were searching for the little princess and how did they know she was this little girl?

Even if he did find the little princess, how did he know this was their secret hideout?

Everything was simply far too unbelievable!

Zhu Yan looked at Lin Ming, his sword held the entire time. He noticed the chin that was revealed outside of Lin Ming’s mask as well as Lin Ming’s two hands.

From the looks of it, Lin Ming didn’t seem too old; he seemed like someone in his twenties. At this age, he couldn’t be some peerless master, right?

Then at this time, Lin Ming suddenly began to hack and cough. He used his hands to support the lower corner of his mask. He couldn't stop the violent coughs from continuing, and it seemed as if he would cough out his lungs.

Slowly, from between the seams of Lin Ming's fingers, blood flowed out. Stream after stream, this was an alarming sight!

The people around Zhu Yan gulped as they saw this sight. This person was coughing so badly that he was vomiting blood.

No matter how they saw it, this person had reached the terminal stages of an illness and didn't have much longer to live.

But at this time, Lin Ming was startled. In that instant he felt a change; there was killing intent… that had locked onto this location!

He spread out his sense and discovered that outside the restaurant was a crowd of white-clothed swordsmen approaching at rapid speed.

Wherever they went, citizens would flee in all directions as if they were running from snakes!

The goal of these white-clothed swordsmen was the little restaurant where Lin Ming was!

Chapter 1937 – The Passing of Life

Chapter 1937 – The Passing of Life

…

…

…

“Hey, you… are you okay…?” Zhu Yan and his group of seven or eight people were scared and a little apprehensive as they saw all the blood flowing out from between Lin Ming’s fingers.

This man had already bled so much; could he even remain alive for much longer?

“Big brother…”

The little girl looked up at Lin Ming, her eyes filling with tears. Lin Ming had led her here and yet he was injured so heavily.

“White Wing, Lotus Thorn, you two heat some hot water and prepare some towels. Let this brother rest for a while.” Zhu Yan said to a man and woman behind him.

He could faintly feel that Lin Ming’s wounds were far too deep and incurable.

“That’s right… Old Flame, since the little princess has been found, when should we depart?” As White Wing went to fetch some heated water, someone else suddenly asked this question. To remain in the territory of their enemies was far too dangerous a prospect.

“Yes, we should set off tonight…”

“Then this man…”

Thorn Lotus looked at Lin Ming, feeling the situation a bit tricky.

Lin Ming's identity was unknown and he also had such heavy wounds. Looking at the present situation, this man wouldn't be able to properly stand for some time. However, if they were fleeing these lands and had to take on the burden of Lin Ming, then the chances of successful escape would be much lower.

"Look for a horse and carriage and bring him with us. As for whether or not he can last, that will depend on his good fortune..."

Zhu Yan sighed. Although Lin Ming seemed a bit uncommon, if he was wounded to such a degree then Zhu Yan feared that he wouldn't be able to withstand the rocky journey of over 2000 miles.

However, no matter what was said, Lin Ming was still the benefactor who had found the little princess. They couldn't just abandon him here.

Furthermore, he also wanted to ask Lin Ming some questions. Zhu Yan wanted to ask who had entrusted him with his mission, why he had helped them, and how he had done all that he did.

The hot water arrived. Lin Ming didn't pick up the towel but instead grabbed onto the water basin. He spat out blood, dyeing the entire water basin blood red.

Everyone gulped as they saw this happen. They didn't know just what to say. If this person continued vomiting blood like this, it wouldn't take long for him to vomit out all the blood in his body.

At this time, Lin Ming became increasingly pale. This blood he spat out was in truth his essence energy.

His blood vitality and strength might have weakened, but his body was still incredibly formidable and wouldn't allow his blood vitality to diminish.

Once Lin Ming's blood vitality weakened, his body would continuously and spontaneously produce blood to heal him.

However, because of the weak fires of life that burned in Lin Ming, he wasn't able to withstand such powerful blood vitality. As a result, Lin Ming coughed up blood. The more blood he vomited, the weaker his body become.

No matter how powerful his body was, it couldn't withstand such damage. Eventually he would exhaust all of his essence energy.

His soul force passing, his life passing; just how much longer did he have to live?

He humorlessly laughed. But at this time, loud footsteps rang through the air.

Frigid and deadly killing intent broke into the room. The complexions of Zhu Yan and the others immediately changed.

"This is bad!"

"The White Guard!"

The group of people drew their weapons, their faces paler than death.

"We will stop the White Guard here! Sun Tai, you bring the little princess and the little prince to the rear court and look for a chance to break out! Protect them even if it costs you your life!"

"Old Flame..." The youth called Sun Tai was anxious.

"Hurry!" Zhu Yan shouted.

However, a high-pitched voice, not like a man and not like a woman, sounded out. "Jejejeje! None of you can leave, all of you are staying!"

Kacha! Kacha!

The wooden doors of the restaurant suddenly burst apart. A group of swordsmen in white shirts and white capes rushed into the restaurant, completely surrounding the building!

This was the White Guard raised by the new royal court.

The White Guard was a special unit formed of elites. The most low level members of this force were at the Altering Muscle realm, and their core members were at the Pulse Condensation realm.

The guard captains and commanders were also at the peak Pulse Condensation realm and Houtian realm.

As for the one leading this force of the White Guard, he was the high commander of the White Guard. This person wore a bright yellow robe and had a face caked white with makeup. His voice was confusing; he was the great manager eunuch of the new royal court.

A eunuch had no fleshly desires and had locked up their yang essence within themselves. Among mortals, they had some of the fastest-increasing cultivations. This White Guard manager eunuch possessed a peak Houtian realm cultivation.

This was nearly the limit that a common martial artist could reach on their road of martial artists! After that was the Xiantian realm and beyond. Oftentimes, one needed a sect like the Seven Profound Valleys that had their own inheritances in order to become a Xiantian master, and even then they didn't have many of them.

A peak Houtian martial artist. Zhu Yan could hardly believe his eyes. Even when he was at his strongest state in the past, he had only been a half-step into the threshold of the Houtian realm.

See this eunuch commander here, he knew that everything was lost. All of them were finished.

No one would survive.

“Haha, I was also looking for these two little babies. I never thought that Commander Flame would help me so much. Really, I must thank you!”

The eunuch’s voice was keening and filled with an icy yin energy. His face was filled with taunting mockery.

At this time, the eunuch noticed Lin Ming.

With the sudden appearance of the White Guard, Zhu Yan and the others were all stern as they faced their impending deaths, and even the two children were shivering from fear. This was well within his expectations.

But in this room, there was also a strange youth wearing a mask. This youth was currently coughing up blood, and the bowl beneath him was dyed red.

Even for the eunuch commander who had seen many things before, such a scene left him dumbfounded. “I can’t believe you would even bring a lung disease patient here. He’s so sick and yet you continue on your mission. You all must truly be desperate, ha...”

Listening to his enemy’s taunts, Zhu Yan grit his teeth so hard they nearly broke. Not only did he not manage to rescue the little prince and princess but he had even pushed them into the fire.

The old eunuch cackled as he looked at Zhu Yan. An all-knowing expression crossed his face. “Commander Flame, you really are a brain-dead old thing. A wise man knows to submit to the circumstances. The old dynasty is already gone. If you are willing to submit to my sovereign then you will absolutely be granted a hundred acres of fertile land and wives and concubines of your choosing to take care of you for the rest of your remaining life.”

“Go die!” Zhu Yan cried out loud and suddenly attacked. He grasped the Scarlet Flare sword and chopped down at the eunuch’s head!

The eunuch commander contemptuously sneered. He stretched out a finger. He had absolute confidence in himself that a single finger could kill Zhu Yan.

However, the moment that he wanted to kill Zhu Yan, his face froze and his body stiffened.

His eyes veered off and looked past Zhu Yan. There, behind Zhu Yan, was a youth wearing a jade mask supporting himself using a wash basin. This youth was coughing up massive mouthfuls of blood as if he were terminally ill and would die at any moment.

However, the moment that the eunuch commander was about to attack, the youth propping himself up on the wash basin turned his head and casually glanced at him.

The youth's eyes seemed dull and gloomy from being far too weak, but this look seemed as sharp as a sword, a sword that instantly pierced through the heart of the eunuch commander.

The eunuch commander's divine sense collapsed and his meridians were instantly torn to shreds. An incredible pain directly impacted every sense of his body as he began wildly bleeding from his head!

Puff!

Zhu Yan's sword pierced through the eunuch's throat. But, the truth was that this sword had only added a hole to an already dead man.

The eunuch commander completely stiffened. With shocked eyes that looked as if he had seen a ghost, he looked straight forwards. However, these eyes didn't look at Zhu Yan, but were looking at Lin Ming.

At this time, Lin Ming had already turned his head back and was continuing to cough blood.

"…"

"…"

Everyone was left speechless. Many people slowly reacted. They saw the eunuch commander's hand covering his neck and another finger pointed at Lin Ming, and were able to somewhat guess the situation from this.

The old eunuch opened his mouth as if he was struggling to say something, but no words came out.

Then, he plopped to the ground, dead where he lay.

For a time, everyone was left bewildered. The numerous White Guards had distorted expressions. The eunuch commander had a peak Houtian realm cultivation, and even martial artists from sects wouldn't be his match.

But today, he had died violently and miserably where he stood!

As for Zhu Yan and his group, they were all left dazed. The situation had changed so quickly that they couldn't respond.

Zhu Yan certainly knew that the reason the old eunuch died just then was nothing to do with him at all!

"This… this is…"

Zhu Yan looked at Lin Ming and gulped. Just who was this masked man?

The White Guard was shaken. Their commander had died a gruesome death and now they were all left in a dilemma, unsure of what action to take!

But escaping like this was also impossible. If it were known that they were all forced back by some person who seemed to be dying from lung disease, then none of them would be forgiven for this crime.

Three people quietly touched their wrist crossbows, wanting to sneak attack Lin Ming.

They felt that Lin Ming was on the verge of death with some terminal disease, or perhaps he was some peerless master that had suffered grievous wounds. Although he was fierce his origin energy was limited and that move just then absolutely must not have been easy. This man might have even overdrawn his strength to accomplish it.

As long as they could kill this person or heavily wound him, then victory was theirs.

Of these three sneak attackers, two were at the peak Pulse Condensation realm and one was at the early Houtian realm. They were all top masters within the White Guard.

But, as they prepared to shoot their concealed weapons, their bodies suddenly shook. Then their eyes glazed over and their bodies slumped to the ground as if someone had pulled out their spines.

Their breathing stopped; they had died where they stood.

And this time, Lin Ming hadn’t even bothered to turn his head. He still faced the wash basin, beads of sweat dripping down his face. His expression was pained.

This time, an even deeper silence fell over everyone. Even the sound of a falling needle could be heard.

“Withdraw!”

Several nearby White Guard captains were scared senseless. If they had also attacked with the others just then, then they would also be corpses by now!

The White Guard fled. Whether it was the high level or middle level members, they all felt as if they had encountered the devil!

Without even moving, he had killed four top masters.

Moreover, no one knew how he had attacked!

It was like he had killed them all with nothing but a thought!

To fight such an opponent, even describing it as an egg being smashing against a rock wasn’t enough!

The group of a hundred plus White Guard elites began to retreat like a falling tide. Lin Ming didn’t pay any attention to this.

He could already feel something wrong with him. His spiritual sea was in severe pain, a pain so intense it left him in a trance, almost unable to distinguish between reality and illusion.

This agonizing pain continued for a quarter hour before it slowly faded away. Lin Ming picked up a blood-covered towel and slowly wiped his mouth.

His entire body was drenched in sweat and his front was dyed deep red with blood. His face was as pale as paper. With this sort of appearance, it was hard for the others to imagine how he was still alive.

Seeing Lin Ming wipe away his blood, Zhu Yan and the others were all quiet. At this time, no one knew what to say.

Just half an hour ago he had been vomiting blood. Yet as he was coughing up blood, he had used but a thought to kill two great commanders and two guard captains of the White Guard. Those four were butchers that had taken innumerable lives. These were characters that could cause others to pale just from a mention of their names!

From the moment the White Guard came to the moment they left, this masked youth had been coughing up blood the entire time, and even now he was still coughing.

Chapter 1938A – Live Without Regret

Chapter 1938A – Live Without Regret

…

…

…

If a mortal were to vomit so much blood, they would have long exhausted themselves of any blood in their body.

But this masked person seemed as if he could continue spewing blood. Then, there was only a single explanation for this, and that was that his body was regenerating blood at an unimaginable speed.

Zhu Yan could tell from Lin Ming's chin and hands that he was an extremely young person. Yet his strength had reached impossibly high boundaries. Could even a Revolving Core master accomplish what he did?

"You… are you alright?"

Zhu Yan reluctantly said after some hesitation.

Lin Ming turned to Zhu Yan. He was no longer vomiting blood, however this wasn't because his body had recovered but because of that bout of pain just then, his mortal body was now weak to the extreme and could no longer continue producing blood.

"Benefactor, you rescued all of our lives. I will carve this graciousness in my mind!"

Zhu Yan deeply bowed.

Behind Zhu Yan, the other people as well as the two children also bowed.

Lin Ming waved his hand, signaling for everyone to stand.

“Benefactor, do you plan on resting here or… would you like to travel with us?”

Zhu Yan said with some difficulty after looking at Lin Ming for some time. He certainly wished for Lin Ming to travel with them.

He was well aware that Lin Ming wasn’t a person of this world. As for the illness Lin Ming was stricken with, none of them could help and none of them would be able to understand it.

Lin Ming looked at Zhu Yan and then at the little prince and princess behind him. As he saw the worry in the eyes of the little princess, he slowly nodded.

“Perhaps you would like to rest here and then we can continue our journey in the morning?”

According to Zhu Yan’s thoughts, the earlier they left the better. But, he feared Lin Ming wouldn’t have time to rest.

Lin Ming shook his head. “Rest is useless to me. Let us go.”

“Well… okay.”

The group gathered their valuables and disguised themselves as a caravan. Then, they set off towards the northern desert.

They didn’t know whether it was because Lin Ming had frightened everyone, but even after journeying for hundreds of miles, they hadn’t encountered the White Guard again. They met two groups of mountain bandits, but this level of opponent was something Zhu Yan and the others could easily handle.

The road was bumpy. The little princess was listless and wan all day. After suffering malnutrition for such a long time and experiencing constant hunger and cold, her body had become weak. To travel a long-distance journey like this without stopping was unbearable for her.

She was extremely tired, but as the carriage jolted about, she wasn't able to fall asleep at all.

As for the small prince, he was slightly better. However, as the cold northern winds blew on his face, he was also pale.

During a temporary rest on the road, Lin Ming came over to the little prince and little princess' side, then handed a sheepskin water bag to them.

"Big brother, this is..."

The little girl was a little more familiar with Lin Ming. She opened her wide eyes towards him.

"It's snow pear water. It's tasty..."

Lin Ming smiled. The two children listened in delight and happily took the sheepskin water bag, each one taking big gulps of it.

They were children born and raised in the imperial palace and had drunk luxury snow pear water all their lives. But, the snow pear water that Lin Ming gave them was clearly different.

It didn't taste sweet, but it was fragrant, far more fragrant than any top quality cooking wine in the royal kitchen. Moreover, as soon as they drank it they began to feel a little faint, as if they were drunk.

The two children only drank a little before their faces turned ruddy and they managed to fall asleep.

Zhu Yan watched all of this from the corner of his eyes.

"Benefactor, this is..."

Zhu Yan looked at the sheepskin water bag in the little girl's hand. A little bit of liquid dripped down from it and emitted a light fragrance that warmed the heart.

This might be… a supreme medicine of the world!

This thought flashed through Zhu Yan's mind. He had seen Lin Ming take out a pill and then dip it in the water bag before immediately taking it back out. Then the water had become a treasure medicine. If so, then the value of this pill was…

Zhu Yan felt this was unbelievable.

At this time, Lin Ming took the water bag and casually said, "You drink some too."

"I…" Zhu Yan felt somewhat apologetic. He declined, "I'm already too old… drinking it is a waste…"

"There's a lot of it." Lin Ming thoughtlessly said. Zhu Yan finally couldn't help it and received the water bag. He drank a big gulp and then felt a stream of heat pour into his dantian, causing his entire body to be warmed.

Not only was all of his exhaustion swept away but even his dantian that had remained quiet for so many years begin to stir. This sort of feeling was like his injured body being revitalized and coming back to life. He was simultaneously overjoyed but also filled with disbelief!

He had fought year after year and injuries had accumulated in his body for far too long.

Due to this, he had sought out famed doctors, and even these doctors said his wounds were impossible to cure. Zhu Yan was well aware of his bodily situation and felt that this was what his life would be like.

He never thought that this masked person would only wet some water with a medicine, and then with a single drink it would have such an effect. It was far too inconceivable!

Zhu Yan couldn't imagine just what sort of effect there would be if he ate this pill.

Lin Ming silently wrapped up the pill and handed it to Zhu Yan. “Take it. Dip it in some warm water and you can use it to restore the hidden wounds that have accumulated in your body. It will allow you to live for several dozen more years, and can also help those two children recuperate and lay down their foundation. But, remember that you cannot eat it up directly. Otherwise your body will explode from the energy. Also, do not allow anyone to know about this pill, otherwise you will draw a fatal disaster upon yourself.”

Out of the countless pills Lin Ming had on his body, this pill had a low value and was one of the most temperate.

Zhu Yan was flustered as he looked at the pill. This was a medicine that could even stir the heart of a Divine Sea Sovereign!

He refused again and again, saying, “This is far too precious; I cannot take it. Moreover, Benefactor is injured, so you will need nourishing medicines…”

Zhu Yan didn’t understand. If this masked person has such a wonderful spirit medicine, how come he didn’t eat it?

Lin Ming sighed. He shook his head, “Even if it was a hundred times or a thousand times more precious, it would still be useless to me. Take it.”

Zhu Yan was stunned. Even a medicine a hundred times more precious was useless to this masked person?

He didn’t even have time to respond. Lin Ming simply flicked his fingers and this pill flew into Zhu Yan’s spatial ring, without Zhu Yan’s involvement at all.

To Lin Ming, who was skilled in the Space Laws, such a low level spatial ring existed in name only.

Zhu Yan looked at Lin Ming and was left speechless. He could faintly guess that such a priceless-seeming pill might be nothing to Lin Ming.

He couldn't help but ask, "Why does Benefactor bestow such a generous gift on someone like me? If I am not wrong, then Benefactor should be a peak person in this world? However, you somehow ended up in distress here. I fear that to Benefactor, everyone here is nothing more than ants… why would you meddle in the affairs of mortals?"

When a person walked down the road and saw a group of ants fall into a puddle of water, they would rarely go and help them. Thus, Zhu Yan couldn't understand just why Lin Ming searched for the little princess and also killed the White Guard, sending them running away. Lin Ming even gave him a pill and accompanied their group to the north.

This was all inconceivable.

Lin Ming spookily said, "This is the circle of cause and effect…"

Originally, the samsara of a mortal's life and death was a part of the Heavenly Dao. Lin Ming didn't want to interfere in it; however, Zhu Yan was different.

This was because Zhu Yan had become like he had today because of Lin Ming. At the same time, the trajectory of Lin Ming's life had been greatly influenced by Zhu Yan.

If it weren't for Zhu Yan stealing Lan Yunyue away, then Lin Ming's current life might be completely different.

However… history had no ifs and whats. What happened was what happened.

Lin Ming and Zhu Yan. One was a person who once stood at the highest levels of the 33 Heavens, and the other was thoroughly a mortal. Yet, between these two there was a convoluted karma that bound them.

And this karma was planted the moment Lin Ming stepped onto the road of martial arts.

Today, Lin Ming had rescued Zhu Yan not to interfere with the natural samsara of the Heavenly Dao, but in order to bring their karmic circle to an end.

These were things that Lin Ming naturally couldn’t explain to Zhu Yan, and as Zhu Yan saw that Lin Ming didn’t wish to speak of it, he also gave up asking.

The two people were silent for a long time.

Chapter 1938B – Live Without Regret

Chapter 1938B – Live Without Regret

…

…

…

The two people were silent for a long time.

Then, Lin Ming looked at Zhu Yan and asked, “The nation has already fallen, so why are you still loyal to the old dynasty? You should know that once the destiny of a dynasty has come to its end, wanting to revive it is an extremely difficult matter.”

Lin Ming felt sad for Zhu Yan. Ever since ancient times, once an old dynasty was destroyed and replaced, it rarely ever managed to stage a comeback. Even if they somehow managed to establish some semblance of political power, they would last at most 10-20 years while lingering around in a pitiful state.

Zhu Yan’s future was uncertain and perilous. Even if he tried his best until the last beat of his heart, he might not be able to produce any results.

Zhu Yan was silent. He looked at the skies. His old eyes seemed to flash with a sense of loss, as if he were recalling days gone by.

Slowly, he said, “I am loyal to the previous emperor because of… graciousness!

“My surname was originally Zhu. Over 100 years ago… my family was prosperous and my aunt was an imperial consort. My road in life was to help the prince seize the throne, where he would afterwards appoint me to a position high in the court and where I would enjoy great wealth and riches.

“I could have been called young and talented. But it was because of this that I was stubborn and unruly, frivolous with my actions. And because of who I had been, I made a mistake... I never thought that this minor matter which was nothing in my mind would actually turn my life upside down. My life, from the highest peak, fell into the lowest abyss...

“I was defeated. Under the gaze of everyone, I lost in a fair battle. And, my opponent was much younger than I was.

“My woman left me, but it wasn’t because she abandoned me, but because I forced her away. At that time I had no choice but to do that.

“After that one battle I was severely wounded. But before I could recover, I was expelled from my family and the patriarch publicly severed all relations with me. I could no longer take the name of Zhu and even the prince thought of me like some living plague, afraid that I would negatively affect his great cause.

“Alone, with nothing but my injuries, I left my family and lord and started to roam the world...

“My future was nothing but dark gloominess. I was able to see the fickleness and changes of the human heart and at that time my life was without any rays of hope. But, I was unwilling. The young me had a heart higher than the heavens. I thought, this world is unfair to me! I hardened my resolve to break into the Xiantian realm and have all those people who doubted and betrayed me know that they were mistaken.

“I wanted to prove to myself that I didn’t need to depend on my family or anyone else, that I could fight my way through life on my own...

“I wanted to make a name for myself and return to my homeland with riches and glory. I wanted my family to know just how stupid they were for abandoning me.”

As Zhu Yan spoke, he seemed to shiver. He found it hard to maintain his calm. He took out a pot of wine from his waist and began drinking it.

He rarely mentioned these past events to anyone.

“After that, for several decades, I experienced innumerable hardships. I experienced the warmth and coldness of humans. I understood the hundred changes of the human heart. I worked as a stableman, a soldier, an assassin, a warrior, and much more. Without the protection and shelter of my family, I could only rely on myself to cultivate the martial path and I couldn’t afford to use any resources.

“For resources, I risked my life countless times to obtain them. I wanted to soar to the heavens with a single step, but it was only afterwards I realized the truth. Reality, is far… too brutal. The young me simply wasn’t strong at all. Those people that struggled with me were far, far stronger than I was, and there was a never-ending sea of them.

“This sort of competition couldn’t even be described as tragic. To lose meant death!

“Several times as I was fighting for lucky chances I received heavy wounds. However, because I didn’t have good medicines to restore my body, the hidden wounds within me began to accumulate.

“Thus, my injuries became heavier and the condition of my body became increasingly poor. As I aged, my chances of breaking into the Xiantian realm became more and more uncertain…

“Later, I accidently learned that my opponent had already reached an incomprehensibly lofty height. He entered the four Divine Kingdoms and even broke through the void with his martial path, ascending to the starry skies.

“But as for me, let alone the Xiantian realm, even breaking into the Houtian realm was difficult. The difference between us two was greater than the heavens and earth!

“Your idealistic dreams might seem wonderful, but reality is just brutally cruel. I finally realized that the young me was far too naïve. With my heart that was higher than the heavens, I was sure that I would have tremendous success in life. I thought I could return home, famous and renowned, and slap the faces of all those who spoke ill of me. But in truth, I failed to achieve any of that…

“Later I understood that there were too many people who were just like me. They all thought they were different, existences that were unique in this world. Everyone dreams of accomplishing their desires, but we… are inevitably nothing more than mortals.

“I eventually had to accept the path that destiny had arranged for me and wake up from that beautiful dream I had… because, I… was no longer young…

“During those days, although I experienced innumerable tribulations, these tribulations slowly grinded away my edges and corners, causing my character to change and become completely different from what I used to be…

“I began to learn how to restrain myself, learn how to think deeply of my actions and their consequences, learn to accept reality for what it was, learn to be grateful…

“The reason I am loyal to the old dynasty is because the first emperor, who has already passed away, once saved my life. When I was severely wounded and was on the precipice of death, he didn’t give up on me. Rather, he gave his horse to me and afterwards he even spent an exorbitant amount of money to help cure my wounds, even if I didn’t manage to cure my wounds in the end…

“So… even if the destiny of the old dynasty has been exhausted, I will still fight for it. The reason I do this is not to restore the old dynasty. I no longer desire glory or riches, and only do what I do for peace of mind once I die…”

As Zhu Yan spoke to here, his old eyes were already wet with tears. He could no longer speak.

He drank deeply and also gave his wine pot to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming felt something stirring deep in his heart. He brought the wine pot to his lips and began pouring the wine down his throat.

The warm wine, the simple sheepskin covering, the fluttering wind, the boundless desert…

As well as two people who had once known each other and fought each other. Although their lives had taken completely different paths, at this point they were two people with similar moods, seemingly watching the fading horizon…

This was a scene that couldn't be described with words.

Somewhere, somehow, there seemed to be some inexplicable karmic cycle that brought Lin Ming and Zhu Yan, people of two completely different worlds, back together.

Men do not cry easily, but that is because they haven't reached the source of sadness. Lin Ming didn't know just what feeling was in his heart. He stood up, silent, welcoming the strong winds.

Whether it was mortals or the Empyreans and True Divinities that stood above all, everyone had their own suffering, their own bitterness.

Zhu Yan's life also had its tumultuous rises and falls. Perhaps his experiences might not be worthy of mentioning to those who came from a higher realm. In comparison, Lin Ming's experiences were great matters that concerned the continued existence of the Divine Realm.

Between these two, there were certainly differences.

But in Lin Ming's eyes, people may be divided into the weak and strong, but when it came to suffering of the self, there was no difference.

The pain in Zhu Yan's heart when he faced his tribulations was likely no less than his own.

Zhu Yan's life, Lin Ming's life, were both equal.

From this meaning, Lin Ming was also a mortal.

Zhu Yan had experienced the ups and downs of mortal life. He dreamed and hoped that he would rise in the future and strived for it, doing everything in his power to accomplish it, but in the end… he failed.

Although he failed, he clearly recognized himself and recognized his own fate. He found himself and transformed himself, finding a new faith and fighting for it.

Then what about Lin Ming?

Without seeking riches and glory, only seeking peace of mind after death.

Lin Ming quietly mulled over these words. He drank down more wine.

Currently, he despaired far more than Zhu Yan of the past. Although Zhu Yan has lost everything, he had still been young and had a life ahead of him to continue struggling for the future.

But as for himself, he wouldn't even have his life…

He wanted to struggle, but there was no place to struggle.

But Lin Ming didn't want to give up. Even if he died, he still wished to be at peace.

Without asking to reverse his destiny, he would only ask to live a life without regrets.

He…could die because he had lost his soul force…

But… he could not allow himself to be defeated just because he lost his soul force…

Chapter 1939 – Dispersing Cultivation

Chapter 1939 – Dispersing Cultivation

…

…

…

After accompanying Zhu Yan to his destination, Lin Ming left.

Placed within the vast world, Zhu Yan might be some common and unnoticeable mortal. But because of some unknown and unpredictable karmic cycle, he had appeared twice in Lin Ming's life, and these two times were both when Lin Ming had reached his lowest point…

Lin Ming's heart had changed. This transformation wasn't solely because of Zhu Yan.

During these years, where he had walked, what he had seen, what he had heard, what he had felt, all of these things marked themselves in Lin Ming's mind, changing his mood and his outlook on life.

He didn't seek a reversal of fate. Rather, he only wished to live a life without regret…

Lin Ming no longer roamed around. He estimated that he only had 30-40 years of life left.

He didn't want to quietly die.

In the last days of his life he would put forth one final struggle!

…..

On this day, Lin Ming arrived at a barren hill that was far off from civilization.

He used his fingers as a spear and slashed out.

With a loud explosion, a deep cave was cut open into the hill.

Lin Ming decided that from now until the end, he would go into deep seclusion training.

Perhaps there was a chance. Although this chance approached zero, he would still try his best.

If in the end he was still dying, then in the last few years of his life he would leave this barren hill and go to one last place – Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom.

He would go there and see his parents one final time. Then, he could die.

Lin Ming walked into the cave and then sealed up the entrance.

After resolving to walk down this final road, his heart was filled with determination.

And this road was the only method Lin Ming could think of to cultivate.

Moreover, the price of this cultivation was inexorably painful. It would cause Lin Ming's strength to fall to an unprecedented valley and it would also reduce the little lifespan he had left.

The 30-40 years of life he had left to live would be reduced to 10-20 years. And this could even be called a death road!

Still, Lin Ming had to desperately risk his life.

Faint traces of the power of divinity fluctuated within Lin Ming's body. Because of his weak fires of the soul, Lin Ming could no longer manipulate the massive amount of energy saved within his inner world. Instead, this energy had become a burden on him.

But, if he were to slowly dissipate these energies, then that was something he could accomplish.

Each time, Lin Ming could move around a thousandth of the energy in his inner world. He drew this energy into his meridians and let it scatter outwards. In other words, this was… dispersing his cultivation!

Because of his weak soul, Lin Ming could no longer bear the potency of his own cultivation. If so, then he would simply force his cultivation to drop until it reached a level his soul force could withstand!

This was a crazy decision! Dispersing one's cultivation was itself tremendously injurious to one's body, and Lin Ming's fires of life were already fading away like a candle in a storm!

All of Lin Ming's pores opened. As the source energy escaped from his body, his eyebrows tightly wrinkled together. Pure agony swelled forth from within his body.

Even so, Lin Ming's face revealed a decisiveness and resolution that was harder than metal. His eyes seemed to contain a stubborn unyieldingness, an unwillingness to yield to the fate that the heavens had arranged for him!

As his source energy escaped, this affected Lin Ming's essence energy.

Although Lin Ming's soul was weak and his fires of life were nearly extinguished, his mortal body was still incredibly powerful. Once his essence energy and blood were affected, the pores throughout his body would begin to release faint streams of blood.

This fresh blood transpired from Lin Ming's body, mixed with the power of divinity, condensing into layers of blood mist around him.

At the same time, Lin Ming's boundary began to constantly fall.

From Divine Lord to Divine Transformation, and then from Divine Transformation to Divine Sea… all the way to Life Destruction…

This speed of falling cultivation was alarming!

If a martial artist were to disperse their cultivation like this, then that was no different from suicide!

Lin Ming's mortal body was far too formidable. As his blood flowed out, his body constantly produced more. The mist of blood emitting from his pores scattered without end.

This blood mist dyed the ground red, dyed the walls red, and dyed the ceiling red.

Soon, the entire cave Lin Ming was in was dyed a deep blood red.

More and more blood accumulated in layers. Lin Ming's face was pale white, but he grit his teeth and continued.

He wanted to disperse everything in a single breath, breaking himself and then standing back up from the rubble!

At this time, Lin Ming's cultivation had already fallen to the Revolving Core realm. His face was distorted beyond recognition and his teeth screeched as he bit down tight.

Then, Lin Ming's inner world suddenly shook and began to crack open…

A Revolving Core martial artist did not have an inner world. What they had was a dantian.

An inner world was something that began opening when a martial artist reached the Divine Sea, and when they became a Divine Lord, their inner world would turn into a microcosm. But as Lin Ming's cultivation dropped, his inner world wouldn't transform into a dantian. Rather, it began collapsing in on itself.

This was an even greater attack on Lin Ming. He slumped forwards and thrust his arms against the ground, his knuckles deeply embedding themselves into the rock.

He began to retch, nearly vomiting out his stomach. Almost all of his blood had been drained. This inhuman pain was something Lin Ming had to bear. He clenched his teeth and didn't even mutter a single sound.

In his heart, a desperate unyielding spirit was struggling to survive!

And at this time, something worth feeling grateful for suddenly occurred.

That was, as his cultivation fell to the Revolving Core realm, the little bit of soul force left in his spiritual sea began to fuse together with the energy in his inner world.

In other words, Lin Ming's cultivation had finally reached parity with his source soul force.

He could cultivate like a normal martial artist could.

He could train his soul again, train his cultivation again, moving forwards one step at a time, continuing to climb upwards…

However… there was just a little something that was different.

He was old.

The fires of life and fires of the soul of a young Revolving Core martial artist might be small and weak, but they could be grown. As for Lin Ming's fires of life and fires of the soul, the majority had been taken away by someone else, making Lin Ming the equivalent of a person in the twilight of their years.

He had less than 20 years of life remaining. This was the same as an old person at the end of their road.

Although Lin Ming's appearance was still young, his eyes were muddy and gloomy, and this was all because his powerful mortal body was continuing to support him.

If he hadn't absorbed so much God Beast blood and the Asura blood, then Lin Ming feared he would have completely become like an old man on the verge of death.

An old person with his remaining 20 some years of life had to increase his cultivation to at least the Holy Lord realm. Just what was the possibility of this?

Lin Ming didn't know, but he would continue to desperately push forwards.

Whether or not he could increase his cultivation he would still try his best to cultivate, not even wasting a single moment.

More than once he had affirmed to himself that he would be a moth fluttering towards the fire.

He had said to Lan Yunyue, had said to Sheng Mei, and had even said to himself –

"Even if I am a small and weak moth, I will walk into the flames without hesitation. I will fight my destiny for a one in a million chance that I will experience my own samsara and be reborn as a flaming phoenix…"

But, that oath had never been tested in such a tragic and brutal manner as today, where he was placed in such a hopeless death trap!

Lin Ming knew just how little hope there was on this road, but if he cultivated, there was at least a tiny ray of hope, a chance to turn everything around.

If he gave up, that would just be waiting for death.

Chapter 1940 – Understanding Life and Death

Chapter 1940 – Understanding Life and Death

…

…

…

Lin Ming didn't walk the same path of cultivation.

In the past when Lin Ming was at the Revolving Core realm he had gone to the Holy Demon Continent and the Eternal Demon Abyss to adventure. Then, he returned to the Sky Spill Continent to strike down Xuan Wuji before making a trip to the four Divine Kingdoms. After absorbing all sorts of resources, he managed to break into Life Destruction.

That sort of cultivation method was the best possible given Lin Ming's circumstances at the time.

But to the present Lin Ming, all of that was meaningless.

All the previous cultivation methods of his past weren't of much value to Lin Ming currently.

Lin Ming's only hope for revival was the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra.

The Great Dao was boundless and limitless. According to Jiang Baoyun's words, if there was a highest martial arts peak in this world then it would likely be the fusion of the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra, as well as the triumvirate of essence, energy, and divine.

Lin Ming's life source was ruined and conventional cultivation methods had no significance to him.

His only possible path out was to search the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra for a turning point to reverse the Heavenly Dao.

However, he only had 20 some years left to live.

Day after day, year after year.

Training continued without sense of time. Soon, 15 years passed.

Lin Ming sat motionless in the stone cave.

His cultivation had paused at the Revolving Core realm and didn't break into Life Destruction.

This was because he didn't cultivate at all during these past 15 years. Rather, he was enlightening himself.

With his return to the mortal realm for so many years, he had seen the myriad changes and moods of mortality, and he used these feelings to become more aware of the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra.

The Heavenly Sutra that cultivated the universe of the world was in essence the Heavenly Dao and nature itself.

In the past, Lin Ming's understanding of the Heavenly Dao had been confined to perceiving each Law, where he was limited in the 33 Great Daos.

In truth, this was already an incredibly deep level of comprehension. Let alone the martial artists of the lower realms who couldn't even walk down the road of a single Law to its extremes, even a supreme elder of the Divine Realm would often only cultivate a single Law to the peak in their entire life. They simply wouldn't have the good fortune to come into contact with the 33 Great Daos.

But now, the Heavenly Sutra that Lin Ming was understanding was no longer just becoming enlightened on these things.

The Laws were a part of the Heavenly Dao, but they weren't everything.

There was much, much more.

As Lin Ming walked through the world during these years, he had seen the samsara of the Heavenly Dao, he had seen birth and death; all of this was a part of the Heavenly Dao.

The Heavenly Dao was constant, but life was forever changing. Lin Ming now possessed a deeper understanding of the Heavenly Dao.

And these understandings were all fused into the Heavenly Sutra, causing the Heavenly Sutra to include many things that it didn't before.

It had to be known that when the Asura Road Master created the Heavenly Sutra, he had used 3.3 billion years to do so. One life one Empyrean, one life one Divinity. The Heavenly Sutra could be called broad and profound, but if one wished to add to it, wanted to fuse their own feelings and understandings into it, wasn't that easier said than done?

But Lin Ming was boldly doing all of this. He didn't know if what he added was right or wrong, but what he did know was that what he added was most perfectly suited to himself.

After the Heavenly Sutra was the Holy Scripture.

To the current Lin Ming, the Holy Scripture was in truth more important.

This was because the Holy Scripture that cultivated the inner universe was in essence cultivating one's existence, cultivating one's life. In these years, Lin Ming's understanding of life had become more deep than it was.

He slowly savored the taste of life. It savored not only his own life, but the life of others. Suffering children, a poor aunty who set up a stall, Zhu Yan whose heart was higher than the heavens but was eventually defeated by reality and even then didn't give up, but decided to pursue a new goal in life. And even Jiang Baoyun, who desperately chased after his goals without any hesitation…

He had seen a hundred ways of life. Now that he looked through the Holy Scripture again, his mentality had become completely different from before.

The Holy Scripture that Lin Ming obtained was in truth extremely incomplete.

He hadn’t seen the pages of death from the Holy Scripture. When Sheng Mei had given Lin Ming the duplicate copy jade slip of the golden pages, their content had been that of the pages of life. Moreover, as a mere copy, there was inevitably wrong information in what was recorded.

As for the black book that was recorded in the Holy Scripture and was now in the Soul Emperor’s hands, Lin Ming hadn’t even seen it.

The pages of death from the Holy Scripture were even more mysterious. If Lin Ming wished to enlighten himself on the Holy Scripture like this, it was an impossible task. After all, Lin Ming hadn’t even lived for 200 years.

However, Lin Ming truly did become aware of some things.

Of course, the things he comprehended weren’t as deep and all-encompassing as what would be written in the pages of death. Still, as long as he could perceive things that were most suited to himself, that was more than enough.

This was because currently, Lin Ming was experiencing death!

He could watch as his own fires of life faded more and more with each passing day, and could feel death arriving closer with each moment. He could even clearly hear the footsteps of the grim reaper coming for him.

To understand life and death on the verge of oblivion, there was no situation that was more profound than now!

In fact, even the creator of the Holy Scripture didn’t manage to thoroughly comprehend death. The Art of Eternal Life that he established also had its flaws.

At the very least, the creator of the Holy Scripture didn't manage to obtain immortality.

Perhaps, this might have been because the creator of the Holy Scripture hadn't experienced the despair of witnessing his own fires of life dimming down with each day. That creator had never experienced what Lin Ming was feeling now…

To understand the Heavenly Dao and perceive life and death.

Lin Ming sat motionlessly in the cave.

Dust fell over his body.

Like this, three more years passed.

Lin Ming's fires of life were now a candle in the wind, seeming as if it could be extinguished at any moment. However, Lin Ming's face was like a rock sculpture, lacking any emotion at all.

His heart was calm to the extreme.

In this absolute silence, Lin Ming quietly comprehended the Holy Scripture's pages of death.

He wanted to thoroughly understand death and then seek out life from death.

He had far too many matters left unfinished…

His life passed. Lin Ming's eyes became increasingly cloudy with each day. His eyes were like the Soul Emperor's eyes in the past. After opening them, the cataracts were so pronounced that he nearly lost his sight.

His mortal body remained as formidable as it was before. But because of his feeble soul, he lost control over his own body.

He could no longer move his lower legs…

Lin Ming was silent. He had been sitting cross-legged on the ground for all this time, and now he could no longer feel his calves.

This sort of feeling, or lack of feeling, slowly spread upwards.

As if he were being petrified over time.

From his calves, next was his thighs, his waist…

Currently, Lin Ming truly was like a statue. If his soul were to completely die away at this time then his life would have reached its end.

But his mortal body would remain behind, not rotting even after 100,000 years.

Gradually, Lin Ming lost all feeling in his chest. Even the movement of his arms slowed down.

Although his heart was still beating and blood was pumping through his veins, it wasn't something controlled by Lin Ming at all.

Death had never been this close.

Still, he didn't manage to find a way to live through comprehending the pages of death.

All of this was just far too difficult!

Even if Lin Ming's foundation was solid to the limit, even if he had experienced the ups and downs of life, had seen the myriad states of humanity, had become thoroughly aware of his own life…

Even then, wanting to find a way to live from the threat of certain death was as difficult as ascending to the heavens!

"How hateful… if only I was given another hundred years to perceive, if only I could use the Magic Cube…."

Lin Ming was unwilling. He didn't want to die through the depletion of his soul.

If he could use a divine instrument of the soul like the Magic Cube, then although it wouldn't cause Lin Ming's fires of life to blaze brightly once more, he could still use it to stabilize his spiritual sea and slow down the collapse of his inner world.

Lin Ming could feel that his days were numbered; he didn't have much time left remaining. If things continued like this then he absolutely would not be able to find a turning point in his own fate.

However, he didn't want to give up like before. He called upon the tiny bit of soul force left remaining within his body and poured it into his collapsed inner world where it would flutter towards the Magic Cube.

In Lin Ming's fragmented inner universe that was filled with holes everywhere, the Magic Cube floated in space. This space was deathly still, with massive spatial cracks spreading out in all directions.

A tiny, imperceptible stream of soul fire flew out from the space crack and towards the Magic Cube. This was nearly all of the little bit of soul force that Lin Ming had left remaining.

This tiny trace of soul force was infused with the entirety of the feelings that Lin Ming had realized. He poured in his complete understandings of the Heavenly Dao samsara that mortals encountered. He added in everything he had learned about the samsara of life and death.

This was the fruit that resulted from Lin Ming's last 20 years of cultivation.

The weak bit of soul fire fluttered towards the Magic Cube and then disappeared into it.

Like a tiny stream converging into a lake, there was no change at all.

The Magic Cube continued to revolve in that shattered space, spinning as it did before.

Lin Ming quietly waited. What he waited for was death, or perhaps a miracle.

His mind was as still as a placid like. Even though he could sense his source soul force weakening with every day, even when he couldn't operate the Magic Cube, he still maintained his calm and quiet expression from beginning to end.

Lin Ming felt his heart tighten. If he were to fail here then that was the will of the heavens and the fate of those who live and die.

If he died here, then that would be a part of the Heavenly Dao samsara.

If humanity was on the decline and would eventually be annihilated by the saints and the spiritas, then this was simply the will of the heavens. In the long river of history, there had never been a race that was glorious until the end of time!

Time silently passed. Lin Ming's heart reached an unprecedented state of clarity.

He recalled his life.

In his short several dozen years of life, he had experienced glory, had experienced despair, and had shown nothing but disdain for any rivals who dared to challenge him. In the end, he even made a saint True Divinity unable to remain calm. But in the end, he had come to such a result?

As Lin Ming recalled his life, he heard a light sound.

This impossibly weak sound seemed to be from his inner world sympathetically resonating with him. This caused Lin Ming's nearly dried up spiritual sea to slowly tremble!

This was a never before seen degree of clarity!

He could see that in his inner world, the Magic Cube was lightly trembling!

This trembling was weak, but Lin Ming could immediately feel a warm and loving soul force. This soul force was connecting to his own spiritual sea, and was even related to the Magic Cube!

However, Lin Ming's current soul force was far from enough to open the Magic Cube.

Thus, he was surprised to hear an elderly voice echo in his ears.

"Lin Ming… it's been a while since we last saw each other…"

This sound was…

Lin Ming was stunned.

This was Empyrean Divine Mist!

In the past, Lin Ming entered the Asura Road and was forced into Tragic Death Valley by Tian Mingzi.

In Tragic Death Valley, he met Empyrean Divine Mist. Empyrean Divine Mist showed Lin Ming graciousness by teaching him.

Because Empyrean Divine Mist had been trapped there for so many years, he had consumed a great deal of his soul force and didn't have much time left remaining. Thus, Lin Ming sealed his soul into the Magic Cube where he could rest deeply. Lin Ming hoped that there would be a day in the future when he could help Empyrean Divine Mist restore his vitality and remold his soul. Although Empyrean Divine Mist might not be restored to his situation from the past, Empyrean Divine Mist hoped he could still live out the rest of his natural lifespan.

After that, Lin Ming fell into a slaughter of life and death. Because of humanity's great calamity and the fact that Empyrean Divine Mist had fallen asleep in the Magic Cube, he had never thought of a day when Empyrean Divine Mist would awaken…

Chapter 1941 – Opening the Magic Cube Once More

Chapter 1941 – Opening the Magic Cube Once More

…

…

…

“Senior!”

Upon suddenly hearing the voice of Empyrean Divine Mist, Lin Ming didn’t know just what taste was in his heart.

Those days when he met Divine Mist in Tragic Valley, to the short several dozen years that had passed to now, everything seemed as if it were a lifetime ago, a far-off, distant memory…

In these 20 some years, although Lin Ming had seen many people he once knew, he always wore a mask and encountered them as a stranger. No matter what, the feeling was different.

The truth was that during this period when Lin Ming’s life had fallen to its lowest valleys, when he was enduring the greatest hardships, he sorely needed someone to support him and accompany him.

And in this situation, to meet Empyrean Divine Mist again, Lin Ming felt gratefulness deep in his heart.

“No wonder the Magic Cube was able to awaken; so it was Senior helping.”

Lin Ming no longer possessed the ability to open the Magic Cube on his own. It was Empyrean Divine Mist who had used his soul force to make up for Lin Ming's weakness.

Empyrean Divine Mist only had his soul form left over and it was also extremely weak. During these past years his soul form had been sealed away in the Magic Cube where it had recovered a little bit. But, wanting to return to his previous heights was no longer possible.

The Magic Cube slowly trembled. It flew out from Lin Ming's inner world and into his spiritual sea.

Lin Ming's spiritual sea was dried up of soul force. But as the Magic Cube appeared, it slowly moistened, even glowing with faint hints of life.

After 20 some years, Lin Ming was finally able to open the Magic Cube once more. This was a throbbing that came from his soul, a long-lost feeling that turned Lin Ming's eyes wet with tears and caused his heart to be filled with emotion…

"Senior, thank you for this help."

Lin Ming said with heartfelt gratitude. He slowly blended his soul with the Magic Cube.

He saw the space within the Magic Cube once more and that galaxy of soul fragments that shined like stars. After so many years, these soul fragments still slowly revolved.

Lin Ming had seen this scene many times before; it was far too familiar.

However, as Lin Ming was gazing around, his heart shook. He looked towards the central point of these countless soul fragments with disbelief on his face.

Originally, at the center of these innumerable soul fragments there had been a light sphere as bright as a sun. All of the soul fragments had revolved around this light sphere.

This light sphere had been Mo Eversnow's main soul.

In the past, Mo Eversnow had burned her soul to use the Magic Cube and her soul had deeply slumbered within it ever since. Afterward, as her soul regained consciousness and even possessed a new body, this sphere of light had disappeared from the Magic Cube.

All the soul fragments began to revolve around a point of nothingness.

But today, at this central point that had contained nothing, there was a wisp of soul fire.

From this wisp of soul fire, an unusual aura emanated.

It was only the size of a bean and the light wasn't too intense, but when contrasted against the numerous surrounding soul fragments, Lin Ming could faintly feel that this wisp of soul fire was like a pearl glowing in the dim of night, emitting a radiance that was hard to describe.

This is…

Lin Ming was sure that this soul fire had only appeared afterwards. Its aura didn't belong to him nor to Empyrean Divine Mist. It had an essential difference from the many surrounding soul fragments.

Lin Ming held his breath. Seeing this soul fire slowly and tranquilly burning in the void, he could make out that at the center of it there was a tiny mote of something that shined, as if it were like a seed.

As Lin Ming's soul force touched upon this seed, he could clearly feel a harmonious synchronicity with it.

As if this soul seed shared origins with Lin Ming's soul.

But, the difference was that compared to Lin Ming's soul, this soul seed was far more gentle. As Lin Ming's soul force came into contact with it, he felt as if he were drifting in a warm sea, his soul force being nourished and revitalized.

This was a comfort beyond description, and one that Lin Ming seemed to have experienced before.

Over 20 years ago when Lin Ming ate that devil fruit which caused him to lose his sanity, he had made love and joined together with Sheng Mei. This was the same feeling from back then.

Although this was a memory that Lin Ming didn’t want to recall, he had to admit that this was a wonderful feeling. This wasn’t merely pleasure of the physical body, but a form of sublimation of the soul.

At the time when Lin Ming and Sheng Mei had joined together, the majority of it had been a union of their souls and minds. The union of their mortal bodies was only a small part of it.

Although Lin Ming’s thoughts had blurred because he had eaten the devil fruit, he was still incomparably clear about the feeling which accompanied his soul seeming to melt away. He could recall that memory like it was just yesterday.

Looking at the soul seed hidden in the Magic Cube, Lin Ming was stunned. “Sheng Mei?”

This sort of aura, this feeling of soul compatibility, there was no way he could be wrong.

This was left behind by Sheng Mei!

“This is… source soul force left behind by Sheng Mei!?”

Lin Ming’s thoughts seemed to turn completely over. Sheng Mei had actually left behind a wisp of her source soul force in the Magic Cube?

One’s source soul force was precious beyond compare. Every time a martial artist lost some, it would cause their fires of life to weaken.

Although Sheng Mei had only left behind this tiny wisp of her source soul force, it would inevitably affect her future cultivation.

And Lin Ming vaguely knew that Sheng Mei's circumstances weren't good at all. There was some dark secret that the two shared, otherwise there was no way she would propose leaving with him for a hundred million years...

In this sort of situation, Sheng Mei had quietly left behind some of her source soul force in his body.

Just what was she planning?

"She hid her source soul force in the Magic Cube; did she discover the Magic Cube?"

Lin Ming was puzzled. If Sheng Mei discovered the Magic Cube, why wouldn't she take it?

"She might not have..." Divine Mist shook his head. "The Magic Cube is a divine object that transcends the boundaries of True Divinity. If it is activated then it is easy to detect, but if it lays silent then it is extremely, extremely difficult to sense. The source soul force left behind by that woman should have been actively taken in by the Magic Cube..."

Empyrean Divine Mist suggested a possibility. Lin Ming nodded. When Sheng Mei ate the devil fruit from that abyssal tree, her mind had also become blurry; it would have been difficult for her to sense the Magic Cube.

Moreover, even if she felt the existence of the Magic Cube she still wouldn't dare to take it, because she needed to hide the truth from the Soul Emperor. The Soul Emperor was likely on guard against Sheng Mei...

Thinking carefully about it, perhaps the reason Sheng Mei chose to use her method of joining with him and drawing out his Eternal Soul was all in order to quietly leave behind this wisp of source soul force.

"She took 99% of my source soul force and yet left behind a wisp of her own..." Lin Ming whispered. Sheng Mei seemed to have put a painstaking amount of thought behind all of this...

Just what was she thinking?

Lin Ming thought that the reason Sheng Mei joined with him and gave her primordial yin to him was because she felt guilty towards him even though she had developed some feelings for him.

But now, it seemed that this wasn’t necessarily true.

Perhaps she had deeper intentions than he had thought.

Lin Ming looked at the wisp of source soul force. This source soul force wasn’t strong and even if he absorbed it, it would be impossible for him to restore himself to his original state, not even a tenth of what he had been. Moreover, absorbing another person’s source soul force wasn’t easy at all.

Lin Ming hesitantly reached out a hand and touched this source soul force. When his fingertips touched it, this source soul force remained as peaceful as before and a stream of memories began flowing into Lin Ming.

These were Sheng Mei’s memories – the Holy Scripture’s pages of death!

Sheng Mei had left some of her comprehensions of the Holy Scripture’s pages of death in this source soul force and had passed it to him…

For a time, Lin Ming’s mind was in turmoil.

The Holy Scripture’s pages of death were extremely mysterious and Sheng Mei didn’t possess the heart mantras for the pages of death either.

Lin Ming had given his all to use the last remaining years of his life to become aware of the feeling of death. He wished he could write his own pages of death in the Holy Scripture, but wasn’t all of this easier said than done?

Although Lin Ming had achieved a result worthy of being proud of, it was still far from enough.

After all, he only had 20 years.

No matter how deep his comprehensions were it was useless.

But, if Sheng Mei added on her own understandings of the Holy Scripture's pages of death, then that was completely different.

"Sheng Mei, she... just what is she..."

Lin Ming recalled the moment he had woken up after joining with Sheng Mei. Because of the extreme despair and unwilling hatred in his heart, he had spat out vicious and poisonous words at her.

At that time, Sheng Mei's expression had been extremely complex. There had been both anger and aggrievedness in her eyes.

But in the next moment, her eyes had become icy and her voice indifferent.

As this scene echoed in his mind, Lin Ming felt a strange taste fill his heart.

Sheng Mei had paid such a price in order to leave comprehensions of the Holy Scripture's pages of death within him. Was this so he could comprehend it?

Lin Ming could feel that the pages of death left behind by Sheng Mei were incredibly incomplete.

Perhaps the black book that the Soul Emperor allowed Sheng Mei to study wasn't the complete book.

And after Sheng Mei studied it, she only gave a portion of her experiences to Lin Ming. After all, Sheng Mei had to consider her own cultivation. She had her own road of martial arts to walk and losing this wisp of source soul force was her limit.

Moreover, it was possible that if Sheng Mei were to lose any more of her source soul force, the Soul Emperor might discover this anomaly. If he were to check up on anything strange that might be happening with his divine sense, then everything Sheng Mei did would have gone to waste.

Sheng Mei had only left these tiny bits of experience to Lin Ming so that he could use it to try and reverse his life.

The difficulty of this was harder than ascending to heaven!

In normal times Lin Ming wouldn't have succeeded. But now, there was a possibility…

This was because during these past years, Lin Ming had perceived the feeling of life and death. His mood, his character, had undergone a life-changing transformation.

Of the incomplete portions of the pages of death, Lin Ming could supplement them with his own Laws of cultivation.

"When Sheng Mei left behind this chess piece, she likely didn't have much hope of success…"

Lin Ming muttered. He forced a smile.

Sheng Mei had a profound understanding of him. This was because she had seen him create miracles so many times that she would believe he had a chance of reversing such a hopeless situation. Thus, she had done all of this, no matter how slim the chance was.

Because she paid such a great price, Lin Ming faintly guessed that not only were there disagreements between Sheng Mei and the Soul Emperor, but there also existed a deep hatred.

In fact, Sheng Mei might not have any real feelings towards him. All she desired was an ally.

A truly heaven-gifted genius, an infinitely rare talent that was sure to become an extreme True Divinity in the future. She wanted such an ally to help her resist the Soul Emperor!

Realizing this, Lin Ming felt just how terrifying the Soul Emperor was.

A person that could cause such fear in Sheng Mei – just what was he scheming?

Chapter 1942 – Restoring the Origin

Chapter 1942 – Restoring the Origin

…

…

…

“Senior Divine Mist, please lend this junior a hand one more time…”

Lin Ming was unable to activate the Magic Cube on his own; he needed support from Divine Mist’s strength.

Empyrean Divine Mist manifested into a dim figure within the Magic Cube. He looked at Lin Ming and said, “Alright.”

To refine someone else’s source soul force wasn’t easy at all. But if Lin Ming were to use the Magic Cube to do this, it would be far more simple.

When Lin Ming sucked the source soul force left behind by Sheng Mei into his own spiritual sea, he didn’t feel any backlash come from it.

It slowly fused into Lin Ming’s spiritual sea, becoming part of it.

This point left a hundred different tastes percolating in Lin Ming’s mind. Perhaps this was because Sheng Mei consciously made this decision; perhaps this was because Lin Ming’s soul had fused with Sheng Mei’s, but no matter what the reason was, Lin Ming’s spiritual sea and Sheng Mei’s spiritual sea now shared an inexplicable relationship with each other.

For a time, memories swelled towards him like waves, all of these memories containing Sheng Mei’s comprehensions of the Holy Scripture’s pages of death.

These experiences and feelings fused with Lin Ming's own comprehensions of death, a little at a time...

Slowly, Lin Ming's soul immersed itself in the Magic Cube. With the nourishment of the Magic Cube he began to understand death.

His soul had already reached the edge of complete exhaustion. But because of the Magic Cube, it didn't collapse.

And this condition continued for a long time.

Over time, Lin Ming's hair began to wither. The sockets of his eyes deepened, his skin grayed, and his pupils were no longer black but had lost all color.

Lin Ming now lived on the precipice of life and death. His eyes had lost their sight and his breath nearly disappeared, as if he would die in the next moment.

But as Lin Ming reached this unprecedented border of death, his understandings of the pages of death also reached a new peak.

This process continued for a month.

Late one night, Lin Ming's unbelievably weakened fires of life finally extinguished.

His heart stopped beating...

In that moment, all of the life activity in Lin Ming's body had stopped.

He experienced true death.

The truth was that the moment Sheng Mei drew out Lin Ming's source soul force, Lin Ming was doomed to die. This was an irreversible road.

His soul weakened year after year. It was no longer possible to restore his ruined vitality and dwindling fires of life. His body was like rotten wood, having lost all life.

But…

Even dead wood could bring forth new growth.

However, even though dead wood could summon new growth, an old tree was still an old tree. A lush new branch and leaf could bring a bit of green to dead wood, but it could never restore that tree to the true vibrant vitality of a small newborn sapling. And, it was even more impossible for that dead wood to grow up as a towering new tree.

Lin Ming was now in such a situation. To have his current mortal body and spiritual sea glow with the light of rebirth was something that violated the Heavenly Dao rules, just like an old man on the verge of death becoming rejuvenated and being restored to his youth. This was simply impossible.

But, there was one possible situation. That was…

If the new shoot that grew from a piece of dead wood could absorb all the nutrition from that old tree and then take root in the ground, then it could truly grow into a towering tree that reached into the skies.

Break everything down to nothing and then stand back up tall – this was an eternal truth.

If one could simultaneously comprehend the Holy Scripture’s pages of life and pages of death to the extreme, then the truth was that this was equal to comprehending the most core cultivation method within the Holy Scripture – the Grand Reincarnation Art.

Reincarnation, that was the process of returning from death to life.

Contained within this technique were the secrets of life and death. If one couldn’t comprehend them then not only would their reincarnation fail but anyone that tried cultivating the Grand Reincarnation Art would perish into dust, forever disappearing from the world.

What Lin Ming did now was the equivalent of stepping into the first revolution of the Grand Reincarnation Art.

The first revolution should have been simple. But, since Lin Ming was doing all of this with his utterly ruined body, it was the same as gaining a new lease on life. This technique became far, far more difficult.

Lin Ming's dead mortal body remained silent. His spiritual sea lost all vitality and his inner world was already covered in horrifying fissures and had become a devastated land.

This process continued for several days.

Then, Lin Ming's mortal body began to decay.

His skin wrinkled and dried out. His blood vessels shrank. His organs started to rot.

Originally, with Lin Ming having opened the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and having absorbed the bloodlines of many God Beasts and also the Asura blood, with such a powerful mortal body, even if he died his body still wouldn't have decayed after 100,000 years.

But now, not only was Lin Ming's mortal body decaying, but it was decaying at a speed visible to the eyes, as if hundreds of years were compressed into quarter hours of time.

The reason this occurred was because all of Lin Ming's flesh and blood essence had been drawn out and gathered into the Magic Cube.

With all the essence energy screened out, all that was left remaining was a mortal body that had lost all vitality; the speed of decay would naturally be faster.

And as Lin Ming's mortal body decayed, his withered spiritual sea and sundered inner world started to thoroughly collapse. For a time, two avatars appeared beside Lin Ming's dilapidated body. These two avatars were Lin Ming's essence energy avatar, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, and the soul force avatar, the Soul Springs Divine Embryo.

The two avatars were motionless. These two avatars were under the control of Lin Ming's true self. With the true self's soul force completely withered away, Lin Ming had no mental strength to command them.

Besides the two avatars, there was also a black dragon egg that was covered with snaking patterns. This dragon egg slowly shimmered, one moment light, one moment dark. An intensely potent fluctuation of life blazed within this dragon egg, seeming to be closely connected to Lin Ming's body…

Seeing this dragon egg, Empyrean Divine Mist was stunned.

"This is…"

He faintly felt that the moment Lin Ming's flesh and blood essence began to gather, the vitality within this dragon egg seemed to gather with Lin Ming's own vitality.

The small life within the dragon egg was finally ready to emerge!

Empyrean Divine Mist didn't have time to probe what was occurring. At this time, Lin Ming's mortal body finally completely withered away and all of his flesh and blood essence gathered itself into the Magic Cube.

Besides Lin Ming's flesh and blood essence, the phantom of a Heretical God Tree that was emblazoned with fantastical runes also flew into the Magic Cube.

A vivid True Dragon phantom, True Phoenix phantom, Bodhi Tree phantom, Asura war god phantom – all sorts of phantoms flew into the Magic Cube, one after another…

At the same time, Lin Ming's body shrank more and more. Finally it rotted away into nothing and even the bones eroded.

And in the air above this ruined body, the Magic Cube slowly floated. At the place where all the essence was gathered, a dazzling divine light shined. Within the dark cave it was like a sun was dawning, incredibly beautiful!

This sphere of divine light constantly changed. Finally, it converged within the space of the Magic Cube. The energy also gradually solidified until it formed a cocoon. In the center of this cocoon, one could faintly make out a small embryonic life form that was slowly breeding.

However, this life form was even smaller than a baby in a mortal mother's belly. It was only the size of a palm and looked extremely fragile.

This was Lin Ming's body after rebirth.

Empyrean Divine Mist witnessed all of these changes, his mind quaking all the while.

This was truly what it meant to break down everything and then stand back up. Lin Ming had completed the first revolution from death to life of the Grand Reincarnation Art.

Because Lin Ming had been on the verge of death, this reincarnation was far more thorough. Compared to the Grand Reincarnation Art of Sheng Mei and the Soul Emperor, his first revolution likely far exceeded theirs.

To have such an effect was because Lin Ming had begun walking down his own road. He didn't totally depend on the pages of life and pages of death from the Holy Scripture alone, but had instead added in his own understandings.

What he felt and had become aware of after wandering the world for dozens of years, the samsara of the Heavenly Dao, all of this was completely fused with the Grand Reincarnation Art, allowing him to find a road to reincarnation that suited him the most.

"Lin Ming… perhaps you might be the only one in history…"

Empyrean Divine Mist quietly mumbled. In the past, Empyrean Divine Mist believed that if Lin Ming could become a character similar to the Asura Road Master, then that would be the greatest achievement he could ever obtain. But now, Empyrean Divine Mist had a faint premonition that because Lin Ming had risen from the ashes, rebirthing himself through reincarnation, then there was a chance that he could establish his own road of martial arts in which he could fuse together the inner universe and the outer universe, climbing up to an unprecedented peak of martial arts that no one had ever managed to reach!

From this day on, Lin Ming was completely different from in the past.

Chapter 1943 – Grand Reincarnation Art

Chapter 1943 – Grand Reincarnation Art

…

…

…

Time rolled past, year after year.

No one knew that within this small and common-looking hill, something was occurring that would influence the future of the 33 Heavens…

In the blink of an eye, 30 years passed by.

Within the cave, the cocoon had already flown out from the Magic Cube's space. It had grown by several times and the walls of the cocoon were transparent and thin, pulsating with life. One could clearly see the life that was being bred within.

This small life was ruddy and clear all over, as if it were carved from the most beautiful jade. It had a small and delicate face and there was a smile on its lips as if it was enjoying this slow pace of growth.

Beneath the cocoon, thin blood vessels were attached to it. These blood vessels ended in a black dragon egg.

This dragon egg was covered in patterns, simple and mystical.

The dragon egg's shell was also extremely thin. One could faintly see what was occurring within the egg; there was also a small life forming inside, slowly growing…

Another ten years passed.

On this day, a massive amount of essence energy began gathering towards the cave.

In the surrounding world, winds surged and clouds formed. In this stretch of earth, all of the heaven and earth origin energy began gathering, with the small and common-looking hill as a focal point. From far away, one could see multi-hued rays of energy forming within this vortex. This sight was even visible from a thousand miles away.

“What is that?”

“A supreme treasure is being born!”

The surrounding martial artists were shocked upon seeing this magnificent sight, and then immediately overcome with joy.

With such a terrifying gathering of energy, it was difficult to imagine just how valuable this treasure must be.

Many martial artists sent out news with sound transmitting talismans. For a time, within the surrounding 10,000 miles, martial artist all rapidly caught up to this location.

They all wanted to come here and test their luck.

More and more martial artists arrived, and even Divine Sea powerhouses were included.

But as people tried to approach this small hill, they could feel a terrifying pressure brought about by the massive amount of world energy accumulating at this location. Even Divine Sea powerhouses found it impossible to approach.

Everyone was stunned but at the same time they were even more excited.

If even Divine Sea powerhouses weren’t able to approach this treasure, just how precious must it be?

It was impossible to imagine!

……….

At this time, within the center of the hill, Empyrean Divine Mist was looking at the monumental vortex of energy gathered before him. He let out a long sigh.

"It's finally finishing… after 40 years…"

Empyrean Divine Mist bore witness to the entire process of Lin Ming's rebirth. During this period of time, Empyrean Divine Mist had been the one controlling the Magic Cube. His consumption hadn't been small.

With a small cracking sound, something seemed to split apart.

What started to crack first was not the cocoon in the air but the dragon egg beneath.

On this black egg the size of a baby's head, cracks began to appear.

Kacha!

With a light sound, a small black head covered in mucus stuck itself out. It bit off a piece of the eggshell, then, this small head opened its large and pitch-black eyes, took several bites and swallowed down the eggshell.

After, it used its claws and teeth to eat up the entire eggshell it had hatched from.

Upon finishing eating, this small black fellow also revealed its body. It was half the size of a baby and was chubby and round. All of its meat seemed to be squeezed together, and on its back was a pair of thin wings that were only as long as a finger.

In truth, this little fellow didn't even look like a dragon at all, but a small black wolf with a pair of black wings.

This little fellow was able to fly as soon as it was born. Its watery and intelligent eyes curiously looked at Empyrean Divine Mist for a moment. Then, its small black wings flapped and it flew several feet high, its eyes unblinking as it stared at the cocoon in front of it.

Pa! Pa!

The cocoon pulsated as if blood was beating within it.

With each pulsation, all of the heaven and earth origin energy within 10,000 miles started to be drawn in. It was hard to imagine that the small life within this cocoon had such a vast and incredible blood energy, as if it were an endless ocean that continued infinitely.

This small black dragon suddenly began purring with excitement. In front of it, the white cocoon started to split apart…

The divine light within the cocoon flashed with a moment of incomparable brilliance like a supernova, blinding to anyone who saw it.

In the next moment, a small child a little more than a foot high leapt out from the divine light and onto the ground…

This small and delicate child was the reincarnation of Lin Ming.

He had absorbed all the essence from within his original body and had reforged it into his current form. Now, although he had the body of a baby, within his dantian his inner world had already opened. At the same time, the phantom of the Heretical God Tree, the phantom of the Bodhi Tree, the Asura blood he had absorbed and the blood of the many God Beasts, and even the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, all of these things left traces in this young body.

In addition, Lin Ming's soul sea had become incredibly profound. His soul had experienced a new life.

This was the heaven-defying advantage of the Grand Reincarnation Art. By inheriting the experience and essence of the previous body, one could recast their everything into a young and new body and then restart their cultivation from scratch!

Like this, the more times one reincarnated then the higher one's talent would become, finally reaching an unimaginable height.

The only disadvantage was that Lin Ming's cultivation was still low. He remained at the Revolving Core realm without having made any strides. This was a characteristic of the Grand Reincarnation Art. After every reincarnation, one's cultivation would dramatically fall and they would have to begin their cultivation anew.

"Lin Ming, you finally succeeded..."

Empyrean Divine Mist sighed with emotion. Lin Ming had absorbed Sheng Mei's memories, and with his own feelings and understandings he had gained, he had managed to cultivate his own Grand Reincarnation Art.

The Holy Scripture's two major sections consisted of the Law of Eternal Life and the Grand Reincarnation Art. The Law of Eternal Life was incomplete to begin with and not even the creators of the Holy Scripture were able to finish it.

In other words, the Grand Reincarnation Art was in truth the most important part of the Holy Scripture.

Right now, Lin Ming could be said to simultaneously possess the Heavenly Sutra and the Holy Scripture.

Of course, Lin Ming only had the first two volumes of the Heavenly Sutra so it was incomplete. But, this wasn't important. With the emperor jade of fate already in his hands, Lin Ming could finally step into the Asura Road's final trial and obtain the third volume of the Heavenly Sutra.

Like this, Lin Ming would become the singular existence in 10 billion years to simultaneously build up the Heavenly Sutra and Holy Scripture. If he could fuse together the universe of the body and the universe of the world, he could reach an unprecedented peak of martial arts.

"Thank you Senior for helping junior open the Magic Cube, and thank you Senior for helping protect me for 40 years..."

Lin Ming deeply bowed towards Empyrean Divine Mist. After his rebirth, his voice was like a child's, much higher and sweeter.

Empyrean Divine Mist nodded with love. Lin Ming's new life had him feeling a heartfelt happiness.

But at this time, the small black dragon let out a little cry and threw himself into Lin Ming's chest.

After over 100 years of sharing the same blood and roots and also joining in hatching for 40 years, Lin Ming and the small black dragon couldn't be any more familiar with each other. Within their veins flowed the blood of the other.

Lin Ming held onto this dark meat ball, his heart filled with a thousand emotions.

If he were to consider his age, the truth was that he was over 200 years old. And in these over 200 years he had experienced far, far too much.

The things he had seen, the things he felt, all of it had become a part of his life, things that were deeply engraved into his spiritual sea and would never be forgotten.

"Lin Ming, what do you plan on doing now?"

Empyrean Divine Mist asked. Lin Ming was currently very weak. Although he had obtained a new life, to return to his previous level of strength would still require time.

Lin Ming responded, "I will continue cultivating. I don't require any cultivation methods and my foundation cannot be any more solid than it is now. To me, bottlenecks do not exist. As long as I can slowly restore my strength then I plan on practicing the Grand Reincarnation Art to the seventh revolution, or even the eighth revolution before I return to the Divine Realm."

Lin Ming estimated that in the 60-70 years he had returned to the Sky Spill Planet for, there should have been a result by now in the war between the saints and humanity.

Whether this result was good or bad, Lin Ming was powerless to change it. Moreover, he was far too weak right now. If he were to rashly return to the Divine Realm and someone were to discover his continued existence, then he would die without a doubt.

He planned to remain on the Sky Spill Planet. By relying on his previous feelings, resources, and experience, he would rest and recover his strength, cultivating until he reached a point where he could easily kill an Empyrean level martial artist. Only then would he consider returning to the Divine Realm.

And to the present Lin Ming, the truth was that this wasn't difficult.

"You want to cultivate the seventh revolution of the Grand Reincarnation Art or even the eighth revolution?"

Empyrean Divine Mist looked at Lin Ming with surprise. During this time he also learned some information about the Grand Reincarnation Art. This was a cultivation method that became exponentially more difficult the further one went into it.

However, as he thought about it, to the current monstrous genius that was Lin Ming, was there any cultivation method in this world that he couldn't handle?

It was almost impossible to imagine what would happen if this monstrous genius Lin Ming were to be reborn seven or eight more times. With his talent superimposing upon itself with every rebirth, just what would that be like?

Chapter 1944 – A Single Life (1)

Chapter 1944 – A Single Life (1)

…

…

…

Light rain sprinkled down from the skies, like smoke, like silk, like fog. Although the sunlight was obscured, the branches and leaves of the spirit plants which were watered by this rain glowed with a green vitality that caught the eyes. This land emitted a fresh and vibrant feeling.

In this weather, four green-clothed young girls accompanied a young woman to step onto this spirit mountain.

The heaven and earth origin energy on this mountain was extremely rich. As for the rain here, it was filled with spiritual energy. If a mortal were to bathe in this rainwater, they could prolong their health and life.

Between the many lush trees and verdant flowers, the young girls and the young woman slowly made their way through until they arrived at a temple built from white jade.

This young woman seemed just over 30 years of age. She was quiet and dignified. She knelt before the statue of Buddha within the temple and prayed earnestly and reverently.

“Madame is truly pious. She comes every year to pray to Buddha.”

Outside the temple, the four young girls spoke in hushed whispers. They were maids that accompanied the young woman and also cultivated martial arts. If placed within a small country like the Sky Fortune Kingdom, they would all be proud daughters of heaven.

“Madame is praying that her family be kept safe and also prays that Senior Lin, whose martial path broke into the void, will also be safe…”

These green-clothed young girls came from Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom. They were all in their late teens. To them, the Lin Ming that had ascended to the stars 200 years ago was a myth and a legend.

And the one who was burning incense in the Buddhist temple was Lin Ming’s mother.

In the past, when Lin Ming destroyed Yang Yun, before he left the Sky Spill Continent he had led some of his own people to the central region of the Sky Spill Continent. Taking the annihilated Asura Divine Kingdom as the foundation, he had established the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom.

Afterwards, the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom vigorously grew. They rose and flourished, becoming increasingly powerful with every year. Because of the resources Lin Ming left behind as well as Lin Ming’s fame and prestige, in these short 200 years the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom had become the most powerful nation amongst the four Divine Kingdoms.

“Let’s go and fetch some mountain spring water so that Madame can water the evergreen tree.”

In the back court of the temple there was an evergreen tree that had grown for over 100 years. Lin Ming’s mother had personally planted this tree herself and every time she came to pray at the temple she would water the tree with spring water from the mountain.

And the spring water of this spirit mountain was a treasure spring of the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom. The spring water here was fresh and sweet, and if a mortal were to drink a single cup they could become several years younger. If this spring water was used to make tea or wine, then it would become the most fragrant tea or wine in the entire Sky Spill Continent.

The young girls walked over to a nearby mountain spring. They used a wooden scoop to fill a jade gourd with the water. This jade gourd was made with wood spirit jade and was designed to ensure that the spring water didn't lose any of its spiritual energy.

But at this time, one of the girls suddenly said, "Hey, look over there. What is that?"

The other young girls looked over and saw that just upstream of the spring, there was a bamboo basket slowly floating down.

It had to be known that this spirit mountain was a restricted area of the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom and only an extremely limited number of individuals were allowed to step foot onto these holy grounds. Others simply weren't able to climb this mountain, so why would there be a bamboo basket drifting downstream?

The young girls curiously looked. Immediately, they were startled. But in the next moment, their shock turned to affection.

Within this bamboo basket was a little baby boy who only seemed to be several months old. His entire body seemed carved from powder white jade and he looked impossibly cute and lovable.

The little baby boy didn't cry or make a fuss. His eyes were smart and wide, as if they contained wisdom far surpassing that of an ordinary child.

"Madame! Madame!"

A young girl anxiously cried out to Madame Lin. Upon this spirit mountain that was a forbidden land, a bamboo basket had suddenly appeared. And, within this bamboo basket was a mysterious little baby boy. This was simply inconceivable.

Madame Lin heard the green-clothed girl cry out and also felt something was strange. She quickly walked forwards and looked into the bamboo basket.

For some unknown reason, as Madame Lin looked into this bamboo basket she felt as if she shared roots with this boy, as if the baby within the basket was her previous life's own flesh and blood.

A long-lost feeling swelled up in Madame Lin's heart, sweeping through her. Her nose burned a little and she almost cried.

"The same… just the same…"

Madame Lin muttered to herself. She had taken an incredible liking towards this little baby boy in the bamboo basket.

"His appearance looks just like him when he was a baby… this baby's skin is as clear as jade… and those eyes, they look just the same…"

Madame Lin lifted the baby boy in the bamboo basket and gently hugged him into her bosom. A motherly feeling emitted from her heart, making her feel warm.

Babies looked the same when they were born, but a mother could recognize the appearance of their own child.

Even after 200 years had passed, Madame Lin was able to clearly recognize Lin Ming's appearance when he was a baby.

In addition, the way this baby appeared was extremely peculiar. He had appeared at an impossible time in an impossible manner in an impossible way.

As for Madame Lin, she believed that this baby was bestowed upon her by Buddha. She had prayed to Buddha every year, confessing her regret that she might never see her son again. And Buddha, in order to make up for Lin Ming flying up to the Divine Realm and leaving her here, had gifted her with this baby boy.

"From now on, you will be called Lin An…"

Madame Lin hugged the baby to her chest, a satisfied smile on her face.

This Lin An was naturally the reborn Lin Ming. In that nameless cave, he had used 40 years to complete the first revolution of the Grand Reincarnation Art.

Afterwards, he put away the Magic Cube, taking the black dragon and Empyrean Divine Mist who went into slumber within the Magic Cube once more, and quietly left.

When Lin Ming left, the pressure of energy weakened. With that, the crowd of Sky Spill Continent powerhouses rushed into the hill cave, but by that time the cave was already empty.

Those people were all dumbfounded. They could only admit that the rare treasure had developed a mind of its own and had fled. They simply didn't have the good fortune to obtain it.

And then, Lin Ming arrived by himself in the center of the Sky Spill Continent – in the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom that he had established.

He chose to live his first new life in this world at the side of his parents.

The current Lin Ming didn't lack cultivation methods and his foundation was already incomparably solid. Normal cultivation resources were long since useless to him.

What he needed was to become aware of his feelings and slowly complete his cultivation. This path most suited the Grand Reincarnation Art.

It had to be known that in the past, the creator of the Holy Scripture had spent at least several hundred millions of years to perfect the Holy Scripture.

And although Lin Ming had the experience and essence left behind by the creator of the Holy Scripture, wanting to add his own things to it was not easy at all.

He required a long time to do all of this.

Before this, with all things considered, Lin Ming had only lived for a bit more than 200 years. This time period was far too short.

When Madame Lin brought Lin Ming back so that Lin Fu could take a look, even Lin Fu, who didn't believe much in Buddhism, also couldn't help but admit that this child really might be bestowed unto them by the heavens.

Otherwise how could there be such a coincidence in this world?

Like this, Lin Ming was formally adopted by the Lin couple and his name was officially designated as Lin An.

The Lin couple didn't speak of Lin An's appearance to anyone. It wasn't until his adoption 100 days later did the Lin couple invite all heroes from the world, including many Divine Sea powerhouses. They worshipped their ancestors and publicly and officially stated Lin An's new status in the Lin Family.

For a time, the entire Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom was aflutter with rumors that Madame Lin had adopted a child from nowhere.

As for the rumors that this child was bestowed to the Lin Family by the heavens, or perhaps that this child was Lin Ming reincarnated, most people didn't believe such incredulous stories.

But no matter whether they believed these stories or not, these people were all filled with deep envy towards this child. The Lin Family possessed a lofty status in the Sky Spill Planet and all of the resources of the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom were held in their hands. This lucky fellow somehow managed to get himself adopted into the Lin Family, guaranteeing himself a rapid and prosperous future.

…………

Years passed. Time flowed on.

Lin An grew like an ordinary child. At seven years of age, he had the height of a seven year old. His appearance was 90% similar to Lin Ming's, but there was something a little different.

After Lin Ming's rebirth, his face had become much more perfect than before. His two eyebrows were like swords and his aura was extraordinary.

Lin Ming was satisfied with this. He didn't really want others to believe he was the reincarnation of himself. After all, his status was far too sensitive. Although the chances of any news reaching the Divine Realm were slim, he had to prevent any possibilities no matter how small.

One time during a hunt, Lin Fu brought Lin Ming out. In the forest, a three foot long small black wolf suddenly popped out. At the time many people were startled. They didn't know what sort of breed this small black wolf was, but after it appeared it followed Lin Ming by his side and refused to leave.

Like this, Lin Ming was always together with the small black wolf.

The Lin Family didn't know just what this small black wolf was. After repeatedly confirming that it posed no threat to Lin Ming, they allowed it to follow him.

The days passed peacefully and simply. But in these peaceful days, Lin Ming's comprehension towards life slowly deepened…

Sometimes, he occasionally cultivated in seclusion, silently perfecting the Holy Scripture…

Chapter 1945 - A Single Life (2)

Chapter 1945 - A Single Life (2)

…

…

…

Lin Ming played with the small black wolf. He frequently accompanied his parents and enjoyed their love and doting. Sometimes he would go off by himself and ride a horse upon the grasslands, recklessly galloping about.

He was like an ordinary child, enjoying the pleasures of childhood.

This sort of happy and comfortable life which was filled with the warm love of his parents was a pleasant current that cleared away Lin Ming's mind.

He had wandered the world for too long and had experienced far too many things. He had exhausted himself far too much and needed to experience such a life to dilute all that had happened to him.

At eight years of age, Lin Ming entered the Lin Academy that was established by the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom.

The Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom had only existed for a short period of time. Although they had prestige and resources, they were actually sorely lacking in talent.

In order to find talented individuals, the Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom first set up a grand martial artist meeting as well as the Lin Academy. With the martial artists school section of the academy, they could raise outstanding martial artists on a massive scale and form all sorts of factions.

The front gates of the academy had a hundred foot high statue of white jade standing tall. This statue was of Lin Ming in his twenties.

The Lin Academy had been founded a mere 150 years ago yet it had already become the most infamous martial arts school in the entire Sky Spill Continent.

Old Man Good Fortune as well as the Divine Kingdom's Guardian Holy Beast, Demonshine, both held positions as honorary deans at the Lin Academy. In the academy there were Divine Sea powerhouses that personally taught the students.

It was even said that the Guardian Holy Beast Demonshine would occasionally lecture. It was rumored that these teachings could only be encountered through a stroke of luck.

Regarding this, Lin Ming was left speechless. He simply found it hard to imagine what it would look like for a silly dog to be teaching others…

Because of the Lin Family's fame, not only were great figures from the Sky Spill Continent willing to gather here, but all sorts of heroic young elites from the central mainland wished to enter the Lin Academy and were proud and honored to do so.

The threshold to enter the Lin Academy was extremely high. Many chosen prides of heaven were eliminated in the entrance examinations.

Lin Ming was personally recommended to enter the Lin Academy. Within the Lin Academy he possessed a special status.

However, his presence didn't arouse too much happiness.

If it really was a disciple of the Lin Family then no one would object to them enjoying extra privileges. After all, the entire Sky Spill Continent was saved by Sage Lin, and Lin Ming had rescued countless Divine Sea powerhouses from being killed by Yang Yun.

The Lin Family descendants were perfectly justified to have such privileges. But, the key problem was that Lin Ming, who was now known as Lin An, was not a descendant of the Lin Family but had been adopted.

People thought that he didn't have a single bit of relations with Lin Ming, nor did they think he was the reincarnation of Lin Ming. They only believed he was a baby who had been abandoned and then luckily adopted by the Lin Family.

Everyone was the same, so why did he get to enjoy special privileges? Let alone the common people, even disciples of the Divine Kingdoms' royal families wanted to enter the Lin Academy, but they all had to go through the examinations no matter who they were. Only Lin Ming, who was so favored by the Lin couple, was able to use resources however he wished. Other people certainly weren't willing to see such a sight.

"Lin An, Lin An, how come you keep skipping classes? What are you doing? This lessons is one of the most crucial classes concerning how to revolve energy in your dantian. If you don't complete the course how will you make up for it later?"

A green-clothed young girl panted in indignation at Lin Ming. This young girl had run a long distance and had finally managed to find Lin Ming.

She had a long ponytail and wore the uniform of the Lin Academy. Her trousers were long and her sleeves were pulled high. Her figure was busty and full, filled with the energetic vibrancy of youth.

At this time, Lin Ming was comfortably lying down on a green lawn, a stalk of grass in his mouth. He slowly chewed on it, recalling his memories of childhood.

A small black wolf quietly sat beside him. This small black wolf was extremely peaceful. Its large and pitch-black eyes were gazing at this young girl.

This year, Lin Ming was 15.

In the past when Lin Ming had left Green Mulberry City, bid farewell to his parents, and reached the capital city, he had also been 15 years old.

It was that year when Lin Ming and Lan Yunyue broke up, and he began his difficult road of martial arts.

Seeing this young girl, Lin Ming faintly smiled. He couldn't help but recall the youthful spring of his past life. At that time, it was like this, ah…

He didn't reply. Rather, he continued chewing on the grass stalk.

The grass stems of the early spring were tender. When biting one, there was a trace of bitterness as well as a faint sweetness, like the perfect representation of his youth.

The young girl appeared upset. She curled her lips and flung up her ponytail. "You can't keep doing this. Even if there are people spoiling you it doesn't mean you can get away with whatever you want. It is impossible for you to separate yourself from the road of martial artists. If you don't try your best, no one can help you."

This young girl that was only 15 years old began to speak of the great principles of living.

Lin Ming thought this was quite funny. In truth, not everyone was unhappy with his presence at the Lin Academy.

Some people liked him.

For instance, girls.

After Lin Ming's rebirth, his appearance had become even more handsome and there was a certain temperament around him that was beyond description. His eyes were bright and fathomless, seeming as if they contained a trace of the changing years, leaving those that looked into them fascinated.

Many girls spoke endless praise of Lin Ming, even if Lin Ming seemed to be an unmotivated student who didn't make much progress.

"You're really noisy." Lin Ming spat out the grass stalk and jumped up. The current him seemed to have recovered the rebellious nature of his childhood and now he had perfectly fit into playing that role.

Only by completely adapting to the present could he see more from this perspective and look at his entire life.

"You…" The young girl flushed red with anger.

And at this time, Lin Ming had already left with a smile.

"Where are you going?"

"To class!"

Lin Ming walked away. The young girl stamped her feet, clenched her teeth, and followed him.

Lin Ming really was going to class, but what he was attending wasn't one of the important courses concerning martial arts, but one of the minor classes created by the Lin Academy so that students could increase their knowledge in other areas.

Every teacher had class on fixed days, but they didn't have fixed times.

This class was set outside on this sunny day. It taught the history of the Sky Spill Continent. It taught about the 100,000 year riddle of the Sea of Miracles, the Demon Emperor's appearance, the rise of the four Divine Kingdoms, and even Yang Yun's treachery and defeat.

Lin Ming came to this class because the one teaching it was special.

Her name… was Lan Yunyue.

Wearing a dress the color of moonlight, a woman looking around 30 years of age waked up to the podium. Her bearing was graceful and elegant and she seemed like a remarkable person. She looked down from her platform, staring at the students that sat in groups of two and three.

After Lin Ming killed Yang Yun, Lan Yunyue had also gone to the Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom. She lived with the Lin Family, and afterwards when the Lin Academy was founded, she joined as a teacher.

Her cultivation was at the Xiantian realm. Of course, she had relied on pills to forcefully raise herself to this level. She didn't wish to teach martial arts, thus she chose to teach history instead.

As Lan Yanyue's gaze swept over the class, her eyes finally fell upon a youth that was sitting beneath a tree.

Seeing this youth, Lan Yunyue didn't know just what to feel.

Every time she came to teach class, she would subconsciously search for this youth. And, this youth had never missed a single day of her class.

They really did look alike… in particular, those eyes and that uncertain something that seemed to come from somewhere deep in his blood…

How could there be such a wonderful coincidence in this world?

Lan Yunyue shook her head. Then, she took out a thick history book from her spatial ring…

…

In the summer, there would be a survival course in the wilderness. The students of the Lin Academy would go into a forest filled with vicious beasts where they would temper themselves for a month.

In this forest, while the teacher responsible for watching over the students wasn't paying attention, Lin Ming slipped away.

Moreover, when he ran away, he ran far indeed.

He left the Sky Spill Continent and arrived at the Holy Demon Continent.

The Holy Demon Continent was on the other side of the Sky Spill Planet. Many Divine Sea powerhouses now knew this secret and there was even a transmission array established between the two continents.

As Lin Ming went he brought the small black wolf with him.

His destination was the Eternal Demon Abyss.

“Little Black, today I’m going to bring you somewhere. I already told you about it, do you remember…?”

Lin Ming’s voice suddenly took on a serious tone.

Before, as he was dying, or when he had just completed his reincarnation, or even when he hadn’t grown up, he simply didn’t possess the ability to bring the small black dragon to the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Now during his first new life, a considerable portion of his strength had returned and he now possessed the ability to do so.

Although Lin Ming’s cultivation wasn’t high, his true strength couldn’t be decided by cultivation alone. Even the greatest Divine Sea powerhouses of the Sky Spill Continent weren’t able to see through the mysteries within him.

This was because Lin Ming’s dantian was not a dantian but the inner world of a peak Holy Lord master who was soon about to enter into the World King realm. This far exceeded the understanding of the martial artists of the Sky Spill Continent.

Thus it was now that Lin Ming brought the small black dragon to revisit the Eternal Demon Abyss. Here, he would answer to the Dragon Sovereign.

Chapter 1946 - A Single Life (3)

Chapter 1946 - A Single Life (3)

…

…

…

Lin Ming didn't know what the Dragon Sovereign's present situation was like. After he was chased by Tian Mingzi into the Eternal Demon Abyss and when he left, the Dragon Sovereign had already been in a precarious state.

In just the blink of an eye, over a hundred years had passed. How was the Dragon Sovereign doing now?

When Empyrean Primordius left, he seemed to have severed all connections with the Dragon Sovereign. Then, if Empyrean Primordius had perished, it was likely the Dragon Sovereign hadn't felt it at all.

The little black dragon was extremely intelligent. It already understood the entire situation, and at this time, it lay quietly on Lin Ming's back, not even making a single noise.

In its eyes, there was nothing but a boundless black wilderness. And at the end of this wilderness there was a terrifyingly giant abyss that revealed a dreadful aura.

In the little black dragon's eyes, a trace of confusion appeared.

Within its memories, it seemed to faintly recall this place.

As if it had seen it before in a dream.

"Let's go…"

Lin Ming said. He flushed forwards like a shot arrow, rapidly crossing thousands of miles. He headed towards that massive abyss and leapt down into it.

Darkness rapidly passed over them. With familiar ease, Lin Ming avoided the ancient life forms in the demon abyss and swiftly passed through the tombs of the martial artists until he arrived at the deepest depths of the Eternal Demon Abyss.

Faintly, Lin Ming could feel an incredibly horrifying aura transmitting from deep within the Eternal Demon Abyss.

The small black dragon was a bit nervous. Its large black eyes blinked. There was anticipation in its eyes but also a hint of fear.

One person, one dragon, the two of them slowed down. Then they felt a boundless vigor that carried with it faint and warm threads of a dragon's majesty.

A planet-sized ancient black dragon slowly appeared in the dark void. As Lin Ming and the little black dragon flew in front of it, they seemed as small as motes of dust.

And on this giant ancient black dragon's body, nine chains wrapped around it. Each chain was thick enough that not even a hundred people together could wrap their arms around it. At the end of these chains were massive metal hooks that plunged into the black dragon's flesh, binding it in place.

Where these metal hooks came into contact with the black dragon, the area would be stained with black dragon blood and pieces of meat. After 100,000 years, this blood had solidified into thick layers of black and brown that alarmed the mind.

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. Although he had seen this before, seeing it again still left him depressed and filled with sorrow.

As for the little black dragon, as it saw this sight its eyes began to fill with pain and sadness. Its large and bright eyes started to turn wet with tears.

“Senior, junior has returned…”

Lin Ming bowed. The silent black dragon slowly opened its eyes. The dragon’s pupils were like lakes of amber that emitted a quiet light. In the darkness they were especially noticeable.

When the black dragon opened its eyes, the little black dragon also held its breath.

At this time, the little black dragon was in an extremely complex mood. There was fear, there was sorrow, and from deep within its bloodline, there was an inerasable love…

“200 years…” The black dragon slowly said. It looked at the small life in front of it. The growth of a dragon was a long process. This little black dragon only appeared to be a dozen or so years old. When converted to the age of a human, this little black dragon was nothing more than a newborn baby.

Then, it looked at Lin Ming. Lin Ming’s changed appearance and his lowered cultivation left the black dragon surprised.

From Lin Ming’s inner world, from Lin Ming’s potent vitality, from Lin Ming’s deep soul force, it could feel a terrifying potential!

“You… seem to have obtained a new life?”

The black dragon asked, unsure.

Lin Ming nodded. He let out a sigh in his heart. He could tell from the black dragon’s voice that it had become far, far older than before. Its fires of life were nearing their end and it was doomed to never be able to return to the heaven-shaking grandeur it once possessed in the past.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then decided to tell the black dragon everything about Empyrean Primordius.

“Lord Dragon Sovereign, junior went to the Primeval Universe and met the primal god race. There, I also discovered the whereabouts of Senior Primordius…”

The black dragon was stunned upon hearing this. “Primordius! You saw him, he…”

Seeing Lin Ming’s expression, the black dragon had a foreboding feeling deep in his heart. He didn’t continue speaking but instead waited for Lin Ming’s explanation.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and explained everything that occurred to Primordius from start to finish, even describing what Primordius’ final moments were like.

After hearing this, the black dragon was wordless for a long time.

Perhaps what happened was the best possible result for Primordius. It might have been what Primordius hoped to see…

A hundred different emotions passed through the black dragon’s heart. It looked at Lin Ming, looked at its descendant, and fell into silence.

Suddenly, light began gathering between its eyebrows.

Within the Eternal Demon Abyss, the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy started gathering towards the black dragon’s single horn.

Seeing this, Lin Ming was bewildered. “Senior black dragon, you…!”

From the black dragon’s body, Lin Ming could feel all of its essence energy and flesh and blood essence gathering towards the point between its eyebrows.

Lin Ming seemed to faintly realize what was occurring. He asked, “Senior, just what are you planning to do?”

And at this time, a beam of light shot out from between the black dragon’s eyebrows. It shot directly onto the small black dragon that was beside Lin Ming. As the little black dragon was bathed in this light, it cried out in alarm and surprise.

It only felt that the energy within this light was warm beyond possibility, so comfortable that it wanted to sleep. But it also felt that something wasn't right. However, it inevitably wasn't able to withstand the increasing heaviness of its eyelids and it slowly shut its eyes, nearly falling asleep.

"Lord Dragon Sovereign, did you just give your life essence to Little Black?"

Lin Ming was worried. The black dragon's life force had originally been greatly diminished to begin with. If it lost any more life essence then it would perish that much sooner.

In fact, the black dragon might not be able to wait for Lin Ming to grow and gain enough strength to shatter apart the nine dragon trapping cables laid down by the saint race powerhouses in the past.

The black dragon remained silent as it continued passing life essence. Only when Little Black was no longer able to absorb any more did it finally stop.

In the next moment, the little black dragon was wrapped in a black brilliance. It sank into the void and began sleeping.

After doing all of this, the black dragon seemed to age, becoming much older. Its eyes became bleaker and more clouded. It looked at Lin Ming and the corners of its massive jaw seemed to lift up a little in a smile. "I know what you are thinking. You probably hope that I can wait long enough until you can fight with an ordinary Empyrean and then break open these dragon trapping cables to rescue me.

"The truth is… you don't have to waste so much effort or thought. I, have already become used to staying here. These dragon trapping cables have deeply pierced into my organs and for the last 100,000 years they have grown together with my flesh and blood, becoming a part of my body. They even affect my essence energy and blood vessels. Once they are forcibly removed, I fear I will die immediately.

“But if they aren’t taken out, they will slowly eat away at my life, causing me to lose essence energy until the day I die…

“Right now, I am the same as Primordius in the past, living in constant pain, calmly awaiting my demise.

“If I must die, then I don’t want to die without meaning. What Primordius wished to do, what he wished to leave behind, I am also the same. To see my bloodline live on in the world, that is more than enough for me…”

As the black dragon spoke to here, it affectionately gazed at the small black dragon slumbering deep in the void. It said, “Help me take care of him. He is the continuation of my life…”

The black dragon’s last few words touched the deepest emotions within Lin Ming. Because, he had also said words like these…

When Soaring Feather hunted him down, when his life was in peril and death was almost certain, he had asked Xiao Moxian to look after the child in her belly, because that child was a continuation of his life…

This was the instinctive response of a person in desperate circumstances.

Man was always unwilling to die.

But man would die no matter what.

As a person approached the precipice of death, they would hope that they could leave behind something.

So that when they closed their eyes one last time, they could tell themselves that their bloodline continued flowing on in the world…

This intense desire, if traded for another name, could be called ‘fatherly love’ and ‘motherly love’.

The love of parents. In essence, that was one’s hope that one’s life would continue to exist onwards.

This was a selfish love, but also a selfless love.

A parent’s love never asked to be repaid, because to them, their children living well was the greatest repayment they could ever receive.

Looking at the sleeping little black dragon, looking at the utterly exhausted Dragon Sovereign, Lin Ming seemed to have become aware of something new.

He found another manifestation of the samsara of life and death. Children, parents, the love of parents, these three things revolved around life and death…

He fell silent.

The Dragon Sovereign told Lin Ming of his hope. He wished that every hundred years, Lin Ming would bring Little Black to the Eternal Demon Abyss. Lin Ming agreed. Although he knew that this would reduce the Dragon Sovereign’s remaining lifespan, this was also the Dragon Sovereign’s greatest desire…

The little black dragon slept for a full three days in the darkness. After three days, Lin Ming brought the little black dragon and left the Eternal Demon Abyss, returning to the Sky Spill Continent once more…

Chapter 1947 - A Single Life (4)

Chapter 1947 - A Single Life (4)

…

…

…

By the time Lin Ming had quietly returned to the Sky Spill Continent and arrived at the dark forest near the Lin Academy, 25 days had passed. There was still five more days until the conclusion of the forest survival course.

On this day, heavy rains washed down upon the forest. In the summer this sort of warm and humid forest often had pouring showers.

In the boundless waterfall of droplets, Lin Ming scratched his head. He was planning to sneak into the forest without being noticed and then make up an excuse to rejoin the group. But, he couldn't come up with a good reason.

As he had a headache from thinking of a reason, he discovered that in the Lin Academy's forest, there were a massive number of soldiers wandering about.

These soldiers all wore the same silver patterned war armor. Even in the heavy rain and in the thick underbrush, they still retained their strength and their movements were as flexible as a leopard's; they were a well-trained elite unit.

These soldiers each had a cultivation at the Xiantian realm or above.

It had to be known that if a Xiantian realm martial artist was placed in a small sect they would be considered an Elder. Yet in Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom, they were nothing but soldiers.

These soldiers weren’t part of the common military corps, but were part of the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom’s Silver Armor Legion. Many graduates of the Lin Academy entered the Silver Armor Legion to adventure and gain experience, and the Silver Armor Legion also produced many famous powerhouses.

This legion was under the direct control of the Lin Family, and was considered one of the Lin Family’s sharpest blades.

Normally, they weren’t easily used. But now these people had launched a massive search through the heavily raining forest, combing every inch of the land. They shouted out for ‘Prince An’; it was clear they had been searching for Lin Ming for several days already.

Seeing this, Lin Ming was a bit dazed.

This matter seemed to have gotten a bit out of control… in truth, there was still five more days until the survival course ended. He never thought that the Lin Family would use the Silver Armor Legion to search for him. This was likely because they thought he had been captured or even eaten by some vicious beast in the forest…

And to mobilize the Silver Armor Legion, it was certainly his parents who had commanded this. They were worried for his safety and thus sent out the Silver Armor Legion.

Lin Ming braced himself and walked out from the woods.

“Prince An! Prince An is over there!”

As a silver-armored soldier saw Lin Ming, he was immediately overjoyed and began to shout out as loudly as he could. In a moment, many silver-armored soldiers rushed towards Lin Ming, gathering around him in a circle.

A man wearing golden armor and with a great red cape thrown over his shoulders strode forwards. He had thick eyebrows and was towering with broad shoulders.

This man was the leader of the Silver Armor Legion – Zhou Yutian.

Zhou Yutian was the Lin Family's son-in-law.

He possessed a variation bloodline and was considered one of the top talents of the Sky Spill Continent. He came from a small family background, but afterwards he was admitted into the Lin Academy due to his amazing talent and obtained extraordinary results there. Later, he was even crowned champion of the grand martial artist meeting and was finally taken in by the Lin Family as their son-in-law.

After Lin Ming and Lin Xiaoge ascended, Lin Ming's parents had three more children. The one who married Zhou Yutian was Lin Ming's second sister, Lin Ping.

"Prince An, you've been deliberately stirring up trouble…"

Seeing Lin Ming safely return, Zhou Yutian didn't know just what to say. "Prince An, do you know how worried Madame was in these past days? She's been too worried over you to even drink or eat, afraid that something might have happened to you. Do you know how dangerous the forests around Lin Academy are, just how many perils lurk in the dark? In the depths of this forest there are ferocious vicious beasts that even Destiny Decree masters are unable to deal with. You can't do something like this again!"

Zhou Yutian sternly admonished.

Lin Ming was a bit ashamed of himself. Normally, the character he displayed was that of a boy who loved to play around. He feared that his parents probably thought he ran deep into the dark forest because he was being mischievous.

Lin Ming could only apologize.

He was escorted back by the Silver Armor Legion. As for Lin Mu, she had obtained the news and stood at the entrance of the dark forest. She didn't sit in her carriage but stood beneath it, anxiously looking around while a maid held up an umbrella for her.

The heavy rain came down, crashing onto the umbrella with ringing sounds. Lin Mu's bangs were already matted to her forehead; she was too worried.

As Zhou Yutian had said, in these past days Lin Mu wasn't able to sleep at all.

All mothers of the world were like this. The more they worried over their children the easier they thought something bad had happened.

Seeing his mother wait in the rain, Lin Ming felt his heart ache a little. He had truly been anxious to see the Dragon Sovereign but he was too young and it was impossible for him to be allowed to go adventuring. He had to take advantage of this opportunity to head out once, but he never thought his mother would be so worried about him.

He ran forwards to help support the umbrella for his mother.

"Little An, you've caused too much trouble this time..." Lin Mu scolded. But although she had a harsh expression, her eyes were filled with kindness and worry.

"Little An, are you hurt anywhere?"

Lin Ming shook his head. He resolved his heart that for this life, he would accompany his parents until they reached the end of their road. He would take care of them until old age, until the end of their natural lives...

.....

Like this, the stormy commotion ended. Lin Ming thought that this minor matter would quickly be forgotten.

But, reality turned out differently.

Because of this matter, rumors began to appear within Lin Academy and the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom.

The approximate content of these rumors was that the Lin couple had spoiled Lin An too much. Lin An himself was nothing but a useless black sheep, a wastrel who ruined his family's good name. He had a pitiful background and possessed no good points, and what was most disgusting was that he skipped all his classes and caused trouble all day long.

During the survival course in the dark forest he had caused a mess, completely ruining the survival course for everyone else!

If an ordinary student of Lin Academy were to have some problem during the survival course, the academy simply wouldn't do anything at all and would sum it up as a death due to training. This sort of thing happened every year at Lin Academy and several students would die.

But, Lin An had only been missing for 20 some days and this was enough to cause the Lin Family to mobilize the Silver Armor Legion to search for him. This used up military resources and was simply making a massive fuss over nothing. Even the academy survival course was terminated early.

The survival course had only gone on for ten days. As for the missions assigned by the academy, only a very small number of people were able to complete them. This made it so that 99% of the students weren't able to obtain any good results.

The students of Lin Academy were incredibly unhappy with such an ending. Just who did Lin An think he was? He wasn't even related to the Lin Family to begin with; he was nothing but a bastard abandoned by his birth parents!

His talent and cultivation were the same as an average person's. In normal times, he would be nothing but a punk with no good points, a street rat wandering the city.

The Lin couple not only took in such a bastard child but even allowed him to arrogantly do whatever he wished, doing all sorts of evil and nasty things. Not only was he not discipled but the Lin couple even dragged in others to search for him.

This was a clear case of injustice. It caused the Lin couple's prestige to be greatly affected.

Some people even privately said that the Lin couple were nothing more than common citizens who had never seen the wider world before. If they hadn't luckily given birth to their amazing son Lin Ming, then they would have already died and turned into white bones.

Even now, people were filled with thoughts that the reason they occupied their seat was only because of Lin Ming. They felt that the Lin couple shouldn't interfere with the Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom and that they shouldn't have the right to mobilize the forces of Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom. They should just look for some nice and quiet place to retire.

These discussions, either intentionally or unintentionally, passed to Lin Ming's ears.

Lin Ming frowned. During this life, his original intentions were to accompany his parents. While he honored his parents, he wanted to experience their fatherly love and motherly love, becoming more aware of the samsara of life and death.

He didn't think that his careless actions would cause his parents to be criticized.

"Really, wherever there are people, there will be struggles. I just wanted to be a prince that didn't try to seize power, but it seems that someone has targeted me..."

Lin Ming didn't care what others said about him, but he wouldn't tolerate his parents being harmed.

Perhaps he should consider giving suitable honor to his parents so that they wouldn't be criticized.

He went to look at the Lin Academy's rankings. In order to encourage students and push them harder, an array formation stone tablet was set up in the academy's back mountains. The most outstanding students of every class had their names engraved into the stone.

In addition, the Lin Academy had done something similar to the Seven Profound Martial House and had created many examinations. The record holders of these examinations would also be written in the rankings.

These rankings were looked upon by many students every day. Motivated students would even come over a dozen times a month.

As for Lin Ming, he had never looked before.

Today, he came to take a look. A name caught his eye. This person was called Situ Mingyue.

This name seemed to be a girl’s and it often appeared on the rankings. This was because she maintained several current rankings and even had a record high.

“Situ Mingyue?”

Lin Ming was curious. Another person named Situ. Those of the Situ surname often possessed a variation dantian and extremely high levels of talent. Could it be…

Lin Ming casually asked one of the students standing in front of the ranking list. “Who is this Situ Mingyue?"

The student looked a bit unhappy to be asked this question by Lin Ming, but he didn’t dare to not reply. He said, “You haven’t even heard of Situ Mingyue? …She is the most splendid student from the third class and is Situ Yaoyao’s little sister, Situ Yaoyue’s niece!”

This student’s words confirmed Lin Ming’s guess. It seems he wasn’t wrong.

Situ Yaoyue was a genius from the Asura Divine Kingdom. She possessed an Extreme Violet Dantian and was skilled in the Darkness Laws. She was crowned the most talented junior of the Asura Divine Kingdom’s younger generation.

When the Asura Divine Kingdom chased Lin Ming into the Forsaken God Clan and forced Lin Ming into a continuous battle, Lin Ming had faced opponent after opponent until he encountered Situ Yaoyue.

Although Situ Yaoyue was a woman, she grasped the Great Desolate Blood Halberd and engaged Lin Ming in a fierce battle. They had fought to a near standstill but in the end Lin Ming had relied upon his body transformation technique to defeat her.

Although Situ Yaoyue at the time was older than Lin Ming by many years, it was still amazing for her to accomplish what she did.

As for Situ Yaoyao, she was Situ Yaoyue's little sister and also possessed an Extreme Violet Dantian. When Lin Ming returned to the lower realms in the past, he had seen Lin Xiaoge battle against her. In truth, Lin Xiaoge wasn't able to suppress Situ Yaoyao, but Lin Xiaoge was finally able to win due to the foundation she established because of all the precious medicines used on her. Only through a competition of endurance did she win. From this point, it could be said that Lin Xiaoge had actually lost to Situ Yaoyao.

Now, Situ Yaoyao actually gave birth to a daughter. And it was clear that this daughter also possessed an Extreme Violet Dantian. This Situ Family really possessed far too many talents and the Extreme Violet Dantian was passed down like this.

As for himself, he seemed to have a fate with the Situ Family.

Chapter 1948 - A Single Life (5)

Chapter 1948 - A Single Life (5)

…

…

…

As Lin Ming studied in Lin Academy, the rumors continued to spread.

If Lin Ming let loose his divine sense he could easily hear many people criticizing him.

Others said that the Lin couple condoned the overbearingly cruel and domineering acts of their adopted son. These discussions became increasingly fierce, even rising to the level of the Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom's ruling class.

This surprised Lin Ming. A matter that he didn't think was important to begin with seemed to have been purposefully stirred up and controlled by someone behind the scenes in order to guide public opinion.

Was someone targeting him?

Lin Ming immediately thought this. After living for several generations of mortal lives, he would think more about everything, even things like this. Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom was after all the number one Divine Kingdom of the Sky Spill Continent, and those in power enjoyed the greatest authority of the entire continent as well as control of rich resources. If someone appeared that touched upon the benefits of these people, it was reasonable for these kinds of scenarios to appear.

The situation became increasingly complex.

But at this time, from the ruling class, someone stepped forwards to control the rumors. They started from several different points until the rumors began to gradually die down.

Although some people were dissatisfied with Lin Ming, they had never been so blatant in their actions.

The one helping Lin Ming was Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom's Eastern King, Lin Xiaodong.

Lin Xiaodong was one of Lin Ming's good brothers from his youth. When Lin Ming parted from Lan Yunyue, Lin Xiaodong had looked after him.

After Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom was founded, everyone that was close to Lin Ming, including his parents, Lan Yunyue, and Lin Xiaodong, all came here.

Lin Xiaodong was given the title of King. During his youth he often accompanied his parents in business and possessed some skill in politics and communication. In addition to him being brothers with Lin Ming and their close relationship, very few people in court dared to offend him or speak out against him.

While Lin Xiaodong wasn't too strong himself, he had raised some guests that were masters. They were at the Life Destruction realm and some of them even ranked on the Destiny Decree. Thus, Lin Xiaodong became someone that was able to summon storms and rains in court and possessed a considerable amount of clout.

"You little brat, why don't you try to fight to give your parents a little face!"

Lin Xiaodong saw Lin Ming in his own palace and punched him in the chest.

In these 200 past years, Lin Xiaodong had put on a great deal of weight. He wasn't tall to begin with and with his large elephant-like legs, he resembled an egg. Because of his stomach he couldn't even see his own toes.

He maintained his health well and married three wives and had dozens of concubines. These concubines all had good cultivation backgrounds.

In addition, he also had many maids serving him. This caused him to have droves of descendants. Currently, he had over 40 sons and over 30 daughters.

He whacked Lin Ming's chest and ruffled his hair, looking like an elder teaching a junior. His eyes weren't large to begin with and in addition to his fat stature, his eyes disappeared into slits when he smiled. He looked like a shady 30-40 year old businessman.

This left Lin Ming utterly speechless. He couldn't help but recall that in the past, Lin Xiaodong had been a little brother that followed his rump wherever he went. Now, Lin Xiaodong had become Lin Ming's elder and Lin Ming even had to call him 'Uncle Dong'.

Of course, Lin Xiaodong called Lin Ming's parents aunty and uncle, thus the generational rankings between them had gotten a little chaotic. But Lin Xiaodong didn't care much about this. No matter what, he didn't want a hairless little baby boy like Lin Ming to call him big brother.

In these past years, Lin Xiaodong had taken good care of Lin Ming. This was because Lin Xiaodong always felt that Lin An bore an uncanny resemblance to Lin Ming from the past.

After Lin Ming was lectured by Lin Xiaodong he left the Eastern Palace. He naturally didn't want his parents to be sucked into the vortex that was the struggle for power, thus he restrained himself a little and started to attend classes in earnest.

On this day, the survival course in the dark forest was to begin once more. Because Lin Ming went missing last time the survival course was cancelled and many people weren't able to obtain any results.

This survival course was considered a make-up exam.

After the tempering in the forest began, many people entered into the dark forest in groups of two or three. However, Lin Ming went in by himself.

He aimlessly walked through the dark forest, casually killing some small vicious beasts.

The edges of the dark forest had many low level vicious beasts and these vicious beasts were all divided into further ranks. Hunting and killing vicious beasts of different ranks corresponded to different scores. In 30 days when the survival course ended, if one could obtain a high enough score, then they would be assessed as having passed the survival course.

If one's performance was outstanding then their results would be graded from good to great to excellent depending on their score.

Every year in the dark forest, those that passed only amounted to half the number of students. Most were good, several were great, and there was often only a single excellent student score.

Lin Ming's plan was to obtain a score that was somewhere between good and excellent. He wanted to give his parents some face but didn't want his results to be too world-shocking.

But at this time, he heard a loud cry in the forest.

He looked deep into the forests and saw a young girl fighting with a blue-eye poison toad.

This blue-eyed poison toad was one of the deadliest vicious beasts in the dark forest. By killing one, a student could obtain one of the necessary conditions to earn an 'excellent' score.

Lin Ming recognized this young girl. She was Situ Mingyue.

During this year's survival course, the only one who could reach the 'excellent' rank would be Situ Mingue.

She was extremely similar to a young Situ Yaoyue. She wore purple clothes and her stature was high. Her legs were long and slender and her skin seemed as luminescent as pearls, creamy and flawless. Although her expression was cold, she didn't give off the feeling of an unapproachable icy woman. Instead, she emitted the light demonic charm of an enchantress, making others feel strange upon looking at her.

Even when fighting the blue-eyed poison toad, Situ Mingye was calm, as if she were completely blended into her surrounding environment.

Lin Ming and the Situ bloodline shared considerable karmic bonds. He had completely destroyed Situ Minyue's nation – the Asura Divine Kingdom, and even several elders of Situ Mingyue had died in that catastrophe.

Situ Mingyue's aunt and mother were Situ Yaoyue and Situ Yaoyao. These two women were originally the proudest heavenly daughters of the Asura Divine Kingdom. With the support of a Divine Kingdom behind them, their futures should have been limitless.

But because the Asura Divine Kingdom was destroyed, Situ Yaoyue and her sister were left to fend for themselves.

From being proud daughters of heaven they had fallen from their high perch in the clouds, becoming miserable royal daughters of a defeated kingdom. The difference in status had been too great.

The Asura Divine Kingdom could be said to have offended many people. Situ Yaoyue and Situ Yaoyao were beautiful in appearance and possessed an abundance of talent, thus they were desired by some Divine Sea powerhouses. Some people wanted to receive them together and because of this they struggled for a long time.

From this aspect, it wasn't too far off to say that the Lin Family had a grudge with the Situ Family.

After rounds of violent combat, Situ Mingyue finally killed the blue-eyed poison toad.

In the dark forest, her entire body was matted with blood and green mucus. Her chest lightly heaved up and down. It was clear that striking down such a powerful vicious beast had exhausted a good portion of her strength.

Ca!

Situ Mingyue thrust out her sword once more, piercing through the blue-eyed poison toad's heart to ensure its demise.

After she confirmed that the blue-eyed poison toad was truly dead, she turned around and coldly stared at Lin Ming. She had long ago discovered Lin Ming but didn't care much about it. She squatted down and quietly sliced open the blue-eyed poison toad's pustule-covered skin. She reached into it and plucked out a fist-sized monster core. This was a token proving she had killed the beast.

Then, she looked at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming could see a hint of hostility and contempt in her eyes.

Although the Situ Family had fallen in these past years and had atoned for their mistakes in the past, everyone had to admit that the Situ Family produced amazing geniuses in every generation and that their bloodline was amazing!

Lin Ming didn't know that Situ Mingyue had always had an obsession in her heart. Because of Lin Ming, her nation had been destroyed. So, while she naturally hated the Lin Family, she was well aware that it was impossible to overthrow them. Thus she was hoping to frontally defeat a disciple from the Lin Family's direct descendants and earn back some pride for the Situ Family.

It had to be known that in the past, Situ Yaoyue had lost to Lin Ming and Situ Yaoyao had lost to Lin Xiaoge.

They were suppressed by the Lin Family.

But when Situ Mingyue was finally born into the world, when she wanted to defeat the juniors of the Lin Family and gain some honor for her mother, the talents of the Lin Family were actually on the decline, as if they would fall apart at the first blow.

Besides Lin Ming and Lin Xiaoge, the Lin Family didn't produce any more extraordinarily talented individuals. Even with the support of resources, the disciples of the Lin Family often only had ordinary achievements.

Because Situ Mingyue couldn't find battles she could fight, she felt as if she were punching against empty air.

She had hopes that Lin An would be a little bit fiercer. This fellow looked alike to the Lin Ming that had ascended to the Divine Realm, so their natural talents should be at least a little bit similar.

While defeating Lin Ming was impossible, defeating Lin An would be more than enough. There were even some people that said Lin An was Lin Ming's reincarnation.

However, she was left disappointed once more. Lin An was simply nothing more than a playboy young master, a bag of trash. She couldn't summon even the slightest bit of interest to fight him.

Situ Mingyue put away the monster core in her hands and turned to leave. But at this time, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He looked far off into the distant depths of the dark forest.

Situ Mingyue couldn't feel it, but Lin Ming had discovered something strange in the air.

A high level vicious beast was approaching!

For such a high level vicious beast to appear in the dark forest, this was absolutely a disaster to the students of Lin Academy!

How could this be?

By any reasoning, Lin Academy should never have made such a mistake, allowing such a terrifying vicious beast to kill its way into the forest.

Moreover, there was something off about this...

This vicious beast was extremely fast. At this distance, the teacher sent to secretly protect him should have already discovered the change in situation. But how come there wasn't any response?

Could it be…

Lin Ming frowned. He swept out his sense and discovered something else. This something else caused his face to darken completely.

Lin Ming's mental strength was incredibly formidable. It was so powerful that he could easily pierce through this high level vicious beast's spiritual sea. There, within the vicious beast's spiritual sea, he discovered a martial artist's spirit mark!

In other words, this high level vicious beast was being controlled by someone else. It was a high level martial artist's contract beast!

There was someone controlling this vicious beast to enter the dark forest and kill people.

And now, looking at the direction the vicious beast was headed in, it was sent to kill either him or Situ Mingyue. As for who it was sent to kill, Lin Ming could easily guess this when he recalled the matters with the rumors earlier.

"So there is someone who wants to harm me. They worry that my parents favor me too much and will give more precious resources of the Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom to me. Are they afraid that even supreme authority will be passed down to me?"

Chapter 1949 - A Single Life (6)

Chapter 1949 - A Single Life (6)

…

…

…

Thinking of this, Lin Ming inwardly sneered. His parents were supported with the prestige he left behind in the past; no one dared to move against them.

But, there were people that would make use of his parents' lack of understanding when it came to martial skill and cultivation methods as well as their lack of understanding regarding the politics of court. These people secretly and slowly manipulated things from behind the scene, influencing the decisions his parents made.

There were even those that wished to use these devious methods to obtain authority from his parents and place themselves above all others.

After all, his parents were only mortals. Even with many spirit medicines helping them, they would have at most 2000 years to live.

Once his parents died, whose hands would this vast Divine Kingdom fall into?

This was an incredibly serious issue that involved a tremendous amount of benefits. It was natural that everyone would want to eat a portion of this thick soup.

As these thoughts flashed through Lin Ming's mind, he could sense that the high level vicious beast had approached.

Situ Mingyue had originally taken ten steps out, but then her body shook. She turned around and looked deep into the jungle, her complexion instantly changing!

“Fleeting fire centipede! Why would such a high level vicious beast appear in this forest!?”

Situ Mingyue’s expression turned to horror. This fleeting fire centipede could even kill a Life Destruction powerhouse. As for Situ Mingyue, she was only in her teens and her cultivation was at the Xiantian realm. This difference in strength was so great that she wouldn’t even be enough to fill the gaps between the fleeting fire centipede’s teeth.

“You idiot! Stop standing around and waiting for death to come!”

Situ Mingyue saw Lin Ming standing in a silly daze and was left breathless. She drew out a long whip and lashed it at Lin Ming, pulling him towards her. She grabbed his hand and dragged him into the underbrush.

“If you don’t want to die then don’t move!”

Situ Mingyue covered Lin Ming’s mouth, afraid that this blue-brained idiot would shake around and expose their position. Moreover, she guessed that Lin Ming simply wouldn’t know what was happening, or perhaps Lin Ming might not even know what a fleeting fire centipede was. If this sort of catastrophe fell upon someone like this who possessed no skills or knowledge, they would die before they even knew it.

She quickly spoke to Lin Ming with a true essence sound transmission and then flicked her fingers. A signal flare shot into the skies.

This was a special signal flare issued by Lin Academy to their students to call for rescue. Upon use, the teacher responsible for rescuing students would immediately arrive. If a dangerous situation occurred, students were supposed to use this rescue flair.

Situ Mingyue didn’t believe that she would be able to find any path to survive if the fleeting fire centipede found her, nor did she believe that she could outrun it. All she could do was hide as much as she could and hope that this fleeting fire centipede was only passing by and not aiming for them. Or, she could pray that they were rescued before they both died.

However, Situ Mingyue also felt the situation was strange. Why wouldn't this fellow Lin Ming have a master secretly following him to protect him? And this master actually let a fleeting fire centipede approach them?

But at this time Situ Mingyue's heart chilled, as if she had fallen into an icy lake. She stared helplessly on as the signal flare she shot into the skies suddenly broke apart. The bright lights of the signal flare seemed to be swallowed up by darkness, turning to ash that scattered away in the wind, not leaving anything else behind.

"This..."

Situ Mingyue was terrified. This sort of change could only be done by someone skilled in the Concept of Darkness. Only the all-swallowing Concept of Darkness could cleanly swallow away the light of a signal flare.

She suddenly realized a horrifying possibility. This possibility left her suffocating in despair!

Someone wanted to kill her or Lin Ming. This person had secretly infiltrated the squad assigned to protect the students and moved against them. They even brought a fleeting fire centipede here to make it seem as if they had died during the survival course.

This individual might even be some master of Lin Academy.

"We have to run!"

Situ Mingyue rapidly said. By this time, her palms were wet with sweat. She had already guessed that no matter who the goal of this other person was, they would kill all possible witnesses. This meant that both of them would die here!

And the moment Situ Mingyue spoke these words, the terrifying flame-colored centipede suddenly rushed out from deep in the woods!

This horrifying centipede was over 100 feet long and had a carapace that was burning with flames. It let out a dreadful roar, and wherever it went trees would be shorn apart like little twigs.

It was far too fast, fast to the point of leaving one in despair. As soon as it appeared it didn't pause at all and threw itself at Lin Ming and Situ Mingyue. It stretched out claws that were covered in poison and flames, stabbing towards them like two long spears!

In that moment, Situ Mingyue had never felt death so near like today.

In desperate hopelessness, she grit her teeth and used all of her strength to slash out her sword. She didn't think that this strike would be able to do anything, but only wanted to leave behind a scar on the fleeting fire centipede, even if it was a shallow mark. This was her angry response to the unwillingness she felt in her heart!

Would she die here like this?

To die so quickly and inexplicably, would she not even get to know who killed her, or what their goal was?

Her mother, would she be sad?

All sorts of thoughts flashed through Situ Mingyue's mind. She stared blankly on as the centipede's claws thrust towards her chest like the scythes of a death god. She watched as her soft and weak sword strike fell onto the fleeting fire centipede's forehead like a string of straw.

And, she almost heard the sound of her heart being pierced and her blood spraying out.

But in that instant, something unbelievable occurred.

The moment her soft and faint sword strike fell onto the fleeting fire centipede’s forehead, a strength beyond imagination instantly erupted, as if a great sun were dawning upon the sword blade, radiating a divine light that blinded all!

This is…

Situ Mingyue’s eyes shot wide open. The fleeting fire centipede had a carapace that was as hard as divine iron, but beneath this sword strike it was cut apart like tofu!

A massive arc of crescent sword energy continued forwards, indomitably tearing through the centipede!

The fleeting fire centipede’s high-speed body seemed to be grabbed in that moment by a giant invisible hand, completely violating the laws of physics as it froze in mid air!

Then, a golden line spread out from the fleeting fire centipede’s forehead and started projecting backwards. In the next moment, the fleeting fire centipede was sliced cleanly in half!

Pa! Pa!

The two halves of the fleeting fire centipede fell to the ground. It was only after the golden light vanished that blood began to gush out and dye the land red.

As the saying went, a centipede could still move even when dead. Even if this fleeting fire centipede were split in half, it should still have a breath of life and should still have been able to violently struggle about, posing a great threat.

But after being cut apart by Situ Mingyue’s sword strike, the fleeting fire centipede had fallen completely still, without the least bit of life remaining within it.

As Situ Mingyue witnessed all of this her eyes turned as large as moons. Even her mouth that seemed to carry devilish intentions had fallen open as she was unable to believe everything that had just occurred.

The scene in front of her was the same as her killing off the fleeting fire centipede, a beast that was equivalent with a high stage Life Destruction powerhouse. Of course… this was totally impossible!

Situ Mingyue had been able to clearly feel that in that brief moment, a divine strength seemed to slash down from the void. This power had melded itself onto her sword strike, thus creating the miracle she had witnessed.

And the origin of this power seemed to have been behind her. She turned around and looked at Lin Ming.

At this time, Lin Ming was standing a mere three feet away from her. There was no panic on his face, but instead only calmness. His complexion was even a little… dark!

His eyes were as profound and fathomless as an ice pond, causing anyone who looked into them to feel a bit of… fear.

This sort of coldness seemed to originate from anger. It could also be because of other reasons, but it absolutely wasn't because he was scared.

When facing this fleeting fire centipede that could kill a Life Destruction powerhouse, even Situ Mingyue was flustered. However, this youth wasn't afraid at all.

She didn't know why, but as Situ Mingyue looked at Lin Ming she felt a fearful restlessness in her heart.

She never would have believed that this fellow who seemed like an idiot and acted like a diabolical young master could have such a terrifyingly steady and calm expression.

She even had a feeling that this Lin An had some heaven-shaking secret!

This ambush was clearly targeted at Lin An and not herself.

But even though they sent out such a powerful vicious beast, their attempt to assassinate Lin An had failed. Just where had that power come from?

It shouldn’t have come from… Lin An, right?

Situ Mingyue looked at Lin Ming and was completely unable to believe that someone like Lin An, who was younger than her, would have the capabilities to kill a fleeting fire centipede. This simply surpassed all common sense.

At this time, faint shuffling sounds echoed from within the forest. If one wasn’t listening carefully then it would have been impossible to detect them.

Who!?

Situ Mingyue’s heart felt gripped. Someone was here, and they were even a master!

However, she felt that this hidden person wasn’t approaching them but was running far away instead.

That’s right… there was that person who had destroyed her signal flare with the Darkness Laws. This person likely came from Lin Academy, and might even be the teacher assigned to protect them!

They took part in the assassination, but after they failed they decided to flee.

Although they didn’t know how the fleeting fire centipede had died or who had killed it, what they knew for sure was that anyone that could kill a fleeting fire centipede with such ease could also easily kill them.

This was because their strength wasn’t greater than that of the fleeting fire centipede.

“They ran away.”

Situ Mingyue didn’t know what to do. She only looked at Lin Ming. She naturally wasn’t able to stop him. She wanted to see what he would choose to do.

Lin Ming furrowed his eyebrows together. He said to Situ Mingyue, “Why aren’t you running? What’s the point of standing there like an idiot? Are you waiting for them to gather reinforcements so they can return to kill you?”

Lin Ming’s words were like a bucket of cold water poured over Situ Mingyue’s head.

Just several breaths of time ago she had angrily shouted out to Lin Ming that he was an idiot who was standing around and waiting for death to take him. Now, these words had been returned to her.

What Lin Ming said was right. The situation was currently unclear so quickly leaving to find rescue was the most sensible choice to make. If they stayed here then there might be more people coming to kill them; it was extremely dangerous.

Just before she was about to run away, she turned to Lin Ming to ask him for some advice on who to find. After all, with the current complex situation, she didn’t know who was here to kill them and who was here to save them. If she accidently stumbled into some dangerous individual and was led into a trap, that sort of death wouldn’t be justified at all.

However, as she turned around she discovered that during the brief moment of distraction just now, Lin Ming had already disappeared…

Chapter 1950 - A Single Life (7)

Chapter 1950 - A Single Life (7)

…

…

…

"Lin An… where is Lin An?"

Situ Mingyue looked in disbelief towards the spot where Lin Ming had just been. There was only green grass and bushes quietly shaking in the wind, and not even a little bit of Lin Ming's aura had remained.

Situ Mingyue was bewildered. She had just turned around for a mere moment. It was impossible for martial artists at the Houtian realm and below to possess such speed. Moreover, if they were to disappear that quickly then their movements wouldn't be light either; it was impossible for them to disappear while she remained completely unaware.

This sort of feeling was like Lin Ming had simply teleported away.

He… how did he do this?

Before Situ Mingyue could react, she heard a cry of alarm from deep in the forest…

……….

In the dark forest, Song Ding flew away. Air whistled past his ears as the scenery of the forest rapidly blurred around him.

He was a teacher of Lin Academy, a Life Destruction realm martial artist. He had encountered a mysterious person who had given him a benefit that was enough to tempt him, on the condition he would participate in the plan to assassinate Lin Ming.

Moreover, he simply didn't need to do anything. The mysterious person would send the fleeting fire centipede to kill Lin Ming. The fleeting fire centipede was a high rank opponent that not even Song Ding could defeat. If Song Ding were unable to protect Lin Ming from this centipede then he wouldn't have to endure much guilt.

He had originally thought that this matter was more or less assured. Moreover, to kill such an unpopular and useless adopted son like Lin Ming, Song Ding didn't feel much pressure.

But in this situation, the fleeting fire centipede had actually been cut apart by Situ Mingyue's sword!

Song Ding's first judgment of the situation was that there was a Divine Sea powerhouse secretly protecting Lin Ming. He found it impossible to imagine why there would be a Divine Sea master who would favor a pathetic wastrel like Lin Ming. But, the truth was placed in front of him. Thus, he could only run away, lest that Divine Sea powerhouse take out his anger on him.

He was terrified so he fled at the fastest speed he could. But at this time, several hundred feet ahead in the direction he was fleeing, the void was torn open and a youth with a cold and callous expression stepped out, appearing directly in front of Song Ding.

This sudden change left Song Ding frightened out of his mind!

To tear open the void and teleport right in front of him – just what sort of method was this?

The truth was that in the lower realms, tearing open space wasn't difficult. However, the martial artists of the Sky Spill Continent had yet to reach such an understanding in the Space Laws.

Song Ding suddenly came to a stop. All of his blood energy seemed to swell in front of him because of his nervousness. As he saw the face of the mysterious person who had appeared, Song Ding's eyes almost popped out of his head and his face twisted into something resembling a complex array diagram.

"You… how could it be you…"

Song Ding couldn't believe that the youth in front of him was Lin An. Lin An's eyes were as deep as icy lakes, cold enough to freeze over Song Ding's soul.

These weren't eyes that should belong to a 15 year old.

Tearing open the void and instantaneously shifting through space had been done by a youth. Then, could the death of the fleeting fire centipede also be because Lin An had secretly killed it? Where could he possibly have obtained such strength?

For a time, within Song Ding's mind, the usually truant and good-for-nothing playboy that was Lin An began to overlap with the mercilessly indifferent Lin An in front of him, one that seemed like a demon god surging with killing intent. Both versions crossed over in his eyes.

Song Ding almost collapsed to the ground. How could such an absurd thing happen? A playboy young master had such deeply hidden depths? Moreover, no matter how talented he was, age was the ultimate limit!

"You… who are you?"

Song Ding felt that there was some demon hiding with Lin Ming.

However, Ln Ming simply reached out an arm and grabbed onto Song Ding's throat. Song Ding was unable to budge even a little. His entire body was caged by the Space Laws.

"Who ordered you?"

Lin Ming's voice came from the nine nether abyss, causing Song Ding to shake all over.

“I don’t… I don’t know… that fleeting fire centipede is not… not my contract beast…”

Song Ding’s courage had long cracked apart. With the feeling of being imprisoned in space, he simply didn’t dare to resist Lin Ming. However, he truly didn’t know who it was that had given him his orders in secret; he only knew that this person wore a black cloak covering his entire body.

Lin Ming coldly sneered. “Whatever. I’ll search myself.”

As Lin Ming spoke he tightened his right hand’s grip and a cracking sound shot through the air. Song Ding’s neck was broken by Lin Ming.

Song Ding’s eyes bulged and his face distorted. Even in death he couldn’t believe that he had been killed by a 15 year old boy.

Lin Ming gently activated the Magic Cube. A black demonic strength covered Song Ding’s spiritual sea and all of the memories within were drawn out, sent flowing into Lin Ming’s spiritual sea.

Lin Ming quickly found the information he wanted. The person in Song Ding’s memories was a tall and mysterious figure that wrapped himself in a black cloak.

This mysterious person had given Song Ding a pill that would allow him to break into the next stage of Life Destruction. As for who this person was, Song Ding had no idea. Song Dong only knew that if he helped kill Lin Ming then he would obtain another advantage.

Lin Ming sneered and casually threw away Song Ding’s corpse. Then, he ripped open the void once more and stepped inside, disappearing from sight.

Lin Academy had sent two people to secretly protect him. Lin Ming certainly wouldn’t let off this other person.

Ca!

A black spear shot out from the void, directly piercing through the throat of another middle-aged teacher who was flying away at full speed.

This teacher looked down at his neck and the rain of blood gushing out from him with disbelief. He tumbled through the air, smashing into several great trees and breaking them with his momentum.

Lin Ming followed the same procedure and searched this teacher's spiritual sea. But, he didn't obtain any valuable information.

Lin Ming frowned. In truth, he had already memorized the spirit mark in the fleeting fire centipede's spiritual sea. As long as he saw the fleeting fire centipede's master then he would recognize him.

Unfortunately, his current cultivation wasn't too high so he wasn't able to cover the entire Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom with his sense. Otherwise he would be able to find this mysterious stranger even amongst the countless people in the kingdom.

He knew that his actions had alerted his enemy, but he didn't care.

And at this time, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He sensed the form of a black-clothed girl sneaking through the jungle. She tightly gripped a long sword and held her breath, remaining vigilant of all her surroundings.

She was Situ Mingyue.

After Lin Ming instantly disappeared, she didn't leave to find help. Rather, she headed towards the location of the two teachers that had disappeared and carefully made her way forwards.

She wanted to see just what had happened… and she wanted to know just what secret that mysterious youth had.

Lin Ming faintly frowned. He looked at the corpse in front of him. If two teachers died here, then with this alone he wouldn't be able to conceal the truth.

He waved his hand and received the corpse. Then, he tore open the void once more, taking away the other teacher's corpse also.

He returned to the body of the fleeting fire centipede and threw the two corpses on top of it. Then he took out the flame seed from the dead fleeting fire centipede and set the two corpses on fire, reducing them to ashes.

After finishing this, Lin Ming quietly left.

The corpses of the two teachers were quickly discovered. It was believed that they were killed by the fleeting fire centipede, but as for who had killed the fleeting fire centipede, no one knew.

A mysterious existence that was at least at the Divine Sea realm had appeared in the edges of the dark forest and slain the fleeting fire centipede with a single sword strike. How could such a matter have occurred?

Moreover, one could look up information on all Divine Sea powerhouses in the Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom. When Lin Academy visited each of these Divine Sea powerhouses to ask them some questions, the answers they obtained were all denials.

If the person who killed the fleeting fire centipede wasn't amongst these people, then just who were they?

The survival course ended.

Situ Mingyue had obtained an 'excellent' ranking.

Lin Academy celebrated Situ Mingyue's success. Many students of Lin Academy were unbearably envious of her. For a time she rose to the heights of fame, becoming the idol of every junior in the entire Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom.

Innumerable people praised Situ Mingyue and many large influences tried to win her over. There were also many famous Princes and successors of large influences who wished to propose to her.

To marry such a beautiful woman and obtain a great supporter in the future, these were simply unimaginable benefits.

With this, Situ Mingyue became the proudest daughter of heaven in the entire Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom. She had so many admirers that if they lined up, they could encircle the entire 8000 Mile Black Swamp.

Such limelight was nearly comparable to the little princess of Vermillion Bird Divine Kingdom in the past – Lin Xiaoge.

But Situ Mingyue didn't feel even the least bit of happiness from all this attention. She was the only person who knew what truly occurred with the fleeting fire centipede…

She had watched helplessly as the fleeting fire centipede was easily sundered in half by her blade. This scene replayed itself again and again in her mind, an incomparably clear memory.

In addition, she knew that the two teachers sent to protect Lin Ming had fled the moment the fleeting fire centipede died.

After that, Lin Ming had vanished. Then in a mere two breaths of time she had heard pitiful screams echo through the forest.

If she wasn't wrong, then these screams were from those teachers.

Two Life Destruction masters had fled as fast as they could, but in a mere two breaths of time they had been killed!

When added with the sudden disappearing of Lin Ming that occurred at the same time, Situ Mingyue came to an unbelievable conclusion…

She searched for the corpses of the two teachers but couldn't find them.

When she returned, she saw that there were two more piles of ashes beside the fleeting fire centipede's corpse. Without a doubt, this was intentionally done by someone. Someone had killed the two teachers and then burned them near the fleeting fire centipede's corpse so that it would look like they had been killed by the vicious beast. The academy had been misled…

Who had done all of this? Was it really him?

This knot remained in Situ Mingyue's heart. But, she never mentioned the matter of the fleeting fire centipede or Lin Ming to anyone else.

However, as she continued her usual classes at Lin Academy, whether she was aware or not, she would pass by areas that Lin Ming often frequented and would subconsciously search for those profound eyes…

After several days, Situ Mingyue saw Lin Ming.

It was a beautiful sunny afternoon. On a slanted hillside of the martial field, a mysterious youth was resting on the green lawn, his arms crossed behind his head. He had a blade of grass held between his lips as he welcomed the sunlight.

He wore elegant and luxurious robes. Several precious treasures hung on his waist. He was handsome and refined, a youth that possessed incredibly good looks and grace. His posture indicated comfort and laziness.

He seemed like a playful boy-next-door who loved the sunlight. Situ Mingyue found it hard to imagine that everything she saw in the dark forest was real.

If those two teachers hadn't truly died, then she might have even thought she had been dreaming all this time.

Chapter 1951 - A Single Life (8)

Chapter 1951 - A Single Life (8)

…

…

…

"Miss Mingyue, you're here too? What a coincidence."

As Situ Mingyue was looking at Lin Ming, a voice sounded out from behind her. She turned around to see a 17-18 year old youth in embroidered robes holding a sword and walking out from the martial field. As this youth looked at Situ Mingyue, his face was full of smiles.

He was a Prince of the Sublime Smelting Divine Kingdom. With his talent he had chances of becoming the Crown Prince, or at the very least being given the title of a king. He always had a favorable impression towards Situ Mingyue.

However, he wouldn't be someone ardently fawning over Situ Mingyue. Instead, he maintained an appropriate distance so that his actions didn't seem disgusting.

"What is Miss Mingyue looking at?" The youth looked towards the direction Situ Mingyue was gazing at earlier and saw Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's appearance caused the youth to frown a little. Why would Situ Mingyue come to see how that wastrel playboy was doing?

"That fellow Lin An is a bit weird. I heard that the two teachers who died were originally sent to protect him. His teachers died but he was completely safe… moreover, what's strange is that this fellow somehow managed to pass the survival course and obtain a ‘great’ ranking result. With his current level, this is a bit suspicious.”

As the youth spoke, Situ Mingyue frowned. She didn’t reply.

In that moment, an incomparably shocking idea rose up in her heart, one that she could hardly believe she thought of. Lin An was so young and yet had such hidden depths. As for his true strength, it completely surpassed common sense.

This was not something that could be explained by mere talent.

In addition, his appearance resembled that man from the past. Was there really a possibility that Lin An was the reincarnation of that person?

This idea caused Situ Mingyue to suck in a breath of cold air. She didn’t know just what she was feeling in that moment.

That person, he had returned to the Sky Spill Continent? Why would he want to come back?

But as these ideas raced through Situ Mingyue’s mind she saw Lin Ming, who was lying on the grassy lawn, suddenly turn his head to look at her. His eyes seemed to pierce through the bustling martial field, penetrating through all, shining like stars…

Days passed. Years flew by.

Three years passed. Lin Ming was now 18 years old.

During these three years, Lin Ming’s strength rapidly grew.

After he obtained a new life, all of the essence he had accumulated from before had been transferred to his new body. And not only did it not weaken, but instead it strengthened along with his rebirth.

Thus, in terms of the mortal body and blood vitality, Lin Ming didn't need to train in those at all.

Similarly, his inner world had long since been consolidated.

Even when his cultivation had fallen to its lowest point, his dantian had still been an inner world and not a revolving core.

Thus, bottlenecks didn't exist in Lin Ming's cultivation. As long as enough energy gathered in his inner world then it would become as stable as the time when Lin Ming was a peak Holy Lord.

As for the Laws, there was no need to mention them. The Laws he comprehended hadn't diminished in his rebirth. Rather, during these past years he had obtained many new comprehensions.

Like this, Lin Ming didn't possess problems in his foundation for cultivation. His foundation was solid beyond belief.

What Lin Ming needed to train in now was his state of mind.

In addition to that, he needed to gather accumulations.

What he required was time.

On this day as Lin Ming was quietly cultivating in his chambers, his eyes flew open and the power of his sense surged outwards, enveloping the entire Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom.

The Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom was countless times larger than the Sky Fortune Kingdom of the past. Now, Lin Ming's constantly growing soul force and cultivation was enough to cover it all.

The array formations in the various palaces of Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom were unable to stop Lin Ming's sense.

The moment that Lin Ming's sense covered over everything, some Divine Sea powerhouses of the Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom seemed to sense something. Their hearts stirred, feeling as if a clear breeze had blown past them. However, their minds immediately calmed afterwards. They tried to sense what was different but they couldn't find anything special about what just happened, thus they finally summed it up as an illusion…

"My ability is still far worse than before…"

Lin Ming shook his head. With his current level of strength, the larger the area he wanted to cover his sense with, the less ability he had to hide it.

However, he wasn't worried. He was only 18 years old and had plenty of time ahead of him.

The moment Lin Ming's sense covered the entire Divine Kingdom, he also monitored everyone's locations. Although this consumed a tremendous amount of Lin Ming' soul force, he still continued onwards. He considered this an exercise for his spiritual sea.

During this reincarnation, what Lin Ming focused on was cultivating his state of self and cultivating his spiritual sea.

He maintained this condition every day. At the start he was only able to last for a few quarter hours, but afterwards he was able to continue for two hours, four hours, and even 8-10 hours.

Lin Ming challenged his limits again and again. His actions left him a little exhausted.

During these three years, Lin Ming gradually obtained better results in Lin Academy so that others wouldn't have a reason to criticize his parents. From lower ranks, to middle ranks, to upper ranks, he now approached the highest ranks.

As for Lin Ming himself, he became increasingly handsome. His eyes were deep and bright. His temperament was like a book that no one could put down. Sometimes he was mysterious, sometimes he was as hot as the sun, sometimes he was restrained, sometimes he was anxious…

In the fourth year, Lin Academy organized a massive test. Lin Ming achieved incredibly good results and even broke the records for two of the tests.

This left everyone surprised. No one wanted to acknowledge Lin Ming's progress, yet they had no choice but to.

At the end of the fourth year, Lin Academy held a massive tournament. Lin Ming reached the finals, defeating many senior students along the way and finally obtaining a top five position.

Lin Ming's name was carved onto Lin Academy's ranking stone tablet. Moreover, it appeared in many other places as well. This left Lin Ming's mother ecstatic with joy.

During this great tournament, Lin Ming managed to shut up all those people that were looking at him with distaste.

After all, only true combat strength was the real deal!

In a short few years, Lin Ming had gone from a useless young master to someone who almost matched Situ Mingyue's level. This proved that Lin Ming possessed a terrifying talent.

As things stood, if Lin Ming continued on like this then he would become increasingly fierce. He would overtake many people and then leave them behind as he finally stepped into the Divine Sea.

This was just incredible.

This was a bright future. Coupled with Lin Ming's handsome looks and his famous family background, many young girls at Lin Academy had a crush on him.

16-17 year old girls that looked like flowers were naïve and innocent. Often they would have crushes on the best looking, most well-mannered, and most confident boy they met.

And Lin Ming had all of these advantages, so it was natural for there to be such a result.

In fact, sometimes as Lin Ming was wandering through the academy there would be a brave girl that ran out in front of him. These girls would give Lin Ming a pink letter before fleeing with embarrassment and blushed faces.

Slowly opening the letters, the gracefully written words were faint. The words of girls' budding interest in boys contained a shyness and youthful beating of the heart as well as tenseness and anticipation…

Lin Ming accepted all of these letters in piles.

He deeply recalled that during his youth, he had seen countless young masters of great families.

These people all came from grand and wealthy backgrounds. Their talent was above others' and their strength was amazing. Their looks were handsome and it seemed as if they were the pets of heaven, given every possible advantage.

As for the frustrated men that were compared to them, those men had humble origins, their talents were poor, they lacked resources, their strength was mediocre, and even their appearances were ugly.

For beautiful young girls in the prime of their youth, it was clear just who they would choose as their boyfriends between these two types of people.

Even if they couldn't obtain the affectations of these rich young masters, they still wouldn't accept the diligent pursuit of those frustrated men…

This was the emotion of youth. Lin Ming couldn't help that he once envied these young masters. He envied their high-spirited actions and their frivolous and easy youthful life.

During Lin Ming's youth, although he wasn't some frustrated man, he wasn't the young master of a wealthy family either. He had to constantly struggle, to spur himself onwards, to take these young masters as a goal in order to surpass them and fight for success.

Although he succeeded, he had developed a calm and experienced disposition, one that was edged with restraint. He had lost many things in exchange for that.

It was only today that Lin Ming was able to experience such a life.

In this Lin Academy, he was a young master. Everything he had aroused the envy of others. He felt that his youthful nature that was suppressed in the past was being thoroughly released, making him feel content.

To experience the baptism of mortal life and realize the hundred tastes of life.

On the road of martial arts, there were many senior supreme elders who would come to the mortal world when they experienced a brutal bottleneck. They would wander the world, feeling the life around them.

They would understand these feelings and try to break through what they knew in order to reach a higher level.

The present Lin Ming was also like this.

However, these senior supreme elders were unable to do what Lin Ming was doing and truly walk down that road of life once more.

They could only try to forget their minds and act out some role in the mortal world. But, what they did didn't allow them to fully succeed.

As for Lin Ming, due to all sorts of reasons, when forced into a desperate situation he had no choice but to experience this mortal world once more and walk down the winding road of life. Thus, his experience of life was much more thorough.

Another year passed. Lin Ming was now 20 years old.

His cultivation progressed yet again. His spiritual sea became increasingly profound and his sense could already cover the entire Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom for 16 hours without feeling any exhaustion.

If it were for a moment, Lin Ming could even have his sense cover most of the Sky Spill Planet. He could extend his sense from the Sky Spill Continent all the way to the Holy Demon Continent.

But on this day, as Lin Ming was training his sense, he suddenly discovered a person in Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom.

This person had a wisp of an aura on him, one that was similar to the one he sensed on the fleeting fire centipede he had slain years ago.

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. During the years of training his sense, he had always been looking for this person. However, because the fleeting fire centipede was instantly killed, this individual seemed to have fled the Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom.

It was clear that he was afraid of the mysterious existence which killed the fleeting fire centipede. This was why Lin Ming hadn't been able to find him yet.

Now five years had passed and this person returned.

Lin Ming locked onto this person with his divine sense. He was several thousand miles away but his every movement and action, his cultivation methods, his cultivation base, the movement of energy in his meridians, everything was completely seen by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming could confirm that this person was the fleeting fire centipede's master.

He smiled. He used his sense and left a mark on this other person, just like the True Divinities did to him in the past.

He wanted to use this person as bait and fully clear out all those people who tried to usurp power from behind the scenes.

Chapter 1952 - A Single Life (9)

Chapter 1952 - A Single Life (9)

…

…

…

Deep at night, a seemingly ordinary carriage stopped at the back doors of a luxurious and opulent mansion. The curtains of the carriage were pulled open and a mysterious person in a black cloak stepped out and walked through the door.

His footsteps were light, as if he were just a ghost.

He grasped a special entry token, one that allowed him unimpeded access to a chamber in the deepest depths of the mansion.

Within this chamber, a 30 some year old man had already been waiting for a long time.

This man was tall and his shoulders were broad. Beneath two thick eyebrows, a pair of hard eyes gleamed.

This man emitted a faint killing intent. This was a presence that could only be formed by slaughtering on the road of martial arts for many years.

In front of him was a decanter of wine. At this time, he held onto the decanter with one hand and was pouring the wine into a bronze cup.

His hands were strong and steady, as if cast from iron. As the wine was poured from the large decanter, the cup filled to the brim with not a single drop spilling out.

At this time, the front door of the chamber opened. The mysterious cloaked man from the carriage paced over and respectfully bowed to this 30 some year old man.

“Marquis Yutian, your subordinate has returned.”

The black-cloaked person courteously said.

This man called Marquis Yutian was the Lin Family’s son-in-law, Zhou Yutian. He had married Lin Ming’s second younger sister, Lin Ping, and was the son-in-law of the current emperor. He had been granted the title of Marquis and commanded one of the elite forces of the Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom – the Silver Armor Legion.

Of course, the reason Zhou Yutian was able to possess such a high status was because he had a variation bloodline. He was an extremely strong and talented individual and had even become the champion of a grand martial arts meeting.

Five years ago, after Lin Ming disappeared to go to the Eternal Demon Abyss during the survival course, Zhou Yutian and the Silver Armor Legion were the ones responsible for searching for him.

“Mm.” Zhou Yutian lightly responded. He waved to a seat across from him and said, “Come, enjoy this 10,000 year fog flower wine, it is a welcoming gift for you!”

The black-cloaked man’s eyebrows leapt upwards. He looked at the cup of wine, slightly surprised. 10,000 year fog flower wine was extremely precious and drinking it would be greatly beneficial to a martial artist’s cultivation.

He apologetically said, “Marquis, this subordinate handled matters poorly. After failing to assassinate Lin An five years ago, I allowed the Marquis to fall into danger instead. I fled for five years afterwards and only returned now, so I don’t have the face to drink wine with the Marquis.”

Zhou Yutian laughed. “If I doubted all of my subordinates then there would be no one left. Five years ago you failed to kill Lin An, but that was not because of your mistake but because

I underestimated him. I never thought that there would be a Divine Sea powerhouse protecting him in secret. Although your move failed, you still managed to expose Lin An's depths to me. Luckily, when he disappeared from the survival course and I sent the Silver Armor Legion out to search for him, I restrained myself from doing anything. Otherwise, with the many eyes and ears of the Silver Armor Legion, it would have been inevitable that this mysterious person found out the truth…"

As Marquis Yutian spoke to here he coldly snorted, hateful killing intent flashing in his eyes.

"Thank you Marquis for your forgiveness." The black-cloaked person tossed down the cup of 10,000 year fog flower wine.

Zhou Yutian smiled with satisfaction. "How is the matter that I had you attend to?"

"Reporting to the Marquis, this subordinate journeyed to the Holy Demon Continent and has succeeded in finding the bloodline of the previous Blood Slaughter Steppes' Steppes Master, the one who bears a grudge against Lin Ming from the past… this subordinate carried out a secret investigation and can confirm that over 200 years ago, the former Steppes Master was killed by Lin Ming. Afterwards, Lin Ming became a twelve-winged Heavenly Demon and ascended into the position of the new Steppes Master. He planted slave seals in the bodies of many of the supervisory Elders to take control of the entire Blood Slaughter Steppes.

"Afterwards, the bloodline of the previous Steppes Master was forced to flee. But after Lin Ming left, they managed to develop themselves in secret. They now have a tremendous influence. Because of their family's enmity with Lin Ming, they are willing to cooperate with us."

As the black-cloaked man spoke he took out a token. "Marquis, this is a sound transmission mark that this subordinate obtained. This subordinate has already formed a communication route. By using this transmission mark, you can locate the one leading the bloodline of the previous Steppes Master."

“Wonderful!” Zhou Yutian happily nodded. He took the token and swept through it with his divine sense. Indeed, this was the real deal.

“The Marquis’ plans are truly divine. I assume that when I was sent to the Blood Slaughter Steppes, all of these plans were formed in advance. That person’s parents are in the way far too often. Does the Marquis plan to do something with those two old geezers…?” As the black-cloaked person spoke to here, he slashed his finger along his neck.

Although Lin Ming had already flown to the stars over 200 years ago, these people still feared mentioning Lin Ming’s name. Thus, they would only call him ‘that person’.

Zhou Yutian frowned. He coldly said, “How can I possibly move against them. If those two old codgers have any problems then if that person were to investigate what happened, I would die without a burial ground! But that doesn’t matter at all. Those two idiots wander about like muddled fools. Even if I let them live, eventually supreme authority will fall into my hands regardless! As for the Second Prince, he is a useless degenerate that doesn’t need to be feared at all. Only Lin An is still too heavily favored. My worry is that those two old fools are waiting for Lin An to grow up so that they can give him more power. Now, I don’t know why but Lin An is becoming increasingly sharp. I have to remove him as soon as possible… but, I also don’t know who is protecting him in secret. Ah, how troublesome…”

“Marquis is wise. This Lin An must be killed before he has grown. Then, even if that person returns from the Divine Realm he definitely won’t do anything just for an adopted son of his parents. After waiting for another one or two thousand years, that person’s parents will also pass away from natural deaths, leaving behind all authority in Princess Lin Ping’s hands. That is equivalent to the entire Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom being under the control of the Marquis!”

The black-cloaked person chuckled as he thought of this, and Zhou Yutian also laughed. But at that moment, the black-cloaked man violently shook and grabbed onto the table. His eyes widened. He could feel an agonizing pain spread through his body. A cruel and sinister strength was invading his meridians, melting away his marrow!

He looked at the bronze cup. Then, he gazed up at Zhou Yutian in disbelief.

“You… you…”

Black blood began leaking from the edges of the black-cloaked man’s mouth. His lips turned pale white and sweat streamed down his body.

The wine he drank just then – it was poisoned!

Zhou Yutian watched with terrifying calmness. He indifferently looked at the black-cloaked person and slowly said, “Using heaven swallowing blood, divine demon grass, mortal dragon flowers and other types of heavenly materials, this is seven seed poison that I produced myself. It is tasteless and colorless, and I even added on a little of the Poison Laws I cultivate. I mixed it with the 10,000 fog flower wine. After drinking it you will lose your skills and your essence energy will deplete until you die…”

“But… why…”

The black-cloaked person grit his teeth, glaring at Zhou Yutian with hatred, so enraged that his eyes nearly popped out of his head. The man threw back his black cloak, revealing a thin and narrow face and an expression that seemed to be dying from despair. The man’s body continued shivering.

Zhou Yutian drew out a sword from his spatial ring. He looked at the black-cloaked man and laughed. “You have followed me for such a long time yet you still ask such a stupid question? You know far too many things. The powerhouse that guards Lin An might have some method to find you. If he did, the consequences would be inconceivable!

“Five years ago when you failed to assassinate Lin An, the reason I didn’t kill you and sent you to the Holy Demon Continent was because I still had a mission for you. Now that your mission is complete, keeping you alive will only put myself in danger. That isn’t a good decision at all…

"In order to accomplish great things, one must be merciless and cruel. Although I believe I can kill you myself, that will cause far too much movement. Since I used seven seed poison and 10,000 year fog flower wine to serve as your funeral wine, you should be more than content to die.

"Don't blame me for this."

As Zhou Yutian spoke, he thrust his sword towards the black-cloaked man!

The black-cloaked man had already lost all his energy. This sword would easily kill him.

The black-cloaked man looked at the sword with despair and hate. He waited for death to arrive. But in that instant, the death he anticipated didn't come. Rather, Zhou Yutian had frozen where he was.

His sword seemed to be frozen in the void, completely unable to be moved.

"Who!?"

Zhou Yutian was frightened out of his wits. This was his private hidden chamber that was protected with layers upon layers of array formations. There shouldn't be anyone able to silently sneak in here without him knowing. The only exception was if… this other person's strength had reached an incomprehensible boundary!

Could it be that this was the peerless powerhouse secretly protecting Lin An?

Thinking of this, Zhou Yutian felt a cold sweat stream down his back.

And at this moment, the void in front of Zhou Yutian began to shake. A pair of jade-soft hands reached out from the void and tore open space as if it were paper.

Then, a youth in robes stepped out from the void. This youth had straight eyebrows that slanted towards his temples. He looked around 18-19 years old. This person was the reborn Lin Ming.

Seeing this face, Zhou Yutian looked like he saw a ghost. His eyes filled with disbelief. “You… you… you… Lin An!?”

He could hardly believe what he saw. To locate his hidden chamber, to easily tear open the void and teleport, to ignore all array formations and even monitor his conversation, these were methods that even late Divine Sea powerhouses weren’t capable of!

And all of this had been done by Lin An! Lin An was a mere 20 year old hairless little boy!

Could it be that… the sword strike that cut down the fleeting fire centipede was not sent by some hidden Divine Sea powerhouse, but by Lin An himself!?

Zhou Yutian felt his entire worldview be completely overturned in that moment. “You… who are you!?”

Zhou Yutian didn’t believe that a 20 year old boy had such abilities!

Lin Ming coldly sneered. “You’re quite skilled. Although the Sky Spill Continent and Holy Demon Continent are linked together now, the two continents are still far too distant from each other and not many exchanges occur. Even so, you managed to investigate the matters about when I went to the Blood Slaughter Steppes and even found out that I killed the previous Steppes Master. Your plans aren’t bad at all!

“After your subordinate failed to kill me, you wanted him to flee to the Holy Demon Continent and unite the evil rabble that is the previous Steppes Master’s bloodline, and then use them to subvert the leadership of Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom? This idea of killing two birds with one stone is quite good, and your methods are also ruthless enough. You remind me a little of that Yang Yun from 200 years ago. But what a pity, you are not Yang Yun, and you fall far, far short of him…”

Lin Ming’s words were spoken unhurriedly. But as they fell onto Zhou Yutian’s ears, they were like a bolt of lightning that struck from nowhere.

In particular, those words ‘Even so, you managed to investigate the matters about when I went to the Blood Slaughter Steppes and even found out that I killed the previous Steppes Master’, caused Zhou Yutian to go cold all over. Just how was this Lin An? This was clearly Lin Ming!!

“You… you… you…”

Zhou Yutian shivered and his will cracked. No matter how great his ambitions were and no matter how ruthless his methods were, he couldn’t summon any courage to face the legendary character in front of him!

Now that he looked straight into Lin Ming’s eyes, he nearly collapsed!

That’s right, only that person could have such abilities. And, he actually thought to assassinate him secretly. Wasn’t this just bringing about his own destruction?

But why, why would that person return from the Divine Realm? Why would they turn into a baby and slowly grow up again?

Zhou Yutian could no longer understand what was happening, and at this time any further thinking stopped. Lin Ming’s mental strength was like a pointed needle that stabbed into Zhou Yutian’s spiritual sea.

“Since you are my second sister’s husband, I didn’t want to kill you. But you wanted to take advantage of my parents’ kindness and harm them. You touched my bottom line, so die.”

As Lin Ming spoke his soul force punctured Zhou Yutian’s spiritual sea. Each piercing brought incomparable pain. This was the pain of having one’s soul torn apart. Zhou Yutian’s eyes turned wide and blank and his mouth flapped like a dying fish.

Zhou Yutian wanted to cry out but he couldn’t. He grabbed his neck, trying to choke himself to death. From this it could be seen just how much pain he was in.

After 10 breaths of time, Zhou Yutian died. He fell onto the ground like a dead dog.

And behind Lin Ming, the black-cloaked man had already seemed to have lost his soul.

Lin An was actually that person…

The black-cloaked man's lips shivered and his face turned white.

Lin Ming used the Magic Cube to extract all of Zhou Yutian's memories. In that instant, all of Zhou Yutian's rebellion plans were known by Lin Ming, including the tools and materials he had hidden to start it. All of these things were hidden by Zhou Yutian in extremely secret places and could be used as evidence that he was plotting a rebellion all this time.

Moreover, there was even a witness this time.

Lin Ming flicked his fingers and a ball of light shot into the black-cloaked person's spiritual sea. This was a slave seal.

With this slave seal, Lin Ming didn't worry that any secrets would be revealed.

Lin Ming said with cold indifference, "I will give you three days to testify against Zhou Yutian. After that, I will allow you to die in peace. Your family and your descendants will not be implicated but will be properly placed somewhere else instead."

The cloaked man knelt to the ground. Facing Lin Ming, the pressure was far too great. There simply wasn't any way to disobey Lin Ming's will.

As Lin Ming spoke, his figure vanished once more. After several breaths of time he reappeared. He had collected the evidence of Zhou Yutian's plot and sent this evidence with the black-cloaked man to surrender himself to Lin Xiaodong.

……..

On this night, the capital of Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom was busy with movement. Martial law was declared on the streets. Soldiers, elite legions, and powerful martial artists were sent to surround Marquis Yutian's mansion, and all of his people were captured and interrogated.

The corpse of Marquis Yutian was found in his hidden chamber. As for the evidence that he was plotting a rebellion, that was taken by Lin Xiaodong.

The matter of Zhou Yutian's assassination attempt on Lin An five years ago finally came out. The black-cloaked man explained everything that had occurred regarding the fleeting fire centipede and the two teachers.

Everything that happened in the capital was watched by Situ Mingyue.

So, the one who tried to kill Lin An that time was actually Marquis Yutian...

Such a person had tried to kill the useless playboy that was Lin Ming, but not only did his assassination fail, but five years later he himself was the one to die...

Chapter 1953 - A Single Life (10)

Chapter 1953 - A Single Life (10)

…

…

…

Concerning Marquis Yutian, Situ Mingyue was faintly aware just how much of a cold and calculating individual he was. He was a past champion of the martial arts meeting and he had many, many lucky chances.

There were even some current records of Lin Academy that were held by Marquis Yutian.

Such a strong person who had such deep plans had ended up with such a pitiful fate.

The reason for this was likely because he had tried to assassinate Lin An.

Situ Mingyue couldn't imagine just how Marquis Yutian's plan to kill Lin An and stage a coup was discovered. But, she believed that all of this was inevitably related to Lin An.

This youth was far too mysterious…

Three days had passed since Marquis Yutian's plotting had been revealed, but, the capital was still on high alert, the entire city drowned in a tense atmosphere. With the downfall of such an important figure there was bound to be a wide cleansing.

All matters related to this were managed by Lin Xiaodong.

Lin Xiaodong didn't slay innocents. Rather, those that were associated with Marquis Yutian were reassigned to other areas, had their authority reduced, or were even exiled to far off outposts.

This was an inevitable end.

Situ Mingyue watched all of this occur, not finding it strange at all. Over 200 years ago when the Asura Divine Kingdom was destroyed, what followed was also a wide-scale cleansing.

She aimlessly walked. Then, she paused…

She saw that not too far away, on a rolling hill adjacent to the Lin Academy's martial field, there was a youth holding a blade of grass in his hands, relaxing in the sun…

This youth was Lin Ming. At this time, his mood wasn't good at all.

Although matters had been resolved, the final culprit had been the husband of his sister, Lin Ping.

The Lin Ming of this life in truth didn't have much contact with Lin Ping and his parents' other children. Deep within palace politics when matters of power were involved, affection would slowly turn cold and distant.

At the same time, there would be people willing to take risks, murdering and framing in order to seize more power.

Zhou Yutian might be the first for the Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom, but he wouldn't be the last.

As the Lin Family grew larger and larger, it wouldn't be surprising for those who shared flesh and blood to kill each other.

All of this was an unavoidable truth.

Lin Ming didn't want to bother with this. In this life, all he wanted to do was quietly accompany his parents to the end of their natural lifespan. As for whether the Lin Family prospered or declined, that would depend on the will of heaven.

There was no family that could thrive forever. Tens of thousands of years later when his own prestige faded, the Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom he established might change to another name and the Lin Family might revert to an ordinary family… and in truth, this might not be a bad thing.

As Lin Ming was thinking this, he could feel a girl silently walking towards him. He turned to see a black-clothed Situ Mingyue quietly arrived at his side. She wore a dress and as she sat down beside him, she looked like a proper lady.

Her hands wrapped around her knees. She didn’t look at Lin Ming, only quietly staring into the far off distance.

Lin Ming had long since noticed that Situ Mingyue would sometimes appear by his side, whether it was by design or accident. Sometimes she would be quietly paying attention to him.

But it was never like today where she sat right by his side.

He faintly smiled but didn’t speak. Like this, the two of them looked towards the horizon.

The setting sun was colored like blood. The red clouds seemed completely dyed. As the glow of the sun poured down the rolling mountains, it was like the veil of a goddess, an infinitely beautiful sight…

……

Zhou Yutian’s case of treason had caused Lin Ming’s parents to suffer some strain. In these past days Lin Ming had frequently appeared by his parents’ side, trying to cheer up and soothe their moods.

“Father, your child raises a cup in your honor.”

At a family banquet, Lin Ming filled a cup of wine for his father.

No matter how many years passed, his father still had the same two hobbies – drinking and playing chess.

“Father, Mother, this time your child would like to go out for adventure...”

Lin Ming suddenly said at the end of the banquet.

In this first new life he wanted to accompany his parents, but that didn’t mean he would always be around them. He needed to leave, walk down more roads, experience more of life.

“That’s also good. Go out and take a look at how great this world is.”

Lin Fu chuckled. But Lin Mu was a bit regretful. However, in order for her child to gain more experience, she eventually nodded.

Lin Ming left. This time, he was gone for 20 years.

Afterwards he returned and spent two years beside his parents.

Then, he left once more.

He traveled through the Sky Spill Continent and the Holy Demon Continent. In the Sky Spill Continent’s Southern Wilderness, he went to the country that was founded by the two sisters, Na Yi and Na Shui.

These two sisters had become the rulers of the greatest tribal power in the Southern Wilderness. They met and survived through a catastrophe and were bound by a common destiny. Their relationship was extremely good.

Now, the two of them had aged. The older sister Na Yi had a house full of grandchildren. As for the younger sister Na Shui, she had become the most devout goddess, vowing to never marry for life.

Lin Ming became a wandering seer that roamed the four corners of the world. He arrived at the two sisters’ country and quickly saw Na Shui and Na Yi before leaving.

"Big Sister, that man…"

Na Shui looked at Lin Ming's back as he faded into the distance. She didn't know why, but she felt an aching pain in her heart.

"What's wrong?"

Na Yi looked at Na Shui in confusion. Na Shui shook her head.

She lowered her head and saw a glow of blue light gather in her palm, finally condensing into a pill bottle.

"He left this behind?"

Na Shui was stunned. She opened the pill bottle. Two vividly green pills tumbled out.

These two pills emitted a medicinal fragrance beyond description. Just from smelling them, they could feel their meridians clear out and their flesh and blood burn hot, as if all of their meridians were being transformed by these pills.

Heavens! Just the smell alone possessed such a potent medicinal strength. It was hard to imagine just how precious these pills were!

At this time, a sound transmission passed into Na Shui's mind. "Dip the pill in warm water and only drink the juice. Remember: do not directly swallow the pill. This medicine can prolong your life, help maintain your thoughts, and cleanse your marrow. It can even allow your cultivation to rise much higher and extend your lifespans by several times…"

Hearing these words, the sisters were completely shocked.

This person, could it be…

After completing these karmic ties, Lin Ming quietly left. He arrived at the Holy Demon Continent. Here, he visited the Fey race.

He saw Duanmu Qun, Feng Shen, and Lan Xin.

These three people had partied together with Lin Ming in the Blood Slaughter Steppes, fighting with him. They had risked their lives with Lin Ming and there could be considered some friendship between them.

These three people had also reached the Divine Sea realm.

On the Sky Spill Planet, someone that could become an emperor in a hundred years was a peerless genius. As for Duanmu Qun and the others, they had accomplished this in their sixties.

In particular, Duanmu Qun. He was making steps towards the middle Divine Sea realm. In his Holy Land, he held onto an extremely high level of authority and was slowly ascending to become the successor.

Lin Ming quietly arrived, left behind lucky chances for the three of them, and then departed once more.

This time, Lin Ming left for a hundred years.

He left the Sky Spill Planet and freely wandered the vast cosmos of the lower realms. Sometimes he went into seclusion and sometimes he journeyed out to gain experience.

Every time he went to a new place, he would settle down for a period of time.

He saw different people, saw different nations. Some were primitive, some were advanced, some were poor, some were prosperous.

Slowly, during this first new life, Lin Ming had reached 160 years of age.

Because of his past accumulations there were no bottlenecks in his cultivation.

His cultivation had long been restored to its previous state and his strength surpassed its previous highest point.

He was getting closer and closer to the World King realm.

Breaking into the World King realm was an extremely important jump upwards. Thus, he wasn't in a hurry. He had plenty of time to fully prepare for it.

Time passed, year after year.

On this year, Lin Ming was 200 years old. Adding on his last life, Lin Ming had experienced the winds and rains of over 400 years. He planned to return to his parents and carefully cultivate for 20-30 more years.

Then, he would begin his preparations for breaking into the World King realm.

To break into the World King realm before 500 years of age, for a level of talent like Lin Ming that far surpassed the elites of the 33 Heavens, this speed wasn't fast at all, and could even be called slow…

But during the process of making a breakthrough, as he became more and more aware of himself, Lin Ming had obtained many, many benefits…

This year, Lin Ming returned. He went to his parents' side.

His cultivation was disguised at the early Divine Sea realm. He planned to start his final preparations to break into the World King realm.

However, he didn't think that his parents would give him such a difficult conundrum.

During the days he was gone, his parents had privately made a decision and prepared a marriage for him.

And the fiancée wasn't a stranger either. It was unexpectedly… Situ Mingyue.

This was because in these past years, Situ Mingyue was far too dazzling in the Sky Spill Continent.

Lin Ming’s parents had taken a liking towards this girl and had already promised the matchmaker the marriage. They even met with Situ Yaoyao and Situ Yaoyue, passing down a dowry to them…

Chapter 1954 – Attacking World King

Chapter 1954 – Attacking World King

…

…

…

After Lin Ming returned from such a long period of separation, his parents were overjoyed.

Lin Mu personally went to the kitchen and prepared the dishes that Lin Ming loved to eat the most during his childhood.

Living in such a high position, Lin Mu rarely prepared food. It was only when Lin Ming returned that she personally cooked for him, and she even did so daily.

After the meal was set up, Lin Ming quietly sat down and then said, “I will not be married.”

“Mm? Why?” Lin Fu and Lin Mu looked at Lin Ming with surprise. Lin Fu said, “Do you have someone you love? Why don’t you bring them back and let your parents take a look at them so we’ll be happy.”

Lin Ming remained silent.

After receiving no reply from Lin Ming for a long time, Lin Mu’s eyes widened. “You don’t have one? Then why won’t you marry? The wife has already been chosen for you. Within the Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom, or even the entire continent, she is the most outstanding lady that could possibly be chosen. She has countless pursuers and even the matchmaker has visited both houses. If you could marry such a nice young lady then your mother will be happy for the rest of her days. How could you allow your mother to agree to this and then go back on our promise?"

Lin Ming shook his head, leaving no ground for compromise.

"Why don't you say something!" Lin Mu anxiously said. "That child Mingyue, in what area does she not match up to you? Her appearance is outstanding, her talent is good, she is clever and smart, just how could you not like such a wife? Do you really want to be alone for the rest of your life? Your big brother and big sister, who hasn't married? Your second brother even has over 100 children."

In Lin Mu's mind, marrying and producing children, continuing the family lineage, that was the right and honest thing to do. Lin Ming seemed to have planned to live his life alone and this left her very worried.

Lin Ming still didn't speak. Lin Mu was left grasping at straws.

This family banquet did not end happily.

On the next day, Lin Ming entered Lin Academy once more. After 200 years, Lin Academy hadn't changed much. On the campus grounds there were young people everywhere who dreamed their own dreams of martial arts. They all trained here, hoping to find success in the future.

There were many people but none of them noticed Lin Ming. Amongst the academy's younger generation, although many of them had listened to stories about Lin Ming, only a small number of them had seen Lin Ming's portrait.

Lin Ming did the same as he did in the past. He quietly arrived on the rolling slopes near the academy's martial field and laid down on the lawn, biting a blade of grass between his lips. He quietly experienced the bustling noise of the mortal world, tranquilly perceiving it...

He lay here until the sun set. But at this time, the voice of a woman sounded out in his ears.

“Sorry. I didn’t mean to cause such a problem for you.”

Lin Ming turned to see a black-clothed Situ Mingyue standing beneath the setting sun. The golden light fell down upon her, illuminating her and making her appear like a spirit that was dancing in flames.

“When the Empress Dowager sent someone to settle this marriage with me, she didn’t tell me that you didn’t know about this matter…”

Situ Mingyue’s voice was a bit melancholic. After 200 years, her appearance hadn’t changed much at all. She was still as beautiful as she was in her youth, but she gained a more mystical atmosphere around her.

She had already broken into the Divine Sea realm and was making great progress towards the middle Divine Sea realm.

In the entire Sky Spill Planet’s martial world, Situ Mingyue possessed a considerable status and the Situ Family was already beginning to slowly reform. Although they no longer had their own country, they had become a top family that was dreaded by many countries.

In terms of status alone, Situ Mingyue was properly matched with Lin Ming.

“I should be the one apologizing.” Lin Ming shook his head. “I don’t want to marry nor will I marry.”

Situ Mingyue looked at Lin Ming’s eyes as if she could pierce through him and understand his deepest feelings. “Why? Because you already have a wife?”

Lin Ming remained silent.

At this time, Situ Mingyue suddenly lightened her tone. She calmly and clearly said, “The truth is that you really are his reincarnation…”

These words shook Lin Ming’s thoughts. He turned to Situ Mingyue, astonishment in his eyes. But then, he immediately calmed down.

He didn't acknowledge this nor did he deny it.

There were things that had been personally witnessed by Situ Mingyue. Moreover, in the past years, Situ Mingyue's understanding towards the road of martial arts had become increasingly profound. She recalled the moment 200 years when Lin Ming was attacked by an assassin, and as she mulled over these memories, she thought more and more that it wasn't a Divine Sea powerhouse secretly protecting Lin Ming, but that it was Lin Ming himself who struck back.

As for Situ Mingyue, she contrasted her current strength with the strength of Lin Ming at the time. Then, she finally determined that the Lin Ming of that time had possessed a strength that far surpassed her understanding.

Even today, Situ Mingyue found that Lin Ming was becoming harder and harder to understand.

She eventually believed the conclusion she had formed in the past – that Lin An was Lin Ming. Perhaps he had suffered some danger in the Divine Realm, or perhaps some other reasons, but in short, he had returned…

Lin Ming's silence was seen as tacit agreement by Situ Mingyue.

Realizing that such a legendary figure was standing in front of her, Situ Mingyue discovered that she didn't feel much fear or awe. Rather, the one in front of her was still Lin An, the youth from 200 years ago.

She softly said, "I won't speak of this and I also understand the reason why you don't want to marry. As for the marriage matter, I have already told my mother to cancel it. Really, I'm sorry…"

After Situ Mingyue spoke, she turned and quietly walked away.

For a time, Lin Ming had a strangely inexplicable feeling in his mind. In particular, Situ Mingyue's way in which she addressed his name afterwards left him feeling something peculiar.

He left the martial field and returned to his parents.

During these past days, his mother seemed to be depressed. Lin Ming quietly accompanied her.

Year after year passed.

Like this, 20 years passed. On this day Lin Ming left Sky Spill Planet and rode Primordius Heavenly Palace to fly deep into some far off planet.

He wanted to… break into the World King realm!

World King, that was the king of a world!

To an essence gathering martial artist, the Pulse Condensation realm was the start of their road of martial arts. At this boundary, a martial artist formed their meridians and could draw in heaven and earth origin energy through their acupoints.

When one's origin energy reached a certain degree, it would gather in their lower abdomen and form a dantian. From there, a true essence vortex would be created.

From the disorderly inner energy of the Houtian realm, it would become orderly at the Xiantian realm.

Then above that, when the vortex condensed into a core, that was the Revolving Core realm.

When that core shattered and was remade, that was the Life Destruction realm.

As for the Nine Divine Shifts – the three boundaries of Divine Sea, Divine Transformation, and Divine Lord, during this process a martial artist's dantian would become a world, forming continents, lakes, seas, heavens and earth…

After entering the Holy Lord realm, the vast earth within one's inner world would turn into a planet and the great vault of heaven would become the universe.

After the Holy Lord realm was the World King realm!

This boundary was extremely special. It required that a martial artist refine a real world and fuse it into their own inner world. Their own inner world would integrate the space, time, and matter of a real universe, thus obtaining the characteristics of a real world.

To refine a real world, that sounded inconceivable.

However, upon practical application, it wasn't so exaggerated.

Worlds came in sizes large and small. The 33 Heavens could be called an entire world, but a single dewdrop, a single flower petal, could also be called a world. This was what others meant when they one flower one world, one grain of sand one pure land of bliss.

When a martial artist grew to the World King realm, they would refine a world that depended on how solid their foundation was and how strong they were.

The stronger a martial artist was, the more solid their foundation was, then the larger the world they refined would be. Otherwise, the world they refined would be smaller.

But in truth, no matter how talented a World King was, the world they refined wouldn't be too ridiculously large.

Generally speaking, refining an area of dozens of miles as well as the material in space was considered quite good.

Even a top talent like Emperor Shakya had only managed to refine a thousand miles of the void.

And in rumors, it was said that in the ancient past there were extreme True Divinities that refined an entire planet when they became World Kings.

To take an entire planet, as well as the void around the planet, the origin energy within the planet, the lives atop the planet, and even some of the Heavenly Dao Law fragments, and then refine all of that into one's own inner world, that was a heaven-shaking feat.

To achieve such a step, they either existed in the records of history or were mystical characters like Sheng Mei, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, or Soaring Feather. But whether or not they had managed to reach such a point, no one knew.

To refine the real world in one's inner world, besides differences in size, there were also differences in strength of space, the origin energy, and the Law fragments within. There were differences in all these aspects.

For these things, if one could choose a higher level world then it would be helpful to a martial artist's future road of cultivation.

Of course, wanting to refine a higher level world was far more difficult.

Normally, when the disciple of a great influence was breaking into the World King realm, they would choose a first rate world to refine. This was because by doing this as opposed to refining a low level world, it would save a martial artist time when they consolidated their boundary. And in the future they would also reach higher achievements.

With Lin Ming's current foundation and strength, he didn't fear such a challenge. Rather, the higher level a world was, the larger a world was, the more it would arouse his fighting spirit.

He wasn't afraid of any challenges. In fact, he wanted to verify where the limits of his strength were, and the results of his 400 years of comprehension.

However, Lin Ming was in the lower realm dimension where the Sky Spill Planet was located. He would have to depend on his own ability to accomplish all of this.

To find a vast high level world, wasn't that easier said than done?

Three months later –

In the vast and limitless universe...

Brilliant stars dotted the horizon. A panorama of illusionary dream-like colors flowed through the dark void, seeping everything in a hazy halo. The distant galaxies and blurry nebulas were like small strands of silk that wound about each other, floating an unknown distance away. They glowed soft and gentle.

Lin Ming stood in this starry space, quietly feeling the vastness of the universe even as he completely opened himself to his surroundings.

His mind slowly fused with the surrounding universe. His inner world opened, communing with this part of the universe. Infinite heaven and earth origin energy began gathering towards him.

The plane of the lower realms simply wasn't able to withstand Lin Ming's strength. The space surrounding him had already collapsed and space storms wildly surged out.

The sound of the Great Dao echoed in the universe, continuing without end, as if it flowed from the ancient primordial nothingness.

At this moment, Lin Ming was finally beginning his breakthrough into the World King realm.

In his road of martial arts, this was an incredibly crucial stage that would directly affect his future achievements!

Chapter 1955 - Lin Ming's World

Chapter 1955 – Lin Ming's World

…

…

…

Energy grew stronger. Lin Ming's body burned like a sun. The rays of light constantly transformed around him, finally forming a rainbow-colored sphere of light behind him.

This sphere of light gradually evolved, becoming a massive phantom.

The phantom was extremely blurry, as if it were formed from gathered fog. But even in the violent and crazy space storms it didn't scatter at all.

Lin Ming's closed his eyes. His clothes flapped around him and his hair flew upwards.

The phantom behind him continued to change, finally becoming a giant cuboid.

This was a thick and ancient book.

This ancient book slowly opened, revealing a completely blank interior.

But in the next moment, an invisible character began to emerge from nowhere, as if an invisible pen were writing on the paper.

Then, the second character, the third, fourth, fifth, more and more characters were written at an increasingly quick pace…

All of these writings appeared in either black or gold. If Sheng Mei were here, she would discover that these words contained the Concepts of the golden pages and the black book, but there were faint differences between them.

Lin Ming's books of life and death had been born from the Holy Scripture, but he had added in his own comprehensions.

The phantom of this ancient book became increasingly clear. More and more words appeared within it.

These words starkly contrasted gold and black, simple and plain and yet containing a meaning that was difficult to name. They were simply impossible to understand.

Rather, it should be said that these words had no definite meaning at all. They only contained different kinds of Concepts. When different people read these words they would each come away with a different understanding.

Even Lin Ming was unable to accurately explain these words.

This was equal to the total comprehensions of his 400 some years of life. The same life, but different feelings, this invisible pen was the unknowable fate of life…

The ancient book was slowly written. This process continued for several days. Finally, the pen of fate fell one final time.

In that moment, this ancient book bloomed with the brilliance of a world, as if all the light in the universe was being gathered towards this ancient book!

This was an ancient book that belonged to Lin Ming, a self-created Great Dao book that would allow him to climb to the peak of martial arts!

For a time, a horrifying vortex of energy formed. A massive amount of interstellar matter was sucked into this vortex. With the ancient book as the central point, the Great Dao aura in the surrounding space was condensed to the peak.

A universe's physical matter, heaven and earth origin energy, Heavenly Dao Laws, when these three things were joined together they were in truth the essence, energy, and divine of a universe!

Lin Ming used his strength to gather them, purifying them, leaving only their essence behind!

He had already comprehended the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra and understood how the Great Dao rules of many worlds revolved. He knew that when a universe's matter, energy, and Laws were completely gathered and essence, energy, and divine were gathered, one could breed a brand new world!

When the Asura Road Master and the Holy Scripture creator established their own world, they had laid down their own world Laws and had used their transcendent methods to gather material and energy and then manifest their own world!

Currently, Lin Ming was walking down the same path as the Asura Road Master and the Holy Scripture creator!

This was a bold move. Rather, one should call it a crazy attempt!

This was because the Asura Road Master and Holy Scripture creator had only created their own world when they had become renowned throughout the universe and their strengths had reached incomparably powerful levels.

As for Lin Ming, he wanted to walk down this road as he broke into the World King realm.

In the dimension of the lower realms where the power of the Laws was weak and small, where matter was lacking, where energy was barren, to accomplish this here was already Lin Ming's limit!

Slowly, beads of sweat formed on Lin Ming's face. Blue veins popped up on his forehead.

He stared blankly on as right in front of him, a world began to slowly appear in its elementary form.

In the past when the Asura Road Master and Holy Scripture creator created their own worlds, these worlds were stable to the point where they were could exist for billions of years or even hundreds of billions of years, able to stand side-by-side with the universes of the 33 Heavens!

Lin Ming naturally couldn't achieve this. Even if he created his own world, it would collapse in a few dozen or a hundred some years.

But that didn't matter. The world he created now was only in its elementary form. Through the increasing influx of power and his own rising boundary, he could have this world continue to evolve and consolidate without end.

In the future, if Lin Ming became an Empyrean or even a True Divinity, it was impossible to estimate just how large this world would grow to.

This was a world that was constantly evolving, constantly developing.

And at this time, Lin Ming's strength had already reached a limit. If he relaxed the energy flow even just a little bit, it would cause the essence, energy, and divine of a universe that he gathered to falter and collapse, completely disintegrating.

If this were to happen then Lin Ming would likely suffer a backlash from the energy and be heavily wounded.

He let out a deep bellow and summoned the power of Asura blood within him!

Black scales covered Lin Ming's body. His blood vitality billowed like beams of light, boiling without end!

Behind him, a tall and overwhelming black Asura phantom appeared. This Asura phantom was 1000 feet high with thick chains that twined about its body, its entire being wrapped in dragon-thick muscles!

A phoenix danced above its right arm and a True Dragon wrapped around its left arm!

It stepped on nine stars. Together with Lin Ming, it held onto this newborn elementary world.

This Asura phantom was the power that Lin Ming cultivated, formed from pouring in the power of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, the strength of the Heavenly Sutra, and the blood of a True Dragon and Phoenix!

This giant Asura pushed forwards with the momentum of a grinding pan. It slowly pushed against this newly born world, causing the essence, energy, and divine of this world to condense and condense again.

With his own comprehensions of the books of life and death as the foundation of this world, with the Asura Laws stabilizing and restraining it, Lin Ming had done everything he could to their limits.

When his strength began to reach the point of exhaustion once more, he started to burn blood essence through the Gate of Life.

Then, this world finally began to slowly condense.

It was too small – a mere several miles in radius.

Moreover, the structure of the world was highly unstable. Even an attack from a Divine Sea powerhouse could cause the system of essence, energy, and divine within this world to collapse and be destroyed in an avalanche of failure.

After completing the creation of this world, Lin Ming had used up every ounce of energy in his body. His gaze was absorbed as he looked at this world, as if he were looking at this own child.

At this moment, Lin Ming was fervently excited. He had done it!

This was a world that belonged to himself, the beginning of a brand new start!

From this day on, a new epoch had begun in his road of martial arts.

At this time, the Asura phantom pushed this world and thrust it directly into Lin Ming's body.

The world rapidly shrunk. It overlapped with Lin Ming's inner world.

In that instant, within Lin Ming, this newly created world's essence, energy, and divine superimposed with his own essence, energy, and divine. This world slowly fused together with Lin Ming's inner world!

For a time, red clouds tumbled throughout space. Paths of life and death, the sound of the Great Dao, all of it swirled in the starry space, creating a strange image that continued to change...

And Lin Ming, in that moment, had finally broken into the World King realm!

His World King realm had an essential difference from the World King realm of other martial artists!

He had created a world which could grow and evolve.

Currently, because the world Lin Ming had fused into himself was too small and weak, the strength that he had gained from breaking into the World King realm wasn't some drastic leap upwards. But as time passed, the world Lin Ming contained within himself would continue to expand. It would hold planets, galaxies, and eventually become a universe of its own. At that time, the strength Lin Ming possessed would be unimaginable.

Lin Ming sat cross-legged in the void, meditating for several hours of time. After he restored a part of his strength, he took a single step out into the void and vanished.

Lin Ming continued to tear through space, using void shift after void shift.

Three days later, a blood red planet appeared in front of Lin Ming.

This planet didn't have the least bit of life; it was a lifeless dead planet. But, this planet itself contained a massive amount of precious materials and also possessed an incredible trove of world essence energy.

The volume of this star was nearly ten times that of the Sky Spill Planet. Its diameter surpassed 200 million miles.

In the past 100 some years as Lin Ming wandered through this lower realm, he occasionally saw this planet and had noted its position.

Originally, Lin Ming had worried about needing to refine a world when he broke into the World King realm. He thought of searching for an upper level world to refine.

But finally, Lin Ming had dropped this idea. This was because there wasn't a single world that could truly satisfy Lin Ming.

Now, Lin Ming had created a world of his own. Although he couldn't refine this massive planet before him, he could actually draw in its essence energy and use it to reinforce and strengthen his own world.

Lin Ming flew towards this planet. He broke into the atmosphere like a rapidly falling meteor.

Bang!

With a terrifying explosion, Lin Ming crashed into the planet!

Lin Ming continued to drill inwards, sinking further and further into the depths of the planet. From the outer layers of the planet where it was dirt and rock, the surroundings became increasingly hot the further in he went.

Rock turned into billowing magma.

Lin Ming didn’t care about this degree of heat. His continued to pierce through. At this time, the pressure also increased.

This pressure pushed down on Lin Ming’s mortal body, causing explosive popping sounds to occur.

Lin Ming didn’t seem to care at all. He raced all the way into the deepest parts of the earth – that was, the core of this planet!

Here was no longer magma. Rather, it was a giant core formed from rare minerals and metals.

These metals and minerals were extremely good materials for forging weapons. They were formed in the massive natural furnace that was this massive planet and had been tempered under high temperature and pressure for billions of years. This was a massive trove of treasure.

It was extremely solid and had been melted into a near liquid form by the high temperature. Lin Ming plunged in, continuing to race towards the deepest part, withstanding everything to get there!

Lin Ming took a deep breath. Even If his mortal body was incredibly powerful, it still wasn’t easy for him to resist such an environment.

He let loose his mind and sat in meditation. Slowly, he began drawing in the planet’s essence energy. All of the essence energy converged into Lin Ming, nourishing the true world he had created…

The growth of a world was a long, long process. So for a long time, Lin Ming could absorb essence energy from this planet to nourish his world.

Chapter 1956 - The End of the First Life

Chapter 1956 – The End of the First Life

…

…

…

50 years.

100 years.

200 years…

Looking at the boundless universe above the planets, one could see the changing stars. But, the truth was that they never changed. They simply traveled along trajectories that cycled with the mystical rules of the Heavenly Dao.

In the evolution of a planet, several hundred years was far too short, to the point that there wouldn't be any changes at all.

However, in this universe, there was a giant red planet that had been experiencing world-shaking changes in the last hundred years.

In the beginning, it was a young and hot planet. Its surface was covered with active volcanoes and it had an atmosphere rich in pure heaven and earth origin energy.

However, as time passed, its heaven and earth origin energy began to thin. The volcanoes that dotted its surface began to erupt one last time or gradually die down.

As if the energy of the star had started to dry up.

In the following 50 years, this planet experienced numerous earthquakes. Massive fissures started ripping through its surface and from these deep valleys that were hundreds and thousands of miles deep, lava slowly flowed out.

After another 50 years, even the lava leaking out from these cracks started to cool. Fewer and fewer volcanoes erupted and the landscape of the planet started to dry up.

This was the sign of an aging planet.

Such a silence was maintained for another 50 years. On this day, the planet began to violently shake!

This trembling surpassed any previous earthquake and any previous volcanic eruption.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The earth tore open and an alarmingly titanic fissure appeared. It was like a divine god was using a pair of hands to break apart the planet!

Beneath this great pressure, burning hot magma and rare liquid minerals and metals gushed out, forming several hundred mile high waves that impacted into the heavens.

Beneath these rough waves, a person’s shadow rushed out.

From the raging sea of fire, his muscles reflected a dim red light and metallic luster. His dark long hair hung to his ankles, wrapping around his body like a silk cocoon.

Besides his hair, his entire body was naked. His figure could be called perfect. His torso, his arms, his legs, his neck, all were formed in beautiful and powerful symmetry.

Each muscle, each line of his body, was perfect, as if it were a work of art sculpted by some master.

This person was Lin Ming.

Over 200 years ago, Lin Ming had entered this planet to quietly cultivate. He breathed in the energy of the planet, nourishing himself.

As Lin Ming calmly cultivated, the evolutionary history of the planet that should have lasted for billions of years was quickly reduced to a mere few hundred years.

From young, it became old.

In exchange for the planet's decline, Lin Ming's inner world became more stable and developed further.

As the massive amount of world essence energy gathered into Lin Ming's body, his inner world grew to over 20 miles in size. He had reached the standard of most World Kings, and if his inner world grew any more, he would grow increasingly strong.

Lin Ming didn't stop. His figure flashed through the void and he tore open space, rapidly flying away.

After this period of journeying, Lin Ming reentered the Sky Spill Planet and spent 10 more years beside his parents.

After that, in the tearful eyes of his mother, Lin Ming set out once more, flying into the depths of the universe.

On the road of cultivation he didn't stand still.

He recalled the position of another planet. This planet was smaller but the grade was higher.

And most importantly, there were no living beings on this planet; it was a dead star. Otherwise, if Lin Ming drew out all the essence energy from such a planet then all life living on it would die.

Lin Ming arrived at his destination in another 10 days.

This was a metal planet. It wasn't too large and was almost entirely made of different metals and minerals.

Because this planet was too close to a sun, it was extremely hot. Even some metals melted away, forming molten streams, rivers, lakes, and even oceans.

Lin Ming's figure flickered and he rushed into the metal planet.

He began to absorb the essence energy of this world once more.

From a World King to an Empyrean, this was originally a long, long process.

Even a top genius like Emperor Shakya had to use a full 10,000 years to complete this step.

Lin Ming was already over 600 years old.

And his cultivation at the World King realm had just begun. The road of martial artist he chose was countless times harder than any other martial artist's road of cultivation!

A self-created fusion of the real world and inner world, to cultivate the universe of the world and the universe of the body, to meld together the Heavenly Sutra and the Holy Scripture!

No matter how profound Lin Ming's comprehensions were, no matter how solid his foundation was, it would require an incomparably long time for him to break into the Empyrean realm.

He would even be slower than most Divine Realm geniuses.

Currently, he had yet to complete his full book of life and death. If he wanted to fuse in the Asura Heavenly Dao, the difficulty of this was unimaginable. From the overlords of the ancient era to now, no one had ever managed to complete such a magnificent feat.

Cultivation passed without sense of time.

The road of martial arts was incredibly lonely. During long periods of seclusion, one had to withstand this loneliness. One had to make their heart and mind as calm as placid water…

Although this sounded simple, people weren't rocks after all. If a mortal were to be shut into a small black room without light, without sound, without anyone else, then they would feel as if they were going crazy in two or three days. If they were locked in for two or three months, then their mind would shatter and they would thoroughly fall into insanity.

Martial artists weren't like this. Their minds communed with the heavens and earth, with the universe, taking the Heavenly Dao Laws as a companion.

Lin Ming absorbed the essence energy of the planet for a long time.

He completely let loose his sense, pondering on this life without any distractions, reviewing the roads he had walked down…

Over a hundred years later, the energy of this planet also began to dry up.

This time, Lin Ming didn't take as long. This was because his inner world had grown larger and he was able to absorb the energy of the world at a faster pace.

Then, Lin Ming roamed the universe. He used the world energy of the universe to nourish his own inner world.

And after he absorbed the essence energy of a planet, Lin Ming would return to the Sky Spill Planet and accompany his parents for some time.

Like this, time passed…

Every time Lin Ming returned, it would be after dozens of years or even a hundred years of absence.

He saw his parents grow older.

Wrinkles slowly appeared and climbed up their faces. The wear and tear of time quietly carved itself upon their appearances.

Each time Lin Ming returned, they wouldn't have changed too much. But after so many times, Lin Ming's parents had already turned from the appearance of a young couple in their thirties to a middle aged couple in their fifties.

Lin Ming suddenly felt that even though he returned here for this life, he hadn't spent much time with his parents.

As if this was the fate of a wanderer.

Even if his parents lived lives much longer than a mortal, at the same time, the gaps of time between Lin Ming's return were also much longer than the lifespans of a common mortal.

If so, then the truth was that this was essentially the same.

If his parents could live to 1600-1700 years of age and he returned only every 60 years, then in the future the number of times he would return to see them could be counted on his two hands. But, Lin Ming had no other choice. Every time he absorbed the essence energy of a planet he couldn't stop halfway, and he had far too many things he had to shoulder.

In a brightly lit room, the windows and lattices were painted with red lacquer and the wooden bed and furniture emitted a fragrant scent.

This seemed a bit similar to the arrangement of the Lin Family's restaurant in the past, but the materials used to form everything were far more precious.

This was his parents' bedroom.

And to the side of this bedroom, there was an old willow tree. When Lin Ming first established the Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom and Lin Fu and Lin Mu moved there, they had personally planted this tree.

Now, this old willow tree had grown from a small seedling to a towering tree over a hundred feet in height. Its roots were as thick and tangled as dragon claws and the bark was aged and thick.

In a cool spring breeze, the branches and leaves swayed in the wind. Leaves fluttered down from time to time, falling onto a stone table set beneath the tree.

Here, Lin Ming was playing chess with his father.

Every time Lin Ming returned he would join his father in playing chess and drinking wine. As for Lin Mu, she would make a few simple dishes and the three people would eat a family reunion dinner.

This time was also the same.

In the Divine Realm, Lin Ming had eaten up countless heavenly materials, and many of these materials and medicines possessed the most outstanding tastes in the world.

Even within the lower realms, within the Vermilion Bird Divine Kingdom, there could be food made from all sorts of peak materials. Great chefs of the imperial palace would use true essence as the stove fire and use spiritual spring water to cook, making precious dishes that overflowed with drool-worthy fragrance.

But, there was no food that possessed the special flavor that of the dishes that his mother cooked.

This wasn't just taste, but a kind of taste, a kind of memory. These were traces left behind from Lin Ming's past.

Almost a thousand years ago when Lin Ming was a child, he loved eating these dishes at the Lin Family restaurant.

Even now, he was the same.

Even across such a long time, Lin Mu didn’t forget the types of food that her son liked to eat. Similarly, Lin Ming didn’t forget the flavors of these dishes.

“Little An, when do you plan on bringing back a wife? Your mother has no other wishes in life…”

Lin Mu often rambled on. Suddenly, Lin Ming felt sad.

He could feel that his parents’ fires of life had begun to weaken.

His parents were not martial artists and it was impossible for them to cultivate to the Divine Sea realm where they could live for 10,000 years. They had prolonged their lives with all sorts of heavenly materials, and now they would soon reach their limits.

After that, they would grow old and die of old age.

This was a Heavenly Dao rule that no one could change.

……

Time flowed by. Another 400 years passed.

Lin Ming’s parents had grown even older.

If compared to ordinary mortals, they would be around 70 years of age.

Their backs had begun to bend over and more wrinkles appeared on their faces. Their eyes became dirty as they stepped into the twilight of their lives.

Seeing that his parents didn’t have much time remaining, after Lin Ming returned, he didn’t plan to leave anymore.

He wanted to accompany his parents and spend the final years of their lives with them.

This was also to bring this first new life of his to a full completion.

Although the Grand Reincarnation Art could allow a person to live nine new lives, it didn't have the heaven-defying ability to lengthen a person's life by nine times.

It could reforge a person and give them the light of a new life. But, it couldn't extend the total lifespan of a martial artist. Ultimately speaking, it wasn't the Law of Eternal Life, but only a cultivation method created by the Holy Scripture creator after he comprehended the Concept of Life and the Concept of Death to their limits, created in order to draw out one's potential to its maximum.

Thus, Lin Ming didn't think about how long he could live out this life. He needed to complete his reincarnation as soon as possible.

Chapter 1957 - Returning Home

Chapter 1957 – Returning Home

…

…

…

Sky Fortune Kingdom, Green Mulberry City –

Aged architecture, pedestrians of all kinds, sweet and savory candied fruits, fragrant teas…

This was a city that had been unchanged for a thousand years, a constant scene of peace and tranquility.

Today, Green Mulberry City welcomed several unusual strangers.

They were Lin Ming and his parents.

After a thousand and several hundred years, dozens of generations of people had already passed in Green Mulberry City.

No one recognized Lin Ming and no one recognized his parents, but they had still heard of Lin Ming's legends.

This name would be passed down for several hundreds of thousands of years…

Lin Ming entered Green Mulberry City like common folk. They walked down new streets that had been renovated many times already, and these still familiar streets left Lin Ming's parents filled with emotion.

They arrived at the Lin Family restaurant. This was a historical landmark that had been sealed away for over a thousand years, and was the true home of Lin Ming and his parents.

Because this building had been carefully maintained by others, it still remained completely intact.

However, after the glazed tiles withstood the wind and rain of over a thousand years, they were no longer bright.

The red lacquered columns and doors, even if washed and repainted several times, began to slowly turn mottled, revealing the flavor of passing years.

Creak –

The front door opened. What greeted one's sight was the lobby of the restaurant.

The marbled blue stone ground was old, but the cleaned furniture was exactly the same as in the past…

Lin Ming was able to recall the scene of him jumping about this lobby when he was a child.

All sorts of people would come to this restaurant. Some would be here to drink wine, some would be here to drink tea, some would come and tell stories, some would come and play cards, some would play the zither, some would play chess…

Lin Ming remembered many of those old regulars. When he ran through this lobby as a child, these people would give Lin Ming some candies to eat.

"Even through the years, it's still the same…"

Lin Mu's old eyes filled with tears. She traced the counter of the old tables as she recalled the past. Lin Fu used to stand here, wearing a loose gray cotton robe and a small felt hat. He would hold an abacus in his hands, recording numbers in the ledger as noises filled the air.

As for Lin Mu, she would help in the kitchen. After every dish was finished the waiter would bring it back and shout out with a voice full of charm, “The dish is ready!” Then, with a towel on his shoulder, the waiter would set down the dish, wiping clean the table and helping brew some tea.

Lin Mu, Lin Fu, as well as Lin Ming, the three of them lived in this restaurant.

This was their family home. The two old parents wished to pass the final years of their life here…

This restaurant was no longer open for business, but every day, Lin Mu would prepare food in the kitchen and Lin Ming would help at her side.

This three person family was happy and warm. But, Lin Mu still carried a single worry with her, and that was that Lin Ming remained unmarried…

Although Lin Ming could see the thoughts of his parents, he always kept his silence.

On this day, a visitor came to the Lin Family restaurant. A woman in a black dress looking just over 20 years old arrived. Her cultivation was unexpectedly at the late Divine Sea realm.

This woman was Situ Mingyue.

In the Sky Spill Continent, it was incredibly difficult for a martial artist to reach the late Divine Sea realm before a thousand years of age.

“Oh? You want to ascend?”

Lin Ming looked at Situ Mingyue with surprise. In truth, this was a reasonable desire. A martial artist who had climbed to the peak of the lower realms would not be satisfied with dwelling there. They would want to fly into the Divine Realm, seeing a broader world where they could freely spread their wings.

“Yes!”

Situ Mingyue was well aware of Lin Ming's identity. She wanted to consult with him before preparing to ascend.

However, Lin Ming shook his head, "You... cannot ascend."

"Why?"

Situ Mingyue's heart skipped a beat. She could sense in Lin Ming's eyes a type of deep and sorrow-filled emotion, one that caused her heart to shrink.

"The Divine Realm...has changed. Moreover... this world was once sealed by a woman. With your strength, you cannot break through..."

Lin Ming sighed. Situ Mingyue was left puzzled.

The Divine Realm had changed? The world of the Sky Spill Planet was sealed?

She suddenly remembered. If Lin Ming decided to reincarnate on the Sky Spill Planet, was this involved with the so-called changing of the Divine Realm?

She didn't know what it was but she could feel instinctually that this 'change' must have been some heaven-shaking calamity.

"What happened in the Divine Realm?" Situ Mingyue couldn't help but ask.

"The invasion of an outside race." Lin Ming succinctly replied. He looked up to the skies, as if his eyes could see through the starry space and into the Divine Realm. "Humanity... is on the brink of disaster..."

"This..."

Situ Mingyue's eyes widened. She thought that the great change that occurred in the Divine Realm might be some inner strife amongst humans, but she never imagined it would be because of the invasion of some alien race. And for humanity to already be in a precarious situation...

"If Senior has returned to the Sky Spill Planet from the Divine Realm, and has cultivated all over from a new rebirth, is this also related to that disaster?" Situ Mingyue asked. Lin Ming nodded.

"Sage Lin, your parents, they don't seem to know of your identity. Have you never mentioned it?" Situ Mingyue asked again.

Lin Ming shook his head. "They don't know nor does it matter. What they feel towards me is a connection that comes from the depths of their bloodline; it isn't something that can be mistaken. I am their son and I cannot mention what I have experienced in life, otherwise I will have to tell them why I returned to the Sky Spill Planet, why my wives and Lin Xiaoge weren't able to return, why I returned to being a baby…

"If my parents know the real situation of what is occurring, they will not be able to rest peacefully."

Lin Ming quietly said. Situ Mingyue was left disappointed.

After a long period of silence, Situ Mingyue unwillingly asked, "Then… is there nothing that can be done?"

"I don't know." Lin Ming said. "I will return, perhaps in 10,000 years…"

10,000 years was the deadline that Lin Ming had set for himself.

To comprehend and fuse the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra, to grow his inner world, to dual cultivate the universe of the body and the world, all of this couldn't be done rapidly but required an extremely long period of time.

10,000 years was already far too little time.

He wanted to grasp as much time as he could to accomplish all that he could. Only like this could he return to the Divine Realm and have a chance to struggle with the saints and the even more terrifying Soul Emperor.

“10,000 years…”

Hearing this, Situ Mingyue sucked in a deep breath, her expression a bit bitter and pained.

For a Divine Sea powerhouse, living to 10,000 years was their limit. Yet, this was a time period that Lin Ming casually tossed out. His words left her wallowing in despair.

If she was unable to surpass the Divine Sea realm, then by that time she would already be on the verge of death or she would have even become nothing more than bones.

Lin Ming could see Situ Mingyue’s thoughts. He said, “You can wander to travel. This lower realm dimension consists of more than the Sky Spill Planet. I can give you a spirit ship and a star chart so that you can visit other planets. Although you cannot ascend to the Divine Realm, freely wandering this world will still be helpful to you. At least, breaking through the Divine Sea won’t be difficult.”

Lin Ming casually said. But, Situ Mingyue still held unwillingness in her heart. She knew that if she couldn’t ascend to the Divine Realm and was only able to wander the lower realms, then no matter what she tried she wouldn’t be able to accomplish anything great. To barely surpass the Divine Sea realm would be her limit.

She bit her lips and looked at Lin Ming. Summoning every ounce of courage she had, she deeply bowed towards him, “Senior, I wonder if… you can take me as your apprentice?”

Lin Ming was stunned. He looked at her and slowly shook his head. “No. I have never taken in an apprentice and I have far too many matters I have yet to complete. I don’t wish to form any new karmic ties here.”

The destiny of a world, cause and effect, all of these were ephemeral and unpredictable things that Lin Ming didn’t want to be touched by. If he accepted an apprentice then he would have to take on the responsibility of a master.

Currently, Lin Ming didn’t have the time or energy to do all of this.

Listening to Lin Ming’s words, deep disappointment flashed in Situ Mingyue’s eyes.

In truth, she didn’t hold much hope that this was possible either. She was self-aware that even though her talent was at the peak of the lower realms, in Lin Ming’s eyes, it was probably nothing more than ordinary.

Even if Lin Ming accepted an apprentice, he would never accept her.

“I’m sorry for disturbing Senior.”

Situ Mingyue ruefully smiled. She deeply bowed towards Lin Ming once more and then turned to leave.

But at this time, faint footsteps sounded out from behind them. Lin Mu walked down the stairs and was immediately overjoyed to see Situ Mingyue. She called out, “Miss Situ? How come Miss Situ is here?”

When Lin Ming and his parents returned to Green Mulberry City to live in seclusion, this was information that not even many high-level figures of the four Divine Kingdoms were aware of. Lin Mu never thought that Situ Mingyue would actually find this place. This caused her to make some exciting associations.

Situ Mingyue hurriedly bowed as she saw Lin Mu. But by now, Lin Mu had already gently grasped Situ Mingyue’s hand and was pulling her down to sit, saying that she had to stay and eat a meal.

Situ Mingyue was helpless. She looked towards Lin Ming. Lin Ming hesitated for a moment and then slowly nodded.

Like this, the family dinner started.

Fresh and fragrant rice, six simple dishes, four pairs of chopsticks. Lin Fu even heated a pot of wine, pouring two cups to celebrate.

Although the old couple had returned to their past home and their mood was very good, they always held onto some regrets. This was from the monotony and loneliness brought about by such peaceful silence.

They hoped for quiet and peace even as they wished to see a lively family. Of course, if it was someone that could make their family lively, it also had to be someone that they liked and hoped to see…

Situ Mingyue was exactly such a person.

A simple meal, a simple happiness. Lin Mu constantly picked up dishes to place in Situ Mingyue’s bowl, her smile both gentle and kind.

“Eat some more. This is the sweet and sour fish that he loved to eat the most when he was a child. Only the sweet and sour fish of our hometown is the best. From Green Mulberry River, you need to fish up a big carp that is at least three jins heavy. Of course, it has to be fresh, and the ingredients also need to include the finest rock sugar…”

Lin Mu proudly said. Situ Mingyue knew that the ‘he’ Lin Mu spoke of referred to Lin Ming and also Lin An.

Lin Mu might not know that Lin An was Lin Ming, but what she knew was that the dishes they loved to eat were the exact same…

“Miss Situ, this is wine that I made myself. Here, try a little…”

Lin Fu laughed as he spoke.

Lin Ming saw the wonderful mood his parents were in. Although they had been happy these years, it had never been like today where they revealed smiles from the depths of their heart.

Lin Ming’s heart stirred. He let out a light sigh and came to a decision.

His lips moved as he sent out a true essence sound transmission. “Situ Mingyue, you and I can be master and apprentice for 100 years, but we will normally not refer to ourselves as master and apprentice. I only need you to accompany my parents, and I will teach you cultivation methods and give you a blessing of good fortune. After a hundred years pass, I will reincarnate and cultivate from nothing again, and as for you, that is when you and I part.”

As Situ Mingyue was eating, her chopsticks shook. She looked at Lin Ming, at a loss for words…

Chapter 1958 - The Second Reincarnation

Chapter 1958 – The Second Reincarnation

…

…

…

Situ Mingyue stayed behind. Although her relationship with Lin Ming was only that of a master and apprentice, and one that was temporary at that, this was something Lin Ming's parents didn't know about.

In fact, in the eyes of Lin Mu and Lin Fu, there was a profound significance for Situ Mingyue to stay behind.

The old couple hoped that there would be people accompanying them in their old age, but they also wished that their son would marry and live a happy and bliss-filled life.

Lin Ming didn't give an explanation for this misunderstanding. The reason he asked Situ Mingyue to stay behind to accompany his parents was because he wished to have his parents live peacefully in their old age.

Most of the time he didn't speak with Situ Mingyue. He would only pass down cultivation methods to her that were suitable for her to practice and allow her to perceive them on her own.

As for pills, Lin Ming had more than enough. Every pill would be melted by her into spring water, and she would slowly drink this spring water and refine the medicine.

The effects were remarkable.

Situ Mingyue used a mere 10 years to approach the Divine Transformation realm.

The truth was that her talent wasn't too bad even when placed in the Divine Realm. The problem was that she lacked skilled teachers in the lower realms which had delayed her cultivation. However, this was all made up for now. Although it was impossible for her to have any monumental achievements, with Lin Ming's guidance it wouldn't be difficult for her to cultivate to the Divine Lord realm.

Sometimes, Lin Ming would go out together with Situ Mingyue. They would venture deep into the starry space, and here Lin Ming would teach Situ Mingyue some Laws and advanced cultivation methods.

Lin Ming even passed Situ Mingyue an incomplete portion of a transcendent divine might. Although he didn't have much hope that she would be able to perceive anything from it, she could at least come into contact with the Great Dao Laws, expanding her horizons as she obtained more inspirations.

Whenever these times came, Situ Mingyue's eyebrows would bunch together as she simply wasn't able to find any clue on what to do.

She was worried that Lin Ming would think she was too stupid and she desperately hoped that she could perceive something to satisfy him. However, these Great Dao traces were too complex and varied. No matter how hard she tried, it was difficult for her to become aware of anything.

Lin Ming didn't say anything. He simply asked her what progress she had made and then would silently leave.

Like this, 50 years passed.

Lin Fu and Lin Mu grew older. But at the same time, they smiled more and more.

When she wasn't cultivating, Situ Mingyue would spend the rest of her time accompanying Lin Ming's parents. She frequently went to the kitchen to help Lin Mu prepare food and would take out a chess board to play with Lin Fu.

Everything was warm and harmonious. The happiness of a whole family made up for the final regrets that the old couple felt in life.

This was also what Lin Ming wanted.

In this life, he wanted to give his parents peace and happiness in their twilight. For this reason, even if he had to contaminate himself with some karma, it didn't matter at all.

Spring went and fall came. Another 20 years passed. Lin Fu and Lin Mu both leant on walking sticks. It became a little difficult even to walk down the street.

Even so, there were no servants in their family. Every time they went to buy groceries, Situ Mingyue would help Lin Mu out of the Lin Family restaurant where they slowly walked down the familiar streets.

During these times, Lin Mu would walk slowly. She would take a stroll, feeling the sun on her face, feeling the joys of life.

Lin Fu and Lin Mu, the two of them had tasted poverty, and lived in opulence, had experienced the supreme life of being worshipped by millions and billions of people. Now in their old age, with Situ Mingyue and Lin Ming accompanying them, they felt warmth and happiness.

This was their life, a blessed life.

They had no regrets.

Two years later, just as summer began, on a sunny day Lin Fu and Lin Mu passed away one after another.

Just before they left, their faces were filled with smiles and their expressions were at peace. They had died in bed of old age.

The death of his parents also marked the end of Lin Ming's first reincarnation, one that had lasted for over 1600 years.

It marked a complete ending to this time.

According to his parents' will, Lin Ming buried them in the mountains around Green Mulberry City.

After death, become dust and return to the earth. This was the simple wish of most mortals.

According to custom, Lin Ming set up grass houses up in the mountainside. He wore simple mourning clothes and mourned for his parents for three years.

Situ Mingyue also followed Lin Ming. She wore white clothes, observing the mourning period together with him.

They lived in two separate grass houses. Every day they would sweep the graves of the old couple, burning incense for them and praying for them.

These days were slow and tepid. But whether it was Lin Ming or Situ Mingyue, they found an inner peace and quiet in these slow and tepid days.

Three years quickly passed.

With the end of the mourning period, Lin Ming had to leave.

Early one morning, the bright sun rose. The morning haze of Green Mulberry Mountain scattered and the dewdrops hanging on the grass also slowly evaporated.

Lin Ming lit incense for his parents and deeply knelt on his knees, bowing down, his forehead reaching the ground. This was also his final bow.

He stood up and said to Situ Mingyue behind him, “According to our agreement, our relation as master and apprentice has come to an end. You can now begin walking your own road.”

Lin Ming calmly said. But as these words fell into Situ Mingyue’s ears, she felt infinite desolateness, infinite melancholy.

There was an unspeakable feeling in her heart. She had known this day would come and she had mentally prepared for it. But when it truly came, she was at an inexplicable loss.

But, she was well aware that she and Lin Ming were originally two straight lines that never crossed. It was only because of Lin Ming’s parents that they approached for a brief period of time – and that was only approaching.

Then, as these straight lines continued on, they would slowly separate, gradually growing further and further apart.

This was a destiny that was already decided.

Regardless of what she did, it wouldn’t change.

Thus, she slowly nodded.

“Then, farewell. If we are fated to meet again…”

As Lin Ming spoke he casually stepped into the void. He simply didn’t need to tear open the void, but entered directly into it, vanishing from sight.

Situ Mingyue stood in a daze where she was, silent for a long time.

The year before Lin Fu and Lin Mu passed, Situ Mingyue had broken into the Divine Transformation realm. Moreover, with Lin Ming’s teachings and the support of the resources he left her, she had formed a solid foundation. It wouldn’t be a problem for her to reach the Divine Lord realm in the future.

But none of this, including the peak of martial arts that she had longed for in her dreams, brought her any joy right now. She quietly turned around, entering the grass house she had lived in for three years and gently closed the door…

………….

Another 20 years passed.

In a lower dimension of this universe, within an imperial city on an unknown planet, at some unknown time, a young beggar appeared at a city corner.

He was short and his entire body was covered in dirt, but his eyes were amazingly bright.

Although he was a beggar, he never begged people. He only wandered about, and this wandering continued for dozens of years.

This young beggar grew extremely slowly, but because he was a beggar, no one noticed him.

Until one day, he disappeared from the city…

He broke into space, flying deep into the universe.

This was the second reincarnation of Lin Ming. During these years, Lin Ming's mood and cultivation had become increasingly perfect. His cultivation didn't increase quickly, but his comprehensions in the Heavenly Dao grew at an alarming pace.

He quickly sped through the universe. Soon he reached a massive black planet. Like a meteor, he plunged deep into its core…

Chapter 1959 - Return to the Divine Realm

Chapter 1959 – Return to the Divine Realm

…

…

…

The universe was profound and endless, an existence far too mysterious. It contained infinite rules of the Heavenly Dao. Since ages long lost, innumerable ancient powerhouses had searched high and low, tirelessly chasing down the elusive road of martial arts.

But up until now, there had yet to be a single person who completely understood all the mysteries of the universe.

Not only was the universe mysterious, but it was eternal.

Even when great worlds collapsed and returned to nothing, the universe as a whole would continue to exist.

No one knew where these eternal skies started or where they would end…

Time, was the most terrifying reaper of all life. But to the Heavenly Dao of the universe this concept held no meaning at all.

A thousand years was only a flash of time, so short that there would be almost no change in the universe.

However, when it came to mortal society and their nations, in several thousand years there would be hundreds of generations of people. Dynasties would fall and others would rise in their place. The great families, sects, countless lives were born and returned to nothing. Their convoluted history would be buried in the sands of time as they were slowly lost forever.

In the end, the only thing these people would leave behind in the world was ‘nothing’.

To the vicissitudes of time things remained the same, but people always changed.

One wintry afternoon, a person and a large black vicious beast appeared outside an ancient city.

This city had been renovated countless times, but many edges and corners of it were still engraved with the wearing of the years…

Outside the city, people were bustling. These people came and went, fear in their hearts as none of them dared to approach. Even so, they stretched out their necks, curiously looking on.

This man wore black clothes and his body was as straight as a spear. His looks seemed carved by a saber, containing an indescribable flavor.

As for the vicious beast beside him, that was what attracted the most attention.

It looked like a giant wolf, but there was a single black horn that thrust out from its head, making it look like a mythical dragon.

This man and beast were Lin Ming and the small black dragon.

After a thousand years, Lin Ming had completed his third reincarnation and had stepped into his fourth. As for the black dragon, it had grown and its appearance was restored to its original state. If it desired, its body could grow to thousands of feet high, towering like a mountain peak.

During his fourth reincarnation Lin Ming returned to the Sky Spill Planet and came to Green Mulberry City once more.

Green Mulberry City still existed, but its name had changed. It was no longer called Green Mulberry City but was now called Sky Province.

The walls here had developed further outwards and the roads had been expanded. In the center of the city a grand imperial palace had been erected, emblazoned in gold and jade.

Green Mulberry City had long become the capital city of Sky Fortune Kingdom.

In fact, Sky Fortune Kingdom had already changed dynasties, and this was not the first or second time either.

The deterrence of Lin Ming's name made many countries not dare to invade the Sky Fortune Kingdom. But, this didn't mean that the royal family of the Sky Fortune Kingdom wouldn't be changed.

A coup, a cruel and witless ruler, all of this could cause the downfall of a dynasty.

Now, the royal family of the Sky Fortune Kingdom was no longer surnamed Yang, but was surnamed Zhou.

The Sky Fortune Kingdom was no longer called that either, but was now referred to as the Great Zhou Dynasty.

In order to stabilize the destiny of their nation, the royal family of the Great Zhou Dynasty decided to move the capital city to Green Mulberry City and change its name to Sky Province. The royal family believed that since Lin Ming once lived in the city, it would surely have a glorious destiny and would shelter the foundation of the Great Zhou Dynasty for 10,000 years.

Towards this, Lin Ming no longer cared at all.

He now had no more worries. He constantly journeyed out, refining his inner world. He grew stronger and stronger.

But during his fourth reincarnation, Lin Ming felt his cultivation reach a bottleneck.

This was the transition from an ordinary World King to a Great World King.

The truth was that if Lin Ming desired, it wouldn't be difficult for him to forcefully break past this transitionary phase.

But, he wanted everything to be done perfectly. Thus he made a decision. That was to go to the Asura Road and complete the final trial!

He had wandered through the lower realms long enough. It was time to leave.

However, in order to break out from the world that the Sky Spill Planet was located in and go to the Divine Realm, he would have to take a great risk. Moreover, he had to break through the barrier that Sheng Mei left behind.

In the past, Sheng Mei had left her barrier above the skies of the Sky Spill Planet. The array eye was naturally located here too.

This array formation blocked out the space channel in the lower realm dimension that connected the Sky Spill Planet to the Divine Realm.

"Let's go, Little Black…"

As Lin Ming spoke, he soared upwards. His body turned into a keen blade that pierced through the deep blue skies. As for the black dragon, it also followed Lin Ming. Like this, man and beast turned into two beams of divine light that broke past the atmosphere of the Sky Spill Planet and arrived in space.

This part of the void didn't seem unusual at all. But as Lin Ming lightly touched it, it rippled like a rock thrown into a lake. Then, a giant array formation appeared. This array formation was similar in appearance to a giant yin yang diagram. One half was gold and the other half was black, representing the Concepts of Life and Death.

In the samsara of life and death, Lin Ming already had his own comprehensions.

After a moment of silence he faced the giant array diagram. He thrust out his finger again and again, each thrust causing ripples to spread through space. With each thrust, an invisible pen seemed to paint images atop this giant array diagram.

This process continued for a quarter hour of time. Then, the array diagram trembled, becoming increasingly bright and transparent, as if it were turning to mist.

Seeing this, Lin Ming took in a deep breath. The array formation had been unraveled.

He stared at the void behind the array formation and slowly opened a space channel. His appearance gradually changed and his temperament and aura became completely different.

Lin Ming used the Bodily Rebirth Technique. After comprehending the Concept of Life, when he used this secret technique he could change his life aura, becoming an entirely different person.

Not just that, but in the past Sheng Mei had drawn out most of Lin Ming's soul source, and because Lin Ming's soul had gone through the Grand Reincarnation Art and had gained a new life, during this process of rebirth his soul fluctuations had also faintly changed. He could truly have been said to have been reborn both inside and out.

This was also the reason he dared to return to the Divine Realm before his strength had fully matured.

After finishing, Lin Ming stepped forwards, passing through the array formation as if walking through a screen of blue smoke. The array formation that Sheng Mei left behind wasn't moved at all…

The Sky Spill Planet's upper space channel was filled with all sorts of chaotic energies. But to the current Lin Ming, these chaotic energies were no different than a calm breeze.

It was just that as he rapidly shuttled through the space storms, his heart wasn't calm.

He knew that once he reached the end of this space tunnel he would finally see everything that had happened in the Divine Realm after thousands of years.

This was something he had always wished to know, but also something he was afraid to find out…

……….

Space transformed. Lin Ming felt as if he passed through a thin membrane of water.

As he stepped into these familiar yet strange starry skies, all sorts of emotions bloomed in his heart.

This starry space, it was this starry space again. But, the aura of it seemed to have changed…

He knew that what he would see were likely scenes that would leave him feeling sad…

He couldn’t restrain the feelings in his heart. He tore open space and began using the great void shift. First, he wanted to go see Divine Dream Heavenly Palace.

Although he knew what had likely happened, he wanted to lay witness to it with his own eyes.

He didn’t know what happened to Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, Xiao Moxian, his child, Mo Eversnow, Empyrean Divine Dream, Empyrean Vast Universe… they, were they safe?

After ascending to the Divine Realm, Lin Ming could complete the journey to Divine Dream Heavenly Palace using less than 20 days.

But, Lin Ming actually spent a full two months.

During these two months, he swept his sense over many places.

He saw many planets that had been destroyed. Their bodies had collapsed, turned into nothing but countless fragments. Beneath the gravitational pull of the remaining mass they turned into a belt of ring-like fragments that aimlessly floated through the cosmos.

Besides these planets, the sects that had been destroyed were even higher in number.

Many sects were annihilated along with their spirit mountains and celestial islands.

From cold and tragic ruins, Lin Ming could imagine just what it was like when the saints invaded.

With a True Divinity leading them, humanity was no match for the saints.

Those top elites that managed to escape were barely able to flee in time. But as for general Holy Lands, they were undoubtedly instantly destroyed by the saint Empyreans.

For an Empyrean, eliminating an ordinary Holy Land was the same as kicking down a sand castle.

Countless elites of humanity had died tragically in this catastrophe.

As for those that were left behind, they were only ordinary human citizens.

There were far too many of these people. They numbered in the trillions of quadrillions and were spread through the 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm as well as the countless small worlds and medium worlds. It was impossible for the saints to kill all of them.

But as long as they severed the martial arts inheritances of humanity then these mortals would have no strength to resist, just like common domesticated animals. They would be reared in cages and enslaved.

Finally, Lin Ming arrived in the part of the universe where Divine Dream Heavenly Palace was.

Although he had already been mentally prepared, as Lin Ming saw the place where Divine Dream Heavenly Palace had been, he still fiercely shook. The scene before him left him moved, but in his emotions was also a trace of sadness.

Divine Dream Heavenly Palace was no longer here. This was also within reason. If Empyrean Divine Dream were still alive, she would definitely bring Divine Dream Heavenly Palace away with her.

But in the former site of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, all of those grand and glorious mountains that were full of spiritual energy and exquisite planets were now completely taken over by the saints. This was a land that contained a tremendous amount of resources and heavenly materials and was a treasure trove rich in heaven and earth origin energy. The saints naturally wouldn't destroy it.

A sect of the saints was established here and saint disciples entered in and out. This sect was prosperous and had inherited the millions of years of accumulations of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, and was now using it to nourish itself.

They had enslaved the spirit beasts that were raised on the celestial mountains of Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, forcefully taming them into mounts and contract beasts.

The mineral mines and medicinal fields were also wildly developed by the saint sect. All sorts of heavenly materials were plundered from the ground.

As for the human martial artists, they were either slain or taken in as slaves. They were used as miners, servants, janitors, or even taken in as living furnaces…

A million miles away, Lin Ming watched all of this.

He stood there for a long time and then quietly left, leaving not a single trace of himself behind.

In the vast and boundless starry space, Lin Ming turned into a beam of light that fled full speed into the universe. He gripped his fists so hard that his nails dug into his flesh.

He told himself –

Everything that had been lost would be returned two-fold…

Chapter 1960 - Reentering the Asura Road

Chapter 1960 – Reentering the Asura Road

…

…

…

Regardless of what calamity occurred in the 33 Heavens, the Asura Road hadn't changed.

As for the human, saints, and spiritas here, they seemed to live independently from their kin in the 33 Heavens, without much overlap or contact between them.

Lin Ming's Asura Command had already shattered so he was unable to use it anymore. He found the spatial entrance into the Asura Road that Empyrean Divine Dream had led him to in the past, and used his own strength to sink into the Asura Road.

When Lin Ming reentered the Asura Road he discovered that amongst its trial challengers, the saints had rapidly increased in number.

In the outer Asura Road, Lin Ming observed that many young saint elites passed in and out of the large cities. It seemed that during the time he was gone, the great influences of the saints had dispatched their disciples en masse into the Asura Road.

The saints had revealed their ambitiousness.

Lin Ming didn't bother with any of this. Currently, the Asura Road's final trial had yet to open. Lin Ming quietly waited in the Great Desolate.

He sank deep into the Great Desolate. Here, he felt the power of the world of the Asura Road.

Deep underground, Lin Ming could feel that the Asura Road world was actually somewhat similar to his own inner world.

Could it be that the Asura Road world that the Asura Road Master had created in the past was also his own inner world?

This thought immediately flashed through Lin Ming's mind. Just how difficult would it be to accomplish something like this? However, he also believed that in the distant future, he would be able to take this step too.

The world power within the Asura Road was potent and vigorous. However, because it was locked in by the constraints of the Asura Heavenly Dao, it was incredibly difficult for Lin Ming to absorb any.

Lin Ming composed himself and began to quietly perceive the composition of the Asura Road world. With the guidance of the Asura Heavenly Dao, it wasn't difficult for Lin Ming to accomplish all of this.

Perceiving all of this was a slow process. Lin Ming focused himself, becoming enraptured with the process. In the blink of an eye, dozens of years passed.

Lin Ming obtained many new enlightenments. He fused all of these comprehensions into his growing inner world.

And at this time, the opening of the final trial also approached.

Lin Ming left the Great Desolate and ventured into the inner Asura Road.

In order to attend the final trial one needed a qualification token. The last time Lin Ming entered the final trial, he had obtained a qualification token from Mo Brightmoon.

If one wished to obtain a qualification token, the process would require a tremendous amount of energy and time. Although it wasn't too difficult to the current him, Lin Ming didn't want to waste this time.

His strength was already great enough that he could blatantly storm into a sect and recklessly wrest away a qualification token.

Late at night, Lin Ming floated high in the air, letting his sense spread out in all directions. He covered a large region of the inner Asura Road and soon discovered an influence that was located near the Asura Sea. This was a group that belonged to the saints!

And they were the saints of the 33 Heavens!

Among them was someone that possessed a qualification token. Even though they had carefully hidden away the token, they still couldn’t escape Lin Ming’s sense.

Lin Ming sneered. He silently descended like a dark ghost of the night.

This group of saint martial artists was still meditating in their holy palace. But outside of the holy palace, there were some people standing guard.

Those standing guard had spread out their divine sense, completely covering a surrounding area of a hundred miles. But when Lin Ming arrived, he didn’t alert them at all.

Pa!

With a faint sound, one of the sentries wobbled and slumped to the ground.

The other saint martial artists were alarmed. They rapidly rolled up from their sleep and were about to draw weapons from their spatial rings. But at this time, there was a loud explosion. The defensive barrier of the holy palace had been smashed apart!

Soon after, one of the people amongst them felt a strong breeze rush against him. A black beast rushed forwards like a demonic hellhound, crashing into his chest!

Peng!

This person flew backwards, smashing against a wall and vomiting a mouthful of blood.

His organs had all been crushed apart in this single strike!

“D-damnit!”

Amongst the group of people, a Great World King roared out. He was clearly able to see the vicious beast that had attacked them. This unknown vicious beast looked like a black wolf with a single long horn jutting out from its head.

But, what was most terrifying was the master of this vicious beast. Of the ten plus people present, no one was able to clearly see his appearance or catch his position. He was like a death reaper, mercilessly harvesting lives.

Every time he flickered he didn’t leave behind any fluctuations of the Space Laws. Even so, he floated in the air and disappeared into space, vanishing without a sign. This degree of Law comprehensions had reached an unimaginable level.

Moreover, this other party had a terrifying strength capable of ripping apart the holy palace’s protective barrier. This left the saints drowning in despair.

“Scatter and flee! Inform the sect and request backup…!”

The Great World King sent out sound transmissions. However, halfway through his sound transmission came to a halting stop.

He was the last saint martial artist to die.

This saint race squad consisted of 12 people, and all of them were killed off by Lin Ming.

Looking at the corpses around him, Lin Ming was silent. Before, he would never kill innocents. Those he had killed had already stepped onto the road of death.

But this time he killed 12 saint martial artists in a single breath, all so no news would be leaked out. Even though his identity wouldn’t be revealed even if news of him had leaked out, Lin Ming had to guard against all possibilities, no matter how small they were.

Lin Ming felt no psychological burden in killing these people. This was because when it came to a war between races, there were no innocents.

Lin Ming flicked his finger and shot out a fireball. All of the corpses burned away, and with the breeze of the night, their ashes faded.

He found the token he wanted. The other useless things were all destroyed. The holy palace was also taken away by Lin Ming and all other traces of his appearance destroyed.

After finishing all of this, Lin Ming flew up, disappearing into the night like a bat…

……

The final trial's location was deep in the inner Asura Road. This was a boundless sea called the Asura Sea.

The Asura Sea was limitless and fathomless. Even if a massive planet like the Sky Spill Planet were to sink into the Asura Sea, it would be completely submerged!

In such a deep sea, the pressure at the seabed was unimaginable!

By any common reasoning there was no seabed that could withstand such tremendous pressure. The reason the Asura Sea could still exist was because of the power of the Asura Laws.

At those terrifying depths, innumerable horrifying sea beasts were bred. Among them were many sea beasts equivalent to an Empyrean in strength. In the rumors it was said that deep in the Asura Sea, there were one or two True Divinity level super sea beasts that had been bred. They were the king of all sea beasts!

Because of these stories, very few people dared to enter the Asura Sea.

The only exception was if… the final trial was beginning.

On this day, the usually lonely Asura Sea began to greet many guests.

Many influences gathered at the Asura Sea.

On the surface of the Asura Sea, many great figures spread out viewing platforms that floated above sea level. Many martial artists rushed here from all over the Asura Road, gathering to bear witness to such a grand occasion of the Asura Road.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Deep within the sea, the waters separated. A blue whale as large as a mountain emerged from the sea waters. As it rose up, countless streams of water fell down from its titanic body like waterfalls.

For a time, the viewing platforms on the sea surface were wildly swept up by the waves created by the blue whale. Many young martial artists on the viewing platforms stumbled around, unable to stand steady.

“Hey, that’s Northheaven Palace’s Deepnorth Leviathan… that is Northheaven Palace’s destiny-stabilizing God Beast. Although its bloodline is a bit flawed, it is still a fortress that is much stronger than a half-step Empyrean. I never thought that Northheaven Palace would send the Deepnorth Leviathan here to shake up the scene.”

Someone said from the viewing platforms. As they spoke, the giant blue whale called the Deepnorth Leviathan opened its huge mouth. From its mouth, a blue curtain of light appeared. The disciples of Northheaven Palace were shrouded in this blue light.

They all wore the uniform of a sect and bloomed with heroic dashing. From their dignified appearance, one could see that they were the elites of their sect.

In truth, most of these people only came to see the world and broaden their horizons; they wouldn’t truly be entering the final trial. After all, there was a limited number of qualification tokens.

“Northheaven Palace really laid out their capital this time, but they can’t be blamed for doing so. During these past years, the saints from the 33 Heavens outside the Asura Road have sent far too many elites in here. It sort of feels as if they are trying to make a show of some kind. Because of this, competition for the final trial has also become more intense."

"This time, I heard that the 33 Heavens' saints have sent many high level figures here. Many of those people come from the Good Fortune Saint Palace!"

Upon mentioning the name of the Good Fortune Saint Palace, dread flashed across the faces of the martial artists from the Asura Road. Many great figures who rushed here from all over the Asura Road also frowned.

The master of Good Fortune Saint Palace was also the supreme leader of the saints – the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was simply too terrifying. According to rumors, he might have become the number one master of the 33 Heavens. He had fused together with some strange and horrible monster, obtaining unparalleled power in exchange!

As everyone spoke, a resonant phoenix cry echoed out in the skies.

A bird that resembled a phoenix flew towards this area. On the back of this bird sat an old woman dressed in a phoenix robe and wearing a golden crown. She leaned on a golden walking stick and exuded a rich and opulent aura. Her eyes seemed to contain a great pressure, making it difficult for others to feel at ease.

And behind this woman were several beautiful young women. Each one had a face covered by a thin veil, looking like goddesses that descended to the mortal plane.

"Grandma Goldwind! An inner Asura Road Empyrean!"

After seeing this old woman, many people were stunned. The Asura Road's final trial was a grand occasion, but it was still a tempering experience for juniors. Most of the time Empyrean level characters wouldn't attend, but would send their direct disciples to manage the situation.

With the arrival of Empyreans, that signified just how valuable this final trial now was.

“Grandma Goldwind personally led her disciples to the final trial. It looks like the limelight of the 33 Heavens’ saints has been too bright these past years. The native influences of the Asura Road are unwilling to fall behind them and are willing to fight more.”

“I fear this final trial will also be set atop the winds and waves. I wonder if anyone will be able to achieve an 80% completion rate…”

“It’s not impossible. Amongst the young elites that the Good Fortune Saint Palace dispatched this time, there might be some people capable of this…”

As everyone was speaking, no one noticed a black-clothed, common-seeming youth quietly standing atop a viewing platform.

He was like a gray brushstroke amongst this world, completely out of sync.

At some time, he suddenly turned his head and looked into the horizon of the Asura Sea.

He felt that someone he recognized had arrived…

Chapter 1961 - Famine's Avatar

Chapter 1961 – Famine's Avatar

…

…

…

In the distant horizon of the Asura Sea, a young man in golden armor slowly flew forwards. This gold-armored youth was tall and broad. A fire red cloak was thrown over his back, his momentum spirited and daring!

His cultivation had reached the peak of the Great World King realm, approaching the half-step Empyrean realm.

This cultivation, when placed in the grand scene of the final trial's opening, wasn't considered much at all. Moreover, there were more than Great World Kings but even true Empyreans.

But as this youth appeared, the eyes of those in the audience shrank. It was clear that they were extremely afraid of this gold-armored youth.

"It's really him…"

Lin Ming muttered. This gold-armored youth was someone he was familiar with – the Good Fortune Saint Son!

The Good Fortune Saint Son's cultivation speed was far higher than Lin Ming's. But, this was also within reason. First, the Good Fortune Saint Son had lived longer than Lin Ming, and secondly, the Laws that the Good Fortune Saint Son cultivated were infinitely simpler than Lin Ming's.

With Lin Ming having reincarnated also, although he didn’t experience any bottlenecks returning to his previous cultivation realm, it still delayed him by a great deal of time.

“The Good Fortune Saint Son, he actually came…”

Lin Ming thought. In truth, he also wanted to find an opportunity to kill off the Good Fortune Saint Son, but now was not the right moment.

At this time, Lin Ming’s complexion changed. From beneath the Good Fortune Saint Son the sea began to stir, a storm rising up!

Violent fluctuations of energy emanated outwards. Dreadful waves swept over the world. A giant spherical blood red life form rose up from the sea, its appearance like a scarlet sun!

From all over this bloody sun, the sea water boiled away. Water vapor evaporated all over, massive layers of clouds forming in the skies.

Following this, a horrifying momentum rushed out. Even the God Beast that had arrived at the Asura Sea felt fear. It shrank backwards, filled with dread for this bloody sun.

“This is…”

Many Asura Road martial artists were stunned. Most of them had never felt such a terrifying aura before.

And amongst these people, even the originally silent Lin Ming felt a cold sweat seep out of his forehead. He almost tore through space to run away.

No one was more aware than him of just what this blood red ball was. It was the abyssal demon – Famine!

“How is this possible?”

Lin Ming was panic-stricken. Why would Famine appear here? Did the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign also come?

Lin Ming held his breath. If the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign arrived, then his Bodily Rebirth Technique would truly be challenged!

After all, Lin Ming had once fought against the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. He didn't have any hopes that a newly reborn body would be able to deceive the sense of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

"Mm? Something's wrong!"

Immediately, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. Over half of that blood red ball had appeared above the horizon. From the radius of the blood red ball, the total volume was clearly far smaller than Famine had been before.

Famine's true body was over 10 thousand miles in diameter, as large as a planet.

But this blood red sphere was only several hundred miles in diameter.

Moreover, although the aura of this blood red sphere was similar to Famine's, it was much, much weaker. It was clearly not the true Famine.

And, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wasn't atop this blood red sphere. The one controlling it seemed to be the Good Fortune Saint Son.

"This small crimson sphere, could it actually be… Famine's descendant?"

Lin Ming immediately thought. His heart chilled. Famine was already an incredibly terrifying existence. If it was able to produce descendants… he simply didn't want to imagine that.

Famine's attribute was to swallow all. If it were to continue without end, then even the entire universe would be swallowed up by it!

"What is that thing?"

On the Asura Sea, many people wondered with trembling hearts.

For many of them this was the first time they had lain eyes upon such a terrifying life form.

In their original opinion, God Beasts were already the supreme vicious beasts of the entire universe. Although legends said that deep within the Asura Sea there were one or two super beasts that could compare with True Divinities, legends were only legends; no one had seen them before.

But currently, this terrifying thing could even cause a God Beast to draw back in fear. Was this a terrifying existence on the level of a True Divinity?

“It is Famine!”

On a luxurious sea platform, Grandma Goldwind slowly spoke. As she looked at Famine, a strange light glittered in her eyes.

Lin Ming turned his head and listened. For all these years, he had been absent from the Divine Realm for far too long and didn’t know what state the saints were in. He also didn’t know how strong the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had become.

“Famine? From the legends, the avatar of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign?”

A small number of martial artists from the Asura Road had also heard about the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. The destruction of the Divine Realm, the defeat and withdrawal of the human race, these were events that reverberated through the 33 Heavens.

In addition, many saint martial artists had recently come to the Asura Road. Thus, many of them knew just what kind of character the leader of the saints was. They also knew of his avatar – Famine, who came from the Dark Abyss.

“It is! But, it is more accurate to say that what is before us is only Famine’s avatar. In the last thousand years, Famine has swallowed far too many things. It has swallowed massive amounts of resources, life essence, soul essence, and has begun to breed its own avatars. With this, it can swallow things even faster, growing even faster…

Grandma Goldwind muttered.

Lin Ming’s face darkened. Swallowed many things!? Resources? Life essence? Soul essence?

These things could only have been from the Divine Realm!

When the God Lamenting Wall began to weaken and the great calamity approached, it was even possible that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had raised up a great war that swept through the Divine Realm and ancient races all in order to provide food for Famine.

Where would the saints have found so many things to feed Famine? It was naturally impossible for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign to ruin his own race, thus he could only choose to invade other universes.

After understanding this, Lin Ming gripped his fists and clenched his teeth.

In this calamity, countless people had died in battle within the Divine Realm. Innumerable sects had been turned to dust, their inheritances lost to time.

Many people had been swallowed and their souls absorbed, forced to become a part of Famine. This was a truly tragic way to die.

It was even likely that those humans who survived would be raised by the saints and used as fodder to feed Famine.

With the saints suppressing humanity, the human race would suffer the fate of eventually degenerating into farm animals.

Understanding this, Lin Ming’s eyes suddenly became icy cold. He looked towards the Good Fortune Saint Son who was flying in from the distance, and hid the murderous intent bubbling in his heart.

At this time, the Good Fortune Saint Son stood tall above Famine’s back, a light grin on his face.

In that peak battle against Lin Ming in the past, the Good Fortune Saint Son had suffered an excruciating defeat, ending in the greatest frustration of his life.

But afterwards, when the saints invaded the Divine Realm, the Good Fortune Saint Son had commanded the armies to trample over the 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm. Most Empyreans had either fled or died. The Good Fortune Saint Son could be called invincible, knowing no loss. He recklessly galloped over the universe, overbearing, as if no one in the world could topple him. His confidence that was shattered by Lin Ming was also restored as he found the thrill of revenge.

His cultivation would need at most 2000 more years to break into the Empyrean realm.

Moreover, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had even let him control one of Famine's avatars!

As long as he could raise this avatar and fuse together with it, then his strength would reach an unimaginable boundary.

At that time, besides a few people in the entire 33 Heavens, who could stop him?

In this situation, the Good Fortune Saint Son's thoughts were incomparably smooth. He had been ordered to preside over the smelting trial of the Good Fortune Saint Palace's junior disciples. He stepped onto the Asura Sea stage with cocky vigor, using Famine's avatar to make a high-profile appearance that deterred all present!

The Good Fortune Saint Son was satisfied with the effect he created. In his opinion, those who possessed absolutely formidable strength should expose that strength and awe everyone, making them submit!

The saints already possessed such capital.

The high-spirited Good Fortune Saint Son didn't notice that on one of the viewing platforms, a black-clothed youth was gazing at him.

Although this black-clothed youth’s eyes contained a horrifying killing intent, what was unusual was that no one sensed him.

This was because the boundary of his soul force had far surpassed all others’ present. No one was able to sense him.

“Let’s begin… today is the stage of my race. Only my race will be the main lead of this final trial!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son raucously laughed.

Many native influences of the Asura Road saw the Good Fortune Saint Son’s rampant behavior and wanted to refute him, but they couldn’t summon the energy to do so.

Their influences truly couldn’t compare with the Good Fortune Saint Palace.

At this time, from beneath the Good Fortune Saint Son’s feet, the flesh and blood of Famine began to slowly split up like a pomegranate being torn apart. From within it, a group of young saint elites appeared!

These young saint elites had been sent from the Good Fortune Saint Palace. They were a special squad of disciples sent to participate in the final trial.

As for the Good Fortune Saint Son himself, he would not be attending the final trial. This time he was only a host.

Chapter 1962 - The Final Trial Opens

Chapter 1962 – The Final Trial Opens

…

…

…

“After a few thousand years, the juniors of the past are now responsible for important missions…”

An Elder from the inner Asura Road looked at the Good Fortune Saint Son and spoke with deep emotion. To these rulers that lived for such a long time, several thousand years was nothing more than a blink of an eye.

However, to geniuses on the level of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, a few thousand years was enough to have them grow to a terrifying boundary.

The Good Fortune Saint Son and his group stepped down from Famine’s body. The Good Fortune Saint Son waved his hand and an opulent sea viewing platform appeared out of thin air, large enough to accommodate all disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace present.

Looking at the young elites from the Good Fortune Saint Palace, many people couldn’t help but admit that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was truly terrifying. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had an amazing inside background to begin with, and now that the saints had defeated humanity and plundered a massive amount of resources, could the Good Fortune Saint Palace have faintly become the number one sect of the 33 Heavens?

Many Asura Road martial artists looked at the Good Fortune Saint Son, the fear in their eyes deepening.

But at this time, winds whipped up once more.

The clouds in the skies parted and a giant blue lotus floated downwards.

Above this lotus flower stood a woman with an ethereal making.

This woman wore a water blue dress that perfectly contrasted against her figure. Her appearance wasn't remarkable, but even so, as she stood amongst a throng of female martial artists she stood out from them, unique and singular.

Her slender eyes and pale skin gave off a feeling just like the blue lotus behind her, a subtle and nearly imperceptible taste.

However, when Lin Ming saw this woman, his mind shook. He noticed that on this woman's uptied hair, three beautiful feather plumes were inserted. These three feathers seemed to be hairpins, but as Lin Ming saw them, they had an unusually deep significance.

These feathers carried with them a familiar feeling. Rather, one could call it an unforgettable feeling that was carved into his bones.

That was – Soaring Feather God King!

In the past, it was Soaring Feather God King that chased down Lin Ming and forced him into a dead end road with no path to take. Finally, he was forced to escape into the Asura Road, and as a result he was tricked by Sheng Mei.

"It's Fairy Blue Lotus, Soaring Feather God King's direct disciple and also her number one disciple!"

"Fairy Blue Lotus and the Good Fortune Saint Son have both arrived. Out of the four marvels of the saints, two are present!"

"The limelight of the saints is too great. Elite after elite is born amongst their ranks and there isn't another race that is capable of comparing with them… this smelting trial has become their stage. Soaring Feather God Mountain as well as the Good Fortune Saint Palace, they might take up all the benefits in this final trial. Compared to the saints, the spiritas have been too quiet lately…”

Everyone wildly discussed. But, Lin Ming noticed a few words in particular – the four marvels of the saints.

“Who are the four marvels of the saints?”

Lin Ming asked in a low voice.

“Oh? You don’t know? The saints’ four marvels are the four most outstanding True Divinity disciples of the saints. They are the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s direct disciple, the Good Fortune Saint Son, Soaring Feather God King’s direct disciple, Fairy Blue Lotus, and Astral Vault God King’s two direct disciples, Highsun and Darkmoon!”

“The saints have so many young elites?” Lin Ming asked, glancing at Fairy Blue Lotus. Her cultivation was at a half-step Empyrean, even higher than the Good Fortune Saint Son’s.

This mysterious woman caused Lin Ming to pay particular attention to her.

The one who spoke said, “The truth is that the most terrifying of the four marvels are the Good Fortune Saint Son and Fairy Blue Lotus. As for Highsun and Darkmoon, they just barely match up with them. Highsun and Darkmoon both have Empyrean cultivations and rely on the superiority of their cultivation to be listed amongst the four saint marvels. In fact, their strength can be considered slightly higher than that of the Good Fortune Saint Son and Fairy Blue Lotus.

“Thousands of years ago in the great war between the saints and humans, the four saint marvels earned tremendous numbers of military merits. In particular, Highsun and Darkmoon exterminated many human sects and even killed off human Empyreans! The two of them had already grown by that time, but as for the Good Fortune Saint Son and Fairy Blue Lotus, them growing was something that only happened in the last thousand years.”

The person chattered away. As Lin Ming listened, he quietly maintained his composure, secretly recording Highsun and Darkmoon's names in his heart.

He took a deep breath and asked again, "Has humanity perished? I've been in seclusion in the Asura Road for so many years, but before I came I also heard about humanity's situation. It seemed that all their peak masters died in battle?"

"Haha! I'm not too sure about that." The person shook their head. "I heard that the humans found a way to pierce through the God Lamenting Wall that separates the 33 Heavens and fled. But, the saints seem to be chasing them down even now. It's just a matter of time until they are all destroyed. I heard that humanity once produced an unrivalled genius, if I remember, his name was Lin Ming? Didn't he also die? This proves that humanity's destiny has come to an end. If they can't even keep their own geniuses alive, just what future do they have left?"

"Oh? Lin Ming, I've heard about him too. Did he really die?" Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. This was an extremely important matter to him. If the saints truly believed he died then he would feel much safer.

"It's true, I swear!" The person saw Lin Ming's doubtful gaze and responded with a bit of dissatisfaction, "I heard that a True Divinity of the saints personally acted in order to eliminate Lin Ming and prevent any future problems from arising. With a True Divinity personally hunting him down, do you think he would still be alive? I heard rumors that if Lin Ming hadn't died, he might have been able to grow up fast enough in the near future that he could threaten the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. In my opinion, that is just babbling nonsense. History never has 'ifs' to begin with! If you die you die, becoming nothing at all!"

"Thank you." Lin Ming faintly responded. He learned a bit more information that concerned him, but he was still worried about the retreat of humanity.

But at this time, a raging storm was set off in the Asura Sea. A vast and boundless aura appeared from nowhere.

Violent fluctuations of energy rose up from all over and dreadful waves shot into the air! In the skies, dark clouds gathered, as dark and dense as liquid ink. Faintly, azure dragons seemed to rush between these clouds. These weren't real dragons, but were horrifying energy flows that had gained spirituality.

Billowing thunder followed. The deafening thunderclaps seemed as if they could break apart the heavens.

Lin Ming knew that the final trial was finally opening.

"Haha!" The Good Fortune Saint Son laughed. He suddenly looked at Fairy Blue Lotus and said, "Blue Lotus, I originally thought that those I brought today would wrap up this entire final trial, but I didn't think that your Soaring Feather God Mountain would also decide to join in on the fun. How about we have a little competition?"

The various influences of the saints competed against each other. The three God Kings of the saints weren't harmonious to begin with, and their direct disciples, the four saint marvels, were also so.

"If you want to compete then let's compete!"

Fairy Blue Lotus lightly said, thinking little of it.

Behind her stood four young disciples, three men and one woman. Without exception, all of them had a feather mark on their head.

At this time, a giant crack appeared in the void. A surface appeared like a pitch black pool with endless arcs of lightning glistening within.

The crack rapidly expanded, drowning away the world and the sea. Countless runes of the Great Dao appeared, carrying a vast power of chaos that gushed outwards.

This terrifying strength tugged at everyone's blood vitality and divine soul, making it impossible to approach this fissure of space and time. But, several bold and daring young elites actually flickered, their bodies disappearing as they rushed straight into this space and time crack before it fully opened.

Their figures flashed. Like winding dragons, they passed through the arcs of thunder!

Most of these people came from Soaring Feather God Mountain and the Good Fortune Saint Palace.

In the fierce onslaught of thunder, their movements were calm. Amongst them, there was a fat person who stopped in the storm. He looked towards the four disciples of Soaring Feather God Mountain and sly smirked, the corners of his round face curling upwards. Then, his figure flashed and he dove deeper into the horrifying storm.

"They've already gone in!"

Many people looked at the mystical and unknown world that lay behind that massive space crack, unable to go forwards.

It was only when the thunder gradually died down did martial artists fly into the entrance of the final trial, sinking into the black crack.

As for Lin Ming, he joined the waves of people, looking extremely common. From the time he came here to the time he flew into the space crack, no one had noticed him.

……

After all young elites with the trial qualifications had entered the final trial, the Good Fortune Saint Son slowly flew away.

Behind him, Famine's avatar gradually emerged upwards from the sea. It stretched out a thick blood dragon tentacle that wrapped around the Good Fortune Saint Son.

Then, Famine's flesh and blood split and the Good Fortune Saint Son sunk into it in front of everyone's eyes.

After the Good Fortune Saint Son entered Famine's body, Famine sank deep into the sea, isolating out everything outside.

The Good Fortune Saint Son wore a red cloak as he stepped on a path made from Famine's flesh and blood. Slowly, he arrived at the core of Famine, where there was a room formed from its body.

This room was wide and spacious. The furnishings were elegant. There was a soft rug of red feathers and an ancient wooden bed covered with sheets woven from threads of divine silkworm silk. On the side of the bed, there was wine made from heavenly materials.

But, this room was permeated with the scent of blood. The ground also wriggled, making one feel uncomfortable.

The Good Fortune Saint Soon walked into this room and took out an array formation jade slip. He crumbled it in his hand. The light of the array formation faded and a blurry face appeared in the air.

This face contained a pressure beyond description, almost impossible to look at head-on.

This was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

As the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's face appeared, the originally overbearing Good Fortune Saint Son became meek and respectful. He politely bowed and then stood up.

"Was there a problem?" The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's voice was as cold as metal, without any emotion at all.

"Reporting to Your Majesty Sovereign, everything is going well. The final trial has begun and those from Soaring Feather God Mountain have also appeared. Besides them, there is no one else worthy of attention. Your child will surely complete the mission you have handed down!"

“Mm…” The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign thought for a moment. “That woman Soaring Feather shouldn’t know the circumstances of why you are there. This time, the result of the final trial is secondary. That thing… must be found, no matter the cost.”

“Understood!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son solemnly replied. But at this time, the jade slip array formation had already shattered to nothing and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s phantom disappeared.

After the light faded away, the Good Fortune Saint Son took a deep breath. Not only must he complete this mission but he also had to make sure the disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace bloomed in glorious splendor, so that they took all the benefits!

Chapter 1963 - Entering the Gate of Laws

Chapter 1963 – Entering the Gate of Laws

…

…

…

This was the second time Lin Ming had entered the strange world of the final trial.

This was an ancient ruin that the Asura Road Master had left behind. Lin Ming had undergone several reincarnations and now with his cultivation greatly increased, as he stepped into this place once again, what he felt was even deeper than before!

He could even faintly feel that he shared some bloodline relation with this world.

Hu – !

Hu – !

Lin Ming could feel his own inner world breathing, and this breathing tempo seemed to have some inexplicable connection to this final trial world.

And from the surrounding space, faint traces of remnant world power began to spontaneously merge into Lin Ming's inner world, causing it to rapidly grow far faster than it did in the past.

"The Asura Heavenly Dao is truly mysterious beyond compare…"

Lin Ming was well aware that the Asura Sutra cultivated the world of the universe. In terms of creating a world and developing a world, the Heavenly Sutra was much more useful than the Holy Scripture.

Now, he paused in this final trial world, feeling the remnant world power nourish his own inner world. To be able to receive such a benefit was naturally because of the heaven-defying qualities of the Asura Heavenly Dao.

Lin Ming quietly embraced this feeling and slowly moved forwards.

But at this time, there was a loud roar as several giant taotie phantoms hurtled towards Lin Ming.

These were spiritual beings created by the final trial's array formation and were also the protectors of the final trial.

Lin Ming thought little of them. He allowed the taotie phantoms to leap onto him. But in the next moment, Asura runes fluttered out from Lin Ming's body and covered these taotie phantoms, immediately causing them to vanish.

Then, the heavens and earth spun around and Lin Ming was sent to a different world.

This world was covered by a vast canopy of forests, and in these forests were great beasts.

Lin Ming swept out his divine sense, immediately locating their strength and position.

All of this was the test of the final trial's first level. This was a test with no handicap. It didn't look at skeletal age, cultivation, or comprehension of Laws. All it tested was one's absolute strength.

If one was weak, then no matter how lofty their talent was they wouldn't be able to pass.

In the past when Lin Ming was at the Divine Lord realm, he had easily crossed this first level test. Now, at the peak of the World King realm, crossing this first level was easy.

He didn't even need to enter the forest like the first time and temper himself within...

He stopped in front of the forest and closed his eyes. Before him, in his mind, the forest had already disappeared. All that remained in its place was an inexhaustible number of Asura runes.

For Lin Ming, no matter how great the scenery was or how powerful the beasts were, he could instantly see through to their essence. They were all things condensed from the Laws.

He heard a strange rumbling coming from the array formation. These were incomparably pure fluctuations of Asura energy, gently trembling. The array formation absorbed these fluctuations of energy to continue revolving.

Lin Ming looked at it for a moment and then gently thrust out his finger.

Pa!

A rune broke upon Lin Ming's fingertip, dissipating into nothing.

Then, Lin Ming pointed out his finger again and again, sometimes destroying runes and sometimes changing their position or trajectory.

After doing this dozens of times, the entire array formation began to wildly shake.

Then the entire forest illusion collapsed!

The giant beasts lurking amongst the infinite maze of towering trees vanished in plumes of smoke, leaving nothing behind.

What replaced them was a circle of energy. Within this, waves of energy surged like a night tide, forming a blue mirror surface.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. This was the entrance to the second level. To pass the first level using this method was also a test of how well Lin Ming had grasped the Asura Heavenly Dao.

Lin Ming stepped into this pool of energy and arrived directly at the second level.

As the waves of energy flowed over him, a strange sensation filled Lin Ming's mind. He was suddenly informed of his own completion percentage – 20%.

This was the same result from the first time Lin Ming had come to the final trial.

"It seems that 20% is the maximum percentage possible from the first level."

As Lin Ming thought this he had already stepped into the second level of the final trial.

As he arrived here, he could see that the second level was slightly different from what it had been before.

This was a boundless desert. Moreover, as Lin Ming arrived here, he instantly felt a suppression of Laws pushing down on him.

An irresistible strength enveloped his inner world.

An intangible and invisible energy formed a thin film over his inner world. Of all the energy he possessed, half was locked it.

The source of this was a suppression dependent on one's skeletal age.

The higher a martial artist's skeletal age, the more they would be suppressed. If those ancient rulers of sects and families were to enter here, their cultivation might possibly be suppressed to less than .001% of their original strength, making it so that the strength they could use was even less than the juniors'.

Lin Ming was already several thousand years old.

But, his situation was special. This was because he cultivated the Grand Reincarnation Art.

When Sheng Mei entered the final trial, it was also the existence of the Grand Reincarnation Art that gave her unparalleled strength here.

With the Grand Reincarnation Art, the growth of a martial artist's skeletal age slowed down to a snail's pace. Moreover, the Holy Scripture itself was a cultivation method on par with the Asura Heavenly Dao. Because of that, it was hard for the rules of the final trial to restrain the Grand Reincarnation Art.

As Lin Ming walked through the final trial's second level, he did so with tremendous ease. No dangers could approach within three feet of Lin Ming.

To the current Lin Ming, the first few floors of the final trial were much simpler than an adult adding one and one together. There just wasn't anything here capable of pressuring him.

Soon Lin Ming saw that at the line of the horizon, a great metal gate loomed.

The gate stood tall to the heavens, as heavy and towering as mountains, solemn and majestic!

The gate constantly emitted golden rays of light. Countless runes revolved around the gate. Lin Ming was extremely familiar with this gate – this was the Gate of Laws!

There were often many differences during the rounds of the final trial each time. But, the Gate of Laws always existed every time the final trial opened.

All trial challengers had to pass through the test of the Gate of Laws.

When Lin Ming arrived in front of the Gate of Laws, he could faintly hear sounds of the Great Dao rumbling from within.

"During the last time I was here, I already passed through the Asura difficulty Gate of Laws. I wonder what it will be like this time? According to the rules of the final trial, if my results from this time cannot surpass the results I obtained from the first time, then there is nothing I can obtain. In other words, if I still enter the Asura difficulty test, there isn't any meaning to that at all…

"The final trial shouldn't make me pass a meaningless test..."

As Lin Ming thought this, he began to wait before the Gate of Laws.

The Gate of Laws would only open once the majority of trial challengers participating had arrived here.

But Lin Ming had been too fast. Most people hadn't even gone halfway through the first level but Lin Ming had already completed the second level trial.

Lin Ming sat down and started to meditate. In the world of the final trial, he didn't want to waste a single second. He began slowly absorbing the remnant world energy all around him to nourish his own inner world.

After 20 hours, Lin Ming felt other martial artists finally approach.

He swept out his divine sense and discovered that there were several groups of martial artists.

He saw a deep blue spirit boat flying in from the skies. At the bow of the spirit boat, a woman in ash gray clothes stood tall against the wind. She wore a green veil on her face, and inserted on this green veil were three feathers.

Lin Ming had seen this woman before. When Fairy Blue Lotus arrived at the entrance to the final trial, she had led four disciples, three of them men and one of them a woman. This gray-clothed woman was that female disciple.

From the position she stood, he could guess that she was the core figure of the four disciples from Soaring Feather God Mountain.

And beside those from Soaring Feather God Mountain, the disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace had also arrived.

The Good Fortune Saint Palace had poured in an exorbitant amount of resources and were able to obtain many qualification tokens. They were able to bring over 20 disciples into the final trial.

Many young elites had gathered together and at the front of them was a fat man playing with a gourd of wine. He quietly sat atop a flying rug, a calm and presumptuous smile on his face. Because of all the meat packed around his face, his two narrow eyes made it seem as if he were sleeping.

He had already noticed that his competition from Soaring Feather God Mountain had arrived, but he simply didn't place them in his heart.

"We're about to arrive at the Gate of Laws." The fat man lazily said.

"Yes!" In sharp contrast to the fat man, the other disciples of Good Fortune Saint Palace were unusually energetic and cautious.

"Mm. Don't forget our mission. Not only do we have to obtain the trial rewards, but we also have to find that thing..."

The fat man drank some wine, a flash of light crossing his narrow eyes...

Chapter 1964 - Change in the Spatial Gate

Chapter 1964 – Change in the Spatial Gate

…

…

…

As the disciples from the Good Fortune Saint Palace and Soaring Feather God Mountain approached, Lin Ming stepped back and hid himself in a space distortion, completely vanishing from sight.

In the final trial, wanting to distort space wasn't easy. Lin Ming relied on his understandings of the Asura Laws to do so.

"Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, we've arrived first."

A young disciple from the Good Fortune Saint Palace looked at the empty scene in front of the Gate of Laws, chuckling as he spoke. The elder senior-apprentice brother he spoke of was naturally the fat man leading them.

The fat man patted his belly. He drawled, "This isn't anything to be overly proud about. We come from the Good Fortune Saint Palace and we have the most people here. With so many of us working together, if we aren't the first group to arrive then we might as well go home and cry. Moreover, those from Soaring Feather God Mountain have also arrived.

As the fat man spoke, his eyes peered into the horizon. He could see a deep blue spirit boat slowly but solidly flying towards them. That was the transportation device of Soaring Feather God Mountain's disciples.

After the disciples from Soaring Feather God Mountain arrived, they only spared a glance at the Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples before gathering off on another side on their own where they began to meditate.

As time passed, more and more trial challengers reached the Gate of Laws.

As for Lin Ming, he chose a time when most of the trial challengers had arrived to quietly appear. No one noticed an extra person amongst the throngs.

After Lin Ming appeared, the Gate of Laws began to shine with an even more dazzling light!

Rumble rumble rumble!

The earth shook. The Gate of Laws opened just a sliver and a horrifying aura gushed out like a tsunami!

The hearts of those present quaked. The trial of the Gate of Laws was finally about to start!

This was an extremely vital part of the Asura Road’s final trial. The rewards dispensed at the Gate of Laws were incredibly rich.

Moreover, from this point on, the results of the trial challengers would rapidly be pulled apart. The powerhouses would go higher and the weak ones would drop lower.

Beneath the shroud of divine light, the gate completely opened.

Within the gate was an incomparably vast starry space. Four spatial gates were lined up in the starry space.

These four spatial gates represented four difficulties. From largest to smallest, from easiest to hardest, they were the mortal-step difficulty, earth-step difficulty, heaven-step difficulty, and also the Asura difficulty!

The difficulty of the Gate of Laws was disgustingly abnormal. In the past, even the sixth revolution Sheng Mei was barely able to perfectly complete the heaven-step difficulty.

“Hahaha! It’s finally opened!”

“It’s begun. The smaller the spatial gate, the more difficult it will be. This is one of our life’s most important chances. Everyone, be a bit more cautious and give it everything you have!”

A sect disciple with some experience began to introduce the details of the Gate of Laws.

The gazes of many trial challengers invariably drifted over to the rightmost spatial gate, the one that was also the smallest.

This spatial gate was blood red, like a spinning vortex of blood. The aura it emitted caused one’s heart to shake with fear and dread.

Many martial artists felt a terrifying pressure just looking at it. They couldn’t keep their eyes on this gate for a long period of time.

“Don’t look, if you look too long then you’ll suffer a soul wound. That gate isn’t something that people can enter.”

An Asura Road disciple grimly said to several of his junior-apprentice brothers.

“No one can enter? Thousands of years ago, wasn’t there that monstrous genius Lin Ming who managed to perfectly pass the Asura difficulty? Is that legend true?”

Upon mentioning Lin Ming’s name, the complexions of many martial artists changed.

Lin Ming was a fabled existence within the Asura Road. In billions of years, he was the only final trial challenger who had managed to obtain a completion rate above 90%.

This was a completion percentage so high it strained the neck. There were even many people that weren’t willing to believe this rumor.

"That legend… is true."

Someone slowly said.

The atmosphere of the field fell silent for a moment. Amongst those present, no one dared to choose the Asura difficulty. Even the heaven-step difficulty caused people to shrink back.

As for Lin Ming, not only had he chosen the Asura difficulty but he had perfectly passed it. This disparity was greater than clouds and mud.

"Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, some people mentioned that boy…"

A disciple of the Good Fortune Saint Palace said in a hushed whisper. To the saints, especially talents of the saints, Lin Ming was a nauseating name.

Their senior, the Good Fortune Saint Son, had originally been brutally beaten down by Lin Ming.

"Heh, who cares if the legend is true or not? He's already dead."

The fat elder senior-apprentice brother loudly spoke up. Everyone turned their heads towards him.

The fat man was casually lying back on his flying rug. He unhurriedly took out a bag of fruits from his spatial ring. These fruits were the size of longans and seemed to drip with jade green juices, seeping with fragrance. Just by looking at them one could see that they were precious heavenly materials.

The fat man began speaking as he popped these fruits into his mouth. His voice was a bit slurred, "A dead genius is no longer a genius. Who cares how talented Lin Ming was when he was alive? It was bad enough he was born in the wrong race, but he was truly an idiot. A mere Holy Lord thought that he could save the Divine Realm, really, I want to laugh myself to death.

“For my saint race, killing him was easy. The only problem was that he hid behind the protection of peak Empyreans so we had to use a True Divinity. To die by a True Divinity’s hands, he should be honored.”

The fat man lazily spoke, his words careless. As everyone heard these words, they felt various emotions in their hearts. Some felt pity for Lin Ming, but there were even more people gloating in his downfall.

Where there were people, there was bound to be jealousy. In particular, geniuses hated being surpassed by others. When someone was so terrifying that no one could see their back, these people naturally hoped that something bad would happen to them.

“Enough with the chit chat. Choose your gate!”

The fat elder senior-apprentice brother waved his hand and the disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace began making their choice.

What they chose was the earth-step difficulty level.

This difficulty level was already extraordinary. Of the many Asura Road disciples, most could only choose the mortal-step difficulty.

But then, the fat man also made his choice. He chose the heaven-step difficulty!

This was the same difficulty that Sheng Mei and Xiao Moxian chose in the past. From this alone it could be seen how hard it was!

Of course, Sheng Mei had perfectly completed the heaven-step difficulty in the past, moreover she had done so calmly. It was impossible for the fat man to do the same, but he might be able to partially complete it.

After making his choice, the fat man looked towards the disciples of Soaring Feather God Mountain.

Finally, the gray-clothed woman from Soaring Feather God Mountain decided not to weaken her momentum at all; she also chose the heaven-step difficulty.

“Interesting!”

The fat man’s lips curved up in a happy and thoughtful smile.

Following that, the others made their choice. No one could summon the courage to follow in the footsteps of the fat man and the gray-clothed woman; they only chose the easier difficulties.

And by this time, Lin Ming still hadn’t made his choice.

He looked towards these four spatial gates and frowned. His divine sense repeatedly scanned the Asura difficulty spatial gate but he didn’t detect anything strange. This spatial gate was exactly the same as the one he chose in the past.

After seeing that 99% of the people had chosen and the Gate of Laws trial would soon begin, Lin Ming finally started to move. But, he still couldn’t make a choice.

However at this time, the Gate of Laws suddenly shined with a divine brilliance once more!

The earth wobbled and quaked, even fiercer than before. Everyone was panic-stricken; they had no idea what had occurred.

Ka ka ka ka!

With a great cracking sound, the void to the right of the red Asura gate suddenly split open!

A vortex of energy emerged from thin air, revolving without end, stabilizing that shattered space and turning it into another spatial gate.

This spatial gate was a deep blood red, and even smaller, only a fifth of the Asura level gate's diameter.

For a time, everyone was shocked.

What was going on here?

There were supposed to be four spatial gates – why had another appeared?

Moreover, this spatial gate was smaller than all the other ones present. If so, this meant it was even more difficult than the Asura level gate?

Just as people thought this, someone suddenly paled as he began shivering.

This new smallest spatial gate emitted a horrifying aura, one that affected his soul and nearly ruptured his spiritual sea.

He quickly turned his head. Only then was he able to let out a breath of relief.

Everyone looked away, no longer daring to look at the new spatial gate.

How terrifying!

It was like this gate contained demons.

It seemed that their previous guess had been true!

Then, was there anyone that could actually enter such a gate?

Everyone glanced at each other in dismay. No one knew what to say.

Then, a breathlessly angry voice resounded in the air –

"Fuck, this is such a damn tease!"

Everyone turned their heads. All they saw was the fat man who was eating his fruit suddenly throw the remaining fruits he had on the ground.

"There already isn't anyone capable of entering that damned red Asura gate, and now one with an even higher difficulty popped up out of nowhere. The brains of the final trial creator are really..."

As the fat man was cursing, he suddenly forcefully swallowed his last words just before he was about to say them.

This was because the reputation of the Asura Road Master was too dazzling. The fat man didn't dare to violate this final taboo lest he incur the wrath of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws.

As the fat man spoke, the light of the final spatial gate grew increasingly bright. This blinding blood red color made everyone feel as if they were about to tumble into hell, so suffocating that they couldn't breathe.

As the luminescence reached its peak, they ever feared that glancing at the final spatial gate would cause their souls to fall into chaos.

And in this situation, a person's blurry figure slowly approached this final spatial gate. However... because of the shroud of blood red light, no one was able to clearly see him.

"I think... someone walked in..."

An Asura Road martial artist hesitantly said with doubt, his eyes leaking tears.

His foundation was solid, his soul force was formidable, and he was also extremely curious. He persisted in looking at the new spatial gate for a little bit longer and seemed to have seen someone's figure vanish into it.

"Are your eyes blind? You can die in this Gate of Laws trial, so who would dare enter that gate!"

“Don’t joke around. Those who enter that gate are either idiots are they are trying to kill themselves!”

Everyone began arguing with each other. But at this time, a powerful suction force reached out from every spatial gate.

These suction forces contained the power of the Asura Heavenly Dao. All of the trial challengers were sucked into the spatial gates they chose. Then, after they entered, the Gate of Laws slammed tight behind them.

The trial of the Gate of Laws had officially begun.

Chapter 1965 - The Final Gate

Chapter 1965 – The Final Gate

…

…

…

After thousands of years, because Lin Ming had chosen an intensely difficult and steep road of martial arts and he had perceived the world of the universe and the world of the body to the peak, his strength hadn't risen too quickly. One could say he had done everything in perfect order.

Now, facing this Gate of Laws that had never been revealed before, an unusual mood brewed in his heart.

Thousands of years ago, what he had seen in the Asura level gate was also the same.

A dark blue ancient plank road stretched to the horizon, vanishing into a boundless sea of clouds.

Lin Ming stepped onto this ancient plank road.

On the plank road existed the remnant pressure of the Asura Road Master. The deeper one ventured, the greater the pressure.

Lin Ming summoned the power of divinity of the 33 Heavens. Within his body, his self-created universe slowly revolved. The terrifying aura of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws barraged Lin Ming's mortal body without end.

This strength and this pressure was absorbed into Lin Ming's inner world. As for what Lin Ming himself had to bear, it wasn't much at all.

However, the further he walked down this plank road the greater the pressure was.

Slowly, Lin Ming realized that beneath the exertion of this pressure, all of his flesh and blood was being grinded down and his footsteps and even his breath became labored.

This strength was as deep as a sea. Beads of sweat formed on Lin Ming's forehead.

Lin Ming sat atop the plank road, withstanding the pressure on his body and drawing it into his self-created universe.

Cracking sounds filled the air. Under this pressure, Lin Ming's inner universe began to emit the sound of breaking.

He frowned. Focusing his mind, the Laws of the Holy Scripture also revolved. A power of endlessness merged into Lin Ming's inner universe.

Lin Ming closed his eyes, feeling the hundred tastes of a thousand mortal generations. The Great Dao of Life and Death, the samsara of the world, all of these feelings passed through his spiritual sea. Slowly, Lin Ming felt his inner universe not only withstand this pressure but also become constantly compacted beneath it.

Originally, Lin Ming's inner universe had expanded to 3000 miles.

But in this short period just now, his inner universe was forcefully compressed by a hundred miles, reduced to 2900 miles.

This sort of change left Lin Ming overjoyed. The more his inner universe shrank, the more compact it would become. Although this wouldn't increase Lin Ming's strength, it would actually be a tremendous benefit to his future martial arts growth.

Slowly, Lin Ming adapted to this pressure. Then he stood up and continued forwards.

He didn't worry. He moved forwards slowly. Whenever he felt that he couldn't withstand the pressure, he would sit down and meditate.

Each time this would take him several hours.

Like this, Lin Ming's inner world constantly compressed.

When Lin Ming completely passed through the plank road, his inner world had been compressed by 900 miles, making it 2100 miles in size. By this time, a full 12 days had passed in Lin Ming's journey.

At the end of the plank road existed a vast and ancient continent. At the center of this continent, numerous golden gates stood tall.

These golden gates stretched to the horizon. They covered all the Laws of the 33 Heavens, and this was also the reason why the test from the second level to the third level was called the Gate of Laws.

In the past, Lin Ming had also come to this ancient continent. These golden gates had opened one after another and enemies who represented the Great Daos of the 33 Heavens had appeared.

When Lin Ming defeated all these enemies in turn, the golden gates had disappeared, leaving behind only a single final gate. When this final gate opened, the Black Asura had appeared.

The Black Asura he had ridden a great black dragon and he had also worn deep ruby red armor. His arms and his waist had been wrapped with thick chains.

When Lin Ming first came to the final trial, he had to withstand three spears from this opponent in order to perfectly pass the Asura level difficulty.

But this time, the Gate of Laws that Lin Ming stepped into was clearly far more difficult than the Asura level gate. He had no idea just what sights would greet him.

Because of the Grand Reincarnation Art, Lin Ming's skeletal age was actually much less than his true age. This also gave him an overwhelming superiority in the final trial.

The endless golden gates shivered. But, none of them opened. They shivered so hard that even the entire ancient continent started to quake. Lin Ming tensed himself and raised his guard, revolving his energy to the limit. He waited for the fierce battle to begin!

With all of the golden gates shaking, Lin Ming even suspected that all the enemies would rush out at him together. If that occurred then this would truly be a brutally frigid battle.

However, he didn't think that a moment later, all of those golden gates would suddenly quiet down and vanish, without a single enemy appearing.

"Mm?"

Lin Ming was surprised. He gazed around and noticed that there was only a single gate left in the entire continent.

This was extremely similar to the last time Lin Ming had come to the Gate of Laws.

But, what was different was that Lin Ming had leapt over the test of the 33 Heavens' Laws, passing directly to the end!

Then, what would appear from this final sealed gate?

Lin Ming slowly approached the gate.

This gate was a thousand feet high and as heavy as the earth.

It was engraved with ancient reliefs. As Lin Ming saw these reliefs, he could no longer move his eyes away.

These reliefs contained a beguiling demonic charm that that was indescribable. The 1000 foot square of reliefs seemed to contain a great universe. As Lin Ming looked upon this relief, he felt as he were gazing into a real world.

The surface was engraved with daunting warriors, heaven-destroying magic tools, disintegrating worlds, and also… countless demons.

Some of the demons were as large as planets and some were as small as gravel. They were all perfectly presented on this relief, making it feel unbelievable.

Looking at these demons, Lin Ming felt something strange tickling his mind. This relief should be depicting a great war in ancient times between fierce demons and the rest of the intelligent life that existed.

At this time, the gate suddenly opened!

A horrifying divine light shot out from the slit of the opening gates, cutting through the world like the sword of a divine god!

Lin Ming subconsciously narrowed his eyes. With his sense, he vigilantly prepared to begin this test at any time.

When the gate opened, Lin Ming opened his eyes to see that the world around him had fallen away.

He had arrived in a pure white space.

This feeling was as if a world was sealed into that great gate, and after opening, this world had descended and Lin Ming had been drawn in.

In the endless white was a man’s back.

He quietly stood there, as if he were the only one to exist in the heavens and earth.

This back didn’t seem like that of a phantom, but like that of a real person.

Like this, with his back to Lin Ming, the man slowly stepped backwards.

The moment Lin Ming saw this man he gasped. His blood began to boil and seethe. Facing this man felt as if he were facing the entire universe.

For a time, an unstoppable thought swelled up within Lin Ming's mind.

He immediately understood that this person was likely… the Asura Road Master!

He was a mere 100 feet away from Lin Ming. Lin Ming could clearly feel the waves of aura that washed off his body.

The man turned around. As he did so, a bright halo of light wrapped around him, blurring his face and making it impossible to clearly see his appearance.

The man raised his right hand. What floated above it was a slowly spinning galaxy.

This galaxy seemed ethereal and unreal, as if it contained the infinite mysterious changes of the universe.

At this time, the man gave off a feeling as if he were the source of the universe's Laws, the singular epicenter of the 33 Heavenly Daos.

The Asura Road Master, was he the Asura Road Master?

Lin Ming was left dazed for a moment. His heart began to race. The legendary Asura Road Master that was said to possess unparalleled strength now stood in front of him. It was like this was all a dream.

Could it be… the Asura Road Master was planning on giving him the final test?

In the past when Lin Ming passed through the Asura level difficulty, his final test had been to face the Black Asura. Lin Ming had speculated that the Black Asura was the Asura Road Master's avatar or an incarnation.

And where he was now was a difficulty far higher than the Asura level; it could even be said to be a Gate of Laws that was specifically opened for Lin Ming.

The examiner of this Gate of Laws was actually the Asura Road Master himself!

In the past, the Asura Road Master's incarnation had been at the True Divinity level! As for the Asura Road Master's true self, he had likely surpassed the realm of True Divinity…

"Senior!"

Lin Ming took a deep breath and respectfully bowed.

In truth, he had already guessed that the man in front of him was not the true Asura Road Master, but a wisp of will that he had left behind in the past!

Just what kind of test would he hand down?

Lin Ming didn't know what it would be, but he knew it would be difficult beyond imagination!

Chapter 1966 - Debate In the Void

Chapter 1966 – Debate In the Void

…

…

…

In the past when Lin Ming faced the Black Asura examiner, he had to withstand three attacks.

Then, if the Asura Road Master had come to personally conduct this test, would it also be a battle? If he were to fight with the Asura Road Master's true self, what sort of scene would that be?

All sorts of thoughts raced through Lin Ming's mind. But, what he knew was that regardless of what the result of the test was, the test itself was a great lucky chance.

At this time, the Asura Road Master slowly walked towards Lin Ming.

He gazed at Lin Ming. Even when wrapped in dreamy threads of fog, his profoundly deep eyes were still incomparably clear.

Through these eyes, Lin Ming seemed to see dimensions of universes being born and destroyed within them.

And now, within these eyes, what was actually reflected was Lin Ming.

This clear image was like a mirror, perfectly reflecting Lin Ming's demeanor and appearance.

Then, the Asura Road Master arrived in front of him.

By this time the Asura Road Master was only a hundred feet away from Lin Ming. He didn't say a single word but quietly looked on.

The Asura Road Master didn't emit any aura. In fact he seemed the same as an average mortal person. However, Lin Ming could actually feel a mind-boggling depth of strength from his body.

He knew that this shock came from the Asura Road Master's body, from the inner universe he possessed.

Like a mortal suddenly arrived in the boundless sea of stars, even when facing the starry space they wouldn't feel any pressure nor would they feel the aura of the stars, but just by facing it, they would be shocked by how vast and beautiful it was!

Lin Ming held his breath, quietly waiting for the Asura Road Master to give him his test.

At this time, the Asura Road Master raised a hand. With his hand in the air, he used his finger as a pen and began to draw an arc in the void.

This winding line was like a small snake. From start to finish, it formed a perfect circle. Then, the Asura Road Master lowered his finger and started to trace a new line.

Then, the third and fourth. The Asura Road Master continued to draw marks. These marks floated in the void, pale and light, like ripples of water in the air.

Slowly, these marks seemed to blend together with the world, becoming intangible and invisible. If the average person were to come here they wouldn't even be able to see the Asura Road Master's finger.

But Lin Ming was able to revolve the Asura Heavenly Dao within him to the limit and see these ripple-like marks. In truth, they were forming runes!

These were Asura Heavenly Dao runes!

The Asura Road Master was drawing runes, and the clear purpose was that he was preparing them for Lin Ming.

Then, Lin Ming understood.

These runes could be called his own exam page. The test that the Asura Road Master was giving him was not a battle of strength but a debate of the Laws!

To debate with the Asura Road Master?

Lin Ming took a deep breath, feeling this a bit inconceivable.

He never thought the test method would be like this…

He was well aware that this would be a tremendous challenge for him but at the same time a rare opportunity.

These were runes personally drawn by the Asura Road Master, the most essential manifestation of the Asura Heavenly Dao!

At this time, the Asura Road Master had stopped drawing. He held his hands behind his back and looked at Lin Ming, waiting for his reply.

Lin Ming took a deep breath, completely bringing his mind to tranquility.

He carefully observed these Heavenly Dao runes. They were relatively simple amongst the Asura Heavenly Dao.

It seemed that at the very start, the Asura Road Master didn’t raise too difficult a problem.

Or, in the eyes of the Asura Road Master, a junior like Lin Ming could be sufficiently proud in comprehending the Laws to such a degree at such an age.

Lin Ming pondered for a moment. Within his eyes, these runes branded themselves in his spiritual sea where they were rapidly analyzed.

After several reincarnations, Lin Ming had tempered himself in the bustle of the mortal plane and his state of mind had reached near perfection. He had even partially fused the Concepts of the Holy Scripture into the Asura Scripture. Now, Lin Ming's understanding of the Asura Sutra had in truth begun to gradually separate from the Asura Laws created by the Asura Road Master, as he stepped onto a different path.

In this sort of situation, Lin Ming no longer simply accepted and studied the Asura Sutra, but was comprehending a version that belonged to himself.

After sitting in meditation for half an hour, Lin Ming finally moved!

Rays of energy gathered on his fingertip. Using his finger as a pen, Lin Ming began to portray his own Asura Heavenly Dao lines.

One stroke after another, the lines drawn by Lin Ming began to intersect with those left behind by the Asura Road Master.

Compared to a heaven-shaking and world-destroying scene that would occur when top supreme elders fought, this confrontation of writing could be called simple and mediocre with nothing wonderful or dazzling about it.

However, reality was different. When the lines of the Asura Heavenly Dao that Lin Ming drew connected with those drawn by the Asura Road Master, a brilliant burst of light flashed out, impacting into the heavens like a divine pillar of light!

A martial artist's cultivation method was in truth a manifestation of the Laws.

As for drawing runes, they were the condensation of the Laws. They contained a terrifying momentum, in no way weaker than the cultivation method itself.

When two martial artists who had reached extremely high attainments in the comprehension of Laws began to engage in a vigorous debate using Law lines, although the eruption wouldn't sweep through the world with energy that could shatter planets, it would still emit a horrifying aura and momentum that was similar to a martial artist's billowing blood vitality during the heat of battle. As it lit up the skies, its glory could compete with the sun and moon!

Ka ka ka!

Lin Ming's drawing speed became increasingly fast. The void of the final trial unexpectedly seemed as if it couldn't withstand the pressure of Lin Ming's strokes connecting with the Asura Road Master's. With a crisp sound, it seemed to crack open.

Then, the Asura Road Master's complexion changed!

He never thought that the Law lines he casually drew up would arouse such an intense fighting momentum from a junior.

It seemed… that he had underestimated this junior!

Seeing the lines he drew being slowly swallowed up, the Asura Road Master's lips curved up.

He smiled, and this was also a smile of appreciation and admiration.

To have the Asura Road Master, a man who once stood at the peak of the 33 Heavens and ruled over the ancient era, show appreciation towards someone else, this was enough to leave behind a legend!

At this time, the Asura Road Master took a step forwards. He took out a spear from his spatial ring!

He began to use this spear as a pen to draw the lines of the Asura Heavenly Dao!

This time, the Asura Road Master's drawn lines were much denser. Every line tore through the void, galloping like horses, filled with endlessly daring spirit and majesty.

Lin Ming began to heat up with excitement. He also drew out the Black Dragon Spear and engaged in a vigorous debate with the Asura Road Master!

Lin Ming's drawings were soft and supple, continuous and without end.

As the two fought, it was like the sun and moon battling for supremacy!

This was a fierce confrontation. If an outsider were to see it they would be dumbfounded. In their opinion, it was unimaginable for people to be able to engage in such an incredible debate of the Laws.

It should be said that they would never imagine fighting could occur in such a way!

Only peak Laws like the Asura Heavenly Dao, and only with someone who understood the Asura Heavenly Dao to such a deep degree like Lin Ming, would be able to engage in such a splendid duel of Laws!

As time passed, Lin Ming noticed that he was slowly starting to fall behind.

But at the same time, the appreciative smile on the Asura Road Master's face became increasingly wide and vibrant.

The truth was that the Asura Road Master had only been using an infinitesimally portion of his strength. He had probed Lin Ming and after discovering that Lin Ming was much stronger than he had anticipated, he had then begun to slowly increase the strength behind the Laws he drew. Like this, Lin Ming was naturally worn down the longer they went.

Ka ka ka!

A connection of lines!

Beads of sweat poured down Lin Ming's forehead. The lines he drew were swallowed up in massive amounts. Some strokes he drew shattered, turning into Law fragments that scattered away in the void.

After all of Lin Ming's drawings exploded, the Asura Road Master faintly chuckled and put away his long spear.

And at this time, Lin Ming's body had reached exhaustion and he nearly slumped to the ground. A battle of Laws didn't use energy, but it was an enormous consumption of one's soul force and mental strength. After Lin Ming had gone through several incarnations, his spiritual sea had been tempered enough that he could last until now.

He held himself up with the Black Dragon Spear, taking great heaving breaths.

And at this time, in front of him, the Asura Road Master lifted his finger and began to draw once more in the void.

This time, the Asura Road Master's drawing speed was extremely slow.

His writing had become pale again. But the things he drew up were entirely different from what he drew just awhile ago.

Originally, the Asura Road Master's writings had contained a deep and profound buddha-killing intent, swift and fierce, aggressive beyond belief.

But now, the things the Asura Road Master drew up were soft and restrained, but also contained the Great Dao of the world. They were things that were hard to feel, that were elusive to the mind.

Without a doubt, the depth of the Laws that the Asura Road Master drew this time were on a higher level than those he drew just then!

Lin Ming gazed upon these Law runes. Although he didn't immediately understand them, he could feel that these runes were all incomplete!

Incomplete rune after incomplete rune was drawn up by the Asura Road Master.

As if he were waiting for someone to fill them, make them whole again.

"Could this be… my test question?"

Lin Ming suddenly understood. The Asura Road Master was waiting for him to complete these runes. If he could accomplish this, that was the same as passing the test.

Perhaps this was also the final topic.

Lin Ming wasn't in a hurry to complete these runes. He sat down where he was and entered the fused martial intent state, meditating.

He completely entered the ethereal state. After several hours of meditation, his soul force had slowly restored to its peak.

Then, Lin Ming finally opened his eyes and began to perceive these runes.

In front of Lin Ming hung a total of 33 runes, just enough to represent the Laws of the 33 Heavens.

Slowly, Lin Ming forgot the passage of time, forgot himself, forgot all else. He completely sunk his mind into these mysterious Law runes.

Within each rune seemed to be a phantom of the Asura Road Master. Lin Ming could faintly feel that these phantoms were incarnations left behind by the Asura Road Master in the past.

And these runes contained the complete summarized understandings of the Asura Road Master's knowledge of the Asura Heavenly Dao.

Chapter 1967 - Completing the Laws

Chapter 1967 – Completing the Laws

…

…

…

Every rune that the Asura Road Master drew up was only missing a very small part. Even so, making up this tiny part was as difficult as ascending to heaven.

As Lin Ming was intoxicated in his enlightened state, the Asura Road Master slowly stepped back.

He gently waved his hand and an energy enchantment fell over the world. This enchantment changed the flow of time.

The Asura Road Master's understandings of the Time Laws had reached an incomprehensible degree. When he changed the flow of time he could even avoid the distortion of Laws that occurred in the enchantment, allowing Lin Ming to perceive the Laws as he practiced his cultivation method.

Tragic Death Valley had been such a situation. The flow of time within Tragic Death Valley had been at a 10:1 ratio compared to the outside world.

Currently, this time enchantment sped up time to an even more incredible degree, achieving a ratio of 30:1. Three days outside represented three months within the time enchantment.

This was a time extension given to Lin Ming by the Asura Road Master. In order to make up the missing parts of these runes, that was something that required more than a few days and nights. But, the final trial actually had a time limit, and once that time limit was reached, everyone within would be transmitted outside.

As Lin Ming was diligently perceiving the Laws, within the space of the final trial, other people were slowly passing the Gate of Laws.

The Gate of Laws was the tunnel that connected the second level to the third level. After the Gate of Laws was the third level, and the third level had no dangers, only rewards.

If some people didn't have full faith they could overcome the fourth level then they could withdraw to the third level until the final trial was over.

More and more people arrived at the third level. The first martial artists that appeared were those who had chosen the mortal step difficulty. Afterwards, more and more trial challengers appeared.

They gathered at the end of the Gate of Laws, discussing their harvests and experiences during their trials.

Many of them beamed with joy. With so many juniors gathered together, it was natural for them to begin comparing who was better and worse.

And as all of these people were discussing, the heaven step level Gate of Laws began to tremble.

All of the martial artists looked over. As they saw the heaven-step Gate of Laws begin vibrating, their eyes started to shine with awe.

They faintly guessed just what was occurring.

Ka ka ka!

As the Gate of Laws opened, a woman rushed out.

She seemed a bit distressed, her clothes were torn in many areas and there was even a trail of blood flowing from the corners of her lips.

This person was the gray-clothed woman from Soaring Feather God Mountain. She had succeeded in passing the heaven-step Gate of Laws!

This was the same difficulty that Sheng Mei had chosen in the past. Although it was impossible for the gray-clothed woman to perfectly pass it, she could be more than proud of her current accomplishments.

Then, the heaven-step Gate of Laws began to shake once more!

Another figure rushed out from the Gate of Laws. This time, it was the fat elder senior-apprentice brother from the Good Fortune Saint Palace.

There were many marks on his body and his face was a bit purple. Even so, the fat man's face was shining with a smile and his mood was excellent.

"Elder Senior-apprentice Brother came out!"

Seeing the fat man come out, the Good Fortune Saint Palace's disciples hurriedly stepped forwards. "How much did Senior-apprentice Brother complete?"

Seeing the fat man's good mood, some people quickly asked.

"Not much, just around 80%."

The fat man casually said. But, as these words fell into the ears of others, this left them dumbfounded.

An 80% completion rate of the heaven-step difficulty; this result left everyone feeling flabbergasted.

In the world of martial artists, power was worshipped above all. This fat man might not be pleasing to look at or listen to, but he came from the Good Fortune Saint Palace and his strength was extraordinary, naturally powerful.

The fat man chuckled. In this final trial, he could be called the leading player.

He looked at the gray-clothed woman standing not too far away. She frowned. Her result was somewhat worse than the fat man's.

And, the results of her subordinates were faintly inferior to the other disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace.

There simply wasn't anything that could be done about this. Soaring Feather God Mountain was a hidden sect and couldn't compare to the Good Fortune Saint Palace that held absolute control over all resources of the saints.

"Let's begin and choose our rewards!"

The fat man said with high spirits. The third level of the final trial was completely covered with immortal palaces. Every immortal palace held treasures and the trial challengers could enter them according to the total completion percentage they had obtained so far.

The moment he chose his reward, the fat man had a strange tingling feeling at the back of his mind. He turned around at looked at the blood red gate on the right side of the Asura level gate; the one that was smallest.

This spatial gate emitted fluctuations of energy that shook the heart, as if something earth-shaking was occurring within.

If one had to forcefully describe this new fifth Gate of Laws that had appeared, then calling it the Gate of Hell would be the most appropriate.

After Asura was Hell. For some unknown reason, the fat man was a bit uneasy as he stared at this spatial gate…

……

Time passed, day after day.

Within the Gate of Laws, Lin Ming continued to feel out the runes that the Asura Road Master had left behind.

After three months, Lin Ming still hadn't attempted filling in these 33 runes.

He had drawn countless deductions in the air, but all of them had dissipated in failure.

These deductions consumed a tremendous amount of mental strength. Even though Lin Ming's soul force had been tempered for such a long time, he still had to regularly stop and meditate to restore himself.

A fourth month, fifth month, soon, half a year passed. From deep in his trance, Lin Ming's eyes suddenly popped open. His two pupils gleamed like bright stars.

He lifted his hand and finally drew in a key part on the first rune. And after he drew this, he felt the entire rune come to life, slowly starting to change. It turned into a burning flame. This flame began to beat with an unusual tempo; this was the fire of the universe's most source Great Dao.

Although it wasn't too blazing, every flame that Lin Ming had ever experienced in his life, whether it was fires of the forests, fires beneath the earth, fires of the sun, the fires of jealousy or the fires of hate, every fire had their shadow within this beating flame.

Lin Ming pondered for a moment and then drew another stroke.

As this stroke went down, the feeling of the rune changed again. In this rune, Lin Ming could see flashing thunder.

This was a vast sea covered with dark skies, with violent winds rising from all over. A terrifying sword of thunder cut through the skies like the spear of a divine god, destroying all things in its way.

The thunder changed without end. From time to time it was brutal, from time to time it was quick. Lin Ming even saw Thunder Souls and Thunder Sources amongst them, the most essential force of the power of thunder.

Even the different types of thunder that he absorbed with the Heretical God Tree began to flash before him.

As if struck with inspiration, Lin Ming drew a third stroke…

With this stroke, thunder and flame seemed to fuse as one.

This was the core of Lin Ming's Heretical God Force – the fusion of thunder and flame.

When Lin Ming first stepped on the road of martial arts, he had relied on Thunderfire Annihilation to recklessly sweep his way through the South Horizon Region.

Now, Lin Ming had become aware of the highest Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, opening up his own road of martial arts. He smoothed out and paved the Laws he comprehended.

Lin Ming fell quiet. Then, he added several more strokes to this rune, making it even more perfect.

Next, Lin Ming turned to a second rune.

This time he didn't take too long. After a mere hour, he moved.

His fingertip was filled with the power of divinity from the 33 Heavens. He drew out a trace of blue.

As this line appeared the surrounding space twisted up. Light was swallowed, vanishing without a trace.

This simple stroke had caused a mutation in the Space Laws. He continued without stopping. With a turn of his pen, he drew out another stroke. This stroke was purple and gave off an extremely strange feeling, as if it weren't a marking but the endless vicissitudes of time itself…

These two markings were respectively the manifestations of space and time. Lin Ming drew all his comprehensions of space and time into this rune.

Lin Ming's pen didn't stop there. He drew line after line, causing space and time to be muddled and distorted, making it impossible to distinguish its size, making it impossible to distinguish whether it came from the past or future.

Within Lin Ming's writing time and space also fused as one.

In truth, the Asura Road Master's incomplete runes had no singular answer. As long as Lin Ming could fuse the Laws he learned into the 33 Heavens Asura Laws and complete the runes, then he would pass.

Lin Ming started to draw upon the third rune.

This time, countless starlight seemed to fall with the stroke of his pen. Every movement seemed to depict a star.

These stars became more and more realistic. As they floated in the void, seven were bright and two were dark. Faintly, Dao Palaces lay atop these stars. These were the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace that Lin Ming had comprehended.

In the past, the Asura Road Master's 33 incarnations had comprehended the Great Daos of the 33 Heavens. The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was one of these.

Lin Ming's understandings of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace were fused into the Asura rune.

Stroke after stroke, Lin Ming tirelessly and diligently drew. Every drawing Lin Ming made resonated with the Laws around him.

As his inner world sympathetically resonated with the surrounding Laws, it was also baptized!

The Great Dao was boundless and the Laws were infinite.

Lin Ming's inner world compressed once more, and this compression was even more thorough than before. His inner world was now only a thousand miles. Compared to the 3000 miles it was when he first entered the Gate of Laws, it was three times smaller!

Even the gaps that had been left over in Lin Ming's self-created world began to be eliminated during this compression!

Lin Ming's condition became increasingly vivid. The pen he wielded seemed to fly as the power of divinity wildly gushed out. His mental strength also entered an impassioned state.

He even fused in the awareness he had gained after reincarnating several times, the enlightenment of the samsara of life and death, of the changes and emotions of mortals. All of these things were fused into the runes.

The Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra were originally top cultivation methods that lay at the peak of martial arts. In so many billions of years, Lin Ming was the only one able to achieve such high attainments in both cultivation methods. Even so, it was extremely difficult for him to fuse them together!

But today, after Lin Ming entered this utterly entranced state, he had forcefully added the charm of the Concepts of Life and Death into these Asura Heavenly Dao runes!

Under these actions, the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra began to subtly unify, becoming increasingly close.

Rune after rune was completed. Yet Lin Ming didn't complete the runes in order but was wildly drawing where his instinct brought him, as if he were drawing some splendid yet incomprehensible work of art.

Suddenly, Lin Ming felt that the Laws he wrote down had neared perfection. In the final moment, his beautiful writings swerved like dragons and snakes, completing the final stroke.

In that instant Lin Ming fell to his knees in exhaustion. But in front of him, the aura of the Heavenly Dao that had been suppressed for so long suddenly shot into the skies like a pillar of divine light!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Thunder flashed and flames billowed. The void shook.

The 33 Asura Heavenly Dao runes that dangled in the air began shining together, their divine light pouring into the world as if a spiritual god was being born. The world filled with the most mystical brilliance of the Great Dao…

Lin Ming had finally completed all 33 Asura runes!

Shua!

The time enchantment opened. The Asura Road Master looked at the utterly exhausted Lin Ming and also the 33 Asura runes that shimmered in front of him. A look of praise filled his eyes.

The Law runes that Lin Ming filled in might not be perfect, but to the Asura Road Master, his work had completely surpassed the limitations of a World King level martial artist.

Even a True Divinity might not be able to accomplish this!

This wasn't because Lin Ming's strength had reached the level of a True Divinity, but because during his last several reincarnations his understands of the Laws had reached an unbelievable degree. In addition to all the lucky chances he had ever obtained working in tandem with him, he had been able to complete all of this!

Chapter 1968 - Entering the Immortal Palace Once More

Chapter 1968 – Entering the Immortal Palace Once More

…

…

…

The time enchantment had already disappeared. Lin Ming looked at the 33 Asura Heavenly Dao runes that floated in the air. The inherent true meaning of the runes was something Lin Ming had yet to completely understand.

"This is for you."

At this time, an illusionary voice echoed in Lin Ming's mind. He turned to see the one speaking; it was the Asura Road Master.

He spoke using the ancient common language of the 33 Heavens. The ancient words were directly thrust into Lin Ming's spiritual sea through spiritual strength.

This was the first time Lin Ming had heard the Asura Road Master send a message.

Before this, the Asura Road Master had only looked at Lin Ming or smiled at him with appreciation.

As the Asura Rod Master spoke, the 33 runes dissipated into 33 wisps of golden light that sank into Lin Ming's body.

These runes locked themselves into Lin Ming's flesh and blood, becoming a part of his body.

The 33 Asura runes possessed a strength in themselves. As they fused into Lin Ming's flesh and blood, he could feel them forming a strange connection with each other. His bodily strength was directly increased and his understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao became far more profound.

"Thank you for the guidance Senior!"

Lin Ming was happily surprised. And as he spoke, he saw the Asura Road Master turn to leave.

"Senior, could you wait a moment?"

Lin Ming had many things he wanted to speak to the Asura Road Master about. For instance, questions about the Dark Abyss, whether or not the Asura Road Master himself and the creator of the Holy Scripture were alive or dead, or the truth about the great war of the ancient races 10 billion years ago, or why the primal god race had to suffer such a pitiful fate…

The 33 Heavens and the Asura Road Master shared a deep karma together. Now, with the 33 Heavens undergoing a great calamity, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and the Soul Emperor were both hatching their own plots, hoping to subvert the world with their ambitions of swallowing up the 33 Heavens.

With chaos and clouds rising from all directions, if the Asura Road Master were truly still alive, would he just sit idly by and do nothing?

As Lin Ming shouted out, the Asura Road Master didn't stop.

His figure gradually faded away. At the same time, ancient words echoed into Lin Ming's mind once more. "In truth, you saying anything to me is meaningless… the future is not something given to you, but something that you struggle for yourself. Behind the backs of enemies you defeat lies your own road of growth. The peak of martial arts has never been something that you can reach by piling up resources or accumulating your background. Rather, it is something you slaughter towards even as you slowly explore your way towards it. When the vast cosmos of the 33 Heavens surges with chaos, that is a time when heroes pour forth from the ranks of creation. A calamity to end the world may be a graveyard for the weak, but it will also set the stage for the strong…

“I am only a guardian here, a wisp of divine sense left behind by my true self. As for your reward, it is kept for you in the immortal palace. Take it yourself!”

As the Asura Road Master spoke, his figure had already vanished.

For a time, Lin Ming was the only person left over in the endless white world.

“To struggle myself, find the road of growth behind the backs of my enemies…

“A world-ending calamity is the graveyard of the weak but also the stage of the strong…”

Lin Ming slowly mulled over the Asura Road Master’s words. The Soul Emperor had once spoken similar words to him, and although the Soul Emperor was his enemy, his words weren’t wrong either.

Shua –

Then, the deep white space tore apart and a spinning spatial gate emerged from thin air.

This was the exit.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and stepped towards his future…

……

At this time, in the third level of the Asura Road’s final trial, a group of martial artists that weren’t able to enter the fourth level had gathered here. Some of them were meditating and some of them were perceiving the Laws. But, there were also many people that were bored out of their minds and were fumbling about, randomly boasting to each other.

“Do you all think that after the saints deal with the humans, they will then move against the spiritas?”

“There’s a chance! The limelight of the saints is too bright right now, especially since they swallowed up humanity and have recklessly plundered their resources. They are naturally strong to begin with, otherwise how could the Good Fortune Saint Palace have developed so quickly in these last several thousand years? I think that the saints have already surpassed the spiritas.”

“You’re not wrong. The spiritas have been silent for far too long. But when you look at the saints, not only do they have the Good Fortune Saint Palace shocking the stage, but they even have innumerable geniuses beneath them. That fat man from the Good Fortune Saint Palace might not be able to achieve 80%, but he might be able to reach 78-79%. As for that gray-clothed woman, at most she’ll be a tiny bit lower!”

As everyone was gossiping, at this time the space around them began to violently shake.

“Mm? What’s happening!?”

Someone cried out in alarm. All those that were sitting in meditation immediately woke up. They leapt up from the ground, all of them raising their guards!

They began to panic. Originally, they had heard that the third level was safe, but who knew if some accident could occur?

As everyone was at a loss, they could see that at the exit from the Gate of Laws, the right-most Gate of Hell was beginning to rapidly revolve.

A wild and fierce energy gushed out from the Gate of Hell!

This Gate of Hell already emitted a terrifying aura, making it impossible to look at. Otherwise one’s spiritual sea would suffer great damage and they might even lose their soul.

And at this time, the Gate of Hell’s changes caused the martial artists present to feel a tremendous pressure. Many of them started to drip with a cold sweat.

Woosh!

A divine beam of light shot out from the Gate of Hell, breaking towards the horizon!

In the skies above the third level, countless immortal palaces floated in the air. These immortal palaces were of different sizes. According to the completion that a trial challenger had btained so far, they could enter different immortal palaces.

And at this time, the divine light that shot out from the Gate of Hell rushed towards the largest immortal palace. This immortal palace was the size of a small planet and was extremely far from the ground.

Many martial artists were stunned. What was going on here? The Gate of Hell had changed, shooting out an arc of divine light towards that planet-sized immortal palace.

Looking carefully, this beam of divine light seemed to become a tunnel of light. This tunnel lasted for an incense stick of time. Then… it slowly vanished.

As this divine light vanished, the area it originated from – the Gate of Hell, also quieted down.

The spatial gate began to slow down, shrinking in size until it contracted into a sphere of light that collapsed into nothingness.

As for the other four spatial gates beside that Gate of Hell, they continued to slowly spin.

As if that spatial gate had never existed to begin with and it had all been an illusion.

“Just… what was that just now…”

Many martial artists looked at each other in dismay, not sure what had occurred.

“A tunnel of light shot out from the Gate of Hell towards that planet-sized immortal palace…”

Some people muttered. This situation inevitably caused them to speculate. But, because these speculations were too ridiculous and simply impossible, they couldn’t help but say, “It shouldn’t be that… someone emerged from the Gate of Hell and entered that immortal palace along the path of light?”

“That’s impossible!” Someone immediately denied.

“Let alone the Gate of Hell that just appeared, even passing the Asura level gate is as difficult as ascending to heaven! Just several thousand years ago, even that monstrous freak Lin Ming was likely bloodied from head to toe when he passed the Asura level gate.”

“Moreover, Lin Ming is already dead. Although we can be called geniuses, reality is reality. Compared to that monstrous freak, not to mention us, even the fat man from the Good Fortune Saint Palace is unqualified to match up with him… amongst us, how could someone just casually appear that could pass through that Gate of Hell…”

“Mm, it shouldn’t be that someone passed through the Gate of Hell. I think that there were some mutations in the final Gate of Law that we cannot understand. That might have been the Gate of Laws trying to send some treasure to that immortal palace!”

As everyone began wildly theorizing, they dismissed the previous ridiculous idea they had.

And at this time, Lin Ming had already arrived at the immortal palace.

He had come to this planet-sized immortal palace before. He could see the same blue stone road ascending to the horizon.

Lin Ming began walking up.

Previously, Lin Ming had enlightened himself on the power of the Great Dao that was left behind in the blue stone road. This time, he walked up even faster. He used a mere quarter hour to arrive at the end of the blue stone road.

Here, in front of him, was a completely dark space.

The last time Lin Ming was here, he had obtained the Asura blood from that dark space.

But what would be here this time? Lin Ming took several deep breaths and lifted his foot, stepping into that separate space...

Chapter 1969 - World Seed

Chapter 1969 – World Seed

…

…

…

This separate space was something Lin Ming was already familiar with. It was filled with a faint mist.

The mist wasn't ordinary; it consisted of the three great source energies of the universe – grandmist energy, genesis energy, and spirit source.

Just a single wisp was incredibly valuable. Even this immortal palace didn't hold too much of it.

But at this time, these three great source energies wasn't the noticeable treasure within the void. Within these twining energies, a crystal was quietly suspended in the air.

This crystal emitted a dark black light as if it were a black hole. Any light that flowed towards the crystal was drawn towards it, and even the three great source energies began to slowly merge towards it.

As if it was the source of all Laws in the universe.

Lin Ming cautiously stretched out his divine sense towards this crystal. To his amazement, even his sense was absorbed by it.

He quickly drew back his sense. But after a brief probe, Lin Ming was able to grasp the strange aura around the crystal.

This sort of aura was actually somewhat similar to the Magic Cube's!

But compared to the Magic Cube, the aura of this crystal was far, far weaker.

"Just what is this...?"

Lin Ming was at a loss for what to do. But at this time, the ancient voice echoed within his spiritual sea once more.

"What lies before you is the condensed source energies of the universe. At a certain day, at a certain time, let it absorb the scattered world power from a shattered world. It will slowly store power, and when it reaches a critical point, it will completely explode. All of the matter, energy, and Heavenly Dao Laws stored within will spill out, slowly evolving into a new universe. This is the big bang of a universe.

"Devour the old world and allow it to perish, giving birth to a new world. This is the future evolution of this crystal – you can call it a world seed!"

As the Asura Road Master's voice echoed out, his heart shook. World seed!

This mysterious crystal could evolve into its own world!

Lin Ming faintly recalled that in the past, there were people who speculated that the three divine tools, the Magic Cube, Grandmist Spirit Bead, and Purple Card, were all world seeds.

If the three of them could evolve into true worlds, they could turn the universes of the 33 Heavens into 36 Heavens!

If so, then it wasn't strange for this world seed in Lin Ming's hand to have an aura similar to that of the Magic Cube.

It was only that the black crystal's aura was much weaker than the Magic Cube's.

If the Magic Cube was able to evolve into a massive universe the size of one of the 33 Heavens, then this black crystal could only evolve into a sub-universe, such as one of the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds.

But even this sub-universe was amazing enough. Out of the Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds, each one contained countless planets and stars. Even if an Empyrean level powerhouse were to spend the entirety of their life exploring such a sub-universe, they would never be able to explore every area.

"The reward for this Gate of Laws is actually a world seed. It seems that Senior Asura has already seen my road of martial arts..."

Lin Ming touched his own stomach. This was where his own self-created universe was biding.

During his last several reincarnations, his inner universe had grown stronger and larger. And after being compressed by the Laws, this inner universe would surely develop into a terrifying world in the future!

If Lin Ming could reach the boundary of the Asura Road Master or the Holy Scripture creator, then this universe would turn into a world on par with the Asura Road or the Akashic Dream Universe!

And if Lin Ming could surpass the boundary of those two existences, then this universe would become even more unimaginable!

But in order for Lin Ming's universe to develop to that level it required a tremendous period of time as well as a massive amount of world power!

To breed a universe, it would take billions of years as the base numeral.

If Lin Ming had to rely only on himself to absorb world power, then his speed would be extremely slow. Moreover, the world power that Lin Ming absorbed would be impure, far inferior to this world seed in front of him.

"Senior Asura saw that I was breeding a world within me and thus he gave me a world seed. If I were to place this world seed in my own inner universe, then cultivating my inner universe would be twice as fast with half the effort!"

Thinking of this, Lin Ming was overjoyed, as well as grateful towards the Asura Road Master.

For him, this was an impossibly good reward!

Lin Ming brought his hands together. Beneath the movement of his fingers, flows of energy and Asura Law runes fluttered about, wrapping around this world seed.

The Asura Laws pulled the world seed into Lin Ming's inner universe.

When this world seed completely sank into Lin Ming's body, he suddenly felt his inner universe begin to form a vortex of matter, energy, and Laws.

Originally, if Lin Ming wanted to absorb world power he had to sit down and meditate, breathing in and out the strength around him. He would choose the core of a large planet and meditate within where the world power was the richest and purest.

But now, Lin Ming seemed to have gained a black hole within his body. The world seed spontaneously absorbed world power from his surroundings; there was no need for Lin Ming to control it.

However, this world power not only flowed into Lin Ming's inner universe. A greater portion of it was directly sucked into the world seed.

Even a part of strength that was originally Lin Ming's own world power was swallowed up by this world seed.

Seeing this, Lin Ming hesitated for a moment.

This world seed was in truth an extremely dangerous item. It could be called a growing black hole. It would absorb a massive amount of world power in order to prepare for the big bang explosion of a universe.

If he couldn't control it well enough then his own inner universe would be swallowed by it.

"I must refine it before it grows up and have it serve me completely. Finally, I should fuse it into my own inner world and turn it into a part of my body."

Lin Ming thought, forming a clear direction in his mind. However, wanting to refine this world seed wasn't simple at all. It would require a great amount of time and energy and would take at least several hundred years…

"It's time to go to the next level."

As Lin Ming thought this, he stepped out of the planet-sized immortal palace.

The back exit of every immortal palace in the third level corresponded to the entrance to the fourth level.

At the fourth level, the dangers would rise to a whole new degree.

Of course, to Lin Ming, this wasn't a problem at all.

Space and time turned upside down. The planet-sized immortal palace vanished and Lin Ming found himself floating above a vast wilderness.

Taking a broad view of everything, it was all gloomy lands and exposed rocks.

The thin and sparse grass covered the land like cracked skin, making this world seem bleak and desolate.

The moment Lin Ming stepped onto this wilderness, he felt a suppression from the Laws. His inner world was imprisoned and his cultivation was pushed down.

Lin Ming ruefully smiled at this.

In the past when he came out to adventure, he had done so with the status of a junior, and was even considered young amongst all juniors.

As for smelting trials, they often compared talent but not absolute strength. Thus, a suppression that came from skeletal age was relatively common amongst them. But to Lin Ming, the suppression that came from these Laws was advantageous to him instead. Many opponents that were more powerful than he was were forced onto an even ground, and on even terms, even Soul Empress Sheng Mei was inferior to Lin Ming.

But now that several millennia had passed, Lin Ming had actually become a senior instead, and now he was the one being suppressed by the Laws.

Lin Ming slowly walked into the wilderness, looking for the entrance to the fifth level.

As long as he passed the fifth level then there would be the mysterious sixth level. And to open that, he needed the three emperor jades of fate.

Lin Ming had already collected all three!

This was also the ultimate goal, the reason he came to the Asura Road's final trial!

……….

As Lin Ming was exploring the fourth level, in an area thousands of miles away, a group of saint race disciples in uniform outfits were carefully searching a swamp.

These saint race disciples were from the Good Fortune Saint Palace.

This swamp was extremely muddy and thick. In the past, it might have been the core of a lush and vibrant forest. But after 10 billion years the forest had long since vanished, leaving behind nothing but thick mud. This decaying mud was already as deep as a sea and also exuded bubbles of rancid poisonous gas.

These poisonous gases were formed when variation plant species or powerful poisonous spirit insects or beasts died. If a Divine Sea martial artist were to take a single breath of this then they would die a violent and gruesome death.

“Is it really here?” A Good Fortune Saint Palace disciple frowned. Even though a martial artist was capable of adapting to their environment, it was still incredibly difficult to withstand such an atmosphere for several days on end. Every day they would have to battle with the tarry mud and poisonous insects, and also guard against the toxic bugs and sneak attacks from snakes that appeared from time to time. The excessive mental tension easily left one in an exhausted state.

And even after searching for so many days, they still hadn’t found what they wanted. This made them all wonder: could something on the level of what they wanted to find actually be buried in such a disgusting swamp?

“Shut up! Do you want to die!?”

The fat man said. His normally lazy and half-closed eyes suddenly burst open with a terrifying light!

This disciple who spoke fell silent. He followed behind the fat man, holding a small red ball in his hand as he continued his search.

This small red ball was the searching tool that the Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples used.

Upon closer inspection, one would see that this small red ball was alive. It wriggled around, a mass of flesh and blood!

Everyone here was well aware that this mission was the main and most important reason they were at this final trial!

Once they completed it and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign rewarded them, all of them would prosper and rise. Moreover, they would even obtain a special reward. This ‘special reward’ was something they longed for even in their dreams.

But if they failed, the consequences would be unthinkable. These disciples were not ordinary saint race martial artists; they had a great and horrifying secret in their bodies.

This was a special measure they had also taken in order to increase their strength as much as possible, but it was also because of this that there was a ‘hidden danger’ within them.

If the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn’t help and this ‘hidden danger’ were to erupt, then they would live lives worse than death.

Thus, all of them had already burned away all paths of retreat. They would either succeed or they would die doing so.

Chapter 1970 - The Secret Treasure in the Swamp

Chapter 1970 – The Secret Treasure in the Swamp

…

…

…

This blackwater swamp was extremely broad, thousands of miles in diameter. The disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace had searched for six or seven days on end, but they had only managed to search 60% of it.

By this time, many trial challengers had gathered at the entrance towards the fifth level. They had passed the fourth level's test and were waiting for the entrance to the fifth level to open.

This situation left the Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples somewhat worried. They didn't have much time remaining. If they weren't able to smoothly fulfill their mission then their fates would be miserable indeed.

This wasn't a punishment that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had deliberately passed down to them. In a sense, this was a path they had chosen on their own. In order to obtain great power, they had to take an equally dangerous risk.

"Continue searching. We still have three days. Once the fifth level opens, no one is allowed to stay on the fourth level. You can either return to the third level or enter the fifth level… in other words, we have to find that thing before then."

The fat man gloomily said. Everyone's expressions became earnest.

The truth was that they were afraid they had missed something in the 60% of the land they had just searched. If they did that, then the consequences would be unimaginable.

Time passed. Every now and then, trial challengers would pass close by and see that the disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace were searching the swamp, and guessed that they were seeking out some sort of peerless treasure. But because the Good Fortune Saint Palace was too strong, they didn’t dare to have any wild ambitions and left beneath the threat of the fat man and the others.

Nightfall. The disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace tirelessly worked away.

The dark swamp was filled with perils. They had killed dozens and hundreds of poisonous insects and snakes without stopping.

And as the sun dawned, one of the disciples suddenly felt their arm stiffen. Within his palm the red ball of meat was gently trembling.

“Elder… Elder Senior-apprentice Brother!”

The disciple cried out.

“What is it?!”

The fat man’s mind had been incredibly taut these past several days. When someone called out to him, he reflexively turned his head.

As for his beady eyes, they didn’t look towards the man’s face but towards his hand, where the red meat ball was wriggling about, faintly distorting.

“Quick! Search over there!”

The fat man hurriedly instructed. Immediately, all of the Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples that were spread out within 10 miles began arriving at this area.

The truth was that the balls of meat in their hands were the flesh and blood of Famine!

The thing they searched for was buried deep in the earth, and its Laws were extremely high. With their strength they were unable to sense it at all. This was the reason this thing had been buried in the fourth level of the final trial for such a long time and yet no one had obtained it before.

But by using Famine’s flesh and blood, they could form a connection to this thing. By relying on this connection, they could locate the final position of this thing.

“It’s close! Yes, it must be that thing!”

The fat man’s breathing quickened, his entire mental state extremely tight. If he could bring back this thing then his future path would be unimaginable!

At this time, the Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples felt the flesh and blood of Famine in their hands become increasingly soft and viscous. From a solid state, it dissolved into bloody water.

“It turned watery…”

One disciple muttered. The flesh and blood of Famine in his hand completely melted away, streaming down from between the seams of his fingers and down into the black swamp.

Then, something amazing occurred.

The melted flesh turned into little red meat worms that gradually sank into the swampy ground and drilled deep into it.

“Start digging!”

The fat man decisively said.

“This…” Someone hesitated as they heard the fat man’s order. “When a rare treasure is born it will definitely send out a terrifying aura. At that time, many trial challengers will be drawn.”

Hearing the junior-apprentice brother's words, the fat man diabolically grinned. "If they come then they come. It won't be easy to dig this thing out. It has a demonic nature and there needs to be a blood sacrifice..."

As the fat man spoke, a faint killing intent exuded from him. Even the disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace felt their hearts quaking.

If this were normal times, then no matter how strong the disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace were, they wouldn't be able to use their 20 some numbers to defend against the onslaught of all the other trial challengers.

Unless, they were to use a forbidden power...

However, they didn't want to use this power. "When a rare treasure is born it needs a blood sacrifice? Is this accurate news that Senior-apprentice Brother obtained?"

"It is what the God Sovereign has speculated; it shouldn't be wrong. Alright, enough with the chatter, let's start digging!"

This swamp was formed from mud. To the martial artists here, wanting to dig into it was as simple as cutting into tofu.

The black-clothed martial artists thrust out their weapons, stabbing a pit hundreds and thousands of feet deep. However, they weren't digging long before they discovered that the ground resistance began to increase.

This change left the fat man disgruntled yet overjoyed. He knew that they were digging closer and closer to the rare treasure!

....

"I have to say... are you planning to enter the fifth level?"

In a corner of the fourth level, several trial challengers were rummaging through a pile of junk-like scraps of magic tools that they had unearthed from an ancient ruin.

However, as time passed they bitterly found out that these magic tool fragments weren't left behind from the era of the Asura Road Master. At most, these fragments were around a hundred million years old. In other words, a hundred million years ago, there were some trial challengers that entered the final trial and experienced dangers that caused them to all perish here.

This left everyone frustrated. They had spent so much effort in finding these things but they had turned out to be garbage.

They had spent a great deal of time in the fourth level and had overcome many dangers, but the harvests they obtained were very few. They could only blame their bad luck and poor destinies.

As for the even more dangerous fifth level, they couldn't help but mull over whether or not they actually had the ability to enter that area.

As they were stuck in this dilemma, they felt a horrifying aura, one that rushed over them like an overwhelming tide.

As they were covered by this aura, they immediately felt as if they had fallen into hell. A dreadful killing intent covered them, causing them to drip with cold sweat and nearly vomit blood.

They turned their heads and saw that in the far off horizon, an astonishing scene was occurring!

A mass of terrifying black aura hurtled into the skies, forming a massive ghostly phantom head!

This phantom head was incomparably ferocious. It transformed again and again in the skies, seeming to swallow up everyone!

And this terrifying aura was undoubtedly from that ghostly phantom!

“Heavens! What is that!?”

“Was some supreme treasure born?”

“Supreme treasure?” Everyone glanced at each other. If such a rare treasure were born and it also possessed such a strong demonic strength…

If they were to recklessly rush over then they might experience some great danger.

But with the opportunity placed in front of them, they weren’t willing to give up without a struggle!

“Look! Some people are headed over!”

Several people looked up to see black spots moving in the skies, hurtling towards that ghost head phantom at an extremely fast speed!

With others flying over, although the competition would become even more difficult, it also gave a sense of security.

People believed that if so many went over, with so many other people there the chances of them dying wouldn’t be high… right?

“Let’s go take a look!”

With this, everyone launched their movement techniques and hurtled towards the location at full speed.

And not too far away, Lin Ming also saw all this occur. He frowned. This aura… somehow, for some unknown reason that he couldn’t place a finger on, felt somewhat familiar.

He thought for a moment. Then, he slowly closed his eyes and opened them again. When he did, a strange sight occurred.

Lin Ming's pupils had changed. His pupils had become like a small needle, and around this small needle were many strange patterns.

These patterns stretched out, emitting a sense of mystery.

For a time, beneath Lin Ming's eyes, all the Laws in the surrounding space were unable to hide from him.

This arcane skill was Three Lives Old Man's Three Lives Pupils!

In the past when the Divine Realm was invaded by the saints, humanity was in peril. Three Lives Old Man had decided to end his life in a fleeting moment of glory. But before he left, he had used some time to pass on the Three Lives Pupils technique to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming had originally opened the Daevic Eye Dao Palace. When combined with the Three Lives Pupils, both abilities complemented each other!

And beneath the gaze of the Three Lives Pupils, what Lin Ming saw was completely different. He saw a monstrous flame seething into the skies, burning pitch black. And in this black flame one could faintly see countless pained souls caged within. There were also the skeletons of kings, floating amidst it…

"This is…"

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath, his heart shaking!

Chapter 1971 - Demon Phenomenon

Chapter 1971 – Demon Phenomenon

…

…

…

Originally, Lin Ming believed that the so-called geniuses who entered this final trial were nothing but a bunch of rabble. Compared to Sheng Mei and Xiao Moxian from the past they were far worse. Thus, Lin Ming hadn't cared much about them or paid much attention to them. He thought that whether in the Gate of Laws or the fourth level, they wouldn't be able to cause any chaos.

The Gate of Laws had confirmed this point. Amongst all of the people here, the most formidable was the fat man from the Good Fortune Saint Palace, but not even he was able to perfectly pass the heaven-step difficulty.

But Lin Ming never would have thought that these people had unexpectedly managed to stir up such a strange scene in the fourth level. This wasn't something ordinary, but a truly terrifying existence.

It was either a supreme world treasure, or the birth or a super demon!

Regardless of which it was, Lin Ming was interested either way. Moreover, he also felt that this aura was familiar, so why wouldn't he go and take a look?

Lin Ming casually stepped forwards. Space twisted beneath his feet. Although his pace seemed slow and steady, he rapidly strode the thousands of miles towards the black swamp.

The black ghost head was far too large. All the trial challengers on the fourth level had noticed it. For a time, more and more people arrived.

……..

And at this time, just outside the space of the final trial in the immeasurably deep Asura Sea, Famine's avatar was immersed 100,000 feet underwater.

Within the deepest depths of the mass of flesh and blood, the Good Fortune Saint Son was sitting atop a giant chair covered with the skin of an ancient rhinoceros beast. He quietly gazed at a projection crystal in front of him.

This crystal showed the entrance to the final trial. No matter what magic tool it was, nothing could spy upon what was occurring within the final trial; that space was completely isolated from the outside Laws.

Although looking at the final trial's entrance was meaningless, the Good Fortune Saint Son's eyes didn't leave the crystal projection. He was someone that loved to drink fine wines, and even today he was holding onto a wine glass in his hand. But, he actually had no interest in drinking wine, after all, what was occurring within the final trial was of great importance to him. If any accidents were to happen, that would be catastrophic for him.

As the Good Fortune Saint Son found it hard to relax, the projection crystal suddenly shivered.

A blurry phantom appeared in the air above the projection crystal. Seeing this phantom, the Good Fortune Saint Son immediately straightened. He stood up and politely bowed.

"This child greets Your Majesty Sovereign Ancestor!"

The phantom who had appeared was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's voice was slow and haunting. He said, "I just felt my connection with those several pieces of Famine's flesh and blood suddenly disappear… that flesh and blood should have been swallowed."

The flesh and blood of Famine were the red balls of meat brought into the final trial by the fat man and the others in order to seek out the treasure they were searching for. Those lumps of flesh had melted away and drilled into the swamp where they were then swallowed. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had been able to instantly sense this.

If it wasn't for that flesh and blood having stemmed from Famine and shared a life link with it, then the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would have had no way to know anything about what was occurring in the final trial.

"This…" The Good Fortune Saint Son was shocked for a brief moment before turning ecstatic. "It seems they have found it!"

"That's right. Of course, it could be that the disciples sent out were killed and the flesh and blood of Famine was refined…"

"Haha, the chance of that happening is almost zero. In this round of the final trial, none of the trial challengers are capable of killing the 20 some disciples I sent out and even refining Famine. Famine's flesh and blood, even if just a tiny bit, would take even an Empyrean a long time to refine!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son was filled with confidence. As long as the location of that thing was found then obtaining it would be no problem at all!

And once they obtained it, the strength of the saints would be greatly enhanced!

And when that happened, he would also profit endlessly from it!

"I hope so…" The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's voice was dignified. "Nothing can go wrong!"

"Your Majesty Sovereign Ancestor, you can rest assured that the disciples who entered the final trial this time were all personally chosen by your child. Whether it is skeletal age, strength, or talent, they have all been thoroughly inspected by me. Amongst the younger generation of the Good Fortune Saint Palace, they are the most suitable talents capable of completing the mission! In addition, in order to guarantee success of the mission, I have transformed their bodies. Amongst their peers, they are invincible!

"Your child has personally handled every aspect of this mission. If there is any problem, then your child will personally sever his hands and feet and suffer any other punishment!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son's voice was decisive, disallowing any escape route.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign slowly nodded. His phantom gradually faded away.

The moment the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign completely disappeared, the Good Fortune Saint Son leapt up, excitement flashing in his eyes. He subconsciously gripped his fists together, as if the entire world could be captured in his palm.

He had his own ambitions. Once they found what they wanted, then the saints might even be able to defeat the spiritas and dominate the entire 33 Heavens!

At that time, he would be able to break into True Divinity and even reach extreme True Divinity, afterwards inheriting the position of Saint Sovereign of the saint race!

Famine's life was infinitely long. When the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was lying in bed, dying from old age, then Famine would surely be passed down to him. At that time, whether it was in the heavens above or earth below, he alone would reign supreme!

…….

Lin Ming used several breaths of time to cross thousands of miles, as smooth as if he were taking a stroll through a park.

He arrived in the skies above the blackwater swamp.

Here, Lin Ming could clearly see the disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace. They had actually dug out a great pit in the blackwater swamp.

And that terrifying aura had come from the pit.

Looking at these Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples, Lin Ming's eyebrows arched up. It seemed this mess really had been stirred up by these people.

Lin Ming easily hid himself away in a space distortion. With his strength, no one was able to discover him.

He wasn't worried. First, he wanted to take a look and see just what they were doing.

But at this time, more and more trial challengers were rushing here. They encircled the great pit, standing dozens of miles away and floating up and down in the void.

Everyone's eyes were tightly glued onto that pit. In their eyes there were hints of excitement, greed, and even fear…

"It's the disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace! That phenomenon really occurred because of them!"

"When I saw the position that of that phenomenon I already guessed it was them. Several days ago, I saw those people searching for something in that blackwater swamp, and now they are still searching! I think they already knew the swamp isn't ordinary!"

"That's right. I also saw them before. I thought it was strange. The space of the fourth level is so large and yet they all gathered in that small blackwater swamp, spending an entire seven or eight days searching without going anywhere else. It's obvious that they had already prepared all of this before coming here. But, that's puzzling. This final trial space is so mysterious, so how did they obtain that information? This is too suspicious!"

“No matter how they obtained that information, that treasure shouldn’t be able to be easily obtained by them. Perhaps there might be some ancient ruin in there with many treasures. If we are able to wrest it away then everyone will have a share!”

Of course, they all had to be careful. These sorts of ancient ruins usually held layers upon layers of dangers. A small mistake could cost them their lives.

“The disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace are stronger than us but we are greater in numbers. As long as we work together in this battle then it won’t be a problem to kill them all off.”

The one who spoke was a disciple from the inner Asura Road. Even if the news of them slaughtering people here was revealed, it was still worth the risk. Moreover, they didn’t fear the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. The Asura Road was a world that was existed independent from the 33 Heavens, and no matter how strong the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was he wouldn’t recklessly do anything to the Asura Road.

First, there was the deterrence of the Asura Road Master. The Asura Road contained the terrifying Asura Laws, and no one knew what sorts of ominous things would occur if anyone were to attack these lands.

Second, the native influences of the Asura Road were also formidable existences; they had at least two True Divinities! Moreover, in the deepest parts of the Asura Sea and the Great Desolate, there were said to be several True Divinity level vicious beasts hiding.

As everyone was waiting for a chance to make a move in their small groups, preparing for the upcoming battle to erupt, a loud roar suddenly exploded from the great pit!

This roar was incomparably terrifying, as if some dreadful demon had awakened from that pit!

Following this roar, a violent flow of energy wildly shot out into the skies, even annihilating the void!

A trial challenger that had been too close due to his greed and curiosity cried out in alarm as he was swept up by this power!

His body spun into the air with this energy flow. He emitted an ear-piercing scream, then, under the eyes of all present, his mortal body rapidly decomposed as his flesh and blood was absorbed by this energy flow and he turned into nothing but a skeleton.

Then even that skeleton shattered, turning into powder that soon vanished!

Like this, a genius from a great influence in the inner Asura Road had been turned to smoke and dust. This scene left a creepy feeling crawling up everyone's scalps.

What was that energy flow?

And at this time, the energy flow gushing out from that pit didn't dissipate in the void. Rather, it slowly gathered together into a giant black phantom!

This black phantom was a thousand feet tall. It was covered in scales the size of buckets and it was in a semi-upright state. Its two arms were strong and thick and its legs were like heaven-supporting pillars. Behind it, a large tail swung about, covered with bone spikes!

The phantom's eyes were blood red as it looked down on the world with disdain. Even though its gaze didn't fall on the martial artists present, they still felt their breath catch in their throats, as if their hearts would stop beating at any moment.

This phantom was…

Everyone panicked in awe and fear. And within a space distortion, as Lin Ming looked upon all this, even he found it hard to maintain his calm.

He took in a deep breath. A thoughtful look flashed in his eyes. He was finally aware of why he felt that the aura from the pit had been so familiar…

If he wasn't wrong, then this black phantom was in truth an abyssal demon!

The abyssals had extremely high level differences amongst them. The most powerful existences in their ranks were as strong as if not stronger than a True Divinity!

And this abyssal in front of him was such a type!

A crowd of juniors with cultivations between the Holy Lord realm and World King realm had somehow managed to rouse the phantom of a True Divinity level abyssal?

Lin Ming didn’t believe something like this could happen randomly.

Somewhere in the back of all this, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s shadow was lurking.

This was most likely a plan that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had devised!

Chapter 1972 - Demon Relic

Chapter 1972 – Demon Relic

…

…

…

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was a memory that Lin Ming would never forget. That person was the reason for the catastrophe of the human race.

Anything related to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, Lin Ming was glad to destroy.

And at this time, within a rumbling explosion, the demon phantom in the skies exploded!

It was like the energy field sealed underground had suddenly burst out, and because of its extreme instability it had directly dissipated.

As the energy flow recklessly scattered, it surged away like waves of black wind. All of the martial artists swerved to avoid it, lest they were blown over by this black wind and triggered something horrible.

All of this fell into Lin Ming's eyes. He even used his mental strength to drag a bit of this black wind into the space distortion he was hiding in.

Feeling this black wind, a flash of surprise lit up in Lin Ming's eyes.

This black wind was filled with a tremendous amount of death energy. Moreover, even though the remnant energy field in the black wind was filled with a vast aura, this aura was lacking in continued strength. As if… the abyssal had already died.

This black wind seemed to be the accumulated death energy after the corpse of the abyssal demon had been buried underground for 10 billion years.

As Lin Ming thought all of this, he probed the pit with his sense.

Then, he clearly saw what was occurring within. At the bottom of the pit there was a cylindrical-shaped thing that felt like some sort of skeleton. It was black throughout, only a foot long, and crystal smooth like a piece of black jade.

And on this black jade, there were some fresh meat bloodstains.

This flesh and blood was being slowly absorbed by the black jade, like a sponge absorbing water. These were the pieces of flesh and blood that had come from Famine.

In the search for this black jade, the flesh and blood of Famine had melted away, turning into bloody water that was swallowed by it!

Lin Ming had once fought with Famine and was familiar with its aura. He faintly realized that that flesh and blood came from Famine.

As for the black jade, Lin Ming didn't know what it was. He could only feel an incredibly dense aura coming from it, one that was hundreds if not thousands of times stronger than the supreme dragon bone that Lin Ming had obtained from the God Beast Mystic Realm!

As Lin Ming saw this black bone, he suddenly felt the small black dragon in his inner world began to stir.

"Mm? Little Black?"

Lin Ming was surprised. In these past years, Little Black spent most of his time deeply slumbering within Lin Ming's world. As Lin Ming absorbed world power from all over, the small black dragon also absorbed the power of the universe to grow. It was usually quiet and peaceful, deeply sleeping, unlike now when it suddenly started to restlessly move about.

During these past years, Lin Ming had already developed the ability to communicate with the small black dragon on a spiritual level. From what the black dragon was trying to convey, this small black jade thing was something that it held an intense desire to swallow.

“Are you saying that this is a relic left behind from the death of a formidable existence?”

Lin Ming mumbled, startled. The little black dragon had accompanied him to the Eternal Demon Abyss several times where it had inherited the strength of the Dragon Sovereign as well as a great deal of the Dragon Sovereign’s knowledge and experience. In many areas, the small black dragon knew much more than Lin Ming.

“If so, then this should be a powerful abyssal demon that was killed by the Asura Road Master and then refined. The Asura Road Master left this demon relic behind and now the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign is looking for it!”

Lin Ming soon guessed what was occurring.

In fact, this was an abyssal demon that had been killed and refined by the Asura Road Master. But even if all that remained of it was a relic, it was still incredibly dangerous and could kill and swallow numerous lives.

In particular, it was able to form a link with the abyssal Famine’s flesh and blood. Using this, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was able to locate the demon relic.

The goal was to dig up this relic and allow Famine to eat it as food!

During the years that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had invaded the Divine Realm, Famine had already swallowed far too many things. It was now on the precipice of evolution.

Currently, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign needed something that could bring about a qualitative change and allow Famine to complete its evolution, furthering his strength!

This demon relic was the key to accomplishing all of this!

At this time, the Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples had gathered at the bottom of the pit. The death energy that erupted from the pit was so corrosive it was able to instantly dissolve a person's flesh and blood, but somehow, these disciples were unscathed.

None of them were even injured. Moreover, with so many people gathered together coveting the treasure that they had dug out, the disciples didn't seem startled at all, but rather seemed as if they had anticipated this.

Lin Ming's thoughts raced. Without a doubt, these fellows had come prepared! As for the impact of that black death energy, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign must have given them some special magic tool capable of withstanding it.

Then, two Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples rushed out from the pit!

They leapt onto the surface like two rabid wolves, coldly looking at the trial challengers that were arriving from all over.

With these two disciples facing over a hundred other martial artists, they didn't seem fearful at all.

This surprised those present.

Among them, one was a relatively famous spiritas martial artist that came from a True Divinity level influence of the inner Asura Road – Divine Void Divine Kingdom. This martial artist stepped forwards, a sneer on his face. He planned to say some opening remarks before they fought to steal these treasures, to make the whole act appear a bit more justifiable.

However, this person never imagined that the two disciples of Good Fortune Saint Palace would speak up first.

"If you don't want to die then hurry up and fuck off!"

These disdainful words were filled with contempt. As they were spoken, the trial challengers were stunned for a moment before becoming enraged!

These Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples were insane! Were their brains normal? What gave them the courage to say such words?

“You are courting death!”

Several inner Asura Road disciples fiendishly grinned. They also thought of spouting off some polite words and asking whether or not the Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples wanted to split the treasure, but since these people seemed so anxious to die then they wouldn’t bother with needless bantering. “Let’s go. We have more people than they do. Encircle them all and kill them off!”

More and more people gathered and moved forwards. But at this time, the two Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples that had leapt out to provoke everyone outside suddenly took a step back and fell into the pit.

“Mm? Running away?”

“They want to lure us in?” The geniuses present were no idiots. The actions of those two disciples had aroused their suspicions.

As if they were trying to intentionally provoke them to enter the pit.

“Be careful, there is likely something strange occurring in that pit. The black wind that rushed out just now was able to kill someone!” Someone frowned.

“Humph! If they can enter, why can’t we?”

“No matter what, the birth of a rare treasure is something we must struggle to take. If we don’t even dare to enter the door then what’s the point of being here!”

A brutish fellow carelessly said. But although he seemed a bit crude, he wasn’t hasty. He waited for a moment and used his sense to probe the pit repeatedly. He felt that the black wind which was filled with that energy field seemed to have vanished.

Thus, he put on a treasure armor and grasped two pieces of mind clarity jades in his hands. Then, he revolved his energy shields to the limit and carefully flew into the pit.

After passing several thousand feet down, nothing happened to that big fellow. The violent black wind that gushed out from the pit was powerful at the start, but it weakened a great deal afterwards. After all, the abyssal demon had long since died.

Looking at this brutish fellow rush in without a single wound, many martial artists that were ready to move also began to rush in.

Then, most of the trial challengers also flew down into the pit, Lin Ming included among them. No one noticed him. He blended into the large crowd and entered.

Flying into the pit, one could see just how large it was.

The pit was three miles in diameter and could easily hold over 10,000 people. But as for the depth of the pit, it was almost a hundred miles deep. As one reached the base of it, the light from above had weakened to nearly nothing.

Moreover, as one ventured deeper into the pit, the death energy became thicker and more potent. The martial artists carefully moved forwards. In the group were also the disciples from Soaring Feather God Mountain. Although they belonged on the same side as the Good Fortune Saint Palace, they clearly didn’t know just what the Good Fortune Saint Palace was plotting. This could all be seen from the gray-clothed woman’s expression.

She was equally amazed but also hesitant.

As the group fell down, the dark became increasingly thick. As the crowd neared the bottom of the pit, a gloomy voice echoed out.

“You’ve finally gathered the courage to come down? I’ve been respectfully awaiting your arrival all this time!”

The martial artists all turned to look at the one speaking – it was the fat man from the Good Fortune Saint Palace. The fat man stood at the bottom of the pitch black pit, coldly smirking as he looked at the crowd of trial challengers.

Hu – !

Blazing balls of fire suddenly lit up and illuminated the bottom of the pit. The light shined upon the fat man's vicious face. Because the fat man was extremely obese, this should have been a humorous sight, but in this situation, it seemed as if he had become a man-eating demon!

The trial challengers all raised their guards. Although they had the advantage in numbers, they couldn't be reckless in such a strange place.

"You sure like to shamelessly boast. Do you think that your Good Fortune Saint Palace can deal with so many of us!? You all dug out such a deep pit, it seems you wanted to make your own tomb! The black swamp is a naturally formed graveyard of the heavens and earth. After you die you'll stay in here and rot away, and good riddance!"

Several inner Asura Road disciples scoffed. As they spoke they had already formed a battle array, ready to deal with any situation that could occur.

"Graveyard? Your viewpoint is quite interesting, but you seem to have made a simple mistake. This place is only your graveyard! Since you came down, then stay behind!"

The fat man suddenly roared. This didn't seem like the roar of a human, but the roar of a savage beast!

In the next moment, explosive popping sounds crackled from all over his body. The thick layer of fat on his body violently wriggled. Fierce blue veins stuck out all over him and steel-like muscles started to rise!

"Saint race's body metamorphosis?"

Lin Ming immediately thought. This was also what the others were thinking.

Amongst the saints, those with outstanding bloodlines were able to undergo body metamorphosis. The Good Fortune Saint Son and Imperial Prince Naqi were such examples.

But soon, Lin Ming discovered that something was wrong.

The fat man's body metamorphosis was far too strange. All of his flesh had burst open, and from the crevices of his body bone spikes drilled out, looking like ferocious swords and spears!

His skeleton also began to lengthen, growing taller. His body rose to over 10 feet high, and was growing even taller all the while!

An aura that Lin Ming was extremely familiar with suddenly rushed out from the fat man. This aura came from… Famine!

Chapter 1973 - Artificial Demon

Chapter 1973 – Artificial Demon

…

…

…

"Famine? How is this…" Lin Ming's eyes flashed with shock. This was absolutely not the saints' body metamorphosis, but a strength that came directly from Famine!

And at this time, the clothes on the fat man's back had already been blown apart. Massive bloody pustules rose up from his back.

Gurgle gurgle!

These pustules violently wriggled and crept, growing larger and larger until they exploded open. As blood and plasma flew into the air, several python-like tentacles rose out from these pustules, dancing all about.

"This is…"

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. There was no way he would mistake these tentacles for something else; they were Famine's blood dragon tentacles! The only difference was that on the fat man's body, they had shrunk countless times over.

At this time, the fat man was already completely unrecognizable from his past appearance. He had become a 20 foot tall blood red demon with fierce bone spikes that jutted out and thickly corded muscles wrapped around him. Eight tentacles flapped about from behind him.

Seeing the fat man, everyone was bewildered. This blood red life form didn’t seem like a person at all, but a manmade demon!

“This is strength that comes from Famine… I understand now.” Lin Ming recalled Empyrean Primordius from thousands of years ago.

At that time, when Lin Ming saw Empyrean Primordius, Empyrean Primordius’ appearance had been that of a demon. But he didn’t have Famine’s tentacles. Instead, what he had were sharp bone blades.

Empyrean Primordius had seized the body of an abyssal and had turned into that appearance. This fat man was likely in a similar situation.

Someone had artificially implanted Famine’s flesh and blood within his body!

The body of an abyssal demon was nearly impossible to seize. After Empyrean Primordius seized the body of an abyssal, he had lost his sense of self.

And the fat man’s strength was clearly far inferior to that of Empyrean Primordius. To have him attempt to seize the body of an abyssal was the same as delivering food to it instead. However, if his body was implanted with the flesh and blood of Famine then that was different.

This was because Famine’s flesh and blood was under the control of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

This flesh and blood would obey the orders of others and as a result, it wouldn’t swallow the fat man.

“So that’s what is happening… as Famine becomes more powerful and as the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s control over it becomes increasingly tight, he can split off parts of Famine’s flesh and blood and plant it into the bodies of high level martial artists to compose artificial demons. If the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s controlling ability is powerful enough then he can even form a legion of demons!”

It could be imagined that this demon legion would possess a terrifying battle efficiency. At the same time, they were also completely controlled by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. This was because due to their bodies being fused with Famine's flesh and blood, a mere thought from the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and they wouldn't even have their bones remaining!

As Lin Ming realized all of this, he could sense that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's ambitions were becoming increasingly great. Through Famine, there were far, far too many matters he could deal with. Slowly he would be able to extend his control over the entire 33 Heavens. Of course, this was all based on the premise that he could defeat the equally ambitious Soul Emperor.

"What is that monster!?"

As the trial challengers saw this fat man's change, all of them felt weak at heart. This came from Famine's aura. As a once incomparably terrifying existence, once Famine's flesh and blood was fused into the fat man's body, the aura it carried with it caused all the trial challengers present to feel fear and dread.

"That should be the saint race's body metamorphosis! It's just that we've never seen this version before!" Some people said to comfort themselves and also raise their morale. However, at this time, the fat man chuckled.

"You… do you all really think this is the saint race's body metamorphosis…?"

As the fat man spoke, blue veins pulsated over his body like worms. It was like every syllable he spoke was incredibly difficult to get out.

His voice had completely changed. It was hoarse, low, and deep. The change of his body had caused his voice to seem not like a person's at all.

At this time, every change within the fat man's body was caught in Lin Ming's eyes.

"His blood vitality… is burning away. Famine's flesh and blood is swallowing his cells! If he tries to maintain this kind of body metamorphosis for too long then he will die. It seems this body metamorphosis has a tremendous limitation placed on it. Using it a single time will cause one to lose a great part of their life force and also affect their future boundary. There is even a chance that they will be swallowed up by Famine instead."

Lin Ming thought as he sensed the blood vitality within the fat man. Famine was an abyssal demon and its attribute was to swallow all. This was the 'instinct' that was carved into every inch of Famine's flesh and blood.

Even with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign restraining it, it was difficult to completely write off this sort of instinct.

"Ever since this forbidden strength was planted within me… this is my first time using it. You should all feel honored!"

As the fat man spoke he roared and hurled himself towards an inner Asura Road disciple!

That inner Asura Road disciple came from Divine Void Divine Kingdom. Amongst the trial challengers here, his strength was in the upper echelons.

"Be careful!"

Someone cried out in alarm.

But, the fat man was too fast; his speed surpassed the reaction ability of those present.

The Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciple had been tempered through numerous tests of life and death. Although his brain didn't respond his body already started to reflexively move, independently acting in this critical moment.

He leapt backwards. At the same time, he took out a thick saber and chopped downwards. A thick and sticky darkness spilled out from his saber like ink. This darkness contained a powerful divine soul attack!

Hu –

The thick darkness roared, forming a death god phantom. The death god phantom grasped a scythe as it rushed towards the fat man's spiritual sea!

This was a transcendent divine might of Divine Void Divine Kingdom, an arcane skill specifically used to strike the spiritual sea. This Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciple was smart enough; seeing that he couldn't dodge the fat man's attack, he decided to use offense as defense instead!

The fat man's body metamorphosis could immediately be seen to augment the mortal body; it was the obvious choice to attack the opponent's spiritual sea instead.

Kacha!

The Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciple's saber was caught by the fat man. At the same time, the death god's scythe came slashing down at the fat man's head!

This fat man completely disregarded the death god's scythe. Rather, he reached out, grasping towards the Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciple's heart.

"You –"

The Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciple's eyes flashed with deep disbelief. He stared helplessly on as the death god's scythe cut into the fat man's head. But at the same time, a cold feeling bloomed in his chest. The fat man's sharp claws had thrust into his chest and grabbed onto his beating heart.

"No – !"

The feeling of having one's heart held was indescribable. Fear and helplessness covered the Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciple's eyes. Before he could finish speaking, the fat man cruelly grinned and twisted his right hand, twisting apart the Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciple's blood vessels and ripping out his heart.

Puff!

Blood shot out. The Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciple’s expression stiffened and his body toppled over like a dead dog. As he tumbled away, he could see the fat man holding his beating, dripping, heart, and then directly swallowing it whole.

“Ahh!”

A trial challenger cried out in fear. This body-metamorphosized demonic fat man had actually eaten someone’s heart!

Moreover, what frightened these people the most was that the Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciple’s soul attack seemed to not injure the fat man at all. The Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciple clearly excelled in divine soul attacks, but such an attack was easily withstood by the fat man!

Could this fat man’s weakness be his body instead?

Looking at the fat man’s body that seemed cast with thick iron-hard muscles, the trial challengers couldn’t summon the courage to deal with him using material attacks.

If his mortal bodily defense was even stronger than his soul defense, then this was completely a monster!

“Famine’s flesh and blood swallowed up that disciple’s soul attack...” Lin Ming was able to see what had occurred. Famine was a terrifying existence. Its ability was to swallow all. It could even swallow the Heavenly Dao rules, so what was swallowing a divine soul attack?

After fusing with Famine, not to mention the increase in strength, but this defensive ability to swallow energy, material, and divine soul attacks made it so that all other martial artists at the same level would be helpless to do anything.

This was a truly terrifying monster!

Lin Ming closely observed the changes occurring in the fat man's body. But at this time, the Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciple's body started to shake. Beneath the gaze of all present, his entire body melted away.

The meat on his body and face seemed to melt away like fat under high heat. It flowed down in bloody water mixed with yellow goo, finally leaving behind nothing but bones.

As everyone saw this they were panic-stricken; they had no idea what had occurred.

Then, as if it was being summoned, this bloody water slowly gathered into a stream that flowed into the pit behind the fat man where it was completely absorbed by the pitch black bone column.

Seeing this, the fat man smiled. He revealed teeth that were dyed red with blood. "The demon relic is quite greedy… at such a close distance, it is even willing to swallow ordinary flesh and blood… if it is the flesh and blood of an abyssal then it would be even greater… after undergoing my body metamorphosis, even though I am able to consciously imprison the energy in my flesh and blood, I can still feel its demonic call!"

"Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, isn't this something that His Majesty the Saint Sovereign values? Today, let us keep this crowd of garbage here and use their flesh and blood to feed the demon relic! This is the best use of waste!"

Behind the fat man, another disciple from the Good Fortune Saint Palace spoke up. His body also started to change. His flesh and blood wriggled about as if numerous insects were crawling beneath his skin.

He had a pained expression etched on his face, as if his body metamorphosis process was far more difficult than the fat man's. It was obvious that his ability to control Famine's flesh and blood was far inferior to the fat man's.

"Another one!"

A trial challenger shouted out as he saw another Good Fortune Saint Palace disciple undergo that body metamorphosis. He felt his limbs turn cold and his heart drop into his stomach. He feared that there were several demons within the group of Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples. It was even possible that they were all like that!

“This feeling, is truly life-taking… I almost thought I would die, haha…”

After the second Good Fortune Saint Palace disciple completed his body metamorphosis, he began panting for breath, as if he had lost nearly half his life. This was the forbidden power they worried about when they were searching for the demon relic.

This power, while giving them formidable strength, would also take their life. It required constant conditioning from the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign in order to overcome the difficulties and successfully undergo body metamorphosis without dying. But, to have the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign waste time and energy to condition them, this proved their value. That value was to find the demon relic!

After completing this mission, one day they would be able to completely fuse with Famine’s flesh and blood, obtaining an undying body!

Chapter 1974 - Slaughter

Chapter 1974 – Slaughter

…

…

…

“Brothers, there is no need to hide any longer. In this battle we must win no matter the price. Once we leave, glory shall be ours! His Majesty the Saint Sovereign will grant us rewards!”

The fat man shouted out to the disciples behind him. To undergo body metamorphosis with Famine’s flesh and blood was extremely dangerous. If one failed in the transformation then death wouldn’t be strange at all.

But with that great reward dangling before them, they had to fight!

When it came to rewards, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had never been stingy. The rewards he passed out often allowed one to soar into the heavens! This also made it so that the saint martial artists were all willing to desperately fight for him without a care for their lives.

Ka ka ka ka ka!

The bodies of the over 20 some Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples began to emit explosive crackling sounds. Their muscles grew and wriggled as they activated their body metamorphosis!

All of the trial challengers present paled.

It turned out that every Good Fortune Saint Palace disciple was actually one of these monsters.

How could a crowd of ordinary martial artists fight with such savage demons?

The fat man could already easy kill one of the stronger ranked martial artists amongst them. Then what would a swarm of them be capable of?

“Damnit! We ran into a bunch of maniacs! Hurry and run!”

The trial challengers here were rational in their actions. As long as there was life, there was hope. They all revolved their movement techniques and began escaping the pit.

But at this time, the fat man sneered. “You want to run away? When you came down you all should have already understood you would die here!”

As the fat man spoke he roared out loud. From the python-like crimson tentacles on his back, dozens of blood arrows shot out. These arrows splashed onto the walls of the pit. Immediately, a great blood red net appeared at the top of the pit.

This net grew like weeds, soon wrapping around the entire pit, including the ground, sides, everything was covered in a layer of thick bright red!

“It’s an array formation!”

Seeing this blood red net, the many trial challengers turned waxen. These people had already prepared a trap for them!

This was an array formation that surpassed the understanding of the trial challengers present. In other words, it was impossible for the fat man and his group to have created it. They must have used incredibly precious one-time use array discs as well as a massive number of energy stones to power it.

This sort of array formation that borrowed power from energy stones wouldn't be able to continue revolving for too long. But this period of time was more than enough for these monsters to slaughter to their hearts' content in this pit!

With this, let alone the inner Asura Road disciples, even the disciples of Soaring Feather God Mountain began to panic. They never expected that such a change would occur.

These disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace… they wouldn't kill them too, right!?

Although they were allies, if anyone died in this final trial it would be impossible to verify just how it had happened. If they were attacked here then that wouldn't be strange at all.

"You! Start killing everyone for me, otherwise I'll kill you along with them!"

The fat man's muscles violently twitched. His savage blood red eyes stared at the gray-clothed woman from Soaring Feather God Mountain, his look as wicked as a demonic wolf.

The gray-clothed woman was completely flustered. Facing this terrifying fat man, she had no other choice.

"Do you really think we are fish that you can slaughter as you want? Everyone, attack together! Before they complete their body metamorphosis!"

An inner Asura Road disciple loudly shouted. Currently, the Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples had only finished their body metamorphoses halfway; this was the perfect time to counterattack them.

"Too naïve!"

The fat man grinned. He rushed out, and from his back, eight blood red tentacles rushed out like poisonous snakes with unstoppable momentum. These tentacles were hundreds of feet long and could easily pierce through the energy barriers of those present as if they were nothing more than paper!

Two martial artists were immediately pierced through the chest by these red tentacles. Their organs burst apart. As they wildly struggled, their blood was recklessly sucked in through the tentacles.

Many people nearly collapsed where they stood. Originally, even if this fat man didn't undergo body metamorphosis, his strength still surpassed all those present. At the Gate of Laws, the only ones to choose the heaven-step difficulty had been the fat man and the gray-clothed woman.

But now, the fat man's body metamorphosis had increased his strength by several times. And that gray-clothed woman seemed as if she was intending to take his side!

This was because the four disciples from Soaring Feather God Mountain were already standing behind the fat man!

They came from the same faction to begin with, and beneath the threat of death, it would instead be strange if they didn't take the hand offered to them.

"Only an outstanding talent can recognize the current trends. A wise man knows when to submit!"

Seeing the gray-clothed woman surrender, the fat man chuckled.

The gray-clothed woman clenched her teeth. Although she was humiliated, she had no other choice she could take. After all, they were together to begin with.

"Focus on defending and kill some of the weaker ones!"

The gray-clothed woman ordered the junior-apprentice brothers and sisters she had brought along.

"Once everyone here is dead, will they let us live?" A Soaring Feather God Mountain disciple worriedly asked.

"If we don't try to steal their treasure then there shouldn't be any reason for them to waste their blood essence to kill us. This body metamorphosis they are undergoing isn't easy on them, and if we don't surrender to them then we will immediately die instead!"

For a time an atmosphere of despair filled the pit, covering all the trial challengers present.

"Kill them all!"

The fat man yelled. Let the grand slaughterfest begin!

The artificial demons of the Good Fortune Saint Palace were far too strong. The strength brought about by this body metamorphosis was the same as them wildly burning up all their blood essence! In addition, these disciples were originally all a cut above the rest. From the very start of this battle, it was nothing but a one-sided massacre.

Another trial challenger was killed. And after they died, all of their blood essence and energy was completely absorbed by the demon relic.

This sort of death where they turned into red and yellow blood and were then swallowed up by the strange bone was really far too miserable.

The fat man had gone crazy. The eight tentacles behind him danced like an octopus, wildly harvesting all life!

As for the Soaring Feather God Mountain disciples, they mostly found a few trial challengers that were on the verge of death to finish off; they didn't strike on their own initiative.

But when the fat man had killed just less than half the martial artists present, and his killing frenzy was rising, his heart shook and he turned around with disbelief in his eyes.

200 feet behind him, a man had appeared. This shouldn't have been anything special, but this man was standing where the demon relic was, using a hand to gently grasp it!

This person was Lin Ming. From the start, all of his attention had been focused on this demon relic.

The fat man would never have even dreamed that something like this would occur!

In Lin Ming's hand, the demon relic was still dripping with the bodily corpse fluids that it hadn't been able to absorb in time.

With such a fierce and evil-spirited demon relic, even the fat man would have to carefully consider whether or not to touch it. He would probe it repeatedly first in order to avoid any dangers and to prevent any ominous events from occurring.

But this man was lightly holding onto the demon relic in his hands, as if he wanted to take it away!

Moreover, what shocked the fat man the most was that the surrounding scene was of everyone desperately trying to escape or crying out in sorrow and pain.

Yet this man actually had the idea and courage to dig up the demon relic.

Was he insane?

"You are seeking death!"

The fat man wildly bellowed, like the roar of a demon. The martial artists all around froze from what they were doing. For a time, all the Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples held back from their killing feast. This battlefield was a one-sided massacre to begin with, and even if they stopped now they could still easily finish off everyone later.

The pit fell silent. Only the sound of flowing blood was heard.

Everyone looked towards Lin Ming. At this time, Lin Ming was holding onto the demon relic. There was no panic or fear on his face.

His expression was calm and his eyes were a bit thoughtful. When Lin Ming thought of taking the demon relic he had first probed it with his divine sense. After determining that he could resist its ability to summon and swallow blood, he then picked it up.

"This is indeed an abyssal demon… and, its rank is far higher than the abyssal that Empyrean Primordius seized the body of! Perhaps… it might have been able to compare with Famine…"

Lin Ming quickly judged. This was a demon relic that had been refined by the Asura Road Master, and even after 10 billion years it still possessed such a vast and horrifying aura. From this alone, one could imagine what rank the abyssal demon had been at!

This was also reasonable. If there was an abyssal demon that had the qualifications to be personally struck down by the Asura Road Master and have its refined relic be buried in the final trial, awaiting a destined person to come and take it, then how could it be some ordinary item? And if it were an ordinary item, why would the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign form such a large team of people to come and search for it?

"That old geezer Good Fortune Saint Sovereign should have just learned about the existence of this demon relic, otherwise he would have tried to take it long ago. He might have found some ancient ruins and accidently obtained a letter, jade slip, or some other piece of information left behind by the Asura Road Master, from which he then locked onto the location of this demon relic…"

As Lin Ming thought this, he weighed the demon relic a bit in his hands and then placed it in his spatial ring.

Seeing this occur, the fat man was utterly dumbfounded.

This sort of feeling was like an emperor going on a parade through the streets, but then a beggar walked in front of the emperor and plucked out the largest gem from his crown beneath the gaze of all present. Then, he placed that gem in his dirty pocket and patted the emperor's shoulder before strutting away.

“I never thought that in this world there would be such a crazed idiot!”

The fat man’s voice was vicious. His blazing eyes locked onto Lin Ming as he started walking over.

The other Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples also slowly approached, surrounding Lin Ming in a circle. As they looked at Lin Ming, they did so with disdain and mockery in their eyes.

The fat man’s pace was slow and gradual. But, this plodding pace also brought about a deep restraining feeling.

The other inner Asura Road disciples looked at Lin Ming. They already expected to see him be cruelly dismembered.

“This fellow… what bad luck!”

“We can’t even save ourselves, so stop trying to care about others. Prepare yourselves and wait for a chance to break out!”

The dozen some Asura Road disciples gathered together. They rapidly passed sound transmissions, preparing to take advantage of the moment the array formation weakened to flee this pit.

Of course, the premise of all this was that they were still alive when the array formation weakened.

By this time, the fat man had already arrived in front of Lin Ming…

Chapter 1975 - Suppression Through Power

Chapter 1975 – Suppression Through Power

…

…

…

"You are a human? How interesting! In these many years I've mutilated and killed countless humans! Although you humans are nothing but a bunch of trash, your brains aren't too stupid. At the very least you know when to fall to your knees and beg for mercy. If you were to beg for mercy I might even spare you death so you can continue living like the dogs you are, hehehe!"

The fat man stood in front of Lin Ming like a tower. After undergoing body metamorphosis, the fat man was over twice as tall as Lin Ming. His aura erupted around him as tentacles danced in the air, filling the battlefield with an intensely oppressive feeling!

However, the oppressive aura he released didn't achieve the effect he wanted. Instead, Lin Ming's eyes suddenly turned freezing cold, like the arctic flames of the nine nether abyss.

The fat man had bragged about all the humans he had killed in these past years. This caused Lin Ming's mind to boil over with killing intent.

"You… really deserve death!"

Lin Ming fiercely muttered.

"Heh! The one who is dying will be you! I've never seen such a stupid human like you before!"

As the fat man spoke, he aimed towards Lin Ming's head and reached down. At the same time, the eight tentacles behind him also bit towards Lin Ming's neck.

When the fat man killed the previous trial challengers, as long as they were bitten by this tentacle then all of their blood essence would be sucked out!

Paka!

Eight tentacles all bit down on Lin Ming's neck and shoulders!

The fat man demonically grinned. However, in the next moment, his smile froze. He could feel Famine's tentacles biting down on something impossibly hard, not able to pierce through half an inch, as if they had chomped down on divine iron.

"How is this..."

Before the fat man could respond, at this time he was suddenly horrified to discover that he couldn't move his body at all. He could barely speak through his throat. It was like a terrifying strength had imprisoned him.

"...As I thought. To allow Famine's flesh and blood to seep into your body and transform it..."

Lin Ming's sense had penetrated into a microscopic field. He was able to clearly see every cell in the fat man and how his cells had fused with Famine's.

"If I were to sever this fusion and draw out Famine's flesh and blood..."

As Lin Ming thought out loud, he lifted a hand, slowly reaching out to the fat man.

"You..." The fat man was panic-stricken. With his entire body rooted in place, he could only stare helplessly on as this human man's hand thrust into his chest.

Puff!

Blood flowed out. Lin Ming's hand penetrated into the fat man's body as easily as if he were slicing into tofu!

The fat man wildly and desperately struggled, but no matter how much he tried the only response was a slight trembling of his body.

Like he was a pig tied up to a cutting board, unable to move at all.

This left everyone stunned. The mouths of the inner Asura Road disciples all fell open, unable to believe what was occurring in front of them.

That formidable fat man was actually being played around with by this human man so easily, like a child playing with an insect.

Who was this man? How could he be so strong?

It had to be known that in this level of the final trial, what was tested was not absolute strength but one's level of talent.

Although the fat man couldn't compare with existences like Sheng Mei or the Good Fortune Saint Son, he was absolutely not a weak individual. Now, with his body metamorphosis completed, he was even more terrifying than he ordinarily was. If this other person could easily play with him in the palm of his hand, just how horrifying was his talent?

If he was so amazing, why didn't they see him at the Gate of Laws?

Everyone looked at each other in a daze, like they were living some dream.

All the people here had already gone to the fourth level by the time Lin Ming left the Gate of Laws. Thus, they didn't see the changes occurring in the Gate of Hell otherwise they would have recalled that event.

Lin Ming didn't care about these people. The reason he exposed his strength now was because of the demon relic. As for those who saw him, he had the means to deal with them.

He couldn't let news of his presence here be revealed to the outside world. Although there was no one here able to see through his appearance changing technique, if others were to know that someone with his degree of talent existed, then there would always be those who would associate him with the name Lin Ming.

That, would be disastrous.

"Elder Senior-apprentice Brother!"

"Boss!"

The Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples were inexplicably flustered. Even as they were horrified, their eyes turned red with rage!

But they didn't dare to attack right now. The fat man was in Ling Ming's hands and they didn't want to do anything lest there be collateral damage to him. Moreover, Lin Ming was too strong; their attacks likely wouldn't have much effect.

Before the Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples could come up with a plan for how to deal with the situation, the fat man's face suddenly twisted. His body shivered and veins stuck out on it. Big drops of sweat rolled down from his forehead.

He was clearly withstanding some kind of agonizing pain.

"Blood… flesh…"

The fat man struggled to say, even as blood started pouring down from the top of his head. From within his body, every bit and piece of Famine's flesh and blood was being severed by Lin Ming using small energy flows and then forcefully drawn out!

With Lin Ming's understanding of the Life Laws in addition to his incredible true essence control, he could accomplish all of this.

Then, the several tentacles waving behind the fat man started to wither, like worms that had their fluids sucked out!

The fat man’s giant and towering body also started to rapidly deflate like a pierced rubber ball.

At the same time, in Lin Ming’s palm, a blood red ball of meat started to grow. This was the gathered bits of Famine’s flesh and blood.

Pah!

Lin Ming drew out his hand and pulled out this bloody ball.

The bloody ball was the size of a person’s head and it also palpitated like a heart. It violently struggled in Lin Ming’s hand, but no matter what it tried it couldn’t escape his grasp.

And at this time, the fat man didn’t seem like a person at all anymore. His body metamorphosis was forcefully cancelled and he had reverted to his original form. But, this so-called original form was in truth much worse than the original. His fat body had shrunk to nothing and his face had turned sallow like paper. He looked like an old smoker who had used opium for far too many years.

His life essence had been drawn out along with Famine’s flesh and blood. All of it was pulled out by Lin Ming.

“Little Black!”

Lin Ming called. He threw out the ball of meat in his hand, and at the same time there was a happy howl from his inner world. A small black wolf rushed out and bit down on this ball of flesh, casually chewing it a few times before swallowing it down.

The small black dragon licked its lips and patted its belly with its claws, appearing extremely satisfied. This time it was in its minimized form. Besides a single horn, it resembled a wolf.

The first reason Lin Ming came here was because of Famine's flesh and blood and the intense swallowing desire shown by Little Black. Now that Lin Ming pulled out Famine's flesh and blood from the fat man's body, he did so to experiment with it and also to let Little Black swallow it.

As this scene fell into everyone's vision, their eyes nearly popped out of their heads. This mysterious and terrifying man had easily overpowered the horrifying fat man and then drew out his flesh and blood essence. Then...

He fed it to a dog!

This was too incredible!

"Damnit!"

The Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples' eyes nearly cracked open with rage. They originally feared Lin Ming thus they didn't attack him, but now that they watched him draw out Famine's flesh and blood to feed a dog, their fury burned to the extreme!

"Attack together!"

"Kill him!"

The 20 some Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples rushed forwards together. With more people attacking together, it always felt somewhat safer. But, to their horror and despair, they discovered that they were all wrong.

Just as they reached within a hundred feet of Lin Ming, they suddenly froze, like their bodies had fallen into a thick and viscous swamp of chaos. Their bodies were locked in place, none of them able to move a single inch forwards.

It was like all of them had been suddenly locked in ice. Whether they were flying through the air or rushing over the ground, all of them froze as they were without exception!

Whether it was controlling the fat man or controlling this group of people, Lin Ming's countenance didn't change nor did he seem to use any strength.

"This! This..."

The inner Asura Road trial challengers were left at a loss for words. If this mysterious man had only suppressed the fat man, then they would have summed it up as – a talent on the same level as Sheng Mei.

But now, with him languidly locking down over 20 people, they started to doubt that he was human.

"Just who is he? He's like some divine god!"

"Even if Lin Ming was reborn in the world, would even he be this strong?"

As everyone was talking, there was a light popping sound. A Good Fortune Saint Palace disciple suddenly burst apart, all the flesh and blood of Famine from his body drawn out by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming had begun his slaughter.

Chapter 1976 – Those Against Me, Die

Chapter 1976 – Those Against Me, Die

…

…

…

Slaughter.

In the world of martial artists, this sort of behavior was common. Not to mention slaughtering a village, slaughtering a city or even slaughtering all lives living on a star was something that occurred often.

In the incomparably vast universe, even a large planet like the Sky Spill Planet wouldn't arouse any concern if it was destroyed in a single day. Even if some people learned about this event, they would only think that a bunch of talentless, useless, and unimportant Divine Sea people had been killed off.

But, slaughtering geniuses in groups, and in particular slaughtering a crowd of geniuses from a True Divinity level influence, was something that was incredibly rare in the world of martial artists!

There was a scant number of True Divinity level influences in the 33 Heavens. Who would dare to provoke them or even have the ability to do so?

This was the same as declaring war with a great influence; the consequences were dire!

At this time, in front of Lin Ming the 20 some disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace were desperately struggling against the bindings that imprisoned them. However, even if they gathered all of their strength and even used all the power that Famine's flesh and blood gave them, they weren't able to shake the single person that was Lin Ming.

A horrifying force field tightly locked them down, as solid as an immortal mountain!

And by now, Lin Ming was already moving towards a third person. This left everyone alarmed!

To show such overwhelming strength in the final trial, what he displayed was not his cultivation but his talent.

And if talent could be quantified, then this man's talent far surpassed the sum total of all 20 some Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples!

This was unbelievable.

Puff!

With a light sound, Lin Ming pulled out all the flesh and blood of Famine from a third saint martial artist. And this flesh and blood was fed to the little black dragon.

Famine's flesh and blood contained an extraordinary degree of energy, but even so, the small black dragon's appetite was even more amazing. It swallowed down this flesh and blood without even chewing it.

Then, a fourth disciple of the Good Fortune Saint Palace was killed by Lin Ming. He killed them like he was killing chickens, slaughtering them without an iota of resistance.

"He's killing geniuses like pigs… every time he kills someone, who knows just how much damage he's causing to the Good Fortune Saint Palace…"

Some people shrank inwardly, silently dumbfounded.

These Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples had been raised through piling up a massive amount of heavenly materials. In the Good Fortune Saint Palace, these people were the best disciples they had raised in the last several hundred years, and they were also raised with every possible effort.

And the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had carefully prepared for this mission. He had recklessly invested resources in the bodies of these people, sending out all the top junior elites within the Good Fortune Saint Palace.

In addition, he had even transformed their bodies using the flesh and blood of Famine.

It could be said that out of these 20 some people, the value of a single one of them was several times more precious than all the lives of a thousand Sky Spill Planets!

In particular, the fat man that had been killed by Lin Ming; he was the greatest junior to be born in the Good Fortune Saint Palace for the last thousand years, a natural leader of his generation. Although he was worse than the Good Fortune Saint Son, he was actually equally matched with someone like Imperial Prince Naqi.

If Lin Ming killed these people then it was the same as destroying all the work that the Good Fortune Saint Palace had put effort into for the last several hundred years.

In the world of martial artists, the value of life could be measured. In the eyes of the Asura Road martial artists, Lin Ming killing a single one of these people was the same as destroying thousands of planets.

One after another, Lin Ming slowly killed off these saint race martial artists. He didn’t deliberately plan on torturing them, but did so because he needed to accurately control his true essence flow so he could sever the tie between these saint martial artists and Famine’s flesh and blood. This was a mentally consuming task, and even for Lin Ming it wasn’t simple.

But, this behavior caused the still living disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace to lose all courage and hope!

No matter how they struggled, it was useless; they could only wait for death to slowly arrive in front of them and have them suffer the most excruciating pain in the world! In particular, the pain of having Famine's flesh and blood forcefully drawn from their bodies caused their scalps to turn numb with shock. Even though these martial artists were firm of will and heart, once they experienced this pain they immediately wished they could all die.

"Boy! If you kill us then the Good Fortune Saint Palace will never forgive you!"

A Good Fortune Saint Palace disciple crazily screamed before he died. This was because in the brief moment before he died, the force field imprisoning him weakened, allowing him to speak.

However, his threat didn't change his fate. Famine's flesh and blood was also pulled out from his body!

Those who killed should expect to be killed. All of the saint martial artists present, including nearly all the martial artists from the inner Asura Road, had already stepped onto the road of death!

Lin Ming wasn't some weak-willed or softhearted individual. As he killed these people he didn't even blink.

But at this time, slowly, the enchantment sealing off the pit began to weaken. Several obscure figures began to quietly retreat.

These people came from Soaring Feather God Mountain.

Seeing the pitiful fate of the Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples, all of their hairs stood on end and their limbs tingled with fear.

Although they had been passively drawn into this mess, they were still on the same side as the Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples. After this person killed off those Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples it was possible he would kill everyone else who witnessed it!

“You all… where are you going?”

After continuously killing a dozen some Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples, Lin Ming suddenly turned his head to look at the four Soaring Feather God Mountain disciples.

Even though he had killed so many people, his hands weren’t stained with a single drop of blood; they still remained as clear and bright as jade.

In that moment, the four Soaring Feather God Mountain disciples felt as if they had fallen into an icy lake!

The gray-clothed woman turned deathly pale. She knew that she was facing the greatest crisis of her life.

At this time, fleeing meant certain death and staying here meant they would likely die!

Her mind raced. She grit her teeth and said, “If you have the ability then kill off everyone here. Otherwise, news of you killing off all the disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace and Soaring Feather God Mountain will definitely leak out. At that time, the saints will chase you down with everything they have!

“The only exception is if you can take root in the Asura Road or the spiritas and find a super True Divinity influence to shelter you! However, you are a mere human, and there are no True Divinities amongst humanity!”

The gray-clothed woman hastily breathed out. She was trying to divert all fear and hatred towards Lin Ming so that everyone else here would stand with her.

This was a method of self-perseveration. And as the gray-clothed woman hoped, the atmosphere in the pit began turning to panic. The complexions of many people changed as they looked at Lin Ming.

Indeed, if this man was afraid of the Good Fortune Saint Palace and didn’t want news of him slaughtering their disciples to leak out, then he would kill everyone here.

“Just who are you? With your talent it is impossible for you to remain nameless and it is also impossible for you to come from nowhere!”

The gray-clothed woman verbally attacked Lin Ming once more, questioning his identity.

In the eyes of those present, this sort of peerless talent was even able to suppress Sheng Mei and the Good Fortune Saint Son. His existence was completely unreasonable.

Moreover, for him to be born amidst the human race that was on the brink of extinction, that was even more unbelievable.

Speaking of the human race, the gray-clothed woman couldn’t help but think of the man known as Lin Ming who had existed several thousand years ago. Although Lin Ming had already perished, his past fame remained vibrant and storied. Even though the saints tried to dilute his legend, they weren’t able to cover him up.

As for this gray-clothed woman, she was a junior that was born over 2000 years after Lin Ming had died. To her, the name of Lin Ming rang in her ears like thunder. This was a person that had caused the founder of their Soaring Feather God Mountain, Soaring Feather God King, to personally hunt him down!

A True Divinity had disregarded their status to chase after a Holy Lord. From this treatment, it could be imagined just how terrifying Lin Ming was!

“This person, he shouldn’t be Lin Ming…” The gray-clothed woman immediately denied the thought that crossed her mind.

The final trial was aimed towards juniors and this concept was supported by the Laws that permeated this space. Even if Lin Ming was still alive, his skeletal age would be several thousands of years; he would not be a junior. Even if the current Lin Ming’s strength was several times that of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, once he arrived within this final trial space and was suppressed by the Laws, the him that was several thousands of years old would find it impossible to display such a terrifying combat strength.

As the gray-clothed woman spoke, Lin Ming's blazing eyes had stared at her the entire time.

By now, there were already some trial challengers that were stepping closer to the gray-clothed woman.

As they looked at Lin Ming, there was both fear and awe in their eyes. No matter how they looked at it, this man didn't seem to be someone who was under the protection of a peak great influence. This was because the number of influences that could stand against the Good Fortune Saint Palace and offer shelter to someone who killed their disciples could be counted on two hands. Moreover, many of those influences had representatives here, and this man clearly didn't belong to any of them.

"You're quite good at shifting public opinion."

A cold light flashed in Lin Ming's eyes as he saw the response of these people and the gray-clothed woman's expression. At this time she was trying to shift all the hatred and fear she could find onto him, use that to arouse the anger of the people, and then try to find a favorable turn in the ensuing chaos. Without a doubt, this was the most intelligent method.

But what a pity, all her plans were meaningless.

As the one who possessed absolute power, he could control the life and death of all those present!

Those with me, live. Those against me, die!

Lin Ming watched as more and more trial challengers were pulled over to the side of the gray-clothed woman. He coldly smiled and then said, "I will give you all a choice. You can choose to stand behind that woman and die with her, or leave her and have a chance of living on..."

Lin Ming's words were like the whispers of a demon's bargain. The trial challengers felt their hearts turn cold. Some of them had already subconsciously started to move far away from the gray-clothed woman.

"Stop being naïve! Do you really think he will let you live!?" Seeing this scene, the gray-clothed woman desperately shouted in panic, not caring whether or not this move would really allow her to live.

However, no matter how much she shouted, more and more people drew further away from her.

The logic was simple. To resist that man was hopeless. But if they chose to submit to him, he might not necessarily kill them.

Soon, the only ones left with the gray-clothed woman were the three other disciples from Soaring Feather God Mountain.

At that time, Lin Ming attacked!

His speed was mind-bogglingly fast. Spear light cut through the void. It was an arrow striking true, instantly piercing through the gray-clothed woman's protective astral essence. Blood shot out and she miserably coughed as her ruptured body was sent flying backwards.

Another Soaring Feather God Mountain disciple also died with her.

Two people died without any suspense. Lin Ming showed no mercy. In the war between humanity and the saints, Soaring Feather God Mountain was also involved. All the disciples of Soaring Feather God Mountain were equally stained with the blood of humanity.

However, there was still a man and woman disciple of Soaring Feather God Mountain left remaining. Lin Ming didn't kill them because he had a special use for them.

He waved his hand and locked down those two people with a force field.

The two people shook. Their faces paled. As they looked at Lin Ming, both hate and fear clouded their eyes.

Chapter 1977A – Stirring Up Trouble

Chapter 1977A – Stirring Up Trouble

…

…

…

At this time, the only ones left alive were the two disciples from Soaring Feather God Mountain and the several dozen Asura Road disciples. When Lin Ming turned his eyes towards these Asura Road disciples, all of them held their breath.

Among these people, Lin Ming could see several youths wearing a uniform robe as well as having seven-colored feather crowns on their heads.

He recognized this clothing – these people came from Divine Void Divine Kingdom!

Divine Void Divine Kingdom was one of the two True Divinity level influences of the Asura Road. The one who established Divine Void Divine Kingdom, Soul Emperor Divine Void, was Empyrean Divine Mist's brother. But at the same time, they shared a deep-seated blood hatred with each other.

"The lot of you, come over here!"

Lin Ming pointed towards the disciples from Divine Void Divine Kingdom. The group of them turned pale white.

However, the obediently followed Lin Ming's orders and walked over.

"Use your soul attacks to severely wound these two. Don't kill them."

Lin Ming pointed towards the two Soaring Feather God Mountain disciples who were imprisoned by him.

The Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciples gulped. Just why did they need to use soul attacks?

Did this omnipotent human not know any soul attacks? However, this was also possible. After all, humans weren't known to excel in the domain of the soul.

After a brief bout of doubts, the Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciples complied with the command.

Although Lin Ming had imprisoned the movements of the two Soaring Feather God Mountain disciples, he hadn't locked down their spiritual sea. To break through spiritual sea defenses, not harming their lives while getting just the right amount of soul damage, this was a difficult task. The two Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciples that did so could be said to have given their everything to accomplish this.

Finally, they accomplished their task. The two disciples from Soaring Feather God Mountain fell into an unconscious state.

Lin Ming inspected the condition of these two disciples and was satisfied with the results.

“Very good. Then, it's time to deal with the rest of you…”

As Lin Ming spoke these words, everyone's complexions changed as if they had fallen into an icy lake. “You…”

Without waiting for these people to respond, black energy began surging up from Lin Ming, wildly erupting like a black volcano.

This black energy was Lin Ming's soul force!

Such a terrifying soul force instantly shocked the Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciples!

Their jaws fell down and their eyes widened to full moons. “How is this even possible!?”

These disciples came from Divine Void Divine Kingdom and were also spiritas, thus they had a naturally deep understanding into the aspect of soul force. They originally thought that because Lin Ming was a human his attainments in the soul weren’t too amazing, and thus they were ordered to attack the Soaring Feather God Mountain disciples.

But now, seeing this human erupt with such a dreadful soul force, they were all frightened to death!

It had to be known that this was all occurring beneath the suppression of the final trial Laws. If this were outside, to what extent would his soul force reach? Perhaps even a spiritas Empyrean wouldn’t be able to compare!

A human, in the aspect of soul force, was able to surpass a spiritas Empyrean?

Such formidable strength and with such a terrifying soul force, could this man be the reincarnation of the Asura Road Master?

This was a ridiculous idea. But, what was occurring was so stunning that their frazzled minds couldn’t help but produce such a thought.

At this time, a black cube appeared in front of Lin Ming, slowly spinning around.

The black cube’s surface was engraved with mysterious patterns. As it appeared, it caused the surrounding space to collapse. Dim motes of divine light gathered in space, slowly floating towards the black cube, as if the black cube contained a real universe within.

This black cube was the Magic Cube.

During these years, Lin Ming had already fully restored his soul force. Moreover, because of the several reincarnations he underwent, because he experienced the hundred tastes of life and death, because his mood and state of mind had been tempered, his soul force had broken past its previous boundaries to achieve an even more perfect Eternal Soul.

The Eternal Soul, ancient and unchanging.

Although this soul force might not be able to compare to those peak spiritas characters, in terms of quality, no one could compete!

As Lin Ming used his perfect Eternal Soul to galvanize the Magic Cube, he was truly able to command it!

For a time, the winds changed, whipping up. Massive dark clouds covered the surrounding space, and all of the Asura Road disciples suddenly saw illusions surround them as their spiritual seas fell into enemy hands.

The truth was that the moment these people saw the Magic Cube, their eyes were no longer able to leave it.

They forgot what danger they were in, they forgot everything. In their eyes all that existed was this divine object. Afterwards, because of the Magic Cube, their spiritual seas swung completely open.

Out of so many people, not a single one was able to resist Lin Ming.

What Lin Ming first wanted to do was erase all the memories of what had just occurred from the minds of these people.

Using Lin Ming's evolved Eternal Soul and the divine tool that was the Magic Cube, he could perfectly accomplish this. He could do so with such skill that not even a True Divinity would be able to see through it.

Erasing memories was like a skilled criminal erasing all traces of his own crime from a crime scene. In order to be flawless, the criminal would have to remove every possible trace of his presence there, including every thread of hair or even mote of dust, all in order to make it seem that he had never been there at all, to the point that even the most intelligent detective would be at a loss of what to do, unable to argue against that criminal at all.

Lin Ming was such a criminal. This was because he knew that when these people returned, the ones investigating them would be Soul Emperor Divine Void and Soaring Feather God King.

Although Lin Ming's strength was far inferior to these True Divinities', his advantage was that he possessed the Magic Cube and Eternal Soul. When it came to erasing memories, if Lin Ming claimed he was second then no one in this universe could say they were number one.

After earnestly erasing all of these memories, Lin Ming repeatedly inspected them to make sure not a single trace of his presence was left behind. Then, he started to forge memories.

After erasing memories there would be an unexplainable void where they had been. One naturally had to craft new memories for the plan to be perfect.

However, while erasing memories was easy, forging memories was far, far more difficult.

If Lin Ming tried to forge memories from nothing, he couldn't guarantee that he could hide the truth from a True Divinity.

But Lin Ming had another plan. That was, to manufacture 'illusions' that occurred in reality, and have these people experience what Lin Ming wanted them to.

Thus, they would believe everything that happened to them and would think that it was all real.

If they believed everything they saw was real, then these memories would truly be real.

No matter how sharp a True Divinity's sense was, if they were to inspect memories that were real, what would they be able to find out?

Thus Lin Ming didn't falsify memories. Rather, beneath his guidance, he had these Asura Road and Soaring Feather God Mountain disciples have real memories.

Under Lin Ming's control, the Asura Road disciples' minds were brought back to the moment they had seen the great ghost appear above the blackwater swamp.

In order to seize treasures they had rushed to the scene, where they engaged in a fierce battle with the disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace and Soaring Feather God Mountain.

Chapter 1977B – Stirring Up Trouble

Chapter 1977B – Stirring Up Trouble

…

…

…

The Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples had used their body metamorphosis. They summoned the power from Famine's flesh and blood in their body, causing casualties to stack up all around them.

But then, wind and clouds rose up from within the final trial, and the world started to change colors. Heavenly retribution descended!

Countless Asura Law runes condensed into divine thunder that rumbled onto the 20 some Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples, immediately disintegrating them into ashes!

The illusion Lin Ming crafted made it seem that the Laws of the final trial didn't abide the existence of the abyssal demon Famine's reappearance, and it would descend to erase it from the world. Moreover, with Lin Ming's understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao, the illusion of heavenly retribution crashing down to earth was recreated perfectly, all of it seeming real.

In this alone, no matter how a True Divinity tried to look through they wouldn't be able to see any flaws. This was because Lin Ming's understandings of the Asura Laws were number one within the 33 Heavens!

As for creating the illusion that the abyssal demon was erased in the final trial, Lin Ming didn't fear the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would return at the next final trial to verify this. This was because every time the final trial opened, what occurred inside was unpredictable and it was impossible to figure out the rules that governed this space. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would never think that the memories he investigated and the incomparably real scene of heavenly retribution were actually forged by someone with such a higher understanding of the Asura Heavenly Dao.

Following that, Lin Ming had yet to finish. His carefully prepared play was just beginning.

After the Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples were eliminated, the other Asura Road disciples would try to snatch away the treasure, and thus attack the disciples of Soaring Feather God Mountain.

Finally, two of the Soaring Feather God Mountain disciples were slain, the gray-clothed woman included, leaving behind two severely wounded disciples who fled.

The reason these two disciples were able to escape was because the other Asura Road disciples had begun infighting due to the treasure, so no one could be bothered to chase after them.

All of this seemed extremely lifelike, and also very reasonable.

Finally, the disciples of Divine Void Divine Kingdom relied on their superiority in strength and numbers to steal the treasure and run away!

And from the memories of these Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciples' memories, Lin Ming found some useful tidbits of information. For instance, they had brought some one-time use items that could play a great role in stealing away treasures, such as interference illusory magic arrays, withdrawal-type divine runic symbols, and so forth.

These things were all taken away by Lin Ming. But in the illusions that the Divine Void Divine Kingdom disciples experienced, they had used up all of these things.

They had fought bravely and wisely, and with luck on their side they were able to wrest away the treasure. They managed to cast off their pursuers and flee into a distant mountain valley.

They were all overjoyed; this was a treasure that could even move the heart of a True Divinity!

They took out the treasure and studied it, seeing if perhaps it could increase their combat strength somehow. But then, at this time, a scene that destroyed their hearts and minds occurred.

A thick demonic energy erupted from that demonic relic!

This demon energy condensed into a giant ghost head in the skies, similar to the ghost head that appeared above the blackwater swamp at the start.

This phenomenon was too great; everyone from thousands of miles away could clearly see it.

Thus, everyone was drawn to this area and the disciples of Divine Void Divine Kingdom had their positions revealed.

The other inner Asura Road disciples rushed towards this location, and even the two severely wounded disciples from Soaring Feather God Mountain came here with looks of deep unwillingness etched on their faces.

The disciples of Divine Void Divine Kingdom were panicked. They had relied on luck to escape the previous mess, and now facing so many people, there was likely no way they could win. In a worst case scenario, they would follow in the steps of the Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples and turn to dust!

And at this time, that massive ghost head in the skies suddenly spread outwards, dissolving into a force field that covered the surrounding area for hundreds of miles. Everyone lost consciousness as they were covered in this black energy…

This was also Lin Ming's final illusion.

From this point on, false memories transitioned into real memories.

Even if Lin Ming's skill in forging memories far surpassed anyone else in the 33 Heavens, he couldn't guarantee that these little white mice wouldn't experience traces of confusion and loss during the transition period of the memories from false to real.

Although this was only a minor flaw, the sense of a True Divinity had a high chance of discovering this.

But, if they were to faint and then reawaken, they would believe that everything that just occurred was realer than real. No matter how a True Divinity investigated, they wouldn't discover anything wrong with these 'real memories'.

When Lin Ming had been conjuring up these illusions, these little 'white mice' had already been transferred to the mountain valley.

Moreover, it wasn't Lin Ming that moved them. Under the thrall of his illusions, they flew their themselves.

All the scenery they witnessed along the way was real.

Even their movements in the air, their offensive and defensive maneuvers, everyone's expressions, it was all lifelike.

As for the two severely wounded Soaring Feather God Mountain disciples, they also joined the encirclement. Even when the ghost head appeared, they still weren't willing to leave.

Then, when the ghost head exploded into a wave of energy, they too fell unconsciousness.

All of this was perfectly done. Of course, when these people woke up it would be many days later. At that time the final trial would be on the verge of ending.

These people believed they had all fallen unconscious due to the force field formed by the demon relic, and that force field was also what protected them from the attacks of the vicious beasts on the fourth level.

But they wouldn't be happy at all. In particular, the disciples of Divine Void Divine Kingdom…

This wasn't because they had missed out on continuing the final trial, but because after they woke up, they discovered that the demon relic had vanished after the eruption of the force field. They didn't know where it had gone, and the worse stroke of luck was that the others believed that the demon relic was still in their hands, and yet they had no way to explain what had occurred…

……….

At this time, Lin Ming started heading towards the final trial's fifth level alone.

The demon relic was taken by Lin Ming and placed within his spatial ring.

As for the little black dragon that had eaten its fill, it was deeply slumbering in the Magic Cube. After it swallowed the flesh and blood of Famine, all of it turned into a red ball of meat in its stomach. This meat ball would require some time to digest.

This time, Lin Ming could be said to have had a rewarding trip.

However, he didn't have time to study the demon relic more in-depth. All he felt was an incomparably pure strength contained within it. If he could refine this strength, then whether it was him or the small black dragon, there would be a tremendous benefit.

From between the fourth level and fifth level there also existed a test, just like the Gate of Laws between the second and third levels.

When Lin Ming came to the final trial last time, the checkpoint here was the 33 Heavens Divine Seal Altar. Lin Ming had easily climbed it. This time, the test was different; it was not an illusory killing array. Of course, he had no problem this time either.

Lin Ming easily stepped into the fifth level. At this time, a voice echoed in his mind.

"Your methods are quite cruel…"

This voice was somewhat weak and somewhat ethereal. Lin Ming was extremely familiar with it; it was Empyrean Divine Mist.

During these past years, beneath the sustaining effects of the Magic Cube, Empyrean Divine Mist's soul force was like a candle in the wind but it never extinguished. Most of the time he was deep in slumber.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. "Senior has awakened?"

Chapter 1978 – Fighting the Undying Polar Ice Once More

Chapter 1978 – Fighting the Undying Polar Ice Once More

…

…

…

“I’ve awakened… it seems, I slept for another thousand years?”

“Mm. To be exact, you’ve slept for 1058 years…” Lin Ming smiled.

Over a thousand years ago, Empyrean Divine Mist had awoken for a short ten days. Then he fell asleep once more, resting until this moment.

The Magic Cube had the effect of stabilizing the soul. Empyrean Divine Mist wasn’t in a bad or good situation. As long he went through his period of slumber then his soul force wouldn’t weaken or increase.

“What you did this time could be called giving Divine Void a good deal of trouble.”

Empyrean Divine Mist lightly said. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had done all of this in order to obtain the demon relic; he wouldn’t give up on it so easily. And in terms of strength, Divine Void Divine Kingdom was weaker than the Good Fortune Saint Palace. However, within the Asura Road and with the protection of the Asura Road’s Laws, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign shouldn’t dare to do anything reckless.

“Perhaps. Cause and effect runs in circles. Divine Void and Senior have a grudge with each other, and since I’ve received help from Senior, it’s normal for me to pay some interest back to Divine Void Divine Kingdom…”

Lin Ming’s response was calm. He was someone who remembered grudges and gratitude. When he attacked the disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace and Soaring Feather God Mountain, this was because they were on opposite sides to begin with, not to mention that they had already killed many Asura Road disciples when they took the treasure. If Lin Ming were to let them go, then in the next several thousand years, the number of young human elites they killed would only increase.

Regarding Divine Void Divine Kingdom, Lin Ming only wanted to deal with Soul Emperor Divine Void. As for the disciples of Divine Void Divine Kingdom, Lin Ming had no problems with them, thus he let them live.

“Is that so… the samsara of gratitude and grudge, the circle of karma…”

Upon mentioning his enmity with Divine Void, Empyrean Divine Mist had a strange feeling stir in his heart. Ever since he was sealed in the Magic Cube, Divine Void probably thought he had died…

“But, everything you’ve done today will only give Divine Void some trouble. It’s impossible to shake his foundation.”

Divine Mist quietly murmured. Lin Ming nodded. “I’m not hoping that this matter will provoke some great war. At most, it will divert the attention of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. And I also feel that I can’t hide the truth of this matter from the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. He will likely discover some questionable points…”

Lin Ming didn’t care whether or not his actions would provoke a war. His main goal was to conceal his whereabouts.

“Mm, making sure you are safe and ensuring no news that you are alive spreads is more important than anything else. You still have many days ahead for that…”

As Empyrean Divine Mist spoke, he fell into a deep slumber once more.

Lin Ming's current strength was lacking. According to Empyrean Divine Mist's earlier suggestion, he had to complete the seventh revolution of the Grand Reincarnation Art and raise his cultivation to the half-step Empyrean or even true Empyrean realm before he could fully reveal himself.

But Lin Ming could feel that the Empyrean realm was a long, long time away.

While he simultaneously studied two of the highest Laws and had to pay attention to the Grand Reincarnation Art, Lin Ming doubted he would be able to break into the Empyrean realm within 10,000 years.

This speed was far slower than Emperor Shakya.

And compared to the Good Fortune Saint Son, it was even slower than that.

This was the price of practicing the Grand Reincarnation Art.

At this time, Lin Ming entered the final trial's fifth level.

Although the space within the final trial changed each time, the fifth level always stayed the same.

The one who guarded this floor was the Undying Inferno and the Undying Polar Ice.

In the past, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei had joined forces to bring down the Undying Polar Ice, causing their reputations to soar.

Now he arrived here by himself and would have to face the enemy alone.

Because he practiced the Grand Reincarnation Art, Lin Ming had a skeletal age advantage in the final trial. The Undying Inferno's attacks weren't able to pose any threat to him. He relied on his understandings of the Fire Laws to easily avoid every strike aimed his way.

Then, the Undying Inferno eventually exhausted itself of energy and turned into a phoenix egg. Lin Ming crossed his hands behind his back, looking at this happen.

He didn’t attack, but waited for the Undying Polar Ice that was hidden in the phoenix egg to hatch out.

Lin Ming had chosen to strike down the fifth level guardian while it was in its Undying Polar Ice form in order to obtain the highest completion percentage possible.

This was because the Undying Polar Ice was restrained by Lin Ming’s attributes.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Cold energy started to gather from the heavens and earth, condensing high in the air.

Horrifying Ice Laws locked down this space. One could see that in the center of this gathering cold energy, there was a flashing ice crystal. This ice crystal started to condense into a small ice phoenix.

As more cold energy gathered, the phoenix grew larger and larger. In an instant, an aura that could freeze the world suddenly and furiously whipped up!

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The earth quaked. Glacier after glacier drilled out from the ground, towering 100,000 feet high!

A lilting smile crossed Lin Ming’s lips.

Undying Polar Ice. After not seeing it for several thousand years, he was finally able to fight it again!

In the past, Lin Ming had to wait for Sheng Mei to use the Umbral Heaven Ice Array and pass through layers of dangers, blocking the Undying Polar Ice’s attacks in order to exhaust it of energy. When it had turned into an egg, Lin Ming then rushed out, using the Black Dragon Spear to kill the Undying Polar Ice in a single all-out strike!

But this time, Lin Ming didn’t plan on waiting. The moment the Undying Polar Ice appeared, Lin Ming rushed forwards!

He wanted to face the Undying Polar Ice while it was in its peak state. He planned to engage it in a brutal melee!

This was a crazy plan. If Sheng Mei saw this then even she would be understandably shocked.

Hu - !

With a keen whistling sound, the Black Dragon Spear flew out from Lin Ming’s spatial ring!

This spear hadn’t appeared for thousands of years. In these thousands of years, Lin Ming had also never fought with everything he had in his peak state.

Now, as the familiar weight of the Black Dragon Spear returned to its owner’s hand, it emitted a loud hum as if the soul of a Divine Dragon were awakening within the shaft!

Hum –

Hum –

Hum –

Threads of cold energy gathered, becoming increasingly thick and potent. Within the chilling icy winds, the Undying Polar Ice was enraged. It was angry that a mere human dared to challenge its endless might!

It turned towards Lin Ming and hurtled down at him, its speed soon reaching the extreme. In the legends, it was said that ancient Rocs could pass 90,000 miles with a single flap of the wings, without needing to use any Space Laws.

Although the ice phoenix was slower than an ancient Roc, it wasn't much worse. Of course, this was in a situation where it didn't utilize the Space Laws. Only this speed was true speed, a speed capable of surpassing the reaction time of others!

This was because its attack wouldn't bring about fluctuations of the Laws, thus it became impossible for others to sense it.

Whoosh!

The Undying Polar Ice immediately appeared in front of Lin Ming. It stretched out a giant claw that radiated a freezing light, grasping down at him!

This claw was covered with a freezing ice force field. Any life form that was covered by this force field would have their mortal body and soul both frozen away.

So to avoid the Undying Polar Ice's attack, speed alone was not enough. One needed the ability to deal with the force field that came along with the Undying Polar Ice's attack!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank and he drew backwards. His body started to burn with black flames. As these flames lit up all around him, they carried the true meaning of nirvanic rebirth, directly burning away that freezing ice force field.

Lin Ming stepped on the void and vanished like smoke. In terms of natural speed he was inferior to the Undying Polar Ice, thus he used the Space Laws without hesitation. And when it came to the Space Laws, he surpassed the Undying Polar Ice by countless miles. Even if he wildly used the Space Laws however he wished, it would be near impossible for the Undying Polar Ice to lock onto these Law fluctuations and locate Lin Ming's position.

In an instant, Lin Ming had already appeared behind the Undying Polar Ice.

Nine great stars gleamed above Lin Ming's head. Starlight poured down, pouring into his mortal body. From within him, the Purple Temple Dao Palace, Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace, Extreme Polar Dao Palace, Daevic Eye Dao Palace, all of them began to open one after another!

The Black Dragon Spear was infused with the power of nine stars. It crushed through space with overwhelming momentum as it savagely pounded down!

Kacha!

Like a bolt of divine lightning falling from the highest heavens, it smashed into the Undying Polar Ice's back.

The phoenix's back could even carry a mountain. But as Lin Ming's spear smashed into it, not only did the freezing ice force field shatter apart but those beautiful ice feathers also cracked open, leaving bits and pieces of ice flying out.

Icy blue blood flowed out from these wounds. In truth, this wasn't blood but liquid condensed from the purest ice energy in the world. If an ice-attribute martial artist could obtain but a single drop, it would be a treasure beyond compare.

The Undying Polar Ice was incensed. It had protected the final trial's fifth level for billions of years, and during this period there had been people capable of shattering the egg it transformed into, but there had never been someone capable of wounding it in direct frontal combat!

It roared out once more as it hurtled towards Lin Ming!

Ka ka ka!

The void froze, cracking open! A deep blue beam of light shot out from the Undying Polar Ice's mouth, straight towards Lin Ming's chest!

This freezing cold beam of energy was horrifyingly powerful; it far exceeded Lin Ming with his suppressed cultivation.

After all, the Undying Polar Ice was in its peak state. When it was created in the past, it was formed in a default state so that no one would be able to defeat it in its peak condition.

Lin Ming didn't defend. His two pupils suddenly contracted, turning as thin as pins. Around his pupils, mystical patterns appeared.

In that moment, he had opened the Three Lives Pupil.

Three Lives Pupil – All Existence to Void!

When combined with the Daevic Eye Dao Palace, in a mere moment, the complete method with which the Undying Polar Ice utilized the Ice Laws was seen through by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's eyes no longer saw that blinding blue light. Rather, what he saw was a Law structure composed of endless cold energy essence.

The power of thunder and fire erupted from Lin Ming's body. The phantom of the Heretical God Tree appeared behind him. The two strengths collided and a terrifying explosion of energy blew into the skies, causing the world to change and origin energy to gush out in violent waves.

Beneath the suppression of Laws, the disparity in cultivation was made up for. The Undying Polar Ice's attack had been forcefully broken by Lin Ming!

The Undying Polar Ice became increasingly furious. It fought Lin Ming in close-range combat!

Its vorpal wings and sharp claws were dreadful weapons.

Bang!

With another frontal collision, Lin Ming was sent flying back. But, he didn't fall into a disadvantage. He rushed out once more, engaging the Undying Polar Ice in brutal battle!

A battle of bodies, a showdown of energy. The Black Dragon Spear in Lin Ming's hand seemed to turn into a black dragon that flew about in the air.

In the skies, a dragon and phoenix contended for supremacy!

The numerous 100,000 foot high glaciers were unable to withstand this terrifying storm of energy. All of them crashed down in rumbling avalanches.

Mountain-sized chunks of ice crashed into the ground and dissolved into icy rivers of water. This was an apocalyptic scene.

Chapter 1979 – Opening the Seventh Level

Chapter 1979 – Opening the Seventh Level

…

…

…

Ca!

In close-range melee combat, Lin Ming was finally struck by the Undying Polar Ice. Its terrifyingly sharp phoenix claws brought with them a cold light that shimmered for dozens of feet as they cut into Lin Ming's body!

Blood flew out, instantly freezing into icicles. Lin Ming turned into a meteor that smashed into the ground!

Bang!

The frozen earth cracked as a giant crater formed, fissures spreading outwards like a spider web. With this successful strike, the deep blue eyes of the Undying Polar Ice flashed with pride. It shrieked and flew straight towards the icy crater!

However, the moment that it approached the crater in the ice, a black spear light thrust out, bringing with it a dreadful power and momentum that tore through all!

This spear light ripped into the Undying Polar Ice's chest!

The Undying Polar Ice released a sad and pained scream. Its blue feathers were stained with blood once again.

Lin Ming's strike contained the condensed Laws of the Asura Heavenly Dao, and gathered the supernatural strength of the 33 Heavens, and it was even supported with the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. This was nearly his strongest strike, but it still wasn't able to pierce through the Undying Polar Ice's body.

The Undying Polar Ice was submerged in endless black light as it came wildly tumbling down from the skies. For thousands of miles around, all the clouds of frost in the air were blown away!

At this time, the blood-drenched Lin Ming rushed out from the broken debris of ice. He moved forwards, seeming to teleport as he smashed his spear down behind the Undying Polar Ice!

Kacha!

With a loud explosion, it wasn't just blue blood that flowed out from the Undying Polar Ice's back. This time traces of a crack appeared.

This meant that in the Ice Laws which composed its body, a crack had appeared.

The Undying Polar Ice was weakening!

Although Lin Ming couldn't kill the Undying Polar Ice in a short period of time, he could still fight it to a standstill. In other words, this meant that Lin Ming would eventually win.

According to the rules of the final trial, the guardian of the fifth level, whether it was in the form of the Undying Inferno or Undying Polar Ice, once it gathered all its strength it would slowly use it all up in a series of attacks. Finally, when its energy was exhausted it would turn into the polar ice egg and the inferno egg.

The polar ice egg and inferno egg represented the lowest point of the guardian's strength.

The Undying Polar Ice was an opponent designed to become weaker the longer it fought. If it could only evenly match Lin Ming at its peak state, then its fate after it weakened could be imagined.

Thus, by the time Lin Ming had thrust another spear towards the belly of the Undying Polar Ice, the result of this battle had already been decided.

A crack appeared on the Undying Polar Ice’s belly.

Spear after spear, Lin Ming continued his barrage of attacks, smashing down his spear.

Beneath this storm of attacks, more and more cracks appeared on the Undying Polar Ice!

Crystalline ice feathers fell off in a flurry of frost. Ice essence that was condensed into blue blood recklessly showered down.

Bang!

A loud explosion filled the air. The Undying Polar Ice was no longer able to resist Lin Ming’s continuous onslaught. Its body that was lined with cracks completely shattered apart, causing ice energy to surge outwards. Like this, the Undying Polar Ice exploded in the air into a mass of freezing fog!

Whorl whorl whorl –

A terrifying wave of cold energy swept out, forming an ice storm. Seeing this rapidly expanding ice vortex, Lin Ming let out a light breath.

The test of the fifth level had ended. The Undying Polar Ice had been killed by him before it had turned into an egg!

Moreover, he had done this alone.

In the history of the Undying Polar Ice, in the 10 billion years of history since it had been created by the Asura Road Master, something like this had never occurred.

As the Undying Polar Ice died, the towering glaciers started to melt. The snow and ice slowly faded away and the space of the fifth level was restored to its original appearance.

Then, Lin Ming checked his completion percentage…

In truth, by this time Lin Ming no longer cared about his completion percentage. He wanted to enter the final trial's seventh level and obtain the complete Asura Sutra.

The reason he chose to kill the Undying Polar Ice using such a difficult method was to test the limits of his strength.

"Completion rate, 95%!"

This completion percentage was three points higher than the first time Lin Ming had come to the final trial.

Lin Ming guessed that he should have obtained the full amount of points possible after killing the Undying Polar Ice by himself. In fact, he should have obtained extra points due to his method of completion, but it was likely that the Asura Road Master never expected that something like this would happen, thus he didn't specifically add in a rule that would only apply if someone as formidable as Lin Ming were to appear.

"95%. It looks like the final five percent will be found in the final trial's seventh level!"

As Lin Ming thought this, he stepped into the sixth level.

The sixth level was nothing but chaos. Here, the skies and earth were the same color, fundamentally indiscernible from each other. Only the endless mystical traces of the Laws that covered the world differentiated the surroundings of this level.

There were no dangers in the sixth level; it was a place used for rest and for providing rewards.

The last time Lin Ming was here, he had obtained a reward.

This time he had brought the emperor jades of fate to open the seventh level.

Rumble rumble rumble!

As Lin Ming strode into the center of the sixth level, the earth collapsed and a fathomless abyss appeared.

This abyss had no bottom, as if it was a connection to another universe.

And from the center of the abyss, a massive black stone statue slowly floated up.

This black stone statue was carved in the shape of an Asura war god. The war god held a dragon spear and wore a suit of black battle armor. His body was covered in ferocious scales and he stood upon a Divine Dragon. His entire being overflowed with an ancient and savage aura, one that shocked the mind and made one feel fearful.

On the armor of this war god, there were three small grooves placed in a row.

On the side of these grooves there were some familiar words, words that Lin Ming had read before.

“33 Heavens, Asura inheritance, passed down to the unrivalled genius, passed down to the one with great destiny, passed down to the fated one!

“The word of Fate, to be predestined or not, if youare fated then even through the endless universes you will still find myinheritance, but if you are not fated then even if your talent is unrivalledyou shall never enter the gate.

“I left behind three emperor jades of essence, energy,and divine. The emperor jades have spiritual powers, and if you are fated thenthey shall fall into your hands. If you lack fate then no matter how muchhardship you undergo to find them you shall never succeed. Bring the threeemperor jades to this land and open wide the gates to the seventh level.”

These words described the key to opening the seventh level… that was, the three emperor jades of fate!

For those that were fated, even if they didn't search for the emperor jades, the emperor jades would look for them instead. And for those that weren't fated, even if the emperor jades were placed in their hands they still wouldn't recognize it.

Lin Ming had already collected the three emperor jades a long time ago. Now, the time had come. He would open the gate to the seventh level.

At this time, Lin Ming's mood was extremely calm.

He slowly flew before the Asura statue and took out the three emperor jades.

These three emperor jades were similar in shape, but their lines and textures were completely different. And for Lin Ming who was proficient in the Asura Laws, the traces that covered the surface of these emperor jades possessed unexplainable Laws, as if they were the most beautiful and harmonious designs in the world.

Lin Ming closed his eyes. He quietly felt the connection between the Asura statue and the three emperor jades of fate.

Then, he began placing the three emperor jades into the Asura statue...

Chapter 1980 – Emperor Cemetery

Chapter 1980 – Emperor Cemetery

…

…

…

The three emperor jades were placed into the grooves one at a time. The emperor jades lined up in the grooves, and then, the entire statue lit up with a dazzling divine light. At the same time, a vortex began forming in the void beneath the statue.

Lin Ming was sucked into the vortex. The scenery changed, and in the next moment, Lin Ming arrived in a dark gray world.

The first time Lin Ming entered the smelting trial he had already learned about the existence of the seventh level. When he discovered that the three emperor jades of fate were required to open it, he had always been thinking just what that place would look like.

Would this be a test with a heaven-defying difficulty, or would it purely be rewards?

Lin Ming's imagination had become even more intense when he obtained the third emperor jade of fate. But because of all the tribulations he had suffered afterwards and everything else that had occurred to him, he had pushed those thoughts out of his head.

Today, Lin Ming would finally step into the seventh level and see everything there…

But the scene that appeared in front of him left him startled.

What he saw was… a vast cemetery.

This was a pure gray world. The sky was disorderly and the earth was barren. In this land, rows of graves were lined up, tens of thousands of them.

These graves occupied a square area of land. They were all of the same gray and black stone, a solemn and reverent atmosphere swirling around them.

Lin Ming didn't know if they were protected by an array formation or if the tombstones were forged from some type of special rock. But, even after 10 billion years passed, these tombstones remained whole. The only difference was that one could feel the breath of endless years coming from the elegant writings carved into the stone.

Lin Ming walked to the front of a tombstone. This tombstone was carved with the words of the ancient god race.

"Extreme Emperor Heavens' Reverent White Arc Xiu Kao's Tomb."

A mortal's tombstone would also have an inscription; it would be carved with the names of their children and grandchildren.

As for this tombstone, it didn't have anything besides the grave master's name and title.

As for the words Extreme Emperor Heavens, it should be the name of a universe, in other words, one of the 33 Heavens.

Lin Ming had never heard the name of Extreme Emperor Heavens before. But, this wasn't strange at all. Far too much time had passed and it wasn't strange for the names of the 33 Heavens to change during this period. Moreover, this was a name that existed 10 billion years ago. In the ancient era, every one of the 33 Heavens was prosperous and glorious. But now, only 16 Heavens were developed; the other 17 Heavens had turned into wildernesses.

Reverent White Arc Xiu Kao, of these words, Xiu Kao was clearly a name. It was a strange surname and an even stranger first name, but perhaps in the ancient era 10 billion years ago, this might have been a normal or even popular name.

As for Reverent White Arc, that was naturally the title of the grave's master.

What a Reverent was, Lin Ming had no idea, but it sounded like a title no worse than an Empyrean. If so, then in this cemetery where there were unknown tens of thousands of graves, was an Empyrean level or above powerhouse buried in each one?

Lin Ming found this hard to imagine. It had to be known that in the entire Divine Realm, there had only been a mere 200-300 Empyreans.

Even for the saints and spiritas, when their Empyreans were added together from each of their seven Heavens, they only had a thousand or so.

Compared to the cemetery in front of him that had tens of thousands of Empyreans buried here, Lin Ming simply felt this was too unbelievable.

The ancient era 10 billion years ago was a time when a hundred races strove for supremacy. It was a time when the primal god race and the celestials dominated the 33 Heavens. At that time, heroes rose up from the ranks and young elites were innumerable. However… if it were said that several tens of thousands of Empyreans were buried here so casually, Lin Ming would still think that it was quite odd.

As Lin Ming thought like this, he walked behind the tombstone. This part was similar to a mortal's tombstone, and was carved with the epitaph of the grave's master.

There were a few hundred words written into the stone. As Lin Ming read these words he was inwardly flabbergasted by what was written. The master of the grave was indeed an Empyrean level powerhouse, moreover, he hadn't been an ordinary Empyrean. From the vague information given, Lin Ming speculated that if this person were placed in the current era, he would be similar to a middle or even upper Empyrean.

However, this proud son of heaven that existed 10 billion years ago had actually suffered such a fate: "Bones unfound, his sword is buried here."

This grave was only the tomb of a sword; Xiu Kao's body was not here.

Lin Ming sighed. He looked at the next grave – Sky Zenith Heavens' Demon Concubine Yuan Chun's Tomb.

Lin Ming had never heard of a Sky Zenith Heavens before. If there was a Heavens that dared to call itself by such a name, then perhaps 10 billion years ago, this Sky Zenith Heavens had been one of the peak universes?

The master of this grave Yuan Chun was a woman, and according to her epitaph, she had been a peerlessly talented and proud woman. Her life had been dazzling but her final fate was "Died in battle within the great calamity of the 33 Heavens. Her feather robe lies buried here."

This grave was only a tomb for Yuan Chun's clothes.

Lin Ming continued looking. He saw many outstanding figures of the ancient past. Their origins and lives were briefly described on their graves. They came from different universes of the 33 Heavens, and each one of them was a ruler of their era, a king of their time!

Their strength was far beyond that of the Empyreans of the present!

But of these people, only a small number had their bodies buried here. Most of these graves were filled with battle armors, weapons, clothes, or some other objects that the grave master used before their death. There were even some people that only had a tombstone as a marker, with nothing inside at all.

In addition, on their epitaphs, the words '33 Heavens calamity' appeared more than once.

Demon Concubine Yuan Chi had died in battle within the great calamity of the 33 Heavens.

Martial Saint Huang Qi had died in battle within the great calamity of the 33 Heavens.

Cold Ice Fairy Yun Meng had died in battle within the great calamity of the 33 Heavens...

....

Lin Ming guessed that after these people died in the great calamity, someone had specifically built graves for them. This was because after that great war, it became too difficult to find their corpses, thus these tombs were only filled with clothes and other objects to serve as mementos to their previous existence.

Realizing this, Lin Ming became lost in thought.

In the last 10 billion years of history of the 33 Heavens, a great calamity that could be called a catastrophe of the universe had erupted many times already.

Each time, countless powerhouses died in battle. Sometimes even entire races were exterminated.

The 33 Heavens calamity that was written on these epitaphs clearly affected a much larger area than humanity's calamity, and the influence it left on the world was even greater!

In the past, these peerless powerhouses that died in the great calamity once shook the earth and heavens, ruling over vast domains through force. But even for these people, after they died, all that was left behind were these square graves that didn't even hold their bodies.

No one remembered their names, no one remembered their history. All that remained in remembrance of them was a cold tombstone.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming deeply sighed.

No matter how powerful a person, no matter how powerful a race, when they were placed in the endless river of time they were nothing more than a tiny wave. When they rose up they shined in blinding brilliance, but soon, they quickly vanished into the never-ending stream, leaving nothing behind.

This was also the reason why so many martial artists were unwilling to turn to ash, the reason they continued to climb up and seek out the road to eternal life. However, no one had ever succeeded…

“Perhaps this calamity of the 33 Heavens is the great war that erupted 10 billion years ago, and that war was the catalyst that started the primal god race’s decline from their peak. After the war, the Asura Road Master and Holy Scripture creator also went missing, and they left behind their own places of inheritance – the Asura Road and the Akashic Dream Universe. Then… could these graves have been left behind by the Asura Road Master?”

Lin Ming suddenly thought. But no matter how he turned it around in his mind, there was no way he could verify this.

He moved deeper into the cemetery. A light gray fog wafted in the air here. As Lin Ming moved forwards, the fog gradually diverged from before him and he saw what lay at the end of these tombstones.

This, was a great cliff!

And beneath this cliff was not an abyss, but an endless starry space!

This sort of feeling was as if a part of an ancient continent was thrust into space, and here was where it broke off!

Lin Ming stood on the edge of the cliff, looking at the trillions of stars that shined in the distance. As they sparkled in the far-off distance, they seemed cold and lonely. They had existed there for a long time, and would continue existing.

And in this starry space, a long distance away from Lin Ming, a massive white altar floated. As he saw this white altar, his eyes were captured by it and were no longer able to move away.

This white altar was as large as a planet and was like a pyramid in shape. From the top to the bottom, the altar consisted of 33 steps.

“Divine Seal Altar!”

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. In the past when Lin Ming attended the semifinals of the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, the test site had been the Divine Seal Altar.

But, that Divine Seal Altar had been a replica created by Empyrean Vast Universe. A long time ago, Empyrean Vast Universe had stumbled upon a fragment of the Divine Seal Altar that was forged by Empyrean Divine Seal, a human True Divinity who existed 3.6 billion years ago. Empyrean Vast Universe had fused this fragment into the replica he created, allowing that replica to obtain a portion of the ancient Divine Seal Altar's spirituality.

However, the truth was that the 'original' Divine Seal Altar that Empyrean Divine Seal created 3.6 billion years ago was also a replica.

If Lin Ming wasn't wrong, then Empyrean Divine Seal had participated in the Asura Road's final trial in the past, and when he moved from the fourth level to the fifth level, he too had to face the test of ascending the Divine Seal Altar.

But even so, the difference between the sizes of that Divine Seal Altar and the one before him was far too great!

The Divine Seal Altar in front of him, whether it was in the aura it exuded or the horrifying energy it contained, all of it left Lin Ming fearful and apprehensive, nearly unable to withstand it.

Perhaps the Divine Seal Altar that was placed as the test between the fourth and fifth level was in truth nothing but a projection of the true Divine Seal Altar.

And the Divine Seal Altar was likely not even called the Divine Seal Altar; it should have another name. The name of Divine Seal Altar was only bestowed upon it because of Empyrean Divine Seal.

As Lin Ming thought this he slowly soared upwards. Carefully, he flew towards the Divine Seal Altar that was deep in the starry skies.

After some time, he began to slow down. As he looked at the Divine Seal Altar that was far off in the skies, a look of amazement crossed his eyes.

At the top of the 33 Heavens Divine Seal Altar there were clearly people!

And not just one person, but two… although they were extremely far away, Lin Ming could see two blurry figures. And as soon as he swept out his divine sense he could clearly discern their appearance.

These two people wore white long robes and their faces were wizened and elderly. They had wide thoughtful smiles, as if they were waiting there especially for him.

Lin Ming paused. He hesitated for a moment, and then continued flying towards these two old men.

Chapter 1981 – Guardians

Chapter 1981 – Guardians

…

…

…

Lin Ming observed these two old men from afar. In truth, Lin Ming had seen similar trial examiners multiple times during the final trial. For instance, the Black Asura or the Asura Road Master phantom.

Yet these two people were nothing but a wisp of divine sense left behind by powerhouses of the past; they were not their true form.

But as for these two old men standing at the top of the Divine Seal Altar, Lin Ming could see that they were true living people.

This left him surprised.

These two people, they wouldn't be related somehow to the Asura Road Master right? From the ancient era that the Asura Road Master once lived in, there should be no one capable of living for such a long time.

The Divine Seal Altar was several thousand miles from the cliff Lin Ming had been at. He flew through the void and stepped onto the Divine Seal Altar. This was the smallest level of the Divine Seal Altar, but even so it was spacious with an area that was hundreds of miles wide.

The two old men stood a hundred feet away from Lin Ming. Their expressions were kind and gentle and they had wide smiles on their faces. It was hard to tell just what race they came from.

“Junior greets Seniors.”

Lin Ming politely bowed. He discovered that these two old men were surprisingly similar in appearance, as if they were twin brothers.

The two old men didn’t speak. They only looked at Lin Ming and nodded in satisfaction.

“Seniors, is there a preference in how you wish to be called?” Lin Ming looked up. He had too many questions he wanted to ask and didn’t know just where to start from.

“I am called Clear, a single word.” One old man said as he stroked his beard.

“Ink…” The other old man said.

Upon further inspection, Lin Ming could see that there were some differences between these two old men. The old man called Clear had eyes as blue as liquid ice, as clear as a spring lake.

As for the other old man, his eyes were pitch black.

It seemed that their names were related to the color of their eyes.

What puzzled Lin Ming the most was that these two old men were clearly extremely old, and yet their eyes were as bright as a baby’s. It was simply too amazing.

Lin Ming couldn’t help but be curious as to what realm these two old men were at. From first glance, they didn’t seem different from an average person.

“Junior would like to venture a question. May I know who the two seniors are?” Lin Ming asked.

“We are… the guardians of the final trial, as well as the guardians of the Asura Road.”

“Guardians? How long have Seniors been guarding this world?” Lin Ming was shocked. The truth was that he had already guessed this, but when he thought about how long the final trial had existed for, it would be inconceivable for someone to have guarded it this long.

“We’ve been guarding this land for 600 million years. I’m not sure of the exact time…”

Clear smiled as he spoke. Lin Ming’s heart skipped a beat.

600 million years; could even a True Divinity live that long?

Lin Ming didn’t know what the lifespan of a peak True Divinity was. Generally speaking, after breaking through a boundary, one could extend their life by three times what it would have been. This also applied from the Empyrean to the True Divinity realm. If so, then a True Divinity would only be able to live for 300-400 million years. 600 million years was just a tad too unbelievable.

“My race has long lifespans to begin with. Moreover, we have methods that can prolong our lives. Most of the time we are deeply slumbering or awake in a time enchantment…”

Seeing Lin Ming’s confusion, Clear began to explain. However, Lin Ming was also dumbfounded. Humanity’s Three Lives Old Man had also used similar methods to extend his life and he had managed to live for 300 million years. But, aftereffects had still surfaced. Although he had been alive, his entire body exuded death energy, almost as if he were rotting away. These two old men before him were clearly in good health and hardy in spirit.

“It’s better to say that we are… of the temple spirit race. In this world, all things possess a spirit. My race manifests from the spirits of all creation and our lives are much longer than those of humans. Much less humans, my race even lives several times longer than the primal god race. With other methods like time enchantments added on to prolong our continued existence, my race can live for a billion years…

“As for guarding the Asura Road and the final trial, that is the life’s mission of our race. My people have guarded this land through the generations for 10 billion years.”

Clear slowly explained the secrets of the temple spirit race. Although he had explained why they were able to guard the final trial up until now, Lin Ming was still left inexplicably dazed. 10 billion years was just far too long a time. During this period, the 33 Heavens had experienced numerous calamities. During this period, countless races had emerged, prospered, and then gone extinct. As for those sects and various dynasties, their rises and declines were simply uncountable.

But this type of clan had existed for over 10 billion years. Moreover, for 10 billion years they had kept to a singular mission. How could this not shock Lin Ming!?

“Temple spirit… this junior has met them in the past also…”

Lin Ming remembered the temple spirit he encountered at the Ancient Phoenix Clan. But, that temple spirit could not compare to these two old men in strength.

“Haha! Junior, you aren’t bad. Thousands of years ago at the Great Desolate’s Emperor Stone, I saw you carve your name there!”

Ink suddenly spoke up, his voice a bit hoarser than Clear’s. Lin Ming’s heart shook. “The Emperor Stone!?”

He certainly remembered this time. When he first came to the Asura Road he had encountered Xiao Moxian and Monster Prince Duyu. The three of them had gone to the Emperor Stone together to leave behind their mark, and both he had Xiao Moxian had perfectly completed the mission. In the last billion years, there weren’t many people that were able to perfectly leave behind their name.

He never imagined that even at that time, these two old men had noticed him. And what shocked Lin Ming the most was that the him of the past was extremely different from the him of the present, and yet these two old men had been able to immediately recognize him.

“How did two seniors recognize junior?” Lin Ming asked, awed in his heart. When it came to something like this, he had to confirm just how it had happened. Otherwise, if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign were to recognize him, all that awaited him was death.

“Because of the emperor jades… and the Asura Laws in your body!” Ink pointed towards Lin Ming’s stomach. “You seem to have undergone some experience that changed you and left you reborn anew. If we didn’t carefully distinguish that then we indeed wouldn’t have recognized you. The emperor jades and Asura Laws you possesses in your body shouldn’t be wrong, and it’s impossible for such a coincidence to occur in this world.”

As Ink explained, Lin Ming let out a sigh of relief. It seemed that he hadn’t left behind some flaw in his appearance after he was reborn, and it was the emperor jades and Asura Road Laws that had given him away. These weren’t things that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would be able to recognize.

“Come, child. Let me bring you to what you want.”

Clear beckoned with his hand. Together with Lin Ming, they flew off the Divine Seal Altar and deep into the void.

The three people didn’t fly too far. When they came to a certain area in space, Clear reached out his hands and touched the void. The starry space was ripped open and a thick ancient bronze book flew out from the tear.

The title page of this ancient bronze book had several words written on it in the language of the ancient races…

Asura Sutra – Volume Three!

Seeing this ancient book, Lin Ming was overjoyed. This was what he had been looking for all this time, the ‘energy’ section of the Asura Sutra!

After collecting the books of essence, energy, and divine, Lin Ming had now gathered the complete Asura Sutra!

And things had yet to end. Ink suddenly tore open the void again, and from this spatial tear, he took out an ancient coffin as well as a suit of black armor.

The ancient coffin was simple and plain, wrapped with layers of chains. Lin Ming only had to look at it once to guess just what was inside.

This must be the energy avatar that corresponded to the third volume of the Asura Sutra.

After refining this avatar, he would have collected all three avatars. If he could bring the cultivation of these three avatars to large success and then fuse together with them again, then Lin Ming's Asura Heavenly Dao would reach a whole new level!

As for that armor, Lin Ming felt that it was extremely familiar, as if this armor was faintly resonating with his bloodline.

Ca!

Lin Ming drew out the Black Dragon Spear and compared it to the black armor. He discovered that the two items created a slight resonance with each other, as if they were originally a set.

"Black Dragon Armor. It can be attached to your body, and besides helping to defend, it can directly strengthen you. If you fully refine it and combine it with the Black Dragon Spear then you will be able to display an even greater combat strength."

Ink slowly explained as he passed the Black Dragon Armor to Lin Ming. Lin Ming received the armor with both hands and solemnly bowed. "Thank you, seniors!"

"Haha, there is no need to thank me. This was all left behind by the High Lord in the past; I have only been protecting them."

Lin Ming knew that the High Lord Ink referred to was the Asura Road Master.

When it concerned the Asura Road Master, Lin Ming had too many things he wanted to know. He couldn't help but ask, "Junior has some questions he would like to ask, but I wonder if it would be rude to do so…"

"Ask away…" Clear gently smiled.

Lin Ming took a deep breath. He asked, "Junior would like to know… from 10 billion years ago, the Asura Road Master that once shook the heavens and earth, that controlled the winds and rain, is he still alive in this world? And if Senior is alive, just where is he? And the primal god race seems to be the race Senior came from? His race is near annihilation… and yet Senior…"

Chapter 1982 – Empyrean Divine Seal

Chapter 1982 – Empyrean Divine Seal

…

…

…

Lin Ming trailed off as he spoke to here. He felt that his question had been a little rude, but he was just too curious. He had a faint premonition that the Asura Road Master hadn't yet died, but since the primal god race was on the verge of extinction, why wasn't he concerned about it?

Would he really stare blankly on as his own race slowly declined over time until it was finally destroyed…

"The High Lord, he…" Clear sighed. "Some matters aren't as simple as they seem. The High Lord has some difficulties…"

Clear didn't directly answer Lin Ming's question, but from the implied meaning, the Asura Road Master might really be alive!

Then for all these years, where had he been?

Such a terrifying character. If he had hidden himself in the universe for 10 billion years, Lin Ming would find it a bit unimaginable.

In these 10 billion years, how could he not have revealed a single trace of his presence?

The 33 Heavens had undergone far too many events. These events involved the rise of fall of countless races, including the Asura Road Master's own race, so why had he been blind to all of it?

Moreover… if his lifespan was so long, why would he be so anxious to leave behind his inheritance? This Asura Road and even the Akashic Dream Universe that was formed by the Holy Scripture creator, just what meaning was there in them?

"When Senior Asura created the Asura Road in the past, was it only to choose a successor?"

Lin Ming thought it a bit far-fetched if the Asura Road Master had created such a vast world in order to select a successor.

"The Asura Road is a single chess piece laid down by the High Lord. In short, when you need to know, you will naturally know, but when you have no need to know, asking is useless…"

Ink quietly said, diverting Lin Ming's question.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then asked, "Then, when Senior says 'need to know', when will that be?"

"You should already know yourself. That is when you can control your own destiny and transform from a chess piece to a chess player."

Clear's words were succinct. Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. To control his own destiny and become a player in the great game…

The road ahead was still too long…

Seeing Lin Ming's expression, Ink laughed. "There is no need to belittle yourself so much. For you to become a chess piece is already a great accomplishment. The great game that is spread through every universe of the 33 Heavens is far too large, but there aren't actually that many chess pieces. Each person that can be considered a chess piece is an outstanding existence amongst all peerless geniuses. And as for most people, they are not chess pieces at all, but dust that falls on the side of the board…

“Your destiny is incredible. In the last 10 billion years, you are the first one to fully complete the final trial and also the second to collect all three emperor jades. Your future is unimaginable.”

“The second? Who was the first?” Lin Ming asked, confused.

Ink said, “The High Lord believed that something called ‘fate’ existed in the world. That is, when destiny and karma are combined together, ‘fate’, is the manifestation. The emperor jades of fate only look at one’s fate. If one is fated then the emperor jades will naturally reach their hand. The first one to collect the emperor jades was Empyrean Divine Seal from 3.6 billion years ago.”

“Empyrean Divine Seal!”

Lin Ming’s mind shook. He had been the leader of humanity 3.6 billion years ago. With his strength alone, he was the mythical being who saved the entire Divine Realm. Lin Ming never thought that he would have collected all three emperor jades in the past also!

No wonder Empyrean Divine Seal had created his own Divine Seal Altar. It seemed that he too had seen the main body of the true Divine Seal Altar.

This Divine Seal Altar…

Lin Ming turned and looked at the Divine Seal Altar. More and more, he felt that the Divine Seal Altar was not some ordinary divine tool. As it was placed in the final trial’s seventh level, it seemed to be stabilizing the Asura Laws here, faintly gathering the momentum of the world!

Just what profound meaning was there in the Divine Seal Altar being placed here?

Lin Ming didn't ask any more. He knew that once he became a 'chess player' he would naturally learn of the reason.

He only asked, "Seniors, did Empyrean Divine Seal practice the Asura Heavenly Dao in the past? Did he also obtain an Asura Heavenly Dao avatar left behind by the Asura Road Master?"

Clear nodded. "He once practiced it, but the degree to which he did so was far inferior to your accomplishments… in the last 10 billion years, you are the one who has comprehended the Asura Laws to the deepest degree… as for the three avatars, the Asura Road Master refined more than one set in the past…"

Clear's words were fair and reasonable. In these last 10 billion years, there were sure to have been some people who reached the standard set by the Asura Road Master and obtained their own lucky chance.

As for the inheritance left behind by Empyrean Divine Seal, in the past, Lin Ming had only obtained a tiny fragment of the Divine Seal Art and nothing that was related to the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws. This wasn't strange. Lin Ming's own cultivation methods weren't all related to the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, and in truth wanting to transform the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws and fuse them into one's own techniques and cultivation methods was extremely difficult.

"Seniors, do you perhaps know what happened to Empyrean Divine Seal in the past? For instance… the great calamity of humanity 3.6 billion years ago…"

Lin Ming asked again. Empyrean Divine Seal had gathered all three emperor jades yet he had perished in the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago. This left him sighing deep with emotion.

A character with such a great destiny upon his body, yet he still hadn't been able to defeat the saints?

Upon mentioning Empyrean Divine Seal and the great calamity of humanity 3.6 billion years ago, a look of respect appeared in the eyes of Clear and Ink.

Ink said, “Divine Seal was an extraordinary figure and he arrived just in time to meet the troubled times of the great calamity. He cultivated to the realm of upper True Divinity, and if he were able to break past the boundaries of True Divinity he might have become a character on the same level as the High Lord.”

Ink’s words gave Empyrean Divine Seal an incredibly high appraisal. In ancient times, although upper True Divinities were rare, there was still a considerable number when they accumulated over time.

But, none of these upper True Divinities had finally been able to break through the shackles of True Divinity. Yet Ink had said that Empyrean Divine Seal had a chance of breaking past that barrier; that was absolutely a terrifying appraisal!

“But what a pity, in this great calamity that should have been a tempering experience for Empyrean Divine Seal, an anomaly appeared. The saint race’s Saint Sovereign joined forces with the abyssal Famine. The Famine of the past was far more terrifying than the Famine of today. Although Divine Seal was formidable, it was still difficult for him to face the multiple True Divinities of the saint race as well as Famine which was equal to an extreme True Divinity.

“In truth, Empyrean Divine Seal once had an escape route he could have taken. That was… to abandon humanity and leave the Divine Realm, going to the Asura Road or some other world. With Divine Seal’s strength, it would have been difficult for the saints to do anything to him. However… the choice he made was to fight for the human race. In the end, he managed to unite all the Empyreans of humanity together, and burned away the fires of his life to seal away Famine’s soul as well as killing off the True Divinities of the saints…”

Ink’s description of history was brief, but Lin Ming could still imagine just how cold and tragic that war had been 3.6 billion years ago. In that war, Empyrean Divine Seal had sacrificed himself for the sake of the human race.

Lin Ming felt nothing but the deepest respect to him for doing so.

The inheritances of humanity. Through the blood and sacrifice of those like Empyrean Divine Seal, Empyrean Primordius, and the countless unknown Empyreans, the inheritances of humanity managed to continue onwards…

If it weren't for them, it would have been impossible for Lin Ming to grow to where he was now. Even if he obtained the Magic Cube and ascended to the Divine Realm, all he would have discovered was a human race in decline, with nothing but a crowd of mortals barely trying to maintain a living. In such a broken world, where would Lin Ming go to seek inheritances and resources?

Lin Ming silently engraved all these words in his mind. Just as he wanted to say something else, a sudden thought lit up in his mind.

What Ink had said just now…

"He managed to unite all the Empyreans of humanity together, and burned away the fires of his life to seal away Famine's soul as well as killing off the True Divinities of the saints…"

Seal away Famine's soul!?

Lin Ming suddenly recalled that in the past, there had been the mysterious Divine Seal Array that was hidden deep beneath Immemorial Imperial City.

If it hadn't been for Fishy, it would have been impossible for Lin Ming to find this array formation.

Ancient Elysium Seal, Divine Seal Array…

Then, what was sealed within the Divine Seal Array was Famine's soul!?

When Lin Ming had seen that ancient array in the past, he had already found it strange. Just what sort of character had Empyrean Divine Seal been? The sealing array he personally laid down, just how powerful would it be?

In addition, there was the Ancient Elysium Seal that had suppressed the seal for 3.6 billion years. Just what existence was able to live on beneath such a terrifying suppression seal for 3.6 billion years?

And from the words of the Ancient Elysium Seal's artifact spirit, and the tone with which it spoke, it seemed that it would have to continue suppressing the seal. The artifact spirit had even needed to use all sorts of arcane techniques to extend its life…

If what was sealed beneath was that thing which possessed an unimaginably vast life force, which had a lifespan beyond comprehension, the abyssal demon Famine, then everything could be explained!

Thinking of this, Lin Ming's thoughts began to race.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was able to recklessly control Famine, even using all sorts of matter, energy, and divine souls to fatten up the creature. He was also able to split off Famine's flesh and blood and use it as a tool.

And all of this was possible because Famine's soul had been sealed away!

Without a soul, Famine was nothing but a big ball of meat with instinct. In addition to the fact that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign possessed the Grandmist Spirit Bead, he could do as he pleased with it.

If he found some way to control Famine's soul…

Just what would that be like?

The words that Clear and Ink spoke had given Lin Ming an extremely important piece of information!

In order to confirm this, Lin Ming asked, "Seniors, since you know about that war, do you know about the weapon that Empyrean Divine Seal used in the past, the Ancient Elysium Seal? And did Empyrean Divine Seal use this spirit treasure to seal away Famine's soul?"

“Ancient Elysium Seal…” Ink thought for a moment before saying, “The Ancient Elysium Seal and Divine Seal Altar were two items forged with materials that Divine Seal had obtained from the final trial in the past. These two items were Divine Seal’s most important magic tools. But, the Divine Seal Altar was shattered into pieces during the great calamity, and in order to finally seal away Famine’s soul, what he used was the Ancient Elysium Seal…”

Ink and Clear seemed to have a deep understanding of Empyrean Divine Seal. This was likely because Empyrean Divine Seal was the only other person to have obtained all three emperor jades of fate. Because of this, everything about him was paid attention to by the guardian clan of the Asura Road.

MW Chapter 1983

Chapter 1983 – Riddle of the Purple Card

…

…

…

The words of the two old men dispelled Lin Ming's last traces of doubt.

He needed to find some way to deal with Famine's soul as soon as possible.

However, even though Famine's soul had been suppressed for 3.6 billion years, it absolutely wasn't something that would be easy to contend with. Lin Ming estimated that his current boundary was far from enough.

He needed to increase his cultivation.

He had no idea how much longer the artifact spirit of the Ancient Elysium Seal was able to live on for. The main body of a transcendent spirit treasure might be able to last for 10 billion years, but its artifact spirit wouldn't be able to survive such a long span of time. In terms of lifespan, it was similar to a living being.

For instance, the artifact spirit that once inhabited Lin Ming's Black Dragon Spear and Black Dragon Armor had long since died.

"Do you have any more questions?" The two old men smiled at Lin Ming.

Lin Ming pondered for a moment. He said, "Junior has two more questions. The first is about the Holy Scripture. Seniors, do you happen to know about this inheritance?"

"Holy Scripture..." Clear and Ink seemed to fall into a deep state of recollection. "The creator of the Holy Scripture was Immortal Sovereign of the past. He was the High Lord's rival, and then he lost to the High Lord by a small difference. Afterwards they even became friends..."

The two old men spoke about the history that occurred 10 billion years ago. Their description was brief, but Lin Ming knew that their words involved innumerable secrets.

"Is Immortal Sovereign still alive?" Lin Ming asked.

The two old men shook their heads. “We are only guardians of the High Lord; we have no understanding of Immortal Sovereign…”

“Then, do seniors know if there was a peerless woman that was closely connected to Immortal Sovereign? Someone who possessed an extremely high degree of talent and was also familiar with the Laws of Life and Death?”

What Lin Ming most wanted to know was who the mysterious woman he had seen in the Asura forbidden land’s Ice Cold Mirror was. She was a peerless woman that resembled Sheng Mei and also Lin Ming’s final opponent there.

He wanted to know just how she was related to Sheng Mei.

However, the two old men shook their heads at this question. It was clear they didn’t know much about Immortal Sovereign’s affairs from 10 billion years back.

Lin Ming was slightly disappointed. But, his intuition told him that this secret shared a profound link to Sheng Mei’s own secret.

Lin Ming then asked, “My final question is, I wonder if seniors know about the three divine tools: the Stone of Eternal Life, Grandmist Spirit Bead, as well as a Purple Card?

These three divine tools had always been an enigma in Lin Ming's heart. In particular, he wanted to know the whereabouts of the last divine tool, the Purple Card.

"Three divine tools..."

Hearing Lin Ming mention the three divine tools, the vision of the two old men turned deep and thoughtful.

"The three divine tools are the most mysterious items in existence. They have existed since time immemorial, and even before the High Lord was born, there were already legends concerning the three divine tools. From different times, from different people, they had different names. For those things names have no meaning at all...

"The High Lord believed that these three divine tools were things left behind by a previous universal era. They might be great worlds that weren't able to grow, or they might even be formed from the collapse of the previous universe..."

"Universal era?" Lin Ming asked, stunned. This was the first time he had heard something like this before.

"The High Lord believed that even the universes of the 33 Heavens existed in a state of birth and death, creation and annihilation. The 33 Heavens that we currently live in grew out of nothing, having formed from a giant explosion... but before the eruption of the universe, there should have been another super universe before it. Perhaps it also possessed

33 Heavens, perhaps it was 36 Heavens, or perhaps only a single Heaven. No one can say for sure what the Heavenly Dao Laws that governed that universe were like.

"The High Lord called the birth, development, and destruction of a universe a universal era.

"The three divine tools respectively represent the condensed forms of 'essence', 'energy', and 'divine'. They correspond to the matter, energy, and Heavenly Dao Laws of a universe. The High Lord speculated that these three divine tools were condensed from the matter, energy, and Heavenly Dao Laws of the previous super universe when it was destroyed. Their existence is filled with infinite mysteries, and the High Lord once obtained one in the past – that is the Purple Card which you speak of..."

Hearing the words of these two old men, Lin Ming was shaken. The Asura Road Master had obtained the Purple Card!

In truth, he guessed that something like this had occurred. He even suspected that the entire Asura Road was created by the Asura Road Master using the Purple Card as its foundation.

"Is the Purple Card still in the hands of Senior Asura?"

"It once was..." Ink lightly shook his head, "But not afterwards."

“This…” Lin Ming was surprised. “Could there have been someone who stole away the Purple Card from Senior Asura’s hands? Or, did Senior Asura pass down the Purple Card to someone else?”

To give away such a precious divine tool was a bit too unbelievable.

“I am not sure as to specifically what happened. In the codex left behind by the High Lord, the Purple Card is mentioned. In the era before the High Lord was born there was once a peerless powerhouse who wanted to gather all three divine tools. This peerless existence believed that by collecting the three divine tools, he would be able to reign supreme over all of creation and become an immortal being. It was even because of this that a great stormy war of blood and death was whipped up through the entire 33 Heavens. But in the end, the peerless powerhouse who tried to vainly gather the three divine tools was slain and the countless remaining powerhouses scrambled and struggled to obtain the divine tools. But even so, the three divine tools disappeared and no one knew just where they went.

“After hundreds of millions of years, the divine tools appeared. With their appearance, a great storm rose up yet again. Then they disappeared once more. They were like a curse of the world, their appearance frequently followed by a great calamity of the universe!

“These three divine tools once created peerless powerhouses, but they caused even more overlords to perish and sects to be destroyed. Even entire races were exterminated.

"But to these three divine tools, all those ups and downs were nothing more than passing history. No matter how the world changed, those divine tools never changed… as if they would continue spreading for all time, existing until the day that the universe is destroyed…

"The High Lord even thought that once the universe was destroyed, a new universe would appear, evolving from the three divine tools and using them as the foundation… to be born… if things occur like this, then those three divine tools are nothing more than travelers and witnesses passing through this universe. They were originally existences that stood above all, and what martial artists can utilize is only a tiny, almost trivial, part of what they truly are. In the end, how far one can walk down the road of martial arts depends on one's self…

"They disregard the world. Even though countless chaotic tribulations and disasters are brought about by them, to these three divine tools, they are nothing more than insignificantly small events, as unworthy of mentioning as dust that falls on their surface…

"Because of this, the High Lord's desire to pursue and obtain all three divine tools faded away. He concluded that everything came down to 'fate'. The three divine tools could create a peerless being, but they could also summon a great disaster. Everything depended on 'fate'.

"In the High Lord's writings, he didn't mention the Purple Card too much. He only wrote that, if possible, it would bring about inconceivable events and changes to the world and it might give the one who possessed it the chance to turn the world for the better. But, he also warned his descendants to not obsess over this, because one cannot force the hand of 'fate'."

As the two old men finished speaking, Lin Ming was lost in thought.

Everything depended on ‘fate’…

Lin Ming himself had once wanted to chase after the Purple Card. The Grandmist Spirit Bead was in the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s hands so it was impossible for him to obtain it. Thus, he wondered whether it was possible that the Purple Card was hidden in the Asura Road.

But now, after listening to the two old men, Lin Ming’s desire to chase after the Purple Card dimmed by a great deal.

As the Asura Road Master said, the three divine tools were objects that surpassed the limits of this world. But in truth they were only witnesses to this world. While they could create powerhouses, they actually destroyed even more.

The true road of martial arts was a path one could only walk down with their own two feet…

“Thank you seniors, this junior understands…”

Lin Ming respectfully bowed towards the two old men. To resist the saints, that was a battle he would have to rely on himself to fight…

The two old men smiled. “There is nothing you need to thank us for. We only told you what you need to know. The demon relic you obtained is a treasure refined from an extreme True Divinity abyssal demon that the High Lord slayed in the past. If you can refine it then your mortal body, blood vitality, and even cultivation will greatly increase. When combined with the third volume of the Asura Sutra, you will obtain an unbelievable advantage…”

Lin Ming nodded. During this return trip to the final trial his harvests were far too great.

Lin Ming didn’t know, but as he finished speaking with the two old men and started to read through the third volume of the Asura Sutra, the day of the final trial’s opening had arrived.

At this time, many influences of the Asura Road had gathered above the Asura Sea. Even the forces of Good Fortune Saint Palace and Soaring Feather God Mountain had come, tensely waiting for the return of their disciples…

MW Chapter 1984

Chapter 1984 – Ending of the Trial

…

…

…

Great sea viewing platforms were set up on the boundless Asura Sea. And on these viewing platforms, numerous Holy Lords and World Kings had gathered. These people were powerhouses that had come from the Asura Road and 33 Heavens.

In the depths of the sea, the Good Fortune Saint Son stood on a silk rug, his hands held behind his back. He looked at a projection crystal floating before him. In just several more hours, the final trial would open.

And the disciples that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign sent would bring out news related to the demon relic!

This group was personally chosen and raised by the Good Fortune Saint Son. Besides implanting the flesh and blood of Famine in the end, which was done by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, the Good Fortune Saint Son had managed everything else. This squad of disciples could be called the Good Fortune Saint Son's direct descendants, as well as an important moment for him to prove his own abilities.

Moreover, once he brought the demon relic back, the strength of the saints would rise tremendously. The Good Fortune Saint Son himself would receive many advantages in the process. On the other hand if he were to fail such an important mission then he would surely suffer punishment and castigation in the Good Fortune Saint Palace, and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would be deeply disappointed in him.

Although the Good Fortune Saint Son had already been designated as the next successor to the title of Saint Sovereign, his status was not completely unshakeable. After all, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign still had a long life ahead of him. Who knew what would happen in the future? Perhaps there might be a junior born in the future who was just as talented as the Good Fortune Saint Son, or who possessed an even higher degree of talent. Thus the Good Fortune Saint Son had to grasp every chance he could to consolidate his influence and increase his strength.

So, as the time of the final trial's opening approached, the Good Fortune Saint Son found it hard to keep himself composed.

He looked at the projection crystal in front of him, pacing back and forth in his opulent room with worry thick on his mind.

At this time, the projection crystal began to tremble. The Good Fortune Saint Son's heart shook. He knew just what this sort of aura was; the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was initiating contact from his side.

During the days of the final trial, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had only contacted him once; this was the second time. If the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn't have some important matter to discuss then he wouldn't appear.

"Your Majesty Sovereign Ancestor!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son reverently fell to his knees as the image of a middle-aged man appeared through the projection crystal.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's complexion darkened as he looked at the Good Fortune Saint Son. "Out of the flesh and blood of Famine that is in the disciples sent out, about a third has been lost!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son's heart skipped a beat. A third was lost?

This meant that out of the 20 some disciples sent by the Good Fortune Saint Palace, seven or eight had died!

These losses were already considerable!

For each one of those disciples, the Good Fortune Saint Palace had invested an enormous amount of resources, time, and energy, all in order to raise them. According to any reasoning, their strength should far surpass the average amongst the other disciples in the final trial, so how could they have lost so many!?

“They… when did they die?” The Good Fortune Saint Son worriedly asked. He didn’t worry about several disciples dying, but whether or not those people could bring back the demon relic.

“According to the time, it should have been around when the fourth level’s test was coming to an end. Then people continued to die and the flesh and blood of Famine was continually lost… in other words, every period of time, another person died…”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign could only feel the existence or destruction of Famine’s flesh and blood.

What he was actually sensing was the flesh and blood of Famine that was being continuously refined within the belly of the little black dragon.

When the little black dragon refined the flesh and blood of Famine, sometimes it was slow and sometimes it was fast. But overall, about a third had been processed already. This left the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign perplexed.

“The demon relic is buried deep in the fourth level. According to the sensation of your Majesty Sovereign Ancestor, the time that Famine’s flesh and blood started to disappear should have been the time the disciples obtained the demon relic! As for why the others died, that should be because they entered the fifth level and died there…”

The Good Fortune Saint Son frowned. Such speculations were the most reasonable explanation.

No matter how wild the imaginations of the Good Fortune Saint Son and Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, they could never have extrapolated what truly happened within the final trial from this tiny piece of information.

After listening to the Good Fortune Saint Son’s words, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s complexion turned cold and dire. In the fifth trial, when facing the Undying Polar Ice and Undying Inferno, there indeed was a chance that one could perish there.

At the time, the orders passed down to the disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace were to take the demon relic as the most important goal of all; if needed, the entire final trial could be abandoned.

They shouldn’t have entered the fifth level in order to avoid any possible accident from occurring and losing the demon relic. Could those disciples have ignored these orders?

The Good Fortune Saint Son fell to the floor once more. “Your child has been incompetent in disciplining them. After several more hours they will emerge from the final trial and your child will surely punish them according to the rules of the Saint Palace!”

“For your sake, you should hope they can bring back the demon relic… now go!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s phantom disappeared. His final words left a chilling cold in the air. The Good Fortune Saint Son’s complexion turned ugly.

Although the news that the Good Fortune Saint Soveriegn brought left him a bit angry, it at least proved something. This was that between the end of the fourth level and the beginning of the fifth level, most of the disciples from the Good Fortune Saint Palace had remained alive. If so, then the chances of them obtaining the demon relic were at least 90% assured.

After all, the Good Fortune Saint Son had full confidence in the legion that he formed. He believed that in this situation, there were no other disciples of any influence that would be able to defeat this ‘Legion of Famine’. In fact, those 20 some disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace could completely annihilate all the other trial challengers if necessary!

Thinking of this, the Good Fortune Saint Son finally relaxed a little. He placed his hands behind his back and flew upwards. In the next moment Famine’s flesh and blood twisted and wriggled, forming a tunnel of meat that allowed the Good Fortune Saint Son to leave its body.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The Asura Sea tore open and a massive amount of seawater flowed out like innumerable waterfalls. The giant body of Famine emerged from the Asura Sea. The Good Fortune Saint Son stood atop it, his arms crossed behind his back, filled with a heroic and dashing mood.

In the skies, an elegant woman with bare feet and wearing a long blue dress stood atop a blue lotus. She faintly glanced at the Good Fortune Saint Son, ice and arrogance in her eyes.

This woman was the number one direct disciple of Soaring Feather God Mountain's Soaring Feather God King – Fairy Blue Lotus.

Soaring Feather God Mountain's venture into the final trial was led by Fairy Blue Lotus. Although her looks weren't extraordinary, her temperament was as ethereal as dust, giving off an elusive and untouchable feeling.

Soaring Feather God Mountain and the Good Fortune Saint Palace stood on the same side, but the competition between the two influences wasn't small. The Good Fortune Saint Son and Fairy Blue Lotus weren't on good terms either.

The two of them were each the top heroic elite of their influence and were also tied into the group known as the four saint marvels. Neither of them could accept being lower than the other.

“Heh! It looks like Fairy Blue Lotus is filled with confidence in the disciples of Soaring Feather God Mountain.”

The Good Fortune Saint Son flew into the skies. The position he hovered at just happened to be 10 feet higher than Fairy Blue Lotus. This caused him to occupy a commanding position and look down at Fairy Blue Lotus with contempt.

“Nothing can compare to the 20 some disciples that your Good Fortune Saint Palace sent out. You seem prepared to take all the advantages obtained in the final trial!”

Fairy Blue Lotus didn’t back down. The Good Fortune Saint Son smirked. “I don’t dare to say that we took all the advantages, but I’m afraid the value of what we’ve obtained is likely greater than everyone else’s combined…”

As the Good Fortune Saint Son’s cryptic words fell into the ears of the others present, it only seemed like a contentious struggle of words between two elites. But, only the Good Fortune Saint Son knew that he had already lowered the demon relic’s true value by countless times. This was to prevent the demon relic from being coveted by others. Hiding the truth in plain sight would make it even harder for others to see just how great the harvests of the Good Fortune Saint Palace had been.

Seeing Fairy Blue Lotus’ clearly disbelieving expression, the Good Fortune Saint Son only sneered in disdain, not bothering to argue any longer.

Not to mention anything else, just the remaining two thirds of disciples from the Good Fortune Saint Palace would bring back a considerable harvest from the final trial. According to the information from the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, these people must have stepped into the fifth level. Although this was a violation of his orders, if they did go to the fifth level then their completion percentage would definitely be higher. This would earn the Good Fortune Saint Son even greater glory.

“These saint race fellows really think the Asura Road is their own realm…” In the throngs of people, some people began to mutter with envy and anger as they saw the Good Fortune Saint Son contend with Fairy Blue Lotus.

“Brother Dragonsweep, I hear that your Divine Void Divine Kingdom has already made sufficient preparations this time around. At the very least there should be three or four disciples who surpass 70%, and there might even be someone who surpasses 75%.”

Divine Void Divine Kingdom was one of the two True Divinity influences native to the inner Asura Road, and their background was naturally deep. Normally the Empyrean influences envied Divine Void Divine Kingdom, but now, because of the arrogant clamoring and boasts of the saint race, many influences of the Asura Road instead wished for Divine Void Divine Kingdom to do their best and beat these outsiders.

“75% is the target, but… almost none can reach it. The disciples of our Divine Void Divine Kingdom have set the fifth level as their goal, and they should be able to obtain a bit more completion percentage as a bonus…”

The man called Dragonsweep was a half-step Empyrean who had led the forces of Divine Void Divine Kingdom here. As he spoke, his thick mustache trembled. The appearance of these outside saints had roused the vigor and competitive spirit of Divine Void Divine Kingdom, and the plan was to do everything in their power to compete in a struggle for victory or defeat. Dragonsweep may have spoken some modest words, but his innermost feelings were actually blazing with impatience as he waited for the results.

“Fifth level… how fierce! That is a dangerous level, but the disciples of your Divine Kingdom are incredibly skilled. If they work together I’m sure they could make something happen!”

The other influences praised together. When disciples from the same Divine Kingdom formed a battle array, then their combined combat strength would multiply. If a group of weaker disciples joined forces to deal with the fifth level’s guardian together, then although they might not be able to kill it, injuring it a little was possible. They would be able to obtain just a little bit more completion percentage.

And at this time, a massive vortex appeared in the Asura Sea. A gaping entrance appeared on the surface of the water, swallowing in infinite seawater like the maw of a giant beast!

The final trial had finally opened!

All disciples in the final trial would be transmitted outside to a surrounding area of a hundred miles. Then, they would gather on the sea viewing platforms.

It was time to verify the achievements of the young elites that the various influences had raised!

MW Chapter 1985

Chapter 1985 – Deep Trouble

…

…

…

“I wonder how those boys of our clan have done…”

“The final trial’s competition is too intense and our background is too shallow. If they can at least complete the Gate of Laws test without any problems then I will be happy…”

A sect Elder spoke with a sound transmission. In truth, many of these sects didn’t have the ability to obtain a qualification token for the final trial. But, because of certain factors coinciding and with destiny on their side, they sometimes managed to occasionally obtain one. With the disciples they carefully raised and such a precious final trial qualification token, the future hopes of their sect were pinned on their success. If these disciples perished within, then the losses would be too great.

“He came out, the disciple of my White Snow Sect! Hahaha!”

An old man laughed. Everyone looked to the right and saw a youth slowly flying towards them. He had been transmitted several miles away from the sea viewing platform and had immediately discovered people from his sect.

His sect quickly welcomed him and checked to see if he was injured or not.

At this time, another sect found their disciple. These disciples didn’t enter the fourth level, but they still passed the Gate of Laws and obtained satisfying rewards.

Their rewards were some cultivation methods, Laws, and even heavenly materials that were bred within the energy of the final trial.

Lin Ming naturally held no desire for things like this, but to the martial artists of small sects, these treasures were enough to change their destiny.

“Haha, it looks like the Asura Road disciples obtained some good harvests!”

“I wonder how the several largest influences of the Asura Road have done.”

Some people whispered. Many of them looked at the people from Divine Void Divine Kingdom.

Dragonsweep stroked his beard, his lips turned up in a confident smile. But, his smiled belied the worry in his heart, the worry that something had occurred.

“Look over there, those are the disciples of Divine Void Divine Kingdom! They came out!”

“That’s their leader Whiteflower! Haha, they’re safe!”

Whiteflower was one of the core disciples of Divine Void Divine Kingdom as well as the focus of cultivation for this generation of disciples. As long as he was safe then everything was okay.

Dragonsweep let out a long breath of relief.

“Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, how was it?”

A disciple from Divine Void Divine Kingdom asked as he welcomed Whiteflower. But, to his surprise, he discovered that the disciples of Divine Void Divine Kingdom seemed to shrink away, looking distressed, as if they had encountered something terrifying.

"Whiteflower, what is it?"

Seeing Whiteflower's appearance, Dragonsweep was puzzled. They didn't have many disciples that died, so why was everyone looking so troubled?

As Whiteflower and his troop was welcomed back, Dragonsweep discovered that the disciples from other influences were glaring at their Divine Void Divine Kingdom. Then, those disciples used sound transmissions to say something to their Elders.

After they finished speaking, everyone would turn to stare at the disciples of Divine Void Divine Kingdom and even the look in their eyes would change.

"Elder... we..." Whiteflower hesitated.

The Good Fortune Saint Son watched all of this occur from the corners of his eyes. He contemptuously sneered. In his opinion, these people were mostly talking about some inane matters that weren't worthy of his attention at all. Compared to the demon relic, anything they did was a joke.

"What an idiotic Divine Void Divine Kingdom!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son looked down at Divine Void Divine Kingdom was disdain. Although Divine Void Divine Kingdom was also a True Divinity influence, in the eyes of their Good Fortune Saint Palace, the Soul Emperor Divine Void was one of the weaker True Divinities and was far worse than Soaring Feather God Mountain.

But still, how come the disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace didn’t completely kill off the disciples from Divine Void Divine Kingdom?

As these dark thoughts swirled in the Good Fortune Saint Son’s heart, he waited expectantly for the Good Fortune Saint Palace to come out. At least two thirds of their disciples should still be alive.

However, at this moment, the Good Fortune Saint Son’s smile froze on his face.

He could hear some people speaking about Divine Void Divine Kingdom, “...It’s true, absolutely true! The disciples of Divine Void Divine Kingdom obtained a black bone that shined like crystal; its value cannot be estimated!”

Black bone? Inestimable value?

The Good Fortune Saint Son’s heart skipped a beat. Could it possibly be that...

He immediately shot down this thought. There were many lucky chances in the final trial and it wasn’t surprising for there to be some similar object.

But at this time, the disciples of Soaring Feather God Mountain also came out.

They only had two disciples remaining, and they had obvious wounds marring their bodies.

“Who injured you? Where is your elder senior sister?” Fairy Blue Lotus reached out a hand to investigate the situation of these two Soaring Feather God Mountain disciples. Her face immediately darkened.

“A wound left behind by a divine soul attack…”

In these past years, the saint race had sent many disciples to the Asura Road. Fairy Blue Lotus travelled to the Asura Road many times and had a good understanding of the cultivation methods of some large influences of the Asura Road. The injuries of their two Soaring Feather God Mountain disciples seemed to have come from the cultivation methods of Divine Void Divine Kingdom…

“Elder Senior Sister… died…”

The two disciples muttered with hate thick in their voices. As Fairy Blue Lotus heard this, her face turned into a mask of frost.

And at this time, the vortex leading to the final trial began to slowly shrink. This meant that the final trial was soon about to close. The disciples that should have come out would have come out by now. Otherwise, they had died inside.

It was only now that many Elders discovered that the number of disciples who died was far more than they had expected!

And it was also at this time, that in the middle of all these people, the originally confident Good Fortune Saint Son froze like a statue.

“Where are the disciples of my Good Fortune Saint Palace? How come they haven’t come out?”

The Good Fortune Saint Son was utterly stunned. He stared helplessly as the vortex continued to shrink away until it fully vanished.

Yet, the 20 some disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace, the Legion of Famine that the Good Fortune Saint Son had raised so carefully, still hadn’t emerged. Had they died inside? Was that even possible?

“The disciples of my Good Fortune Saint Palace, how come they haven’t come out!?” Blue veins stuck out on the Good Fortune Saint Son’s face. Gold light shot out from his entire body, even causing the skies to shake. Wild waves stirred up in the Asura Sea as the Good

Fortune Saint Son's anger reached the peak. The surging waves rolled up like giant tsunamis.

Clearly, from what the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had said to him before, two thirds of the disciples were still alive!

The Good Fortune Saint Son was like a maddened lion. He stepped in front of a small influence and grabbed one of the disciples who had just come out of the final trial.

"Tell me what happened in the final trial!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son's eyes were blood red, like a rabid animal.

This mission was far too critical to him; he could not accept failure!

"I… I…" The disciple was frightened so badly that his face turned ash gray. Although the Good Fortune Saint Son was only a peak Great World King, in terms of strength, he was actually a master more powerful than an ordinary Empyrean. This disciple's Great World King level influence wasn't able to stop him.

"Your… your Good Fortune Saint Palace disciples were… cut down by the Asura Laws… judgment… dead, killed them…"

This disciple stuttered as he spoke, his voice trembling all the while. The Good Fortune Saint Son was so enraged that his eyes nearly popped out of his head.

The Asura Laws had sentenced them to death!?

How could this be!?

For a time, the Good Fortune Saint Son felt his mind go blurry and a ringing sound echo in his ears. How was he going to explain this to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign? And the demon relic? Where was the demon relic?

That's right… some people had just said that the disciples of Divine Void Divine Kingdom had obtained a black bone. Was that the demon relic?

Just as this thought popped into the Good Fortune Saint Son's mind, he discovered that the disciples of many other influences had started to move and surround the disciples of Divine Void Divine Kingdom.

The disciples of Divine Void Divine Kingdom paled. The several Elders from Divine Void Divine Kingdom also had extremely ugly complexions.

As Dragonsweep saw these people surround his Divine Void Divine Kingdom, he coldly said, “Everyone, what is the meaning of this?”

“What do you mean ‘what is the meaning’? Sage Dragonsweep, there is no need to pretend to be clueless at this time. Didn’t your disciples tell you what happened in the fourth level?”

With such a precious treasure, no one could feel relaxed. In particular, the Good Fortune Saint Son’s face was completely distorted.

The situation had developed in the worst direction possible!

Originally, in the mission that the Good Fortune Saint Son led, everyone was to remain as low-key as possible. After his disciples exited the final trial and before the other influences could respond, he would take the demon relic into the body of Famine and then directly leave the Asura Road.

But now, with the existence of the demon relic exposed, all the influences of the Asura Road would force their way into the situation. After all, there were still two True Divinities here and this was not the stage of their saint race. If a battle were to start up here, they would surely suffer a loss!

“Do you plan on attacking us? I’ve already sent a sound transmission to Soul Emperor Divine Void… in another 20 breaths of time or so, he should arrive here…”

Dragonsweep’s face was grim. This situation was far beyond what he could handle. He had no choice but to contact the guardian god of their Divine Void Divine Kingdom – Soul Emperor Divine Void!

MW Chapter 1986

Chapter 1986 – Refining the Demon Relic

…

…

…

In a single universe, and especially a universe like the Asura Road that wasn't as large as others, a True Divinity could travel back and forth in an extremely short period of time, arriving at any corner of this world that they wished.

For a time, the atmosphere above the Asura Sea was strange and tense.

Everyone had gathered around Divine Void Divine Kingdom, but no one attacked.

Time slowly passed. The Good Fortune Saint Son's complexion was impossibly ugly. He had no idea how he was going to explain this mess to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

"I'll also say this. Even if you want to look for the black bone, it isn't in the hands of my Divine Void Divine Kingdom's disciples. During the fourth level it already escaped underground and has long since disappeared. If you don't believe me then feel free to investigate any spatial ring of our disciples. If you discover anything you want then you can take it away and my Divine Void Divine Kingdom won't even bat an eye!"

Dragonsweep explained, bracing himself.

His Divine Void Divine Kingdom was a True Divinity influence to begin with, so normally they wouldn't even bother giving such an explanation. But, this matter was just far too important. According to what the disciples of Divine Void Divine Kingdom told him, this should all be part of a plan that the Good Fortune Saint Palace had carefully arranged. But an accident had occurred and they had all failed.

When it came to matters involving the Good Fortune Saint Palace, Divine Void Divine Kingdom couldn't help but be careful. They were a super influence that no one in the 33 Heavens was willing to offend.

Dragonsweep glanced at the Good Fortune Saint Son. Hundreds of thoughts raced through his mind. For something so bizarre to occur in the final trial, this had completely surpassed his imagination.

"What use is there in searching your spatial rings… a small bone can be hidden using 100 different methods so that no one can find it…"

A saint martial artist testily muttered. To a martial artist, hiding things was far too easy. For instance, they could hide something in an unknown space distortion at a certain location only known to them and not carry that item on their body. If so, even a True Divinity would be helpless to do anything.

At this time, Dragonsweep was really in a mess. Although he felt bitter about this whole situation, there was nothing he could do.

The atmosphere above the Asura Sea became increasingly tense and cloudy. No one spoke. Only the sounds of the sea wind and great waves smashing into the columns of the viewing platforms rang through the air.

Some people suspected that Soul Emperor Divine Void had already arrived but simply hadn't made his presence known.

With a True Divinity here, they were helpless to do anything.

It was even possible that the demon relic was already in the hands of Soul Emperor Divine Void.

"We're leaving!"

Some Asura Road influences began to withdraw.

As for the Good Fortune Saint Son, he didn't leave. He looked at Dragonsweep and prepared himself for what was to come. He braced himself and transmitted news of what occurred to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign…

………

As winds and clouds were chaotically stirring above the Asura Sea, Lin Ming still remained in the final trial's seventh level. His trial would continue for a long time. Perceiving the Asura Sutra required an immense amount of time, and he also had to refine the demon relic.

Lin Ming slowly paced around in the cold and endless starry sky, his form mixing in with the chaos surrounding him.

The Space and Time Laws seemed to lose all effect on his body. Planets, stars, all was easily crossed by him like a river or mountain.

Although his step seemed slow and measured, every movement crossed 10,000 miles.

His goal was the centermost region of this starry space.

Finally, after an incense stick of time, he arrived at this central point.

Here, he sat down, wrapping himself in the inexhaustible darkness.

At this time, stars that seemed dead and lonely, on the verge of annihilation, suddenly bloomed with the most dazzling light.

Finally, this incomparably potent and vibrant starlight condensed into a transparent furnace as large as a mountain.

Vast amounts of chaos energy swirled within the furnace, carrying with it Laws of the heavens and earth that stabilized the furnace to an extreme degree.

Like this, Lin Ming sat in the central-most point of this starlight furnace.

The figures of two old men slowly appeared before Lin Ming.

These two old men were the guardians of this world – Clear and Ink.

"Absorbing the demon relic is incredibly dangerous. This is because when the abyssal was slain by the High Lord, its strength was equal to that of an extreme True Divinity! The abyssal's body was refined by the High Lord, leaving behind only a portion of its body's essence. And even though this essence was sealed and suppressed in the final trial for 10 billion years, with a great deal of its demonic energy having weakened, your cultivation is simply far too low. If you want to absorb it, it will create an unfathomable burden upon your body. There will be the likelihood that your body explodes from the energy, bringing you death."

Ink slowly cautioned, seeing Lin Ming sitting firm in the void.

"So, the two of us have prepared this Galaxy Void Furnace for you. By borrowing the power of a galaxy, it can suppress the power of the demon relic."

This time, the one who spoke was Clear.

"Galaxy Void Furnace?"

Hearing the name of this furnace, Lin Ming was startled. Originally, he shouldn't know about this sort of ancient inheritance. But it just so happened that when he was perusing the ancient texts of the primal god race, he had seen records concerning the Galaxy Void Furnace.

The Galaxy Void Furnace was not some magic tool, but a secret technique that consisted of combining a cultivation technique and array formation.

Billions of years ago or even 10 billion years ago, this inheritance was created by the lineage descendant of the Asura Road Master. That person had been an array formation and alchemy grandmaster of the primal god race.

This array master was able to use the secret technique of the Galaxy Void Furnace to refine pills without the need for a true pill furnace or fire. Rather, by utilizing the vast power of the starry skies, he was able to refine pills. He could even use the power of the stars and universe to suppress and refine his own body. The effects and uses of this technique were extraordinary.

However, in order to lay down this array formation and begin burning the surrounding power of stars, one had to consume a great deal of blood vitality. In addition, one had to deduce the secrets of the changes of heaven. Because of this, arranging the Galaxy Void Furnace was extremely difficult.

In the current primal god race, this inheritance had long since disappeared. All that was recorded was superficial description of the Galaxy Void Furnace. Lin Ming never thought he would be destined to see it with his own eyes today.

“Seniors are really helpful.” Lin Ming sincerely said.

Lin Ming didn’t know what the Asura Road Master had been planning when he created the Asura Road, but just from the actions of these two guardians, it seemed that they truly considered him the Asura Road Master’s successor. In order to help train him they had put forth a painful amount of time and energy.

“Besides the Galaxy Void Furnace, we also have some heavenly materials. First, place the demon relic in the furnace to boil it down. Once these heavenly materials have been mixed with the power of the demon relic, they can be used to make spirit juice that is useful in tempering your body. This will reduce the demonic nature brought about by the demon relic and will help you absorb it and refine it…” As Clear spoke, he began tossing all sorts of mind-bogglingly precious materials into the Galaxy Void Furnace.

An abyssal was difficult to tame, whether it was alive or whether it was dead.

In the past, Empyrean Primordius had seized the body of an abyssal and had assimilated its soul, turning himself into a demon.

And the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had to rely on the Grandmist Spirit Bead in order to control the soulless Famine.

Thus, in order to help Lin Ming refine the demon relic, Ink and Clear had taken all possible precautions. They wanted everything to be perfect and to ensure that nothing could go wrong.

Some seemingly yellow and withered grass that had been tossed in suddenly started to emit the roar of a True Dragon. It exploded within the power of stars, turning into strands of clear holy energy.

Some strange pile of dirt was tossed in, and it began to bloom with a blinding light as it was stimulated by the power of stars. It grew, becoming as heavy as a brown continent, wrapping around Lin Ming and forming a brown armor. In this instant he felt as if he had an indestructible diamond body, immortal and undying.

Broken pills were tossed in. As they mixed with the chaos, the sounds of the highest nine heavens began to ring out. In the air, one could make out the phantom of a divine king sitting down, immortals chanting by his side even as the thick scent of medicinal efficacy wafted in the air.

One after another, innumerable precious heavenly materials were tossed into the furnace where Lin Ming was, colliding with the black jade-like demon relic.

This demon relic was a massive vortex in the center of the furnace. With loud explosions, a pitch black blood energy shot out, combining with the strange juice formed from all the heavenly materials.

Then, this juice started to gurgle like boiling water, shimmering with a black sheen. Even the holy energy within was tainted by the demonic energy, turning as black as ink.

As that juice that was tainted by the demonic relic touched Lin Ming, his entire body shook. He could feel an amazingly powerful strength within. It was filled with the destiny of the Great Dao, and followed along his body as it desperately tried to drill into him.

The feeling was like countless giants smashing his body with iron hammers.

Some of his acupoints that were impacted became even more stable and functional, able to accompany a greater strength.

His body was already like a diamond vajra form, but beneath the continued impact of this strength it became increasingly tough…

"This really is good." Lin Ming thought, overjoyed. After training his mortal body for such a long time, he had already reached an extreme peak and had arrived at a bottleneck. Even the tiniest bit of progress was filled with suffering and hardship at such a stage.

If he could break through this bottleneck then the intensity of his mortal body would dramatically rise to a whole new level. This was something that was as difficult as ascending to the heavens, but today, he saw a thread of hope!

"Little Black, come and join me!"

At this time, Lin Ming hadn't forgotten about the little black dragon. The power within this demon relic was far too formidable. As a demon that was equal to an extreme True Divinity, even after its death, the strength that it left behind was impossible for Lin Ming to absorb alone.

Even if the little black dragon joined him in tempering their bodies they still couldn’t absorb it all.

Hou! Hou! Hou!

The little black dragon that had been refining the flesh and blood of Famine suddenly emitted a happy howl. It plunged into the constantly growing medicinal juice and exuberantly drank up that inky black spirit water.

As a God Beast, it possessed an extremely wise spirituality and its body was as tough as divine iron. Normal body transformation medicines wouldn’t have any effects on the little black dragon, and it could eat them like rice without any response at all. But when it swallowed this black juice, even though it only drank a little it felt as if it were full and couldn’t drink much more.

The little black dragon started burping and its dark face turned red, as if it had become drunk.

And from its skin, acupoints, flesh, and blood, infinite light burst out, wrapping around the little black dragon.

“The Galaxy Void Cauldron and this spirit juice… with my current cultivation, I should be able to swallow around 20% of the demon relic’s strength…”

As Lin Ming was within the Galaxy Void Furnace, he had been constantly deducing what consequences he would suffer by swallowing the demon relic. This was the conclusion he came to.

However, he was well aware that in order to obtain a greater strength he had to break past his limits. As to what would happen if he swallowed the entire demon relic, no one knew.

MW Chapter 1987

Chapter 1987 – Power of the Demon

…

…

…

Within the Galaxy Void Furnace, Lin Ming closed his eyes in deep meditation. He entered the fused martial intent state, adjusting himself to his peak condition.

This demon relic was created from the essence of an extremely strong abyssal demon that the Asura Road Master had cut down in the past. It was far more powerful than the abyssal that Empyrean Primordius had seized the body of, and Lin Ming had no choice but to be cautious.

Lin Ming traced his spatial ring and took out many heavenly materials with soft and temperate properties.

Over the years, Lin Ming had collected numerous precious materials. For instance, after killing top powerhouses or peak geniuses, all of the treasures in their spatial rings were naturally taken by him.

Although these medicines and treasures were valuable, their effects weren't worth much to Lin Ming who had already reached the bottleneck when it came to the intensity of his mortal body. Even if he were to swallow everything he had, it would still be abnormally difficult to temper his body any further.

Thus, for a long time, besides occasionally giving out these spirit medicines, the rest had been saved up.

But today these spirit medicines had found a use. Their medicinal juice could be used to extract power from the demon relic, drawing out the overbearing and tyrannical energy from within and making it gentler and easier to absorb.

When all of these spirit medicines were thrown into the black ink, their medicinal energy slowly evaporated, condensing in the void and forming an incomparably marvelous sight.

As for the medicines themselves, they melted beneath the baptism of starlight. This medicinal juice seemed to form its own world. Although there wasn't much of it, it gave off a feeling that it was as vast as a sea.

The medicinal juices boiled. Wave after wave of medicinal efficacy smashed into the demon relic, as if all the celestial patrons of the heavens were bombarding it together.

And at this time, from outside the Galaxy Void Furnace, Clear and Ink also began moving to help refine the demon relic.

The demon relic trembled. Roars howled out from within it. Beneath the extraordinary medicinal efficacy, beneath the power of divinity that the two old men sent out, beneath the infinite starlight within the Galaxy Void Furnace, the demon relic began to melt away, a little at a time.

The demon relic condensed almost infinite essence. Just attempting to melt it consumed a massive amount of effort and energy from the two old men.

Two hours passed. The demon relic had diminished just a little.

Beneath the demonic power of the demon relic, the vast sea of medicinal juice had nearly dried up.

At this time, the power of an abyssal was rich to the extreme.

“It’s not enough. A little bit more!”

A fiery light burst out from Lin Ming's forehead. Beads of sweat dropped down. Currently, 20% of the demon power had been separated from the demon relic, and just swallowing this amount alone wouldn't be easy for Lin Ming. But, from the very start he had already planned to break past his own limits. If he did as the little black dragon did and only ate up demon power until he was full, then although this would temper his body it wouldn't allow him to break past his bottleneck.

"Boy, you still think this isn't enough?"

Seeing Lin Ming in such a frenzied state, Clear glanced at Ink. Worry clouded their eyes. Even if Lin Ming had completed the final trial with 100%, the two old men already had a deep understanding as to how great his talent was. And as they saw that Lin Ming wanted to swallow up 25% of the demon relic's power in a single attempt, even they believed this was a bit too dangerous.

This was the essence energy left behind by an abyssal demon in the past, one equal to an extreme True Divinity!

Lin Ming didn't seem to hear Clear and Ink's warning. He stared quietly on at the boiling and tumbling black ink around him, until the demon power within it had condensed to 30%.

Lin Ming suddenly opened his mouth. Like a great dragon drinking in a lake, he swallowed all of this black juice.

Bang!

As this medicinal juice mixed with 30% of the demon relic's power entered his body, Lin Ming felt as if ten suns had risen within him, almost making him blow apart.

A maniacal and bloodthirsty desire gushed out.

Kill!

A wild voice rang in the air, seeming to echo outwards from the infinitely distant expanse of time. It drilled into Lin Ming's body and soul.

As Lin Ming sat within the Galaxy Void Furnace, his closed eyes shot open and an ominous blood red light leapt out from his pupils…

"Ahh!"

The moment that Lin Ming was controlled by the backlash of the demon relic's power, the starlight within the Galaxy Void Furnace suddenly stabbed into his body like innumerable needle points.

Although this strength wasn't enough to contend with the demonic energy of the demon relic, it still gave Lin Ming a brief respite, restoring his eyes to pure brightness.

He roared upwards, into the heavens. High above his spiritual sea, nine stars appeared, Dao Palaces floating above them. The Heretical God Tree rose up and thunder dragons howled through the air. Every Law he had comprehended, every power he obtained, began stirring within him to suppress the roaring demon phantom in his divine soul.

As these powers suppressed his soul, phantom images began to spread through Lin Ming's mind.

...This was an endless war. Waves of fresh blood dyed the skies red and the ground was covered with red blood, so much that it soaked the earth wet.

Countless demons slaughtered and fought. Amongst them, one seemed to be a king of these demons. Its body emitted bursts of boundless black light, each ray condensing into a dragon, invincible and unstoppable.

The world tumbled over and the scene changed. The void rumbled as large tracts of it came falling down.

In a pitch black abyssal world, an Asura warrior stood equal to the heavens, bathed in blood as he fought with the demon king. The demon king stomped its feet causing planets to shatter. A single roar caused suns and moons to fall. But even though this demon king possessed such power, it still fell back step after step beneath the onslaught of the Asura warrior's black spear.

With each step it took back, its body was punctured with gaping holes that could not be regenerated. Finally, the demon king's head was pierced through by the black spear.

"...Asura Road Master!? This... is this the demon relic's fragmented memories?"

These memories were too chaotic, too rapid. Lin Ming had no time to experience them at all. Suddenly, he was caught in a tide of endlessly agonizing pain and forcefully dragged out from these memories.

Demon power flooded every inch of Lin Ming's body. It tore apart his blood vessels and even burst apart his organs!

Lin Ming's eyes turned blood red. He grit his teeth, persisting through the pain.

This demon power had once collided with the terrifying strength of the Asura Road Master. Although it was only a tiny amount, it was still enough to crush a planet to pieces.

At this time Lin Ming had opened every ounce of strength he had. Behind him, nine stars appeared. These nine stars resonated with the starlight of the Galaxy Void Furnace, propping up Lin Ming's body.

Lin Ming released all four Dao Palaces and simultaneously galvanized the power of the Asura blood within him.

Ka ka ka ka ka!

Lin Ming's flesh and blood wriggled. His meridians were reborn and the wounds of his organs began regenerating.

His body was simply too abnormal. Although it kept breaking apart beneath the impact of the demon power, it continued to regenerate.

Meanwhile, the power of the Asura Laws he grasped was like towering mountains that joined together with the Galaxy Void Furnace all around him. Combined with the power of stars that washed over him, he strove to suppress the violent impact of the demon relic.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Lin Ming's body had turned into a great battlefield. His skin swelled up and down with waves, constantly bulging and shrinking.

At this time, Lin Ming's flesh and blood, meridians, and organs were constantly reborn and then destroyed again by the demon power. Even then, it was reborn again, as the cycle continued without end.

Slowly, the demon power was refined by Lin Ming.

Faint traces of black energy mixed into Lin Ming's bloodline, fusing into his inner world, melting into his spiritual sea...

Suddenly, Lin Ming's eyes turned blood red!

As if they weren't the eyes of a man, but the eyes of a rabid vicious beast!

Seeing this, Clear and Ink felt their hearts skip a beat. To swallow the demon relic, the risk wasn't just the potential that one's body would explode. There was even the chance that one's spiritual sea would be washed away by the remnant will of the demon. If so, then the martial artist would lose their mind and become a brain-dead idiot.

Ka ka ka!

Lin Ming clenched his fists. His teeth began to turn sharp and jagged.

His body started to tear open. From his wounds, long bone spikes jutted out!

These bone spikes were pure black. They were somewhat similar to Empyrean Primordius' bone spikes, but a faint and horrifying demonic energy lingered on them, making them even sharper and more terrifying!

"This boy, not only did he plan on refining the demon power, but while he did so he planned on fusing with it so that he could thoroughly control its power and obtain the strength of a demon in his body! This is…"

"The power of a demon has already fused into the boy's mortal body. It's beginning to change his body structure!"

Seeing this, Ink and Clear's pupils shrank. When a martial artist fused together the 33 Heavens' Laws, the power they used was called the power of divinity.

And corresponding to that was the demon power of the abyssal demons. This was a kind of power that stood beyond the Laws of the 33 Heavens.

Lin Ming was actually trying to bring this demon power into his body and thoroughly control it!

MW Chapter 1988

Chapter 1988 – Natal Life Dao Palace

…

…

…

According to the information obtained by the primal god race, during the ancient times, many powerhouses held the belief that the abyssals didn't come from the 33 Heavens.

The Dark Abyss was where the abyssal demons lived, and this was a place that seemed to be independent of the 33 Heavens.

It was a mystical land. No one knew how large it was, how deep it was, or where it led to.

In the Dark Abyss, the world Laws were different from the Laws of the 33 Heavens. The power the abyssals used was different from that of the 33 Heavens' martial artists.

This also caused the intelligent races of the 33 Heavens to be inborn mortal enemies of the abyssals. When the intelligent races of the 33 Heavens captured an abyssal, they weren't able to tame it nor seize its body without dire consequences. As for the abyssals, once they captured an intelligent life form, they simply ate them up.

Now, the method Lin Ming used to refine this demon relic wasn't the same as seizing the body of an abyssal, but there were similarities! That was that he would have to defeat the abyssal demon's will!

The advantage was that Lin Ming didn't need to fuse with the abyssal's soul nor did he need to use its body.

This was an incredibly dangerous process. If there was the slightest mistake in the way Lin Ming controlled the demon's power, he would turn into a half-man half-demon monster.

Time passed, a minute and a second at a time. The little black dragon also awoke from its deep sleep. It looked at Lin Ming whose body was constantly shifting, and its large black eyes were filled with curiosity as well as worry.

At this time, what Lin Ming was doing was equivalent to adding a demon body metamorphosis onto the foundation of his Asura body metamorphosis. Black bone armor wrapped around his body and his spine stuck out, forming giant spikes from his back. From his neck down, the spikes became increasingly long and deadly. The muscles of his arms bulged, looking like black stone, and from his elbows bone blades jutted out just like on Empyrean Primordius.

Roar!

Lin Ming roared into the skies. His wild howl shook the void and even the starlight within the Galaxy Void Furnace was torn apart.

Lin Ming's eyes had turned blood red. All that was reflected in them were the blood ponds of hell, and in this hell, there were demons slaughtering powerhouses, ripping them apart and devouring their flesh.

This scene continued for an hour. Lin Ming's hair was scattered about him; he looked as if he had already transformed into a demon.

During this time, Clear and Ink were both wary and tense. Their eyes were focused on Lin Ming, noticing every tiny change that was occurring within him. They were shocked more and more.

"It's been so long and yet clarity hasn't returned to his eyes. It seems that he is fighting with the abyssal's will in his spiritual sea..."

"The boy was too confident in himself. He didn't follow our suggestions to slowly refine the strength of the demon relic into pure source energy and then gradually absorb it. Rather, he planned to directly tame this strength and make it his. Although this is the will of an abyssal that died 10 billion years ago, wanting to control it is as difficult as ascending to the heavens!"

"According to any reasonable logic, it is impossible for a human to control the will of a demon. Even if the boy has temporarily suppressed its strength, that will which belongs to an abyssal will still survive in fragments within the boy's body. As long as his will weakens then the will of that abyssal will erupt and attempt to invade and take over his spiritual sea. If that were to occur, then the consequences would be unimaginable..."

The two old men's eyebrows wrinkled more and more as time passed. They were extremely worried now. Lin Ming couldn't even temporarily tame the power of the demon. If too much time passed and Lin Ming's soul force was exhausted, then his spiritual sea might fall into the enemy's hands!

The two old men waffled back and forth, deliberating on whether or not they should help Lin Ming with their own will no matter what the consequences would be. But at this time, in the skies that shined with nine great stars, one turned red, this one shining with a brilliant red light!

This star seemed to be dyed with blood, so red that one couldn't look at it.

"This is..."

The two old men were startled. Before they could respond, this blinding red star shot out a straight red beam of light. The red beam of light was only a foot thick, but it instantly crossed ten thousand miles of the void and thrust straight downwards!

From afar it was like a divine god had thrust down a blood red holy sword from up high, shattering the starry skies!

This light pierced into the left side of Lin Ming’s chest, the position where his heart was.

In that moment, the tyrannical fluctuations of energy suddenly calmed down. The explosive cracklings of Lin Ming’s muscles also faded away, everything turning so silent that even the drop of a needle could be heard. Lin Ming’s mortal body rose up from the Galaxy Void Furnace and floated into the skies.

The blood red starlight revitalized Lin Ming’s body.

Pata! Pata!

In the quiet skies, the sound of a heartbeat echoed through the air.

This heartbeat was powerful and steady, like the heartbeat of Empyrean Primordius that once rang in the goddess’ ancient grave in the Eternal Demon Abyss!

If a World King were to approach and hear this heartbeat, even they would feel their blood vitality being summoned by it, every drop of blood in their body resonating with this sound as their blood desired to break free from their frame!

This was Lin Ming's heartbeat!

Although Lin Ming's mortal body had reached a peak during these past years, his heartbeat had never been so powerful. This meant that his blood vitality had reached an inconceivable boundary, no worse than Empyrean Primordius in the past!

"This boy, did he open the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace again?"

Clear and Ink looked at each other and then towards the blood red star out of the nine that were floating high in the skies. These two old men were well versed in the cultivation methods of the various races and also had many understandings into the 33 Heavenly Daos. They naturally understood just what the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace were.

That blood red star in the skies was called the Titan Gate Star, and its corresponding Natal Life Dao Palace was located within a martial artist's heart.

The Natal Life Dao Palace possessed the power of infinite blood vitality. By opening it, a martial artist's understanding into the power of life would deepen profoundly and allow the regenerative capabilities of their mortal body to reach the limits of the extreme. A manifestation of this was the regrowth of limbs and organs that had been cut off and destroyed.

When a normal essence gathering system martial artist cultivated to a high boundary, if they cut off their arm, they could still regenerate a new one with enough rest and care.

However, the newly regenerated arm would only be a mortal arm.

The mortal body of a high level essence gathering martial artist had to undergo Pulse Condensation, and then the Xiantian realm where the impurities were eliminated. Next, they had to undergo the nine stages of Life Destruction to transform into their spirit body. After that was the Nine Divine Shifts that allowed their mortal body to evolve further. In the end, every inch of their flesh and blood would be extraordinary.

But if they were to use a mortal body that hadn't been tempered with origin energy, their abilities would be greatly compromised.

In order to restore it, they would have to use up a massive amount of time and energy. This was also the reason why Tian Mingzi's progress into the Empyrean realm was halted after his arm was severed, and also the reason he had such a deep grudge against Lin Ming.

Originally Lin Ming was also the same. But after opening the Natal Life Dao Palace, this would change. The Laws of the Natal Life Dao Palace would become a mark that deeply engraved itself into every part of Lin Ming's flesh and blood. His shattered organs, his severed limbs, all of it could return into pure life energy that would reenter his body and be regenerated, without any difference from the original.

Even if his lost limbs were refined by others, his newly regenerated limbs would still have evenly distributed energy, and would have little to no effect on his strength.

Time passed. From Lin Ming's eyes that reflected a blood pond hell, streams of blood began to flow down. The crimson red Titan Gate Star in the skies turned into waves of energy that fell down like a waterfall of blood, converging into Lin Ming's body.

The demon-transformed Lin Ming turned bright red, as if he had rolled out from a blood pond!

"This boy, he really used the demon power to open the Natal Life Dao Palace!"

"The demon power has fused into his body. Does he really not fear the mutiny of the abyssal's will in the future if his spiritual sea was to ever weaken?"

Clear and Ink were both concerned. But at this time, beneath the endless starlight of the Galaxy Void Furnace, a completely different scene from their expectations was playing out in Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

Lin Ming wore a suit of blood red battle armor. He stood in the skies as he faced down a massive demon phantom. This demon phantom was extremely blurry, but it emitted an incredibly potent aura that shocked the mind.

This was the abyssal will that resided in the demon relic.

Even though it had been sealed and suppressed for 10 billion years, the remnants of the abyssal's will surpassed most Empyreans'. It retained its instinct to swallow all.

“Your strength, give me all of it to use.”

Facing this pressure of this demonic will, Lin Ming's expression was calm and composed, as if he were facing nothing but a calm spring breeze.

“Jejejeje!”

The demonic will cackled in the void. “You are very strong! I cannot destroy your spiritual sea right now, so I will temporarily lend you my strength. But, the cost of borrowing my strength is very high, I fear you will not be able to pay it, jejejeje!”

“Oh, cost?” Lin Ming's lips curved up in a mocking smile.

"I will lend you my strength and you will let me use your mortal body as compensation! Your mortal body has been tempered quite nicely!"

The phantom raucously laughed. It couldn't do anything to Lin Ming, but it knew that Lin Ming couldn't do anything to it either. As long as it lurked in Lin Ming's spiritual sea, there would eventually come a day when his spiritual sea weakened. At that time it would attempt to invade his body once more, and it also didn't care if it became a half-man half-demon monster.

As the phantom was calculating its future plans, its smile froze on its face.

Lin Ming had stretched out his right hand, and in his palm was a black cube.

This black cube slowly revolved, as if all of existence would be drawn into it.

"This… this is…"

The phantom's pupils shrank.

But by now, a massive black soul storm had whipped up in Lin Ming's spiritual sea. The phantom cried out in misery as it was sucked into this storm!

“Ahhhhh!”

The phantom wailed in agony and pain. Its face was completely distorted. This storm was too terrifying and its remnant will wasn’t able to withstand it.

Peng peng peng!

The demon phantom exploded to pieces in this horrifying storm. Once its will shattered, the cracked fragments simply weren’t able to withstand the dreadful impact of the soul storm. Everything blew apart, thoroughly vanishing!

“My apologies, but I have no intention of allowing any part of your remnant will to remain.”

Lin Ming quietly put away the Magic Cube. With the trump card of the Magic Cube in his hands, only then did he dare to recklessly absorb the demon’s power.

MW Chapter 1989

Chapter 1989 – Great World King

…

…

…

As the remnant will of the abyssal demon completely disintegrated, the demon power within Lin Ming's body became utterly masterless and then erupted from within him!

This vast, sea-like strength smashed into Lin Ming's spiritual sea and mortal body, constantly attacking his inner world.

As this wild demon power rushed through him like a crazed tide, it violently reacted with the power of divinity in Lin Ming's inner world!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Lin Ming's body emitted thunderous explosive peals. But at this time, his eyes were no longer blood red, but instead gradually returned to their pure brightness.

Lin Ming's eyes couldn't be described just with adjectives like bright or profound anymore. There seemed to be countless lives being born and then perishing within them, planets rapidly revolving.

If an ordinary person were to look at Lin Ming they wouldn't see anything exceptional. But, if a martial artist with a profound understanding of the Laws and a deep cultivation were to look at Lin Ming, they would see the infinite mysteries contained in his eyes. If Lin Ming were to die, his eyes would become supreme treasures fought over by countless sects.

"Lin Ming, he, he really managed to suppress the demon's will!"

From nearby the Galaxy Void Furnace, Clear was shocked as he saw Lin Ming's changes. In his eyes, It was like a true universe was contained within Lin Ming's body. Endless Laws, energy, matter, all of it was contained within this universe, all-encompassing!

"But that demon will become a hidden danger in his body. If Lin Ming's spiritual sea were to receive damage in the future, then perhaps..." Ink said with some worry.

However, Clear shook his head, "That's not necessarily true. In the final moments I felt Lin Ming completely destroy that demonic will when a horrifying soul storm erupted in his spiritual sea. That is not a strength that Lin Ming should be able to use..."

When Lin Ming activated the Magic Cube, it was targeted against the abyssal demon and not Clear or Ink. Although the Magic Cube's aura was terrifying, it didn't dissipate outwards. As an ultimate divine tool which surpassed the existence of this cosmos, Clear wasn't able to feel the Magic Cube. But, he was able to faintly speculate that Lin Ming's body contained some secret he didn't know of.

"This child has a great destiny upon him... perhaps he really can achieve the High Lord's deepest wish..."

"I hope so... in any case, you and I must assist him well. Starting today, he is our Young Lord, regardless of whether he succeeds or not..."

The two old men spoke with sound transmissions. At this time, within the Galaxy Void Furnace, the bone spikes over Lin Ming began to draw back into his body. The demon bone armor and scales also disappeared.

Lin Ming returned to his perfect form. His naked body was bathed in endless starlight, and his inner world constantly evolved with the two different strengths continuously surging through it.

Lin Ming's consciousness also arrived in his inner world.

He stood at the center of a vast galaxy, looking at the surrounding universe.

He could see innumerable planets in this universe. Some planets were bleak and dark, but some had infinite lives living on them.

These lives, from as small as a blade of grass or a single ant, or as large as a towering tree, or even as majestic as a leviathan or great roc, all of it was clearly sensed by Lin Ming. In this moment he could feel everything within himself. With just a single thought, he could grant these lives a great strength, or maybe instantly destroy them.

In this moment, Lin Ming had become the king of a true universe!

This was truly the feeling of grasping a great universe in his hands. This feeling left Lin Ming intoxicated.

However, although he was intoxicated, he didn’t lose his mind. He controlled the energy within himself to constantly expand this space.

More planets were bred and developed. Some of these planets had humanoid life forms, prosperous countries, and sects that grew stronger with each passing day.

In lofty divine palaces, great rulers prowled. Dragons and Kirins roared and the beat of the Great Dao cycled in rhythm. Lin Ming could feel this world become increasingly full and plentiful, nearly impossible to distinguish between illusion and reality.

When the boundaries of this universe were expanded to their limit, he finally stopped. For a time, all the strength of this universe was poured into Lin Ming's body.

He had become as one with this universe, becoming the ruler of a true world. In other words – a Great World King!

Bang!

A terrifying energy gushed out from this universe, flushing out and shattering the Galaxy Void Furnace. It was like a divine rainbow shooting straight into the horizon!

Lin Ming's entire body was bathed in this divine rainbow. His black hair rose up and his body was soaked in this terrifying sea of energy, as if he were wandering in a sea of Laws.

In that instant, Lin Ming had truly broken into the Great World King realm!

Lin Ming's eyes flashed open and brilliance blossomed within them.

Light shot out from his left eye, like colorful rainbow-hued clouds, filling the world with auspicious lights.

But from his right eye, a gloomy darkness emitted, as if a blood pond hell was contained within, as if sandy Asura plains stretched out in them. Just by looking at this eye, one would feel their soul being sucked into the bottom of an abyss and their spiritual sea falling into illusion.

“Natal Life Dao Palace, Great World King! With the demon power contained in this demon relic, my strength has risen to a new peak. There is no comparison to how I was before!”

Lin Ming gripped his fists together. He fervently hoped he could find a powerful opponent and fight them in a heaven-shaking battle so that he could test out the limits of his strength!

From a Holy Lord to a World King and finally to a Great World King, Lin Ming had used several thousand years to accomplish this during his fourth reincarnation!

Now he was like a phoenix that had undergone nirvana. His strength soared into the heavens!

With a wave of his hand, heaven and earth origin energy condensed into a robe that wrapped around him.

This robe was extremely strange. Lin Ming had casually made it, and he hadn’t designated anything special about it, but had allowed the world Laws to create it.

The robe was half black and half white. It was covered with stars, and the way these stars were arranged revealed infinite mysteries, so deep that one could perceive them forever.

If a World King level master were to summon all their mental strength to look at this robe, they would see phantoms of demons and god kings within it. These demons and god kings were all different, each one containing different principles of the Great Dao.

Just this robe alone, if it were refined and condensed into material essence and then given to any random World King powerhouse, would be a treasure. They could perceive it for hundreds and thousands of years, obtaining great harvests.

At Lin Ming's boundary, any things he casually discarded would be precious treasures. This was because he was amongst the top characters of the universe!

Of course, to resist the saints and to resist the great calamity, his strength was still lacking.

"Thank you, seniors."

Lin Ming bowed in the air. Dressed in this black and white robe, it gave Lin Ming an inexplicable feeling, as if where he stood was the center of the universe, the source of light and dark.

“Young Lord, there is no need to bow to us two. The ones bowing should be us. The High Lord showed deep graciousness to our race in the past, and the ancestors of my people have taught us to forever serve the lineage of the High Lord. 10 billion years have passed, and Young Lord should be able to complete the long-cherished wish of the High Lord in the past.”

Clear and Ink changed the way in which they referred to Lin Ming, and as they spoke, they even deeply bowed to him. This flustered Lin Ming and caused him to hurry forwards to help them up. “Seniors, please don’t do this. The reason this junior was able to absorb the demon relic was all thanks to two seniors helping me. As for Senior Asura, junior has inherited a great graciousness from him. If Senior Asura has a wish that he hopes to fulfill, then this junior will try his best to accomplish it; even if I have to pass through fire or water, I will do anything in my power.”

“The High Lord’s wish isn’t something that Young Lord needs to worry about at present. Now, Young Lord should focus on improving your strength. One day when Young Lord becomes a True Divinity, perhaps you truly can change the flow of this world.”

The two old men still weren’t willing to reveal secrets of the Asura Road. Lin Ming didn’t press them further.

“Young Lord, we two had a conversation just now and have some suggestions. The space of the final trial is the central point of the Asura Road’s origin energy and Laws. There are all sorts of pure energies and Laws gathered here, and for the last 10 billion years, innumerous world treasures have been bred and nourished here. Some weren’t taken away by trial challengers and have been collected by my race. Young Lord can use these resources to continue cultivating in the final trial’s seventh level for the next several hundred years in order to consolidate your Great World King foundation. What does Young Master think about this?”

“Mm, then I will have to trouble two seniors.” Lin Ming agreed after considering for a moment.

His Grand Reincarnation Art needed to be done in the outside world in order to bring his state of mind to perfection. But in terms of just consolidating his boundary, this final trial space would give him twice the results with half the effort.

After cultivating for several hundred years here, he could go out to practice the Grand Reincarnation Art to the seventh level. Then, Lin Ming believed he would have enough strength to stir up trouble for the saints!

MW Chapter 1990

Chapter 1990 – The Wrathful Saint Emperor

…

…

…

As Lin Ming was bitterly cultivating in the final trial’s seventh level, a great storm was stirring in the Asura Road!

This storm would involve many large influences. Let alone Empyrean influences, in just True Divinity influences, there were four.

They were the two True Divinity influences of the Asura Road – Divine Void Divine Kingdom and Heaven Union Divine Kingdom, as well as two influences from the 33 Heavens’ saint race – the Good Fortune Saint Palace and Soaring Feather God Mountain.

At this time, the Good Fortune Saint Son was kneeling on the ground deep within the Good Fortune Saint Palace, so low that his head was buried in his hands. He didn't even dare to take a deep breath.

Before this, he had widely bragged that the 'Legion of Famine' he trained would absolutely complete the mission perfectly and return safely, otherwise he would be willing to endure any punishment passed down to him. But in the turn of an eye, the Legion of Famine had been annihilated and the Good Fortune Saint Son had returned in disastrous failure.

The Good Fortune Saint Son had brought back a captive with him. He shivered as he remembered saying, 'the demon relic is missing, and because the disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace were sanctioned by the Asura Road Laws, they will not return'. Even just thinking of saying these words left him feeling listless and sick.

The once proud and arrogant Good Fortune Saint Son now lay humbled on the ground, no different from a dog.

"This… this person… is someone brought back by this child… f-from the Asura Road. He… he is a wandering martial artist that entered the final trial and witnessed the battle…"

The captive that the Good Fortune Saint Son brought back was a young trial challenger from the Asura Road. The captive's movements and cultivation had been sealed away and all he could do was blink his eyes; he couldn't even speak. But at this time, the captive was glaring at the Good Fortune Saint Son with anger and looking at the direction that the Good

Fortune Saint Son was groveling towards with fear. He knew that in the deep darkness there was a demon that would decide his life or death.

This captive had no family or sect, and only relied on himself and his destiny to obtain the lucky chances he had to arrive at where he was. When he accidently obtained a qualification token to enter the final trial, he thought that this was the chance he needed to soar into the heavens. But, he never thought that he would be seized by the Good Fortune Saint Son as soon as he left the final trial. What a laugh. He once thought he was a genius with a great destiny upon his body, but now in the grasp of this super influence, he was as weak and useless as an ant.

Without sect or family, without any influence to support him, he would die here without anyone knowing about it. As he thought of this, his heart filled with despair.

"Your Majesty Sovereign Ancestor, if you have anything you wish to confirm, you may question him..."

The Good Fortune Saint Son pushed this unlucky wandering martial artist to the ground. He felt panic rising in his heart. However, the only response was a deep and profound silence. Within the pitch black darkness, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn't speak a single word. This caused the Good Fortune Saint Son to feel even weaker at heart. His body began to shiver.

Woosh!

Without warning, a terrifying eruption occurred.

Dozens of blood red tentacles shot straight out like pointed cones, piercing through the wandering martial artist as well as through the Good Fortune Saint Son!

“Ahh!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son cried out in pain. Over a dozen bloody holes had been left in his body. As for that wandering martial artist, he vomited blood as he verged on the precipice of death!

At this time, a blood red hand extended out from the darkness and directly grasped the wandering martial artist’s head.

The wandering martial artist wildly struggled, his eyes bulging. He felt thousands of worms digging into his brain, the pain so fierce that he wished he could dig it out with his hands.

This sort of pain only lasted for several breaths of time, but to the wandering martial artist, it was an indescribably painful experience.

Then, the blood red tentacles slowly drew back and the great hand also returned. The wandering martial artist fell onto the ground like a pile of rotten meat. Blood streamed from his corpse, not a single bit of life left remaining.

All of the memories in that wandering martial artist's mind had been read by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

On the side, the Good Fortune Saint Son was deathly white and his forehead was covered in sweat; this was because he was in pain but also because he was afraid.

Although there were numerous bloody holes punctured into his body, these holes were in places that weren't too vital. For instance, his heart, lungs, brain, and spine weren't affected.

It was clear that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn't want to kill him. This allowed him to relax a little, but also be more worried about the penalties he would soon face.

He limped up, crawling to his knees as he continued to kneel to the ground. His entire body was covered in thick blood, leaving the ground around him drenched.

"Sanction of the Asura Heavenly Dao?"

Within the darkness, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's bass voice echoed outwards. With light pattering sounds, a towering middle-aged man slowly walked forwards.

In the memories of the wandering martial artist, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was able to search for the scene of what had happened. The mystical change in the Laws as well as that vast and boundless aura; he would never have imagined that someone would deliberately forge memories around the Heavenly Dao's punishment.

And in the memories of the wandering martial artist, there was no flaw that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign could find.

From start to finish, everything that occurred in the final trial seemed realistic.

However, there was one point that left the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign puzzled…

Because of the punishment of the Asura Heavenly Dao, the 20 some disciples that his Good Fortune Saint Palace sent out had all been killed.

But, why did the flesh and blood of Famine within their bodies not instantly disappear?

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was able to feel the existence of Famine's flesh and blood; it had disappeared over a long and slow period of time. This feeling was as if someone had swallowed up Famine's flesh and blood and was refining it over time…

If the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws didn't abide the existence of an abyssal entering the final trial, then by all reasoning, when that heavenly retribution descended to the earth, shouldn't it have immediately burnt away all the flesh and blood of Famine?

Why would it be slowly erased over a long period of time?

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign lost himself in thought.

The memories had no problem themselves and didn't seem like memories one had forged. As for the point that couldn't be explained, the truth was that there could be explanations found, just that they would seem a bit forced...

As the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign thought of all this, his face darkened.

"It shouldn't... be someone secretly moving behind the scenes..."

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign shot down this idea. If there was someone capable of doing all of this in secret and to the degree where he couldn't find a flaw, they would need to be someone at least on the level of an ordinary True Divinity level character. For instance, someone like Soul Emperor Divine Void.

However, with that person's skeletal age it was impossible for them to enter the final trial.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign closed his eyes. He sensed that there wasn't much of Famine's flesh and blood remaining. As for where it was located, he had no idea.

For such a situation to appear meant that Famine's flesh and blood existed in a powerful space that surpassed his divine sense.

Without a doubt, this space was the final trial.

In other words, the flesh and blood of Famine was still within the final trial, so it was even more impossible that someone was acting behind the scenes to do this. Otherwise, with the conclusion of the final trial, it would be impossible for that person to stay inside.

Then could this really mean that the Laws of the final trial had extinguished the disciples of the Good Fortune Siant Palace?

And the demon relic, where did it go? Could it be in the hands of Soul Emperor Divine Void?

Or, could it be that the Laws within the final trial, in order to prevent an existence related to the abyssals obtaining the demon relic, had sealed away the demon relic instead?

As all these thoughts flashed through the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's mind, it left him increasingly frustrated and confused. This demon relic was just far too important to him.

However, there was nothing he could do about it. Even going to the Asura Road himself was meaningless.

He looked at the Good Fortune Saint Son and impatiently waved his hand. "Screw off! This time, the reason the disciples were destroyed was because of the sanction of the Asura Road, a power that cannot be stopped. Then, I will forgive your sins for now!"

"I thank your Majesty Sovereign Ancestor for such mercy." The Good Fortune Saint Son hurriedly bowed in gratitude and relief. Then he dragged away his wounded body, leaving behind a trail of bloody footprints.

However, as he was leaving the holy temple he saw someone, a junior that he didn't want to see at all – Imperial Prince Xishen.

Within the Good Fortune Saint Palace, the title of Imperial Prince was only inferior to that of Good Fortune Saint Son. In the past, Naqi had been the Imperial Prince, but after he was slain by Lin Ming the position of Imperial Prince had been empty.

It was only 1800 years ago that another talented character appeared in the Good Fortune Saint Palace – Xishen.

He had used less than a thousand years to break into the World King realm, and in terms of combat strength, there was no martial artist of his rank that was able to defeat him. Thus, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had granted him the title of Imperial Prince.

Xishen won victory after victory and basked in the limelight. In addition with many influential saint race figures supporting him, this gave him the ambition of replacing the Good Fortune Saint Son!

It was because of this that the hostilities between the Good Fortune Saint Son and Imperial Prince Xishen rose at a precipitous rate.

Regarding this, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign only watched it all occur from the corners of his eyes, as if he simply didn’t care, or perhaps even enjoying this type of competition.

During these years, Xishen had earned many merits in the war against humanity. He had stolen away a great deal of merit and glory from the Good Fortune Saint Son.

The Good Fortune Saint Son didn’t care about this. What he feared the most was that there would be a day when the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign lost confidence in him and would decide to set up a different Saint Son instead. If so, then all his ambitions would come toppling down!

And Xishen could be the chaotic factor that led to this result!

"Oh? Well isn't it your Highness Saint Son? Why so troubled?"

Xishen's eyes locked onto the horrifying bloody holes that dotted the Good Fortune Saint Son's body. His lips curve up in a smile.

As if he knew what had just happened.

The Good Fortune Saint Son's eyes turned freezing cold. He didn't say a word, instead slowly walking away. As Xishen looked at the Good Fortune Saint Son's fading back, his smile felt a bit chilling…

………

Time passed. Unknowingly, three years flew by.

Lin Ming sat in the void in the dark starry space. In front of him was a black-haired man that looked completely like him.

This black-haired man wore a long black robe and his eyes shined with the purest brightness. The man's body was covered with a blurry mist. This mist was condensed from the purest and densest origin energy.

This black-haired man was Lin Ming's essence gathering system avatar, as well as the third avatar.

In the past, the Asura Road Master had gathered 10,000 spiritual treasures of the heavens and earth and refined it with genesis energy. Then, he took the condensed form of all these spiritual treasures and sealed it into the core of a great essence gathering array formation, nourishing it with the world's origin energy, slowly refining and tempering it through the endless river of time.

This avatar was a pure energy essence body. Whether it was absorbing heaven and earth origin energy or in terms of capabilities of utilizing heaven and earth origin energy, it had reached a boundary that ordinary martial artists would never be able to achieve.

With Lin Ming possessing the essence gathering system avatar, he now possessed the three avatars required for the Asura Heavenly Dao.

MW Chapter 1991

Chapter 1991 – Little Fishy

…

…

…

The three avatars sat around Lin Ming, and in front of him lay the third volume of the Asura Sutra.

Within the thick and ancient bronze book, every word was condensed with heaven and earth origin energy and the true strength of the absolute beginning. If an ordinary martial artist were to look at these words, even if they focused all their sight they still wouldn’t be able to make out anything from them. All they would see would be strange runes with unknown meanings.

Lin Ming had completely entered the ethereal martial intent state. Page after page, he carefully read through.

Within his eyes, the Asura Sutra was similar to a universe. The writings of the Heavenly Sutra could manifest supreme demon gods, magnificent divine palaces, and boundless galaxies…

After refining the three avatars, Lin Ming's understandings towards the Asura Sutra could no longer be compared to the past. The mysteries within the writings deeply marked themselves in his mind.

Time passed, year after year. As Lin Ming finished reading the third volume of the Asura Sutra, ten years had flown by. Lin Ming discovered that the third volume of the Asura Sutra was where the essence of the entire cultivation method was located. The intricate and diverse Laws contained within this volume were nearly equal to the sum of the first two volumes combined!

Lin Ming originally thought that the Asura Sutra was equally skilled in essence, energy, and divine. But now, it seemed that the Asura Road Master was not some omnipotent god. There were some fields in which he excelled and some fields in which he didn't.

What he was most proficient in was the essence gathering system! Thinking about it, this was also reasonable. The Asura Road Master had once been the master of the Purple Card, and the Purple Card was the condensed essence of the energy within a universe. It was the highest divine tool of the essence gathering system.

This was also the reason why the Asura Road Master placed the third volume of the Asura Sutra in the final trial's seventh level; because it was the most essential volume of his inheritance.

When Lin Ming flipped to the last page of the Asura Sutra's third volume, he was stunned. This page didn't have any writings nor were there any traces of Laws. It was completely blank, and all that was left in this bronze page was a rectangular groove in the center.

This groove emitted a strange and mysterious aura that left Lin Ming startled.

This groove… a light lit up in Lin Ming's mind. He recalled the past when he underwent his nine by nine Life Destruction and reached 33 Heavens, where he then saw the Purple Card phenomenon. As he compared it to the shape of this groove, he guessed that this was where the Purple Card was once kept.

Purple Card…

Lin Ming gently traced this groove. He could feel the aura left behind by this ancient divine tool, and his mind trembled.

"I wonder how this mysterious Purple Card affected the Asura Road Master's road of cultivation in the past…"

According to what Clear and Ink thought, the three supreme divine tools were likely the surviving condensed forms of essence, energy, and divine, left over upon the destruction of a super universe. Their main role was not to help a martial artist in cultivating. They were simply travellers passing by in this universe, and possibly even the starting point of the next universe's big bang.

Regardless of who it was, anyone that obtained one of these supreme divine tools could only use an infinitesimally portion of their power. Even the Asura Road Master was no exception.

"When the High Lord wrote the Asura Sutra in the past, he used 100 million years to do so. Every time he learned something new, became aware of something new, he would add it to the Asura Sutra. At that time, the Purple Card had been placed in the last page of the Asura Sutra's third volume, but later it disappeared without a trace."

An old voice echoed from behind Lin Ming. Lin Ming didn't turn around, but instead traced the groove in the Asura Sutra where the Purple Card had once been.

He asked with some surprised, "The three books of the Asura Sutra took Senior Asura a hundred million years to write?"

Lin Ming was stunned upon hearing this timespan.

“Yes. But the High Lord didn’t spend every waking moment of this hundred million years writing the Asura Sutra. This 100 million years was only the time period in which the High Lord wrote the Asura Sutra. During this time, the High Lord also had many other matters he needed to handle. For instance, this was also when he chose to establish the Asura Road…”

“When the High Lord completed the Asura Road, he placed the third volume of the Asura Sutra in the final trial’s seventh level. The first person to open it was a human, the human race’s Divine Seal. In the past when Divine Seal opened it, although the Purple Card was no longer there, he still took away a wisp of aura left behind by the Purple Card…”

“Mm? The Purple Card’s aura?” Lin Ming repeated. “What is that?”

“The Purple Card followed the High Lord for far too long. The High Lord’s aura, Laws, and energy, poured into the Purple Card and accumulated over time. Slowly, it bred an aura with a spiritual intelligence of its own. You might call it something like an artifact spirit.”

“But this artifact spirit is different from the artifact spirit of an Empyrean spirit treasure or True Divinity spirit treasure. A True Divinity spirit treasure’s artifact spirit can completely control that True Divinity spirit treasure; they could even be called the true master of the spirit treasure. But, the artifact spirits born from the three divine tools do not possess such an ability. Even so, they still have the ability to enhance and manipulate the three divine tools because they in themselves are evolved from the aura of the three divine tools. They can be called a bridge, a medium that connects the divine tool to the user…”

"That spiritually aware aura that was similar to an artifact spirit was taken away by Empyrean Divine Seal?" As Lin Ming heard this, his mind began to race…

"What was the appearance of that spiritually aware aura?" Lin Ming suddenly asked.

"Too much time has passed. That spiritually aware aura will change forms and it also has spiritual wisdom. When Divine Seal brought it away, it had the appearance of a little girl. Afterwards this little girl also played a role in humanity's great calamity 3.6 billion years ago, when Famine's soul was sealed away…"

The two old men had a deep understanding of Empyrean Divine Seal and his struggle against the saints. After all, he was the first person to ever collect all three emperor jades, thus everything about him was recorded in the records of the Asura Road's guardian clan. However, this guardian clan wasn't able to help Empyrean Divine Seal resist his enemies because their only mission was to bear witness and guard this land.

"Little girl…" Lin Ming closed his eyes, many scenes flashing through his mind. This little girl, without any doubt at all, should be Fishy. She was the mysterious little girl that ate violet sun crystals and nine sun jades.

If so, then many matters could be explained.

Violet sun crystals and nine sun jades were crystallized forms of origin energy, and Fishy was a spiritually aware aura evolved from the Purple Card. It was natural for her to take energy as food.

The place where Lin Ming found Fishy was the True Martial Great World's Immemorial Imperial City. Within the Divine Realm, this was not a special land, and could even be called common. But deep underground beneath Immemorial Imperial City was the Divine Seal Array left behind by Empyrean Divine Seal, in which the soul of Famine had been suppressed for 3.6 billion years!

From all of this, Fishy likely no longer remembered anything. Perhaps too much time had passed and she lost many memories, or perhaps in the great war 3.6 billion years ago she had lost too much strength, causing her to also lose her memories.

However, even if she lost her memories, her instinct still told her to wander around the edges of the Divine Seal Array…

Such a mysterious Divine Seal Array was blocked by layers upon layers of concealing array formations by Empyrean Divine Seal. Even if a True Divinity were to come to Immemorial Imperial City they still wouldn't be able to find anything.

Yet Fishy was able to locate its position…

Thinking of this, Lin Ming's doubts were scattered.

And there was another little girl that was similar to Fishy – Ruby, from the Akashic Dream Universe.

When Lin Ming entered the Akashic Dream Battlefield and picked up a Kirin fruit, he had been stopped by the mysterious red-clothed little girl. This little girl was similar to Fishy and she had an introverted, cautious disposition, and she stuttered a little as she spoke. She didn't remember anything about her past but she possessed special abilities.

It was with her guidance that Lin Ming found the ancient galactic battlefield. Here, Lin Ming bore witness to the battle between the Asura Road Master and the creator of the Holy Scripture, Immortal Sovereign. Here, he felt the residual aura of the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws.

Ruby seemed to have an extremely deep understanding into the Akashic Dream Universe. At the same time, she also had an incredible understanding towards soul forms.

This ability was particularly obvious during his time in the Fallen God Mountain Range, when Lin Ming was on the shrine platforms grasping the principles and competing against Sheng Mei.

At that time, there had been many things that Lin Ming wasn't able to see on the shrine platform, yet Ruby was able to see. If it weren't for her constant direction then it would have been impossible for Lin Ming to surpass Sheng Mei in grasping the principles atop the shrine platform and winning the golden page.

Moreover, even Sheng Mei and the Soul Emperor weren't able to sense Ruby's existence.

But at the same time, Ruby was able to sense the Magic Cube. She had stared at Lin Ming's stomach and knew that the Magic Cube was located within his inner world.

When joining all of these factors together, Lin Ming didn't doubt that Ruby was the spiritually aware aura that evolved from the Magic Cube!

Thus, this was the reason Ruby once said that he had a nice smell and gave off a familiar feeling. This was the reason why the timid and stuttering Ruby insisted on following him.

The two old men's words had Lin Ming understand many things.

It seemed that in the distant past, the Magic Cube was once also possessed by a peerless powerhouse, and thus Ruby was formed.

And the wielder of the Magic Cube was likely the creator of the Holy Scripture – Immortal Sovereign!

Ruby and Fishy wouldn’t necessarily live forever. There would come a day when they would die, turning into pure energies that returned to the three divine tools. But, those three divine tools would continue existing forever, until the universe itself came to an end…

Thinking all of this, Lin Ming traced his stomach. He felt that he needed to go to the Akashic Dream Universe and find Ruby to seek out her help…

With her help, he would be able to better control the Magic Cube!

Lin Ming knew that the Magic Cube was a divine tool that superseded the samsara of the universe. All he could use of it was a tiny bit of its endless power. There was more potential, waiting for him to explore it…

One day, Lin Ming would be able to bring out the Magic Cube in front of all and use it as his weapon, fighting the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and Soul Emperor.

MW Chapter 1992A

Chapter 1992A – New World

…

…

…

The river of time rolled onwards. A single small wave carried with it innumerable years.

As the universe's most terrifying Law, time moved forwards with unstoppable momentum. No one knew where it came from and no one knew where it would end. Even if a universe was destroyed and the next universe was born, the wheel of time would continue revolving.

In this long river of time, the war between the saints and humanity, the Divine Realm falling to its enemies, this was nothing but a tiny point in a small stream of 10 billion years.

With that fixed point as a beginning, 5000 years had passed.

The outstanding elites of humanity had already given up on the Divine Realm and had long since fled to a wild world. They developed the borders of this world, fighting against vicious beasts to continue spreading the glory of the human race…

Over 99% of humanity's inheritances had been saved. But, even if these inheritances were successfully recorded into cultivation method jade slips, they were still difficult to learn. This was because one needed a master to slowly guide them through it.

Of course, besides the guidance of a master, one's own tempering and experience was even more important. And, this wild universe was the best smelting trial for doing so.

However… this land was far too cruel and brutal…

"Ah!"

A miserable scream echoed out. In the skies above a wild forest, a man was thrown into the air as he wildly struggled.

Then, something tragic occurred.

A massive spiked club smashed down on this man's body.

Peng!

A terrifying impact exploded this man into a mass of blood fog!

“A’Xuan!”

A woman cried out in panic. Her eyes filled with tears. The one who just died in the air was her little brother.

“Run!”

A man grabbed the woman’s arm and began to hurriedly pull her away!

Although the woman was sad and heartbroken, she didn’t do something stupid like betting her life against the monster. She quickly composed herself, biting her teeth and fleeing with the man.

The one who killed her little brother was a desolate primal giant.

This was a non-intelligent humanoid race, one of the many mysterious races within the wild universe.

Their disposition was vicious and they were extremely aggressive. Any life forms they could kill they would eat as food; this included humans.

5000 years ago when humanity fled to the wild universe they had encountered incredible perils. This wild universe was flooded with terrifying vicious beasts and desolate primal giants, and even demon beasts evolved from the mystical Heavenly Dao Laws.

These savage existences had existed for billions of years in this wild universe and had undergone endless slaughtering for all this time. They were incomparably formidable beings and would kill anything they saw.

Humanity was naturally attacked. In order to create a habitat where they could live, the human race fought with these ancient vicious beasts for many years. In this war, even human Empyreans perished.

But slowly, humanity managed to create several living zones, each one guarded by at least 10 Empyreans. At the same time, these areas were covered with concealing array formations in order to prevent them behind discovered by the enemy once war erupted again in the future.

The descendants of humanity's elites lived in such areas.

Their parents were either outstanding individuals or rulers of humanity. Once they were born they should have had the support of rich resources, able to live a luxurious life. But because of the great calamity 5000 years ago, all of that was erased.

From the moment of their birth they had to face a brutal struggle to survive!

Now, all descendants of humanity, whether they were the children of Empyreans or any other genius, all of them to experience an equally savage and merciless competition. They had to expand their territory in this wild universe!

Within the wild universe, there was an endless number of vicious beasts, ancient desolate alien races, and demon beasts that had evolved from the Heavenly Dao. Empyreans wouldn't regularly act to clean up the dangers that crept into the territory of humanity. Rather, this task was passed down to the younger generation.

This was their trial!

Every year countless heroic elites would die. But at the same time, more and more outstanding elites were able to grow. They inherited the mission of reviving their race from their parents and became true warriors.

In the history of humanity, there had never been such dark and troubled times. This was a test of their entire race. If they were able to survive through this then they would be a phoenix that had undergone nirvana, breaking out of their cocoon with new life. But if they failed, that meant utter annihilation.

Bang!

Bang!

As the man and woman ran away, the desolate primal giant behind them took its great spiked club and wildly smashed down at them again and again.

Many towering trees were broken apart like dry straw beneath this onslaught.

The man and woman began to despair. The desolate primal giant was faster than they were; at this pace, they would die in less than 10 breaths of time.

“Don’t panic!”

A blue-clothed scholar shouted out. He led four or five disciples behind him, his group rapidly approaching the young man and woman to rescue them.

“High Master!”

Seeing this blue-clothed scholar, the man and woman were overjoyed. But before they could rejoice, they caught a glimpse of the blue-clothed scholar's dark and grimacing face.

"Desolate primal giant, royalty!"

The blue-clothed scholar's heart chilled. The desolate primal giants were like bees in their structure and had a very strict hierarchy. This desolate primal giant in front of them was part of the royal family, and its combat strength was several times that of an ordinary desolate primal giant.

Woosh!

The blue-clothed scholar flicked his finger. Beams of blue light shot out from the cuff of his sleeves, each blue light a flying sword.

The blue-clothed scholar possessed 36 flying swords. He could form a sword array with tremendous strength!

Ca!

Sword light rained down like a storm. The desolate primal giant roared and its spiked club pounded down on that hail of swords.

However, the moment that spiked club smashed towards that sword rain, the sword rain parted like a school of fish, dispersing and avoiding the spiked club. They reformed in the skies, gathering into a massive sword light that came slicing down with unstoppable momentum!

Kacha!

The desolate primal giant's shoulder was sliced open by this sword light. The wound was a hundred feet deep and blood gushed out into the air.

"Is it over?"

The eyes of the disciples following the blue-clothed scholar brightened. However, before they could cheer, they saw that the desolate primal giant had directly grasped onto that sword light and crushed it in its hand!

Peng!

The giant blue sword exploded into endless motes of light. The desolate primal giant's eyes suddenly turned blood red and the thick muscles that corded its body began to wriggle about. Its body started to rapidly inflate, and the giant alarming wound that marred its body started to regenerate.

“This is bad!”

The blue-clothed scholar’s forehead began to drip with a cold sweat. Not only was this desolate primal giant from the royal family, but it was a top master amongst the royal giants. Its combat strength could not be compared to the others’.

“Hurry and run! I will distract it, and the rest of you flee!”

The blue-clothed scholar sent out the most sensible order that he could in this dire situation. The disciples behind him felt their hearts drop into their stomachs. The dangers of recklessly fleeing into the wild forests could be imagined. In particular, the fate of the blue-clothed scholar that was staying behind to delay for time would likely be hopeless!

“High Master!”

The young female disciple that had been chased by the desolate primal giant couldn’t help but cry out in sorrow.

“Hurry and run!”

MW Chapter 1992B

Chapter 1992B - Lin Huang

…

…

…

“Hurry and run! I will distract it, and the rest of you flee!”

The blue-clothed scholar sent out the most sensible order that he could in this dire situation. The disciples behind him felt their hearts drop into their stomachs. The dangers of recklessly fleeing into the wild forests could be imagined. In particular, the fate of the blue-clothed scholar that was staying behind to delay for time would likely be hopeless!

“High Master!”

The young female disciple that had been chased by the desolate primal giant couldn’t help but cry out in sorrow.

"Hurry and run!"

The blue-clothed scholar bellowed from the depths of his lungs, his 36 flying swords spinning around him.

But at this time, there was a thunderous peal of roars from the forest. The sound was so loud and bass that the earth shook. From the far off forests, seven or eight hill-sized desolate primal giants leapt out!

These desolate primal giants had thick muscles that gripped their bodies like a dragon's claws. Their skin was gray-blue. It would be impossible for ordinary weapons to even leave behind a scar on that terrifyingly hard skin.

"What!?"

Seeing these new enemies appear, the blue-clothed scholar felt his heart sink. A chill crawled up his back and his entire body turned cold.

Amongst these seven or eight approaching desolate primal giants, there were three royals!

Four royal desolate primal giants had actually appeared from this forest!

Fathomless abyss shrouded his mind and heart. With so many desolate primal giants, scattering and fleeing was no longer possible.

Could it be that they were all destined to die here today?

The blue-clothed scholar bit his lips, a decisive light flashing in his eyes. He was ready to burn his blood essence and go all out in a deathmatch against these desolate primal giants, and carve out a road of blood for his disciples. But at this time, he froze. He discovered that these seven or eight approaching desolate primal giants weren't coming here to attack them, but were instead fleeing, as if they were being hunted down by something else.

One of the desolate primal giants was running away in panic and chose to rush towards the blue-clothed scholar.

This desolate primal giant came from the royal family and was a top master of its rank; it was even stronger than the desolate primal giant that the blue-clothed scholar had just fought. Its speed was extremely fast and wherever it ran, the earth would cave in and great trees would be broken apart like weeds.

The several young disciples following the blue-clothed scholar hadn't noticed that these desolate primal giants were trying to escape. They thought that this giant was coming here to kill them.

With opponents from the front and the back, they were sure to die here without a burial.

As they had lost all hope of survival in their hearts, on the verge of waiting for death, the desolate primal giant's body shook and froze, and it lost all forwards momentum.

In that moment, a gray light had pierced through its body.

Compared to that titanic desolate primal giant, this gray light seemed like a small gray needle, simply unworthy of mentioning. But as it sliced through the giant's body, it produced a black vortex.

This black vortex grew within the desolate primal giant's body, becoming larger and larger as it recklessly sucked in the desolate primal giant's flesh and blood.

It cried out in pain and misery. It used its two hands to cover its chest but it couldn't stop its life force from passing away. Like this, it crashed into the ground, and the powerful inertia of its weight and size shattered innumerable trees!

As this desolate primal giant toppled down, a young man's figure appeared like ghosts and gods in the air. His body burned with black flames and he grasped a pale blue spear. His black hair scattered in the wind.

The desolate primal giant beneath it had yet to completely die. It reached out a hand, wanting to crush this youth. But, the youth simply waved his spear and a divine red light fell down from the clouds, thrusting through the desolate primal giant's head!

Peng!

Horrifying black flames exploded within the desolate primal giant's brain. Its spiritual sea was instantly destroyed and its life ended there, impossible to die any further.

"That... that person is..."

Seeing this black-haired youth suddenly appear, the young disciples were shocked. Wasn't this too strong? He had instantly struck down a royal desolate primal giant who was at the peak of his level.

Even the blue-clothed scholar was bewildered. He looked at the blue spear in the youth's hand, a thoughtful look on his face.

But at this time, a roar echoed out from behind him. The desolate primal giant that he had injured was enraged due to the death of its companion, and it angrily punched out at the blue-clothed scholar!

The blue-clothed scholar’s pupils shrank. Before he could even counterattack, all he saw was a blue light flash in front of him. The head of the desolate primal giant flew up into the air, and the terrifying blood pressure formed a fountain of blood that erupted hundreds of feet into the blue skies.

A top royal desolate primal giant had its head instantly severed!

“This… this strong!?”

The woman who was chased by the desolate primal giant was dumbfounded as she saw the flashing figure of the youth. This youth began hunting down the other desolate primal giants!

And with his horrifying speed, he could easily chase after these desolate primal giants like a lion chasing sheep!

As expected, in several breaths of time, another desolate primal giant had its heart pierced through and it toppled to the ground. This desolate primal giant wasn’t a royal and its body wasn’t too formidable. It directly blew apart beneath the power of the mysterious youth’s attack, nearly split in half!

The young disciples couldn’t help but fly into the skies to watch this battle. They flew to the blue-clothed scholar’s side, and saw that the blue-clothed scholar was watching the youth with a thoughtful look his eyes.

“High Master, who is that man?”

The blue-clothed scholar hesitated for a moment. Then he said, “If I’m not wrong, that youth is called Lin Huang. He comes from Divine Dream City.”

Divine Dream City was the first living zone that the human race had opened up in the wild universe.

It was called a city, but this so-called ‘city’ was merely a name. In truth, Divine Dream City included dozens of planets, including a massive super continent. It was the largest living zone of humans.

And the City Lord of Divine Dream City was the leader of all humanity – Empyrean Divine Dream.

By now, Empyrean Divine Dream had broken into the realm of True Divinity. Whether it was in status or strength, she was the pillar of humanity.

“Divine Dream City? He came from there?” The young disciples looked at each other. Communicating and travelling between the various living zones of humanity wasn’t easy at all. This was because in order to travel through the wild universe one needed a powerful strength as a foundation; otherwise one wouldn’t even have their bones left.

Let alone them, even the blue-clothed scholar wasn't able to travel between the human living zones.

"Lin Huang... no wonder!"

Amongst the young disciples, some people had heard of Lin Huang and some people hadn't. A young girl couldn't help but ask, "Who is he? Is he famous?"

"Of course he's famous! In Divine Dream City, there is no junior that doesn't know about him. His talent is too terrifying!" The disciple spoke with awe in his voice. "Well, perhaps you might not know of him, but you should know who his father is. His father is Lin Ming, the man once known as humanity's number one genius..."

Lin Ming?

Hearing this name, the other disciples sucked in a breath of cold air. This youth was actually Lin Ming's son!

MW Chapter 1993

Chapter 1993 – Huang

…

…

…

To the humans of the wild universe, Lin Ming was a legendary name. No one hadn’t heard of him and no one didn’t know of him.

In the confrontations between the saints and humanity, humanity had been defeated and defeated again.

But, it was Lin Ming alone who caused humanity to completely cover the saints’ limelight. Almost 6000 years ago Lin Ming had been the number one genius of humanity. Not only was he the number one genius of humanity, he was also the number one genius of the 33 Heavens!

Even the saints and the spiritas were unable to deny this truth.

In the past, with a mere Divine Transformation realm cultivation Lin Ming had challenged the number one genius of the saints – the Good Fortune Saint Son, who was several times older than he was.

And in just 60 years Lin Ming had surpassed him. At the Monster Emperor's Grand Longevity Feast, he forced down the Good Fortune Saint Son in a heaven-shaking battle. His actions had greatly inspired the morale of humanity and even affected the alliance between the saints and the monster race to a certain degree.

That had been humanity's complete victory!

That victory could be said to be limited to inspiring morale, and hadn't truly damaged the saints. But afterwards, Lin Ming went alone to the Soul World to find a method of salvation, a way to truly save humanity.

From anyone's viewpoint, Lin Ming's actions at the time had been an utterly hopeless mission.

Even the wise Empyrean Divine Dream didn't have any hopes that he would succeed.

Lin Ming first tried to form an alliance with the spiritas. But after nothing came from the negotiations, he went to the primal god race and from them he found the Ark of Hope as well as the Asura Decree that was capable of piercing through the God Lamenting Wall.

By using this Asura Decree, humanity was able to pierce through the barriers of the 33 Heavens and arrive at the wild universe. Only then were humanity's inheritances and elites able to be preserved. Otherwise, in that great calamity 6000 years ago, humanity would have already perished. The numerous Empyreans and geniuses would have died in battle and there would no longer be a chance for the revival of humanity.

It could be said that without Lin Ming, there would be no human living zones within the wild universe.

But what a pity. When Lin Ming was at the mere Holy Lord realm, the saints had dispatched Soaring Feather God King to personally chase and hunt him down. Because the disparity in strength was too great, Lin Ming wasn't able to escape this disaster. Otherwise many people believed that if he were able to grow for another 10,000 years, then he would definitely have been able to bring about a great reversal to humanity's fate.

But history had no 'ifs' or 'whats'. Lin Ming had died, and the only bloodline he left in the world was Lin Huang.

Seeing this youth with the blue spear, the blue-clothed scholar walked forward and bowed. "I am one of Skyrend Godlord's latter disciples, Qing Mo. I've long since heard of Young Hero Lin's famous name, and seeing you today is my greatest honor. I, Qing Mo, will forever carve down Young Hero Lin's life-saving grace in my mind!"

The blue-clothed scholar was one of Skyrend Godlord's disciples and also had a World King cultivation – he was Lin Huang's elder.

But the words he spoke didn't have the bearing or authority of an elder. Rather, he spoke with earnest respect. This was the disparity in status brought about by strength.

Lin Huang cupped his fists together, "It was just a minor effort, there is no need for Senior to speak so seriously. The reason this junior came to Skyrend World was to meet Senior Skyrend. Junior has brought along a letter from Senior Divine Dream and must show it to Senior Skyrend."

Lin Huang's reply was humble and polite, giving off a comfortable feeling. Although he was strong, his aura was restrained and he didn't emit any oppressive feeling at all. At the same time, one could see a will and ambition in his pupils, one so profound that it seemed as if it could reverse the heavens and earth, leaving one sighing in praise.

"You are truly exactly like your father. 5000 years ago when I followed the human elites to evacuate the Divine Realm, I saw your father once. He left a deep impression on me..."

Hearing the blue-clothed scholar suddenly mention his father, Lin Huang was startled.

Everyone respected his father. He had never seen his father before, but he had continually affected his life. From birth he had listened to innumerable tales about his father's deeds and legends, and every time there was a person that had met his father, they couldn't help but mention his father in passing…

Regarding this, Lin Huang always politely listened. As a child, these moments had brought him pride countless times.

Even the name 'Huang' within his name was related to his father.

Huang was an ancient word that held many meanings.

Huang meant the wilderness. When humanity arrived in the wild universe, they had to face the inexhaustible wilderness and constantly develop their own land and territories. They fought without end, fighting for their future. Huang meant the beginning of a new era.

Huang also meant famine. Famine – that was the name of the abyssal demon. Lin Huang didn't fear this abyssal. Instead, this name reminded him that if he wanted to lead humanity to overcome this great calamity, he needed to mercilessly slaughter and brutally struggle just like the abyssals.

Finally, Huang also meant desolate. This was the last and most important meaning behind his name. Lin Huang's mother and father had met in the Asura Road's Great Desolate, where they had fallen in love with each other. They journeyed together and were later pushed into a dead end by Tian Mingzi, forced to enter the Great Desolate's Tragic Death Valley. This pressure made them join together and gave Lin Ming the pressure he needed to break through the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

Huang – a name that also represented his mother's feelings and thoughts for his father.

"Master is currently in seclusion. If Young Hero Lin wishes to see him, then the disciples of Skyrend God Palace will need to send a message."

"Thank you."

Lin Huang held his fists together once again, bidding the blue-clothed scholar farewell. His figure turned into a beam of light as he vanished into the skies, leaving behind the group of young disciples to stare at his fading back, dazed and lost in thought.

"He is Senior Lin Ming and Senior Xiao Moxian's son…"

"Senior Xian Moxian possesses a half-phoenix body and her talent is extremely high. As for Senior Lin Ming, there is no need to mention him. If such a combination has a child, just how talented would they be? I wonder what boundary his current strength is at…"

A young disciple sighed as he spoke. Facing Lin Huang, he felt that he simply couldn't compare at all.

The blue-clothed scholar said, “Lin Huang was born with a royal God Beast’s bloodline, and he also seems to have inherited a bloodline from his father that is even more powerful and special than that of a God Beast. As for what it actually is, I have no idea. In addition, Lin Huang dual cultivates body and energy, and is being carefully directed by Empyrean Divine Dream and the other Empyreans. The rate at which his strength increases cannot be imagined!

“But because he has a half royal Dark Phoenix bloodline he has to experience nine phoenix nirvanas, so the rate at which his cultivation rises isn’t too heaven-defying. Even so, in terms of combat efficiency, he is already able to rise above many of the older generation’s Empyreans. As for how strong he actually is, I cannot begin to speculate.”

The blue-clothed scholar judged. The other young disciples felt their hearts skip a beat as they all gulped together. Although the blue-clothed scholar’s words seemed reasonable, as they recalled that young and polite youth, they felt it a bit unbelievable that such a nice young man could contend with an Empyrean.

The feeling the young man gave off was as if he was no different from how they were…

At this time, Lin Huang had already entered Skyrend God Palace. He was resting in a room, lost in thought. Then, he rose up to deliver Divine Dream’s letter…

Although Lin Huang now possessed the strength to travel through the wild universe, Xiao Moxian was still always worried about him. It could be said that Lin Huang was Xiao Moxian's everything.

MW Chapter 1994

Chapter 1994 – Dark Clouds

…

…

…

This was a continent that was hundreds of millions of miles wide. On this continent, the origin energy was rich in the air and one could find opulent floating jade palaces everywhere. Rare spirit flowers bloomed throughout, making this land a living paradise.

This continent was called the New Era Continent. 6000 years ago, Empyrean Divine Dream joined together with several other Empyreans to open up this land, allowing it to be developed. Currently it was the largest of the human-inhabited continents.

Within the wild universe that was filled with perils and endless slaughtering, this was a rare blissful land of peace.

The name of New Era signified the hopes of humanity to overcome this tribulation and return to the Divine Realm.

At the center of this continent was an incomparably large divine tree. The crown of this divine tree towered into the clouds and the boughs shaded a radius of thousands of miles.

A quiet immortal palace quietly floated above the crown of this divine tree. This divine tree had numerous rainbow-hued clouds swirling about it. There were grand structures layered high and low, with winding waterside pavilions spread out everywhere. Many spirit beasts and spirit birds flew through the skies, the sight beautiful to the eyes.

In this immortal palace, there was an extremely ordinary-looking garden. The garden was planted with well-tended flowers and plants, all of it seeming delicate.

Dappled golden sunlight sprinkled down, shining down on a door. At some time, the door was pushed open by a jade-white hand and a woman stepped into the garden.

She was a beautiful and lithe young woman. Her looks were elegant and her skin was flawless, as if she were a dream painted by an artist. She wore a black dress that fell to her knees, revealing straight and slender thighs and creamy white ankles.

This woman was Lin Ming’s wife – the half phoenix body Xiao Moxian.

At this time, Xiao Moxian had taken out a pair of gardening scissors and was gently trimming the flowers and plants.

Her movements were patient as she pruned them. A rainbow-hued flower was cut down by her and a flower petal fell into her hands. She placed it in her mouth, slowly chewing it.

The sweet and fragrant scent dissipated through her senses...

These flowers and plants were treasures of the heaven and earth. They could be used for medicine and also to refine high quality pills.

Xiao Moxian plucked another flower petal. She placed it in her mouth, slowly eating it.

With every flower that she cut down, the spirit energy they dissipated began to slowly gathering, finally forming a dense and hazy mist in the garden.

Xiao Moxian looked at this swirling mist, lost in thought. She used a finger to gently point at this mist. The energy in the mist began to rapidly move in the air. In just several breaths of time, it gathered into the phantom of a man.

This man had a forehead as sharp as a sword and eyes as bright as stars. His face was edged and angular and he held a long spear in his hands. He gave off a sharp feeling, as if he were some treasure sword hidden in a sheath.

Xiao Moxian looked at this image and gently sighed. Then, she waved her right hand and this phantom dissipated, vanishing into nothing.

She looked towards the skies, disappointed.

For 5000 years, Xiao Moxian's cultivation had been at a bottleneck. Towards this, Empyrean Divine Dream had guided her, saying that if she couldn't break past the shackles of self and heart, then it would be even more difficult to break through this cultivation barrier and would cause her cultivation to be delayed for a long time.

During these years, Xiao Moxian had spent a great deal of her time gardening, living life and eating flowers and drinking morning dew.

She used this to reminisce on the cherished memories in her heart.

And also to temper her own state of mind.

She had never been able to accept news of Lin Ming's death. In truth, even though the saints had long since confirmed Lin Ming's demise, even though she knew that Lin Ming had departed from her because he was being chased down by Soaring Feather God King, even though she knew he had chosen a path of certain death, she continued to stubbornly believe that Lin Ming was still living...

This might be an obsession or perhaps a kind of reluctance. It might even be because of her blind trust in Lin Ming, her faith that he would survive and once again create miracles…

However, even though she ardently waited for Lin Ming for 5000 years, he still hadn't returned.

She touched her chest, pulling out a strange necklace.

This necklace was simple and crude. The chain was thick and the design was primitive. As Xiao Moxian wore it, it contrasted sharply against her pale neck, seeming completely incompatible. But for so many years, Xiao Moxian had always had this necklace with her.

This was the first gift that Lin Ming had given her. Its name was – the Thousand Mile Heartlink.

It could remember a person's soul aura. As long as that person existed in the same world then regardless of how far they were, this necklace's master could use its ability to communicate with this other person.

This necklace held a special significance to Xiao Moxian.

In the past when Xiao Moxian returned to Demondawn Heavenly Palace from the Asura Road, she had been placed under house arrest by Empyrean Demondawn because she had been with child. Empyrean Demondawn coerced Xiao Moxian to agree to marrying the Good Fortune Saint Son, using the life of her child as a threat. And as Xiao Moxian was in her most desperate time without any way out, she suddenly remembered the Thousand Mile Heartlink. Using it, she was able to contact Lin Ming and discuss countermeasures. Afterwards Lin Ming fought the Good Fortune Saint Son at the Monster Emperor's Grand Longevity Feast.

Now over 5000 years had passed, and Xiao Moxian always kept the Thousand Mile Heartlink in good condition.

Besides recalling her most beloved memories, she also had a wild hope that one day, when she touched the Thousand Mile Heartlink, she would feel a familiar pull on her soul, a soul that haunted her dreams.

As she held the simple necklace in her hands, she hesitated. Then, she closed her eyes, sinking her thoughts into it…

Within her sea of consciousness, the boundaries were without limit.

However, after Xiao Moxian wandered this sea for a long time she still wasn't able to find a wisp of that incomparably familiar aura…

Finally, she opened her eyes without having gained anything at all.

She discovered that the array formation runes on the Thousand Mile Heartlink were becoming increasingly weak. The Thousand Mile Heartlink came from the Asura Road, and the core of the array formation was in truth a divine runic symbol. There was a limit to the number of times it could be used, and now after so many years with Xiao Moxian constantly using it to sense Lin Ming's existence, the array formation had slowly decayed over time and was now nearing collapse.

Once the array formation collapsed the memory of Lin Ming's soul mark would disappear with it. Then, it would no longer be able to communicate with Lin Ming.

Gently tracing the Thousand Mile Heartlink and feeling the increasingly weak soul mark, Xiao Moxian dismally sighed. Then, she carefully put away the necklace…

"Little Sister Xian'er…"

As Xiao Moxian put away the necklace, two women entered the garden.

Of these two women, one wore a long red dress. She was elegant and mature, her stature tall and proud.

The other women wore a light yellow dress. She was beautiful and charming to the eyes, like the young treasured princess of a family.

These two women were Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan. Now their cultivations had reached the peak Divine Lord realm.

A Divine Lord powerhouse could live for over 100,000 years. If one didn't factor in foundation and actual combat strength, then with the support of many resources, it wouldn't be hard for these two women to break into the Holy Lord realm.

In the past, when the human race hastily evacuated the Divine Realm and fled to the wild universe, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan had been considered non-combatants. Under the arrangements of Empyrean Divine Dream they had left with the first batch of people.

Mu Qianyu noticed the Thousand Mile Heartlink that Xiao Moxian had just put away. She also knew what use this necklace had, and also knew that Xiao Moxian hadn't found anything just now.

"My two big sisters have arrived." Xiao Moxian put away her wistful thoughts and revealed a charming smile.

In truth, before Lin Ming had been chased down by Soaring Feather God King and then disappeared without even a message, Xiao Moxian hadn't actually had much contact with Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu.

They didn't know each other to begin with, and there was a large disparity between them in multiple aspects. This made it so that they didn't have many chances to socialize and their relationship was somewhat estranged.

It was only when Lin Ming had disappeared for many years that the three women became much more familiar with each other as they all were in the same situation.

If one ignored the years that Xiao Moxian passed within Tragic Death Valley, then she would be considered the youngest of the three women. Thus, she called Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan her big sisters.

"Huang'er just sent a message. He has arrived at Skyrend World and entered Skyrend God Palace…" Qin Xingxuan said.

Lin Huang was the only bloodline left in the world by Lin Ming. In the past, Lin Ming lived the life of a wanderer and often adventured alone in dangerous realms and situations to temper himself. He had gained many enemies and was often being hunted down by others. Thus, due to all these worries, Lin Ming had made the choice to not leave behind his bloodline with Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu. At the time, the two women hadn't thought much about it, but now that Lin Ming had been gone for so many years and none of them knew whether or not he was still alive, the two women felt a great deal of regret.

Thus, Xiao Moxian's son Lin Huang had become their common child.

…………

At this time, at Skyrend World, Lin Huang was standing in a grand hall. He politely bowed, saying, “Junior Lin Huang greets Senior Skyrend.”

In front of Lin Huang, a tall old man strode down from a divine altar. He had fiery red hair and his hands were as large as fans. A kind and gentle smile hung on his face.

“Lin Huang, it’s been over 4000 years. You’ve grown up…”

The breeding of a God Beast was an extremely slow process, and this was even more so for Lin Huang who possessed a heaven-defying bloodline. He had been born only after spending several hundred years in his mother’s womb, and even after he was born, he still didn’t open his eyes but continued sleeping for a hundred years. It was only when his bloodline had finished its growth that he started to grow like other children.

By the time Lin Huang was a year old, almost a thousand years had passed since the war between humanity and the saints erupted.

Empyrean Divine Dream held a grand birthday feast on the day of Lin Huang’s first year. Many human Empyreans had attended and Skyrend Godlord was no exception to this. He also saw Lin Huang at this birthday feast, and now after 4000 years, Lin Huang was considered one of the masters of the human race.

“Senior, this is a letter that Empyrean Divine Dream wrote for you. Junior has brought it.”

Skyrend Godlord was one of the top ranked Empyreans of humanity. And in terms of age and background, he was almost the greatest of humanity. He had a high level of prestige among the human race and Empyrean Divine Dream would frequently consult with him concerning important matters.

However, in most situations, Empyrean Divine Dream would directly communicate with Skyrend Godlord. She rarely sent someone to deliver him a letter.

As Skyrend Godlord received the letter that Empyrean Divine Dream sent him, he probed it with his divine sense.

Slowly, his eyebrows furrowed deeply.

Within this letter there were many images. And, these images left him beyond shocked!

This was a giant red monster. It smashed at the void, again and again, causing cracks to appear in the void. But, these cracks slowly regenerated...

Skyrend Godlord knew just what this red monster was – it was Famine!

And the void that it smashed was the God Lamenting Wall that separated the Divine Realm and the wild universe!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had gained enough strength that he could forcefully open a connection through the God Lamenting Wall without sacrificing too much strength?

MW Chapter 1995

Chapter 1995 – Approaching Crisis

…

…

…

The God Lamenting Wall was a great enchantment formed from the Heavenly Dao Laws. It divided the 33 Heavens and was incomparably firm.

Beneath the mysterious control of the Heavenly Dao Laws, parts of the God Lamenting Wall would periodically weaken like the rise and fall of a tide. But, there were also some parts of the God Lamenting Wall that were always firm.

And for these firm parts of the God Lamenting Wall, even a peak Empyrean wouldn't be able to leave behind a trace.

Only a True Divinity would be able to open up a connection by damaging their cultivation. But, this so-called connection was only temporary and couldn't be maintained.

For instance, 105,000 years ago, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had targeted Empyrean Primordius, and in order to chase him down he had formed a connection in the God Lamenting Wall. But this connection wasn't able to last too long and afterwards, the God Lamenting Wall had slowly regenerated itself.

Yet this time was completely different. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was using Famine to carve open a path in the God Lamenting Wall.

And the method to carve open this path was Famine's most formidable ability – swallowing!

At its peak, Famine was able to swallow the rules of the Heavenly Dao, and the God Lamenting Wall itself was in truth one of the Heavenly Dao's rules. When the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign tamed Famine and constantly fed it the resources of the Divine Realm, it had slowly recovered towards its past peak level and now it had gained the ability to swallow the God Lamenting Wall!

From the images of Divine Dream's letter, the sphere-like Famine had turned into a giant red worm that was slowly gnawing away at the God Lamenting Wall, like a termite chewing away at wood.

This scene left Skyrend Godlord horrified. At this speed, it wouldn't be long before a hole in the God Lamenting Wall was eaten away by Famine!

Lin Huang said, “Senior Skyrend, Senior Divine Dream said that if Famine wants to swallow the God Lamenting Wall and open a connection, it won’t take long. But if it wishes to carve open a giant hole that can be maintained for a thousand years, this will require a long period of time…”

A giant hole through the God Lamenting Wall that the saints could use to launch their attack had to last for several hundred years or at least a thousand years so that they could transfer over supplies and information.

“How long did Divine Dream predict it would take?” Skyrend Godlord slowly fell back into his divine throne, his heart flustered as he held onto this letter.

“Senior Divine Dream is unable to predict that…” Lin Huang shook his head. “Senior Divine Dream has two suggestions. The first is to strengthen the concealing array formations that surround the human living zones so that it will be harder for the saints to find us. The second is to use the Ark of Hope and the Asura Decree to continue exploring into new wild universes and dispatch the elites of humanity to develop these lands. They can form survival regions throughout the 33 Heavens to delay the advance of the saints. After all, even Famine during his peak would still take an extremely long time boring through a complete God Lamenting Wall…”

“I understand…” Skyrend Godlord sighed.

To go to a new universe and develop a frontier, those were simply superficial words for others to hear. What it truly meant was inevitable bloodshed and sacrifice…

This was an extremely difficult and thorny path.

Had humanity really reached the ends of the rivers and hills? Had they been hunted down by an enemy race to such a degree…?

This tribulation – would the human race really survive?

Thinking of that intangible and unknowable future, Skyrend Godlord felt a heavy weight on his shoulders. He had already lived for 80 million years and didn't have much longer left. He didn't know if he would be able to witness the future rise of humanity in the years he had left.

With humanity in such a perilous position, tumbling on the edge of destruction, if they wanted to reform their glorious martial arts civilization then they needed a dominating leader!

And the current leader was Empyrean Divine Dream.

She was also the only True Divinity level powerhouse of the human race.

However, in Skyrend Godlord's opinion, although Divine Dream had amazing talent she was still far from being able to threaten the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

When one reached the boundaries of True Divinity, each step became incomparably difficult. Moreover, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign also possessed an avatar in Famine.

But besides Divine Dream, there was still Emperor Shakya who was diligently working towards breaking into the realm of True Divinity. His natural talent was amazing, but in the eyes of Skyrend Godlord, the most he'd be able to achieve was to reach heights similar to Divine Dream; this was far from enough.

Finally, the only one remaining was… Lin Huang!

Skyrend Godlord looked towards Lin Huang and slowly stood up. He walked in front of Lin Huang and set a heavy hand on his shoulder.

"Senior Skyrend…" Lin Huang said, a bit overwhelmed.

"I am old now. If another great war erupts between the saints and humanity, I will be part of the main force of that war. Whether or not I will be able to survive, I don't know. I've lived for so long, and I know that it is no longer possible for me to try and step into True Divinity. I do not fear death, but what I fear is that I won't see a glimmer of hope for our people before I die.

“If possible, I hope that you will be able to grow enough to reach the heights that your father did in the past. I know this is a heavy burden to place on you, but thinking of your father, the point at which he started was far lower than where you began. You were born a chosen pride of heaven, but your father was born a commoner in the lower realms. In terms of talent, resources, masters, and so forth, the disparity cannot even be compared with clouds and mud. The road he once walked is also one that you can walk.”

As Skyrend Godlord spoke, he pressed both his hands down on Lin Huang’s shoulders, earnestly looking him in the face.

Lin Huang was humanity’s hope, but this hope wasn’t enough.

Lin Huang was indeed one of the chosen prides of heaven. After he was born, he was able to study all sorts of transcendent divine mights. And in resources or teachers, he was able to freely choose whoever he wished. If he continued at this pace, becoming a True Divinity wouldn’t be too difficult for him.

But becoming a True Divinity was far from enough for being able to resist this great calamity. The saints also had people in the ranks of their younger generations capable of becoming True Divinities.

For instance, the Good Fortune Saint Son. Or for instance, the recently emerged Imperial Prince Xishen who was basking in the current limelight.

In just the younger generation of the saints alone, there were three people capable of becoming True Divinities!

And beyond that, the saints also had three actual True Divinities.

If Lin Huang were to lead the forces of humanity in the future to battle with the saints, surpassing those three juniors wasn't what was difficult. What was truly difficult was surpassing the boundary of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

In just this alone, the chance of Lin Huang succeeding with his speed of growth was zero. It had to be known that even an upper True Divinity wasn't able to defeat the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

Lin Huang also once secretly traveled to the Asura Road and completed the final trial. His completion percentage had been 88%, a single percent lower than Sheng Mei's second time in the final trial.

The truth was that this was already a result he could be proud of. Sheng Mei cultivated the Grand Reincarnation Art, but Lin Huang didn't. The phoenix nirvanas that he underwent through the virtue of his bloodline ultimately weren't able to compare with the Grand Reincarnation Art.

But Lin Huang wasn't satisfied with this. His goal was to achieve a score above 90%, perhaps even reaching the heights his father once reached!

"I understand. I will try harder!"

Lin Huang grit his teeth. In the eyes of the juniors in the wild universe, the name of Lin Huang was blinding. To them he was an existence that none of them could compare with. But in Lin Huang's eyes, he was far too weak. His goal was his father, the legendary man whose presence continued to drive him forwards, who continued to bring glory to him, but yet also continued to place a tremendous pressure on him.

In the past, his father had only been a hundred some years old, but he was able to stir fear in the hearts of the saint race's Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. This fear was so great that even Soaring Feather God King was sent out to hunt him down. But currently, Lin Huang was far from being such a deterring strength.

"Child, I can feel that your inner world seems as if it's in a hurry to break into the half-step Empyrean realm. But, don't be too impatient. If you want to have great achievements in the future you will need to form a solid foundation. Your father's myth was not brought about by his cultivation speed, but by the depths of the Laws he perceived, the lucky chances he accumulated, the experiences he underwent, and all the other things in his life that made him who he was. Your road is still long. Even if you break into the half-step Empyrean realm and increase your battle strength, you still won't be any help in the next war between humanity and the saints. But, if you were to perish, then that would be an immeasurable loss for the human race..."

Skyrend Godlord earnestly said from the depths of his heart. Lin Huang nodded.

Cultivation speed wasn't everything. On the road of martial arts, one needed patience.

A bean sprout could grow in a single day and a field of rice could be harvested in several months.

But a True Divinity level spirit medicine required hundreds of millions of years to breed.

Bean sprouts and rice were only the food of mortals. They ate this to survive, to appease their hunger.

But True Divinity level spirit medicines were treasures that countless large influences would fight over. If one was planted in a sect, it would become the supreme treasure of that sect, a single fruit able to change the destiny of a powerhouse!

What Lin Huang was now was such a heavenly material. He lacked tempering, but what he had that his father didn't was time. He would have time to grow, to grow until he could one day shoulder humanity's burden.

This... was a difficult and thorny road...

MW Chapter 1996

Chapter 1996 – The Sixth Reincarnation

…

…

…

In the Divine Realm, in a small world adjacent to the Crimson Light World, there was a planet called the East Blue Planet.

This planet was a quarter billion miles in diameter, several times larger than the Sky Spill Planet.

However, this planet was simply too far away from the Crimson Light World's main continent. It was a part of a small world near the Crimson Light World and also had no masters, thus no one paid attention to East Blue Planet.

6500 years ago when the Divine Realm fell to its enemies, the many Holy Lands of the Crimson Light World were destroyed by the saints and a massive number of human masters perished in battle. As for the extremely distant East Blue Planet, it was also looted in the calamity. At that time, the number one sect of the East Blue Planet, the East Blue Sect, was targeted by a squad of saints.

This squad ordered the Blue East Sect to hand over all their spirit medicines, resources, and cultivation methods. Otherwise, they would completely annihilate the entire East Blue Planet and all their families.

The leader of this saint squad was only a Saint Lord realm powerhouse, but the East Blue Sect was a mere seventh grade sect and the sect's strongest Highest Elder was also at the Divine Lord realm. The other Sovereigns and Elders were at the Divine Transformation realm, and when they heard these demands they were incensed and wished to fight them.

But, they also knew that facing the invasion of the saints, they were nothing but a bunch of ants; simply unworthy of mentioning. They had no choice but to accept their fate.

However, they didn't think that after they had meekly handed over all their resources, the saint race squad would also demand to take away a hundred young girls from the East Blue Sect to use as living furnaces, and amongst these girls was the daughter of the East Blue Sect's Sovereign.

This enraged the disciples of the East Blue Sect. They fought with the saint race squad and killed off many of their martial artists, but there were even more saint martial artists that managed to flee.

What came after that was the brutal retaliation of the saints. A peak Saint Lord powerhouse arrived and slew the Highest Ancestor of the East Blue Sect before killing all the masters within the sect. Some of the young girls within the sect dreaded the horrible fates they would have to suffer and committed suicide.

These actions touched upon the nerves of the saints. They began a massacre on the East Blue Planet, killing billions and billions of humans.

At that time, everyone ran away in panic. Some descendants of the East Blue Sect were lucky enough to escape the destruction.

With their sect near collapse, the remnants of some other sects that were slaughtered by the saints arrived at the small world where the East Blue Planet was.

They joined together with the East Blue Sect.

Within these remnants, there were some disciples that were once part of the Ancient Phoenix Clan and Ancient Dragon Clan.

If one were to trace the Ancient Phoenix Clan and Ancient Dragon Clan to their origins, it would be that some powerhouses had ventured into the God Beast Mystic Realm where they found the corpses of four God Beasts. Afterwards, the four God Beast Clans were established and they slowly developed into Holy Lord and World King level influences.

In the calamity of the Divine Realm, an influence like the four God Beast Clans naturally weren't able to escape the cleansing.

The Ancient Phoenix Clan was in a much luckier position. Because of their relationship with Lin Ming, they were especially looked after during the evacuation. Some masters of their clan and some people who were related to Lin Ming went to the wild universe.

But the Ancient Phoenix Clan had 72 palaces, and a massive number of their disciples were either killed in the great calamity or sent scattering in all directions.

Some of these exiled disciples gathered at the East Blue Planet where they formed a new joint organization with the survivors of the other great influences, called the Heaven and Earth Alliance.

The Heaven and Earth Alliance had gathered the inheritances of many sects; the cultivations methods were disorderly and confusingly diverse.

After the Divine Realm was captured by the saints, they simply didn't allow humans to possess inheritances at the Holy Lord level or above. As soon as they discovered any hints of this, it would be completely eliminated! In addition to the previous looting, the inheritances of the Heaven and Earth Alliance now looked like a complete mess to any high level martial artist.

Thus, a strange scene occurred on the East Blue Planet. Formed on this planet was a large influence with over a billion disciples and extremely complex internal relationships – the Heaven and Earth Alliance. At the same time, the Heaven and Earth Alliance had no singular master. Its structure was loose and it possessed all sorts of inheritances…

Even so, within East Blue Planet and even the small world that the East Blue Planet was located in, the Heaven and Earth Alliance was the martial arts holy land that all young human martial artists yearned to join.

The Heaven and Earth Alliance recruited disciples every ten years, and the scene of these disciples being tested was extremely glorious.

These young martial artists came from planets far and wide. They exhausted all of their strength and cunning to pass the inspection and enter the Heaven and Earth Alliance. This was because besides the Heaven and Earth Alliance, there was no other place they could find such a level of inheritances.

In this age, this was just how pitiful human martial artists had become.

Even if someone was gifted, even if someone was talented, if they couldn't find a cultivation method jade slip, if they couldn't find a master, if they didn't have resources, than any talent they had was wasted.

If Lin Ming were to live during this time, even he wouldn't be able to grow. When Lin Ming was in the lower realms he had managed to make do with the scarce resources there. But once he ascended to the Divine Realm, he entered the Ancient Phoenix Clan and was even cared for by Empyrean Divine Dream and Empyrean Vast Universe afterwards. All of this was outside help.

Not to mention anything else, without Empyrean Divine Dream's help, Lin Ming wouldn't even have been able to enter the Asura Road and it would have been impossible for him to study the Asura Heavenly Dao.

....

The inheritance location of the Heaven and Earth Alliance was called the Heavenly Sutra Pavilion.

Every time a new disciple was recruited into the Heaven and Earth Alliance, they would be allowed to enter Heavenly Sutra Pavilion to choose cultivation method jade slips dependent on the results of their trial.

This was the most exciting time for the new disciples. They would never have imagined that such a huge amount of inheritances would be at their hands.

However, there were far too many scattered inheritances in Heavenly Sutra Pavilion. When disciples entered, they had a limited amount of time. Oftentimes they weren't able to maximize their harvests.

As a group of young disciples rushed into Heavenly Sutra Pavilion in high spirits, what greeted them was a middle-aged man in tattered robes, reclining in a chair.

This middle-aged man seemed to be around 30-40 years of age. He had a long beard and a face that was weathered from the winds and cold. There was a pot of wine in his hands and he was sloppily dressed. But, what was strange was that his eyes didn't seem listless and blurry as expected, but were bright and lively, just like the eyes of a youth.

"You may enter. Each of you has six hours to choose a cultivation method."

The middle-aged man indifferently said as he drank some wine. His indifference seemed to give off a feeling that he was someone who had seen through life and death.

Seeing this middle-aged man, the young disciples were inexplicably shocked.

"Who is this uncle?"

Someone secretly asked with a sound transmission.

“He is the caretaker of Heavenly Sutra Pavilion. Don’t look down on him. It is said that he knows of every cultivation method within Heavenly Sutra Pavilion. If he is willing, he can help any disciple who enters Heavenly Sutra Pavilion find the most suitable cultivation method for them in a short period of time…”

A senior-apprentice brother of the Heaven and Earth Alliance explained with a sound transmission.

“Oh? Then should we ask him and see if he can help us look for a cultivation method?”

“Don’t expect anything from him. Normally, he won’t respond to any questions at all, but sometimes he will give some pointers even if you don’t speak to him. This senior has an eccentric personality.”

As the disciples were rapidly speaking to each other, the middle-aged man had leaned back in his chair and had started to sleep.

This middle-aged man was the sixth reincarnation of Lin Ming.

At this time, 3500 years had passed since Lin Ming’s last trip into the final trial.

Lin Ming had re-entered the Asura Road during his fourth reincarnation and cultivated in the final trial's seventh level for 500 years, consolidating his Great World King realm cultivation in a single period. He also fully opened the Natal Life Dao Palace there and underwent his fifth reincarnation.

Then, he left the Asura Road and swam through the Divine Realm.

Lin Ming's fifth reincarnation was spent wandering the Divine Realm's starry skies. He absorbed the vast world power of the Divine Realm, using it to nourish his world seed.

This tempering continued for 2000 years!

During these 2000 years, Lin Ming cultivated to the peak of the Great World King realm, just a step away from the half-step Empyrean realm. This was only a step away, and the current Lin Ming could break through at any moment if he wanted to.

But Lin Ming didn't choose to make this breakthrough. When there was nothing but a fragile layer as thin as a soap bubble separating him from the half-step Empyrean realm, he chose this time to undergo his sixth reincarnation.

His cultivation fell once more. Then, he arrived at the East Blue Planet, manifesting himself as a young disciple where he entered the Heaven and Earth Alliance.

The reason he chose this place was because the Heaven and Earth Alliance had a complex relationship with the Ancient Phoenix Clan.

Lin Ming was someone who remembered his old friendships and relations. He came here because it was his nature, and also to finish this circle of karma.

200 years after Lin Ming entered the Heaven and Earth Alliance, he became a caretaker of Heavenly Sutra Pavilion.

He quietly perceived this tranquility. As opposed to the fighting and slaughtering of his fourth reincarnation, as opposed to the lonely cultivation of his fifth reincarnation, Lin Ming spent his sixth reincarnation here, living a free-willed and easy life, as if he were a crane in the skies.

But in these tranquil days, Lin Ming saw the cruel reality that many youths had to face.

They lived at the twilight of the human race. From birth, they faced the fate of becoming slaves.

They were forgotten slaves. After some of these people were born to the day they died, they never encountered the oppression of the saints. Sometimes they never even saw a single member of the saints. But this wasn't because the saints showed them mercy, but because they didn't have any value that the saints could squeeze out from them.

Once they showed value, the saints would wildly plunder from them.

Humanity was like crops planted by the saints. Every now and then they would come to harvest them and take away all their valuables.

However, many human youths were resigned to live such fates. They dreamed of being able to grasp hold of their own destiny. They dreamed of the day when humanity would slaughter their way back into the Divine Realm and retake their homeland. Then, they could also help with the revival of humanity.

Even if they were to die a heroic death in battle, it would be far better than living out their lives in this hopeless world.

However, in this world, those that could control their own destinies were a minority. There were slightly more of these people in the saints, and nearly none amongst the human race.

And even with nearly zero chance of success, many human martial artists still desperately struggled forwards.

Perhaps this was the bravery of martial artists or perhaps this was because of the hot-blooded spirit of the young.

But in short, no matter the reason, they did.

Entering the Heaven and Earth Alliance was their first step. But even after passing through layers upon layers of eliminations, grasping that less than ten thousandth chance to enter this place of learning, they came to discover that they had only touched upon the beginning of their road. They stood at the base of a mountain peak, having not even taken a single step upwards. And, that mountain peak was actually as large as a planet…

MW Chapter 1997

Chapter 1997 – Struggle Against Fate

…

…

…

Young disciples ventured out to search for lucky chances. They hoped to find ruins at the Holy Lord level or above, or perhaps even find some incomplete cultivation methods that would allow them to break into a higher realm.

Of course, the chances of this occurring were far too slim. The famous mystic realms of the Divine Realm were long since controlled by the saints, and wanting to find a land of inheritance in the open wilderness was as difficult as looking for a needle in a haystack.

Thus, with this great mountain in front of them, even in their entire lives they wouldn’t be able to ascend the base of the mountain.

This was what all humans within the Divine Realm faced. Even if they desperately fought in the wild, recklessly journeying out to search for lucky chances, even if they used every waking moment of their lives to meditate, they still wouldn't be able to escape the shackles of their fate.

These shackles were like a great cage, and they were animals raised in this cage.

These fearless juniors were filled with hopes as they entered the Heaven and Earth Alliance. They paid with their youth and sweat as they attempted to use their blood to write their own glorious chapter in life.

However... within the slowly passing river of time, their sweat and blood flowed in and faded away. In the end, all they obtained was an unchangeable truth and a body that gradually died from old age...

These were the lucky ones. The unlucky ones died in the wilderness, their bodies eventually turned to dust until no sign of them was left remaining in this world.

This Heaven and Earth Alliance had a grand name and was the dream of many human youths. But in the 3000 great worlds of the Divine Realm, there were innumerable organizations like this.

This was the greatest influence that humanity could form under their present situation, an influence that could fuel their hopes and dreams.

Without having experienced suffering and oppression, it was impossible to imagine how people who lived such hopeless lives could still fervently thirst for the revival and glory of their race. This obsession had carved itself into their very beings, flowing with their life and sharing a destiny with them.

Humans were creatures that were easily affected by those who surrounded them.

As everyone was desperately risking everything in these troubled times, even those listless people would be dragged along, eventually becoming strong and brave.

Like a country on the brink of extinction, there would be those people with high and lofty ideals who threw up their heads and showered the people with their hot-blooded courage.

In this situation, Lin Ming saw some old people within the Heaven and Earth Alliance that left a deep impression on him.

Some of these old people diligently struggled all their lives and yet weren’t able to accomplish anything. Sometimes, they didn’t even manage to break into the Divine Transformation realm, their hearts filled with sorrow and unwillingness as they left the mortal coil alone.

But there were some old people that before their death, would call a junior to their side and give voice to all their grief and indignation. They would pass on their hopes and wishes, saying words such as ‘when our people in the wild universe return to the Divine Realm in glory, do not forget the sacrifices of your ancestors.’

However, these two types of old men weren’t the ones that left the deepest impression upon Lin Ming.

The ones Lin Ming couldn’t forget the most were a third kind. These people had entered the Heaven and Earth Alliance during their youth. They ventured out again and again, searching for lucky chances, and then secluding themselves to bitterly cultivate. Even when old age arrived and they still didn’t have any achievements, they never gave up on the hope that burned in their hearts.

They took out some fragmented map pieces from ancient books and carefully compared them. Then, betting everything on this faint hope, they spent the last years of their lives exploring the universe.

They earnestly prepared for this journey, but in truth, all they had were some ordinary weapons, pots of wine, and some inferior medicines. They called on several of their companions and then strode forwards.

But in truth, they had already passed the age where they could soar into the skies. Even if they really did find some ancient ruins, it wouldn’t be too beneficial to them.

Still, they continued moving forwards, welcoming the winds and rain, welcoming the slowly falling sun, firmly climbing up that planet-sized mountain peak.

This was a journey that they didn't regret.

Perhaps outsiders wouldn't be able to understand their reason for doing so. The end was already decided for them and all their futile efforts only served to stand in stark contrast to the work and energy they put into it. It was hard to imagine just what meaning there was in continuing to explore the world when they were at the twilight of their years.

However, Lin Ming knew that when they reached this step, what they chased was not a chance to become a stronger powerhouse; what they chased was a belief. When they died, this belief would allow them to confidently say, 'in order to resist destiny, I struggled with everything I had'.

When six hours passed, Lin Ming watched as those youths who had just become disciples of the Heaven and Earth Alliance finished their trip into the Heavenly Sutra Pavilion. He continued to quietly drink his wine.

He had a premonition that he wouldn't be able to stay here much longer. He wouldn't be able to watch these youths continue to age.

Although Lin Ming had stayed in this quiet corner of the universe for these past years and hadn't heard of anything important occurring between humanity and the saints, he had a feeling that surged within him telling him that something would happen soon, something that would change the world.

The reasoning behind this feeling was impossible to explain. It was a feeling that those with a great destiny felt, when they were so immersed in karmic ties that they unconsciously deduced cause and effect and were able to sense upcoming disasters.

Lin Ming sat in meditation, tranquilly waiting for the eve of this storm to arrive.

Soon, he planned to break into the half-step Empyrean realm that he had suppressed for far too long already. At the same time, he would open up another Dao Palace and also have the little black dragon grow to a thousand miles in length, having it become a half-grown adult…

He could not avoid the surging waves of the world, even if he didn't yet possess the ability to resist the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

He wouldn't sit idly by and do nothing again. In this next wave, humanity truly might be completely destroyed…

Lin Ming slowly opened his eyes. The first sight that greeted him was a young girl.

This young girl was an excellent talent in Lin Ming's eyes. If the world was returned to the peaceful era of 6000 years ago, she possessed the ability to become a peak Holy Lord. And if she had resources, she would even have a chance of becoming a World King. This was an Empyrean descendant level of talent.

But what a pity. The reality was that the saints would not allow her to grow.

Lin Ming had paid attention to this young girl. It wasn't just because of her talent, but because her last name was Yan. This young girl came from the Ancient Phoenix Clan and was acquainted with Lin Ming. 6000 years ago, a girl called Yan Littlemoon appeared within the Yan Family. When Lin Ming travelled to Fire Spirit Star and the God Beast Mystic Realm in the past, he had worked with Yan Littlemoon for some time. There was karma that tied them together.

This young girl was called Yan Ke'er. When the Ancient Phoenix Clan collapsed, the remnant lineages of the Ancient Phoenix Clan still retained a small amount of Ancient Phoenix blood. After Yan Ke'er was born, the Yan Family sensed her great talent and poured into her body the limited Ancient Phoenix blood they had left.

The truth was that if this was several thousand years ago, this Ancient Phoenix blood would have only been the lowest grade of phoenix blood in the Ancient Phoenix Clan. But in the current era, this was the most precious treasure that the Ancient Phoenix Clan's remnant lineages could bring out.

This child was their hope, even if everyone knew that this hope was extremely uncertain.

“High Master, the nameless jade slip that you chose for me before was indeed extremely suitable for me. I studied it for several months and obtained great harvests from it. I am now confident that I will be able to perfectly break into Life Destruction, and in the future I might even be able to complete the full nine stages of Life Destruction, forming a six mile or even nine mile origin energy cloud…”

Yan Ke’er said with longing and hope in her voice. But as Lin Ming heard this, he sighed. The geniuses of humanity had been reduced to a point where just a nine mile origin energy cloud ninth stage Life Destruction was considered amazing…

He looked at Yan Ke’er. He could see from her shy and timid expression that the reason she came here today was to thank him and also ask him to help her choose a cultivation method as well as discuss some problems she had with her training.

“High Master…”

Yan Ke’er lightly called out. When she was just a dozen some years old, she had met Lin Ming. This High Master had given her a great deal of advice. Many times, the seemingly insignificant pieces of advice left her perceiving them for many days whereupon she would end up greatly benefiting from them.

As she grew stronger, she felt more and more that this High Master was someone with a long story behind him, and his strength was also a mystery.

She had once quietly asked the Elder of the Yan Family about him. However, the Elder couldn't detect anything unusual about Lin Ming. According to his inner world, he was only at the early Divine Transformation realm.

In addition, he had been able to look up the time at which Lin Ming had entered the Heaven and Earth Alliance. They were able to track his growth from the time he was a youth until present. It was hard for anyone to think he was actually some peak master.

But even so, Yan Ke'er still stubbornly believed that Lin Ming was hiding his depths. From the outside, he looked like a lazy and melancholic individual, and the people of the Heaven and Earth Alliance also thought this. But, Yan Ke'er could faintly feel that the reasoning behind his attitude had to do with his hidden story.

Perhaps this High Master was a Holy Lord!

Yan Ke'er had once come up with this bold guess. But, this guess even shocked her. She shook her head, unable to believe it. It would have been far too strange.

However, no matter what Lin Ming was, the truth was that he was the person she respected the most. The advice he gave her was far more useful than any teachings of the Yan Family Elders.

"This pavilion, you should no longer come here."

As Lin Ming saw that Yan Ke'er was just about to ask him what jade slips to choose, he suddenly said this to her.

Yan Ke'er was stunned. "High Master, what did you say?"

"There is no meaning for you to train any longer." Lin Ming continued to drink his wine as he slowly shook his head. "Women… in particular beautiful women who have reached the Divine Lord realm, will experience disaster if they are discovered by the saints…"

With the saints ruling the Divine Realm, there was no punishment for a saint killing a human. The saints could freely plunder anything they wished from humanity, including even the virginity of young human girls.

For beautiful human girls with extremely high degrees of talent, perhaps it was better if they weren't born in this world. In a situation where they didn't have the ability to protect themselves, it was easy for the saints to capture them and use them as living furnaces. But if they grew strong enough that they could kill some minor juniors of the saint race, then this would draw the attention of even stronger saint martial artists. This was because the stronger a woman was, the greater the advantages that could be obtained from them. Thus, their situations only became worse!

Moreover, it was impossible for low level human girls to conceal their cultivations in front of saint race powerhouses. Once they were discovered, their fates would be miserable.

Yan Ke'er blushed as Lin Ming first started speaking, but by the time he finished, she had turned pale white.

She naturally knew what this 'disaster' really was.

"Let me ask you a question. Even if you know the fate that possibly awaits you in the future, will you still choose to become a powerhouse?" Lin Ming clearly and unhurriedly asked as his eyes turned towards Yan Ke'er.

MW Chapter 1998

Chapter 1998 – Setting Off On A Journey

…

…

…

Facing Lin Ming’s question, Yan Ke’er was stunned.

If she were to be captured by the saints because of her breakthroughs in strength and then made into a living furnace, that would be a life worse than death.

But as she thought of living a life of mediocrity, never being able to display her talent and wasting her days until her end game, Yan Ke’er felt a heaviness on her heart that she couldn’t explain.

She could not accept such a destiny.

Sometimes, the most painful thing in life wasn't being defeated in struggling against destiny, but never being given a meaningful chance to struggle against destiny to begin with.

This was what left others wallowing in despair.

Thinking of this, Yan Ke'er clenched her teeth and said, "Even if I know that such a fate might await me, I will still continue to cultivate and grow stronger!"

"Mm… I understand." Lin Ming sighed. "Since that is the choice you have made, I have nothing left to say. At midnight, come to the ninth room of Ancient Phoenix Hall…"

Lin Ming spoke these words and left.

A stunned Yan Ke'er was left behind. Ancient Phoenix Hall…

This was a training chamber established by the remnant bloodlines of the Ancient Phoenix Clan. Only martial artists of the Ancient Phoenix Clan were allowed to use it, and as a genius of the Ancient Phoenix Clan, she was naturally granted a chamber to use. This was room number nine.

But Lin Ming shouldn't have the qualifications to enter this training chamber, and he shouldn't know that hers was the ninth room.

Although she was puzzled, she still went to the ninth room in Ancient Phoenix Hall at midnight.

However, she didn't see Lin Ming. All she saw was a farewell letter, and in addition to that was a spatial ring.

Seeing this spatial ring, Yan Ke'er was startled. This seemed to be an extremely high quality spatial ring, far surpassing the ones she normally saw.

If she was only startled when seeing the spatial ring, the after probing its contents with her divine sense she was thoroughly shaken.

Within the spatial ring were jade slips of all shapes and colors, over a hundred in total. Just from looking at their luster, one could feel the heart shaking. This was the aura left behind by the vast river of time or from the fluctuations of powerhouses' energy. One could instantly see that these were extraordinary treasures.

These were inheritances!

Yan Ke'er sucked in a deep breath and continued investigating. Although she only had a Life Destruction realm cultivation, she could still distinguish the approximate rank of these inheritances. In particular, some of these inheritances still had messages carved into them, indicating the realm and life experiences of their maker. They shouldn't be wrong.

In a time when the saints strictly controlled or eliminated most of humanity's inheritances, she had suddenly obtained over a hundred sets.

A small number of these inheritances could even be cultivated from the Life Destruction realm to almost the Empyrean realm. It was as if they were custom made for her.

Such a massive and rich wealth of inheritances was something that not even the grand library of the Ancient Phoenix Clan Headquarters in the past would have!

But now, all of this had fallen into her hands, left behind by that mysterious High Master. Yan Ke'er felt this all unbelievable.

After these inheritance jade slips, there was even a massive number of pills and also some spirit artifacts!

These pills alone had such a potent medicinal fragrance that Yan Ke'er was left speechless.

When Lin Ming was in the final trial's seventh level where he had to swallow the demon relic's power, he had consumed almost all the high quality pills he had. As for these low level pills, he kept them, occasionally giving away a portion of them. Even so, to the martial artists of the Heaven and Earth Alliance these were priceless treasures.

"High Master, just who is he…"

Yan Ke'er was flustered. Then, she suddenly recalled the letter than Lin Ming left behind for her. She dazedly opened it and saw that the letter was completely blank, without a single letter. But as she touched this letter with her hand, a vast soul force broke into her spiritual sea, transmitting information through her spirit mark.

It was only at this time that she realized Lin Ming had left, and he hadn't said whether or not he would return. But, Yan Ke'er felt that the High Master had permanently left this small world and wouldn't return.

Yan Ke'er was a little disappointed.

Before he left, he had left behind these jade slips and told Yan Ke'er that she could do with these cultivation method jade slips as she pleased. She could quietly hoard the treasure and cultivate on her own, or she could share them with others.

But with every additional person that she shared them with, the potential dangers in her future would be that much greater.

If news of the jade slips were to be revealed, the entire Heaven and Earth Alliance would face the threat of imminent destruction.

Before this, Lin Ming hadn't truly supported the Heaven and Earth Alliance. This was because he knew that too much support would only draw the attention of the saints. If so, the consequences could be imagined. And in the Divine Realm, it was impossible for Lin Ming to personally defend the Heaven and Earth Alliance, otherwise he would be in danger if the saints were to discover his continued existence.

Before he truly left, he had left behind a rich and varied number of cultivation method jade slips with Yan Ke'er. She could keep them to herself, share with the entire Heaven and Earth Alliance, or only share with a select number of people…

But no matter what her choice was, once made, they would have to bear the consequences of their decision…

Every person was responsible for their own choices, regardless of whether that meant glory or destruction…

This was the price of struggling against destiny.

Looking at these jade slips, Yan Ke'er couldn't find the words to say for a long time. That mysterious High Master had left just like this. In the end, who was he and what was his identity?

And these jade slips… what should she do with them?

Yan Ke’er grit her teeth. She turned around and walked away, going to the room where the Patriarch of the Ancient Phoenix Clan remnant bloodlines was…

……

At this time, Lin Ming had already left the small world where the East Blue Planet was located. He entered Crimson Light World, and with incredible speed he flew towards the border zone of the Divine Realm and the Saint Convocation Heavens!

Lin Ming planned on entering the saint race’s Saint Convocation Heaven.

Ever since the Divine Realm was annexed by the saints, the saints opened many channels between the Divine Realm and the Saint Convocation Heavens. Each channel was wide enough to fit several planets; this was in order to facilitate easier transportation of plundered goods.

These channels were tightly controlled by saint race martial artists. They forbade any human from passing through.

However, no matter how strict the saint race was in defending these channels, they couldn’t send a True Divinity to guard them. With Lin Ming having undergone his multiple rebirths and in addition to his horrifying soul force and Bodily Rebirth Technique, even if a True Divinity personally came here they still might not be able to find anything. Looking at the boundless saint race armies that continued to pass in and out, it would be incredibly difficult to find Lin Ming.

Moreover, the ones currently responsible for guarding the channels were only saint race World Kings.

Thus the innumerable checkpoints within these channels existed only in name to Lin Ming. He easily took on the appearance of a saint martial artist and passed through.

In the saint race's territory, Lin Ming was even more relaxed. He used the great void shift and rapidly passed through Saint Convocation Heaven.

His goal was – the Soul World!

Soul World, Akashic Dream Battlefield, ancient galactic battlefield!

This was a place where Lin Ming had to go.

His goal was to find Ruby and convince her to help him.

In the past, Empyrean Divine Mist had the help of Fishy. If Lin Ming could obtain Ruby's help, this his ability to control the Magic Cube would rise to a whole new level.

Moreover, Ruby's comprehensions of the Laws left Lin Ming dumbfounded. When he was grasping the principles atop the shrine platforms at Fallen God Mountain, Ruby didn't need to use any energy or effort to see the Law markings left behind by Immortal Sovereign. To her, it was all as easy as a fish swimming through water.

This wasn't something that Lin Ming could compare with. In the end, Lin Ming cultivated and perceived the Laws, but Ruby herself was condensed from the Laws.

She was a manifestation of the Laws.

Before returning to the wild universe, Lin Ming had to do something.

That was to go to Immemorial Imperial City and undo the bindings of the Ancient Elysium Seal and deal with Famine's soul.

However, 3.6 billion years ago, Famine had been an extreme True Divinity. It was even possible that before it was injured and forced to cooperate with the saints, it might have been an existence approaching the Asura Road Master and Immortal Sovereign.

Even if Famine was defeated and its soul sealed and suppressed for 3.6 billion years, it was still an extremely terrifying existence.

Lin Ming didn't have full confidence he could deal with Famine's soul. But if he had Ruby's help, his chance of success would be much higher.

The junction point between the saints and spiritas was even more tightly controlled. But, they still couldn't stop Lin Ming's steps. He used his same trick and easily passed through.

Then Lin Ming changed his appearance into that of a spiritas genius. He infiltrated his way into a small sect and obtained a token to enter the Akashic Dream Battlefield, staying with the sect until the Akashic Dream Battlefield opened.

The slaughter within the Akashic Dream Battlefield would continue for three years. When Lin Ming arrived at this spiritual universe and saw the Emperor God Wall, his heart was filled with emotion.

He swept his eyes over the Emperor God Wall and saw the name he had once left behind – Polar Ice Lin. He also saw Sheng Mei's name that was beside his own.

For over 6000 years, no one had been able to surpass them…

MW Chapter 1999

Chapter 1999 – Seeing Ruby Once More

…

…

…

Within the Akashic Dream Universe, many places were under the suppression of the Laws; the Akashic Dream Battlefield was such a place. Every martial artist that entered the Akashic Dream Battlefield would have their cultivation suppressed to the Divine Lord realm, a realm equivalent to the Soul Lord realm amongst the spiritas. As for those who had yet to reach that level, their cultivation would be forcefully increased.

Although everyone was suppressed to the same cultivation realm, one's comprehension of Laws and one's cultivation methods were still maintained. In other words, Empyrean powerhouses in the Akashic Dream Battlefield could still instantly wipe out the lives of several hundred Soul Lord juniors in a single attack.

In the past when Lin Ming entered the Akashic Dream Battlefield, he was one of those protected by the Laws. He utilized these Laws to strike down Empyrean Myriad Ghost, whose cultivation had been limited.

But now, Lin Ming was the one who was being limited by the Laws.

Although his cultivation had been lowered, when one considered his comprehension of Laws, his cultivation methods, and his bloodlines, he was likely the most terrifying Divine Lord powerhouse to ever appear in the history of trial challengers that entered the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

The Akashic Dream Battlefield was extremely broad. In such a vast land, it was hard to find a single little girl.

However, Lin Ming actually knew just where Ruby frequently liked to go.

He launched his movement technique had started flying towards a place from his memories.

Soon, he saw a great canyon before him. Many martial artists had gathered in this canyon.

Seeing this, Lin Ming smiled.

Lin Ming was familiar with this canyon. The first time Lin Ming entered the Akashic Dream Battlefield, this was where he found Ruby.

This place was called the Soul Cave, and it was Ruby’s home.

This was an incredibly deep cave. Within were countless soul beasts formed from the spiritual energy of the Akashic Dream Universe. There were also many other dangers like gates of gods and ghosts, or even wild soul storms.

At this time, more and more martial artists were gathering at the entrance of the Soul Cave. These were disciples who came from large influences all over the Soul World. Generally speaking, disciples of small influences didn’t dare to enter the Soul Cave.

These people were waiting until they gathered enough manpower to forcefully open the soul force field that blocked the entrance of the Soul Cave.

Entering the Soul Cave carried with it a considerable risk, but they had to do this in order to seek out precious medicines that were bred within the Soul Cave by the source soul force within.

To the spiritas, these spirit medicines were supreme treasures.

But outside the Soul Cave's entrance, a mass of purple fog shrouded the area. This purple fog was a sort of force field, and if one wished to enter, they had to break past this purple fog force field. This required an extremely formidable strength.

In less than an hour, the trial challengers managed to gather enough strength. They arranged a battle array, preparing to puncture through the force field with everything they had.

But suddenly, the purple fog outside the Soul Cave gently trembled. This feeling was like a plume of smoke being pierced through by a swallow, and a part of that smoke being carried away.

The trial challengers were startled for some time. What was going on?

They weren't sure whether or not someone had entered. But thinking about it, just who was able to instantly pass through this force field, so fast that they couldn't even see their shadow?

Thus, the trial challengers continue to revolve and gather their energy, intending to open a path through the force field.

By now Lin Ming had already entered the Soul Cave. He instantly crossed several miles in a single step, passing through the Soul Cave's gate of ghosts and gods, bypassing the soul storms, and avoiding the dreadful soul beasts. In truth, these horrifying soul beasts didn't pose any threat to Lin Ming. Or, it could be more accurate to say that they never felt Lin Ming pass by them to begin with.

As Lin Ming arrived in the deepest parts of the Soul Cave, he suddenly slowed down. By this time, his figure began to slowly condense into reality, like a bunch of remnant shadows that were being gathered up.

In the deepest depths of the Soul Cave, there were beautiful underground mountains and rivers. Because of the rich soul force here, it had condensed into soul springs that flowed down these mountains, fascinating to the extreme.

In front of these beautiful mountains and rivers was a gorilla-like soul beast. This soul beast was gold in color and its body was towering and large, its physique thickly corded with vigorous muscles. It was the master of this land. In normal times, it would be the absolute nightmare of any trial challengers who entered the Soul Cave. Even a peak Great World King was extremely likely to be torn to shreds if they faced this terrifying Soul Beast while being suppressed by the Laws.

After Lin Ming appeared, the golden gorilla was shocked. Then shock turned to anger. It tried to attack Lin Ming, but Lin Ming only kept his back to the soul beast, not even sparing it a glance. Lin Ming's eyes were focused on a place high above the mountains, as if he were looking at something. He had a focused look in his eyes.

This disregard was undoubtedly a great challenge and provocation against the authority of the golden gorilla. But for some unknown reason this originally eager-to-battle golden gorilla could feel a soul aura from this tiny human that made its heart quake.

This aura caused it to slowly retreat. Then, it turned and ran.

Lin Ming didn't care about this. He continued to look up 60 degrees into the air. The end of his vision was a section of rock that bulged out from the mountain. On this rock was a spirit medicine. A small amount of soul force-condensed spring water was gently falling down over this spirit medicine and sprinkling it, causing it to emit a faint medicinal fragrance.

After an incense stick of time, a light red glow of energy slowly gathered behind this spirit medicine. Then, like a thick fog being blown away to reveal red flowers, a red-clothed little girl appeared.

She sat on that rock outcropping. Her bare feet and her small calves rocked back and forth in rhythm. Her toes dipped into a spirit spring, causing small circles to ripple outwards.

This little girl was Ruby.

She was exactly the same as when Lin Ming first saw her. Even though over 6000 years had passed, she still hadn't grown up, not even in the least.

She still seemed like a porcelain doll with a cute and baby-like face. A timid look hung on her face, mixed with some vigilance and confusion as she looked at Lin Ming.

“Y-y-you… f-f-found me?”

This little girl was confused for a moment before she suddenly asked Lin Ming a question. Because she was shy with strangers, she stuttered a little as she spoke.

However, just as she spoke, her tiny nose twitched. Her large black eyes blinked as she stared at Lin Ming’s stomach.

Lin Ming knew she had sensed the Magic Cube.

Ruby was the condensed soul energy of a supreme elder, likely Immortal Sovereign, which had been condensed through the Laws of the Magic Cube. She was a mystical Law life form who had been evolved through innumerable years.

Her rank was far, far lower than the Magic Cube’s. But, she had countless inexplicable links to the Magic Cube, as if she were a part of it.

In fact, as Lin Ming approached the depths of the Soul Cave, he had to rely on his soul force that had been greatly enhanced in his sixth reincarnation as well as his increasing control of the Magic Cube to catch scent of Ruby’s aura. Thus, he was able to sense something about that rock outcropping. Otherwise, if Ruby intentionally wanted to hide away, even Sheng Mei or the Soul Emperor would be unable to find a trace of her.

"Eh? You are..."

As Ruby saw Lin Ming, she felt a strangely binding familiarity with him. Thus, there was a hint of confusion in her eyes. And the more she looked, the more intense this familiar feeling became. Within Lin Ming's nice smell that emanated from his body, she suddenly started to remember who this middle-aged looking man was. This was the big brother she had met a long time ago in the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

The truth was that there were no appearance changing techniques that could fool Ruby. But, after Lin Ming underwent six reincarnations, his own soul aura had slightly changed. This made it so that Ruby didn't immediately recognize him.

Ruby's response left Lin Ming satisfied in his appearance changing technique. The reason he didn't purposefully announce his own identity was to allow Ruby to find out on herself just who he was.

As a result, even Ruby hesitated. If so, then even a True Divinity like Soaring Feather God King wouldn't be able to recognize him at all.

"Big Brother Lin, it's you! You came back!"

Ruby giddily shouted. She leapt down from the rock outcropping.

Lin Ming and Ruby hadn't spent too much time together, nor did they undergo any life or death trials at each other's side. By any reasoning, their relationship shouldn't be deep, but the truth was that Lin Ming had left a profound impression on Ruby, and this was because of the Magic Cube's existence.

Ruby had an innate attachment to Lin Ming. This was a type of instinct.

When Lin Ming left the Akashic Dream Universe and parted ways with Ruby, Ruby had been listless for several days. This sort of feeling was like a cat being left behind by its master.

"Mm, I've returned!"

Lin Ming could see the sincere happiness in Ruby's eyes, a true excitement that could never be faked. He was also touched by her.

For so many years, he had been concealing his identity. Today was the first time that someone he knew had recognized him. This sort of feeling left him warm.

"Big Brother Lin, are you leaving soon?"

“I am. This isn’t my world, and there are many things I have to do.”

As Lin Ming said this, Ruby was suddenly sad. Her small head fell down as she muttered, “…Oh…”

Although she was shy, she didn’t know how to conceal her feelings. Everything she felt was written across her expression.

Lin Ming smiled. He patted Ruby’s head and said, “Ruby, would you be willing to leave with me? To see the outside world?”

“Huh?” Ruby was stunned.

“Leave… with Big Brother Lin?”

Ever since she gained consciousness, she seemed to have always existed in this strange world. She had never left to take a look at what was outside, and in fact she never thought that there was another world outside.

As if this too was part of her instinct.

It was only today that Lin Ming's words caused an inexplicable stirring in her heart.

"The world outside is larger, and even more interesting. But... it is also much more dangerous." As Lin Ming spoke these words, he was bewildered by what he said. In a way, he felt he sounded like an uncle trying to abduct a little girl. But, since he came to look for Ruby, he already had the confidence that he could protect her and resist the great calamity.

At the same time, he also believed that if Ruby followed him, he could help her grow even more in the Magic Cube.

Ruby was silent for a long time. She tilted her head and looked at Lin Ming, seeming to read all sorts of things from his expression and eyes.

She bit her lips and forcefully nodded. Then, she softly and firmly said, "I will."

MW Chapter 2000A

Chapter 2000A – Half-step Empyrean

…

…

…

Hearing Ruby’s answer, Lin Ming smiled. This smile contained warmth and affection, as well as hope and desire for the future.

“If you come with me, there may be terrifying things you will have to face. Ruby, are you not afraid?”

“I’m not!”

Ruby gripped her small fists and firmly shook her head.

“Good! Then let’s go!”

As Lin Ming spoke, he raised his right hand. In his palm, a gray cube slowly condensed from his flesh and blood, revolving in the air.

And as soon as Ruby saw this gray cube, her eyes could no longer move from it.

She could feel that this cube was the same as her life.

“I call this the Magic Cube. There are some things that you will slowly know of. This thing is originally the same body as you.”

As Lin Ming spoke, Ruby indeed felt that this thing called the Magic Cube shared her bloodline. It seemed to call to her with some strength she couldn’t explain. She turned into a flow of energy and submerged into the Magic Cube.

In that moment, Lin Ming could feel that his spiritual connection with the Magic Cube had deepened. The originally blurry Laws became increasingly clear. He knew that if he were to use the Magic Cube again, he would be able to display an even greater strength from it.

Lin Ming clenched his fist and the Magic Cube returned to his body. He stamped his feet and flew upwards, sinking into the void and directly vanishing.

After leaving the Soul Cave, Lin Ming's destination was the ancient galactic battlefield within the Akashic Dream Universe.

He had to stay in the Akashic Dream Battlefield for the full three years before the exit would open. This was something that Lin Ming couldn't change no matter how strong he was right now; it was one of the Laws of the Akashic Dream Universe.

So during this period of time, he would break into the half-step Empyrean realm.

He returned to the ancient galactic battlefield once more. As he looked at this lonely and desolate galaxy, he closed his eyes.

The last time he was here his boundary had been insufficient; he had only been able to vaguely feel the aura of the Asura Road Master and the Holy Scripture creator.

But now, from this ravaged galaxy, from the innumerable eternal space cracks that littered the starry space, he was able to make out more details of the battle between the Asura Road Master and the Holy Scripture creator.

All of this was thanks to Lin Ming's higher understanding of the two great Laws.

Lin Ming wandered about in the void. The great echo of the ancient era seemed to flow into his ears across the vast river of time.

His deep understanding of the world's Great Dao had never been so clear before.

Behind him, Ruby followed closely.

After arriving at a planet that had yet to be fully destroyed, Lin Ming sat down in the void.

"Ruby, in a moment I will use a supernatural technique to refine a great treasure. You'll be fine if you watch from afar."

"Mm!" Ruby nodded. Her form faded as she flew off to a distant end of the galaxy.

The heavens and earth fell silent.

Lin Ming sat in this silence. The strength within his body began to swiftly and wildly rise. He became a furnace, rapidly arousing the potential within his body.

Every pore and hole on his body began to emit a blinding light.

At this moment, Lin Ming had become a great burning star. He shone through eternity, burning away the dark, searing away the night, brimming full of vitality.

Suddenly, he formed tens of thousands of seals with his hand. Countless runes swelled out in all directions of the galaxy like ripples, instantly spreading for tens of millions of miles.

The originally dying and ebbing stars seemed to come back alive, shining with overwhelmingly bright starlight.

Starlight shined down from the core of these stars, turning into silver pythons in the air.

They wove together in the air, slowly wrapping Lin Ming within and forming the Galaxy Void Furnace.

Not just that, but behind the Galaxy Void Furnace, the giant phantom of an Asura appeared. It grasped a long spear, its bloody killing intent soaring into the stars. It stood behind Lin Ming like a guardian god.

Lin Ming's mind was as steady as a rock, disallowing any outside interference. Within his palm, the demon relic appeared, shining like pitch black jade and exuding a bloodthirsty and ominous aura.

This relic only had 70% of its strength remaining. He had to take this remaining strength and refine and swallow it in one attempt!

This was a crazy decision.

He chose to borrow the power of stars within this ancient galactic battlefield. By arranging the Galaxy Void Furnace and then drawing support from the remnant marks of the fierce battle that occurred between the Asura Road Master and Holy Scripture creator, he would use this power to suppress the demonic power of the demon relic.

The potential in his body erupted without end. Within Lin Ming's pupils, stars were born and destroyed, suns and moons rising and falling.

His aura rose to an extreme, and the roar of a True Dragon echoed out from his body. At this time, Lin Ming took the demon relic in his hands and tossed it into the Galaxy Void Furnace, refining it with starlight. Then, he leapt in with it.

Within the final trial's seventh level, Lin Ming had already mastered the secret skill behind the Galaxy Void Furnace.

The demon relic tumbled about in the phantasmal starlight. It became hungry and wild, filled with eager desire to devour Lin Ming's body.

After all, this demon relic was refined from the essence of an abyssal. Although the demon's soul had been erased, the demon relic itself still retained its swallowing instinct.

It longed for a powerful body, longed for a strong blood vitality. Thus, Lin Ming's body possessed an infinite temptation for it.

As soon as the demon relic's power entered Lin Ming's body, the strength within him erupted like a volcano.

Streams of blood threaded with endless power of Laws stubbornly tied up the demon relic like shackles.

Lin Ming's blood vitality was monstrous. It soared to the heavens, directly rushing over the demon relic.

Every time his blood vitality washed over the demon relic, it would take away a portion of that cruel and evil power.

This power turned into fiery demons that floated up and down in the sea of blood. The demons roared out at the top of their lungs, but soon, a mystical power of thunder crashed down from up high, killing off these demons!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Divine thunder crashed down without end. The demon relic's tyrannical aura was cleansed away, turned into the purest form of strength that then fused with Lin Ming.

Compared to the last time he refined the demon relic, Lin Ming was much more calm and composed.

He had already swallowed a massive amount of demon power and had formed a seed of demon power in his body. This time, what he needed was pure strength. Then he could use this pure strength to break into the half-step Empyrean realm.

Time passed. Of the remaining 70% of the demon relic's power, another 30% was absorbed by Lin Ming. All that was left over was the core section that pulsated like a heart.

No matter how much Lin Ming washed the demon relic with his blood vitality, he still couldn't wash out the core.

This was the most essential part of the demon relic and also the most difficult to refine. As Lin Ming was slowly digesting this strength, a wisp of black light exploded from the demon relic. Finally, the wisp of black light condensed into an abyssal demon phantom within Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

As this abyssal's massive figure became fully visible, one could see the two dark metallic horns on its head. Its entire body glittered with arcs of lightning and it was covered with pitch black scales that exuded a metallic sheen. It stood in a pool of blood and it held a towering demon palace within its hand. It rampaged straight through Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

Roar!

That demon palace carried with it a momentum that seemed as if it could crush apart anything in its way. It savagely flew through the air, and wherever it went, great tracts of Lin Ming's soul force would be destroyed – the abyssal wanted to completely raze Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. The final moments of refining the demon relic had arrived.

Facing the core strength of the demon relic, he was far more prepared than the first time he swallowed its strength. He had more experience and his strength had risen considerably.

Within the Galaxy Void Furnace, the Laws of the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra were drawn into his spiritual sea through his soul force.

As the remnant marks of two great supreme powerhouses met the rampaging abyssal, they suddenly became active.

After all, whether it was Immortal Sovereign of the Asura Road Master, they were both intelligent life forms of the 33 Heavens. And all intelligent life forms shared a mortal hatred with all abyssal demons. This was something branded into their very beings, a part of their instinct that would never change.

The marks of these two highest Laws worked to suppress the abyssal together!

MW Chapter 2000B

Chapter 2000B – Half-step Empyrean

…

…

…

The marks of these two highest Laws worked to suppress the abyssal together!

Although this abyssal was powerful, it had already been slain by the Asura Road Master and had an inherent fear of him. As it felt the aura of the Asura Road Master, its cruel and barbaric killing intent suddenly faded away by a great deal.

In these circumstances, the two Laws continuously barraged the abyssal phantom, causing it to cry out in pain and misery again and again. Then, with a loud explosion, the abyssal completely exploded beneath the onslaught of Laws!

Lin Ming knew that at this moment, he had already completely refined the final wisp of demonic will within the demon relic and was now in full control of this strength!

Within the Galaxy Void Furnace, the endless starlight pierced into Lin Ming's body. Endless star runes emitted an ancient intent as they wrapped around Lin Ming.

At this time, the final dregs of the demon relic's core exploded, turning into the purest essence of power and spreading into Lin Ming's body.

His appearance changing technique had already vanished. His appearance had reverted to that of a formidable and handsome youth.

"Little Black, come out!"

At this time, Lin Ming called for the little black dragon to emerge. The little black dragon happily cheered as it dived into the sea of energy.

A God Beast's body possessed an incredible carrying capacity. At this time, Little Black was like a withered sponge thrown in water, greedily absorbing all the surrounding strength!

Energy flowed into its open jaws, flowing into its organs and starting to transform its body.

Over a thousand years had passed since Little Black had gone to the final trial. Its body was already as large as a young dragon of the dragon race, and its ability to absorb this pure demonic energy was even greater.

Ka ka ka!

Little Black's horn became longer and thicker, and fierce spikes like those on an abyssal demon appeared on its tail. If this tail were to swipe across someone, the damage it would cause could be imagined.

Slowly, Little Black's spine, wings, claws, everything was affected by this demon power and became increasingly fierce.

After absorbing this demon power, its body had become different from ordinary royal Black Dragons.

But at this time, Lin Ming couldn't bother with these things. Great noises rang out from within his body, like the beatings of a great drum.

Bits of demon relic essence burned like stars as they blazed through Lin Ming's body.

As Lin Ming and Little Black swallowed the remaining 70% of the demon relic's strength, over 50% of that had been swallowed by Lin Ming. Even though he was strong, the pain was so intense that veins stuck out on his forehead. It felt like his flesh and blood and even his divine soul was being burned cleanly away by the demon relic's essence.

But Lin Ming's body had been tempered to an abnormal state. He forcefully withstood this immense demonic strength and even drew it to attach to different places all over his body.

Bang!

When the energy was condensed to the peak, a great door seemed to be pushed open within Lin Ming. Endless and boundless essence energy became a giant hammer that crashed into Lin Ming's inner world!

Within Lin Ming's inner world, a vast and limitless strength started to crazily gather, condensing in the center of his universe. It slowly evolved into the giant phantom of a person!

This human phantom was terrifyingly large. By stretching out a palm it could grasp a planet!

The phantom's face was majestic and dignified, as if it stood above all living beings, so high and lofty that nothing could face it.

It was like a god king who rose up, its aura frightening the vastness of space, its divine light illuminating the galaxy!

And looking at this giant’s appearance, it was actually somewhat similar to Lin Ming.

This was an Empyrean that belonged to Lin Ming!

The so-called Empyrean was the Supreme of the heavens and earth. Once a martial artist reached this realm, they could form a true Supreme within their inner world.

A half-step Empyrean was only a virtual phantom.

As for a true Empyrean, they would produce a true material Supreme, able to shock and awe their own world.

From a Great World King to a half-step Empyrean, this was an incredibly difficult step. Many powerhouses were stuck at this checkpoint for their entire lives.

But once one became a half-step Empyrean and formed their own Supreme phantom, then transitioning to their own true material Supreme wasn’t difficult at all.

In other words, for most half-step Empyreans, as long as they didn’t perish they would eventually be able to become Empyreans.

Even between a half-step Empyrean and Great World King, there was an essential difference. Once a half-step Empyrean condensed their own Supreme phantom, killing a similarly talented Great World King became simple.

As the Supreme phantom formed, Lin Ming’s self-created inner world began to experience heaven-shaking changes as it was nourished by the essence of the demon relic.

Although he had formed his inner world, that inner world had been filled with endless fog and blurriness. It was vast, but the strength within was disorderly and too varied.

But with so much demon relic essence pouring in, carrying with it an aura of cold and death, it actually began a chain of miraculous changes.

From Lin Ming’s strength, whether it was the power of divinity from the Laws of the 33 Heavens, or the power of life from the Holy Scripture, it was inevitably biased towards the power of light.

But the power of the demon relic that Lin Ming absorbed was actually the power of pure darkness.

These two strengths represented extreme polar opposites.

And yin and yang were the greatest source foundation of the world, where all of existence derived from.

As the two strengths mixed together and collided, thunderous sounds echoed out. The disorderly strength turned chaotic, and soon, traces of vitality appeared.

This part of the world was also sliced open by the yin and yang energies. A dim brown strength vaguely evolved from between them. It became like a mystical turtle, carrying the earth on its back. A sacred and holy energy wafted out, roaming through the deep blue skies...

The world continued to expand. Beneath the aura of the yin and yang, the chaotic world Laws began to be brought to order.

The truth was that when Lin Ming became a World King, his inner world had already been completely different from the inner world of a normal martial artist.

And now this difference increased even further!

The power of divinity, the power of demons, these two strengths tangled within his inner world, causing more things to appear within it.

In addition to the two highest Laws of the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra, Lin Ming's inner world had become a miracle that no one had been able to accomplish in the vast and endless river of the years.

Even heroes like the Asura Road Master, even talented geniuses like the Holy Scripture creator, although the two of them had travelled to the extremes of their roads, one had travelled to the extremes of the world universe and one had travelled to the extreme of the body universe.

And Lin Ming evolved a world in his body; this was the same as combining the world of the universe and the world of the body together.

Then, by gathering the power of divinity and the power of demons, he had slowly stepped onto a path that no one had ventured on before.

If he could truly refine his inner world to completion, then Lin Ming would undoubtedly become someone who surpassed any genius who existed or who had existed.

As the Supreme phantom within Lin Ming's inner world stabilized itself, he tossed his head back and roared into the heavens, his body hurtling up and impacting into space!

Bang!

The Galaxy Void Furnace was blasted open!

Lin Ming's blood vitality surged like wild waves, like a peerless god king. At this time, his entire body blazed with blinding brilliance, dazzling like a sun.

He could feel that his body had never been as powerful as it was today, as if he could reverse rivers of stars and slaughter gods and buddhas!

Weng!

The Black Dragon Spear leapt into Lin Ming's hand. It violently wobbled and a resounding echo spread through the world.

Then, with a dragon's horrifying roar, a massive black dragon rushed out from the shattered starlight, its two wings shaking the void behind Lin Ming!

Lin Ming stood atop the black dragon's head. He grasped the Black Dragon Spear, his eyes as sharp as electricity. He gazed at the endless starry skies above him.

His goal had never been the saints, but had been this vast and endless galaxy, the cosmos of the 33 Heavens, the eternal world.

As for humanity’s great calamity, perhaps… it was his smelting trial!

MW *Chapter* 2001

Chapter 2001 – Once Again To Immemorial Imperial City

…

…

…

Three years passed in the blink of an eye. The Akashic Dream Battlefield smelting trial came to an end.

From start to finish, Lin Ming was only a passerby in this smelting trial. No one found him and he didn’t kill anyone either.

He left the ancient galactic battlefield and slowly walked to the exit of the Akashic Dream Battlefield.

For these three years, Lin Ming had consolidated his half-step Empyrean cultivation.

Originally he speculated that because the Laws he perceived were too broad and profound, he would need to use up a long time, perhaps even tens of thousands of years to break into the Empyrean realm. But now, it seems that he didn't need to wait so long.

As Lin Ming was in the ancient galactic battlefield absorbing the world power there, the Supreme phantom within his inner world soaked up this strength. Then, something marvelous occurred; it also underwent a baptism of this world power.

Following that, something even more bewildering occurred. The world seed he obtained in the final trial began to slowly fuse with the Supreme phantom within his inner world.

These were the two cores of Lin Ming's inner world. In one year, they were able to meld together as one.

The world seed finally appeared in the point between the giant Supreme phantom's eyebrows, just like an eye.

This was equal to saying that there was a world mounted between the Supreme phantom's eyes.

This was a strange event. Lin Ming didn't know why things evolved in this direction or what would occur as this continued onwards, but the direct result was that it increased the speed at which his inner world absorbed world power by a great deal.

When fusing the two world cores together, the result wasn't as simple as adding one with one. They each complemented the other, and their effects doubled and doubled again.

With such a speed, Lin Ming's transition from a half-step Empyrean to a true Empyrean would be incredibly fast.

To Lin Ming, this was something to celebrate. Otherwise, within the great waves that would soon rock the world, he wouldn't be able to play too great a role if he wasn't able to break into the Empyrean realm.

As these thoughts echoed in Lin Ming's mind, he stepped on the wind, preparing to leave. But at this time, he stopped his steps.

Before him there was a jade blue lake. This lake was beautiful to the eyes, but the truth was that it was a dead lake without any life at all.

"Big Brother Lin, what is it?"

Ruby had turned into a mass of soul energy and followed Lin Ming all around. As she saw the change in his countenance, she couldn't help but ask him this question.

"Nothing. I'm just thinking about the past..." Lin Ming gently shook his head. Then Ruby also remembered.

In the past, when Lin Ming and Ruby first emerged from the ancient galactic battlefield, he had arrived at this lake. Here, he ran into an old youth. That old youth was the leader of the 33 Heavens' spiritas – the Soul Emperor.

Lin Ming only had a brief conversation with him. At that time, he had felt that the boundaries of this old youth were like an unreachable mountain.

In fact, for a long time afterwards, Lin Ming wasn't able to tell whether this old youth was an enemy or friend.

It was only afterwards that Sheng Mei came and took away his Eternal Soul.

The Soul Emperor of the 33 Heavens… perhaps he was the most terrifying person in the world…

Lin Ming shook his head, no longer thinking about the past. He only swept over this lake with his divine sense. This was truly an ordinary lake. Besides lacking all vitality, there wasn't anything uncommon about it.

Sometimes, ordinary things contained unordinary truths.

“The Soul Emperor, is he now still refining the Eternal Soul to complete his Art of Eternal Life?”

Lin Ming didn’t know just what the Soul Emperor was plotting. He only guessed that the current inactivity of the spiritas was related to the quiet of the Soul Emperor.

“Let’s go. The Akashic Dream Battlefield’s smelting trial is ending soon.”

As Lin Ming spoke, he left this world with Ruby…

…….

Divine Realm, True Martial Great World, Immemorial Imperial City –

Over 6000 years ago, Immemorial Imperial City had been a bustling city atop the True Martial Great World’s main continent. Afterwards, when humanity’s great calamity occurred, Immemorial Imperial City was looted and most of it was destroyed. Later it was rebuilt. However, what ruled this city that had existed for over a hundred million years were not humans, but the saints.

The True Martial Holy Lands that controlled the True Martial Great World had long since been destroyed. Their associated industries and the wealth they had accumulated for almost a billion years was completely taken by a saint race influence called Golden Dragon Hall.

The current Immemorial Imperial City was flooded with hundreds of saint race influences both large and small. Here, the saints controlled all resources and all wealth. As for humans, they were mostly common citizens, miners, servants, cart drivers… and so forth.

Lin Ming didn't enter the city. He simply swept over it with his sense and then sighed deeply in his heart. The once lively business districts were still lively. But, those shops all belonged to the saints, and for the humans that were born in Immemorial Imperial City, they were often waiters, doormen, and other menial roles. If they were slightly more prestigious, they might also be store managers or accountants.

The humans of the Divine Realm could only continue living through such means. The path of martial arts cultivation had long since been strangled to death.

Lin Ming shook his head and didn't pay any more attention to this. He didn't stop at Immemorial Imperial City either.

He quietly headed towards the place Fishy had pointed out to him in the past.

No one knew that when Lin Ming came to this place he had already sunk into the ground, and all that remained walking up above was an illusion he created.

Even if an Empyrean came, they still wouldn't be able to see through this illusion. And in fact, Immemorial Imperial City had no Empyreans. The one with the highest cultivation in Golden Dragon Hall, their Highest Elder, only had a peak Great World King cultivation.

Lin Ming's illusion arrived deep in the mountains. Then, it vanished.

At this time Lin Ming was already a thousand miles underground.

Lin Ming traveled underground at a steady and constant pace. A black force field covered his body. This was the Laws-annihilating grandmist space. The earth itself belonged to earth-attribute Laws, and when these Laws met Lin Ming's upper level grandmist space it naturally decomposed. Like this, Lin Ming easily drilled deep underground.

The temperature gradually rose. Underneath the great pressure, the stone became harder. But to the current Lin Ming, none of this was worthy of mentioning at all.

After a thousand miles, there was sense-isolating vast sky stone.

In the mortal world, this kind of stone was even more valuable than gold. But to a martial artist, it wasn't uncommon at all. Still, vast sky stone possessed a special effect, and that was that it was able to isolate out one's divine sense. When a layer of vast sky stone thousands of miles thick accumulated over time, it would be difficult for any martial artist to sink their sense into it. Moreover, at the true core of the large array, there were numerous concealing array formations laid down by Empyrean Divine Seal.

After reaching 5000 miles underground, Lin Ming was already completely submerged in a boiling magma sea of melted vast sky stone.

This sort of stone was pure white to begin with, and the magma it formed was also the color of creamy milk. Its heat was terrifying and it was far denser than mercury; with so much it created a dreadful pressure.

As one was soaked within and in addition to its divine sense-shielding properties, normal martial artists wouldn't even be able to blink. Even Lin Ming felt his divine sense being somewhat limited.

Deeper in, the Space Laws started to twist. What Lin Ming was searching for was a spatial node that Fishy found in the past.

Lin Ming carefully searched. Finally, by relying on his terrifying soul force he was able to sift through that vast sky stone magma and find the spatial node.

When Lin Ming came here in the past, he had relied completely on Fishy's guidance to blunder his way into this spatial node.

And Lin Ming could no longer be compared to his past self. As he saw this spatial node once more, he was able to faintly perceive its mysteries.

Without a doubt, this was an array formation arranged by Empyrean Divine Seal in the past. It was only because 3.6 billion years had passed that the array formation had started to gradually weaken. Otherwise, it would have been impossibly difficult for Lin Ming to find it, let alone enter it.

He stood before the spatial node for some time. Lin Ming could feel a spinning spatial vortex appear in front of him. Then, he moved into it.

In the next moment, Lin Ming passed through that terrifying layer of magma and had arrived at an incomparably vast underground space.

This place was a mind-bogglingly large mountain range of giant violet sun crystals!

When Lin Ming journeyed through the Sky Spill Continent, there was no mountain peak he saw that could compare with this violet sun crystal mountain range in sheer size or grandeur.

This massive accumulation of violet sun crystals formed a massive ‘seal’ character; this was the great sealing array formation.

Even with Lin Ming’s current standards, the value of these giant mountains of violet sun crystals was terrifying.

This was because within the mountain range of violet sun crystals, a world had already evolved. Sealed within were lakes, forests, grasslands, and numerous other scenes.

There were trees that towered to the heavens, galloping spirit deer, white apes, flying fish, dangling plants…

These things weren't created by Empyrean Divine Seal in the past. Rather, they evolved through that terrifying time period of 3.6 billion years; they were violet sun stone embryos bred from violet sun crystals. It was just like the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone that Lin Ming obtained in the past, spiritual awarenesses that had evolved from within divine stone.

Although these violet sun stone embryos couldn't compare to Lin Ming's Essence Spirit Embryo Stone in value, with so much together and having evolved a world together, their value was simply impossible to estimate.

Lin Ming traced the shining walls of a violet sun crystal mountain. He peered at the world within, waiting…

And after two hours passed, Lin Ming finally heard an ancient and distant voice. "You… you are that junior from… 6000 years ago?"

The Ancient Elysium Seal's artifact spirit had regained consciousness.

The Ancient Elysium Seal had existed for at least 3.6 billion years. To it, 6500 years was only a brief instant. But for some unknown reason, Lin Ming felt that in these 6000 some years, the voice of the Ancient Elysium Seal seemed to have become weaker, a voice filled with the erosion of time…

Compared to the horrifying existence of the past, the energy that the Ancient Elysium Seal possessed had clearly weakened.

How could this be?

An artifact spirit also had a lifespan. After too much time passed, even it would die, leaving behind nothing but the main body of the spirit treasure to exist in the world. But just what sort of spirit treasure was this? A mere 6500 years shouldn't have caused the Ancient Elysium seal to weaken by so much!

"Senior, what happened to you…?" Lin Ming worriedly asked

MW Chapter 2002

Chapter 2002 – One Last Pure Land

…

…

…

“It’s really you…” After confirming Lin Ming’s status, the Ancient Elysium Seal seemed filled with emotion. “You’ve returned…”

“Yes, Senior, junior has returned…”

Lin Ming respectfully bowed. In the past, he didn’t know just what was sealed beneath the Ancient Elysium Seal. He only knew that the artifact spirit of the Ancient Elysium Seal had guarded this land for 3.6 billion years, and that was far too shocking a time.

But now he knew that the soul of Famine was being sealed and suppressed beneath the Ancient Elysium Seal, the soul of an extreme True Divinity level demon. Now, besides shock, Lin Ming also felt a reverent respect.

In the past, Empyrean Divine Seal as well as the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit had paid far too great a price in order to obtain victory in the great calamity.

“Mm… you are already…”

The Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit looked at Lin Ming with some surprise. It had just noticed Lin Ming’s cultivation boundary – a half-step Empyrean.

To become a half-step Empyrean after 6500-6600 years, although this was an extremely fast cultivation rate, it didn’t shock the artifact spirit too much. After all, it knew that Lin Ming had the Magic Cube.

But when it tried to probe Lin Ming’s inner world just now, it discovered something amazing. The artifact spirit was completely unable to understand his inner world, as if everything was encompassed within, possessing a complete set of advanced Laws and an extremely terrifying and mysterious power.

This youth was not just any ordinary half-step Empyrean. As for his true strength, it was hard for the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit to estimate. It was like a Divine Dragon was slumbering deep within his body, and as long as he wanted to he could erupt with a strength that would destroy the heavens and sunder the earth.

“Junior has already learned about many things, and as for the great calamity that Senior mentions, it has already erupted…” Lin Ming explained.

Deep from the void, a quiet sigh reverberated outwards. “Everything is fated… what will come, will eventually come.”

The Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit said. Then, the void in front of Lin Ming twisted and pure black runes appeared, slowly gathering into the appearance of an old man’s face.

This face seemed carved from metal and it was filled with the ice-cold sobriety of reality. The eyes were deep and profound, as if this face had no pupils but black holes instead.

Lin Ming knew that this metallic face was the true form of the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit.

At this time, Lin Ming could feel constant waves of weakness emanating from the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit. Compared to 6000 some years ago, it didn’t seem to possess even half of its previous strength.

This left Lin Ming puzzled.

“What has Senior experienced in these years that has used up so much energy?”

“This is all because of… Famine.”

The dark eyes of the artifact spirit flashed with a mystical light. “Famine has come. I felt it, but it also did. The faint connection that exists between its soul and body as well as its natural instinct caused it to begin stirring once more, almost approaching consciousness. I did everything in my power to suppress it once more, but I ended up using far too much origin energy… of course, it didn’t get off any better.”

The Ancient Elysium Seal’s artifact spirit sounded exhausted. The ‘it’ that it referred to was naturally Famine’s soul.

When the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign came to the Divine Realm, Famine’s soul desired to break out of the seal. The deeply slumbering Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit had awakened and they had engaged in a great battle where both parties had been grievously wounded.

But if this were to continue, the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit felt that the first one to be unable to last any longer would be itself.

“I cannot seal it for much longer… at least 4000 years or at most 10,000 years. The day it breaks the seal is also the day that I perish in dust. At that time, Famine’s soul will return to its mortal body and the consequences of that will be inconceivable.”

Although the artifact spirit was what it was, it had still lived for 3.6 billion years. The Ancient Elysium Seal was far too old and didn't have much strength remaining.

"I fear that Famine's soul will not return." Lin Ming suddenly said.

"Mm?" The Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit was startled.

"Senior likely doesn't know, but Famine's flesh and blood has already been subdued by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and made into an avatar. And, humanity's great calamity was also all planned by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign."

"Subdued?"

The Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit was stunned. It hadn't thought that the ever-powerful Famine would manage to be subdued by someone.

"That's right. This is likely related to a divine tool that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign obtained. The reason junior came to look for Senior is because of Famine's soul!"

"Mm?" The Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit was dumbfounded. "What do you want to do?"

"Junior wants to undo the seal, and from Famine's soul, find a method to turn the battle against the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!"

Lin Ming's words were stunning. For a time, the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit was left speechless.

It looked at Lin Ming with amazement in its eyes. Undo the seal and find a method to turn the battle against the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign through Famine's soul?

"Do you understand what you are saying?"

"I know. But, I still want to attempt it!"

Lin Ming firmly said. For this day, he had made far too many preparations.

"And you understand the consequences of this?" The Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit's voice turned grim and serious.

"If I am defeated, then my soul will be swallowed by Famine. Then, Famine's soul will also escape. It may choose to return to its body and fight with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. Although I would like to see both of them harm each other, I have a feeling that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign has already expected this might happen and is even prepared for it.

At that time, Famine's soul which has been weakened over 3.6 billion years will lose and be made into nothing but a gift for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign..."

Listening to Lin Ming's words, the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit's complexion turned solemn. It stared deep into Lin Ming's eyes. It was clear that Lin Ming had already considered every aspect of this decision.

If one could cultivate to a half-step Empyrean in 6600-6700 years while possessing strength that far outstripped other half-step Empyreans', the artifact spirit knew that it was impossible for this youth to randomly make such rash decisions. Otherwise, he would have long since died.

"Very well! Since that's the case, I'll join with you on this one final bet!"

The artifact spirit slowly said after an incense stick of time.

This seal contained far too much meaning. It was a seal that its master had laid down at the cost of his life, and protecting this seal was the reason for which the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit existed.

Now it would personally undo the seal.

Of course, if it didn't do so then once another expanse of years passed, the seal would eventually be shattered from within. If so, then the artifact spirit might as well take this bet!

The Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit's face vanished. At the same time, the massive violet sun crystal mountain in front of Lin Ming began to melt away. Within the crystal mountain, a cave opening appeared, allowing Lin Ming to walk in.

Lin Ming didn't immediately enter. He composed his breathing and entered an optimal fused martial intent state. Then, he stepped into the tunnel leading inside the crystal mountain.

Step after step, Lin Ming's pace was slow and measured.

As he walked into the depths of the violet sun crystal mountain, he suddenly saw shimmering writings appear all around him on the crystal walls.

Each character was written with strokes as heavy as a mountain range. They emitted an ancient and boundless aura.

These were writings from Empyrean Divine Seal. They contained the mysteries of the Divine Seal Art as well as Concepts of the Asura Heavenly Dao.

Just this tunnel alone had tens of thousands of seal characters. If so, then in the massive violet sun crystal mountain, there would be trillions upon trillions of seal characters.

Lin Ming could feel that each seal character contained the condensed bravery and heroic spirit of Empyrean Divine Seal.

He couldn’t help but gently trace his fingers along these seal characters. People were like their words, and from these curved characters, Lin Ming could feel the gallant and epic bearing of Empyrean Divine Seal in the past.

After several hours, Lin Ming finally arrived at the center of the Divine Seal Array. This place was like a temple. The temple was lit up with brilliant lights, and at the central point of this temple was a great floating bronze seal!

This great bronze seal was engraved with numerous images. And on the top of this seal was a great yellow dragon that served as the handle of the seal.

This was the Ancient Elysium Seal’s true form.

However, what caught Lin Ming’s attention was not the Ancient Elysium Seal, but everything else in the temple.

There were skeletons here!

These skeletons were arranged around the great array and there were dozens in total. Their arrangement was like petals of a sunflower, and each skeleton glowed with rainbow-hued lights, opalescent and shining. Although billions of years had passed, they still emitted a dignified and holy aura.

Without a doubt, these were skeletons left behind by peerless powerhouses.

“This is… these remains are…”

Lin Ming could faintly guess what had occurred. His heart began to fill with awe.

The Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit’s face suddenly appeared in the air. Its icy cold metallic face revealed sorrow and a trace of disappointment.

“These are the remains of blood sacrifices that were used to stabilize the Divine Seal Array. Each one was a famed elder of the human race…”

Lin Ming’s mind shook; he was left speechless.

“The Divine Seal Array used to suppress Famine’s soul had to be arranged ahead of time. This array formation itself took ten years to create, and at the time, Famine was at least an extreme True Divinity. With Empyrean Divine Seal's strength, it was impossible for him to create an array formation powerful enough to completely seal away an extreme True Divinity. He could only draw support from the blood sacrifices of human powerhouses. The runes at the core of the array formation were all written in the blood of these famed elders, and as for the array heart of the array formation… that is a sealing black hole, created from the collapsed inner worlds of numerous powerhouses…

"This is a great sealing array formation that was laid down using the blood and pain of innumerable peerless human powerhouses."

The Ancient Elysium Seal's voice was slow, but the words it spoke left Lin Ming bewildered.

He looked at the runes around this great array. And indeed, these runes were a mottled dark red, written using the blood of these human masters that weren't willing to resign themselves to destruction.

Lin Ming silently walked to a skeleton. This skeleton was a bit bent; it was clearly left behind by an old man. Lin Ming didn't know who this skeleton had been before either. Neither his name nor history had been recorded.

No one knew that this was a heroic soul who had sacrificed himself to resist the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago, and here he died in obscurity…

Lin Ming straightened his clothes and deeply bowed.

Then, he moved, walking to each skeleton and bowing to them, feeling the auras that these seniors of humanity left behind. His eyes began to turn wet and he remained silent throughout.

It could be imagined that in the past, humanity had run into a similar dead end. And they didn’t have the wild universe as an escape route; they could only risk their lives on a final bet.

In order to create this sealing array formation, these human powerhouses sacrificed themselves, all in order to capture a result that they would never see. This kind of tragedy left Lin Ming’s heart shaking.

Lin Ming continued until he bowed to the last skeleton. Then, he saw some words carved into the ground near that skeleton.

“I am willing to have my hundred million years of life be reincarnated into an enchantment. To suffer 10,000 lives of loneliness, to suffer 10,000 lives of tribulations, to suffer 10,000 lives of hardships, all I wish is to shelter my race and create this last pure land for them!”

MW Chapter 2003

Chapter 2003 – Opening the Seal

…

…

…

Seeing these final words left behind by a powerhouse who had sacrificed himself for this sealing array, Lin Ming felt a deep sadness well up in his heart.

This was a feeling that was hard to describe. If Lin Ming were to be returned to 3.6 billion years ago and forced to face humanity's great calamity, then under these stirring feelings he would also make his final stand here, eyes unblinking as he offered to sacrifice his life.

When the survival of a race was on the line, in order to shelter one's family, to shelter one's lover, children, friends, as well as the countless lives of the people, even though one had never had much contact with them except the same blood that flowed through their veins, to exchange one's life just so that everyone could continue on as they did in the past, just what was that price considered?

"All I wish is to shelter my race, and create this last pure land for them..."

Lin Ming murmured these words. He felt a great heaviness upon his shoulders.

The enchantment in front of him had been forged with the blood and tears of dozens of senior human supreme elders. The reason they did so was in order to suppress the abyssal demon Famine!

But now, Lin Ming was about to open the seal and release that demon.

If he couldn't overcome it, then that was the same as destroying all the efforts of his human predecessors. If that occurred, Lin Ming wouldn't have any face left. How would he be able to face the countless heroic human souls who sacrificed themselves in the past?

"Junior, have you thought about this?"

The Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit said from behind Lin Ming, sighing once more.

"I have."

Lin Ming responded, his back to the artifact spirit. He clenched his fists so hard that the void nearly cracked apart.

This would be a battle to the end!

He took a deep breath and sat down in the center of the temple.

The Daevic Eye Dao Palace opened between Lin Ming's eyebrows. At the same time, his eyes sharpened to pinpoints and strange flowery patterns appeared around his pupils.

This was the state of the Three Lives Pupils' All Existence to Void.

Under this state, Lin Ming was able to see the black hole hidden in the void within the temple. This black hole swirled, swallowing in all energy, matter, and Laws of the world.

This was the array heart of the Divine Seal Array.

The soul of Famine was sealed within this black hole.

Lin Ming had once studied the Divine Seal Art before. In addition, Empyrean Divine Seal had studied the Asura Heavenly Dao and had added many things into the Divine Seal Art.

Now that Lin Ming saw the Divine Seal Array's array heart, he was able to deduce many things from it.

The Daevic Eye Dao Palace and Three Lives Pupils mutually complemented each other. The structure of the array formation was branded in Lin Ming's mind, where it was slowly understood by him.

If he wanted to contend with Famine's Soul that had been suppressed using the Divine Seal Art, he would need to use the Divine Seal Array itself.

Several days passed. Then, Lin Ming suddenly stood up from his meditation and started walking towards that revolving array heart.

His pupils were bright and vibrant, with tens of thousands of runes shining within as deductions continued to take place. The origin energy within his inner world scattered out from his body, weaving together in the void.

In this moment, the essence of the Asura Sutra's array techniques had been deduced to an extreme.

In an instant, 33 figures flashed into existence around him. Each figure stepped upon a rune of the Great Dao, rich and strong array lines connecting them.

These array lines overlapped and combined, forming a new array formation.

The moment that this array formation appeared, a primal and chaotic energy shot into the highest heavens, forming a massive yin yang diagram vortex in the skies.

This vortex possessed the powers of yin and yang. Yet this yin and yang wasn’t as simple as the Yin Yang Laws, but consisted of the power of divinity and the power of demons!

The moment this array formation vortex appeared, the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit was stunned.

This strength was…

The artifact spirit had constantly struggled against Famine’s soul for 3.6 billion years, thus it understood the power of demons. Half of the strength Lin Ming used now was the power of demons.

This caused the Ancient Elysium Seal to feel this entire scene unbelievable. The power of demons wasn’t something that a human could control.

But, it didn’t think that Lin Ming had been taken over by an abyssal demon. This was because the power of divinity that Lin Ming exuded was equally extremely pure. If he really was an abyssal in human disguise, then he would have been unable to use this strength.

As the two strengths were thrust out by Lin Ming, they coexisted in peace. This was something the artifact spirit couldn’t understand at all.

In its opinion, this was an absolute impossibility.

However, even though the artifact spirit had all these questions rising in its heart, it didn’t disturb Lin Ming and only quietly watched on.

That profound vortex seemed like an infinite black hole that could obliterate all of existence. It carried with it an all-destroying aura.

At the same time, the array formation was faintly similar to the blue stone road within the Asura Road’s final trial, continuous and without end, each step containing the suppression of the powerful Asura Heavenly Dao Laws.

Lin Ming’s body floated within the center of this array formation. He soared into the skies like a divine king that ruled over all.

“This junior, just what has he been perceiving these past years…” The artifact spirit murmured, its mind quaking. Just 6500 years ago Lin Ming had been a minor figure it could kill at will, but now he had mastered a strength that shocked even the artifact spirit.

At this time, Lin Ming suddenly looked up at the artifact spirit. “Senior, let’s begin!”

The artifact spirit grit its teeth and hardened its resolve. Rays of black divine light shot out from its body, slamming into the main form of the Ancient Elysium Seal.

Whoosh!

The Ancient Elysium Seal flew upwards!

This was the same as removing the barrier of the Divine Seal Array’s array heart. The power behind the array formation burst out like a broken dam.

The Divine Seal Array that had been continuously sealing for 3.6 billion years had finally been released!

Roar - !

A horrifying roar spread out from the black hole and a dreadful demonic aura shrouded down over the world.

It was like hell had descended unto the earth. Endless seas of blood soared up and down and countless massive demonic phantoms howled as they rode the waves of blood.

The soul of Famine had emerged!

Famine's body was that of an ugly red ball of meat, but its soul was not. This soul had 12 cruel red wings and 1000 arms. Each arm had a palm with the eye of a crazed demon staring out from it.

It was incredibly large. As it unfurled its 12 wings, it could block out the entire temple. Each one of its 1000 arms was twice Lin Ming's height!

Moreover, it was growing even larger!

"Jejejejejeje!"

Famine cackled, its voice like the wailing cries of tormented ghosts.

"3.6 billion years! 3.6 billion years! I have finally come out! Jejejeje!"

Famine spat out. It spoke in the language of the ancient demons, a language similar to the ancient god race's. A person who understood the language of the god race would definitely be able to understand it.

“So it’s you boy, you’re the one that released me? I don’t know what you are planning to do, but I will take your mortal body and swallow all your blood vitality as thanks for releasing me, jejeje!”

Famine’s soul laughed. At the same time, all 1000 eyes on its arms stared at Lin Ming!

These eyes were all terrifying demon eyes, seeming to possess an ability to see through the hearts of others. And, their most terrifying property was that they seemed able to expand a person’s negative feelings to the extreme.

“Be careful, it’s the demon domain!”

The Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit cautioned from the side. But, this warning also drew the hateful glare of Famine’s soul!

Famine’s soul naturally recognized the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit. This was the old geezer that had locked it in here for 3.6 billion years!

Such a terrifying sealing and suppression caused pain and agony that couldn’t be described in words. Even though Famine was incomparably powerful, this sort of manic-inducing suffering nearly caused its soul to collapse.

It had been weakened to the extreme, and all of this was thanks to the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit!

The hatred it felt towards this artifact spirit could fill up an entire universe.

“I’ll kill this old piece of garbage first!”

Famine didn’t care about Lin Ming. Rather, it attacked the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit!

The 1000 hands were like 1000 spears that pierced towards the artifact spirit.

The artifact spirit’s complexion changed. With a thought, it was already ready to enter the main body of the Ancient Elysium Seal and prepare for a battle to the death.

But at this moment, a cold voice shouted out.

“Your opponent is me!”

Weng –

The countless Asura Heavenly Dao runes beneath Lin Ming's feet began to emit a blinding radiance!

The chains of Laws were like Azure Dragons that had woken from slumber. They instantly tied down Famine.

Each chain link within this array formation contained the will of the Asura Heavenly Dao. It was a transcendent array formation that existed beyond the 33 Heavens.

This array formation also fused in the essence of the Divine Seal Art. Besides the meaning of 'sealing', it also contained the meaning of 'obliteration'.

Roar!

Famine roared out. Ugly blood dragons drilled out from the soul, mercilessly biting down on the array formation chains.

A trillion runes began to implode, emitting dull booming sounds.

The array formation that Lin Ming created was unable to pose a threat to Famine. It was being easily torn part!

Although it was weak, the strength it could emit was beyond terrifying!

“You think you can restrain me? Just be a good little boy and give me your blood vitality as food!”

Famine rushed towards Lin Ming. Without a word, Lin Ming rapidly retreated. He raised his hands, forming tens of thousands of seals, his eyes as cold as the nine nether abyss.

Peng!

Lin Ming punched his chest and spat out an arrow of blood, fusing it into a new array link.

In order to defeat Famine, Lin Ming was willing to pay any price!

This was a battle he could not lose!

This battle carried with it the hopes of humanity, carried with it the sacrifice of all the human supreme elders of 3.6 billion years ago!

Lin Ming’s blood essence had been fused with the blood of the Asura Road Master. As it fused into the array formation, it pushed the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws within the chains to an extreme.

The chains began to boil like roiling magma. They turned red hot, emitting bright flames a hundred times hotter than a sun.

"Ahhh!"

Caught off guard, the blood dragons that Famine released were burned to ashes and its soul was burnt again and again. Where it was tied up with chains, massive chunks began to disappear as if someone had carved out portions of its body.

Famine's visage violently twisted. It swiveled its head and looked at Lin Ming, its eyes burning with shock and brutality.

"A half-step Empyrean cultivation… yet you thoroughly understand the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws. How could your cultivation be so formidable…"

Famine's face was grim. But then, it cruelly grinned. "What I like most is the flesh and blood of human geniuses. Although I don't know what secrets and lucky chances you have on you, none of that is important. Once I kill you, everything you have will be mine!"

MW Chapter 2004

Chapter 2004 – Fighting Famine

…

…

…

Lin Ming's strength had aroused immense interest in Famine. With a roar, it began to burn its own source soul force!

Hu – !

Hu – !

Hu – !

Flames blazed. After Famine burned its source soul force, it erupted with dreadful black flames. They burnt through the void, their heat so devastating that the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit couldn't help but retreat.

"This crazy beast!"

The artifact spirit grimaced. Famine had been suppressed for 3.6 billion years and in the last several thousand years, it had engaged the artifact spirit in unending battle. It had already consumed an incalculable amount of its soul force, but now it actually continued to crazily burn away its source soul force.

This was undoubtedly creating a giant wound.

"Crazy? Hehe, I believe that as long as I can swallow you, everything I've lost can be restored."

Famine diabolically leered at Lin Ming. Its 1000 eyes emitted a fierce demonic light. This sort of feeling was like a starving wolf staring at delicious prey.

Famine was an evil and cruel demon. It was merciless to other creatures and also merciless to itself. With the chance of escape so close, it was willing to risk everything!

At this time, Famine attacked. Its 1000 hands turned into 1000 pythons that surged towards Lin Ming!

“Be careful!”

The artifact spirit shouted out. The giant ancient bronze seal came crashing down like a mountain, smashing into Famine!

Bang!

With a horrifying strike, Famine shook. 300 pythons changed directions to collide with the Ancient Elysium Seal. It had split off a third of its strength to forcefully resist this strike!

When Famine was suppressed by the Divine Seal Array, it was restricted by the array formation and thus it couldn’t compete with the Ancient Elysium Seal. But now, with the seal broken, it was able to reverse the situation after burning its source soul force!

“I’ll kill you all!”

Famine roared into the air. Its demonic eyes blazed with a horrendous killing intent!

The demon domain expanded once more, covering both Lin Ming and the Ancient Elysium Seal!

700 pythons recklessly hurtled towards Lin Ming, surrounding his protective grandmist space.

Piki paka!

Grandmist energy was wildly swallowed up by the pythons. Lin Ming was besieged on all sides!

Famine cruelly smiled. As it was already sure that Lin Ming would be swallowed up by these 700 pythons and have his spiritual sea torn to pieces, a sudden change occurred!

In that moment, a mystical and terrifying black light, one that seemed to carry with it the will of the Heavenly Dao, came slashing out like the sword of a divine god!

It cut out, splitting apart the heavens and earth. The pythons formed from demon energy became like snow that had molten metal poured onto them, instantly melting away.

Puff! Puff!

Hundreds of pythons were sheared off by this divine light. Black blood gushed out!

This black blood was Famine’s soul force. Lin Ming’s attack caused Famine to cry out in pain again and again.

“Ahhh!”

Famine screeched like a cat that had boiling water poured on it. Its sharp and ear-splitting cries shook the air. It dragged its half-remaining body away and tumbled through the air, surging with demonic energy as it protected itself.

Its pitch black eyes stared hatefully at Lin Ming.

Or, it was more accurate to say at Lin Ming’s hand!

At this time, endless black starlight had gathered within Lin Ming’s right hand. The space here had twisted, and within this space distortion, a dark gray cube slowly revolved.

The cube was simple and plain, covered with strange patterns and wrapped in a shroud of riddles.

As Famine saw this cube, it instantly froze. Its pupils flashed with pure disbelief.

Suddenly, in its heart that feared neither the heavens nor earth, a chill crept in.

"The Stone of Eternal Life… that is the Stone of Eternal Life! Why is it in your hands!?"

He could clearly feel the terrifying soul force emitting from the Magic Cube!

The Magic Cube was the ultimate nemesis of all souls and spiritual strengths! And at this time, Famine was nothing but an amalgamation of soul force. Thus, it naturally feared the Magic Cube!

"What a pity. I thought I could twist you to pieces with that strike…"

Lin Ming held the Magic Cube and slowly approached Famine.

The Magic Cube was Lin Ming's final trump card. From the start, he didn't use it all in order so that Famine would approach him without raising its guard. Then, he would land a fatal strike on Famine. But Lin Ming never thought that Famine would be so powerful. It had actually managed to survive the attack and only suffer heavy wounds.

A normal soul would have been instantly sliced to nothing by the Magic Cube's divine light the moment Lin Ming revealed it.

“It really was at least an extreme True Divinity in the past, or perhaps even an existence approaching the Asura Road Master. Even though it was suppressed for 3.6 billion years, it can remain so powerful… if I can control it, then what would it be like when I face the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign?”

As Lin Ming thought this, his eyes turned cold and resolute.

At this time, Famine’s body began to surge and billow outwards. Traces of pain etched themselves on its face. The wounds that the Magic Cube cut on its body began to emit a dense demonic fog, and the arms that were severed started to regrow.

But at the same time, Famine also became paler in color.

It was regenerating its body!

Seeing this, Lin Ming didn’t delay any further. Without speaking he used the strength he obtained after burning his blood essence and threw out the Magic Cube!

He couldn’t give Famine any respite to restore itself!

The Magic Cube shared a connection with Lin Ming. Now, with his current strength, he was able to command it as he pleased!

In that moment, a horrifying soul storm of death swept up around the Magic Cube. The power of this attack was countless times greater than the Ancient Elysium Seal's attack.

The attack left Famine crazily grasping for breath!

It hadn't yet repaired its body but now it had to face a life or death crisis!

However, billions of years ago, Famine had traveled through the universe and ravaged wherever it went. Countless supreme powerhouses had died to its hands, and their supreme blood had cast an indefatigable faith in its soul, one that would never concede.

Ho - !

Famine lit up with black flames once more. It was burning all of its source soul force!

Normal martial artists, even spiritas martial artists that were renowned for their potent soul force, would instantly die as soon as they burned their complete source soul force. But Famine was actually able to resist it. This was simply unbelievable.

Even Lin Ming was shocked; did it want to commit suicide?

"Be careful, Famine has swallowed the souls of countless powerhouses and refined them into soul essence that was sealed in its body. Now, what it is burning isn't its own source soul force but all the soul essence that it has saved. It wants to go all-out against you!"

The Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit rapidly explained.

Lin Ming suddenly realized what was occurring. No wonder it was so difficult for Famine to die and it still had such strength after being suppressed for 3.6 billion years. So it had actually swallowed the souls of countless Empyreans, and even True Divinities, and had slowly consumed their soul force over the years. In this case, of course it was able to survive. Even within the Divine Seal Array it was able to endure the passing of time until the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact died of old age, whereupon it could break out of the seal.

Suddenly, an eye split open on Famine's head. This eye was formed from flesh and blood, and was similar to the eyes on its palms. But, this eye was completely blood red.

This was Famine's 1001th demon eye. The surface of the eye, the billions of black lines that covered it, everything flashed non-stop with a mystical black light.

The black light contained runes that seethed up and down like grains of sand in a storm.

Although this eye didn't reveal any abnormality, Lin Ming only looked at it once to feel a strong power. Something strange began to emerge in his heart.

Beams of black light shot out from that strange eye, containing the condensed rhythm of a mystical Dao.

Shua –

The black light was faster than lightning. As the demonic attack tore through the void, although it seemed simple, this actually contained the condensed power of a True Divinity's soul that Famine had swallowed billions of years ago!

With a rumbling explosion, the black light collided with the Magic Cube and caused a massive energy shockwave to sweep outwards!

The spiritual strength released by the Magic Cube was reversed backwards and it was sent flying away by the soul force condensed from a True Divinity!

But Famine was no better off. Its body shook and it paled even further.

And at this time, Famine simply didn't care about its wounds. Its 1001st demon eye had turned completely blood red.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Hundreds and thousands of beams of black light blazed out from Famine's body. These were the soul forces of the Empyreans that Famine had swallowed billions of years ago. Compared to the soul force of a True Divinity, the soul force of an Empyrean wasn't much at all. But with hundreds and thousands of these Empyrean soul forces rushing out, it was still an incomparably terrifying force.

These soul forces wrapped the Magic Cube in layers. Famine had desperately used every card in its hands, even taking heavy wounds all in order to wrest away the Magic Cube.

Although it was impossible for Famine to refine the Magic Cube, it could actually use the force field created from the souls of Empyreans to surround it, making it so that Lin Ming wouldn't be able to control the Magic Cube for some time. With this, it would win.

"You're over! You can die, and this Stone of Eternal Life is also mine!"

Famine roared. The strange eye on its forehead projected a giant shield that blocked out the skies and covered its body.

In this final moment, it wouldn't give Lin Ming the chance to use any sneak attacks to turn the tide.

Famine’s body violently shivered. Fierce dragon tentacles rose up around it, whistling in the air. Hundreds and thousands of crimson spears shot out. Burning hot flames blazed, freezing cold ice crackled, yin and yang distorted the air…

The supreme Dao arts of the 33 Heavens began to appear in droves.

“This is the power of the Great Dao that it swallowed!” The pupils of the Ancient Elysium Seal’s artifact spirit shrank as it warned Lin Ming once more.

Famine’s most powerful ability was to swallow. And, the Dao arts it used now came from the supreme powerhouses it defeated in the past. When it swallowed the blood essence and divine souls of those powerhouses, it also swallowed the Laws they grasped. Now, it used everything at its disposal in an attempt to kill off Lin Ming.

This was a terrifying ability, the ability to swallow the strength of others and use it for oneself.

Without hesitation, Lin Ming flew backwards.

The Ancient Elysium Seal came crashing down once more. As for the desperate Famine, it only used a fifth of its Dao arts to send the Ancient Elysium Seal flying away!

The Ancient Elysium Seal violently shook; it had clearly reached its limits.

But at this time, Famine no longer cared about the Ancient Elysium Seal; its target was Lin Ming!

Lin Ming was the one controlling the Magic Cube. It would absolutely not kill the Ancient Elysium Seal and give Lin Ming the chance to recapture the Magic Cube during that time!

MW Chapter 2005

Chapter 2005 – Defeating Famine

…

…

…

Ka ka ka!

The Great Dao of the 33 Heavens controlled by Famine shattered the void into pieces!

Lin Ming drew back again and again. Facing the onslaught of the 33 Heavens' Great Dao, he had been forced back to the edge of the array formation!

However, as Famine planned on killing Lin Ming in a single breath, it suddenly heard a ringing sound from behind.

The Magic Cube's spiritual connection with Lin Ming had been temporarily severed after being surrounded by the souls of Empyreans. But now, it suddenly erupted with a vast and boundless soul storm!

The power of this soul storm even surpassed the soul storm released by the Magic Cube when Lin Ming controlled it!

Piki paka!

All around the Magic Cube, the force field created by the Empyrean souls began to be twisted apart by the soul storm. It was like countless knives chopping down on a painting, slicing it to pieces!

“What!?”

Famine didn't turn around to look, but still had absolute clarity of what was occurring behind it.

The Magic Cube that should have been temporarily cut off from Lin Ming had suddenly started to go berserk, and was actually attacking Famine!

How was this possible?

Before Famine could figure out what was occurring, a red fluctuation of energy appeared around the Magic Cube.

This energy fluctuation condensed into the phantom of a cute, red-clothed little girl. Her cheeks were ruddy and her eyes were bright, the definition of childish innocence.

This little girl was Ruby. In terms of strength, she couldn't compare with Lin Ming at all. But it was more accurate to say that she was a condensed form of the Laws; it was simply impossible for her to manipulate the energy that existed in the universe.

But in the Magic Cube, Ruby had become a fish in water. This was because she was a being evolved from the Magic Cube. Although she was not a true artifact spirit, she could be considered a quasi-artifact spirit.

She could manipulate the Magic Cube to a great extent. In terms of control, she was far more skilled than Lin Ming!

As Ruby looked towards the fierce and dreadful Famine, her large black eyes shined with decisiveness.

Without hesitation, Ruby struck out. A vast sea of source soul force burst out from her. Bright red light shined and wrapped around the Magic Cube.

The Magic Cube shot out like a bolt of lightning. As it flew, divine light rose, becoming brighter. The originally gray light fused with a blood red, becoming blindingly dazzling like a star shining in the skies.

“Damnit!”

Famine was incensed. If it continued to attack Lin Ming then it would be struck from behind by the Magic Cube. In a situation where it had already shot out all the True Divinity and Empyrean soul force within its body, if it were to take such an attack it would definitely die!

Famine didn’t want to die. All it could do was reverse its strength just before it struck Lin Ming, and transfer 60% of the 33 Heavens Dao arts to roar towards Ruby instead.

But at the same time, the rest of the 33 Heavens Dao arts continued to attack Lin Ming!

It didn’t give up on attacking Lin Ming. This was because it was well aware that if it freely allowed Lin Ming to do what he wanted, then he would join together with that mysterious little girl and it would die even more miserably.

It instantly made a decision to split its attacks. In a situation with both parties wounded, this was the best method it could think of to obtain victory.

However, at this time, a corner of Lin Ming's lips pulled in a taunting sneer. A sound transmission immediately passed to Famine's mind –

"A smart decision, but it's only you who thinks it is smart!"

Whorl whorl whorl –

Lin Ming's swirled his hands. Behind him, a primal chaos diagram appeared. But this primal chaos diagram wasn't composed of the power of yin and yang, but of the power of divinity and the power of demons.

As the diagram appeared, the will of a horrifying Heavenly Dao recklessly blazed out, welcoming the attacks of Famine's 33 Heavens Dao arts.

Bang!

A fierce explosion rang out. Lin Ming was sent flying backwards. As for Famine, it was also affected by this energy explosion. Its body violently trembled and blurred!

The power of demons!? How was this possible!?

Panic and horror began to dawn in Famine's eyes. It simply couldn't imagine how a human like Lin Ming was able to control the power of demons!

Moreover, Lin Ming's strength was far too terrifying. A mere half-step Empyrean was able to withstand its attacks with nothing more than minor wounds.

But at this time, an even more horrifying attack arrived.

This attack came from behind Famine; it was Ruby's strike!

Ruby sat cross-legged behind the Magic Cube. Her two small hands were pressed together and an endless black hole appeared between her palms. Within this black hole, the Magic Cube revolved, as if it were capable of swallowing all strengths in the world.

Hum –

Hum –

Hum –

Waves of condensed soul storm essence blasted out in circles, colliding with Famine's demon force field.

The demon force field was only able to resist for a blink of an eye before it shattered to pieces!

The soul storm swept out. Wherever it went, blood spears would break, glaciers would melt, flames would extinguish, shields would erode… everything that Famine displayed, all the supreme arts of the 33 heavens, all of it was crushed like bugs beneath the suppression of the Magic Cube.

“Ahh!”

Famine cried out in pain. It had underestimated Lin Ming’s strength. Lin Ming’s resistance had caused it to suffer a backlash, and now it was unable to face the Magic Cube’s attack!

The result had been decided!

Kacha!

The Magic Cube’s soul storm started to grind away the final force field defense summoned by Famine. The blood dragons behind famine as well as its thousand arms were all annihilated in the terrifying storm, and even the force field started to disintegrate.

Famine emitted another heart-wrenching scream. It had already used up all the True Divinity and Empyrean soul force it had held in its body. Now, it had to rely on its soul force alone to resist this attack. The Magic Cube controlled by Ruby was like a butcher's knife cutting down on its body. Each time the soul storm revolved, it recklessly swallowed up Famine's life!

If this continued then it would be utterly obliterated in just several breaths of time!

"Ruby, slow down!"

Within that dreadful soul storm, Lin Ming suddenly shouted out.

Ruby had always listened to Lin Ming. She immediately reduced the strength she used. In that moment, Famine gained a brief moment of respite to avoid the fate of being turned to ashes.

It didn't know why Lin Ming had told Ruby to stay her hand at this moment, but to it, this was undoubtedly a glorious celebration. It could seize this chance to survive.

"Don't kill me! I am willing to surrender to you!"

Famine shouted out loud. It had decided that Lin Ming had some plan to use it. If it could make use of Lin Ming's greed, then there would be a chance to swallow Lin Ming and obtain the Magic Cube!

Famine's heart was filled with hope. But, Lin Ming didn't answer it at all. He flew up and caught the Magic Cube.

"Ruby, help me."

Ruby nodded. She placed her two hands atop the Magic Cube and combined as one with Lin Ming's soul force.

Famine looked at Lin Ming with a hint of trepidation. But at the same time, its words were filled with beguiling temptation.

"Young man, from of any race in the 33 Heavens, you are the most terrifying genius I have ever seen. In the future you will absolutely become the ruler of the universe! You have already proven your strength. As long as you let me live then I am will to help you. I can be your servant, and if you don't believe me then you can leave a slave seal within me. I can even sign a contract with you! My strength and experience will bring you unimaginable benefits! With me by your side, no one will be your match. I can even gather a massive number of abyssals to support you. The entire 33 Heavens can be yours!"

Famine passionately spoke. It was confident in its ability to mislead and tempt the hearts of men. It knew how these intelligent life forms were greedy and it also knew that anyone with ambition would be lured by its words. As for peerless geniuses, which one didn't have ambitions? Otherwise they would have never reached this step.

Famine believed it had found the turning point it needed to survive.

But, it never thought that Lin Ming would completely ignore its words, as if he never heard them. In fact, Lin Ming never even glanced towards its passionate and fervent performance.

Lin Ming only helped Ruby position her hands, then he placed his own hands atop hers, wrapping the Magic Cube with two layers.

Then he casually said, "Ruby, you and I will join forces to erase Famine's spirit mark. But, don't injure the main form of its soul. I still have a use for it!"

These words were a blow to the head. They immediately cracked open Famine's courage!

"Mm!" Ruby nodded. Above her red and round cheeks, her large and watery eyes closely stared at Famine as she aimed the Magic Cube. She was already ready to strike Famine. As for what Lin Ming wanted to do, she didn't ask nor did she care.

In short, as long as Lin Ming wanted to erase this ugly monster's spirit mark, she would be more than glad to help.

"You! You want to erase my spirit mark!?"

Famine crazily roared. The only remaining demon eye on its forehead nearly cracked open and bled. It finally realized why Lin Ming had released its seal and why he didn't turn it to ash in the final moment. This was because from the very start, this cruel and abnormal human had planned to erase his spirit mark and swallow its soul for his own use!

To die only meant turning to ash and fading away. But to have its spirit mark erased meant that it would lose itself; this was a fate worse than death. And after its spirit mark was erased, it would then be swallowed and used as a gift to its enemies to enhance their strength. This was definitely ten times worse than simply being killed off!

Then, Famine suddenly thought of the Stone of Eternal Life! If Lin Ming used the Stone of Eternal Life, there really was a chance he could accomplish all this!

"You will die like a dog!"

Famine cursed. But then, Lin Ming finally looked at Famine. His eyes were filled with disgust and disdain.

“What a pity. If you really did your best and attacked me with all of your 33 Heavens Dao arts, then even if I didn’t die you would still have been able to heavily wound me, and even injure my source soul force, making it so that I wouldn’t be able to recover for at least several hundred years. As for you, although you wouldn’t have been able to escape, you would have exploded into nothingness and have saved yourself from a destiny of being enslaved forever, so that I would never have obtained any advantages. But instead, you are now paying a deep price for your actions.

“You are far too greedy. In a severely wounded state, you still wished to kill me and obtain the Magic Cube. Your natural character is to swallow so you are doomed to be greedy, but, your greed has doomed you to be made a gift to me!”

As Lin Ming spoke, the Magic Cube emitted rays of black light that wrapped around all of Famin’s severed arms.

And after that, with a thought, Lin Ming caused a beam of black light to puncture Famine’s central eye, causing it to lose all sight.

By this time, Famine no longer had any ability to resist.

MW Chapter 2006

Chapter 2006 – Imprison

…

…

…

Ruby was focused. With her two small hands together, she held the Magic Cube floating in the void. Lin Ming's hands covered hers as he poured his soul force into the Magic Cube.

Before having Ruby's help, he had never felt his own spiritual sea so closely connected to the Magic Cube. This sort of feeling was like the Magic Cube was a part of his body and he could control it as he wished.

Woosh!

A ray of black light thrust into Famine, drilling through its forehead and hitting its spiritual sea!

“Ahh!”

Famine cried out in pain and sorrow. The sound was like a person screaming with a throat full of glass, harsh to the extreme.

Its body started to rattle and pop, as if something were cracking apart!

Lin Ming was cold and resolute. In the final moments he absolutely could not allow Famine any chance to self-implode, otherwise he would lose everything.

With a thought, the array lines that wrapped around Famine like burning magma suddenly drilled into its soul form, burning it away, eroding its will.

Famine wildly struggled. But, all of its strength was in utter chaos and it was unable to gather any. At the same time, its spirit mark was being grinded away and its consciousness became increasingly blurry.

It was a being that had existed for billions upon billions of years. It never imagined that it would experience such a scene one day!

Even when Empyrean Divine Seal locked away its soul, it had never been so afraid.

This was surely the most terrifying way to die!

It was no longer able to move its body nor could it speak any words with its mouth. Even its ability to think was frozen. These short several breaths of time seemed as long as a hundred million years, and the pain it experienced during this time seemed far greater than the sum total of pain it had gone through in the last 3.6 billion years!

"It's over."

Lin Ming's tone held no emotion. The Magic Cube emitted another black ray of light that penetrated into Famine's spiritual sea like an earth-breaking drill.

Peng!

Famine's spirit mark blew apart at this moment, dissipating to nothingness…

In the next moment, the Magic Cube whipped up a black soul vortex that swallowed Famine's now masterless soul.

"Done!"

Lin Ming let out a long breath of air. He had used up a considerable amount of energy in this battle, and it wasn't just from using his source soul force or burning the Asura blood essence, but because the pressure he shouldered from starting this battle.

At this time behind Lin Ming, the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit that had watched the battle unfold was already left at a loss for words. The artifact spirit had basically played little to no role in the battle. Lin Ming, along with the Magic Cube and the mysterious little girl, the three of them had joined together to subdue Famine's soul.

Moreover, Lin Ming's crazy plan had left the artifact spirit gasping in awe and shock. This junior actually planned on erasing Famine's spirit mark and then absorbing its soul.

"Junior, you want to absorb Famine's soul? You should know that even if Famine's spirit mark is erased, it will still be immeasurably dangerous for you to swallow it. This is because even if that soul no longer has a master, it still retains its instinct to resist and swallow."

What the artifact spirit said was correct. When Lin Ming obtained the Magic Cube in the past, just absorbing a soul fragment the size of a grain of rice had nearly caused his spiritual sea to fall to illusion. The dangers of swallowing a masterless soul was similarly high.

What lay before Lin Ming was the soul of an existence that had once been an extreme True Divinity. Although it was severely weakened, it was still the complete soul of Famine. Wanting to swallow it wouldn't be easy at all.

Lin Ming said, “Junior has no plan to do so for now. Famine has likely lived for around 5 billion years, or even longer… the memories within its soul are too great, and for someone like me with only several thousand years of life to absorb it is the same as an ant wanting to swallow an elephant. For an ant to swallow an elephant, that isn’t realistic at all. With the capacity of my spiritual sea, it is impossible for me to absorb so many memories. I only need to imprison Famine’s soul and use it as I need.”

With a masterless soul that had its spirit mark erased, and in addition to the suppression of the Magic Cube, there shouldn’t be any problems with doing this.

“That… is also good!” The Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit let out a sigh of relief. There was a bit more insurance with this.

At this time, Lin Ming had already sat down in meditation. He ate some soul recovery pills and used two hours to adjust himself back to his peak state. Then, he took out the Magic Cube and drew out Famine’s soul.

At this time, Famine’s soul had already condensed into a pitch black sphere of light.

Without thinking, Lin Ming plunged this sphere of light between his eyebrows, submerging it in his spiritual sea.

Bang!

Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, roiling waves immediately rose up!

Famine's soul was too strong. It was far more formidable than Lin Ming's soul.

At this time, the scene of Lin Ming's spiritual sea trying to accommodate Famine's soul was like a small sea suddenly having a giant planet fall into it!

Tsunamis rose up, the entire sea began to tumble.

Lin Ming paled. He grabbed the Magic Cube and also pressed it in between his eyebrows.

Ka ka ka ka!

In that instant, the massive Magic Cube came pressing down in the skies above Lin Ming's spiritual sea. Black energy shot out, and as this black energy shrouded down, the raging soul suddenly became a mouse that saw a cat; it immediately calmed down.

Famine's soul was just far too formidable. Wanting to refine it would be an arduously difficult process.

Lin Ming used his will to form spiritual ropes.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

These spiritual ropes shot out from Lin Ming's spiritual sea like water snakes. They flowed across the sea, wrapping the massive sphere of light in numerous layers.

The spiritual ropes crawled over Famine. Sharp steel needles dug into Famine's soul like knives, penetrating deeper into it.

Rope after rope of spiritual strength appeared. More and more chains rose up in Lin Ming's spiritual sea, imprisoning Famine's soul in innumerable layers. As these iron chains tightened and pulled down, Famine's soul finally sank into Lin Ming's spiritual sea until it was fully submerged.

For a time, an indescribably powerful soul force surged up along the spiritual ropes and into Lin Ming's spiritual sea. This feeling numbed Lin Ming's entire body, paralyzing him like he had been struck by lightning.

Lin Ming's spiritual sea was absorbing Famine's soul force through these ropes. From afar, they looked like leeches sucking blood.

If this continued, then slowly, Famine's soul would be completely absorbed into Lin Ming's spiritual sea. The capacity and intensity of Lin Ming's spiritual sea would also be enhanced by a terrifying degree.

This was just like a sea that suddenly had a planet-sized amount of water thrust into it. The depth and width of this sea would be incomparable to the past!

Moreover, doing things this way had another benefit; this was that Lin Ming could preserve Famine's soul to the highest degree. With this, he would have an even greater advantage when he fought with Famine's mortal body later.

After completely imprisoning Famine's soul, Lin Ming's eyes opened.

At this time, Ruby was also standing behind Lin Ming. Her two hands were placed along Lin Ming's temples, helping him control the Magic Cube in his spiritual sea.

The reason Lin Ming was able to smoothly absorb Famine's soul was all thanks to the suppression of the Magic Cube. And Ruby had played a great role in accomplishing this.

Lin Ming saw that Ruby's forehead was already wet with sweat, and her bangs had also pasted themselves onto her face. A warm feeling surged in his heart.

"Thank you, Ruby."

Lin Ming patted Ruby's head. Ruby shyly smiled. She was happy that she could help Lin Ming in some manner.

When Lin Ming just absorbed Famine's soul, not too much time had passed in his spiritual sea. But in reality, two days and two nights had passed. During this time, the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit had been closely watching over Lin Ming.

As the old artifact spirit looked at Lin Ming, it finally understood what others meant when they said 'the young will surpass the old'.

Famine's soul had truly been subdued. Who would have imagined that when this youth returned to visit, not only would he help solve a great problem that had been weighing down on the artifact spirit's mind for all this time, but he would also imprison and refine the soul of Famine to use for himself?

Lin Ming had used 6000 some years to grow to such a degree. If he were given another 6000 years, what would he be like then?

The artifact spirit sighed with emotion. Then, it seemed to recall something. Its eyes passed over Lin Ming and looked at Ruby.

Feeling the gaze of the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit, the somewhat shy and timid Ruby couldn't help but grab onto the hem of Lin Ming's robe.

Such a timid Ruby, it made it hard for others to imagine that she had calmly and coldly controlled the Magic Cube to severely wound Famine.

"Is she... the Stone of Eternal Life's artifact spirit?"

The Ancient Elysium Seal asked with incredulity. Existences on the level of the three divine tools already surpassed the universe, and it was difficult for them to form artifact spirits. If they did produce an artifact spirit then those artifact spirits would be destined to be incredibly powerful existences capable of destroying the heavens and earth. But, this little girl was clearly not such an example.

Lin Ming held onto Ruby's cold and small hand, hinting for her not to be nervous. He smiled and said, "Senior might believe that, but to be more accurate, Ruby is a special life form condensed from the Laws of the Magic Cube and combined with the will, energy, and blood vitality of a peerless powerhouse, as well as mixed in with all sorts of other information. When junior first came here, I brought a little girl called Fishy with me, and she was also a similar existence. She could have been a life form condensed from the Purple Card and related to the Asura Road Master."

"Fishy... Purple Card... Asura Road Master..."

The Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit lost itself in thought. "So it was that little girl... I remember her... when Empyrean Divine Seal laid down the Divine Seal Array, he seemed to have collected a set of something. So, he left the Divine Realm to go to the Asura Road in order to find his own unrivalled lucky chance… and when he returned, he truly did bring a little girl back with him. But by that time, I was already guarding the Divine Seal Array.

"Unfortunately, Empyrean Divine Seal didn't have a chance to develop the inheritance he obtained. When he sealed away Famine's soul he had to burn away his life. As for me, that was when my mission began. I have been suppressing this seal for 3.6 billion years since then…"

Hearing the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit's words, Lin Ming felt a deep awe and respect towards it. To guard this land alone for 3.6 billion years, just how much loneliness did it have to endure? How many tribulations did it have to cross?

It had likely fought with Famine's soul countless times, using up its life as it marched forwards with its mission.

It was like a torch that had been lit in ages past, set in an unknown corner where it continued to illuminate the future of the human race.

Realizing this, Lin Ming respectfully bowed towards the artifact spirit.

The old artifact spirit smiled. "The one bowing should be me. If it weren't for you, I would have been destined to waste away until Famine killed me. Now, I have been freed. Although my life is ruined, being able to live for another hundred million years or so shouldn't be a problem. Of course, that's on the premise that I don't die somehow."

The life of an artifact spirit was much longer than the life of a human. They were comparable to the temple spirit race.

Lin Ming cupped his fists together. “Senior… junior plans to return to the gathering place of humanity after a little more time – the wild universe. I want to ask… does Senior have any plans?”

“Wild universe?” The artifact spirit repeated, surprised.

Lin Ming retold the story of humanity’s evacuation from the Divine Realm. The more the artifact spirit heard, the more shocked it was. The last time Lin Ming was here, it had guessed that Lin Ming might be able to save the world because he was in possession of the Magic Cube. But, it had never imagined that over 6000 years ago when Lin Ming had only been at the Holy Lord realm, he had been able to have such a terrifying influence on the great war between humanity and the saints.

Escaping to the wild universe could be said to only have been possible because of Lin Ming. Lin Ming could truly be called the child of fate!

“I’m just an old bag of bones. If I still have any use left, then it’s time to show the world I can still burn!” As the artifact spirit spoke, Lin Ming smiled with understanding. He knew that the Ancient Elysium Seal had already decided to go to the wild universe with him and challenge the saints!

His journey would begin from here on out!

MW Chapter 2007

Chapter 2007 – Wild Universe Entrance

…

…

…

In the endless starry skies, a common-seeming spirit ship was slowly shuttling forwards.

Within this spirit ship, Lin Ming sat cross-legged in his chambers, slowly fusing with Famine's soul.

Although Famine's soul had been subdued, the process of thoroughly digesting it, controlling it, and then using it with proficiency would require a certain amount of time.

The advantages that Famine's soul brought Lin Ming were immense.

First was the enormous increase to his spiritual sea.

After obtaining Famine's soul and travelling through space for two months, Lin Ming could feel that his total soul force had increased by 15% already.

As for Famine's total soul force, it hadn't reduced by much at all.

With this, Lin Ming was able to feel just how powerful Famine's soul had been.

It seemed that the demon relic the Asura Road Master had refined and left in this space of the final trial had only the tiniest amount of its essence left over, thus Lin Ming had been able to completely absorb it.

If it had been the complete corpse of an abyssal, a being close to Famine in rank, then the essence it left behind might not be fully eaten by Lin Ming even by the time he became an upper Empyrean.

However, although Famine's soul force was powerful, it gave Lin Ming many problems.

That is, the memories contained within Famine's soul.

Famine was a being that had existed for at least 5 billion years. Such a long-lived monster would surely hold an unimaginable trove of information!

These were things that possibly involved the Dark Abyss, and even secrets concerning the ancient war of races 10 billion years ago or even characters such as the Asura Road Master or Immortal Sovereign.

Naturally, all of this information was extremely valuable to Lin Ming.

But what a pity. When Lin Ming tried to sift through Famine's memories to search for this information, the result was that he felt as if his spiritual sea had been smashed by a million jin wrecking ball, nearly causing his mind to collapse.

Lin Ming endured the pain and returned to these memories.

The memories within Famine's soul were far too terrifying. They included not just what Famine had experienced in the last several billion years, but also the memories and experiences of the countless powerhouses and supreme elders that it had swallowed down all those years ago and had kept locked in its soul.

Searching for the memories he wanted in this mind-boggling amount of information was no different than searching for a needle in a haystack. During the process, even Lin Ming's spiritual sea didn't seem able to withstand it.

This allowed Lin Ming to understand the differences between humans and abyssals once more.

For an abyssal like Famine whose main body was as large as a star, the things it would withstand weren't things that other intelligent life forms could compare with. In terms of swallowing ability, Famine's talent was at a height that other intelligent life forms could not hope to compete with.

But at the same time, comprehending the Laws was a talent bestowed upon the intelligent races; it wasn't something the abyssals could compare with.

After some time, Lin Ming could only temporarily lay aside the task of indexing this treasure trove of information. He believed that as more time passed and his boundary rose, he would be able to slowly swallow Famine's memories and use them for himself.

And at the same time, Lin Ming had unknowingly begun to approach the entrance to the wild universe...

A long time ago, Lin Ming had already inquired into this entrance; it was an entrance opened up by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign using Famine's body.

This entrance had already existed for several hundred years. In other words, the saints had already entered the same wild universe that humans fled into several hundred years ago.

But now, unlike over 6000 years ago, humanity was no longer completely helpless to resist.

After such a long time, a True Divinity powerhouse had been borne unto the human race once more.

And humanity also had the Asura Decree that was able to pierce through the God Lamenting Wall. Using this Asura Decree, it would be possible to engage the saints in a prolonged war.

It was much easier for humanity to pierce through the God Lamenting Wall than it was for the saints to break open a path. All that was required was for several peak Empyreans to use up a little bit of their blood essence.

As for the saints, they had to take the convoluted route of using Famine to open up a path through the God Lamenting Wall. This period of time was more than enough for humanity to calmly evacuate.

Humanity could even send out pioneers to enter a new universe and establish a foothold. Then, they could use massive spirit ships to carry away everything and complete a total transfer to another world.

However...

This method of dragging out time could not be used infinitely. This was because out of the 33 Heavens, only 17 were wild universe. Moreover, not all of these 17 wild universes were suitable for living in. Some of these wild universes possessed endless black holes and space-time storms, and even Great World Kings would perish upon entering. It was impossible for these universes to serve as humanity's escape route.

After deducting the uninhabitable universe, that meant that there were likely only seven or eight universes that humanity could escape to. Moreover, these seven or eight universes might not all be linked together.

If humanity retreated again and again, they would soon find themselves backed into a universe that they could no longer escape from.

At that time, humanity would have to engage the saints in a frontal war!

And the result of that battle wouldn't be a toss-up at all. Humanity… would lose!

But even if they lost, humanity would go down in a brilliant and savage war. Lin Ming didn't believe that humanity would just sit around and wait for death in these nearly 7000 years. He knew that they must have cultivated some forces capable of resisting the saints.

Otherwise, Empyrean Divine Dream would have become the leader of humanity in vain.

In that last battle, humanity would show the saints the true depths of their background and the strength of their final determination!

Lin Ming believed that Empyrean Divine Dream wouldn't disappoint him. As for the role he himself would play, it would be that of an ally hidden in the shadows. Otherwise, Lin Ming knew that no matter how quickly his strength grew, it would still be impossible for him to defeat the entirety of the saints by himself.

He needed the strength of humanity to coordinate with him.

By this time, Lin Ming had already flown out of his spirit ship. With a thought, his spirit ship shrank down before being received into his inner world.

Where he stood, he was still far away from the entrance to the wild universe. But even so, Lin Ming could make out the steely guards standing near the entrance.

Situated outside the entrance to the wild universe was no longer just fleets of spirit ships, but also giant metal temples. These metal temples were the private transports of peak Empyreans. The smaller ones were several hundred miles in radius and the larger ones could compare to moons.

And between these metal temples flew numerous spirit ships and spirit beasts. Teams of martial artists patrolled the starry space, keeping a watertight guard on this area.

“How will you pass through?”

Beside Lin Ming, the Ancient Elysium Seal’s artifact spirit asked. It had transformed into the form of an old man, one with flesh and blood that seemed completely similar to a real person. After all, this Ancient Elysium Seal was personally forged by Empyrean Divine Seal as a peak spirit treasure, and not even most Empyreans would be able to understand any of its mysteries.

“We’re going to mix our way in.”

As Lin Ming spoke, he stepped toward the entrance of the wild universe!

His figure slowly faded as he hid himself in a space distortion. Not even a peak Empyrean would be able to discover his location.

But, there was something Lin Ming still had to be careful of. This was because… the saints still had three True Divinities!

True Divinities were beings that stood at the highest peak of this world. Each True Divinity, even the most ordinary of True Divinities, was immeasurably deep! If he were to pass by one on his way through the entrance, then that would mean danger.

Lin Ming held his breath and quietly waited. When he saw a squad of saint race spirit ships about to enter the entrance, his form flashed. He chose the most ordinary-looking spirit ship in this squad and then quietly flew towards it.

This spirit ship's protective barriers weren't able to stop Lin Ming at all. He dipped in like a drop of water in a lake, and in the next moment he was within the spirit ship's cabins.

At this time, a saint race guard stood in front of Lin Ming, looking at him enter with a bewildered expression on his face. The guard wanted to cry out an alarm.

But Lin Ming's figure flashed once more, and with a dull thump, this unlucky saint martial artist was punched comatose by Lin Ming's fist and thrown into his inner world.

With another thought, that unlucky saint martial artist's clothes instantly reappeared on Lin Ming. Lin Ming's appearance changed again and again until he became completely the same as that saint race martial artist.

Like this, even if a saint race True Divinity were here, they would still be unable to detect the appearance-changed Lin Ming in this boundless sea of saint race martial artists.

Within the spirit ship, Lin Ming smoothly flew towards the entrance of the wild universe.

This was a group of saint spirit ships dispatched towards the battlefield. Lim Ming swept out his divine sense and learned that the captain of this ship was a Great World King.

If so, then it could be reasoned that the one leading the spirit flagship was an Empyrean.

Only when the spirit ship flew through the giant channel carved into the God Lamenting Wall was Lin Ming able to profoundly feel just how terrifying the God Lamenting Wall was.

This God Lamenting Wall was over 10 miles thick. In the cross-section that had been swallowed up by Famine, chaotic black currents of energy flickered and tumbled. These energy flows burned like black flames, emitting a terrifying aura that could obliterate anything that neared them.

“We’ve passed through the God Lamenting Wall. Direction – Blue Horn Galaxy, full speed ahead!”

Within the spirit ship, Lin Ming heard the transmitted orders of the captain.

The spirit ship suddenly accelerated. It opened an array formation and began carrying out great void shifts.

Lin Ming calmly stayed within his cabin, looking out the porthole at the starry skies that rapidly flew past him.

For a time, 10,000 emotions filled his heart.

Wild universe, he had finally come!

Humanity… this was the race he belonged to. After almost 7000 years had passed, he was finally able to see to what degree humanity had developed.

Xiao Moxian, Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, Lin Xiaoge, Mo Eversnow, Empyrean Divine Dream, Empyrean Vast Universe, and even his own child…

He would finally be able to reunite with all these people he was familiar with.

Lin Ming was like a hunter hiding in shadows, lurking within the spirit ship and waiting for his chance to attack. He knew that the wild universe was vast and the survivors of humanity had hidden themselves all over. He wouldn’t be able to find them easily on his own. But, if he followed this saint race battleship and used their intelligence network, then the hopes of him finding out where humanity was would be far higher.

MW Chapter 2008

Chapter 2008 – Spear

…

…

…

Within the Divine Realm, Soul World, or universes that the saints resided in, one could often see giant mainlands floating in the vast nothingness of space. These mainlands weren't like bare wooden planks, but were surrounded but layers upon layers of infinite nebulous space. From the outside, they often had the shape of ellipsoid domes, like unbelievably large eggs.

As for the nebulas surrounding these central mainlands, there were innumerable planets that dwelled within, most of them even larger than the Sky Spill Planet. From this, it could be seen just how vast the area of these mainlands was.

The Divine Realm's 3000 great worlds each had at least one such central mainland. And, without a doubt, each one of these central mainlands was the liveliest place of the entire great world. For instance, Immemorial Imperial City was situated in the central mainland of the True Martial Great World.

But in the wild universe, one rarely saw such vast central mainlands. Instead, what replaced them were galaxies.

These galaxies were giant beyond compare. Their arms were rivers of stars that extended for quintillions of miles.

Within these galaxies, there were millions and billions and trillions of planets. The breadth of space they occupied was beyond description.

According to the information gathered by the saints, the galaxies in the wild universe were originally the ‘central mainlands’ of this universe. But, billions of years ago these central mainlands were destroyed by some exceedingly dreadful strength and had completely imploded. The fragments of these mainlands had drifted away, spreading out far and wide, but remained revolving and spinning around each other through the strange interaction of gravity and other mystical forces, thus forming these galaxies.

And at this time, the Blue Horn Galaxy that the saint martial artists headed towards was one such galaxy.

Within his inner world, Lin Ming had hypnotized the unlucky saint race martial artist to obtain all this information. Upon learning it, even he was shocked.

If the information gathered by the saints was true, then just who was it that destroyed the central mainlands of the wild universe?

Such a giant land that was countless trillions of times larger than Sky Spill Planet was actually destroyed like this…

This level of destruction surpassed Lin Ming's imagination. Let alone an extreme True Divinity, would even the Asura Road Master have such capabilities?

Lin Ming couldn't confirm whether or not the Asura Road Master could really achieve something like this. But, Lin Ming intuitively felt that the destruction of these mainlands involved the great calamity that occurred 10 billion years ago.

In the past, the intelligent races lived throughout the 33 universes, and each universe had its own brilliant and glorious martial arts civilization. However, after that one great war, the intelligent races only occupied 16 universes.

As for the other half of the universes, they had become wildernesses. Was the reason the population fell so drastically in the past related to the destruction of these central mainlands?

If so, if one had to compare the war between humanity and the saints to what occurred in the past, then it simply wasn't anything at all.

After all, the saints would be unable to exterminate an entire race in such a short period of time.

“The great calamity of 10 billion years past…” Lin Ming mumbled. It was only after those events that humans, saints, and spiritas had been able to develop. Just who was it that was able to serve as opponents to the all-powerful god race of 10 billion years ago?

Could it have been the abyssal demons?

And just what sort of world was the Dark Abyss that the abyssals resided in? What secrets were held within?

Lin Ming didn’t know these matters and neither did the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit. Perhaps only the two old men that guarded the final trial would know. But when Lin Ming asked them before, their reply was that he would find out the truth when he was able to control his own destiny and become a player instead of a chess piece. Otherwise, it was likely he would draw some disaster onto himself if he were to know these secrets.

By this time, Lin Ming had gone with the forces of the saints and long since departed the entrance to the wild universe. The ships leapt towards Blue Horn Galaxy, again and again.

According to gathered intelligence, humanity had an influence that was hidden within Blue Horn Galaxy.

When the wild universe's central mainlands were destroyed, it had caused terrifying space storms and eruptions that swept out for quintillions of miles, forming a chaotic space where these dangers still existed. There were distortion force fields, black holes, wormholes, and all other confusing space environments. To hide in this galaxy would be far too easy.

It was exceedingly difficult for a martial artist's sense to penetrate into these spaces. Even a True Divinity powerhouse would have to spend an inordinate amount of time and energy to search these galaxies.

And there were far, far too many galaxies within the wild universe. It was impossible for the True Divinities of the saint race to search all these galaxies one by one, thus humanity was given more time to breathe and recuperate.

When this fleet of ships reached the midpoint of the wild universe's entrance and the Blue Horn Galaxy, Lin Ming stood up and walked outside the spirit ship.

Several days ago, Lin Ming had obtained information from the mouth of that unlucky saint race martial artist. But, this information was far from satisfactory. He needed more detailed intelligence so that he could better determine the location of Xiao Moxian, Divine Dream, and the others.

As for an exact position, Lin Ming didn't have any hopes of finding out. If Xiao Moxian and Divine Dream were really discovered by the saints, then it was possible that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would personally arrive.

And to obtain this information, there was a shortcut – that was to grab hold of someone even stronger.

Outside, Lin Ming’s divine sense instantly spread outwards, covering the entire fleet.

……………

One day later, after another spatial great void shift, a skinny old man was sitting in a chair within a chamber in the fleet’s flagship, staring at a pile of scarlet flesh and blood, his eyes in a daze.

This chamber resembled the workshop of an alchemist. There was a large pill furnace, as well as tables that were covered with pill bottles and other precious medicinal herbs.

At a corner of one these tables, there was a medicinal cauldron that was still boiling and emitting green bubbles. The medicinal soup inside seemed as if it would boil over due to the heat.

But, the old man didn’t care about any of this at all. Rather, he stared at the pile of red flesh and blood in front of him. His appearance was wizened and decrepit and he was skinny like a monkey. He wore a dark green robe that fell flat all over his body, making him seem increasingly old and rickety.

“The flesh and blood of Famine; it is indeed marvelous.”

The old man spoke to himself. His filthy eyes were brilliant as they stared at the mass of flesh and blood. He couldn’t help but open a jade box, and then take out a fist-sized mass of red meat from it.

This mass of meat had been preserved using special methods in order to guarantee absolute freshness. After taking it out, it gently trembled, pulsating with blood.

This was a heart, a human heart.

The old man took out this heart that he had personally taken from a human World King and brought it towards that mass of Famine’s flesh and blood. In the blink of an eye, that unmoving mass of Famine’s flesh and blood suddenly wriggled and shot out like a shark, wrapping around this heart.

Hualala - !

Famine’s flesh and blood fiercely wriggled. A moment later, it had completely swallowed that heart, turning it into a part of itself!

The skinny old man calmly released his sense and pondered for a moment. Then, his filthy eyes flashed with a miraculous light. “To swallow the heart of a human World King and turn it all into its own nutrients, this has clearly strengthened Famine’s flesh and blood. If I were to fuse with it and then continue to swallow others, then even though my life is nearing its twilight, I would still be able to extend my lifespan for tens of millions more years, and maybe even break into the middle Empyrean realm in the future.

“Although if that happens, I will become a monster that relies on swallowing others to live. But, this isn’t important. The crucial point is that after fusing with Famine’s flesh and blood, I will become a servant absolutely loyal to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. Such a price is far too heavy… The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign granted me Famine’s flesh and blood and he wouldn’t have done so for nothing. He will surely keep something hidden within me…”

All of these thoughts instantly flashed through the skinny old man’s mind. However, the temptation of living for several tens of millions of years was something he couldn’t erase from his mind. He hesitated for a moment and then shouted to the outside, “Come in!”

A moment later, the door opened and a meek and handsome youth entered the chamber.

“Go the human prison camp and bring out six pairs of men and women. They need to be 18 years of age or younger and have decent talents.”

The skinny old man wanted to verify just how much life essence the flesh and blood of Famine would give him after swallowing someone else. He wanted to know just how much he could delay his aging.

But at this time, he felt that something was off.

“What are you still dawdling about for, how come you haven’t left…”

The skinny old man suddenly looked up, his sharp eagle-like eyes looking towards this youth. But at the moment he looked up, the youth had moved.

His speed was like ghosts and gods. A black spear appeared in his hand, thrusting straight towards the old man’s throat!

This spear was far too fast, fast to the point that even the skinny old man found it difficult to follow!

However, he was still an Empyrean powerhouse. In this critical life or death moment, terrifying black flames erupted from within his body. These were vital life flames he had cultivated within himself through his years of being an alchemist, and it also served as his best trump card.

The moment these flames appeared, the entire chamber that was boosted by array formations instantly melted to molten metal. Everything within the chamber, besides the pill furnace and Famine's flesh and blood, instantly disintegrated to ash!

The damage had been minimized in breadth because the flames were highly condensed. Otherwise, the entire spirit ship would have exploded.

But as these black flames swirled about and started to take the shape of a growling dragon, a black spear suddenly pierced through that flame dragon!

Peng!

Black flames burst apart. The skinny old man's protective astral essence exploded like glass. With utter disbelief in his eyes, the spear had pierced his heart.

With a twist of the spear, the skinny old man's body shook. All of his meridians were shattered by an overbearingly tyrannical strength!

"You..." The skinny old man vomited a mouthful of blood. But, the youth didn't say a word. Instead, the youth formed seals with his fingers, shooting out mysterious Asura Law runes that bound the skinny old man in layers upon layers, sealing away all the energy in his body!

This youth was Lin Ming.

Lin Ming looked at the skinny old man with no trace of mercy in his eyes.

The skinny old man's meridians had been wasted and his heart and been pierced. With the energy being locked within, the old man was now nothing more than a walking bag of ruined meat. But, because he was a saint Empyrean that had tempered his body, he would still be able to maintain a few years of life in this state.

Lin Ming didn't kill him because he had other uses for the old man in mind.

The skinny old man could no longer speak. His eyes were blood red, so wide that they nearly popped out of his head. He looked at Lin Ming with hatred.

But at the same time, he was also dumbfounded. Who was this youth and just why was his strength so great!? Was he the human race's Emperor Shakya?

MW Chapter 2009

Chapter 2009 – Controlling Famine's Flesh and Blood

…

…

…

In the last several thousand years, subduing this skinny old man was the first time Lin Ming had attacked a saint Empyrean.

Imperceptibly and unconsciously, his strength had already become strong to this degree.

Beneath his hands, ordinary Empyreans had no strength to resist.

But at this time, Lin Ming didn't care about the skinny old man at all. All of his attention was centered on the mass of Famine's flesh and blood.

Seeing the wriggling piece of flesh, Lin Ming frowned.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was already passing out Famine’s flesh for Empyreans to use? Then how many World Kings and Holy Lords had taken the flesh of Famine?

Through the flesh and blood of Famine, more and more powerhouses would become loyal servants of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign…

Thinking of this, Lin Ming glanced at the mass of Famine’s flesh once more. Then, a light lit up in his mind and he seemed to realize something.

His thoughts sunk into his spiritual sea. There, he contacted Famine’s soul that was within him. He reached out a hand and the flesh of Famine began to slowly wriggle about as it floated towards Lin Ming’s hands.

This wasn’t Lin Ming pulling something through space towards him. Rather, the flesh of Famine was approaching him on its own initiative.

The flesh of Famine floated in front of Lin Ming where it flew above his palm. He could feel that this flesh of Famine in his hands was unusual; in a way, it was concentrated essence similar to the ‘demon relic’. It was likely something prepared especially for Empyreans by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. Although it was a small amount, the total quantity of energy inherent within it was uncommon.

Lin Ming could clearly feel the sealed soul of Famine linking together with this mass of flesh through his spiritual strength.

The flesh of Famine possessed a terrifying ability within this world – the ability to swallow all and turn what it swallowed into its own energy to nourish itself.

Once Famine's flesh and blood fused with the mortal body of a martial artist, that fused martial artist would also gain such an ability. In other words, they would gain the ability to absorb the strength of others to become stronger.

In addition, fusing with the flesh of Famine gave a martial artist the ability to undergo another body metamorphosis.

Lin Ming had seen this type of body metamorphosis in the final trial before. Back then, Holy Lord level martial artists had activated the power of Famine's bloodline to undergo a body metamorphosis, and for a short period of time they were able to increase their strength several times over, thus completely overwhelming all other martial artists of the same level!

In the world of martial artists, in order to grow strong, climb higher, and live longer, there were innumerable people willing to commit unspeakable deeds.

For instance, this skinny old man was unable to deny himself the temptation of living for several tens of millions more years.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign knew this. He had grasped this truth, and if this were to continue then he would eventually become the absolute ruler of the world through Famine!

And only the heavens knew what benefits the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would receive after controlling everything. Would he be able to reverse the flow of energy through the flesh of Famine and instead suck out all the life essence of martial artists that were controlled by him? Would he be able to finally break past the boundaries of True Divinity and become an existence that stood equal to the Asura Road Master?

Lin Ming's complexion darkened. Although these speculations might not be accurate, he still had a deep understanding into just how dreadful the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's ambitions were. Invading humanity might just be the first move of his chess game.

In this great calamity, the Saint Sovereign and Soul Emperor were two old hidden monsters that were slowly revealing their fangs. They began to carry out their respective plans that they had plotted for hundreds of millions of years.

They both believed they were players in the great game.

And now, Lin Ming could vaguely begin to make out the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's chess game. Still, he was completely clueless as to what endgame the Soul Emperor was trying to play towards.

Every individual wanted to control the great chessboard of the world; Lin Ming was naturally included amongst these people.

He was waiting for the time that the two old men guarding the final trial had spoken of, the time when he could transform from a chess piece to a chess player.

At this time, the sound of heavy footsteps came from the other side of the door.

A group of Holy Lord realm guards rushed in. Lin Ming's brief battle against the skinny old man had caused a large commotion and even the entire chamber had been ruined.

"You… are done for… killing me and destroying this spirit ship, you will be unable to escape… the saints will chase you down to the ends of the world and turn your bones to ashes…"

The skinny old man wheezed as he tried to breathe. He could no longer open his mouth, but he was still able to pass sound transmissions to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming faintly glanced at the skinny old man. At this time, a shout cried out through the door.

"Lord Timebright, what happened!?"

Over a dozen guards rushed towards the chamber entrance. Even the inner gates of the alchemist chamber had been burned down to molten slag and the array formations had been ruined. Thus, they flushed in without any obstructions.

However, as they saw the scene within the alchemy chamber, they were stunned.

“Just what are you all panicked about!”

A hoarse grinding voice spilled out, one thick with cruelty and ferocity and even a hint of anger. A skinny old man wearing a dark green robe was clearly standing in good shape in the center of the chamber. This was Grandmaster Timebright and his complexion was particularly gloomy.

Everything around him was wreckage. One could see ruined ashes and equipment all around and the guards could even make out the pieces of destroyed medicinal concoctions.

“All of you screw off!”

The skinny old man roared out. The Holy Lord powerhouses inwardly cursed and immediately fell silent. Then, under the leadership of the guard captain, they all rapidly retreated.

“Lord Timebright is becoming increasingly eccentric…”

After leaving the area, the guards spoke to each other in quiet sound transmissions.

“His life is reaching its end so his character has started to warp. Many old people are like this. He must have been trying to refine some type of life-extending pill just then but failed in the end.”

“Stop talking, if Lord Timebright knows that we are talking about him behind his back then all of us will die!”

Several guards hushed each other. They hid away somewhere else, no longer daring to come to this chamber.

By this time, Lin Ming had laid down an array formation and blocked out the chamber. He entered the space of the Magic Cube.

In front of him was Grandmaster Timebright, on the verge of death with only a single breath left in his body.

But at this time, Lin Ming had completely transformed into an appearance similar to Grandmaster Timebright. His face, clothes, aura, everything was exactly the same.

“You… you…” The skinny old man was flustered. It was like he had bumped into a ghost. Even for him, it was impossible to tell the difference between himself and this fake copy in front of him.

Lin Ming took the flesh of Famine and slowly trod towards Timebright, one step at a time.

Then, beneath Timebright’s panic-stricken eyes, Lin Ming took the flesh of Famine and forced it through his broken chest, right next to his heart. As the flesh of Famine soaked itself in Timebright’s blood, it was like a leech that scented blood and began to drill its way into Timebright’s body.

“You… what are you doing?”

Timebright paled.

However, Famine’s flesh didn’t swallow Timebright. It seemed that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had already left behind orders in a spirit mark. When Famine’s flesh drilled into Timebright’s body, it scattered into numerous threads which drilled into every inch of him.

The flesh of Famine brought with it an overwhelming power of blood vitality. Timebright could feel his life force gradually being restored!

His strength also slowly returned!

Pa pa pa!

All around Timebright's body, the runes Lin Ming cast out also started to vanish. In this instant, Timebright regained his freedom.

Timebright was shocked. This youth was actually letting him go?

Or, could it be that this youth thought that he wasn't a match at all and could be easily pinched to death, thus he had been released from his rune prison?

In that moment, a crazy thought instantly flashed through Timebright's mind. That was, to undergo body metamorphosis and kill this youth!

He knew that after fusing with the flesh of Famine, he would gain a body metamorphosis ability. Although he had never used this ability before, he instinctively sensed how to do so after fusing with Famine's flesh.

With just a single thought, he could activate the savage power of Famine's flesh within him!

But as Timebright thought of activating the body metamorphosis he suddenly cried out in pain and agony wracked his body!

With light popping sounds, countless bloody threads drilled out from Timebright's body, as if his entire body were pierced through with steel wires. These blood red threads were the flesh of Famine that had fused into Timebright!

Timebright's body exploded into a mist of blood fog. Even his eyeballs blew open. He had died miserably.

When Famine's flesh fused into Timebright's body, Lin Ming was still able to control it. This was because when Lin Ming fused the flesh of Famine into Timebright's body, he had left behind his own spirit mark.

This spirit mark carefully avoided the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's spirit mark.

In this way, while the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's spirit mark hadn't been activated and was in a state of slumber, then Lin Ming would have complete command of Famine's flesh.

And the command that Lin Ming had given Famine's flesh just now was to scatter outwards in all directions and kill Timebright.

He was successful.

With this, Lin Ming was overjoyed!

However, if the spirit mark he left behind in Famine’s flesh simultaneously activated along with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s spirit mark, then just who would Famine’s flesh listen to?

Lin Ming didn’t know, but he was looking forwards to this moment.

Unfortunately, he couldn’t test out what would happen. He could not allow the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign to discover that there was someone who was able to control Famine’s flesh and blood just like he could.

Then, Lin Ming’s palm opened up. A spinning black cube flew out and absorbed the skinny old man’s soul source, completely wiping away the soul’s spirit mark and turning it into pure memories.

Lin Ming drew the skinny old man’s ownerless soul into his spiritual sea and began to read through the memories.

The skinny old man's cultivation methods, Laws, comprehensions, and alchemy techniques were all things that Lin Ming didn't care about at all; he tossed all of this aside. What he cared about was any information the saints had on humanity.

Humanity's distribution of forces, present situation, comparison of strength, positions of the saint True Divinities…

But just as he started reading through the information, Lin Ming felt a cold sweat drip down his back.

This was – Famine was already approaching its peak strength from the past. And after carving open a channel into another universe, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had entered a period of long seclusion where no one was allowed to disturb him. He was preparing to use Famine to swallow one of the 33 Heavenly Dao Laws. This Law was… the essence gathering system that humanity excelled in!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wished to use Famine to bring down humanity's essence gathering system!

MW *Chapter* 2010

Chapter 2010 – Blue Horn Galaxy

…

…

…

The 33 Heavenly Daos.

Within them, two of the Great Daos were suitable for humanity to train in.

First was the body transformation system's Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

Second was the essence gathering system's Nine Divine Shifts.

3.6 billion years ago, Famine swallowed humanity's Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, an event equal to severing one of humanity's arms. And this time, Famine would swallow the Nine Divine Shifts, humanity's essence gathering system.

This was the same as sentencing humanity to death!

If Famine were to swallow humanity's essence gathering system, then would the human martial artists who controlled the power of it lose their strength?

Lin Ming recalled the time he broke into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. In Bai Qi's tomb he had been blocked by a dao diagram of the Heavenly Dao. It was only after crushing through this Heavenly Dao dao diagram that he was able to step into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

Moreover, he was able to freely use the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace up to the present.

This meant that the 33 Heavenly Daos could never truly vanish. Rather, for some unknown reason, they were sealed away.

If Famine swallowed humanity's essence gathering system, then the likely result was that the human martial artists who had cultivated the essence gathering system wouldn't have any change to their original strength.

But for martial artists that had yet to reach that point, they would suffer arduous difficulties one after another during their future cultivation. When they tried to make a breakthrough, they would likely encounter the same Heavenly Dao dao diagram that had hindered Lin Ming.

At the same time, if other masters wanted to take a step further, for instance if Emperor Shakya wished to break into the realm of True Divinity or if Lin Ming wanted to break into the Empyrean realm, it might be even more difficult!

This sort of feeling was as if Famine was swallowing the causal relationship, the karmic ties that bound humanity together with the 33 Heavenly Daos. This was the same as swallowing the great destiny of an entire race.

Then, humanity would be abandoned by the Heavenly Dao!

After realizing this, Lin Ming's mind shook!

Since the beginning of time, there had been no race that could stand atop the river of history for eternity. They would decline for all sorts of reasons.

For instance, the primal god race or the celestial race, they were slowly declining due to their inability to reproduce.

Many primal god race powerhouses would have hundreds or even thousands of wives, yet, they never managed to leave behind a single descendant. Like this, they could only look helplessly on as the primal god race declined in number until they finally withered away to nothing.

If so, then was it possible that there was some abyssal similar to Famine that had swallowed or reversed the destinies of the primal god race and celestial race? So that these races which once stood at the peak of the era 10 billion years ago slowly lost their ability to reproduce until they finally perished?

Lin Ming felt more and more that this was a likely possibility.

This abyssal likely feared the primal god race and wished to erase the entire race from existence!

And humanity seemed to be stepping onto the same road that the primal god race traversed in the past. If the two roads of the essence gathering system's Nine Divine Shifts and the body transformation system's Nine Stars of the Dao Palace were to be suffocated and sealed away, then all that remained for humanity would be their prodigious ability to reproduce.

But if so, how would they be any different from common farm animals?

If the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign were to succeed then humanity would be frozen where they were, forever unable to raise their heads high. And the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would also be able to rid himself of all future troubles.

Lin Ming felt increasingly pressed for time.

However, the only thing worth rejoicing for from this matter was that swallowing the 33 Heavenly Daos would require an immense amount of Famine's strength as well as a considerable period of time. During this period of time, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would need to go into seclusion.

This was also Lin Ming's chance.

Without the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, the saints were like a tiger without its fangs.

As these thoughts flashed through Lin Ming's mind he continued to sift through Timebright's memories. Soon, he found a great deal of additional valuable information.

This was information concerning Famine.

During these past years, Famine had swallowed an uncountable amount of resources and had already grown itself its own giant avatar. This avatar was now under the control of the Good Fortune Saint Son.

Meanwhile, Famine had bred a great deal of flesh and blood essence similar to the demon relic. This flesh and blood essence was divvied off to some Holy Lords and World Kings. After swallowing it they would gain the ability to undergo a new body metamorphosis, thus establishing the Legion of Famine.

The Legion of Famine naturally followed the orders of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. But with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign in seclusion, the Legion of Famine was now under the command of the five saint generals.

Lin Ming had once heard the names of the five saint generals during the second time he joined the Asura Road's final trial. At the time, they were called the four saint marvels.

They were the Good Fortune Saint Son of the Good Fortune Saint Palace, Soaring Feather God King's disciple Fairy Blue Lotus of Soaring Feather God Mountain, as well as Astral Vault God King's two great direct disciples, Highsun and Darkmoon.

But in truth, Highsun and Darkmoon had ordinary level of talents. In the past they were able to rely on their superiority of age and rise into the Empyrean realm a step earlier, thus standing on par with the Good Fortune Saint Son and Fairy Blue Lotus.

Now, the Good Fortune Saint Son and Fairy Blue Lotus had both stepped into the Empyrean realm; Highsun and Darkmoon were placed in a precarious position.

However, before they could sit steady in their positions as third and fourth ranked amongst the five saint generals, their positions became shaky once more.

The youth that was originally ranked in fifth place was already starting to catch up; he was Imperial Prince Xishen who was in the limelight at the Good Fortune Saint Palace.

This Imperial Prince Xishen even seemed to have talent beyond that of the Good Fortune Saint Son.

His cultivation was at the half-step Empyrean realm, but in terms of combat strength, he could already defeat many saint Empyreans of the older generation.

Of the five saint generals, the Good Fortune Saint Son and Fairy Blue Lotus served as the leads, and as a group, they each neared the strongest force within the saint race. They were the great enemies of humanity, and through these years countless human martial artists had died beneath their hands.

While there was much bad news, there was also some good news worth being thankful for; that was that news concerning Xiao Moxian, Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, and the others was all completely unknown to Timebright. This also meant that they were alive but their hidden locations were still unknown.

In order to find the position of the human enclaves, the saints had already started to train their own spies.

These spies mainly came from the human captives.

Even when a race was nearing the point of extinction, not everyone would be willing to sacrifice their own life for their race. Beneath torture and the threat of death, there would always be some people willing to betray their race, signing a contract and becoming a spy.

In addition, there were also some humans that were forcefully controlled by the saints, confused with illusions, or even had slave seals planted in their bodies. These people were sent to the wild universe in droves where they were used to seek out the location of the humans.

Using this method, the saints had already completely annihilated several human bases.

This information all crossed through Lin Ming's mind.

Lin Ming now had an extremely detailed grasp of the situation between the saints and humans.

At this time, the fleet arrived at the Blue Horn Galaxy.

Lin Ming looked outside the porthole and gazed upon the giant blue galaxy that swirled before him. The stars hidden in the ethereal nebula numbered in the billions and trillions.

The Blue Horn Galaxy seemed beautiful, but hidden within it were countless chaotic spaces, black holes, wormholes, space-time storms, and all sorts other dangers.

In truth, this was the skeleton of a great world's central mainland, and Lin Ming also intended to fill this graveyard with some more skeletons.

He had already formulated a plan to fight the saints.

This plan was a bit crazy and was bound to set off a massive storm. Before the saints could react, he had to strike with all he had!

MW Chapter 2011

Chapter 2011 – Xiao Moxian of 6000 Years Later

…

…

…

Within the wild universe was a massive galaxy named the Hidden Dragon Galaxy.

The Hidden Dragon Galaxy was incredibly complex. It was filled with endless distortion force fields, space-time storms, space cracks, as well as fundamentally invisible black holes that could annihilate an Empyrean if they were to fall into one.

Two influences of human elites had gathered in the depths of this titanic galaxy.

Several hundred years ago when the saints broke open the great gates into the wild universe, humanity had already split up and hidden themselves in different locations.

With humanity's understanding of the wild universe as well as the cover of the various galaxies, they were able to skirt around the saints. But slowly, there would always be some human influences that were discovered.

This was because human influences were simply far too large. The populations of these influences often reached into the quadrillions and quintillions and the star territories they occupied had dozens and hundreds of planets.

Originally, a great number of humans had fled to the wild universe. Then, the leaders of humanity also adopted population-related policies that encouraged having more children. Like this, through several hundred generations, the population of humans in the wild universe exploded.

This massive population base also involved countless Heavenly Palaces, spirit ships, sects, as well as a gargantuan number of low level martial artists. To have this giant force engage in guerilla warfare was easier said than done.

Although those that evacuated to the wild universe were all elites of humanity, after over 6000 years of reproduction passed, there would always be some human descendants whose talent wasn't particularly high. Although they would be capable of cultivating to the Revolving Core realm or Life Destruction realm, when it came to the great clashing waves of two races warring against each other, and in this wild universe that was filled with unspeakable dangers, they weren't any different from mortals.

In truth, these types of people were the overwhelming majority of humans that lived in the wild universe.

Thus, once a planet that had all its elites withdrawn was discovered by the saints, what occurred next would be brutal plundering and massacre!

The survivors of the carnage would become slaves, slaves that were reared in pens by the saints. They would become cannon fodder used to further expand their control of the wild universe in the future.

Since the wild universe was already opened to them, the saints had decided to simply eat this piece of fat meat and make it their territory.

Like this, after another hundred million years passed, this wild universe would become the saint race’s ninth universe. If they managed to also wrest away the Asura Decree that was in the hands of Divine Dream, then they would also be able to easily open more paths into new universes and establish routes and bases in those new lands. The saints would be able to lay down seeds throughout the 33 Heavens until they finally became the number one race in existence!

……

There was a celestial palace of white jade floating amidst an asteroid belt within the Hidden Dragon Galaxy. A woman in black war armor stared out a window of this celestial palace, looking at a peaceful blue planet deep in the starry space.

She gently sighed. Her ink black hair flowed down her back like a waterfall, brushing against her icy cold armor.

She gently touched the window. From the surface of the crystalline window glass, her vague figure was reflected back. Although she was beautiful to behold, she seemed thin and haggard.

She was Lin Ming’s wife – Xiao Moxian.

And as she looked out the window and gazed upon that deep blue planet far off in space, what she was looking at was New Ming Planet, a planet filled with her subjects.

Xiao Moxian now had subjects of her own…

900 years ago, Xiao Moxian broke into the Empyrean realm. From the human younger generation, besides Frost Dream, she was the first one to step into the Empyrean realm.

To become an Empyrean meant that Xiao Moxian could no longer follow behind the elders and be a youth that was protected. Now, she shouldered the heavy mantle of duty and was responsible for her own vital tasks.

In the wild universe, every enclave of humanity needed an Empyrean to assume personal command. This was because wherever humans had gathered there was also the chance that an ancient Empyrean level vicious beast would come to raze and devour the cities. Without an Empyrean standing on guard the consequences would be unimaginable.

The day Xiao Moxian broke into the Empyrean realm she had accepted the mission of protecting a land that had been developed by humanity. At the same time, she also gained her own subjects.

Because Xiao Moxian hadn't been an Empyrean for too long, her territory consisted of a mere single planet – New Ming Planet.

This planet was named by Xiao Moxian.

Everyone who first gathered at New Ming Planet had voluntarily come from other human enclaves. They were the first group of residents who decided to inhabit this wasteland and develop the planet.

They sowed the seeds of humanity. Through their hard work and constant construction, New Ming Planet slowly became more and more prosperous.

Xiao Moxian knew the reason these people followed her and came here was because of their trust in her.

So, she also needed to be responsible for her own subjects!

She told herself she would use her two hands to protect her people and allow them to enjoy good and happy lives. Husbands and wives would give birth to many children, increasing the population with every generation.

Until slowly, the surrounding star territory also started to become developed and the inhabited lands became increasingly large, allowing humanity to bloom all throughout the wild universe.

However… a mere 200 years after New Ming Planet was established, the saints had come!

A heavy and gloomy pressure suddenly pushed down on Xiao Moxian’s delicate shoulders.

As the overlord of this planet she had to protect her subjects from the chaos of war. They had come here because they had trusted her! How could she toss them away and flee by herself?

The war between the humans of the wild universe and the saints had already gone on for hundreds of years. Because the wild universe was far too vast and the inner workings of the galaxies were too complex and dangerous, as well the fact that some humans had already moved into another wild universe using the Asura Decree, the battlefield was just far too wide a stage. Searching for anyone was extremely burdensome, thus the advance of the saints was forced to slow down precipitously.

But no matter how slow the saints were, they still only took several hundred years to find this place!

The Hidden Dragon Galaxy now faced its own great war!

Xiao Moxian and the lives of the hundreds of billions of people that followed her and were shouldered by her, now stood against the army of the saints.

Currently, Xiao Moxian’s only advantage was that New Ming Planet was hidden extremely well and was covered in violent space flows and concealing array formations. It would be difficult for the legions of the saints to find this place.

However, no matter how well-hidden this planet, all mysteries were eventually grinded away by the saints through the use of time. Ten years ago, a saint race legion had sailed into a star domain near New Ming Planet.

Xiao Moxian made a decisive choice. She took the initiative to lead the disciples of her Demon Fairy Celestial Palace to a place far away from New Ming Planet. Then, she purposefully revealed some flaws to the armies of the saints, allowing them to discover her before she escaped and led them away.

Like this, Xiao Moxian was able to forcefully lead away the legions of the saints that had arrived at her doorstep.

The saint legions that chased after Xiao Moxian weren't easy to deal with. They had two middle Empyreans in their ranks and they were also skilled in tracking techniques. Xiao Moxian with her vast number of disciples as well as her fleet of spirit ships was ultimately unable to rid herself of this tracking. So, after bringing the fleet of the saints to a desolate part of space that was quintillions of miles away and leaving the Hidden Dragon Galaxy, her forces suddenly turned around and engaged the saints in a life or death battle!

This battle had been cruel and tragic. The two saint race Empyreans were completely killed off and their fleets were almost completely annihilated, but her Demon Fairy Celestial Palace also paid a deep price.

Those brave warriors of Demon Fairy Celestial Palace who died in that battle were Xiao Moxian's most loyal followers who had served her before New Ming Planet was even established...

However, they died in the battlefield of the starry skies, their ashes forever interred in space...

Regarding this, Xiao Moxian grieved in her sorrow. Without experiencing war it was impossible to understand the feeling of only being able to stare helplessly on as one's comrades died all around them.

But, even though Xiao Moxian's heart was pained she quickly stood up and brushed herself off. This was because she knew that her followers all hoped to see a stronger her. So, she would carry their dying wishes upon her shoulders and continue leading the battle to protect New Ming Planet.

However, good fortune never came in pairs and misfortune never came alone. After these saint legions were destroyed by Xiao Moxian, an even stronger enemy approached.

The one to come this time was… the Good Fortune Saint Son and the Legion of Famine!

During her battle with the two middle Empyreans, Xiao Moxian had already disguised her appearance and she had even killed off her two opponents. Finally, she cleaned out the battlefield. Xiao Moxian thought that her own identity hadn't been leaked, but the arrival of the Good Fortune Saint Son meant that her whereabouts had likely been made known to him.

Some matters were impossible to explain. Xiao Moxian didn't know how the Good Fortune Saint Son had discovered her. Perhaps it was his intuition, perhaps he had found some clues, or perhaps his arrival was simply a coincidence.

But in short, what Xiao Moxian now had to face was the head of the saint race's five saint generals, the Good Fortune Saint Son, as well as the terrifying Legion of Famine!

Xiao Moxian originally didn't fear the Good Fortune Saint Son at all. But presently, the Good Fortune Saint Son was in control of Famine's avatar!

Famine's true form was at the True Divinity rank, and even at the top of the True Divinity rank. As for Famine's avatar, although it was weaker than its main body, it still had war strength close to that of a middle True Divinity.

In the hands of the Good Fortune Saint Son, the power that Famine's avatar could display was greatly limited. Still, it must possess a strength similar to the weakest of True Divinities.

And a True Divinity was in the end a True Divinity. When facing Empyreans, they were absolutely invincible!

In addition, the Legion of Famine led by the Good Fortune Saint Son was undoubtedly the most elite of elite forces within the saint race army!

The officers of the Legion of Famine were often World Kings and Great World Kings that had fused with the flesh and blood of Famine.

In particular, those Great World Kings. After undergoing their Famine-induced body metamorphosis, they would be able to fully contend with the weakest of Empyreans!

Compared to the Legion of Famine, Xiao Moxian's Demon Fairy Celestial Palace wasn't at the same level at all. Once both forces met, the battle would be no different from an egg trying to crack open a rock; there were no mysteries as to what would happen at all!

And even with all this, Xiao Moxian didn't request any help from humanity's headquarters.

None of the human Empyreans were a match against the Good Fortune Saint Son; not even Emperor Shakya could deal with Famine's avatar.

The only person who could was Divine Dream. However, Divine Dream had to face the diversion of the two other True Divinities of the saint race – Soaring Feather God King and Astral Vault God King. As one person facing two, she was already burdened enough in dealing with them.

So Xiao Moxian could only rely on herself.

She knew that a grievance existed between her and the Good Fortune Saint Son. The Monster Emperor's great longevity banquet from over 6000 years ago was a thorn that forever pierced him. When given the chance to pull out this thorn, how could the Good Fortune Saint Son give up such an opportunity?

Xiao Moxian's eyes looked out the porthole. It was like she could already see the evil and cruel sneer that hung permanently across the Good Fortune Saint Son's face.

Xiao Moxian clenched her teeth and subconsciously traced her chest.

In her clothes was an ancient necklace, one that had long since lost its luster. This was a gift Lin Ming had given her – the Thousand Mile Heartlink.

MW *Chapter* 2012

Chapter 2012 – The Burden of a Leader

…

…

…

Through over 6000 years, Xiao Moxian had already forgotten how many times she had touched the Thousand Mile Heartlink or had tried to use it to contact Lin Ming.

And now, the Thousand mile Heartlink's sealed divine runic symbol was near the point of collapse and yet there still wasn't any news of Lin Ming.

After gently stroking this necklace that had lost its luster, Xiao Moxian's thoughts and mood began to waver up and down. If she were to use this necklace but a single time more, than after a short period of use the divine runic symbol sealed away in the necklace would shatter into nothing. As for this divine runic symbol, besides Lin Ming there likely wasn't anyone in the 33 Heavens capable of drawing it up again…

After countless attempts failed, all she had was a single chance. With just a single chance, how could she possibly reach him…?

Xiao Moxian let out a deep sigh. At this time, she heard a sound come from outside the room, followed by fast and chaotic footsteps.

A group of people had arrived. Xiao Moxian put away her necklace and hid away the sorrow that etched her face.

A group of 7-8 people had come. Each one of them was the backbone of Demon Fairy Celestial Palace. The black-clothed man standing at their head was Xiao Moxian’s son – Lin Huang.

Ever since New Ming Planet stood at peak of the perilous storm, Lin Huang had ended his adventure to temper himself and had returned to Xiao Moxian’s side. This was the only thing that made Xiao Moxian feel a bit more at east.

“Your child greets mother!” A war armored Lin Huang quickly strode into the room and bowed. The others following behind him, the core of Demon Fairy Celestial Palace, also bowed in tandem.

“What is the matter?” Xiao Moxian’s heart quickened as she saw the expressions on Lin Huang’s face and the other officer’s faces. She knew that this was unlikely to be anything good.

In this war against the saints, the commanders of humanity each had to have nerves of steel.

Lin Huang stood up and said, “Our allies in the Hidden Dragon galaxy – the forces of Empyrean Transience and Dragon Fang have been locked down by the Good Fortune Saint Son into a star territory that is less than a trillion miles in width. The saint legions have already begun their search. It won’t be long before our allies are discovered by the saints.”

Lin Huang’s voice was grim. Dragon Fang had yet to break into the Empyrean realm, and in truth, even if he did he still wouldn’t be a match for the Good Fortune Saint Son. As for Empyrean Transience, he was merely a middle human Empyrean, not a match for the Good Fortune Saint Son at all.

“What?”

Xiao Moxian directly stood up, her heart sinking into her stomach.

The fact was that Dragon Fang and Empyrean Transience had been dragged into this disaster by her. Originally, the Good Fortune Saint Son didn’t know that there were other human influences in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy besides Xiao Moxian’s. In order to coordinate and help shield Demon Fairy Celestial Palace, Dragon Fang and Empyrean Transience had been slowly discovered by the Good Fortune Saint Son.

Empyrean Transience's influence was far larger than a single New Ming Planet. The Good Fortune Saint Son had yet to locate New Ming Planet but was now already beginning to hone in on Empyrean Transience's location.

This was incredibly bad news, so bad that it couldn't be any worse.

At this time, a core figure of Demon Fairy Celestial Palace stepped forwards. He asked Xiao Moxian, "Palace Master, Dragon Fang and Empyrean Transience's forces cannot last much longer. Do we set out to save them? Or not save them?

This officer of Demon Fairy Celestial Palace asked. This was also the main reason why Lin Huang and the others had rapidly made their way here to ask Xiao Moxian for her decision.

To not save them was to violate the tenets of righteousness.

But, to save them meant that they would have to face an unbelievably terrifying enemy. This would be the same as jumping into the fiery pit. The most likely result was that they would all be annihilated!

This was a difficult choice!

And the only who could decide this was Xiao Moxian.

Without being a leader one could never understand or feel the pressure of a leader. It was only when Xiao Moxian became a leader did she profoundly realize just what it was like.

In the battlefield, any decision made by the leader concerned the lives of trillions and quadrillions of people!

And in these turbulent times, she was pillar of everyone’s courage, she was their hope. No matter how confused or shocked or overwhelmed or helpless she was, she had to stand tall and firm, calmly making her decision.

Perhaps, in the thousands and millions of roads that stretched out before her, there might be only a single road to survival. As for her, through her tense nervousness and desperation, she had to seek it out no matter what!

Whether or not she could do it, she had to do it!

………..

“Mojin greets Lord Timebright.”

In front of Lin Ming stood a saint race World King. This World King was the general of the third saint legion in the Blue Horn Galaxy.

“Have you brought the information?”

Lin Ming dragged out his words and simulated a hoarse and gravelly voice. Currently, he had the appearance of a skinny old man, one that was completely similar to the dead Empyrean Timebright. In addition, he had already read through Timebright’s memories and learned everything he needed for his disguise. Even if Timebright’s own son came here they still wouldn’t be able to tell the difference.

“I have brought the requested information. Lord Timebright, please take a look.”

The saint World King passed several jade slips to Lin Ming. Lin Ming swept through them with his divine sense. The information contained inside included the rough distribution of the saint race armies, the map of the wild universe and places which had been explored, as well as some galaxies which might hold human influences.

Lin Ming used a mere 10 breaths of time to read through these materials. He frowned. These materials were far from complete. For instance, the distribution map of the saint race armies only sketchily indicated star territories. Those star territories were far too vast; wanting to find any information there would be difficult.

Moreover, there was only a tiny amount of information regard the Legion of Famine.

Lin Ming believed that the saints had even more detailed information but they just didn't give it to him.

"Is there nothing with more detail?"

Lin Ming tossed the jade slips at the saint World King. The saint World King awkwardly spoke, "Lord Timebright, without sufficient authority it is impossible to access more information. Moreover…Lord Timebright should only need information related to the Blue Horn Galaxy, so what is the reason for needing other information?

As the saint World King spoke, he looked at Lin Ming with some doubt in his eyes. If Lin Ming's actions were done by anyone else, they would have long since aroused the wariness of other saint race officers. But because Lin Ming's identity could not seem any more real and he also knew all the secret codes of the army and also had the status badge to prove his identity, he could not be doubted. No one dared to suspect that a saint Empyrean could be a traitor to the saint race.

"If Lord Timebright really requires this information, then some of the information you seek is in the hands of Empyrean Thundercloud. You may make a request to him. Lord Timebright will be spending some time in the Blue Horn Galaxy, so you can also pay a visit to Empyrean Thundercloud…"

The saint World King carefully said. Empyrean Thundercloud was an upper Empyrean as well as the high commander of the saint race forces in the Blue Horn Galaxy. The reason

Empyrean Timebright came to the Blue Horn Galaxy was to coordinate with Empyrean Thundercloud. If so, then the first person Lin Ming visited after reaching the Blue Horn Galaxy should ben Empyrean Thundercloud. However, because the Timebright that he masqueraded as originally had a strange and eccentric personality, not paying a visit wasn't anything out of the ordinary at all.

Hearing the saint World King say such words, Lin Ming's lips lifted in a smile. "I understand."

Lin Ming walked directly towards Empyrean Thundercloud's Heavenly Palace.

……………

In a purple grand hall, the high level figures of the Blue Horn Galaxy's saint legions were currently carrying out a military conference.

"…We have already spent over 20 years in this damned place and used so many people, but all we found in the Blue Horn Galaxy so far has been three of the human planets. Moreover, they are nearly all commoners. This is no different from finding several trillion ants. Even using them as fertilizer isn't enough to fill the gap between my teeth…"

A Great World King with vaguely blood red eyes and thick blue veins on his neck grimly said. He came from the Legion of Famine and was the commander of the Legion of Famine forces in the Blue Horn Galaxy.

“Don’t worry. This sort of comprehensive search might seem a little stupid but it’s the best method possible. As long as we stick to this plan then we’ll be able to find those mice hiding in their holes. At that time, I’ll make sure I entertain them well and have them all regret ever coming to this world.”

A pallid man that looked like a viper quietly said. As for Empyrean Thundercloud who sat in the head seat, he didn’t say a single word throughout but simply let the subordinates discuss amongst themselves.

At this time his thoughts stirred and he looked towards the entrance.

“Lord Timebright, a conference is underway right now. Would you like to wait?”

Just as a guard was speaking, the door to the hall was pushed open and an old man as skinny as firewood walked in.

Empyrean Thundercloud’s complexion darkened as he saw Timebright burst in; he never had any favorable impression towards this lower Empyrean that had been transferred over here.

Just as he was about to say something to establish his position, he suddenly saw Timebright’s lips curve up in a smile.

Then, Timebright thrust out a hand. In the center of his palm spun a black cube. This black cube seemed to contain some demonic charm, capable of drawing one's soul into it.

Empyrean Thundercloud was immediately on guard. "What are doing?"

Shua!

A boundless and potent force field came shrouding down. Everything with a thousand feet was enveloped in this force field.

And this force field was a strength that Empyrean Thundercloud had never experienced before. But mixed among it was a Law that he recognized.

That is, the Grandmist Laws!

"You...you aren't Timebright!"

Empyrean Thundercloud was enraged.

But at this moment, Lin Ming had already stepped forwards. He shot out the Magic Cube from his hand and a terrifying soul vortex swallowed all!

Empyrean Thundercloud’s eyes turned blood red. His body emitted loud crackling noises as he instantly activated the power of his bloodline.

And beside him, the two officers from the Legion of Famine also roared. Wriggling red tentacles dripping with blood rose up from their bodies; they had summoned the power of Famine within their bodies without any hesitation. As Great World Kings facing an Empyrean, their only chose was to undergo body metamorphosis and become an abyssal monster, otherwise they simply wouldn’t have any strength to resist!

However, they never imagined that just as they activated their body metamorphosis, their bodies would seem to be caught in a mire of chaos, completely unable to move. The blood red tentacles that stretched out behind were like snakes caught in the charm of a flute, completely escaping their control.

In a flash, those tentacles that should have plunged towards Lin Ming suddenly turned around and pieced towards their necks!

That change caused them to be scared out of their minds. They wanted to resist, but to their horror they discovered that their bodies were no longer under their control and they were rooted in place.

Puff! Puff!

The tentacles of Famine's flesh pierced through the necks of those two Legion of Famine officers. Then, their heads flew off with everlasting regret in their eyes.

This ability to control the Legion of Famine had been tested by Lin Ming on Timebright before. Now, he could do so with skillful ease.

At the same time, Empyrean Thundercloud was also surrounded by the massive soul storm set off by the Magic Cube. No matter how much he struggled he couldn't change his fate.

Peng!

Blood gushed out from Empyrean Thundercloud's head and his body slumped to the floor...

MW Chapter 2013

Chapter 2013 – The Overture of War

…

…

…

Hidden Dragon Galaxy –

In an opulent grand hall, the Good Fortune Saint Son sat upon a throne. He looked at a battle array disc projection that showed a vast star map.

He wore golden war armor, and a thick cloak fell down his back and pooled onto the floor. One hand held a cup of precious wine as he sipped and swished it. Periodically, he would point at a position on the map and a beautiful maid would then take up a gem and mark the spot that he referred to.

The gem itself had a variation of force field around it that allowed it to float in the air.

Slowly, half the star map was half filled with gems.

The Good Fortune Saint Son looked at this map and grinned.

“Ji Xian’er, I want to see just how you’ll escape from my grasp this time!”

The most suspicious regions of the Hidden Dragon Galaxy already had detection force fields laid down. If any humans were to traverse across these detection force fields then the saints would discover their presence and chase after them like a hunter chasing down a rabbit.

Now, what the saints had to do was to continue searching and narrow the possibly inhabited areas.

With the support of absolute strength, the feeling of encircling Xiao Moxian and hunting her down caused the Good Fortune Saint Son to be filled with all sorts of pleasant thoughts.

“Xiao Moxian, there will be a day when you become mine!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son diabolically grinned as he subconsciously grasped with his hands, as if he could squeeze Xiao Moxian between his fingers.

The truth was that after living for such a long time, the Good Fortune Saint Son had already enjoyed all the physical pleasures that could be offered in this world. He had once craved peerless women and had even conquered several of them, but now all these desires had dimmed away.

The only thing that that could satisfy him now was his deep ambition to become the singular ruler of the 33 Heavens.

But Xiao Moxian was different. Xiao Moxian was his shame, a stain that would eternally mark his heart, the subject of which he was continuously ridiculed about amongst the saints.

At his engagement party he had been made a cuckold; this already challenged the limits of a man. But that wasn't even the end. What was worse was that as he tried to recover his face, he had then been brutally beaten by a man that was far younger than he was.

Even if all the shames and dishonor that the Good Fortune Saint Son had experienced in his life were to be added together, it still wouldn't compare to that day at the Monster Emperor's grand longevity feast.

As the Good Fortune Saint Son thought of Lin Ming, he felt his teeth itch.

The Good Fortune Saint Son was much stronger than he had been in the past and was considered invincible amongst Empyreans. He truly hoped that Lin Ming was still alive so he could cruelly stomp Lin Ming beneath his feet.

But what a pity, Lin Ming was already dead. Since he couldn't recover his honor by defeating Lin Ming then he would do the next best thing and wrest away Xiao Moxian, the woman that Lin Ming loved. He would turn Xiao Moxian into his whore and vent all his frustrations upon her body, devastating and humiliating her so that he could resolve the hatred in his heart.

To catch Xiao Moxian was the same as pulling out the thorn in his heart. With this, his mental state would reach perfection and he would be able to attack the realm of True Divinity.

As the Good Fortune Saint Son was savoring his wine with a smug smile, a group of people suddenly rushed in. They fell to their knees in a fluster, saying, "Your Highness Saint Son, a problem has occurred."

"Stop your panicking!" The Good Fortune Saint Son frowned as his happy mood was disturbed. With the saints triumphantly pushing forwards, these so-called problems were usually issues with the saint armies in chasing down others or perhaps even some prisoner camps had been captured. "What is it?"

The several saint disciples glanced at each other. Then, one braced himself and said, “The Blue Horn Galaxy has been attacked by some unknown force and the losses are serious. Nearly all of our people at the Holy Lord realm and above have been annihilated!”

Crack!

The Good Fortune Saint Son’s wine cup burst apart. The bright red juice dyed the floor scarlet, as if flesh and blood were spilling out. “What did you say!?”

The Good Fortune Saint Son’s eyes flashed with disbelief.

Ever since the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had gone into seclusion to use Famine to swallow the Nine Divine Shifts Heavenly Dao, a part of the command of the saint armies had been passed to him. He was well aware of the forces that had been dispatched to the Blue Horn Galaxy. There was an upper Empyrean personally attending that area and a lower Empyrean should have also caught up by now too.

In addition, there were three Great World Kings that had fused with Famine’s flesh and blood. At a critical moment, if they were to undergo body metamorphosis then they absolutely should be able to display combat strength equal to an Empyrean.

In other words, that was the same as five Empyreans being stationed at Blue Horn Galaxy!

In addition to that, there were also many Holy Lords and World Kings, and even a hundred some members of the Legion of Famine whose lowest cultivation was at the peak Holy Lord realm.

This was a terrifying force. If any of the several strongest human influences in the wild universe were to attack such a force, they would be hard-pressed to win, much less totally annihilate their enemies!

Moreover, the Good Fortune Saint Son was well aware of the approximate positions of the influences that posed any threat at all, such as Mount Potala, the primal god race and the other remnant races, Skyrend God Palace, and other such influences that had peak Empyreans leading them. He didn't believe that with the saint race's seven Heavens and their war strength that was over ten times greater than humanity's, there would be a peak Empyrean influence that could quietly arrive at the Blue Horn Galaxy and deliver such a crippling blow to them.

This left the Good Fortune Saint Son feeling frustrated. Did the human race produce some unknown peak Empyrean in these past years?

Peak Empyreans were not cabbages that could be found anywhere. If he didn't include the celestial race's Battle Sovereign and the primal god race's Diwuhen, then he could count the number of human peak Empyreans with his hands. As for Xiao Moxian, even though she had broken into the Empyrean realm she still might not have the combat strength of a peak Empyrean.

“How many people do our enemies have and what cultivation methods do they use? Do we have any samples from the battlefield?” The Good Fortune Saint Son asked these three questions, but the replies he received left him even more enraged.

“We don’t know their exact numbers or what cultivation methods they use. Those that have seen the true appearance of these killers have… have almost all been killed. But, some disciples that survived on the edges were able to transmit some information to us. At the time, a giant black vortex appeared in the skies as if a black hole had appeared. As for the enemies… there… there should be… possibly four… four people…”

“What? There are four people?”

The Good Fortune Saint Son grabbed the collar of this subordinate. If there were truly four peerless masters, then killing Empyrean Thundercloud and Empyrean Timebright wouldn’t be difficult at all. But to annihilate the entire army stationed at Blue Horn Galaxy, that was just too terrifying.

This proved that this enemy force had reached almost unattainable heights in the art of array formations and force fields.

Or, it could be that the strength of these four people had reached… the peak Empyrean realm?

Thinking of this latter possibility, the Good Fortune Saint Son's complexion became increasingly grim. When did humanity suddenly have four peak Empyreans pop out from amongst their ranks? To face an unknown enemy and have no information on them was the most terrifying aspect of all.

As for the identity of these four people, the Good Fortune Saint Son even thought of the spiritas. Could the spiritas be playing tricks in the back, trying to secretly subvert them?

The spiritas were an opponent that the Good Fortune Saint Son continued to dread. Let alone the Good Fortune Saint Son, even the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign feared that old freak, the Soul Emperor. He always believed that in the future, the most terrifying enemy the saints would have to face would be the spiritas.

"It shouldn't be. If the spiritas were going to do something they would have started long ago. Over 6000 years ago in the great war between us and humanity, if they wanted to interfere then we would never have been able to capture the Divine Realm. At that time, his Majesty the Sovereign Ancestor paid a price to trade for the Divine Realm. Now that we have already seized the Divine Realm, just what meaning is there for the spiritas to extinguish some middling Empyrean force?"

The Good Fortune Saint Son immediately shot down this idea. Although he didn't know what the spiritas were up to these past years, he still believed that with the spiritas remaining quiet for such a long time, once they erupted then the wild storms would stir up the world; it might even involve a heaven-shaking plot. It was impossible for the spiritas to send out forces to deal with some minor nobodies – and in comparison to the entire spiritas race, Empyrean Thundercloud and Empyrean Timebright were truly only nobodies.

“Your Highness Saint Son, the people in charge of the star territories neighboring the Blue Horn Galaxy have already transmitted messages to us. They would like to inquire as to how you wish to proceed. Would you desire that they assist in tracking down the background of this unknown force?”

The Good Fortune Saint Son pondered for a moment. “Have them stand by and wait for orders. If this unknown force can quietly destroy the entire army at the Blue Horn Galaxy then catching them might not be possible. Issue orders to hasten the search through the Hidden Dragon Galaxy. Once we solve our problems there then I will personally go and meet this so-called mysterious enemy. Humph!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son’s eyes shimmered. Xiao Moxian was reaching a dead end and he was closing in on her. With her so close, he definitely wouldn’t give up his search in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy. Otherwise, Xiao Moxian just might fly past his lips. If he wished to find her again in the massive wild universe, then that wouldn’t be an easy task at all.

However, the Good Fortune Saint Son never imagined that his nightmare was only just beginning…

MW Chapter 2014A

Chapter 2014A – Fire God Galaxy

…

…

…

Lin Ming rapidly traveled through the starry skies. He had already obtained what he wanted from the dead Empyrean Thundercloud – extremely detailed information that involved the distribution of the saint race's armies.

A great deal of this information wasn't even recorded in jade slips; much of it was within Empyrean Thundercloud's mind and it was all thanks to the Magic Cube that Lin Ming easily obtained this.

Currently, it could be said that Lin Ming had a comprehensive understanding of the war between the saints and the humans in the wild universe.

Now, he was headed towards a star territory called the Fire God Galaxy. There was another saint influence there that he planned to utterly exterminate.

He would strike at the rear of the saints and begin a horrifying storm of blood and slaughter. With a single breath he would overturn the heavens and earth and make it so that the five saint generals had no choice but to turn their attention towards him.

Lin Ming knew that because the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was controlling Famine to swallow the Heavenly Dao Laws, he simply wasn't able to extricate himself from that process.

As for Soaring Feather God King and Astral Vault God King, they were battling against Empyrean Divine Dream in some far off place and similarly couldn't withdraw.

In truth, Lin Ming even suspected that Empyrean Divine Dream might not be a match for these two God Kings. After all, those that could reach the heights of a True Divinity were all incredibly talented, at least at the level of Emperor Shakya. None of them were weak. And though Divine Dream dual cultivated essence and divine, perhaps giving her a tad more strength, she still couldn't face two alone.

Lin Ming speculated that Soaring Feather God King and Astral Vault God King simply weren't willing to work themselves to death for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. Although they were meddling in the war of saints and humanity because of some unknown reasons, they still wouldn't take this time to withdraw from their battle against Divine Dream and chase after some unknown enemy.

True Divinities were all proud and arrogant individuals. An enemy that suddenly emerged from nowhere wouldn’t be enough to arouse their interest.

Then, if one ignored these three True Divinities, the one most likely to strike at him would be the overly confident Good Fortune Saint Son.

Lin Ming understood the Good Fortune Saint Son. They had been opponents for many years and he had a good idea of the Good Fortune Saint Son’s strengths and weaknesses.

He could use the Good Fortune Saint Son’s own cocky confidence to draw him here. Once that occurred, he could display his plan and have his strength rise in a short period of time!

“Fire God Galaxy… hah!”

Lin Ming looked at a great dark vortex-shaped galaxy that was deep in the distance. A murderous light flashed in his eyes. In the next moment he tore through the void and disappeared.

Lin Ming quickly soared through the skies and teleported forwards. He remembered the detailed maps of the saint race influences and hurtled straight forwards like a speeding dragon!

Several days later, Lin Ming finally arrived at his destination. From far away, he could see a group of gathered planets. He knew that these planets were human living areas that had been captured by the saints. Over 10 quadrillion humans lived here.

In the words of the saints, this was nothing but a giant naturally formed jail. This was a human camp, the ‘slave concentration camps’.

After entering the wild universe, Lin Ming had heard again and again of the human captives and slaves. But, he had never seen the conditions in which they lived.

The saint race influences were stationed near these planets. Above every planet floated 12 saint race Holy Palaces. These Holy Palaces gathered together and formed a force field that wrapped around the entire planet.

Such a force field was not something that the human captives living on these planets could ever hope to break.

Rather, it was more accurate to say that these weren’t war captives at all, but commoners.

This galaxy was named Fire God Galaxy. The human Heavenly Palaces in this galaxy had already fallen in the war against the saints. Now, all that was left over were some non-combatants, none of which reached the Divine Transformation realm.

……….

The truth was that Fire God Galaxy had already been held by the saints for over 100 years.

To a martial arts master, this hundred plus years might merely be a bout of meditation or a period of seclusion. But to the average person, this was a whole lifetime…

The human commoners left behind in the Fire God Galaxy didn't have high degrees of talent to begin with. And beneath the iron rule of the saints, they had no means to practice martial arts. This caused their overall strength to rapidly plummet.

And over 50 years ago, a group of saint race pioneers had arrived at Fire God Galaxy.

These people came from universes native to the saints. To be blunt, they were a ragged pack of people who didn't manage to mix well in the saint race. Many of them were bandits, vagabonds, thieves, and other such types. Because it was difficult for them to survive in Saint Convocation Heaven, they voluntarily came to the human race's wild universe to develop this 'virgin land'.

If one was an individual who lived a good life of wealth and honor amongst the saints already, then who would want to come to such a seemingly barren and remote land?

And the so-called ‘developing the virgin soil’ that the saint pioneers did was actually to rob, kill, and plunder throughout the Fire God Galaxy. The resources that had already been established here, such as medicinal fields, mines, spiritual lands, all of these were taken for themselves.

The saint race armies tacitly consented to all of this. Their goals in invading the wild universe were already obvious.

First was to further expand the territory of the saints, develop more resources, and if possible, seize the Asura Decree that could pierce through the barriers of the God Lamenting Wall so that they could help supply the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign with what he needed to restore Famine to its past peak state.

Second was to cut off the inheritance of humanity to sever all troubles by the roots, thoroughly crushing all future hopes and chances that the humans had to counterattack in the future!

MW Chapter 2014B

Chapter 2014B – Black Dragon Roars to the Moon

…

…

…

Song Yan was an average human of the Fire God Galaxy. He was already 200 years old and had just barely broken through to the Xiantian realm. Amongst the masses, he was considered standard for commoners.

When he was born, the war between the saints and humans within the wild universe had already begun.

And when he came of age, the flames of war had reached his home and the Fire God Galaxy fell to its enemies. Thus, from that day forth, he along with his 10 quadrillion plus human compatriots were all reduced to slaves.

When Song Yan was a child, he had read through a history book and learned about the history of his fellow humans from 6500 years past. Because the Divine Realm was conquered, humanity was in dire circumstances.

But this time of over 6000 years ago was simply too distant a period for Song Yan. As for him, he never thought that the destiny and life of slavery would arrive so quickly and descend upon him.

This was a horrifying nightmare!

Song Yan had always held his own dreams and desires. He wanted to become a warrior that fought for the human race. He never hoped to become the most dazzling talent in the world that was respected by all, but rather, becoming the most ordinary and common warrior in Fire God Heavenly Palace would have been more than enough.

However, the most basic qualification to become a warrior of Fire God Heavenly Palace was to step into the Divine Transformation realm before a thousand years of age.

To Song Yan, this was far too difficult.

He wasn’t born with much talent and destiny had never given him many lucky chances.

In the end, these dreams could only remain dreams.

He forced himself awake and soberly accepted the reality set in front of him. When he was at the peak Houtian realm, he married a woman. She was a homely woman with ordinary talent, but he loved her deeply with all his heart. In return, she gave him three cute little children, one son and two daughters.

However, these three children were born into a never-ending nightmare, one filled with cruel and avaricious demons that would swallow a person whole and even eat the bones.

Murder, robbery, rape, young women were captured and used as living furnaces and sold as slaves, and young boys were turned into blood sacrifices…

Song Yan didn’t know when these dreadful days would end. The war between humans and saints would continue for several thousand years, but, could he live on for several thousand years?

His children, grandchildren, and even his great grandchildren, would they even be able to live through those thousands of years?

The premise of all this was that… he could have children.

He was an ant, one that faced an ice age that would continue for an unknown period of years. He quietly stood in an empty field of ice, waiting for his inevitable death to take him.

"Wah – !"

A loud cry spread through the air.

His daughter was crying.

Song Yan's heart ached. He turned to see his 12 year old son cradling his three year old daughter.

His daughter, she was hungry.

Song Yan had just entered the Xiantian realm. In this wild universe that was filled with chaotic origin energy, although he hadn't managed to completely sever hunger and thirst, he still only required a minimal amount of rations every month. He only needed to drink water and absorb heaven and earth origin energy to sate his hunger pangs.

But his son, his daughters, his wife, they were different.

They needed to eat. They needed meals.

In the past, in a world of martial artists, starving due to a lack of food was simply unimaginable because they were strong and they grasped the ability to conquer the land and nature around them.

This type of thing would only occur in purely mortal societies.

But now, the Fire God Galaxy was actually in such a state. Of the 10 quadrillion citizens, over 9 quadrillion weren't able to achieve the state of completely severing their appetite; they needed to consume a massive amount of grain and other rations.

After the chaos of war, a massive number of common citizens lost the protection of the warriors. And without their protection they had no way of facing the vicious beasts that rampaged through the open country. They had no choice but to rush into the city and let their fertile farmlands turn into wasted fields...

As for the remaining food sources, this was all controlled by the saint race bandits. 50 violet sun stones couldn't even buy a bag of grain, and this was already a price over a million times higher than it had been in the Divine Realm. If one wished to live they had no choice but to go to the tunnels and mine. But in the open country that was filled with vicious beasts, recklessly going out was the same as gambling with one's own life. It was rare for anyone to survive past three years outside.

Because she had been starving for a long time, Song Yan's originally chubby daughter had turned sickly thin.

Song Yang's wife, Zhou Hui, was nursing an even younger daughter. As she heard her other child's pained cries, she felt as if someone was twisting a knife in her heart.

She no longer had any breast milk. In truth, allowing her child to suckle upon her withered breast was only to psychologically comfort her.

Song Yang grit his teeth. He pulled out a small pack of food from his sleeves. After thinking for some time, he broke off a piece and placed it in his wife's hand to feed their second daughter.

The leftover piece was given to his son.

As the young boy looked at the food his father handed to him, he continued to cradle his little sister. Although he was 12 years old and his face was a bit pale and gray, his eyes maintained a stubborn light.

"Why won't you take it?" Song Yan asked.

"Father, I am not hungry."

The young boy stubbornly said, a strength and defiance in his eyes that no 12 year old should have.

Song Yan suddenly felt his eyes swell with tears.

He directly placed the black pack of food in his son’s arms. Then, he rose and said, “I will go and find something for us to eat.”

After speaking, Song Yan began walking towards the city gates.

“A’Yan, where are you going?”

Looking at her husband head outside the city, Zhou Hui was suddenly panicked. “Do you plan to go hunting? Are you tired of living?”

Outside the city, in the distant wild forests, there were plenty of beasts and prey. But the danger there was over a hundred times that of the mines!

Song Yan was but a Xiantian realm martial artist. If he entered the wild forests then even a variation mouse could eat him up!

Zhou Hui was anxious to the point of crying. The pillar of their family was her husband. Once her husband died, the fate of her and her three children would be unimaginable!

However, Song Yan seemed to have already made up his mind. “I will be fine. If I’m lucky then we won’t have to worry about food this month.”

Then, he continued to say, “If I don’t go then our children will only last for another ten days…”

These second words were said to Zhou Hui with a true essence sound transmission. The hand that reached out to stop him suddenly froze.

She knew that in these past years, because of a myriad of reasons, the population of Fire God Galaxy had already sharply fallen by two-thirds…

Death was something always waiting just outside their door…

Zhou Hui was at a loss for words. But at this time, Song Yang had pushed away her hand. Just as he was about to walk and leave the city, his complexion suddenly changed.

A blood red moon hung high in the dark night. He could hear faint humming sounds from all around, as if they came from afar and also from nearby.

Then, the ground beneath his feet began to gently shake.

This shaking was extremely weak but Song Yan wouldn’t have sensed it wrongly. He looked at a puddle of water on the ground. In the cold and calm night, small ripples began to appear on this puddle of water.

The humming became louder.

Song Yan’s complexion paled.

Could it be…?

As if he needed to confirm something, Song Yan lifted his head and looked into the skies. There, the bright red moon seemed as if it were dyed in blood…

“The blood moon rises… it’s all over…”

Song Yan trembled as he spoke, unable to stand steady.

“What is it?” Zhou Hui asked as she saw Song Yan’s expression.

“Beast tide…”

Song Yan humorlessly smiled. This was a beast tide, a gathering of 10 million or even a hundred million vicious beasts that would attack their city together.

This wild universe never lacked vicious beasts.

In the past, with human masters present, such a beast tide hadn't occurred for a long, long time.

But now there were no human masters to deter and scare away these vicious beasts. Now, in the Fire God Galaxy, beneath the blood moon which aroused the bloodthirst of these vicious beasts the most and allowed them to easily gather, a beast tide had suddenly erupted!

This city likely wouldn't be the first to be overrun by this beast tide.

It wouldn't be the last one either.

"The heavens have abandoned us..."

Zhou Hui grasped her child. She knew that today, on this night, they would all perish here!

The city they lived in had its own guards, but these guards were only Divine Transformation realm martial artists. Because these Divine Transformation realm martial artists weren't able to reach the Divine Transformation realm before a thousand years of age they weren't able to enter the Heavenly Palace. With their combat strength, how could they hope to resist such a beast tide?

But at this moment, from the middle of the city, several spirit ships suddenly soared up into the skies, rapidly flying towards the Holy Palaces in space.

Song Yan could see that these were the spirit ships of the saint race pioneers.

Those saint race pioneers were originally thieves and bandits whose only desire was to plunder wealth and resources. Now, with danger approaching, they naturally had no duty or intention to guard the humans.

"That trash!"

Song Yan's eyes turned blood red. He had never hated another race to such a degree!

And at this time, a loud horn bellowed from within the city!

The armed forces of the city were beginning to gather.

Compared to a true army, this was nothing but a motley gathering of individuals. Most were at the Divine Transformation realm, Divine Sea realm, and even the Life Destruction realm. Moreover, they were all relatively weak amongst their own ranks.

They lifted weapons of varying length and inferior quality. They stood on the city walls, facing the dark army of vicious beasts in the distance!

In the city, Song Yan could only see their backs. Even in the dark pall of night he could see that many of them had backs bent with age and heads of scraggly white hair.

These warriors were all people who had been eliminated from entering the Heavenly Palace. Even so, they still silently and dutifully continued protecting the human citizens.

Song Yang's eyes had already turned red.

In his eyes, these people were like a wall of steel that stood there tall and proud, bound by their faith and duty...

They were true warriors!

When the saints arrived, they didn't have the qualifications to fight them. This was because in front of a boulder, an egg was nothing. Trying to rush it would mean nothing but dust and death.

Yet now, facing this annihilating beast tide, the time for them to battle had approached…

This… would likely be the last battle of their lives…

In the face of imminent death, these warriors were incredibly calm, as if at this moment what they faced wasn't a beast tide that destroyed all life, but peaceful days where they were reunited with their families, where they were able to sit together and gaze upon the setting sun…

"Today, we fight!"

At the top of the city walls, the old commander of the guard grasped a long sword and shouted out his declaration of battle.

Although his declaration was only a mere three words, it was more than enough.

Yes, as a warrior, even a warrior that had been eliminated, they still had their own life mission and their own glory.

That was – to fight!

In the perilous moments when their race faced annihilation, the fate of a warrior should not be to die miserably beneath the suppression of their enemies, but to heroically die upon the sandy battlefield!

Behind them, the common citizens of Fire God Galaxy had already started walking towards the city walls. Some hugged their children and some people knelt down to kiss the earth.

This wilderness was a land they had nourished with their sweat, where they had planted the seeds of hope.

If they had to die here, then let their blood serve to water these lands!

Roar! Roar! Roar!

The demonic beasts that blotted out the skies had already rushed to the city walls. To these strong vicious beasts, the 200 feet high city walls were nothing more than a single leap away. In addition, the sky was filled with a massive number of killer beasts. Their speed was several times faster than the human masters present.

A slaughter was soon to begin.

Song Yang’s blood began to boil over with heat. He picked up his own crude and humble weapon and was about to fly upwards.

But at this time, his wife suddenly pulled him back.

“Hui’er, what are you doing?”

He thought that his wife wanted to stop him, but he saw her stretch out a hand and point into the skies.

“A’Yan… you… what do you think that is?”

In the deep night skies, the blood moon hung high in the air. And in front of that blood moon, a massive black shadow appeared. The shadow unfurled its wings, looking like a demon god of the night.

That… was a Black Dragon!

“Dr-dragon!?”

Song Yan was utterly shocked.

ROAR –

The Black Dragon raised its head, its single horn jutting out into the heavens. Then, it emitted a roar!

This majestic roar echoed through the world, carrying with it a horrifying pressure that impacted into the highest heavens and broke into the starry skies!

Within the city, everyone was dazed. Many of them looked up into the skies. This was the pressure of a Sovereign Beast. Every person could clearly feel that because of this Black Dragon's roar, the originally manic beast tide just outside the city gates had suddenly frozen in its tracks.

Countless beasts tumbled to the grounds due to their momentum, and some of them crashed into the city walls.

Then, regardless of what injuries they suffered in the chaos and confusion, each beast pulled themselves up and then fell to the ground, prostrate. Beneath this pressure, they all trembled.

A Black Dragon roars to the moon, all beasts bow and submit!

The guards on the city walls were at a loss for what to do. What was this Black Dragon?

Then, they were all shocked to discover that the beast tide began to retreat.

Those blood red eyes of those vicious beasts seemed to be clouded now with fear and awe. Crawling on their bellies, they gradually and carefully returned to the forests, disappearing into the dark...

Everything returned to serenity. There was nothing left but wild winds of the wilderness whipping up the dirt, reminding everyone of what had just happened...

MW *Chapter* 2015

Chapter 2015 – The Smile of Destiny

…

…

…

“What happened?”

“Bastard…”

“Prepare for combat!”

High in the skies, the saint race Heavenly Palaces had already descended into chaos.

To them, a beast tide erupting outside some nameless human city was just a minor matter not worthy of caring for. But, that terrifying Black Dragon roar brought with it a dreadful pressure that struck their fortress. They could sense just how formidable it was!

The Heavenly Palace shivered. As the spirit ships of these saint race ‘pioneers’ were about to reach the Heavenly Palace, they were all blown away and sent tumbling by a brutal storm.

“Motherfucker, what is going on!?”

A giant one-eyed leader of the saint pioneers shouted, incensed. Because of the shaking and tumbling ot the spirit ship just now, a number of high quality stones containing energy of the wild universe had tumbled to the floor. He thought one of his subordinates had operated the spirit ship incorrectly and had struck a meteor of some sort.

However, before he could continue cursing, he suddenly shut up. His eyes widened as he saw that in front of the bow of their spirit ship, several miles away, a giant Black Dragon head was poking out form the thick clouds.

“This… this…”

The pioneer leader was completely dazed. But at this time, he could vaguely see that standing just beside the horn of the Black Dragon was a black-clothed man.

Behind this black-clothed man were three other men in similar clothes. It was as if they were taking this man as their leader.

Woosh!

Those three men hurtled up from the dragon's head and impacted towards the saint race's Heavenly Palace.

The speed of these three men quickly reached the limit as they shot into the saint race Heavenly Palace like arrows. Compared to the giant saint race Heavenly Palace, their figures seemed as small as insects. However, just as they vanished into the Heavenly Palace's protective barriers, a giant explosion rang through the skies a short moment later!

The energy flows surging out from the explosion were not flames, but sweeping currents of chaotic black energy.

No matter what this terrifying chaotic energy struck, it would instantly evaporate into ashes!

Seeing this occur with their eyes, several saint martial artists rushed forwards, wanting to kill these three mysterious people. But they were swept up into that black energy whereupon they immediately vanished.

From head to toe, there was not a single drop of blood left over. Their bodies didn't shatter but melted away like snowflakes falling into boiling water.

This scene left the saint pioneers falling over each other in a jumble. They wanted to escape, but they saw that many other saint spirit ships also wanted to flee.

Within the armies of the saints there was a strict hierarchy. The size and color of a spirit ship represented its rank and who was riding within it. These saint pioneers helplessly watched as even a World King spirit ship started flying away, so why would they wait around?

However, just as they wanted to flee, they saw that the spirit ships rushing away from the Heavenly Palace suddenly struck an invisible force field that was several hundred miles away.

Bang!

The force field trembled and countless runes shimmered out of existence. Then, something horrifying occurred that left everyone dripping with sweat. The spirit ships that rammed into the force field all broke apart before directly exploding!

The three mysterious men blocked off the skies. A mystical energy swept out, evaporating everything!

All those riding the spirit ships, whether they were Holy Lords, World Kings, or Great World Kings, all of them were instantly killed off.

Seeing this, the saint pioneers were panic-stricken. To them, World Kings and Great World Kings were lofty characters that they would normally never see. But now they were all being killed off in droves, as if they were nothing but ants being stepped on!

It was at this time that everyone realized this planet had already been surrounded by a force field which shrouded over everyone!

No one would be able to escape…

At this time, a giant blood red centipede phantom shot up into the air from the saint race Heavenly Palace!

This blood red centipede was a thousand miles long and had two rows of brutally sharp and thick claws. As this blood centipede appeared, a dreadful pressure gushed out in waves, exciting all the saint martial artists present!

“The blood centipede astral essence totem, that is the symbol of Empyrean Blood Centipede after he undergoes his metamorphosis!”

A saint martial artist shouted out, his morale suddenly rising. The blood centipede was a rare variation bloodline amongst the saints, and Empyrean Blood Centipede who guarded the Fire God Galaxy was someone who possessed this bloodline.

But before the saint martial artists could cheer, that Black Dragon that was over a thousand miles long suddenly roared out loud and then threw itself towards that giant blood centipede phantom. Like a hawk catching a snake, it gripped its claws around that blood centipede!

And at this time, standing on the Black Dragon's back, the black-clothed man who had yet to move finally did so. His figure flashed and faded like gods and ghosts. In the next moment, a blinding spear light passed through space and pierced through the blood centipede phantom, immediately causing it to shatter and explode, its thick red blood sprinkling through space!

Empyrean Blood Centipede's pressure plummeted and the world returned to serenity once more…

Empyrean Blood Centipede had died. Even after undergoing his bloodline body metamorphosis, Lin Ming had taken less than 10 seconds to kill him off. He had been utterly rolled over!

All the saint martial artists started to tremble with fear. An Empyrean had been instantly killed like that?

Who was this person?

A demon?

From the ruins of the saint race Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming received the corpse of Empyrean Blood Centipede.

In this war against the saints, he would give no quarter, show no mercy. If he let even a single saint martial artist survive, who knew just how many humans they would go on to kill in the future?

For all those that entered the war, if they wished to obtain military exploits for benefits later, or if they desired to plunder wealth and gain fame by killing others, then they should have understood that they too could be killed off by others.

In this battle, from the point when Empyrean Blood Centipede was slain, the end result was already plain to all.

The disparity in strength was too great.

However, Lin Ming himself didn’t really need to do anything. Just his three avatars was more than enough.

Now all that remained was cleaning up the battlefield.

As his avatars continued fighting, Lin Ming swept his eyes across the planet below him. His thoughts stirred and fell down from the skies.

……….

In the human city, some people looked at the brilliant fluctuations of energy in the night skies. These energy fluctuations looked like beautiful aurora borealises, but the people knew that they were actually phenomena produced from terrifying explosions.

“The saint race Heavenly Palace… has been destroyed!”

A Divine Sea martial artist could already vaguely make out the battle occurring in the high skies. The saint race Heavenly Palace had been blown apart!

A single stone had aroused a thousand waves. All the commoners in the human city were shocked speechless. That saint race Heavenly Palace had floated in the skies for the last hundred years and they were already used to its presence. They subconsciously believed that it would continue floating up there even after their death, but it had actually been blown up?

First was the eruption of the beast tide, then the Black Dragon roaring to the moon, then the retreat of the beast tide, and finally the explosion of the Heavenly Palace. Everything had occurred in a short period of time and had subverted all of their understandings. They didn't even have time to think about what this meant.

"The saints are finished!" Someone suddenly cried out.

"Our warriors have returned!"

Someone else joyously bellowed. And, these words stunned everyone.

Humanity… had returned?

This war that had such a massive difference in strength, a reversal had occurred?

Bang!!

As if to answer the questions of all mortals in the Fire God Galaxy, in the deep dark sky an even more blinding fluctuation of energy spread out once more. The saint race Heavenly Palace had been thoroughly destroyed. Faintly, one could hear the roar of a dragon echo through the world.

All of Fire God Galaxy began to bubble over with excitement.

"Our warriors have returned!!"

More and more people shouted out. This grief and dread that had existed for over a hundred years was all unleashed at this moment!

People started to sob in their happiness. Some people flew into the skies, some kissed the ground, and strangers turned to hug each other. All of them took deep breaths to calm themselves but they still couldn't contain the vivid excitement boiling up in their blood.

At this moment, their hearts seemed to beat as one!

Without undergoing hardship it was impossible to understand how precious the feeling of victory was at this moment.

In order to be free, in order to continue being free, at this time even the most cowardly individual wouldn't hesitate to rush onto the battlefield and shed their blood!

As Lin Ming walked into the streets he saw the crazy crowds all around him. He saw a young man running through the streets, waving his arms. He saw a mother with red eyes unable to stop her tears from falling. Finally, she knelt to the ground and held onto her child, breaking down in heaving sobs.

At this moment, Lin Ming finally understood that his life was already tightly connected to his own race, a connection that could never be separated… he would always belong to his people. Step by step, he had walked towards this day. He was proud to be able to fight for the continued survival of his race…

In the frenzied crowd, Lin Ming's calm behavior stood out from the rest. He quietly walked through the manic crowds and slowly headed towards a family home.

This was a family of five. In this age where the flames and chaos of war raged through the land, it was already extraordinary that they could guarantee the lives of their entire family to this point.

Song Yan and his wife hugged their children, hot tears streaming down their faces. Then, they saw a black-clothed youth step in front of their tent.

This youth clearly walked down the streets but it seemed as if he were utterly isolated from the world, as if he had walked down from the deepest end of the river of time. Song Yan was startled.

"You are…?"

Song Yan had a faint guess in his heart, but he couldn't be sure.

There were countless people like Song Yan in the Fire God Galaxy and many of them lived lives far more miserable than he did.

But, when Lin Ming used his divine sense to cover the entire Fire God Galaxy, had actually paid particular attention to Song Yan.

This was because of Song Yang's 12 year old son.

Lin Ming accidently discovered that this child had an extremely high talent in cultivating the martial path. When combined with his decisive stubbornness and firm moral character, he was simply someone born to live and breathe martial arts.

It would be a pity for such a good seedling to be wasted here.

Zhou Hui pulled Song Yan close. The sudden appearance of this black-clothed youth left her feeling restless. Although her cultivation was only at the Houtian realm, she could intuitively feel how terrifying this youth was.

"You're all good." Lin Ming turned towards Song Yan and his wife and faintly smiled. Then, he leaned over and asked Song Yang's son, "What is your name?"

The 12 year old boy looked at his father and then met Lin Ming's gaze. He replied, "Song Mo."

"Song Mo, very good. Are you willing to come with me? To see the outside world?"

Lin Ming smiled.

As this smile fell into Song Yan and Song Mo's eyes, at this moment they wouldn't understand just what it meant.

Many years later when Song Mo followed Dragon Fang and became Dragon Fang's direct disciple, it was only then that he would learn just what sort of existence this youth with the bright smile was.

This was probably a smile from the god of destiny…

MW Chapter 2016

Chapter 2016 – The Enigma of the Mysterious Man

…

…

…

Within an asteroid field of Potala Galaxy, a giant buddha statue quietly floated. This buddha statue was in truth a spirit ship, a True Divinity level spirit treasure that had been accumulated through the history of Mount Potala.

Potala Galaxy was named after Mount Potala and was where their original members were stationed.

When Divine Dream headed towards another universe to battle with Soaring Feather God King and Astral Vault God King, Mount Potala became the de-facto command center of humanity.

However, although this was a command center, transmission of information was a problematic issue. Not every star territory that had been blockaded by the saints managed to stay in communication with Potala Galaxy. For instance, the Hidden Dragon Galaxy where Xiao Moxian was had already been severed from contact for a long time.

The saints possessed an overwhelming superiority on nearly all fronts. Blocking all possible routes of contact with force fields wasn't difficult.

Because of Emperor Shakya was at Mount Potala, it could be called extraordinarily strong amongst the various human influences.

The saint race armies sent to Potala Galaxy were also the strongest. Besides the Good Fortune Saint Son who wasn't here, Soaring Feather God Mountain's Fairy Blue Lotus, the two Empyreans Highsun and Darkmoon, as well as four other veteran peak Empyreans were here, composing a formidable war council.

Even the Legion of Famine's main force was stationed at Potala Galaxy.

Emperor Shakya felt an enormous pressure when facing so many powerhouses. He didn't dare to relax for even a moment. In particular, the existence of the Legion of Famine left Emperor Shakya especially nervous.

The Legion of Famine had a total of 3000 World Kings and 80,000 Holy Lords! Within these 3000 World Kings, 200 were Great World Kings.

To a peak Empyrean, a World King powerhouse wasn't anything at all. But if 3000 World Kings gathered together, especially World Kings that had fused with the flesh and blood of Famine, and then laid down a joint attack battle array, their might could be imagined!

If they all underwent body metamorphosis together, then for a short period of time this saint force would have a super war strength equal to 200 of the weakest Empyreans!

With such a terrifying force, Emperor Shakya only had a single choice to make if he were to see them – that was, to run!

But there was a silver lining. Every time the Legion of Famine underwent body metamorphosis it would be greatly damaging to their blood vitality and would even reduce their lifespan. Thus, the Legion of Famine wouldn't easily undergo body metamorphosis.

With the Legion of Famine posing such a monumental threat, Mount Potala didn't dare to engage the saints in frontal combat. Fortunately, the primal god race and celestials were also within Potala Galaxy, and the two peak Empyreans of Diwuhen and the Battle Sovereign were able to aid Mount Potala. But even so, as it stood, Mount Potala was barely able to hold on against the saints!

But since they didn't dare to fight head-on, the human forces had always played the passive role. If they were accidently surrounded somehow then they would lose everything!

At this time, within a giant discussion hall in the great buddha spirit ship, Emperor Shakya, Great Limitless Buddha, Jun Bluemoon, Hang Chi, as well as many other eminent monks and arhats of Mount Potala had gathered. They were analyzing the current war situation. Just a day ago, an exciting piece of news had been passed onto them.

“In the last three months, the saints have had five continuous bases annihilated and seven of their Empyreans have died. They even lost around 300 members of the Legion of Famine! I really have no idea who did this…”

Hang Chi laid down a combat report jade slip. He looked at Emperor Shakya and Great Limitless Buddha, wanting to elicit an opinion from the two leaders.

Great Limitless Buddha didn’t speak. He slowly tugged at his buddha beads, waiting for Hang Chi to continue speaking.

“Originally, I thought that the saints’ continued disastrous defeats were just a smokescreen that they deliberately put out to lure us in. But from the intelligence that our scouts have transmitted to us, this shouldn’t be the case. We have a fragment of a saint race Heavenly Palace that our scouts brought back.”

As Hang Chi spoke he took out a piece of debris and pushed it towards Great Limitless Buddha and Emperor Shakya. The two of them both looked at this fragment but it was hard to say just what type of cultivation method had been used to damage it.

From the aura emitted by this fragment, the energy used to destroy the Heavenly Palace was extremely complex. It seemed divine, yet tainted with an evil aura. It was difficult to discern just what Laws it contained.

“Grandmaster, have you discovered anything?”

Jun Bluemoon suddenly asked. He rarely spoke.

Great Limitless Buddha continued twisting his buddha beads and quietly whispering buddhist chants. “What a shame. Since childhood, this old monk has read through the book collections gathered within Mount Potala. Although my talent is lowly, I must confess that I believe my knowledge to be rich. But, the energy aura in this fragment is something that not even I can determine... it seems to contain a few characteristics of the power of divinity, yet that is also all I can judge from this...”

After hearing Great Limitless Buddha’s thoughts, everyone in the meeting hall sucked in a breath of cold air. Of those present, Emperor Shakya was considered the strongest. But in terms of experience, Great Limitless Buddha far outstripped everyone else. He had lived for an incredibly long time and was also experienced in Mount Potala’s rich accumulated history and knowledge. It was hard to imagine that such a knowledgeable Great Limitless Buddha still wouldn’t be able to analyze any clues about what this energy was.

Even fragments left behind by attacks from the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign weren’t difficult to identify. This was because no matter how strong the Good Fortune Saint

Sovereign was, his powers primarily belonged to astral essence, the strength of one of the three great cultivation systems in the world.

“This really feels strange…”

Hang Chi was curious as to just who this mysterious person was.

Still, one couldn’t blame Great Limitless Buddha for not being able to analyze anything concrete from this fragment. This was because Lin Ming’s strength was fused with the power of divinity and the power of demons. This strength could be called unprecedented in history, something that perhaps not even the Asura Road Master or Immortal Sovereign possessed.

In addition, the Laws that Lin Ming used were a fusion of the Asura Laws and Holy Scripture Laws. In front of the people in this hall, these two Laws stood at a peak of martial arts that they couldn’t even hope to see.

A strange strength, the peak of Laws, this left even the vastly experienced and knowledgeable Great Limitless Buddha at a loss.

“Concerning this mysterious person, we have a pitiful understanding about him. All we have are some eyewitness accounts. According to what they said, when this mysterious person destroyed the saints at Fire God Galaxy, a life form similar to a dragon appeared. It had a body that was a thousand miles long and its strength was astonishing! From descriptions it is similar to a Black Dragon with a royal bloodline, but its rear area is covered with spikes and its wings are as sharp as sabers. Its appearance is fiercer than could be imagined. From the way it was described, this life form could more appropriately be called a demon dragon.”

Hang Chi took out a battle array disc and activated it. A small projection cast a display in the air, showing an image of the Black Dragon. This was an image drawn up by Mount Potala’s scouts according to the descriptions of some eyewitnesses.

As everyone saw this giant monster that seemed like a demon, they were shocked speechless. Could this be a species of the wild universe?

The wild universe was far too large. It wasn’t strange for there to be variation God Beasts that they had never seen before.

But at this time, Jun Bluemoon actually had a thoughtful expression on his face. After a long period of silence, he spoke up, and his words were shocking enough to fluster those present.

He said, “You all may or may not remember, but over 6000 years ago when Lin Ming was at the Monster Emperor’s grand longevity feast and began a gambling fight with the Good Fortune Saint Son, one of the stakes he took out seemed to have been… a dragon egg…”

“Lin Ming? Dragon egg!?”

Hang Chi was dumbfounded. He stood up. “You can’t be thinking that this Black Dragon that suddenly appeared is the dragon hatched from Lin Ming’s dragon egg!”

There were far too many dragons in this world. If one had to say that this demonic dragon was hatched from the dragon egg that Lin Ming took out over 6000 years ago, this sort of association was simply too forced.

“It’s just a thought that I had. Even for a peak Empyrean it is impossible to destroy five saint race bases in three months and also kill seven saint Empyreans at the same time. Even the numerous powerhouses of the saints were unable to escape… perhaps the saints are also confused and have thought that our human race have somehow managed to raise a secret ultimate weapon, but… we are well aware of our own matters. This is not the action of any of our human powerhouses. If so, then this matter is somewhat suspect. Only if…”

“Are you saying that Lin Ming is alive!?” At this time, not just Hang Chi was shocked, but everyone else in the meeting hall was too.

Jun Bluemoon’s speculations were far too wild and outlandish.

Hang Chi pondered with a frown. “If Lin Ming is alive then how come we haven’t seen him for so many years? It’s true that he needs to hide from the saints but there is no reason for him to conceal the truth from us… and right now, we don’t even know if the life form that appeared in Fire God Galaxy was a dragon. Even if it is a dragon, then according to the time that Lin Ming revealed the dragon egg, over 6000 years have passed. It is utterly impossible for a dragon egg to hatch and also for the dragon to grow to over a thousand miles long in this period of time…

“Moreover, Soaring Feather God King personally confirmed Lin Ming’s death. No matter how fierce Lin Ming was, he still shouldn’t have had some heaven-piercing method to deceive Soaring Feather God King when he was at the Holy Lord realm, right?”

As Hang Chi finished speaking, Jun Bluemoon fell silent.

Indeed. No matter how strong Lin Ming was it would be impossible for him to feign death against Soaring Feather God King.

Perhaps, this might only be one-sided wishful thinking…

………

To have a nail suddenly appear in their rear, the saints wouldn’t simply stand by and do nothing.

But, the crux of the issue was just how would they find him?

This other party seemed to consist of only four individuals and a strange-looking Black Dragon. They came without a clue and left without a trace, and no one knew where they would appear next.

Moreover, what the Good Fortune Saint Son couldn't figure out the most was just how did this other party know the exact position of their saint race armies?

The wild universe was an extremely complex terrain. While this terrain served to shield humanity, it also shielded the saint race armies.

And any information regarding the locations of the saint race forces was the highest military secret of the saint race. Sometimes, this information wasn't even recorded in jade slips. This was because every army was continuously travelling and their positions were only revealed when the commanders contacted each other, and this was also only during times they needed to coordinate their movements. In other words, this information was all stored in the minds of the army commanders, so how would the mysterious person know this information?

This person, just who could they be?

The Good Fortune Saint Son wanted to go out and eliminate this trouble himself, but he couldn't give up on Xiao Moxian when he was so close to obtaining her.

In the end, the Good Fortune Saint Son grit his teeth and endured the frustration. The appearance of the mysterious force only caused him to hasten his search.

But at this time, Fairy Blue Lotus, Highsun, and Darkmoon, who were facing off against Mount Potala, suddenly left Potala Galaxy in secret. They rode a spirit ship, flying towards the rear of the saint race armies...

And what they brought with them was the main force of the saint race's Legion of Famine – 2500 World Kings and 60,000 Holy Lords!

The remaining Legion of Famine and the four peak Empyreans were more than enough to guide the troops and destroy their enemies in Potala Galaxy.

As for Fairy Blue Lotus and the others, they planned to use lightning quick methods to find this mysterious force and then kill them off.

MW Chapter 2017

Chapter 2017 – Fairy Blue Lotus

…

…

…

When it came to the war that the saints began in the wild universe, even humanity had to acknowledge that compared to the saints themselves, humanity's strength was no different from an egg to a stone.

For the last 6000 plus years, humanity had been making many preparations. But these preparations mostly consisted of array formations and layouts in order to conceal and hide, and to engage the saints in guerilla warfare.

As for truly increasing their strength, not much occurred. This was because the last 6000 some years of time was simply far too short when compared to a martial artist that could live for tens of millions of years.

However, as humans became stronger, the saints also became stronger.

The war in the wild universe had gone on for several hundred years. The saints had several great mountains that pressed down upon humanity, crushing them and leaving them gasping for breath.

The first mountain was the saint race's three True Divinities!

The second mountain was the nearly immortal and indestructible Famine, a being that could swallow the Heavenly Dao Laws, carve a way through the God Lamenting Wall, and during its peak, was rumored to not be much weaker than the Asura Road Master in strength!

This was the horrifying abyssal demon that not even the Empyrean Divine Seal of the past had been able to destroy, even at the cost of burning away his own life and using numerous human powerhouses as a blood sacrifice. Facing Famine, humanity simply couldn't summon the courage to engage it frontally.

As for the third mountain, that was something that came from Famine – the Legion of Famine!

The first two mountains could be called threats. They were existences that were placed there so humans could feel a nearly insurmountable distance between them, so that humanity would lose all resistance and confidence to strike back.

As for the third mountain, the Legion of Famine, that was the true executioner that would strangle humanity to death!

In these past hundreds of years, countless human masters had died to the Legion of Famine!

The Legion of Famine was proficient in battle arrays. In crucial moments they could undergo body metamorphosis so that every single member of their legion leapt up an entire rank in combat strength. In addition, they were led by the five saint generals as well as many peak Empyreans. They were the absolute nightmare of the human Empyrean influences.

Outside of Empyrean Divine Dream, Mount Potala and the primal god race were the two strongest influences of humanity. But even if they joined forces they could only engage the Legion of Famine in guerilla war. They simply weren't able to directly fight them, not even once.

Fortunately, producing even a single member of the Legion of Famine wasn't easy at all. First one had to willingly become part of the Legion of Famine; only a minor portion of saint race masters were willing to do this. Many saint powerhouses were unable to accept such strange changes occurring in their bodies and they were worried that they would be controlled by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign in the future. The saint Empyreans were especially worried.

Secondly, one required the flesh and blood essence of Famine, and this required consuming a tremendous amount of energy from Famine itself. And the higher quality the flesh and blood essence, the more energy it required to produce. For instance, to branch out flesh and blood essence that could be used by Great World Kings and Empyreans, this would greatly consume the energy of Famine's body. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would not produce such flesh and blood essence in unlimited amounts.

Thus, through the accumulation of all these years, the Legion of Famine consisted of around 100,000 members.

Currently over half of them and all the elites had gathered in Blood Cloud Galaxy, awaiting the hunt.

As the for captain of this hunt, that was Fairy Blue Lotus.

The influence that was originally stationed at Blood Cloud Galaxy had already been taken over By Fairy Blue Lotus.

At this time, in a grand hall, Fairy Blue Lotus was holding a simple military meeting.

"Are you sure that person will come to Blood Cloud Galaxy?"

Across an ash gray table, a man with thick red hair and red armor spoke with a rumbling voice. This man was the same as an iron tower, and even if he were to sit in a chair he would still be half a head taller than most other people. If he were to stand up, he would be fifteen five high; he was simply a giant.

This man's wild and thick mane of red hair swished around him, making him seem like an angry lion. Near his hands, a red great sword was placed there. This great sword had a hilt that was over three feet long and it was almost impossible for an average person to wrap their hands around it. But, this the red-haired man used this great sword with one hand and also used two of them.

This man was Astral Vault God King's direct disciple, Highsun!

And at this time, a young girl was sitting on the man's shoulder.

This young girl was extremely peculiar. Even though there was a chair available to her, she still chose to sit on the man's shoulder. Moreover, she had always done this. The two of them were nearly inseparable.

She served as a complete contrast to the man. She was small and delicate, cute and tiny, and her body was slender and her legs thin and straight. Her hips were narrow and her chest might not be bulging, but they were still beautifully sized. Her face also neared perfection. Compared to the average saint race girl, she was much shorter. As she wore her viridian clothes and had a set of exquisitely fine war armor, she looked like a pixie from a drawing, mystical and spiritual.

This young girl was Highsun's little sister – Darkmoon.

The two of them were considered young elites of the saint race. Although their talent was inferior to Fairy Blue Lotus's they were skilled in combining their attacks. Once they joined forces, even Fairy Blue Lotus would be hard-pressed to resist them.

"There's no way for me to be absolutely sure, but we have no other choice." Fairy Blue Lotus gently pointed at an array disc in front of her. Then, in front of them, a complete space map projection appeared.

"The last galaxy base that this mysterious person destroyed was the Ancient Rhythm Galaxy. Ancient Rhythm Galaxy has five neighboring galaxies that it borders, but only the Red Yang Galaxy and Golden Cicada Galaxy have recently undertaken military operations that coordinated with the Ancient Rhythm Galaxy in the last month. Many Empyrean influences would have their positions change as they continue their search. If I was this mysterious person then I would choose a nearby galaxy. This is to prevent a scene where the enemy would have already disappeared by the time I arrived.

"As for Red Yang Galaxy and Golden Cicada Galaxy, Red Yang Galaxy has greater overall military strength and their Empyreans are also stronger. According to my simple understanding towards this mysterious person, he is extremely confident in his own strength. Moreover, his goal seems to be to stir up as much chaos in the shortest time possible. If so, then he should go towards the place where there are more people and stronger people.

“Red Yang Galaxy and Golden Cicada Galaxy are close to each other. Just now, I already had the people of Blood Cloud Galaxy contact Empyrean Blue Cosmos in the Red Yang Galaxy so that he knows of our coordinates in the Blood Cloud Galaxy. I believe that in several days, that mysterious person will appear in the Red Yang Galaxy and completely destroy our base there. After that, he will use the special method he’s been using to obtain information regarding our position. Afterwards, it will be impossible for him to let the big piece of fat that is the Blood Cloud Galaxy get away. After all, out of the neighboring galaxies, it is the one with the most saint race forces gathered. With his confidence, I believe he will not make another choice.

“The only thing I don’t understand now is just what method he is using to obtain his information. To search the soul of an Empyrean that has an incredibly powerful spiritual sea isn’t easy at all…”

Fairy Blue Lotus calmly revealed her plan, and this plan left those who heard it in fearful apprehension.

“Are you saying that you will sacrifice our troops in the Red Yang Galaxy?”

Highsun frowned. Sometimes sacrifices were required in war. But, Fairy Blue Lotus had spoken with such cold indifference, to the point that it seemed perfectly natural to her. Her words and tone left Highsun feeling uncomfortable.

And indeed, such a cold-blooded Fairy Blue Lotus was truly the most qualified commander to lead the battlefield. War had never been about ideals or benevolence or justice, but was a slaughter that involved the most brutal and despicable means, where one resorted to any means possible to win.

“We have no other choice. I also thought of deploying our forces to Red Yang Galaxy, but we just don’t have the time. We can only sacrifice Red Yang Galaxy so that they can strive to give us more time. Although these actions may seem a bit callous and brutal, you should all be aware that if we don’t remove that mysterious person as soon as possible then the losses to our armies will only be greater.”

“Very well…” Highsun shook his head, speechless.

Darkmoon giggled. “What little sister Blue Lotus says is true. But, are you sure that the Legion of Famine can kill him?”

“There are no absolutes in this world. I can only say that our chances are extremely high. I estimate that this mysterious person has strength nearing the True Divinity realm. If so, then peak Empyreans cannot do anything to him. Even if we gathered four peak Empyreans in addition to ourselves, although we could join forces and defeat him, we couldn’t keep him from fleeing.”

“Are you sure he isn’t a True Divinity?” Darkmoon asked with interest.

“The possibility is low.” Fairy Blue Lotus shook her head. “In the 33 Heavens, there are far too few True Divinities. Us saints control seven Heavens and in the last several hundred millions of years, we have only had three True Divinities appear in our ranks. As for the humans with their one universe, it is already extraordinary that they could have a single True Divinity in Divine Dream. For another True Divinity to appear, and also one that came from nowhere, this is a nearly impossible possibility. This is the first reason.

“The second reason is that this war in the wild universe has gone on for several hundred years, yet this opponent has only appeared now. This is the greatest proof that he is not a True Divinity level powerhouse. When the Good Fortune Saint Son directed the saints to advance into the wild universe, Divine Dream remained hidden in a concealing array formation, not daring to emerge. It was only when his Majesty the Saint Sovereign lost his patience and entered into seclusion to swallow up the Nine Divine Shifts Heavenly Dao did Divine Dream appear and then begin engaging in guerilla warfare with my honorable master and Senior Astral Vault God King. Likewise, it was only after my honorable master and Senior Astral Vault God King were distracted did this mysterious person choose to appear.

“This means that he is someone who can be treated seriously by a True Divinity powerhouse, but his strength isn’t high enough to do battle with a True Divinity. The greatest possibility is that he is some unrivalled genius who is sure to become a True Divinity in the future. Thus, he is afraid that a True Divinity will come and kill him and only takes action at this key moment to cause confusion and divert our attention. If he truly is a True Divinity then he should be above killing ordinary Empyreans and causing such minor chaos.

“In other words, if we use the Legion of Famine then we will already be in an invincible position. And, with the aid of the God Locking Array and the God Destroying Array, and also the use of the ultimate war strength of the Famine body metamorphosis, killing this mysterious person is already over 80% assured.”

Fairy Blue Lotus explained in a single breath. Her words were wise and reasonable and those present couldn't help but be convinced.

"Amazing, truly amazing."

Suddenly, the door to the meeting hall opened. A beautiful youth clapped his hands and walked in. An evil smirk hung across his face, and his dark hair and pale skin were exquisite enough to arouse the envy of women.

"Senior-apprentice Sister Blue Lotus is truly a heroine amongst us all. I must say that if Fairy Blue Lotus were to replace my useless senior-apprentice brother and take control of Famine's avatar as well as wield the supreme authority of the war effort in the wild universe, then humanity would have already perished by now!"

Hearing this beautiful youth's praise, Fairy Blue Lotus frowned. At this time, there was only one person with the authority to enter this highest-level military meeting room in the Red Cloud Galaxy and who was also hostile to the Good Fortune Saint Son.

This was the last of the five saint generals – Imperial Prince Xishen.

MW Chapter 2018

Chapter 2018 – Mysterious Ancient Book

…

…

…

Fairy Blue Lotus had no good impression of Imperial Prince Xishen. The Good Fortune Saint Palace's two peak disciples, the Good Fortune Saint Son and Imperial Prince Xishen, were both incredibly ambitious individuals.

Both of them were extremely dangerous.

Although the Good Fortune Saint Son was domineering, wildly reckless, and murderous, he had always gone straight to the point and never engaged in little schemes and intrigues.

Of course, in Fairy Blue Lotus's eyes, this was entirely because the Good Fortune Saint Son's combat strength was ridiculously high, thus making it so that his intelligence in certain areas was only average.

Yet Imperial Prince Xishen was not only cruel but acutely sinister. He was like a viper always hiding in a bush, leaving Fairy Blue Lotus no choice but to dread him.

If Imperial Prince Xishen suddenly appeared here it was naturally in order to struggle for military merits. He wanted to accumulate more military service merits to become more valuable to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign in the future.

Fairy Blue Lotus coldly eyed Xishen and honestly said, “If you want to join us then show us what value you have! I don’t believe that your strength can pose any threat to this mysterious person.”

“Haha! Senior-apprentice Sister Blue Lotus doesn’t beat around the bush, wonderful.” Imperial Prince Xishen chuckled. “My strength is naturally far from Senior-apprentice Sister Blue Lotus’s, and of course the disparity to that mysterious person is even greater. But…”

As Imperial Xishen spoke he pulled out a thick black book from his spatial ring and placed it before Fairy Blue Lotus. It was a strange ancient book and the cover had the pattern of a blood red eye. This eye seemed as if it were alive. No matter what angle it was viewed from, Fairy Blue Lotus felt as if this blood red eye was staring at her.

There were all sorts of mystical patterns surrounding the eye as well as worm-like seals. These seals seemed to be some form of writing, but Fairy Blue Lotus had never seen such writing before.

Within the entire 33 Heavens, the most ancient writing was likely the common language used by the primal god race and celestial race. But, the writings on this black book seemed completely different from that.

This was an ancient book filled with mysteries and evil. As Fairy Blue Lotus looked at it, she felt an inexplicable sense of fear and dread, as if there were some contagious and ominous curse lurking within it.

“This is an ancient book obtained from the Primeval Realm Ruins?” Fairy Blue Lotus asked.

“Yes!” Imperial Prince Xishen frankly acknowledged. This mysterious ancient book clearly didn’t belong to this era, but it contained a disturbing and terrible power. If so, then it could only originate from the Primeval Realm Ruins. Imperial Prince Xishen wasn’t surprised by Fairy Blue Lotus’s guess at all.

“This book… is evil.” Highsun frowned. This ancient book seemed to possess some kind of demonic charm, calling out for him to open it and peer through its pages. This subconscious feeling of being drawn in and misled by a book left Highsun restless.

“Hehehe… this book that Junior-apprentice Brother Xishen took out really tickles my interest. How about opening it so that we can all take a look?”

Darkmoon tittered atop Highsun’s shoulder. Xishen scratched his chin and then shook his head, saying, “It’s a shame, but I cannot open this book…”

These words left everyone startled. Their eyes fell on this ancient book. This book couldn’t be opened? Just what was in it?

Everyone became increasingly curious.

“You can join us!” Fairy Blue Lotus made her decision. When Xishen took out this ancient book and also poured his astral essence into it, she had already felt the changes in the surrounding energy fluctuations; she clearly sensed the power of this ancient book.

Although she didn’t want to divide any merits to Xishen, all her plans were based upon the premise that they could kill this mysterious person. If Xishen were here then their chances of success would rise by another 10%. She naturally wouldn’t reject such a condition.

In this way, a tight and aggressive deployment of troops began throughout Blood Cloud Galaxy.

The Legion of Famine and various array formations were arranged in approximately ten days. For this mission alone, the saints had used a total of 108 Empyrean spirit treasure level array flags!

In order to lay down a 108 Empyrean spirit flag God Locking Array and prevent the mysterious person from escaping, Fairy Blue Lotus also used an unimaginable amount of violet sun crystals, blood demon crystals, and other such energy stones that had been plundered from the wild universe.

And just two days ago, the mysterious person's sixth strike had begun. As expected, the neighboring Red Yang Galaxy had been attacked. The mysterious person's methods were clean and tidy and the entire saint race army stationed within Red Yang Galaxy had been wiped away!

This also confirmed Fairy Blue Lotus's suspicions. If there wasn't an accident, then in several more days the mysterious person would arrive at this next destination – Blood Cloud Galaxy.

The trap had already been laid. Now, the mysterious person simply needed to walk into their own doom.

"Hahaha! Senior-apprentice Sister's strategies are truly divine!"

Highsun laughed. They great formations they arranged could be called an inescapable net through the heavens or earth. He couldn't think of a single scenario in which the mysterious person could escape.

"I'm really anticipating this battle. With the diversion of the array formations and the coordination of the Legion of Famine, perhaps I can even fight one on one against that mysterious person!"

As Highsun spoke he slammed his heavy swords together. The clear sound of striking metal rang through the air. As he thought about battling such a master he felt his blood seething with vivid excitement.

On his shoulder, Darkmoon giggled, as if she were also impatient.

"The battlefield is constantly evolving; no one can accurately predict what will happen. I can only assure that we have the highest possibility of victory."

As Fairy Blue Lotus spoke, a faint restlessness stirred up in her heart. She had no idea just where this restlessness came from. It was something that was purely a sixth sense, a feeling against dangers that one felt when the destiny upon their bodies was great enough.

However, she had considered her plans repeatedly and couldn't find any flaws in them. She shouldn't be mistaken in her speculations of this mysterious person's strength also.

If so, then just where was the problem?

Was it related to that ancient book?

Fairy Blue Lotus shook her head, not thinking about it any further. After all, she had paid a great price for all these preparations and it was all in order for this single battle. If she were to give everything up based upon a faint illusory feeling then that would be far too ridiculous.

She could only wait.

However, this wait continued for an entire month. That mysterious person still hadn't appeared in the Blood Cloud Galaxy…

According to the calculations of previous times, this other party should have come after 10-20 days, but they still hadn't arrived…

Those within Blood Cloud Galaxy could only impatiently wait.

Highsun lifted his two great swords every day and patrolled back and forth across the square of the Heavenly Palace. Once in a while he would look up into the starry skies and even his lips would turn dry with waiting. After spending so much effort and even sacrificing an Empyrean level influence to create this trap, if nothing were to come of it then they would all be made jokes of.

He didn't want to be mocked by the Good Fortune Saint Son.

"Junior-apprentice Sister Blue Lotus…" Highsun frequently ran over to Fairy Blue Lotus's seclusion area, but, she would only have a single word to reply to him with. That was – wait!

Regarding this, Imperial Prince Xishen simply sat in the commander's hall and stroked the black book in his hands. He didn't ridicule Fairy Blue Lotus over her plans and whether she had misjudged the situation because he knew that no matter how smart a commander was, it was impossible to perfectly factor in every situation and predict what would occur. At the very least, if he had sat in Fairy Blue Lotus's spot then he wouldn't have done anything better.

However, slowly, after Fairy Blue Lotus left Potala Galaxy, the troop-concealing arrays that she had left behind started to arouse the suspicions of Emperor Shakya.

The monks of Mount Potala often prayed to buddha and lived simple lives; they did not excel in war matters. The information that their scouts sent back had many problems that caused Emperor Shakya and Great Limitless Buddha to have difficulties in their analyses of the battlefield.

Although many monks believed that the fortresses had been emptied, they were also worried that the truth was that the saints had set up a trap so they would walk into it.

At this time, no one dared to recklessly push forwards. Otherwise, if a single error in judgment were to be made then total annihilation was possible.

It was only one day that Emperor Shakya single-handedly rushed into the area controlled by the saints!

This could be called the actions of a man with courage and who also trusted in his own skills. Only by himself would he have the freedom to come and go as he pleased. Even if he were to walk into some elaborate trap formed by the saints he believed that he could retreat.

As a result, he discovered that the Legion of Famine, as well as the saint race commanders such as Fairy Blue Lotus, Highsun, and Darkmoon, had long since vanished from their positions!

Emperor Shakya stirred up a great war in the saint encampment and even called in the armies of Mount Potala and the primal god race to come help him. But at this time, the remnants of the defeated saint armies passed through a transmission array that had been prepared beforehand and escaped. Although humanity was successful in this battle, they didn't actually manage to kill many people.

Seeing such a scene, Emperor Shakya felt his heart drop to his stomach.

"This saint race scum, how could they have emptied out from this area?"

Battle Sovereign To Bagui cursed. The god race and celestial race had coordinated with Mount Potala ahead of time and had prepared to arrive with help. After being suppressed by the saints for so many years and being left without a chance to catch their breaths, they had finally managed to counterattack after a great deal of trouble. But, to find that their fists were hitting nothing but air, this left To Bagui feeling unwell.

Great Limitless Buddha frowned. He thought for a moment and then slowly said, "Amitaba. If this old monk isn't wrong then Fairy Blue Lotus, Highsun, Darkmoon, and the others have already left with the saint armies ahead of time and have relocated somewhere else to fight. If there is something they would take so seriously, then that is likely our mysterious benefactor who has appeared in their backlines..."

Great Limitless Buddha's words left them all feeling chilled. Towards this ally that had appeared from nowhere, they were both curious and grateful. Thanks to this mysterious ally diverting the attention of the saints, humanity had been granted a moment of respite.

But if the Legion of Famine were to turn around, then how could this ally, whether it was one person or several people, possibly hope to resist the saints?

This was the Legion of Famine!

Let alone a single person, even if the entirety of Mount Potala and all its disciples were to be encircled by the Legion of Famine, total annihilation was a possibility!

“We have to inform him!” But just as To Bagui spoke these words he realized how ridiculous they were. They didn’t know who this mysterious person was and he was also thousands of quintillions of miles away; how could they possibly hope to contact him?

For a time, the human powerhouses were at a loss of what to do. All their previous happiness had faded away.

Now, they could only stare helplessly on as this mysterious person collided with the Legion of Famine.

“Fairy Blue Lotus is not some common person of her generation. The Legion of Famine’s array formations are an inescapable net. With the Legion of Famine being commanded by Fairy Blue Lotus, the war strength they can display is incredibly terrifying. Perhaps…” Diwuhen nervously said.

“Pray, pray…” Great Limitless Buddha began reciting buddhist scriptures. “May buddha bless him, that it is a blessing and not a curse, and if it is a curse then he can avoid it. But, everything is already in the hands of fate…”

MW Chapter 2019

Chapter 2019 – Surrounding Lin Ming

…

…

…

When news of the great defeat in Potala Galaxy reached Fairy Blue Lotus, she didn't even ask how high the casualties were. Instead, she simply laid down the combat report jade slip and said to the messenger, "I understand. Draw back."

"Yes…"

The messenger bowed and then retreated. Highsun watched with wide eyes, already anxious. Another half month had passed and it had been far too long.

"What do we do? Junior-apprentice Sister Blue Lotus, you must give an answer for this! While we were waiting here for this fellow we suffered a defeat in Potala Galaxy; that is the same as sticking out our butts and allowing these scumbags to slap us! If anyone learns of this then we'll be the ones laughed to death, and that Good Fortune Saint Son will definitely use this matter against us! Do we just continue waiting here?"

Highsun had a short temper and was someone who liked going directly to the point. To discard Potala Galaxy like this, and not because they lacked the strength but because they threw it away on their own initiative, was something that left him feeling aggrieved.

"Could you be wanting to kill your way back to Potala Galaxy so you can recover some of your face?" Fairy Blue Lotus rhetorically asked, her question leaving Highsun choked.

"We will continue waiting..."

Fairy Blue Lotus continued. A brilliant hunter needed not only accurate marksmanship but also sufficient patience!

Then, Highsun left.

It wasn't just Highsun, but even the Holy Lords and World Kings in the Legion of Famine were anxious. Their Legion of Famine was prestigious, with a list of illustrious merits behind them; since when had they suffered such humiliation before?

Only Imperial Prince Xishen seemed completely uncaring about what occurred in Potala Galaxy and Blood Cloud Galaxy. He would calmly twiddle with the nameless ancient book in his hands, occasionally looking at the eye on its cover as a strange smile spread over his face.

Time always seemed longer than usual when waiting. In particular, waiting for unclear results after betting everything on a single toss of the dice was bound to leave one flustered.

Finally, a month and 20 days had passed. On this day, the fidgety Highsun raised his swords and began patrolling around the Heavenly Palace.

As for the members of the Legion of Famine, they idled away their time around the array formations, some of them cultivating and some of them resting. Even for a Great World King, it was impossible to manage an array formation for months on end without moving a single step.

The bright sun began fading across the shadow of a planet. Just as Highsun thought he had wasted yet another day, a horrifying explosion suddenly echoed throughout Blood Cloud Galaxy, reverberating through the edges of the Heavenly Palace!

Bang!

Using heaven and earth origin energy as a medium, a horrifying sound wave spread out, directly crushing apart the Heavenly Palace’s astral essence barriers!

Dark snakes of fire swept out. Flows of dreadful chaotic energy surged into the skies, crudely smashing apart approaching saint spirit ships.

At the same time, a resounding dragon’s cry boomed through the world like endless billowing thunder, blasting through the horizons!

Enemy strike!

Warnings sounded throughout the Heavenly Palace. Seeing this terrifying explosion and hearing the ear-piercing alarm, Highsun wasn’t surprised or panicked at all. On the contrary, he was so happy that he hopped upwards. “You bastard, I’ve already waiting a boring 50 days for you and now you’ve finally come. I will show you just how bad my temper can be!”

Highsun drew his two great swords and rushed out!

In the direction of the saint race Heavenly Palace’s grand hall, Fairy Blue Lotus also stood up. Although she had appeared extremely calm these past days, the truth was that she was also fervently hoping this mysterious person would appear.

Otherwise, all of her efforts and even her cold-blooded sacrifice of a saint race Empyrean influence would be denounced by all others. Though she was indifferent, she still needed others to recognize her!

Fairy Blue Lotus wasn’t flustered. She released her divine sense and carefully probed outwards.

“It’s him!”

The truth was that she didn’t need to use her sense. Just by looking through the crystalline windows, she could make out that demonic Black Dragon that was over a thousand miles long as well as the black-clothed youth who stood above its head.

In that moment, across the far off distance, the eyes of Fairy Blue Lotus and the eyes of the youth who stood atop the demonic Black Dragon suddenly met. They looked at each other, as if completely ignoring the distance through space.

Fairy Blue Lotus even thought that at this moment, she was only separated from this mysterious man by a single table, both of them standing in this grand hall.

She even felt as if she could see her own image clearly reflected in this other person’s pupils!

His eyes were like a bottomless abyss, tunnels that led to another universe, another world, as if another endless space and time were dwelling within them.

Fairy Blue Lotus immediately felt her heart shake. Just who was this person!? Where had he come from!?

She couldn’t see through his cultivation but could be absolutely sure that he wasn’t a True Divinity.

She suddenly closed her eyes and severed that mysterious spiritual connection between her and the black-clothed man. “He’s discovered me!”

Fairy Blue Lotus’s eyelids jumped back up. This black-clothed man exuded an unfathomable feeling. Although he wasn’t a True Divinity, the pressure he emitted was no less than that of a True Divinity!

Even through all this chaos, even with so many enemies, this opponent had managed to see into her secret chambers, piercing through the layers of force fields and protective barriers to see her. Just how keen must his sense be!?

Fairy Blue Lotus realized that even though the Legion of Famine was invincible in this battle, it still wouldn’t be easy.

And with things having reached this stage, they had already leapt past the point of no return. There was no choice but to continue marching onwards!

“Line up!”

Fairy Blue Lotus’s simple and elegant voice was like the cry of a phoenix, rapidly spreading over everyone around her!

At the same time, she leapt upwards and broke past the vault of the Heavenly Palace. Like a fairy of the wind she suddenly appeared in the skies.

Behind Fairy Blue Lotus, Imperial Prince Xishen also appeared. The strange black book was in his hands.

As for Highsun, the muscles on his arms had already bulged outwards, ready for battle. The blood vessels on his arms twisted like thick earthworms about to explode at any moment.

Although he fervently wished to rush towards this mysterious person and battle them, he tamped down his impatience; he realized that he wasn’t a match for this fellow.

Shua! Shua! Shua!

Without warning, throughout different places of the saint race Heavenly Palace, 108 array flags suddenly appeared!

These array flags were all pitch black with a blood red dragon drawn upon them. This was the design of Famine's tentacles.

These 108 array flags were separately controlled in the hands of 108 Great World Kings.

Lin Ming didn't need to look to know that these 108 Great World Kings were all members of the Legion of Famine. This was because he could feel the flesh and blood essence of Famine within their bodies!

As these 108 array flags and the Legion of Famine suddenly appeared, Fairy Blue Lotus's brilliant eyes stared at Lin Ming. She wanted to see the panic that flashed through his eyes so that he understood he had walked into a trap. No matter how calm a person was, it was impossible for them to not feel any panic or trepidation upon learning they had entered into a death trap.

Moreover, this trap was laid down by the elites of the Legion of Famine. Even if someone more powerful than Emperor Shakya were to appear here, as long as they weren't at the True Divinity level then they couldn't escape even if they had wings!

But, she was left disappointed.

This mysterious person continued standing atop the dragon. His body was straight and sharp like a spear. No matter what explosions rang around him or much how chaotic energy there was, or how those 108 array flags flapped against the wind, his expression remained calm!

Seeing this, Fairy Blue Lotus felt her heart suddenly sink…

The truth was that a month ago, Lin Ming had already arrived at Blood Cloud Galaxy. In these past days he had stirred up storms and shaken up the rear of the saint armies. Although his actions seemed wild and reckless, he was in fact incredibly careful in his movements. Before he attacked a place he would use his sense to investigate the area.

Fairy Blue Lotus was a qualified general and she wouldn't commit such a low level mistake like exposing her trap. She had gathered the power of the Legion of Famine and deployed concealing array formations all over to carefully hide away her trap. No matter how amazing Lin Ming's divine sense was, as long as he wasn't a True Divinity then he wouldn't be able to discover anything.

If anyone else had come then they would have fallen for this trap and Fairy Blue Lotus would have smoothly completed her plan to encircle and kill them.

But what a pity, her opponent was Lin Ming. Besides investigating with his divine sense, Lin Ming also had another special ability that Fairy Blue Lotus would never have expected no matter what.

That was that he possessed an acute sensitivity towards the flesh and blood of Famine.

As long as he was within a certain range, then with the soul of Famine within him as well as his proficiency in using the power of demons, Lin Ming could penetrate past the countless array formations to sense the existence of the flesh and blood of Famine.

And if Lin Ming left his own spirit mark in the flesh and blood of Famine, then he could feel this distance no matter how far away it was.

This was an elite Legion of Famine with approximately 2500 World Kings and 60,000 Holy Lords.

But in Lin Ming's eyes, these people were like 62,500 red spheres of light that glowed in the skies, scattered through the heart of the saint race Heavenly Palace. They were no different from blazingly bright stars that shined in the night sky.

Lin Ming could even judge the size and brightness of these red spheres of light to judge how much demon essence was contained within them. Thus, from this, he could infer the strength of the powerhouses that had fused with the flesh and blood of Famine.

Although Lin Ming didn't fear the Legion of Famine, he still had to remain vigilant against the saint race's trap. He had secretly investigated this trap that was prepared for him, and in these past days he had seen the flustered look in the eyes of Highsun and the others.

At this time, Lin Ming and Fairy Blue Lotus stared at each other. Fairy Blue Lotus felt a restlessness surge in her heart. She knew that this mysterious person wasn't faking his calm. Could this person have already discovered her trap?

How was that possible? She had used the Legion of Famine to lay down a grand formation of concealing arrays. Unless one were a True Divinity it was simply impossible to discover it.

At this time, Fairy Blue Lotus no longer had time to think about where the holes in her plan had been. Facing this mysterious party that consisted of one man and one dragon, and where neither of them were True Divinities, she couldn't come up with any possible reason for how she could lose here.

This was a battle she would win!

"God Locking Array! Seal him up!"

Fairy Blue Lotus shouted out. 108 Great World Kings waved their array flags. For a time, demonic energy filled the air with shrieks and howls, as if endless pained spirits were dancing through the air. What was locked in here were the souls of the dead.

Flag or streamer-type spirit treasures often sealed away the souls of martial artists to increase their own strength. This was the so called ghost flag, ghost streamer. When these 108 array flags had been refined, it was unknown just how much blood they had been tainted with.

Array flag after array flag exuded a dark energy that connected each one together!

MW Chapter 2020

Chapter 2020 – Counter Control

…

…

…

These array flags were spread in all directions. Some were high and some were low, some were above Lin Ming's head and some were below his feet. Black flows of energy connected them together, finally gathering into an incredibly massive net of black light. This net covered Lin Ming and his Black Dragon within.

This was the God Locking Array, the first step in Fairy Blue Lotus's trap. It was all done in order to prevent this mysterious person from escaping!

"So it's a sealing array…"

Lin Ming looked at this giant black net of light that surrounded him and instantly judged the terrifying energy contained within it. If one didn't have the strength of a True Divinity then it would be impossible to piece through it.

In a war that involved two races, peak masters were important figures. But, results of war had never been purely decided by the number of masters or whose peak masters were stronger.

When several thousands, tens of thousands, or even hundreds of thousands of Holy Lords, World Kings, and Great World Kings joined together in an array formation, the battle strength they could display would be unimaginable, enough to reverse the tide of war.

What lay in front of Lin Ming was such a scene.

And as the God Locking Array was readied, Fairy Blue Lotus shouted out once more, “God Killing Array!”

The void began shifting. Winds howled and energy wildly flowed. Outside of the God Locking Array, another 72 Great World Kings emerged, each of them holding a blood red array disc in their hands. They then stood atop these array discs, as if they were standing on altars stained with blood.

As they firmly stood upon 72 spots, the atmosphere within the God Locking Array began to change, becoming filled with thick killing intent!

This feeling was as if the entire area had become a blood pond of hell. Any martial artist nearby could feel the aura of the God Killing Array, making them feel as if their entire bloodline was constrained, making it difficult for them to breathe.

This feeling came from just the collateral waves of energy emitting from the God Killing Array; it could be imagined just how terrifying a pressure Lin Ming had to withstand within the center.

The God Locking Array and God Killing Array could perfectly fuse together. The God Locking Array's three-dimensional sealing capabilities wouldn't block the offensive traits of the God Killing Array. Both arrays complemented each other.

Lin Ming stood above the head of the Black Dragon. He slowly drew out the Black Dragon Spear!

This spear had already been modified by Lin Ming and its brilliance had been hidden away. Others shouldn't recognize it but they should at least be able to see its shape.

"Spear!"

Looking at this spear, Fairy Blue Lotus's pupils shrank. Seeing this type of weapon caused her to remember someone from the distant past.

Over 6500 years ago, that person had appeared and forced all young heroic elites of the 33 Heavens beneath his feet. Even though Fairy Blue Lotus was deep in seclusion within Soaring Feather God Mountain and hadn't left, she had still heard his name.

At the time, the saints were at the height of their power and defeating Great World Kings of humanity one after another. The Good Fortune Saint Son suppressed the morale of the humans and even defeated their powerhouses, making it so that they lost any face they had!

Although she wasn't willing, she had no choice but to admit that at that time, she was still slightly worse than the Good Fortune Saint Son. She knew that whether it came to talent, Laws, strength, or potential, she was fully suppressed by Lin Ming.

This person, when he was at the mere Holy Lord realm, had caused even her own honorable master to come out of seclusion to personally hunt him down!

As this black spear appeared in the hands of the mysterious person, Fairy Blue Lotus inexplicably thought back to Lin Ming. For a moment, she even suspected that this person could be Lin Ming himself.

This was simply a thought based purely on her own intuition. Even so, she knew that Lin Ming had already been killed by her master.

"No matter who you are, you will not leave here today!"

Fairy Blue Lotus thought to herself. Cold light flashed in her eyes. With a wave of her hand, outside of the God Locking Array formed from 108 Great World Kings and the God Killing Array formed from 72 Great World Kings, another 1024 World Kings appeared on both sides.

This was the equivalent of 2048 ordinary World Kings, all of them pouring strength into the God Locking Array and God Killing Array.

Then, outside of those 2048 World Kings, another 54,000 Holy Lords appeared!

The Holy Lords passed their strength into the World Kings, and the strength of those World Kings supported the Great World Kings!

Layer upon layer, each layer superimposed on each other. As all of this strength gathered together, a single strike from this would be enough to destroy any existence below a True Divinity.

Seeing this scene, even though Lin Ming was in an invincible state he still couldn't help but suck in a breath of cold air.

Before now, although Lin Ming had sensed the existence of the Legion of Famine, he had no idea what type of array formations Fairy Blue Lotus had used against him. Only now when he saw this trap for himself did he understand it was the union of a sealing array and killing array.

Moreover, the number of martial artists and the diagram in which they lined up all seemed to resonate with the rules of the Heavenly Dao. Though there were 2500 World Kings and 60,000 Holy Lords, the ones that remained served as replacements. In such a battle there were sure to be some World Kings and Holy Lords that died, and those that died could be substituted with others in order to ensure the array formation maintained its strength.

Within the union of this God Locking Array and God Killing Array, no matter how amazing one's strength was, whether one could burrow into the earth or ascend into the heavens, whether one could fight dragons with their bare hands, all of that was useless. There was simply nowhere to escape!

This was a move carefully planned on the basis of his movements, an inescapable net to perfectly trap him!

Lin Ming acknowledged that this Fairy Blue Lotus was a formidable opponent. She was able to utilize the Legion of Famine under her control to the limit. If anyone else were there then they would have certainly died.

"The Legion of Famine is truly terrifying!"

Such a well-coordinated army had become the meat grinder in the war of the saints against the humans. The number of human martial artists that died to their hands was far greater than those that had died to the saint Empyreans or saint True Divinities.

“When the Legion of Famine swallows the strength of humans, I wonder if they use this method to provide the Saint Sovereign with flesh and blood essence and origin energy?”

Lin Ming immediately thought. Perhaps the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had created the Legion of Famine and produced avatars of Famine so that he could use them to separately plunder more flesh and blood, energy, and soul force, all in order to complete his own ambitions!

....

“At this time he’s still remaining so calm and steady. I really hate such people who put on airs even in the face of death. It makes me want to tear off his face.”

Imperial Prince Xishen casually remarked from nearby Fairy Blue Lotus. He spoke each word as if he were biting them off. He traced his spatial ring and took out the black book inlaid with an eye image.

Standing near Imperial Prince Xishen, Highsun and Darkmoon had also prepared themselves, ready to attack at any moment.

“Junior-apprentice Sister Blue Lotus, why don’t you issue an order? I’m getting impatient!” Highsun grasped his two swords and slammed them together, their sharp metallic ringing echoing through the air.

Fairy Blue Lotus ignored Highsun. She continued looking at Lin Ming, an uneasy feeling continuing to swirl in her heart. She still couldn’t think of any hole in her plans.

As she determined yet again that there was no problem with the plan she had formed and also confirming that Lin Ming didn’t have strength at the True Divinity level, Fairy Blue Lotus’s eyes began to fill with killing intent. “I don’t believe you have any chance of reversing the outcome in such a situation. Begin!”

Fairy Blue Lotus issued an order. In that moment, 54,000 Holy Lords exploded with their greatest strength, pouring it into the bodies of the 2024 World Kings. Then, this increased strength was like limitless waves as the strength of the World Kings pressed further in, slamming into the bodies of the 180 Great World Kings like an endless tide.

For a time, it was as if many suns were erupting within the world. All the stars in the skies were covered by this blinding light!

Beneath this light, Lin Ming remained as calm as a placid lake. He seemed to swim in the sea of his consciousness. Within the world of his mind, there was endless darkness, and in the dark skies above him glittered 60,000 blood red stars.

All of these stars were close to Lin Ming.

Behind Lin Ming, a blood red sphere appeared. This sphere had a hundred tentacles waving around it like a distorted sun.

This was a phantom projected from Famine's soul.

Lin Ming's eyes suddenly flashed open. In that instant, a flaming bright divine light shot out from between his eyebrows. Tens of thousands of soul force fluctuations gushed out from Lin Ming's spiritual sea, all of them shooting towards the surrounding 60,000 red stars.

Puff! Puff!

As this soul force shot into the center of these stars and pierced through their spiritual seas, all sorts of chaotic and complex information flooded into Lin Ming!

Pa!

Lin Ming violently trembled. It was like 10 million thunderbolts had crashed near his ears. His face paled and he felt his spiritual sea nearly fall into delusion!

This was the terrifying impact of colliding with 60,000 soul forces. Although Lin Ming had prepared himself, he still felt as if his soul would be crushed to pieces!

Blue veins stuck out on his forehead. He withstood this soul-rending pain and then completely suppressed all of this soul force, placing them beneath the yoke of his will one at a time!

To control 60,000 individuals simultaneously was an extremely difficult challenge for Lin Ming. He had undergone six reincarnations and had tempered himself for thousands of years; his soul sea had long since become ridiculously powerful. In addition, after fusing with the soul of Famine the depth and width of his spiritual sea had increased ten times over. It was only with all of this that Lin Ming managed to smoothly accomplish what he did, regardless of the pain he felt.

All of this chaos that occurred within his spiritual sea was in reality just a mere instant!

As the energy accumulated within the God Killing Array and God Locking Array reached the limit, everyone thought that Lin Ming would be blasted to bits. But then, the giant array formation suddenly reversed. The wild and tyrannical strength within suddenly flushed outwards, crazily radiating into the world!

It was like a supernova had gone off in the center of the array formation. This horrifying energy cut through the world like endless divine swords, sweeping through a trillion miles of space!

“What!?”

Imperial Prince Xishen originally had a sly and demonic smile on his face, but now, all of that had been replaced by shock as he was no longer able to maintain his calm. He cried out in misery as the black book in his hands emitted a black and red light that covered and protected him.

Nearby, Fairy Blue Lotus also immediately paled. She drew backwards as she formed sign after sign with her hands. A giant blue lotus appeared around her, protecting her.

As for Highsun who had already warmed himself up and was waiting to rush in after the giant explosion, as he saw this supernova which covered the world he was completely panic-stricken, unable to determine just what was occurring.

“Fool, hurry and block it!”

Darkmoon shouted at Highsun, her complexion already changing colors. Highsun then responded, bringing up high two great swords and crossing them together, forming a cross of astral essence to protect himself.

However, because he was just a step too slow, there was a single ringing explosion as his astral essence shield burst apart. His bear-like body tumbled away and he violently spat out a mouthful of blood.

MW Chapter 2021

Chapter 2021 – Violently Beating the Imperial Prince

…

…

…

Divine light recklessly swallowed everything and all sound disappeared. Within the surrounding space there was only a brilliant sphere of light that spread outwards at an inconceivable speed.

It was like a rapidly inflating sun that possessed an incomparably terrifying might. Wherever it went, large tracts of space would be destroyed, causing horrific space storms to sweep outwards.

Bang!

The sphere of light radiated out for a trillion miles. In the deep darkness of space, this was a brilliant glow that shined with a dazzling beauty.

Large sections of the nebula shattered to pieces. The center of the explosion caved in, forming a giant energy hollow.

The Heavenly Palace that the saints had established in the Blood Cloud Galaxy, their spirit ships, their massive space fortresses, all of it was swallowed up by the divine light and blown away like flies in a storm, completely shattering to pieces. Then, they disintegrated layer after layer until all that was left behind was dust that floated in space.

As for the saint martial artists, they had instantly died in the explosion; it was impossible for anyone below the Empyrean level to survive.

The blinding divine light continued for over a dozen breaths of time before slowly fading away.

When it was over, the entire starry space had been emptied out. Everything within a million miles had been cleanly swept away. The saint race's Heavenly Palace, their spirit ships their fortresses, all of it vanished without a single trace left.

It could be said that the saints' base within Blood Cloud Galaxy had been utterly eradicated.

Kuh –

Highsun held his chest, limping as he stepped through space. He had suffered tremendous wounds from the energy fluctuations and numerous bones had been fractured through his body. His organs had been damaged in countless places and a bloody wound was exposed on his chest. That explosion had done astonishing damage to him.

Yet, he still couldn’t respond to what had just occurred.

As for Darkmoon, she had been sent flying away from Highsun’s shoulder during that explosion. Luckily, her figure was small and petite and the area she needed to protect was much smaller than Highsun, thus her wounds were also slightly less. Her face was blushed with a strange red color; she had clearly needed to use the power of her blood vitality to resist that explosion just now and the consumption had been incredible.

“This… just what is this…”

Darkmoon looked at Fairy Blue Lotus.

Blood flowed out from the corners of Fairy Blue Lotus’s lips. She had completely lost her calm and her armor and long dress had been left in tatters. Even her hair bun had been scattered, making her look extremely distressed.

Looking at the scene before her, the normally calm Fairy Blue Lotus lost all color from her face. She just didn’t know what problem had occurred just now.

"Why, why would this happen?"

Fairy Blue Lotus muttered to herself. At this time, the Legion of Famine still stood in front of her!

The Legion of Famine's 60,000 members had been the source of the explosion. Since they were located in the center of the array formation it had been equal to standing in the eye of the storm, making it so that they didn't suffer any impact of the attack at all.

This was also reasonable. Otherwise, the Legion of Famine's attacks would have been no different from kamikaze strikes.

But at this time, Fairy Blue Lotus also saw that most of the Legion of Famine had completed their body metamorphosis.

They had stimulated their Famine bloodline and had used the strength of this transformation to strike out!

This was the same as 180 of the weakest Empyreans, over 2000 Great World Kings, and numerous peak Holy Lords joining together in a devastating attack!

If it weren't for the fact that this attack had indiscriminately surged outwards and didn't target anyone in particular, so that she didn't come under much impact, then this attack would have turned her to dust!

"For this attack they actually underwent body metamorphosis..."

Fairy Blue Lotus hadn't issued orders to undergo body metamorphosis at all. Her original plan was to send out a probing strike to see what cards this opponent had in their hands before she considered having the Legion of Famine do so. But now, as Fairy Blue Lotus expected, this mysterious person truly did have a card in their hands, and this card caused all the courage she had to crack apart!

Fairy Blue Lotus looked at Lin Ming. As their eyes met, she felt as if she had fallen into an icy lake!

"He can... take over control of the Legion of Famine!"

Fairy Blue Lotus's few words left Highsun and Darkmoon dripping with a cold sweat.

Take over control of the Legion of Famine? How was that even possible!? The Legion of Famine was a force that was under the direct control of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. Besides the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign there should be no one capable of erasing their will and directly commanding them.

For instance, although Fairy Blue Lotus could order around the Legion of Famine, this was all because the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had granted her certain military authorities. Fairy Blue Lotus commanding the Legion of Famine was no different from a mortal general commanding soldiers; each one would have their own thoughts in the battlefield and there might even be some soldiers that didn't listen to orders in war and tried to escape or even betray their people.

But now, the Legion of Famine that was controlled by this mysterious person was clearly not in such a situation.

Because at this time, the Legion of Famine had already turned towards the few people who had survived that gigantic explosion. Each of these 60,000 martial artists had blood red eyes that were filled with killing intent; they had lost all brightness and clarity.

Without a doubt, the Legion of Famine had been thoroughly controlled by this person and had lost their will. They were now nothing but puppets. If this mysterious person wanted them all to commit suicide then they wouldn't even blink in doing so!

To be able to control the Legion of Famine and also have incomparably formidable strength, just who could he be?

"You... are you a man, or are you an abyssal?"

Fairy Blue Lotus coldly asked. Her question caused the hairs all over Highsun and Darkmoon to rise. They certainly knew about the existence of abyssals. But as for what the origins of the abyssals were or what their secrets were, they didn't know. All they knew was that the abyssals were mind-bogglingly powerful life forms filled with mysteries. They were also the natural enemies of all intelligent life in the 33 Heavens. This knowledge left them shivering with fear.

Yes… this mysterious person that came from nowhere, whether it was in terms of strength or the ability to control the Legion of Famine, everything could be explained if he were an abyssal.

It was extremely likely that this mysterious person was a high level abyssal demon who already possessed the ability to take the form of a person. Moreover, just from looking at them it was impossible to find any flaws.

In the center of the 60,000 strong Legion of Famine, Lin Ming simply smirked as he heard Fairy Blue Lotus's question. Even within the densest fog, this woman was still capable of making the most reasonable judgment. This was the ability that a truly qualified commander should have. If she faced a normal opponent then she would have been able to easily accomplish her mission.

Unfortunately, her match was Lin Ming. Everything that was reasonable speculations in her eye was in truth all wrong.

This was because no matter how fantastic her imagination was, she would never have thought that the man who had been killed by her master in the past would suddenly return with his strength having sharply risen and also having unsealed, fused, and controlled the soul of Famine of 3.6 billion years ago.

“My spear and also the Black Dragon, it seems none of this arouses her suspicious. Looks like Soaring Feather God King believes that I have died…”

Lin Ming guessed that it was the Soul Emperor who had taken action to fool Soaring Feather God King.

Over 6000 years ago after Sheng Mei had taken away his Eternal Soul, Soaring Feather God King had vanished without ever appearing again.

The most likely scenario was that the Soul Emperor had used his soul force and mental strength that far surpassed any other powerhouse to create illusions that faked his death. He had used unimaginable tricks of the world of consciousness to accomplish this and fool Soaring Feather God King into thinking he had died.

This was because the Soul Emperor also didn’t want him to be found by the Soaring Feather God King. If so, then Soaring Feather God King would see that his Eternal Soul had been seized and all his strength had been wasted away as a result. If this occurred, then that would arouse the suspicions of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

In the dark game of shadow chess that the Soul Emperor was playing, no one knew what his grand plan was. Not even Lin Ming could find any clues about it.

As all these thoughts flashed through Lin Ming's mind, he suddenly sneered. With a slight movement his figure vanished!

Seeing Lin Ming vanish from within the Legion of Famine, Fairy Blue Lotus, Darkmoon, and Highsun's pupils all contracted. They rapidly drew backwards, their first thought being that Lin Ming was attacking them.

However, Lin Ming simply didn't appear before them. His figure teleported 10,000 miles away. Within the deep starry skies, his fist came smashing out!

Peng!

The void shook and shattered. With a pitiful cry, a person that was hiding in a space distortion was sent tumbling away like a dead dog.

This person vomited a great mouthful of blood, his body sent rolling away like a sack thrown down from the top of a mountain.

This person was Imperial Prince Xishen.

Imperial Prince Xishen was still holding that mysterious black book in his hands and his entire body was covered in blood and wounds. His plan had been to make it appear that he had been turned into dust in that giant explosion and then escape through a space distortion. Such an amateur method was easily seen through by Lin Ming.

In fact, the moment after the large explosion occurred, Lin Ming had already spread out his divine sense and locked onto every survivor.

He didn't find the Empyrean who should have been guarding the Blood Cloud Galaxy; it seemed that this person had already been sent away. Luckily for him, this move allowed him to escape this calamity.

As for the other survivors, they were all basically standing before him.

Now, Lin Ming absolutely could not have news of him being able to control the Legion of Famine be leaked outwards. Otherwise it would be difficult to implement the plan he had come up with. At the very least, the Good Fortune Saint Son wouldn't dare to bring the avatar of Famine to challenge him.

Thus, Lin Ming would not allow anyone who witnessed this to escape.

At this time, Imperial Prince Xishen's hair was disheveled but his eyes still gleamed with a dark and poisonous light. As a chosen pride of heaven he possessed a swollen sense of arrogance; just when had he ever been humiliated like this?

Bang!

With another punch to the face, Imperial Prince Xishen was sent hurtling away, his face covered in blood.

"Ahh!"

Xishen howled. His hair scattered and his mortal bodily released loud crackling sounds. He wanted to use his saint race bloodline to undergo body metamorphosis!

The overwhelming majority of high level saint martial artists were capable of undergoing body metamorphosis. This type of body metamorphosis was different from the demon body metamorphosis brought about by using the flesh and blood of Famine. The saints didn't need to pay a price in order to undergo their bloodline body metamorphosis.

Xishen naturally possessed this ability.

"You still think you can finish your body metamorphosis?"

Lin Ming coldly sneered and punched at Xishen's chest. This fist contained a dark and potent energy. As he struck Xishen, this energy permeated through his organs and meridians.

Kacha!

With Xishen's body as the center, all surrounding space caved in. Xishen started bleeding from his head and all the strength he was gathering for his body metamorphosis was scattered.

Seeing this, the other three saint generals all paled.

Xishen was one of the most brilliant geniuses amongst the younger generation of the saints. Although he was considered the weakest of the five saint generals because of his age, he wasn't much weaker. Now, beneath Lin Ming's hands, he was being played around with like putty, being pinched like dough.

The disparity was just too great!

MW Chapter 2022

Chapter 2022 – Blue Lotus's Counterattack

…

…

…

Bang!

With another punch, the power of divinity and demons within Lin Ming's body rumbled into Xishen through his fist. This power locked onto Xishen's blood vitality, making it so that he lost nearly all his fighting strength.

Lin Ming didn't plan on killing Xishen. He still had uses for him, and this would also be the beginning of his miserable fate…

As Fairy Blue Lotus, Highsun, and Darkmoon watched this occur, it seemed as if they weren't witnessing a battle between Empyrean level powerhouses. Normally, battles between Empyreans should rend the heavens and sunder the earth, their attacks capable of destroying planets. The scenes of battle should be far-reaching and incredible.

But now, the battle between Lin Ming and Imperial Prince Xishen was nothing but a flurry of fists. Lin Ming was completely beating up Xishen, just like a martial artist beating up a mortal on the city streets.

The only difference was that every time Lin Ming attacked Xishen, the shockwaves of his punches were able to shatter the surrounding void. This reminded everyone just how terrifying the strength contained in every strike was.

As Fairy Blue Lotus saw this she became increasingly sure that Lin Ming was an abyssal demon. Otherwise, with Xishen's variation bloodline and mortal body intensity that belonged to the saint race, how could he possibly be beaten up to such a dilapidated state?

And what scared Fairy Blue Lotus the most was that after another period of time, such a flurry of punches would fall onto her next.

"What do we do?"

Darkmoon rapidly asked. She didn't want to fall into the hands of this 'abyssal'. Since this youth could control the Legion of Famine then he might also come from the same lineage as Famine. As she thought of Famine's tentacles, she felt a shiver creep up her spine.

If this youth that was the incarnation of an abyssal were to tie her up with those tentacles then she would be eaten without even her bones remaining.

“Let’s bet everything against him. Since we’re going to die then I’d rather die with honor!” Highsun grit out as he looked towards Fairy Blue Lotus. Though he was a crude and simple person, he wouldn’t recklessly flush onto the battlefield without a care for his life. Rather, he would follow Fairy Blue Lotus’s lead, because in these past years her performance on the battlefield had won his admiration.

At this time, Fairy Blue Lotus, Highsun, and Darkmoon all felt that this was a nearly hopeless situation.

Not only did this opponent possess strength far surpassing their own but he even controlled the 60,000 strong Legion of Famine.

How could they possibly win in such a situation?

Although Highsun looked at Fairy Blue Lotus, he actually didn’t expect her to have any methods to survive this situation.

Fairy Blue Lotus had slowly restored her previous calm demeanor. She quietly traced her spatial ring and said with a sound transmission, “We have a chance…”

“There is a chance?” Highsun’s eyes lit up.

“The Legion of Famine is fierce, but the individual strength of the members is relatively poor. In order to display their greatest striking power they have to arrange themselves in a great array. To start such an array requires several breaths of time or even a dozen some breaths of time at the very least. In other words, we have to sneak attack him and compress all our combat strength into ten breaths of time, or better yet five breaths of time!

“He is too strong. There is no way for us to kill him, but, there is a chance that in this five breaths of time we can cause damage to his spiritual sea. As long as we can make him lose his mind for a short period of time and separate the Legion of Famine from his control, then I can use the Legion of Famine to kill him instead! In order to do this everything must be perfect and we even need luck on our side. But in truth, our actual chances might not even be equal to 10%...”

Fairy Blue Lotus revealed her plan, causing Highsun’s heart to heat up.

“Even 10% is more than enough!” Highsun said, fighting intent boiling over in his tone.

“Good. Then you only need to attack with everything you have. I will manage the rest. Everyone attack together!”

Fairy Blue Lotus issued an order. The three people assumed a triangle formation and hurtled towards Lin Ming!

Whether it was Highsun, Darkmoon, or Fairy Blue Lotus, everyone was attacking with everything they had!

Highsun exploded with a roar as he burnt his blood essence without hesitation. Within the saint race, Highsun possessed the sovereign sun bloodline. Once he combusted his blood essence his strength would double.

At this time, his body lit up with flame totems. He emitted scorching flames as hot as the sun, appearing as a blazing war god of fire.

As for Darkmoon, she took out a pair of crescent moon sickles. As she waved her sickles, she formed an icy cold lunar edge. Space quietly separated, forming broken space in the form of crescent moons that cut towards Lin Ming’s neck.

Between the two was Fairy Blue Lotus. She grasped a long sword and thrust out without any fancy movements at all. Compared to Highsun and Darkmoon, Fairy Blue Lotus’s strike seemed simple and plain, without anything special to it at all. However, if one knew of Fairy Blue Lotus then they would know that this final desperate attack of hers would be no trifling matter.

Facing this swift and raging strike that came from three directions, Lin Ming didn’t move at all. A loud roar ripped through the air and the Black Dragon beneath Lin Ming soared upwards, its spiked demon tail sweeping out.

After remaining quiet for so many years, the Black Dragon had swallowed a massive amount of Famine's flesh and blood essence. Now that it erupted with this strength, even a planet would be shattered.

Bang!

Highsun, burning with sun-like flames, brutally collided with the Black Dragon's tail!

He emitted an earth-shaking roar. His blood began to boil over like lava and his blood vessels twisted like worms, rupturing because they were unable to withstand the burden!

Even so, Highsun was slapped flying away by the Black Dragon's tail, its cold spikes nearly piercing clean through him.

At this time, Darkmoon's twin crescent moons also slashed towards the Black Dragon's eyes. Although the Black Dragon possessed an incredibly potent mortal body, its eyes were still a weakness. As it was forced to defend, the Black Dragon's offensive slowed down and it used its two giant claws to crush apart the crescent moons.

Like this, of the attacks from three saint generals, Highsun and Darkmoon were both blocked by the Black Dragon.

And now the only one to reach Lin Ming was Fairy Blue Lotus.

Fairy Blue Lotus against Lin Ming!

Without a doubt, this was a matchup that had completely disproportionate levels of strength.

Lin Ming grasped the Black Dragon Spear and thrust outwards. This strike contained the momentum of the heavens and earth. For a time, it was like the power from all the billions and trillions of stars was poured into Lin Ming's spear, making its might incomparably great!

No one doubted that once Fairy Blue Lotus clashed with Lin Ming's spear, the result would be that she would suffer heavy losses and spit out blood.

However, Fairy Blue Lotus didn't seem to fear this at all. Her sword continued cutting towards Lin Ming. The moment that her sword came into contact with the Black Dragon Spear, a dark light suddenly flashed out. This dark light shot straight towards Lin Ming's spiritual sea; Fairy Blue Lotus's goal was actually Lin Ming's spiritual sea!

By now, Lin Ming had discovered that Fairy Blue Lotus had erupted with an incredibly powerful soul force. It was unknown what method she had used to suppress it before this so that no one else realized, but she was a martial artist who dual cultivated essence and divine!

The universe's 33 Great Daos could be divided into the three main categories of essence, energy, and soul. The saints excelled in the body transformation system but were lacking when it came to the soul forging system. But, that didn't mean there couldn't be some heaven-defying genius who possessed the talent to dual cultivated essence and divine. For instance, Divine Dream cultivated energy and divine, and Lin Ming also triple cultivated essence, energy, and divine.

"So you still have such a hidden move! Do you want to wound my spiritual sea and retake the Legion of Famine?"

Lin Ming didn't retreat; the disparity in strength was simply too great, and he possessed no weakness in this battle. Fairy Blue Lotus's combined material and soul attack was indeed a wonderful move to sneak attack his spiritual sea, but all that occurred was that Lin Ming was left slightly surprised.

This was just like two people playing chess and one player having nearly no chess pieces left. No matter how miraculous their moves were they would still only suffer disastrous defeat.

Even so, Lin Ming wasn't careless. He continued to pour his soul force into his spiritual sea, making it impregnable. Like this, even if he didn't defend against Fairy Blue Lotus's soul attack he still wouldn't receive any wounds.

But the moment that Fairy Blue Lotus's sword fell down, Lin Ming's complexion changed and he was immensely shocked.

In the dazzling beam of light, Lin Ming discovered that a vague shadow was attached to the end of Fairy Blue Lotus's sword. This was… a feather!

He was extremely sensitive towards feathers. He would never forget that over 6000 years ago, such a feather had nearly taken his life!

Without a doubt, this feather came from Fairy Blue Lotus's master – Soaring Feather God King!

The truth was that Fairy Blue Lotus never thought her combined material and soul attack would be able to accomplish anything. To start off with a physical attack and then erupt with a powerful soul attack midway, this was all done in order to distract Lin Ming and make it seem that this had been her final trump card.

But the true killing move was the feather attached to the blade.

As it was attached to the back of the sword and in addition to the blinding light and incredibly fast speed of attack, the average person simply wouldn't discover it. And even if they did, they would still be unable to determine what this feather was.

From the beginning of the strike, to the change in move, then to the final killing strike.

Fairy Blue Lotus had done everything perfectly and her attack would inevitably hit. As for Lin Ming, he instantly reacted. He erupted his energy to the limit and drew back even as he swept his spear outwards!

Kacha!

Fairy Blue Lotus's long sword was sent flying away. With a cough her palm cracked open and blood flowed out!

In that moment she felt a wild and brutal energy break into her body. Her complexion turned dark red as blood energy swelled up within her.

Lin Ming's strike wasn't mainly aimed at Fairy Blue Lotus, but the energy flows contained within the Black Dragon Spear still wounded her.

Shock flashed over Fairy Blue Lotus's expression. Although she knew that Lin Ming would be difficult to deal with, she didn't think it would be difficult to such a degree. He had instantly discovered the feather.

Still, this feather had now flown in front of Lin Ming!

Though it seemed slow and humble, it contained a thick killing intent. And, this killing intent had locked onto Lin Ming.

The feather fluttered downwards. From appearances, this feather was no different from any other feather. But as it reached within three feet of Lin Ming, it suddenly transformed into the phantom of a woman. This woman was… Soaring Feather God King!

MW Chapter 2023

Chapter 2023 – God King Phantom

…

…

…

After more than 6000 years passed, Lin Ming once again encountered the person who had hunted him down in the past. At this time, the Soaring Feather God King in front of Lin Ming wore a layer of light gauzy clothes, a veil over her face. As she raised her hands and stepped upon the air she seemed like a celestial maiden riding upon the surging waves.

Amongst the saint race's three True Divinities, she was the most low-key and mysterious one.

No matter which True Divinity it was, they were all characters that stood high in the clouds above the highest heavens, overlooking the common world.

Not to mention the giant disparity that existed between True Divinities and Empyreans, just the talent of a True Divinity belonged to the class of unrivalled geniuses in the 33 Heavens. At the very least they would be at the level of Emperor Shakya.

With such a talent combined with the superiority of cultivation, this made it so that there were no Empyreans capable of fighting a True Divinity.

In their hands, a grain of sand could shatter the vault of heaven and a single feather could sunder the galaxy.

And now, such a feather was floating before Lin Ming, and it had also transformed into the phantom of Soaring Feather God King.

“Soaring Feather’s incarnation?”

Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. This was an incarnation left behind by a True Divinity.

Moreover, Fairy Blue Lotus was a lower Empyrean. In addition to her talent, her strength was amongst the top echelons of Empyreans. If Soaring Feather God King left behind an incarnation then its strength would definitely surpass the realm of a peak Empyrean, otherwise it wouldn’t be of much use.

In other words, if Soaring Feather God King wanted to create an incarnation that could protect the life of someone on the level of Fairy Blue Lotus then she would need to use a great deal of her cultivation and blood vitality.

Without a doubt, this feather contained Soaring Feather God King's blood essence; it was extremely precious.

Lin Ming never thought that Soaring Feather God King would place such importance on this disciple of hers.

At this time, Soaring Feather God King was already holding a blade of energy and slashed down at Lin Ming!

Soaring Feather God King's incarnation only contained a minor part of her consciousness. At this time, her expression was calm and a strange charm flashed in her eyes.

The sword pressed down like a divine mountain, seeming as if it could crush the world apart. Lin Ming felt the surrounding space immediately lock down, preventing him from avoiding.

But, Lin Ming never planned to defend to begin with. He wanted to see just how strong Soaring Feather God King's incarnation was.

Lin Ming instantly summoned the power of the Asura blood within him. Black scales covered his body as the Black Dragon Spear emitted a keening cry, thrusting outwards!

At this moment, a Heretical God Tree phantom appeared behind Lin Ming. Thunder and flames howled into the air, twining around the spear shaft in a vast sea of red and purple. Even if a God Beast were to fall into this horrifying sea of energy it would be reduced to ashes!

However, Soaring Feather God King's expression was still indifferent. She stepped upon the sea of thunder and flames. No matter how much the thunder and flames tumbled and roiled, all it did was gently pass over Soaring Feather God King's body, unable to harm her or affect her at all, as if she were located in a completely different time and space. At this time, she truly seemed like an eternal celestial maiden that stood above the surging waves, as ethereal and elegant as flowing dust.

But, this scene contained a brutal killing intent, one that filled the body with unease.

Soaring Feather God King's sword separated the sea of thunder and fire.

The sword energy slashed straight down at Lin Ming!

As Fairy Blue Lotus watched this her heart had long since tightened. Before, she had attached the feather atop the sword in a sneak attack because only the incarnation of her master would be able to directly fight against Lin Ming. She was afraid that even her master's incarnation wouldn't be able to strike him down, but as she saw Soaring Feather God King sunder the sea of thunder and fire that Lin Ming used, hope began to light up in her heart.

As Lin Ming watched this whistling sword energy, he rapidly drew backwards. His eyes shimmered with seals of the Asura Laws. At the same time, the Daevic Eye Dao Palace opened from between his eyebrows.

He was well aware that the power of thunder and fire wouldn't be able to damage Soaring Feather God King. It wasn't because it lacked in power, but because his opponent had reached the level of a True Divinity and their attainments in the Laws were incredibly high.

This incomplete Heretical God Force was simply unable to touch Soaring Feather God King.

After his testing strike failed, Lin Ming no longer held back. His pupils contracted. As he opened the Daevic Eye Dao Palace, he also opened the Three Lives Pupils' All Existence to Void!

Within the vision field of the daevic eye and the Three Lives Pupils, the energy flows in Soaring Feather God King's incarnation become utterly clear. Lin Ming drew a yin yang chart with his hands, causing a flow of black and gold energy to twist together.

The black energy was thick with dark demonic intent, and the golden energy was like a shining sun.

The two flows of energy connected. In that instant, all the Laws and origin energy in the surrounding space began sweeping up towards him, as if Lin Ming's hands were the center of all Laws in the universe.

A massive yin yang vortex slowly formed, like a primal chaos yin yang diagram. But, the heights of these Laws had actually far surpassed the Yin Yang Laws.

This vortex violently collided with the sword light of Soaring Feather God King's incarnation!

Chi chi chi!

Sword light shattered. On the face of Soaring Feather God King's incarnation, a hint of shock flashed over her features!

Although this was but a wisp of one's self used to form an incarnation and was only an incomplete body of consciousness, it still possessed intelligence and thoughts, similar to a person.

The vortex of divinity and demons continued forwards with unstoppable momentum, rolling over all. Soaring Feather God King's incarnation protected her body with sword light but in the end she was nothing but an incarnation, unable to summon measures capable of resisting Lin Ming.

Peng!

The final layer of sword light was smashed apart. The incarnation's protective astral essence shook like a ship's sail in a raging storm even as it was slowly torn apart.

Lin Ming roared out loud. Behind him, the phantom of nine stars appeared. Starlight began gathering onto his body. As he erupted with strength no weaker than the Black Dragon, he brutally thrust his spear through Soaring Feather God King's protective astral essence.

Kacha!

The spear penetrated the protective astral essence and then pierced through Soaring Feather God King's chest!

The white clothes were stained red with blood, like vivid red plums falling onto a plain of white snow. Soaring Feather God King's lips overflowed with blood and the sword in her hand had long since fallen away, turning into energy light before vanishing into nothing.

Soaring Feather God King gripped the shaft of the Black Dragon Spear with her hands, her ghostly blue eyes looking at Lin Ming with disbelief.

At this time, she was only a mere foot away from Lin Ming. Her eyes began to slowly lose their brilliance. As she gazed upon Lin Ming's face that seemed carved by a saber, his eyebrows that were as sharp as swords, and his deep and profound eyes, confusion appeared on her face. This youth seemed familiar, but in the end he was only a stranger…

Peng!

Soaring Feather God King's body exploded into countless motes of light. These motes of light were like 20 million fireflies that flew off into the void, all of them vanishing from the world.

And from the center of these motes of light, a feather floated down.

Lin Ming reached out and took this feather in his hand.

The strange feather was only half a foot long, as if it were the plume of a white crane. It shined with a crystalline light, and the feather was stained with a beautiful line of red blood.

Although Soaring Feather God King's incarnation was destroyed by Lin Ming, he could still feel a powerful strength contained within it. It continued to shine with a rainbow of lights, as if it wanted to jump out from his grip.

Lin Ming exerted his strength and formed numerous seals that bound the feather in layers of barriers until it could no longer move.

After finishing this, Lin Ming looked up at Fairy Blue Lotus, a smile on his face.

MW Chapter 2024

Chapter 2024 – Suppressing the Chosen Prides of Heaven

…

…

…

By this time, Fairy Blue Lotus’s face had turned paper white.

Her talent was extraordinary. Since her childhood she had been the direct disciple of Soaring Feather God King. For the last several thousands of years, she was someone that existed at the center of all environments. Never in her life had she been so ruthlessly suppressed by someone as she was today.

No matter how much she wracked her mind, no matter what hidden card she used, she wasn’t even able to cause a single injury to her opponent.

“You still want to fight?”

Lin Ming calmly asked. Fairy Blue Lotus bit her lips. But, before she could think of how to deal with this situation, Lin Ming suddenly erupted with killing intent, instantly becoming the manifestation of some wild and savage animal as he rushed straight in front of her!

His face was vicious as his fist came smashing down!

Peng!

This fist solidly crashed into Fairy Blue Lotus's stomach. Her protective astral essence burst apart and her body curved like a dried up shrimp!

In that instant, blood vessels covered her eyes as if they were nearly going to pop out of her head. She could feel Lin Ming's wild and ferocious strength recklessly galloping through her body, attacking her meridians!

This severe pain caused her to shake, nearly fainting in response!

After this punch, Lin Ming lifted his arm and brought his elbow pounding down onto her back!

Kacha!

Fairy Blue Lotus spat out a mouthful of blood. She heard her spine nearly crack in half. More of that wild energy broke into her body, causing her organs to explode all over and her condensed blood vitality to scatter.

Lin Ming was ruthless in his actions. This woman was simply far too dangerous a person and had repeatedly placed him in dangerous situations. If he didn't have cards in his hands that no one could imagine then he might have already been killed by her strategies.

Facing such an opponent, Lin Ming would show no mercy at all. Whether this person chose to surrender on her own initiative or not, Lin Ming would still brutally beat her up so that she lost all ability to revolt.

Of course, just as with Imperial Prince Xishen, Lin Ming kept Fairy Blue Lotus alive because she had her uses. Just from the fact that Soaring Feather God King took care of her disciple to such a degree made it so that he wouldn't kill her. This was because besides enraging Soaring Feather God King and causing her to seek vengeance, there wasn't any advantage to killing Fairy Blue Lotus.

By now, Lin Ming had already guessed that Soaring Feather God King actually had no plans of wildly attacking humanity. Otherwise Empyrean Divine Dream, who had to face two opponents alone, likely wouldn't have been able to continue resisting as long as she had.

To anger Soaring Feather God King would cause unknown consequences. In the current situation, humanity already stood upon a stormy ledge; Lin Ming didn't want to make this war even worse for humanity.

After attending to Fairy Blue Lotus, then came Highsun and Darkmoon.

Highsun and Darkmoon both had incredibly ugly complexions. In Highsun's eyes, Fairy Blue Lotus was a nearly omnipotent figure, but even such a figure had been savagely beaten up by this mysterious person.

At the very least, Fairy Blue Lotus resembled a weak woman. As Highsun looked at his own bulging figure, his face nearly turned green with regret. Without a doubt his fate would only be more miserable.

And at this time, Lin Ming had already wordlessly rushed towards Highsun and Darkmoon…

……….

For these four saint generals, this was absolutely the most unforgettable day of their lives. First, the trap they laid down with such effort had been resolved and used against them. Then they had been brutally beaten up by this mysterious person. Finally, they were even caged and tossed into some dark space – the mysterious person's inner world.

Fairy Blue Lotus never thought that an abyssal would also possess their own world. But by now, she wasn't of the mind to study these things.

Today was her complete failure. She had dragged so many people into setting up this trap, but in the end she had been the one caught. Thinking about it, it truly was laughable...

Although this mysterious person hadn't killed her just yet, Fairy Blue Lotus didn't think she was lucky at all. Perhaps their fates might be even worse than death.

Fairy Blue Lotus, Highsun, and Darkmoon glanced at each other within Lin Ming's inner world, despair rising in their hearts. Although their strengths couldn't be considered to be at the highest levels of the 33 Heavens, they were still somewhere near the top. But in front of this mysterious person, they were as useless as babies.

When Lin Ming had finished suppressing Fairy Blue Lotus, Highsun, and Darkmoon, he turned towards Xishen, planning to suppress him also.

But at this time, Lin Ming discovered that in the mangled Xishen's right hand, the mysterious black book that he held was beginning to undergo changes. The eye on its cover started to emit a blood red light.

Mm?

Lin Ming's eyes sharpened. He had already noticed this black book. The shape of the black book caused him to think of the Holy Scripture's book of death, but after investigating it he discovered that this wasn't the Holy Scripture but a mysterious book of unknown origin. For a time he was unable to distinguish what secrets this mysterious book held.

Lin Ming planned to capture Xishen and then study this ancient book. He didn't think that the black book would present such changes all of a sudden.

The blood red light it emitted became stronger and stronger, and the eye also became increasingly bright.

The blood red light turned into faint layers of bloody fog that covered Imperial Prince Xishen. This blood fog slowly permeated into his skin, causing his body to glow with a scarlet hue.

"This is..."

Lin Ming's eyelids jumped up. He didn't know what changes the black book was causing in Imperial Prince Xishen. The black book could be healing Xishen's wounds or it might even be controlling him. But no matter what it was, it definitely wasn't anything good.

Without any further consideration, Lin Ming took the Black Dragon Spear and thrust it into Imperial Prince Xishen's chest!

Puff!

Blood splashed out.

Imperial Prince Xishen had long since lost the ability to fight and had no strength to resist his attack at all. Lin Ming's spear avoided Imperial Prince Xishen's heart. But, the destructive power of divinity and demons was poured in, causing Xishen's lungs to be utterly destroyed!

Even if it was a saint Empyrean with a formidable human body, if they had to withstand such a strike after being beaten up so badly they would also be on the verge of death.

Lin Ming didn't plan to give Xishen any chance to recover. No matter what changes the black book brought about it would still need to use Xishen as a medium. As long as he sufficiently damaged Xishen, the book wouldn't be able to do anything at all.

After Lin Ming's strike, the blood fog continued to seep into Imperial Prince Xishen's body, causing his wounds to rapidly recover. Lin Ming was startled. He reached out and directly grabbed the black book.

After receiving the black book, Lin Ming could feel an evil and dark aura exuding from it. The bloody eye on its cover seemed to be staring at him.

Then, Lin Ming also saw the earthworm-like writings on the black book's surface.

He was surprised to see this writing. Lin Ming could boast to understand many ancient writing systems. This was because he had gone into many mystic realms, read through many ancient texts, and had also read through and absorbed the memories of many people. But, he had never seen such writings before.

At this time, the black book suddenly released a burst of strength and nearly freed itself from Lin Ming's grasp. Lin Ming glowered and his mind chilled. The power of divinity and demons surged within him. One hand started to shine with divine light and the other hand glowed with demonic energies as he used a bit of effort to seal away the black book.

But at this time, a great deal of blood red mist had already submerged into Imperial Prince Xishen's body. As this blood red mist caused Xishen's body to regenerate, it also caused his aura to take on strange characteristics.

At this time, Lin Ming's complexion became much more earnest.

It seemed that even the power of divinity and demons wasn't enough to thoroughly seal away this black book.

Lin Ming frowned. He turned his hands and the Magic Cube space opened. The black book was placed into the Magic Cube space.

The Magic Cube was a cosmic divine tool of the highest order. Its space was also separate from the world. Without his own thoughts, there was nothing that could pass through this space.

As the black book was thrown into the Magic Cube space, the bloody mist that entered Xishen's body was also isolated.

Even so, Lin Ming didn't remain careless against this bizarre black book.

He used his mental strength to contact the Ancient Elysium Seal that was within the Magic Cube space, and then arranged for a sealing method. Although he considered himself proficient in sealing, he absolutely wasn't any better than the Ancient Elysium Seal.

As Lin Ming's thoughts spread into the Magic Cube, there was a loud whirling sound. Countless runes danced in the air of the Magic Cube space, slowly taking the form of the Divine Seal Array as it firmly covered the ancient black book.

Bang!

After the Divine Seal Array was laid down, the Ancient Elysium Seal's main body firmly stabilized the central core, suppressing the ancient book beneath the seal!

Uwuwuu –

The moment the ancient book was suppressed, the blood red eye started to wildly struggle and emit an ear-piercing cry.

To think that a book would actually cry out; the Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit felt this was incredibly strange.

“What book is this?” The Ancient Elysium Seal artifact spirit asked.

“I’m not sure. This book seems to possess an evil nature. First we will suppress it and then slowly study it afterwards.”

Lin Ming could sense that this ancient book was abnormal. But even with this ancient book, Imperial Prince Xishen was far from being Lin Ming’s match. This was because Xishen had yet to break into the Empyrean realm, and his cultivation was even slightly lower than Lin Ming’s. With the disparity of absolute strength placed in front of him, not even the evil ancient book was able to make up for this difference.

After suppressing the ancient book, Lin Ming punched Xishen once more, completely blasting open the wounds that the ancient book’s blood fog had just healed. Then, he blocked Xishen’s blood vitality and threw him into his inner world like a dead dog.

After thinking about it, Lin Ming also sealed away Soaring Feather God King’s feather in layers of seals before tossing it into the Ancient Elysium Seal’s sealing array.

………

A quadrillion trillion miles away, in another universe that was separated from the wild universe by the God Lamenting Wall –

A white-clothed woman gently passed through the starry skies. In front of her was a deep and profound expanse of purple fog. This fog was without end. It seemed like a nebula but also like some illusionary sea.

Seeing this fog, the white-clothed woman pointed outwards. Layers of clear waves surged out, splitting up the fog to reveal the starry skies. But a moment later, this fog came shrouding down once more, as if it were endless.

The white-clothed woman frowned. She stood in front of the purple fog for a moment before attacking once more.

The purple fog in front of her was in truth an illusion of the divine dream space that Empyrean Divine Dream had arranged.

And, this white-clothed woman was Soaring Feather God King!

MW Chapter 2025

Chapter 2025 – The Angered Soaring Feather

…

…

…

Soaring Feather God King had been fighting with Empyrean Divine Dream for many years. But in truth, the number of times they had directly faced each other was extremely low, and they had never wholeheartedly attacked each other.

For most of the time, the two of them used arrays to break arrays, comparing their Laws and comprehending the battle with their spiritual seas.

Of the two of them, one dual cultivated energy and divine and the other dual cultivated essence and divine. Their cultivation systems were inextricably linked with their mental strength and spiritual sea, making it so that they used all sorts of fighting methods. A single battle of the soul could continue for several years on end.

For peerless masters, finding an opponent that was similar in strength and Laws was incredibly hard, especially upon reaching the level of Soaring Feather or Divine Dream. There were few people capable of making them use their full strength in this universe.

But if a martial artist were to only go into dark seclusion to cultivate and meditate on the Laws, then they would inevitably lack things they needed. They required an appropriate environment and opponents that were on their level. This was also one of the reasons why humanity's martial arts civilization began to prosper 10 billion years ago.

Thus, for these past years, Soaring Feather and Divine Dream came to a tacit understanding in their ongoing battle. As they fought they constantly deepened their understandings into their spiritual sea and mental strength.

Originally, Soaring Feather didn't place much importance on the war between the saints and humanity. She simply didn't care about whether the saints won or not. The only reason she participated in this war was because the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had given her sufficient incentives, and at the same time she also believed that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign might rule all beneath the heavens later and achieve a higher boundary so she didn't want to offend him.

Her being able to keep Divine Dream busy in this different universe was already extremely beneficial to the saints' war efforts. And, there was another advantage; that was that Soaring Feather could rest assured as she allowed Fairy Blue Lotus to partake in the war between the humans and saints.

Soaring Feather God King was confident that with Fairy Blue Lotus's strength and intelligence, the incarnation that she had left with her, as well as the Legion of Famine that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had allowed her to command, there was no one in the entire wild universe who would be able to do anything to her.

She would be the strongest fist of the saint armies. Not even Emperor Shakya would be able to contend with her.

And in every great calamity, although there would be disasters and tribulations that sweep through the 33 Heavens, this also meant that it would be an era where geniuses from all the various races would rapidly grow.

In a war that involved all universes, this would be the best battlefield for Blue Lotus to temper herself.

In Soaring Feather God King's eyes, the greatest benefit of the war between saints and humanity was that her own disciple could adventure and gain experience within it.

As for Divine Dream, the opponent of Soaring Feather God King, she was actually not as calm or happy with the situation. In fact, Divine Dream could be said to be burning with impatience!

But no matter how anxious she was about humanity's war, at this time she had nothing else she could do. She couldn't do anything to Soaring Feather God King and definitely could not fight the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. And, if she wanted to meddle in the battles between Empyreans then she knew that Soaring Feather God King and Astral Vault God King would not allow her to.

Thus at this time, besides continuing to battle Soaring Feather God King and taking hold of every chance to increase her strength, there was no other road she could take.

She knew that humanity's ultimate enemy was in the end just one person – the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. This was also an enemy that she would inevitably have to face in the future.

Perhaps there might be a day when she could emulate the actions of Empyrean Divine Seal of the past, burning away her life to cause heavy damage to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. To Divine Dream, this was already the best result she could think of.

But there was only the slimmest of hopes in accomplishing such a goal. The more the war drummed on, the more Empyrean Divine Dream was able to feel just how strong Empyrean Divine Seal had been in the past. When he faced the extreme True Divinity level Famine he also had to face the previous Saint Sovereign who was no weaker than the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. Even then, Divine Seal was able to turn the tides of war and achieve an impossible miracle.

Divine Dream knew that there still existed a massive gap between her and Empyrean Divine Seal.

For a short period of time Soaring Feather God King wouldn't be able to break through Empyrean Divine Dream's dreamland space. Soaring Feather God King fell into contemplation. In truth, Empyrean Divine Dream didn't place much soul force into this array formation and it was poor in intensity. If Soaring Feather God King wished for it, she could erase this array formation with absolute strength. But she didn't do so. Rather, she slowly deduced its mysteries to exercise and further enhance her Laws.

But before even a third of the required time passed for Soaring Feather God King to unravel these Laws, her hands suddenly shook. She looked up, shock and disbelief flashing in her eyes.

Just now, she felt that the incarnation she had prepared for Fairy Blue Lotus had been shattered by someone else!

Soaring Feather God King had condensed a wisp of her life's blood essence into her incarnation. Amongst Empyreans, her incarnation was nearly invincible.

Just who was it that had managed to break apart her incarnation?

How was that even possible!?

Then what about her disciple, Fair Blue Lotus?

In Soaring Feather God King's eyes, Fairy Blue Lotus, who should not have encountered any truly perilous situations, must have suffered some disastrous defeat! Otherwise there was no way she would use her final trump card.

In order to ensure the integrity of Fairy Blue Lotus's divine soul so that she would be able to break through boundaries more perfectly in the future, Soaring Feather God King didn't have Fairy Blue Lotus leave behind a wisp of her soul in a lifesoul jade slip. So, she didn't know what had happened to her.

Thinking of this, Soaring Feather God King's eyes that were filled with disbelief began to turn icy cold!

She reached out with her sense, wanting to perceive her feather that had been suppressed. But what surprised her was that although she could sense that her feather still existed, it seemed to be sealed away in some mysterious space. The Laws of this mysterious space blocked out everything, making it so that she couldn't lock onto her feather's position.

Moreover, she could clearly feel that the blood essence she attached to this feather was being slowly refined by someone else!

This caused a thick killing intent to burst out from her eyes!

This was her source blood vitality from after she had broken into the True Divinity realm. If she were to lose it then it would be a tremendous attack upon her cultivation!

“Who could it be!?”

Soaring Feather God King grit her teeth, all sorts of thoughts rapidly racing through her mind.

She first thought of Emperor Shakya.

Amongst the humans, the only one capable of breaking apart her incarnation was Divine Dream. Since Divine Dream was being delayed here, then that meant her incarnation was invincible amongst humanity.

Unless Emperor Shakya were to make another breakthrough.

But as she thought of Emperor Shakya’s age, Soaring Feather God King didn’t think that this was possible. Emperor Shakya was just too young. According to his current battle strength and talent, it was completely unreasonable for him to suddenly break into the True Divinity realm.

But no matter who it was, Soaring Feather God King would not forgive this person!

If they harmed Fairy Blue Lotus then Soaring Feather God King would chase them to the ends of the world!

Peng!

Soaring Feather God King's palm thrust out with strength. The dreamland array formation that Empyrean Divine Dream laid down suddenly burst apart, turning into countless motes of light.

At this time, Soaring Feather God King didn't have any thoughts of slowly unraveling this array formation, but instead shattered it with absolute strength.

Soaring Feather God King was anxious to return. She stepped on the void, wanting to instantly leave this star territory. But at this time, force fields began to twist around her, causing the Space Laws to change so that she couldn't use the great void shift.

In the next moment, purple fog gathered together once more, surrounding Soaring Feather God King and locking her in.

The difference now was that this purple fog was no longer a superficial comparison of Laws; rather, a truly terrifying amount of power was poured into it.

This was the divine dream space!

Shua!

The divine dream space gently quivered. Not too far away from Soaring Feather God King, a blue-clothed woman seemed to lift apart a curtain of stars, stepping through the surging space to appear in front of Soaring Feather God King.

This woman was similar to Soaring Feather God King in temperament and was similarly a goddess of her generation. She sat upon the throne in the highest heavens, overlooking the mortals below.

“Divine Dream!” Soaring Feather God King’s eyes blazed with anger. “You want to block my way?”

Empyrean Divine Dream faintly smiled. “Just now, I felt that there were tremendous fluctuations in your mood within the divine dream space, and you even broke apart my force field with absolute strength. Naturally, I had to come take a look. It seems as if… you have some urgent matters to attend to?”

Empyrean Divine Dream’s clothes fluttered around her. Her tone was not slow or hurried, like a warm spring through winter, beautiful to the ears.

But as these words fell into Soaring Feather God King’s ears, they were actually grating to hear.

"Get out of my way!"

Soaring Feather God King coldly said.

"I'm afraid that isn't going to happen." Empyrean Divine Dream gently raised her right hand, a flower petal slowly revolving around her fingertips. She faintly guessed that it was something related to battles between the juniors that had startled Soaring Feather God King so. And if it was bad news to Soaring Feather God King, then it was definitely good news to her. In any case, she couldn't easily allow her to withdraw.

"The rivers run 30 years east and then 30 years west. Since you held me back here before so that I couldn't return to the wild universe, it's my turn to repay the favor."

Soaring Feather God King flung out her sleeves, her face an icy mask. "Do you think that with Astral Vault God King also coming, you will still be able to hold me here?"

"To have you stay for a moment is another moment won." Divine Dream's voice was indifferent as she slowly pulled out a sword...

…………

The faint and ethereal starry skies were limitless and without end. Floating within these starry skies was a continent, and this continent was covered with spirit springs and wonderful treasures of heaven and earth.

This was a land contained within Lin Ming's universe.

At this time, four of the saint generals – Highsun, Darkmoon, Blue Lotus, and Xishen, had all been thrown onto this continent after having their blood energy completely locked away.

Their bodies were bound with Law curse seals; even moving the tiniest fraction was difficult.

"Motherfucker, this hurts!" Highsun struggled to twist his neck, causing his bones to emit loud crackling sounds. "This damned demon, I have no idea what he plans to do with us."

Highsun cursed. Considering things, he was in a relatively good situation; at the very least he was able to stand. The most pitiful one was Xishen. All of Xishen's bones had been broken and he was lying on the ground like a puddle of meat, only able to emit weak groans.

At this time, Fairy Blue Lotus was carefully observing Lin Ming's inner world. As she investigated the world around her, she began to discover the differences here.

“This world seems… like it doesn’t have any difference from the outside universe… could we really be in an inner world?”

Fairy Blue Lotus muttered, unsure of herself. Could this be the inner world of an abyssal demon? The Laws, matter, and origin energy here were so real…

Before Highsun and Darkmoon could respond, space began to distort in front of them. A black-clothed Lin Ming appeared, his spear in hand. As Lin Ming arrived on this continent, he firmly stood a hundred feet away from the four.

MW Chapter 2026

Chapter 2026 – The Wonderful Use of Captives

…

…

…

Seeing that dark star Lin Ming, the four saint generals felt their hearts tighten.

“What do you plan on doing to us?”

Fairy Blue Lotus asked. After reaching such a cliff, she couldn’t imagine any way to escape. Now the only way she could live was if she used this mysterious person’s greed against him. Since he had caged them here he inevitably must be plotting some scheme, otherwise he would have long since killed them.

Lin Ming didn’t reply. Fairy Blue Lotus sent Highsun and Darkmoon a sound transmission, “Follow my lead and don’t speak…”

Highsun and Darkmoon inwardly nodded. At this time they could only depend on Fairy Blue Lotus. As for Xishen, he could be entirely ignored. Right now, he couldn’t even speak.

Lin Ming remained silent. He stepped through the void and appeared right in front of Fairy Blue Lotus. He stood high above her in a commanding position, overlooking her below.

This was the suppression brought by the overwhelming disparity in strength. Fairy Blue Lotus held her breath. Facing a mysterious powerhouse like Lin Ming as well as the aura that rolled off his body, she felt as if she were gasping for breath every moment.

She was even afraid that Lin Ming would let loose his bestial nature in the next moment and return to his demonic origins. If so, the consequences would be unimaginable.

Fairy Blue Lotus bit her lips, her complexion slightly pale. “If you have any conditions, speak them.”

Fairy Blue Lotus was highly familiar with the weaknesses of the heart. Of course, this was entirely based upon the premise that this demon in human form also had a human-like disposition.

She already decided that no matter what conditions this person proposed, she wouldn’t fully agree nor would she fully reject.

This was the method of negotiations with the highest chance of survival.

If she were to directly reject him so that this person didn’t see any hopes of success, he might kill them off.

At the same time, if she were to agree to readily and allow him to easily achieve his goal, then he also might kill them off to erase all witnesses.

She had to look for that singular balance point between agreeing and refusing, so that this person would see hope but also not obtain victory immediately.

This balance point was what her life stood upon!

“This is the greatest test I have encountered in my life. I must calculate his mindset…”

Fairy Blue Lotus thought to herself. However, she never imagined that not only would Lin Ming not say any words, but he would instead reach out his hand, revealing four floating balls of meat above his palm!

These balls of meat slowly wriggled and crept, as if they were four hearts.

However, tiny tentacles danced around them like those of a jellyfish, all of them continuously waving about.

No matter what Fairy Blue Lotus could calculate, she would never calculate such a situation occurring. She didn't need to use her sense to immediately understand that this was the flesh and blood of Famine!

Immediately, Fairy Blue Lotus's face turned paper white!

She didn't need to be a genius to understand just what this person was planning to do – he wanted to implant the flesh and blood of Famine within their bodies!

After personally experiencing this mysterious person's ability to control the Legion of Famine, Fairy Blue Lotus didn't doubt that as long as he implanted the flesh and blood of Famine within her, she would completely become his puppet. She would accept all orders obediently and lose all independent will.

If he wanted her to kneel then she would kneel. If he wanted her to die then she would die. If he wanted her to offer up her primordial yin then she would offer up her primordial yin. She would turn into the most loyal and most pitiful servant, one with no thoughts of her own.

She would rather die than be reduced to such a slave.

"Just kill me!"

Seeing the flesh and blood of Famine slowly float above Lin Ming's palm, Fairy Blue Lotus felt her heart shrink in her chest.

Behind Fairy Blue Lotus, Highsun and Darkmoon, and even the half-dead Xishen felt as if they had fallen into any ice lake. This was truly a fate more horrifying than death.

"You want to die? Keep on dreaming."

Lin Ming grabbed Fairy Blue Lotus's neck and reached out his hand. The flesh and blood of Famine followed.

This flesh and blood of Famine had been taken out from a part of the Legion of Famine's saint martial artists. It was the most distilled essence, capable of controlling an Empyrean level powerhouse!

Lin Ming wanted to know; once these four saint general top-level geniuses were fused with the flesh and blood of Famine, just what kind of combat strength would they be able to display?

The flesh and blood of Famine utterly obeyed Lin Ming's command. After implanting it, he would gain four loyal and devoted super minions. To have them sweep away the saint armies would be no problem at all.

Of course, if Lin Ming wanted to he could take out the flesh and blood of Famine at any moment, restoring their freedom of will.

To possess such an ability was truly convenient. Lin Ming even felt a bit of envy towards the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's methods.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign planned to use the flesh and blood of Famine to slowly take control of the entire world.

Then, why couldn't Lin Ming do the same?

"You! You… my master will not let you go!"

Fairy Blue Lotus said between clenched teeth, her voice difficult to hear. For her to use her master as a threat already proved that her fear had reached the extreme, otherwise she wouldn't use such a cheap and shameful threat. This was the same as a tussle between children, and then one of the children running away while screaming for their mother.

But at this time, Lin Ming had already grabbed Fairy Blue Lotus's neck and had lifted her up.

"No... no..."

Even though Fairy Blue Lotus was normally calm, she had already lost her composure and was panicking, wildly struggling about. The ball of meat continued to wriggle about in Lin Ming's hand, extending its small tentacles towards her. In her eyes, this was the most terrifying demon in the world.

"Just happily be my servant." Lin Ming indifferently said, his words causing Fairy Blue Lotus to wish that she could commit suicide. At the same time, Lin Ming grabbed the flesh and blood of Famine and then placed it above Fairy Blue Lotus's chest.

"Ahhh!"

Fairy Blue Lotus miserably cried out!

All she felt was numbness at her chest. The flesh and blood of Famine had bitten open her chest and was drilling into her body.

It was a strange and macabre feeling to know that she was losing herself. She felt itchy all over even as her entire body tingled with numbness.

This bizarre feeling nearly caused Fairy Blue Lotus to bite off her tongue in response; she would rather the process be agonizingly painful so she could faint here.

Hualala!

The flesh and blood of Famine continued to wriggle onwards. Fairy Blue Lotus's eyes turned blood red. Her delicate body violently shook as she took great gasping breaths.

However, no matter how she struggled she couldn't change her destiny.

"You... you... you... don't..."

Fairy Blue Lotus could no longer form complete sentences. Fragrant drops of sweat rolled down her body, soaking her clothes.

And at this time, Lin Ming continued to grab onto Fairy Blue Lotus's neck, his eyes so cold that they caused one to shiver.

His gaze fell upon Highsun, Darkmoon, and Xishen. All of them began to sweat all over. They finally realized that after falling into the hands of this demon, even dying might be an impossible hope!

Slowly, Fairy Blue Lotus's struggles died down. Drool leaked out from the corners of her lips. Lin Ming released her, allowing her to slump onto the ground like a wet noodle.

Lin Ming looked at her. At this time, the flesh and blood of Famine had already turned into tiny threads that permeated her heart and every other inch of her body. Even her spiritual sea was invaded by the flesh and blood of famine.

The flesh and blood of Famine had thoroughly fused with her body.

As the more formidable life form, after Fairy Blue Lotus and Famine's mortal body fused together into a single being, the flesh and blood of Famine naturally took command of her body and mind.

If Lin Ming wanted to he could have the flesh and blood of Famine remain in a slumbering condition so that Fairy Blue Lotus was no different from normal, and there would also be no influence on her thoughts. But once he activated the flesh and blood of Famine, she would become his most loyal slave.

Lin Ming looked at Fairy Blue Lotus. With a thought, he activated the flesh and blood of Famine.

Fairy Blue Lotus trembled. Bewilderment flashed in her eyes. She dazedly looked at Lin Ming with confusion. Slowly, this confusion turned into reverence.

This feeling was like a low level life form seeing the king of their own race. This was an obedience and respect that came from the depths of their bloodline.

She crawled up from the ground and knelt before Lin Ming. She lovingly kissed his feet, saying, “Blue Lotus greets Master.”

“Very good.”

Lin Ming smiled. With four Empyrean level super minions as well as over 90% of the remaining Legion of Famine, he would have an even greater advantage in his crusade against the saints!

Moreover, these four saint generals, in particular Blue Lotus, Highsun, and Darkmoon, would make it so that Astral Vault God King and Soaring Feather God King would be wary of acting against him, in fear that they would harm their disciples. These were truly multi-purpose servants!

At this time, Lin Ming turned towards Highsun, Darkmoon, and Xishen.

Highsun’s eyes stuck out of his head and he gasped like a cow. He had personally seen Fairy Blue Lotus’s fate and his body trembled with anger and fear. “You beast, if you have the guts then kill me! Do you dare to kill me? Come on! If you have the courage then kill me!”

Highsun pointed at his own neck, his eyes blood red. “You motherfucker, you fucking beast, if you don’t kill me today then there will surely be a day when I chop off your head and feed it to the… guh…!”

Highsun cried out pitifully. Because just now, the flesh and blood of Famine had been tossed out by Lin Ming and had flown in between his lips.

It had gone straight into his throat!

“Kah! Kuh!”

Highsun desperately grabbed at his neck, the blood vessels already sticking out like worms. But, he couldn't stop this thing from crawling into his body.

"M-mother…"

Highsun spat out with difficulty. He flew backwards and landed on the ground, slamming his head into the floor and punching his chest. But, all his efforts were for naught.

He wanted to curse at Lin Ming but because his throat was filled his words became a blur.

"You want to goad me into anger so that I will kill you in a rage? Not even a child would fall for such little tricks."

Lin Ming coldly looked at Highsun as he tumbled about on the ground. Because Highsun's energy and blood vitality had been sealed away, he couldn't even commit suicide by severing his meridians. With Highsun's intelligence, he could only think of goading Lin Ming into anger as a way to find death. However, Lin Ming didn't even care about his words.

Then, Lin Ming turned to Darkmoon.

Darkmoon had already started crying, truly crying. Great teardrops fell down like rain, making her seem pitiable.

She miserably looked at Lin Ming and held her hands against her chest. With her short height and slim figure, she looked like a 14-15 year old girl who had developed too early.

"N-no, don't do it, I'll do anything you want. You don't need to implant anything in me. I am willing to be your servant, I beg you, I'll do anything you….."

MW Chapter 2027

Chapter 2027 – War Report

…

…

…

Darkmoon grabbed onto Lin Ming's hand, her large watery eyes seeming as if they could speak.

Seeing Darkmoon's response, Lin Ming was startled. Highsun and Fairy Blue Lotus's reactions were within his anticipation, but he never expected that such a True Divinity disciple who had been arrogant and haughty since birth would actually have no bottom line.

"Your acting isn't too bad, I almost fell for it." Lin Ming gloomily said. "In order to escape the destiny of being a slave you seem willing to do anything."

"I… what I said was true, you can even give me an order now…" Darkmoon panicked. But at this time, Lin Ming had already thrust the flesh and blood of Famine into her stomach.

Darkmoon emitted an ear-piercing screech, one that spread out over an incredibly great distance. It was hard to imagine that even in a situation where her blood vitality was blocked she could still emit such a cry.

"It's unfortunate, but I would rather believe in the flesh and blood of Famine, otherwise wouldn't you try to tear me apart when I meet Astral Vault God King? With the flesh and blood of Famine implanted in you, I can at least drag you in front."

Lin Ming dropped this sentence then no longer bothered with Darkmoon.

He approached Xishen. Xishen's eyes were dark and lightless. He looked at Lin Ming, humorlessly smiling without speaking another word.

Lin Ming didn't waste time. He directly placed the flesh and blood of Famine into the open wound on Xishen's chest.

After another incense stick of time, the flesh and blood of Famine had thoroughly fused with the four saint generals. As for the runic seals that Lin Ming had placed in these people's bodies, he slowly lifted them as well as freeing the power of their blood vitality.

Afterwards, the powerful mortal body functions of the saint race began to reveal themselves. The wounds that the flesh and blood of Famine had bitten open began to slowly regenerate without even leaving a scar behind. Even the most heavily injured Imperial

Prince Xishen started to restore his strength and ability to walk, his skeleton loudly stitching itself together.

After another four hours, the four people had recovered. They all knelt in front of Lin Ming.

“Subordinate Blue Lotus greets Master.”

“Subordinate Darkmoon greets Master.”

“Subordinate Highsun greets Master.”

“Subordinate Xishen greets Master.”

“Very good. You all can continue cultivating for now. I will issue orders to you later. Xishen, tell me, what is this black book? Where does it come from?”

Lin Ming took out the black book from his inner world.

Xishen respectfully replied, “Reporting to Master, this book is something that this subordinate obtained within an ancient tomb in the Primeval Realm Ruins. As for what exactly it is, I do not know. But, I cannot open this book nor can I read the writings. I only know that it contains a demonic strength, and if used in battle can greatly increase my strength. But, after using it I will feel particularly exhausted. It is because of this that I tried not to use this black book as much as possible in order to avoid any permanent wounds or leave behind any hidden dangers…”

Xishen explained everything he knew to Lin Ming, without concealing anything at all. Lin Ming frowned; what Xishen knew basically wasn’t useful to him at all.

“So it's something obtained in the Primeval Realm Ruins. This Primeval Realm Ruins seems to contain some secret…”

Lin Ming had already heard of the Primeval Realm Ruins multiple times before. It was a world that was separate from the 33 Heavens, and some people believed that it was the shattered fragments of a world left behind after some ancient world collapsed, and it was only because of its connection to the Dark Abyss’s enchantment that it didn’t completely break apart.

This was because the entrance to the Dark Abyss was located within the Primeval Realm Ruins. And this entrance seemed to have existed since time immemorial, even making the associated Primeval Realm Ruins stable.

The Primeval Realm Ruins were under the control of the saints. It was a land filled with heaven-defying lucky chances but also incomparably perilous dangers. If one had a great destiny as well as a great strength, then it wouldn’t be strange to find the inheritance of an upper True Divinity master within it.

Lin Ming began earnestly studying the black book. He continued to pour in various energies, including true essence, spirit essence, astral essence, the power of divinity, and even the power of demons. But, none of his attempts were effective.

Lin Ming then tried to use the Laws of the Holy Scripture and Asura Sutra. But, the Law runes he sent out were eventually destroyed as they entered the misty cover of the black book, disappearing without a trace.

Thus, Lin Ming had no choice but to temporarily give up on studying this black book. He threw it back into his inner world and continued to suppress it with the Ancient Elysium Seal.

With another thought, Lin Ming took out Soaring Feather God King's feather from the Magic Cube space.

This feather was only half a foot long and seemed like a spear cast from cold iron. Lin Ming didn't doubt that if he were to use this feather as a weapon, it would be able to penetrate through the mortal body of a saint Empyrean!

This was a life feather of Soaring Feather God King. It was a wonderful treasure and Lin Ming didn't plan on wasting it.

However, Lin Ming discovered that Soaring Feather God King had laid down some Law curse seals within the feather. If anyone were to tamper with it then the feather would self-destruct.

Although Lin Ming was confident in his abilities to unravel the curse seals, he didn't want to waste the time.

Now, the saints and humans were at war, and every moment meant more corpses. His time was extremely precious, and he estimated that if this were normal times and he wanted to refine this life feather, it might take around a year. This was time that he couldn't afford to use up.

His thoughts stirred. He looked towards Fairy Blue Lotus.

"I want to refine your master's life feather. Do you have any shortcuts you can provide me with?"

Fairy Blue Lotus's mind shook. Pain and hesitation seemed to flash through her limpid eyes. She wanted to comply with Lin Ming's order, but doing so seemed as if it would cause her to lose something precious in her heart, making her incomparably sad.

Lin Ming was surprised by the feelings that flitted through Fairy Blue Lotus's eyes. This wasn't simple at all. Even though the flesh and blood of Famine had invaded her spiritual sea and she was also being controlled by his overwhelming mental strength, she still managed to retain a faint trace of her self-awareness.

But what a pity, her will was no match for his own.

Lin Ming had passed through six cycles of reincarnation and had comprehended the impermanence of the world. With his strong faith added in, the differences between their mental strengths were far too great.

“Can you? Or can’t you?”

Lin Ming quietly said, his voice swift and fierce. Fairy Blue Lotus shook and the brightness in her eyes blurred and faded once more.

She knelt to the floor and obediently said, “Reporting to Master, in order to undo my honorable master’s curse seals that she placed in this life feather, the process involves the inheritance of my Soaring Feather God Mountain’s True Divinity cultivation method – the Feather Conversion Art. Although I have looked through the entire Feather Conversion Art, my cultivation is limited and I am unable to repeat it to Master. But, repeating a portion of it so that Master can use it to undo the Law curse seals within the life feather in a shorter period of time is still possible.”

“Good!” Lin Ming was overjoyed. “If I can refine your master’s life feather then I will record that as a merit for you. I will reward you in the future so that your strength can rise to another level.”

Lin Ming casually promised. Fairy Blue Lotus had followed Soaring Feather God King for many years, and what Soaring Feather was able to teach her had likely already been taught. All that was left over was for Fairy Blue Feather to perceive it on her own. If Fairy Blue Lotus wanted to find any particular point to improve on in the martial arts road that Soaring Feather God King had guided her down then it wouldn’t be easy. But, if she followed Lin Ming then he could share some of his exclusive Laws, in particular the principles he grasped atop the Soul World’s shrine platforms, allowing her to obtain more inspirations.

Of course, if Fairy Blue Lotus were to hear about these so-called rewards when she still had her own will, then she would likely be so mad that she would start smoking.

But to the current Fairy Blue Lotus, Lin Ming’s words were like an imperial decree.

She appeared incredibly flattered, “Working for Master’s glory is what should be done. I do not dare to claim any credit.”

As she spoke, she took out a jade slip of the Feather Conversion Art and then began to pass on a portion of the Feather Conversion Art’s contents to Lin Ming’s mind with a sound transmission.

The Feather Conversion Art jade slip in Fairy Blue Lotus's hands only contained a part of it. And, this part was sealed with layers upon layers of encryptions. Without Fairy Blue Lotus explaining the jade slip then it would be impossible to see what was recorded within.

As Lin Ming listened, he watched at the same time. This Feather Conversion Art jade slip seemed to contain infinite illusions, as if there were a kaleidoscopic world within.

Lin Ming praised in his mind. What a wonderful Feather Conversion Art! In terms of the Great Dao Laws, although it was much worse than the Holy Scripture, it specialized in different things. The Holy Scripture elaborated on the paths of life and death, but the Feather Conversion Art focused on the mind, illusions, and divine sense attacks. The Feather Conversion Art detailed many attack methods, and in this it actually reached the peak.

The layers upon layers of the Great Dao of Illusions were entirely comprehensive. With a single step one could see another landscape, leaving one dizzied and unable to take it all in.

“If Master has any questions, please ask me. I will always be awaiting your orders.”

After another two hours, Fairy Blue Lotus finally finished her sound transmissions and bowed.

“Very good!” Lin Ming waved a hand. “I will go into seclusion for ten days. You may all recuperate from your wounds and acts as protectors outside!”

The four saint generals bowed and withdrew, leaving behind only Lin Ming. As he took stock of his harvests from this battle, it could be described as colossal.

Lin Ming had obtained four loyal and devoted super minions, the Legion of Famine, the mysterious black book, as well as the life feather and Feather Conversion Art of Soaring Feather God King!

With so many advantages, this was truly a great gift that the saints had given him!

Lin Ming settled his mood and rapidly entered the fused martial intent state. Behind him, a Bodhi Tree quietly appeared, its branches and leaves spreading out as an independent pure land of ultimate bliss grew around him.

Lin Ming was shrouded in infinite starlight. At this time he looked like a celestial from the highest heavens.

The Feather Conversion Art jade slip as well as Soaring Feather God King's life feather slowly floated around him, seething up and down as it was bathed in the crystalline starlight…

…….

As Lin Ming was refining Soaring Feather God King’s life feather, he didn’t know that everything that occurred in Blood Cloud Galaxy had been discovered by scouts, and this information was slowly passed throughout the wild universe!

Potala Galaxy, in a grand hall –

Humanity’s Emperor Shakya, Great Limitless Buddha, Jun Bluemoon, the primal god race’s Diwuhen, the celestial race’s Battle Sovereign To Bagui, the female god race Empyrean Lanlu that entered the Asura forbidden land with Lin Ming in the past, as well as numerous other human officers and important figures had gathered.

This was a routine military meeting. The primary purpose of this meeting was to hear the newest combat reports and then discuss the next war plan.

MW Chapter 2028

Chapter 2028 – News Worth Celebrating

…

…

…

Emperor Shakya's troops had managed to rout the Legion of Famine that had stayed in Potala Galaxy after their main force left. Although they didn't manage to kill much of the saint armies, they still managed to completely recapture Potala Galaxy.

Outside of Empyrean Divine Dream, Mount Potala's forces could be called the most formidable amongst humanity.

Since they had managed to stabilize their foothold they naturally wouldn't think of hiding in this tiny little corner of the world. Rather, they would venture outwards and strike at the saints on their own initiative!

Now they were even preparing their attack plans.

“Everyone, we have now managed to bring together a considerable force. I believe that what we must first do is rescue our companions!

“Because we had to delay for time, many of our people dispersed and hid in the most hidden corners of the wild universe. Although this naturally made it much harder for the saints to find us, once they did find anyone then the only result was utter defeat. If this continues, then as long as the saints have enough time, they will sooner or later exterminate us all.

“We cannot sit by and idly wait for death; we must move immediately and rescue our fellow humans who have been forced into hopeless situations!”

Emperor Shakya iterated the key point of this meeting. Now with so many human influences in imminent danger, the question was: which ones should they rescue first?

Everyone looked towards Emperor Shakya and also felt troubled for him. To rescue one influence was to mean giving up on another. However, he had to make a choice.

“We have to consider the larger picture. There are currently two vital rescue targets that we have designated. The first is the Hidden Dragon Galaxy! It has already been a long time since our information network with the Hidden Dragon Galaxy was severed. I even suspect that Dragon Fang and Xiao Moxian have been encircled by the enemy. Whether it is Xiao Moxian, Lin Huang, or Dragon Fang, they are the future hopes of humanity. In particular, Xiao Moxian and Lin Huang. The two of them are the ones most closely related to Lin Ming, and Lin Ming was the one who risked his life for us in the past in order to exchange it for the slimmest possible hopes of survival for the human race and thus open the gates of the wild universe to us. Since Lin Ming has passed on, we must ensure the survival of his lineage no matter what.

"But besides the Hidden Dragon Galaxy, there is also another rescue target. That is... the mysterious man who has recently appeared! All clues indicate that the main force of the Legion of Famine left Potala Galaxy for this person. Since he has done his best to buy time for us, we cannot sit by and do nothing. Moreover, this mysterious person has formidable strength, and an enemy of an enemy is a friend. He might be able to provide us with good fortunate and a turning pointing in our war against the saints. We cannot just let him perish beneath the Legion of Famine..."

As Emperor Shakya spoke to here, some people were already frowning, their eyebrows knit together. "Should we divide our forces?"

Although their current gathered forces were formidable, when it came to facing the Good Fortune Saint Son or the Legion of Famine, they were nothing to look at. And, dividing their forces would only make them weaker.

"This is what we are here today to discuss..." Emperor Shakya said, "We must weigh the advantages and disadvantages and then follow through with the most effective plan..."

As Emperor Shakya spoke, the sound of rapid footsteps echoed through the grand hall.

"Urgent message!"

A messenger shouted from outside the hall.

"Enter!"

Emperor Shakya felt his heart skip a beat. While a military meeting was being convened, outside disturbances were normally not allowed. Unless it was information of the highest priority it wouldn't be sent here. Now that the messenger was at the entrance of the hall, it could be imagined how important this information was.

In these past years Emperor Shakya had received far too many urgent messages. But, over 90% of them were bad news. As the war in the wild universe continued, humanity had suffered defeat after defeat, and there was rarely a case of victory. Even if there were occasional victories, such as the successful elimination of the remnant saint forces in Potala Galaxy, those were simply superficial events.

What humanity needed now was a hearty great victory, a true success that would rouse their morale!

"Where is this news from?" Emperor Shakya's complexion was solemn. He was afraid that whatever news this was, it wouldn't be good. Humanity was already hovering on the edge of the abyss and they were finding it hard to weather the continued attacks of the saints.

“Urgent information from the Blood Cloud Galaxy!” The messenger proffered the combat report jade slip with both hands. This information was gathered by the scouts and the rank of the information was decided by the captain of the scouting team. As for what it was, the messenger didn’t know.

“Blood Cloud Galaxy!”

Emperor Shakya’s eyes shot wide open. Could this be a combat reported related to the mysterious person being ambushed by the Legion of Famine?

It wasn’t just Emperor Shakya, but everyone else in the hall felt their hearts tighten.

This mysterious person that had miraculously appeared from nowhere and also had the saints suffer defeat after defeat – they wouldn’t have perished like this, right?

Emperor Shakya took a deep breath and probed the contents of the jade slip.

He had already steeled himself for bad news. However, when he finally looked into the contents of the jade slip, he was shocked silent.

He even suspected that he had misread. He scanned the combat report jade slip several times and after making sure he read everything, he froze like a statue.

“How is this…”

“Senior Emperor Shakya, just what happened?”

All the eyes in the hall were focused on Emperor Shakya. They saw that he remained speechless after looking through the jade slip, and these actions left them a bit worried.

Seeing everyone’s curious gaze, Emperor Shakya finally responded. He looked at the gathered crowd and was at a loss for words.

“It is… you can take a look yourself.”

Emperor Shakya had a strange expression as he passed the jade slip to others.

These people immediately scanned the jade slip. This type of combat report jade slip was originally able to allow several other people to read it at the same time.

Then, as they read through the contents…

They were all left dumbfounded together, almost as if they were living some kind of dream.

This was truly explosive news that would rock the 33 Heavens!

The jade slip had some images recorded within, all of them showing the scene of the Blood Cloud Galaxy after the great battle. There were ruined fragments of celestial bodies all over, and beneath these images were a few lines of simple words:

“A great battle has occurred in the Blood Cloud Galaxy. We have discovered that Fairy Blue Lotus laid down an ambush for the mysterious person in the Blood Cloud Galaxy around a month or two ago and waited for them to rush in. A battle occurred, but as for exactly what happened or how the battle unfolded, we are not sure of the specifics. This is what we know after several days of investigating.

“The main force of the Legion of Famine has been completely annihilated within Blood Cloud Galaxy!

“Blood Cloud Galaxy’s Heavenly Palace and their spirit ships have all been disintegrated to dust!

“The Blood Cloud Galaxy support unit, besides those members that were carrying missions outside, were all destroyed, with not even a single stationed guard remaining!

“Four of the saint generals have gone missing!

“The above situation is suspected to be the work of the mysterious person. More details are being investigated…”

……

For a time, the entire meeting hall fell into silence. Several people felt their jaws drop down as they were unable to believe what was written in the jade slip. But, the images spoke for themselves. The saint race’s Heavenly Palace and the fleets of spirit ships had all been destroyed!

In particular, the nearly invincible Legion of Famine! There should be no force beneath that of a True Divinity capable of resisting their attack, yet such a legion had been annihilated!?

Was this possible?

In fact, it was thought that this mysterious person was incredibly powerful and would be able to escape the Legion of Famine’s pursuit. Of course, this was under the premise that he knew there was an ambush laid out ahead of time for them, so that he could preempt their actions.

But for this mysterious person to eliminate the Legion of Famine, that was a nearly unimaginable matter!

“This… there might be a mistake!”

Diwuhen said with disbelief thick in his voice. This news was simply too shocking. He had personally witnessed the strength of the Legion of Famine and wasn’t able to believe that there truly existed someone with such ability.

“The captain responsible for overseeing the scout team is this old monk’s great direct disciple. He was naturally born with inherent arcane abilities that could peer into the far-off distance and listen to voices on the endless wind. He should have been able to view the image of the saints from afar using some clues in order to analyze his information. He is a calm and alert individual, and even if the information we obtain is slightly different, it shouldn’t be anything too absurd…”

Great Limitless Buddha slowly said. Normally, he was the calmest and most peaceful of the eminent monks, but now even he found it difficult to maintain his composure. As he twisted his buddha beads the speed at which he did so was clearly much faster than normal.

“No matter what the case is, we must be careful. Could this be false news intentionally spread by the saints so that we walk into their trap?” Battle Sovereign To Bagui furrowed his eyebrows, still finding it hard to fully trust the combat report jade slip.

Emperor Shakya shook his head. “The possibility isn’t too likely. Originally, as long as Fairy Blue Lotus led the Legion of Famine to search through Potala Galaxy, we would have suffered defeat sooner or later. As for the Hidden Dragon Galaxy, any accident there would be a good situation for the saints. But, the Legion of Famine suddenly withdrew their forces from Potala Galaxy to return to Blood Cloud Galaxy which in turn gave us a chance to catch our breath.

“Moreover, the Heavenly Palace at Blood Cloud Galaxy was truly destroyed. The fragments of the spirit ships and the Heavenly Palace have been verified to be real. If this really was a charade, then why would they destroy a Heavenly Palace and kill off so many of their disciples, even giving us a chance to stabilize and restore morale? Just what would the goal behind such actions be?”

As Emperor Shakya spoke, everyone fell silent.

Indeed, when two armies faced off in a war, putting on a ruse or faking some weakness wasn’t a rare act. But, those who did such things were always on the losing end. Would the saints really harm themselves to put on such a meaningless act?

“Who is this mysterious person?” The god race’s Empyrean Lanlu muttered, a strange light flashing in her eyes.

“I also wish to know. If there is a chance, I would truly love to see him!”

……..

After Mount Potala obtained news of the Legion of Famine, other human influences also obtained this information.

But, because news of the Legion of Famine's utter destruction still required proof, no one dared to publicize it. This was a precaution just in case it really was a smokescreen that the saints had put up. If it was, then these human influences would not only be made into jokes but the morale of humanity would also suffer.

So for these past days, whether it was the humans or saints, neither side found it easy to remain tranquil.

In fact, within the Blood Cloud Galaxy, there were even more saint scouts. But they didn't manage to find much new information.

Lin Ming may control the Legion of Famine, but even at this point in time no one knew of it.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn't know either.

This was because Lin Ming had used the Magic Cube to completely erase the spirit marks that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had left within the Legion of Famine, and according to the previous experiences of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, spirit marks being destroyed would only occur because the Legion of Famine had been destroyed.

If the flesh and blood of Famine was destroyed then the spirit marks would naturally disappear. As for someone capable of counter-controlling the flesh and blood of Famine, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had never met such an existence before.

MW Chapter 2029

Chapter 2029 – Diverting Troops to the Hidden Dragon Galaxy

…

…

…

Hidden Dragon Galaxy, Good Fortune Saint Palace –

Pah!

A terrifying detonation sounded out and astral essence so thick that it was visible to the naked eye began to spread out in white ripples. The surrounding void shattered as a red beast was smashed in the back by a tall man.

This beast emitted a sorrowful howl as it collapsed to the ground.

Kacha!

Because the large dragon crashed into the ground, a crater formed that was over a hundred miles long.

The tall man landed atop the peak of a rocky mountain. His naked upper body revealed sculpted muscles as hard as rock, making him look like a prideful war god.

This tall man dressed in red was the Good Fortune Saint Son.

This space was a martial arts practice field used by him. It was a small world located in the Good Fortune Saint Palace, and this beast that was wounded here was the hybrid descendant of a God Beast and ancient vicious beast.

Within the Good Fortune Saint Palace, there were super beasts with impure bloodlines being raised and bred all year long. These animals were used as opponents for the genius disciples of the Saint Palace to train with. Although these beasts possessed impure bloodlines, they were still incredibly precious creatures. Even so, here they were used as nothing but sandbags by others. From this one could see how ridiculously wealthy the Good Fortune Saint Palace was.

“Your Highness Saint Son, please take a break. If you hit this red dragon beast again it will die.”

From behind the Good Fortune Saint Son, a wild woman with wheat-colored skin stepped forwards. She carried with her a towel that she used to wipe the sweat from his face.

A cruel and fierce light flashed in the Good Fortune Saint Son’s eyes. He was in an extremely poor mood and was using this training period to vent his anger. Even so, his chest raged with a nest of fire.

This fire was all due to that mysterious person.

The Good Fortune Saint Son had obtained all news available about the Blood Cloud Galaxy at an even earlier time than Emperor Shakya.

If it were normal times, then he would have happily gloated over the losses of Imperial Prince Xishen and Fairy Blue Lotus. He would have even laughed himself awake in his dreams.

But now, the Legion of Famine hadn’t ‘suffered a loss’ but had been completely annihilated. Even four of the saint generals had gone missing!

And no matter how the Good Fortune Saint Son thought about it, he couldn’t imagine how the mysterious person had accomplished all of this.

This was the reason he felt anxious at heart. He sent for repeated investigations into the Blood Cloud Galaxy, yet he didn't manage to find anything.

The Good Fortune Saint Son didn't need to be clairvoyant to know that sooner or later, this mysterious person would come looking for him.

And when facing such a character that he knew nothing about, the Good Fortune Saint Son felt a headache even though he had the avatar of Famine. He didn't know what cards this mysterious opponent possessed or how they had eliminated the Legion of Famine.

"Your Highness Saint Son, there is no need to worry. If things are truly unwell, how about notifying His Majesty the Saint Sovereign?"

The young and beautiful woman tentatively suggested as she saw the Good Fortune Saint Son's expression.

"Inform His Majesty the Sovereign Ancestor?" The Good Fortune Saint Son immediately frowned and the young woman fell silent.

"Do you think that His Majesty the Saint Sovereign doesn't know the Legion of Famine has been destroyed? Every martial artist within the Legion of Famine has a spirit mark left behind by His Majesty the Sovereign Ancestor, and whether they are dead or alive, His Majesty the Sovereign Ancestor is well aware!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son coldly muttered.

The 33 Heavenly Daos were the most common Great Daos of the universe; they were no trifling matter. As for Famine, it was being used to swallow up the causal relationship that humanity had with the 33 Heavenly Dao's Nine Divine Shifts.

But even so, this causal relationship was a part of the Heavenly Dao Laws. For a mortal to dare reverse the rules of the Heavenly Dao, they would be forced to suffer the scourge of the heavens!

This wasn't something that one could stop just because they wanted to.

And in the process of swallowing the Nine Divine Shifts, Famine and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would have to withstand heavenly tribulation.

In the world of martial artists, heavenly tribulation wasn't some incredibly rare phenomenon. Whenever someone rose to the level of the Heavenly Dao rules they would have to withstand heavenly tribulation.

But the Heavenly Dao rules were also divided into those that were lower and those that were higher. For instance, when a martial artist broke into the Empyrean realm, when a transcendent divine might was created, when a transcendent divine pill was refined, when a God Beast underwent nirvana and grew up, all of these actions would summon heavenly tribulation.

However, these types of heavenly tribulation were only of the lowest order. When compared to the Nine Divine Shifts that Famine was swallowing, the difference was as great as the heavens and earth.

The Good Fortune Saint Son couldn't imagine just what the heavenly tribulation that fell upon Famine's body would be like. But, what he knew was that if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and Famine could both withstand and survive this heavenly tribulation, that would be an incredible advantage for them!

With swallowing a portion of the Heavenly Dao, Famine might be able to undergo another evolution. If so, then the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would be another step closer to reaching the boundary Beyond Divinity.

High risks meant high returns. In fact, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had undergone a hundred million years of preparation before daring to attempt something like this. He wanted to try what Famine did 3.6 billion years ago.

The dangers were astronomical. The slightest mistake would mean him disintegrating into nothing!

With this in mind, the Good Fortune Saint Son couldn't disturb the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign no matter what. In fact, the area where the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had gone into seclusion was a secret of the highest magnitude; not even he knew where it was.

When it came to something like this, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wouldn’t trust anyone.

In particular, there was still his greatest rival – the Soul Emperor. With this person’s transcendent methods, it wouldn’t be difficult for him to extract any information he desired from the Good Fortune Saint Son’s mind.

This mysterious Soul Emperor was the character that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign feared most in his life.

Even now, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn’t know what endgame the Soul Emperor was playing towards. However, he had no doubts about how vast the Soul Emperor’s ambitions were. If he wanted to contend with the Soul Emperor then he could only rely on Famine.

If Famine was able to evolve further then it would be able to devour the infinite energy, matter, and Laws of the universe, allowing it to become infinitely close to the Beyond Divinity boundary. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign might even be able to use Famine to swallow the Soul Emperor’s destiny, and perhaps even the karma between the spiritas and the Heavenly Dao!

At that time, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would no longer fear the Soul Emperor.

The chess game of the world and its secrets, the true thoughts within the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's heart, these were things that the Good Fortune Saint Son only vaguely knew about. The eyes of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and the Good Fortune Saint Son saw the world differently.

All that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign saw was this world chess game, and the only ones playing it were the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and the Soul Emperor. As for everyone else, including the Good Fortune Saint Son, the many saint Empyreans, the Legion of Famine, humanity, Empyrean Divine Dream, everyone else within the world, they were nothing but mere chess pieces!

The only difference was that these board pieces varied between big and small, important and unimportant.

Towards all of this, the Good Fortune Saint Son didn't feel sad or chagrined at all; this was the inevitable result that came from a disparity of absolute strength.

At the same time, he naturally wasn't resigned to forever remaining a chess piece. Thus he had to continuously increase his strength.

And presently, this mysterious person before him was a great challenge!

If he couldn’t pass this test and had to rely on the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign who couldn’t and wouldn’t help him, then what qualifications did he have to become a chess player in the future?

Thinking of this, the Good Fortune Saint Son began to seethe with fighting spirit.

If they want to come then come, if they want to fight then fight!

The Good Fortune Saint Son circulated his astral essence and evaporated all the sweat and grime that covered him. Then, he put on his robes and battle armor and stepped out of the small world. He arrived at the official meeting hall, and it was at this time that a scout passed him another combat report jade slip. This jade slip left the Good Fortune Saint Son completely stunned.

This was something that the saint scouts had found in the wreckage of the Heavenly Palace at Blood Cloud Galaxy – it was a crystal fragment with an image contained within.

And coincidentally, this crystal fragment recorded the incomplete image of that mysterious person.

In this image, a mysterious man rode atop a Black Dragon. He held a spear, shattering planets with a wave of his hand!

This recording only lasted a brief moment, but the moment that the Good Fortune Saint Son saw it he felt his heart skip a beat and his complexion turn ugly.

As for the saint race military officers that were standing in the meeting hall, none of them dared to speak as they saw the Good Fortune Saint Son glower upon obtaining this information jade slip. They were afraid of attracting his anger.

For a time, the entire hall fell silent.

The Good Fortune Saint Son's complexion changed again and again, all sorts of thoughts rapidly racing through his mind.

"The weapon is a spear… the mount is a dragon… how can there be such a coincidence…"

He definitely remembered what occurred over 6000 years ago when he fought in the most shameful battle of his life. During the Monster Emperor's grand longevity feast, Lin Ming had jumped ranks to defeat him. Moreover, Lin Ming had leapt past an entire large boundary to do so – a Divine Lord had defeated a Holy Lord.

At the time, Lin Ming had taken out a stake for his gambling fight. That was – a dragon egg!

In addition to this mysterious person's weapon… the Good Fortune Saint Son suddenly felt an ominous premonition cloud his heart.

Although the person in this image, whether it was in cultivation methods or appearance, didn't match with Lin Ming, the Good Fortune Saint Son still thought that this person might be him.

This was a speculation purely based upon his intuition. In the past when Soaring Feather God King said that Lin Ming had died, the Good Fortune Saint Son was a bit disbelieving of this news. In his opinion, Lin Ming possessed an incredibly tough life. Would he really die so easily?

"It shouldn't be…"

For a time, the Good Fortune Saint Son felt a cold chill creep in his heart, an unease and nervousness that shot up his back.

Those bitten by a snake would be afraid of ropes for 10 years. The Good Fortune Saint Son was a proud and lofty individual, but he actually held an unusually profound fear towards Lin Ming. This was a scab in his heart that was hard to heal.

"Relay my orders, issue an emergency command! Summon the Empyreans at Saint Convocation Heaven that are guarding the entrance to the wild universe! From the first legion to the sixth legion, have all of them move to the Hidden Dragon Galaxy!"

“What?”

Suddenly hearing the Good Fortune Saint Son’s orders, the saint military officers present were left bewildered. Just what was the Good Fortune Saint Son planning?

Saint Convocation Heaven was the supreme stronghold of the saints and also where their main forces were located. If the first to sixth legions were all transferred here, wouldn’t that just flood the Hidden Dragon Galaxy?

Could so many people be summoned just to deal with one Xiao Moxian?

“This is… His Majesty the Saint Sovereign ordered these armies to guard Saint Convocation Heaven in order to prevent any sneak attacks from the spiritas. If we are only dealing with the humans in the wild universe, they are already a race that has been beaten and broken by us. Is there really a need to draw in so many people?”

“Are you questioning me!?”

The Good Fortune Saint Son frowned, his eyebrows looking like a lion ready to pounce in the next moment. The general gulped and shook his head. After the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign went into seclusion, the Good Fortune Saint Son was now the highest authority of the saints; he would naturally obey these orders.

“What do we do about the spiritas?” Another veteran officer couldn’t help but ask.

The Good Fortune Saint Son thought for a moment before saying, “If the spiritas truly intend on coming do you think those peak Empyreans can stop them? If things really devolve to the worse situation possible then we will give Saint Convocation Heaven to them. But, I have a feeling that they will not come, otherwise His Majesty the Sovereign Ancestor would not have dared to go into seclusion at this time. Perhaps His Majesty has already guessed a part of that old freak Soul Emperor’s plans…”

“This… understood.” The several veteran officers glanced at each other and nodded in agreement.

MW Chapter 2030

Chapter 2030 – The Eve of the Storm

…

…

…

Lin Ming sat deep in meditation in a remote space. In front of him, the life blood essence from Soaring Feather God King's feather had already been drawn out.

This feather was jade green in color, and the blood thread in the center was the life blood essence of Soaring Feather God King. Now, this blood thread had condensed atop Lin Ming's fingertip, turned into a small mote of red light.

Lin Ming waved his hand and this red light sunk into his body, swimming through his blood vessels…

With the support of the Feather Conversion Art, Soaring Feather's energy didn't come into much conflict with Lin Ming. This strength was as gentle as a feather. It dissipated into thousands and millions of threads that integrated into his muscles. A faint sound, like the passing of water through a spring, echoed into the air. For a time, Lin Ming felt his body warm up.

But no matter how compatible this strength was, it would be impossible for him to completely absorb it and turn it into his own without wasting a bit. This was just like a mortal eating food. While their body could absorb it, the amount that would become their own flesh and blood was incredibly small.

Time passed. After ten days, Lin Ming was still deep in meditation. Seals of the Heavenly Dao fell down. Soaring Feather’s bloodline energy poured into Lin Ming’s inner world, gathering into the Supreme phantom.

Lin Ming’s Supreme phantom became increasingly tall as it grew more and more.

The phantom became increasingly real. The power of divinity and demons gathered within it, including all sorts of Great Dao Laws circulating throughout.

In that moment, Lin Ming felt that only the thinnest film blocked him from breaking into the Empyrean realm. As long as he put in a little effort he could truly shatter through his cocoon and become a butterfly. The Supreme phantom within his inner world would condense into true reality and he would step into the Empyrean realm!

He could even faintly feel that there was a subtle contact between him and the 33 Heavenly Daos. The power of heavenly tribulation seemed to brew high above him, eyeing him covetously.

The Empyrean boundary was a watershed. In the last 3.6 billion years of human history, besides Divine Dream, all True Divinities had gone extinct. In fact, even most human martial artists didn't know of the existence of True Divinities. Because of humanity's limited vision and their customs, when they referred to the True Divinities of ancient times they called them Empyreans.

An Empyrean meant the limit of human martial artists. Upon entering the Empyrean boundary one would step onto the highest stage of the entire Divine Realm, sitting high atop heaven and overlooking the common world below.

In the end, Lin Ming paused just before he broke into the Empyrean boundary. Afterwards, the heavenly tribulation that began brewing in the highest heavens also hid itself away…

Soaring Feather God King's blood essence was strong but its intensity didn't satisfy him.

Although he could have used it to break into the Empyrean realm, the truth was that he would have barely been able to do so.

What Lin Ming wanted was to further accumulate his energy, preparing for the time when he could truly soar!

To become a peerless powerhouse required sufficient time. Although rice could be planted and harvested in several months, True Divinity level heavenly materials often required tens or hundreds of millions of years to breed. What Lin Ming wanted was a god-level spirit treasure, and he had even decided on a better choice.

That was, the avatar of Famine that was controlled by the Good Fortune Saint Son!

Lin Ming planned on wresting away Famine's avatar and then using the massive amount of blood vitality contained within to shred apart the Empyrean bottleneck in a single go!

"Good Fortune Saint Son… it seems we are destined to be opponents. Over 6000 years ago we fought once, now, I will come looking for you once more…"

Lin Ming faintly smiled. The truth was that one of the reasons he had stirred up such chaos and turmoil in the backline of the saints was to draw the Good Fortune Saint Son to him and then capture Famine's avatar.

But, he never thought that the Good Fortune Saint Son would manage to be so calm and rational about the situation. Not only did he not come, but it was Fairy Blue Lotus and the Legion of Famine that arrived instead.

Although the sum total of the Legion of Famine was far inferior to Famine’s avatar, it was still a generous gift to Lin Ming.

Now, since the Good Fortune Saint Son didn’t plan on coming here, Lin Ming planned to look for him on his own initiative!

“Blue Lotus, where is the Good Fortune Saint Son now?” Lin Ming called out.

Fairy Blue Lotus’s eyes moved. She asked, “Does Master wish to deal with the Good Fortune Saint Son?”

“Yes.”

Lin Ming nodded. As Blue Lotus listened to this, a happy expression unexpectedly appeared on her face.

Although she was being controlled by Lin Ming, some of her previous preferences and personality had been retained. She had an extremely poor relationship with the Good Fortune Saint Son, and he had given her considerable trouble throughout the years. It was not a secret throughout the entire saint race that the two of them were struggling against each other. In fact, the reason that Fairy Blue Lotus joined forces with Xishen was in large part because they shared a common enemy in the Good Fortune Saint Son.

"Reporting to Master, the Good Fortune Saint Son has never exchanged information with us. But, according to reports from my subordinates, the Good Fortune Saint Son has been delayed in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy for a long time."

"Oh? What is he planning to do there?"

"There should be some important human figure there that he wishes to deal with. As for who it is, I am not sure. The Good Fortune Saint Son fears that if we were to find out this information then we would intrude on him and steal away his prize. So, when it comes to sharing information concerning humanity, he has never done so with us."

"Mm, I understand. Then our next stop will be the Hidden Dragon Galaxy!"

As Lin Ming spoke, he was a bit worried. Just who was this important human figure that Blue Lotus spoke of?

For such a long time, the whereabouts of the various top human influences had been kept secret. Besides themselves, no other human influences knew about their location in order to prevent spies from leaking information.

This created a great deal of hardship for Lin Ming as he tried to look for the human elites.

"Let's go!"

As Lin Ming spoke, a black palace began spinning in front of him, rapidly increasing in size until it expanded to hundreds of miles in radius. This was Primordius Heavenly Palace.

Lin Ming was the first to fly into the Heavenly Palace. Behind him, the four saint generals, 2000 World Kings, and tens of thousands of Holy Lords followed like a swarm of flies!

Everyone submerged into Primordius Heavenly Palace. The giant black palace changed shape before it sank into the void, disappearing from sight…

……….

Due to Lin Ming's actions against the Legion of Famine, a great storm had begun rising up within the Hidden Dragon Galaxy!

The saint armies of Saint Convocation Heaven were already rushing towards the Hidden Dragon Galaxy. As for the human race's Empyrean Shakya and the others, they were also organizing their forces to advance towards the Hidden Dragon Galaxy.

More and more masters began gathering.

"Dark Demon Monarch has arrived!"

At the edge of the Hidden Dragon Galaxy, where Mount Potala was stationed, Emperor Shakya's thoughts stirred. The great doors to the hall opened and a scholarly man wearing black robes and half a silver mask began walking in.

And behind this scholarly man was a black-clothed young girl.

This black-clothed young girl was extremely eye-catching. She only appeared to be around 16-17 years old and she wasn't too tall either. But, she carried a nine foot long blood red scythe on her back.

This scythe was incredibly exaggerated in build. It had three sharp fang blades that decreased in size from top to bottom, and the edges of those blades gleamed with a chilling cold. Even the smallest fang blade was half a foot wide. If such a ferocious-looking weapon were to slash a person's body, the damage it would cause could be imagined.

This scythe was much taller than the black-clothed young girl was, and she could only carry it on her back by placing it slanted. When this was combined with her milky white skin, it created an intense visual contrast.

This black-clothed young girl was named Sable Ink and she was Dark Demon Monarch's direct disciple. She possessed an outstanding talent and was even said to be second only to Xiao Moxian.

She had been born 2000 years after Xiao Moxian, and now her cultivation was at the early Great World King realm.

From Great World King to a half-step Empyrean, many geniuses required several thousand years to complete this step. Thus, even though this black-clothed girl was 2000 years younger than her peers, her cultivation wasn't much lower than Jun Bluemoon and the others'.

"Demon Monarch, it is too good to see you!"

Although Emperor Shakya was a monk, he was considered a war monk. When he spoke he had never been as restrained as Great Limitless Buddha had been. Dark Demon Monarch's arrival left Emperor Shakya overjoyed with excitement.

When it came to the combat strength of humanity's various Empyreans, Dark Demon Monarch was considered amongst the peak. Moreover, Dark Demon Palace managed to almost entirely preserve their inheritances, and they even had a future peerless genius in Sable Ink.

"Battle Buddha, Great Limitless Buddha, as well as our friends the god race and celestials, I am glad to see you all safely standing here today."

Dark Demon Monarch cupped his fists together and bowed. The feeling he gave off was that of a well-mannered gentleman, smooth and elegant.

“You have received the news too, right?”

“Is Battle Buddha referring to this mysterious person who routed the Legion of Famine, and also of the Good Fortune Saint Son gathering his troops to march upon the Hidden Dragon Galaxy?”

“Yes! I have no idea what the Good Fortune Saint Son is planning, but he has suddenly mobilized numerous armies. It somewhat feels like he is planning a showdown of some kind.”

“It should be due to that mysterious person. This mysterious person will look for the Good Fortune Saint Son sooner or later, and the Good Fortune Saint Son will not feel safe with the avatar of Famine alone. Rather, he wants numerous saint Empyreans to join forces with him. This doesn’t seem like the Good Fortune Saint Son’s normal style at all. He has always been a brash and confident individual, even somewhat haughty, but now that he is facing this mysterious person he is actually being so careful! It’s clear from this just how much he fears this person.”

“This mysterious person is indeed incredible. The saints have been in the limelight for far too long. With the spiritas remaining quiet, they have nearly swept throughout the entire 33 Heavens with no one daring to offend them. However, that mysterious person has relied on their strength alone to cause the saints to suffer such disastrous defeats; that is truly terrifying! I have a premonition that this mysterious person will come seek us out!”

As Emperor Shakya spoke to here, his eyes sparkled. At this time, a messenger transmitted information to him. The saint armies had appeared several hundred millions of miles away!

Dark Demon Monarch and Emperor Shakya both rapidly read through the information jade slip. According to the direction that they arrived from, these armies should have come from Saint Convocation Heaven!

Everyone had already guessed that a great battle would erupt in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy. But, they never imagined that this battle would come so quickly!

“What do we do?” Dark Demon Monarch asked Emperor Shakya.

“We fight!” Brilliant fighting intent blazed in Emperor Shakya’s eyes. The reason they came to the Hidden Dragon Galaxy was to support Xiao Moxian and assist the mysterious person; they couldn’t always wait for that mysterious person to appear and strike out on his own. Rather, following the information they received they would have to take the initiative at times, launching a frontal assault on the saint armies and giving the mysterious person a chance to do what they needed to!

Emperor Shakya was very much looking forwards to the battle between this mysterious person and the Good Fortune Saint Son!

MW Chapter 2031

Chapter 2031 – Collision

…

…

…

In the dark and ghostly starry skies, giant phantoms flew forwards. This was the second legion of the saint armies and was considered to be one of the most mysterious and terrifying legions subordinate to the saints.

The saints’ second legion was composed entirely of primal saints.

The saints controlled seven Heavens. Because this area was far too vast and communication was rare, the saints within the various universes evolved separately, diverging off into numerous branches.

The primal saints were one such branch.

Their mortal bodies and bloodlines were stronger, they were more robust and burly, and their skin was a brownish black. But, these things weren't the truly defining special characteristics of the primal saints. What truly defined them was their spirit ships.

The primal saints' spirit ships weren't spirit treasures that had been forged and refined, but genuine living life forms.

These massive life forms were spindle-shaped. Their bodies were a hundred miles long and countless green points of light lit them up. These green lights flickered in the darkness of space and served as an extremely striking contrast. From behind their bodies, long tentacles reached out, and fins unfurled from their sides. From afar they seemed like squid swimming through the water.

Of course, they were billions and trillion times larger than a squid. Moreover, they weren't life forms that had evolved in the seas, but life forms that had evolved to live in the starry skies. With their mortal bodies as a ship, one could roam freely through space.

These were ancient space beasts, primordial monsters that resided in the Saint Brahmic Heavens. The primal saints also lived in the Saint Brahmic Heavens, and the powerhouses there were able to use their overwhelming strength to subdue these space beasts and make them sign contracts where these space beasts became their spirit ships.

These ancient beasts possessed a separate space within their bodies that could carry tens of thousands of ancient warriors. After these ancient beasts grew up, their bodies could surpass hundreds of miles in length, and they also possessed a horrifying strength. Their tentacles could take root in the center of a planet and absorb its essence, eventually sucking dry all of a planet's origin energy.

The saints' second legion was entirely composed of these primal saints and giant squid creatures; their combat strength was dreadful.

The weakest of these giant squid possessed a peak Holy Lord level strength, and many of them neared a World King in power. There were even a dozen some ancient space beasts that were several thousand miles in length which possessed the strength of an Empyrean.

As for the primal saints, they had even more Empyreans amongst their ranks.

The leader of the second legion was an Empyrean and the Patriarch of the primal saint race. He had reached the peak Empyrean realm over ten million years ago, and even amongst peak Empyreans he was considered an outstanding individual.

In addition, the second legion had several vice-commanders that were also peak Empyreans!

The saints had a number of Empyreans over ten times that of humanity and now they had come out in force. The saints had six main legions stationed at Saint Convocation Heaven, and any single one of these legions had over 50 Empyreans.

“In front there is a legion of humans that has launched an attack against us!”

From within an ancient space beast, atop a giant array disc projection, one could see a giant golden buddha. This golden buddha was emitting a dazzling golden light and an incredibly terrifying amount of energy was constantly condensing within it; it was clear that it was preparing to emit a monstrous blow.

“A golden buddha. According to our intelligence that should be the pack of monks from Mount Potala. The one leading them is Emperor Shakya, one of humanity’s peak masters.”

On the central throne inside the ancient space beast, a middle-aged man wrapped in black battle armor slowly spoke. This ancient space beast was the flagship of the primal saints.

This flagship alone had three peak Empyreans aboard!

“Engage them! The orders that the Good Fortune Saint Son passed down to us are to surround the Hidden Dragon Galaxy and form a blockade. While we need to whittle down the human forces as much as possible, it is more important that we delay for time. In particular, we must focus on information concerning that mysterious man. Since these human fools have delivered themselves to our door, let’s fight them here!”

The black-armored middle-aged man was the current Patriarch of the primal saints. In the war against humanity, the primal saints would also be able to obtain a massive amount of benefits. As for how great these benefits were, it would all depend on their military exploits.

If they could heavily damage Mount Potala's forces then that would definitely be a great merit for them.

Over a dozen giant ancient space beasts gathered together in the starry skies, forming three super massive space beasts that were over 3000 miles in length.

At the same time, dozens of Empyreans began pouring their energies into these space beasts from within, causing a terrifying black light to shoot out.

This black light collided with the golden light emitted from Mount Potala's giant buddha ship!

Bang!

In that moment it was like a sun exploded. The surrounding void for millions of miles completely shattered and terrifying space-time storms swept out, rolling up everything within it.

These two great influences had dozens of Empyreans joining together to exchange strikes. The energy detonation created was incredibly dreadful, and even the shockwaves were alarming. Though the two fleets were over a million miles away from each other, they still received varying degrees of damage.

Within the giant golden buddha, Emperor Shakya frowned.

The saints were simply too horribly formidable. Between the saints and humans existed a disparity of Empyreans that was nearly insurmountable. Now that the Good Fortune Saint Son transferred so many Empyreans here, they had created an absolute power that far outstripped humanity.

They had only encountered a single legion and yet things had become so troublesome.

Once the other legions arrived then it would be difficult for them to have any effect within the Hidden Dragon Galaxy.

It couldn't be forgotten that within the Hidden Dragon Galaxy also lurked Famine's avatar and the Good Fortune Saint Son!

Although the saints had suffered repeated losses because of the mysterious person, the saints were still far above humanity in strength.

"These saint bastards, if we continue fighting like this then it will be difficult for us to carry out our original rescue plan..."

To Bagui said. Lin Ming had shown great graciousness to the ancient races, thus he was particularly anxious to save Xiao Moxian and Lin Huang.

At this time, the armies of Mount Potala were startled because of the strength of their opponents.

But at the same time on the saints' side, the primal saint Patriarch also thought that Mount Potala's strength far surpassed his expectations.

"Our opponents should have less Empyreans than we do and we also have the ancient space beasts coordinating our attacks. Our total combat strength should have risen 50%, and yet the result is… we still couldn't manage to suppress them.

"Humanity truly does have a few outstanding elites that cannot be underestimated. What should we do? If we continue fighting then it will only be a stalemate. The blood that we will have to spill doesn't seem worth it."

Although the primal saints desired military exploits, they wouldn't do something like paying a ridiculously steep price to obtain them.

"Don't worry. The orders we received are only to blockade the Hidden Dragon Galaxy and make sure that mysterious person is delayed outside to draw out more time. It doesn't matter if we don't do anything to our enemies. As long as we complete our task then we will still receive military merits."

“I don’t have any idea what the Good Fortune Saint Son is planning. It’s as if there is something within this Hidden Dragon Galaxy that is extremely important to him…”

As the primal saints discussed the situation their attacks didn’t stop. The fight had already reached an impasse.

Mount Potala and the primal saints had both suffered damage. The fierce battle continued for less than an hour. Mount Potala lost seven or eight spirit ships, but the truth was that these spirit ships were moving battle array formations. Peak array masters had refined array formation cores and then wrapped them in metallic armor.

Once the human warriors within these spirit ships distributed themselves across the battlefield, they could rapidly gather their strength together and erupt with a terrifying barrage.

This was the most effective combat method for warfare between armies. The collective superimposed power of an army was inevitably much greater than that of an individual.

As Mount Potala lost seven or eight spirit ships, and the primal saints also lost around ten ancient space beasts. The blood of the space beasts scattered out, dying the endless void red.

Even though both sides hadn’t gone all-out, this war scene was still incredibly brutal.

But in the end, it was the human side that withdrew first. This was because their scouts had reported that far off in the distant starry space, another saint army was approaching. Without a doubt, this army also came from Saint Convocation Heaven. If Mount Potala were to continue this current battle then they would inevitably be encircled. At that time, the losses would be dire.

Emperor Shakya couldn’t help but issue an order for the retreat of the army.

The human spirit ships withdrew for 10 million miles. Then, after undergoing two great void shifts, they temporarily stationed themselves within a hidden nebula.

Like this, they had gone even farther from the core region of the Hidden Dragon Galaxy.

This caused many human martial artists to frown. So far nothing in their rescue plan had gone well. They never thought that so many saint armies would gather in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy, seeming as if they planned to launch a final showdown here.

“The saints have established a blockade surrounding the core region of the Hidden Dragon Galaxy. Just the second legion alone is on par with us in strength. With the other legions added on, the saints have a total war strength over five times our own. This doesn’t even include the Good Fortune Saint Son.”

Within the official meeting hall, the various commanders of humanity were analyzing the reports sent in by the scouts. All of them were frowning.

The truth was that several human armies had yet to catch up. For instance, the armies led by Skyrend Godlord and Empyrean Vast Universe.

But even if they arrived they still wouldn't be able to change anything; the disparity was too great.

With humanity's strength, they could engage the saints in guerilla warfare. But once they met in direct battle, there would be far too many problems that would appear.

"What lies in front of us now are the second and third legions of the saint armies. The two legions have joined together so it will be impossible for us to break through. But, it seems that they don't have any intention of launching an attack on us on their own initiative. They have only activated array formation enchantments and are waiting for us to come..."

The saints had only established light layers of array formation enchantments. To destroy them was extremely easy, but once a high level martial artist were to run in, the enchantment would immediately discover their presence. In addition, these enchantments had the ability to prevent sound transmissions from coming in or out, and were able to block out all communication that passed between the human forces.

In this situation, the Hidden Dragon Galaxy was like an isolated island separated from the world.

Emperor Shakya and the others were all convening an emergency military meeting in order to plan their next step.

But at this time, no one noticed that in a place deep in the universe, the dark starry void tore open. A black fortress flew out like a ghost from a space crack.

“Master, the saint armies have been discovered up ahead!” Within the black fortress, Blue Lotus’s voice echoed out from a chamber.

“The saint race armies?”

In the chamber, a black-clothed youth opened his eyes from his meditation.

MW Chapter 2032

Chapter 2032 – Black Fortress

…

…

…

The chamber door was pushed open and Lin Ming appeared at the entrance. He was like a sharp and swift spear, emitting a breathtaking momentum from his head to his toes.

“Master!”

Blue Lotus bowed.

“Rise. Tell me what the situation is.”

Lin Ming stepped in front of a porthole. From this porthole he could already see vague and blurry dots of light in the far off distance. These were the numerous spirit ships of the saint legions. It was clear that there was a force of saints in front of them, and the size of their army was massive!

“Reporting to Master, it has already been verified that what lies in front is the second legion and third legion of the saints. They should have been stationed in Saint Convocation Heaven, but for some reason have been transferred to the Hidden Dragon Galaxy.”

Fairy Blue Lotus had an extremely keen understanding into the saints. She only needed to see the silhouette of those giant squid-like space beasts and count their approximate number to understand that the second legion had come out in full strength.

As for the third legion, they also had a title like the second legion. They were called the iron lion legion and possessed similarly unique characteristics.

These characteristics were defined by the spirit ships they drove. From afar, these spirit ships appeared to be giant metal lions.

The iron lion legion was composed of the saint race’s astral saint tribe. The astral saint tribe gathered the best array masters and refining masters of the saints. They were able to arrange the most powerful array formations and subsequently refine them into top-grade spirit ships.

These spirit ships that the iron lion legion utilized were all Empyrean level spirit treasures.

The several flagships leading them were in no way worse than Primordius Heavenly Palace.

During a battle between armies, the use of a spirit ship was undeniably essential. The quality of its array formations was directly correlated to its martial artists' offensive and defensive capabilities.

Back when Lin Ming fought Tian Mingzi and a massive disparity in strength still divided them, he was able to use Primordius Heavenly Palace to catch a moment of reprieve before finally reversing the battle.

Fairy Blue Lotus gave every piece of detailed information she knew about the saints' second and third legions to Lin Ming. She even knew the internal sound transmission marks of the army. If she wanted, she could intercept part of their information transmissions.

"According to the current situation, the Good Fortune Saint Son should have gathered several armies to come to the Hidden Dragon Galaxy. These armies were originally responsible for guarding Saint Convocation Heaven and to serve as a deterrent against the spiritas; they wouldn't be easily transferred here. But presently, the Good Fortune Saint Son has started to gather all these armies here. This is an extremely unusual decision. From the evidence, he might be aiming at some powerhouse...

“The saint armies stationed at Saint Convocation Heaven possess over 400 Empyreans, and even peak Empyreans aren’t uncommon. These peak Empyreans each have incredibly deep backgrounds and have concealed their true strengths; even I do not know the particular details on them. In addition, each of these saint legions possesses a special attribute. For instance, the second legion has the ancient space beasts and the third legion has the Empyrean level spirit treasure iron lion battleships…”

As Fairy Blue Lotus spoke to here, she cautiously peeked at Lin Ming. The giant saint armies and their numerous hidden masters were laid out in front of Lin Ming. This was no trifling force, and she was curious what countermeasures her master would take.

Lin Ming’s eyes narrowed. He gazed at the second and third legions deep in space, and then succinctly said, “Kill them all.”

With an order of just three words, this command left Fairy Blue Lotus’s heart racing.

“Understood!”

……….

The second and third saint legions only discovered Lin Ming approaching them a full hour later.

This was because Lin Ming only had a single spirit ship and the target was far too small, giving him an advantage conducive to hiding. As for the saints, their army was far too large and they couldn’t hide themselves at all.

Moreover, this was also because Fairy Blue Lotus had an extremely sharp understanding of the saints. With her personally scouting the way, how could the saint scouts possibly hope to compete with her?

“An unknown spirit ship is approaching!”

A warning suddenly rang through the saint armies. At this time, from a mere million miles away, a pitch black fortress was hurtling towards them.

This fortress seemed to meld in with the surrounding darkness of space, making it nearly imperceptible. Its surface didn’t shine with the least bit of gloss, making it appear like a city of dead ghosts.

“Who is it? Hurry and stop where you are!”

A dignified voice spread through space. This was a warning from a saint Empyrean. The pitch black castle was the transformed form of Primordius Heavenly Palace.

Lin Ming had used the Ancient Elysium Seal to stabilize the eye of Primordius Heavenly Palace. The Ancient Elysium Seal was originally forged to be the center of a grand array formation, and was a True Divinity spirit treasure personally refined by Empyrean Divine Seal. With it stabilize the central eye of Primordius Heavenly Palace, the array formation of the Heavenly Palace had become several times stronger.

In the past, Primordius Heavenly Palace was comparable to the flagships of the iron lion legion. But now it far outstripped those flagships in power.

Primordius Heavenly Palace floated closer and closer. In the darkness of space, it was like an ancient vicious beast lying dormant in the depths of the universe, seething with killing intent!

“Attack!”

A commanding officer of the saint armies mercilessly ordered. This unidentified spirit ship didn’t listen to warnings and was continuing to approach them. In order to ensure the safety of the fleet, they would naturally eliminate it.

According to all common sense, this sort of small spirit ship facing off against the combined fleet of two saint army legions was no different from a mouse against lions. The difference was so incredibly great that it was simply impossible to pose any threat.

However, the joint armies of the saints had received orders from the Good Fortune Saint Son to be wary of the presence of a mysterious person. Although the officers of the joint armies felt the rumors about this mysterious figure were a bit exaggerated, as military officers they strictly obeyed orders. They weren't stupid enough to make mistakes because of some sense of blind arrogance.

Over a dozen spirit ships began to light up with a divine light. More than 20 Empyreans simultaneously struck out against Lin Ming; this was already a terrifying strike.

However, as everyone thought that this black fortress would be annihilated by the divine light, the surface of the fortress began to exude a bright halo of bloody fog. As the divine light struck this bloody fog, an unbelievable scene occurred. The bloody fog trembled for several moments before completely swallowing up the divine light.

The joint attack of over 20 Empyreans actually vanished like a stone in water, disappearing without doing any damage to the black fortress.

"...What?"

The saint martial artists were stunned. And at this time, the black fortress accelerated forwards!

With mind-boggling speed, it impacted towards the core of the joint saint legions!

Primordius Heavenly Palace was extremely fast to begin with, and now that it had evolved with the True Divinity spirit treasure Ancient Elysium Seal and in a situation where it burnt nine sun jades without reserve, its speed now surpassed the speed of a peak Empyrean.

“Legion of Famine, obey my orders! Activate body metamorphosis!”

Within the core of Primordius Heavenly Palace, the Legion of Famine’s tens of thousands of Holy Lords and 2000 World Kings were already standing firmly around the array formation. As Lin Ming issued an order, these Legion of Famine warriors began to emit crackling sounds from all over their bodies. Bloody tentacles drilled out from their bodies, wildly waving about in the air.

After the Legion of Famine underwent body metamorphosis, their strength nearly rose by an entire large boundary.

A peak Holy Lord could compare with a World King, a Great World King could compare with an Empyrean!

The power of 54,000 Holy Lords gathered onto 2000 ordinary World Kings and then further channeled into 180 Great World Kings. After undergoing body metamorphosis, these Great World Kings all possessed the combat strength of an Empyrean. When all was added together, the Legion of Famine possessed a terrifying strength comparable to 200 Empyreans!

Within the second and third saint legions, their Empyreans added together came up to just over a hundred.

The Legion of Famine's war strength was only comparable to the weakest of Empyreans. But, because they were connected together by the flesh and blood of Famine, making them all of the same origin, the formations they were able to line up in were something that normal saint martial artists could not compare with.

When it came to comparing in ultimate strength, the Legion of Famine was superior. After those 180 Empyrean-level martial artists were also four saint generals personally commanding them!

At this time, besides Fairy Blue Lotus not transforming, Darkmoon, Highsun, and Xishen had already completed their Famine body metamorphosis.

These three originally had the combat strength of an Empyrean and were even considered amazingly strong amongst Empyreans. After undergoing body metamorphosis, their strength reached the level of peak Empyreans.

Highsun had transformed into an ancient vicious beast, Darkmoon had become a peerlessly seductive sorceress, and Xishen's clothes had torn apart as his former handsome appearance disappeared, replaced by the visage of a cruel and ferocious demon.

All the spiritual strength of the Legion of Famine poured into Lin Ming. Then, he attacked!

With his right hand grasping the Black Dragon Spear, he suddenly stabbed it into the array heart. The Ancient Elysium Seal hummed and revolved around him, stabilizing the eye of the array formation.

Lin Ming gathered his hands together. The power of divinity and demons erupted and a terrifying strength gushed out from Primordius Heavenly Palace!

Compared to the great explosion that had destroyed the saint race army at Blood Cloud Galaxy, this attack was several times stronger!

Moreover, this strength was no longer an indiscriminate attack, but was focused in clear directions. The energies gathered into beams of light that shot out in all directions!

With this, the striking efficiency of the attack increased a hundred times over!

Puff! Puff! Pah!

Three iron lion battleships were pierced through by light beams, instantly exploding and disintegrating to nothing!

The highly condensed light beam immediately vaporized the three Empyreans atop the battleships.

And these light beams only became faster and fiercer as they shot forwards. Some light beams even penetrated two spirit ships at once!

“The hell!?”

“Damnit!”

Seeing this terrifying divine light swallow all, the peak Empyreans of the joint saint legions were panic-stricken!

Their figures disappeared from their spirit ships and in the next moment they appeared in the vast and boundless starry space. Eight peak Empyreans moved together, gathering their energies to lock in Primordius Heavenly Palace so that it wouldn’t be able to emit its energy and would self-destruct in response.

“Scatter! Attack!”

A peak Empyrean sent out an order. This order was simple, so simple that to some it might be hard to understand. However, the spirit ships of the joint saint legions responded quickly. All of the spirit ships dispersed, moving back even as they launched attacks towards Primordius Heavenly Palace!

They were assisting the eight peak Empyreans in suppressing Primordius Heavenly Palace.

To execute these maneuvers so perfectly, one couldn't help but marvel at how terrifyingly skilled the saint legions were. But unfortunately, the opponent they encountered was Lin Ming!

Bang! Bang!

Two more iron lion battleships were pierced through by a beam of light, immediately exploding to ashes.

And at this time, a resonant dragon's roar echoed through the world. The cosmic void ripped apart and a dragon head a thousand miles long peered out. Its dark amber eyes coldly stared at its prey in the vastness of space…

MW *Chapter* 2033

Chapter 2033 – Scattered Like Leaves

…

…

…

Roar!

The great dark dragon roared upwards, a terrifying dragon roar stirring up a storm. Its giant jaws opened wide and bit down on a primal saints' ancient space beast!

The ancient space beast was over a hundred miles long and yet it was unexpectedly ripped open by the Black Dragon's jaws. It cried out miserably, violently struggling, but in the end it couldn't free itself from the Black Dragon's grasp. Its body was torn in half and the ruined pieces of flesh and blood were directly swallowed up into the Black Dragon's stomach.

The Black Dragon didn't pause. It waved its thick tail, wildly sweeping out like a knife!

Peng! Peng! Peng!

Multiple iron lion battleships were slashed in half by the dragon tail. Space beast after space beast was severed in two by the Black Dragon’s razor-sharp wings!

Storms of energy whipped up as blood filled the skies!

The ancient space beasts were horrifying monsters of the void, but how could they stand side-by-side with a Black Dragon that possessed a king bloodline and had also swallowed the flesh and blood essence of Famine?

Roar!

The Black Dragon threw itself onto a thousand-mile long king of the space beasts. This giant squid was only as long as the Black Dragon’s body, and it wielded its thick tentacles, wanting to pierce through the Black Dragon and push it away.

However, the Black Dragon’s strength was at a level this squid simply couldn’t compare with.

The Black Dragon’s sharp claws dug deep into the ancient space beast’s body. Beneath the rending claws, the massive tentacles of the space beast were truly no different from those of an actual squid; they were torn apart at the roots!

“Attack! Attack that Black Dragon!”

A peak Empyrean cried out in alarm. The ancient space beast being torn apart was his life’s contract beast, and as he saw his own contract beast being ripped apart to the point of death he felt his heart drip blood.

However, just as he shouted out these words he wasn’t able to open his mouth again nor did he have any way to help his contract beast. This was because he could feel an even more terrifying energy storm brewing within the black fortress, one that was completely beyond his control.

Even though they had eight peak Empyreans joining together, in addition to support from the second and third legions, they still couldn’t contend with the might of this black fortress!

It was hard to imagine just how deep and horrifying the background of the character in the black fortress was!

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

In that moment, three figures flew out from within Primordius Heavenly Palace; these figures were Lin Ming's avatars.

They were completely similar to Lin Ming in appearance. As the four of them stood in the center of the array formation, Lin Ming's aura doubled and doubled yet again!

Lin Ming's hands weaved together, forming a yin yang diagram. The power of divinity and demons as well as the power of the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra were all fused into the array formation through him.

The other three Lin Mings also used their own methods. Pure strength of essence, energy, and divine constantly flowed into the great array.

For a time, the array formation began to light up like a massive sun. A terrifying strength erupted like ten thousand tsunamis smashing out together.

Bang!

Energy erupted, colliding with the eight peak Empyreans surrounding Primordius Heavenly Palace and causing them to all tumble backwards, vomiting blood!

In that brief moment, their meridians had broken in innumerable places and their blood vitality had been overdrawn, causing their strength to fall to the lowest ditch.

"Ahh!"

Two peak Empyreans cried out in pain. The instant they flew backwards, two incredibly thick beams of light shot out from Primordius Heavenly Palace, directly piercing through these two peak Empyreans!

Puff!

Blood shot out. The mortal bodies of peak Empyreans were incredibly tough. Even after being struck by these terrifying beams of light they didn't instantly die, but were simply pierced through.

Yet in this battle, being struck by a light beam was no different from immediately dying. The Black Dragon howled into the starry space and swiftly flew over. Its two great claws stretched out, fishing up these two peak Empyreans and swallowing them into its stomach.

As a top rank God Beast, the Black Dragon also possessed the ability to absorb the essence energy of powerhouses and transform it into its own strength. However, it just didn't possess the abnormal swallowing talent that Famine did.

In this battle, the Black Dragon reaped far too many benefits. The ancient space beasts were recklessly eaten up by it. This scene was similar to a tiger leaping into a flock of sheep, their crimson blood turning space red.

Six peak Empyreans were heavily wounded and two perished. The joint saint legions had taken these eight saint Empyreans as the core of their resistance, and with this strike their energy net they cast over Primordius Heavenly Palace was immediately torn open.

In a flash, the energy of Primordius Heavenly Palace was like a flood bursting out from a shattered dam, recklessly hurtling outwards!

Beams of crimson divine light shot out, passing through the joint saint legions like divine blades!

These beams of light were unstoppable. Every iron lion spirit ship that was struck immediately exploded into space dust, and the ancient space beasts were sliced in half, their blood flying out.

Primordius Heavenly Palace was a giant meat grinder that tore through the joint saint legions. Wherever it went, the amazingly powerful saint legions would disintegrate; this was no different from a one-sided slaughter!

From tens of millions of miles away, the scouts of Mount Potala saw beams of divine light illuminate the horizon.

“What is happening?”

“That’s where the joint saint legions are. Could they have started fighting?”

After the joint saint legions came to a stop and stationed themselves, the human alliance naturally had to keep an eye on their actions. This distance was already the limit that these human scouts could investigate from. If they were to approach any close then there was a high chance they would be discovered by the saints. If so, the consequences could be imagined.

But now, as they saw such a massive change occurring in the joint saint legions, they couldn’t sit idly by.

“Let’s go and take a look! Everyone be careful!”

“Understood!”

Scouting was a dangerous field of work, but at this time it was their duty to gather information on what was occurring.

Six World King level scouts quietly disappeared into the void, rapidly rushing towards the area where the great battle was erupting!

More and more explosions rang through the world. The divine light shining from all over became increasingly bright!

The saint fleets had been scared silly from the amount of slaughter occurring. They were all top elites, but in a battle where the disparity in strength was so massive, and in facing this enemy that was like a death reaper, they simply couldn't summon the courage to keep fighting.

"Retreat! Everyone, scatter and retreat…"

The primal saint Patriarch endured the pain in his heart to issue this order. But just as he was issuing the order, his voice fell silent, as if his words had been cut in half by an icy saber.

At this time, the primal saint Patriarch felt his entire body turn cold and his pupils contract. Just 100 feet away from him, a black-clothed shadow had torn open space and walked out from a space crack like a death god paying a visit.

This man held a black spear, his eyes overflowing with killing intent!

The primal saint Patriarch immediately understood that this was the mysterious person the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke of!

Although the Good Fortune Saint Son had repeatedly emphasized that this mysterious person was not to be underestimated, if the primal saint Patriarch didn't see with his own eyes it would be impossible for him to profoundly realize just how true the Good Fortune Saint Son's words were.

Originally, he even believed that the Good Fortune Saint Son was making a great fuss over nothing to order the six legions of the saints to transfer over to the Hidden Dragon Galaxy. After all, this was all in order to deal with a single mysterious person.

But now, the primal saint Patriarch realized he had been wrong, and wrong to an outrageous degree!

The primal saint Patriarch looked at Lin Ming. His eyes flashed with red light, and in that moment he burnt his blood essence without hesitation!

The blood vitality of a peak saint Empyrean was extremely powerful. Now that it was burnt, it was like a sun rising in the night sky. For the surroundings hundreds of thousands of miles, everyone began to heat up because of this peak saint Empyrean burning up his blood essence!

The primal saints were a brave and bloody clan. Although they were cruel and merciless to other races, when the moment of life or death truly arrived, they wouldn't shrink backwards!

Several peak Empyreans appeared around Lin Ming. They all started to burn their blood essence together. At this time, none of them had any other choice!

Lin Ming faced four peak Empyreans together; the remaining two were dealt with by the Black Dragon.

As for Primordius Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming had handed down command to Fairy Blue Lotus. She already possessed the ability to command the Legion of Famine, and now that the flesh and blood of Famine had been fused into her, commanding them was even easier.

The reason Lin Ming didn't have Fairy Blue Lotus under body metamorphosis was to have her command the Legion of Famine in the most clear-headed manner possible.

More beams of light shot out. Another spirit ship was torn apart!

And it was now that Lin Ming attacked!

Four peak Empyreans stood in four different directions. Lin Ming swept out his spear, first targeting the primal saint Patriarch!

The Patriarch was the strongest of the four but he was Lin Ming's first target. This was self-confidence that stemmed from his own strength!

Lin Ming's attack wasn't flashy; it was only a simple straight thrust. But, his speed was too fast, surpassing the rate with which one could react.

Spear light howled out. Behind Lin Ming, nine great stars floated in the air. Five Dao Palaces opened up together and the power of divinity and demons wildly flooded outwards!

There was simply no time to dodge. The primal saint Patriarch could only roar out loud and take a giant axe to smash down at Lin Ming!

In that instant, Lin Ming and the primal saint Patriarch were like two meteors clashing together in space.

Bang!

Energy ripples visible to the naked eye began spreading outwards. From this single clash, the primal saint Patriarch was hurled backwards like a comet!

The blood vessels on his body had burst open due to the excessive impact force and his arms were stained with blood. The great axe in his hands was pounded into a curve, making it look like a drawn bow.

“Damn it!”

The three other Empyreans roared and rushed towards Lin Ming. Lin Ming’s blood bubbled over with heat. He grasped his long spear, sweeping out!

Peng!

Three peak Empyreans that burnt their blood essence were sent flying away, all of them vomiting blood. This was simply a one-sided massacre!

Just as the primal saint Patriarch recovered, he saw Lin Ming rapidly flying towards him. With another great bellow, he grabbed his great axe and brought it crashing down at Lin Ming’s head.

However, Lin Ming didn’t even attempt to evade. He grasped the Black Dragon Spear and also smashed it outwards.

With another collision, the primal saint Patriarch’s arms fractured and he spat out a mouthful of blood!

His body ripped open like a bag of blood, and even white bones were visible.

Tens of thousands of miles away, everything that occurred fell into the eyes of the human scouts. They used specialized eye techniques to see what was occurring.

Whether it was the black fortress that continued to shoot out beams of divine light or that peerless powerhouse that easily suppressed four peak saint Empyreans, everything left them utterly dumbfounded!

“That person, that must be the mysterious person!”

A scout said with a sound transmission, his heart shocked.

“It must be him, it can only be him!”

The scouts looked at each other, a burning heat visible in their eyes.

MW Chapter 2034

Chapter 2034 – Contacting Humanity

…

…

…

The human forces had long since wanted to contact this mysterious person. However, due to the threat of the saints and the blockades they set up, their scope of actions was restrained so that they couldn’t find a hint of this mysterious person’s shadow at all.

In fact, let alone the human forces being able to find this mysterious person, even the saints who had carefully and deliberately calculated the area in which he would appear were annihilated when they tried to set up a trap for him.

And on this day, the human scouts were finally able to see this mysterious person with their own eyes. How could they not be excited?

In these past months the fame of this mysterious person had spread throughout the entire wild universe, and perhaps even the rest of the 33 Heavens knew of him.

The explosions stirred up massive waves of energy, forcing the scouts to stay back at a far-off distance. As they saw the saint spirit ships being destroyed, all of them were inexplicably excited.

Not too long ago, these human scouts had participated in the bloody battle between Mount Potala and the second saint legion.

They personally experienced just how strong the second saint legion had been and how ridiculously formidable those squid-like space beasts were. Not only did they have amazing defensive capabilities but their mortal bodies were tough and resilient, able to repel attacks.

And their tentacles were a nightmare to all enemies. Once entangled by them, countless suckers would draw out the strength of their prey.

Such frightening enemies were truly the scourge of humanity.

But now, these monsters were being directly punctured through by the beams of divine light, collapsing with a single blow.

As for the terrifying Black Dragon, it killed those monsters like a lion in a pack of rabbits, no sense of difficulty at all.

Moreover, the mysterious person was facing not just the saint race's second legion, but also the third legion – the iron lion legion.

Humanity only had a pitiable amount of information concerning the iron lion legion. However, this didn't prevent them from speculating just how strong the iron lion legion must be. If they could be called one of the saint race's six great legion armies, then their combined war strength should be no less than the wartime alliance of Mount Potala!

And today, these two legions that had gathered together into a single super saint army were destined to suffer catastrophic destruction.

This great battle hadn't continued for long. Even if those four peak Empyreans joined forces they still weren't able to change anything.

In the first place, Lin Ming already possessed the ability to directly suppress the life feather left behind by Soaring Feather God King. Now that he faced four Empyreans, the strength they possessed simply wasn't able to oppose him.

Puff!

Lin Ming's spear pierced through the throat of the primal saint Patriarch. The death of the Patriarch was the final straw. The saint fleets gave up on any attempts to organize an effective counterattack. As they were being suppressed by Primordius Heavenly Palace, they retreated backwards in total defeat!

Primordius Heavenly Palace was unstoppable. The Legion of Famine cast out their energy, forming two giant halos of light that surged outwards, cutting apart more spirit ships!

And at this time, Lin Ming's three avatars also rushed out from Primordius Heavenly Palace. Throughout the years, these three avatars had grown together with Lin Ming, and their strength could no longer be compared to how it was in the past. As they attacked the giant space beasts, they caved in as easily as mollusks.

Hua-la!

The Black Dragon launched itself onto another king level space beast. In these past years, Little Black had already grown into the visage of a cruel and giant demon dragon. The fierce bone spikes on its back left devastating wounds on the ancient space beast!

Little Black was extremely wicked. It knew that it couldn't destroy the entire saint fleet, so it focused on the largest prey possible. Many of the ancient space beasts had their fragile necks bitten through.

The joint saint legions continued to disperse outwards. At this time, Primordius Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming's avatars, and the Black Dragon each chose different directions to chase down their enemies. Light beams shot out and several space beasts fell dead. At the same time, the Black Dragon crippled several iron lion battleships.

Slowly, the beams of divine light shooting out from Primordius Heavenly Palace became increasingly thin. By now, the allied saint legions had been brutally ruined by Lin Ming. The surviving spirit ships and great beasts fled deep into the universe.

After leaving the battlefield, some spirit ships had enough time to activate an array formation, entering through a space crack and beginning a great void shift.

"There's no need to chase them."

Lin Ming waved his hand. The Black Dragon and Primordius Heavenly Palace ceased chasing the saint legions, and Lin Ming's three avatars also flew back into his inner world.

At this time, the Black Dragon was completely stained with blood. It had received a considerable number of wounds in this battle, but it remained feverishly fired up, its large amber eyes filled with impatience.

Its two claws each grabbed a different thousand mile long ancient space beast, and its thick tail was wrapped around a slightly smaller one. In its eyes, these giant squid were unsurpassed delicacies.

Seeing this, Lin Ming smiled.

For the Black Dragon, these things were the best food possible. It had to be known that although the ancient space beasts were inferior to God Beasts, they were a peak race of creatures that were only inferior to God Beasts in this universe. In particular, the kings of these ancient space beasts were actually stronger than many God Beasts.

The corpses of these ancient space beasts were naturally valuable treasures, able to compare to the corpses of God Beasts.

In the past, Lin Ming had undergone great dangers in order to obtain a single supreme dragon bone. From this, one could assume just how valuable these corpses were.

The Black Dragon had already eagerly bitten down on a king level ancient space beast and was eating up its flesh and blood in great gulps. The Black Dragon could absorb nutrients from these beasts and use it to greatly benefit its future growth.

A Roc ate flood dragons as sustenance and a Phoenix ate the energy essence of the universe as food. To a large degree, what a God Beast ate helped decide the path of their growth.

Lin Ming rubbed his chin. His figure flashed several times and he received some of these ancient space beast corpses into his inner world. These were all treasures. Although he was exorbitantly rich, he still couldn’t let these things go to waste.

After finishing all of this, Lin Ming flew back into Primordius Heavenly Palace.

Within Primordius Heavenly Palace, the Legion of Famine was still standing alert around the central array formation. But they had nearly exhausted themselves of all energy by now. After the Legion of Famine underwent body metamorphosis, although their strength could rise by an entire large boundary, they weren't able to maintain this type of transformation for very long.

Lin Ming probed the Legion of Famine's situation. Around 90% of the martial artists had already overdrawn their strength and it would take at least several days for them to restore themselves.

Even Fairy Blue Lotus who hadn't undergone body metamorphosis was dripping fragrant sweat like rain.

Seeing Lin Ming walk towards her, Fairy Blue Lotus respectfully bowed.

"You've done well!" Lin Ming praised. With a seasoned general like Fairy Blue Lotus on his side he would be able to save a great deal of strength. Fairy Blue Lotus had a strong grasp on flow and situation of a battle. And, she possessed an extremely reasonable judgment and decision making sense. With her commanding the Legion of Famine, although they lacked in overall destructive power because they were short of Lin Ming, there were still some aspects in which they were superior to him.

“I thank Master for the generous praise.” Fairy Blue Lotus wiped the sweat from her face, a deep smile lighting it up. “Master, with this battle the primal saint clan and the astral saint tribe have suffered grievous losses. It will be impossible for them to recover in the next several tens of thousands of years. However, the Good Fortune Saint Son has gathered so many armies here that I feel a bit uncomfortable about it. Because of this, I captured several saint martial artists so that Master may interrogate them.”

Fairy Blue Lotus pointed behind herself. There was an Empyrean who had been heavily wounded in the explosions and all the astral essence in his body had been sealed away. At the same time, there were also several World King level powerhouses.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. He already had such plans in mind but Fairy Blue Lotus had done it for him ahead of time, saving him a great deal of trouble.

Just as he was preparing to question these people, his heart suddenly moved. He turned to look outside the porthole. In that moment he had felt several bright spots rapidly approaching Primordius Heavenly Palace.

Some people had come!

In a brief moment, Lin Ming had already determined the number, race, cultivation, strength, and many other special details of these people.

“World King level – humans!?”

Lin Ming was startled. These people were humans!

Ever since coming to the Wild Universe, Lin Ming had seen fellow humans more than once. But, these people had only been common mortals suffering their own hardships. This was the first time Lin Ming encountered World King level humans.

His figure flickered and he appeared outside Primordius Heavenly Palace.

His heart was filled with anticipation. With human World Kings here he would naturally be able to find human Empyreans through them, and thus obtain information on Xiao Moxian, Qin Xingxuan, Mu Qianyu, and the others.

At this time, the people flying towards Lin Ming were the scouts of the human forces. They had a total of six people, five men and one woman.

After seeing Lin Ming, these people all deeply bowed. As they looked at him their eyes were filled with reverence and awe.

In the world of martial arts, those with strength easily obtained respect. Moreover, Lin Ming had also given humanity a great graciousness.

MW Chapter 2035

Chapter 2035 – News of Xiao Moxian

…

…

…

Lin Ming projected his divine sense onto these scouts from Mount Potala. After gently sweeping over their spiritual seas he could immediately tell that these people weren't controlled by the saints nor were they spies.

"Third scouting squad of Humanity's Mount Potala greets Senior!"

A middle-aged man at the head bowed.

These scouts were all tens of thousands of years old, but in their opinion, although Lin Ming appeared young, he was so powerful that he was likely their senior.

"Mount Potala!"

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. He was filled with emotion upon hearing this name. After over 6000 years passed, he was finally able to find some clues about the most important people of his life.

Mount Potala's Battle Buddha Emperor Shakya and Great Limitless Buddha should have news on Xiao Moxian!

Lin Ming had obtained a great deal of information from the various saint influences he annihilated. Although he couldn't determine exactly where Xiao Moxian was, he knew at the very least that she was safe. Otherwise, if the saints were to capture or kill such an important figure like her it would be impossible for the subordinate Empyreans not to know of this.

"You are disciples of Mount Potala?"

With the possibility of finding Xiao Moxian, Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, and the others right in front of him, Lin Ming found it difficult to keep his expression calm.

The middle-aged man said, "Only a part of us are. Rather than being called a sect, the current Mount Potala can be considered an alliance instead. With the original members of Mount Potala as the foundation, many human influences have joined with it. For instance, our scouting squad has buddhist disciples from Mount Potala as well as people from Dark

Demon Palace. The current Mount Potala Wartime Alliance has taken Senior-apprentice Brother Emperor Shakya as the high commander and there is a great degree of freedom in the different actions we can take."

"I see..." Lin Ming nodded. The situation was quite reasonable. In a great war between two races, sects were no longer individual units, but the foundation of a joint army with all sects combined.

"Who is in your alliance? Is Ji Xian'er in your ranks?"

If Xiao Moxian was in the Wartime Alliance then Lin Ming could put his heart at ease. This was because in this great calamity, both Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan lacked the ability of self-preservation. The most likely possibility was that they were following Xiao Moxian.

As for his own flesh and blood as well as Lin Xiaoge, they were certainly with Xiao Moxian. In fact, even Mo Eversnow was likely with Xiao Moxian.

Upon hearing Lin Ming bring up the name of Ji Xian'er, the scout was stunned. "Senior knows of Empyrean Demon Fairy?"

The scouts glanced at each other. They were all filled with various guesses and hypotheses about who this mysterious person could be. Still, it was a bit surprising that this person would know of Xiao Moxian. Could he be related to the monster or demon races?

However, no matter how it was said, Xiao Moxian had already become an inextricable part of humanity. If this mysterious person was somehow related to Xiao Moxian then that would be good for humanity.

But the current Xiao Moxian was in a precarious position…

“Empyrean Demon Fairy? That’s right, with Xian’er’s talent she should have broken into the Empyrean realm by now.” Lin Ming sighed upon hearing this. He wondered; just what boundary was his child at?

When he considered it, with over 6000 years having passed, his child wouldn’t be much younger than he was.

The middle-aged scout leader thought for a moment and said, “Reporting to Senior, Empyrean Demon Fairy’s location is currently unaccounted for, but it is suspected that she is at the Hidden Dragon Galaxy!”

“What?” Lin Ming suddenly shook, his heart tightening.

Lin Ming’s overreaction left the scouts stunned. Although they knew that this mysterious person was somehow linked to Xiao Moxian, they didn’t think he would be so anxious about her.

"You said that Ji Xian'er is in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy!?"

"Senior, Empyrean Demon Fairy's territory was located within the Hidden Dragon Galaxy. When the war erupted, Senior-apprentice Brother Emperor Shakya and Empyrean Demon Fairy were still exchanging information to work together in resisting the saints. But one day Empyrean Demon Fairy broke off contact with Mount Potala, and several years have passed since then. Afterwards, our scouts discovered that the Good Fortune Saint Son had blocked off the Hidden Dragon Galaxy. This is likely the reason why Empyrean Demon Fairy lost contact with us."

The scout captain carefully said. Once the human influences lost contact for several years, wanting to reestablish communication channels wasn't easy. This was because the different human influences constantly changed their sound transmission marks as a form of security. Otherwise, if the saints were to intercept these sound transmission marks the consequences would be inconceivable.

Without several years of contact there were no means to exchange new sound transmission marks. As a result, they would only grow further and further apart.

Now Xiao Moxian's situation was in truth completely inferred based upon information obtained by the Mount Potala Wartime Alliance.

Hearing the words of the scouts, Lin Ming's complexion had already darkened to near black.

Facing him, the scout captain felt a sense of fear and apprehension. The surrounding temperature seemed to rapidly plummet.

“Senior…”

The scout captain originally wanted to say a few words to request that Lin Ming visit the Mount Potala Wartime Alliance as a guest, but as his words were half out they suddenly caught in his throat.

“Do you have any other information concerning Ji Xian’er?”

“No… there is nothing else. Contact has been severed for too long and the current situation of Empyrean Demon Fairy is only our speculations. When our Mount Potala Wartime Alliance was being chased down by the Legion of Famine, it was difficult for us to defend ourselves so we had to break relations with many other human influences. It was only now when Senior… when Senior eliminated the Legion of Famine that we had a chance to catch our breath. Thus, Senior-apprentice Brother Emperor Shakya led the alliance army to come to the Hidden Dragon Galaxy in a rescue mission…”

The scout captain spoke in a single breath, his eyes carefully observing Lin Ming’s response.

“Your sound transmission mark.”

Lin Ming suddenly said, his expression brooking no refusal.

The scout captain grit his teeth and took out a jade slip from his spatial ring to give to Lin Ming. This jade slip recorded the password to the core sound transmission array formation of Mount Potala; this was the so-called ‘sound transmission mark’. As long as Lin Ming created a sound transmission array and placed the jade slip in the center, then he could communicate with Mount Potala.

This jade slip was more important than the lives of these six scouts. Normally, if the scout squad were to fall into danger without a chance of escape, then their first action would be to destroy the jade slip. Otherwise the saints could use this jade slip to lock onto the sound transmission signals and find the approximate position of Mount Potala. This jade slip was an incredible danger to Mount Potala, but as a scout squad they had to maintain contact.

And now, the scout captain passed the jade slip to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming reached out and the jade slip flew into his hands like an arrow. Then, his figure flickered as he submerged into Primordius Heavenly Palace.

The black fortress began to stir. Powerful array formations rapidly spun as the fortress quietly broke through the void, sinking into a space storm and vanishing from sight.

Only six bewildered human scouts were left behind, their eyes wide and blinking. Without a doubt, this mysterious person had gone to search for Xiao Moxian. Originally they had even though they could ask this mysterious person to come to the Mount Potala Wartime Alliance as an honored guest.

“This is… what do we do?”

A scout said in a daze. The appearance of this mysterious person in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy and the destruction of the second and third saint legions would soon whip up a great storm. At the same time, it would have a tremendous influence on the war between humanity and the saints!

The scout captain sucked in a deep breath, his eyes sparkling.

“The jade slip has already been given to the mysterious person. We can only head back to Mount Potala and personally report the news that we know!”

The scout captain waved his hand and the six of them fled into the void, rapidly flying opposite to the direction Lin Ming disappeared in.

As they flew, the only woman in the scout squad asked, “Boss, I have to say, this mysterious senior has some significant relationship with Empyrean Demon Fairy. I can’t help but associate him with someone…”

"Go on!" The scout captain simply said. The truth was that he also had his own associations in his heart. He had his subordinate speak to confirm his thoughts.

"I believe that even in the entire 33 Heavens, there are only several people that would be so anxious about Empyrean Demon Fairy. After ruling them out, the only remaining possibility is the most impossible one of all!"

"I know." The scout leader took a deep breath, feeling all the blood within him boiling over.

Yes, all signs pointed towards that impossible truth. Over 6000 years ago, with just a Holy Lord realm cultivation, a person who had overturned the 33 Heavens and had nearly relied on his strength alone to find an escape route for humanity; that legendary character had not died.

He had finally... returned!

MW Chapter 2036

Chapter 2036 - Return

…

…

…

Mount Potala Wartime Alliance, the great golden buddha spirit ship –

Emperor Shakya, Great Limitless Buddha, Dark Demon Monarch, and the others were all sitting in a circle around a great table, listening to the report by the scouts.

“The approximate situation is like this!”

The scout captain succinctly said, clearly reiterating the process in which he met the mysterious person. In addition, he took out a battle array disc that had recorded some of the scenes they witnessed.

This was a scene of Lin Ming fighting four peak Empyreans as well as Primordius Heavenly Palace shooting out innumerable light beams, instantly slaying the ancient space beasts and destroying the iron lion battleships.

Seeing the images replayed through the array disc, the Empyreans present were filled with an emotion beyond description.

Shock, excitement, worry, joy, all sorts of emotions swelled up within them, leaving everyone in the hall silent for a long time.

The array disc played on for a full quarter hour. Because the scene was hastily recorded and from very far away, the images were extremely blurry, and even Lin Ming's face wasn't clearly recorded.

However, this didn't prevent the commanders of humanity present from replaying the scenes in their heads.

Such an intense battle had left their hearts surging and their emotions wildly fluctuating. They even felt their blood feverishly boiling over!

In particular, when they saw the Black Dragon bite through the ancient space beast, Lin Ming brutally beating the peak Empyreans, and Primordius Heavenly Palace tearing through the saint fleets like a meat grinder, the martial artists present couldn't help but grip their fists together, their eyes shining with glory.

To Bagui thumped his own chest. Such an image truly let one vent their anger. He clearly recalled the scene from several days ago when they had fought with the second saint legion. That sort of feeling where he hated the enemy to the bone and yet wasn't able to do anything to them left To Bagui feeling crazed.

Humanity had been suppressed for far too long. Now, they finally saw hope. Even though they were still drowning in the endless night, they finally saw the first rays of dawn.

"This mysterious person is simply a legend! When it comes to him, there is nothing he cannot accomplish!"

Dark Demon Monarch said, praising Lin Ming from his heart. In truth he had already approximately judged Lin Ming's strength; he was someone that surpassed a peak Empyrean, an existence that could reluctantly be called invincible amongst Empyreans. Such combat strength was in truth superior to Emperor Shakya but worse than that of a True Divinity.

According to common logic, if a person didn't reach the True Divinity realm, it would be hard to play a pivotal role in a war between two races.

But reality defied all expectations in such a bizarre manner. This mysterious person, with his strength alone, was nearly able to reverse the entire tide of the war!

"Perhaps you should no longer call him that mysterious person, but instead call him Lin Ming."

Emperor Shakya smiled as he spoke. It had been many years since Emperor Shakya had last revealed such a heartfelt smile.

"Lin Ming… you are sure it is him?"

Dark Demon Monarch glanced over at Emperor Shakya. In truth, he hadn't had much contact with Lin Ming. The only time he saw Lin Ming was at the Monster Emperor's grand longevity banquet, and the rest of his understandings had come from rumors and hearsay.

"It's him!"

Jun Bluemoon firmly nodded as he stroked the rusty sword in his arms. Back when he participated in the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting and fought with Lin Ming, that battle still remained a vivid memory.

Emperor Shakya said, "He referred to Xiao Moxian as Xian'er. In the entire 33 Heavens, there are only several people who would call Xiao Moxian by this name and care for her so much. In addition with that Black Dragon and spear, so many coincidences joining together mean it is no longer a coincidence, but the truth.

"Lin Ming hasn't died! He has returned!

"He is someone who always brings about miracles. After more than 6000 years passing, he will surely bring us a favorable turn!"

Emperor Shakya tightly clenched the armrest of his stone chair. It could be seen just how excited he was.

Many young disciples noticed Emperor Shakya's actions. In their view, Emperor Shakya was the high commander of the Mount Potala Wartime Alliance and could be called the second leader of humanity. He was always calm and rarely lost his composure.

"Is this person really so fierce? If he doesn't have the strength of a True Divinity could he really bring us a favorable turn? The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign is still a powerhouse even amongst True Divinities."

A disciple of the younger generation couldn't help but say.

The young disciples that were able to stand in this meeting hall were all geniuses. Most of them were born in the wild universe, and by the time they were born, Lin Ming had already 'died'. They had never seen Lin Ming and had only heard tales about him. They knew that he was the man who brought the Asura Decree to humanity and who possessed talent far surpassing all others in the 33 Heavens.

In the history books of humanity, Lin Ming was described as invincible amongst the heavens and earth, unique and singular. As the stories of him were retold again and again, Lin Ming eventually became an omnipotent presence.

Towards this, some young geniuses were incredibly proud and worked hard with Lin Ming as their goal.

But there were also some young geniuses who remained suspicious about these tales. They thought that humanity had propped up the Lin Ming of the past and had nearly deified him. They believed this was an attempt to give the younger generation a boost of confidence and also so that the younger generation could feel comforted and infatuated with their own possibilities. After all, it was human nature to boast about the heroes of one's own race.

Sable Ink was the second type of person. When she heard the fanatical Linmaniacs chatter away, she would often ask, "If he was so fierce, how come he's dead?"

This single question often silenced the mouths of many people.

However, upon receiving news that Lin Ming hadn't died, a strange color appeared in Sable Ink's eyes. She traced her scythe, a feeling that was hard to place filling her heart.

"Everyone adjust yourselves. Four hours from now, we will set out!"

Emperor Shakya suddenly said. Lin Ming's appearance had lifted their morale, but now was not the time to celebrate any victories because there was still an extremely important matter to resolve. That was – Xiao Moxian's safety.

Previously, because the second and third saint legions were stationed nearby, the Mount Potala Wartime Alliance was simply unable to enter. But now that the periphery was cleared out, Mount Potala would naturally take this chance to rush in.

No matter how much help they could provide Lin Ming, they still had to try their best.

The Hidden Dragon Galaxy was amazingly large and there was no sound transmission mark that could be used to locate Xiao Moxian. Thus, finding her wouldn't be easy at all. Even the Good Fortune Saint Son had failed to do so for several years. It couldn't even be compared to looking for a needle in the sea.

In terms of war strength, they weren't able to compete with Lin Ming. But in terms of looking for people they possessed an advantage. In the end, it was always best to have more people.

Mount Potala's great golden buddha as well as many spirit ships slowly broke through the void, driving deep into the Hidden Dragon Galaxy.

As Mount Potala embarked towards the depths of the Hidden Dragon Galaxy, the Good Fortune Saint Son had also obtained similar news.

The second and third legions had been routed, but the truth was that most spirit ships had survived. This included those people that belonged to the Good Fortune Saint Palace's intelligence network.

They completely reported the scene of Lin Ming routing the joint saint legions to the Good Fortune Saint Son.

Because they were closer to Lin Ming, the information they were able to record was much more detailed than that of the scouts from Mount Potala.

At this time, in front of the Good Fortune Saint Son, the phantom projections from the battle array disc constantly flashed and changed. Iron lion spirit ships burst apart one after another and numerous ancient space beasts were slain.

The entire hall was filled with only these silent images, without a single other sound. Several dozen high level saint officers held their breath. Even the drop of a needle could be heard in the present atmosphere.

Such a situation left them all in fear and apprehension. They all knew just how stimulating this must be to the Good Fortune Saint Son!

It had to be known that the several saint legions had been transferred here under the orders of the Good Fortune Saint Son in order to deal with that mysterious person. But before all the legions had fully gathered, they had already been routed by Lin Ming, suffering a catastrophic defeat!

In front of the mysterious person, the saints had already suffered two great defeats. This was undoubtedly a great blow to the eternally arrogant Good Fortune Saint Son!

At this time the Good Fortune Saint Son was like a volcano ready to erupt at any second. However, as the images of the array disc finally ended, the Good Fortune Saint Son remained ghostly silent.

His elbows were propped up on the table and his face was hidden in the shadows of his arms. It was impossible to see his expression.

The messenger that brought over the battle array disc didn't even dare to take a breath, lest he be killed by the Good Fortune Saint Son in a fit of anger.

"Draw back!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son suddenly said. The messenger felt as if he had been granted a pardon from a capital crime; he left the hall with his entire forehead dripping sweat.

The military officers all looked at the Good Fortune Saint Son. They never thought he would remain so quiet.

"The rest of you can also draw back."

The Good Fortune Saint Son waved his hand and stood up. From his standing position, everyone could see that his eyes had turned blood red, like a wild animal in a seething rage. They all felt a sense of dread as they looked at him.

The military officers glanced at each other and left the meeting hall in droves. Finally, the only one left remaining was the Good Fortune Saint Son.

The Good Fortune Saint Son gripped the armrest of his chair, his eyes sparkling with thick killing intent.

"So in the end it was you after all. This… is our predestined battle…"

MW Chapter 2037

Chapter 2037 – The Restless Night

…

…

…

The Hidden Dragon Galaxy, in a dark gray nebula –

A black palace slowly floated. Flying around it were several dozen spirit ships.

This black palace as well as the numerous spirit ships around it were covered in a gray array formation, isolating them from the outside space.

There were countless such nebulas in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy. When combined with various concealing array formations, this was one of the greatest advantages that humanity used to survive for these past years.

However, this so-called advantage was in truth simply delaying for time. In the words of the saints, humanity was merely ‘a feeble existence lingering about’.

When the saints launched their carpet sweep of an area, the hidden areas would slowly be uncovered. What followed was a massacre.

The saints’ searching method was referred to by them as ‘hunting’. From searching for a target, locking onto them, and then hunting them down and kill them, this was just like a hunter searching for prey. And the result was also the same as hunting, without any suspense at all. A hunter was a hunter and would rarely be injured by their prey.

Now, the human forces in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy encountered such ‘hunting’ from the saints; they were already in a precarious situation.

Within the stationed area of this influence, at the central dark palace, in the highest room –

This room was extremely large but the layout was surprisingly simple. There was an octagonal-shaped obsidian table, two heavy and sturdy obsidian chairs, and also a wooden bookshelf nearby. This bookshelf was covered with thick and ancient books, and these ancient books had incredibly archaic languages written on them. Few people would be able to understand the contents of these books. Across the bookshelf was a wide bed with pale gray sheets and beneath the bed was a rug of black velvet.

The room's walls hadn't been altered much but retrained the original hue and ruggedness of the metal material used to construct them. Just looking at it made one feel a little constrained and depressed.

After some time, the door to the room opened and a black-clothed woman walked in. She wore a simple black dress and her face was thin and pale.

She was Xiao Moxian, the master of this room.

The room was deathly quiet. The air echoed around her gentle footsteps.

She slowly arrived in front of the obsidian table and sat down. In such a gray and gloomy room, her beautiful and ethereal appearance seemed out of place.

She didn't light a candle. Rather, in this dark environment she sat alone, meditating for a while. Then she took out a violet sun crystal and placed it on a small array disc, activating it.

In a flash, a vast and beautiful starry sky lit up in front of her.

This was a star chart for the surrounding 10 billion miles.

The truth was that Xiao Moxian had already recorded this star chart in her mind. Every star, every planet, every celestial body including even slightly larger asteroids was imprinted in her mind, and she knew everything there was to know about them. She closed her eyes, reviewing this star chart in her mind. Every day she would come here and spend two hours specifically reviewing this star chart.

She knew that she couldn’t remain hidden in this region for much longer; the Good Fortune Saint Son’s search area had been reduced to a tiny region and it was already no longer possible to move. This was because once their base relocated they would definitely leave behind clues and traces of their past presence. At that time, they would be exposed to even greater risks.

Time became an increasingly pressing matter. Xiao Moxian couldn’t help but start considering the worst result possible. In her mind she began to envision the countless results that could occur from a battle with the Good Fortune Saint Son…

Although it was a battle which she would inevitably lose, Xiao Moxian wouldn’t sit idly by and wait for death to take her. At the final moment, the result she wanted was to allow as many people as possible to escape, to flee far away from this disaster!

Of course, wanting everyone to escape was impossible. There had to be people left behind to stall for time, and these people would be the sacrifices.

How many people to leave behind, how many people to send away, how to arrange battle tactics, these were all things that Xiao Moxian had to consider.

However, no matter what plans she made, as the leader of this human influence and also the strongest individual here, when danger approached she would have to stay.

The band of brave sacrifices needed a leader, and this leader could only be her.

But, if possible, she hoped that her child Lin Huang would be able to escape this star territory and safely leave.

He was the continuance of her and Lin Ming's lives, and also the future hope of humanity.

As she thought of her own child, Xiao Moxian gently sighed. She couldn't help but think of Lin Ming once more. A trace of sadness sparkled in her watery eyes. If Lin Ming were still alive, what would he do?

She quietly touched the star chart, the curtain of night gradually falling over the dark palace. This nebula and the sun it revolved around began to slowly sink into thick shadows. Xiao Moxian stood up and prepared a pot of clear fog tea for herself. This type of tea was infused with 10,000 year clear fog flowers and it was fragrant and sweet, with the effect of nourishing the soul. It also helped Xiao Moxian maintain her mental state.

In fact, she hadn't rested for a long, long time.

She took out two purple crystal cups. She poured one cup of clear fog tea for herself, and then pushed the other cup across from her.

Next, Xiao Moxian began to deliberate once more. There were many matters that she had to consider. For instance their violet sun crystal reserves were falling precipitously low. In order to maintain the concealing array formations that hid away their base, they needed to consume a tremendous number of violet sun crystals. As their sphere of action constantly shrank it became increasingly hard to mine for these crystals.

She needed to figure out a solution to resolve this predicament. Otherwise, the base's great array formation would last for less than a year. If they couldn't solve it then they would easily be found by the Good Fortune Saint Son.

Every now and then, Xiao Moxian would bring up the cup of tea and take a sip.

The clear fog tea was slowly finished by her. As for the cup across from her, it remained motionless, as if there were supposed to be someone sitting there, but that person had left, leaving behind only their seat and their cup of tea.

This was one of Xiao Moxian's habits. For these years she had lived alone, but from an outsider's perspective it seemed as if two people were living here.

Time slowly passed and the hot tea cooled down. Still, Xiao Moxian remained deep in thought.

Two hours later she turned off the star chart and shook her head. She temporarily laid aside the issue with the violet sun crystals and began to meditate.

In such an environment, Xiao Moxian sat alone, quietly passing the quiet night before the storm.

However, she was destined to not experience a night of peace. Deep in the night as Xiao Moxian was in meditation, a gray sound transmission mark lit up; there was clearly news to be reported to her.

As she looked at the sound transmission jade slip that constantly flashed in the dark of night, Xiao Moxian's eyebrows pressed together. To her, this sparkling jade slip was like the eye of a demon, haunting her constantly; over these past years, whenever urgent news came it was almost always bad.

For instance, news that the Good Fortune Saint Son was shrinking his encirclement once more, or news that there weren't any energy stones remaining.

What was even worse was that once, a scout squad of Demon Fairy Palace had been captured by the Good Fortune Saint Son. In order to preserve their secrets and knowing that there was no chance to escape, they decided to take the soul poison pills that they had prepared beforehand to commit suicide.

This was an extremely tyrannical poison. Only a Great World King alchemist was able to refine it, and it was limited to martial artists at the World King level and below.

Once someone took a soul poison pill, the victim would die in a few breaths of time. Not just that, but the poison would destroy their spiritual sea, making it so that the enemy wouldn't be able to find anything of value from it.

In other words, this type of poison was to have one's soul disintegrate to ash.

This was a pitiful and miserable way to die. Still, Xiao Moxian had no choice but to prepare such a poison pill for every member of the scouting squads. When the alchemists of Demon Fairy Palace prepared a new batch of these soul poison pills and handed them to her, she felt as if they were as heavy as mountains and rivers in her hands.

In particular, the confident and loyal expressions of the scouts when she handed the poison pills to them were like sabers that cut into her heart.

However, she had nothing else she could do. Without sufficient strength this was the only choice she could make.

She shook her head and put these thoughts aside. She left the room and headed towards the great sound transmission array.

Demon Fairy Palace's sound transmission array was situated close to Xiao Moxian's room. At this time, several core figures of Demon Fairy Palace were already surrounding the edges of the sound transmission array.

As Xiao Moxian arrived, a youth moved his lips as if he wanted to say something, but in the end he didn't.

"What is the matter?"

Xiao Moxian frowned upon seeing the youth's expression. This youth was named Tao An and he had been born after the great calamity erupted. He had been one of Xiao Moxian's faithful followers and was now part of the backbone of Demon Fairy Palace.

From his expression that seemed as if he found it difficult to speak, Xiao Moxian realized that the news they just received was likely nothing good.

"Speak, there is no need to hesitate. The worst that could happen is that the Good Fortune Saint Son has already found us."

Xiao Moxian calmly said. Tao An froze for a moment. He looked at the other core figures from Demon Fairy Palace and said, "Miss... there has been a problem at New Ming Planet..."

Tao An's few words caused Xiao Moxian's heart to nearly tear out from her chest!

New Ming Planet was the only planet that Xiao Moxian had established in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy in the past.

Tens of billions of people lived on New Ming Planet. These people had slowly migrated from other star territories in the last 200-300 years and were Xiao Moxian's loyal subjects.

Xiao Moxian loved her people with all her heart. When the saints invaded the Hidden Dragon Galaxy, Xiao Moxian pledged that she would protect the people of New Ming Planet so that they could live long and prosperous lives filled with children and hope. But as the Good Fortune Saint Son continued to shrink his encirclement, Xiao Moxian was eventually unable to stay with New Ming Planet. She had no choice but to leave.

Otherwise, not only would she be captured by the Good Fortune Saint Son but New Ming Planet would have been destroyed in the flames of war.

Leaving New Ming Planet was a helpless choice and the only choice she could make. In normal circumstances, if New Ming Planet was discovered by the Good Fortune Saint Son then a time of suffering would descend upon them, but the saints wouldn't carry out a wide-scale genocide. This was because the common mortals of humanity had no meaning to the saints, and it was instead more useful to make them into slaves that helped develop the wild universe.

But today, from the expression of Tao An, this might not be true at all!

MW Chapter 2038

Chapter 2038 – Our Final Pride

…

…

…

Starting from when the first batch of people settled on New Ming Planet, it had only experienced a history of several hundred years. In the perpetual river of history through which humanity had evolved, this tiny spark of time wasn't worth mentioning at all.

In these last several hundred years, the population of New Ming Planet had developed from billions to tens of billions of people. However, across the vast and broad New Ming Planet, there was an incalculable amount of wild land that had yet to be developed. Humanity had only been able to occupy the tiniest corner of this planet, and around 100,000 cities had been established, both large and small.

The name of New Ming Planet had come from Xiao Moxian's longing towards Lin Ming.

Everyone on New Ming Planet knew of Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian's charming and love-filled story. The showdown at the Monster Emperor's grand longevity banquet was a part they took relish in talking about.

For those humans that suffered in the present, the tale of Lin Ming suppressing the Good Fortune Saint Son, rescuing Xiao Moxian and freeing her from the shackles of the demon and monster races and then starting their romance, no matter how many times these people listened to this story they never became bored of it.

To the people of New Ming Planet who were undergoing so many hardships, this was the fairytale they loved the most.

For the vast majority of new settlers who first came to New Ming Planet, the reason they chose to leave their homelands and follow Xiao Moxian there to develop this wild land was all because of their respect and love towards her as well as their worship and admiration of Lin Ming.

And after New Ming Planet was established, Xiao Moxian also joined together with her subjects. When the cities were being built all around, she ate and lived with them, living in perfect harmony.

In the largest city of New Ming Planet, there was a holy mountain. Atop this holy mountain towered a memorial palace dedicated to Lin Ming. This memorial palace had the statues of Lin Ming, Xiao Moxian, and several others.

Every year, a massive number of believers would come and worship at this memorial palace.

Several months ago the saints had discovered New Ming Planet. Without any effort at all, they had taken this planet into their pocket. The tens of billions of people living there simply weren't able to pose any threat to the saint armies.

After the saints seized New Ming Planet, the first action they took was to forcefully change the planet's name.

This planet was renamed to Saint Advent Planet.

But, this name was resisted by every citizen of New Ming Planet. Then the Good Fortune Saint Son passed down an order.

It was this order that created a living hell for the inhabitants of New Ming Planet.

In the past, when the saints annexed a planet they would recklessly plunder it while killing off all the human masters. The common people would be left over as simple laborers.

The saint pioneers mostly came to these planets to capture any bit of leftover wealth that they could.

But this time, after the Good Fortune Saint Son seized New Ming Planet, he didn't do this at all. Rather, it should be said that he disdained to do so.

The order that he passed down was – to seize all granaries of New Ming Planet and then completely block off all 100,000 cities, not allowing anyone to take even a single step out.

The residents of New Ming Planet were mostly common people at the Xiantian realm or below. It was impossible for them to ward off all hunger; they needed to eat.

After the granaries were looted, the people were only able to obtain food from farmlands outside the cities or from beasts in the wild.

But because the Good Fortune Saint Son had sealed off all the cities, no one was able to leave.

Every person of New Ming Planet could only rely on the little bits of remaining grain in their households to pass the days.

And the Good Fortune Saint Son didn't plan on releasing the blockade on all the cities. His intentions were clear: he wanted to starve every person on New Ming Planet to death.

Imagine. If a pack of red-eyed and starving people was to be locked up in a small city, what would happen?

Hunger, death, despair, all these things would trigger the savage and bestial nature of humans. In a situation where food was deprived, many people would devolve into rabid beasts, fighting and killing for scraps of food. Finally, even cannibalism would occur.

To the Good Fortune Saint Son, this was an extremely interesting experiment.

This was the punishment that the Good Fortune Saint Son had passed down on these lowly commoners. Since they had the will to resist, he wanted to see just how long their will would be able to persist while they suffered beneath the torment of hunger.

And, there was another, more important point. The Good Fortune Saint Son had used this method in order to force out Xiao Moxian.

He was well aware that Xiao Moxian had long since left New Ming Planet, but in doing so she also would have left behind an informer. All new developments that occurred on New Ming Planet would be reported back to Xiao Moxian.

If so, he wanted to see whether or not Xiao Moxian would turn her back on her subjects.

In the eyes of the Good Fortune Saint Son, if Xiao Moxian ran back here because a mere several dozen billion commoners were on the verge of death, then that would be mind-bogglingly stupid.

But he was also aware that in this world there were indeed certain people who were this stupid.

Even if Xiao Moxian was crueler than he expected, watching these commoners starve to death wasn't a big deal to him. To the Good Fortune Saint Son this was no loss at all, no different from the death of several dozen billion ants.

The Good Fortune Saint Son had already reduced the encirclement to several large nebulas. If Xiao Moxian couldn't remain calm and wanted to break through his blockade to rescue New Ming Planet, then he would be the first to find out.

On New Ming Planet, the famine had continued for a long time. The one responsible for managing New Ming Planet was a direct subordinate of the Good Fortune Saint Son – Empyrean Evernight.

Evernight was renowned as a cruel and merciless individual who loved blood and slaughter. Torturing people like this was a job perfectly suited to him.

And in fact, when he received these orders he was extremely excited to follow them.

To slowly tear the falsely noble façade of some self-righteous and hypocritical race, slowly restoring their primal and beastly nature, was what Empyrean Evernight loved the most.

In his eyes, New Ming Planet had no history or background behind it at all, nor did they have any sense of unity. It had only been several hundred years since humans had come to develop this world, so how much unity could they have?

But the truth was that the way matters developed didn't go according to Empyrean Evernight's wishes.

As the famine continued, what made Empyrean Evernight unhappy was that the murder and robbery he originally expected to occur, didn't.

These commoners, even if they were hungry to their limits, even if they were sealed off in cities, even if there were people who starved to death or died of illness, still continued to silently endure it.

They endured the hunger, endured the lack of supplies and plagues that ravaged the cities. They lived their days like walking corpses.

In order to preserve strength, many of these people sat in meditation all day.

As for Houtian realm martial artists, they even grasped this time to cultivate. They wanted to desperately bet everything in these dire times and break into the Xiantian realm. As long as they broke into the Xiantian realm they would be able to rely on breathing heaven and earth origin energy to supplement themselves, only requiring the smallest amount of food…

Occasionally, patrols of saint soldiers would bluster around and when they saw human martial artists that they didn't like, they would casually drag them away and beat them senseless. But the people of New Ming Planet continued to endure.

No one robbed others, no one cannibalized others, and there weren't even many suicides.

It seemed as if there was some invisible order restraining the suffering of the people, giving them a strange tenacity that pushed them forwards to stubbornly live on…

They seemed to be living numb lives, lives with hearts filled with despair.

But, Empyrean Evernight knew that it was impossible for those that were truly numb and filled with despair to endure all of this.

He discovered that while many people were starving, they actually still climbed up the holy mountain to pay their respects to the sculptures of Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming at the memorial palace.

This provoked the ire of Empyrean Evernight.

He could easily destroy New Ming Planet. But what he wanted was not to kill these people, but to break them and conquer them!

The saints wished to rule the 33 Heavens. This wasn't completely exterminating all other races, but enslaving them and conquering them!

Beams of light shot down. The memorial palace was destroyed.

All that remained were the statues of Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian in front of the memorial palace. They stood there cold and alone. This was a deliberate action done by Empyrean Evernight.

Empyrean Evernight issued a new command. He had the saints open their vast warehouses of food supplies above the holy mountain.

Large chunks of meat were cooked and giant pots of rice were steamed.

As long as these suffering humans were willing to walk to this ruined memorial palace and spit upon the statues of Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian, then they would receive a pot of cooked meat and 10 jins of fragrant rice.

Many people rushed to the square on top the holy mountain. The scent of rice and meat caused them to waver where they stood. This was a physiological desire, one that they couldn’t resist.

However, as they learned what they had to do in order to obtain this food, their hearts turned cold.

Many children drooled but were pulled back by the adults. Even though these children were nothing but skin and bones, even though the adults were shaking with hunger, no one moved forwards.

This square that could hold 100,000 people was utterly silent. No one walked in front of the statues and no one went to obtain the life-saving food.

There were elders with faces engraved by winds and frost, women in tattered rags, emaciated children…

With numb faces, they stood there like rock sculptures, forming an eternal picture. It was as if they would stand there forever, until the end of their lives came.

If one could see through their eyes, they would find that even beneath the heavy suppression, even in this dark and gloomy world, there was always a faint ray of light that shined before them, illuminating the way forwards.

They adamantly believed that their leader would return, that their troops would come back!

These people came from New Ming Planet. They were the subjects of the most legendary hero in human history! They had their pride. They could be killed, crushed beneath the heel of others beneath the yoke of absolute strength. But, they would not grovel, they would not be defeated, they would not be conquered!

They would not eat this tainted food set before them. This was the final pride of a race on the verge of extinction!

Empyrean Evernight was finally enraged. The orders he received were to torture these people so that Xiao Moxian would reveal her whereabouts in her panic.

Now, he has lost his patience.

Since he couldn't conquer these people he would simply erase them from existence.

He issued a new order. Every day 10 million people would be slaughtered, continuing until every person on New Ming Planet had been killed!

And after issuing this order, the response he saw was the same indifference and numbness. He didn’t even see much fear in the eyes of these doomed commoners.

“You all really have such strength of will. Since you want to die then I’ll start with you. Is Ji Xian’er’s informant nearby? Take a good look at what is occurring!”

Empyrean Evernight waved his hand, ordering his subordinates to begin the slaughter. He disdained to kill these commoners himself. Just what sort of noble status did he have? Personally killing these people would have been a gift to them.

However, the moment he waved his hand he felt a strange aura arrive. An inexplicable feeling instantly covered his entire body. Without time to distinguish what this feeling was, he suddenly felt a chill on his back. Helplessly, he looked downwards to see a bloodstained spear protruding from his chest.

The blood above it was so red it blinded the eyes…

MW Chapter 2039

Chapter 2039 - Dawn

...

...

...

Empyrean Evernight turned his head with disbelief. He saw that behind him was a black-clothed man with an indifferent expression playing on his face. The eyes of this black-clothed man seemed to contain the blood ponds of hell.

This man was Lin Ming.

Lin Ming had already explored the Hidden Dragon Galaxy for a long time. If he wanted to, he could easily travel from one end of the Hidden Dragon Galaxy to the other in a single day.

However, while traversing straight through the Hidden Dragon Galaxy was easy, wanting to find someone in it was far too hard. Whether it was looking for Xiao Moxian or the Good Fortune Saint Son, it was no different from searching for a needle in a sea.

Fortunately Lin Ming possessed the Magic Cube. After he routed the second and third saint legions, Fairy Blue Lotus had purposely captured several martial artists so that Lin Ming could interrogate them.

Lin Ming read through the memories of these people using the Magic Cube. Compared to using a soul searching technique, this method was a hundred times more detailed. Moreover, in most situations it was extremely difficult to use the soul searching technique on an Empyrean and there were many limits.

Lin Ming followed the clues to find several other saint strongholds. He used 10 days to entirely destroy these strongholds. Afterwards, he captured new saints and obtained newer information from them using the Magic Cube.

For every piece of valuable information, Lin Ming would chase it down to its source. Finally, in another saint stronghold, he found a sound transmission mark of Good Fortune Saint Palace!

This sound transmission mark was concealed as an ordinary jade slip. But with the Magic Cube, Lin Ming managed to easily find it.

According to this sound transmission mark, Lin Ming arranged a sound transmission array and was able to lock onto the origin. This was also New Ming Planet.

The truth was that New Ming Planet's coordinates were no longer at its original location.

Mount Potala had New Ming Planet's location listed in its records. But, because the saints wanted to hide it from humanity, and in particular prevent Lin Ming from easily finding it, the Good Fortune Saint Son had used the great strength of Famine's avatar to push New Ming Planet to another location.

This distance wasn't too far from the Good Fortune Saint Son's encirclement ring. It was convenient to manage and also easy to conceal.

Thus, the Good Fortune Saint Son could slowly torture the citizens of New Ming Planet and force Xiao Moxian to reveal herself.

The Good Fortune Saint Son didn't worry that Xiao Moxian wouldn't know where New Ming Planet's new position was, because she had left her informants on it.

As long as the Good Fortune Saint Son could capture Xiao Moxian, then he could vent his anger on her, bringing his hatred of over 6000 years to completion. Moreover, he could use her to threaten Lin Ming!

Imagine. If Xiao Moxian were to be swallowed into Famine's avatar and then the Good Fortune Saint Son were to use Famine's avatar to fight Lin Ming, just what scene would that be?

Because Lin Ming would fear to harm those he loved, this would place the Good Fortune Saint Son in an invincible position.

This was the Good Fortune Saint Son's final plan; he was simply too frightened by Lin Ming. Even with Famine's avatar on his side, the Good Fortune Saint Son didn't feel safe. Thus, he wanted to grab hold of Xiao Moxian. This would be tantamount to grasping hold of Lin Ming's weak point. Like this, he could slowly torment Lin Ming to death.

The Good Fortune Saint Son looked forwards to capturing Xiao Moxian and then fighting with Lin Ming. He wanted to see the utter hatred and loathing that would cloud Lin Ming's face.

Only like this would he be able to resolve his 6000 plus years of hatred.

However, although the Good Fortune Saint Son had found a good method to deal with Lin Ming, he miscalculated Lin Ming's ability to gather information. In just two months Lin Ming found the new position of New Ming Planet.

But what a pity, Lin Ming didn't find the Good Fortune Saint Son on New Ming Planet. Still, this wasn't a major problem.

Lin Ming quietly reached out and grabbed Empyrean Evernight's neck. His fingers squeezed down and Empyrean Evernight felt his own neck crack apart. Empyrean

Evernight's eyeballs bulged out and he desperately grabbed hold of Lin Ming's hand, wanting to crush his wrist.

However, Lin Ming's mortal body was too formidable and his strength too terrifying. Nine stars appeared behind him and layers of starlight fell upon his body. Empyrean Evernight was a dog stuck in an iron trap, unable to break free.

"You… you…"

Empyrean Evernight uttered with difficulty. And at this time, all of the other saint martial artists were in a dire situation. Those that surrounded Lin Ming had faces full of shock and fear. They couldn't imagine just what kind of person could be so ridiculously powerful that they could approach Empyrean Evernight without him noticing and then use a single spear strike to pierce through his protective astral essence. After all, the body of a saint Empyrean would have been tempered for so much and for so long that it was as hard as an Empyrean spirit treasure.

As the spear penetrated through Empyrean Evernight's body, he didn't even suffer much impact. This was proof that the spear which broke into his body did so as easily as a knife slicing into tofu.

Kacha!

With a loud crack, Lin Ming twisted and directly broke Empyrean Evernight's neck.

In front of Lin Ming, a lower Empyrean was simply far too weak.

A saint Empyrean possessed an extremely tenacious vitality. Even if their chest were pierced through or their neck were broken, they would still hang onto that single last breath without dying.

With wide and large eyes like a black fish, Empyrean Evernight stared at the black-clothed man, no longer able to speak.

Lin Ming casually waved his hand and threw Empyrean Evernight down onto the square of the holy mountain. This was also right in front of the statues of himself and Xiao Moxian.

Lin Ming had already sealed away all the astral essence within Empyrean Evernight. Now, he was even weaker than a common mortal.

Seeing that previously cruel and insufferably arrogant saint Empyrean being tossed onto the ground like a dead dog, all of the humans present were shocked. Who was this man in the sky?

Although those in the square were mostly common mortals, they still knew what concept an Empyrean was. If there was someone capable of pinching an Empyrean to death like an ant, just how powerful would that person be?

Even Emperor Shakya, the second-ranked powerhouse of humanity, might not be able to accomplish this!

“Everyone!” Lin Ming floated above the holy mountain, flying before his own statue. He exuded the aura of a king throughout the entire square, causing everyone to quiet down.

Every human looked up at Lin Ming with awe and worship in their eyes.

To them, Lin Ming was like a god sent down from the heavens.

Lin Ming pointed towards this shivering Empyrean Evernight and said, “For anyone that comes up and spits on him, you will receive a pot of cooked meat and 10 jins of rice.”

These words were calmly spoken, but as they fell onto the ears of the human commoners, it caused them to explode with fervor!

Towards this Empyrean Evernight, these people wished that they could eat his raw flesh and drink deeply of his blood!

Now that they could spit on him and also obtain such luxurious food, all of them were bubbling with excitement!

There were immediately human commoners that pushed themselves forwards, wanting to spit on Empyrean Evernight. For a time, the square that could hold 100,000 people suddenly fell into chaos.

"Do not crowd forwards!"

Lin Ming only spoke a single phrase, but his words contained a calming magic to them. Immediately, the square of 100,000 people suddenly fell quiet.

Everyone shuffled towards Lin Ming's statue in an orderly manner. Then, they spat on Empyrean Evernight. Some people would be so angry that they would even stomp on him a few times to vent their hatred.

An old man with the appearance of a beggar coughed up an especially thick glob of phlegm and spat it onto Empyrean Evernight's face.

A seven or eight year old child untied his pants and immediately began peeing on Empyrean Evernight's head.

When would a proud and lofty Empyrean be treated like this? To be stepped on by a flock of commoners and be recklessly humiliated?

Slowly, Empyrean Evernight started to suffocate beneath the torment of despair and humiliation. With his neck broken and his astral essence sealed away, severing his meridians to commit suicide was not possible. Even moving his fingers was incredibly difficult.

After the common citizens spat on Empyrean Evernight they walked forwards and took their food. The saint martial artists that were responsible for guarding the food were already scared silly. Their faces were paper white and none of them dared to stop any of the humans.

The common human mortals grabbed the fragrant rice and cooked meat and began eating it in great gulps. After starving for a couple of months, suddenly having such a delicious meal was the greatest happiness of their lives...

As for Empyrean Evernight, he was already submerged in spit.

The several saint martial artists drew back with pale faces, wanting to disappear into the crowd. But as they were about to succeed, Lin Ming suddenly turned his head and coldly said, “Where do you plan on going?”

The several saint martial artists turned to flee. Some of the more intelligent ones hurtled towards the commoners, wanting to use them as hostages to threaten Lin Ming.

However, no matter what they tried, they couldn’t change their fates.

Black spear light shot out from Lin Ming's fingertips, sinking into the bodies of these people like arrows. Their bodies imploded as their organs and meridians burst apart.

Then, they slumped to the ground with fresh blood flowing out in streams.

As the human commoners saw these saint powerhouses die so violently and look so pathetic after death, they began to cheer out loud.

Even shy young girls no longer feared these miserable corpses.

Seeing this, Lin Ming smiled from his heart. He slowly flew into the skies. New Ming Planet still had several thousand saint minions here and he wanted to purge all of them from this planet, to return an easy and comfortable life to the people of New Ming Planet.

As Lin Ming flew away, many people fell to their knees in worship. Their faces were filled with admiration as sweet words of praise gushed out from their lips.

They knelt on the ground for a long time without rising back up. A young 11-12 year old child pulled at his father's hem and said with some hesitation, "Father, that brave and amazing big brother just now, he... does he look a bit like this statue?"

The young and naïve voice was especially crisp in the quiet square. As the people heard it, they were left in a daze.

Look like?

It didn't feel like it, but for some unknown reason, the man actually did bear an amazing likeness…

Everyone glanced at each other, unable to find the words to express themselves. But, no matter who that black-clothed man was, there was one thing they were sure of – the endless night had finally passed. That single ray of light that illuminated the way forwards had begun to grow into a bright and dazzling dawn!

In the quiet square, some people began to cry. A young girl in rags was too excited. She couldn't contain her emotions as great drops of tears fell down her cheeks. Finally, she fell onto the floor, her face covered with her hands as she wept away all her bitterness.

Husbands and wives held each other, their tears freely flowing. Even as they wiped away their tears, more fell down to replace them.

A man gripped his fists and roared into the heavens…

On this day, throughout New Ming Planet, there were crowds of people who lost their composure. They ran through the streets cheering, telling everyone that the powerhouses of humanity had returned!

They had endured so many trials and tribulations, and now those times were coming to an end!

Tears recklessly flowed down. Shouts and screams filled the skies.

After having experienced true tribulations and death, and now facing sudden freedom and victory, there was no one that was able to maintain their calm.

In particular, when people looked up and saw the Heavenly Palace that represented the might of the saints being destroyed, all of them exploded in shouts like volcanoes that finally erupted after being suppressed for too long.

“Humanity forever!”

Someone shouted out. More and more people chanted this phrase until it became a tide that rushed through all 100,000 cities of New Ming Planet, their voices echoing into the horizon!

At this moment, everyone’s hearts were connected as one.

And in the joyous crowd, no one noticed a beggar-like woman hurriedly rushing into an alley as she saw this scene.

She entered a shabby and unremarkable room. Then, she opened a hidden concealing array formation there, revealing a hidden chamber…

Within this chamber, she placed a jade slip onto the center of a sound transmission array formation. As she did this, her heartbeat accelerated and her face flushed red. It was clear she was shivering from excitement.

She had to report everything that happened on New Ming Planet, including the image of that mysterious black-clothed man to Xiao Moxian.

This woman was the informant Xiao Moxian had left on New Ming Planet.

She believed that the sudden appearance of this mysterious powerhouse would truly leave Empyrean Demon Fairy delighted…

MW Chapter 2040

Chapter 2040 - Voice

…

…

…

Within a dark nebula of the Hidden Dragon Galaxy –

Xiao Moxian stood before a bronze mirror, quietly tidying her military garb. At this time, the door to her room was pushed open and a red-dressed woman walked in, speaking in a soft voice.

“Little Sister Xian’er.”

Xiao Moxian turned and saw that the woman who came in was Mu Qianyu.

Xiao Moxian pressed her lips together as if she wanted to say something. But in the end, she couldn't find just where to start. She silently turned back and started to comb her long hair.

"Have you decided that you will go to New Ming Planet?"

Mu Qianyu asked, her mood complex. Her voice was filled with sadness. In these past years it had always been Xiao Moxian taking the burden for those around her. Ever since the news of Lin Ming's death, she had carried far too many things on her shoulders.

Xiao Moxian bitterly shook her head.

"Although it is said to be returning to New Ming Planet, the truth is that this will be a final showdown with the Good Fortune Saint Son... when we go to New Ming Planet and cross the space blockade, the Good Fortune Saint Son will sense it. He will surely be waiting nearby in ambush. With the avatar of Famine on his side, he will be much faster than we are. It will inevitably devolve into a life or death slaughter. We... will not be able to reach New Ming Planet."

Xiao Moxian was well aware of what plot the Good Fortune Saint Son was planning. In fact, this couldn't be called any plot at all, but a clumsy means to force her out of hiding.

But this clumsy method was one that Xiao Moxian was unable to ignore. Even if she turned a blind eye to her own people, her battle with the Good Fortune Saint Son was inevitable.

Since that was the case, she might as well launch an attack on her own initiative.

To die proudly and heroically in battle would be better than being slowly searched for and hunted down like some prey. In this final battle, blood was sure to stain the starry space. To her, the best result she could think of was sacrificing herself and heavily wounding the Good Fortune Saint Son, so that her followers would have a chance to escape.

The atmosphere in the room became heavy and solemn. Mu Qianyu picked up and separated Xiao Moxian's long black hair, slowly combing it. Her movements were slow and meticulous.

During these past years, Mu Qianyu had helped Xiao Moxian comb her hair more than once. She truly did cherish and love Xiao Moxian. Ever since Mo Eversnow left, it had been Xiao Moxian who kept everything together.

But because of the limit of her strength, there was actually very little that Mu Qianyu could help Xiao Moxian with.

“Big Sister, you cannot go. Stay here with Big Sister Xingxuan. After our battle with the Good Fortune Saint Son, no matter what the result is, he will not continue searching through this nebula.”

As Xiao Moxian spoke, Mu Qianyu’s hand suddenly froze.

Mu Qianyu bit her lips, not knowing what to say. She didn’t want to stay, but what could she change if she went? She would only die in vain, and if she were to fall into the hands of the Good Fortune Saint Son, the consequences would be unimaginable.

If something occurred that she couldn’t revert, even if she died she wouldn’t have the face to see Lin Ming.

Xiao Moxian had already guessed Mu Qianyu’s thoughts. She held onto Mu Qianyu’s hand and brightly smiled, and there were actually innumerable meanings contained in this smile. Mu Qianyu couldn’t help it as tears began freely flowing down her cheeks.

Perhaps this might be the last time she would be able to help Xiao Moxian comb her hair. When everything was finished, Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming would still need someone to worship and clean their spirit tablets…

Mu Qianyu covered her mouth, her tears quietly falling. And at this time, Lin Huang pushed open the door and stepped in. “Mother, Aunty Mu…”

Mu Qianyu quickly dried her tears. “Ah, Huang’er came too.”

“Mm.” Seeing Mu Qianyu’s wet face, Lin Huang could approximately guess what had just happened. But, he didn’t speak of it.

In these past years Lin Huang had already broken into the half-step Empyrean realm. Skyrend Godlord’s original advice had been for Lin Huang not to be hasty in reaching this boundary. However, because the saints invaded the wild universe, Lin Huang had no time to wait. He broke into the half-step Empyrean realm about 500 years ahead of time, but even if he did so he still wasn’t able to change anything.

He possessed an Empyrean level combat strength, and even amongst Empyreans he wasn’t considered weak.

But if he were to face the Good Fortune Saint Son it would be like a little white rock facing off against the bright moon; the disparity was too great.

With the avatar of Famine on his side, the Good Fortune Saint Son was far, far too strong, strong to the point that no human alive besides Empyrean Divine Dream could battle him. Even Emperor Shakya was not his match.

“Huang’er, what matter are you looking for me about?” Xiao Moxian noticed Lin Huang holding a sound transmission array disc in his hands. This was naturally information that he had just received.

Towards this, Xiao Moxian was already numb. What news could be worse than the present situation?

“There seems to have been an emergency development. This is urgent news sent from New Ming Planet…”

As Lin Huang spoke, he set the array disc on the table. After placing a violet sun crystal within it, a projection shot out from the array disc.

This projection was a bit confusing and chaotic at the start. There were great crowds of excited people eating food in joy and revelry. These grains that martial artists wouldn’t take a liking to were actually the most treasured delicacies to mortals.

Seeing this, Xiao Moxian and Mu Qianyu were stunned.

These projections were all scenes of the people of New Ming Planet cheering. The originally suffering and starving citizens were actually beating the saints and oppressing them. They even saw someone dead on the ground, submerged in spit and phlegm. This person was someone that had been previously reported about – Empyrean Evernight, New Ming Planet’s ruler!

“This is…”

Xiao Moxian's face was filled with disbelief. An Empyrean actually ended up in such a miserable fate where they drowned to death in the spit of common mortals?

Xiao Moxian's first thought was that Emperor Shakya or Empyrean Divine Dream had done this.

But soon, the explanation in the reported refuted her eyes. According to Xiao Moxian's informant, the one who saved New Ming Planet was a man of mysterious origins who had never been seen before.

He wore black clothes and grasped a spear in his hands. He was proud and tall, his strength terrifying.

The battle array disc also held a glimpse of this man.

The black-clothed man wielded a black spear. As he ruined the saint palaces atop New Ming Planet and the statues of the Good Fortune Saint Son, he did it as easily as kicking down sand sculptures.

And as Xiao Moxian saw this man's figure, her eyes could no longer move from him.

“Freeze it!”

Xiao Moxian nearly cried out loud, her voice filled with excitement. Lin Huang was bewildered; his mother rarely lost her composure like this.

“What is it?”

Lin Huang was unsure of what was happening, but he still paused the battle array disc.

The images recorded in the array disc weren’t too clear; this was because the distance was too great. It only recorded half of the black-clothed man’s blurry face, and because the speed of the spear was too fast, it was impossible to clearly see.

For this sort of image capturing array formation, recording this was already the limit.

Xiao Moxian’s eyes shined brilliantly as she stared at this man’s figure. Mu Qianyu was also dazed. For a time, no one knew what to say. All she felt was her heart rapidly racing, as if she had lost and then found the most important thing in her life.

This demeanor, that aura, that sweeping black spear, all of it was an eternal mark that fell onto her heart. Even through the river of time, even through the changed appearance, there were many things carved into the bone that couldn’t be changed.

Xiao Moxian and Mu Qianyu looked at each other. In truth, they couldn’t be sure of what they were seeing. However, they had shared a bed with that person, passed nights with that person, had crossed through life or death challenges with that person and had formed a connection of the heart. This was an inexplicable feeling, an intuition that came from the depths of one’s heart.

However, in this environment of despair, underneath the strong feelings of longing, this touch of intuition was more than enough to leave Xiao Moxian and Mu Qianyu incomparably excited!

“Go and call your Aunty Qin over.”

Xiao Moxian said, her voice shaking. Lin Huang nodded.

A moment later, Qin Xingxuan appeared in Xiao Moxian’s room. She had brought Lin Ming’s little sister Lin Xiaoge with her.

“What is it?”

Qin Xingxuan and Lin Xiaoge looked towards the projection of the array disc. As they saw the black-clothed man wielding a spear, a trace of confusion appeared in the eyes of the two women.

“He is…”

Qin Xingxuan gently covered her mouth.

“Let’s wait a moment before we speak about it.”

Xiao Moxian took a deep breath and calmed her mind. She untied the band around her neck and took out an ancient and simple necklace.

This necklace was the Thousand Mile Heartlink!

This was also the last time the Thousand Mile Heartlink could be used. This necklace had Lin Ming’s soul mark recorded within. If Xiao Moxian activated the array formation within the necklace, she could use it to search for Lin Ming. As long as they existed in the same world she could use it to contact Lin Ming. Of course, this was only true if Lin Ming was alive.

Seeing the Thousand Mile Heartlink, Mu Qianyu held her breath. She was afraid that everything occurring was an illusion.

They only had a single chance. She didn't want her hopes to be dashed away; she would rather die.

Seeing the Thousand Mile Heartlink, Lin Huang's dry lips twitched. He certainly knew what the function of the Thousand Mile Heartlink was. For all the years he knew her, his mother had taken this necklace as her life's most precious treasure. When he thought about the response that his mother and Aunty Mu had, could it possibly be…

As Lin Huang realized this impossible possibility, his heart began to speed up.

At the same time, similar reactions occurred with Qin Xingxuan and Lin Xiaoge.

Xiao Moxian's shivering fingers laid the Thousand Mile Heartlink down on the obsidian tabletop. Her movements were slow, as if she were afraid that any sudden actions would wake her from this dream.

Xiao Moxian carefully injected her energy into the Thousand Mile Heartlink.

The candlelight in the room gently swayed, the light dim. In this environment, the Thousand Mile Heartlink flashed with a faint light.

The Thousand Mile Heartlink recorded both Xiao Moxian and Lin Ming's spirit marks. Only Xiao Moxian could activate it.

At this time, Xiao Moxian's heart was caught in her throat. She was afraid, afraid that this was all an illusion. She was afraid that the Thousand Mile Heartlink's array formation would suddenly break down. She was afraid of any possible accident.

As everyone's hearts were gripped, approaching despair, that simple necklace began to gently and slowly, as if it was just now awakening from a dream that had lasted for almost seven thousand years, start to emit a vague and long-lost voice…

MW Chapter 2041

Chapter 2041 - Meeting

…

…

…

Perhaps because the distance was too great or perhaps because the array formation of the Thousand Mile Heartlink had broken apart too much, it was difficult to transmit a complete sound; there were only some blurry syllables.

But, no matter how blurry these sounds were, they were loud and clear enough to ring through the minds of all present.

Listening to this unforgettable voice that was carved into her bones, a voice that she only heard in her dreams, Xiao Moxian couldn't stand it any longer. She burst into tears.

"Lin Ming!"

Mu Qianyu’s body weakened and she fell onto the obsidian table.

She gently touched the Thousand Mile Heartlink, her mind shaking. This man who haunted her dreams, he was still alive!

Through countless sorrows, through countless tribulations, through nearly 7000 years across the endless river of time, they had come to this wild and strange land, withstanding loneliness, despair, slaughter, sacrifice, and death.

And now, all of these tribulations and grievances turned into boiling hot tears that recklessly flowed down.

He had returned!

And because of his return, nothing else mattered anymore!

This was the dawn that came after a long night, the warm spring that came after an endless winter. As long as he was in this world, all the cold and darkness seemed to fade far away.

“Big Brother, Big Brother really returned!”

Qin Xingxuan and Lin Xiaoge found it hard to restrain their emotions. They hugged, supporting each other.

Tears flowed out, dried, and then repeated once more...

No one knew just how many emotions and thoughts were contained in these tears.

“He is my father...”

Lin Huang looked at the projection image, his body quietly shaking.

This was the man who made him feel pride and glory? This was the man who had left an indelible mark on his life, and today, he had appeared before Lin Huang.

Lin Huang felt as if all of this was an illusion.

This was the man who had given him his life, the man who had given him his unparalleled talent.

This was the man who had saved humanity. When humanity was in a dire and hopeless situation, he had found the way to enter the wild universe, giving humanity a moment of reprieve.

Lin Huang had listened to tales of his father growing up. When he saw the various rulers of humanity, they would always touch his head and say, “You must grow well and become a man like your father was.”

His father was a hero, the man he respected most in his life, and also the one goal he had to surpass.

No matter how high this goal was!

His father’s life was too brilliant, too dazzling, so blinding that he eclipsed anyone standing near him.

As his son, Lin Huang had immeasurable attention focused on him since he was born. But as he was saddled with the mantle of his father’s pride, he also had to withstand an even greater pressure.

For all these years, he had worked hard, pushing himself to his limits. He started washing his bones at a mere three years of age. He used medicinal solutions to temper his immature body, withstanding the pain that wracked him. After growing up a little he left the city to develop the virgin lands. He ventured into the wild forests, cultivating, training, exploring, engaging in slaughter with vicious beasts…

He withstood the loneliness of seclusion. He studied transcendent divine mights, studied fighting, studied murder. He used every moment to temper himself, forcing himself forwards. No one knew how much blood he bled, how much sweat sprinkled to the ground. In his life, no one knew how much pressure he bore because he never spoke of it, not even to his mother.

In front of Xiao Moxian, he was forever her kind and caring son. He comforted her, trying his best to share the burden on her shoulders.

Sometimes, late into the night, he would take out his father’s portrait from his spatial ring and meditate as he faced this portrait alone.

Like a wild animal in an uninhabited cave, quietly licking their wounds.

And through these endless nights and days, Lin Huang became increasingly strong. He became the rising star of humanity, the goal that many young juniors chased after.

Perhaps the reason he mercilessly pushed himself forwards was because subconsciously, he wanted people to say – “He is truly worthy of being Lin Ming’s son.”

– Because he did not want to disgrace this pride!

And today, his father had finally returned.

Not only had he not died, he had come back far more powerful!

His return was originally a miracle. But, he was someone who was forever creating new miracles!

Pa!

The Thousand Mile Heartlink shattered. The last motes of light in the array formation darkened and vanished, leaving behind nothing but the beating candlelight in the room.

Xiao Moxian took a deep breath and dried her tears.

From this moment, she no longer felt fear or grief.

Because of him, this world was only filled with unending warm light.

....

At this time, far from New Ming Planet, Lin Ming opened his eyes from meditation.

He stood alone above rivers and mountains, looking at the blue clouds slowly crawling over the skies. As he gazed down upon the vast wild land beneath him, the corners of his eyes had become wet.

In truth, he had once thought that Xiao Moxian might use the Thousand Mile Heartlink to contact him. After entering the wild universe, all sound transmission marks had been replaced. Only his soul mark in the Thousand Mile Heartlink would be able to find him.

But the Thousand Mile Heartlink had been attuned to Xiao Moxian and only she could use it. And after such a long time had passed, Lin Ming even suspected that the Thousand Mile Heartlink had broken apart.

But today, during the last time that the Thousand Mile Heartlink could be used, in a situation where it couldn't even transmit a complete sound, in that brief moment, Xiao Moxian had used her own soul as the medium and had transmitted all the thoughts of everyone in the room to Lin Ming. Without words, those thoughts contained incomparably blazing emotions!

These emotions had passed on everything that was needed to Lin Ming.

His family was there. He had a son. Xiao Moxian, Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, Lin Xiaoge, they were all safe and well.

They were there, waiting for him to return!

After nearly seven thousand years, besides his first reincarnation that he spent with his parents, he had spent the rest of the time alone, withstanding the solitude.

But now he had found his family. To feel the concern of others was a wonderful feeling...

In the transmission just now, Lin Ming had sensed the general position of Xiao Moxian's soul mark as it flashed. In that endless starry skies, he had already locked onto the approximate star territory.

With the incredible intensity of his divine sense, as long as he knew which star territory it was, wanting to find Xiao Moxian wouldn't be difficult.

As for New Ming Planet, Lin Ming had already finished dealing with it. Before he attacked he had used an array formation to seal up the planet. After he began his cleansing, no one was able to escape. All of the saints had been dug out and dealt with by Lin Ming.

Now, news would not flow out from this area for a long time. The saints would take some time before they could respond. They would first suspect there was an accident and then send people here to investigate. As it stood, Lin Ming didn't need to worry that the Good Fortune Saint Son would retaliate by sending out troops to destroy New Ming Planet.

However, in order to be safe, Lin Ming left behind a transmission array here as well as a squad of the Legion of Famine. If an accident occurred they would immediately notify him and he would be able to return in a short period of time.

Lin Ming shot up into the skies, flying faster the more he flew. In the blink of an eye he soared into the vast starry space. Behind him, Primordius Heavenly Palace revolved as it appeared. Lin Ming's figure sank into it.

"Congratulations Master, you have found your family."

Fairy Blue Lotus soon learned of what happened and smiled in congratulations. "The Good Fortune Saint Son should also be near Master's family. As long as Master goes there, then finding the Good Fortune Saint Son will be easier than taking candy from a child."

Lin Ming smiled. In nearly seven thousand years, he had never smiled so brightly.

Primordius Heavenly Palace soon sank into the void, rapidly shuttling towards the direction that Xiao Moxian was in. Lin Ming was already burning with impatience. He wished he could quickly return to the side of his family.

………

On this day, within the dark nebula, Xiao Moxian's base was seething with excitement.

News of Lin Ming's return hadn't been announced. But what people knew was that a great battle had been successfully and decisively won at New Ming Planet, and some peerless powerhouse would soon come to the Hidden Dragon Galaxy to join them.

There was no news more uplifting than this. At the very least, the problem with New Ming Planet had been solved so there wouldn't be any extra concerns; they wouldn't need to worry about the Good Fortune Saint Son using the planet as a threat.

It had to be known that some of the citizens of New Ming Planet were inextricably related to the disciples of Demon Fairy Palace. Some of them were even family members.

Xiao Moxian started to bathe early and freshen up her looks. She took off her armor and put on a grand and luxurious black dress. As she meticulously combed her hair, she carefully coiled it up and then inserted a phoenix hairpin.

After dressing up, Xiao Moxian was like a beauty from a painting.

Similarly, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan were also readying themselves in the bronze mirror. They dressed and applied makeup for a full hour, each one helping the other. Since the last time they saw Lin Ming and all the struggles that happened afterwards, they couldn’t remember when they last spent so much time carefully dressing up.

The two women carefully inspected each other, even straightening up the other’s hairpin if it was slightly skewed.

They happily did all of this. Their hearts had already been filled with happiness.

After they finished, Xiao Moxian passed down orders to prepare a banquet to receive Lin Ming.

But when the banquet was only half prepared, the concealing array formation of their base quietly trembled. Xiao Moxian looked up and saw a giant black fortress break through the void, appearing on the horizon like a towering mountain.

As the disciples of Demon Fairy Palace saw this castle, they were all stunned.

By this time, all sorts of feelings swelled up within Xiao Moxian and tears shined in her eyes. Even though this black fortress had changed appearance she was still able to recognize that this was Primordius Heavenly Palace!

In the past, when Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian were forced into God Burying Ridge by Tian Mingzi without a way out, in that moment of life or death within the Primordius Heavenly

Palace, Xiao Moxian had gathered her courage to abandon the shackles of her family and race, giving herself to Lin Ming… To Xiao Moxian, Primordius Heavenly Palace held far too much meaning.

At this moment, in the midst of their struggles, Xiao Moxian rejoiced that she made the decisions she did in the past.

As Primordius Heavenly Palace steadily came to a stop, Xiao Moxian could no longer stand still and flew into the air. In the distance she could see a black-clothed man standing atop Primordius Heavenly Palace, smiling as he looked down at her.

Against the dark and starry skies, the sharp and distinct edges of his face, his star-bright eyes, his outstanding appearance, everything became an image that was marked for eternity…

MW Chapter 2042

Chapter 2042 – Bloodline Connection

…

…

…

Right after Xiao Moxian flew up, Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, and Lin Xiaoge all flew towards Primordius Heavenly Palace.

Atop the palace walls, the women looked towards Lin Ming, their eyes flowing with tears.

They threw themselves into his arms. He tightly held onto them. At this time, all tribulations, all grievances, all the pain and sorrow they suffered was burned away in this moment of happiness.

No one spoke because there were no words that needed to be said. Their hearts had become one and they could clearly feel the innermost feelings of each other.

Xiao Moxian, Mu Qianyu, and Qin Xingxuan were like fish while Lin Ming was like water. Their lives were linked together, unable to be separated!

Lin Ming held onto them for a long time before slowly separating. He carefully wiped away the tears that fell down each woman's face and said in a soft voice, "You have all suffered hardships..."

More tears fell. Mu Qianyu said, "In these past years it has been Little Sister Xian'er supporting us."

"Mm, I understand."

Lin Ming gently stroked Xiao Moxian's cheek. She had abandoned her own race to follow him, but soon after he had disappeared and everyone had assumed he had died. Thus, Xiao Moxian and her unborn child had arrived at the wild universe without him. Facing the great wilderness and the covetous gaze of the saints, the burden she had to endure could be imagined.

As he thought back to that innocent and strangely eccentric young girl, that image still reverberated in Lin Ming's heart. The Xiao Moxian of that time had been filled with happiness and perpetual joy.

Step by step, she had walked to where she was today. From a naïve young girl she had become an Empyrean of humanity who carried the lives of several dozen billion subjects on her shoulders, helping in propping up the fate of the human race. Such a gradual transformation left Lin Ming even more in love with her.

Lin Ming pulled Xiao Moxian's hand and tightly held onto her. He gently kissed her forehead and then bent down to whisper in her ear, "With me here, everything will be fine again."

As these words fell onto Xiao Moxian's ears, she felt her heart ache. Emotions surged in her like a raging sea.

Yes. No matter where it was or when it was, no matter how difficult the situation was, as long as he was here he would use his broad shoulders to prop up the heavens for them.

In the past, within the Asura Road, she and Lin Ming had faced the pursuit of Tian Mingzi...

After returning from the Asura Road, she had to face the surprise of her unborn child, the marriage proposal of the Good Fortune Saint Son, as well as the rage of Empyrean Demondawn...

And beyond that, when the great calamity of humanity erupted ahead of time and when almost all Empyreans felt the situation was hopeless...

It was him. It was he who had faced all of this without turning back, who had faced all of this without hesitation. Leaving behind only the image of his back, he silently shouldered the responsibility, experiencing unimaginable difficulties and tribulations before finally creating a miracle and changing everything.

Time and time again he had made the impossible possible, writing his own legend as he lived.

He was a man who she could always feel peace of mind to stand behind.

Xiao Moxian knew that she could never leave him. Every inch of her flesh, every drop of her blood, her entire soul, everything she was belonged to him…

"Yu'er, Xingxuan…" Lin Ming hugged Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan into his chest, feeling their hearts beat in tandem, feeling their breath against him. Originally, these two women should have remained safely in the lower realms. Although they wouldn't live overly grand lives, they would still live lives that all mortals would envy. However, they had been caught in the great stormy war between the saints and humanity and were forced to drift in desolate loneliness for thousands of years. Lin Ming felt that he had been unfair to the both of them. Secretly he firmed his resolve that these two women would never be harmed in any way again.

And finally, Lin Xiaoge…

He traced and patted her head. His parents had already passed away. Although he had been at the side of his parents, protecting them until the end of their lives and finally seeing them leave with smiles on their face, Lin Xiaoge had actually never managed to see her parents one final time. This would inevitably be a regret deep in her heart.

“Xiaoge, you’ve grown up…”

After nearly seven thousand years, Lin Ming said the exact same words he said to her so long ago…

The first time he said these words was when he returned to the Sky Spill Continent and saw Lin Xiaoge suppress her rivals at the martial arts meeting, winning the crown of champion.

At that time, Lin Xiaoge had been in her prime. She had a beautiful figure and the vitality of a youth. When Lin Ming had said she had grown up then, he had been referring to her physical maturity.

But this time, Lin Ming was referring to the evolution of her mind.

After experiencing tribulations for thousands of years, even a carefree person would grow up…

“Big Brother, I’m doing well.”

Lin Xiaoge grabbed Lin Ming’s hand and firmly hugged him, her actions speaking louder than words.

The brother and sister separated after some time. Lin Xiaoge looked at Lin Ming and said, “Big Brother… do you know what happened to our parents? I have been in the wild universe all these years so I never had a chance to return to the Sky Spill Continent and see them…”

Lin Ming sighed. He shook his head and said, “I’ll tell you everything that happened later.”

Seeing Lin Ming’s eyes, Lin Xiaoge was startled, as if she suddenly realized something. She slowly nodded. In truth, when she asked this question she had already faintly guessed the answer.

It was impossible for her parents to live for such a long time…

And at this time, Lin Ming looked at the approaching Lin Huang.

The first time that Lin Ming saw Lin Huang, he could feel a faint bloodline connection from his body. Even without Xiao Moxian explaining things to him he could still guess that this was his child.

As Lin Huang saw his father turn and regard him, he was a bit wary.

To Lin Huang, his father was the god in his heart, and the person he respected and worshipped the most. Now that he actually met his father, his heart began to speed up.

He tidied his robes and stepped forwards. Then, he kneeled before Lin Ming and deeply bowed in obeisance.

“Child Lin Huang greets Father.”

Lin Ming received this bow. Then, he stretched out his hands to help Lin Huang up. With this touch, Lin Huang could feel just how strong his father was.

In fact, this couldn’t be called helping him up, but pressing him down.

This was a strength greater than that of any ancient wild beast Lin Huang had ever encountered. It was like a hundred thousand foot tall mountain pushing down on his body.

Lin Huang was shocked. Then, he immediately began summoning strength to resist his father's pressure. He knew that his father was testing him!

Ka ka ka ka!

Lin Huang's body and joints began to emit explosive cracking sounds.

Xiao Moxian was startled to see this. Although she was a bit worried, she didn't stop them.

Lin Huang gasped, his breath coming in heaves. His forehead dripped with beads of sweat. Finally, he forcefully lifted Lin Ming's hand and stood up.

"Good!" Lin Ming said a single word of praise, a strange light flashing in his eyes.

In Lin Ming's eyes, the invasion of the saints was bitter distress for Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, Xiao Moxian and Lin Xiaoge. Lin Ming didn't want them to suffer any tribulation or injury.

But to Lin Huang, his own son, this was a time to temper himself!

Without being by his side for these 6000 some years, Lin Ming was looking forwards to seeing just how Lin Huang had grown.

"Tonight, I will test your strength here."

Lin Huang was stunned. He didn't think that during the first time he met his father, the words his father would say to him were that he wanted to test his strength.

However, these words caused Lin Huang to slowly stir with excitement.

To fight with the father he respected most in his life was also what he anticipated.

"You just came back and now you want to fight with your son?"

Xiao Moxian muttered, a bit begrudgingly. Although Lin Huang was strong, up until now he had lacked fatherly love.

Lin Huang was like a little wolf growing up, lonely, cold, and proud.

He had incredibly high standards that he set for himself. Although he seemed strong on the outside, the truth was that his innermost feelings were quite fragile. Xiao Moxian hoped that after Lin Ming returned, he would take good care of Lin Huang and show him the love that he had missed.

However, the way that Lin Ming cared for Lin Huang was completely different from what she had thought.

“Mother, allow me to fight Father!”

Lin Huang’s eyes flashed. Xiao Moxian looked at Lin Huang’s eyes and was startled. She immediately understood what he wanted…

Lin Huang was born with overflowing talent, but he had never been complacent or satisfied with himself. He had worked harder than anyone else.

He had to use his own achievements to win the recognition and praise of others.

Because he could not bring disgrace to his father’s honor!

But even all the praise he had ever received added up could not compare with the praise that came from Lin Ming’s mouth. Today, he wanted to personally obtain praise and affirmation from his father!

……..

News of Lin Ming’s return soon spread throughout the entire Demon Fairy Palace.

Lin Ming no longer concealed his identity, because he knew that after he appeared again and again, no matter if it were the saints or humans they would have approximately guessed his identity. There was no meaning in continuing to hide who he was.

Humanity worshipped Lin Ming. And if one had to think of a group of people that worshipped Lin Ming the most, then that would absolutely be those of Demon Fairy Palace and New Ming Planet!

As it was confirmed that the black fortress that appeared in the skies was Lin Ming's Heavenly Palace, the entire Demon Fairy Palace went crazy with celebration!

To New Ming Planet or to Demon Fairy Palace, the name Lin Ming contained far too much meaning!

Afterwards they learned that Lin Ming had saved New Ming Planet recently. And not just that, but in the process they also learned that Lin Ming, with his own strength, had destroyed two great saint legions. And before that he had even defeated the Legion of Famine! This left the disciples of Demon Fairy Palace roiling with jubilation!

After being chased down by the saints for dozens of years, they thirsted for a victory.

They were fed up with the days of hiding like rats. They were willing to exchange their lives for a great and hearty victory!

"Lin Ming! Lin Ming!"

Everyone shouted out Lin Ming's name, their voices echoing like ocean waves, reaching into the nebula.

They leapt in joy, running around to spread the news.

Their hero had returned. When Lin Ming opened up a path to the wild universe and saved humanity, he had only been at the Holy Lord realm. But now he could easily strike down Empyreans! If so, then he would surely be able to lead their Demon Fairy Palace to charge out of the Hidden Dragon Galaxy and rule the world once more!

In their gloomy lives filled with despair, they finally saw the eternal lighthouse shining in the horizon. That light left them intoxicated with dreams!

Many people gathered in front of Primordius Heavenly Palace, loudly chanting Lin Ming's name and chanting humanity forever. It was difficult for anyone to restrain themselves from shouting this.

"Brother Lin, the disciples of Demon Fairy Palace all want to see you." Xiao Moxian said.

“I understand.” Lin Ming smiled and stood up, walking into the square in front of Primordius Heavenly Palace.

MW Chapter 2043

Chapter 2043 - Desire

…

…

…

Seeing Lin Ming appear, the disciples of Demon Fairy Palace became even more frenzied. They cried out from the depths of their hearts, their shouts sounding out into the highest heavens.

In the darkest times of the human race, what they needed were heroes, what they needed was motivation.

“Sage Lin, will you lead us to battle?”

Someone asked from the crowd.

This question quieted the raucous disciples of Demon Fairy Palace. Yes, they wanted to fight! They were sick of these days of hiding in little holes!

Everyone looked at Lin Ming with bright burning eyes. At this time, their eyes were also filled with hope.

“Everyone!”

Lin Ming stepped onto the front wall of the square before Primordius Heavenly Palace. As he looked down below at the numerous disciples of Demon Fairy Palace, his voice was grave and earnest.

Everyone’s ears rose to attention. For a time, the entire square fell silent.

“Did you know that 3.6 billion years ago, humanity once encountered another great calamity?”

Lin Ming’s words left the martial artists present stunned. They thought that Lin Ming would speak some emotional words that would impassion them all, but they didn’t think this would be the first thing he mentioned.

“We know!” Many people loudly shouted out in reply.

“Very good… I also know of this great calamity, and what I know is much clearer than what you all know…” Lin Ming seemed to fall into deep recollection. He looked at the vast sea of human martial artists before him and the swirling black nebula above. After a long period of silence, he finally opened his mouth and slowly said, “3.6 billion years ago, humanity was the same as it was today, facing a saint race that was several times more formidable. They had to face Famine in its peak state as well as saint Empyreans and saint True Divinities that were multiple times greater in number! The difference in strength was too great and humanity had no chance of winning. Through any logical reasoning, the only conclusion that could be made is that they would be annihilated and reduced to slaves. However, that war was one humanity won. Do you know what it was they relied on to win?”

Lin Ming’s question left the crowd dazed. Although they knew that humanity had also suffered a great calamity 3.6 billion years ago, the problem was that far too much time had passed and too many great influences had been destroyed, thus a great portion of history had been lost. They only knew that Empyrean Divine Seal had led the warriors of humanity to win that great war, but as for the exact details of how, they weren’t sure.

“For a race to stand tall in the 33 Heavens, for a race to possess their own territory, for a race to have sovereignty, to have freedom, they must have great strength or their own bravery! The bravery of a race is that intangible desire condensed from the bloodline of the people, the power to fight for their dignity!

“3.6 billion years ago, humanity knew that their strength was far surpassed by the saints, but they were not afraid! Empyrean Divine Seal led the troops from the Divine Seal Altar! 200 Empyreans, 200 God Beasts, several million Holy Lords! With Holy Lords as soldiers, with Empyreans as generals, all of humanity joined forces to engage in slaughter with the saints! Finally, Empyrean Divine Seal brought numerous great hosts of humanity to voluntarily burn even their own lives to lay down a great array formation and seal away Famine's soul!

"In that great war, nearly all the Empyreans, World Kings, and Holy Lords of humanity died in battle. The great martial arts civilization of humanity declined. Our inheritances were cut off, and in order to redevelop all of this, endless effort needed to be paid. However, this was all worth it, because… we preserved… our dignity!"

Lin Ming said these last words clearly and without hurry. The entire audience was completely silent. The tens of thousands of disciples stood in the square or floated in the skies, respectfully listening. Their faces were filled with solemn respect and reverence.

"Because of the sacrifices our seniors made, we do not need to live like slaves! We have our own martial arts civilization, and although it is not the best, it is still ours! We have our own territory, our own homeland, and even though we only possess a single Heaven, we can still develop and restart from the beginning! However, as we truly began to develop and our martial arts civilization began to grow bright once more, the saints returned yet again! And this time, their ambitions were even greater!

"Step-by-step, they want to gradually take control of the 33 Heavens. Their leader, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, wishes to merge together with Famine and finally swallow up the essence of every race in the 33 Heavens, taking a step Beyond Divinity. He regards the spiritas as his greatest opponent and our human race as a stepping stone. Yes, just like before two riders meet on the battlefield, they have to feed their horses grass. And our human race has been regarded as this grass."

Lin Ming honestly spoke these words. As the martial artists of Demon Fairy Palace heard this, all of them began to stir with excitement. Many of them started to breathe heavily, the blood vessels straining in their necks as if they were about to erupt where they were. But as Lin Ming stood on the high platforms of the wall, no one spoke. This was because of their respect towards him.

After several breaths of silence, Lin Ming suddenly asked, “Do you all think you are grass to feed horses?”

“They are courting death!”

A large fellow jumped up, shouting from his lungs. He was one of the ones who had nearly choked on himself in the silence.

“Kill them all!”

Someone took out two great shining axes and began to clash them together.

“Fight them to the death!”

“Let’s go to those motherfuckers, I’ve had enough of them!”

Martial artists all had their own form of bravery, especially when their race had been bullied and suppressed for so long. Whether it was them or their race, at this moment of life or death they were like kegs of powder, ready to blow up at the tiniest spark.

"I don't think so either!" Lin Ming said out loud, "Our seniors are more than just Empyrean Divine Seal! There is Empyrean Primordius, who chose to become the incarnation of a demon to fight the saints to the death! There is Three Lives Old Man, who prolonged his life for 300 million years to wait for the great calamity, and finally sacrificed himself to buy time for the elites of humanity to enter the wild universe! Not just them… but there are numerous Empyreans, World Kings, and Holy Lords that we do not know the names of… as well as even more, countless martial artists of lower cultivation, and beyond them, there is also the common people who die cruel and tragic deaths. They all traded their lives for the chance for us to stand safely here today. Do you think that they did all that just so that we could be grass used to feed horses?

"We withstood the loneliness of being forced out of our homeland. We entered the wilderness, taking vicious beasts as our neighbors. We slaughtered, fought, honed ourselves, bathed in blood, used every ounce of our strength to crawl our way out from the torn flesh and blood all around us…

"We tempered our abilities, increased our cultivations, diligently trained, passed through mystic realms, walked the thin line that separates life and death. We are humans, we are part of humanity! We come from the Divine Realm, and what we want… is to return home!"

As Lin Ming spoke, his voice suddenly rose. The warriors of Demon Fairy Palace erupted in thunderous applause all around him.

“We must go home!”

“We’ll kill our way back to the Divine Realm!”

“Exterminate those saint dogs!”

“Humanity forever!”

Waves of roars resounded through the skies. When the brave blood of a race was lit, they could create a miracle.

At this moment, even if an endless mountain of swords were placed in front of these people, they would still rush forwards without hesitation!

A troop filled with bravery and blood-instinct would be able to erupt with unparalleled combat strength. They would be able to defeat an enemy ten times more powerful!

The tide-like cries continued for a quarter hour without weakening. Warriors all over drew their weapons and pointed them to the skies.

Some women covered their faces and wept until they lost their voices!

They had to fight their way back! Even if they died in battle, they would bury themselves in the Divine Realm!

“Very good! Then, rest for six hours. After that come with me. We… will kill our way out!”

Lin Ming waved his hand and all the disciples of Demon Fairy Palace felt as if they would explode from their emotions. At this time, even if an Empyrean stood before them they would still rush forwards to fight!

Some people already hurriedly flew back to their residences, preparing their pills, weapons, and armor for the battle that was soon to come.

They couldn’t wait even a moment longer.

Who cared about the Good Fortune Saint Son? Even if they weren’t his match, they would still die in battle!

“Brother Lin, this…” Xiao Moxian didn’t think that Lin Ming’s words would produce such terrifying results.

The disciples of Demon Fairy Palace were brave, but if they were to truly frontally engage with the Good Fortune Saint Son, they would still inevitably feel fear. After all, the difference in strength was too great.

“Are we going to fight the Good Fortune Saint Son?”

Xiao Moxian asked. When Lin Ming came, Xiao Moxian believed that he would reverse the course of this war and even have the Good Fortune Saint Son suffer great losses. But Xiao Moxian thought that Lin Ming would further consider his plan of action, using methods and tactics to finally defeat the Good Fortune Saint Son. However, she never imagined that after Lin Ming had been at Demon Fairy Palace for such a short period of time, he would take command of the troops and lead them into direct battle with the Good Fortune Saint Son!

This was too decisive!

“Is it a bit too hasty to set out in six hours? I thought you would at least eat at the welcoming banquet set out for you before considering how to deal with the Good Fortune Saint Son.”

Although Xiao Moxian thought marching the forces out now was too hasty, she still allowed Lin Ming to make the decision. This was the unspoken trust she held towards him.

“Banquet? We will have a banquet, however it will not be a welcoming banquet but a victory banquet! The food and wine has already been prepared. We will fight first and then celebrate our victory!”

MW Chapter 2044

Chapter 2044 – The Good Fortune Legion

…

…

…

Hidden Dragon Galaxy, Good Fortune Saint Palace –

Within the highest room of the Good Fortune Saint Palace, the Good Fortune Saint Son sat in an opulent chair, frowning.

He was agitated. Ever since he learned Lin Ming was still alive, he had been restless, unable to still his mind or heart.

On one hand, he had always dreamt of facing Lin Ming and brutally crushing him beneath his feet, severing his limbs and crippling his martial arts before feeding him to Famine. Only this would allow the Good Fortune Saint Son to feel truly happy and free, expelling the heart demons of the past.

On the other hand, the Good Fortune Saint Son didn't know what cards Lin Ming was hiding in his hand; he inevitably worried about this. It had to be known that over 6000 years ago, the Good Fortune Saint Son had also once been overbrimming with confidence. He believed that with his then Holy Lord realm cultivation he would be able to easily defeat the Divine Lord Lin Ming.

However, although the Good Fortune Saint Son thought he could ruin Lin Ming, the result was that he was the one ruined instead.

He had been beaten so savagely when he had been full of confidence. And now, the Good Fortune Saint Son didn't know any details about Lin Ming. He couldn't help but be wary this time.

The Good Fortune Saint Son had especially sent out troops to research all recent information related to Lin Ming. He had also thoroughly researched all of Lin Ming's recent combat images.

The truth was that the Good Fortune Saint Son didn't worry too much about Lin Ming being able to destroy the second and third saint legions.

In particular, when Lin Ming fought against the four peak Empyreans, the strength he showed was inferior to that of a True Divinity. If so, then the Good Fortune Saint Son would have no need to fear him because he possessed the True Divinity level avatar of Famine. The avatar of Famine was limited by the Good Fortune Saint Son's cultivation and soul and thus the strength it could display was much lower than it should be, but even so, this strength was far greater than what Lin Ming had revealed.

In addition, the Good Fortune Saint Son had the direct troops of the Good Fortune Saint Palace under his control. This was his ultimate trump card!

What the Good Fortune Saint Son truly worried about was just how Lin Ming managed to annihilate the Legion of Famine!

The Legion of Famine consisted of 60,000 Holy Lords, 2500 ordinary World Kings, 200 Great World Kings, as well as four of the saint generals leading them. There was the wise Fairy Blue Lotus as the military strategist, and although the Good Fortune Saint Son wasn't on good terms with her, he couldn't help but acknowledge that she was indeed a fierce character. Besides her, the other three saint generals weren't soft melons either.

After undergoing the Famine body metamorphosis, their strength would multiply, allowing them to kill an Empyrean level powerhouse. But such a Legion of Famine had been completely cleared out overnight. From the four saint generals to the most ordinary Holy Lord, not a single one managed to live!

This matter was far too strange.

The Good Fortune Saint Son guessed that Lin Ming still had cards he hadn't showed yet, and the Legion of Famine had been defeated by one such card.

Moreover, when Lin Ming fought the second and third saint legions, that black fortress had started attacking the saint spirit ships on its own, and its striking power had been terrifying. Just this alone caused the Good Fortune Saint Son to be concerned. Could Lin Ming have some helper that he didn't know of?

The Good Fortune Saint Son first thought of Lin Ming's three avatars. Over 6000 years ago, he had experienced two of these three avatars himself. They were fierce and formidable avatars, but the Good Fortune Saint Son found it difficult to believe that these alone could have the black fortress display such strength.

He had studied the light beams sent out by the black fortress for a long time but he still found it impossible to distinguish the Laws contained within these energies.

One couldn't blame the Good Fortune Saint Son for being powerless in this aspect. This was because Lin Ming already expected that he wouldn't be able to fully wipe out the joint saint legions. He knew that the scenes of him attacking the saint spirit ships using Primordius Heavenly Palace would be recorded.

In the case of these attacks, if Lin Ming directly used the Legion of Famine to send out a barrage of attacks from Primordius Heavenly Palace, then the Good Fortune Saint Son would be able to analyze these attacks and at the very least conclude that they possessed the aura of Famine. After all, the Good Fortune Saint Son controlled the most formidable avatar of Famine.

If this happened then Lin Ming's secret ability to control the flesh and blood of Famine would be exposed!

After the Good Fortune Saint Son learned of this he would be on guard and might even flee the wild universe.

This was not what Lin Ming wanted.

So, Lin Ming had only used the Legion of Famine's energy as a medium. He poured this energy into Primordius Heavenly Palace and the Ancient Elysium Seal array formation. Then, he used curse seals of the Asura Laws and Holy Scripture Laws to drive the attack.

With these two insurance policies, whether it was the Divine Seal Array used by the Ancient Elysium Seal or the two great Laws utilized by Lin Ming, these were not things that the Good Fortune Saint Son could understand. With this, if the Good Fortune Saint Son wanted to analyze information about these attacks from projection images then it would be far too difficult to find out what their origins were.

This was like using coal to boil a pot of water and then using wood to boil a pot of water. It would be impossible for someone to tell whether that pot of water had been boiled from coal or wood.

"Your Highness Saint Son, have a meal."

A beautiful woman carried in a tray of food cooked from precious heavenly materials.

However, the Good Fortune Saint Son had no appetite for food. He waved his hand, a bit agitated and a bit annoying. “You… go contact Empyrean Evernight and have him hurry up. Tell him to start slaughtering cities tomorrow, thousands of cities at a time. I want to see whether or not that whore Xiao Moxian will truly be so cold-hearted!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son had already lost his patience. Since he couldn’t find out what cards Lin Ming was hiding, he could only count on capturing Xiao Moxian.

“Yes!”

The woman bowed and drew back. She prepared to send Empyrean Evernight a sound transmission. Sound transmission marks were the core secret of every army, and in the saint army stationed at New Ming Planet, only Empyrean Evernight had the corresponding transmission mark jade slip.

Empyrean Evernight had been killed by Lin Ming thus there was no one to use this mark. The saints didn’t even know that Empyrean Evernight had been eliminated.

The woman had only left for a short while before rushing back in a hurry.

“What is it?” The Good Fortune Saint Son frowned. To activate a sound transmission array formation that could surmount an entire star territory took a considerable amount of time; there was no reason for her to come back so quickly.

“Your Highness Saint Son, our scouts sent in new information just now. They discovered that the human fleets have broken through our blockade; it seems to be Xiao Moxian’s Demon Fairy Palace!”

“What!?”

The Good Fortune Saint Son was startled before immediately turning to happiness!

That little slut, she was finally unable to sit still!

The Good Fortune Saint Son quickly strode out of the room and into the official meeting hall. There, above the sound transmission array disc, he saw the projection of Xiao Moxian’s Demon Fairy Palace army. The numerous spirit ships there all belonged to Demon Fairy Palace!

Currently, the space that Demon Fairy Palace was at had already been sealed away by a force field; it was impossible for them to undergo great void shifts.

If this fleet wanted to escape from the sealed space it would take at least four to six hours. That was more than enough time to capture this fleet seven or eight times!

“Hahahaha!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son wildly laughed.

“Just wait for me to catch you, I will make you feel what pleasure is!” The Good Fortune Saint Son revealed an obscene and lascivious smile. It had already been a long time since he cared about his sexual attractions to women. In his long life, he had experienced countless incomparably beautiful women and he had slowly grown numb to them. However, it was Xiao Moxian and only Xiao Moxian that the Good Fortune Saint Son desperately hoped he could press beneath his body and brutally ravish.

This was a woman who once stepped on his dignity. He wanted to savagely conquer her and take out all his revenge on her! If possible, he wanted to ruin Xiao Moxian in front of Lin Ming, humiliating her and giving vent to all the malice and hate he had saved from all those years ago!

“Prepare the soldiers, we are going to battle!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son was already impatient.

The saint armies were well trained. After the Good Fortune Saint Son issued his order, it only took a quarter hour for the entire army to be ready to march forwards.

In order to ensure absolute success, the Good Fortune Saint Son had brought the entirety of his troops with him.

This was a massive army, otherwise known as the troops that were under the direct control of the Good Fortune Saint Palace!

The Good Fortune Saint Palace deserved its reputation as the undisputed number one top influence of the saints. The troops under its direct control were far stronger than any other random saint legion.

In fact, even if the second and third legions of Saint Convocation Heaven joined together, they were still far inferior to the personal troops of the Good Fortune Saint Palace.

This legion wasn’t numbered. It had a name, and its name came from the Good Fortune Saint Palace; it was called the Good Fortune Legion.

Although the Good Fortune Legion didn’t have the illustrious and fierce reputation of the Legion of Famine, it had more saint powerhouses than an ox had hairs. The name of the Good Fortune Legion rang through the ears of all like thunder.

The Good Fortune Legion hadn't killed many people, but to humanity they were actually a great deterrent!

Besides Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, if any other human influence were to bump into the Good Fortune Legion, their only choice would be to flee into the wild.

With such a trump card legion as well as the Good Fortune Saint Son and the avatar of Famine, this could be considered the ultimate force that the saints had within the wild universe!

This vast fleet shuttled their way deep into the universe. Wherever they went, even stars would be washed away!

In particular, deep in space, there was the giant avatar of Famine. It waved its horrifying dragon tentacles, exuding a terrifyingly oppressive feeling!

"Xiao Moxian, just you wait for me, hahaha!"

On the bloody surface of Famine, the Good Fortune Saint Son's voice echoed out into the void.

………

And at this time, in another part of the starry skies, Demon Fairy Palace was rapidly marching forwards.

Every disciple of Demon Fairy Palace was boiling over with fighting spirit!

In truth, they knew that this would be a bitter and tragic battle. When their strength was compared to the Good Fortune Legion, saying it was an egg against a rock wouldn't be an exaggeration.

Even with Lin Ming here, and even if Lin Ming were to create another miracle, they knew that they would suffer heavy losses in this battle!

This was an inevitable occurrence. No matter how formidable Lin Ming was, the most he could do was stop the Good Fortune Saint Son. How could a single person deal with the entire Good Fortune Legion?

But even though everyone knew this, no one batted an eyelash to march into battle.

They were warriors with hot blood flowing through their veins. How could they hide in nests like rats and then be slowly dug out by others?

If they had to die, they would die with honor and glory!

All warriors were ready to fight, in full battle formation. And at this time, in Primordius Heavenly Palace which was disguised as a common spirit ship, Lin Ming was fighting Lin Huang.

Peng!

A muffled thump echoed out. Lin Huang was sent flying backwards.

Lin Huang rolled on the ground before smashing into a wall. He stood up and ripped off his tattered sleeves, his eyes staring at Lin Ming like those of a cheetah.

This father and son had suppressed their cultivations to the Divine Sea realm. What they were competing in was fighting skills and Laws.

And up until now, Lin Ming had only used a single hand. The disparity was too great.

“You… you both…” Xiao Moxian heard the heavy thumping sounds and walked over. She was left speechless by what she saw. “We’re about to fight soon and not only are you not adjusting yourselves to your best condition but you’re actually exchanging moves here! This is just too childish!”

MW Chapter 2045

Chapter 2045 – Two Armies Meet

…

…

…

As Lin Ming saw Xiao Moxian, he couldn't help but laugh. "It's fine," he said. "We've suppressed our cultivation to the Divine Sea realm and even our bodily strength has been limited to the first four of the Eight Inner Hidden Gates. We haven't used much energy and we aren't injured either."

Lin Ming and Lin Huang's mortal bodies contained the bloodline of God Beasts; they were incredibly potent. In a situation where they suppressed their cultivation, even if they stood still and allowed themselves to be hit, it wouldn't matter much.

"We're just warming up for the upcoming battle." Seeing Xiao Moxian's not-too-happy expression, Lin Ming shrugged.

Still, Xiao Moxian couldn’t find it in her to laugh. Even with Lin Ming here, they had to face the Good Fortune Saint Son and also the most powerful Good Fortune Legion of the saint race. It was hard for her to relax.

Every single person in this fleet was a brave and loyal warrior who had followed Xiao Moxian and fought for her with all their might.

Today, they decided to march against the Good Fortune Saint Son, fearing neither danger nor death. Even against the Good Fortune Legion that was over a dozen times stronger than they were, they still boiled over with fighting intent.

All of this came from the glory of their race, the hot-blooded instinct carved into the marrow of their bone, as well as their deep faith and trust in Lin Ming.

However, although they didn’t fear death, Xiao Moxian didn’t wish for them to simply toss away their lives. She wished for as many of her followers to survive as possible. They were her most beloved subjects.

“Mm, I understand.”

Lin Ming knew what Xiao Moxian was thinking and hinted for Lin Huang to stop fighting. At this time, his heart suddenly stirred. He could feel the soul of Famine within his spiritual sea starting to beat.

Compared to when he met the Legion of Famine, this beating was now several times more intense!

For this sort of response to occur, there was only a single possibility!

“What is it?” The sensitive Xiao Moxian noticed the change in Lin Ming’s countenance.

“It’s fine.”

Lin Ming waved his hand and left the martial arts training room, moving towards the square outside Primordius Heavenly Palace.

Primordius Heavenly Palace had already been disguised as one of the flagships of Demon Fairy Palace. The Good Fortune Saint Son didn’t have much of an impression toward Primordius Heavenly Palace, and with the camouflage added by the Ancient Elysium Seal’s array formation, it was impossible for anyone to recognize it.

After the martial artists of Demon Fairy Palace realized that Lin Ming had walked outside, they hurried to the platform of their spirit ships and waited for him.

Each one of them stood tall and upright, like a towering tree!

The army was filled with a dignified solemnity. This was the aura of a people unafraid of death or destruction, ready to perish in iron and blood!

“After a little more time we might fight against the trump card of the saint armies – the Good Fortune Legion. Do you all have any thoughts about this?”

Lin Ming smiled as he spoke. With such a critical war approaching, everyone was strung taut. Yet, he was still able to smile like this. This left many warriors dumbfounded. Indeed, this person was worthy of being called the number one hero of humanity; he could actually still talk and happily smile at this time.

Invisibly, Lin Ming’s calm infected them. Their taut minds slightly relaxed.

“We will battle them!” A martial artist shouted as he rolled up his sleeves.

“Killing one is enough and killing two is a gain. Even if we only have our teeth left remaining, we will still bite down on the heads of those saints!”

“Whoever fears death is a woman!” A ruffian soldier carelessly shouted. But as he did so, he noticed Xiao Moxian who stood near Lin Ming suddenly cast him a frosty look.

The soldier quickly shrunk his neck, immediately changing his statement, “Whoever fears death is a coward!”

Lin Ming smiled. “You all seem prepared to sacrifice yourselves?”

“Sacrifice isn’t anything at all! Even if we must cross through seas of boiling oil, us brothers will jump in without batting an eye!”

Several large fellows strained their necks and wielded the sabers in their hands, showing their determination and lack of fear.

Lin Ming suddenly asked, “From your words, it seems we are not going to battle, but…committing suicide?”

The martial artists present dazed. Because of Lin Ming’s previous speech and because they had been repressed for so long, they were like barrels of powder, ready to explode with the slightest spark. Now they faced the Good Fortune Legion, an enemy that stirred panic and fear at the mere thought of fighting directly against them. So, they had all readied themselves to throw up their heads and sprinkle their blood on the ground. To the soldiers, this only seemed natural.

This was sure to be a tragic battle. Even if Lin Ming alone could deal with the Good Fortune Saint Son, it would still be difficult – the other Empyreans of the Good Fortune Legion weren’t some random cabbage. Just those people alone were over ten times stronger than Demon Fairy Palace.

They had to deal with such a formidable and tricky enemy. They had to delay this powerful enemy to give Lin Ming time to deal with the Good Fortune Saint Son.

Naturally, the vast majority of people thought this was how a war was fought.

General against general!

Soldier against soldier!

Facing such a powerful enemy, there was also the chance that they would be completely annihilated. Even so, they would continue pushing forwards without fear of death. As for how many people would need to be sacrificed, they simply hadn't considered this at all.

What they wanted was their bravery and dignity!

It was only after Lin Ming asked his question that these people were left in a daze. Could it be that even in a battle where there was such a massive disparity in strength, there was still a favorable turn somewhere?

Could it even be that Lin Ming had already called for support troops?

Thinking of this possibility, many people grew excited.

Lin Ming continued, “Not being afraid to sacrifice yourself is a necessary quality for any legion that wishes to be strong. But those who do not fear death are not just the brave warriors but also ordinary men! Do not make meaningless sacrifice; this will only turn you into the military exploits of your enemies, something that they can use to show off. Even at the very end, none of us must easily give up on our lives. Rather, we must exchange it for the greatest possible value!”

“If each and every one of you can accomplish this, we will sweep away all obstacles!”

Lin Ming’s words caused the human warriors to calm down.

A brave and hot-blooded legion was terrifying, but a legion that could be all that and also be calm, that was even more terrifying.

Lin Ming drew out the Black Dragon Spear.

Weng –

With a loud rumbling sound, the roar of a dragon seemed to spread throughout the starry night sky.

Lin Ming shouted out, “Now, everyone, man your stations! You will have around one incense stick of time to prepare. Afterwards, we will go into battle with the Good Fortune Legion! At the time of battle, everyone obey my command!”

An incense stick of time!

After hearing this, the disciples of Demon Fairy Palace were startled. Before, they had heard that they would fight in a ‘while’, but they didn’t expect this ‘while’ to be so short!

Everyone hastily rushed over to their stations.

“And me?” Xiao Moxian hurriedly asked.

“Follow me.” As Lin Ming spoke, he strode into Primordius Heavenly Palace.

An incense stick of time was an extremely short period of time. And in fact, before an incense stick of time passed, the human army was able to see the vast and roiling Good Fortune Legion in the distance!

The spirit ships, the Heavenly Palace fortresses, they were as magnificent and unsurpassable as a great wall!

What led the legion was a massive blood red sphere. The sphere was as large as a planet and wielded thick tentacles.

This was the avatar of Famine. And beside the avatar of Famine was a golden temple.

This temple was half the size of Famine and wildly gushed out astral essence. A golden halo spun around it. This was the Good Fortune Saint Palace – a True Divinity spirit treasure level immortal palace!

This immortal palace was usually located within Saint Convocation Heaven and was the main temple of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's influence!

When people spoke of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's influence, they usually referred to the Good Fortune Saint Palace to represent everything. From this it could be seen how terrifying this temple was. This could be called a landmark of Saint Convocation Heaven.

Now, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign possessed the true body of Famine, so he didn't need to use the Good Fortune Saint Palace in battle. At the same time, the Good Fortune Saint Son had no use for it either. Thus, the Good Fortune Saint Palace had been made into the flagship for the Good Fortune Legion.

The ones responsible for driving the Good Fortune Saint Palace were nine peak Empyreans. Only by joining forces were they just barely able to display the terrifying strength of this war fortress.

When Demon Fairy Palace and the Good Fortune Legion met, if one disregarded the massive disparity in strength, the Good Fortune Legion already suppressed Demon Fairy Palace in momentum! When contrasted with each other, it was no different from a fighter to a little baby.

“Hahaha! Ji Xian’er, you truly are stupid! You really brought yourself to my door!” The Good Fortune Saint Son stood above the flesh and blood of Famine, wildly cackling. He gazed up the fleet of Demon Fairy Palace as if they were all prey waiting to be cut down.

Within Primordius Heavenly Palace, Xiao Moxian grit her teeth, hatefully staring out the array formations at the Good Fortune Saint Son.

“Dealing with you is easy; I alone am enough. But even so, I brought my greatest strength here in order to ensure absolute victory. You no longer have the slightest chance of doing anything, and I will not make any mistake either. Why don’t you be a good little girl and surrender yourself to me. You should already be content that I brought so many people here just to capture you!”

As the Good Fortune Saint Son spoke, he waved his hand and issued an order, “Seal off the surrounding space!”

With the Good Fortune Saint Palace as the head, dozens of saint spirit ships shined with brilliant beams of divine light. These beams of divine light shot into the void, linking together into a massive net of light. The net of light spread out until it formed a titanic enchantment that sealed up the surrounding space for millions of miles.

Such a massive array was based upon the defensive array formation of the Good Fortune Saint Palace. Whether it was activating or deactivating it, it wasn't easy at all. Moreover, starting it up required a massive amount of energy.

After the great array was formed, it would be impossible for normal spirit ships to break through. The only exception would be if the spirit ships of Demon Fairy Palace all attacked in a joint strike. However, the Good Fortune Saint Son would not give them the chance to do this.

"Are you satisfied? Ji Xian'er, this is the cage that I specially prepared for you. In order to capture you, I took great pains in arranging all of this and soon you will also understand why I tried so hard to catch you. Several days from now, I'll give you a pleasant surprise!"

"If you know your limits then you will hurry up and surrender to me and be my slave. If you serve me well every day then I will let you keep your life and enjoy it too."

The Good Fortune Saint Son recklessly laughed. But at this time, there was also a response from Demon Fairy Palace's flagship. This was Xiao Moxian's voice, icy cold and clear, "You stupid!" These two simple words caused the Good Fortune Saint Son's complexion to darken.

The clear voice continued in sharp contention, “If you know your limits then hurry up and surrender to me and be my dog. But…I don’t think I can stand it. To have such an ugly dog, just thinking of it makes me nauseous.”

Good Fortune Saint Son diabolically grinned. “Very good. I also feared you might not be in that fleet and had sent in this rubble to die. Now that I know you truly are here, I can rest assured.”

“The flagship is mine and I leave the rest to you all. Kill them all to the last, do not let a single man live.”

MW Chapter 2046

Chapter 2046 – Lin Ming VS Saint Son

…

…

…

After confirming Xiao Moxian's presence, the Good Fortune Saint Son revealed his fangs.

As the Good Fortune Saint Son issued his order, the Good Fortune Legion started moving forwards. This was an incredibly powerful army. The spirit ships pushed forwards, surrounding the fleet of Demon Fairy Palace.

With the Good Fortune Saint Palace taking the lead, hundreds of spirit ships gathered together to form a battle array. Each spirit ship possessed their own array formations, and with several hundred array formations gathered together, this was actually a net of battle arrays. With these battle arrays coordinating with each other, they could display an incomparably terrifying strength. By joining together, the sheer amount of energy they released would be several times that of a True Divinity!

However, in terms of Laws, this spirit ship battle array couldn't compare with a True Divinity nor could they focus their energy like a True Divinity. So, the actual threat was less than that of a True Divinity.

For such a joint attack, no matter how much it was enhanced it wouldn't reach the height of a True Divinity.

Nevertheless, this attack had a massive area of effect and the power behind it was enormous. Against a group of spirit ships, this was a devastating attack.

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that if the Good Fortune Legion had sufficient time to prepare, gathering their complete group of battle arrays for a single barrage of attacks, they could blow away over half of the spirit ships of Demon Fairy Palace.

This was an overwhelming disparity that came from the difference in strength.

Seeing the spirit ship battle array that was led by the Good Fortune Saint Palace, even someone like Xiao Moxian who refused to give up found it hard to maintain her composure. It was hard not to waver in front of such a terrifying weapon.

At this time, Lin Ming raised his Black Dragon Spear and stepped out of Primordius Heavenly Palace.

“Brother Lin!” Xiao Moxian grabbed onto Lin Ming’s hand.

“Just wait here.” Lin Ming gave Xiao Moxian a comforting look. Then, he stepped outside.

“Ji Xian’er! The destructive attack of the Good Fortune Legion nears that of a star! Aren’t you afraid? Don’t worry, before I capture you alive, I will not let them attack. Only after I catch you will I have you personally watch as all your subordinates turn to ash beneath this world-destroying light!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son wildly laughed. At this time, the planet-sized body of Famine rapidly rushed forwards, flying straight towards the flagship of Demon Fairy Palace!

Compared to the giant body of Famine, the disguised Primordius Heavenly Palace was like a bird in front of a tiger; they were completely disproportionate in size.

However, just as Famine’s several dozen tentacles were poised to attack, the flagship suddenly flashed with a strange black light. It began to change shape, becoming taller and wider and transforming from a linear spirit ship to a black fortress.

Seeing this, the Good Fortune Saint Son was shocked. “What!?”

The shape of this transformed spirit ship caused a foreboding to rise in his heart. He watched as a man holding a spear jumped out from the black fortress.

This man wore black battle armor. His eyebrows were like swords and his eyes were profoundly deep.

As the man grasped the spear, he pointed it straight towards the Good Fortune Saint Son.

“You…? It’s you!?”

The Good Fortune Saint Son’s complexion became incredibly ugly. At this time, Lin Ming had already recovered his appearance of 6,500 years ago. One didn’t even need to guess that this was Lin Ming!

To the Good Fortune Saint Son, this man was no different from a nightmare!

“Is that so…? So it’s like this. Because you were a step earlier than me and found Xiao Moxian first, you had the courage to break into my blockade…”

The Good Fortune Saint Son’s lips twitched. His complexion became increasingly grim and dark. His eyes clouded over with killing intent!

"You really are as stubborn as a cockroach! Even after being hunted down by a True Divinity, you still won't die! You swept through the joint second and third saint legions, extinguished the Legion of Famine, and you plan on eliminating me today? Hahahaha!" The Good Fortune Saint Son raucously laughed. "Over 6,000 years ago, the battle between you and I became the greatest shame of my life. But today, the heavens have given me a chance for revenge. Since this is a battle of destiny, I cannot ask for anything more! Today, let me see just what makes you so brave! Die!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son exploded with a roar. The dozens of Famine's tentacles attacked together, thrusting forwards like the spears of a divine god!

Bang!

A horrifying detonation sound surged out and the void was crushed apart. The Good Fortune Saint Son's strike was comprised of dozens of attacks. Its pressure was greater than innumerable mountains smashing into Primordius Heavenly Palace!

At this moment, it looked like Famine was branching out a giant pile of its flesh and blood to swallow up Primordius Heavenly Palace.

For some time, everyone felt their hearts gripped with fear. In particular, the disciples of Demon Fairy Palace. They all watched with bated breath. Although they had a nearly zealous faith in Lin Ming, this avatar of Famine that the Good Fortune Saint Son commanded was still a being at the True Divinity level. No matter how strong Lin Ming was, this would be a difficult battle!

“Kill Lin Ming! With your strongest attack, blow him up together with Famine’s flesh and blood!” The Good Fortune Saint Son crazily shouted. He didn’t take back the flesh and blood of Famine nor did he see whether or not Lin Ming died. He instantly severed this part of Famine’s flesh and blood and had it surround Lin Ming. He wanted to use the combined attack of the Good Fortune Legion’s battle array to unleash the ultimate killing blow.

This was a sinister and decisive choice. The Good Fortune Saint Son would rather sacrifice a portion of Famine than to give Lin Ming the smallest chance of survival!

At this time, behind the Good Fortune Saint Son, the battle array network with the Good Fortune Saint Palace as the lead began to gather a mind-boggling amount of energy, preparing for their world destroying light attack!

On the side of Demon Fairy Palace, a giant man wielding a war flag rushed out of a spirit ship. He rode on a great wild beast, shouting out as he rushed into the saint fleet, “Brothers! Move forwards! Protect senior Lin Ming and Palace Master Demon Fairy!”

He was a human genius born after the great calamity and also the flag bearer of Demon Fairy Palace!

The scarlet war flag he carried on his shoulders was emblazoned with the symbol of Demon Fairy Palace – the image of a black phoenix bathing in the fires of nirvana!

A Dark Phoenix was Xiao Moxian's God Beast bloodline, and the fires of nirvana represented the rebirth of humanity!

"Kill them!"

"Fight with them!"

"Destroy those saint dogs!"

The army of Demon Fairy Palace roared and charged forwards. They rushed directly toward the flesh and blood of Famine. Placing Primordius Heavenly Palace behind them, they used their fleet to form a great protective iron wall in front of it!

They began gathering all of their energy, preparing to meet the direct attack of the Good Fortune Legion!

Even if their attack was pitifully weak compared to the battle array network of the Good Fortune Legion, at this time no one felt fear and no one shrank backwards. No one was scared of death!

"A tiny pearl dares to compete with the shining moon!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son derisively sneered. He wielded the giant blood dragon tentacles and lashed out at the disciples of Demon Fairy Palace.

The one he targeted was the youth in front carrying the war flag. With the strength of Famine's avatar, a single strike could easily turn this man into muddy meat!

A war flag was the faith and symbol of an army. If the flag fell, so too would group morale.

Hu - !

The tentacles of Famine shrouded down with an unstoppable force. A tremendous pressure locked down the surrounding space, making it impossible to avoid.

The flag-wielding youth's complexion changed. In this moment of life or death, he turned around and exhausted all of his strength to throw the war flag. The war flag howled and broke through the space blockade with difficulty as it fired towards the direction of another flag bearer.

The man could die, but the flag could not fall!

"Brothers, for the glory of humanity! Charge!"

The youth seemed to exhaust every last dreg of his blood vitality to shout out these earth-shaking words. The morale of Demon Fairy Palace erupted like a volcano!

“For humanity!” they yelled, their blood boiling over!

But as everyone thought the flag bearer’s blood would dye the starry space, something unexpected happened. From Primordius Heavenly Palace that was wrapped in the flesh and blood of Famine, a blood dragon tentacle whipped out!

This blood dragon tentacle was even thicker than the one shot out by the Good Fortune Saint Son. With inconceivable speed, it crossed the void and collided with the Good Fortune Saint Son’s strike!

Bang!

The void collapsed! As the mountain-thick tentacles clashed in the air, a deafening explosion rang outwards!

A terrifying tide of energy wildly surged out, sending the flag-bearer flying away! Because this other tentacle of Famine had blocked the attack, the flag-bearer only felt his blood vitality tumbling in his body. He wasn’t even seriously wounded.

“What!?”

“This is...”

Everyone was bewildered. The Good Fortune Saint Son watched all of this with disbelief thick in his eyes. In the air, two tentacles intersected, just like two blood dragons twisting together!

But that other tentacle was clearly linked to Primordius Heavenly Palace.

How was this possible!?

“The flesh and blood of Famine that I discarded would actually protect the flag-bearer on its own? Why would this happen!?”

The Good Fortune Saint Son was panic-stricken.

At this time, the flesh and blood of Famine that surrounded Primordius Heavenly Palace began to slowly split up. Within it, a channel formed.

A black-clothed youth wielding a long spear stepped out. His long hair fluttered behind him. His clothes were clean and meticulous, his appearance was sharp and resolute, and his aura was as deep as the sea.

He stood firm above the flesh and blood of Famine, like a peerless war god who had descended from the highest heavens.

The flesh and blood beneath his feet slowly rose up to form a round table that lifted up the man. This feeling was as if the flesh and blood of Famine was revering this demon-like man!

Seeing this scene, not to mention the Good Fortune Saint Son and the Good Fortune Legion, even the disciples of Demon Fairy Palace were dumbfounded!

What was happening?

“Your words are wrong,” Lin Ming casually said as he pointed his spear toward the Good Fortune Saint Son. “Between you and I, there is no battle of destiny. In my life, I might have a destined opponent, but that person is not you. You are not worthy!”

Lin Ming’s cold voice resounded through the vastness of space, spreading over both the Demon Fairy Palace and the Good Fortune Legion!

The Good Fortune Saint Palace regarded Lin Ming as the greatest opponent in his life, but Lin Ming only regarded the Good Fortune Saint Son as one of the many goals he had to surpass in life. Moreover, this was in the past. Now, Lin Ming had completed the dual transformation of his body and mind. The Good Fortune Saint Son could only be called an enemy and not his match!

MW Chapter 2047

Chapter 2047 – Dazzling

…

…

…

"Lin Ming, you are seeking death!"

As the Good Fortune Saint Son listened to Lin Ming's words, his complexion turned incredibly ugly!

He regarded Lin Ming as the greatest opponent in his life, but Lin Ming only treated him as a little clown, mercilessly trampling him and humiliating him in front of his subordinates!

This struck the Good Fortune Saint Son's nerves!

At this time, in the starry space, the hundreds of thousands of saint martial artists and the disciples of Demon Fairy Palace were watching as this conversation took place.

‘You are not worthy’. These three words echoed in the ears of everyone, enraging the martial artists of the Good Fortune Legion even as it caused the human martial artists to bubble over with excitement.

This was arrogance! This was pride!

If someone else were to say such ridiculous words, others would only call them an idiot. But as Lin Ming said these words, they actually contained an unparalleled deterring force.

This was a happy and hearty feeling that filled one with exuberance!

“Fight!”

The disciples of Demon Fairy Palace emitted an earth-shaking cry, their voices sounded out into the vastness of space!

At this time, the morale of the disciples of Demon Fairy Palace had climbed to the extreme!

"You can go die!" The Good Fortune Saint Son roared out. His mortal body emitted explosive crackling sounds as he began to grow taller. Fierce bone plates jutted out from his body. He had used the strength of the saint race's bloodline body metamorphosis. By using this new power to control the flesh and blood of Famine, the Good Fortune Saint Son could reach his highest level of strength!

The enraged Good Fortune Saint Son suddenly burnt his blood essence. Dozens of new blood dragon tentacles gushed out from the avatar of Famine, and all these tentacles sparkled with blinding divine light as they shot towards Lin Ming!

At this time, even if a sun were in front of the Good Fortune Saint Son, it would still be torn apart by these tentacles!

Facing this heaven-shaking strike, Lin Ming merely focused his thoughts. Beneath him, the flesh and blood of Famine shot out!

Lin Ming had a limited amount of Famine's flesh and blood; it was impossible for him to form tentacles that were as thick as mountains. As he formed tentacles to meet the Good Fortune Saint Son's attack, his tentacles were only as thick as a tree.

Compared to the Good Fortune Saint Son's attack, Lin Ming's counterattack was nothing at all.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

All of the comparatively slender tentacles shot into the much thicker tentacles. And in that moment, the scene of those far thicker tentacles rolling over the thinner tentacles didn't occur as everyone thought it would. Instead, the tentacles struck out by the Good Fortune Saint Son were completely frozen in place!

Like snakes that were caught by their necks, these tentacles began to twitch.

At this time, everyone was amazed to discover that these thinner tentacles had become like blood-drinking snakes, sucking in the flesh and blood of the thicker tentacles!

Gu! Gu! Gu!

The tips of the thicker tentacles began to wither at a speed visible to the eye. The rich flesh and blood essence of Famine flowed through the thinner tentacles and into the flesh and blood of Famine beneath Lin Ming's feet.

The flesh and blood of Famine beneath Lin Ming wildly wriggled.

On the other side, the avatar of Famine that was controlled by the Good Fortune Saint Son began to restlessly stir as if it were greatly stimulated by something. It emitted deep roars.

“What!?”

This situation left the Good Fortune Saint Son stunned. Could it be… that Lin Ming could control Famine!?

This conclusion left the Good Fortune Saint Son panic-stricken. Was this even possible!?

But now, he was already able to clearly feel Lin Ming’s soul force pass through the flesh and blood of Famine and permeate into Famine’s avatar!

“You - !!”

The Good Fortune Saint Son went wild with rage. There was no time for him to think about how Lin Ming had accomplished this. If he were to discard the avatar of Famine, just what sort of consequences would he suffer? It was simply unimaginable!

If he were to lose the avatar of Famine, it would be impossible to escape Lin Ming chasing him down. Disregarding that, even if he somehow survived, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would not let him live.

He would die either way!

In that moment, the Good Fortune Saint Son felt a cold sweat seep out of his entire body.

But right after that, a crazed and fierce light flashed in his eyes.

Blue veins twisted on his face like worms. His eyes that stared at Lin Ming seemed dyed with blood, overflowing with killing intent.

“Do you really think you can kill me like this? Stop dreaming! You are destined to die here! Good Fortune Legion obey my command! With the World Destroying Light, attack with everything you have! Kill them, kill them all!” the Good Fortune Saint Son shouted.

At this time, behind the Good Fortune Saint Son, the Good Fortune Legion had already prepared their battle formation and gathered their energies for several breaths of time. It was enough to send out the World Destruction Light!

In a small scope, this attack was inferior to that of a True Divinity. But as a mass range attack, it was a terrifying strike that surpassed that of a True Divinity!

In this critical situation, the Good Fortune Legion didn’t fall into chaos. With nine peak Empyreans calmly directing the troops, the Good Fortune Legion took the Good Fortune Saint Palace as the core and struck out with the World Destruction Light!

In that moment, it seemed as if every sound in the universe was swallowed up!

A heaven-shaking energy swept through the vastness of space before converging in front of the Good Fortune Saint Palace. It gathered together and collapsed into a black energy ball. The surrounding space cracked and shattered, as if this black ball was one of the fabled black holes.

Shua!

Energy recklessly shot out from this black hole, shooting towards Lin Ming as well as the fleet of Demon Fairy palace!

The black light was too terrifying. It covered a massive range, and with this part of space being sealed up, it was impossible for the fleet of Demon Fairy Palace to avoid it!

At this time, the demented Good Fortune Saint Son sent out more massive tentacles. These tentacles didn’t directly attack Lin Ming but covered him instead, forming a wall of flesh and blood around him. It was clear he wanted to block off every possible escape route!

In truth, even if the Good Fortune Saint Son didn’t do this, Lin Ming wouldn’t have been able to dodge this World Destruction Light. At this time, he had poured his soul force into the avatar of Famine in order to erase the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s spirit mark and capture the avatar. If he were to dodge this attack, the least of his problems would be the injuries to his soul; the key problem was that the flesh and blood of Famine that he controlled beneath his feet would also be destroyed.

And this flesh and blood of Famine wrapped around Primordius Heavenly Palace. Xiao Moxian and the others were all inside!

Lin Ming was doomed to not avoid this attack. He could not abandon Xiao Moxian nor could he abandon the 100,000 warriors of Demon Fairy Palace!

At this time, the warriors of Demon Fairy Palace didn't give up on Lin Ming. They stood in front of Lin Ming, using their relatively weak spirit ships to face off against this attack.

"Brothers, attack!"

"For humanity!"

"For honor and freedom!"

The warriors of Demon Fairy Palace shouted out from the depths of their heart. They poured every ounce of their strength into the array formations of their spirit ships!

At this instant, even without anyone directing them, these 100,000 warriors burnt their blood essence together, burning it all without reserve!

Because they knew that this was likely the final and most dazzling attack in their lives!

This was the brilliance of burning their lives away, as gorgeous and as blazing as the hot sun.

A martial artist was born like a summer flower and died like a spring thunderstorm!

The attack of the Demon Fairy Palace's disciples gathered into a surging current of golden light that welcomed the World Destroying Light!

Bang!

A terrifying explosion rang out. In a flash, energy beams recklessly shot outwards. It was unknown just how much matter was destroyed in that explosion...

Even so, the attack of Demon Fairy Palace's disciples was unable to eliminate the World Destroying Light. After the World Destroying Light slowed down for a brief moment, it suddenly overwhelmed the energy wave from Demon Fairy Palace's disciples and continued forwards without hesitation!

The disparity in energy was too great. They were simply unable to deal with it!

In the next moment, dozens of Demon Fairy Palace disciples became like little beasts beneath a giant tsunami, soon to be utterly submerged.

At this time, from beneath Lin Ming's feet, the mass of Famine's flesh and blood split open. Primordius Heavenly Palace rose up from within, wrapped in an all-devouring black light!

"Legion of Famine, attack!" Lin Ming coldly commanded. Within Primordius Heavenly Palace, the 60,000 warriors of the Legion of Famine had already undergone their body metamorphosis a quarter of an hour ago. They had prepared their battle formation and had gathered their energy earlier, waiting for the moment to erupt!

After the battle with the join saint legions, the Legion of Famine had rested and built up their strength for over a month. All of that was done for the sake of this one strike!

By now, even Fairy Blue Lotus had undergone body metamorphosis!

Four of the saint generals, Lin Ming's three avatars, one miniaturized Black Dragon, and 200 Great World Kings that were comparable to the weakest of Empyreans after body metamorphosis…

Every person and beast poured all their energy into the array formation without reserve!

In particular, the flesh and blood of Famine beneath Lin Ming's feet that he controlled also lent its strength to this attack!

The flesh and blood of Famine burned itself without holding back. Energy surged into Primordius Heavenly Palace as a horrifying black beam of light pierced through the universe and clashed with the World Destroying Light!

"Xian'er, lend me your help!"

Lin Ming's sound transmission reached Xiao Moxian's ears. Next, Xiao Moxian, Lin Huang, and some of the disciples of Demon Fairy Palace who had followed her to Primordius Heavenly Palace all poured their greatest strength into the array formation, preparing to meet the World Destroying Light!

A beam of divine light joined together with the divine light emitted by the 100,000 disciples of Demon Fairy Palace, ruthlessly colliding with the World Destroying Light!

Rumble, rumble, rumble!

An explosion sounded out as if the universe was being torn to shreds. Energy gushed outwards, able to collapse space and wash away the stars!

With this all-out strike from Demon Fairy Palace, the Legion of Famine, and even the flesh and blood of Famine burning away its essence, the might of this attack managed to suppress the terrifying beam of energy emitted by the Good Fortune Legion!

Right after, the beam of energy shot out by the Good Fortune Legion began to be pushed backwards, drawing back at an increasingly quick pace!

Finally, Lin Ming's strike carried with it a heaven-shaking strength as it forcefully extinguished the World Destroying Light and then fired towards the direction of the Good Fortune Legion!

"Noo!!!"

The Good Fortune Saint Son's eyes nearly cracked open. And behind him, the several hundred thousand saint martial artists of the Good Fortune Legion all seemed to lose their spirit!

"Ahhhh!"

Some people cried out in despair and sorrow. Others rushed out their spirit ships and fled into deep space. And still others moved their spirit ships, wanting to withdraw.

But no matter how they struggled, everything they did was useless. This beam of light was too fast, faster than any spirit ship or martial artist.

Much less, this space had already been sealed away by the Good Fortune Legion.

They were caught in their own trap!

Bang!

Divine light exploded within the Good Fortune Legion. Divine light swallowed all, drowning out all sight in a sea of blinding light.

Before, in order to arrange the battle formation that would send out the World Destroying Light, the Good Fortune Legion had crowded together their spirit ships. But this now became the reason for their complete destruction!

Large swathes of saint spirit ships were struck head-on by the light and directly disintegrated into powder, without leaving behind any fragment of space debris.

Innumerable spirit ships were swept up in the explosion before bursting apart in the horrifying energy storm, turning into dazzling fireworks in space!

The Good Fortune Legion had suffered far too heavy losses in this attack.

The Good Fortune Saint Son watched all of this from a distance, his heart trembling. At this moment, he knew that the Good Fortune Legion, the trump card of the saint armies, was done for!

MW Chapter 2048

Chapter 2048 – End of the Road

…

…

…

The World Destruction Light along with the Good Fortune Legion was completely overwhelmed by the blast of energy sent out by the human alliance. The defensive barrier laid down by the Good Fortune Legion was torn apart like a soap bubble. Even from trillions of miles away, one could see a brilliant light blazing in the distance, as if a massive star had burst into a supernova.

The energy waves recklessly washed out the dark nebula, thoroughly destroying the surrounding star territory and causing the light to spread even further out!

The trump card of the saint armies – the Good Fortune Legion – was utterly ruined. They didn’t even have half their spirit ships remaining. The Good Fortune Saint Palace managed to remain intact. Even though it was at the center of the energy beam, it barely made it through due to the fact that it was a True Divinity spirit treasure. But for hundreds of miles around the Good Fortune Saint Palace, every spirit ship was reduced to ashes.

Even those that were far away and relatively well-off were greatly damaged in the explosion. The battle strength of these spirit ships was reduced to near nothing.

In truth, the truly fatal strike was the impact on their morale. The Good Fortune Legion was like a fierce tiger descending the mountain, possessing an absolute faith in their strength and ability to win. This was a terrifying army that feared no opponent.

But that strike just now had completely smashed apart their arrogance and confidence.

They were defeated, completely and utterly defeated!

Even for the several peak Empyreans as they faced Lin Ming, this man that seemed like a demon god, all of them felt a fear come from the depths of their souls. This Lin Ming was too horrifying, simply unbeatable!

And while the saints were wallowing in their low morale and fervently wishing to retreat, the morale of humanity reached the zenith!

That incredible all-out attack just now caused their blood to boil over!

The human martial artists that burnt their blood essence should have been exhausted due to overdrawing their blood vitality. But because of this great victory, all of them had gone crazy with elation.

“Brothers, onwards!” the officers of Demon Fairy Palace wildly roared. The soldiers were like starving wolves that saw fresh meat, swarming forwards.

The flapping war flag of Demon Fairy Palace was lifted high into the air. The Dark Phoenix in Nirvana embroidered upon the war flag seemed to come alive. It guided the anger of the human army, stabbing into the Good Fortune Legion like a sharp blade!

The Good Fortune Legion was the top army of the entire saint race. But facing the brutal onslaught of Demon Fairy Palace, they were unexpectedly routed!

The explosion had blown up their battle formation. Now, every spirit ship had to operate independently, contributing more to the chaos in the field. And most importantly, according to how the original battle formation was arranged, the more powerful spirit ships were placed closer to the center of the battlefield. Like this, they could support the main strike force.

When the energy beam exploded within the Good Fortune Legion, the spirit ships near the center took the brunt of the attack and almost all of them were destroyed as a result.

The spirit ships that were farther away and survived the explosion were much weaker than the spirit ships near the center. It could be said that the Good Fortune Legion had lost almost three-fourths of their total war strength.

Divine light shot out and an explosion lit up space. Demon Fairy Palace pushed forwards with unstoppable momentum and the Good Fortune Legion withdrew in defeat again and again.

At this time, on the other side of the battlefield, the flesh and blood of Famine beneath Lin Ming's feet was still entangled with the Good Fortune Saint Son's avatar of Famine. A massive amount of flesh and blood essence from the avatar of Famine was being swallowed up by the flesh and blood of Famine that Lin Ming controlled!

The Good Fortune Saint Son's complexion had already turned horrendously ugly.

Lin Ming could swallow and control the flesh and blood essence of Famine. Even if the flesh and blood essence of Famine had the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's spirit mark within it, it was still useless!

The Good Fortune Saint Son didn't know how Lin Ming managed to accomplish this, but this part was no longer important because he had been pushed into a dead end!

He wasn't like Fairy Blue Lotus, someone who had a master willing to damage their own cultivation to protect her with a wisp of an incarnation. How could the greatly ambitious

Good Fortune Saint Sovereign ever make a sacrifice to help his disciple? As far as the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was concerned, everyone else was nothing but a pawn to be used.

So, as the Good Fortune Saint Son faced Lin Ming, he no longer had any cards in his hands.

Perhaps it should be said that even if he did have hidden cards, these cards would be nothing but toys in front of Lin Ming.

At this moment, the Good Fortune Saint Son felt what true despair was!

He could feel that Lin Ming was not just sucking out Famine’s flesh and blood essence, but also drawing out his own flesh and blood!

He was no different from a convict who had his artery slashed open. He could only stare helplessly on as his blood flowed out from his body, awaiting the moment he died from blood loss.

This way of waiting for death truly left one grasping in craziness!

The Good Fortune Saint Son went mad. He wildly injected his soul force into Famine’s body, wanting to compete with Lin Ming in controlling it.

However, the moment that the Good Fortune Saint Son touched Lin Ming's soul force, his face turned paperwhite and his body shook. Blood started seeping out from his nose.

The difference between his soul force and Lin Ming's was far too great!

Moreover, the crux of the issue here was that the Good Fortune Saint Son's soul force couldn't control Famine's avatar to begin with. He had only barely managed to indirectly control Famine's avatar using the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's spirit mark. When compared to Lin Ming who possessed the soul of Famine, the difference was unfathomable!

With a great roar, the Good Fortune Saint Son leapt out from Famine's body!

He grasped a heavy sword and slashed out at Lin Ming. In that instant, golden astral essence surged out from the Good Fortune Saint Son, as if there were a golden sun burning within him.

His aura also changed. The endless starlight around him distorted, gathering towards him. The origin energy of the universe, the cosmic dust, all forms of energy were drawn out by the Good Fortune Saint Son.

This was the Good Fortune Saint Son's Good Fortune Divine Art. Once the Good Fortune Divine Art was used, it could seize the power of the world's good fortune. In other words, it was wrestling away the spiritual energy and life of the world!

A martial artist skilled in the Good Fortune Divine Art could convert this energy into their own strength, using it to destroy their enemies.

By this time, the Good Fortune Saint Son had cultivated the Good Fortune Divine Art to an extremely high boundary. Once he used it, weaker Empyreans couldn’t even stand before him. This was because the Good Fortune Divine Art would sever their connection with the energy of the world, and the Good Fortune Saint Son would brutally take it away!

Only a peak Empyrean would be barely able to deal with the Good Fortune Saint Son’s Good Fortune Divine Art.

But to Lin Ming, not even peak Empyreans could stand before him!

This was the disparity between the two!

When the Good Fortune Saint Son attacked, so did Lin Ming. But it wasn’t Lin Ming that moved, but the flesh and blood of Famine beneath him!

Dozens of blood dragon tentacles shot out towards the Good Fortune Saint Son!

The Good Fortune Saint Son's eyes turned blood red. He could use the Good Fortune Divine Art to absorb origin energy from the universe, but to use it to steal away origin energy from Famine was actually impossible!

This was because of the difference in their ranks.

He rushed left and right between the dozens of tentacles. But to his shock, he discovered that Lin Ming's ability to display the strength of Famine's avatar far exceeded his own!

Every tentacle of Famine seemed to be alive, as if they had their own thoughts and sensations. They coordinated their attacks, their barrage of strikes, without flaw.

The Good Fortune Saint Son dodged over a dozen attacks. But in the next few attacks, as his speed slowed down by just a bit, a blood dragon tentacle slammed him in the back!

Puff!

The Good Fortune Saint Son spat out a mouthful of blood. The organs in his body tumbled around as he was sent flying backwards.

At this time, the Good Fortune Saint Son's heart was filled with shame and humiliation. Lin Ming had actually stolen away the avatar of Famine and then used it to deal with him!

He had mobilized the several saint legions in Saint Convocation Heaven to come here and wait for Lin Ming. But these legions were completely defeated by Lin Ming.

He had led the Good Fortune Legion, the trump card of the saint armies, to encircle Xiao Moxian. But in the end, the Good Fortune Legion had been demolished!

And from beginning to end, the Good Fortune Saint Son had never truly fought with Lin Ming. Lin Ming simply stood where he was without moving, gradually taking control of Famine's avatar!

The Good Fortune Saint Son hurtled himself at Lin Ming. But Lin Ming only used Famine's avatar to deal with him.

Lin Ming's methods matched what he had said before. He simply didn't take the Good Fortune Saint Son to be his match.

Humiliation, frustration, despair, in the final waning moments of his life, the Good Fortune Saint Son went crazy. He burnt his blood essence to the limit, but no matter how he attacked, all that greeted him were the fierce and terrifying blood dragon tentacles!

These tentacles were endless. Even if the Good Fortune Saint Son cut them off, they would rapidly regrow. Then, these tentacles were reabsorbed by Famine's body. It was simply an unkillable monster.

Moreover, as more and more flesh and blood of Famine was absorbed by Lin Ming, the tentacles that fought with the Good Fortune Saint Son became increasingly thick even as more and more of them appeared!

The Good Fortune Saint Son was covered in blood. His organs had broken apart in countless places and he was covered in innumerable wounds.

His movements gradually slowed down. He knew he had reached the precipice of death.

In the final moments of his life, the Good Fortune Saint Son’s lips curved up in a humorless smile. He used his remaining astral essence to flood his limbs. These energies started to boil like magma…

“You want to implode?”

A cold light flashed in Lin Ming’s eyes. How could he allow the Good Fortune Saint Son to do as he wished. To him, the Good Fortune Saint Son was still of great use.

Whoosh!

A wisp of soul force shot out from between Lin Ming’s eyebrows like the sword of a divine god, piercing into the Good Fortune Saint Son’s spiritual sea at an inconceivable speed.

For an instant, the energy gathered within the Good Fortune Saint Son froze. And in this instant, a thick tentacle rushed forwards and bit down upon the Good Fortune Saint Son!

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Immediately, hundreds of tentacles the thickness of a worm drilled into the Good Fortune Saint Son’s body. Like leeches, they started to recklessly swallow the Good Fortune Saint Son’s flesh and blood essence and energy alike!

The Good Fortune Saint Son’s eyes bulged out and his expression turned dull. At this moment, he was no different from a living corpse.

In these last moments of his life, he could feel Lin Ming using Famine’s avatar to swallow him!

He had controlled the avatar of Famine for a long time and had used it to swallow an incalculable amount of lives and energy. Finally, he had been reduced to becoming this avatar’s food. This was truly life’s greatest joke!

Slowly, the Good Fortune Saint Son’s mortal body withered away. His skin wrinkled and his eyes deepened into their sockets.

The flesh and blood of Famine wriggled about and fed the disabled Good Fortune Saint Son into Primordius Heavenly Palace…

MW Chapter 2049

Chapter 2049 – Good Fortune's Ambitions

…

…

…

After the Good Fortune Saint Son was swallowed up by Famine, the entire Good Fortune Legion fell into complete chaos.

In the end, the saints lacked the fear of death the humans had. This didn't mean that the saints were less brave than the humans, but because the saints weren't in a situation where the life or death of their race was on the line. The only reason they came to the wild universe was to invade this new world and obtain more advantages. Now that the Good Fortune Saint Son died, the Good Fortune Legion rapidly fled!

Lin Ming certainly wouldn't let them escape. This was especially because they controlled a True Divinity spirit treasure – the Good Fortune Saint Palace.

This sort of palace-type True Divinity spirit treasure was extremely rare. How could Lin Ming possibly let it go?

“Pursue them!” Lin Ming commanded. However, the truth was that he didn’t need to issue such orders as the disciples of Demon Fairy Palace were already chasing ahead on their own initiative!

The saint legion scattered like a cloud of locusts, fleeing in all directions.

In fact, the remaining number of saint spirit ships was still higher than the number of spirit ships the Demon Fairy Palace had. And although Lin Ming was powerful, he could only chase in a single direction. Naturally, the direction he chose was toward the Good Fortune Saint Palace.

As for the remainders of the saint fleet, Lin Ming didn’t plan to bother with them. As long as they retreated far enough away, they could carry out great void shifts, and then it would be impossible for him to catch up to them.

But at this time, Lin Ming’s heart stirred. He looked towards another direction of the vast starry space and saw another fleet flying towards him at a breakneck pace.

There weren’t many ships in this fleet, but they were extremely fast. It was clear they were elite troops!

As this fleet appeared, it wove together a net of firepower that blocked off massive swathes of the Good Fortune Legion. Many of the saint spirit ships were destroyed where they were.

Backup?

Lin Ming was startled. He didn't know which human army this was, but he believed that they had been drawn here due to the massive dazzling explosion moments ago. As long as they looked at the explosion a little closely, it'd be easy to guess that the blinding light wasn't a natural cosmic phenomenon. Moreover, there was the aura of Laws that surged outwards, easily indicating that a battle had erupted.

The backup troops and Demon Fairy Palace's fleet caught the fleeing Good Fortune Legion in a pincer attack. The saints were like a rabbit being chased by a wolf, unable to choose a way out in their panic.

More and more spirit ships exploded. The result of this battle had already been decided...

As for Lin Ming, he had overtaken the Good Fortune Saint Palace!

With the dark starry skies illuminating him, Lin Ming overtook the Good Fortune Saint Palace like a giant octopus grabbing hold of a seashell.

Famine stretched out dozens of blood dragon tentacles that wrapped around the Good Fortune Saint Palace. Great waves of flesh and blood broke into the Good Fortune Saint Palace, drowning everyone inside!

As Famine began to wildly swallow up the blood energy of the powerhouses within, as the one controlling it, Lin Ming could deeply feel just how great its bloodlust and rage were. Without its soul, Famine's flesh and blood only possessed its devouring instinct. The more it devoured, the more powerful it became!

When it swallowed enough things, it could even split apart and form an avatar! This was simply a life form that defied the Heavenly Dao!

According to Lin Ming's understandings, the more powerful a life form was the more difficult it was to reproduce. In fact, there were many formidable beings that were unique in the heavens and earth.

Otherwise, if there were too many of these powerful life forms, they would become the absolute masters of the universe, destroying the balance.

But Famine clearly violated this common sense. Lin Ming didn't know if there was a limit in the number of avatars Famine could form. But if there wasn't a limit, then with enough time Famine and its avatars could slowly flood through the entire 33 Heavens, swallowing all of existence...

Such a deduction left chills crawling down Lin Ming's spine.

The more he thought about previous events, Lin Ming seemed to realize a possibility. His thoughts stirred and in the next moment he appeared in Primordius heavenly Palace.

Though the battle had come to an end, there were still many matters Lin Ming had yet to wrap up. He didn't even have time to completely refine Famine's avatar.

"Brother Lin!"

Xiao Moxian flushed red as she saw Lin Ming arrive, gently panting for breath. This was because of her excitement in destroying the Good Fortune Legion and also because she had joined forces with the Legion of Famine to attack, consuming a great deal of her energy.

"Can you control Famine?" Xiao Moxian asked curiously. As she asked this, many disciples of Demon Fairy Palace looked toward Lin Ming, also wondering this.

Lin Ming smiled, "I'll tell you everything in a little bit. There are some matters I need to process first."

After Lin Ming spoke his figure flickered and he appeared in another chamber. Within this chamber lay the withered and weakened Good Fortune Saint Son.

In the past, the Good Fortune Saint Son had been tall and strong, his eyebrows slanting upwards like swords and his bearing extraordinary. He was destined to live a magnificent life from birth, and regardless of his life experiences or the talent he displayed, he had always been worshipped and surrounded by others as if he were the star and they all revolved around him.

Because of this, even though many peerlessly beautiful women amongst the saints knew that the Good Fortune Saint Son was extremely cruel and ruthless and that women were insignificant creatures to him, they still delivered themselves to his bed on their own volition.

But now, after the Good Fortune Saint Son's blood vitality was swallowed up by Famine, he didn't even resemble a person anymore.

When Lin Ming entered the chamber, the Good Fortune Saint Son felt his presence but didn't respond. His eyes were empty and blank, and his mouth was slightly open with drool leaking out, as if he had become a walking corpse.

At this time, the Good Fortune Saint Son's heart had already died. His ambitions and arrogance had all been smashed apart. From someone who expected to rule the world in the future, he had devolved into this sad and pitiful appearance, living a life worse than death.

Lin Ming slowly lifted his right hand. A black cube appeared atop his palm.

Black lines sparkled, shining onto the Good Fortune Saint Son's face. The Good Fortune Saint Son's eyelids opened and he saw the Magic Cube.

As someone who once possessed the Grandmist Spirit Bead, the Good Fortune Saint Son had a vague sense of what the three divine tools were. As the Magic Cube appeared, he seemed to faintly realize something. But as for what it was, he wasn't sure.

However, none of this was important. Even if learned of Lin Ming's secrets, what use would that be?

He bitterly smiled and hoarsely said, "Kill... me..."

"As you wish."

Lin Ming waved his hand and the Good Fortune Saint Son's soul disintegrated into fragments that flew into the Magic Cube...

In that moment, the Good Fortune Saint Son truly died. His spatial ring and weapons were all taken by Lin Ming. As for his corpse that had lost all blood vitality, Lin Ming simply flicked his finger, sending out a fireball that burnt the corpse into ashes.

With another thought, Lin Ming appeared within the Magic Cube space.

Currently, Lin Ming had become increasingly proficient in using the Magic Cube. He could now directly read through the memories of the soul fragments as if he were flipping through a book and didn't need to absorb them.

To Lin Ming, the memories of the Good Fortune Saint Son were extremely important. There were many things he wanted to find out, and the most important was – the Good Fortune Divine Art!

At this stage, Lin Ming's greatest opponent was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, and the Good Fortune Divine Art was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's strongest ability. This seemed to be a peak True Divinity cultivation method!

Lin Ming possessed far too many cultivation methods. Just the Asura Laws and Holy Scripture Laws were two of the highest Laws of martial arts and more than enough for him to perceive. He just didn't have the time or energy to study the 'Good Fortune Divine Art'.

But even if he didn't study it, he still had to understand it. Know oneself and know your enemy, and be undefeated in a thousand battles. What Lin Ming wanted to do now was to find the weakness within the Good Fortune Divine Art.

The Good Fortune Saint Son had an Empyrean realm cultivation and possessed a profound understanding of the Good Fortune Divine Art. In his memories, the Good Fortune Divine Art had a total of 12 levels.

The Good Fortune Saint Son had only practiced to the ninth level, but he knew the content of the first 11 levels.

As for the final 12th level, only the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign knew the details behind it.

This cultivation method was indeed at the peak True Divinity level. Compared to the Asura Sutra and Holy Scripture, it was only slightly worse.

Even the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn't seem to have practiced this cultivation method to perfection.

In other words, this cultivation method wasn't created by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, but was an ancient inheritance he had obtained.

Within the Good Fortune Saint Son's memories, the Good Fortune Divine Art originated from the Primeval Realm Ruins. As for who had created it, no one knew.

After the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign obtained the Good Fortune Divine Art, he spent a hundred million years to slowly add in his own understandings and improve this cultivation method.

Many peerless cultivation methods were not completed by a single person. This included the Holy Scripture and Asura Sutra that Lin Ming practiced. He himself had added in his understandings of his six lives of reincarnation, and had even slowly started to fuse the two together. In Lin Ming's hands, these two peak roads of martial arts had become completely different from what they were in the past.

Lin Ming read through the content of the Good Fortune Divine Art a little at a time. The more he read, the more startled he became. From the past, he understood that the Good Fortune Divine Art granted the ability to seize the power of good fortune.

The so-called good fortune was nature itself. If a True Divinity displayed this technique, they could suck dry the essence energy of a world, turning it into a dead land!

However, as he delved deeper into the Laws, the speculations Lin Ming had before became increasingly clear as he affirmed them.

Lin Ming discovered that the Good Fortune Divine Art's ability to swallow the power of a world was similar to Famine!

Famine could swallow anything, but it focused on swallowing flesh and blood.

The Good Fortune Divine Art focused on swallowing the power of a world.

If the two were combined…

In that instant, Lin Ming felt his blood run cold. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's improvements on the Good Fortune Divine Art had mostly concerned this aspect!

To swallow flesh and blood – that was equal to swallowing the body.

To swallow the power of the world – that was equal to swallowing the universe.

This just happened to be the same as Lin Ming's own path of cultivation. That was… joining together the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra and combining the universe of the body with the universe of the world!

Lin Ming could finally see the road the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wanted to walk down. His ambitions were too great! He wanted to practice the Laws of Swallowing to their limit, stepping Beyond Divinity and even surpassing the Asura Road Master!

If the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had planned to this step, humanity alone naturally wouldn't be enough to satisfy him.

He would inevitably strike out against the spiritas!

Lin Ming suspected that in the end, when the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had swallowed everything to the limit, would he even let the saint race off?

For someone to go this far, were they even a person? Perhaps calling him a monster wasn’t enough to describe him.

However, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would not stop on his road. This was all because of his ambitions!

He wouldn’t resign himself to eventually returning to dust, he wouldn’t resign himself to being subject to the highest Heavenly Dao. Upon reaching the level he was at, there was nothing in this world that could captivate the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign besides absolute strength and eternal life!

MW Chapter 2050

Chapter 2050 – Never Abandon

…

…

…

When Lin Ming emerged from the Magic Cube space, his heart had become filled with worries.

It had to be known that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was only one of the enemies he was destined to face. But just the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign alone played such a grand and complex game.

In the eyes of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, the only person capable of playing against him was the Soul Emperor.

Just what was the Soul Emperor plotting?

As Lin Ming thought of the Soul Emperor, he inevitably recalled Sheng Mei.

Lin Ming had met with Sheng Mei over 6,000 years ago in the Soul World. There, he had wanted to pay a price in order to facilitate an alliance between humanity and the spiritas. But the result was that his proposal had been refused by Sheng Mei. Now that he thought of it, this was also completely normal. Whether it was the Soul Emperor or Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, both of them thought that humanity was nothing but a tiny chess piece within the grand game they were playing. If humanity were to undergo a great apocalyptic calamity in which they went extinct, this would be no different from a chess piece being taken off the board.

Lin Ming fell silent as he thought of the words he spoke to Sheng Mei, his mind in deep contemplation, as if his thoughts were wrapped in fog...

“Why are you sighing?”

“I’m sighing over your destiny...”

.....

“Lin Ming... you are like a moth drawn to the flame. Even though you know a raging fire is in front of you, you still desperately plunge into the roaring flames. Me, I am also a moth.”

…..

“Lin Ming, let me ask you one more time. Are you willing to abandon humanity, abandon everything, and follow me in reaching the peak of martial arts, probing the limits of the road of martial arts, establishing a vast world that lies separate from the 33 Heavens, and become rulers of that world?”

…..

“Forget the words I’ve said tonight.”

…..

Lin Ming thought back to the words they shared. He thought of the thoughts he had at the time, the thought of being hunted down by Soaring Feather God King and then being shifted into the Sky Spill Planet by Sheng Mei, and even the sad face she had when she left after stealing away his source soul force…

Without a doubt, Sheng Mei had her own story, and it was because of the Soul Emperor that her story was filled with sorrow and pain.

She didn’t wish to, but she eventually had to make a choice.

It was just that Lin Ming didn’t know the secrets behind her choices…

“Brother Lin, what is it?” Xiao Moxian asked as she saw the peculiar expression on Lin Ming’s face. Lin Ming shook his head. “It’s nothing. I was just recalling some past events… I’m worried about what the spiritas are planning…”

When Lin Ming met up with Xiao Moxian, Mu Qianyu, and Qin Xingxuan, he had six hours before his battle with the Good Fortune Saint Son. During this time, Lin Ming recounted his experiences to them, and Xiao Moxian also learned about Sheng Mei and the Soul Emperor.

Xiao Moxian didn’t continue this topic. She instead said, “Dragon Fang has arrived…”

“Dragon Fang?” Lin Ming was startled. He suddenly remembered that in the backup troops that came, there were few ships but their war strength was incredible. Yes, in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy there was not just Xiao Moxian but also Dragon Fang.

During these past years, both forces had worked together to harass and divert Good Fortune Saint Son. Dragon Fang was slightly weaker than Xiao Moxian and Xiao Moxian also had Lin Huang at her side. It was obvious that Dragon Fang had a much more difficult time surviving in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy.

Thinking about it, Dragon Fang shouldn't have been too far away from this area. So, when he saw the light from the massive explosion, he rushed over.

"Dragon Fang broke into the Empyrean realm." Xiao Moxian suddenly said.

Lin Ming was bewildered to hear this. Dragon Fang was about his age, and to break into the Empyrean realm at 6,000-7,000 years of age was a bit too exaggerated.

However, this was likely because of the great calamity. With the arrival of disaster, many geniuses grew rapidly. If this calamity continued on and more and more human martial artists perished, there would also be more powerhouses that rose from their ashes.

After the tides washed the sand away, true gold would emerge. To the weak this great calamity was a living hell, but to geniuses this great calamity was a stage set for their growth.

Lin Ming thought for a moment and then took out a jade slip from his spatial ring. This was the sound transmission mark of the Mount Potala Wartime Alliance.

It was about time for humanity to reunite.

Currently, the invincible forces of the saints had been slowly whittled away. Although humanity couldn't engage in a counterattack, they could at least resist the saints head-on before the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign left seclusion.

Moreover, there was something else he wanted to do. Lin Ming wanted to find out news about Mo Eversnow through the human intelligence network. According to what Xiao Moxian knew, Mo Eversnow had left early on in the great calamity, and as for where she went, Xiao Moxian didn't know. But Mo Eversnow had brought Fishy away with her.

There might be some human Empyreans that would know where Mo Eversnow had gone…

"Let's go. We're returning to the base of Demon Fairy Palace," Lin Ming said.

.....

"Lin Ming, hahaha!" Within a brightly lit hall of Demon Fairy Palace. A tall and robust middle-aged man strode in, a group of silver-armored warriors following close behind him. As these silver-armored warriors saw Lin Ming, visible excitement shined in their eyes.

This middle-aged man was Empyrean Vast Universe. Empyrean Vast Universe stretched out a hand and slapped Lin Ming's shoulder. "I knew it! I knew a brat like you wouldn't have died so easily! It's been 6,500 years and you've finally returned! Good! Too good! This is just far too good!" Empyrean Vast Universe shouted, his complexion beaming.

In the past, he and Divine Dream were the human Empyreans who had noticed Lin Ming's capabilities first. At the time, Empyrean Vast Universe only thought Lin Ming was a genius with excellent talent who would become an Empyrean in the future. He even believed he had underestimated in his judgment of Lin Ming, but he never thought that his underestimation would be so great. Now, Lin Ming was already able to create the miracle of reversing this war.

Who would have thought that the somewhat naïve and childish youth of the past would become the great hero that reversed the great calamity?

"Senior Vast Universe!"

Seeing Empyrean Vast Universe, Lin Ming was also excited. When the saints began their full invasion of humanity, the human elites had to evacuate the Divine Realm to guarantee the continuation of their inheritance. In order to safely arrive at the wild universe, the armies of the human Empyreans, led by Divine Dream, had to go to Bright Luster World to block the advance of the saints.

And Empyrean Vast Universe had been one of these brave Empyreans. Lin Ming knew that Empyrean Vast Universe's strength wasn't considered strong amongst the many human Empyreans and he worried that Empyrean Vast Universe would perish in battle. After all, this was an elder that he respected and he also appreciated Empyrean Vast Universe for having recognized him in the past.

As Lin Ming saw Empyrean Vast Universe standing alive in front of him, he was overjoyed from the depths of his heart.

“Haha, don’t call me senior anymore! Boy, you are the hero of humanity. If Divine Dream were to see you now, she would definitely be happy.”

“Senior Divine Dream…” Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred. “I heard Senior Divine Dream was fighting two other saint True Divinities in a different wild universe. How is the current situation?”

Empyrean Vast Universe shook his head. “I don’t have much of an understanding about how she is doing. When Divine Dream sent a message to me, she instructed me on how humanity should continue the war… and she also conveniently mentioned that she was engaged in battle with two True Divinities…”

“Oh? What instructions did Senior Divine Dream give?”

“It was very simple, just a single word – endure. Divine Dream wants the various human forces to go into hiding and not to directly confront the saints. We’re to use guerilla tactics to engage them in order to drag out as much time as we can. Now, it seems that we really managed to wait for our favorable turn to appear!” Empyrean Vast Universe laughed once more. Lin Ming’s appearance had truly been their favorable turn.

“As for Divine Dream’s current situation, I only know the approximate difference in strength between her and the other two True Divinities. If Divine Dream and Soaring Feather God King were to be compared alone, it’s hard to say if either of them could truly harm the other. But if Divine Dream were to face Astral Vault God King, she has a considerable superiority over him. This is mainly due to the height of the Laws they cultivated when they stepped into True Divinity and also because her cultivation methods naturally restrain his. Astral Vault God King has a formidable mortal body, but he is weak when it comes to the spiritual sea and mental strength. Against someone like Divine Dream who is familiar with illusions and soul attacks, he suffers far too great a loss. Divine Dream said she used her divine dream space to trap Astral Vault God King and then she was able to lead Soaring Feather God King around. Like this, she was able to fight one against two.”

“But this is also because Astral Vault God King and Soaring Feather God King have no intentions of going all out against Divine Dream. If they did, Astral Vault God King could simply burn his blood essence and even if he can’t see through the illusions of the divine dream space, he can still use brute force to break through the divine dream space’s force field enchantment.”

“I see…” Lin Ming let out a sigh of relief. He was originally afraid something might have happened to Divine Dream since she was fighting one against two, but it seems the situation was better than he hoped.

“Haha, you don’t need to worry about Divine Dream. I’ve known her for more than 10 million years and I personally know just how fierce she is. In the past, she and I both participated in a great tournament similar to the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting. Afterwards, we adventured together, passed through dangers together, and explored mystic realms together. She has always been creating miracles. Between her and I, our relationship is just like…” As Empyrean Vast Universe spoke to here, a thoughtful expression crossed his face. He laughed and said, “It’s just like you and Hang Chi. You always seem to be making moves that defy all common sense, and when it comes to you, there doesn’t seem like there is anything that is impossible. As for Hang Chi, he’s an honest and diligent person who works hard on his cultivation, just like me! These days, honest people like me really find it hard to keep up, haha!”

From the time he saw Lin Ming, Empyrean Vast Universe didn’t stop laughing. In the last six thousand some years, he hadn’t smiled so brightly and openly.

“Well, enough of me. Let’s go, there are many other people waiting to see you.”

Lin Ming contacted Emperor Shakya who in turn contacted the different human influences through the sound transmission marks he had. For a long time, innumerable human influences started gathering at the Hidden Dragon Galaxy.

At this time, outside of Demon Fairy Palace, a massive number of ordinary warriors gathered. A part of them were Holy Lords, some were young Divine Lord powerhouses, and there were even some Divine Transformation realm juniors who weren’t strong enough to enter the battlefield and were only part of the reserve forces.

Seeing Lin Ming appear, all these warriors began to crazily cheer.

When a nation was in danger, whether it was warriors seeing a beloved leader or the common people seeing their warriors return in triumph, it was difficult for them to suppress the excitement in their hearts.

“Lin Ming undying! Humanity forever!”

It was unknown who started shouting this, but others also began shouting it in agreement.

“Lin Ming undying! Humanity forever!”

“Lin Ming undying! Humanity forever!”

The cheers were like tsunamis crashing into each other. A million martial artists shouting out at the top of their lungs created a terrifying roar that echoed into the heavens, shaking the vast starry skies!

Warriors yelled with arms raised high. Some people couldn’t help but happily lift their weapons. Young girls openly sobbed and held onto each other. At this time, everyone’s hearts were joined as one, beating in unison.

Every person, whether they were ordinary warriors, officers of the army, Empyreans with long lives who had passed through the difficulties of wind and rain, or even Lin Ming who stood above the walls of Demon Fairy Palace looking down at the world below, at this moment, everyone seemed infected by this atmosphere. Their blood boiled over as they shouted out loud, their voices brimming with joy and excitement that they were unable to restrain.

They all deeply felt that in these dangerous times, humanity was joined together in an unprecedented moment of unity and bravery!

At this time, even Lin Ming couldn’t help but feel hot tears stream down his face. In his heart, he knew that this was the race he would belong to forever and he would also fight for his people forever. His friends, his family, his descendants, they were all part of the human race and were something he could never abandon...

MW Chapter 2051

Chapter 2051 – Gathering in the Hidden Dragon

…

…

…

Even a full month after Lin Ming defeated the Good Fortune Legion, the humans within the wild universe were still seething with excitement!

Using various information networks, the Mount Potala Wartime Alliance proudly spread out news of Lin Ming’s continued victories over the past months, including the crushing defeat of the Legion of Famine and the destruction of the joint saint legions and the Good Fortune Legion.

That were three continual great victories. In particular the last battle, when Lin Ming had killed the Good Fortune Saint Son and broken the saint army’s trump card, pushing the morale of humanity to the extreme.

In these past days, all of the various human influences were excitedly speaking to each other – “Gather in the Hidden Dragon!”

Emperor Shakya used Lin Ming’s name to gather all human influences to convene in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy!

Besides Lin Ming’s illustrious victories, Emperor Shakya hadn’t said a single word about their future plans. However, many people felt that the gathering of all forces in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy was the beginning of something new, perhaps even the start of their return to the Divine Realm!

To push their way back into the Divine Realm!

This last thought left many enchanted by its possibilities.

They all remembered what had been said.

Until the day humanity’s comrades in the wild universe returned to the Divine Realm, they would never forget the sacrifices that were made!

This was the faith of humanity.

Whether it was the humans in the wild universe or the humans in the Divine Realm, for their race, they would sacrifice all!

As time passed, more and more people gathered in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy. Slowly, this star territory turned into the central headquarters of humanity. Since the war in the wild universe began, this was the first time humanity had established their own true and solid base.

By the time half the human influences had gathered, the various rulers of humanity gathered together and convened a meeting of the highest importance.

Those that attended this meeting were all people who possessed a fighting strength at the Empyrean realm or above. Emperor Shakya, Great Limitless Buddha, Empyrean Vast Universe, Hang Chi, Jun Bluemoon, Dragon Fang, Dark Demon Monarch, Skyrend Godlord, Diwuhen, and so forth, all had come for this meeting.

The reason for this meeting was to formulate a plan for humanity to launch a counter-offensive into the Divine Realm!

According to the memories that Lin Ming had obtained from the Good Fortune Saint Son's soul, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was swallowing the Nine Divine Shift essence gathering system and in order to do that had to consume a tremendous amount of time and energy. It would take him at least several hundred or even over a thousand years to finish.

If he were to stop midway during this process, all his previous efforts would come to nothing. To the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign this would mean a tremendous loss in strength. If this occurred, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would find it hard to resist the heavenly tribulation brought down upon him for trying to tamper with the highest Heavenly Dao. With his origin energy severely damaged, there was even a possibility that he would perish.

On the other hand, if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was able to withstand the baptism of heavenly tribulation and survive, he would obtain enormous benefits.

Humanity needed to fight during this time period. While the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was deep in seclusion, they would give the saints a major blow!

Drawing back, even if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign were to recklessly leave seclusion to prevent this, humanity would simply do as they did before and scatter in all directions within the wild universe.

No matter how strong the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was, it was impossible for him alone to annihilate humanity.

In the vast and complex wild universe with its bizarre terrains, once humanity were to disperse here and hide in the different star territories then who knew how much time it would take for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign to search through each territory and kill off the humans he found.

As for Lin Ming and Empyrean Divine Dream, one could use the Bodily Rebirth Technique and the other could use profound illusion and concealment skills to hide away in the universe, so that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would never be able to find them.

Currently, humanity's plan was to take this time period and eliminate as many of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's minions as they could. With each saint Empyrean they killed, humanity would be that much safer in the future.

In the meeting, the human rulers nominated Lin Ming to be the leader of humanity. While Divine Dream wasn't present, he would be given full command of all war powers.

However, Lin Ming refused this idea.

Lin Ming's response caused Empyrean Vast Universe's eyes to pop open. "Boy, don't decline this now. In the human race, your prestige has already reached the peak, even surpassing Divine Dream. If you don't do this, who will?"

However, Lin Ming still shook his head. "I thank all the seniors here for the honor, but leading the troops to war is something that truly doesn't suit me. In truth, there are many matters I have to attend to, and although I can lead the human armies back to the Divine Realm, even if we retake the Divine Realm that doesn't meant that we have defeated the saints in the war. If the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign doesn't die, the battle will never end. Moreover, our enemies might not be just the saints..."

As Lin Ming said this, the various human rulers were startled. “Could the reason the spiritas have been standing idly by for all these years be because they intend on sweeping in at the end?”

In the eyes of those present, the spiritas were a mysterious race on par with the saints. If what Lin Ming said was true, this was bad news!

Lin Ming shook his head. “I’m not sure of the exact details. I shall speak frankly. No matter how magnificent the successes of our human armies in the battlefield, the truth is that this will not shake the foundation of the saints. The Good Fortune Saint Son and the other four saint generals didn’t know that I possessed the ability to control Famine, allowing me to catch them off guard and wipe out the Good Fortune Legion and Legion of Famine. Although this might seem like a wondrous feat, it actually isn’t anything at all! If we truly wish to face the saints and spiritas, there is only a single possibility and that is that amongst humanity there appears a character who can compete with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and Soul Emperor!”

As Lin Ming spoke these words, everyone fell silent.

Lin Ming wasn’t wrong, and the human rulers present also understood this in their heart. However, in their subconscious, they found themselves unwilling to face the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

To develop a plan to retake the Divine Realm seemed ambitious and brave, but the truth was that as long as they couldn't resolve the problem that was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, everything they did was mere illusions.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was simply far too powerful. Without noticing it, the human powerhouses had already lost the courage to face him, and they didn't even want to think about it.

Emperor Shakya thought for a moment. "Lin Ming, what you say is right. But we still must return to the Divine Realm. As for leading the troops, leave that to us. You go and handle your matters. But we will still name you as the leader. Just your name alone is the source of our morale!"

"Great!" Lin Ming agreed.

Like this, this meeting of the highest level came to an end.

Lin Ming took on the mantle as spiritual leader of humanity. In the absence of Divine Dream, he possessed the highest authority, whether it was in name or reality. However, the ones truly responsible for the war and the ones that would control military authority would be Emperor Shakya, Dark Demon Monarch, and Skyrend Godlord. With them at the head, they would add in a few other highly influential and powerful Empyreans to compose a supreme military council.

“Everyone, I will leave the war plans to retake the Divine Realm to you. There are matters that I must finish first.”

“As for the battle in retaking the Divine Realm, I won’t participate in that either. However, I will leave behind the Legion of Famine and the Good Fortune Saint Palace…”

When Lin Ming said this, Emperor Shakya was stunned. “Lin Ming, there are more important things you must do?”

“Mm, I want to confirm some suspicion I have, but before then I must obtain more strength. In these upcoming days, I plan on breaking into the Empyrean realm!” Lin Ming slowly said.

The Supreme phantom in his inner world had already taken shape. In truth, when he refined Soaring Feather’s life blood essence, he had already gained the ability to break through. The reason he waited until now was so that he could absorb Famine’s flesh and blood essence!

With the power of demons in Famine’s avatar, he could make up for the lack of the power of demons in his body, allowing the power of divinity and power of demons to enter equilibrium. With this, once Lin Ming broke into the Empyrean realm, his strength would experience a qualitative change.

“You want to break into the Empyrean realm!?”

Hearing Lin Ming's plan, Emperor Shakya, Vast Universe, Dark Demon Monarch, and the others were all dazed.

As for the many human rulers present, many of them had just arrived at the Hidden Dragon Galaxy and didn't know what Lin Ming's exact cultivation was.

The Laws that Lin Ming cultivated were far too mysterious. The road he walked diverged too greatly from the traditional cultivation system that humans followed, so most people couldn't see his boundary. They simply assumed he had already broken in the Empyrean realm.

But as they heard that Lin Ming had yet to break into the Empyrean realm, they were all left dumbfounded. Without having reached the Empyrean realm he had still managed to eliminate the Good Fortune Saint Son and destroy the Good Fortune Legion; just how had he accomplished this? If he truly broke into the Empyrean realm, what would happen then?

"That's amazing!" Empyrean Vast Universe laughed. "Once you break into the Empyrean realm, humanity simply need not fear the saints!"

Lin Ming smiled, "In order to break into the Empyrean realm I might need to go into seclusion for several months. During this time, Soaring Feather God King might catch up to us. If she does arrive, take Fairy Blue Lotus as a hostage. I don't think she will ignore the life of her most beloved disciple just because she has a relationship of benefits with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign."

The reason Lin Ming had allowed Fairy Blue Lotus, Highsun, and Darkmoon to live was because he needed a card in his hand. Now was the time to use that card. At any time, he could draw out the flesh and blood of Famine from their bodies and restore their free will.

MW Chapter 2052

Chapter 2052 – True Divinities Gather

…

…

…

Within the Hidden Dragon Galaxy, in a separate starry space isolated out by an array formation. Lin Ming sat within the flesh and blood of Famine, his eyes closed in meditation.

At this moment, Lin Ming had already completely refined this avatar of Famine. It was simply far too large and even if Lin Ming had already refined it, wanting to easily control every part of its body required a long period of adaptation.

This was all because Lin Ming's soul force was formidable and he also possessed Famine's soul. As for someone like the Good Fortune Saint Son, he had controlled Famine using the spirit mark that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign left behind. In the Good Fortune Saint Son's clumsy hands, this avatar that possessed a middle True Divinity level strength, could only display abilities that made it invincible at the Empyrean realm.

When Lin Ming swam in the flesh and blood of Famine and completely controlled this True Divinity level avatar, it was only then that he could feel how terrifying it was. From appearance, it seemed to be a massive ball of flesh and blood. But the truth was that it was filled with an incomparably mystical strength and incredibly complex Laws, as if there was a bizarre and strange demonic world within.

This world was filled with bloodthirst and rage. Every wisp of blood soared into the skies, filled with 10,000 phantoms that wailed and cried.

But at the same time, this world was overflowing with spiritual matter. It was flooded with divine chains composed of infinite Law runes, vast and boundless.

The source of some of these Laws originated from Famine itself, but the majority of them had been swallowed up. The ever-changing Laws formed this macabre yet magnificent scene before him.

As Lin Ming wandered through this sea of Laws, he continued to look and search, his divine sense rapidly passing over thousands of Law chains. He didn’t bother with Empyrean level Laws, instead he was searching for something in particular.

Even though Lin Ming’s divine sense was powerful, Famine had simply swallowed far too many Laws in the billions of years of its life. He had to withdraw his mental strength several times before finally finding an unusual divine chain in this endlessly mystical world.

This divine chain spanned across the skies, seeming to be sprinkled with endless starlight. It shined with a myriad of colors. It was as beautiful as a dream.

The moment Lin Ming saw this divine chain, his mind shook. His eyes began to shimmer with excitement.

He could feel his blood vitality being drawn toward this divine chain's alluring strength. His heart began to race and the blood within his body quickened. Within his spine, between his eyebrows, in his heart, and all throughout his body in a total of nine spots, he began to feel a burning heat. He faintly sensed something wonderful, as if he were resonating with this divine chain.

"This is it!"

Lin Ming's breath paused for a brief moment. This divine chain was the causal link between humanity and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace Heavenly Dao Law that Famine had swallowed, and then condensed into a chain of the highest Laws of the 33 Heavens!

If he could cut this off and refine it, what would happen then?

This divine chain wasn't complete, and only contained a small portion of the samsara of cause and effect that linked the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and humanity together. The vast majority was undoubtedly located in Famine's true body, underneath the control of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

Only when he obtained the main body of Famine would Lin Ming be able to truly liberate the causal link that connected humanity with their lost Heavenly Dao. This would be equal to doing a great deed for the entire human race.

3,6 billion years ago, the ancient era's Saint Sovereign had cut off one of humanity's arms. Now, Lin Ming would take it back!

Lin Ming even suspected that the destiny of the primal god race and celestials might be sealed within Famine's body.

Why would the ancient races decline, why would the primal god race find it difficult to reproduce, all of this might be connected to the abyssal demons.

Lin Ming sat down beneath the divine chain. He didn't immediately sever it. After all, this was something that involved the highest existences of the Heavenly Dao and might trigger a heavenly tribulation.

With Lin Ming's current strength, wanting to shake Laws of this level was a bit beyond him.

So, he planned to first break into the Empyrean realm!

By this point in time, Lin Ming had more than enough accumulations. He had used almost 7,000 years to cultivate through multiple reincarnations, slowly firming his foundation. Now, he was ready to take the next step!

Slowly, Lin Ming entered the fused martial intent state, becoming like a statue. As he sensed the demonic power emanating from Famine's avatar, he also quickened the divine spiritual power in his inner world. Within his mind, countless deductions took place as he slowly forgot the passing of time.

The highest Laws within existence were in these two strengths. If he could fuse the power of divinity and demons together, forming a yin yang balance and achieving harmony, there would be inconceivable effects that followed.

But this was also extremely dangerous. In order to have two extreme forces achieve harmonious integration, there were billions of ways the balance could be lost. Once Lin Ming lost control of the process, he could even fall into obsession.

If anyone else were to try this, it would be the same as suicide.

Even for Lin Ming, he had to be cautious.

The flesh and blood of Famine melted into beams of energy that poured into Lin Ming's body. He began to breathe blood vitality.

The demonic power in this flesh and blood dissolved into threads of blood red Laws that rushed toward Lin Ming's divine soul.

Lin Ming stood still. His eyes were slowly infected with red, as if he were soaking in a blood pond of hell.

He didn't hurry to refine this power of demons. Rather, he spurred on the power of divinity within his body, allowing it to resonate with the power of demons within him.

The so-called power of divinity was actually a fusion of astral essence, true essence, and spirit essence.

Whether it was the power of divinity or the power of demons, in the end they were merely forms of energy.

Energy and Laws were two different things.

The amount of energy that one possessed was the symbol that represented their strength. It could nearly be equated with their cultivation rank.

But comprehension of Laws represented the rate at which a martial artist could utilize this energy. The higher the Laws one comprehended, the greater their combat strength would be amongst those of the same rank.

The quality of energy was divided into ranks and Laws were also the same.

Now, Lin Ming's Laws nearly stood at the peak of martial arts. His fusion of the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra was something that had never occurred, from ancient times until now!

In terms of energy, he wanted to fuse together the power of divinity and demons, stepping onto a path no one had ever traveled...

Slowly, more and more demon power gathered within Lin Ming. He began to recklessly absorb and refine it.

Great Dao Laws drilled out without end, drawing in the power of Famine's avatar into Lin Ming.

All of this power was the essence of Famine's strength, and every wisp was extremely precious.

As Lin Ming swallowed more and more of this strength, his body slowly turned blood red. Every pore on his body exuded demonic energy, as if he were transpiring blood.

This strength was far too powerful. Even for Lin Ming who possessed a nearly indestructible body, the attack of this strength nearly burst him apart.

Underneath this wild impact, Lin Ming's skin and flesh began to peel away in fragments. But as his skin and flesh peeled away, the life essence within them turned into a red flow of energy that was reabsorbed into Lin Ming's body. Finally, all that was shed was old skin.

This situation continued without end. One day, two days… a month, two months…

Lin Ming had no idea how long this period of seclusion would continue on for. The power of demons contained within Famine was far too formidable. If he wanted to absorb it all and also achieve yin yang harmony within his body, this would be a long process and there couldn't be a single accident that occurred in the meantime.

This period of time was long enough for many matters to occur!

Soaring Feather arrived.

And she arrived abruptly.

In fact, ever since Lin Ming went into seclusion, the human leaders within the Hidden Dragon Galaxy were all waiting for Soaring Feather to appear. After all, as the gathering point for all human influences in the wild universe, they were in a semi-open space within the Hidden Dragon Galaxy.

In addition, Fairy Blue Lotus had been held by them for several months. It would instead be strange if Soaring Feather didn't come.

However, they didn't think that not only would Soaring Feather come, but Astral Vault God King would follow her here. His figure was as great as an iron tower and his entire body seemed to be formed from metal. He didn't have a single hair on his body. He didn't even have hair or eyelashes and his head shined like translucent crystal.

In normal times, Astral Vault God King's body would shimmer with a glorious light that emitted a powerful pressure. But now, this light had weakened a great deal, indicating that Astral Vault God King had consumed a great deal of energy.

He had strained himself in his battle with Divine Dream.

Two True Divinities had gathered!

As Emperor Shakya, Dark Demon Monarch, Skyrend Godlord, and the many other human Empyreans simultaneously faced these two legendary existences of the saint race, their hearts shrank and their complexions turned ugly.

Facing these two people, the strength they had gathered at the Hidden Dragon Galaxy wasn’t worthy of mention at all.

But as humanity was in a tense state, the distant skies twisted once more.

A woman in a pale blue dress walked out. She held an ice blue divine sword in her right hand and a sea blue band was wrapped around her left, like a goddess who had stepped out of the highest nine heavens.

Seeing this woman, Emperor Shakya let out a breath of relief.

Divine Dream!

Divine Dream had also arrived. With the saints and humans combined, three True Divinities had gathered!

MW Chapter 2053

Chapter 2053 - Threaten

…

…

…

Seeing Divine Dream appear, a cold light flashed in Soaring Feather’s eyes.

If it weren’t for Divine Dream, it wouldn’t have been such a long time before she was able to return to this wild universe.

The 33 Heavens were simply far too broad. No matter how fast a True Divinity was, it was impossible for them to travel through an entire universe by flying.

If they wished to travel through a universe, they had to use great void shifts.

But using great void shifts required time, and not just that but it couldn’t be interrupted midway. For someone in the midst of battle it was a nearly impossible feat to complete.

Although Divine Dream couldn’t harm Soaring Feather, just harassing her so that she couldn’t use a great void shift wasn’t difficult.

It was only afterwards that Soaring Feather God King helped Astral Vault God King in ridding himself of the shackles of the divine dream space. Then with Astral Vault God King delaying her, she had been able to withdraw and use the great void shift to travel through space.

Divine Dream certainly wouldn’t allow Soaring Feather to return to the wild universe so easily. She had already locked onto Soaring Feather and like this, a grand chase began. During the process they exchanged moves several times.

With Astral Vault God King butting his way in, the three True Divinities blocked each other. It was only after several months that they just managed to return to the wild universe.

Because of this, whether it was Soaring Feather, Divine Dream, or Astral Vault, all of them had consumed a great deal of energy.

At this time, their appearance in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy had caused the situation to become complex.

As Soaring Feather God King saw Emperor Shakya and the others, her face darkened. When she entered the wild universe and was flying towards this area, she quickly contacted the intelligence networks of the saints to find out whatever information there was, and she discovered that the humans had started to gather in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy. However, she didn't think this gathering would be so thorough. As she roughly passed her sense over the area, she noticed there were dozens of human Empyreans in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy and nearly all of the several peak Empyreans were here.

"Divine Dream, you chased me for such a long time, from that nameless universe all the way to this wild universe and now you've finally caught up to me. Are you in such a hurry to fight me? Then, let's do it here!"

As Soaring Feather God King spoke, feathers drifted down from the endless skies, forming an invisible force field that rapidly expanded outwards.

This force field formed incredibly quickly. It almost instantly covered the surrounding million miles of the star territory, completely shrouding the human alliance!

With this True Divinity force field here, it would be difficult for humanity to break out. And once three True Divinities started to fight in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy it would be catastrophic for the humans gathered here!

At this time, Soaring Feather's expressionless face was filled with cold killing intent!

“Hahaha! Wonderful idea! We’ve been playing around all this time and today we should finally get serious! Even if I have to consume a little of my life it doesn’t matter; perhaps I might even be able to gain some comprehensions in this fight!”

Astral Vault God King laughed and pure golden astral essence gushed out from his body, burning all around him like a blazing golden flame. As he struggled with Divine Dream he had spent most of the time trapped in the divine dream space. From start to finish he had never truly fought her, causing Astral Vault God King to be extremely annoyed and angry. Now, he wanted to vent his frustrations!

Astral Vault and Soaring Feather’s response caused Divine Dream to frown. After she entered the wild universe, it became much easier to transmit news and she had already received a sound transmission from Emperor Shakya that informed her of Lin Ming’s return. She had been overjoyed to learn this but she didn’t think the situation would devolve to this step.

If they really did fight here then the consequences would be inconceivable.

“Where is Lin Ming? Call him out!”

Soaring Feather God King’s voice seemed to come from the nine nether abyss. Her incarnation had been defeated by Lin Ming and then refined by him!

As for her most beloved disciple Fairy Blue Lotus, she had no idea whether she was alive or not.

When she first learned Lin Ming was still alive, Soaring Feather God King was unbelievably shocked. She had killed Lin Ming thousands of years ago!

But reality had been laid before her. Soaring Feather carefully recalled her memories of killing Lin Ming, and she came to an incomparably startling result, one that even left her feeling a bit fearful. That was that some mysterious person had used an unbelievable technique and illusion skills far more profound than her own to deceive her!

The one she actually killed might have been a scapegoat who looked similar to Lin Ming, but at the time she had sincerely believed that she had killed him. Just who had the ability to do this?

Without a doubt, this mysterious person was far stronger than she was. And according to the techniques this person used, they must be a peerless master in terms of the soul and mental strength. Once she realized this, the person's identity became far too apparent.

When it came to the soul and mental strength, no one could compare with the spiritas. And although the spiritas had several True Divinities, including even Soul Emperor Divine Void in the Asura Road, none of these people possessed the ability to fool her. If she disregarded those powerhouses that were hidden away and no one knew if they actually existed or not, and she also disregarded the rumored old monsters that were said to still exist from 10 billion years ago…

Then this mysterious person could only be the 33 Heavens' Soul Emperor!

Soaring Feather didn't know why the Soul Emperor would help Lin Ming. Could he be planning to cultivate Lin Ming so that he could be an enemy of the saints?

To sit on the mountaintop and watch tigers fight – this was a reasonable explanation. However, to raise a fierce tiger just so he could send it out to fight, didn't the Soul Emperor fear that his actions would bring disaster unto himself?

All sorts of doubts passed through Soaring Feather's mind, but right now she couldn't think of all of this.

This time she had come to capture Lin Ming and settle the account of her incarnation being destroyed as well as the unknown fate of her disciple.

If Lin Ming wouldn't come out then she would wash the Hidden Dragon Galaxy in blood!

Shua –

At this time, another divine light came shrouding down. A thin force field emerged from Empyrean Divine Dream's body, covering the Hidden Dragon Galax. But, the scope of this force field was smaller and merely covered humanity's spirit ships; this was equal to isolating Soaring Feather from humanity.

Seeing this, Astral Vault God King sneered. "Divine Dream, do you think that this alone is enough to block me? Destroying is always easier than protecting, and we have two people!"

Astral Vault crossed his arms against his chest and his voice began to drip with murder. "There are also my two disciples. I want to find out what happened to them!"

With two God Kings aggressively approaching, the situation had spiraled out of control. It seemed that a battle would be sparked at any moment!

At this time, Emperor Shakya stepped forwards. "Two God Kings, do you both believe that Blue Lotus, Highsun, and Darkmoon slaughtering humans is just and fine, that the countless trillions of human lives should be their military exploits, and our bones should be used to pave the road to True Divinity for those three people? And once we resist and harm your disciples, we should be damned to destruction by the heavens and earth?"

Soaring Feather didn't respond to Emperor Shakya's words.

With a blank face, she said, "There is no right or wrong in war, only others killing others. If Blue Lotus kills your people then you are perfectly justified in killing her. And if you've killed Blue Lotus, then it is simply cause and effect that I kill you in return!"

"Indeed, there is no wrong party in war. Since ancient times the winner has always been king and the loser always the villain! Then, let me tell you something, regardless of whether it is Blue Lotus, Highsun, or Darkmoon, none of them have died. They are still alive."

With this information, Soaring Feather felt her heart tighten. She let out a long breath; Blue Lotus was still alive!

However, the icy expression on her face didn't melt away. "Then have her come out."

Soaring Feather God King said with a determined voice. However, Emperor Shakya flatly refused. "I'm sorry but this is impossible. Otherwise, once you forcefully take Blue Lotus away you could then turn around and kill us all. How could we believe you?"

"Are you threatening me?" Soaring Feather God King slowly descended, her clothes fluttering all around her. Her terrifying pressure slowly seeped through Divine Dream's force field and covered Emperor Shakya.

Emperor Shakya frowned. He summoned energy to resist the pressure and proudly said, "We are far from being able to threaten you. However, Lin Ming was the one who captured your apprentice and releasing her is something that only he can decide."

"Where is he?"

Astral Vault God King asked. After he returned to the wild universe he had still continued fighting with Divine Dream so he had only hurriedly received information. He approximately understood that Lin Ming had appeared and that he had created a reversal in the war.

He wanted to see just what this legendary super genius was like, the person said to be the number one talent in the 33 Heavens and also the youth who managed to somehow escape Soaring Feather's chase in the past!

“Lin Ming, he is in seclusion.”

“Seclusion?”

“Yes. He is breaking through to the Empyrean realm!” Emperor Shakya didn't hide anything. “We have taken into account the possibility the saints might worry that once Lin Ming breaks into the Empyrean realm, his strength will reach the level of True Divinities and the two of you will not be his match. So, you might try to eliminate Lin Ming ahead of time to remove any future troubles. Because of this I can only keep your disciples as guests so that you two will quietly wait here for a few days.”

Emperor Shakya slowly said. Then, Astral Vault God King began to laugh. “What did you say? After breaking through to the Empyrean realm his strength will rise above True Divinities and I won't be his match? That's too funny!”

Astral Vault God King mocked.

The disparity between a True Divinity and Empyrean was far too great. This wasn't something that originated from just the difference in cultivation but also the difference in talent.

There was no True Divinity who wasn't a peerless genius. Long before Astral Vault God King stepped into the Empyrean realm, he had been able to battle peak Empyreans without being defeated. But afterwards, let alone at the Empyrean realm, even after reaching the True Divinity realm Astral Vault King couldn't say that he could be a match for those existences who had already been True Divinities for a long time. It could even be said that he was relatively weak amongst True Divinities.

Of these True Divinities, when they were at the Empyrean realm, just which ones had an inferior talent to Astral Vault? They had similar levels of talent and cultivation, so who could say they could jump ranks to fight?

But in comparison to Astral Vault God King's mocking words, Soaring Feather was much more considerate.

She thought for a moment and then said, "You have no need to try provoking me. It is useless. Lin Ming must be in seclusion within the Hidden Dragon Galaxy!"

Emperor Shakya didn’t reply. Lin Ming had indeed gone into seclusion in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy. Before, Emperor Shakya had urged Lin Ming to search for some hiding place so that it would be more difficult for Soaring Feather to find him. This was to prevent Soaring Feather from experiencing a stroke of rage and disregarding Blue Lotus’s life to strike out at Lin Ming.

However, Lin Ming didn’t do this. He was the one who called the human forces here, so how could he abandon them as soon as they arrived, using them as his shield?

Moreover, Lin Ming believed that Soaring Feather wouldn’t be rash in her actions. There were all sorts of reasons involved in this…

MW Chapter 2054

Chapter 2054 – God Kings Withdraw

…

…

…

“It doesn’t matter if you answer or not, I know that he is here. It seems he lacks fear!”

Soaring Feather coldly said. Her words contained a hint of anger. She felt that Lin Ming choosing to go into seclusion in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy and also using Fairy Blue Lotus as a hostage was a provocation against her authority!

But before making such a provocation, Lin Ming had carefully considered the situation before coming to this decision.

Firstly, it was impossible for Lin Ming to abandon the human armies that he had just gathered.

Secondly, if Soaring Feather wanted to choose this time to attack Lin Ming, she would have to weigh the matter and decide if it was worth it!

Once Soaring Feather attacked, Fairy Blue Lotus would immediately be killed. Losing her most beloved disciple that she had placed all her painstaking effort and care into was one matter, but the key issue was... could Soaring Feather confidently said that she could certainly kill Lin Ming?

Over 6000 years ago, Lin Ming had only been a Holy Lord with strength not worth mentioning. Soaring Feather had been a God King and she had even planted a True Divinity mark in his body, chasing him through several great worlds to hunt him down. But in the end, she had failed.

She analyzed this matter later and came to the possible conclusion that it was the Soul Emperor who had deceived her, but no matter what, it was a great blow to her confidence.

Even the chase where she was absolutely sure she had killed Lin Ming had failed. Now, could she guarantee that this attempt would be successful?

The present Lin Ming was soon about to become an Empyrean. And before becoming an Empyrean he had created miracle after miracle, even reversing the war between humanity and the saints. He was not a character who could be easily dealt with.

If Soaring Feather were to start a battle in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy, then annihilating the human fleet and killing 20-30 Empyreans wouldn't be too difficult.

But to kill Lin Ming, that was a completely different matter.

Lin Ming had a great destiny upon his body that made him especially difficult to deal with. Moreover, he also had Divine Dream protecting him from the side. In a crucial moment, Soaring Feather didn't doubt that Divine Dream would rather sacrifice dozens of human Empyreans to ensure Lin Ming's survival. To Divine Dream, this wouldn't be difficult.

Without killing Lin Ming and instead delaying his breakthrough, this was the same as completely and utterly offending him; it would cause serious consequences.

A peerless monstrous genius like Lin Ming would have inconceivable future achievements. Even though Astral Vault God King didn't believe that Lin Ming could fight him after he broke into the Empyrean realm, he couldn't help but acknowledge that it wouldn't be long before Lin Ming surpassed him.

Once Lin Ming grew up, he would surely search for Soaring Feather and Astral Vault to clear out this hatred. At that time, the result of what happened would be difficult to predict.

To kill off the human elites here wasn't something that humanity could withstand.

But if they failed to kill Lin Ming, wouldn’t they also be unable to withstand the consequences?

In the end, the only reason they were assisting the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was because of a combination of interests. They weren’t to the point of having some undying grudge against Lin Ming.

Lin Ming had already calculated that they wouldn’t attack, thus his lack of fear.

To be caught in a crux by a junior like this didn’t have Soaring Feather feeling well, but on the other side, Lin Ming didn’t kill Blue Lotus nor did he kill Highsun and Darkmoon. He had left them all a way out of this situation as he also didn’t want to truly offend Soaring Feather and Astral Vault.

Lin Ming didn’t want to make these two his enemies, so he left a road to a peaceful solution that they could all take.

If so, then these two God Kings also had to mull over whether or not they wanted to continue being enemies with Lin Ming.

Soaring Feather fell silent. She had already imperiously rushed here with intent to kill, so retreating wasn’t something that could be easily justified. Moreover, she hadn’t seen Fairy Blue Lotus yet.

"You, the one called Emperor Shakya!"

Soaring Feather stared at Emperor Shakya without expression, also a bit startled by him. Emperor Shakya had already withstood her pressure for a considerable time. Although her pressure was weakened by Divine Dream's force field, it was amazing that he could still calmly speak to her.

"Yes!" Emperor Shakya said, his tone neither arrogant nor servile.

"Good! Since Lin Ming dares to break into the Empyrean realm in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy and openly and honestly wait for me to arrive, why should I fear waiting a few more months until his seclusion is over?

"I will wait until Lin Ming breaks into the Empyrean realm and then come look for him again!"

As Soaring Feather spoke, she removed her force field blockade.

Seeing the feathers fade away, Emperor Shakya let out a sigh of relief. Although he appeared calm and collected, the truth was that his nerves had been extremely taut!

If the things Lin Ming left behind were unable to deter Soaring Feather and she fought here then the consequences would be unthinkable.

This was a loss that humanity would absolutely be unable to withstand.

"Soaring Feather, you're drawing back like this?"

Astral Vault God King didn't expect that the arrogant Soaring Feather would rush here from another universe in such anger and yet unexpectedly give up.

"I have already confirmed Blue Lotus is safe, so what do you want? Do you really plan on washing the Hidden Dragon Galaxy in blood?" Soaring Feather God King asked with a sound transmission, an eyebrow lifted.

But Astral Vault God King seemed to detect an unusual meaning in Soaring Feather's words.

"Soaring Feather, just what are you trying to say? Are you planning to slowly fade out from this war between races?"

"I never said that." Soaring Feather shook her head. "It's just that the current situation is different from before. You should also understand what is occurring. This war between the saints and humanity is not to help the saint race further expand their territory, and if I must be blunt, this great war between races is not fought for the saints, but for that person and his desire to realize his ambitions. The only reasons that we participated in this war were because we do not wish to offend him and because the conditions he put out were indeed tempting.

"But what if there was a change in this war? What if the future outcome of this war is different from what we expected?"

Soaring Feather asked in return, leaving Astral Vault stunned. It was several breaths of time before he responded to what Soaring Feather referred to. This wasn't because he was slow but because he didn't think she would have such ideas.

"How could that possibly occur? Do you think Lin Ming alone has the strength to turn the tide? Do you really think so highly of a junior? Do you think that Good Fortune won't be able to deal with him?"

Astral Vault looked towards Soaring Feather with incredulity thick on his face. He had personally experienced just how profoundly terrifying the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was.

In his eyes, Lin Ming was indeed talented. However, when the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was young, everyone also believed that he was omnipotent. Astral Vault God King didn't believe that a junior like Lin Ming could do anything to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign; the disparity was simply too great.

“This is to prepare for a rainy day. Having one more plan means we have one more contingency escape route.”

“You are being too cautious! Us two God Kings rushed all the way here in such a hurry and yet we are supposed to be threatened and pushed away by a mere junior who hasn’t even broken into the Empyrean realm yet? We haven’t even seen his face. If this were to spread out then we would be the laughing stock of the world!”

Astral Vault said, a bit breathless with rage.

Soaring Feather was silent. She had to admit that what Astral Vault said was not without reason. At the very least, her actions seemed overly sensitive from an outsider’s perspective, and everyone would ridicule them.

But she would rather seem overly sensitive than provoke a terrifying future enemy for benefits that she hadn’t yet obtained.

Soaring Feather said, “If you insist on fighting then I won’t stop you.”

“How can I fight alone?!” Astral Vault uttered, speechless. Once Soaring Feather withdrew, there simply wasn’t any chaos he could stir up.

Not to mention Lin Ming, just Empyrean Divine Dream was more than he could handle. Without Soaring Feather here to help him, Divine Dream simply had to use the divine dream space to give him a headache. And if Divine Dream were to attack with her full power then he might head in the wrong direction in the illusion and be struck with massive meteors from all sides. Compared to being forced to retreat by Lin Ming, that would be a hundred times more humiliating.

“Forget it. Anyways, when the two of us decide something, it's always you making the decisions. But when it comes to Lin Ming, I only have this to say. Because you failed to kill Lin Ming over 6000 years ago, your confidence was attacked and now your actions are so timid when they concern him.

“Don’t forget, when you chased down Lin Ming in the past it was a terrifying character that you suspect to be the Soul Emperor who was meddling from the side; it had nothing to do with Lin Ming himself. I, Astral Vault, have lived for so many years but this is the first time I have been pushed back by a junior who is in seclusion, this is simply far too humiliating!”

Astral Vault was already furious as he spoke to here. “If you want to wait for Lin Ming to break into the Empyrean realm then let’s continue waiting. At that time, I want to see just what he can do after becoming an Empyrean!”

The conversation between Astral Vault and Soaring Feather was carried out through sound transmission. A moment after he finished speaking, he turned and flew away, instantly hiding in the dark nebula.

Then, Soaring Feather quietly glanced at Divine Dream. With a gentle wave of her sleeve her body turned into rainbow-hued feathers that disappeared in a swirl.

It was only when the two God Kings vanished that Emperor Shakya was able to let out a long breath of relief. His taut nerves slowly relaxed.

“Senior Divine Dream!” Emperor Shakya looked towards Divine Dream. With his age, it was correct for him to refer to her as a senior.

“Return to the Heavenly Palace before discussing anything further!” Divine Dream simply said. Her figure flashed and she flew rapidly towards Mount Potala Heavenly Palace.

MW Chapter 2055

Chapter 2055 – I, Empyrean

…

…

…

At this time, Lin Ming was still within Famine’s body, completely unaware of everything occurring outside.

He had already forgotten the passing of time, forgotten himself, forgotten all.

He had used a full three months to extract the power of demons from the flesh and blood essence of Famine, constantly absorbing and digesting it.

Like this, his mortal body turned blood red as it was baptized in waves of energy.

The power of divinity and demons had condensed above Lin Ming's head, forming a primal chaos yin yang diagram. It shined with brilliance, making it seem as if a terrifying divine god were being bred within him.

And behind Lin Ming, a giant black phantom appeared.

This black phantom had a solemn and majestic face, seeming as if it dominated all of creation. Looking carefully, one could find the shadow of Lin Ming in the face of this phantom.

This was the projection of the Supreme from Lin Ming's inner world. It was so massive that it stood as high as the heavens, the slightest movement of its body able to stir seas and shake mountains!

"Open!"

Lin Ming's eyes flashed open. Beams of divine light radiated outwards from between his eyebrows, shooting into the horizon.

And at this moment, within his chaotic inner world, a crack appeared as it was assaulted beneath enormous impacts.

In that split second, Lin Ming guided the boundless power of divinity and demons to wildly flush into his inner world.

The power of divinity and demons within Lin Ming's body had been compressed to the extreme. Once this compressed power erupted, it could easily shatter planets. But Lin Ming relied on his incredibly powerful mortal body and the transcendent Great Dao Laws he controlled to forcefully imprison this power within his body so that it wouldn't leak out.

It was like he was continuously compressing his own strength, and once it reached the limit he had all of it rush into his body in a single breath. In that moment, it was like millions of seas crashing down, breaking through a dam and surging in. Divine waves soared to the heavens and space itself was destroyed.

When these energies broke into Lin Ming's inner world, they had an even broader stage to spread. The power of divinity and demons recklessly proliferated outwards, forming a yin yang image as each side began to strike at the other!

This strength was able to wash away rivers of stars. With Lin Ming's inner world as a battlefield, once a yin yang storm evolved, even he would find it difficult to withstand.

Lin Ming's thoughts focused. The giant Supreme phantom in his inner world suddenly appeared in the center of these two forces.

The strength of Laws within Lin Ming's inner world was completely condensed in the Supreme phantom. At the same time, the gray Magic Cube spun about, suppressing all.

The revolving Magic Cube in his inner world seemed capable of rolling over all Laws, incomparably heavy, as if a great world had come smashing down.

Underneath Lin Ming's efforts, an incredibly delicate node appeared in his inner world. It wove together Law dao patterns, endlessly shaking the void as it separated the power of divinity and demons.

Then these two strengths took Lin Ming's Supreme as the core, with a little bit overflowing and mixing together.

Time passed. As the suppression continued, strands of the power of demons slowly fused with the power of divinity.

This strength was all absorbed by Lin Ming's Supreme. Gradually, the Supreme stepped more and more into reality!

At the start the majestic face of this Supreme only had the blurry shadow of Lin Ming's appearance. But then, this face seemed more and more like a true person. Black armor appeared on this Supreme, its eyes became brighter, and black hair started flowing down its head.

It resembled Lin Ming more and more. Finally, it seemed to become a giant incarnation of Lin Ming.

Its facial features, its proportions, its appearance, everything was similar to Lin Ming. However, its temperament was highly different.

Lin Ming was a human. Although he was oftentimes a serious and stoic individual, he possessed feelings.

But this Supreme phantom had no feelings at all. It seemed to consider all living beings insignificant, a true cold and merciless god of the world!

As the Supreme fully manifested, Lin Ming's inner world suddenly began to collapse. The power of divinity and demons mixed together and invisible Laws spread outwards.

The collapse widened. Lin Ming's inner world became increasingly chaotic.

This was also what Lin Ming needed.

This was the so-called breaking down all and then reforming from the beginning.

The yin yang of the universe was the same as the power of divinity and demons. Although they opposed each other, the truth was that before the big bang of the universe, these two forces had been completely fused together. The interactions between yin and yang combined into this complex and wonderful world.

This was what ancients meant when they said one gave birth to two, two gave birth to three, and three gave birth to all living things.

Of this, ‘two’ represented yin and yang.

‘Three’ represented the additional ‘force’ that came from fusing yin and yang.

What Lin Ming wanted to do now was imitate the big bang of the universe, to break apart the instinctual shackles of the Laws and create a miracle of his own.

This was a decision that originated from Lin Ming’s extremely profound understanding of the Heavenly Dao. Although it seemed dangerous, it was in fact the right decision.

Like an ancient universe being annihilated, Lin Ming’s inner world also began collapse.

The most fundamental Law marks scattered through this chaotic world like sparkling stars.

More and more marks appeared. Some were dark like black holes, some were light like shining great suns.

Finally, when the last bits of the power of divinity and demons crashed into each other and dispersed outwards, Lin Ming's inner world finally completely collapsed, turning into an incomparably vast grandmist chaos.

It resembled the mist from the moments when a universe was being born.

In that infinite mist, only those dark and light Law marks continued to shine.

Gradually, massive tracts of those dark marks began to mix with those light marks like yin and yang, forming a wonderful harmonic equilibrium.

In that moment, an incomparably great power of rules surged outwards.

The chaos within this inner world began to return to clear brightness. Continuous mountain ranges of Laws formed and great waves rose up on endless seas. The power of the metal, wood, water, fire, and earth mixed together in harmony, creating world-shaking changes.

In this instant, Lin Ming spread out his arms in the void. The surrounding essence energy of the world began flowing towards him.

His eyes opened and light flashed out from his pupils. Brilliant light shone on his face. He opened his mouth and yawned, his breath like white clouds in the shape of dragons, soaring into the distance. He reared back his head and let out a long cry, his voice echoing into eternity like an endless thunderclap.

At this time, the towering Supreme had formed an incomparably huge body. Its eyes hung high like the sun and moon, shining down upon the world. It emitted a terrifying aura as if it carried the heavens on its shoulders.

This world seemed to tremble. Beneath Lin Ming's dazzling figure, everything seemed to be shrouded in darkness. It was like all of creation was submitting to him, and being king of this world was only his background.

This was because at this moment he was the supreme ruler of this universe – an Empyrean!

Lin Ming had finally stepped into the true Empyrean realm!

The moment Lin Ming became an Empyrean, the enchantment he arranged around himself was broken apart. For a time, the beautiful sounds of the Great Dao sounded out into the skies!

A terrifying divine light washed through the dark nebula, shining upon the human fleet.

Everyone, whether they were inside their spirit ships or not, saw this marvelous spectacle. It was like their spirit ships had been penetrated by this divine light, becoming completely transparent.

They all saw that massive Supreme phantom standing within the world, on par with the heavens!

“Could this be…?”

“This is the phenomenon of Lin Ming breaking into the Empyrean realm?”

As the Empyreans of Mount Potala Heavenly Palace saw this phenomenon, all of them flew out from the Heavenly Palace!

The scene of Lin Ming breaking into the Empyrean realm was simply earthshaking. It was at least 10 times or a hundred times greater than any one of them!

Besides the Empyreans, the World Kings, Holy Lords, and other martial artists of the Nine Divine Shifts were struck by this phenomenon. They all hurried out of their spirit ships in droves.

These people only saw endless world origin energy gather, forming a giant yin yang vortex.

And in the center of this vortex was clearly the shadow of a person. His figure was blurred in the storm, but at this time, this blurry figure contained a magical charm. As all the martial artists saw him, he became a brand that marked itself into their hearts, forever unable to be destroyed!

“That shadow is Lin Ming!”

“How terrifying!”

In front of this terrifying majesty, not to mention Holy Lords and World Kings, even Empyreans felt their minds shake with awe and fear!

And at this time, the giant yin yang vortex that swept through the world became increasingly fierce!

Hu –

Hu –

Hu –

All Laws submitted, the infinite variations of the Great Dao resonated.

Within this yin yang vortex, Lin Ming was recklessly absorbing the power of the heavens and earth into his body.

Laws shined in space. A golden bridge formed across the skies, shooting into Lin Ming's forehead. This was the source Laws of the Asura Heavenly Dao, its brilliance seeming as if it were capable of surmounting all lies and illusions.

A giant black and white wheel appeared, fusing into Lin Ming's dantian, seeming as if the doors of life and death could be seen in them. This was the source Life and Death Laws of the Holy Scripture, one of the highest Great Dao Laws of the world.

Dragons of thunder and dragons of flame appeared from deep in the universe. They roared and dove into the power of thunder and fire in Lin Ming's body. Every arc of lightning, every wisp of flame around Lin Ming seemed to develop a mind of its own, instinctually manifesting into dragons of flame and thunder that played around him…

Myriad Laws swelled towards him, connecting into his body and weaving together in his inner world.

This Great Dao evolved, floating in his inner world and making the Great Dao rules of his inner world ever more perfect.

Within this inner world, spiritual power was so thick and rich it flowed like water and gathered into rivers and seas. Within these lakes and seas, golden scales sparkled, turning into True Dragons that galloped around. These were but a few of the innumerable phenomena occurring within Lin Ming…

And not too far away from Lin Ming’s breakthrough location, two figures stood in the starry void and watched all of this occur.

These two people were Soaring Feather and Astral Vault.

“This is the phenomenon of Lin Ming breaking into the Empyrean realm.”

Soaring Feather looked at the giant yin yang vortex, her complexion earnest.

Beside her, Astral Vault parted his lips, his throat twitching. He looked at the giant vortex and said after a long period of time, “What energy is that?”

“I do not know!”

Soaring Feather shook her head. Even though Soaring Feather and Astral Vault were both True Divinities, they still couldn’t see through the power of divinity and demons, because this strength had already surpassed their cognition!

MW Chapter 2056

Chapter 2056 – The Restriction of the Nine Stars

…

…

…

"Let us go over and take a look!"

As Soaring Feather spoke, the yin yang vortex swept outwards, growing increasingly large. It already covered a 100,000 mile region and was able to cover an entire planet.

"This phenomenon… is truly special… this brat!"

Astral Vault God King huffed out. He couldn't help but acknowledge that Lin Ming's phenomena when he broke through the Empyrean realm were far greater than his own. Generally speaking, the phenomena of an Empyrean breakthrough were a manifestation of the Laws that the martial artist cultivated, or the types of energy they used.

This was because when a martial artist broke through to the Empyrean realm, the Laws they cultivated within themselves would sublimate, becoming a part of the Heavenly Dao.

Of course, the Heavenly Dao was divided into higher and lower divisions. There was the Heavenly Dao of a great world and the 33 Heavenly Daos, and even more beyond that. An Empyrean's Heavenly Dao only consisted of a small portion in which they specialized, and that part would manage to achieve a lower standard of the Heavenly Dao. However, this was terrifying enough; it meant that when a martial artist became an Empyrean, they were able to break free from the shackles of mortality, becoming sanctified, becoming the true ruler of a world.

Within the three great cultivation systems, every one of the 33 Heavenly Daos revealed a different phenomenon. Astral Vault God King could be considered a person with vast experience, but he had actually never seen this phenomenon that was occurring around Lin Ming, nor was he able to recognize it.

And at this time, a change occurred!

In that incomparably large yin yang vortex in the air, energy raged and the Heavenly Dao Laws gathered!

Layers of thick clouds grew, every wisp of the dark cloud woven together with profound dao patterns.

These dao patterns were multi-colored and magnificent, incredibly deep and seeming to contain the vicissitudes of time within them, as if some unknown divine god had carved the years inside so that they would shine on for eternity.

Dao patterns revolved and the sound of the flowing Great Dao echoed through the air, sounding like countless mountains colliding as it resonated with the world.

Just this flowing dao rhythm shocked the mind, capable of scattering one’s divine soul.

The surrounding observers all felt a tremendous pressure on them.

As more dark clouds gathered, the beat of thunder sounded from within, as if some unparalleled divine king was smashing battle drums within.

These dao patterns finally wove together in the dark clouds and formed into crimson thunder!

This crimson thunder contained overwhelming infernal energy. Accompanied by the boundless Great Dao Laws, it howled over Lin Ming’s head!

Waves of thunder beat in the skies, every wisp of lightning as thick as a mountain as they tore through the star territory.

Sonic waves of the Great Dao continued to ring, like the original sound of the universe itself, the bell of twilight that deafened the ears.

“Heavenly tribulation! When a martial artist breaks into the Empyrean realm they must experience heavenly tribulation and now it has arrived! It contains the true sounds of the Great Dao and is interwoven with the judgment of thunder created by the Laws!”

The many martial artists present felt just how terrifying this heavenly tribulation was.

Most of them were the elites of humanity and they knew that when a martial artist broke into the Empyrean realm, their Laws would sublimate, rising to the will of the Heavenly Dao, and their incarnation would also become the ruler of a world. This was a challenge against the Heavenly Dao, thus they had to experience heavenly tribulation!

However, amongst humanity, Empyreans came around once every several hundred thousand years, thus only a minor number of those present had witnessed other Empyreans crossing their heavenly tribulation!

The tribulation clouds became increasingly rich and gloomy. Everyone could feel how horrifying the energy contained in these dark clouds was. Many young martial artists couldn’t withstand the pressure and began breathing in great heaving gulps, and there were even some martial artists with weaker cultivations that began streaming with sweat, finding it nearly impossible to stand.

However, no matter how difficult it was, no matter how much they suffered, they stubbornly endured, their eyes staring unblinkingly towards the far off tribulation clouds.

This was Lin Ming crossing heavenly tribulation, an event you wouldn’t even see in a hundred million years!

In the past, when martial artists broke through to the Empyrean realm they would invite all their good friends and comrades, including even their own disciples to attend this grand ceremony. To young martial artists, this was a rare lucky chance!

This was because when an Empyrean crossed heavenly tribulation the Great Dao Law would descend. For young martial artists this was a mental baptism that would provide them with great inspirations, clearing their minds and hearts!

Hum –

The true sounds of the Great Dao continued to circulate. Let alone the juniors of the younger generation, even the Empyreans felt a faint pressure in this environment. As for Empyrean Vast Universe, Lan Xin, and the others, goosebumps had risen all over their bodies. As they looked at these tribulation clouds, even they were gaining enlightenment.

To an Empyrean, the Laws they cultivated were mostly settled thus they comprehended slightly less. Those that truly profited were World Kings and Great World Kings!

Their cultivations were higher than the juniors' and their understandings of the Heavenly Dao were also more profound than the juniors'. As they respectfully listened to the true sound of the Great Dao, they all felt as if their bodies were being washed through by the clearest spring, their dao understandings being smashed by countless hammers, becoming even stronger and more durable.

In particular, before this heavenly tribulation, some Great World Kings that were close to breaking into the Empyrean realm seemed to hear countless Supremes whispering the secrets of the Great Dao into their ears. Some puzzles that had long plagued their cultivations and had formed walls suddenly showed signs of loosening.

Because of Lin Ming crossing heavenly tribulation, the skies above the originally confusing road to becoming an Empyrean seemed to open up, shining down light that illuminated the path forwards!

This was an inestimably valuable great lucky chance. Thus, many World Kings went wild with happiness, all of them wishing they could dive into those tribulation clouds!

Of course, those tribulation clouds were too terrifying. If they really did rush in then they would instantly disintegrate into ashes.

“This brat! He has drawn down tribulation clouds of the 33 Heavens! That is the highest level of Empyrean heavenly tribulations, and looking at it, it seems to possess the most terrifying kind of power.”

Astral Vault God King thoughtfully said.

Soaring Feather God King’s response was much slower. “With Lin Ming’s current strength, it would be strange if he didn’t bring down 33 Heavens tribulation clouds. These tribulation clouds are terrifying but it is unlikely to affect him. Rather, this will be his chance. He will borrow this heavenly tribulation to temper his body and consolidate his foundation. That would be the best choice for him.”

Listening to Soaring Feather’s words, Astral Vault’s face darkened. When a new Empyrean crossed heavenly tribulation, this was a lucky chance for those observing. But, the greatest beneficiary was of course the new Empyrean themselves.

The more terrifying the heavenly tribulation was, the greater the lucky chance. When Astral Vault compared the scale of the heavenly tribulation clouds he summoned in the past, he knew they were much worse than Lin Ming’s. This left him with a strange taste in his heart.

At this time, beneath the divine might of heavenly tribulation, every inch of Lin Ming’s skin began to shine.

Basked in endless light, he was like a great sun floating in the skies. No matter how mighty the heavenly tribulation was, it didn't seem to affect him; he didn't even bat an eye.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Heavenly tribulation approached. The power fermenting in the clouds became increasingly terrifying. At this time, an Empyrean that lacked sufficient skill would have already challenged the tribulation clouds ahead of time.

No one believed Lin Ming lacked skill. Thus, he would wait until the heavenly tribulation clouds fermented to their limit before he fought them.

"It's almost at the limit!"

"It's finally about to start!"

By now, the tribulation clouds in the skies had expanded to several hundred thousand miles, covering this entire region of the star territory!

The energy contained within was saturated to the limit. Although more and more heaven and earth origin energy gathered, it was a tiny amount compared to what was already there.

According to previous experiences, heavenly tribulation was about to begin!

At this point, let alone the juniors, even Emperor Shakya, Dark Demon Monarch, and the others all held their breath, their concentration completely focused on what was occurring.

But below the tribulation clouds, Lin Ming still hadn't started preparations to withstand the heavenly tribulation. He didn't even look up. All of his attention was focused on absorbing the mystical power of Laws to further stabilize his inner world.

Within the chaos, the energies of yin and yang seemed to evolve into all living creatures.

The light and clear power of divinity soared into the skies, condensing into auspicious clouds that lingered about.

The heavy and thick power of demons sank to the ground, forming blood red continents that stretched towards infinity.

The surrounding Laws became increasingly condensed and perfect.

Suddenly, Lin Ming's eye flashed open. His eyes seemed to contain pitch black chaos that swallowed all. Even when lower Empyreans saw him they felt their minds shake, as if their divine souls would be dragged in and absorbed.

Seeing Lin Ming's aura finally erupt, everyone held their breath.

The vast and overwhelming momentum of this heavenly tribulation was simply unprecedented, whether it was in the past or present.

It was hard to imagine just what scene would occur when Lin Ming crossed heavenly tribulation.

But at this time, another change occurred!

Lin Ming breathed thunder. With a bass roar, the surrounding galaxy shook.

A vast aura rose from within his body. Wisps of starlight gushed out from every pore, forming mystical runes in the air. These runes transformed into chains that waved back and forth within the boundless dark heavenly tribulation clouds.

"What is he doing?" Seeing this, some human martial artists couldn't help but ask in bewilderment, finding it hard to respond.

Just as everyone was puzzled, marvelous fluctuations of the Great Dao rules appeared in the heavenly tribulation.

Small swathes of starry space began to appear from within those dark clouds.

This was a breathtaking sight. From those obviously thick tribulation clouds, part of them was actually turning into starry space.

Nine titanic stars appeared, exuding the aura of the Great Dao Laws.

Their starlight fell upon Lin Ming, bathing him.

“This is…”

Everyone peered deeper in. They could see that these nine stars seemed to be imprisoned and locked in by chains that twined about them like red dragons.

These chains emitted an irresistible mystical strength that blocked the divine light of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace so that the stars couldn’t move.

“This is the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. This is…”

Many of the human martial artists present were vastly experienced individuals so they naturally recognized the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace immediately.

But, the one with the most profound understanding was in truth Astral Vault God King.

At this time, what people paid attention to were not the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace themselves, but the dark red chains that bound them!

From their far-off point of view, these chains appeared extremely slender. Compared to the incandescent stars, the chains seemed insignificant. However, the divine spiritual light woven into them caused the mind to shake!

“This is...”

In Mount Potala, Great Limitless Buddha’s wizened eyes flashed with a brilliant light!

Great Limitless Buddha was already old. Although he was a peak Empyrean, in terms of strength he was much worse than Emperor Shakya. However, he possessed an incredibly rich trove of knowledge. As he saw these dark red divine chains, the first thing that came to his mind was the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace that was swallowed by Famine 3.6 billion years ago!

In truth, Famine didn't swallow the 33 Heavenly Dao Laws. Rather, it had swallowed the destiny that linked humanity to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, the causal relationship that connected the two.

And, this sort of swallowing was actually a type of Laws unto itself. These Laws wove together into divine chains that locked away the starlight, causing it so that human martial artists couldn't be illuminated by the starlight of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

Because of this reason, ever since 3.6 billion years ago, the human martial artists that cultivated the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had nearly gone extinct!

"So that's what it is!"

Divine Dream muttered. Within her normally quiet and placid eyes, ripples appeared, showing just how difficult she was finding it to compose herself.

At this moment, she finally understood just what sort of relationship bound together Famine, the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, and the Nine Divine Shifts that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign desired to change!

MW Chapter 2057

Chapter 2057 – Break Past the Martial Song

…

…

…

After Famine swallowed the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, the starlight was locked away by the divine chains so it was naturally isolated from humanity.

Then, where did all this starlight that should have been humanity's go to?

Divine Dream suspected that it had all been swallowed by Famine. In other words, Famine had swallowed the destiny that originally belonged to humanity and turned it into its own destiny.

The light of the Nine Stars that should have fallen upon humanity was transformed into Famine's energy.

Then… the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign swallowing the Nine Divine Shifts should be a similar situation.

Not only did the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wish to utterly destroy humanity but he also wished to swallow humanity’s destiny, turning it into his own!

Humanity’s current strength was already weak enough. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would first strike out at humanity and slowly eat away at them. In the future, once he was powerful enough, he would extend his tentacles to the spiritas and also swallow the destiny of their race.

At the end, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign might even use Famine to take over the world!

Thinking of this, Divine Dream felt just how heavy the ambitions of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign were. At the same time she also worried about Lin Ming. Since he caused the divine chains that blocked the Nine Stars of the Heavenly Dao to appear, did he plan on cutting them apart?

To cut apart the order of the Heavenly Dao, this was no minor matter.

The one doing so would have to bear the sanction of the Heavenly Dao, spurring on heavenly tribulation!

Now, within this star territory, heavenly tribulation had already formed above Lin Min's head. But Lin Ming didn't try to cross this tribulation now and instead chose to use this moment to face the Nine Stars Heavenly Dao. This was an extremely dangerous choice!

All the human martial artists held their breath. At this time, only a small number of Empyreans knew what he was doing; most people weren't sure what was occurring.

As everyone couldn't help but ask, at this moment they saw Lin Ming shoot up into the skies, tearing through space!

His body emitted resounding crackling sounds, as if mountains and rivers were breaking apart, as if planets were collapsing.

He drew out the Black Dragon Spear!

The Black Dragon Spear seemed to condense the heaviness of a great world. Endless dao patterns wove together on the surface of the spear shaft, looking like a black dragon that soared upwards!

Blood red scales with a cold metallic luster appeared on Lin Ming, as if something were trying to struggle from the depths of his body.

At this moment, Lin Ming had used the power of the Asura blood!

At the same time, five Dao Palaces opened up within his body. These five Dao Palaces corresponded to the power of the Nine Stars in the sky, faintly forming the divine brilliance of order.

Lin Ming's speed increased with every moment. In his eyes he no longer saw surging tribulation clouds but only those divine chains.

The Black Dragon Spear slashed out, cutting down on those chains as if it would rip apart the world!

In that moment, an all-swallowing divine light covered the surrounding endless space. Beneath the pall of this divine light, even Empyreans were forced to close their eyes.

As for the younger generations, they were long since unable to withstand it!

"Draw back!"

People cried out in alarm. Human rulers formed protective true essence shields to shelter the young disciples as they rapidly retreated. Many people were faint of breath and nearly fell down where they stood.

The Black Dragon Spear collided with the divine chains in the divine light. Yet, it was strangely silent without a single sound. Even so, people could see the endless runes being destroyed and the impact shockwaves rushed out like a raging tide in all directions.

Shua!

The void in front of Lin Ming was cut into countless fragments by the tide of energy.

As for those blood red divine chains, cracks began to appear within them under Lin Ming's assault.

Time seemed to come to a standstill. Everyone watched as the divine chains that sealed away the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace turned into fragments of starlight as they thoroughly disintegrated!

The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace were released from their confinement and began to shine ever brighter. That endless starlight fell upon Lin Ming's body, fell upon all the martial artists of humanity.

At this moment, every human martial artist could feel their blood vitality starting to race beneath the shimmer of this starlight. Some martial artists who had cultivated body transformation Laws and even some martial artists who had opened the Eight Inner Hidden

Gates felt all of their blood energy seeming to condense in their bodies, becoming a billowing rocket that desired to hurtle towards the heavens!

“This is the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace! The strength of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, I felt it!”

Some martial artists uttered with shock, completely filled with disbelief.

When human martial artists cultivated the Eight Inner Hidden Gates, in truth the main reason they did so was because they wanted to open the Gate of Opening and enhance their own perception.

As for the true Gate of Life and Gate of Death, and the even higher Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, they had never considered it.

This was because cultivating the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was restricted by the Heavenly Dao rules, and required a titanic level of resources, an amount that not even Empyrean Holy Lands were able to withstand!

Moreover, the chance of success was near zero!

After all sorts of reasons were added together, and especially since cultivating the body transformation system didn't provide benefits that were too heaven-defying, very few people chose to dual cultivate essence and energy; it was simply far too difficult a road.

If it was said that some martial artists only faintly felt the strength of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, then Lin Ming was completely bathed in this starlight, undergoing a baptism of the Nine Stars!

When those divine chains broke, as the one who broke them, Lin Ming directly faced the Nine Stars. The endless starlight fell onto him like a gushing waterfall, bathing him!

This was the starlight accumulated over 3.6 billion years!

Although Famine had swallowed this starlight, the 33 Heavenly Daos were incomparably huge to begin with. No matter how strong Famine's Laws of Swallowing were, it was impossible for him to swallow all the starlight.

Because of the restriction of the divine chains, after the light of the Nine Stars accumulated year after year it had undergone a qualitative change!

As this starlight violently poured into Lin Ming, his mortal body began to be reborn as his muscles and marrow were washed!

Beneath the divine light, his skin, skeleton, muscles, organs, everything became completely translucent.

The five Dao Palaces within his body recklessly absorbed this divine light, becoming increasingly grand and complex.

If the Dao Palaces within Lin Ming's body were comparable to the imperial palace of a mortal, then after constantly growing, it had already turned into something like Divine Dream Heavenly Palace or the Good Fortune Saint Palace!

After lifting the shackles upon the Heavenly Dao, Lin Ming obtained the greatest advantages. The Dao Palaces that were suppressed within his body suddenly became several times more powerful. Their surging power was no longer blocked from Lin Ming's body!

It was like his flesh and blood blended with the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, becoming a part of his instinct.

At this moment, Lin Ming could feel his strength wildly grow; it was already difficult to measure with numbers alone!

Without a doubt, 3.6 billion years ago when Famine swallowed the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, it had suffocated humanity's body transformation system, making it impossibly difficult to train in.

But if one could be like Lin Ming and break through the chains of the Heavenly Dao even when that path was blocked, forcefully opening up the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, then once those divine chains were lifted and the connection of Lin Ming's mortal body with the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace restored, then the body transformation system strength he possessed would far outstrip anything that human martial artists were able to attain in the past!

In the world of martial arts, the deeper the price the greater the profit. Now that Lin Ming had paid so much to break past the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace in the past, his harvests were that much greater!

The light of the Nine Stars was simply too vast. Lin Ming's body had long been fully saturated and it was difficult for him to continue digesting all this starlight.

But at this moment, without any hesitation, Lin Ming compressed this infinite starlight and thrust it into his limbs!

Bang!

Lin Ming's arms and legs were flooded with energy. His blood vessels stuck out like earthworms, nearly blowing open.

And in the skies, amongst those nine great stars shining up high, one of them shined with an incomparable brilliance, like a dawning sun!

For one of those stars to turn into a blazing sun, all of the martial artists present were shocked.

“What is happening?”

Someone cried out in alarm.

“That is one of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace – the Martial Song Star!”

An Empyrean who understood the Laws of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace slowly whispered. Although humanity’s inheritances concerning the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had been lost, there were still Empyreans who had peered through ancient records concerning them.

Within the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, the Martial Song Star was the one that corresponded to war and slaughter.

It was diametrically opposed to the Merciful Song Star.

The Dao Palace that the Martial Song Star corresponded with was the Martial Sovereign Dao Palace, also known as the Cardinal Direction Dao Palace!

The heavens had four extremes – east, west, south, and north, the four directions that led to the ends of the world.

Humans also had four extremes – they were the arms and legs. They were the limbs that allowed humans to walk, work, fight, live, they were the limbs that were related to all movements!

When essence gathering system martial artists fought, they could manifest the Laws within their inner world and manipulate the power of the world.

But when a body transformation system martial artist fought, they relied on their four limbs!

These four limbs seemed simple, but the truth was that they were the ultimate manifestation of a body transformation system martial artist's combat strength!

Thus, the Martial Sovereign Dao Palace was an extremely important Dao Palace within the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. Once opened, a martial artist's bodily strength would increase several times over!

Wu –

Wu –

Wu –

Stars trembled. Starlight surged.

The Martial Song Star shined bright in the skies, open and honest, yet bringing with it a terrifyingly suppressive feeling. Every martial artist could feel an extremely tyrannical momentum from within, an unbending strength!

The Martial Song Star was a brave star, one decisive in killing, one that roamed the world without fear!

Of the Nine Stars, it wasn't just the Martial Song Star that was a brave star, but it was the one filled with a firm and straightforward meaning!

The Martial Song Star shined and starlight fell down. Lin Ming felt the strength within his arms and legs, the saturated starlight, being compressed without end, as if a smoldering volcano were ready to erupt from within him.

"Martial Sovereign Dao Palace – open!"

Lin Ming pushed against the starlight, firing towards the Martial Song Star.

With his incomparably formidable accumulations and the momentum from just breaking into the Empyrean realm, Lin Ming compressed the power of this starlight to the limit!

But at this time, blood red divine thunder fell onto Lin Ming's body!

Bang!

Lin Ming's body shook. The moment the blood red thunder struck him, his speed slowed and blood flowed out from the corners of his lips.

He paused, staring into the skies like a hawk. He saw that the tribulation clouds of the nine heavens had already condensed to a terrifying degree!

Moreover, the surrounding light of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace also seemed to gather towards the tribulation clouds. The tribulation clouds had yet to reach their most potent stage!

However, the heavenly tribulation was already impatient to descend!

MW Chapter 2058

Chapter 2058 – Heavenly Tribulation Tempering Body

…

…

…

The thunder of the highest nine heavens savagely howled.

It was only now that people discovered their eyes had been focused on the Martial Song Star, but because the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had appeared, the tribulation clouds were beginning to experience a heaven-shaking change!

That heavenly tribulation was no longer in the form of dark clouds, but was now a golden lake that rippled outwards.

Endless streams of the Great Dao surged in this lake, breeding a terrifying divine thunder of heavenly tribulation within.

This divine thunder came in crimson, gold, purple, and an even more terrifying rainbow hue.

That seven-colored thunder was bizarrely peaceful. Just by looking at it, one's soul seemed to fall into illusion.

"This is… a variation change in heavenly tribulation! As Senior Lin is crossing heavenly tribulation, he severed the divine chains of order and touched the Heavenly Dao Laws once more, causing the power of the heavenly tribulation to be even more terrifying!"

"How can anyone withstand such horrifying heavenly tribulation!?"

At this moment, the complexions of many human martial artists changed. Originally what Lin Ming faced was the highest level of the 33 Heavens tribulation, and now that it changed, even a peak Empyrean would be smashed into ashes. If a normal Empyrean were beneath these clouds, let alone crossing this heavenly tribulation, they wouldn't even be able to stand!

Lin Ming was their spiritual leader. In terms of prestige amongst the human race, he even surpassed Divine Dream.

If any accident were to happen to Lin Ming the consequences would be unbelievable.

In Demon Fairy Palace, Xiao Moxian's heart was gripped. Standing beside her, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan also had worried expressions on their faces. This pressure was far too horrifying. Even though they were within the Empyrean force field set up by Xiao Moxian, they still felt it suffocating to breathe…

Chi-la!

Another bolt of thunder came chopping down!

Lin Ming stood still. At this time, the starlight gathered unto his body reached an unprecedented peak. He looked up, staring at the increasingly strong heavenly tribulation that approached.

Firming his mind, Lin Ming grasped the Black Dragon Spear and hurtled into the crimson tribulation clouds!

"Lin Ming!"

Xiao Moxian cried out in alarm. The human martial artists were also shocked!

From far away, everyone saw Lin Ming's tiny figure rushing into those terrifying and roiling tribulation clouds that represented the might of the heavens and earth. This scene became something that eternally fixed itself into the hearts of those present!

The more one approached tribulation clouds, the more powerful the heavenly tribulation was. This was tantamount to provoking the Heavenly Dao itself!

"He is using heavenly tribulation to temper his body and force out the limit of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace within his body!" Soaring Feather said, her eyes shining with brilliance. And beside her, Astral Vault had an ugly complexion; this method was simply far too crazy!

Piki paka!

In that instant, endless arcs of thunder fell down upon Lin Ming!

Blinding beams of divine light lit up the world. From afar, Lin Ming seemed to have become the only existence within the heavens and earth!

Beneath the brutal barrage of thunder, Lin Ming's body was covered in blood. He roared out, "Martial Sovereign Dao Palace, open again!"

Even though he was interrupted by heavenly tribulation the first time he tried to open the Martial Sovereign Dao Palace, Lin Ming paid little heed to this. He ignored the heavenly tribulation and impacted upwards a second time.

Since heavenly tribulation had entered his body, Lin Ming would simply use the power of this heavenly tribulation to further temper his body, allowing the Martial Sovereign Dao Palace to open even more thoroughly.

Kacha!

Lin Ming's mortal body seemed as if it would explode in that instant. Beneath the limit of strength, Lin Ming felt a terrifying power of thunder gather into his already burning arms and legs. In these places it was like four doors were rumbling as they were being pushed open.

The power of starlight was compressed in his limbs, interweaving into an eternally glorious Dao Palace. This Dao Palace was the Martial Sovereign Dao Palace!

As this Dao Palace that represented the ultimate martial strength appeared, it was soaked in that violent and fierce thunder!

Thunder smashed into the temple, hardening it and making it shine even more radiantly!

Divine thunder could be used to refine weapons. Now, Lin Ming was using the thunder of this heavenly tribulation to hammer upon his newly formed Dao Palace!

In that moment the strength within Lin Ming's body reached a new peak.

With a punch, he could crush the void. With a kick, a river of stars would tremble.

He had finally opened the sixth Dao Palace!

In that moment, the power of divinity and demons born within Lin Ming's inner world began flow out, surrounding the six Dao Palaces like a rising tide.

The six Dao Palaces released a mystical strength. Dao patterns floated atop the chaotic energy surrounding the Dao Palaces and joined together like continuous mountain ranges, forming a marvelous fused state.

The two yin yang powers of divinity and demons represented the most extreme origins and had no conflict at all with these six Dao Palaces that represented the strength of the Heavenly Dao.

With this strength as a medium, the six Dao Palaces began to swirl around in the yin yang tide covered with dao patterns.

At this time, Lin Ming suddenly reached out his hand! The power of Laws converged. High in the skies, the chains that imprisoned the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace were grasped in his hand.

These divine chains were already cut apart by Lin Ming. The spirit mark of Famine's soul had already been refined by Lin Ming but the source Laws still existed within, incredibly powerful.

For the last 3.6 billion years, these divine chains had imprisoned the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and had undergone a baptism of infinite starlight. They gathered the essence of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace Heavenly Dao.

Without hesitation, Lin Ming smashed these divine chains apart and directly fused them into his body. The crushed chains turned into countless tiny Law fragments that gushed into the six Dao Palaces.

These divine chains had been able to imprison the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. Now, they turned into silk threads that connected the six Dao Palaces within Lin Ming's body.

For a time, it was like a similar bloodline was forged into the six Dao Palaces within Lin Ming's body. These six Dao Palaces originally resonated with each other and now they began exchanging energy, rapidly merging together.

The Nine Star dao patterns of these six Dao Palaces wove together, overlapping against each other, embedding into each other.

This sort of fusion was a true fusion of the Great Dao. Divine spiritual power harmonized as one.

But at the same time, they still maintained a kind of independence, retaining their true source strength of the Great Dao.

It could be said that this was a transformation of the Great Dao’s strength, a sublimation.

Rumble rumble rumble –

As these six Dao Palaces sublimated, Lin Ming opened his daevic eye. He thought that his acupoints were opened like gates and immortals lived within them, reciting chants of the Great Dao.

All of these feelings allowed his heart of martial arts to climb to new heights.

Some obscure things he encountered in his road of cultivation also seemed to open up, as if the fog in front of them started to clear away…

Climbing, climbing, Lin Ming's momentum soared into the skies, continuing to climb.

As he blinked, infinite galaxies seemed to be destroyed in his pupils, and worlds seemed to form and evolve.

This sort of scene already surpassed that of an Empyrean; it was an evolution of the highest Great Dao.

As these six Dao Palaces fused together without a single gap between them, blood began to burn like divine flames, shooting up into the heavens, transforming into True Dragons and True Phoenixes that cried and roared.

The Great Dao Laws hummed as if they were all submitting themselves to Lin Ming.

Seeing this sight, the low level martial artists were unsure what was occurring. But as for the Empyreans and God Kings present, they were stunned speechless!

Then, before they could tell what changes were occurring within Lin Ming's body, Lin Ming's figure suddenly flickered. He grabbed the Black Dragon Spear and fired himself into the 33 Heavens tribulation clouds once more!

This time, Lin Ming pushed forwards with unstoppable momentum, as if he would break through the heavens!

After being provoked by Lin Ming again and again, that raging heavenly tribulation was like fire with oil poured onto it. It became increasingly murderous and ferocious as it swept down!

This was no longer arcs of thunder, but a golden sea woven together by endless divine thunder!

Lin Ming roared out loud and the Black Dragon viciously slashed out!

Chi-la!

The vault of the heavens seemed to be torn asunder. This spear chopped that golden sea of thunder in half!

One split into two!

Lin Ming devoured this vast power of thunder in great gulps and continued rushing forwards with irresistible force. This time, Lin Ming’s goal was the 33 Heavens tribulation clouds!

Tribulation clouds were the most concentrated form of heavenly retribution as well as the most terrifying existence. Since ancient times, when Empyreans crossed their heavenly tribulations they had no choice but to dread these tribulation clouds. But at this time, Lin Ming was rushing towards these tribulation clouds.

Lin Ming didn't hesitate; he slashed out his spear once more!

This spear was wrapped in the great strength of the six Dao Palaces as well as an unsurpassed heart of martial arts that seemed as if it would step above the 33 Heavenly Daos!

Chi-la!

It was like a universe-tearing strength erupted. In everyone's shocked gaze, the 33 Heavens tribulation clouds that represented the highest rules of the Heavenly Dao were actually split apart by Lin Ming!

"His spear broke through the tribulation clouds!"

A human Empyrean cried out in awe.

And, Soaring Feather and Astral Vault were even more shocked. As peerless powerhouses who had withstood the baptism of heavenly tribulation before, they were profoundly aware of how terrifying these 33 Heavens tribulation clouds were!

But such tribulation clouds were forcefully shorn apart by Lin Ming!

This strength was simply far too horrifying!

MW Chapter 2059

Chapter 2059 – Battling the Heavenly Dao

…

…

…

The moment the tribulation clouds were torn apart by Lin Ming's great strength, the deep golden lake emitted a vast and bass roar. This was the thundering of heaven. A gap appeared in the golden lake and a divine sword seemed to chop out, overflowing with the golden light of the Great Dao!

As this golden Great Dao appeared, it aimed straight at Lin Ming.

The golden lake began to shine with a blinding light. War chariots drawn by golden thunder dragons seemed to gallop out from the river of time, hurtling their way towards Lin Ming.

Standing on each war chariot was a divine god in golden armor. Their faces were without expression and their bodies flooded out with boundless killing intent, as if this entire part of the universe had turned into a bloody battlefield, filled with slaughter and death.

Each chariot was marked with countless scars. Every trace exuded a shockingly violent and brutal aura, as if they bore testimony to every war since ancient times.

“This… could this also be heavenly tribulation? How come there is no thunder but legions of golden war chariots?”

Many human martial artists were shocked. They had never seen nor heard of such heavenly tribulation before.

“Amitabha… these are war chariots manifested from the power of heavenly retribution…” Great Limitless Buddha looked up towards the heavens, his complexion earnest. His long white eyebrows trembled. “Those atop the war chariots should be… ancient divine spirits! In the legends there are peerless characters of the 33 Heavens that went to war for endless years. Afterwards, although they eventually died in the endless river of time, when they crossed their heavenly tribulation they were remembered by the Heavenly Dao. Now, even after they died and their mortal bodies turned to dust, they have cast down an immortal dao foundation that was not destroyed but instead kept within the Heavenly Dao…

“If I’m not wrong, then those golden war chariots and those golden divine spirits should be phantoms of those ancient peerless characters… and they are now being brought into reality by this heavenly tribulation.”

Hearing the words of Great Limitless Buddha, many human Empyreans' complexions changed. After these ancient peerless characters died, their phantoms were left behind in the Heavenly Dao?

Although they didn't know who these phantoms once were, what they knew without a doubt was that out of all them present, besides Divine Dream, none of them had the qualifications to leave behind their phantoms in the Heavenly Dao.

Although these Heavenly Dao phantoms were not the true bodies and perhaps they only contained a tenth of their strength from before they died, or maybe even only a twentieth, but these were all once dreadful characters capable of flipping over the 33 Heavens. With so many gathered here, this was truly terrifying!

Many of them had likely killed True Divinities before!

Facing these Heavenly Dao phantoms, Lin Ming didn't hesitate nor did he feel fear. He stepped forwards, the Black Dragon Spear grasped in his hands. Behind him, the six fused Dao Palaces of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace began to fill Lin Ming with infinite strength. A boiling fighting spirit burned through his blood. Even if an ancient peerless powerhouse were to truly stand before him, he would still remain fearless in his desire to fight them!

As he rapidly flew upwards, his back split open. A fierce suit of bone armor like that of an abyssal emerged from his body, piercing through his black clothes.

He stepped through space, shooting upwards like a bolt of thunder, his entire body from head to toe emitting an overwhelming momentum. The Black Dragon Spear emitted an excited cry, howling like a black dragon as he flew to the heavens!

The golden-armored divine spirits remained without expression. They drew out golden halberds and rushed towards Lin Ming!

The moment the Black Dragon Spear clashed with those war halberds, beams of spear light shot out, swallowing the surrounding vastness of space!

Space seemed to solidify. In the boundless world, it was like only the black spear remained, blocking out the entire space.

Kacha!

The golden war halberd was directly smashed to pieces!

Even that golden-armored giant's arms fractured. After the black spear broke through the golden war halberd, it pounded down upon the ancient divine spirit's armor.

In that moment, the armor blew apart. The golden-armored giant was crushed into an endless rain of light by the Black Dragon Spear!

Bang!

Bang!

Lin Ming broke into the group of golden war chariots, his Black Dragon Spear singing its own epic!

With each spear strike, with each clash with the golden weapons of the ancient divine spirits, a heavy sound would echo through the heavens and earth.

It was hard to imagine just how much strength was behind these collisions!

Peng!

Another golden-armored divine spirit was shattered to pieces!

Lin Ming was an incomparably fierce war god, treading forwards with unstoppable force!

However, there were simply far too many ancient divine spirits surrounding Lin Ming, still over 20 of them. When Lin Ming killed two of them, a golden-armored divine spirit managed to stab its halberd into his back.

Black scales broke and blood sprinkled down.

The human martial artists felt their hearts skip a beat. However, before they could cry out in alarm, they discovered that the spear of this ancient divine spirit was only able to pierce halfway through to the halberd head.

Lin Ming’s mortal body was like a piece of the toughest divine iron, unable to be shaken!

Peng!

Lin Ming turned his hand and smashed the head of this golden armored divine spirit!

The golden-armored divine spirit shook and fell downwards.

At the same time, the flesh on Lin Ming’s back began to wriggle, regenerating at a speed visible to the naked eye. In just a few breaths of time the wound had already stopped bleeding.

Lin Ming had opened six Dao Palaces of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, and one of them was responsible for managing the recovery and restoration of flesh and blood – the Natal Life Dao Palace. After opening the Natal Life Dao Palace, even if he were to sever an arm or a leg he would still be able to grow another one. Even if a three foot long gash were to be torn open in his skin, rapidly regenerating wouldn't be a problem either.

"His wound recovered!"

"Even after being sneak attacked by a halberd, he managed to turn and smash the other's head!"

Seeing this scene, all of the martial artists were left dumbfounded. This method was simply far too fierce, it scared one silly.

While being attacked, he forcefully withstood it without problem and then struck back with a life-reaping attack!

Lin Ming was powerful to begin with, and coupled with such a fighting method where he didn't even seem to care about his own safety, just who could fight against him?

But at this time, Lin Ming started his battle with the golden-armored divine spirits once more!

Rumble rumble rumble!

Golden ripples spread out, carrying with them the boundlessly mighty force of Laws. Another golden-armored warrior was destroyed by Lin Ming!

Lin Ming brutally killed a path open in the numerous ancient divine spirit phantoms and rushed into the golden tribulation clouds.

Bang!

Lin Ming slashed out his spear once more, chopping down on the surface of that golden lake and causing giant golden waves to rise up. The monstrous slaughter energy accompanied the boundless Great Dao Laws, condensing around Lin Ming.

In the tidal waves of thunder, every bolt was as thick as a mountain, tearing open the world without end.

The true sounds of the Great Dao rose up, as if they were the sounds from the origin of the universe. They rang like bells from the primordial chaos, awakening the mind to unknown truths.

“Ancient divine spirits, pond of heavenly thunder… true sounds of the Great Dao…”

Divine Dream muttered to herself as she watched Lin Ming submerge himself in lightning.

All sorts of heavenly tribulation phenomena manifested around Lin Ming. To other martial artists this would have been a fatal judgment of the Heavenly Dao, but to Lin Ming this was a great stroke of good fortune!

Nearly half of the golden-armored divine spirits had already been cut down by Lin Ming. But at this time, Lin Ming barraged the golden lake without end!

Strike after strike, the Black Dragon Spear became a dancing dark dragon that tore through the tribulation clouds.

With every explosion of golden waves, they turned into countless Law fragments. Most of these Law fragments sprinkled into the endless starry space, but a great deal was still absorbed by Lin Ming!

During this continued onslaught, the golden tribulation clouds became increasingly pale. The highly concentrated energy no longer took the form of a lake, but turned into layers of fog. This fog continued to disperse. As Lin Ming soaked within it, it became dimmer with each passing second.

He recklessly swallowed and absorbed the Heavenly Dao Laws. Around him, divine spirits of the Heavenly Dao were slain one after another. In the midst of this slaughter, Lin Ming's scales were shattered and his entire body drenched in blood!

His flesh continued to regenerate and the power of the Heavenly Dao continued to weaken.

These ancient divine spirits had nearly all been killed off by Lin Ming!

Seeing this, the Empyreans and God Kings present were speechless.

They had also once experienced heavenly tribulation, but the way in which they crossed their heavenly tribulations was to wait for the heavenly tribulation to cast down its energy while they passively withstood it and underwent their baptism of heavenly thunder.

But Lin Ming had killed his way into the highest heavens, waging war against the Heavenly Dao!

Such a crazy procedure was nearly suicidal. But, Lin Ming relied on his inestimable war strength to succeed!

After he crushed apart all of the ancient divine spirits and the thunder of heavenly retribution, he absorbed the power of the Heavenly Dao.

Everyone knew that at this moment, Lin Ming had already perfectly crossed his heavenly tribulation.

This was the moment he truly became an Empyrean!

MW Chapter 2060

Chapter 2060 – Facing God Kings

…

…

…

Starlight splashed down like water. This star territory of the Hidden Dragon Galaxy was flooded with endless Great Dao Law fragments, the vestiges of heavenly tribulation.

All martial artists here could feel these faint and yet unimaginably vast Laws of the highest order.

In the highest heavens, the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had gradually hidden themselves away and the tribulation clouds also scattered. All that was left over were golden bubbles that floated in the void. They were like endless golden pearls that came both small and large.

Lin Ming had already put away the Black Dragon Spear. As he stood in the void his eyes were closed and his long hair danced around him. At this time, as he stood within this world, he had a completely different feeling from before.

In Lin Ming's eyes this world was no longer the same!

After breaking into the Empyrean realm, as Lin Ming looked upon the world he had a feeling as if he could understand everything before him.

If the universe was compared to a landscape, then before Lin Ming broke into the Empyrean realm, he could be considered as standing on flat land and looking outwards. Although what he saw was beautiful, it was ultimately limited.

But after breaking into the Empyrean realm, Lin Ming seemed to stand atop a tall building, looking down at the world before him. His field of vision was broader and he could see much more clearly, everything reflected in a panoramic view in his eyes.

And this tall building was the Heavenly Dao Laws!

Beneath an Empyrean, all martial artists were suppressed by the Heavenly Dao Laws. After becoming an Empyrean, a martial artist's Laws reached the height of the Heavenly Dao; this was the same as standing atop that tall building!

Lin Ming didn’t speak. He quietly perceived this feeling of awareness after breaking into the Empyrean realm. This sort of sensation left him feeling intoxicated.

Every strand of Laws in the surrounding space shivered. He clearly saw them all around. With just a thought he could easily control these Laws.

However, compared to Lin Ming’s calmness, the human martial artists were already burning with excitement!

Lin Ming was the person who humanity had placed all their hopes in. And now, he had finally broken into the Empyrean realm!

“This is too terrifying. That heavenly tribulation just now was simply invincible in its might, yet such a horrifying heavenly tribulation was withstood by Lin Ming. Perhaps Lin Ming can already contend with a God King!”

“That’s right! Not just that but he even severed the shackles of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. I can already feel the strength of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace! Although the road is still blurry and muddled, I feel that if I truly continue down this path, I really might be able to step into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!”

A body transformation martial artists brimmed with elation. He understood just what Lin Ming did when he severed those divine chains of order. To humanity, this was a great blessing.

In reality, the majority of the divine chains that bound the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace were still in Famine’s main body. If they could be completely severed, thoroughly releasing the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, then this would enable all human martial artists to freely cultivate them!

At this time, within Divine Dream Heavenly Palace, Empyrean Divine Dream stood tall, like a goddess fallen to the world. Her clothes floated about her and her eyes shimmered with extraordinary radiance.

She was born with a calm and indifferent personality, like a pool of water that had never experienced waves. In particular, ever since humanity’s great calamity occurred, Divine Dream had yet to smile. But because Lin Ming perfectly broke into the Empyrean realm, she suddenly felt ripples spread through her heart, making it hard for her to maintain her composure.

As for Empyrean Vast Universe, Emperor Shakya, To Bagui, and the others, they weren’t as restrained. All of them had long since been buzzing with joy.

“Haha! Great!” Empyrean Vast Universe laughed.

“Amitabha, wonderful, wonderful.” Great Limitless Buddha recited buddhist mantras, his hands gathered together as he slowly twisted his buddha beads, a gentle smile on his face.

And at this time, on the side of the saints, Astral Vault God King and Soaring Feather God King were quietly looking at Lin Ming from not too far away. They had personally watched as Lin Ming broke into the Empyrean realm.

"This brat!"

Astral Vault God King gloomily said. He felt pressured. Besides those that controlled the universe such as the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and the Soul Emperor, Astral Vault God King had never thought he would feel such pressure from someone else, especially a junior who hadn't even lived for 10,000 years yet!

Although he didn't think that Lin Ming possessed combat strength that surpassed his own, just this unprecedented aura meant that it wouldn't be too long before he was surpassed!

Soaring Feather floated beside Astral Vault, her white clothes swirling about her. Her entire being seemed to blend into the Heavenly Dao. At this time, she was looking at those endless golden bubbles that remained after the tribulation clouds of the highest heavens dissipated. She was silent; no one knew just what she was thinking.

Then at this moment, strong winds appeared in the skies. A giant golden vortex formed around Lin Ming. Those endless golden bubbles began to roll towards him like sparrows flying back to their nest.

Lin Ming took a long breath and stretched out his body. Those millions and billions of golden bubbles sank into his body, vanishing from sight like snowflakes falling into the sea.

But as more and more golden bubbles submerged into Lin Ming, his body began to shine with an all-powerful light, as if he were a dawning sun.

As Lin Ming soaked in this golden divine light, he truly seemed like a divine god that had descended to the world. It was hard for others not to prostrate themselves in worship to him.

This light continued for a quarter hour before slowly fading away.

Everyone knew that this light was the final brilliance of the heavenly tribulation's Great Dao Laws. Now, all of it had been absorbed by Lin Ming.

These Laws were the highest Laws of the 33 Heavens!

Besides Lin Ming himself, no one knew just how great his harvests were. Not even Astral Vault knew; all he could do was watch on with greedy eyes.

Starlight sprinkled down and black clothes whipped in the wind. Lin Ming fell down from the highest nine heavens. His every action and movement caused the surrounding Laws to ripple.

All orders given must be enforced, his body moved the Laws themselves!

"Lin Ming!"

As Lin Ming fell back down, Xiao Moxian couldn't help but call out to him. She was already extremely excited, and beside her, Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, and the others were also watching with bright eyes, as if tears would fall at any moment.

They were able to see the man they loved most become the hero of their race and his achievements be glorified by countless people. Just what else could they ask for?

"Hahahaha! Lin Ming, from this day forth, humanity's destiny will experience a great reversal!"

Empyrean Vast Universe laughed as he spoke.

"Lin Ming, you have always been a legend, but in the past your legend would only have been able to be passed on for a billion years. However from this day on, your legend will continue onwards for 10 billion years!"

Dark Demon Monarch highly praised. Just what sort of concept was a 10 billion year legend? 10 billion years ago, the entire 33 Heavens had been filled with life and martial arts civilization blossomed throughout like bright flowers, a golden age of prosperity.

In that era, countless peerless ancient proud sons of heavens had appeared. They fought against each other, fought against the heavens, fought against fate, but in the end they all faded away in the endless dust of time.

Only the existences like the Asura Road Master and the creator of the Holy Scripture, Immortal Sovereign, were able to preserve their legends. And the reason they managed to do so was because they each separately created the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe.

Because of these two lands of inheritance, countless martial artists had obtained massive advantages from within for the last 10 billion years. Thus, the legends of the Asura Road Master and Immortal Sovereign were passed down and continued.

Therefore the words of Dark Demon Monarch were the same as placing Lin Ming at the same height as Immortal Sovereign and the Asura Road Master!

This was a terrifying appraisal!

Many rulers of humanity came forwards to congratulate Lin Ming. For a time, the sounds of congratulations and well wishes lingered in the air, as all of the human martial artists jubilantly celebrated.

But then, a cold voice sounded out, “Lin Ming, I indeed haven’t misread you!”

Lin Ming looked up. A peerless woman in white clothes stood not too far away from him; she was Soaring Feather God King!

The atmosphere quickly chilled. All of the cheerful human martial artists suddenly stopped talking.

Everyone looked towards Soaring Feather God King together, all of them on high alert!

“Hahaha, boy, I acknowledge that you are strong, the strongest Empyrean that I have ever seen, but so what!” From behind Soaring Feather, Astral Vault stepped forwards and faced Lin Ming. Although his tone of voice was arrogant and proud, he was vigilant. It was clear that he had truly regarded Lin Ming as worthy, or at least an opponent who possessed great potential.

“I have already foreseen that you are a dragon in a pool. Over 6000 years ago, I was not able to kill you. I likely missed my best chances to eliminate you, and probably my only chance.”

As Soaring Feather God King spoke these words, the human martial artists all glowered at her. In particular, Xiao Moxian hatefully glared at Soaring Feather God King, so angry that her teeth itched.

That's right, it was because of Soaring Feather God King that Lin Ming's life or death was uncertain for over 6000 years, causing her heart to remain broken for all that time!

But Lin Ming's complexion remained indifferent. He said, "You represent the interests of the saints and I represent the interests of my race. In war, there has never been right or wrong to begin with. Over 6000 years ago, you missed your chance to kill me, but in the future I might not miss the chance to kill you."

Lin Ming's words were light, without any killing intent. Soaring Feather didn't respond, but, Astral Vault actually scowled!

"You crazy boy! Do you really think I can't do anything to you today?"

"You can try." Lin Ming said without fear. After fusing the six Dao Palaces of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and also absorbing the countless Great Dao Law fragments of the 33 Heavens, his blood had long since been boiling over. It could even be said that he desired to fight a True Divinity to test the limits of his strength!

"Heh!" Astral Vault God King sneered and his body erupted with killing intent! In truth, he also knew that he would have to fight a round with Lin Ming otherwise it would have been impossible for them to simply come and leave. If others knew that they came and watched the show only to immediately scurry away right afterwards, wouldn't they be made the jokes of the world?

People would only think that he, the great Astral Vault, was afraid of Lin Ming.

Astral Vault couldn't bear to have such a misunderstanding. He wanted to fight Lin Ming frontally!

Although with Divine Dream here, there was no way he could kill Lin Ming. But, he could still show off his momentum and suppress Lin Ming's arrogance before walking away. Only like that would he be able to maintain his honor.

But at this time, Soaring Feather God King reached out a hand and blocked Astral Vault.

"What are you blocking me for?" Astral Vault God King said, frowning.

Soaring Feather God King didn't respond to him. Rather, she turned to Lin Ming and said, "Where is my apprentice Fairy Blue Lotus? Hand her over!"

Lin Ming faced Soaring Feather and didn't agree or refuse her request. Rather, he asked, "If I hand her over, what conditions can you use to exchange?"

MW Chapter 2061

Chapter 2061 – Lin Ming's Conditions

…

…

…

"Exchange…"

Soaring Feather God King looked at Lin Ming, her gaze as sharp as an arrow. Her eyes locked onto him, but he stared back at her without fear, calmly speaking to her.

"Truly heroes come from the young. You do not fear that the fish die and I do not fear that the net breaks. Since we can't come to terms, let us fight it out here!"

As Soaring Feather spoke her entire body emitted a dense killing intent. In the skies, thick waves of feathers fell down; this was Soaring Feather's divine feather force field!

This divine feather force field could easily cover an area of several hundred thousand miles and even a million miles. It easily covered this star territory, shrouding over the entire human base!

As long as the True Divinities and Lin Ming fought here, this would be a ruinous strike upon the human fleet!

However, as Soaring Feather's force field fell down, black mist began rising up from below within this star territory. This mist was incomparably thick, each wisp of it as heavy as a star. After the mist appeared, the space around it became incredibly dense; for a time, not even Soaring Feather God King's force field was able to cover it!

This was Lin Ming's grandmist space!

Grandmist energy was the most source chaos from the formation of the universe. It contained infinite materials and all tangible things in existence had evolved from grandmist energy.

The grandmist space around Lin Ming was no longer what it used to be. Lin Ming had fused the Asura Laws into it. With the grandmist space integrated with the highest Laws of the universe, this allowed it to undergo a qualitative change!

Although the energy was the same and the matter was the same, after being driven by different Laws, the might behind it was completely dissimilar.

This was the difference from a high quality arrow being shot out by an ordinary bow and then being shot out by an unparalleled god bow. The difference was not just a little bit.

"Mm?" Soaring Feather frowned.

And at this time, a rainbow layer of light appeared above Lin Ming's grandmist space!

This rainbow layer of light was as ephemeral as a dream, beautiful and phantasmic. After it covered the grandmist space, the incredibly heavy grandmist space obtained infinite changes making it nearly impossible to deal with. This was Divine Dream's divine dream space!

Lin Ming and Divine Dream, their two force fields fused together, becoming as immovable as an eternal mountain. Soaring Feather's divine feather force field was no longer able to push further down, but was instead forced back again and again!

As long as the divine feather force field couldn't gather together then the human fleet could absolutely safely evacuate through gaps in the grandmist space and divine dream space. As for Divine Dream and Lin Ming, they only had to persist for a period of time, waiting for everyone to leave before they could fight Astral Vault and Soaring Feather without any scruples!

Seeing Soaring Feather suppressed by the joint strength of these two people, Astral Vault God King grimaced. Force fields were not his expertise. Although he possessed an unimaginably powerful mortal body and physical strength, it was hard for him to play a role in the current situation and help Soaring Feather.

Astral Vault said, “Soaring Feather, why are you wasting so much time talking to them. Let’s fight instead!”

To martial artists, words were only empty air.

All that mattered was strength!

Even if they couldn’t kill these two, suppressing them was more than enough.

Martial artists all had their proud hearts. If their skills truly were inferior to others’ then they had no choice but to believe they were smaller and also be the ones to yield.

For instance, If Lin Ming really suffered disastrous defeat beneath the hands of Astral Vault of Soaring Feather and the disparity was also enormous, then he would inevitably be forced to release Darkmoon, Highsun, and Blue Lotus without any conditions. Otherwise everyone would only think that Lin Ming was a sore loser whose actions were too shameful.

However, Soaring Feather actually looked at Lin Ming and said, “What are your conditions?”

Soaring Feather had actually yielded a step and planned on negotiating conditions with Lin Ming?

Astral Vault was startled. Even the human martial artists were surprised.

Soaring Feather and Astral Vault had originally menacingly rushed into the Hidden Dragon Galaxy. According to logic and how events had played out in the past between the humans and saints, then Astral Vault and Soaring Feather should have started a massacre in the Hidden Dragon Galaxy and taken away Fairy Blue Lotus with absolute strength.

At the very least they could have used their strength to threaten the humans and force them to release their captives. Afterwards, they could leave again, and perhaps somewhere in the middle they would show off their skills by fighting with Divine Dream and the others.

But, if Soaring Feather and Astral Vault paid a certain price to exchange for Blue Lotus, Darkmoon, and Highsun, then that would simply be too disgraceful. They were two True Divinities and there was only one enemy True Divinity!

Astral Vault didn’t believe that Soaring Feather could endure this insult, even if she believed that Lin Ming was a dragon in a deep pool and didn’t want to offend him, even if she believed that with Divine Dream here it would be impossible to kill Lin Ming.

But Soaring Feather was a God King and her innermost heart had its own lofty pride. It was impossible for her to take repeated concessions.

Standing on the sidelines and watching as Lin Ming broke into the Empyrean realm was one thing. First, this was because attacking Lin Ming at this time was no accomplishment at all, but instead a choice only filled with disadvantages. Secondly, attacking a junior as he went through his breakthrough was something that didn't align with Soaring Feather's proud heart.

But now, it was strange for Soaring Feather to yield once more.

The truth was that she was the youngest of the saint race's three True Divinities; she was only 15 million years old.

When she was a World King the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had long been a True Divinity and also the highest ruler of the saints.

In the past, when the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was recruiting troops he had taken an interest in Soaring Feather's peerless talent and had opened up a number of extremely generous conditions with the ultimate objective for her to break into the True Divinity realm. Soaring Feather would have had to leave her sect and enter the Good Fortune Saint Palace, becoming a direct disciple of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

However, this offer had been refused by Soaring Feather and she ultimately relied upon her own strength to break into the True Divinity realm.

This part of history was something that many saint martial artists didn't know of and Soaring Feather wouldn't speak of this either. However, Astral Vault God King had been a saint True Divinity during this period and knew clearly what had occurred.

Moreover, he knew that although the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wasn't able to recruit Soaring Feather, he still gave her a helping hand. After all, Soaring Feather's sect had been far too weak compared to the Good Fortune Saint Palace. Such a sect was unable to support a talent like Soaring Feather in becoming a True Divinity.

This was also the reason Soaring Feather owed the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign a favor.

Over 6000 years ago when the great calamity of humanity arrived, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had fought the primal god race. Lin Ming and the primal god race had joined forces, and with the aid of the Asura Decrees they had wounded the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. Due to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's fear of the Soul Emperor he had no choice but to retreat deep into the void while his wounds mended.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had requested Soaring Feather to come forwards and hunt down Lin Ming. The reason the proud Soaring Feather with her identity as a True Divinity would chase down and kill a Holy Lord realm junior was because of this favor.

Lin Ming said, “I can release Blue Lotus, Highsun, and Darkmoon, but my condition is that you and Astral Vault God King both withdraw from the war between the saints and humanity!”

Lin Ming’s words resonated with power. But, these terms caused Soaring Feather’s complexion to turn icy cold.

And beside her, Astral Vault God King was also enraged.

This Lin Ming, just who did he think he was? What rights did he have to say this!?

Soaring Feather and Astral Vault originally didn’t want to participate in this great war between humanity and the saints. But because of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s request and because of favors they had received in the past, they had reluctantly joined.

Since they had already joined, how could they withdraw from this war just because of some words from Lin Ming, someone who was just a junior from the enemy side? If this were to be known then others would call it the greatest joke in the world.

Even if Soaring Feather attached an immense importance to her disciple Fairy Blue Lotus’s life, for Lin Ming to raise such conditions in front of everyone, she would still refuse them.

This was her principle as well as her bottom line.

Not to mention Soaring Feather and Astral Vault, even the human martial artists thought that Lin Ming's words were a bit too much. If Soaring Feather and Astral Vault were to agree like this and scurry away with their tails between their legs, could they even be called martial artists?

Seeing Soaring Feather's simmering killing intent, Lin Ming said, "Don't be in a hurry, I haven't finished stating my conditions. Once you and Astral Vault withdraw, I will also withdraw. And, I guarantee that besides the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign who I have a great enmity with, I will no longer strike out against saint martial artists unless they offend me or wish to harm me. And once the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign leaves seclusion and when I believe the time is right, I will seek out the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign for a showdown!"

Lin Ming's words were shocking. From carefully analyzing them, one could make out many different meanings within.

He classified his showdown with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign as his own personal grudge, separating it from the war between humanity and the saints.

Over 6000 years ago when Soaring Feather hunted down Lin Ming, that grudge was not placed on Soaring Feather, but was instead diverted to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

Finally, Lin Ming's words meant that even if humanity was victorious, even if Lin Ming could reach the same realm as the Asura Road Master, he still wouldn't launch war against the saints nor did he have any intentions of exterminating them from the 33 Heavens.

This was because he had already promised that besides the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and those other saints that provoked or attempted to harm him, he wouldn't move against any other members of the saint race.

In truth, most saints were innocent. Even those saint warriors that slaughtered humans still had family members and children that were innocent.

Lin Ming didn't wish to deprive countless people in the 33 Heavens of life and happiness.

This universe had already suffered enough devastation. In the endless flow of time, there were countless races that had been erased from history.

Even in the future, there would still be races destroyed and new races rising in their place.

But at the very least, Lin Ming didn't wish to have the sin of an entire race disappearing on his hands.

For a time, everyone was amazed by Lin Ming's proposal, even Empyrean Divine Dream. But she immediately understood Lin Ming's plan.

In Lin Ming's eyes, there was only one singular true great enemy in the saint race – that was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

As long as the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was dealt with then the war between humanity and the saints would naturally come to a conclusion.

And if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign couldn't be dealt with, then no matter how many victory songs humanity sung or how much they won, all of it would be meaningless!

Like this, Lin Ming continuing to involve himself in the war between humanity and the saints was also pointless.

It could even be said that the gains weren't equal to the losses. This was because fighting people that he could instantly kill did not help sharpen his strength.

What he wanted was a greater challenge.

At this moment, Divine Dream had a premonition that Lin Ming would leave soon.

Before the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, this calamity of humanity would no longer be able to provide enough space for Lin Ming to grow. But he also knew that once he left, it would be incredibly difficult for Divine Dream to face two enemies by herself. Thus, forcing Soaring Feather and Astral Vault out from this war would be the last matter he completed for the human race before he left.

MW Chapter 2062

Chapter 2062 – Talks Collapse

…

…

…

“You want us, along with you, to withdraw from the war between humanity and the saints?”

Astral Vault frowned. He didn’t like being led along by others. This feeling was like he was simply following whatever decision Lin Ming chose, like he were taking orders. Wasn’t this just disgraceful?

“And Divine Dream?”

Soaring Feather’s eyes flashed to the side of Lin Ming.

At this time, Divine Dream was standing not too far away from Lin Ming. She remained silent, a vision of white, waiting for Lin Ming to answer for her.

“Senior Divine Dream will continue to remain involved in the war between humanity and the saints in order to make up for the difference in strength. The ones withdrawing will be you, me, and Astral Vault, three people altogether.”

Lin Ming confidently stated. The saints had far more Empyreans than humanity. Without Divine Dream here to keep the balance, humanity would be unable to engage the saints on the battlefield.

However, as these words fell into the ears of Soaring Feather and Astral Vault it actually grated upon their ears!

“What did you just say?” Astral Vault’s tone suddenly turned cold.

Originally, Astral Vault wasn’t particularly willing to accept Lin Ming’s proposition to withdraw from the war because he didn’t like being led along by a junior. But now that he heard the deal wouldn’t be equal, he was even angrier!

Could they really allow Divine Dream, a True Divinity powerhouse, to freely slaughter their saint Empyreans!?

Lin Ming said, “In this world there always exists the principle of equal exchange. In a war between races, however much war strength humanity takes out will also be the same that the saints take out. This is a fair concept.”

It would probably have been better if Lin Ming didn’t explain himself because once he did, Astral Vault began to emit a dense killing intent.

Astral Vault’s complexion was dark as he grimly said, “So you are saying that you alone are equal to me and Soaring Feather, so the three of us withdrawing together is an equal exchange?”

Lin Ming glanced at Astral Vault. “You can also understand the situation like this. In this deal, my withdrawal also means the withdrawal of Famine’s avatar. Moreover… just I alone may not necessarily make up for the loss of war strength created by the withdrawal of you and Soaring Feather from the war. At this moment I certainly cannot fight one against two, but with enough time, I believe that will be possible.”

Lin Ming provoked again and again. Astral Vault finally couldn’t withstand it; he was like a powder keg ready to explode. His face twisted into a fierce visage, his expression as if he were about to step forward and strangle Lin Ming.

“You are courting death!”

Astral Vault finally reached his limit. With a loud crackling sound his mortal body began to grow. From between his eyebrows, a mysterious nine dragon design appeared. With it, ancient runes appeared all over his body and his crystalline skin began to turn a faint blood red.

Astral Vault God King had already activated the strength of his bloodline and had begun the saint race's body metamorphosis!

A great battle was ready to erupt at any moment!

Lin Ming's eyes shined bright. In truth he had long expected that battle was inevitable!

Words could be a sharp weapon, but in negotiations between martial artists, strength was always what decided victory and defeat. If words weren't enough to convince others then they could only overpower each other by force!

Lin Ming wanted to use the price of his withdrawal to exchange for the withdrawal of Soaring Feather and Astral Vault. If they didn't fight then this deal would be impossible, because whether it was Soaring Feather or Astral Vault, their prideful hearts would not allow them to agree to such a deal.

And at this time, Soaring Feather also stepped forwards. Her white clothes fluttered about her and her long hair danced in the wind. Thick feathers fell around her; it was clear that she wouldn't agree to these conditions.

She didn’t want to involve herself in this war between the saints and humanity to begin with. She understood that this war was in truth nothing more than the ambitions of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

But in the end, she was also a saint martial artist. She didn’t wish to see the saints be defeated by humanity.

She wouldn’t stand by idly as Divine Dream suppressed her people with a superiority in absolute strength.

As Soaring Feather displayed her force field, Divine Dream also drew out her sword. Beneath the starlight her appearance was sharp and fierce, just like a 10,000 year old shard of glacial ice.

A four person battle between three True Divinities and Lin Ming was about to explode at any moment!

But at this time, Lin Ming actually stopped Divine Dream. “Senior Divine Dream, allow me to handle this. These conditions were originally between me and two saint True Divinities. If you involve yourself in this then it will be impossible to convince them. Even if we win, it will only be the same as you and me as well as Astral Vault and Soaring Feather all withdrawing from the great calamity.”

Lin Ming calmly said. Astral Vault sneered, “So what if you join forces? Do you think that you two joining forces will be able to defeat us joining forces?”

“Whoever is weaker, we will only know upon fighting!” Lin Ming indifferently replied. He looked towards Astral Vault, his eyes blazing with fighting spirit. “I alone will fight you two. Of course, it will be one at a time. I won’t use Famine’s avatar as the price for fighting me one at a time!”

Famine’s avatar contained a dreadful war potential. In the hands of the Good Fortune Saint Son, it had a strength close or even near that of a middle True Divinity.

But in Lin Ming’s hands, he had already drawn out a massive amount of the avatar’s flesh and blood essence energy. The avatar’s strength had fallen precipitously but even so it could still be considered a formidable existence amongst lower True Divinities.

Although Famine’s avatar had weakened, Lin Ming was far stronger than the Good Fortune Saint Son. Whether it was in soul force or fusion compatibility, he was leagues ahead of the Good Fortune Saint Son.

In Lin Ming’s hands, lower True Divinity Famine would be able to display a war strength far higher than what the Good Fortune Saint Son displayed!

If Lin Ming were able to fight Astral Vault or Soaring Feather, then with Famine's avatar added on he might be able to use its immense strength and massive size to fight one against two.

"Good! Very good! Then I will fight you! As long as you have strength that can match mine then I will withdraw from the war between humanity and the saints! Not just that, but I will also make a vow that in the future, if I attack any human influence that doesn't have ill intent towards me or provokes me then my foundation will crack and my cultivation will be crippled!

"In addition, if I cannot defeat you then my two useless disciples will also withdraw from the war and return to honestly cultivate in earnest, never coming back out to disgrace themselves lest they are captured and used to threaten me again!"

Astral Vault God King was finally moved to true anger.

Lin Ming said, "Very well! A promise is a promise! Since that's the case then I will promise that if you keep up your end of the bargain I will have the Legion of Famine withdraw too, no longer joining the great battle between humanity and the saints and only using them to protect my family."

Since Lin Ming said he would withdraw from the war between humanity and the saints, he would do so thoroughly. In this regard, the Legion of Famine could also be considered a part of his strength, and he wouldn't play word games concerning this.

As he spoke, Lin Ming turned to Soaring Feather. Soaring Feather remained silent; this was the same as agreeing to these conditions.

As for things like contracts, there was no need to sign them. Whether it was Lin Ming or these two True Divinities, they were all prideful individuals in their hearts and their word was more precious than stars; they wouldn't renege on their promises.

Taking a step back, even if one side went back on their word then the other side could tear apart the agreement and rejoin the war; there wouldn't be any losses.

Lin Ming silently drew out the Black Dragon Spear. His figure flashed and he had already crossed through the starry skies, flying thousands of miles away.

A True Divinity level battle was no trifling matter. He didn't want the human juniors to be drawn in, otherwise the energy shockwaves would reduce them to ashes.

Divine Dream was easily able to create a force field a hundred miles wide around the battlefield to shelter the human martial artists.

Astral Vault narrowed his eyes. Looking at Lin Ming a hundred miles away, he quietly drew out a dark gold heavy sword. This heavy sword was a True Divinity spirit treasure!

Astral Vault was someone who had reached the limits of the body transformation system!

“Be careful, he isn’t simple!”

Soaring Feather said with a sound transmission.

“I know! Although I don’t want to acknowledge it, I can see from the phenomena that occurred during this boy’s Empyrean heavenly tribulation that he has some measure of skill. But, so what? If we don’t fight then we’ll never know who is weaker and who is stronger.

“At least, in the last tens of millions of years I have never truly engaged in brutal battle with someone! That woman Divine Dream simply never fought me at all. She only used those damned illusions to play with me, and now my belly’s long been full of fire!”

Astral Vault God King’s fighting intent was already boiling over. He lifted his golden heavy sword and slowly flew towards Lin Ming.

At this time, all the human martial artists looked upon Astral Vault God King’s back and held their breath. They had naturally clearly heard the negotiations between Lin Ming and the two saint True Divinities, and they knew that this battle concerned the future of the human race!

MW Chapter 2063

Chapter 2063 – Fighting Astral Vault

…

…

…

In a sea of stars, Lin Ming and Astral Vault stood a mere 10 miles apart from each other.

The starlight was misty and the killing intent was solemn. Because of the invisible energy it was as if this entire space had become denser.

Everyone was focused on this fight. Divine Dream had already released her force field to protect the human elites.

Lin Ming was the spiritual leader of humanity. Just after breaking into the Empyrean realm, he now welcomed a battle against a God King!

At this time, Astral Vault God King had his great arms crossed against his chest, his massive golden sword pressed against his body. This action wasn't because he looked down on Lin Ming, but because this was the initial battle stance of the True Divinity cultivation method that Astral Vault God King trained in – the Astral Vault Saint Body. When his arms were crossed together, while it didn't seem that his movements could be fast, the truth was that this stance unified the astral essence within his body and formed a type of potential.

As for Lin Ming, his battle stance was much more common. He flew high in the air, his hand extended diagonally, pointing the spear point down towards the void. His eyes were closed as he locked onto the surrounding space with his divine sense. To a martial artist on the level of Lin Ming, there was no difference between opening and closes their eyes. However, closing his eyes allowed him to better calm his mind, forming a more perfect union within the universe of his body and the universe of the world.

This was a stance of becoming one with the heavens and earth, also a peak manifestation of the Asura Laws and Holy Scripture Laws!

The world seemed to come to a standstill for this single frame of time.

Bang!

Astral Vault God King was the first to act. His movements were sudden and his speed immediately reached the peak!

Astral Vault God King was someone who had reached the peak in the body transformation system. In terms of Laws and force fields he might be at a disadvantage, but in terms of physique, he nearly reached the peak of the universe.

A powerful body brought him not just terrifying strength but also unparalleled speed!

No one could see just how Astral Vault God King had launched an attack when his arms were crossed against his chest. The Empyreans present also saw a flash as Astral Vault God King turned into a beam of light that hurtled forwards!

The potential that Astral Vault God King had gathered with the initial battle stance of the Astral Vault Saint Body was completely poured into this strike. And, what he attacked Lin Ming with was not the golden sword in his hand, but his fist!

In fact, for someone like Astral Vault God King, his mortal body could already compare favorably with a True Divinity spirit treasure. There was no difference in striking power between his fist and sword!

The void collapsed. Space storms swept out and rolled forwards. These storms gathered together, merging with Astral Vault God King's potential. At this moment it was like Lin Ming wasn't facing a fist, but a falling star!

Everyone held their breath. This was the disparity between a True Divinity and an Empyrean. Facing Astral Vault God King's fist, nearly all of the Empyreans couldn't help but think that his strike would be impossible to resist. This feeling was no different from a mortal facing landslides and tsunamis; it was impossible to struggle!

And at this time, Lin Ming also moved. Like a Divine Dragon awaked from its slumber, his eyes flashed open!

Lin Ming thrust out his spear, his strike colliding with Astral Vault God King’s fist.

In that terrifying impact, endless space and time storms shattered. All that was left over was the great momentum formed within Astral Vault God King’s fist, smashing into Lin Ming’s Black Dragon Spear.

A clash of fist and spear!

Chi –

A powerful pressure caused the Black Dragon Spear to distort; it bent like a drawn bow.

But at the same time, Astral Vault God King’s protective astral essence was also pierced through, leaving behind golden bloodstains on his hand.

These bloodstains burned in astral essence like a mass of divine flame, emitting an all-powerful light as if suns were exploding.

Bang!

The two separated. The Black Dragon Spear whipped back to its straight form. Astral Vault God King and Lin Ming flew back several hundred miles before pausing in the void!

In this one strike, no one had been able to harm the other. But, many human martial artists had cold beads of sweat dripping down their foreheads. This Astral Vault God King was simply too terrifying. Although they didn't know what rank Lin Ming's black spear was, they faintly knew that it must be a True Divinity spirit treasure of the highest caliber. But, Astral Vault God King had actually used his fist to contend with this spear; just how powerful was his mortal body!?

Although Astral Vault God King's fist had been injured, what followed was…

Everyone looked towards Astral Vault God King and saw him wave his right hand. The bloodstains on his fist had solidified and the golden blood was being absorbed back through his skin. The wound on his hand regenerated at a visible speed and soon it disappeared altogether.

Seeing such a frightening bodily recovery ability, the human martial artists present all felt weak at heart. This person possessed a mortal body with a dreadful defensive capability that could resist a True Divinity spirit treasure and also had a formidable regeneration ability; this was simply the perfect defense! For the human Empyreans present, even if this type of enemy were to stand still and allow them to strike him, they still wouldn't be able to do anything to him.

Was this Astral Vault God King's strength?

Indeed, there were no weaklings amongst those that were able to become a True Divinity.

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes and looked at Astral Vault God King's right hand. He said in a soft voice, "So that's how it is. In terms of mortal body intensity, you already far surpass the rank of a lower True Divinity..."

Every True Divinity had their own special skills. For instance, the spiritas' Great Brahmic God King excelled in the aspect of the mind and spiritual sea. Empyrean Divine Dream had balanced her development of the essence gathering system and soul forging system and was able to show countless variations of styles, making it impossible for Astral Vault God King to do anything. Soaring Feather God King was also similar to Divine Dream. She was skilled in spiritual sea and illusions, and even had high attainments of the body.

As for Astral Vault God King, he cultivated his body only. To become a True Divinity with his body alone, he used a single cultivation system to resist the other two. From this, it could be seen just how great Astral Vault God King's mortal bodily strength was. This sort of person had peerless talent in the body transformation system and he was someone who displayed this talent to the extreme!

“My mortal body intensity actually goes beyond that of a True Divinity spirit treasure. But, True Divinity spirit treasures are simply objects. Destroying them, while not easy, can still be achieved. As for me, I am skilled in all sorts of cultivation methods and different skills. With my mortal body, once I pour in astral essence and revolve the Astral Vault Saint Body, the intensity of my body will increase by ten times! Your attacks are strong, but if you cannot break through my defenses then everything you try will be futile!”

Astral Vault God King sneered. Even the human True Divinity Divine Dream wasn’t able to harm him and had only trapped him in her illusions.

“I see…” Lin Ming didn’t have any expression. So what if Astral Vault’s mortal body was strong? His mortal body was also strong and it was also incredibly formidable. In particular, after opening another Dao Palace, what Lin Ming desired was to engage in frontal battle with a body transformation master!

At that moment, six Dao Palaces opened within Lin Ming’s body! Behind him, nine brilliant stars appeared. Endless starlight poured into Lin Ming, merging into those six Dao Palaces!

Even Lin Ming’s Black Dragon Spear started to shine with blinding starlight, scattering a luminous silvery brilliance all around. The Black Dragon Spear was a peak True Divinity spirit treasure, but if he couldn’t pour enough strength into it then its power would be greatly reduced.

Now, after pouring in starlight, the Black Dragon Spear seemed to come alive. Ringing cries of a dragon howled out from the spear, resounding through the void into the vastness of space.

Astral Vault God King narrowed his eyes. “You want to compete with me using body transformation? Haha, then bring it on!”

As Astral Vault God King spoke, he bellowed out and smashed his fist down at Lin Ming!

Lin Ming slashed out his spear in response!

Bang!

This was the second time the two clashed. Golden astral essence and silver starlight turned into a horrifying energy storm that swept outwards!

This time, the Black Dragon Spear didn’t bend. It seemed as if it truly had become an unrivalled Divine Dragon, capable of shattering stars!

Astral Vault God King was a body transformation God King and his speed neared the limits of possibility. But Lin Ming was actually no worse, completely able to keep up with Astral Vault God King’s speed!

The two of them engaged in a brutal melee of speed. However, their striking power wasn't exchanged as a price for this speed. In fact, every time they clashed, their strikes would cause an energy storm to sweep outwards. Each time a storm was born it would persist for a long time. From far away, it seemed as if the entire distant skies were covered with giant gold and silver vortexes!

A nearly thousand mile large meteor was sucked into this gold and silver vortex and immediately burst into fragments before being reduced to dust.

This boggled the mind. How could the attacks of these two be so terrifying? If some of the weaker Empyreans present were drawn in, they wouldn't even have their bones left!

With such high speed attacks and every attack having so much power behind it, just how could anyone fight them!?

"Hahaha! Great! Wonderful!" Astral Vault God King wildly roared. For him to laugh so recklessly in the midst of such fierce combat proved that he still had ample strength remaining.

Amid this great laughter, Astral Vault God King's body emitted crackling from all over. His body started to grow and a faint red glow covered his body. The mystical symbol that appeared between his eyebrows before showed once again; he had completed his bloodline body metamorphosis!

Bang!

The void exploded. After transforming, Astral Vault God King was able to punch open a black hole in the void with his strikes. Lin Ming rapidly drew backwards!

Lin Ming grasped his spear, his eyes blazing brilliantly at Astral Vault God King!

This was the first time that Astral Vault God King had used the heavy sword in his hands!

This heavy sword seemed no different from a door and the blade was even longer than a man's height. But, as Astral Vault God King held this heavy sword, this incredible length seemed just right.

This heavy sword was dark gold in color and didn't seem different from an ordinary sword. However, Lin Ming discovered that when light flowed over this sword, it actually seemed to curve as if it were being drawn in by it.

Or, perhaps the space surrounding the sword itself was distorted.

"This sword's name is – Dark Star!" Astral Vault God King had a proud smile as he saw Lin Ming looking at his sword.

“When I was stepping into True Divinity, I once went into seclusion on a dark star. Using the dark star’s terrifying gravity I tempered my own mortal body. After I truly broke into the realm of True Divinity, before I left, I used all of my strength to pull out a piece of matter from this dark star, a piece that was three inches wide, a foot long, and considerably thick. After I returned, I went into seclusion for another thousand years to use this dark star material to create a thin and long sword form. Using this sword form as the base, I cast an immense amount of golden gem demonic steel atop it, finally forging it into a heavy sword! I did not refine it nor did I carve any demonic runes on its surface. While this is a True Divinity spirit treasure it actually doesn’t have any supernatural abilities or array formations within. But, with its terrifying weight alone as well as its incredible hardness, it is the best weapon for me!”

As Astral Vault spoke, many people were bewildered.

Dark star? What was that?

MW Chapter 2064

Chapter 2064 – Sword Potential Sealed

…

…

…

“Dark star… that is a celestial body evolved from an old fire star. Empyreans with insufficient cultivation cannot hope to approach one…”

On the human side, Great Limitless Buddha began to slowly explain. Many junior human martial artists simply didn’t know what a dark star was. In fact, within the wild universe they had never seen such a celestial body before.

The gravitational force of a dark star was far too terrifying. If the tiniest speck of material were placed on an ordinary planet it would still be heavier than a mountain range.

If a normal martial artist were to land on a dark star, or even if they approached too closely, then entire bodies would be torn to pieces by the immense gravitational force. Yet, Astral Vault was able to rip out a piece of this matter and cast it into a divine sword. It was hard to imagine just what boundary his mortal body had reached…

“In order to train a transcendent divine body, he actually cultivated on a dark star to temper his mortal body. Not just that, but he even ripped out a part of that dark star to forge an incomparably heavy weapon. That is just the actions of a crazy man.” Lin Ming muttered to himself, narrowing his eyes as he stared at the sword in Astral Vault God King’s hands. In terms of quality it might be inferior to his own Black Dragon Spear, but in terms of weight, it was many times heavier, and the Black Dragon Spear was already heavy enough to be a pillar that supported the heavens!

If such a sword were to be slashed out at high speed then the might it would display was unimaginable.

Then, Astral Vault God King moved.

He wielded the Dark Star Sword and chopped down!

The speed of the sword wasn’t fast, but it contains the overwhelming momentum of Astral Vault God King’s attack. It locked down the surrounding void, making it so that no one could dodge!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank and he rapidly stormed backwards. At the same time, his entire body emitted loud crackling sounds as crimson scales appeared all over him; he had used the strength of the Asura blood.

Kacha!

The cage of space was shattered and Astral Vault God King's sword struck empty space.

A terrifying potential erupted. Astral Vault God King's sword strike slashed open the horizon, forming a massive black gap. Titanic space storms swept out, creating a great pressure on the surrounding area.

Astral Vault God King grinned. He slashed out again and again, dozens of times, each strike like a trillion landslides, able to tear planets apart. This horrifying attack joined together into a single stretch, causing even the universe to tremble.

But Lin Ming didn't attack. He simply dodged. Although each sword strike seemed incomparably dangerous to avoid, he managed to evade every one.

"You want to consume my strength? Then let's give it a try!"

Astral Vault God King's eyes flashed with a cold brilliance. In terms of physical strength, Astral Vault God King was at the pinnacle of the saints! Astral Vault Saint Body was originally a cultivation method focused on endurance and strength; Astral Vault God King could fiercely battle for a hundred days without faltering.

Not just that, but Astral Vault God King's speed grew faster and faster! Although this Dark Star Sword was bewilderingly heavy, its potential seemed to fuse together with Astral Vault God King, as if sword and man had become one.

Ca!

A sword swept through the void, locking out all directions for Lin Ming to dodge. Without enough time to evade, Lin Ming brought up his spear!

Bang!

A horrifying weight crashed down. Even the Black Dragon Spear that had the power of starlight poured into it curved upon impact. Lin Ming's hand shook and he was sent flying away, tumbling through the starry skies like a streaking meteor.

Astral Vault God King chased forwards, sword light blazing ahead of him!

Every sword light cut open the void and left behind an alarming sword scar. Some sword scars were several hundred miles long, some were several miles long, and some were only the height of a person!

Generally speaking, when martial artists fought it wasn't difficult to tear open space, even in stable universes of the 33 Heavens. And after space was torn open there would be space storms that swept out. At the same time, these tears would rapidly regenerate; this was the self-repair ability of space.

However the space cracks cut open by Astral Vault God King seemed to persist. Once they appeared they seemed to want to regenerate, but an invisible strength prevented them, causing them to be half-regenerated and half-torn.

Slowly, more and more sword scars appeared. Hundreds and thousands of sword scars appeared, unexpectedly forming a massive dark gold net of light!

This net of light locked down the entire surrounding space!

For a time, the void became incredibly heavy and sticky. Lin Ming and Astral Vault God King were sealed within!

"These are the sword scars created by Astral Vault God King just now!?"

Some martial artists exclaimed as they realized what occurred. Astral Vault God King had struck out thousands of times just now, each sword strike creating a tear in space. People thought that these space tears were because Astral Vault God King's sword light had been too strong, but now it seemed that he had intentionally done this!

The thousands of space-time sword scars gathered together in a continuous stretch, compressing the battlefield into a radius of several hundred miles. For two True Divinity level powerhouses, an area of space that was a mere several hundred miles in radius could be passed through in a millionth of an instant; it simply couldn't even be considered a distance.

Like this, Lin Ming would be forced into the smallest range possible. While Lin Ming would find it increasingly difficult to dodge, Astral Vault God King would be able to display his strength to the limit!

"This Astral Vault is indeed terrifying. I never imagined he would have so many methods at his disposal." Skyrend Godlord commented.

"These sword scars are not normal space cracks, but a manifestation of sword potential! Each time Astral Vault strikes out, his attacks contain a great 'potential'. This sword potential lingers on in those space tears, and they remain sharp as before, constantly tearing open the space again and preventing space from repairing itself. If anyone were to run into these space tears they would also be attacked by this sword potential and there would be dreadful consequences. Although it wouldn't be the same as being directly attacked by Astral Vault's sword, it still isn't something an Empyrean would be able to withstand."

"True Divinity – there isn't a single one that is not terrifying. Astral Vault God King's attainments in force fields might not be profound, but this technique of his is able to make up for his inferiority in force fields."

Dark Demon Monarch said with a grim expression. A force field was a separate space created around a martial artist, containing Laws that were beneficial to their combat condition. Generally speaking, their usual roles were to suppress and block.

And now, these sword scars that Astral Vault God King slashed out served a similar purpose. Once the scope of the battlefield was limited to the smallest area possible, he would be able to display the greatest strength of his powerful mortal body.

But at this time, within the sealed space created by thousands of sword scars, Lin Ming was silently perceiving the surrounding Space Laws. He had locked onto every sword scar with his divine sense.

His sense penetrated into the sword scars and then out again.

Lin Ming realized that these sword scars weren't truly unbreakable, but during the time it would take him to break through the net of sword light, Astral Vault God King would seize this chance to attack him.

At this time, Astral Vault God was already hurtling towards him!

A distance of several hundred miles took less than the blink of an eye to cross. Astral Vault God King's sword slashed down, as heavy as a mountain range!

With limited space, Lin Ming no longer drew backwards. He revolved the strength within his body to the limit. The Black Dragon Spear howled out!

Bang!

Lin Ming's arms shook once more and his hands went numb. The Dark Star Sword was simply too heavy. Just the terrifying gravity of it made one feel that its strikes were impossible to withstand.

Beneath the tremendous inertia of the strike, Lin Ming was sent flying backwards whereupon he smashed into the net of sword scars.

Hualala!

The light net violently shook. The back of Lin Ming's clothes was immediately torn apart, revealing a black flexible armor. This flexible armor was also ripped open and blood began dripping down the cracks.

From just this single collision, everyone could see how horrifying this light net was. If it weren't Lin Ming but another Empyrean who had crashed into the light net they would have already been torn apart.

This was Astral Vault God King’s terrifying ability. Even after his sword strike was over it would still leave behind a sword scar that possessed a dreadful lethality. This was the might of his sword potential!

Lin Ming casually reached out a hand and tore off the torn flexible armor. His naked upper body revealed bloodstained black scales. His wounds were also visibly regenerating. However, sword potential created continuous destruction on his wounds, making it so that the rate of Lin Ming’s regeneration was much slower than Astral Vault’s.

“Lin Ming, you are finished. Although you are an outstanding existence, you will still lose to me. Although I can send you smashing into the light net again and again, using up your strength, I don’t plan to do this. I won’t give you any chance to recover!”

As Astral Vault spoke he roared out loud. His mortal body began to transform once more!

His skin became dark red and more curse seals appeared over his body. He seemed to have used an arcane skill, or perhaps it was a different variation of his body metamorphosis. But, regardless of what it was, what remained doubtless was that Astral Vault God King had become more formidable than he was a moment ago.

He was beginning to use his complete strength.

“Dark Star Disintegration!”

Astral Vault God King grasped his sword in both hands and lifted it high above his head. In that moment endless light shot out from the Dark Star Sword, covering the entire space within the light net. Then, Astral Vault God King brought the Dark Star Sword chopping wildly down, instantly slashing out a thousand times!

These 1000 sword strikes each contained 30-40% of Astral Vault God King's all-out strength. The thousand sword strikes covered the world, spreading out in all directions and blocking all.

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. From between his eyebrows, the daevic eye shined with blinding radiance. His pupils also changed, becoming the shape of a needle. Mysterious patterns surrounded his eyes. As he opened the Daevic Eye Dao palace he also used Three Lives Pupils' All Existence to Void!

Astral Vault God King had achieved the peak of physical strength, but what he sacrificed was the might of Laws.

Beneath the dual sight of Three Lives Pupil's All Existence to Void and the daevic eye, these 1000 sword lights became completely different. They seemed to spread everywhere, blotting out the skies and blocking every possible direction to dodge in, but, in Lin Ming's eyes, their formation lacked the perfection of the Laws. Some sword lights were fast and some sword lights were slow.

In chasing after an ever-stronger attack, Astral Vault God King inevitably had to sacrifice a portion of speed in his attack. This gave Lin Ming a chance that he could exploit to evade.

He stepped through the void. He was like a swallow flying through a storm as he broke into that sea of sword light!

"You want to kill yourself? Hahaha! Then come!"

Astral Vault God King laughed. If he had the chance to kill Lin Ming then he certainly wouldn't mind. But, he knew that this chance was extremely small.

However, the moment the sword light completely covered Lin Ming, an inconceivable sight occurred. Astral Vault God King watched as Lin Ming shuttled through the sword light like a fish through water, rushing through the tiniest slits to avoid over 90% of the sword light; less than 10% of it fell on Lin Ming.

And at this time, the nine great stars in the skies flashed. Starlight gathered together, condensing. Astral Vault God King's sword light net wasn't able to prevent the starlight of the highest heavens passing through. Within the infinite starry space, a star sea formed around Lin Ming.

Lin Ming slashed out his spear, pouring this star sea into his strike as he fired into Astral Vault God King's 1000 sword lights.

Star sea against sword sea!

MW Chapter 2065

Chapter 2065 – Reverse

…

…

…

Bang!

The sea of stars collided with the sword light. The sea of stars was torn apart and the sword light was also devoured. At this time, a black light shrouded over everything. The sword net that Astral Vault God King formed began to violently sway beneath this tremendous impact, and the attached sword potential also seemed as if it would soon fall apart!

In this instant, Astral Vault God King was submerged within the sea of stars.

In the endless starlight of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, Astral Vault God King felt like a mortal soaking in heavy mercury, his flesh and blood burning away!

His sword potential was diminished and his sense was also blocked by the starlight!

Divine sense was not Astral Vault God King's specialty. But even without using his sense, he could still feel Lin Ming rapidly approaching, because he could feel a dense killing intent rushing towards him!

Astral Vault God King roared out loud. He stepped forward, his Dark Star Sword slashing down!

Kacha!

That sword seemed as if it could cut apart the sun and moon. By relying on the Dark Star Sword's horrifying weight, Astral Vault God King was able to directly shear apart the sea of stars!

The Dark Star Sword collided with the black spear. The tremendous weight brought with it an overwhelming momentum. The endless power of the Nine Stars was swept up by this sword, exploding in the air!

Bang!

The black spear was smashed into a bent bow by the Dark Star Sword! The powerful backlash sent Lin Ming soaring backwards, and that overweeningly domineering astral essence struck his chest, causing him to spit out blood.

“Die!”

Astral Vault God King diabolically grinned. He knew that in that last attack his astral sword light has swept through Lin Ming!

Astral Vault God King was well aware of just how terrifying his astral sword light was; it wasn’t something that a human’s mortal body could withstand!

His body emitted explosive crackling sounds. He hurtled forwards, chasing after the victory!

Astral Vault God King slashed out his sword several times. Endless sword potential contracted, forming a special sword potential space that blocked all possible routes to evade in!

“This is bad!”

On the human side an Empyrean cried out in alarm. This sword potential space was like a giant meat grinder. Within it, sword potential cut throughout. Once one was sealed inside they would be torn into fragments by the sword potential.

Even if Lin Ming was incomparably fierce, this protective true essence would still be compressed by the sword potential and he would be restrained everywhere. If he wanted to break through the sword potential space he would need to spend a considerable amount of effort and time, but how would Astral Vault God King give him such a chance? In this sword potential space Astral Vault God King's striking power reached the zenith of his capabilities; it was fundamentally impossible for Lin Ming to avoid Astral Vault God King's attacks!

"Your blood shall be a sacrifice to my sword!"

Astral Vault God King's voice was loud and clear, like billowing waves of heavenly thunder, vast and merciless. He blazed forwards, his sword slashing down and annihilating all Laws!

But in this moment, Astral Vault God King's condensed sword potential space suddenly shook. Somehow, Lin Ming, who he had thought was trapped inside his sword potential space, suddenly used some unknown method to break free, gripping a black spear and sweeping out!

"What!?"

Astral Vault God King was simply unable to respond for a time. Although his sword potential space had trembled just then, it hadn't shattered so how had Lin Ming managed to free himself?

In the fleeting instant there was no time for him to figure out what occurred. He lifted his Dark Star Sword and astral essence burnt all over his body as he lit up like a scorching sun!

Bang!

In that wild collision, a great black wheel appeared in Lin Ming's hand. A great Asura demon that was several hundred feet tall appeared behind that wheel, slowly pushing it forwards.

The black wheel was like a grinding pan that swallowed everything before it; it constantly swallowed up the golden light emitted by Astral Vault God King!

This was Lin Ming's Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel.

The all-annihilating Asura Heavenly Dao constantly grinded down the golden runes.

Astral Vault God King roared out loud and chopped down on the black wheel.

Kacha!

The Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel shivered, however, Astral Vault God King was also struck by a backlash of the Laws. His mortal body lit up with a macabre red color and his blood vitality started to tumble about!

Astral Vault God King drew back. Beneath the tremendous impact of the Laws, his mortal body was inevitably sent flying backwards. But at this time, another killing intent appeared behind him like gods and ghosts.

“What!?”

In that instant, Astral Vault God King felt a shiver run down his back, his entire body turning ice cold!

He had been struck backwards by Lin Ming’s attack, but Lin Ming must not have felt any better. His energy was too fierce, like a star exploding; it was impossible for Lin Ming to easily block it. However, he had attacked and in a short period of time it was impossible for him to launch another move!

And at this time, from behind Astral Vault God King, Lin Ming had already grasped his spear and was rushing straight towards him. Another Asura phantom appeared behind Lin Ming, another great wheel spinning between its arms.

The difference was that this wheel was not black, but purple.

The purple wheel seemed like a soul vortex, capable of twisting everything to pieces within.

“Avatar!?”

Astral Vault God King’s thoughts raced. He realized that in that great collision just then when he had smashed into the sea of stars, Lin Ming had used the moment that his sense had been restrained to scatter out his three avatars, and Astral Vault God King hadn’t discovered this!

Lin Ming was simply far too fast. Not to mention Astral Vault God King who was submerged in the sea of stars, even those peak Empyreans that watched from far away weren’t able to see a single one of Lin Ming’s avatars.

And what was most terrifying was that Lin Ming’s avatars originated from the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws. The strength of the three avatars was directly linked to the strength of his main body. The stronger Lin Ming was, the stronger his avatars became!

Astral Vault God King straightened himself with effort and suppressed the tumbling blood vitality within him himself. Then, he struggled to launch a counterattack.

His sword slashed atop the purple wheel. This purple wheel also came from the Asura Heavenly Dao – it was the Myriad Essence Reincarnation Wheel!

Bang!

A horrifying energy erupted. Astral Vault God King's sword was unable to force back this giant wheel, but only managed to force back Lin Ming's avatar.

The Asura phantom grabbed hold of the wheel and smashed into Astral Vault God King's chest!

Puff!

Astral Vault God King spat out a mouthful of blood, his body hurtling away like a meteor!

Astral Vault God King, someone with incredible bodily strength and a mortal body that far surpassed a God Beast in intensity, had actually suffered heavy losses!

And in this moment, the fourth Lin Ming appeared!

"There's more!?"

Astral Vault God King's eyes turned blood red. Before this, Astral Vault God King had fought side-by-side with Soaring Feather God King and had engaged Empyrean Divine Dream in an exasperating guerilla war; he simply hadn't had much communication with the saints. All he knew was that after Lin Ming returned, humanity had been able to win a number of victories. However, he hadn't returned long enough to hear that Lin Ming had three avatars. And in truth, even if he knew this he still wouldn't necessarily have been able to come up with a plan to deal with them. This was because while Astral Vault God King was formidable, his fighting technique was extremely singular in both offense and defensive, and lacked the variety needed.

But Lin Ming had learned a broad depth of skills and his fighting techniques were ever-changing, making it impossible to defend against!

Astral Vault God King was no longer able to tell whether this fourth Lin Ming was an avatar or his main body. All he felt was that this approaching enemy seemed to melt into the starry skies, his body reaching the peak of speed and his attack trajectory nearly impossible to predict.

This Lin Ming didn't use a weapon, but simply used a palm to crash into Astral Vault God King!

At this moment, Astral Vault God King bit down on the tip of his tongue and forced out a drop of blood essence!

This drop of blood essence didn’t instantly burn like the blood essence of an ordinary martial artist. Rather, it turned into a golden fog of blood that covered Astral Vault God King’s body.

“Ahh!”

Astral Vault God King summoned his astral essence, attacking for the fourth time in a short period!

This sword would soon chop down on Lin Ming’s palm!

This sudden change bewildered everyone watching. They had all seen how terrifying this Dark Star Sword was. With the sword’s horrifying weight and Astral Vault God King’s all-out strength, even a royal God Beast would have all its joints and muscles broken apart, smashed into liquid mush!

A flesh and blood body was just unable to withstand this!

The moment that Lin Ming’s palm intersected with the heavy sword, a black and white yin yang diagram appeared above his palm. This yin yang diagram contained a vast aura, leaving one gasping for breath.

This was the manifestation of Lin Ming's power of divinity and demons. Astral Vault God King's sword crashed into the yin yang diagram.

Puff!

Astral Vault God King spat out a mouthful of blood; this was the backlash he suffered from summoning his astral essence while disregarding the roiling blood in his body.

This Lin Ming was once again sent soaring backwards from the tremendous impact force. But, before Astral Vault God King could catch his breath, his complexion changed once more!

He could feel a cunning and slippery strength pass through his Dark Star Sword, drilling into his flesh and blood!

"Mm!?"

Astral Vault God King froze. He discovered that in that attack just now, Lin Ming had poured a dark demonic strength into the yin yang diagram. That strength had broken into his body, carrying with it an all-destroying demonic force that actually began corroding away at his flesh and blood!

His mortal body began to lose its vitality!

This was the fusion of Lin Ming’s power of demons and the Holy Scripture Laws’ book of death. The power of death covered Astral Vault God King.

What was going on!?

Astral Vault God King was panic-stricken.

In normal times, he could transfer all the astral essence in his body and use absolute strength and his scorching sun-like blood energy to suppress this corrosive strength and burn it away.

However, because Astral Vault God King had repeatedly summoned his astral essence and even used a drop of blood essence to make four attacks, he had exceeded his limit. This caused Astral Vault God King to suffer a deficit in his blood vitality for a brief moment.

And this demonic strength took advantage of this chance to enter his body, directly attacking his life source!

Astral Vault God King’s mortal body defenses were incredibly formidable. But beneath this continuous attack of Laws, he was unable to use his powerful mortal body to resist it.

Once a deficit appeared in his blood vitality, then it wouldn’t be strong enough and every time he tried to restore some it would be corrupted and devoured by this demonic strength, becoming a part of that demonic strength. Like this, the demonic strength would continue to expand, forming a vicious cycle.

Astral Vault God King’s complexion changed!

He never imagined that this battle where he had the superiority would be reversed because of a moment of negligence!

Or it could even be said that this wasn’t a moment of negligence at all, but a trap intentionally laid down by Lin Ming!

MW Chapter 2066

Chapter 2066 – Astral Vault's Defeat

…

…

…

In fact, from the moment that Astral Vault God King had mistakenly thought Lin Ming's true self was still confined within the sword potential space, unable to do anything, Astral Vault God King had occupied the inferiority.

From a single wrong step, the entire game would topple over. Lin Ming chased after his advantage, sending out three continuous attacks and furthering his superior position, forcing Astral Vault God King to summon his blood vitality.

And in the last attack when Astral Vault God King had finally exhausted his blood vitality, Lin Ming used his killing move!

Moreover, this strike of Lin Ming's had struck Astral Vault God King where it hurt. Using the Holy Scripture's book of death and the power of demons, Lin Ming had corroded Astral Vault's diminished blood vitality, making it so that he wouldn't be able to recover from this strike.

This continuous attack had been Lin Ming's plan all along.

From the standoff to the beginning to the sudden reversal, everything had happened too suddenly.

After seizing hold of Astral Vault's mistake, Lin Ming didn't give him a chance to recover. Even the powerful Astral Vault wasn't able to find a moment to use his great strength.

Kacha!

At this time, the sword potential space that Astral Vault prepared was torn apart. A black-clothed Lin Ming broke free from that sword potential space.

This Lin Ming had a different spear in his hand. This spear was only a high-grade Empyrean spirit treasure, one obtained when he killed a peak saint Empyrean. It naturally wasn't able to resist the Dark Star Sword, not even a single strike.

Four Lin Mings scattered in all directions. Without any pause, they began to summon their strength once more.

Lin Ming's true self grasped the Black Dragon Spear and pointed it straight at Astral Vault God King, his entire body fused with a yin yang power. This was the power of divinity and demons.

As for the other three avatars, their bodies emitted three different colored energies. These energies were astral essence, true essence, and spirit essence – energies that corresponded to the Great Dao of the 33 Heavens' essence, energy, and divine.

With the four Lin Mings working together, their strength doubled over.

Seeing Lin Ming's momentum grow, Astral Vault God King's eyes flashed with rage and shame. Astral Vault was indeed incomparably powerful when it came to the mortal body, but he lacked the variation of change; this became his irredeemable shortcoming.

When a fierce tiger was tossed into the broad ocean, it wouldn't even be able to display a tenth of its strength. At the same time, a shark that was beached in the sand wouldn't be able to be a threat.

This was the disadvantage brought about by the inability to change.

But in that fight just now, Lin Ming had used clever battle techniques to fool Astral Vault; Astral Vault naturally found this hard to accept.

Astral Vault bit the tip of his tongue once more, spouting out a bit of blood essence. As this blood essence appeared it bloomed with a brilliant divine light. Beneath the shine of this divine light, the power of death within his body melted away like white snow beneath the fiery sun!

He had used the price of burning his blood essence to rapidly drive out the ruinous power of death and demons in his body.

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light. In the hands of his three avatars, three great wheels appeared. These wheels were separately black, purple, and blue.

At this time, Lin Ming naturally wouldn't give Astral Vault God King a chance to recover. But just as he was about to attack, an icy cold voice sounded out.

"Stop!"

As this icy voice echoed out, thick layers of feathers sprinkled down from the skies, covering Lin Ming and Astral Vault within and causing the entire space to become heavy and sticky, making it extremely hard and slow to revolve energy. A white-clothed woman fell down between Lin Ming and Astral Vault God King; this person was Soaring Feather God King.

"It's over. Astral Vault, you lost."

Astral Vault's blood vitality was restless and he gasped for breath like a tired cow. He had just been about to summon his astral essence and fight Lin Ming again when he had been stopped by Soaring Feather.

Clearly, he was unwilling to admit a loss.

"To burn blood essence in a martial arts contest is already disgraceful. And to burn your blood essence and still not gain the advantage, it is your loss!"

If Astral Vault could burn his essence then Lin Ming could naturally also burn his blood essence. This was originally not a great life or death war, but a battle to decide whose respective words would take precedence. If they all burnt their blood essence to fight then it would be no different from a true life or death battle with each side going all-out against each other. If this occurred then no one would be able to leave this battlefield.

In truth, after reaching the level of a True Divinity, it was rare for one to go all-out against someone else. This was because once they received an irreversible wound of some sort, this wouldn't be something that could be cured using ordinary heavenly materials. They would require True Divinity level medicines to have some sort of effect.

However, the number of True Divinity level medicines might not be any more than the number of True Divinities themselves. Sometimes even if one searched through the entire 33 Heavens it would be difficult to find one.

Even if one did find one, refining it was extremely troublesome; most alchemists did not possess the ability to do so.

Astral Vault looked at Soaring Feather and then looked at Lin Ming. Although he didn't want to acknowledge it, there was nothing he could say. What Soaring Feather said was the truth; he had already lost this battle.

He had lost to Lin Ming's planning and variety of techniques, and he was very unwilling towards this loss. But, a loss was a loss and he had no excuses to make.

Moreover, Astral Vault knew that from the start of the battle, Lin Ming had relied on his body transformation system's Nine Stars of the Dao Palace to fight him for a long time, and didn't use any other Laws.

After unsealing the divine chains of order that imprisoned the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and also fusing together six Dao Palaces, Lin Ming's Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had become one of his mightiest combat methods. He desired to see just what level his body transformation technique was at, and Astral Vault was the best experimental subject to do so with.

It had to be said that in the body transformation system, Astral Vault God King had reached the extreme. If the two people truly compared solely their body transformation techniques, Astral Vault clearly possessed a great advantage.

But in this case, although Astral Vault had been able to completely suppress Lin Ming he hadn't been able to win in a short period of time. Astral Vault had even used his bloodline body metamorphosis.

Lin Ming was a human, but with just his body transformation technique alone he was able to fight with Astral Vault to this degree. Astral Vault couldn't help but admire this.

Thus, when Soaring Feather stepped in, Astral Vault finally suppressed his tumbling astral essence and stopped. In his heart, he knew that after reaching the peak of the body transformation system, this peak had actually become his weakness. In terms of body transformation talent there was no one that could compare with him, and he was someone who had relied on body transformation alone to become a True Divinity.

This was remarkable. However, since ancient times there had been many True Divinities that dual cultivated or even triple cultivated. They understood more than one of the 33 Heaven's Laws, and such people might possess a slower cultivation speed, but after becoming a True Divinity their potential was actually greater.

Astral Vault deeply looked at Lin Ming. Then, his body turned into a beam of light and vanished into the ends of the starry skies.

This was the same as tacitly acknowledging his own defeat.

And at the same time, Soaring Feather looked towards Lin Ming.

The starry space was as dark as ink. Lin Ming held the Black Dragon Spear in his hand, his eyes deep like water.

Endless starlight sprinkled down on Lin Ming, flowing over his body like mercury.

At this moment, looking at Lin Ming in the starry skies, Soaring Feather suddenly felt an inexplicable throbbing of her heart. This sort of throbbing was a kind of strange intuition. She suddenly thought that as she stood in front of this youth, he had become the incarnation of the cosmos of the 33 Heavens, becoming a mystical and boundless being, as if today she were witnessing the birth and continuation of a legend…

“Heavenly Dao…”

Soaring Feather had a foreboding feeling in her heart. She looked up into the heavens, her faint gaze peering outwards as if she were looking towards the ends of the universe.

Perhaps in this era, there would be no calm…

She drew back from her thoughts and fixed her eyes on Lin Ming. Her red lips parted, “Ten days later, you and I will fight. This deadline should be enough for you to return to your peak state!”

Lin Ming nodded. He thought for a moment and then summoned Primordius Heavenly Palace.

After Primordius Heavenly Palace appeared it revolved, growing larger. Three figures flashed as they flew out from it.

These three people were Highsun, Darkmoon, and Fairy Blue Lotus.

At this time, Lin Ming had already drawn out the flesh and blood of Famine from their bodies, restoring to them their free will. However, their cultivations had been locked away using the Asura Heavenly Dao so none of them possessed any combat strength.

“You are free to go.”

As Lin Ming spoke, he waved his hand and pushed Fairy Blue Lotus and the others to Soaring Feather God King.

He never had the intention of holding these three people captive much longer to begin with.

However, after they had their free will restored, their memories and experiences of everything that had occurred were retained.

As they thought back to everything that had happened, the three of them felt as if they wanted to die.

In particular, Fairy Blue Lotus. As she thought of how she referred to Lin Ming and how she groveled towards him, her eyes nearly spat fire.

Deep humiliation swelled up within her heart. She wished that she could tear Lin Ming to pieces and then kill herself!

MW Chapter 2067

Chapter 2067 – Revere the Strong

…

…

…

“Master!”

As Fairy Blue Lotus saw Soaring Feather God King she knelt down within the void. Never in her entire life had she felt such profound humiliation.

After being subdued by Lin Ming she had been made into a slave for several months, calling him master while having no personality of her own. She did whatever Lin Ming wished her to do, completely at his mercy. Now she had no face to see her master!

At this time, Fairy Blue Lotus didn’t say any words such as begging Soaring Feather to take revenge and kill Lin Ming for her.

Although she was incredibly angry she hadn’t lost her sense of reasoning. Looking at the current situation, she was freed not because Soaring Feather used the threat of force, but it had instead been accomplished through negotiations.

Otherwise, Lin Ming wouldn’t have drawn out the flesh and blood of Famine several days ago and locked away their cultivation while returning to them their free will. This was clearly all done to ‘process’ the hostages while preparing for the final ‘exchange’ to occur.

Along with Lin Ming’s calm expression and Soaring Feather’s cold and gloomy face, all clues indicated that Soaring Feather must have paid some sort of price to exchange for her freedom.

This made the situation even more unbearable for Fairy Blue Lotus. She had shamed her master and shamed her sect, causing her master to be humiliated along with her.

She glared at Lin Ming with hate in her eyes, wishing she could kill him.

However, in the face of such a glare, Lin Ming remained indifferent; he simply didn’t place Blue Lotus’s hatred in his heart. He icily said to her, “You led the saint armies to kill countless human elites. Of course, because our races are at war, your actions are indisputable. Since that is the case, me killing you is also indisputable. However, I left you your life and only humiliated you for several months, and yet you cannot bear this? Is your dignity really that important but the lives of my human race’s elites not important?”

“I would rather you killed me!” Fairy Blue Lotus clenched her jaws, rage growing in her heart.

Lin Ming sneered. He knew that Fairy Blue Lotus would truly have preferred this.

“You have a great enmity with my human race. Since you fell into my hands then I can dispose of you as I wish. If you have the strength then you can also dispose of me as you will!

“While you were being controlled by me for these last several months, the numerous saint martial artists you killed don’t even begin to make up for your crimes. Today I freed you, so keep that hatred in your heart if you wish. In the future, I welcome you to come take revenge whenever you want. Although the premise behind that is that you must have the strength! But! If you dare to involve my family or friends in your grudge and move against them, then I swear I will cripple your cultivation, shatter all your meridians, and make you experience a lifetime of torture and suffering beneath the hands of countless humans before you die!”

Lin Ming’s words were extremely vicious. He naturally knew what Fairy Blue Lotus feared the most. If there were countless people who she had previously seen as ants, rather, it should be said that she had seen them as even less than ants, and these people defiled her body without end, then this would be a fate ten thousand times worse than death.

Listening to Lin Ming’s words, Fairy Blue Lotus turned blue in the face. Just how proud and arrogant had she been in her life? Yet today she was actually being disregarded and had her dignity trampled upon so ruthlessly by Lin Ming.

“I will kill you!”

Fairy Blue Lotus’s eyes nearly cracked open. She really wanted to rush forwards and engage Lin Ming in a life or death battle, but she was well aware that her abilities were inferior to his, and inferior by far!

Lin Ming had already stated that if she had the ability she could take revenge whenever she wished; he would welcome her arrival!

But, could she?

For the rest of her life, if there wasn’t an accident, she would likely never be able to catch up to Lin Ming. Even reaching a tenth of his strength, even a hundredth, seemed impossible. In the future the disparity between them would only grow increasingly wide!

This caused Fairy Blue Lotus to feel deep humiliation and anguish.

“Shut up!” Soaring Feather suddenly shouted, her face a mask of frost.

"Master!" Fairy Blue Lotus's heart was filled with grievances. She bit her lips and stood behind Soaring Feather God King. She forcefully held back her tears, not willing to cry in front of her hated enemy.

Today she had lost far too much face. In addition to all the events that had occurred in the last several months, this was Fairy Blue Lotus's darkest hour!

Soaring Feather disregarded Fairy Blue Lotus. She looked at Lin Ming, gloomily saying, "The two of us are clear!"

Lin Ming hadn't killed Blue Lotus and the others nor did he do anything too excessively humiliating to her. For instance, Soaring Feather could see that Fairy Blue Lotus's primordial yin was completely intact; Lin Ming hadn't used her as a living furnace.

In fact, as Lin Ming had said, Blue Lotus had led the Legion of Famine to kill many humans. War was callous and heartless, and so no matter what Lin Ming did to retaliate against Blue Lotus, he couldn't be faulted for it.

Lin Ming didn't go overboard nor did Soaring Feather take things past the extreme. At the same time, when Lin Ming was breaking into the Empyrean realm, she didn't disturb him or attack the human fleet.

Between the two of them, each had retained their bottom line.

Otherwise everything would have gone beyond redemption. Soaring Feather wouldn't have been able to kill Lin Ming and she would instead face his revenge in the future. Not just that, but she would have lost her most beloved disciple.

As for Lin Ming, although he wouldn't have died, he would have failed in his breakthrough to the Empyrean realm. This would have caused him to require at least several hundred more years or even a thousand years of accumulating more strength to undergo his breakthrough once more.

Such a price was something neither side was willing to withstand.

To end this dispute with a martial arts contest was the least costly possibility.

In truth, from the moment that Lin Ming didn't choose to hide somewhere else when he underwent his Empyrean breakthrough and stayed together with the human armies, Soaring Feather had already correctly guessed what his plans to resolve this issue were.

"Ten days from now, you and I will battle!" Soaring Feather said once more.

However, as Fairy Blue Lotus heard these words, she was utterly bewildered.

She looked at her master's back with disbelief thick in her eyes, nearly unable to believe her own ears.

What?

Ten days from now her own honorable master would actually fight Lin Ming?

How was this possible!?

It wasn't just Fairy Blue Lotus, but even Highsun and Darkmoon had dazed expressions as they looked towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming against Soaring Feather!?

It seemed that Lin Ming was only an Empyrean?

When they had been subdued, Lin Ming had been a half-step Empyrean. Now, they felt that his cultivation had rapidly increased and he should be at the Empyrean realm.

An Empyrean battling a True Divinity… imagining this, Highsun and Darkmoon sucked in a breath of cold air. Soaring Feather God King might only be a lower True Divinity, but she was absolutely not a weakling amongst lower True Divinities. Did Lin Ming already possess the ability to contend with Soaring Feather?

Everything occurring seemed like a dream. The Lin Ming in front of them had become a nearly unsurpassable existence that they couldn't look up to.

"Then I await you!" Lin Ming calmly replied.

Soaring Feather glanced at Lin Ming. Then, with a wave of her hand she turned into a flurry of feathers. These feathers covered Fairy Blue Lotus, Highsun, and Darkmoon, and all of them vanished together into the endless starry skies...

Space reversed. Soaring Feather, Blue Lotus, and the others rapidly flew away. At this time, Fairy Blue Lotus's complexion was completely ill. She opened her mouth again and again before she finally couldn't help but ask, "Master, you... when you fight Lin Ming, will you... suppress your cultivation?"

Soaring Feather looked at Blue Lotus. Blue Lotus shrunk her neck, immediately feeling she had asked the wrong question.

"I will not."

This simple reply fell into Blue Lotus's ears like a thunderbolt, causing her brain to ring.

No suppression of cultivation!

Fairy Blue Lotus was dumbfounded, her thoughts chaotic and confused. A trace of despair even surged in her heart. Although she was already aware that seeking out Lin Ming for revenge wasn't too realistic, it was only now that she profoundly felt just how unrealistic her thoughts had been. Lin Ming was far too terrifying!

Highsun and Darkmoon also heard; they were both shaken from the core.

This Lin Ming really did have the ability to struggle with a True Divinity. This was simply unbelievable!

They were all geniuses, but when compared to Lin Ming the difference was far too great!

Although the saints looked down upon humanity, they were still a race that revered the strong. The existence of Lin Ming caused complex thoughts to rise in their hearts.

Soaring Feather was silent for a moment. Then, she said, "In the past when I first broke into the Empyrean realm, I was able to contend with a peak Empyrean for the first ten moves. And within the spiritas, the legendary peerless genius Sheng Mei was said to be able to defeat a peak Empyrean at the early Empyrean realm. Afterwards, she was even able to defeat several peak Empyreans. I had thought this was the limit of possibility, but when compared to Lin Ming the difference is far too great.

“In the fables, in the ancient era 10 billion years ago, the 33 Heavens were filled with life and the martial arts civilization of our universe was incomparably glorious. There were innumerable Empyreans and Holy Lands rose up from all around, and even True Divinities weren’t uncommon characters. But, I fear that even in that era it would have been hard to find someone capable of standing side-by-side with Lin Ming. I just don’t know how those two existences from the past would compare…”

As Soaring Feather spoke, Blue Lotus, Highsun, and Darkmoon and glanced at each other in blank dismay. They could faintly understand just which two existences Soaring Feather was speaking of…

Asura Road Master!

Immortal Sovereign!

They were absolute legends, existences that no others could hope to compare with. But now, Lin Ming had actually stepped onto the road they travelled.

In the future, there was a great possibility that Lin Ming would become a character similar to the Asura Road Master. He would create his own great world, passing down an inheritance that would last 10 billion years or even several dozen billions of years!

As Fairy Blue Lotus thought of this, she even thought that if Lin Ming could truly become such a super powerhouse, then being subdued by him in the past and being made into his slave for a period of time wouldn't be something too difficult to accept.

Fairy Blue Lotus originally would rather have died than become Lin Ming's slave; this was become of her prideful heart. However, in the past, the Asura Road Master and Immortal Sovereign must have had their own servants, and if these servants were placed in the present then perhaps even the combined talent of herself, Highsun, and Darkmoon would be unable to compete with a single one of them!

In this situation, just what qualifications did Fairy Blue Lotus have to feel insulted?

Fairy Blue Lotus sighed, no longer speaking. Highsun and Darkmoon also fell silent.

Their thoughts were all complicated. If one had to be brutally honest, then with their current level of talent, if they returned to the ancient era 10 billion years ago and delivered themselves to the door of the Asura Road Master and other such characters to work as their servants, then those existences might not even be willing to spare them a glance!

After some time, Darkmoon couldn't help but ask, "Senior Soaring Feather, do you think that the saints…can still win?"

"I am not sure…" Soaring Feather shook her head. "In the past he was only at the Holy Lord realm and not even the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was able to kill him. Now, he has grown up and has gained the capital to preserve his own life. Not to mention chasing him down, just with his strength alone as long as he finds a place to hide and lays down a concealing array formation then no one will be able to find him....as for the future of the saints and just how far Lin Ming will be able to grow, all of that will depend on a single word…'destiny'…"

Soaring Feather didn't speak any further. Her body turned into a stream of light, and with everyone else, they vanished into the boundless sea of stars.

MW Chapter 2068

Chapter 2068 – Investigating Famine Once More

…

…

…

Two saint God Kings departed one after another. This meant that in this battle, Lin Ming had emerged victorious.

First, with his recently obtained Empyrean cultivation he had defeated Astral Vault God King, and he also had another battle with Soaring Feather 10 days from now.

Within 10 days, an Empyrean had continuously challenged two True Divinities.

This was destined to leave behind a legend.

Several hundred miles away, the human martial artists watching the battle were already seething with joy!

People rallied together, raising their arms up high and shouting out loud. Spirit ships bloomed with dazzling radiance that shot into the skies.

Emperor Shakya, Vast Universe, all of the human Empyreans let out a long breath, their minds and hearts roused.

This battle held extraordinary significance. It was destined to be recorded in the annals of history. As long as humanity didn't perish then it would become an immortal testament, passed down forever.

Lin Ming defeated a True Divinity with an Empyrean cultivation. This not only greatly inspired the morale of humanity, but with the withdrawal of Astral Vault from the war between humanity and the saints, this would also be extremely advantageous for humanity's plans to retake the Divine Realm!

All the human martial artists were filled with zeal. This blood debt between humanity and the saints had already gone on for over 6000 years.

Although it hadn't reached the level of complete genocide against another race, humanity would still make the saints pay a heavy price for their actions.

And as everyone was wildly celebrating, Lin Ming only appeared for a brief moment before retreating to his own quiet chamber.

He refused Emperor Shakya’s offer of holding the ancient rite of a grand title ceremony for him. Instead, he chose to make the best use of these next ten days before he fought Soaring Feather and explore Famine’s memories once more.

In the past, Lin Ming was unable to move Famine’s memories, and the main reason behind this was his own limited soul force. Famine’s memories were just far too vast in quantity. In the last several billion years Famine had swallowed countless intelligent life forms, and the memories of all these lives had been kept in Famine’s spiritual sea.

To slowly screen out valuable information from all these memories was an incredibly arduous and cumbersome task.

In the past when Lin Ming tried it, he only felt an agonizing pain in his mind. But now Lin Ming was an Empyrean. He perceived the Laws of the Holy Scripture and underwent a samsara of life and death, overseeing the myriad changes of the world. In terms of attainments in soul force, Lin Ming had amazing accomplishments.

In intensity he was naturally inferior to a True Divinity, but in terms of quality, he surpassed many True Divinities.

In this situation, Lin Ming finally had a certain assurance that he would be able to explore Famine's soul.

Even if he couldn't discover much, at the very least he could gain a basic understanding of Famine and the abyssals.

Before now, Lin Ming simply didn't know anything about the secrets of the Dark Abyss.

Time passed. In this small part of the star territory, the nearest several stars hid themselves behind the dark nebula of space.

The night was profound and deep.

Lin Ming sat in meditation, entering into his fused martial intent.

At this time, what lay in front of Lin Ming was a boundless spiritual sea.

This was Lin Ming's spiritual sea. Currently, Lin Ming had turned himself into a body of thought and entered his own inner world.

A vast mental strength formed strong sea breezes, wildly whipping around. At the ends of this spiritual sea where the water and sky met, the vast soul of Famine was locked up with hundreds of thick spiritual ropes. Most of its enormous volume was submerged in the spiritual sea.

Lin Ming flew forwards, straight towards Famine’s soul.

He slowly lifted his right hand. Atop his palm, endless starlight gathered, slowly manifesting into a black cube. This was the Magic Cube.

And after the Magic Cube appeared, a red-clothed little girl sat atop the surface of the Magic Cube, her legs crossed together. She had a cute and lovely smile on her face as she sweetly called out, “Big Brother Lin!”

“Ruby, come and help me to subdue Famine’s soul!”

Lin Ming said, his complexion dignified. Reading through Famine’s memories wouldn’t be easy at all.

“Okay!”

Ruby immediately nodded. Without further ado, she turned into a beam of light that wrapped around the Magic Cube, sending it slowly floating up.

Lin Ming also poured his soul force into the Magic Cube.

The Magic Cube emitted a pitch black divine light. This divine light became increasingly bright as energy gathered, until it finally reached the limit of what Lin Ming could withstand.

In that moment, Lin Ming bellowed out loud. A beam of divine light shot out from the sides of the Magic Cube, firing right into Famine's soul.

Chi-la!

As if being cut open by some sharp divine knife, Famine's soul suddenly quivered. A massive gap had been cut into it!

Soul force gushed out from this gap. Without hesitation, Lin Ming grasped the Magic Cube and waved his hand. A black vortex swept out from the Magic Cube, directly absorbing all of this soul force that leaked out from Famine's soul!

Soul force condensed within the Magic Cube. Like water vapor turning into ice crystals, the soul force became tiny fragments.

These fragments were black, as if they were dark crystals. Lin Ming continued to stimulate the Magic Cube until he cancelled out the spirit marks in these fragments and turned them into pure ownerless memories.

Then, Lin Ming steadied his breath and began reading through them.

These memories came from all the intelligent life forms that Famine had swallowed during its existence, and these weren't Famine's original memories. Although there were many cultivation methods, Laws, mystic realm information, array formation techniques, alchemy techniques, refiner techniques, and so forth contained within, none of this was meaningful to Lin Ming.

He discarded these memories, leaving behind only their purest soul essence. Then, he poured this soul essence into his spiritual sea to expand his own soul force.

The remnants that he couldn't absorb were returned to Famine's soul.

This was to make sure not to waste anything.

Then, Lin Ming activated the Magic Cube again. He sliced open Famine's soul, taking out another portion of Famine's memories to read.

This was already the most reasonable method to search memories that Lin Ming could come up with.

Although this method wasn't too efficient, it was all Lin Ming could do due to the limits of his strength.

Time after time, Lin Ming felt himself nearly overdrawing his soul force with each try. Ruby was also covered with sweat and her face was flushed red; it was clear she was consuming a great deal of energy.

Lin Ming grit his teeth and cut out another part of Famine's memories, then said to Ruby, "Ruby, let's stop for today. Take a rest and we will continue tomorrow. We can take this slowly. Some things may take time, but even if mortals wish to move mountains they will eventually be moved."

"Mm!" Ruby nodded. She was a life form condensed from the Magic Cube and had a special attachment towards Lin Ming. To be able to help Lin Ming made her feel very happy.

Lin Ming patted Ruby's head and then let her return to the Magic Cube to rest. As for Lin Ming's soul form, he entered the Magic Cube and started to read these last memories.

Originally, he didn't have much hope that he would discover anything of interest. But he never thought that he would be pleasantly surprised as he read through these memories!

In searching through these ownerless memory fragments, he finally found memories belonging to Famine itself!

These memories were related to the written language of the abyssals.

In other words – abyssal text!

This was an incredibly old and mysterious writing system, one which even far surpassed that of the ancient god race. The amount of history contained within these words left Lin Ming stunned!

Every word was heavy and complex. Rather, these weren't words at all, but a type of Law rune.

To use Law runes as words, this was a bit unbelievable.

This was because when it came to Law runes, and in particular high level Law runes, it was extremely difficult for ordinary martial artists to understand them. In other words, the writings within Famine's memories were a type of language system used amongst the upper echelon existences of the Dark Abyss; they weren't something that ordinary abyssals could understand.

As Lin Ming looked at these writings, a light suddenly flashed in his mind. He had seen these writings before!

With his thoughts racing, Lin Ming stepped forwards and arrived somewhere else in the Magic Cube. A black book slowly floated in front of him. This black book was the one he had obtained from Imperial Prince Xishen.

Xishen was one of the five saint generals and he had been captured by Lin Ming. But unfortunately for him, his luck was poor and his master was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. Lin Ming had an undying hatred with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign thus it was naturally impossible for him to let Xishen go.

Even at this point, Xishen was still being controlled by Lin Ming and believed that he was Lin Ming's most loyal servant.

But Xishen didn't understand much about the black book. He only knew that this was something he obtained from the Primeval Realm Ruins and this that book contained an infinite demonic charm; it could even be used as a weapon. But as for what contents were recorded inside, Xishen wasn't sure, and in fact, Xishen hadn't even been able to open the black book.

Lin Ming confessed that he could be considered a knowledgeable individual with a vast understanding of many ancient inheritances. Yet, even he couldn't decipher the complex texts atop the black book.

It was only now after reading a part of Famine's memories that he realized the mystical writings atop the surface of the black book were actually the language of the abyssals, and one that had extremely high level abyssal words that were incredibly difficult to grasp. They could be called runes of Demon Laws.

Lin Ming might have an outstanding memory but he still wasn't able to fully memorize these Law runes. He could only compare the information within the memory fragments, slowly deciphering the words on the black book a little at a time…

"Lin Ming, what is it?"

Above the black book was a great seal; this was the array formation laid down by the Ancient Elysium Seal.

Before, because Lin Ming felt that this black book was too strange and bizarre, he had suppressed it with the Ancient Elysium Seal. Now as the Ancient Elysium Seal saw the light in Lin Ming's eyes, it couldn't help but ask this question.

"Senior, this junior has read through some of Famine's memories and am now able to read a part of the contents of this black book…"

"Oh?" The Ancient Elysium Seal's mind shook. So this ancient black book that it had sealed was actually from the Dark Abyss!

Moreover, it possessed abyssal writings!

As the Ancient Elysium Seal suppressed this black book for these past several months, it faintly understood just how terrifying it was. This was not a True Divinity spirit treasure, but simply a letter.

A letter, just by relying on the writings on Laws contained within, could achieve a might similar to a True Divinity spirit treasure and be used to suppress one's enemies. This was simply unimaginable.

"What did you read?" The Ancient Elysium Seal asked with a dignified expression. Whenever the intelligent life forms of the 33 Heavens mentioned the abyssals, they always felt a deep sense of fear.

For numerous billions of years, the Dark Abyss had been completely isolated from the 33 Heavens. However, people could still find all sorts of clues that indicated there was some terrifying existence within the Dark Abyss.

The Dark Abyss was deep and infinite. The strength hidden within might even surpass the sum total of all intelligent life in the 33 Heavens by several times over!

Just a single Famine that came out was so terrifying. Who knew what rank of existence Famine was considered amongst the abyssals?

“I’m still reading.” Lin Ming said, all of his attention focused on each word. He felt that this black book wasn’t a cultivation method, but as for what it was, he wasn’t sure. “I can only make out a few characters.”

“What are they?”

“The first character is – Famine!”

MW Chapter 2069

Chapter 2069 – Lin Ming Battles Soaring Feather

…

…

…

"Famine!?"

Hearing this word, the Ancient Elysium Seal was stunned. Could this mysterious book originate from Famine, thus Famine's name was placed atop it?

"This character 'Famine' seems to correspond to an abyssal word… a kind of foundational Demon Law…"

Lin Ming quietly said as he looked at the mysterious abyssal characters on the cover.

“What are the next characters?”

“Deep. Eon.”

Lin Ming pronounced. These words were based on Famine’s memories. In truth, there was no word that could be found in the human language which corresponded to these characters.

‘Deep’ and ‘Eon’, without a doubt, these were also characters that corresponded to foundational Demon Laws.

When these three characters joined together, Lin Ming formed a strange association.

“I feel that… Deep and Eon perhaps stand alongside Famine…”

“Mm?” The Ancient Elysium Seal’s thoughts stirred.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. “I have a feeling that each of the most foundational Demon Law marks in the abyssal language corresponds to a powerful abyssal demon. And Famine is only one of them! This cover has two other characters – Deep and Eon, and these should also correspond to extremely terrifying existences similar to Famine. They are abyssal ‘totems’, but I wonder just where these other two totems are. They might be hiding in the Dark Abyss or maybe they already died…”

As Lin Ming spoke, the Ancient Elysium Seal froze. Lin Ming's speculations were not without reason, but if these speculations were true, this was disastrous news. Just Famine itself was already so terrifying! Moreover, Famine's divine soul had been sealed by Empyrean Divine Seal 3.6 billion years ago, and that was the only reason Lin Ming had been able to use the Magic Cube to subdue it. Otherwise, if Lin Ming were to face Famine in its peak state, he would have died!

"Such powerful abyssal demons, how many could there be?"

The Ancient Elysium Seal's voice was heavy.

"I don't know, but there shouldn't be many. At the very least, not more than can be counted on a hand, or maybe just a bit more than that. And this book cover only records three of them."

Lin Ming continued sifting through the other characters on the cover. He believed that as he further unraveled Famine's memories, he would eventually be able to open this mysterious ancient abyssal book and explore the secrets inside.

This was highly important to the future development of the 33 Heavens for all intelligent life. The abyssals were like fierce tigers perched just outside the 33 Heavens, making it so that Lin Ming found it difficult to feel at ease.

……

After this, Lin Ming entered seclusion. He explored Famine's memories every day. Slowly, he was able to read more and more things.

But his time was too limited. As Lin Ming was in seclusion, although he managed to decipher some contents he still wasn't able to open the mysterious ancient book.

This left Lin Ming puzzled. Just what was this ancient book? It didn't seem like some cultivation method, so could it be only a book that recorded the history of the abyssals?

If a history book was written, it was written for the future generations to see. Was it necessary to use the most complex and difficult to understand abyssal characters to write it?

Perhaps only high-level abyssal figures would be able to read this type of Law writing.

Lin Ming had all sorts of doubts swirling in his heart. He faintly felt that there was some important secret recorded in this ancient demon book, and to himself, it was inestimably valuable.

…….

Time passed day after day. After the tenth day passed, the time approached for Lin Ming to face his second battle.

In this battle he would fight Soaring Feather God King!

This was a critical battle. Lin Ming had a premonition that Soaring Feather God King was far more powerful than Astral Vault God King. This battle would not be easy!

On the last day, Lin Ming no longer probed Famine’s soul. Rather, he adjusted his condition to its peak state.

On the day of the battle, the human martial artists within the Hidden Dragon Galaxy gathered outside the star territory where Lin Ming and Soaring Feather God King would fight.

Divine Dream, Emperor Shakya, Skyrend Godlord, everyone stood at the front of the battlefield, waiting to witness this historical moment.

Force fields were already arranged behind them. Besides Empyrean Divine Dream helping, the other Empyreans also contributed in forming great array formations.

These array formations were divided into dozens of different regions. The human fleets and the millions of human elites were dispersed throughout these regions. From there, they would be protected by the array formations and it would be much safer for them.

All of the human martial artists were seething with excitement.

To watch a battle between True Divinity level opponents was an incredible lucky chance. For those with amazing talent, they would be able to comprehend many things.

Humanity only had a single True Divinity in Divine Dream. Yet, within a short period of 10 days they were able to witness two continuous True Divinity level battles. This was simply unthinkable for the young elites.

At this time, hundreds of miles in front of Divine Dream, Lin Ming was floating high in the void. The Black Dragon Spear was carried on his back, its sharp point reflecting a cold starlight!

"Brother Lin..."

From afar, Xiao Moxian could see Lin Ming's figure. Although they were separated by a great distance, Xiao Moxian could see every minute detail on Lin Ming's face. This battle against Soaring Feather placed a tremendous pressure upon Xiao Moxian. Since she cared about Lin Ming it was naturally hard for her to feel at ease.

Nearby Xiao Moxian, Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, and the others also watched with tightened hearts.

As Lin Ming felt the gazes of these women on him, he turned and glanced at them, revealing a faint smile.

“I’m fine.”

Lin Ming lightly said. If he didn’t fight against Soaring Feather then no one knew what the result would be. However, no matter what happened, he would not perish here today. Even if he lost, it would only mean a greater burden for humanity and a delay on their plans to retake the Divine Realm.

Xiao Moxian nodded. Everyone waited.

Soaring Feather was a punctual individual. Just a brief moment before the agreed time, a thick pall of feathers rained down from the starry skies. These feathers fluttered in front of Lin Ming, reflecting the vast starlight, as beautiful as a dream…

Lin Ming quietly drew out the Black Dragon Spear, his gaze much sharper.

Soaring Feather had arrived. She came like a ghost deep in the night, emerging from thin air in front of Lin Ming. All the feathers gathered around her, condensing and forming rainbow-hued energies. Soaring Feather reached out a hand and stroked this energy before pulling out a long sword.

This sword was only two inches wide but the blade was extremely long, a full six feet in length. Moreover, the blade was supple and soft, as if it wasn't solid at all. When Soaring Feather pulled out this sword, the blade didn't swing, but writhed about like flowing blue water.

It was clear this sword represented the extremities of soft flexibility.

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes and looked at this sword. There was no True Divinity whose weapon could be underestimated. Astral Vault's Dark Star Sword had also startled Lin Ming.

In particular, the saints guarded the Primeval Realm Ruins, so how could the saint True Divinities not have obtained some fierce spirit treasures from those ruins?

The atmosphere became stagnant. Several hundred miles away, the millions of human elites watched without uttering a single sound. As they gazed upon this True Divinity level battle that was about to begin, all of them held their breath.

This was a battle that concerned the destiny of humanity; it was natural for them to be nervous.

“In today’s battle, I will lay witness to your future. Come, make your move...” Soaring Feather lightly said.

Lin Ming didn’t delay. He focused his aura and the energy within his body began to surge. Behind Lin Ming, the faint phantom of a Supreme appeared. This Supreme stood tall and proud with no expression on its face. A vast and boundless aura gushed out from its entire being, as if it looked down upon the world with cold indifference.

After this Supreme phantom appeared, Lin Ming’s aura changed, becoming incredibly deep and gargantuan, as if his Laws stood evenly with the Heavenly Dao.

He stepped forwards, treading upon the stars. The Black Dragon Spear seemed to turn into a Divine Dragon as it howled outwards!

The distance between the two could be crossed in less than an instant. Lin Ming’s spear pierced through the impediment of space, seeming to instantly appear in front of Soaring Feather God King thrusting straight towards her head!

Feeling this cold spear light, Soaring Feather didn’t even bat an eyelash. She gently waved her sword, the wave-like sword rolling towards the Black Dragon Spear.

Compared to the overwhelmingly tyrannical Black Dragon Spear, Soaring Feather God King’s soft sword seemed far too weak and underwhelming. But when the spear and sword intersected, a brilliant rainbow-hued divine light erupted.

Bang!

Energy blasted outwards as a terrifying impact spread out from the divine light, as if countless golden swords were shooting out in all directions!

Space was recklessly torn apart like decrepit paintings beneath the aftershocks of energy. Divine light dazzled the world, blinding those who watched. And at this time, Lin Ming and Soaring Feather hurtled towards each other. Like this, the great True Divinity level battle had begun!

MW Chapter 2070

Chapter 2070 – To Wear Away Rock With Water

…

…

…

Waves of energy soared into the air, as if the galaxy were collapsing. Lin Ming grasped the Black Dragon Spear, a profile of epic daring!

Lin Ming had poured a terrifying amount of his bodily strength into every spear strike. With loud crackling noises, Lin Ming began to grow. Black scales and bone armor started covering his body.

He had activated the Asura blood.

After Lin Ming broke into the Empyrean realm, galvanizing the power of the Asura blood wouldn't create too much of a burden on his body. In the past he only used the power of the Asura blood when he was going all-out.

Hu - !

Lin Ming waved his spear, the sight like a heaven-supporting pillar falling down. This wild strength was accompanied by endless black thunder, carrying with it starlight of the highest heavens and the momentum of the strike seeming as if it could cleave apart rivers of stars!

Soaring Feather wasn’t flustered. She released the sword in her hands and welcomed Lin Ming’s strike!

The Black Dragon Spear against the soft sword!

No matter who was watching, this seemed like a completely disproportionate collision!

Due to the disadvantage of her weapon, everyone thought that Soaring Feather God King would avoid Lin Ming’s strike. However, she didn’t do so!

“Be careful of a spiritual attack!”

Someone shouted out from the human forces.

This was also what many other human martial artists were thinking. No one believed that Soaring Feather's soft sword would be able to occupy any advantage when colliding with the Black Dragon Spear.

Everyone knew that Soaring Feather God King was extremely strong. However, in their thoughts, Soaring Feather was someone who cultivated essence and divine. From the different forms of combat she had revealed and her form of weapon, they all assumed that she had extremely high attainments in the aspect of souls, illusions, and mental strength. However, when it came to body transformation, she was simply a slender and delicate woman, and people didn't believe that she excelled much in this domain. At the very least, she wouldn't be able to compare with Lin Ming.

In particular, the current Lin Ming had activated the Asura blood and was utilizing the strength of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

But even so, Soaring Feather God King was meeting Lin Ming head-on. The only possible explanation for this was that there were profound and complex principles hidden within Soaring Feather God King's attack!

Even Lin Ming also instantly made defense preparations for his spiritual sea. He wouldn't allow his enemy any openings!

However, when the soft sword clashed with the Black Dragon Spear, Lin Ming's complexion changed!

Soaring Feather simply didn’t attach any soul attack to her sword. Rather, she used absolute strength and skill to frontally collide with him!

If the strength of the Black Dragon Spear was a meteor that crashed into the earth, capable of easily annihilating mountains and puncturing through the world, then the strength of Soaring Feather’s soft sword was like a profoundly deep sea, capable of unparalleled accommodation of force. Even if a meteor were to strike the sea, although it would create wild explosions and summon great tsunamis, it would still be extremely difficult to truly blow up a sea. As long as the explosion of the meteor finished then the sea waves would draw back and the sea would be the same as before.

Now, Soaring Feather God King’s astral essence gave Lin Ming such a feeling!

The moment the Black Dragon Spear clashed with the soft sword, Soaring Feather’s astral essence was shaken away by Lin Ming’s violent and limitless strength. The Black Dragon Spear continued driving forwards, smashing into the soft sword until it curved. However, the soft sword gave but did not break, and Soaring Feather was also like a piece of cotton in the wind, blown away by the fierce energy storm of the Black Dragon Spear!

However, the moment Lin Ming’s strength pushed in and was about to strike Soaring Feather, her astral essence returned. Not only did it return, but it carried with it a portion of Lin Ming’s strength and instantly submerged the power of divinity carried by the Black Dragon Spear. This was just like the sea water submerging the meteor that crashed into the sea.

Bang!

A brutal and crazy eruption exploded outwards. Lin Ming's strength rapidly shattered away, creating a dazzling brilliance. However Soaring Feather wasn't wounded at all. Instead, the moment Lin Ming's strength scattered away, Soaring Feather's six foot long soft sword seemed to turn into a spirit snake that slithered up the Black Dragon Spear and cut towards Lin Ming's hand!

Lin Ming's palm was as hard as divine iron. But, he didn't doubt that as long as he was cut by this sword, then perhaps even his hand would be severed!

Soaring Feather's strength contained a sort of opportunistic and unyielding strength, the kind of Laws that allowed water to wear away rock!

Without hesitation, Lin Ming held the spear in his right hand and used his left to smash at the soft sword that was crawling up the Black Dragon Spear.

Kacha!

Lin Ming's fist smashed into the ridge of the soft sword; this was where a sword was most fragile and where it had the least striking power. But even so, the ridge of Soaring Feather's soft sword couldn't be underestimated.

The moment Lin Ming's fist struck the sword ridge, trillions of motes of the power of divinity rushed in before exploding with the power of vibration.

Such powerful vibrations could turn any True Divinity spirit treasure that didn't have energy poured into it into powder; it directly blasted away Soaring Feather's six foot long soft sword.

Lin Ming pulled his spear and flew backwards. His left fist was covered in blood.

The vibration just now was called Flow like Silk. It was a technique that Lin Ming had learned at the start of his road of martial arts, from a Divine Realm body transformation cultivation method.

In the past, Lin Ming's Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist had similar effects from different methods with that strike just then.

The Great Dao was limitless. The Vibration Laws might not be some profound Law, but if used correctly, it could still play a role even in a True Divinity level battle.

When a person had a blood-sucking leech attached to their leg, it was difficult to pull off. Even after ripping off the leech its fangs would still be sucking blood. But, using vibration to free it was easier. With enough correct slaps on the leg the leech would fall off.

In that moment, Lin Ming had used the powerful force of vibrations to push off the soft sword that had wrapped around his Black Dragon Spear. Otherwise he would have been forced to abandon his spear.

Lin Ming and Soaring Feather drew back from each other, thousands of feet away.

Soaring Feather held her soft sword, her expression indifferent. The sword still swung about like a reed in a river, not suffering any stress at all. But, the combat strength it could display left one frightened.

Depending on how Soaring Feather used her astral essence, it could become soft, it could become sharp, it could become hard, all sorts of changes were possible with just a thought.

Seeing this, the human martial artists were worried.

This battle was too important and the strength Soaring Feather showed so far was too great. She hadn’t even used her divine feather force field nor had she revealed her soul force combat methods.

If Soaring Feather used all of her strength to fight, then her combat methods would change without end, making it nearly impossible to guard against!

In this sort of situation it was unknown whether or not Lin Ming could win!

Soaring Feather was clearly much more formidable than Astral Vault.

Ten days ago when Lin Ming defeated Astral Vault, it hadn't been a suspenseful victory. However, when considering it carefully, it was related to Lin Ming's planning and Astral Vault's mistakes.

This was because Astral Vault had lacked information on his opponent before the battle began. In the most crucial moment, Astral Vault hadn't recognized Lin Ming's avatar and had used the majority of his strength to deal with Lin Ming's Essence Spirit Embryo Stone.

A single wrong chess move and the entire game falls apart. Lin Ming had seized this chance to push forwards. He gathered all his avatars and struck again and again, leaving Astral Vault God King no chance to catch his breath. Finally, the result of all these attacks was that Astral Vault God King had momentarily used up the power of his blood energy and he was eventually defeated because of this.

But Soaring Feather clearly wouldn't make such a mistake.

She was a calm and intelligent fighter. If Lin Ming wanted to defeat her he would have to rely on absolute strength to directly suppress her!

How could he accomplish this?

"Lin Ming…"

Xiao Moxian looked towards Lin Ming and bit her lips.

Not too far away, Empyrean Vast Universe clenched his fists, worried.

Hundreds of miles away, everyone's eyes were fixed upon a single figure.

At this time, in the starry skies, Lin Ming took a deep breath. He slowly undid the body transformation of the Asura blood. The nine stars behind him also dimmed a great deal.

Seeing this, the audience was shocked.

After undergoing body metamorphosis Lin Ming still wasn't able to obtain the advantage. Then, wouldn't his situation be much worse after undoing his body metamorphosis?

"What is Lin Ming doing?"

"I have no idea!"

No one thought that Lin Ming would give up; he wasn't such a person. Then, this could only mean that he had some other plan.

Soaring Feather looked at Lin Ming, a smile on the corners of her lips. "Saving your strength?"

It was hard to tell whether Soaring Feather's words were praising or mocking.

Lin Ming indifferently said, "You are borrowing strength to fight strength. I naturally wouldn't be so idiotic as to give you more strength to borrow. You truly have extraordinary achievements in the body transformation technique and have surpassed my expectations. But, there is something that I am sure of. In truth, your body transformation technique walks the road of Law. In terms of absolute cultivation of body transformation, you are inferior to Astral Vault God King!"

The saint race's body transformation was also one of the 33 Heavenly Daos. However, the change of Laws involved in it were far inferior to humanity's Nine Divine Shifts. Thus, in terms of Laws, humanity always felt superior and believed that the saints were nothing but brutish and simple-minded fellows whose only advantage was well developed bodies.

As for the saints, they took pride in their body transformation technique that allowed them to engage others in honest and straightforward combat, frontally colliding with each other. At the same time, the saints also felt that human martial artists only had flowery fists and fancy footwork, all show and no true strength, a bunch of little women in disguise.

But today, beneath Soaring Feather's hands, the saint race's body transformation technique was clearly not such an example.

She had introduced far more variation and Laws into the saint race's body transformation technique, forging her own road.

To wear away rock with water, to take all opportune chances with the least effort, these things didn't seem to involve the most profound of Laws, but if utilized in a True Divinity level fight by a True Divinity to a high degree, then everything became different.

This was like using simple lever principles to tilt a planet.

Lin Ming was surprised, but he still maintained his original judgment. In the end, Soaring Feather God King was still a delicate woman, and it was exactly because she was weak in the aspect of body transformation that she had to walk the road of wearing away rock with water, to borrow strength to fight strength. If she had absolute strength herself, why would she need to borrow strength from others?

Facing such a Soaring Feather, Lin Ming no longer went all-out with his strength. Rather, he chose to use skill to win. If he wanted to use strength alone to win, he could only rely on an overwhelmingly massive eruption to do so. But if he used a smaller portion of his strength then he could better control his abilities and reach the peak of his skill.

At this time, three avatars appeared behind Lin Ming.

These avatars each held spears. The spears were all peak Empyrean spirit treasures obtained from saint Empyreans that Lin Ming had killed.

Since Soaring Feather already knew of the existences of these three avatars, it was impossible to hide them. If using these avatars in a sneak attack was meaningless, then he might as well openly and honestly take them out.

These three avatars and Lin Ming’s main body spread out around Soaring Feather God King.

Soaring Feather God King’s slender eyes suddenly narrowed.

MW Chapter 2071

Chapter 2071 – Spiritual Storm

…

…

…

Lin Ming moved, his true self taking the lead. He grasped the Black Dragon Spear and shook it.

Om –

With a clarion sound the Black Dragon Spear's point began to violently tremble. The two inch wide spear head seemed to swing like a great flower beneath this wild shaking. Because of the high speed vibration, countless spear head phantoms connected together, making it seem three feet in size.

The vibrational force contained within the spear shaft was extremely terrifying. This was especially true in a divine weapon like the Black Dragon Spear. With the massive vibration potential contained within it, if it were to strike an Empyrean spirit treasure it could directly shake that Empyrean spirit treasure to pieces.

Not just that, but the vibrating Black Dragon Spear made its spear point blurrier. If the spear struck out it would be impossible to tell where the spear head's true position was.

Seeing this blurry spear point, astonishment flashed in Soaring Feather God King's face. When facing this Black Dragon Spear whose position was difficult to determine, wanting to wrap her soft sword around it would be much more difficult.

The Black Dragon Spear swept out in a bizarre arcing curve, and at the end of this curve was Soaring Feather God King's throat!

Soaring Feather rapidly drew backwards, but at this time she felt a thick killing intent to her sides!

One on the left and one on the right, a blue-clothed Lin Ming and a purple-clothed Lin Ming both rushed towards her!

The trajectories of the two spears crossed together. The only difference was that the purple-clothed Lin Ming's spear was much slower, and the blue-clothed Lin Ming's spear's speed was incredibly fast.

One slow one fast, the two spears gave off entirely different feelings. However, what was hard to believe was that even though these two spears had different speeds, they clearly kept pace with each other. As they pierced out together, the fast spear didn't fly ahead and the slow spear didn't fall behind.

This was the confusing feeling of extreme space and time. It was clear that these two spears contained the Time Laws; in other words, the Concept of Alacrity and the Concept of Stagnation. Unless one understood their mysteries they were nearly impossible to fend off.

Soaring Feather God King certainly understood the Laws of Space and Time. However, the key problem here was that these weren't just the Laws of Space and Time. And at this time, the black-clothed Lin Ming also attacked.

He was located to the rear of Soaring Feather God King. A spear thrust straight towards her back. This spear contained the power of vibration from Flow like Silk. Trillions of tiny energy bundles roared out together, like endless waves of tsunamis!

The four Lin Mings attacked together, four different Laws all blocking off Soaring Feather!

Since Soaring Feather God King could borrow strength to fight strength, using absolute strength to defeat her was impossible. If so, then Lin Ming would simply contend with Soaring Feather using his skills instead.

Lin Ming's skills and fighting methods could be called infinitely variable. In addition with his three avatars supporting him, he could reach the peak in this aspect.

Soaring Feather may have been fierce, and perhaps she could easily and calmly defuse the techniques of Lin Ming or his avatars if they came at her alone, but when facing them all together, this was a different story.

Soaring Feather focused her thoughts. From between her eyebrows, ten thousand rays of light seemed to bloom. Bright and dazzling kaleidoscopic feathers fluttered out, forming an absolute force field around her.

Soaring Feather had finally used her divine feather force field!

Bang!

The four Lin Mings' attacks smashed into the force field. For a time, the force field wildly trembled!

A terrifying energy erupted outwards, turning into gorgeous fireworks in the darkness of space that illuminated the void for a million miles.

Seeing this, many human martial artists let out a sigh of relief. Soaring Feather God King had finally been forced to use her force field.

If Lin Ming's all-out strength couldn't force Soaring Feather God King to use her divine feather force field, then he would lose without a doubt.

As Lin Ming saw the divine feather force field appear, he roared out loud. A black Asura phantom appeared behind him. This Asura phantom was covered in an armor of shadows, and its eyes shined like bright stars.

The moment that the Asura phantom appeared, Lin Ming's three avatars also gathered around him. In each of their palms, a mystical ancient wheel appeared!

These three wheels originated from the Asura Heavenly Dao. They united together, forming an ancient wheel of destiny that bombarded the divine feather force field.

"Open!"

Lin Ming bellowed. With a loud bang, the divine feather force field was forcibly torn open by Lin Ming!

Thick feathers recklessly fell down. Lin Ming grasped his spear and stepped forwards in space.

His speed was incredibly fast, his spear point thrusting straight towards Soaring Feather's chest.

But at the same time, the Black Dragon Spear violently vibrated in his hands, making it nearly impossible to determine its true path.

Seeing this, surprise flashed through Soaring Feather God King's eyes. But soon this surprise morphed into a cold killing intent.

In an instant, her pupils vanished from her eyes, turning completely white. An infinite white storm surged out from her body.

This was a spiritual storm!

In Soaring Feather God King's hands, an originally invisible spiritual storm actually manifested into tangible reality.

Gusts of strong winds were like dancing silver snakes. They howled and bared their teeth as they rushed out from this divine light and towards Lin Ming.

Spiritual attack!

Soaring Feather God King had finally used her secret spiritual attack techniques!

Everyone had already guessed by now that Soaring Feather God King actually had astonishing talent in the soul forging system. As for the body transformation system, that was where she was weaker.

Now, Soaring Feather God King finally used the power of her spiritual sea. This also proved that Soaring Feather God King was beginning to treat this battle with earnest, or perhaps she was even already going all-out.

As long as Lin Ming could guarantee that he didn't lose, then he would win this battle!

But as for how terrifying Soaring Feather God King's spiritual storm was, no one knew.

Whether or not Lin Ming could defend against this spiritual storm, no one knew this either.

Xiao Moxian, Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, all those people that were closely related to Lin Ming currently had palms wet with sweat. This was what others meant when they said concern turned the heart to chaos. Even if someone told them that Lin Ming wouldn't suffer any truly life-threatening danger even if he was defeated, the sight of this spiritual attack left them unable to compose themselves.

After all, a divine soul attack was far more terrifying than a material attack. If one wasn't careful, there would be permanent damage caused to one's spiritual sea!

The spiritual storm swept outwards but Lin Ming didn't retreat. The Daevic Eye Dao Palace had reappeared between his eyebrows and he had activated the All Existence to Void state of the Three Lives Pupils. He was like a sparrow shuttling through the storm, a fish swimming against the stream.

Whoosh!

A gust of the spiritual storm whipped towards Lin Ming like a silver snake. Lin Ming didn't dodge or evade, instead grasping his Black Dragon Spear and bringing it chopping down!

With his Black Dragon Spear, he contended with this manifested spiritual attack!

All of the martial artists watching this battle, in particular the human Empyreans, held their breath. According to common knowledge, it was nearly impossible to rely on a material attack to defend against an invisible and intangible spiritual attack. There were only some defensive spiritual-type magic tools that had such an effect.

Or, a martial artist could pour their own soul force into their attack. This was tantamount to fighting divine soul against divine soul. But, a battle between divine souls was incredibly risky. When two such forces met it was natural for the stronger side to win. Moreover, the victorious side could even suppress the other side's soul force into their spiritual sea, causing an even greater attack!

Now, Lin Ming used the Black Dragon Spear to attack Soaring Feather God King's spiritual force. This was the same as using his soul force to directly contend with Soaring Feather God King!

No one knew just how formidable Lin Ming's spiritual sea was. But as for Soaring Feather, the strength of her divine soul had already become deeply rooted in the hearts of all present. Although all of them rooted fervently prayed for Lin Ming and supported him, if they had to look at soul force alone, it seemed that Soaring Feather was absolutely above Lin Ming!

The moment that Black Dragon Spear collided with the spiritual storm, even Empyrean Divine Dream started to revolve her energy to prevent any dire accidents from occurring.

But then an unexpected scene left everyone dumbfounded.

Bang!

With a loud explosion, the giant silver dragon soaring through the air was cut apart by Lin Ming's Black Dragon Spear!

Everyone was bewildered. Before they could respond, all they saw was a silver light as countless Law runes appeared in the skies. These Law runes came in a rainbow hue of colors, all of them brimming with a gentle ethereal air; it was clear that these Law runes came from Soaring Feather God King.

The spiritual strength runes contained within the silver dragon had been scattered by Lin Ming.

At that moment, Soaring Feather God King furrowed her eyebrows. She had felt that in that strike just now, although it appeared Lin Ming was casually attacking, the truth was that there was a highly compressed soul force contained in his strike.

Lin Ming had compressed his soul force into a knife point. He pushed forwards with his attack, and instead of following up with another blow towards her, he instead attacked at the weakest point of the Laws within the spiritual storm!

If Lin Ming didn't have an incomparably deep understanding towards Soaring Feather's cultivation method, then no matter how talented he was he would never have been able to achieve this.

"Feather Conversion Art!"

Soaring Feather God King’s eyes blazed with an icy light as she glared at Lin Ming. At this time, Lin Ming had opened the Daevic Eye Dao Palace and was maintaining the state of All Existence to Void; he returned her gaze.

“From my disciple’s mouth you obtained a part of the Feather Conversion Art and even absorbed the life blood essence sealed in the feather… such a method, how honorable of you!”

Thinking that her own life feather had been absorbed by Lin Ming, Soaring Feather was enraged to the extreme and began mocking him.

Several months ago when Lin Ming subdued Fairy Blue Lotus, he had unsealed Soaring Feather God King’s life feather and also ordered Fairy Blue Lotus to hand over the most core True Divinity level cultivation method of Soaring Feather God King – the Feather Conversion Art. After that, he spent a great period of time studying this cultivation method.

However, Lin Ming didn’t train in this cultivation method nor did he have the time or energy to cultivate it to a high boundary.

But, just understanding it, and in particular understanding its weaknesses, wasn’t difficult at all. This was especially true with such a loyal servant like Fairy Blue Lotus at his side. She had iterated all of her comprehensions in the Feather Conversion to him, and there weren’t many secrets left in the first several levels afterwards.

Not just that, but the life feather that Soaring Feather had left Fairy Blue Lotus had a part of the Law runes from her Feather Conversion Art. Lin Ming had taken in these Law runes and analyzed them.

Now, when Lin Ming and Soaring Feather God King fought, it would be fine if she didn't use the Feather Conversion Art. But once she used the Feather Conversion Art, Lin Ming would be able to use the Three Lives Pupils and Daevic Eye Dao Palace to rapidly understand the Laws distributed throughout Soaring Feather's attack methods, and then use his understanding of the Feather Conversion Art to take the initiative against her!

This was also one of the great assurances that Lin Ming used to fight Soaring Feather!

MW Chapter 2072

Chapter 2072 – The All-out Soaring Feather

…

…

…

Facing Soaring Feather God King's question, Lin Ming remained composed as usual. He said, "When I controlled your precious disciple and made her hand over the Feather Conversion Art, this method was indeed not honorable. But, the first time I fought Fairy Blue Lotus I only had a half-step Empyrean cultivation, yet the trump card she took out was your incarnation.

"And just when I broke through to the Empyrean realm, what I had to face was your true self.

"So, I was compelled to take certain means, but, it wasn't what I hoped for."

Lin Ming's words caused Soaring Feather God King to choke on what she was about to say. Indeed, Lin Ming's methods weren't honorable, but she with her True Divinity realm cultivation was fighting a junior who had just broken into the Empyrean realm. This was the difference of an entire large boundary, and this by itself made all her talk about honor in martial arts ridiculous to begin with.

But in truth, this was also because Lin Ming's strength had already reached the level of a True Divinity. Subconsciously no one considered him a mere Empyrean, thus the way they spoke to him also changed.

Soaring Feather looked at Lin Ming, her eyes dropping in temperature with every passing moment. She reached out a hand and her sword disappeared; it had clearly been taken back into her spatial ring.

She no longer planned to use her weapon.

This startled Lin Ming. The many human martial artists watching were also puzzled. But, there was one thing they were certain about, and it was that if Soaring Feather put away her weapon, it certainly wasn't because she was being modest. Rather, she was about to go all-out, and she had an even stronger card in her hand.

Everyone watched with bated breath as they waited for Soaring Feather to make her move.

Slowly, a ghostly blue light covered Soaring Feather God King. Her divine feather force field also became much more formidable.

Wu – Wu – Wu –

Circles of spiritual storms scattered out from Soaring Feather God King. This was the same Feather Conversion Art but it actually involved higher level Laws and techniques.

The Feather Conversion Art was Soaring Feather God King's unique cultivation method, but it wasn't something that she created by herself. In fact, in this world, for the martial arts civilization to develop to such a vibrant degree, there was no high level cultivation method which existed that was created from nothing. Instead they were created on the foundations of their predecessors, a comprehensive synthesis of the previous knowledge.

For instance, one could relate this to the development of mortal civilizations. It was impossible for a primitive tribe to evolve in a single year to the point where they could construct wondrous imperial palaces.

This was the reason why inheritances were important. The Feather Conversion Art was the result of its predecessors. Of course, Soaring Feather God King was the master who had brought it to a whole new level and had improved it by adding in her own understandings.

And although Soaring Feather God King had passed down the Feather Conversion Art to Fairy Blue Lotus without reserve, ultimately Fairy Blue Lotus was limited in her ability to comprehend. As for the final level of the Feather Conversion Art, Fairy Blue Lotus didn't understand it, thus she wasn't able to repeat it to Lin Ming.

"Lin Ming, you are truly strong, but in my opinion, you with your recently achieved Empyrean cultivation pose far less of a threat to me than Divine Dream. I do fear you, but what I fear is only your future. As for now, the one I care about is Divine Dream..."

As Soaring Feather God King spoke, her eyes gently turned, arriving onto Divine Dream who stood several hundred miles away. Divine Dream was millions of years younger than her; she could be called a rare heaven-gifted genius.

Moreover, in their long battle, Soaring Feather God King had been unable to fully understand Divine Dream nor was she able to figure out what other means of combat Divine Dream possessed. However, she could confirm one thing, and that was that it wasn't easy to do anything in front of her. For instance it would be have been impossible to kill the half-step Empyrean Lin Ming in her presence.

But, what Soaring Feather God King didn't expect was that the cards she held back in her battle against Divine Dream would actually be forced out in her battle with Lin Ming!

Soaring Feather laid her hands out flat. Beautiful feathers appeared on her arms.

"I never imagined that in this battle against you I would be pushed to this degree, where I will have to use the final level of the Feather Conversion Art!"

As Soaring Feather spoke, her body shined with a rainbow-hued divine light. Then, more and more brilliant feathers appeared on her body. Even on her face all sorts of feather-shaped curse seals appeared.

Hua-la!

With a ripping sound, the clothes on Soaring Feather God King's back were torn apart and two massive pure white wings unfurled.

These wings were each the height of an adult man and her wingspan surpassed 20 feet. They were also five feet long. If she pulled them together, she could easily wrap them around her body.

Lin Ming was startled. Soaring Feather actually had wings?

These weren't wings formed from energy, but true wings of flesh and blood! This was the strength of her bloodline!

With her wings gently flapping, Soaring Feather stood steady in the void. As she wore her snow white dress coordinated with those wings, she seemed like a beautiful angel exiled from the highest heavens.

It wasn’t just Lin Ming, but the human martial artists were also stunned. Yet this wasn’t the end, but just the beginning.

After those wings appeared, luminous tail feathers stretched out from behind Soaring Feather God King. These tail feathers were 30 feet long, like the tail feathers of a phoenix. But these feathers were different from those of a phoenix; no one had ever seen anything like them.

Tail feather after tail feather extended outwards, glorious and sharp. Soaring Feather God King’s body gradually faded away. She was completely wrapped in those feathers, turning into a seven-colored divine luan!

“Mm?”

Lin Ming was startled. Soaring Feather God King was just like Xiao Moxian and also possessed a half-God Beast bloodline relationship?

Lin Ming didn’t know if this was a God Beast in the traditional sense, but what he was sure of was that the bloodline intensity of this seven-colored divine luan was in no way inferior to a royal God Beast!

Everyone said that Xiao Moxian’s bloodline was one that was rarely seen even in a billion years within the Divine Realm. And now, Soaring Feather God King seemed to have a similar bloodline to Xiao Moxian.

But no one had known of this before. People only knew that Soaring Feather God King's weapons were feathers and her force field was the divine feather force field. However, they didn't form too many associations.

It was only now that everyone realized Soaring Feather God King's feathers weren't there because they were her personal preference, but because they were truly part of her bloodline and originated from her body.

"I never thought that Soaring Feather would have this kind of bloodline..."

Dark Demon Monarch suddenly said. He couldn't help but glance at Xiao Moxian.

Because of similarities in bloodline, the one that could feel the great strength of Soaring Feather was Xiao Moxian. As someone with a royal Dark Phoenix bloodline, she had to pass through nirvana nine times to achieve her ultimate state. And she could faintly feel that Soaring Feather God King's bloodline allowed her to go through a similar transformation, and perhaps she had nearly reached the highest boundary, coming close to perfection.

"It seems that the Feather Conversion Art was originally a cultivation method most suited for your bloodline... or it could even be said that the original progenitor of this cultivation method had a similar bloodline as you do, or perhaps it was changed to such a state in your hands." As Lin Ming spoke he began to rapidly revolve the power of divinity and demons in his body. At this moment he could feel the terrifying threat that came from Soaring Feather.

Soaring Feather didn't answer Lin Ming. She said, "Let me give you a word of caution. In a situation where I reveal my true bloodline, I can display the saint race's body metamorphosis technique to the limit!"

Soaring Feather moved. With her tail feathers she seemed like a seven-colored divine luan that was 70-80 feet long. Her speed drew towards an unimaginable degree as she nearly vanished from Lin Ming's sight.

Kacha!

Soaring Feather's two claws slashed down, tearing through the endless skies!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. He rapidly drew backwards, sweeping out the Black Dragon Spear at the same time.

Although this was an automatic reaction, Lin Ming still poured a wild amount of incomparably shaking force into the Black Dragon Spear, causing it to violently tremble. This Black Dragon Spear that could instantly break apart an Empyrean spirit treasure smashed into the seven-colored divine luan's claws!

Soaring Feather had transformed into a seven-colored divine luan, and her body now contained a divine natural strength. Lin Ming originally thought that the body transformation technique was Soaring Feather's weak spot, but after she manifested her true form, he was finally able to feel just how horrifying an existence she was.

When the Phoenix Blood Spear smashed into Soaring Feather God King's claws, the fierce vibrating power was forcefully withstood by Soaring Feather God King. The Black Dragon Spear was suddenly caught by her left claw and then her right claw came crashing down.

Weng!

With a loud explosive sound, the web of Lin Ming's hand cracked open. He stuffily coughed out loud as he flew backwards!

At the same time, Soaring Feather God King hadn't emerged unscathed. Her left claw that had gripped onto the Black Dragon Spear had been wounded by the vibration force.

However, Soaring Feather God King ignored this. Her figure flickered and her right claw grasped at Lin Ming's chest!

This extreme speed left everyone panic-stricken. In the legends, the Blue-winged Roc that understood the Wind Laws to the deepest degree still wasn't this fast; this was a speed far superior to that of a Phoenix God Beast.

People didn't even have time to cry out in alarm. Soaring Feather God King's claw had already reached Lin Ming.

"Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!"

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. Starlight of the highest heavens immediately gathered towards him, crazily pouring into his body. At the same time, he had already started burning his Asura blood.

A potent and thick energy formed layers of protective energy. Lin Ming no longer had time to dodge. He raised his arm, keeping the Black Dragon Spear tightly held to his forearm as he blocked this heavy strike!

Kacha!

The strike in that moment felt as if a heavy mountain had struck Lin Ming's arm just now. The layers of protective armor also burst apart. Lin Ming's entire body shook and the bones of his arm nearly broke apart.

Beneath this great impact force, blood flowed out from the edge of his lips. His body was smashed away!

As for the Black Dragon Spear, it had also escaped his hand!

“He lost his spear!”

A human martial artist cried out in alarm. Xiao Moxian’s palms were wet with a cold sweat.

A weapon was a martial artist’s second life. Lin Ming’s spear had broken in battle before. In his battle with Astral Vault God King, Lin Ming had sacrificed several Empyrean spirit treasure spears. But, Lin Ming rarely let go of his spear. As a martial artist, even if he lost consciousness he would still hold onto his weapon.

Sometimes, if one wished to take a weapon from a dead martial artist’s hand, they would have to break off the corpse’s fingers.

“Spiritual attack!”

A cold light flashed in Divine Dream’s eyes. What made Lin Ming release his spear was not Soaring Feather God King’s tremendous physical strength. In fact, in terms of absolute physical strength, Astral Vault was far better. However, in that wild claw attack just then, Soaring Feather God King had added a spiritual attack, making it nearly impossible to defend against!

MW Chapter 2073

Chapter 2073 – Suppressing a God King

…

…

…

“This… how can anyone still defend against this!?”

Some human Empyreans cried out in pure shock. After Soaring Feather became the incarnation of a seven-colored divine luan, not only did she unveil her horrifying body transformation technique but her strikes even contained divine soul attacks!

This was the last level of the Feather Conversion Art and Soaring Feather’s ultimate fighting method!

And to any enemy, this sort of fighting ability was undoubtedly a nightmare! After Soaring Feather underwent her transformation there were already few people capable of resisting her tremendous strength. Even if they managed to do it, they still had to endure the soul energy impact of the Feather Conversion Art, and there simply weren't many martial artists that could withstand this.

Divine Dream's guess was correct. The moment that Soaring Feather God King's claws struck Lin Ming's arms, he felt an incomparably insidious energy hurtle towards his spiritual sea.

Even for Lin Ming, his face paled at this moment. An incredibly overbearing strength pierced into his spiritual sea, turning into a giant feather that thrust down like a spear.

As long as this spear struck, Lin Ming's spiritual sea would absolutely be injured!

Even if there weren't any lingering side effects left over, this would be the same as losing this battle.

In an instant, Lin Ming's soul form appeared within his spiritual sea.

"Famine's soul!"

He bellowed out loud. Behind him, the titanic soul of Famine that was submerged in his spiritual sea was stirred into a frenzy. Countless tentacles stretched out, rolling out like an army of blood dragons.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The blood dragon tentacles violently collided with Soaring Feather God King's heaven-shattering feathers countless times. Every explosion caused Lin Ming to turn that much paler.

Lin Ming knew that if he used the Magic Cube it would be easy to defend his spiritual sea. But, he didn't want to let Soaring Feather know about the Magic Cube; the time was not yet ripe to reveal such a secret.

Time and time again, powerful feathers were struck into powder.

Finally, the moment the feathers were about to touch Lin Ming's spiritual sea, ten blood dragons rushed out together, shredding apart the final feathers!

Peng!

The feathers turned into countless motes of light; Lin Ming's spiritual sea was unscathed.

However, with Lin Ming's current strength he was unable to completely control Famine's soul. To forcibly call upon the power of Famine's soul just now consumed a great deal of Lin Ming's strength.

The battle over Lin Ming's spiritual sea had occurred in just a moment. When he opened his eyes Soaring Feather had flown right in front of him, her claws grasping down!

This strike came towards Lin Ming's head; it was nearly impossible to avoid!

And Lin Ming had already let go of his Black Dragon Spear. If he were to use his flesh and blood to resist this strike, he would need to discard an arm to do so, and if he did that then this battle would be as good as settled.

In this critical moment, the black-clothed Lin Ming, purple-clothed Lin Ming, and blue-clothed Lin Ming rushed towards Soaring Feather God King from three different directions. One of them chopped down at her claws and the other two thrust their spears towards her eyes!

Lin Ming's three avatars all possessed the ability of independent thought. Even though they were controlled by Lin Ming they could move on their own. In this moment, the avatars came to rescue him, saving him from this crisis. Soaring Feather God King's figure flickered and her wings swept out, sweeping the three avatars away. As for Lin Ming's true self, he also took this chance to extricate himself from Soaring Feather God King's attack.

Bzz!

The Black Dragon Spear emitted an excited cry as it returned to Lin Ming's hand.

Lin Ming smashed the spear downwards. In this strike, Lin Ming had used his complete strength, even opening the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace to the limit and pouring the power of divinity and demons into the Black Dragon Spear without reserve. For a time, black and white yin yang colors swirled on the surface of the Black Dragon Spear.

The spear broke through the endless skies, unstoppable! The power of divinity and demons kindled, burning like sacred flames and scorching down the vastness of space!

Soaring Feather God King emitted a keening cry. She had just repelled Lin Ming's avatars with her wings so she was only able to resist Lin Ming's strike with her claws.

Kacha!

In that moment, all sound was swallowed. A blinding divine light swept through the void. For the surrounding several hundred miles, the human martial artists bore the brunt of the aftermath as they were covered by this divine light. Everyone watched as a large asteroid started to melt away and disintegrate beneath the illumination of this divine light!

"Be careful!"

Many human martial artists cried out in alarm, all of them summoning their protective true essence to resist the energy that snuck through the array formations.

“How horrifying. Even with protective shields prepared ahead of time, so much energy leaked through that we have to use all our energy to resist it.”

A young Holy Lord level elite said, his complexion changing. Facing such a dreadful strength, even if an Empyrean were to stand exposed in space it was likely they would be severely wounded.

Everyone instinctively wanted to retreat further away. But at this time, Divine Dream moved. She formed a seven-colored divine light that fused into the protective array, stabilizing it so that no energy leaked through anymore.

Seeing this, everyone let out a sigh of relief. As they looked at Divine Dream, awe was in their eyes.

This massive asteroid had disintegrated beneath the impact of energy yet Divine Dream was able to easily resist it. This showed just how terrifying True Divinity level masters were.

At this time, the explosive divine light had dissipated. Everyone looked towards the center of the battlefield and saw that Soaring Feather God King’s two claws were stained with blood and the feathers on her stomach were also drenched red. From a single glance, one could see that this blood didn’t originate from Lin Ming because its color was strange and although it was red, it shined with a rainbow luster.

Soaring Feather was injured, moreover her injuries were heavy!

As for Lin Ming, his wounds were even greater. His arm was twisted at a strange angle; it was clear he had broken his bones.

His other arm was also covered in blood. It was obvious that he took heavy losses in that collision just now.

Not just that, but his complexion was deathly pale, as if in that explosion just now the two of them had also undergone a contest of soul force!

Looking at Lin Ming’s bloodstained body, Xiao Moxian trembled. Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, Lin Xiaoge, and the others were also shaking with worry.

For the fight to reach this point, it was simply too brutal.

“Father…”

Lin Huang looked at Lin Ming from afar, his thoughts complex.

To him, Lin Ming would forever be the one he worshipped and the goal he aimed for in his heart. Lin Ming's back had always been driving Lin Huang forwards.

Compared to the nervous human side, Soaring Feather was staring at Lin Ming, her complexion dignified. She had used the final level of the Feather Conversion Art, revealed her true form, combined her soul attack and material attack, and even utilized the saint race's body transformation technique to the limit. It could be said that she had gone all out this battle.

Although she had suppressed Lin Ming, she actually didn't manage to defeat him!

And at this time, something occurred that caused Soaring Feather's eyes to leap up.

Lin Ming stretched out his left hand. He held onto his fractured and twisted right arm, clenched his teeth, and pulled.

Kacha!

With a cracking sound the broken bones joined back together. Lin Ming slowly moved his right hand. Although his arm trembled, it was clear that there was no problem with his joints.

By activating the Natal Life Dao Palace of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, a martial artist could obtain an unequalled restorative ability. They could regenerate severed arms and even rejoin their body if they were cut in half.

Lin Ming held his spear in his left hand. He didn't move his right hand, but instead wrapped it with energy. It started to regenerate at a speed visible to the naked eye.

Lin Ming's eyes were profound. His three avatars gathered around him, clearly planning to delay for time.

If he consumed a massive amount of blood vitality on his arm, he could definitely repair it in 20 some breaths of time. But during this time, he would need his avatars to divert his opponent.

Soaring Feather's eyes were cold. She rushed forwards!

She used her extreme speed once more. She clearly didn't plan on giving Lin Ming time to heal, or, perhaps it could be said she wanted to test Lin Ming's limits.

Hu - !

Hu - !

Strong gales stirred up. Soaring Feather and the four Lin Mings moved together.

Energy wildly blazed outwards, forming a horrifying storm in the cosmos. The speed of the five figures neared the pinnacle, and even Empyreans found it difficult to clearly see what was occurring. As for the common martial artists, all they saw were series of afterimages!

Although they couldn't clearly see the movements, the energy shockwaves that were capable of disintegrating asteroids reminded everyone just how terrifying this battle was!

If it wasn't for the force field released by Divine Dream, then besides the several peak Empyreans there would be no one capable of standing still. Everyone below the Empyrean realm would also be instantly turned to ash. This was the disparity of absolute strength!

Chi!

Lin Ming gripped his spear in his left hand, drawing a crescent moon through the air as he aimed at Soaring Feather's abdomen. Soaring Feather blocked with her right wing and grasped out a claw at Lin Ming. However, at this time, Lin Ming's avatars attacked from behind Soaring Feather, forcing her to draw back her attack. Lin Ming's body flickered. Space shrank beneath his feet and he instantly appeared thousands of feet away.

"You fight just to delay for time? Your arm should already be fine by now!"

Soaring Feather's face was cold and decisive. Lin Ming's avatars were simply too annoying. Although their individual strength was less than the main body, they still possessed formidable defensive powers. And with each one coordinating with the others, it was hard to damage them.

"I just recovered!" Lin Ming suddenly shouted. He stretched out his right hand and the Black Dragon Spear landed in its grasp.

"You dare to engage me in frontal battle!?"

Soaring Feather asked, her aura erupting.

"As you wish!"

Lin Ming roared into the heavens. He grabbed his spear with both hands and hurtled forwards once more. A massive Asura phantom appeared behind him. At this time, Lin Ming was covered in blood, small and large wounds crisscrossing his entire body. He was like a blood red meteor as he impacted towards Soaring Feather God King.

Bang!

An explosion no smaller than the previous one blew out once more. Even from trillions of miles away, one could see a blazing light ignite in the distant skies.

The protective barriers that were several hundred miles away began to violently shake. Besides Divine Dream, everyone else, including Emperor Shakya, Dark Demon Monarch, and the others, all had changed complexions. Just how horrifying was this battle?

In this collision, Lin Ming's arm didn't break. By using the power of vibration he dispersed a great deal of the impact force. Taking advantage of this chance, Lin Ming flipped around. He actually… rode on top of Soaring Feather's back!

This was a weakness of Soaring Feather God King's defenses that he had long since been eyeing! With Soaring Feather God King having become the incarnation of a divine bird, he could avoid many of her attacks by riding on her back.

MW Chapter 2074

Chapter 2074 – The Conclusion of the Battle

…

…

…

Soaring Feather God King's strongest attack methods were her wings and claws. But, her wings were on her sides and her claws near her abdomen. Her back was her natural blind spot!

This was what people meant when they spoke about riding a tiger. Riding the back of a beast was the safest spot, but getting off was an entirely different story.

Bang!

Lin Ming was like a mountain suppressing the earth. Strength capable of cracking open planets was poured into his legs as he clamped down on Soaring Feather God King's back!

In that fierce explosion just then, Soaring Feather God King had momentarily lost her balance. She cried out in alarm with not enough time to react. She hadn't expected that Lin Ming would actually decide to fight this way.

And at this time, Lin Ming used his bloodstained arms to grab the Black Dragon Spear and bring it smashing down!

Puff!

Soaring Feather's protective astral essence shattered. Blood splashed out and feathers fluttered into the air!

Soaring Feather emitted a keening cry, a cry that contained the wrath of a God King!

She wasn't angry that she had been wounded by Lin Ming, but angry that Lin Ming was riding on her back.

She suddenly flapped her wings and a terrifying energy erupted. Lin Ming's avatars were sent flying away like broken kites, but Lin Ming twisted his legs, sticking onto Soaring Feather's back so that he wouldn't be flung off by her!

Lin Ming erupted with energy once more. He grabbed the Black Dragon Spear and brought it pounding down again!

Kacha!

The sound of cracking bone filled the air. Soaring Feather God King vomited a mouthful of blood as she hurtled downwards.

This scene left all the human martial artists watching dazed. The fight had actually reached such a brutal degree, and Lin Ming was now even riding on Soaring Feather's back!

In particular, Astral Vault God King. He didn't dare reveal himself in public and instead watched the battle from afar. As he did, his jaw nearly dropped to the ground.

He was the one who understood Soaring Feather's personality the most. Just how arrogant was Soaring Feather? And yet, she was now being ridden by a human and being savagely beaten! Not to mention Soaring Feather, even common God Beasts wouldn't tolerate being ridden by others. This was an absolute insult to them, so it was no wonder that Soaring Feather was so enraged!

"Ao!"

Soaring Feather sent out a keening cry once more!

At this moment, her entire body seemed to burn like a scorching sun. Countless divine feathers fell down from her body, scattering throughout the air!

Spears of divine feathers!

This was tens of thousands of seven-colored divine feathers, indiscriminately attacking in all directions. Many of these feathers also contained Soaring Feather God King's blood essence!

Zheng! Zheng! Zheng! Zheng!

Divine feathers became spears, each spear glimmering with cold light. Tens of thousands of spear lights blazed out, splitting open the endless skies!

This was Soaring Feather's attack created from shedding her divine feathers, and also her all-out move. Unless she was in a life-or-death crisis she wouldn't use such a move.

In ordinary times if she fought with Lin Ming, even if she was finally defeated by him she still wouldn't use this move. This was because this move was her trump card and also a move that overdrew her blood vitality!

But now because Lin Ming was riding on her back, it was too hard for her to get rid of him, leaving her with no choice but to use her life-saving attack!

When Soaring Feather's divine feathers were flooded with energy, each one approached a True Divinity spirit treasure in quality.

With so many divine feathers scattered in all directions and shooting out, this was a nightmarish attack!

Facing this crazy and fierce offensive, it was certainly impossible for Lin Ming to continue riding on Soaring Feather's back!

In fact, when Soaring Feather activated her spears of divine feathers, Lin Ming had felt a horrifying killing intent erupt from her. He had quickly drawn back, but in that brief moment his thigh was pierced by a divine feather and started pouring out blood!

Spear light shot out. Seven-colored divine light overwhelmed the skies!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. He grasped the Black Dragon Spear and rushed ahead!

Peng!

A beam of spear light formed from divine feathers was shattered by Lin Ming. He used this repelling force to flip around, avoiding the impact of another spear light.

Hu –

Hu –

Hu –

More and more spear lights appeared. The dancing divine feather spears danced in the air, weaving together and forming a sea of slaughter.

Lin Ming roared once more. Behind him, the Asura phantom reappeared. It pushed three great wheels of destiny, spinning like grinding pans.

Ka ka ka!

Spear after spear of divine feathers was crushed by the grinding pans. Lin Ming drew back again and again, but there were too many spear lights. As he rapidly retreated, two spear lights pierced into his stomach and shoulder, but he managed to avoid being hit in any vital points on his body.

However, when his mortal body was struck by a divine feather spear, the soul attack contained within caused blood to flow from Lin Ming's nose!

This was an incredibly frigid battle. After reaching such a state it had already surpassed the boundary of a martial arts contest, and was now no different from a life or death battle!

All of the martial artists watching this battle felt their minds tremble with fear. Even Empyrean Divine Dream sucked in a light breath of air. She hadn't expected that the battle would become like this.

In her opinion, if Soaring Feather God King were to fight with Lin Ming, she shouldn't have used all her cards.

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

Divine light lit up the skies. Spear light soared into the heavens. Countless divine feathers were torn apart by Lin Ming's incomparably powerful combat strength. However, Lin Ming was wounded all over. There was not an inch of skin on his body that wasn't injured. Then, as the barrage of divine feathers was on the verge of ending, another divine feather spear stabbed into Lin Ming's chest!

If an ordinary human Empyrean were to receive such a blow, then even if they didn't end up half-dead they would still lose all ability to continue fighting.

But Lin Ming simply grit his teeth and pulled out the divine feather spear stabbed into his body. He revolved the power of the Natal Life Dao Palace and began regenerating his wounds.

Today's battle was the most harrowing battle he had been in since he came to the wild universe!

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

At this time, the countless divine feathers that were shot out began to roll backwards, submerging into Soaring Feather God King's body until they all vanished.

As for the several divine feathers that Lin Ming held in his hands, although they didn't manage to fly loose from his grasp, all of their blood energy was instantly drawn out as they lose all their luster.

This blood energy was naturally used to restore Soaring Feather God King. To take away Soaring Feather's life feather blood essence in front of her wasn't a realistic action.

At this time, Soaring Feather God King was still in the shape of a seven-colored divine luan. However, her back was covered with blood and her bones were broken all over. This was the result of being firmly smashed by Lin Ming's spear just then!

Her icy cold eyes glared at Lin Ming. In terms of wounds alone, Lin Ming had far deeper injuries than she did. But Lin Ming possessed the Natal Life Dao Palace and his recovery abilities were stronger. Moreover, that attack Soaring Feather used just now had affected her blood vitality.

If they were to truly continue fighting then Soaring Feather would have the edge in winning. But, that was already meaningless.

Because fighting any further would mean a true life-or-death slaughter.

And both sides would inevitably be forced to overdrawn their life source.

"This is as far as we go!"

Soaring Feather suddenly shouted. Lin Ming was stunned. He slowed the power of divinity and demons revolving in his body, and even the Black Dragon Spear in his hands gently shook. His injuries were far too deep and he had just received heavy losses. Even just now, Soaring Feather's final strike had caused three wounds that pierced through his body!

The Natal Life Dao Palace helped Lin Ming regenerate his wounds. And at this time, Lin Ming's three avatars stood on guard, protecting him as they stared at Soaring Feather.

Lin Ming's fighting method was to restore his injuries using the Natal Life Dao Palace and use his three avatars to delay for time.

Such a plan was to engage Soaring Feather in a battle of attrition. However, Lin Ming didn't know how many times Soaring Feather could use that final spears of divine feathers killing move she just displayed.

If she was able to use it two more times, then that was absolutely something he could not withstand.

“This is as far as we go?” Lin Ming looked at Soaring Feather.

“Fighting further is meaningless!” Soaring Feather coldly looked at Lin Ming. Because he had ridden her just then, she still brooded over this.

The truth was that her thoughts were extremely complex at this moment. Lin Ming's strength had surpassed her expectations, and she never thought she would even have to use her spears of divine feathers.

Hearing Soaring Feather's words, all the human martial artists let out a long breath of relief. In truth, in their opinion they all believed that Soaring Father had the upper hand, and they worried whether or not Lin Ming would be able to continue the battle much longer.

"Lin Ming..."

Xiao Moxian covered her mouth. Tears started streaming down her cheeks.

"It's finally over..." Empyrean Vast Universe wiped away a cold sweat, "It's good that it's over!"

Empyrean Vast Universe was someone that wasn't afraid of any situation, but, when that fight just now reached such a dire degree, he found it difficult to relax. His heart had been caught in his throat the entire time.

"Then... our bet?"

Lin Ming gloomily said as he looked at Soaring Feather. Previously, they had said that even if Lin Ming didn't win, as long as they came to a draw or if he could show he had combat strength equal to a saint True Divinity then Soaring Feather and Astral Vault would fulfill their end of the bet.

But with their battle having concluded in such a manner, Lin Ming actually didn't believe this could be considered a draw. This was because for anyone watching it would seem that he had been at a disadvantage.

"The bet will be as we agreed!"

Soaring Feather frostily said. She had already developed thoughts of withdrawing from the war between humanity and the saints.

The great war between humanity and the saints all began because of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's ambitions. Soaring Feather had no intention of fighting to the death for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

As for the final result in the war, the truth was that even if humanity won, the foundation of the saints wouldn't be shaken. In the past humanity only had a single Heaven, and even after being occupied by the saints it was impossible to kill off every human.

So now, the opposite was also true. Humanity didn't have too many elites to begin with, but the saints had seven Heavens with an impossibly large population base. The saints had Empyreans, even peak Empyreans, several times the number that humanity possessed, so it was truly impossible for the humans to do anything to the saints.

Moreover, the most dangerous Lin Ming had already promised that he would withdraw from the war with her and Astral Vault, and place his every grudge onto the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign alone.

As for the blood debt between humanity and the saints, that would have to be taken back by the human armies.

In this situation, what reason was there for Soaring Feather to continue doing all this?

This battle was originally just a way for her to find a legitimate reason to withdraw from the war. The reason the battle devolved into such an appearance was because Lin Ming's strength far surpassed her expectations and also because Lin Ming's actions had provoked Soaring Feather.

Thinking of this, Soaring Feather indignantly glared at Lin Ming with resentment. Unfortunately it would be impossible for her to do anything to Lin Ming, and there was also no way for her to clear this insult in the future.

"You remember me!"

Soaring Feather coldly tossed out these words. After finishing speaking, she didn't delay at all as her body turned into a beam of light that shot deep into the universe.

Lin Ming was left dumbfounded. He didn’t think Soaring Feather would leave in such a simple and immediate manner.

Like this, his battle against two True Divinities had concluded.

MW Chapter 2075

Chapter 2075 – Ascension Ceremony

…

…

…

“Lin Ming! Haha!” Human Empyreans flew towards him, several hundred miles passing in a moment.

“Are you fine?”

Emperor Shakya quickly looked over Lin Ming, making sure that he didn’t have any major issues.

“Haha!”

Empyrean Vast Universe slapped Lin Ming's shoulder. This day would be recorded in the history of humanity, a day remembered for time immemorial.

Within 10 days, Lin Ming defeated Astral Vault with an Empyrean level cultivation and then fought Soaring Feather to a draw. Throughout the last 10 billion years of history in the 33 Heavens, such a record had never been reported.

As for before 10 billion years ago when those like the Asura Road Master and Immortal Sovereign were at the early Empyrean realm, it was unknown just what sort of strength they possessed.

At this time, the human fleets were already stirred up in a frenzy of jubilation! Everyone shouted out Lin Ming's name, their cries forming endless waves.

If it wasn't for the many Empyreans, then because of Lin Ming's identity and aura these warriors would have already eagerly rushed up to praise him.

In the great calamity of humanity, when humanity was about to make their counterattack and retake the Divine Realm, what they needed was a hero, someone who truly inspired them.

"Lin Ming, three days from now let's hold a celebration feast." At this time, Divine Dream arrived by Lin Ming's side like a cool breeze. Her body was accompanied with a vague fragrance, and the surrounding Empyreans quickly made way for her.

“Celebration feast?” Lin Ming shook his head. “There’s no need for one.”

Lin Ming didn’t want to attend such a celebration feast. Not to mention that he didn’t want to waste his time, now was not the time to celebrate. Only when they killed the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would a celebration feast have any meaning.

“There is.” Divine Dream lightly said, “This celebration feast will also be your ascension ceremony where you will obtain your Empyrean title. To the human powerhouses, this ascension ceremony is highly important. Moreover… your ascension ceremony will greatly inspire the morale of humanity!”

Title?

Lin Ming was surprised. In the past when he adventured through the Sky Spill Continent, he had obtained titles like ‘Evil God’, ‘Asura’, and other such titles. But, these were simply honorifics that weren’t related to him too much.

However, upon becoming an Empyrean, a title was necessary.

Almost every human Empyrean had their own title. And after being conferred this title, they would often substitute this for their own name.

For instance, Empyrean Divine Dream, Empyrean Vast Universe, Three Lives Old Man, Dark Demon Monarch, and so forth. Even Xiao Moxian was given the title of Empyrean Demon Fairy after breaking through to the Empyrean realm.

As for Xiao Moxian's original name, Ji Xian'er, only those like Lin Ming and a small minority had the qualifications to call her that.

The disciples of Demon Fairy Palace only referred to Xiao Moxian as Empyrean Demon Fairy.

The juniors of humanity needed a way to refer to Empyreans. They couldn't call an Empyrean by their true name; this was an act of disrespect.

Moreover, an Empyrean was an unparalleled ruler of their race. Their name needed to represent the dignity of their role as a powerhouse, and their original name might not possess such majesty, in fact, it might even sound extremely ordinary.

This was why after a long period of time, people would use an Empyrean's title to refer to them.

So, it could be said a title was extremely important to an Empyrean.

Lin Ming currently needed this breadth of dignity because he was already the one worthy of being called the spiritual leader of humanity!

The position of spiritual leader was a sacred throne. It could even be called the belief that all human martial artists held in their hearts.

To many martial artists, Lin Ming was a nearly omnipotent existence. If Lin Ming was strong, then morale would surge upwards. If Lin Ming was weak, then morale would plummet.

The name of faith that these martial artists kept in their hearts should be somewhat sacrosanct.

Young Hero Lin, Senior Lin, Sage Lin, Hero Lin, titles like these were inappropriate.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming also believed that a title was necessary.

Thus, he nodded. “Then I will have to bother Senior Divine Dream to help me arrange this…”

….

As humanity was arranging Lin Ming's ascension ceremony, Soaring Feather had already activated a great void shift and passed through hundreds of millions of miles of space. She rapidly flew into a milky white spirit palace located deep in starry space.

Only Fairy Blue Lotus was within this spirit palace, anxiously waiting.

"Master!"

Seeing Soaring Feather rapidly fly over, Fairy Blue Lotus rushed to greet her. As she saw Soaring Feather's appearance though, she was startled.

At this time Soaring Feather had still maintained her body metamorphosis appearance. Her back was covered in blood and many of her feathers had been torn out.

"I'm fine. These are just external wounds."

The moment that Soaring Feather flew into the spirit palace she undid her body metamorphosis. Her naked body landed on the great rugs that lined the spirit palace. Her snow white skin was stained red with blood.

Seeing these wounds, Fairy Blue Lotus was horrified. She didn't dare to believe her own eyes. "This… these wounds… were caused by Lin Ming?"

“Yes…” Soaring Feather nodded.

“Master, you… you lost?” Fairy Blue Lotus uttered, disbelief thick in her voice. It was already hard for her to accept that Lin Ming had the abilities to contend with Soaring Feather, but to defeat Soaring Feather and severely wound her, Fairy Blue Lotus thought this was impossible.

This was simply too ridiculous!

“I didn’t lose, but I didn’t win. Lin Ming’s wounds are heavier than mine.” Soaring Feather lightly said. The new was constantly replacing the old. Lin Ming’s great strength had left her bewildered.

“Prepare a barrel of medicinal solution for me.”

Although Soaring Feather cultivated the saint race’s body transformation technique, her restorative abilities were far inferior to Astral Vault’s. This was the difference of their bloodlines. When Astral Vault fought with Lin Ming, his recovery abilities far exceeded Lin Ming’s Natal Life Dao Palace.

In truth, Astral Vault God King was not weak. His strengths lay in his endurance and recovery abilities that far exceeded Lin Ming’s.

Astral Vault God King could fiercely battle for a hundred days without using up all his strength. His blood vitality was far more powerful than that of a God Beast and in battle he recovered more energy than he used. He wasn't injured easily and even if he was he was fine. The more he fought the stronger he became, until the time his opponent collapsed.

Unfortunately, he fell into Lin Ming's trap. He had been rapidly defeated by Lin Ming in a short period of time and wasn't able to display his advantages.

It could be said that Astral Vault had lost with many regrets.

A True Divinity was not skilled in all aspects. Soaring Feather was superior to Astral Vault in many areas, but she lagged behind in recovery abilities. After receiving a heavy wound she needed the support of medicinal solutions to help her quickly recover.

She held her naked body and stepped into the jade barrel. As her snow white skin sank into the green medicinal solution, it was like white jade being buried in liquid emeralds.

Soaring Feather slowly fell silent.

She didn't know what would occur in the future of the 33 Heavens, nor did she know what the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would do once he left seclusion, and she didn't even know what the Soul Emperor was plotting.

She was clearly aware that with her strength, it was impossible for her to go from being a chess piece to a chess player.

Originally it was the Soul Emperor and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign playing against each other. Now, Lin Ming had joined in from the side.

As for how this game would play out, Soaring Feather couldn't see.

If she couldn't see what direction the chess game was playing in, rushing in to do anything was extremely dangerous. Moreover, for these past years she had felt increasingly tired and long since wanted to withdraw.

She didn't want to be a chess piece. Even if she was the most important game piece on the board, so what?

As a True Divinity, the truth was that she didn't need to attach herself to anyone.

Upon reaching the level of a True Divinity, if one discounted the hidden True Divinities who no one knew whether or not they truly existed, then the ones that were known amounted to around 10 in total. But, as for where the limits of these people's strength lay, no one knew.

The strength of the 33 Heavens' Soul Emperor and Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was also a mystery.

Soaring Feather was only faintly aware. Besides the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and the Soul Emperor, the other True Divinities were likely at the lower True Divinity realm. As for what rank of True Divinity the 33 Heavens' Soul Emperor and Good Fortune Saint Sovereign were, no one knew. They only vaguely referred to them as 'outstanding' amongst True Divinities.

Soaring Feather had never fought with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign or the Soul Emperor so she hadn't seen the limits of their strength.

She didn't know if they were upper True Divinities or middle True Divinities; all she knew was that she was absolutely not a match for either one of them…

…….

At this time, in Demon Fairy Palace –

On the top floor of Demon Fairy Palace on a warm bed within Xiao Moxian's chambers, Lin Ming was wrapped in fragrance, enjoying a warmth he hadn't felt for a long time.

Mu Qianyu was quietly splayed over his chest, listening to his powerful heartbeat. As for Qin Xingxuan, she held onto Lin Ming's arm, curled around him like a little sleeping kitten.

As for Xiao Moxian, she was leaning on Lin Ming's side, stretching out a delicate finger and naughtily drawing circles on his chest.

This moment of peace gave the three women an unprecedented feeling of satisfaction.

Naturally, Lin Ming was also extremely satisfied.

The truth was that in these past years, Lin Ming had chased after the peak of martial arts and tried to preserve the future of humanity; he had spent nearly all his time and energy on these two matters. In his heart, the desire between men and women wasn't able to create many waves.

However, after being separated for thousands of years and then reuniting with the women he deeply loved most in his life, the warmth and pleasure that returned could no longer be expressed with the word 'desire' alone.

After an unknown period of time, Mu Qianyu quietly opened her eyes. She suddenly said, "Lin Ming, I want a child..."

Mu Qianyu's startled Lin Ming. Qin Xingxuan also immediately awakened. Her pitch black eyes sparkled as she looked at Lin Ming.

"I also want one…" Qin Xingxuan's face blushed red.

Xiao Moxian laughed, but this playful and friendly laugh left Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu even more embarrassed.

In the past when Lin Ming was in the lower realms, if he wasn't involved in the chaos in the South Sea then he was being chased down by Yang Yun. In between, he had risked his life countless times. And with his limited strength and his desire to struggle against destiny, Lin Ming wasn't prepared to bring children into the world.

This was because he couldn't provide an environment to look after and train his children.

When he was with Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu, although they had made love numerous times, he had actually locked in his source of life because he didn't want children.

Afterwards, when Lin Ming was in the Asura Road with Xiao Moxian, he also didn't want a child. However the difference was that Lin Ming had a different bloodline than Xiao Moxian and it was extremely difficult for her to become pregnant. Lin Ming thought the chances of her becoming pregnant were nearly zero, thus he didn't care too much. However, he never thought that after he left the Asura Road he would win the jackpot, thus resulting in Lin Huang.

MW Chapter 2076

Chapter 2076 – Empyrean Title

…

…

…

"Brother Lin, for these past years, my two big sisters have had many concerns that you weren't aware of." Xiao Moxian playfully pinched Lin Ming. Then, she leaned in close to his ear, whispering something to him before quietly putting on her clothes and walking away.

The truth was that Xiao Moxian was already aware of Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu's thoughts. As women, they longed for a child, and this wish had continued for thousands of years.

As Xiao Moxian left the room, she gently closed the door behind her. Lin Ming was stunned. He looked at Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu in a daze, unsure what feeling was in his heart.

Mu Qianyu grabbed onto Lin Ming’s hand, affectionately staring into his eyes.

“Lin Ming… did you know? That when you left more than 6000 years ago, I nearly broke down. With the sorrow of humanity, there was nothing here but endless vicious beasts of the wilderness. It was with great difficulty that we developed our territory but even then all our efforts were for naught. This was because no matter how much we constructed, we never knew when the saints would come rushing through and savagely destroy everything… I couldn’t find hope and I couldn’t see a future. I waited for you, but everyone said that you had died… I wasn’t willing to believe them, but slowly I began reaching the precipice of despair…

“It was during this time that I thought if I had your child, how wonderful would that be?

“With a child, I would have a focus for my life. I could pour all my emotions into our child, so that even if something happened to you I wouldn’t collapse, because there would be a reason for my life…”

Mu Qianyu earnestly said, not blinking as she looked at Lin Ming.

Qin Xingxuan held onto Lin Ming’s hand, tears glistening in her eyes. ”Brother Lin, do you plan on leaving again in a few days?”

Lin Ming froze. Looking at in Qin Xingxuan, he couldn’t bear hurting her again.

However, he knew that he didn't have much time left. When he used negotiations and his own strength to force Astral Vault and Soaring Vault to withdraw from the war with him, many people had already guessed his plans.

Eventually, Lin Ming nodded…

Qin Xingxuan wasn't surprised nor was she hurt; she had already expected this.

She said, "Brother Lin, 6000 years ago, Huang'er was born and every day I would help Little Sister Xian'er look after him. I truly did envy her. Afterwards, I watched Huang'er slowly grow and regarded him as my own child. But, in the end, he wasn't. Every time Huang'er went out to adventure and then when I saw him return, I would think how wonderful would it be if I had my own child…"

As Qin Xingxuan spoke, her eyes sparkled with tears. She finally spoke of the sad days she had experienced for over 6000 years. This sort of loneliness, this sort of fear, the pain brought by these emotions was difficult to describe in words.

Lin Ming didn't speak because words were no longer necessary at this moment.

He firmly gripped Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan's hands. Then he held them in his arms and gently kissed them. Together, they fell back onto the soft bed…

Everything continued to occur naturally…

….

For the next three days, Lin Ming didn't train anymore. For the entire three days he completely relaxed himself and enjoyed a sensual peace with his wives.

And every time, Mu Qianyu and Qin Xingxuan would carefully accept Lin Ming's life essence lest it flow out from them.

Seeing this, Lin Ming couldn't help but laugh out loud.

The truth was that as long as Lin Ming no longer locked in his life essence, the chances of becoming pregnant were nearly 100%.

This was because Lin Ming's essence energy possessed a life force, vigor, and survival time far surpassing that of a mortal.

It wasn't wrong that it was difficult for a more powerful race to reproduce. But, it was Lin Ming that was strong, not his race that was strong. He was still a human, and also himself.

Because of this his ability to reproduce wouldn't weaken, and instead become stronger.

If there was a woman with a unique bloodline like Xiao Moxian, then if Lin Ming was with her the chances of her becoming pregnant would also be magnified by several times. But, if he were weak then the chances of her becoming pregnant would be nearly zero. This was an issue concerning the amount of life essence that one possessed. It was impossible for a mouse to impregnate a phoenix.

So in the future if Lin Ming broke into the True Divinity realm or even stepped Beyond Divinity, it wouldn't be impossible for Xiao Moxian to have a second child.

Three days later, early in the morning, Lin Ming woke up from the sweet warmth that surrounded him. He changed into new robes and exuded an energetic aura. Today, Lin Ming's ascension ceremony would begin!

The ancient ascension ceremony; it meant to offer a sacrifice to the heavens and earth. These ascension ceremonies also existed in the mortal realms. For instance, mortal emperors would climb up mountains to worship the heavens and earth, singing praises towards the world.

But it was different in the world of martial artists.

Here, the heavens and earth referred not to the heavens and earth in the eyes of a mortal, but to an Empyrean!

This was because after a martial artist broke into the Empyrean realm, the Laws they possessed would be able to stand on even ground with the Heavenly Dao Laws in some aspects.

So it wasn’t an exaggeration to say that an Empyrean was the universe of the heavens and earth.

Before the great calamity occurred, human True Divinities had long since vanished and an Empyrean was the highest boundary one could reach. With this the word Empyrean possessed the meaning of being singular and proud in the heavens above or the earth below!

Without a doubt, Lin Ming’s ascension ceremony would be the greatest celebration for humanity ever since they entered the wild universe.

Nearly a hundred human Empyreans gathered for this ceremony. In terms of scale, there was only one other event that could compare with this, and that was when Divine Dream broke into the True Divinity realm.

The base of humanity had already been transferred to a nebula deep in the center of the Hidden Dragon Galaxy.

Today, this nebula glowed with a divine light.

Every human Empyrean brought their Heavenly Palace. The hundred Heavenly Palaces circled together, gorgeous lights emitting from them that spanned the vastness of space, beautiful to the extreme.

And this divine afterglow surrounded a force field that was 100,000 miles in radius. Within this force field there were countless rare flowers and trees, treasures of the heavens and earth that were blooming together.

Such a marvelous sight appeared in the starry space of the cosmos, leaving one shocked!

And by this time, Lin Ming's title had already been decided.

Just yesterday, in order to decide Lin Ming's title, several high level figures of humanity had convened a special conference. This was something that had never occurred in human history before.

The vast majority of Empyrean titles were personally chosen by that Empyrean; they would use whatever title they were fond of.

These titles would often be related to their cultivation methods, combat methods, life experiences, place of birth, the reason they became famous, ancient ruins they visited, or other such factors.

However, Lin Ming's title held a different significance. He was the might and authority of humanity. The symbol of a leader certainly couldn't be randomly chosen.

This title needed to be accepted by the common people.

Moreover, this title was destined to be recorded in the annals of history and spread down for eternity. Thus, one couldn't help but be careful.

3.6 billion years ago, the leader of humanity was conferred the title of Empyrean Divine Seal. This title possessed monumental momentum and importance. Even after so many years passed, when people mentioned the name of Empyrean Divine Seal, they would do so with infinite respect in their voices. As for what Empyrean Divine Seal's true name was, no one knew. Of course this was likely due to the great calamity 3.6 billion years ago in which most of humanity's inheritances were destroyed.

At the start, someone suggested that they call Lin Ming 'Empyrean Immortal' to indicate that Lin Ming was immortal and that with his life, humanity would continue to exist in perpetuity.

However, this proposal was directly rejected by Divine Dream. While the title 'Immortal' might be domineering and great, it was already taken by someone 10 billion years ago.

At the same time, Empyrean Asura was the same.

More ideas were proposed. From Lin Ming's cultivation methods, 'Empyrean Nine Star', 'Empyrean Thunderfire', 'Empyrean Heretical God', all of these possibilities were rejected.

The reason was because they only described a small part, and didn't reflect Lin Ming in his entirety.

Divine Dream had had every person participating in this conference propose a title. Even the primal god race proposed the title of 'Everlasting God King', but after Divine Dream considered it for a moment she also rejected this.

When it came to Vast Universe to offer a proposal, because everyone had offered so many ideas and he couldn't duplicate them, he thought for a moment before suggesting 'Empyrean New Dawn'. This left Divine Dream at a loss for words. Although Empyrean New Dawn did have some nice meaning to it, this name didn't resound in the ears at all.

"Then, how about we call him... the Human Sovereign."

As all the other Empyreans finished speaking, Divine Dream spoke up.

Everyone listening was stunned. This name not only resounded loudly in the ears, but it also possessed a deeper meaning.

The saints had their Saint Sovereign.

The spiritas had their Soul Emperor.

Then humanity should have their Human Sovereign!

This title also indicated Lin Ming's position. Human Sovereign, the Sovereign of humanity, in other words, the number one person of the entire human race!

In the future when this great calamity was recorded in history, Lin Ming would be considered the highest leader of humanity and his name would be written down forever. When others mentioned these history books and spoke of Lin Ming, they would refer to him as the Human Sovereign. In other words – Human Sovereign Lin Ming!

And in the future, when the Divine Realm recovered to its golden era, humanity would no longer refer to Lin Ming as 'Senior' or 'Sage', but would instead call him 'Your Majesty', or 'Sovereign'.

This title obtained the approval of the Empyreans present. This was also a title won by Lin Ming's strength.

Because even if Empyreans could choose their title however they wished, no one would dare to call themselves this, since it would be the same as challenging all other human Empyreans.

But for Lin Ming to be conferred the title of Human Sovereign, no one refused it!

When Lin Ming learned of this title he felt that it was a bit exaggerated. But after considering multiple factors, a bit of exaggeration was acceptable for the war effort. Like this, the ascension ceremony officially began!

Banquets were held one after another. Many of the items at these banquets were heavenly materials, priceless and rare. Eating them was greatly beneficial to one's cultivation.

This banquet and ceremony continued for a full three days.

The title of Human Sovereign Lin Ming also spread through humanity from this ceremony.

On the last day, Lin Ming sat atop the throne of the Human Sovereign. Throughout the endless starry skies, the chants of human martial artists echoed. "Human Sovereign immortal, humanity forever!"

This chant formed a storm, causing the blood of every human warrior to boil over.

Looking at these human martial artists with their momentum that soared to the skies, Lin Ming knew that it was finally time to for humanity to return to the Divine Realm and settle their blood debt.

This was also the time for him to leave.

To Lin Ming, everything that was occurring in front of him, all of this worship and adoration, all of it seemed like a fog that could disappear at any moment.

Without absolute strength, before long all of this would turn into illusion, let alone being something that spread down through history.

This was because before that ever occurred, humanity would have turned into the dust of history...

Time was of the essence!

MW Chapter 2077

Chapter 2077 - Depart

...

...

...

After the ascension ceremony ended, Lin Ming flew into the void of space by himself.

He left behind the Legion of Famine to protect his family and friends. As for the great armies of humanity, they were preparing to retake the Divine Realm.

In such a situation, Lin Ming quietly passed through the connection between the wild universe and the Divine Realm, and arrived at the Asura Road by himself.

In the past two months, Qin Xingxuan and Mu Qianyu became pregnant one after another.

And as the two women were preparing to become mothers, Lin Ming entered seclusion once more to perceive Famine's memories. As his understanding towards the abyssal language became increasingly profound, he slowly understood more and more things. The origin of the Dark Abyss and the abyssal demons slowly formed an outline in Lin Ming's mind.

A terrifying guess emerged in Lin Ming's heart.

Because the information from Famine was incredibly messy and chaotic, Lin Ming didn't dare to assume that his guesses were correct. He had an idea, but to confirm this he had to personally go to the Dark Abyss!

Now, within the 33 Heavens, there was no place necessary for Lin Ming to go.

He had already explored the depths of the Asura Road. As for the Akashic Dream Universe, although he hadn't fully explored it, Lin Ming had already become fully aware of the Laws of Life and Death and even if he went there he wouldn't gain any heaven-shaking harvests.

Moreover, there was still the Soul Emperor. Although Sheng Mei had said that the Soul Emperor would need to go into seclusion for tens of thousands of years or even longer after absorbing his Eternal Soul, in order to cultivate the so-called Laws of Immortality. However, Lin Ming couldn't say that the Soul Emperor wouldn't end this seclusion midway.

Thus, after thinking about it, the place Lin Ming needed to go the most was the Dark Abyss!

Lin Ming was aware that within the Dark Abyss, there were horrifying existences that were scarier and stronger than the intelligent life forms of the 33 Heavens.

Infinite secrets were contained in the Dark Abyss.

These secrets involved the great calamity of the 33 Heavens 10 billion years ago, and even involved more ancient eras of the universe. Lin Ming didn’t know what the history of the universe was like before the Asura Road Master; could there have once been a martial arts civilization that was even more glorious?

But, before going to the Dark Abyss, Lin Ming thought of going to the Asura Road once more. There were some matters he needed to finish first and he needed to go into seclusion for a period of time.

The area Lin Ming chose to stay at in the Asura Road was not the final trial but God Burying Ridge.

Over 6000 years ago when Lin Ming arrived at the Asura Road’s Great Desolate with Xiao Moxian, they had been hunted down by Imperial Prince Naqi in God Burying Ridge, and finally even caught Tian Mingzi’s attention.

In a life-or-death crisis Lin Ming dual cultivated with Xiao Moxian, and as a result, they killed Tian Mingzi. Thinking of those days made Lin Ming feel as if they happened just yesterday. His battle against Tian Mingzi had been incomparably perilous; a single wrong step and they would have been doomed.

Lin Ming's heart still sped up when he thought back to Tian Mingzi's cunning plots. In the past, the reason he could kill Tian Mingzi and even bring down Imperial Prince Naqi and the half-step Empyrean Mister Ash Murder was because he had drawn support from a death zone in God Burying Ridge – Blue Throne Bai Qi's Tomb.

One of the Asura Road Master's disciples was buried in Bai Qi's Tomb. Without a doubt, this person had once been an ancient True Divinity level character. After being weakened for 10 billion years, the tomb that this character left behind had its array formations and force fields weakened to an incredibly low degree. Otherwise, if they weren't, then using the tomb's array formations to kill a lower Empyrean or middle Empyrean wouldn't have been difficult at all.

In the past when Lin Ming entered Bai Qi's Tomb, he had disturbed Bai Qi's eternal slumber. Then, in order to protect himself he had used the array formations in Bai Qi's Tomb to kill Imperial Prince Naqi, Mister Ash Murder, and the others.

In order to express his thanks and also apologize for his actions, Lin Ming had pledged that once he gained the ability he would reenter this land and repair Bai Qi's Tomb.

And now Lin Ming had this ability.

He used his knowledge of array formations and the Asura Heavenly Dao Laws, spending a full six days to repair all of the killing arrays in Bai Qi's Tomb. He poured in sufficient energy, and with the heaven and earth origin energy that would supplement the array formations, they would revolve without issue for several billion more years.

Like this, Lin Ming could be said to have fulfilled his past promise.

Besides repairing Bai Qi's Tomb, he had made another pledge; he had promised Empyrean Divine Mist that he would kill Empyrean Divine Void.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming estimated his strength and realized that it might be too difficult to achieve.

Divine Void's strength was likely comparable to that of Astral Vault God King.

While he was stronger than Astral Vault God King, if he hadn't used tactics and had instead directly faced him, then defeating him wouldn't have been as easy.

Moreover, that was only defeat. Defeating someone and killing them were to completely different concepts. As long as Divine Void walked away, there was nothing Lin Ming could do to stop him.

Even if Divine Void wanted to engage in a final life-or-death battle and Lin Ming fought with him, there were no advantages to be had.

In this sort of situation, it was impossible for Lin Ming to avoid all the array formations and subordinates within Divine Void's lair and kill him. He didn't believe he could accomplish this even when he reached the middle Empyrean realm.

Thus, Lin Ming chose to go into seclusion. This was also the most important goal for which he had come to God Burying Ridge, because God Burying Ridge contained a mysterious cultivation land – Tragic Death Valley.

Within Tragic Death Valley, time and space were twisted underneath the yoke of some strange rules. The flow of time in Tragic Death Valley was ten times faster than in the outside world.

Every ten days in Tragic Death Valley was equal to one day outside.

Time enchantments weren't strange. But, the enchantment within Tragic Death Valley didn't twist the Laws thus it didn't affect a martial artist's cultivation; this was beyond rare!

Of course, there was also a price in staying in Tragic Death Valley.

This was an immutable, never-changing environment. A martial artist wouldn't gain new insights nor would they experience lucky chances. They would not be able to engage in life or death battles and their cultivation speed wouldn't rise too quickly. If a human Holy Lord were to enter Tragic Death Valley, it was simply unrealistic for them to break into the Empyrean realm during their stay.

In the past when Lin Ming developed his inner world and perceived the samsara of life and death, even if he didn't have enough time he still wouldn't have entered Tragic Death Valley.

Firstly, the things he needed to feel and comprehend didn't exist in Tragic Death Valley.

Secondly, and more importantly, was that there wasn't much origin energy within Tragic Death Valley; in fact, it could be called extremely thin. This was because Tragic Death Valley was completely isolated from the outside and the heaven and earth origin within only circulated amongst itself. The scattered energy inside originated from the life forms that fell in Tragic Death Valley as well as their magic items.

Such energy was certainly limited. Moreover, when Lin Ming was a World King rushing towards the Empyrean realm, he needed to absorb a massive amount of world power.

Thus, Tragic Death Valley was not an ideal cultivation place.

But presently the circumstances were completely different.

Lin Ming had comprehended the Laws within the Holy Scripture and even gradually fused them with the Asura Heavenly Dao. The power of divinity and demons also formed a system and his inner world had absorbed enough world power. Lin Ming's comprehension had reached a high level, and what he lacked now was cultivation.

Moreover, after Lin Ming successfully broke into the Empyrean realm, because he had to withstand tribulation of the 33 Heavens he had absorbed an enormous amount of Heavenly Dao Law fragments, many of which came from the Laws ancient God Kings.

When Lin Ming shattered these phantoms of ancient God Kings, a minor part of their aura and comprehensions and even the Laws they cultivated were inevitably inherited by Lin Ming.

All of this could be digested in Tragic Death Valley.

Thus, Lin Ming didn't lack Laws that he needed to perceive.

As for heaven and earth origin energy, it wasn't wrong that the origin energy within Tragic Death Valley was barren. But, Lin Ming never planned on absorbing heaven and earth origin energy from there to begin with.

Instead, he had brought Famine's avatar with him.

This was a massive treasure trove of energy which contained an incomparably large amount of blood vitality and demonic power.

A shortage of heaven and earth origin energy was unimportant; Lin Ming only needed to absorb Famine's avatar.

Like this, Lin Ming entered Tragic Death Valley. To him this place that was an absolute death trap to ordinary martial artists was actually as calm and leisurely as a garden.

After so many years, Lin Ming returned to Tragic Death Valley once more. Nothing had changed from the past. Endless bones littered the ground, and there was also the incomparably large God Beast Tomb Array that should have originated from the Asura Road Master.

Tragic Death Valley was pitch black and the peace was horrifying. When many peerless masters arrived here, they couldn't see any hope of escape and were slowly driven to insanity.

However, within such an environment, Lin Ming's mind was as still as a placid lake.

Even in this darkness and deathly silence, all that Lin Ming felt was peace and quiet.

MW Chapter 2078

Chapter 2078 – Retaking the Divine Realm

…

…

…

In these past years, Lin Ming felt a great pressure on his shoulders and he had experienced far too many tribulations. After arriving at an absolutely safe place like Tragic Death Valley, he immediately relaxed.

This was an array formation that the Asura Road Master had personally laid down in the past. Even someone on the level of Soaring Feather God King would have a hard time freely entering and leaving as they pleased.

And, no one could expect that he would hide here.

While inside he was absolutely safe.

Lin Ming began his seclusion.

There were too many matters he had to complete; just absorbing the memories in Famine's soul would take an extremely long time.

Lin Ming needed to go to the Dark Abyss, and without Famine's memories as a guide, then a single human entering was no different from a sheep wandering into a wolf den.

He had to protect himself, and the greatest measure with which to do so was Famine.

The years passed without sense of time.

Lin Ming fell into an absorbed state. He didn't know how much time passed, only that his hair constantly grew longer, brushing against the ground and still growing.

Dust rose and fell on his body. At certain intervals, waves of demonic energy would rise up and the dust on Lin Ming would fly away. However, he steadfastly sat there like a rock.

When Lin Ming first entered the Asura Road he was already just barely able to deal with the demonic energy tides in Tragic Death Valley. Now, he was like a reef in front of a breeze, simply not feeling it at all.

But Lin Ming's clothes slowly tore apart. As several demonic energy tides rose, they wore away at his clothes. Soon, he became utterly naked.

Every now and then his exposed skin would glow red; he was absorbing Famine's essence!

To Lin Ming, Famine's avatar was powerful, but it was only slightly more powerful than himself. With sufficient time Lin Ming would surpass Famine's avatar in strength, and by that time the avatar would be weak.

Thus, the most effective method for Lin Ming to use the avatar of Famine was to absorb its essence to further develop himself.

As time passed, Lin Ming absorbed more and more of Famine's energy into his body. Not only did he absorb a massive amount of pure demon energy, but he also absorbed the Laws within it.

Faintly, Lin Ming seemed to arrive in a chaotic space. Deep within this chaotic space, a massive black hole of space-time slowly revolved. As energy neared this black hole it would be sucked in.

Seeing this, Lin Ming froze. This was…

Laws of Swallowing!?

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. Famine's flesh and blood and even its soul contained the secrets to the Laws of Swallowing. After absorbing Famine's soul and now absorbing Famine's flesh and blood, all of Famine's essence was being transferred to his body.

Then…

Perhaps he could also peek into the deepest secrets of the Laws of Swallowing and begin plundering talent like Famine could.

Of course, it was impossible for Lin Ming to do this to a such a heaven-defying degree like Famine could. But, it would be good enough if he could inherit a tiny portion of the talent in the Laws of Swallowing.

Disregarding everything else, just his speed in absorbing world energy in the future would be incomparable to the present.

To swallow. In Lin Ming's mind, these weren't the methods of the enemy, but a new shortcut that would allow him to grow faster!

With these intentions in mind, Lin Ming no longer hesitated. He composed his mind and poured all of his mental strength into Famine's flesh and blood, greedily absorbing nutrition from its essence.

Unknowingly and unwittingly, 100 years passed. Outside this was only ten years.

In these ten years, Lin Ming's two children were born. One was a boy and one was a girl. Mu Qianyu gave birth to a boy named Lin Yu, and Qin Xingxuan gave birth to a girl named Lin Xuan.

The names of these two children came from both their mother and father.

Lin Yu and Lin Xuan's talents were slightly worse than Lin Huang's. But, they had inherited Lin Ming's Asura bloodline, and if they cultivated in the future they were sure to become extraordinary individuals.

Another ten years passed.

In the Divine Realm, the war between humanity and the saints raged like a blazing conflagration. Because Soaring Feather and Astral Vault withdrew from the war, humanity's ability to face their opponents on the battlefield was no less than the saints'. Many territories in the Divine Realm had already been reclaimed by humanity.

As the human refugees scattered throughout the Divine Realm saw the return of their fellow comrades, all of them sobbed in joy.

No one could understand what they felt after waiting for this moment for more than 6000 years.

They were happy, so happy that even if they died they could die in peace...

In terms of the great war between humanity and the saints, a mere 20 years of fighting was in truth only a short period of time. It would take much longer to reclaim the Divine Realm.

After all, the Divine Realm itself had 3000 great worlds.

The battles in the wild universe alone had continued for several hundred years.

Now, the great effort to retake the Divine Realm would require at least several hundred years before they could truly reclaim their land.

But, during the third decade of the effort to retake the Divine Realm, the saint armies began to retreat.

They relinquished Divine Realm great worlds they had seized on their own initiative, riding on spirit ships to flee back to Saint Convocation Heaven.

Soldiers receded like a falling tide. With the saints retreating, the human armies were able to push in without facing any obstacles.

The human warriors were incomparably excited. However, the several human Empyreans leading the war were startled; they hadn’t expected such a result to occur.

“The saints are retreating. What should we do?”

Emperor Shakya asked Divine Dream. He was asking whether or not they should chase down the armies of the saints.

Without a doubt, the saints were retreating because the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was in seclusion. Because the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign couldn’t be interrupted midway, the saints had decided to return to Saint Convocation Heaven where they could regroup and maintain their strength.

With the death of the Good Fortune Saint Son, the withdrawal of Soaring Feather God King, Astral Vault God King, as well as their subordinates such as Blue Lotus and the others, that meant the saints had no highest leader to turn to. To return to Saint Convocation Heaven was an intelligent move in these circumstances.

When humanity took back the Divine Realm, it hadn’t been easy for them even though this was territory they were profoundly aware of. If they were to march into Saint Convocation Heaven and face the unknown breadth of the saint armies from the seven Heavens of the saints, then this would be far too risky a move.

It was unwise to pursue a hard-pressed enemy too far, much less an army that was deep in enemy territory.

However, Divine Dream still issued the order to give pursuit. This was because with her presence, she could maintain the integrity of the human fleets.

Divine Dream knew that it was impossible for humanity to seize the Saint Convocation Heaven no matter how much they chased after their enemies. She knew that besides annihilating some of the saints’ overall war strength, there weren’t any advantages to be had. But, she would still continue the pursuit.

Even if this was only a tribute to the countless martyrs who had died bravely in battle in the wild universe!

The blood of humanity couldn’t be bled in vain. She needed to give those heroic martyrs an answer to their deeds!

This battle continued for another 30 years.

Humanity's war in the Saint Convocation Heaven was even more difficult.

Humanity had yet to recover their energy. In terms of Empyrean level characters, they only had a bit more than 100 and only 2000 some Great World Kings.

Although Divine Dream was powerful, she was only a single person. This would be the same if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign went to the wild universe to fight. The human Empyreans would immediately hide away, making it so that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wouldn't be able to kill many of them.

And now, with Divine Dream battling in the Saint Convocation Heaven, the saint Empyreans naturally wouldn't line up so that Divine Dream could slaughter them.

Thus, Divine Dream's greatest function was to protect the main force of humanity and threaten. With Divine Dream, the human armies did not fear frontally facing the saints, nor did they fear being surrounded. However Divine Dream couldn't replace the human armies in fighting. To annihilate the armies of the saints, what humanity truly relied on were their Empyreans, World Kings, and Holy Lords.

The size of the human armies was far too small. It was simply impossible for them to wage war throughout the seven Heavens of the saint race.

Soon, the fight reached an impasse.

The saints actively avoided battle. In this situation, humanity wasn't able to achieve much.

To further expand their war victories, they could only destroy planets of saints and wipe out massive amounts of low level saint martial artists. But if they did this then they would be no different from the saints, and perhaps might even be worse.

Thus, on the fiftieth year, the human armies returned to the Divine Realm.

The moment that the armies withdrew, the Divine Realm wildly cheered in revelry and celebration!

Countless people cried out hot tears. They had paid a deep price for over 6000 years, putting in generations of effort, and now they finally had their homeland back!

They had preserved their dignity, had preserved the bravery of their bloodline.

Although this was only temporary, they had all firmed their resolve. No matter how the saints counterattacked in the future, they would continue fighting on to the last person.

With humanity's victory, two names shined ever brighter in human history.

These two names were – Human Sovereign Lin Ming and Heavenly Empress Divine Dream.

No one referred to Divine Dream as Empyrean Divine Dream anymore, but started to call her the Heavenly Empress.

This corresponded to Lin Ming. Within the heavens and earth, Lin Ming was the Human Sovereign and Divine Dream was the Heavenly Empress.

One Sovereign one Empress, these were similar to the names of the spiritas' Soul Emperor and Soul Empress.

'Emperor', 'Sovereign', 'Empress', these were some of the highest titles give to men and women in humanity; they were unrelated to whether or not one was married.

While the Divine Realm was being rebuilt, Lin Ming was still deep in seclusion. 70 years had passed outside, meaning 700 years within Tragic Death Valley.

During these 700 years Lin Ming had already started the seventh cycle of the Grand Reincarnation Art.

The energy needed to recultivate from the start of a reincarnation came from the avatar of Famine. And during the process of fusing with this energy, Lin Ming started to slowly touch upon Famine's Laws of Swallowing. Bit by bit he imprinted Famine's talent to swallow into himself.

By now, Lin Ming was completely able to control the power of demons. If he camouflaged himself as an abyssal then no one would suspect him, and they would even think he was a high-level existence amongst abyssals.

This paved the way for Lin Ming to enter the Dark Abyss. Otherwise, a human entering the abyss was no different from suicide.

After 700 years of cultivation, Lin Ming's foundation had consolidated. This gave him the ambition to attack the middle Empyrean realm while in Tragic Death Valley.

Another 500 years passed. Lin Ming had reached the peak of the lower Empyrean realm. Strength gathered crazily within him. The planet-sized avatar of Famine gave him strength without end.

In addition to the talent of swallowing he had now, absorbing the flesh and blood essence of Famine came as easily as drinking water to Lin Ming. Lin Ming's cultivation speed couldn't even be described as travelling 10,000 miles in a day.

After staying in Tragic Death Valley for 1500 years, he finally felt he had accumulated sufficient strength.

The conditions were ripe. It was time to break into the middle Empyrean realm.

MW Chapter 2079

Chapter 2079 – Middle Empyrean, Evolution of Laws

…

…

…

The Asura Road's Great Desolate was forever a land that awed others. In particular, the depths of the Great Desolate; that was a place even Empyreans didn't dare venture into, otherwise there was a chance they could perish.

And Tragic Death Valley was one of the most fearful lands in the Great Desolate. Even True Divinities were unwilling to approach it.

It was a land with layers upon layers of strange killing arrays, wrapped in a shroud of space and time. If a martial artist entered they would be forever lost to history.

During these past years, only some low level martial artists would form groups to explore the God Burying Ridge area that was 10,000 miles around Tragic Death Valley, in order to obtain experience and possibly treasure.

There were unfathomable dangers and a single mistake would mean one wouldn't even have their bones left over. But these people had no other choice. After all, these people had to survive and grow. In the Asura Road, slaughter was a common theme. If a martial artist didn't possess sufficient strength then it was likely they would be killed and have their possessions taken. And if sects weren't strong enough they might possibly be taken over in a single night or perhaps even be completely eliminated from the world.

Although God Burying Ridge was dangerous, it was rich in god burying stones. And because the environment here was special there would often be inestimably precious world treasures born.

On this day, bright flashes of light emitted from a place within God Burying Ridge. Eight martial artists led by two middle-aged men were fighting a crowd of ghosts.

These ghosts were all evil beings naturally formed in God Burying Ridge.

God Burying Ridge was originally a massive sealed force field. Over billions of years, countless geniuses, powerhouses, mortals, vicious beasts... all sorts of life forms had died here, leaving behind their blood vitality, energy, dao fields, martial arts Laws, and so forth. These things percolated in this sealed space, fermenting and eventually becoming all kinds of evil beings.

The truth was that not to mention these super powerhouses that died here, even if poisonous insects were sealed in a jar, they would eat away at each other until finally evolving into a super bug.

Now these people were engaged in battle with these evil beings evolved by God Burying Ridge. These evil beings had bizarre and strange attack methods. They were invisible and intangible, only a mass of energy or a moving force field. However, once these evil beings passed over the bodies of others, they would instantly suck away a massive amount of blood vitality or even take possession of their victims. In the worst case, one would visibly wither away into a dry corpse as everyone watched in horror.

“Master, we can’t last much longer!” A youth shouted out loud as he beat back an evil being.

“We must run away, if we continue fighting then we will all die here!” A middle-aged man replied.

However, the other middle-aged man bitterly smiled. He used his sword to force back three evil beings, seizing the brief moment of respite to pass on a sound transmission, “There is no way we can flee. Even if we manage to lose these evil beings, we can only run forwards, and a hundred miles away from us is Tragic Death Valley. If we enter Tragic Death Valley, and perhaps even if we merely see the entrance, we will be lost forever without any chance of returning. That land is an absolute death trap, a place were even Empyreans will perish. Rather than that, we might as well desperately bet everything here and now and hope that we can live through this.”

As the middle-aged man spoke, the others felt a chill crawl down their backs. To say that they should all hope they could live through this… that hope was simply too small.

“Ahh!”

A young girl cried out in misery; she had clearly been injured.

Many of them had consumed a great deal of blood vitality in their battle with these evil beings. If things continued like this then they would at most be able to last for another quarter hour. Once that time passed, all of them would die here.

They struggled to maintain a formation, their circle of fighting constantly shrinking in order to minimize losses on their side. But, the price of this was that they were now surrounded by evil beings, and the chances of them escaping this encirclement became increasingly small.

They could only risk their lives this final time!

As everyone felt their strength wasting away and their hearts approach despair, no one noticed that a hundred miles behind them, a thin layer of black light was brewing.

This black light became increasingly strong, increasingly large. After several breaths of time a pitch black beam of divine light shot into the skies!

In that instant the skies turned dark and the clouds were washed away.

The group of trial challengers was shocked. A moment afterwards they discovered something strange.

As they looked all around them, they didn't know when, but the evil beings that surrounded them had started to withdraw on their own initiative.

Not just that, but they didn't make any moves to attack. Instead they all crawled on the ground, looking at that pitch black divine light with dread and awe in their eyes.

And it was only now that the group of trial challengers saw the true appearance of these evil beings. These evil beings had the appearance of little wolves with wings. Because of their extremely fast speed and their normally vague and blurry appearance that was covered in black fog, no one had been able to clearly see what they looked like.

But now… these trial challengers saw these small wolves crawl on the ground, even trembling where they were…

"What is going on…?"

“That black light…”

A middle-aged man’s pupils shrank. It was clear that these evil beings didn’t fear them, but feared the pillar of divine light a hundred miles away.

That divine light didn’t seem too grand. It was like a black column of divine iron that thrust into the skies, extremely condensed as if it were made of material matter.

The light continued for several breaths of time before disappearing.

As for the evil beings, they remained prostrate on the ground, not daring to rise.

Not just that, but more and more evil beings appeared. They drilled out from the ground or fell down from the air. These evil beings came in all shapes and sizes, and all of them crawled on the ground. This sort of feeling was as if they were worshipping a king of their kind.

The trial challengers felt their hearts turn icy cold. None of them were happy or glad to see these evil beings give them a moment to catch their breath by falling down in worship. With the current scene occurring all around them, they faintly felt that an even more horrifying existence was about to appear!

If so, then their fates would be far more miserable.

“That… the place that divine light came from, isn’t that Tragic Death Valley?” A middle-aged man gulped as he spoke. He realized that the area the divine light came from was Tragic Death Valley.

“Tragic Death Valley?”

Everyone was stunned. Tragic Death Valley was an absolute forbidden zone within the Asura Road. Everyone who didn’t believe in these tales and had ventured in had died without exception. It was an incomparably mysterious place, but none of these people had ever heard of a beam of black light emitting from Tragic Death Valley, nor had they heard of anything similar to this occurring.

Tragic Death Valley was like a never-changing tomb that had existed since ancient times. For billions of years it had swallowed countless lives yet never changed.

“Master, do we…”

A young girl uttered, her face pale with fear. She didn’t know whether they should use this chance to escape or wait here instead.

In front of them, more and more evil beings appeared. Many of these evil beings were existences that left them horrified. But, behind them lay Tragic Death Valley emitting that black divine light. This situation left them in a dilemma!

And at this time, the young girl who spoke suddenly seemed to choke on something. Her eyes went as wide as full moons as she looked into the distance with utter disbelief.

There, far away, the fog was being separated, and the appearance of a man slowly emerged from this fog.

This man wore simple black robes. His eyes were profound and his eyebrows were as sharp as swords. He gave off an inexplicable feeling.

He walked through the fog, moving forwards a step at a time. To him, this dangerous land known as God Burying Ridge seemed no different from a garden, as if he were taking a leisurely stroll through the courtyards.

But the middle-aged man actually noticed that once this black-clothed youth appeared, the evil beings all around them were even more frightened. They all remained motionless, caught in incomparable awe.

“You all, what year of the Great Desolate is this now?”

The black-clothed man asked from afar. This man was Lin Ming who had gone into seclusion for an unknown period of time. Because he was in Tragic Death Valley, he simply didn’t know how many years had passed.

He had immersed himself in a completely entranced state. Unconsciously, his Asura Laws had undergone a transformation.

The Asura Laws were the highest Laws of the universe, covering the entire breadth of the 33 Heavenly Daos.

As for Lin Ming, when he became an Empyrean he had experienced the tribulation of the 33 Heavens and his mortal body had been baptized. He absorbed a countless amount of Great Dao Law fragments, and even the comprehensions and enlightenments of ancient God Kings.

These Laws slowly filled up the Asura Laws.

If the Asura Laws were like a jigsaw puzzle, then this jigsaw puzzle came in three parts with a total of 33 images.

In the past the Asura Road Master cultivated 33 lives and perceived 33 Heavenly Dao Laws. One life one Empyrean, one life one Divinity; with this, he brought the Asura Laws into perfection.

Lin Ming didn't have time to do what the Asura Road Master had done. But, just absorbing the heavenly tribulation Laws was already amazing.

Through the years of meditation, what Lin Ming did was to place these 33 jigsaw puzzle images into their rightful positions, making his Asura Heavenly Dao even more perfect.

That black light just now was not emitted when Lin Ming broke into the middle Empyrean realm. Rather, it was a world phenomenon that occurred when his Asura Heavenly Dao stepped into a higher level.

In fact, Lin Ming estimated that he had broken into the middle Empyrean realm around one or two thousand years ago. When he broke into the middle Empyrean realm, there had indeed been world phenomena that accompanied his breakthrough. But these phenomena were limited to Tragic Death Valley, as it was impossible for them to pass through Tragic Death Valley's absolute space-time enchantment.

Tragic Death Valley's enchantment was personally arranged by the Asura Road Mater. Only phenomena that evolved from the Asura Laws could pass through this sealed space and arrive outside.

And now, the reason these evil beings worshipped Lin Ming as if he was their god was likely because his Asura Laws had evolved further.

These evil beings were all produced from the Asura Road. They evolved here and were born here, and they naturally conformed to the Asura Heavenly Dao.

It wouldn’t be an exaggeration to say that the Asura Road Master was their creator. And now, the current Lin Ming had the aura of the Asura Road Master, and he also controlled the power of the Asura Laws.

It wouldn’t be too far off to say that Lin Ming was the new ruler of the Asura Road!

This was the reason these evil beings were all awed, why they dug out from the earth and fell down from the skies to worship Lin Ming. Otherwise, even if an upper True Divinity arrived, while these evil beings would fear them, they absolutely wouldn’t run out to worship them.

“Now is… the Great Desolate Calendar Year 1768…”

One of the two middle-aged men said as he gulped, finding it hard to speak. Because of habit, he only spoke the last four digits of the calendar year here.

MW Chapter 2080

Chapter 2080 – Goal: Dark Abyss

…

…

…

There were naturally calendars in the Asura Road. But, these calendars didn't start from the day the Asura Road was created.

In fact, a calendar that counted a mind-boggling number like billions of years was a nearly impossible matter.

Different areas in the Asura Road had different calendars. Moreover, in history, when a large influence unified a massive territory within the Asura Road, they would often create their own calendar and set the first year as the day they were established.

For instance, Divine Void Divine Kingdom and Heaven Union Divine Kingdom both used different calendars.

As for the Great Desolate, it used the Great Desolate Calendar. This calendar had already been in use for several million years.

As the middle-aged man suddenly said the number 1768, Lin Ming thought for a moment and asked, “Do you mean Year 121,768?”

Lin Ming added in two more digits, leaving the middle-aged man startled.

The middle-aged man immediately guessed that this young man in front of him hadn’t come out into the world for a long time, at least several thousand years, thus he asked them to confirm the calendar year for him.

Just who was this person? Why would so many evil beings be awed by him and submit to him?

These methods were something that not even an Empyrean would possess, right?

Had they managed to bump into some hundred million year old monster that had been in seclusion all this time?

Thinking of this, everyone felt a cold chill crawl down their backs. In particular, that black beam of light just then had clearly emerged from Tragic Death Valley. Could it be that… this man had come from Tragic Death Valley?

Realizing this possibility, the group was left speechless.

The middle-aged man still managed to keep his wits about him. He respectfully replied to Lin Ming, “Yes, Senior.”

He used the honorific of senior to refer to Lin Ming, and in truth this honorific wasn’t wrong. The only difference was that Lin Ming’s age was far from being as high as he imagined.

“Great Calendar Year 121,768. If so, then… this period of seclusion has already gone on for more than 5000 years. I thought that I broke into the Empyrean realm one or two thousand years ago, but perhaps it might have been even longer than that. It’s just that because I fused the 33 Heavenly Dao Laws together, time passed too quickly and in my entranced state I wasn’t able to clearly tell how much time I spent in there.”

5000 some years within Tragic Death Valley corresponded to 500 some years in the outside world.

According to the information provided by the Good Fortune Saint Son, over 500 years shouldn't be enough time for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign to finish his seclusion. But, the moment was rapidly approaching.

The truth was that even if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign left seclusion, Lin Ming wasn't afraid. He had Divine Dream helping him. Although Divine Dream couldn't defeat the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, it shouldn't be a problem for her to protect them and hide them away somewhere.

Currently, the Divine Realm was open and connected to other universes. With the wild universe and its convoluted terrain as well as a third universe, humanity had three universes they could hide in. To use the phrase that a crafty rabbit has more than three burrows and a cunning man has more than one backup plan was about right for this situation.

Like this, if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wanted to dig out human elites and kill them then this wouldn't be easy. But, Lin Ming had to make haste. He didn't want to leave his destiny to the heavens.

"Thank you."

Lin Ming faintly smiled. He passed through the crowd of martial artists and continued walking out of God Burying Ridge.

He seemed to walk at a slow pace, as if he were casually idling his way through fog. But in the blink of an eye he had vanished from sight.

As for the evil beings of God Burying Ridge, they still lay sprawled out on the ground.

Seeing the motionless evil beings all around them, the squad of trial challengers had cold sweat dripping down their palms. They nervously said, “Let’s hurry and leave!”

They wanted to take this chance to quickly leave God Burying Ridge. But even though they were scared and apprehensive the entire way, they weren’t attacked by any evil beings as they left.

It was only when this squad emerged that they learned that what occurred around Tragic Death Valley happened in a much wider range than they thought.

This marvelous sight within God Burying Ridge was spread in numerous tales and exaggerated in different ways.

However, because there were too many guesses and too many versions of the story, even if some people had stories close to the truth, no one believed them. After all, their stories were far too unbelievable, and since they were only a minority, they didn’t have much persuasive power.

Slowly, what occurred in Tragic Death Valley morphed into a pure legend…

……….

Asura Sea, final trial –

Lin Ming stood in a broad starry space. Two old men were in front of him; they were the guardians of the final trial and also the servants who had served the Asura Road Master for generations – Clear and Ink.

"You want to go to the Dark Abyss?"

Hearing Lin Ming's decision, Clear was bewildered. The Dark Abyss was simply far too dangerous.

"Two Seniors, I have decided that I must go to the Dark Abyss and this is a decision that came after a long period of deliberation. Since I dare to go, I naturally have methods to protect myself and no one should be able to recognize me. The reason I came here today was in truth to confirm something, a secret related to the Dark Abyss and the abyssal demons…"

As Lin Ming spoke, the two old men fell silent, not speaking for a long time.

Lin Ming continued, “I originally thought that the Dark Abyss and Primeval Realm Ruins might be entrances to a whole different world and that the 33 Heavens weren’t the only world there is. But afterwards, I obtained some information. It seems that the Dark Abyss comes from an ancient era of ancient eras. That it could be a place which existed a hundred billion years ago or even further back than that? I wonder if this is right?”

Hearing Lin Ming’s question, the expressions of the two old men changed. They glanced at each other, then Clear said, “Concerning the Dark Abyss, we only know some speculations and these are descriptions that the High Lord left in his letters in the past. Indeed, the Dark Abyss might have already existed for a hundred billion years…”

“Mm… so it really was like that. And, the great calamity of the universe 10 billion years ago was the ancient races fighting with the abyssals?”

Lin Ming asked. But concerning this assumption, many clues already confirmed that it was correct, and it wasn’t too difficult to guess anyways. Moreover, Famine’s memories proved this.

“That’s right. In the great war 10 billion years ago, countless God Kings perished and innumerable races were wiped from existence. Some universes were even left in tatters and devolved into wilderness. Compared to the great calamity of 10 billion years ago, the war between humanity and the saints isn’t anything at all.”

“I see… then, it seems that 100 billion years ago, an even greater calamity erupted in this universe? Compared to it, even the great war 10 billion years ago between the abyssals and the intelligent life forms of the 33 Heavens seems to be a minor matter?" Lin Ming suddenly said after a period of contemplation. This was only something he extrapolated from Famine's memories.

But because he couldn't be absolutely sure, he asked these two old men.

The two old men were stunned, seeming as if they didn't expect Lin Ming to ask such a question.

They looked at each other. Then, Clear said, "The events of 100 billion years ago are far too distant, so distant that it is horrifying and nearly impossible to discover. The High Lord also managed to extrapolate some speculations. He believed that the Primeval Realm Ruins and the Dark Abyss were formed in that great calamity… the High Lord called this great calamity – the Shattering!"

"The Shattering…" Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath.

In truth, he had already heard the arguments people made against eternal life. To them, eternal life went against the Heavenly Dao Laws, and the reason for this was that all things in existence had to be born and had to die. Mountains could collapse, rivers could dry up, stars could fall, and even a boundless world would collapse and be destroyed.

There was nothing that could withstand the erosion of time.

Then what about the 33 Heavens?

Would there be a day when this world was destroyed?

If this were really to occur, then this would be the true horrifyingly great calamity.

All order, all rules, all life, nothing would exist anymore.

Lin Ming knew that the three divine treasures of the Magic Cube, Purple Card, and Grandmist Spirit Bead were possibly seeds of universes.

Since a universe could have such a seed, then that implied a universe could be born.

And with birth naturally came death. This was cause and effect, the cycle of samsara.

At this time, Ink said, “The High Lord suspected that the Dark Abyss and Primeval Realm Ruins are a piece of the world left behind after the previous 33 Heavens underwent the Shattering. As for why this part of that world wasn’t destroyed along with everything else, that is an unknown.

“And the abyssal demons are life forms that might have existed 100 billion years ago. They always lived in the Dark Abyss, and the Dark Abyss was originally isolated from the 33

Heavens. But because of some unknown reason, the two worlds connected, thus the great calamity of 10 billion years ago erupted.

“Of course, all of these things are merely guesses that the High Lord made...” Ink quietly said.

In fact, regardless of what the origins of the abyssals were, there was one thing that no one needed to doubt.

That was that the abyssal demons were the mortal enemies of all intelligent life in the 33 Heavens.

MW Chapter 2081

Chapter 2081 – Secret of the Black Book

…

…

…

Through speaking with Clear and Ink, Lin Ming was able to verify the memories of Famine. He was able to confirm all sorts of information about the great abyssal calamity 10 billion years ago.

10 billion years ago, the calamity of the 33 Heavens had finally been ended by the Eternal Wall.

The Asura Road Master and Immortal Sovereign joined forces, using their transcendent methods to forge the Eternal Wall and block off the Dark Abyss. After cutting off the source of these abyssals they proceeded to kill the other ones that remained.

Thus ended this great calamity.

The Eternal Wall was a barrier that only intelligent life forms of the 33 Heavens could pass. As for abyssal demons, they were sealed outside the Eternal Wall.

But the Eternal Wall wasn't perfect and impregnable. As the wearing of time passed, many space-time cracks would appear. Some abyssals were able to pass through these space-time cracks and bypass the Eternal Wall.

The more powerful an abyssal was, the lower the chances of them passing through these space-time cracks.

Like this, even if those abyssals that passed through the cracks possessed a peak Empyrean level strength, they still wouldn't be able to harm the 33 Heavens to any large degree.

But history was never without accidents. Billions of years ago, an incomparably terrifying abyssal demon somehow managed to pass through the Eternal Wall, bringing down a catastrophe unto all races of the 33 Heavens.

This catastrophe even continued until now.

This abyssal was 'Famine'.

As for how Famine was able to pass through the Eternal Wall, Lin Ming wasn't able to find this out from Famine's soul. Many of Famine's memories should have been kept in its main body, and some parts were also sealed away.

Lin Ming continued to explore Famine's memories. Within the starry space he sat in the void.

At this time, an ancient pitch black book floated before him. This black book was left behind by Imperial Prince Xishen.

Lin Ming reached out a hand and gently traced its cover. Strange abyssal runes lit up, like the eyes of an abyssal demon flashing in the dark of night.

After absorbing a massive amount of Famine's memories and furthering his understanding of the abyssal Laws, Lin Ming was now able to open the black book.

He silently flipped open the cover. The thick black cover seemed to be sealed by some force field, making it incomparably heavy.

This was not the first time he had opened this mysterious ancient book. But each time he did, he discovered new things.

The reason was that these abyssal texts were too difficult to understand. Trying to decipher them with the limited fragments of information he had wasn't easy at all.

"The source of darkness, the abyssal ritual…"

Lin Ming read these words out loud and fell into a long period of contemplation.

In front of him, the black book shimmered with a mystical light, like the book of fate in the hands of the king of hell.

Lin Ming had already determined that this black book wasn't some rare cultivation method manual nor was it some ancient secret technique, and it definitely wasn't a True Divinity spirit treasure.

It was a book of abyssal rituals, and what was written inside were all texts of abyssal rites, texts that contained profound symbolic meanings.

These recitations of abyssal rites were completely unrelated to cultivation. They weren't able to directly enhance a martial artist's strength, but their value was still extraordinary.

Within the ranks of the abyssals, there were six super abyssals similar to 'Famine'.

When they were at their peak strength, they were situated somewhere between peak True Divinity and Beyond Divinity. They were existences only inferior to the Asura Road Master!

They were the totems of the countless devils in the Dark Abyss, incredibly horrifying existences.

Underneath the command of each of these super abyssals was an influence of their own lineage. These influences were extremely powerful and contained countless abyssal demons. Many of these abyssals were comparable to middle True Divinity realm or even upper True Divinity realm characters.

If it were 10 billion years ago and each one of these influences turned out in full strength, then they would be able to easily overwhelm the current 33 Heavens, destroying all life within the universe.

Compared to these super influences, even the Good Fortune Saint Palace wasn't anything at all.

However, in the great calamity 10 billion years ago, the ancient races also inflicted heavy losses on the Dark Abyss. The six great influences were the main forces of the war effort against the 33 Heavens, and they had suffered the greatest losses. Even many of the six great abyssals died, and the forces beneath them nearly fell apart.

Of these six great influences, each lineage possessed such a black book.

The six black books were ceremonial rites, and the ceremony they were related to was concerned with the deepest and most mysterious place of the Dark Abyss – The Demon God's Tomb.

The Demon God's Tomb was the foundation of the Dark Abyss and also the most enigmatic place in the Dark Abyss.

Lin Ming originally wanted to find out more information about this Demon God's Tomb, but there wasn't much within Famine's soul. If this information was kept in Famine's main body then there was nothing he could do to look for it.

Of the six great influences, Lin Ming's black book belonged to the one named 'Eon'!

Just like Famine, Eon was the name of the super abyssal that led one of these great influences. When Eon was at its peak strength, it was equal to Famine.

To hold the black book was tantamount to Eon being personally present.

But Eon's true self had died in that great war 10 billion years ago…

Lin Ming now suspected that when he entered the Asura Road's final trial for the second time and wrested away the demon relic from the Good Fortune Saint Son's hands, this had been from a super abyssal that was killed by the Asura Road Master.

If it had truly been a super abyssal as horrifying as Famine then it was naturally impossible for it to leave behind such a small relic. Lin Ming guessed that the abyssal's main body had been used by the Asura Road Master for other purposes, and the demon relic left behind was only a tiny portion of that super abyssal's essence.

After finding explanations for all these questions, Lin Ming slowly closed the black book.

He stood up and flew towards the entrance of the final trial.

"You are leaving?"

Clear and Ink appeared behind Lin Ming.

Lin Ming nodded. "Yes."

"Very well..."

Seeing Lin Ming's decisive appearance, Clear and Ink no longer said anything.

On this day, Lin Ming left the Asura Road. He entered the Saint Convocation Heaven from the Divine Realm, and then flew straight towards the Primeval Realm Ruins...

...

...

...

As early as his life or death battle with the Good Fortune Saint Son, Lin Ming had already heard news about the Primeval Realm Ruins. This was an incomparably broad land that existed independently from the 33 Heavens. Countless lucky chances and treasures were buried here.

A great reason why the saints were able to accumulate so much strength was highly related to the Primeval Realm Ruins.

And today, Lin Ming finally came to this land.

Taking a broad look out, this was a dead and listless world. The skies were shrouded in gray as if an eternal dusk had settled upon this land.

There was an inexplicable divine pressure like the pall of hell covering this world, making one feel almost suffocated.

Of course, this sort of deathly aura and pressure couldn’t affect Lin Ming at all. But if a low level martial artist were to come here, perhaps they might not even be able to take a single step forwards no matter how hard they tried.

Lin Ming galvanized the strength within his inner world. The power of yin and yang wove together with the endless power of Laws, forming sparkling divine runes. Like rainbow-hued marks being carved into space, they emitted infinite light that shattered this deathly aura.

Lin Ming walked forwards one step at a time. Along the way, he saw bleached bones all around him.

There were many bones; most of them decayed. Shattered bones littered the ground, covered in the mottled traces of endless years. The reason for these marks to appear was because of the thick deathly aura that covered this land. This sort of deathly aura was able to draw out all life force. If one’s blood vitality was unstable and they walked through this land then they would soon turn into a dried corpse. As for the speed at which their corpse decayed, it would be astonishingly fast.

“This really is a nearly dead world…”

Lin Ming recalled Famine's memories. He pondered for a moment. Because if a world died, all life within would gradually break down and come to an end. This was the Shattering that the Asura Road Master spoke of.

But according to his intuition, with this world having reached such a degree of decay it should have long since been destroyed. But, why had it continued to exist until now?

Somehow, somewhere, could there be some Laws supporting it so that not even the Shattering was able to destroy this world?

Lin Ming walked through this land, tasting the Law fragments left behind by the endless years. This sort of silent aura faintly resonated with the Death Laws in his body.

Death, was silence.

When a person died, they would return to dust. When a universe died, it would be annihilated into nothingness.

In the end, all things in existence only left behind one thing in the end – that was, 'Nothing'.

On the distant horizon, one could see collapsed temples. Mountains of divine stone were piled up together. It was easy to imagine just how grand and magnificent they were in the past.

There were many of these great temples but not a single one was complete. All of them had become dilapidated ruins. These were structures created by powerhouses of the past, yet all of them had been corroded and damaged by the inexhaustible flow of time.

With every step he took, Lin Ming could feel ripples of powerful auras all around him.

These were auras left behind by ancient God Kings. They remained even after billions of years, reminding all who came here just how prosperous and mighty they had once been.

Lin Ming passed by a lake. The surface of it was like a mirror. Inside was a goddess bathing, her appearance beautiful and her charm devilish, captivating the heart, beckoning the soul.

Seeing this scene, Lin Ming was startled. For such a scene to appear in this deathly still world was surprising.

However, he immediately understood what this scene before him was. A pupil opened up between his eyebrows and a brilliant beam of divine light shot out, chopping onto the surface of the lake. The goddess shattered to pieces, turning into a wisp of strange Law fragments that slowly vanished.

These were the great world Law fragments that had condensed and then manifested into reality.

Lin Ming passed over a high mountain. Up above, endless divine demons beat upon drums, lightning wrapping around them as they all seethed like a rising tide.

Lin Ming's inner world opened. Chaotic energy burst out, swallowing all of this divine demon aura.

In the Primeval Realm Ruins there was no ancient aura that could hinder Lin Ming's steps. He walked forwards without stopping. Although his pace appeared slow, the truth was that space had lost meaning beneath his feet.

He walked for seven days.

During this time period, he once saw many saint martial artists enter into some underground ruins.

These ruins were buried all throughout the Primeval Realm Ruins. Countless dangers were hidden within, and many saint martial artists that entered were not able to leave.

But, there were always some people that went into these underground ruins and emerged with heaven-shocking lucky chances.

MW Chapter 2082

Chapter 2082 – The Eternal Wall

…

…

…

Seven days later, where the skies and land met, black fog chaotically swirled as if the world itself was boiling over.

Dark black lighting wove together, the thunderclaps crashing into the ears.

Turbulent storms raged wildly within this black fog, destroying all around them. Vaguely, it was as if some giant godly demon resided within, emitting a terrifying aura.

A dark and boundless pool surface appeared in front of Lin Ming, seeming to go on to infinity.

Seeing this and feeling the divine demon aura rushing towards him, Lin Ming's pupils shrank and brilliance lit up his eyes.

"This is it. From Famine's memories... the entrance to the Dark Abyss!"

The central region of the Primeval Realm Ruins was the entrance to the Dark Abyss. In the past, Empyrean Primordius had also entered the Dark Abyss from here.

The closer Lin Ming approached to that pitch black abyss, the more that chaotic black fog surged and tumbled.

Bang!

When he reached the entrance, the black fog rose like a tide of darkness, crashing towards him with a roar.

This black fog rose up to the skies, monstrous and threatening. It galloped over the world, causing great blasts to echo through the heavens and earth, as if the world would soon be destroyed.

Since Lin Ming entered the Primeval Realm Ruins, this was the first time he had truly felt pressure.

The black fog contained an irresistible great strength. Contained within it was the remnant auras of supreme powerhouses. Moreover, there were more than just a few of these auras. Rather, it was like millions and billions of powerful ancient God Kings were randomly striking out at the world without rhyme or reason.

All martial artists that came here had to withstand this pressure. Below the Empyrean realm, being directly disintegrated to ashes here was a matter of fact.

Even outstanding existences amongst Empyreans could exhaust all their effort and strength to withstand this pressure, sustaining injuries to enter the Dark Abyss.

In the past, Empyrean Primordius was also the same.

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. The power of divinity erupted from his body, forming a protective golden barrier all around him. Then, the crazy black waves were no longer able to harm Lin Ming even a little bit.

An attack that a peak Empyrean could barely withstand was naturally nothing at all to Lin Ming.

"The Laws here are twisted..."

Lin Ming thought. He could feel that the entrance to the Dark Abyss was an incomparably strange space. Here, all Laws were twisted, including those of space and time. If one didn't have a profound understanding of the Laws then it was possible to lose oneself in this chaotic labyrinth and be trapped here forever.

With all these reasons combined together, just the entrance of this mysterious Dark Abyss was an absolute death zone. There wasn't a need to mention the even more dangerous world within!

This was also the reason the Dark Abyss was such a riddle.

The weak simply weren't able to enter. Only peerless powerhouses could enter and they had to endure life-threatening risks in order to do so. Thus, people only possessed an extremely limited understanding into the Dark Abyss. It just wasn't possible to ask peak Empyreans to go to the Dark Abyss to find out information.

Lin Ming paused for a moment. He could clearly see a channel within the distorted Laws. Then, easily, like a straight arrow, he thrust deep towards the depths of the Dark Abyss.

He didn't know how far he fell or how long he fell for. With a light cracking sound, a golden shadow smashed into his protective power of divinity and then collapsed.

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He calmed his mind and looked out. To his surprise, he discovered that just outside the black fog which surrounded him, there was something that resembled golden grains of sand.

Although these things were small, the smallest one was comparable to a meteor, possessing an incredible impact force.

Within his hands, the power of divinity turned into chains that grabbed onto this grain of sand. He examined it closer.

When this golden sand entered his hand, Lin Ming could see an incomplete but supremely powerful martial artist's aura within it. An ancient and dilapidated strength of a divine soul dissipated from the golden sand and slowly spread into Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

"This is a bone fragment of an ancient peerless ruler..."

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath of air, not sure what feeling was in his heart. He had already learned from Famine's memories that after flying halfway into the entrance of the Dark Abyss he would see such a scene. But as he truly saw these fragments for himself, myriad complex emotions filled him.

These broken bones were left behind from the great war between the ancient races and abyssal demons 10 billion years ago.

The entrance to the Dark Abyss was the final battlefield in that great war 10 billion years ago. Countless heroic powerhouses had perished here!

These broken bones were all that remained of them after they died in battle. Within the distorted Laws, they had already existed for 10 billion years!

Pah –

Pah –

Pah –

More and more bone fragments appeared, constantly barraging Lin Ming's protective power of divinity. It was like endless hail crashing into a metal bucket.

With Lin Ming's strength, these broken bones weren't able to harm him. But every one that struck him caused his mind to shake.

Each grain of these broken bones represented the heroic souls of the ancient races who had chosen to sacrifice themselves here.

Normally, within this storm, these broken bones danced in the wind and remained undamaged. But now they smashed into Lin Ming's protective power of divinity and were instantly crushed to nothing.

Lin Ming couldn't bear this. He started to avoid these broken bones on his own initiative. With a turn of his mind, the might of the 33 Heavens Laws appeared in this pitch black abyss, opening up a channel in the distorted Laws and paving the way forwards.

Lin Ming stepped into this channel and avoided the barrage of broken bones. He turned into a beam of light that shot straight into the Dark Abyss.

After flying for an unknown period of time, Lin Ming finally landed on black earth.

This earth stretched on without end, vast and boundless; there was simply no end in sight.

Lin Ming stood above this earth, quietly feeling it. A feeling of indescribable shock filled his heart. In truth, this land beneath him was no land at all, but something created by the joint efforts of the Asura Road and Immortal Sovereign – the Eternal Wall.

In Famine's memories, Lin Ming could feel just how much it had feared this divine wall.

This Eternal Wall had spanned the entire entrance of the Dark Abyss for 10 billion years now, and had gradually evolved into the appearance of land.

Atop the Eternal Wall there was a channel that led deep into the Dark Abyss. Only intelligent life forms of the 33 Heavens could pass through, but abyssals were actually isolated outside.

Lin Ming followed the Eternal Wall. As he walked, the storms vanished and the black fog dispersed.

He looked in all directions. All he could see in this gray and deathly stillness were broken bones scattered all over.

These broken bones might have been eroded over billions of years, but some of them still shined like crystalline gems.

10 billion years ago, the Eternal Wall was the last battlefield were the ancient races and abyssal demons engaged in a brutal slaughter.

It was unknown just how many peerless characters had perished here, how many abyssals had been slain.

Even after 10 billion years the killing intent still hadn't faded. It was more than enough to shock the heart!

Walking atop the Eternal Wall, Lin Ming faintly felt as if the road before him was the river of time. Bones seemed to wash up periodically, falling onto the side of his path.

Some of these bones came from abyssals and some came from ancient race masters. They were able to maintain their integrity without breaking apart into numerous tiny fragments. This proved that the masters of these remains had reached an inconceivable level of strength in life, otherwise it would be impossible for their bones to not break apart after 10 billion years and still remain so crystal clear.

Even after such a long time passed, Lin Ming could see traces of battle all around him. These traces were not marked on the ground, but carved into the void.

Sword marks, claw marks, saber marks, fist prints, spear holes... all of these attacks had forcefully pierced through the Laws so that even though such a long time passed, Lin Ming could still feel a fierce killing intent from them.

Some killing intent even stirred up wind and lightning and lingered with the energy of Laws, as if some God King were sitting up high.

Lin Ming even saw phantasmal illusions created by the overwhelming killing intent. He saw scenes of hundreds of millions of ancient race rulers rushing ahead of trillions upon quadrillions of Holy Lords. Their killing intent manifested into blood dragons that clawed at the world.

Sighing deeply, Lin Ming walked alone. Slowly and steadily, he finally arrived at the center of the Eternal Wall.

This was the channel that led to the Dark Abyss.

And here, Lin Ming saw the first relatively complete construction he had seen ever since he entered the Primeval Realm Ruins.

This was an altar!

From afar this altar was gray and gloomy, so broad that it was impossible to see the edges. It exuded an ancient solemnity, seeming as if it suppressed this entire world.

Even a corner towered into the skies, incomparably grand.

Although it was only an altar it possessed a sense of overruling all of creation, like a divine god looking down upon the world and peering into the past and future. It made one feel small, as if they couldn't help but lay helpless before it.

However, when Lin Ming truly neared it, he discovered that this altar was in truth only a hundred feet high, as if everything he saw just then had been nothing but a mirage.

The altar was completely covered in the aura of chaos. Here, chains of divine iron ran haphazardly across its surface. There seemed to be True Dragons roaring from within these chains, True Phoenixes flapping their wings, Leviathans racing through the water… as if everything were contained within.

This altar had existed for innumerable years. Some parts had already toppled and some of the runes carved atop it had dimmed, no longer bright.

“An altar formed by star essence…”

Although Lin Ming had obtained some information from Famine’s memories, when he saw this altar for himself, he couldn’t help but sigh in praise.

To refine the essence from a star and then cast it into an altar. Only a small amount of essence could be extracted from a star, and to make this sort of altar it was unknown how many stars had to be used. Moreover, extracting the essence of a star was as difficult as ascending to the heavens. Even a True Divinity would find it difficult to do.

However, when star essence was refined, it could exist for a time even longer than the stars themselves. It could last for billions of years without fading, immortal and eternal.

Lin Ming’s eyes skimmed over the altar and looked within it.

A bronze temple was erected at the middle of the altar. It was incomparably ancient, with rust overlapping it like scales.

Many areas had hollows. These were fist marks, sword marks, saber marks…

In the depth of this temple, Lin Ming saw a skeleton. This skeleton was different from those scattered outside. This one was entirely complete and shimmered like carved crystal. Like a piece of art made of the finest jade, there wasn’t a single flaw in it.

This skeleton was stood in a standing position. Its hands were pressed together, its ten fingers grasping each other, placed against its chest, as if it were praying.

It was hard to imagine that such a skeleton could maintain such form without collapsing over such a long time.

Seeing this skeleton, Lin Ming was shocked. Who… just whose skeleton was this? Why was it preserved in such a complete state?

MW Chapter 2083

Chapter 2083 – Bones of Crystal

…

…

…

Walking here, Lin Ming had seen countless skeletons that had been broken into pieces and scattered all over the Eternal Wall. There were also the bone fragments that drifted in the storm and all of these fragments originated from peerless powerhouses. But, without exception, all of them were decayed and broken.

With a horrifying passage of 10 billion years in addition to the violent energy within the storm, it was impossible for a skeleton to remain fully intact.

But, this skeleton before him was an exception.

Who was it?

All sorts of thoughts and shadows of people flashed through Lin Ming's mind. If this skeleton didn't come from 10 billion years ago but came from someone who had appeared hundreds of millions ago instead, then it was understandable for it to be this complete.

However, as Lin Ming probed, he discovered that his guess was wrong. This skeleton had in truth already fused together with the altar. It was a part of the altar, a peerless great array heart. Moreover, this altar had been forged from star essence and was undoubtedly left behind from 10 billion years ago.

Star essence could remain without decaying after 10 billion years.

If so, then this skeleton had been cast into the altar 10 billion years ago and this was the reason it had been preserved intact all this time.

Just this period of time alone caused Lin Ming to remove most of the figures that flashed in his mind. This skeleton must have come from someone who reached an unbelievably high boundary in the past. They might even have approached the realm Beyond Divinity, otherwise it would have been impossible for his skeleton to remain so complete.

But why was it left here for 10 billion years instead of being entombed?

Lin Ming fell silent. In fact, it wasn't just this skeleton that was before him. Broken bones were scattered all over the Eternal Wall, and these bones all came from peerless characters

10 billion years ago who perished in the great calamity. In that great war, although the 33 Heavens had finally achieved victory, the ancient races had to pay a deep price to do so.

However, what left Lin Ming puzzled was that there must have been survivors amongst the ancient races, so how come these survivors didn't bury the ancient powerhouses? How come they left them on this ancient battlefield and even in such a preserved state?

Even mortals hoped to be buried after their death. As for peerless martial arts powerhouses, after dying they hoped to leave behind a tomb and their inheritance. In the world of martial arts this had already become custom. This was all so that one's inheritance wouldn't be cut off and one's remains could be worshipped in peace.

Lin Ming deeply sighed, a strange sorrow stirring in his mind. So many powerhouses had died and their remains had been scattered all over the abyss, their bones dancing in the storm… just how pitiful a fate was this…

Standing in front of this altar, Lin Ming quietly paid tribute to these heroes. Then, he hesitated for a moment before stepping onto the altar. Bloodstains marked it, and these bloodstains were painted into mystical totems that were spread all over the altar. Even after 10 billion years, these totems were still emitting a vast aura. This aura wasn't a buddha-killing aura, but a certain kind of strength that stunned Lin Ming. It was a strength wrapped in warmth, dedication, passion…

Killing aura – Lin Ming had seen all kinds before. But, this sort of warm strength was something he rarely saw.

Lin Ming gently reached out a hand to trace these marks. Even though he had become considerably strong, feeling this blood left his heart racing with awe; it was hard to imagine just what cultivation the people who left behind these bloodstains had.

Lin Ming slightly hesitated, then, he stepped onto these bloodstain totems. The moment he stepped onto the totems he felt a strange strength skim over him. In that moment, his entire body seemed to become transparent, and a part of his body was locked down by this strength. Then... killing intent erupted!

This killing intent was what a mortal felt when facing a ravenous tiger. Lin Ming was startled; he suddenly held his breath!

This is...

Lin Ming remained motionless, silently revolving the energy in his body to the limit to deal with any possible dangers. However, as he revolved his energy the killing intent became increasingly terrifying, as if this entire altar instantly turned into an ominous and hellish wasteland. As for that universal love, devotion, and warmth he felt, all of it turned into overwhelming hatred!

Lin Ming didn’t doubt that once this killing intent erupted it would create a massive attack against him. This aura was mind-bogglingly strong, as if he were facing the will of all the ancient God Kings who had perished on the battlefield!

Facing such a will, it was possible he would instantly turn to ash!

In this life or death moment, a light lit up in Lin Ming's mind. He accelerated the revolution of the power of divinity within his body to cover the power of demons in numerous layers. Meanwhile, he revolved his blood vitality to seal away the demon essence bloodline within him.

Then, Lin Ming felt the killing intent locking onto him suddenly become much paler…

Layers of strength swept over his body once more, seeming to distinguish what was within him and hesitating at the same time. Slowly, this strength hid away and the killing intent also vanished, everything returning to its previous state.

The aura that shrouded the entire altar returned to that of universal love, devotion, and warmth once more. Soaked within, Lin Ming felt total relaxation and tranquility.

Lin Ming let out a long breath. What happened just now left his palms wet with sweat.

He faintly guessed that the strength which swept over him just now was aimed at abyssals.

The power of demons within his body had stirred up the great array formation of the altar. But, the array formation had finally determined his identity, thus it had subsided.

If an abyssal were to come here, they would be instantly slain!

Understanding this, Lin Ming probed the ancient altar with his divine sense once more.

Recalling the incomplete memory fragments of Famine, Lin Ming gradually understood what occurred.

This ancient altar suppressed the array eye of the Eternal Wall, stabilizing it. And, as a vital location of the Eternal Wall, this altar was protected with layers upon layers of protections. Abyssals were simply unable to approach this area.

Otherwise, if this altar were to be destroyed then the Eternal Wall would also be in danger of collapsing. If that occurred then the consequences would be unthinkable.

Not to mention anything else, just the skeleton of this peerless powerhouse before him was a priceless treasure. Even after 10 billion years it managed to remain like glittering crystal. Even when compared to a True Divinity spirit treasure, it was much more precious.

This skeleton naturally had to be protected by the array formation.

“This skeleton, could it have been left behind by Immortal Sovereign?”

This idea popped into Lin Ming’s mind. He recalled peerless powerhouses that existed 10 billion years and thought of the Asura Road Master and Immortal Sovereign. But from what Clear and Ink said, the Asura Road Master was still alive. Then, this skeleton might be from the Immortal Sovereign.

Lin Ming slowly stepped towards the skeleton.

A skeleton would inevitably exude a gloomy and dreadful feeling. But to a martial artist this sort of feeling wasn’t worth mentioning at all. Still, no matter how a skeleton was, it wasn’t something that would give off an aesthetic sense.

But, this skeleton was different.

It was beautiful and flawless. Every inch of bone flowed with a faint brilliance, as if a curtain of moonlight was draped over it like liquid mercury. The ten fingers were held together in devoted prayer, like an angel.

This was a divine skeleton, like the most perfect art that existed between the heavens and earth.

Lin Ming was silent for a moment. He carefully spread out his sense to touch this divine skeleton. At first he was cautious, fearing that he would disturb the eternal slumber of this peerless powerhouse and also because he feared that his spiritual sea would suffer a backlash from touching the divine bone. Such a peerless character was sure to have been far stronger than he was, and if they left behind some remnant will or array formation, then it was possible he could end up injuring his spiritual sea.

However, up until Lin Ming's sense reached the point between the skull's eyes, he didn't perceive any hostility at all. Although Lin Ming had absorbed demon essence, he hadn't turned into an abyssal. The power of demons was only used by him and didn't change the essence of his life.

On this, he was completely different from Empyrean Primordius.

Thus when Lin Ming suppressed the demon power in his body, all the array formations on the altar had quieted down. Finally this allowed Lin Ming's soul force to touch the divine skeleton without any hindrance.

In that moment when Lin Ming probed the skull of the divine skeleton, he could feel a wisp of soul aura from the divine skeleton's owner. It was formidable, mysterious, yet soft and pure.

Such a soft and pure soul didn't seem like it could be from a man, but from a woman instead.

"Woman?"

Lin Ming was startled. And at this time, there was a light whistling sound as soul fires ignited in the two eye sockets of this divine skeleton.

The two soul fires within the eye sockets were of different colors. The soul fires in the right eye were pure black and the soul fires in the left eye were blue.

The pure black soul fires were like the underworld, somber and terrifying. The blue soul fires were like a hidden paradise, filled with vibrant life.

"Life and Death Samsara Laws?"

Lin Ming's heart shook. These two soul fires symbolized the highest Laws of the Holy Scripture's bodily universe.

Lin Ming gazed at these two soul fires in a trance. Then, the light flowing upon the divine skeleton quickened and brightened. This brilliance gradually condensed into it and formed small dots of light that spread all over the skeleton.

These dots of light were as small as grains of sand, stretching all over the divine skeleton. As they connected together, it seemed as if the entire divine skeleton was burning in the glow of a fire, becoming increasingly crystalline.

The average person wouldn’t be able to determine just what significance these dots of light held. However, what sort of eyesight did Lin Ming possess? As he saw these dots flash and shimmer, his eyes brightened with them.

Just what were these dots of light? These were clearly tight gatherings of Law runes. These runes were far too small, thus they only seemed to appear like dots of light. They were like tiny buddhist scriptures, overlapping again and again with countless numbers stacked on top of each other!

When ancient peerless powerhouses cultivated Laws, these Laws would eventually turn into runes that were carved into their flesh and blood and even their skeletons. This was the same for Lin Ming. After going through two heavenly tribulations with his Ninefall and Empyrean breakthroughs, countless Law runes were fused into his body.

However, in truth, these Law runes wouldn’t be preserved forever. As a powerhouse died and time passed, these Law runes would slowly fade away from their body.

There were also peerless powerhouses that were unwilling to have their bones be perceived by others. Upon their death, they would disperse their flesh and blood and bones, scattering away all the Law runes they possessed.

A marvelous sight was occurring in front of Lin Ming. Law runes were appearing on this skeleton that came from 10 billion years ago; it was simply inconceivable.

However, what happened next left him even more astonished.

Lin Ming stared at the point between the divine skeleton’s eyes. There, a diagram appeared, one that caused storms to stir up within Lin Ming’s heart!

MW Chapter 2084

Chapter 2084 – Identity of the Divine Skeleton

…

…

…

Between the eyebrows of the crystal divine skeleton, flower petals of light appeared. These petals were like dots of cinnabar. As they formed they gathered around a center, forming a strange flower.

There were nine flower petals in total. Each one seemed to condense the most beautiful sights in the world, causing one's mind to fall into reverie.

As this deep red flower reflected in Lin Ming's pupils, he stood there transfixed for a long time.

A long time ago, 7000 years in the past – almost 12,000 years when he counted his time in Tragic Death Valley – Lin Ming had entered the primal god race's Asura forbidden zone. In his trial within the Cold Ice Mirror, he had once seen a peerless woman dressed in black.

This woman had an appearance completely the same as Sheng Mei. Their temperament, their attitude, their appearance, everything was similar.

It was impossible that this was a mere coincidence.

And between that woman's eyebrows, there was a mark composed of nine flower petals.

The only difference between that woman in the Cold Ice Mirror and this skeleton before him was that within the Cold Ice Mirror, that mysterious woman only had eight flower petals fully unfurled on her mark; the final flower petal was small, not fully stretched out.

But now in front of Lin Ming, nine flower petals were in full bloom. Their light was sharp and brilliant, leaving one intoxicated with their beauty.

"This is..."

Sheng Mei's unrivalled appearance flashed in Lin Ming's mind.

There were two possibilities. One of them was that this sort of flower petal mark belonged to a certain type of person, and this crystalline divine skeleton and the mysterious woman in the Cold Ice Mirror were both this type of person.

However this was an extremely unlikely possibility. After all, this type of peerless woman was simply far too rare 10 billion years ago.

Thus, the more likely explanation was that this crystalline divine skeleton belonged to the woman in the Cold Ice Mirror. She had died here and her bones were preserved for 10 billion years.

Could it really be that Sheng Mei was the reincarnation of a super powerhouse from 10 billion years past?

Thinking of this possibility, Lin Ming felt it was far too ridiculous.

10 billion years was simply far too long ago. What sort of peerless powerhouse could pass the river of 10 billion years after death to reincarnate?

Moreover, although Sheng Mei was fierce, the truth was that she was suppressed by the Soul Emperor. There was not just a simple disagreement between Sheng Mei and the Soul Emperor; the two could be described as sharing a deep grudge.

From this point, if Sheng Mei was truly the reincarnation of a peerless character from 10 billion years ago, how could she be restrained by the Soul Emperor?

All sorts of ideas raced through Lin Ming's mind. He looked at the flower petals. With his sense, he couldn't be wrong. The flower petals he saw right now were identical to the ones that the mysterious woman in the Cold Ice Mirror possessed. Not only were they similar in shape but their aura was also the same.

As for why there was a difference in the ninth flower petal, this might be because these flower petals were a manifestation of the cultivation method that the mysterious woman in the Cold Ice Mirror trained in.

For instance – the Grand Reincarnation Art.

With every reincarnation, an additional flower petal would appear between the woman's eyebrows. With nine reincarnations, the flower petals would be complete, reaching perfection.

When Lin Ming had seen the black-clothed woman in the Cold Ice Mirror, she had just finished her eighth reincarnation and had yet to complete the ninth revolution!

And now it was obvious that before this mysterious woman perished, she had reached perfection in the Grand Reincarnation Art.

Upon realizing this, Lin Ming wasn't sure what he felt.

The Great Dao was boundless and the heavens and earth were heartless. An ancient beauty that could bring the downfall of the worlds, a goddess of peerless grace and talent, even someone like this couldn't escape the fate of becoming nothing but bones. As for those ancient rulers of a hundred races, those peerless proud sons of heaven, in the end they too turned to dust, their bones scattered in the wind.

This was destiny, the final fate that no one could avoid…

Lin Ming deeply bowed towards the remains of this goddess. And after he bowed, the soul fires in the goddess' eye sockets slowly extinguished. All that remained were the runes on the surface of the bones. The runes glittered, allowing Lin Ming to clearly see the Laws within.

These runes were all slowly cultivated by this ancient peerless woman. What they contained included the universe of the body and the samsara of life and death recorded within the Holy Scripture!

Compared to the Holy Scripture, the runes on the goddess' remains gave no hints. There was no beginning and no end; all there was were endless runes, each one more mysterious and complex than the last.

These runes originated from the Holy Scripture. But after fusing together with the mysterious woman's own understandings and comprehensions, they were no longer the same as the Holy Scripture.

If one didn't understand the Holy Scripture, if one didn't have a deep martial arts foundation, then it would be completely impossible to understand just what these runes were.

Even for Lin Ming, wanting to understand these numerous convoluted bone runes wasn't easy at all. He rapidly browsed through them, and then recorded them all in his mind using his formidable memory.

In the past Lin Ming had only seen the pages of death of the Holy Scripture. As for the pages of death, they were in memories left behind to him by Sheng Mei in that tiny part of her soul source; they were in truth extremely incomplete.

Lin Ming had relied on his own comprehensions and personally understood samsara through death to continue the pages of death.

In this state, as Lin Ming saw these bone runes left behind by this peerless woman from 10 billion years ago, it was equal to making up many missing places in his own Holy Scripture Laws.

Lin Ming slowly verified these bone runes with his own comprehensions, one at a time. He felt his mind open and new realizations pour in.

The martial arts civilization was a process of accumulation. Although there were proud children of heaven with outstanding talent capable of producing their own self-created cultivation methods, all these self-created cultivation methods had foundations based on the inheritances of their predecessors. It was impossible for anyone to create a cultivation method that far surpassed the current level of the martial arts civilization.

No matter how many reincarnations Lin Ming underwent, no matter how many samsaras of life and death he observed in the world, no matter how profound his comprehensions were, it was impossible for his Laws in the pages of death to be as complete as that of the Immortal Sovereign from 10 billion years ago, who had focused his lifetime of energy on the Holy Scripture.

And now, with the true Holy Scripture's pages of death before him, Lin Ming was undoubtedly able to further his Holy Scripture Laws.

Lin Ming greedily remembered all he saw. A quarter hour passed. The shimmering runes of the divine skeleton began to darken; it was clear that the runes could only manifest for a short period of time. Lin Ming's pupils widened and he sped up his reading pace.

These incomparably complex runes swiftly passed through Lin Ming's mind and were recorded deep in his memory, marked into his spiritual sea.

This continued until the light of the bones faded away. By now, Lin Ming had memorized all of the bone runes.

Hu - !

The last wisp of light vanished and darkness returned to the altar temple. The divine skeleton also became tranquil once more.

Lin Ming faced the skeleton and bowed a final time.

When his mental strength probed the crystalline divine skeleton, the bone runes had lit up. This was clearly not a coincidence.

Could it be that the Holy Scripture Laws in his body had activated the bone runes somehow?

Or could it be that there was some wisp of residual consciousness in this divine skeleton, that managed to be preserved due to the array formation in this altar?

If this were true then these bone runes were intentionally revealed to him by this wisp of consciousness.

As Lin Ming thought of this, he became increasingly puzzled and uncertain as to the events of the great calamity 10 billion years ago. Just what connection did this mysterious woman who looked like Sheng Mei have with the Immortal Sovereign?

The cultivation method came from the same lineage – the Holy Scripture Laws. It was clear that they were closely related to each other, and at the time when Lin Ming entered the Asura forbidden zone's Cold Ice Mirror, the hostility that the mysterious woman showed to the lineage of the Asura Road Master proved this point.

He didn't know what level of strength this mysterious woman reached. Even if she hadn't stepped Beyond Divinity, she was likely extremely close!

"Could this mysterious person be the same as Immortal Sovereign?"

As soon as Lin Ming thought of this he shook his head. In the planet-sized heavenly palace and the galactic battlefield in the Akashic Dream Universe, he had seen the phantom left behind by Immortal Sovereign more than once. He had obviously been a man, completely different from this mysterious woman.

But for this mysterious woman to be Immortal Sovereign's relative, such as his daughter or little sister, just didn't seem too likely. It was true that a family with an outstanding bloodline would have a higher chance of producing powerhouses, but to produce two people who neared or stepped Beyond Divinity, this was a bit too exaggerated.

Lin Ming didn’t understand any of this nor did he spend more time thinking about it. At this time, he spread his sense outwards into the bronze temple. Within it was a slowly spinning purple vortex.

This purple vortex was a part of the Eternal Wall and also the channel leading from the Eternal Wall to the Dark Abyss.

After passing through this purple vortex, what awaited underneath was the Dark Abyss!

In the abyss there were endless numbers of abyssal demons!

And this purple vortex was a channel that only intelligent life forms of the 33 Heavens could pass. In addition to the killing array of the dark altar, with these two insurances, there would be no abyssals that dared to come here to die.

Lin Ming let out a deep breath. Then, he leapt into the purple vortex!

MW Chapter 2085

Chapter 2085 – Dark Abyss

…

…

…

The moment Lin Ming passed through the Eternal Wall, he felt as if he were swimming through a river of time that flowed on for billions upon billions of years. He didn't know how much time passed, perhaps thousands of years, perhaps just a mere instant, but during this time all sorts of chaotic scenes raced through his mind.

Then, he suddenly arrived on a black land.

This land was incomparably desolate. Everywhere he looked there were bare rocks that stretched out to infinity. Floating above this land, he could feel a deep and heavy permanence.

Nine suns hung high in the skies. Without exception, each one of these nine suns was blood red, and the sunlight they emitted caused one's blood vitality to faintly resonate with it.

"This is the abyss!"

Lin Ming took a deep breath. The air here was burning hot and carried with it the faint smell of blood. This sort of air could subtly affect a person's mind, slowly turning them violent and crazy.

Lin Ming felt his surroundings. Then, his figure flickered and he flew to a distant black mountain.

Hiding in this remote mountain, Lin Ming's body started to change. His joints emitted crackling explosive sounds. Layers of scales and bone armor appeared on him and his limbs became thicker and more stout. Hideous bone spikes jutted out from his elbows, and curved horns grew out of his head. On his back, a fearsome tail extended downwards.

His eyes turned blood red and his aura became vicious and dangerous. He had completely taken the appearance of an abyssal demon, and not just that, but layers of demon power covered him, forming a faint black mist around him.

At this moment, Lin Ming had thoroughly become an abyssal.

After cultivating the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace to the sixth star and absorbing all sorts of top quality bloodlines, Lin Ming had already gained the ability to easily manipulate his bones and muscles, allowing him to transfigure his appearance however he wished.

In the past Lin Ming had absorbed the essence of Famine's flesh and blood. Not just that, but in the Asura Road's final trial he had also absorbed the demon relic, and during the process there was a period of time where his body had taken the appearance of an abyssal.

The power of demons and the demon bloodline had tried to invade Lin Ming's body and possess him, but in the end he had subdued and digested it.

Now, Lin Ming could branch out this strength to easily manifest the aura of an abyssal.

His essence was that of a human, but if he were to disguise himself as an abyssal, then with his True Divinity level strength it would be difficult for any abyssal to see through him. This was because Lin Ming had absorbed the essence of Famine and also the demon relic. Since each of them was one of the six great totem rank abyssals, their abyssal bloodlines could not be any more pure!

Using a quarter hour of time, Lin Ming constantly adjusted the frequency of the demon power in his body and also checked over himself again and again to prevent there being any flaws in his disguise. He continued this until he felt it was perfect.

Lin Ming believed that even if Xiao Moxian were to stand in front of him, she would find it difficult to recognize him. That boiling demon power had covered all of his original aura.

He stretched a finger. This finger ended with a black and terrifying nail. On the end of Lin Ming's fingertip, layers of black lines appeared, dancing in the air. These lines condensed together, turning into different shapes. Sometimes it was a sphere, sometimes it was a cube.

Finally, these figures completely collapsed, leaving behind a single point and becoming a mini black hole. The mini black hole greedily swallowed all the surrounding energy, and even light vanished when it entered.

This strange phenomenon belonged to Famine – it was the Laws of Swallowing!

Within Tragic Death Valley, Lin Ming had used a thousand years to absorb Famine's essence and unlock its memories. Now, not only could he simulate an abyssal aura but he could even replicate the Laws of Swallowing!

It could be said that Lin Ming truly controlled a portion of Famine's abilities. Although his Laws of Swallowing weren't as strong as Famine's, it was more than enough for him to use for absorbing energy for his own cultivation.

With the Swallowing Laws supporting him, Lin Ming's cultivation speed and ability to accumulate energy would rise by a mind-boggling amount.

Woosh –

The black sphere vanished. He subconsciously cracked his wrists, a loud crackling sound coming from them. What he wanted to do now was to find a high level abyssal demon and see if it would recognize him.

A human had come to the world of the abyssals and had disguised himself as an abyssal to probe their secrets and steal their lucky chances. This strange feeling left a playful smile tugging at Lin Ming's lips.

When this smile was joined with his current appearance, it gave off a fierce and bizarrely macabre feeling. This seemed like the vivid image of a sinister and cruel demon and if martial artists of the 33 Heavens were to see him, they would desperately try to kill him with everything they had.

Lin Ming's figure flashed. His tall and strong body tore through the void, rapidly flying away!

In an instant he flew thousands of miles. Then, he fell down into a wild forest.

In Famine's memories the Dark Abyss was like a pagoda; it was divided into different layers.

Each layer of the abyss was vast and boundless; it was hard to find where its edges were.

Every layer of the abyss had nine suns hanging high in the skies, forming a complete world.

From one layer to another, trillions of space channels connected them. These space channels overflowed with violent space storms. If an abyssal whose body wasn't strong enough entered one of these space channels then it was possible they would be torn to shreds by the space storms.

The deeper one went into the abyss, the more intense the space storms became. Thus, generally speaking, low level abyssals were gathered in the first few layers of the Dark Abyss. As for the high level abyssals, they lurked in the lower layers.

They were like beasts hiding in the dark, waiting for the day they could run out of the abyss and swallow all living beings in the 33 Heavens!

Lin Ming didn't plan to stay in the first several layers. It was impossible for these low level abyssals to see through his disguise. Moreover, if he stayed in the upper levels it would be impossible for him to find lucky chances.

The reason Lin Ming came to this forested mountain was because after probing the area with his sense, he discovered that there was a space channel hidden here, one that led to the next layer of the abyss.

However, as Lin Ming was looking for the space channel in accordance with what he sensed earlier, his footsteps paused.

He heard a rustling sound from the forest and also a faint killing intent.

It was clear that some sort of aggressive being was approaching.

Although Lin Ming didn't have any interest in killing the low level abyssals at the first layer of the Dark Abyss, since he didn't have any relation to them he might as well use this chance to test his Laws of Swallowing.

Lin Ming stood still, waiting for the abyssal to approach. Or, perhaps there was more than one, because there were four or five dangerous auras locked onto him.

However, when Lin Ming spread out his own sense and locked onto these abyssals, he actually stiffened!

This… just what was this!?

Lin Ming looked at a corner of the wild forest with disbelief thick on his face. He subconsciously gripped his fists.

Shua –

Shua –

The bushes of the wild forest were separated, and a few aggressive beings with fierce and distorted expressions emerged from the shadows.

Seeing these beings, Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air.

He would never have dreamed that after arriving at the Dark Abyss, the first attack against him would not be from abyssals, but by…

Humans of the 33 Heavens!

No… these weren't humans, but some sort of ancient race that possessed a shape and appearance similar to that of humans.

However, from their distorted complexions and fierce features, their curved knees and spines and their arms that nearly hung to the ground, Lin Ming could clearly feel that these beings in front of him were not the usually-seen intelligent life forms of the 33 Heavens, but some sort of primitive and savage being without much intelligence of their own.

There were five people; four men and one woman, all of them stark naked. Their limbs brushed against the ground and bloodthirsty hope filled their eyes. These were eyes that only wild beasts would have.

The ancient race man in the lead emitted a deep and bass roar. He opened his mouth, revealing fangs like those of a blood-sucking vampire.

It was clear that this ancient race man considered Lin Ming an enemy, and even food.

“How could… this be?”

Lin Ming found this situation hard to accept. And at this time, the ancient race man roared and led the several people behind him to rush towards Lin Ming.

Their movements were like those of vicious beasts, but to Lin Ming who had reached a True Divinity level of strength, they were nothing but slow and clumsy, unable to harm him at all.

As long as Lin Ming wished it then the heads of these five wild ancient race savages would fall to the ground. However, Lin Ming’s mind was in a mess and he simply didn’t want to kill these savages. His figure flashed and he drew backwards like a ghost, instantly appearing a mile away.

The five savages emerged empty-handed. They were immediately enraged.

And at this time, Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred once more. He looked up in a direction. There, he could see four or five other living beings rapidly flying over.

These beings were covered in black armor. Their bodies were tall and thick and they held large axes in their hands. Their eyes were blood red and black energy tumbled around their bodies. They were clearly abyssal demons!

Whoosh!

An axe was hurled out by the leading abyssal. It tore through the air, howling in an arc as it circled around towards those five savages.

Blood shot into the air. Two savages were decapitated by the axe, their blood splashing out!

“Hehe! We caught another five prey! Although their cultivation is a bit lower, it's good enough. All of them are mine!”

The abyssal in the lead spoke in the abyssal language. Thanks to Famine’s memories, Lin Ming was able to understand him.

These words left Lin Ming dazed.

He seemed to realize a possibility. In the Dark Abyss, these ancient race people were considered the same as vicious beasts; all of them were regarded as prey.

And the abyssals were hunters. They captured and killed their prey in the open land, and this was how they gained experience!

Similar to when humanity developed the wild universe.

In the Dark Abyss, everything was reversed. The intelligent life forms of the 33 Heavens had become the prey instead!

Lin Ming had no idea what had occurred in the abyss. In the memories of Famine, the Dark Abyss originally wasn’t like this.

MW Chapter 2086

Chapter 2086 – Fate of the Ancient Races

…

…

…

“Hahahaha! How fun!”

The abyssal demon slashed out his axe once more. Another ancient race man had his neck sliced off. After a moment, only two of the five savages remained.

These two savages could clearly feel fear. They began to run in different directions, but how could the abyssal demon chasing them let them go?

The abyssal demon hurled two axes, each flying in a different direction and aimed at the back of an ancient race savage!

With the abyssal demon’s strength, accomplishing this was easy. However, just as those two savages were about to die, the axes seemed to strike upon some sort of invisible energy wall. With two loud cracking sounds, the axes fell to the ground.

Taking advantage of this moment, the two savages wildly fled deep into the forest.

“What!?”

The abyssal demon that shot out the axes was stunned. Then, he frowned, his complexion darkening.

He slowly turned to Lin Ming, derisively sneering as he said, “Are you the one that blocked me?”

Lin Ming was silent.

Killing intent erupted from the abyssal demon. He didn’t know why Lin Ming would rescue those two pathetic creatures, but at this time, Lin Ming’s lack of explanation and his contemptuous expression caused the abyssal demon to become even more furious.

He felt that Lin Ming was intentionally trying to pick a fight and was taunting him.

"You are courting death!"

The abyssal demon spat out.

Hua-la!

With a light sound, the five abyssals surrounded Lin Ming.

These abyssal demons were all iron claw demons; they were one of the relatively low level abyssals of the Dark Abyss. Their limbs were sturdy and powerful and they were extremely fast. Their claws could freely extend in and out of their bodies and were also sinisterly sharp.

At this time, the head abyssal demon no longer used axes. Rather, from between the spaces of his fingers, three foot long claws suddenly popped out.

These claws were like icy cold sabers. If an iron claw demon could cultivate to the level of an Empyrean, their claws would be equal to an Empyrean spirit treasure.

An iron claw demon that used their claws could display their greatest combat strength.

"Kill him."

One of the iron claw demons shouted out loud. However, the head of the iron claw demons waved his hand, motioning for the others not to act rashly. The abyssal demon squinted his eyes and looked Lin Ming up and down, a cold light flashing in his eyes.

The abyssal demon was motionless and his followers didn't move either.

The head iron claw demon stared at Lin Ming for a full ten breaths of time. Then, he stretched out his tongue and lightly licked his claws.

"Royalty?"

The iron claw demon asked Lin Ming. As this question fell into the ears of the other iron claw demons, all of them were startled.

From within Lin Ming's body, this iron claw demon was able to feel a pure demon bloodline. The aura of this kind of demon bloodline would only appear in the bodies of high rank abyssals.

Now, the feeling that Lin Ming exuded was like that of a royal abyssal. This was no minor matter.

Royal abyssals possessed an extraordinary and lofty status. To kill them for no reason was a capital crime.

Moreover, generally speaking, royal abyssals weren’t weak. Wanting to kill one wouldn’t be easy at all.

But even so, there were numerous royal abyssals slaughtered every year. The reason for this was that abyssals could devour each other. If an abyssal demon swallowed a royal abyssal, they could obtain a part of that royal abyssal’s bloodline, improving their own body and greatly enhancing their strength!

The abyssals were a ruthless and tyrannical race. There was often slaughter within their own race, and in this sort of endless slaughter the abyssals would constantly evolve and transform.

Now, facing Lin Ming, this iron claw demon fell into a conundrum.

On one hand, he wanted to kill Lin Ming and steal away his royal bloodline. But on the other hand, he feared Lin Ming’s strength. He didn’t know Lin Ming’s background either. If he rashly acted and kicked an iron sheet then that would be stupid of him.

The several iron claw demons rapidly spoke with sound transmissions. The opportunity was placed right in front of their eyes and they didn’t want to let it go, but they didn’t think this was safe either.

As the iron claw demons discussed the situation amongst themselves, Lin Ming casually lifted his hand.

The several abyssals were startled. They didn't know just what Lin Ming was doing. All they saw was Lin Ming simply cut a finger through the air, and then their eyes blurred as the world turned upside down.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Five sharp slicing sounds filled the air. The heads of the five iron claw demons were instantly separated from their bodies. As their giant heads fell onto the ground, they bounced like rubber balls. In their final moments of death, all that filled their faces was utter disbelief.

“How… could this…”

The head of the iron claw demons could see his own body standing still and growing farther and farther away. His consciousness turned blurry; even now he had no idea how Lin Ming had killed them.

But the moment the iron claw demon was about to die, he felt an irresistible strength cover his spiritual sea. Then, a soul-tearing pain wracked his entire being as his spirit mark was forcefully erased by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming began using the Magic Cube to read through the memories of these abyssals.

He wanted to know everything about why they were hunting the ancient races.

These iron claw demons were of a very low level. As Lin Ming read through their memories it was the same as a mortal scholar reading through the well-known texts of the nation. It was rapid and easily understood at a glance.

Soon, Lin Ming obtained the information he wanted.

The situation was close to what he had guessed, and in truth was even worse than what he had thought!

The Dark Abyss had always had people of the ancient races. This even included the number one ancient race of the 33 Heavens – the primal god race.

And, these ancient race people came from the great calamity 10 billion years ago, when they were captured and brought here by the abyssals.

In the past when the Asura Road Master and Immortal Sovereign laid down the Eternal Wall to isolate the Dark Abyss from the 33 Heavens, these ancient race captives had inevitably been trapped in the Dark Abyss.

For all this time, the abyssals raised these ancient race people and transformed these captives. They left behind demon brands in their bodies, turning them into slaves, living furnaces, food, alchemy materials, experimental materials, and so forth.

In the great war 10 billion years ago, the destiny of the 33 Heavens' ancient races had been shattered. Beneath the terrifying existence of the abyssals' curse, the ancient races began to slowly decline. For instance, even an incredibly powerful race like the primal god race found it increasingly difficult to reproduce.

However, within the Dark Abyss, these ancient race captives weren't affected by this curse. They retained their original ability to reproduce.

10 billion years was enough time for these ancient race captives to multiply and expand. Their population increased by countless times, until they covered every layer of the Dark Abyss.

Due to the careful efforts of the abyssals, the bloodlines of these ancient race captives had slowly merged together as one. The abyssals used curse arts, subjugation techniques, slave seals, and so forth to constantly enslave the ancient race descendants. At the same time, the abyssals even planted abyssal control factors in the bloodlines of the ancient races.

Slowly, the ancient races became no different than cattle, raised in captivity in large numbers by the abyssals.

The abyssals sealed away the intelligence of these ancient race descendants. Then they picked the best among them and let them loose in the wild, turning them into prey.

The ancient races had outstanding talent. Even after becoming savages they still retained a formidable combat strength. They were used as hunting targets for low level abyssals. Through killing these ancient race captives, the low level abyssals were able to hone their combat skills.

And deeper in the Dark Abyss, there were even some ancient race savages that hadn’t had their intelligence sealed away. They still retained their cultivation ability and even had some crude inheritances. As life forms with intelligence, they were even stronger.

But their fate was to be released into the wild mountains and plains to be hunted down by higher level abyssals.

Many abyssal influences would organize hunting parties to kill these ancient race descendants. There were even abyssal armies that marched directly into the wilderness and slaughtered massive numbers of ancient race members.

To the abyssals, the ancient races were their grinding stone. This was like mortals raising a tiger in a cage. They would throw live chickens to the tiger to eat in order to maintain its wild and fierce nature.

And so upon being born, the ancient race descendants who retained their intelligence faced the fate of being hunted down and slaughtered. But with their martial arts civilization ruined it was impossible for them to truly organize to resist the abyssals.

In the depths of the Dark Abyss, over these billions of years, many proud children of heaven had emerged from the ranks of the ancient races. They were outstanding individuals with amazing talent and formidable strength. They weren't willing to accept the fate of being hunted down by abyssals for generation after generation, and organized large influences to resist them.

But in the end, all of them were mercilessly suppressed!

Ultimately the fate of these proud children of heaven was to be eaten up by the abyssals.

After understanding all of this, Lin Ming sighed. He never thought there would be a day when the intelligent life forms of the 33 Heavens would devolve into prey and be recklessly hunted down by others.

MW Chapter 2087

Chapter 2087 – Bashe Serpent

…

…

…

Within the Dark Abyss there were also large and great cities. These cities weren't like the refined and freshly polished cities of the 33 Heavens, clad in jade and gold, but were filled with a primal and ancient flavor instead.

The buildings here were much larger than the buildings of the 33 Heavens. The stones used for them were the most primitive and basic stones; they were rough and covered with sharp edges.

This was the 12th layer of the Dark Abyss. From the memories that Lin Ming obtained from Famine, the Dark Abyss was divided into 18 layers, and starting from the 10th layer there would be True Divinity level abyssals.

On the 10th, 11th, and 12th levels, there was only a single True Divinity level abyssal; they were the rulers of their layers. Downwards, in the 13th, 14th, 15th layers and beyond… the number of True Divinity abyssals increased and they were also stronger.

In the lowest 17th and 18th layers, there would be 'totem level' abyssals. In other words, they were super abyssal demons like Famine, Eon, and Deep.

However, in Famine's memories, information about the Dark Abyss was that of several billion years ago and wasn't entirely accurate. For instance, billions of years ago the ancient races hadn't yet been bred into prey by the abyssals, but were different from how they were now.

Billions of years was a long enough time for many matters to occur. Lin Ming wouldn't be surprised if several more True Divinity level abyssals appeared in the 12th layer.

With such thoughts in mind, Lin Ming entered the main city of the 12th layer – Demon Snake City.

This city occupied an area of thousands of miles. Just by nearing the city, one could feel a vast demonic power and pressure covering them. Low level martial artists would have no way to stay in this pressure.

If a human were to be covered in this demon power then the strength they would be able to display would be weakened. But for powerful abyssals, the situation was completely reversed. When they were around this city, whether it was in combat strength or cultivation speed they would rise to a new level.

The city walls of Demon Snake City were extremely special. They weren't formed by rectangular blocks, but by a massive circular tube that lay on the ground.

The city walls were a thousand feet high and thousands of miles long. They were black in color and covered in large dark red ring patterns.

When Lin Ming approached the city walls, he could feel an infernal energy as deep as a sea and a turbulent blood vitality gush out from it!

This blood vitality was filled with a faint oppressive feeling. Lin Ming could even feel it transmit through the ground beneath him, pulsating with life.

The city walls were alive!

This couldn't even be called a city wall. In truth, it was actually a giant snake that was 4000-5000 miles in length! This creature was called – the bashe serpent.

The bashe serpent lay around Demon Snake City, circling it. It had fallen into a deep slumber and its body was now used as a natural wall for Demon Snake City. The name Demon Snake City was also due to this bashe serpent.

This bashe serpent was a True Divinity level abyssal, the ruler of the Dark Abyss's 12th layer!

When Lin Ming arrived at the outskirts of Demon Snake City, he looked upon this massive snake abyssal from afar. A brilliant light flashed in his eyes.

The road in front of Demon Snake City could hold a hundred horses standing side by side.

Of course, abyssals wouldn't ride horses. The mounts they rode would also be abyssals.

These mounts came in all different kinds. Some were like lizards, some were like cows, some were like giant cyclops carrying giant metal bars.

The classification categories of abyssals were extremely complex. There were countless different sub races, and all of these sub races had strict hierarchical differences.

High ranking races could enslave and even kill low ranking races.

And these races were ranked according to how formidable their bloodlines were, their intelligence, their capability of learning, their type of talent, and many other such factors.

Before this when Lin Ming encountered the iron claw demons, they were a weak abyssal species.

Most iron claw demons were far weaker than the mounts that these residents of Demon Snake City rode on.

Out of all abyssal demons, the highest ranked were the six great totems.

Next were the royalty.

Royal abyssal demons possessed the high grade bloodline of the six totem abyssals. They were generally distributed in the lowest layers of the Dark Abyss.

And Lin Ming's current status was that of a true and blue royal.

Within his body was the essence of Famine as well as the demon relic left behind by what was likely also a totem level abyssal. Like this, in the entire Dark Abyss, if Lin Ming said he wasn't a royal then no abyssal would believe him.

When Lin Ming entered the city, he could clearly feel the guard soldiers looking at him with surprise and envy in their eyes. It was clear that they recognized his status as a royal.

But a royal status didn't always win respect and envy in the abyss. Rather, most of the time it simply brought a fatal disaster upon oneself.

As Lin Ming walked down the street he often saw abyssals look at him with greedy and covetous hope in their eyes.

It was clear that they wanted to eat him up and obtain his bloodline.

Although there some laws in the Dark Abyss that protected royals, the truth was that in the wild and open wilderness, killing and robbing was a common occurrence and it was incredibly difficult to find the murderer. In addition, abyssals were a cruel race that advocated survival of the strongest, the most ruthless jungle laws. To them strength was everything. If one didn't have strength and hoped to protect themselves with laws, that was far too naïve.

As Lin Ming entered the city, he quietly paid careful attention to the bashe serpent.

This was the abyssal that ruled the 12th layer, and from beginning to end it had never paid any attention to him. This was also reasonable. Originally, Lin Ming had near perfect camouflage techniques, and after he suppressed his own cultivation he appeared common in the crowds.

Lin Ming passed through a high complex built of black stone and arrived at a restaurant in a corner of the city. On the sides of this restaurant stood two 100 foot tall cyclops. These cyclops were similar to the coiling ridge giants that Lin Ming saw outside the Asura Road's Forsaken Mortal Tomb.

They possessed immense strength and low intelligence. They were easily tamed and made some of the best demon slaves and mounts.

Some abyssals tamed cyclops in ways that mortals raised precious dogs. In the eyes of high grade abyssals, the worth of low level abyssals like iron claw demons was inferior to a single finger of a cyclops.

Lin Ming walked into the restaurant. It was very spacious but there weren't many abyssals drinking wine.

The truth was that this wasn't a restaurant in an ordinary sense. Rather, it was a place used for abyssals to exchange information. Here, as long as one possessed demon crystals then they could trade them for information.

Lin Ming casually chose a spot to sit down and then placed a black crystal on the table. This black crystal was a demon crystal.

Abyssal demons could swallow these demon crystals and use the demon power contained within to increase their own cultivation. Thus, these demon crystals were considered the currency of the entire Dark Abyss.

They came in differing qualities. The demon crystals Lin Ming possessed came from the several iron claw demons that he had killed earlier. Whether in quality or quantity, they were extremely limited.

“What do you wish for?” A sweet sound wafted in the air. A succubus demon that resembled a human woman appeared in front of Lin Ming.

She had bent over at an extremely low degree. One could clearly see her chest heaving up and down above her narrow corset.

Succubus demons were an extremely strange species of abyssal demon. They looked similar to the intelligent life forms in the 33 Heavens and possessed beautiful facial features. In fact, they were even more beautiful than the intelligent life forms of the 33 Heavens.

The succubus had a hot and bombastic figure. Her skin was bronze, like the color of wheat, making her seem wild and unbridled. Male succubus demons were called incubus. Incubus were tall and had sharp facial features, as if they were cast from marble.

If there was one way in which they differed from the intelligent life forms of the 33 Heavens, then that would be that there was a slender and long demon tail that extended down their backs. These tails were smooth and slender, only the thickness of a finger. But, there was a strange fleshy bulge at the end. Sometimes they were shaped like arrowheads, some were ribbed tubes, and some were rounded points.

Some succubus demons also had a pair of small horns coming out of their heads. This didn't destroy their aesthetic appearance. Rather, it made them seem even more cute and lovable.

Lin Ming casually looked at this succubus and said, "Anything is fine."

The young succubus smiled before leaving. As she walked away, she tossed Lin Ming an especially sweet smile. This was clearly special treatment brought about by Lin Ming's royal bloodline. It had to be known that devouring someone with a royal bloodline wasn't the only way to obtain benefits from them. There was also a gentler method – that was, dual cultivation.

After a dozen some breaths of time, the young succubus brought a deep red drink to Lin Ming that had the faint aroma of wine.

This sort of wine was brewed with blood.

"Please enjoy yourself." The young succubus carried a tray with both hands and using her long and slender tail, she wrapped it around the wine glass and placed it in front of Lin Ming. The succubus' tail was extremely dexterous, even more so than fingers.

Then, the succubus tossed Lin Ming a playful smile, revealing sharp canines from the corners of her mouth – this was also a mark of a succubus.

However, her flirtation didn’t draw any response from Lin Ming. This caused her to be a little bit angry and she huffed away unhappily.

Lin Ming didn’t pay attention to this succubus waitress nor did he move to drink the blood wine. He only sat in the hall, listening to passing abyssals exchange information.

After coming to the Dark Abyss, there were many things he had to do. He had roughly planned out his goals that he had to accomplish there, as well as his plans for the next hundred years…

MW Chapter 2088

Chapter 2088 – Demon Association

…

…

…

The restaurant Lin Ming was in was called Blood Moon Hall. In Demon Snake City, although this restaurant wasn't considered too expensive, it still charged a price of 100-200 demon crystals for a meal. It absolutely wasn't an amount that a low level abyssal could afford.

Counting today, Lin Ming had stayed in Blood Moon Hall for 20 days.

At the start some beautiful succubus maids approached Lin Ming with their own thoughts in mind. But after being refused several times, they no longer bothered him. Like this, Lin Ming finally obtained peace and quiet.

He knew that these succubus maids were not amateur weaklings. In truth, the reason they flirted and enticed him was because they had thoughts of obtaining his royal bloodline.

Every day Lin Ming would come to Blood Moon Hall and order the most ordinary wine. Besides that, he didn't order anything else. There was food and although the food was also expensive, it didn't arouse any appetite in him. Rather, it even made one feel nauseous to the stomach.

What abyssal demons usually ate were: live insects, bloody meat, living beasts, parts of ancient race descendants, such as their brains, flesh, bones…

Every time Lin Ming saw some abyssals gather together to eat the flesh and blood of ancient race clansmen, he had the sudden urge to wipe every single one of them from existence.

"Have you heard? The Demon Association is planning to sell 10,000 high quality slaves. Of these high quality slaves, 8000 are young girls especially selected for their beauty. They have angelic appearances and their talent is also good. Moreover, all of them are virgins. They make the best possible living furnaces! As for the 2000 male slaves, they make decent slave guards. With slave seals planted in them, they will be absolutely loyal."

In a corner of the restaurant, several abyssal demons began speaking as they tore away at chunks of blood beast meat. As they spoke their words slurred together and drops of blood leaked out from the corners of their mouths.

The Demon Association that these abyssals spoke of was one of the six totem level influences in the Dark Abyss.

Their leader was… Evil.

Evil was a super abyssal on the same level as Famine. After the ancient great war, Evil had gone missing. Some people said Evil had perished but there were also some who said Evil was lurking in the darkness. The reason for this was that although Evil went missing, the Demon Association didn’t fall apart. Rather, over these years, it developed more and more, growing with each year.

Billions of years ago it was the Demon Association that raised a massive amount of ancient race slaves and then constantly screened out these slaves and bred them. Then, they released them into the open wilderness, turning them into prey that was to be hunted down by abyssals.

In addition to that, the Demon Association also controlled over 90% of the ancient race slave business. Whether it was living furnaces, guards, experimental materials, alchemy materials, or anything else, all sorts of slaves could be bought from the Demon Association.

The slaves of the Demon Association were far more outstanding than slaves produced by other influences.

Over all these years, the Demon Association had accumulated an unknown amount of wealth. The reach of the Demon Association was spread throughout the entire Dark Abyss. Their headquarters were located in the 17th layer of the abyss, but they also had countless strongholds both large and small in the other layers.

In order to resist the Demon Association, the ancient race clansmen had stirred up countless revolves in these past billions of years. These were also the slave uprisings that the abyssals spoke of.

The ancient race rebel armies had once killed innumerable abyssals. But compared to a massive abyssal influence, an uprising of slaves was not worth mentioning at all. These rebel armies were nothing more than tiny splashes in an ocean, soon subsiding. Their only use was to help abyssals in training.

This was the sorrow of the ancient races.

In the past thousand years, a large-scale slave revolt had erupted in the abyss. The waves of the uprising swept through the abyss' 11th, 12th, 13th, and 14th level – it was on a vast scale.

However, this so-called 'vast scale' was only relative to slave uprisings that occurred in the past several tens of millions of years. The truth was that to the abyssals, these rebel armies could be crushed to death with a single foot, no different from someone stepping on a cockroach or ant: simply unworthy of mentioning.

In the face of the slave uprising on the 12th layer, the bashe serpent continued sleeping. As for the Demon Association, they still continued selling slaves. None of them placed the rebel army in their eyes. At this time, the sale of 10,000 slaves was considerable business for Demon Snake City. The main reason was that the quality of these slaves was high, and whether it was men or women, they all had cultivations at the Divine Lord realm or above.

Lin Ming quietly listened in on this news. Then, he laid down a demon crystal to pay his bill and walked outside.

And when Lin Ming stood up, the several abyssals in the corner of Blood Moon Hall glanced at each other and quietly followed him.

Lin Ming seemed to not have noticed this.

He carried a pot of wine with one hand and drank it while he strolled through the city.

Abyssals favored wine brewed with blood and didn’t have any interest in spirit wines brewed from heavenly materials. Thus, the level of these spirit wines couldn’t be compared to those brewed in the 33 Heavens.

Lin Ming continued to drink a mouthful at a time as he walked to a remote location outside the city.

This was a good place to kill someone and steal away their possessions.

The abyssals that followed Lin Ming looked at each other, excitement growing in their eyes.

They were long-tail demons. They had crocodile-like heads and crocodile-like tails. They were inherently cruel and bloodthirsty and loved to rip their prey apart. As soon as they came to Demon Snake City they had locked onto Lin Ming.

To them, Lin Ming's bloodline was extremely tempting.

In these past days Lin Ming had come across many similar events. The world of abyssals originally followed the laws of the jungle where they strong ate the weak. After Lin Ming suppressed his cultivation he also blatantly walked around in public with his royal bloodline; this was no different from a little child carrying gold bars and walking round the city streets.

The further Lin Ming walked, the more desolate and bleak the surroundings became. But the abyssals didn't develop any suspicions at all. Rather, they grew even more excited. At this time Lin Ming stopped and slowly turned around.

The several abyssals feverishly grinned. In their eyes, Lin Ming was a dead man walking.

"Brat, be a good little boy and give us your bloodline and we'll let you die in peace! Hahaha!" The several abyssals laughed, looking at Lin Ming with mockery in their eyes.

Lin Ming sighed. "How stupid. Even at the precipice of death you still keep laughing. Haven't you realized by now that I intentionally led you here?"

As Lin Ming spoke, the abyssals were stunned.

"What?"

They no longer had the time to think. Lin Ming's sharp claws slashed through their throats and blood sprayed out!

Peng! Peng! Peng!

Lin Ming punched out his fists. Billions and trillions of threads of demon power surged outwards, directly breaking into the bodies of these abyssals. This was Lin Ming's Body Tearing Bone Shattering Fist.

Then, Lin Ming waved a hand and a black vortex swirled into existence.

Swallowing Laws!

After absorbing the flesh and blood essence of Famine and carving the Law runes of Famine into his body, Lin Ming had inherited its swallowing ability.

The truth was that for Famine, it was no longer accurate to describe its swallowing ability with Laws. Rather, this was a type of talent, a talent that turned another's strength into one's own!

Now, what Lin Ming displayed was this sort of talent. The abyssals he just killed were mostly at the Holy Lord realm, and the strongest of them was at the peak Holy Lord realm.

The strength of these abyssals was also drawn out by Lin Ming, turned into the purest strength where it converged within him and nourished his demon body.

Now, Lin Ming was still training this swallowing ability. He couldn't be as freakish as Famine and swallow the strength of others without leaking out any bit at all.

Lin Ming could swallow at most 70-80% of another's strength. And as the other party's cultivation got higher, there was a proportionately smaller amount of strength that Lin Ming could absorb.

However, this was still several times faster than Lin Ming's previous cultivation speed.

A low absorption ratio didn't matter; he would simply need to kill more abyssals in exchange. The abyssal demons were mortal enemies with the intelligent life forms of the 33 Heavens to begin with, and Lin Ming showed no mercy in slaughtering them.

For the last 20 some days, as Lin Ming practiced Famine's swallowing talent he was able to swallow an increasingly high level of strength. Lin Ming felt he could now attempt hunting down World King level abyssals, and after several more months, he could even pursue Empyrean level abyssals.

At that time, Lin Ming's cultivation speed would rise to even greater heights.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming coldly sneered.

Demon Association… this seemed to be a decent target!

After a period of thought, Lin Ming waved his hand and gathered the souls of the abyssals. By now, he didn't even need to summon the Magic Cube. With another wave of his hand he directly erased the spirit marks of these souls and then used a short period of time to read through their memories.

For these last 20 some days, every time Lin Ming killed an abyssal he would read their memories. His understanding of the Demon Association became increasingly profound.

Know oneself, know your enemy, and be undefeated in a hundred battles. Since he had placed this Demon Association as one of his targets, he naturally had to seek out all the information he could on them.

MW Chapter 2089

Chapter 2089 – Ancient Race Uprising

…

…

…

Time passed. By this day, Lin Ming had been in the Dark Abyss for two months already.

The Dark Abyss's 12th layer, Black Sand City –

This was a giant city situated in the midst of a desert. The reason this city had such a name was because the desert was formed from black sand.

The desert was naturally desolate, but the city itself was bustling with business. The reason for this was that the Demon Association had established their 12th layer branch division here.

Thus, this city had turned into the largest slave market in the 12th layer.

The slave trade was an extremely important business in the Dark Abyss. The slaves here were not only ancient race slaves, but also abyssals.

Low intelligence abyssals, such as the cyclopes, were often turned into slaves in the Dark Abyss. These slaves were all sold in the same way.

The Demon Association only sold high quality slaves. Slaves with poor talent and low strength didn't have much value at all. These types of slaves were placed in the open wilderness and hunted down as prey.

For instance, when it came to the ancient race slaves, the Demon Association would often raise and cultivate them so that they reached the Divine Transformation realm and above. Not just that, but many of them had certain special bloodlines.

To the abyssals these ancient race bloodlines were highly beneficial.

These purchased slaves might be used as living furnaces or even food. There were some species of abyssal demons that only came in the male sex. These abyssals would forcefully inject their reproductive life liquid into women of other races. Then, this liquid would invade the eggs of these alien women and slowly transform their bloodlines. Slowly, these eggs would suck up the life essence of the women until a new abyssal was born.

This was an extremely tyrannical and cruel method of reproduction. Because of these reasons, female slaves always sold for prices several times that of male slaves in Black Sand City.

Black Sand City didn't have city walls. Rather, it was covered by a massive force field.

At this time, over a thousand miles away from Black Sand City, Lin Ming stood at the summit of a high mountain and looked down upon the city. From this distance the giant Black Sand City was only the size of his palm.

This city was Lin Ming's first all-out battle target he had decided on after entering the Dark Abyss.

For these last two months in the Dark Abyss, Lin Ming hadn't taken any drastic actions that stood out. He only constantly gathered information to further his understanding of the Dark Abyss. He wanted to understand the level of the powerhouses, the scale of the large influences, their positions, bases, and all sorts of other key information.

Besides the Demon Association that Lin Ming had made his goal, he also had a relatively good understanding of the other totem level influences. And, he also knew that the most mysterious Demon God's Tomb was in the lowest layer of the Dark Abyss – the 18th layer.

As for secrets related to the Demon God's Tomb, Lin Ming hadn't been able to find out much.

In these past two months Lin Ming had quietly hunted down over a hundred abyssals. From starting with Holy Lord level abyssals, then World King level abyssals, he then started on Great World King level abyssals.

After killing these abyssals Lin Ming would swallow up their strength. As the days passed, he became increasingly proficient in the Swallowing Laws and the energy wheel formed from the power of divinity and demons within his body continued to expand.

Currently, the power of divinity and demons had turned into the foundational energy of Lin Ming's cultivation methods. If he strengthened his power of divinity and demons, it would help him make breakthroughs in his cultivation.

Originally, Lin Ming should have reached the peak of the middle Empyrean realm in 5000 years. But now he was taking great steps towards shattering the wall of the upper Empyrean realm. If he wanted to truly cross this bridge, he would still need a massive amount of energy.

And to use the Swallowing Laws to absorb the strength of abyssals was undoubtedly the best shortcut.

Lin Ming recalled the information he had silently collected about Empyrean level abyssals in these past days. This information seemed common and unremarkable, but it helped Lin Ming avoid crucial mistakes. Otherwise, if he were to bump into a middle True Divinity abyssal then he would be in danger.

According to the information he had, there were a total of five Empyrean level abyssals in Black Sand City.

Even within the Dark Abyss, Empyrean level abyssals couldn’t be found everywhere. They were generally Elders of large influences with prominent statuses. They often lived in important locations of their large influences and were surrounded by solemn guards and layers of traps.

If an Empyrean level abyssal was killed, it would naturally cause a stir in the surrounding region.

Lin Ming didn’t want to prematurely expose himself. He planned to quietly cut down an Empyrean level abyssal, and this Black Sand City that was far from Demon Snake City was the best choice. If he recklessly slaughtered in Black Sand City then it was unlikely he would alarm the bashe serpent. The bashe serpent was the master of Demon Snake City and mostly wouldn’t bother with matters related to the Demon Association.

The city lord of Black Sand City was an Elder of the Demon Association. If his strength was judged by human standards then he would be somewhere between an Empyrean and True Divinity. This also made him the strongest powerhouse in Black Sand City.

Moreover, there was also a peak Empyrean and two middle Empyrean abyssals in Black Sand City. Lin Ming was very much looking forwards to killing these abyssals and swallowing their strength to see how much they could benefit him.

Lin Ming waited for night to fall. The night with its howling black winds was the best time to murder others and destroy their corpses.

Lin Ming waited for another two hours. Then, his thoughts stirred. A thousand miles away, he suddenly saw infernal energy shoot into the skies.

He squinted his eyes. At the end of the black desert, faint sparks of rainbow-hued light shot into the heavens; it was clear that some people were fighting there.

“Mm?”

Lin Ming muttered to himself. He extended his sense in a straight line, probing outwards. With his current sense he could easily investigate something that was occurring a thousand miles away.

And what he saw left him startled. These were clearly ancient race martial artists battling against a group of abyssal demons.

And these ancient race martial artists all had a yellow square scarf tied to their arms. The scarves were embroidered with a hexagonal ice flower pattern.

These ancient race martial artists didn’t have poor cultivation methods and combat skills. Moreover, they worked in tandem to utilize battle formations. It was clear from a glance that these were ancient race clansmen with a high degree of intelligence and not ‘prey’ that was bred to be released into the wild.

“Rebel army!?”

Lin Ming was surprised. The yellow square scarfs on their hands reminded him of the recent slave uprisings that had enveloped the 11th through 14th layers of the Dark Abyss.

This was a revolt on a vast scale. Although the bashe serpent turned a blind eye to them and the Demon Association continued with their business as always, the truth was that in these past years this revolt had killed many abyssals and rescued a tremendous number of slaves.

These slaves joined the rebel army and the cycle continued.

Because the rebel army always tied yellow scarves around their arms, the abyssals termed them the yellow scarf bandits.

The truth was that even in Lin Ming’s eyes, this ancient race rebel army wouldn’t be able to cause any great waves. Sooner or later they would be wiped out by the abyssals; the difference in strength was just too great.

However, as Lin Ming witnessed the different combat methods and styles used by the rebel army, and as he saw their battle formations, he suddenly had a strange feeling in his mind.

Although he wasn't too optimistic about this uprising, he couldn't help but admit that this rebel army wasn't as weak as he thought they were. At the very least; they wouldn't collapse upon a single strike. Perhaps they had unearthed some ancient ruins, otherwise they shouldn't have possessed cultivation methods of this level.

As Lin Ming was thinking this, he saw several lights rise up from Black Sand City and rapidly fly towards the location where battle had broken out.

It was clear that these were reinforcements from Black Sand City. The battlefield was so close to Black Sand City that it would be strange if there was no reaction instead. Once the reinforcements joined the battle, then in a normal situation the rebel army forces would be eliminated in a mere half incense stick of time.

Lin Ming naturally wouldn't see these people in danger and stand idly by. His figure flickered and he rapidly flew towards the battlefield.

....

A thousand miles away, the ancient race rebel army had fallen into a bitter battle. They were originally an outstanding squad of the rebel army, and as they were carrying out a secret mission they were discovered by troops of the Demon Association.

A battle was inevitable. The rebel army squad had occupied the advantage to begin with, but the more enemy reinforcements arrived, the weaker they became.

“Ahh!”

An ancient race green-clothed girl cried out in pain. She was struck flying backwards. The sword in her hand was knocked away, making several turns in the air before stabbing into a rock.

Letting go of one’s weapon in this environment was monumentally dangerous. Moreover, with the severe wound she suffered just then, the green-clothed girl had lost nearly all her combat strength.

“Thousand Shade!”

The eyes of several other youths turned blood red with anger and worry. However, they didn’t even have time to take care of themselves, much less save someone else.

The green-clothed girl cried out in pain once more. Her complexion paled and she shivered all over. Her arm that had held a sword suddenly started to age at a speed visible to the eyes. It withered away as the blood vitality was rapidly drained from it.

This feeling was like the decaying of a mortal body over a thousand years being compressed into several breaths instead; it was grisly and terrifying!

“Cut it off!”

A middle-aged man shouted, burning with worry. This young girl called Thousand Shade was one of the extremely talented individuals in the rebel army. She had great future potential and her bloodline was also outstanding. If anything happened to her, it would be a great loss to the rebel army.

The green-clothed girl grit her teeth. She grabbed another sword and chopped down. The arm that was wrapped in a scarf tumbled away. Although she seemed young and delicate, the truth was that she was an incomparably decisive and resolute person. Her fresh blood had already dyed the hexagonal flower-patterned scarf red!

The decaying stopped. This scene even surprised the surrounding abyssal demons. Not to mention a woman, even if a brave warrior were to chop off their arm they would furrow their eyebrows. But, this girl called Thousand Shade didn’t even hesitate and had done so cleanly and neatly.

“Hehe, you’re ruthless indeed, but too bad for you that still won’t change your ending. All of you are done for! You might as well be good little slaves and let us capture you and plant slave seals in you. Perhaps some of you might be able to be sold for a high price, hahaha!”

An abyssal cackled. And at this time, the sound of sonic booms broke through the air behind him. This was the sound of powerhouses flying, the sound of reinforcement troops from Black Sand City!

The abyssal sneered, “Reinforcements have arrived. You’re dead now!”

MW Chapter 2090

Chapter 2090 – Unexpected Discovery

…

…

…

The area where the ancient race rebel army was fighting with the abyssal demons was a mere 700-800 miles from Black Sand City. To a high level abyssal, space teleportation wasn't even needed to rapidly catch up in a short period of time.

And it was impossible for Black Sand City to not notice the loud ruckus created by the battle between the ancient race rebel army and the abyssal troops. Thus, the ancient race rebel army was already doomed from the start. If they couldn't disentangle themselves from these abyssals as soon as possible then all they could do was sit around and wait for them to kill them.

At this time, the abyssal reinforcements had already arrived. To the rebel army, this was the same as the arrival of hell!

“Aoo!”

The abyssal leading the reinforcements roared out loud. He was a lizard demon, possessing the head of a lizard and the wings of a bat that jutted out from his back. He came to a steady stop in the air.

Seeing this lizard demon, the middle-aged man in the rebel army squad paled. “Black Sand City Royal Guard Force’s army major!”

This lizard demon was the commander of Black Sand City’s city guard. He had brought his personal guard here and they were all elites amongst elites.

This meant that Black Sand City’s Demon Association Branch Division had finally attached some level of importance to the ancient race uprising. But, this was also the same as announcing the death penalty to the rebel army.

All of the surviving rebels immediately felt despair grow in their hearts. “My comrades, let us burn our blood essence together! Even if we must die here we will still bite off a chunk of their flesh!”

The middle-aged man leading the rebel army squad clenched his jaws as he spoke. The squad would rather die in battle than fall into the hands of the Demon Association; that would be a fate worse than death.

“Hehehe! Your intelligence network is quite good, you even recognize me! Capture them, capture them alive!” The lizard demon issued an order. The minions behind him grasped tridents and flew forwards. As for the rebels, they had already planned to burn their blood essence. Even the severely wounded Thousand Shade who had cut off her own arm had grabbed tightly onto her wound, her wan face filled with decisiveness.

And the moment that they strengthened their determination to die here, a terrifying pressure suddenly descended upon them.

This pressure arrived too suddenly, so sudden that they didn’t even have time to figure out what happened. All they saw was a light black fog proliferate in all directions, covering all. Every abyssal demon that was covered in this fog was completely frozen, unable to move at all.

They appeared to be experiencing agonizing pain. Their faces were twisted in suffering and their expressions were that of panic and fear, like the most terrifying thing in the world was occurring to them. Even so, none of them were able to make even the tiniest sound.

Then, with loud popping sounds, all of the abyssals suddenly exploded into bloody fog beneath this pressure!

“This is!?”

The rebel army squad was utterly shocked. They simply didn’t know what happened nor did they see anyone appear. All they saw was these abyssal demons dying an excruciatingly painful and bewildering death.

“This is a force field!”

The middle-aged head rebel shouted. This black fog was likely the force field of some powerhouse. However, to suppress and kill so many abyssals with a force field, including even the Black Sand City Royal Guard Force’s army major, this was simply far too terrifying a power.

“Is it Big Boss?” A youth asked. To the ancient race rebel army, their Big Boss was their god, an omnipotent being capable of anything.

“No! I’ve seen Big Boss’s force field before and it is completely different from this.” The middle-aged man quickly said with a sound transmission. The person who used this force field hadn’t appeared in front of them and it seemed as if they had no intentions of coming into contact either.

And at this time, a vortex suddenly appeared in the air. All of the blood fog from the abyssals was lifted into the air by this vortex and the demon power contained within it was separated, all of it absorbed into the vortex without a trace left behind.

Then, flames ignited beneath the vortex. The abyssal flesh and blood that had lost its essence was charred into ashes by these flames, leaving behind only spatial rings that were also sucked into the black vortex.

This vortex was naturally Lin Ming's Laws of Swallowing. To Lin Ming, the treasures within these spatial rings were highly valuable. For instance, demon crystals that were the currency of the Dark Abyss could be used in numerous places.

After absorbing this strength Lin Ming felt his own powers increasingly by a tiny bit. But, there was still a vast distance to go until he truly stepped into the upper Empyrean realm.

In order to complete this final step, he would need to kill and eat up a True Divinity level abyssal.

Seeing all of these things occur in the air, the ancient race rebels were stunned silly. Just who was this person? Not only had this person casually killed all these abyssals but they had also saved them. This behavior seemed like something that only ancient race martial artists would do. But, besides their Big Boss and the small number of elites who inherited the lineages of ancient ruins, just who else could possess such ability?

The several ancient race rebels glanced at each other in dismay, unsure of what to say. This mysterious person wasn't any of the ancient race powerhouses they were aware of.

At this time, a beam of light shot out towards the middle-aged rebel's hands.

The middle-aged man's heart tightened for a moment, but, he could immediately tell that this was not an energy attack but an object wrapped in energy.

The middle-aged man looked down and saw a pill bottle in his hand. Opening the cap, several pills tumbled out that emitted a rich medicinal fragrance. For a time, the middle-aged man was stunned.

These pills were obviously refined using rare heavenly materials. Although he didn't know what their exact effects were, just from smelling them the middle-aged man could feel his injured blood vitality slowly stirring. These were clearly precious recovery pills.

Just the smell was so effective. If they ate them, even someone near death would rise up from the ground.

The style of these pills absolutely wasn't that of the abyssals. Abyssals wouldn't use such elegant jade bottles nor would they refine such crystal clear pills.

The middle-aged man immediately understood that these pills were passed down to his squad to help heal the several most heavily injured people. He said, "Thank you, Senior," and then threw one pill towards Thousand Shade. "Hurry and eat this."

Thousand Shade was stunned. Then, from the air, a gravelly voice filled with indifference echoed out. This voice seemed to come from all directions, making it impossible to fathom just where the source was.

“Your severed arm hasn’t completely decayed. Grind one of the pills, smear it on the wounds and reattach it. Eat another pill and you shall recover!”

Hearing this voice, Thousand Shade was at a loss for words. She never imagined that the arm she chopped off and which also had all its blood vitality sucked out by an abyssal would actually still have a chance of being restored.

She had survived disaster and even her arm could be recovered. She was immediately overjoyed by this turn of events. However, the master of this indifferent voice seemed to have no intentions of appearing.

“Thank you Senior for this great graciousness!”

Thousand Smile bit her lips as she spoke.

“All of you had best leave. Black Sand City will soon find out what occurred here, and after a little while there will be more people arriving. At that time, they will be even stronger abyssals.”

Lin Ming passed down these final words and then intended to leave. He had already shown all the benevolence that he could. It was impossible for him to lead these rebels away. Currently, he still had the appearance of an abyssal and if he were to appear it would inevitably cause a misunderstanding. As for restoring his original appearance to see him, this was too troublesome.

However, the middle-aged rebel didn't immediately issue an order to depart. His eyes turned as all sorts of thoughts crossed his mind. Then, he seemed to make a final decision as he spoke into the void, "Could Senior show yourself to us?"

Lin Ming faintly frowned. His attitude had been made clear and he had said all he needed to say; he didn't want to waste time speaking nonsense.

But, the middle-aged man didn't give up. He continued to say, "I know that Senior doesn't wish publicly reveal your appearance, but this junior truly has something important to say. I dare ask Senior to appear for a talk..."

The middle-aged man's words caused Lin Ming's thoughts to stir. His step slowed for a moment.

Then, the middle-aged man seemed compelled to say something else. In a very low voice he said, "It concerns secrets of the Demon God's Tomb!"

The middle-aged man wasn't able to determine where Lin Ming was and only sent out a general sound transmission. But, he believed that with this mysterious person's cultivation they could definitely catch it.

This decision to win Lin Ming had been well thought out. Although he didn't know exactly who Lin Ming was, he could tell from Lin Ming's fighting methods and the pills he took out that it was likely he was part of the ancient races.

If this mysterious person was an abyssal then their pills would be blood pills filled with a thick demonic energy. These pills were refined from the flesh and blood of valuable precious beasts and the refining techniques were extremely different.

The middle-aged man even believed that within the entire Dark Abyss, there might not be anyone capable of refining these high quality recovery pills in his hands. This caused the middle-aged man to believe that this mysterious person must have some extraordinary status. If he could win over this mysterious person and this mysterious person truly did empathize with their rebel army then they would be greatly helpful to their future plans.

And indeed, when the middle-aged man spoke the words 'secrets of the Demon God's Tomb', the mysterious person didn't leave. This left the middle-aged man overjoyed.

"You… know of the Demon God's Tomb?"

Lin Ming was surprised. Originally, he thought that with the current state of the ancient races, it wouldn't be an exaggeration to call the current slave resistance a ragtag team of nobodies. If so, then it would have been impossible for them to know anything concerning this level of matter. But he was wrong once again.

Demon God's Tomb… the black book that Lin Ming obtained from Xishen's hands was one of the ceremonial rites books of the Demon God's Tomb. Thus, Lin Ming had a great interest in the Demon God's Tomb.

Lin Ming pondered for a moment. He reached out a hand and the black Primordius Heavenly Palace flew out from his body, spinning and growing.

"Come in! This is not a place for us to be speaking of such matters."

The middle-aged rebel followed Lin Ming's words without hesitation. With a wave of his hand he led the ancient race rebels into Primordius Heavenly Palace. Their lives had been saved by Lin Ming, so what else was there to fear?

As for Lin Ming saving them, one possibility was that this was an act played out by a high level abyssal in order to infiltrate the ranks of their rebel army. But, they didn't worry about this as they naturally had methods to confirm this mysterious person's status.

After the rebel army martial artists entered Primordius Heavenly Palace, it rapidly escaped into the void, flying deep into the black desert…

MW Chapter 2091

Chapter 2091 – The Mysterious Big Boss

…

…

…

The black desert of the Dark Abyss's 12th layer was vast and boundless. Deep in the desert were great tracts of barren land. At this time, beneath the sand dunes, Lin Ming was looking at several dozen ancient race rebels who had clearly overdrawn their blood essence, and was waiting for them to speak.

Lin Ming had already unraveled his disguise as an abyssal demon and had taken the appearance of an ordinary man. This appearance would be much easier for the ancient race martial artists to accept.

"What is the secret of the Demon God's Tomb?"

Lin Ming asked with a sound transmission. At this time, all the rebels looked at Lin Ming with awe. Some of them had eyes filled with curiosity; it was hard to imagine that this common-seeming man would possess such terrifying strength.

“Well about this, the truth is that I don’t understand the contents too clearly. For the specifics, only the Big Boss will know…”

The middle-aged man looked at Lin Ming. He wasn’t able to determine Lin Ming’s identity nor age; it seemed that this person had come from nowhere.

Moreover, this person’s bloodline seemed like that of the ancient races, but it was also different from the ancient races’.

Could there really be such a character in the Dark Abyss?

“Big Boss?”

Lin Ming thought for a moment.

The truth was that deep in Lin Ming’s heart, he was also somewhat curious about who this mysterious Big Boss character could be, for them to organize a massive slave uprising and even struggle against the Demon Association for so many years.

“Senior, if you wish to see our Big Boss then I can recommend you. But before that, I will have to take great courage and ask to confirm Senior’s status...

As the middle-aged man spoke, he took out an inch-long needle. This needle seemed to be made from jade and was quite delicate.

“Senior should know that certain species of abyssals have appearance changing techniques. With Senior’s strength, then if you really did change your appearance and are playing tricks with us then it would naturally be impossible for us to see through it. Thus, I must ask Senior to place one drop of blood on this needle to confirm your status...”

As the middle-aged man spoke, the rebel martial artists all raised their guards. One of the main reasons that the rebel army was able to continue on for such a long time was because their Big Boss had invented a method that was able to recognize the blood of abyssals.

This jade needle had an array formation that was personally created by the Big Boss. If it was stained with an abyssal’s blood then it would turn pure black. But, if it touched the blood of the ancient races then it would turn into a rainbow of colors. And if it was an ancient race clansmen that had an abyssal slave seal planted within their body, then even though there would be a foundation of rainbow-hued colors, it would produce the image of a slave seal.

If this mysterious person before them was really an abyssal in disguise then all of them would undoubtedly die here. Even so, they couldn’t allow such a dangerous character to enter the secret resistance headquarters. If that occurred it would be total annihilation of the resistance.

Lin Ming fell silent. Then, he made a sharp cut on his finger and dripped out a drop of blood.

The jade needle slowly absorbed the blood. Then, color began to shine within the transparent jade needle, causing all the ancient race rebels to become anxious.

The middle-aged man held the jade needle in his hands, waiting for the result. He could feel that Lin Ming wasn't exactly like the ancient races, yet he also wasn't able to determine what his identity was.

And at this time, the jade needle suddenly lit up with bright colors. The light became increasingly brilliant, flashing with all sorts of gorgeous colors as if a rainbow was soaring through it.

For a common ancient race martial artist, having the jade needle turn a few different hues of colors was already good, let alone such a dazzling divine light.

In particular, those slaves that had been screened throughout the years by the abyssals; for them, it would be difficult for their blood to have the jade needle change colors.

This meant that the mysterious man before them possessed an unimaginable ancient race bloodline. He was absolutely a peak existence amongst the ancient races!

“Are we finished?”

Lin Ming waggled his finger and the drop of blood flew back from the jade needle as if it had a mind of its own and sank into his body once more.

When Lin Ming had undergone the jade needle examination, he had activated his Asura blood.

The Asura Road Master was the highest existence of the primal god race of 10 billion years past. His ancient bloodline was naturally extraordinary. Just a tiny hint could cause the jade needle to bloom with divine light.

“Yes! Of course!”

The middle-aged man said with vivid excitement. As he looked at Lin Ming, his eyes contained not just awe but worship.

The eyes of the other ancient race rebels were similar to the middle-aged man’s. In particular, the eyes of several young girls couldn’t become any brighter.

The ancient races were a people that greatly valued their bloodline. This was because in the Dark Abyss, their clansmen were at the mercy of the abyssals and their bloodline worsened with time.

They wanted to restore the endless glory of their past, but first they had to maintain the purity of their bloodline. So ancient race martial artists with top bloodlines were particularly rare.

Thus, Lin Ming was able to win their respect not just because of his strength but also his bloodline.

“Then, let’s go!”

Lin Ming summoned Primordius Heavenly Palace once more. The ancient race martial artists entered the Heavenly Palace and flew straight towards the rebel army headquarters.

With the guidance of the middle-aged man, Primordius Heavenly Palace shifted through the void several times before finally arriving above a vast sea. This sea was called the Void Sea, and it passed through the boundaries of the 12th layer and into the boundless void. The ends of the sea were covered in chaotic space and time and it was impossible to find where they were.

Primordius Heavenly Palace sank into the sea, racing forwards a hundred miles before entering a hidden underwater space crack.

After entering the space crack, the world widened before them. This was an independent world whose entrance was hidden in the sea. The world was similar to the Ancient Phoenix Clan's Phoenix Cry Palace in the past, but the scale of it was far, far larger.

Besides the middle-aged man, the other martial artists were excited to arrive here. To the ancient race rebels this independent world was their ultimate Holy Land.

"Senior, please follow me. I have already informed the Big Boss about Senior, and Big Boss is awaiting your presence."

"Mm..."

Lin Ming nodded and flew outside Primordius Heavenly Palace. As he swept his eyes over this independent world he was secretly surprised by what he saw. This world had all sorts of ancient and profound array formations scattered throughout. With these concealing array formations, the entrance to this world had become extremely well hidden. In fact, it was even better than the concealing array formations that humanity had arranged in the wild universe in the past to hide from the saints.

Lin Ming believed that not even characters like Emperor Shakya possessed such skill.

He became even more curious as to who this Big Boss was.

In truth, the moment that Lin Ming stepped out of Primordius Heavenly Palace, he had already faintly felt the aura of another powerhouse in this world. This aura was simply far too conspicuous when placed amongst the auras of the other martial artists. It was only due to courtesy that Lin Ming didn’t release his sense to probe this other party.

Lin Ming put away Primordius Heavenly Palace. He planned to follow the middle-aged man to see who this mysterious person was.

But suddenly, in a finely crafted jade palace located high above this world, a divine light lit up.

The middle-aged man beside Lin Ming was clearly stunned.

And Lin Ming was also stunned. At first he was only a little dazed, but as time passed, the surprise and astonishment on his face grew.

He stared blankly on as a peerless woman in icy blue clothes flew towards him, bathed in divine light.

This woman had an outstanding figure and her thick black hair fluttered behind her. Her skin was as white as snow and seemed to sparkle with frost. From head to toe she exuded a holy and inviolable aura, as if she were an ice lotus blooming atop a snow-capped mountain.

She stepped through space, her dress waving behind her. With every step, ripples of space would spread out beneath her toes. Like this she arrived in front of Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was frozen where he stood. His eyes stared unblinkingly at this woman.

He had seen countless peerless women in his life and naturally wouldn't lose his composure just because of a woman's holy aura.

The reason he was so shocked was because he never thought that he would find her here… Mo Eversnow!

A single farewell and thousands of years passed. Mo Eversnow was already completely different from her former days. Her aura and majesty had evolved, like an ice phoenix that underwent nirvana, reborn into a greater being. Even Lin Ming didn't recognize her initially.

And the change in Mo Eversnow's strength was even greater. This left Lin Ming incredibly dumbfounded.

Lin Ming looked at Mo Eversnow and Mo Eversnow looked at Lin Ming. The astonishment on Lin Ming's face fell into her eyes.

The truth was that when Lin Ming changed his appearance he also restrained his aura. In this state, even Mo Eversnow wouldn't be able to recognize him.

But, she recognized Primordius Heavenly Palace.

As soon as Lin Ming appeared in this independent world she had seen Primordius Heavenly Palace. Because of that, she was unable to remain calm and directly flew out from her Divine Palace.

And at this time, the middle-aged man fell onto his knees in worship in the void. He said with dry lips, "Subordinate sees Big Boss!"

Seeing Mo Eversnow, the middle-aged man was extremely respectful. Perhaps using the word respect wasn't enough to describe what he felt. As he looked at Mo Eversnow, there was reverence and devotion in his eyes, like a faithful follower seeing their goddess in person.

The middle-aged man never thought that Mo Eversnow would appear so suddenly to personally greet this mysterious person. This had gone beyond his expectations. He originally thought that with Mo Eversnow's status, bringing Lin Ming to her was the naturally polite thing to do.

Could this mysterious person’s status really be so special?

As the middle-aged man knelt in the void, it was only then that the other ancient race rebels responded. This was the first time they had ever seen the Big Boss and they didn’t know what she looked like. And now that they knew this peerless woman before them was their Big Boss, all of them were clearly excited. They fell to their knees, all of them with the same pious expressions on their faces.

And at this time, Lin Ming already didn’t know what expression to make.

Big Boss…

So Mo Eversnow was the Big Boss of the ancient race resistance…

To think that this world actually had such a marvelous coincidence.

Originally, when he reunited with Xiao Moxian, Xiao Moxian had told him that Mo Eversnow had long since left the wild universe. But he never imagined he would see her here in the Dark Abyss. Not only that, but her strength had undergone a massive change. She must have experienced some great fortuitous encounter.

MW Chapter 2092

Chapter 2092 – To You, 7000 Years

…

…

…

“Lin Ming! Is it you!?”

Mo Eversnow spoke with a sound transmission, her voice shivering with excitement. 7000 years ago after Mo Eversnow and Lin Ming separated, she had thought that Lin Ming had died. Then, when humanity entered the wild universe, Mo Eversnow actually left by herself to seek out her own lucky chances.

She never thought that when her hopes of Lin Ming’s survival neared despair, she would actually reunite with Him in the Dark Abyss under such circumstances.

Because of Lin Ming's appearance changing technique it was hard for her to determine his true identity. The reason she asked this question came from purely her own intuition and also because of Primordius Heavenly Palace.

"Senior-apprentice Sister, it is me."

Lin Ming replied, his emotions wildly surging.

As he replied, he had already restored his original voice. Then Mo Eversnow's heart quaked and tears began to flash in the corners of her eyes.

And at this time, beside Lin Ming, the other rebel army squad members could see that the relationship between Lin Ming and their Big Boss was definitely not ordinary.

Could they be siblings?

Or perhaps… lovers?

The middle-aged man felt it a bit awkward for their group to be poking their way into this scene but at the same time he didn't know how to excuse himself. He waited until Mo Eversnow waved her hand and said, "You may withdraw."

Like this, they were pardoned and began to leave.

“You have all done a great merit this time. After a while go to Benevolence Pavilion and receive your rewards. Each person is granted 1000 contribution points.” Mo Eversnow casually said. As the rebel army squad members heard this they were stunned at first and then immediately overjoyed.

They quickly showed their thanks for this graciousness and then flew towards a towering building. This was the Benevolence Pavilion that Mo Eversnow spoke of.

Lin Ming watched this from the side. It was only a small matter, but he could tell from the squad members’ heartfelt joy that these 1000 contribution points were something they valued a great deal. This also meant that the rebel army had taken these ‘contribution points’ as the foundation for a complete reward system.

For Mo Eversnow to establish such a system and spread it out, and even have everyone happily agree to it and maintain it, one could see that she was extremely intelligent in her methods.

The truth was that setting up a complete reward and punishment system wasn’t difficult, nor establishing a secret headquarters or even managing the resistance and obtaining their support. But, to do everything to perfection in the most minute detail, this wasn’t something that the average person could accomplish. This required someone with great skill in organizing and leadership. Not just that, but this required formidable strength as the foundation. There was only one word to describe such a person – the Big Boss!

In the past within the Divine Realm, Mo Eversnow had been the Saintess of the Verdant Feather Holy Lands. Although she lost to Tian Mingzi in battle, this was because he was far too sly and cunning. Moreover, whether it was in age or cultivation, Tian Mingzi had far outstripped Mo Eversnow.

Now Mo Eversnow had fused with the body of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing and obtained a new life. Her strength had rapidly risen, and imperceptibly she had established a large influence in the Dark Abyss that far surpassed the Verdant Feather Holy Lands of the past.

Lin Ming remembered the yellow scarves that the rebels wore on their arms. These yellow scarves were embroidered with a six petal flower, and now he realized that this was in truth the symbol of a snowflake, an image that represented the ‘snow’ in Mo Eversnow’s name.

“Lin Ming, let us speak more in my Divine Palace!”

Mo Eversnow said. She grabbed hold of Lin Ming’s hand and the two of them flickered, instantly crossing through the horizon and arriving in a Divine Palace of white jade.

As Lin Ming entered this Divine Palace he was able to feel how amazing it was; it was even beyond Primordius Heavenly Palace. And it had to be known that after the Ancient Elysium Seal was fused into Primordius Heavenly Palace, its grade had become infinitely close to a True Divinity spirit treasure.

A True Divinity level spirit treasure palace was a rare sight.

“This Divine Palace…”

Lin Ming couldn’t help but ask in wonder.

“It’s something I obtained from the Primeval Realm Ruins. In these past years I explored the ancient world as well as many secrets of the Soul World.”

Mo Eversnow sighed as she spoke. In these past 7000 years, she had experienced far, far too many things.

“Senior-apprentice Sister, how could your strength have advanced so rapidly?” Lin Ming felt that Mo Eversnow had a peak Empyrean cultivation, and she wasn’t even a common peak Empyrean.

In truth, from a peak Empyrean to a True Divinity, there was a large expanse that divided them. And even amongst peak Empyreans there could be a great disparity in strength. If one had to further divide these boundaries then one could describe the most outstanding peak Empyreans as invincible amongst the Empyrean realm or even a half-step True Divinity.

Lin Ming felt that the present Mo Eversnow was in such a situation. Her current strength far outstripped the vast majority of peak Empyreans.

Mo Eversnow said, “It is because of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing’s bloodline that I was able to take some shortcuts in my cultivation. In the past when Heavenly Empress Xuanqing died, she was already a peak Empyrean. Moreover, before Empyrean Primordius escaped into the Dark Abyss, he left a considerable amount of his strength and bloodline with her.

“Several thousand years ago when I entered the Primeval Realm Ruins, I sought out the land of inheritance for an ancient peerless God King. At the time, many other martial artists entered, and after a period of slaughter I was able to obtain the greatest lucky chance there. The reason I was able to obtain this lucky chance was because of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing’s primal god bloodline. The primal god bloodline was able to resonate with the blood contract left behind by that ancient God King. Otherwise I wouldn’t necessarily be able to stand here today. At that time when I joined in the treasure hunt, my strength was only in the middle to upper echelons of those that entered.”

Mo Eversnow casually spoke these words but Lin Ming knew that in such lucky chance mystic realms, even with the advantage of her primal god bloodline she must have passed through countless dangers. In order to survive and be the ultimate final winner of a mystic realm, one needed strength, intelligence, and the courage to use both!

Mo Eversnow continued to say, “After obtaining the lucky chance from that land of inheritance I spent a full several thousand years in seclusion. Within that land was a space and time enchantment where the flow of time inside was five times faster than outside. Inside 20,000 years was outside four thousand years. Moreover, the Laws inside weren’t twisted so I could cultivate within. I used this time to completely fuse together my mortal body and soul, first slowly restoring myself to the peak strength that Heavenly Empress Xuanqing once possessed. Then, I used the remaining 20,000 years to finish studying the various array formations and cultivation method inheritances, allowing my strength to go further. Once I left seclusion, my strength had already surpassed Heavenly Empress Xuanqing by a great deal.”

Originally, Heavenly Empress Xuanqing was the greatest talent that the primal god race had seen for hundreds of millions of years. When she was at her peak strength, she wasn’t necessarily any weaker than the current Emperor Shakya.

As for Mo Eversnow, her background wasn’t poor either. While her soul slumbered in the Magic Cube for over 50,000 years, during the slow process of recovery she was also infused with the aura of the Magic Cube. Although she didn’t reach the boundary of an Eternal Soul, her divine soul had many indescribably special characteristics that were out of the ordinary.

Afterwards, when she fused with Heavenly Empress Xuanqing’s mortal body, she underwent a nearly perfect fusion because of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing’s willingness. Mo Eversnow used 20,000 years and the lucky chances she obtained through desperately risking her life to restore and even surpass Heavenly Empress Xuanqing’s peak strength. This was also a reasonable matter.

“What happened afterwards?” Lin Ming asked.

“After I gained enough strength I passed through the Eternal Wall and entered the Dark Abyss. My original plan was to only explore the secrets of the abyssals; I didn’t plan to truly come down here. After all, my mortal body is that of the primal god race and it is far too glaring in the abyss. Afterwards, I discovered that numerous ancient race clansmen lived in the Dark Abyss. If I messed within them I wouldn't arouse any interest. With the ancient races being constantly enslaved over the years by the abyssals, they had lost their way and were on the road to destruction. I didn't want to see this occur because the primal god race has shown me great grace!"

The ancient God King's inheritance that Mo Eversnow found, and even Heavenly Empress Xuanqing herself, both came from the primal god race, the strongest of the ancient races. The primal god race had shown great graciousness to Mo Eversnow, and now with the ancient races facing such a fate, how could Mo Eversnow just stand idly by?

Mo Eversnow said, "I decided to do something about it. I used several hundred years of time to slowly establish my net of influence in the Dark Abyss and then form the Ancient God Religion. This religion in actuality worships the glory of the ancient races from 10 billion years past. The gods of the Ancient God Religion include the Asura Road Master and the other powerhouses of the primal god race. After my efforts came to fruition, I launched the Ancient God Uprising.

"I created a Holy Land and Divine Kingdom. The array formations here were all arranged by me, and these array formations originated from the inheritances that I obtained. I set up a system of punishments and rewards, using the numerous treasures and cultivation methods I obtained from the land of inheritance as the rewards. I tried my best to inspire my subordinates to try their best to obtain merits, and at the same time I used all methods at my disposal to prevent abyssal spies from infiltrating our ranks. The scale of the Ancient God Uprising has grown larger and larger, and the Demon Association can no longer turn a blind eye to us. Rather, they have even started to mobilize Elders to encircle us. I suspect that the Demon Association has used clues to slowly grasp information about me, and now with the Demon Association sending a surge of troops to Black Sand City, I suspect that soon there will even be a True Divinity level Elder that appears..."

As Mo Eversnow finished speaking, Lin Ming was also worried. The Demon Association was a colossal force, and the high level abyssals possessed unfathomable strength. If Mo Eversnow's influence were to be compared with them, there simply wasn't anything to say.

However, for Mo Eversnow to accomplish all of this was already worthy of praise. To use glory and belief to stir up the hearts of the ancient race martial artists and then give them a boost with rewards. Like this, how could the ancient race clansmen not risk everything to fight for their futures?

Mo Eversnow had also invested all of her possessions into this Ancient God Uprising in order to repay the primal god race for their graciousness as well as to perform a good deed for the entire 33 Heavens.

"True Divinity level Elder..."

Lin Ming rubbed his chin. With his current strength, it wouldn't be too difficult to defeat a lower True Divinity. But, to kill one wasn't easy.

But luckily for them, they still had time. Mo Eversnow had hidden her depths and the Demon Association had seriously underestimated the strength of the resistance.

"That's right, Senior-apprentice Sister, where has Fishy gone? When I spoke with Xian'er, she said that you brought Fishy with you."

In the past when Lin Ming met Fishy at Immemorial Imperial City, he had bought her from the slave auction and also placed her in the Magic Cube. She spent most of her time together with Mo Eversnow and the two of them shared deep sentiments with each other. This was also the reason that Mo Eversnow brought Fishy away with her when she left.

However, upon mentioning Fishy, a dismal light actually crossed Mo Eversnow's eyes. With a bit of worry she said, "Fishy… she suddenly disappeared…"

MW Chapter 2093

Chapter 2093 – Abyssal Ritual

…

…

…

“She disappeared?”

Lin Ming was puzzled. How did Fishy suddenly go missing?

“Mm…” Mo Eversnow shook her head. “I have no idea where she went. When I passed through the Eternal Wall, she was still with me. But, the instant I was in the Eternal Wall, she seemed to be swept away by a spatial vortex and vanished. For all these years I’ve been looking for her but I haven’t found any news…”

Sorrow and guilt weighed down Mo Eversnow’s shoulders; she felt that she didn’t take good care of Fishy.

“Spatial vortex…” Lin Ming frowned. Fishy was an energy form and in truth she could attach herself to Mo Eversnow. But even in such a situation she was swept away by a turbulent space flow, and yet Mo Eversnow had remained fine. Something seemed unusual about this.

Just what had happened?

Seeing Mo Eversnow’s sad expression, Lin Ming comforted her. “Senior-apprentice Sister, you might not know this but Fishy is originally a life form produced from the Purple Card. If she was swept away by a spatial vortex then that might not necessarily mean something bad happened to her. It might even be a lucky chance, or perhaps she was even summoned by something…”

Lin Ming couldn’t think of a reason thus he could only remain optimistic.

Now, no one knew whether or not Fishy was in the abyss. And even if she was in the abyss, wanting to look for her was no different from looking for a needle in the sea. And in fact, if Fishy was taken away as she passed through the Eternal Wall, she might not have even entered the abyss…

“Purple Card…” Hearing Lin Ming mention the most mysterious of the three divine tools, a thoughtful light appeared in Mo Eversnow’s eyes. If it had been the Purple Card that summoned Fishy, that would be the best possible result. But, where was the Purple Card?

“Could it be in the Demon God’s Tomb?”

Mo Eversnow muttered to herself.

The Demon God’s Tomb located in the 18th layer of the Dark Abyss hid far too many secrets.

“What is in the Demon God’s Tomb? The middle-aged man I spoke to convinced me to come here with secrets of the Demon God’s Tomb. It’s lucky he had some sudden inspiration to mention this, otherwise we might have never met.”

Lin Ming attached great importance to the Demon God’s Tomb. It seemed to be the most mystical and most important location in the Dark Abyss.

“I don’t have a complete understanding of the Demon God’s Tomb. In my years in the Dark Abyss, I have killed some high level abyssals and obtained their abyssal records for myself. I studied the abyssal language by myself and was just barely able to understand it. It seems that the most powerful strength of the Dark Abyss is hidden within the Demon God’s Tomb. In truth, it is also the birthplace of totem level abyssals, the same place Famine, Deep, Eon, Evil, and those other super abyssals come from!”

“Birthplace of totem level abyssals?” Lin Ming asked, his mind shaking. This rank of abyssal was far too terrifying. At their peak strength they were existences only inferior to the Asura Road Master. There were no life forms in the 33 Heavens capable of contending with them!

The only thing worth celebrating was that 10 billion years ago, the Asura Road Master and Immortal Sovereign had joined forces to fight these totem level abyssals. Several of them had either died, been severely wounded, or gone missing.

But from what Mo Eversnow said, it seems that the Demon God's Tomb could give birth to new totem level abyssal demons. Lin Ming felt ill at ease. If this were true and new totem level abyssals were to appear, then the 33 Heavens were in danger.

"Do totem level abyssals have parents? How are they born?"

Concerning secrets of the Demon God's Tomb, Lin Ming was unable to obtain any from Famine's soul. Those memories had been sealed away to an incredible degree. If a super abyssal and another super abyssal joined together and produced an inherently super abyssal, then that would be horrifying.

"They aren't." Mo Eversnow said, shaking her head. "Totem level abyssals weren't born. Rather, when an abyssal with a top True Divinity level strength accepts the energy of the Demon God's Tomb to enter their bodies, they are promoted to a higher realm! After this promotion is completed, this new abyssal can slowly cultivate to activate the energy within their body.

“This entire process is called the ‘abyssal ritual’. But, the burden it places on the body is far too great. There is an extremely high demand on the life potential and strength of the abyssal who accepts this ritual. If their body cannot withstand this energy then they will directly turn to ashes. Moreover, there is a condition in order to begin the ‘abyssal ritual’, and that is that… one requires mysterious ritual rites, a token required to open the Demon God’s Tomb. This is also the key to activate the ‘abyssal ritual’.”

As Mo Eversnow spoke, a strange color flashed over Lin Ming’s face.

“What is it?”

“The ritual rites you spoke of is likely this, right…”

Lin Ming traced his spatial ring and a mysterious black book appeared in his hand. This black book was wrapped in grandmist energy and seemed as if it had a life of its own. It pulsated, as if a heart was sealed within. And this wisp of grandmist energy suppressed these life fluctuations. Originally, Lin Ming had to rely on the Ancient Elysium Seal to accomplish this, but after reaching a True Divinity level strength he was able to use his grandmist energy to do the same.

Seeing this black book, Mo Eversnow was immensely shocked. In some texts she had seen descriptions and records concerning the ritual rites. They were supposed to be written in a black book, and that black book was similar to the one Lin Ming was holding!

“This… where did you get it from?”

“I obtained it from the hands of a saint race genius, and where he found it from was…the Primeval Realm Ruins.” Lin Ming casually stated.

Mo Eversnow was stunned speechless upon hearing this. “So something like that happened… there are a total of six of these black ceremonial books, each one corresponding to one of the six great totem level abyssals. Only when a totem level abyssal dies will the corresponding black book appear.

“Every time the Demon God’s Tomb is opened and the black book is used, and if the abyssal that withstands the ritual successfully passes the test, then the black book will vanish and no longer appear.

“On the other hand, if the abyssal that undergoes the ritual fails then they will disintegrate to ashes and the black book will disappear into the void, appearing in some far off and unknown place. Sometimes, the black book will even leave the Dark Abyss. Countless abyssals desire to obtain a black ritual tome and many high level abyssals will use all methods they have to search for one. However, to look for one cannot even be described as searching for a needle in an ocean. Thus there is a saying that an abyssal who obtains a black ritual tome is favored by the Demon God and is also an inborn Demon Envoy. A Demon Envoy has an extremely high status in the Dark Abyss, because they have been favored by the Demon God and also because their chances of passing the test and becoming a totem level abyssal are the highest!

“I never imagined that this black ritual tome in your hand would actually have been obtained by a saint genius. What a cruel joke. The intelligent beings of the 33 Heavens have actually received the favor of the Demon God…”

Mo Eversnow shook her head, clearly showing contempt towards these abyssal legends.

But Lin Ming hesitated for a moment, as if he were mulling over something.

“Mm? What are you thinking about?” Mo Eversnow asked.

“I was just thinking on what to do with this ritual rites tome…” Lin Ming rubbed his chin, opening the cover of the black book.

The first sentence of the black book’s title page was: “The Tomb is the end, and also the beginning!”

Then, what was written was, “The one who possesses this book is the embodiment of Eon!”

‘Eon’ was the name of a totem level abyssal. No matter which abyssal managed to withstand the baptism of the abyssal ritual, that demon would become Eon. And when Eon died, only then would this black book appear.

“What to do with the black ritual rites tome…” Mo Eversnow furrowed her eyebrows, “It doesn’t seem as if it can be destroyed. The safest method would be to hide it in some place where no abyssal can find it so that the Dark Abyss will forever be missing a totem level abyssal. Or, we can come up with a plan to use the black book to set up a trap and draw in high level abyssals and then kill them. But, this is extremely risky… it would need to be planned in great detail… otherwise, it would be the same as giving treasures to the abyssals…”

For a time, all sorts of thoughts raced through Mo Eversnow’s mind.

However, Lin Ming shook his head, “Senior-apprentice Sister, what I was thinking of just now… was to do something else… and it might even sound a bit crazy…”

“Mm?” Mo Eversnow was startled.

“Senior-apprentice Sister, please look at this first.”

As Lin Ming spoke, he roared from the bottom of his lungs. His voice became bass and low, sandy and loud, as if peals of thunder echoed out in the skies.

His entire body emitted explosive crackling sounds as he grew taller and his muscles bulged out. Fierce plates of bone armor and scales appeared on the surface of his skin and bone spikes jutted out from his knees and elbows.

In just an incense stick of time, Lin Ming had become an abyssal demon!

Mo Eversnow was utterly bewildered.

“You… how did you do this!?”

She knew that Lin Ming’s body transformation technique had reached an extremely high boundary, and one could use the body transformation to change the structure of their body. But to turn into an abyssal like Lin Ming did now was far too exaggerated. Moreover, she could feel the aura of an abyssal exuding from Lin Ming’s body, and it was impossible to fake this sort of aura.

“I cannot even… recognize you!”

If she hadn’t stared blankly on as Lin Ming completed this transformation in front of her, then she wouldn’t have recognized that the abyssal in front of her was a disguised human. Moreover, it would have been impossible for her to recognize Lin Ming.

This camouflage was far too perfect.

“Well… this is a long story. Senior-apprentice Sister, I have the power of demon in my body. What I was thinking of just now was whether or not it would be possible for me to withstand the abyssal ritual.”

Lin Ming’s words left Mo Eversnow panic-stricken.

A human to withstand the abyssal ritual?

This was too crazy!

“This is too dangerous, you simply don’t know what will occur when you withstand the abyssal ritual. Even high level abyssals can die when they withstand the abyssal ritual. And with your current strength…”

In truth, Mo Eversnow didn’t know what the limits of Lin Ming’s strength were. But, she shouldn’t be wrong that Lin Ming’s cultivation was at the middle Empyrean realm. Even if she considered that Lin Ming possessed heaven-defying potential, he still couldn’t be more formidable than a True Divinity level abyssal, right?

“Also, even if you managed to survive the abyssal ritual, this abyssal ritual is originally prepared for abyssal demons. If you withstand the ritual… will you even still be you?”

Mo Eversnow spoke her worries. Lin Ming said, “My soul is protected by the Magic Cube so there shouldn’t be a problem. Moreover, I also plan to open the seventh Dao Palace – the Twofold Dao Palace. Like this, it will be much safer for me…”

MW Chapter 2094

Chapter 2094 – Twofold Dao Palace

…

…

…

"Twofold Dao Palace… you have already reached the Twofold Dao Palace?"

Upon hearing that Lin Ming planned to open the Twofold Dao Palace in the near future, Mo Eversnow was startled. She never imagined that Lin Ming's cultivation speed of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace would be so fast.

The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace – seven bright and two dark. As the seventh Dao Palace of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, the Twofold Dao Palace was the last of the seven bright Dao Palaces and also the most unusual Dao Palace.

Its unusualness was embodied in its position. Every Dao Palace had a specific position in a martial artist's body. For instance, the Daevic Eye Dao Palace was in between the eyebrows, the Martial Sovereign Dao Palace was in the four limbs, the Purple Temple Dao Palace was in the dantian, and so forth.

As for the Twofold Dao Palace, it had a particularly unique position; it was located outside a cultivator's body.

After the Twofold Dao Palace opened, it would condense into a star that appeared in the void not too far away from a martial artist. This star was named the Twofold Star.

Then, the Laws of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace would use this Twofold Star as the foundation, gathering infinite starlight and gradually taking the form of a person's phantom.

This phantom would be completely similar to a cultivator in appearance.

Thus, this was where the name of the Twofold Dao Palace came from.

As the last of the seven bright Dao Palaces, the Twofold Dao Palace gathered the most strength of the nine stars, several times that of the previous Dao Palaces. This also meant that the Twofold Dao Palace was the mightiest of the seven bright Dao Palaces.

When this starlight phantom first appears it would have 50% of the true body's combat strength. After that, as long as the cultivator poured in a part of his source blood vitality and source soul, concentrating it into this Twofold Star, then it would be able to have a flesh and blood avatar.

This avatar was named the Twofold Avatar.

The more blood essence the Twofold Avatar received, the more powerful it would become. In addition, with the starlight of the highest heavens that the Twofold Dao Palace gathered, it would eventually become an extremely powerful weapon.

Of course, because the cultivator branched out a part of their blood vitality, they would suffer some damage to their strength. But the degree to which they were injured would be far less than that increased strength brought about by the avatar.

In the martial world there were numerous techniques that allowed one to control avatars. For instance, the Asura Heavenly Dao had its own cultivation and fighting methods involving avatars.

However, in these cultivation methods, the avatar formed was usually refined.

For instance, the Asura Heavenly Dao’s three avatars. The Essence Spirit Embryo Stone, Soul Springs Divine Embryo, these were divine stones naturally bred through the world and didn’t originate from Lin Ming himself.

If Lin Ming were to lose his avatars, although it would decrease his strength, it wouldn't cause any true damage to his body. But, the Twofold Dao Palace was different.

The avatar of the Twofold Dao Palace was created by a martial artist taking out a portion of his blood essence and casting it in starlight of the high heavens, transforming it into true flesh and blood.

One couldn't afford to lose such an avatar.

Moreover, this avatar came from the same origins as the main body. It could separate from the main body and also fuse with the main body.

Once the avatar and main body merged together, it would cause one's strength to erupt, doubling over.

This sort of ability was not something that a refined avatar could possess.

In normal situations, after a martial artist opened the Twofold Dao Palace, the main body and avatar were mostly fused together. With this one could display the greatest strength.

It was only in cultivation that they would separate. Like this, absorbing heaven and earth origin energy would be that much faster.

Lin Ming fervently wished to open the Twofold Dao Palace now, because after he opened it he could use its special characteristics to separate the power of divinity and demons in his body.

Lin Ming's Twofold Dao Palace had a large difference from that of others who cultivated the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

Generally speaking, once a martial artist opened their Twofold Dao Palace and separated out their avatar, this avatar would be no different from their main body. If the avatar and main body were separated, this would make one's fighting techniques more flexible and their cultivation speed faster. If the avatar and main body were fused together, then this would be the same as superimposing their strength together.

But Lin Ming was different. He planned to use the Twofold Dao Palace as the foundation, and after condensing the starlight phantom he would then pour all of the demon power in his body into this avatar, turning his Twofold Avatar into a complete demon avatar!

As for his true self, he would leave behind the power of divinity and the corresponding bloodlines.

By doing this Lin Ming would have a more flexible identity in the future. He could fuse with his avatar whenever he wished and also separate whenever he needed to.

As for this abyssal Twofold Avatar, it would be able to recklessly use the Swallowing Laws to swallow the power of demons while his main body absorbed the power of the world, allowing his cultivation to rise faster and faster.

If so, then Lin Ming wouldn't need to worry that using such an evil and unorthodox cultivation method like the Swallowing Laws to rapidly increase his cultivation would make his foundation unsteady, nor would it cause a backlash.

After opening the Twofold Dao Palace and entering the Demon God's Tomb, he could even use his avatar to transform into the shape of an abyssal and undergo the abyssal ritual. Like this, there shouldn't be a problem…

Lin Ming spoke his ideas to Mo Eversnow.

As Mo Eversnow heard this, she was stunned for a long time. "You… you want to form a demon avatar?"

Mo Eversnow felt this was all too inconceivable. How could Lin Ming have approached the seventh Dao Palace so quickly, and where did he obtain Famine's essence from?

"It should be possible. This avatar is myself and not something I seized. As long as I branch out a wisp of my source soul into my avatar, then it will be a second me."

“This is… just what have you gone through these past years?” Mo Eversnow had long been wanting to ask this, but she didn’t have a chance since there were so many matters to discuss.

It should have been impossible for life forms of the 33 Heavens to seize the body of an abyssal. If Lin Ming were to form a demon avatar in the future, this would be an unbelievable event.

Lin Ming told everything he experienced in the last 7000 years to Mo Eversnow without holding anything back. He described being chased down by Soaring Feather, his own source soul force being taken by Sheng Mei, his tribulations in the lower realms, his seven reincarnations, his arrival in the wild universe, his absorbing of Famine’s soul and controlling Famine’s avatar, his overcoming two God Kings and making them withdraw from the war between humanity and the saints…

Towards Mo Eversnow, Lin Ming had no need or desire to conceal anything. She already knew about the secret of the Magic Cube so what else was there left to hide?

After listening to Lin Ming’s experiences Mo Eversnow fell silent for some time. For these past years, Lin Ming’s experiences were simply far too bizarre. From the verge of death, to the abyss of despair, to standing up tall once more, to entering the wild universe and turning the tides, to becoming a leader of humanity and being titled the Human Sovereign, it wouldn’t even be enough to describe Lin Ming’s life as one that experienced simple ups and downs.

She thought that with all the lucky chances and life-or-death slaughters she encountered in the Primeval Realm Ruins, her life had been considerably adventurous. But when compared to what Lin Ming had experienced, it seemed quite bland instead.

“So the reason you went missing in the past was because of Sheng Mei. She…”

Mo Eversnow was at a loss for words. She just couldn’t understand why Sheng Mei did what she did. “You said that Sheng Mei has a great enmity with the Soul Emperor and after she took away your strength she still left behind a wisp of her source soul in your body, and even sealed her primordial yin and Grand Reincarnation Art into it? But what is the meaning behind doing all of this? In that sort of situation, the chances of you overcoming the odds to rise once more were nearly zero. Sheng Mei didn’t know you had the Magic Cube either, so why would she think you could restore your strength?”

Lin Ming sighed and shook his head. “I am not sure either. Her methods at the time were probably the only choice she could make after she joined the Soul Emperor and found herself powerless to do anything. At that time, I truly would have died, but Sheng Mei relied on the faintest glimmer of her intuition to leave behind one last hope for me, as well as one last hope for her…”

Sheng Mei was a woman no different from a puzzle.

Thinking of her, Lin Ming once more recalled the mysterious peerless woman who had appeared in the Cold Ice Mirror and whose remains were left behind in the center of the Eternal Wall.

To surpass a river of time that flowed for 10 billion years, Sheng Mei and that mysterious woman were no different from a martial artist and their Twofold Avatar. Just how could they be related?

Sheng Mei and the Soul Emperor's fate, all that she did to him, everything left Lin Ming with extremely complicated feelings towards Sheng Mei.

She was neither good nor evil. She seemed to have seen the limitless scenery of the world, and also seemed to be shouldering a pitiful and sorrowful story…

However, no matter what her life experiences were, no matter what it was she wanted, Lin Ming knew that seven thousand years ago when he was being hunted down by Soaring Feather God King without hope of escaping, when he was also being eyed by the Soul Emperor on another side, it was Sheng Mei who had saved him. This graciousness was not one that Lin Ming would forget, even if Sheng Mei's methods had been filled with riddles…

The feeling she emitted was like a pearl shrouded in the darkest fog. 10 billion years ago a flower falls and 10 billion years later a flower opens. To overcome the samsara of 10,000 lives, unaffected by karma, fated for life and death…

MW Chapter 2095

Chapter 2095 – Change

…

…

…

Black Sand City possessed the largest slave trade in the 12th layer of the abyss. After the Ancient God Uprising erupted, not only was its business not affected but it became increasingly busy.

For several months, every month there would be at least 20,000 slaves transported to Black Sand City. On this day, there were already at least 200,000 slaves gathered at Black Sand City. These slaves were all high quality goods that were carefully selected. Many of them were shipped out from the Demon Association in the 16th and even 17th layer of the abyss.

In order to train better slaves, the Demon Association would allow some ancient race slaves to cultivate to the Holy Lord realm. But, to fully control these slaves, the Demon

Association gave them incomplete cultivation methods that would only allow them to reach the Holy Lord realm.

In addition with the slave seals planted in their spiritual seas and the special training and enslavement process, this meant that the chances of these slaves escaping their control was near zero. Of course, they could still have their free will restored if they were rescued and had their slave seals undone by a high level master.

A Holy Lord level slave could sell for a sky-high price.

As for a World King level slave, those were nearly non-existent. If they existed, they were also specially raised by high level abyssals for their own enjoyment.

Beneath the nine suns burning in the sky, the black sand desert seemed as if it would ignite. The reason the sand here was black was because there was darksteel in it. Underneath the heated sun, the darksteel could easily burn a person’s foot. If a vicious bird egg was buried in the sand, it would only take an incense stick of time to cook it.

However, to some mounts, this burning hot sand wasn’t anything at all.

Bang!

A green monster's foot came smashing down like a pillar, leaving a foot-deep footprint in the burning hot sand.

This was a cyclops and also a variation cyclops.

It was larger than an ordinary cyclops as well as stronger and faster. Of course, its price was over ten times that of an ordinary cyclops.

An ordinary cyclops was already considered a luxury commodity. This variation cyclops was not something that the average person could hope to ride.

And at this time, the one riding this cyclops was Lin Ming; he had taken the appearance of an abyssal.

A year had already passed since Lin Ming entered the Dark Abyss. For this year, Lin Ming spent most of his time in the black sand desert with the ancient race rebel army. The rebel army and the Demon Association collided several times, and Lin Ming took the shape of a human to quietly kill over a thousand abyssals; this even included a middle Empyrean abyssal that guarded Black Sand City.

When Lin Ming killed these abyssals they simply collapsed upon the first strike, thus, they weren't able to temper his fighting skills at all. However, he was able to further practice his Swallowing Laws. The power of demons in every abyssal was absorbed by Lin Ming. Slowly, he became increasingly proficient in his Swallowing Laws, soon achieving almost the highest boundary he could reach.

Lin Ming had now made all of his preparations. After absorbing so much energy, he could attack the late Empyrean realm as well as open the Twofold Dao Palace.

And the direct result of Lin Ming striking down an Empyrean of Black Sand City was that the Demon Association wasn't able to sit idly by any further. They never imagined that the Ancient God Religion and the resistance would be so difficult to deal with. Not only did the rebel army repeatedly outmaneuver their armies, but they even killed an Empyrean; this simply defied all common sense.

Now, the Ancient God Resistance had become a thorn in their eye that they had to pull out.

Soon the Demon Association would take action.

A month ago, the ancient race rebel army intercepted a force of abyssal enforcers that were escorting ancient race slaves. After killing these abyssals, the ancient race rebel army rescued 5000 ancient race slaves.

These 5000 slaves had extremely high levels of talent and their cultivations were also very good. Following the usual procedure, they would then join the ancient race resistance and become another force for the rebel army.

However, the result left their hearts aching. When Lin Ming tried to lift their slave seals, all of these people suddenly died at the same time.

Lin Ming could only stare helplessly on as these 5000 ancient race youths died as blood gushed out from their heads. Some of them even exploded into a bloody fog.

Even though Lin Ming had experienced endless life or death slaughter in his life and even though he had killed countless enemies in his time, seeing such a scene still left him dispirited.

Lin Ming didn't need to investigate anything to know that the Demon Association had tampered with the slaves' slave seals, making it so that any movement would cause all of them to die.

This was to prevent the ancient race rebel army rescuing the slaves and this would also prevent the ancient race rebel army growing in strength.

The tactics of the Demon Association were similar to the kamikaze tactics used by mortal nations in war, to kill 1000 enemies by sacrificing 800.

In this way, it would be useless for the ancient race rebel army to rescue the slaves; this was equal to accelerating their death.

The Demon Association's methods caused the ancient race martial artists to be filled with anger; however, there was nothing they could do.

Currently they had no ability to frontally engage the Demon Association. They could only use guerilla tactics to fight them, but now, even this tactic had been denied by the Demon Association, thus they had become idle.

They couldn't fight in Black Sand City, and yet wandering in the wild wasn't meaningful either.

For a time, the Ancient God rebel army's morale hit a low point.

But at this time, more shocking changes occur. The Demon Association sent a black-robed Elder to Black Sand City!

The highest authorities in the Demon Association were the black-robed Elders. Every black-robed Elder was a True Divinity level abyssal.

Even in the Dark Abyss, True Divinities weren't cabbage found everywhere. They only existed in top influences and were also the highest authorities in these influences.

The Demon Association never imagined that there would be a day where they would have to send out a black-robed Elder to suppress a slave uprising.

However, now that the slave rebel army had managed to stir a black-robed Elder to action, this also meant that their game had come to an end. This was because a True Divinity level abyssal's divine sense was far too powerful. A black-robed Elder would surely be able to find the hideout of the rebel army using his sense, and that would be the apocalypse of the Ancient God Uprising.

The only reason the Demon Association tolerated the ancient race rebel army at the beginning was because the True Divinities couldn't be bothered with such little matters. But, once they moved in earnest, extinguishing a rebel army wouldn't be any more difficult than slaughtering a dog.

The arrival of the Demon Association's black-robed Elder left the ancient race rebel army flustered in a panic.

It was obvious that it wouldn't be long before the Demon Association would lay siege to them.

Ultimately, the Ancient God rebel army was only a ragtag gathering of freed slaves. They didn't have any system of cultivation methods or military training, and although they were willing to sacrifice themselves to restore the past glory of their people, their total fighting strength wasn't too formidable.

For a time, the various squad leaders of the rebel army gathered together. They frequently came to seek an audience with Mo Eversnow or they met together to secretly discuss how to deal with the Demon Association.

Many people thought of evacuating the 12th layer of the abyss and fleeing to the 11th layer. But, this wouldn't be much safer because a True Divinity level powerhouse of the Demon Association would be much faster than they were.

Moreover, if they chose to evacuate, that would make it even easier for them to be discovered and suffer total destruction.

Even so, towards all the rebel army squad leaders who desired an audience, Mo Eversnow rejected them without exception. She passed down a single order – that was to stand by and wait for further notice!

Such an order left the squad leaders weak at heart. But because of Mo Eversnow's authority, they had no choice but to obey her.

In this situation, whether it was the rebel army squad leaders or high level figures of the Demon Association, no one knew that before the black-robed Elder arrived, Lin Ming had already quietly descended upon Black Sand City.

Lin Ming knew that the chance he waited for had come.

This would be his opportunity to open the Twofold Dao Palace and for him to reach another turning point in furthering his strength.

Bang! Bang!

The variation cyclops weighed over 100,000 jins. With every step it took in the vast desert, it would stir up waves of sand. Darksteel chains hung heavy on its arms, dragging against the sand, blurred in the high desert heat.

This variation cyclops had been bought by the demon crystals that Lin Ming obtained after killing the Empyrean that guarded Black Sand City. This would have been a luxury mount to ordinary abyssals, but to Lin Ming it wasn’t much at all.

At this time, Black Sand City loomed before Lin Ming…

MW Chapter 2096

Chapter 2096 – Ancient Race Slaves

…

…

…

As Lin Ming rode the variation cyclops into the city, he could see the city guards eye him with awe and envy in their eyes. In the Dark Abyss, wealth was proportional to strength. Only powerful abyssals had the right to be wealthy. Otherwise, even if one came from a great family they still wouldn't obtain any wealth. To abyssals, they were incredibly indifferent to family kin relationships. High level abyssals would never favor their own descendants.

For this past year, although Lin Ming had been annoying the Demon Association from the back, this was the first time he truly came to Black Sand City.

Black Sand City was an extremely busy and lively city. In terms of population density, it was much greater than Demon Snake City.

Black Sand City's streets were broad and spacious. Lin Ming could recklessly ride his variation cyclops into the street. And, other abyssals would politely allow Lin Ming to pass through without complaint. In this world where strength was revered above all, someone that could ride a variation cyclops must possess formidable strength.

Along the way, Lin Ming could see numerous succubus women casting flirtatious looks at him along the street. These were prostitutes of Black Sand City. In this debased and wealthy city, prostitutes were born following a desire for money. This was an occupation that had existed since time immemorial and easily mixed into any city.

Lin Ming didn't pay attention to this. He went to the largest slave trading market in Black Sand City, the one established by the Demon Association.

This slave market was like a city within a city. It had high city walls and the inside of the city walls was completely different.

As Lin Ming walked in, he discovered that sealed within these city walls there was an independent dimensional realm. This world was a thousand miles in radius, and numerous palaces floated through the air, along with opulent jade palaces and celestial mountains that floated amongst the clouds.

It was hard to believe that such a scene was a slave market of the Dark Abyss. In fact, this place seemed like an Empyrean Holy Lord established by the life forms of the 33 Heavens.

“Sir, what type of slaves are you wishing to purchase?”

After Lin Ming appeared, a pretty succubus demon welcomed him. Her voice was delightful and captivating, and she spoke in the higher abyssal language.

It was clear that Lin Ming possessed a royal bloodline and his mount proved how wealthy he was. This made the succubus demon even more attentive towards him.

“Bring me to take a look.”

As Lin Ming spoke he had already flown into the skies. As for the succubus woman, she followed with a bright smile, introducing Lin Ming to the area along the way.

In the skies, far off in the distance, Lin Ming could see a tall platform high in the air with a slave woman being sold. She was locked in a cage and although she was a slave, she had been carefully dressed up. One couldn’t sense any lowly and debased feeling from her at all.

Many female slaves wore luxurious dresses, their temperament as faint and ethereal as smoke, as if they were the Saintesses of large sects. There were also young girl slaves that were miserable and pathetic, capable of arousing the sympathy of others. There were female slaves that were 13-14 years old too, with little horns coming out from their heads. Although these little girls had low cultivations their talents were outstanding…

However, whether they were noble and holy these women or little girls that seemed lovable and innocent, all of them were locked in darksteel cages without a single exception. From afar, the cold bars that surrounded them formed an enormous contrast.

The succubus demon proudly said from beside Lin Ming, “Sir, these different types of female slaves aren’t just empty appearances. Thanks to our careful cultivation, if these female slaves seem like a Saintess then they have the makings of a Saintess. If they are like little girls, they are also gentle and lovable. Their looks are completely consistent with who they are.”

Lin Ming frowned and didn’t speak. He could see that some cages had multiple women within them. Before he could ask anything, the succubus demon said, “The slaves that are enclosed in the same cage are often related to each other. They might be twins, triplets, quadruplets, or also mother and daughter…”

Listening to the succubus demon’s explanation, Lin Ming looked at these women once more and lightly sighed. Some were brimming with youth, some exuded enchanting sex appeal, some seemed noble and lofty, however, their lives were already ruined.

At this time, there were numerous abyssal customers all around. The customers chose these women as if they were choosing goods from a stall. Anyone that they chose would have to face their destiny as a slave…

Seeing Lin Ming’s unhappy expression, the succubus demon thought he wasn’t satisfied with the goods. She quickly said, “Sir has no need to worry. This is only the beginning and the truly splendid goods are up ahead. Sir, please come with me. There is a VIP area that the average person cannot enter without at least a million demon crystals in wealth. Of course, this isn't a problem for you…"

The succubus demon laughed. She naturally wouldn't suspect Lin Ming's financial resources; the variation cyclops was something that not even an ordinary World King could afford to ride.

She flew up front and led the way. Lin Ming quietly followed as he probed his surroundings with his sense. In truth, he could easily cover this entire dimensional realm in his sense. Not even the array formations around the VIP area could stop him.

He could see a celestial mountain before him high up in the skies. Atop this celestial mountain was an exquisite jade building as well as a garden. Ancient race martial artists were spread throughout the area.

Lin Ming flew over a square atop a celestial mountain. He could see a hundred ancient race martial artists lined up in the square. There were men and women and all of them were exceptionally good looking. These people all wore neat training clothes as they shadowboxed the air.

Beneath the blazing sun, these ancient race martial artists wore clothes as white as snow. As they moved in their uniforms, they seemed like white cranes unfurling their wings, beautiful to the eyes.

They were slaves and because they had slave seals planted in their bodies they no longer possessed free will. The orders they obtained were to happily demonstrate their skills, thus the state of mind they displayed was one of happiness and joy. If Lin Ming didn't meet these people in the Dark Abyss's Black Sand City, he would think that he had come to an ancient race Holy Land.

Then, Lin Ming flew over a medicinal garden. He could see a dozen some women in floral clothes carefully tending to the plants. They were all young and beautiful with outstanding figures and faces as perfect as a flower fairy in full bloom.

Another dozen some young girls skipped through the garden trying to catch butterflies, a truly beautiful scene.

However, although this was a beautiful scene, Lin Ming merely sighed with emotion as he saw this. This was because the more beautiful these young girls were, the happier they seemed, the easier it was for them to be bought. And, the fate that awaited them was truly pitiful. For instance, if an abyssal species that only had males were to purchase one, then that woman would end up being a body for those abyssals to reproduce. Their fates would be to bear the babies of these abyssals who would eat them alive from their bellies…

Lin Ming continued to fly forwards. He saw some young men and women skilled in alchemy or refining techniques working in alchemy rooms and refining forges.

He even saw a deep mountain valley, and in this mountain valley were hot springs covered with a thick fog.

Water trickled down from these springs, blue and transparent, like the finest crystal. And in this fog, one could see a group of girls wearing only thin gauze, their exposed bodies revealing enchanting scenery as they bathed in the water.

Lin Ming never imagined he would see a crowd of beautiful women bathing here.

For a time, this left him at a loss for words. In the eyes of intelligent life forms of the 33 Heavens, abyssal demons represented the greatest evil, the greatest darkness. But in truth, in the hearts of those that lived in the 33 Heavens, hadn't demons always existed to begin with?

These naked women shrouded in fog made one wish to commit grave sins and explore their bodies. If the intelligent beings of the 33 Heavens were to stand here, they might also be unable to help themselves and would try to purchase these young women.

Seeing Lin Ming stop in the valley, the succubus demon revealed a thoughtful smile. She said, "Only those that wish to purchase these female slaves and also pay down a deposit are able to go into the valley below! Otherwise, if these top grade female slaves are seen by countless abyssals every day, they wouldn't be able to sell for a high price."

Lin Ming was silent for a moment. Then, he suddenly said, "The price tags, bring all of them over!"

Lin Ming's words were simple and to the point. The young succubus demon was overjoyed. She quickly took out a jade slip. All of the slaves' prices were recorded within. As the agent who had received him, she would receive a commission on all slaves that Lin Ming bought.

Lin Ming looked through the jade slip. The slaves of Black Sand City were clearly priced and there was basically no way of haggling with a counteroffer. The only exception was if one wished to purchase en masse.

And the reason Lin Ming came this time was for such a mass purchase. If possible, he even wanted to buy up all these slaves.

The Demon Association would have planted special slave seals in the bodies of these slaves that could take their lives at any moment. Once Lin Ming attacked the Demon Association Branch Division, even if he won, these slaves would still all be buried with them.

Lin Ming didn't wish to see this occur. Thus, before he caused any truly earth-shaking waves in Black Sand City, he needed to purchase as many slaves as he could and send them away.

In this way, he could save even more people.

MW Chapter 2097

Chapter 2097 – The Final Request

…

…

…

“What does sir think? If sir is satisfied then you may feel free to take a look. These slaves are all high quality goods with superior talents and they have also been trained since childhood in all manners of skills to please and pleasure you. Moreover, all of them are virgins!”

The succubus demon leaned in close to Lin Ming’s ears and blew out her steamy breath.

She didn’t believe that Lin Ming would be able to resist such temptation. Of course, if he wished to go down and recklessly play with them then he would need to pay the deposit money and also purchase the slaves too.

Lin Ming shook the jade slip in his hands, glancing over the prices. Although he already knew the approximate pricing of these female slaves, seeing the long line of numerals still left him slightly flabbergasted.

These slaves were far too expensive.

However, Lin Ming was also extremely wealthy. For the last year he had killed hundreds and thousands of abyssals, including even an Empyrean level abyssal. He was already wealthy to begin with, and when he came to Black Sand City he also brought the numerous demon crystals that Mo Eversnow had.

In these past years, the Ancient God rebel army had accumulated an astronomical level of wealth.

"The deposit money is here. I will buy them all!"

Lin Ming took out a spatial ring and flicked it towards the succubus demon. The succubus demon grabbed it and probed it with her sense. She was immediately shocked. Within this spatial ring were piles upon piles of demon crystals; it was simply hard to estimate how many there were. Let alone the dozen some young girls bathing in the spring below, even if there were hundreds of them this money would be more than enough.

And from what Lin Ming said just then, this was also only a deposit!

Deposit money…

This meant that Lin Ming would take out even more wealth and buy even more slaves. Thinking of this, the succubus demon was immediately excited.

“Sir, you are far too generous. Would you like to go down now to take a look?”

She thought that after Lin Ming bought the young girls in the valley he would certainly dive into that warm pond and enjoy himself in devouring those beautiful women. But, she never imagined that Lin Ming would issue a terse order, “Have those people put on clothes and follow me!”

“Put… put on clothes!”

The succubus demon was stunned. The Demon Association Branch Division had spent a considerable amount of effort to arrange the scene below, and yet this royal abyssal had no intention of doing anything with the young girls. To have such beautiful young girls put on clothes, wasn’t that just a waste of goods…?

Although she was puzzled in her heart, in Black Sand City a customer’s requests were everything. The succubus demon could only act accordingly.

All of the young girls in the valley were ordered to rise up, dry their bodies, and then put on clothes to follow Lin Ming.

Then, Lin Ming went to the high platform he saw before. The slaves here were all enclosed in iron cages.

In this giant slave market there were some slaves that showed a positive demeanor. But, there were even more young girls who were only giving performances in the iron cages to attract customers.

There was no young girl willing to be held in an iron cage as a commodity to be sold and bought.

Like this, whether they were ephemeral Saintesses or little girls that seemed to be treasures of families, they were only maintaining their outer appearance beneath the threats of the Demon Association. Lin Ming could actually see their bodies gently shaking. Some girls were pale with beads of tears at the corners of their eyes. They were nervous but also pitiful.

To the abyssals, the delicate and fragile appearances of these female slaves could arouse the beastly desires in their hearts.

There was even the rare kind-hearted abyssal who would feel a protective desire upon seeing these slaves. Even so, no matter who they were, they would still buy these slaves.

"Raise your head! Stand at the front of the iron cage for me!"

As Lin Ming stepped before an iron cage, two identical young girls shrank back into a corner, subconsciously lowering their heads. They didn't dare to look at Lin Ming now because his appearance was simply far too fierce.

To these young girls who had just bloomed, it was hard to imagine just what sort of master Lin Ming was and what awaited them.

"I'm speaking to you two! Are you deaf!?"

Near the iron cage, an iron claw demon raised a whip, enraged at the disrespectful appearance they showed towards Lin Ming. He lashed out his whip and the two young girls panicked upon seeing this.

These iron claw demons were extremely skilled in using their whips to cross through the slits of the iron cage and strike the girls' bodies. The strike would hurt but it wouldn't break their skin, in order to avoid leaving behind scars.

The two young girls subconsciously closed their eyes. However, the pain didn't arrive. They opened their eyes and saw that the iron claw demon's whip had been grabbed by a towering abyssal before it fell.

Compared to this large abyssal, the iron claw demon seemed as small as a chicken.

The iron claw demon smiled apologetically. “I apologize for this shameful sight. These little girls only arrived a short time ago and are still a bit wild. Slashing them with a few whips will be enough.”

Lin Ming looked upon the iron claw demon, revealing a bit of killing intent in his eyes that caused the iron claw demon to shrink away, a cold chill running down his back.

“You… you…”

The iron claw demon gulped, not sure of what to say. He didn’t want to offend such a powerhouse.

Luckily for him, Lin Ming had already turned his head, giving the iron claw demon a chance to catch his breath.

“I’ll buy them.” Lin Ming coldly said to the succubus demon behind him.

The succubus demon was overjoyed. As for the two young girls in the cage, they were flustered, unaware of just what fate awaited them.

After becoming slaves they didn’t expect any brilliance or glory in their lives; just surviving would be enough.

However, although this abyssal before them seemed ferocious, he had still stopped the iron claw demon from striking their bodies. He shouldn’t be some cruel pervert, right…?

As the two young girls were thinking like this, they developed wild hopes of Lin Ming. They left the iron cage and followed behind him.

Lin Ming didn’t speak. As they walked forwards, every time he saw a young girl in a cage he would only ask what their price was and then buy them up.

Later, Lin Ming didn’t ask for their price. When he saw one he bought one, as the clear prices of these slaves were listed on their cages.

Soon, the several hundred young girls from the iron cages had been bought up by Lin Ming.

Many of these young girls had pink whip marks marring their skin and their clothes were torn in many places. With their appearance, it was easy to take pity on them.

The succubus demon behind Lin Ming was already ecstatic. She didn't know why Lin Ming was in such a haughty mood to buy so many slaves at once. But, she didn't have any interest in finding out the reason, as she would earn money all the same.

The commission she would earn from this customer today would be the same as what she earned in several years.

For all the slaves that Lin Ming bought, he would branch out a part of his soul force to enter their spiritual seas and refine the slave seals there.

Like this, these slaves were turned over to Lin Ming for him to control. As for the slave seals, the array formation spells that would cause the slaves to instantly die were also lifted.

The Demon Association was a merchant organization that heavily relied on word of mouth. They certainly wouldn't add such spells on goods they sold that would make their customers feel ill.

Slave after slave was rescued. Afterwards, Lin Ming didn't even speak. With a wave of his hand the succubus demon would cheerfully laugh and take away the slaves.

The several hundred ancient race slaves that were training on the celestial mountain, both men and women, were all bought by Lin Ming.

The flowery fairy maidens in the medicinal garden and the common slaves there were also bought by Lin Ming.

Following that, from the various halls, residences, pavilions, towers, alchemy rooms, all the male and female slaves that one could see were bought up by Lin Ming.

Lin Ming welcomed all without reserve. Sometimes, he didn’t even glance at them. Finally he waited in place and all the slaves in the slave market walked towards him, whereupon he received them all.

Such a bold approach even alarmed the City Lord of Black Sand City; he was a peak Empyrean of the Demon Association.

This Demon Association City Lord commanded Black Sand City. Now, he came to personally greet Lin Ming.

Lin Ming tossed out more and more demon crystals. Soon he started to lack funds.

Fortunately for him, by this time almost all the slaves had been bought up by him. He placed them all into Primordius Heavenly Palace.

At this time, Primordius Heavenly Palace had its appearance changed by the Ancient Elysium Seal and it now looked like one of the dark fortresses that abyssals liked to ride. It was covered all over in cruel and demonic bone spikes.

After a purchasing session of nearly eight hours, the last of the ancient race slaves were sent to Primordius Heavenly Palace by Lin Ming. Primordius Heavenly Palace then flew away. Lin Ming watched as it broke through the void and vanished into space. Slowly, his face turned cold.

He had already paid the abyssal crystals. These crystals were held in the hand of the Empyrean level abyssal before him, who was also the City Lord of Black Sand City.

The Black Sand City Lord also had a royal bloodline and he was much taller than Lin Ming. At this time, he was smiling as he looked at Lin Ming. “Sir is truly bold and refreshing. For all the slaves that sir bought, we have already accounted a 5% discount for you. Next time you can place an order and we can personally prepare your request to create suitable slaves!”

As the abyssal spoke, he clapped his hands and ordered a banquet to see off Lin Ming. Then, he looked at Lin Ming and said, “I wonder if you have any other requests you would like to make?”

Lin Ming looked at the Black Sand City Lord with indifference. He slowly said, “I have one more request, and that is that… I don’t want to pay anything.”

Lin Ming's tone was casual, as if he were speaking of minor matters.

"Mm?" The Black Sand City Lord's face stiffened, as if he hadn't clearly heard what Lin Ming just said.

"I said that I want you to give me all your demon crystals."

Lin Ming spoke, clearly and unhurriedly, his eyes blazing as he stared at the Black Sand City Lord.

The Black Sand City Lord's complexion darkened. But, he still retained a friendly tone. "Are you making a joke here? This joke isn't funny; the slaves have already been taken away by you."

"My apologies, but this is not a joke…" As Lin Ming spoke, killing intent flashed in his eyes.

MW Chapter 2098

Chapter 2098 – Luring Out the Snake

…

…

…

Lin Ming's killing intent was not concealed. This thick killing intent condensed in the room, as if the entire room was filling with solid metal, freezing all.

Feeling Lin Ming's killing intent, the Black Sand City Lord was not angry or scared, rather, what he felt was… disbelief!

Black Sand City was the territory of their Demon Association. And, their Demon Association was a super influence that had existed in the Dark Abyss for billions of years. It had an unimaginable background and numerous masters; no one dared to play tricks with them.

Moreover, in Black Sand City, there was currently a True Divinity abyssal standing guard. Yet an abyssal actually dared to stir up a mess in Black Sand City. Did he have a death wish?

The Demon Association didn't fear anyone. Although it seemed that Lin Ming's background wasn't simple, the Black Sand City Lord didn't even place him in his eyes.

"I don't mind if you say that. In my opinion, these ancient race slaves aren't some commodity to be bought and sold by others to begin with; are they just because you think they are? So, I want you to give me back those spatial rings I just gave you a moment ago."

Lin Ming ignored the Black Sand City Lord's anger and continued to speak in a casual tone, just like a calm lake.

But as these words fell into the Black Sand City Lord's ears, his killing intent only became that much thicker.

"You have no idea of death or danger!"

The Black Sand City Lord gnashed out.

The abyssal demons' cultivation system was completely different from that of the 33 Heavens. The Black Sand City Lord couldn't completely distinguish Lin Ming's cultivation, but he could approximately feel that Lin Ming's cultivation was lower than his own.

A person with a weaker cultivation actually dared to repeatedly push his limits. Was there something wrong with his brain?

Although there were many species of low intelligence amongst the abyssals, such as the cyclops or black armor demons, it was clear that royal abyssals were different.

“I will give you one final chance to take back the words you just said and immediately get out of Black Sand City. If so, I will pretend nothing occurred just now. And if you don’t, then I will have you die here without a grave!”

The Black Sand City Lord had reached the limit of his patience. If it weren’t for Lin Ming’s extravagant spending, the astronomical amount of demon crystals he paid to buy up all the ancient race slaves, then he would have already turned Lin Ming into a corpse by now.

However, his warning seemed to have no effect at all.

Lin Ming silently took out a black spear. This was the Black Dragon Spear. In Lin Ming’s abyssal form, the Black Dragon Spear had changed its shape, becoming even fiercer and more deadly.

Seeing Lin Ming extract his weapon, the Black Sand City Lord’s face turned icy cold.

"You are seeking death!"

After saying these three words, the Black Sand City Lord attacked.

His weapons were his claws. For many abyssals, their bodies were their best weapons!

The sharp and vicious claws grasped towards Lin Ming's throat.

During this attack, the Black Sand City Lord used his own Laws. Black flames lit up over his claws; these were abyssal flames that could burn down all of existence. Compared to fire-attribute cultivation methods of the 33 Heavens, this possessed an even more terrifying might.

But the moment the Black Sand City Lord attacked, so did Lin Ming.

He revolved the strength within his body to the limit, emulating the abyssal method of fighting. Grasping the Black Dragon Spear he brought it smashing downwards. A thick spear light directly pressed down upon the Black Sand City Lord, capable of shattering mountains and rivers.

Kacha!

The moment Lin Ming fought with the Black Sand City Lord, a horrifying energy vortex tore everything around them into pieces!

The immortal palaces of the slave trading market, the platforms, the various buildings, all of them were instantly reduced to ashes. Even many of the abyssals responsible for overseeing the slaves were sucked up into this energy storm and mercilessly killed!

Just how terrifying was a battle between a peak Empyrean and a True Divinity level master? In just a single collision, everything within a scope of a hundred miles had been annihilated and this was even with the protection of array formations.

And if it weren’t for these protective array formations placed everywhere around the slave market, then this entire dimensional realm would have turned to dust!

In the turbulent flow of energy, the Black Sand City Lord was sent flying away. He crashed into a celestial mountain so hard that it brought the mountain tumbling down.

His body was broken in countless places and he was buried in a bloody heap of rocks; it was already impossible to find him.

“What happened?”

“What is going on!?”

Many abyssals were unsure as to what had occurred. They flew about and saw Lin Ming grasp a black spear, standing atop ruins. It seemed as if mountains and rivers had collapsed in front of him.

At this moment, Lin Ming took the Black Dragon Spear and pounded the ground.

Boh!

With a loud explosive sound, the earth violently trembled. Giant shockwaves swelled outwards like tsunamis. With the Black Dragon Spear as the center the shockwaves spread in all directions, catching all the abyssals that were flying in the air!

And in front of Lin Ming, the ruins formed from shattered mountains and rivers also split open!

The Black Sand City Lord that was buried deep beneath the debris was blown out of the ruins. His body was a bloody mess and his figure was unrecognizable.

At this time, Lin Ming stepped forwards. The Black Dragon Spear shot out like an arrow, instantly piercing through the Black Sand City Lord’s throat!

Puff!

Blood shot out. Lin Ming poured energy through the spear into the Black Sand City Lord's meridians, breaking apart his organs!

The Black Sand City Lord's eyes bulged out and he stared at Lin Ming with confusion and disbelief. He couldn't believe that Lin Ming was actually this strong.

Without a doubt, this was a premeditated attack!

All of Lin Ming's actions had only been to kill him. Or, it could be said that Lin Ming already possessed the strength to kill him and was merely toying around with him.

"You..."

Abyssal demons possessed an incomparably powerful life force. Even though the Black Sand City Lord was wounded so heavily, he still hung onto one final breath. Bubbly blood frothed out from his mouth and his lips shook.

With cold indifference, Lin Ming reached out a hand and took back all the wealth he had handed the Black Sand City Lord earlier, including even the Black Sand City Lord's own spatial ring.

“I already said that these things are to be returned to me.”

As Lin Ming spoke these words, the Black Sand City Lord was so enraged he nearly vomited more blood. “The Demon Association… will not… let you go… you…”

The Black Sand City Lord’s head was lopped off. The world turned upside down and then he stared helplessly on as Lin Ming took away his corpse before leaving the dimensional realm where the slave market was located.

This was also the last image he saw…

At this time, a loud rumbling sound like thunder echoed throughout the entirety of Black Sand City.

This sound contained endless anger. It was like the punishment of the highest heavens, destroying all!

“Who are you? You killed my Demon Association’s City Lord!”

Lin Ming paused his step. He knew who the master of this voice was – it was the black-robed Elder sent out by the Demon Association to guard Black Sand City, as well as his true target.

That brief fight just now had only lasted a mere spark of time before the Black Sand City Lord was cut down, making it impossible for those Demon Association Elder who was in seclusion to help rescue him.

Hum –

Hum –

Black clouds began covering all of Black Sand City.

The nine suns high in the sky were already hidden away. Clouds as dark as ink poured out, rolling through the world. Suddenly, light disappeared, and one couldn't even see their own fingers in front of them.

Lin Ming knew that this Demon Association True Divinity Elder had released a force field to completely cover Black Sand City.

But how could Lin Ming allow himself to be surrounded like this?

His figure flashed and he rapidly flew away!

Whoosh!

Lin Ming was like a meteor cutting through the dark skies. He grasped the Black Dragon Spear, pouring the power of the nine stars into it. A horrifying strength instantly erupted as he thrust out at the edge of the force field!

Chi-la!

The force field tore apart. Lin Ming’s body shook as he forcefully broke through this True Divinity force field!

With Lin Ming’s strength he was already able to defeat ordinary True Divinities. Naturally, breaking apart a force field wasn’t easy. But in order to accomplish his goal, the moment Lin Ming broke through the force field he burnt the power of his blood essence.

After opening the Gate of Life Lin Ming burning a little bit of the Gate of Life’s blood essence wasn’t a problem at all. But as this scene fell into the eyes of others, it seemed as if he were desperately giving it his everything.

After breaking out of the force field, Lin Ming launched his full speed and crossed through the horizon like a rainbow, rapidly flying into the depths of the black sand desert!

And behind Lin Ming, what followed him was roiling black sand!

This black sand formed a giant wave a hundred miles high and a thousand miles wide. At the crown of this sand wave was a massive abyssal claw formed of black sand that came grasping down at Lin Ming!

The black-robed Elder guarding Black Sand City was using his transcendent methods to attack Lin Ming from afar!

These methods seemed grandiose, however, its true might was far inferior to the black-robed True Divinity personally being present. As long as Lin Ming wanted to he could easily destroy this abyssal claw. However, he didn’t do so. Rather, he constantly dodged the abyssal claw with swift movements, soaring faster and faster into the black sand desert!

“Just where do you think you are going!”

An angry voice suddenly sounded out from Black Sand City. Dark clouds surged forth. This True Divinity Elder had started to personally chase after Lin Ming!

This was the exact effect that Lin Ming wanted. As he was being chased he had continuously suppressed his strength in order to lower the vigilance of the black-robed True Divinity.

If Lin Ming revealed a strength that was too great then the other party would absolutely become cautious. If so, then the black-robed Elder might not chase after him.

And in Black Sand City, Lin Ming didn't have full faith he could strike down the black-robed Elder.

Not to mention the numerous defensive array formations in Black Sand City and the countless minions of the Demon Association that would harass him, just the several transmissions arrays in Black Sand City would mean that other high level abyssals would arrive as soon as they obtained the news that the black-robed Elder was in danger.

Thus, what Lin Ming first needed to do was draw the black-robed Elder out of Black Sand City.

MW Chapter 2099

Chapter 2099 – Void Sea

…

…

…

Bang!

Bang!

Black sand formed demon claws that came crashing down again and again. As Lin Ming dodged left and right, he was like a nimble fish swimming through a stormy sea; the sand storm simply wasn't able to do anything to him.

Although Lin Ming was hiding his strength, no one would think he was faking it because his cultivation realm was clearly placed before them.

For instance, in the eyes of the abyssal Elder, Lin Ming's cultivation was somewhere around the middle to late Empyrean realm. With that level of cultivation, being able to kill a peak Empyrean abyssal in two moves and withstand so many strikes from a True Divinity was already a miracle in itself.

If someone were to say that Lin Ming's strength was even higher than that, the abyssal Elder simply wouldn't believe it.

"I have a deep and bitter grudge with Black Cage and the reason I came to Black Sand City was to kill him and take revenge. Everything I did was perfectly justified. You had best not involve yourself in my matters, otherwise I will remember you chasing after me today and 100,000 years from now I will surely come to you and seek recompense!"

Lin Ming's voice was clear and loud, rolling out like a thunderclap. It even passed over Black Sand City and all the abyssals dwelling within heard him!

The Black Cage that Lin Ming spoke of was the Black Sand City Lord he had just killed. He was explaining his reasoning for why he struck him down.

And in truth, such an explanation seemed extremely reasonable.

This was because a sane abyssal wouldn't suddenly develop some strange fantasy of coming to Black Sand City and striking down the Demon Association's Black Sand City Lord. This action was equal to drawing a death sentence from the Demon Association. There was no abyssal influence that would do something so idiotic without full preparation, because this was the same as declaring war against the Demon Association.

But, if there was a powerful loner who had a personal grudge against the Black Sand City Lord and wished to recklessly strike him down without caring for the consequences, then this could be easily explained.

This sort of misunderstanding was also what Lin Ming wanted. Now, he didn't want others to know that he possessed the ability to disguise himself as an abyssal, nor did he want anyone to link his actions to the ancient race rebel army.

If this was only a simple revenge kill then all would make sense.

But, when Lin Ming explained his reasoning for killing the Black Sand City Lord, the True Divinity Elder became even more enraged. Not only did this unknown abyssal kill the Black Sand City Lord while he was present, but he also dared to make threats while trying to escape!

He had received the highest orders from the Council of Elders to guard Black Sand City and crush the Ancient God Uprising. Now, before he had suppressed the uprising, the Black Sand City Lord had actually died. Moreover, he had been personally attending Black Sand City at the time! This was simply a stain upon his name!

Thus, when Lin Ming spoke those words just then it only strengthened the True Divinity abyssal Elder's desire to kill him. He wanted to finish this as soon as possible, because taking so much time was also shameful.

He unfurled his movement techniques. Roiling black cloud dragged behind him as he struck a claw at Lin Ming!

The claw phantom wildly tore open the black sand desert. Millions of jins of black sand instantly melted away, but at this time, Lin Ming actually accelerated one more time, avoiding every new danger!

"What?"

The abyssal Elder was shocked. He thought that his attack would surely be successful.

However, his attack actually failed.

He could faintly see a faint red glow around Lin Ming; he had clearly burnt his blood essence.

Each time, Lin Ming would only burn the tiniest bit of blood essence. With him having opened the Gate of Life, burning this amount of blood essence wouldn't affect him at all. However others wouldn't know of this.

They would only think that Lin Ming had reached his limits.

“Let’s see how long you can last!”

The abyssal Elder rapidly flew forwards. But, he discovered that Lin Ming was like a cockroach. Although the Elder was faster than Lin Ming and his attacks blotted out the skies and overwhelmed the world, every time he attacked, Lin Ming would escape danger again and again. This feeling was like a cockroach escaping from being crushed by mortals by running through the smallest cracks.

Lin Ming’s performance left the abyssal Elder at a loss. The Elder guessed that Lin Ming possessed some sort of special arcane skill that granted him speed and flexibility far surpassing other martial artists of his level.

However, the disparity in strength eventually couldn’t be overcome. At the very least, this was what it looked like in the abyssal Elder’s eyes.

After five close escapes, the abyssal Elder could feel that Lin Ming had weakened a little due to the amount of blood essence he repeatedly burnt.

Then, on the sixth attack, his claw phantom finally scratched Lin Ming.

Peng!

With a loud explosive sound, Lin Ming's protective demon power instantly burst apart. He tumbled away, injured.

The abyssal Elder was overjoyed. This chase had dragged on for such a long time that even he was ashamed. Now, he impatiently wished to capture Lin Ming and reestablish his might.

"I will remember the shame of today! My strength will surpass you in the future and once I do I will kill you!" Lin Ming shouted out while he suppressed the chaotic blood vitality in his body.

This shout caused thick killing intent to flash in the abyssal Elder's eyes.

In truth, he didn't know how old Lin Ming was. But from the skills he displayed, his potential was not small at all. Perhaps with time Lin Ming really could surpass him.

And as someone from the Demon Association, everyone knew who he was. If Lin Ming really wished to take revenge in the future then there would always be a way to stir up trouble against him.

Thinking of this, the abyssal Elder was merciless in his decision.

“You no longer have a road to flee through, nor will I give you an opportunity to!”

The abyssal Elder attacked a seventh time, wanting to bring this game of cat and mouse to an end. But this time, Lin Ming suddenly drew out a piece of an ancient mirror. Then he coughed blood onto this ancient mirror. After it absorbed the blood, it began to shoot out divine light.

In the next moment, the ancient mirror completely exploded, turning into a swirl of shadows that ripped open the void. Lin Ming followed the ancient mirror and broke into the void, seeming as if he would activate a great void shift!

“Mm?”

Seeing this, the abyssal Elder was stunned.

Generally speaking, when martial artists were being chased down it was impossible for them to carry out a great void shift. This was because if one wished to travel long distances through the void, one needed to carefully calm their heart and summon the power of the Space Laws to search for the approximate space coordinates.

The only exception was if the person being chased had plenty of strength left over, so that it didn’t matter if they were distracted while being hunted down.

The abyssal Elder certainly didn't believe Lin Ming possessed such an ability. He recognized that the problem was the ancient mirror Lin Ming had just pulled out. This should be some sort of transmission array disc. After starting the array disc, it would directly transmit the user to an assigned position.

Such a transmission array disc wasn't too strange. It was just that super long distance transmission array discs were few in number while short distance transmission rates were extremely weak.

When Lin Ming was in the South Sea Demon Region searching for the Nirvana Dragon Root, Mu Yuhuang had given him an Escape Symbol excavated from an ancient ruin. That Escape Symbol was a short distance transmission array.

When Lin Ming was in a critical situation, he had used the Escape Symbol to send Mu Qianyu away.

To a low level martial artist such a transmission array was a life-saving escape tool. But to a high level martial artist, the effects were simply subpar at best.

This was because high level martial artists already possessed the ability to use their sense to lock down a target they were chasing. This was especially true for True Divinities.

When Lin Ming was locked onto by Soaring Feather, there had simply been no way road to heaven and no gate to hell.

The abyssal Elder slowed down and locked his sense onto Lin Ming's position. Lin Ming's transmission sent him a hundred million miles away, past the black sand desert and into the vast and limitless void sea!

At this moment, the abyssal Elder hesitated for a moment. His repeated failures in catching Lin Ming left him with a strange feeling percolating in his heart; this could be called a foreboding premonition.

However, this feeling only lasted for a brief moment before fading away. It was impossible for him to let go of Lin Ming. After a brief hesitation he found Lin Ming's coordinates with his sense and then reached out to tear open the void.

Looking at the space tunnel before him, a cold light flashed in the abyssal Elder's eyes. He stepped into the void and rapidly shuttled through, soon appearing a hundred million miles away.

For a True Divinity level powerhouse, a single great void shift could transport them a hundred million miles away. A hundred million miles wasn't anything at all for them.

The sea tide surged around him. At this time, the abyssal Elder had already appeared in the vast and endless void sea. This was the target area that Lin Ming had chosen. In his eyes, he could see Lin Ming's form turn into a beam of light and shoot deeper into the void sea.

The void sea was the boundary of the abyss's 12th layer. In its depth there were complex spatial terrains and massive tracts of shattered space leading to mysterious and unknown chaotic worlds. It was difficult to determine just which direction one was going in here.

Many times, even Empyreans didn't dare to enter this place.

If one flew through the void sea it was easy to lose direction. And once someone was lost, it would be incredibly difficult for anyone to locate them.

Thus, many people deliberately avoided this danger zone, because going missing or dying were likely possibilities.

"You want to lose me in the void sea?"

The abyssal Elder coldly snorted. He would not allow Lin Ming's hope to come true. Even though this was the void sea he was still a True Divinity level abyssal, and his ability to discern direction far outstripped Lin Ming.

He sensed his surroundings and then reached out a hand to tear open the void once more, undergoing a short distance space shift.

This time, he appeared in front of Lin Ming.

But Lin Ming had already been expecting this. The moment the abyssal Elder appeared, he suddenly changed directions and rapidly ran away.

“Die!”

The abyssal Elder suddenly reached out a fist. In an instant, sea water surged up and solidified as it squeezed towards Lin Ming.

Looking at the wildly tumbling waves, Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. His strength suddenly erupted and the Black Dragon Spear came slashing outwards, the spear light seeming to connect the heavens and earth.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The mountain-like waves were neatly split in half before blowing apart.

Sea water rose up, forming a hundred mile long column that impacted into the heavens and flushed away all the clouds.

“Mm!?”

The strength Lin Ming erupted with just now left the abyssal Elder startled. He looked at Lin Ming, his eyes beginning to narrow.

MW *Chapter* 2100

Chapter 2100 – Stormy Assault

…

…

…

The moment the waves broke, Lin Ming's strength suddenly rose to a new level. Without a doubt, he had been hiding his strength all this time.

"You… just who are you?"

The abyssal Elder's face lit up with murderous intent, his appearance becoming more ferocious. He faintly felt that Lin Ming had intentionally lured him here. Above the void sea, one of the greatest characteristics of this place was that time and space were mixed up in a chaotic jumble, and it was hard for the outside world to discover just what was occurring within. This also meant that if there was a fight here, it would be difficult for anyone outside to come to the rescue.

Shua –

A gray force field came shrouding down, completely covering the surrounding space.

It was Lin Ming's grandmist space. This force field could easily prevent the abyssal Elder from activating a great void shift. In fact, beneath Lin Ming's all-out onslaught, even if there was not a force field here it would basically be impossible for the abyssal Elder to find a moment of piece to lock onto new space coordinates and traverse the void sea with a great void shift.

The abyssal Elder's complexion darkened as he felt Lin Ming's force field. "What influence are you from? Since when have totem level influences become such sneaky cowards! Are there more abyssals here? Call them all out!"

The abyssal Elder radiated his sense outwards, watching for any possible sneak attack. Although Lin Ming had suddenly erupted with a great strength, he still didn't think that Lin Ming would be the only one here in this trap that was set up for him.

The truth was that for the high level Elders of the Demon Association, being encircled and killed was nearly impossible. This was because even in the Dark Abyss there were only several influences capable of cutting down a True Divinity level Elder. As for the Demon Association, their relationships with these other influences weren't antagonistic to the degree that these influences would decide to kill a True Divinity level Elder.

But if it wasn't a trap set by a great influence, it coming from a personal grudge was even more impossible.

This abyssal Elder had long since killed off almost all his personal enemies. Even if there were a few fish that managed to escape his net, these simply weren't characters that the abyssal Elder would bother to remember, much less be capable of encircling and killing him.

Thus, True Divinity level abyssals that attached themselves to large influences were nearly without any enemies in the Dark Abyss. This was also the reason why this abyssal Elder chased Lin Ming while throwing caution to the wind.

However, exceptions always existed in reality. The abyssal Elder began to understand that all the events that occurred in Black Sand City had been targeting him from the start, and the Black Sand City Lord that died was merely a cover for luring him out.

However, the abyssal Elder didn't think that there wouldn't be anyone rushing out from hiding spots. Instead it was only Lin Ming who would attack.

At this instant, the skies suddenly darkened. Nine sparkling stars appeared high in the air. They rose up from behind Lin Ming, six of them radiating infinite divine light as they shined upon his six Dao Palaces.

Bang!

The sea exploded, issuing a savage war song. Lin Ming's spear swept up mountain-like waves as he thrust towards the abyssal Elder's throat!

"This is..."

The abyssal Elder's heart shook. He had an extraordinary level of experience and he could see that the moves Lin Ming used didn't utilize the Laws of abyssals. Rather, this seemed to be... the 33 Heavenly Daos!

An abyssal demon could use the 33 Heavenly Daos? Was this even possible?

The abyssal Elder didn't have any time to further think about this. By now, the Black Dragon Spear had already pierced right in front of him. The shining spear light was like a blazing divine light, blinding to the eyes!

The abyssal Elder emitted a guttural roar. His joints emitted explosive crackling sounds as he clenched his hand into a fist and punched out.

Bang!

This fist was like a collapsing world, pressing down upon the Black Dragon Spear!

Zi zi zi - !

The Black Dragon Spear bent like a full moon. A massive wave of energy gushed out, forming a monstrous tsunami that swept over the world!

The force of this blow left the abyssal Elder flustered. A corner of the scales on his fist had shattered and blood flowed out.

Whoosh!

The abyssal Elder was sent flying backwards like a meteor, his face one of stunned astonishment.

“Who are you!?”

He thought that Lin Ming was someone who came from another one of the six totem level influences and wanted to harm the Demon Association, but Lin Ming revealing the Laws of the 33 Heavens left him feeling shocked and fearful.

It was nearly impossible for an abyssal to study the 33 Heavenly Daos. Compared to a saint cultivating the Nine Divine Shifts or a human cultivating the saint race’s body transformation technique, the difficulty was over ten times greater!

But Lin Ming simply didn't give this abyssal Elder any time to think. He rushed out once more, the Black Dragon Spear bravely blazing forwards, thrusting straight towards all the abyssal Elder's vital points!

"Damn it!"

The abyssal Elder was incensed. He slashed out his claws and 10,000 claw lights wove into a giant net of light that split open the skies.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The abyssal Elder brutally collided with Lin Ming. As a True Divinity level abyssal, his mortal bodily strength approached that of Astral Vault God King and his scales granted him a defensive ability no worse!

However, Lin Ming's strength was no longer what it was in the past. If he were to fight Astral Vault God King as he was now, he could easily defeat him in direct combat.

Bang!

In that moment, an Asura war god phantom appeared behind Lin Ming. The giant Myriad Demon Karmic Wheel came smashing down, grinding away the abyssal Elder's claw lights.

Lin Ming took this chance to move forwards. Space lost all meaning beneath his Laws. The Black Dragon Spear snuck out like a viper, diagonally sweeping towards the abyssal Elder's ribs at a tricky angle.

The lower rib was not a vital point on the abyssal Elder's body, but it was an extremely deadly attack point. This was because the abyssal Elder's defenses were mostly focused on his head, neck, and areas above his lungs and heart. It wasn't easy to attack him under his ribs, but this was also the area where he was most vulnerable to injury.

Lin Ming's angle of attack could be called extremely cunning, completely surpassing the abyssal Elder's expectations.

This spear was fast and ruthless; there was no time to dodge!

Ka!

Protective demon power exploded. Scales were torn open and blood shot out!

A foot-long gash opened up on the abyssal Elder's chest and his body was sent tumbling away!

Although the wound wasn't deep, the moment that the Black Dragon Spear tore open the abyssal Elder, a dark and sinister energy broke into his body, hurtling straight towards the heart and lungs!

"Just who..."

The abyssal Elder was shocked beyond compare. He summoned demon power to forcefully diffuse Lin Ming's energy strike, but as he looked at Lin Ming his face was still covered in disbelief. This enemy's strength was clearly above his own and yet his cultivation was clearly only at the Empyrean realm!

Lin Ming didn't give his opponent any chance to catch a breath. As his spear thrust out, another Lin Ming flew out from within his body!

This Lin Ming wore black clothes – he was Lin Ming's essence energy avatar, the Essence Spirit Embryo Stone!

The black-clothed Lin Ming also grasped a spear. The beautiful spear drew a killing circle through the air, the spear point coming down in a deadly arc, the end point being the abyssal Elder's neck!

What!?

The abyssal Elder's pupils shrank. Lin Ming's Essence Spirit Embryo Stone avatar had no ability to turn into the form of an abyssal, thus it retained Lin Ming's original appearance: that of a human from the 33 Heavens!

Before this, the abyssal Elder simply didn't understand why Lin Ming understood the Laws of the 33 Heavens, and Lin Ming's onslaught of attacks was so fierce and wild that he didn't have the time to think about this. But now that he saw a human of the 33 Heavens emerge from Lin Ming's body, he suddenly realized what was occurring.

"You aren't an abyssal demon at all!"

The abyssal Elder's eyes turned blood red. Still, he couldn't figure out why he sensed the purest abyssal bloodline pulsing from Lin Ming's body.

But in a mere instant he no longer had the luxury to ponder this. The Essence Spirit Embryo Stone's spear already came cutting toward his neck!

Kacha!

In this crucial moment, the abyssal Elder opened his alligator-wide jaws and bit down on the spear!

The grinding of metal against metal pained the ears.

However, Lin Ming's attacks were like a storm, a barrage that came without end. At this time, a purple-clothed Lin Ming and a blue-clothed Lin Ming also rushed out from his body. These were Lin Ming's soul forging avatar and essence gathering avatar!

A sharp spiritual sword shot out from between the purple-clothed Lin Ming's eyebrows, shooting straight into the abyssal Elder's spiritual sea.

And at this time, the blue-clothed Lin Ming grasped a short lance and swept towards the area beneath the abyssal Elder's ribs. This attack point was exactly where the abyssal Elder had been wounded just a moment ago. This was an attack to add injury upon injuries!

"You!"

The abyssal Elder's pupils shrank. These mighty and swift attacks rained down on him like hail and it was no longer possible for him to dodge. Against two attacks that came crashing down on him at the same time, he could only block one.

Without any consideration, the abyssal Elder instinctively formed a protective demon barrier in his spiritual sea to guard against the purple-clothed Lin Ming's soul attack!

When it came to abyssals, their mental and spiritual defenses were their weakest, and their mortal bodily defenses were their strongest.

In such a situation he certainly had to defend his spiritual sea first. Otherwise, if his soul was shaken it would be difficult to deal with anything that followed.

Kacha!

The spiritual sword crashed into the protective demon barrier and broke apart.

But at this time, the short lance struck the abyssal Elder's body, causing him to vomit out a mouthful of black blood and sending his body flying away like a broken kite.

But while he tumbled away, the abyssal Elder's eyes flashed with a sharp light. He borrowed the momentum of the strike to plunge away, rushing far away from Lin Ming!

He wanted to flee!

He knew that this was a trap purposefully aimed at him and he also knew that he couldn't win in a fight, thus he had no intention of tangling himself up here with Lin Ming. Rather, he first thought of fleeing into the void sea. Then he could go to the high level figures of the Demon Association and report this shocking news to them… that there was a being of the 33 Heavens capable of disguising himself as an abyssal demon, and even simulate the accompanying abyssal aura! This was a disguise that not even a True Divinity was able to see through. This was information that was absolutely capable of placing the abyssals on guard against the 33 Heavens!

Moreover, what was most notable was that Lin Ming's aura didn't seem to be that of the ancient race descendants born in the Dark Abyss, but from one of the current races of the 33 Heavens – this information was even more important!

Of all the abyssals capable of stepping into the True Divinity realm, none were weak. Even though this abyssal Elder had been seriously wounded, he could still erupt with an incomparably terrifying strength for a short period of time.

And at this time, what lay in front of the abyssal Elder was the grandmist force field that blocked off the surrounding space!

MW Chapter 2101

Chapter 2101 – Slaying a True Divinity

…

…

…

As Lin Ming galvanized his strength to the limit, the grandmist space was like a thick black curtain that isolated out the world!

Seeing this abyssal Elder try to run out of the grandmist space, how could Lin Ming allow him to do as he pleased? At this time, Lin Ming was already being reckless in his actions. He lured the abyssal Elder to the void sea and had even displayed all his combat methods. Otherwise, while he would have had the ability to defeat a True Divinity, trying to kill one would have been far harder.

However, if Lin Ming put forth his full strength, then that might not be true.

“You’re not leaving!”

Lin Ming's eyes overflowed with killing intent. He absolutely could not allow this abyssal Elder to escape, otherwise the abyssals would be on guard against him and it would be impossible for him to enter the Demon God's Tomb.

The three avatars of Lin Ming rushed forwards together. At the same time, Lin Ming raised his right hand. Countless black motes of light gathered in his palm and created a mysterious nebula. From within this nebula, a black cube formed.

This cube was the Magic Cube!

The Magic Cube was the divine tool that Lin Ming obtained at the beginning of his road of martial arts. At the start, he was only barely able to utilize the tiniest soul fragments within the Magic Cube. Slowly he learned to control the Magic Cube, using it to passively defend or even search for information. And now Lin Ming could finally take out the Magic Cube and use it as his own weapon, even in front of his enemies.

The Magic Cube was the reason why Lin Ming dared to lure out a True Divinity level abyssal, the source of his confidence that he could strike down his opponent!

The moment the Magic Cube flashed into existence, Ruby also appeared.

Her small hands were stretched out in front of her. From her palms, pure soul energy gushed out, all of it flowing into the Magic Cube.

For the 5000 years that Lin Ming cultivated in Tragic Death Valley, Ruby stayed in the Magic Cube space. She was a soul life form condensed from the Magic Cube, and only with the Magic Cube could she grow.

If she were in the outside world then her growth would be just like Fishy's, falling into a period of stagnation.

Now, after experiencing 5000 years of time, although Ruby hadn't grown up, her soul force had made considerable progress forwards. With her as support, it would be easier for Lin Ming to utilize the Magic Cube.

In an instant, a giant black vortex rose up between the heavens and earth. This vortex seemed as if it could swallow the world itself. Endless sea water soared into the skies, forming a reversed waterfall!

A massive traction force locked onto the abyssal Elder's body. Moreover, this suction was aimed right at his soul!

Compared to when Mo Eversnow burned her source soul force to activate the Magic Cube tens of thousands years ago, the Magic Cube in Lin Ming's hands now displayed a might that was hundreds and thousands of times greater!

This was a world seed condensed by a super universe that stood even with the 33 Heavens. Its strength was infinite, but, the amount of strength that could be drawn out depended on the user.

Lin Ming's strength was above this abyssal Elder's. Now that he galvanized the power of the Magic Cube, the strength that erupted could no longer be resisted!

But, this wasn't the end. As the Magic Cube erupted with that horrifying suction force, the three avatars also shot forwards!

The Black Dragon Spear had been handed to the three avatars. The three of them fused together, combining essence, energy, and divine, as they wielded the Black Dragon Spear as one and thrust it right at the abyssal Elder!

The Black Dragon Spear howled outwards. The spear light tore open the heavens and crashed down with overwhelming potential!

In that instant, the abyssal Elder's complexion changed.

He wasn't afraid of the whistling Black Dragon Spear, but was afraid of the black cube that Lin Ming was holding.

"This is…!?"

He felt that his soul would be immediately sucked out by the terrifying gravitational force of the Magic Cube and then forcefully twisted apart.

This boundless and ancient strength stirred up a deep horror in his body. He recalled some legends recorded in the most ancient abyssal records, and these records left him scared.

Facing this terrifying strength, he bit down on his tongue without hesitation and spat out a fog of black blood. At this moment he burnt his blood essence!

“Get out of my way!”

The abyssal Elder suddenly raised his right arm. Blood vessels exploded beneath the tremendous pressure. His used his bloody hand to form a claw and grasp outwards. As he did, black smoke billowed with it, corroding space like the most concentrated acid.

Lin Ming’s three avatars thrust out the Black Dragon Spear, forming a brilliant beam of light that smashed into the black fog. But after touching the black fog, the Black Dragon Spear suddenly slowed and slightly trembled, as if it lost a great deal of its spirituality.

Lin Ming was startled; this black fog was a type of poison!

This poison was secreted from the abyssal Elder himself, it was one of the most toxic Poison Laws of the Dark Abyss.

This poison could kill swathes of Empyreans. Even if a True Divinity had a great deal of this poison enter their body, they would still lose half their life.

The abyssal Elder's eyes flashed with a grim light. Every drop of poison in his body was incredibly precious, and each was mixed with his blood essence. This was the condensed essence of his life. It was his final life-saving card, and now he had no choice but to use it.

Lin Ming's three avatars were all contaminated with this poison gas. It entered their bodies and they had no choice but to use their energy to eliminate it.

However, the Magic Cube's suction force ignored the poison gas; it continued to sweep towards the abyssal Elder's spiritual sea!

Facing this pressure that seemed to blot out the skies, the abyssal Elder's eyes flashed with a decisive light.

Blood escape technique!

Peng!

The abyssal Elder's blood vessels exploded as he spouted out a thick black fog of blood. This blood fog condensed into a phantom of the abyssal Elder, and then this substitute phantom was sucked into the Magic Cube's vortex instead.

And, the abyssal Elder took this chance while the substitute phantom was being sucked into the Magic Cube to erupt with sudden strength as he shot towards the edges of the grandmist space!

To give up a soldier to save the general, he sacrificed 20% of his life essence to temporarily escape the Magic Cube!

"Open for me!"

The abyssal Elder roared, his eyes blood red. He poured every ounce of his strength into his fists and pounded at the black curtain of the grandmist space!

Bang!

The grandmist space wildly shook and a massive impulse force coursed through it, reaching all the way from the skies to the seas. For a time, the surrounding sea for tens of thousands of miles began to surge like boiling water, wildly tumbling around!

The grandmist space was torn apart!

The exhausted abyssal Elder desperately rushed out of the grandmist space. And at this time, whether it was Lin Ming or his avatars, all of them were behind him!

He consumed far too much energy and was no longer capable of continuing to fight. As his heart filled with devastating hatred towards Lin Ming, he blew out more blood essence; he wanted to use the blood escape technique that would severely injure him again.

But, only the blood escape technique could instantly get rid himself of the Magic Cube's suction force and also rid himself of Lin Ming's chase. As long as he could flee 10,000 miles away, he could calm himself and use a great void shift to leave the void sea and return to Black Sand City.

Like this, he would be much safer. At the very least he would be able to pass on news of what happened!

However, the moment he broke open the grandmist space and was halfway through using his blood escape technique, his face suddenly froze.

He could see that standing in space a hundred feet away was a blue-clothed young woman. She was like a celestial maiden that stood above the world. As her dress floated about her, she grasped an ancient snakeskin sword that revealed no shine at all and cut downwards!

This blue-clothed woman was Mo Eversnow!

This sword strike contained her complete strength!

In fact, Mo Eversnow had already gathered her potential earlier on. She stood outside the isolating grandmist space, waiting for this chance to bring her sword slicing down!

Her strength was between that of a peak Empyrean and True Divinity. Compared to the strength Lin Ming revealed when he killed the Black Sand City Lord with two moves, she was slightly weaker. But, with the help of this ancient sword in her hands, her strength could rise to a new level, allowing her to resist the all-out attacks of a lower True Divinity for three moves.

This ancient sword was the ancient God King's inheritance that Mo Eversnow had obtained. It possessed a marking of the ancient God King's remnant soul and its might was unfathomable!

Mo Eversnow had been waiting for a weakened enemy and had a divine weapon helping her.

As for the abyssal Elder, he was already spent and his blood essence exhausted.

The result of this collision was already set in stone.

Chi-la!

The abyssal Elder’s blood fog was sliced in half by Mo Eversnow’s sword. Before his blood escape technique could be activated, it was already ended!

And after this sword cut apart the abyssal Elder’s blood escape technique, it continued without slowing, slashing directly onto the abyssal Elder’s chest.

His protective demon power was chopped apart and his scales burst open!

Although the wound wasn’t deep, the impact was massive. It sent the abyssal Elder hurtling backwards.

And behind him was the Magic Cube and its deadly vortex!

At this time, Lin Ming would no longer give him any chances!

Lin Ming poured out all of his strength. The power of divinity and demons connected in front of him, forming a yin yang wheel. As for Ruby, her face was flushed red as she sent all her energy into the Magic Cube!

The massive black vortex nearly shredded the abyssal Elder's spiritual sea to pieces!

"Ahhh!"

The abyssal Elder cried out. But at this time, Lin Ming's three avatars had already scattered the poison gas within them and were pouring their powers of essence, energy, and divine, into the Black Dragon Spear!

Woosh!

The Black Dragon Spear tore through the void, piercing through the abyssal Elder's protections with unbelievable speed.

Peng!

The long spear passed through the abyssal Elder's body, cutting through his heart and shooting out from his body without end. A rain of blood followed as a massive bowl-sized hole was left in the abyssal Elder's body!

And at this moment, the abyssal Elder's heart was torn apart.

Kacha!

The abyssal Elder had lost all strength to resist and was no longer able to defend against the soul vortex stirred up by the Magic Cube. The abyssal Elder's spiritual sea completely disintegrated and his soul was sucked into the black vortex.

At this time, a True Divinity level abyssal Elder had died.

His corpse fell down and crashed into the sea, his eyes filled with lingering hate, panic, and unwillingness…

The Black Dragon Spear flew back as if it had a mind of its own. It carried the abyssal Elder's body up with it towards Lin Ming. Lin Ming waved his hand and the abyssal Elder's spatial ring flew into his palm.

MW Chapter 2102

Chapter 2102 – The Wealth of a True Divinity Abyssal

…

…

…

When Lin Ming received the abyssal Elder's spatial ring, he began to revolve the Swallowing Laws.

A blood red vortex formed and the abyssal Elder's strength was constantly pulled out. A True Divinity level abyssal simply had far too much strength. As Lin Ming pulled it out, most of the energy dissipated away. But what remained was actually the essence.

Lin Ming used a quarter hour to pull out all of the abyssal Elder's strength. The energy slowly gathered, finally forming a dark gray energy crystal.

This energy crystal glittered with translucent light. Within the crystal, countless lines marred its surface, seeming as if they were mysterious and ancient Great Dao Laws.

Lin Ming could feel the strength inherent within it. It was cold in his hands, just like an icy jade.

In truth it was somewhat similar to the demon relic that Lin Ming obtained in the Asura Road's final trial. This crystal was formed from the most source essence energy within the abyssal Elder.

Grasping the energy crystal in his hand, Lin Ming took a deep breath. This was the first time he had struck down a True Divinity!

Once, a True Divinity had been an unimaginably distant goal to Lin Ming. In the past Lin Ming had been hunted down by a True Divinity, but today, with Mo Eversnow's help and with the Magic Cube supporting him, he had finally accomplished a miracle and slain a True Divinity!

Lin Ming put away the abyssal Elder's energy crystal. Then, he turned his hand and the abyssal Elder's spatial ring appeared in his palm.

A True Divinity powerhouse absolutely had to have a great deal of wealth. Moreover, this abyssal Elder originated from the Demon Association. For innumerable years, the Demon Association had engaged in all sorts of slave trade and their accumulated wealth had reached mind-boggling levels.

Lin Ming swept through the spatial ring with his sense and sucked in a breath of cold air. A dimensional realm was sealed within this ring, and just the demon crystals accumulated within were gathered in dozens upon dozens of mountains. Compared to the demon crystals he used to buy up the slaves, that amount simply wasn't anything at all.

Demon crystals were the cultivation resource used in the Dark Abyss and also the established currency. Whether it was Lin Ming using them or Mo Eversnow funding the Ancient God Uprising, these demon crystals could play a significant role.

"What's inside?"

Mo Eversnow happily asked as she flew over.

Today, she had been able to assist Lin Ming in killing a True Divinity level abyssal; she was in an excellent mood.

Lin Ming faintly smiled and threw the ring towards Mo Eversnow. "It's mostly demon crystals; there's not much else."

Compared to the 33 Heavens, the Dark Abyss has fewer mystic realms. This caused the abyssal Elder's collection of items to be a bit sparser in variety.

Of course, this so-called 'sparse in variety' was relative to a True Divinity level standard.

The truth was that the items contained within this ring were already astonishing. Besides a massive amount of demon crystals there were also dozens of cultivation method jade slips, however, most of them were Laws suited to abyssals so their value wasn't too great.

Outside the cultivation methods, there was also an internal pavilion of the Demon Association with dozens upon dozens of weapon racks placed within.

These weapons were mostly Empyrean spirit treasures, with only five True Divinity spirit treasures. Lin Ming chose a True Divinity level war halberd and then left the rest to Mo Eversnow as rewards for the Ancient God rebel army.

Within the abyssal Elder's spatial ring, there was also a medicine storage room. The pills inside were mostly blood pills specialized for abyssals. These pills had extremely potent and brutal properties, but to the abyssals that possessed formidable blood vitality, they were just right. However, to human martial artists and primal god race martial artists, there was actually a chance that their bodies wouldn't be able to withstand the medicinal efficacy and they would suffer a backlash.

Lin Ming took less than half of these pills and gave the rest to Mo Eversnow.

After Lin Ming emptied the medicine storage room, he discovered that there was actually a box sealed with an array formation.

This box was over three feet high and was made from neither metal nor jade; it seemed to be some kind of stone.

The surface of the stone was covered in blood marks. Even with Lin Ming's sense it was hard to penetrate through it.

Lin Ming took the box and carefully opened it. Within it were rows of black crystals stacked up together. These black crystals seemed to swallow all light, and even space and time distorted around them.

Lin Ming picked up a crystal. The crystals were only the arm of a baby's fist, but each one weighed a million jins.

Lin Ming's eyes brightened. These black crystals were top grade demon crystals that possessed an extremely high quality energy essence. These sorts of top quality demon crystals could help a high level abyssal make a breakthrough in their boundary, and were even beneficial to True Divinity level abyssals.

However, they were extremely rare in number. Oftentimes it was difficult to find one even in an entire mine of demon crystals.

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that this box of top grade demon crystals was far more valuable than those dozens of demon crystal mountains.

The energy contained in the demon crystals was used by abyssals. If Lin Ming's main body were to use them the cultivation effects wouldn't be too great. But, if Lin Ming could separate out a demon avatar then these would be highly advantageous treasures.

Lin Ming took all the top grade demon crystals; he had a great use for these things. As for the remaining treasures as well as the abyssal Elder's spatial ring, he gave it all to Mo Eversnow.

Mo Eversnow didn't put on false pretenses; she simply received everything he gave. "Lin Ming, what do you plan on doing next?"

Lin Ming said, "I will go deep into the void sea and enter the Magic Cube space. I want to look through this abyssal Elder's memories to see if I can obtain any information on the Demon God's Tomb. Then, I will focus on breaking through the Twofold Dao Palace and attack the late Empyrean realm at the same time. What about you, Senior-apprentice Sister?"

"I..." Mo Eversnow hesitated for a moment. An icy light flashed in her eyes. "I plan to return and organize the rebel army to capture Black Sand City!"

Mo Eversnow firmly said. Currently, the Black Sand City Lord and the Elders sitting guard there were all dead; Black Sand City was nearly emptied out.

There was a massive wealth in this city; it was a good chance to capture it.

“Good! However, Senior-apprentice Sister shouldn’t stay in Black Sand City for too long. Even if the current Black Sand City has become empty, it won’t take long for the Demon Association to respond and send over another True Divinity level abyssal if they wish. I suggest that Senior-apprentice Sister lead an elite squad of 100, all of them top masters, and then withdraw after making a targeted strike. Like this, the danger will be reduced to a minimum.” In the battle to capture Black Sand City, Mo Eversnow was more than enough. There was no need for Lin Ming to go nor did he have the time to participate. His greatest goal in coming to the Dark Abyss was the Demon God’s Tomb.

“Mm, that’s also what I intend.” Mo Eversnow didn’t pause as she spoke. She ripped open space and then vanished into the void. Since she decided she would capture Black Sand City, she naturally wouldn’t delay the battle.

The two parted ways in the skies above the void sea. After Mo Eversnow left, Lin Ming sank directly into the void sea.

The void sea was incomparably broad and unimaginably deep. Even if a large planet were to fall in it would still be fully submerged.

Lin Ming sank down tens of thousands miles deep. He searched for a mountain range on the sea floor and then flew into a deep canyon within the mountain range.

Lin Ming chose a relatively hidden place and opened up a cave that was hundreds of miles deep. Then, he blocked the entrance and sealed it up with concealing array formations.

Next Lin Ming took out the Magic Cube. He focused his thoughts and rapidly entered the Magic Cube space.

……..

“Big Brother Lin!”

After Lin Ming entered the Magic Cube space, Ruby immediately welcomed him. Because she had consumed a great deal of soul force just now her face was still flushed red.

Lin Ming lovingly patted Ruby’s head. For him to be able to smoothly and successfully kill a True Divinity level abyssal, Ruby had played a vital role.

Presently, Ruby was growing stronger and stronger. Lin Ming suspected that 10 billion years ago when the Immortal Sovereign held the Magic Cube, Ruby must have possessed an incredibly formidable strength. In addition to controlling the Magic Cube, it was hard to imagine just how great her combat strength was. However, because of that great war, she had been heavily wounded and thus lost her memories, becoming as she was now.

Afterwards she left the Magic Cube and her growth also stagnated. As for her memories, it was naturally impossible for them to return.

As for Fishy, the energy life form born from the Purple Card, she was likely in a similar situation.

In fact, Fishy was in a much worse situation than Ruby. When Ruby was in the Akashic Dream Universe she was able to retain a good portion of her abilities as an artifact spirit. However, Fishy's strength completely fell to that of a mortal's standard. This was probably because she hadn't eaten violet sun crystals for a long time, causing her to lose all her strength.

Thinking of Fishy, Lin Ming began to worry.

Just where had Fishy gone?

MW Chapter 2103

Chapter 2103 – Opening the Seventh Dao Palace

…

…

…

Lin Ming sat within the Magic Cube space. He wasn't in a hurry to open the Twofold Dao Palace. Rather, he summoned the soul of the abyssal Elder that was locked within the Magic Cube.

Ruby knew what Lin Ming was trying to do. She immediately connected her soul force with Lin Ming, and the two of them joined together to slowly wipe away the abyssal Elder's spirit mark.

Reading the memories of a True Divinity wasn't an easy task. Luckily, Lin Ming only wanted to inquire into memories concerning the Demon God's Tomb.

After a short while, Lin Ming obtained the information he desired.

The Demon God's Tomb would indeed open soon.

This was an extremely rare occurrence within the Dark Abyss.

Every large influence would send out high level abyssals to participate in this competition!

To win – one would have a chance of becoming a totem level abyssal; this was a lucky chance as high as the heavens.

To lose – one would likely suffer a cruel death and be beyond all hope.

In the legends of the Dark Abyss, only those who obtained the ceremonial rites books through lucky chances had the highest probability of passing the abyssal ritual's test.

However, there were simply far too few of these books. In the abyssal Elder's memories, during this opening of the Demon God's Tomb, there were only two ceremonial rites books in the entire Dark Abyss.

But there was no such requirement to enter the Demon God's Tomb. As long as those unfathomably strong old monsters of the Dark Abyss's several greatest influences joined together, they could open up the Demon God's Tomb.

At this time, as long as an influence had a certain degree of strength in the Dark Abyss, they would send out their higher abyssals to enter the Demon God's Tomb.

The Demon God's Tomb possessed not only the abyssal ritual. It was also a top cultivation land, and those who entered could stumble upon the greatest advantages.

Not only were there advantages to be found but all sorts of hidden secrets locked in independent spaces. Moreover, those that entered were abyssal demons, beings known for their bloodthirstiness and cruelty. If there was one matter that was impossible to avoid, it would be murdering others to steal their possessions!

Therefore, there was doomed to be a storm of blood and fury rising up in the Demon God's Tomb!

But the abyssals, who were suited to the law of the jungle, had no intention of stopping this. In fact they even tacitly consented to this sort of slaughter.

The superior would survive and the weaklings would be washed out – this was survival of the fittest!

In the Dark Abyss there was one absolute truth – that this was a world where strength reigned supreme!

Amongst the many advantages to be found in the Demon God’s Tomb, the greatest temptation was to become a totem level abyssal! Other lucky chances simply weren’t worth mentioning at all in comparison.

Thus, in front of such great temptations and interests, the lack of the so-called ceremonial rites book that allowed one the greatest chances of passing the abyssal ritual simply wasn’t a deterrent at all.

Within the Demon God’s Tomb, there would certainly be a situation where everyone competed for these ceremonial rites books!

And these books could not be hidden. Within the Demon God’s Tomb, they would always be found.

A person who obtained a ceremonial rites book would become the target of all. It might seem that no one would be willing to become the person who first found a ceremonial rites book, but this wasn’t the truth at all. This was because the person who obtained a ceremonial rite book would not just suffer the dangers of possessing one, but also be able to experience a great lucky chance.

In the Demon God’s Tomb, the level of risk corresponded to the size of the lucky chance – this was a rule of the Demon God’s Tomb.

After looking through these rules, Lin Ming was left silently dumbfounded. The Demon God’s Tomb was far too brutal and merciless. Compared to the mystic realms that Lin Ming went through in the past, they simply couldn’t be compared, and the difference was extremely high.

This was a brutal mystic realm where weaklings were turned into fertilizer to make the powerhouses stronger!

And the so-called ‘weaklings’ here were all higher abyssals gathered from the various great super influences of the entire Dark Abyss – each one of these weaklings was at the Empyrean realm or above!

This was a grand slaughterfest that those at least at the Empyrean level participated in!

After reading through the abyssal Elder’s memories, Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath. Excitement started to shine in his eyes. He could feel his blood begin to boil with fighting intent!

To engage in slaughter with higher abyssals, this was something he earnestly wished for!

But before that, what Lin Ming first had to do was open the Twofold Dao Palace and attempt his breakthrough to the late Empyrean realm.

Lin Ming lifted his abyssal disguise and restored his human body. Then, he silently sat in meditation, displaying all the materials he needed to use in front of him.

His figure was hazy and he merged into the surrounding void. With it, the Magic Cube space seemed to become infinitely vast, and the Laws of the 33 Heavens penetrated in without any barriers.

For a time, the void where Lin Ming was turned into boundless starry skies.

The stars resonated and the Laws bowed in submission all around. From beneath him, rivers of Laws appeared, formed from the Great Dao.

Lin Ming's pores emitted infinite light. Every wisp of light seemed to have a lifelike immortal sitting within, chanting ancient scriptures.

True Dragons soared in the air, True Phoenixes wildly danced.

Suddenly, the Daevic Eye Dao Palace between Lin Ming's eyebrows split open and shot out a blinding light.

This light contained millions upon billions of dao patterns filled with vicissitudes. Every wisp seemed inlaid with golden stones, emitting a terrifying universal will. It was like an invisible hand reaching into the deepest reaches of the galaxy and suddenly tearing it open.

From the deepest parts of the endless void, rivers of stars flowed and nine massive stars manifested.

One of these stars emitted an extremely mysterious starlight, as if a world seed was being bred within. It constantly tumbled about and shined with splendor, emitting a misty and strange starlight.

This star was the star that corresponded to the Twofold Dao Palace.

“Come down!”

Lin Ming bellowed. Divine power formed a bridge that crossed the void and with a light rustling sound, sprang towards the Twofold Dao Palace.

The divine bridge hadn’t yet touched the Twofold Dao Palace when a dragon dao diagram appeared from nowhere and blocked the Dao Palace, forming indestructible shackles of the Heavenly Dao.

This dao diagram exuded a hazy glow. It shrouded the Twofold Dao Palace and constantly emitted keening vibrations.

Lin Ming frowned. This was the heaven and earth dao diagram that had blocked the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace before.

After subduing Famine's avatar, Lin Ming had cut off the divine chains of order within Famine's body, but a part of these divine chains still existed in Famine's main body. The chains that bound the karmic connection between the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and humanity had yet to be fully unraveled.

But now, to Lin Ming, these sorts of chains weren't anything at all.

Lin Ming waved his hands. Yin and yang energies rose, becoming a massive heaven-covering palm that blotted out the skies, maliciously smashing into the dao diagram.

This dao diagram exploded like glass beneath the impact. Lin Ming grasped that shining star and absorbed it into his hand!

Weng!

With a light sound, Lin Ming was wrapped in endless radiant power. He could feel a strange life forming in his body as waves of divine power pulsated.

As if there was something trying to break out of a cocoon.

“Condense!”

Lin Ming roared. Beams of starlight drilled out from his body and started to flow around him and weave together.

Not just that, but from the deepest parts of his soul, a part of his life’s essence energy blended together with this starlight.

Beside Lin Ming endless strength gathered, twinkling, gradually taking human form similar to Lin Ming.

And from this strange phantom, he could feel a sort of inexplicable intimacy, as if it blended with his flesh and blood.

This was the body formed from the Twofold Dao Palace using one’s life essence energy as a foundation – it used the strength of the Twofold Dao Palace and World Laws to manifest.

It was currently only a phantom. But like a seed that was just planted, what followed was the most important!

Lin Ming took a deep breath and fell silent.

He looked at this phantom formed of starlight and gripped his fists. Then, he revolved the power of demons within his body to the limit. At that time on his handsome face, things like black centipedes crept beneath his cheeks, sticking outwards.

His appearance suddenly became fierce and hideous.

Not just that, but his hands and feet, every inch of his body gushed out black gas. This black gas was the power of demons that was rooted in his body.

As every wisp of the demon power leapt out from his body, it was like Lin Ming's flesh and blood was forcefully tearing itself off, causing a web of pain to course through his body.

When the power of demons fused into Lin Ming's body, it was because he controlled Famine's soul that he was able to subdue it. But now that he was attempting to forcibly pull it out, the demon power was set off in a rage.

Even though his body was more tenacious than a True Divinity spirit treasure, it still started to erode and collapse beneath the power of demons.

Still, faint traces of the power of demons was drawn out and poured into the phantom formed of starlight.

This was originally a virtual phantom created by Lin Ming's life essence and starlight, and in the process of forming. With this massive power of demons integrated into it, the phantom became increasingly perfect. Faint traces of flesh and blood started to appear, plumping up the phantom, just like a demon being born.

Hu - !

With a flicker, blazing black flames appeared in the void of the phantom's eyes.

MW Chapter 2104

Chapter 2104 – New Strength

…

…

…

The moment that black flames ignited in the eye sockets of the Twofold Avatar, a beam of soul light shot out from between Lin Ming's eyebrows.

This beam of soul light was Lin Ming's source soul force.

The Twofold Avatar was formed from dividing one's mortal body. However, the soul wasn't divided in two. Whether it was the main body's spiritual sea or the one in the avatar, they were both a part of Lin Ming's soul. In other words, Lin Ming had only one personality but simply had another body.

If Lin Ming were to lose this avatar then he would lose not just his source blood vitality but also a part of his soul that he kept in the avatar. At that time, Lin Ming's strength would rapidly drop down and even his spiritual sea would suffer catastrophic damage. This was something that Lin Ming absolutely would not be able to withstand.

At this time, the giant soul of Famine resided within Lin Ming's massive spiritual sea, locked down by countless soul chains. After being refined for over 5000 years in Tragic Death Valley, Famine's soul had long since been forged into an independent consciousness by Lin Ming. Lin Ming's source soul force had already condensed into countless soul seals that marked Famine's soul. Now, even without the shackles of these soul chains, Lin Ming could still make use of Famine's soul.

"Divide!"

Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a sharp light. In the skies above Famine's soul, a divine soul sword appeared.

As this divine soul sword came cutting down it was like a bolt of divine lightning thundering down from the heavens!

Chi-la!

Famine's soul was split in half by this sword!

In that moment Lin Ming also paled. As for the separated part of Famine's soul, it was poured into the demon avatar.

The moment Famine's soul entered the demon avatar, his body suddenly shook and his complexion became increasingly ugly.

And then, the newly born demon avatar's figure became increasingly illusory. Blood vessels rose up over its body like worms, making it seem hideously fierce.

Peng!

Blood vessels exploded. The demon avatar's expression twisted as the power of demons surged within it, nearly exploding from its body!

Since the moment Lin Ming opened the Twofold Dao Palace, he had finally encountered a crisis. While separating Famine's soul and also separating his own source soul, his avatar's blood vitality became unstable and nearly burst apart.

To condense the demon avatar was actually an incredibly difficult process. This was because the avatar needed a huge amount of energy, and just the starlight of the Nine Stars and the power of demons within Lin Ming's body wasn't enough.

Lin Ming grit his teeth and stretched out his right hand.

Woosh!

A glittering and translucent crystal with countless profound traces on its surface suddenly appeared in Lin Ming's palm. This was the energy crystal of a True Divinity abyssal Elder.

As this crystal appeared, it pulsated as if it had a life of its own.

Without hesitation, Lin Ming thrust this demon crystal in between the demon avatar's eyebrows!

The demon crystal sunk in like a stone thrown in a lake, slowly submerging into the avatar's head.

When the energy of this True Divinity level abyssal was being condensed, the majority of it was tossed away. What was left behind was the most distilled essence.

This energy was directly absorbed by the demon avatar.

In that moment, Lin Ming felt surging killing intent emitting from the demon avatar. This killing intent didn't originate from Lin Ming's soul, but from his body. This was the instinct of the demon avatar's body.

The True Divinity abyssal's energy crystal slowly dissolved. Black flames spat out from within the demon avatar's body, swallowing all light in the world. Its bloodline began to gradually solidify into reality.

A True Divinity level abyssal's energy essence had all been poured into the avatar. This energy essence flooded the avatar's skeleton, meridians, utterly penetrating into every inch of the body. Lin Ming suddenly felt the strength of his avatar rapidly rising.

Lin Ming stared at his avatar, feeling every bloodline in it. This energy that seemed on the verge of explosion left him overjoyed.

One of the greatest reasons why the Twofold Dao Palace was able to increase a martial artist's strength was because it only took a minor amount of blood vitality from a martial artist to condense the elementary form of the avatar. After that, by using the power of the Nine Stars, the energy of the outside world could cast the avatar a true body, having the strength of the avatar reach the peak.

More and more of the True Divinity abyssal's demon power fused into the avatar. It was like burning flames were being bred within the demon avatar.

Lin Ming didn't stop here. Rather, he continued to move. With a wave of his hand, a pile of black crystals was crushed apart. These black crystals were all top quality demon crystals that he obtained from the True Divinity abyssal's spatial ring. Now, he had broken all of these demon crystals apart, and infinite essence energy turned into a raging current that flooded towards the demon avatar.

A giant vortex seemed to appear in the skies. As for Lin Ming's demon avatar, it stood in the center of this vortex, greedily absorbing all this strength.

Ka ka ka!

With faint cracking sounds, another top grade black crystal disintegrated into white powder.

As for Lin Ming's demon avatar, its muscles started to bulge. It rose up, becoming taller, turning into a 30 foot tall giant.

Blood vessels ruptured across the demon avatar's body. Because of the massive energy impact, the demon avatar emitted loud crackling sounds from every joint, as if it were finding it hard to withstand so much energy.

Seeing this demon avatar that was nearly bathed fully in blood, Lin Ming focused his concentration. At this time, he could feel many abyssal Laws slowly carving themselves into the demon avatar's marrow, flesh, and blood.

These abyssal Laws originated from the demon crystal left behind by the True Divinity level abyssal Elder, the Asura Road's demon relic, and the infinite Laws that Famine swallowed.

More and more Laws gathered and gradually reappeared on the surface of the demon avatar, forming beautiful demon seals.

And at this time, the demon avatar's strength had been compressed to the extreme. Lin Ming waved his hand a third time and dozens of blood pills flew out.

These blood pills were all broken apart by Lin Ming using the power of divinity. The pure blood vitality contained in these pills transformed into blood dragons that clawed at the air and then shot into the demon avatar's mouth.

These blood pills came from the True Divinity abyssal Elder that Lin Ming killed. They were treasures that were greatly beneficial to an abyssal and could even enhance an abyssal's boundary. Now, they were all used to benefit Lin Ming.

After killing that True Divinity abyssal, Lin Ming could be said to have utilized the abyssal's treasures to the limit.

As the blood pills entered the avatar's mouth, they turned into billowing demon blood vitality that nourished and baptized the demon avatar.

The demon avatar's pores started to emit black gas. Its bones were tempered by blood vitality, becoming as bright and pure as black jade.

This process continued for an unknown period of time until finally all the top grade demon crystals had exploded into powder and the many blood pills were also completely swallowed up.

At this time, nine dazzling stars appeared in the skies once more.

Of these nine stars, the brightest seventh star shot down a dark brilliance that covered the demon avatar.

This was the final baptism of starlight. Now Lin Ming's Twofold Dao Palace had completely opened and the demon avatar had taken form!

This demon avatar, from appearances alone, was somewhat similar to Empyrean Primordius. It was 30 feet tall with massive black bone scythes jutting out from its elbows. From its back, a thick tail extended downwards.

Its entire body was covered in bone armor as hard as a True Divinity spirit treasure. Compared to Empyrean Primordius, this demon avatar's bone armor had even more demon seals condensed on its surface. These demon seals were ancient and delicate, possessing a natural beauty that faintly exuded mysterious Laws.

Seeing this avatar, Lin Ming let out a long sigh of relief. During that period of continuous condensation Lin Ming had consumed a vast amount of energy. Because he had to maintain perfect control over everything, he had to overdrawn his soul force. There were already beads of sweat dripping down his forehead.

The power of divinity gently revolved and all the sweat evaporated. Lin Ming's thoughts stirred and he turned into a beam of light that submerged into the avatar's body.

Within the demon avatar's body, there was also an inner world, one that was similar to that of Lin Ming's main body. Currently, Lin Ming was within this inner world, combining with it.

This was a perfect state of unity between the heavens and man. Once the avatar began a battle, the strength of Lin Ming's main body could pass through this inner world, passing into the avatar so that it could display its strongest combat strength.

And on the opposite hand, the avatar could enter his body and also accomplish a similar effect.

Hu - !

The demon avatar's eyes blazed with a deep blood red light. Its body began to shrink, reducing to a mere ten feet in height.

Looking at his own hands, Lin Ming slowly clenched his fists.

Ka ka ka ka –

His joints crackled. At this moment Lin Ming could feel that his strength had reached unprecedented heights. Now, if that True Divinity level abyssal Elder from the Demon Association were to stand in front of him, he wouldn't need to use the Magic Cube or borrow help from Mo Eversnow to kill him.

This was the last Dao Palace of the seven bright stars of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and the strength that it gave Lin Ming!

MW Chapter 2105

Chapter 2105 – Ancient Eon Sect

…

…

…

Although the Dark Abyss was said to have 18 layers, the truth was that very few people had ever set foot in the 18th layer.

This was a forbidden land of the Dark Abyss.

In normal situations, only a few ancient sects would decide to go into the 18th layer to undergo some dark rituals or establish large-scale array formations.

But sometimes there would be True Divinity level abyssals that would enter the 18th layer to go into seclusion and complete a breakthrough.

As for other situations, the Dark Abyss's 18th layer was nearly sealed off.

The Demon God's Tomb was located in the 18th layer of the abyss.

The day of the Demon God's Tomb opening approached.

And at this moment, in the layer above the 18th layer – the 17th layer where all the various large influences of the Dark Abyss were headquartered – they had already started aggressively making preparations for the Demon God's Tomb.

Now, in the entire Dark Abyss, there were only two ceremonial rites books; it was far too small a number.

Only when a totem level abyssal died would a new ceremonial rites book be born. Moreover, some of them had been long since lost to time.

When the Demon God's Tomb opened, a massive number of higher abyssals would enter. Most of them ventured in for other lucky chances, but if a ceremonial rites book were to be placed in front of them, any single one of them would be tempted.

Like this, the struggle for a ceremonial rites book would stir up a storm of blood and fire. Thus those sects that possessed a book began to form unions.

As for whether or not there would be unrest in the unions due to the existence of benefits, this was something that was temporarily put aside for later consideration. This was because in a situation where there was a common enemy, the influences in a union would first annihilate this common enemy before going back to competing for internal interests.

Deep King Road was one of the influences capable of organizing such a union. The reason they were able to do this was because in the Dark Abyss, Deep King Road was one of the two strongest totem level influences. Its leader was a totem level abyssal – Deep.

Moreover, Deep King Road controlled a ceremonial rites book!

Any abyssal that held a ceremonial rites book would surely become the target of everyone else. If one lacked ability, no one would dare to hold something that was both a sweet and tempting treat and also a bomb at the same time. Thus, when the Demon God's Tomb opened, the ceremonial rites books would be in the hands of the great influences with the deepest background and the books themselves would be given to the strongest abyssal demons and also the ones with the greatest potential.

There were many influences that wished to attach themselves to Deep King Road, of which two were even totem level influences.

Although they were totem level influences, the disparity between them was enormous. This was because some totem level abyssals had perished or gone missing while others were alive.

In fact, strictly speaking, only influences that had a totem level abyssal could be called true totem level influences.

And a totem level influence that didn't have a totem level abyssal could only be called a false totem level influence.

The Ancient Eon Sect was one such false totem level influence.

The leader of the Ancient Eon Sect was Eon, but Eon had already died. Even the ceremonial rite book that belonged to Eon had gone missing. Because of this, the Ancient Eon Sect inevitably began to decline.

A billion years ago, several amazingly outstanding abyssals had appeared in the Ancient Eon Sect and this rejuvenated it. At its height the Ancient Eon Sect stood in the middle of the six great totem level influences. However, 200 million years ago, these outstanding abyssals began to perish one after another, and the Ancient Eon Sect declined once more.

It was as if their destiny had come to an end.

Moreover, this decline was even more dramatic than the last. Now the Ancient Eon Sect had internally split into several factions, and each faction was controlled by one to two True Divinity Elders.

These factions did not have peaceful relations with each other and they even struggled against one another. If the Ancient Eon Sect were to disintegrate, no one knew whether these factions would be annexed by other influences or if they would remain independent.

The current Ancient Eon Sect could be called an alliance, an alliance that was in great disarray and lacked any semblance of unity. After another long period of time, dissolution or destruction was a high possibility.

On this day, the Ancient Eon Sect was discussing matters of opening the Demon God's Tomb.

The Ancient Eon Sect's True Divinity level abyssal Elders were discussing the situation in the main hall. The reason the Ancient Eon Sect was able to persist until now and still maintain their reputation as one of the six totem level influences, no matter how precarious a situation they were in, was all because this group of True Divinity level abyssal Elders supported the sect.

However, if this group of Elders were to die of old age, it was unknown whether or not a new generation of True Divinity Elders could be formed. This was the most dangerous time for the Ancient Eon Sect.

Now, the Ancient Eon Sect was discussing whether they should attach themselves to Deep King Road, to what degree they should attach themselves, and how the benefits should be assigned.

Only in the face of something as important as the opening of the Demon God's Tomb would the various Great Elders put down their prejudices and maintain a sense of unity.

And at this time, an abyssal disciple arrived in the meeting hall. He hurriedly said, "Reporting to the Elders, there is a royal abyssal that wishes... wishes to join the Council of Elders and become an Elder... moreover, they wish to obtain one of the spots to enter the Demon God's Tomb from our Ancient Eon Sect..."

As the many Elders in the meeting hall heard this news, all of them were shocked. Strange and wonderful expressions crossed their faces. They never thought that something so absurd would still be reported to them.

In particular, this conference of Elders was convened to discuss important business, and outside disturbance wasn't allowed.

Without waiting for these Elders to yell at him, the abyssal disciple hesitantly said, "The sect branch also reported something else. It seems that this royal abyssal... possesses... the long-missing 'Book of Eon'.

In the minds of the abyssals, the six ceremonial rites books corresponded to the totem level abyssal they were associated with. For instance, the Book of Eon, the Book of Famine, the Book of Evil, and so forth.

“What did you say!?”

Hearing the name of the ‘Book of Eon’, the Elders in the meeting hall were suddenly excited. Some of them stood up where they were.

“Where is he? Is this information true?”

The Book of Eon had been missing for far too long and no one knew where it was. And today, it had suddenly appeared in the hands of a royal abyssal; how could the Ancient Eon Sect not be shocked?

It was the holy treasure of their Ancient Eon Sect! The Book of Eon was no different from Eon itself being present!

There were even some people that believed the reason the Ancient Eon Sect went into decline was because the Book of Eon had gone missing. With the holy treasure of their sect gone, it was natural for them to lose their destiny.

“He is currently waiting in the main hall of the branch sect. It also seems he has the strength of an upper Empyrean so the branch sect cannot do anything to him. He hasn’t taken out the Book of Eon, so we do not know whether or not this information is true…”

Several abyssal Elders glanced at each other as they heard this and then set out to leave.

“Which branch division is it? Let’s go take a look now!”

To the Ancient Eon Sect, an upper Empyrean level abyssal wasn’t anything at all. But, if they possessed the Book of Eon, that was a completely different matter.

Within the entire Ancient Eon Sect, there was not a single abyssal demon that dared to disrespect the Book of Eon in the least.

The person that possessed the Book of Eon was also the voice of Eon.

Now, the question was, once they confirmed the existence of the Book of Eon, what should they do then?

.....

At this time, tens of thousands of miles away from the Ancient Eon Sect’s headquarters at a branch division, Lin Ming stood in the main hall. He had become the incarnation of an abyssal demon. From the moment that he had opened the seventh Dao Palace, three years had passed.

In these three years Lin Ming had successfully consolidated his boundary of the Twofold Dao Palace. However, the late Empyrean realm continued to elude him.

During this time, Mo Eversnow also successfully launched a surprise attack against Black Sand City. After her rapid strike she quickly withdrew without any hesitation at all. She managed to kill some higher abyssals and also take away a massive amount of wealth that the Demon Association had accumulated in Black Sand City.

For some time afterwards, the Ancient God rebel army ceased all activities.

Mo Eversnow knew when to stop. This was because she knew that the surprise attack on Black Sand City had nearly touched the Demon Association's bottom line.

If the Demon Association was truly serious then they would send out seven or eight True Divinity Elders to complete a full search of the entire 12th layer. Like this, they would certainly be able to find the Ancient God rebel army.

The day that happened would be the apocalypse of the Ancient God rebel army. Thus, the choice they could make was to rest up and build their strength. When the Demon God's Tomb opened up the Demon Association would be too preoccupied to deal with the Ancient God rebel army. At that time, the resistance could go all-out once more.

Lin Ming paced around in the main hall, silently looking upon a sculpture situated in it. This was a statue of an incredibly fierce demon.

The abyssal demons took Demon as their god and religion. They all considered themselves faithful subjects of Demon.

In the high abyssal language, the character ‘Demon’ was written with the most mysterious and most source Law runes. It represented the meaning of unsurpassed reverence.

Lin Ming gazed at this statue and quietly waited for the Elders of the Ancient Eon Sect to arrive.

MW *Chapter* 2106

Chapter 2106 – Conditions

…

…

…

In the main hall, several branch division Elders cautiously stood behind Lin Ming in fear that he might run away.

But, they also didn't dare to do anything to Lin Ming because he possessed the Book of Eon, and the one who held the Book of Eon could be considered the Voice of Eon. Not just that, but Lin Ming's cultivation wasn't low at all; at the very least, it was above theirs.

Lin Ming didn't speak and these branch division Elders remained silent. They had already reported the news and soon True Divinity Elders from the main faction would arrive here. At that time, Lin Ming would naturally take out the Book of Eon.

In the Dark Abyss, a ceremonial rites book was a peerless treasure. But its true value could only be displayed upon entering the Demon God's Tomb and passing through layers upon layers of tests. To the vast majority of high level abyssals, this was nothing more than a wild hope. Thus, Lin Ming didn't fear taking out the Book of Eon in front of everyone.

At this time, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He suddenly looked outside the hall.

He could feel several powerful auras rapidly approaching!

"The Elders have arrived!"

The several branch division Empyrean abyssals were overjoyed to discover this. As long as these True Divinity Elders arrived, they could turn this matter over to them so that they could deal with it.

If Lin Ming in truth didn't have the Book of Eon and was just playing around with them, then he would have just been seeking death.

But why would a royal abyssal with such an excellent future awaiting him do something so stupid?

Woosh!

The sound of space breaking resounded and eight True Divinities descended upon the main hall. Waves of True Divinity pressure arrived with them!

These eight Elders all wore uniform black robes. Embroidered on these robes were intricate stars and red suns.

The combined pressure of eight True Divinities was extremely terrifying. Lin Ming narrowed his eyes as he quietly assessed these True Divinity abyssals.

Most of them were lower True Divinities, but, the old man at the front gave off an unfathomable feeling; he was likely a middle True Divinity.

“You are the one?”

The leading old man strode into the main hall, his eerie red eyes locking onto Lin Ming and his voice filled with power.

As he spoke, waves of pressure and might fell upon Lin Ming like a waterfall. Before he confirmed whether or not Lin Ming possessed the Book of Eon, he was only testing Lin Ming without using much strength at all.

Facing this pressure, Lin Ming naturally wouldn’t feel anything. This caused the abyssal Elder’s eyes to widen; it meant that Lin Ming’s true strength was above the cultivation he revealed.

However, this wasn’t strange at all. After all, Lin Ming possessed a royal bloodline and it was something that could not be faked.

The old man’s voice deepened, “Take it out!”

Lin Ming looked at this old man, quietly judging his strength. Then, he waved his hand and an ancient black book appeared in the main hall.

As this ancient book appeared, the surrounding abyssal Laws were energized, emitting faint calls as if countless demons were calling out to it.

Upon seeing this, the eyes of all the True Divinity Elders shined.

“The Book of Eon!”

“It really is!”

Although this book had been missing for billions of years already, the moment the Book of Eon appeared, just from the Laws it contained and the special aura it exuded, all of the True Divinity Elders could affirm that this was the Book of Eon, it truly was!

Even though these Elders had traversed countless storms in their lives, all of them found it hard to remain calm. As they looked at the Book of Eon their eyes glittered.

"What are your conditions?"

The True Divinity old man looked at Lin Ming and spoke straight to the point.

Lin Ming was only an upper Empyrean and they were eight True Divinities. Moreover, some amongst them weren't ordinary True Divinities at all. If they wanted to kill Lin Ming, it wouldn't be any different than stepping on an ant.

But, this old man didn't dare to do anything to Lin Ming.

The one who held the Book of Eon was the Voice of Eon. This was a tradition of the six totem level influences and also the last words of Eon.

By all accounts, they even had to bow to the Book of Eon, because this Book of Eon could be called what Eon had become after its death.

Yet now, because the Book of Eon was held in the hands of a junior like Lin Ming, it was impossible for them to drag their faces on the ground and do something so disgraceful like bowing to him.

But stealing the Book of Eon from Lin Ming's hands was absolutely not possible. Even if they could keep it a secret so that no one else knew, they still wouldn't do something like this.

In regards to this, the credibility of their sect was secondary. What truly mattered were the words 'With the Book of Eon, that is Eon in person'. These words were not just some rule or tradition, but also the totem level abyssal's last words, and these words were likely connected to the destiny of their sect.

"You said that you wanted to join our Ancient Eon Sect's Council of Elders? And, you also wanted to obtain one of the Ancient Eon Sect's spots to enter the Demon God's Tomb?"

Another old man asked, looking at Lin Ming. Amongst the Ancient Eon Sect's Council of Elders, this old man's strength was second only to the middle True Divinity Elder; he should have possessed a peak lower True Divinity cultivation.

In truth, the Ancient Eon Sect's Elders had discussed before now that if Lin Ming truly insisted on joining the Council of Elders, this wasn't impossible.

Generally speaking, a member of the Council of Elders required a True Divinity level cultivation. Lin Ming was likely at the upper Empyrean realm, far from reaching that level. And, the key point here was that he clearly didn't originate from the Ancient Eon Sect.

If Lin Ming became a part of the Council of Elders, they certainly wouldn't be happy about that. But to exchange a mere position on the Council of Elders for the Book of Eon, this trade was far too worth it.

Moreover, even amongst the Council of Elders, the various members had different levels of authority. To just come up with a position for Lin Ming and have him occupy a useless seat wouldn't be difficult at all.

As for Lin Ming wishing to obtain one of the Ancient Eon Sect's spots to enter the Demon God's Tomb, they could also satisfy this requirement. Although these spots were precious, their Ancient Eon Sect could still afford one. At that time, whether Lin Ming lived or died inside, none of that would be their business.

In fact, if Lin Ming died it would be better for them. With his death all their troubles would end and they would be freed from future worries.

Lin Ming lightly said, "I don't have much interest in becoming an Elder of the Ancient Eon Sect. It's only that I heard that after becoming an Elder, I will be able to meditate upon the abyssal Laws and demon crystal left behind when Eon died.

“In addition, if I were to enter the Demon God’s Tomb through your Ancient Eon Sect, I would need further details, for instance, any maps of the Demon God’s Tomb. I believe you should have these things.”

The two further specified conditions that Lin Ming listed were from the information that he obtained from the Demon Association’s True Divinity abyssal Elder that he killed.

The terrain of the Demon God’s Tomb and the array formations within were highly complex. Moreover, it would change upon each entry.

In order to obtain the greatest lucky chances one would need maps.

As the six totem level sects, after a long period of slowly feeling their way through, they had slowly grasped the rules by which the terrain and array formations within the Demon God’s Tomb changed.

Every time the Demon God’s Tomb opened, they could use these rules and create a jade slip map. After reading, it would be immediately destroyed.

Two of the reasons Lin Ming came to the Ancient Eon Sect were because he wanted one of their spots to enter the Demon God’s Tomb and because of their maps.

But, neither of these were the main reason.

The most important reason was that after the Book of Eon entered the Demon God's Tomb, it would be impossible to conceal.

If he were to disguise himself as a disciple of a large sect and secretly mix into the troop that entered the Demon God's Tomb, then once the Demon God's Tomb opened and the Book of Eon suddenly responded out of nowhere, the reaction that would occur afterwards would be far too exciting, even for him.

An ordinary disciple with a questionable status had obtained the Book of Eon and tried to infiltrate into the Demon God's Tomb. This sort of matter would inevitably set off a great disturbance. It was likely that before he could enter the Demon God's Tomb he would already be surrounded by others.

Thus, Lin Ming might as well go through the Ancient Eon Sect and openly and honestly enter the Demon God's Tomb.

Hearing so many requests from Lin Ming, the lead Great Elder's face darkened. In particular, he didn't feel happy at all when Lin Ming said he didn't have much interest in becoming an Elder of their sect.

It had to be known that even though the Ancient Eon Sect had declined, they were still officially one of the six great totem level influences. It was simply impossible for common influences to stand side-by-side with them.

And when did their Ancient Eon Sect receive Empyrean level Elders?

Even a True Divinity would have to have their background verified, ensuring that they didn't harbor dark intentions before they could join the Council of Elders.

Now, an upper Empyrean like Lin Ming actually said he had no interest in becoming an Elder and was only interested in the Ancient Eon Sect's inheritance Laws. This naturally caused the Elders of the Ancient Eon Sect to be unhappy.

"The Laws can be perceived by you for three days, and the amount you can perceive will be your own situation. As for entering the Demon God's Tomb, a spot can also be given to you. Now, hand over the Book of Eon!" The Great Elder said, his voice icy.

However, when Lin Ming heard these words, not only did he not hand over the Book of Eon, he instead directly placed it back into his inner world...

MW *Chapter* 2107

Chapter 2107 – Compromise

…

…

…

"What is the meaning of this?"

Seeing Lin Ming put away the Book of Eon, the complexions of the Ancient Eon Sect's Elders turned icy dark.

"I seem to have never said I would give the Book of Eon to the Ancient Eon Sect, right?" Lin Ming confidently stated. "The ceremonial rites books are obtained by those who find their lucky chances. In the Dark Abyss, there also seems to be a legend that is spread out – that abyssals who obtain such a book will have an even greater chance to pass the test of the abyssal ritual."

As Lin Ming spoke these words, the Great Elder's eyes narrowed. He stared at Lin Ming for a long time and then quietly said, "Could it be that you… want to take the Book of Eon and enter the Demon God's Tomb?"

"Yes!"

As this word fell upon the ears of the Council of Elders, their complexions turned as dark as night.

The Book of Eon had finally returned to the Ancient Eon Sect after so many hurdles, so how could they possibly allow a junior to take it away? As for bringing it into the Demon God's Tomb, if he entered the Demon God's Tomb with just an upper Empyrean cultivation, wasn't that the same as tossing a meat dumpling into a pack of dogs and giving away the Book of Eon to others?

They originally thought that Lin Ming had brought the Book of Eon back to the Ancient Eon Sect to exchange it for certain conditions, and that because of the traditions of totem level influences, as long as his requests weren't too outrageous then they would have agreed.

But they never thought that Lin Ming would have these sorts of thoughts instead!

The truth was that out of the eight Ancient Eon Sect Elders present, most of their thoughts were that after obtaining the Book of Eon they would then quietly hide it away, and even after the Demon God's Tomb had been open for a long time they still wouldn't publicly announce that the Book of Eon had been returned to their sect.

They believed that even if one of their people brought the Book of Eon into the Demon God's Tomb, the chances of them obtaining the inheritance upon their bodies was slim to none.

The likely result was that the Book of Eon would be stolen away by others and their people would lose their lives.

But if they were to hide away the Book of Eon, conserving their strength until the Demon God's Tomb next opened, the perhaps the Book of Eon could find a better use.

However, there were three young Elders who didn't have such thoughts. Although they had just entered the True Divinity realm they were still young and their potential was relatively great. They each faintly believed that they had hopes of passing the abyssal ritual's test.

As for the next time the Demon God's Tomb opened, that was far too distant an event. They would be old by then and their potential would have diminished. The chances of them passing the abyssal ritual would be zero.

In other words, this opening of the Demon God's Tomb was their only chance.

The temptation of becoming a totem level abyssal was simply far too great, so great that they couldn't resist it. At this time, as the three young Elders looked at Lin Ming, their eyes shined with a strange and avaricious light.

"Just what nonsense are you speaking!?" The Great Elder suddenly shouted, finally becoming angry. Lin Ming came to their Ancient Eon Sect and wanted not just a spot in the Demon God's Tomb but also a map as well as the Laws and demon crystal left behind by Eon after it died.

He wanted all of that but also wanted to bring the Book of Eon into the Demon God's Tomb. He didn't offer anything return but wanted everyone to hand all the benefits to him. Just where in the world would there be such a good deed?

However, facing the Great Elder's icy words, Lin Ming remained calm. He said, "You can't actually believe that a mere map and entry spot to the Demon God's Tomb is enough to trade for the Book of Eon. As for the three days of meditation for perceiving the Laws and demon crystal left behind by Eon, I can't believe you would actually feel no shame in saying that. According to what I know, when these Laws and demon crystal are given to a member of the Council of Elders to perceive, this time period is usually given in decades or centuries!

"Everyone should understand more than me as to how valuable the Book of Eon actually is! It seems there are rumors that say the Ancient Eon Sect is in disarray and the sect's destiny has come to an end, and that all of this is related to the lost Book of Eon!"

Concerning matters about the Ancient Eon Sect's destiny, this was all information obtained from the Demon Association's True Divinity Elder.

This sounded a bit superstitious, but when one truly thought about it, it was actually quite true!

This was because the existence of the six great totem level influences wasn't formed by a pack of abyssal demons gathering together and clapping their thighs. Rather, these totem level influences were born.

Each one corresponded to one of the six totem level abyssals.

One totem level abyssal to one totem level influence, no more and no less.

Although some totem level influences had lost their totem level abyssal who led them, and could even be said to be in decline because of this, they at least still possessed their ceremonial rites books.

With the ceremonial rites books present, there were few influences willing to provoke them.

This was because no one could guarantee that there wouldn't be a day when some higher abyssal with a horrifying degree of talent would use this ceremonial rites book to pass the abyssal ritual and become a new totem level abyssal demon.

Like this, that declining totem level influence would bow to this new totem level abyssal and take them as their ruler.

Once this occurred, beneath the command of the new ruler, this totem level influence would surely come and seek out payment for all old debts. The influences that once coveted their power in the past would be punished and their entire sects might be exterminated!

Because of this, the majority of influences weren't willing to take such a risk to offend a massive colossus that had an extremely deep background and wasn't too weak to begin with.

However, the Ancient Eon Sect was different.

They didn't have their ceremonial rites book. After Eon died, the Book of Eon appeared in the Dark Abyss for a period of time before going missing. Since then it had gone missing for billions of years!

As time passed, more and more influences began to slowly believe that the Book of Eon would never be found again.

If so then the Ancient Eon Sect would never have a new totem level abyssal leading them.

And if there were only five totem level abyssals left, why should there be six totem level influences?

During these years, the Ancient Eon Sect had accumulated an incalculable amount of wealth, rare cultivation methods, skills, blood pills, top grade demon crystals...

There was even the crystal left behind by Eon in the past; this would surely be something coveted by all others!

This was also the reason why internal arguments broke out in the Ancient Eon Sect and numerous factions formed. The heart was always filled with worries. Some True Divinity level Elders thought that if the Ancient Eon Sect really was annexed by some other influence someday then the moment their sect was destroyed they could still take out their people and go somewhere far away, and not involve themselves in the ensuing chaos.

So, regardless of what was done, the reappearance of the Book of Eon was a great occurrence for the Ancient Eon Sect.

This was even true if it were taken away by someone else!

This was because news would always spread out. Of course, if they could keep the book in the Ancient Eon Sect then that would be even better.

After listening to Lin Ming poke at the Ancient Eon Sect's sore spot, several of the Elders felt their hearts skip a beat.

But, they couldn't help but acknowledge that what Lin Ming said was fact.

In terms of value, the Book of Eon might even be enough to trade for the Laws and demon crystal left behind by Eon!

The Great Elder didn't speak, only staring at Lin Ming. His gaze was as sharp as swords, as if he could pierce the void with his eyes. If an abyssal with insufficient strength were to be glared at by these eyes then their soul would be pierced!

Lin Ming confidently returned the Great Elder's stare. He continued to say, "Let's draw back 10,000 steps. Even if I brought the Book of Eon into the Demon God's Tomb and it was taken away by someone, news of this would still spread out and that would be an advantage for your Ancient Eon Sect. This is worth far more than those little things I want! Moreover, the one who holds the Book of Eon is the same as Eon itself being present and even possesses the authority to command the Ancient Eon Sect. You should not forget the traditions of a totem level influence!"

Lin Ming had already placed the Book of Eon back into his inner world. If these Elders didn't kill him then they couldn't obtain the Book of Eon.

But killing Lin Ming was something that these Elders didn't dare to do.

The Great Elder's lips twitched. Then, he smiled and said, "If that's the case, then we shall discuss matters concerning the Book of Eon later. We shall first return to the main faction for the time being!"

"Oh?"

The Great Elder's change in tone left Lin Ming slightly surprised. But in truth, he didn't think that this change in tone was strange, only that it was too sudden.

As the other Ancient Eon Sect Elders heard the Great Elder's words, they were stunned. Someone said with a sound transmission, "You are going to agree to his conditions?"

"And what if we don't?" The Great Elder rhetorically asked the other Elders as he looked them in the eyes. The other Elders were left at a loss for words.

"We shall return first and discuss this later." As the Great Elder spoke, he flew away.

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes and watched the Great Elder's figure vanish into the horizon, secretly on guard. Even with the Book of Eon serving as his protective talisman, he still had to be vigilant against any plans these old fellows might have.

Lin Ming didn't want to go to the main faction, but he wanted to look at the Laws and demon crystal left behind by Eon.

These were things that would be highly useful to Lin Ming.

Since he grasped the Book of Eon he would naturally have to go through Eon's abyssal ritual. If he could have his demon avatar perceive Eon's Laws ahead of time, then even if he didn't fully understand them it would still be beneficial.

Once he thoroughly perceived Eon's Laws, he could then leave the Ancient Eon Sect Headquarters to avoid any disputes that might come his way. He could search for some safe place outside and wait for the Demon God's Tomb to open up. This would be the more secure choice to make.

However, Lin Ming didn't expect that at unexpected times, destiny would come around with unexpected changes...

MW *Chapter* 2108

Chapter 2108 – Undercurrents

…

…

…

As Lin Ming followed the many Elders to the Ancient Eon Sect Headquarters, news that another Elder was joining the Council of Elders rapidly spread through the entire sect.

These people were all incredibly curious; just who was this new Elder and where had he come from?

However, they soon discovered that this new Elder was not a True Divinity level abyssal but an upper Empyrean.

For a time, the entire Ancient Eon Sect was thrown into an uproar.

It had to be known that within the Ancient Eon Sect, an Elder had extraordinary status. They possessed the authority to directly control the wealth of the sect, they could freely read through any rare cultivation methods, and they could even perceive the abyssal Laws and demon crystal left behind by Eon.

Such privileges left one simmering with envy!

In particular, when it came to perceiving the Laws left behind by Eon, there were simply far too many disciples in the Ancient Eon Sect that wished to do so. Because of this, it was nearly impossible to obtain the chance to perceive the Laws of Eon. According to the rules of the Ancient Eon Sect, only those who obtained accomplished great deeds and obtained enough sect points would be able to exchange them for a chance to meditate on Eon's Laws.

But the Elders weren't bound by such limits. Even if they had zero contribution points they could perceive these Laws whenever they wished.

Many high level characters within the Ancient Eon Sect dreamed of becoming an Elder.

But there was one condition to become an Elder. That was… one had to be a True Divinity level abyssal.

The disparity between an Empyrean abyssal and a True Divinity abyssal was far too great. To many Empyrean level abyssals, this was a moat that could not be crossed. Thus, their dreams of becoming an Elder could only remain dreams.

But now an upper Empyrean level abyssal had somehow magically become an Elder, and this newcomer would be apportioned some of the time allowed to perceive Eon's Laws. How could anyone be convinced by this?

Suddenly, from all through the Ancient Eon Sect, both high and low, many disciples were unhappy.

Because the Council of Elders had yet to announce that the Book of Eon had been found, the disciples didn't know why Lin Ming was able to become an Elder.

On almost the second day since Lin Ming entered the Ancient Eon Sect, many of the sect's Empyrean level abyssals desired to challenge him.

Compared to the humans of the 33 Heavens, the abyssals preferred to be direct and find solutions to problems through violence. This was a world where strength was revered above all, and if they didn't like what they saw they would change it with their own strength.

Within the Ancient Eon Sect, where would there be Empyrean level abyssals that dared to challenge an Elder?

But, the situation was different if that Elder was only an upper Empyrean level abyssal.

If their strength was greater and their cultivation was higher, how come Lin Ming could become an Elder but they couldn't?

This was the thought process of the overwhelming majority of Empyrean level abyssals. Several Empyrean abyssals had already cultivated to the peak Empyrean realm, moreover, they were even outstanding existences amongst peak Empyreans. In the Ancient Eon Sect their status was only inferior to the Council of Elders'.

They had been in the sect for so many years and had always coveted the position of Elder. Yet now, some outsider had ridden above their heads to become one, so these people certainly weren't happy about these events. These people all had loud voices and a great deal of power. Driven by them, the sounds of discontent grew louder and louder in the Ancient Eon Sect.

Now some peak Empyrean level abyssals and upper Empyrean level abyssals, and even middle Empyrean level abyssals, requested to challenge Lin Ming. Their momentum was far too great and their requests made it to the Council of Elders.

But the Council of Elders didn't do anything about this at all. They had no obligation to help Lin Ming in this matter, and as they saw this situation, some of them even gloated over it.

If one wished to become an Elder with an upper Empyrean cultivation, then they would naturally have to face the troubles that followed it.

If Lin Ming were to walk through the Ancient Eon Sect in the future, one could expect that there would be higher abyssals challenging him from all corners.

In truth, besides being able to examine some of the internal texts in the Ancient Eon Sect, Lin Ming's title as Elder gave him no true power or prestige.

However… Lin Ming had no plan to walk through the Ancient Eon Sect to begin with, and he simply turned a blind eye to all his challengers. As soon as he entered the Ancient Eon Sect, he went into seclusion and started to perceive the Law crystal left behind by Eon.

This left many Empyrean level abyssals even more dissatisfied; they felt that Lin Ming was timid, scared of them.

However, since Lin Ming was in seclusion, they naturally couldn't do anything against him. They became even louder.

Seeing this situation, several Elders of the Ancient Eon Sect gathered in the Assembly Hall.

"Elder Eon God, about this matter concerning the Book of Eon, what do you plan on doing? Are you really planning to allow this boy to take the book into the Demon God's Tomb?"

Within the hall at the highest heights of the Ancient Eon Sect, an Elder suddenly asked.

Every Elder of the Ancient Eon Sect had their own title, a title that started with ‘Eon’. But, there was only one who could be called Elder Eon God – this was the Ancient Eon Sect’s Great Elder.

The Ancient Eon Sect had no Sect Master. According to traditions of totem level influences, the Sect Master of a totem level influence was the totem level abyssal itself.

Now that Eon had died, the seat of Sect Master had been empty for all these years.

“This Ninth Elder isn’t even at the True Divinity realm. Even if he doesn’t bring the Book of Eon with him, the chances of him surviving the Demon God’s Tomb are low to begin with. And if he were to bring the Book of Eon with him, he would absolutely be seeking death!”

Another Elder said. The Ninth Elder he referred to was Lin Ming.

When Lin Ming entered the Council of Elders, he was ranked ninth; this was also the last rank. He didn’t have a title and the Council of Elders didn’t even know his name nor could they be bothered to find out.

Thus, they simply called Lin Ming the Ninth Elder.

An upper Empyrean level abyssal wanted to take a ceremonial rites book into the Demon God’s Tomb. In this situation, any logically-thinking abyssal would believe he would die without a doubt.

Another Elder said, “We’ve obtained the Book of Eon after so much difficulty; we cannot lose it again.”

To the Ancient Eon Sect, the Book of Eon was an object required to stabilize their sect’s destiny. If the Book of Eon were to be wrested away by someone after being taken into the Demon God’s Tomb, then no one would feel comfortable about this.

Facing the questions of so many Elders, the Great Elder remained silent.

The Great Elder thought for a moment, then said, “Have you all thought about why the Ninth Elder wishes to bring the Book of Eon into the Demon God’s Tomb, what his goal is?”

The Great Elder’s words caused the rapid discussions to slow down. In truth, they had also thought of this question but they just couldn’t figure out why.

The Great Elder continued to say, “The Ninth Elder should know that with his strength alone, it should be impossible for him to protect the Book of Eon from others. In this world there are always arrogant and conceited individuals in all generations, but there shouldn’t be anyone arrogant to such a degree. Rather, this would be stupid, and the Ninth Elder isn't stupid at all. Thus he should have another goal in mind."

As the Great Elder finished speaking, another Elder said, "No matter what his goal is, it isn't anything good for us."

"That is true. The Ninth Elder doesn't come from our Ancient Eon Sect so it is impossible for him to do anything for our Ancient Eon Sect. He should only be using us for our asylum and being able to provide him with a spot to enter the Demon God's Tomb safely, all so that he can obtain his own benefits. So, I don't plan on letting him succeed..."

The Great Elder slowly said. A cold light shimmered in his faint red eyes.

This old abyssal was like a snake lying in the grass, flicking out its tongue and staring at its prey.

"Or, how about we just kill him now. Since the disciples who know about this have been sealed away by us, matters concerning the Book of Eon will also be absolutely confidential! If we kill him now and take away the Book of Eon, this would be the best and most simple plan!"

A younger Elder said. His Elder title was Eon Light and he was eighth amongst the Elders. He was the youngest of them but also possessed the greatest potential.

He had his own ambitions. He even wanted to take the Book of Eon and bring it into the Demon God's Tomb himself.

There were no rules in the cycle by which the Demon God's Tomb opened. Sometimes the Demon God's Tomb would open after several tens of millions of years, and sometimes it wouldn't even open once in a billion years.

If he missed this chance, there was no guarantee that he would be able to take the Book of Eon into the Demon God's Tomb in the future.

The Great Elder faintly looked at Eon Light, a meaningful look in his eyes.

Eon Light's stiffened and no longer spoke.

The Great Elder said, "The Book of Eon is connected with the influence of our totem level influence. This is not a rumor, but the truth. We cannot move against the Ninth Elder. Whether it is killing him ourselves or hiring someone to kill him, neither choice is one we can make. But, while we cannot move against him in that manner, we can still use some external conditions so that he cannot enter the Demon God's Tomb."

The Great Elder gently pressed down on the stone chair he sat on. He didn't use any force, just gently brushed it, but that chair made of timeless god stone seemed to experience the weathering of countless years as it turned to black dust and completely vanished...

MW Chapter 2109

Chapter 2109 – Distribution of Benefits

…

…

…

In a chamber within the deepest depths of the Ancient Eon Sect, Lin Ming was sitting down.

This space was an independent minor dimension, and left within it were the remnants of countless strong abyssal auras. These auras were all left behind by powerful supreme powerhouses of the Ancient Eon Sect who had gone into seclusion here before.

At this time, wonderful Law stones were spinning in front of Lin Ming, each one like an ancient supreme abyssal slowly spinning around, hovering about him.

When Eon died, he didn't leave behind just one demon crystal, but many of them.

After feeling Eon's relic crystals Lin Ming's demon avatar began to stir, as every inch of its flesh and blood bloomed with the aura of life and its skin began to wriggle.

The strength of Laws emitted by the relic crystals was slowly drawn in like invisible threads, quietly swallowed by Lin Ming's demon avatar.

The process of comprehending Eon's relic crystals was long, but also very smooth.

In his life, Lin Ming had perceived far too many Laws.

At the start he began with the simple Concepts of the Five Elements. Then, he progressed to the Space and Time Laws, the Yin and Yang Laws, the power of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, and even expanded that to the 33 Heavens Laws.

Lin Ming slowly discovered that all the Laws he comprehended before were in actuality branches of the 33 Heavens Laws.

And, the 33 Heavens Laws could be further divided into two parts. One was the Laws of the universe of the world, and the other was the Laws of the universe of the body.

For instance, the Nine Divine Shifts could be summed up as one kind of the world universe Laws. As for the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, that could be considered a kind of the body universe Laws.

Lin Ming cultivated both the Nine Divine Shifts and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace to large success, and it was then that he saw that outline of the Laws of the world universe and the Laws of the body universe; these were the Heavenly Sutra and Holy Scripture, Laws that were closest to the source of the Great Dao.

However, it was only afterwards Lin Ming learned that although the 33 Heavens' Great Dao was comprehensive and wide, it wasn't the only one in this world. In the Dark Abyss,the Laws were not the same.

These were Laws that came from the Dark Abyss and totem level abyssals. If the Asura Road Master's conjectures about the Dark Abyss were true, then the abyssal Laws were in fact the Laws left behind from the previous universe.

The higher Lin Ming stood, the more he was able to see.

And the more he experienced, the more he was able to further solidify his foundation so that he could climb higher up towards the peak of martial arts.

He faintly felt that if there was ever a person that was capable of thoroughly comprehending the entirety of the Heavenly Dao, then that person would be the heavens, that person would be the word, that person would be all.

That was likely the so-called peak of martial arts.

Time slowly passed. The demon avatar’s induction with the relic crystals continued, and its understandings of Eon’s Laws became increasingly profound.

At the same time, this avatar had a mysterious telepathic connection to Lin Ming. During the process of comprehension Lin Ming also obtained many inspirations.

After an unknown period of time, mystical runes began to appear on the skin, flesh, and blood of the demon avatar.

These runes were like stars shining within the universe, with waves of strength from profound abyssal Laws rippling all around them…

As this strength of Laws appeared around the demon avatar, the other abyssal auras in the chamber began to quiver, consciously avoiding the demon avatar as if they feared its existence.

And at this time, a crystal in front of Lin Ming suddenly flashed and a voice spread into his mind.

This caused Lin Ming to faintly frown. During this period of seclusion he had been silently counting the passing of time. He knew that there was still half a year until the Demon God's Tomb opened, and according to his original calculations he would still need to go into seclusion for a period of time.

But now the Council of Elders actually wished to summon him.

As the shine of the sound transmission crystal dimmed down, Lin Ming stood up and pushed open the chamber door. His figure flickered and he appeared at the meeting hall of the Elders.

At this time within the hall, the other eight Elders of the Ancient Eon Sect had already gathered in full.

They sat in a circle around a simple wooden table. The atmosphere was somber.

"What is it?"

Lin Ming asked.

Great Elder Eon God narrowed his eyes, sizing up Lin Ming without concealing it. He could faintly feel that Lin Ming's body surged with strength. It seemed that after a short period of seclusion, Lin Ming had undergone some drastic change.

"We must set out for Deep King Road." The Great Elder said.

"Mm? So soon?" Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. According to the information he obtained from the Demon Association's Elder, there had been half a year until the Demon God's Tomb opened. It was still too early to go.

The Great Elder continued, "This time, our Ancient Eon Sect will be cooperating with Deep King Road, as well as another influence – Nine Nether Palace. The three influences will form an alliance with Deep King Road as the head. We and Nine Nether Palace will obey the orders of Deep King Road to a certain degree…"

Nine Nether Palace…

Lin Ming had heard of Nine Nether Palace before. It was one of the six great totem level influences, and its totem level abyssal, 'Nether', had already died.

Nether seemed to have been severely wounded in the great war 10 billion years ago. Afterwards, its life force slowly passed away until it perished; this was equal to dying from old age.

Because Nether had died, Nine Nether Palace wasn't too powerful, just a bit stronger than the Ancient Eon Sect. During this venture into the Demon God's Tomb they would both have to take the stronger Deep King Road as their leader. Like this, it would be easier to preserve their strength and survive, and of course obtain more benefits.

The Great Elder continued, "Deep King Road is the strongest of us three so they are sure to receive the greatest benefits. But, the specific division percentage will be dependent upon the contrast of strength between us three. In other words, this is a comparison of martial strength."

"Oh? Martial strength?" Lin Ming raised his head. It seemed that heading out to Deep King Road early was so that there would be more time to compare martial strength.

"The specific rules are that we, Nine Nether Palace, and Deep King Road will each choose disciples from the name list of those who wish to enter the Demon God's Tomb, and these disciples will be the strongest. Us and Nine Nether Palace will choose three people each and Deep King Road will choose six people.

"There will be a total of 12 people. The six people between us and Nine Nether Palace will contend with the six people from Deep King Road. The challenges will be initiated by our side and you can freely choose whoever you wish to challenge among the six people of Deep King Road. You can even repeat challenges. Then, at the end, how we decide on the specific division of benefits will depend on the number of defeats that both sides rack up."

As the Great Elder spoke, Lin Ming was surprised. The Dark Abyss was truly a world where strength reigned supreme. Even in negotiations within an alliance, division of benefits was based upon who possessed greater martial strength and who possessed lower martial strength.

And looking at these rules alone, Nine Nether Palace and the Ancient Eon Sect were far too weak compared to Deep King Road. The two of them together couldn't even defeat one.

Deep King Road allowed the Ancient Eon Sect and Nine Nether Palace to initiate challenges, to freely challenge who they wish, and also to repeat challenges. In other words, Deep King Road was highly confident in every single one of the six people they would send out. Amongst the six, none were weak!

As Lin Ming thought of this he developed a sense of vigilance against Deep King Road's totem level abyssal. If he were to ever meet Deep, he surely wouldn't be able to escape its grasp.

"During this competition of strength, will Deep appear?"

Lin Ming asked.

The Great Elder chuckled. "Deep hasn't appeared in billions of years. It seems you still don't have much understanding into the six totem level influences."

Lin Ming quietly nodded at the Great Elder's words. When he obtained the memories of the Demon Association's Elder, it was impossible for him learn everything. To read through a memory that spanned over hundreds of millions of years would take far too much time, so he only focused on information related to the Demon God's Tomb.

The Great Elder then said, "You do not need to participate. Our Ancient Eon Sect can only choose three people to fight, so it isn't your turn yet..."

As the Great Elder spoke, Lin Ming could see traces of disdain on the three younger Elders, as well as some envy.

It was clear that these three Elders would be the three people who represented the Ancient Eon Sect during the competition.

They were the youngest of the eight Elders of the Ancient Eon Sect and their potential was the greatest, thus they were the most likely candidates.

The contemptuous expressions on their faces clearly originated from Lin Ming's relatively low cultivation.

As for envy, it was naturally because Lin Ming had stumbled onto the Book of Eon and had managed to become an Elder of the Ancient Eon Sect because of this. To be placed on the same level as Lin Ming was something they refused to accept.

Lin Ming didn't respond, nor did he feel anything about the expressions these three Elders were making towards him. After all, it didn't matter much to him just how high the division of benefits the Ancient Eon Sect obtained was.

He already knew that these three young Elders had unfriendly intentions towards him. They all wanted to enter the Demon God's Tomb with the Book of Eon.

"However..." At this time, the Great Elder suddenly changed the conversation. "Although you do not need to fight, there is still something you need to do.

"Currently, our Ancient Eon Sect is still blocking all information concerning the Book of Eon, thus no one knows about it. Do you know what will happen once we announce news that the Book of Eon has been found?"

The Great Elder's voice was cold and frosty. Without waiting for Lin Ming to reply, he said, "In the Dark Abyss, strength is everything. And if you enter the Demon God's Tomb it will be impossible for you to hide the Book of Eon. In other words, everyone will know that the book is in your hands, so sooner or later we will have to announce the return of the Book of Eon.

"And at this time Deep King Road will surely try to bargain with us. And, the method they will adopt will surely be to cede some of their benefits to us in exchange for the Book of Eon!"

The Great Elder coldly sneered as he said this. “Although exchanging for some benefits sounds nice, the truth is that it will be an exchange by force. And, it will be difficult for us to reject them. Even if the Book of Eon was ours to begin with, we still cannot refuse them. This is because without strength, we naturally do not have the rights to do so! Even most of the spots to enter the Demon God’s Tomb are in their hands!

“If we are stubborn and refuse to back down then they will threaten to leave the alliance and start pushing us aside, so that only a few of us can enter the Demon God’s Tomb. At that time, while we may still have the Book of Eon when we enter, we shall be surrounded by enemies on all sides. We will have become fish on the chopping block, so how could we possibly keep the Book of Eon?”

The Great Elder slowly said, his words justified and natural, without any falsities.

“And then?” Lin Ming’s eyebrows rose up. He looked at the Great Elder. He could faintly feel that what the Great Elder was about to say was his true goal in summoning him here.

MW *Chapter* 2110

Chapter 2110 – Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness

…

…

…

The Great Elder looked at Lin Ming and slowly said, “If you wish to enter the arena with the Book of Eon, then you must obtain approval from Deep King Road. First we will hide the news about the reappearance of the Book of Eon and wait until you obtain enough status in Deep King Road so your words have sufficient power. Only then will there be a situation where we can pay a certain price in exchange for you being able to enter the Demon God’s Tomb with the Book of Eon, and like this you will be able to live just that much longer.”

The Great Elder’s words carried with them a mocking tone, but Lin Ming didn’t care. Lin Ming gently smiled and asked, “How do I obtain sufficient status and authority? By strength?”

“It’s not just strength, but also your background. Just your background as an Elder of the Ancient Eon Sect will be meaningless to Deep King Road.

“If you can’t obtain more background and gain the approval of Deep King Road… then things will be different. And amongst the six totem level influences there has always been a custom, which is rules of marriage. The targets of these marriages are the young Elders of the various sects, the chief disciples, or even the Holy Demonesses.”

“Marriage?”

Lin Ming felt the hairs all over his body stand on end.

Marriage was a matter that didn’t bring any laughter to Lin Ming. Moreover, he already had wives. And even if he didn’t… he simply couldn’t imagine taking in a towering abyssal as his wife. That sort of image wasn’t one he wanted to imagine…

Amongst the abyssal demons, there were species of abyssals such as succubus demons that conformed to Lin Ming’s aesthetic taste and were similar to humans in appearance. But in most cases, a succubus demon had ordinary talent so it was difficult for any masters to be cultivated from their ranks. To expect someone like a succubus demon to become the Holy Demoness of Deep King Road wasn’t realistic at all.

And besides succubus demons, the vast majority of female abyssals were simply too horrifying to look at.

“What you mean is that you want me to go to Deep King Road to marry?”

Lin Ming suppressed the weird feeling surging in his heart, his complexion ugly.

"That's right, is there a problem with it? The six great totem level influences are divided into two camps, and on one side stands our Ancient Eon Sect, Deep King Road, and Nine Nether Palace. Those that are hostile to us are on the other side. And since we are all in the same camp it's natural for us to have methods for maintaining our relations, and one of the most commonly used methods is marriage.

"Of course, whether it is Holy Demonesses, chief disciples, or young Elders, they all have high statuses thus marriage requires both sides to agree. In the past many young Elders of Nine Nether Palace wished to marry Deep King Road's Holy Demoness, but they were all rejected. Afterwards, because Deep King Road's Holy Demoness thought the matter was too tiresome, she came up with a rule, and that was that anyone who wished to marry her must surpass her, otherwise it would be impossible.

"Unfortunately her talent was far too great. Many abyssals that challenged here were all heaven-gifted geniuses of their generation, but none of them were able to surpass her. For instance, even the one with the greatest potential in Nine Nether Palace, the Nine Nether Son, was defeated in a single move... But since you have the confidence to hold the Book of Eon and enter the Demon God's Tomb with an Empyrean cultivation, then I believe you should also be confident in your strength. Moreover, I discovered that there are some aspects of you that aren't simple at all! Whether it was when I used my True Divinity level aura to probe you or the changes you underwent after perceiving Eon's Laws, everything allowed me to see how extraordinary you are."

The Great Elder's words left Lin Ming speechless. It seemed that this Holy Demoness was in high demand, but no matter how others struggled for her, he simply couldn't accept marrying an abyssal woman.

The Great Elder's voice remained calm and unhurried. "Deep King Road's current Holy Demoness also has an Empyrean cultivation, one similar to your own. If you can defeat her and marry her then that will be a great deed for my Ancient Eon Sect! This is because this in the future the current Holy Demoness will have great accomplishments."

To outsiders, the Great Elder's words really did sound as if he truly hoped for Lin Ming to win and for him to bring a great lucky chance to the Ancient Eon Sect.

However, Lin Ming clearly lacked any interest at all.

The Great Elder smiled. "You seem opposed to this Holy Demoness, but that is only because you haven't seen her yet. Once you see her you will change your mind. She is truly a perfect Demoness..."

The Great Elder giving such an evaluation startled Lin Ming. If this Great Elder was able to become a middle True Divinity, he naturally had his own strengths, and for someone to obtain the evaluation of 'perfect' from him likely wasn't ordinary at all.

"The truth is that even if you cannot accept this marriage, all you need is the relationship of a marriage with her. Even if you manage to defeat the Holy Demoness and marry her, you likely won’t be able to truly touch her or dual cultivate with her. She is a strange demoness, one that is cold and icy to all. So, even if you don’t wish to marry her, you can rest assured that this is only a title, a marriage in name only. Moreover, if you don’t do this then it will be impossible for you to enter the Demon God’s Tomb with the Book of Eon.”

The Great Elder thoughtfully said. Lin Ming faintly felt that this Great Elder seemed to always be trying to persuade him to agree to this. There were likely other ideas at play here…

Lin Ming looked at the Great Elder and still didn’t reply. But, he believed that some of the Great Elder’s words weren’t false. That was, if he didn’t use some special methods then it truly wouldn’t be likely for him to enter the Demon God’s Tomb with the Book of Eon.

Seeing Lin Ming deep in thought, the Great Elder suddenly waved his hand and a red light appeared in his palm. He reached out towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming took this red light in his hands; this was a scroll.

“Just take a look! This is her, a portrait of her!”

As the Great Elder’s voice fell, the portrait clattered and scrolled open. A woman appeared from the portrait and stood in the void.

This was no longer simply a portrait, but a complete projection of a woman, one that was no different from their true self.

Seeing this woman, Lin Ming was utterly shocked.

This projection of a woman was completely different from the image of an abyssal that he had in his mind. It wasn't even a succubus demon, because this woman had no tail and no horns.

She actually… appeared like the intelligent life forms of the 33 Heavens!

She wore a black dress that flowed like water and her upper body was covered in exquisite black armor. Her profile was tall and proud, and at the ribs of her armor, there were many hollows that revealed her sparkling jade-smooth skin…

Her face was as beautiful as a bright moon. And atop her forehead covered by her long hair, there was clearly a mark formed by flower petals.

There just happened to be nine of these flower petals!

This woman, whether it was in body, appearance, or the flower petal mark on her forehead, she was completely similar to Sheng Mei!

How was this possible!?

Lin Ming was bewildered. When he first entered the Dark Abyss he had seen a crystalline skeleton, a skeleton that seemed as if it might have been left behind by Sheng Mei's previous life from 10 billion years ago.

This had become a puzzle that Lin Ming couldn't work out. He had no idea just how Sheng Mei from the spiritas of the 33 Heavens was related to this woman's skeleton.

But no matter what, if he had to brute force some far-fetched explanation then things might make sense.

But now Lin Ming saw Sheng Mei in the Dark Abyss's 17th layer once more. Moreover, she was actually the Holy Demoness of Deep King Road. This simply completely subverted all ideas that Lin Ming had of abyssals!

Just what was going on here!?

Looking at this Sheng Mei with the nine flower petals between her eyebrows, she looked completely similar to the Sheng Mei of the past. But the Sheng Mei he saw among the spiritas didn't have such flower petals.

However, this point didn't prove anything. Could these be flower petals that only appeared after Sheng Mei completed the ninth revolution of the Grand Reincarnation Art?

Lin Ming couldn't confirm that Deep King Road's Sheng Mei was the same person as the spiritas Sheng Mei.

If this were true, Lin Ming couldn't figure out just how the spiritas' Soul Empress could simultaneously be Deep King Road's Holy Demoness. This was completely unreasonable.

But if this weren't true, then there could be one explanation, and that was if the spiritas' Sheng Mei cultivated the Laws of the 33 Heavens and the abyssal Sheng Mei cultivation the abyssal Laws, could it be that the mysterious woman from 10 billion years ago had reincarnated into the present age in two different Sheng Meis?

Lin Ming pondered this just for an explanation. However, his instinct told him that this wasn't right, because this explanation was far too forced in too many places. For instance, how could the ancient race Sheng Mei have reincarnated into an abyssal?

As Lin Ming looked upon Sheng Mei's projection, he was left in a daze.

And this daze was naturally seen by the several Elders of the Ancient Eon Sect.

A young abyssal Elder's eyes flashed with obvious disdain. He was one of the three young Elders who would enter the Demon God's Tomb.

"I originally thought that although he was a fool that wanted to commit suicide by entering the Demon God's Tomb, he still had some ability in terms of strength. But, I never thought that he would be so mesmerized by Deep King Road's Holy Demoness. Just by that portrait being taken out he's already turned into an idiot. Has he never seen a beautiful demoness before?"

This Elder contemptuously said with a sound transmission. In truth, abyssal demons had an extremely strange aesthetic sense. Not only did they accept the majestic and fierce abyssal women, but they even accepted the gentle and beautiful women like those of the ancient races or succubus demons.

Sheng Mei certainly belonged to the latter.

"It's useless no matter how much he stares. He's nothing but a toad wanting to eat swan meat. The Great Elder is indeed wise. This fellow didn't even know that Deep hasn't appeared for billions of years. It seems he has no understanding of totem level influences so he naturally wouldn't know that Deep King Road's Holy Demoness is colder than a hundred million year old glacier and even higher and loftier than the stars in the skies. When she suggested that she would only marry someone who could exceed her in strength at the same cultivation level, she was simply digging a pit so everyone could jump in. She just wanted all those higher abyssals who wished to win her over to lose all heart at doing so."

“There simply isn’t anyone capable of defeating her at the same boundary. Moreover… everyone knows the rules. Those that wish to defeat her, touch her, dual cultivate with her, all those higher abyssals that tried have been severely wounded by her, and some of them were nearly crippled! However, because Deep King Road is so strong no one dares to say anything. After all, those upper abyssals originally all thought that the Holy Demoness was just a woman so she would be easy to deal with.”

“Hahaha! That’s right. The reason that Holy Demoness was so ruthless in her actions was because she wanted to inform all the other higher abyssals not to bother with her unless they wanted to suffer the same fate! Now, it’s already been 300-500 years since anyone has dared to have designs on Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness. The Great Elder is truly killing someone without whetting his blade with a single drop of blood! As long as this boy is mercilessly beaten up it will be impossible for him to enter the Demon God’s Tomb.”

MW *Chapter* 2111

Chapter 2111 – The Enigma of Sheng Mei

…

…

…

"So… what do you think of Deep King Road's Holy Demoness?"

All of Lin Ming's facial expressions fell in the eyes of the Great Elder. The Great Elder didn't know why Lin Ming was so startled, but without a doubt, the projected phantom of Deep King Road's Holy Demoness had caused great waves to stir in Lin Ming.

Lin Ming didn't immediately reply. He fell into thought for a moment before finally saying, "How come Deep King Road's Holy Demoness resembles someone from the 33 Heavens?"

Lin Ming had only briefly searched through the memories of the Demon Association's Elder and there were still many things he didn't know. He was afraid that the question he asked was something that even the most ordinary of higher abyssals would know of, and this would then cause the Council of Elders to suspect his identity.

However, Lin Ming's worries were unfounded. The Ancient Eon Sect's Elder wasn't surprised by this question, but instead seemed to expect it.

"She is truly an abyssal demon…" As the Great Elder spoke he waved his hand, and with a light sound, the projection phantom of Sheng Mei flickered. The clothes on her back tore open and a pair of black wings unfurled.

These wings were over 10 feet wide, easily able to wrap around her.

Illuminated from behind by these wings, Sheng Mei seemed to become even more mystical and sacred.

The Great Elder slowly said, "She isn't a succubus demon, but she still possesses an exterior appearance similar to the life forms of the 33 Heavens. This is because she belongs to an extremely rare race of abyssals, one that is nearly a legend and rarely appears. These abyssals are called the dark angels.

"Deep King Road's Holy Demoness is one of these extremely rare dark angels…"

“Dark angel?” Lin Ming felt more and more confused. Soul Empress Sheng Mei, could she be an abyssal dark angel?

However, no matter how he thought of this it was far too strange. If this were true then it would have been impossible for her status to not have been uncovered in all these years. After all, there was more than one True Divinity amongst the spiritas.

Moreover, the spiritas was a race of the 33 Heavens and they inevitably shared a blood hatred for the abyssals.

Lin Ming asked, “What is the age of Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness? How often does she appear in public?”

The Great Elder looked at Lin Ming, surprised he would ask such questions. Martial artists that had such long lifespans would rarely ask for someone’s age during matters of marriage. A True Divinity level abyssal would often use hundreds of millions of years as units to describe their age, thus a difference of tens of thousands of years wasn’t anything at all.

But the Elder still replied, “I am not too sure what the Holy Demoness’s age is; she should be around several tens of thousands of years old. As for the last time she appeared in public, that was around 20,000 years ago. But afterwards she went into seclusion once more, and this period of seclusion continued for over 10,000 years. It was only in the last few thousand years that she appeared, and when she appeared she would shock the entire world. The higher abyssals of other sects simply aren’t able to compare side-by-side to her.”

Lin Ming thought over the Great Elder's words. The reason he asked this was because he wanted to determine whether or not the Dark Abyss's Sheng Mei was the same as the 33 Heavens' spiritas Sheng Mei. However, just this amount of information wasn't enough for him to speculate anything.

20,000 years ago, Sheng Mei appeared in the abyss and then went into seclusion for over 10,000 years afterwards. Could this so-called seclusion have actually been her leaving the Dark Abyss to go to the 33 Heavens?

And her so-called emergence was her returning to the Dark Abyss?

All of this complicated and confusing information made it difficult for Lin Ming to determine what the truth was.

However, no matter what, Sheng Mei was someone that Lin Ming was extremely concerned with.

Sheng Mei was an extremely important woman in his life. It could be said that she had changed the path of Lin Ming's life.

She was like a mysterious black rose, neither good nor evil, shrouded in fog so that no one could see her.

However, regardless of what her goal was or what her relationship with the Soul Emperor was, the truth was that Lin Ming had to thank her for all that occurred at the Sky Spill Planet 12,000 years ago. If it wasn't for her then he would have died without a doubt.

And, there was another matter that Lin Ming was always troubled by; in the past when he and Sheng Mei joined together in that ridiculous time, could there have been a child of his own flesh and blood born with her?

After all, because of that strange fruit and its medicinal efficacy he basically hadn't controlled the flow of his life essence, so all of it had poured into Sheng Mei without reserve.

As for Sheng Mei, for some unknown reason she had also eaten up that strange fruit. In her enraptured state it was hard to imagine what occurred when they had both gone crazy.

"Enough. After all this talk, do you agree or not?"

One of the Elders impatiently said; he was one of the younger Elders who would enter the Demon God's Tomb.

Lin Ming looked at these Elders and a flash of color bloomed in his eyes. He didn't know what they were plotting nor did he care. He wanted to personally go and see just who this Dark Abyss Sheng Mei was. Thus, he nodded, "I agree."

“Good!”

The Elders were overjoyed. One Elder even smiled at Lin Ming, his eyes seeming as if he were staring at an idiot.

“He really agreed to it, to fight against the Holy Demoness whom no one can defeat on the same level.”

“That’s right, not even that Nine Nether Son is an exception. In fact, although it was called the same level, he actually had a peak Empyrean abyssal cultivation while the Holy Demoness only had an upper Empyrean abyssal cultivation. Yet he was defeated by the Holy Demoness and severely wounded, and it took him two or three years to recover. And now the situation is reversed. The Ninth Elder has an upper Empyrean cultivation while the Holy Demoness is a peak Empyrean. With this small boundary in cultivation on her side, there isn’t even any need to imagine what the result will be.”

“The Holy Demoness is colder than ice and mercilessly beats up anyone who dares to propose marriage to her. The Ninth Elder will likely suffer brutal defeat, and if we don’t interfere he might even be killed by her…”

“The Holy Demoness is aggressive and does what she wants. She simply doesn’t care how heavy-handed she is, and before the fight begins both sides have to sign a Life Death Contract. This is to avoid further troubles developing and to frighten away all those toads who wish to form connections with Deep King Road. Even if the Ninth Elder is a bit luckier he will still have to recuperate in bed for 10 years. By that time, the venture into the Demon God's Tomb should have ended and there won't be anything he can do about it."

Several Elders discussed with sound transmissions, their eyes filled with thick mockery as they glanced at Lin Ming.

At this time, the Great Elder waved his hand, "Very good. All of you return and rest. We shall set off tomorrow morning..."

....

On the next day, all disciples of the Ancient Eon Sect who would enter the Demon God's Tomb had gathered.

Among this group, there were three True Divinity level abyssals and others were all Empyreans.

Everyone boarded a 10 mile long demon bone boat.

This bone boat flickered with ghostly black light. As it soared in the air it resembled a horrifying vicious beast that cut a channel through space.

After about an incense stick of time, the bone boat broke through the void and began a great void shift.

Every continent in the Dark Abyss was incredibly vast. Moreover, the deeper down one went, the broader it became.

The demon bone boat shuttled through space for several months before finally arriving at its destination.

This was where Deep King Road Headquarters was located.

Deep King Road Headquarters was constructed above vast and wild plains. From afar, it seemed like an incomparably high pagoda piercing into the clouds, like a pillar that extended through the Dark Abyss and supported the heavens.

Compared to this towering pagoda, the bone boat Lin Ming rode on seemed no different from a bird in front of a giant, utterly insignificant.

The bone boat stopped in a square high atop the pagoda. Standing on this square were dozens of colossal bone pillars that reached into the skies. Waves of black light emitted from these pillars and one could hear roars of demons echoing from them.

Before approaching, one would already be suppressed by the vast aura emitted by these bone pillars. It was like pagoda beneath them was alive, the evolved form of a supreme demon god that made their hearts shake.

At the peak of the pagoda there was also a giant spirit ship in no way inferior to the Ancient Eon Sect's bone boat. Totem flags were placed all over this spirit ship, fluttering in the wind.

Besides that, there were also some smaller abyssal spirit ships scattered all around. But compared to the giant bone boat that had just arrived they were like little goldfish swimming around a shark.

The Great Elder's eyes swept over some of the spirit ships in front of him. These spirit ships were all from other small influences that were joining in with Deep King Road's alliance.

These sorts of influences were often only able to send out Empyrean level abyssals to enter the Demon God's Tomb. However, their goals were to find some treasures on the periphery of the Demon God's Tomb. As for the totem level abyssal inheritance in the deepest depths of the Demon God's Tomb, that was something none of them ever thought they could obtain.

MW *Chapter* 2112

Chapter 2112 – Abyssal Boy

…

…

…

The group from the Ancient Eon Sect stepped down from the bone boat, and at this time in the square atop the pagoda, many abyssals had already gathered.

These abyssals were all at the World King level and above. In the entire Dark Abyss, the present Deep King Road could be called a top influence. Abyssals that could enter and leave this pagoda, even if they were only followers, would still be overlords of their own lands if placed outside.

"So it was Elder Eon God, it's been such a long time!"

As those from the Ancient Eon Sect came down, an abyssal Elder from Deep King Road were already waiting to greet them.

The abyssal Elder who greeted them was called Deep Epoch. In Deep King Road Elders at the True Divinity level also obtained their own titles. It was more or less similar to the Ancient Eon Sect, so in each of their titles they would have the 'Deep' character.

Elder Deep Epoch had an extremely strange appearance. He was only three feet tall and he was dark gray and black all over and covered with wrinkles. He looked just like a little abyssal boy.

His voice was a bit high-pitched and thin, like that of an infant. Even so, there was an old and weighty feel to it.

He was an Elder of Deep King Road. Although he was only an ordinary Elder, Lin Ming could feel that this Deep King Road Elder had a cultivation and aura that was in no way inferior to the Ancient Eon Sect's Great Elder.

From this, one could see just how deep the background of Deep King Road was.

Deep King Road's true ruler was Deep. As a totem level abyssal, Deep's strength was unfathomable.

But underneath Deep there were also upper True Divinity abyssal Elders, and more than one of them!

If the Ancient Eon Sect's Great Elder were to be placed in Deep King Road, he would only be considered an ordinary Elder.

Thus, this young abyssal boy that was sent to receive the Ancient Eon Sect was only an ordinary Elder. This sort of courtesy was indisputably correct.

The Ancient Eon Sect's Great Elder spoke with Deep King Road's abyssal boy for several moments. During this time, the abyssal boy looked at Lin Ming, a strange light in his eyes.

"This must be your Ancient Eon Sect's rumored Ninth Elder."

The Ancient Eon Sect had sent a total of five Elders this time. There was Lin Ming, Elder Eon God, and the three younger Elders; their names were Eon Light, Eon Moon, and Eon Fire.

These three abyssal Elders could be called young and with great potential, but the truth was that they were already over 10 million years old.

The abyssal boy had already seen them since they became Elders. However, the abyssal boy had never seen Lin Ming before, thus Lin Ming must have been the rumored Nine Elder that wished to challenge Deep King Road's Holy Demoness.

"I am." Lin Ming said.

"Hehe, the young truly know no fear. Your courage is praiseworthy." The abyssal boy chuckled. Although his words seemed as if he were commending Lin Ming, they actually contained a faint mocking tone to them.

As the abyssal boy looked at Lin Ming, there was also a playful color in his eyes.

Though the abyssal boy was clearly taunting Lin Ming with malicious intent, Elders Eon Light, Eon Moon, and Eon Fire naturally didn't say anything. In truth, they never considered Lin Ming a part of their Ancient Eon Sect from the start.

Thus no matter what taunts Lin Ming received or what obstacles people placed in front of him, that had nothing to do with them at all.

"I must say Elder Eon God, your Ancient Eon Sect is truly promoting the talented young without restraint. Even someone that is only at the upper Empyrean level can actually be an Elder. Ah, but I think this Ninth Elder must have his own unique strengths!"

The abyssal boy laughed. But as the martial artists of the Ancient Eon Sect heard this, they didn't feel good at all.

Amongst totem level influences, it was basically an unstated rule that only True Divinity level abyssals could become Elders.

Some powerful totem level influences had over 20 True Divinity Elders, and some of the weaker totem level influences only had six or seven True Divinity Elders. And, even these small and weak totem level influences would still insist that any Elders be at the True Divinity level. If a totem level influence were to somehow promote an Empyrean to an Elder, others would feel that this totem level influence was already declining and on the verge of dissolution.

This was because in the Dark Abyss, only influences of a lower rank would take Empyrean level abyssals as Elders.

The abyssal boy didn't know of the Book of Eon, thus he naturally only believed that Lin Ming was someone with exceptional talent and thus was made an Elder because of it. But, to be made an Elder in the already declining Ancient Eon Sect, the young abyssal boy really didn't think Lin Ming would be particularly great.

Thus, the way he looked and felt about Lin Ming was like how a royal family member in the mortal world would look at a wealthy countryside village.

For most abyssal demons, if they despised someone then they despised someone; they generally wouldn't say anything about it.

But, this abyssal boy clearly wanted to make his feelings known.

The truth was that he was doing all of this to intentionally embarrass the Ancient Eon Sect.

This wasn't because he was bored and searching for trouble and also not because he had some grudge with the Ancient Eon Sect. The reason he did this was to suppress the Ancient Eon Sect's momentum a little.

This was because in several days, the three totem level influences of the alliance, as well as the many smaller sects, would begin negotiations to discuss how benefits from the Demon God's Tomb would be divided.

To suppress the opponent's momentum would form an invisible psychological superiority. Later in negotiations this would allow them to take the upper hand.

The Ancient Eon Sect's Great Elder frowned, his complexion darkening. He said, "Elder Deep Epoch has no need to exhaust himself in worry about the internal affairs of my Ancient Eon Sect. Since Ninth Elder was able to become an Elder, he naturally has his reasons. As for the exact reasons, that isn't something that I can disclose right now."

When it came to the honor and momentum of the Ancient Eon Sect, Elder Eon God couldn't remain silent any longer. But, the explanation he gave was also ambiguous. He didn’t dare to boast about Lin Ming because soon Lin Ming would need to fight Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness, and at that time it would be clear just how strong he was.

If he were to randomly boast and then have his words disproven later, this would only end up embarrassing him.

“Hahaha!” The abyssal boy laughed. “No matter what the reason is, everything will be known in several days. There’s no need to be in a hurry about things.”

The abyssal boy turned to Lin Ming. “Speaking of which, I admire you. It's been almost 500 years since any higher abyssal dared to challenge my Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness. Since you have the courage to challenge our Holy Demoness now, I’m really looking forwards to it.”

Lin Ming was disinclined to play around with the abyssal boy. He simply asked, “Is your Holy Demoness currently in the sect?”

“She is. What are you asking for?” The abyssal boy looked at Lin Ming with interest, surprised at how calm he still was. He wanted to find some traces of panic in Lin Ming’s face, but after some searching he was eventually left disappointed. Lin Ming remained calm and composed throughout, without the least bit of change in his mood. It was as if his suppression of the Ancient Eon Sect just now was no different from the acts of a clown, making him slightly frown.

“I would like to see her.” Lin Ming directly said.

If he wanted to determine whether or not the Dark Abyss’s Sheng Mei was the same as the 33 Heavens’ spiritas Sheng Mei, then seeing her was the best method to do so. Moreover, this might allow him to figure out what Sheng Mei’s goal was.

But in the face of this request, the abyssal boy burst out in laughter. “Do you think anyone can see my Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness just because they wish to?”

“She is an Empyrean level abyssal and I am an Empyrean level abyssal. She is Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness and I am an Ancient Eon Sect Elder, so how come I can’t see her?”

The abyssal boy looked at Lin Ming like an idiot. “Do you think your Empyrean level can compare with our Holy Demoness’s Empyrean level? It’s as if you don’t know where you stand right now!”

The abyssal boy coldly humphed. Then, he swept his eyes over the other Elders from the Ancient Eon Sect. He hadn’t said one particular thing out loud, and that was that there was no comparing the status of an Elder from the Ancient Eon Sect with their Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness. This was because the disparity in strength between the two sects was far too great.

He hadn’t said anything in consideration for Elder Eon God’s face. Otherwise, if he did, that would be tearing away any and all pretenses.

As for Elder Eon God, he remained silent. Strength was everything in the Dark Abyss.

“Let’s go. You will meet her in several days, and I believe that the day you do meet her, it will be an unforgettable experience for you, hahaha!”

The abyssal boy recklessly laughed. Then, without further speaking he reached out and tore open a spatial crack in the void. He turned and leapt in; this was a space channel leading to the inside of the pagoda.

Those from the Ancient Eon Sect had glum complexions. Although the abyssal boy had aimed his taunts at Lin Ming, they also knew what was happening. They knew that this abyssal boy was using Lin Ming as an excuse to suppress their Ancient Eon Sect’s momentum, that he wanted to press down on their heads.

They didn’t feel comfortable about this at all.

Eon Light glanced at Lin Ming. Then, he said to the other Elders with a somewhat sad sound transmission, “This idiot, not only does he want to kill himself by entering the Demon God’s Tomb, but if it weren’t for him we wouldn’t need to discuss marriage with Deep King Road and bring trouble upon our own heads!”

“Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness will surely beat this fellow into pieces, and she might even kill him. And although I hope he loses miserably, the fact remains that he is still representing our Ancient Eon Sect. The worse he loses, the more disgraced we will be.”

“Enough. For the Book of Eon and for the future of our sect, a little bit of disgrace isn’t anything at all!”

Eon Light, Eon Moon, and Eon Fire all discussed Lin Ming over sound transmissions. Elder Eon God frowned and coldly said, “Enough nonsense. If you have the energy to criticize the Ninth Elder then you might as well save it to prepare for the following fights. Don’t forget. Although we are here to negotiate how the benefits will be assigned, the ultimate result will still depend on our martial strength. You three are all part of the six Elders who will represent my Ancient Eon Sect and Nine Nether Palace!

“If the Ninth Elder loses then he loses; his life or death doesn’t matter. But if you three lose, our losses will be great! Do you understand me?”

Elder Eon God’s majestic sound transmission exploded near the ears of the three Elders like a thunderclap. Their bodies trembled and they quickly said, “Elder Eon God should rest assured that we will surely not disappoint you.”

These three Elders were all juniors of Eon God. Before they grew, it was Eon God that guided them. Thus, to them, Eon God was a figure just like an honorable master, so it was natural for them to respect him.

As these Elders discussed amongst themselves, Lin Ming stood on the side, unable to hear them. But even if he was able to hear what they said, he would have been disinclined to bother with them.

He only quietly stepped into the space channel torn open by the abyssal boy. The world changed around him as he arrived inside the towering pagoda…

This place was like a completely different world.

Within the pagoda there were celestial mountains floating in the air, rivers of blood running through the earth, and springs of blood spraying out. There were dense wild forests with all sorts of horrifying vicious beasts and birds dwelling within.

In the Dark Abyss, there were many species of abyssals that possessed low intelligence but incredibly high strength. These abyssals were often raised by great influences. These vicious birds and beasts were such an example.

This world was where the Ancient Eon Sect would rest, and also where the great battle would take place in several days.

MW *Chapter* 2113

Chapter 2113 – Sheng Mei's Sigh

…

…

…

Within the towering pagoda there was an independent world, and at the center of this world were vast plains that overflowed with killing intent.

This was the battlefield of the upcoming competition.

And around these vast plains were the living quarters of the various large influences.

These living quarters included crumbling stone buildings and even cities.

The Ancient Eon Sect alone occupied an entire city.

This was also a manifestation of the Ancient Eon Sect's status. In this city, the Ancient Eon Sect, including the True Divinity Elders and their followers, were only several hundred people. They only occupied a small portion of this city and the others in it were all slaves.

The Dark Abyss was a world flooded with slaves.

The slaves in this city were not just those of the ancient races but also abyssal demons.

A city slave, besides maintaining the operations of the city, also provided a variety of services for the Ancient Eon Sect. The Ancient Eon Sect's core disciples and Elders could simply do whatever they wished to do.

"That is the group from Nine Nether Palace. It seems they arrived earlier than we did."

The disciples of the Ancient Eon Sect flew into the air and looked upon the neighboring city. The skies above this city were covered in the faint pressure of a True Divinity level abyssal.

This pressure wasn't intentionally released, but unwittingly revealed because the True Divinity level abyssals in the city were far too strong.

This strength gathered in the skies above the city and the thick demon power eventually formed dark clouds.

With Nine Nether Palace and the Ancient Eon Sect, this was nearly a two digit number of True Divinity abyssals. The aura they released already formed a force field in the skies, and even if an Empyrean level abyssal were to be placed in that force field of dark clouds they would still find it hard to withstand.

"Enough, everyone calm down!" Elder Eon God waved his hand, calling everyone down.

Lin Ming found a stone building for himself and started to meditate inside.

After being in the Dark Abyss for all these years, he hadn't stopped cultivating once.

With so many abyssal influences stationed here, there would inevitably be communication between them as well as individuals trying to display their own strength and prowess. But no matter what happened outside, Lin Ming remained indifferent to it.

Although Lin Ming didn't go out, his reputation still slowly spread. The Ancient Eon Sect's Council of Elders was unwilling to acknowledge Lin Ming's status as an Elder in their hearts, thus they didn't give him a special Elder title. So, in the outside world, people only knew Lin Ming by the name of the Ancient Eon Sect's Ninth Elder.

They also knew that this Ninth Elder wished to marry Deep King Road's Holy Demoness.

In the last 500 years, no abyssal demon had dared to covet her in such a manner. Yet, just before the opening of the Demon God's Tomb, there was actually a higher abyssal who had such ideas.

This would surely be a good show!

However, although this news caused vibrant discussion all over, True Divinity level abyssals like the Elders of Nine Nether Palace didn't care much about it at all. To them, whether it was Lin Ming or Deep King Road's Holy Demoness, they were still Empyrean level abyssals that had yet to reach the True Divinity realm. Lin Ming and Deep King Road's Holy Demoness simply didn't stand on the same level in their eyes. They didn't care too much about this matter; at most, they would go and take a look for fun.

Just like a clown that amused the audience before a grand play began, the Ancient Eon Sect's Ninth Elder Lin Ming was such a clown in their hearts.

What they truly cared about were the six higher abyssals that Deep King Road would send to battle. They wanted to know which six higher abyssals were being sent out and how many matches they would be able to win.

And in fact, Deep King Road had always possessed the overwhelming momentum. Their goal was to win a single match; if they could win two then they would be more than overjoyed.

However, although they had gathered materials about all the young Elders of Deep King Road, they still weren't able to determine which six higher abyssals would be sent to participate in the competition.

Deep King Road had kept a tight lid on their information. In this aspect, the Ancient Eon Sect and Nine Nether Palace were much worse. They only had a limited number of Elders they could send out, so it wasn't a choice for them at all.

Although most people didn't pay attention to Lin Ming, there was still a small portion of people who investigated his identity.

In Deep King Road's main faction, in a room located within a separate time and space –

A maid dressed up as a woman of the primal god race slowly walked up. She respectfully said, "Miss, the Ancient Eon Sect's Ninth Elder has proposed marriage to you before the opening of the Demon God's Tomb. We have already looked up some of his information; would Miss like to take a look?"

In front of the maid there was a mysterious woman dressed in black. She stood near a window, faintly gazing off into the distance.

Her eyes seemed blank, as if no one could tell where she was looking. But in truth, this was simply because her eyes were far too profound. It was like they were wrapped in a mysterious universe, so deep that no one could find their edges.

Her black hair fell down her back like a waterfall of ink. As it poured down her dress, it seemed like a black rose in full bloom.

Upon hearing a voice, the black-clothed woman turned around and glanced at the maid.

The woman's appearance was simple and otherworldly. Between her eyebrows, nine flower petals composed a mystical red lotus mark. She was like a goddess exiled from the highest heavens, her body emitting a light holy aura that made all others feel ashamed at their own inferiority.

This woman was Sheng Mei. Or, she might have been the dark angel that looked completely similar to Sheng Mei.

"Miss, the information is in here."

The maid fell to her knees and held out a jade slip in her palms. Sheng Mei's maid came from the primal god race, and this was a demand that Sheng Mei had made.

Sheng Mei didn’t consider this maid as some sort of mindless slave, and in truth she even felt some affinity to her. But because of Sheng Mei’s aura, the maid couldn’t help but fall to her knees and bow her head low, not daring to look at the black-clothed woman before her.

Sheng Mei looked at the jade slip and frowned. “The Ancient Eon Sect’s Ninth Elder?”

“Yes, he is an upper Empyrean level abyssal.”

No more fluctuations of emotion crossed Sheng Mei’s face, nor did she have any interest in finding out more about this Ninth Elder. Instead, she simply felt sick and tired of these occurrences. She waved her hand and said, “You may leave.”

Sheng Mei couldn’t even be bothered with looking through this information that her maids and bodyguards collected. When it came to these higher abyssals that wished to marry her, she only considered them a pack of flies; driving them away or slapping them to death was all she needed to do. And before slapping these flies to death, there was no need for her to probe into their origins or what kind of fly they were.

“Yes.”

The maid quietly put away the jade slip. Towards Sheng Mei, the maid only felt graciousness.

She was a slave. And even though her talent was excellent and she was an extremely expensive slave, she couldn't avoid her tragic fate. However, she had been sent to follow Sheng Mei. Her master hadn't cruelly destroyed her but instead gave her some resources so that she could cultivate by herself. To the maid, this was the greatest luck of her life.

Thus, she was loyal and devoted to Sheng Mei. She bowed, lowering her head as she drew back. And before she turned around she cast one quick glance at Sheng Mei.

She only saw Sheng Mei's profile, an appearance that could be called perfection. However, there was a light trace of sorrow in Sheng Mei's eyes, one that no one could touch upon.

This was not the first time that the maid had seen this dim and pale sorrow. In fact, the maid would even occasionally hear Sheng Mei sigh. Although Sheng Mei's voice was low and faint, it was like a pair of invisible hands that easily touched a person's heartstrings.

She didn't know why. As the Deep King Road's Holy Demoness, Sheng Mei's status had reached the peak of the Dark Abyss. Just what could she possibly be sad about?

The maid naturally didn't dare to ask Sheng Mei what she was thinking. She could only faithfully serve Sheng Mei to the best of her abilities and hope that the sorrow would disappear from her face.

But, as time passed, that gentle sigh and faint sorrow never once left Sheng Mei...

In the eyes of outsiders there had almost never been a smile that lit up Sheng Mei's face. Thus, they thought Sheng Mei was cold and frosty, as arrogant as the stars.

But, the maid knew that her master wasn't like this. It was just that she had sealed up her heart so no one could open it...

Perhaps there would come a day where someone would manage to open it, but the maid had no idea when that would be or who it could be...

Days passed, one at a time.

The Elders of the various influences continued to negotiate and bargain in Deep King Road's main faction.

After they roughly set the rules, what followed next was when the specific proportions would be determined. This was also when the various sects would compete.

The appointed battle would soon begin...

The battlefield would be the vast wild plains that existed between all the various influences' residences. This was destined to be an incomparably intense battle...

MW Chapter 2114

Chapter 2114 – Meeting

…

…

…

In Deep King Road's towering pagoda above the wild plains, there were totem poles stabbed into the earth, encircling a demon force field that extended outwards in a radius of 10,000 miles.

This force field was filled with thick demonic aura, as if some ancient demon were slumbering here.

The disciples of every influence only had to approach this force field to feel a massive pressure.

This pressure was mixed with a mighty killing intent. Unless a martial artist was at the World King level or above, it was simply impossible to enter.

“This is Deep King Road’s deep king force field. It is Deep King Road’s great guardian array formation. It was established 10 billion years ago, and for the last 10 billion years Deep King Road has paid a great price to keep it maintained with blood sacrifices so that it can retain its rank as an extreme True Divinity level array formation. If a True Divinity level abyssal were to enter this array formation they would be restricted beneath it.”

Before entering the deep king force field, the Ancient Eon Sect’s Great Elder began explaining what it was.

Lin Ming looked at the totem poles that surrounded the great array formation. These totem poles weren’t inscribed with runes, but had images of all sorts of ancient abyssals carved into them. The images of these demons inherently contained the highest truths of the abyssal Laws, and the aura that overflowed from them left one gasping for breath.

Upon truly stepping into the force field, Lin Ming could feel his own strength be suppressed a great deal. Whether it was mobilizing the energy within his body or utilizing the Laws of the world, everything was affected by the invisible suppression of the force field.

If Lin Ming wished to rid himself of this suppression then he could only break open the force field. But, the current Lin Ming didn’t possess even the strength to do this.

“Everyone’s strength is suppressed so the battle is fair. This is to prevent Deep King Road Headquarters from being damaged due to the great destruction that could occur when True Divinity level abyssals fight.”

Lin Ming watched as more and more abyssal influences entered the force field. This force field was like a giant cage, swallowing all those who entered.

The group from the Ancient Eon Sect arrived at their assigned region. And at a place not too far away from them, another crowd of higher abyssals had already arrived.

“Those are the abyssals from Nine Nether Palace.” Eon Light said from beside Elder Eon God, his voice low as he glanced over the several Elders of Nine Nether Palace.

The many abyssal disciples of Nine Nether Palace also saw the Ancient Eon Sect arrive.

Nine Nether Palace and the Ancient Eon Sect needed to join forces to resist Deep King Road. But at the same time, they were also fellow competitors.

“Haha, Elder Eon God, it seems that your Ancient Eon Sect has trained many masters in preparation for today!”

The one leading Nine Nether Palace was an old abyssal. He stood eight feet high and had an emaciated figure. His body was like a bamboo pole with a wooden head attached to one end. As his eight eyes looked at Lin Ming, all Lin Ming felt was disgust at this odd and ugly-looking creature.

This old abyssal was the Great Elder of Nine Nether Palace. Behind him were three relatively young abyssal Elders who had clearly reached the True Divinity realm.

It was obvious that these three abyssal Elders were the ones sent out by Nine Nether Palace and would also be the ones participating in the competition.

When competitors met, sparks would fly. On the side of the Ancient Eon Sect, as Eon Light, Eon Moon, and Eon Fire stared at the three abyssal Elders from Nine Nether Road, a fighting intent sparked in their eyes.

The three abyssal Elders of Nine Nether Palace were different from those of the Ancient Eon Sect. The three Elders of the Ancient Eon Sect were relatively similar in strength, but in Nine Nether Palace, the difference in strength between their three Elders was extremely great. A young Elder named Nether Nihility was the strongest, another was in the middle, and another was the weakest, who was only brought here to make up for numbers.

“Mortals propose and the heavens dispose. All I can do as I wait is prepare as much as I can!” Elder Eon God slowly spoke as he bowed.

“Haha, Elder Eon God is too humble. I heard that not only does your Ancient Eon Sect have high hopes for the Demon God’s Tomb, but you even want to propose marriage and have one of your sect Elders marry Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness. Such courage is something that leaves my Nine Nether Palace quaking in shame at our own inferiority!”

The voice of Nine Nether Palace's Grand Elder echoed in the air, so boisterous that one couldn't tell if it was mockery or praise. However, no matter what thoughts he had in his heart it wasn't important.

After Nine Nether Palace's Great Elder mentioned marriage, the three young Elders from the Ancient Eon Sect felt uncomfortable; they were already cursing Lin Ming in their hearts.

However, Elder Eon God retained his composure. He slowly said, "Deep King Road's Holy Demoness has informed the world thousands of years ago that any abyssal demon, as long as they can defeat her at the same boundary, may marry her. This is common knowledge and everyone is free to participate. Our Ancient Eon Sect also wishes to try our luck, so this is far from any sort of courage. If we lose then we lose, so what does it matter?"

Elder Eon God's reply not only lifted the awkward atmosphere but also opened an escape route for himself later. The Great Elder of Nine Nether Palace laughed, but just as he was about to say something, sounds began to rise in the distance, ancient demonic sounds that reverberated in the void.

As the demonic sounds rose up, the originally bustling scene suddenly quieted down. Everyone looked over and they could see that in the far off void, a massive black boat cut into the deep king force field like waves in water as it drove forwards.

Atop the deck of the bone boat stood 10 higher abyssals. These 10 higher abyssals all had cultivations at the True Divinity realm!

For an influence to suddenly appear with 10 True Divinity level abyssals, the only one that had the background to do this was Deep King Road.

"It's the Elders of Deep King Road!"

Someone quietly said, suppressing their voice. Facing Deep King Road, all of the influences here felt a great pressure.

"What a terrifying aura domain. I heard that Deep King Road has over 20 True Divinity level abyssals; that is much more than Nine Nether Palace and the Ancient Eon Sect combined!"

As Lin Ming heard the discussions of some disciples from smaller influences, he felt a bit wistful.

In the Dark Abyss, if the True Divinity level abyssals of the six totem level influences were added up then there would be over 80 of them. And there were also True Divinity level abyssals that were in sects other than the six totem level influences, or perhaps they were hidden somewhere else. But altogether, there was at least a hundred True Divinity level abyssals in the Dark Abyss.

This was a terrifying number. This was because in the 33 Heavens, when it came to martial artists that possessed a combat strength at the True Divinity level, even if Lin Ming included himself there was only 11-12 of them.

Compared to the Dark Abyss, this was a difference over 10 times greater. If it weren't for the channel that connected the Dark Abyss to the 33 Heavens being blocked off, then perhaps the 33 Heavens would have already been swept away by the Dark Abyss.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming could also feel just how strong the Asura Road Master of 10 billion years past was. Of course in order for the ancient races of that era to defeat the abyssal demons, they had to pay a tragically deep price.

As Lin Ming thought of this, his heart suddenly shook and his pupils shrank.

At this moment he could see that above the bone boat stood the figure of a woman.

This woman wore black clothes. As she stood there she was like the source of all darkness in the universe. Where she stood, the Laws assembled themselves into lines that formed black flower petals which gently fluttered down in space, falling onto her clothes before slowly dissipating away…

Standing there, she was like a dark enchantress of the night. This woman was Deep King Road's Holy Demoness!

Lin Ming sucked in a deep breath, his thoughts wildly tumbling in his mind. He could feel an inexplicably familiar bloodline connection from Deep King Road's Holy Demoness. With this connection he could almost instantly confirm that the Deep King Road Holy Demoness he saw before him was the same as the Soul Empress of the 33 Heavens – Sheng Mei!

Lin Ming knew that when he was at the Sky Spill Planet where he had become one with Sheng Mei, Sheng Mei had left him her primordial yin and part of her source soul. It was also because of this that he could feel the faint connection between them.

At this time, it wasn't just Lin Ming who saw Sheng Mei, but many other abyssals did too.

As Deep King Road's Holy Demoness, Sheng Mei's talent was without peer and her status was unreachable. Her temperament was as ephemeral as dust and her appearance far surpassed all others in the Dark Abyss. Such a proud daughter of heaven made the countless abyssals present drool with desire.

"So that's Deep King Road's Holy Demoness. Just seeing her once is better than hearing about her a hundred times!"

"That's her. This time she will likely venture into the Demon God's Tomb also. In terms of cultivation I heard she is already beginning to attack the True Divinity realm!"

"What horrifying talent. She's probably only several tens of thousands of years old..."

Everyone started to discuss amongst themselves. With so many gazes on her body, Sheng Mei's heart suddenly stirred. For a brief moment she felt something inexplicable, a strange feeling that passed over her gently and swiftly, one that she couldn't touch her finger on. Inadvertently, she looked towards the direction of the Ancient Eon Sect.

Her eyes stopped upon a vigorous and robust abyssal, one who was covered with black scales and had two bone blades jutting out from his elbows.

Amongst the other higher abyssals this abyssal seemed common. But for some unknown reason, as Sheng Mei looked at him she couldn't help but feel something faintly familiar...

MW Chapter 2115

Chapter 2115 – Choosing an Opponent

…

…

…

“Strange… I shouldn’t have seen him before…”

Sheng Mei faintly frowned. At this time, the current Lin Ming had already completely concealed his human aura.

Lin Ming’s true self was within the inner world of his demon avatar and his aura was completely isolated, thus Sheng Mei was unable to recognize him. However, because of some inexplicable intuition that couldn’t be explained, she was able to instinctively feel that Lin Ming was special.

As Lin Ming felt Sheng Mei’s gaze touch upon him, he suppressed his thoughts, restraining his emotions so that nothing showed.

He deeply hid his aura, not planning to reveal his status to Sheng Mei any time soon. This was because for him, the Dark Abyss was the lion's den, and if his identity was exposed then the consequences would be inconceivable.

Therefore even though Lin Ming wanted to believe in Sheng Mei, who knew why she was in the Dark Abyss and what her goal was? Was she good or evil?

In this completely unsure situation, there was no way that Lin Ming could believe Sheng Mei. After all, in those events that occurred on the Sky Spill Planet 12,000 years ago, although Sheng Mei had saved him, everything that she had revealed to him caused him to feel complex emotions of attraction and opposition to this riddle-like woman, as even though he wanted to approach her he also wished to keep his distance from her.

Sheng Mei looked at Lin Ming for a moment and then turned away. She asked one of the abyssals following her, "That royal abyssal from the Ancient Eon Sect, who is he?"

"Reporting to Miss, he is the Ninth Elder who was just recently promoted by the Ancient Eon Sect. He is at the upper Empyrean realm so it's a bit strange that is became an Elder, moreover..."

The abyssal follower looked at Sheng Mei as he spoke to here, hesitating for a moment.

"Moreover what?"

“Miss should know that during this competition, one of the Elders of the Ancient Eon Sect wishes to challenge Miss for marriage. And that challenger is this Ninth Elder.”

“Mm?”

Sheng Mei glanced at Lin Ming with surprise. She had heard about this but simply didn’t care, thus she never asked for information related to this challenger. But today, after seeing Lin Ming and hearing this so-called challenge again, a bizarre feeling rapidly flew through her thoughts.

“What is Miss thinking about?”

“Nothing.” Sheng Mei shook her head, no longer speaking.

This inexplicable flash of intuition left Sheng Mei confused. She racked her thoughts, carefully looking through her past memories for some abyssal demon whose image overlapped with Lin Ming.

However, she simply couldn’t find anything. She would never have imagined that this royal abyssal, whose bloodline had no problem no matter how much she investigated, would actually be a human…

“Everyone, let us not speak much nonsense here and directly start the battle! I will now announce the rules!”

After all the abyssal demons arrived, a tall and strong abyssal in dark gray metal armor flew up in the skies. Even though he didn’t pour any demon energy into his voice, his words still rang loud and clear amongst every present.

This tall and strong abyssal was an Elder of Deep King Road.

“Now, all abyssal demons who wish to participate in this competition, step into the center of the field!”

The tall and strong abyssal roared. On the side of the Ancient Eon Sect, the three young Elders flew out. Then, from Nine Nether Palace, Nether Nihility and the other Elders also flew out one after another.

Finally there were the Elders of Deep King Road.

All the influences were concerned about which six Elders Deep King Road would send out.

Many abyssals looked with wide eyes. They watched as a black beam of light came shooting down from the black bone boat that the group from Deep King Road had come in on.

From this beam of light, a horrifying abyssal aura swelled outwards.

These were the Elders of Deep King Road.

“Deep Child!”

The first Elder that flew down from Deep King Road caused everyone’s hearts to shake, because this Elder called Deep Child was at the middle True Divinity level.

Whether it was the Ancient Eon Sect or Nine Nether Palace, the young Elders or Elders in the prime of their youth that they sent out for this venture into the Demon God’s Tomb were all at the lower True Divinity level.

But, Deep King Road had already sent out a True Divinity level abyssal whose true potential was yet to be dug out. From this alone the disparity between the sects could be seen.

With the appearance of a single Deep Child, Nine Nether Palace and the Ancient Eon Sect’s momentum was all suppressed!

Fortunately, following that, the other candidates from Deep King Road were all at the lower True Divinity level.

“Deep Moon, Deep Glory, Deep Echo, Deep Solitary… mm?”

An abyssal familiar with the high level Elders of Deep King Road began to announce their names as they flew down. But when he came to the sixth person, he froze.

“Wait a moment, this is…”

“How could it be her!?”

As the abyssal demons saw a woman in black clothes come fluttering down from the skies, all of their eyes popped open. They never imagined that the sixth competition candidate would not be one of their Elders but actually the Holy Demoness!

“Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness! Is she going to compete?”

“But her cultivation has yet to reach the True Divinity level. Without having reached the True Divinity level can one challenge True Divinity abyssals!?”

The eyes of all abyssals focused on Sheng Mei. The aura that she exuded loudly declared that she had one foot in the threshold of True Divinity.

But, no matter how close one was to True Divinity, someone that wasn't at True Divinity was someone that wasn't at True Divinity. The gap between an Empyrean and a True Divinity was vast beyond compare, and for an Empyrean to fight a True Divinity was beyond difficult!

In the past, many influences already knew that Deep King Road's Holy Demoness possessed formidable talent and that she was invincible among those at the same boundary. After all, no matter how many outstanding abyssals wished to dual cultivate with Deep King Road's Holy Demoness, all of them were in the end mercilessly beaten to the ground.

But no matter how exaggerated the legends of Deep King Road's Holy Demoness were, no one would have expected that on this day, she would be chosen to fight on behalf of Deep King Road!

Could she, at the limit of an Empyrean, now possess the ability to fight a True Divinity?

The abyssals present felt this all unbelievable. But, no one felt that Deep King Road's Holy Demoness would come out and participate in this struggle for benefits of the Demon God's Tomb if she didn't have full confidence in her abilities. If she wasn't then she would be far too stupid.

It had to be known that the Ancient Eon Sect and Nine Nether Palace had the ability to choose who their opponent was and could even repeat a challenge against someone. If the Holy Demoness was too weak then the Ancient Eon Sect and Nine Nether Palace's six Elders could simply all choose her and win six matches like this.

This was a naturally impossible matter.

As the abyssals present realized this, their vision as they looked at Sheng Mei changed.

It turned to awe, reverence, jealousy, even obsession…

All sorts of complicated emotions filled the hearts of the abyssals present. And at this time, the host of this great competition spoke out and interrupted the thoughts of the crowd.

"We shall now begin. The Elders of the Ancient Eon Sect and Nine Nether Palace, you may now choose your opponents!"

As the host spoke, the Ancient Eon Sect and Nine Nether Palace immediately quieted down.

The choice of opponent was naturally extremely important.

In particular, due to the rules, Deep King Road's Elders could be chosen multiple times. All six Elders could choose the weakest warrior of Deep King Road. As for the strongest, Deep Child, no one had to fight him.

But the key question here was which one of these six Elders of Deep King Road was the weakest?

Besides the obvious answer that was the basically invincible Deep Child, the Elders of the Ancient Eon Sect and Nine Nether Palace began to look over their possible opponents.

Between every opening of the Demon God's Tomb there was a vast span of time. Thus, the warriors that every influence sent out would be different each time. In addition with Deep King Road's tight intelligence security, it was simply impossible to know the depths of Deep King Road's Elders.

The Elders of the Ancient Eon Sect and Nine Nether Palace could only make speculations based upon the auras and Law fluctuations of these higher abyssals, as well as using the intuition of a martial artist.

"Eon Light, have you chosen?"

On the Ancient Eon Sect's side, the Great Elder asked out loud.

Eon Light pondered for a moment more. Then, a cold light flashed in his eyes. He finally looked at Sheng Mei and said, “I have chosen. I choose the Holy Demoness!”

Eon Light knew that Sheng Mei likely wasn’t weak and if she dared to come and compete then she naturally had hidden cards in her hands. But when compared to the other True Divinity level Elders, Sheng Mei gave off a slightly weaker feeling.

After all, most people who jumped ranks to fight were barely able to do so.

The Great Elder frowned but didn’t oppose. He turned to another Elder and asked, “Eon Fire, what about you?”

Eon Fire thought deeply for a moment. Then he said, “Although it doesn’t seem honorable, I plan on choosing the Holy Demoness also. She should be the weakest...”

MW Chapter 2116

Chapter 2116 – The Battle Begins

…

…

…

The choices of the Ancient Eon Sect were soon announced.

Eon Light and Eon Fire both chose Sheng Mei. As for Eon Moon, after considering his options, he chose another seemingly weaker Elder.

It wasn't a wise decision to place all their eggs in the same basket. If Sheng Mei were truly incomparably powerful or if there were some trap laid in place for them, then they might lose all their matches.

And in a stroke of coincidence, Nine Nether Palace also made a similar choice. Two Elders chose Sheng Mei, and as for the strongest Nether Nihility, he chose another opponent.

In other words, after all choices were made, Sheng Mei alone would have to face four opponents.

According to the rules of the competition, Sheng Mei would fight one person a day with the other two matches interspersed within, up until the competition ended.

“Miss, four abyssals have chosen you!”

As the Ancient Eon Sect and Nine Nether Palace made their choices, Sheng Mei had already returned to the bone boat to sit in meditation. Her maid hurriedly ran inside.

Sheng Mei’s eyebrows gently arched up. She took a slow breath and said, “I understand.”

To be chosen by so many abyssals at the same time was already well within Sheng Mei’s expectations.

Her cultivation was the lowest and she was also a woman, thus to others it would make her seem the easiest to deal with.

“Miss, then you…” The maid looked at Sheng Mei with some worry. Sheng Mei had been good to her, thus she naturally didn’t hope that Sheng Mei would have to engage in a revolving battle with so many opponents. After all, a high intensity battle at the True Divinity level wasn’t something that the average person could withstand.

“I’m fine, you can draw back.”

Sheng Mei said. The maid silently withdrew.

According to the rules of the competition, the first fight on the battlefield would start two hours from now.

Sheng Mei continued to sit in meditation for an hour. Then, she stood up, bathed, and changed her clothes. She took off her glorious black dress and exchanged it for a suit of black battle armor. Then she picked up a sword.

This sword was wrapped in black silk. It appeared ancient and filled with the endless flow of time.

Raising this sword, Sheng Mei walked outside.

At this time, in the wild plains battlefield, a massive black disc was floating in the air.

This black disk was called the Deep King Wheel and was one of the most precious treasures within Deep King Road. It was a giant array disc passed down in Deep King Road from 10 billion years past.

The Deep King Wheel could be made both small and large. Now, it had been expanded and used as the stage on which these True Divinity abyssals would compete!

When the Deep King Wheel connected with the 12 surrounding totem poles, it formed an indestructible force field that could withstand the impact of a battle between True Divinity level martial artists.

At this time, all the influences arrived at their respective positions, looking forwards to this battle. They also knew that the Ancient Eon Sect and Nine Nether Palace had made their choices.

Four Elders had chosen Sheng Mei.

Such methods earned the contempt and disdain of many abyssals. But in order to win, in order to grasp more advantages, it was also indisputable for Nine Nether Palace and the Ancient Eon Sect to be unscrupulous in their methods.

Sheng Mei was the proudest daughter of the Dark Abyss. She had countless admirers, fans, and worshippers, and even though these abyssals clearly knew it was impossible to obtain her, they were still willing to support her.

At this time, Elder Eon Light already stood on the Deep King Wheel. The hisses of numerous abyssals filled the air.

“A True Divinity fighting an Empyrean, it seems he doesn’t care about face at all!”

An abyssal disciple from Deep King Road shouted. There were also many abyssals from small influences that joined in. Although these small influences weren’t large, they still had the backing of Deep King Road, thus they didn’t fear offending the Ancient Eon Sect.

“He seems to be called Eon Light or something. His age is already countless times higher than that of Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness. An old fogy actually chose a young junior woman as his opponent. Whether it is in age or cultivation, he is higher than her. I can’t believe he still has the gall to stand there!”

More of Sheng Mei’s admirers called out. Although Eon Light was called a ‘young’ Elder, this was only in comparison to other True Divinity level abyssals.

Any True Divinity that hadn’t yet lived for 50 million years could be called a young True Divinity.

For instance, this was also true for Divine Dream. In fact, Divine Dream had been limited by the inheritances and resources available in the Divine Realm. If she were born amongst the spiritas then with her talent she would have long since broken into True Divinity.

Facing the raucous boos of the crowd, even though Eon Light had thick skin his face was still darker than well water.

"This pile of garbage from Deep King Road, after a while I will ruthlessly stomp upon that perfect demoness in your hearts so that you will never scream like this again!"

As Eon Light thought this, a cold light flashed in his eyes. "What a pity that my cultivation is at the True Divinity level. Even if I defeat this demoness I still cannot dual cultivate with her, otherwise I would be able to recklessly enjoy this top quality woman as much as I wanted. If I were able to do so, it would also be greatly beneficial to my cultivation!"

Eon Light subconsciously licked his lips. And at this time, his mind stirred and he looked up into the skies.

From high in the skies, faint killing intent came slowly dripping down.

"It's Deep King Road's Holy Demoness! She finally came out!"

As an abyssal shouted out loud, more and more abyssals looked towards the bone boat. They saw a woman in black battle armor fly downward, her black hair falling like a waterfall around her as she grasped a sword.

She gently fell atop the Deep King Wheel. Her steps were light, not even touching the ground, only leaving behind faint ripples in the void.

She held her sword. She didn't look at her opponent, Eon Light, but swept her eyes over the crowd as if she were searching for someone.

There were tens of thousands of abyssals all around the battlefield, but she immediately found who she was looking for, and that was Lin Ming!

Sheng Mei's gaze paused upon Lin Ming for a short period of time, as if she were considering him for a moment. Then, her eyes left him.

And this brief moment of attention caused Lin Ming to suck in a light breath. Sheng Mei's intuition was far too horrifying. Even though he had concealed himself to this degree, she could still feel something out of the ordinary with him.

This woman was simply filled with riddles.

"Sheng Mei... just what are you doing here? And between you and that mysterious woman from 10 billion years ago, just how are you related...?"

Lin Ming's gaze fell upon the point between Sheng Mei's eyebrows. Those nine bright red flower petals aroused particular attention.

Each flower petal was perfect – this was a sign of the Grand Reincarnation Art's ninth revolution.

Without a doubt, during these years since Sheng Mei left, she had already completed the ninth reincarnation and had become thoroughly aware of the Laws of Life and Death.

She had reached perfection in the Grand Reincarnation Art.

The heaven-defying aspect of the Grand Reincarnation Art lay in its ability to constantly consolidate the foundation, purify the body, and enhance talent.

And after reaching the perfection of nine revolutions there would be a qualitative change.

Without a doubt, there was no comparing the Sheng Mei that Lin Ming had first met to the Sheng Mei of today.

If the current Sheng Mei were to participate in the final trial now, she could easily obtain a completion rate above 90 or 95!

This already far surpassed the results that Lin Ming obtained the first time he participated in the final trial.

This was the capital Sheng Mei would use to fight a True Divinity while she was at the limit of an Empyrean.

At this time, Sheng Mei drew out her sword. This was an oddly-shaped sword. It was pitch black but illuminated with a faint brilliance. It wasn’t made from metal, and while it resembled jade a little, it wasn’t jade at all.

In truth, it was a blade sculpted from bone.

This was a bone sword!

On this bone sword there were still residual runes of the Great Dao. These runes weren’t engraved afterwards but already existed on the bone to begin with. In other words, this sword was made from the bone of some peerless master.

The sword exuded an aura even above that of Lin Ming’s Black Dragon Spear. It nearly surpassed the level of a True Divinity spirit treasure.

Lin Ming found it hard to imagine just where this sword came from or what bone it was forged from.

"This bone sword, is it made from the bone of a demon or the bone of a man?"

This thought flashed through Lin Ming's mind. If a bone was capable of being forged into such a demonic sword, then he feared this person or abyssal must have had strength Beyond Divinity.

Sheng Mei lifted her sword and pointed it straight at Eon Light. This bone sword was slightly curved up and the sword ridge was narrow and thin. It resembled a sword and saber at the same time.

Facing this sword, Eon Light felt a vague pressure. This weapon was clearly far superior to his own.

Eon Light took out a hammer from his spatial ring.

This war hammer was pure black. It was only a lower True Divinity spirit treasure. Although abyssal demons were inherently powerful beings, their refining ability was limited. Eon Light's weapon simply wasn't able to compare with Sheng Mei's.

However, to use a hammer to fight a bone sword, in terms of weapon weight, Eon Light had an overwhelming advantage. Thus at the start he planned to rely upon this strength to win.

He didn't underestimate Sheng Mei. With his first strike he already came smashing down like a thunderbolt!

"Hah!"

Eon Light roared. His muscles bulged out and his hammer came pounding down. Demon power swept through the world. Even with the suppression of the Deep King force field, this hammer strike was still enough to shake the world. Even the Deep King Wheel gently trembled!

In this moment, Sheng Mei moved. Her body was like weightless smoke as she fluttered backwards.

No matter who was watching, it appeared impossible for Sheng Mei's strength to compare with Eon Light's. In order to fend off a frontal attack like this, using speed to battle was the best method.

However, when Sheng Mei drew backwards, she suddenly felt the surrounding space tighten and lock down around her. A massive strength pushed down upon her, covering her like a cage.

"Mm?"

Sheng Mei's eyebrow arched up. Eon Light laughed. "This is my war demon force field. How could I possibly let you escape? Prepare to die!"

Bang!

A hammer came smashing down, like the arrival of the apocalypse!

The entire abyssal audience, especially Sheng Mei's fans, let out cries of alarm!

A horrifying explosion rang out like peals of thunder. Black light slashed out, making it hard to determine what occurred.

After the light faded away, the entire Deep King Wheel tilted slightly from the strike of Eon Light's hammer!

From this alone it could be seen how terrifying this strike was!

But beneath that hammer, Sheng Mei hadn't been severely wounded. She hadn't avoided nor had she even used the bone sword.

In that moment, from behind Sheng Mei, a pair of black wings had burst outwards. These wings wrapped around her body like a shield of black feathers. And above this shield of feathers, mystical runes appeared, some light and some dark.

The feather shield and runes had blocked the onslaught of the hammer!

As the abyssals watched this, many of them felt their jaws drop down. They had guessed that Sheng Mei was strong, but they never imagined she would have the strength to directly face Eon Light!

MW Chapter 2117

Chapter 2117 – Wings of an Angel

…

…

…

No matter who was watching, everyone believed that Sheng Mei was a martial artist who excelled in speed and use of skills. Even if Lin Ming knew she was strong, he still found it mind-boggling to think that she could use her mortal body to directly face off against the raging strength of an abyssal demon. But, the truth was placed in front of him because she had frontally blocked Eon Light's attack.

"You…"

Eon Light looked at Sheng Mei, his dark brown pupils flashing with disbelief.

A woman at the limits of an Empyrean had actually managed to block his incredibly heavy hammer.

“The bloodline of a dark angel is originally a top bloodline of all abyssals demons, and their bloodline is formed from their condensed bloodline essence…” Beneath the battle stage, an old abyssal slowly spoke, his dirty eyes alight with praise.

“This Deep King Road Holy Demoness likely experienced lucky chances that allowed her to temper her wings, and now with her wings closed around her it is no different from a True Divinity level spirit shield. After unfurling them they can become True Divinity level blades. This Holy Demoness was originally at the limits of an Empyrean, just half a step away from the True Divinity level, so even with her wings she shouldn’t have been able to block Eon Light’s attack. But with her Laws, she was able to make up for this…”

The Laws that the old man spoke of were the runes that glittered on Sheng Mei’s wings.

Beside the old man, many abyssals were flabbergasted as they heard this. This Deep King Road Holy Demoness possessed a powerful body transformation technique and her Laws were also formidable. It seemed that all advantages were taken in by her. This was far too terrifying.

Bang!

Eon Light and Sheng Mei separated. Sheng Mei drifted back like a black butterfly, and Lin Ming could see a faint trace of blood on her wings. That strike just now had caused Sheng Mei to receive a minor wound, but to her, this wound wasn’t anything at all.

Eon Light roared out loud and hurled himself towards Sheng Mei.

With his previous strike failing to achieve victory, Eon Light didn't hesitate to use an even stronger attack.

"Demon King Extermination!"

Eon Light's body gushed out with thick demon power. Like roiling clouds of smoke, even though this terrifying strength was suppressed by the Deep King force field it still easily pierced through the void and came crashing down on Sheng Mei like landslides and tsunamis.

Every wisp of power transformed into a fierce demon. For a time, 10,000 demons roared out loud, thirsting to destroy the heavens and ruin the earth.

The might behind this attack was more than twice as powerful as Eon Light's previous attack.

After all, Eon Light was a True Divinity level abyssal. Although he wasn't considered too strong amongst True Divinity abyssals, he still had his own hidden cards and all-out techniques. To defeat an abyssal like him wouldn't be easy at all.

At this time, Sheng Mei also moved. The runes on her body started to radiate light and the mark between her eyebrows began to grow. Surging demon power gathered behind her, condensing into a totem that was like a red lotus in full bloom.

Then, Sheng Mei struck out her sword. The bone sword in her hand seemed to swallow all light as if it were the only existence in this world.

Sword after sword, every sword was simple and true. But as the sword light came slashing down, a deep red lotus bloomed on it, shining with a bewitching light.

The total strength behind this sword light seemed far weaker than Eon Light's Demon King Extermination, but when it cut into those fierce demons a strange scene occurred. The black sword light carried with it an aura of death that seemed to swallow all as well as a Concept of Endlessness, filling it with strength and making it difficult to eliminate.

Eon Light's Demon King Extermination was like a vast wave that blotted out the skies, but Sheng Mei's sword light forcefully broke into that wave and tore open a gap.

The sword light was like a hissing viper, shooting straight towards Eon Light's heart!

"What!?"

Eon Light's pupils shrank and he rapidly retreated. However, the angle of this sword was far too cunning. Even though Eon Light activated his force field to suppress it, this sword light still pierced through his protective demon power and ripped through his scales.

Puff!

Eon Light spat out a mouthful of black blood. He flew backwards and crashed heavily onto the Deep King Wheel.

He used his hammer to prop himself up and avoid the shame of falling down where he was. As he looked at Sheng Mei, his eyes were filled with disbelief.

He never imagined that while Sheng Mei's sword light was clearly less formidable than his Demon King Extermination, it would still rip through his own technique and also wound him.

This was also something that the many abyssal Elders beneath the stage still weren't able to see clearly.

And the one who saw most clearly was Lin Ming. This was because in that move Sheng Mei just used, Lin Ming also understood the Concepts and Laws within it.

The black sword light contained an aura that could swallow all – those were the Death Laws. As for that relatively small and weak sword light that was able to break through the much stronger Demon King Extermination, that was because of the Laws of Endlessness contained within it. When both were joined together, this was the Holy Scripture.

It was true that the demon power in Sheng Mei's body was inferior to that of Eon Light. But, her Laws were able to make up for the disparity in strength and allow her to reverse all odds!

Without a doubt, the Sheng Mei that had reached perfection in the Grand Reincarnation Art now stood at an unimaginably high height of the Laws.

This was true even for Lin Ming. If Lin Ming were to be compared to Sheng Mei, then he would win if they compared how broad the Laws they studied were. But if they were only comparing their comprehensions of the Holy Scripture Laws, then Lin Ming was far from being able to match Sheng Mei.

Moreover, Lin Ming also felt that because of the bone sword in Sheng Mei's hands, she was able to display the greatest strength of her Laws.

As if the runes inherent on that bone sword were the ultimate manifestation of the Holy Scripture.

This was a bone sword that nearly surpassed the rank of a True Divinity spirit treasure. And with those Holy Scripture runes marked into it, a sudden thought crossed Lin Ming's mind…

"This bone sword, could it have been made with the bones of Immortal Sovereign!?"

Lin Ming was panic-stricken to think this. The Immortal Sovereign was one of the two great leaders of the 33 Heavens 10 billion years ago; he was a peerless existence that was in no way inferior to the Asura Road Master!

When Lin Ming listened to Clear and Ink speak, it seems that the Asura Road Master had yet to die, but had simply fallen into a dormant state for various reasons. And as for the place of this dormancy, that was a mystery.

The Asura Road Master was alive, but not only was the Immortal Sovereign dead, even his bones had been turned into swords?

With such a possibility swimming in his mind, Lin Ming felt saddened. But at the same time he was also increasingly confused about Sheng Mei's status.

And at this time, atop the Deep King Wheel, the battle between Sheng Mei and Eon Light continued to rage on, becoming increasingly fierce!

After Sheng Mei took the upper hand she didn't give Eon Light any chance to recover. Her body rushed forwards like surging black smoke and the sword in her hand danced in the air. Sword light fell down like rain, dense and fleeting!

Every sword light contained the Life Laws of growing endlessly, unable to be destroyed. At the same time, these sword lights contained the Death Laws, easily melting apart any demon power it contained. Whether it was Eon Light's protective demon essence or the attack he sent out, all of it was pierced through by Sheng Mei's sword light!

The strength Sheng Mei used was always weaker than Eon Light's, but from what everyone could see, Sheng Mei was the one winning!

Eon Light continued to use method after method, but not only were his abilities all countered by Sheng Mei but he instead gained more wounds.

Eon Light's energy slowly turned chaotic. He was consuming more energy than Sheng Mei and he also had more injuries than her.

But as for Sheng Mei, she was neither slow nor fast, her breath steady, as if she could continue to fight on for forever.

With the fight having reached this step, the result was already decided. Now it was only a matter of time until Sheng Mei's victory.

All the abyssals watching were shocked. Although they expected Sheng Mei was strong, they never imagined that Sheng Mei would suppress Eon Light in this battle!

She was a powerhouse at the limits of an Empyrean. At most, she could be considered as just having a single step in the threshold of True Divinity. There was still a massive difference until she was truly at the True Divinity level.

If she could fight a lower True Divinity with her cultivation, then what would happen once she became a True Divinity level abyssal? Wouldn't she be able to fight an upper True Divinity?

At the True Divinity level, jumping two small boundaries to battle was an unimaginable feat. This meant that in the future Sheng Mei would have a small chance of stepping Beyond Divinity!

Even if she didn't rely on the totem level abyssal inheritance of the abyssal ritual, she could still step Beyond Divinity.

And what if the abyssal ritual was added on?

Then, just what would her future be like?

The abyssals that watched from the side simply couldn't imagine it.

At this time, the battle on the stage was reaching its finale. When Eon Light used Demon King Extermination one more time, he was already completely spent.

And his technique was once again broken apart by Sheng Mei’s Holy Scripture Laws.

Puff!

A dark and profound sword light pierced through Eon Light’s chest. Blood shot out and he was sent flying backwards before crashing onto the Deep King Wheel.

Eon Light had been defeated!

MW Chapter 2118

Chapter 2118 – The Number One Elite Beneath Heaven

…

…

…

“First match, victor – Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness!”

As the Elder responsible for presiding over this competition announced the results, the entire audience of abyssals was filled with disbelief, all of them at a loss for words.

Everyone knew that it was impossible for Deep King Road to send out the Holy Demoness in a situation where they didn’t have absolute faith in success, and thus allow the Ancient Eon Sect and Nine Nether Palace to obtain successive victories against her. But when the result of the first battle was truly announced, all of them struggled to accept what occurred. Without the aid of any array formations, puppets, or anything else like that, Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness had managed to directly defeat Eon Light with just herself!

In the Dark Abyss, it had been billions of years since someone at the limits of an Empyrean who was capable of defeating a lower True Divinity had appeared.

“What a terrifying woman. During this venture into the Demon God’s Tomb, if she can pass the rest of the abyssal ritual and obtain the strength of the totem abyssals sealed within, then her future strength can only be imagined...”

The abyssals seemed to realize that in the group Deep King Road sent into the Demon God’s Tomb, Sheng Mei might be the lead.

Deep King Road would surely do everything in their power to forge Sheng Mei into a Beyond Divinity level powerhouse. And, she indeed possessed the capital to become such.

“Within the next several tens of thousands of years, this Holy Demoness will surely become one of those most formidable existences in the abyss. To think that just several hundred years ago there were still higher abyssals that wished to defeat her and dual cultivate with her, just laughable... who actually has the qualifications...?”

“That’s right. Her status and talent are at unreachable heights and there is no higher abyssal capable of comparing with her. Moreover, she is far too cold. I fear she won’t lower herself to be with anyone...”

“What a top grade woman. If I could obtain her then I would be willing to die. If I could dual cultivate with her then it would be an unimaginable benefit to my strength!”

The surrounding abyssals started to discuss. After this fight, Sheng Mei had undoubtedly become the number one proud elite below the heavens.

At this time, there were also some people that remembered the Ancient Eon Sect and the Ancient Eon Sect's Ninth Elder. They subconsciously glanced at Lin Ming who would soon fight Sheng Mei. They wanted to find some sort of panicked expression in this unlucky Elder who had chosen to fight Sheng Mei.

Unfortunately they were left disappointed. To their surprise, Lin Ming sat in meditation, his breath calm, as if the shocking battle on the stage had nothing to do with him.

"Is this the boy of the same level who wishes to challenge Deep King Road's Holy Demoness? He can still sit there?"

"That's right, he is the Ancient Eon Sect's Ninth Elder. He should only be sitting there pretending to be calm right now to maintain some sense of momentum. But, if he can still pretend like this that must mean he has some level of ability, otherwise there would be a problem with his head."

Several hundred years ago, there were such blindly arrogant higher abyssals who desired to challenge Sheng Mei. Although they all knew Sheng Mei possessed incredible strength, they still insisted on fighting her because of their extreme self-confidence. Before they fought her they were still confident because they didn't know their own weight.

In the end they were severely wounded by Sheng Mei, and there were even some that were crippled.

But now, even if there was yet another blindly arrogant challenger they still shouldn't think that their strength could compare with that of a True Divinity level abyssal.

Even a True Divinity was defeated by Sheng Mei. One would have to carefully consider just how strong they were in front of a True Divinity and then one could extrapolate the result of the battle from this.

Yet not only was this Ninth Elder not in despair but he sat calmly where he was. This left those watching him surprised.

"I hear he isn't even at the limits of an Empyrean and his cultivation is lower than Deep King Road's Holy Demoness's. He is likely at the upper Empyrean level or the peak of the middle Empyrean level. If his cultivation is lower than Sheng Mei's, just what point is there in fighting..."

Some abyssals spoke in hushed voices. At this time, Sheng Mei's gaze fell upon Lin Ming. As Lin Ming sat there in meditation, his breath, his heartbeat, the revolution of energy within his body, everything was sharply captured by Sheng Mei's eyes.

From aura alone, it was clear that Lin Ming wasn’t faking being calm. This left Sheng Mei puzzled.

Just where did this Ninth Elder of the Ancient Eon Sect originate from?

Lin Ming felt Sheng Mei’s gaze on him. He opened his eyes slightly and looked back at her with confidence.

He had been adjusting his condition all this time, making sure he was in his peak state, because he had a feeling that this upcoming battle with Sheng Mei would not be easy at all!

Not to mention Sheng Mei’s formidable strength and her higher cultivation, there was also the fact that Lin Ming had taken the form of an abyssal right now. In his current condition, the strength he could display was limited.

Lin Ming’s true self was actually located in his abyssal form’s inner world. Although his true self and avatar could interlink their strength together, it would be difficult for him to display the strength of his true self in a manner where Sheng Mei couldn’t identify him.

Lin Ming had a faint premonition that between him and Sheng Mei, perhaps this battle was already pre-destined.

In all the years that he had known Sheng Mei, their relationship had not been one of lovers, but of enemies and friends. They fought each other and confronted each other.

From the final trial of the Asura Road to grasping the principles atop the Akashic Dream Universe’s shrine platforms, to being hunted down to the Sky Spill Continent 12,000 years ago, and finally now…

Lin Ming took a deep breath and closed his eyes, entering an ethereal state.

However, compared to Lin Ming, Eon Fire could no longer remain composed.

Because the match he chose was Sheng Mei!

In terms of strength, Eon Fire was around the same as Eon Light. If Sheng Mei had defeated Eon Light so easily, then if he were to go up on stage his chances were likely no better.

“This woman is too terrifying!”

Eon Fire’s complexion turned ugly.

“Your battle with her will commence three days from now. You must do everything you can to succeed. The intensity of her energy is inferior to your own, but she surpasses you in the Laws. When you fight her you must make sure your attacks aren’t spread out and blotting out the skies but more precise and focuses instead.”

Elder Eon God advised.

By this time, no one in the Ancient Eon Sect cared about Lin Ming anymore. They were originally afraid that Lin Ming would shame them, but now even Eon Light had lost. If an Empyrean like Lin Ming were to lose, no matter how miserably he lost it couldn’t be any more disgraceful than what occurred.

....

These True Divinity battles continued at a pace of one per day.

After Sheng Mei’s battle ended, the second battle was Nine Nether Palace’s Nether Nihility against another Elder of Deep King Road.

Nether Nihility was the most famous and prestigious abyssal amongst the Elders of Nine Nether Palace that were in the prime of their youth. He was the strongest abyssal that Nine Nether Palace sent out and also the one with the greatest potential.

When he was choosing opponents he didn’t choose Sheng Mei. Because he didn’t know how strong she was, he chose another lower True Divinity instead.

But now Nether Nihility somewhat regretted his decision. He sorely wished to fight Sheng Mei, to battle this proud child of heaven.

However, when he stood atop the Deep King Wheel and looked towards the direction of Deep King Road, he didn’t see Sheng Mei’s figure. Sheng Mei hadn’t appeared at all, clearly not interested in this battle.

Nether Nihility frowned. It was clear that in her eyes, he wasn’t worth paying attention to.

Nether Nihility’s match ended with his victory. Although his victory hadn’t come easily, he wasn’t flustered at all. Everything occurred in order.

Such a result was within the expectations of many abyssals.

Nether Nihility was truly strong. But to the people of the Ancient Eon Sect, the pressure on them was far too great.

Nine Nether Palace had already won, but whether their Ancient Eon Sect could win was still an unknown.

If they were to lose all three matches, then during this venture into the Demon God's Tomb they would surely fall into an extremely passive position.

And then, in the third match, it was Sheng Mei once again!

Sheng Mei's opponent was from Nine Nether Palace, and her opponent was also the weakest True Divinity in Nine Nether Palace.

Nine Nether Palace's Elders were different from those of the Ancient Eon Sect. Of the three True Divinity level abyssals they sent out, Nether Nihility was the absolute strongest, another was in the middle, and as for the third, he was the weakest. His age was slightly higher than it should be and his strength was also lacking. He had just been brought here to make up numbers.

When Sheng Mei and this weakest True Divinity level abyssal of Nine Nether Palace stood on the Deep King Wheel together, no one thought that this Elder of Nine Nether Palace had even the most minute possibility of winning.

Those from the Ancient Eon Sect could only hope that this weak Elder would be able to consume a bit of Sheng Mei's strength so that Eon Fire's chances of defeating Sheng Mei would be a bit higher.

Because what followed next would be the battle between Eon Fire and Sheng Mei.

However, no one thought that as this weakest True Divinity level Elder stepped on stage, he would simply say, “I admit defeat!”

This left many watching abyssals speechless. Although everyone could see what the result would be, this was still a True Divinity against an Empyrean. A True Divinity had actually admitted defeat without regard for their honor; this was simply a joke!

And the Elder of Nine Nether Palace admitting defeat like this caused Eon Fire’s complexion to become increasingly ugly, because the next one up would be him.

And Sheng Mei hadn’t even used up any of her strength…

MW Chapter 2119

Chapter 2119 – Unfathomable

…

…

…

“Those old Nine Nether Palace bastards!”

The abyssal Elders of the Ancient Eon Sect grimaced, their complexions darkening. Nine Nether Palace and the Ancient Eon Sect were allies, but they still competed against each other.

After the Nine Nether Palace Elder admitted defeat against Sheng Mei, it was the Ancient Eon Sect’s Eon Fire’s turn to step onto the stage.

Since Nine Nether Palace knew that they were going to fight Sheng Mei first, they naturally weren’t willing to smooth the road for the Ancient Eon Sect.

If they had to lose then they would rather everyone lose together.

Each battle was separated by a single day. To a True Divinity level abyssal, a single day was as fast as a blink of an eye.

The abyssals present waited for a day. Then, Sheng Mei's third match began, and her opponent was – Eon Fire!

It had already been two days since Sheng Mei's battle with Eon Light. She hadn't consumed much to begin with, and since she had an additional day to recover she had already returned to her peak condition.

"Elder Eon Fire, you can do it! I believe in you!"

On the side of Nine Nether Palace, someone shouted out loud. The Elder who said this could be considered to have some friendship with the Ancient Eon Sect, but the truth was that this so-called friendship was the type where they cheerily laughed at some times while holding a knife ready to stab them in the back or gloat over the misfortune of others.

Eon Fire froze where he was as he heard this. His face flushed red and he glared at the Elder who spoke, icily saying, "Humph, just you wait and see!"

As Eon Fire came on stage, he was well aware of his own strength and knew that this battle would be difficult. Even so, he didn’t feel that his loss was already determined.

This was because Sheng Mei had defeated Eon Light utilizing her own ingenuity. In his eagerness to win, Eon Light had used several incredibly mighty skills, but all of them had been countered by Sheng Mei using a small price. As such, Eon Light had consumed more and more energy while Sheng Mei hadn’t used up much strength at all. From that point on he had been doomed to defeat.

Thus, Eon Fire planned to compete with Sheng Mei in a battle of skills and delay for as much time as possible. He believed that with his True Divinity boundary, the foundational base of his energy was far deeper than hers. At the end, he would be the one still standing.

This was what Eon Fire had planned and also what he would do.

Every True Divinity had their own methods and Eon Fire was no mud that would be freely beaten around by others. After he stepped on stage, black abyssal flames ignited all over the Deep King Wheel.

These were demonic flames known for being able to annihilate all, as well as Eon Fire’s force field!

“Do you all really think I will lose? I will win and show you all!” Eon Fire’s eyes burst out with a brilliant fighting spirit. As the abyssal flame force field lit up all around him, his confidence rapidly rose!

Generally speaking, if any abyssal demon below the True Divinity level were to enter this abyssal flame force field then they would be charred to ashes. But let alone Eon Fire, even a True Divinity level abyssal would have to consume a massive amount of strength in these flames.

What Eon Fire wanted to do was burn up Sheng Mei’s strength.

From the start of the battle, Eon Fire had no intention of directly facing Sheng Mei. He increased the distance between them, delaying for time to consume her strength.

Sheng Mei’s several sword lights were all blocked by Eon Fire using his flame shield and then burned away.

The more Eon Fire fought the more confident he was. And maintaining a force field actually didn’t use up much strength; this was one of the advantages of force field skills.

“This Eon Fire is a True Divinity abyssal, yet he uses such a pathetic tactic to fight against an Empyrean level abyssal…”

“Although it is disgraceful, any tactic that wins is a good tactic. Eon Fire doing this is the indisputably correct choice.”

“The result of this battle is a bit confusing. I wonder just who will be able to last until the end.”

As many abyssals discussed amongst themselves, they all realized this would be a protracted battle. This was because Eon Fire wasn’t willing to directly confront Sheng Mei, and if two True Divinity level opponents were to fight like this they could go on for several days and nights.

However, as everyone was thinking this, Lin Ming actually knew that this battle wouldn’t last much longer. This was because what Sheng Mei was proficient in was not just the Life and Death laws.

Cold light flashed in Sheng Mei’s eyes. The bone sword in her hand drew a circle in the air before she stabbed it into the Deep King Wheel.

Shua!

With the sword blade as the center, howling cold winds rose up from all around. A layer of frost appeared on Sheng Mei’s originally beautiful face, and the blood red lotus mark between her eyebrows also turned icy blue.

She calmly stretched out her right hand. Enchanting six-petal frost flowers appeared, rippling around as they spread over the space of the entire Deep King Wheel!

Hiss –

Hiss –

Sheng Mei's entire body exuded a mystical cold air. She raised her hands in the void, drawing images that were beautiful and delicate. Snowflake patterns appeared in the air, staggering outwards and interlocking, filled with infinite charm.

"Umbral Heaven Ice Array…"

Lin Ming sucked in a light breath. In the past when he first met Sheng Mei in the Asura Road, she had used this skill before.

The final trial of the Asura Road's fifth test was to battle against the Undying Inferno and Undying Polar Ice.

At the start when the Undying Inferno appeared, it was Sheng Mei who had nearly faced it alone. And what she relied upon to do this was her Ice Laws – the extreme cold battle array and Umbral Heaven Ice Array that she possessed!

Ice and fire opposed each other. This was the basis of Sheng Mei's confidence to face the Undying Inferno alone.

However, Sheng Mei had eventually failed. Because she alone shouldered the majority of defending against the Undying Inferno's attacks, she had used up too much strength and had failed to kill it.

When the Undying Polar Ice appeared afterwards, Sheng Mei and Lin Ming and joined together to finally pass the final trial's fifth test.

Now, with over 12,000 years having passed, the Umbral Heaven Ice Array displayed by Sheng Mei had reached an inconceivable boundary.

As the ice array appeared, an incomparably horrifying cold energy covered the entire Deep King Wheel, coating it in a layer of ice!

Recklessly freezing ice energy collided against the burning flames that Eon Fire released. For a time, the cold ice melted, but massive swathes of fire were also swallowed up and extinguished!

The entire stage had turned into a world of ice and fire!

As the abyssals watched this intense struggle of domains, their eyes bulged open as they stared.

This time Sheng Mei didn’t rely on any clever techniques, but instead used her own strength to frontally resist Eon Fire’s strength!

In a collision of domains, although it was related to one’s Laws, it was even more so a competition of absolute strength!

Elder Eon Fire’s complexion rapidly changed!

He never imagined that Sheng Mei’s attainments in the Ice Laws would be so amazing!

By this point, whoever’s domain would finally be able to cover the entire battlefield would take the upper hand and likely obtain victory in the end!

Eon Fire immediately poured more and more of his strength into his domain.

Rumble rumble rumble!

In a clash of the power of Laws, countless ice and fire runes were smashed apart. With Sheng Mei at the center of these runes, they were like giant and gorgeous flower petals that bloomed in layers!

However, in the end, Sheng Mei was at a higher level. In a collision of strength she was no weaker than Eon Fire, and in terms of Laws, she occupied the advantage!

The void froze and the abyssal flames were swallowed up. Eon Fire clenched his teeth, beads of sweat already dripping down his forehead.

Shua!

With a light sound, a pair of black wings unfurled from behind Sheng Mei. She flew up into the air, and in this moment as layers of runes covered her, she was like a goddess of the heavens.

When Sheng Mei released her wings, her Umbral Heaven Ice Array also changed in color. The six-petal flowers began to change from deep blue into pitch black.

Black snow and ice surged over the Deep King Wheel, mysterious and powerful, carrying with it the swallowing force of the power of death.

At this time, whether it was Sheng Mei or Eon Fire, neither struck out against the other. This had now become a confrontation of force fields.

Time passed, by seconds and minutes. After nearly two hours more and more sweat appeared on Eon Fire's face as he used up half his strength.

But as for Sheng Mei, her breathing only quickened a little. From the start until now she had maintained utter calm.

With the fight have reached this degree there was no longer any point in continuing. Sheng Mei had already proven her strength. In terms of the Ice Laws, she completely surpassed Eon Fire's abyssal flames!

"I... I admit defeat..."

Eon Fire struggled to say, crestfallen.

He thought that he might lose, but he never imagined it would be because he was directly defeated in the domain he excelled in, and particularly in the abyssal flame force field he was so proud of.

Woosh –

Immediately, the flames that shrouded the skies completely scattered, and the layers of ice also shattered, turning into countless motes of light that shot into the heavens before turning into a thick cloud of snow that gently fell downwards…

Such a scene was as beautiful as a dream.

And at this moment, the Sheng Mei that was within this beautiful scene left many abyssals stunned.

Sheng Mei had won her third battle.

If it was just winning then no one would have been surprised. But during this battle, she had displayed completely new skills and never used the abilities she did during her first battle.

The feeling this gave off was as if Sheng Mei’s strength was unfathomably deep…

MW Chapter 2120

Chapter 2120 – The Battle Is Not Over

…

…

…

"This Holy Demoness is too terrifying. In her first battle with Eon Light, she hadn't even used her full strength."

When Sheng Mei fought with Eon Light, what she relied on to win was the Holy Scripture. And in her battle with Eon Fire she utilized her deep ice force field to win. Because of this, one couldn't help but think that Sheng Mei never tried her best to begin with.

She could win with skill and even in frontal combat she was no weaker than a True Divinity level abyssal.

Formidable strength, profound Laws, her dark angel bloodline, that horrifying pair of black wings, and even that mysterious bone sword that might even be at the Beyond Divinity level.

So many dreadful strengths had been distilled in a single body. Such a woman was simply far too terrifying.

“If this woman were given time, then in 100,000 years I have no idea just what step she would grow to…”

“The ultimate peak of True Divinity level abyssals, if she also underwent the abyssal ritual it’s hard to imagine where she would be!”

Many abyssal Elders watching in the audience were left bewildered. Sheng Mei had reached greater heights than they did, and in the future she might even become the ruler of the abyss!

The truth was that Lin Ming was also secretly astonished as he watched Sheng Mei.

Compared to 12,000 years ago, Sheng Mei had grown far too much. During these years she must have experienced many things, and in terms of Laws, foundation, and all other aspects, she had undergone a qualitative change!

"If this continues, then wouldn't Sheng Mei…"

A thought suddenly flashed through Lin Ming's mind. Currently, the Soul Emperor should still be in seclusion refining the Eternal Soul.

If Sheng Mei could pass the abyssal ritual then she would surely become a True Divinity level abyssal. With her strength in addition to all the potential that would be dug out by the abyssal ritual, would there be a chance for her to wrest free from the Soul Emperor's control in the future?

This thought only appeared for a brief moment in Lin Ming's mind before it was shot down. He had a faint feeling that the Soul Emperor might be the most terrifying character he had ever seen in his entire life.

Even if the Soul Emperor was in seclusion, he still wouldn't allow Sheng Mei to flee his grasp.

It was even possible that Sheng Mei had come to the Dark Abyss on the orders of the Soul Emperor.

For instance, perhaps the Soul Emperor wanted to use Sheng Mei to obtain one of the totem level abyssal inheritances?

Lin Ming didn't know what the Soul Emperor's plans were nor did he know what the totem level abyssal inheritances were, or how they would be useful to the Soul Emperor.

If his speculations were true, then just what level had the Soul Emperor's strength reached? Lin Ming found it hard to imagine. It shouldn't be… Beyond Divinity, right?

"That… is impossible!"

Lin Ming shook his head. To step Beyond Divinity, there was no way it was that easy!

As Lin Ming was lost in thought, Sheng Mei's eyes fell on him. After defeating Eon Fire, Sheng Mei didn't leave the stage but stood on the Deep King Wheel and continued to stare at Lin Ming.

Her vision was like a sword of light, thrusting straight into Lin Ming's eyes and heart.

Lin Ming returned her gaze, silently looking back at her.

The corners of Sheng Mei's lips faintly moved. She didn't use any sound transmission, but Lin Ming could see what her meaning was from her eyes. It seemed that she was saying, "I am waiting for you…"

Many people noticed that Sheng Mei was looking towards Lin Ming.

“It’s actually that fellow. The Holy Demoness is looking at him…”

“That fellow has really struck the bad luck jackpot this time. Originally the Holy Demoness should have no reason to care about such a minor and unimportant character, but it seems that… the Holy Demoness will not let him go. The Holy Demoness has always been proud and arrogant and she seems particularly sensitive to people who dare to propose marriage to her. It seems that even though their battle will be utterly lopsided, that fellow will still be brutally beaten up by the Holy Demoness. He might even die…”

“If he dies then he dies. When the Holy Demoness laid down the rules in the past, she said that anyone who proposed marriage would have to sign the Life and Death Contract. With the Holy Demoness’s current strength and status, the Ancient Eon Sect wouldn’t do anything if she killed a mere Empyrean level Elder.

The present Lin Ming had already become a clown in the hearts of many abyssals.

Because Sheng Mei had won three continuous matches against True Divinity level Elders, Lin Ming’s match against Sheng Mei was now nothing more than a farce.

The truth was that at this time, the several Elders from the Ancient Eon Sects felt their cheeks burning. In particular, when Sheng Mei looked their way they all wished that they could find some hole in the ground that they could worm their way into.

Two of their True Divinity Elders had been defeated by Sheng Mei.

And there was also Lin Ming. After a few more days he would fight with Sheng Mei. She could already annihilate True Divinities, so who cared about an Empyrean…?

“Eon Moon, everything is up to you. You must win!”

The Great Elder said to a tall and burly abyssal near him.

Eon Moon was last remaining hope of the Ancient Eon Sect.

“If you also lose then our Ancient Eon Sect will have not even a single victory. If so, then not only will we lose all face but once we enter the Demon God’s Tomb we will be placed in a completely passive position.”

Within the Dark Abyss, the laws of the jungle were applied where the strong ate the weak. The strong became stronger and the weaker became weaker.

With six totem level influences, the reason that two of them were able to break out of the pack and stand out was all because they were strong enough that they could continuously occupy more resources.

Like this, they could become increasingly terrifying.

“I understand.”

Eon Moon grit his teeth. As the final hope of the Ancient Eon Sect, he felt a great pressure on his shoulders.

However, the one next wasn’t him, but an Elder from Nine Nether Palace.

This abyssal Elder had also chosen to challenge Sheng Mei.

His strength was inferior to Nether Nihility’s, and even ordinary when compared to Eon Fire.

There was naturally no suspense into the result.

Sheng Mei won!

This was also Sheng Mei’s last match.

Like this, Sheng Mei won all four of her matches, three which had faced her and one which had admitted defeat.

Such success was too dreadful!

“Someone at the limit of an Empyrean has won four straight matches against True Divinity level abyssals. This is simply unprecedented in the past and unrivalled in the future…”

An abyssal Elder from a small influence sighed deeply.

Now, within the entire Dark Abyss, there wouldn’t be anyone who doubted how bright Sheng Mei’s future was. In time she would eventually become the top powerhouse of the entire abyss!

And at this time the final match was ready to commence. Eon Moon stepped on stage!

This would also be the last match of the competition. The abyssals from the Ancient Eon Sect felt their hearts tighten. They paid close attention to Eon Moon; this was a battle they absolutely could not lose.

Eon Moon's opponent was an abyssal demon from Deep King Road that seemed relatively weaker.

Of course, this was only relatively speaking. Of all the Elders who originated from Deep King Road and were able to represent Deep King Road to enter the Demon God's Tomb, none were weak.

Eon Moon put forth his full effort in this battle.

He didn't immediately reveal his trump cards when he stepped nor did he use any moves that underestimated his opponent. The battle proceeded in an orderly manner, which probing strikes gradually growing stronger, move countering moves, feints and surges. In addition to some plans, Eon Mon tried everything he could to defeat his opponent.

However, the Deep King Road Elder wasn't some weakling.

Facing Eon Moon's steady onslaught, this Elder also followed step by step.

The two abyssal Elders were cautious in their moves. There didn't seem to be much difference in their strengths.

And in such a situation, the battle between the two abyssals continued for a long time.

They fought for an entire day, consuming a great deal of their energy. Even so, when the fight reached a deadlock a change suddenly occurred.

When the Deep King Road Elder clashed with Eon Moon once more, just as he finished attacking, a black fluctuation of energy shot out from between his eyebrows.

This black flow of energy seemed to be the soul of some fierce demon. The demon soul flew into Eon Moon's spiritual sea.

As this demon soul struck his spiritual sea, Eon Moon let out a cry of grief. As if he were possessed, he began to violently shiver.

The Deep King Road Elder took advantage of this split second to flash in front of Eon Moon and smash his claw down on Eon Moon's chest!

Puff!

Eon Moon cried out miserably as he was sent tumbling away.

The two abyssals had used up around the same amount of energy. Now, this heavy strike was enough to decide victory and defeat!

As a result, the Deep King Road Elder won!

After this occurred the abyssals in the audience fell silent for several breaths of time. Then, they began to seethe with excitement.

That Deep King Road Elder had clearly been raising something in his mind, something similar to an ancient evil soul. This ancient evil soul wasn't too powerful and if Eon Moon was in his peak state then it wouldn't have been able to harm him at all.

But because Eon Moon had consumed most of his strength, this ancient evil soul was able to rush in and become the last straw that crushed Eon Mon's back.

And, the Deep King Road Elder was able to take advantage of this brief paralysis to defeat Eon Moon!

This was likely already planned from the beginning. Eon Moon's choice to take the fight in a steady and orderly manner was likely gladly accepted by his opponent.

With this, the Ancient Eon Sect lost all three matches!

For a time, the abyssals of Deep King Road raucously cheered. Some abyssals from smaller influences had gloating expressions on their faces.

As for the several Elders of the Ancient Eon Sect, their complexions were beyond ugly.

It had to be known that Nine Nether Palace had won one match, whilst their Ancient Eon Sect had suffered total defeat.

They had not only lost all benefits but also their face; this was no different from giving the enemy army all one’s soldiers and wives!

“Hahaha! Elder Eon God, well fought!”

On the side of Deep King Road, the middle True Divinity Elder presiding over the competition chuckled.

“Our skills are inferior to others’, so we are sincerely convinced of our losses.”

Eon God barely managed to maintain some semblance of composure and uttered a few polite words. And behind Eon God, the other disciples of the Ancient Eon Sect fidgeted around, obviously wishing to leave as soon as possible.

These disciples could clearly hear the discussions of the abyssals all around them. When a wall was about to collapse, everyone wanted to give it a push. All these small influences fervently wished to see a spot amongst the six totem level influences open up.

After all, Eon had long since died and the Book of Eon had disappeared without a trace. It was time for the Ancient Eon Sect to let go of their position.

“Let’s go!”

Eon God waved his hand, turning to depart.

There was no meaning to staying any longer. The longer they stayed, the more they would suffer the ridicule of others.

The Ancient Eon Sect disciples all felt relieved. They hurried to stand, wishing they could teleport out of this place as they didn’t want to stay a single moment longer

However, as the many disciples of the Ancient Eon Sect stood up, a cold and enchanting voice rang through the entire audience. “Just where are you going? The battle has yet to end!”

The abyssals present were stunned. They turned to see that the woman speaking was a woman wrapped in fog-like darkness. She was Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness.

MW *Chapter* 2121

Chapter 2121 – Facing Sheng Mei

…

…

…

“Mm?”

Elder Eon God paused. He glanced towards Sheng Mei, a restless premonition in his heart.

Sheng Mei faintly said, “Your Ancient Eon Sect still has an Elder that wishes to challenge. Then, we might as well begin today!”

As Sheng Mei spoke her gaze fell on Lin Ming. For a time, Lin Ming became the focus of attention for every abyssal present.

All of them turned towards him.

Many of these abyssals recognized Lin Ming and knew that this was the fellow who had a mere Empyrean cultivation and wished to jump ranks to challenge Deep King Road's Holy Demoness.

Then, the abyssals present had entertained expressions as they looked at the complexions of the abyssals from the Ancient Eon Sect.

For such shame to fall upon others, this naturally caused these abyssals to be happy.

"Deep King Road's Holy Demoness truly doesn't care for the feelings of others. This battle is clearly bullying, and yet she isn't willing to let it go."

"True, but this punishment is to serve as a warning for others. In truth, with just the strength that the Holy Demoness displayed today, there should be no one willing to mention marriage to her in the future..."

An Elder from a small influence said with a gloating tone.

At this time the complexions of the several Elders from the Ancient Eon Sect were incredibly ugly. They all wished they could dig a hole into the ground and hide away.

By this point, this battle was no longer humorous to them!

Even Eon God already started to regret designing this trap for Lin Ming. Now, not only would Lin Ming be ruined but their Ancient Eon Sect would be disgraced and mocked by others.

Elder Eon God managed to force out a smile. With his right hand he touched his chest, his long black nails joining together in a common bow of etiquette amongst the abyssals.

He said, “Your Highness Holy Demoness indeed loves to joke. Victory and defeat is already clear to all. At the limits of an Empyrean, Your Highness Holy Demoness is already able to defeat a lower True Divinity abyssal. This sort of accomplishment is more than enough to be called the number one elite of the entire Dark Abyss, so what reason is there to do something so unbefitting your status as fighting a young Elder from my Ancient Eon Sect? Moreover, our Elder also lacks in cultivation and was only dragged here to make up for numbers. If there was any way that we offended Your Highness Holy Demoness before this, then I personally apologize.”

Eon God politely said to Sheng Mei. From between his words, he was clearly implying that if Sheng Mei were to truly fight Lin Ming then she would simply be disregarding her status to bully someone far weaker.

Eon God thought that with Sheng Mei's arrogance and pride she would surely make a show and not blame anyone in this matter. Moreover, he had even apologized and admitted defeat.

However, he never thought that Sheng Mei would seem as if she never heard his words at all. She continued to look at Lin Ming, and, what left Eon God and the other Elders of the Ancient Eon Sect the most speechless was that Lin Ming was still sitting in meditation where he was.

As if everything occurring around him was irrelevant.

This caused the Ancient Eon Sect Elders to nearly stumble to the ground. Just what was he still doing here!?

Eon God sent an impatient sound transmission to Lin Ming. "Brat! Have you gone mad? Have you seen the strength of these Deep King Road abyssals? Just give up any thoughts of entering the Demon God's Tomb with the Book of Eon!"

He originally placed a trap for Lin Ming because he wanted Lin Ming to suffer a little bit of hardship. And now, all the abyssals present had witnessed Sheng Mei's strength on their own. As long as Lin Ming wasn't stupid then he would know that taking the Book of Eon to enter the Demon God's Tomb was no different than walking into his own death.

If Lin Ming were to regret his choice and draw back, although it might be a bit ugly to look at, it was still far better than being beaten senseless by Sheng Mei.

At least the Book of Eon would be safe after this lesson.

However, Lin Ming simply ignored Eon God's sound transmission. He slowly rose up, his feet planted down and his toes pushed forwards as he faced Sheng Mei.

Sheng Mei's lips curved up, her expression seeming to say 'I knew you would accept the challenge'.

"You... are you really planning to fight?"

Eon Light could see that demon power already surged through Lin Ming's body and he stared at Lin Ming as if he were looking at a monster.

This Lin Ming still wanted to fight Sheng Mei in such a situation? Had he gone insane? Or was he just far too stupid?

Lin Ming opened his mouth and said, "Your Highness Holy Demoness? I should refer to you like this I suppose. Are you one of the people entering the Demon God's Tomb on behalf of Deep King Road?"

Sheng Mei was startled. She didn’t know why this abyssal Elder who wished to challenge her would ask such a question.

“Why do you ask?”

Sheng Mei didn’t directly respond. But, Lin Ming continued to say, “Mm… If I’m not wrong then that should be true. In the abyss, strength is revered above all, and this True Divinity level competition was arranged to assign resources based on strength. If Your Highness Holy Demoness was to obtain one of the core spots of those entering the Demon God’s Tomb, then that would be a position truly worthy or your reputation and outstanding talent.”

As Lin Ming spoke, all of the surrounding abyssals, including Sheng Mei, were bewildered. Eon God glared at Lin Ming and sent him a sound transmission. “What nonsense are you speaking?! Hurry up and draw back, or are you really so stubborn about dying!”

Lin Ming disregarded Eon God. He continued to say, “According to the rules of this True Divinity competition, the division of resources is based upon the respective levels of strength of those that will enter the Demon God’s Tomb. Then, does that mean if I possess strength similar to that of Your Highness Holy Demoness, I will also enjoy equivalent treatment?”

Lin Ming spoke so much before finally saying his goal. Since his battle with Sheng Mei was destined to occur then he might as well win a chance for himself and bring the Book of Eon into the Demon God's Tomb openly and proudly.

His words, whether it was from logic or truth, all were impeccable. These were indeed the rules for which the alliance was based upon, in which strength would determine everything. It was fair and just.

However, with Lin Ming's current status and the present situation, for him to say such words before he stepped onto the battlefield seemed as if he had gone mad.

As a result, the many abyssals watching were all left wide-eyed.

"What did he just say?"

"If he possesses strength similar to the Holy Demoness then he can also enjoy equivalent treatment?"

Because Lin Ming's words were too outrageous, many abyssals weren't able to react for some time.

For some reason it seemed as if this Ninth Elder from the Ancient Eon Sect hadn't yet realized that he was no opponent of Sheng Mei's from the start. Not only was he still dreaming of holding this beauty in his arms but he also wanted to enjoy similar treatment upon entering the Demon God's Tomb.

Was his mind normal?

This arrogant and ignorant fellow, just how could he stand there and still challenge the Holy Demoness!?

At this time, the abyssals of Deep King Road felt the entire situation worth a good laugh. "I never thought that this Elder from the Ancient Eon Sect would have such a unique personality!"

A Deep King Road Elder said. As an Ancient Eon Sect Elder heard this, his face turned green. Now, all of these Ancient Eon Sect Elders wished they could jump on stage to beat up Lin Ming to prevent him humiliating them any further.

Even Sheng Mei was startled. She realized that there was something special about Lin Ming, but this was something that purely came from some inexplicable touch of intuition. Still, she never believed that Lin Ming had the qualifications to fight her.

Now with Lin Ming saying such words, they had left her surprised.

But surprise was only surprise. She still answered Lin Ming's question. "If you can truly defeat me, then according to our previous agreement you can hold the grand dual cultivation ceremony with me. From this alone you will be considered half a disciple of Deep King Road, and in addition with the contract of this alliance, you will be able to enjoy the same treatment as me. But… do you think you can defeat me?"

As Sheng Mei finished speaking, her eyes began to glow with a chilling light. Although she thought Lin Ming was special this didn't mean she desired to dual cultivate with him.

In fact, when it came to dual cultivation or marriage, no matter which abyssal had proposed it, Sheng Mei would crush them without hesitation!

"Mm, I understand then. The words that Your Highness Holy Demoness speak should be considered a promise!"

Lin Ming was afraid that Sheng Mei couldn't take responsibility for such words. His gaze turned towards the Deep King Road Elder standing not too far from Sheng Mei.

At this time, the Deep King Road Elder was already at a loss for words. He simply looked at Lin Ming like he was looking at a babbling fool. Just where had this crazy fellow jumped out from!?

Because all of the Deep King Road Elders were stunned, no one replied to Lin Ming. He frowned, asking once more, "Do they or don't they?"

These words caused many abyssals to roar out laughing. This was really far too hilarious.

As for the Elders of the Ancient Eon Sect, they all wanted to fall to their knees and beg Lin Ming to step down. Why was he insisting on keeping up such a charade at this time? Would it hurt him to say a few less words!?

“Yes, the words of the Holy Demoness can be considered as correct.”

Deep King Road’s Elder Deep Epoch nodded, beaming with delight. “As long as you win, then during this venture into the Demon God’s Tomb, the disciples there will take you as a core figure.”

“Mm… understood.”

After obtaining the approval of Deep King Road’s many Elders in public, Lin Ming wasn’t afraid that he couldn’t bring the Book of Eon in anymore.

In the next moment his figure flashed like gods and ghosts as he appeared on the Deep King Wheel, directly facing Sheng Mei!

MW Chapter 2122

Chapter 2122 – Battle of Proud Elites

…

…

…

Sheng Mei came fluttering down onto the ash gray Deep King Wheel like a black butterfly, landing a hundred feet away from Lin Ming and gazing at him.

A single parting had lasted 12,000 years. After meeting her so suddenly, even Lin Ming didn't understand how he felt towards this woman who had deeply affected his life.

At this moment it would be wrong to say that there were no waves of emotion in his heart. But, it was just that these waves of emotions were hidden deep within, so that on the surface all that showed was a calmness as still as a placid lake and eyes that were as sharp as swords.

Opposite Lin Ming, Sheng Mei was also quiet.

She slowly released her aura so that it covered the entire Deep King Wheel.

And compared to the battlefield platform with its thick and roiling killing intent, the situation beneath the stage was actually filled with raucous noise and the sound of laughter. For the abyssals watching, this was a fight that no one could take seriously at all. In this sort of environ, the Elders of the Ancient Eon Sect felt their livers hurt, their stomachs hurt, and their entire bodies ill.

At this time, a pair of pitch black wings unfurled from behind Sheng Mei, opening like the tail of a black peacock and then wrapping around her flawless figure. Sheng Mei's eyes gazed upon Lin Ming, a burst of brilliance flashing from her eyes.

As Sheng Mei displayed her wings, this caused the atmosphere in the audience to calm down a little. Originally everyone thought that this battle would last but a moment, and at most Sheng Mei would make a single move.

However, what happened left them startled. Sheng Mei released her dark angel wings, which proved that she would at least use her dark angel bloodline.

To deal with a mere upper Empyrean abyssal, was this really necessary?

And at this time Lin Ming also drew out his own weapon – a black bone spear.

In fact, this bone spear was the Black Dragon Spear, but at this moment the Black Dragon Spear was covered in a layer of thick bone. This was demon bone that was divided from Lin Ming's demon avatar. Not only did it completely wrap around the Black Dragon Spear but it caused the spear to be a great deal thicker, longer, and heavier, giving it an incredibly ferocious and hideous appearance at the same time, as if it were a spine pulled out from some giant.

With this giant spear combined with Lin Ming's towering abyssal figure, it seemed just right.

Sheng Mei didn't recognize the concealed Black Dragon Spear. But, as she saw Lin Ming's spear stance, a strange feeling stirred in her heart.

At this moment, Lin Ming moved!

His entire being was like a divine spear hidden in a wooden chest for countless years, covered in dust. As he left the chest, divine light bloomed, shooting through the entire audience!

This was clearly only light produced by energy, but this light passed through the protective force field of the Deep King Wheel and cast down a massive pressure on the abyssals present.

"This is…"

"What!?"

The noisy audience suddenly quieted down. Without enough time for the abyssals watching to think, Lin Ming had already rushed in front of Sheng Mei!

The spear in his hand came crashing down and the thick bone-like shaft bent like a real spine as it whipped towards Sheng Mei's waist! Because of this spear, a part of the Deep King Wheel force field supported by 12 totem poles was forcefully twisted!

"Mm!?"

Everything happened in a spark of time. Sheng Mei's pupils contracted. She thought that Lin Ming's strength might not be ordinary but she didn't expect his first move to be so formidable. This spear strike was simple and without any elegance at all, but as it barbarically twisted the Deep King Wheel force field, it reminded her that this spear strike was in no way inferior to the strike of a lower True Divinity level abyssal!

This mysterious abyssal had a lower cultivation than she did and yet he was able to send out such an attack?

Whoosh!

Black sword light flashed. Sheng Mei slashed her bone sword down upon the bone spear. But because of the massive weight of the bone spear and the incredible disparity in size between the two weapons, Sheng Mei was sent flying away!

Her figure was like a black bird that was sent floundering in the air.

Her feet rapidly moved as she stepped on the edge of the Deep King Wheel force field to release the terrifying momentum behind Lin Ming's strike.

Beneath the tremendous impulsion, every step she took on the light barrier caused ripples to spread out!

And at this time Lin Ming chased ahead. With his far larger figure, the scene of him rushing towards Sheng Mei was like a hawk chasing a rabbit!

Bang!

Lin Ming's spear ruthlessly pounded downwards. Sheng Mei avoided the strike and the spear crashed into the light barrier. The Deep King Force field violently shivered beneath Lin Ming's horrifyingly great strength!

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

Lin Ming brought his spear pounding down again and again. Every strike was incredibly quick, but Sheng Mei was like a willow leaf fluttering in the wind, barely managing to avoid every dangerous strike. All of these terrifying attacks were withstood by the Deep King force field!

This Deep King force field was strong, but beneath the continuous barrage of attacks, even though each attack was only at a single point, it still trembled more and more as if it would tear apart at any moment!

Seeing the light barrier around the Deep King Wheel tremble like a soap bubble in the wind, ready to pop at any moment, the abyssals watching were all left staring with wide eyes.

At this time their expressions were filled with utter shock, bewilderment, and disbelief. Their faces were twisted into things that seemed like complex array diagrams.

Was this the strength of an Empyrean level abyssal?

No matter who was asked, that Empyrean abyssal, the Ninth Elder of the Ancient Eon Sect, was considered an idiot by all. Yet he possessed such brute force!

They thought it brute force because many abyssals didn't want to acknowledge Lin Ming's true strength, thus they subconsciously explained the reason for why the Deep King force field was shaking as being because of Lin Ming's brute force. After all, they had all laughed at Lin Ming and called him an idiot, but if he wasn't the idiot, then it was obvious who the true idiot was instead!

No one wanted to admit that they were an idiot. Thus, even with reality placed before them, none of them wanted to acknowledge Lin Ming's strength.

But soon after they could no longer find a reason to console themselves…

Crash!

Howling winds rose up from all over. Sheng Mei's wings flapped and her speed rapidly increased. Her figure turned into a blurry shadow, so fast that most abyssals present weren't able to follow her movements.

Sheng Mei was fast and her comprehension of the Laws was high; this was recognized by all.

Her only deficiency lay in her physical strength. However, none of the abyssals present thought that even in this situation, the Ancient Eon Sect's Ninth Elder would be able to keep up with Sheng Mei in speed.

His figure also vanished into countless afterimages. Like rising black mist, everyone was covered in layers of darkness.

In terms of speed, the two of them were matched! This basically surpassed the standards of the overwhelming majority of lower True Divinities.

Not only did Lin Ming possess horrifying physical strength but also terrifying speed. From these two aspects alone, that was more than enough to contend with a lower True Divinity abyssal!

In the layers of light, brilliance dazzled outwards. Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were like two meteors arching through the heavens, chasing after each other. This scene was gorgeous to the extreme!

All of the abyssals watching were left speechless.

This Ancient Eon Sect's Ninth Elder was no different from a monster, someone even more abnormal than Sheng Mei. Sheng Mei was at the limits of an Empyrean, but this monster was only around an upper Empyrean.

The playful and taunting expressions that covered the faces of the Elders of Deep King Road had stiffened a long time ago.

As for the other small influences, the abyssals that had been expecting a good play were all left staring blank-eyed, as if they had seen ghosts.

And the ones most shocked were the Elders of the Ancient Eon Sect. Just now they had all been restless and uncomfortable no matter how they stood or sat, and the gaze of the countless abyssals around them felt like countless ants crawling over their bodies, causing them to wish to crawl into the ground.

But in the blink of an eye all of them were frozen like statues, their eyes staring straight onto the afterimages atop the Deep King Wheel.

Was that monster really from their Ancient Eon Sect? Was that really their Ancient Eon Sect's Ninth Elder?

All of the Ancient Eon Sect abyssals were filled with disbelief. Before coming to Deep King Road, they had all been in contact with Lin Ming for a long time. But, never once had they imagined that Lin Ming would be so abnormal, that he would be an upper Empyrean capable of fighting a True Divinity. This sort of talent perhaps couldn't even be found in ancient times 10 billion years ago, but an Elder they had randomly picked up from nowhere had actually possessed such terrifying talent?

The curtain of light trembled more and more, each attack causing it to resonate.

Not only were there Lin Ming's attacks, but also Sheng Mei's!

Bang!

A loud explosion rang out. Lin Ming and Sheng Mei collided in the void!

The entire curtain of light blew apart before slowly drawing back. Although the curtain of light didn't shatter, the horrifying spear light and sword light that rushed out caused all abyssals below the True Divinity realm to be covered in a cold sweat.

That sort of feeling was like someone pointing a weapon between their eyebrows!

It was too terrifying!

MW Chapter 2123

Chapter 2123 – Demon Asura

…

…

…

On the Deep King Wheel, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei stood 200 feet apart from each other.

The two of them motionlessly stared at each other. Only the demon power that burned like blazing flames and icy fires upon their weapons reminded everyone just how intense the battle just now had been.

"You… just what are you…"

Sheng Mei's frosty voice reverberated through the audience. She was well aware that it was impossible for a higher abyssal like Lin Ming to appear out of nowhere.

However, no matter whether it was this person's abyssal bloodline, aura, techniques, or whatever else, she still couldn't find any clues about him.

This abyssal gave off a strange feeling. He only calmly stood there but he was like a deep pool lying still in a mountain, an eternal proud son of heaven looking down upon the world with disdain, carrying with him an inexplicable and unknown invincible spirit.

Lin Ming remained silent. He only raised the Black Dragon Spear, the barrel shaft crackling with bone. At this moment the Black Dragon Spear in his hands seemed to become a snake made of black bone, containing an incomparably powerful strength as well as a cunning attack trajectory!

Lin Ming felt more and more desire for this battle. This enigmatic Sheng Mei was no different from a riddle and she had entangled herself in his life in countless ways. And she, for the last 10 billion years, was one of the proudest elites – whether it was in the Dark Abyss or the 33 Heavens. She was someone that could step on that supreme road to become a horrifying character like the Immortal Sovereign.

This was a match that was fated to be and it would begin today.

Lin Ming took a deep breath, his dark amber brown pupils slowly contracting. The power of demons formed a black snake around him that wildly weaved about.

At this time Lin Ming's true self was sitting in his demon avatar's inner world. Above his truer self, nine brilliant stars manifested; this was the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!

Facing Sheng Mei, Lin Ming couldn't switch out to his true body to fight nor could he openly use the Laws that were well known by Sheng Mei.

Otherwise, just relying on the intuitive sense of familiarity that Sheng Mei felt towards Lin Ming, as well the Laws that were unique to Lin Ming, how could she not guess his identity?

As the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace appeared, the strength of Lin Ming's true self rapidly rose. All of this strength was constantly fused into his demon avatar to bolster it.

Woosh!

Lin Ming's figure vanished in the void. With overwhelming potential he rushed towards Sheng Mei!

His demon body fused with his bone spear, forming a heaven-shattering and earth-sundering divine light!

After Lin Ming's demon avatar was fused with the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, the intensity of his mortal body could compare with a True Divinity spirit treasure.

He thrust out his spear towards Sheng Mei, a billowing momentum following it that seemed as if it could pierce through the endless universe. The abyssal Laws interwove with the strength of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, spinning together like a river of stars and forming giant black stars that swirled atop the spear shaft.

This spear possessed an overwhelming potential and suffocating oppressive force. The surrounding abyssal disciples couldn’t help but tremble. They felt that this spear light contained a strength that could devour them whole and they started to retreat in panic. Even the complexions of many True Divinity abyssal Elders changed.

Facing such a powerful strike, Sheng Mei’s eyes burst out with brilliance once more. The dark wings on her back glowed with an icy metallic luster as demon runes bloomed on each one, light stars that floated atop them.

“Go!”

Dark wings soared upwards, rapidly folding in to directly welcome Lin Ming’s earth-striking blow.

Arrogant and filled with incomparable confidence, facing Lin Ming’s powerful attack, Sheng Mei only relied on her invincible dark angel wings to meet him.

Bang!

Dark wings collided with the blinding divine brilliance of Lin Ming's spear light. Like two stars crashing together, billions of abyssal runes were annihilated as threads of abyssal Laws shattered!

This massive impact force caused the Deep King force field to violently rock yet again, as if it would tear apart.

As the totem poles that supported the force field had to withstand the pressure, 10,000 demonic spirits seemed to suddenly howl. Demon energy soared to the heavens as shadows rose up, as if a peerless ancient abyssal were reaching through the endless river of time to protect the force field.

War drums sounded like thunderbolts, humming in the air. An even more formidable demonic force field strength raged out to stabilize the Deep King force field.

However, Lin Ming's attack hadn't yet ended.

With a loud shout Lin Ming activated the power of the Asura blood in his demon avatar's inner world. Thick scales covered his body and behind his true self, the phantom of an Asura war god emerged.

Within this war god phantom's hands, three wheels slowly revolved like grinding pans.

This was power of the Asura Sutra.

Peng!

Peng!

Peng!

Three wheels shattered, turning into countless runes that fused into Lin Ming's demon avatar's body. All of this occurred within the demon avatar's body so the many abyssals watching didn't know.

At this moment, all these abyssals saw were the muscles of Lin Ming's demon avatar crazily wriggle about. His joints released explosive crackling sounds and his towering body began to rise once more!

The bones and scales on Lin Ming's body became harder and increasingly fierce. A pair of curved horns jutted out from his head.

Lin Ming's demon avatar had turned into a ferocious Asura demon. The changes that appeared on his true self were minor, but after manifesting on his demon avatar's body they became exaggeratedly terrifying.

Underneath the pressure of so much strength, many abyssals felt their eyes pop wide open.

"Higher abyssal body metamorphosis!"

The abyssal demons were similar to the saints in that certain clans amongst them could undergo body metamorphosis. After metamorphosizing, they would experience a rapid rise in all aspects of strength!

The truth was that body metamorphosis wasn't strange, in particular higher abyssals with outstanding levels of talent. This shouldn't have been enough to stir up any interest, but the crux of the issue here was that Lin Ming had already shown far too abnormal a performance just now. An upper Empyrean was able to fight a True Divinity level opponent to equally match with Sheng Mei.

And yet, Lin Ming even used body metamorphosis atop all of that!

"Heavens, this fellow is simply a monster!"

An abyssal Elder from a small influence said, his voice shaking. The current Lin Ming could no longer be described as being able to defeat a lower True Divinity; he might have the strength to fight against a peak lower True Divinity!

“Could he… really be able to defeat the Holy Demoness…?” The Ancient Eon Sect’s Elder Eon God whispered, his wizened face frozen in place.

If one defeated Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness then they would be able to obtain this number one elite of the Dark Abyss, someone that might even control the abyss in the future.

Lin Ming, Sheng Mei.

Both were proud children of heaven, and if they were to dual cultivate then their cultivation speed would rise to a new level.

That time would arrive before long, perhaps even as soon as 100,000 years. At that time, just what heights would they be at?

Moreover, if they could pass the abyssal ritual of the Demon God’s Tomb, just what would happen then…

Elder Eon God found this hard to imagine.

In fact, not only did the abyssals watching the battle atop the platform react with shock, but even Sheng Mei herself paled.

“Again!”

Lin Ming bellowed. He pulled up the Black Dragon Spear, grasping it in both hands and thrusting forwards again!

And what this spear stabbed at was Sheng Mei’s pair of dark angel wings!

This scene caused Sheng Mei’s abyssal fans to cry out in alarm!

The wings of a dark angel were indeed powerful, but no matter how powerful they were they still had their limits. In other words, Sheng Mei may not be able to use her wings to block this strike! And if the attack was too great then her wings might even break!

In this critical moment, Sheng Mei’s eyes sparkled with a cold light. She slapped her hands against the void and countless crystalline ice flowers appeared.

In that moment she had formed millions of Law seals. Each Law seal contained the source strength of extreme ice. A freezing atmosphere swept over the world, forming a wall of ice that was thousands of feet high.

Deep ice domain!

After undergoing nine revolutions of reincarnation, Sheng Mei's mortal body had reached perfection and her strength was tens of thousands of times greater than before. She had comprehended the Ice Laws to the limit, and now she could even freeze and smash apart the Great Dao itself.

But as Lin Ming's all-shattering spear crashed into the wall, he barraged it with an onslaught of attacks, crushing it apart as if he were breaking down a planet!

The bone spear shot out again and again without end. Compared to Sheng Mei, Lin Ming's body was like that of an eagle pouncing on a sparrow!

As the ice wall was about to break, Lin Ming grabbed the Black Dragon Spear and thrust forwards one last time.

Kacha!

With a loud explosive sound, the ice wall shattered into countless pieces, causing the many abyssals watching to hold their breath.

Lin Ming’s spear collided against Sheng Mei’s black wings!

Chi - !

A grating sound filled the air. Beneath the impact the bone spear bent like a bow. Sheng Mei used her left arm to prop up her wings, and with her right hand grasped her sword to resist Lin Ming’s attack!

At this moment, her dark angel wings were now covered in faint rivulets of blood!

MW Chapter 2124

Chapter 2124 – Life Reaping Sword Strike

…

…

…

Heart-shocking blood flowed down from Sheng Mei's black wings, dyeing them with traces of red.

Lin Ming's powerful and fierce demon avatar, Sheng Mei's delicate and beautiful figure, the two of them formed a blinding visual contrast.

The spear seemed as if it would pierce through Sheng Mei's wings and stab into her body. The many abyssal Elders watching this battle were all left dripping with a cold sweat.

The Black Dragon Spear had bent into a crescent moon and Sheng Mei was also forced back to the edge of the light barrier.

However, the scene was frozen in this moment. After Lin Ming's strike was weakened by the deep ice domain less than half of its original strength was left remaining. Finally, it was successfully blocked by Sheng Mei's wings.

Its momentum had been ended!

Without the impact of energy, it was naturally impossible for the spear to pierce through Sheng Mei's dark angel wings.

Lin Ming slightly frowned. In the end, because his true self couldn't appear, then regardless of whether it was the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace he used or the Asura blood, if he couldn't display it outwardly and had to funnel the energy through his demon avatar then there would inevitably be losses.

At this moment a warning signal flared in Lin Ming's mind. He rapidly stepped back in space, hurriedly retreating.

Weng!

Borrowing the strength of the Black Dragon Spear unbending from its curved form, Lin Ming shot back like an arrow, his speed rapidly reaching the extreme.

But during this time, Sheng Mei's bone sword appeared in front of Lin Ming without warning.

The bone sword's sword light was even faster than Lin Ming's retreat!

Above the sword blade, energy and Laws wildly surged. Tens of thousands of rays of light wove together and formed blood red lotus flowers that seemed to swallow all light.

An ordinary and simple sword strike carried with it an unfathomable vastness, a strange power that seemed as if it could pierce through space and crush time.

Lin Ming's flesh and skin seemed as if it were already pierced through by this bone sword, making his heart race.

And no matter how quickly he drew backwards, the bone sword followed right after like a homing bird. If he slowed even just a bit then the bone sword would pierce right through his head.

Like a sword of judgment that presided over life and death, this came from the Life and Death Laws that Sheng Mei cultivated.

A single sword strike, it would not return without severing the soul and life!

With a distance of only an inch apart, Lin Ming could feel his protective demon essence pierced through and his forehead already dripping with blood!

As this minor wound appeared, Lin Ming could feel his life force slowly fade away, drawn out by the strange bone sword!

With the presence of the Death Laws, all things in existence would wither away, all life would be annihilated!

The life force in Lin Ming’s body was similarly being swallowed by Sheng Mei’s Death Laws.

“Her Highness the Holy Demoness has used her Laws!”

Many abyssals from Deep King Road began to stir up. Relatively speaking, Sheng Mei’s physical strength and abyssal body were weaker. Her speed lay somewhere in the center, and what she excelled in the most were the Laws!

And for the vast majority of abyssals, their weakest aspects tended to be the Laws.

In particular for a towering and powerfully built abyssal like Lin Ming. With such a potent bloodline and mighty physical body, it was likely that he had to pay for this with a smaller spiritual sea, making it so that perceiving the Laws would cost double the effort with half the results.

Perhaps from here on out the tides of battle would turn!

Many Deep King Road Elders were looking forwards to what would happen. In fact, over 95% of the abyssals present hoped that Sheng Mei could win. Sheng Mei had countless legions of fans and they were already accustomed to her awesome talent. As for Lin Ming, the abyssals present only felt envy towards him.

Only the Ancient Eon Sect faintly hoped that Lin Ming would be able to win. If so, then they could draw closer their relationship with Deep King Road and obtain even more advantages from the Demon God's Tomb.

One running, one chasing. The Deep King Wheel wasn't large and because of the confinement of the force field, the space within was small and narrow. However, to Lin Ming and Sheng Mei this wasn't a problem at all, because during the rapid pursuit both of them constantly used the Space Laws and thus for them space had already lost all meaning.

But no matter how swift or deft Lin Ming was in shuttling through space, Sheng Mei's sword remained locked onto the point between his eyebrows!

"Holy Scripture Laws?"

A bright light sparked in Lin Ming's eyes. Sheng Mei's sword was completely reflected in his deep brown eyes, just like an image in a clear mirror.

With a thought, a bloody demonic eye drilled out from between Lin Ming's eyebrows, like a rock gushing out of lava. The gaze of this demonic eye carried with it a strange demonic charm, as if it could see through all lies and illusions. Then the gaze of this demonic eye fell upon the bone sword.

This demon eye was the fused form of Lin Ming's Daevic Eye Dao Palace and Three Live Pupils. However, after joining together his true self with his avatar and using the power of demons to transform it, this eye had gained this appearance.

Lin Ming already had some understandings into the Holy Scripture Laws. Now, beneath the gaze of the demon eye he was able to see everything clearly.

The myriad Laws atop the bone sword were all perfectly balanced in his vision.

Sheng Mei's attainments in the Holy Scripture Laws far surpassed Lin Ming's. But, that didn't mean Lin Ming couldn't catch up to her.

At this moment the technique that Sheng Mei used was completely recorded by Lin Ming's Daevic Eye Dao Palace and Three Lives Pupils. It branded itself deep into his memory, through his eyes and into his mind.

Lin Ming closed his eyes and when he opened them once more, they radiated a blinding divine light that could pierce through all puzzles. By relying on his own understandings as well as the Daevic Eye Dao Palace, he could find the most vulnerable point in Sheng Mei's attack.

Woosh!

The Black Dragon Spear pierced out once more!

The pitch black spear swelled with roiling flames. Like a roaring bone dragon, it hurtled towards that singular point.

The Black Dragon Spear was a divine weapon refined by the Asura Road Master. Although it wasn't the weapon used by the Asura Road Master's true self, it was still incomparably powerful. This spear drew in the surrounding demon force field, causing thousands of black suns to erupt on the spear point and causing black light to flood through the audience.

Zhang!

The Black Dragon Spear collided with Sheng Mei's bone sword. Sheng Mei's sword that had recorded the ability to chase after life and death suddenly started to slow down. The Law runes that lingered upon the blade began to burst apart, instantly shattering into thousands of pieces.

Peng!

Runes danced in the air, dissipating like night stars fading in the morning skies.

Sheng Mei's complexion changed. How was this possible!?

She never thought that in this situation, Lin Ming would be able to counterattack and see through her move!

She had used the highest Laws, so how had he managed to break through them? Was it just a coincidence?

Before Sheng Mei could think about what had occurred, Lin Ming's second spear strike came towards her.

Zheng!

Another collision occurred. This time, Lin Ming didn’t choose Sheng Mei’s weakest point, but one that was only relatively weak.

This was because Sheng Mei’s sword potential had already been broken in half in his first spear strike. As for the remaining amount, Lin Ming could calmly deal with it. He didn’t need every spear strike to hit her weakest point, because doing so would definitely arouse her suspicions. After all, the Holy Scripture Laws weren’t easy to see through.

Now, Lin Ming didn’t want to expose too much of himself, lest Sheng Mei produce too many associations about who he truly was.

If Lin Ming couldn’t use continuous spear strikes at Sheng Mei’s weakest point to break through, then he would use an increasingly wild barrage of attacks instead.

Spear after spear, in a moment Lin Ming had already thrust out a hundred times, like flowers in a storm!

Sheng Mei felt her arm go numb. She suddenly froze!

Peng!

More and more runes burst apart in the skies. Sheng Mei’s hair wildly danced in the air as her eyebrows pressed tightly together!

Lin Ming had taken the initiative against her, and as for her, she actually felt strained!

What shocked her the most was that at this point, Lin Ming hadn't used brute force to suppress her, but had used his understandings of the Laws!

How could this be?

Although Lin Ming's following attacks seemed wild and ferocious, the truth was that his attacks avoided the strongest sections of her own. The only difference was that it wasn't as exquisite as his first spear strike.

Hum –

Hum –

Hum –

Crazy and fierce spear strikes stirred up a savage tornado in the middle of the abyssal force field. The wind pressure tore through the air, colliding with the force field and causing it to moan.

The hellish pressure released by the two fighters on stage caused some of the weaker abyssal disciples watching to feel pressure. Some of them had no choice but to summon the demon power within them to resist it.

“Humph!”

Deep King Road’s Elder Deep Epoch coldly coughed. He raised up his own force field, allowing these weaker abyssal disciples to catch their breath.

But at this time, Elder Deep Epoch’s complexion was considerably ugly. Even being suppressed by the 12 totem poles, this Ancient Eon Sect’s Ninth Elder was still able to display such might in his attacks. Just where had he come from?

If things were to continue like this then it wouldn’t be long before this Ninth Elder surpassed him in strength.

If this Ninth Elder wished to marry Sheng Mei, then perhaps that wouldn’t be bad at all. The best result would be that Deep King Road would gain yet another top proud elite of heaven. In the future, this Ninth Elder could stand by Sheng Mei and the two could dominate the abyss.

But, the crux of the issue was – could he be of the same mind as Sheng Mei?

All sorts of thoughts flashed through Elder Deep Epoch's mind.

And at this time atop the stage, Lin Ming had already occupied the winning side. The Black Dragon Spear continued in an unstoppable offensive, an onslaught that flowed forwards like liquid mercury. As for Sheng Mei, she was forced to retreat again and again, and the Life and Death Laws atop her sword light had already been scattered by Lin Ming!

MW Chapter 2125

Chapter 2125 – Nine Revolution Red Lotus

…

…

…

Kacha!

Life and death runes shattered, causing a rain of light to fall from the skies!

Sheng Mei had condensed the Holy Scripture Laws onto her sword. Now with her sword strike broken by Lin Ming, the Black Dragon Spear continued to push forwards, thrusting straight towards the point between Sheng Mei's eyebrows!

Sheng Mei had already been forced into a dead end of the Deep King force field without any way to retreat. And, the powerful energy that Lin Ming released also locked down the surrounding void so that the Space Laws couldn't be used.

In this moment Lin Ming suddenly slapped the Black Dragon Spear in his hands, crazily pouring demon energy into it.

A bone dragon formed from demon energy formed on the ferocious spear shaft. It wildly roared and hurtled towards Sheng Mei with unstoppable momentum, wanting to swallow her whole!

In this critical moment many abyssals cried out in alarm. Some even thought that Sheng Mei might perish beneath this strike, a fragrant jade that would shatter to pieces!

After all, the scene occurring on the stage of battle was like a massive demonic flame about to burn away an exquisite feather. Strong against weak, hideous against beautiful, this intense visual impact shocked the mind!

This Ninth Elder of the Ancient Eon Sect was too terrifying!

In front of him, even the invincible Sheng Mei seemed delicate.

Hu - !

Hu - !

Hu - !

Demonic flames rolled upwards. In that instant, Sheng Mei closed her eyes!

She no longer dodged and nor could she. Between her eyes, the nine petal lotus flower mark began to spin. A faint source of energy began to appear from within, as if a world was being bred within it.

Time came to a standstill. Just as the fierce dragon spear was three inches away from the point between Sheng Mei's eyebrows, a brilliant black demonic light burst out, weaving together into a massive lotus flower pattern.

Every flower petal seemed to form its own small world, each one filled with birth and destruction.

Sheng Mei's Grand Reincarnation Art was far more thorough than Lin Ming's. After this lotus flower formed, every flower petal had condensed the power of desire and hope from each one of Sheng Mei's reincarnations.

The nine revolution lotus flower spinning, this was the same as nine Sheng Meis striking out together!

Kacha!

The Black Dragon Spear thrust into the heart of the nine revolution red lotus. The spear shaft curved but it wasn't able to go any further.

Then, Sheng Mei moved.

That strange and mysterious bone sword fused into her arms. Sheng Mei's five slender fingers gathered together as she thrust an arm towards Lin Ming's chest.

With the bone sword entering her body, sword and man had become one.

Sheng Mei's sword fingers directly shattered the roiling demonic flames that surrounding Lin Ming. That bone dragon gave a screeching howl before it burst apart!

Sheng Mei's fingers were bathed in the light of the nine revolution red lotus. Lin Ming's heart shook and he quickly withdrew the demon power he sent out through the demon avatar before storming backwards!

However, Sheng Mei's sword fingers were too fast. They instantly pierced through the void and shot past Lin Ming's protective demon essence, soon about to penetrate his body!

Even though Lin Ming's demon avatar had an incredibly intense mortal body, it would still suffer heavy losses if pierced through by these sword fingers. This was because Sheng Mei's sword fingers wouldn't simply pierce through him, but the terrifying strength and Laws contained within them would also have to be withstood by his body. If that were to occur, victory and defeat would be settled!

In that spark of time, Lin Ming crossed his arms in front of his chest, using the bone blades on his elbows to resist Sheng Mei's attack.

Kacha!

The sword point struck the edge of Lin Ming's elbow bone blades. On Lin Ming's arms, the three foot long bone blades shattered into pieces. The sword fingers continued without stopping, piercing through Lin Ming's scales and passing through his right arm!

But relying on this brief resistance, Lin Ming also changed the trajectory of the sword fingers. The sword light finally shot into Lin Ming's left shoulder!

Blood shot out. Lin Ming grimaced. The strength contained in these sword fingers wasn't simple at all; it included the Life and Death Laws.

The strength of the sword fingers broke into his body and turned into sword energy. This sword energy was able to grow continuously and it recklessly shredded apart the energy within Lin Ming's body. Even so, this sword energy didn't weaken much.

This naturally originated from the Laws of Life. At the same time, the sword energy was incredibly tyrannical, absorbing Lin Ming's vitality with overbearing might as it exhausted his blood and withered his muscles.

The Life and Death Laws were used together. If an ordinary abyssal were to be touched by just a little bit of this strength they would have likely lost all combat efficiency.

Even Lin Ming felt severe pain wrack his body. The meridians within his body became disorderly as if all of them were about to break apart!

His body was sent rapidly tumbling backwards a thousand feet beneath the force of impact.

Bang!

With a loud crash, Lin Ming struck the light barrier of the Deep King force field, causing it to violently tremble.

Lin Ming coughed up a mouthful of blood. Grabbing the Black Dragon Spear, his giant body plummeted onto the Deep King Wheel!

Gu-dong!

The Deep King Wheel wildly shook. Lin Ming lifted his head upwards. He never thought that while Sheng Mei was being pressed backwards so much she would still be capable of using such a move.

However, Sheng Mei who had seemed like an otherworldly fairy had also paled slightly. It was obvious that it hadn’t been easy for her to use the strength of nine reincarnations just now.

Did the Grand Reincarnation Art also have such an effect?

To condense the power of will and hope from nine reincarnations and seal it between the eyebrows, and then have it erupt at the same time, the strength that could be released was several times that of usual. This was an extremely terrifying move.

Lin Ming’s Grand Reincarnation Art was one that he perceived himself and not the original that was created by the master of the Holy Scripture. Thus, it had extreme differences with Sheng Mei’s version.

Even so, Lin Ming was well aware that the Grand Reincarnation Art was incredibly difficult. And the eighth and ninth revolution would be even more so.

The reason Sheng Mei could transform so much and fight a lower True Divinity with her Empyrean limit cultivation, this was likely due to her being able to complete the ninth revolution of the Grand Reincarnation Art.

In terms of the Holy Scripture Laws, Sheng Mei could be called someone that had reached the pinnacle.

But Lin Ming's Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra veered off in opposite directions, one focused on the inner universe and one focused on the outer universe. Compared to Sheng Mei who strode down a single path, Lin Ming was naturally behind her.

Lin Ming didn't know Sheng Mei's exact age, but he could estimate that she was probably tens of thousands of years old. For her to arrive at this step with her age, this meant she had a chance of coming close to the boundary of those like the Immortal Sovereign and Asura Road Master in the future.

However, as Lin Ming as astonished, so was Sheng Mei.

That nine revolution red lotus she used just now was one of her ultimate killing moves. Once she used it, even a lower True Divinity abyssal might die!

This was not being defeated or wounded, but possibly being killed!

Sheng Mei didn’t want to reveal such a technique on the stage, but Lin Ming was simply far too formidable. With her not being able to gain an upper hand after using her previous moves, she could only use this one.

She didn’t think that this move would be able to grievously wound Lin Ming; she only wanted to use it to ensure victory.

But the result was that after this strike, nothing seemed to have happened to Lin Ming at all. He immediately stood up.

Moreover, Sheng Mei’s perception was connected to the sword energy she sent out. She felt that the originally endlessly growing sword energy that should have been able to swallow Lin Ming’s vitality was in turn swallowed by him instead.

Within Lin Ming’s body there seemed to be some black vortex that could tear apart all. It slowly annihilated her strength, and even the highest Laws of the Holy Scripture were slowly undone.

How had he done this?

As she recalled Lin Ming breaking apart her life-reaping sword, Sheng Mei felt increasingly in disbelief of what had occurred. This higher abyssal had actually managed to achieve such a boundary in the perception of Laws. Was this because of his talent or was it perhaps related to that eye between his eyebrows?

Sheng Mei couldn't imagine just what sort of bloodline could be heaven-defying to such a degree.

Not only was Sheng Mei shocked, but the Elders of Deep King Road were also restless. They all knew how potent Sheng Mei's final nine revolution red lotus was. Even Elder Deep Epoch would have to be careful facing such a strike, yet Lin Ming had blocked it.

This fellow not only reached the pinnacle in strength and speed, but he even defied all common reasoning in the Laws. This was simply incomprehensible.

And at this time, something left the abyssals watching even more speechless. From the wounds on Lin Ming's arm and shoulder, the muscles began to wriggle.

The demon avatar was beginning to reveal its fearsome defensive and regenerative capabilities.

Sheng Mei's sword fingers had contained the power of will and hope of nine reincarnations. If an ordinary abyssal were to touch just a little of it they would fall over dead, yet Lin Ming was actually beginning to slowly restore his body; this was too ridiculous!

Sheng Mei's eyes widened and a serious pressure fell over her heart. She had a premonition that this battle would be incomparably difficult, and there was even a chance that she could lose!

And if she lost then didn’t that mean she would have to dual cultivate with this monster?

Thinking of this, Sheng Mei’s stomach tumbled as if she wanted to vomit.

Even though she felt something special about Lin Ming, even though there was a strange connection she sensed, she absolutely couldn’t accept sharing a bed with this monster…

To her, this was as bad as being killed.

MW Chapter 2126

Chapter 2126 – The Finale

…

…

…

For a time, the atmosphere on stage turned solemn.

All the abyssals had fallen silent. Lin Ming and Sheng Mei stood apart from each other, their gazes steady.

Lin Ming's mortal body began to slowly regenerate.

The abyssals present stared blankly on as Lin Ming's arm wound nearly stitched itself back together and they couldn't sit still anymore.

"What is her Highness the Holy Demoness doing? How come she's not doing anything and is just watching that fellow's body repair itself? What use is there in talking about any sort of martial arts honor? Then again, this was a fair battle to begin with and that Ninth Elder was injured by the Holy Demoness so attacking him while he's down is completely justified, so how come the Holy Demoness hasn't attacked?"

A young abyssal anxiously asked. Most of the abyssals here were Sheng Mei's supporters and only a few of them wished that Lin Ming could win.

"It isn't that her Highness the Holy Demoness doesn't wish to attack but that she cannot attack. The Holy Demoness consumed a considerable amount of energy just now, so how could she fight again so soon?"

An older abyssal said. By this point, the battle had reached a burning hot stage.

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's battle just now had exchanged wound for wound!

If they continued to fight, if this battle became any more brutal, then there would be dire combat techniques that came out next, such as someone burning their source soul force or blood essence as the price for greater strength.

And in this competition, this sort of behavior was against the rules. After all, this was only a mere comparison of skills to begin with and not a life or death slaughter. Any moves that caused permanent losses or where both sides were forced to perish together were forbidden.

Because if one person used such a technique then everyone else would too, and the gains simply weren't worth the losses.

As the older abyssal spoke, everyone looked towards Sheng Mei. At this time a continuously growing strength rose up within her, slowly supplementing her strength.

Just now she had used her nine revolution red lotus, fusing together the power of hope and desire from nine reincarnations. This was tantamount to nine Sheng Meis attack together, and thus the amount of demon power that she consumed was nine times that of her all-out attack!

If an ordinary martial artist or abyssal were to use such an attack then they would nearly exhaust themselves to nothing.

However, Sheng Mei had only slightly paled and her strength was slowly recovering. This was because with the power of life from the Holy Scripture Laws, Sheng Mei's blood vitality and physical strength were able to last much longer and restore themselves faster than those of a martial artist of the same level.

As this scene fell into the eyes of the abyssals present, they were all numb with amazement.

Lin Ming's regenerative abilities were astonishing, but so were Sheng Mei's!

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei, they were nothing but two monsters. Not only did they possess terrifying strength, Laws, and speed, but their endurance was also at abnormal levels!

If one wished to fight against such freaks then one couldn't have any weakness at all, because these two had no weakness and any weakness one possessed would become the reason for defeat!

In the entire Dark Abyss, just who would dare compete with them?

"I will not lose here!"

Sheng Mei glared at Lin Ming, her icy eyes shimmering.

Whoever could defeat her at the same boundary could dual cultivate with her. These were words spoken by her own mouth and confirmed by Deep King Road. It was impossible for her to go back on her words.

She didn't wish to compromise with Lin Ming, and compromise was likely useless to begin with. She could only put forth everything she had in this battle and use the endlessly growing strength within her body to drain Lin Ming dry of strength.

And coincidently, Lin Ming also had such a plan.

Sheng Mei's killing move was the nine revolution red lotus, and this was something that Lin Ming simply wasn't able to deal with right now. Once they fought then he would surely be injured. The only positive part of this was that Sheng Mei couldn't utilize this move multiple times because it consumed too much energy.

Thus, Lin Ming prepared to use his strength to outlast Sheng Mei and achieve victory in the end.

Lin Ming knew that Sheng Mei had the Laws of Life to rely on. But, Lin Ming was even more confident in what he relied on, because he still had his true self within his demon avatar!

Lin Ming couldn't use his true self to fight, thus he couldn't do anything to Sheng Mei right now because he couldn't display his peak strength.

However, Lin Ming's true self resided in his demon avatar's inner world and he could continuously transmit strength into his avatar's body. In terms of endurance, who could compete with him?

This was the same as two fighting against one. Moreover, the two of them had abnormal levels of endurance!

As long as the fight continued at a steady pace then he would emerge victorious in the end.

After an incense stick of time passed, Lin Ming could feel that his wounds had more or less healed. Then, he moved!

When he moved this time he didn't even use the Black Dragon Spear, but simply punched out with his fist.

His fist was like a meteor, thundering down onto Sheng Mei's chest!

Weng! Weng! Weng!

Abyssal Laws condensed into a vortex of runes around Lin Ming's fist, forming an all-swallowing black hole. Several blood dragons rushed out from this black hole, roaring and snapping their jaws at Sheng Mei!

Each of these blood dragons contained the power of swallowing. In truth, they were similar to Famine's tentacles!

"Swallowing Laws!?"

All of the abyssals watching could see this clearly. In the Dark Abyss, only a small minority of higher abyssals could grasp this tyrannical and overbearing Law which allowed one to swallow the strength of others for one's own use, to swallow the flesh and blood of others as one's own nourishment.

This was an extremely cruel and evil Law, one envied by all abyssals!

"This brat, how can he understand the Swallowing Laws!? Everything good has been taken by him!"

At this time, no one doubted Lin Ming's bloodline. For him to possess the Swallowing Laws was well within reason, because the Swallowing Laws were one of the signs of a higher abyssal.

Facing these blood dragon tentacles, Sheng Mei didn't dodge. Her delicate eyebrows furrowed together and the sword in her hands came slashing down, severing all the tentacles!

Ca!

Sword light radiated outwards. Blood flew out into the air!

Sheng Mei had already planned to engage Lin Ming in a battle of endurance. Thus, she naturally wouldn't let go of any chances to exchange attacks with him. She believed that with her Laws supporting her she would eventually be the one to persist until the end.

Lin Ming was truly abnormal, but in this aspect he might not be able to compare with her!

Moreover, when comparing endurance, the truth was that it was also a battle of willpower. If one possessed great willpower, this often allowed them to surpass their own limits.

Sheng Mei was confident in her own willpower, because no matter what she could not lose this battle!

She no longer had an escape path left open to her. She didn't dare to imagine herself being pressed down beneath the gigantic body of this abyssal and just how disgusting and stomach-retching that would be.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The intense collision stirred up raging waves of energy and caused the light barrier of the Deep King force field to violently tremble. In a breath of time, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei exchanged over a hundred moves.

They fought speed with speed and didn’t pause their onslaught against each other. They tried to preserve as much strength even as they tried to use up their opponent’s strength.

This was a short but furious battle that was extremely taxing on their energy!

At this time, both Sheng Mei and Lin Ming naturally discovered each other’s plans; they had come up with the same idea to win.

Sheng Mei’s eyes lit up with blazing fighting intent and the corners of her lips curved up in a smile.

And while Lin Ming’s eyes remained indifferent, his heart was filled with confidence!

They both brimmed with confidence because they both believed in their secret cards that gave them endurance!

As the fight heated up it became increasingly intense and savage.

Many abyssals only saw a great storm rise up within the Deep King force field!

But as for the exact process of the fight, none of them were able to clearly see what was occurring!

“They are comparing endurance… it seems that the difference in strength between the two of them is too minor so neither can do anything to the other, thus they have decided to use time to settle victory and defeat!”

An abyssal Elder said on the side of Deep King Road.

“Her Highness the Holy Demoness possesses a horrifying level of endurance… let alone abyssals at the same level, even True Divinity level abyssals might not be able to compare with her. But her opponent is also a monster. From him, it seems anything is possible. Her Highness the Holy Demoness might not be able to win!”

Another Elder of Deep King Road said.

In Deep King Road, the status of the members present was decided by strength.

This Elder’s status was below Sheng Mei’s, thus when he spoke of her he had to use a respectful tone.

But at this time, Deep Epoch chuckled. He said, “The battle has already gone this far, and I’m beginning to see things differently. Perhaps losing might not be a bad thing at all…”

“Oh? You are meaning…?”

“The Ancient Eon Sect doesn’t know where the Ninth Elder comes from either. After this battle, we will look up more information on him. The truth is that if the Holy Demoness doesn’t marry for the rest of her life, that isn’t a plan at all. Although she might not care about it, her bloodline is so excellent. If it isn’t inherited by her descendants then wouldn’t it just be wasted?”

“We have to find a way to marry her off. And if my Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness were to marry, then if we look through the entire Dark Abyss, just who can match up with her? This Ninth Elder came out of nowhere and although I might not like him too much, I have to acknowledge that he is the best possible candidate…”

As Deep Epoch spoke, the other Elders nodded in agreement.

Indeed, this was true.

In their eyes Lin Ming was truly an indisputable top choice. The Dark Abyss was a land that revered powerhouses above all, and if a higher abyssal like Lin Ming wished to choose someone to marry then there would be countless abyssal women who would desperately flock to him.

In the abyss, powerful and rugged abyssals, those with towering and thick builds, if they possessed enough strength then they were far more welcomed than the pretty and handsome male incubuses amongst the succubus demon race. And, Lin Ming's strength, his ferocious and bulging muscles, all of that was perfectly aligned with this point.

However, they never imagined that Sheng Mei was simply unable to accept the aesthetic sense of the abyssal demons. She absolutely could not!

MW Chapter 2127A

Chapter 2127A – The Finale

…

…

…

On the Deep King Wheel, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's battle continued.

The two of them maintained their extreme speed. Every time they exchanged moves was like a collision of planets.

Sheng Mei's wings stretched out. Howling gales wrapped around her body, her figure drifting in an unpredictably bizarre fashion!

Woosh!

The Black Dragon Spear cut through the void, savagely tearing towards Sheng Mei’s chest and piercing through!

In that moment, the hearts of many abyssals tightened. But in the next moment that ‘Sheng Mei’ vanished, leaving behind only the Black Dragon Spear; it had been nothing more than an afterimage.

The true Sheng Mei had already appeared behind Lin Ming. Her sword came falling down, sword light recklessly gushing out like a black tide, tumbling and roaring!

In that instant, from within the inner world of Lin Ming’s demon avatar, the Heretical God Tree appeared. The air filled with demonic energy as a bone tree drilled towards the heavens. Demonic fire and thunder howled out, tainted with the power of demons as it welcomed the turbulent sword light.

Bang!

The sword light and Lin Ming’s demon power exploded and vanished together. Lin Ming didn’t even turn his head. The Black Dragon Spear came roaring out behind, the spear point drawing a full moon as he struck out in a circle!

Sheng Mei’s body was blown away like a flower petal by this horrific strength. Her protective demon essence violently shook and she couldn’t help but gather her wings together to resist Lin Ming’s strike.

Woosh!

Beneath the tremendous impact force, Sheng Mei was sent hurtling away like a meteor. She crashed into the Deep King force field’s light barrier. But, before the abyssals watching could even cry out in alarm, her figure instantly disappeared.

And in the next moment the Black Dragon Spear struck the area Sheng Mei had just vanished from. A terrifying explosion rang out once more!

The fierce intensity of this battle left the abyssals watching dizzy with wonder!

Most of the abyssals present were simply unable to see the fighting process between Sheng Mei and Lin Ming. Only the constantly shivering Deep King force field, and the flashes of shadows all around the light barrier reminded them just how cruel and savage this battle was.

Time marched on.

Two hours, four hours…

This intense fight continued for all this time without a single chance for anyone to catch their breath.

Every move was met head on with equally terrifying resilience. Lin Ming and Sheng Mei both relied on their potent restorative abilities to continue this battle.

As time passed, Sheng Mei felt more and more alarmed!

This battle had indeed gone as she had expected. It beat on with a rhythm of dragging on the battle with both parties being drained of energy.

But although this was the process she expected, it might not be the result she expected.

Lin Ming's endurance was simply far too dreadful. If anyone were to consume energy at such a rate, then let alone an Empyrean level abyssal, even a True Divinity might have already been completely exhausted, like a dried up oil lamp.

But Lin Ming was able to continue onwards, even becoming increasingly brutal as the battle raged on!

Sheng Mei's strength on the other hand was being weakened. Although the Holy Scripture Laws were heaven-defying, the so-called 'endlessly growing' still had its limits. If the battle continued like this then the first one to fall over might be herself.

Sheng Mei's speed had already slowed down.

This scene fell into the eyes of all the abyssals watching. In terms of endurance, Deep King Road's Holy Demoness was unexpectedly losing to the Ancient Eon Sect's Ninth Elder.

Endurance was an important aspect of a martial artist's strength.

In truth, from the very start, from feeling alone, Lin Ming consumed more energy than Sheng Mei did. This was because in terms of his size, the might of his moves, all of it used more strength than Sheng Mei.

Even so, the first one who wouldn't be able to persist was Sheng Mei.

Ca!

Another ray of sword light slashed down towards Lin Ming before being scattered by his strength. The moment the sword light shattered, the Black Dragon Spear in Lin Ming's hands thrust out like a viper, straight towards Sheng Mei's left rib!

This was an extremely tricky attack angle. However, Sheng Mei didn’t dodge. Her left wing suddenly spread out and cut down at the Black Dragon Spear!

Kacha!

The sound of a fierce collision rang out. From the surface of the Black Dragon Spear, chips of bone scattered out!

But Sheng Mei’s left wing had nearly been pierced through by the Black Dragon Spear and was now dripping with blood!

In that moment Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with surprise. Sheng Mei had relied on nearly just the strength of her mortal body to resist this strike, and didn’t use her demon power at all. Otherwise her wing wouldn’t have been torn by his spear strike.

But then, Sheng Mei stretched out her arm and grabbed hold of the Black Dragon Spear. Her delicate and exquisite jade-white arm wrapped around the thick Black Dragon Spear, clasping the shaft right beneath her arm!

Ka ka ka ka!

All around Sheng Mei, the void shattered. An Ice Phoenix howled out and threw itself onto the Black Dragon Spear. For a time, the Black Dragon Spear began to rapidly freeze over, and as for Lin Ming who was gripping it, he suddenly paused. Cold energy recklessly rushed into Lin Ming's body from all directions.

Sheng Mei had released her deep ice force field once more, but this time the force field had been reduced to the smallest area possible, all of it compressed onto Lin Ming's body. Without a doubt, she was risking everything on this move!

From between Sheng Mei's eyebrows, the nine revolutions red lotus began to shine brilliantly.

The void seemed to overlap and shiver. The revolving lotus flower once again manifested into nine revolutions of worlds. When these worlds were joined together, one could see mountains and rivers within them, plants and beasts and birds, a million, a billion lives being born and destroyed.

Within each world sat a cross-legged Sheng Mei. This was the power of hope and desire of Sheng Mei's nine reincarnations.

The nine Sheng Meis gathered their hands together in prayer, their expressions one of supreme reverence.

In that moment, their power of hope and desire gathered together, forming a golden river of stars that crashed down atop Lin Ming!

Was this the final move!?

Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. Sheng Mei didn’t hesitate to suffer injuries in order to seal away his movement. All of this was in order to keep him at a close distance where she could use the nine revolutions red lotus to engage in a final showdown with him. This was because she had discovered that in terms of endurance, she might not be able to overcome him.

This time, seeing the nine revolutions of worlds form into sword light that slashed down on him, Lin Ming’s heart and mind were as still as water. From his inner world, the blood of Asura began to burn.

Even Lin Ming’s three avatars of essence, energy, and divine poured their strength into the demon avatar without reserve.

A blinding radiance burst out from Lin Ming’s eyes. In his inner world, the Asura Wheel was fused with and covered by the power of demons. Then, the Asura Wheel turned into a giant demon wheel that rose up from behind Lin Ming.

Wild demon power filled the air. A peerless demon appeared, slowly pushing the wheel forwards. This was the demon phantom formed by the Asura phantom.

The wheel contained thousands and millions of great demons roaring within. Inside, there was also the flesh and blood essence of the totem level abyssal demon, Famine.

As this demon wheel revolved, Lin Ming used both his hands and pushed outwards.

Lin Ming had poured all of his strength into this demon wheel and now it welcomed Sheng Mei’s nine revolutions red lotus.

Ka ka ka ka ka!

MW Chapter 2127B

Chapter 2127B – The Finale

…

…

…

The demon wheel cut down onto the nine revolutions red lotus. Celestial bodies would be grinded apart by it, and even the river of time seemed to shake.

During this fierce collision, the power of hope and desire from nine reincarnations and the great demon wheel began to wear away at each other.

The strength of all Laws, every ray of light, space and time, beneath the impact of these two great strengths, everything seemed to stir up, forming visible beams of energy that fell down upon the Deep King force field in torrents.

The Deep King force field's light barrier wildly shook. Because of the extended battle, the energy saved within the 12 totem poles was insufficient. Underneath this final impact the

Deep King force field wasn’t able to withstand the enormous destructive force and a tiny gap was ripped open!

Peng! Peng! Peng!

From all over the force field, the abyssal phantoms that covered the array formation’s light barrier began to explode together. Beams of Law lights gathered together, shooting out from Deep King force field and recklessly spraying outwards!

These light beams were energy blades formed by the collision of Lin Ming and Sheng Mei. Each one possessed a terrifying penetrating force, destroying wherever it went!

“Be careful!”

An abyssal cried out in alarm. To some of the weaker abyssals, any one of these light beams could easily pierce through them and take their lives!

The younger abyssals quickly retreated, even taking out their weapons to fend off these light beams.

But at this time, the True Divinity level Elders actually stepped forwards. They summoned protective shields of demon power that blocked all the light beams.

“They actually drained dry the energy from the totem poles. This is just defying the heavens!”

Deep Epoch frowned. The Deep King force field was the sect-stabilizing array formation of Deep King Road. With Lin Ming and Sheng Mei’s strength they shouldn’t have been able to break through it. However, they had actually managed to forcefully exhaust the energy contained in the array formation.

At this time within the array formation, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were in the center of the collision, both of them covered in blood!

Sheng Mei’s clothes were torn in numerous places. Her battle armor was broken and her long hair fluttered wildly about her.

And Lin Ming was in an even more tragic state. His chest was smothered in blood. The nine revolutions red lotus had been broken apart by the demon wheel, but as the two halves passed by him it nearly split him in half.

Although Lin Ming’s wounds were heavier, he actually had more strength remaining. This was because within the inner world of Lin Ming’s demon avatar, his true self and his three avatars were continuously supplying the demon avatar with energy.

This was the source of Lin Ming’s trump card.

But in comparison, because Sheng Mei had already consumed a great deal of energy and the nine revolutions red lotus she used once more, her face was already pale white. She had used up all her strength!

Lin Ming roared out and grasped the Black Dragon Spear. From beneath Sheng Mei’s arm, the Black Dragon Spear crazily shook!

Kacha!

The cold ice that froze over the shaft of the black Dragon Spear shattered, and even the bone armor atop the spear began to burst apart!

Lin Ming violently dragged out the spear, pulling the Black Dragon Spear out from the wreckage of broken ice and bone!

Sheng Mei’s delicate eyebrows pressed together and a trace of blood dripped from the corners of her lips. The Black Dragon Spear had been pulled out from beneath her right arm, and because of the shattered bone cutting her as it was pulled out, her right side was covered in blood!

Lin Ming’s eyes flashed with a cold light. The power of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace boiled over from within him as he suddenly pierced out the spear. The spear point continued to tremble as the power of Laws billowed outwards, shooting forth like a river of stars and releasing a terrifying brilliance that submerged Sheng Mei.

Sheng Mei’s pupils shrank. At this moment she could feel death approach!

This scene was fixed in the eyes of those watching for eternity. The light of Laws that danced in the air was like faded flower petals fluttering downwards. As for Sheng Mei shrouded in light, she was a black butterfly that had transformed into a fairy maiden.

Her long hair danced about her and she barely managed to use her still movable left wing as a shield. Beneath this black wing, Sheng Mei’s peerless looks were as cold and arrogant as a mountain of ice.

Her eyes weren’t focused on the spear that thrust towards her with cold brilliance, but the approaching Lin Ming’s face.

In her bright pupils, the image of Lin Ming was clearly reflected.

This sight seemed to touch something in Lin Ming’s heart. Just as the Black Dragon Spear was about to stab into the point between Sheng Mei’s eyebrows, Lin Ming turned his arm, changing the trajectory of the spear slightly so that it passed Sheng Mei’s cheek and turned out instead.

Puff!

Lin Ming's spear light stabbed into the Deep King force field's light barrier. The Deep King force field had originally been exhausted of energy and was now no longer capable of resisting Lin Ming's strike; the Black Dragon Spear directly pierced through it.

Ka ka ka!

Atop the barrier of light, cracks began to spread out like a spider web, proliferating at a rapid pace.

In a mere moment, the egg-like light barrier burst apart! Energy fell down like rain, sprinkling down onto the world like the endless stars glittering in the skies.

And in the inexhaustible rain of light, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei stood in the void. The Black Dragon Spear's point was only three inches away from Sheng Mei's beautiful face, where it cut off a strand of her black hair.

Time came to a standstill.

Sheng Mei looked at Lin Ming, an indescribable look emerging in her eyes.

She had been defeated. In a frontal battle she had actually been defeated by a higher abyssal who had a lower cultivation than she did.

This truth was hard for her to accept. At this moment, an inexplicable feeling began to rise up in her heart. This abyssal that held the spear in front of her left her confused and muddled. Although he was close, she couldn't see through him at all.

After the Deep King force field exploded and while the rain of light was still silently falling, all around the battlefield the entire audience had fallen silent. The winner and loser of this battle was already clear to all. In that last spear strike, if Lin Ming hadn't held back then Sheng Mei wouldn't even be able to stand there right now.

"He won… he really won?"

The Elders and disciples of the Ancient Eon Sect felt as if they were living a dream. Within the Dark Abyss, Deep King Road's Holy Demoness was no different from a living legend, but now that living legend had been beaten by an Elder of their Ancient Eon Sect, and this Elder had even jumped ranks to do so.

Did this mean that their Ancient Eon Sect would develop a relationship of marriage with Deep King Road?

As the disciples of the Ancient Eon Sect thought of the numerous rumors concerning Deep King Road's Holy Demoness and as they recalled the countless higher abyssals that chased after her, they couldn't help but gulp. While they admired and envied Lin Ming at the same time, they felt that everything that just occurred was too fantastical.

But as for the other small influences around the Ancient Eon Sect, they were so envious that their eyes turned red.

However, none of them dared to speak out at this time. In the Dark Abyss, strength was the ultimate deterrence. Lin Ming had already proven his own strength. As long as he didn't perish then in the future his accomplishments would even surpass those of Sheng Mei. Facing such a ruthless person, who dared make snide remarks?

In fact, the abyssals that taunted Lin Ming before began to feel weak at heart. They were all afraid that Lin Ming would remember their taunts.

"Her Highness the Holy Demoness really lost..."

A Deep King Road Elder said with deep emotion, unsure of what feeling was in his heart.

There was a bit of loss but also a bit of expectation. Who could say what would happen in the future?

"What do we do?" An Elder asked Deep Epoch.

Deep Epoch waved his hand, saying, "We do what we have to do and that is naturally to conduct the grand dual cultivation ceremony. But, this matter needs to be reported to the higher ups. The Sovereign is secretive in his movements, a dragon that cannot be seen, so the report shouldn't be for him. Instead, report this matter to the Great Elder."

In Deep King Road, above Deep Epoch was an upper True Divinity level abyssal Elder. Besides Deep, this Elder could be called the highest authority of Deep King Road.

MW Chapter 2128

Chapter 2128 – Marriage

…

…

…

On the Deep King Wheel, the dense rain of light subsided. From all around, many of the surrounding disciples and Elders of the abyssal influences had yet to respond. Then, many abyssals began to quietly discuss amongst themselves. To them, this scene was a dream they never would have imagined.

“Those from Deep King Road, are you ready to announce the end of the match?”

At this time the Great Elder of the Ancient Eon Sect stood up, drawing the gaze of many nearby abyssals.

Without a doubt, the Ancient Eon Sect had been able to feel proud and overjoyed, and even earned a great deal of face in front of everyone.

There were many Elders of large influences present who coveted the status of the Ancient Eon Sect. As they looked at Eon God, their complexions were filled with envy and unwillingness.

The Deep King Road Elder responsible for overseeing the competition awkwardly coughed. Then, he stepped onto the Deep King Wheel and loudly announced, “The battle has ended. The victor is the Ninth Elder of the Ancient Eon Sect!”

The stag remained silent. Many abyssals discovered that even until now, they didn’t know what the name of this Ancient Eon Sect’s Ninth Elder was.

“Then…concerning marriage, I believe that everyone from Deep King Road will not forget, right?”

Eon God spoke out once more, looking towards the Elders of Deep King Road before glancing over at Sheng Mei. At this time, the Elders of Deep King Road all had various emotions written on their faces, and as for Sheng Mei, her complexion was paler than normal.

In Lin Ming’s last strike, because of the Laws Lin Ming used, the strangely familiar aura, and finally Lin Ming suddenly holding back, a weird feeling began to surge in her heart. This was something that tickled her mind yet she wasn’t able to place a finger on it.

For a time, Sheng Mei thought she wanted to understand just where this strange feeling originated from. But after hearing Elder Eon God’s words, everything she felt towards Lin Ming suddenly disappeared.

In her pupils, Lin Ming’s demonic incarnation was reflected in them. This fierce black monster had shattered scales all over his body and the two bone blades that jutted out from his elbows had broken off. His entire body was covered and blood at it seemed that his injured were far more serious than her own.

At this time, his dark brown eyes were also gazing back at her.

By now, Lin Ming had already undone the Asura body metamorphosis and had returned to a normal size. Of course, this was in comparison to the life forms of the 33 Heavens. He was still towering and thickly built, and even though Sheng Mei was tall herself, she only reached just below Lin Ming’s chest.

Sheng Mei simply found this hard to accept, that this monster had defeated her and would soon obtain her.

“Hahaha!”

At this time, Elder Deep Epoch laughed and his foots came hurrying forwards. He appeared atop the Deep King Wheel, right between Lin Ming and Sheng Mei.

“What Elder Eon God said is correct. Since your sect’s Ninth Elder has won then we will naturally fulfill our side of the promise and allow our Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness to marry your Ninth Elder in a grand dual cultivation ceremony!”

Elder Deep Epoch readily agreed, causing the Elders of smaller influences to be startled. As for the younger abyssals, they were despondent upon hearing this. Even if Sheng Mei didn’t marry Lin Ming, they were clearly aware that it still wouldn’t be their turn. But, upon knowing that the most perfect goddess in the entire Dark Abyss would be ravaged by such a towering and ferocious abyssal demon, they still found this somewhat hard to accept. This sort of feeling was like seeing the most perfect thing in existence being polluted.

As for Sheng Mei, her eyelids jumped up as she heard Elder Deep Epoch’s words. She looked at Lin Ming but didn’t speak. However, the light in her eyes clearly turned much colder…

“Elder Deep Epoch is truly refreshing!” Eon God laughed. “Then…tomorrow my Ancient Eon Sect will prepare a dowry gift to settle this marriage. How about it?”

“Haha! Elder Eon God is too courteous. We can discuss this wedding further, after all, this must be a grand occasion for all of us.”

Elder Deep Epoch didn’t oppose Lin Ming marrying Sheng Mei. In his opinion, this would also be something beneficial to Deep King Road.

“Then about the date of this marriage ceremony.…” Elder Eon God continued to say. What he planned was to publically confirm a marriage date so that they could avoid future nights of headaches.

Although Lin Ming had seemingly appeared from nowhere, and his victory of Sheng Mei had left all the abyssals bewildered, in the end Lin Ming was still an Elder of their Ancient

Eon Sect. If the Ancient Eon Sect could use Lin Ming to climb the big tree that was Deep King Road, then Elder Eon God would absolutely love for this to occur.

After all, the Ancient Eon Sect had suffered crisis after crisis and countless influences were eyeing them, waiting for them to break apart so that they could be replaced.

“Haha, Elder Eon God is quite impatient. However, there is still some time until the Demon God’s Tomb opens, so if we do hold the dual cultivation ceremony before then, although it may be a bit hastily done, I don’t see any reason why we can’t!”

Deep Epoch rubbed his chin and looked at Lin Ming. According to any logical reasoning, it would be best for Lin Ming to emerge from the Demon God’s Tomb before the grand dual cultivation ceremony was held, since the Demon God’s Tomb was filled with dangers and anything could happen within.

However, in Deep Epoch’s view, a peerless genius like Lin Ming would likely have a ridiculously tough life. At the very least, nothing should happen to him in the Demon God’s Tomb. If they could hold the grand dual cultivation ceremony ahead of time then this would be proof that Deep King Road trusted Lin Ming, and this would help them strengthen their relationship with Lin Ming in the future.

Deep Epoch and Eon God continued to agree with each other, seeming as if they would almost put the marriage on today’s agenda.

And by this time, Sheng Mei finally found it hard to remain calm. If she didn’t say anything then she feared that within several days, she would have to marry Lin Ming in front of all these abyssals.

It just so happened that because of the Demon God’s Tomb, all of the influences that were connected to Deep King Road had gathered here. All of them had been sent written invitations.

She sent a sound transmission to Lin Ming, “I must speak with you…”

“What is there to talk about?” Lin Ming glanced at Sheng Mei. Seeing her pale face, a strange feeling stirred in his heart.

This was an extremely complex feeling, one that seemed to originate from dark feelings, from the pleasure of taking revenge. But inevitably, it also came from Lin Ming’s unclear feelings about Sheng Mei.

Lin Ming’s deepest impression of Sheng Mei had been her cold and callous actions as she took his Eternal Soul and left.

But, when he had lost his strength and was completely dried up, on the verge of death, it was in that moment that he felt the warmth and fullness brought about by Sheng Mei’s source soul force and life essence.

If it weren’t for those things she left him then he wouldn’t have been able to understand the samsara of life and death before he perished, and he wouldn’t have been able to comprehend the Grand Reincarnation Art and slowly restore himself.

Sheng Mei gave Lin Ming a life saving grace. However, Lin Ming couldn’t clearly see through her actions or reasons. This caused Lin Ming to subconsciously be on guard against her, not trusting her, but also caring for her.

Because of his actions and the upcoming promise of dual cultivation, Sheng Mei was unable to maintain the cold arrogance of her heart. Instead, she nervous and panicked due to the upcoming agreement and Lin Ming couldn’t help but take pleasure in this sort of revenge.

Even though Lin Ming had experienced so many things in his life, it was still hard for him to rid himself of this part of human nature.

“Who are you? Where did you come from? What’s your name?” Sheng Mei asked Lin Ming.

“Who I am, where I come from, those aren’t things you need to concern yourself with. As for my name, you can call me Ninth Elder.”

Lin Ming didn’t plan to tell Sheng Mei about his own status. Even if he inwardly wanted to believe in Sheng Mei, she was still someone that worked from the Soul Emperor and someone who had complicated relations with Deep King Road. There was even a chance that she was an abyssal demon, a mortal enemy to him.

In this sort of situation, Lin Ming couldn’t guarantee that Sheng Mei wouldn’t betray him if she were threatened by someone or tempted by something. For instance, if she were tempted by that peak of martial arts so longed for in her dreams.

Moreover, Lin Ming had a faint feeling that to a certain extent, Sheng Mei was being controlled by the Soul Emperor. At the very least, the Soul Emperor was aware of all her actions. In this case, if Sheng Mei were to know who he truly was then it would be far too dangerous.

After listening to Lin Ming’s words, Sheng Mei frowned, clearly unsatisfied with his reply.

After all, they would likely have to conduct the grand dual cultivation ceremony soon and he wouldn’t even tell her his name.

“I want to make a deal with you!”

Sheng Mei icily said. She was already disinclined to banter with Lin Ming. The brief spell of goodwill towards him that had magically appeared from nowhere had disappeared.

Even Sheng Mei couldn’t clearly explain why she would have even the least bit of favorable impression towards this barbaric abyssal demon that was brimming over with an evil aura.

“What kind of deal?” Lin Ming’s eyes rose, his attention suddenly stirring.

MW Chapter 2129

Chapter 2129 – Sheng Mei's Conditions

…

…

…

Sheng Mei expressionlessly said, "I can hold the grand dual cultivation ceremony with you, but after our marriage then we will be river water and well water, not interfering with each other. I will not manage your affairs and you will not bother me."

Lin Ming couldn't help but feel humored by Sheng Mei's words. He inevitably found himself thinking of a scene where his demon avatar shared a bed with Sheng Mei. With that sort of mental image, no wonder Sheng Mei found it impossible to accept.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming's lips curved up in a smile. He slowly asked, "Why would I do that?"

Lin Ming's words carried with them a slight playful and provocative tone, immediately rousing Sheng Mei's anger.

Still, no matter how things were said, the reality was that she had lost to Lin Ming. Moreover, she was the one who had decided the rules. Only the heavens knew why she would encounter such an abnormality today and suffer such a great loss.

Thus, even if she was filled with disgust towards Lin Ming she couldn't help but admit defeat and say in a softened voice. "Your talent defies the will of the heavens. Looking at the entire Dark Abyss, any beautiful women, succubus demons, goddesses, all of them are within hand's reach. As long as you wish then countless beauties will be willing to dual cultivate with you, so what do you care if you are lacking one? I will not manage your affairs, and in fact I will even provide all sorts of assistance to you. As long as you do not bother me then I am even willing to pay a certain price for this!"

"Pay a price?"

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. When Lin Ming joined this competition, the original reason he did so was to prove his own value and strength so that he could earn the qualifications to take the Book of Eon into the Demon God's Tomb.

The second reason was because he wished to compare his strength with that of Sheng Mei.

Upon reaching Lin Ming's level, there were far too martial artists that were able to compete with him on the same boundary. Finding an opponent was far, far too hard. He and Sheng Mei were both born in the same era, like yin and yang. Between the two of them, their battle had already been decided by destiny.

As for taking advantage of someone when they were done...well, these were rules that Sheng Mei had laid down herself to begin with. And when it came to forming relations with Sheng Mei, Lin Ming hadn't considered this at all. He and Sheng Mei weren't lovers. Although they had come together once on the Sky Spill Planet, that was because he had been forced to due to the situation he had been in.

Lin Ming had feelings towards Sheng Mei, but it was impossible for his sentiments to be as deep as what he felt towards Xiao Moxian. And, he couldn't take advantage of his past relationship with Sheng Mei to do anything out of the ordinary with her that an abyssal normally wouldn't do.

But now, hearing Sheng Mei mention that she would offer certain conditions on her own initiative, Lin Ming was actually quite interested.

"First tell me what price you are willing to pay." Lin Ming lazily said as he traced his chin. Although taking advantage of someone in dire straits wasn't the actions of a gentleman, he and Sheng Mei were in opposing factions, thus he naturally had to do everything to fight for advantages.

"You can raise any conditions you wish. I will try to satisfy them as long as they aren't overly excessive." Sheng Mei relaxed as she heard Lin Ming agree to this and she didn't care if Lin Ming might try to ask for too much.

Lin Ming chuckled inwardly. In truth, he already knew what he wanted. Still, he pretended to hesitate for a moment and then said to Sheng Mei, "Demon crystals, I have no lack of. Even if its top grade demon crystals, I have no interest. As for blood pills, medicines, I have more than enough. Weapons I have too, and you won't necessarily be able to provide me with anything better. It seems that on your entire body, there isn't anything that attracts me…"

Lin Ming's words were said to establish a psychological superiority. But, as Sheng Mei heard them, they were somewhat grating on the ears.

In particular when Lin Ming said that there was nothing on her body that attracted him. If an ordinary woman were to hear this they would have already become enraged, but Sheng Mei's expression remained unchanged, as if she were some glacier that had existed for a million years.

She frowned and said, "Stop playing games. Just state your conditions!"

"Mm, good!" Lin Ming smiled. "Although I don't want to take advantage of you, you should also know that if I were to dual cultivate with you, the regardless of whether it was you or me, it would greatly enhance our strength. The rules were set down by you but in the end you simply wish to go back on your promise. Then, I should obtain corresponding compensation. Your final nine revolutions nine lotus isn't bad, as well as the dual Concepts of Endlessness and Annihilation in your sword. I am very much interested in them. My conditions are that I wish to borrow them to observe and perceive!"

Lin Ming had long since wanted to look at the whole and complete Holy Scripture. 12,000 years ago when Lin Ming obtained the Holy Scripture in the Soul World, the truth was that it was only a duplicate of the golden pages. As for the black book that recorded death within, Lin Ming had never even seen it before. He relied on the source soul force that Sheng Mei left within him to slowly perceive, joininig with it his understands he gained through the samsara of life and death to comprehend it a bit at a time.

Although the things he comprehended himself also most suited himself, he was still restrained by time. If it came to might alone, then it was impossible for his version to compare with the complete and original Holy Scripture.

Hearing Lin Ming's request, Sheng Mei pressed her eyebrows together. According to all logical reasoning, the Holy Scripture simply wasn't suitable for abyssals to cultivate. But, as she thought about had Lin Ming seemed to understand the Holy Scripture Laws to some extent that he was able to break through them, she actually suspected that if she were really to lend him the Holy Scripture then he would be able to perceive many things from it.

"You shouldn't go too far! The dual Laws of Life and Destruction are the foundations of my cultivation. It is impossible for me to give them to you!"

Sheng Mei flat out refused. Lin Ming fell into thought, no longer speaking. Sheng Mei felt a bit afraid but didn't speak either. If neither of them could come to an agreement then she really didn't know what she would do.

The truth was that if they didn't share a bed even after marriage then that would be equal to breaching her promise. If this matter were to spread out then it would be on the same level as breaking an engagement.

"I will take a step back. Concerning the Laws of Life and Destruction, I only want the Laws of Destruction. I have confidence in my own endurance so I have no need for the power of endlessness. Rather, destruction suits me more."

Lin Ming put forth his earliest desire at this critical moment. He had already seen the golden pages so he didn't need them. What he truly wished to see was the black book of death.

In fact, when Lin Ming first entered the Dark Abyss he had found the skeletal remains of the mysterious woman from 10 billion years passed who resembled Sheng Mei. Atop these bones were engraved the Law runes of the Holy Scripture.

However, bone runes were in the end bone runes. They were symbols condensed from the Laws after a martial artist's cultivation reached large success, and not the earliest step for cultivation. Lin Ming still had flaws in his understanding of the Holy Scripture and he wished to make up for these faults with Sheng Mei's assistance.

Sheng Mei looked at Lin Ming and bit her lips. "Three days! I will give you only three days, and the amount you can comprehend will depend on you!"

This was Sheng Mei's final concession; three days to look at the original text. No matter how high Lin Ming's perception was the most he could do was crudely memorize the Laws, and he might not even be able to finish the entire book.

And without the original text, he could only cultivate by himself and it would also be impossible for him to leak anything outwards. Moreover, without the Laws of Life, it was impossible for Lin Ming's attainments to reach any high boundary.

Of course, these were Sheng Mei's thoughts. But, they were exactly what Lin Ming wished for.

He smiled, "Good, then its three days."

Three days was more than enough. This was because from Sheng Mei's memories, his own comprehension, and the bone runes of that woman who seemed like the previous life of Sheng Mei, he already had a deep understanding of the Death Laws. What he wanted now was to use the black book to thoroughly fuse his understandings together.

"Remember what you said!"

Sheng Mei warned Lin Ming.

As the two were secretly making a deal with sound transmissions, Elder Eon God and Elder Deep Epoch were still discussing the date of the marriage.

Without Sheng Mei needing to remind him, Lin Ming directly said, “Two Elders, I apologize for the disturbance but I would like to hold the marriage after the trip into the Demon God’s Tomb!”

Lin Ming’s words left Eon God and Deep Epoch startled.

“Mm….time is of the essence. I want to take advantage of the time before the Demon God’s Tomb opens to cultivate as much as I can. I don’t wish to distract myself with the dual cultivation ceremony.”

Lin Ming’s words finally caused Sheng Mei’s eyes to soften a little. If the dual cultivation ceremony could be delayed a bit longer then that was naturally a good thing.

Deep Epoch looked towards Sheng Mei and saw Sheng Mei nod her head in agreement.

Deep Epoch opened his mouth as if he wanted to say something but eventually didn’t. As the two parties of the wedding, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei naturally had the authority to decide the date of the wedding.

The truth was that Deep Epoch wanted to say that if they could hold the grand dual cultivation ceremony before the Demon God’s Tomb opened, then the two could start immediately dual cultivating, and that might even benefit their cultivation more!

Deep Epoch didn’t say much and Eon God also tactfully remained silent.

At this time, Lin Ming suddenly said, “Elder Deep Epoch, I remember that before my match with the Holy Demoness, we agreed that if I were able to defeat her then I would obtain treatment at least on the level of a core disciple like the Holy Demoness?”

Deep Epoch thought that Lin Ming would originally talk about matters concerning the marriage, but he didn’t think he would bring this up instead. “Yes, that’s right. This is the foundational rules behind the alliance that by Deep King Road established. Whoever was strength will obtain more benefits! Moreover, you are already engaged to my Deep King Road's Holy Demoness so you are now half a disciple of my Deep King Road. The promise that I made before will naturally be one that I keep."

"Great!"

Lin Ming gently smiled. And beside Lin Ming, the Ancient Eon Sect's Great Elder let out a sigh of relief. He knew that Lin Ming wanted to bring the Book of Eon into the Demon God's Tomb…

Lin Ming turned his hand and the Book of Eon appeared in his palm.

The mysterious black book carried with it a profound and ancient abyssal strength. As it appeared, Elder Deep Epoch's eyes widened and his heart shook.

"This…this is!?"

"The Book of Eon!"

Lin Ming's voice reverberated through the entire audience.

The Book of Eon could not be concealed. As long as someone brought it into the Demon God's Tomb then others would discover it. Since that was the case then he might as well take it out now and reveal it to the public, and then follow the rules established by Deep King Road to decide who would manage it.

With Lin Ming's current status, with the strength he just proved in battle, and along with the fact that he was the one who originally found the Book of Eon, then by all reasoning he should be the one to hold it!

The Book of Eon's appearance threw the entire audience into an uproar.

Many abyssals stood up, staring at the black book in Lin Ming's hand with disbelief. The Book of Eon that had gone missing for billions of years was actually found today!?

Didn’t this mean that the originally declining Ancient Eon Sect would revitalize the destiny of their sect!?

And with this Lin Ming who had come from nowhere, the Ancient Eon Sect would undergo earth-shaking changings overnight.

The originally dispirited Ancient Eon Sect was now filled with infinite hope!

MW Chapter 2130

Chapter 2130 - Doubt

...

...

...

“The Book of Eon! You actually have the Book of Eon!!”

Deep Epoch swept his eyes over Lin Ming and towards Elder Eon God.

At this time, Eon God had a complicated expression on his face but he clearly wasn’t surprised by the sudden appearance of the Book of Eon. Then Deep Epoch immediately understood what was going on. The truth was that the Ancient Eon Sect had the Book of Eon all along, and because they wanted the newly promoted Ninth Elder to struggle for more status, they then had him challenge Sheng Mei for marriage.

“Brother Eon God, to think you’ve been hiding this from me all this time!”

As Deep Epoch spoke, Eon God ruefully smiled. Deep Epoch likely thought that he knew Lin Ming was incredibly strong beforehand, thus he knew his chances of victory were most likely assured and was only pretending to not know.

This speculation wronged Eon God, but Eon God didn’t make any useless explanations. Rather, he looked at the Book of Eon in Lin Ming’s hand with some conflicted feelings.

Although Lin Ming was talented, if he were to bring the Book of Eon into the Demon God’s Tomb, no one knew what would occur.

He naturally hoped Lin Ming could pass the test of the abyssal ritual and become a totem level abyssal demon.

But if Lin Ming were truly to ascend and become Eon, what he would bring to the Ancient Eon Sect left Elder Eon God somewhat anxious. At that time, Lin Ming would rule over the entire Ancient Eon Sect and the lives of all the Elders would be in his hands.

“Elder Deep Epoch, I plan on bringing the Book of Eon into the Demon God’s Tomb. There shouldn’t a problem with this, right?”

Lin Ming asked. Deep Epoch fell silent for a moment.

At this time, Deep Epoch somewhat dreaded Lin Ming's strength. This junior had already arrived at such heights, and if he were to bring the Book of Eon into the Demon God's Tomb and pass the abyssal ritual then no one could imagine what might happen.

"There's no problem at all." Elder Deep Epoch solemnly said as he took in a deep breath.

At this time, Sheng Mei was also looking at Lin Ming, her gaze turning complicated. "So… you had the Book of Eon all along."

"Yes…" Lin Ming glanced at Sheng Mei and saw her let loose a gentle sigh.

This light sigh left Lin Ming a bit puzzled; just what was she sighing over?

Sheng Mei fell silent for some time, as if she were hesitating in saying some words to Lin Ming. Eventually, she shook her head and said to him with a sound transmission, "Do you know the price you will have to pay for bringing the Book of Eon into the Demon God's Tomb?"

"I will become the target of everyone. I am well aware of that."

"And you won't change your mind?" Sheng Mei asked.

Lin Ming smiled. “Aren’t you also planning to enter the Demon God’s Tomb with another ceremonial rites book? Since you haven’t changed your mind, why must I?”

“I…” Sheng Mei sighed once more. “I am different from you. I advise you to give up…”

“Why?” Lin Ming frowned. He was left confused by Sheng Mei’s words of warning because he felt that Sheng Mei wasn’t doubting his strength or talent, but had other reasons for saying so.

“That is as much as I can say. Whether or not you believe me, that is up to you.”

Sheng Mei no longer spoke. Her words had left Lin Ming feeling cold in his heart.

Perhaps… she knew something that he didn’t.

………..

The competition between the three great influences ended.

And following that was a competition between the smaller influences. And, this also included some Empyrean level abyssals from the three great influences.

Those that entered the Demon God's Tomb weren't all True Divinities. There were also Empyreans, and their goals were to go to the shallower, outer layers of the Demon God's Tomb and they would remove themselves from competing for the totem level abyssal inheritance.

The Ancient Eon Sect had brought some such disciples here and these disciples entered into the battlefield of the smaller influences.

Because there were many of them, the battles would continue for a month.

And during this period of time Lin Ming had calmly gone into seclusion.

His place of residency was only several dozen feet from Sheng Mei's own courtyard.

In the Dark Abyss, the atmosphere was relatively barbaric and wild. Compared to the life forms of the 33 Heavens, abyssal demons were far more casual and often preferred to indulge in their primal, sensual natures.

Thus, whether it was the Ancient Eon Sect or Deep King Road, since Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were already engaged, living together and dual cultivating during this time period wasn't a problem at all. So, it would be more convenient for their residences to be placed nearby.

If Lin Ming and Sheng Mei could dual cultivate and comprehend something then it would be highly beneficial to them during this venture into the Demon God's Tomb.

But in the end, regardless of whether it was Sheng Mei or Lin Ming, they went into their rooms and no longer spoke to each other.

Their only meeting was three days ago. Lin Ming, under Sheng Mei's supervision, read a black book from beginning to end, recording all the runes, writings, and Laws in his mind.

The black book of death was originally profound and esoteric in its knowledge. But to Lin Ming who deeply understood the Laws of Death, it wasn't difficult to remember it in its entirety.

The opening of the Demon God's Tomb was coming closer and closer.

As Lin Ming perceived the black book of death, he also mulled over Sheng Mei's advice.

During these days, besides perceiving the Laws, Lin Ming also looked up information concerning the Demon God's Tomb.

The Demon God's Tomb opened at random intervals. Sometimes it would open after ten million years, sometimes every few hundred million years, or sometimes even every billion years.

And the main reason for this was because finding one of the ancient ceremonial rites books wasn't easy at all.

But in the past several billions of years, the Demon God's Tomb had been opened dozens of times. Yet, how many totem level abyssals had been born from this? This was what Lin Ming cared about the most.

If the Demon God's Tomb contained some hidden dangers that even Sheng Mei would believe would make it too dangerous for him to pass the test of the abyssal ritual, then perhaps in the last several billion years there might not have been any abyssal demons that were truly capable of passing the abyssal ritual and transcending from a True Divinity level abyssal to a totem level abyssal.

However, when he truly searched through the ancient texts, he actually discovered the information concerning abyssals who entered the Demon God's Tomb in ancient times was pitifully lacking.

This wasn't normal at all. It was clear that some information was sealed away so that future generations wouldn't be able to find out.

As for things concerning the several totem level abyssals, that information was shrouded in layers of secrecy.

There were those that had gone missing, those that had died, and even those that were alive but were rarely seen, as if they would simply stay hidden until the end of time.

For instance, the Demon Association's 'Evil'. There were some abyssals who believed that Evil had died and some abyssals who believed that Evil was alive. No one was able to come to an agreement.

As for Deep King Road's 'Deep', it was truly living. However, there were some True Divinity Elders who had never seen Deep even in their entire lives.

There was also Great Flood Demon Kingdom's ruler – 'Flood'. This was the last of the six totem level abyssals that Lin Ming was aware of.

Flood had established the Great Flood Demon Kingdom that occupied an incomparably broad domain. This was a super Divine Kingdom, and its strength actually surpassed that of Deep King Road!

In fact, Great Flood Demon Kingdom was renowned as the number one influence of the entire Dark Abyss. With it as the lead, there were two other totem level influences beneath it as well as a number of smaller influences gathered around it. The alliance they formed was the greatest opponent of Deep King Road's alliance.

As for this ‘Flood’, according to the sparse historical records, it had passed the abyssal ritual 2 billion years ago to ascend and become the newest totem level abyssal from the Demon God’s Tomb.

From this alone it could be seen that the Demon God’s Tomb wasn’t an absolute death zone. In the last several billions of years, although there were only an extremely small number of totem level abyssals born, they still appeared.

The existence of Flood left Lin Ming with even more doubts. If totem level abyssals could emerge from the Demon God’s Tomb, then what was the meaning behind Sheng Mei’s warning?

Sheng Mei shouldn’t know that he was a human. She believed he was an abyssal demon. In other words, if there was danger then this danger was aimed towards all abyssals.

Lin Ming would enter the Demon God’s Tomb as an abyssal and the dangers he would face would be no different from those of other abyssals.

Dangers that were aimed at all would always be relatively better. At the very least, the Dark Abyss wouldn’t produce a mystic realm of absolute death where they abyssals would send the strongest and those with the greatest potential to die.

Lin Ming couldn’t understand so he continued to investigate information about Flood. Flood was the youngest of all the totem level abyssals, but it was also incomparably mysterious; it rarely appeared, even in the Great Flood Demon Kingdom.

It seemed that Deep and Flood were mortal enemies. Legends said that these two supreme powerhouses of the abyss fought once in the 16th layer, and the surrounding area for billions of miles had turned into desert and countless lives had been lost.

Lin Ming shook his head as he read through this information. The Dark Abyss and the Demon God’s Tomb seemed to be hiding some secret. But, no matter what dangers there were lurking about, Lin Ming still had to explore it.

He couldn’t give up such a chance because he didn’t have much time remaining…

Lin Ming went into intermittent seclusion, perceiving the Laws.

Training continued without a sense of time. The day of the opening of the Demon God’s Tomb approached.

MW Chapter 2131

Chapter 2131 – Deep Child

…

…

…

Deep in the night, Sheng Mei sat cross-legged in her chambers, shrouded in an endless illumination of black light. Thousands of strands of hair fluttered about her, emitting a light and enchanting fragrance.

She seemed to be the source of all darkness in the universe. As long as a ray of light neared her, it would be cleanly swallowed away.

Sheng Mei was accumulating strength in order to prepare for attacking the True Divinity realm in the future. In truth, her current cultivation was incredibly close to True Divinity.

Like a pool of water at night, although Sheng Mei was sitting in her chambers, she could still clearly feel the flow of energy around her. She faintly felt that somewhere not too far away from her, the circulation of energy began to speed up, as if some storm were brewing.

“It’s him…”

Sheng Mei opened her eyes, looking at some direction in the dark room.

The direction she faced was the room where Lin Ming was.

Sheng Mei gazed on for a long time and then gently sighed. She was sighing not just for Lin Ming but also for herself. For these past years, she had shouldered far too many things, things that no one knew of. From the outside she seemed to be living an infinitely glorious and wonderful life, but at the same time she endured a fate of samsara that was beyond understanding…

At this time the abyssal Laws suddenly began to stir up in the dark room. The Laws and energy coalesced together, forking a small vortex, and within this small vortex was a simple bronze mirror.

Shua!

With a loud sound, a black spatial gate appeared on the surface of the bronze mirror.

The spatial gate revolved, emitting a misty black light. It seemed like the maw of an ancient vicious beast, ferocious and cruel.

Seeing this, Sheng Mei frowned. She took back her wistful expression and returned to her heartless indifference.

"Junior-apprentice Sister..."

A sound echoed out from the spatial gate, thick and masculine, magnetic to the senses, one that was delightful to listen to.

With it, an abyssal demon wearing purple battle armor stepped out from the spatial gate.

As this abyssal appeared, the surrounding world seemed to resonate with him, beating in rhythm with the man's steps as if true meanings of the abyssal Dao were appearing.

This abyssal was one of those that Deep King Road sent out to join the expedition into the Demon God's Tomb this time – Deep Child!

When the three great influences of Deep King Road, the Ancient Eon Sect, and Nine Nether Palace held their competition of True Divinity masters, Deep King Road had sent out six True Divinity level masters, among which Sheng Mei was included. Of these six abyssals, only one of them had a middle True Divinity level cultivation – Deep Child!

Because of Deep Child's high cultivation, neither the Ancient Eon Sect nor Nine Nether Palace had any Elders dare to challenge him. Instead, many of those Elders chose the one that seemed the weakest – Sheng Mei. But to their dismay they finally discovered that Sheng Mei was actually an incredibly ruthless individual, and all four abyssal Elders who thought to challenge her had been defeated.

"Junior-apprentice Sister's strength is becoming increasingly fierce, soon to break into the True Divinity realm at any time. I fear that once Junior-apprentice Sister becomes a True Divinity, even I will not be a match for you."

Deep Child chuckled, his tone gentle.

This voice didn't seem like that of an abyssal demon at all. A tall and robust abyssal like Deep Child usually had a loud and resonant voice, one that rang like a bell, low and deep, a voice that caused the ears to hum.

But Deep Child spoke like a modest gentleman from one of the races of the 33 Heavens, with a voice that sounded like a cool spring breeze.

However, as Sheng Mei listened to him, a deep loathing and disgust flickered in the depths of her eyes. She said without expression, "The reason you came today is not to say this!"

“Mm… it isn’t…”

As Deep Child spoke he took out a black jade slip and flipped it around in his fingers a few times.

“There is a little more than a month until the Demon God’s Tomb opens. These are your orders and the division of duty between us all is explicitly clear. However, I also hope that Junior-apprentice Sister will cooperate with me.”

Deep Child tossed the jade slip into Sheng Mei’s hands, a playful expression on his face. Sheng Mei took the jade slip and swept through it. It only took her a breath of time to completely look through it.

Without any reaction, Sheng Mei crumbled the jade slip in her hands, “I understand.”

“Mm, very good!” Deep Child said, his face full of smiles.

Looking at the present Sheng Mei, he couldn’t help but twitch his nose several times and say with satisfaction, “Junior-apprentice Sister’s cultivation is rising higher and higher, and with your Grand Reincarnation Art having reached perfection, your aura is becoming that much more mesmerizing, haha!”

Deep Child frivolously commented. Sheng Mei didn’t respond. Instead, her icy cold eyes remained locked on Deep Child.

“Cheh, too heartless!” Deep Child said, a bit bored. He continued, “That Ancient Eon Sect’s Ninth Elder has a bit of skill. To think that he nearly managed to obtain you! But what a pity, he has missed his chance. In the future I fear he won’t have another opportunity!”

Sheng Mei couldn’t be bothered to care about Deep Child’s nonsense. She said, “I know you’ve been investigating the Ninth Elder’s status for these past days. Have you found anything?”

“I haven’t.” Deep Child shook his head, a suspicious color in his eyes. “His talent is at a higher level than yours, and that itself is inconceivable. But… there will always be surprises in this world, just like how he managed to somehow find the Book of Eon that had been missing for so long. It should be when he found the Book of Eon that he stumbled onto his fortuitous encounter. However, that doesn’t matter, because no matter what he encountered it is the same to us.”

Deep Child said with confidence. Sheng Mei remained silent. Not only had Deep Child not managed to find any information concerning the Ancient Eon Sect’s Ninth Elder, but Sheng Mei discovered that not only was she not disappointed, but faint threads of hope and joy were inexplicably appearing in her heart instead.

She was originally worried that this mysterious Ninth Elder might have some troubling identity. If Deep Child had really found anything he would have already taken action ahead of time.

As for that strange hope in her heart, even she couldn't explain where it came from. However, Sheng Mei felt that when the end of the world was arriving, there would always be unanticipated and extraordinary outliers that would appear. And these outliers would always make others feel as if a favorable turnaround was possible...

"I asked you before about the situation in the 33 Heavens. Have you investigated it?"

The Dark Abyss was isolated from the 33 Heavens. Even transmitting information just once wasn't easy at all.

Sheng Mei wasn't an abyssal demon to begin with so she could leave the Dark Abyss if she desired. However, her freedom was limited so she hadn't left the Dark Abyss for a long, long time.

If she wanted to find out anything concerning the 33 Heavens, she would have to ask Deep Child.

Deep Child also couldn't leave the Dark Abyss. But, he had some unique methods with which he could obtain information about the 33 Heavens.

Deep Child chuckled, “The 33 Heavens? It’s the same old story, nothing has changed!”

Hearing Deep Child’s words, Sheng Mei fell silent for a moment. “The war between the saints and humanity, is it still continuing?”

“Mm, it is…”

“There hasn’t been some favorable turn?”

“Just what favorable turn can there be? Humanity is still hiding away in the wild universe. If it weren’t for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign having gone into seclusion then humanity would have long since perished. But, their extinction is likely rapidly approaching.”

Deep Child’s words were somewhat grating as they fell on Sheng Mei’s ears.

She deeply looked at Deep Child as if she wanted to find something from his eyes or expression. However, Deep Child’s brown eyes only held mockery and ridicule.

Sheng Mei didn’t want to believe Deep Child’s words, but, she knew that what Deep Child said was the most reasonable and also most likely situation.

If there was some reversal in the war then that would be a miracle.

Sheng Mei shook her head, no longer thinking about it.

Seeing Sheng Mei's reaction, Deep Child smugly smiled. He said, "Is junior-apprentice Sister worrying about someone in the 33 Heavens, or perhaps some matter there?"

Sheng Mei didn't reply. Instead, she closed her eyes and returned to her meditation.

"You may leave." Sheng Mei's voice resounded in the air.

But Deep Child continued to say, "Hahaha! Junior-apprentice Sister, there is no need for you to continue daydreaming! All you need to do is be obedient and complete the orders you were given! You should know that regardless of what happens in the 33 Heavens, none of that matters because there is no significance to any of it at all! Everything that occurs is nothing but a farce playing out before the end of the world arrives. In the future, we will become legends, we will become eternal, and the entire 33 Heavens will belong to us. The lives of some ants or even many ants are meaningless to us. When a mountain floods, the ants will all drown, and even the strongest ants are no exception!"

Deep Child said, his words seeming to contain other meanings.

However, Sheng Mei seemed to not hear him at all as she continued to sit calmly in meditation.

Deep Child sneered, a wild and greedy light in his eye as he stared at Sheng Mei.

But at this time his expression froze. He could feel that the demon power in his surroundings had become chaotic!

This is…

Deep Child spread out his sense in all directions. Then, he was somewhat alarmed. Someone was making a breakthrough at this moment!

MW *Chapter* 2132

Chapter 2132 – Upper Empyrean

…

…

…

At this time, within Deep Child's sensory field, demon power began to wildly gather in the world, forming a massive black vortex in the skies.

It seemed as if countless demons were howling from within this vortex, emitting a heart-shaking aura.

More and more energy flowed towards this vortex. As the energy condensed into thick strands, they were like chains that blocked out the skies.

Deep Child's complexion darkened. He knew that although this vortex was above his head, the true center was in a room not too far away – in other words, the room of the Ancient Eon Sect's Ninth Elder.

At this time he had made a breakthrough in his boundary!

"This brat!"

Deep Child knew that the Ancient Eon Sect's Ninth Elder was a long distance away from the boundary of True Divinity. This breakthrough was only one that was within the Empyrean realm.

But, for a breakthrough of a small boundary to galvanize such a tremendous phenomenon, this left Deep Child feeling uneasy in his heart.

At this time, in the surrounding residences, the abyssals of other small influences also noticed the changes occurring in the skies.

Upper Empyrean level abyssals were in a much more fortunate situation. As for lower Empyreans and World King level abyssals, they felt an enormous pressure as they faced the demonic clouds in the skies, a horrifying feeling that left them frozen in place.

As for Holy Lord level abyssals, it was already difficult for them to stay close. They couldn't help but draw back again and again, otherwise this massive pressure would have crushed them to the ground and forced them to crawl.

“What is going on?” An abyssal disciple asked. Some young disciples couldn’t figure out where this pressure came from or what it meant.

“A higher abyssal is making a breakthrough.”

An Elder from a small influence replied.

“A higher abyssal? Is it one of the True Divinity level Elders from the three great influences?”

In the eyes of the low level abyssals, if there was such pressure from a breakthrough phenomenon then it was likely that a lower True Divinity Elder was rising to a middle True Divinity Elder.

If one of the younger True Divinity Elders of the three large influences was able to break into the middle True Divinity realm before entering the Demon God’s Tomb, then they had really hit the jackpot.

This meant they would have a higher chance of surviving in the Demon God’s Tomb and it also meant that they would be able to struggle for more advantages.

“It isn’t. It is the Ancient Eon Sect’s Ninth Elder…”

An Elder of a small influence said, his face thick with envy. He had determined the epicenter of this vortex and knew that the location of the breakthrough was where Lin Ming was! This Lin Ming was incredibly strong to begin with, and if he were to make another breakthrough then it was unknown what heights he would reach.

“The Ancient Eon Sect’s Ninth Elder, so it was him!”

Many low level abyssals had an extremely deep impression of Lin Ming. To them, not only was he the number one proud son of heaven, but he even married Sheng Mei, the most perfect goddess to exist in the Dark Abyss.

Thinking of this, many abyssals looked at the giant demonic vortex in the skies and their faces turned sour.

This Ninth Elder, at the Empyrean boundary, was able to stand on par with a True Divinity – whether it was strength, comprehension of Laws, or phenomena that would appear during a breakthrough. In fact he even surpassed a number of True Divinities. With such an existence amongst them, how could other True Divinity abyssals compare?

If an Empyrean could match up to the standards of a True Divinity, then their greatest advantage would be in their potential.

For other True Divinities, reaching the upper True Divinity boundary was the end of their road.

But once Lin Ming broke into the True Divinity realm, he would reach the top standards of the True Divinity realm.

In the future he could even cultivate and step Beyond Divinity. This was a boundary that countless abyssals couldn't hope to compete with.

The demonic vortex in the skies didn't last for long. From the vortex, a giant funnel began to form and extend downwards.

Billowing waves of demon energy flowed down from this funnel in surging waves, as if there was a waterspout appearing in Lin Ming's courtyard.

This small courtyard was extremely tranquil and Lin Ming didn't show up either. This formed a sharp contrast to the grand scene occurring all over the surroundings.

The scene of this energy reversing downwards continued onwards and became increasingly wild with time. From afar, it was like a massive tornado was dangling down from the clouds above.

As the energy flowed downwards, that overwhelming pressure also began to weaken.

Like a water basin with all the water drawn out, all of that demon power was sucked dry by the courtyard Lin Ming was in.

The moment all that demon power was absorbed, a black light burst out from Lin Ming's courtyard!

Some abyssals with weaker cultivations started to subconsciously retreat, as if they couldn't withstand the sharpness of the black light. As this light shined onto them, it was like someone pointed towards their heads with sword fingers.

Before they could steady themselves, they saw a giant Asura demon phantom within this black light rush out towards the clouds. It stood 10,000 feet high, towering above Lin Ming's residence like a mountain!

This Asura demon phantom had curved horns jutting out from its head, and its entire body was covered in ferocious plates of bone armor and thick chains, its muscles bulging outwards like dragons.

It had six arms and each of its six elbows had long and vicious bone spikes that extended for 2000-3000 feet. Behind it, a giant pair of demon wings unfolded, blocking out the heavens!

This was the Supreme phantom within Lin Ming’s inner world. However, with him using his demon avatar to make an avatar, this Supreme phantom had taken on the image of a demon. As it fused with a wisp of the Asura war god’s aura, it caused an astonishing aura to develop, as if a demon god were being born!

This grand and immense pressure was nearly unbearable for the surrounding abyssals.

Even Great World King level abyssals felt their blood freeze in their veins and their hearts nearly stop beating.

This was a horrifying feeling, as if that giant demon phantom only needed to glance at them to cause them to disintegrate into ashes.

No one liked this feeling where it seemed as if their destiny was no longer in their control. But fortunately, this situation didn’t last much longer. After several breaths of time, that giant demon phantom rapidly shrank before it finally disappeared into Lin Ming’s courtyard, vanishing from sight.

Many abyssals finally let out a long breath of relief. Some of those with weaker cultivations fell to their knees as this pressure vanished and started to heave in great gulping breaths.

Before this, although they knew that Lin Ming was strong, what they felt towards him had been envy. It wasn't until now that they became deeply aware just how great the disparity in strength was between them.

Just the demon phantom that appeared during a breakthrough of his boundary produced enough pressure to kill them all!

This giant gap made them understand how laughable their envy had been. This was the same as ants envying humanity. Although they lived in the same world there was simply no comparison between them, thus envy was meaningless.

To put it bluntly, they didn't possess the qualifications.

After the giant demon phantom vanished, the skies returned to calmness. Even in the distance, there were several clouds fluttering about, as if nothing had ever occurred.

"He broke through. Upper Empyrean..."

A True Divinity level Elder looked towards Lin Ming's courtyard from afar. As he felt the aura emitting from the small house Lin Ming was in, a complex light lit up his features.

"It seems that he wasn't an upper Empyrean before, but only a middle Empyrean... one that was infinitely close to becoming an upper Empyrean..."

As the Elder spoke, many young abyssals were left speechless. So it turned out that when he defeated Sheng Mei, he had only been a middle Empyrean…

So if he were to cultivate to the limits of an Empyrean, what then?

At this time, in Sheng Mei's training chambers, Deep Child was looking towards the house Lin Ming was in, his gaze seeming to pierce through the layers of barriers.

"This fellow! His origin is too inexplicable!"

Deep Child's face darkened. It was impossible to tell what he was thinking.

Beside him, Sheng Mei remained silent. The information that Deep Child had told her about the 33 Heavens left her feeling a bit disheartened. Although she didn't think it was possible, she always held onto a faint hope for all these years that the seeds of hope she had taken a risk to leave behind in the past might bring about a miracle.

As for this Ancient Eon Sect Elder that appeared out of nowhere, Sheng Mei only felt some concern and regret for him because of the strange intuition that tickled at her mind. Yet, she didn't think too much of him.

Although she hoped that Lin Ming would become stronger, and perhaps become a destabilizing factor in the end of the world, she also understood that no matter how strong he became, it would be impossible for him to change anything. Because the true master manipulating things behind the scenes was a nearly invincible existence…

Deep Child remained silent for a long time. Then, he turned and looked at Sheng Mei.

“Junior-apprentice Sister, remember the orders given to you. You should know the price of disobedience!”

Sheng Mei remained silent as before. Deep Child smiled and turned into a dim ray of light that vanished from the room.

In the darkness, only the Laws danced in the air, with nothing left behind…

MW Chapter 2133

Chapter 2133 – Secret of the Demon God's Tomb

…

…

…

After Lin Ming broke through to the upper Empyrean realm, events quieted down. He stayed in his seclusion chamber all day and focused on studying the black book of death.

Because he now possessed the systemic cultivation method of the black book of death, all of his comprehensions of the Death Laws and other accumulations suddenly experienced a dramatic explosion in a short few months.

Lin Ming's Holy Scripture Laws progressed at an unbelievable pace, and with it, world-shaking changes occurred in his body.

The inner universe of his body became increasingly perfect and the strength of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace also became much more concise and profound.

Now, because Lin Ming had experienced 7000 years of suffering and reincarnation, in just the understandings of the Holy Scripture Laws, he even surpassed Sheng Mei.

It was only because of cultivation time that he was far inferior to Sheng Mei when it came to cultivating the Holy Scripture Laws to a deeper realm and also being able to apply them in actual use with ease.

Like this, the Dark Abyss finally welcomed the day upon which the Demon God's Tomb opened.

The Demon God's Tomb was located within the 18th layer of the Dark Abyss. Although it was called a tomb, the truth was that it was an amazingly broad world with complex environments and countless dangers.

Lin Ming rode Deep King Road's bone boat on the path leading to the Demon God's Tomb. Along the way, Deep King Road distributed jade slips concerning the Demon God's Tomb which introduced detailed rules, approximate travel routes, and even information on the situation about the Abyssal Shrine. All of this was valuable information.

Lin Ming had obtained a great deal of information about the Demon God's Tomb from the memories of the Demon Association Elder and was mentally prepared for anything. But as he read through this jade slip, he was inexplicably shocked.

This was because the jade slip contained information on not only the Demon God's Tomb but also secrets of the Dark Abyss, including even some historical recordings of the universe that extended past 100 billion years...

According to this jade slip, the Demon God's Tomb was the most ancient mystic realm in existence, whether it was in the Dark Abyss or the 33 Heavens.

It had existed for time immemorial. For other mystic realms it was already extraordinary if they had existed 10 billion years ago – in fact, they could even be called the oldest mystic realms of the 33 Heavens.

But, the period of time of which the Demon God's Tomb existed was actually measured in 100 billion years!

There was even a possibility that it existed 150 billion years ago, or even 200 billion years ago.

The Demon God's Tomb was a world left behind from the previous universe.

Lin Ming was aware that in the vast cosmos, everything, whether it was flowers and birds, beasts and insects, celestial bodies or even great worlds, everything had life.

But even the vast universe of the 33 Heavens had a lifespan, and there would come a day when it eventually collapsed and was destroyed. This was called the Shattering.

After the Shattering occurred, the era of a new universe would arrive.

Within this new universe, new things would evolve out of it, new lives, new races, a new martial arts civilization… this was the samsara of a universe.

It was now believed that the current vast universe of the 33 Heavens had been born 100 billion years ago.

And it was only tens of billions of years ago that the ancient races were slowly born. Their martial arts civilization developed rapidly and reached a golden age of prosperity. Gradually, they spread through the entire 33 Heavens, and that time was the zenith of all life in the 33 Heavens.

But according to this jade slip, before the universe of the 33 Heavens was born, there was another vast universe, and this universe had 18 layers.

The original residents of this universe called themselves the demons. And, their universe was also called the demon universe.

They were bloodthirsty and loved slaughter. They recklessly engaged in war, and they also flourished and had their own mighty martial arts civilization.

But, they were also well aware that there would come a day when their universe would collapse upon itself and be destroyed.

When the 18 layers of the demon universe were destroyed, there wouldn’t be a single demon lucky enough to survive. This sense of approaching death was like a sharp sword that hung above their heads.

But 150 billion years ago, or perhaps even longer ago, a peerless powerhouse was born within the demon race. This character was far too powerful. According to the records of the jade slip, there was no one that could compare to him in the past and he remained unprecedented in the future. He was the most powerful existence to ever exist, and even the Asura Road Master couldn’t compare with him.

He was the god of the demon race. He created an independent universe that could exist side-by-side with the 18 layered demon universe. This independent universe contained transcendent Laws and was equally as stable as the 18 layered demon universe.

Not just that, but he had taken 18 lesser world seeds and used them to recklessly absorb the strength of the universe from the 18 layered demon universe. He wanted to use the Demon God’s Tomb as the foundation to create a copy of the 18 layered demon universe.

This god of the demons was called the Demon God.

The universe he established was called the Demon God Universe.

The Demon God’s original intention when he formed the Demon God Universe was to create a refuge against the Shattering.

But even the Demon God and the great world he created were unable to resist the Laws of Annihilation of the Shattering.

Thus, at the Demon God’s request, all the super powerhouses of the demon race would have to enter the Demon God Universe before they died and leave their bodies within, evolving into something else.

After they died, the energy within their bodies would fuse into the boundaries and space of the Demon God Universe, constantly reinforcing it.

The Laws that dissipated from their bodies would also be incorporated into the Laws of the Demon God Universe, making them constantly stronger and more perfect in order to resist the impact of Laws that would arrive with the destruction of the 18 layered demon universe.

Like this, through billions upon billions of years, more and more super demons died in the Demon God Universe. That was a true graveyard of countless demons. In addition to its creator being called the Demon God, the Demon God Universe was eventually called the Demon God's Tomb.

The Demon God's Tomb could be called a cornerstone forged from the flesh and blood and souls of countless ancient demons. It was the foundation upon which its world stood!

The Demon God's Tomb grew increasingly strong and stable. And then, the Shattering descended.

In the final hundred years, in order to have the Demon God's Tomb achieve the peak of strength, the demon race began to uphold a rule of sacrifice.

Throughout the entire 18 layered demon universe, vast batches of low level demons were killed and their blood was used to water the world.

As for the remaining higher demons, they entered the Demon God's Tomb. And in their final moments, they used their strength and joined forces with the Demon God's Tomb to resist the Shattering.

They succeeded.

In the final moments of the Shattering, over 90% of the higher demons were unable to withstand the impact of the Laws of the heavens and earth and died. The demon strength and demon Laws in their bodies were also gathered into the Demon God's Tomb where they became a part of it.

As for the remaining higher demons, those that were fortunate enough to survive were able to rest and restore their strength in the Demo God's Tomb.

The 18 secondary world seeds were also bred by them one at a time, finally forming the 18 layered Dark Abyss.

The surviving members of the demon race continued onward and became the abyssal demons.

The demons could be called a single race, but in truth, after experiencing an incomparably long period of evolution, the countless branches that extended outwards made them hundreds and thousands of times more complicated and diverse than the ancient races.

There were low level abyssals, higher abyssals, unintelligent abyssals, wise abyssals, all these different sub-races numbered in the tens of thousands.

Because they came from the previous universal era, they already had the accumulations of a martial arts universe. Thus, the strength of the Dark Abyss was incomparably formidable.

Due to this they certainly weren't willing to resign themselves to being frogs that resided in the well of the Dark Abyss.

The truth was that in the past, when the Demon God created the Demon God's Tomb, he had already thought of this.

The demon race, after passing the great Shattering, could rule the new universe. All they had to do was exterminate the indigenous inhabitants of the new universe, thus taking control of it.

However, after the great Shattering occurred, although the Demon God's Tomb was able to maintain itself, it was still sent flying away like weeds in the wind by the raging energy. In the boundless chaos that came from the destruction of the universe, they became lost.

The Dark Abyss was like a super battleship of the demon race. They struggled to push this battleship forwards, traversing through the boundless chaos until they finally found the newly born universe of the 33 Heavens.

They broke past the God Lamenting Wall of the 33 Heavens.

This also set the stage for the great war 10 billion years when the Dark Abyss fought against the ancient races of the 33 Heavens.

The process of this war was not recorded in the jade slip.

However, Lin Ming could approximate that this war was likely the most brutal and frigid war that the 33 Heavens had ever experienced.

It was unknown how many ancient proud elites of heaven died in battle, how many ancient God Kings perished.

The participants of this war included the Asura Road Master, Immortal Sovereign, the one that seemed like Sheng Mei's previous life, and all sorts of unknown and confusing characters that Lin Ming didn't know of…

They had died on the battlefield, or perhaps they had gone missing, or perhaps no one knew what happened to them…

In the end, the intelligent beings of the 33 Heavens won. The price paid was the demise of the ancient races as well as the downfall of their glorious martial arts civilization.

Over half of the 33 Heavens was destroyed, becoming death zones and wilderness…

MW Chapter 2134

Chapter 2134 – Great Flood Crown Prince

…

…

…

The giant bone boat continued to break through the void like a lightning bolt.

In the 18 layers of the Dark Abyss, the Laws, the energies, everything was flooded with the wild aura of ancient times. This was true ancient times, a time that surpassed ten billion years and even a hundred billion years…

Lin Ming stood at the bow of the bone boat, looking down at the wild earth below him.

Those that lived in the 33 Heavens were enemies of the abyssal demons; this was destiny.

The abyssals' ancient Demon God had used a heaven-defying method to find a road for the demon race whose destiny had been exhausted, and whose fate should have been to perish in the great Shattering that ended their universe. Now, after the birth of the new universe, they were doomed to fight a life and death war with each other.

For the 33 Heavens, abyssals were intruders and destroyers.

But to the abyssals, the 33 Heavens were trapped in a cage with a wild beast, and for a beast to eat the meat in front of them was perfectly natural and justified.

To discuss the rights and wrongs of this war was no longer meaningful. The only meaning to this war was… to completely annihilate the opponent!

As the bone boat flew through the 18th layer for 10 days, he finally saw vast wild plains appear at the end of his field of vision. And on one side of the plains was a giant cliff that seemed as if it had been cut out by the great axe of a divine god. Beyond this cliff was nothing but the endless starry skies!

This was the entrance to the Demon God's Tomb. The Demon God's Tomb was located in the center of the abyss' 18th layer, and its entrance was this massive maw that led deeper into the world.

Beneath the earth lay the starry space.

And at this time, Lin Ming could see dark purple fortresses floating above the distant plains.

These fortresses resembled giant jellyfish. They floated hundreds of thousands of feet above the ground, with hundreds of tentacles that fell down to the earth.

“Those are the flying fortresses of the Great Flood Demon Kingdom. It looks like those fellows arrived earlier than we did.”

The one who spoke was Deep King Road’s Elder Deep Epoch. As he gazed outwards, there was a thoughtful light in his eyes.

“Great Flood Demon Kingdom…”

Lin Ming muttered to himself. The abyss had six great influences, and these influences had split into two groups of three that then joined with smaller influences to form an alliance.

These two alliances respectively took Deep King Road and the Great Flood Demon Kingdom as their heads; each was opposed to the other.

If this were the abyss’ 17th layer, then they could give face to each other and live peacefully alongside one another, occasionally even cooperating on the surface.

But in the Demon God’s Tomb, if these two hostile forces met then there would only be a single outcome – kill!

Because the Demon God’s Tomb contained many lucky chances and advantages.

One of the most desired aspects of the Demon God’s Tomb was a type of unique energy that existed there. The essence of this energy was spread down from the previous universe, and was the purified energy of demons that had existed 100 billion years ago.

This demon energy had once been in the bodies of peerless Demon Kings that existed 100 billion years ago.

This energy had been carefully refined and purified by these Demon Kings, and they even fused in their own lifetime’s worth of knowledge and the essence of the endless Laws they understood.

These energies had been accumulated over billions upon billions of years, constantly fusing and brewing in the Demon God’s Tomb. In terms of quality it reached inconceivable heights, and in the outside world just a single wisp would be considered a supreme treasure.

The abyssals called it – the power of demon gods.

When an abyssal entered the Demon God's Tomb, their most important task was to refine this power of demon gods.

The power of demon gods had a spiritual intelligence of its own. When enough gathered, it would temporarily manifest on the surface of an abyssal in the form of a tattoo. Every abyssal would develop different tattoos, but the images they formed were all shared a similar design; the pattern of a fierce demon.

This design was called a totem by the abyssal demons.

Nether, Evil, Deep, Eon, Flood, Famine, the reason these six super abyssals were called 'totem level abyssals' was because of the totem of the power of demon gods.

In the Dark Abyss, this sort of totem was considered the symbol of a powerhouse at the limit of True Divinity, or even one that had stepped Beyond Divinity.

When an abyssal entered the Demon God's Tomb, having a greater number of totems appear on their body represented that they absorbed more of the power of demon gods, and thus their cultivation had also risen higher.

After this abyssal left the Demon God's Tomb, these totems would slowly fuse into their body and vanish from sight. The totems would subtly transform into true strength, giving them astonishing benefits.

All abyssals that entered the Demon God’s Tomb hoped to obtain more power of demon gods from within.

Because there was a limit to the speed at which abyssals could absorb the power of demon gods, and because they wanted to obtain more, they chose another method; that was to kill other abyssals and steal away the power of demon gods that they had already absorbed.

This was a kind of shortcut.

This also meant that after entering the Demon God’s Tomb, there was doomed to be a great slaughterfest!

But besides the power of demon gods, there were also many inheritances and treasures left behind in the Demon God’s Tomb by ancient peerless Demon Kings.

To the abyssals, all of these things were a tremendous fortune and lucky chance!

Not just that, but because the Demon God’s Tomb was nourished by the incomparably pure power of demon gods, all kinds of miraculous medicines would be bred, as well as strange and precious beasts, heavenly materials, and all sorts of lucky chances. If one managed to somehow pick up a world-shocking treasure, it wouldn’t be strange at all.

Treasures, the power of demon gods, inheritances, and even the final qualifications for the test of the abyssal ritual, all of this combined together meant that there was inevitably a fight to the death!

“You’re about to go down shortly. After entering the Demon God’s Tomb, there is no need to show mercy to any abyssal from the Flood Alliance that you see. Just kill them off.”

Elder Deep Epoch coldly said. The Flood Alliance he referred to was the alliance organized by the Great Flood Demon Kingdom.

“As for the abyssals in our Deep Alliance, if you encounter each other than do not kill the other party, otherwise you will have to pay a corresponding price.”

As Elder Deep Epoch spoke these second words, warning flashed in his eyes.

The Deep Alliance didn’t exist in just name and word alone. When the numerous abyssals left for the Demon God’s Tomb they had already formed a vow through a Deep King Contract. If those in the same alliance slaughtered each other then they would be punished by the Deep King Contract.

However, this so-called Deep King Contract in truth couldn’t be considered too well devised, and the punishments were also bearable to an extent.

Thus, if one truly came across world-shocking lucky chances, then even abyssals in the same alliance could rely on each other. One had to consider whether or not those lucky chances were worth paying the cost of the penalty.

Thus, all members of the Deep Alliance that entered the Demon God's Tomb this time had varying thoughts in mind. All of them knew the unspoken rules of the alliance – if they encountered the hostile alliance then they would first work together to eliminate the forces of this hostile alliance. Then, they would consider how the benefits would be distributed internally. If they could come to a peaceful resolution then that would be for the best.

Otherwise, everything would be decided by force.

At this time the giant bone boat slowly descended.

The Deep Alliance's station was separated from the Flood Alliance's station by a hundred miles. Each side looked at the other as they swung about in the air.

Several hours later, both sides sent out their leading Elders as well as the numerous higher abyssals that would enter the Demon God's Tomb. They arrived at the cliff in the wilderness and the endless starry skies located deep underground.

Within the crowd of people, Lin Ming silently judged the abyssals from the Flood Alliance.

If Lin Ming didn't consider himself, then the Flood Alliance had brought 12 True Divinity abyssals here, the same number that the Deep Alliance had brought.

These 12 abyssals were clearly the elite forces of the Flood Alliance!

At the front of these 12 abyssals stood a towering abyssal in purple armor. He had a human face and could even be considered extremely handsome. However, his entire body was covered in lizard scales and he had a thick tail extending from behind.

This human-faced abyssal was the current Crown Prince of the Great Flood Demon Kingdom.

"Middle True Divinity level..."

Lin Ming instantly thought as he looked at this Great Flood Crown Prince. However, he felt that there actually wasn't any good reference value for knowing this Crown Prince's cultivation level.

He could feel a dangerous aura from this Great Flood Crown Prince's body. It was clear that this person's strength was far more horrifying than what he estimated.

"Hehe, Ninth Elder is quite perceptive."

A light voice suddenly sounded out near Lin Ming's ears. He turned and saw that the one speaking was Deep Child.

Lin Ming felt his heart turn cold. His minor mental thoughts hadn't appeared on his face and yet had been realized by this Deep Child.

Lin Ming remained quiet. He had always been wary of this Deep Child. In these past days he often saw Deep Child together with Sheng Mei, and he could also feel a dangerous aura coming from Deep Child. In fact, this aura was even somewhat heavier than the Great Flood Crown Prince's…

"Rest easy." Deep Child chuckled. He turned his head, no longer looking at Lin Ming. "If you are compared against this Great Flood Crown Prince, then I think the current you should try to avoid him as much as possible…"

Deep Child passed out this advice and them smiled as he walked towards the Great Flood Crown Prince. "Crown Prince Flood, I haven't seen you in such a long time!" Deep Child's rich and magnetic voice echoed through the air.

MW Chapter 2135

Chapter 2135 – Entering the Demon God’s Tomb

…

…

…

Deep Child and the Great Flood Crown Prince were old acquaintances. After they met, they exchanged some polite greetings and small talk. Although everyone knew they were just spouting empty wind, whether it was Deep Child or the Great Flood Crown Prince, their performance was perfectly on point, as if they truly were good friends.

At this time, more and more abyssals began to gather at the entrance of the Demon God’s Tomb. Besides the two great alliances, there were also many small influences trying to survive in the seams who also caught up.

Deep King Road and the Great Flood Demon Kingdom had especially left behind a small portion of the spots for these influences, and didn’t completely eliminate them from entering.

To share some of the benefits, this was how a true ruler survived.

And at this time the Demon God’s Tomb finally began to open.

From all around the quiet wilderness, energy began to stir, turning chaotic. Icy storms of energy emerged from the void, sweeping through the world.

The groups of Elders sent by the large sects stood around like towering mountain peaks, their eyes electric as they looked at the void.

When the storm was at its zenith, they lifted their hands up together and summoned six thick totem poles. These totem poles were engraved with images of demons; the totem poles were passed down from ancient times and were the easiest and most convenient method to open the Demon God’s Tomb. In fact, these six totem poles were the keys required to open the Demon God’s Tomb.

The six totem poles flew into the dark starry space, forming a hexagonal star design. With this star design the starry space began to ripple like waves in a stormy sea, distorting. Gradually from within the swirl of stars, a tear split open and dazzling black light gushed outwards.

This black light seemed like the source of all darkness. Profound and ancient, it fell down like a roiling black sea, shrouding the numerous powerhouses of the wilderness within.

For a time, Lin Ming felt his spatial ring violently shake, as if something were about to howl out!

He knew that this was the response of the Book of Eon.

When the Demon God's Tomb was about to open, the strength of the Book of Eon connected with the power of the world, nearly breaking Lin Ming's spatial ring to pieces.

This was why it was impossible to hide the ceremonial rites book, and why when everyone entered the Demon God's Tomb it would be perfectly clear how many books there were and whose hands they were in!

In order to prevent his spatial ring exploding, Lin Ming took out the Book of Eon.

Woosh!

A forlorn energy shot out from the Book of Eon, blasting towards the dark and raging skies, shooting into the vortex of energy and fusing together with it!

And at this time, from not too far away from Lin Ming, two more divine lights shot into the skies!

These two divine lights naturally came from two other ceremonial rites books.

Lin Ming already knew that these two books were the Book of Nether and the Book of Evil.

The Book of Evil was in Sheng Mei’s hands, and ‘Evil’ was the ruler of the Demon Association.

Lin Ming once heard some rumors that Evil was still alive somewhere in the world, but it was only afterwards that he learned that these rumors were purposefully spread out by the Demon Association. Evil had truly died, but he didn’t die in the great war 10 billion years ago when the Dark Abyss fought with the 33 Heavens.

However, after that, Evil had been injured and its life essence slowly faded away until it perished.

The Demon Association intentionally hid this information behind a screen of rumors and fog in order to consolidate their own status.

The Book of Evil was in Sheng Mei’s hands but the Book of Nether was in the hands of the Great Flood Demon Kingdom. From this, one could see the feud between the six totem level influences; they each took the books of other sects to enter the Demon God’s Tomb.

The six ceremonial rites books had a mysterious connection with the world within the Demon God's Tomb.

Abyssals that held a book of ceremonial rites would obtain an advantage. That was that the person who held one could absorb the power of demon gods at twice the effectiveness and half the effort!

This was also a reason why abyssals who held onto a book of ceremonial rites would be hated and targeted by all.

Without grasping true strength, to hold a ceremonial rites book was no different from seeking death.

Thus, when the Book of Eon in Lin Ming's hand began to bloom with divine light, all of the abyssals in the Flood Alliance looked towards Lin Ming.

They had long since become aware that Sheng Mei had the Book of Evil, thus they didn't find it strange at all. But, Lin Ming's Book of Eon was information that had only been recently spread out. Although everyone knew that another ceremonial rites book appeared in the Deep Alliance, they thought that this newly appeared book should be in the hands of Deep Child.

But, it was in Lin Ming's hands.

The Great Flood Crown Prince looked at Deep Child, a smile touching on his face. “Brother Deep Child, you’re more humble than you appear. You actually gave two ceremonial rites books to your junior-apprentice brother and junior-apprentice sister. What, are you lacking the courage to take a ceremonial rites book into the Demon God’s Tomb? Or, could it be said that this is only a smokescreen that you sent out, and after you enter the Demon God’s Tomb the book of ceremonial rites will be handed to you and this fellow will only be made into your shield?”

The Great Flood Crown Prince pointed at Lin Ming, a glint of ridicule in his eyes.

Deep Child laughed with confidence, “Treasures are for those who are able to hold onto them. Although my cultivation is a bit higher, it is only because I have been training for longer, so, my talent can only be considered decent at most. I actually cannot compare to my Deep King Road’s Holy Demoness nor can I compare to the Ancient Eon Sect’s Ninth Elder. Since my talent is inferior to others’, it isn’t strange if I give way to them!”

Deep Child’s words were all naturally spoken and caused the surrounding abyssals to be bewildered.

They all knew about Deep Child’s talent and it was rumored that he had incredible hidden depths; his true strength was terrifying.

The Holy Demoness was understandable. She had been famous for a long time, but Deep Child actually spoke honestly and said that he was inferior to this obscure Ninth Elder of the Ancient Eon Sect…

Thinking like this, many abyssals secretly paid attention to Lin Ming, all of them with different thoughts in mind. Some of them believed Deep Child's words and were wary of him, but some of them saw Lin Ming's upper Empyrean cultivation and killing intent started to flash in their eyes.

Lin Ming openly greeted all the gazes cast towards him. Deep Child's words had pushed him directly onto the crest of the wind and waves.

However, Lin Ming knew that even if he didn't say anything, he would still end up here because the Book of Eon was in his hands.

Compared to Sheng Mei who had accumulated fame and renown over all these years, it was far easier for Lin Ming to become the target of others!

And at this time in the endless starry skies of the wilderness, after the six totem poles absorbed the strength from the three ceremonial rites books, they began to hum and shake!

This shaking became increasingly fierce, until even the wild plains that everyone stood on began to tremble.

Large chunks of rock cracked open from the plains, rolling upwards as they were sucked into the endless starry skies.

More and more black light rose up all around the totem poles, filled with infinite mystical meanings. Trillions of Law runes floated within. With a loud cracking sound, space collapsed and a profound and infinite world slowly presented itself in the eyes of the abyssals present!

This world was the mysterious and ancient Demon God's Tomb.

In order to open the Demon God's Tomb, one first had to have the qualifications to enter it.

In the past when the demon race overcame the great Shattering and established the Dark Abyss, the Demon God's Tomb became the smelting trial for the peerless children of heaven amongst the abyssals.

This mystical land could be called the reason for which countless powerhouses were born amongst the abyssals during all these years, the reason they were able to stand above the 33 Heavens in strength!

For all these years, at least 90% of the True Divinity level abyssals that were born in the Dark Abyss had entered the Demon God's Tomb when they were at the Empyrean level.

During a trip into the Demon God's Tomb, many Empyrean level abyssals would perish. But those that survived would soar into the skies.

Sometimes the Demon God's Tomb wouldn't open for 600-700 million years, and this would cause the number of True Divinities in the Dark Abyss to rapidly drop. From this alone, one could see the heaven-defying cultivation effects of the Demon God's Tomb!

This valuable pressure naturally couldn't be wasted on the bodies of mediocre trash. Thus, before entering the Demon God's Tomb, these rippling black lights were the first test that those who entered faced.

The black light contained a pure demon energy. Only those with extraordinary talent, a solid foundation, and a tremendous amount of demonic energy within their bodies could cause this demon energy to resonate with them and finally enter.

As for those abyssals with lower levels of talent, they would be flushed out by the impact of this demon energy.

The surging demon energy was like a massive tide of the heavens and earth that swelled outwards. The wilderness shook, and for a time the entire underground starry skies were obscured.

Many Empyrean level abyssals stood in front of this tide and profoundly felt just how small they were. Compared to the countless ancient Demon Kings buried with the Demon God's Tomb, they were insignificant.

“Let’s enter!”

Deep Child’s voice spread over the Deep Alliance. Many abyssals from the Deep Alliance grit their teeth, their bodies turning into beams of light that flew towards those horrifying waves of energy.

MW Chapter 2136

Chapter 2136 – The First Kills

…

…

…

Weng! Weng! Weng!

Energy vibrated. The abyssals that flew into the tide weren't devoured or torn apart by the terrifying energy. Rather, they resonated with the demon energy. The black light flowed into their bodies and flowed back out, forming natural channels around them.

The abyssals passed through these channels and into the Demon God's Tomb.

Then, more and more abyssals flew into the energy tide.

The more solid one’s foundation, the more demon energy an abyssal possessed, the more the power of the Demon God’s Tomb would resonate with them.

Lin Ming also flew into the tide of energy. The appearance of his figure immediately drew the attention of many abyssals.

Lin Ming wasn’t particularly fast. But, when he submerged into the crazily surging demon energy, the power of demons all around him was drawn towards him as if he were a true Demon King and the power of demons all over was groveling at his feet, utterly subservient to him.

Seeing this scene, many abyssals were startled. This was a natural reaction brought about by one’s strength without a need to think about it.

Whoosh!

Lin Ming vanished into the tide of energy. He only felt an irresistible suction force released from the black light before him, pulling him forwards at an ever-accelerating pace.

All sorts of chaotic and disorderly images flashed through Lin Ming’s mind, as if a torrent of time was rapidly flowing all around him. It seemed as if a mere flash of time passed and also seemed as if thousands upon thousands of years passed. Then, the chaos in Lin Ming’s mind suddenly vanished and he arrived in a strange and incredibly vast space.

"This is the Demon God's Tomb?"

Lin Ming muttered as he looked at his surroundings.

In his life, Lin Ming had entered far too many extraordinary mystic realms. But none of these mystic realms could compare with the Demon God's Tomb in terms of rank. Even the Asura Road was far worse than the Demon God's Tomb.

After all, the Asura Road was something that was only created by the Asura Road Master. As for the Demon God's Tomb, there were countless ancient demons buried here, and with their flesh and blood they had forged this world together!

The Demon God's Tomb space was broad and ancient. Looking up, one could still ephemeral and gorgeous stars suspended high overhead, tens of thousands of miles away.

Every star emitted tremendous waves of demon power, as if true demonic gods were slumbering within. The pressure was suffocating, like being pressed down and caged to the floor, deep enough to shake the heart with fear.

"Mm, these stars..."

Lin Ming suddenly discovered something unusual about this land. In truth, when Lin Ming was in the wilderness, he found it weird that the starry space was buried beneath the ground, and this starry space also contained a massive number of stars. It seemed extremely out of place.

It was only when Lin Ming entered the Demon God's Tomb himself that he discovered the truth. These incredibly gorgeous and multi-colored stars were in truth demon relics!

When peerless Demon Kings died, they would leave behind their own demon relics, just like the demon relic that Lin Ming had obtained in the Asura Road's final trial.

The countless demon relics in the skies were left behind by the super demons of ancient times. They had existed for over 100 billion years and still sparkled brightly in the vault of the heavens.

As they connected together in mysterious ways, they actually formed a terrifying array formation!

This array formation wrapped around the entirety of the Demon God's Tomb. It was hard to imagine just what degree of formidability it had reached.

By this time, it wasn't just Lin Ming, but the other abyssal who entered the Demon God's Tomb also discovered these demon relics that had turned into stars in the skies.

Each and every demon relic contained the inexhaustible essence and strength of Laws from before the death of the super demons that formed them; they were unsurpassed supreme treasures.

This caused some abyssals to be unable to help flying towards these stars. Although they didn't have any hopes of obtaining these demon relics, observing them from a distance and perceiving the Laws that were concentrated inside was also good.

However, before they approached, a terrifying pressure fell down upon them like a torrential waterfall, causing those abyssals to crash down from the skies.

These abyssals weren't injured. But, because of the sudden impact of pressure their blood vitality tumbled in their bodies, causing their faces to whiten.

"How fierce... these ancient Demon Kings have been dead for countless years already and still have such pressure and presence. If they were alive, I simply cannot imagine what degree of strength they would reach."

An abyssal sighed deeply. With those other abyssals teaching them a lesson, these abyssals didn't try probing those demon relics anymore.

"Mm... hey, isn't that fellow the one from the Deep Alliance that has the Book of Eon?"

Some abyssals saw Lin Ming and their eyes lit up.

“It’s him!”

Those that spoke all had Empyrean level cultivations. They looked at Lin Ming with some dread but couldn’t hide the avarice in their eyes.

They weren’t part of the Deep Alliance but were from the Flood Alliance. They were Empyreans from small influences.

Lin Ming’s strength was a secret that only the abyssals of the Deep Alliance knew of. The flow of information had been blocked by Deep King Road and as for the small number of rumors that spread out, it was impossible for others to tell if they were true or fake. After all, seeing with one’s own eyes was always better than believing random hearsay.

These small influence Empyreans simply didn’t know what boundaries Lin Ming had reached. However, Deep Child had said that Lin Ming’s talent surpassed his own.

Even if Deep Child was lying, at the very least Lin Ming wouldn’t be weaker than they were.

“We shouldn’t be able to deal with him. Should we contact Elder Senior-apprentice Brother and have him join forces with us to kill him?”

An Empyrean abyssal said in a hushed voice. The elder senior-apprentice brother they spoke of was a True Divinity level abyssal.

"It's too early… everyone has just arrived at the Demon God's Tomb and no one has had time to gather the power of demon gods nor have they been able to pick up any lucky chances… as for the Book of Eon, I don't dare to take it, otherwise we will just draw a fatal disaster upon our own heads!"

"Let us wait for now and fatten up this fellow. When the timing is right, we will contact Elder Senior-apprentice Brother and attack him. There should be many good things on this fellow!"

Several Empyreans discussed with sound transmissions. But at this time, their eyes widened and all their hairs stood up!

A towering black abyssal had appeared in the middle of them like gods and ghosts.

This abyssal was Lin Ming, and as he looked at the three surrounding Empyrean level abyssals, a fierce smile lit up his face. He hadn't heard the sound transmissions of these three abyssals, but with his keen sense how could he not sense their hostility and killing intent?

Even if they were weaklings, as long as they were hostile to him Lin Ming didn't plan to let them off, regardless of whether the Demon God's Tomb had just opened and regardless of whether there were any advantages to doing so.

He would strangle all dangers while they were in the crib.

In the Seven Profound Valleys, this was the most important lesson that Ouyang Boyan had taught him.

"You..."

The abyssal that just started speaking felt his heart skip a beat. He could feel that as Lin Ming appeared, an invisible force field had locked down the area around them so that they couldn't even move!

Even his thoughts had slowed down to a standstill. Before he could distinguish what had occurred, he saw a black light flash towards them and his protective demon energy tear apart like paper.

Like this, three heads flew into the skies!

Blood spray upwards like a fountain.

Lin Ming grasped the Black Dragon Spear and drew a killing circle, instantly cutting down the three Empyrean level abyssals.

The cold spear point wasn't even tainted with a drop of blood. Lin Ming put away the Black Dragon Spear. These three dead Empyrean abyssals all had a cultivation that wasn't even as high as Lin Ming's, and the resulting massive difference in strength led to this overwhelming ending.

The abyssal demons were natural mortal enemies of the life forms of the 33 Heavens. Lin Ming had no intention of holding back or showing mercy, much less to these abyssals that had revealed killing intent towards him.

This venture into the Demon God's Tomb would inevitably become a grand feast of slaughter!

Peng! Peng! Peng!

Three headless corpses plopped to the ground and their blood splashed onto to the ancient wild earth. Then, a startling scene occurred.

This fresh blood was like water falling into a sea, quickly absorbed by the wild land.

Even the energies within the bodies of these three Empyreans was slowly being drawn out and submerged into the void, fusing together with the surrounding world.

Lin Ming even felt that these three corpses were slowly decaying.

Originally, the corpses of Empyrean level abyssals shouldn't decay even after several hundred thousand years. But now they were rotting away at a speed faster than a mortal's corpse would.

For this sort of situation to occur, it could only be because… their powerful blood vitality was being continuously sucked out.

After losing the power of one's blood vitality, the mortal body became nothing more than a rotten bag of skin.

"So things actually happen like this…"

Lin Ming faintly frowned. The abyssals that died in the Demon God's Tomb would have their strength rapidly sucked out. This caused Lin Ming to feel that there was an evil nature to the surrounding space.

The Demon God’s Tomb was like the maw of a giant wild beast. Out of all the abyssals that came here, over half would die. And the fates of those that died would be to have their bodies slowly absorbed by the world itself.

Such an ending left one’s back shivering with cold.

MW Chapter 2137

Chapter 2137 – Tracked

…

…

…

The terrain within the Demon God’s Tomb was extremely dangerous and cruel.

Some mountain peaks pierced into the skies, like great swords thrusting into the heavens.

Some places had cracked land, revealing fathomless black abysses.

In some other places one could see bones scattered all over the ground. These shattered bones were small and large and glittered like cracked black crystals.

Upon approaching these bones, one could feel a faint force field. In truth these bones had already been exhausted of their energies, and yet they still maintained a light force field that continued onwards, leaving one sighing with emotion.

Without a doubt, after the owners of these skeletons died, the energies in their bodies were similar to those Empyrean abyssals that had died, and had been absorbed by this world.

All that was left over were their broken bones and a light force field that lingered upon them. They would forever be buried here.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming felt something unusual.

Every time the Demon God's Tomb opened, countless proud abyssal elites would converge towards this land.

These abyssal elites could absorb the unimaginably pure energy that had been refined over 100 billion years in the Demon God's Tomb. But at the same time, over 80% of the abyssal elites would perish here.

The demon energy in their bodies and the strength of their blood vitality would be cleanly absorbed by this world.

Like this, energy went in and out, forming a particular balance that sent a chill down one’s spine.

This meant that the abyssals took the eliminated dead as fertilizer so that powerhouses could soar to even greater heights.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming sighed. The brutality and laws of the jungle that existed in the Dark Abyss weren’t as simple as that. Rather, they were the true laws of the jungle – laws where the strong ate the weak.

At this time, an amazing demon aura swiftly passed in front of him. A black ray of light flashed through the world, the intensity of the impact causing the earth to shake in waves.

From where the vibrations appeared in the void, the vague phantom of a fierce demon appeared in the black light. It slowly condensed, its demon energy gushing out into the world.

The demon roared, its voice echoing through the heavens and earth.

“The power of demon gods.”

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes. According to the jade slip, the power of demon gods had wandered about the Demon God's Tomb for over 100 billion years, slowly forming a spiritual wisdom of its own. If one could smash these energies apart, they could obtain their essence.

The power of demon gods was one of the most important lucky chances of the Demon God's Tomb. Many proud abyssal elites entered the Demon God's Tomb specifically for this reason.

Lin Ming stepped forwards and his body vanished in the sky. Facing this flying demon, he punched out with his fist.

Peng!

With a loud shattering sound, the demon cried out in misery before disintegrating into smoke and dust. It turned into a stream of black energy that began to dissipate into the world.

Lin Ming reached out a hand and slowly gathered this energy.

"It really is pure..."

Lin Ming was shocked. In fact, describing this power of demon gods with the word 'pure' really wasn't enough. Lin Ming had seen all sorts of lucky chances in his life, but solely in terms of the quality of energy found in mystic realms, nothing could compare with this power of demon gods in front of him.

This was because out of all the mystic realms that Lin Ming had seen in his life, even the one that existed the longest wasn't even a tenth of the age of the Demon God's Tomb.

The energy within the Demon God's Tomb had been purified and refined for all this time, like wine brewed from heavenly materials. After being fermented for 100 billion years it had become a peerless vintage.

Every abyssal that entered the Demon God's Tomb was a lover of such a wine, and the taste of it was difficult to put into words.

Lin Ming used his soul force to control the wisps of demon energy that gathered in his palm. He formed it into the phantom of a small demon, and this demon phantom seemed incredibly lifelike, as if it were alive.

Lin Ming clenched his fist tightly and directly absorbed this demon phantom.

In the next moment, a blurry mark appeared on his arm.

This mark was a faint demon tattoo; this was the so-called totem.

For every abyssal that entered the Demon God's Tomb, there would be a limit to the number of totems they could form from the power of demon gods.

Some could form eight, some could form ten, some could form 15. But, once they surpassed their limits this number wouldn't increase anymore.

The limiting number of totem tattoos that formed would depend on an individual's own martial talent and potential.

Of course, the more totem tattoos that one could form the better it would be. However, in truth, because the Demon God's Tomb was a land filled with frigid slaughter, the more totems one formed the more one became a delicious plump sheep in the eyes of others. For the weaker and smaller abyssals that entered this mystic realm, they were already thanking the heavens and earth if they could form three or four totems and survive to leave.

To them the totem limit wasn't too meaningful.

By this time, Lin Ming could see that at the ends of the horizon there seemed to be abyssal demons already beginning a scrambling massacre due to the struggle for the power of demon gods.

But this was only a small fight. Once more and more treasures appeared then the slaughter would escalate until the entire Demon God's Tomb turned into a bloody hell.

Lin Ming didn't pause here for long.

According to the jade slip he reviewed, the number of lucky chances was much smaller on the edges of the Demon God's Tomb, and the quality and density of the power of demon gods was also lower. The truly precious treasures were located deep in the Demon God's Tomb.

Of course, there were more dangers there too.

Lin Ming flew towards the depths of the Demon God's Tomb. Its space had an extremely great difference from that of the outside.

The Demon God's Tomb was a mysterious great world built to resist the great Shattering of the past universe. Here, the intensity of space and had been tempered for 100 billion years and flooded with the flesh and blood of countless Demon Kings, and had now reached a nearly indestructible state.

Even with Lin Ming's absolute strength and his comprehension of the Space Laws, he still couldn't freely utilize the power of space nor could he distort space.

And he definitely couldn't break through space and hasten his pace with great void shifts.

Thus, whether one was a True Divinity or Empyrean, they would have to honestly and simply fly. And because of the omnipresent force field, the speed of all abyssals was suppressed.

But although Lin Ming was only flying along and didn't pause much, the power of demon gods that he condensed was actually no less than that of other abyssals.

Lin Ming seemed to possess appeal to these demonic things.

Many abyssals would search in all directions for the power of demon gods, spending several hours before finding a little. As for absorbing it, there might even be conflict in doing that, because if other abyssals were there then there would be a battle to decide ownership of the power of demon gods.

However, Lin Ming only flew forwards and yet demonic spirits formed the power of demon gods and approached him on their own initiative.

In fact, they were not actually looking for Lin Ming, but for the Book of Eon that he carried with him.

This mysterious and ancient demon book possessed a strange aura and special energy fluctuations. In the Demon God's Tomb, the Book of Eon was like a bright light that attracted moths, or a fresh dewy flower that attracted honeybees, constantly drawing in demonic spirits condensed from the power of demon gods.

These demonic spirits weren't too strong. Lin Ming easily struck them down, and soon, over time, Lin Ming's first totem on his arm was already a third completed.

In forming totems, the further one went the more difficult it became. But, Lin Ming wasn't in a hurry. This opening of the Demon God's Tomb would continue for a long period of time. At the shortest it would be seven or eight years, and it might even go on for dozens or hundreds of years.

In the history of the Dark Abyss there were times when the Demon God's Tomb opened for one or two thousand years.

The longer the Demon God's Tomb was open, then the more time the abyssals that entered would have to seek out lucky chances and the power of demon gods. Thus when they emerged, they could also have large benefits.

But at the same time, there would be a longer period of slaughter so fewer abyssals would be able to walk out alive.

Lin Ming didn't look for trouble, but that didn't meant trouble wouldn't come knocking on his door.

Two days later, Lin Ming felt threads of light killing intent waft over his back like a cool spring breeze.

His thoughts stirred; an abyssal had targeted him!

His pace didn't slow down in the least but he did release his sense in all directions. However, what was amazing was that he didn't find who it was that was following him. This surprised him. It meant that this person who was hiding was at a level that surpassed his expectations.

"It shouldn't be the Great Flood Crown Prince..."

This thought immediately flashed through Lin Ming's mind and he calmed his mood. He began to fuse the soul force of his true self into his sense.

Lin Ming's true self contained the Eternal Soul, and the strength of his soul force wasn't something that common abyssals could compare with. And after investigating the situation, his thoughts stirred once more; it seemed things were different from what he had thought.

He fell into thought for a moment and then slowly changed directions, flying towards a far off direction of the Demon God's Tomb...

MW Chapter 2138

Chapter 2138 – A Sealed Battlefield

…

…

…

The ash gray wilderness of the Demon God's Tomb was filled with the pressure of a ubiquitous force field. And the further in one went, the more powerful this pressure became.

The ground here had reached an unimaginably hard degree.

The higher the level of a plane, the more stable the structure of the world was. If the Dark Abyss were compared to the 33 Heavens, the world structure was already at a step higher. But if compared to the Demon God's Tomb, then the Demon God's Tomb simply dwarfed all others.

In the middle of it, every rock, every inch of land, could be compared with divine iron. Upon entering the Demon God's Tomb, even if a martial artist didn't encounter any lucky chances, just digging out some ore would be enough to forge divine weapons.

Lin Ming crossed over a mountain as sharp as a sword. Across the mountain peak was a vast and deep canyon, an untamed land that seemed to have never seen strangers. Through the passage of countless years, a considerable amount of the power of demon gods had converged in this canyon.

The more power of demon gods there was, the more powerful a force field would be created. Lin Ming only needed to take a step in to feel this force field linger over his body, causing his breath to quicken and his movements to slow down a great deal.

Lin Ming could see a skeleton sitting in place on the canyon floor. This skeleton still maintained its complete shape, and its empty eye sockets seemed to be staring at him.

Lin Ming and this skeleton looked at each other. Then, a smile lit up Lin Ming's face.

At this time, a purple-black demonic spirit suddenly flew out from the skeleton. This demonic spirit was incredibly fast and it flew straight towards Lin Ming's forehead. From its stance, it seemed as if it wanted to break into Lin Ming's spiritual sea.

However, Lin Ming had already been prepared. He punched out his fist!

Peng!

A loud explosion filled the air. Lin Ming's fist contained the intricate principles of strength training's Flow like Silk and trillions of threads of the power of demons was condensed in it. The fierce vibrations sent the dark purple demonic spirit tumbling away!

The demonic spirit howled in pain. It seemed to discover that it wasn't Lin Ming's match and began to turn around to flee.

"Mm? It didn't die?"

Lin Ming was a little surprised. It seemed that this was an extremely high quality demonic spirit, and the power of demon gods within its body was also much purer.

Lin Ming took a step forwards and his speed exploded. He appeared in front of the demonic spirit as if he had teleported there and then slapped out with his palm.

Peng!

Energy recklessly blasted forward, shattering the demonic spirit into pieces!

Lin Ming reached out a hand and grasped all of the energy that was roiling through the air. Then, he gathered it and absorbed it into his body.

For a time, Lin Ming felt every pore over his body relax and open to swallow the power of the heavens and earth. This was an abnormally pleasant feeling, like a dehydrated wanderer who hadn't drunk anything for several days finally finding a clear spring and taking big mouthfuls of fresh water.

"This power of demon gods is truly wonderful. If I cultivate for a hundred years in here then that will be the same as cultivating for thousands of years outside. Once I accumulate enough energy, it won't be a problem for me to break into the True Divinity realm..."

In order to break into True Divinity, one first needed to accumulate enough energy and also solidify their foundation.

But in the world of the Demon God's Tomb, the energy was simply far too pure. After absorbing this energy it was far too easy to integrate into one's limbs and bones, acupoints and meridians; there just wasn't a need to refine it. Like this, there wouldn't be any problems with stabilizing one's foundation.

If one had to find a reason then it was because this world had already refined this energy for 100 billion years. If a martial artist could absorb the energy here, it would vastly decrease the amount of cultivation time they needed.

This was a shortcut to raise one’s cultivation.

Of course, the premise behind such a shortcut was that one’s comprehension of Laws could follow correspondingly. Otherwise if one’s cultivation rose but the Laws couldn’t follow the pace, then there wasn’t any meaning in doing so.

But in terms of the comprehension of Laws, Lin Ming had cultivated two of the highest Laws and also cultivated essence, energy, and divine. These sort of accomplishments couldn’t be simply described as just the standard of a True Divinity.

Lin Ming glanced at the totem on his arm. With the energy he absorbed just now, the totem on his arm went from being a third complete to half complete. From this, one could see how high quality this energy was.

Then at this time, Lin Ming’s voice suddenly turned icy cold. “Friends that have been following me from behind. You’ve followed me for so long, I think it’s about time that you come out!”

As he spoke he calmly turned around, his eyes locking onto a part of the void.

In that originally empty void, an energy force field slowly revealed itself. Within this force field was a large bronze bell.

Clang -

Clang -

The great bell thundered and grew larger. Two figures, one black and one white, flew out from it. From appearances, these two figures seemed like ghosts.

“You actually discovered us?”

The black figure said with surprise. His voice was ethereal and sharp, making one shudder.

These two abyssal demons had extremely strange appearances. They were short, even shorter than the average height of a human male. Their bodies were thin and emaciated and they were wrapped in billowing robes. One wore black robes and the other wore white robes.

These two abyssals were covered in a dim mist, just like the White and Black Impermanence of mortal tales, deities responsible for rewarding the good and punishing the bad.

“You two are the Demon Association’s Yin Yang Twin Ghosts?”

One of Lin Ming's eyebrows arched upwards. When he killed the Demon Association's Elder and read his memories, he had familiarized himself with the high level figures of the Demon Association.

These Yin Yang Twin Ghosts were high level Elders of the Demon Association. They were two brothers and their cultivations were at the lower True Divinity level. If they were alone then their strength wouldn't be considered much. But together, they could display a terrifying combat strength.

"You actually recognize us... hehe, hand over the Book of Eon and the power of demon gods you absorbed, and we will leave you be!"

The white-robed abyssal cackled.

Lin Ming chuckled. "Are you still spouting nonsense at a time like this? Just make your move already!"

Lin Ming directly drew out the Black Dragon Spear, his eyes shimmering with a brilliant fighting spirit. With the Book of Eon in his possession, he was sure to draw the hatred of others.

And these Yin Yang Twin Ghosts were the best indicator with which to test his current strength.

He had intentionally looked for a remote area to face his opponents, all in order to test just what level his strength had reached after opening the seventh palace of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and also breaking into the upper Empyrean realm.

"You are courting death!"

The Yin Yang Twin Ghosts sinisterly sneered. With a loud humming sound, the great bronze bell in front of them suddenly shivered and floated above their heads. It released a continuous force field that locked in the surrounding space.

And after this, the bell came falling down.

Lin Ming glanced around and shot his sense onto this bell. He hesitated for a moment, actually not trying to dodge the bell.

Clang!

With a loud rumble, the bell completely covered Lin Ming and the Yin Yang Twin Ghost within.

The space inside the bell was a circle 200 feet in diameter. To a True Divinity realm martial artist, 200 feet couldn't even be considered a distance at all. With Lin Ming and the

Yin Yang Twin Ghosts in such a tightly confined space, it was no different from hand to hand close-body combat.

Seeing Lin Ming not trying to avoid from start to finish, the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts were stunned.

They originally believed that Lin Ming might be a True Divinity level master. Otherwise, Deep Child wouldn't have given him such exaggerated praise and the Deep Alliance wouldn't have allowed him to take the Book of Eon into the Demon God's Tomb.

Against a True Divinity level master, while defeating them was easy, killing them was difficult. After all, if this other party discovered their presence and exhausted their skills to escape, it would take a good period of time to overtake them, not to mention that Lin Ming also had companions with him in the Demon God's Tomb.

If other abyssals of the Deep Alliance were drawn here then their plans to hunt down Lin Ming would fail.

Thus, they wanted to use the large bronze bell to trap Lin Ming within. If they sealed off their opponent's escape routes then it would make it much easier to kill him. They originally thought that Lin Ming would struggle and wouldn't let them cover him in the bell so easily. But, when they easily managed to achieve their goal, they actually felt something strange in their hearts.

And at this time, within the sealed space of the large bronze bell, Lin Ming was checking his surroundings, utterly composed.

This bronze bell was a high quality True Divinity spirit treasure. And with the force field covering the area, wanting to break out from within wouldn't be easy at all.

As for the ground beneath his feet, it was the land of the Demon God's Tomb, land as hard as divine iron.

In other words, once the bell fell down and sealed off the surrounding space, then not only would it be difficult for those inside to leave but it would also be difficult for those outside to enter… moreover, it would be impossible to find out what was occurring within.

This was a completely sealed off battlefield.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming smiled. For himself, this was a surpassingly good opportunity!

"What are you smiling about?" The Yin Yang Twin Ghosts frowned.

Lin Ming lazily shook his head, "Nothing, it's just that I… haven't come out for exercise for a long time so I'm a bit out of sorts. And you two… just gave me this perfect opportunity."

Lin Ming’s words left the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts perplexed. Just what did he mean by not coming out to exercise in a long time? Just who and what was this person before them?

MW Chapter 2139

Chapter 2139 – Lin Ming's Strength

…

…

…

Before the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts could react, a heavy mist suddenly erupted from Lin Ming's body. This mist carried with it a deep and powerful strength that proliferated through the air all around; this was Lin Ming's grandmist space.

The grandmist spread within the ancient bronze bell, completely sealing up the already sealed battlefield.

Immediately, the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts raised their guards. An upper Empyrean was surrounded by two True Divinities in a sealed space, but not only did he not panic but he even laid down a force field to block off the area; it seemed he wanted to fight some sort of final battle.

If such a person wasn't an idiot or crazy, then they were someone who had more than enough confidence in their own strength.

And, when recalling the fact that Deep King Road allowed Lin Ming to carry the Book of Eon into the Demon God's Tomb, the chances of Lin Ming being an idiot were near zero.

"How interesting. We are going to kill you, but it looks like you want to eat us up instead. Are you afraid that we are going to run away?"

"A mere upper Empyrean actually wants to contend with us two brothers..."

The Yin Yang Twin Ghosts cackled, their voices gloomy and evil. They spread out, standing on both sides of Lin Ming. And at this time Lin Ming was continuing to bolster his grandmist force field, blocking out this space.

Lin Ming's eyes swept over the arms beneath the voluminous robes of the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts. On each of their arms was a totem mark.

The Yin Yang Twin Ghosts' totem marks were actually not much dimmer than Lin Ming's was. Lin Ming possessed the Book of Eon so his speed in absorbing the power of demon gods should have been amongst the fastest of all, yet he wasn't able to surpass the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts. This meant that the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts had killed a great number of abyssals from the Deep Alliance before this.

Only by killing other abyssals and plundering their totems could one rapidly accumulate the power of demon gods.

“After killing them, my first totem mark should be able to reach perfection, and it might even go a little beyond that… unfortunately, the Book of Eon draws the hate of others too easily so now I must fight True Divinities. If I were able to delay this for a few days and allow them to gather more power of demon gods before I killed them, then my harvests would have been even greater…”

As Lin Ming was thinking this, the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts had already begun to rush towards him!

They were skilled in coordinating their attacks. The moment they moved, they had already blocked out all of Lin Ming’s angles of avoidance!

Facing Lin Ming, neither of them held back. Lin Ming’s actions of sealing away the battlefield once more had caused them to become wary of him.

The black and white light of abyssals flooded the battlefield.

The Yin Yang Twin Ghosts struck out with an extremely cunning attack trajectory and also attacked from two sides at once. For a normal abyssal this would have been difficult to fend off.

However, facing such an attack, Lin Ming only sneered.

In this instant Lin Ming's inner world opened and a raging and boundless energy wildly gushed out!

This sort of energy was drastically different from the demon energies within the Dark Abyss. That demonic abyssal energy was fierce and cold, filled with thick killing intent. But, this sort of energy was vast and broad, yet it didn't lose its sharp edge.

This was the power of divinity from the 33 Heavens, and also the strength from unifying true essence, spirit essence, and astral essence!

Ho - !

Like a dragon roaring out into the horizon, an incredible hum rang through the ancient bronze bell, wildly reverberating all around.

Lin Ming's true self rushed out from his demon avatar's inner world!

Like a treasure sword being unsheathed from a thousand years of dust, divine light recklessly shot out, nearly piercing through the ancient bronze bell.

“What!?”

The Yin Yang Twin Ghosts were panic-stricken. In an instant, Lin Ming had become two.

Moreover, what shocked them the most was that this Lin Ming no longer had the appearance of an abyssal, but rather had the appearance of someone of the ancient races, or even someone from the dark angel race!

From looks alone it was impossible for them to determine whether Lin Ming’s true self was an abyssal demon or not. But, the vast power of divinity exuding from Lin Ming’s true self allowed them to instantly confirm that this person who suddenly appeared was neither an abyssal nor someone from the ancient races.

Rather, he came from… the 33 Heavens!

Thinking of this possibility, the hearts of the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts quaked. Someone from the 33 Heavens, how could they appear in the Dark Abyss?

Could this be some sort of great plot?

Before they could respond, Lin Ming’s true self suddenly attacked!

Lin Ming raised his spear and thrust outwards. Spear light howled, seeming as if it could overturn the universe as it pierced towards the white-robed abyssal.

And at the same time, Lin Ming's demon avatar also attacked. He grabbed a thick bone spear and pounded down at the black-robed abyssal!

Without a need to hide his strength any longer, without a need to hide his Laws, in this moment, seven great stars from the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace suddenly appeared above Lin Ming's head. Endless starlight poured into the bodies of Lin Ming's true self and his demon avatar, causing their strength to rise to a new limit.

Bang!

The Yin Yang Twin Ghosts simply weren't able to resist the raging impact at all. The two of them miserably coughed as they were sent tumbling away.

Bang! Bang!

With two loud rings, the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts smashed into the ancient bronze bell, causing it to thunder out loud.

"What… what is going on!?"

The Yin Yang Twin Ghosts were bewildered. From this short glance, they faintly released that this person from the 33 Heavens who suddenly appeared had a cultivation inferior to that of a True Divinity, but, how could someone who hadn't reached True Divinity possess such a freakish level of strength?

One abyssal, one life form from the 33 Heavens, could they have been one body to begin with?

"Take away the bell!"

The black-robed abyssal shouted out loud. The situation had undergone heaven-shaking changes. They had already lost all control of what was occurring. This life form from the 33 Heavens had mixed itself into the Dark Abyss, and not just that but their strength was incredible and they obviously had dark intentions. This sort of important discovery needed to be reported!

"You want to escape? Keep on dreaming!"

Lin Ming's true self sneered. At this time, the inner world of Lin Ming's true self also opened.

Shua! Shua! Shua!

Three more figures flew out!

These were Lin Ming's avatars of essence, energy, and divine. Now that Lin Ming didn't need to hide his strength any longer he could finally go all-out!

Roar!

The cry of a dragon echoed from Lin Ming's inner world. The little black dragon that had been hiding in Lin Ming's inner world throughout his entire time in the Dark Abyss finally joined the fray!

Little Black had long since reached the limits of an Empyrean. Although its strength still fell short of that of a True Divinity, it could rely on its powerful vitality and potent body to act as a deterrent in battle.

Within the ancient bronze bell, even though Little Black had shrunk its body to an infinitesimally small portion of its original size, it still took up nearly half of the available space. It immediately became crowded inside!

Little Black was like a giant wall of meat. When combined with the grandmist space, it blocked the ancient bronze bell from opening.

Thick killing intent flashed in Lin Ming's eyes. He had planned from the very start to reveal all cards in his hands, because he could not allow a single one of these abyssals to leave.

He had to cut down the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts here, otherwise the consequences would be unimaginable!

When Lin Ming was at the middle Empyrean realm and hadn't yet opened the Twofold Dao Palace, he had used all means and had managed to slay a lower True Divinity. Now, in this sealed space with his strength greatly enhanced, it wouldn't be difficult for him to eliminate these two lower True Divinities.

"The power of Yin and Yang!"

Lin Ming's true self and his demon avatar moved together. Their four hands moved as one, drawing a primal chaos diagram with their hands. Endless power of divinity and demons rushed out from Lin Ming's true self and his demon avatar, fusing together to form a yin yang wheel.

This giant wheel sliced down onto the black-robed abyssal!

The black-robed abyssal was panic-stricken. At the same time, the white-robed abyssal was diverted by Little Black and the three avatars, completely unable to help.

The reason that the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts were known to be powerful was because the two brothers could coordinate without the slightest gap. But once they were split apart, their combat strength would drop precipitously.

When they faced Lin Ming it had been two against one, but now it had become two against six; the sudden change in disparity could be imagined!

The black-robed abyssal's complexion rapidly changed. He opened his lips and a small green fork came spinning out.

Countless evil spirits lingered atop this small fork. They emitted pained hisses and wails, causing the small fork to seem extremely fierce!

Facing this small fork, Lin Ming's true self and demon avatar simply disregarded it. They savagely pressed down the yin yang wheel.

Kacha!

With a loud explosive sound, the small green fork was sent flying away!

The yin yang wheel flew down without slowing. At the same time, the faint phantom of a black Phantom appeared behind the wheel.

In this crucial life or death moment, the black-robed abyssal wildly roared. He summoned all the demon power in his body and smashed out his fist onto the yin yang wheel.

In the next moment, a wild vortex of energy swirled through the entire sealed space. Beneath Lin Ming’s suppression, the explosive energy didn’t sweep outwards so that the ancient bronze bell wouldn’t break.

Rather, these energies all swept towards the black-robed abyssal.

The black-robed abyssal spat out a mouthful of black blood as he was sent flying away!

MW Chapter 2140

Chapter 2140 – Executing the Twin Ghosts

…

…

…

Peng!

The black-robed abyssal smashed the walls of the ancient bronze bell. The ancient bronze bell had already started to deform and the white-robed abyssal wanted take it back. However, because of the heavy grandmist force field pressing against the ancient bell and with Lin Ming's three avatars diverting the white-robed abyssal, the white-robed abyssal was finding this impossibly difficult to do.

Seeing the black-robed abyssal about to die, the white-robed abyssal emitted a shrill, ear-piercing scream.

This scream was like the cry of a demented ghost. As the white-robed abyssal cried, blood red marks began to appear on his face. These marks burned like flames and grew like weeds, rapidly spreading all over the white-robed abyssal's body.

In that moment, the white-robed abyssal had burned his blood essence.

And at the same time, the black-robed abyssal was also pushed to the edge by Lin Ming. His entire body shook and blood red marks began to spread on his face too; he was also trying to burn his blood essence.

Two True Divinity level abyssals were burning their blood essence together. When added to their joint attacks, their combat strength would rise to yet another level.

Weng –

The white-robed abyssal summoned forth a bone pagoda. This bone pagoda was only an inch tall, but when it appeared it began to wildly absorb the massive amount of blood vitality from the white-robed abyssal's blood marks and then recklessly grew.

As for the black-robed abyssal, he brought out a ghost streamer. This ghost streamer whipped against the wind as trillions of malicious spirits rushed out from it. These spirits emitted wails that stung the ears as they sank into the bone pagoda.

The bone pagoda rapidly grew. With a loud rumbling sound, it rose higher and higher until it smashed into the top of the ancient bronze bell, like a pillar that supported it from within. And even then, the bone pagoda continued to grow, as if it would lift up the bronze bell at any moment!

Peng! Peng! Peng!

The ground beneath the bone pagoda started to crack apart. As for Lin Ming's grandmist force field, as it was impacted by this tremendous strength it began to wobble. The overlapped layers of grandmist energy weren't stable to begin with and now it seemed as if the entire force field would collapse.

Seeing this, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light. His demon avatar rushed out and smashed a fist against the bone pagoda.

Kacha!

The bone pagoda had a hole smashed in it by Lin Ming's demon avatar. The demon avatar thrust an arm into it like a viper, all the way into the bone pagoda!

Laws of Famine – Swallowing!

For a time, the arm of Lin Ming's demon avatar turned into that image of Famine's blood tentacles. The power of swallowing wildly poured into the bone pagoda and the devouring vortex that was created covered many of these malicious spirits, swallowing them up as they screamed in misery.

After breaking into the Twofold Dao Palace, the Swallowing Laws were able to harmonize with Lin Ming's demon avatar even better and he was able to bring out more of its strength.

Hum - !

The bone pagoda violently trembled as if it were about to disintegrate. As for the ancient bell that lifted a little, it started to fall back down.

"You!"

As the black-robed abyssal saw Lin Ming suck in all of the spirits he had refined with so much effort, he felt as if he would vomit blood from anger. He grasped the ghost streamer and a howling gale rose up. Layers upon layers of demon energy gathered together, forming into a giant demon claw in the air that grasped down at Lin Ming's demon avatar.

The black-robed abyssal wanted to force away Lin Ming's demon avatar, but at this time a blinding spear light flashed out, smashing into the giant demon claw.

Peng!

With a loud explosion, the demon claw burst apart into a miasma of fog and black light. Lin Ming’s true self had attacked!

“You…”

Seeing Lin Ming’s true self attack, the white-robed abyssal’s eyes turned blood red.

Lin Ming was simply too hard for them to deal with. Not only was he fighting one against two, but he could even divert both of them at the same time.

Although they stimulated their blood marks, this sort of secret technique couldn’t last too long. Once this secret technique faded away, their defeat would only arrive faster.

After breaking apart the demon claw, Lin Ming coldly sneered. Crackling sounds burst out from within his body and scales began to grow over his true self.

At the same time, the Asura war god phantom appeared behind Lin Ming; his true self had activated his Asura blood.

Not just that, but by using the Gate of Life's ability to restore blood essence, Lin Ming even conveniently burnt some blood essence from his true self.

At this time, the superiority that the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts gained from burning their blood essence had disappeared.

Power of the Nine Stars!

Lin Ming punched out a fist. Seven stars floated up behind him, the power of infinite starlight pouring into Lin Ming's body, condensing onto his fists.

The white-robed abyssal raised up a demon claw to block this fist!

"Support me!"

The white-robed abyssal roared at the black-robed abyssal. At this time, neither of them could bother with the bone pagoda.

However, before the white-robed abyssal's voice fell, his complexion changed.

Lin Ming's fist contained an all-annihilating corrosive strength. The white-robed abyssal's demon claw was rapidly melted away by this fist, and even his blood vitality and life force started to quickly dissipate!

This was one of the moves that Lin Ming had come up with after obtaining Sheng Mei's black book of death and unifying it with his comprehensions of the samsara of life and death.

Such an attack was already extremely close to Sheng Mei's attack.

In the blink of an eye, the white-robed abyssal's arms turned deathly gray, as if they had lost all life!

The black-robed abyssal was panic-stricken. He grabbed a small green fork in his hand and hurried to help the white-robed abyssal. But in this moment, Lin Ming's demon avatar temporarily gave up on swallowing the bone pagoda and grasped a bone spear as it smashed down at the black-robed abyssal.

Bang!

The Demon God's Tomb's hard earth was blown apart by the spear strike of Lin Ming's demon avatar. The black-robed abyssal was forced away.

At the same time, Lin Ming’s three avatars of essence, energy, and divine began to gather around the edges of the white-robed abyssal. They held Asura Wheels in their hands as they rushed towards the white-robed abyssal and ruthlessly cut down.

“Ahh!”

The white-robed abyssal’s face twisted as he fiercely struggled. After burning his blood essence he was like an enraged wild beast on the verge of death. He forcefully broke apart the Asura Wheels of Lin Ming’s essence avatar and energy avatar, but in the end he was cut through the neck by Lin Ming’s divine avatar!

Puff!

Blood flew out.

Horror and unwillingness flashed in the eyes of the white-robed abyssal.

And at this time, Lin Ming’s true self also punched out.

Peng!

This fist solidly smashed into the white-robed abyssal's chest. The powerful impact force tore the white-robed abyssal's clothes to shreds.

The white-robed abyssal spat out a mouthful of blood as the light began to fade away from his eyes.

Lin Ming's fist contained the dual Laws of Life and Death. The endlessly growing power of divinity and demons broke into the white-robed abyssal's body, even as the Laws of Death rapidly wasted away his vitality.

The two continuous attacks had caused the white-robed abyssal to lose nearly all his combat strength.

And in a battle where a great disparity existed to begin with, to lose so much combat strength meant that the end result was already decided.

The white-robed abyssal forced himself to create a demon claw, wanting to counterattack Lin Ming one final time. However, his body suddenly shook. A ferocious bone spear pierced through his back and out of his chest. Bone spikes twisted and grew and tore apart the abyssal's body, causing his blood to rain down to the floor.

The white-robed abyssal struggled to turn his head to see Lin Ming's demon avatar standing behind him, holding a thick bone spear in his hands.

The white-robed abyssal had already lost all strength to resist.

“Second Brother!”

Seeing the white-robed abyssal die, the black-robed abyssal felt his heart fade away like dying embers. He realized that with his own strength, it was impossible for him to stop this monster from hunting him down.

He roared out loud and threw the small green fork in his hands at Lin Ming with all his strength. Then, the demon power in his body rose to the limit and his skinny body began to inflate.

“You want to self-implode?”

A cold light burst out from Lin Ming’s eyes. His true self and demon avatar attacked at the same time, and his three avatars blocked out the void.

Bang!

The small green fork was sent flying away by a strike from the demon Lin Ming’s spear.

And at the same time, the fist of Lin Ming's true self crashed into the black-robed abyssal's chest!

The power of life and death savagely burst into the black-robed abyssal's body.

The demon power that the black-robed abyssal gathered and wanted to use to explode was suddenly neutralized by the power of death. Like cold water splashing onto heated iron, the black-robed abyssal began to rapidly lose strength; it was no longer possible for him to blow himself up.

"It's over."

Beneath the suppression of absolute strength, the black-robed abyssal wasn't able to display his greatest heaven-destroying strength. Together with the white-robed abyssal, the two of them died with deep grievances, only able to nurse their hatred in the afterlife as Lin Ming killed them in their own ancient bronze bell.

After the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts sided, the totem marks on their arms faded away, turning into pure power of demon gods that slowly fluttered towards Lin Ming.

MW Chapter 2141

Chapter 2141 – Cultivating

…

…

…

To kill others and wrest away their power of demon gods, this would forever be the fastest method.

The Demon God's Tomb had only opened several days ago so the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts had accumulated a limited amount of the power of demon gods. Even so, after killing them, Lin Ming's first totem marked directly reached perfection.

Not just that, but the second totem mark also started to slowly appear. Lin Ming could feel that even though this second totem mark appeared slightly different from the first one, if he wanted to completely manifest it then it would require much more power of demon gods.

The Demon God’s Tomb would remain open for a long time. Lin Ming absolutely had the option of slowly gathering the power of demon gods and didn’t need to be hurried. However, he was worried that if he stayed in the Demon God’s Tomb for too long then he might find that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had already left seclusion.

At that time, humanity would once more fall into dire peril!

As for contending with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, it would all depend on Divine Dream’s leadership. But no matter what happened it was sure to be a difficult and blood-filled battle.

All of these thoughts flashed through Lin Ming’s mind. He shook his head, placing these worries in the back of his mind. These were inevitable matters to begin with, and all Lin Ming could do now was do everything he could to increase his own strength.

There were far too many enemies he had to face.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, the unfathomably deep Soul Emperor, and even the entire Dark Abyss!

Each one of these enemies was stronger than the last. They pressed down on Lin Ming’s shoulders, but with his current strength he wasn’t able to shake any one of them.

Still, Lin Ming didn’t give in. This pressure on him was also his great lucky chance.

And if he wanted to reach the peak of martial arts, he needed such a lucky chance.

Since ancient times, peerless powerhouses often required more than just heaven-defying talent and destiny; they also needed the momentum of the world to be pushing them towards greater accomplishments.

10 billion years ago, the Asura Road Master and Immortal Sovereign had been in such a situation when they faced the invasion of the abyssal demons.

100 billion years ago, the Demon God also experienced such a situation facing the great Shattering of the demon universe.

This is what others meant when they said situations made the hero.

The current Lin Ming also stood atop this wave that swept over the world.

He was pushed to his current position, and if he could stand proudly where he was then he would become a legend that would be passed down for over a hundred billion years!

………………

The earth was boundless and barren. In the world of the Demon God's Tomb, besides demonic spirits, there was no other life. The only lives that stood out were the other abyssal trial challengers.

But, they were enemies that could kill you at any moment.

This was a world of deathly stillness, but also a world where dangers pervaded every corner. To stay in such a world for dozens, hundreds, or even thousands of years and withstand endless loneliness, infinite slaughter, and desolate cultivation, even someone with powerful nerves and tenacious willpower would find it hard to bear.

Peng!

Amongst the midst of scattered demon bones, a brilliant light suddenly burst out like fireworks in the night sky, dissipating between the heavens and earth.

With it, a miserable cry echoed out. An abyssal demon tumbled onto the ground in distress, his body covered with blood.

Lin Ming grasped a bone spear and quietly followed him from behind, like a devil emerging from the depths of hell.

"Stretch out your arm!"

Lin Ming's voice was cold and brooked no resistance.

The abyssal he struck down from the air came from the Flood Alliance and only had an Empyrean level cultivation. Facing Lin Ming's pressure, this abyssal nearly suffocated.

It was impossible for the abyssal to resist Lin Ming's aura. He obediently stretched out his arm, and then Lin Ming reached out sharp claws to wrap around this arm. With a bit of strength in his fingers, five sharp nails pierced into the abyssal's body.

Laws of Famine – Swallowing!

Lin Ming revolved the Swallowing Laws, savagely sucking out the pure power of demon gods within this abyssal's body.

A moment later, the abyssal lay splayed out on the ground like a dead dog, his entire body soaked in a cold sweat. In that instant just now he had felt as if his entire bloodline had been sucked out by Lin Ming.

However, he didn't die and Lin Ming didn't seem to have any intention of killing him.

Lin Ming waved his hand and said, “You can screw off!”

Hearing these words, the abyssal was dazed, in disbelief that he could survive this.

“Are you not leaving?”

A cold light flashed in Lin Ming’s eyes and the abyssal quickly scurried away.

Lin Ming took a deep breath, drawing in every wisp of the power of demon gods into his body so that he didn’t waste even the tiniest bit.

He opened his eyes, slowly turning towards a position somewhere in the void and faintly said, “Since you’ve come, you might as well come out.”

From the silent void, loud laughter suddenly echoed out. “Hahaha! Ninth Elder’s senses are truly sharp!”

With this voice, a hand suddenly appeared and ripped open the barrier of a concealing array formation. An abyssal walked out – this was Deep Child!

After being in the Demon God’s Tomb for a long time, this was the first time Lin Ming encountered Deep Child.

Lin Ming didn’t know how much power of demon gods Demon Child had absorbed. Facing Deep Child, Lin Ming was deeply wary of him. He could feel that this Deep Child was like a cold and ruthless wild beast, hiding his fangs until the moment came to reveal them.

“Interesting, you actually let that Flood Alliance abyssal go.” Deep Child said, a thoughtful light in his eyes as he stared at the fleeing abyssal from the Flood Alliance.

“But… you shouldn’t be some kind of blindly benevolent fool.”

As Deep Child spoke he looked towards Lin Ming. Lin Ming didn’t reply, instead glaring back at Deep Child and coldly asking, “Just what are you looking for me for?”

He was already prepared for a fight. Although those in the Deep Alliance had made an oath, such an oath likely wouldn’t have any binding force on Deep Child.

Deep Child chuckled. “This is just a chance encounter. Since you don’t wish to talk to me much, then… let us meet once again in the deepest depths of the Demon God’s Tomb!”

As Deep Child said this, he turned and left.

From start to finish he never attacked Lin Ming and didn't even reveal a bit of killing intent.

Lin Ming frowned and watched as Deep Child slowly disappeared from sight.

He didn't know what tricks Deep Child was playing at. Deep Child clearly possessed formidable strength and yet he restrained himself this entire time.

Deep Child didn't try to take his ceremonial rites book nor did he seek out the Great Flood Crown Prince for some sort of final showdown. In these past months, the Deep Alliance and Flood Alliance had come into conflict numerous times, but there had yet to be a great battle with deep losses yet.

Lin Ming shook his head, no longer thinking about it. His time in the Demon God's Tomb was extremely precious; he needed to grasp every moment he could to raise his strength.

As for whatever traps or secrets were in the Demon God's Tomb, or whatever plots Deep Child was planning against him, only when he had sufficient strength could he deal with these things.

Lin Ming's figure flickered and he flew away. He searched for his next target, whether it was a demonic spirit or more abyssal prey.

This was already Lin Ming’s tenth month in the Demon God’s Tomb.

The Demon God’s Tomb was extremely broad. In these ten months, Lin Ming travelled, spending the majority of his time in quiet cultivation.

Slaughter and cultivation, this was the entirety of the Demon God’s Tomb.

Lin Ming didn’t want to involve himself in the great war between the Flood Alliance and Deep Alliance. But, as long as he met someone from the Flood Alliance he would attack them without hesitation.

They were his prey.

This venture into the Demon God’s Tomb was meant to be a grand slaughterfest to begin with. Since Lin Ming joined in, he naturally would make use of these rules.

As for things like mercy or morality, to talk about such things now was foolishness.

During these ten months, Lin Ming’s name also spread out. There was no longer an abyssal stupid enough to consider Lin Ming as a mere upper Empyrean abyssal.

Because no one knew Lin Ming's true name and only knew of him as the Ninth Elder, slowly, the abyssals of the Flood Alliance gave Lin Ming a new name – the Ninth War Demon.

These days, in particular the Empyrean level abyssals of the Flood Alliance, they all shivered upon hearing the name of the Ninth War Demon.

But no matter how infamous Lin Ming's exploits, he didn't kill every Flood Alliance abyssal that he saw. He discovered that by using Famine's Swallowing Laws, he could easily draw out the power of demon gods from the bodies of other abyssals.

Thus, as long as some abyssals were willing to offer him their power of demon gods, he would mostly let them live.

This was no some act of mercy, but because Lin Ming had his own plan. He did this because he wanted to raise his cultivation speed up as fast as possible.

Lin Ming had his own ambitions. He wanted to accumulate his totem tattoos to the limit in the shortest time possible.

According to the jade slip, the more power of demon gods that a trial challenger possessed, the greater their chances of withstanding the inheritance of totem abyssals and passing the abyssal ritual.

Moreover, once he succeeded in receiving this inheritance, then this power of demon gods would also be perfectly absorbed by the trial challenger during the process, sublimating into a part of their strength.

MW Chapter 2142

Chapter 2142 – Cultivation Shortcut

…

…

…

Within the Demon God's Tomb, the slaughter continued grinding on.

Perhaps it was abyssals slaughtering demonic spirits to absorb their power of demon gods, or perhaps it was abyssals slaughtering abyssals to steal their achievements.

And like this, three years passed.

In a black swamp within the Demon God's Tomb, Lin Ming was slowly absorbing a wisp of pure power of demon gods. He glanced at the totem marks on his arm; currently he had already condensed his sixth totem.

In these past three years Lin Ming's cultivation speed was equivalent to the results of training for dozens of years outside.

He had fully stabilized his upper Empyrean boundary and his cultivation was rapidly progressing at 10,000 miles a day as he approached the limits of an Empyrean.

Seeing the sixth totem mark about to be completed, Lin Ming hesitated for a moment. He radiated his sense outwards. Then, his lips slowly curved up.

In an area not too far away, he saw that it was time to harvest some of the previous arrangements he made…

He slowly rose upwards, turning into a beam of light that shot towards the direction his sense told him to go in.

He was extremely fast like a coursing lightning bolt. In a quarter hour of time, he had already flown to his destination.

Here there was a canyon. And deep in the canyon was a concealing array formation.

This was an Empyrean level array formation, but to Lin Ming it simply existed in name only.

Lin Ming raised his right fist and demon power shivered as it stirred in his body.

Kacha!

A fist punched out, smashing into this concealing array formation.

“What? What happened!?”

After the concealing array formation exploded, several abyssals rose up, bewildered.

They had established a momentary resting spot here some time ago. Even for an Empyrean, if they were to participate in endless days of cultivation and slaughter they would still feel mentally worn out and need to rest.

They would normally gather here and there were abyssals that were specifically charged with being on lookout and guardian array formations. But today, all of these precautions had failed.

It was only when someone came knocking at their door and the array formation exploded apart did they respond.

If someone could quietly approach and then easily smash apart their hidden array formation, such an opponent was likely at the True Divinity level!

A True Divinity level opponent wasn't someone they could deal with!

However, as they rushed out and saw this intruder, their complexions suddenly turned incredibly ugly.

"The Ninth War Demon!"

"Y-you… it's you again!"

Those that gathered in his canyon were Empyrean level abyssals of the Flood Alliance. In the Demon God's Tomb they were considered weaklings, and it was always easier for weaklings to survive if they joined forces.

In these past days, they had relied on their teamwork to accumulate a great deal of the power of demon gods. They had always been careful in their actions lest they become prey for True Divinity abyssals of the Deep Alliance.

However, what was incomparably sad was that in these past three years, they had already bumped into this dark star known as Lin Ming twice.

The first time was two and a half years ago. Not too long after they entered the Demon God's Tomb they fought with the Empyrean level abyssals of the Deep Alliance until they finally encountered Lin Ming.

Because of the massive disparity in strength they were beaten to the ground. But, what was strange was that Lin Ming actually didn't kill them and instead let them go.

They originally rejoiced in such merciful actions, and at the same time they also laughed at Lin Ming for being stupid.

But after a year and a half passed, they actually encountered Lin Ming in this dangerous mystic realm once more. Lin Ming still didn't kill them. He didn't even take the cultivation methods or heavenly materials that they found so far, but only took away all the power of demon gods they had gathered.

This made them so depressed they nearly vomited blood. But, at least they passed through this danger with their lives intact and also had some minor harvests. As long as there was life, there was hope, and they started from the beginning all over again.

Now this was the third time they encountered Lin Ming!

For a time, the faces of these abyssals turned blue.

“You should all not want to die right? Hand over your power of demon gods! Obediently follow my orders and I will not kill you, otherwise, none of you will escape here alive. You should all know that I possess the ability to make sure none of you will be able to escape!”

Lin Ming’s words were overbearingly tyrannical. The lungs of these Flood Alliance abyssals nearly burst open with rage. They had gathered their power of demon gods after so much time and effort and yet Lin Ming wanted to savagely steal it all away.

“You… did you use some secret technique to follow us?”

An abyssal suddenly sucked in a deep breath. To be found once by Lin Ming was normal, to be found twice could be called a coincidence, but to be found a third time… how could this be possible!?

Even if they had bad luck it shouldn’t be this bad!

Upon hearing this abyssal’s question, a cold light flashed in Lin Ming’s eyes. Lin Ming traced his spatial ring and the surrounding temperature suddenly and precipitously dropped.

These abyssals felt as if they had all been caught by the scruffs of their neck and none of them dared to speak.

They were already sure that Lin Ming had some unknown methods to follow them. Moreover, when Lin Ming initially didn't kill them but let them go, this wasn't some random act of benevolent mercy, but because he wanted to fatten them up before harvesting them.

Thinking of this, the complexions of these abyssals turned darkly ugly. Those that were able to enter the Demon God's Tomb were all proud children of heaven, and yet they were being raised as if they were farm animals.

"This demon, he is too evil!"

"How could a tracking mark have been placed on us… before this we gathered with His Highness the Crown Prince but His Highness didn't tell us we were being tracked!"

The Crown Prince that these Flood Alliance abyssals spoke of was naturally the Great Flood Crown Prince.

The Great Flood Crown Prince was formidable, but the tracking mark that Lin Ming left on these abyssals was formed from his battle spirit.

To an abyssal, a battle spirit was a strange and relatively unknown thing. Perhaps a battle spirit might not be able to play any role in a battle between True Divinity level martial artists, but to use it to track someone was quite easy.

A battle spirit mark would nearly never wear away. Moreover, because abyssals were unfamiliar with battle spirits, they were extremely hard to detect.

With a battle spirit mark Lin Ming knew the locations of these abyssals from start to finish.

At a fixed interval of time he would harvest them. Otherwise, if too long of a time passed these abyssals might die somewhere and his arrangements would all be made useless.

“Hand over your power of demon gods or die.”

Lin Ming icily and decisively said. At the same time his grandmist force field spread out and covered this canyon. With just a hint of killing intent, these eight Empyrean level abyssals would never leave this place alive.

“Let’s attack together. I don’t believe that with so many of us working together we cannot deal with a single one!”

An enraged abyssal said, not believing in this situation. Lin Ming’s methods had touched his bottom line. Abyssals were born with violence and bloodthirst in their bones. In their lives they had only bullied others; just when had they been bullied like this?

Just as this abyssal finished shouting, before his voice fell a blinding spear light flashed through the void and caused a giant explosion to light up the world.

This abyssal cried out miserably and was sent soaring backwards. He smashed into the mountain rocks, his large body causing a sizable area of the divine iron-hard mountain walls to collapse.

Bang!

The rocks burst apart. This abyssal was drenched in blood and a bloody hole the size of a baby's arm was pierced through his chest.

He hadn't died, but in the Demon God's Tomb such a heavy wound would mean that even if he didn't die now, his future days would be a struggle indeed.

The complexions of the other abyssals changed. To hear rumors was one thing, but seeing was believing. An upper Empyrean abyssal had been easily and instantly felled by Lin Ming, and now they were filled with dread towards Lin Ming's strength.

Because of what they saw, all these abyssals meekly handed over their power of demon gods.

Lin Ming used the Swallowing Laws to absorb all of this power. In a short incense stick of time, the sixth totem mark completely formed.

Everything was connected. To the current Lin Ming, whether it was the power of divinity, the power of demons or anything else, he could transform it into a part of his strength; he could already feel that he was making great strides towards the limits of an Empyrean.

After absorbing the power of demon gods from all these abyssals, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. The strength of the Magic Cube spread out from his inner world, forming a giant vortex that covered the surrounding area.

"You..."

These abyssals were panic-stricken. They thought that Lin Ming had lied to them and was about to kill them, but in the next moment, they lost their minds in the spiritual black hole created by the Magic Cube.

The abyssals all slumped over, one at a time.

Looking at these abyssals that fainted, Lin Ming unhurriedly used the Magic Cube to take away all memories of their power of demon gods being taken away today.

He used the Magic Cube's illusionary abilities to create entirely new memories for these abyssals to explain why their power of demon gods had vanished.

Like this, although they would fall into extreme despair, they would still diligently continue to collect the power of demon gods to support Lin Ming's cultivation efforts in the future.

Otherwise, anyone that knew they were being tracked by others and even raised like farm animals would develop thoughts of resistance. At this time, only an idiot would continue to gather the power of demon gods just to give it away to others. Even a normal person wouldn't do this; they would rather not cultivate than vainly benefit someone else.

But if they forgot all of this then none of it would be a problem.

This also meant that Lin Ming could use this move multiple times.

It could be said that with the battle spirit tracking mark and Magic Cube, Lin Ming had found a cultivation shortcut in the Demon God's Tomb.

MW Chapter 2143

Chapter 2143 – World Phenomenon

…

…

…

After pillaging this squad of abyssals from the Flood Alliance, Lin Ming continued in this set pattern. For half a year he continued to strike out repeatedly, recklessly stealing the power of demon gods from abyssals as he carried out this large-scale farming.

And after every harvest Lin Ming wiped away the memories of these abyssals.

There was never a moment that he would fear he would be discovered by others. Not to mention that the abyssals of the Flood Alliance wouldn't necessarily realize what happened to them, even if they did they wouldn't be able to do anything to him.

In this Demon God's Tomb, Lin Ming's strength already stood at the highest tier.

Besides the Great Flood Crown Prince and the mysterious Deep Child, Lin Ming was confident that there wouldn't be anyone else who was his match.

Like this, the power of demon gods in his body rose rapidly in a short period of time. This strength was incredibly pure, able to perfectly fuse with Lin Ming's meridians and body without creating a single problem from different types of energies mixing together.

Time passed. Into the fifth year of the Demon God's Tomb, Lin Ming had already formed 12 totem marks on his hand.

Lin Ming didn't know what the limit of totem marks was, but he knew that according to the jade slip of the Demon God's Tomb, some ordinary abyssal elites would have a limit of totem marks in the dozen or so, and some would have even fewer.

Lin Ming had used a mere five years to reach this point. If this were to be known by other abyssals they would be completely dumbfounded.

Lin Ming looked at his arm. The 13th totem mark was clearly in its rudimentary state.

He was planning to completely manifest this totem mark in the next ten months. Then, in this Demon God's Tomb, he would break through to the limits of an Empyrean and perhaps even touch upon the threshold of True Divinity.

But at this time in the distant horizon, the earth began to shake and rumble. Great plumes of black fog rose up, gathering in the skies.

This black fog contained a horrifying aura. It transformed in the skies, twisting and struggling, like a demon that was growling at the world.

Looking at this black fog, Lin Ming felt his mind shake. In the next moment, he felt a terrifying pressure from this far off black fog, as if he were gasping for breath.

This caused Lin Ming to be even more wary. He already possessed a True Divinity level of strength, yet this energy was able to leave him suppressed to the point of gasping; this was too dreadful.

But at this time, the earth began to crack apart, rupturing open. The Demon God’s Tomb was an extremely stable world and the strength required to tear apart the earth like this was simply unimaginable.

There were abyssals who weren’t too far away that were also attracted by these strange and wondrous images.

For such a world phenomenon to occur, that likely meant that something extraordinary was being born.

Lin Ming’s thoughts moved. He used his sense to probe for a moment, and then he flew towards the area where the phenomena appeared at an unhurried pace.

And at this time, there was a loud explosive sound like the eruption of a volcano. Waves of magma swelled forth from the cracked earth, soaring into the heavens. A team of abyssals was caught in this torrential wave and were sucked in like a tiny boat in raging seas, immediately disappearing.

This sudden change caused the abyssals rushing here to pause for a moment. For a time, no abyssals dared to move forwards.

There were perils and risks littered throughout the Demon God’s Tomb, and many places where even True Divinities had a high chance of dying. Without a doubt, there were lucky chances in these places, but to an Empyrean abyssal, maintaining their life was the most important point of all. Without their life, they had nothing.

After Lin Ming saw this team of Empyrean abyssals being swallowed up, he also moved with even more caution.

His pace also slowed by a great deal. At the same time, he radiated his sense outwards to investigate the situation around the phenomenon. Soon he found someone familiar.

In the midst of howling winds, within waves of energy surging in the skies, a beautiful figure stood against the gales, her long dress flapping around her; this woman was Sheng Mei.

At this time, Sheng Mei held a bone sword in her hands, her long hair fluttering in the wind.

And not too far away from Sheng Mei, there was also a True Divinity abyssal from Deep King Road in full battle mode, ready to fight.

Lin Ming had some impressions towards this True Divinity level abyssal. This abyssal had also appeared in the intra-alliance competition but it was only that he hadn't fought. Lin Ming wasn't sure what his true strength was, but if Deep King Road was willing to send him out here then his strength likely wasn't too bad.

And what Sheng Mei and this Deep King Road abyssal Elder faced were three True Divinity level abyssals from the Flood Alliance. The one leading these three abyssals was the Great Flood Crown Prince.

"Hahaha! Your Highness Holy Demoness, if seems if fate wishes it, we will meet after all. The Demon God's Tomb is so broad and I have been here for so long and yet this is the first time I have run into Your Highness. I surely must thank this world phenomenon for this!"

The Great Flood Crown Prince smiled, his fake words a veneer of civility. And at this time, the two True Divinity level abyssal behind him moved forwards, encircling Sheng Mei and the Deep King Road Elder.

The Great Flood Crown Prince's strength was clearly above Sheng Mei's. And with the two True Divinities from the Flood Alliance added on, it was clear which side was weaker.

Sheng Mei furrowed her eyebrows. She looked at the tumbling black fog behind the Great Flood Crown Prince as well as the phantasmal forms that faintly condensed in the fog, and she formed speculations in her heart.

The energy that was dissipating from this mystic realm faintly resonated with the power of demon gods that she had absorbed, as if it were the source of the power of demon gods.

In addition, the energy contained a terrifying pressure that even caused True Divinities to quiver. Sheng Mei suspected that this mystic realm was likely related to the Demon God from 100 billion years ago!

Just what sort of existence was the Demon God? He could be called the founder of the entire Dark Abyss, and if it were a lucky chance that he left behind, just what sort of lucky chance would that be like?

It was unknown just what trigger had activated this mystic realm, but for it to suddenly appear from nowhere, it was clearly a great stroke of good fortune for the high level abyssals that entered the Demon God's Tomb.

Such good fortune, who wouldn't want to have sole possession of it?

The Great Flood Crown Prince had clearly also approximately guessed this. Thus, he gathered up two other True Divinities from the Flood Alliance to prepare to fight Sheng Mei. He wished to severely beat up Sheng Mei or at least force her to draw back.

Sheng Mei's eyes flashed with a cold light as she rapidly analyzed the current situation.

The Demon God's Tomb was far too broad and the Space Laws here were too stable. Even a True Divinity level abyssal couldn't step through the void and could only fly, without any tricks.

Now, for this mystic realm to suddenly appear here, although the aura of the energy was incredibly vast, it was simply too far away. Many True Divinity level abyssals had yet to discover it but they would soon enough.

Presently, Sheng Mei was clearly unable to contend against these three True Divinity level abyssals from the Flood Alliance. But if she could delay for time and wait for more True Divinity level abyssals to catch up, then perhaps a favorable turn might appear.

Weng!

Layers of the power of demon gods erupted from Sheng Mei's body, completely covering her.

Beside her, the Deep King Road Elder also moved. His joints and body released explosive crackling sounds as layers of scales appeared on his body; he had utilized a body metamorphosis unique to the abyssal cultivation system.

Seeing this, the Great Flood Crown Prince diabolically grinned. "You want to delay for time and wait for reinforcements? Do you think you can last that long?"

Clang!

The Great Flood Crown Prince flipped his hand and drew out a saber engraved with the image of a ghost head; he pointed the saber straight at Sheng Mei.

"Force this battle to a quick conclusion!"

The Great Flood Crown Prince ordered the two other abyssal Elders. However, just as he finished speaking he suddenly paused, frowning.

He turned and saw that several miles away, an abyssal wearing black battle armor and holding a thick bone spear was flying towards them like a ghost.

This abyssal was Lin Ming.

“This boy!”

The Great Flood Crown Prince scowled. In these past years it was clear to everyone just how strong Lin Ming was. Now, the Great Flood Crown Prince fully believed Deep Child’s words that Lin Ming’s talent surpassed his own.

He synthesized all sorts of information together to estimate that Lin Ming had the strength of a peak lower True Divinity.

He wouldn’t have worried about this level of strength to begin with, but now, if Lin Ming were added together with Sheng Mei and that Deep King Road Elder, this battle would be three against three. Although he still maintained the advantage as before, wanting to end the fight in a short period of time would be far too difficult.

And if this battle dragged on then more and more True Divinity level abyssals would arrive.

At that time, the battle to enter the mystic realm would become even more ruthless and bloody, and getting the opportunity to swallow this lucky chance by himself would be less likely.

In particular, the Great Flood Crown Prince felt a deep sense of dread towards Deep Child.

If he were to catch up then the consequences would be dire.

“You are courting death!”

The Great Flood Crown Prince glared at Lin Ming like a beast eyeing its prey; he completely unleashed his killing intent.

Lin Ming flew forwards without changing direction. He seemed slow, but he flew several miles in a mere moment.

Silently, he appeared next to Sheng Mei like a spirit, facing the Great Flood Crown Prince and the two other True Divinity Elders of the Flood Alliance beside her.

MW Chapter 2144

Chapter 2144 – Underground World

…

…

…

“It’s you…”

Sheng Mei never thought that Lin Ming would appear at this time. As she looked at him, a complex light appeared in her eyes. In a sense, this black abyssal standing beside her was her fiancé.

Although Sheng Mei couldn’t accept him, she still had to acknowledge that she held some sort of peculiar and special feeling towards this fierce-looking abyssal.

Strong winds howled. At this time, Lin Ming stood a bit ahead of Sheng Mei. From Sheng Mei’s angle she could see the towering back of Lin Ming as well as the gloomy and uncertain face of the Great Flood Crown Prince.

Currently, the Great Flood Crown Prince was estimating whether or not he could severely wound Sheng Mei and Lin Ming in an incense stick of time if he attacked now.

But at this time, the ruptured earth below began to shiver and whine once more. The edges of the cracked earth started to close in, as if the opening were about to seal itself away.

That massive tide of demonic energy spouted out from the depths of that abyss, like the terrifying aura of a demon god being born into this world once more. But now it drew back, closing in, like a great maw that had opened and was now biting back down.

From everyone’s positions, they could see an infinite abyss exposed beneath that massive crack. It was clear that this terrifying and world-shaking aura was being transmitted from this underground abyss.

The entrance to this underground abyss was this massive crack, but now, the entrance was soon to be sealed up!

The several abyssal masters present were stunned. If they didn’t enter now and waited until the crack closed back up then it would be impossible for them to find another chance. To forcefully open up the ground in such a powerful mystic realm required abilities that no one here possessed.

“Go down!”

The Great Flood Crown Prince ordered after seeing the mystic realm about to close up in a dozen or so breaths of time. At this moment, he and the others couldn’t bother with Lin Ming anymore.

“We’re going also!”

Sheng Mei cried out. Without hesitation, her body plunged downwards like an arrow.

Lin Ming followed behind her. With the True Divinity Elder from Deep King Road, three figures plummeted like meteors, instantly crossing the 100,000 foot distance.

During this rapid flight, the Great Flood Crown Prince looked at Lin Ming and the others. After a moment of thought he decided not to attack. The crack was far too large; it would be impossible for him to stop them from entering. Even if he managed to force Sheng Mei and the others back, they would eventually enter from another direction.

If they entangled themselves in some melee, then if things didn’t go well even he wouldn’t be able to enter.

On the contrary, if they entered this underground space together then he could rely on his absolute strength to control the absolute initiative!

Woosh!

After Lin Ming and Sheng Mei flew down, other abyssal Empyreans unafraid of death followed them.

Even though they were aware of how perilous this mystic realm was, with such a lucky chance before them there would always be a chance for them to leap to the heavens in a single bound. In the face of such opportunity, there would always be desperados willing to recklessly risk their own lives.

The figures of numerous abyssals sank into that endless abyss. From left and right, the endless rock walls slowly squeezed in.

It was unknown how deep these rock walls extended. If they didn't manage to enter the mystic realm before these rock walls closed up and were pushed between them then that would truly be a pitiful fate. With how hard the earth was in the Demon God's Tomb, even a True Divinity level abyssal would have to spend a considerable amount of time and effort if they wanted to somehow force their way out. As for an Empyrean level abyssal, they weren't too strong to begin with. If they were buried underground then they might not be able to crawl out for dozens or hundreds of years. It was even possible they would perish underground.

The True Divinity abyssals and those with similar strengths like Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were calm. But, the Empyrean level abyssals all had foreheads dropping with cold sweat.

They continued to accelerate downwards, in fear that they would be caught in the pressure of the rock walls.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Abyssal after abyssal flew free from the underground crack. Then, infinite darkness flashed before them. In the next moment their field of vision suddenly widened and they saw that they arrived in a broad underground world.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Above their heads the earth began to close up; the entrance had been blocked.

During their hasty flight just then, after a brief estimation, everyone realized that this place was at least a thousand miles underground.

To suddenly be sealed in a mystic realm over a thousand miles belowground, many Empyrean abyssals felt their hearts racing. Such a mystic realm, it shouldn't be inescapable right? If it were then that would truly be tragic.

Lin Ming looked at this underground world. He could not see where the end was and it wasn't pitch black either; rather, there were shimmering sparks of light that overflowed from the rocks below, somewhat dimly.

But a True Divinity could still use their sense to perceive their surroundings in a completely pitch black world. Moreover, there was light here already, so it wasn't any different from daytime to them.

Underground, rocky stalagmites littered the floor. And between many of these giant stone peaks there was a lake that was extremely eye-catching.

This lake was dark gray in color. It was around a hundred miles in diameter and covered a vast area.

The surface of this lake wasn't calm. Fist-sized bubbles rose up and broke into the air, as if this were a pool of heavy and burning hot water.

As Lin Ming saw this lake, his heart skipped a beat.

He could faintly feel an inexhaustible essence of the power of demon gods condensed in this lake, as if all that vast energy that gushed out from before came from it!

Recalling the magma-like liquid gushing out from the ruptured earth, Lin Ming suspected that this was the 'water' from this gray lake.

Because the lake water had been stimulated for some unknown reason, it had pierced through the thousand some miles of rock and formed a tide of demonic energy. This was similar to the volcanic eruptions of the mortal world.

But, just how much strength would be required to break through a thousand miles of the Demon God's Tomb rocky earth?

"This mystic realm should be related to the Demon God from a hundred billion years ago!"

Sheng Mei's voice suddenly echoed in Lin Ming's ears.

Lin Ming was startled. He looked at Sheng Mei.

Sheng Mei continued to speak in a sound transmission. "I'm not too sure of the specifics. Let us head down first."

"Alright."

Sheng Mei, Lin Ming, and the True Divinity from Deep King Road all flew towards the lake. And behind them, several Empyrean level abyssals from the Deep Alliance followed at a distance. It was at this time that the advantage of being in an alliance appeared. If they were to come here alone then these Empyrean level abyssals would surely be swallowed up in the battle without any bits remaining. But now, they found a slim chance of survival.

The more they neared the lake, the more Lin Ming felt that every drop of this lake water contained essence of the power of demon gods as vast and irresistible as a sea.

Strange lines spread across the surface of the lake, beating in rhythm with the most profound abyssal Laws and forming an absolute force field that locked in this part of the world.

A thousand feet away, everyone could feel this formidable pressure. Everyone’s flying speed suddenly slowed down.

Lin Ming swept his gaze outwards. He could see a massive amount of broken bone fragments scattered all around the lake. These bones had been here for countless years and were already bleached white.

However, what was strange was that in between these scattered bone fragments there were also several intact corpses. These corpses hadn’t turned into fragmented bones, but still had withered flesh. This left Lin Ming surprised. He didn’t know how long these corpses had been here. If these were trial challengers from the most recent times, then this could be understandable. But, if these bones came from ancient times then that would truly be shocking. It was hard to imagine just how they managed to withstand the corrosive strength that pervaded this world.

Lin Ming didn't think much on this, because at this time, he could see a group of abyssals running in his direction. The one at the head of these abyssals was the Great Flood Crown Prince.

And besides the Great Flood Crown Prince were the two True Divinity level abyssals of the Flood Alliance as well as about ten Empyrean abyssals. This was around the total strength of the Flood Alliance in this underground world.

All around Lin Ming, the complexions of the abyssals turned ugly.

The Flood Alliance had the Great Flood Crown Prince holding the scene, but they only had Sheng Mei, Lin Ming, as well as an Elder from Deep King Road called Deep Echo.

In terms of masters, they were clearly at a lower level.

The Great Flood Crown Prince swept his eyes out. As he didn't see that Deep Child who stirred fear in him, he suddenly grinned.

Without Deep Child here he could confidently say that he could completely wipe out all the Deep Alliance abyssals present!

"Really, the road to heaven is wide open and yet you refuse, but you would rather burst through the gates of hell! Originally, if you stayed up above then you would have been fine, but you insisted on coming down here to die. Then, how could I disappoint you? Let me fulfill your wish!"

The Great Flood Crown Prince looked at Lin Ming and Sheng Mei, a mocking light in his eyes.

MW Chapter 2145

Chapter 2145 – The Lake of Death

…

…

…

Facing the Great Flood Crown Prince, all the abyssals of the Deep Alliance were tense.

The Great Flood Crown Prince was already at the pinnacle of a middle True Divinity. Moreover, he was a considerable deal greater than those older True Divinity abyssals.

Facing such an opponent, just Lin Ming, Sheng Mei, and Deep Echo weren't enough to be his match.

If this were back in the above world then they could scatter out in all directions to escape. But here in this underground world, they were no different than turtles in a jar, without any place to hide!

Killing intent slowly spread out from the two abyssal alliances. The air seemed to coagulate into something solid, making it so that the weaker abyssals found it difficult to move.

Sheng Mei took a deep breath and grasped her bone sword. Her mind reached a state of unprecedented concentration. As she held the bone sword in her hands, her palms were slightly wet. Even she found it difficult to remain calm when facing an enemy like the Great Flood Crown Prince.

She was aware that this battle would be difficult.

“Hehe! Your Highness Holy Demoness’ sword is truly extraordinary. It seems crafted from the bones of ancient sages and its quality even surpasses that of a True Divinity spirit treasure! Unfortunately, that sword will not bring you any miracles today. Your Highness, why must you be enemies with me? If you are willing to pledge an oath to me and dual cultivate with me, then we can work together to seek out the secrets of eternal life. How about it?”

As the Great Flood Crown Prince finished speaking, he casually swept his eyes over Lin Ming, a sinister and cold light flashing deep in his pupils.

Sheng Mei was renowned for being the number one woman to exist in the entirety of the Dark Abyss. If one could obtain her and dual cultivate with her, then the benefits to one’s cultivation would be incredible.

As for Lin Ming, he was the fiancé Sheng Mei had chosen. If he wanted to become one with Sheng Mei, he naturally had to eliminate Lin Ming first.

No matter how talented Lin Ming was, what mattered in a life or death battle was one's absolute strength. He was fully confident he could kill Lin Ming.

Lin Ming maintained his calm as he rapidly analyzed the strength of the Great Flood Crown Prince. If he were to face the Great Flood Crown Prince then once battle erupted he would be forced to reveal his true self and it would no longer be possible to hide his identity.

If that happened then the situation would become troublesome. It would mean that he would have to kill all abyssals here who saw his true appearance!

Moreover, there was Deep Echo; if Deep Echo saw his true self would he possibly help the enemy instead?

"You, follow close to me once battle erupts. In the last moment I will use a secret technique and you will need to cover me!"

Because Lin Ming hadn't ever stated his name, Sheng Mei simply referred to him as 'you'.

Hearing Sheng Mei's sound transmission, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. Indeed, Sheng Mei followed the Soul Emperor all this time. In a crucial moment she should have some sort of life-saving card.

Unless it was as a last resort, Lin Ming didn't want to reveal his true self because if he did there would be far too many new problems.

All sorts of thoughts raced through Lin Ming's mind. And at this time, there was a far off cry.

Everyone was startled. They turned towards the direction of the sound and what they saw left their scalps tingling.

In the few breaths of time before now, two Empyreans that didn't belong to the Deep Alliance or Flood Alliance wished to take advantage of the time they were engaged with each other to be the first ones to delve into the lake. They wanted to quietly search for treasure as well as avoid the slaughter between the two sides.

But when they stepped onto the shore of the lake, the seemingly ordinary swampy ground, one of the Empyrean abyssals stepped on something and a black fog rose up that enveloped him.

In just a short breath of time, while this abyssal was violently shivering, the scales on his originally fierce body began to fall off and his towering and strong body started dissolving into bloody water that splashed onto the ground.

The Empyrean abyssal melted away. All that remained was a head that stared wide-eyed into the skies, filled with panic. But soon this head also dissolved.

Up until the moment he died, this abyssal didn’t make a single sound; it was only his companion that cried out.

An Empyrean level abyssal had died in such an inexplicable manner, simply melting away into nothing. This was just far too macabre a sight.

“This… this is…”

The surviving Empyrean level abyssal mumbled with a paper-white face. He didn’t even dare to take a deep breath. Slowly, he cautiously stepped backwards, wanting to withdraw from this murderous swampy land that seemed as if it came from hell.

After all, this Empyrean had survived many life or death situations in his time. He was well aware that if he didn’t maintain his calm but instead turned tail to run, then his death might come that much sooner.

One small step, another small step… just as he was about to leave the edge of the swampy ground, his foot seemed to step into some pit and he tumbled backwards.

With a cry of alarm, something seemed to grab onto his ankle from below and savagely pull him down!

“Ahh!”

This Empyrean level abyssal emitted a miserable shout. But soon his body sank into the swamp, and in just a breath of time his horrified shouts were also submerged.

After a little bit more time, bones began to slowly float up.

These bones still maintained the shape of someone struggling; they were the bones of the Empyrean level abyssal that just died.

This sort of feeling was like someone had been instantly eaten up with only bones remaining, leaving one frightened beyond compare!

“What is that!?”

Seeing this scene, all the abyssals present, even the inordinately arrogant Great Flood Crown Prince, couldn't help but feel their hearts racing in their chests.

They had just probed whatever this underground existence was, but they still didn't manage to discover just what it was that silently ate up two Empyrean level abyssals.

And, these Empyrean level abyssals were both proud elites of the Dark Abyss. But from start to finish, they were eaten and spit back out as quickly as cherries.

That mysterious underground existence absolutely possessed strength above that of a True Divinity level abyssal. As for what the exact rank was, no one could confirm.

All abyssals present held their breath for a time. In their minds, this calm underground world was becoming a dark land filled with horrifying terrors.

In particular, the abyssals with Empyrean levels of strength regretted their impulsiveness to fly into the underground crack.

Some abyssals gulped and subconsciously drew back from the direction of the lake. If it was them who rashly approached the lake just now, then the ones who turned into bones and bloody water would have been them.

The Great Flood Crown Prince's complexion darkened. Even he felt pressured in such a situation. This was only near the shores of the lake and yet such a terrifying existence was here. Then, what would be at the bottom of the lake?

Even if a dreadful existence appeared from the bottom of the lake that could easily slaughter him, the Great Flood Crown Prince would still not be surprised.

After all, this hidden land had existed for over 100 billion years.

Moreover, the one who left this land behind was likely the Demon God of legends. As for what would evolve in this land through a span of 100 billion years, no one knew.

Thinking of this, the Great Flood Crown Prince and other abyssals didn't dare to fight Lin Ming and Sheng Mei yet.

Even if the Great Flood Crown Prince was confident that he could slay Lin Ming and Sheng Mei, it would still require him to use up a considerable amount of energy. If several monsters leapt out towards him once he was weakened, he would simply become their dessert.

Moreover, a fight between several True Divinities would surely affect the surroundings. The two Empyreans just then had only reached the lake shore to alarm one of the monsters.

If their fight caused the heavens and earth to shake then perhaps even the monsters at the bottom of the lake would be stirred up. If a crowd of enraged monsters suddenly rose up, then their fates could be imagined.

“You still want to fight?”

Sheng Mei coldly stared at the Great Flood Crown Prince, her eyes shimmering and her voice decisive. The bone sword in her hand glittered. If there was a fight then she would naturally accompany them until the end.

The Great Flood Crown Prince frowned. He coldly snorted and finally said, “Consider yourselves lucky. I will allow you to live this time, of course, the premise is that you all don’t turn into bloody water!”

The Great Flood Crown Prince waved his hand and brought the others behind him to leave.

“Your Highness the Crown Prince, what are we to do…?”

A True Divinity level abyssal asked from beside the Great Flood Crown Prince.

“Let them live for now. At a key moment we might be able to use them as shields. First we will search the area for lucky chances and potential dangers. Once we have determined our situation then it still won’t be late to destroy them.

“And that lake…”

“We certainly must go in to take a look. There is at least a 70-80% chance that this mystic realm is related to the Demon God. If we enter a mountain of treasures and return empty-handed then what is the point of cultivating martial arts!”

Hearing the words of the Great Flood Crown Prince, many abyssals felt a chill run down their spines. They looked at the dark gray lake and to them it now looked like the jaws of a wild beast that were opened wide, alarming to the mind. As for the lake waters, they blocked out their sense; no one knew just what lay inside.

MW Chapter 2146

Chapter 2146 – The Lake Shore of Dripping Blood

…

…

…

“Hey, the several of you come over here!”

The Great Flood Crown Prince and his party stood in front of this killing lake. Suddenly, he turned his head and beckoned towards several Empyrean level abyssals in the distance.

These Empyrean level abyssals came from small influences. They didn’t belong to the Flood Alliance nor were they part of the Deep Alliance.

As these abyssals saw the Great Flood Crown Prince wave at them, their complexions suddenly turned extremely ugly.

Because the great crack in the earth had opened and closed so quickly, many abyssals had rushed down in a hot-headed decision; they never expected that they would be faced with such a situation underground.

“I told you all to come here, didn’t you hear me!?”

The Great Flood Crown Prince’s voice turned chilly. The several Empyrean abyssals wore gloomy faces as they walked towards the Great Flood Crown Prince.

When facing True Divinity level masters like Lin Ming and Sheng Mei, the Great Flood Crown Prince still held a measure of wariness against them. After all, wanting to kill a True Divinity level master wasn’t easy at all.

But against these Empyrean level abyssals, the Great Flood Crown Prince could kill them in an instant.

Thus, the Empyrean level abyssals didn’t resist, because doing so would only mean that death approached them faster.

The several Empyrean level abyssals trembled as they walked in front of the Great Flood Crown Prince. They already guessed just what would happen.

“Heh, what sort of expressions do you all have? I just want to cooperate with you.” The Great Flood Crown Prince said with a lingering smile. “Come, we will move forwards together. If we find anything good then we will divide it according to the number of people; it is an absolutely fair condition.”

How could these Empyrean abyssals possibly believe such words? One of the abyssals dryly laughed and said, “Crown Prince Your Highness, please don’t joke with us. How could we dare to struggle with you for lucky chances? This lake is likely a secret land left behind from the ancient era 100 billion years ago. With such a mystical trove, how could the likes of us possibly have the luck to enjoy it? Only someone as wonderful and fortunate as Your Highness could possibly be worthy of such a thing. As for us, we only rushed down here in a moment of hot-headedness. We will immediately disappear from your sight!”

A clever abyssals said, bowing as he drew backwards.

The Great Flood Crown Prince’s complexion turned cold and killing intent flashed in his eyes. “You sure speak enough garbage!”

The Great Flood Crown Prince’s face changed as his manner turned hostile. Demon power erupted from his body as he stretched out a hand and ruthlessly caught the retreating abyssal.

The Great Flood Crown Prince’s strength was considered at the peak of middle True Divinities; he wasn’t someone that ordinary middle Empyreans could deal with.

This Empyrean level abyssal was an overbearing ruler of his own influence, but in the hands of the Great Flood Crown Prince he was as powerless as a chicken, simply unable to put up a struggle.

“Crown Prince Your Highness… you… ahh!”

This middle Empyrean cried out in alarm as he was flung forwards by the Great Flood Crown Prince. “You, walk with us. Stay 100 feet ahead of me! I will make an oath on my demon heart that if we can take away the treasures here and safely return then I will leave a part of it to you! But if you try to play tricks with me or defy me, then I will kill you! Now, choose which road you wish to take!”

The Great Flood Crown Prince icily said.

After the abyssal heard these words, his complexion turned as pale as a corpse that had been dead for three days.

Safely return? Leave a part of the treasures to him? Did this possibility even exist?

Currently, he had been tossed forwards as a stone to explore the path ahead. In this underground world where killing intent overflowed from all around, he was nothing but cannon fodder, and those two abyssal Empyreans who had melted away into bones and blood were the best examples!

“You!” Although this abyssal’s previous words seemed extremely undignified and servile, the truth was that he also had a fierce nature hidden in his bones. How could he endure such a humiliating death?

“Heh! Don’t be in such a hurry to refuse me. You should be an Elder from the Apocalypse Sect, right?”

Hearing the Great Flood Crown Prince suddenly mention his sect, the Empyrean level abyssal’s complexion changed. He was about to deny this when the Great Flood Crown Prince smiled and said, “There is no need to try and hide it. When I grabbed you just now I probed your cultivation method and noticed that you cultivate the Apocalypse Sect’s Apocalyptic Devil Arts! Your clan is also in the Apocalypse Sect. If you obediently listen to me today then even if you die, when I make it out of here someday I will surely compensate your Apocalypse Sect. But if you disobey me, I will annihilate your Apocalypse Sect instead!”

The Great Flood Crown Prince’s words were incomparably domineering. The Apocalypse Sect’s Empyrean Elder was so mad that he shook from rage.

“I will give you one last chance. Not only can I destroy your Apocalypse Sect but I can also make you suffer pain worse than death. Even if you don’t submit to me I still have ways to replace you in exploring the path ahead, and it's only that it will be just a little bit more troublesome to me.”

The Great Flood Crown Prince’s voice became increasingly cold. It seemed he had reached the end of his patience.

Lin Ming listened from behind, quietly astonished. In the Dark Abyss, being weaker only meant to be freely oppressed.

That abyssal who had been grabbed was forced into a helpless situation and made to explore the way forwards.

The Great Flood Crown Prince and his group followed from a distance.

There were also some Empyrean level abyssals from smaller guilds that followed with aggrieved complexions. Without a doubt, once that abyssal in the front had the bad luck of randomly dying somehow, the next to stand in his place would be one of them.

The group quietly walked forwards. The atmosphere was so tense and constrained that it seemed as if someone could squeeze water from it.

“We will also go.”

Sheng Mei said after a moment of thought. She clearly didn’t want to give up on whatever secrets there were in this lake.

She looked at Lin Ming, asking for his suggestion. Lin Ming nodded, “We should release some of the power of demon gods that we absorbed and fully extend our senses. Since this energy comes from the same source, there should be a connection between it. If there really is danger we should be able to perceive some clues…”

“Good. Everyone be wary.”

Sheng Mei nodded and released some of the power of demon gods she absorbed. The abyssals around her followed suit.

At this time, the Great Flood Crown Prince’s group was now a mere 100 feet away from that killing lake.

At this distance the pressure was even more intense. Moreover, the abyssals could feel a rich death energy, one that was rank with the smell of blood, as if this lake they faced was a blood pond from hell.

“I… I…”

The abyssal leading the way turned paper white. With every step he took, it was like he walked over the precipice of death. His forehead was already dripping with sweat. This killing lake was simply far too strange and the ways one could die were too pitiful.

90 feet…

80 feet…

70 feet…

They approached a step at a time, each abyssal raising their guard as high as they could.

All the way to 20 feet, 10 feet, 3 feet… that abyssal leading the way would soon touch the lake waters.

Although he was frightened so badly his complexion was like that of a dying man, he had extremely good luck and still hadn’t died.

Could this so-called killing lake in truth only be dangerous in that part of the swampy ground? And in that swampy area there was some horrifying existence lying in wait, but the other areas weren’t dangerous?

This thought flashed through the minds of some abyssals. They even guessed that this killing lake had some guardian demon beast, and as long as they avoided it they might be able to safely enter the mystic realm left behind by the Demon God.

Soon, the leading abyssal reached the edge of the killing lake.

The abyssals following behind paused their steps. This was the crucial moment; they needed to test and determine whether or not this lake was dangerous in itself.

Perhaps this lake water was corrosive enough to melt away anything, and any abyssal that jumped in would turn into a pile of bones.

“Reach out your hand and test it!”

The Great Flood Crown Prince coldly ordered.

The leading abyssal clenched his teeth. Then, he first used a sword and gently dipped it in the lake water. Besides light ripples, nothing else happened.

After pulling out the sword, the blade also emerged unscathed.

The abyssal felt slightly relieved upon seeing this. After a moment of hesitation, he took out a container to remove a little water from the lake and analyze whether it was dangerous or not.

But at this moment, a miserable cry rang out from behind him.

“Ahhh!”

In a situation where everyone was highly tensed, whether it was abyssals or humans, it was easy for anyone to cry out.

Several abyssals were originally standing stably on the ground. But then, they felt the earth soften beneath them and their feet plunged into the ground.

Then they felt a strength that none of them could resist suddenly pull down their bodies, dragging them below!

“Damnit!”

The Great Flood Crown Prince was enraged. The abyssal leading the way was fine, but the larger force behind had been ambushed instead! It seemed that this mysterious underground existence had purposefully let go of the little fish up ahead to catch the larger group behind!

Clang!

In the Great Flood Crown Prince’s hand, the saber engraved with a ghost head rang out as it emerged from its sheath, roughly slashing down onto the earth.

Demon power swelled up like a raging sea tide.

Bang!

With a loud explosion, the divine-iron hard lake shore was sundered by the Great Flood Crown Prince's saber. Muddy stones blew into the air, and the four or five Empyrean level abyssals that were dragged into the ground were suddenly forcefully blown out again by this strength.

However, of those Empyrean abyssals that were dragged into the ground just now, one could see that their bodies had been melted away in multiple areas, leaving nothing behind but white bones.

Their deaths were only a matter of time!

MW Chapter 2147

Chapter 2147 – Storm

…

…

…

“This is…”

Looking at the several abyssals blown back up that were soon to die, the Great Flood Crown Prince’s complexion turned as cold as a 10,000 year old glacier.

Right beneath his nose, his subordinates had been killed by some unknown existence and from beginning to end he never realized just what had done it.

The several abyssals that were blown back up by the Great Flood Crown Prince’s saber continued to howl in pain and misery. However, their bodies seemed to be stained with some corrosive liquid that continued to melt away at their bodies. Soon their voices were utterly silenced.

The several abyssals had turned into a pile of bones, and the bloody pus that formed from their dissolved bodies also sank into the ground…

Lin Ming watched all of this with a frown. He had spread his sense underground, yet he also didn’t discover just what existence had killed those Empyrean abyssals.

“How strange!”

Sheng Mei muttered. For a time, she looked at the lake with hesitation.

Perhaps rashly rushing in wasn’t a wise choice. Even if there was some world-shocking lucky chance it still might be a thoroughly planned dead-end trap…

Would the Demon God’s Tomb have such a trap?

What would be the goal of the one who established such a trap? It shouldn’t be to intentionally kill off any successors that came here, right…?

All these thoughts raced through Sheng Mei’s mind. She couldn’t imagine just what matters occurred in the years when the Demon God’s Tomb was being formed.

Perhaps this used to be a mystic realm with lucky chances, but afterwards a trap evolved from within it...

“Let us wait a moment and see if that Great Flood Crown Prince retreats or advances... we still haven’t managed to find out anything about this underground existence...”

As Sheng Mei spoke, the several Empyrean abyssals beside her wiped off their dripping sweat. “Waiting is also good, waiting is also good...”

These abyssals were well aware that their side was far weaker than that of the Great Flood Crown Prince. Even if there was some world-shocking lucky chance in the lake, the most likely conclusion was that the Great Flood Crown Prince would take the greatest benefits. As for abyssals that might die, it would most likely be them...

At this time, Lin Ming suddenly said, “Perhaps... there isn’t anything underground at all...”

His words left everyone stunned.

“Mm? What do you mean?” Deep Echo asked.

“Perhaps this world itself can devour life and swallow flesh and blood... those abyssal Empyreans that were eaten were not ambushed by some underground monster, but by the earth itself… and that killing lake is similarly part of this world, or even the center of this world…”

Lin Ming spookily said, his words quiet and chilling.

The world itself could swallow the life and flesh and blood of others?

“Why would you say that?” Deep Echo’s tone changed. In the face of such a speculation, even a True Divinity would find it difficult to remain relaxed.

“It’s just my personal feeling, there isn’t any actual basis behind it…”

Everything Lin Ming said had only come from his own feelings. He always thought that there was something off with this world, something evil about it.

“Feeling…”

Sheng Mei took a deep breath and quietly traced the bone sword in her hands. She also felt this entire situation was ominous.

But now, they could only continue forwards. The original entrance to this mystic realm had been sealed away, and wanting to find another wouldn’t be easy.

The Great Flood Crown Prince also seemed to realize this point. Without any hesitation he ordered the Empyrean level abyssal leading the way, “You, enter the lake!”

“What!?”

Hearing this order, the Empyrean abyssal was incensed. This was the same as ordering him to his death!

“Humph!”

The Great Flood Crown Prince was already in a poor mood. Seeing that this Empyrean abyssal seemed as if he wanted to revolt, the Great Flood Crown Prince grasped out at the void and formed a giant demon claw.

This demon claw grabbed the Empyrean abyssal and picked him up.

“Ahh!”

The abyssal wailed out loud. The Great Flood Crown Prince’s demon claw contained a profound and exquisite force field that imprisoned the Empyrean abyssal’s energy and movement. Without any ability to resist, the abyssal was tossed into the lake waters like a sack of grain.

Peng!

The lake water blew open, like a dumpling being tossed into a pot of boiling water.

The abyssal cried out loud. He tumbled about in the lake, struggling to rise up.

All the watching abyssals held their breath as they looked on intently with supreme concentration. If this abyssal were melted away into bones by the lake waters, or if there was some unknown existence that rushed out from the lake all of a sudden and dragged this abyssal below, or perhaps even eating the abyssal whole, then no one would be surprised.

But, this abyssal continued to struggle for a long time and was completely alright. Let alone dying, his scales hadn’t even fallen off.

“He’s still fine after falling into the lake?”

Some abyssal commented.

“Wait longer.”

The Great Flood Crown Prince was extremely calm. Just because something didn't happen at the start didn't mean nothing would happen later. He kept his force field locked onto the abyssal, making it so that he couldn't rise back up from the lake.

But after several breaths of time, he still wasn't satisfied. He grabbed another Empyrean abyssal from a small influence that was standing beside him and tossed him into the lake waters.

With another cry of fear and alarm, two abyssals flailed in the lake.

The lake waters churned and the waves grew larger and larger.

But, nothing happened to the two abyssals and one of them even loudly cursed out at the Great Flood Crown Prince.

This abyssal vented his anger with curses and the Great Flood Crown Prince's complexion darkened. But at this time, he couldn't be bothered with the babblings of cannon fodder. He wanted to toss more Empyrean level abyssals into the water, but just as he was about to do so, something seemed to bubble up from the center of that dark gray lake.

Gudong! Gudong!

Giant air bubbles rose up from the bottom of the lake at an ever-increasing pace, becoming increasingly dense, as if some super monster was about to rush out.

All of the abyssals felt their hearts tighten. As for the two abyssals in the lake, their faces were paper white.

If a monster were to come from this lake then the first ones to suffer disaster would be them. They wouldn’t even be enough to work as an appetizer.

Peng!

With a loud explosion, a giant column of water split upwards from the lake. Then, a storm stirred up on the surface of the lake, causing raging waves that swelled out in all directions.

“This is…”

Many abyssals were shocked. Such a storm covered the skies and earth, seeming as if it would swallow them all.

Without a need for words, all abyssals started to rapidly retreat from this storm.

But at the same time the storm suddenly intensified in strength. An irresistible tearing strength emerged, and in the center of this lake space violently trembled as if it couldn't resist the strength.

"This is…!?"

"Space is trembling?"

Many abyssals looked at the space trembling in the center of the lake, panic-stricken. It had to be known that the space within the Demon God's Tomb was incredibly stable, so how could it possibly tremble like this?

Then, just as they thought this, a horrifying scene occurred.

The trembling of space grew even stronger. Then, a small hole was torn open. Although this opening was only the size of a fist, it was still torn open!

A terrifying strength had ripped open the space within the Demon God's Tomb!

"How is this possible!?"

This thought flashed through the minds of all abyssals watching. And then, without any time to react or think, an irresistible vortex swept out from that torn space and all abyssals were sucked into it!

Bang!

The surface of the lake blew open. The Great Flood Crown Prince, Lin Ming, Sheng Mei, all abyssals sank to the bottom of the lake…

In that moment, Lin Ming could feel whistling in his ears. The high speed he was being drawn in at caused his body to form friction with the lake water, making him extremely hot.

This lake was far deeper that he had imagined.

Although he was sinking at such a speed, he still couldn’t see the bottom of the lake.

Slowly, Lin Ming discovered that his consciousness seemed to be separating from his body. For a time, the surroundings turned blurry.

“This is…”

Lin Ming was startled. If his consciousness were to leave his body at this time then it would undoubtedly be incredibly dangerous. But, beneath the pull of that massive tearing strength, he felt as if his soul would be torn apart; it was simply unbearable.

If this were to continue then his spiritual sea would fall into illusion!

Lin Ming's mind quaked. He possessed the Eternal Soul and thus he always had full confidence in the intensity of his soul. Even so, he couldn't resist this force, proving just how horrifyingly formidable it was.

"Magic Cube!"

Suddenly, a bright light dazzled in Lin Ming's mind.

He immediately connected his divine sense with the Magic Cube. Suddenly, the mystical and ancient aura of the Magic Cube poured into his spiritual sea.

Lin Ming's consciousness gradually woke up a little. He barely managed to move his eyes and look all around him.

The surroundings were pitch black, but this couldn't block Lin Ming's vision. Still, what he saw left his heart sinking to the pit of his stomach.

Beside him, the Empyrean abyssals, as well as Deep Echo and Sheng Mei, were already in an unconsciousness condition...

MW Chapter 2148

Chapter 2148 – Sheng Mei's Past Life (A)

…

…

…

"Holy Demoness, can you hear me?"

Lin Ming tried to send Sheng Mei a true essence sound transmission, but he didn't obtain any response.

At this time, Sheng Mei's complexion was pale and her eyes were shut tight. Her eyelashes quietly shivered; it was clear that Sheng Mei, as well as the many abyssals all around, weren't able to resist that massive soul-tearing strength just now and their minds had fallen into illusion.

"This is…"

Lin Ming's brows pressed together. If he hadn't been for the Magic Cube then he feared that he too wouldn't have been able to withstand that strength.

Lin Ming noticed that many abyssals had pained expressions, as if they were experiencing something terrifying.

At this time, as the vortex continued to spin, all of the abyssals were scattered farther and farther apart from each other.

Lin Ming watched helplessly as the abyssals of the Deep Alliance as well as Sheng Mei were all flung increasingly far in their entranced state.

As for deeper within, he could no longer see the abyssals of the Flood Alliance.

"Just what was that soul-tearing strength?"

Lin Ming grimaced. After a moment, he loosened the connection between his soul and the Magic Cube.

In that instant, the soul-tearing strength roared at him once more.

Lin Ming’s divine soul was held by the Magic Cube. Slowly, he allowed his consciousness to free itself.

Currently, Lin Ming could be said to be in a half-dream, half-awake state. As long as he wanted to he could plunge his thoughts into the Magic Cube to free himself from the condition, but right now he wanted to know just what mysteries were contained in this mystical soul-tearing strength.

Gradually, Lin Ming felt his body become increasingly light. The endless lake waters around him vanished, and in the next moment he arrived in a beautiful world lit up with dappled sunlight…

“This is…”

He was stunned. He could see a giant structure before him as well as the signboard above the complex that had the words ‘Seven Profound’ written on it in large, flowing characters.

Seven Profound Martial House?

Upon recalling the name of this martial house, Lin Ming felt as if everything that happened was a lifetime ago.

This was the beginning of Lin Ming's road of martial arts. After tracing back to the start, this was something that happened over 12,000 years ago.

12,000 years. To long-lived martial artists that might live for hundreds of millions of years, 12,000 years was only an extremely short period in their life. For some, a long period of seclusion might take 10,000-20,000 years.

But to Lin Ming, these 12,000 years were an incomparably distant matter.

"Could what this soul-tearing strength be dragging back are dust-laden old dreams from deep in my memories? It wants me to relive these events?"

Lin Ming looked up at the signboard of the Seven Profound Martial House in this dream and began to walk forwards.

As he expected, he saw many familiar people from the past.

Zhu Yan, Lan Yunyue, Qin Ziye, Qin Xingxuan…

There were even some characters that were hidden deep in his memory and that he normally wouldn't recall. For instance, that girl in the Seven Profound Martial House who he always had a favorable impression towards, but whom he had lost news of later, Bai Jingyun…

Lin Ming watched from the viewpoint of an outsider, calmly looking at the life he had lived.

He gradually understood that after entering this killing lake, the soul-tearing strength that acted on them perhaps might be some sort of test on a martial artist's divine soul.

If a person's mind wasn't firm then it was easy to fall into this dreamland and never be able to disentangle themselves from it.

Lin Ming's mind stirred. The scenes of the Seven Profound Martial House shattered and then the experiences from the South Sea Demon Region came flooding in.

Familiar characters, familiar locations, all sorts of scenes took the stage.

He saw Divine Phoenix Island, saw the invasion of the South Sea Demon Region.

He saw himself entering Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, saw himself being mistakenly assumed as dead, saw that Ouyang Boyan who had a grudge with him move against Qin Xingxuan and try to have her killed on Blood Demon Island.

After emerging from that Divine Phoenix Mystic Realm, he learned of this news and in his fury he rushed out on a vermillion bird, passing hundreds of thousands of miles to reach Blood Demon Island and save Qin Xingxuan.

This was one of Lin Ming's deepest and most profound memories. When he successfully rescued Qin Xingxuan from the jaws of death, this allowed him to truly understand how happy he was to not lose someone he loved.

However, in these dreamland memories, what replayed itself was actually completely different.

He saw himself fly to Blood Demon Island. The moment he found Qin Xingxuan, a blood demon rushed at her, opening its ravenous jaws and biting down on her neck!

At this moment, the despairing Qin Xingxuan saw him. As she did, all sorts of emotion flooded her face. Love, joy, regret…

Lin Ming's heart tightened and he found it impossible to remain indifferent. He wanted to move to save Qin Xingxuan, but he found that his speed became incomparably slow. From a True Divinity level of strength, he found that he had dropped down to that mere Houtian realm he had been at when he first saved Qin Xingxuan.

Like this, he could only stare blankly on as that blood demon bit down on Qin Xingxuan's neck.

Blood gushed out. All the emotions on Qin Xingxuan's face froze, as if time itself had come to a standstill.

The smiling Qin Xingxuan and the blood that dripped down from her formed a sharp contrast.

No –

Lin Ming cried out in alarm, in fear.

In the next moment, Lin Ming fiercely bit down on his tongue to sober himself.

"This is false!"

Lin Ming took a deep breath, violently gasping. He told himself this so that he could rid himself of that horrifying dream just now.

In the depths of his mind, Lin Ming knew that what he saw wasn't real. Moreover, his divine soul had always been stabilized with that faint connection with the Magic Cube. Even so, when Lin Ming saw that scene just now it was like he had personally experienced it, and in his anger and sorrow he had nearly fallen into illusion, unable to drag himself out.

"What a terrifying dreamland..."

Lin Ming was bewildered. Even he had barely managed to avoid falling into illusion. Then, what about the other abyssals here?

Lin Ming still didn't withdraw himself from the dreamland.

He wanted to take a good look for himself and what this strange soul-tearing strength was going to do.

Then, scenes continued to replay themselves.

These scenes were all things that Lin Ming had truly experienced in the past. However, instead of how they had truly ended, everything took a turn for the worse.

When competing for the Nirvana Dragon Root in Demon God Imperial Palace, Lin Ming saw his schemes be seen through by Xuan Wuji – as a result, he was executed where he stood.

In the bronze temple facing Yang Yun, Lin Ming saw his body being seized by him. From that point on, his body was possessed by Yang Yun and that strange and sinister smile hung on his face from then on.

Then, facing Tian Mingzi in the Asura Road, Lin Ming saw himself being the one that was killed.

Halfway through his life adventures, he saw the Magic Cube being discovered. He fled through the world but eventually he was discovered by someone and his soul was pulled out and refined.

He even saw the Good Fortune Saint Son defeat him and take Xiao Moxian for his own.

He saw the Good Fortune Saint Son brutally ravage Xiao Moxian. In that moment, Lin Ming's soul nearly fell into illusion once more.

Peng!

Lin Ming punched out at the scene before him and the diabolically grinning Good Fortune Saint Son shattered into fragments. Lin Ming gasped for breath. The scenes in this dreamland were of things he feared the most!

If he weren't for the Magic Cube, Lin Ming didn't know if he would have been able to withstand all of this…

“What a fierce dreamland. I have the Eternal Soul so I should be fine for now, but what about the others? For instance Sheng Mei…”

Lin Ming remembered Sheng Mei, this woman that he wasn’t sure was a friend or enemy. As he thought of her he inevitably worried.

If Sheng Mei didn’t have any heart demons then it would be good.

But if she did have a heart demon, then she would be incredible danger in this soul dreamland!

Lin Ming could be called someone with a firm will and iron determination. But, even he didn’t dare say he didn’t have any heart demons.

The so-called heart demons were things that a martial artist longed for the most, or feared the most.

The stronger these obsessions were, the stronger the heart demons were.

Moreover, the more powerful a martial artist the more formidable these heart demons would become. Once these types of dreamlands appeared, or in a critical moment when trying to make a breakthrough, these heart demons might appear to haunt the martial artist and cause problems. If they suddenly manifested, it was possible that a martial artist could go crazy or fall into depravity.

“Sheng Mei, would she have heart demons?”

Lin Ming mumbled. He didn’t know why, but a foreboding premonition suddenly rose in his heart…

……..

In the dark gray lake waters, the vast vortex continued to wildly spin about. A peerless woman in black clothes was being spun about in these lake waters. Her thick and luscious hair fell about her, fanning out in the lake waters like a black rose in full bloom but also wilting.

At this time, Sheng Mei’s complexion was pale white, without the least bit of red remaining…

After experiencing the complete nine reincarnations and tempering her divine soul for all this time, she had become incomparably formidable in this aspect. In fact, when it came to the soul, she wasn’t much worse than Lin Ming.

However…

Her heart demons were also incomparably powerful.

In her divine soul, there were far too many things she longed for and feared…

……..

In a giant circular building similar to an area, a seven or eight year old little girl was standing in the center.

She had bright black eyes and her little arms seemed carved from jade. Her face was fresh and cute like a ripe apple, a completely lovable little child.

On her face, if one searched carefully, they could find shadows of the current Sheng Mei.

Such a lovable little girl actually had a face stained with blood. Her arms were also covered with blood. Her small jade-like arms were grasping a large sword.

This sword was longer than the little girl was tall. She only barely managed to hold onto it with both hands.

Along the sword's thick hilt, blood continued to drip downwards. On the ground around the little girl was scattered pieces of flesh and puddles of blood. Organs, incomplete corpses; this area resembled a slaughterhouse.

The little girl lowered her head and supported herself on the large sword. She gasped for breath.

"Are you ready to continue?"

At this time, a faint voice echoed out.

The little girl was startled up. She looked up and from beneath her bangs, a doll-like face was revealed. From between her eyebrows, a single vertical red mark appeared, like the petal of a flower.

"I… am tired…"

The little girl muttered with difficulty. But at this time, from not too far away, an old man appeared.

This old man was thin but his build was naturally tall and wide. His face was deep and profound and he emitted a majestic aura. He wasn't a spiritas nor was he a saint – he was someone of the primal god race.

“On the battlefield, the enemy will not give you time to rest…”

As the old man spoke he gently waved his hand. From not too far away, an iron gate was opened.

From behind this iron gate, black life forms wrapped in chains appeared.

These were… abyssals!

Moreover, because of some sort of reason, these abyssals had lost their minds and had turned crazy.

Roar - !

Dozens of abyssals roared out together. As they looked at the little girl, their eyes were filled with bloodthirst and killing intent.

MW Chapter 2149

Chapter 2149 – Sheng Mei’s Past Life (B)

…

…

…

Of these abyssal demons, the vast majority were originally of the kind that possessed low intelligence. After being stimulated by a secret technique, they had gone crazy and were now no different from wild beasts.

Seeing this little girl, these abyssals instantly became ferocious.

Ao!

The crowd of abyssals howled as they rushed towards this little girl!

Seeing these vicious and murderous abyssals, the little girl clenched her teeth. She wielded her sword and brought it slashing down. Sword light sparkled as abyssal after abyssal was cut apart by her!

Countless corpses littered the ground. Blood dyed her face, her clothes, drenched her entire body in the thickly rank smell of blood, as if she were someone that had crawled out from the blood ponds of hell.

For such a cute little girl to be drenched in thick blood, this formed an incredible visual impact. It was hard to imagine that the surrounding scene had originated from her hands.

The old man looked on indifferently as the abyssals rushed forwards. He only waved his hand and another group of wild abyssals flushed out of another gate.

These abyssals were even more formidable than the previous ones. They howled out as they raced towards the little girl…

Year after year, the little girl experienced endless and untold amounts of slaughter.

Many times, because her enemies were too strong, she was nearly torn to shreds by the abyssals.

Or sometimes she was severely wounded, suffocating on the verge of death.

But each time, as she lay dying, she would be put into a pot of boiling medicinal solution, suffering agonizing torment as she slowly recovered from her wounds.

She grew stronger and stronger and her cultivation grew higher and higher. Every inch of her flesh experienced inexhaustible tempering. From a young child she slowly grew up into a young girl.

At some unknown point, the singular red mark between her eyebrows became two.

Like two flower petals pressed in between her eyebrows.

Afterwards, she was tossed alone onto a vast wild plain.

Without pills, without supplies, she ventured through the wild plains on her own, encountering countless ancient great beasts and slaughtering them!

Without pills, she gathered everything she needed by herself. When she was injured she treated herself.

She passed a hundred million miles through a great desolate land, killing innumerable wild beasts all the while.

At this time, she had already become a woman whose beauty was capable of causing the downfall of nations. Her strength was outstanding. In the primal god race, her status was like the moon in the night sky, brilliant and glorious.

The flower petals between her eyebrows turned to three. When the third one appeared, she was locked on the reef of a small island deep in the sea.

This small island was the place where the bones of an ancient great emperor were buried. There was a giant force field that covered this land, and a normal martial artist would find it unbearable.

But this young girl was locked onto the ground here using chains.

With her slender and charming figure, she was tightly bound by these chains. The darksteel rings dug into her flesh and drew blood. On her beautiful body, fierce red marks were left behind.

And behind her were the rocky reefs. These reefs were not made from ordinary stones, but from extraterrestrial divine stones. These stones dug into her back, like countless needles thrusting into her body.

The chains weren’t common chains either. They were dragon trapping chains refined by an array formation grandmaster.

Not only could they bind the body they could also lock in one's divine soul.

In addition with the pressure from the great emperor force field, from the very start the young girl found it nearly impossible to breathe.

When the tides rose, infinite great waves would smash into her body. She withstood that crashing pain time and time again.

And after the tide retreated, the blazing hot sun would burn her body.

She lost all color. She lay there motionlessly, not even blinking her eyes, as if she had already become a jade statue.

She withstood such monstrous suffering, silently enduring it, patiently waiting...

No one came to check on her and no one delivered food to here. She could only stare off into the distance and the horizon that was covered with thick fog and the limitless sea and boundless sky that spread out before her.

As if she were already forgotten hereby the world. If she wasn't able to free herself, then she would simply die here.

Loneliness, despair, pain, such suffering could even make a brave man turn mad.

At the start, the young girl felt extremely helpless. But slowly, she discovered remnants of the mysterious great emperor’s Laws. And, she discovered that the roiling heaven and earth origin energy here was a hundred times richer than the outside.

She started to perceived the Laws, day in and day out.

Every morning she would lick the darksteel chains, drinking in the morning dew that had gathered on the cold metal. She would breathe in the purest power of the world here.

She constantly saved her strength, constantly raised her strength.

Until one day, as her strength rose higher and higher she finally broke through her bottleneck and her strength rose to a whole new level!

Like a phoenix bathing in the fires, on the verge of death she experienced her own nirvanic rebirth!

Bang!

She smashed apart the iron chains that bound her body and blew apart the divine stones behind her. With a loud and clear cry, she blazed into the boundless blue skies!

In that moment, she experienced another sublimation of her strength and experiences, another transformation.

Amongst her contemporaries, there was already no one capable of competing with her strength…

…….

Battle, slaughter, cultivation…

Her enemies ranged from abyssals, to endless wild beasts, and back to infinite waves of abyssals. Although she had a beauty that could fell kingdoms, she had never once experienced the love between a man and woman.

All she knew was blood.

All she knew was fighting.

And everything that occurred to these peerless woman flowed into Sheng Mei's inner world.

As if this were a life she had experienced, an incomparably real life.

However, this seemed to only be a dream that had nothing to do with Sheng Mei. Because in her memories, Sheng Mei simply couldn't find these scenes.

Just who was the young girl in the dream?

That beautiful woman had an appearance completely similar to that of Sheng Mei. And between her eyebrows, there was also the mark of a red lotus; that was the symbol of the nine revolutions of reincarnation…

As if she were dreaming, as if she were awake, Sheng Mei could no longer distinguish if she were Sheng Mei or the woman in this dream…

After experiencing untold years, this dream woman's strength now stood at the highest levels of the universe. The red lotus between her eyebrows had long since reached perfection, and what Sheng Mei saw next left her gasping on her own breath.

She saw in the limitless vast space, there was a floating dark continent.

And on this continent were bones, endless bones!

Some of these bones were in the shape of people, some were in the shape of fierce monsters, all sorts of wild beasts, and even some bones in the shape of God Beasts that extended for thousands of miles.

Of these skeletons, all of them emitted an incredibly terrifying aura. If the bones of a weakling were placed within, they would immediately be crushed into dust by the pressure!

Without a doubt, only the remains of peerless powerhouses were on this dark continent.

It was unimaginable just how so many peerless powerhouses had died here.

Looking at the bones, one could see that they had died around the same time.

From this, one could speculate that this was an incredibly brutal war that involved countless peerless powerhouses!

The peerless woman stood above these endless bones, as if she were on another world.

She was barefoot, wearing a long black dress that flowed down her like water. Divine brilliance poured from her, sprinkling down onto her body, shrouding her in a faint hazy glow.

Her aura seemed to merge together with the one. In this brutal and savage world, she seemed completely out of place.

In her life, she had experienced endless slaughter. But at this time she was like a single orchid in a profound canyon, ethereal and otherworldly, her snow white skin untainted by mortal affairs.

Even this dark and ominous battlefield that was covered in layers of killing intent seemed to have nothing to do with her.

And at this time, in front of the woman, something appeared.

This was... a purple card.

The small card was only the size of a palm. And carved on this card were countless strange and indecipherable marks.

These marks were ancient and mystical. Just by looking at them, one felt as if their soul would fall within.

The card was like a fluttering butterfly, flying around this peerless woman.

The woman looked at this card. From within her bright eyes, infinite sorrow and regret seemed to appear…

However, all these complex feelings eventually returned to peace and serenity. There was no longer any waves in her mood.

The card fluttered about, slowly flying towards the peerless woman’s forehead.

Then… gently, gently, gently… it cut into the jade-like flesh of the woman’s forehead.

The nine petal red lotus was torn apart by the purple card, instantly fading…

Blood gushed out and all of it was absorbed by the purple card. Then, endless crimson light dyed this dark gray world…

In that moment, the world seemed to regain all its color. Infinite life essence recklessly gushed out from the woman. More and more light blazed from the woman’s body. Like a black phoenix burning itself, she dazzled with blinding brilliance!

Because of this woman's brilliance, this dark world was filled with beautiful colors once more.

The woman burned everything she was without reserve. The final flash of brilliance of her life seemed to turn into eternity…

MW Chapter 2150

Chapter 2150 – Heart Demon

…

…

…

The moment that dream woman turned into a brilliant flash of light, Sheng Mei felt as if a sword had been stabbed into her heart. With a stuffy cough, her divine soul suffered excruciating pain as if she was being torn asunder.

In front of Sheng Mei, that dazzling divine light became increasingly strong, blotting out the skies. Like millions and billions of suns crashing down onto the world.

That black continent melted away.

And above that continent, the endless skeletons were sucked in by this strength, shattering and disintegrating!

The force fields inherent within these skeletons, the energy emitted from these peerless powerhouses after they died, everything was swept up into that blinding brilliance, turning into a kaleidoscope of colors that swirled into a giant vortex!

This vortex swallowed the continent, completely refining it!

Endless runes came shrouding down. The earth seemed to turn into a magic tool. The Purple Card fluttered in the center of that continent, giant ripples of energy pulsating outwards.

Then, as if it were being grasped by some great invisible hand, this continent was pushed towards another world, slowly suppressing it!

For a time, infinite tracts of space were cracked. Horrifying space storms stirred up, but nothing was able to stop the advance of this continent.

It was irresistible!

In the blinding brilliance, the continent became increasingly thin as it was refined. However, the energy within was being compressed to an infinite degree.

All the skeletons atop were refined, turned into endless fragments that tumbled about in the air.

As for the energy of those skeletons, all of it fused together in the center of this continent – the Purple Card.

This card seemed to be the center of all energy in the universe. As long as anything could be turned into energy, nothing was able to escape its control.

These skeletons, whether it was life forms of the 33 Heavens, God Beasts, or even abyssal demons, whether it was the power of divinity, the power of demons, the power of monsters, all of it was entirely absorbed by the Purple Card.

Finally, this continent turned into a giant wall of light that turned towards that mysterious dark world and ruthlessly came suppressing down on it.

Bang!

With an indescribable explosion, the world seemed to collapse.

That giant and profound dark world that hid in the void trembled, trembled…

It was like the apocalypse had arrived, as if the great Shattering were beginning once more!

In that moment, Sheng Mei's divine soul violently shook. She suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood and the chaotic dream she saw shattered, turning into endless fragments.

Her face was pale white and her entire body streamed with dripping sweat.

Everything she experienced in that dream just now was far too real, as if she had lived tens of thousands of years in it. But when she woke up from that dream, it was as if only a mere moment had passed.

She experienced inexhaustible scenes in that dream, but as she tried to recall them, they were somewhat blurry…

Yet even though she already couldn't recall many of the scenes, Sheng Mei still deeply remembered those final moments.

She remembered that dream woman burning away her life, refining those endless skeletons to forge that giant crystal wall with the Purple Card, and then maliciously suppressed that dark world with the crystal wall.

That mysterious dark world gave off an incredibly familiar feeling to Sheng Mei – it was the Dark Abyss

And above the Dark Abyss lay the Eternal God Wall, a barrier that isolated the Dark Abyss from the 33 Heavens. It was a wall that had existed there for 10 billion years.

And in her dreams, Sheng Mei had actually witnessed the birth of the Eternal God Wall.

The black-clothed woman burning away her life in a flash of brilliance, the suppression of the crystal wall, that apocalyptic scene, all of it became a mark that was forever branded in Sheng Mei’s mind!

“She is…”

Sheng Mei took a deep breath and earnestly tried to recall what she remembered. She wanted to seek out how she was related to that mysterious woman in her dreams.

However, just as she felt as if she had caught hold of something, she felt as if her spiritual sea was being torn apart once more.

Such fiercely aching pain was like a heavy hammer that brutally smashed down on her head. She felt her legs soften and her surroundings turn dark. In the next moment her consciousness became blurry once more…

She seemed to begin yet another long dream.

Countless mixed scenes appeared in this dream, and she saw many familiar characters.

Of these many faces, some were friendly, some were kind, some were disgusted, some were filled with hatred...

And finally, a youth's face appeared, seeming as if it took up the entire dream.

This youth had pale white skin and cloudy eyes, as if he were a dead man walking.

Soul Emperor!

Seeing this old youth, a cold light flashed in Sheng Mei's eyes. She was utterly unable to resist the Soul Emperor. But towards this evil man, what she felt the most was not fear, but hatred!

Bang!

A beam of divine thought burst out from between the Soul Emperor’s eyes and crashed into Sheng Mei’s inner world. Sheng Mei’s mind shook and space tumbled about her. As she opened her eyes once more, she discovered she had arrived in a world where the heaven and earth origin energy was extremely thin, but a world that was also extremely peaceful…

“This is…”

As this world appeared, Sheng Mei felt something that nearly left her gasping for breath.

This was the Sky Spill Continent, Lin Ming’s hometown!

Could it be…

Sheng Mei’s body quivered, as if she were living a waking nightmare.

This was something hidden deep in her memories, a box she wasn’t willing to open. Like a scar she couldn’t bear to see, she simply couldn’t face it.

She dreaded experiencing this scene, she truly didn’t want to…

However, in this scene before her, what she feared the most slowly happened. She saw – Lin Ming.

At this time, Lin Ming was lying despondent on the ground of his home world, looking at Sheng Mei.

At this moment, Sheng Mei wanted to withdraw, but she discovered that a flow of heat surged in her belly.

This flow of heat spread through her limbs and bones. She turned around and saw that not too far away, there was an old tree that looked as if it were molded from a horned dragon.

And on that old tree there had originally been two fruits. But, these two fruits had already disappeared.

Sheng Mei’s heart shook. She certainly remembered preparing this fruit tree for Lin Ming. It originated from the Dark Abyss, a type of enchanted fruit that inflamed one’s basest sexual desires.

In the past, without a road to take, she had chosen to use these enchanted fruits.

But now she didn’t want to experience this scene once more.

She revolved the strength in her body, wanting to drive out the medicinal strength of this fruit. But, she discovered that no matter how she tried, she simply wasn't able to move any of the energy within her.

As if this body wasn't her own.

Sheng Mei took and deep breath and suddenly understood what was occurring. This was her dream, and ultimately her true self was only a wandering traveler through this dream. No matter what she tried to do she couldn't change the dream. She could only stand here and experience it once more…

"If you are destined to be destroyed, then you might as well… be destroyed by my hands…"

These were words that Sheng Mei once said to Lin Ming. These words reverberated in this dreamland, and as she heard them once more, she didn't know how she felt…

She closed her eyes, not wanting to watch the following scene. But soon she felt her clothes disappear, and then… the movement of bodies.

That was a masculine body unreservedly fusing with her own.

This sort of strange feeling gradually blended together with the burning heat in her body, making her soul tremble.

She never would have imagined that on this day, in her dream she would experience this extremely profound memory once more...

In the past she too had eaten that enchanted aphrodisiac fruit of the Dark Abyss, and her consciousness had also turned blurry. Although she remembered that unforgettable touch, her experiences at the time had still be blurry.

As if she were being mesmerized by an intoxicating spring dream, although she had reached the pinnacle of bliss, she had still done so in a half-awake, half-dream state.

And the difference now was that Sheng Mei was experiencing all of this completely sober.

She kept her eyes closed throughout. But, the continuous impacts that seemed to strike at her soul continued to pass over that original pleasure from beginning to end.

In her dream, besides not being able to control this body, she personally experienced everything!

Beneath the medicinal properties of the fruit, she felt a wild joy that left her breathlessly enchanted.

This was something she had never experienced before in her dry and repressed life.

But at the same time, she also felt the confusion and pain hidden in the depths of this man’s soul beneath her.

His life source, his soul source was being slowly weakened, drawn out from him…

It was like watching a brilliant star slowly fading away.

In particular, this fading man had an inextricably linked relationship with her. And his fall also came because of her.

Without noticing it, Sheng Mei felt a crystal clear and cool tear fall down from the corner of her eye, breaking apart like a pearl as it landed…

MW Chapter 2151

Chapter 2151 – Soul Tear

…

…

…

Pata!

That crystalline tear drop fell onto Lin Ming's face and gently broke apart.

In this confusing world, the sound of that teardrop was incomparably clear, like a sound that travelled through time and space.

This was a soul tear.

Some souls, when recalling their past pain and emotions, would leave behind tears…

Seeing this shattering soul tear, Sheng Mei humorlessly smiled. She knew just how pale and useless this tear was in such a situation.

Because… what had happened, could no longer be changed.

Moreover, even if that time returned, the result would still be the same. Because the situation at that time had been a dead end for Lin Ming…

In her lament, the joy she had felt in fusing together with Lin Ming once more slowly faded away.

At this time, Sheng Mei's soul had gone completely quiet.

She watched helplessly on as the only man in her life who had managed to stir up her love and hate started to slowly lose his soul and life source beneath her actions…

He had turned incomparably weak, like a star that had burned itself away.

In that moment, Sheng Mei felt as if her own soul had turned to ice.

She looked at the deeply sleeping Lin Ming who had already become crippled by now. She felt as if a knife were slowly digging away at her, cutting through her heart...

In the final moments she left behind a wisp of her source soul in Lin Ming. However, she knew that this wisp of her soul wasn't likely to play any useful function...

This was equal to saying that Lin Ming was already done for.

This was a man she had once wanted to leap out from this vortex of disaster with together. And now, she had personally destroyed him.

Before anything could begin, it was already over...

She quietly waited, her heart as desolate as a graveyard. In truth she only waited for several hours, but to her they were like a billion years.

At this time, the deeply sleeping Lin Ming quietly woke up.

He looked at Sheng Mei and bitterly smiled.

The grass was soft beneath them as a cool breeze blew past. The two looked at each other, this image captured in their minds for eternity.

At some unknown time, Sheng Mei finally spoke up.

These were words Sheng Mei had once said in the past. Now, she was listening to them once more as an outsider.

"Hate me..."

These didn't seem to be words directed towards Lin Ming, but words aimed at herself, torturous words that questioned herself and him.

"What reason do I have to hate you? If it wasn't for you then I would have already been killed by Soaring Feather and would be nothing but an icy cold corpse. In fact, I could even say that without you I would never have left the Soul World and would have already died to the Great Brahmic God King..."

As they were back then as they were now, Lin Ming's every word was clearly remembered by Sheng Mei.

She fell silent, listening to these words. Every word echoed in her ears and she could even recall them exactly...

Until Lin Ming said, “You really… are willing to resort to any means possible. In order to cultivate the Art of Eternal Life, you are even willing to use your body as a tool. In the mortal world there are women that can sell their bodies for money. And you, just what distinguishes you from them?”

These words scolded Sheng Mei as a whore. In the past they had stirred up great waves in her heart, but today they stirred up nothing. She simply sighed in sorrow.

Perhaps there really was no difference. She also couldn’t control her own fate, and her ending was equally sad…

It was over…

Sheng Mei knew that all of this was already predetermined. No matter how many time it repeated, the result would be the same.

Then…

Sheng Mei watched as she broke through the void, leaving the despondent and seemingly dead Lin Ming lying on the earth, as if there wasn’t a single trace of life left within him.

Her soul actually didn’t follow her dream self in departing. Rather, she stayed in the Sky Spill Continent and gazed at Lin Ming.

This left Sheng Mei shocked.

How could this be?

Sheng Mei didn’t know why. But slowly, her heart trembled. She had been looking at Lin Ming in the Sky Spill Continent for several days already.

She still hadn’t left with her dream self.

Faintly, something stirred up in her heart.

Could it be…

Could she see what Lin Ming experienced in the past? During that time, because of the existence of the Soul Emperor she was simply unable to keep track of Lin Ming. Moreover, after she left the Sky Spill Planet she went to the Dark Abyss.

But now she had such an opportunity in her dream.

In this dream, was everything that was occurring truly what happened to Lin Ming?

As Sheng Mei suddenly thought of this, she finally slowly shook her head.

Perhaps these were only assumptions that her mind came up with.

No matter how wise and amazing this Demon God's Tomb mystic realm was, it was impossible for it to learn of Lin Ming's memories and let her stand near him.

Even so, Sheng Mei still continued to gaze quietly on.

She wanted to see what Lin Ming had experienced, even if it were all in her imagination.

The years changed.

Spring went and fall came.

Sheng Mei quietly waited beside Lin Ming, like a ghost defending a grave.

And in this wilderness, Lin Ming seemed to fall into a permanent state of sleep. Fall leaves and dust fell upon his body, and even grass grew over him.

Sheng Mei's heart was heavy, but she held immeasurable patience.

She waited, always waited…

Until one day, Lin Ming slowly, slowly opened his eyes…

Shen Mei's heart skipped a beat and her complexion changed. It was clear just how unsteady her soul was at this time.

She watched at Lin Ming slowly stood up. The earth and weeds rolled down from his body. At this moment, it was like Lin Ming was crawling out from a grave.

Lin Ming walked forwards. It was unknown where he wanted to go.

Sheng Mei quietly followed behind.

She followed him as he crossed mountains, passed rivers, walked through seas, and climbed a mountain that pierced into the skies like a sword.

On the mountain summit, Sheng Mei saw two swordsmen that seemed as if they had just started on the road of martial arts. They were holding a martial meeting on the summit of this sword mountain.

“These are people that Lin Ming knew from the mortal world!”

Sheng Mei looked at Lin Ming and could see this from his eyes.

She watched as the two swordsmen engaged in a fierce contest in the air. She also saw Lin Ming drinking wine with the two after this martial arts meeting, and freely speaking with them.

In Sheng Mei’s eyes, these two swordsmen were as faint as particles of dust. If it weren’t for Lin Ming, she wouldn’t have been interested in half a word they said.

But as she did listen to them, what she heard left her astonished.

The words that the two swordsmen spoke contained an inexplicable truth.

In particular, what the blue-clothed swordsman said. His words about climbing towards the peak of martial arts seemed to touch her own heart…

In this world there are endless mountain peaks. But, there must be a single mountain that is the highest. The higher a mountain peak, the more difficult it is for me. And to me, the most terrifying, the most horrifying this is that I simply don't know where this mountain is…

I will never stop searching. I know that my vision is limited and I might never be able to find it, but I will climb up as I did before, unendingly. I do not need to truly reach the highest peak in this world, but as I climb, I will be more than happy to simply see that peak above me…

This is because when I climb to a new peak, my vision will expand further and I will be able to see where a higher peak lies. And when I climb up that new peak, I will find yet another higher one, and I will keep repeating this…

The words of this blue-clothed swordsman echoed in Sheng Mei's ears for a long time. Even her fighting spirit seemed to inexplicably stir a little from these words…

This fighting spirit was also suitable to her.

As for later when they spoke of life and wine, they left even greater waves in Sheng Mei's heart.

To savor the mellowness and spiciness of life, when the thoughts were truly muddled, perhaps that was when one could truly understand the mysteries…

The drunken blue-clothed swordsman's words left Sheng Mei startled.

It wasn't that the words he spoke contained some profound concept, but it was the appearance of words that should have never appeared in Sheng Mei's imagination that left her heart racing.

She had an inexplicable feeling. That was that everything she saw in this dream might not be an illusion, but what Lin Ming truly experienced in the past!

The various names of places, the description of Lin Ming's life, everything that these two swordsmen spoke of were full of vivid detail and life.

There were even concepts that she had never felt before.

The feelings of a martial artist were not like words of mortals that could be easily written on paper. Rather, they were things that they truly experienced, a sum of their adventures and philosophy on life.

It could be said that these feelings were their road of martial arts.

These two blue-clothed swordsmen's road of martial arts was thickly colored in the paint of mortals. But in Sheng Mei's mind, it was impossible for her to have such strange comprehensions.

Moreover, these feelings were clearly related to wine, but Sheng Mei herself didn’t drink wine, so how could she possibly come up with concepts of life and wine in this dream?

Could it be that what she saw before her wasn’t conjured from her imagination, but what Lin Ming truly experienced in the past?

Thinking of this, Sheng Mei’s heart shook!

MW Chapter 2152

Chapter 2152 – Unyielding

…

…

…

Why would Lin Ming's memories appear in her dream?

Or, how could the Demon God's Tomb have Lin Ming's memories?

Thinking of this, Sheng Mei was left confused.

She couldn't understand why. But all she could do now was quietly look on at Lin Ming's life.

Her heart trembled all the while.

She felt anticipation because she wanted to know of Lin Ming's life.

But what she felt more… was fear, fear that Lin Ming would die alone…

After she watched Lin Ming awaken, he bid farewell to the swordsmen and left that Sword Mountain.

She saw Lin Ming head up north, his body worsening with every day.

His cultivation fell at a dreadful speed; he had already become crippled.

Each day, each night, Sheng Mei would follow Lin Ming. Although his back was straight, it was actually filled with infinite desolateness and sorrow. She felt as if her heart was being shorn apart by a saber.

In the past when she left Lin Ming, she thought that he would face a bitter future. But as she truly experienced all of this following behind him, that feeling was completely different.

She was almost completely immersed, feeling for herself the mood of someone who had once stood at the peak of the 33 Heavens, a peerless genius who had saved humanity, but who had then been knocked off into the dust by a single move. Now, he only had several dozen years of life remaining…

Even though Lin Ming's will was firm and steady, he still couldn't resist such an attack.

Sheng Mei followed Lin Ming to Green Mulberry City.

She saw street vendors, fortune tellers, mortal martial arts masters, beggars, scholarly students, woodcutter, all sorts of mortals that she had never seen before.

Then, she saw a friendly aunt who gave Lin Ming sesame cake. As Lin Ming savored this sesame cake that was filled with the flavor of mortality, without knowing it, Sheng Mei's gaze had turned hazy…

She couldn't imagine how, when humanity was already close to despair, just how much Lin Ming withstood when he lost everything.

Perhaps… this was a fate crueler than allowing the Soul Emperor to freely kill him…

In Green Mulberry City, in the areas of his childhood, Lin Ming slowly visited each place.

Then Lin Ming continued north.

The northern desert was covered in fluttering snow. At some unknown time, Lin Ming's face had turned pale and bloodless, and he shivered all over as he coughed up blood.

Time and time again.

Sheng Mei knew that what Lin Ming coughed up was his blood essence.

Although his divine soul was weak, his mortal body was still incredibly powerful and could regenerate blood. However, it was impossible for such a weak soul to control such a formidable mortal body; it simply couldn't resist the exuberant blood vitality. Thus, his body tried to protect itself by coughing up all this blood.

If this continued then he would slowly die as his blood essence left him.

To Sheng Mei, every drop of crimson blood was blinding to the eyes.

She saw Lin Ming run into an old friend. Or, perhaps he had used his sense to find this person on his own initiative.

This was an old man, a man who had experienced the hardships of life to the fullest, and whose body was covered in hidden wounds.

She saw Lin Ming save a little girl.

This little girl’s eyes were pure and wide. Even in the chaotic age of war, when Lin Ming had become incomparably weak and fallen to the ground, only this little girl dared to give water to him.

She saw Lin Ming deal with several mortals. But because his body was wounded, blood continued to flow out...

A once incomparably talented individual had now become so thin and weak.

She saw Lin Ming bid farewell to these people, finally leaving by himself. His body had fallen to a horrendous state, and he limped with every step.

Sometimes, he would even tumble down as he walked.

His clothing was ruined, his hair was untamed and his face was dirty; he looked no different from a mortal beggar.

He wanted to enter a city, but in that wild age of war, a guard believed him to be a refugee and turned him away.

Lin Ming didn’t say anything nor did he do anything to that guard.

He quietly drew backwards and left. Beneath the setting sun, his thin and haggard figure became a needle that dug into Sheng Mei’s heart…

Vaguely, Sheng Mei’s surroundings seemed to blur. She remembered the words that Lin Ming had once said to her in the Soul World, before the great calamity of humanity had truly erupted…

“I remember… that when I was a mortal, an old friend of mine warned me not to be stubborn and practice martial arts. She didn’t want me to spend the rest of my days disabled on a bed. But, my answer was…

“The path of the martial artist is like a flame. Practicing the martial arts will only causepain. The dangers are countless and the road is filled with obstacles. Everyonewho walks down it will eventually turn to ash, but the true martial artist willbe reborn from these ashes. Even if I am only a small and weak moth, I willwalk into the flames without hesitation. I will fight my destiny for a one in amillion chance that I will experience my own samsara and be reborn as a flamingphoenix. And even now, I am no longer a moth…”

…..

I am not Empyrean Divine Seal. My road is one I will walk down myself. And the choices I make, I will not regret them in the future!

…

If only life stayed like the first time we met. Suddenly, looking back through the rivers of time, nothing fills the eyes but mist.

I must struggle in the dust and chaos. Even if I am only asmall wave, I will still bravely move forwards…

…

Sheng Mei was deeply aware just how persistent Lin Ming's heart of martial arts was, just how unyielding it was.

In the past she had once urged him to give up all thoughts of saving humanity. At that time, Lin Ming had only been at the Holy Lord realm. No matter how one looked at it, he was completely unworthy of mention compared to the great tide of destruction that would sweep over the world; he wouldn't even be able to cause a stir.

Once humanity perished, the small and weak Lin Ming would lose his protection. He would be swept up in the endless storm and likely destroyed.

But Lin Ming didn't give up. He arrived by himself in the Soul World, searching out an impossible alliance with the spiritas.

Then he fought in the primal god realm. For a ray of hope, he went to the primal god realm to search out a path of salvation…

But now, Sheng Mei could only watch the back of such a person as well as the red blood that dripped from him…

Just what kind of change was this…?

Sheng Mei's heart quaked.

Without following Lin Ming and experiencing all this for herself, she never realized just how bitter his struggle must have become.

"So many years have passed, he must have died already…"

Currently, everything that happened was from over 7000 years ago. And in any case, looking at Lin Ming's physical state, he wouldn't be able to last much longer.

But even so, Sheng Mei continued to follow him to confirm with her own eyes.

She saw Lin Ming go into a mountain valley to enter seclusion.

Sheng Mei saw with surprise that as Lin Ming's life reached the precipice of despair, he began to disperse his martial arts. His weak soul was unable to withstand the strength of his blood vitality and his cultivation. Thus, he simply chose to drop down his cultivation to a level that his soul force could withstand!

Without a doubt, this would rapidly reduce his remaining life, and even make his final years much more painful.

But he continued forwards without turning back.

As if he wanted to break himself apart and rebuild from scratch, as if he were a butterfly that wanted to break free from its cocoon!

How was this possible!?

Sheng Mei shook her head in disbelief. His soul was so weak and the fires of his life were like a candle in the wind. If he dispersed his cultivation here, then he might simply die where he was!

This was the end. Perhaps the phantoms she saw could last a few more years, and this valley was Lin Ming's final tomb.

All of this proved that the faint hope she had left within Lin Ming was something she did only to psychologically comfort herself for her own actions. Miracles could appear on Lin Ming's body, yet what she envisioned would occur to Lin Ming was not a miracle, but an impossibility.

She watched as Lin Ming dispersed his cultivation. Blue veins stuck out from his forehead and he began to scatter blood essence from his pores.

The pain of this could be imagined.

Even so, Lin Ming didn't cry out in pain once. His expression remained as firm as iron, without the least bit of pain or distortion.

He withstood such pain by himself, because he – would not yield!

Even if he had been pushed to a dead end!

Sheng Mei wasn't cruel enough to watch. She could already foresee the following result.

Time passed. Through endless pain, Lin Ming grit his teeth and forced himself through it.

One year, two years…

With a completely ruined body, Lin Ming clenched his teeth and continued onwards. A normal martial artist would have died from the pain already.

But Lin Ming's will was too formidable.

In these two years, the blood essence that overflowed from his body had already dyed the entire cave red. One could see the coagulated blood on the rocks.

Sheng Mei didn't know how many times she saw Lin Ming fall onto the floor in dry heaves, how many times his forehead dripped with beads of blood, how many times he broke through his lips by biting them, how deep his toes and fingers dug into the rocky soil as it mixed with his blood.

However, he still didn't give up. The unyielding will in his bones pushed him to give this his all!

Sheng Mei gently sighed, her eyes already becoming blurry…

MW Chapter 2153

Chapter 2153 – Child

…

…

…

Day after day, year after year.

Lin Ming continued his struggle in the cave, forcefully persisting for ten years!

Ten years later, Lin Ming already resembled an old man in his final years.

Although his back had been lonely, it had still be relaxed and straight.

But now his back was bent over with age.

His face was full of deep wrinkles and his eyes had become grim and dirty.

Sheng Mei could feel that Lin Ming would die soon.

The footsteps of the god of death rapidly approached. As someone who understood the Death Laws, how could she not feel the death energy emitting from within Lin Ming's body?

This was the end…

Sheng Mei closed her eyes, no longer able to endure watching on. Even so, her sense continued to lock onto Lin Ming's everything.

She watched as Lin Ming's eye turned from pure brilliance to dirtiness, and then from dirtiness to nothingness.

Afterwards, his body no longer moved and his atrophied muscles became completely paralyzed. His beating heart becoming weaker with each beat, and his tiny wisps of soul fire slowly dissipating into the world…

Lin Ming, had finally, truly… died.

In that moment, Sheng Mei realized that Lin Ming's spiritual sea had lost all color.

He still maintained his cross-legged sitting posture. In the final moments of his life, under extreme pain and duress, he still didn't give up rushing towards that one slim ray of hope that never existed to begin with…

For a genius that once shook the heavens and earth, this was the final result. In a lower world, in a barren mountain cave that had no name, he had died alone.

No one knew just what sort of great legend was buried beneath this small mountain.

At this time, Sheng Mei's face was wet with tears.

Although she knew that Lin Ming had died, she still quietly waited here. She continued to wait, feeling the entire time that a piece of her heart was being dug out.

She was determined to remember this place in her dream. In the future she would go back to the Sky Spill Continent, find this barren mountain hill and dig out Lin Ming's bones to bury in her own inner world…

Year after year, Sheng Mei waited in this cave. She no longer knew how long she waited here.

She thought she had waited long enough; it was time to return.

But as she thought of returning, she was left stunned. She wanted to return, but return to where?

She was lost, as if the part of her heart that had been dug out was part of her soul.

And with this part of her soul missing, she suddenly forgot the road back.

Or, perhaps there was no road to begin with.

In this great world, whether it was the 33 Heavens or Dark Abyss, there was nowhere that was family to her…

What was family?

Safety? Warmth? Affection?

In this world, was there some place that could make her feel safe? Feel warmth? Feel affection?

She faced pressure at all times. She faced people who harbored dark and sinister intentions towards her, faced factions that fought each other and mistrusted each other.

She simply didn’t have a family.

There was no place where she could relax. In fact, there wasn’t even a place that could make her feel at ease as she could by lying in this dark cave, beside this corpse.

Thinking of this, Sheng Mei felt forlorn. She no longer wished to leave.

She was like a wild lone ghost, wandering about by herself, no longer remembering why she was here. All that remained in her memories was to stand guard in this place…

She seemed to have lost something important. But as for what it was, she couldn’t think of it.

She didn’t know how much time passed. It seemed endless, as if there were no end in sight.

But at some casual moment, she suddenly saw an unbelievably faint glow light up over Lin Ming’s corpse…

That dim light seemed to twinkle from the corner of a cube. And on that cube, all sorts of ancient and mystical runes flashed.

And that dim light itself possessed an indescribably mysterious aura. Like this, it wafted in between Sheng Mei's eyebrows.

In that moment, in the depths of her soul, Sheng Mei shivered.

She seemed to awaken from a nightmare. As her body shook, the dreamland all around her shattered like glass!

Light flashed. Inexhaustible tattered thoughts flew around her. In a flash, Sheng Mei returned to a vast dark hall.

She dripped with a cold sweat as she gathered her scattered wits, recovering from the shock. She knew that she had nearly lost herself in that dream and had almost been unable to disentangle herself from it.

That was… a heart demon.

Everything she saw just now had become an incomparably strong obsession because of her heart demons, and what she saw tore at her soul again and again.

The marks that Lin Ming left in her memories were far too deep.

Sheng Mei's life was filled with gray. What she faced was a life without hope. And at this time, no one was able to become a pillar that supported Sheng Mei, because no matter who it was they would eventually be overtaken by her and cast away in the dust.

In truth, she was incomparably lonely. She needed someone that could accompany her.

But the only person who could accompany her had been personally destroyed by her…

The impact of such a heart demon could be imagined. When a martial artist faced a heart demon, the most terrifying thought was that… their dream world would be even better than reality, and they would no longer wish to awaken from that dream.

Once that happened, they were destined to be lost forever!

Even though Sheng Mei had passed through nine reincarnations and her divine soul was incomparably powerful, she still couldn't resist such a heart demon and in the end had nearly lost herself in that cave.

As she recalled that dream that seemed to have gone on for dozens of years, Sheng Mei discovered she could clearly remember everything about Lin Ming's life.

She remembered Lin Ming's hardship, downfall, resistance, everything was a vivid recollection that still twisted at her heart like a knife.

But in the final moments of that dream, there had been some unknown black sparkle of light that had allowed her to escape the clutches of her heart demons. As for what the light had been, she had no idea.

She didn't even know if that spark of light had truly existed or not. Had it only been an illusion?

Could it be an illusion formed by her heart demons?

Just what was it?

Sheng Mei felt that the spark of light was extremely familiar. She should have been able to think about what it was, yet as she tried, it became even blurrier in her mind.

But at this time, as she was deep in thought, Sheng Mei's heart chilled.

She could feel a terrifying aura approach.

She suddenly looked up. She could see a pale white youth with filthy eyes, whose body gushed over with rich death energy. This youth slowly emerged from the darkness to stand before her.

This old youth that resembled a corpse was the Soul Emperor!

Sheng Mei's heart shrank.

Seeing the Soul Emperor, normally she wouldn't been surprised. But why would the Soul Emperor appear in this scene? Was this a dream? Or reality?

She felt her memories were in chaos. Though she had just recently regained consciousness from that dream, she seemed to have forgotten something important, but she couldn't recall what it was.

"You..."

Sheng Mei opened her mouth to speak. But before she could finish speaking, the Soul Emperor looked at Sheng Mei's belly and diabolically grinned.

In that moment, Sheng Mei's entire body turned icy cold. She didn't fear the Soul Emperor to begin with, but as she realized something truly horrifying, she stood up tall, all blood draining out of her face!

The Soul Emperor pressed forwards, one step by one step.

Sheng Mei paled. She retreated, one step by one step.

Beads of sweat fell down from Sheng Mei's forehead. Because at this time, she realized just what might be happening.

Finally, the Soul Emperor forced Sheng Mei into a corner.

He cruelly smiled, pointing at her belly and saying, "You used the strength of your nine revolution red lotus to seal away the child in your stomach. Are you worried that the growth of that unborn child will take away a part of the totem abyssal strength I left within you, thus alarming me?

"You sealed away that fetus for 7000 years, and in addition to the time you spent in time enchantments, over 10,000 years have passed. You truly thought this out well!

"What do you plan on doing? Surely you aren't naïve enough to believe that you will be able to give birth to this child!"

Sheng Mei grit her teeth, not uttering a word. She quietly traced her spatial ring, already ready to bring out her bone sword.

“You want to resist me?” The Soul Emperor looked at Sheng Mei as if he had heard the funniest joke in the world. “Everything you have, I gave to you. Your cultivation methods were taught by me, and yet you actually think you can revolt against me! Hahahah!”

The Soul Emperor cackled and infinite killing intent burst out from him.

Then, his palm came crashing down onto Sheng Mei’s belly!

“No!”

Sheng Mei roared out loud. In this moment, she was like a mother tiger enraged at the injury of her cub, desperately attacking the Soul Emperor!

The black light of a bone sword leapt into Sheng Mei’s palm. Then, she turned towards the Soul Emperor and brought it mercilessly slashing down!

However, facing this sword, the Soul Emperor simply reached out two fingers and easily caught the blade!

MW Chapter 2154

Chapter 2154 – Awakened Dream

…

…

…

“This sword is quite good! The rate of your rising strength is such a pleasant surprise!”

The Soul Emperor laughed. At the same time, a horrifying force field spread out from him. It covered Sheng Mei’s entire body, instantly freezing her so that she couldn’t move an inch!

As for the Soul Emperor’s palm, after pausing for a moment, it continued to crash down on Sheng Mei’s belly with unstoppable momentum!

Roiling death energy swelled up beneath the Soul Emperor’s palm, causing the blood in Sheng Mei’s body to freeze over! She struggled to break free from the force field, however…

Peng!

A dull sound echoed out, as if something had been broken. Sheng Mei spat out a mouthful of blood as she tumbled backwards like a butterfly with torn wings.

In that moment, what was strange was that she didn't feel pain in her body. Rather, she felt as if in her life she had lost something of extreme importance, something that left her despondent and utterly discouraged...

Over?

It was all over...

This was originally nothing but an impossible dream to begin with...

Sheng Mei could feel her consciousness blur. As for the pain in her belly, it couldn't compare to even the tiniest percentage of the pain that wracked her heart.

She felt as if her entire life was laughable. She was well aware that from start to finish, she was only a tool.

She wanted to leave behind something in the senseless life she lived.

She had once placed hopes in Lin Ming, but Lin Ming had actually been personally destroyed by her.

She thought that there would never be color again in her life. But, when she left the Sky Spill Continent, departed the 33 Heavens and arrived at the Dark Abyss, she suddenly discovered that she was pregnant.

This was a matter that left Sheng Mei's heart completely bewildered.

Her state of mind was incomparably complicated. She never thought that she would experience such a day.

She never imagined that after sealing away her heart, dooming herself to a life of loneliness and sorrow, vowing to never contaminate herself with useless feelings and emotions, there would actually be a day when she was a prospective mother.

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were different races to begin with, so the chances of her becoming pregnant after sex was incredibly low. However, she had underestimated the strength of Lin Ming's bloodline.

The appearance of this child left Sheng Mei at a loss for what to do.

The father of this child had been personally destroyed by its mother. Moreover, because of a variety of reasons, there was no way she could somehow allow this child a chance to survive.

But at this time the Soul Emperor just happened to go into seclusion to refine the Eternal Soul.

Sheng Mei could temporarily guarantee this child's safety. However, she knew that once this child was truly born, it would inevitably stir up the mark and energy that the Soul Emperor had left in her spiritual sea.

Then the Soul Emperor would surely know what was happening. Although he might not be able to immediately catch up to her because he was in seclusion, once he emerged she would surely have to withstand his rage.

And this child would undoubtedly die.

Sheng Mei once thought she could let this child live the life of a thorough mortal. In the Dark Abyss, she could open up a beautiful world like one from the 33 Heavens. She could buy up numerous ancient race slaves, allowing them to become residents in this world and to thrive and live on.

Then, she could allow her child to be born. She could accompany her child, gazing at the clouds, watching flowers bloom and fade.

She could satisfy all her child’s desires and live a life of good fortune and happiness.

Watching her child from birth, she could watch her child slowly grow, learn to walk, marry someone, age, and eventually pass on in their sleep…

She could only give this child of hers a short and brief life, a full and complete life before the Soul Emperor left seclusion. She could have her child believe themselves a mortal, living in their own idealistic dreamland…

However… when Sheng Mei decided to do this, she hesitated once more. She couldn’t imagine what would happen once she poured all of her love and joy into this child, and what would be left of her after her child died…

To live on through memories?

A small bug that lived amongst the withered leaves and branches would never know the true beauty and greatness of the world. If one wished to see all the world had to offer, they had to step towards the peak of martial artists. But because there were too many fetters, it was impossible to strengthen one’s heart…

However…

If one were to abandon all their fetters, what would be left over of life?

In these days, Sheng Mei was lost in a helpless daze. She watched the child grow in her belly with every passing day, and she knew she couldn't sit back and allow this to continue.

Thus, she sealed away the growth of that child.

She found it hard to imagine her future, nor did she want to so easily arrange the future fate of her child.

But if this continued and the Soul Emperor were to leave seclusion, everything would be doomed to tragedy.

Sheng Mei felt as if she had rushed into a dead end. Would she also have to lose the only sustenance of her life…?

"Mama… why are you worried?"

As Sheng Mei was lost in confusion, a supple and weak child's voice echoed in her ears.

This voice seemed to touch the softest parts of Sheng Mei's heart.

Sheng Mei trembled!

She lowered her head and stared at her belly, her mind violently shaking like turbulent waves.

She could feel faint life fluctuations coming from her stomach.

This was her child, her flesh and blood!

In an instant, all the faith and will she had built up over the tens of thousands of years of her life instantly collapsed upon hearing the weak and tender voice of this child.

"Mama... I am so hot..." The child's voice blurred, seeming as if it were in extreme pain. "There is a fire burning me, I can't open my eyes..."

Fire?

Where did fire come from!?

Sheng Mei was left panic-stricken. She probed her belly with her divine sense, and what she saw left her drowning in a nine nether abyss!

There was a dark and ominous strength in her belly, like abyssal flames that burned away all. This strength wrapped around her child, wanting to melt away this tiny life!

This was the strength that the Soul Emperor had left in that palm just now!

“No!”

Sheng Mei felt as if someone were cutting open her heart with an axe. She placed her hands on her belly, using the power of her cold ice to neutralize the Soul Emperor’s evil strength and protect her child!

However, when Sheng Mei’s cold ice strength touched those dreadful abyssal flames, it was like snowflakes dropped in boiling water, instantly melting away.

The Soul Emperor’s strength was far too powerful. With her strength it was impossible to shake him.

The disparity was too great!

“Mama, I think I will die, it hurts so much…”

“No… no… my child, mama will save you. You must persist, you must fight on…”

Listening to the continually weakening child's voice, Sheng Mei’s heart was already crushed to pieces.

She hated her herself, hated herself for being weak!

What a ridiculous so-called proud daughter of heaven, what a pathetic peak of martial arts; she couldn’t even protect her own child!

“Mama… I can’t… last much longer… I have been inside mama for so long that I can’t remember… but I actually want to be born… I want to see mama…

“My mama… surely must be beautiful…”

That blurry child’s voice stopped here, like a dream that was suddenly shattered.

Sheng Mei's hands trembled and her soul shivered… but, there was no longer the tiniest sound coming from her belly, no longer the weakest life fluctuations.

Everything seemed as if it never existed to begin with…

"No… no… no!!!"

Sheng Mei grasped her belly with all her strength. Her nails pierced through her smooth flesh and dripped with blood. Her eyes turned blood red and her hair scattered out, like a demon of the night!

Her child had died.

In her life, she no longer had her final sustenance!

Sheng Mei looked up. From her eyes, two trails of blood red tears flowed out!

Soul Emperor!

She wished to eat his raw meat, drink his fresh blood!

In that moment, Sheng Mei burnt all the strength of her soul. Like an erupting volcano, it broke into her spiritual sea, forming a terrifying storm!

Kacha! Kacha! Kacha!

With the sound of something breaking apart, in Sheng Mei's mind, she burned away at everything with the horrifying storm formed by her soul.

She constantly attacked a black rune. This black rune formed a net of light that imprisoned this storm.

However, a crack suddenly appeared above this net of light!

The black rune couldn't persist for much longer!

Ka ka ka ka!

More and more cracking sounds filled the air and the rune became increasingly dim. This storm was unleashed and could no longer be tamed; it became increasingly powerful.

Cracks spread throughout the net of light, and then, the strength it locked in suddenly erupted.

Peng!

With a loud explosive sound, strength crazily swelled outwards. The net of light as well as the black rune were torn to shreds!

The black rune was a spirit mark that had been sealed away in Sheng Mei's spiritual sea. But at this moment, it blew apart to pieces!

Meanwhile, separated by endless space and time, in a dry and desolate soul sea of torment that seethed with innumerable bones...

Above this sea of torment sat a pale youth with snow-white hair. He sat on an island formed from piles of bones, meditating in quiet.

He had the appearance of a youth, but his body emitted a death energy that only a corpse should have.

This was the 33 Heavens' Soul Emperor!

After stealing Lin Ming's Eternal Soul in the Sky Spill Planet, he had gone into seclusion for nearly 10,000 years.

No matter how the waves of the soul sea stirred up, no matter how the bones floated, he was like a stone sculpture that remained unmoved for 10,000 years.

But today, his eyes flashed open.

He looked somewhere in the void, his filthy eyes flashing with profound astonishment.

“How... is this possible?”

The old youth stood up. His snow white hair fell down his back like a waterfall, making him look like a ghost.

His expression that was like a clear mirror that never saw any violent fluctuations of emotions for hundreds of millions of years, was now actually filled with amazement and disbelief.

MW Chapter 2155

Chapter 2155 – Regaining Consciousness

…

…

…

"She actually… broke through my… spirit mark? With her strength this should be impossible…"

The truth was that not to mention Sheng Mei, but even in the entire 33 Heavens and Dark Abyss combined, there wasn't anyone capable of undoing the spirit mark left behind by the Soul Emperor.

This was because this spirit mark had taken deep root within Sheng Mei's spiritual sea. Even if there was someone who possessed a soul force capable of rivaling the Soul Emperor's, if one tried to forcefully undo the spirit mark then it would cause Sheng Mei's spiritual sea to collapse.

Thus, this spirit mark could only be broken through by Sheng Mei herself.

The Soul Emperor reached out a bloodless white hand, the points of his fingers rapidly touching as he quickly deduced just what occurred. He wanted to figure out what this new turn of events was.

But bizarrely, he discovered that as he tried to investigate this matter, his efforts were hampered by layers of fog that blocked his sight so that he couldn't clearly see what was occurring.

"What is happening?"

The Soul Emperor frowned. He did not like having anything surpass his control.

He narrowed his eyes and looked deep in the sea of misery and the endless skeletons that floated above it. Eventually, he sat back down and his mind returned to serenity once more.

Although the spirit mark he left in Sheng Mei's spiritual sea had shattered, as long as he left seclusion then none of this would be a problem.

Currently, completely refining the Eternal Soul was the vital task at hand.

As for Sheng Mei, it was impossible for her to use this brief period of time to raise her strength to a level where she could escape his reach.

At this time, in the Demon God's Tomb, Sheng Mei's soul form had turned pale white without the least bit of blood. When she burnt her soul just now she had erupted with an unimaginable strength that had surpassed her present cultivation by several levels.

What should have been impossible had actually happened.

In the mortal world, during earthquakes when a mother saw their child being pressed beneath rubble, that delicate woman could actually erupt with a strength far surpassing that of an adult male, pushing apart stones that were several hundred jins to rescue their child.

What Sheng Mei just did was also the same.

This was a mother's strength.

However, because she overdrew on her soul, it left her extremely weakened afterwards. Moreover, because Sheng Mei was immersed in her heart demons, with her weakened soul it would be impossible for her to resist the invasion of these heart demons.

She had already... lost consciousness...

………

At this time, in the bottom of the killing lake, in a deep underground cavern, a towering abyssal was crouched near a corpse. This abyssal stretched out a finger to pierce into the arm of this corpse and slowly absorb the power of demon gods.

The impact of the heart demons just now had been terrifying in intensity. Because Lin Ming possessed the Magic Cube, he hadn't been affected the least.

He had also intentionally allowed himself to experience the attacks of the heart demons. Otherwise, he definitely would have been able to maintain his consciousness from beginning to the end.

Then, Lin Ming continued to be swept down by the vortex of the killing lake. After dropping for an unknown period of time, he was finally dropped into this deep underground cavern.

In this underground cavern there was not only him, but several other abyssals that had lost consciousness.

Lin Ming investigated them and discovered that these abyssals had already died.

During the test of the heart demons, the souls of these abyssals weren't strong enough to withstand it. In the end their souls exploded to pieces and their spiritual seas had collapsed. Their blood vitality also slowly faded away. Before long, they would become nourishment for this strange world.

Seeing this scene, Lin Ming sighed with emotion. Each of these abyssals was an overbearing tyrant of their own land. Yet in the Demon God's Tomb they were no different from cannon fodder.

It could only be said that the rank of this Demon God's Tomb was too terrifying.

Through the 33 Heavens and the Dark Abyss, in all the universes combined, this was the highest rank, and the most terrifying mystic realm to exist.

Lin Ming continued his search. He wanted to see if these abyssals had any valuable treasures they left behind, and while at it he could also use Famine's Swallowing Laws to absorb the bits of the power of demon gods still in these abyssals' bodies before it faded away.

But at this time, another unconscious body fell into the cavern.

Peng!

The sound of this body landing was much lighter; it couldn't be compared to the giant abyssal demons that crashed into the ground.

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He stretched out his sense to search out the source of that sound. If his luck was good he could find this abyssal just as they died and then he could absorb even more of the power of demon gods from them.

However, when Lin Ming found that body with his sense, he actually froze. The one who just fell was not anyone else but a black-clothed woman – Soul Empress Sheng Mei!

"Sheng Mei… did she withstand the impact of the heart demons?"

Lin Ming's mind tightened. After probing with his sense, he discovered that Sheng Mei still had a weak breath and heartbeat. However, she was deathly pale and her lips were blue. Her fires of life were weak and it was clear that she had overdrawn herself in the heart demon test just now.

Moreover, she was still immersed in her heart demons and hadn't awoken.

This left Lin Ming surprised. The impact of heart demons had indeed been terrifying but he had easily passed it using the Magic Cube. But even if he didn't use the Magic Cube, Lin Ming believed that with his Eternal Soul he could pay a certain price to persist through the heart demons.

In Lin Ming's eyes, after reaching perfection of nine reincarnations, Sheng Mei's divine soul was undoubtedly formidable. Although she couldn't pass this test as easily as he did, she should still have been able to do so without losing consciousness.

Lin Ming swept out his sense. The already unconsciousness Sheng Mei could not resist Lin Ming's sense. Lin Ming's sense entered into Sheng Mei's spiritual sea without any hindrance.

As Lin Ming saw the scene in Sheng Mei's spiritual sea, he held his breath.

He had guessed that Sheng Mei had overdrawn her divine soul but he never imagined she had overdrawn herself to this extent. Her entire spiritual sea had dried up by over half!

And in the skies above her spiritual sea, deep dark cloud gathered. In these dark clouds, demons and ghosts rampantly danced and howled!

These were Sheng Mei's heart demons. The degree of their formidability far surpassed Lin Ming's own heart demons.

"Sheng Mei actually has such terrifying heart demons. Every heart demon is an obsession and fear of Sheng Mei's heart… no wonder she couldn't withstand this even with her divine soul of nine reincarnations."

Lin Ming shook his head. With a nearly exhausted spiritual sea and such powerful heart demons, it was already a miracle that Sheng Mei could maintain the fires of her life without dying like the other abyssals.

Lin Ming fell into thought. If he didn't quickly rescue her then she would likely fall into a permanent sleep and no longer awaken. And even if she did awaken, her spiritual sea would be forever wounded.

But if he rescued her, he wouldn't know if she would be an enemy or friend in the future...

Between him and the Soul Emperor there would eventually be a battle. And when that time arrived, would Sheng Mei side with the Soul Emperor?

Perhaps the Soul Emperor had some method to restrain and control Sheng Mei. At that time if he wanted to fight the Soul Emperor, he might need to pass the test of Sheng Mei first.

If so, then he was only looking for bitter fruit to eat on his own.

But as he watched Sheng Mei's divine soul gradually weaken, Lin Ming let out a gentle breath and opened the grandmist force field. After blocking out his surroundings, he lifted his right hand and the Magic Cube appeared in his palm.

Sheng Mei could be considered as having saved his life. Otherwise, 7000 years ago, whether it was Soaring Feather God King or the Soul Emperor, either one could have easily taken his life.

And no matter what, he should save Sheng Mei first. Even if he saved her she would surely be weak and definitely not a match for him. After saving her, could he somehow obtain more secrets of the Soul Emperor?

But doing so would likely completely expose his identity. If the Soul Emperor had left behind some sort of mark or contingency in Sheng Mei, then if he were to capture Sheng Mei there was a likelihood that his confrontation with the Soul Emperor would be shifted to an earlier time.

The present situation could be said to be filled with complicated intricacies.

At this time a red-clothed little girl emerged from the Magic Cube. She curiously looked at the slumbering Sheng Mei and said, “Brother Lin, isn’t this the big sister from the Akashic Dream Universe?”

“Mm, it’s her.”

Lin Ming lightly said. He gently patted the Magic Cube with one hand and some of the runes atop it began to sparkle. A dim light shot into the point between Sheng Mei’s eyebrows and then covered the skies above her spiritual sea. The layers of dark clouds that were her heart demons began to melt away like snow in the sun beneath this dim light.

Many heart demons cried out in pain and roared in misery. They wanted to plunge into Sheng Mei's spiritual sea to hide, but in the end they were swept into the dim light and turned to ashes.

After eliminating all the heart demons, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred and he poured a bit of his divine soul's strength into Sheng Mei's spiritual sea.

Like this, as if she had slept for an untold number years and awaited this moment, Sheng Mei slowly and quietly opened her eyes…

MW Chapter 2156

Chapter 2156 – Whose Child Is It?

…

…

…

The dim and blurry surroundings began to gradually clear.

What Sheng Mei entered was a dark gray underground cavern.

After experiencing ever-changing characters and unpredictable environments, Sheng Mei couldn’t distinguish whether what lay before her was an illusion or reality.

I am…

In an instant, Sheng Mei instantly thought of something that left her dripping with a cold sweat!

“My child!”

Sheng Mei cried out in alarm and grasped her belly.

She originally drowned in despair, but what left her shocked was that after touching her stomach, she could clearly feel a wisp of an extremely weak life fluctuation that was being sealed away.

This fluctuation was like a sprouting seed buried deep underground. Although it was young and fragile, it still continued to furiously grow.

And on this sprout, there was a light seal that acted as a big stone, forcibly suppressing its growth…

After experiencing all sorts of dreams she felt the life fluctuations of her child once more.

As well as that icy cold seal above that life fluctuation.

Immediately, Sheng Mei quivered and tears streamed down from her eyes.

“My child…”

It was still alive!

Sheng Mei grabbed her belly as she heaved in great sobbing breaths. All of her emotions seemed to burst out like a collapsing dam, exploding in that moment.

These emotions had been constrained for tens of thousands of years!

For these tens of thousands of years she had been arrogant and lofty, an icy goddess untainted by the sins of mortals. But in this moment, she was only a helpless woman that glowed with motherhood.

She could lose everything, or, it could be said that she never had anything to begin with. But, she could not lose her life’s only sustenance.

For this, she could pay any price!

“My child, mama will no longer seal you away, I won’t!”

Sheng Mei muttered. These words came from the depths of her heart. As if something were transforming within her, or perhaps because she had overdrawn herself to break through the Soul Emperor’s seal, her incomparably weak soul began to shine with all the colors of a rainbow.

The light was extremely weak. Compared to the light of Sheng Mei’s soul when she had been at her peak, this light couldn’t be considered much at all. But, this light actually contained an unspeakably deep concept, fearless and covered in thorns!

Although Sheng Mei had arrived at the limits of weakness, in these last tens of thousands of years her heart of martial arts had never been as firm as it was today!

But in that moment, the teary-eyed Sheng Mei’s heart turned icy cold.

When she awoke just now, because her emotions had been too volatile and her body had been too weak, she hadn’t noticed her surroundings at all.

But now she could clearly feel someone behind her.

Sheng Mei turned around, her eyes shards of ice!

Behind her was a towering large abyssal that frowned as he stared at her. His eyes were colored with doubt and he had a strange expression as he stared at her belly.

"You!!"

Sheng Mei never thought that her actions just now would have been seen by this abyssal. This left her ashamed and enraged!

Her pregnancy was her greatest secret!

If it were known by the Soul Emperor, the consequences would be inconceivable!

Normally, if abyssals were to discover this matter, Sheng Mei would surely kill them off to eliminate any possible clues. But now she was incomparably weak, and this abyssal standing before her was…

"It's you?"

Sheng Mei was shocked. This abyssal… wasn't it the one she was to be married to?

Sheng Mei originally didn't hold any malice or animosity towards this Ninth Elder from the Ancient Eon Sect, but… after meeting again in such a manner…

Sheng Mei took a deep breath. This current situation had taken a turn for the worst!

She had always kept a tight lock on the secret of her pregnancy, taking any precaution necessary. Because countless abyssals wished to marry her, she had been annoyed and finally became tired of this matter, and had directly proposed that any abyssal that could defeat her at the same boundary would be considered for marriage. This proposal deterred all her pursuers. Every time Sheng Mei accepted a challenge, she would ruthlessly beat that challenger into the ground, crippling them for a year or two to serve as an example for all others.

The effects of her decision were amazing. No one had bothered her for several hundred years, but who imagined that such a monstrous freak would suddenly appear out of nowhere!

After some hardship she had negotiated certain conditions with this monstrous freak, and even had to offer up the pages of death of the Holy Scripture. This was all so that they agreed to be husband and wife in name only, neither party interfering with the other's business.

But after all that had been resolved, this abyssal actually found out about... her pregnancy!

Not to mention whether or not he would divulge this news, there was already trouble based on their relationship alone! There was no man willing to be made a cuckold, no man that was willing to inexplicably become the father to another man's child!

In particular, this other party was a higher abyssal with outstanding talent, whose heart was higher than the heavens!

If the usually rough and savage abyssals were to come across this sort of matter, they would surely try to refine the fetus or even violently stamp it out!

Even if he didn’t descend into a murderous frenzy, he might go to the high level figures of Deep King Road in his rage. If that occurred, the consequences would be unimaginable.

Sheng Mei subconsciously traced her spatial ring, her palms already wet with sweat.

She was far too weak right now. Disregarding the fact that she hadn’t been able to defeat Lin Ming in her peak state, right now she couldn’t even contend with a peak Empyrean.

Once he attacked, she would surely be ruthlessly ravaged!

If this abyssal were to lose his mind from rage, even killing her child and raping her might be a possibility.

But facing Sheng Mei’s wariness and killing intent, Lin Ming seemed to not think anything of it at all. He continued to look at her belly with a strange expression on his face, something that bordered on thoughtfulness.

His first reaction was that this child was definitely not his own. After seven thousand years, even if he believed he had left behind a child, they should have long since been born.

But as he heard Sheng Mei mention words like ‘seal’, it seemed that the growth of this child had been sealed away. If so, then this was a truly intriguing matter.

Moreover, Lin Ming probed with his sense and truly did faintly feel a seal in Sheng Mei’s belly. As for that child’s weak life fluctuations, they had been isolated by that seal and even he hadn’t been able to sense them…

Could this child be his own?

Lin Ming wouldn’t be overly sentimental or engrossed in his own affections. After all, seven thousand years had passed, and who knew if Sheng Mei had any changes in her romantic life.

“Whose child is that in your belly?” Lin Ming couldn’t help but ask, ignoring Sheng Mei’s vigilance.

“What do you care about such things? In any case, it has nothing to do with you!”

Sheng Mei icily responded. Lin Ming's question about the child's father left her on guard. Normally in such a situation, a man would ask this question after a bout of rage and then seek out the father to settle the score.

Although the child's father was already dead, there was still the father's family, friends, homeland...

In the future the Dark Abyss would invade the 33 Heavens. She couldn't say for sure that this abyssal wouldn't find a chance to take revenge.

Lin Ming awkwardly traced his nose. He also knew that it was a bit ridiculous to ask such a question. This sort of matter was a stain on Deep King Road's Holy Demoness, so how could she tell him?

"If you have any conditions, you may speak them!"

Sheng Mei's chest heaved. She could see that Lin Ming hadn't lost his reasoning and desperately attacked her, thus she put on an expression and tone of defeat. Currently, she simply wasn't Lin Ming's match and she had no qualifications to resist him.

"Conditions?"

Lin Ming rubbed his chin, his gaze still pinned on her belly. He wanted to pierce through that seal and catch the aura of that child's life fluctuations.

As long as he could sense this aura, he could judge whether or not this was his child.

However, in order to cover up her pregnancy, Sheng Mei had completely sealed the aura of her child's life into her belly so that none of it leaked out.

If Lin Ming wanted to forcefully break through this seal he could do that, but he feared his actions would injure the child.

“Yes. Any conditions you want. Besides my body and my child's life, you can raise any condition you desire. If you desire my cultivation methods, I can also offer them to you! You should know that the rank of my cultivation method surpasses the True Divinity level, and I also have two sets of pages. I originally only gave you the pages of death and not the pages of life, but if you want I can give them both to you completely!”

Sheng Mei was already prepared to pay a deep price. After all, without even the ability to flee, she had no power to bargain.

MW Chapter 2157

Chapter 2157 – Demon God Relief

…

…

…

“Pages of life? I can’t say I’m much interested in that…”

Lin Ming looked at Sheng Mei with surprise. He never imagined Sheng Mei would be so anxious about her child.

This seemed to deviate from Lin Ming’s previous perceptions of Sheng Mei.

In Lin Ming’s mind, the Sheng Mei he knew could become emotional at times, but she still had her own ambitions. And to achieve these ambitions she could sacrifice some things.

But today, because of her child, Sheng Mei had lost her composure completely. Not only was Lin Ming surprised, but his impression of her changed.

“Then what do you want?”

Sheng Mei warily looked at Lin Ming, paying close attention to every change in his expression. Right now, she didn’t detect any anger from him.

Could this abyssal be so easy to speak with?

“I want you to undo that seal and let me investigate the child’s aura…”

Lin Ming calmly said as he continued looking at Sheng Mei’s belly.

If it were his child then he could surely recognize it upon sensing its aura. Moreover, he would absolutely take responsibility for the child.

But if it weren’t his child…

Thinking of this, Lin Ming sighed inwardly. If this child wasn’t his then it was what it was. In any case, the degrees to which they were enemies would only increase…

This absurd would also end here. She had rescued him and he had rescued her; all debts had been paid and everyone was even. In the future when they met they would be enemies, foes that fought on the precipice of life and death.

“You want to investigate the child’s aura?” Sheng Mei never imagined Lin Ming would put forth such conditions.

She would have to unseal her child sooner or later, but to do so in the Demon God’s Tomb would bring about a great deal of trouble.

This was because in the Demon God’s Tomb, there was also Deep Child. Once he discovered him, this was equal to everything being known by the Soul Emperor.

Sheng Mei hesitated for a moment. But as she did, a loud explosive sound erupted, as if something were collapsing.

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei felt their hearts turn cold. They immediately probed with their senses. However, because Sheng Mei was in a weakened state she felt as if something were blocking out her sense and she couldn’t distinguish just what was occurring.

But at this time, Lin Ming had already discerned the source of the noise. He frowned, a cold light flashing in his eyes!

"Hahaha! I thought that everyone had died, but I never thought two others would live!"

A wild and raucous sound echoed out; it was the Great Flood Crown Prince!

In this moment, Sheng Mei's heart tightened.

The peak middle True Divinity Great Flood Crown Prince! This was bad! And, it was clear that he had already discovered them!

What should she do?

Sheng Mei's heart raced. The current situation was far too grim!

Even if she were at her peak she still wouldn't be able to contend with the Great Flood Crown Prince. But, if she were to join forces with Lin Ming, they could at least have the Great Flood Crown Prince dread them a little.

But currently… there was only Lin Ming left. He had no reason to protect her to begin with, and even if he was willing to, he wasn't a match for the Great Flood Crown Prince!

At this time, Lin Ming didn’t utter a word. He lifted his foot and started walking through the cavern.

The direction he went in was towards the area the Great Flood Crown Prince’s laughter came from.

“You...”

Sheng Mei was stunned. In truth, the most natural and rational decision Lin Ming should have made now was to leave her behind and run away on his own. If so, then the Great Flood Crown Prince might not be able to catch up to him.

After all, Lin Ming wasn’t a weakling and the environment and terrain of this underground cavern was too complex and confusing. No one knew what would appear here, and the Great Flood Crown Prince might lose track of Lin Ming.

Of course, her own fate would be the most tragic and miserable of all.

Seeing Lin Ming’s towering back silently move forwards through the dark cavern, Sheng Mei followed behind with all her bewildered emotions in tow.

She didn’t ask Lin Ming why he did what he did; she only quietly followed behind...

As they walked forwards, Sheng Mei saw several corpses.

These corpses were abyssals that had been sucked down into the lake with them. But presently, their life forces had been strangled; it was clear they had died to their heart demons.

This scene caused a chill to creep down Sheng Mei's back.

The heart demon attack of the killing lake was far too terrifying. She had fallen to heart demons twice and had been unable to tear herself away.

The first time was when she had witnessed Lin Ming's death. She had fallen into despondent sorrow and no longer wished to leave the cave where Lin Ming had passed.

The second time was when the child in her stomach had been killed by the Soul Emperor. In that moment she had lost her spirit and would rather have died than lived on.

If it weren't for that strange dim black light saving her, then she too might be a corpse on the ground. Even if she still had a single breath remaining, it would only have been a matter of time until her spiritual sea collapsed.

Thinking of this, Sheng Mei was left puzzled. Who had rescued her, and what was that black light?

Looking at Lin Ming's back, Sheng Mei couldn't help but speculate. This abyssal walking in front of her had passed through the heart demon attack as if nothing had happened to him, as if he had merely been a bystander watching it all. Perhaps his soul had been too formidable, or it could have been that his heart demons were too weak.

These were things that Sheng Mei didn't care much to find out about. The key question here was that black light…

When she woke up, only the Ninth Elder had been present. Could this black light have been related to him?

As Sheng Mei was deep in thought, Lin Ming's footsteps started to slow down. Unknowingly, they had wandered into a powerful force field.

When Sheng Mei released her sense and wasn't able to immediately discover anything, it was also because this force field had blocked her out.

Sheng Mei looked intently forwards. Then, her heart sank.

Not too far away in front of them was an incredibly vast underground space. And at the entrance to this space stood an abyssal wearing purple war armor, his hands crossed against his back and he faced his back towards them.

In front of this abyssal was a great cliff. He was leaning over as if he were trying to see something beneath the cliff.

Sheng Mei swept out her sense. Faintly, she could see that this cliff was 10,000 feet deep, and beneath the cliff were layers upon layers of mist. Hidden within this mist was a giant rock relief!

This rock relief was more than 10 miles round and had a three-headed six-armed demon god carved into it. This demon god had a fierce and hideous expression. Its six arms held different weapons, and it seemed as if it were the ruler of the universe.

Behind this demon god were many higher abyssals; they were soldiers beneath the demon god's command.

And in the demon god's mouth was a bronze coffin wrapped in chains!

This bronze coffin was 20 feet long and 10 feet high. It was locked tightly with thick chains and it was unknown just what was hidden within.

The terrifying force field that pervaded the air seemed to originate from this demon god relief as well as the bronze coffin.

“You finally arrived. The Ninth Elder is truly a hero of the times. That powerful heart demon impact just now still wasn’t able to affect you in the least. I, truly and deeply admire your skills! Moreover…” The purple war armored abyssal slowly turned around, revealing the face of the Great Flood Crown Prince.

At this time, the Great Flood Crown Prince grasped a ghost saber in his hands. The blade was still behind him as he smiled at Lin Ming and Sheng Mei.

Moreover, you still dare to face me! What admirable courage!”

As the Great Flood Crown Prince spoke, cold light flashed from his eyes!

Seeing the Great Flood Crown Prince, Sheng Mei’s complexion turned even uglier. She originally hoped that the Great Flood Crown Prince had been severely wounded by the heart demon test. If so, Lin Ming alone could deal with him.

But now it seemed as if no harm had come to the Great Flood Crown Prince at all. This situation had truly devolved to the worst possible outcome.

Whether it was the Great Flood Crown Prince or Lin Ming, currently their strength far exceeded her own. She simply couldn't control her own destiny right now.

However, if she had to make a choice on who to face, it would definitely be Lin Ming.

After all, from what she had seen his character wasn't too bad and he hadn't tried to take advantage of her while she was down. Moreover, he seemed an open-minded individual. Even though he had encountered the ridiculous situation of her pregnancy he still hadn't become enraged and was even still capable of discussing conditions.

But, the Great Flood Crown Prince was someone that Sheng Mei could never count on.

He was nothing but a fierce wolf that ate others without spitting out their bones. And, he was known to be a sexual deviant. If she fell into his hands the consequences would be dire.

"The feeling is mutual. Your Highness Crown Prince also seems to have passed the heart demons safely!"

Lin Ming smiled in fake civility. He faintly sensed that after passing through the impact of the killing lake's heart demons, the only ones still alive in this mystic realm were these three.

There had also been two other lower True Divinities but they too had perished during the impact of heart demons. This left Lin Ming startled. After all, those were True Divinities!

However, as he thought about the quantity of True Divinities 10 billion years ago and 100 billion years and how they far surpassed the present, Lin Ming could still barely accept this.

“Hahaha! My cultivation method originally has an effect of suppressing heart demons, and I also possess a spirit treasure that blocks heart demons, so I luckily managed to pass safely! Otherwise, even if I did pass I surely must have needed to pay a steep price. How could I possibly do so in such a relaxed manner like the Ninth Elder…

“Just look, it seems that even Her Highness the Holy Demoness didn’t find it easy. Hmm? Her Highness the Holy Demoness doesn’t seem to have much strength remaining…” The Great Flood Crown Prince faintly smiled at Sheng Mei, his gaze containing lust and greed!

He had certainly probed Sheng Mei’s situation with his sense before this. It was exactly because of Sheng Mei’s severe wounds that he was fully assured of his victory!

As long as he could kill off Lin Ming, then regardless of it being the lucky chances in this underground cavern or Sheng Mei herself, everything would belong to him!

MW Chapter 2158

Chapter 2158 – Fighting the Crown Prince

…

…

…

“Black Flood!!”

Seeing the naked aggression and lust in the Great Flood Crown Prince’s gaze, Sheng Mei was enraged to the extreme. Substantial killing intent burst out from her eyes.

“Hahaha!”

The Great Flood Crown Prince chortled. Sheng Mei’s response confirmed his suspicions that here wounds were incredibly deep and that she simply wasn’t capable of fighting.

Her killing intent seemed fierce, but it lacked the most essential support of energy; it was nothing but bluster.

Thinking of this, the Great Flood Crown Prince viciously eyed Lin Ming, his smile widening.

Without Sheng Mei, if he faced Lin Ming alone then victory was already in his grasp.

“Ninth Elder, what a coincidence that you arrived at this time. I was planning on opening this bronze coffin. This strange mystic realm seems to have this coffin buried within it, and now that we’ve come this far, how can we miss out on it?

“I investigated the area just now and discovered that there aren’t any mazes or traps in the vicinity. But, this bronze coffin seems to be sealed up by an array formation and is difficult to open using usual means. How about you and I work together?”

The Great Flood Crown Prince suddenly changed the topic, implying that he wanted to cooperate with Lin Ming.

Lin Ming sneered inwardly. Not even a child would believe such words. “What else do you want to say?”

"Hah! What I actually mean is that after a brief investigation, I found some ancient totem cryptic characters carved upon this demon god relief. And, these cryptic characters are all blood drinking array formations!

"I just threw down several corpses and found that the blood vitality essence energy of those corpses was all absorbed by the demon god relief. I was wondering, is it possible to force feed that demon god relief until it's full, and would the bronze coffin then open?"

The Great Flood Crown Prince rubbed his chin as he spoke to here. "Unfortunately, the blood vitality essence energy within these corpses isn't too formidable. I think that the blood vitality of a living higher abyssal might be a bit more effective, right? Thus, I must ask your honored self to help me and give it a try!"

The Great Flood Crown Prince suddenly erupted with killing intent as he finished speaking. This sort of feeling was like nicely asking someone to borrow their head for a moment.

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes. His spear-sharp gaze shot towards the Great Flood Crown Prince.

He also wanted to know just what was hidden in this mystic realm. The reason he openly walked over here was also to explore this, and as for the Great Flood Crown Prince, battle between them was already unavoidable!

Suddenly, a wild and tyrannical aura erupted from the Great Flood Crown Prince. He recklessly rushed forwards like a volcanic explosion!

Roar!

With a loud howl, a hideous demon stood up from behind the Great Flood Crown Prince!

This demon surged with thick infernal energy. It split apart, turning into streams of light that fired towards Sheng Mei and Lin Ming!

Sheng Mei's heart tightened and she raised her guard. But then, she discovered that they weren't the goal. Rather, the streams of light passed around her and Lin Ming to form a totem seal behind them!

Piki paka!

Potent energy raced underground, weaving together with thunderous bangs!

Finally, the totem seal blocked out the exit to this area.

Lin Ming, Sheng Mei, as well as the Great Flood Crown Prince were locked in this space above the demon relief.

If it was said that the Great Flood Crown Prince had only been hinting at his hostility all this time, just now, after blocking anyone from escaping this space, it was the same as him baring his fangs, wanting to bite down on Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's necks.

"Black Flood, you've got guts! Do you think that after you attack me here and leave, no one will know of it?" Sheng Mei unhurriedly said as she icily stared at the Great Flood Crown Prince.

"Hahahaha! Your Highness seems to have misunderstood. I have no intentions of attacking you; I simply wish to deal with this little toad beside you. As for your Holy Demoness, I can't even wait for us to enjoy each other, so how could I possibly harm you? Your Highness is the most outstanding beauty in the world, far surpassing anyone else in the Dark Abyss and you also possess the dark angel bloodline. If you join me then once I become the Emperor of the Great Flood Demon Kingdom in the future, and you also inherit Deep King Road once that old freak Deep is dead, and meanwhile we can even find a chance to kill off that eyesore Deep Child, then the two of us will rule the two most powerful influences in the Dark Abyss. When we join together, I can become the new Demon God and you can become the new Demon Goddess. From then on you and I can control the abyss and establish our own everlasting dynasty!"

The Great Flood Crown Prince seductively said. If his desires had been hidden before, all of them had completely revealed themselves now.

But at this time, a laugh lit up the scene. Lin Ming gently traced his spatial ring and looked at the Great Flood Crown Prince as if he were an idiot. “New Demon God? Have you tried looking in the mirror yet? Do you think you qualify!?”

Not to mention the Soul Emperor that had some profound connection with the Dark Abyss as well as the incomparably mysterious Deep and Flood, even that dark and unfathomable Deep Child was far more reliable than this Great Flood Crown Prince.

If there really was a new Demon God that would appear sometime, it definitely would not be this fellow’s turn!

However, after being mocked by the Lin Ming the Great Flood Crown Prince didn’t grow angry at all. Instead, his eyes held even more disdain as he looked at Lin Ming, the same way that he looked at a dead man walking.

“A toad must have the mind of a toad. When toads are reared together it’s always the loudest and dumbest that is slaughtered first. Since you are in such a hurry to die then let me help you along!”

As the Great Flood Crown Prince spoke his muscles suddenly bulged outwards. His muscles were like snakes that coursed over his body, hissing and howling. Then, he stepped forwards, his feet releasing thunderous bangs as they hit the ground. His tall and formidable body hurtled forwards like a bolt of lightning, his claw smashing down at Lin Ming’s head!

"Be careful, Black Flood's strength is terrifying!"

Sheng Mei rapidly passed a sound transmission to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. Facing the Great Flood Crown Prince there was no way he could underestimate his opponent at all. This was sure to be a troublesome opponent!

Lin Ming flung out his right arm. From his inner world, the brilliance of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace dazzled!

Woosh!

The Black Dragon Spear covered in fierce bones shot out, stabbing straight towards Black Flood!

Kacha!

With a loud crack, the Great Flood Crown Prince clenched his hand and formed a fist. This fist changed its attack trajectory at an unbelievable angle and struck down at the Black Dragon Spear's shaft!

The spear shaft was struck so hard that it bent. Shards of bones fell down.

"I'll take your life!"

The Great Flood Crown Prince diabolically grinned. Another hand shot forwards. Like an executioner's blade, the ghost saber slashed towards Lin Ming's neck.

This saber strike seemed to contain thousands and millions of demon spirits. These demon spirits wildly roared, their howls enveloping the world!

Every attack happened in a spark of light!

Roar! Roar! Roar!

Looking from afar, every demon was incredibly powerful, filled with infinite killing intent!

Lin Ming crossed his arms in front of his chest. He rapidly drew backwards. At the same time, the power of demon gods erupted from within him. He poured this power into the Black Dragon Spear, causing tens of thousands of spear lights to shine out!

These spear lights were as thick as a bucket and bewilderingly sharp. They danced about like crazed flood dragons, piercing through all obstacles!

Ca!

Demons were torn apart by these spear lights. The scene shook the heavens and earth!

However, no matter how intense the battle between Lin Ming and Black Flood, the shockwaves of energy still weren't able to destroy the surrounding space.

Here, the walls, the ground, everything was protected by an ancient totem spell. As the energy crashed into the spell, it rippled like waves before rebounding backwards!

Rebound after rebound, the battle of two True Divinity level masters in this sealed off space formed a horrifying storm!

The storm also covered Sheng Mei. Placed in this storm, she would definitely have to withstand indiscriminate attacks.

Sheng Mei subconsciously protected her belly with her hands. Her figure flashed and she flew down the cliff, hiding in the hollow in the massive canyon below.

Here, the storm had mostly weakened. With her current strength she could definitely withstand this.

As she stood amongst the rocks and looked at the Lin Ming who was in the midst of violent combat, her complexion was incomparably complex.

She never thought that this man would dare to face the peak middle True Divinity Great Flood Crown Prince. The disparity was simply too great!

Although Lin Ming hadn’t fallen into a disadvantage, she actually knew that the Great Flood Crown Prince had only been casually attacking; he simply hadn’t utilized his true strength.

MW Chapter 2159

Chapter 2159 – 100,000 Heavenly Demons

…

…

…

In the skies, the Great Flood Crown Prince grasped his ghost saber, standing high in the air!

From behind, tens of thousands of demons howled as they threw themselves at Lin Ming without end!

Spear light flashed. Demon after demon was cut down by Lin Ming. However, although the Great Flood Crown Prince was faintly surprised, he simply sneered and coldly said, “I seem to have underestimated you. I thought that my 10,000 demon strike would have been enough to deal with you, but I never imagined you could block it. Since that’s the case, let me open your mind a little!”

As the Great Flood Crown Prince spoke, he began to slowly take off his war armor.

The purple gold war armor was peeled off a layer at a time. This left Lin Ming startled. Generally speaking, in a fight between martial artists each party would take out new weapons and hidden cards. But, the Great Flood Crown Prince was actually discarding his own war armor.

But when the Great Flood Crown Prince took off his chest armor and back armor, what Lin Ming saw left his scalp tingling with creepiness.

Below that purple and gold war armor, the Great Flood Crown Prince was entangled in rows upon rows of thin chains. And these thin chains pierced through hideous and fierce twisted souls, lined up without end!

The smallest of these souls was the size of a grain of rice, but some were as large as a fist. Some howled in pain and misery and some roared in anger. The fist-sized demon spirits were incomparably fierce. They hung on the Great Flood Crown Prince’s body, their mouths opened wide as they wantonly ate away at his flesh and blood.

After discarding the war armor, these souls were like a pack of hungry tigers released from a cage. Now, these starving tigers directed their gaze at Lin Ming, their eyes filled with infinite greed and hunger!

“This…”

Sheng Mei breathed in a breath of cold air. Although the Great Flood Crown Prince had the body of a fierce abyssal warrior, his face was similar to that of a human and could even be considered handsome. In terms of overall appearance, he could barely be considered as passing standards. But after discarding his war armor and revealing the demon spirits below, the sight made it hard to even look his direction.

This Great Flood Crown Prince actually had so many demon spirits below his armor. Like poisonous bug masters raising poisonous bugs on their own flesh and blood, the Great Flood Crown Prince raised these demon spirits with his own flesh and blood. This was a revolting sight.

Thinking of the Great Flood Crown Prince’s concubines, Sheng Mei found it hard to remain calm. It was unimaginable just what sort of inhumane tortures they had to endure.

“Hehe! Ordinary abyssals wear armor to protect themselves, but I am different. My strength, the strength of these demon souls I raise is far too powerful, and sometimes even I cannot control them. Normally, I must use armor to seal away these demon souls!

“You should be sufficiently proud that I took off my war armor to deal with you. In order to deal with you, taking off my back and chest armor is more than enough!”

The Great Flood Crown Prince disdainfully sneered. The ghost saber in his hand began to shine with a bright red light, as if a leader of the demon souls was sealed within the saber and it was now beginning to awaken.

"100,000 Heavenly Demons!"

The Great Flood Crown Price roared. Then, with his mortal body like a lair of demons, a massive amount of demon spirits flooded out.

For a time, terrifying demonic roars blotted out the heavens like a horrifying storm was brewing all around them.

Compared to before there were ten times more demon spirits. From the 10,000 spirits previously, there were now 100,000 of them.

These 100,000 Heavenly Demons each overflowed with ominous infernal energy as they leapt onto Lin Ming!

The skies were covered in demon shadows; it was impossible to clearly see what was happening.

At the start, Lin Ming's spear light was able to pierce through these demon spirits. But after they increased by ten times in number, these demon spirits actually started to eat away the spear lights!

The Great Flood Crown Prince brought his hands together. A giant ghost saber phantom formed, slashing down from the skies.

This was a terrifying attack. Even though Lin Ming's abyssal body was incredibly intense, beneath this storm he still felt the blood vitality roiling and seething in his body, as if it would be drawn out by the layers upon layers of overlapping demon spirits!

A middle True Divinity was truly formidable!

Lin Ming rapidly drew backwards. Becoming a True Divinity was already difficult enough and becoming a middle True Divinity was even more difficult. Moreover, the Great Flood Crown Prince still had immense potential remaining, and might even reach the level of an upper True Divinity in the future. Against such an opponent, even Lin Ming felt himself struggling!

Seeing the overlapping waves of demon spirits, Lin Ming immediately activated his Asura blood.

Bang!

With a loud explosion, Lin Ming's body started to rise and grow. The bone spikes that covered him became longer and fiercer, and his deep amber eyes suddenly turned blood red!

From within Lin Ming's inner world, the strength of his true self erupted. An Asura war god phantom coalesced behind his true self, and the power of Asura poured into his demon avatar without reserve.

The demon avatar raised his hands, drawing a circle. A giant black wheel emerged from the air.

Asura Wheel!

The Asura Road Master's road of martial arts deviated towards the road of slaughter to begin with. Now, as this Asura Wheel appeared, it also roared with 10,000 demons, filled with a buddha-slaying intent!

In particular, Lin Ming now used the power of demons to manifest the Asura Wheel. In term of malevolence, the Asura Wheel even surpassed the Great Flood Crown Prince's 100,000 Heavenly Demons!

Bang!

Demon flames lit up the skies. As the overlapping waves of demon spirits smashed into the wheel they burst apart in ashes. However, Lin Ming's Asura Wheel violently shook, seeming as if it would crack apart soon!

Lin Ming was shocked. This Great Flood Crown Prince was truly formidable; this was an opponent he could not show even the slightest hint of carelessness.

But at this time, the Great Flood Crown Prince was actually even more surprised. It was fine that the 10,000 demon strike wasn't able to deal with Lin Ming; he simply considered it as him having underestimated Lin Ming. But, even the 100,000 Heavenly Demons afterwards was barely blocked by Lin Ming. This left the Great Flood Crown Prince astonished.

His previously confident look now froze on his face.

The Great Flood Crown Prince's eyes flashed with icy cold light. He lifted the purple gold armor on his left arm and 10,000 some demon spirits ran out. Then, the Great Flood Crown Prince punched his own chest and spat out a mouthful of black blood!

This black blood splashed onto the waves of demon spirits where it was absorbed by them!

This blood was the Great Flood Crown Prince's blood essence!

However, the cultivation method that the Great Flood Crown Prince trained in was particularly special. These heavenly demons were all personally refined by him, and although they had absorbed his blood essence it actually couldn't be considered a loss. Rather, he was merely temporarily shifting his blood essence from his body to these demon spirits.

From this aspect, these heavenly demon phantoms could be called the Great Flood Crown Prince's avatar. Now the Great Flood Crown Prince was diverting more of his strength into his avatar.

However, no matter how it was said, in Sheng Mei's eyes it was the truth that the Great Flood Crown Prince used the power of his blood essence.

Even if he wasn't burning his blood essence, this was more than amazing!

Facing Lin Ming, a middle True Divinity was actually forced to use the strength of his blood essence. This simply defied the heavens.

After the demon spirits absorbed a part of the Great Flood Crown Prince's blood essence, they became even crueler and more savage. They howled towards Lin Ming, now completely suppressing the Asura Wheel.

Bang!

With a loud explosion, the Asura Wheel shattered to pieces. Endless energy gathered together, forming a storm of demon power that fired outwards!

Lin Ming's body shook. The bone armor on his chest nearly broke apart as he was sent tumbling away!

Peng!

Lin Ming slammed into the cliff walls that shined with runes. Blood overflowed from the corners of his lips.

But at the same time, the Great Flood Crown Prince also drew backwards in the storm. His strike had managed to wound Lin Ming, and although the effects weren't as severe as he had hoped, he finally managed to feel a bit more comfortable with the situation.

However, just as he steadied himself, the evil smile on his face froze. The shattered pieces of the Asura Wheel mixed into the storm of energy. Then, like a hail of hidden weapons, they shot towards the Great Flood Crown Prince.

"Humph!"

The Great Flood Crown Prince coldly snorted. A single punch smashed apart 99% of the fragments, but a few fragments still scraped over his scales and sank into his body.

Each fragment contained the Concepts of Life and Death.

This strength grew endlessly and was difficult to suppress. At the same time, the strength annihilated all as it recklessly swallowed the Great Flood Crown Prince's flesh and blood.

This made it impossible for him to completely eliminate the strength of these fragments!

"This is..."

The Great Flood Crown Prince's eyes darkened. Lin Ming's abilities were too strange and bizarre; they contained Laws he found impossibly difficult to understand.

But at this time, Sheng Mei was truly stunned!

To use demon power to manifest the strength of the Asura Laws, Sheng Mei hadn't been able to recognize this because she wasn't proficient in them.

But, with her familiarity with the Life and Death Laws, how could she not see this for what it was?

Less than half a year ago she had lent the incomparably esoteric and complex Holy Scripture's pages of death to Lin Ming to look over for a mere three days. In Sheng Mei's opinion, no matter how talented Lin Ming was it was impossible for him to perceive anything through this short period.

He shouldn’t have been able to grasp anything from them.

But, she never imagined that not only would Lin Ming have managed to perceive something from them, but what he used now would seem to be nearly the complete Laws of the Holy Scripture.

How was this possible!?

MW *Chapter* 2160

Chapter 2160 – Heavenly Demon Array

…

…

…

The Holy Scripture's Laws were divided into the samsaric roads of life and death. But whether it was the road of life or the road of death, even if one had the complete Holy Scripture it still required a long period of meditation to perceive; it wasn't something that could be completed in a few years!

But now, seeing this towering abyssal use the Laws of the Holy Scripture, although it was inferior to her own in certain ways, the difference wasn't much off.

Moreover, Lin Ming seemed to have his own unique understandings of the Holy Scripture Laws, and these understandings were completely different from Sheng Mei's.

At this time, Sheng Mei's thoughts had already fallen into chaos.

How could this Ancient Eon Sect's Ninth Elder thoroughly understand the Holy Scripture Laws?

Sheng Mei didn't have time to think. At this time, the fierce battle between Lin Ming and the Great Flood Crown Prince heated up once more!

By now, the Great Flood Crown Prince no longer hid anything. His body erupted with dazzling divine light as he took off all his war armor!

As the purple gold war armor fell off, the demonic spirits around the Great Flood Crown Prince violently rumbled and countless heavenly demons roared as they rushed forwards!

After going all-out, the number of heavenly demons around the Great Flood Crown Prince had doubled, rising to 200,000!

200,000 heavenly demons gathered together, forming a giant wheel-shaped array. This array resembled an ancient totem, and these 200,000 heavenly demons formed the outline and ciphers of this totem. The entire array formation seemed as vast as the heavens, the power of this attack incomparable to before!

Seeing this Heavenly Demon Array, Lin Ming's complexion turned dignified. Now, as his understandings towards the power of demons increased, he could see just how powerful this array formation was.

And at this time, Sheng Mei was also covered in the howling storm produced by the battle between the two. She watched as the Heavenly Demon Array formed and the Great Flood Crown Prince's momentum rose higher and higher even as Lin Ming's momentum was suppressed.

The Great Flood Crown Prince's strength rose to a whole new level!

As for Lin Ming, he had clearly become much weaker due to the previous clash.

In this completely disproportionate follow up, it was obvious who was weaker with a single glance.

Sheng Mei watched Lin Ming silently grasp the Black Dragon Spear. She wanted to help him but she didn't have much strength left remaining. There simply wasn't anything she could do in her current state. Because of the impact of the heart demons in addition to her present weakness and the raging storm that blew everywhere, she slowly felt pain in her lower belly.

This pain was like a knife that stabbed at her heart. She didn't fear anything happening to her, but she feared that the child in her womb might be injured.

If this continued then she really didn't know just what possible consequences there would be!

Originally, Sheng Mei still had the totem strength left within her by the Soul Emperor. As long as she encountered a truly life-threatening situation, she could use this strength to eliminate all dangers!

But, this strength needed to be activated by the Soul Emperor's spirit mark.

In a completely impossible situation, Sheng Mei had relied on the strength of a mother to overdraw her entire being and flush out the Soul Emperor's spirit mark.

From that point on, while she had temporarily rid herself of the Soul Emperor's control, she had also lost the ability to use the Soul Emperor's strength.

However, Sheng Mei would rather die than willingly return to the shadow of the Soul Emperor.

In the storm, Sheng Mei tightly gripped her belly, her heart shaking.

She no longer had any cards hidden in her sleeves. If there was one thing she could depend on here, then that would be Lin Ming!

But the chances of Lin Ming winning were… too small…

If Lin Ming was killed then she would suffer a fate worse than death. As for her child's fate, it would be even more tragic!

Sheng Mei bit down on her lips. She looked at Lin Ming. At this time, Lin Ming grasped his bone spear and faced the Great Flood Crown Prince. Because the bone armor on his back had split open in the vicious attacks, blood flowed outwards, dripping through the air. Seeing this shocking red color, a mix of emotions rose in Sheng Mei's eyes.

Although Sheng Mei couldn't accept this 'fiance' no matter what, in this moment of life and death, Lin Ming's towering back had become deeply engraved into Sheng Mei's heart.

His appearance was fierce and hideous and he was a quiet individual that never spoke much. But, in retrospect, Sheng Mei recalled that every time she was helpless or in distress, he never once took advantage of her while she was down, and instead stood in front of her.

"This is the end!" The Great Flood Crown Prince's roar interrupted Sheng Mei's thoughts.

At this time, the Great Flood Crown Prince's hair was disheveled and his face was distorted. He originally thought that using all his strength to defeat Lin Ming was nothing but an insult to himself. But after repeated failures and repeated frustrations, all he wanted to do was to mercilessly kill Lin Ming using overwhelming strength.

Roar! Roar! Roar!

200,000 heavenly demons gathered. Cold winds howled as the world darkened.

Amongst the infinite demons, the Great Flood Crown Prince slashed his saber down at Lin Ming!

This saber condensed into a single line, the strength compressed to the limit. The potential within was so formidable that even the ancient array symbols that protected the walls in this mystic realm began to shiver!

But at this time, Lin Ming's Asura Wheel had just been crushed and it would take time to reform it.

He poured the power of the nine stars into the Black Dragon Spear and brought it smashing down!

Bang!

A horrifying explosion of energy erupted outwards. A black storm enveloped the entire mystic realm.

The Black Dragon Spear's spear light was entirely washed away!

Lin Ming's eyes widened. He rapidly drew backwards, energy erupting from his body!

His strength seemed without end. Spear after spear, he thrust forth countless times. Hundreds and thousands of spear lights gathered together and crashed onto the Great Flood Crown Prince's Heavenly Demon Array!

However, the Heavenly Demon Array was far too powerful. The difference in strength between the Great Flood Crown Prince who went all out and the Lin Ming who didn't utilize the Asura Laws was obvious.

Kacha!

Spear light tore apart. Although Lin Ming just barely managed to disperse the Great Flood Crown Prince's saber light, countless heavenly demons still hurtled down at him!

Lin Ming spat out a mouthful of blood. His body tumbled backwards as he crashed into the stone walls!

The bone armor and scales on his body split open in countless places. The two bone spikes on his elbows also broke apart.

Lin Ming's strength had weakened not just a little with this collision, but by a great deal!

Sheng Mei's heart skipped a beat.

The Great Flood Crown Prince viciously grinned.

The effect of this strike was what he was looking for!

"You're finished!"

On the Great Flood Crown Prince's face, demon seals began to appear. These were mystic demon seals that only special abyssal bloodlines possessed. These types of seals could be considered the secret technique of a clan.

After utilizing these demon seals, the Great Flood Crown Prince's strength rose once more!

His body shook with energy. The sounds of landslides and tsunamis filled the air, and the heavens and earth howled as if they would flip over!

Aoo!

The 200,000 heavenly demons seemed to go mad as they became increasingly wild.

The Great Flood Crown Prince's eyes burst out with killing intent. He slashed his saber down at Lin Ming once more!

With this saber strike, a black tsunami seemed to erupt. Waves rose to the heavens, blotting out the skies!

Just as Lin Ming was about to be torn apart by this saber light, he traced his spatial ring and flung out his right arm.

A bronze light flashed, becoming increasingly large as it spun about.

This was a giant bronze bell!

Atop this great bell, flowers and birds and insects were carved within, as well as all sorts of ancient demon marks.

Seeing the bronze bell, the Great Flood Crown Prince was stunned. "This is… the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts' Yin Yang Twilight Bell? You… killed the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts!?"

The Great Flood Crown Prince was shocked. The Yin Yang Twin Ghosts were Demon Association Elders that were part of the Flood Alliance. They were blood brothers and their hearts and minds were linked together. They were inseparable and were also skilled in joint attacks.

On their own, the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts weren't too strong. But together their combat strength was actually terrifying.

The Great Flood Crown Prince hadn't known that the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts had perished and their life's magic tool, the Yin Yang Twilight Bell, had fallen into Lin Ming's hands. But now he was afraid that the Yin Yang Twin Ghosts had already died!

The Yin Yang Twilight Bell was a True Divinity spirit treasure that focused on defense. Moreover, it was of an extremely high rank and the heavy bell's body was incredibly difficult to destroy.

But, it was impossible to stop an attack on the level of the Great Flood Crown Prince's with this Yin Yang Twilight Bell alone. Moreover, this was a magic tool of others and Lin Ming had only possessed it for a short time, so the strength of the bell he could display was surely limited.

"Humph! You want to rely on that to stop me? How naïve!"

The Great Flood Crown Prince disregarded the bell and continued to cut downwards!

Clang!

With a loud bang, the Great Flood Crown Prince’s saber slashed down onto the Yin Yang Twilight Bell. The bell emitted a thunderous response, and as the saber light tore through it, a giant tear actually formed on the surface of the bell!

The bell was sent flying away by the saber strike! This bell only delayed the Great Flood Crown Prince’s saber strike for half a moment before it continued cutting down at Lin Ming without any hindrance. 200,000 heavenly demons howled, forming the Heavenly Demon Array to lock down Lin Ming in this killing strike!

MW Chapter 2161

Chapter 2161 – True Self

…

…

…

“Die!!”

The Great Flood Crown Prince’s saber continued slashing downwards. Compared to before, its might had weakened by nearly nothing at all. The defensive effect that the Yin Yang Twilight Bell had been able to play was unnoticeably minor!

Facing this attack that overwhelmed the heavens and earth, Lin Ming’s blood red pupils flashed with a sharp light. He punched his own chest and spouted out blood essence onto the Black Dragon Spear.

Hum!

Hum!

Hum!

The spear howled, turning into a bone dragon that roared towards the Great Flood Crown Prince!

“Burning your blood essence is useless! You are doomed!”

The Great Flood Crown Prince fiendishly crackled. Victory was already in his hands! In particular, forcing Lin Ming to burn his blood essence meant that his opponent had now taken out all his hidden cards!

Kacha!

The Great Flood Crown Prince’s saber slashed down onto the bone dragon. The roaring bone dragon had its head shattered by the Great Flood Crown Prince’s strike!

Aang - !

The bone dragon howled in pain as the ridged bone covering the Black Dragon Spear began to crack off. Facing this strike that the Great Flood Crown Prince had condensed all of his energy into, Lin Ming simply wasn't able to resist it at all!

Saber light twisted and the bone dragon shattered. A terrifying air explosion blasted outwards. At the same time, Lin Ming received a backlash and he spat out a mouthful of blood. By this time, he had clearly exhausted his strength!

"Ninth Elder!"

Sheng Mei's heart burned with worry. She pressed down on her belly; she was ready to make a final desperate attack!

Although she was well aware that her help wouldn't change anything, she couldn't watch on as Lin Ming simply died like this.

She felt that the flow of this battle had changed too quickly. Before, Lin Ming had been able to barely keep going, but facing the whole-hearted attack of the Great Flood Crown Prince, he had suddenly collapsed!

Just as Sheng Mei traced her own dark bone sword and planned to attack, she suddenly froze.

She could see that behind the Great Flood Crown Prince, the Yin Yang Twilight Bell that had been struck away seemed to hum as it flew back, as if controlled by something.

Afterwards, a black palace flew out from the end of the Yin Yang Twilight Bell.

This black palace was only a few feet tall, like a small toy. As it separated itself from the bell, it rose up in the wind!

But, this palace exuded an aura that Sheng Mei was extremely familiar with!

In that instant, her heart skipped a beat!

....

She held her breath. In the next moment, she felt as if she were someone who had been heavily punched in the face, completely dazed!

She stared helplessly as a black-clothed figure fluttered out from the palace like gods and ghosts, rushing straight towards the Great Flood Crown Prince's back!

This person... this person...

Sheng Mei had completely frozen. Her thoughts were jumbled all over. She even suspected that she had entered the world of her heart demons once more and she simply wasn't able to distinguish illusion from reality!

Although she could only see his back, although his aura had changed, although they had been separated by a river of 10,000 years…

She would never mistakenly recognize him!

"How… how could… here…"

At this time, Sheng Mei had no time to be happily surprised or to ask any questions. Her mind came to a complete stop and even her soul seemed bound in ice.

Time stopped at this moment.

Then, this black-clothed figure attacked!

When Lin Ming's demon avatar emerged from the Yin Yang Twilight Bell, his true self had already separated away.

Facing the all-out Great Flood Crown Prince, Lin Ming was undoubtedly his enemy, but he wouldn't reach the state of immediately collapsing. But, because his demon avatar had been left alone, the disparity had become that much greater.

As for Lin Ming's true self, he had hidden himself away in Primordius Heavenly Palace, and then hid Primordius Heavenly Palace in the Yin Yang Twilight Bell.

Lin Ming was well aware that wishing to use the Yin Yang Twilight Bell to resist the Great Flood Crown Prince's all-out strike wasn't realistic at all. But, to use the Yin Yang Twilight Bell to merely hide Primordius Palace so that no one would notice was more than enough!

Within the Yin Yang Twilight Bell, Primordius Heavenly Palace only came under the impact of the sonic waves. And hidden within, Lin Ming wasn't injured in the least.

This was all done so that Lin Ming's true self would consume the least energy possible. When he made his appearance, he could attack with everything he had!

At this time, the Daevic Eye Dao Palace opened from between Lin Ming's eyebrows. Lin Ming's pupils also turned into a needle-like shape, one that was surrounded in numerously complex patterns.

This was Three Lives Pupils – All Existence to Void!

Beneath these two pupil techniques, the energy structure of the 200,000 Heavenly Demon Array was completely seen by Lin Ming. All of its weaknesses were unmasked!

The 200,000 Heavenly Demon Array was formidable, but its formidability came from the front where it served as an offensive weapon to attack others. From the back, it still possessed numerous weak points.

Hum!

Hum!

Hum!

Wind howled. Three whistling sounds tore through the air as the three avatars of essence, energy, and divine flew out from Lin Ming's inner world. Each of the three avatars held a black wheel in their hands, and as these three wheels superimposed on each other they were like a giant grinding pan that crushed down at the world!

And from behind Lin Ming's true self, a black Asura phantom appeared, suppressing the universe. All of this came rumbling down onto the Great Flood Crown Prince's back!

"What!?"

The Great Flood Crown Prince was panic-stricken. He didn’t have time to distinguish what was occurring, or even if it was Lin Ming that was attacking him from behind!

At this time, the Great Flood Crown Prince’s attack had nearly fallen upon Lin Ming’s demon avatar; he simply didn’t have time to take it back.

This was an all-out strike, so how could he stop it so easily?

He was exactly in a situation where he had used his strength and wasn’t able to gather his potential!

At this time, if he were to forcefully stop his attack and turn around to deal with the new dangers, then because he would have to forcefully reverse his direction of attack he would be left in a completely motionless state.

Thus, the Great Flood Crown Prince made a decision in a fraction of an instant. His heart hardened as he continued cutting down at the demon avatar Lin Ming with his saber!

He would first kill Lin Ming and then figure things out!

In this moment of life or death, the demon Lin Ming's blood vitality began to surge and burn!

From within his body, all the strength that he had swallowed using Famine's Laws now burst out without reserve!

He grasped the Black Dragon Spear, swinging the spear shaft horizontally to block the Great Flood Crown Prince's saber!

Kacha!

The Black Dragon Spear wildly curved. All the bone fragments that covered it began shattering like pieces of paper!

The demon Lin Ming's thick arms ruptured as his bones broke!

The Great Flood Crown Prince's attack was too strong. He forcefully pressed down the Black Dragon Spear, and the icy cold saber imbued with the power of heavenly demons sliced down at Lin Ming's shoulder.

The demon Lin Ming shook. He spat out a mouthful of blood. His left shoulder was completely cut off and his right lung also ruptured!

Moreover, this saber strike contained many heavenly demons. All of them broke into the demon Lin Ming's body!

The demon Lin Ming's blood vitality crazily swelled up. A fog of blood burst out from his 36,000 pores!

And at this time, from behind the Great Flood Crown Prince, the attack of Lin Ming's true self had arrived. After fusing together the strength of his three avatars of essence, energy, and divine, this strike contained all the Laws that Lin Ming could use. He fused all the strengths that he could as he struck at the Great Flood Crown Prince's back!

Kacha!

Beneath Lin Ming's Three Lives Pupil and Daevic Eye Dao Palace, the 200,000 Heavenly Demon Wheel was struck at its weakest point and instantly shattered.

In the next moment, the Asura Wheel howled and spun as it came suppressing downwards!

The Great Flood Crown Prince didn't even turn his head. He simply exploded into a great roar, and from his back that was covered with evil demon tattoos, a ghost head suddenly appeared!

This ghost head was the size of a basin. Out of all the demon spirits that the Great Flood Crown Prince raised on his body, it was the largest of them all!

The ghost head opened its great maw and bit down on the Asura Wheel!

Amongst those abyssals that could become a middle True Divinity and also still have the potential to become an upper True Divinity, there was not a single one that was weak. In this key moment, not only did the Great Flood Crown Prince heavily wound Lin Ming's demon avatar, but he also branched out another strike to resist Lin Ming's true self!

Kacha!

The Asura Wheel was solidly bitten down upon by the demon spirit's fangs. A sharp, ear-piercing sound filled the air.

Although the demon spirit was pained and its fangs were all broken, it managed to forcefully slow down the Asura Wheel attack, giving the Great Flood Crown Prince an extremely precious moment of reprieve!

With this brief moment of reprieve, it was more than enough for him to recover!

"You want to sneak attack me? Not that easy!"

The Great Flood Crown Prince roared out loud. All the demon seals on his body started to radiate with light. In the next moment he would summon all the demon power in his body and he would turn around and deliver to Lin Ming an earth-shaking strike!

But at this time, a cold light flashed in the eyes of Lin Ming's true self. He suddenly loosened his grip on the Asura Wheel, as if he wanted to give up on this attack.

But the moment he released his hand, a black cube appeared.

Without any strangeness or great movements, this black cube slid down the Asura Wheel and flew into the cavernous jaws of the demon spirit…

MW Chapter 2162

Chapter 2162 – Seven Reincarnations Red Lotus

…

…

…

Woosh

The Magic Cube sank into the jaws of the demon spirit and was swallowed up by it.

“Aoo!”

The demon spirit viciously roared at Lin Ming. And at this time, the Great Flood Crown Prince also got a clear look at Lin Ming. His eagle-sharp eyes narrowed as a terrifying light bloomed within them!

"You… you are one of the ancient races!? No, that's wrong… you… are one of the races of the 33 Heavens!"

The Great Flood Crown Prince could instantly detect an aura from within Lin Ming's body that didn't belong to the Dark Abyss. He was shocked beyond belief. How could a master of the 33 Heavens appear in the Dark Abyss? Moreover, he had hidden himself within the body of an abyssal demon!

The Great Flood Crown Prince didn't have time to ponder this. But, this was no longer important at this time. He brought his ghost saber in front of him and cruelly smiled. "No matter who you are, since you've encountered me today you'll die all the same!"

The Great Flood Crown Prince's saber came chopping down at Lin Ming's head!

But as he slashed out with his saber, his smile froze on his face. From behind him, that violently howling demon spirit seemed to encounter something horrifying beyond compare. Its body shivered and his expression twisted up as cracks began to appear on its body.

Roar!

Roar!

The demon spirit tore apart as it issued heart-cracking screams!

Even the demon spirits pierced through by thin chains and worn by the Great Flood Crown prince began to be affected by the appearance of a vortex, all of them being sucked in one at a time!

And at the center of this vortex was the Magic Cube!

“What!?”

The Great Flood Crown Prince was enraged. He had never seen such a magic tool before. In the past, even when the demon spirits he raised were crushed apart, they would be torn into the power of blood essence that would be eaten up by the other demon spirits and absorbed. Like this, even though some demon spirits would die, his blood essence wouldn’t be wasted and it wouldn’t affect the Great Flood Crown Prince too much.

But now that terrifying Black Cube was swallowing up these demon spirits and making them disappear from existence without any trace remaining. Even the blood vitality he poured into these demon souls was vanishing!

“Damn!”

The Great Flood Crown Prince decisively wielded a sword and slashed at his back. Raging demonic power gushed out.

Bang!

Blood energy exploded from behind the Great Flood Crown Prince. He damaged himself in order to forcefully free himself from that black vortex!

Scales ripped off from all over the Great Flood Crown Prince’s body. With a back covered in blood, he was sent hurtling away in the opposite direction!

And as Sheng Mei watched this not too far away, her soul trembled and her heartbeat seemed to come to a full stop!

In her gaze, all that was reflected was Lin Ming’s tall and straight figure. This left an indescribable feeling stirring in her heart.

“Lin Ming… he was still alive?”

That was right! That must have been why she was able to follow Lin Ming in her dreamland and experience his samsara of life and death together with him, watching him through the changes of time. This wasn’t because this mystic realm in the Demon God’s Tomb was some omnipotent force that spanned the endless layers of space and time, but because it had read Lin Ming’s memories. Lin Ming had also entered this mystic realm and simultaneously had to withstand the heart demon attack of this place!

Not just that, but this was also why Lin Ming was able to display skills in the complete road of life and death after reading from the Holy Scripture's pages of death for a short period of time. This was because he had already perceived the road of life and death, thus why such a miracle had occurred!

As for that mysterious black cube that spun about in the void, that also left Sheng Mei's heart shaking.

That Black Cube seemed to superimpose with something from Sheng Mei's past memories, like something covered in dust was being shaken in her mind.

However, Sheng Mei didn't have time to inquire into this. She could clearly feel that the aura released by the Magic Cube and knew that it was what had twice pulled her from the abyss of the heart demons.

If that hadn't happened, she would likely be sent into a permanent sleep by her heart demons. Her divine soul would be slowly exhausted until it died, just like those abyssals that had died here!

Thinking of this, Sheng Mei's thoughts were convoluted as she looked at Lin Ming.

So, the one who rescued her was Lin Ming…

So, the one who defeated her with a lower boundary, the one she was engaged to, was also Lin Ming…

Within a short few breaths of time, Sheng Mei seemed to experience all the rises and falls of life, all of her thoughts and feelings quaking…

And at this time, on another side of the battlefield, Lin Ming's true self stepped forwards. He reached out a hand.

Weng!

With a light cry, the Black Dragon Spear flew into Lin Ming's hand. The Black Dragon Spear had shed itself of all bone fragments and was now restored to its original glory.

Lin Ming grasped the Black Dragon Spear. With a shake, the spear shaft violently trembled as a horrifying vibration strength filled the air.

Lin Ming took the fiercely vibrating Black Dragon Spear and thrust out!

Peng!

Surging spear potential caused a series of detonations to ring through the air. In this strike, Lin Ming didn't ask for might, only speed!

The moment that the Great Flood Crown Prince used his ghost saber to cut at his own flesh and blood, using the exploding power of blood vitality to shake off the pull of the Magic Cube, Lin Ming's spear had already pierced towards him!

This was also the moment when the Great Flood Crown Prince's potential had been exhausted and hadn't yet gathered himself!

Moreover, the Great Flood Crown Prince was severely wounded. Lin Ming's spear came cutting down at a slant from the left. The spear point trembled and blurred, making it impossible to track its position. It was an ever-changing attack filled with innumerable variations!

"Out of my way!"

The Great Flood Crown Prince's eyes turned blood red. Because he had been wounded, he was now like an enraged wild animal!

He spat out a mouthful of blood essence and burnt it in the void, turning it into a fearsome strength that he poured into his own body. Then, with a deep bellow, he stretched out a bloody left arm and grasped at the Black Dragon Spear!

Peng!

The flesh on the Great Flood Crown Prince's arm was pounded into mush by the Black Dragon Spear, but he forcefully grabbed the Black Dragon Spear's shaft and held onto it!

"Die!"

With his left hand holding the Black Dragon Spear, the Great Flood Crown Prince raised the ghost saber with his right hand and brought it cutting down at Lin Ming's neck!

He desperately poured everything into this strike. As his saber came slashing down, thousands upon thousands of heavenly demons roared and howled, gathering around Lin Ming to form a heavenly demon force field that sealed off the void!

The Great Flood Crown Prince had burned his own blood; this saber strike contained his full potential!

"Lin Ming!"

Sheng Mei cried out in alarm. At this time, Lin Ming's demon avatar was injured and to engage the Great Flood Crown Prince in a close-combat melee with just the strength of his true self was dangerous to the extreme!

The moment that the saber came slashing down, the source strength of life and death emerged from Lin Ming's body. This strength of life and death wove together, forming a faint fuzzy red lotus that slowly bloomed!

Within the spinning flower petals, unstable small worlds were formed. Every small world constantly grew, interpreting their own samsaras of life and death.

Whether it was in time invested or number, Lin Ming's reincarnation technique was naturally inferior to Sheng Mei's. But, in his seven reincarnations, he had personally experienced the life and death of the world, gaining realizations as he struggled in despair to be reborn through nirvana after death. From this aspect alone it was something that Sheng Mei simply couldn't compare with.

After obtaining the complete Holy Scripture, Lin Ming had fused his understandings of living with the Holy Scripture and was able to similarly cultivate the reincarnation red lotus!

The seven reincarnations red lotus contained Lin Ming's seven lives he lived and all the power of hope and will he gathered from them. This was equal to seven Lin Mings striking out together!

Kacha!

The Great Flood Crown Prince’s saber light crashed into the reincarnation red lotus. The power of life and death erupted and the strength of Lin Ming’s seven lives completely disintegrated the Great Flood Crown Prince’s attack. The cold saber light shattered, forming a storm of energy that rolled outwards.

The Great Flood Crown Prince’s body shook and he was sent soaring away. In that moment, he could feel a horrifying power of life and death break into his body, brutally destroying everything it could.

The power of life grew endlessly and was incredibly difficult to eliminate. The power of death annihilated all, wildly swallowing away at the Great Flood Crown Prince’s blood vitality!

Roar!

Roar!

Roar!

As the Great Flood Crown Prince was severely wounded, the tens of thousands of heavenly demons attached to his body roared out together, as if they wanted to free themselves from the bindings of their chains and rush out!

Seeing this, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with a cold light. He flew straight up, forcefully suppressing the backlash from utilizing the power of the seven reincarnations red lotus. Then, he revolved his strength to the limit once more!

"Demon avatar, return!"

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. Then, the originally heavily wounded demon Lin Ming flew up, its body shrinking as it flew into the inner world of Lin Ming's true self!

This time, it was Lin Ming's demon avatar fusing into his body.

With this, Lin Ming had reached his strongest state!

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

From behind Lin Ming, the three avatars of essence, energy, and divine, all poured their strength into him.

For a time, the Asura phantom reappeared once more behind Lin Ming. And above the shaft of the Black Dragon Spear, the all-swallowing Asura Wheel appeared once more!

After fusing all of his strengths together, Lin Ming hurtled towards the Great Flood Crown Prince!

MW Chapter 2163

Chapter 2163 – Killing the Crown Prince

…

…

…

“You are courting death!”

Facing Lin Ming’s killing strike, the severely wounded Great Flood Crown Prince howled in rage. He decisively bit down on the tip of his tongue and spat out another mouthful of blood essence. Blood essence burned, turning into demon power that cast itself over his body. Immediately, the Great Flood Crown Prince’s strength erupted once more!

Roar! Roar! Roar!

Tens of thousands of heavenly demons drank their fill of blood and roared as they rushed outwards!

They desperately threw themselves onto Lin Ming without a care for danger. These heavenly demons had already gone mad. They disregarded being torn apart by the Asura Wheel, and new heavenly demons took the places of the fallen, none of them fearing death.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

Many heavenly demons imploded themselves as they neared Lin Ming. The power of blood essence contained in these heavenly demons erupted, forming violent flows of energy that shook the world.

Lin Ming's spear light was shattered by these fearless heavenly demons. The Asura Wheel also shook in the light of the explosions. Cracks appeared within it, as if it would break apart at any moment.

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. The Great Flood Crown Prince had become desperate and was now even recklessly sending his blood essence-fed heavenly demons to suicidally explode on him.

"Magic Cube!"

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. The Magic Cube howled into the air and black currents of energy wove together, forming a net of light in front of Lin Ming!

These heavenly demons crashed into the net of light, blowing apart!

And at this time, the Magic Cube was like a giant wheel that spun and hummed in the air. A soul vortex rose up around him as it began to swallow up the energies within the heavenly demons.

Even with this, Lin Ming felt strained to his limits. He had already opened the seven Dao Palaces and had even burned the Gate of Life's blood essence.

The strength of the avatars of essence, energy, and divine, all poured into Lin Ming's body.

As for Lin Ming's demon avatar, because it had suffered tremendous losses, the strength it was able to provide was limited.

Beneath the intense bombardment of energy, Lin Ming's blood vessels bulged out from all over his body. He was forced back a step at a time. Beneath the powerful impact, it was like all the blood vitality in his body was going to blow up!

Although the Magic Cube was the highest rank of divine tool in the universe, in the end this divine tool was still a tool. Even with unlimited potential, its true might would depend on the person using it. The Magic Cube would raise Lin Ming's combat strength by a great deal, but it couldn't raise it infinitely.

For a time the battle reached a deadlock. As Lin Ming persisted through with hardship, the truth was that the Great Flood Crown Prince’s situation was even worse. The heavenly demons that exploded were all carefully raised on his blood essence. Every one that exploded was the same as a slice of meat being cut off the Great Flood Crown Prince’s body!

Now, the Great Flood Crown Prince’s face was pale white. He had given his everything in this battle and even if he managed to win, his strength would be permanently reduced. From his middle True Divinity realm, he would fall to the lower True Divinity realm.

Moreover, if this sort of consumption continued any longer, the Great Flood Crown Prince’s boundary would fall to an even more tragic degree. Let alone his hopes of reaching the upper True Divinity realm, even returning to the middle True Divinity realm would become impossibly difficult.

To the Great Flood Crown Prince who possessed overwhelming ambitions, these were consequences he couldn’t withstand!

His hatred towards Lin Ming was like raging waves in a storm. He bellowed out loud and bit down on his tongue once more, blowing out even more blood essence. As his blood essence burned, his complexion paled. At the same time, more heavenly demons shot out from his body to swallow this burning blood essence.

The Great Flood Crown Prince released 20,000 heavenly demons in a single moment. These heavenly demons swallowed the Great Flood Crown Prince's blood essence and then emitted ghostly cried as they began to gather together as one!

A larger and even more hideous demon phantom slowly condensed in the air. This demon phantom's appearance was like that of an ancient totem.

Seeing this, Lin Ming's eyes widened. He knew that this was the Great Flood Crown Prince's final desperate attack!

"Big Brother Lin!"

Ruby's slightly weakened voice echoed outwards. Lin Ming's eyebrows pressed together. Even Ruby found it hard to bear such a sustained barrage of attacks.

If the Great Flood Crown Prince were to complete his attack, then whether it was Ruby or himself, neither of them would be able to withstand it.

Before the Great Flood Crown Prince's demon totem finished forming, he had to attack first!

Thinking of this, Lin Ming struck the Magic Cube with a fist.

Hum - !

The Magic Cube spun as it rose up. The heavenly demons that roared all over were swept up in the massive storm around the Magic Cube and blown to pieces.

The Magic Cube fiercely shook. Because of the maniacal storm of exploding heavenly demons, even the black vortex seemed as if it would fall apart.

Ruby grit her teeth and pushed forwards. Even in this situation she continued to manipulate the strength of the Magic Cube, expanding the soul storm to disturb the 20,000 heavenly demons and delay the speed that the demon totem was forming at!

At this time, Lin Ming attacked. The Asura Wheel had just shattered and Lin Ming couldn't reform it anytime soon. He could only forcefully overdraw his potential and utilize the Laws of the Holy Scripture!

Dazzling and beautiful red flower petals formed in front of Lin Ming. Every flower petal contained its own world, all of which had Lin Ming's seven lives of reincarnation poured into them!

However, as these flower petals started to form, Lin Ming's body shook and he paled. Dark red blood dripped down from the corners of his lips.

He had just forcibly used two Asura Wheels as well as two reincarnation red lotuses. In particular, the reincarnation red lotuses had been condensed with the power of hope and will from his seven reincarnations and this was incredibly taxing on Lin Ming to do. In addition with the heavenly demons exploding all around, Lin Ming's blood vitality had become wild and his energy wasn't stable. For him to once again force out this strike, it caused his energy to nearly escape his control!

"This is bad!"

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. He had only perceived the complete Holy Scripture for a mere half a year. Even though Lin Ming had become enlightened on the complex and profound principles of life and death, those were only the Law Concepts in the end. As for the reincarnation red lotus that was the true attack method, Lin Ming simply hadn't attempted it more than a few times.

Finding it hard to condense the requisite energy, Lin Ming resolutely abandoned the reincarnation red lotus. His mortal body began to swell as a towering ancient tree appeared behind him – this was the Heretical God Tree.

To use the power of the Heretical God Tree as a final attack, although its might was lacking, it was already the strongest attack that Lin Ming could summon in this short period of time.

And at this time, Lin Ming felt an incomparably familiar aura approach. A beautiful black figure appeared in front of him like a gust of dark smoke.

She stretched out ten delicate fingers, dipping them through the void like a dragonfly landing atop a lake surface. Every time her jade-like fingers fell, ripples appeared in the air, every ripple contained mystical Laws.

“Sheng Mei… it’s you?”

Lin Ming was shaken. He also knew Sheng Mei’s situation. Her body had fallen to its weakest state and she had also overdrawn her soul. Currently, just standing in this storm-filled space was hard for her to withstand, much less her using her Laws.

From the side, he could see bright red blood overflowing from the corner of Sheng Mei’s mouth. Like a red plum falling in the white snow, it was blinding to the eyes!

“You also used the strength of your blood essence, you…”

Lin Ming’s heart skipped a beat. Sheng Me was pregnant!

As Sheng Mei’s hand tapped through the void, she pressed another hand on her belly, branching out a part of her burning blood essence’s strength to protect the child within her from the storm of energy.

And by this time, Sheng Mei’s other hand had rapidly flashed through the air nine times!

Nine ripples formed nine flower petals!

These nine flower petals gathered together, forming a small nine revolution red lotus.

This red lotus lacked any strength behind it, but, it actually contained perfect Life and Death Laws!

It could be called the foundation of the reincarnation red lotus!

“Lin Ming, I have created a frame of the nine revolution red lotus’ Laws. You only need to pour in the strength of your seven reincarnations!”

Sheng Mei said, her face paper white and her forehead dripping with beads of sweat even as she grasped her belly.

In that instant, something seemed to touch Lin Ming’s heart. But at present Lin Ming didn’t have time to say anything, even if it were a single word.

He placed his hands atop the nine revolution lotus, pouring in all his power of will and hope into it without reserve!

Hum - !

Hum - !

The nine revolution red lotus rapidly spun. Like a balloon blown up by the wind, it began to rapidly expand!

With a framework of Laws constructed by Sheng Mei and with Lin Ming pouring his strength into it, the power of the nine revolution red lotus rose to a whole new level!

“Go die!”

Lin Ming’s eyes blazed with blood red light. The nine revolution red lotus broke through the stormy space and overbearingly rolled towards the Great Flood Crown Prince!

At this time, Ruby also took back her hand. She stumbled backwards, allowing the nine revolution red lotus to crash into the totem formed by 20,000 heavenly demons!

“Ahhhh!”

The Great Flood Crown Prince released an earth-shaking roar and thrust out the demon totem!

The demon totem collided with the nine revolution red lotus!

Bang!

A storm of energy tore through the world and divine light shot out. The 20,000 heavenly demons were swept up by the nine revolution red lotus, all of them exploding.

The Great Flood Crown Prince bore the brunt of this attack. Without even a chance to cry out in pain, he was swallowed up by the storm and then sent flying away like a broken sack!

The confining seals that blocked the surrounding space all tore apart at this moment. As the storm of energy wildly smashed into the stone walls, the ancient ciphers on the walls violently shook, as if they would also break apart.

Such a ruinous scene was like the arrival of the end of the world. Even if a lower True Divinity were to be placed in this storm they would be injured. As for an Empyrean, they would simply turn to ashes.

But as the storm raged outwards, Lin Ming grabbed Sheng Mei and held her against his chest. He surrounding her with himself and revolved the power of divinity and demons within him to the limit. All over his body, armor of an abyssal demon grew out as he stiffly resisted the storm!

In this moment, the sounds of the raging storm all around seemed to disappear from Sheng Mei's ears.

Time seemed to come to a standstill. Sheng Mei stared at Lin Ming's face, an unexplainable look in her eyes.

She could feel her soul gently shivering, as if she were in a dream, looking at all the colors of the rainbow.

She quietly felt the strength of this storm, as well as Lin Ming's strong and solid arms…

If only life stayed like the first time we met. Suddenly, looking back through the rivers of time, nothing fills the eyes but mist.

I must struggle in the dust and chaos. Even if I am only a small wave, I will still bravely move forwards…

MW Chapter 2164

Chapter 2164 – The Soul Emperor and Deep

…

…

…

In this world, all sorts of strange and bizarrely inexplicable matters were forever possible. Sheng Mei had believed that Lin Ming had already died, but she never imagined she would meet him here once more in the 18th layer of the Dark Abyss – the Demon God's Tomb.

Moreover… it was in this type of situation.

She had just experienced the dreamland of her heart demons. That sojourn through her dreamland had caused a nearly complete transformation of her mind and thoughts. In that dream, she had lost the thing she was most afraid of losing. But after awakening from that dream, she discovered that all those things she feared losing the most had actually returned…

This feeling of loss and recovery caused an unspeakable happiness to rise in Sheng Mei's heart. At this moment, Sheng Mei felt that if she could keep these things she lost then even if she never managed to chase after that ephemeral and illusionary peak of martial arts in her lifetime, she still wouldn't regret it.

She knew that one day she must give her child a home to return to.

She would do her best, finding a turning point so that her child could be born.

Or she would fail, and her child would be discovered and killed, and perhaps even refined...

These worries had becomes a dire curse of Sheng Mei's heart. She didn't dare to think about it because the mere thought left her so sad that she couldn't breathe.

But today, as she bordered on despair, she actually saw the child's father once more – Lin Ming.

After a quarter hour of time, the storm in the surrounding area began to gradually subside...

Lin Ming already sensed that the storm was weakening. When he felt it had weakened to a point where Sheng Mei could deal with it on her own, he left her and arrived beside the Great Flood Crown Prince.

In the final strike, the Great Flood Crown Prince had been severely wounded by Lin Ming, and with his boundary having fallen, he was simply incapable of resisting such a terrifying energy storm.

At this point he was already at death's door.

The Great Flood Crown Prince looked at Lin Ming, the corners of his lips tugging up as if he wished to smile. But at this time, Lin Ming coldly and indifferently raised the Black Dragon Spear and pierced through the Great Flood Crown Prince's throat!

Puff!

The Great Flood Crown Prince's throat was torn open. His body violently shook and blood gushed out from his neck, dyeing the surrounding ground bright red.

Lin Ming raised the Black Dragon, pulling up the Great Flood Crown Prince's body like a dead fish.

The Great Flood Crown Prince's neck was crooked and his limbs shook. His breath grew weaker and weaker, and eventually, he died.

Like this, a Crown Prince of the Great Flood Demon Kingdom had died in the Demon God's Tomb!

Lin Ming grabbed the arm of the Great Flood Crown Prince and revolved the Swallowing Laws. With a deep hum, the power of demon gods accumulated within the Great Flood Crown Prince was continuously extracted by Lin Ming, sucked into his body.

The Great Flood Crown Prince had a considerable amount of the power of demon gods within him. After swallowing up this strength, Lin Ming felt his own strength rise once more, approaching the limits of an Empyrean more and more.

Now, Lin Ming believed he had accumulated enough strength in his body. As long as he went into seclusion for a period of time, he could break through to the Empyrean limit!

After putting away the Great Flood Crown Prince's corpse, Lin Ming also took off his spatial ring. Upon sweeping through it, besides discovering some valuable pills and magic tools, there was also a dark blue ancient book.

Lin Ming took up this dark blue ancient book. This was one of the six ceremonial rites books – the Book of Nether!

This Book of Nether was originally the destiny-stabilizing treasure of the Deep Alliance's Nine Nether Palace. But in this trip into the Demon God's Tomb, the Book of Nether was taken by the Great Flood Demon Kingdom. This was naturally because Nine Nether Palace lacked strength and weren't able to control their own ceremonial rites book.

And at the same time, Deep King Road also possessed the Demon Association's Book of Evil.

After killing the Great Flood Crown Prince, all three ceremonial rites books in the Demon God's Tomb were gathered here. Now, Lin Ming possessed two and Sheng Mei had one.

If there were more ceremonial rites books, would there be some sort of unique or special function? This thought crossed Lin Ming's mind as he turned to look at Sheng Mei.

There was only 30 feet separating the two of them. But, this short distance seemed as if it crossed through the vast span of space and time.

After seven thousand years, and with the time they passed through within time enchantments added on, it had been nearly 10,000 years since they last saw each other...

In such a place and such a time, the two of them met again. All sorts of tastes and emotions rose up in their hearts, all sorts of words and questions they wanted to say and ask, and yet neither knew where to begin.

The mystic realm was dark and quiet. The energy shockwaves from the battle between Lin Ming and the Great Flood Crown Prince continued to reverberate around them, blooming in the void like ripples in space.

Lin Ming silently arrived in front of Sheng Mei, and then reached out a hand to gently wipe the blood off her lips.

“You… why are you in the Dark Abyss? Why would you have become an abyssal?”

After a quarter hour of silence between the two, Lin Ming finally spoke up.

Sheng Mei’s gaze pierced through Lin Ming. She said, “This question is also what I want to ask you.”

“Answer me first.” Lin Ming said.

“Mm…” Sheng Mei nodded. “By this time, there is nothing I need to conceal from you. I will tell you everything I know because the soul mark that the Soul Emperor planted in my spiritual sea has been somehow removed by me, after I overdrew my spiritual sea to flush it out…”

“Soul mark?”

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. Sheng Mei's description of the soul mark left him frowning. "Do you mean… slave seal?"

A slave seal could completely control and sublimate a person's thoughts, making them into a truly loyal servant. Many martial artists would rather die than have a slave seal willingly implanted within them.

Sheng Mei shook her head, "It's not a slave seal. Although a slave seal can completely control a person, their independent personality will basically be erased afterwards. Such a person is no different from a puppet, and although a puppet is loyal and easy to use, they will have a flaw in their soul due to their lost personality. Like this, that person will lose a great deal of potential and their possibilities for growth will dramatically fall. It is impossible to make such a person into a peerless powerhouse.

"What the Soul Emperor needs is not a puppet but a powerful assistant, a genius that could carry out missions alone…

"Thus, what he implanted within me was only his spirit mark. Out of all living beings in the universe, whether they are races of the 33 Heavens or abyssal demons, the Soul Emperor is the one who understands the soul the most. After he placed his spirit mark within me, he could retain my complete personality, my wishes and desires, and even my hatred towards him. But I… just had no way to disobey him… because, as long as he wished to, he could use a mere thought to activate the spirit mark as well as the energy he placed inside me to control my movements."

Sheng Mei sighed as she spoke to here, her eyelashes quietly trembling as if she were pained. For these tens of thousands of years, the Soul Emperor's spirit mark had lurked in the recesses of her mind, following her growth and reinforcing itself all the while. From start to finish, the spirit mark was like a cage that was impossible for her to break free from.

This sort of sorrow had followed Sheng Mei her entire life.

But now, after breaking through the spirit mark, Sheng Mei felt like a bird flying in the skies, a fish freed into the seas. The comfort and freedom nearly caused Sheng Mei to burst into tears.

"So that's what happened..." Lin Ming nodded. From the time he first met Sheng Mei he felt that she was being controlled by the Soul Emperor. And, it seemed that his speculations were correct.

"Then why would you appear in the Dark Abyss? Is this also the intentions of the Soul Emperor?"

Lin Ming asked. In truth, he had already guessed the answer in this heart.

"Yes." Sheng Mei nodded.

“Is there some strange relationship between the Soul Emperor and Deep? Or… is the Soul Emperor actually Deep?” Lin Ming asked.

This thought had always been in the back of Lin Ming’s mind.

Sheng Mei’s status was unquestioned in the entire Dark Abyss. Within the Deep Alliance, she possessed supreme status and no one dared to question her.

If Sheng Mei were really a high level spy sent in to infiltrate by the spiritas, then there was no need for her to be in such a high-profile position. Moreover, this sort of viewpoint was shaky to begin with.

Then, the most likely possibility was that there was a certain relation of benefits between the Soul Emperor and Deep. Or, they could even be the same person. If so, then everything could be explained.

In other words, Sheng Mei had different dual identities within the Dark Abyss and 33 Heavens!

Sheng Mei shook her head. “Your guess is only slightly off. In truth… it shouldn’t be said that the Soul Emperor is Deep, but that… Deep is the Soul Emperor!”

“Mm?” Lin Ming was startled by Sheng Mei’s hidden undertone.

Deep was the Soul Emperor. In other words, the current ruler of the spiritas was an abyssal demon!

The spiritas could be considered the largest and most powerful race in the current 33 Heavens. Yet, such a race was controlled by an abyssal!

Thinking of this, Lin Ming felt a chill crawl down his spine!

MW Chapter 2165

Chapter 2165 – Riddle of Identity

…

…

…

"Just… what is going on here?" Lin Ming took a deep breath as he looked at Sheng Mei.

Sheng Mei said, "You should know that a great war erupted 10 billion years ago in the 33 Heavens, and in that war, several universes were destroyed and the ancient races were nearly completely annihilated?"

Lin Min nodded, "And then?"

"In the past, the Asura Road Master led the ancient races of the 33 Heavens to resist the abyssals. They waged fierce war against the six totem level abyssals and as the war dragged on, eventually the ancient races managed to seal away the Dark Abyss. This move removed the firewood from beneath the pot and severed the escape route of the abyssals. But at that time, there were still many abyssals that remained in the 33 Heavens, including totem level abyssals! These abyssals never imagined that the life forms of the 33 Heavens would have the ability to seal away the Dark Abyss.

"Without reinforcements, without supplies, the abyssals had their backs pushed to the river. Finally, they were slowly strangled to death by the overwhelming numbers of the ancient races. It could even be said that… the sealing of the Dark Abyss was the turning point of the war. If they Dark Abyss wasn't sealed away then the abyssals could have returned to rest and restored their strength before making a comeback, finally rising into the 33 Heavens again and again until the 33 Heavens were destroyed."

As Sheng Mei spoke to here, Lin Ming nodded. The things she said were all facts.

Whether it was 10 billion years ago or now, the 33 Heavens simply wasn't a match for the Dark Abyss.

After all, the abyssals were life forms that managed to survive from the previous ancient universal era. They had a martial arts civilization that had been accumulated for over 100 billion years and this wasn't something that the 33 Heavens could hope to compete with. Moreover, they were a race that had truly defied the heavens to change their fates. In a situation where the Heavenly Dao had sentenced them to extinction, they had relied upon the horrifying strength of their race to forcefully live on.

"The abyssals were at a dead end and they nearly died off in the encirclement of the ancient races. However, there were still totem level abyssals that managed to survive. They hid in space distortions and fell into a deep slumber, and at that time, the Asura Road Master had already gone missing…

“I don’t know the specifics of what happened 10 billion years ago and I don’t know how many totem level abyssals survived. I only know that up to several billion years ago, of the six totem level abyssals, only Deep and Famine survived.

“As for whether or not the current totem level abyssals are the same ones as those from 10 billion years ago, I am not sure…”

Lin Ming’s mind shivered. “What do you mean?”

Sheng Mei shook her head. “I don’t know. This matter is simply far too complex. My knowledge is limited, and I don’t understand the Soul Emperor. In fact, I don’t even know his name. All I know is that he is truly terrifying!

“In truth, the reason that the Soul Emperor has the appearance of an old youth is because several hundred million years ago, he seized the body of the true Soul Emperor, the true ruler of the 33 Heavens’ spiritas.”

“What!?”

Lin Ming was dumbfounded. “The true spiritas’ Soul Emperor… his body was seized and the current Soul Emperor is a fake… then could the spiritas be…”

Lin Ming’s entire body turned cold. Someone that could become the Soul Emperor of the spiritas must be at least an upper True Divinity, and likely an outstanding character even amongst upper True Divinities.

But, such a Soul Emperor had his body quietly seized by others, and not even the other spiritas True Divinities had detected it!

The current Soul Emperor was too terrifying!

For the last several thousand years the saints had fought a tumultuous war with humanity. But during this entire time, the spiritas had held their troops quietly in reserve.

The spiritas gave off a mysterious and ghostly feeling to Lin Ming. He simply was never able to figure out just what the spiritas wanted to do.

Now, with humanity’s strength having surpassed the anticipation of the saints, the war had reached a deadlock. Both sides had slaughtered each other and were greatly damaged.

The saints’ original plan was to eat up humanity and expand, but not only did they fail to eat up humanity but their teeth shattered in their attempt.

In the current impasse, both humanity and the saints mutually used up their strength. Wasn’t this the exact situation that the Soul Emperor desired to see?

And when the war between humanity and the saints entered its final act, could the Soul Emperor possibly… lead the abyssals of the Dark Abyss to enter the 33 Heavens once more?

At that time, would the 33 Heavens even have the strength to resist?

Although the Dark Abyss had been sealed up by the Eternal God Wall, who knew just how long this Eternal God Wall could continue sealing up the Dark Abyss?

Thinking of this, a cold sweat streamed down Lin Ming’s forehead. He looked at Sheng Mei, his voice a bit hurried as he asked, “You said that the current fake Soul Emperor is Deep, then what about the Deep in the Dark Abyss?”

“It is an avatar.” Worry flashed in Sheng Mei’s eyes. “Billions of years ago, Deep produced an avatar and when he managed to weaken the avatar’s strength to a low enough degree, the avatar was able to pass through the Eternal God Wall and dive into the Dark Abyss. The avatar slowly cultivated to become the current ‘Deep’. In fact, for all these billions of years, ‘Deep’ rarely appeared. As a puppet, whether or not this Deep avatar appeared was unimportant, and actually, not appearing made Deep’s avatar seem even more mysterious, even more formidable. The one that truly controls Deep King Road is the Soul Emperor. As for me, Deep Child, the Great Elder, and so forth, we are all merely chess pieces laid down by the Soul Emperor to control the Deep avatar in ruling over Deep King Road.”

The more Sheng Mei spoke, the more shocked Lin Ming was. Without a doubt, the Soul Emperor's next move was to swallow up the entire 33 Heavens.

The Soul Emperor's opponent had never been the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, but all lives that lived in the 33 Heavens!

"What can I do..."

A great pressure pushed down on Lin Ming's shoulders.

He originally thought that the great calamity of the world was the disappearance of the 33 Heavens' God Lamenting Wall and the saints invading humanity.

If they could defeat the saints then the great calamity would pass.

It was only afterwards that he learned of the existence of the Dark Abyss. It seemed that this current great calamity would be as terrifying as the one 10 billion years ago.

And now, before his first opponent, the saints, had been defeated, a second and more powerful opponent had appeared – the Soul Emperor!

This was a horrifying opponent, an opponent that he completely did not understand, but who he felt completely understood him instead!

In this situation, was there any strategy or method that could give them a chance?

Feeling Lin Ming's worries, Sheng Mei also fell silent.

At this time, her thoughts were all incredibly complex. All the secrets she spoke of just now were the highest level of secrets of the abyssals. In truth, what she did now was no different from betraying her own race.

But, she said them anyways.

She didn't hope for the Dark Abyss to annihilate the 33 Heavens, nor did she hope for Lin Ming to perish in the war. And, she absolutely didn't wish to see the Soul Emperor rule over all of existence, because if he did, her fate would be truly pitiful.

At this time, Lin Ming suddenly looked up at Sheng Mei. Slowly and clearly, enunciating each word, he asked, "Are you an abyssal?"

Sheng Mei was stunned. She was about to subconsciously nod, but just before she did, doubts appeared in her mind...

She always believed she was part of the dark angel race.

But what was the dark angel race? In the Dark Abyss, this race was unbelievably rare and incomparably mysterious.

Moreover...

Sheng Mei recalled all those strange scenes in the dreamland of her heart demons...

There was that black-clothed little girl who always engaged in slaughter with the abyssals.

As well as the primal god race old man who seemed as if he was also callous and indifferent towards the little girl, but in truth paid careful attention to every single action she made...

From being locked down on a lonely island, facing the impact of the rough sea waves, the young girl had finally soared into the skies...

In that battlefield of slaughter, that peerless woman had finally made the ultimate blood sacrifice, becoming the incarnation of the Eternal God Wall to seal away the Dark Abyss...

And on this woman’s forehead was the same nine revolution red lotus mark, and her appearance was also completely similar to Sheng Mei’s…

Was this person… herself?

Was there a chance that these memories somehow came from her past life?

Sheng Mei’s thoughts fell into confusion.

And at this time, Lin Ming suddenly said, “I once entered the universe where the primal god race lived, and entered into a forbidden zone left behind by the Asura Road Master. In that forbidden land there was a Cold Ice Mirror, and this Cold Ice Mirror was a test. It recorded ancient geniuses from 10 billion years ago to fight trial challengers.

“And of all the matches I faced, there was a woman whose appearance was completely similar to your own.”

Lin Ming quietly said.

Hearing this, Sheng Mei’s heart shook and she was unable to speak for a long time.

“What else do you know of her?” Sheng Mei asked.

“I only know that in the end, she died on the Eternal God Wall, turning into bones…”

MW Chapter 2166

Chapter 2166 – The Joys of Life

…

…

…

"Eternal Wall, bones…"

Sheng Mei fell silent. Many things were now clear to her. 10 billion years ago, that peerless woman had sacrificed herself, turning into the Eternal God Wall with that Purple Card and blocking out the Dark Abyss!

But just who was that peerless woman? How were they related to each other?

There were still many things that Sheng Mei didn't understand.

Lin Ming said, “About that mysterious woman from 10 billion years ago, what do you know?”

Sheng Mei sighed. Her ten fingers tapped the void in front of her, ripples blooming out in space. In the next moment, chaotic illusions gathered in front of Lin Ming, turning into a scene.

This scene was what Sheng Mei saw in the dreamland of her heart demons.

In that dreamland, everything she remembered was blurred. She could only reproduce the several scenes that left the deepest impression on her.

Lin Ming quietly walked out. He saw the mysterious young woman facing a hellish level of training, and also saw her engaging in life and death slaughter.

Finally, the images froze as the mysterious woman sacrificed herself, becoming the manifestation of the Eternal God Wall.

Lin Ming was startled. He said, “I see, so that’s what happened…

“The Purple Card was used to seal up the Dark Abyss, and when Mo Eversnow brought Fishy to pass through the Eternal God Wall, the reason Fishy suddenly disappeared was because she had been drawn in by the Purple Card.

“Fishy was a life form that evolved from the Purple Card, so it’s reasonable for the Purple Card to draw her back in…”

Lin Ming was originally worried about Fishy, afraid that she somehow got into an accident in the Dark Abyss. But now he learned that she had returned to the Purple Card.

With this, he finally felt relieved. The inner space of the Purple Card should be the safest place in the entire universe for Fishy. In particular, now that the Purple Card has turned into the Eternal God Wall, not even totem level abyssals were capable of shaking it.

“However, that mysterious woman who sacrificed herself 10 billion years ago, how is she related to the Immortal Sovereign? Is she the Immortal Sovereign?”

Lin Ming looked at Sheng Mei. It was obvious that there wouldn’t be any answers from asking her this. Sheng Mei just wouldn’t have any answers concerning something that might be her past life.

“Lin Ming, what have you experienced these past years?”

Sheng Mei turned to Lin Ming, her eyes deep and filled with a multitude of emotions. Worry, guilt, joy… all sorts of feelings mixed together, jumbled in a way in which not even Sheng Mei could discern what she was feeling.

She felt extremely concerned towards Lin Ming. But at the same time, she found it difficult to face him.

Subconsciously she had a desire to approach Lin Ming. But at the same time, she felt that he was actually too far away from her.

This sort of contradictory mindset caused Sheng Mei to feel as if there were some invisible wall separating the two of them.

This also made it so that she always strolled along the edge of this wall, wary and cautious, not daring to take a single step past it.

“It’s too complicated to say. I will send you a message with my spiritual sense.”

Ever since parting with Sheng Mei, Lin Ming’s life experiences could be said to have been filled with twists and turns.

Amongst his experiences, there were difficult tribulations and hardships, as well as successful returns and events that turned the tide and lifted the spirit.

Lin Ming sent out his spiritual sense. A beam of light shot into the point between Sheng Mei's eyebrows.

With it, all sorts of things that Lin Ming experienced in the last 12,000 years were transmitted into Sheng Mei's spiritual sea.

Although thought transmissions were extremely fast, this transmission still took a quarter hour of time.

During this period, Sheng Mei saw a man that struggled through his fate. Someone, who even though they were small and weak, still never succumbed to the destiny of being destroyed by the strong.

From suffering to despair, to a rise back to the top of the mountains… many times, a powerhouse was not just strong, but firm and unyielding in their heart.

It was hard to describe in words everything that Lin Ming experienced. After Sheng Mei watched it, she didn't know what she felt in her heart. Admiration, guilt, sorrow, heartache… a kaleidoscope of emotions that muddle her senses.

After a quarter hour, Lin Ming withdrew his spiritual sense. Sheng Mei slowly composed herself. Then, she looked at Lin Ming, and as if she wanted to lift the pall of awkward silence between the two, she awkwardly said, "Are your wives and child doing well…?"

That thought transmission Lin Ming sent didn't contain every bit of information. The vast majority of things were still unknown. For instance, Lin Ming hadn't sent anything concerning his family or friends.

As for information he needed to hide like the Magic Cube, he naturally didn't describe these things much.

Sheng Mei also saw the Magic Cube when Lin Ming battled the Great Flood Crown Prince. She had a faint guess about what the Magic Cube was, but tactfully didn't ask and instead pretended as if she never saw it.

"Mm, they are doing well."

Lin Ming subconsciously glanced at Sheng Mei's belly as he spoke.

Seeing Lin Ming's gaze, Sheng Mei bit down on her lips and quietly pressed her hands against her belly.

Ever since this small life appeared in her, Sheng Mei felt that it was impossible for her mood to return to the motionless lake surface that it used to be.

Now her thoughts were prone to fluctuations. As for her energy, she used to pour everything she had into chasing after the peak of martial arts, but now she slowly shifted her attention to the child in her belly…

In particular, after knowing that she might have had a ‘past life’, Sheng Mei’s thoughts were wrapped in a layer of confusing fog. She didn’t know what her future would be or how she would end up.

She had a faintly ominous premonition. As for the child in her belly, it had nearly become the only repose left in her life.

This child was already the most important part of her life.

Lin Ming stared at Sheng Mei. Then, he lifted his hand and slowly touched her belly…

Sheng Mei was startled. She subconsciously wanted to take a step backwards, but she eventually stopped and let Lin Ming’s hand approach.

Finally, Lin Ming’s hand fell onto Sheng Mei’s smooth belly. His palm was warm and somewhat numbing…

Time seemed to slow to a crawl in that moment.

Within this underground cavern, silence filled the air. Lin Ming's hand gently touched Sheng Mei's belly. The two of them had incomparably vast spiritual seas. With just a little physical contact, they could feel each other's soul fluctuations and magnetic life fields.

This sort of feeling of touching together their lives was incomparably beautiful.

And in that moment, Lin Ming also clearly sensed the life fluctuations of Sheng Mei's child.

These fluctuations fit perfectly with his heart, connected to his blood…

Without a doubt, this was his child.

Taking a deep breath, Lin Ming drew his palm back. His slowly looked up at Sheng Mei, and could see his image clearly reflected in her pupils.

"Do you not plan on… undoing the seal?"

Lin Ming suddenly asked. Sheng Mei lightly said, "Once this child is born, the Soul Emperor will know of it. Although I managed to push out the spirit mark that he left in my body, there is still a part of his energy hiding within me. I have no means to flush this energy out… and as long as this energy exists, the Soul Emperor can control me.”

As Sheng Mei spoke to here, a dispirited sorrow flashed in her eyes.

She had the strength of a True Divinity, yet she wasn’t even capable of protecting her own child.

“You can give me the child.”

Lin Ming’s few words caused Sheng Mei’s heart to shrink.

Give Lin Ming her child?

Lin Ming was the child’s father. If she gave the child to Lin Ming, then he would naturally take good care of it.

But to give away the only hope left in her life, Sheng Mei felt an ache in her heart, as if she were too reluctant to part.

If she gave her child to Lin Ming, then even though the Soul Emperor would know, only she would have to face the Soul Emperor’s anger in the future.

Sheng Mei was well aware that she was only a chess piece to the Soul Emperor. Although she faintly understood what endgame he was playing towards, she didn't know what steps he would take to get there. As a chess piece, if she couldn't rid herself of her destiny then what awaited her was an incomparably miserable fate.

But…

She didn't choose.

She knew that only by passing Lin Ming her child would it have a slim chance of survival.

Without a doubt, Lin Ming was the only one in this universe who had hopes of resisting the Soul Emperor, even though these hopes were incredibly dim.

Sheng Mei grit her teeth. With shaking hands she traced her own belly, gently whispering, as if she were speaking through a dream…

"My child, mommy will no longer seal you, mommy will let you be born…"

Her hands flickered as if she were playing a zither. Her ten fingers tapped rhythmically as runes shined atop her belly, shimmering like stars.

A seal was slowly undone.

Then another.

As seals were undone one after another, a faint glow began to emerge from Sheng Mei's belly.

In the dark mystic realm cavern, this glow was like a group of fireflies gathered together.

Covered in this glow, traces of tears appeared at the edges of Sheng Mei's eyes.

With it, an aura of life gently overflowed, like a new spring rain, like soft and tender buds growing in the moist dirt.

As if beginning to wake up from a slumber that lasted for thousands of years, this aura brought with it a pitiful feeling that touched the heart and soul.

This was a new life, a new start, a new hope…

This was Sheng Mei's child and also Lin Ming's child…

In this moment, Sheng Mei could clearly feel that this small life in her belly was incomparably overjoyed at having been unsealed after thousands of years.

This small life stretched out, and accidently kicked out a foot.

Feeling the gentle kick at her belly, that faint touch, Sheng Mei's heart shivered. In the next moment, tears flowed.

"It... it moved..."

Sheng Mei covered her mouth, her voice somewhat vague. This was the feeling of motherhood, the joy of being able to sense the growth of one's child, to watch as someone who was born from their body slowly grew up. It was something that couldn't be described with words alone.

"My child is about to be born..."

Sheng Mei closed her eyes, her eyelashes quietly shivering. At this time, she felt as if nothing else mattered.

She only wanted to stay here and wait for the birth of her child.

Her child seemed to be… a girl.

Would her daughter look like her?

MW Chapter 2167

Chapter 2167 – Little Life

…

…

…

After undoing the seal, Sheng Mei's energy had been completely poured into her child.

This underground mystic realm cavern contained an incomparably pure heaven and earth origin energy and power of demon gods. Sheng Mei sat in meditation every day, absorbing the surrounding heaven and earth energy. But, she didn't absorb this energy for herself, but for her child to help her grow.

Maybe because the seal had been in place for too long, but after the seal was undone, the small life began to rapidly grow within her. The origin energy that Sheng Mei drew in was absorbed by this small life without a single drop remaining.

This speed of growth could be described as terrifying.

Sheng Mei and Lin Ming stayed in this cavern for over half a year.

Sheng Mei's belly already started to protrude a little. As she felt the growth of her child every day, a smile would carelessly appear on her face.

Although this cavern that could only be described as deathly silent was dark, Sheng Mei had undone the seal on her child here and also had Lin Ming accompanying her. Because of that, the environment around her had become warm and touching. This sort of life brimmed with a faint happiness...

But, what left Sheng Mei sighing at times was that during this half year she rarely spoke with Lin Ming. Most of her time was spent in meditation, and as for Lin Ming, he spent the majority of the time studying the demon relief below the cliff and also studying the ancient bronze coffin held in the mouth of the demon relief.

The two of them would occasionally meet eyes, but oftentimes they would mostly exchange small talk and greetings. Even if they spoke, it would mostly be speculations about this mystic realm and discussions on Laws.

Besides that, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei basically didn't speak to each other. Perhaps because of those special events that occurred 7000 years ago, the two of them might have had a beginning that was flooded with misunderstanding and hatred. Because of that, the two of them might not be able to clearly see each other's heart, and even if they did, they still maintained a distance, one that was neither too friendly nor too aloof.

This might be a form of self-preservation, it might be a way to protect each other's self-respect and esteem, it might be because of a fear of an uncertain future, or it might even be in fear that in the future, the two of them would head in opposite directions…

In order to avoid a greater tragedy in the future, to avoid them wounding each other even more, neither was willing to take the first step forwards.

Time passed. Sheng Mei carefully maintained this distance. She was like a noble and sensitive cat that prowled the night.

It was just that sometimes at night, she would speak to the child in her belly, pouring out all the emotions and thoughts that she had sealed away in her heart…

…..

Like this, two years passed.

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's lives continued without much change. Occasionally, they would touch each other's soul fluctuations and life fields. Whether it was Lin Ming or Sheng Mei, this type of contact between the magnetic fields of their lives was a pleasant experience.

On this day, Sheng Mei's eyes flashed open from meditation. At this moment she felt an incomparably clear life fluctuation emerge from her belly.

Then, a soft and obviously childish voice chirped out, "Mommy... Mommy... I want to see you a little bit sooner..."

Although this voice was weak, it caused Sheng Mei's heart to quiver!

In the dreamland of her heart demons, she had heard her child speak. She never imagined that in reality, just as her child was about to be born, that her child would actually speak, and her tone was actually extremely similar to that child in her dreamland!

Everything that happened in that heart demon dreamland was clearly fake, but as she recalled her experiences there, Sheng Mei was left seeped in anxiousness.

She already vowed that even if she were to be crushed to pieces and her soul destroyed, she would never allow that scene in her dreams to occur in reality!

"My child, mommy is here, hurry and grow a little faster and you can see mommy soon."

Sheng Mei said with a faintly excited expression as she stroked her belly.

And at this time, Lin Ming who was studying the demon relief below the cliff also heard the conversation between Sheng Mei and the child.

His breathing sped up. His figure flashed and he arrived beside Sheng Mei.

“She… she spoke?”

Lin Ming’s expression was filled with joy. His child had been able to speak even within her mother. This sort of perception and awareness was absolutely not something that a mortal child would have.

Once his child was born, she would absolutely be a monstrous genius when it came to cultivation.

Before Sheng Mei could nod, the little life in her belly asked, with an uncertain tone, “You are… Daddy?”

Although this small life couldn’t see the outside, she could see use her heart to perceive the world beyond.

“That’s right!” Hearing this small life call him daddy, Lin Ming felt feelings surge in his heart. There was satisfaction, pride, happiness… he wanted to hold this child in his arms and take good care of her.

But what a pity, she still hadn’t been born…

“My child, you must grow up well. Once you are born, daddy will teach you martial arts so that you can beat up all the bad guys.”

Lin Ming spoke from his heart, his expression filled with tender love.

However, the small life in Sheng Mei’s belly warily said, “Daddy, do you like me?”

“Of course!” Lin Ming replied without hesitation. Was that even a question?

“But…” The childish voice hesitated a little, “Then how come you’ve never touched me and rarely come to see me? It’s always been mommy speaking to me, but you’ve never spoken to me? Daddy feels like a stranger…”

This soft infant’s voice sounded in Lin Ming’s ear, knocking him silly as if it struck him like a heavy hammer.

He actually… was left speechless.

That was right. Two years ago, he had touched Sheng Mei's belly, and that was to feel the life fluctuations of the child and determine that this small life was his own flesh and blood.

But after that, he never touched the child again, because touching the child was in truth the same as touching Sheng Mei…

As for speaking with his own child, Lin Ming never imagined that this would occur. He never thought that this small life would develop such a degree of consciousness and he never spoke to the child because that would be speaking to Sheng Mei's belly. In Lin Ming's point of view, this seemed a bit idiotic…

Thus, for these past two years it was Sheng Mei speaking to the child in her belly on her own. Lin Ming's exchanges with this small life were nearly zero…

So, it wasn't wrong for this little life to call him a stranger at all.

"Mommy, I don't think Daddy likes us…"

The little life seemed to be more and more sure of its feelings. Its soft voice echoed in Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's ears.

Lin Ming was left even more speechless. He froze up. He originally wanted to reach out a hand to touch his child, but when it was halfway out, he took it back, extremely embarrassed.

And on the other side, Sheng Mei’s thoughts were also complex. She gently traced her belly. She originally wanted to say ‘How could your daddy not like us?’, but as these words reached the tip of her tongue they fell away once more. This was because she didn’t have the belief to say such words.

She looked up at Lin Ming, not sure what expression to make…

“Daddy really doesn’t like us. I’ve already been hated before I’ve been born. Aiya, I think I should follow Mommy instead.”

The soft childish voice seemed to sigh like an adult. And faintly, one could sense the cunning playfulness of a child in the voice.

But at this time, whether or not these words were the true thoughts of this strange and playful little child were unimportant.

That soft and childish voice had already touched the softest parts of Lin Ming’s heart, making it feel as if his heart had been gripped by needles.

He quietly bent over and held onto Sheng Mei as well as the child in her belly.

He said in a warm tone, “Daddy likes you. No matter what happens to you in the future, no matter what dangers you face, daddy will stand in front of you and look after you and protect you…”

Like this, Sheng Mei was held by Lin Ming. She stiffened for a bit, her thoughts in tumult as she scrambled for something to say.

“Then you will also protect Mommy?” The small life earnestly asked.

“Of course!”

Lin Ming’s voice wasn’t loud, but it was solid and true.

Sheng Mei shivered. She looked at Lin Ming and at her belly, her eyes unknowingly turning wet…

She didn’t know what would happen in the future, but as long as she faced it bravely, then what did it matter?

At this time, Lin Ming quietly spoke in Sheng Mei's ears. "After we leave the Demon God's Tomb, come with me..."

This simple and light commitment didn't have any illustrious words nor was it filled with the heated vows of love between men and women, but these few simple words caused Sheng Mei's heart to shake and her misty eyes to start tearing up...

"He... will find us..."

Sheng Mei sadly said. She had already decided to bravely face the future, but she had never thought of accompanying Lin Ming. To the Soul Emperor, she was like a beacon at night. Wherever she went, he would be able to easily find her.

She didn't want to drag Lin Ming into her mess. Just a simple promise from him was more than enough.

"I know..." Lin Ming gently traced Sheng Mei's cheek. "I once had nothing in this world, but I grew step by step until I reached where I am now. I once broke through the chains of the Heavenly Dao to change my life and destiny. I once fell to the lowest valley, but I crawled back up. I once faced the overbearing might of the saints to find a moment of respite for my race. I have already gone through so many 'onces' before, so why should I fear the future?"

As Lin Ming spoke, he slowly pulled Sheng Mei to his chest.

MW Chapter 2168

Chapter 2168 – Demon Bone

…

…

…

Ever since the little fellow developed her own consciousness and was able to speak, her faint and immature voice would occasionally echo out in the cavern.

Perhaps because she was sealed away for too long, the child was particularly rambunctious and naughty. At the start, because her soul force was weak, she would make a ruckus but go to sleep soon afterwards.

But later, as the birth of the child approached, she became increasingly curious and intelligent, even pestering Sheng Mei and Lin Ming to tell her about how they met.

From when Sheng Mei and Lin Ming first met in the Asura Road's final trial, to their reunion in Soul World's Akashic Dream Universe, retelling this part of their story wasn't a problem. But when the child specifically asked how Sheng Mei and Lin Ming got together and how she became pregnant, this question actually left Sheng Mei at a loss for words.

Sheng Mei simply didn’t know how to describe her experiences with Lin Ming at the Sky Spill Continent 7000 years ago.

And every time Sheng Mei would try to vaguely describe events, the little child would actually ask Lin Ming instead.

Regarding this, Lin Ming was left speechless. He didn’t understand how his child could speak before she was born but also have so many weird and eccentric thoughts. Could this child have possibly inherited a part of Sheng Mei’s memories, or even his own?

Days passed. The little fellow finally had a name – Lin Meng, with her childhood nickname being Jiu’er.

The name was chosen by Sheng Mei. The ‘Meng’ from Lin Meng was an ancient word for dream and the word ‘Jiu’ was an ancient word for nine.

She had dreamt of her child in her heart demon dreamland and also dreamt of Lin Ming’s 7000 past years of life.

In a sense, the reason she resolved her mind to undo the seal and have her child be born was because of her heart demon dreamland.

Since the child was to be born because of a dream, it was also named after a dream.

As for the childhood nickname of Jiu’er, that was because Sheng Mei had experienced nine reincarnations, and those nine lives she lived were live nine different dreams.

With this little fellow sneakily adjusting the mood all the time, the relationship between Lin Ming and Sheng Mei became much closer.

Slowly, three years passed in this cavern beneath the killing lake.

Sheng Mei’s belly protruded; soon, the child would be born.

But on this day, as Sheng Mei sat in meditation, she saw a red flash of light from below the cliff. This flash of light gushed out like a thick fountain of blood, bringing with it an intense infernal energy.

Sheng Mei was startled. She immediately branched out her sense, “Lin Ming, what is it?”

In these past years she knew that Lin Ming had been studying the demon relief and the ancient bronze coffin below the cliff all this time. As for what he was actually studying, she didn't ask him.

If it were before, then when it came to this extremely mysterious mystic realm that might be involved with the ancient Demon God from 100 billion years ago, she would naturally be curious about it and would want to find out any possible secrets.

But because of the growing child in her belly now, Sheng Mei kept a respectful distance from the ancient totems that were filled with a dark and evil energy.

However, the sudden explosion today left Sheng Mei's heart gripped. She was afraid that something had happened to Lin Ming.

Her body flickered and she arrived near the cliff edge. She could see that demon relief diabolically grinning; it seemed that was where the rich infernal energy had come from.

The demon relief's mouth was open and the ancient bronze coffin in its mouth had also opened!

Sheng Mei focused her eyes and discovered that within the ancient bronze coffin, there was an even smaller coffin.

If so, then this large coffin that was opened was only the ‘outer coffin’, and the smaller coffin inside was where the corpse was truly buried.

Seeing the inside of this large coffin, Sheng Mei frowned.

The inside was filled with viscous dark blood. The small coffin seemed soaked in bloody water and seemed incredibly evil, full of wicked corruptions.

As if there were some peerlessly supreme demon sealed within the coffin. A single glance at the coffin caused an ominous feeling to rise up in one’s heart.

“Lin Ming…”

Sheng Mei said with a bit of worry. During these years she simply hadn’t paid any attention to this ancient bronze coffin and she had no idea what Lin Ming had discovered.

“Mama, what is that in front of us? It’s so evil…”

Jiu’er’s voice sounded out. Sheng Mei waved her hands and an energy enchantment appeared in front of her, isolating out all the infernal energy released by the demon relief.

Now, Sheng Mei had restored a great deal of her strength. As for the spiritual damage she received by overdrawing her soul force, that had also been cured by Lin Ming using the Magic Cube.

Lin Ming didn't hide the Magic Cube's existence from Sheng Mei. In any case, she had already seen it.

However, although Sheng Mei had a faint guess as to what the Magic Cube was, she actually never took the initiative to ask Lin Ming about it.

With the protection of the force field enchantment blocking out the infernal energy, Jiu'er felt much better. She quickly repositioned herself and soon fell asleep.

Sheng Mei looked at Lin Ming, "Did you activate the coffin?"

Lin Ming nodded. "Yes. In these past years I have been studying this demon relief all this time as well as what is in this ancient coffin. I feel that… there is no lucky chance in this cavern, and instead it is a deeply evil and ominous place!"

The Demon God's Tomb was not filled with unrivalled lucky chances at every corner. There were many places that were completely and purely death zones. While lucky chances were often accompanied with risks, there were many times when risks weren't accompanied with lucky chances. Once someone entered these evil and ominous places then they would just die in vain.

For instance, the killing lake. Even though so many formidable abyssals had entered, the only ones left were Lin Ming and Sheng Mei.

“Is there any danger in opening it?” Sheng Mei asked. She was worried about the child in her belly.

Lin Ming shook his head, “If I’m not mistaken then whatever is in this coffin is lifeless; there won’t be any great dangers.”

Even though he said this, he still brought out the Magic Cube and flew in front of Sheng Mei.

The Magic Cube slowly spun atop Sheng Mei’s head, covering her in layers of black light.

With the Magic Cube protecting Sheng Mei and Jiu’er, Lin Ming felt much more at ease. He placed his hands atop the small coffin and slowly pushed.

This ancient small coffin clearly wasn’t sealed. There were obvious gaps in the small coffin, and the thick blood in the large coffin flowed into the smaller coffin through these gaps.

Sheng Mei held her heart; she didn’t know just what was in the coffin.

As Lin Ming slowly pushed open the lid, what was revealed inside was also a thick pool of viscous blood.

The entire small coffin overflowed with blood. This blood seemed to have been sealed away for countless billions of years. It was completely dark, so thick that it seemed coagulated into a nearly solid substance!

Even one’s divine sense couldn’t penetrate this blood, as if there was a mysterious and evil world hidden beneath it.

As the coffin opened, the blood emitted a dark and dire aura, as if countless demon souls and wills were boiling within and clawing outwards, howling in pain the entire time.

Looking at this scene, Lin Ming’s complexion was dignified.

Then, he reached out a hand as if he wanted to pierce it through the thick pool of blood.

“Lin Ming! What are you doing!”

Sheng Mei was frightened and she called out to Lin Ming to stop him. If he were to stick his hand into this billion year old blood pool, who knew what would happen? Perhaps this blood might be incredibly poisonous and corrosive, or there might even be some amazingly potent curse contained within.

Lin Ming glanced back at Sheng Mei, trying to put her at ease. Then, he decisively reached in his hand. The surface of Lin Ming's arm was covered with a force field formed by grandmist energy and it pushed away the thick blood.

His hand gently stirred in the blood pool. After an incense stick of time, Lin Ming felt through the blood pool and then slowly drew out his hand.

As he took his hand out, he also pulled out something long with it.

This thing was pitch black all over and 13 feet long; it was twice the height of Lin Ming.

It resembled a hideous centipede. From beginning to end, this long thing was divided into sections and each section had three gruesome bone spikes jutting out. Each spike was half a foot long and appeared incredibly ferocious.

Lin Ming placed it on the ground. This thing was thicker than Sheng Mei's thigh and shined with a metallic sheen, even as it glowed with a cold brilliance.

“This is…” Sheng Mei felt her heart race as she saw this thing. This was truly an evil and ominous object. It contained a bloody infernal energy within that was so thick it had turned into substantive essence.

“Is this a weapon refined by an ancient peerless demon?”

Because of the metallic sheen, the icy cold light, and the thick bloody infernal energy, one couldn’t help but form such a guess.

However, Lin Ming thought for a moment and shook his head. He said, “This is not a weapon but a part of a skeleton. To be more accurate… it is the spine!”

MW Chapter 2169

Chapter 2169 – The Scheme of 100 Billion Years

…

…

…

“Spine?”

Lin Ming’s words left Sheng Mei stunned. This spine was simply too hideously fierce. Moreover, its texture didn’t seem like bone at all but like some kind of metal, and the icy cold feeling it gave off was like that of a peerless weapon.

Lin Ming grasped the 13 foot spine and slowly flew up. As he flew above the cliff, the spine dangled below. If the spine itself was so long then if the master of the spine was still living, they might have been 30 feet tall at least.

Moreover, this spine emitted such an evil and ominous aura that a frightening thought suddenly appeared in Sheng Mei's heart. "This shouldn't be… the spine left behind from the Demon God that died 100 billion years ago!?"

As Sheng Mei uttered these thoughts, her eyes as she looked at this spine changed. To the abyssal race, the ancient Demon God of 100 billion years past was a spiritual god that ruled over them all. The Demon God's spine… just what sort of concept was that?

Lin Ming carefully rubbed one of the spine's sharp bone spikes, feeling the energy fluctuations and vast strength of blood vitality that it emitted. He shook his head and said, "I don't know. I can only confirm that this was left behind by some extraordinary ancient demon."

Speaking to here, Lin Ming suddenly said, "Don't you find it strange that this underground mystic realm, this bronze coffin, and even the blood in the coffin is also a bit strange?"

Lin Ming's words left Sheng Mei startled. "You are saying…"

Lin Ming pondered for a moment. He slowly laid down the spine and said, "I've always felt that this Demon God's Tomb was somewhat ghostly. Many places are filled with horrifying dangers. I've gone to many mystic realms before, but the most perilous mystic realms I've experienced aren't even a tenth as dangerous as the Demon God's Tomb. True Divinities have a chance to perish here, and for Empyreans it's even easier.

“I think that for any race, developing an Empyrean isn’t easy at all. As for True Divinites, they are even rarer. In a war between races a True Divinity can display a strength that can be enough to affect the entire war situation.

“Even if it’s the incomparably powerful abyssal race, they likely have over a hundred True Divinities. This quantity is over ten times that of the 33 Heavens. However, even they cannot afford to lose so many like this!”

Upon entering the Demon God’s Tomb, then if one didn’t consider Lin Ming and Sheng Mei, then the number of True Divinity level abyssals that entered from the Deep Alliance and Flood Alliance were 23 in total. And five of the ones Lin Ming knew had already died!

Outside this cavern, for the next hundred years in the Demon God’s Tomb, it was inevitable that there would be more True Divinity level abyssals that perished. Of the 23 original True Divinity level abyssals, ultimately over half of them would die.

Many True Divinities would be lost, and many of these True Divinities still had a great deal of potential left remaining. As for Empyreans, the number that died would seem a bit exaggerated.

Although it could be said that the Demon God’s Tomb might only open every several hundred million years, such a pace of death would still cause great damage to the overall strength of the Dark Abyss.

The brutal and tragic method of competition would hasten the birth of powerhouses. But, no matter how brutal a competition, there should still be a limit. If low level abyssals died then it wouldn't be a problem, but higher level abyssals were created from massive piles of resources.

Listening to Lin Ming's question, Sheng Mei faintly frowned. She thought about it for a moment and then said, "In the Dark Abyss, it has always been the strong eating the weak. The most suitable description is that we follow the most basic and most barbaric of the laws of the jungle. In the Demon God's Tomb, although many strong higher abyssals die, those remaining still obtain incredible benefits. The reason the Dark Abyss has so many True Divinities is in great part due to the Demon God's Tomb.

"Moreover, the truth is that many abyssals in the Demon God's Tomb die to the hands of enemy forces. For instance, the conflict between the Flood Alliance and Deep Alliance has caused more and more abyssals to die. With resources and lucky chances before them, it is far too difficult to restrain the wishes and desires of these abyssals who have the law of the jungle engraved in their hearts."

Sheng Mei's explanation left Lin Ming shaking his head. "I've always felt that this Demon God's Tomb is too evil.

"As the land of greatest lucky chances in the Dark Abyss, in the last hundred billion years the abyssals should have found some way to explore the Demon God's Tomb while reducing casualties. However, the fact is that the casualties in the Demon God's Tomb have always remained at a terrifyingly high level. You have likely discovered already that when an abyssal dies in the Demon God's Tomb, they will quickly turn to bones and the strength of the blood vitality in their corpse will be absorbed by the world..."

As Lin Ming spoke to here, Sheng Mei felt a chill cross her heart. She also noticed this.

The world of the Demon God's Tomb had a bizarre characteristic of absorbing the strength of blood vitality from those that died. Originally Sheng Mei thought this was normal. After all, every time the Demon God's Tomb opened, a massive number of abyssals would come in and absorb the power of demon gods.

The energy in this universe followed the laws of conservation. If the power of demon gods was sucked away then it naturally had to be refilled with new energy. Sheng Mei thought that the energy from the abyssals that died in the Demon God's Tomb wasn't wasted at all. Rather, their corpses were turned into pure energy to supplement this world, where it would evolve into the power of demon gods billions of years later.

But hearing Lin Ming's words, a light lit up in Sheng Mei's eyes. She looked at the ancient bronze coffin below the cliff. The ancient coffin was still filled with thick and viscous blood, looking evil to the extreme.

And though this blood seemed evil, Sheng Mei was well aware just what sort of terrifying blood vitality was contained within. Certain abyssal alchemists could use this blood as material to refine the purest of blood pills that would be greatly beneficial to one's cultivation!

“You’re saying that… the blood in that ancient bronze coffin comes from the blood vitality that is absorbed by the Demon God’s Tomb? The blood vitality of the corpses here seeps into the ground and slowly gathers here!?”

Realizing Lin Ming’s speculations, Sheng Mei gasped in surprise.

A spine was soaked in an ancient coffin filled with the blood of abyssals, and around this coffin was a demon relief with all sorts of complex and diverse demon array diagrams carved into the walls.

And all of this had been constructed deep below ground in the Demon God’s Tomb. Over the last 100 billion years, countless abyssals had died in the Demon God’s Tomb, and these abyssals all had a cultivation at least at the Empyrean level. Moreover, they were all outstanding elites of their generation. With so many proud children of heaven dying here and having their blood vitality sucked out by the array formation and gathered here, it was all used to nourish a single spine…

Moreover, who could confirm whether or not there was only such a single evil array formation beneath the Demon God’s Tomb?

Perhaps there were a dozen or even dozens of such similar array formations scattered throughout the Demon God’s Tomb. However, the only difference was that the bones they nourished might not be the spine, but rather other bones like the skull, ribs, femur, arm bones…

Thinking of this, Sheng Mei felt a chill creep up her back.

This sort of great array formation was like an ancient ritual, the most evil and diabolical of rites…

“Are you saying that there is some ancient demon in the Dark Abyss that is using the Demon God’s Tomb to nourish its own skeleton to eventually resurrect itself?”

To absorb the blood vitality and energy of future generations to nourish their own skeleton, reforge their flesh and blood body and finally resurrect themselves into the world, this was Sheng Mei’s first thought!

If this were true, then the shock brought by this guess was simply far too great!

To be able to change and invoke the rules of the Demon God’s Tomb for their own use, then perhaps this demon must be… the creator of the Demon God’s Tomb – the Demon God!

Could the Demon God have created the Demon God’s Tomb not just to help his race overcome the Shattering, but also to resurrect himself in the future? He buried himself here in eventual hopes for his future return?

Sheng Mei found this all unbelievable.

Lin Ming said, “I don’t know whether it is the Demon God or not. All I know that if there is such mystic realms like this cave beneath the Demon God’s Tomb, then there must be a scheme behind it. Moreover, once its purpose is achieved, it will surely bring out terrifying changes to the world…”

“Then this spine…”

Sheng Mei’s complexion was cloudy and unsure. Although Lin Ming’s conjectures were reasonable, something still felt off.

It wasn’t just Sheng Mei who thought this, but also Lin Ming.

That was…

If these speculations were indeed true and this was a terrifying scheme planned out over 100 billion years ago, then how could they have taken out this bone from the ancient bronze coffin?

Shouldn’t such a great array have a protective array formation surrounding it? At the very least, this ancient bronze coffin should be sealed so that others couldn’t open it.

After all, this was something that occurred 100 billion years ago. There were sure to be abyssals that managed to stumble their way down to these cavernous mystic realms during such a long time period. If these bones were taken away, wouldn't that disturb this mysterious being's plans for resurrection?

MW Chapter 2170

Chapter 2170 – Jiu’er’s Birth

…

…

…

Realizing this, Sheng Mei and Lin Ming glanced at each other. They immediately felt that this spine was much spookier than they thought.

“What do you plan on doing with this spine?”

Sheng Mei asked. The background of this spine was too incredible and it was extremely likely to be some ominous and unlucky object. If they didn’t handle it properly then there was likely a chance they would suffer a curse or even some sort of backlash.

For a time, Lin Ming also couldn’t think of the best way to handle the spine.

This spine was exceedingly evil. The opening of this underground mystic realm as well as obtaining this spine was all a series of unexpected accidents. In a normal situation, abyssals that entered the Demon God's Tomb wouldn't find this array formation, much less this spine.

Lin Ming placed the giant centipede-like spine in front of him and slowly sat down.

He noticed that atop the spine, there were light marks. Although they weren't too obvious, he could feel their raised bumpiness with his fingers.

These were clearly… bone runes!

The bone runes on this spine were naturally no minor matter. Moreover, because this spine was sealed deep underground and constantly absorbed energy, it contained a mind-boggling level of blood vitality that shocked the heart.

It was obvious that this spine was a priceless treasure.

After obtaining such a bone, how could they discard it just because of its evil nature and any unlucky events that might follow it?

If it were like this, then if any great lucky chance were placed in front of it they also wouldn't dare to take it because of some unknown dangers. If one were to follow such a viewpoint then one wouldn't be suitable to practice martial arts.

Thus, Lin Ming had to consider this over and over. Even though he knew this spine was an evil object that might bring about some sort of curse, he still planned on taking it. Of course, he had to study it and research it in detail.

Lin Ming first took out the Magic Cube. He poured his energy into the Magic Cube and borrowed its power to contain the spine.

Lin Ming's thoughts were that many secret curse techniques might be related to evil spirits, or this spine could even contain the remnant spirit mark or consciousness of its master.

If this were true, then if Lin Ming were to carry this spine around with him and then one day be injured, some remnant soul might pop out of the ghost and try to take over his body. If so, then the consequences would be unbelievable.

To strangle all dangers while they were in the cradle, that was Lin Ming's code of conduct.

Thus, the Magic Cube began to shine with a dark brilliance in Lin Ming's hand. A black vortex rolled outwards, completely covering the spine.

Wu –

Wu –

Wu –

With ghostly cries, the spine began to violently shake. Gray threads of energy seeped out from the spine, constantly changing shapes as they were sucked into the Magic Cube.

Seeing this, Sheng Mei’s pupils shrank. “These evil spirits…”

Lin Ming said, “The ancient bronze coffin has gathered the blood essence of countless abyssals for 100 billion years, so there definitely is the remnant wills of many abyssals left over in it. These remnant wills were absorbed by this evil bone and sealed within for billions of years to form these remnant souls. They should be unrelated to the master of this evil bone…”

As long as it wasn’t related to the ancient Demon God then Lin Ming wasn’t worried. Soon, the light of the Magic Cube dimmed and all the demon spirits contained in the evil bone were drawn out by him.

After Lin Ming examined the bone over and over and determined that there were no more evil demon souls within, he took the evil bone to a corner of the cavern where he began to meditate on it.

Lin Ming's idea was to first perceive the bone runes. Then, after he understood the secrets of the evil bone, he could try to refine this bone using Famine's Swallowing Laws.

If Lin Ming could succeed then he could obtain the greatest advantage while also avoiding the curse of the evil bone as much as possible.

Like this, Lin Ming meditated on the bone runes for day after day, trying to unravel the secrets of the spine.

However, this wasn't easy at all. Many of these bone runes involved domains that Lin Ming had never come into contact with, and the Laws and martial arts contained within were vastly different from those that Lin Ming focused on.

Training continued without sense of time. Day after day passed.

Half a year later, in the underground cavern, a rainbow-like glow lit up the air.

Within this light, fresh and potent life fluctuations flooded through the underground cavern. Even a great deal of the evil and pestilent aura that that pervaded the underground cavern was washed away by this brilliant radiance.

The light gathered in the skies. The heaven and earth origin energy within the cavern began to tumble along with this light. A burst of wonderful and pleasant sound accompanied the light, making one feel as if they were listening to the songs of a spring breeze and witnessing little green buds slowly bloom in joy.

“Hehehe…”

A crisp and clear laugh echoed out. Then, a little child that gushed over with the aura of new vitality sprang out from the light.

The little child stepped atop a nine-petal lotus flower and her tiny feet and arms were as cute and chubby as lotus roots. Atop her ankles were patterns formed from heaven and earth origin energy, and she seemed to overflow with spiritual energy.

“Jiu’er has finally been born!”

The pink-faced little child patted her hands happily, grinning as she spoke. Her face was exquisite and perfect and her rosy skin was like a ripe peach, so moist that it seemed one pinch could draw water.

This little baby girl that seemed like a little doll carved from the freshest jade suddenly threw herself into Sheng Mei's arms. "Mommy, Jiu'er finally gets to see you! Mommy is so beautiful, just like a fairy!"

The little baby girl's words were as sweet as honey. She reached out two arms to wrap around Sheng Mei's neck and give her a loving kiss.

Sheng Mei's face was filled with smiles. This was her life, her hope, her everything.

"Daddy, you are also so handsome!"

Jiu'er saw Lin Ming and giggled. She gently tapped her feet and leapt onto Lin Ming. Then, she scrambled up with her feet and hands, crawling onto Lin Ming's shoulders with a few steps and then riding on his neck.

She rode on Lin Ming's head, her two pearl-like feet dangling back and forth on his chest, giving a slightly itchy feeling.

In that moment, Lin Ming felt an unusual sense of warmth and fulfillment in his heart. In his life, he had sweet and caring wives, a strong and heroic son, as well as a cute and beautiful daughter.

Everything he should have obtained was already obtained. However, in front of this happiness loomed the great calamity of the world.

Knowing this only made Lin Ming increasingly sure that he had to steadfastly continue on his road of martial arts, so that he could gain the strength to protect his family and everyone else…

Jiu’er’s birth brought about much happiness for Lin Ming and Sheng Mei.

Sheng Mei loved her daughter. She spent most of her time accompanying her, telling her stories and teaching her the foundation of martial arts.

This bizarre little child was eccentric and smart. She seemed to learn anything at first try; she was a ridiculously monstrous genius when it came to perception.

When it came to Lin Huang, Jiu’er’s talent in body transformation was much lower. But in the aspect of the soul, Jiu’er far outstripped Lin Huang.

However, Lin Ming spent most of his time studying the demon bone. Although he wanted to spend time with his daughter, he knew that he didn’t have much time remaining. As he understood more and more about the Soul Emperor, he felt the pressure on his shoulders grow increasingly heavy.

“Still no clue?” Sheng Mei asked with concern. In these past months, Lin Ming continued meditating on the evil bone without a care for eating or resting. As Sheng Mei watched all of this occur, she felt some pain in her heart.

Lin Ming shook his head. This bone was sealed away with some sort of strength, and to unravel this strength was far, far too difficult.

Lin Ming said, “I cannot understand the bone runes on this spine. The only use I’ve discovered is…”

As Lin Ming spoke, he lifted the evil bone and thrust down at the ground!

Kacha!

The runes on the ground violently shivered. Originally, this underground cavern was protected by the array formation and demon runes. Even when Lin Ming and the Great Flood Crown Prince had their cataclysmic battle here, they still hadn’t been able to destroy the area.

But, Lin Ming just poked down a little and managed to pierce through the array formation and demon runes.

Lin Ming lifted the evil bone. A foot deep hole had formed in the ground.

Sheng Mei was stunned. This evil bone was actually so sharp? She could see that Lin Ming had casually moved his hand just now and didn’t use much strength at all.

MW Chapter 2171

Chapter 2171 – Emperor Bone Sea

…

…

…

The world of the Demon God's Tomb was stable; this was a world that had withstood the great Shattering.

The space here was difficult for even a True Divinity to break. As for the earth and the rock, although a master like Sheng Mei had the ability to shatter it, it was impossible for her to do so as easily as Lin Ming just did. If Lin Ming were to pour his energy into the evil bone then the might displayed could be imagined.

"If so, then even if you couldn't perceive anything from this evil bone and even if you didn't manage to swallow any of its energy, at the very least it could be used as a weapon?"

A light lit up in Sheng Mei's mind. This demon spine was 13 feet long and it was as thick as Sheng Mei's thigh. In truth, with such length and width, in some ways it was similar to an overlord spear!

Such a giant spear was far too large for Lin Ming's true self to use. But, if Lin Ming's demon avatar were to use it then it would be just right.

Before, Lin Ming's demon avatar used the Black Dragon Spear that was wrapped in bone fragments. This spear seemed incredibly mighty and sturdy, but once it came under impact the bone fragments would actually burst apart, causing its combat efficiency to also drop.

As for this evil bone, it was impossible for something like that to occur. And not just that, but the spine itself possessed cartilage and was even connected with meridian channels, allowing it a certain degree of flexibility.

This spine spear could be used by Lin Ming's demon avatar. As for the Black Dragon Spear, that would be handed to Lin Ming's true self.

"Mm… it seems that I can only do this for now."

Lin Ming turned his hand, sealed the spine with layers of seals before placing it in his inner world.

“Let’s adjust for a few months. Then, we can start looking for an exit…”

“Mm.”

………

In the Demon God’s Tomb, desolate loneliness flooded the land. Only time passed monotonously and without change, an unstoppable force that continued to beat on.

Two years had passed since Lin Ming discovered the evil bone.

In a vast and boundless black desert, the air was polluted with the light scent of blood. A dried corpse lay above the boiling hot sand, its blood vitality already sucked dry with only withered skin and bones left remaining.

Even so, there were some predators that were extremely interested in this withered corpse. If one tore open the corpse they could see fist-sized large black corpse insects digging their way through, and bone gnashing sounds emitting outwards that caused one’s scalp to tingle.

But at this time, not too far away from the corpse, a sand dune rose up. The sand dune grew larger and larger and sand began pouring down from both sides of it. After several breaths of time, the entire sand dune exploded and an iron tower-like abyssal leapt out from the black sands!

And on the shoulder of this abyssal sat a peerless woman.

This woman was slender and thin and she wore a black dress. She jumped down from the abyssal's shoulder, her clothes fluttering in the wind as she gently landed on the black sands.

And at this time, the black insects hiding in the corpse froze in vigilance. They stared at the two unexpected arrivals, motionless.

These two people were Lin Ming and Sheng Mei; they had just come from the underground mystic realm.

Originally Lin Ming said that they only needed to adjust themselves for a few months. However, Sheng Mei couldn't bear to allow Jiu'er, who had just been born, to follow Lin Ming in his battles so soon. She wanted to enjoy a quiet and comfortable period of time with Jiu'er.

Thus, they stayed in the cavern for a year and three months.

During this year and three months, the child grew ridiculously quickly. As for her foundational lessons, she learned everything at first glance.

However, Jiu'er's talent in body transformation wasn't too amazing. Thus Lin Ming and Sheng Mei decided to have Jiu'er follow the dual cultivation road of energy and divine; this was the same road that Divine Dream walked down.

Now, Jiu'er had already finished Pulse Condensation. What followed next was to open her soul sea in her dantian and formally step onto the road of dual energy and divine cultivation.

A year and three months later, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei started to search for a way out of the underground mystic realm. They used a full nine months before they were able to leave.

Perhaps this underground cavern had an exit or perhaps it didn't, but in short, when Lin Ming and Sheng Mei wanted to leave, they couldn't find an exit path no matter how hard they searched.

Finally, they chose a relatively weak place in the underground enchantment, and then used the evil bone to forcefully tear open a section in the curse seals and dig out a channel.

Then, they used the evil bone to dig through the ground and continued upwards.

Even with the assistance of the evil bone, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei had to spend a considerable amount of time and effort before they finally dug through the rock layers and emerged aboveground.

The underground rock layers of the Demon God’s Tomb was even firmer than the rock above. In addition with the massive underground pressure, if an ordinary True Divinity or Empyrean was buried within then they could give up on ever coming back out.

After Lin Ming and Sheng Mei dig their way out they also clearly saw the surrounding environment. This was a black desert in the Demon God’s Tomb. It was broad and boundless and countless bones were buried here.

“There’s a corpse…”

Sheng Mei’s gaze fell upon a withered corpse not too far away. From what she knew, this corpse couldn’t have died too long ago.

Sheng Mei slowly approached. At this time, the several insects hiding within the corpse suddenly jumped out, shooting towards Sheng Mei like arrows!

Sheng Mei’s expression didn’t change. She simply flicked her fingers.

Pa! Pa! Pa!

Like red lotuses blooming the void, these corpse insects blew up in bloody flowers before fading away in wisps of mist.

“These are corpse insects condensed from the power of demon gods. With them around, once an abyssal below the True Divinity realm dies, they will be cleanly eaten up without even their bones remaining.”

Lin Ming stepped forwards and looked at this dead abyssal. The abyssal’s abdomen had completely withered away. As for its chest, it still rose high because of the presence of scales, but these scales had been bitten through by the corpse insects and looked like the honeycombs of a beehive.

“He is an Empyrean level abyssal of the Flood Alliance; I remember him.”

Sheng Mei said after staring at the withered face of the corpse for some time. A martial artist had an extremely potent memory. Even with a single glance, many useless and needless images would be saved inside their mind and could be immediately recalled if necessary.

“He’s likely only been dead for several days, but I have no idea how he died.”

Lin Ming rubbed his chin, not having much interest in such things. During this venture into the Demon God’s Tomb, even five True Divinities had already perished, so what was an Empyrean?

But at this time, Sheng Mei's complexion changed. "Something's not right. Too many have died!"

"Mm? What is it?"

"When the disciples of Deep King Road entered the Demon God's Tomb, they would leave behind a simple soul mark brand on a jade slip which me and Deep Child have. This is to make it easier to determine their location and relative situation. But now, I just probed the jade slip and discovered that out of the 20 some Deep King Road disciples that came, most of them have… died!"

Sheng Mei's words caused Lin Ming's heart to sink.

"Most of them have died?"

"Yes. All of the Empyreans have died without exception…" Sheng Mei said with a heavy expression. When the Demon God's Tomb opened in the past, the mortality rate had always been high. Even so, in several hundred years, having 80-90% of the participants die was as the most extreme end of the spectrum, and those that survived possessed amazing talent. And with the great destiny that would add itself upon their bodies, their future achievements would be astonishing. In such a situation, a high mortality rate was actually bearable.

But now, not even ten years had passed in the Demon God's Tomb and of the abyssals that Sheng Mei was aware of, nearly all of them had died. If another hundred years were to pass, just how many would manage to survive?

Lin Ming frowned. A faintly foreboding feeling stirred in his heart. He feared that there was some terrifying danger lurking in the current Demon God's Tomb.

He seemed to recall something. He asked Sheng Mei, "According to the jade slip of the Demon God's Tomb, the final abyssal ritual should occur in the Emperor Bone Sea. When does that begin?" Lin Ming traced his spatial ring. Within it were two ceremonial rites books. In addition with Sheng Mei, they possessed all the ceremonial rites books.

The ceremonial rites books were treasures that even True Divinity level abyssals would salivate with envy over. This was because those in possession of one would have a chance to undergo the abyssal ritual and become a totem level abyssal.

This was also what high level abyssals like Lin Ming and Sheng Mei cared about the most.

But now… having more ceremonial rites books in hand didn't bring any joy to Lin Ming.

This was because… he could smell some dark conspiracy in the Demon God's Tomb.

Was the Demon God’s Tomb really a lucky chance? Or could it be a complete trap to begin with?

Sheng Mei said, “I don’t know when the Emperor Bone Sea will manifest. It could be several years from now, dozens of years from now, or even over a hundred years from now - ”

Before Sheng Mei finished speaking, she stiffened. Just now, she felt a shaking from the ceremonial rites book in her spatial ring.

“Mm? How could this be..?”

Sheng Mei seemed to realize something. She flew up, instantly flying several tens of thousands of feet high.

Lin Ming followed close behind her.

As they flew into the higher atmosphere, their clothes flapped in the strong desert winds as they looked into the horizon.

In the distance, they could see a sea that seemed connected to the skies. It was ethereal like fog, rolling with vast and endless waves of smoke, seeming as if it would spread all the way to the ends of the universe...

“That… is that… the Emperor Bone Sea where the abyssal ritual takes place?”

Lin Ming muttered, shocked, as he stared at the incomparably vast sea. The Emperor Bone Sea had appeared before even 10 years had passed?

MW Chapter 2172

Chapter 2172 – Land of the Ritual

…

…

…

“How could it be so soon…?”

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei glanced at each other and saw the surprise in their eyes.

The Emperor Bone Sea was the entrance to the abyssal ritual of the Demon God’s Tomb. It had already existed for over a hundred billion years and all the demon emperors of the past hundred billion years were buried here.

A great portion of the jade slip was used to describe the Emperor Bone Sea. However, these descriptions were all rumors and legends. After all, the truth of a hundred billion years was slowly modified over time by some force with unknown intentions and it was already hard to investigate what was true.

A rumor said that this Emperor Bone Sea was created by the Demon God and even had the condensed essence energy and blood vitality of the Demon God within it. There were even some people that said the corpse of the Demon God was buried within. In addition to the multitude of force fields that protected the Demon God's Tomb, this caused special Laws to appear in the Emperor Bone Sea. These rules could even rid themselves of the Heavenly Dao and have all the bones buried within remain eternally pristine, and even remnant souls could be permanently sealed within.

This was a story that many abyssals believed in. After all, the Demon God's Tomb was even able to withstand the great Shattering. If so, then breaking the rules of the Heavenly Dao once more and allowing souls to live on in perpetuity was something that others could accept.

Thus, the Emperor Bone Sea became a treasure trove of lucky chances in the Dark Abyss. From ancient times onwards, when many peerless overlords of the abyssal race found that they eventually couldn't overcome the samsara of life and death and would soon pass away, they would then go into the Emperor Bone Sea to die.

Although they died in the Emperor Bone Sea, if the legends said that their remnant souls would be preserved for eternity within, then wouldn't that mean there was a chance they could be resurrected in the future?

This was an incomparably slim hope. But, compared to disappearing into ashes and dust and having one's soul fade into nothing, it was much more palatable.

Gradually, the skeletons of more and more powerhouses were gathered in the Emperor Bone Sea. This made the Emperor Bone Sea even more unfathomable and even more dangerous.

The greatest lucky chance of the Demon God's Tomb was the abyssal ritual – a ritual that allowed one to become a totem level abyssal. This was carried out in the heart of the Emperor Bone Sea.

It could be said that the Emperor Bone Sea was the grand finale to the great adventure that was the Demon God's Tomb; it was the stage where True Divinity level abyssals engaged in an all-out struggle. As for those weaker Empyrean level abyssals, they wouldn't dare step into the Emperor Bone Sea to send themselves to death. Rather, they would compete for the power of demon gods in the surrounding edges of the Demon God's Tomb. This rank of lucky chance was much more suited for them.

Now, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei never would have imagined that the Emperor Bone Sea would open after a mere several years. If this were the past then this time period wouldn't have even been enough to have been an appetizer. But now, that Emperor Bone Sea had opened, and what was even stranger was that most of the Empyrean level abyssals who entered the Demon God's Tomb had died!

Just what was going on?

"Lin Ming… I have a bad feeling about this…"

Sheng Mei looked at the far off Emperor Bone Sea that wafted around like distant mist. She could feel an extremely ominous aura that reeked of blood, as if the Emperor Bone Sea were a giant ancient spirit beast that opened its maw wide and waited for prey to crawl in.

"I have a bad feeling about this too." Lin Ming traced his spatial ring where he had placed the spine he had found underground.

According to the jade slip, the Demon God's skeleton was buried in the Emperor Bone Sea. If so, then what about the spine in his spatial ring? Was it the Demon God's bone?

However, pondering over this question was meaningless. The key question here was… should he enter the Emperor Bone Sea or not?

They had three ceremonial rites books in their hands. If they entered the Emperor Bone Sea, they absolutely could choose to undergo the abyssal ritual. If they hadn't entered the underground mystic realm and instead stayed above to see the carnage as well as the numerous Empyrean abyssals die together, then they certainly wouldn't have mulled it over before flying towards the Emperor Bone Sea.

"Lin Ming, have you thought about it clearly…" Sheng Mei asked, a bit unsure.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. Then, he took a deep breath and said, "My identity has yet to be exposed. As an abyssal, I shouldn't encounter a situation where there is only death… even if this Demon God's Tomb is a trap and many abyssal demons are intentionally killed here to become nourishment, in these last several billions of years and even dozens of years, there have been countless powerhouses produced from this land; this includes totem level abyssals. In other words, formidable geniuses can fully display their talent and weaker geniuses will end up facing death…"

"Alright…" Sheng Mei sighed. She knew that Lin Ming had already made his choice.

If it were possible, Sheng Mei certainly hoped to escape this storm with Lin Ming and Jiu'er. Of course, this was impossible. Even if they knew there was danger that awaited them, they still had to face it and explore it.

They already stood at the edge of the cliff with their enemies' swords pointed towards them. They no longer had an escape route; a single step back meant an endless fall into the abyss. They could only push their way forwards and attempt to snatch the swords from their enemies hands and kill them before they were killed.

"Let's go."

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei turned into two beams of light that vanished into the horizon.

The two flew forwards with lightning speed. In just an incense stick of time, they arrived above the Emperor Bone Sea.

Looking down, the entire Emperor Bone Sea was covered in a faint layer of mist. This mist wasn't like the faint blue mist above a sea, but a blood red color instead.

The mist was thick and it was difficult for one's sense to penetrate through it. It was only in occasional places where the mist was thinner that one could see the yellow seawater and the bones that loomed within…

The Emperor Bone Sea was broad, boundless and unimaginably deep. Even so, the endless seawater was filled with bones that floated and tumbled everywhere. It was hard to imagine just how many bones were contained within.

These bones weren't left behind by the emperors of the demon race. Rather, during the great Shattering, 90% of the demon clansmen that protected the Demon God's Tomb had died, and their remains created this hellish scene.

In the skies above the Emperor Bone Sea, Lin Ming took out the Demon God's Tomb jade slip.

The layers of fog above the Emperor Bone Sea would form layers of labyrinths and illusory magic arrays. They were complex and intricately connected. In addition to the vast breadth of the sea, it wasn't easy to find the location of the abyssal ritual. In essence, it was like looking for a needle in an ocean. If an abyssal with a weak soul force were to fly here for a long time they would likely become infected with the inexhaustible evil aura of the Emperor Bone Sea and lose themselves before finally becoming a part of the countless bones of the Emperor Bone Sea.

According to the path described in the jade slip, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei started venturing deep into the Emperor Bone Sea. The deeper they went, the more demon skeletons floated in the sea and the heavier the killing intent and malevolent aura became. However, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were both individuals with incredibly potent divine souls. The malevolent aura and killing intent wasn't able to arouse their heart demons. Instead, the two of them spread out their soul force, forming a protective layer that isolated out the aura that corroded the heart and mind.

Following the map, they flew for an entire day.

Slowly, fewer and fewer skeletons appeared in the sea waters. From the originally overlapped bones, now they didn't even see a single skeleton in a hundred miles.

But, although there were less skeletons, the killing intent and hostility in the air became even heavier, as if there was some power ancient sea beast slumbering in this area.

"We will soon arrive. The abyssal ritual is at the core of the Emperor Bone Sea, and the demon emperors are also all buried in the core region. Because of the pressure and force fields they left behind after their deaths, the skeletons of ordinary demons cannot approach. This is the reason why for the last thousand miles there hasn't been any skeletons, and instead the killing intent and hostility in the air have become only stronger!"

"Mm…"

Lin Ming nodded. He suddenly narrowed his eyes. At the ends of his vision, he could see a yellow vortex.

This vortex wasn't large but it spun quickly. Even though it spun so quickly, it was quiet, just like a ghost.

A massive amount of seawater was swallowed within, as if another world existed within the vortex.

Lin Ming knew that this was their destination. The area where this vortex led was the location described in the jade slip where the abyssal ritual would be held!

MW Chapter 2173

Chapter 2173 – Demons of the Black Pagodas

…

…

…

Woosh! Woosh!

Two giant plumes of water erupted in the muddy yellow Emperor Bone Sea. Lin Ming and Sheng Mei flew into the Emperor Bone Sea at the entrance of the abyssal ritual smelting trial.

Along the way, Lin Ming felt an intense tearing force pass over him. The surroundings began to rapidly change. Lin Ming knew that he was passing through a transmission array and quickly held onto Sheng Mei's hand to avoid them being separated by the tearing force of the transmission array.

This tearing force grew stronger and stronger. Although Sheng Mei and Lin Ming had formidable divine souls, it was impossible for them to be immune to this type of brutal tearing force. But, as Lin Ming felt the strength of this storm, he was left secretly dumbfounded. If an abyssal at the Empyrean level or below were to enter it, their soul would be crushed and torn apart by the massive force and they would perish before they even made it to the other end of the transmission array.

This was the might possessed by the highest echelon of mystic realm in the entire universe. Not to mention the emperor force field that was gathered in this mystic realm, just the space storm here weren't something that could be compared to those of the 33 Heavens. The space here was exceedingly stable, but at the same time, once it shattered, the storm that erupted would be hundreds of times more terrifying!

This sort of disorienting scene continued for an unknown period of time. Lin Ming felt his body lighten and in the next moment he arrived in a strange space.

Because of their powerful divine souls, the moment they exited the transmission array, they immediately rid themselves of their dizziness to clearly see the scene in front of them.

In the middle of this space was a vast and endless road. This road was shrouded in gray fog that seemed completely stagnant, and carried with it an aura of deathly stillness.

On both sides of this road were great towering pagodas. Each pagoda was a thousand feet high and stood tall like a black monument.

Lin Ming gazed at one of these pagodas. This pagoda had 12 floors and gates that was 100 feet high. The gates were tightly closed shut and the relief of a three-headed and six-armed demon god was carved into it. This demon bit down onto a demonic sword.

From behind the great gates, Lin Ming could faintly feel a mysterious and extraordinary aura sealed within, one that left the heart shocked.

“Are these the burial grounds of the great demon emperors that died in ancient times 100 billion years ago?”

Lin Ming suddenly asked on a whim. There were so many demon pagodas; could each one be the grave of a demon emperor?

As Lin Ming was thinking about this, he could feel the Magic Cube suddenly start trembling from within his inner world.

“Mm?”

Lin Mig was startled. “Magic Cube?”

“What is it?”

Sheng Mei's thoughts were connected to Lin Ming's. She looked towards him. Then, with a thought, Lin Ming summoned a grandmist force field that blocked out the surrounding space. He waved his hand and the dark gray Magic Cube appeared in the world, slowly revolving above his palm.

"Magic Cube?"

After accompanying Lin Ming these past several years, Sheng Mei already knew the name that Lin Ming had given the Magic Cube. She also recalled the myth of the Stone of Eternal Life passed down amongst the spiritas.

"The Magic Cube gently trembled just now. For a brief moment, it transmitted a strange aura. There is something extraordinary happening with this place..."

At this moment, Lin Ming felt the Magic Cube in his hand heat up a little. This made him even more wary, because Jiu'er was hiding in the Magic Cube space.

Lin Ming felt that the Magic Cube space was the safest place possible. Thus, he hid Jiu'er inside and had Ruby look after her.

After hearing Lin Ming's words, a thoughtful look crossed Sheng Mei's face. "According to the Demon God's Tomb jade slip, there are many ancient demon emperors buried here. After they died, their remnant souls also remained here for eternity without being destroyed.

Could it be that the Magic Cube had some reaction because it resonated with these powerful soul auras?”

Sheng Mei’s speculation was reasonable. In fact, since the Magic Cube was the ultimate divine tool when it came to the aspect of souls, it could have suddenly been excited upon encountering so many formidable souls.

However, these ancient demon emperors were far too amazing. Even just a single remnant soul would be too difficult to deal with.

“But no matter what, just be careful.”

Lin Ming put away the Magic Cube and took down the isolating grandmist force field.

But the moment that Lin Ming removed the grandmist force field, he suddenly heard a deafening roar coming from outside!

Hou - !

Hou - !

Hou - !

Horrifying roars filled with the air and reverberated in space. These roars left the ears tingling with numbness.

“Hahaha! To think such delicious food has delivered itself to my door once more!”

A crazed and maddened voice echoed out. What this voice spoke in was the ancient abyssal language. If it weren’t for Lin Ming having obtained many of Famine’s memories he wouldn’t have been able to understand it.

“What!?”

Lin Ming was panic-stricken. He originally thought that the ancient demon emperors here had all died off and never expected that there could be one that emitted such a brutal roar.

He stretched out a hand to reach for the Black Dragon Spear. And at this time, not too far away, he saw a 12 level pagoda emit a dim black flash of light.

Gudong!

With a loud bang, the front gates of the pagoda fiercely trembled.

From behind the great gates, loud rumbling sounds echoed out. These were the sounds of thick chains being dragged across the ground, as if some ancient beast that was wrapped in chains wanted to rush out.

“This is a king of the ancient demon race?”

Lin Ming looked at the violently shaking gates of the black pagoda and the tremendous impact force that seemed to be striking it like a falling star. The vibrations grew increasingly fierce, as if the door would be broken open.

However, in that moment, the demon relief on the gates began to shine. The eyes of the demon relief radiated with a blood red light and the countless intricate runes engraved atop the relief started to emit a dazzling light.

Then, a pitiful cry echoed out from behind the gates.

“Ahh!”

That ancient demon emperor seemed to suffer some agonizing form of suppression. He fiercely struggled and roared. Then, the runes on the gate flashed once more and the roar became increasingly weak before eventually devolving into hateful curses. Eventually, even those curses subsided to nothing and the entire black pagoda returned to tranquility once more, as if nothing happened.

This small interlude caused Lin Ming's heart to skip a beat. He stared at the demon relief on the gates of the pagoda and a strange thought appeared in his mind.

The style of this demon relief as well as the carving technique were completely similar to what he saw in the underground cavern!

The only difference was that in the underground cavern, the demon relief had a bronze coffin in its mouth. But, the demon relief on the black pagoda held a demonic sword in its mouth instead.

The black pagoda and underground cavern had similar demon reliefs. But, one was used to refine a demon bone and the other was used to seal in a demon...

With such a scene, one couldn't help but produce some associations.

"What are you thinking of?"

Lin Ming asked Sheng Mei as he continued to eye the demon relief.

Sheng Mei said, "I've thought of many things, but none of them are good..."

The ancient bronze coffin filled with blood, the demon locked in the black pagoda, these things caused Sheng Mei to feel as if there was something bloody and hideous hidden in the dark.

This was not the first time that the Demon God's Tomb had opened, but these things she saw hadn't been recorded in the Demon God's Tomb jade slip. Only by entering deep into the Demon God's Tomb could one see such scenes…

"Let's continue onwards. We've already come this far. Although peerless demon emperors from ancient times are buried here, all that is left of them are their remnant souls. Even if one of them manages to free itself, we can still fight them."

The Lin Ming of today was no longer the same person he had been before. He was no longer a genius of the younger generation, but one of the characters who truly stood at the highest levels of the universe.

Even if they were ancient demon emperors, it was still impossible for them to be Beyond Divinity.

And even if they were at the limits of a True Divinity, after having been dead for so many years and only having a wisp of their remnant soul and will remaining, their strength would inevitably be limited. Lin Ming had full confidence he could deal with all incoming challengers.

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei pushed forwards. On the side of the road, demon pagodas appeared one after another.

Some demon pagodas were extremely calm, even emitting an aura of complete deathly stillness, as if they were ancient graves that had never been moved for all of eternity.

But some demon pagodas began to emit earth-shaking roars as Lin Ming and Sheng Mei approached.

“Flesh and blood! Fresh flesh and blood!”

“Me! Me! Give it to me!”

These voices were filled with madness, loneliness, despair, and utter hostility and hatred. They didn’t seem to resemble the voices of ancient peerless powerhouses at all, but rather like hungry ghosts that had gone insane.

In Lin Ming’s impression, even if these ancient peerless powerhouses were part of the cruel and barbaric demon race, they would still reveal a grand and majestic aura of a great emperor once they obtained absolute strength; they wouldn’t resemble crazed beasts and starving ghosts.

Perhaps those that were sealed in the black pagodas weren’t ancient demon race emperors at all, but some evil and depraved souls.

This thought flashed through Lin Ming’s mind. It was also his only guess.

MW Chapter 2174

Chapter 2174 – The Dark Altar

…

…

…

The various clues and traces spread throughout the Demon God’s Tomb caused Lin Ming to form all sorts of suspicions in his mind. As for whether any of his suspicions were true, he would have to see with his own eyes to find out.

But at this time, Lin Ming discovered that Sheng Mei had slowed her pace. He turned to see Sheng Mei with a strange look on her face.

“Mm? Are you alright?”

Sheng Mei’s actions left Lin Ming startled. Although this underground graveyard was filled with an emperor force field and soul pressure, with her cultivation she should be more than able to withstand it.

“Something is… strange. I thought that my spiritual sea was touched by something just now, as if something was summoning me… but as I tried to feel it more carefully, I couldn’t find anything at all…”

Sheng Mei grasped her chest, carefully spreading her sense all around her. Yet, that feeling had already disappeared.

When her spiritual sea had been touched, it was an extremely light touch. But, Sheng Mei’s soul force was already powerful to an incredible degree, so it was impossible for her to mistake this feeling. It truly had occurred.

“Something touched your spiritual sea?” Lin Ming said, surprised. He couldn’t figure out a reason either.

“It’s fine. Let’s continue onwards. If I have this feeling again, I should be able to understand more things about it.”

As Sheng Mei spoke, the fog in front of them began to gently shake. The fog separated and a dark figure slowly appeared. This was an octopus-like monster with thick six limbs, and a soft and wet body that was covered in green spots.

“Awo!”

The monster let out a thunderous roar to reveal rows of sharp and dense fangs. “More living beings! There were several that came before but I didn’t manage to catch any of them. Now, you are all mine!”

The monster spoke in the ancient abyssal language. Its grotesque green eyes stared straight at Sheng Mei as drool began leaking out of its jaws. “A woman with a pure bloodline, the best type of food, hahaha!”

The monster cackled and threw itself onto Lin Ming and Sheng Mei.

Lin Ming’s complexion turned icy cold. He took a step forwards and thrust out the Black Dragon Spear.

Peng!

Lin Ming’s strength surged and a wild explosion formed atop the tip of the Black Dragon Spear. The surrounding fog began to stir about like a storm.

The green tentacle demon cried out in pain. It was struck away by Lin Ming’s immense strength and one of its tentacles was severed!

The monster was frightened. It never thought that Lin Ming who only had an Empyrean level cultivation would actually possess such horrifying strength.

It was now afraid. Then, it turned around and fled.

But Lin Ming didn't give it a chance to escape. He stepped forwards, his body moving like ghosts and gods as he instantly appeared in front of the demon.

Ca!

The Black Dragon Spear slashed downwards. Like a scythe, the unstoppable blood red spear light sundered the monster in half!

Puff!

Blood rained down. This blood was extremely thick and nearly pitch black in color, like the blood that was in the ancient bronze coffin after having been sealed away for countless years.

As the black blood splashed out, a wisp of remnant soul rose up, seeming to want to escape.

Lin Ming’s fist came crashing out.

The remnant soul blew apart and turned into power of demon gods that began slowly dissipating. Lin Ming waved his hand, summoning the Swallowing Laws to completely absorb the strength of this remnant soul.

In these past years, Lin Ming had absorbed a great deal of the power of demon gods. It was enough for him to reach the limits of an Empyrean.

However, having sufficient energy was only one part of the equation; he needed enough time to digest it. Lin Ming needed to go into seclusion for several dozen years in order to steadily break into the Empyrean limit.

But, he didn’t have the time.

“Perhaps that monster just now was formed from the bloody infernal energy here and the remnant soul of some ancient demon emperor.” Lin Ming put away the Black Dragon Spear and glanced at the black blood that was scattered over the ground.

Although the emperors of the ancient demon race were powerful, after having devolved into such a bizarre blood monster, their strength was only comparably to the weakest of True Divinities.

“Let’s continue. I wonder if we will meet any living True Divinities from the Flood Alliance or Deep Alliance here…”

Upon mentioning the Empyrean level abyssals of the Deep Alliance that died, Sheng Mei felt the dark clouds in her heart become thicker and heavier. Even now, she and Lin Ming still couldn’t figure out why all those abyssals had died.

As they moved forwards, they encountered several more blood monsters along the way. These monsters all possessed the remnant souls of ancient demons.

It seemed that within the Emperor Bone Sea, only the most powerful demons were sealed away in the black pagodas. The weaker ones were scattered out in all directions and some of them eventually formed these corpse devils.

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were a union of strength upon strength; they were an irresistible force as they moved forwards.

They didn’t know how far they walked forwards, but at some time, a great muddy yellow river appeared in front of them.

The river roiled with great billowing waves, and yet it didn’t make a single sound of splashing water. With such a macabre deathly silence, this strange feeling caused Lin Ming and Sheng Mei to pause their step.

This vast deathly still river reminded Lin Ming of the fabled Yellow Springs River.

The road between the demon pagodas traversed the river, like a black and red rainbow.

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei stepped atop the river, flying beneath the rainbow. The river waters were dark yellow, and seemed as if they would dissolve any flesh and blood that fell in.

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei didn’t know how long they flew for, but eventually they passed the river to reach the opposite shore.

In the legends of the mortal worlds, the other shore of the Yellow Springs River was filled with life and vibrant colors, flowers of all hues. Yet here, the other side of the river was still barren desolateness.

“There’s something in front of us…”

Sheng Mei’s heart stirred and she sent Lin Ming a sound transmission.

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes. Through the light gray fog, he could see vague shadows at the end of his field of vision.

As he probed further with his sense, he could make out a black altar.

And not too far away from the black altar were five similar altars.

The six altars formed a six-sided star, and each altar was at the end of one of the star's points.

And around these altars stood three demon pagodas.

The demon pagodas were arranged in a zigzagging pattern around the black altars; all extremely far from each other.

These demon pagodas were all taller than ones Lin Ming had seen before. Along the way here, the demon pagodas that Lin Ming saw had 12 levels, 15 levels, and 18 levels was already the limit.

But the demon pagodas in front of him each had 30 levels or above.

Respectively, these three pagodas had 30 levels, 33 levels, and 36 levels.

The black gates at the base of the demon pagodas were also much larger. At the same time, the gates were also engraved with demon reliefs.

Although the design of the reliefs was similar, the engravings were clearly filled with a much greater power. Just by looking at them, one felt as if their souls would be swallowed, as if the demon reliefs were all alive.

Would ancient demon emperors also be buried in these three exceedingly tall pagodas?

It should be… the Master of the Demon God’s Tomb that was buried here, right…?

If the height of a pagoda was proportional to the strength of the demon sealed within, then the taller the pagoda, the more powerful the demon was. If so, then these three demon pagodas were on a whole different level from the hundreds of demon pagodas he had seen on his way here.

To suddenly increased by over 10 levels, these new pagodas were almost twice the height of the previous ones.

If so, then was it possible that those hundreds of pagodas he saw before had entombed ancient True Divinity level demon emperors from a span of 100 billion years? And as for these three exceedingly tall pagodas, they actually contained existences Beyond Divinity?

The Dark Abyss had a history of 100 billion years. If it was said that three Beyond Divinity level abyssals were born at some time, then Lin Ming wouldn’t be surprised, and instead think that this number wasn't high at all. After all, the primal god race had produced two Beyond Divinity level existences.

"Lin Ming..." Sheng Mei stared at these altars and the high pagodas. She said in a soft sound transmission, "When we came to these altars, I felt that summoning feeling appear again..."

"Oh?"

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. If it was as he thought, then these six altars were where the abyssal ritual took place. The six altars each separately represented the six ceremonial rites books!

The abyssals that flocked to the Demon God's Tomb all dreamed that they could one day pass the abyssal ritual and become totem level abyssals.

Lin Ming's original plan here was to carry out the abyssal ritual. But today, as he stood in front of these six altars and looked upon the dark black sacrificial blood on the altars and the enormous amount of infernal blood energy contained within, he began to hesitate.

He and Sheng Mei had brought the three ceremonial rites books to this final step; it seemed as if their decision to continue was already made for them. After all, whether it was Lin Ming or Sheng Mei, they were each confident that they could pass the abyssal ritual. If they couldn't pass this test, then there was likely no other abyssal that could.

However, obtaining everything like this seemed far too simple. And with all the ominously foreboding scenes they saw before this, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei naturally wouldn’t recklessly rush onto an altar.

Sheng Mei’s inexplicable feeling and the beating of the Magic Cube caused Lin Ming to raise his guard.

As he sensed the Magic Cube in his inner world, he could feel it faintly vibrating. But along the way, he still hadn’t discovered any reason for why the Magic Cube could be excited and start to throb.

“We’ve come this far and yet haven’t run into another True Divinity level abyssal…”

Lin Ming said, his voice grim. Had these abyssals all died off? If so, then how had they died?

Where had Deep Child gone?

That mysterious and unfathomable abyssal had always aroused a sense of dread in Lin Ming. Even that incredibly haughty and prideful Great Flood Crown Prince was afraid of Deep Child.

Yet, this sort of abyssal had vanished upon entering the Demon God's Tomb.

Lin Ming hadn't seen him in the underground cavern and he didn't even have a ceremonial rites books. So, where could he have gone?

If someone told him that Deep Child perished somewhere, Lin Ming wouldn't believe them at all.

Lin Ming even thought that Deep Child had some connection to the Soul Emperor.

"What should we do?" Sheng Mei said, a bit unsure. The various signs they had seen in the Demon God's Tomb indicated that everything they did was wrapped up in some terrifying plot.

But they had still come here. As the arrival of the apocalypse was descending upon them, they were pushed to this position and could no longer avoid it. They could only welcome these plots and face them head-on.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. At this time, he still couldn't decide.

As he was lost in his thoughts, a gentle and scholarly voice echoed out from behind them. "You two have already come this far, so how come you haven't gone up?"

Lin Ming’s mind chilled. He flipped around, the Black Dragon Spear crying as it soared out!

MW Chapter 2175

Chapter 2175 – Demon Altar’s Light

…

…

…

As this voice suddenly echoed out, whether it was Lin Ming or Sheng Mei, both clearly remembered who it was.

This voice came from… Deep Child!

Lin Ming turned around, his Black Dragon Spear slanted in front of him. A towering purple-armored abyssal flew high in the air a hundred feet away, his hands clasped in front of him, looking down at Lin Ming and Sheng Mei from a commanding position.

Deep Child’s voice was soothing and magnetic, not seeming like that of an abyssal at all but instead of a modest and well-mannered gentleman from a race of the 33 Heavens. After hearing it, one even felt that this was a comfortable voice.

“Black Flood hasn’t come. Then, he was eliminated by you two?” Deep Child looked at Lin Ming and Sheng Mei, his gaze filled with meaning.

Listening to these words, Lin Ming’s complexion darkened. This Deep Child had already guessed that he and Sheng Mei had killed off the Great Flood Crown Prince!

The truth was that this wasn’t worth mentioning at all. Rather, the key point was that Deep Child was completely calm and poised as he made this guess, as if it were a trivial matter. In other words, this meant that Deep Child’s strength far outstripped that of the Great Flood Crown Prince!

At that time when they killed the Great Flood Crown Prince, it had been Lin Ming giving it his all with Sheng Mei supporting him in order to display the full might of the nine revolution red lotus. However, when facing Deep Child, Lin Ming lacked confidence that he would emerge victorious.

“Ninth Elder, could you put your spear away?”

Deep Child said with a smile. He continued, “As well as junior-apprentice Sister here, how come even you took out your sword? From what I remember, your relationship with the Ninth Elder isn’t too good. That’s right, weren’t you extremely resistant to this forced marriage? And now you’re suddenly standing on the same side as him and pointing a sword at me without hesitation. Could it be possible that you and the Ninth Elder have developed secret feelings for each other during these years in the Demon God's Tomb, and have even dual cultivated with each other?"

Deep Child's voice carried a light taunting tone. However, this mockery didn't cause any ripples in Sheng Mei's expression. Instead, she inwardly let out a light sigh of relief. From what Deep Child was saying, he didn't seem to know of Lin Ming's true identity.

"Could it be that... you are afraid that your senior-apprentice brother will steal away your ceremonial rites book?"

Deep Child stepped forwards, one foot at a time. He slowly reached out a hand as if he wanted to push away Sheng Mei's sword.

Seeing Deep Child's hand reach out, Sheng Mei swiveled her bone sword and brought it up. The sword point shined with a cold light, forcing Deep Child's hand back. "If you want the ceremonial rites book so much then I'll give it to you!"

From beginning to end, ever since Deep Child entered the Demon God's Tomb he hadn't fought for the ceremonial rites books.

Sheng Mei was well aware that Deep Child was one of the Soul Emperor's trusted subordinates and the Soul Emperor trusted him even more than herself. If he had wanted to compete for the qualifications to bring in the ceremonial rites book, then the one who brought the Book of Evil here might not necessarily have been her.

Moreover, in the Demon God's Tomb, besides her Book of Evil, there was also Lin Ming's Book of Eon and the Great Flood Crown Prince's Book of Nether.

Deep Child didn't seem to have any interest in these two ceremonial rites books either. After he entered the Demon God's Tomb, he seemed to have vanished without a trace, no one knowing where he went.

With all these strange clues floating around, how could Sheng Mei not suspect him?

As Sheng Mei spoke, she simply took out the Book of Evil without hesitation. Then, without even a glance, she tossed it towards Deep Child.

Woosh!

Sheng Mei poured a massive amount of energy into the ancient Book of Evil. It flew towards Deep Child like a falling star.

"Heh!"

Deep Child smiled. He reached out a hand and a highly compressed force field appeared in his palm. With a faint humming, the rapidly flying Book of Evil seemed to encounter tremendous resistance, its speed rapidly dropping. Then, it completely stopped and lightly dropped into Deep Child’s palm.

“Junior-apprentice Sister, you’re still as overbearing as usual.” Deep Child didn’t seem to care much at all. He took the Book of Evil and casually flipped open its pages, reading it like a mortal reading a novel. “This is such a precious treasure and yet Junior-apprentice Sister doesn’t seem to want it, and gave it to me so easily…”

Sheng Mei didn’t respond. She wanted to see what Deep Child would do next, and whether or not he would step onto the dark altar and accept the baptism of the abyssal ritual.

Not to mention that Sheng Mei still didn’t know if the abyssal ritual was a trap or not, she needed to ascertain whether someone needed a protector if they chose to undergo the baptism of the abyssal ritual.

Otherwise, while one was undergoing the abyssal ritual, what would happen if one suffered an attack in whatever unknown state they would be in?

They might reverse their meridians, causing the abyssal ritual to instantly fail. If that occurred, would they just immediately die?

With all of these uncertain circumstances, how could Sheng Mei and Lin Ming possibly carry on the abyssal ritual with Deep Child present?

If there really wasn’t a problem with anything, then Lin Ming still had two ceremonial rites books with him. So, losing the Book of Evil was an acceptable loss.

“It looks like Junior-apprentice Sister is extremely wary of me…”

Deep Child said. With the Book of Evil in his hands, he stepped onto the dark altar.

At this time, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei locked their sense onto every action and movement of Deep Child’s.

Deep Child stroDe into the center of the dark abyssal altar. he stretched out his hands before him and the Book of Evil slowly floated high into the air where it began spinning above his head.

The sinister and ancient Book of Evil opened, its pages flipping over one at a time. Layers of Law runes began to circle in the air, blooming with black and red lights.

Deep Child closed his eyes. His body floated high in the air, completely soaked in the light of the ancient book. His face was filled with intoxicated infatuation, as if he were enjoying the most pleasurable thing in the world.

And at this time, the ground beneath Lin Ming and Sheng Mei’s feet began to faintly shiver.

Bah!

A sudden shockwave erupted from Deep Child, blowing away towards all sides. For a time, the fog that permeated this mystic realm beneath the Emperor Bone Sea was shaken away by the shockwaves and turned into a pure power of demon gods that began converging towards the dark altar where Deep Child was.

The surroundings became clear after the fog dissipated. At this time, from the other end of the Yellow Springs River, three gray lights flew towards them. These three beams of light were like three divine bridges, crossing through the void of space and time to arrive above the dark altar.

Deep Child opened his mouth, completely swallowing up these three beams of light.

At this time, Lin Ming was able to clearly see the origin of these three beams of light. They came from three demon pagodas at the other side of the Yellow Springs River!

The light gathered at the peak of the demon pagodas, flowing down through it before finally shooting out from the mouths of the demon reliefs carved into the gates!

Lin Ming probed with his sense and discovered that the heights of these three demon pagodas were each 12 levels, 15 levels, and 15 levels…

As these lights were absorbed by Deep Child, his eyes turned ghostly purple. His voice was no longer pleasant and soothing, but now carried with it a dark and hostile tone.

“Hahaha! How comfortable! For so many years I have not been able to enjoy such strength!”

Deep Child’s words caused Lin Ming and Sheng Mei’s hearts to chill. He hadn’t enjoyed such strength for many years? Does that mean he enjoyed it before?

Pa pa pa!

Deep Child cracked his neck and his joints emitted explosive crackling sounds. In just several breaths of time, his mortal body began to steadily grow. He became taller and stronger and his muscles seemed as if they would explode with power.

“You don’t want to come up and give it a try?”

Deep Child licked his lips, his ghostly purple eyes aimed at Lin Ming and Sheng Mei.

Lin Ming frowned. “This is not the abyssal ritual! At least it isn’t the abyssal ritual described in the Demon God’s Tomb jade slip!”

According to the information in the Demon God’s Tomb jade slip, the abyssal ritual was incredibly risky, almost impossibly dangerous. Even if a peerless genius were to withstand the baptism of the abyssal ritual, they would still have nine chances of death and one chance of survival!

Although Lin Ming was confident he could pass the test, he believed that even if he underwent it, it wouldn’t be easy at all. He would even have to experience some sort of agonizing and inhuman pain.

But Deep Child seemed to be far too relaxed. Moreover, although Deep Child had activated the Book of Evil, the strength he absorbed hadn’t come from the Book of Evil. Lin Ming clearly felt that in that moment just now, Deep Child had revolved array formation runes in his body, and these array formation runes had drawn these three strengths towards him.

This caused Lin Ming to suspect that even without the Book of Evil, Deep Child could equally absorb this strength!

“Hehe, you are partially correct. This is indeed not the true abyssal ritual, but that doesn’t mean it is not related to the abyssal ritual. The so-called abyssal ritual is to step onto the altar and resist the baptism of energy from the numerous demon pagodas! Every demon pagoda has the remnant soul and corpse of an ancient demon race emperor sealed within. But… how could it be so easy to absorb the soul force and blood vitality of an ancient demon race emperor? Thus, when withstanding a baptism of energy from the demon pagodas, even a peerless genius will fail if their potential is lacking. Their foundation will break apart, their meridians will be torn to shreds, their organs and bones will all shatter and they will die!

“That is why the abyssal ritual has such a high mortality rate! But once someone passes it, they will be reborn anew, and slowly grow into one of the six great totem level abyssals!

“And whether it is the Great Flood Crown Prince or me, neither of us have the ability to withstand the abyssal ritual. The difference between us is that Black Flood is far too arrogant and prideful in himself, and lacks understanding into just how deep his skills are. He wanted to take the Book of Nether to the Emperor Bone Sea to commit suicide. But I, I know just how horrifying the abyssal ritual truly is. If I were to really undergo the abyssal ritual, then all that I would encounter is… death by explosion!

“The fate of death by explosion is to become a sacrificial offering to the Emperor Bone Sea. You will turn into strength that waters this land and space, causing the mystic realm that is the Emperor Bone Sea to become increasingly stable, and causing the 360 demon pagodas here to become that much more terrifying!

“I don’t have the ability, but you do! So come up! You will obtain the strength of a totem level abyssal! In the future you can further expand my Dark Abyss and trample over the 33 Heavens, laying waste to everyone before you! You can lift our abyssal race to become the only one in the universe, the masters of the universe!”

MW Chapter 2176

Chapter 2176 – Changed Face

…

…

…

Deep Child’s words were extremely deceptive, moreover, they even seemed true. At the very least, they agreed with everything that Lin Ming had seen before.

While the many geniuses that entered the Demon God’s Tomb were the elites of heaven, they were also… sacrifices!

Regarding this, Deep Child spoke honestly, without hiding anything at all.

“What about the other higher abyssals that entered the Demon God’s Tomb?” Lin Ming expressionlessly asked.

"Besides you two… the rest have died."

Deep Child shrugged, as if this didn't matter at all.

Lin Ming fell silent. Although he had already expected this to occur, hearing it from Deep Child personally still caused a creepy tingle to crawl up his scalp.

The numerous high level abyssal had been completely slaughtered and turned into sacrifices.

"How did they die?"

"An unexpected disaster erupted in the Demon God's Tomb and the Emperor Bone Sea appeared ahead of time. The energy from the eruption was too massive and broke free from the bindings of the array formation, where it turned into a demonic tide. Then, all the abyssals that were drawn in by the Emperor Bone Sea were swallowed up, thus leading to such a result."

Deep Child simply stated.

"Then how come you haven't died?"

"I entered the Emperor Bone Sea ahead of time, before it appeared. You might have already noticed that I have an ability to absorb the strength of this Emperor Bone Sea mystic realm… that is why I was able to enter this mystic realm. As for the incident involving the sudden eruption of the demonic tide, I can only say that it is a regrettable event."

Deep Child was open with his words. What he said was that he didn't need the Book of Evil to absorb the strength of the three demon pagodas.

"Mm, what you said isn't wrong… but, are you sure that the so-called demonic tide was only an accident?" Lin Ming asked in return.

Deep Child coldly sneered and said with disdain. "Is it necessary for you to entangle with me? Is your vision at the same level as those sacrifices'?"

"You're right. I suppose I just lost myself for a moment."

Lin Ming gently smiled. No one knew just what he was thinking.

Hearing the concession in Lin Ming's tone, Deep Child smiled. "Then what are you still hesitating about? Come, come up and withstand the test of the Demon God's Tomb abyssal ritual and become a totem level abyssal. In the future the Dark Abyss will wage war throughout the 33 Heavens. Once our race becomes the sole ruler of the universe, your merits will also be recognized and your name passed down for a hundred billion years. In the future, you can control the Ancient Eon Sect for tens of billions of years, standing on the same heights as Deep and Flood! You can even surpass them to become the king of the abyss!”

Deep Child’s words were a bit frenzied and feverish. He didn’t know of Lin Ming’s true identity at all, but was instead looking forwards to the scenes of his future achievements.

He seemed like a fanatical abyssal whose blood boiled with the desire to kill.

But facing Deep Child’s zealous urgings, Lin Ming still remained unmoved.

Lin Ming stood where he was, not moving. Sheng Mei also stood behind Lin Ming, without an expression on her face.

Seeing Lin Ming and Sheng Mei’s response, Deep Child’s complexion darkened. “What, are you worried that you will be taken in as a sacrifice by the Demon God’s Tomb? I acknowledge that for all these years, in order for the Demon God’s Tomb to maintain its revolution as well as to gather the massive amount of energy to instill into trial challengers through the abyssal ritual, there are a great number of sacrifices required. But you are not on the same level as the others. In the future you will be able to steadily become a totem level abyssal, and with Ninth Elder’s natural talent, you can also go a step beyond that! No matter how cruel the rules of the Demon God’s Tomb are, it would never take peerless geniuses like you two as sacrifices. That would be far too wasteful!

"The cruel rules are only cruel to the weak. As long as you are powerhouses then you can enjoy the infinite benefits brought about by these rules!"

As Deep Child spoke to here, he seemed to gradually be losing his patience.

But at this time, Lin Ming's eyes turned upwards. He lifted the Demon God's Tomb jade slip and after looking at it for a moment, sneered. He said, "What you said isn't wrong, but... I always felt that something was strange. For over 90% of the abyssals that enter the Demon God's Tomb, this place is nothing more than a slaughterhouse. Countless abyssals are turned into sacrifices, and these abyssals are all proud elites of heaven, yet they inexplicably became nourishment. When they entered the Demon God's Tomb, none of them knew this point. They only thought that a spot to enter the Demon God's Tomb was incredibly precious and they thought what they obtain was a great stroke of luck as well as a gift bestowed upon them by their sect!

"Before entering the Demon God's Tomb, the six totem level influences issued Demon God's Tomb jade slips to everyone. Besides some minor differences, these jade slips are all the same. Most of them give a brief description about the history of the Demon God's Tomb, but between the lines, the jade slip also instills a thought, and that is that there is some heaven-shocking chance in the Demon God's Tomb. If one enters the Demon God's Tomb, then as long as they pass through all sorts of brutal and cruel tests, they can immediately soar into the heavens, becoming an overlord of the Dark Abyss!

"However, when I entered the Demon God's Tomb, the many scenes I saw caused me to develop suspicions. Are the descriptions within this jade slip truly real? I believe that for the last 100 billion years, there have been innumerable outstanding geniuses that were capable of withstanding all the tests of the Demon God's Tomb, and I believe that besides me, there must have been other proud elites of heaven who discovered something wrong with this place!

“However, concerning all of this, concerning the true secret of the Demon God’s Tomb, no one has ever found out. Isn’t this strange? The only explanation is that all news has been blocked off. Some mysterious force has taken control of all the thoughts of the abyssals as well as public opinion!

“This is over tens of billions of years and even 100 billion years of time. Just who has the ability to block off such information for such a long time? Only the six great sects as well as the totem level abyssals in particular are capable of doing this!

“If some behind the scenes manipulator was controlling the six great sects to block out all information then all explanations would be reasonable. As for geniuses that discover the true secret of the Demon God’s Tomb, they either fail the abyssal ritual and are turned into a sacrifice to keep the secret, or they become one of the rulers of the Dark Abyss and still keep the secret because of various reasons…

“What are the reasons that all the rulers of the Dark Abyss would keep the secret for? And what are all these arrangements of the Demon God’s Tomb meant to accomplish?

“Is there a possibility that all those individuals who manage to pass through the test of the abyssal ritual and become rulers of the Dark Abyss, are actually controlled by a far more terrifying behind the scenes manipulator and have no choice but to work for him? And this behind the scenes manipulator has been using these individuals all this time to indirectly control the Dark Abyss?

“Deep Child, do you think my guess makes sense?”

Lin Ming’s voice seemed to come from the nine nether abyss. Every word he spoke shocked the heart and made one’s scalp tingle with fear!

Deep Child listened without expression, no happiness or anger showing on his features.

Peng!

And at this time, a flow of bloody flames formed from energy exploded atop the dark altar. A brilliant blood red light illuminated Deep Child’s suddenly ferocious face.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and began to crazily revolve the energy within him.

As Deep Child said, the weak elite abyssals that entered the Demon God’s Tomb were sacrificed as blood sacrifices. But for those that managed to pass the abyssal ritual, if they were being entrusted with a great deal of power, why not conveniently control them at the same time?

If there truly was some terrifying unknown existence that created all of this, then it wouldn’t be difficult for them to tamper with the abyssal ritual, making it so that those who passed would turn into faithful servants!

At the very least, if Lin Ming changed his position to that of a greedy abyssal who wanted to rule over all, this was what he would do!

Through such reasoning, then 2 billion years ago when an abyssal demon passed the abyssal ritual and became ‘Flood’, they had likely been controlled by someone at the time.

For all these years, Flood was like a hidden dragon, secretive in his movements. He was the emperor of the Great Flood Demon Kingdom, and after ascending the throne, he took the Great Flood Demon Kingdom as the head to form the Flood Alliance.

During this time, the Flood Alliance fought with the Deep Alliance. The two great influences sent out a massive number of proud elites to enter the Demon God’s Tomb each time where they competed for resources and slaughtered each other!

Lin Ming believed that whether it was Flood or Deep, it was impossible for either one to not know the secrets of the Dark Abyss. If so, then why would they allow an endless stream of high level abyssals with boundless potential to enter the Demon God’s Tomb and die?

In normal circumstances, this couldn’t be justified.

However, if they took the initiative to facilitate all of this, and took the initiative to cover up all secrets, even intentionally creating the Flood Alliance and Deep Alliance to fight each other and slaughter each other, then this was all logical! This way, a massive number of disciples could be turned into nourishment!

If so, then this was a heaven-shaking plot within the Demon God's Tomb!

And whether it was the young Empyreans, True Divinities, or even characters like the Great Flood Crown Prince, in the face of such a plot they were no different from tiny ants.

Even for Lin Ming and Sheng Mei, the only end result of them entering the Demon God's Tomb was to become chess pieces. They were only slightly better than the other fertilizer.

How could Lin Ming resign himself to becoming such a chess piece?

"How regrettable… I originally wanted you to become one of the demon emperors who would rule the world in the future. After the 33 Heavens is swallowed up by the abyssals, you could have established a legacy that would last for a hundred billion years. But… it seems you will refuse my offer no matter what. If so… then there is nothing left for us to discuss…"

As Deep Child spoke, he gently tilted his head, his neck emitting explosive crackling sounds the entire time, his strength rising without end!

“Since you aren’t willing to become a demon emperor then you can follow everyone else… together… turn into nourishment!”

MW Chapter 2177

Chapter 2177 – The Terrifying Deep Child

…

…

…

Deep Child's killing intent became increasingly deep and increasingly profound. And at this time, far on the opposite shores of the Yellow Springs River, several other demon pagodas began to light up with a dim glow!

Seeing these demon pagodas begin to gather energy to send towards Deep Child, at this time, Lin Ming could no longer stand idly by and allow Deep Child's momentum to climb even higher.

"Attack!"

Lin Ming cried out. Beside him, Sheng Mei also attacked. She grasped her pitch matte black bone sword and silently slashed out. For a time, innumerable black flower petals bloomed atop the sword blade. These flower petals immediately began to wither after they bloomed as they were filled with the Concept of Death.

At the same time, Lin Ming rushed forwards from another side. He activated the strength of his Asura blood without hesitation. Behind him, an Asura war god phantom appeared. He poured all of his energy into the Black Dragon Spear and thrust outwards!

The two attacks were joined together with perfect harmony. They came from two angles that blocked off Deep Child's evasion paths, and even blocked off the flow of world energy to prevent Deep Child's momentum growing.

If an ordinary middle True Divinity were to encounter such a strike, they would be at a loss for what to do, and would likely be severely wounded by this joint attack.

However, even though Deep Child was also at the middle True Divinity realm, he only chuckled as he faced Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's combined attack. He didn't revolve any energy, but all around his body there was actually an invisible 'potential'!

This sort of 'potential' was different from common force fields. It was like the potential of the world, capable of shaking mountains and rivers and affecting the sun and moon!

When this great potential emerged, a horrifying pushing force erupted from Deep Child's body, like a raging shockwave that spread out in all directions. Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were caught up in this strength and felt as if their bodies had smashed into a towering mountain.

Peng!

With a series of loud explosions, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's bodies violently quaked. They felt this unstoppable pushing force wrap over them like a storm. Placed within, they were haplessly blown backwards. Lin Ming felt his blood vitality restlessly tumble in his body. Luckily, with his deep foundation he summoned energy to suppress his roiling blood vitality. However, as he turned around he saw that the corners of Sheng Mei's lips were already stained with blood.

Lin Ming's heart tightened. He forcefully reversed his body in the storm and grabbed onto Sheng Mei's hand. He stabbed the Black Dragon Spear deep into the ground, drawing a line of sparks.

Bang!

Sheng Mei and Lin Ming crashed into the ground. They both felt their blood vitality jumbled into disorder and their meridians injured.

The two of them looked up at Deep Child.

Lin Ming's eyes were filled with astonishment.

Was Deep Child really only a middle True Divinity?

In that instant, Lin Ming clearly felt that his and Sheng Mei's joint attack was weakened for the most part by the storm. However, the rest of it had been absorbed by Deep Child!

Deep Child was actually able to absorb the energies from their attack? How had he managed to do this?

"The Soul Emperor still has this sort of cultivation method?"

Lin Ming's complexion was dark and dignified as he asked Sheng Mei this question with a sound transmission. The Laws he used and the Laws Sheng Mei used had reached an extremely high boundary, so how could they be so easily absorbed?

Even Famine who was skilled in the Swallowing Laws could also swallow dead things or the strength of others through its tentacles; it was impossible to directly swallow an enemy's attacks like this.

"I don't know." Sheng Mei guiltily said as she bit her lips. The Soul Emperor was far too mysterious and too deeply unfathomable. During these years, most of the time, Sheng Mei only obeyed the orders of the Soul Emperor. As for the Soul Emperor's cultivation methods, she only knew the Holy Scripture Laws.

Although Deep Child could be called her senior-apprentice brother, the truth was that she didn’t understand his hidden depths at all. It was clear from this that Deep Child was much more trusted by the Soul Emperor.

“Are you surprised?” Seeing the shock on Lin Ming and Sheng Mei’s face, Deep Child laughed, and he laughed extremely recklessly and freely. “Let me plainly tell you something. No matter what, you two cannot defeat me! This is the disparity of our levels, a disparity that neither of you can make up for! And, what is most pitiful is that you two don’t even know where this disparity is.

“I will give you two one final chance. Be good little children and obediently step onto the dark altar and withstand the baptism of the abyssal ritual! This is an opportunity that others can only dream of! Once you successfully pass the dark ritual, the two of you can become the highest level abyssals in the Dark Abyss, and you will each become one of the rulers of the future world!”

As Deep Child spoke, he slowly drew out his own weapon.

This was a black trident.

This black trident was 15 feet long. Just the end of the trident was three feet wide and the three prongs were wild and savage. The shape of the trident was overly exaggerated and exceedingly hideous and fierce.

“You… passed the abyssal ritual?” Sheng Mei coldly asked. With Deep Child’s strength and his identity, she couldn’t help but develop such a guess.

“Hahaha!” Deep Child cackled. He swayed his neck from side to side as he slowly stepped down from the altar, walking towards Lin Ming and Sheng Mei.

“If you want to know whether or not I have passed through the abyssal ritual, why don’t you come up and experience the true abyssal ritual for yourself first?”

Deep Child approached Lin Ming and Sheng Mei, one step at a time.

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes. He could already confirm that from the moment he appeared in Deep King Road and defeated Sheng Mei with his middle Empyrean cultivation, he had already been targeted by Deep Child. Or, it could be said that he had been targeted by the current ruler of Deep King Road.

His entry into the Demon God’s Tomb was the same as walking into a trap. Whether or not he possessed the Book of Eon and whether or not he came to the Emperor Bone Sea on his own initiative… sooner or later, Deep Child would have found him.

This Deep Child was like a loyal hound personally raised by the Soul Emperor in order to monitor the smelting trial of the Demon God’s Tomb!

Lin Ming had snuck into the Dark Abyss and while he had done so to increase his strength, he had also become prey at the same time…

Now, the only thing that Lin Ming could be thankful for was that his identity as a human had not been discovered by Deep Child.

After all, Deep Child had yet to fully mature and his cultivation and field of vision were limited, thus he hadn't been able to see through Lin Ming.

However, if the Soul Emperor were to personally arrive, Lin Ming didn't have the faintest hopes that he could trick him.

But the current problem was that if he didn't reveal his true self, there would truly be no hope of defeating Deep Child.

Even if he did reveal his true self, the chances of defeating Deep Child were extremely small. And once he did reveal his true self, then the battle here would end with one of them dying; Deep Child would never let him go after that.

In addition, even Sheng Mei would be implicated in his mess. A great catastrophe would descend upon her head and she would suffer the charge of being a traitor.

Seeing Lin Ming's complexion, Sheng Mei seemed to understand just what Lin Ming was thinking. She said with a sound transmission, "I gave birth to Jiu'er and also erased the spirit mark that the Soul Emperor left in my spiritual sea. At this point, I have already burnt all my escape routes and can only fight to the bitter end. It's already come to this. If you have any scruples still then toss them aside. You and I must fight with everything we have.

"If we can somehow luckily survive today, then I will follow you to the ends of the earth and the edges of heaven. If we are buried here today, then I will follow you to the Yellow Springs. But no matter what the result is, I have no regrets!"

In such a situation, Sheng Mei's brief sound transmission touched Lin Ming's heart.

He was aware that since birth, Sheng Mei was accompanied with infinite sorrow and misery.

Regardless of what she did in the past, regardless of her reluctance or whether or not she was willing to do what she did before, regardless if it was her or Jiu'er, they had already become marks that were deeply ingrained in his life. They could not be erased nor could they be severed.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and slowly clenched his fists. As he looked at Deep Child again, his eyes blazed with a brilliant fighting spirit!

Deep Child's eyebrow tipped up and he shook his head in regret.

“It looks like… there is no more room for discussion. How stupid of you. I already said that no matter what happens, it is impossible for you to defeat me!”

“You sure speak enough nonsense!”

Lin Ming roared out loud. Energy erupted from his entire body as the power of the Nine Stars began to gather unto him. The Black Dragon Spear came pounding down!

A horrifying strength, like a crashing star, came sweeping down over the world.

Bang!

With an explosion, the eruption of energy turned into an incredibly wild and tyrannical shockwave. Deep Child was caught in the shockwave and sent flying away!

But in the next moment, Deep Child lightly landed on the ground. Lin Ming’s strength and Laws seemed to be completely suppressed. Even his spear light had been absorbed by Deep Child’s bodily protective energy with nothing left behind.

All around Deep Child, the same vague and invisible world potential remained. It seemed as if no amount of strength and no type of ability would be able to destroy this potential.

Lin Ming sucked in a breath of cold air. He was well aware that the might of his strike just now was enough to instantly kill a lower True Divinity, and even weaker True Divinities would be injured.

But against Deep Child, his strike had been easily received and blocked as if it hadn't taken any energy or effort to do so.

Lin Ming was now using his demon avatar. If he used his true self, his strength could rise by a great deal, but it absolutely wouldn't double.

Now, Lin Ming began to suspect that even if his strength increased, he still wouldn't be able to do anything to Deep Child.

"Why is he so strong? He clearly only has a middle True Divinity cultivation!"

MW Chapter 2178

Chapter 2178 – Life and Death Crisis

…

…

…

"You two have already used your moves, it should be my turn…"

Deep Child approached Lin Ming and Sheng Mei, one step at a time. He looked at Sheng Mei and smiled, "Junior-apprentice Sister, shouldn't you try to persuade your little lover here? Or do you plan to stare on helplessly as he dies?"

Just as Deep Child's voice fell, killing intent erupted from his body.

Bang!

He rushed forwards like gods and ghosts. His trident came smashing down!

Without any trident light, without any recklessly tumbling energy, without even any Law fluctuations, Deep Child's attack seemed incredibly ordinary. However, every movement and action that Deep Child took was followed with the potential of the world. Facing him was like facing an entire world!

Lin Ming saw Deep Child hurtle towards him and felt the surrounding space immediately lock tight around him. It was like he was placed in a space cage, without any direction to dodge in.

As Lin Ming watched Deep Child's trident come pounding down, he roared out loud and brought the Black Dragon Spear crossing in front of his body.

Kacha!

The trident and Black Dragon Spear collided. The Black Dragon Spear bent deeply downwards, completely bent as bone slices wildly flew off!

In that moment, Lin Ming felt his eyes tingle with numbness as if his bones had broken. Deep Child's strength had reached an unimaginable degree!

"Not bad!"

Deep Child held the trident with one hand and flew upwards. With his right knee bent, he struck Lin Ming's chest.

Peng!

Because he was locked down by the space cage and also suppressed by Deep Child's immense strength, Lin Ming wasn't able to resist this strike at all. The moment that Deep Child's knee struck his chest, it was like a trillion jin hammer crashed into him. His ribs shattered and his organs jumbled about. He spat out a mouthful of blood as he was sent tumbling backwards!

Lin Ming plummeted onto a corner of a dark altar, the scale behind him cracking open!

"Lin Ming!"

Sheng Mei's body flashed and she arrived near Lin Ming. She didn't shout out his name and only used sound transmissions.

At this time, Sheng Mei's heart ached to the extreme. When Deep Child had attacked just now, he used a powerful wave of world potential to separate her. She hadn't been able to approach the battlefield and there wasn't anything she could have done to support Lin Ming.

The disparity between her and Deep Child could be imagined!

“How can he be so strong… is there nothing you know about him?”

Lin Ming coughed, the blood thick and dark, even mixed with bits of his organs.

The gap was simply too great. Deep Child was a middle True Divinity and Sheng Mei was a half-step True Divinity, someone who had reached the limits of an Empyrean. But according to the current difference in strength, even if Sheng Mei broke into True Divinity she still might not be Deep Child’s match.

In other words, the talent that Deep Child displayed now was not any lower than Sheng Mei’s!

Sheng Mei said. “From what I knew, Deep Child should have only been a bit better than the Great Flood Crown Prince. I never knew he had hidden his depths so deeply…”

“Is that so…” Lin Ming wiped the blood from the corners of his mouth. He couldn’t believe that an abyssal in the Dark Abyss who didn’t have any prominent reputation before would actually possess such a level of talent!

If Deep Child was truly so fierce then there would have been no need for him to hide himself, because hiding his talent was meaningless.

Compared to the current Deep Child, the past overly arrogant Good Fortune Saint Son wasn't worth anything at all. Lin Ming even believed that if Deep Child continued forwards with such talent, he might have hopes of attacking the realm Beyond Divinity.

"The muscles on your wounds are wriggling, growing, and your broken ribs are quietly healing. What amazing recovery abilities!"

Deep Child looked at Lin Ming's chest and praised out loud, "What a powerful mortal body, it really stirs up one's envy. To become fertilizer like this is just too pitiful."

As Deep Child spoke, he lifted his trident, pointing it straight at Lin Ming and Sheng Mei!

"Lin Ming!"

As Sheng Mei sent out a sound transmission, she stretched her hands in front of herself. Her ten slender fingers flew through the air as a blood red divine light shot out from between Sheng Mei's eyebrows!

Flower petals fluttered about. The nine revolution divine lotus dazzled with divine light.

And at this time, Lin Ming also moved forwards. He thrust out his spear, and this time his spear struck against the center of the nine revolution red lotus!

Lin Ming poured all of his strength into the nine revolution red lotus. With a framework of Sheng Mei's Laws as the foundation, he added in his strength and his own Laws to erupt with an even greater might!

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's joint attack had been able to kill the peak middle True Divinity Great Flood Crown Prince. From this, it could be seen just how powerful this strike was!

Kacha!

The trident smashed into the nine revolution red lotus. The nine revolution red lotus contained the Laws of Life and Death and the power of the soul; it was the ultimate display of the limit of Sheng Mei and Lin Ming's strength. In an instant, everything burst out as the strike swept towards Deep Child like a storm!

In that moment, Deep Child's smile finally drew back a little.

As he drew back, he thrust out his trident again and again. Each one of Deep Child's attacks didn't have any energy poured into it, but actually carried around that simple 'potential'!

Impact after impact, the flower petals of the nine revolution red lotus withered and fell, the energy rapidly weakening. And, a considerable part of this energy was sucked into Deep Child's body.

Deep Child drew back a thousand feet and the nine revolution red lotus completely vanished. From start to finish, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's joint attack hadn't been able to touch Deep Child's scales at all.

This attack had been considerably taxing on Lin Ming and Sheng Mei, and yet it just barely managed to force Deep Child back.

"What a strong attack! You two really make a wonderful duo!" Deep Child casually waved his hand and scattered the last wisps of energy like a spider's web. Then, he grasped his trident and walked towards Lin Ming and Sheng Mei.

"What do we do..."

Sheng Mei said, her complexion slightly pale. Anyone who met such a terrifying opponent where every one of their attacks was useless would feel desperation.

This Deep Child was no longer someone that she or Lin Ming could defeat.

And at this time, Lin Ming was actually staring at the void in front of Deep Child. In this part of the void, the energy ripples of the disappeared nine revolution red lotus still echoed.

Recalling the moment that Deep Child broke apart the nine revolution red lotus, a light lit up in Lin Ming's mind.

"You… drew support from the strength of this world?"

Lin Ming suddenly said. Deep Child paused in his step and looked at Lin Ming with some surprise.

"All of your moves do not have any Laws fused in nor do you use your own strength. But, the truth is that you use your body as a medium to mobilize the strength of this world, and this is the so-called potential in your moves! When we fight you, the truth is that we are fighting this world!"

Hearing Lin Ming's words, Deep Child lightly sighed. "How interesting, you were actually able to see through my combat methods. Indeed, what you said is true; I draw support from this world's strength. Within the Demon God's Tomb, I am the absolute ruler here, no different from a divine god!

"10 billion years ago, two peerless Beyond Divinity existences appeared amongst the races of the 33 Heavens – Asura and Immortal. They each cultivated the inner universe and outer universe and each had different ideas and stepped on different roads of martial arts. The two of them even fought because of this. But in my opinion, whether it is Asura or Immortal, neither of their Laws reached the peak.

“One cultivated ‘heaven’ and the other cultivated ‘man’, and yet neither of them were able to gather heaven and man as one. Yet, my master managed to accomplish this…

“The Demon God’s Tomb is the ultimate world of my master! In this world, my master can merge together with the world, whether it is in body, soul, or mind!

“My master is the world and the world is my master. If the world is not destroyed then my master cannot be destroyed. If this world is immortal, then my master is immortal!

“And just how stable is the world of the Demon God’s Tomb? In the previous universal era, the Demon God’s Tomb even managed to resist the great Shattering!

“A world that can resist the great Shattering of the universe, that means it will continue on in perpetuity, being truly immortal. That is true eternal life, true immortality!”

Deep Child laughed as he spoke these heaven-shaking words.

Even Lin Ming, who had practiced many of the top Laws to exist, was still shocked upon hearing this.

A fusion of a martial artist and the world!

If the world isn’t destroyed, then the martial artist isn’t destroyed!

If the world was immortal, then the martial artist was immortal!

This was true eternal life, true immortality! Since ancient times, countless proud sons of heavens had chased after eternal life, and yet all of them failed without exception.

But the so-called master of Deep Child actually thought of fusing together with a world. As long as this great world was able to withstand the great Shattering the universe, then whether it was the world or the martial artist, both would remain forever.

Lin Ming couldn’t help but be stunned by such ideas.

Although Lin Ming stood opposite to this behind the scenes manipulator, he couldn’t help but acknowledge that this secret existence was one of the most terrifying geniuses to ever walk down the road of martial arts since ancient times!

While he couldn’t say whether or not someone similar could appear in the future, this existence was already unprecedented since the past!

Lin Ming couldn't help but think of his own inner world. His inner world was extremely special; it was fused with a true world seed and also contained a massive amount of world power.

Lin Ming always wanted to fuse together the inner universe Holy Scripture and the outer universe Asura Sutra, fusing the two great Laws as one. From this meaning, the truth was that Lin Ming was walking down the same road that the behind the scenes manipulator of the Demon God's Tomb was walking.

The difference was that he had just started down this road, but this behind the scenes manipulator had already reached large success!

This disparity was far too great!

MW Chapter 2179

Chapter 2179 – Assault

…

…

…

Wu wu wu –

All around Deep Child, the potential of the world began to gather once more.

Deep Child's own strength was not necessarily much higher than that of the Great Flood Crown Prince. However, he possessed the ability to control the strength of the Demon God's Tomb, and by relying on the 'potential' formed from the strength of the world, then as long as he stood in this land he was invincible.

Nearly the only road laid in front of Lin Ming and Sheng Mei was a dead end. In the world of the Demon God's Tomb they were like turtles in a jar, without any way to escape.

“Is there really… no way to survive?”

In this life or death crisis, each breath that Lin Ming took seemed incomparably long. Although his body was tensed, his mind was preternaturally calm.

His thoughts raced at a terrifying speed with thousands and millions of situations flashing through his mind as he tried to search for a path to survival in this hopeless situation.

Currently, the only cards he had left in his hands were his true self and the Magic Cube. But even if he brought out these cards, it still wouldn’t be enough to defeat Deep Child.

Unless…

A light lit up in Lin Ming’s mind. In all of these dead ends, there seemed to be a singular path to survival. But, the chances of realizing this slim possibility were far too low…

“Junior-apprentice Sister, Master has spent so much effort to train you and yet you would betray him for nothing but a man! You are just far too disappointing!”

Deep Child simply didn’t seem to care about Lin Ming at all. As he spoke, he reached out for Sheng Mei!

The moment Deep Child moved, the potential of the heavens and earth formed a cage that locked down the space around Sheng Mei. Sheng Mei cried out in alarm, unable to control her body at all. Like a feather caught in strong winds, she started flying towards Deep Child.

“Get out of the way!”

Lin Ming shouted. His body flew out like a sharp sword. All the muscles on his body bulged as he poured every ounce of strength into the Black Dragon Spear and then threw it out!

Hum - !

This spear carried the limit of Lin Ming’s strength. As it tore through the void, it formed visible ripples of energy as it shot right at Deep Child’s head!

“You don’t even want your weapon. Have you already given up?”

Deep Child sneered and reached out a hand.

Shua - !

The Black Dragon Spear was grasped by Deep Child. It continued forward beneath the terrifying impact force, rubbing with Deep Child's palm, the friction creating flames.

Wrapped with the potential of the world, the Black Dragon Spear reached half an inch from Deep Child's eyebrows before using up its strength. But in the end, it wasn't able to injure Deep Child in the least!

"What a last ditch effort!"

Deep Child coldly sneered. However, at this moment, the sneer on his face froze.

The Lin Ming that threw out the spear suddenly rushed right before Deep Child with inconceivable speed. He drew out a giant spine from his spatial ring. This spine resembled a grotesque centipede, and the bone was so thick that even the towering demon avatar of Lin Ming needed both hands to hold it.

Lin Ming grabbed the end of the spine, thrusting it straight down!

At this time, a barrier of world potential had still formed around Deep Child, an impregnable defense.

Puff!

With a loud explosion, the gathered world potential was torn apart by the spine in Lin Ming's hands, as if this spine had a clear suppressive effect on the world potential.

After the world potential shattered, the icy cold spine thrust straight towards Deep Child's heart!

"How!?"

For the first, shock flashed on Deep Child's face.

Deep Child stormed back hundreds of feet as he waved the trident in his hands.

Kacha!

The trident collided with the spine in Lin Ming's hand. The originally invincible trident actually began to curve beneath the impact.

And in this moment, as Deep Child blinked, he suddenly felt as if Lin Ming's mortal body were transforming. The nearly 20 foot tall abyssal began to shrink and the scales started rapidly disappearing. Finally, he turned into the form of a human!

Lin Ming reached out a hand. A black cube started to rapidly revolve in his palm as a horrifying suction force erupted outwards!

The moment Lin Ming's true self appeared he simultaneously summoned the Magic Cube. He had used the demon bone to break through the layers of world potential and then brought forth the Magic Cube at an extremely close distance, so that there was no barrier to contact between them.

A powerful suction force shrouded Deep Child's body. Lin Ming wanted to suck Deep Child into the Magic Cube!

Deep Child was a faithful servant to the behind the scenes manipulator of the Demon God's Tomb. He was able to borrow the strength of the world of the Demon God's Tomb.

In other words, as long as Deep Child was in the Demon God's Tomb, he was invincible.

Then the only possibility to defeat Deep Child was to have him temporarily leave the world of the Demon God's Tomb.

And the Magic Cube was a great world seed; the space within the Magic Cube was itself a rudimentary world. If Deep Child could be drawn into the Magic Cube space, then with the Magic Cube's unfathomable strength there was a high chance that the strength of the world of the Demon God's Tomb would be isolated outside. Once this happened, then Deep Child would lose the support of the world Laws of the Demon God's Tomb and he would be like a tiger without fangs; there would be no need to fear him.

To Lin Ming, this was the only possible chance of victory!

However, as Deep Child was about to be sucked into the Magic Cube, he emitted the roars of a wild animal!

He bit down on his tongue and spat out a fog of blood from his chest. Then, three fierce demon phantoms flew out from his body.

Roar! Roar! Roar!

These three demon phantoms emitted horrifying roars and hurtled towards Lin Ming before exploding on him!

As the demon phantoms exploded they created a powerful shockwave that thrust the Magic Cube away. As for Deep Child, he also borrowed the force of this storm to draw backwards.

Bang!

Divine light overflowed in all directions and surged through space. The Magic Cube raised up another suction vortex, but all it managed to draw in were the remnant souls of the demon phantoms. As for Deep Child, he had already escaped a thousand feet away and was standing atop a dark altar.

Deep Child’s burning eyes seemed as if they could bore a hole through Lin Ming.

At this time, Lin Ming had already returned to the shape of his true self. He grasped the Magic Cube in one hand and the Demon God’s bone that was taller than him in the other.

The thunderous blow he released just now had failed because of the three demon phantoms that rushed out from Deep Child’s body!

Lin Ming was well aware that these three demon phantoms had come from the three far off demon pagodas. They had been summoned by Deep Child, where he held them in his body to increase his combat strength.

He never thought that in a key moment Deep Child could discard these three remnant demon souls to break apart his killing move.

And once he missed that moment, this meant that Lin Ming’s plan had failed. Because once Deep Child was aware and on guard, it would be far harder to suck him into the Magic Cube.

The situation could no longer become worse than it already was!

“You are actually… not part of the abyssal race!” At this time, Deep Child’s expression and gaze were much fiercer.

His eyes were poisonous and sharp. He could immediately make out that Lin Ming wasn’t an abyssal nor was he one of the ancient races that dwelled in the Dark Abyss. Rather, he came from the 33 Heavens!

This Ninth Elder was actually someone that came from the 33 Heavens and infiltrated their way into the Dark Abyss!

When joined together with the shocking talent that Lin Ming displayed, a brilliant light lit up Deep Child’s eyes.

“I know who you are! So that’s how it is! That’s how it is! You’ve truly hidden yourself deeply!”

Deep Child’s complexion became darker than water. His eyes exposed a ruthless killing intent. He looked at Lin Ming and then turned his gaze to Sheng Mei, his eyes narrowing.

“No wonder you didn’t hesitate to betray the master after just being with him for a few years. So this Ninth Elder is actually your old lover! Hah! Were you really moved by a human? You’re actually willing to sacrifice yourself for him? Sacrifice the supreme position you will obtain so easily in the future? Did you think that this human who has yet to grow up can actually defeat the master?”

Deep Child aggressively said.

However, with things having reached this stage, Sheng Mei’s eyes had already been opened to the truth. “Do you really think that after that old freak achieves his ambitions, he will give you everything you want? Keep on dreaming! A dog that has lost his use will only be tossed aside!”

MW Chapter 2180

Chapter 2180 – Change in the Magic Cube

…

…

…

Sheng Mei's words seemed to stab painfully into Deep Child. For a time, killing intent erupted around Deep Child as if 10,000 demons were howling around him.

Weng –

On the opposite shores of the Yellow Springs River, three demon pagodas gently trembled and three more beams of light shot up into the skies, rapidly soaring towards Deep Child!

Deep Child had once again summoned the strength of the ancient demon emperors slumbering deep within the Emperor Bone Sea.

Shua – !

With the power of demon souls added into him, Deep Child’s entire body seethed with demonic strength. His strength was no weaker than it was before and he looked greedily at the Magic Cube in Lin Ming’s hand.

“That thing in your hand is truly extraordinary. For it to absorb the remnant soul of ancient demon race emperors and also break through the strength of the Demon God’s Tomb world, that really makes me wonder just what it is…”

Lin Ming’s complexion turned cold and he tightly gripped the Magic Cube.

Deep Child’s smile grew. “Lin Ming, oh Lin Ming, you are my lucky star. If I kill you, and give your head as well as that thing in your hand to my master, how do you think the master will reward me?”

As Deep Child spoke he couldn’t help but lick his lips.

But at this time, the Magic Cube in Lin Ming’s hand grew increasingly hot.

When Lin Ming stepped into the Emperor Bone Sea the Magic Cube had already started to vaguely shiver as if it were extremely excited. Moreover, there even seemed to be a somehow heated feeling.

Now that he arrived at the center of the six dark altars in the focal point of the Emperor Bone Sea, and especially after summoning the Magic Cube, he could feel this burning heat become stronger and stronger and the shaking become that much more fierce.

“What is happening here?”

Lin Ming was startled. He originally thought that the Magic Cube was shaking in the Emperor Bone Sea because it was excited at encountering so many remnant souls of ancient demon emperors, but this was clearly not the case.

Not only did the Magic Cube tremble, but beside Lin Ming, Sheng Mei also covered her chest with her hands, her eyes clouded over with confusion. “Lin Ming, whatever I felt before that was summoning me, it is a hundred times more intense now than it was when I first entered the Emperor Bone Sea…”

The changes in Sheng Mei and the Magic Cube left Lin Ming increasingly puzzled. However, he no longer had any time to think about this because Deep Child had already started moving. Deep Child grasped his trident and gathered the world potential of the Emperor Bone Sea around him once more to smash down at Lin Ming!

“You’re still distracted at this time? Die!”

Deep Child’s strike contained irresistible potential. The world potential locked in the space around Lin Ming once more, making it so that he had nowhere to dodge.

Lin Ming’s heart chilled. He held the demon bone in his hand to resist Deep Child’s strike.

In his heart, he was aware that Deep Child had combined together with this world and his energy was nearly infinite here. Moreover, with strength that surpassed his own to begin with, the chances of victory were incomparably slim.

Even the demon bone in his hands, the only thing he could rely on, was itself questionable. This was because this spine was possibly related to Deep Child’s secret master, so what if it were turned against him?

In every possible situation he could imagine, he held all the disadvantages.

Kacha!

The trident clashed with the demon bone. The massive impact force caused Lin Ming’s arms to sink downwards.

At this time, when the demon bone faced Deep Child, it no longer displayed its previously overwhelming force. Instead it was faintly cast away by Deep Child’s world potential.

After all, the demon bone was in the end not Lin Ming's weapon and Lin Ming hadn't been able to refine it. Before, Deep Child has suffered a loss because he had been caught off guard. Now Lin Ming was quickly finding that his control over the demon bone was weakening, even seeming as if it wanted to separate from his hands and be controlled by Deep Child!

"This entire world obeys me! If you want to use something from this world to defeat me, that is simply impossible!"

The trident in Deep Child's hand came crashing down with epic vigor. Lin Ming barely managed to resist it. The blue veins bulged on his arms and his blood vessels nearly burst apart!

The disparity in strength was far too great!

While Lin Ming struggled to deal with this onslaught, he simultaneously looked for a chance to fight back.

But at this time the Magic Cube's trembling became increasingly fierce, nearly slipping out of Lin Ming's control.

"Just what is going on here?"

Lin Ming thought to himself, confused. But now, he could feel some sort of vague spiritual message come from the depths of the Magic Cube, as if the Magic Cube was desperately thirsty for energy.

The Magic Cube needed his strength?

This thought raced through Lin Ming's thoughts as he fought Deep Child. He was already nearing exhaustion; if he were to divide any of his strength to the Magic Cube then that was nearly suicidal behavior.

Kacha!

After another fierce strike, Lin Ming was sent flying backwards. Pain coursed through his right arm and his bones nearly shattered. But taking advantage of the time he was sent tumbling away, Lin Ming fiercely clenched his teeth and summoned all of his strength to pour it into the Magic Cube without reserve!

For him to arrive at this step in his life, the Magic Cube had played an inestimably great role. In this life or death crisis Lin Ming chose to place all his trust in the Magic Cube!

Peng!

Lin Ming plummeted onto a dark altar, blood overflowing from his lips. After pouring out all his energy, Lin Ming didn't have much excess energy left to defend himself.

"Die!"

Seeing Lin Ming pour energy into the Magic Cube as if he wanted to use this divine tool once more, Deep Child sneered. He suddenly threw out his trident like a javelin!

Woosh!

The trident tore through the void, howling towards Lin Ming like a meteor.

At this time Lin Ming no longer had the strength to resist. Seeing the giant trident nearly nail him onto the dark altar, in this flash, a dazzling nine revolution red lotus bloomed in front of Lin Ming once more. The nine flower petals contained the mysterious Concepts of Life and Death as they collided with the trident.

Bang!

The red lotus exploded to pieces. Flower petals waned and withered and the trident slowed down a great deal. Still, it continued forwards, carried by the potential of the world.

At this time Sheng Mei's figure flickered and she appeared in front of Lin Ming. Her face was pale white as she lifted her arms.

A wall of ice formed in front of Sheng Mei.

Kacha! Kacha! Kacha!

The trident crashed into the ice wall, the cold trident edge thrusting straight at Sheng Mei's neck!

Sheng Mei!

Lin Ming's heart tightened. With everything hanging by a hair, Sheng Mei gathered her hands together and caught the trident edge with her palms. The momentum sent her flying backwards and crashing into Lin Ming's chest!

In the final moments, Sheng Mei issued a piercing scream. Pushing out her arms with all her strength, she forcefully shifted the trajectory of the trident.

Ding –

The trident grazed past Lin Ming and Sheng Mei and stabbed deep into the dark altar.

By this time, Sheng Mei's hands were covered in blood and her right arm had been twisted and the bones broken due to the tremendous impact of energy!

Although she had barely managed to guarantee Lin Ming's life, Sheng Mei had consumed the majority of her strength to do so. Moreover, Lin Ming's situation wasn't much better. It would be difficult to withstand Deep Child's next strike.

"What a pair of fated lovers, truly a sad song you play."

Deep Child mockingly said, diabolically grinning as he walked towards Lin Ming and Sheng Mei. "Junior-apprentice Sister, although you have committed an unforgivable crime, I will not kill you, because the master has a use for your life. I will bring you back… hehe, I wonder how the master will deal with you, I'm looking forwards to it very much!"

As Deep Child spoke, the smile suddenly froze on his face.

The Magic Cube that Lin Ming had poured all of his strength into suddenly flew out of his hands like an arrow!

Deep Child's heart tightened and he rapidly drew backwards. Facing the Magic Cube, Deep Child still held a deep sense of dread. He had already faintly guessed the Magic Cube's origins.

Such a divine tool was no trifling matter; a single accident could lead to catastrophic failure!

Weng –

The Magic Cube's trembling grew fiercer. Even the stable space of the Demon God's Tomb seemed as if it would start breaking apart due to the strength of the shaking.

The Magic Cube raced through a strange path. It didn't attack Deep Child, but flew past him instead!

With unbelievable speed, its goal was actually one of the three demon pagodas!

Near the six great dark altars there were three exceedingly high demon pagodas.

The demon pagoda that the Magic Cube flew towards was the 33 level demon pagoda!

Guang dong!

Whether it was Lin Ming, Sheng Mei, or even Deep Child, none of them had time to respond. The Magic Cube already smashed into the gates of the 33 level demon pagoda.

The powerful impact caused the front gates to violently shiver. The demon relief on the front gates seemed to come alive, its eyes glowing with blood as endless runes started revolving to resist the impact of the Magic Cube.

However, as these runes appeared, most of them were instantly crushed by the Magic Cube!

Guang dong!

Another bang echoed out. Another impact smashed into the gates without any gap. Large pieces of the demon relief scattered out, as if the front gates were going to be smashed open by the Magic Cube.

“This is bad!”

In that instant, Deep Child’s complexion changed because he had thought of a possibility, and this possibility left him feeling like he had fallen into an icy lake!

With a loud shout, he recklessly rushed towards the Magic Cube!

MW Chapter 2181

Chapter 2181 – Life and Death Extinction

…

…

…

Because he possessed the ability to summon the power of the Demon God’s Tomb, Deep Child’s speed reached the limit. Using the Space Laws, he was nearly able to teleport.

He arrived in front of the Magic Cube in an instant. Stretched out his demon claws, he wrapped them in the potential of the world and grasped out at the Magic Cube.

“Lin Ming!”

Seeing this, Sheng Mei was worried and frantic. Jiu’er was hiding in the Magic Cube space! If the Magic Cube were violently shaken, would something happen to Jiu’er?

Lin Ming's heart skipped a beat. But at this time he didn't have any ability to support the Magic Cube anymore. Just before now he had poured all of his strength into it and all he could do was place his faith in it!

Kacha!

The Magic Cube forcefully worked itself loose from Deep Child's claws and smashed into the demon pagoda's gates once more!

The gates violently trembled; cracks began to appear!

Guang dong!

The sound of rattling chains echoed out from behind the gates, as if some terrifying existence was trying to break free from its cage!

"Damnit!"

Deep Child roared, panic-stricken. He grasped out at the Magic Cube again. But at this time, an incredibly cold soul impact shot out from the gates of the demon pagoda like a sharp sword and pierced in between Deep Child's eyebrows. The world potential around him scattered, nearly completely dispersing!

Peng!

The Magic Cube smashed into the gates of the demon pagoda a fourth time. The crackers spread even further!

Soon after, a fifth strike and sixth strike followed!

Lin Ming had poured the totality of his strength into the Magic Cube, and now the gates of that demon pagoda had finally begun to be pushed open!

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei held their breath, staring at the slowly opening gates of the demon pagoda.

As for Deep Child, his complexion was immeasurably ugly.

“I never imagined… that in the final moments of my life, I would be able to see the descendant to the Stone of Eternal Life as well as the extension of my life that I poured by bloodline into…”

A vast and ancient voice flooded out, as if it emerged from the ends of time. The voice spread into the ears, arousing a faint sympathetic soul resonance.

This sound was no longer some simple order of the Laws, but a sound equal to the Great Dao itself.

Dong! Dong!

With heavy footsteps that were accompanied by the sounds of chains dragging along the ground, a disheveled figure with scattered hair emerged from the demon pagoda.

This figure wasn’t tall and his entire body was wrapped in black robes. His black robes were dilapidated, his body was wrapped in iron chains, and he even seemed distressed.

But, beneath his long and loosely scattered hair were a pair of eyes that seemed as if they contained the cosmos.

Lin Ming sucked in a light breath; he had faintly guessed just who this character was.

To cause the Magic Cube to tremble, to be able to summon Sheng Mei’s innermost soul, as well as someone that would be sealed into the 33 level demon pagoda, Lin Ming could only think of one person…

That was the former master of the Magic Cube, the one with a significant relationship to Sheng Mei, the one who created the Holy Scripture – Immortal Sovereign!

And now, it seemed that Immortal Sovereign had truly died!

Lin Ming knew that if the Immortal Sovereign appeared in the Emperor Bone Sea, that meant he had originally died and then was sealed within the demon pagoda – all that remained was his remnant soul.

At this time, Sheng Mei held her breath beside Lin Ming, her eyes gazing unblinkingly at this man before her. As she looked at him, she felt as if her soul was shivering.

It was impossible for her to compose herself right now. She faintly felt as if the riddle to her life was about to open up before her.

Immortal Sovereign looked deeply at Sheng Mei and then quietly sighed, “This is fate...”

He lightly said. It was impossible to tell what the meaning was behind his words.

“Immortal!”

Deep Child’s blood red eyes stared stubbornly at Immortal Sovereign who had suddenly appeared. His expression blazed with dire killing intent.

From panic and horror at the start, to afterwards when the demon pagoda gates opened and Immortal Sovereign appeared, Deep Child instead began to calm down until he became icy cold. “You were indeed a world-shaking existence before, but you have long since died and all that remains of you is a wisp of remnant soul that was sealed in that demon pagoda by demon-trapping ropes for 10 billion years. How much strength could you possibly have left over?

“So tell me, how is the taste of being sealed away?”

Deep Child fiercely grinned as he rapidly analyzed the difference in strength between Immortal Sovereign and himself.

The name of Immortal Sovereign was truly a great deterrence!

Yet what stood in front of Deep Child was nothing but a remnant soul. Moreover, he could also control the world strength of the Demon God’s Tomb. In truth, if he had to compare them, then… Immortal Sovereign wasn’t necessarily any stronger than he was!

The more Deep Child analyzed the situation, the more his confidence rose. “I advise you to be a good little dog and roll back into that demon sealing pagoda. Otherwise, once my master personally arrives he will place your soul in the great soul refining array formation and allow you to experience infinite tortures over thousands and millions of years!"

Hearing Deep Child's threat, Immortal Sovereign thought little of it. He only gently smiled and lightly said, "The vicissitudes of the world truly change in a myriad of ways. To think that there would be a day when a mere dog would bark in front of me like this. Not to mention you, even your master who raised such a dog wouldn't dare say such words to me. If he were actually able to completely control this land he would already have obtained immortal and everlasting life!"

"Just what garbage are you saying!"

Immortal Sovereign's contemptuous words caused Deep Child to fume with anger. He suddenly flourished his trident, world potential crazily gathering towards him!

"Go back into your demon sealing pagoda!"

Deep Child cried out, thrusting his trident at Immortal Sovereign.

But at this time, Immortal Sovereign also moved. He lifted his palms straight up and then pushed them towards Deep Child!

Bang!

The world potential surrounding Deep Child suddenly scattered. Not only that, but the world potential formed a storm that howled towards Immortal Sovereign. The world potential became a hurricane that spun around Immortal Sovereign, all of it controlled by him!

The world potential was instead used by Immortal Sovereign!

“How is this possible!?”

Let alone Deep Child, even Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were completely dumbfounded. The strength of the world should be controlled by Deep Child, but now control had fallen into Immortal Sovereign’s hands!

Was this a mistake of the Soul Emperor’s? How could he possibly have made such an error?

Immortal Sovereign didn’t bother giving an explanation. He simply thrust out a palm!

This palm contained not just the potential of the world but also the Life and Death Law Concepts of Immortal Sovereign!

"Life and Death Extinction!"

A wild and brutal strength rushed out and Deep Child was locked in by the world potential.

For Deep Child who was used to controlling the world potential and sentencing others to life and death, this was the first time that this strength had been turned against him instead. Now, he finally felt the sorrow and despair of facing the strength of an entire world.

Weng!

Immortal Sovereign's strength came shrouding down. Deep Child sent out a horrified scream and his body violently shivered. Horror and panic burst out from his eyes as well as thick disbelief.

His life force began to rapidly fade away. His mortal body withered and his eyes sank into their sockets. His hair began to fade like wilted grass.

With death knocking on his door, Deep Child was frightened beyond compare!

When it came to death, he felt deep dread. He couldn't believe that he would die here.

“Impossible… you are already dead! How can a dead man possibly kill me!?”

“In this world, there are far too many impossible things that occur, but in fact, every impossibility is reasonable and fair, and the so-called ‘impossible’ is merely something that exists in a person’s heart.”

Saying these final words, Immortal Sovereign clenched his hands. Deep Child’s mortal body completely rotted away into a bag of meat and bones that tumbled to the ground.

A wisp of remnant soul rose out from these bones; this was Deep Child’s remnant soul. The Laws in the Emperor Bone Sea were extremely unique. As long as anyone died here, whether they were an abyssal or not, they would leave behind a remnant soul that would be sealed here forever.

Immortal Sovereign saw this remnant soul and reached out a hand, using the potential of the world to completely imprison it.

The remnant soul emitted an ear-piercing scream. And at this time, the Magic Cube flew towards the remnant soul on its own initiative. A black vortex formed and swallowed up Deep Child’s remnant soul.

From start to finish, the fight continued for less than five breaths of time before everything was brought to a conclusion.

Immortal Sovereign had used a single move of Life and Death Extinction to eradicated Deep Child!

At this time, Lin Ming was mind-boggled.

This was the strength of a Beyond Divinity powerhouse?

Although he had died, with only a wisp of remnant soul remaining, and even though he had been sealed away for 10 billion years, he still had such incredibly abnormal levels of strength… the difference between them was as great as the heavens and earth!

As Immortal Sovereign saw Lin Ming's smile, he gently smiled and said, "There is no need for you to be surprised. I am far from being as formidable as you imagine… this dead abyssal was correct, and I indeed don't have much of my strength remaining. All that I am is a wisp of remnant soul. If I were to fight in the outside world, then I could just barely manage to compare to a peak True Divinity…"

MW Chapter 2182

Chapter 2182 – The Life of a Hero

…

…

…

"Peak True Divinity?"

Lin Ming was startled. He slightly felt that Deep Child's strength had already reached the standard of a peak True Divinity, but when Immortal Sovereign killed Deep Child as easily as if he were slaughtering a chicken, he also had the strength of a peak True Divinity…

Immortal Sovereign shook his head. "When I killed this abyssal, the truth was that I drew support from the strength of this world. In terms of controlling the strength of this world, he was inferior to me in this aspect, and thus all his advantages became his disadvantages when facing me. Otherwise killing him would not have been easy."

Immortal Sovereign's words stirred Lin Ming's thoughts. He could feel that a moment ago, Immortal Sovereign had also controlled the potential of the world, and the depths of his control were even greater than Deep Child's.

This was an inconceivable concept to Lin Ming. It was like the Soul Emperor had sharpened a saber, but in the end the weapon had been taken by the enemy.

He was planning to ask Immortal Sovereign how he had accomplished this, but he actually held back, because at this time he noticed that Immortal Sovereign's gaze was completely focused on Sheng Mei.

In front of this man, Sheng Mei held her breath, her mind wildly shaking.

The sense of calling in her heart had become increasingly intense ever since this man appeared, and the flow of blood within her seemed to accelerate with it. This caused Sheng Mei to suspect that she shared a blood connection with this man…

She lightly bit her lips, withstanding the throbbing of her heart as she stared at this black-robed man, the two of them gazing at each other for a long time.

"Are you my… ancestor?"

The quiet question was filled with hesitation, uncertainty, as well as a hidden undercurrent of excitement.

Ever since knowing of the mystery that surrounded her life, this knowledge had been a rock that pressed down against her heart. And today, she finally had a chance to push this stone away, so how could she possibly remain calm at such a time?

“Ancestor?”

The black-robed man muttered to himself and then sighed. Emotions began to emerge on his face. “10 billion years ago, Asura and I were the respective leaders of the demonic path and the righteous path. But, the truth is that being righteous or demonic is simply relatively speaking. Because I perceived the samsara of life and death and chased after eternal life, my road deviated towards the righteous path, but because Asura killed too much, he was more inclined towards the demonic path. This is also where his name ‘Asura’ comes from.

“Originally, there was never any sense of agreement between me and Asura, and this sense of disagreement came from our conflicting philosophies of martial arts. You can even say that our principles ran counter to each other. In the world of martial arts, a conflict in ideas is a contradiction that is incredibly difficult to reconcile. Because of this, our disciples and followers fought against and each, and me and Asura even battled several times. But afterwards… we both pursued a peerless woman together, and this caused our originally ingrained contradictions to develop towards a rivalry of life and death.

“In the end, that woman chose me, and this caused both sorrow and anger to rise within Asura. Yet, because that woman made her choice, he no longer came to fight with me and instead silently left.

“After Asura left, he devoted the entirety of his time, his energy, his life, everything into his cultivation!

“As for me, I dual cultivated life and death with my wife, me focusing on death, and she focusing on life!

“But afterwards, I discovered that I had been cast off by Asura. When I met Asura again after so many years of having been apart, his hair had become as white as snow. Thinking back to it, I fear his strength stood equal to me and my wife joining forces.

“If it weren’t for the invasion of the Dark Abyss, I fear that Asura and I might simply have been ex enemies for the rest of our lives. While being strangers to each other, but also the ones that understood the other the most.

“The appearance of the Dark Abyss showed us that there was a heavens beyond the heavens. I fought with Asura for so many years and never imagined that the universe would undergo a great Shattering in the future, and as for this abyssal race, they had already experienced it for themselves!

“With our 10 billion years of martial arts civilization, we fought the accumulated strength of the abyssal race’s 100 billion years of martial arts inheritances. You can probably already imagine the result. In that war, the ancient races of the 33 Heavens suffered countless casualties. The only good news is that I joined forces with Asura to give the abyssal Demon God a severe wound that would be difficult to recover from, thus giving the ancient races of the 33 Heavens a chance of reprieve.

“However, the price we paid for that was even deeper. Asura was gravely wounded, and I was dying!

“Although the offensive of the abyss slowed down to a crawl, I knew that if this continued onwards the 33 Heavens would eventually be destroyed. And at that time it was nearly impossible for me to recover. Without my support, the battlefield would suffer disaster after disaster!

“And it was at this time that I discovered my wife was pregnant. Because my body was flooded with death and the Laws of Annihilation, it was incredibly difficult for me to ever have children. But, the heavens didn’t abandon me. In the final moments of my life, they granted me this child.

“I knew that my time was coming to an end. So, I poured the essence of my life and my feelings of the samsara of life and death into this child, hoping that she could inherit my everything in the future.

“From this sense, it could be said that she was no longer my child, but a continuation of my life and my wife’s life.

“I watched the birth of my daughter. But at that time, I had less than half a year of life remaining. I did not wish to quietly pass away in the final moments of my life, so I left the ancient races and planned to launch a suicide attack against the supreme headquarters of the abyssal demons. I intended to use the waning moments of my life to explode myself and cause heavy damage to the Demon God once more. But at this time, I never even saw the Demon God at all. I fell into an encirclement of millions and billions of abyssals, and in the end I perished together with a totem level abyssal!

“I thought that I had died, but I never imagined that I still had a wisp of remnant soul remaining. When my consciousness slowly returned, I found that I had been sealed in this demon pagoda… and it was only afterwards that I also learned the great secret of the Demon God’s Tomb.”

Immortal Sovereign slowly described the past. Although his tone was light, the matters he spoke of were earth-shaking.

It was hard for Lin Ming to imagine just what kind of life this was!

For the first half of his life he fought with Asura, the leader of the demonic path, and even won against him the love of the most peerless woman to exist in the world. For the second half of his life, he fought in a great war against the abyssals and heavily wounded the Demon God. Even when he was severely wounded and on the precipice of death, he still chose to end his life by engaging in brutal slaughter with billions of abyssals and even perishing together with a totem level abyssal!

What was a hero? This was it!

At this time, Sheng Mei slowly knelt to the ground in front of Immortal Sovereign. Her heart had already been touched. Before Immortal Sovereign, she gave a deep bow.

The man that stood in front of her was her past life's father.

He didn't only die in battle for the sake of the races of the 33 Heavens, but he even passed on his final life essence and his awareness of the Laws to her.

As she thought of the sorrow of her father's life, Sheng Mei's eyes were already wet with tears.

Immortal Sovereign had placed far too much hope and effort into Sheng Mei's previous life. And, this hope was actually an immense pressure!

The past life Sheng Mei had also experienced a similarly sad destiny.

Sheng Mei vaguely recalled the scenes from the heart demon dreamland.

She recalled that when her past life was but a child, she had begun hellish training. With a sword that was even longer than she was tall, she crazily fought with the abyssals, suffering wave after wave of endless demons! But during these brutal battles, there had always been an old primal god race man standing beside her, and although he seemed callous and indifferent, the truth was that he had been carefully looking after her the entire time…

She recalled being stranded on an isolated island, facing the rough impact of the sea waves and the cold iron chains digging into her flesh and blood, leaving her suffocating in pain. She suffered from despair and loneliness until she gathered enough strength to break free from these chains!

She recalled growing into an adult and arriving on the battlefield where she fought with countless abyssal demons. This slaughter continued without end, and in the final moments, she underwent one final blood sacrifice to become the incarnation of the Eternal God Wall and seal away the Dark Abyss…

From the moment of her birth, the story of her life had already been written.

That was –

To live for battle! To die for battle!

She might have been tragic, might have been glorious, might have been nothing at all. But, she knew that there was nothing glorious or grand at all in the war between the ancient races and the abyssals. This was a war for survival, and if they failed, what awaited them was utter annihilation!

10 billion years ago, countless elites of the primal god race pushed forwards and died without any sense of fear, all in order to obtain a path to survival…

MW Chapter 2183

Chapter 2183 – World Spirit

…

…

…

The meeting between Immortal Sovereign and Sheng Mei greatly touched Lin Ming.

10 billion years ago, the ancient races had been inferior to the abyssals in strength, and yet they managed to survive and continue onwards.

When a race approached extinction, the hot-blooded bravery and faith that erupted from within them could be extremely terrifying, just like on New Ming Planet when Lin Ming saw 100 thousand starving citizens not reaching for food if it meant giving up their pride.

When a people were desperate and unafraid of death, their feelings would infect others much more easily. And once the hearts of trillions and quadrillions of martial artists gathered together, then even if facing an enemy ten times greater than they were, they could still fight!

Thinking of this, Lin Ming let out a heavy breath. For these past years he had felt a great pressure on his shoulders. Yet, he didn’t fight alone; he never had. The great calamity had arrived too quickly. Although he had yet to grow, he didn’t need to face the secret master of the Demon God’s Tomb alone.

He had comrades, friends, seniors, and countless similar martial artists who also fought to survive.

Looking at the expression on Lin Ming’s face and the faith and belief that lit up his eyes, Immortal Sovereign faintly smiled. He said, “Come with me.”

As Immortal Sovereign spoke, he turned to move towards the dark altars.

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei followed behind without question.

Immortal Sovereign stepped onto a dark altar, and Lin Ming and Sheng Mei followed onto it.

As Lin Ming stood atop this massive altar for the first time, he could see motley brown marks scattered over the top, the blood of countless beings that had sprinkled to the ground over the immeasurably long years.

Atop the altar was also that seemingly eternally unchanging demon relief. The exposed demon patterns and demon's body also seemed particularly ferocious.

Immortal Sovereign arrived at the center of the dark altar before stopping.

"Senior, you are...?" Lin Ming asked, a bit perplexed. He had always been vigilant against this altar. He could feel a rich and deep infernal energy from it; countless heaven-gifted elites had died here over the years!

Immortal Sovereign turned around and looked at Lin Ming and Sheng Mei. A kind smile appeared on his face. "The original reason you came to the Demon God's Tomb was for this abyssal ritual, wasn't it? Since you've come this far, of course you shouldn't miss out."

"Senior, what do you mean?"

Lin Ming was surprised. The abyssal ritual was supposedly nothing but a great trap. Could Immortal Sovereign have a way of avoiding the dangers of the trap?

Immortal Sovereign said, “With me managing the abyssal ritual, there is nothing for you to worry about. I will erase that old fellow’s divine sense for you!”

Listening to Immortal Sovereign’s words, Lin Ming was bewildered. Even after having been dead for so many years, Immortal Sovereign still possessed such abilities?

Immortal Sovereign was able to see through Lin Ming’s thoughts. He chuckled. “There is no need for you to be so surprised. The strength of the world that is in the Emperor Bone Sea was left behind by me as well as the countless ancient powerhouses that perished here. The strength of this world is originally our strength, and the reason that old freak is able to control the strength of this world is because he uses an array formation as well as these 363 demon pagodas! During my 10 billion year stay here, I managed to perceive some of the Laws, so it’s normal for me to take control of this strength that belonged to me to begin with…

“In truth, that old dog has never been able to fully control the Emperor Bone Sea. Besides me that died here, there are also elites of the 33 Heavens and ancient demon race demon emperors. None of these people were weak before their deaths, and even the weakest amongst them was at the upper True Divinity level. So, how could these existences ever willingly resign themselves to being imprisoned here and becoming nourishment for the Demon God’s Tomb? If that old freak ever manages to somehow grasp complete control over the Emperor Bone Sea, then perhaps he will truly fulfill his ambitions of becoming immortal and everlasting.”

Listening to Immortal Sovereign’s words, Lin Ming became aware of what was occurring. That’s right, the hidden manipulator of the Demon God’s Tomb had plotted and schemed for the last 100 billion years, committing countless sins to conceal the true goal of the Demon

God’s Tomb. This secret manipulator had concocted all sorts of lies and rumors to imprison hundreds of ancient great emperors in the demon pagodas.

How could these great emperors willingly allow themselves to be used by others?

If these hundreds of peerless characters joined forces, then even if the secret manipulator of the Demon God’s Tomb had all sorts of array formations and magic tools at his disposal, wanting to fully control this Emperor Bone Sea still wouldn’t be easy!

Lin Ming recalled when he first entered the Emperor Bone Sea. He remembered those manic voices and the remnant demon souls wildly hurling themselves against the front gates of the demon pagodas, causing them to violently tremble.

It was clear that every day was agonizingly painful for these remnant souls!

In truth, this also made sense. Due to the functions of the special Laws that existed here, these ancient great emperors remained alive in perpetuity within the demon pagodas, and could even continue onwards for at least dozens upon dozens of billions of years if not longer. Yet, for all this time they were imprisoned in the demon pagodas that were nothing but tiny cages. No matter how firm their will was and no matter how determined they were, it was also difficult for them to withstand this endless loneliness that seemed as if it would never end.

Such long suffering could make one go crazy!

Lin Ming asked, “The ‘old fellow’ that Senior speaks of… is that the creator of the Demon God’s Tomb, the Demon God?”

Lin Ming long since had this guess in his mind. Now, it seems that the Soul Emperor was the secret manipulator behind the Demon God’s Tomb. This was the most reasonable guess and the guess that made the most sense.

But whether or not the Soul Emperor was the Demon God who created the Demon God’s Tomb in the past was still an unknown.

If the Soul Emperor was the Demon God, then that was truly terrifying. If so, then when the Soul Emperor created the Demon God’s Tomb in the past, he already had the ambition of fulfilling his goal of immortal life!

The Demon God’s Tomb had not only helped the ancient demon race survive the great Shattering, but it was also used for the Demon God to realize his ambitions of immortality. If so, then this plot that was laid out for at least 150 billion years was truly a great conspiracy. Just thinking about it left one shuddering.

However, facing this question, Immortal Sovereign actually lightly shook his head. “You ask me this, but even I do not know…

"For all these years, with my understanding of the Demon God's Tomb, what I feel is the most likely truth is that when the Demon God's Tomb was first established, its true and original goal was to withstand the Shattering. But afterwards, the nature of the Demon God's Tomb changed. As for the secret manipulator that made use of the Demon God's Tomb, it could be the Demon God, a descendant of the Demon God, or even some incredibly fierce and ambitious existence that appeared after some time in the Dark Abyss...

"As for the greatest possibility, I believe that the so-called 'secret manipulator' is actually a spiritual wisdom birthed from the infinite years of evolution of the Demon God's Tomb..."

As the Immortal Sovereign said this final possibility, Lin Ming's heart chilled.

A world had evolved its own spiritual wisdom, and this spiritual wisdom wanted to exist forever, to become the ruler of the universe, to have all life forms in existence become its slaves?

This sounded unbelievable, but upon further thinking about it, there was such a possibility!

The Demon God's Tomb was a special world designed to survive the great Shattering of the universe. This was originally something that violated the Heavenly Dao.

So, if everything defied the Heavenly Dao to begin with, what was strange about a world producing its own spiritual wisdom and wanting to enslave all of creation?

If this were true, then the evil bone that he found from the underground mystic realm could be explained. Lin Ming's original assumption was that this evil bone was kept by the Soul Emperor in order to revive his mortal body. If so, this bone was incredibly important and it wouldn't make sense for him to somehow stumble his way into obtaining it.

Now, it seemed that this bone was left behind by some ancient Beyond Divinity existence.

This evil bone was nourished in the Demon God's Tomb array formation, and likely used to stabilize the array formation or to provide energy to the world of the Demon God's Tomb.

Most of the arrangements and rules in the Demon God's Tomb were to nourish the world itself, because the Soul Emperor was likely the spirit of the world!

"No wonder the Soul Emperor wanted to obtain my Eternal Soul… because he is a soul form to begin with, and the Eternal Soul might be able to help him consolidate his soul form until he reaches immortality. Like this, his control of the remnant souls of the ancient emperors in the Demon God's Tomb will become that much greater over time!"

Lin Ming felt his thoughts become increasingly clear. But, understanding these things didn't have much meaning. In fact, even knowing the origin of the Soul Emperor wasn't too significant.

All he needed to know was that… only by defeating this old freak could the races of the 33 Heavens, as well as himself and everyone he knew of, possibly survive!

Lin Ming said, “Senior might not know, but that old freak has already seized the body of the 33 Heavens’ Soul Emperor, and is now the leader of the spiritas. And, the spiritas are one of the largest races in the 33 Heavens. That old fellow has already infiltrated his way into the 33 Heavens and has even trained many minions for his own use. Even that Deep Child that Senior killed just now was one of them. And, junior feels deeply ashamed, but even when facing a mere dog that was raised, I still didn’t have the strength to fight back…”

Immortal Sovereign thought little of it. “The abyssal I killed just now had used some sort of contract to borrow that old fellow’s ability to control the strength of the world here. For you to lose to him in this world is reasonable.

“And, my ability to control the strength of this world is superior to that abyssal’s, so killing him was easy for me.

“This is why you must remember that in the future, never fight that old fellow in the Demon God’s Tomb! Here, he is no different from a divine god. Only by us several hundred ancient remnant souls combining can we contend with him for a brief moment! The only exception is… if you possess the ability to rip apart the world of the Demon God’s Tomb. If so, you can break the foundation of that old fellow’s strength!”

Rip apart the world of the Demon God’s Tomb?

Lin Ming was dazed. This was a world that even the great Shattering was unable to destroy. Wasn’t wanting to rip it apart easier said than done?

MW Chapter 2184

Chapter 2184 – Abyssal Ritual

…

…

…

When Lin Ming stood in the center of the dark altar, he could feel his divine soul connect through the altar and commune with the entire Emperor Bone Sea. He faintly felt this world and the strength that flowed through it.

“Originally, this so-called abyssal ritual is to accept a baptism of the strength of the Emperor Bone Sea’s world… the Soul Emperor wants to completely control the Emperor Bone Sea and fuse together with the Demon God’s Tomb, but he lacks the soul force to achieve this. Thus, he laid out all sorts of plans to accomplish it. He needed powerful minions for his plans, so he divided a portion of the Emperor Bone Sea’s strength to the peak talents of the Dark Abyss, training them into totem level abyssals that he could control himself…”

“If I withstand a baptism of the Emperor Bone Sea’s world but am not controlled by the Soul Emperor, then that is the same as slicing off a piece of meat from the Soul Emperor’s body…”

After understanding this, Lin Ming was somewhat worried. These actions would be the same as touching the Soul Emperor’s reverse scale; could it lead to disastrous consequences?

“Senior, could the Soul Emperor personally come to the Demon God’s Tomb in his anger?”

If the Soul Emperor arrived then the consequences would be inconceivable.

Immortal Sovereign said, “When I killed Deep Child, I called upon the remnant souls here to use the strength of the world to block out the Emperor Bone Sea. That old fellow is currently in total seclusion, so whether it is any changes that occur here or Deep Child’s death, it won’t be easy for him to realize it.”

As Immortal Sovereign spoke, he pointed to the Magic Cube in Lin Ming’s hands. “Deep Child’s remnant soul is already inside.”

Lin Ming then remembered that when Immortal Sovereign killed Deep Child, Deep Child’s soul had been left behind and then taken in and suppressed by the Magic Cube.

The Laws in the Emperor Bone Sea were extremely special. When a martial artist died their soul wouldn't scatter away. In fact, this could be said to be living in a state between life and death.

And a method to know if someone was living or dead was to keep a wisp of their life soul as a signaling mark. However, if Deep Child's soul didn't scatter then the wisp of their life soul wouldn't vanish, and thus it would be difficult to find out about his death.

If the Soul Emperor was paying attention to the situation then he naturally would have methods to discover this. But Lin Ming was aware that the Soul Emperor was currently in seclusion. Moreover, this was an extremely critical part of his seclusion. In all likelihood, the Soul Emperor was using his Eternal Soul as some sort of catalyst to refine some secret soul skill, finally allowing him to completely control the Emperor Bone Sea. For the Soul Emperor, this was a matter of the utmost importance because it concerned realizing his ambitions of everlasting immortality.

If he wanted to do all this without distraction then it would be difficult to focus on things happening in the outside world.

As Lin Ming was thinking, Immortal Sovereign said to Sheng Mei, "You also stand."

"Mm." Sheng Mei nodded and stood beside Lin Ming. At this time, the strength of the world began to surge about them. The entire Emperor Bone Sea seemed to animate around Lin Ming and Sheng Mei. Across the shores of the Yellow Springs River, over 100 demon pagodas began to shiver.

"Who? Who dares to disturb my rest?"

Suddenly, an ancient spiritual sense lashed out like a thunderclap in Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's ears.

"Kill! Kill! Kill! Fight! Fight! Fight!"

Another spiritual sense reverberated outwards.

"Flesh and blood! Give me flesh and blood!"

A frenzied voice cried out in Lin Ming's ears. This was the soul of a wild beast, one filled with demented anger and fierce slaughtering intent.

"I want to die! Who can kill me!?"

"Hehe, there is actually a woman, a fresh and beautiful woman! I haven't tasted a woman for tens of billions of years! Give me! Give me!"

Bang! Bang! Bang!

A demon crazily smashed into the gates of a demon pagoda. From a slit in the gates, a fierce but withered claw stretched out.

Chaotic spiritual senses gushed out for a time, filled with endless hope and maddening bestial desires as they rushed towards Lin Ming and Sheng Mei like a tide.

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei weren't prepared for this to occur at all, so they were slightly startled. However, they immediately revolved their spiritual seas and soul force erupted to block out these spiritual senses. Otherwise, if these spiritual senses were to break into their spiritual seas, there would be a chance they would be assimilated by these beast-like spiritual senses and lose their minds.

"All of you shut up!"

With a loud shout, Immortal Sovereign's words cracked like lighting. This voice formed a shockwave that radiated outwards.

Bang!

The over 100 demon pagodas seemed to shake simultaneously. The originally discordant cackle of sounds vanished and the remnant souls calmed down.

“Immortal!”

“Immortal!”

“Immortal!”

Several demons diabolically shouted. Their voices echoed through the Emperor Bone Sea, broad and cold.

“You actually managed to leave the demon pagoda?”

“Hehe, how useless! You still cannot escape the Law bindings of the Emperor Bone Sea!”

“Here, we cannot beg for life or beg for death. You will never leave!”

Hearing these curse-like words, Immortal Sovereign’s complexion remained as usual. He only lifted his palms and pushed them outwards.

Bang!

The strength of the world formed a massive wave that swept towards the 100 plus demon pagodas.

The demon pagodas wildly shook, as if a storm appeared in the Emperor Bone Sea.

The remnant souls of the demons were sealed in the demon pagodas and couldn’t be harmed by such actions. But, the vast strength that erupted from Immortal’s body was enough to frighten and shock many demons.

“Contribute your world strength!”

Immortal’s voice reverberated in the air along with the storm, his expression one that brooked no refusal.

“Why!?” Demons clamored together.

“Why should I listen to you?”

“Hehe, give me that woman and I will consider it.”

The abyssal ritual was a powerful ceremony that would give birth to a totem level abyssal. But, totem level abyssals were existences at the limit of True Divinity, and they were much stronger than the current Immortal Sovereign and his remaining remnant soul.

With Immortal Sovereign's strength it was impossible for him to mobilize the tremendous amount of energy required to baptize Sheng Mei and Lin Ming. Thus, he had to draw support from the other remnant demon souls in the Emperor Bone Sea.

"On the basis of these two people standing here! Don't you wish you could tear the controller of the abyss to shreds, drink his blood and eat his flesh? You are all nothing but pigs and dogs reared here in cages, waiting for him to butcher you with a knife. When do you think your obsessions will ever come true?"

Immortal Sovereign spoke slowly, but his words carried a powerful vibration that wildly surged outwards.

"Hahahahahaha! A remnant demon soul suddenly raucously laughed. "What nonsense are you spouting? Are you thinking that this man and woman that are no different from little kittens are going to be able to defeat that old freak!?"

"Did I hear wrong? You want us to contribute our world strength to undergo a baptism for these two little things?"

“Hahahaha! They are Empyreans! Not even True Divinities! You have been sealed away for 10 billion years and now you’ve gone crazy!”

Many demons wildly laughed. They were originally wild and rebellious individuals and after being sealed away for tens of billions of years, their hearts were filled with hostility.

Moreover, they didn’t belong to the same race that Immortal came from. Even if they had a common enemy in the Soul Emperor, wanting them to obey without question was easier said than done.

Immortal slightly frowned. He looked at Lin Ming and asked, “Are you confident you can pass the abyssal ritual?”

Immortal had witnessed the battle between Lin Ming and Deep Child. When Deep Child was supported by the strength of the world, he possessed strength above that of an upper True Divinity. Yet, Lin Ming with his peak upper Empyrean cultivation was able to battle Deep Child for dozens of breaths of time without dying. This level of strength had left Immortal Sovereign shocked.

As for Sheng Mei, although she was a little worse than Lin Ming, she was still the reincarnation of his daughter. Her strength and talent were beyond a shadow of a doubt.

Thus, Immortal Sovereign was confident in allowing them to withstand the trial of the abyssal ritual and challenge the nearly invincible Soul Emperor!

“If it is only a test of potential, then there is no problem at all!”

Lin Ming calmly stated. In truth, potential was equivalent to talent. The most visible and intuitive way to judge this was to measure a person’s overall combat strength in comparison to their age.

In this aspect, no one could surpass Lin Ming.

“And if it is at an even higher, more difficult level?” A flash of light burst out from Immortal Sovereign’s eyes.

Lin Ming was startled, but he still clenched his teeth and said, “I can give it a try!”

If the abyssal ritual rose by yet another degree of difficulty, it was hard to imagine what it would be like. But, if he wanted to defeat the Soul Emperor then he needed to push himself to the edge and go beyond his limits!

“Good!”

A light of appreciation flashed in Immortal Sovereign’s eyes. He took a deep breath and turned around, facing the many crazed demons. He said, “If any of you doubt me, then you can pour your strongest strength here and see if they can withstand it!”

Immortal Sovereign’s words left many demons shocked. Within the Emperor Bone Sea, everything suddenly quieted down.

MW Chapter 2185

Chapter 2185 – To the Heart's Content

…

…

…

"You want us to pour our strongest strength into the bodies of these two Empyrean juniors?"

"Hehe, Immortal, do you think you're dreaming? If we pour the strength of our hundred some soul forms into this boy and girl, it will cause their bodies to explode!"

"Hahaha! Immortal, you might have some grudge with these two babies but there isn't a need to use such cruel methods to torture them!"

After several breaths of quiet, many demons began to howl in laughter. The abyssal ritual was an excruciatingly painful process, and the greater the intensity of energy, the greater the pain that followed it.

If one couldn't withstand the impact of energy then their body would blow up. This method of death was at least a hundred times more painful than death by being torn apart.

Moreover, after dying their soul would also be sealed here. However, they wouldn't be sealed in the demon pagodas but beneath a great array formation beneath the Emperor Bone Sea. In that crowded and dark array formation, being caged up in that sort of environment would cause one to go even crazier than if they were locked up in a demon pagoda!

Immortal Sovereign remained unmoved. He coldly sneered and said, "You are already dead, so what is the point of keeping your energies? If you still have a slim hope of being able to revive someday, then I advise you to stop dreaming! However, I believe that even if you pour the greatest amount of world strength that you have in your body, you still won't be able to fill these two juniors up!"

"Heh, there is no need for you to stir us up, Immortal. If you want to reduce these two juniors to ashes then let me help you!"

A demon fiendishly laughed. But just as this demon was about to act, a series of even more shrill laughs echoed out. "Jejejeje! Yuan Chi, pass this matter over to us brothers instead!"

As this voice finished speaking, it focused on Immortal and said, "Aren't you confident in these two little babies? Good, then us brothers will act on that boy. We will pour in our greatest energies, and if we kill him then you will toss that young beauty over there to us for us to enjoy. How about it?"

Hearing these insolent and brazen voices, Lin Ming's complexion darkened. He clearly remembered who these voices belonged to; they were from the hungry ghosts who had drooled over Sheng Mei.

After staying in the Demon God's Tomb for so long, some remnant souls would start to understand each other, and it wasn't surprising for some minds that shared mutually disgusting interests to be on close terms with each other.

Immortal remained expressionless. He clenched his fists and highly compressed world strength began crackling in his palms!

"What? Do you want to attack us? We are locked in these demon pagodas, so there is nothing you can do to us!"

These demons didn't fear Immortal Sovereign. Indeed, Immortal Sovereign wasn't able to do anything to them. They had already died and could no longer die again. Moreover, these demon pagodas would protect their divine souls.

And if in fact they could die, they would be overjoyed to die forever. They had been locked in these demon pagodas for endless years and had gone crazy with loneliness and despair. Their futures were to be nothing but beasts reared in cages, waiting for the day that the Soul Emperor completely refined this world, whereupon they would be slaughtered no differently than beasts.

But at this time, Lin Ming coldly said, “Enough nonsense. I want to see just what your strongest strength is. If you can’t do anything to me, how about you admit that you are nothing but base dogs 10,000 times over?”

Although these ancient demon emperors had died and nothing could be done to them, most of them were still incredibly arrogant and prideful. If they actually had to admit that they were nothing but dogs 10,000 times over, then they wouldn’t have the face to continue existing in this Emperor Bone Sea.

“You are seeking death!”

Hearing Lin Ming’s insults, the demons that spoke before were incensed.

“Let us begin! Blow this boy’s body up!”

“Kill him!”

This group of demons had arrived in the Demon God’s Tomb at around the same time period. There were six of them together and six great demons struck out together. Six demon pagodas began to shake and tremble!

Of these six demon pagodas, the shortest was 15 levels and one of them was 18 levels. On the opposite shores of the Yellow Springs River, this was considered the highest demon pagoda.

But this wasn't the end. When these six demon moved, they also galvanized nine surroundings pagodas that were originally quiet, and all of these pagodas began to gush out with a wild world strength.

Bang!

Thick black beams of light shot into the heavens. Like 15 giant pythons of varying sizes, they all came hurtling towards Lin Ming!

Lin Ming sent out a ray of soul force and sent Sheng Mei away. Then, he looked up, his eyes blazing as he stared at these 15 pythons.

"Come on!"

In this moment, Lin Ming's mind seethed with killing intent. If he wanted to defeat the Soul Emperor, then everything would begin from here!

Bang!

15 pythons violently rushed onto the altar. A terrifying explosion followed!

Lin Ming felt as if a massive bucket of lava was poured across his body. The 36,000 pores of his body began to emit an incomparably hot stream of heat, his entire body releasing steaming hot air!

This tyrannical and brutal energy rampaged through his meridians. It impacted into his inner world, breaking in and exploding, compressing, exploding, and then compressing again!

Lin Ming could feel that his foundation was being struck by a heavy hammer, maliciously hardened and tempered again and again!

If he had to describe this feeling with a single word, then it would be…

Amazing!

“Haha, how wonderful!”

Lin Ming emitted a loud cry to his heart’s content. His shout pierced into the skies, reverberating through the entire Emperor Bone Sea.

The impact of energy upon his body was painful, but sometimes, pain wouldn't cause misery, instead it would sometimes cause joy and excitement.

Now, as these demons poured their energies into Lin Ming's body, the pain it brought just happened to reach this degree. Lin Ming easily withstood it, and even felt a sense of comfort course through his body.

"What!?"

"This brat!"

Seeing Lin Ming withstand their energies and not only not explode to death, but also not suffering any distress or excruciating pain and instead yell out in joy, this was simply a slap to the faces of these demons.

"You are courting death!"

"Make him suffer! Make him die!"

Six ancient demons went mad with rage. They emitted violent roars of rage as their fierce strength rushed into Lin Ming's body.

Lin Ming clenched his fists together and emitted a long howl.

“Awesome!

“Come again! Make the energy even stronger!

“Did you not eat enough before this? Keep on coming!”

Lin Ming yelled out. And at this time, the six ancient demons were flushed with anger. They were rapidly using up their soul force and in a short several breaths of time they had used up over half of the world strength they had gathered.

Seeing these six great demons try their best and also seeing Lin Ming relax as if he were taking a hot bath, many ancient demons were shocked.

These six perverted demons had lustful and lascivious natures, but their strength was beyond reproach. Moreover, they even controlled a few of the silent demon pagodas. These six demons had joined forces and launched a joint attack with everything they had, yet they weren’t even able to do anything to a little peak Empyrean junior?

“Interesting, how interesting…”

An ancient voice resounded from another demon pagoda. This demon pagoda was also 18 levels, but every level of this pagoda was taller than the levels of the other pagodas. Amongst the rows of demon pagodas, this one felt as if it stood out, like a crane amongst chickens.

“This little fellow is truly unbelievable. Perhaps he really might be able to give a bit of trouble to that old freak.”

Another old voice sounded out.

“What use is there in being just troublesome? It is only good if he can at least cut off a piece of meat from that old freak’s body. And this is… if he had enough time to grow!”

“Hehe, grow? Then let me give him a helping hand!”

Suddenly, on the other shores of the Yellow Springs River, another demon pagoda emitted a beam of light. This beam of light was crimson, like a giant blood dragon that claws its way towards Lin Ming!

Bang!

An explosion swept across the dark altar. Lin Ming's hair scattered outwards, all of his joints emitting explosive crackling sounds.

"You came just in time!"

Lin Ming grit his teeth and veins stuck out on his muscles like blue worms.

Just the strength of this crimson beam alone was around a third of the sum total of those six demons' energies gathered together!

And besides feeling pain surge through his body, Lin Ming still forcefully withstood it without any sense of collapse.

Seeing this scene, the six previously clamoring demons felt as if they had been slapped silly. They all wished to find a hole to crawl into. Even with the six of them together along with a demon emperor that was stronger than any one of them, they still weren't able to do anything to Lin Ming, let alone cause his body to explode.

"I can't believe it..."

These six demons still grit their teeth and continued. But at this time, more demons leapt into the fray.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

Four more beams of divine light shot into the skies!

“How interesting! Then let us join in and give this brat some more material!”

MW *Chapter* 2186

Chapter 2186 – Lossless Body

…

…

…

As these four demon pagodas began to light up, beams of divine light poured down like a waterfall and the world strength in the surroundings crazily rose in a short period of time!

“Ao!”

“Ao!”

Wild and fierce roars sounded out. This world strength contained the will and spiritual sense of their masters.

Some of these wills were evil, some brutal and tyrannical, some filled with overwhelming hatred and killing intent!

After being sealed in the Emperor Bone Sea for dozens of billions of years, many of the demons here had turned mad and demented, wishing to destroy everything in existence!

The world strength grew increasingly manic. Even Immortal Sovereign had an earnest expression at this time.

This was 20 demons acting out together, many of them having gone mad. They poured out their energy without reserve so that Lin Ming would have to withstand it alone!

Weng!

20 beams of divine light gathered together, as thick as a mountain. Such a terrifying world strength caused the void in the Emperor Bone Sea to shake, as if it were being violently rammed by something.

The Emperor Bone Sea was an invincible cage; any powerful existence here would be suppressed by the potential of the world. But, this formidable world strength actually caused the Emperor Bone Sea to fiercely shake, because this energy in itself was fused into the potential of this world!

Before the energy arrived, Lin Ming could already feel the terrifying impact it would bring upon his body. After such a long time, Lin Ming had already gained the intuition of a wild beast. In that instant, his blood began to swirl inside his body like waves and he stirred up all the strength within him to greet this wave of energy.

Bang!

Lin Ming's body shook. The 20 supernatural mights were like 20 mountains pushing down upon him. Waves of energy dazzled like divine splendor, pouring into his body like linked chains of magma.

Just how incredible were these divine powers? Each wave had been personally condensed by supreme ancient demon emperors, and Lin Ming was finally beginning to feel the immense pressure.

In that moment his body rapidly inflated, as if he would explode.

“This boy, can he really withstand it!?”

From all around, a hundred some spiritual senses focused on Lin Ming's body, waiting to see his performance.

Even those six demons that argued with Lin Ming couldn't tell where Lin Ming's limits were after seeing his current form. They crazily poured out their world strength in order to save some face.

But at this time, as Lin Ming was covered in the vast waves of world strength, another astonishing change occurred. The 36,000 pores on his body began to shine with the brilliance of life essence. This brilliance shot out, forming 36,000 tiny vortexes that endlessly sucked in this incoming strength.

Within Lin Ming's body, the Eight Gates and seven Dao Palaces began to open up one after another. Waves of life potential erupted from his body and his acupoints glowed with a bright luster like a rising sun, as if a True Dragon were awakening from within him.

Every wisp of True Dragon energy was evolved from Lin Ming's blood. They helped Lin Ming's mortal body to crazily swallow up the world strength.

As world strength gathered onto Lin Ming without end, his originally inflated balloon-like body began to return to normal.

Blue veins twisted on Lin Ming's face and blood vessels burst open. His complexion was red like heated iron as he soaked in the immense energy. It was clear that this was difficult for him.

"Child, you go over too!"

Immortal Sovereign said to Sheng Mei.

The Emperor Bone Sea's world strength was the land where energy throughout the entirety of the Demon God's Tomb gathered; it was impossible for Lin Ming to absorb it all. And, the abyssal ritual wasn't a one or two day process; it could be maintained for dozens or even hundreds of years.

To withstand the cleansing of world strength for such a long time and the incalculable pain that accompanied it, this caused many peerless geniuses to falter and perish in the process.

Sheng Mei nodded. She slowly arrived at Lin Ming's side and withstood that massive wave of energy.

At this time, the overwhelming amount of energy was withstood by Lin Ming. What Sheng Mei had to withstand was only a small portion of it.

As energy rushed into Sheng Mei's body, the nine revolution red lotus mark between her eyebrows began to emit a blood red light.

Sheng Mei held onto Lin Ming's hands. The two of them blended together their strength and the power of their bloodlines.

The two of them were like yin and yang, supplementing each other. Energy flowed between their hands, forming a perfectly harmonized cycle.

Lin Ming's complexion grew increasingly calm. But at the same time, the world strength within his body became increasingly rich. This world strength was like countless seeds of life, flooding through his body, infecting every drop of blood, every inch of skin, every bit of bone, taking root within him and transforming him, rebirthing him.

Lin Ming had already tempered his mortal body to the extreme. Wanting to advance any further was something filled with countless difficulties. But now, after being soaked beneath this world strength, his mortal body began to experience another breakthrough!

After years upon years of fights, in truth, Lin Ming's mortal body had actually gathered injuries.

Lin Ming's body possessed incredibly recovery abilities. No matter how severely wounded he was, he could still regenerate himself.

But some injuries were extremely special; they were wounds of the Great Dao.

When Lin Ming forcefully broke through a boundary, tempered his body, or fought with peerless powerhouses, he had to resist the Great Dao. These attacks could strike at his divine soul and mark his flesh and blood, even connecting with his marrow. Even if he could recover from these injuries, the truth was that they would leave behind small scars.

These injuries were extremely faint yet also incredibly profound. They were wounds that were close to the Laws, so they were hard to discover and also hard to heal from.

The truth was that on ordinary days, these scars wouldn't hinder Lin Ming's cultivation or fighting style.

But with Lin Ming having reached this degree, his body had already been tempered to the limit. If he wished to make another breakthrough, it would be incredibly difficult. If he could perfect his own body to form a lossless body, then this would allow Lin Ming to take another step forwards on his road of martial arts.

And on this day, as he was being flooded with this world strength, the tiny scars left in Lin Ming's body by the Great Dao began to gradually disappear.

Not just that, but small silver lotuses were left behind where these small scars had been. These lotuses burst out with divine natural radiance, and shrouded in the chaos of strength around them, they emerged with ancient runes.

These ancient runes grew all throughout Lin Ming's body. Faintly, Lin Ming began to become aware of more things. These were runes of the Life Laws, and they blended together with Lin Ming's previous understandings of the Great Dao of Life.

Blessings and woes often followed each other. These scars were eliminated by the world strength of the Emperor Bone Sea, and as for Lin Ming, after his mortal body withstood these scars for such a long time, he instinctively and subconsciously became aware of the true meaning of vigorously potent life.

These sorts of changes caused the last two sealed Dao Palaces in Lin Ming's body to loosen a little.

The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace; seven light and two dark. The human body's nine Dao Palaces were divided into the seven bright palaces and the two hidden palaces. In truth, leaping from the bright palaces to dark palaces was almost equivalent to breaking through a large realm.

This was an incredibly difficult breakthrough. But as Lin Ming's mortal body became increasingly difficult, he had already turned in this direction and had taken his first solid step forwards!

Lin Ming's eyes flashed open. His pupils glittered with blinding light, as if great suns existed within them.

The world strength that was instilled in Lin Ming might not be completely absorbed by him, but as the waves of world strength stabilized they formed droplets that gathered around him. These droplets were attracted to his body, forming an endless misty fog around him.

Seeing this occur, Immortal Sovereign's lights lit up with a tinge of appreciation and wonder.

Lin Ming's transformation had already begun. As for Sheng Mei who was beside him, her transformation wasn't too far away.

The two of them had become one, yin and yang reinforcing each other. They both possessed an incomparable degree of potential. It was hard to imagine just what step they would arrive at after withstanding the baptism of the Emperor Bone Sea's world strength.

Seeing Lin Ming not only resist the world strength of 20 some demon emperors and even have a sense of breakthrough beneath the soaking of world strength, this was enough to cause the other demons standing on the sidelines to pay attention to him.

Without a doubt, Lin Ming had already proven himself.

Perhaps what Immortal said was true. If these two little children had enough time to grow, then they really might be able to resist the Soul Emperor!

When it came to that old fellow who had enslaved them all, these demons hated him to the depths of their marrow. To kill him so that their remnant souls could be freed was an obsession that had taken root deep in their minds.

Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!

At this time, the other demons also moved.

The originally crazy and fierce demons here that had hearts filled with killing intent had a moment of rare earnestness. They poured in all of their energy. They no longer tried to have Lin Ming blow up and die, but sincerely offered their world strength so that Lin Ming and Sheng Mei could soak in it and complete their breakthrough!

MW Chapter 2187

Chapter 2187 – The Limit of Pain

…

…

…

Over a hundred giant beams of world strength shrouded in the aura of demons came crashing down, each one dazzling, their brilliance spreading out for tens of thousands of miles.

It was like a river of stars came falling down from the skies, their massive momentum slamming into the earth, causing the world to shake.

The Emperor Bone Sea began to boil over as monstrous demonic auras filled the air. The mysterious rules and the countless remnant traces of ancient demons were quickened.

Steaming black energy filled the air, seemingly filled with the forms of ancient demons. They formed a storm that raged out in all directions.

Bang!

Lin Ming bore all of this immense world strength. His body that glistened like jade was suddenly curved by the impact into a tightened bow. His skin, his skeleton, everything emitted creaking sounds that blasted out like the roars of dragons and cries of phoenixes.

Beneath this tremendous pressure, he remained unyielding. His tendons twisted over the surface of his body like snakes. He raised his arm and hands up and roared into the heavens.

At the same time, Sheng Mei was also joined together with him. Her strength blended together with Lin Ming's and together they withstood this baptism of world strength!

Ka ka ka!

Lin Ming's muscles and blood vessels began to rapidly crack. An indescribable pain shot into his spiritual sea.

This sort of feeling was as if his mortal body had been tossed beneath a stone mill, forcefully grinded down by it!

However, Lin Ming's consciousness remained clear and sober the entire time.

Sheng Mei held tightly onto Lin Ming's hand, blood flowing down from her lips. She withstood less energy than Lin Ming but she was also weaker than Lin Ming. In terms of the pain she withstood, it was no less than Lin Ming.

And at this time, not too far away, Immortal Sovereign was watching all of this occur with a calm expression. A treasure sword had to be tempered and sharpened and the fragrance of plum blossoms only emerged after the bitter cold. Compared to the upcoming apocalypse of existence, what Lin Ming and Sheng Mei withstood was nothing.

Weng –

Weng –

Weng –

Between Lin Ming and Sheng Mei, the blending of energy became increasingly intense.

This strength was several times greater than an ordinary occurrence of the abyssal ritual.

Although Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were withstanding it together and dividing the pressure between the two of them, this still far outstripped an ordinary abyssal ritual.

In particular, Lin Ming withstood the majority of the energy. He clenched his teeth and persisted.

There were too many things he carried on his shoulders. He had experienced countless tribulations, countless perilous life and death situations, and had even experienced the boundless ups and downs of life. Pushing his way through all of that he arrived here today, shouldering the destiny and hopes of innumerable people. Because of that, he absolutely could not allow himself to fail here!

Beneath the galvanization of the world strength, Lin Ming's body instinctively evolved strands of the Great Dao Laws that he excelled in the most to compete with the world strength, making it even better to swallow and refine them.

As these Laws appeared, the raging world strength seemed to solidify, the essence condensing into little droplets that slowly revolved around Lin Ming.

The strength of the world slowly steadied, forming a sealed space where they circulated within.

As the 100 demons watching from the side saw this, their eyes began to shine.

At this time no one was mad anymore. In fact, there was even a hint of heated fanaticism in their hearts!

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were truly able to withstand the baptism of the Emperor Bone Sea's world potential. Perhaps they could truly rise from here and help them exact vengeance upon their enemy!

"Everyone, let us transfer the world strength of the Emperor Bone Sea together and stabilize that force field."

"There might be feuds between us and we may be at odds with each other, but let us work together today and give this our everything!"

Of the 100 some demons, no one dared to slack off. Even the six demons who clashed with Lin Ming had slowly put away their embarrassment and rage towards him. First, they didn't want to do anything that would offend the other demons here, and secondly they truly, truly wished to break from these cages and take revenge against the Soul Emperor to obtain true freedom, true relief from this hell.

Beneath the joint efforts of all the demons, they began to gather all the world strength they could summon to the area around Lin Ming and Sheng Mei.

An invisible force field completely covered Lin Ming and Sheng Mei. This force field was like a giant cocoon that isolated the Laws and formed a sealed space, allowing Lin Ming and Sheng Mei to live in an independent world. And this independent world contained an incredibly rich world strength!

The abyssal ritual was an extremely long process but it only took the 100 some demons several hours to contribute their world strength. Afterwards, the world strength would seal itself into a force field and the trial challengers would soak within it to slowly refine it.

After the force field was completely sealed up, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei felt the excruciating pain rise by several degrees.

This world strength continually crushed and pulverized their mortal bodies, soul, and even inner worlds. Burning hot energy raced through their pores, acupoints, breaking into their meridians and blood vessels as it recklessly galloped about.

If the pain before was like being thrown beneath a grinding pan, then now, while their bodies were being grinded away, they were also being boiled in scalding oil!

Beneath the tremendous impact of energy, their flesh and blood started to tear open and flip over!

However, within this force field, special Laws existed in the rich world strength that increased the rate at which Lin Ming and Sheng Mei’s cracked flesh regenerated.

Their flesh cracked open and regenerated again and again. The two of them had incredibly powerful mortal body foundations, but even so, this sort of endless cracking and regeneration consumed a mind-boggling amount of energy!

They did not take pills nor did they drink spiritual liquids. The energy they needed to consume would have to be derived from the surrounding world strength.

In this repeated tempering, their bodies absorbed the surrounding world strength without end. By letting their bodies crack open and regenerate again, they used this method to consume this strength!

And, this process would continue for years!

Pain. If pain only lasted for a while, then many people could grit their teeth and bear it. But to withstand such pain for dozens of years or even hundreds of years, it was enough to make one go crazy!

When trial challengers were placed in the abyssal ritual, this was the test of their will, the test of withstanding the massive level of pain!

If their potential was lacking, then their bodies would explode from being unable to withstand the great volume of energy.

If their willpower was lacking, then they would go crazy from the pain!

If their souls weren't strong enough, then the continuous impact of pain would turn their souls to ashes.

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei existed at the peak when it came to these three aspects. Even so, to withstand such agonizing pain for such a long time was still a difficult challenge for them.

"You must both remember a single word – endure!"

Immortal Sovereign's words pierced through the boundaries of the force field and entered into Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's ears.

"Gather your will and never lose your consciousness. Imagine yourself as the deep and heavy earth. No matter what pain you experience, you must remain motionless! Defend your minds at all costs. If your willpower ever fails then the world strength that is in your body will no longer be controlled by you. Once that happens, not only will your body not regenerate but you will be torn to shreds. If that happens you will be deader than dead. You will become a lonely soul here that is suppressed in the great array formation beneath us, becoming nourishment for the Demon God's Tomb!

"What you need is to forget this pain and control your nerves, even treating this pain as pleasure. Only like this can you last for a hundred years or even hundreds of years!"

Endure!

Forget the pain. That was easy to say, but how difficult was it to do!?

However, no matter how difficult it was, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei would still give it a try. With the massive levels of soul force they possessed they would continually push at their boundaries and try to transform themselves.

“Control my nerves, drive out the pain, and even treat this pain as pleasure!”

These thoughts raced through Lin Ming’s mind.

He tried his best to forget this pain. But, with the feeling of being drowned in boiling oil and crushed beneath a grinding pan coursing through his body, how could it be so easy to forget?

Slowly, Lin Ming endured such pain for a month. But no matter how powerful his divine soul was, it would still slowly weaken.

At this time Lin Ming’s face was as pale as paper. Although he had plenty of energy, he had to sit motionlessly and be tormented by agonizing pain, so how could he have a happy expression?

“Pain comes from the body, but it actually reflects in the soul and mind... if I can control my soul, then no matter how painful it is it cannot be this fierce...”

As Lin Ming was pushed to the limits of what he could bear, this thought flashed in his mind.

“My soul, because it has been solidified by the Magic Cube and after having been cultivated through seven reincarnations, has already re-entered the realm of the Eternal Soul. If I had to describe it in words, it should be unchangeable and immutable.

“To have an unchangeable and immutable soul, I should be as steady as the great earth. How could I not be able to withstand such trivial pain of the flesh?”

Lin Ming roared out in his heart. In this moment, his consciousness became crystal clear and he felt the pain in his body reduce by a great deal.

His mortal body was still being torn apart and energy was still burning through his meridians, but all of that lessened with this new comprehension.

Lin Ming could feel that the tearing pain of his mortal body caused a faint excitement to stir in his soul. And the feeling of his meridians being burned was similar to soaking in a hot spring bath. Although it still hurt, it was no longer unbearable like before.

He felt as if he truly turned into the deep and steady earth, capable of withstanding the baptism of world strength without a single movement.

This sort of comprehension had only just begun. But as his comprehensions deepened, Lin Ming's abyssal ritual would become increasingly smooth until he absorbed all the world strength he could!

MW Chapter 2188

Chapter 2188 – The Critical Point of True Divinity

…

…

…

Years passed silently. Lin Ming and Sheng Mei quietly withstood the long abyssal ritual.

Ever since Lin Ming comprehended the mysteries of the Eternal Soul, the impact of pain against his soul grew increasingly weak as he slowly adapted to it. He even began to do as Immortal Sovereign said and took this pain as pleasure.

And beside Lin Ming, Sheng Mei also found her own methods to adapt to this pain. While she didn't have Lin Ming's Eternal Soul, she used her talent to forcefully take control of her nerves.

At the start Sheng Mei had to rely on revolving the Holy Scripture Laws, using the life strength of endless growing to neutralize the agonizing impacts.

But several years later, Sheng Mei was already able to erase the pain to her soul.

Ten years later, Sheng Mei sat cross-legged within the small independent world, her expression like that of a sleeping baby. It was hard to imagine just what sort of energy impact she was actually withstanding at this moment.

As for Lin Ming, he was like a never-changing statue, not even uttering a single word.

From the beginning and even now, Immortal Sovereign stood by the side, silently waiting.

He floated high in the air, his divine sense constantly examining the situation within the independent world.

As for the 100 some demon emperors, every 10 years they would pour their world strength into the force field that Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were in, in order to ensure that the world strength within it was always at a highly saturated state!

10 years, 20 years, 30 years…

100 years, 200 years, 300 years…

In this independent world, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei remained unmoving for several hundred years.

They only held hands and quietly withstood all of this. Beneath the repeated impact of energy, their foundation became increasingly solid.

From the outside, nothing seemed to have changed. The only thing that changed was the time period from when those ancient demon emperors would pour their world strength into the independent world.

At the start it was every 10 years, but afterwards, it was once every five years.

After that, it was once every three years.

And 900 years later they would pour their world strength into the force field every single year.

After 900 years of bitter cultivation, the energy within Lin Ming and Sheng Mei had gathered to an extreme; they had already reached their limits.

In fact, Sheng Mei's cultivation was originally higher and over 500 years ago she had already reached the critical point for breaking into True Divinity. However, in order to step forwards with Lin Ming and form a harmonious yin yang energy cycle, she continually suppressed her cultivation to help Lin Ming cultivate.

Because of this, 900 years later, their cultivations had become increasingly close.

This long abyssal ritual even left the many ancient demon emperors of the Demon God's Tomb shocked. Before this, there had been abyssal demons who passed the test of the abyssal ritual and slowly grew into totem level abyssals in the future.

But the abyssal ritual they withstood was only several hundred years in total, while Lin Ming and Sheng Mei withstood one that was approaching a thousand years. This was truly inconceivable!

Like this, time continued to the 1000th year. The many ancient demon emperors had started to pour their word strength into the independent world every 10 months.

1080 years later, on one day, Lin Ming's eyes suddenly flashed open. At this moment his skin started to explode like stars and pieces of his jade-like flesh fell off, blowing outwards from the tremendous and chaotic flow of energy.

This flesh had a strong medicinal fragrance. Covered in the milky white light, it was actually abandoned like this. Even the demon emperors felt their hearts ache at such a loss.

When Lin Ming's old flesh and skin fell off, new flesh and skin had already appeared. This new flesh was crystal bright and shined like a sun, illuminating the surrounding world.

Countless golden vortexes appeared atop every pore. Immortal beings seemed to sit atop these vortexes, reciting ancient mantras.

His entire being was shrouded in a haze of these ancient mantras, as if some great revered being was being born.

Meanwhile, Lin Ming's body also trembled. Bones penetrated through his flesh and blood, sticking out like divine pillars.

If one looked at these bones carefully, they could see numerous tiny marks on them, as well as some areas that were pitch black, and even blood markings of the Great Dao.

Now, these bones were being forcefully pushed out of Lin Ming's body.

He was replacing his flesh and blood, being reborn.

This scene was extremely macabre and abnormal. As the old demons around the Emperor Bone Sea saw this, they were shocked, all of them rendered speechless.

After Lin Ming reached this step, he still managed to replace his flesh and blood once more. It was obvious just how useful this world strength was in tempering his mortal body.

Kacha! Kacha!

Lin Ming's bones shattered without end. An energy broke out from them, filled with the roars of demons as it floated into the air.

These bones were engraved with mystical bone runes. For anyone else these would be supremely rare and valuable bones, and yet Lin Ming was discarding them so easily.

However, this was not the end. After several breaths of time, these bone that were discarded were destroyed. As the fragments of bone dust fell all around, the purest life energy contained in those bones actually returned to Lin Ming's body.

Even some of the medicinally fragrant flesh that Lin Ming discarded rapidly turned into ash. Their essence energy as well as the source Law fragments contained within flew back into Lin Ming!

Many old demons marveled at the spectacle.

To be reborn to such a degree was simply inconceivable.

This was a true perfect body!

Lin Ming had already taken pain as pleasure. But, in the process of his birth, he fell into agonizing pain once more. His source Great Dao had already been fused into his bones and flesh and blood, and wanting to discard it from his body to be replaced and to be reborn, that was incredibly difficult.

One needed the most formidable of wills as well as an incomparably stable foundation.

Not too far away, Immortal Sovereign's eyes lit up with a fascinated light. As he looked at Lin Ming's changes, he had already stood up.

Now, what he was waiting for was Lin Ming's true transformation!

He knew that this moment of replacing the bones and flesh was only the prelude to Lin Ming's breakthrough into True Divinity.

Beside Lin Ming, Sheng Mei also opened her eyes. In truth she had waited for Lin Ming for 600 years. Waiting this long wasn't a waste, but was actually highly significant to her.

This was because if she could step into True Divinity together with Lin Ming, then the two of them could touch upon the Heavenly Dao together and arouse the trembling of the world Laws. Because they were complementing each other in yin yang circulation, they would obtain the greatest benefits!

As Sheng Mei was fermenting her own energy, the nine revolution red lotus mark between her eyebrows began to shine with divine light.

She wanted to complete her breakthrough together with Lin Ming.

At the same time, Lin Ming's replacing of bones and flesh was continuing. As his bones were reborn anew, his organs also started to transform.

An unknown period of time passed. Lin Ming's blood vitality scattered again and again, but was reborn repeatedly due to the perfusion of world strength.

Finally, his body dazzled once more, and creamy white bones grew out from his old shattered ones.

These bones were densely carved with mysterious ancient runes. It was like towering mountains grew within his body, supporting his infinite power.

Fresh blood boiled over, the sounds like roaring True Dragons.

He emitted a loud cry into the heavens. The sound waves turned into tumbling sea waves that surged into the Emperor Bone Sea.

His gaze was like the sun and moon. As he opened and closed his eyes, it was like worlds were being born and extinguished, rivers of stars flowing within without end.

And at this time, Immortal Sovereign pointed out a finger.

With a light cracking sound, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's spatial rings shattered. Three ancient black books emerged from their two spatial rings.

These were the ceremonial rites books left behind by the Soul Emperor!

The ceremonial rites books had been tampered with by the Soul Emperor. If one withstood the abyssal ritual using them, their spiritual sea would be invaded.

And now, beneath the support of all the ancient demon emperors, Immortal Sovereign was using this world potential to refine these ceremonial rites books!

Without a doubt, these three ceremonial rites books contained an incomparably pure strength. How could Immortal Sovereign waste it?

Now, Immortal Sovereign was refining these books to draw out their strength. This would undoubtedly allow Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's cultivations to take a step further, and provide them with the maximum energy possible for their breakthrough into True Divinity!

Over 100 ancient demon emperors suddenly stirred up, their thoughts focusing. They revolved their strength, moving as much world strength as they could towards Lin Ming and Sheng Mei.

And at this time, an ancient voice leisurely echoed out, shaking the heavens and earth.

"What a grand occasion that hasn't been seen for even 100 billion years..."

This voice actually came from the 30 level pagoda that was around the dark altars!

Originally, there were only three pagodas around the dark altars and only Immortal Sovereign had been awakened because of the battle between Lin Ming and Deep Child. As for the other two pagodas, they remained quiet. Yet at this time, a response rose up in one of them!

Immortal Sovereign's eyes began to shine.

MW Chapter 2189

Chapter 2189 – Demon Lord

…

…

…

Weng - !

The 30 level demon pagoda began to quietly shiver, as if some incomprehensible being was emerging. Even the demon pagoda itself seemed to find this existence difficult to suppress.

"It's actually him?"

"The master of the 30 level demon pagoda! Heavens! He must have been in deep slumber for the last 20 billion years. I even thought he had been freed from this hell and no longer existed…"

“He also wants to help?”

The numerous ancient demon emperors were bewildered.

The Emperor Bone Sea had already existed for over 100 billion years, and throughout this time, countless great demons were imprisoned here. They had to endure endless pain and loneliness in the form of remnant souls.

And in the Emperor Bone Sea, there was a supreme ruling powerhouse that appeared 20 billion years ago.

He had been locked inside the 30 level demon pagoda around the dark altars. Because it had been so long ago, not even the ancient demons remembered his true name. They only knew his title – Demon Lord.

He was once the ruler of the Dark Abyss. He didn’t rely on the abyssal ritual to become a totem level abyssal, but instead used his own strength and talent to step into the realm Beyond Divinity.

The truth was that even during the time he was alive, no one would mention his name. Because of his great strength and the world’s awe towards him, his name had become taboo, and all demons would forever refer to him as the Demon Lord.

In the Emperor Bone Sea, there was no one who dared disrespect the Demon Lord.

The abyssals revered powerhouses. However, although Immortal Sovereign was powerful, he was still from an alien race. As for this Demon Lord, he was from their own race.

Moreover, although the Demon Lord's demon pagoda was slightly shorter, the truth was that his strength wasn't necessarily any weaker than Immortal's; perhaps he was even stronger. This was even more true when considering that just before Immortal Sovereign perished, he transferred a massive amount of his life essence and strength of his Laws to his daughter.

The reason Immortal Sovereign was locked into the 33 level demon pagoda was because the Demon Lord had arrived at the Emperor Bone Sea at an even earlier time.

And when Immortal Sovereign entered the Emperor Bone Sea, the Demon Lord had already fallen into a deep slumber. The two of them had never had direct contact with each other.

Immortal had always sensed the existence of the Demon Lord and knew that he had not vanished. However, the Demon Lord's heart and mind had entered a state of deathly stillness, and thus he faced the Emperor Bone Sea and all else with nothing but passive indifference.

The Demon Lord was already used to his deep slumber. But today, as Lin Ming and Sheng Mei reached the critical point in their breakthrough, he had finally awoken.

Immortal Sovereign slowly turned around and looked at the 30 level demon pagoda. A smile curved up on his handsome features.

“Immortal!”

The Demon Lord called out Immortal Sovereign’s title. As the two greatest powerhouses of the Emperor Bone Sea, they were able to speak through their divine souls and sense each other’s presence. As for the third and also the highest 36 level demon pagoda, the truth was that it was empty. In other words, these two were the masters of the Emperor Bone Sea.

“Demon Lord! Well met!”

“Hahahaha!” The Demon Lord suddenly laughed, his voice loud and filled with the changes of time, like a great bell that smashed into the minds of the demons present.

“We come from different races and different times, yet today we can join forces!”

“Perhaps this is our predestined fate!”

“What you said is right, this is fate! But the reason we join forces is to break out of the shackles of fate!”

As the Demon Lord spoke, an incomparably thick demonic aura gushed out from the 30 level demon pagoda as if it would swallow the world. Turbulent waves of energy began to emit from the pagoda.

And at this time, Immortal Sovereign also moved. For these last several hundred years he had been saving his strength to help Lin Ming and Sheng Mei close this final distance!

Together, the Demon Lord and Immortal Sovereign gathered their strength into the independent world where Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were.

A wild and tyrannical world strength, in addition to the strength of the books of ceremonial rites, rushed into the independent space over twice as strong as the previous saturated state of world strength!

For a time, the independent world Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were in began to rapidly expand.

The void turned into chaos and countless divine chains of order tore through the endless skies like bolts of raging thunder. Brilliant hues of primordial energy began to revolve into towering mountains and rushing rivers. Mighty demon dragons growled at the air and kirins roared into the skies as this mysterious world began to take full shape.

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei suddenly felt an immense pressure.

But at this time, they were breaking into the True Divinity realm, and what they needed was an incomparably large flood of energy!

Whorl –

Whorl –

Whorl –

A shocking strength appeared from the deepest depths of Lin Ming's body.

This was an unknown world. It contained perfect Great Dao Laws, mountains, rivers, and life forms evolved from spiritual energy.

Boundless continents and surging oceans existed, and even celestial bodies hung high in the heavens, casting down their brilliance.

This was Lin Ming's inner world.

Currently, he needed to use this world to link to the world strength of the Emperor Bone Sea, evolving the hidden meanings within this world and taking it into his own body to finally reach True Divinity.

As Lin Ming's inner world appeared, it seemed to become the center of all.

Weng –

Weng –

Countless divine chains of Laws wove together, extracting all the surrounding energies. For a time, behind Lin Ming and Sheng Mei, giant Supreme phantoms appeared!

When a martial artist reached the boundary of the Nine Divine Shifts, they could evolve their own inner world, and by developing their inner world they could increase their strength.

At the World King boundary, that was to refine a world to enter their body and fuse with their inner world.

At the half-step Empyrean realm, one evolved a Supreme phantom within their inner world.

At the Empyrean realm, the Supreme phantom condensed into essence, and the Supreme phantom stretched through the heavens and earth of the inner world, thus being called an Empyrean!

As for the True Divinity realm, that was to fuse the inner world’s Supreme phantom into one’s flesh and blood and divine soul, merging together into one singular being!

Like this, one was the divine god of the world, and the divine god of the world was themselves!

This was a true divine god, a True Divinity!

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei had incomparably deep backgrounds. The Supreme phantoms they formed had developed features that were completely similar to themselves. The only difference was that the expressions of these phantoms were filled with the cold indifference of a god.

It could be said that these Supreme phantoms were the ‘godheads’ of Lin Ming and Sheng Mei.

Lin Ming leapt upwards, gathering the surrounding stable world strength, bringing it all into his inner world with his Supreme phantom.

Bang!

As energy collided, countless divine chains of order formed in this world, all of them wrapping around Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's supreme phantoms, locking them down!

These divine chains were heavy and profound, countless and complex. They formed a giant cocoon of chains made from numerous overlapping layers.

However, as Lin Ming and Sheng Mei saw this, neither of them was surprised or overjoyed.

Behind them, their Supreme phantoms began to move. They erupted with a terrifying strength as they struggled to break free from these divine chains and absorb them into their bodies for their own use!

To become the one controlling these divine chains, that was one of the necessary symbols of a True Divinity!

However, the divine chains that formed when Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were breaking into True Divinity far outstripped an ordinary True Divinity's, whether it was in quantity or quality.

In the hazy world, bolts of lightning shuttled through space. Time and Space Laws shattered into fragments after being destabilized by the momentous impact of energy.

All the Great Dao rules lost their source strength. Only Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's will and the will of the Emperor Bone Sea's world strength began to mutually crash and push each other forwards!

Runes collided in the air, battling each other. The excessively rich world strength finally turned into an ancient divine demon that hurtled towards Lin Ming and Sheng Mei!

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's eyes blazed with burning fighting spirit. They stepped through the void and fought with the ancient divine demon!

Rumble!

Rumble!

Rumble!

Energy exploded. Laws danced in the air. Lin Ming's newborn lossless body was wet with blood. However, the ancient divine demon formed by the massive amount of world strength was finally routed by the joint efforts of Lin Ming and Sheng Mei and turned into a wonderful and auspicious strength that was absorbed by the two of them.

The True Divinity boundary was close at hand!

The two Supreme phantoms behind them also started to slowly fuse into their mortal bodies.

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

In that moment, Lin Ming's bones seemed to be blasted with countless thunderbolts. Every explosion deafened the ears, every one leaving behind flashing runes.

In the middle of these runes, they were either occupied by god kings or demons.

Some god kings formed seals in their hands with towering trees standing tall behind them, thrusting into the clouds. Countless jewels seemed to drape down amongst them, wrapping them in solemn visage.

There were also peerless death gods that grasped bloodied and ominous weapons. They stepped upon countless bones, filled with a grim and threatening atmosphere.

These were the manifestations of the power of divinity and demons within Lin Ming's body, and represented his greatest strength. And, these phantoms of divinity and demons that appeared were close to the source of the Great Dao. Even the many ancient demons that were watching were also able to gain some comprehensions from witnessing this, and all of them couldn't help but exclaim in admiration at Lin Ming's Laws.

At this time, behind Lin Ming, a massive wheel appeared and an Asura with overwhelming slaughter energy stood atop it.

Its head reached the skies and its feet stepped on the earth. It was huge and without limit.

Countless stars lingered about this giant wheel. As the Asura appeared, yin and yang manifested beneath its influence and chaos wrapped around all, seeming to shroud over the entirety of the cosmos. It was as if the Great Dao of life and death was being interpreted here, shocking to the extreme.

This contained the mighty aura of the Asura Road Master, and was a peak manifestation of Lin Ming's comprehensions of the Asura Laws.

On some stars, dao palaces appeared. These dao palaces were extraordinary and ancient, communing in resonant with the world as they appeared. Starlight from trillions of stars appeared, blooming and falling down.

They resonated together, weaving into vibrant galaxies. Each galaxy had celestial mountains floating within, had ancient nations overflowing with spirit, had trillions upon quadrillions of people living freely and sounds of distant sutras that shook into the past and future – these were the recitations of countless supreme beings chanting in unison.

This was the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, another road that Lin Ming had walked to the peak.

Atop these stars, red lotuses began to slowly bloom. Atop these red lotuses, the Concepts of Life and Death evolved, fading away and then being reborn. This was the essence of Lin Ming's understandings of the samsara of life and death. Even the creator of the Holy Scripture, Immortal Sovereign, admired the comprehensions that Lin Ming added in.

At this time, Immortal Sovereign knew that the Supreme phantom behind Lin Ming had fused with his flesh and blood. Now, it was only a matter of time.

In at most several hours, Lin Ming would reach True Divinity!

At that time it was unknown just what level of strength he would reach!

After this, he would bring the hundreds of ancient demon emperors that even though they had gone crazy over the years, still managed to retain their intelligence, and they would fight the Soul Emperor together!

MW Chapter 2190

Chapter 2190 – Double True Divinities

…

…

…

When a martial artist broke into the realm of True Divinity, the powerful Laws within their bodies would manifest one after another.

The Supreme phantom behind Lin Ming had already half-fused with his mortal body. It sat atop a seven-leaf red lotus, a giant Asura Wheel spinning above its head.

At this moment, the seven revolution red lotus was like the earth and the Asura Wheel was like the heavens.

And between the heavens and earth, the Heretical God Tree that Lin Ming cultivated as well as the fused martial intent Bodhi Tree began to appear. Between these divine trees, True

Dragons and True Phoenixes danced in the air; this was the dragon and phoenix blood within Lin Ming's body!

Divine chains of order also began condensing in the void. These divine chains of order wrapped around the trees like wreaths of gemmed necklaces.

At this moment, the various Laws that Lin Ming refined were appearing and slowly integrating into the divine chains of order.

This was a transformation of Laws!

However, as Lin Ming's mortal body had fused 90% with his Supreme phantom, beside him, an even greater red lotus bloomed. This red lotus had nine flower petals and each flower petal was like its own separate world.

Above the red lotus, wind and snow howled and raging deep blue energy surged, forming a frosty river that connected the heavens and earth.

Sheng Mei had begun breaking into True Divinity.

Bang!

World strength swelled up from all over and rushed towards Sheng Mei, forming a vast sea that washed over every inch of her flesh and blood, every wisp of her divine soul!

At the same time, the divine chains of order around Sheng Mei began to loudly shatter, turning into source Law fragments that joined together with the strength of the world to break into her body.

This was a baptism of the heavens and earth that a martial artist underwent when becoming a True Divinity. To all True Divinities, including Lin Ming and Sheng Mei, such a chance only appeared once!

When a martial artist became a True Divinity they would undergo a baptism of Laws and the world's strength; this was an incomparably precious opportunity!

And at this time, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were holding hands. This world energy not only flowed through Sheng Mei's body and divine soul, but also flowed through Lin Ming.

A part of the Laws and energy passed through Lin Ming's body before returning to Sheng Mei. Although it was only flowing through, it still brought incomprehensible comprehensions and advantages to Lin Ming.

Every wisp of Laws and energy left behind their own unique mark within Lin Ming. Lin Ming could feel the red lotus beneath him tremble in excitement and the Asura Wheel also howled in joy. The Heretical God Tree, the Bodhi Tree, everything shined with overflowing vitality, their branches and leaves stretched outwards as new roots budded!

At this time, a clear divine sense spread into Lin Ming's spiritual sea. "Daddy, how could you forget me with something so good happening?"

This was Jiu'er's voice. Lin Ming's thoughts stirred and he looked into the Magic Cube space. A cute little girl that looked just a bit over ten years old was looking up at him with wide and hopeful eyes.

Without much thought, Lin Ming reached out a hand and a part of the endless Laws and world energy that belonged to Sheng Mei flowed into the Magic Cube space before flowing back out.

And these energies and Laws rushed into Jiu'er's body.

To withstand a baptism of energy of a True Divinity's breakthrough was already an unimaginable lucky chance. And, the comprehensions brought about when Sheng Mei stepped into the realm of True Divinity actually far surpassed other ordinary True Divinities'!

According to all common sense, with Jiu'er's strength, even if she was soaked in this world strength she still wouldn't be able to comprehend many things. However, Jiu'er was Sheng Mei's own flesh and blood daughter and their two bloodlines were linked together.

And when Jiu'er was breeding within Sheng Mei and had been sealed away, she had also come into contact with many of Sheng Mei's Laws.

Now, the world strength that Sheng Mei guided into herself was completely unimpeded as it swept into Jiu'er. Every inch of Jiu'er's body and divine soul were being baptized by the Law fragments and world energy.

Jiu'er couldn't help but cry out in joy. To her, this baptism would have an extremely profound influence on her future road of martial arts.

At this time the small black dragon and Ruby that were also within the Magic Cube couldn't obtain such a great advantage like Jiu'er.

However, the baptism had only just begun.

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

Horrifying explosive sounds rang through the world. Just ten breaths into Sheng Mei breaking into True Divinity, the energy in the world began to turn frantic and mad.

If it was said that the world strength that Sheng Mei gathered during her breakthrough was like a vast sea, then now, this vast sea had formed hundred mile high waves, an incomparably crazy sight!

Lin Ming's breakthrough had also begun!

The world strength he gathered as he broke into True Divinity was much greater than Sheng Mei's. This was an unimaginable amount!

And just like Lin Ming obtaining advantages during Sheng Mei's breakthrough, Sheng Mei also obtained incredibly benefits during Lin Ming's breakthrough.

World strength and energy of Laws passed through Sheng Mei's body, leaving behind permanent marks before pouring back into Lin Ming.

The magnetic life fields of Lin Ming and Sheng Mei had already superimposed on top of each other. At this time, their flesh and blood and divine souls had all come together in perfect harmony!

This sort of union could no longer be described simply as yin yang reinforcement. Between the two of them, each was leaving profound marks in the other's lives.

And the advantages that these marks brought were already indescribable.

Weng –

Weng –

Weng –

A horrifying shaking sound thundered through the world. From above Lin Ming's head and below his feet, the Asura Wheel and Holy Scripture red lotus began to approach each other. Slowly, the two of them were beginning to fuse together!

When Lin Ming was at the Sky Spill Continent and started to become aware of the Laws of Life and Death, he had already attempted to join the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra together to fuse the universe of the world and the universe of the body. After all sorts of experiences and lucky chances, he was finally beginning to make progress.

And now, as Lin Ming was breaking into True Divinity, the phenomenon of the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra fusing together was appearing once more.

Lin Ming's achievements in the Asura Heavenly Dao were higher. But when it came to compression, his understandings of the Holy Scripture were no less than the Heavenly Sutra.

Especially at this time, Sheng Mei was sitting beside Lin Ming. She had undergone perfect nine revolutions and the connection between their souls only boosted this fusion.

Seeing this, many ancient demons were at a loss for words. Even Immortal Sovereign's heart shook. He stood up, his eyes blazing as he looked at Lin Ming.

As the creator of the Holy Scripture he certainly knew how difficult it was to unify the great Laws of the world's universe and the body's universe. Otherwise, he wouldn't have formed such a contentious disagreement of ideas with the Asura Road Master 10 billion years ago.

Lin Ming sat in the void, solemn and dignified. The Asura Wheel and Holy Scripture red lotus grew closer and closer. However, after fusing just a part, their speeds actually slowed down.

As if there was something blocking their fusion.

These were two of the highest Laws of the 33 Heavens. Even if they were to start fusing together, it wasn't something that could be accomplished in a single go.

Bang!

An explosion rang out. World strength gathered. The Asura Wheel and Holy Scripture red lotus stopped here. They shattered into fragments, turning into the most source Law energies that began to baptize Lin Ming's body

Within the Magic Cube space, Jiu'er leapt up in joy. During Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's breakthrough she had obtained all the advantages she could ask for.

Whether it was Lin Ming or Sheng Mei, they shared a bloodline with her, and thus there would be no rejection of energy between them!

She greedily basked in the baptism of energy brought about by her father and mother, lazily stretching out her body.

And beside Jiu'er, the one that obtained the next greatest advantages was the little black dragon.

The little black dragon was unable to fuse together with Sheng Mei's energies, but it could actually withstand the baptism of world strength brought about by Lin Ming. This was because when the little black dragon was born, it already shared a bloodline with Lin Ming.

World strength gathered into a sea. This process continued for an unknown period of time, but finally, Lin Ming's strength began to explosively grow!

At this time Lin Ming was already being reborn anew. His 36,000 pores emitted divine beams of light that shot out for a hundred thousand feet.

World strength raged around him. Even the stable space of the Emperor Bone Sea shook without end due to the unified strength of Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's breakthrough!

Within their demon pagodas, when the ancient demons faced Lin Ming, they even felt a hint of… awe!

Although they had all been upper True Divinity existences and above when they were alive, they had already been dead for innumerable years. All that was left behind of them were wisps of their remnant souls. Now, facing the tremendous pressure brought about by Lin Ming's breakthrough into True Divinity, this still wasn't something easy for them to withstand.

Lin Ming slowly opened his eyes. The strength within his body seemed as if it would burst out of him, as if a punch could break a world, as if a chop could sever a river of stars.

He looked at his hands and slowly gripped his fists together.

This was the legendary True Divinity realm.

Once, it had seemed a distant and unachievable goal, but today he had finally broken through!

MW Chapter 2191

Chapter 2191 – Refining the Soul Emperor's Strength

…

…

…

After breaking into True Divinity, Lin Ming had a fervent desire to fight!

However, he was well aware that after reaching this boundary, there were few in the entire universe that were capable of being his match!

Lin Ming pulled Sheng Mei's hand.

After breaking into True Divinity his senses had become exceptionally sharp. He could faintly feel an energy hidden deep within Sheng Mei that was discordant with her bloodline.

This energy was similar to the world strength of the Emperor Bone Sea that Lin Ming had absorbed, but, it was actually much fiercer and far more evil.

“The strength of a totem abyssal!”

This thought flashed through Lin Ming’s thoughts. Thinking about it, he recalled that Sheng Mei once stated that the Soul Emperor had left behind two marks within her.

The first was a spirit mark; Sheng Mei had already shattered that by herself.

The next was an energy mark. The essence of this mark was the strength of a totem level abyssal. While it could be used in critical situations to control Sheng Mei, it could also protect her.

Originally, it would have been impossible for either Lin Ming or Sheng Mei to do anything to the Soul Emperor’s strength. But now that Sheng Mei and Lin Ming broke into True Divinity together, if they joined forces they absolutely could refine this strength.

“Lin Ming…”

Sheng Mei and Lin Ming had become of one mind. At this time, Sheng Mei also knew what Lin Ming wanted to do.

She slowly nodded. Lin Ming put his hands together, revolving the divine power within him.

Hum –

Weng –

Supernatural powers surged like a giant grinding pan, pressing down on the totem level strength within Sheng Mei's body, disintegrating.

This strength was of an extremely high quality. Even if Sheng Mei and Lin Ming joined forces, they could only wear it away a bit at a time.

Peng!

With a loud explosive sound, this totem strength burst out, forming a hazy phantom in the skies.

This phantom had the appearance of an old youth. However, the appearance was greatly different from that of the Soul Emperor. His features were far more fierce and diabolical than the Soul Emperor's and his face was pale white without the least bit of depth, as if he was a 10,000 year old corpse that had all its blood sucked out.

Without a doubt, this was the strength of a totem level abyssal left behind by the Soul Emperor.

Lin Ming looked at this phantom and a cold light glinted in his eyes. He poured out all of his strength into this phantom, slowly breaking it apart!

This phantom naturally wasn't able to resist Lin Ming and Sheng Mei. But, as the phantom's body broke apart, not only did it not have a frightened expression but there was still that lightly taunting smirk hanging on his face.

Lin Ming frowned. He placed his hands together and poured out the Asura Heavenly Dao and Holy Scripture Laws.

Bang!

The phantom finally exploded, turning into countless fragments that floated into the void. However, that taunting expression was like a curse, still lingering in the void and not scattering for a long time.

Lin Ming didn’t blink an eye. He thrust out a hand and the phantom exploded once more. This time, it completely turned into the purest world strength that was refined by Lin Ming’s energy.

“Lin Ming…”

Although Sheng Mei had just broken into True Divinity and her strength had risen precipitously, the Soul Emperor’s appearance still caused dark and gloomy clouds to envelop her heart.

This was unrelated to her heart of martial arts and it also wasn’t because she was afraid. It was because she had followed the Soul Emperor for many years and was deeply aware of just how terrifying he was.

“I seem to have… restored some of my previous life’s memories…”

Sheng Mei quietly muttered. After breaking through to True Divinity and undergoing a baptism of the world Laws and divine chains of order, she had faintly touched upon the vast and boundless memories of her past self from 10 billion years ago.

These memories contained the comprehensions of the Life and Death Laws of her past life, as well as her fighting skills and even the cultivation methods she trained in.

The memories were far too disorganized and convoluted. When Sheng Mei broke through to True Divinity she had only touched upon a small part of them and needed time to slowly sort them out. Even so, these memories would bring a massive advantage to her.

“Oh? What have you remembered?”

Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred. Sheng Mei’s memories were of crucial importance. Although Immortal Sovereign also knew of the events from 10 billion years past, he had perished far too early in the war between the races.

After Immortal Sovereign died, the races of the 33 Heavens still struggled against the Dark Abyss for tens of thousands of years. This was the part of history where the Asura Road Master and the races of the 33 Heavens were finally able to force back the abyssals, and as for the specifics of what happened here, Immortal Sovereign wasn’t sure.

And if Sheng Mei knew then this would naturally be a great help to Lin Ming understanding more.

However, Sheng Mei shook her head, saying, “I cannot remember many details about the great calamity from so long ago… I only know that 10 billion years ago, my previous life underwent a blood sacrifice and used a divine tool to manifest the Eternal Wall and block out the Dark Abyss. In truth, my past life also left behind a single turning point for reincarnation – this could be called the tenth cycle of reincarnation… in my past life I was cold and arrogant and even though I knew I would die in battle, I also hoped that I would be able to draw upon personally experiencing ‘death’ to comprehend the Life and Death Laws to a far more profound degree, and then after the ninth reincarnation, carve out a path for the tenth reincarnation. Like that, I would have been able to break through my limits, surpassing my father and even surpassing the Asura Road Master.

“But as for what happened afterwards, I do not know.

“Now, it seems that my tenth reincarnation failed. My memories were lost and my cultivation was abandoned, and I had to begin anew… moreover, I don’t know how but I was discovered by the Soul Emperor and he knew of my true identity.

“The Soul Emperor has incredibly hidden depths. He trained me, but I’m afraid there is some unknown purpose behind it all…”

As Sheng Mei spoke to here, Lin Ming’s thoughts chilled.

The Soul Emperor was unfathomably deep. Not only was he terrifyingly strong but he had laid down a plot of the heavens and earth that spread out over 100 billion years. Compared to him, those True Divinity overlords of the spiritas, saints, or Asura Road, were nothing at all.

Even the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was lacking.

Although the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was the ruler of the saints and had the great ambitions of swallowing all life in the 33 Heavens, when compared to the Soul Emperor he was nothing at all.

Not to mention anything else, just amongst the many ancient demon emperors that the Soul Emperor had locked in the Emperor Bon Sea, if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign were placed within he would only be at the middle or upper reaches of them…

Across a horrifying timespan of 100 billion years, even spreading into the last universal era, cruel and vicious elite demons had poured forth from the Dark Abyss, and there were dozens if not hundreds of powerful abyssals that were far stronger than the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign could hope to be.

But, when one considered the weakened human race of the 33 Heavens, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was far too formidable. Through the entire human race, they couldn’t find someone that could run away safely in front of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign much less defeat him.

And calculating the time, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign should have already emerged from seclusion. By now, he had likely swallowed up the karmic link between the 33 Heavens’ essence gathering system and the human race.

If so, then humanity was in an even more precarious position.

Of course, to Lin Ming, this sort of karmic link of destiny had no influence. Whether it was in terms of Laws or the energy saved within his body, he far surpassed the essence gathering system. And even if the Laws were imprisoned, Lin Ming could still break through with his strength!

Now, the only things that Lin Ming dreaded were the Soul Emperor and Demon God's Tomb.

However, before he confronted them he would need to return to the 33 Heavens.

He had to solve the trouble around the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. Facing the terrifying enemy that was the Dark Abyss, the infighting between the humans and saints no longer held any meaning.

Of course, wanting the saints to believe him wouldn't be easy. Even so, Lin Ming didn't plan to try persuading them too much, because in the world of martial arts strength was all – strength would forever be a weapon countless times more powerful than words!

"I will return to the 33 Heavens!"

Lin Ming suddenly said. He looked at Sheng Mei. Although he didn't say anything, his meaning was clear; he wanted Sheng Mei to follow him.

The Eternal Wall couldn't cage in the races of the 33 Heavens. Even though Lin Ming became a True Divinity it still wouldn't be a problem for him to pass.

As for the bloodlines within Sheng Mei, although they were convoluted, it was still her previous life that had formed the Eternal Wall through her blood sacrifice. Because she had been the one to lay it down, the Eternal Wall wouldn't imprison even the True Divinity realm Sheng Mei.

MW *Chapter* 2192

Chapter 2192 – Origin Amethyst Crystal

…

…

…

The world strength that swept through the Emperor Bone Sea began to slowly weaken over three days.

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei perfectly passed their trial.

Originally, breaking through to True Divinity meant that one would be a martial artist who stood at the highest echelons of the universe. Moreover, whether it was Lin Ming or Sheng Mei, they both possessed enough talent to show disdain to all other rivals at their boundary. Their strength was already great enough that they could affect the future of the universe and alter the grand chess game of the world!

However, Lin Ming also knew that this was only the first step in resisting the Soul Emperor. The Soul Emperor should currently be cultivating some sort of cultivation method, and once he finished he would be able to perfectly control the Demon God's Tomb. By that time, his strength would reach incomprehensible levels!

The time they had was far too short. Once the Soul Emperor's cultivation method reached large success he would learn of everything that occurred in the Demon God's Tomb. At that time, Lin Ming would only be able to directly face the Soul Emperor in a life or death battle!

Ripples spread through the void and the enchantment that created the small independent world disappeared. Lin Ming and Sheng Mei appeared in the gaze of the many abyssals, a consummate pair of man and woman.

Seeing Lin Ming and Sheng Mei come out, Immortal released a long breath of relief. Then, a smile bloomed on his face. A thousand years of effort, 10 billion years of waiting, at least none of this had passed in vain.

"Much thanks, Senior!"

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei fell to their knees as they saw Immortal, deeply kneeling in respect.

This was because to Sheng Mei, Immortal could be called her true birth father and since Lin Ming and Sheng Mei could also be called husband and wife, then Immortal was Lin Ming's father-in-law.

Moreover, whether it was the Holy Scripture Laws that allowed Lin Ming to undergo a nirvanic rebirth after losing his source soul, or whether it was this abyssal ritual, Immortal had shown great graciousness to them. He was their teacher.

Regardless of whether it was as a teacher or father, Immortal was more than worthy of this bow.

"Children, stand up." Immortal said, his expression filled with happiness and gratitude. But while he was happy at seeing such juniors, he was also worried. He knew that after Lin Ming and Sheng Mei left, they would be faced with a truly terrifying enemy; the pressure on their shoulders was just far too heavy.

Lin Ming stood up and looked at the distant 30 level demon pagoda as well as the over 100 demon emperors that existed across the shores of the Yellow Springs River. He bowed to them all.

Especially the Demon Lord of the 30 level demon pagoda. He had awoken in order to help him and Sheng Mei, and this was a kindness that Lin Ming would forever remember.

"Seniors, junior will try his best in the future to rescue all of you from here."

Lin Min solemnly vowed. But, the only reply he heard was raucous laughter.

“Heh! Brat, I have already died, so how could you possibly rescue us? If you have the ability then scatter my remnant soul – that will be true freedom.”

“Haha, I do not expect you to rescue us. The only possible way is if you manage to break apart the rules of this world. In the future when you step Beyond Divinity, bite out a piece of meat from that old freak and bring it here for us to eat, hahaha!”

The crowd of demons recklessly spoke.

After being sealed in the dark and enclosed demon pagodas, they faced an unchanging environment for tens of billions of years. The pain of this was unthinkable.

If a mortal were enclosed in a small black room for a month they would turn crazy and even develop irrevocable mental issues. Even though martial artists had formidable wills, they would still start to turn mad after being caged in for tens of billions of years.

Lin Ming was left speechless. He sighed inwardly. In truth, these many ancient demon emperors were locked here because they weren’t able to resist the temptation that was eternal life, even if at the time they arrived they knew the Emperor Bone Sea only contained an uncertain hope for them.

Lin Ming didn’t know whether or not eternal life should be pursued, but he deeply felt that eternal life actually didn’t mean eternal happiness, it didn’t mean eternal joy.

Eternal life was not the highest pursuit of martial arts.

The pursuit of martial arts was the heart.

Lin Ming couldn’t help but look at Sheng Mei. Currently, what Sheng Mei pursued was no longer eternal life, but instead what could truly touch her heart and move her soul.

To cultivate to fulfill one’s own heart, perhaps this was truly touching upon the peak of martial arts.

But in reflection, what was one’s heart?

Perhaps that was to allow oneself, one’s lovers, one’s spouses, one’s children, one’s family, one’s friends, one’s people, to allow everyone to live in peace and happiness…

……..

“Children, come with me.”

Immortal suddenly said. He turned towards the 33 level demon pagoda.

Immortal Sovereign was originally the master of the Magic Cube. With the help of the Magic Cube and Lin Ming, the gates to the 33 level demon pagoda had been smashed open. But during the 1000 some years that Lin Ming had gone into seclusion, potent world strength had gathered around the gates, superimposing upon itself in layers and evolving into shining demon runes.

The runes connected together, causing the demon relief on the gates to look that much fiercer, as if it the gates would close up once more.

“The Laws in the Emperor Bone Sea are truly dreadful…”

Lin Ming immediately thought. At this rate, the 33 demon pagoda that caged Immortal Sovereign would be sealed up again sooner or later.

At this time, the three of them already stood firmly in the demon pagoda.

Within the demon pagoda, everything was carved from black stone. This black stone had experienced a passing of innumerable billions of years and exuded the changings of times. Everything emitted the thick smell of history.

Immortal Sovereign put out a hand. He said to Lin Ming, “Give me the Magic Cube…”

Lin Ming was startled for a moment but didn’t question anything. He thrust out a hand and the Magic Cube appeared in his palm.

Then, he respectfully handed the Magic Cube to Immortal Sovereign.

The Magic Cube quietly floated in Immortal Sovereign’s palm, slowly revolving. Immortal Sovereign sighed with emotion. “In this universal era, three divine tools exist within the 33 Heavens. They are the Stone of Eternal Life, Grandmist Spirit Bead, as well as the… Origin Amethyst Crystal.”

“Origin Amethyst Crystal?”

Lin Ming’s thoughts stirred. Without a doubt, this divine tool was the Purple Card.

This was the first time that Lin Ming had heard the Purple Card’s true name. When Lin Ming referred to the Purple Card in the past, he was only referring to the color and shape of the Origin Amethyst Crystal.

“Is it the divine tool that the Asura Road Master used in the past?”

“Yes.” Immortal Sovereign nodded. “The Origin Amethyst Crystal might be a purple crystal form condensed from the source energies of this world. As for the Stone of Eternal Life and Grandmist Spirit Bead, they are also similar. The three divine tools are instruments that exist on the same tier. If they are completely activated they will evolve into a large universe, so they are in truth three world seeds.

“But, although these three divine tools are of the same tier, the reality is that they are divided into high and low.

“Mm?” Lin Ming and Sheng Mei were shocked. The three divine tools represented essence, energy, and divine, so how could they be divided into high and low?

Seeing Lin Ming and Sheng Mei’s doubts, Immortal Sovereign explained, “The three divine tools themselves don’t differentiate into high and low. But, sometimes, the strength of a divine tool looks not at the divine tool itself, but at the person using them! Whether a divine tool can grow, the quality of that growth and the speed of that growth, all depends on the divine tool’s experiences with the user!”

“It depends on the user of the divine tool?” A light lit up in Lin Ming’s eyes.

"That's right. This is especially true when a user reaches the realm Beyond Divinity. In truth, this boundary already stands on the same level as a great universe, and this person can create and destroy worlds. At this time, the user themselves is capable of influencing the three divine tools.

"Before the great calamity erupted 10 billion years ago, the Origin Amethyst Crystal had followed Asura for over a billion years. Similarly, the Stone of Eternal Life was also with me for several hundred million years. During these several hundred million years I was always together with the Stone of Eternal Life, constantly nourishing it with my strength and deepening its connection to my soul…"

As Immortal said this, Lin Ming was quietly shocked. Indeed, for a Beyond Divinity level existence to raise the Magic Cube like this, the Magic Cube was certainly out of the ordinary.

Let alone the Magic Cube that was a world seed, even a true great world could be constantly reinforced and nourished.

For instance, the Demon God's Tomb. This was a very high level world, and over 100 billion years and all sorts of scheming by the Soul Emperor, its stability had increased by a large degree compared to the past.

Looking at the three divine tools, the Magic Cube and Purple Card seemed far more powerful than the Grandmist Spirit Bead. And, the symbol for this would be that the Magic Cube and Purple Card had managed to breed their own 'artifact spirits', yet the Grandmist Spirit Bead hadn't.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming’s heart stirred. “Ruby, come out!”

As Lin Ming’s voice fell, a mass of fog rose up from the Magic Cube and turned into the cute appearance of a red-clothed little girl.

At this time, the little girl had a lost expression as she gazed at Immortal Sovereign. This black-robed man seemed familiar but also a complete stranger at the same time.

MW Chapter 2193

Chapter 2193 – Leaving Behind the Magic Cube

…

…

…

As Immortal Sovereign saw Ruby, he let out a sigh, infinite love and emotion filling his face. Although he was looking at Ruby, his gaze seemed to pierce through 10 billion years of time to see Ruby's past appearance…

"Your name is Ruby?"

"Mm…"

Ruby stared wide-eyed at Immortal Sovereign with the curiosity of a child. She only thought that this man in front of her was familiar and he also had a nice smell exuding from him, just like her Big Brother Lin Ming.

“Ruby, huh… that’s a nice name.” Immortal Sovereign gently patted Ruby’s head. “These years have been hard on you…”

“Eh?”

Ruby didn’t know just what Immortal Sovereign was trying to say.

“Uncle, what did you say?”

“Nothing.”

Immortal Sovereign lovingly smiled and traced Ruby’s head again. Then, he turned to Lin Ming and said, “Take good care of her.”

“I will.” Lin Ming solemnly vowed.

Immortal Sovereign sighed. He said, “In the past, Ruby was the Stone of Eternal Life’s world spirit…”

“World spirit?”

Lin Ming was stunned. The so-called world spirit was the soul of a world. Mountains had mountain souls, seas had sea souls, stars had star souls, and weapons had artifact spirits.

All things in existence, when all sorts of lucky chances coincided and after an incredibly long period of time passed, could develop wisdom. For instance, the Ancient Elysium Seal was one such example.

Immortal Sovereign predicted that the Soul Emperor was the world spirit of the Demon God's Tomb.

He appeared with the identity of 'Deep', seized the body of the Soul Emperor, and then took control of Flood. Not just that, but he controlled the two greatest influences of the Demon God's Tomb – the Deep Alliance and Flood Alliance. Even powerhouses like Sheng Mei and Deep Child had been firmly grasped in his hands.

"Ruby, she seems to have also reincarnated… her memories have been lost. In that past war, her soul nearly turned to ashes."

Immortal Sovereign casually stated. But, Lin Ming could imagine just how heaven-shaking that war had been.

The Magic Cube and the Purple Card went through the same war and Fishy's experiences were likely similar to Ruby's. Both of them had suffered catastrophic losses in that war 10 billion years ago.

Now, Fishy had returned to the Purple Card, which was the Origin Amethyst Crystal. Hopefully she would be able to recover a little…

Lin Ming prayed in his heart. Towards these two little girls with similar fates, he felt a deep sense of pity. In his eyes these two little girls were living beings, no different from the races that lived in the 33 Heavens.

"Child, stand."

Immortal Sovereign said to Sheng Mei.

Sheng Mei didn't know what Immortal Sovereign was about to do, but she obediently stood in front of him.

"Don't resist…"

As Immortal Sovereign spoke, he gently placed the Magic Cube between Sheng Mei's eyebrows. The fist-sized Magic Cube began to rapidly shrink until it reached the size of a grain of rice. Then, it fell into the nine revolution red lotus mark between her eyebrows.

Lin Ming locked his sense on Sheng Mei the entire time. He knew that the Magic Cube had submerged into Sheng Mei's spiritual sea.

To a martial artist, their spiritual sea was an extremely fragile yet important place. Once their spiritual sea cracked apart, a martial artist would suffer damage to their divine soul and perhaps even become an idiot.

The Magic Cube was a divine tool of the soul. Once it entered a person's spiritual sea it could erupt with a strength that could instantly shred the spiritual sea to shreds.

However, because Lin Ming trusted Immortal Sovereign, he didn't say a word. He quietly looked on, wanting to see what Immortal Sovereign was trying to do.

An incense stick of time passed. Immortal Sovereign's concentration was completely focused and his complexion was dignified. It was clear he was giving his full effort, and was even somewhat strained.

After a while the Magic Cube flew back out. In that instant, Lin Ming faintly felt that a source mark belonging to Sheng Mei seemed to have quietly fallen into the Magic Cube…

"Senior, you…"

Lin Ming didn’t know what Immortal Sovereign was trying to do, he seemed to be carving Sheng Meil’s soul mark into the Magic Cube. As for why he was expending so much effort to do so, Lin Ming didn’t know. Martial World novel at ReadNovelFull

But Immortal Sovereign wasn’t finished. He controlled the Magic Cube again so that it flew between Lin Ming’s eyebrows and sank into his spiritual sea.

Immortal Sovereign focused his concentration to leave behind Lin Ming’s soul mark within the Magic Cube. Then, he brought out the Magic Cube.

Lin Ming looked at Immortal Sovereign, a bit puzzled.

“Lin Ming, I asked you to bring out the Stone of Eternal Life today because I would like you to leave it here.”

Let alone Lin Ming, Immortal Sovereign’s words even shocked Sheng Mei. No one knew why he would make such a request.

Currently, it was obvious that the Stone of Eternal Life would be more useful to Lin Ming.

Lin Ming's strength had already reached the top levels of the universe, and there was still much room left for growth in his future.

If there was the Magic Cube to help him, then he would have much more assurance to deal with the Soul Emperor.

"Senior, may you tell me the reason?"

When it came to Immortal Sovereign, Lin Ming felt a deep level of respect towards him.

Not to mention that Immortal Sovereign was his elder, but he had also died in the great 10 billion years ago for the races of the 33 Heavens and had established countless war merits.

Just the Holy Scripture Laws had helped him rise from the lowest valley of his life. There was also the thousand year process of the abyssal ritual that had allowed him to complete his final accumulations and break into True Divinity. With all of these things, Lin Ming felt nothing but gratefulness towards Immortal Sovereign.

This sort of benevolence couldn't even be described as being as heavy as mountains and rivers.

Immortal Sovereign said, “If you face the Soul Emperor then the Magic Cube will be a powerful weapon. But in truth, upon reaching the boundary Beyond Divinity, it will not be able to display much of a wonderful role…”

When Lin Ming was at a low boundary, the Magic Cube was nearly invincible when it appeared. No matter how powerful a soul they still seemed incredibly fail in front of the Magic Cube.

But Beyond Divinity was different. This was a boundary where one could create and destroy worlds. The heights they stood were on a level on par with the great universe.

Not just the current times, but even 10 billion years ago, Immortal Sovereign possessed the Magic Cube and the Asura Road Master possessed the Purple Card, yet even together they were only able to cause heavy losses to the Soul Emperor and hadn’t been able to annihilate him.

From this it could be seen just how terrifying the Beyond Divinity boundary was.

Immortal Sovereign continued to say, “The function of the Stone of Eternal Life mainly manifests in its supportive abilities; it is by no means purely a weapon. As for the reason I would like for you to leave it behind, it is because during the last span of years, I have been in discussions with the Demon Lord. Perhaps… we have means of dealing with that old freak so that it isn’t easy for him to completely control the Emperor Bone Sea.

“But in order to do this, we will need the support of the Magic Cube.”

“But…” Lin Ming said, a bit hesitantly. He was afraid that the Magic Cube would be stolen away by the Soul Emperor. However, as he thought about it more carefully, with Immortal Sovereign’s skills and experience there was no way he could commit such a low level mistake.

If their plan couldn’t affect the Soul Emperor at all and would instead deliver a treasure to the Soul Emperor, then Immortal Sovereign would never carry out such a plan.

“I am only borrowing it. Your source soul mark is imprinted into the Stone of Eternal Life, and in the future I will have the means to return it to your hands…”

Immortal Sovereign confidently spoke these words.

For some unknown reason, Lin Ming had a foreboding premonition in his heart.

Immortal Sovereign and the Demon Lord would join together to resist the Soul Emperor; just what sort of result would occur?

Could they stand the ruthless retaliation of the Soul Emperor?

Lin Ming felt that with the Soul Emperor's methods and his understandings of the soul, he likely had thousands of ways to refine a soul and thousands of ways to have one suffer unimaginable tortures.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming was a bit worried. "Senior, are you really sure you can contend with the Soul Emperor?"

In Lin Ming's impression, the Soul Emperor was far too strong an existence. Immortal himself was nothing more than a wisp of remnant soul and the Demon Lord likely wasn't much stronger. Just what could they do to the Soul Emperor?

"How will we know if we don't try?"

Immortal Sovereign smiled. He didn't go into much explanation as to what he would do. "Cultivate here for some time. Afterwards, you can leave…"

Lin Ming hesitated for a bit, and then reluctantly nodded. He deeply looked at the Magic Cube and left it behind.

In his life, Lin Ming had obtained the Magic Cube at 15 years of age, and now was the first time that the Magic Cube was leaving him.

The reason he did this came from his absolute trust in Immortal Sovereign.

MW Chapter 2194

Chapter 2194 – Leaving

…

…

…

The Dark Abyss's 12th layer, the Endless Sea –

This was an unfathomably deep sea that extended onwards without end. The sea was a dark and deep blue that was thick and heavy, similar to mercury. The sea didn't have ordinary fish and shrimps; only powerful demon beasts and abyssals were able to survive here.

At this time, the thick mist above the Endless Sea was as deep as a wall and as heavy as lead. A mortal couldn't even see a foot in this fog and even a martial artist's divine sense would be hindered a great deal.

"Ao!"

A sharp roar cut through the calm surface of the sea, echoing over the horizon. With it, the thick mist parted and dozens of figures hastily rushed out. These people all wore loose blue robes and had appearances no different from the races of the 33 Heavens; they were the ancient race martial artists of the Dark Abyss.

These ancient race martial artists seemed panicked and their movements were messy, as if they were being hunted down by something.

“Those damned beasts can also fly through the skies and shuttle through the seas. Their speed is also much faster than ours. If we cannot reach the home base fast enough then they’ll eventually overtake us.”

A middle-aged martial artist panted. He gripped symbol papers in his hands and every now and then he would crush one and throw it behind himself. As the symbol paper exploded in the thick fog, a howl would follow; it was clear it was some sort of demon beast.

Unfortunately, these yells weren’t the screams of demon beasts being killed by the explosions of the symbol papers, but cries of pain from the demon beasts being injured.

The middle-aged man’s symbol papers were only meant to create some trouble for the demon beasts behind him and delay them for as long as he could; they simply couldn’t kill them and only served to enrage them.

But there was nothing else that could be done.

“Father, I remember that there is a nameless island in front of us. This island has towering trees and these trees are also demon trees that are as hard as iron. If we lead those demon fish inside the dense forest then they’re sure to be slowed.”

The blue-clothed girl who spoke was the daughter of the middle-aged man. Although she was young she had an extremely high status in the group, and this clearly stemmed from her powerful strength.

As soon as she offered this suggestion, the ancient race martial artists felt their hearts sink. That forest of demon trees wasn’t friendly to them either. Those demon trees could also devour people, and if they rushed into the forest then it would be no different from entering the tiger’s den after fleeing the wolves. If the fight continued like this, they were bound to be in an even more dire state.

But the current situation didn’t allow for any hesitation. If they didn’t enter the demon tree forest then there really wouldn’t be any chance to survive.

The howls behind them grew increasingly close. The thick mist above the sea was cut open by the demon beasts. A number of flat creatures that were dozens of feet long were racing over the sea, dragging a long python-like tail behind them as they appeared from the fog.

These were clearly the demon fish that the blue-clothed girl spoke of.

These demon fish were also one of the countless species of abyssals. However, their intelligence was far, far lower than most other abyssals’.

At this time, these demon fish would soon overtake the ancient race martial artists. If this were to continue then they wouldn’t even make it to the demon forest.

The blue-clothed girl clenched her teeth and turned around to slash out with her sword!

To turn around in a chase like this to attack was an incredibly dangerous move. It was easy to be surrounded by these flying demon fish and then be eaten up without even bones remaining.

Moreover, the blue-clothed girl’s sword strike wouldn’t necessarily be able to harm these demon fish; the most it would do was delay them a little.

The disparity in strength between the two sides was simply far too great.

The moment that the blue-clothed girl struck out with her sword, the middle-aged man felt his heart skip a beat; he was afraid something would happen to his daughter.

However, before he could cry out in alarm, a stunned expression filled his face. He stared helplessly on as after the blue-clothed girl slashed out her sword, the single sword light suddenly turned into an overwhelming wave that changed the winds and clouds, causing a rain of blood to fall down from the skies!

The hundreds of demon fish were completely split open by this sword light. They were all torn apart, instantly killed without even time to scream!

And after the demon fish died, even the fog above the sea was cut apart. Every sword light cut opened sections that were a foot wide in the mist. Without the fog to block their way, the middle-aged man could see through this slits to dozens of miles away.

And after several breaths of time, all the fog dissipated. As if it were blown away by a great storm, the entire sea appeared.

The middle-aged man was shocked and the blue-clothed girl was also startled; this sword light was clearly not sent out by them.

Not to mention the might behind the sword light, just the color was different. The little girl's sword light was blue, but that overwhelming sword light just now was black.

Could the black sword light be from a master who caught up to them from the home base?

This thought flashed through the mind of the blue-clothed girl. Then, not too far away, she could see a black-clothed woman floating high in the skies.

This woman had an appearance that neared perfection. Her long hair hung to her waist and she unknowingly exuded a cold and lofty aura that seemed as if she were demanding all others stay at least a thousand miles away. This sort of arrogant aura wasn't deliberate, but was merely something she was born with, making it hard for anyone to muster the courage to look at her.

She had no sword in her hands. In truth, she hadn't used a sword just then either; she had only used her sword fingers.

"This is the ancient race rebel army you spoke of..."

The black-clothed woman lightly said. It was only then that the ancient race martial artists discovered someone else had appeared in the skies at some unknown time.

This man had looks that seemed carved by a saber. His eyes were like a sea of stars, unfathomably deep.

After this man appeared, the black-clothed woman stood beside him, just a little bit behind. Whether it was in mindset or in action, this woman seemed to take this man as the lead.

Such a terrifying woman took this man as a lead. Then this man…

The ancient race martial artists were completely dumbfounded. No matter how they looked at it, this man and woman didn't seem like abyssals at all, but were similar to themselves in appearance. How was this possible…?

Could it be…

A light lit up in the middle-aged man's mind. Many years ago, the leader of the ancient race rebel army, Mo Eversnow, once had some old friend visit her. This person was said to be a man with strength no less than that of Mo Eversnow.

Was it him?

As this middle-aged man was lost in his thoughts, the man actually closed his eyes and felt the salty sea breeze that wafted past him, his mind filled with emotions.

1500 years!

Just the abyssal ritual continued for 1080 years. In addition to the 10 previous years, that was around 1100 years.

Afterwards, Lin Ming and Sheng Mei didn’t immediately emerge, but stayed in to cultivate for another 400 years to thoroughly consolidate their lower True Divinity boundary.

After that, with the help of Immortal Sovereign and the Demon Lord, they directly left the Demon God’s Tomb using a hidden passage and even passed through the Dark Abyss’s 18th layer in a single journey and went all the way to the 12th layer.

All of this happened without anyone noticing.

And at this time, Lin Ming’s True Divinity level strength had completely stabilized. The Nine Stars of the Dao Place was just a little bit away from opening the eighth Dao Palace.

It could be said that Lin Ming’s strength had undergone its greatest rise upwards in his life!

He had been reborn!

After returning to the Dark Abyss, Lin Ming planned to head back to the 33 Heavens with the fastest speed possible. But before that he had to find Mo Eversnow.

He now knew the secrets of the Demon God's Tomb and also knew of the upcoming war between the Dark Abyss and the 33 Heavens. If Mo Eversnow were to continue staying in the Dark Abyss then it would be extremely dangerous for her.

Lin Ming's thoughts were to leave the Dark Abyss together with Mo Eversnow.

Thus, he quickly found this place using a mark he had agreed with Mo Eversnow beforehand.

Within Lin Ming's current strength, as long as he was within a certain range then his sense could lock onto Mo Eversnow's position. After all, Lin Ming was familiar with the array formations she had arranged, so to him these array formations didn't block him much.

"The ancient races have truly declined..."

Sheng Mei sighed. She already knew the situation of the ancient races, however, she hadn't known of her life experiences before so the situation of the ancient races was irrelevant to her. Now, she knew that in her previous life, she was part of the primal god race.

Whether it was the Asura Rod Master or Immortal Sovereign, both of them stemmed from the primal god race.

“Mm… good fortune is forever changing.” Lin Ming sighed with emotion. Then, he turned to the ancient race squad and said, “Is Miss Mo present? Take me to see her…”

The ancient race martial artists glanced at each other. Then, the middle-aged man nodded and slowly said, “The leader, she… she is here…”

MW Chapter 2195

Chapter 2195 – Returning to the 33 Heavens

…

…

…

The ancient race uprising had continued for over a thousand years. For this revolt to continue for such a long time was mainly because of the opening of the Demon God’s Tomb which had shifted the majority of the Demon Association’s attention somewhere else.

After the venture into the Demon God’s Tomb ended, all of the masters from the Flood Alliance and Deep Alliance had been utterly destroyed. To the numerous abyssal influences, this was simply a lightning strike from nowhere!

For a long time after the exit to the Demon God’s Tomb opened, not a single higher abyssal came out. This left the numerous abyssal influences bewildered.

Every large influence, including even the totem level influences, had been severely wounded. And with the deaths of several True Divinities and dozens upon dozens of Empyreans, this wasn't something that any influence could withstand.

During such times, the Demon Association naturally didn't have the heart to pay attention to the ancient race uprising that wasn't on too large of a scale to begin with.

Moreover, in these past years, the ancient race rebels had remained far more low key. From the beginning when they battled all around, they went quiet in order to recuperate and further develop themselves.

Mo Eversnow had inherited a part of Heavenly Empress Xuanqing's memories. In addition to some ancient race cultivation methods that Lin Ming provided, all of these things were distributed amongst the ancient race martial artists to practice with. In these past years many new powerhouses appeared in the ancient race resistance.

The headquarters of the ancient race resist was deep in the Endless Sea.

Before entering the headquarters, Mo Eversnow had sensed Lin Ming and similarly Lin Ming sensed Mo Eversnow.

The two met each other in a grand hall. Mo Eversnow could see through Lin Ming's cultivation with a glance.

Deep astonishment rose up in Mo Eversnow's face. "You… you broke into True Divinity!?"

Lin Ming had broken into the Empyrean realm at around 700 years of age. Afterwards, he spent 5000 years in Tragic Death Valley to reach the peak of the middle Empyrean realm. After that, he took another 1500 years to break into True Divinity. This degree of speed was simply defying the heavens.

"Mm… it is because of reasons concerning the Demon God's Tomb. It is a long story. Senior-apprentice Sister, let us speak as we go."

"Go? Go where?" Mo Eversnow was slightly surprised. She didn't know what Lin Ming was referring to.

Moreover, she was also puzzled about who Sheng Mei was, standing near Lin Ming.

Even Lin Ming had been surprised about Sheng Mei's presence in the Dark Abyss. It was natural for Mo Eversnow to not know about her either.

"We will return to the 33 Heavens!"

Lin Ming succinctly stated. The ancient race rebel army consisted of several hundreds of thousands of people. This amount of people could easily fit into Primordius Heavenly Palace, and transferring them inside wouldn't be difficult either.

And with Lin Ming's strength, he could easily help them pass through the horrifying energy storms around the Eternal God Wall to successfully escape the Dark Abyss.

Lin Ming was already impatient to return. First, the Dark Abyss was too dangerous and second, he was worried about humanity's current situation.

And in truth, humanity's situation was just as Lin Ming worried; it wasn't good at all…

…….

33 Heavens, wild universe –

Over 1500 years had passed since Lin Ming left to go to the Dark Abyss.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign left seclusion 600 years ago, and by that time, humanity's war campaign back into the Divine Realm had ended. Empyrean Divine Dream led humanity back into the wild universe, and by using the Asura Decree, another connection had been formed through the God Lamenting Wall, linking the wild universe with another neighboring universe.

By relying on these two incomparably vast universes, humanity and the saints began a guerilla war once more.

Humanity had caused severe damage to the saints before the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign emerged from seclusion. Thus, even though it was impossible for humanity to directly face the saints now, the saints had limited manpower and resources. With this, the human forces were able to rely on the complex terrains within the wild universes to barely maintain themselves.

This was a chaotic meteor belt with space storms and interstellar dust that blocked a martial artist's sense. Because this interstellar dust was able to block out the light of stars, this region was hard to locate in the broad universe.

In fact, finding one such meteor belt was meaningless. In the wild universe, the number of similar meteor belts formed of interstellar dust was counted with 'trillions' as the base unit. Every interstellar belt could extend for trillions of miles, and if one wished to search through all of them it required transferring over a massive number of masters to carry out a full on carpet search with their sense.

Those with the ability to carry out such a search in a short period of time needed to have at least an Empyrean level cultivation, and many saint Empyreans had perished. Even so, Empyreans still needed to cultivate. It would be impossible for the saints to encircle humanity in the wild universe like they did the first time.

In this meteor belt there were all sorts of complex spatial structures that formed a maze. In the center of this maze were layers upon layers of interconnected illusory magic arrays.

These illusory magic arrays were incomparably mystical. Let alone an ordinary saint martial artist, even if a saint Empyrean were to step inside, they would be left confused by the arrays and stranded within.

Such potent illusory magic arrays were Divine Dream's handiwork. With her strength, it would be impossible for anyone to break through them unless the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign personally arrived. read Martial World novel at ReadNovelFull

In the last 8000-9000 years that humanity had resisted the saints, although humanity had suffered losses, they also grew by a great deal. This was particularly true when it came to their abilities to conceal themselves and lay out formations.

In order to protect the growing seeds of humanity, Empyrean Divine Dream personally laid down hundreds of these illusory magic arrays through the wild universe, making it that much harder for the saints to find them.

Like this, humanity continued to struggle with the saints. They managed to hold on, but there was a matter that caused dark clouds to hover in the hearts of all human martial artists.

That was… when the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had gone into seclusion, he had swallowed up the destiny of humanity's essence gathering system. Now, there was a divide that separated humanity from the essence gathering system Heavenly Dao.

This divide didn't affect the existing strength of a martial artist, but it hindered them from furthering their cultivation.

Now, when a human martial artist cultivated to the Nine Divine Shifts, they would feel incredibly strained. At the World King boundary, this resistance increased by hundreds and thousands of time, making it almost impossible to break through.

As for lower Empyreans rising to middle Empyreans, and middle Empyreans rising to upper Empyreans, this process was originally not easy to begin with, but it had now become far more difficult.

If this continued, then the destiny of humanity would eventually fade away to nothing.

This was the so-called moment when a race's destiny reached its end.

In the endless flow of history, it wasn't uncommon for a race to meet their demise because their destiny had reached its end. 10 billion years ago, the primal god race were unimaginably powerful, yet they too slowly withered away because their destiny was at its end.

Compared to the primal god race, humanity was far from being able to compare, whether it was in strength or numbers. Thus it wouldn't be strange if humanity perished in this great calamity.

Now, the young generations of humans had already started to wither and wane. Underneath this curse, martial artists with ordinary degrees of talent were only able to reach the Divine Sea realm. Proud children of humanity would be able to break into Holy Lords, but upon encountering the World King realm, all sorts of resistances would rise to meet them so that they weren't successful.

An atmosphere of gloom and dread began to slowly spread amongst humanity.

Although there was the protection of array formations, there were no new masters born within the younger generation and it was difficult for the older generation to rise again in strength. Amongst the human powerhouses, one dead meant one less.

If this continued for long enough, then humanity would be defeated without even being able to put up a fight.

Within this belt of interstellar dust, within a small independent world –

A youth sat in the void. This youth wore black clothes and had a spear harnessed to his shoulders. His looks were solemn and decisive, and the edges of his face were sharp and distinct. He gave off a swift and fierce aura.

Looking at this youth carefully, he resembled Lin Ming somewhat.

He was Lin Ming's eldest son – Lin Huang.

At this time, six people were standing in front of Lin Huang – Xiao Moxian, Dragon Fang, Jun Bluemoon, Hang Chi, Emperor Shakya, as well as a black-clothed girl with a beautiful appearance and skin as white as snow.

This girl appeared around 17-18 years old. Her figure was slim and her legs were thick and round. Although she was beautiful, her weapon was a dark red nine foot long scythe.

This scythe had an extremely fearsome shape. It was like three sharp fangs were stacked on the edge from large to small, but even the smallest blade was half a foot wide. When this weapon was contrasted with the girl's slender figure and her porcelain-like skin, it formed a strong visual contrast.

This black-clothed girl had once encountered Lin Ming. Her name was Sable Ink and she was Dark Demon Monarch's direct disciple. She was renowned within the younger generation of humanity and was called the second coming of Xiao Moxian.

At this time, Dragon Fang, Jun Bluemoon, Sable Ink, Lin Huang, Hang Chi, and Xiao Moxian were sitting at the ends of a six-point star drawn in the void.

As for Emperor Shakya, his hands were gathered together as he stood still in the center of these six people.

An invisible momentum rose out from Emperor Shakya's body, forming a different world.

In this world, there were buddhist platforms and buddhas reciting abstract truths. Beams of divine light soared through the skies, turning into flows of golden scriptures that snaked through the void.

After 1500 years, Emperor Shakya had broken into True Divinity!

MW Chapter 2196

Chapter 2196 – Imprisonment of the Divine Chains

…

…

…

Emperor Shakya had always been one of the most peak powerhouses of humanity. If it weren't for the great decline of humanity's martial arts civilization, his road of cultivation would have been far smoother.

In the first great invasion that the saints launched in the wild universe, he had been at the Empyrean limit. But now, he had finally stepped into True Divinity.

Emperor Shakya was also the second True Divinity of humanity.

Seven people were sitting in a grand hall, silently. Emperor Shakya sat above a lotus throne, his ten fingers weaving together as he produced buddhist seal after buddhist seal.

This lotus throne was one of Mount Potala's magic tools. Mount Potala had an inheritance that extended for billions of years, and the throne was one of their most precious cultivation support items.

When it came to magic tools, there were numerous offensive and defensive kinds. But when it came to auxiliary magic tools, they were actually quite rare because the array formations required to refine one were exceedingly complex.

Hum –

Hum –

Golden light dazzled outwards on the lotus throne. The surrounding heaven and earth origin energy gathered around the six surrounding people. For a time, the light Laws sparkled and Supreme phantoms appeared behind these six people.

A Supreme phantom was the symbol of an Empyrean.

Now, Dragon Fang, Xiao Moxian, Lin Huang, Hang Chi, Sable Ink, and Jun Bluemoon all had Empyrean level cultivations; the only difference was that they were in different small boundaries.

In the great calamity of humanity, many human masters grew at an astonishing speed.

For geniuses at the rank of Lin Huang or Sable Ink, they didn’t need 10,000 years to become an Empyrean; 7-8 thousand years was enough. 10,000 and several thousand some years was enough time for them to reach the upper Empyrean realm or even the limits of an Empyrean.

Unfortunately, several hundred years ago the destiny of humanity had been imprisoned, so if these people wanted to make a breakthrough they first had to break through the Heavenly Dao’s divine chains of order.

However, wanting to break through these divine chains was easier said than done. When Lin Ming broke through to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, he had relied upon an inestimable accumulation of destiny and treasures. In addition, Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian had dual cultivated, and while he was being chased down by Tian Mingzi and his back was against the river in a life or death situation, it was only during that critical moment that he broke through the Heavenly Dao dao diagram and obtained the power of the Nine Stars.

But amongst humanity, there really wasn’t anyone capable of comparing with Lin Ming, and it was also difficult to reproduce the same situation that Lin Ming faced in the past.

Thus, the proud elites of humanity each started to test different methods to make breakthroughs.

For instance, within the great array formation managed by Emperor Shakya, six Empyreans attacked the bindings of the divine chains together.

Within the great array, Emperor Shakya was only playing a supportive role. Whether or not one could break past the chains relied on a martial artist themselves.

The higher a cultivation a martial artist possessed, the stronger their shackles would be.

Ultimately, everything boiled down to one’s talent, potential, as well as their determination in attacking chains of the Heavenly Dao.

All of this together decided if one was strong enough to defy the heavens and change their lives!

Six lights wove together into a star. Emperor Shakya emitted brilliant golden light from every acupoint. This light coalesced into a buddha as the sound of chanting sutras lingered in the world, persisting for a long time.

At this time, in the skies, the divine chains of order had formed a heavenly dao diagram that pressed down on the heads of all present.

The lotus throne beneath Emperor Shakya's feet revolved and a golden hand shot upwards. At the same time, the six Empyrean martial artists around Emperor Shakya each tried to break through their own respective cultivation bottlenecks!

During these years that the essence gathering system had been sealed away, they had all reached their peaks in their small boundaries. If it weren't for the divine chains of order hindering them, they would have already made their breakthroughs.

Bang!

The golden hand gathered together with the strength of the six people and violently crashed into the heavenly dao diagram, causing it to shake!

Again and again, the brutal strikes continued. Every time the dao diagram dimmed, it was immediately supplemented by the golden divine chains of order that snaked around like pythons, adding more energy to the dao diagram.

If one attacked the heavenly dao diagram, they would cause a backlash to occur.

Xiao Moxian was fortunately able to withstand it. She had a deep background and possessed formidable potential, and she even possessed the body of a God Beast.

But as for Hang Chi and Sable Ink, they were shaken by the strength of the Heavenly Dao. Their meridians were damaged by the shaking strength and blood flowed out from the corners of their mouths.

Before their impact against the heavenly dao diagram lasted for an incense stick of time, they had already exhausted themselves.

If this continued then they would suffer catastrophic and irreversible losses.

They slowed down. Dragon Fang, Jun Bluemoon, and Lin Huang also slowed down a great deal. After an incense stick of time passed, Xiao Moxian stopped too.

This time, their attempt to break past the chains of the Heavenly Dao had been defeated.

This result didn't leave them surprised because they had already failed many times before this.

But, the repeated failures caused gloomy clouds to appear in their hearts.

The several of them were already the elites amongst the human elites. If they weren’t able to break through the chains of the Heavenly Dao then there was no need to mention other martial artists.

During these years, many human martial artists had turned their gaze towards the body transformation system and began to cultivate the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

This included Lin Huang; he placed even more of his time in cultivating the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

But humanity’s body transformation technique had been abandoned for 3.6 billion years. How easy could it be to redevelop this cultivation system from the ground up?

Moreover, even the body transformation Laws were still partially blocked by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. If one wished to cultivate them, there was still tremendous resistance!

In truth, after humanity’s destiny had been shackled, besides relying on one’s potential to break through, one could also rely on brute force.

When a martial artist reached the upper True Divinity realm and they possessed the corresponding Laws (such as the Swallowing Laws or the Curse Laws), then they would have the ability to change the destiny of an ordinary race. If they could reach the realm Beyond

Divinity, then they would have the ability to create and destroy worlds, and even influence the flow of destiny for an entire universe.

Likewise, if one wished to use brute force to break through the chains of the Heavenly Dao, they needed at least an upper True Divinity level of strength to accomplish this.

However, amongst the entire human race, no one had reached this boundary.

When it came to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, whether it was Divine Dream or Emperor Shakya, they were both a great deal weaker than him.

And with the essence gathering system locked away, it would be even more difficult for Divine Dream or Emperor Shakya to surpass the Good Fortune Saint Son.

At this time, Sable Ink swallowed a pill and began to meditate and restore herself. As she stabilized her tumbling blood vitality, she looked up at the heavenly dao diagram that was gradually fading away into the skies. She couldn't help but sigh deeply and say, "Senior Lin Ming... he is truly an outstanding human hero."

Sable Ink was well aware that when the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was sealed away in the past, Lin Ming had relied on his amazing potential, his determination, as well as Xiao Moxian's help to break past the heavenly dao diagram.

With Emperor Shakya assisting through an array formation and the six Empyreans joining forces, the difficulty of breaking into the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace in the past was far greater than what these six people had to undergo now.

Yet none of these geniuses were able to break past the barrier. Moreover, the more attempts they tried, the more they could feel how terrifying the bindings of the Heavenly Dao were. Without feeling this for themselves, none of them would have had an inkling of how difficult this was for Lin Ming in the past.

“Lin Ming…”

As Xiao Moxian heard Sable Ink speak of Lin Ming, her gaze seemed to turn distant. Since Lin Ming left, he had spent 500 years in Tragic Death Valley and around 1500 years in the Demon God’s Tomb; he had been gone for a full 2000 years.

Because Xiao Moxian hadn’t cultivated in Tragic Death Valley for such a long time like Lin Ming did, her age hadn’t yet reached 10,000 years. However, for most of this time, she and Lin Ming had been separated.

In their first parting, 7000 years had passed. In their second parting, 2000 years had already passed…

Moreover, this time, she didn’t know if Lin Ming was alive or dead, or even if he was doing well. How could she not be worried?

Lin Ming had gone to the Dark Abyss this time, and that place was just far too dangerous…

“Father will be safe.”

Beside Xiao Moxian, Lin Huang had just recovered. He gently held onto his mother’s hand to comfort her.

“Mm.” Xiao Moxian nodded.

At this time, Sable Ink felt a bit embarrassed by her loss of decorum just now. She said, “In the past, even when Senior Lin was being chased down by Soaring Feather God King he was still able to create miracles. This time Senior Lin will surely return and his strength will definitely have risen. He should have steadily reached the upper Empyrean realm, or perhaps even reached… peak Empyrean!”

Sable Ink’s eyes flashed with reverence and admiration.

There was no one in humanity that didn’t respect Lin Ming. And, Sable Ink and Lin Huang could be considered peers of the same generation. She had grown up listening to Divine Dream tell stories of Lin Ming, and when it came to respect and worship of the older generation, her fervor was naturally much more intense than that of those like Dragon Fang and Jun Bluemoon who came from Lin Ming’s generation.

“Peak Empyrean…”

Xiao Moxian couldn’t confirm this. In fact, Lin Ming’s talent and potential mainly manifested in his ability to leap past boundaries to fight.

In terms of cultivation speed, Lin Ming couldn’t be regarded as an extreme genius; he was even somewhat slower than Xiao Moxian.

When Xiao Moxian had broken into the Empyrean realm, Lin Ming had only been a half-step Empyrean; he wasn’t much faster than Lin Huang.

This was mainly because the Laws that Lin Ming cultivated were far too high and their difficulty far too great.

Now, Xiao Moxian was merely a little bit from reaching the peak Empyrean realm. It would already be wonderful if Lin Ming could reach the upper Empyrean realm.

MW Chapter 2197

Chapter 2197 – Meeting

…

…

…

"We cannot keep depending on Benefactor Lin. Although we failed in breaking through the heavenly dao diagram this time, we have still gained experience. If this time fails we have next time, and if next time fails we will have the time after that. There will come a day when we break past these chains, and once those chains break, our martial arts accumulations will rise even further than before."

Emperor Shakya slowly said. This could be a summary of the failures in breaking past the heavenly dao diagram this time.

Emperor Shakya was well aware that they couldn't pin all their hopes on Lin Ming. Lin Ming's current cultivation was likely at the upper Empyrean realm and to defeat the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign at this boundary was impossible. No matter how heaven-defying Lin Ming's talent was, there still wouldn't be a chance for him.

"Benefactor Ji…"

Emperor Shakya said as he saw Xiao Moxian appear a bit listless. He wanted to say some words of comfort but didn't know just where to start.

"I'm fine." Xiao Moxian waved her hand. "I understand that Lin Ming won't return for a long time, but I'm simply a bit worried since I haven't received any news about him in such a long time…"

With what Xiao Moxian knew of Lin Ming, his character was firm and stubborn and once he decided on something he would stick to it until the end. Now that he had gone out adventuring, she wondered if he would be able to cultivate enough to contend with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign when he returned.

However, to resist the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was easier said than done. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign possessed immeasurably deep strength to begin with, and now that he had swallowed humanity's destiny, his strength had likely taken another step forwards. And in the 33 Heavens, besides the Soul Emperor who had never acted and whose strength no one knew, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was an absolutely invincible existence.

If Lin Ming wanted to surpass the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign he would likely need a considerably long period of time. Like this, she might not see him for at least another 2000-3000 years.

Moreover, the essence gathering system had been blocked by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. Would Lin Ming's breakthroughs be hindered by this?

"Father will surely be able to break past the chains of the Heavenly Dao."

Lin Huang confidently said. He could sense what Xiao Moxian was thinking. Lin Huang's reverence and admiration of Lin Ming had already reached unreasonable degrees.

"Brother Lin can even break past the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, so there shouldn't be any problems with the essence gathering system's Heavenly Dao. The likelihood is that his cultivation speed will be slowed down a little, but to Brother Lin, this might not be a bad thing. There are no chains that can cage in a True Dragon."

Jun Bluemoon quietly commented.

"As for me, I am looking forward to Lin Ming returning and watching him break through the shackles of the Heavenly Dao with my own eyes. Perhaps I can even gain some enlightenment."

Dragon Fang said as he looked up at the vanishing heavenly dao diagram in the skies. As the spatial ripples faded away, there was a deep sense of unwillingness in his heart.

“Let everything continue on its natural course…” Xiao Moxian silently said. But at this time, her body shook. The pill bottle that was in her hand tumbled to the ground, shaking until the medicinal pill within tumbled out.

Everyone around Xiao Moxian was startled. With her strength it was naturally impossible for a pill bottle to slip out from her hands.

“Mother, what is it?”

“What is it?”

Everyone was concerned. Emperor Shakya had already stood up, his hand tracing his spatial ring. His expression was dignified. During this extraordinary period of time, even they weren’t safe within Divine Dream’s illusory magic arrays. There was a high chance that there could be an enemy attack!

Xiao Moxian touched her chest and took out an old string necklace.

This necklace was the Thousand Mile Heartlink that allowed Lin Ming to find Xiao Moxian when he went to the wild universe. The Thousand Mile Heartlink was refined through the divine runic arts, and because of Xiao Moxian using it too many times in the past, its energy had been used up and the divine runic symbol within had disintegrated.

But before Lin Ming left, he had used his divine runic arts to transform the Thousand Mile Heartlink.

Not only did Lin Ming draw up a new divine runic symbol but he also strengthened its function. In the past, Xiao Moxian had only been able to communicate with Lin Ming in a one-way channel, but now they could communicate both ways.

This was to avoid a situation like in the past, where Lin Ming wasn't able to immediately locate Xiao Moxian after arriving at the wild universe. Otherwise if Lin Ming were to return to the wild universe and still had to look for her in the endlessness of space, then that would just be giving himself more trouble.

Just now, Xiao Moxian had felt a shaking within the Thousand Mile Heartlink. And to be able to commune through the Thousand Mile Heartlink, there was only one person – Lin Ming!

"Lin Ming… he… has returned!"

Xiao Moxian looked at the Thousand Mile Heartlink in her hands with disbelief, her voice filled with a hint of hesitation and uncertainty.

Everyone was startled. Before they could respond, the Thousand Mile Heartlink in Xiao Moxian's hands began to glow with a dim light.

Everyone could see this light, but only Xiao Moxian could hear the sound that transmitted from the Thousand Mile Heartlink…

It really was Lin Ming!

Lin Ming had returned!

"Benefactor Lin, he has already come back?"

Emperor Shakya was stunned. He originally thought that after Lin Ming left, he wouldn't return until he reached a level where he could contend with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. Otherwise there was no meaning in returning.

But only two thousand years had passed; this was far too early.

"Father shouldn't have encountered trouble, right…?" Lin Huang muttered, a bit worried.

"Perhaps Senior Lin was thinking of his family and was afraid that you were worrying over him." The one who spoke was Sable Ink. Her voice was pleasant and her words warmed Xiao Moxian's heart.

Indeed, during all these years, she was worried about Lin Ming.

“He is safe.”

Xiao Moxian happily said. She felt as if a giant stone had been lifted from her heart.

“Unfortunately, Divine Dream went into seclusion to impact the middle True Divinity realm, so we cannot rashly disturb her… mm… Hang Chi, you contact Vast Universe and Dark Demon Monarch to hurry here. Tell them to prepare a welcoming banquet for Lin Ming!”

Emperor Shakya excitedly said. Many important figures of humanity were gathered at this base. As for others, they could come from nearby bases.

The return of the Human Sovereign Lin Ming was an important event for humanity!

“There is no need to prepare a welcoming banquet for now, he has already arrived…” As she spoke, Xiao Moxian began to quickly hurry outside the hall.

“He’s already here?” Emperor Shakya said, a bit puzzled. It had to be known that there were layers upon layers of illusory magic arrays outside their base and these array formations were all personally laid down by Empyrean Divine Dream.

Because of the Thousand Mile Heartlink, Lin Ming was able to easily locate their position. But, he might need to spend some effort getting past the illusory magic arrays.

Everyone hurried to follow her.

As they flew outside the hall, they saw that around 10 miles away in the void, a black-clothed man stepped forwards. These ten miles was crossed in a single step; he arrived in front of them.

This man was Lin Ming!

“Lin Ming!”

“Father!”

“Senior Lin…”

Several people cried out together. Xiao Moxian’s breath quickened and her eyes began to glisten.

After a 2000 year parting, she was able to see Lin Ming stand safely in front of her. This was more important than anything.

“Mm, Senior Lin’s cultivation…”

Sable Ink was dumbfounded. When Lin Ming first returned, Xiao Moxian was too excited so she didn’t pay too much attention to this, but as for Sable Ink and Lin Ming’s other admirers, the first thing they noticed was his cultivation.

At this time, from Lin Ming’s body, she could clearly feel a terrifying aura that was still able to shake her mind and soul while being suppressed.

It was like the Lin Ming in the skies had become as deep as the universe, filled with overwhelming potential and strength that no one could fathom.

Could this be…

The True Divinity realm!?

“How is this…”

“True Divinity!!!?”

Everyone was shocked. Let alone Emperor Shakya, Dragon Fang, and Hang Chi, even Lin Huang who respected Lin Ming the most still couldn't believe this.

True Divinity was an extremely harsh threshold on the road of martial arts. Before the great calamity of the Divine Realm erupted, humanity's martial arts civilization had declined and they lost their methods to break into True Divinity. Because of this, for the last 3.6 billion years there hadn't been a single True Divinity appear. No matter how talented a genius, they still fell before this threshold.

Although the road to True Divinity had been opened, two thousand years ago when Lin Ming left he had only been a lower Empyrean. To return as a True Divinity after this time was far too exaggerated.

This sort of cultivation speed couldn't even be described as heaven-defying.

"Lin Ming, how could you break through so quickly?"

"If you break through at such a speed, will your foundation be unstable?"

"This isn't a consideration of whether one's foundation is steady. Even if he ignored his foundation he still couldn't break through so quickly. Moreover, how could someone with an unstable foundation break into True Divinity?"

For a time, everyone was confused.

Moreover, several hundred years ago, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had imprisoned humanity's destiny. Making breakthroughs had become even more difficult!

Lin Ming wasn't surprised by everyone's responses. He explained, "When I left, although it was for 2000 years, I was in Tragic Death Valley for 500 years. Those 500 years were similar to 5000 years, so in truth I have been gone for 6500 years."

6500 years?

Hearing this explanation, some people were less puzzled. But, this was still difficult to accept. To go from an Empyrean to True Divinity in 6500 years was far too short a time.

The Laws that Lin Ming cultivated in particular were incredibly complex and profound. Although they were potent, they required a great deal of time. Every breakthrough needed a massive accumulation of energy!

MW Chapter 2198

Chapter 2198 – Talks with Good Fortune

…

…

…

After Lin Ming returned, the various human powerhouses began to arrive from all directions. This was because the saints had weakened and their ability to block out the universe was far inferior to the first time they came to wage war in the wild universe. As long as they were careful, Empyrean level masters could freely move about in the starry skies.

The master of the base that Lin Ming returned to was Xiao Moxian. As the master of this land, Xiao Moxian was responsible for setting up a banquet to greet the other masters of humanity as well as help Lin Ming prepare.

During this banquet, Lin Ming was in the leading spotlight. As one of humanity’s leaders he naturally stood in the highest position and was the focal point of the audience.

Sheng Mei also followed Lin Ming as he returned, but she didn’t make a public appearance; she only privately met with Xiao Moxian.

Xiao Moxian had already heard Lin Ming tell her about what happened between him and Sheng Mei 2000 years ago.

When it came to Sheng Mei, it was simply extremely difficult for Xiao Moxian to produce any close and intimate feelings towards her. Even so, Xiao Moxian still gratefully thanked Sheng Mei, because without her she wouldn’t have been able to see Lin Ming again.

As for Sheng Mei, she felt similar towards Xiao Moxian. Although she was willing to stand behind Lin Ming and support him, it was still hard for her to lay down her cold and arrogant pride and contact others on her own initiative.

Thus, Sheng Mei and Xiao Moxian only exchanged several greetings and rounds of small talk before separating.

Sheng Mei sat in meditation alone. As for Xiao Moxian, she began to greet the guests in the grand hall.

However, as Xiao Moxian left, Jiu’er popped her head out and grinned towards Sheng Mei. “Is that beautiful aunty just now Big Brother Lin Huang’s mother? Wow, Daddy is really a flowery playboy, all his wives are as pretty as flowers!”

Jiu’er said, pursing her lips.

During these past years, Jiu’er also grew. Beneath Sheng Mei’s careful guidance, her cultivation increased at a mind-boggling speed. Moreover, because she withstood the baptism of the Heavenly Dao when Lin Ming and Sheng Mei broke into True Divinity, Jiu’er’s awareness of the Laws far surpassed anything her contemporaries could hope to accomplish.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign swallowing humanity’s destiny also couldn’t hinder Jiu’er’s cultivation.

One reason was because Jiu’er was not purely a human, and a second reason was because the Laws that Jiu’er cultivated could not be summed up in humanity’s essence gathering system alone.

The heights she stood at had already surpassed the 33 Heavenly Daos.

Sheng Mei looked at Jiu’er and smiled. She gently traced Jiu’er’s head and said, “I did not come together with your father because he is some flowery playboy…”

“Then why?” Jiu’er crooked her head.

“Probably because of fate…” Sheng Mei quietly said, sighing. In truth, even up until now, she had never been able to rid herself of the word ‘fate’.

“Mama, it’s really lively outside. Did you want to attend the banquet?” Jiu’er asked again.

Sheng Mei shook her head. “I won’t go, but you should go to say hi to your father.”

In truth, ever since returning to humanity with Lin Ming, Sheng Mei found it difficult to integrate herself into this environment.

Whether it was the human Empyreans or Lin Ming’s friends, or even someone like Xiao Moxian who Lin Ming completely trusted, she still felt a deep divide and lack of understanding between them.

Only with Mo Eversnow could Sheng Mei chat for a while.

It was as if she didn’t belong on this world.

However, this wasn’t a problem to Sheng Mei. She was used to being alone and used to being lonely. She didn’t need to socialize with others to be happy, and besides Lin Ming, there was no one else who she needed to accompany her.

She had her own road – a road that she had to walk down, a road that she had no choice but to walk down.

.....

Lin Ming's welcoming banquet was also the celebration banquet for Lin Ming breaking into True Divinity.

There were 12 different banquet tables arranged in the grand hall.

In these complicated wartimes, there weren't many seats, but those that arrived were all overlords of the human race.

For instance, Dark Demon Monarch, Skyrend Godlord, Emperor Shakya, Empyrean Vast Universe, Great Limitless Buddha, and over 20 other human Empyreans had gathered here.

Lin Ming's cultivation speed had left everyone shocked. But at the same time, this also left them worried. With Lin Ming's cultivation speed being so bewilderingly quick, would his strength and comprehension of Laws have been able to follow behind?

Originally Lin Ming took 7000 years to become an Empyrean. Although this was amongst the peak speeds of humanity, it couldn't be called first place. However, Lin Ming had then become a True Divinity at 13,500 years of age; this speed cast off all human martial artists behind him.

As the banquet carried on for a quarter hour of time, Skyrend Godlord was the first to speak. "Lin Ming, now that you've returned, how do you plan on dealing with the saints?"

Skyrend Godlord's words caused everyone to unconsciously set down their glasses and chopsticks and look towards Lin Ming. This was the most important matter that they cared about in coming to Lin Ming's welcoming banquet.

After Lin Ming broke into True Divinity, no one knew where the limits of his strength were.

Without having reached the True Divinity realm, no one knew the disparity between the small boundaries of True Divinity. Now, people were worried that since Lin Ming had just broken into True Divinity and had used such a short period of time to do so, could his foundation be unsteady or would his accumulations be lacking?

After all, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was a True Divinity of the older generation and he had also made considerable progress in the recent past. It was impossible to predict just what levels his strength had reached.

In a situation where no one understood Lin Ming's strength and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's strength, it was naturally difficult for anyone to judge what the current situation would be like. They could only ask Lin Ming what he planned to do for his next step.

Lin Ming put down his chopsticks and thought for a moment. At this time, Vast Universe said, "The current war between humanity and the saints has fallen across several universes and the field is far too large; it isn't something that can be clearly explained in a few words. Lin Ming, I think you don't need to speak out now, but you can take your time to carefully consider your next move."

With the great enemy before them and humanity's destiny on the wane, the various leaders of humanity didn't have any desire to taste the delicious spirit foods laid out before them. They began to discuss the current war situation.

"I think that Your Majesty the Human Sovereign should go into seclusion for some time and further consolidate your foundation…"

The one who spoke was Dark Demon Monarch. Although he came from a demonic background, he had a gentle and scholarly appearance and his tone of voice was extremely respectful.

"Mm… but the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign has blocked the destiny of my race and now the younger generation is fraught with difficulties when they try to cultivate the essence gathering system. Even in the body transformation system it is hard for them to make progress in such a short period of time. If this continues to drag on then the saints won't even need to do anything for my human race to be destroyed!"

Skyrend Godlord looked at Lin Ming with worry on his face. He only hoped that Lin Ming could suggest something, anything that could slightly change the current situation.

Currently, humanity was in a terrible spot. And whether it was Dark Demon Monarch, Great Limitless Buddha, Divine Dream, or Emperor Shakya, no one could offer an effective solution.

It was as if humanity was already pressed into a dead end by the saints with no way out.

"The situation we face is indeed as Skyrend Godlord says, but it is exactly at this moment that we cannot hurry ourselves. If we do, there is a possibility that our weaknesses will be exposed and the saints will ruin us, or even exterminate us."

The one speaking was Emperor Shakya. He felt that throwing out such a sharp question towards Lin Ming was unfair as it would be difficult to come up with any immediate countermeasures. No matter what happened, Lin Ming's return still meant that one of humanity's top powerhouses had come back, and at least they wouldn't be completely crushed in the face of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

As Emperor Shakya spoke he also looked at Lin Ming, wanting to seek out his opinion. The current Lin Ming had already become the pillar of the human race.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. “Senior Dark Demon Monarch suggested that I should go into seclusion to consolidate my boundary, but the truth is that I have already completed this step. After breaking into True Divinity, I still remained in a cultivation holy land for 500 years and my foundation has long since stabilized.”

As Lin Ming said this, many human overlords felt their hearts skip a beat.

It seems that Lin Ming had broken into True Divinity 500 years ago. In other words, when he was 13,000 years of age, he had completed his breakthrough!

As for something that could be called a ‘cultivating holy land’ for Lin Ming, it was likely something truly extraordinary.

“In the 1500 years that I was in the Dark Abyss, there was no news of me, and I apologize for causing everyone to worry over me…” Lin Ming glanced at Xiao Moxian, a little guilt on his face.

Xiao Moxian smiled, casting a peaceful look towards Lin Ming.

In truth, Lin Ming really didn’t have any means to send Xiao Moxian a message. During the days he was in the Dark Abyss, he passed most of them in the completely sealed off Demon God’s Tomb.

“Since I have returned to humanity today, I naturally possess the confidence and ability to face the saints.”

As Lin Ming spoke to here, everyone was shaken. They all held absolute faith in Lin Ming, and if Lin Ming said he had the confidence and ability to face the saints, he naturally wouldn’t be casually joking about this.

“Then what do we do?” Skyrend Godlord said. Because of his excitement, his beard was already shaking.

“I just need everyone to support me. As for me…” Lin Ming paused for a moment, and then slowly and clearly said, “I plan to set up talks with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!”

Lin Ming’s words left the entire audience speechless.

MW Chapter 2199

Chapter 2199 – Sending a Letter

…

…

…

"You want to set up talks with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign?"

"This is…"

The human rulers present were all shaken by Lin Ming's words. They couldn't help but glance at each other with dismay and even the wine in their glasses spilled out. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was expending all efforts to find Lin Ming, and yet Lin Ming wanted to deliver himself on his own initiative.

In a war between races, if one wished to set up talks then both sides had to have equivalent strength. Otherwise, who would want to discuss anything? They would simply eliminate the other party and be done with it.

Could it be that… Lin Ming had confidence he could face the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!?

Realizing this point, everyone was left speechless.

“Lin Ming, you want to fight the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign in a showdown?” Empyrean Vast Universe asked after some time. In his opinion, setting up talks was no different from a challenge to a final battle.

“Do you… have the confidence to defeat the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign?” Xiao Moxian asked, a bit of worry tinting her voice. She believed in Lin Ming, but for Lin Ming to fight the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign after having just broken into True Divinity was far too risky.

“I don’t know what boundary the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign has reached. If possible, I would like to end this war with words alone, and not battle. But, things don’t always go as I hope they do…”

Lin Ming casually said. No one thought that right after Lin Ming returned, his solution to deal with the saints would actually be so simple.

……

The decision of Lin Ming setting up talks with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was passed down. Although Xiao Moxian, Vast Universe, and the others were all worried about him, Lin Ming still possessed an extremely high degree of authority within the human race. He had created far too many miracles in the past and no one would think of questioning him, let alone believe that there was something he couldn't accomplish if he decided on it.

Stepping back, even if the talks weren't successful, there still shouldn't be some disastrous ending.

If Lin Ming faced Good Fortune then even if he was at a disadvantage, he should still be able to withdraw safely.

Thinking of this, many human rulers felt themselves calm down a little. Afterwards they settled on a time and place for the talks to occur, and then news of Lin Ming wishing to set up talks with Good Fortune was sent out.

The ones passing on information were messenger puppets.

In truth, these puppets were in the shape of small spirit ships. After being carefully refined they could carry out great void shifts and even change directions mid-way so no one could find out where they came from.

Over a thousand of these messenger puppets were sent out to the areas where the saints had accumulated in large numbers. Then, around half a month later, the messengers reached the saints...

……

In an elegant garden that hung high in the skies –

In the vast and infinite void of space, a garden extended outwards for hundreds of miles. Spirit plants grew everywhere, with birds and flowers mixing in amongst all the wonders of the heavens and earth.

The edges of the garden were covered by an array formation. If one took a single step outwards they would be met by the deep and infinite starry skies. This sort of scene simply shocked the mind.

Within this garden were several floating celestial mountains. On one celestial mountain, there were blue lotuses that blossomed as large as pans. The flower petals shined like jade, and sitting atop one of these lotuses was a blue-clothed woman.

This woman wore a blue dress that perfectly contrasted her slim figure. Her eyes were long and slender, but her complexion was slightly pale, making her seem as if she were a bit ill.

The woman’s hair was wrapped into a bun, and inserted within this bun were three beautiful feathers. These added to the mysterious and illusory aura that surrounded this woman.

She was Soaring Feather God King’s most favored disciple – Fairy Blue Lotus.

Ever since her suffering under Lin Ming’s hands, Fairy Blue Lotus had gone into seclusion. During these years, her cultivation had rapidly risen.

She didn’t have hopes of catching up to Lin Ming, but she still tried hard while taking Lin Ming as her goal.

Sometimes, by setting up an impossibly high goal, even if one couldn’t reach that goal they could still display their potential to the peak.

Soaring Feather God King had already recused herself from the war between humanity and the saints. As for Fairy Blue Lotus, she had arrived in the wild universe by herself. The reason for this was because the universes of the saints were far too peaceful and bland. Fairy Blue Lotus could find no competition amongst her peers, thus staying in the uneventful and boring Saint Convocation Heavens by herself was no different from going into seclusion alone.

Because of that, Fairy Blue Lotus came to this battlefield and wanted to feel out her own road of martial arts in battle. To be able to see armies battle to the death and even see peak masters fight was a sort of inspiration to her.

Unfortunately, humanity had gone into hiding and it had been a long time since they battled the saints.

During these days, Fairy Blue Lotus had been bitterly cultivating atop this celestial mountain. On this day she suddenly opened her eyes from meditation. She saw that beyond the enchantments of the floating garden, there was a three foot long puppet bird flying towards her location at rapid speed – this was a messenger puppet!

“Mm?”

Fairy Blue Lotus’s thoughts stirred. Her figure flashed and she appeared outside the enchantment.

She reached out her hand and easily grabbed the puppet. As she read the message within, she felt her heart shake.

“This is… what is going on here!?”

The puppet messenger carried with it an information jade slip, and the message recorded within was extremely simple. There were only a few short lines that dictated the time and place for talks with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. And, the one who would be in the talks was – Human Sovereign Lin Ming!

Lin Ming wanted to set up talks with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!?

Fairy Blue Lotus's jaw dropped open. She felt as if her brain had been fried.

Over 2000 years ago was when Fairy Blue Lotus first encountered Lin Ming. She thought Lin Ming was her opponent and led the Legion of Famine to encircle him. However, what followed proved that she and him were on completely different playing fields. And afterwards, he broke into the Empyrean realm and managed to fight to a draw with her own master, Soaring Feather God King!

Although she couldn't help but be sincerely convinced of Lin Ming's strength, she still didn't believe that Lin Ming had gained the strength to fight with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign in a mere 2000 years!

And the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was an existence that could truly be described as unfathomably deep.

As for setting up talks, that was in truth no different from setting up a showdown. Unless, Lin Ming's true self didn't appear.

But if Lin Ming's true self wasn't going to appear then he might as well have transmitted the full message with the messenger puppet. Why would he bother deciding a time and place to set up talks with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign?

Could it be that Lin Ming was already confident that he could fight the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign?

Fairy Blue Lotus felt this was completely impossible. 2000 years ago Lin Ming had a lower Empyrean cultivation. So, what boundary could he have reached now? Could he really be so naïve as to think that someone at the limits of an Empyrean could defeat the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign?

She held tightly onto the puppet messenger as she lost herself in thought. After a moment, she decided that she needed to report this new event to her own master first – Soaring Feather God King.

It wasn't just Fairy Blue Lotus, but many other saint masters obtained this message at around the same time.

This included numerous saint Empyreans as well as elite juniors like Highsun and Darkmoon.

As everyone read through the puppet messengers, they simply felt as if this was a joke being played on them. Or, it was likely a trap!

They didn't really believe that Lin Ming would show up on that day to engage in talks with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. Even if he had 100 times the courage he still wouldn't be that brave. If he really did come, then that wouldn't be brave at all, but instead the height of stupidity.

"Do you think this is humanity's trap?"

At this time, many Empyreans had gathered around the Good Fortune Saint Palace and began speculating on the intentions of the humans.

"Hehe, just what sort of trap could the humans possibly set up? Right now the only True Divinities amongst the humans are Divine Dream and Emperor Shakya. In addition, although Lin Ming hasn't reached the True Divinity realm, he still has the strength of one. By now he should be the strongest person in the human race. But even with those three joining forces, do you really think they could lay down any trap that could possibly threaten His Majesty the Saint Sovereign? Even if the humans were given a thousand years to lay down layers of grand array formations, they wouldn't be able to wound a single hair on His Majesty."

"Indeed! What you said is right, but still, this is strange. Why would the humans be so bored that they would waste time like this? Or, could it be that they have been pressed down so hard by us for all these years, and also because His Majesty the Saint Sovereign has swallowed up their destiny, that they have begun to become impatient and have decided to use such weak methods like this to retaliate?”

“Humph, the human race shouldn’t be so bored as to do this. But no matter what their plan is, it's impossible for Lin Ming to show up that day… that person’s strength is amazing and his rate of growth is too fast. He’s nothing but a thorn in our side and the greatest disaster that could descend in the future. For someone like him, it's impossible that he could be so stupid.”

“I can’t figure out why the humans are doing this. As for whether or not this is a trap, I believe all of you are far too worried. Let alone the humans, not even the spiritas could do anything if they joined in. As long as we investigate beforehand then it will be fine. Moreover, His Majesty the Saint Sovereign can use his sense to probe from a distance. If there is any sign of a trap, he will be able to find clues.”

The many saint Empyreans were left dumbfounded. They analyzed the messenger puppets and speculated on the reason that they were sent out, but in the end they couldn’t figure out what the humans were intending.

And at this time, whether it was Soaring Feather God King or Astral Vault God King, they had also obtained the news.

“Interesting, how interesting!”

Astral Vault God King rubbed his chin, excitement brewing within him.

Lin Ming wanted to set up talks with Good Fortune!

He also didn’t believe that Lin Ming’s strength could grow so quickly, but this didn’t stop him from looking forwards to this event. He wanted to see just what Lin Ming and the humans were planning to do.

“It looks like I will need to make a trip to the wild universe.” Astral Vault God King said, anticipation thick in his voice. Although he had withdrawn from the war between humanity and the saints, this didn’t mean he couldn’t go to watch the show.

MW Chapter 2200

Chapter 2200 – Day of the Meeting

…

…

…

Within the Good Fortune Saint Palace, in a golden hall, a tall and powerfully built middle-aged man was sitting upon an opulent throne.

This throne was forged from eternal stone. The seat was 10 feet wide and as the man sat here, he seemed to sit upon all beings in existence, making it nearly impossible to look up to him.

His eyes were filled with a disdainful indifference, as if nothing in the world could possibly cause his heart or mind to waver.

This man was the ruler of the saints – the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

At this time, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was holding a jade slip in his hands, no joy or anger evident on his face.

He had already looked through the contents of this jade slip; it held a message that Lin Ming wished to set up talks with him.

And in this golden hall were many saint race powerhouses. Of those that could stand here, even the ones with the lowest cultivation were at the middle Empyrean realm.

Everyone could see the jade slip in the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's hand. They originally thought that this was a meaningless message, but they never imagined that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would suddenly take it out at this time.

They didn't say anything. The matter with the humans sending out these jade slips was puzzling, but since the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had already seen it, it was naturally up for him to make the decision on whether he would want to attend.

"Three days from now, you will all follow me to the Hidden Dragon Galaxy."

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign simply said. The Empyreans present were stunned. The Hidden Dragon Galaxy was the meeting place designated in the jade slip.

They never thought that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would really decide to attend.

"Your Majesty Saint Sovereign, you really intend to go?"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn't respond. He simply waved his sleeves and left, leaving the many saint Empyreans looking at each other with looks of dismay.

It seemed that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign truly planned on attending. But what if the humans didn't come at that time?

However, no one dared to defy the orders of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. Thus, three days later, the many saint Empyreans set off from the Good Fortune Saint Palace.

"Hahaha, Soaring Feather, I knew you would return too."

Astral Vault had already guessed that Soaring Feather would come. Casting out his sense, he soon found her. They hadn't seen each other for 2000 years.

Beside Soaring Feather God King was Fairy Blue Lotus. As for Astral Vault God King, he had also brought his two disciples – Darkmoon and Highsun.

"I naturally cannot miss such a grand occasion." Soaring Feather faintly smiled.

“Let’s go first.”

“Great!”

Soaring Feather and Astral Vault only had a so-so relationship with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and didn’t plan on joining his group.

Like this, the Good Fortune Saint Palace, Soaring Feather, Astral Vault, as well as many other saint race influences all started to head towards the Hidden Dragon Galaxy.

When it came to this, the Empyreans of many influences weren’t willing to go. After all, no one wanted to be made a fool by others. However since this was the order of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, no one dared to not go.

But as they approached the Hidden Dragon Galaxy, all of these Empyreans were slowly silenced.

This was because when they spread their sense to the surrounding areas of the Hidden Dragon Galaxy, they discovered that there were human spirit ships in the vicinity.

“It’s a human fleet. Did Lin Ming really come?”

“What are the humans thinking? They want one final battle?”

Many saint martial artists were dumbfounded.

The Hidden Dragon Galaxy covered an incredibly large area, but by relying on the positions of the human spirit ships, they found the approximate location of the talks.

And as everyone saw what was before them, they were utterly shocked.

In the distant starry skies, they could see a small planet floating about.

This small planet was only several hundred miles in diameter. It was originally impossible for life to form on such a small planet, but it actually contained countless spirit trees and treasures of the heavens and earth.

These spiritual plants all casually grew over the planet, and above it was a pavilion floating in the skies.

This pavilion was far simpler. It only encompassed an area of several dozen feet, and sitting in it was a young man.

This young man had extraordinary features and a temperament as ephemeral as dust. Just by sitting there he was like a spear that shook the hearts of those who saw him!

In front of this man was a long table. The young man sat at one end of the table, and on it was a pot of wine as well as several cups.

As the many saint race martial artists arrived, the man waved his hand in invitation. His gaze was directed at the Saint Palace in the skies, his eyes bright and shining as if he could pierce through the palace walls and array formations to see the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

“Lin Ming!”

“It’s really him!”

Many saint Empyreans had seen Lin Ming before, and even if they hadn’t, they had at least looked at his portrait. This man sitting there was undoubtedly Lin Ming.

They never imagined that not only would Lin Ming show up but he would also be sitting there so calmly, as if he were attending a gathering with friends!

"It's not just Lin Ming that came, but many human Empyreans are also here. They are in full battle array not too far away!"

The human spirit ships were here. As long as they traced back the position of the spirit ships, it wasn't difficult to find that there were over 20 human Empyreans standing nearby.

These human Empyreans were all high level figures of humanity!

If Lin Ming as well as so many other Empyreans died here then humanity's fate could be imagined.

"What is happening? Aren't they afraid that they will die here?"

"Maybe the spiritas are involved!"

Doubt flashed in the hearts of many saint martial artists. But at this time, someone discovered Lin Ming's cultivation.

Although there was a great distance separating them, when facing Lin Ming, they felt as if they were facing the endless starry skies. A powerful suppressive feeling fell over them.

The closer they approached the stronger this feeling became. Many Empyreans felt their breath catch in their throats. Moreover, even when Lin Ming casually moved, his movements seemed to contain indescribable concepts within, making them impossible to discern.

“True Divinity!”

“He actually broke into True Divinity!”

“It’s only been 2000 years, how is this possible…”

Many saint martial artists were panic-stricken. They never thought that in such a short period of time, Lin Ming would manage to break into True Divinity.

“True Divinity…”

Fairy Blue Lotus took in a deep breath. Lin Ming’s speed of growth was far too fast, so fast that she couldn’t muster the courage to take him as a goal…

She couldn’t help but glance at her master. Soaring Feather God King had once fought with Lin Ming in the past, and was likely the most qualified one here to estimate him.

Soaring Feather God King's eyes sparkled. She was also incomparably amazed. "Strange… if Lin Ming could break through so quickly, he surely must have had a fortuitous encounter. But, I cannot imagine just what sort of fortuitous encounter can arrive at this level."

"His breakthrough is too fast. I wonder what his foundation and strength are like…" Astral Vault God King commented from beside Soaring Feather God King. He licked his lips, looking forwards more and more to today's events.

True Divinity Lin Ming against the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

The saint race spirit ships all paused before the small planet. Many saint martial artists were completely silent. As they looked at Lin Ming in the distance, dread and awe filled their eyes

Lin Ming hadn't laid down his hand yet; he was still reaching out in an invitational gesture.

At this time, a hearty laugh echoed out from the Good Fortune Saint Palace.

"Extraordinary, truly extraordinary! You actually broke into True Divinity! No wonder you found the courage to face me!"

This voice was faintly indifferent but it rolled forwards like a thunderstorm, resounding through the universe!

A middle-aged man in golden robes stepped out from the Good Fortune Holy Palace. With just a few steps, he fell atop the small planet where Lin Ming was.

This man was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

At this time, he was only 100 feet away from Lin Ming. For True Divinity level masters this distance was no different from being face to face.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's eyes blazed as he looked at Lin Ming, an incomprehensibly happy expression on his face. "Did you think that you could fight me after you broke into True Divinity? For your cultivation to grow so quickly, you likely entered some sort of special time enchantment where the flow of time can be increased without twisting the Laws so that a martial artist can safely cultivate within?"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's words left the saint martial artists stunned.

This sort of time enchantment was exceedingly rare; only a small number of people here had ever heard of something similar.

The cultivation that one gained from bitterly secluding themselves in such a time enchantment was different from the cultivation which one gained from adventuring outwards and living through all sorts of slaughters. Even though both could be considered growth through fortuitous encounters, the combat efficiency developed through both methods were on completely different levels.

This was just like a flower cultivated in a greenhouse compared to the weeds that withstood the harsh weather outside.

If Lin Ming had used 2000 years of time and entered into such a time enchantment to rapidly increase his cultivation, then breaking into True Divinity wouldn't be strange.

Thinking of this, many saint Empyreans felt much more relaxed.

In these sorts of special ancient time enchantments, the flow of time wouldn't be too ridiculously exaggerated. 2000 years would be around 10,000-20,000 years.

With this in consideration, Lin Ming's breakthrough was within reason. After all, his potential and foundation were evident to all.

But to become a True Divinity in a time enchantment, in particular when jumping past several small Empyrean boundaries, it was inevitable that one's Laws and strength would be influenced!

MW Chapter 2201

Chapter 2201 – Talks Collapse

…

…

…

Amongst the saint Empyreans, whether it was the older generation or younger generation, they all held a deep sense of hostility and envy towards Lin Ming.

Lin Ming was far too blinding an existence. To break through to True Divinity at around 10,000 years of age and also set up talks with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign – this was already on a completely different playing field than them.

Ever since ancient times, those of the same profession always competed against each other. This was true for martial artists and especially if martial artists stood on opposite sides. No one wanted to admit that they were inferior, and no one was willing to destroy their own prestige to glorify the ambitions of others.

“What is His Majesty Saint Sovereign still waiting for? He should just strike right now. This Lin Ming relied upon a time enchantment to break into True Divinity and is nothing at all compared to His Majesty the Saint Sovereign.”

“The Saint Sovereign should deal with Lin Ming while we encircle the other human masters. In this battle today we can severely wound humanity!”

Many saint Empyreans began to rapidly calculate various scenarios in their minds. As for talks or anything like that, they simply didn’t care. For most of those present, today was a day of slaughter!

And at this time, on the small planet, Lin Ming reached out a hand in invitation once more.

“Your Majesty Saint Sovereign, how about taking a seat?”

Lin Ming said with a smile, his tone calm and without waves. To be able to remain so composed beneath the pressure of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, this wasn’t something that ordinary True Divinity level masters could hope to accomplish.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign looked at Lin Ming and said, “I actually want to hear you speak, and listen to just what you can say.”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign waved his sleeves. In the next moment he was already sitting in the seat. The table in front of Lin Ming was only 20 feet long, and the two sat at opposite sides of the table. Lin Ming slowly poured a cup of wine.

This caused the many saint Empyreans present to feel bewildered. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign held a supremely revered status within the saint race, and no one had the qualifications to sit at the same table and drink with him; this was true even for Soaring Feather and Astral Vault.

But now, the human Lin Ming was treating the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign as an equal, drinking wine at the table!

Woosh!

No one could see when, but a jade slip flew out from Lin Ming and towards the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn’t even move. The arrow-like jade slip automatically stopped in front of him.

Divine sense swept out. This was only an instant, but the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign immediately read through the information within the jade slip!

Within the jade slip, Lin Ming had described the Soul Emperor's plot.

The abyssals would sooner or later swallow up the 33 Heavens. The ancient war that occurred 10 billion years ago would descend upon the world once more.

The contents of the jade slip would horrify anyone. Even the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign found it hard to remain calm after reading through it.

He looked at Lin Ming with surprise and said, "What did you say? You said that the Soul Emperor's body has been seized?"

"His body was seized at least several hundred million years ago… the current 33 Heavens' Soul Emperor is no longer a spiritas." Lin Ming slowly finished his cup of wine and poured more.

The information that Lin Ming gave out caused a cold chill to creep down the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's back. But, there was no way he could fully believe Lin Ming's words.

These events were far too world-shocking. If Lin Ming were intentionally deceiving him, there was no way he could know what was true and what was false.

"You said that Immortal Sovereign is sealed in the Dark Abyss's Demon God's Tomb, and also that the Demon God's Tomb has developed a spiritual wisdom that wishes to enslave the entirety of the 33 Heavens. All of this is only said by you alone, so on what basis can I believe you?"

"On the basis of your own judgment." Lin Ming simply replied.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign couldn't help but sneer. "You might as well have said nothing at all. With just a single jade slip you want me to end the war between humanity and the saints, and then transfer all forces to resist the spiritas? That is simply too ridiculous!

"Moreover, the story you created has too many holes. If you say that this Demon God's Tomb Master is so horrifying and is capable of seizing the Soul Emperor's body and also controlling totem level abyssals, then let me ask you why he has never bothered with me. Since he can seize the Soul Emperor's body then he can naturally take over me too. I control Famine, and controlling me is the same as controlling Famine; wouldn't that even be easier? Moreover, something like me coming to these talks today would never have occurred if he did!"

Lin Ming wasn't surprised by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's words. He had already considered this matter before.

Lin Ming said, "No one has infinite strength. According to the view of Your Majesty Saint Sovereign, then I can ask you the same question. How come the Demon's God Tomb Master doesn't simply control all lives in the 33 Heavens and Dark Abyss, seizing the bodies of all abyssals and becoming the absolute ruler of them all? If he did that then no one would be able to oppose him!

"This is clearly impossible. He doesn't possess such horrifying strength nor is his soul force strong enough. In other words, when it comes to controlling others or seizing the bodies of others, there is always a limit.

"In truth, this is the same for everyone. When a puppet master controls a puppet there will always be a limit, especially when this concerns formidable puppets!

"Then, there must be a limit to the number of upper True Divinities and peak True Divinities that the Demon God's Tomb Master can control. This number surely cannot be too many. For instance, let's say he can at most divide his soul into three, one part seizing the Soul Emperor's body, one for Deep, and one for Flood, and by doing so he controlled the three most formidable existences in the world. But as for you… it's regrettable, but you do not meet the standards."

Lin Ming spoke at an unhurried pace, but as the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign listened to him, these words grated on his ears.

Plainly speaking, Good Fortune's strength was too poor and wasn't even worth a glance.

Lin Ming's explanation was fair and reasonable. Famine had been wounded long ago and it was likely because of this that the Demon God's Tomb Master gave up on controlling it.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's complexion darkened. But, he didn't lash out at Lin Ming's taunting. "So what if your story can be justified? My saint race has been preparing for this war for far too long, and you want my saint race to call for a truce just because of a story alone and then transfer all forces to resist the Soul Emperor? Wouldn't that be the greatest joke in the world?"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign said, still not believing Lin Ming's words. But, Lin Ming was already prepared for this. He slowly traced his spatial ring and drew out the Black Dragon Spear!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign narrowed his eyes, his body overflowing with killing intent.

The pressure of a peerless powerhouse completely erupted at this moment. Even the planet beneath the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign began to shake, as if it couldn't withstand this pressure.

As this massive pressure fell around Lin Ming, he lightly stroked the Black Dragon Spear, not even lifting his head as he said, "In truth, the reason Your Majesty Saint Sovereign launched an all-out war against humanity was to swallow up humanity and obtain a massive amount of resources and blood vitality, all in order to help you complete your ambitions to swallow all of existence? You believed that your final opponent was the Soul Emperor and that the Soul Emperor was your greatest threat to dominating the 33 Heavens.”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn’t deny or confirm Lin Ming’s words. He only sneered and said, “And what are you trying to say?”

“All of your plans are based upon the premise that the saint race is stronger than humanity. But, if the saints cannot defeat humanity, then I believe there is no reason for you to continue such a mutually damaging war.”

“Mm!?” Lin Ming’s words caused the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s eyebrows to jump up, a cold light flashing in his eyes!

Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s conversation wasn’t isolated from others. The saint Empyreans that were standing hundreds of miles away could clearly hear everything.

Lin Ming’s provocation caused them to draw out their weapons and revolve their true essence!

“The saints cannot defeat humanity?”

“Hahaha, how funny!”

Some saint Empyreans laughed in anger. They wanted to fight here and prove just how silly Lin Ming's words were!

Towards the responses of the many saint Empyreans, Lin Ming didn't care about them at all. He faintly turned his head until his eyes came to a stop on Astral Vault God King and Soaring Feather God King.

When these two arrived, Lin Ming had already sensed their presence.

Lin Ming faintly smiled. "Two God Kings, do you remember the agreement that we had in the past? I agreed to withdraw from the war between the saints and humanity with you two, but we also agreed that I have a personal grudge with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, an enmity of life and death. I will not attack any saint race subjects, and will only strike out at the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, right?"

Soaring Feather and Astral Vault vividly remembered their past agreement with Lin Ming. Astral Vault nodded, "Indeed."

"Mm… very good! If you two God Kings do not interfere, then I will prove that…" As Lin Ming spoke to here, he turned towards the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and slowly stood up.

“I will prove that my strength far surpasses that of His Majesty the Saint Sovereign. Then, on the battlefield, no one amongst the saints will be able to contend with Emperor Shakya and Empyrean Divine Dream! If so, then the saints will not be able to defeat humanity!

“At that time, is there still a reason for the war to continue?

“And under these same circumstances, will Your Majesty Saint Sovereign still believe that I am lying to you?”

As Lin Ming spoke, his right hand had already grasped the Black Dragon Spear.

In that instant, the surrounding air froze over!

MW Chapter 2202

Chapter 2202 – Battle of True Divinities

…

…

…

Peng!

The moment Lin Ming picked up the Black Dragon Spear, the table and all the chairs around him exploded, turning into dust!

Killing intent recklessly surged outwards. Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, two peerless masters, stood in sharp contention to each other!

For powerhouses on their level, in the world of the 33 Heavens just their auras alone were able to shatter space.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's clothes flapped in the wind. A sneer hung on his face. At this moment from within his body, a sound rose up, as if a dragon was howling into the heavens. This howl deafened the ears and impacted through the vastness of space, causing the world to lose its color and storms to stir up. Behind the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, a 10,000 foot high phantom of a spiritual god appeared.

This phantom grasped a lance in hand, its appearance like a towering mountain. Its eyes were like two blazing suns that illuminated the world as it looked down upon everyone with cold disdain.

"Ah..."

A series of stuffy coughs spread throughout the audience. The human and saint race World Kings were simply unable to look straight at this spiritual god phantom. Just from a single glance, they felt their bodies shake as if they had been struck by a hammer and were nearly forced to their knees.

Even the many Empyreans present felt a tremendous pressure as they faced this spiritual god phantom, as if a mountain were being pressed down upon them. The force nearly made them fall to their knees in worship, unable to withstand the excruciating pressure.

"You... you have decided to fight me?"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign looked at Lin Ming, his tone filled with arrogant contempt.

At this time, with the spiritual god phantom behind him, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign seemed like a true living god; no one could defy him!

“Saint Sovereign immortal, 10,000 lives immortal!”

On the side of the saints, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s followers began to cry out.

“Those who dare affront His Majesty’s dignity – death!”

Many saint Empyreans were stirred into a frenzy as the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign revealed his strength!

This was the might of their ruler. Moreover, none of them wished to engage in these meaningless negotiations to begin with. What they wanted to do was watch the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign roll over Lin Ming and suppress him, and then the saints could rush forwards in droves to rip apart the human forces so that not a single one of them was left alive!

On the human side, as Emperor Shakya, Dark Demon Monarch, and the others saw this scene occur, all of them had dignified expressions. Xiao Moxian clenched her fists, her heart filled with worry for Lin Ming.

They all knew that Lin Ming wouldn't be unreasonable with his decisions, but even though they knew this they still felt anxious. After all, Lin Ming was facing the most powerful Sovereign of the saints!

For humanity, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's infamy and influence had been gathered over far too long a time, and had become impossibly heavy. In fact, in the hearts of many human martial artists, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had become a god-like existence in the 33 Heavens.

This was an existence that could swallow the destiny of humanity and reverse the Heavenly Dao – if this wasn't the methods of a spiritual god, what was?

This was a decisive battle that concerned the fate of humanity, so how could they not be worried? And now, this was especially true with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign exposing his strength, making it so the leaders of humanity couldn't even bear to look towards him.

Time came to a standstill. Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign were only several dozen feet away from each other. Due to the fierce pressure they exuded, the planet beneath them began to quiver. Cracks appeared in the earth, as if the world below them would soon disintegrate!

Lin Ming looked up at the spiritual god phantom behind the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. “It looks like we have now entered a life or death battle. If I lose then you will surely take my life. If so, then if I win, it’s impossible for you not to pay a price. I will take away your Grandmist Spirit Bead, seize your avatar of Famine and then liberate the destiny of humanity that you stole!”

In the chaos all around him, Lin Ming’s voice was like a rolling thunderclap that spread out for 10,000 miles in the void.

All of the saint martial artists were stunned as they heard this. This Lin Ming was crazy!

In this situation he was still so arrogant! Those three things he listed were all the most important treasures to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

The Grandmist Spirit Bead and avatar of Famine didn’t need an explanation – they were the reason why the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was able to cultivate to his present level. As for humanity’s destiny, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had gone into seclusion for 2000 years in order to swallow those Laws and integrate them into the avatar of Famine and further his own cultivation. If Lin Ming were to take that away, it would be the same as wasting 2000 years of time.

Without a doubt, these three things that Lin Ming mentioned each touched upon the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s reverse scale!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign cackled in anger. His long hair danced in the air and his eyes overflowed with killing intent.

“Good! Good! Good!” The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign said. “You desire my Grandmist Spirit Bead but I also desire the secrets on your body! You rose like a star, and in a mere 10,000 years managed to step into True Divinity! How could you not have secrets on your body? Today, I will tear you apart piece by piece and find out just what you are hiding!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s hair flew up. His body was tall and prominent and his eyes shined. He was like a naturally superior being, an innate sense of suppression gushing out from him.

“Any more words are meaningless. Let us compare our strengths. This will be my first battle since I stepped into True Divinity. I have been waiting for this for a long time!”

Lin Ming’s figure flashed and flew up from the pavilion. He stood above a vast expanse of mountains and rivers on the small planet.

As he looked at the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, his gaze sharpened.

Weng!

Lin Ming flourished his spear. Time seemed to freeze. Everyone only saw a 10,000 foot beam of divine light cover their eyes, blinding them to what happened. Then, in the next moment, an earth-shattering roar deafened the ears!

Wild energy howled in all directions. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign also punched out his fist at this moment!

His fist was wrapped in divine light. Golden energy gathered around the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's body, turning into astral essence war armor.

This fist could shatter the starry skies.

Fist light and spear light collided.

The pavilion on the small planet, the earth, the plants, everything began to disintegrate. Mountains and rivers began to break apart and collapse downwards!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's fist light contained a potential that rushed forwards like a monstrous tsunami. But in the center of the fist light, the Black Dragon Spear continued forwards with unstoppable momentum!

Like a waterfall that fell for thousands of miles, the fist light was split open from the middle. Thousands upon thousands of light beams flew past Lin Ming, radiating all around him.

Ca!

These light beams pierced through the void, tearing into the ground and splitting open the earth. Everything that the light beams touched was brutally annihilated. And, what bore the brunt of the attack was the small planet beneath their feet. As this planet was struck, it began to completely implode upon itself from the light beams that tore into it.

This was the terrifying strength of one of the strongest powerhouses in existence. A True Divinity powerhouse was originally a god of a great world. When Lin Ming had the strength of a True Divinity, most of his fights had been within the Demon God's Tomb. The Demon God's Tomb was like a spirit treasure that had been refined for 100 billion years and was indestructible in itself. In addition to the suppression of Laws within and the grand array formation that stabilized the entire world, it was impossible to display such heaven-destroying strength within.

But now, in the world of the 33 Heavens, in the battle between Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, their actions could cause planets to collapse!

"Be careful!"

The human forces and saint forces had already drawn back, but now they were forced back even more. If an Empyrean were to be sucked into a battle of this level, they would instantly be turned into ashes!

Both sides drew back 100,000 miles. Then, the Empyreans on each side joined forces to weave together barriers of astral essence and true essence to resist the shockwaves!

“How is this...”

“Lin Ming blocked His Majesty Saint Sovereign’s strike, and he even... broke through the Saint Sovereign’s fist light!?”

Many saint race powerhouses witnessed Lin Ming’s unstoppable spear light with their own eyes. They watched as that horrific energy broke through the fist light and reached the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

The Black Dragon Spear shimmered with cold light as it thrust forwards!

This spear contained the Laws of Life and Death. The spear point was like the scythe of the death god, reaping all life!

Facing this life-reaping strike, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign emitted a deep roar. His entire body released explosive crackling sounds as he displayed the saint race's body transformation technique to its limits!

Bang!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign punched out his fist once more. This fist violently collided with the Black Dragon Spear, causing it to wildly curve!

But the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was also forced back from the impact of this spear strike.

Ka ka ka!

Faint cracks began to appear in the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's protective astral essence. His complexion suddenly changed. In that moment, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had felt a pervasive energy rush through these cracks and wantonly attack his body!

Although this energy was weak it was extremely tenacious and desired to swallow up his blood vitality!

"Humph!"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign coldly coughed. Astral essence erupted from within him as he destroyed this strength.

But by now, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's eyes as he looked at Lin Ming had already changed.

Although that had only been a probing strike just now, wasn't Lin Ming's strike also similar?

In just a single strike, Lin Ming had managed to break through his protective astral essence. How could the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign not be startled?

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was startled, but the many saint powerhouses were left completely bewildered.

Lin Ming's short exchange with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had destroyed a massive area of the void and even caused a small planet to collapse. This actually wasn't anything at all. But, what shocked them was that Lin Ming's strike had forced the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign backwards!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had been forced backwards!

Forced backwards…

Backwards…

It was like a demonic spirit was chanting curses into the ears of the many saint race martial artists. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, an invincible god-like existence in the hearts of the saint race martial artists, an existence that none of them could look up to, had been forced 10 miles away by Lin Ming's spear!

How could this possibly happen?

Many saint Empyreans glanced at each other with ashen faces of dismay. For a time, no one could believe what had happened. Both sides had exchanged probing strikes, but Lin Ming was the one who had gained the upper hand. This meant that at the very least, Lin Ming possessed strength that was equal to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

MW Chapter 2203

Chapter 2203– The Strength of Good Fortune

…

…

…

Within the void, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign narrowed his eyes and looked at the distant Lin Ming.

After a single exchange, the strength that Lin Ming revealed had left him immensely shocked. He thought he hadn't looked down on the abilities of this young man before him, but now he discovered that he had still underestimated him!

"You've really left me surprised. In 2000 years, just what sort of fortuitous encounter did you find?"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign said as he took out a shining gold pair of gloves from his spatial ring.

Pa! Pa!

With two light sounds, these gloves slipped onto his hands.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had many True Divinity spirit treasures and could use all 18 variations of weapons. But, what he was most familiar with were fists.

With a single punch, mountains and rivers shattered – a fist to rule the world!

Originally, when facing Lin Ming, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign hadn't used his own spirit treasure or weapon to fight. And in fact he hadn't used his weapon for a long, long time.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign believed that with his protective astral essence and his body transformation technique that had been cultivated to the limit, there was no one in the 33 Heavens capable of wounding his mortal body. Even though he feared the Soul Emperor, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign believed that the Soul Emperor would only be able to severely wound him with soul attacks.

And in reality, with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign having tempered himself to such a degree, his mortal body had become much stronger than most True Divinity spirit treasures.

Even if he didn't use astral essence he still possessed an indestructible body. But today, Lin Ming's spear strike had directly crumbled the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's confidence!

"I underestimated you before. I will acknowledge that you have the qualifications to make me go all-out!"

As the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign spoke, explosive crackling sounds emitted from his joints!

Pa! Pa! Pa!

Thunderclaps rang out from the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's body. His figure began to grow and his muscles bulged out. Golden scales started emerging from his face and arms.

Shua!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's robes were torn off his body, revealing an upper body that seemed carved from steel and covered with golden scales.

These scales were like dragon scales. Just by taking a single one off it could be refined as a top weapon, capable of piercing through a True Divinity's defenses.

“That is His Majesty Saint Sovereign’s body metamorphosis!”

A saint Empyrean said, excitement thick in his voice.

And it was no wonder that they were excited. In the universe of the 33 Heavens, there were few people capable of forcing the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign to use his true strength. Thus, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign hadn’t used his body metamorphosis for at least 100 million years.

In fact, most saint martial artists had no idea that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign possessed the body metamorphosis ability.

“Hahaha! This is His Majesty Saint Sovereign’s strongest fighting state!”

“His Majesty Saint Sovereign is part of the great astral sun bloodline! Once he activates his body metamorphosis, his combat strength will multiply! His appearance will also become tyrannical and fierce, just like a gold dragon, invincible amongst the heavens and earth!”

Many saint Empyreans knew that Lin Ming hadn’t used his full strength in his strike just then and had only been probing. But, they also didn’t want to believe this and didn’t want to admit that Lin Ming was equal to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

They believed that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was undefeatable within the 33 Heavens. Even if there was someone capable of standing on equal ground with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, that person could only be the Soul Emperor, and not some mere 10,000 year old junior like Lin Ming.

After changing his body, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had become 10 feet tall and his aura had become that much more horrifying, nearly unbearable.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign emitted the roar of a dragon from deep in his body. Then, he smashed out his fist at Lin Ming. At this time he was truly like a gold dragon in the form of a man, his momentum overwhelmingly vast.

One fist to rule the universe!

In that moment, everyone's field of vision seemed to be blocked, as if endless mountains and rivers were coming crashing down!

These were mountains and rivers formed by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's fist!

This strike was aimed at Lin Ming. But even the human and saint race powerhouses standing 100,000 miles away also felt as if they were facing this strike.

A formidable suppressive feeling pushed down on them, making it feel as if their backs would break!

"A fist turned into mountains and rivers, just what sort of fist technique is this!?"

Not only were the human martial artists panic-stricken, but many saint martial artists were also shocked. They had never seen this fist style of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign before.

In truth, most of them didn't know what techniques or hidden cards the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign possessed, because they never had the chance to see the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign fight.

A terrifying pressure seemed as if it would crush everything to pieces.

Because the void couldn't withstand the pressure, massive tracts of space began to crack apart and disintegrate. Space storms wildly swept out through tens of thousands of miles. This was absolute strength, one that was impossible to match up to!

In terms of mortal bodily strength alone, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had truly reached the peak of the 33 Heavens!

Lin Ming stood at the epicenter of this massive pressure, facing those terrifying mountains and rivers that came crashing down on him!

Then, Lin Ming's mortal body also began to change.

The blood of Asura began to burn in his body. Lin Ming's body started to rise up. Bone armor and scales spread out over his body and his looks became far more fierce and demonic!

Two scythe-like bone spikes jutted out from his elbows. A thick tail drilled out from his back, chaotically weaving about like a python!

In just several blinks of an eye, Lin Ming had risen to a few dozen feet in height, like a great tower of black iron. Compared to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign that was only ten feet tall, the difference was like that of an adult and child. Not just that, but the muscles on Lin Ming's body began to wildly grow, as black as night, a transformation that was several times more exaggerated than the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's!

This figure was incredibly hideous and fierce, like a demonic rakshasa that crawled up from the depths of hell!

"This is!?!?"

Let alone the saints, even the human martial artists were left dumbfounded.

This was Lin Ming!?

Emperor Shakya, Vast Universe, and everyone else stared on with eyes wider than full moons. They weren't surprised by Lin Ming's body metamorphosis. In the past, Lin Ming was able to galvanize the power of his Asura blood to undergo the Asura body metamorphosis.

But compared to this current body metamorphosis, the previous body metamorphosis could be called simply putting on some make up. This time, Lin Ming had body metamorphosized into an abyssal!

Compared to such an exaggerated shape, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's previously domineering body metamorphosis now seemed gentle.

Bang!

The vast mountains and rivers crashed onto the demon Lin Ming's body. But, the demon Lin Ming didn't dodge at all. He bent his knees and used his terrifying strength to stiffly shoulder those mountains and rivers!

The demon Lin Ming’s muscles ballooned and blue veins stuck out all over him like worms.

This was like the scene from ancient mythology, a demon carrying a divine mountain on its back!

In terms of body transformation, the saints indeed existed at the peak. However, what existed at an even higher peak than the saints were the abyssals!

To use absolute strength to overwhelm all!

The demon Lin Ming forcefully withstood the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s attack. At this time, everyone felt light flash before them as a divine beam of light broke through the chaos and howled towards the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign like a meteor!

At the center of this divine beam of light was Lin Ming’s true self!

Lin Ming had summoned his demon avatar to resist the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s ‘one fist to rule the universe’ attack. Then, he used his true self to attack the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

“What!?”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was shocked. He couldn't be bothered with trying to figure out how Lin Ming had accomplished this, because he had just used his strength and it would take time to gather himself again.

Good Fortune Divine Art!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign shouted out loud. Astral essence swirled around his body, as if gold were pouring out all over him. In an instant, a massive vortex of energy rose up in the universe with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign at its center.

The Good Fortune Divine Art wrested away the strength of good fortune from the world. And, this so-called good fortune was the sum total of all things in the world besides sentient beings.

In this way, the Good Fortune Divine Art was a training method where one cultivated the outer universe, just like the Asura Sutra. However, it was much more cruel, tyrannical, and evil than the Asura Sutra.

The Asura Sutra cultivated the world of the universe to thoroughly commune with the body. But, the Good Fortune Divine Art forcefully seized the power of the outer universe for one's own use.

The energy vortex wildly grew. The strength of the universe in a surrounding trillion miles was all plundered by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

Several hundred million miles away, there was a planet that brimmed over with life. But because of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s strength, this planet began to lose all of its vitality.

Grass wilted and old trees withered. Rivers and lakes dried up and even the great seas began to quickly evaporate. Birds and beasts fled in all directions, crying out in fear and horror. But in the end, they all exploded into a mass of blood red fog that was turned into pure essence energy and sucked into the energy vortex.

Like this, a planet full of life was ruined.

Not only planets with life, but even suns and moons and all other celestial bodies had their energies swallowed up by the Good Fortune Divine Art, their light gradually becoming dark.

Even the interstellar space dust, heat, light, everything was drawn in by the Good Fortune Divine Art.

And all of this strength was absorbed by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. What rose in correspondence to all that loss of life was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s strength!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s eyes became red and bloodthirsty, his face ugly and malevolent.

Facing the irresistible strike of Lin Ming’s true self, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign released a thunderous roar and then punched out both his fists!

Bang!

It was like two stars colliding. A crazy amount of the power of good fortune swept through the world. Energy erupted like countless volcanoes, stirring everything into turbulent chaos!

The Black Dragon Spear’s spear light disintegrated. Beneath this terrifying strike, Lin Ming’s figure disappeared.

“Lin Ming!”

On the human side, many people cried out in alarm. Xiao Moxian was extremely anxious; her palms began to stream with sweat.

The Good Fortune Divine Art was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s strongest cultivation method. The Good Fortune Saint Son had also used it in the past, however, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s Good Fortune Divine Art was countless times more powerful.

She didn’t know whether or not Lin Ming had been able to resist that strike.

MW Chapter 2204

Chapter 2204– Suppressing Good Fortune

…

…

…

Rumble rumble rumble!

Raging energy swept out without end. 100,000 miles away, whether it was the energy barriers created by the joint efforts of the human Empyreans or saint Empyreans, it seemed as if they would all break apart!

Seeing this, the complexions of many martial artists changed. If these energy barriers were to shatter then the Good Fortune Divine Art would wash over them, and the Empyreans with weaker cultivations would have their life force directly sucked away and be killed!

At this moment, in the turbulent flows of energy, a giant Asura phantom appeared. This Asura pushed a wheel-like grinding pan in its hands, slowly suppressed the raging power of good fortune between the heavens and earth.

The Asura Sutra and Good Fortune Divine Art were both cultivation methods that cultivated the world of the universe. But in terms of rank, the Asura Sutra was clearly much better.

The two supernatural powers clashed. A sun seemed to rise up between Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, illuminating the vastness of space!

This was a battle between top True Divinities. If this were a lower realm world like the Sky Spill Planet, then just the shockwaves produced from this fight would have directly disintegrated the planet!

Energy surged. Divine flames burned to the heavens. Within the tyrannical energy, Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign were like two meteors flying through space, repeatedly crashing into each other!

After revolving the Good Fortune Divine Art, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s body seemed to be forged from gold, like a deadly war god come to life.

But Lin Ming was fighting with his true self and demon avatar. Sometimes they joined together, sometimes they separated; their attack styles were endless!

A fist to break the mountains and rivers!

After revolving the Good Fortune Divine Art and being flooded with the power of good fortune, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's combat strength had risen to a new level. Astral essence gushed out of him like a sea without end!

Fist after fist, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign punched out tens of thousands of times, each fist stirring up a space storm that could sweep through the 33 Heavens and hurtle towards Lin Ming!

These tens of thousands of fist strikes blocked off all of Lin Ming's directions to evade in. They smashed down together into a single point, able to crush anyone to paste.

Such fist speed, such a terrifying energy output, this was already a realm that the martial artists watching were unable to comprehend!

"You want to compare attack speed?"

Seeing these attacks that covered the skies, Lin Ming coldly sneered. He shook his right hand and the Black Dragon Spear's point began to violently shiver as innumerable spear shadows appeared!

Then, Lin Ming grasped his spear in both hands and rapidly thrust out – flowers in a storm!

The originally shaking spear shadows and the tens of thousands of thrusts that Lin Ming just stabbed out actually formed a net of attacks that was even more dense than that of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's!

If the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's attack was comparable to landslides and tsunamis, then Lin Ming's attack was like a howling planet!

To compete against speed with speed, the attacks recklessly collided.

These fast and violent strikes contained enough energy that even an ordinary True Divinity would have to exhaust all their strength in just a few short breaths of time!

Bang!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was forced back. He exploded into a roar. The Good Fortune Divine Art condensed to its limit. All of his fist potential gathered into a single point and then wildly erupted!

This fist was similar to Lin Ming's Celestial Tyrant Manual's Hundred Layered Waves. By gathered the strength of all these fist strikes together, he could punch out with his strongest blow!

"Come!"

Lin Ming roared into the air. Behind him, his demon avatar held a thick evil demon spine that he brought pounding downwards!

This was a demon spine found within the Demon God's Tomb. It was left behind by an ancient Beyond Divinity demon, and was used to stabilize the array eye of the array formation. It was an ominous and unlucky object that shouldn't have been brought out from the Demon God's Tomb.

But Lin Ming had taken a liking to the power of this demon bone; it was simply far too perfect a weapon for his demon avatar. Thus, after reaching True Divinity and going into seclusion, he spent a considerable amount of time to use the world strength of the Emperor Bone Sea to wash the demon bone and constantly erase the demon mark in it. Finally, he used his demon avatar to refine this spine, turning it into its own true weapon!

At this time, as this evil bone appeared, it brought with it the cruel and horrifying world power of the Demon God's Tomb. This evil bone had been soaked in blood for 100 billion years. As it appeared in the 33 Heavens, 10 thousand demons seemed to roar out, their cries unstoppable!

Bang!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's gathered fist potential collided with the demon bone and completely shattered!

In the heaven-shaking flows of energy, Lin Ming grasped the Black Dragon Spear and used flowers in the storm once more!

Spear light recklessly shot outwards. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's pupils shrank and he was forced back again and again.

Seeing that he could no longer evade, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign bit down on the tip of his tongue and spat out a mouthful of blood. He stimulated his protective astral essence to the peak, wanting to forcefully resist Lin Ming's strike!

Ca!

A dreadful collision rang through the air. Even though the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was defending with all his might, he still couldn't completely block Lin Ming's spear lights.

Several spear lights eventually pierced through the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's protective astral essence. After making it through the cracks, they drilled into the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's body!

These spear lights were filled with energy from the Laws of Life and Death. Upon entering the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's body, they wildly rampaged around, destroying anything they could!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign coughed as blood vitality tumbled within him. A wisp of blood flowed out from the corners of his lips.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had been injured!

From the moment the battle began until now, this was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's first injury!

It had already been a long time since the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had been wounded. And, the last time he wounded was also related to Lin Ming – it was when he was chasing after the primal god race and trying to destroy them.

But when he was wounded that time, it was due to the Asura Decrees left behind by the Asura Road Master. Just what sort of character was the Asura Road Master? He could be called the greatest powerhouse to exist in the vast history of the 33 Heavens. To be wounded by the Asura Decrees left behind by the Asura Road Master was an acceptable result, but now he was wounded by the hands of Lin Ming, a junior. To be wounded by such a person left the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wallowing in shame!

At this time, the saint race martial artists had all fallen silent.

Not only could Lin Ming directly face-off against the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, but he had also wounded the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

Such strength was undoubtedly a heavy slap on every single one of their ears. At this time, with reality laid out before them, they could no longer delude themselves and say that Lin Ming was only being overly arrogant and bluffing about his strength!

Soaring Feather and Astral Vault watched Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign fight each other, and they were deeply shocked by what they saw. As True Divinities, they were acutely aware of the terrifying heights of strength that Good Fortune and Lin Ming had reached!

“Lin Ming is too terrifying. At this rate, it is only a matter of time before he takes the step Beyond Divinity.”

Astral Vault God King said, fear lingering in his heart. He was glad that he didn’t tear apart all consideration for face with Lin Ming in the past. When he rushed into the wild universe to demand his disciples back, he hadn’t tried to kill Lin Ming due to the presence of

Divine Dream. If he had tried to recklessly kill Lin Ming's people at that time, then he might have been a dead man standing right now.

"Indeed..." Soaring Feather God King nodded as she took a deep breath.

And beside Soaring Feather, Fairy Blue Lotus also had a complex look on her face. She had long since been at a loss for words.

When a martial artist reached the True Divinity realm, wanting to jump ranks to fight became increasingly difficult. This was because there were no mediocre individuals that were capable of reaching True Divinity.

And the current Good Fortune Saint Sovereign should be near or even at the peak of True Divinity. Yet, he had been wounded by Lin Ming, a lower True Divinity. If he were to wait for Lin Ming to step into the peak of True Divinity, then just what realms would his strength reach? It was hard to imagine!

In the raging flow of energy, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign roared into the heavens with rage. His eyes overflowed with killing intent as they locked onto Lin Ming. He slowly and clearly said, "I will exhaust your blood, sever your life!"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign bellowed. He raised a hand and then fiercely dug into his own chest!

Gugu…

Blood flowed out from the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s chest.

Lin Ming’s pupils shrank – he already knew what the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was planning to do.

This was a scene he had already expected, but even though he knew it was coming it was impossible for him to stop it – he could only face it as it came.

“I never imagined that I would have to actually use this move against a mere 10,000 year old junior!”

From the flesh and blood of his own heart, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign dug out a bead the size of a baby’s fist!

This bead was pitch black, as dark as ink, with faint blood-like lines running over its body.

This was the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

The moment the Grandmist Spirit Bead appeared, the void for the surrounding 100,000 miles was covered in a thick black light. This black light was similar to the primal chaos energy from the formation of the universe. As it appeared, the many saint martial artists and human martial artists felt their blood slow down and found even taking a single breath fraught with difficulty.

“Grandmist Spirit Bead!”

“The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign has finally brought forth the Grandmist Spirit Bead!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign originally didn’t want to use the Grandmist Spirit Bead. After all, in the face of many powerhouses from the 33 Heavens, he actually had to bring out a divine tool to deal with a junior; this was far too humiliating.

Yet now he had no choice but to use the Grandmist Spirit Bead. If he didn’t he would sooner or later be defeated by Lin Ming!

MW Chapter 2205

Chapter 2205 – Glory of the Spirit Bead

…

…

…

In these years, during the great war between humanity and the saints, the might and prestige of the Grandmist Spirit Bead had spread throughout the 33 Heavens. It was without a doubt the most famed and illustrious divine tool in the 33 Heavens. After all, not many people knew of the Origin Amethyst Crystal or the Stone of Eternal Life.

"This Good Fortune Saint Sovereign has finally dropped any semblance of shame and wants to use the Grandmist Spirit Bead to deal with Lin Ming…"

Some human martial artists said with angry indignation. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's cultivation surpassed Lin Ming's by a great deal to begin with, and he was tens of thousands of times older than Lin Ming, and yet he now wanted to use the Grandmist Spirit Bead; these actions were far too despicable.

“The winner is king and the loser is the villain. Since ancient times, all that has ever mattered is victory. Any ideas of shame or face are completely insignificant!”

Dark Demon Monarch said, his eyes shining as he looked at the Grandmist Spirit Bead. He turned his gaze towards Lin Ming. He believed that Lin Ming already anticipated this occurring before the battle began, because if one wished to defeat the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign they would have to deal with the Grandmist Spirit Bead in his hands.

“Lin Ming! Today I will use your blood to further build up the Grandmist Spirit Bead! I believe that with the quality of your blood, the might of this bead will rise to new heights!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s eyes overflowed with killing intent. During these years, he had been arduously refining the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

Divine tools also needed to be nurtured and raised, but of the three great divine tools, only the Grandmist Spirit Bead hadn’t been held by a Beyond Divinity level powerhouse. This was because the three great divine tools were born in the 33 Heavens and life had existed in the 33 Heavens for only several tens of billions of years. Moreover, the true pinnacle of the martial arts civilization had been 10 billion years ago, but at that time only two Beyond Divinity level powerhouses had appeared.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wanted to nurture the Grandmist Spirit Bead to its highest state. If he could nourish it with the blood vitality of a peerless genius, then it would naturally obtain immense benefits.

Facing the Grandmist Spirit Bead, Lin Ming took a deep breath, his eyes darkening, turning earnest. When he originally set up talks with Good Fortune, he never thought to rely on any good results coming from it. The collapse of the talks was already a 99% assured occurrence, and once that happened, what Lin Ming wanted to obtain the most was the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

With this bead his desire of breaking into the eighth Dao Palace would come to fruition. In truth, when he was in the Demon God's Tomb, he had nearly broken into the eighth Dao Palace. However he had diverted most of the world strength into consolidating his True Divinity boundary, thus the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had fallen slightly behind.

At this time, a sound transmission echoed in Lin Ming's ears. "Lin Ming, if you need me to help then just tell me. Although I cannot deal with Good Fortune myself, I can support you. Diverting his attention shouldn't be a problem at all."

This voice held a tone of concern, causing Lin Ming to feel warm. This was Sheng Mei's voice. In the 33 Heavens, if one didn't consider Good Fortune or the Soul Emperor, then Sheng Mei was a peerless powerhouse only inferior to Lin Ming.

Between her and Lin Ming, the difference was at most a small True Divinity boundary.

"I should be able to deal with this. The three divine tools are not invincible. In the past, the Asura Road Master and Immortal Sovereign each held divine tools and yet they were not able to cut down the Demon God Tomb's master. Similarly, Good Fortune has the Grandmist

Spirit Bead but he might not necessarily be able to do anything to me! If I really cannot handle it and obtain victory, then it won't be too late for you to help."

In a battle of life and death, Lin Ming naturally wouldn't care about something so stupid like fighting one against one for the sake of some martial arts spirit. Moreover, even if he and Sheng Mei added their ages together, this old freak Good Fortune was still thousands if not tens of thousands of times older than they were. There was just no need to care about the ideals of martial arts.

First, Lin Ming didn't want Sheng Mei to help because he wanted to test the limits of his strength. Second, and more importantly, he didn't want to expose Sheng Mei's identity with so many people around.

In these past days Lin Ming had seen that Sheng Mei didn't want to mix in with humanity.

After all, in the eyes of humanity's martial artists, Sheng Mei was a spiritas, someone that belonged to an enemy race.

Sheng Mei followed Lin Ming and wasn't relying on humanity. Out of the entire human race, the only person she cared about was Lin Ming. As for whether the others lived or died, she didn't care at all.

As for the reasons that Sheng Mei followed Lin Ming, they were all extremely complicated situations. For instance, her union with Lin Ming at the Sky Spill Planet, the relationship between her past life and Immortal Sovereign, these types of things couldn't be explained to the public, and nor could they be clearly explained.

Thus, in the eyes of the public, the reason that Sheng Mei followed Lin Ming would be just one – a woman had betrayed her own race to run off with a man from an enemy race.

Even if everyone was respectful to Sheng Mei because of her strength and Lin Ming's status, they would all inevitably develop such an idea in their hearts.

Lin Ming didn't want Sheng Mei to be criticized like this, even if it were only the subconscious thoughts of people. This was because fate already weighed far too deeply on Sheng Mei's shoulders.

At this time, in front of Lin Ming, the Grandmist Spirit Bead rapidly revolved. A blood pond hell seemed to be sealed within it!

Even though they were separated by a space of 10 miles and numerous chaotic space storms, Lin Ming could still feel his blood vitality restlessly stirring in his body!

It was like the Spirit Bead was invisibly devouring his blood vitality.

"I will use the Grandmist Spirit Bead to pierce through your heart!"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s eyes were blood red. His astral essence surged to the limit. With a roar, his joints emitted explosive crackling sounds. “Fist to rule the world!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s fist smashed into the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

This was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s strongest fist strike. It carried all of his energy as he poured it into the Grandmist Spirit Bead. Then, the Grandmist Spirit Bead was sent hurtling outwards as it shot towards Lin Ming!

Its speed reached the extreme, so fast that it surpassed almost everyone’s reactions. Even for Soaring Feather, all she felt was a flash of light in her eyes; she simply couldn’t tell what had happened.

In the darkness of space, the Grandmist Spirit Bead drew a perfectly straight line as it fired into Lin Ming’s chest!

This ultimate attack didn’t need to come from some tricky trajectory, because its speed was so fast that no one could avoid it!

Puff!

The Grandmist Spirit Bead crashed into Lin Ming's chest!

Lin Ming's protective power of divinity and demons instantly shattered. The Spirit Bead continued with unstoppable force, directly tearing into Lin Ming's flesh and blood and thrusting into his body!

Its speed was almost as fast as light. As the Spirit Bead entered Lin Ming's body, it immediately stopped, as if it were caught on something!

However, this didn't matter, because in this moment the Grandmist Spirit Bead began to wildly swallow up the strength of Lin Ming's blood vitality!

The Grandmist Spirit Bead's fearfulness didn't rely on the physical impact of its attack, but on its ability to suck a person dry into a withered corpse!

In that moment, everyone felt their hearts skip a beat. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign diabolically grinned. Although he didn't understand why his attack couldn't pierce through Lin Ming's heart, that was unimportant, because as long as the Grandmist Spirit Bead entered his body, Lin Ming's flesh and blood would be sucked dry.

"Lin Ming!"

Xiao Moxian cried out in alarm. The minds of all the human martial artists tightened and they held their breaths. Lin Ming was the pillar of humanity. If he were to perish here, humanity would perish along with him!

Everything happened within a spark of light before they could respond. And at this time, Lin Ming’s mortal body began to rapidly change!

His body began to grow, his skin turned black, his muscles bulged out, and spikes drilled out from him. In the blink of an eye his appearance turned cruel and hideous, into the form of an abyssal!

Lin Ming had transformed into his demon avatar, using the strength of it to withstand the attack of the Grandmist Spirit Bead!

In terms of the strength of blood vitality, Lin Ming’s demon avatar had swallowed a part of Famine’s strength and its blood vitality was several times more powerful than his true self’s.

As the Grandmist Spirit Bead swallowed the blood vitality of Lin Ming’s demon avatar, Lin Ming’s demon eyes flashed with a cold brilliance. With a roar, he hurtled towards the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

After forcefully withstanding the swallowing power of the Grandmist Spirit Bead, the demon avatar’s lips were stained with blood but it still rushed ahead!

This was like a confrontation between two martial artists in which one martial artist pierced through the other with a spear. But, not only did that severely wounded martial artist not retreat, but he pushed forwards into the spear instead, allowing the spear to pierce through his body in order to give his opponent a final fatal strike!

“What!?” The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was shocked. He didn’t think Lin Ming would be so ruthless and aggressive, and he also couldn’t imagine why the Grandmist Spirit Bead hadn’t passed through Lin Ming’s heart.

Even this powerful abyssal demon in front of him shouldn’t have such potent defensive powers. In front of the Grandmist Spirit Bead, there was no flesh and blood mortal body that should be able to withstand such a strike!

However, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign didn’t have time to think of such things; he faced Lin Ming’s desperate death strike.

“Humph, you are already at the end of the road, rushing up here just means a faster death!”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign sneered. But in the next moment, the sneer froze on his face.

He stared helplessly on as the demon Lin Ming who was hurtling towards him suddenly stretched out a claw and thrust it into his own chest.

The scales were torn apart by the sharp claws; fresh blood sprayed out!

And then, a situation occurred that left a creepy tingling on everyone's scalps. The demon Lin Ming actually drew out a spine from his chest, one that was dripping with blood!

As this spine was torn out from Lin Ming's chest, an alarming amount of blood and ruined flesh sprayed out with it. And, the Grandmist Spirit Bead was caught in the center of the spine!

What was able to block the Grandmist Spirit Bead from piercing through Lin Ming's heart was the evil bone he obtained from the Demon God's Tomb!

Lin Ming's demon avatar had already refined this demon bone. He fused it into his mortal body, and by relying on it he could resist the attack of the Spirit Bead!

In this moment, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was left panic-stricken!

MW Chapter 2206

Chapter 2206– Defeating Good Fortune

…

…

…

“This is… what is happening?”

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign began to panic. He wanted to recall the Grandmist Spirit Bead, but at this time he felt a strange strength cover it.

As Lin Ming hurtled towards the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign he used the world strength of the Emperor Bone Sea to block off the Grandmist Spirit Bead. Although he couldn’t seal it away forever, as long as he could delay it for even a tenth of a blink of an eye, that was more than enough time.

Lin Ming attacked.

His true self appeared. Grasping the Black Dragon Spear, he shot towards the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. As for Lin Ming's demon avatar, he also thrust out the demon spine in his hands!

The two forces gathered together. A giant Asura wheel appeared in the air, creaking and humming as it spun.

At this moment, the Asura wheel seemed to become the heavens.

At the same time a seven revolution red lotus shot out from between Lin Ming's eyebrows. The red lotus bloomed and overflowed with the Life and Death Laws!

In this moment, the seven revolution red lotus was like the earth.

The Asura wheel and seven revolution red lotus unexpectedly fused together as one.

The Asura Heavenly Dao and Holy Scripture Laws had undergone a preliminary fusion; this was the result of the highest comprehension of Laws that Lin Ming had achieved in his 1500 years in the Demon God's Tomb.

These two strengths were infused with all of Lin Ming's power of divinity and demons as it all came hurtling towards the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was shocked. At this time the Grandmist Spirit Bead was temporarily blocked off by Lin Ming. Without the Spirit Bead, he could only resist his enemy with his two fists!

In this critical life or death moment, he bit down on the tip of his tongue and spat out a mouthful of blood essence. With a loud roar, this blood essence began to burn with blinding brilliance, erupting like a great rising sun. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign revolved his energy to its limits and punched out with both fists!

Bang!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's left and right hands roared out like two flying divine dragons, smashing into Lin Ming's two great Laws.

This was a frontal collision between peak True Divinity powerhouses!

It was like two suns crashing into each other. Wild astral essence and the power of divinity and demons erupted. Golden light shot out into the void, illuminating the entirety of space!

100,000 miles away, the energy barriers laid down by the saints and humans began to wildly shake. Cracks began to form from the impact of energy. Everyone covered their eyes, feeling blinded from the light!

Whether it was the saints or humans, every martial artist was left speechless. Not to mention the younger generation, but even upper Empyreans, peak Empyreans, Emperor Shakya, Soaring Feather, and everyone else, was utterly dumbfounded by this battle between peak True Divinity level powerhouses.

This didn't seem like strength that a person should possess, but the might of the universe itself. Perhaps only a giant star exploding in a supernova could emit such power.

Waves of light swept out; it was hard for anyone's sense to pass through it.

"Lin Ming won?"

The human martial artists glanced at each other. In that final moment, it should have been Lin Ming who had the upper hand.

At the end, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had actually burnt his blood essence. Not only did he use the Grandmist Spirit Bead but he was also forced to burn his blood essence afterwards. It was clear from this just how terrifying Lin Ming's strength was, to the degree where a person who nearly reached the peak of True Divinity had to go all-out in order to deal with him.

The light continued shining out for dozens of breaths of time before gradually fading away. Then, people could finally find out just what happened on the battlefield 100,000 miles away.

As they saw the scene appear, the faces of many saint martial artists turned pale white.

On the battlefield, space for 10,000 miles had completely collapsed, forming a giant black hole. All of the nearby martial artists had been disintegrated into dust and as for their king, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, his entire body was left covered in blood.

His wounds were extremely heavy and golden scales were broken all over his body. His bones were shattered in numerous places and he was covered in rags, looking like a corpse that floated in the void.

Not too far away from him, Lin Ming had already returned to his human form. His severely wounded demon avatar had stepped back into his inner world.

As a result, besides a pale expression, Lin Ming appeared completely unscathed on the outside.

They had already expected that Lin Ming would win in that final exchange. After all, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had to hastily defend, and even though he had burned his blood essence he might not have been able to fend off Lin Ming's attack where he had gathered all his potential.

But they didn't think the disparity would be so great.

This was simply a complete victory!

At this time, Lin Ming had taken hold of the Grandmist Spirit Bead and was slowly erasing the spirit mark within it.

When the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was in his weakest moment was the best opportunity to erase his spirit mark.

The Grandmist Spirit Bead was something Lin Ming had wanted to obtain for a long time.

In fact, for Lin Ming, of the three great divine tools, the Grandmist Spirit Bead and Origin Amethyst Crystal were the most practical. Those two divine tools could directly increase his strength, since he mainly dual cultivated in the body and energy, and cultivated the soul as an auxiliary third.

"You..."

Although the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was heavily wounded by Lin Ming, the moment that Lin Ming started to erase his spirit mark in the Grandmist Spirit Bead, he quickly felt it and regained consciousness.

He looked up, his eyes filled with murder as he glared at Lin Ming.

This was the greatest defeat in his life! And also the greatest shame!

In front of innumerable masters from the 33 Heavens, he had been utterly defeated by Lin Ming, a mere 10,000 year old junior! He had even used every possible method at his disposal.

Not only that but he had been beaten down like a dead dog and even the Grandmist Spirit Bead had been taken away!

All the effort he had put in for so many years had failed.

Lin Ming's soul force was far greater than the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's and his strength was also superior. And, with the Grandmist Spirit Bead not possessing an artifact spirit, Lin Ming started to slowly refine it.

To the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, this was no different than cutting off a chunk of his flesh. He wished he could tear Lin Ming to shreds!

Lin Ming could clearly feel the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s hatred and pure animosity towards him. But this was also reasonable. After all, to be beaten up into such an appearance and also have his treasure taken away, how could he not hate?

“I know that it doesn’t feel good to have your spirit mark erased by me… but this is a result you cannot change. If you don’t want your soul to be injured then I advise you to remove the spirit mark on your own initiative.”

Lin Ming’s words grated on the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s ears.

He was a supreme ruler of the world, and yet he was being humiliated like this. Not only had he been defeated, but he even had to remove his own spirit mark to give his enemy his treasure.

How could there be such truths in the world!

However, even if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign stubbornly resisted and refused to comply, he would merely be extending his own pain and damage to his soul. Lin Ming would simply expend a little more time and energy, and in the end the Grandmist Spirit Bead would belong to him anyways.

This was the suppression of absolute strength.

This was suppression, this was shame, but this was a situation where he could not fight back!

If he complied then his dignity would fall through the floor. But if he resisted, he would only be giving himself an even greater pain.

In the world of martial artists, strength was everything!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign grit his teeth, adamantly refusing to respond to Lin Ming. His eyes were blood red, as if he wanted to swallow Lin Ming alive.

Lin Ming looked at the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's glare. His movements slowed down and a thoughtful look appeared on his features.

"Lin Ming, do you really plan on taking away the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's Grandmist Spirit Bead and avatar of Famine, and then after releasing the destiny of humanity, you will simply let loose this tiger to create trouble in the future?"

At this time, Sheng Mei's voice echoed in Lin Ming's ears.

“That was the original plan, but now I think my thoughts were too naïve…”

Lin Ming was also considering this.

Without a doubt, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign hated him to his marrow. Even if he released the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and allowed him to live, would he feel any sense of gratitude?

Perhaps the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would hide away to gather his strength, waiting for a day to stab him in the back!

The abyssal demons were natural enemies to the 33 Heavens. But, while the Soul Emperor wanted to swallow up the 33 Heavens, what if he didn’t exterminate all the races at once, but instead left some that he would allow to surrender instead?

When the Soul Emperor revealed his irresistible strength, there might be some races willing to degenerate into servants for the abyssals.

At that time, no one could tell whether or not the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would turn traitor.

His contradictions with the Soul Emperor were in truth not completely irreconcilable.

If he were to submit himself to the Soul Emperor, then the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign knew he would face a potential fate where he might be tossed away in the future, no different from a dog that had outlived its usefulness.

But, wasn't this slightly better than joining forces to resist the Soul Emperor?

It might be!

In the eyes of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, even if he joined forces with Lin Ming to resist the Soul Emperor, the likelihood of defeat was still extremely high.

And even if he won, his strength was still inferior to Lin Ming's; he would still worry about being eliminated.

Then, in this difficult dilemma with two hard choices to choose from, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign might switch sides and ally with the Soul Emperor to deal with Lin Ming. At the very least, since the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign hated Lin Ming so much, he might take this chance to kill him and soothe his thoughts and ego.

Moreover, what if the Soul Emperor truly took in the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and allowed him to become one of his minions?

Although the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign might have a master perching on top of his head, for better or worse, with his level of strength he could still take charge of several universes and continue his days of ruling over the life and death of others.

Thinking of this, Lin Ming hesitated. He originally hoped to join forces with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign to fight back against the Dark Abyss; this seemed like the most reasonable outcome.

But once both sides had uneven levels of strength, and he was also stronger than the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, then a subtle change would occur.

Lin Ming didn't want to place his future destiny in the hands of others. To him, Ouyang Boyan had been enough of a lesson. In the future if he were to go into seclusion or go out seeking more lucky chances, or if the war were to carry on, what if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign decided to take action against his family and friends?

The consequences would be unimaginable.

Realizing this, Lin Ming gently rubbed his chin. He looked at the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and suddenly grinned. “My apologies, but after further consideration, I have changed my mind.”

MW Chapter 2207

Chapter 2207– Hold the Overlord

…

…

…

“Mm?”

For a time, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign couldn’t understand what Lin Ming meant.

But at this time, Lin Ming attacked; his fist smashed into the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s chest.

Peng!

With a loud explosion, the already wounded and powerless-to-resist Good Fortune Saint Sovereign simply wasn't able to withstand Lin Ming's attack; his chest was smashed in and he vomited out a mouthful of blood.

"You!!!"

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was enraged.

But this punch was only the beginning. Lin Ming's fists fell down onto the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign like a raging storm. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was covered in blood. His meridians tore apart and his golden scales began flying off!

His bones and organs were all shattered by Lin Ming; he could be said to be completely broken.

However, with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's powerful vitality, he didn't die.

In the surrounding void, many saint race Empyreans and World Kings watched helplessly on as this occurred. All of them were left slack-jawed with shock and indignation, but none of them dared to speak out.

In the face of so many saints, their Saint Sovereign was being horribly beaten up and yet none of them could utter a single word or lift a single finger.

This was the suppression brought about by absolute strength.

There was not a single person that dared rise up against Lin Ming, because in front of him, any single one of them could be instantly killed!

“Your Majesty Saint Sovereign…”

The many martial artists of the Good Fortune Saint Palace felt their hearts quiver. Not too long ago, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had been a living god in their hearts, an unreachable existence that controlled the life and death of all beings beneath him.

Not to mention the ordinary disciples of the Good Fortune Saint Palace, but even the Empyrean level powerhouses rarely had a chance to see him.

And yet such a Saint Sovereign was being savagely ruined by Lin Ming.

“This should be enough.”

Lin Ming looked down at the mangled Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. After a brief probe, he determined that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had lost all strength to resist, and even a Great World King could freely handle him.

Then, Lin Ming's hands began to move. Seals flew out from his hands and into the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's body.

These seals were fused with the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra Laws; they were a fusion of both Laws.

Their effect was to completely imprison the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's cultivation.

After all, no matter how it was said, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was a powerhouse nearly at the peak of True Divinity. Out of all the races in the entire 33 Heavens, it was hard to find someone that could be a match for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

But now, with the great enemy looming on the horizon, killing the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign would be incredibly inappropriate!

This was equal to ripping out the spine of the saints. Without the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, the cohesion and total combat strength of the saints would plummet precipitously.

But letting the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign go was impossible because it was likely that he would turn traitor. If so, it was best to just kill him here and end any troubles before they began.

Thus, Lin Ming decided to make a compromise. He would imprison the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and hold the overlord to control his vassals.

Of course, if he were able to control the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's thoughts and implant a slave seal in him then that would be for the best. But, with Lin Ming's current level of strength, wanting to forcefully control the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was impossible. As for planting a slave seal in his body, that was even more unrealistic. To allow someone else to control their mind and heart, to completely hand over their life, that was something that not even low level martial artists would submit to, much less the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign who controlled his own race.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign seemed to understand Lin Ming's thoughts. He looked at Lin Ming with hatred thick in his eyes, like the most sinister and deadly snake, wishing that he could tear Lin Ming to shreds.

"Humph!"

Lin Ming coldly snorted. He smashed a fist into the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's face.

Towards this man that had tried to take his life several times before, that had placed him in numerous precarious life or death situations, and had even killed or caused the deaths of numerous heroes of humanity and the ancient races, including Three Lives Old Man, Empyrean Primordius, Heavenly Empress Xuanqing, the primal god race's old Patriarch, and countless others that Lin Ming owed gratitude towards, Lin Ming simply didn’t have a single shred of pity for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

If the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign still wanted to show off his strength after falling into his hands, then Lin Ming would simply use a greater strength to roll over him!

“You think that you are still that all-powerful Saint Sovereign? You are nothing but a captive!”

Lin Ming looked at Good Fortune with cold indifference. “In your heart, all lives are to be suppressed by you, humiliated by you, or even swallowed by you. All lives should be honored by this, and even obediently offer themselves up to you. As for those that aren’t willing to be suppressed, humiliated, or swallowed by you, they should be cut to pieces, completely exterminated! This is your mindset, your logic!

“Your logic may be overbearing, but it isn’t wrong. Because if you have the strength, you can control the life and death of all beings! But now, my strength is even greater than yours so you should be honored by me ruining you.”

As Lin Ming spoke he smashed his fist into the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s face. His punch cracked open the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s eye sockets and caused him to bleed from his eyes!

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign couldn't even open his eyes anymore. His strength had been completely exhausted and even his wounds regenerated at an agonizingly slow pace.

Lin Ming's fingers continued to flicker. Light striking sounds echoed in the air.

Lin Ming planted 12 Asura seals in the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's body, sealing up his 12 main meridians routes. Then, he formed 11 Holy Scripture seals, sealing up the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's organs.

Following that, the 36 death points, the 360 acupoints, the 36,000 pores, all of them were sealed up by Lin Ming!

These seals contained the highest Laws of Lin Ming's life studies. Unless Lin Ming personally unsealed them, it would be impossible for anyone else.

Of course, if there was someone stronger than Lin Ming they could still rely on brute force to erase these seals. But even so, they would create calamitous damage to the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's body.

Lin Ming carefully probed the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. After feeling that everything was about right, he summoned Primordius Heavenly Palace and tossed the half-dead Good Fortune Saint Sovereign inside like a sack.

The truth was that there was also a space within the Grandmist Spirit Bead. But, since Lin Ming had yet to fully refine the Grandmist Spirit Bead he didn't want to recklessly use it.

Then, Lin Ming turned towards the many saint race martial artists.

A void of 100,000 miles separated them. Lin Ming took a single casual step forwards, instantly utilizing a great void transfer to arrive in front of them.

At this time, a cold chill crept into the hearts of all the saint martial artists.

The pressure that Lin Ming exuded was too great!

They had all personally witnessed the sad and tragic scene of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign being completely suppressed by Lin Ming!

As long as Lin Ming wanted to, he could slaughter them like chickens and dogs.

Moreover, none of them had the courage to escape from Lin Ming's hands. Perhaps Lin Ming only needed to summon a force field to cage all of them inside this space.

“All of you...” Lin Ming opened his mouth to speak. The saint martial artists all felt their hearts skip a beat. They regretted following the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign here to set up these ‘talks’.

Just what kind of ‘talks’ was this? This was simply a grand slaughter festival!

“Most of you have hands stained with the blood of my people!”

Lin Ming’s first few words caused the many saint martial artists to feel a cold chill creep up their backs. It was over! They were all done for! It was time for all debts to be settled!

Lin Ming simply didn’t care about the ugly expressions of these saint martial artists. “Because of you, humanity has suffered countless casualties. They have been forced to leave their homelands to roam through the wilderness!

“How many families have been broken up? How many children have starved to death? How many people, because of this war, don’t even have their bones left behind? There have been many humans born in the chaos of war, born in the wilderness, that have never been able to see their homeland even before their deaths!

“If I were to kill any one of you, it would be perfectly justified!”

As Lin Ming spoke to here, the saint martial artists all held their breath. Many of them felt a cold sweat dripping down their backs and their minds tremble.

"However... I will not kill you all. First, it is because I once swore an oath that I would withdraw from the war between humanity and the saints, only dealing with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign alone! Secondly, and most important, the reason I do not kill you is because I do not want humanity nor any other race of the 33 Heavens to experience the chaos and turbulence of war. I do not want lives to be wasted away like coal in the flames...

"Life, is innocent. Even amongst the saints, there are naïve little children, there are kind-hearted subjects. This war was never their intention."

As Lin Ming spoke to here, he suddenly looked towards Soaring Feather God King.

"Soaring Feather!"

Soaring Feather's thoughts stirred. On this day, Lin Ming had become the ruler of the 33 Heavens. With his status he could give orders to any person here!

Looking at her master being called out by her name by Lin Ming, Fairy Blue Lotus felt her heart tighten. She looked at Lin Ming with complex light in her eyes.

After 2000 years, Lin Ming now stood at a completely incomprehensible height.

Now, she and Lin Ming could be said to exist in two different worlds. She was only worried for her master. She wondered why Lin Ming had called out to Soaring Feather at this time.

“You follow me!”

Lin Ming’s tone brooked no refusal. With a wave of his hand, a force field isolated out the world.

Soaring Feather hesitated for a moment and then stepped into Lin Ming’s force field.

She had already faintly guessed just what Lin Ming was going to say to her.

MW Chapter 2208

Chapter 2208 – For the People

…

…

…

Within the enchantment, Lin Ming passed a jade slip to Soaring Feather God King that described the Soul Emperor’s plans.

The truth was that before this, Soaring Feather God King had already heard some clues from the dialog between Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. However, as she truly read through the contents of the jade slip, she was shocked speechless.

At this time she would no longer doubt that Lin Ming was making up a story, because with his strength, he could already control the destiny of humanity and even decide the life and death of the entire saint race.

In particular, at some unknown point in the future he would surely step Beyond Divinity and become a peerless powerhouse like the Asura Road Master, perhaps even surpassing him.

If there really wasn't a powerful potential enemy threatening Lin Ming, then Lin Ming could have already stretched back and waited without worries for the day when he could unify the 33 Heavens as ruler.

"The great war of 10 billion years past, the abyssals are returning..."

Soaring Feather slowly digested this information. In the 33 Heavens 10 billion years ago, the primal god race had ruled the world. The primal god race of that era was countless times more powerful than the current combined strength of humanity, saints, and spiritas. Even so, they had to pay a grievous price in order to push back the abyssals.

The current humanity, saints, and spiritas, were races on the decline. If they wanted to resist the abyssal demons, it truly felt like throwing an egg against a boulder.

Lin Ming said, "The Dark Abyss is also far weaker than it was 10 billion years ago. In order to complete his plan, the Demon God's Tomb Master has killed a massive number of higher abyssals."

The Demon God's Tomb Master was far too ruthless and cruel; in order to achieve his goals he was willing to resort to any means.

Soaring Feather's heart skipped a beat.

"You want me to gather together the saints to join forces with you?"

"Yes! It seems that your relationship with Astral Vault God King isn't too bad, and the influences below him should obey you. As for the Good Fortune Saint Palace, I have the life of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign in my hands so there shouldn't be anyone that would oppose you. The current you can be called the most powerful character amongst the saints, and also the one with the highest level of authority."

In terms of strength, Soaring Feather was naturally stronger than Astral Vault was and thus she was the most appropriate candidate for leader.

"Good..."

Soaring Feather took a deep breath. "About the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, what is your plan...?"

Soaring Feather hesitated for a bit as she looked at Lin Ming. Her relationship with the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wasn't good at all, and in the past when he suffered she even celebrated it. This was also the reason why Soaring Feather's response had been so cold when he asked her to take action in the past.

However, Soaring Feather owed the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign a favor. And, no matter how it was said, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had shown graciousness to her in the past. In addition to them being from the same race, Soaring Feather also felt sad to see Good Fortune fall so low.

She didn't want to see the saints exterminate humanity, but at the same time she didn't want to see Lin Ming execute Good Fortune.

"I will not kill the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. But in this upcoming great calamity, I cannot even say I can completely control my own destiny, much less the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's… although I have said I will not kill Good Fortune, that is only in normal circumstances. If he has even the tiniest thought or indication of betraying the 33 Heavens, then I will strike him down without hesitation."

Soaring Feather was satisfied with Lin Ming's response.

In truth, if Good Fortune betrayed the 33 Heavens, then regardless of the situation, Soaring Feather would have done everything possible to cooperate with Lin Ming and find ways to kill Good Fortune.

But in the current 33 Heavens, due to the war between humanity and the saints, both races were horrible to look at. The only race that was fully intact was the spiritas, but their situation might be even worse because the Soul Emperor's body had been seized so long ago.

Only the heavens knew what the current situation of the spiritas was.

Facing this great calamity, Soaring Feather felt a deep powerlessness. The cards in her hand were too weak, so weak that she couldn't summon any confidence.

"Lin Ming, do you think we can win...?"

Soaring Feather quietly asked, sighing. The reason she asked this question was because of the rising impotence in her heart; she wanted to find some words of comfort from Lin Ming.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. Then, he said, "I am not sure whether we can win or not. The future is not set in stone. We martial artists cultivate the body, cultivate the Heavenly Dao, cultivate the divine soul, but in the end, just what are we cultivating for? What are we chasing after? Even I have been left confused by this. For glory? That is only fleeting smoke before the eyes. For strength? I already possess the power to sunder the heavens and shatter the earth, to annihilate stars and the vastness of space. To become immortal? In these years I have also chased after immortality. However, when I was in the Emperor Bone Sea I looked upon the countless pained remnant souls there as well as the 100 billion year plot that the Soul Emperor had laid out for the sake of immortality, and suddenly, at that time I felt that chasing after eternal life was meaningless. For we that practice martial arts, we naturally must fight. But in fact, what we are fighting is the chaos of the world, the time when the catastrophe arrives.

“The extinction of races, lives lost like burning coals, the collapse and destruction of great worlds, this time, the fight has reached the peak. Then, perhaps the peak of martial arts is originally for the common people of the world…”

As Lin Ming finished speaking, Soaring Feather was stunned.

The peak of martial arts was for the common people of the world?

These words sounded too pretentious, too empty, and perhaps even a bit fake.

However, upon thinking about it, no one was able to separate themselves from the common people; this was also true for martial artists.

A race was a person’s roots. Without roots, no matter how towering or lofty a tree, that tree would still wither away and die.

Without one’s race, without the common people, then the so-called everlasting immortality was meaningless.

One would be no different from a remnant soul in the Emperor Bone Sea, facing infinite loneliness and sorrow.

Thus, the peak of martial arts was for all the people in the world, because every martial artist was originally one of these people.

Being for the people of the world, was the same as being for oneself.

In this moment, Soaring Feather seemed to be becoming aware of something.

But then, Lin Ming waved his hand, withdrew the force field and flew away.

“Whether we can win or not, as martial artists we must fight them with all our strength!”

Lin Ming’s final words echoed in Soaring Feather’s ears.

Lin Ming passed through space and appeared in front of the human forces.

As the human martial artists saw Lin Ming fly towards them, they prepared to cheer and celebrate, and even offer up words of congratulations.

But, they never thought that Lin Ming who returned in victory, wouldn’t have any sense of high-spiritedness or joy. Rather, his complexion was calm, even somewhat dignified. This caused the words of congratulations to become stuck in the throats of those about to speak them.

"Let's go."

Lin Ming simply said.

Then, he took Xiao Moxian's hands and flew into Primordius Heavenly Palace, leaving the crowd of human Empyreans and World Kings blankly staring at each other. They didn't know what Lin Ming was up to. The great mountain that had pressed down on the chest of humanity for almost 10,000 years had finally been removed, and yet Lin Ming's reaction had been so subdued.

At this time, Sheng Mei also quietly followed behind.

During the battle between Lin Ming and the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, Sheng Mei had stood on the human side. But, no one had been able to sense her.

The moment that Lin Ming entered Primordius Heavenly Palace, Sheng Mei also appeared like a wisp of blue smoke.

As Xiao Moxian saw Sheng Mei appear, she was left silently astonished. She couldn't help but admit just how terrifying a character Sheng Mei was. She hadn't sensed Sheng Mei's presence and yet she was able to easily conceal herself the entire time. From this, one could infer Sheng Mei's strength.

"Miss Ji."

Sheng Mei greeted Xiao Moxian.

Xiao Moxian nodded in response. For a time, she didn't know what to call Sheng Mei. Whether it was referring to Sheng Mei by her full name or calling her the Soul Empress, neither seemed appropriate.

As the two women faced each other, the atmosphere became a little awkward, even with Lin Ming present.

"Sheng Mei, three days from now I will bring you somewhere."

Lin Ming's words were sudden. Sheng Mei was left startled. "Where to?"

"The Asura forbidden zone, Cold Ice Mirror!"

The Cold Ice Mirror was where Lin Ming had first seen the past life of Sheng Mei. When Lin Ming first arrived at the primal god race, he had tried to obtain one of the spots to enter the Asura forbidden zone in order to seek out a method of salvation for humanity.

Afterwards, the primal god race headquarters had been destroyed by the saints. But the Asura forbidden zone was left behind by the Asura Road Master, and the array formations that protected it were extraordinary. With the strength of the saints, it was impossible for them to break through them.

“Cold Ice Mirror?” Sheng Mei asked, puzzled.

“You will know once you get there. There, you might find something about your last life…”

Lin Ming believed that the Cold Ice Mirror contained a wisp of remnant soul from Sheng Mei’s previous life!

This was because when he faced the past life Sheng Mei in the Cold Ice Mirror, she had been no simple phantom formed by an array formation. Rather, she seemed like a remnant soul with intelligence.

Lin Ming also clearly remembered every word and expression that the past life Sheng Mei had said or shown.

"What about you?" Xiao Moxian asked.

"I plan on going into seclusion to open up the eighth Dao Palace of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace."

Of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, seven were bright and two were dark. The gap between the seventh Dao Palace and eighth Dao Palace was also a massive leap, one comparable to a large boundary in cultivation.

Now that Lin Ming had the Grandmist Spirit Bead, he could definitely make a breakthrough!

MW *Chapter* 2209

Chapter 2209 – Refining the Spirit Bead

…

…

…

A month later, deep within the endless starry skies –

Pata! Pata!

The Grandmist Spirit Bead was grasped in Lin Ming’s hand. It emitted dull ringing sounds that reverberated into the heavens and earth.

It was like the heart of a divine god, beating in its own strange rhythmic undulations. The galaxies in the skies seemed to dance about it, and starlight gushed out, weaving out into the void.

The Grandmist Spirit Bead was controlled within Lin Ming's hand.

And not too far away, there were many human martial artists present.

Those that could stand here either had significant connections to Lin Ming or were one of the pillars that supported humanity.

For instance, there was Lin Huang, Jiu'er, Xiao Moxian, Emperor Shakya, Dark Demon Monarch, Empyrean Vast Universe, Dragon Fang, Hang Chi, and many others, resulting in a total of 20-30 people.

They stood here to bear witness to Lin Ming refining the Grandmist Spirit Bead and making a breakthrough in the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. And, the most important reason they were here was to take advantage of Lin Ming's breakthrough and gain an even deeper awareness of the Heavenly Dao.

To them, this was an incredibly great lucky chance.

To break into the eighth Dao Palace was to leap past a large boundary in the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. At that time, the Heavenly Dao would descend and wash over everyone present, baptizing them.

Even if one didn’t cultivate the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, they would still obtain considerable advantages.

In truth, even essence gathering system martial artists would be concerned with tempering their mortal bodies. After all, it was impossible for them to allow their bodies to be as frail as those of mortals. The more powerful their mortal bodies, the greater their advantage.

Everyone held their breath, quietly looking towards that god-like man in the distance, waiting for him.

The starry skies was silent. The Spirit Bead emitted wisps of blood energy, like the dawn in the early morning, a rosy light blooming in the world. Every wisp of light was as thin as a needle and as sharp as a sword as they shot into all directions. It was like countless peerless vicious beasts hurtling out into the horizon, all of the boundless blood vitality seeming as if it would lift up this world, leaving the heart racing with anticipation.

The Grandmist Spirit Bead had been refined by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign for many years, and it contained a massive amount of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s strength as well as the flesh and blood essence of the Famine avatar.

After having swallowed up humanity’s destiny, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had already refined his avatar of Famine.

As a totem level abyssal, Famine was naturally far more formidable than the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. However, Famine had been wounded billions of years ago and its boundary had plummeted.

Following that, Famine's soul was suppressed by Divine Seal and its body divided into two. With just its incomplete mortal body, it was impossible for it to be the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's match. During the 2000 years that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign was in seclusion, he used the Grandmist Spirit Bead to completely swallow up Famine's strength and gather it into his own.

At this time, Lin Ming could feel that within the Grandmist Spirit Bead, Famine's flesh and blood still possessed a single sliver of unwillingness to be swallowed.

The current Famine could really only be regarded as a mass of flesh and blood. Beneath the suppression of the Spirit Bead, it continued to writhe about, struggling and resisting.

However, no matter how much it struggled, no matter how much it stirred its blood vitality, Lin Ming's hands would forcefully isolate it from the outside space. Divine chains of order flew across the cosmos and thunder dragons roared out loud as they surrounded the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

Lin Ming's five fingers were like five boundless mountains, stubbornly suppressing it.

In the next moment, Lin Ming held the Grandmist Spirit Bead and soared into the air. In an instant he travelled hundreds of millions of miles away and sank deep into a vast sea of stars.

He sat there with legs crossed, like a deity stepping upon the world, imprisoning any fluctuations of power.

He opened his left hand. Countless rays of light bloomed from his fingertips, turning into tiny runes that whistled about.

Each rune drilled into a star, pulling out beams of brilliance, like endless mountain ranges of starlight.

These beams of light wove through the air, turning into a transparent furnace formed of starlight with Lin Ming at its center.

This was a method of refining blood vitality that Lin Ming had learned of in the Asura Road's final trial's seventh level – the Galaxy Void Furnace.

Lin Ming wanted to thoroughly refine and swallow all the blood vitality contained within the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

The Grandmist Spirit Bead contained all the bloodline strengths that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had accumulated throughout all the years. After so many years of refinement, if he could absorb the blood vitality inside then this would absolutely be far superior to any heavenly treasure.

Bang!

The Galaxy Void Furnace emitted a great strength that could burn mountains and boil seas. This strength attacked the Grandmist Spirit Bead. Countless beams of starlight were like innumerable stars that bombarded the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

Not just that, but in the center of the furnace, Lin Ming’s seven orifices, his eyes, nose, ears, mouth, everything began to spout flames.

These flames were a ghostly purple. Although they didn’t seem to contain any heat, this was because the heat of the flames had condensed to the limit and manifested in such a manner.

As these flames appeared, they gave off an alarming feeling as if they could burn down the world and disintegrate all of existence.

Then, Lin Ming lifted his hands together and formed seals. Rainbow-hued thunder appeared, weaving together in the skies like hued beams of sunlight. This was Lin Ming’s power of thunder.

It had already been a long time since Lin Ming used the power of thunder and fire. And after Lin Ming stepped into the True Divinity boundary and withstood a baptism of the Heavenly Dao, then whether it was controlling the source of fire or the source of thunder, he had reached the pinnacle in these aspects.

The Great Dao flames, spirituality of starlight, power of thunder, all of it was like a great grinding pan that spun over the Grandmist Spirit Bead, constantly rolling over it.

This process of refinement continued for an unknown length of time. Finally a crystalline drop of something that resembled a bloodstone fell down from the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

As this thing appeared, raging blood energy followed it. It was like 10,000 demons howled from within, with countless lives roaring out in unison.

As soon as this thing appeared it possessed its own spiritual wisdom. It rose up in the air, assuming the appearance of a three inch tall baby as it tried to escape.

Lin Ming's eyes flashed, his heart overjoyed. Without a doubt, this was a drop of blood essence condensed from all the blood energy within the Grandmist Spirit Bead as well as Famine's flesh and blood essence. This drop of blood essence already possessed enough spiritual wisdom upon birth that it could take on the form of a person.

It could be called something that had seized the good fortune of the heavens and earth.

Without giving the baby a chance to escape, Lin Ming's thoughts moved. With a thought, a net of runes appeared in the void and descended like falling mountains, completely imprisoning the blood vitality of the baby.

After this baby was held by Lin Ming, it suddenly became fierce and vicious. It turned into a demon, roaring with rage as it furiously struggled to escape.

However, Lin Ming blocked off the surrounding void with a force field, completely suppressing it.

As soon as this baby appeared, the purest strength of blood vitality from the Grandmist Spirit Bead began to pour out, gathering with the baby as the center.

Time passed, day after day. The blood energy within the Grandmist Spirit Bead slowly diminished. Finally, the last traces of blood energy were all drawn out by Lin Ming.

In a single breath, Lin Ming swallowed up all of this blood vitality essence.

In that moment he felt as if he had swallowed a sun. Limitless strength bloomed within him like countless sharp blades. Beams of divine light attacked him from within.

Even though Lin Ming was as strong as he was and possessed a nearly invincible body, his flesh still cracked and tore apart.

One could imagine just how strong the essence of blood energy within the Grandmist Spirit Bead had been. If an ordinary True Divinity were to attempt to withstand this, their body would have exploded already.

Lin Ming felt his blood seethe and boil over. His entire figure was shrouded in a chaotic pall of blood energy, making it difficult to see what was happening to him.

“Wonderful!”

Although there was pain, Lin Ming’s expression was like he was drunk on this pain, enjoying it to its fullest!

He suddenly fell to his knees, his eyes shooting into the void like arcs of lighting. Without a doubt, this was the most powerful state his mortal body had ever been in. If he could refine this power, he could rise further in the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and also increase his boundary yet again.

At this time, a part of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace was still locked away, and humanity’s essence gathering system had been sealed by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

Now Lin Ming would sever these chains. For Lin Ming who had defeated the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and had taken control of the Grandmist Spirit Bead, this wouldn't be difficult at all.

With a loud roar, countless deafening thunderclaps rolled out from within Lin Ming's body.

His blood galloped and crashed like great rivers, rumbling and exploding.

Within Lin Ming's body, a certain place began to turn blazing hot. A mysterious strength started to resonate with some unknown place in the void.

Whorl –

Whorl –

Whorl –

Endless wisps of star brilliance wove through the air. Stars began to appear within the cosmos, scattering inexhaustible starlight through the void.

One of these stars was particularly dazzling, as if it appeared from the darkest void in space.

However, at this time, dark gray divine chains of order began to appear in the infinite void.

These chains were like continuous mountain ranges that sparkled with countless runes. They were like pythons locking in the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, attempting to block Lin Ming's breakthrough.

"You might as well appear together, so you can be severed together!"

Lin Ming waved his hand. The power of divinity and demons erupted and blasted the great vault of the heavens.

A moment later, another set of divine chains of order appeared in the void. These divine chains of order were deep purple, as if they locked in endless fog.

These were the divine chains of order that the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had used to seal away humanity's essence gathering system.

The divine chains that locked away the essence gathering system were clearly far more formidable than those that caged in the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. This was because these divine chains were complete, and also because the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had spent a great deal of time and effort to arrange them.

Seeing these divine chains of order appear, the 20-30 human martial artists present all held their breaths.

In the past, they had all tried several times to attack these divine chains of order. To do this they overdrew they blood vitality, exhausted their strength, and even burnt their blood essence.

But, all of them failed to overcome these chains.

Many times, they were even left heavily wounded.

For the martial artists of humanity, these chains left far too deep an impression.

MW Chapter 2210

Chapter 2210 – Summons

…

…

…

These divine chains of order locked up humanity's destiny. It was like this 3.6 billion years ago and continued until the present, like a great mountain pressing down on humanity.

In front of Emperor Shakya, Xiao Moxian, and everyone else's gaze, Lin Ming walked towards those divine chains of order one step at a time. With every step he took, the stars in the highest heavens trembled. This was a manifestation of Lin Ming's body having reached the peak, where he achieved subconscious resonance with the Great Dao of the heavens and earth.

When Lin Ming arrived in front of the divine chains of order that bound the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, all sorts of phenomena appeared around him. Celestial dragons weaved through the air, phoenixes cried out, and a land seemed to appear within the chaotic misty of blood, one that had genuine life living upon it.

This was a phenomenon that only appeared when the mortal body became sanctified, when the body became a world in itself.

Lin Ming started to gather his strength. Before he did anything, the divine chains of order in front of him began to tremble, as if they couldn't withstand Lin Ming's horrifying strength.

Bang!

Lin Ming punched his fist out. Endless blood vitality gushed out. His blood burned with brilliant flames that lit up the vast skies and burned down those divine chains.

"Open!"

With a loud bellow, the faint fog of blood which lingered in the air turned into blood dragons that smashed into the divine chains of order in a violent frenzy.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

The divine chains of order finally broke apart and disappeared in the world.

In that instant, the nine Dao Palaces released an incomparably dazzling brilliance.

Out of the Nine Stars, one of them shined like the bright moon at night.

Starlight flowed out in rivers, all of it falling down upon Lin Ming's body in torrents.

This starlight came from the eighth Dao Palace that Lin Ming desired to break into – the Bright Channel Dao Palace.

The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace. The seven bright stars were – Ravenous Wolf, Titan Gate, Cherished Kismet, Merciful Song, Ardent Virtue, Martial Song, and Army Breaker.

The two dark stars were Bright Channel and Hidden Origin.

The last two Dao Palaces of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace wouldn't grant special abilities to a martial artist. However, they were like two sets of chains that linked together the nine Dao Palaces, causing them to shine ever brighter as they allowed the Great Dao to blend into them.

To open the last two Dao Palaces would bring about an overall increase in strength for a martial artist. Like an Empyrean breaking into True Divinity, there would be a comprehensive increase in strength!

After the divine chains of order were torn apart, Lin Ming borrowed the endless blood vitality within the Grandmist Spirit Bead to soar upwards!

He took the brightest of the nine stars and directly thrust it into his body!

During these years, Lin Ming had accumulated far too much in the body transformation aspect. With the addition of the Grandmist Spirit Bead helping him, even though this was a large boundary in the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, he still made a direct breakthrough!

The star was refined by Lin Ming. The Bright Channel Dao Palace began to burn!

Weng –

Hum –

At this time, the seven bright Dao Palaces within Lin Ming's body responded. They emitted sounds of ecstatic joy, as if they took great pleasure in what was occuring.

Even the already opened Eight Inner Hidden Gates, the Gate of Life, the Gate of Death, the Gate of Healing, all of those gates, all of that endless life potential burst out from Lin Ming's body once more.

This stimulation was even more thorough than before. Even the previously unrefined blood vitality essence that remained in his body began to burn away like snow in an inferno.

Lin Ming's mortal body was constantly attacked and regenerated within the billowing blood vitality. His skin surged like waves in a storm and his entire body emitted an aura that seemed as if he could destroy the heavens and earth.

Even some rays of light twisted around him, unable to approach him. He seemed to become a single body with the world, a self-contained system, repelling any strength that approached him.

Piki paka!

Blinding bolts of lightning drilled out from Lin Ming's pores. They encircled him like threads of silk, like endless purple hairs that lingered around him.

Billions upon trillions of Great Dao Laws took shape, turning into scales that bloomed on Lin Ming's skin like flowers.

More and more blood vitality rushed out, seething with excitement, breaking everything open, forming a furnace that sprayed out without end, illuminating this entire part of the world with divine light so that everything turned translucent.

Nearby, Xiao Moxian, Emperor Shakya, and the others were able to feel this strength.

In that moment their blood vitality seemed stirred by the blood vitality and potential emitted from Lin Ming's body. Most of the starlight from the Nine Stars gathered in Lin Ming's body, but a small part of it also dissipated outwards, flowing through the void.

If Lin Ming were to make a breakthrough alone, this starlight would dissipate in vain.

But now, with so many human martial artists present, they naturally wouldn't allow this starlight to go to waste. This starlight was strength that approached the source of the Great Dao.

Whether it was Xiao Moxian, Emperor Shakya, Jiu'er, or anyone else, they began to absorb the power of the Nine Stars.

However, the one who absorbed the most starlight was actually not Jiu'er, but Lin Huang.

Lin Huang also had Lin Ming's bloodline running through his veins, and he experienced no pushback in refining the power of the Nine Stars. Moreover, Lin Huang dual cultivated essence and energy. Compared to Jiu'er who cultivated energy and divine, he naturally possessed the superiority.

This scene continued for several hours.

After Lin Ming thoroughly refined the strength of the Nine Stars, he seemed to emerge from the darkness of creation, a silent immortal that climbed towards the peak of the human mortal body that had been sealed away for billions of years.

At this time, Lin Ming's mortal body emitted an even brighter brilliance. As for light from the universe, as these rays approached Lin Ming, they were crushed by a dark and strange strength.

The current Lin Ming's mortal body had reached an incomprehensible degree.

Lin Ming's body possessed infinite strength that needed to be vented outwards. His eyes flashed and he looked not too far away towards the divine chains of order that imprisoned the essence gathering system.

This was the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's final arrangement, one that he used to swallow humanity's destiny.

Lin Ming roared out loud. He smashed out a fist!

Bang!

The world shook. The divine chains of order disintegrated!

Now, even Famine had been completely swallowed by Lin Ming. The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had relied on Famine's abilities to form these divine chains of order; now, beneath Lin Ming's potent strength, these divine chains naturally weren't a match for him.

Kacha! Kacha!

The divine chains of order collapsed at an increasingly fast pace. Not too far away, Emperor Shakya and the others watched on, speechless.

They had paid deep prices and put in so much time and effort, yet they weren't able to break through these divine chains. Yet, these divine chains of order were being so easily torn asunder.

This power of divinity and demons could really be called the endless Great Dao Laws, rolling over and crushing everything.

"Mm?"

After Lin Ming shattered these divine chains of order, he could feel many pained remnant souls in the energy that scattered outwards.

They howled in agony and sorrow as they spread out in space.

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He immediately understood that these remnant souls had all been imprisoned by the divine chains of order.

Within the divine chains of order, besides the existence of a True Divinity's strength, there had also been countless remnant souls supporting them.

The Good Fortune Saint Sovereign had killed countless people in these years, and all of this was done for his great ambitions of swallowing the world. If it weren't for the upcoming apocalyptic calamity, if it weren't for the Demon God's Tomb Master, then the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign could have been considered an unparalleled character of his era, one filled with an incredible ferocity and ambition. He could have likely ruled over the 33 Heavens, and his cultivation might have taken a step further until he reached the boundary of a totem level abyssal.

Unfortunately, if the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's current strength was placed in the river of time that had flowed for 100 billion years, then he would simply be a commonplace existence. Compared to the Demon God's Tomb Master, the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign wasn't any more powerful than those numerous ancient demon emperors sealed in the Emperor Bone Sea.

…………

As Lin Ming was breaking into the eighth Dao Palace of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, as he was shattering the divine chains of order, far off in a distant universe, within the Asura forbidden land hidden in the ruins of the primal god race, Sheng Mei walked above the wilderness, clothed in black.

The key to the forbidden land was the Chain of Calamity, and up until now it had been in the hands of the current leader of the primal god race – Diwuhen. Lin Ming borrowed his key, and with his understandings of the Asura Laws, it wasn't difficult for him to open the Asura forbidden land.

Sheng Mei walked into the Asura forbidden land alone. She felt as if she had walked into an ancient tomb.

The great earth was barren and the sun above her was gloomy and dim, as if the world was shrouded in eternal dusk. Without any surprises, this world would be destroyed before long.

Sheng Mei never expected that the Asura forbidden land would be such a place. She quietly pressed forwards and found stone tablets buried underground. These stone tablets were mottled with time, many of their inscriptions ruined over the years.

Looking up, she could see thick layers of clouds gathered overhead. They were heavy and dark, blocking out the light.

Sheng Mei shook her head. She continued forwards. What she searched for was the Cold Ice Mirror that Lin Ming spoke of.

According to what Lin Ming said, there seemed to be a wisp of remnant soul from her past life contained within.

She wanted to personally look upon her past life and find out some things...

Perhaps she would find out why the Soul Emperor had expended so much time and effort to control her and raise her.

But at this time, Sheng Mei heard a sudden voice, one that gently summoned her.

This sound was a little intimate and a little familiar, as if buried in the depths of her memories so that she couldn't remember who it was.

This voice was faint, but Sheng Mei could clearly hear it. It was completely different from her own voice.

“Who is it?”

Sheng Mei paused her step.

MW Chapter 2211

Chapter 2211 – The Soul Emperor Emerges

…

…

…

As Sheng Mei's steps came to a halt, that voice disappeared, as if it had never appeared at all.

However, Sheng Mei knew that this couldn't have been an illusion.

She closed her eyes, quietly sensing the origin of that voice. After a long moment of silence, that summoning call appeared once more. It was still weak, but this time, Sheng Mei was able to keenly sense which direction it came from.

With some anticipation, with some unease, with some fear, Sheng Mei silently walked forwards.

She passed through a graveyard and finally arrived atop a vast field of ice.

The cold energy was rich atop this field of ice, and snow billowed in the wind.

This cold energy came from the strength of Laws, and Sheng Mei felt that these Laws were somewhat familiar. This was because she also cultivated the Ice Laws, and her Laws seemed to be interlinked in many places to the Laws in the Asura forbidden land, as if they came from the same origins.

Sheng Mei remained pensive. Then, atop this field of ice, she saw a giant rift, a valley of ice. And below this rift great waves rolled and tumbled; this was an icy river.

Although the river waters hadn't frozen, the freezing chill in the air was countless times colder than the frost of the mortal world.

However, Sheng Mei was someone who cultivated the Ice Laws to the extreme. In such an environment, not only did she not think it was too cold, but she actually felt somewhat comfortable.

She walked down this ice rift for a long time. Then, at the end of this rift she could see the smooth, ice-like surface of a giant mirror.

This ice mirror towered into the clouds. The light blue surface faced Sheng Mei, reflecting the entire world upon it.

It seemed that within this cold ice, there was another world.

Sheng Mei understood that this great piece of ice was the Cold Ice Mirror mentioned by Lin Ming!

And it seemed that a wisp of remnant soul from her past life was within the Cold Ice Mirror.

Sheng Mei used a long period of time to slowly walk in front of the Cold Ice Mirror. As she looked into it, she saw winds and ice obscuring everything.

“Is it here…”

Sheng Mei softly thought out loud as she stood before the Cold Ice Mirror for a long time.

Her only reply was silence.

Sheng Mei patiently waited for several dozen breaths of time. Then, on the surface of the Cold Ice Mirror, light ripples suddenly appeared.

A gentle and deep voice, one that had slumbered for unknown billions of years, suddenly woke up and echoed in Sheng Mei's ears –

"My child, you've come..."

Sheng Mei's heart trembled!

This voice had been that faint call which summoned her. Feeling it near, there was an inexplicable kindness and familiarity, as if it came from somewhere in the deepest parts of her soul. This sort of feeling was completely unlike her past life.

"You are..." Sheng Mei's voice quivered.

"I am your last life's mother..."

Mother?

Sheng Mei shook, like she had been zapped by lightning. Whether it was a father or mother, these were extremely distant matters to Sheng Mei. Even when she was in the Demon God's Tomb where she experienced the memories of her past life, she rarely had memories of her parents. In her childhood, what she knew of were struggles, tribulations, slaughter!

There was likely only a single reason for this. That was because when she was a child, she rarely came into contact with her father and mother.

But today, the mother of Sheng Mei's past life had appeared. This was a bloodline connection, a communion that caused her soul to beat. Unknowingly, tears fell down her eyes.

Her mother was actually in the Asura forbidden land…

Sheng Mei could feel that her mother had already died; all that was left was a wisp of her remnant soul.

Sheng Mei knelt down and silently bowed.

Originally, Sheng Mei had taken the peak of martial arts as the goal she would chase after all her life. She never sought out her own parents but she didn't think she had a father or mother.

In fact, to the Sheng Mei of that time, kinship, family, those ideals were nothing but floating clouds in her eyes. Moreover, she never had family so she never knew what that felt like; she didn't even have friends. Those she recognized were only those of the same sect or race, as well as the Soul Emperor who passed down orders to her.

But during the long flow of time, Sheng Mei's character underwent subtle changes. This was particularly true for when she gave birth to Jiu'er. It was at that time she first realized what it was like to have another person in her life whose life she valued more than her own…

It was also at that time she understood the significance of family. But, when she finally became aware of this meaning, she discovered that her father and mother had already perished and all that was left over of them were their remnant souls.

"Child, rise…"

That gentle voice reverberated in Sheng Mei's ears once more. Sheng Mei bowed again before standing up and stepping into the world of the Cold Ice Mirror.

In this world, she could slowly sense the existence of her mother. This was a light feeling of blended bloodlines that flowed through all directions of the Cold Ice Mirror's world.

She suddenly understood what this was. "Mother… your remnant soul is the artifact spirit of the Cold Ice Mirror?"

“Yes… this is a spirit treasure refined by Asura. I have already become used to being in here…”

This gentle voice was continuously weak and faint. Sheng Mei realized that her mother’s remnant soul would not be like those in the Emperor Bone Sea, remaining in a state of everlasting perpetuity. There would be a day when her mother’s remnant soul would become so weak that it would eventually dissipate into the void.

This left Sheng Mei’s heart aching.

She could guess what had happened. 10 billion years ago, the Asura Road Master couldn’t bear to see her mother vanish into nothingness. Thus, he had protected her mother’s remnant soul within the Cold Ice Mirror…

But this also meant that her mother had withstood 10 billion years of loneliness here. Of course, there might have been some people who accompanied her.

Sheng Mei had a feeling in her heart. She turned and saw that a thousand feet away, on a glacier, a blue-clothed woman wearing a veil was silently standing.

Cold winds swayed about her and her black hair danced in the wind. The feeling she gave off was like that of an ice lotus blooming atop a snowy mountain, untainted by mortal hands.

Although this woman wore a veil, Sheng Mei could instantly confirm something – this… was her past self.

It was like staring at the mirror, both reflecting each other.

Sheng Mei wasn’t sure what to say. Her mind was left in chaos.

In truth, Sheng Mei was a complete ‘self’ born from her tenth life. But, because of some unknown reasons, she had been severed from her first nine lives. There were many riddles in her mind as well as many doubts.

If possible, Sheng Mei didn’t want to bother with these things. What she wanted the most was to break away from the turmoil of the world with Lin Ming, bringing Jiu’er with them. Although they couldn’t experience a life of eternal happiness, it would still be a long, happy, and simple life.

However, as for her past life, Sheng Mei in truth didn’t want to fuse back together with her previous personality. She just wanted to remain the pure her that she was.

However…

There were many things in life that couldn't be just because she hoped for them.

Destiny was like a great wheel. Whether or not one was prepared for it, whether or not one could withstand it, it would still come rolling towards you.

Just like the present...

As Sheng Mei was lost in thought, she suddenly felt a stabbing pain in her chest. Her face instantly paled.

A cold sweat began to fall down from her forehead. An inexplicable racing of her heart left her feeling anxious.

It was at this time that Sheng Mei's mother discovered something strange occurring to Sheng Mei. She asked with worry, "My child, what is wrong? Have you been injured?"

Sheng Mei gasped for breath, a hand pressed against her chest. "I... I don't know... suddenly feel anxious, as if I can't catch my breath..."

This feeling came suddenly and inexplicably. It left dark clouds hovering over Sheng Mei's heart.

…………

At this time, across unknown layers of time and space, in the vast chaos, there was a sea that extended outwards for countless miles.

For there to be a sea in the starry skies was simply inconceivable. And this sea was filthy and yellow, with innumerable bones floating within.

Faintly, one could hear the bitter cries of souls in the sea breeze, agonized wails that left one feeling dread and apprehension.

At some unknown time, atop the originally calm sea surface, a storm suddenly rose up. The storm grew larger and larger and the seawater was like two waterfalls rising into the air. Countless skeletons were smashed apart by the turbulent sea waves.

And in this raging sea, a youth appeared, stepping through the void as he emerged from the seawaters. He had long hair as white as snow and a face that was paper white.

He slowly rose upwards until he flew 100,000 feet into the air. Then, he looked at the sea in the starry skies and casually waved his hand.

The vast and limitless sea began to rapidly shrink. From millions of miles, to hundreds of thousands of miles, to thousands of miles, to hundreds of miles, to several feet, to several inches, and finally it shrank into a single drop of water.

This drop of water flew into the pupil of the white-haired youth's eye, moistening it like a single tear.

However, after this youth's eye was moistened with this drop of water it still remained as old and dirty as before, emitting the death energy that only a corpse would have.

The great sea that contained endless bones had turned into a single water drop and then fused into a youth's eye. Anyone who saw this would feel their scalp tingle with dread.

The youth fell deep into thought. He looked into the distant starry skies, a happy expression on his face. But, this happy smile caused one to feel an inexplicable sense of fear.

"I never thought that there would be some people so impatiently wishing to see me..."

The youth spoke out loud. He stepped up into the void, as if there were invisible stairs that only he could see. Like this, his figure submerged into the void, sinking in silently and leaving behind only light spatial ripples.

MW Chapter 2212

Chapter 2212 – Crisis

…

…

…

Within the wild universe, not only were there many star clusters with complicated terrains, but there were also many areas of space that were twisted up, making them nearly impossible to probe.

This was a place deep in the wild universe, in a world isolated from the outside –

This world wasn't large. It was only several hundred miles wide and shined as if it were a bright spring day. The sounds of tinkling water from spirit springs filled the air. On the lush green grass, cute little rabbits ran around and mischievous fawns raced about.

A girl dressed in flowery clothes rode a winged unicorn. She galloped out from a forest, speeding along the plains, her melodious laugh ringing about like silver bells.

“Big Brother, teach me the body transformation technique tomorrow!”

The girl shouted from afar. She was Jiu’er. As she spoke, she hugged the winged unicorn’s neck and leapt off.

The Big Brother she spoke to was Lin Huang. At this time Lin Huang was training his spear. His actions were focused and meticulous.

Shua –

The winged unicorn reared upwards, its hooves raised high up into the air before being brought crashing back down. Bits of fragrant green grass flew up, some falling on Lin Huang’s spear and some falling on his face. But, he didn’t seem affected at all.

Jiu’er flipped over and landed at Lin Huang’s side. She could see that Lin Huang wasn’t looking at her and couldn’t help but smile. She slapped a palm on the shaft of Lin Huang’s spear, but the spear shaft had Lin Huang’s true essence poured into it, so it remained like an iron statue, motionless.

“I must say Big Brother, even Daddy says that we can relax for a year, so how come you are still training here?”

This small world was a hidden one that was carefully chosen by Lin Ming. Lin Ming spent a great deal of time and effort to lay down sufficient array formations to completely seal up this entire world. Even if a peak True Divinity powerhouse were to probe the surrounding starry skies with their sense, they still wouldn't be able to discover anything.

Now, besides Sheng Mei, Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, and Xiao Moxian, Lin Ming's four children also lived here. They all lived here, in this world that he had arranged, in order to give his family a chance to settle down and stabilize. He knew that in the near future he would have to fight the Soul Emperor, and he wanted to settle his family in order to avoid them being dragged into that great war.

This world was supported with stable enchantments that formed a comprehensive system. It absorbed energy from the universe and was extremely durable. Without Lin Ming personally unraveling the array formations, even if an upper True Divinity were to spend an entire day attacking it, they still wouldn't be able to break their way in.

In truth, Lin Ming had prepared for the worst possible outcome. If an accident occurred and something happened to him, then his family could stay in this hidden world. At least, there would be a small chance for them to live on.

The great calamity was descending upon them all but had yet to arrive. Lin Ming's original intention was to accompany his family for some time and allow them to enjoy the little bit of peace that there was before catastrophe came. But for this short and comfortable period of time, Lin Huang actually spent most of his time training.

“Little Sister, you are not suited for body transformation.” Lin Huang drew a flower in the air before putting away his spear. At this time, one could see energy gathered around him like two large snakes that were then sucked into his body. “Dual cultivating energy and divine is more than enough for you to walk very far. Even Father still takes two great cultivation systems as his primary focus, and the third system as an auxiliary.”

“Aiya, Brother you are just so boring! Body transformation just seems so cool. I have decided later than I will also use a spear as my weapon! Wait, no, I will use a lance, an ancient war lance, the type that is over 10 feet long!”

As Jiu’er spoke she assumed a straight posture. In her hands, energy of the heavens and earth gathered, forming into the shape of a lance.

This energy lance was ten feet long. As she brought it flat before her body, it seemed quite dazzling when combined with her heroic stance.

Lin Huang scratched his head. “Sister, training in martial arts is to strengthen yourself, not for playing around…”

“…”

Jiu’er was already left speechless by Lin Huang. She felt that it was just far too difficult to communicate with this Big Brother Lin Huang, and it was instead easier to get along with her second brother. However her second brother didn’t seem to enjoy practicing martial arts as much. In truth, her second brother was only around 2000 years of age, and it would be hard for him to play any role in the upcoming calamity. Let alone her second brother, even her eldest brother Lin Huang would find it impossible to help their father fight against the Soul Emperor.

“Second Brother is fishing with Aunty Xuan. Let’s go and take a look. Daddy is something, huh? He said that he would accompany us for a few years, but we haven’t even seen his shadow these past days. I wonder just what he’s been up to.”

Jiu’er was a particularly talkative child. Perhaps it was because she had grown up in the stuffy and quiet Demon God’s Tomb, but even when faced with this Lin Huang that didn’t respond much, she still chattered on non-stop.

Lin Huang shook his head. He followed his little sister.

They passed through a hillside and came to a small lake that rippled with clear blue water.

The waters within this lake were all from spirit springs. If a mortal were to drink a single drop they could prolong their life for a hundred years. All of this had been arranged by Xiao Moxian, and Lin Ming’s entire family had lived here in this independent world for three and a half years already.

Lin Ming said that he would live in this small world for five years. Then, he would leave to go into seclusion alone, perceiving the Laws and impacting towards a higher boundary.

To the current Lin Ming, in a situation where he didn't experience a great lucky chance and only bitterly trained, he wouldn't be able to increase his strength much in five years.

When a bowstring was always strung taut, it would eventually snap. To always be tensed was not necessarily a good thing. To calm down, slow down, and allow oneself to relax before returning to train again, this might allow one to cultivate even better than before.

Thus, Lin Ming used this time to accompany his family. And most importantly, he didn't know if he would have the chance to do so in the future.

With the great battle looming in the horizon, Lin Ming always felt restless.

As they arrived at the lakeside, Jiu'er called, "Second Brother! Aunty Xuan! What are we eating for lunch today?"

When a martial artist reached the Xiantian realm they could already ward off hunger. At this time, they could absorb heaven and earth origin energy or take pills to maintain their lives.

Lin Ming’s entire family was naturally capable of warding off hunger. But, when his family came together they liked to prepare food and eat together; there was a certain harmony and subtle joy in this. Of course, the foods that Lin Ming’s family ate were all top spirit foods, not much worse off when compared to transcendent divine pills.

And Jiu’er particularly loved the food that Qin Xingxuan prepared. But, as she shouted out loud, her footsteps came to a pause.

She looked at the distant lake with doubt. She could feel a strange aura.

This was a light death energy.

The death energy entered into the small lake that had been filled with life and overflowing with spiritual power. The lake was polluted, and even the green grass around it began to wither.

On the lakeside, a white-clothed youth was sitting on a large stone, his back facing Jiu’er and Lin Huang. He grasped a fishing pole of green bamboo. As the fishing line fell into the water, it caused a circle of ripples to spread out.

Jiu’er held her breath. From afar, she had not seen this person, but as she approached he had appeared like ghosts and gods. This sort of feeling was as if he had always been here, but she had simply never discovered him.

It was clear that this wasn't the back of her second brother!

Jiu'er's heart tightened. Lin Ming had never revealed the location of this world to anyone. Besides her mother Sheng Mei who could locate this place due to the link between their souls, as well as their Aunty Mo, Mo Eversnow, who occasionally visited, there was never anyone else who came.

And now this person had appeared from nowhere, their entire body overflowing with killing intent. Moreover, their father wasn't here and also seemed to have no knowledge of this. How could Jiu'er not be panicked?

This person didn't seem like any human Empyrean. In fact, he didn't even seem human at all!

Beside Jiu'er, Lin Huang had already taken hold of his spear to face this great enemy.

As for Jiu'er, although she held onto her spatial ring, she never planned to take out her weapon. She could faintly feel that this person had come by themselves. For someone to be able to quietly penetrate past their father's enchantments without notice, how powerful should they be?

She didn't dare to imagine, but she knew that this person was someone that neither she nor Lin Huang could deal with. She quietly took out a sound transmitting talisman and prepared to send Lin Ming a message. Only if Lin Ming arrived here was there a chance to deal with this stranger.

Jiu’er could feel her palms wet with sweat. But, when she pulled out the sound transmitting talisman, that strange back remained as motionless as before. This caused her heart to sink. This other person absolutely realized her own little actions and yet didn’t care at all, simply remaining there like a rock. This was proof that he simply didn’t fear their father at all…

MW Chapter 2213

Chapter 2213 – Lin Ming versus the Soul Emperor

…

…

…

“Jiu’er, come here!”

As Jiu’er was dripping with a cold sweat, unsure of what to do, a deep and dignified voice sounded out from behind her.

Jiu’er trembled; this was her father’s voice.

Although this unknown person had quietly passed through their enchantments, their father had discovered it afterwards.

Or, there was a possibility that this stranger had allowed their father to discover him…

No matter what happened, Jiu'er knew with absolute clarity that this was an extremely critical situation. This was because she could see how tense her father was, how solemn his expression was, and she could even see beads of sweat beginning to form on his forehead.

Jiu'er's heart skipped a beat. In her eyes, her father was a near omnipotent existence. But now there was sweat forming on his forehead.

"Father!" Lin Huang gripped his spear, his breath caught in his throat.

"You come too!"

Lin Ming's tone brooked no disobedience. In this situation, the role Lin Huang could play was nearly negligible.

And at this time, from not too far away, two people were walking towards this area. One of them was a gentle-looking woman. She wore a light yellow dress and had a delicate bamboo basket hanging on her arm. This bamboo basket was filled with little mushrooms that had been bred in this small world. By her side was a handsome youth. He had elegant clothes and a charming appearance. The outline of his face was faintly similar to Lin Ming's, but they possessed two completely different styles.

They were Qin Xingxuan and Qin Xingxuan’s son, the second brother that Jiu’er spoke of – Lin Xuan.

The two of them were originally chatting and laughing, but as they saw the scene by the lake, their steps came to a standstill.

Qin Xingxuan looked at Lin Ming and the white-clothed youth with wide eyes. Shock flashed in her pupils. She and Lin Xuan had just been at the lakeside relaxing, and afterwards had decided to pick some mushrooms to prepare some mushroom soup for later. But now they had returned to this scene before them.

Looking at Lin Ming and Lin Huang’s actions, they understood that this was an enemy invasion.

“Xingxuan, come here…”

Lin Ming’s voice was low and deep. Just before he appeared, he had been with Mu Qianyu, Xiao Moxian, and his daughter Lin Yu – he had received them all into the Grandmist Spirit Bead’s space.

Now, he planned to bring Qin Xingxuan and the others into the space within the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

He was well aware that if the Soul Emperor were to attack at this time, those here would die a horrible and violent death!

It was because of this that his forehead was wet with sweat. His sense was completely focused on the Soul Emperor's every action and movement.

If his family were to be killed by the Soul Emperor, he couldn't imagine just what the consequences would be.

"Father, he is…"

Jiu'er had already guessed who this stranger was. In this universe, if there was a person that could cause Lin Ming to be so tense and worried, there was only a single one.

Before Jiu'er finished speaking, a flash of light covered her field of vision. She felt a moment of dizziness as she was sucked into a strange space.

Lin Ming and the Soul Emperor had vanished. Lin Huang, Qin Xingxuan, and Lin Xuan arrived in this strange space with Jiu'er.

"This is the Spirit Bead's space…"

Lin Huang dual cultivated essence and energy. Lin Ming had once brought Lin Huang into the Grandmist Spirit Bead to cultivate, so he was able to recognize this space.

“Father has transferred us into the Spirit Bead’s space, but he remains outside, facing the great enemy…”

Lin Huang clenched his fists together. At this time, he saw that within the Spirit Bead space, there was also Mu Qianyu, Xiao Moxian, and Lin Yu.

“Mother!” Lin Huang worriedly shouted out.

“What happened?”

Xiao Moxian and Mu Qianyu were unclear as to what had occurred outside. They were originally together with Lin Ming, but Lin Ming’s complexion suddenly changed and he instantly placed them into the Spirit Bead space. Before much time passed, Lin Huang, Qin Xingxuan, and everyone else also joined them.

Xiao Moxian naturally realized that this was most likely because danger had arrived!

“Soul Emperor… I fear that the Soul Emperor has come…”

Jiu’er muttered, worry etched across her features. Her words caused everyone’s hearts to sink!

“Soul Emperor… how could this be… isn’t there still a long time before he emerges from seclusion?”

Xiao Moxian recalled that Lin Ming once said the Soul Emperor would have to go into seclusion for tens of thousands of years. But from that point, only 9000 or so years had passed. This was the reason why Lin Ming was willing to make some time to accompany his family.

If the Soul Emperor had already left seclusion then Lin Ming would never have dared to be together with his family. Otherwise, if the Soul Emperor were to suddenly appear out of nowhere, then his entire family would be sucked into the chaos.

“I have no idea…”

Jiu’er shook her head. She began to worry over her mother Sheng Mei.

Her mother had entered the Asura forbidden land and still hadn’t returned. Now that the Soul Emperor had appeared, would her mother be safe?

………

On the lakeside, the Soul Emperor still sat upon a rock, fishing. His clothes were as white as snow, like a hermit who had secluded himself in the mountains.

From the point that Jiu'er and Lin Huang had discovered the Soul Emperor, to when Lin Ming had appeared, the Soul Emperor still hadn't moved.

Lin Ming slowly reached out a hand. The Black Dragon Spear seemed to have a life of its own as it appeared in Lin Ming's grasp.

The Soul Emperor's back faced Lin Ming. He gently laid down the fishing pole and stood up. The moment he rose, the life-filled lake seemed to rapidly lose all vitality, with him at the center.

The green grass withered, the flowers crumbled. The originally deep blue waters turned muddy and yellow. The corpses of spirit fish floated to the surface of the water as the entire lake turned into a lake of death.

"Do you find it strange that I didn't do anything to your family?"

The Soul Emperor turned around and looked at Lin Ming. He still had the appearance of a sickly youth near death. The only difference from before was that the filthiness and death in his eyes had diminished by the tiniest bit.

"It's because you believe that victory is already in your hands." Lin Ming stared at the Soul Emperor.

The Soul Emperor smiled. "The reason I came is not because I want to use your family to force you to do something, nor do I wish to take you as my servant. Thus, there is no need for me to provoke you, because all I wish to do is destroy you."

The Soul Emperor casually stated that he would take Lin Ming's life. This sort of tone and feeling was as if he were trading goods with Lin Ming.

"But you are not the complete form of the Demon God's Tomb Master! Do you think you have the strength to kill me?" Killing intent began to surge off of Lin Ming, gradually condensing towards him. Even the power within the force field enchantments that guarded this world was taken back by Lin Ming.

"You guessed right. My main body is still in the Dark Abyss, and I cannot recover it." The Soul Emperor said, not denying this.

"Not only do you not have your complete form but you haven't finished your seclusion; your soul is not yet immortal!" Lin Ming said, his words sharp and deadly. He guessed that the reason the Soul Emperor left seclusion midway was all in order to strangle him before he could grow further!

The Soul Emperor thought little of it. He simply smiled, “It seems you have always misunderstood me. My goal is not to refine the Eternal Soul. Even with the Eternal Soul I cannot gain eternal life. The reason I need to go into seclusion for such a long time is in order to have my soul become the Heavenly Dao Laws of the Demon God’s Tomb and thoroughly control the Emperor Bone Sea. Your Eternal Soul is merely a primer, an opening act for me to do so.”

To have his soul become the Heavenly Dao Laws?

Lin Ming’s heart shook. A human had essence, energy, and divine – they were equivalent to one’s flesh and blood, true essence, and soul.

Correspondingly, the universe also had its own essence, energy, and divine – they were all creatures and matter in existence, all energy in the universe, and the Heavenly Dao Laws.

The soul of the universe was the Heavenly Dao Laws.

If the Soul Emperor could transform his own soul into the Heavenly Dao Laws then he would naturally become immortal.

“Although I have not completed the final transformation of my soul, I have still completed over half. There is also one final stage remaining, but I can pause this final stage midway to come out and handle some matters that must be completed in advance… for instance, killing you!”

Lin Ming coldly sneered. “It seems you aren’t as confident as you think you are. Do you think you won’t be my match 10,000 years from now?”

The Soul Emperor laughed out loud, without any sense of denial. “In the great scheme that I have laid out for 100 billion years, I have considered all the people in the world within my calculations, and yet I have actually miscalculated you. In these 100 billion years I have seen countless peerless geniuses, but I never imagined that there would be a genius who could rise to a level that could truly threaten me.

“And I never would have imagined that on the Sky Spill Planet, Sheng Mei would guarantee your life with some threats and concessions. And while I was in seclusion, in a situation where you were nothing but a dried up lamp on the verge of death, you actually managed to survive and become reborn, even cultivating yourself back to the peak.

“You have indeed given me many surprises. But, I no longer wish to be surprised again, so I have personally come to kill you off.”

While the Soul Emperor spoke, a single teardrop rolled out from one of his filthy eyes.

As this teardrop left the Soul Emperor's eye, it crazily expanded, turning into a raging flood that overwhelmed Lin Ming's small world.

Everything in the world was sucked into this flood.

This water was like acid, corroding the life force of anything it touched!

"Although I do not have my complete form, I am not someone you can defeat. Now, let me see just how much you've grown these past years!"

As the Soul Emperor spoke, the waters had already filled up the entire small world. With a loud explosion, the enchantments that Lin Ming had laid down in this world, all of the concealing array formations completely shattered!

These were enchantments that not even an upper True Divinity could destroy if they put in all their strength. Yet in front of the Soul Emperor, they were actually so weak and fragile.

MW Chapter 2214

Chapter 2214 – The Power of the Soul Emperor

…

…

…

Hu –

Hu –

Hu –

Souls cried and demons wept. The sea of the Soul Emperor's tear was flooded with countless suffering souls and bones.

Lin Ming felt the energy within his body turn stagnant and his strength be suppressed by a great deal. There was even a feeling of tight breathlessness in his chest; it was clear that this sea was the Soul Emperor’s force field domain.

“This is the sea of suffering. Those who enter have no way to leave, and today, you will die here.”

As the Soul Emperor spoke he lifted a finger and pointed it outwards. His skin was as pale as paper and one could even see the blood vessels beneath. However, a normal man’s blood vessels were blue, but the Soul Emperor’s were gray, as if the blood that flowed within them was also filled with death.

This finger amplified to infinite proportions in Lin Ming’s eyes. He was simply unable to resist, unable to dodge. The spiral fingerprint was clearly visible, each circle like a vortex. Because the Soul Emperor’s finger seemed as large as the heavens, each circular fingerprint was like a ring-shaped mountain range!

Lin Ming’s eyes shot open and he grasped the Black Dragon Spear in his hands. He felt that in his entire life he had never encountered such a terrifying attack before!

The finger possessed enough pressure to break down the skies. Lin Ming exploded in a thunderous roar as strength erupted within him to the limits. Around him, eight Dao Palaces opened and the two highest Laws also fused into his inner world. The Asura blood began to burn!

Lin Ming aimed at the center of that giant finger and thrust out his spear. Spear light as thick as a mountain hurtled forth, like a pillar that lifted the heavens!

However, facing that giant finger, even the mighty spear light was nothing but a tiny needle that crashed into it.

Kacha!

Spear light shattered. However, even though the giant finger was also pierced through, it continued to crush down as before!

Bang!

With Lin Ming as the center, the entire cosmos seemed to fall down. A massive fingerprint formed in the endless void. Lin Ming coughed out as his joints emitted loud cracking sounds. His bones broke all over, his organs shattered, and he spat out a mouthful of blood.

He was sent flying backwards. Like a bag of blood that had been ripped open, blood rained down.

So strong!

Lin Ming's pupils shrank. This was the first time he experienced the strength of the Demon God's Tomb Master, and this was only his avatar!

If the avatar was so horrifying, just what would the complete form of the Demon God's Tomb Master be like?

Lin Ming held his breath, revolving the power of divinity and demons in his body. His broken bones and shattered organs began to rapidly repair. A look of faint surprise flashed in the Soul Emperor's eyes.

"You seem to have opened the eighth Dao Palace of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, attained a higher level and rebirthed your body. In addition, you have absorbed a totem level abyssal into your body. With the two forms fused together, this gave you the body of a heavenly demon. Now, your body's tolerance capacity and recovery abilities far surpass those of any martial artist on the same level… but, how many of my attacks do you think you can withstand?"

The Soul Emperor said with a smile. His smile caused one to feel a chill creep down their back.

Lin Ming was aware that what the Soul Emperor said was true. If he hadn't opened the eighth Dao Palace, allowing the Eight Inner Hidden Gates and Nine Stars of the Dao Palace to connect and commune at a higher level and giving his body a qualitative leap upwards, then perhaps the Soul Emperor's attack just now would have sundered him in half. Even if he didn't die, he would have lost most of his life and basically been left helpless.

But even like this, with his current condition, he wouldn’t be able to withstand many of the Soul Emperor’s attacks before exhausting all of his strength!

This was because no matter how powerful his regenerative abilities were, if he wanted to recover from severe wounds he would have to consume a massive amount of energy. And, the more powerful the body, the more energy that would be used!

He couldn’t allow the Soul Emperor to freely attack him again!

Lin Ming bit down on the tip of his tongue and burnt the Gate of Life’s blood essence.

The strength from the burning blood essence caused Lin Ming’s blood vitality to seethe within his body!

He clenched his teeth, his eyes blazing at the Soul Emperor.

However, the Soul Emperor merely curved his lips upwards slightly. “Burning your blood essence? You have opened the Gate of Life, and if you burn a little bit of blood essence you can still restore yourself. But, this will only make your strength pass away that much faster, and bring you nearer to death that much quicker.

"Let me help you along!"

This time, the Soul Emperor stretched out his entire palm. This palm seemed to hold a great universe as it came crashing down upon Lin Ming!

At this time, Lin Ming's strength had already been gathered to the limit. He cried out into the heavens, his mortal body nearly fusing together with the Black Dragon Spear!

Spear and man as one!

Weng!

Lin Ming's body and the Black Dragon Spear turned into a divine dragon that danced through the air. The divine dragon roared as it shot towards the Soul Emperor's palm.

However, no matter how mighty and majestic the divine dragon was, in front of this hand that seemed to command the heavens and earth, it was actually no different from a bug. The divine dragon was about to be pinched by the hand!

Lin Ming roared out, burning another 10% of his blood essence!

“Hahh!”

A loud cry broke through the skies. In this crucial moment, Lin Ming’s speed rapidly rose up once more and he forcefully pushed out from between the fingers of that giant hand.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The heavens and earth collapsed and stars were torn apart. In the surrounding trillion miles, the meteorite belt turned into powder. The countless meteorites and asteroids disintegrated to dust!

The explosive shockwave swept through the entire galaxy. This feeling was as if the galaxy itself had been cut in half!

“What is that!?”

A trillion miles away, several human World Kings saw the apocalyptic scene occurring before them.

“Is that the supernova of a super star?” A World King mumbled, shocked. They were stationed in this part of the galaxy but didn’t know that Lin Ming’s hidden world was within their guarding area.

“No, this is two super existences fighting!”

A World King said, his complexion grim. “Hurry and send the news, immediately inform Senior Emperor Shakya!”

“Yes!”

……….

“Mm? You actually managed to escape my palm at the last moment?”

The Soul Emperor watched as Lin Ming ran about from between the creases of his fingers, hurtling towards him without stop. A flash of surprise appeared in his filthy eyes.

“My attack seems to have stimulated the potential within your body. Still, nothing has changed.”

The Soul Emperor wanted to take back his hand and attack once more. But at this time, the rapidly soaring Lin Ming changed his attack trajectory.

From hurtling straight towards the Soul Emperor, he forcefully turned himself a sharp 90 degrees!

Ca!

The Soul Emperor's sea of suffering force field was torn apart by Lin Ming without end!

The sea of suffering didn't hinder the Soul Emperor's strength and attacks, but, it would suppress Lin Ming. However at this time, with Lin Ming fused together with his spear as one, this force field was torn open by him instead!

With Lin Ming's body as the center, seawater curled up into a storm as he opened up a whirlpool passage!

"You want to flee? An intelligent decision!"

A playful look crossed the Soul Emperor's features. Lin Ming's strike was not aimed to injure him but to break through the sea of suffering and escape!

If one faced an enemy that far exceeded themselves, and knew perfectly well that fighting the enemy meant certain death, then continuing to fight was not bravery but stupidity. Moreover, Lin Ming also had his family with him right now.

He didn’t want his family to be buried with him.

Bang!

The boundaries to the sea of suffering were ripped open. Lin Ming overdrew his blood vitality. With the massive backlash of doing so, he spat out a mouthful of blood. However, Lin Ming ignored his injuries and flew non-stop into the depths of the universe!

He ripped open a space channel and shuttled through the void!

In a battle between martial artists, one only needed to be slightly stronger to defeat someone else. But to kill the other party, that was actually far more difficult.

In particular if the other party was attempting to escape with all their might.

Since Lin Ming knew he couldn’t contend with the Soul Emperor, he chose to temporarily run away.

“You… think you can escape?”

The moment that Lin Ming broke into the void, an ancient rune flashed out from between the Soul Emperor's eyebrows. This was a spirit mark; it directly fell upon Lin Ming's body.

In the past, Lin Ming had already suffered enough losses and experienced enough pain thanks to a True Divinity mark. Now, another mark appeared on his body...

Lin Ming's thoughts darkened. He could feel the mark that stuck onto his body and knew what he faced now was a great life and death crisis.

He seemed to have returned to the time when he was being chased down by Soaring Feather God King. No matter how much he tore through space and transferred through the void, the Soul Emperor still followed tightly behind!

MW Chapter 2215

Chapter 2215 – Moth to the Flame

…

…

…

Transferring through the void again and again, the Soul Emperor's True Divinity mark was no different from a life-reaping symbol. With Lin Ming's strength, if he were given enough time then he could erase it. But now the Soul Emperor would never give him this time.

Lin Ming didn't know how long he spent racing through the starry skies. From the edges of the wild universe, he flew towards the central region.

At this time, just as Lin Ming underwent another great void transfer and left the space channel, he could see that not too far away there was a planet. This planet was filled with life and beautiful scenery. There were some people who lived simple farming lives and there were also martial artists who had gathered to form small sects. This was a common human planet in the wild universe.

2000 years ago, the mortals of humanity had already begun to spread out and develop throughout the wild universe. Afterwards the Saint Sovereign left seclusion, but because there weren't many saint Empyreans who rejoined the war effort, the saints no longer had the ability to engage in a large-scale slaughter and encirclement like they did in the past. Because of this, the common people of humanity weren't much affected.

Just as Lin Ming saw this planet of the human race and before he could pass through the void again, he could see that in the skies above, a giant hand came crashing down, rolling over the planet.

Lin Ming's heartbeat nearly came to a stop. Without any suspense, the planet blew apart, turning into endless stones. A massive energy storm formed which turned the countless lives on the planet into nothing but space dust!

This was the hand of the Soul Emperor!

Lin Ming's mind was filled with pure hatred. Just like that, all life on an entire planet had been snuffed out, no different from someone stepping on a crowd of ants.

And presently he didn't have the ability to defeat the Soul Emperor. He could only grit his teeth and continue escaping.

But at this time, from that crushed planet, endless ghosts and suffering souls flew out. From the summoning powers of the Soul Emperor, these souls weren't destroyed in the energy storm but began to rapidly gather together in a range of tens of thousands of miles.

Everything within Lin Ming's field of vision was flooded with a suffocating dark gray. Death energy rose up, fusing into space. The space channel that Lin Ming began to tear open seemed to be caught in a swamp and he was unable to open it any further.

Lin Ming's heart sank. The Soul Emperor had fused this death energy into the void of the universe, changing the nature of space itself so that it was impossible to undergo a great void transfer in this area!

If he wanted to continue shuttling through space, he would need to break past this domain!

Lin Ming didn't even give it a thought. He no longer tried to transfer through space and instead bit down on the tip of his tongue, erupting with the limit of speed and strength, wanting to rush out from the domain. But at this time, the Soul Emperor's overwhelming pressure came crashing down over Lin Ming.

"You, cannot escape."

The Soul Emperor’s palm came slapping down, striking Lin Ming as he tried to flee. The slap exploded behind Lin Ming and a shockwave rushed out like landslides and tsunamis. Lin Ming was caught in the waves. Like an arrow shot down by a bird, he began tumbling away!

His original speed and savage momentum had been scattered by the Soul Emperor. With it, raging death energy gathered towards Lin Ming, causing him to feel like he fell into a mire!

The Soul Emperor thrust out a finger. This finger didn’t fall onto Lin Ming, but pointed somewhere in the void. The void began to twist, and beneath the strength of the Soul Emperor, a space gate opened.

Wu! Wu! Wu! Wu!

Mournful roars echoed from the space gate. Four black rakshasas walked out.

These four rakshasas were formed from remnant souls; their bodies overflowed with the ancient aura of kings.

This sort of aura wasn’t something that could be possessed by ordinarily refined soul puppets, but was an aura that only genuinely supreme powerhouses could have, true rulers of the world.

This meant that these four rakshasas weren't made from ordinary remnant souls, but from ancient god kings who emerged from the 33 Heavens billions of years ago.

After they died, their souls had been refined by the Soul Emperor and they became his soul puppets.

"Your mortal body is formidable. You've done everything in your power and can even withstand several of my attacks. However… I am done waiting.

"Explode!"

The Soul Emperor's gaze was indifferent. He flicked his finger and the four rakshasas hurtled towards Lin Ming.

At the same time, the Soul Emperor thrust out a palm at Lin Ming. A black hand appeared, so large so it could hold a planet. This hand emitted infinite death energy as it came smashing down onto Lin Ming!

As for those four rakshasas, they revolved their energies to their limits. Their eyes turned red and cracks began to run over their bodies from the terrifying percolation of energy in them.

Recalling the word ‘explode’ that the Soul Emperor had just said, Lin Ming understood that these four rakshasas wanted to rush over and explode on him!

The Soul Emperor didn’t plan on using the rakshasas to divert his attention, but to blow him up instead!

Lin Ming was originally able to rely upon his deep abilities to fight back as he ran away, delaying the Soul Emperor as long as possible. But, if the Soul Emperor were to discard these four rakshasa puppets and blow them up and also attack himself at the same time, then it would be impossible for Lin Ming to resist this attack!

And to the Soul Emperor, these four rakshasa puppets that were formed from ancient God Kings weren’t anything at all.

The Soul Emperor’s attack blocked all directions that Lin Ming could evade in. The black hand came crashing down and the four rakshasas blocked all directions! With this, Lin Ming had been placed in a great life and death crisis!

In this critical moment, Lin Ming smashed a fist into his own chest. He spat out a mouthful of blood essence and burned it without hesitation!

A black bead appeared in front of him. It completely absorbed all the burning blood essence and emitted a blood red brilliance!

Lin Ming had used the Grandmist Spirit Bead, and even allowed it to drink its fill of his blood essence!

Lin Ming had opened the Gate of Life, and even if he burned blood essence he could still restore it. But, there was actually a limit to burning his blood essence. If he burned over 30% of his blood essence then he would be left weakened for many days. If he burned over 50% of his blood essence then it would cause permanent damage to his body. If he were to burn over 70-80% of his blood essence, then this might be a fatal wound!

But now Lin Ming could no longer care about such things. Facing the Soul Emperor’s attack, if he didn’t burn his blood essence then he would undoubtedly die!

Lin Ming attacked. The Nine Stars of the Dao Palace appeared behind him and the strength of his demon avatar fused into his true self.

Scales enveloped Lin Ming’s body and fierce bone spikes drilled out from his elbows. Lin Ming roared out aloud, and together with the Grandmist Spirit Bead, he hurtled forwards, turning into a meteor that shot towards the Soul Emperor's black hand!

Lin Ming knew that even the combined force of the four exploding rakshasas couldn’t compare to the might of the Soul Emperor's palm. If he were to be struck by this palm then he would immediately disintegrate into dust and ashes!

Bang!

With a deep explosion, the black hand was forcefully pierced through by Lin Ming. But, Lin Ming's recently regenerated body broke down once more. His meridians were torn apart and his joints cracked open. As he held his spear, his arms were twisted at a strange angle and bones jutted out from his flesh and blood.

This was a completely disparate battle. Facing the Soul Emperor, even though he was only an avatar of his true form, Lin Ming still wasn't able to resist him.

Lin Ming was sent flying backwards. And at this time, the four rakshasas flew towards him!

Lin Ming's thoughts sank; he could feel rising despair!

If Lin Ming was in his peak state and stimulated his protective power of divinity and demons to the limit, then he could forcefully withstand these four exploding rakshasas.

But now, his strength was exhausted, his organs broken, and he was wounded all over. He was barely able to pour energy into his shattered meridians and his crushed skeleton wasn't able to mobilize the power of his mortal body. He was nearly defenseless, and in this completely spent condition, he could only stare helplessly on as these four rakshasas were about to explode around him!

This was a strike he absolutely could not withstand!

Without a single pause, the four rakshasas revolved their energies to their limits and then exploded together!

Bang!

It was like four suns erupting. A blinding divine light swallowed everything. In that violent storm of energy, Lin Ming blinked as a shield of white energy shrouded his body.

A warm feeling covered him, energizing his body that was nearly completely broken down, and seemed to even be accelerating his healing.

But such a situation left Lin Ming’s mind tensed.

Who!?

Although the four rakshasas exploding together was still inferior to the Soul Emperor’s strike, if one had to look throughout the entire 33 Heavens, who could withstand it?

The light faded away. A white figure hovered in front of Lin Ming, guarding him. She was the one who had forcefully propped up that protective energy shield just now.

She, was Divine Dream!

At this time, Divine Dream’s chest was already dyed completely red with blood. The flexible armor formed from her energy had torn apart. Her arms that supported the protective shield fell down, limp, as the bones in them had already been crushed to pieces.

Not just that, but blood streamed out from her eyes, nose, and ears. Her originally star-bright eyes had dimmed and had lost their luster.

Divine Dream was the first human to break into True Divinity. When Lin Ming returned, she had long since gone into seclusion for 2000 years to break into middle True Divinity. Besides Lin Ming, she was the greatest powerhouse of humanity.

And today was her first battle since stepping into middle True Divinity.

Or perhaps, this couldn’t even be called a battle at all, but a moth flying into the flames...

MW Chapter 2216

Chapter 2216 – Heaven and Man as One

…

…

…

From when Lin Ming first started fighting with the Soul Emperor, the human race headquarters had already obtained news of it. Even though they knew perfectly well that they couldn't play any effective role in Lin Ming's battle, they still couldn't stand idly by and ignore the danger that Lin Ming was in.

Even disregarding the fact that Lin Ming had rescued them several times, if Lin Ming died then humanity would soon follow.

Lin Ming and the Soul Emperor did not conceal the location of their battle at all; wherever they went, the earth would shake and the heavens would crumble. It wasn't difficult for human True Divinities to use their sense and lock onto the path that Lin Ming fled in and where the Soul Emperor was chasing him. With this, the high level figures of humanity started to rush towards Lin Ming, and the first one to arrive was naturally the strongest of them all; Divine Dream, who had just left seclusion.

"Senior Divine Dream!"

Lin Ming's body flickered and he arrived at the side of Divine Dream and helped support her. After being heavily wounded by the Soul Emperor, Divine Dream couldn't even stand steady.

As he watched Divine Dream bleed from her head and her spiritual sea darkening, Lin Ming bit his lips, rage filling his heart!

As his life was hanging by a thread, Divine Dream had overdrawn her life in order to block that catastrophe for him. Now, he could feel Divine Dream's life aura rapidly weakening. This left Lin Ming burning with worry!

"There is actually someone who came to rescue you without a care for their life… and to give you a chance to catch your breath. Since this is the case, let me fulfill your wishes and allow you to die together."

As the Soul Emperor spoke, he stretched out his palm. The surface of his palm tore open and a bone staff drilled out from the flesh and blood.

The bone staff was 10 feet long and glossy, as if it were made from black agate.

This was the Soul Emperor's weapon!

The Soul Emperor had the appearance of a youth and wasn't too tall. This bone staff that was hidden in his body was actually a good deal longer than his height.

It was genuinely crafted from the bones of the Demon God from 100 billion years ago; it had already reached an unimaginably high grade!

As the Soul Emperor brandished this bone staff, his aura became far more terrifying.

Seeing this weapon and feeling the immense pressure of the Soul Emperor, Divine Dream shivered; this was not a level of strength that a True Divinity could contend with.

"Lin Ming… I will give you the final measure of my strength…"

Divine Dream struggled to say with a true essence sound transmission. She had already been severely weakened. The difference between her and the Soul Emperor was far too great. In order to block his strike she had to overdraw her blood vitality, and the injuries she sustained in the process were far too deep. She was almost only managing to support herself with her will alone.

Now, it was impossible for the strength she had left remaining to pose any threat to the Soul Emperor. The only thing she could do to play a role in this battle was to burn her blood vitality and divine soul and pass that strength on to Lin Ming.

With the strength of her divine soul as the conductor, she could pass the last dregs of her power into Lin Ming's body. Then, combined with Lin Ming's Nine Stars of the Dao Palace and True Divinity strength, he could reach the peak of essence, energy, and divine. With this, he might have a possibility of blocking the Soul Emperor's next attack.

But by this time, Lin Ming's eyes had already turned blood red.

He was well aware that if Divine Dream were to burn her blood vitality and divine soul in such a state, she would undoubtedly die!

"Senior Divine Dream, I know that you want to bet everything in order to preserve my life as well as preserve the future of humanity and the 33 Heavens. But, I cannot borrow your strength. I do not want others to die for me. Moreover, my body has already been marked by the Soul Emperor's True Divinity spirit mark. While I can escape one catastrophe, I cannot escape the second. There is simply no path left for me to retreat. In truth, ever since the first day I stepped onto the road of martial arts, there has never been any retreat for me. In my lifetime I have been defeated, I have fled, I have been schemed against, and once I even fell from the highest mountain peak to the lowest valley and experienced true death. But, I never thought of admitting defeat! If the Soul Emperor wants to kill me, then let me face him!"

As Lin Ming spoke, he burned his blood vitality without reserve! A horrifying strength rushed through him, so intense that his meridians and mortal body were barely able to withstand it. His skin began to crack apart and tear open from the pressure.

But at the same time, Lin Ming's martial arts will rose straight up and then rose again. That invisible martial arts will seemed to turn into a peerless spear that pierced into the vastness of the universe!

The change occurring within Lin Ming left Divine Dream startled. At this time, the heavily wounded her found it hard to resist the pressure created by Lin Ming's eruption of strength.

Bang!

With the Soul Emperor at the center, a storm of energy erupted, covering Lin Ming and Divine Dream. This energy storm was only the Soul Emperor's opening move, but this opening move was already able to disintegrate any Empyrean level martial artist!

Beneath the tearing strength of this storm, the severely wounded Divine Dream was naturally unable to resist it.

Lin Ming opened up a protective shield of the power of divinity and demons, stimulated his strength to the limit!

“Strength! Give me strength! More strength! Strength beyond strength!”

Lin Ming roared in his mind. The demon spine buried in Lin Ming’s flesh and blood was pulled out by him. With the support of the Grandmist Spirit Bead, it was forcefully swallowed into his body!

Such a Demon God bone would be difficult to digest if it were fused into his flesh and blood, and it would even have side effects. But at this time, Lin Ming couldn’t care about such things!

“Mm?” The Soul Emperor’s complexion changed for the first time. As Lin Ming wildly combusted his blood essence, he could feel that Lin Ming’s divine soul had reached an unprecedented peak!

This was a transformation that could only occur on the precipice of life and death. The Soul Emperor’s expression became several points more dignified. “This child cannot be allowed to remain alive!”

In this battle, the Soul Emperor was able to feel just how terrifying Lin Ming actually was. He had to take advantage of this time to destroy him!

The Soul Emperor attacked. The bone staff shot forwards, crashing towards Lin Ming and Divine Dream like the collapse of the world!

At this time, Lin Ming lifted his hands and placed the weakened Divine Dream into the Grandmist Spirit Bead.

Lin Ming lifted his arms evenly. A blood red lotus appeared in his right hand and an Asura wheel appeared in his left.

These were the two highest Laws that Lin Ming cultivated – the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra!

Then, Lin Ming brought his hands together. From between his eyebrows, his Eternal Soul blazed like an inferno, like a blinding sun!

With the support of that incredible divine soul, the originally incompatible Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra began to thoroughly fuse together at this moment!

Lin Ming had already started the initial steps in fusing together the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra in the Demon God's Tomb. And in order to completely fuse the two together, what he needed was a turning point!

And today, Lin Ming fused together the universe of the world and the universe of the body. At this moment, his mortal body, inner world, and divine soul, completely fused together with the universe of the 33 Heavens!

Lin Ming's body was like a star, like all things in existence. The energy in his body was like the origin energy of the universe, and his soul was like the Heavenly Dao Laws!

The strength of the 33 Heavens' universe flowed towards Lin Ming!

Lin Ming's strength climbed at a maddening pace. This was no longer just his strength, but strength that came from all lives and all worlds in the 33 Heavens!

Lin Ming attacked. He didn't use the Black Dragon Spear again. At this time, his flesh and blood body had turned into a spear; his will was the sharpest spear point!

Lin Ming's figure turned into a dazzling beam of light that thrust straight towards the Soul Emperor and collided with that bone staff!

With a silent collision, the world lost all color. All that remained was a heaven-destroying divine light that lit up the entire wild universe.

Great worlds shattered and rivers of stars were cut apart. In this horrifying impact, Lin Ming's mortal body cracked apart and his arms were nearly reduced to bones!

However, the Soul Emperor’s body shook and he was thrown hundreds of thousands of miles away!

“How… is this possible?”

The Soul Emperor steadied his body and came to a stop, his features completely frozen.

He looked at Lin Ming and then lowered his head. With a dazed expression, he could see a shocking hole in his body!

His snow white robes were dyed crimson with fresh blood. This wound nearly passed through his chest. He couldn’t remember just how long it had been since he had received such a heavy wound.

“You actually… wounded me?”

The Soul Emperor felt this unbelievable.

He was a Beyond Divinity existence! And even amongst Beyond Divinity level powerhouses, he was still an outstanding individual!

Now, although he was only an avatar and only had a fraction of his main form's strength, it still wasn't a level that a True Divinity could contend with.

The Soul Emperor covered his chest. His flesh and blood crept about, wriggling as it tried to regrow. However, this wound contained the strength of the Great Dao Laws and was equal to a scar created by the Great Dao; it wouldn't regenerate for a short period of time.

Not just that, but the Soul Emperor also felt an agonizing pain wrack his spiritual sea. Lin Ming's attack had not only pierced through the Soul Emperor's mortal body but also injured his divine soul.

The strength of the Soul Emperor's divine soul far surpassed anyone's in the universe, and yet he had actually been wounded by Lin Ming!

"You have really… surprised me! But even so… you cannot change your fate."

The Soul Emperor moved forwards one step at a time. At this time, not too far away, Lin Ming had already become a completely blood-drenched person. The arms that held the Grandmist Spirit Bead had nearly turned into white bones.

MW Chapter 2217

Chapter 2217 – Fight As One

…

…

…

Lin Ming's injuries were far heavier than the Soul Emperor's.

He had truly fused together the highest Laws and his will had already reached the highest possible peak.

But, the problem was that he lacked the strength to display this!

Ultimately speaking, in the end, his cultivation was too low and his inner world and mortal body couldn't withstand the burden!

That strike just now was only possible with Lin Ming burning his blood vitality and divine soul. But, just how many more times could he burn his blood vitality and divine soul?

The Soul Emperor before him was different from the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. In the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's life, he would never have been able to take that final step Beyond Divinity. But, the Soul Emperor had already accomplished this. Even if they were at the same boundary, the Soul Emperor's strength would far outstrip the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's countless times over.

Lin Ming had been able to easily leap over three small boundaries to fight the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign. But to leap over several small boundaries to fight the Soul Emperor, that was far, far too difficult.

The absolute disparity of boundaries was a gap that couldn't be made up for. It was a flaw that was choking Lin Ming to death!

Lin Ming felt his strength fading away and his fires of life beginning to weaken. He didn't plan to run away, because trying to do so was useless.

He looked at the Soul Emperor, a humorless smile playing on his lips. "Even if you kill me, I will make sure today will be your eternal nightmare!"

Lin Ming's words were like a curse. The Soul Emperor's eyebrows wrinkled together. A cold light flashed in his filthy eyes!

“You think you have the ability?” The Soul Emperor coldly sneered. But at this time, his smile froze. He turned and looked into the distant starry skies.

Others had arrived!

The Soul Emperor’s battle with Lin Ming could be called earth-shaking and heaven-sundering. It had caused the entire wild universe to shake. In the meantime, many people had hurried over to catch up to this location.

Those that arrived were Emperor Shakya, Great Limitless Buddha, Dark Demon Monarch, Empyrean Vast Universe, and the other powerhouses of humanity. As they saw Lin Ming and the Soul Emperor, their pupils shrank. The Soul Emperor’s wounds had already healed by a good half, but Lin Ming was still dripping with blood, a sight that horrified the mind!

Even so, Lin Ming still blazed with a brilliant fighting spirit and blood vitality rushed through his body. His eyes were like those of an Asura from hell, emitting infinite killing intent!

The feeling that Lin Ming gave off at this moment was like that of an injured but enraged wild animal!

This had been a tragic battle!

Emperor Shakya and the others all sucked in a breath of cold air. They hadn't known that the one Lin Ming faced was the Soul Emperor, but as they saw the powerful Lin Ming wounded to such a degree, they had already faintly guessed upon the truth.

Perhaps in the entire universe, only that old demon could force Lin Ming into the dirt like this.

"Where is Divine Dream?"

Seeing Lin Ming and not Divine Dream, everyone felt their hearts tighten. In particular, Empyrean Vast Universe; he couldn't even find a hint of her shadow, and he felt his heart fill with worry. But at this critical junction, he didn't dare send out a sound transmission and distract Lin Ming.

But from beginning to end, the Soul Emperor hadn't even glanced at Emperor Shakya and the others. His attention had never even drifted over to them.

The reason his smile froze seemed completely unrelated to these people.

He continued gazing into the void, his lips curving up in a smile.

“I originally wanted to look for you first, but I encountered Lin Ming before that. Since I found him first, I might as well get rid of him first. Hm? It seems you also brought some help with you?”

One of the Soul Emperor’s eyebrows arched up. A hundred miles away, space warped and twisted and a black-clothed woman stepped out from the space channel.

Behind this woman were two old men.

This black-clothed woman was Sheng Mei!

As Sheng Mei saw Lin Ming, she suddenly clenched her jaws tightly. As she looked at the Soul Emperor, her vision was as cold as the nine nether abyss, filled with inexhaustible killing intent and hatred!

Sheng Mei!

Lin Ming’s heart sank as he saw Sheng Mei appear. Although Sheng Mei was strong, she couldn’t do anything in front of the Soul Emperor.

He didn't want Sheng Mei to be drawn into this mess and be horribly tormented and killed by the Soul Emperor. But, as he saw the two old men behind Sheng Mei, he was even further startled.

These two old men were the guardians of the Asura Road – Clear and Ink.

Lin Ming had seen Clear and Ink in the seventh level of the Asura Road's final trial. Because they had only vaguely displayed their strength, Lin Ming never knew what their boundary was. He only knew that they lived extremely long lives, because they were both part of the temple spirit race and possessed lifespans that far outstripped the other living races of the 33 Heavens.

Within the races of the Asura Road itself, there were two True Divinities. Moreover, in the deepest depths of the Asura Sea, there were True Divinity level ancient beasts. For these two old men to be the guardians of the Asura Road, this meant their strength far surpassed the vast majority of True Divinities!

Clear and Ink were the servants of the Asura Road Master. When the saints invaded the Divine Realm in the past, Lin Ming had once sought out help from Clear and Ink. But, they didn't help. Their answer was that only when Lin Ming possessed enough strength to become a player in the grand chess game of the world would he have the qualifications to understand the mysteries of the Asura Road and Asura Road Master.

In other words, in the eyes of Clear and Ink, the saint race invasion of the Divine Realm wasn't anything at all. In the upcoming end of the world, a war between two races of the 33 Heavens could only be considered an opening act.

As guardians of the Asura Road, they had their own life mission. And, this life mission was undoubtedly related to the Demon God's Tomb Master!

As for the battle between the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and Lin Ming, that wasn't something they would intervene in. In fact, they would even take the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's invasion of the Divine Realm as a grinding stone for Lin Ming to hone himself upon. Because if Lin Ming couldn't even defeat the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, then he would never be able to grow to the degree where he could face the Demon God's Tomb Master before the great calamity arrived.

"You two!"

The Soul Emperor narrowed his eyes. He didn't recognize Clear or Ink. Although Clear and Ink lived long lives, when compared to the years that the Soul Emperor had existed, they were clearly dwarfed.

When Clear and Ink started to protect the Asura Road, the Soul Emperor was still deep in recovery – the injuries from 10 billion years ago had been too heavy. It was only several hundred million years that the Soul Emperor seized this current body and began to slowly refine and build up his own power, conserving his strength.

They had never met.

“That woman and those old men are…”

The human powerhouses glanced at each other. No one recognized Clear and Ink. And even the vast majority of people couldn’t guess what Sheng Mei’s origins were.

But, what they could be sure of was that these three people were extremely strong!

Now there were three more powerhouses of unknown origin as well as Lin Ming, someone who was severely wounded but remained like an injured wild beast that still possessed a terrifying combat strength.

These four people faced the Soul Emperor together!

“You old thing, your end has come!” Clear said, his energy-filled voice reverberating through the void.

The Soul Emperor looked at these two men. As he sensed their energy and Law fluctuations, he suddenly smiled.

“I was wondering just who it was, but it looks like nothing but the lackeys of that person. 10 billion years ago, your lord joined together with Immortal to destroy me, but not only could they not do anything to me but they were instead defeated by me. Now, you two minions still dare to stand here and bray about!”

“If you were in your complete form then we would be instantly killed by you. But, you are now nothing more than an avatar. Your complete form has been divided by the Amethyst Origin Crystal and the vast majority of your strength is locked in the Dark Abyss. Although we are not your match, we can still heavily wound you and ruin your plans!”

Clear and Ink glanced at each other and then took out their weapons. Clear’s weapon was an array disc and Ink’s was a great furnace.

Lin Ming had seen this furnace once before. The phantom that it formed was the elementary version of the Galaxy Void Furnace.

Facing these two old men, the Soul Emperor thought little of it. After entering seclusion this time, his strength had risen even further. As a Beyond Divinity level existence, how could his avatar be something that Clear and Ink could contend with?

There was no True Divinity capable of threatening him.

He lifted the bone staff and gently passed his palms along its shaft. With it, a tear opened between his eyebrows and an eye appeared.

This eye had no eyeball nor did it have a pupil, rather, it was made from endless nothingness, as if this eye contained a dark universe.

As Lin Ming saw this eye he felt his heart sink. He was very familiar with the aura of the universe contained in it.

It was… the aura of the Demon God's Tomb!

MW Chapter 2218

Chapter 2218 – The Soul Emperor's World

…

…

…

What the Soul Emperor cultivated was to fuse the super world of the Demon God's Tomb into himself, turning it into his own strength. Finally, his body would become one with the world, and if the world was indestructible then he would also be immortal!

Now the Soul Emperor had opened up an eye between his eyebrows, and the endless starry skies contained within that eye was the world of the Demon God's Tomb!

This meant that the Soul Emperor was already putting his full effort into this battle. This technique was also one that the Soul Emperor had yet to fully control because he hadn't finished his seclusion. After all, he had yet to thoroughly refine the Demon God's Tomb.

"Be careful, this old bastard is ready to go all-out!"

“Lin Ming, eat this pill!”

Ink and Clear nearly spoke at the same time. A round pill suddenly appeared in Lin Ming’s hand.

Lin Ming glanced down. This pill was a deep green and it was unknown how it was refined. It seemed a bit soft, but it was a hard as jade. The surface of this jade bead was covered in circular traces, making it seem particularly special.

Although he was puzzled, now was not the time to speak. He immediately swallowed down the pill and felt it melt within him, turning into a warm strength that revitalized his body.

Lin Ming burning his own blood essence had originally caused permanent damage to his body. However, after eating up this pill, Lin Ming felt his own blood vitality surge through his body once more. Although it was impossible to completely cure the side effects created from overdrawing upon his life, it would increase his combat strength and extend it for that much longer.

This sort of pill could immediately display effects after eating it and wouldn’t need one to meditate and digest it. Moreover, it could help someone whose strength far surpassed most peak True Divinity powerhouses; it could be imagined how precious it was.

“You rest first. Clear, let’s attack!”

Ink and Clear look at each other. Both of them had lived for a long, long time, and had already formed a tacit understanding with each other. If they joined forces then their combat strength would rise to another level.

The two people stood in the void and a golden array diagram appeared beneath their feet. Ink and Clear were positioned in the two eyes of this array diagram. This array diagram was Clear’s array disc. At the same time, a giant furnace floated above their heads, constantly revolving and emitting beams of light.

Rah!

With a loud roar, two Asura phantoms appeared behind both Clear and Ink.

These Asuras seethed with killing intent and gradually fused with Ink and Clear’s mortal bodies.

The Asura phantoms were sucked into their bodies!

Seeing this, Lin Ming was startled. Ink and Clear obviously cultivated the Asura Heavenly Dao, but their combat method in utilizing it was completely different from his own.

After the two of them displayed their arcane techniques, their combat strength rose to an all new peak! With it, their old and wizened appearance began to change. Their bodies rose and their expressions became grim and resolute. Their wrinkles vanished and their hair turned pitch black; they had rejuvenated themselves from their old age, restoring the appearance of their youths.

Their muscles grew and their blood vitality rushed through their bodies; they had been reborn!

Neither of them remembered when the last time they used this secret technique was. There were far too many limits on it, and for them it would exhaust a tremendous amount of their energies and even cause their lifespans to plummet. However, facing the Soul Emperor, they could no longer worry about such things.

“Attack!”

Ink and Clear shouted out together. The golden array disc and Galaxy Void Furnace that swirled above and below also shot out, ruthlessly smashing down towards the Soul Emperor!

Ink and Clear and struck out with all their strength. Seeing this, the Soul Emperor merely chuckled. From between his eyebrows, the void within that third eye rapidly expanded. The world of the Demon God’s Tomb turned into a visible wave that rushed out and swallowed all!

For a time, the Soul Emperor seemed to stand in a separate space-time dimension. As for Ink and Clear, their attacks were all sucked into this different space-time dimension!

Bang! Bang!

Energy exploded, an explosion with enough power to compare to a supernova. A storm of energy swept out. However, that separate space-time remained stable to an unbelievable degree. Everything else was crushed by the storm of energy, but that space-time remained undamaged.

Like this, Ink and Clear's all-out attack had inexplicably vanished. All that remained were the golden array disc and giant furnace that slowly flew back into their hands. However, the array disc and furnace had lost a great deal of their spirituality by now.

As the two of them saw their own respective weapons return, their bodies froze. From the start, their enemy the Soul Emperor had only stood not too far away in the void, not even taking a single step forwards.

"How is this possible!?"

Ink and Clear were bewildered. Their joint attack was enough to instantly and overwhelmingly kill the vast majority of True Divinities. Even though it would be impossible to kill the Soul Emperor like that, their attack still shouldn't be so weak and pathetic that they couldn't even touch the hem of his robes!

"He shifted away Seniors' attacks!"

Lin Ming suddenly said, a dignified expression on his face. He was clearly aware of what cultivation method the Soul Emperor trained in and what that technique was just now.

The problem was in the third eye that appeared between the Soul Emperor's eyebrows. Just now, the space of the Demon God's Tomb had expanded to an infinite degree from between his eyebrows and swallowed up Ink and Clear's joint attack.

"Shifted..."

After listening to Lin Ming's words, Ink and Clear gradually realized a possibility, and this possibility caused their complexions to change.

"What is withstanding your attack is not the Soul Emperor himself, but the world of the Demon God's Tomb!"

Lin Ming's said, his words confirming Ink and Clear's guess. As they realized this, their hearts sank and despair surged in their mind.

To use a world to withstand their attacks?

They could heavily wound the mortal body of the Soul Emperor, but what about destroying a world?

Although it was said that a True Divinity possessed the ability to destroy worlds, that was only true for low level worlds. When it came to worlds like the 33 Heavens or Dark Abyss, these super universes were worlds that True Divinities simply didn't possess the ability to destroy.

And the Demon God's Tomb was equivalent to a compressed super universe; it had even managed to withstand the great Shattering of the previous universal era!

How could the power of man possibly destroy such a world?

If the Soul Emperor could freely shift their attacks into the world of the Demon God's Tomb, then how could they continue fighting with him? He was already standing in an invincible position!

Without a doubt, the space of the Demon God's Tomb was the most perfect and most indestructible defense in existence!

"Could this move have no limit?" Ink asked, unwilling to admit defeat like this.

The more powerful a technique, the more restrictions it had; this was true for all abilities. But, this might not be true for the Soul Emperor, because the Demon God's Tomb was part of his body and what he did just now was equal to using a part of his body to resist their attack.

Lin Ming said with a sound transmission, "Seniors, the Soul Emperor had already started the initial fusion with the world of the Demon God's Tomb. This move shouldn't have a limit in what it can shift away, but perhaps there is a limit in how long the Soul Emperor can maintain this state..."

Lin Ming speculated. The basis of this conjecture was that the Soul Emperor hadn't completed his seclusion and hadn't thoroughly fused with the Demon God's Tomb. Moreover, when he fought with him, the Soul Emperor hadn't used this technique and he even managed to wound the Soul Emperor because of it.

This shouldn't be because the Soul Emperor underestimated him but because there was some sort of limit. The Soul Emperor wasn't willing to use the space of the Demon God's Tomb from the start, so Lin Ming believe there must be some price involved in order to maintain this space.

“As long as there is a limit then we just have to last until the end.” Clear said, gritting his teeth. He also had some cards left hidden in his hands.

Lin Ming said, “I remember that in the Demon God’s Tomb, Senior Immortal Sovereign advised me to never fight with the Soul Emperor in the Demon God’s Tomb unless I possessed the ability to tear apart the world of the Demon God’s Tomb. We naturally don’t have this ability. And just now, the Soul Emperor used the space of the Demon God’s Tomb to absorb your attacks, and I don’t know whether or not he can also suck us into the space of the Demon God’s Tomb…”

Lin Ming’s words were like a cold gale drifting up from the nine nether abyss, causing a chill to creep up Ink and Clear’s back.

To suck everyone into the space of the Demon God’s Tomb?

This was the same as being a turtle in a jar; anyone who was drawn in would undoubtedly die!

What should they do?

Ink and Clear were at a loss. And, all they faced was the Soul Emperor, an avatar of his true form.

If this were the complete form of the Soul Emperor then he would have an even deeper level of control of the world of the Demon God's Tomb. If so, just how formidable would he be?

"Form the array!"

Ink said, his complexion solemn. He didn't know whether or not the eye between the Soul Emperor's eyebrows could suck them in as Lin Ming said, but if he did use such an ability, the consequences would be unimaginable!

"You think this can stop me? Then, it should be my turn to attack."

As the Soul Emperor spoke, his strength began to climb without limit. The eye between his eyebrows expanded to an infinite degree. A black vortex appeared, swallowing in the surrounding heaven and earth origin energy. At the same time, Ink, Clear, Lin Ming, and Sheng Mei all felt a massive suction force pull upon their bodies.

A horrifying force field fell over them, blocking out their surroundings. This suction force made them feel as if they would soon be drawn into the space of the Demon God's Tomb.

Their complexions changed. If the Soul Emperor truly possessed the ability to draw them all into the space of the Demon God's Tomb, then there was no need to continue this battle.

All of them would surely die; this was the only outcome.

MW Chapter 2219

Chapter 2219 – Cold Ice Mirror

…

…

…

The suction force of the vortex became increasingly terrifying. The Soul Emperor's body seemed to have turned into a giant black hole, and even the surrounding space began to collapse, forming an absolute enchantment that covered everyone.

Caught within this enchantment, Lin Ming, Ink, Clear, and Sheng Mei felt their strength suppressed and their power greatly reduced.

Not just that, but Lin Ming discovered that the space surrounding them experienced strange qualitative changes; it became increasingly compact, simply indestructible!

"The Soul Emperor has formed a projection of the world of the Demon God's Tomb!"

Lin Ming suddenly realized. Perhaps the Soul Emperor might not have the ability to suck them into the Demon God's Tomb, but he could form a world projection and create an absolute domain.

This world projection might not be as powerful as the true world of the Demon God's Tomb, but if it were only used to deal with them then it was more than enough!

"It's over. All of you will die here!"

The Soul Emperor attacked. The dark and cruel bone staff in his hand began to gather the power within the surrounding space, turning that bone staff into a lance which shined with cold brilliance!

The space of the Demon God's Tomb was incomparably stable and the lance formed by this space was also incomparably sharp, capable of destroying the mightiest defenses!

"Fight!"

Clear and Ink simultaneously burnt their blood essence. They had already solidified their will to die here. Even if they had to give everything they had, today they would heavily wound the Soul Emperor no matter what!

And at this time, from behind Clear and Ink, Sheng Mei also attacked!

During these years, Sheng Mei had gone to the Asura forbidden land by herself and had only just returned when Lin Ming began his fierce battle with the Soul Emperor; he didn’t have any idea what she had done during this time.

Hah - !

A cold wind blew. From within the space that the Soul Emperor had blocked in, a river of cold ice emerged from thin air!

This river of ice flowed through space. The river waters were endless and smoky, the waves vast and monstrous, limitless and without bounds!

Seeing this, Lin Ming was shocked. Within the world projection of the Demon God’s Tomb that the Soul Emperor formed, any Laws or energy would be suppressed by the world strength of the Demon God’s Tomb.

Yet, Sheng Mei was able to use such a move in this environment. This left Lin Ming surprised. Sheng Mei, when did she become so strong?

Rumble rumble rumble!

The waters of the ice river parted and a giant ice plane soared up, camouflaging the void for a thousand miles. The Asura forbidden land's Cold Ice Mirror!

Lin Ming was dumbfounded; Sheng Mei had refined the Cold Ice Mirror?

This Cold Ice Mirror was the supreme treasure of the Asura forbidden land; it could be called its foundation!

"Seniors, let's attack together!"

As Sheng Mei spoke, she moved the Cold Ice Mirror before them.

Clear and Ink were extremely quick to react. They didn't ask why the Cold Ice Mirror was here, but simply took advantage of this time to pour all their energies into it.

Lin Ming also flew forth. He placed his hands atop the Cold Ice Mirror and recklessly poured out the power of divinity and demons within him.

Bang!

The lance formed by the Soul Emperor violently clashed with the Cold Ice Mirror. Energy surged out in monstrous waves and beams of rainbow-hued energies blasted outwards. Even the world projection of the Demon God’s Tomb trembled, as if it would collapse.

Ink, Clear, Sheng Mei, and Lin Ming violently shook. The impact of the strike passed through to them from the Cold Ice Mirror, crashing into their limbs and causing their blood vitality to tumble and their meridians to be damaged!

Puff!

The four of them spat out a mouthful of blood. With the Soul Emperor’s strength alone, he had brutally struck them back!

“Mm? You also have such a technique left… this spirit treasure is… interesting, how interesting…”

The Soul Emperor clearly recognized this Cold Ice Mirror. The appearance of it caused a playful smile to play upon his lips. “By relying on this spirit treasure you gathered your strength together to withstand my attack. But, how many times you can do this?”

As the Soul Emperor spoke, layers of killing intent flashed within his dirty eyes. He reached out his arms and laid them flat. At this time, the surrounding space seemed to meld into his body.

Then, strength was whipped up into a frenzy.

Lin Ming grimaced. He was far too familiar with this strength. During the 1500 years that he had been in that period of deep seclusion, he had been refining this strength.

This was the world strength of the Demon God's Tomb!

But now, in the domain that the Soul Emperor had formed, this world strength had become the most terrifying weapon.

Within this sealed spaced, the Soul Emperor was the ruler.

The Soul Emperor raised his hands and a storm of world strength rose up in the world, recklessly swirling about. This storm was like a flurry of sharp knives that constantly cut apart at the group of four's protective barriers.

A terrifying pressure shrouded their bodies. Everyone could feel the space around them tighten and contract. The world strength had turned into a cage that crashed down from them on all directions.

The Cold Ice Mirror could easily block a frontal attack, but to block an attack that came from all directions was far more difficult.

“Everyone, help me!”

Seeing the storm of world strength about to swallow the four of them, Sheng Mei once again brought forth the Cold Ice Mirror.

Without hesitation, she bit down on the tip of her tongue and spat out a mouthful of blood essence.

Hum - !

Hum - !

Hum - !

The Cold Ice Mirror fiercely trembled. A great energy began to condense from its smooth surface.

Clear, Ink, and Lin Ming glanced at each other. Without a second thought, they poured their strength into the Cold Ice Mirror.

A dark gray wave shot out from it!

This wave looked unremarkable and was only the thickness of a bucket. But, it tore through the storm of world strength and shot towards the Soul Emperor like an arrow!

Seeing this wave hurtle towards him, the Soul Emperor's complexion slightly changed.

"Mm? This strength is..."

The Soul Emperor instantly realized that this was the strength sealed within the Cold Ice Mirror and not Sheng Mei's own. Sheng Mei had only used her blood essence as the catalyst to unseal it!

The Soul Emperor hastily drew backwards. At the same time, the vortex from the eye between his eyebrows reappeared once more. The world of the Demon God's Tomb expanded and completely swallowed this strength.

The Soul Emperor had used this same move of summoning the world of the Demon God's Tomb to block off the Cold Ice Mirror's attack.

Ca!

As this strength entered the world of the Demon God's Tomb it didn't explode at all. Rather, it tore through the void, continuing until the end!

The Soul Emperor's complexion paled a little bit. "This strength is from... Immortal?"

The Soul Emperor's eyebrow twitched. As this strength flew into the world of the Demon God's Tomb, it disappeared without a trace.

And from the Soul Emperor's response, one couldn't see that this attack had any effect just now.

Sheng Mei's heart sank. Although the Cold Ice Mirror was the Asura Road Master's spirit treasure, the sealed strength she shot out just now was from her father. This was power of an incarnation that the Immortal Sovereign had forged in the past to protect and shelter her mother, and now it had been used by Sheng Mei.

Perhaps because far too long a time had passed, or perhaps because the Soul Emperor's ability of using the world of the Demon God's Tomb to block attacks was too heaven-defying, but no matter what the reason was, nothing seemed to have happened to the Soul Emperor.

"Even the strength that Father left behind cannot do anything to him, not even wound him?"

Helplessness surged in Sheng Mei’s heart. Although that attack just now had torn through the storm of world strength, it hadn’t been able to wound the Soul Emperor. Like this, it would be difficult to withstand the Soul Emperor’s next attack. After all, every time she used the strength sealed within the Cold Ice Mirror it would be permanently weakened.

“That might not be true…”

Lin Ming suddenly said. His eyes blazed as he looked at the distant Soul Emperor. He said with a sound transmission, “It might not have been easy for him to block that attack.”

“Mm?”

Lin Ming’s words caused the hearts of the three others to shake.

MW Chapter 2220

Chapter 2220 – The Final Attack

…

…

…

In the starry skies, the Soul Emperor frowned. Sheng Mei, Ink, Clear, and Lin Ming all held their breath; they didn't know what the Soul Emperor's situation was like.

And the Soul Emperor seemed to be momentarily lost in thought. With a calm gaze, he looked upon Lin Ming and the others, not immediately attacking.

The Soul Emperor remained motionless, as did Lin Ming and the others. After all, whether it was Lin Ming, Clear, Ink, or Sheng Mei, the four of them had all received varying degrees of injuries and had consumed a great deal of their blood essence.

If the Soul Emperor continued his storm-like assault on them then they wouldn't be able to last much longer. Now that the Soul Emperor's attacks had slowed down they naturally had to take advantage of this time to recover.

Ink and Clear each swallowed pills and also passed two to Lin Ming and Sheng Mei. But, these pills were clearly not as precious as the one Lin Ming had just eaten. After eating them up, a period of digestion and absorption was required for them to play a role.

Lin Ming thought for a moment. He said with a sound transmission, "Let's... make one more bet!"

"Mm?" Clear and Ink were startled.

"Join together to attack the Soul Emperor!" Lin Ming's wounds caused the hearts of the others to skip a beat.

"Are you saying that the Soul Emperor has already been injured and he requires even more time than us to suppress his injuries?" Sheng Mei suddenly realized this possibility.

Originally, the Soul Emperor had grasped the initiative in the offensive, and he also knew that they were wounded and had consumed a great deal of their energy. But in this situation, the Soul Emperor still hadn't moved first to strike at them; perhaps this meant that the Soul Emperor needed some time to adjust his condition.

“Could this be a trap? It was only a strike from the Cold Ice Mirror. According to any logic, it shouldn’t have been able to cause too great an effect, and from the looks of things there isn’t anything different with the Soul Emperor…”

Clear and Ink hesitated for a moment. The might and power of the Soul Emperor was already deeply engraved within their hearts. For him to be severely wounded by Sheng Mei’s last strike seemed truly incomprehensible.

Lin Ming said, “I think there may be some other reason, but we still have to make this bet! Even if it is a trap we still must rush into it, because if he recovers and attacks us again we will all undoubtedly die!”

Lin Ming and the three others weren’t a match for the Soul Emperor. If the battle dragged on then their deaths were assured. Since this was the case, they might as well make one final desperate bet since the result of that couldn’t be any worse than waiting.

As Lin Ming spoke, energy began to bubble up within his body and he burnt his blood essence once more. This was truly Lin Ming’s limit. Even after eating up that last pill, this attack would completely exhaust his strength.

Even if Lin Ming were to survive this battle, he would still have to suffer the consequences of overdrawing his blood essence.

Since this was a life or death struggle, Sheng Mei, Ink, and Clear also desperately fought. They each erupted with their fullest potential, revolving their energies to the limit for this final strike.

And not too far away, the Soul Emperor still had a gloomy expression; it was unknown just what he was doing.

Lin Ming didn’t hesitate. “Attack!”

With a loud shout, Lin Ming fused the two highest Laws within his hands. Although the Holy Scripture Laws hadn’t reached perfection as he only had the seven revolution red lotus, these flaws were able to be made up for by Sheng Mei!

At the same time, Ink and Clear fused the Asura phantoms into their bodies once more, displaying their greatest strength!

Lin Ming and Sheng Mei’s attack merged together as one and joined with Clear and Ink’s attacks. The four people attacked together and the energies gathered into two raging currents, hurtling towards the Soul Emperor like two wild dragons!

Facing this overwhelming attack, the Soul Emperor fiercely grit his teeth. A sharp light flashed out from his filthy eyes!

The world of the Demon God’s Tomb erupted from between his eyebrows once more. Like a great vicious beast that swallowed all, it devoured every attack!

Woosh!

The currents of energy smashed into the void. The Soul Emperor shook and he was forced backwards before barely managing to stabilize himself. On his originally pale white face, an abnormal red luster began to spread.

At this time, as the Soul Emperor looked at Lin Ming and the others, his eyes held a reckless killing intent!

But although this killing intent surged in his eyes, he still didn’t counterattack. This left Lin Ming and the others startled. Without a doubt, the Soul Emperor had been injured somehow or some hidden wounds had suddenly broken out, making it so that he had no choice but to stop and suppress them.

Although they didn’t understand what was happening with the Soul Emperor, no one would let go of this opportunity that had arrived in front of them. Lin Ming and the others were already in desperate straits. They had each burnt their blood essence several times already and couldn’t possibly continue burning it. With their strength exhausted, their striking power was also limited. Thus, Sheng Mei summoned the Cold Ice Mirror once more. The Cold Ice Mirror still held Immortal’s remnant strength; it was more than enough to attack the Soul Emperor with!

As the Cold Ice Mirror appeared, the Soul Emperor's expression turned fierce and diabolical!

Lin Ming, Sheng Mei, and the others didn't know what the Soul Emperor's problem was at the moment.

And in truth, it wasn't the Soul Emperor's mortal body that was the problem, but something occurring in the world of the Demon God's Tomb.

It was better to say that there were great changes occurring in the Demon God's Tomb's Emperor Bone Sea!

As for what these specific changes were, the Soul Emperor didn't have time to fully investigate. But, he could guess that these changes were related to the ancient demon emperors that had been sealed away for all those billions of years! And it was also likely related to Immortal Sovereign and the Demon Lord!

These two existences were the greatest powerhouses within the Emperor Bone Sea. While they were suppressed within, they naturally shouldn't have been able to cause any trouble. But now the Soul Emperor had left his seclusion early and also fought with Lin Ming and the others, not hesitating to use the world strength of the Demon God's Tomb that he had yet to fully refine.

With the instability within the world of the Demon God's Tomb, the overdrawing of energy, as well as the invasion of Immortal's energy from the Cold Ice Mirror, all of these factors combined together provided an opportunity for change within the Emperor Bone Sea!

The Soul Emperor could even imagine that Immortal Sovereign had been lying in ambush within the Emperor Bone Sea all this time. Immortal Sovereign must have been waiting for this moment when his control over the Demon God's Tomb was at its lowest to suddenly burst out at this crucial junction point and give him a fatal strike!

"You all... deserve death!"

The Soul Emperor's expression became increasingly fierce. The Demon God's Tomb force field also turned increasingly unstable. Black flames seemed to light up in his eyes.

Hah - !

From within the Soul Emperor's body, the roar of a great dragon seemed to suddenly burst out.

The Soul Emperor's body started to tear open. Cracks appeared in his pale skin and black flames blazed out from these cracks, brilliantly gushing into the air!

Before Lin Ming and the others attacked once more, the Soul Emperor moved first!

In that moment, the Soul Emperor also spat out a mouthful of blood.

“Be careful!”

Lin Ming’s pupils shrank. He realized that the Soul Emperor was disregarding any backlash or wounds for this one strike; he wanted to take them all out here!

The Soul Emperor’s body burned with black flames and his target was also extremely obvious – it was Lin Ming!

He wanted to kill Lin Ming. For him, this might even be his final chance. Once Lin Ming was allowed to escape, the consequences would be inconceivable!

Within the void, the world strength of the Demon God’s Tomb all gathered towards the Soul Emperor. Like a meteor that trailed with black flames, the Soul Emperor hurtled towards Lin Ming.

With this sort of momentum, Lin Ming even thought that the Soul Emperor wanted to use this avatar to perish together with him!!

"Block it!"

"Fight!"

Clear and Ink's eyes turned red. They realized that this might be the Soul Emperor's last attack. If they could survive this then they would win.

Hum – !

The Cold Ice Mirror trembled as it shielded Lin Ming's front. Sheng Mei's body began to burn with icy blue flames. All of her accumulations ever since reaching True Divinity completely erupted in this moment.

As for Clear and Ink, they stood on each side of Sheng Mei. They gathered their hands together and burnt their blood essence one more time. Their mortal bodies began to wither and turn old with speed visible to the eyes; this scene left Lin Ming's heart aching.

With the battle having reached this stage, there was no longer a path to retreat, for him or for anybody else.

They could only risk everything they had!

Lin Ming suppressed the hate and sorrow that simmered in his heart. He poured out his final strength, attacking together with Sheng Mei, Clear, and Ink.

The two sides brutally collided!

The sounds of shattering filled with air, following with waves of energy that fired off in all directions!

The surface of the Cold Ice Mirror shattered!

Sheng Mei bore the brunt of the attack. As the controller of the Cold Ice Mirror, she had poured all of her strength into it, including even her divine soul. In this final collision with the Soul Emperor, she withstood the greatest burden!

Puff!

Sheng Mei spat out a mouthful of blood. Her field of vision began to blur. The impact against her soul nearly split apart her spiritual sea and almost caused her to lose consciousness!

She desperately tried to suppress the agonizing pain spreading through her soul. With her having overdrawn her energy and with this last attack, she really couldn't withstand anything more.

Lin Ming, Clear, and Ink, were all shaken away by the energy. The Soul Emperor's hair was scattered about him and his body was bathed in blood!

In this final strike, the Soul Emperor had paid a heavy price. This was because he overdrew on the energy needed to control the Demon God's Tomb and the Emperor Bone Sea had almost collapsed!

But, Lin Ming still didn't die!

MW Chapter 2221

Chapter 2221 – Sudden Change

…

…

…

An overwhelming inferno of rage surged in the Soul Emperor's heart.

He hated!

He hated Lin Ming, hated Sheng Mei, hated Immortal Sovereign!

Even with that last strike he had still failed, and now it would be incredibly difficult to kill Lin Ming. Lin Ming's life force had reached unbelievable heights. His Nine Stars of the Dao Palace were opened to the eighth Dao Palace, his acupoints and meridians were thoroughly connected and linked, and with him having swallowed a totem level abyssal and dual cultivating divinity and demons, as well as comprehending two of the highest Laws, whether it was his body, inner world, or divine soul, they had reached mind-boggling levels.

Everyone knew that Lin Ming had contributed the most strength to this battle. He had consumed the most blood vitality and had fought for the longest time. And as the fight continued on, Lin Ming still had strength left.

Rather, it was more accurate to say that Lin Ming had already overdrawn his strength, but his powerful mortal body allowed him to recover some energy in a short period of time.

As for Clear and Ink, they had already returned to their old and wizened appearance and their strength had precipitously weakened; they might have even dropped boundaries. As for Sheng Mei, her spiritual sea had split open and her consciousness was blurred; she had lost any power to resist.

The Soul Emperor gripped his fists. With his face torn open by the black flames from within, he looked fierce and hideous.

With the near collapse of the Emperor Bone Sea, he no longer dared to transfer any of his own strength.

But at this time, from far off in the void, rainbow-hued energy beams soared towards him. This was an energy attack condensed from a multitude of Laws.

“What!?”

Feeling this energy hurtle towards him, the Soul Emperor glanced over. He saw that the many human Empyreans had gathered into an array formation under Emperor Shakya's leadership and had actually attacked him!

"Just a bunch of ants that have no idea of death or danger!"

The Soul Emperor fumed. In his most glorious state, Empyrean level attacks were no different from scratching an itch. With a thought he could have tuned all these Empyreans into ashes.

But now, after being severely wounded and facing a situation in which the Emperor Bone Sea had almost collapsed, the great attack formed from the human Empyreans was now actually a threat to him!

If the chain reaction of energy were to rush into the world of the Demon God's Tomb, then it might become the final straw that broke the camel's back and cause the Emperor Bone Sea to utterly collapse.

"All of you, remember me!"

The Soul Emperor said, so angry his eyes nearly popped out of his head. He grabbed the bone staff and poured in energy one more time before firing it towards Lin Ming!

Hum - !

The bone staff was like a meteor that contained the world strength of the Demon God's Tomb. It pierced through the energy wave sent out by the numerous Empyreans and thrust towards Lin Ming's chest.

"Protect Lin Ming!"

Emperor Shakya roared out. Many Empyreans immediately shifted their target. For a time, all sorts of different weapons and Law lights shot towards the bone staff shot out by the Soul Emperor.

If there were enough ants, even an elephant could be bitten to death. Moreover, the bone staff shot out by the Soul Emperor didn't have much strength behind it to begin with. In the mighty waves of energy, the bone staff was like a fish caught in a swamp, rapidly forced to a slow crawl.

But at this time, the Soul Emperor had turned around and was rapidly flying towards Sheng Mei!

"Damn!"

Lin Ming was panic-stricken!

At this time, everyone's attention was turned towards Lin Ming. They were well aware that the Soul Emperor's goal was Lin Ming and he was the greatest threat to the Soul Emperor.

As everyone was guarding Lin Ming, they never thought that the Soul Emperor would also change targets, instead focusing on Sheng Mei!

In the final moments, in order to help Lin Ming block the Soul Emperor's all-out attack, she had risked her life and had now fallen into a half-unconscious state; she was powerless to resist the Soul Emperor.

Hum –

A black vortex swirled and Sheng Mei was sucked into a black space by the Soul Emperor.

"Let her go!"

Lin Ming's eyes turned red with rage. He didn't have much strength remaining, barely enough to protect himself, much less attack the Soul Emperor!

“Die!”

Lin Ming recklessly attacked. He lifted the Black Dragon Spear and threw it with all his recently restored strength.

However, the might of Lin Ming’s current attack couldn’t even compare to the attack formed from the condensed power of Emperor Shakya and the numerous Empyreans.

Bang!

With a loud ring, the Black Dragon Spear crashed into the Soul Emperor’s protective energy. It was only able to pierce halfway through the energy shield before being drained of all energy and no longer able to pierce in.

The Soul Emperor turned towards Lin Ming. What dwelled in his eyes was a hint of contempt, a hint of hatred, and a hint of sinister ruthlessness.

“I will make sure you always remember today! Since this bitch is so desperately willing to rescue you, then I will have her die for you!”

As the Soul Emperor spoke he ripped open the void and stepped into a space channel.

“All of you, will die…”

The Soul Emperor’s final words were like a demonic curse that reverberated through space.

Lin Ming rushed forwards as if he had gone crazy. Even the many human Empyreans moved at this time. However, they were too slow. They could only stare blankly on as the space channel ripped open by the Soul Emperor sealed itself up.

“Ahhhh!”

Lin Ming roared out in unwillingness. In the final moment he shot out a True Divinity mark onto the Soul Emperor.

The Soul Emperor only coldly sneered, allowing the mark to fall onto his body.

“Damn it all!”

Lin Ming’s fist smashed into the void. His arms shivered with rage and his eyes were red with anger, his blood nearly frozen in his body!

He never thought that at the end, Sheng Mei would be captured by the Soul Emperor!

Without Sheng Mei risking everything to defend against the Soul Emperor's last strike, he feared he would have already perished.

And if Sheng Mei hadn't tried to save him then her spiritual sea wouldn't have been torn apart and she wouldn't have fallen into a stupor, thus being captured by the Soul Emperor without any resistance at all!

"It's all my fault. What do I say to… Jiu'er!"

Lin Ming clenched his fists together and fell to his knees. Because of anger and worry, his nails had already dug into his flesh and blood.

Lin Ming knew of Sheng Mei's past and also knew of how sad her fate and life experiences had been. Because of these things, Lin Ming had always felt a sense of pity for Sheng Mei. After their relationship had been clarified, Lin Ming had resolved that he would protect Sheng Mei. But, he never imagined that today it would be her protecting him instead.

She had overdrawn her life in order to block that final strike, and in the end was captured by the Soul Emperor, her life or death unknown…

What he felt was hate!

"The Soul Emperor took away Sheng Mei, but his final goal is still me. He captured Sheng Mei because he is waiting for me to rescue her!"

Lin Ming had already guessed the Soul Emperor's goal. Since the Soul Emperor wouldn't be able to kill him for some time, then he would simply wait for Lin Ming to personally deliver himself to his door.

To keep Sheng Mei hostage was the same as holding onto his fatal weakness!

He needed to restore his wounds as quickly as possible and rescue Sheng Mei!

"Lin Ming..."

Emperor Shakya spoke up. He could feel how turbulent Lin Ming's mood was. His tone was hesitant and somewhat remorseful. During this battle, he hadn't been able to play any role.

Divine Dream, Clear, Ink, Sheng Mei, they had paid a great price in order to preserve Lin Ming's life, but Emperor Shakya had only managed to lead a crowd of Empyreans here and send out a not-too-powerful attack at the end.

In the end, they hadn't even been able to save Sheng Mei, causing the situation to deteriorate even further.

"Lin Ming, do you plan on going to rescue her…?" Emperor Shakya didn't know who Sheng Mei was, but he could see that she was extremely important to Lin Ming.

"If I don't…"

Lin Ming gripped his fists together. He understood that this was a trap!

But even though he knew it was a trap, he still had to jump in.

Emperor Shakya opened his mouth to speak but hesitated. He didn't want Lin Ming to go, but he also felt that he didn't have the qualifications to persuade Lin Ming to do anything.

"You… will die…"

An old voice sounded out – the one who spoke was Clear.

Lin Ming turned, all sorts of complex emotions on his features.

Thousands of years ago when Lin Ming first saw Clear and Ink at the Asura Road’s final trial, they had both been overflowing with life, glowing with boisterous health.

But today, their beards and hair had gone white and their eyes had become as filthy as the Soul Emperor’s, overflowing with a faint death aura…

Seeing Clear’s appearance, Lin Ming felt an inexplicable pain clutch at his heart!

Clear and Ink had become like this because of him!

Before, he had said to Divine Dream that he didn’t want anyone to die for him. But he never imagined that even after he stopped Divine Dream from burning away her life, Sheng Mei would also fall into a crisis for him and Clear and Ink would exhaust their lives.

“That old demon has certainly set up a trap to wait for you. In our home ground, all of us are here and yet we were beaten into such a state by just an avatar. If you were to fight in a place that he set up instead, you would surely die…”

Ink also said.

How could Lin Ming not understand his words?

If he were to try and rescue Sheng Mei, it couldn’t even be described as a slim chance of survival!

“Senior, I know this, but I…”

As Lin Ming spoke to here he fell silent. No matter what, he couldn’t finish those final words of ‘I must go’.

In particular, as he looked at Clear and Ink who had lost a great deal of their life force, who had placed all their hopes in him, he couldn’t bear to face their dirtied eyes…

MW *Chapter* 2222

Chapter 2222 – Choice

…

…

…

Lin Ming's mind trembled. He clenched his fists.

He knew that his life was no longer entirely his own.

His was a life that Divine Dream, Clear, Ink, and Immortal Sovereign had desperately risked themselves to save from the clutches of the Soul Emperor.

Not just that, but on Lin Ming's road of growth, he had encountered many teachers and benefactors. They had pushed him forwards, pouring of all their hopes into him so that he could inherit their legacies.

If he were to risk his life to Sheng Mei and was ultimately killed by the Soul Emperor, then how could he answer to them?

Realizing this, Ink said, “We aren’t only saving you, but also saving ourselves. Without you, there is no one else capable of stopping that old demon. When the great catastrophe descends upon this world, I fear that there might no longer be any lives left existing in the 33 Heavens…”

“In truth, I don’t have any qualifications to ask you to do anything; your choice is your own to make. However, I don’t wish for you to send yourself to die. The key question here is, if you die, can you exchange your life for hers?”

Clear sighed. These words caused Lin Ming’s thoughts to darken. Indeed, if he went to rescue Sheng Mei, then not to mention the disparity in strength between them, if the Soul Emperor were to be a little bit despicable and threaten him with Sheng Mei then he would have no choice but to be cautious around him in fear of hurting her. In such a situation, how could he possibly win?

His chances of defeating the Soul Emperor could be called near impossible. And if he didn’t kill the Soul Emperor, how could he rescue Sheng Mei?

Even if he offered his own life, would the Soul Emperor even consider this and be gracious enough to release Sheng Mei?

The Soul Emperor's hatred towards Sheng Mei was enough for him to refine her soul and marrow a thousand times over!

But, if he didn't try to rescue her…

As Lin Ming thought of Sheng Mei's fate having fallen into the Soul Emperor's hands, he felt as if his heart was being pulled out; it was almost unbearable to breathe!

He was lost.

On one side, he was the hope of humanity and perhaps even the hope of all life in the 33 Heavens. On the other side was a woman who had been through life and death with him, who had risked herself to save him…

On one side was the great cause of his race, the legacy of his seniors. On the other side was what his heart wanted, as well as the love between a man and a woman.

To Lin Ming, this was an extremely agonizing choice.

Lin Ming took out the Grandmist Spirit Bead. In a daze, he released Divine Dream, Xiao Moxian, Mu Qianyu, and the others.

Divine Dream was also incomparably weak. Within the Spirit Bead space, Xiao Moxian had exhausted every method at her disposal to stabilize Divine Dream's weakening fires of life.

"Divine Dream!"

Seeing Divine Dream appear, Empyrean Vast Universe was immediately moved and thrilled. Out of those here, he had the deepest feelings for Divine Dream.

Divine Dream's body was stained with blood. Her face was pale and her life force was constantly draining from her.

"Seniors, do you have a pill that can make up for blood vitality?"

Lin Ming asked, finding it a bit difficult to say. He could guess that Clear and Ink likely didn't have too many precious pills with them.

"We do, but the grade is inferior to the one we gave you."

Ink took out a pill bottle from his spatial ring. With a faint movement, a green medicinal pill tumbled out from the pill bottle.

“Seniors, you won’t take any?” Lin Ming asked with worry; he could sense Clear and Ink’s weakened life force.

Clear shook his head. “These are pills from our master’s pill furnace. These pills are suited to the races of the 33 Heavens. As temple spirits, the strength of our blood vitality is different from yours and eating these pills would be useless.”

“Master…” Lin Ming’s heart shook. He remembered that Clear and Ink had said that the Asura Road Master had yet to die, but he simply didn’t know where the Asura Road Master had gone. When he asked Clear and Ink about this, their reply had been that once Lin Ming possessed the strength to become a chess player instead of a chess piece, then that was when he would be informed of the Asura Road Master’s whereabouts.

And now, Lin Ming believed he had this strength.

But now was not the time to ask such questions. Lin Ming quickly passed the pill to Divine Dream.

No matter how precious this pill was, it could only hasten Divine Dream’s ability to restore her blood vitality. To completely make up for all the side effects that Divine Dream suffered was actually incredibly difficult.

After Divine Dream swallowed the pill, a hint of red finally appeared on her face.

Lin Ming let out a sigh of relief. He looked towards Clear and Ink, “Seniors…”

Clear and Ink glanced at each other; they already guessed what Lin Ming was about to say.

Clear said, “It is time that we lead you to see our master…”

“See Senior Asura?”

Lin Ming asked, his thoughts shaken. He found it difficult to compose himself. For the majority of his life he had been hearing of the legends related to the Asura Road Master. This was the greatest powerhouse to exist in the history of all races in the 33 Heavens, an existence that surpassed Immortal Sovereign!

He was formidable and mysterious. However, what Lin Ming didn’t understand was why hadn’t he made his move yet?

Could the wounds he suffered in the past truly be so severe that not even 10 billion years was enough time to recover?

Some wounds could be restored after a period of rest or by eating up a pill.

But there were some wounds that couldn't be recovered from. For instance, if one's body were cut in half, and that cut off half was destroyed. Or for instance, if one's soul or inner world was divided and destroyed.

The mortal body, inner world, and soul were the three most important parts of a life. When a martial artist practiced martial arts, it was to enhance and temper these three parts; this was the ultimate manifestation of a martial artist's cultivation.

If the body or soul was split in half and destroyed, then although one could reform themselves, that would be equivalent to reducing one's cultivation by half. One's talent and potential would suffer injury and this sort of wound would also cause one's cultivation to drop. From that point on, one's cultivation would come to a standstill and it would be difficult to recover from this.

This was particularly true for a Beyond Divinity existence like the Asura Road Master. There might not be any True Divinity spirit treasure in existence that could help restore his wounds.

Or, it could be like when Lin Ming was at the Sky Spill Planet and his soul source was sucked out of him without anything left remaining. Such wounds were even more serious. They were similar to someone burning all of their blood essence or soul essence, and eventually their life force would run dry and they would die.

"You also come, as well as the rest of you. We will meditate for a time to restore our wounds and then leave."

Ink said to Divine Dream as well as Lin Ming's family members.

Divine Dream had recovered a great deal by this time and Xiao Moxian and the others had just emerged from the Grandmist Spirit Bead. They were all startled to hear this; they never thought that Clear and Ink would call on them.

Clear and Ink meditated for a period of time. Then, Ink took out an Asura Command. Joining together with Clear, they opened up a space channel leading to the Asura Road.

The wild universe was a long distance from the Asura Road and it would take some time to open the space channel. During this time, Xiao Moxian, Mu Qianyu, Qin Xingxuan, as well as Lin Ming's children, flew to his side and held his hands.

"Big Brother Lin…"

"Lin Ming…"

"Father…"

"Daddy…"

The calls of his family echoed in Lin Ming's ears, touching his heart.

When a person was in their most helpless moments, the care of their family could dispel this helplessness and confusion.

Lin Ming looked at his family. At this time, they already learned what happened to Sheng Mei and how it happened.

"Jiu'er..."

Lin Ming traced Jiu'er's face, unsure as to what he could say.

Jiu'er tightly gripped Lin Ming's hand. "Mother will be alright."

Jiu'er bit her lips and spoke in a slow and clear tone, as if she were not only telling Lin Ming this, but also herself.

"Lin Ming..."

Xiao Moxian, Mu Qianyu, and Qin Xingxuan held onto Lin Ming's hand. They could naturally feel the pain in his heart.

There was nothing they could do to help him with this burden. They could only hold his hands and transmit their comfort to him.

Xiao Moxian said with a sound transmission, “If you have decided on something, then go and do it. There is no need to consider us…”

Lin Ming’s heart warmed. He knew that his decision was likely to mean that he would fall into further danger in the future. If anything happened to him, it was hard to imagine what his family would experience.

Xiao Moxian didn’t want to distract Lin Ming, but how could he completely ignore his family’s thoughts? The situation he faced was far too difficult.

“I will return safely. I promise this to you all!”

Lin Ming grit his teeth and said. After that period of impulsiveness, Lin Ming had finally calmed down. If he rashly rushed out to look for the Soul Emperor, then not only would he not be able to save Sheng Mei but he would also die in vain; there would be no meaning to this.

He wanted to rescue Sheng Mei not just so he could live with a clear heart and mind, but also because he wanted to truly save her.

At this time, the space channel to the Asura Road opened.

“Let’s go.”

Ink and Clear said. They flew towards the Asura Road together. Lin Ming, Divine Dream, and Lin Ming’s family followed close behind.

After flying through the space channel for an unknown period of time, the scenery around them changed and they arrived upon a wild plain.

This was the Asura Road’s Great Desolate.

Seeing this scene before him, Lin Ming was filled with a myriad of emotions. He had returned to the Asura Road once again.

This world had accompanied Lin Ming for the majority of his life.

MW Chapter 2223

Chapter 2223 – Seeing Asura

…

…

…

"Senior Asura, is he in the Asura Road?"

Lin Ming originally had many guesses as to just where the Asura Road Master was. He even thought that the Asura Road Master might be in the Dark Abyss, perhaps even the Demon God's Tomb.

It was only now that he learned the Asura Road Master had never left the world he created.

Ink nodded, "Master dwells here. He has been waiting all this time, waiting for a full 10 billion years. Once you see the master, you will know the whole story and the doubts in your heart will also be explained."

As Clear and Ink spoke they began to fly towards the Asura Sea. They didn’t pass through a transmission array but directly tore through the void and crossed towards the Great Desolate.

The Asura Road had an extremely strange shape; it was very narrow and very long, just like a road, thus the reason for its name. The two ends of this ‘road’ were the outer Asura Road and the inner Asura Road with the Great Desolate acting as the dividing line. Even an Empyrean level martial artist couldn’t cross safely

But for Clear and Ink, crossing through the Great Desolate was actually easy.

As the two of them continuously opened space channels, the group only required half a day to reach the Asura Sea.

The Asura Sea was the entrance of the final trial. During every opening of the final trial, all the heroes from the various influences across the Asura Road would gather here at the Asura Sea.

This sea was unfathomably deep; even a star could be submerged within it!

The rumors said that deep in the Asura Sea there were many space labyrinths and turbulent whirlpools; there were even True Divinity level vicious beasts dwelling there. Thus, the martial artists of the Asura Road had never dared to enter the Asura Sea.

As for how deep the sea was, no one knew.

But today Lin Ming realized that he would have to go to the very bottom of the Asura Sea.

In front of him, Ink and Clear revolved their energies, forming a channel in the Asura Sea. Lin Ming passed through this channel, flying down with the group.

Their speed was incredibly fast. Lin Ming had no idea how deep down he dived; it seemed as if this sea was bottomless.

"Senior Asura is at the bottom of the Asura Sea?" Lin Ming asked.

Clear shook his head. "That isn't completely accurate. But, you will soon know; we've almost arrived."

Clear and Ink slowed down. At this time, within the thick and heavy darkness and the highly pressured seawater, Lin Ming finally saw the seabed of the Asura Sea.

The dark gray seabed was without any life at all. A massive mountain range that extended for a thousand miles lay at the bottom.

Seeing this giant mountain range, Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. With his sharp senses he found that there was something unusual about this seabed.

Although it was quiet, it actually possessed faint life fluctuations.

This wasn't a mountain range but a giant snake covered in dust!

"A True Divinity level vicious beast..." Lin Ming's eyes flashed.

"Yes, its name is Darkness. It is the guardian of this part of the Asura Sea and if a martial artist from the Asura Road really comes down, it is responsible for chasing them away. Let's continue forwards." As Ink spoke, he lightly stabbed his finger towards somewhere deep in the sea. In front of them, the quiet seawater began to roll with undercurrents. A distorted space stretched and grew, forming an underwater whirlpool that sucked in Lin Ming.

Then, the seawater vanished.

The pressure deep within the Asura Sea was originally at a terrifying level. Now, Lin Ming felt his body lighten as he arrived in a strange space.

This space wasn't too large. It was only several hundred feet in width and length. As Lin Ming saw what was around him, his heart shook.

"This space… this is…"

Lin Ming looked around him. Everything was carved from purple crystal.

Crystal furniture, crystal ground, crystal bed…

This sort of crystal shimmered with translucent light, similar to quartz. Lin Ming had never seen anything like it before. Just by gently touching it he could feel a vast sea of energy within, as if the purest energy in existence was gathered in these crystals.

"Amethyst?"

This thought inexplicably appeared in Lin Ming's mind. More than purple crystal, it was more appropriate to call this amethyst.

Amethyst, Amethyst Origin Crystal…

"Could this be…"

As Lin Ming was deep in thought, a faint voice reverberated within this amethyst space.

“The place you are in is a cave dwelling that I refined in the past using the Amethyst Origin Crystal as the foundation. I named this place the Amethyst Heavenly Palace, but because the energy and heavenly materials required to refine it were far too much, I had to repeatedly shrink it in size. At the end, the final refined product was only several hundred feet in size.”

This sudden voice possessed an ancient majesty, making one feel something inexplicable within them. Listening to this voice, Lin Ming felt his own soul faintly resonate with it. He knew that this came from a sympathetic echoing of the Asura Laws.

This voice could cause the Asura Laws in his body to vibrate.

Lin Ming took a deep breath and fell to his knees, deeply bowing. He knew that the one who spoke was the person he came to see today.

“Junior Lin Ming greets Senior Asura!”

Lin Ming said, excited. This legendary character would finally appear before him!

He was the leader of the ancient races from 10 billion years ago, and 10 billion years ago he was already the number one character of the 33 Heavens!

Lin Ming bowed for several breaths of time before lifting his head up. What he saw before him was simply emptiness. Within this cave dwelling forged from amethyst, he still didn't see the Asura Road Master, not even his shadow.

"There is no need to look. The majority of my body has already integrated into the Asura Road itself. This Amethyst Heavenly Palace is the cornerstone of the Asura Road, thus I had you come here..."

This ancient and majestic voice echoed in Lin Ming's ears once more. The body had merged with the Asura Road?

Lin Ming was bewildered. The Asura Road Master had actually fused together with the Asura Road!

"Senior, since your body has fused with the Asura Road, then does this mean you cannot leave the Asura Road?"

If this was the reason then it could be explained why the Asura Road Master had yet to move against the Soul Emperor. But, why would the Asura Road Master do this?

"I know you have many questions in your heart. I also know that the reason you came here today is not just to ask these questions, but to ask me to help you in saving a woman..."

The Asura Road Master's words caused Lin Ming's mind to shake.

Lin Ming deeply bowed once more. "Senior Asura, junior's beloved wife has been captured by the Soul Emperor. I ask for Senior to guide this junior onto the correct path!"

Lin Ming was well aware that no matter what he tried to do it would be difficult for him to save Sheng Mei. All that lay in front of him was a dead end, and only the Asura Road Master had a slight chance of being able to give him a guiding light.

However, Lin Ming's question caused that majestic voice to fall silent.

Lin Ming grit his teeth, quietly waiting on.

After a long time, the Asura Road Master sighed deeply. He said, "Perhaps... the situation is different than how you think it is... the Soul Emperor may have captured your wife, but it isn't to threaten you and have you walk into a trap. Instead, there are other reasons..."

"Other reasons?" Lin Ming was startled. Could the Soul Emperor have captured Sheng Mei just for the sake of revenge?

The Soul Emperor should know that if he killed Sheng Mei, then besides enraging Lin Ming, it wouldn't help his great cause at all.

With the Soul Emperor's temperament, he wouldn't waste even a single breath for something so insignificant.

"I ask Senior to clarify the matter." Lin Ming asked, his voice a bit anxious.

The Asura Road Master replied, "I can now sense vibrations of the Amethyst Origin Crystal. It is likely that… the Soul Emperor already stands atop the Eternal Wall…

"From what I sense of the Amethyst Origin Crystal, it makes me think of a possibility. Perhaps the Soul Emperor trained your wife because he had a goal in his mind all along. If what I think is true, then you are doomed to be unable to save her…"

The Asura Road Master's words caused Lin Ming's heart to fall. His hands couldn't help but tremble.

The Soul Emperor's goal…

Eternal Wall…

Amethyst Origin Crystal…

When the Soul Emperor first captured Sheng Mei, Lin Ming’s first thought was that he had done so to threaten him. But now, he realized that his thoughts might have been wrong from the very start!

The Soul Emperor had trained Sheng Mei with a goal in mind, a goal that even Sheng Mei didn’t know about!

The Soul Emperor had left seclusion not just to kill him, but also to find Sheng Mei!

He had misunderstood everything from the start, and he simply… couldn’t save Sheng Mei…

Couldn’t save…

Couldn’t… save…?

Lin Ming was left in a daze. He had come with hopes that the Asura Road Master would be able to guide him in the right direction, but the answer he obtained actually left him wallowing in despair.

……….

At this time, across layers of space, the Dark Abyss –

This was a vast and endless earth, one that extended beyond the horizon.

The ground was covered with countless shattered bones, dark gray ashes, and deathly stillness.

These bones were left behind by the great war 10 billion years ago between powerful abyssals and overlords of the 33 Heavens. Even though they had been eroded by the passing of time, they still shined with the light of Laws.

Darkness, killing intent, death, this was the atmosphere of this land – this was the Dark Abyss's Eternal Wall!

The Soul Emperor stood atop the Eternal Wall, feeling the surging power of this world, deep in thought.

After a number of days, his appearance had become even more aged. The sudden changes in the Emperor Bone Sea had caused him heavy losses.

Originally only the Soul Emperor's eyes were old and dirty and his eyes overflowing with death. However, his face remained as fine and beautiful as that of a youth, except just slightly more pale.

But now, due to the changes in the Emperor Bone Sea, his face was mottled with wrinkles and the skin on his neck had withered and cracked; he seemed like someone on the verge of death.

Behind the Soul Emperor stood a black-clothed woman. This woman was Sheng Mei; she had been captured by the Soul Emperor.

Sheng Mei's face was pale. Her blood vitality, true essence, and Laws had all been sealed away. She was completely powerless to resist.

The Soul Emperor's back faced Sheng Mei. He looked at this ancient battlefield from 10 billion years ago and sighed with emotion. "This land hasn't changed even after 10 billion years..."

He turned his head and looked at Sheng Mei, a smile curving up his lips.

"Do you know why I trained you in the past?"

The Soul Emperor continued to say, “I already knew that you wanted to rebel against me in your heart and I also knew of your last life. You were the daughter of my blood enemy from 10 billion years past!

“Even so, I only planted my spirit mark in your spiritual sea to track you, and didn’t place a slave seal within you. I controlled your freedom but I didn’t control your thoughts. I allowed you to hate me, disrespect me, and I tolerated it all. I wanted your heart and mind to be unhindered. Even in the past when you wanted to save Lin Ming’s life and allow him to live the rest of his years as a mortal, I allowed you to do so…

“And all of these things, have you never considered why I did so?”

MW Chapter 2224

Chapter 2224 – Fate

…

…

…

The Soul Emperor's words caused Sheng Mei's eyebrows to press together. She had a foreboding premonition in her heart. Ever since she entered the Asura forbidden land, these feelings had been there.

Because Lin Ming had suffered an accident, Sheng Mei thought that this foreboding premonition had come from him.

But now it seemed that this premonition was because of herself and was completely unrelated to Lin Ming. It was also the reason why she was captured by the Soul Emperor.

As she stood atop the Eternal Wall, Sheng Mei was able to gradually guess what the Soul Emperor's true goal was.

What was placed before her was a great scheme, a scheme where she would surely die…

“10 billion years! The Eternal Wall has sealed this land for 10 billion years! Not only has it sealed away the Dark Abyss, but it has also divided my body!

“The land of the Dark Abyss is far too small and the resources are too barren. The abyssals in the Dark Abyss are like a black dragon locked in by chains. No matter how glorious your martial arts civilization of 100 billion years is, no matter how you wonderful your inheritances, no matter how much you screen out your talent and bloodline over time, these are heavy chains that are impossible to break free from.

“Without powerful abyssals, where would I obtain rich sacrifices to have the world of the Demon God’s Tomb become ever more perfect?

“This Eternal Wall has become a knife in my heart, and I must pull it out no matter what! But unfortunately… the Eternal Wall is formed from the Amethyst Origin Crystal. If it were just the Amethyst Origin Crystal then there wouldn’t be much to fear, but there is also a great array formation left behind by Asura. 10 billion years ago, your previous life offered herself in a blood sacrifice, pouring her source strength and source divine soul into the Eternal Wall in order to become the final lock that bound this place.

“For the last 10 billion years, I have attempted countless methods but have been unable to break apart the Eternal Wall! Then, I took a step backwards. If I cannot shatter it, then I will simply unravel it! As long as the Eternal Wall is undone then it will return into the Amethyst

Origin Crystal. If this happened, not only would I pull out the knife in my heart but I would also gain a divine tool; wouldn't this just be wonderful?

"However, to unravel this seal isn't easy! I deeply delved into studying this seal for numerous years and finally managed to just barely find a method that would work. In order to end this trouble, I needed the one who started it. In the past you were the one who sealed this land with your final blood sacrifice! And now, in order to unravel this seal, I also need your blood!

"Originally, your previous life died. But luckily for me she wasn't resigned to fading into ashes and nothingness. She left behind her tenth reincarnation, and this allowed me to find you. When I did, I also found a ray of hope to unseal the Eternal Wall!

"The reason I trained you has never been because I need another helper. I have never been lacking for helpers, and I have always required my followers to be absolutely loyal to me, just like Deep Child.

"Compared to Deep Child, where do you think you have the qualifications to become my right hand? To train you is no different from raising a tiger to bring about disaster. How can I not understand this truth?

"But, I still put my full effort forwards in order to strengthen you, so that you could become a peerless genius. This was because I needed you to reach the True Divinity realm, and even possess strength that far surpassed others at your level. Only like this would your source blood essence be strong enough to act as the key to open the Eternal Wall!"

As the Soul Emperor spoke, Sheng Mei's mind quaked. She finally understood what was happening.

In order to display her talent to the fullest, the Soul Emperor wasn't able to control an independent personality. Only like this would she be able to dig out the limits of her potential. If she were only a puppet that was controlled by others, how could she reach the highest boundaries of martial arts?

Thus, even if the Soul Emperor knew she had thoughts of rebelling, he still didn't suppress her. Instead he made use of her ambitions. He even deliberately condoned and cultivated her hatred towards him, making her treat him as an enemy so that she would push herself even further, stimulating all of her potential to defy him!

The Soul Emperor continued, "You thought you had the bloodline of the dark angel race, and were even an orphan of the dark angels. In truth, I implanted this bloodline within you. I completely exterminated the dark angel race and took the essence of their bloodline to implant into you. Do you know just how much I've done for you?

"You don't know. You only thought that I destroyed the dark angel race as well as eliminated all the enemies of your people. But, this was also information that I intentionally allowed you to know. I even opened the Demon God's Tomb ahead of time so that you could carry out the abyssal ritual and accept the totem abyssal level inheritance, directly increasing your strength to that of a True Divinity, and perhaps even higher than that.

"If you had obediently accepted the inheritance at that time then I wouldn't have controlled you. I wanted you to become stronger, continuously stronger! However, what happened in the Demon God's Tomb left me surprised. Not only did you not accept the totem abyssal level inheritance but you even managed to accidentally break through the spirit mark and energy mark that I left within you.

"Although the process was completely unlike what I thought it was, if I only look at the results, then you have indeed broken into True Divinity and have met my most basic requirements.

"I had to leave seclusion early. Even if this hindered my cultivation and caused me heavy losses so that Immortal found a chance to harm me, I still had no choice but to do so. There were two matters I needed to complete. The first was to kill Lin Ming and the second was to regain control over you!

"I wasn't able to kill Lin Ming, and that is something I deeply regret. But, I still managed to take back control of you. I have raised you for such a long time, and now, it is time to make use of you… in particular, at this moment your previous life's father has taken control of half the Emperor Bone Sea and wishes to perish together with me. I must return and fuse with my other two avatars, turning our three bodies into one. I need to refine Immortal's remnant soul and truly merge together with the Demon God's Tomb so that I can obtain everlasting and undying life!

"I do not have much time left. Come, my child. I have raised you for such a long time, and it was all for this moment."

As the Soul Emperor spoke his gaze became fierce and hideous. With his scattered air and withered old skin, he looked like a blood-sucking ghost.

“You can keep dreaming!” Sheng Mei clenched her teeth and wildly struggled. However, her energies and Laws were all imprisoned by the Soul Emperor!

She wasn’t afraid of death. But, she didn’t want her death and blood to help the Soul Emperor and cause Lin Ming and Jiu’er to suffer disaster!

“Don’t waste your time. I caught you after so much trouble so how could I allow you a chance to sever your meridians and commit suicide? Just become my sacrifice!”

As the Soul Emperor spoke, death energy gushed out from his body. Dark winds howled all around him. Atop the dark Eternal Wall, bones shattered and flew upwards, as if countless suffering souls were dancing in the skies.

The Soul Emperor walked towards Sheng Mei, one step at a time. He stretched out his skeleton-like hand to grasp at her neck.

Death was so close.

At this moment, despair rose up in Sheng Mei's heart. The Soul Emperor's seal was far too powerful; she couldn't even resist.

Was this the end of her destiny?

Upon birth, she was raised as a sacrifice. She didn't know her past and she didn't know her future… all that existed in her life was cultivating and cultivating even more. She didn't have love, she didn't have friends, she didn't have anything at all.

But then, she had Jiu'er. She learned of her past life and she confirmed her feelings with Lin Ming.

She now had a goal in life. She had something she needed to protect, and with this she understood the significance of life.

But after understanding all of this, what she faced was death.

If it were only dying, then that wasn't scary. Before death there were at least many beautiful memories she could recall.

At the very least, in the 1500 years she spent in the Demon God's Tomb, although she had been cultivating all that time, she had Jiu'er and Lin Ming accompanying her. She had felt nothing but incomparable satisfaction.

However… she now knew that not only would she die, but her death would bring about destruction to everything she loved and wanted to protect!

Was this the entirety of her life?

She was raised in sorrow and she would die in tragedy. When she was alive, she had suffered by herself. But when she died, she would instead bring suffering upon the world.

Was there anything more painful than this?

Sheng Mei felt as if she had been swallowed alive.

This was a fate that she could not avoid or resist…

MW Chapter 2225

Chapter 2225 – Twists and Turns

…

…

…

Space locked up and slowly came drawing in. World strength surged outwards, completely covering Sheng Mei. Facing the Soul Emperor’s strength, Sheng Mei didn’t even know how to begin resisting him. She closed her eyes in pain. The sounds of bones cracking from beneath the Soul Emperor’s feet echoed in her ears like the pained howls of lost souls.

The Soul Emperor’s hand drew close. His deathly pale palm was withered and dry, a horrible sight to behold. Yet, those ten nails were sharp and cruel, shining with a cold luminescence.

Sheng Mei couldn’t even revolve her true essence right now. From half a foot away, just the cold wind coming from the Soul Emperor’s nails were enough to cut Sheng Mei’s skin.

Blood flowed out. On top of Sheng Mei's snow white neck, it was like a red plum had fallen into the snow.

"What a beautiful color."

The Soul Emperor's eyes lit up with a feverishly frantic light.

As long as the Eternal Wall was opened then he could gather together his three bodies, and his strength would rise even further.

At that time the Soul Emperor could fully control the Emperor Bone Sea and complete his incomplete seclusion. Then, he would thoroughly fuse together with the world of the Demon God's Tomb!

This was the final goal that he had plotted for 100 billion years – now, it would finally be realized!

Pata! Pata!

Sheng Mei's blood dripped onto the black earth and was slowly absorbed. Meanwhile, the Soul Emperor reached out his other hand towards his own decrepit, firewood-like chest.

Puff!

He forcefully dug his claw into the pit of his chest. Pitch black blood, thick and viscous, slowly flowed out.

Even though his mortal body felt pain, the Soul Emperor didn't seem to sense this at all. He continued to diabolically grin as he reached in to break off a rib and then pull it out!

Blood flowed out from the corners of the Soul Emperor's lips and his eyes glowed with an increasingly strong death aura. If he wished to open the Eternal Wall and unravel the great array formation within, not only did he need Sheng Mei's blood sacrifice but he also needed to pay a certain price.

The Soul Emperor crumbled his own rib. The half-foot long rib turned into shards of inch-long bone that resembled broken glass. The shards flew into the skies, forming a great array formation in the world.

World strength gathered, the flow becoming ever stronger.

"The grand feast has been prepared. Now, give me your life!"

The Soul Emperor reached out to grasp Sheng Mei. But at this time, from behind the Soul Emperor, light ripples appeared in the space behind him.

Although this was the most important ritual that the Soul Emperor had carried out in his life, his senses remained incredibly sharp. He immediately sensed these strange spatial fluctuations.

"Who is it?"

The Soul Emperor's first thought was that someone wanted to sneak attack him and ruin his ritual.

In this critical point, if someone were to sneak attack him then although the Soul Emperor could deal with it, the event would still bring about many troubles and unknown variables. The Soul Emperor did not like unknown variables, particularly after his failed attempt to kill Lin Ming.

With spatial fluctuations, the greatest possibility was that someone would appear from a spatial channel and launch attacks against him.

The space on the surface of the Eternal Wall was inferior to the stability of the Demon God's Tomb. But, because of the energy storm here, wanting to find accurate spatial coordinates and appear behind him wasn't easy at all. This was proof that this new opponent was incredibly strong!

"No matter who you are, since you have appeared here, then die!"

The Soul Emperor stepped forwards, slamming his palm at that blurry space channel!

Kacha!

The space channel exploded. Beneath the Soul Emperor's attack, no one would have escaped unscathed. Even an outstanding True Divinity like Lin Ming would have been wounded!

However, as this palm struck out, the Soul Emperor was left startled. The space channel was only a space channel; there was no one inside.

But if no one was inside, why would a space channel suddenly appear?

As these doubts flashed through the Soul Emperor's mind, the power of turbulent space began to stir behind him once more. Another space channel had appeared!

The Soul Emperor turned and saw that the powerless Sheng Mei was being sucked towards that suddenly-produced space channel vortex!

"What!?"

The Soul Emperor was sent into a furious rage!

What angered him was that whether it was in training Sheng Mei or seizing her from the 33 Heavens, he had paid a great price in order to do this. Now, just as he was about to offer Sheng Mei in a blood sacrifice and complete the final necessary step, someone decided to use this key moment to save her.

And what was shocking was that he had locked his sense onto his surroundings all this time and had sensed no one. Just who had such great abilities that they could locate him and then open two space channels without him knowing, using one to divert his attention and then opening another beneath Sheng Mei's feet to take her away!

"You are seeking death!"

The space channel was drawing in Sheng Mei at an incredible speed. However, the Soul Emperor's reaction was even faster. He thrust out his palm, world strength surging around him!

In this moment the Soul Emperor could have killed Sheng Mei ten times over already. However, there were too many complex steps required in the blood sacrifice ritual, and if he didn't complete then before killing Sheng Mei then that would cause all his plans to fail.

Thus, the Soul Emperor didn't aim at Sheng Mei – his goal was the space channel.

Whoosh!

Sheng Mei was drawn into the space channel. But, as the space channel was attempting to close, the boundless world strength of the Soul Emperor blocked it from doing so, keeping it from closing!

“I want to take a good look at who has such great abilities!”

The Soul Emperor wanted to pursue Sheng Mei. He had branded her with his True Divinity mark and he could near-instantly reach her side.

However, just as he was about to enter the space channel, he felt a massive amount of pressure emerge from it!

This pressure squeezed out his world strength, wanting to crush it and forcibly close the space channel!

“What!?”

The Soul Emperor was bewildered. Someone existed who could resist his world strength!?

"No, this is wrong! This strength… comes from the Eternal Wall's great array formation itself! Could the Eternal Wall be coming to save Sheng Mei? How is this possible?"

The Soul Emperor was left shocked. In this world, there was no one who possessed the ability to contend with him directly. However, the Eternal Wall was different. This was something which possessed an array formation that the Asura Road Master had poured his source energy into. In addition, Sheng Mei's previous life had offered herself in a blood sacrifice, fusing all of her life essence and even pouring in the inherited strength that Immortal Sovereign had passed down to her. Moreover, the main body of the Eternal Wall was also one of the three divine tools – the Amethyst Origin Crystal.

With these three factors combined together, the Eternal Wall had a strength that even the Soul Emperor feared.

As he felt his own world strength being squeezed out, the Soul Emperor was enraged. He used his hands and forcefully grabbed at the edges of the space channel, wanting to tear it apart!

In his heart he knew that no matter what, he couldn't allow this space channel to close.

He had already confirmed that this space channel originated from the inner space of the Eternal Wall. The Eternal Wall was a wholly complete self, and the Soul Emperor wasn't sure why it would open a channel to suddenly rescue Sheng Mei.

However, he knew that once the channel opened, it was equal to tearing an opening within an originally complete wall.

With this opening, the Eternal Wall was no longer perfect.

As long as he could continue to rip open this tear then he could surely completely open it!

With this in mind, the Soul Emperor poured more and more strength into the space channel to resist the Eternal Wall's pressure!

And at this time, within the space channel, Sheng Mei had arrived in a purple space.

"This place is..."

Sheng Mei was shocked. She thought her death was assured but the moment she was about to be turned into a blood sacrifice by the Soul Emperor she had been sucked into this space. And what stood in front of her was a little girl that seemed to be 13-14 years of age.

"You... saved me?"

Sheng Mei felt this all inconceivable. A little girl like this had the ability to save her?

She could not see through the little girl's cultivation at all. This was strange, because she was sure that this little girl wasn't too strong herself, so how could she possibly save her from the Soul Emperor?

"Who are you?"

Sheng Mei asked, puzzled. At the moment before her death, a little girl she had never seen before with such a low level of strength had managed to transmit her into this space; it was no different from a dream.

"I… my name is Yan Littlefish, you can call me Fishy. Do… do you know Big Brother Lin Ming?" Fishy timidly asked. When she listened in on the conversation between the Soul Emperor and Sheng Mei, she had heard the Soul Emperor mention Lin Ming's name. It seemed as if this mysterious big sister had some sort of relationship with her big brother Lin Ming.

"Lin Ming… you called him your big brother?"

Sheng Mei was lost. A strange little girl had used completely inconceivable methods to rescue her and also knew of Lin Ming? Just who was this little girl and what was her background?

MW Chapter 2226

Chapter 2226 – Prelude to the Final Battle

…

…

…

“Fishy, how did you meet your Big Brother Lin Ming?” Sheng Mei asked Fishy.

Fishy related her experiences about how she met him in True Martial City, and also told Sheng Mei how she ended up here. When Mo Eversnow tried to cross into the Dark Abyss in the past, she had been sucked into this place.

From that point on she had stayed in here. She didn’t know how many years she had been here for but she slowly discovered that she had completely merged with the amethyst space around her. She was able to control this space, as if doing so was a part of her most natural instincts.

Fishy’s words startled Sheng Mei. She realized that this amethyst space was the inner space of the Eternal Wall. In other words, the inner space of the Amethyst Origin Crystal!

The little girl in front of her could control the Amethyst Origin Crystal. Just how was she related to the Amethyst Origin Crystal?

As Sheng Mei was left confused by all of this, she suddenly felt this amethyst space tremble around her.

The fierce trembling continued, leaving Sheng Mei and Fishy shaken. Immediately, a violent and evil strength came pouring down onto them.

Soul Emperor!

Sheng Mei’s complexion paled. Fishy opening and closing a space channel into the amethyst space had all been done in front of the Soul Emperor. Although the three divine tools were powerful, they were by no means invincible. Upon reaching the level of the Soul Emperor, one already possessed the ability to resist the strength of a great world.

As the amethyst space wished to seal itself again, the Soul Emperor poured his strength within to forcibly prevent it from doing so.

Not just that, but the Soul Emperor was trying to slowly rip open the space channel a bit at a time!

“This is bad!”

Sheng Mei’s heart sank. Once the Soul Emperor tore open the space channel and entered the amethyst space, the consequences would be inconceivable!

The Soul Emperor continued to pour in his strength, becoming increasingly formidable. But, his actions also aroused the resistance of the Eternal Wall.

Sheng Mei sensed that the Eternal Wall’s energy started to gather from all around; it wanted to push out the Soul Emperor’s energy!

In a moment, both sides reached a mutual balance, neither side able to take an advantage.

However, Sheng Mei was increasingly worried as she saw this.

It had to be known that the energy of a great array formation tended to be self-circulating and insulated. Although it could absorb energy from the outside, in normal situations the energy it absorbed was only sufficient to continue revolving the array formation.

For a grand array formation to achieve perfect energy balance, this was a splendidly amazing array formation. Such an array formation could continue for billions of years without fear of lacking energy.

The Eternal Wall was one such grand array formation. It had a balanced level of energy and even had a little bit extra. In addition to a divine tool as its foundation, this grand array formation could stand tall for 10 billion years without breaking.

But no matter how perfect a grand array formation was, once a flaw appeared then it was no longer perfect. It was like a bag of air with a small hole stabbed in it, slowly deflating.

Time passed, a minute and a second at a time. The energy within the Eternal Wall was like a vast sea smashing forwards again and again. However, the Soul Emperor’s evil energy within the space channel was incomparably tenacious and refused to disappear.

This process continued for many days. The Soul Emperor’s energy was slowly compressed into an energy mark within the amethyst space. At this time the space channel finally sealed itself back up.

The amethyst space fell quiet once more, its calm restored.

However, Sheng Mei didn’t feel any joy at all. She could faintly feel that the Soul Emperor’s energy mark had already melted into the Eternal Wall’s grand array formation, and was blending into its energy structure.

It was like a malignant tumor, slowly absorbing energy and growing stronger.

The Soul Emperor had finally found a breaking point through the Eternal Wall!

The Eternal Wall had already existed for 10 billion years. The Soul Emperor had studied it for an incredibly long period of time and likely understood the energy structure behind it.

An array formation was inanimate but the Soul Emperor was alive. Sooner or later, the Eternal Wall would be broken through by him.

But the Soul Emperor didn't want to wait. What he needed was one final straw to crush the camel's back.

His original choice had been Sheng Mei. Even though his plan had failed… the result would not change.

In the past, when the Asura Road Master and Sheng Mei's previous life laid down the Eternal Wall, they had already expected that it would be impossible for this Eternal Wall to block the steps of the abyssal race for eternity. There would come a day when the Eternal Wall was torn down and the 33 Heavens would face the invasion of the Dark Abyss once more.

This was the destined flow of history. Although it might be delayed or hastened by one or two accidental events, the final result would still move towards an established direction.

It was an accident that Fishy rescued Sheng Mei, and it was this accident that allowed the Soul Emperor to plant a seed within the Eternal Wall.

With a flaw in the Eternal Wall, it was no longer indestructible.

This was just like an adult male being unable to crush a complete egg in his hand. But once there was a crack in this egg, even if it were a small crack that one couldn't even see, then the integrity of the egg would be compromised and even a small child could crush it then.

"Fishy..."

Sheng Mei looked at Fishy, her gaze filled with guilt. Fishy had rescued her, yet all she brought to Fishy was nothing but bad luck.

....

Asura Road, Amethyst Heavenly Palace.

Lin Ming sat in meditation for several days within this space. His injuries had already healed by a great deal. Normally, when a martial artist overdraw their life force like Lin Ming did then they would have already dropped boundaries. Yet, Lin Ming actually didn't suffer many losses. This terrifying resilience and regenerative ability was all thanks to the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace.

In his battle with the Soul Emperor, it was unavoidable for his cultivation to be reduced. But in the final moments, he had fused together his inner and outer universes, becoming one with the heavens. He had made great strides in his Laws, and these harvests surpassed the losses to his blood vitality and cultivation.

During these days, Lin Ming worried over Sheng Mei. He had a faint spiritual connection with her and could sense that she had yet to die…

Lin Ming didn't know what was occurring but he was left impatient and anxious. But he also knew that trying to rescue Sheng Mei in his current state was impossible.

"Lin Ming, I can feel the Amethyst Origin Crystal's energy weakening… the Demon God's Tomb Master should be attempting to break through the Eternal Wall… your wife has not died, but as for what happened specifically, I do now know…"

Asura's voice suddenly echoed in the void.

"Senior, what should this junior do?"

Lin Ming knew that once the Eternal Wall opened, then the Soul Emperor, Deep, and Flood, would fuse together as one, perhaps even finally thoroughly refining the Demon God's Tomb. At this time, it was unimaginable how strong the Demon God's Tomb Master would become.

That moment would be the apocalypse for all life in the 33 Heavens.

The Asura Road Master fell silent for a long time. Then, he slowly said, "It is time to start the arrangements that I've planned for all these years. It is only that the day came far sooner than I thought it would…"

"The arrangements you've planned in these years?" Lin Ming asked, stunned.

"10 billion years ago when I and the previous life of Sheng Mei joined together to lay down the Eternal Wall, I had already been considering this day.

"My Asura Road and Immortal's Akashic Dream Universe had both been prepared for this day… I split apart my body, divine soul, and inner world, and fused together with the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe, and the reason I did all of this was in order to protect these two lands.

"For all these years, under my protection, the Demon God's Tomb Master was not able to destroy the Asura Road or Akashic Dream Universe. But at the same time, I was also unable to prevent the Demon God's Tomb Master from slowly restoring his strength. All I could do was quietly wait…"

Listening to the Asura Road Master's words, Lin Ming was left stunned.

Asura Road, Akashic Dream Universe…

When Lin Ming first stepped into the Asura Road, he had already been speculating about the reasons for why the Asura Road Master had spent so much effort and energy to create the Asura Road. If this great world was merely created so that the Asura Road Master could choose his descendants, then it seemed a little bit overdone.

This world formed a complete system and there were also many unique Laws that existed here. There were guardians that tended to this world as well as the final trial that was wrapped in mysteries. All of these things were planned so that the Asura Road Master could resist the Demon God's Tomb Master's schemes?

As for the Akashic Dream Universe, Lin Ming had once entered that place too. He knew that after the Demon God's Tomb Master had seized the body of the Soul Emperor, he had slowly obtained the complete Holy Scripture from the Akashic Dream universe.

This was also an inevitable matter. After all, for the last 10 billion years, all parts of the Holy Scripture had been slowly searched for and collected by spiritas martial artists. With the Soul Emperor’s time and energy, it wouldn’t be difficult for him to piece together the complete Holy Scripture.

But Lin Ming also knew that many trials in the Akashic Dream Universe had corresponding rewards that were various golden pages of the Holy Scripture. But when he went into the Akashic Dream Universe, many of these golden pages had yet to be taken by others.

When Lin Ming had learned of the Soul Emperor’s true identity and his plans, he had also been left a bit puzzled. With the Soul Emperor’s absolute strength, it shouldn’t have been difficult for him to forcibly seize these golden pages. But now he understood that all of this was prevented by the protection of the Asura Road Master.

10 billion years ago, the two peerless characters of the past had created two great worlds in order to resist the Demon God’s Tomb!

Of the two of them, one had perished with nothing left but a remnant soul. Even then, he had waited in silence within the Emperor Bone Sea to give the Soul Emperor one final heavy strike. As for the other person, he still lived and had been quietly protecting these two great worlds for 10 billion years, waiting for the final battle to arrive!

Lin Ming’s heart was shaken beyond words. He didn’t know what he could say or what expressions he could make to describe what Immortal and Asura had done. All he could do was inherit their legacies and face this final great calamity.

MW Chapter 2227

Chapter 2227 – Plans

…

…

…

“Lin Ming… when the Soul Emperor reenters the Demon God’s Tomb, the three avatars of the Demon God’s Tomb Master will fuse back together and he will begin his final period of seclusion. This is also the last bit of time we have left remaining…”

The Asura Road Master’s faint voice sounded in the void. Lin Ming never forgot that when his Eternal Soul was taken away by Sheng Mei at the Sky Spill Planet, Sheng Mei had said that the Soul Emperor would have to go into seclusion, and this period would go on for 10,000 years to 100,000 years.

And at this time, because of Immortal Sovereign, the Emperor Bone Sea within the Demon God’s Tomb had nearly collapsed. The Soul Emperor’s first task would be to repair the Emperor Bone Sea and then go into seclusion to fuse with the Demon God’s Tomb.

Then, in terms of time, the Soul Emperor's period of seclusion would surely be longer than the 10,000 years that Sheng Mei predicted.

In the past, the Soul Emperor had already gone into seclusion for 9000 years and he must have already refined the Eternal Soul. All that was left over was to repair the Emperor Bone Sea and thoroughly refine the Demon God's Tomb. As for how much time this would take, Lin Ming didn't know!

"Lin Ming! The Demon God's Tomb Master fused together with the world of the Demon God's Tomb, gathering heaven and man into one and dual cultivating the inner self and outer self. In terms of the Laws, the heights he reached have surpassed the past glories of both me and Immortal. This is also the reason why Immortal and I were defeated by him. Due to the idealistic conflicts in cultivating the inner and outer universes me and Immortal shared, we battled many times. Yet in the end, we were defeated by the Demon God's Tomb Master who had managed to gather heaven and man into one. That was truly the greatest joke of all time!

"Unfortunately, by the time we both realized that we had been wrong all along, it was no longer possible for us to turn back. Our Laws, our foundation, everything had already been finalized and set in stone, and it would be impossible for us to return to a road that we had never walked down and reach the end of this road in a short period of time.

"We cannot, but that does not mean that the children of the 33 Heavens cannot. Immortal and I created our own worlds all in order to wait for a person to appear who could completely refine these worlds into their body and truly achieve the realm of fusing heaven and man, reaching a peak of martial arts that no one else has ever stepped upon!

“Only like this is there a chance of contending with the Demon God’s Tomb Master. And you, you are without a doubt the most suitable candidate for doing so!

“Refine the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe...” Lin Ming took a deep breath, repeating these words to himself. He was clear just what these words meant.

These were two super worlds. Although they were slightly worse than the world of the Demon God’s Tomb, they were undoubtedly both at the level Beyond Divinity. And, these two worlds were the polar opposite of each other, just like yin and yang sides of a primal chaos diagram. Fully fusing these two super worlds together within himself was easier said than done!

“I know what your concerns are – you think your boundary is too low. In fact, when Immortal and I created our own worlds, we also believed that we needed a genius that was at the peak of True Divinity, and only such a character would be able to simultaneously refine both these great worlds and take hold of that opportunity to step Beyond Divinity. If there was someone with a lower cultivation, then that would be too difficult.

“But... you are different. Not to mention that your strength, foundation, and mortal bodily have reached an inconceivable degree of formidability, but what is most important is that before refining the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe, you have already fused together the Holy Scripture and Heavenly Sutra, even managing to wound the avatar of the Demon God's Tomb Master with this!

"This is a boundary that Immortal and I yearned for in the past but were never able to reach! With your foundation and me putting in my full effort to help you, it is by no means impossible for you to jump ranks and refine the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe.

"Lin Ming… you should know that the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe contain not just the inheritances that Immortal and I left behind with all of our hearts and minds, but moreover, in the last 10 billion years, in the Law system that composes the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe, countless peerless talents of the 33 Heavens have ventured within!

"Their comprehensions, cultivation methods, inheritances, experiences, and even their destinies, were more or less recorded in the Laws systems of these two great worlds and accumulated for all this time. For 10 billion years this strength has been slowly gathering and had already reached an immeasurable degree. All of this has been prepared just for you!"

The Asura Road Master's words shocked the heart and mind. Lin Ming was left stunned. He knew that in these years, the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe had drawn in countless geniuses to enter their smelting trials. The Asura Road's numerous mystic realms, trial missions, final tests, the Akashic Dream Universe's golden pages, emperor carving, shrine platforms, various battlefields…

There was simply an innumerable number of smelting trial lands. And it was for this reason that these two great worlds established a variety of rewards for those that participated.

This was the reason why so many peerless geniuses within the 33 Heavens chased these trials, and also the reason why many great influences took the completion percentage within the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe as their ultimate standard in judging the potential and talent of a genius.

All of these things were plans that were long since prepared by the Asura Road Master and Immortal Sovereign. Not only did they do this to lift up and train their talented descendants within the 33 Heavens, but they also wanted to choose a descendant that possessed the ability to simultaneously refine these two great worlds. Moreover, they also planned to accumulate the Laws, destiny, and experiences of countless peerless geniuses to have the strength of the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe reach the peak!

All of these plans were ultimately created to resist the Demon God's Tomb Master!

This chess game spanned the heavens and earth and now it was reaching its grand finale. On one side stood the Demon God's Tomb Master, and on the other side stood Lin Ming. And behind Lin Ming also stood the Asura Road Master and Immortal Sovereign!

For 10 billion years, it was unknown how many generations had put in their full efforts, it was unknown how many masters of the 33 Heavens died in various battlefields, it was unknown how many geniuses entered the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe, and perhaps they perished, and perhaps they also became outstanding existences that achieved great things.

These people all had their own legends and stories. But the passing of years was ruthless and callous. These people eventually died, and even the jade slips that recorded their histories shattered to pieces. In the end, these people all became nothing but grains of sand in the endless flow of time.

However, it was exactly this endless sand that composed the history of the 33 Heavens!

This history might be glorious, it might be humiliating, it might be righteous, it might be filled with blood…

But no matter what, this history carried with it the will of all their ancestors. And that was to… carry onwards.

Slowly, ever so slowly, Lin Ming clenched his fists. This final fate all had to be shouldered by him! Every wisp of destiny that was marked in the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe, every single Law, everything contained the will and wishes of the countless ancestors that had preceded him, and this was something that would be carried forth by him!

He already sat in front of the chess game. There was no route to escape. All he could do was desperately fight and fight again!

“Lin Ming, it is time to begin. This period of seclusion will continue for a long, long time. At the start, I will be able to act as your protector, but in the final critical phase, I will have no choice but to put all my effort into helping you refine the two great worlds. At that time, I will not be able to divert much strength into protecting the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe. We must grasp the time before us and complete this before the Demon God’s Tomb Master finishes his own period of seclusion!

“First, you must perfect your nine revolutions of reincarnation as well as open the last Dao Palace of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace!”

After Lin Ming fused together the Heavenly Sutra and Holy Scripture, his comprehensions in the Holy Scripture Laws had reached heights no less than Sheng Mei’s. Now all he lacked was time.

As long as he had time, then with his current boundary he could complete his ninth reincarnation, passing through nine deaths and nine lives.

However… even though Lin Ming had these lofty goals and ideals in his heart, there were still gloomy clouds that muddled his thoughts.

The Asura Road Master sighed. “Lin Ming, I know you are worried about your wife, however… I am unable to leave the Asura Road, and your strength is insufficient to save her. All you can do is believe in her destiny and believe in her, and hope that she has another fortuitous encounter…”

The Asura Road Master understood what Lin Ming was thinking. However, this was the final step of a plan that had been laid out 10 billion years ago and also involved a final war that would involve all life in the 33 Heavens. In this situation, Lin Ming had no choice he could make.

“I understand…” Lin Ming grit his teeth as he spoke. Perhaps Sheng Mei really might have her own destiny. At the very least, she was still alive right now.

The Asura Road Master said, “This seclusion will continue for a long time. Refining two great worlds is not easy, and isn’t any simpler than the Demon God’s Tomb Master fusing together with the Demon God’s Tomb. So, this period of seclusion will far surpass anything you have ever experienced.

“Because this will continue for such a long time, there are some matters I will resolve for you. I will help you subdue the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign that you have sealed away so that he will faithfully follow your orders and protect your family. However, after I subdue him, his boundary will drop a great deal.

“There is also the remnant soul of an Empyrean deeply slumbering within your inner world. I will awaken and restore him, and will consider this as having completed the karmic ties between you two.

“The Black Dragon within your inner world, your children, your wives, the human leader Divine Dream, as well as all other overlords of the 33 Heavens with potential can enter the space of the final trial and undergo the final trial. They may even accept some of the inheritances left behind from ancient times within the Heavenly Dao rules of the two great worlds. To them, this will be a great lucky chance.”

The Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe had been laid out for ten billion years and now it was time for these two great worlds to display their true value. All the geniuses of the 33 Heavens, all of Lin Ming’s family and friends, they would all be able to obtain massive advantages!

It had to be known that 10 billion years ago, there were numerous True Divinities in the 33 Heavens. But in the current 33 Heavens the level of talent was withered and weak.

However, the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe gathered the destinies and accumulations of innumerable geniuses for the last 10 billion years. For the next several thousand years or even tens of thousands of years, all of these accumulations would be released so that the lives of the 33 Heavens would be able to soar to all new heights!

At that time, it wouldn’t be strange if crowds of True Divinities were to appear once again!

MW Chapter 2228

Chapter 2228 – The Times Change

…

…

…

Time passed. At the entrance of the Dark Abyss, Sheng Mei and Fishy had stayed together in the Amethyst Origin Crystal’s inner space for 30 years already.

Every now and then during these 30 years, Sheng Mei could feel energy passing from the Eternal Wall.

After the Soul Emperor left his energy within the Eternal Wall’s inner energy structure, it took root and began to germinate, tenaciously growing.

Sheng Mei didn’t know what method the Soul Emperor used, but the energy mark he planted actually wasn’t able to be recognized by the Eternal Wall. It grew like a malignant cancer, spreading outwards. If this continued then a small part of the Eternal Wall’s energy structure would fall under the control of the Soul Emperor. At that time, by joining forces within and without, the Eternal Wall would sooner or later fall.

After another five years, the Soul Emperor's energy mark exploded for the first time.

This matter occurred suddenly and without any hint at all. At the time, Sheng Mei was closed up in cultivation and Fishy was lackadaisically eating the energy crystals condensed in the amethyst space. But then, a sudden shaking within the amethyst space caused Sheng Mei to awaken from her meditation. These vibrations were far more violent than when the Soul Emperor first attempted to tear open the space channel.

Sheng Mei blanched. She reached out her sense to probe the Eternal Wall's situation, and her complexion became increasingly solemn.

During these years, Sheng Mei had managed to slowly flush out the various seals that the Soul Emperor had placed within her. After all, most of these seals only had short term effects, and with her strength she could always push them out of her body as long as she slowly erased them with her energy.

Now her strength had been restored to its peak state and she could clearly feel the internal state of the Eternal Wall's grand array formation.

The Soul Emperor had allowed his energy mark to grow for 30 years. What the Soul Emperor should have done just now was lay down a great array formation outside, and combined with this energy to explode it, blowing up a part of the Eternal Wall’s energy structure.

After the explosion, there was still a part of the Soul Emperor’s energy left within that would survive in the Eternal Wall’s array formation. This should be an attempt by the Soul Emperor to study the energy he left behind and how he could use it to completely break open the Eternal Wall.

“Fishy, the Eternal Wall cannot stop the Soul Emperor. He has studied the Eternal Wall for innumerable years, and now because of me, a flaw has appeared in this originally perfect wall. At the least we have a thousand years and at the most we have several thousand years, but the Eternal Wall will most certainly be shattered open by the Soul Emperor…”

Sheng Mei sighed. Even with Fishy’s sudden appearance she still wasn’t able to change her fate.

Fishy tilted her head, unsure of what to do. For these past 30 years, the two of them had spent their time within the Amethyst Origin Crystal together and they had extremely good sentiments towards each other. Since Fishy couldn’t figure out what to do, she simply held Sheng Mei’s hand to comfort her.

Holding Fishy’s hand, Sheng Mei wasn’t sure what she felt in her heart. She gently traced Fishy’s cheek and said with sadness, “Fishy, you tried to rescue big sister, but big sister only managed to drag you into this mess.”

Fishy grabbed Sheng Mei’s hand, saying, “It’s fine. Didn’t Big Sister say that we have several thousand years left? Perhaps there is still something we can do. If Big Sister can make another breakthrough, then we might be able to escape. And even if all our efforts come to nothing, that doesn’t matter anyways.”

Fishy earnestly said.

“Breakthrough…” Sheng Mei shook her head. In the Asura forbidden land she had fused with the remnant soul of her past life and had awakened the majority of her past memories. With it, she obtained many precious experiences, Laws, and cultivation methods.

These comprehensions and experiences needed time to be digested. If she were to go into seclusion for several thousand years then her strength would surely rise up to a whole new level.

If there wasn’t an accident, she could easily reach the peak of middle True Divinity and even the upper True Divinity boundary.

Even so, she wouldn’t be a match for the Soul Emperor. The Soul Emperor was simply too formidable; he was absolutely invincible amongst True Divinities!

“Fishy, are you afraid of dying?” Sheng Mei softly asked, looking into Fishy’s eyes.

Fishy shook her head. In truth, she had already lived for a long, long time, and there were many matters she couldn't remember from her glorious past. She didn't fear death; what she feared was loneliness and slowly forgetting the past.

"Mm… then listen to big sister. From this point on, big sister will go into seclusion to try and break through to the next boundary. As for you, you can begin saving your energy so that the Amethyst Origin Crystal is in its most powerful state.

"The Soul Emperor still needs a long period of time before he can open the Eternal Wall; we will have enough time to make preparations. And when the Soul Emperor opens the Eternal Wall, the truth is that this will be the Soul Emperor's weakest moment."

Sheng Mei knew that two of the Demon God's Tomb Master's avatars, Deep and Flood, should be staying in the Emperor Bone Sea to suppress the changes that were occurring there. Thus, they shouldn't be facing them.

As long as she faced the Soul Emperor alone then she was fine.

If the Soul Emperor was in his peak state, Sheng Mei was naturally far from being his match. But the moment that the Eternal Wall broke open, the Soul Emperor would surely have consumed a tremendous amount of energy.

When the Soul Emperor tried to open the Eternal Wall in the past, he had captured her as a blood sacrifice. And when he was carrying out the final ritual, he had dug out one of his ribs, combining his bone's blood essence with the array formation he laid down to complete the last steps.

Now the Soul Emperor didn't have Sheng Mei to use as a blood sacrifice and could only depend on the energy mark that he had planted in the Amethyst Origin Crystal. If he wanted to open the Eternal Wall using that then he might need to pay an even greater price.

If so, then this would be her only chance!

She would nurture her strength while biding her time. When she reached the peak of middle True Divinity, she would face the exhausted Soul Emperor and even have Fishy and the Amethyst Origin Crystal supporting her.

With the Amethyst Origin Crystal, she could give the Soul Emperor a disastrous blow!

This was Sheng Mei's plan. But, she also knew that the chances of her plan succeeding were near zero.

But no matter how unlikely her chances were, she still had to attempt it and put forth her full effort in doing so!

Because this was her last chance!

Although she might not be able to avoid her own death in the end, before she died she would tear off a chunk of meat from the Soul Emperor and heavily wound him once more. She might be able to delay his fusion with the Demon God's Tomb and give Lin Ming and Jiu'er a long period of time to grow stronger.

………..

Time flew forwards like an arrow, ruthless shooting towards one direction. Sometimes it was fast, sometimes it was slow, but it would never turn back.

Within the Asura Sea's Amethyst Heavenly Palace, the flow of time was sped up.

One year outside was equivalent to ten years within the Amethyst Heavenly Palace.

Upon reaching the boundary of the Asura Road Master, one could definitely create a perfect time enchantment where the Laws within weren't twisted and was still suitable for cultivating. Tragic Death Valley was one such example.

However, this increased pace of time didn't work for everything.

Lin Ming's cultivation of his reincarnations, his breakthrough in the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace, these things could be done within a time enchantment.

But to simultaneously refine the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe, this could not.

This was because fusing together the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe required a height of Laws that even surpassed the comprehensions of the Asura Road Master. In this situation, if the Asura Road Master wished to create a time enchantment and have its Laws continue in their originally perfect and complete state, that was just impossible.

Thus, when the time truly came for Lin Ming to refine the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe, time would pass at an equal speed to the outside world.

He would be placed in a race against time with the Soul Emperor!

At this time, in the Amethyst Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming had already experienced 5000 years. But only 500 years passed in the outside world.

For these 500 years, the human Empyreans and True Divinities did not idly waste their time away.

They had established a new base in the skies above the Asura Sea.

All important figures of humanity had moved to the Asura Sea. The outstanding individuals amongst them were able to enter the final trial.

The end times were approaching. Ink and Clear opened up all resources within the Asura Road's final trial, and how much one could obtain would depend on their respective abilities.

Afterwards, even the elites of the saints came to the Asura Sea.

Beneath the guidance of the current leader of the saints, Soaring Feather God King, many saint influences began to establish themselves in the Asura Sea. They created large array formations, opened their own minor worlds and brought in their Heavenly Palaces.

The geniuses of the saints – Fairy Blue Lotus, Highsun, Darkmoon, all entered the final trial to seek out their own lucky chances.

Everyone who entered the final trial was able to obtain their own corresponding completion percentage. These geniuses were all incredible individuals that possessed their own pride and arrogance. In particular, with two races living together, they all chased towards the highest completion percentage, pushing each other further up through competition.

Slowly, the Asura Sea became the core focal point of the children of the 33 Heavens. However, the humans and saints knew that these prosperous times couldn’t continue forever. Probably in 10,000 years or less, the great calamity would arrive.

Whether or not they could continue onwards or be annihilated here, everything would depend on the man deep in seclusion within the Amethyst Heavenly Palace.

He was the final bet of the 33 Heavens. And what he faced was a gamble he could not afford to lose.

MW Chapter 2229

Chapter 2229 – Unity

…

…

…

Whoosh!

A giant space gate appeared in the skies above the Asura Sea. It constantly expanded before finally fully opening.

As this space gate appeared, the waters of the Asura Sea began to rise in fierce and turbulent waves. The elites of the saints and humanity flew out amongst the great waves. Although each one was wounded, they were all in good spirits and beamed with smiles.

Another crowd of elites had completed their final trial.

They obtained treasures and inheritances from the final trial space. Compared to their original backgrounds, the rank of these new inheritances was completely disproportional, a gap as great as the heavens and earth.

“What is your completion percentage?” A young elite excitedly asked after just having left the final trial.

“Mine is 76%, what about you?”

“78%!”

“How fierce! I passed 75% this time and thought that was already amazing, but I never thought that Brother Zhou would have 78%. I’m really sweating with shame here!”

Several youths congratulated and flattered each other. Because they had all grown stronger, they were all in good moods. Even if others had surpassed them, they still sincerely praised them.

“Mm? That’s Senior-apprentice Sister Blue Lotus!”

A sharp-eyed youth saw a blue figure flash through the rising waves of the Asura Sea.

“That’s right, Senior-apprentice Sister Blue Lotus also reentered the final trial this time. This should be her third time entering the final trial!”

“I have no idea what result Senior-apprentice Sister Blue Lotus has. The last two times she underwent the final trial, her completion percentages were 87 and 88. Perhaps this time she was able to reach 90!”

“Senior-apprentice Sister Blue Lotus is amazing…”

Several youths discussed together. As they did, several other surrounding individuals also began to chime in. When it came to the saints, Fairy Blue Lotus had an extremely high level of fame and prestige. Originally, the slightly older Good Fortune Saint Son had been able to suppress Fairy Blue Lotus, but now that the Good Fortune Saint Son had died, Fairy Blue Lotus naturally became the ‘Elder Senior Sister’ to every saint race junior.

As these words of praise fell into Fairy Blue Lotus’s ears, they actually felt incomparably grating.

She stopped in her steps and turned towards that group of youths. “Just what nonsense are you speaking? Hurry up and go train! Do you think that it is amazing if you just entered the final trial and obtained a completion percentage in the seventies? Compared to 10,000 years ago, the difficulty of the final trial has already dropped by a great deal, and yet with such an easy difficulty you still cannot obtain at least 80!”

Fairy Blue Lotus's voice was cold like ice, causing these boisterously chattering youths to shrink back. All of them didn't dare to speak anymore.

Indeed, in order to help the human and saint elites obtain a higher completion percentage, Ink and Clear had deliberately lowered the difficulty of the final trial by a little bit.

Even so, Fairy Blue Lotus wasn't able to obtain a 90% completion. During this final trial her completion percent was 89, just 1% off from reaching 90.

But, to overcome this 1% was not easy at all!

Fairy Blue Lotus also knew that when Lin Ming first entered the final trial, his completion percent was 92.

In the past, Lin Ming was also only at the Divine Lord realm!

The Divine Lord realm was not a suitable realm for participating in the final trial. Afterwards, Lin Ming completed his Grand Reincarnation Art and came to the final trial again. Due to the emperor jades, he perfectly completed the final trial and reached 100%.

Fairy Blue Lotus didn't possess the emperor jades so it was naturally impossible for her to achieve 100%. But in a situation where the difficulty had already been suppressed, it left her saddened that she still couldn't achieve 90%.

She estimated that if she were to come to the final trial 10,000 years ago, then with the difficulty of that time her own completion percentage would be several points lower.

“Lin Huang’s completion percent has reached 92; he has set a new record.”

A deep and sonorous voice echoed out near Fairy Blue Lotus’s ears. She turned to see a large fellow flying towards her with a petite girl sitting on his shoulders.

They were the brother and sister pair, Highsun and Darkmoon.

These two individuals had a completion percent that was 5 points lower than Fairy Blue Lotus’s.

“92%…” Fairy Blue Lotus wasn’t surprised. The first one to break past 90% was Lin Huang.

Fairy Blue Lotus had watched Lin Huang’s training these past years. People said that Lin Huang was the son of Lin Ming and Xiao Moxian and simultaneously possessed the rare Asura bloodline and God Beast bloodlines; there was no need to speak of his talent. He also had an incredible amount of resources to freely utilize as well as the ability to study any peak inheritances he so desired. With such strength, a high completion percentage was what he should have achieved. If he were to be surpassed by others then he really would be seen as a joke.

However, Fairy Blue Lotus knew that Lin Huang’s progress relied on not just his talent but also his own hard work.

He had always maintained the title of being the number one figure of the younger generation and people would always praise him from behind, saying that he was ‘worthy of being Lin Ming’s son’. But, these results were all due to his unceasing training from childhood to adulthood, and had been exchanged with innumerable life and death battles.

To withstand such pressure wasn’t easy even for Lin Huang.

Fairy Blue Lotus turned to see Lin Huang flying away from the turbulent waves. She couldn’t help but sympathize with him.

“Big Brother! I’m going to the Great Desolate, do you want to go!”

At this time, a giant Black Dragon flew into the skies above the Asura Sea. With its two wings extended outwards, it nearly blocked out the sun and skies.

A black-clothed young girl rode atop the Black Dragon’s neck, waving towards Lin Huang.

She was Lin Ming and Sheng Mei's daughter – Jiu'er.

Seeing Jiu'er, Fairy Blue Lotus sighed with emotion. When Jiu'er first entered the final trial her completion rate was only 80%; this result couldn't be considered too high.

Jiu'er was different from Lin Huang. She had been accompanied by Lin Ming and Sheng Mei growing up and had obtained the best guidance from them. When Lin Ming and Sheng Mei broke into True Divinity, she had also been baptized with their Laws. However, what Jiu'er lacked was actual combat experience. Although her perception was astonishingly high and her cultivation progressed rapidly, her strength was actually somewhat lacking.

Like flowers grown in a greenhouse, although they were beautiful when they bloomed within, they weren't able to withstand the harsh winds and rains of the outside.

The originally mischievous and lazy Jiu'er saw her own completion percentage and silently departed for the Great Desolate.

She trained in the Great Desolate, fighting desperately with the vicious beasts there!

No one knew what Jiu'er experienced in the Great Desolate. All they knew was that after a short hundred years she returned, and when she reentered the final trial once more, her completion percent had reached 87.

Such a rate of growth was astonishing.

Fairy Blue Lotus knew that even though Jiu’er often smiled and appeared happy, the truth was that her burdens were no less than Lin Huang’s.

Jiu’er originally had a playful personality, but that changed when her mother was captured by the Soul Emperor so many years ago. Although it was said that her mother as still alive, she feared that her situation wasn’t too optimistic, otherwise she would have returned already.

Jiu’er’s silent efforts were all for her mother!

“Jiu’er, I have no need to go. As the Great Desolate stands, there is nothing there that can challenge me. You go by yourself and be careful. Don’t try to show off. Jiu’er, what is your completion percent this time?”

“I just reached 90…” Jiu’er said, a bit depressed. But as this voice fell into the ears of others, including Fairy Blue Lotus, it left them feeling somewhat depressed.

From 80 to 87, then from 87 to 90, Jiu’er’s speed of progression was too terrifying!

After all, the final trial was not a test of one’s strength but of one’s talent and potential.

If a martial artist grew stronger their completion percentage wouldn’t necessarily become higher. Instead, because of one’s increased age, their completion percentage might fall instead. But for Jiu’er, because she was growing stronger far beyond her age, this was the reason why her completion percentage would rise by ten whole points.

If it were anyone else, they would already be thanking the heavens and earth for an increase of 1-2 percentage points in a thousand years.

And it seemed that Jiu’er’s potential had yet to be fully unearthed. Later on, it would be possible for Jiu’er to obtain a 95% completion.

“Big Brother, I’m leaving first then!” Jiu’er slapped the Black Dragon’s back. The Black Dragon flapped its wings and shot up into the skies. Even the clouds above were blown away by the violent winds.

Lin Huang looked at Jiu’er’s back and a faint smile appeared on his lips. He watched as Jiu’er left and then turned to fly into the Asura Sea.

During this venture into the final trial he had gained some enlightenments and needed to go to the Amethyst Heavenly Palace.

The Amethyst Heavenly Palace was also where Lin Ming had gone into seclusion.

Lin Ming's cultivation could not be disturbed and no one was allowed to take a step into the Amethyst Heavenly Palace; they could only cultivate around it.

If one cultivated here they would fall under the 1:10 time enchantment and save a great deal of time.

Divine Dream, Emperor Shakya, Astral Vault, Soaring Feather, as well as numerous human and saint Empyreans all cultivated here.

MW Chapter 2230

Chapter 2230 – Changes

…

…

…

The truth was that 10,000 years ago before the great catastrophe arrived, whether it was humans or saints, they slacked on their cultivation after reaching the Empyrean realm.

The first reason was because the Empyrean realm was far too distant from the True Divinity realm. Even if they cultivated diligently their efforts were likely to come to nothing.

The second reason was because their resources and inheritances were lacking. 10 billion years ago when the martial arts civilization of the 33 Heavens was at its most glorious and prosperous times, it was far less difficult for an Empyrean to reach True Divinity, and many True Divinity influences would help those with potential complete this final step as long as they put in their due diligence.

But afterwards, when the various races of the 33 Heavens fell into steep decline, the total number of True Divinities within the 33 Heavens could be counted on two hands and this was divided amongst the different races. In this situation, if an Empyrean wished to cultivate to True Divinity they would basically have to rely on themselves, and no matter how much effort they put in, their work wouldn't come to fruition.

But the present was different. Around the Amethyst Heavenly Palace, there was the personal teachings of Ink and Clear. Moreover, in these past years all of the Asura Road Master's accumulated resources, everything that the previous guardians of the Asura Road had collected, it was all taken out without reserve for the many Empyreans and True Divinities to use.

There was no need to speak of cultivation method inheritances. Not to mention the vast accumulation of inheritances gathered in the Asura Road, the various human and saint influences also put forth their own inheritances so that everyone could share and exchange.

Inheritances were indeed precious, if one's race didn't even exist, what was the point of defending these inheritances so fastidiously?

With all of these factors added together, the martial artists of humanity and the saints began to cultivate with an unprecedented level of heated enthusiasm. Naturally, their cultivation speed also rose by a great deal. There were even some outstanding individuals who had high hopes of breaking into True Divinity.

This was the True Divinity boundary! Once, it had been nothing but a wistful dream that that could only look on from afar, but now that they realized they could break through these shackles and attain it themselves, how could they not be excited?

As the human and saint race Empyreans put forth their full hearts and minds into cultivation, Jiu'er had already ridden the great Black Dragon into the skies above the Great Desolate.

Jiu'er held onto the Black Dragon's neck. Facing the howling desert winds, her long black hair flew about her like strands of silk.

The blood red glow from the sun covered her skin like an intoxicating blush. But beneath that blush, her delicate face was filled with a grim and hardened determination.

"Little Black, fly into the deeps!" Jiu'er shouted out loud.

Ao - !

The Black Dragon roared. Its two wings stretched out as it cut through the skyline. One girl, one dragon, the two of them soared through the fire-red clouds, slowly blending into the crimson setting sun and disappearing from sight. All that was left over was the distant howl of the dragon, echoing into the horizon for a long time.

………

Time passed, marching forwards without pause.

Ever since Lin Ming began his seclusion, 2800 years had passed. No one knew what Lin Ming's situation was but they didn't dare to waste time in their cultivation.

And at this time, a great change was occurring within the spiritas. Overnight, the entire spiritas race descended into chaos. Two spiritas True Divinities led ten peak Empyreans to go to the Dark Abyss.

As this news spread out, the human and saint martial artists felt their hearts sink.

In the past the leader of the spiritas had his body seized. Then, the Demon God's Tomb Master appeared with the identity of the Soul Emperor to rule over the spiritas. The several strongest masters of the spiritas race were controlled by the Soul Emperor, and if it wasn't for the Soul Emperor being limited in the number of people that he could control, then he likely would have taken control of every Empyrean amongst the spiritas.

The changes occurring amongst the spiritas left a dark cloud of gloom hovering over their hearts. This was especially true for the spiritas martial artists. For instance… Empyrean Divine Mist.

Empyrean Divine Mist had awoken around the time that Lin Ming went into seclusion. Then, he began restoring his soul around the Heavenly Amethyst Palace and now his soul had become increasingly stable. He came from the Asura Road but when he learned of the changes occurring within the spiritas of the 33 Heavens, he still sighed deeply with emotion. In these chaotic times, what would the future of the spiritas be?

“Divine Mist, in these past years your soul has become stable enough with the aid of appropriate soul recovery items. At the time, Young Master had instructed us that after your soul has stabilized, we should give you an appropriate body and also help you seize it!”

After Lin Ming went into seclusion to refine two great worlds, Ink and Clear had already changed the way they called Lin Ming to Young Master.

Empyrean Divine Mist had shown graciousness to Lin Ming in the past. And since it was impossible for Lin Ming to reform Divine Mist’s mortal body, he could only help him seize a similar one.

After seizing a body there would be many drawbacks, but it was still much better than remaining a soul form.

“You have two choices. One is Soul Emperor Divine Void! And the other is the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign!”

Ink and Clear's words caused Empyrean Divine Mist's heart to shake. These two bodies were both at the True Divinity level, in particular the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign – he had reached the peak of True Divinity!

Soul Emperor Divine Void was Divine Mist's enemy. A hundred years ago, Ink and Clear had captured Soul Emperor Divine Void and had sealed up his spiritual sea and cultivation.

As for the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, there was even less to mention. After his great battle with Lin Ming he had suffered severe losses and also had his avatar of Famine and Grandmist Spirit Bead taken away. His cultivation boundary had dropped one level, and after being controlled by the Asura Road Master, his cultivation dropped even further. Now, he was somewhere between an upper and middle True Divinity.

Originally it would have been impossible for Divine Mist to seize the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's body. But, because the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's soul had been controlled, it was not possible for Divine Mist to slowly refine the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's spiritual sea.

After listening to Ink and Clear's words, Divine Mist sighed. He said, "I will choose to seize the body of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign… as for Divine Void, let him go…"

After so many years passed, the hatred in Divine Mist's heart had already faded away, becoming a shadow of what it had been.

With the great calamity imminent, Divine Mist didn't want to sentence a master who was on the side of the 33 Heavens to death, just because of some past enmity. In fact, this was also hard for Ink and Clear.

"Good!" Ink and Clear faintly smiled. "Then we will assist you in seizing the body. After you seize his body it will require you a great deal of time to thoroughly refine the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign's divine soul. Even when you manage to do so, it will be impossible to further increase your boundary in the future. Do you understand all of this?"

"Mm." Divine Mist calmly said. To be able to obtain a mortal body and also one that was so formidable, he no longer had any wild dreams. If it weren't for him luckily meeting Lin Ming in the past within Tragic Death Valley, he feared he would have long since exhausted himself and died.

…………

Three years later, some spiritas martial artists also arrived at the Asura Sea.

Ink and Clear welcomed all of these new arrivals.

Slowly, three thousand years passed from when Lin Ming entered seclusion. From this point on, beneath the planning of Ink and Clear, the mortals and low level martial artists of the Asura Road began to evacuate.

Everything was being done in preparation for the final war that would occur once Lin Ming left seclusion. And in the Dark Abyss, Sheng Mei and Fishy were also preparing for their final stand.

Three thousand years ago the Eternal Wall had already started to break apart. Horrifying cracks appeared in the boundless black earth. These cracks were like the maws of wild beasts, capable of swallowing everything into the endless abyss.

The Soul Emperor stood above the devastated and cracked earth, his hair scattered and his filthy eyes overflowing with killing intent…

MW Chapter 2231

Chapter 2231 – The Eternal Wall Breaks

…

…

…

The Eternal Wall had already sealed away the Dark Abyss for 10 billion years, like a peerless vicious beast that was chained down with heavy chains. Because of these chains, the Soul Emperor's avatar had been separated from reuniting with the other avatars. For all these years the Eternal Wall was a great stone that pressed down on the Soul Emperor, leaving him gasping for breath.

Today, this great stone would finally be broken.

Once that occurred, the 33 Heavens would link back together with the Dark Abyss and all lives in existence would be within his control. He would rule the world for a hundred billion years, a trillion years!

The Soul Emperor wanted to fuse with the Demon God’s Tomb and the Demon God’s Tomb was like an ancient great beast with an incomparably greedy and horrifying appetite. In order to make the Demon God’s Tomb an eternal existence that would grow ever stronger, able to resist the great Shattering of the universe several times over, then the Soul Emperor needed to give the Demon God’s Tomb enough nourishment.

And just the Dark Abyss was not enough!

With the bountiful 33 Heavens, the abyssals could grow stronger and produce more and more descendants. And, the native peoples of the 33 Heavens could be taken as captives and reared to become alternative nourishment!

3000 years had passed and the energy storms in the skies above the Eternal Wall had already come to a stop. After destroying a part of the Eternal Wall’s energy structure, the Soul Emperor was able to set up a large array formation to sever the connection between the world’s energy and the Eternal Wall.

“Let it begin!”

The Soul Emperor revealed a maniacal laugh. He smashed his chest and spat out a mouthful of blood essence. Then, with his blood as the ink, he began to draw a totem upon the cracked earth of the Eternal Wall.

The land was already marked with vicious and fierce cracks. As the Soul Emperor's blood essence passed through these cracks, it floated upwards, as if it were a drawing within the void.

As the Soul Emperor started to draw this grand array his complexion became increasingly pale. 3000 years ago in his battle against Lin Ming, the Soul Emperor had gone from the appearance of a youth to that of a withered man in the fading years of his life. It was clear that this battle had done a considerable amount of damage to the Soul Emperor.

So many years had passed and the Soul Emperor still hadn't recovered. His body was as thin and gaunt as firewood and his eyes were like dying embers. Now, as he was using his blood essence as ink to draw up this great array diagram, it made him look like a terminally ill old man, about to die at any moment.

"Fishy… it's begun…"

Within the Eternal Wall, Sheng Mei awakened from her meditation. Her eyes shimmered in the dark, seeming to see through the layers of amethyst walls and seeing the array diagram that the Soul Emperor was drawing up.

"The energy has started to become chaotic. The Soul Emperor is burning his blood essence to make the final preparations."

The Eternal Wall was already riddled with cracks and flaws. The Soul Emperor’s strength could easily seep through the ground into the nearby Amethyst Origin Crystal, thus Sheng Mei could clearly feel him.

“Mm!”

Fishy nodded. For these last 3000 years she hadn’t been idling about either. Although she wasn’t suited for cultivating the martial arts Laws of the 33 Heavens, she still continued to train herself so that her divine soul would fuse together more perfectly with the Amethyst Origin Crystal. This made it easier for her to control the Amethyst Origin Crystal, making it nearly her instinct.

Whether it was Fishy or Sheng Mei, they had spent these million days and nights constantly preparing for this last struggle!

Success or failure, life or death, all would come down to this final bet!

“Are you afraid?”

Sheng Mei gently smoothed Fishy’s bangs, her heart aching. She didn’t want this naïve and kindhearted Fishy to be involved in this sort of life or death battle. And, she also knew that in this struggle against the Soul Emperor, their chances of winning were nearly zero.

The best case situation was that they would be able to flee with their lives. But as Sheng Mei recalled all of the Soul Emperor's innumerable methods, she felt her heart sink. To merely escape from this old demon would be a task fraught with countless sufferings and dangers!

Sheng Mei had already prepared for the worst possible scenario. When she determined she was unable to escape, she would leave the amethyst space and burn her life in its entirely, completely exploding.

With her peak middle True Divinity cultivation and her combat efficiency that would allow her to kill a peak True Divinity master, then if she were to explode herself in front of the Soul Emperor she could surely cause heavy losses to him!

Sheng Mei didn't think she would be able to kill the Soul Emperor, but she might be able to win a slim chance of survival for Fishy.

In these past years Sheng Mei had learned of Fishy and Lin Ming's experiences together. She sincerely felt love and affection for this little girl and her bizarre upbringing. She didn't want her to die because of her own troubles.

Bang!

The amethyst space suddenly shook. The energy structure began to fracture and burst apart. Cracks spread throughout the Eternal Wall like a spider’s web – it would soon break apart.

Sheng Mei remained calm as if she didn’t feel anything at all. Since she had already firmed her determination, then even if the Soul Emperor were to directly enter the amethyst space and stand before her, she still wouldn’t fear anything.

Bang!

The space suddenly shook again. Violent explosions seethed and surged outside the amethyst space. Even if Sheng Mei didn’t use her sense, she could still imagine how terrifying the waves of energy were outside!

This was a grand array formation that the Soul Emperor had formed using his blood essence. By gathering the strength of the world of the Demon God’s Tomb as well as the heaven and earth origin energy of the Dark Abyss, he was launching his final strike against the Eternal Wall!

The sounds of explosions became increasingly loud and dense. From above, the array formation that the Soul Emperor created was like a giant and evil eye that floated above the blackened earth.

This eyes constantly eroded away at the land, as if it would swallow it all.

The waves of energy became increasingly fierce. Sheng Mei sensed that an irresistible strength was slowly tearing open the Eternal Wall – it wanted to forcefully pull out the core of the Eternal Wall, the Amethyst Origin Crystal!

The connection between the Amethyst Origin Crystal and Eternal Wall was being forcibly drawn apart. At this moment Sheng Mei's sense of time became incredibly slow. In the turbulent chaos all around her, she had to grasp hold of that fleeting opportunity!

Sheng Mei had already fused together with the memories of her previous life and the Eternal Wall was also laid down with the joint efforts of the Asura Road Master and her previous life. Because of this, Sheng Mei had a clear understanding into the energy structure of the Eternal Wall and she could also make use of this energy. Otherwise, by relying on just her and Fishy, it would be difficult to cause heavy damage to the Soul Emperor.

As the Eternal Wall broke apart more and more, violent currents of energy gushed out towards Sheng Mei and Fishy! The Amethyst Origin Crystal was like a boat that was being smashed by giant waves in the sea, and had completely lost its anchoring with the Eternal Wall.

"Now is the time – attack!"

Sheng Mei's eyes flashed with a cold brilliance. All of her strength erupted at once. Fishy didn't hesitate as she went all-out. Joining together with Sheng Mei, the two of them took control of the Amethyst Origin Crystal and attacked the Soul Emperor!

With Sheng Mei's strength and Fishy as the medium, the two joined with the Amethyst Origin Crystal, allowing its speed to reach the peak!

The void between Sheng Mei and the Soul Emperor was flooded with a horrifying pressure and wild waves of energy. But, this pressure couldn't stop the path of the Amethyst Origin Crystal.

Surrounded by this pressure, if one was familiar with the Eternal Wall's energy structure and could make full use of the Laws, they could even use this pressure to increase their strength and enhance the impact force of the Amethyst Origin Crystal!

This was like a person using strength to grab hold of a slippery bar of soap. The more strength they used the greater the pressure would be and the faster the soap would fly out of their hands.

And the current Sheng Mei and Fishy were like this. Not only did they pour in all of their strength but they also borrowed the world strength that gushed out from the torn Eternal Wall, all in order to initiate this final fatal strike against the Soul Emperor!

Seeing the Amethyst Origin Crystal hurtle towards him, the Soul Emperor wasn't surprised at all. He sneered, "You are someone I raised myself, how could I not know your thoughts!"

The Soul Emperor knew that Sheng Mei wouldn't idly sit around and wait for death in her final moments.

He had already sealed away a portion of his strength in his body. The reason he did so was to deal with Sheng Mei's desperate counterattack after he drew his grand array formation and fell to his weakest state.

Peng!

Energy erupted from within the Soul Emperor's body. The Soul Emperor's palm came crashing down upon the Amethyst Origin Crystal!

In that moment, the strength locked within the Soul Emperor's body was unsealed. From the Soul Emperor's hand, a black vortex appeared. The world strength of the Demon God's Tomb came roaring out!

Bang!

The energy flow violently collided with the Amethyst Origin Crystal and exploded. It was like giant blood red lotuses were blooming atop the Eternal Wall.

The Eternal Wall was thoroughly torn apart, turned into countless fragments.

And in this titanic wave of energy, the Amethyst Origin Crystal was sent flying away. Within the amethyst space, Sheng Mei bore the brunt of the energy impact and spat out a mouthful of blood. Beside her, Fishy also paled.

The Soul Emperor had already been prepared for their final desperate strike. And although it had been difficult for the Soul Emperor to withstand this blow, the damage to Sheng Mei and Fishy was even greater!

MW Chapter 2232

Chapter 2232 – A Different World

…

…

…

One’s fighting spirit was aroused by the first call, faded by the second, and then exhausted by the third. If the first strike wasn’t able to heavily wound the Soul Emperor then the following battle would become far more difficult!

“You have really left me surprised…”

In the distant void, the Soul Emperor’s hair was scattered all about him. A macabre smile spread across his features. In these years of seclusion Sheng Mei’s strength had risen by an astronomical degree. In addition to Fishy and the Purple Card, when they gathered all of their potential to attack together, even though the Soul Emperor was prepared he had still been injured.

The arm he used to block the Purple Card had already broken and was now hanging limp at a strange angle. But although the Soul Emperor had been wounded, a happy expression spread wildly across his face.

“I expected you to take advantage of my weakest moment to risk your life in a desperate attack, but I didn’t expect your strike to be so powerful. You have progressed far too quickly. In the past I only wanted to train you to open the Eternal Wall, but I never imagined I would create such a perfect work of art. If you didn’t betray me, just how wonderful would that have been?”

The Soul Emperor’s voice overflowed with killing intent. Although he thought it was a pity that he would have to destroy Sheng Mei, he didn’t have any intention of showing mercy or forgiveness.

And, ruining the most perfect thing could also bring him pleasure.

Ka ka ka!

The Soul Emperor’s broken arm was rapidly regenerating.

At the same time, beneath the Soul Emperor, the Eternal Wall continued to break down and explode. Violent flows of energy smashed into his body, but the Soul Emperor seemed mindless of it all. His gaze and sense were still completely locked onto the Amethyst Origin

Crystal that was not too far away. He knew that Sheng Mei still had strength remaining and wouldn't give up here; she would continue attacking.

But her attacks wouldn't have any great effect on him.

This was the disparity between their boundaries.

The Soul Emperor moved towards the Amethyst Origin Crystal, one step at a time. With the Soul Emperor as the center, a force field projection of the Demon God's Tomb shot out, blocking the surrounding void.

Bang!

The explosions all around the Soul Emperor became increasingly fierce and crazy. Beneath his feet, the Eternal Wall was falling downwards. Without the support of the force field, the dark earth collapsed beneath its own weight. It began to fall into the Dark Abyss in massive chunks. This apocalyptic sight was as if the end of times had come!

A terrifying energy erupted from the Eternal Wall. Originally, the Eternal Wall was linked together with the void. And now because the Eternal Wall had collapsed, a massive chunk of space was torn apart and an unexpected scene occurred.

A spatial fissure over a thousand miles long appeared after the space tore. And within this spatial fissure, the aura of the world was hazy and ethereal, as if… it were a completely different world.

“Mm?”

Seeing this massive spatial fissure, the Soul Emperor was stunned.

This is…

This world was clearly different from the world of the Demon God’s Tomb, and the Soul Emperor also felt that this wasn’t the 33 Heavens.

Such a world was hiding within the Dark Abyss? How could this be possible?

But at the same time, as Sheng Mei saw this within the amethyst space, tumultuous waves rose up in her heart.

She had seen this piece of world before!

She didn’t know what this world was or where it had come from. But over 10,000 years ago, she had discovered the entrance to this world by accident.

Within this world, all rules were different. These rules seemed completely independent from the system that constituted the 33 Heavens and Dark Abyss.

In truth, the Dark Abyss and 33 Heavens came from the same roots. The Dark Abyss was the predecessor of the 33 Heavens, the remains of the previous universal era. From this aspect, the two worlds were originally one body.

But this other world was actually completely different!

Sheng Mei didn't know why the entrance to such a world would appear in the Dark Abyss nor did she know what it was. After she accidentally discovered this world, she hid away this secret.

This world's mysterious Laws caused Sheng Mei to have a foreboding feeling the first time she saw it.

That was... she felt that the entrance to this world only went one way, and after leaving to enter this world, there was no coming back.

Sheng Mei's original plan was to use this world as her escape route. If her contradictions with the Soul Emperor truly rose to an irreconcilable level, then she would simply leave. At that time, Sheng Mei hadn't known of her dark and dire fate, nor did she know what the Soul Emperor was planning to do with her. Although she and the Soul Emperor were like water and fire, that wasn't a good enough reason for her to flee to a different world which she wouldn't be able to return from.

But afterwards, Sheng Mei discovered that the entrance to this world was slowly closing. It wouldn't be long before it completely disappeared...

Thus, she mentioned this world to someone, and that person was... Lin Ming!

12,000 years ago, Lin Ming was at the Holy Lord realm. He had just defeated the Good Fortune Saint Son and humanity would soon face a great war with the saints.

In order to save humanity, Lin Ming ventured out in all directions in search of all possibilities. He even held onto the faintest glimmer of hope that he could come to the Soul World to look for Sheng Mei and negotiate with her. If possible, humanity could ally with the spiritas to deal with a 'common enemy' in the saints.

At that time, Sheng Mei already knew the truth that the Soul Emperor was an abyssal. In her eyes, humanity's war with the saints was basically meaningless, and even weak. And as she saw Lin Ming toiling so hard for a race that didn't have any ability to resist the great calamity they were about to suffer, she simply sighed. She sympathized greatly with Lin Ming and even felt... pity.

Lin Ming asked why Sheng Mei sighed, and her reply was – “Sighing for your destiny.”

Lin Ming was puzzled. However, Sheng Mei didn’t fully explain anything to him. Instead, she simply asked him whether or not he wanted to follow her to some place. They wouldn’t go to the Divine Realm nor would they go to the Soul World. Once they left, they would go for a hundred million years!

The so-called hundred million years was in truth a lifetime. They would go far away from the great vortex of the great calamity, leaving everything behind so that they could pursue the road of martial arts with all their hearts.

At that time, Sheng Mei still had her own ambitions. She hoped that one day she would be able to step Beyond Divinity and create her own world.

She thought that Lin Ming was a suitable companion as he had enough talent to grow to such heights. If they could cultivate to the peak of martial arts together then they could imitate the Immortal Sovereign and his wife from 10 billion years ago, stepping Beyond Divinity together.

Moreover, once they went to that mysterious world that was about to be sealed up, they could rid themselves of the Soul Emperor’s control just like that, completing everything in a single swoop!

Of course, going to a completely unknown world already meant tremendous risks. These risks didn’t come from the original dangers of that world, but whether or not that world was suitable for them to cultivate.

But, when Sheng Mei asked Lin Ming, his reply had actually been…

Refusal.

Sheng Mei wasn’t surprised. She believed that her and Lin Ming’s fate would end there, and if they met in the future it would only be as enemies.

She never thought that all sorts of things would happen between her and Lin Ming in the future, and the two of them would even have a daughter…

Life was like a dream and perhaps fate was already an established road. But for those that continued to look forwards into the future, everything still seemed too inconceivable and incredible…

All of these thoughts instantly flashed through Sheng Mei’s mind. In the next moment, she instantly sent Fishy a sound transmission.

“We’re rushing over! Give everything we have and fly into that world!”

MW Chapter 2233

Chapter 2233 – The Soul Emperor Returns

…

…

…

Hearing Sheng Mei’s shout in her ears, Fishy didn’t hesitate. She immediately poured the entirety of her strength into the Amethyst Origin Crystal.

Chi - !

The Amethyst Origin Crystal flared up with a blazing divine light; it flew straight towards that other world.

The Soul Emperor’s eyes flashed with a cold light. Just now he had been immersed in surprise at the appearance of such a mysterious world. Why would such a strange world be in the Dark Abyss? But as he saw Sheng Mei about to escape, how could he allow them to do as they wished?

Bang!

The Soul Emperor’s world strength transformed into a giant black hand that grasped towards the Amethyst Origin Crystal!

At this time, Sheng Mei was already in desperate straits, recklessly pushing forwards. This was her last chance!

To defeat the Soul Emperor in a frontal battle was naturally impossible, and trying to flee from his grasp was also a mission with innumerable difficulties and risks. But, if it were only to fly into a space crack that was 10,000 feet away, that was far easier.

“Hold!”

The Soul Emperor’s palm thrust outwards. All around him, the Demon God’s Tomb force field tightened up. The black hand grasped onto the Amethyst Origin Crystal!

The energy collision caused the Amethyst Origin Crystal to wildly tremble. The impact force that spread through caused Sheng Mei to shake and spit out a mouthful of blood.

However at this moment, she didn’t care about this at all. Disregarding all consequences, she overdrew her blood vitality, overdrew her life, and continued to hurtle towards the entrance to that other world!

Chi chi chi!

The Amethyst Origin Crystal began to spin. Its edges were as sharp as knives as it split open the black hand of world strength created by the Soul Emperor.

Although the Soul Emperor’s world strength was formidable, the Amethyst Origin Crystal was actually the ultimate nemesis for all forms of energy. At this time, the Amethyst Origin Crystal was cutting through that black hand with unstoppable force!

“What!?”

The Soul Emperor was shocked. He disregarded his exhaustion and consumed a massive amount of world strength to send a palm reaching out for the Amethyst Origin Crystal, but this attack was still cut apart. It was like the Amethyst Origin Crystal was a heated blade of iron and his attack was a chunk of fat, directly pierced through, impossible to block!

Whoosh!

The Amethyst Origin Crystal sank into the entrance to that different world. It rapidly flew into the space storms that roiled within and vanished from sight.

The Soul Emperor was stunned. He thought that the might of the Amethyst Origin Crystal had slightly exceeded his expectations.

10 billion years ago, the Soul Emperor had fought with the Asura Road Master and had encountered the Amethyst Origin Crystal. At that time, the Amethyst Origin Crystal hadn't seemed too terrifying.

Was it possible that in the 10 billion years that the Amethyst Origin Crystal had been the incarnation of the Eternal Wall, there had been some sort of change to it due to the massive accumulation of energy?

Or, could it be that 10 billion years ago when the past life of Sheng Mei sacrificed herself and poured her strength into the Amethyst Origin Crystal, her actions had served as a catalyst to hasten this change?

All sorts of theories passed through the Soul Emperor's heart. He could feel that the Amethyst Origin Crystal had likely evolved somehow. If Sheng Mei hid in the Amethyst Origin Crystal and tried to flee with all her might, it would indeed not be easy to keep her here.

If it were the Dark Abyss then he would have a much greater assurance. But in this different world…

The Soul Emperor looked at that gradually shrinking entrance that seemed as if it would soon disappear. He hesitated for a moment and finally chose not to chase after them…

This different world caused the Soul Emperor to feel particularly strange. The space storms within were far fiercer than those in the Dark Abyss and the entrance seemed as if it would vanish at any time. Going to this different world would be easy, but to capture Sheng Mei and return safely before the entrance vanished might not be possible.

The Soul Emperor estimated that if he wanted to capture Sheng Mei he would need to expend a considerable amount of effort. If things went smoothly it would take an hour, and if things didn't go smoothly then no one knew how long it would take.

If he were to enter this different world and the entrance vanished before he captured Sheng Mei, then could he return?

The Soul Emperor wasn't confident he could do this.

Whether it was the 33 Heavens or Dark Abyss, the Soul Emperor was fully confident he could freely wander about as he wished. But to go into a completely different world that had never been discovered before, there were just too many uncertainties involved. He might lose track of the space coordinates in this different world and be unable to find his way back.

“I never thought that something like this would occur… it seems that the heavens haven’t yet abandoned you…” The Soul Emperor took a deep breath. Although he was filled with unwillingness, he decided to give up his pursuit of Sheng Mei.

The appearance of this different world should have happened because of the shattering the Eternal Wall. The energy that had accumulated for 10 billion years erupted all at once, piercing through space and making this entrance visible.

However, the Soul Emperor thought that this might be Sheng Mei’s destiny. If fate truly existed, then with Sheng Mei’s destiny her life shouldn’t come to an end.

In this situation where he had to go to a completely unknown different world to chase down Sheng Mei who had such a great destiny upon her, this wouldn’t be the wise action to take, especially since the Soul Emperor had so many other matters to attend to.

Slowly, that giant space fissure that spread out for over a thousand miles shrank to several miles in length. Then, after a mere 10 breaths of time, it completely vanished.

From beginning to end, Sheng Mei and the Amethyst Origin Crystal didn’t reappear.

The Soul Emperor sensed that after the entrance to this different world was sealed up, it wouldn't be easy for Sheng Mei to return. She might be forever trapped in this different world.

Although his heart was filled with simmering resentment, he didn't delay any further. He flew directly into the depths of the Dark Abyss.

Besides the Soul Emperor, his other two avatars were still in the Dark Abyss. Now that the Eternal Wall had disappeared after so many years of effort, he had to take advantage of this time to fuse together with the Demon God's Tomb and also deal with the nearly collapsed Emperor Bone Sea. With so many matters to deal with, he couldn't afford to delay!

Just the Eternal Wall had taken him 3000 years to deal with. This was equal to allowing Lin Ming to grow for another 3000 years!

In addition to the Soul Emperor's future seclusion, everything might add up to over 10,000 years. The Soul Emperor didn't know what heights Lin Ming had grown to, but he knew that he absolutely could not allow Lin Ming to continue growing.

Every year that the Soul Emperor was delayed meant that Lin Ming would grow that much stronger. In the Soul Emperor's mind, the danger that Lin Ming represented was far greater than the Asura Road Master and Immortal Sovereign from 10 billion years past.

When Asura and Immortal encountered the Soul Emperor, they had already cultivated for countless years. They were existences that could be described as old monsters.

Their ages were too great. Even though they were strong, their potential had shrunk to almost nothing. The Soul Emperor wasn't afraid of them because of this. Whether it was Asura or Immortal, the Soul Emperor could allow them to freely cultivate as they wished without any worries.

But Lin Ming was different. He had only cultivated for a small number of years. Compared to Asura and Immortal, this time period was simply negligible.

But in such a short period of time he managed to attain a True Divinity level cultivation and have strength equal to a peak True Divinity master. Moreover, he still managed to make another breakthrough. He could be said to have reached the limits of True Divinity.

In just 10,000 some years, with an initial True Divinity cultivation, Lin Ming possessed strength at the limits of True Divinity. This was something that the Soul Emperor could hardly believe. 10 billion years ago, whether it was Asura or Immortal, neither of them had managed to reach such heights.

If the Soul Emperor were to allow such an enemy to freely grow then this enemy would surely surpass Asura and Immortal in the future, perhaps even surpassing himself.

Sooner or later, this enemy would send him to hell.

The Soul Emperor naturally had to prevent such things occurring.

The Soul Emperor quickly flew deep into the depths of the Dark Abyss.

At the same time, in the 17th level of the Dark Abyss, in Deep King Road Demon Palace, a low and sonorous voice reverberated throughout the entire palace.

“All Elders of Deep King Road, come see me at once!”

This voice carried with it a great majesty and imposing aura. It rang through the ears of every True Divinity level abyssal. As these abyssals of the Dark Abyss heard this voice, they felt the blood quicken in their veins and their hearts begin to race, as if resonating with this sound.

Many higher abyssals directly fell to their knees. “We obey.”

With the summoning of this voice, all True Divinity abyssals of Deep King Road hurried deep into the Demon Palace.

At this place there was an independent world. This was Deep King Road’s forbidden land. Without express permission, no one was allowed in.

But now this forbidden land was opened and the True Divinities of Deep King Road began to enter, one after another.

The moment they entered this forbidden land they felt a terrifying pressure fall down upon them. All the True Divinity level abyssal knelt down.

Before them, not too far away, there was a giant demon head. This demon head seemed forged from metal. It floated in the skies, over a thousand miles large, hanging above like a small star.

This demon head was – Deep!

In front of Deep, these abyssal overlords didn't dare to take a single breath. They absolutely did not dare to look up into Deep's face.

They respectfully knelt on the ground, their heads touching the floor as they waited for Deep's orders.

Deep was silent. All abyssals awaited his command.

And something similar was occurring in the Great Flood Demon Kingdom. In the Great Flood Demon Kingdom's capital city, a 1000 mile long life form, similar to a python, was perched atop a divine mountain. Its amber pupils flashed with icy light as it stared at the countless abyssals kneeling at the base of the divine mountain.

This giant snake had a pair of wings on its back and four claws. There was also a single horn jutting from its head. It resembled a Flood Dragon a little, and was also the true ruler of the Great Flood Demon Kingdom – Flood!

The Great Flood Demon Kingdom had existed for 2 billion years already. Very few abyssals ever saw Flood. Most of the time, no one even knew where Flood was. In fact, for the last several hundred million years, Flood seemed to have completely vanished, and some abyssals even suspected that Flood had died.

But today Flood had appeared. Moreover, Flood appeared on the Great Flood Demon Kingdom's divine mountain, in the presence of the trillions upon quadrillions of subjects that lived in the capital city. All the abyssals within hundreds of thousands of miles were able to see this scene.

Their expressions were filled with excitement and awe.

Flood, their hearts' Demon God, had actually appeared!

All abyssals had a premonition that something important was about to occur in the Dark Abyss.

MW Chapter 2234

Chapter 2234 – Divine Conversion Pool

…

…

…

The moment Sheng Mei disappeared into this different world, within the Amethyst Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming felt his heart tremble. He could feel his faint connection with Sheng Mei weakening. If he didn't carefully try to sense this, it was almost impossible to notice.

Moreover, even such a sensation was slowly fading…

At this time Lin Ming had already been in seclusion within the Amethyst Heavenly Palace for 3000 years. But because he had spent 1500 years within a time enchantment, the truth was that he had been cultivating for 18,000 years already.

Before this, Lin Ming had never spent such a long time cultivating in a single period.

In fact, going into seclusion for a long time wouldn't necessarily increase one's strength. Going into seclusion to cultivate was something that never managed to catch up to the speed of actual combat and experiencing the battlefield for oneself. In terms of foundation, the former would never be as solid as the latter.

But now with Lin Ming's current level of strength, there was nowhere he could temper himself in the entire 33 Heavens. As for actual combat, the only one that Lin Ming could fight was the Soul Emperor, and that would have disastrous results because as things stood, Lin Ming was not a match for him. Thus, going into seclusion to cultivate was Lin Ming's best choice at the moment.

In these 18,000 years, Lin Ming first had his nine revolutions of reincarnations reach perfection. Then he slowly combed through all the Laws and cultivation methods he learned in his life. Lin Ming had undergone endless slaughters, but he had never spent such a period like these 18,000 years to slowly sift through his Laws and consolidate his foundation.

In these 18,000 years, Lin Ming's cultivation system became increasingly mature and sublime. Everything was being carried along a straight path and Lin Ming's strength was also subtly increasing, but now, because the spiritual connection between Lin Ming and Sheng Mei vanished, his cultivation was also interrupted.

"Lin Ming… the Eternal Wall has been torn open…"

The Asura Road Master sighed. Hearing this, Lin Ming's heart tightened. The Asura Road Master's original speculation was that the Soul Emperor wanted to use Sheng Mei to tear down the Eternal Wall, and if the Eternal Wall was now broken, then that meant that Sheng Mei…

Carefully probing, Lin Ming faintly felt that Sheng Mei hadn't died. But for some unknown reason, the connection between the two of them was becoming increasingly faint, so faint that it seemed to completely vanish.

"I don't know the specifics of what happened, but my connection with the Amethyst Origin Crystal has also become faint…"

The Asura Road Master said, leaving Lin Ming surprised.

Lin Ming said, "Could the Amethyst Origin Crystal have been refined by the Soul Emperor?"

"I left my spirit mark within it. If the Amethyst Origin Crystal was refined by the Soul Emperor then my spirit mark would be destroyed and I would know of it. But currently… I can faintly feel that my spirit mark hasn't been refined by the Soul Emperor, but has been blocked off by something instead."

Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. Blocked off by what?

His connection with Sheng Mei was also in a similar state.

The Soul Emperor didn’t seem to have killed Sheng Mei nor did he obtain the Amethyst Origin Crystal. Then, what happened to them and why could they not sense them?

“Lin Ming, worrying about such things is useless. I cannot leave the Asura Road, and no matter how much more you worry, nothing can be done…”

In order to protect the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe, the Asura Road Master had already fused his body and soul into the two worlds. If it weren’t for the Asura Road Master’s help, it would be impossible for Lin Ming to defeat the Soul Emperor with his current level of strength.

Of course, while Lin Ming and the Asura Road Master couldn’t leave, the Soul Emperor also wasn’t able to come. There were problems with the world of the Demon God’s Tomb and the Emperor Bone Sea had nearly collapsed. Deep and Flood were too busy handling this to deal with other matters and even the Soul Emperor had to race back to the depths of the abyss. In truth, even if the Soul Emperor recklessly came to the Asura Road, it would only be an avatar of his true form that arrived. Then, facing the Asura Road that was controlled by the Asura Road Master, not only would the Soul Emperor be at a disadvantage but he would also suffer tremendous losses.

“Junior understands…” How could Lin Ming not understand these truths? But worry always clouded the mind with chaos. Lin Ming found it difficult to relax, and besides Sheng Mei there was also Immortal Sovereign.

“Senior Asura, this junior once left the Stone of Eternal Life with Immortal Sovereign. The changes in the Demon God’s Tomb should be related to Immortal Sovereign, and now that the Eternal Wall has shattered and the Soul Emperor is able to return to the Dark Abyss, then Senior Immortal is…”

Lin Ming didn’t speak any further. He could feel that once the Demon God’s Tomb Master fused his avatars back together, then Immortal was likely to suffer a perilous fate.

Hearing Lin Ming mention Immortal, Asura deeply sighed. “You told me that Immortal has already died and all that is left over of him is a wisp of remnant soul that has been locked within the Emperor Bone Sea for 10 billion years to experience countless sufferings and tribulations. If he were to leave the Emperor Bone Sea, his soul would disintegrate to dust, but perhaps such an end would be salvation instead…”

The Asura Road Master and Immortal Sovereign were lifetime rivals, and this was true whether it was in martial arts or in pursuit of love. But at the same time, they were also lifetime friends. To know that Immortal’s soul would perish to nothing, even Asura felt his heart grieve with emotion.

At this time, rays of light appeared from the void in front of Lin Ming. They blended in with the boundless space all around, racing on without end.

Lin Ming seemed to have arrived in the endless starry skies. As he saw this eternal divine light slowly gather together, the sight was like the creation of the universe, the beginning of a new age, a river that flowed through the past and into the future.

The divine light slowly condensed. Then, a person's figure finally appeared, just 1000 feet away.

This person wore a snow white robe and the edges of his face were sharp and distinct, filled with dashing heroism. His eyes seemed to contain the life and destruction of universes, and his eyebrows slashed towards his temples like divine swords.

This was a majestic and handsome man. But looking closely, one could feel that his appearance was blurred by the countless years of time, making it impossible to see him clearly.

Facing this man, Lin Ming inexplicably felt a connection to him. This was a resonance that originated from his bloodline and Laws.

"Senior... Senior Asura?"

Lin Ming's heart trembled. Although he had been in communication with the Asura Road Master during these years, the Asura Road Master had never appeared before him like today.

The Asura Road Master looked much younger than Lin Ming had imagined. Lin Ming originally thought that while the Asura Road Master wouldn't appear old, he would have the looks of a middle-aged man, filled with a calm dignity.

But, this white-robed figure before him seemed to be around 18-19 years of age.

The white-clothed Asura looked at Lin Ming and walked forwards, one step at a time. As he moved forwards it was like he was stepping across the river of time, headed from one shore to the other. His clothes were like snow and his features seemed carved from jade; he could simply be called a handsome youth in his prime; this was completely divergent from Lin Ming's original expectations of the Asura Road Master.

Asura said, "I have already fused together with the Asura Road as one. What appears before you now is only my incarnation. Lin Ming, I once passed onto you a single drop of Asura blood, but today I will pass onto you the complete Asura bloodline in order to lay the groundwork for your final fusion of the inner and outer universes…"

The Asura Road Master waved his hand, and a jade blue pool appeared in front of him.

This pool was only 30-40 feet wide and ten feet deep. It was filled with clear blue water and if Lin Ming were to jump within, the water could cover his head.

Lin Ming could feel that this wasn't some ordinary pool, but was likely a… spirit treasure.

In these past years, Lin Ming had seen countless spirit treasures. The most common ones were swords, sabers, spears, lances, halberds, and other such weapons. There were also the relatively rare seals, furnaces, staves, command signs, and other such unorthodox spirit treasures. But, this was the first time Lin Ming had seen a pool-shaped spirit treasure.

“This is the Divine Conversion Pool. Over 10 billion years ago I reached True Divinity in the Divine Conversion Pool and afterwards, I also stepped Beyond Divinity here. The Divine Conversion Pool is an ancient spirit treasure that I refined from a divine spring. The waters within have wondrous healing effects, and in your weakest moments it can assist your life source; it is the most suitable place for you to make your breakthrough!”

Hearing this, Lin Ming was shocked. This Divine Conversion Pool was actually the spirit treasure which the Asura Road Master had used to make his True Divinity and Beyond Divinity breakthroughs.

The Asura Road Master was a peerless ruler of the 33 Heavens. If he were to make a breakthrough somewhere, even the most ordinary pool would become a divine pool, and this pool itself was refined from a divine pool by the Asura Road Master to begin with.

Lin Ming cautiously stepped into the divine pool. On the edges of it, he could see Law tracings engraved by the Great Dao. These should be the remnants of the Heavenly Dao Laws from when the Asura Road Master made his breakthroughs.

Without a doubt, these traces were incredibly precious treasures.

Just this divine pool itself was enough to make a True Divinity level master go blind with jealousy.

If he were to make a breakthrough here, it could be called twice the result with half the effort.

MW Chapter 2235

Chapter 2235 – World Destroying Light

…

…

…

Lin Ming slowly sank to the bottom of the divine pool, feeling the waters gently brush against his body. This feeling was like a mother’s touch, each drop of water the most precious celestial nectar. This water entered Lin Ming’s body through his nose and mouth, flowing into his meridians and discharging from his 360,000 pores, constantly transforming and renewing his body as it went.

At this time, beams of strange blood red light began to gather from all around. Beneath the control of the Asura Road Master, this light flowed into the pool, causing the entire divine pool to be covered with a faint blood red glow. The strength within this pool became increasingly rich, so thick that it made one’s heart race.

At the same time, the Asura Road Master took out a demon bone. This demon bone had been the Soul Emperor's staff, but when the Soul Emperor abducted Sheng Mei he had thrown it towards Lin Ming and didn't have enough time to retrieve it.

The material used to forge this demon bone staff was undoubtedly from the true Demon God that existed 100 billion years ago. Now, the Asura Road Master threw it into the divine pool so that Lin Ming could refine it.

"Lin Ming, you will reach perfection of the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace in the divine pool, and after that you will completely refine the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe..."

The Asura Road Master's voice suddenly turned murky and somber. Lin Ming's thoughts stirred. He looked up and saw that on the edges of the divine pool, as the Asura bloodline was being poured in, the strength of the Asura Road Master's incarnation was actually weakening...

Lin Ming could even see that in the Asura Road Master's originally pitch-black hair, several strands of snow white hair appeared.

Lin Ming's heart shook. Was this because the Asura Road Master was giving him the strength of his bloodline?

"Senior Asura, you..."

As Lin Ming spoke, the number of threads of white hair on the Asura Road Master's head began to increase at a visible speed. Lin Ming couldn't sit still upon seeing this and directly stood up from the divine pond.

At this time, the bloodline strength within the pool was incredibly rich, but Lin Ming was left stunned.

The Asura Road Master calmly said, "Lin Ming, there is no need for you to worry about me..."

"Senior, my training has just begun and might need to continue for 10,000 years. Will you be continually weakening throughout?"

Lin Ming could feel the Asura Road Master's strength gradually fading away.

He suddenly remembered that the Asura Road Master had already merged into one with the Asura Road. Then, if he were to refine the Asura Road then wouldn't that mean the Asura Road Master's strength would be affected? Wouldn't he become increasingly weak?

The Asura Road Master shook his head. "For these years I have been deeply slumbering within the Asura Road, using every method at my disposal to prolong my life. Even so, I do not have much time remaining. I have lived for far too long. In more than 10 billion years, I went from possessing nothing at all to slowly growing and leaving my mark, from a Holy

Lord to World King to Empyrean, and to True Divinity, I became an overlord in my own right and even stood upon the highest peak of the 33 Heavens.

“In my life, I have experienced and possessed everything. But 10 billion years ago I witnessed the great calamity with my own eyes. I watched as my allies, my disciples, and even a woman that I loved deeply above all but did not choose me, slowly die, one after another. The only one who remained was me, and I have been shouldering all of this, continuing until the present.

“Slowly, I have become jaded to everything, all that I see is pale. I no longer chase after that eternal life I was obsessed with, and if I have any desire then it is to finish what I didn’t finish in the past…”

As the Asura Road Master spoke he seemed to become several points older. But, his eyes remained as bright as stars.

Looking at the Asura Road Master, Lin Ming felt an indescribable grieving in his heart.

“Although I have weakened, I won’t completely exhaust myself. It’s only that my abilities to protect the Asura Road will become increasingly weak, thus you must complete your training as soon as possible before the Soul Emperor catches up to you.”

As the Asura Road Master spoke, his expression remained serene throughout. Lin Ming clenched his fists. He could feel just how heavy the burden was that the Asura Road Master carried on his shoulders, but saying anything now was meaningless. What he needed to do was completely refine the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe.

But, plans never went as smoothly as one wished for…

Another 2000 years passed. Within the Divine Conversion Pool, as Lin Ming reached the critical moment in his training, from the vast skies, a black pillar of light abruptly appeared and came smashing down!

This divine light was like a giant black dragon. It passed through a space channel, howling as it fell. It was terrifying, possessing a formidable pressure that caused the blood vitality of all Empyreans in several hundred miles to tumble about, making it impossible for them to look directly at it.

This was like a world destroying light that could annihilate all of existence. It shot straight towards the Amethyst Heavenly Palace where Lin Ming was!

“Lin Ming!”

“Your Majesty Human Sovereign!”

“Senior Lin Ming!”

From the three great races, numerous martial artists saw this scene and cried out in alarm. But, there were also many of these people that couldn't even respond in time; this world destroying light was far too fast!

"This is bad!"

Divine Dream stared helplessly on as this destructive strength poured unto the Amethyst Heavenly Palace. They were simply powerless to stop it. It was beyond formidable, a power that surpassed the limits of those present.

Deep in seclusion, Lin Ming was in a state where he couldn't be disturbed. How could he possibly withstand such a strike?

Could this be... an attack from the Demon God's Tomb Master!?

This thought flashed through Divine Dream's mind. But in this critical situation as everything hung by a thread, a giant purple hand rose up from the Amethyst Heavenly Palace and struck out at the world destroying light.

This hand was a thousand miles wide. It blocked out the skies, capable of grasping a star!

Bang!

The world destroying divine light exploded within the purple hand. Terrifying shockwaves swelled out in all directions, ruining great tracts of blue skies.

That heaven-covering hand had forcefully blocked the world destroying divine light!

This sudden change left everyone stunned speechless and dumbfounded. Then soon figured out what had happened. This world destroying light was likely the attack of the Demon God's Tomb Master!

The Demon God's Tomb Master had come? Could it be that he had already completed his seclusion?

Everyone felt their hearts tighten. If the Demon God's Tomb Master truly arrived at this moment, then the consequences would be unimaginable.

"Don't panic! That old demon hasn't come, he is only making an attack across space-time!"

Divine Dream's voice echoed out for thousands of miles, calming the minds of the nervous martial artists. The Demon God's Tomb Master still needed a long period of seclusion. He had been heavily wounded in that great battle 5000 years ago and with all the problems that had occurred in the Demon God's Tomb, how could he recover so quickly? Moreover, he also had to refine the Demon God's Tomb.

Since the Asura Road Master dared to allow Lin Ming to go into this final closed door seclusion at this time, then he must have some degree of assurance. Otherwise, it was equal to allow Lin Ming to freely come under attack.

"That old demon hasn't come?"

"He didn't come himself yet he was able to make such a dreadful attack through multiple realms of space; that was too horrifying!"

As the martial artists thought of the might behind that world destroying light, all of them felt a lingering fear in their minds. If they were sucked into that light then they would have disintegrated into ashes!

"The Demon God's Tomb Master is truly fierce, but Senior Asura is also exceptionally strong. That heaven-blocking had must have been formed by Senior Asura. Without even moving he was already able to block that horrifying black light, how amazing!"

"That's right, he's amazing! Hahaha!"

Many martial artists recalled that giant heaven-blocking hand and felt much more cheerful. They knew that the Asura Road Master was guiding Lin Ming in the Amethyst Heavenly Palace and with the protection of the Asura Road Master, it wouldn’t be easy for the Demon God’s Tomb Master to disturb them with long-range attacks.

However, as Divine Dream heard these martial artists proudly speak of the Asura Road Master, a dark cloud of gloom covered her face.

That world destroying light… was it really blocked so easily?

She anxiously looked towards the Amethyst Heavenly Palace. She had a dark foreboding premonition that this attack was only the opening act…

How could the Demon God’s Tomb Master freely allow Lin Ming to complete his seclusion and reach heights where he could pose a threat to him?

“Everyone, listen to me. Do not depend on Senior Asura sheltering you. To survive this calamity, we must depend on ourselves. Hurry up and begin cultivating again.” A delicate and dignified voice called out. The one who spoke was Soaring Feather God King. She floated high in the skies, her white dress floating about her.

5000 years in the time enchantment was equal to 50,000 years outside. With Ink and Clear’s guidance, Soaring Feather God King had broken through to the next boundary and reached the middle True Divinity realm.

Moreover, her strength was decent even amongst middle True Divinities. In this alone she was far stronger than Astral Vault God King. Astral Vault God King was mired in the lower True Divinity realm and hadn’t been able to make his breakthrough yet.

Soaring Feather’s thoughts were similar to Divine Dream’s. This sort of attack would likely continue onwards. The Asura Road Master could block the first, but could he block every one after?

MW Chapter 2236

Chapter 2236 – In the Face of Catastrophe

…

…

…

Within the Amethyst Heavenly Palace, the Asura Road Master’s incarnation sat before the divine pool, his complexion slightly pale.

Compared to two thousand years ago, a tremendous change had already occurred within him. His face was still bright and as beautiful as jade and he was still filled with a daring heroic spirit, but his head of black hair had turned silver!

The Asura Road Master’s eyes remained as vibrant as before. Even though he had helped Lin Ming refine the two highest Laws and even though the Demon God’s Tomb Master’s attack had consumed his blood vitality just now, his expression was still one of pure serenity.

“Senior Asura… you…” Lin Ming could feel that the Asura Road Master had been injured in the brief collision with the Demon God’s Tomb Master just now!

Originally, cultivation here already forced the Asura Road Master to expend a tremendous amount of energy. Now in order to resist the attack of the Demon God’s Tomb Master, the pressure placed on him could be imagined!

“Do not be distracted. The greatest help you can offer me right now is to single-mindedly complete the refinement as soon as possible. If you can finish a hundred years earlier then that is a hundred fewer years of pressure that I must face. I hope that when you finish your cultivation, your boundary will be equal to mine!”

Lin Ming’s heart skipped a beat. “My boundary will be equal to Senior’s?”

The Asura Road Master’s boundary was naturally that of Beyond Divinity!

But Lin Ming thought that even if he were to seclude himself for another 10,000 years, then although his strength would greatly increase, wanting to step Beyond Divinity was actually unlikely.

Even with another potential 10,000 years added on, Lin Ming would only have cultivated for around 40,000 years. But, compared to those martial artists that had lived for hundreds of millions of years, 40,000 years was nothing at all.

The Asura Road Master said, “In terms of cultivation, you are a bit worse. But when it comes to the boundary in Laws, you actually surpass me… the so-called Beyond Divinity is in truth not some orthodox boundary. In the road of martial arts, every legitimate great boundary is divided into smaller realms – early, middle, late, peak… but Beyond Divinity does not possess these. This is because Beyond Divinity is not a large boundary at all, but a state of being, such as totem level abyssals that have reached the limits of True Divinity. When a martial artist comprehends their own perfect system of Laws, the state he achieves is called Beyond Divinity!

“Beyond Divinity. That is when one’s cultivation reaches the peak and one’s Laws reach the peak, and these two dual peaks cannot be surpassed. This is the highest realm of martial arts!”

The Asura Road Master’s words were gentle, but what he said left Lin Ming shocked. This was the first time Lin Ming had heard someone describe the Beyond Divinity realm.

“Junior understands!”

Within the Divine Conversion Pool, Lin Ming deeply bowed to the Asura Road Master. He also understood that Beyond Divinity martial artists were still divided into varying degrees of strength. Who was weaker and who was stronger, all depended on how strong a martial artist had been before they stepped Beyond Divinity and also the heights of their Laws.

Though his cultivation hadn’t reached the peak of True Divinity, none of that mattered. At the early True Divinity realm he was able to compare to a peak True Divinity already!

10,000 years from now, if his cultivation rose to the upper True Divinity realm and his Laws reached perfection, then he might be able to defeat the Demon God's Tomb Master!

……….

Divine Dream and Soaring Feather's speculations hadn't been wrong. That world-destroying light was only the beginning of the nightmare…

Two thousand years later, the divine light reappeared!

Moreover, this time it wasn't just one, but two together!

Two beams of divine light fell from the clouds like two pillars that held up the heavens. They crashed down onto the Amethyst Heavenly Palace!

From within the Amethyst Heavenly Palace, the heaven-blocking hand appeared once more and brutally collided with those beams of light!

For a time, the earth shook and mountains rocked. The Asura Sea sagged down from the horrifying pressure, forming a giant hollow 'water bowl' a thousand miles deep. All the clouds above the Asura Sea were blown away by the shockwaves.

Looking at this apocalyptic scene before them, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens were bewildered. “If… if this continues, what can we do…”

The last attack had also been blocked by the Asura Road Master. They didn’t know how difficult it had been for the Asura Road Master to block that world-destroying light, but this time it seemed that it wasn’t easy for the Asura Road Master!

After these two beams of divine light blasted down, the hand created by the Asura Road Master was forcefully torn apart!

Some energy even poured down from the seams of the palm and fell onto the Amethyst Heavenly Palace like waterfalls. Luckily, the Amethyst Heavenly Palace was protected by array formations, so that energy was eventually unable to reach it…

“The situation is worsening!” Divine Dream frowned.

There was an attack after 2000 years, and it seemed as if the enemy’s strength was increasing!

This meant two things. The first was that the Demon God’s Tomb Master was in seclusion and couldn’t leave the Demon God’s Tomb nor could he freely launch attacks as he wished. He could only take advantage of small breaks or use excess energy to attack Lin Ming. And the second was that as time passed, the Demon God’s Tomb Master was constantly growing stronger.

But in the Amethyst Heavenly Palace, the Asura Road Master would clearly not grow stronger; he might even weaken with time.

If so, then the situation would only deteriorate from here on out.

Whether it was Divine Dream or the high level figures of humanity and the saints, all of them were nervous.

There was no way they could block that black divine light. Moreover, that divine light directly passed through space and was equal to instantly transferring to the area above the Amethyst Heavenly Palace; wanting to intercept it midway was impossible.

Another 2000 years passed. And sure enough, the world-destroying light appeared once more!

Two beams of divine light fell down again. Everyone held their breath as they saw this. No one had any idea whether or not the Asura Road Master would form that heaven-blocking hand once more to resist the attack. But suddenly, from above the Amethyst Heavenly Palace, a white light shot out. An ancient white altar appeared, welcoming the world-destroying light!

This stone altar was 100,000 feet tall and divided into 33 levels. This was the spirit treasure that the Asura Road Master had refined himself and placed into the final trial's seventh level – the Divine Seal Altar!

3.6 billion years ago, Empyrean Divine Seal had once imitated the Divine Seal Altar to refine his own magic tool. This was where Empyrean Divine Seal's name had come from.

The two world-destroying lights recklessly fell down upon the Divine Seal Altar!

Bang!

The Divine Seal Altar wildly shook. Tumultuous waves rose up in the Asura Sea. Terrifying tsunamis soared a thousand miles into the skies, piercing into the heavens!

These thousand mile high tsunamis could be called a calamity, but at this time the common people of the Asura Road had already been evacuated. Thus, no matter how those giant tsunamis crashed into the earth, it still didn't create a scene where massive numbers of lives were cut down.

"I wonder how much longer Lin Ming's seclusion needs…" Xiao Moxian held her hands together, looking towards the direction of the Amethyst Heavenly Palace with a heavy heart.

Lin Huang gently took hold of Xiao Moxian's hand. He knew that this world-destroying divine light was only the overture to the arrival of the true war…

MW Chapter 2237

Chapter 2237 – Tearing Apart the Asura Road

…

…

…

The ancient Asura Road fell into an unprecedented crisis. The attacks from the Demon God’s Tomb Master were as accurate as a calendar, appearing once every 2000 years.

The martial artists of the 33 Heavens knew that when Lin Ming entered his second seclusion, he had said to them that this seclusion would last for about 10,000 years.

It could be expected that in these 10,000 years, the Demon God’s Tomb Master’s attacks would continue to descend upon them.

Moreover, it seemed that every attack was stronger than the last. Perhaps when the end of the 10,000 years appeared, the might of the Demon God’s Tomb Master’s attacks would reach new heights!

Just what would that scene be like? The martial artists of the 33 Heavens didn't dare to imagine.

And at the 8000 year period, the fifth continuous attack arrived as expected!

Hum - !

The dark night of the Asura Road was illuminated with bright light, making it seem as if it were daytime. A blood red glow basked the entire world!

The heavens and earth were pierced through. It was like a peerless vicious beast was awakening within this divine light.

It was like a sun that was billions of miles wide fell into the Asura Sea. The powerful shockwaves shoved apart the Asura Sea to unimaginable depths, revealing the rocky seabed!

The Divine Seal Altar was struck flying away and the protective array formations around the Amethyst Heavenly Palace were torn apart by divine light. The entire Amethyst Heavenly Palace began to wildly rock in the violent tsunamis!

"Lin Ming!"

10,000 miles away, Divine Dream, Xiao Moxian, Lin Huang, and the others all saw this strike and felt their hearts tighten!

Facing the strength of the Demon God's Tomb Master, all of them were simply incapable of resisting. If they were drawn into these shockwaves they would be heavily wounded or even killed.

In these past years, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens had progressed a great deal. But when compared to the Demon God's Tomb Master, it was simply unworthy of mention.

"Father!"

Lin Huang gripped his fists, his nails digging into his flesh and blood. Facing this calamity he was far too weak, but in truth his cultivation was actually at the peak of the martial artists of the 33 Heavens.

From the time that Lin Ming went into seclusion, coupled with the time enchantment, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens had practiced for over 50,000 years. But Lin Huang had trained for an even longer period of time; he had been continuously cultivating for 70,000 years already.

In these 70,000 years, Lin Huang frequently fought with the masters of the 33 Heavens. At the start he fought with older Empyrean masters like Skyrend Godlord and then started fighting those like Astral Vault God King. After that he fought with Soaring Feather God King and Emperor Shakya. After Jiu'er grew up, he even fought with her. Finally, Lin Huang even trained with Empyrean Divine Dream.

Lin Huang's cultivation had already reached the middle True Divinity realm.

Not just him, but Xiao Moxian, Soaring Feather God King, and Emperor Shakya also broke into the middle True Divinity realm. Dragon Fang, Jun Bluemoon, Hang Chi, Fairy Blue Lotus, Dark Demon Monarch, as well as the primal god race's Diwuhen, Lan Xin, and the celestial race's To Bagui, and many others also broke into the lower True Divinity realm.

Because the Asura Road had released all the resources it had accumulated for 10 billion years and also because the various ancient influences of the three great races had unconditionally opened all of their inheritances, the strength of the martial artists of the 33 Heavens had reached an unprecedented peak that hadn't been achieved since 10 billion years ago.

But in front of the Demon God's Tomb Master, all of this was useless…

The disparity was simply too great.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Shockwaves from the world-destroying light flew into the horizon and the massive sea waves began to fall back down. The martial artists of the 33 Heavens looked at the weakened array formation around the Amethyst Heavenly Palace and felt their hearts shiver.

It had been a long time since they gathered near the Amethyst Heavenly Palace to cultivate. With Ink and Clear's management, they had formed a new time enchantment that was a good distance away from the Amethyst Heavenly Palace. This was a relatively safer place to cultivate.

After all, Empyrean martial artists and those below an Empyrean couldn't withstand such terrifying shockwaves.

Lin Ming's seclusion had yet to end. After 2000 more years, another horrifying attack was likely to arrive...

What would that be like? No one dared to imagine that scenario.

Time passed, year after year. The martial artists of the 33 Heavens desperately cultivated with all their hearts. They felt a foreboding premonition that a great storm was coming, and this final moment would also be the last war that decided the fate of the 33 Heavens.

Even though those that gathered in the Asura Sea were the unparalleled overlords of their various races, they still felt a deep and sincere fear!

What would come would eventually come; it was impossible to hide from.

Moreover, everything that occurred would happen earlier than expected.

10,000 years hadn't yet passed. On the 9900th year, the Demon God's Tomb Master's sixth attack arrived without warning!

The titanic beam of divine light seemed to fall down from the river of stars in the highest heavens. It broke through the skies of the Asura Road, drowning out the dazzling sun in the skies. All that was left over was the blinding fiery divine light that covered all.

The entire Asura Road began to burn!

On the long and linear Asura Road, the Asura Sea was located at the very terminal end of this strip. But beneath the divine light that seemed to fall like a river of stars, the end of the Asura Road where the Asura Sea was located was forcibly cut apart!

Destructive light swallowed everything and all sounds disappeared from the world. 100,000 miles away, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens stared helplessly on as the Asura Road was torn apart. The endless seawater no longer exploded in giant tsunamis but was instead sucked into the void where it vanished from sight!

And the Amethyst Heavenly Palace was also enveloped in this divine light. Its protective array formations resisted for only a brief moment before breaking apart!

The light of the array formations shot outward. Without the protection of the array formations, the entire Amethyst Heavenly Palace was forced to withstand the direct impact of this divine light!

“Lin Ming!”

“Human Sovereign Your Majesty!”

Many martial artists of the 33 Heavens were so worried that they started to rush over. Lin Ming was their final hope, but if he were to be directly struck by this divine light while in seclusion, would he simply disintegrate to nothing?

The energy of the divine light was too strong. Even the Amethyst Heavenly Palace that was carefully refined by the Asura Road Master was mostly melted away!

Within the Amethyst Heavenly Palace, Lin Ming bled from all over his head. And, this blood was not red but black; just as his blood flowed out it was charred by the horrifying flows of heat.

His road of fusing heaven and man had reached its final moments. But at this last step, the Demon God's Tomb Master was doing his best to not allow Lin Ming to walk to the end of this road!

"Senior… Senior Asura!"

Lin Ming cried out to the Asura Road Master in his heart. He knew that in this strike just now, it was the Asura Road Master that had helped him keep off the majority of it, otherwise he would have already perished!

The Asura Road Master had consumed an enormous amount of energy in these years. His body grew increasingly weak and he was even now forced to help block this strike. How could Lin Ming not be worried?

"Senior Asura… you…"

"Do not divert your heart… I… should still have some energy left remaining…" Within the darkness, the Asura Road Master's voice echoed out; it was already incomparably weak.

Hearing this voice, Lin Ming felt his heart shiver. He clearly felt that that the strike just now had wounded the Asura Road Master's source of life.

"Senior Asura…"

Lin Ming was at a loss for words. Anything he said right now would be useless and pale. But at this time, he could feel a terrifying divine might surging in the skies above. Lin Ming's face blanched; the attack hadn't ended!

This time, the Demon God's Tomb Master didn't attack just once, but twice!

"That old freak… he's going all out…"

The Asura Road Master's voice was frail and powerless. His figure moved around in the darkness. 10,000 years ago he had appeared young and filled with great vigor and majesty, but now he had a head of white hair and his appearance was wrinkled and withered, like an old man on the verge of death.

Although his body was old, the Asura Road Master's eyes still remained as bright and pure as a spring lake. He clearly realized that Lin Ming was in the final moments of his seclusion. The Demon God's Tomb Master was doing everything in his power to stop this and destroy Lin Ming!

"Damn it all… if only I had another month, no… 20 days, if I only had 20 days…"

Lin Ming clenched his fists together, his eyes turning blood red with rage. His nails dug deep into the flesh of his palm. He could already speculate what had happened. When the Soul Emperor lay hidden in the Soul World for all those past years, although he hadn't been able to do anything to the Akashic Dream Universe, he had still managed to leave behind some contingencies within. The Soul Emperor could likely sense what he was doing and also feel that he was in the final stages of his fusion of heaven and man!

In 9900 years, Lin Ming had already accelerated his speed of refinement. This was to avoid the Demon God's Tomb Master's desperate counterattack. But, he had still misjudged. The Demon God's Tomb Master's final attack had also come earlier, just a month before his seclusion was due to come to an end.

It was impossible that this was a coincidence. The only possible reason was that the Demon God's Tomb Master had managed to somehow probe his situation using some methods.

The energy brewing in the skies grew increasingly strong. Around the already shattered Amethyst Heavenly Palace, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens that were rushing forwards were panic-stricken; they all revolved their movement techniques and began drawing backwards.

It was impossible for them to share the burden of this attack with Lin Ming; it was too terrifying.

"It's weakened by over half… that old demon doesn't have much excess strength remaining…"

In the shattered amethyst hall, the Asura Road Master looked up into the skies. To forcibly send out a second attack, this was surely an enormous burden to the Demon God's Tomb Master who was still in seclusion!

When a martial artist was in seclusion, the ultimate taboo was for their training to be interrupted. Even though the Demon God's Tomb Master had transcendent methods, he would still be restricted in his actions.

As the second attack came crashing down, the Asura Road Master's body turned into a flow of light that fused into the shattered Amethyst Heavenly Palace around him, propping up one final shield!

"Ahhh!"

Outside the Amethyst Heavenly Palace, many martial artists cried out in alarm. They watched blankly on as the broken Amethyst Heavenly Palace completely blew apart underneath the conflagration of divine light.

The fragments of the Amethyst Heavenly Palace mixed in with the storm and scattered in all directions.

"Lin Ming!"

“No - !”

Xiao Moxian looked at this occur from a distance, feeling like her heart had been stabbed by a saber!

MW Chapter 2238

Chapter 2238 – Invasion of the Abyss

…

…

…

The Amethyst Heavenly Palace was gone. Lin Ming's original place of seclusion had been completely destroyed. Within the terrifying storm that spanned the heavens and earth, everyone could vaguely make out a person's figure. This figure was charred black, like a piece of dead wood struck by lightning!

"Lin Ming!"

"Father!"

Xiao Moxian and Lin Huang were intimately related to Lin Ming and were able to instantly recognize that this charred figure was him. As they saw the pitiful condition that

Lin Ming was in, Xiao Moxian's heart wrenched and every martial artist of the 33 Heavens held their breath.

"It's over! His Majesty Human Sovereign's seclusion has been broken!"

"Must the heavens destroy my human race?"

"Is today the end for us saints?"

In that moment, the overlords of the three races all felt despair surge in their hearts.

They hadn't even fought and yet they had been defeated? They had put forth so much effort in the last several tens of thousands of years, and yet they didn't even have the qualifications to fight?

"Father hasn't died..." Jiu'er said. She could feel fluctuations of energy coming from Lin Ming. Jiu'er had experienced Lin Ming's baptism of Laws when he broke into True Divinity, and in terms of energy resonance she was even closer than Lin Huang.

"It's good that he hasn't died..."

The primal god race's Diwuhen suddenly said. Although it sounded good to say that Lin Ming hadn't died, no one was able to relax in this situation.

From Lin Ming's horrible condition it was likely he had suffered some severe wound. And, it had to be known that Lin Ming was currently in seclusion and he was also in his most crucial period, the final stretch to break into the realm Beyond Divinity!

How could such a period of seclusion accommodate an attack like this? Seeing Lin Ming's charred body and severely wounded appearance, the situation was absolutely awful. This was an attack from the Demon God's Tomb Master!

In the situation, if Lin Ming's cultivation was broken midway, could he still complete his seclusion? Or would the Demon God's Tomb Master's attack ruin everything and cause Lin Ming to fail?

If this was really the result then the 33 Heavens was done for. Everything was finished.

Even if Lin Ming could still continue his seclusion, his injuries might ruin his plans of completing his cultivation in 10,000 years.

To the current 33 Heavens, time was life. If Lin Ming were to leave seclusion after the Soul Emperor then the end result was the same as Lin Ming's seclusion being interrupted midway.

The 33 Heavens would still be destroyed and all native races sentenced to extinction!

Everyone had placed their hopes on Lin Ming, but as they saw his current state, their mood could be imagined!

At this time, space began to twist all around Lin Ming. A massive amount of world strength gathered, forming into a force field around him. This force field enveloped him and began to slowly sink back into the destroyed Asura Sea, vanishing from sight within the vortex that continued to swallow everything.

“His Majesty Human Sovereign has gone to recover his wounds…” A young, newly-promoted human Empyrean said with a heavy heart.

“If he wants to continue cultivating he certainly must restore his wounds… but, His Majesty the Human Sovereign still requires time to heal his wounds… and it will take more time than before his seclusion was interrupted. If this continues…”

A spiritas True Divinity sighed. He didn’t finish speaking, but everyone understood the meaning behind his words.

“Stop spouting such discouraging words! If the Human Sovereign has not yet died then that means we still have hope! Everyone, take a brief break and continue your training!” The one who spoke was Soaring Feather God King. As the current top figure and leader of the saints, Soaring Feather had an extremely high level of prestige. In the 33 Heavens she even neared Divine Dream in fame. But now, even Soaring Feather called Lin Ming the Human Sovereign. This was because Lin Ming was the ultimate leader of the 33 Heavens, and in public it was reasonable for her to refer to him with his title.

After stopping everyone's panicked discussions, Soaring Feather continued to say, "The Human Sovereign has already resisted attacks at 2000 years, 4000 years, 6000 years, 8000 years, and 10,000 years. Even if there is another attack after 12,000 years and 14,000 years, how do you know that the Human Sovereign cannot withstand it? Perhaps there have been more miracles that have happened to him than the rest of us combined!"

What Soaring Feather said was the truth. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that there were far too many miracles occurring around Lin Ming.

As long as Lin Ming was able to withstand this attack and take that final step Beyond Divinity then the entire situation would be reversed!

And according to the last two attacks of the Demon God's Tomb Master, the second attack was far weaker than the first. He had clearly overdrawn himself to make such an attack; in other words, the Demon God's Tomb Master might stop his attacks for the next several thousand years...

If so, then the 33 Heavens had a glimmer of hope...

As everyone was thinking this, a bolt of black lightning broke out from 10,000 miles above their heads!

This black lightning was like the sword of a spiritual god, forcefully severing the vault of the heavens in two!

“What happened!?”

“It’s not over!?”

All the overlords of the various races raised their vigilance once more. They looked up into the skies where the heavens had been divided in half by that black lightning. At that place, there was a giant black hole. The black hole exuded an incomparably evil aura, and black flames spat out from the edges, wildly dancing around it like giant pythons!

“That is…”

“Space channel!”

The overlords of the 33 Heavens were all highly experienced and knowledgeable individuals. They quickly recognized that the black hole which appeared in the skies was not some attack used by a top master, but a space channel!

“This… this space channel is too big!”

The True Divinities of the three races were all stunned. The space channel began to recklessly proliferate outwards until it occupied half the skies. This feeling was as if a black universe had appeared out of thin air and was forcefully merging together with the Asura Road.

And what followed left the hearts of all martial artists quaking!

From that great black world, black figures began to appear. Dense and endless, an inexhaustible number, it looked like a swarm of locusts flying in from afar.

“That is…”

“Abyssals!”

In these years, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens naturally learned of the abyssal demons and also saw what they looked like. These countless dense waves of dark figures were abyssals!

The Eternal Wall had long since been destroyed and the abyssals had been uncaged; they could invade the 33 Heavens at any moment!

The reason they patiently bided their time was not to give the races of the 33 Heavens a chance to catch their breath. Rather, it was because the Asura Road was protected by the Asura Road Master and it was meaningless to attack the 33 Heavens.

But now, the Demon God's Tomb Master seemed to have calculated that the Asura Road Master was helping Lin Ming in the final stages of his seclusion, and because of this his strength had plummeted to its weakest point. When the Demon God's Tomb Master had attacked, he had destroyed the Amethyst Heavenly Palace and simultaneously pierced through the great defensive array formation laid down by the Asura Road Master.

Like this, even if the Demon God's Tomb Master couldn't attack again, he could still send in the abyssals to destroy Lin Ming!

This was the fully gathered strength of the many Empyrean and True Divinity abyssals!

The curtains to the great war of calamity had been opened!

MW Chapter 2239

Chapter 2239 – Four Demon Kings

…

…

…

Looking at the endless flood of abyssals, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens all felt a tingle creep across their scalps.

A great number of powerful influences had gathered in the Asura Road in these past years. But if compared to the Dark Abyss then they were worse by one level, whether it was in the overall quantity or quality of masters.

The strength of the abyssals wasn't something that the 33 Heavens could compare with. Even though Ink and Clear had released all the accumulated inheritances of the Asura Road in these last 10,000 years and forcefully increased the strength of the 33 Heavens, the disparity with the Dark Abyss was just far too great.

“What do we do!?”

A newly-promoted saint race True Divinity worriedly said. When facing the abyssal legions, no one was able to maintain their calm.

This was the bloodthirsty and cruel abyssal race, a race that would even eat them alive!

“There is no escape route for us. We can only bet our lives on this final battle!”

Soaring Feather God King’s eyes lit up with a flaming fighting intent. She was well aware that what awaited them today might be total annihilation, but so what? If the 33 Heavens were swallowed by the Dark Abyss it would mean death, and if fighting meant death too, then they might as well heroically die upon the sandy battlefield!

“Protect Lin Ming at all costs. No matter what happens, he is our final hope…”

Divine Dream said. In truth, many people were aware that with the invasion of the Dark Abyss, it would be impossible for them to be protected by Lin Ming here.

And when Lin Ming entered his second period of seclusion he would need at least 10,000 years. Now, there was still 100 years left remaining, and Lin Ming had also been wounded by the Demon God’s Tomb Master. His training might be influenced and Lin Ming himself still might be severely wounded!

To rely on Lin Ming emerging from seclusion to rescue them was impossible.

“It doesn’t matter! Lin Ming has already protected us so many times and this time it should be us who protects him!”

“I have already been bitterly cultivating in the time enchantment for 50,000 years! All of my efforts were to prepare for this battle!”

“Let’s fight to the death!”

“Killing one is enough, killing two is a gain!”

Facing the demon army of the Dark Abyss, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens didn’t feel dispirited at all. Instead, on the border of death, many of them were filled with bravery.

Since they had no road to escape, they might as well risk their lives in this one final battle!

“What fearless and stupid people…”

A hoarse voice echoed out. Amongst the demon army of the Dark Abyss, an old abyssal covered with black scales coldly sneered. “The years are heartless and there is no race capable of withstanding the passing of time. The lot of you have already occupied the resource-rich 33 Heavens long enough; it’s about time for you to let it go.”

This old abyssal was the Imperial Scholar of the Great Flood Demon Kingdom. His cultivation was at the peak of the upper True Divinity realm and he was the top figure besides ‘Flood’.

The higher abyssals of the Great Flood Demon Kingdom had been led by him to wage war against the 33 Heavens.

“You are right. There is no race able to withstand the passing of years, and you abyssals are also the same. You have existed for far too long already. It’s time for you all to enter the grave where you belong.”

A cold voice sounded out. Divine Dream floated high in the air, her white clothes wafting about her as she stood in harsh contention with the Imperial Scholar.

Within the time enchantment, Divine Dream was the first and only master of the 33 Heavens to break into upper True Divinity. This was also because Ink and Clear had recklessly poured resources into her so that her cultivation could increase as fast as possible. While this would create problems with the stability of her foundation, Divine Dream didn’t have the scruples to care about such things with the present situation.

“Haha! Our abyssal race is different. Even the great Shattering of the universe 100 billion years ago wasn’t able to destroy us. Since we managed to withstand the Heavenly Dao’s wishes to erase us from existence, then we should replace the Heavenly Dao as the rulers of this universe. The 33 Heavens belong to our abyssal race, and from this day on we will become the sole supreme rulers of the world!”

“You have already lost this battle. Hand over Lin Ming and recognize my abyssal race as your lord and master and we might forgive you and allow you your lives.”

Another old abyssal spoke up; he was Deep King Road’s Sovereign and also possessed a peak upper True Divinity level cultivation. Usually, he was the voice of ‘Deep’ in the Dark Abyss and also conveyed Deep’s commands.

“When the dragon is in the shallows the shrimps think they can come to bully. If Lin Ming were in his peak state your so-called great demon army would be nothing more than packs of dogs and chickens. However many came would die!”

Xiao Moxian hatefully said on the side of the 33 Heavens.

“A pack of dogs and chickens? Don’t you think your worship of him is too ridiculous? No matter how strong he is he still hasn’t stepped Beyond Divinity, nor will he have the chance to! When the Demon God attacked he was severely wounded, and I wouldn’t even be surprised if he has already died! Are you still hoping that he can leave seclusion to save you? How laughable!”

Another low and deep voice sounded out from the side of the abyssals. This was the third upper True Divinity abyssal. He was part of the Demon Association and was their Highest Elder. The Demon Association's totem level abyssal had died a long time ago but the Demon Association still managed to stand tall, and a great deal of that was related to the existence of this Highest Elder.

The Demon Association has a great grudge against Lin Ming. By this time, the abyssals had already learned that the Lin Ming who was deep in seclusion was the Ancient Eon Sect's Ninth Elder who had stirred up so much chaos in the Dark Abyss.

In the Dark Abyss, many demon lords and demon kings had been played with by this human race junior that had pretended to be a higher abyssal. Moreover, they even believed that Lin Ming was a new genius that had appeared in the Dark Abyss and might even be a future totem level abyssal that ruled the Dark Abyss. To be played around with and fooled in such a manner, how could they not be angry!?

Ink and Clear stepped forwards, facing the two upper True Divinity level abyssals of the Demon Association and Deep King Road.

In a great war, the difference in the number of highest level forces was extremely important. If each upper True Divinity were to match up against an upper True Divinity, then the fight could be dragged on for a long time. But if there was an upper True Divinity that didn't have an opponent, then they would be free to deal with the lower level martial artists. If that occurred, it would be a slaughter.

“I can see that the 33 Heavens has a considerable number of masters!”

A high level abyssal cackled. At this time, the Dark Abyss had poured forth with their full strength. Besides the upper True Divinities of the six great totem level sects, there was also an upper True Divinity that didn’t belong to any sect.

And at this time, he also stepped forwards.

As for the 33 Heavens, they only had a single upper True Divinity in Divine Dream.

With Ink and Clear, there were three of them.

Lin Huang clenched his teeth. He wanted to step forwards but Xiao Moxian grabbed onto him. “I will go with you!”

Upon reaching the True Divinity realm, even Lin Huang would find it hard to jump ranks to fight. But if Xiao Moxian were to help him, they could deal with it.

However, if they were to join together to deal with an upper True Divinity, that would make it so that the 33 Heavens wouldn’t have enough masters to deal with the Dark Abyss’s middle True Divinities. The result would still be a slaughter.

But at this time, in the distant skies, a sparkle appeared. A white-clothed figure came hurtling forwards, its speed bewildering.

Xiao Moxian was stunned. She focused her eyes and was overjoyed by what she saw. The one arriving here was Mo Eversnow!

Through the many years of parting, Xiao Moxian had no idea where Mo Eversnow had gone. But, she now appeared in their darkest hour, ready to lend them a helping hand!

MW Chapter 2240

Chapter 2240 – The Disparity In Strength

…

…

…

Before the demon army of billions, Mo Eversnow stood alone. Her white clothes were untainted like fresh snow as she proudly stared down the abyssals!

Her gaze was cold and sharp. She grasped a deep blue sword, killing intent flooding out from her eyes!

“You…” The Demon Association’s Highest Elder narrowed his eyes as he looked at Mo Eversnow. When he looked at her, he had a sense of déjà vu, as if he had encountered her before.

“Who are you?” The Demon Association’s Highest Elder asked. But as he did, he saw another group of martial artists rapidly flying in from behind her.

Although they were far away, the Demon Association's Highest Elder soon recognized them. They were people of the ancient races, and these ancient race martial artists also had a faint aura of the Dark Abyss.

The Demon Association's Highest Elder narrowed his eyes. As he recalled the familiar feeling when he saw Mo Eversnow, he suddenly smiled. "I was wondering who it was. So it's the dying embers of the yellow scarf bandits. I thought it was strange when you all disappeared 15,000 years ago but it turns out you were hiding in the 33 Heavens!"

In the past Mo Eversnow had started a slave uprising in the Dark Abyss, and their main enemy was the Demon Association. However, the scale of this rebel army had never been able to enter the eyes of the Demon Association's Highest Elder.

"You bunch of ants. Since you want to die then you can all die here together!"

The subordinates that Mo Eversnow brought were basically all once slaves of the Dark Abyss. No matter how diligently these people trained it would be impossible for them to reach the True Divinity realm. Facing the army of the Dark Abyss, they couldn't play much of a role at all.

But the one leading them, Mo Eversnow, actually caused the Demon Association's Highest Elder to feel a level of dread.

Mo Eversnow’s cultivation was only a slight bit away from reaching the upper True Divinity realm. But, the aura she gave off indicated that she was no weaker than a genuine upper True Divinity.

This degree of strength was already amazing. In the past when Lin Ming entered the Dark Abyss for the first time and encountered Mo Eversnow, her cultivation had been between an Empyrean and True Divinity. At that time, she was able to help Lin Ming make the killing blow against a True Divinity Elder of the Demon Association. Now, after so many years passed, although the strength she obtained seemed a tad exaggerated, it was still within acceptable bounds. Heavenly Empress Xuanqing used to be an extreme Empyrean master and whether it was Heavenly Empress Xuanqing or Mo Eversnow herself, they both had incredibly high levels of talent.

“There really are so many people that want to die. Since all of you are so obstinate then you can all go to hell together today!”

The abyssal True Divinities all moved towards the front of the demon army. There were over 60 True Divinities!

15,000 years ago, the Dark Abyss actually had over 100 True Divinities.

Over 20 True Divinity level abyssals had died in the venture into the Demon God’s Tomb, leaving 90 some True Divinities left over in the Dark Abyss.

The abyssals didn't know the secrets of the Demon God's Tomb nor did they know how 20 some True Divinity abyssals died. But even if they knew, it would be useless because they had no other choice; they all had to obey the orders of the Demon God's Tomb Master!

In the past, the Demon God's Tomb Master quietly killed off some True Divinity level abyssals in order to repair the nearly collapsed Emperor Bone Sea. The spiritas True Divinities and Empyreans that were brought over to the Dark Abyss were also killed off by the Demon God's Tomb Master, all of them turned into nourishment for the Demon God's Tomb.

Now, the Dark Abyss only had 60 some True Divinity level abyssals remaining and all of them had been sent out by the Demon God's Tomb Master!

Although the number of True Divinities in the Dark Abyss had plummeted, it still wasn't a number that the 33 Heavens could compare with.

The Asura Road Master had fully released all the destiny and resources that had accumulated in the Asura Road for the last 10 billion years. But, the majority had been used for Lin Ming and there wasn't much remaining. It was already pushing the limits to train another dozen some True Divinities, and these people included Dragon Fang, Jun Bluemoon, Xiao Moxian, Lin Huang, Jiu'er, and some others. These were people who, if they originally cultivated as they did, would have almost been able to break into True Divinity already.

Moreover, besides these people, there was also Dark Demon Monarch, Diwuhen, and a few others. Although they broke into True Divinity they weren't too strong. They were just at the early True Divinity realm, and when compared to those old abyssals who had broken into the True Divinity realm hundreds of millions of years ago, the disparity was apparent to all.

There were a dozen some newly promoted True Divinities as well as the original seven or eight True Divinities of the 33 Heavens. Then, there was Ink and Clear as well as Divine Mist who had seized the body of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign.

Altogether, the 33 Heavens had around 27-28 True Divinities; they couldn’t even reach half of the Dark Abyss’s numbers.

The 33 Heavens had less than half the number of True Divinities and the difference in Empyreans was even greater.

In the past, because of the great war between the saints and humanity, a great number of Empyreans had died. When the spiritas were added in, the 33 Heavens only had a fourth of the Empyreans that the Dark Abyss did!

The disparity in strength was massive!

Although an Empyrean didn’t have any power to resist a True Divinity, if several thousands and hundreds of them were to join together in a great battle formation, their combat strength could not be underestimated.

In this sort of situation, if the 33 Heavens were to battle the Dark Abyss, the result could be imagined.

“Kill them all!”

“Trample flat the 33 Heavens!”

The first ones to attack were the dozen some middle True Divinities in the frontlines; their blood boiled and their killing intent surged to the heavens!

Once they attacked they were merciless. Dazzling demonic lights smashed out like landslides and tsunamis.

On the side of the 33 Heavens, no one was willing to show any weakness.

Ink, Clear, Mo Eversnow, Divine Dream, Lin Huang, Xiao Moxian, and the others all attacked together. Divine Law lights sizzled through the heavens. The waters of the Asura Sea swirled into the air, turned into divine dragons that danced in the skies!

This was the first exchange and was limited to the middle True Divinity realm martial artists and above. This collision was like a brief battle of commanders when two armies faced each other. Although it seemed like just a probing strike, the truth was that it was incredibly significant and related to the morale of both sides!

Whether it was the Dark Abyss or 33 Heavens, every True Divinity gave their all.

Energy beams wildly shot outwards. Some were deep red like blood, some were as brilliant as suns, and some shined with the divine light of Laws, weaving back and forth like silver pythons formed from lightning.

In this frenzied battle, the 33 Heavens continued to occupy the disadvantage. But Mo Eversnow, Xiao Moxian, Divine Dream, Divine Mist, and the others all grit their teeth and persisted. At this time, none of them could weaken their momentum!

In fact, the smallest gap between the 33 Heavens and the Dark Abyss lay in their high level war strengths.

The 33 Heavens had no lack of geniuses.

The Great Flood Demon Kingdom's Imperial Scholar sneered. He waved his hand and more True Divinity abyssals joined the fray. With 60 some True Divinity abyssals against a mere 27-28, this giant difference in numbers simply couldn't be made up for.

"Let's fight!"

On the side of the 33 Heavens, all True Divinities moved to battle!

Monstrous waves rose up from the Asura Sea. Two giant beasts emerged from the waters. They were the True Divinity level vicious beasts that guarded the Asura Sea, and at this time they also contributed their own strength.

But, the disparity was still there; it was unable to be bridged.

After the countless energy storms from the first barrage of attacks collapsed and faded away, the Dark Abyss's True Divinity abyssals simply hadn't consumed much energy. However, the True Divinities of the 33 Heavens all had ugly looks on their faces. There were even some new early True Divinities who had yet to consolidate their strength that had blood flowing from the corners of their lips.

The first exchange was already like this. If the battle were to continue, the ending could be imagined!

MW Chapter 2241

Chapter 2241 – Heaven and Man Array

…

…

…

“Your strength isn’t too bad. It seems that we underestimated you!”

A demon king stood up and sneered at the martial artists of the 33 Heavens. He originally thought that with the difference of strength between the 33 Heavens and Dark Abyss, it would be a completely lopsided battle. But he never thought that while the Dark Abyss had been weakened, the 33 Heavens would actually rise up in their desperation and so many masters would appear.

In this battle, although it seemed that the Dark Abyss’s victory was assured, they would still have to pay a considerable price.

But so what? If the abyssals were able to leave the Dark Abyss, become the sole rulers of the 33 Heavens and have their race continue onwards for another trillion years, even surviving the next great Shattering of the universe, then all of these sacrifices would be worth it.

The four upper True Divinity abyssals also attacked at this time. Demonic energies surged from their bodies but they didn't attack the martial artists of the 33 Heavens. Rather, they used their energies to draw up a massive array diagram.

With so many True Divinity abyssals in front of them, the 8600 Empyreans of the Dark Abyss also flew into the array diagram.

"This is bad, they are planning to go all-out!"

With 60 some True Divinities and over 8000 Empyreans, this was the complete strength of the Dark Abyss. Now, they gathered their strength in a grand array formation. If they were to attack like this then their strength could be imagined!

In a large-scale battle between martial artists, the effects of battle arrays were remarkable. If they scattered out the attack they could absolutely sweep away the entire battlefield.

The Dark Abyss had already formed an array formation. The only way for the 33 Heavens to deal with them was to also form a battle array and meet them head-on!

But in a situation where the overall strength of the 33 Heavens was far inferior to the Dark Abyss's, if their battle arrays were to collide then the 33 Heavens were sure to suffer serious casualties!

Death was not fearful. What was scary was to die without meaning.

In this final battle, no one held back. Many martial artists of the 33 Heavens even spat out blood essence and overdrew their own life potential!

Everyone came into this battle with the determination to die. At this time, no one wavered; they were already pushed into a corner without any path to retreat!

As the martial artists of the 33 Heavens were ready to risk their lives in this battle, the Asura Sea separated below them and a mottled stone altar began to rise up from the sea into the skies.

"Divine Seal Altar!?"

The martial artists of the 33 Heavens certainly knew what the Divine Seal Altar was; it was a spirit treasure that the Asura Road Master had refined in the past. It had nearly been destroyed by the Demon God's Tomb Master and everyone thought that it was damaged beyond use or repair. But now, it actually appeared!

“Mm? That is - !?”

Everyone saw glittering Asura Heavenly Dao runes shimmering atop the Divine Seal Altar. Could this be the work of… the Asura Road Master!?

The martial artists of the 33 Heavens were already in desperate straits. Now, as they saw these shimmering Asura Heavenly Dao runes, all of them were left excited. If the Asura Road Master could help them out then even the demon army before them wouldn’t be enough!

Everyone was filled with expectations. They all fervently wished to see the Asura Road Master display his heaven-transcending abilities to slaughter all their enemies.

But, this did not occur. Instead, runes shot out from the Divine Seal Altar, turning into divine beams of light that shrouded a part of the world.

“Use this Heaven and Man Array as the foundation to protect me for one month!”

At this time, a dignified sound transmission echoed into the ears of the 33 Heavens’ martial artists.

They could immediately tell that this was Lin Ming’s voice.

Although the tone was the same as Lin Ming's voice, the majesty and momentum contained within was eternal and forever, like that of a supreme general, leaving everyone's hearts shocked.

They all immediately realized that the one who moved to action just now was not the Asura Road Master but Lin Ming!

In fact, the grand array that appeared in front of everyone was not purely the Asura Heavenly Dao Array, but a Heaven and Man Array formed from Lin Ming fusing together the world of the universe and the world of the body.

"His Majesty Human Sovereign is still in seclusion but he can also help at this time?"

What Lin Ming said was to protect him for one month. This was different from the 100 years that they had expected before this.

Would Lin Ming be able to leave seclusion in one month?

Many people were inexplicably thrilled at this possibility. They didn't know that Lin Ming had used every method at his disposal to leave seclusion in advance, and they also didn't know that the Demon God's Tomb Master had calculated this date ahead of time and had launched the final war to destroy Lin Ming before his seclusion finished.

“Protect His Majesty the Human Sovereign for a month!”

The martial artists of the 33 Heavens all gripped their fists. Before this, they thought that all their hopes were ruined, but now they knew that as long as they could protect Lin Ming for a month, they might have a path to survival!

As long as they could guarantee Lin Ming’s safety then the bloodline of the races of the 33 Heavens would be able to continue onwards. This was their only chance.

The Heaven and Man Array covered all martial artists of the 33 Heavens.

At this time, no one held back. They poured all of their strength into this grand array.

Hum –

The grand array formed a giant barrier of light that radiated outwards, colliding with the abyssals’ battle array!

The abyssals’ array formation shattered. Dozens of Empyreans abyssals were unable to withstand the impact of energy through their bodies and instantly burst apart into pieces of flesh and bloody mist!

In this horrifying collision, the deaths of Empyreans only took a brief moment.

“Retreat!”

The four demon kings shouted out in unison. The 33 Heavens’ counterattack had exceeded their expectations.

They didn’t think Lin Ming would actually have such skills. Even in seclusion he was still able to interfere in their fight.

They didn’t know what Lin Ming’s plans were and they also didn’t know that Lin Ming had sent out a sound transmission telling the martial artists of the 33 Heavens to protect him for one month.

It was naturally impossible to reveal this plan to the abyssals, otherwise they would desperately attack for a full month non-stop.

“This brat, he’s already at death’s door yet he’s still putting up a last ditch struggle.”

“Humph, he’s only delaying the end. This grand array formation can only defend and not attack, just like a turtle shell. If we continue to attack then sooner or later we’ll break through!”

The four demon kings soon discovered the ‘weakness’ of the Heaven and Man Array. This was a purely defensive array formation, but for Lin Ming, as long as he could defend then it was his victory!

However, defending against the siege of this demon army for an entire month was easier said than done.

Although dozens of abyssal Empyreans had died in that brief collision just now, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens weren’t in a much better state.

Many people had burned their blood essence and greatly depleted their life potential. Many of them had also received heavy wounds.

“Those that are wounded hurry and restore yourselves! Those that are uninjured, guard the grand array! Everyone that has precious pills, take them all out and tend to the wounded!”

The one speaking was Divine Dream. She also moved first to set an example. She took out all the precious pills within her spatial ring to help heal others.

Soon after, Soaring Feather, Astral Vault, and Emperor Shakya also took out their pills. The spiritas, saint, primal god race martial artists, all of them followed suit.

A month would be a prolonged war. These precious pills and various energy stones would all be of great use and would need to be arranged ahead of time. At this time, no one hid anything any longer. They all understood that the only way to survive this calamity was to work together as one!

MW Chapter 2242

Chapter 2242 – Until the End

…

…

…

“Not attacking and only defending, you’re just waiting for death! Humph!”

“Although Lin Ming is strong he is actually in seclusion and was also wounded by the Demon God. The array formation he laid down can’t stop us!”

The abyssal True Divinities all attacked, working together to crush the defensive array formation in front of them. They knew that all array formations had a limit to the amount of energy they contained, and once this limit was reached the array formation would naturally shatter. At that time, all that awaited the martial artists of the 33 Heavens was slaughter.

However, as the abyssal True Divinities released world-shocking demonic strikes again and again, their complexion began to turn ugly.

The firmness of this array formation had surpassed their imaginations! They attacked for such a long time but there hadn't been much energy loss at all.

"How could this be…?"

"This array formation is strange… that Lin Ming, even in seclusion he could lay down such an array?"

The abyssal True Divinities muttered, shocked.

In fact, it wasn't just them who were shocked, but the martial artists of the 33 Heavens within the Heaven and Man Array were also stunned by the effectiveness of this array formation.

Within the array formation they could feel the energy structure to an even clearer degree.

The structure was a sublime and perfect composition, just like an eggshell. It dispersed the attack of every abyssal across the entire array formation, minimizing the impact of every strike to its lowest possible degree.

This array formation was named the Heaven and Man Array. The light barrier that shrouded everyone was ‘heaven’, and the martial artists within were ‘man’. With heaven and man combined together, this was a perfect union to enforce the array formation.

The abyssals possessed a horrifying strength. But even though they had over 60 True Divinities and 8000 Empyreans gathered together they still couldn’t manage to break past the array formation, and the person who set up the array formation was still in seclusion.

“Lin Ming, it seems he is far stronger than we expected. No wonder the lord Demon God places so much importance on him…”

“I thought that we could slowly erase the runes of the array formation then all of us could attack together to completely destroy it, but it seems that this isn’t a good idea.”

“Let’s change methods. Break through the defensive array with our battle array!”

The leading demon kings made a decisive change in tactics. They led the 8000 some abyssal Empyreans and 60 abyssal True Divinities to set up their battle array once more and directly attack the Heaven and Man Array.

“We cannot let those abyssal get what they want. We’ve only managed to hold out for a day so far.”

“There are still 29 days remaining. We must persist until the end, otherwise all that we have worked for will end in vain!”

Seeing the abyssals go all-out, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens revolved their blood vitality to the limit. Energy surged out from them in monstrous waves!

They were inferior to the Dark Abyss in overall strength, but by relying on the Heaven and Man Array they could greatly diminish the disparity.

The 33 Heavens had 28 True Divinities that guarded 28 different spots within the array formation. As for the 1800 some Empyreans, they were dispersed equally around the array formation. All of them utilized their energies to the limit to resist the abyssals.

The abyssals began their attacks once more. The distant skies were already swallowed up by tumbling waves of demonic flames!

Divine light howled and pierced through the world. The demon army’s attack brutally fell down upon the Heaven and Man Array.

Bang!

Like a thousand stars exploding, all sounds faded as light seemed to disappear from the heavens and earth.

Even the defensive abilities of the Heaven and Man Array were unable to completely isolate out the impact of energy. Ripples appeared in the light barrier and spread out in all directions.

20 some Empyreans bore the brunt of this attack and weren't able to withstand the impact force. They were sent tumbling backwards, spitting out blood. Three Empyreans amongst them blew apart as they were sent flying back, immediately dying a miserable death!

People had died!

Ever since the final apocalyptic war arrived, this was the first time that people from the side of the 33 Heavens had died!

The losses of these three Empyreans didn't seem like much, but everyone knew that this was only the beginning.

Of the full month needed, only a single day had passed.

As the battle continued it would only become increasingly heated and violent. The energies consumed would grow larger and larger, and inevitably there would be more and more that died.

This was would be a bitter and protracted defensive war. Their only hope to live on was to… last until the end!

“Heal the wounded!”

Divine Dream’s voice echoed out from within the Heaven and Man Array.

As for the three Empyreans that had died, their mutilated and incomplete corpses had already been respectfully received into the spatial rings of their companions.

At this time, no one was sad and no one mourned. This was because no one knew just when they themselves would become icy cold corpses that were put away by others.

If some people managed to luckily live through this war then their corpses would be buried and they would be lifted up as heroes, recorded in the annals of history and in the hearts of their descendants.

But if they all died then their corpses would be turned to ashes and the abyssals would mock them as naught but dead slaves.

The martial artists of the 33 Heavens silently distributed pills around. Everyone began to meditate and restore themselves because they knew that before long, the next attack of the abyssals would arrive.

Since they were only defending and not attacking, the number of abyssals would not lower over time.

But as for them, every collision meant that some people would die. And the more people that died the weaker the defensive strength of the array formation would become. And the weaker the defensive strength of the array formation, the more people would die. This cycle would continue until the entire array eventually collapsed!

“These trash races are actually so difficult to deal with…”

The four demon kings all had gloomy complexions. Their attack had only managed to kill three Empyreans. It was hard for them to accept this as a victory.

“A good number of them burnt their blood essence so it will surely be a problem for them to restore themselves. As for our demon army, no one has burnt their blood essence so our recovery speed will be faster.”

“If we continued to wear them down then they will undoubtedly die!”

“Burning their blood essence? Humph!” Cold light flashed in the eyes of the Deep King Road Sovereign. “With so many people, if they each took turns burning their blood essence then they could drag things out for a long time! I do not want them to live this long. The lord Demon God has ordered us to destroy them as soon as possible! If they can burn their blood essence then so can we! Our six great totem level sects have accumulated countless blood pills and heavenly materials for all these years. If it is only the Empyrean level abyssals then even if they burn their blood essence we could still make up for their lost blood vitality!”

“Good! Then there is no need to delay. Destroy them all!”

The abyssals began to eat up blood pills and restore their strength.

Infernal energy gushed out from their bodies, soaring to the heavens. Killing intent seethed all around them. Even from far away and beneath the Heaven and Man Array, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens could still clearly feel this.

The abyssals had used less than a day to restore themselves to their peak state.

They had formed their battle array once more and wanted to tear the Heaven and Man Array apart. This time, a good number of abyssals chose to burn their blood essence.

Terrifying levels of energy began condensing in the horizon.

The Asura Sea surged. The heavens trembled. A sneer appeared on the lips of the four upper True Divinity abyssals. All of them were diabolically grinning.

“Lin Ming, no matter how outstanding your talent is, you will still die here!”

MW Chapter 2243

Chapter 2243 – One Month Period

…

…

…

Weng!

In the skies, the energies of over 8000 abyssals gathered together, transforming into the phantom of a giant demon god.

This demon god was like the ancestor god capable of destroying all of existence. It emitted a terrifying pressure, overlooking the world with disdain!

“What is that!?”

On the side of the 33 Heavens, many martial artists had just finished their meditation. As they looked at the giant demon god phenomenon swirling in the skies, all of them felt greatly suppressed.

Even though they were separated by the Heaven and Man Array, this demon god's aura still left them gasping for breath.

Some of the 33 Heavens' martial artists with weaker cultivations paled, their palms dripping with sweat.

"This is a battle array, one even stronger than the last. If I'm not wrong then this battle array is fused with runes of the Demon God!"

The one who spoke was Ink. His sight and experience was naturally something that the martial artists of the 33 Heavens couldn't compare with.

"Runes of the Demon God?" Emperor Shakya's heart chilled. They had heard the name Demon God many times already. It seemed that this Demon God was the founder of the Demon God's Tomb.

"It's just like Lin Ming adding his power of Laws unto our bodies. Similarly, the abyssals can find higher level runes to strengthen themselves. Things are going to become more difficult from here on out..."

Clear bitterly smiled. He realized that this battle would be more severe than first imagined.

But no matter what runes were fused into the battle array of the demon army, this wasn't what the martial artists of the 33 Heavens needed to care about. All they had to do was to fight with everything they had.

Roar!

The demon god roared. Its cry shattered mountains and sundered rivers. It was like a boundless curtain of night came falling down, covering the defensive array of the 33 Heavens martial artists inside.

Kacha!

The Heaven and Man Array emitted a creaking sound from the immense burden; cracks began to appear on the surface.

This was strength capable of destroying a world. The closest several hundred Empyreans bore the brunt of this attack. Their bodies shook and they were sent flying away. In the terrifying impact they were no different from tiny leaves in a storm, simply incapable of resisting. Even the True Divinity level Jun Bluemoon spat out a mouthful of blood that dyed his snow white clothes red.

"Ahhh!"

As everyone drew back, screams emitted from the martial artists of the 33 Heavens. Some people were unable to withstand the violent energy shockwaves that were released and exploded into pieces!

Everyone watched helplessly as those who were just breathing a moment ago were torn to shreds.

Within this energy storm, if one was able to maintain their protective shields then they would be able to withstand it. But if one's protective shields were shattered then one would immediately be ripped to pieces!

This miserable way of death left everyone's scalps tingling with fear.

The storm ravaged the world for a full incense stick of time before slowly subsiding. The Asura Sea had evaporated from the heat, and over 20 martial artists of the 33 Heavens had died in the chaos. Many of them didn't even have skeletons remaining and were only a vague pile of blood and goo on the ground.

"This is too tragic!"

Those that died had all been overlords of the 33 Heavens. Many of them had lived for millions of years already and were rulers of their own worlds. But in a war of this level, all of them were incomparably fragile.

All that could be collected for burial were incomplete corpses. The hearts of the 33 Heavens' martial artists were filled with sadness and grief.

However, no one stopped to mourn the dead. Without instruction from Divine Dream they all began to sit down and meditate to restore their energies.

What awaited them was an even more brutal battle.

"Jun Bluemoon, are you alright?"

Divine Dream worriedly inquired into Jun Bluemoon's wounds. Within the 33 Heavens, there were only 28 True Divinities left remaining. If Empyreans died then they wouldn't collapse, but every time one of the 28 True Divinities died it would make the array formation lose a supporting corner, causing the pressure to be that much greater.

"I'm fine..."

Jun Bluemoon forced out a smile, indicating that he could still continue to fight.

Clear took out a pill and fed it to Jun Bluemoon to help him recover as soon as possible.

“These wretches!”

In the distance, a pale Great Flood Demon Kingdom Imperial Scholar hatefully gnashed out. In that strike just now, he and the other upper True Divinities had formed the foundation of the array formation and had consumed a tremendous amount of energy.

Although they had struck open a crack in the Heaven and Man Array, this crack wasn’t enough to shatter the grand array. And as they watched, the array formation was clearly repairing itself. This left the many abyssals stunned. This array formation was far stronger than their initial expectations.

“Humph, let’s see just how long they can last.”

This was a protracted war of attrition. The Dark Abyss would launch an attack against the 33 Heavens every day. Sometimes several of the 33 Heavens’ martial artists would die, sometimes it would be around a dozen, and sometimes it would be in the dozens.

Everyone had already become accustomed to their allies dying by their sides. After witnessing so much death all around them, these overlords of the 33 Heavens were actually no longer afraid of dying.

In truth, they valued their lives, but they feared the annihilation of their races even more. They feared that after their death their descendants would be taken in as slaves and even reared as beasts in pens, butchered whenever the abyssals wished.

The fierce battle continued for another 12 days. The 33 Heavens had lost around 300 Empyrean level martial artists so far.

Three True Divinities had been injured, of which Jun Bluemoon was the most severely wounded. This wasn't because Jun Bluemoon was weak. In fact, Jun Bluemoon's strength was outstanding amongst lower True Divinities. However, because he had to withstand the direct frontal impact of the abyssal race's battle array, his injuries had superimposed on each other, causing him to suffer heavy losses.

Even so, Jun Bluemoon didn't withdraw to the rear because the current situation didn't allow him to do so.

After the 15th day, over 400 Empyreans had died on the side of the 33 Heavens.

To the Heaven and Man Array, the 28 True Divinities were the most important figures; they were the crux, the foundation of the array. But Empyreans were also important. When 1800 Empyreans gathered together, the war strength they displayed was incredible.

For this Empyrean level war strength, if a few dozens died then the losses were acceptable. But after hundreds died, it became clear that the defensive capabilities of the Heaven and Man Array had weakened.

With every attack, more and more large cracks formed and these cracks also healed themselves at an increasingly slow pace.

The 33 Heavens' martial artists could clearly feel the pressure rapidly increasing on them. It had to be known that on the side of the Dark Abyss, they suffered nearly no losses. At most some abyssals had burnt too much blood essence and temporarily drew back to restore themselves.

In a situation where one side's overall strength was twice that of the other side, and in a situation where that side chose to use a continuous attack to wear down their enemy, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens were finding themselves slowly unable to continue!

And currently, only half the amount of the required time that Lin Ming had spoken of had passed!

Could they really last for a month? No one could guarantee this.

Perhaps before a month passed, all the martial artists of the 33 Heavens would have died in battle already.

From the 16th day onwards, the abyssals’ onslaught actually slowed down a little.

But in this situation Divine Dream and the other high level figures of the 33 Heavens didn’t feel any sense of ease. Rather, their moods became increasingly dark and tense. They realized that this was likely the calm before the storm. The abyssals were gathering their energies for an even more terrifying attack!

MW Chapter 2244

Chapter 2244 – Evil

…

…

…

Divine Dream's speculations weren't wrong; the abyssals were indeed gathering their strength. And, their next attack completely surpassed the expectations of the 33 Heavens martial artists.

After a quiet three days, it was the 18th day of the abyssal invasion.

Winds began to suddenly surge. 10,000 miles high in the sky, the vault of the heavens was torn open and a space channel appeared from nowhere.

"Space channel!"

Seeing this, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens all felt their hearts tighten. The Demon God's Tomb Master's attack and the abyssal invasion had all been done through space channels.

If this space channel suddenly appeared then it was likely the work of the Dark Abyss. In other words, it was absolutely bad news.

"Are those reinforcements from the Dark Abyss!?"

"The current demon army has already forced us to the edge of the cliff. If more reinforcements come then we're doomed!"

A blood-drenched martial artist of the 33 Heavens said. No one doubted that if more reinforcements came rushing out from that space channel, then they wouldn't even be able to last until the 20th day.

Roar!

A heaven-shaking roar blasted out from the space channel.

This was different from what the martial artists of the 33 Heavens suspected. What passed through the space channel were not reinforcements of the abyssal army, but a massive demon head.

This demon looked like a skull that was soaked in blood. Its entire body was bathed in deep purple flames and it was over a thousand miles tall. As it floated in the skies, it was like a hideous purple-red star.

When this demon appeared, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens suddenly felt a tremendous pressure push down upon them. It was like the world itself were falling down upon them, and even the Heaven and Man Array was aroused because of this pressure.

“What is that thing!?”

“I have no idea!”

Seeing this abyssal appear, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens were left in a frenzied panic. This monster was only a head – could it be an abyssal?

No matter what this thing was, what was true was that this demon head was their great enemy!

“It...” Ink and Clear looked at the demon head in the skies, their complexions turning ugly.

“Do two seniors know what that is?” Divine Dream’s heart raced as she saw Ink and Clear’s complexions. It was clear from their reactions that this demon head was incredibly formidable.

“If I’m not wrong then that giant demon head is… one of the six great totem abyssals – Evil!” Ink and Clear were subordinates of Asura and knew what the scene of the great war from 10 billion years past had been like.

These words shocked everyone. “Evil? How is that possible?”

The 33 Heavens martial artists now knew that Deep, Flood, and the Soul Emperor were all avatars of the Demon God’s Tomb Master. And in order to complete his seclusion, the Demon God’s Tomb Master had already fused together his three avatars.

As for the other totem level abyssals like Evil, Eon, Nether, and so forth, they had already died. 10 billion years ago they had been struck down by the Asura Road Master and Immortal Sovereign.

“Evil indeed died, but a totem level abyssal can be reborn. An abyssal can accept the abyssal ritual within the Demon God’s Tomb to create a new totem level abyssal…”

Ink and Clear’s words caused despair to surge in the hearts of all those present. A totem level abyssal was an existence only inferior to a Beyond Divinity powerhouse!

This abyssal demon army had already pushed them to the limits of what they could withstand. If this Evil that was stronger than all of them was added on, then the result could be imagined.

They feared the Heaven and Man Array might instantly explode!

“Lin Ming…”

Divine Dream bit her lips and gazed towards the direction where Lin Ming was in seclusion. She sighed and muttered to herself, “You have protected us so many times, and yet we cannot even manage to protect you once?”

“Don’t panic! This is indeed ‘Evil’, but its strength might not be as high as you imagine. The six totem level abyssals are born after passing through the test of the abyssal ritual, but in truth that is the strength of the Demon God’s Tomb Master. The Demon God’s Tomb Master divides a portion of his strength to seal into the bodies of these totem level abyssals.”

“But now, the Demon God’s Tomb Master is in seclusion and needs to condense as much strength as he can. It is unlikely that he was able to form the complete ‘Evil’… moreover, the ‘Evil’ before us has only grown in the last 10,000 some years. Its true strength should be far from being able to compare with a true totem level abyssal.”

As Ink and Clear were speaking, Evil was already launching its attack!

Evil roared, its massive jaws opening and shooting out a beam of red divine light. This divine light fused together with the total strength of the Dark Abyss's demon army and came crashing down onto the Heaven and Man Array!

Peng!

The Heaven and Man Array fiercely trembled. The thick barrier of the array actually had a hole blown open in it!

Waves of energy raged outwards. Dozens of 33 Heavens martial artists were swept into these waves and instantly disintegrated. This divine beam of light would soon tear open the great array formation propped up by the martial artists of the 33 Heavens! In this crucial moment, all seven of the several strongest martial artists of the 33 Heavens – Divine Dream, Mo Eversnow, Ink, Clear, Lin Huang, Xiao Moxian, and Divine Mist who had seized the body of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign, attacked together.

Divine Dream led the counterattack and bore the brunt of the strike. She overdrew the strength of her divine soul to cut out with her sword!

However, the strength that the abyssals had been gathering for so long was incredibly potent. Divine Dream's chest was crushed inwards by the impact force. Her arms broke and she was sent tumbling backwards, spitting out a mouthful of blood.

Mo Eversnow, Lin Huang, Xiao Moxian, Divine Mist, and the others could all feel an evil strength break into their bodies. This strength began to rapidly eat away at the vitality within their bodies as a deathly energy broke into their inner worlds. This icy cold sensation felt as if they were on the verge of death.

“Senior Divine Dream!”

“Fairy Maiden Ji!”

Several people cried out in alarm. But at this time, who could worry about such things? Divine Dream held onto her chest and hurriedly said, “Repair the array formation! Fix it, no matter the cost!”

A hole had been torn in the Heaven and Man Array. And at this time, abyssals had already broken in through the gap!

“Kill them!”

The 33 Heavens martial artists were enraged. They recklessly rushed towards the abyssals. The seven or eight abyssal demons in the front were directly cut down by various Law lights without even their bones left remaining!

Divine Dream ignored her injuries to forcefully summon up her spirit essence. She opened the divine dream space and used this force field to cover the opening in the Heaven and Man Array.

For a time, a massive number of abyssals were blocked out by the divine dream force field. As for those abyssals who had already flown into the Heaven and Man Array, they fell into stupors like flies that had lost their heads. They were caught in the illusions of the divine dream force field, unable to distinguish reality from illusion.

With an overwhelming difference in numbers within the barrier, the abyssals that rushed into the gap were quickly cut down and the Heaven and Man Array was also slowly being restored. But at this time, no one could cheer over this.

Divine Dream's complexion was pale white without even a hint of blood. She had been wounded again and in any case it would be impossible for her to recover by the time the abyssals attacked next.

Even Xiao Moxian, Lin Huang, and the others were also left in poor conditions. Next time, just what would they use to block the attack of the abyssals?

Had their end finally arrived?

MW Chapter 2245A

Chapter 2245A – Explosion

…

…

…

The battle reached an unprecedented state of brutality. When the martial artists of the 33 Heavens desperately tried to kill off the abyssals and repair the Heaven and Man Array, eight True Divinity abyssals recklessly rushed through the giant gap!

These eight abyssals seemed unaffected by the divine dream space. Their eyes were blood red and their gazes like those of wild beasts; it seemed they had lost all wisdom and reasoning.

“Be careful!”

Xiao Moxian cried out in alarm. She could feel dark and evil fluctuations of energy within the eight abyssals. She had felt these fluctuations of energy before – this was the Demon God's Tomb Master's world strength.

Thinking of the manic, beast-like eyes of these eight True Divinities, Xiao Moxian realized that they were likely puppets controlled by the Demon God's Tomb Master!

They were just like Deep Child, filled with an absolutely unwavering faith and loyalty towards the Demon God's Tomb Master and completely unafraid of death!

Just as Xiao Moxian was about to warn everyone about these eight abyssals that wouldn't fear death, something occurred that left everyone shuddering.

Without a word, the eight True Divinity abyssals plunged towards the 28 True Divinities of the 33 Heavens and exploded without hesitation!

Four abyssals split apart, one each going towards the True Divinities of the primal god race, saint race, human race, as well as the Asura Road.

But the four other abyssals hurtled towards Divine Dream. It was clear they could see that Divine Dream was the true leader of the 33 Heavens and wanted to break down the pillar that held up the hearts of the 33 Heavens martial artists!

"Senior Divine Dream!"

In that instant Xiao Moxian, Mo Eversnow, and Lin Huang all rushed towards Divine Dream. However, the four True Divinities exploding themselves happened too quickly. And with the speed of the explosive force and impact waves, it was simply impossible for Xiao Moxian and the others to stop it.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

The strength from a True Divinity blowing themselves up was incredible. In particular, these True Divinities were controlled by the Soul Emperor so they committed suicide without a second thought, immediately burning away the entirety of their blood vitality and divine soul.

Divine lights shot out. The True Divinities of the 33 Heavens were all drawn into the chaos of the explosion.

"Brother To Bagui!"

On the side of the primal god race, Diwuhen's body cracked as the impact from the True Divinity explosion struck him! And this was only because the primal god race martial artists had gathered together to block the True Divinity explosion; otherwise, Diwuhen would have likely suffered a grisly death by now. In terms of strength, Diwuhen was still weaker than the abyssal True Divinity who had blown himself up.

The saints were in an even worse state. Even with Soaring Feather’s protection, the saint True Divinities suffered tremendous losses. Astral Vault’s chest was pierced through and another newly promoted saint True Divinity was directly torn apart because his foundation was too shallow.

But the most miserable were Sovereign Heaven Union and Divine Void. They came from the Asura Road and stood in a different camp from the True Divinities of the 33 Heavens. Here, the different True Divinities all stood together on their own sides. When the eight True Divinity abyssals blew themselves up, the True Divinities of each camp had joined together to resist the explosion. But, Sovereign Heaven Union and Divine Void had only the two of them and their strengths were also amongst the weakest.

Moreover, they were both weaker than the abyssal True Divinity who had blown up. Now, as the two of them were sucked into the explosion they both released miserable cries as their mortal bodies were ripped apart and their divine souls were sundered!

But at this moment, no one had time to pay attention to the dead Sovereign Heaven Union and Divine Void; they were all worried about Divine Dream.

Divine Dream bore the brunt of the attack, forced to face off against the strength from four abyssal True Divinities blowing themselves up!

Mo Eversnow and the others were only able to block a little bit of the energy for Divine Dream; the rest had to be withstood by her.

The divine dream space shattered and Divine Dream's body was stained wet with blood. She was sent flying away like a butterfly with broken wings…

"Senior Divine Dream!"

Xiao Moxian rushed forwards to catch Divine Dream, her eyes filled with worry and anxiousness. In this war, Divine Dream was their central pillar. If something happened to her then morale would plummet.

Divine Dream had wounds upon wounds. Her face was pale like funeral paper and blood flowed out from her mouth and ears.

"Her spiritual sea has been torn and she overdrew her life. It will be impossible for her to restore her combat strength in a short period of time…"

Ink could make out Divine Dream's current state from a glance. As he did, his heart sank even deeper.

Divine Dream was the pillar of the 33 Heavens. If Divine Dream fell, how could they continue fighting this war?

Now, there was still 10 days left. A powerful ally had appeared on the side of the abyssals, and as for themselves, they had suffered severe losses. Things had become completely disproportionate now, and it was likely they couldn't even last another day.

"Lin Ming… please hurry…"

Xiao Moxian bit her lips as she glanced at where Lin Ming was in seclusion.

She knew that Lin Ming must have entered the most critical period of his seclusion. If he were to be interrupted at this time then all his previous efforts would end in vain…

Lin Huang and Jiu'er flew forwards and grabbed hold of Xiao Moxian's hand.

Lin Ming was their final hope. The reason they persisted until now was all in order to allow him to complete his seclusion. But the longer this continued, the more difficult it became…

There was still 10 days remaining. In the lifespan of a True Divinity, 10 days was not even a flicker of time. But now these 10 days had become an impassable moat, a distant goal that seemed unattainable…

Perhaps they would really die here. But if she could die with Lin Ming, then that didn't seem like something difficult to accept…

Xiao Moxian humorlessly smiled. And at this time, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens were processing the corpses of Divine Void, Sovereign Heaven Union, and the newly promoted saint True Divinity.

Three True Divinities had perished and Divine Dream had been grievously wounded. Without a doubt, this was a calamitous turn of events for the 33 Heavens martial artists.

“Divine Void... hah...”

Seeing Divine Void die here, Empyrean Divine Mist was filled with a deep and strange emotion.

Divine Void was Divine Mist’s sworn enemy. Divine Mist had wanted to burn Divine Void’s bones to ashes and refine his soul, but today Divine Void had died and Divine Mist could only feel a sense of grief, completely unable to summon any joyful thoughts.

Divine Void was not a good person. In fact, he was a thankless person who forgot graces and held no virtues. He was extremely selfish and cruel, but today he had died in battle for the 33 Heavens.

This wasn’t what he wanted. Divine Void wasn’t someone with such noble thoughts, but instead was forced to because he had no choice.

In the current 33 Heavens, whether someone walked the righteous path, whether they walked the demonic path, whether or not they had committed countless sins or had taken countless innocent lives, everyone was forced to lay down their pasts and fight for their continued survival. This was because there was no path to escape left for anyone anymore.

The Heaven and Man Array fell into a deathly silence. The atmosphere was filled with an unprecedented level of tenseness!

“Is there nothing else we can do?”

Divine Dream weakly said as she swallowed a pill. She wryly shook her head.

In front of her, the armies of the Dark Abyss were gathering once more!

Just now, they had lost eight True Divinity abyssals in a single breath. But to them, this loss wasn’t anything at all because they still had over 50 True Divinities in their ranks.

Moreover, the four upper True Divinities and ‘Evil’ remained uninjured!

They just needed around a single day to fully restore themselves. That moment would be the end of times for the 33 Heavens!

“Perhaps… perhaps… there might be a way…”

At this time, Clear suddenly spoke up, his voice grim and sad.

But his words actually caused everyone’s hearts to shake.

“What can we do?”

Everyone’s eyes began to shine. Common logic indicated that they had all fallen into a hopelessly dire situation without any chance of survival. But, the one who spoke was Clear, a Guardian of the Asura Road. When people were in desperate straits it was always easy for them to accept a slim chance of hope, no matter how uncertain that hope was. If there was a chance to live, just who would willingly accept death?

“Yin Yang Despair Valley, Forsaken Mortal Tomb…”

MW Chapter 2245B

Chapter 2245B– Silent Protection

…

…

…

“Yin Yang Despair Valley, Forsaken Mortal Tomb…”

Clear and Ink slowly glanced at each other.

Most of the 33 Heavens martial artists had never heard of ‘Yin Yang Despair Valley, Forsaken Mortal Tomb’, so they didn’t know what Clear and Ink were speaking about.

But, Xiao Moxian actually felt her heart shake.

“That place…”

The others didn’t know about Yin Yang Despair Valley and the Forsaken Mortal Tomb, but Xiao Moxian was someone who had personally gone there.

In the past during Lin Ming’s first venture into the Asura Road, he was still at the Divine Lord realm. He accidently encountered Xiao Moxian in the Great Desolate and the two of them experienced dangers and tribulations before finally uniting together in Tragic Death Valley.

After they killed Tian Mingzi they went to the inner Asura Road. At the Asura Road’s Divine Rune City, Lin Ming attended its great auction and with the massive amount of wealth he accumulated, he purchased the jade dragon’s horn, heaven devouring snake gallbladder, dragon saliva grass, and other such precious materials.

And, these materials were all needed to refine a pill, one called the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill. This was a pill recorded in the Celestial Tyrant Manual and used to open the Heavenly Retribution Dao Palace.

But at the time, the link between humanity and the Nine Stars of the Dao Palace had been blocked by Famine. If Lin Ming wanted to break into the next Dao Palace it wouldn’t be easy, and in order to refine the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill he needed an ominous land.

The place Lin Ming chose was Yin Yang Despair Valley, Forsaken Mortal Tomb!

This was a land that Lin Ming learned about by paying a great price to Heaven's Secret Pavilion. Afterwards, the Ravenous Wolf Heaven Pill was smoothly refined and Lin Ming also spent a good deal of time cultivating within the Forsaken Mortal Tomb.

And all the strange sights that Xiao Moxian saw in the Forsaken Mortal Tomb left a deep impression on her.

First of all, the outside of Yin Yang Despair Valley was protected by the coiling ridge giants. She and Lin Ming spent a great deal of effort to enter that secret land.

And all there was within the Forsaken Mortal Tomb were incomparably giant black turtles, each as large as a mountain. These black turtles seemed to have died, leaving nothing behind but their massive carapaces, and on the back of each carapace was an ancient coffin that reached into the skies.

From these coffins, one could tell that the Forsaken Mortal Tomb was a true tomb. But as for who these 'forsaken mortals' were, Xiao Moxian had no idea.

There were many rumors concerning the Forsaken Mortal Tomb. One of these rumors was that the 'forsaken mortals' were actually giant servants who had once followed the Asura Road Master to war, but no one would could confirm the veracity of these claims.

Today, hearing Ink and Clear's words, Xiao Moxian suddenly recalled what she had experienced with Lin Ming.

“Are those buried in the Forsaken Mortal Tomb warriors that once fought for the Asura Road Master?” Xiao Moxian suddenly asked. Everyone turned towards her in surprise.

Ink and Clear nodded. “Yes. To be more accurate, they were overlords of the ancient races from 10 billion years past. When their life neared its end or perhaps when they were severely wounded, the master would bind their bodies and souls using an arcane technique, turning them into puppets and sealing them away in the Forsaken Mortal Tomb using an array formation…”

“In truth, these people have already died, but they can be awakened to fight just like puppets. They do not know pain, they do not fear death, and they don’t even realize that their boundary has dropped a great deal from what it was when they were alive…”

As Ink and Clear spoke, everyone was shaken by their words. What kinds of arcane technique was this that a corpse puppet could be preserved for 10 billion years?

“10 billion years ago, innumerable overlords of the ancient races died in the great war, but they also knew that the abyssals would eventually stage a return… when they knew that death approached, many of these ancient race overlords were willingly turned into corpse puppets by the master so that they could span the boundless river of time and fight once more.”

“After they are awakened, their ‘life’ can be maintained for around three days. But too long a time has passed. In order to awaken them, one needs not just the Asura Heavenly Dao, but also a tremendous amount of life energy. If the master was still here then it would be fine, but currently the master's situation isn't too good, and it could even be said that his life or death is unknown. If it were us two old men trying to awaken them, then that would be too difficult…"

These were corpses that had been sleeping for 10 billion years. If one wished to suddenly awaken them, it was normal if it required a massive amount of life energy.

But the martial artists of the 33 Heavens could make out a different meaning behind Ink and Clear's words.

"Difficult? Are you saying that it is possible?" Someone asked, excitement rising in his voice. If those slumbering ancient race overlords could be awoken then it would be a powerful boost for their side.

"Yes, it is indeed possible. But to awaken those ancient race overlords, it will require at least one middle True Divinity, two lower True Divinities, and 50 some Empyreans to work together with us. And, all these people will need to sacrifice their source of life. In other words, by using the secret Asura arts, the life force of these people can be transferred to the corpses of these ancient race overlords, exchanging their lives for three days of 'life' for these corpses… meaning that those who work with us will die…"

As Ink and Clear spoke, everyone's hearts shivered.

Die!

Three True Divinities and fifty some Empyreans needed to sacrifice their lives to exchange for three days of awakening for these ancient race overlords!

In fact, everyone faintly realized that if those who helped awaken these corpses would die, then perhaps Clear and Ink would pay an unimaginably high price…

Ink and Clear sighed. The 33 Heavens martial artists were all masters of their own worlds. If they managed to survive this war then they would all become heroes of the 33 Heavens and would be able to comfortably live out the remaining years of their lives in peace and prosperity.

Martial artists at the Empyrean realm and above were revered and worshipped by countless people. Whatever they wanted, they would have. They possessed great authority and an extremely high status. Such a life was naturally incredibly wonderful.

But once one volunteered, that would mean certain death, without any chance of survival.

No one wanted to die. Ink and Clear also wouldn’t force anyone.

The crowd was silent for ten breaths of time. Then, a voice called out. “I… am willing to volunteer!”

Everyone turned and saw that the one speaking was a middle-aged man in white robes. His hands were casually held behind his back and his expression was calm. He was… Empyrean Vast Universe!

Empyrean Vast universe was an ordinary human Empyrean. Relative to all the blindingly amazing geniuses around him, he didn’t show much talent.

He cultivated for a long time and only managed to reach the middle Empyrean realm. Even after he entered the Asura Road and was able to draw upon all of its accumulated resources, his cultivation only neared the peak Empyrean realm. Compared to a True Divinity there was still a giant moat separating them, and this moat was a gap he would never be able to overcome in his life.

Amongst the many masters of the 33 Heavens, Vast Universe seemed common, so common that most people subconsciously forgot about him.

But today, he was the first one to stand up.

As everyone was lost in their thoughts, Vast Universe carefully straightened out his bloodstained white robes. His eyes moved through the crowd before eventually falling on Divine Dream.

Looking at the blood-drenched and pale Divine Dream, Vast Universe had a complex look in his eyes.

Finally he smiled, and his smile was incomparably pure.

A middle-aged man had the simple and pure smile of a youth.

For all this time, Vast Universe had always been watching this woman, and had always been watching as she drifted further and further away from him. Although he could only see her back, he had never looked away.

“Vast Universe...”

At this moment, Divine Dream felt as if her heart had been stabbed with a knife.

So many years had passed, and yet all those years became vague. Vast Universe had never revealed anything to her, but Divine Dream had always faintly sensed his feelings towards her. But, her feelings towards Vast Universe were never more than those of purely a good friend...

“I originally thought that I would be able to silently look at you, until the end of my life... for so many years I haven’t been able to help you in any way, but now I can finally show some use...

“From now on… take care of yourself… the burden on your shoulders is too heavy and your life has been too lonely. If possible, find someone to accompany you and walk together with you…”

Vast Universe spoke these words to Divine Dream with a sound transmission.

Two clear streaks of tears began to silently flow down Divine Dream’s cheeks…

The desire to protect, that wasn’t something which needed words…

Divine Dream opened her mouth to speak, but eventually she couldn’t utter a single syllable.

After Vast Universe spoke, Skyrend Godlord stood up too. “This old man is also willing to join in!”

Skyrend Godlord had already lived for over 80 million years. He hadn’t been able to break through to True Divinity in the Asura Road and didn’t have much of his lifespan remaining.

“I have lived well for a good number of years. To die on the battlefield is always far better than passing away!” Skyrend Godlord valiantly said.

“Then let me be the third…” A spiritas Empyrean stood up. Most people didn’t even know his name.

“As well as I! I was saved from the Dark Abyss by Lord Lin Ming, and my life belongs to our leader as well as Lord Lin Ming!” A female ancient race Empyrean spoke up. She was from the Dark Abyss and had been saved when Lin Ming rescued the slaves from the Demon Association’s slave market at Black Sand City. Ever since then, she had joined Mo Eversnow’s ancient rebel army.

Lin Ming had long since forgotten her, but she would never forget the scene where Lin Ming bought her from Black Sand City. To her, Lin Ming was her great benefactor. Just like Vast Universe who watched Divine Dream’s back, she was also willing to silently watch Lin Ming from behind.

“I also volunteer!”

“Count me in!”

“Me too!”

…….

Empyrean after Empyrean stood up, their voices calm and peaceful. There was no need to speak words of bravery and sacrifice, and yet their voices left a great impact on all who heard them.

Ink and Clear took a deep breath, their hearts and minds tumbling up and down. “This is enough, 50 Empyreans is sufficient! Then… we still need three True Divinities!”

“One middle True Divinity and two lower True Divinities.”

Even if the ancient race overlords within the Forsaken Mortal Tomb were awoken it would be impossible to annihilate the abyssal army. The martial artists of the 33 Heavens would still have to fight. Thus, it was impossible to sacrifice upper True Divinities; one middle True Divinity was already the limit.

Just as Ink and Clear’s voices fell, Lin Huang stood up. But before he could take several steps forwards, a hand reached out to drag him back.

“What are you doing?”

An old voice spoke up – it was Empyrean Divine Mist.

“Your father has already done so much for the 33 Heavens. Do you want us to let his son die too?”

Without a second thought, Divine Mist stood up. He walked in front of Ink and Clear and said, “Then let me go. There is no one here more appropriate than I!”

Divine Mist had seized the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s body and his cultivation had fallen to the middle True Divinity realm. Moreover, because his soul was weaker than the mortal body he possessed, it was impossible for Divine Mist to perfectly display the strength of the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign’s body. His cultivation would never rise in the future.

Just now, Divine Void had died. Divine Mist had watched Divine Void’s death with his own eyes, but no sense of joy or relief filled him. Rather, his heart felt hollow instead.

Perhaps… he had already laid down his vengeance and hatred. Divine Mist’s sect and family no longer existed, and for his wisp of remnant soul to survival until this time, Divine Mist had a faint feeling that the heavens had allowed his life to continue all so that he could meet Lin Ming.

Those lonely years within Tragic Death Valley had caused all mortal desires and wants to pale in Divine Mist’s eyes. And especially now, he no longer had any more worries. The destiny of samsara, the glories of life and death, everything was but fleeting mist before the eyes.

If that was the case then to die on the battlefield might be a way to return…

“Senior Divine Mist…” Lin Huang wanted to say something but Ink and Clear seemed to have already tacitly approved of Divine Mist. “We still need two more people, two lower True Divinities…”

Diwuhen stood up. He had already carefully considered this issue. Because of the explosions from those True Divinity abyssals, he had been severely wounded and hadn’t yet recovered.

“Allow me to volunteer. My body is wounded but my source of life is not.”

Diwuhen was a part of the 33 Heavens’ primal god race bloodline. If it weren’t for Lin Ming then the primal god race’s bloodline would have long since been destroyed. Diwuhen had always felt grateful to Lin Ming for this, and now was the time to repay this gratitude.

Although he was paying this gratitude back to Lin Ming, the truth was that he was also fighting for himself…

MW Chapter 2246

Chapter 2246 – Jade-like Gentleman

…

…

…

“Senior Diwuhen…”

As Diwuhen volunteered himself, many of those on the side of the primal god race couldn’t bear to lose him.

Diwuhen was their Patriarch. 20,000 years ago, the primal god race had been invaded by the Good Fortune Saint Sovereign and the old Patriarch had died in battle. Afterwards, Diwuhen had been left in charge of managing all matters concerning the primal god race, becoming the new Patriarch.

He had silently held this position for 20,000 years. In the face of his race's extinction, as they stood upon the raging winds and waves, there was no joy and beauty in the position of Patriarch. Rather, to carry this title meant heavy responsibility and immense pressure.

Ink and Clear looked at Diwuhen and sighed inwardly. The Asura Road Master had been of the primal god race in the past, and yet that incomparably powerful primal god race had fallen to such a degree.

"Good… then, we still require one more person…"

As Clear swept his eyes over the other True Divinities, a white-clothed youth quietly stood up. "Then it should be me…"

This calm and indifferent voice caused everyone's hearts to shake!

"Jun Bluemoon!?"

Everyone was shocked. If one stood out to volunteer with Ink and Clear, then death was certain. Those who chose to step forwards were mostly from the older generation. The younger generation still had glorious times awaiting them. For instance, if Jun Bluemoon were to walk further he could become a middle True Divinity; even an upper True Divinity was within the realm of possibility.

To die like was too great a pity.

“Child, don’t be so impulsive...” Ink wasn’t cruel enough to sacrifice Jun Bluemoon here. He had many higher achievements he could reach.

Jun Bluemoon faintly smiled. “My wounds are heavy and I don’t have much combat strength left remaining. I won’t be able to play much of a role in the future fights to come...”

In the previous battle, Jun Bluemoon had been wounded twice and his injuries were heavy.

Although he was severely wounded his source of life remained uninjured. Like that, it wouldn’t be difficult for him to join forces with Ink and Clear to activate the great array.

Clear and Ink were speechless. They could stop Jun Bluemoon, but who would sacrifice themselves in his place?

It would be a pity if Jun Bluemoon were to die here, but for anyone else, all they had was their life. If they died then they would have nothing at all. They had no right to force anyone to do anything, so the two of them simply didn’t try to discourage Jun Bluemoon anymore.

“You... ah...”

Clear shook his head. “Since this is the decision you have made, I will say no more. The required people have already been gathered. Everyone can have two hours to meditate as well as bid their farewells…”

Ink and Clear sighed as they spoke.

The Empyreans and True Divinities of the 33 Heavens had cultivated for 10,000 years together. In addition to the time enchantment, they knew each other for much longer. It was inevitable that people would form friendships, and if there would be those that died then there would surely be matters to settle beforehand.

Diwuhen called the people of the primal god race to his side and began to state what should happen after his death as well as including who would be the next candidate for the position of Patriarch. His tone was gentle, as if he were simply saying goodbye before leaving for a long trip. Many primal god race martial artists sat in deep worship and veneration, and some martial artists quietly shed tears.

Vast Universe quietly accompanied Divine Dream. The two of them were silent as they passed their final two hours before they would never see each other again together.

Vast Universe looked at Divine Dream’s silhouette, saw the black hair hanging down her forehead. This would be the last time he saw Divine Dream…

From the spiritas, an upper Empyrean passed a jade slip containing all his lifetime of studies to his friend. He bid his friend to keep living and seek out a descendant for him that could continue his legacy.

From the saints, a tall and handsome Empyrean bid his farewells to his wife. His wife was only at the World King boundary and simply didn't have the qualifications to participate in the battle. She could only throw herself into her husband's chest and weep tears of sorrow.

From the human race, an Empyrean took out a child that was still swaddled in cloth from her spatial ring. Then, she carefully passed this baby to her friend who had grown with her since childhood and asked her to take good care of her child.

Although she passed her child to her friend, this Empyrean still seemed reluctant to let go of the sleeping baby's hand. As she looked at the sleeping baby, her eyes were filled with love and attachment...

In various areas, similar scenes were occurring all over.

As for Jun Bluemoon, he quietly stood in a corner by himself, withstanding the loneliness and solitude...

In his arms, there was a white and cute little bunny. Jun Bluemoon stroked the soft and chubby bunny again and again. The small bunny enjoyed this, but it seemed to understand something and then look up at Jun Bluemoon with sadness...

Xiao Moxian quietly looked at Jun Bluemoon. She thought that he was a particularly peculiar character.

Over 20,000 years ago at the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting, that was the first time Xiao Moxian met Jun Bluemoon and also the first time she met Lin Ming.

At that time, the Divine Realm First Martial Meeting was basically equivalent to a stage for all Empyrean descendants. Empyrean descendants basically occupied all top ten spots, and it was already a lifetime's worth of honor if a Great World King disciple was able to break into the top 50. As for martial artists from the common people, there were nearly none of them as it was difficult for them to even pass the preliminaries.

However, in such a First Martial Meeting with countless peerless masters and rival geniuses, there were actually two martial artists from the common people that were able to rush into the finals and enter the top 10!

One was Lin Ming and the other was Jun Bluemoon.

Like Lin Ming, Jun Bluemoon had ascended from the lower realms. On the side of the First Martial Meeting he had always been holding onto the furry white bunny and gently stroking it, completely indifferent to all around him.

This little bunny had left a deep impression on Xiao Moxian.

Jun Bluemoon was dressed in white, completely looking like a scholarly youth lost in thought. If this were the mortal world, then there wouldn't be anyone who thought he was a martial artist from first glance, but would instead think he was some weak and fragile scholar that was preparing to study in imperial examinations.

He had always been silent and collected, and if one were to describe him, it would be – jade-like gentleman.

Afterwards, Jun Bluemoon became a World King, Empyrean, and then stepped into True Divinity, become one of the supreme masters of humanity. Even so, his disposition remained the same as before, without the least bit of arrogance around him.

He joined Mount Potala, becoming a lay disciple. He stood indifferent to worldly sins, approaching buddha with all his heart.

Many of those in the younger generation had broad social circles. Even Dragon Fang had his own friends and had even accepted disciples and married his wife.

But Jun Bluemoon remained a single bachelor his entire life, and he remained untouched by the attraction towards feminine sexuality.

Like this, he lived alone. He seemed to be accustomed to bearing this loneliness, like a sword sealed away in the box. The feeling he gave off was always a simple one, that was completely unpretentious.

For a full hour, Jun Bluemoon continued petting the small bunny in his chest, not speaking a single word.

As the final moments approached, he stood up and looked towards Xiao Moxian.

“Fairy Ji, please help me take care of it…”

Jun Bluemoon passed the small bunny to Xiao Moxian. Then, he took out his sword from his spatial ring and passed it to Xiao Moxian.

“This bunny…” As Xiao Moxian received the small white bunny she held it close to her chest, puzzled. In truth, she had always been confused; just why did Jun Bluemoon bring this small white bunny everywhere with him?

She subconsciously stroked the little white bunny. As she did so, her energies came into contact with the small white bunny and then her heart shook.

This bunny…

She could faintly feel that sealed within this bunny was an extremely weak wisp of remnant soul.

If she carefully probed, she could feel that this was the remnant soul of a woman!

In other words, what she hugged in her chest was simply not a little bunny, but the incarnation of a woman?

Realizing this incredible point, Xiao Moxian looked at Jun Bluemoon, unable to find the words to say.

“She is your…”

As Xiao Moxian looked at Jun Bluemoon, she seemed to suddenly understand many things.

Jun Bluemoon gently traced the little bunny’s head and softly said, “Fairy Ji… if there is a day when Sir Lin can wield the Heavenly Dao and even reverse the cycle of life and death, then I ask you to request Sir Lin to give her a good life…

“This is my final wish… with me alone, I would forever be unable to revive her. But if it is Sir Lin, there might be a slim hope…”

“Just who is she…” Xiao Moxian sucked in a deep breath. The ‘her’ that Jun Bluemoon referred to was naturally the incomparably weak wisp of remnant soul sealed within the bunny. Xiao Moxian didn’t know just what Jun Bluemoon’s story was.

But without a doubt, Jun Bluemoon’s unwavering certainty in stepping forwards was likely related to this mysterious woman’s incarnation. Since he felt that he couldn’t rescue this mysterious woman, then he hoped that once Lin Ming stepped Beyond Divinity he would be able to reverse life and death and revive her.

Xiao Moxian was shocked by all of these realizations.

Jun Bluemoon faintly smiled. Without much else, he only said, “If that isn’t possible, then please bury her and I together…”

Then, Jun Bluemoon turned and walked towards Clear and Ink.

“Wait… wait a moment!”

Xiao Moxian stepped forwards and grabbed onto Jun Bluemoon as well as Clear and Ink. “Seniors, is there really no other means? Will those that join together with you truly die? If I also help, if more people help, can we share the burden and preserve their lives? Even just a little, even just a little bit would be good!”

MW Chapter 2247

Chapter 2247 – Reckless

…

…

…

“Preserve their lives?”

Ink and Clear looked at Xiao Moxian and sighed. “I fear that is too difficult. The great array sucks in one’s source of life… if it is all drawn away then a person will die. Even if a little bit of their life source is left over, they will slowly fade away because too much has been taken.”

“If several more people come, that only means there will be several more victims. And if more people sacrifice themselves then just who will fight in the following battles?”

Ink and Clear would work together to summon the ancient overlords that lived 10 billion years ago. But, even if their summoning was successful, they wouldn’t be able to kill off all the abyssals. In the battles to follow, they still needed everyone to work together and it wouldn't be an easy task at all.

If too many people died here, how could they possibly continue fighting the abyssal demons?

"I understand..."

Xiao Moxian said, her voice bitter. Lin Ming had lost his source soul force in the past and had only managed to slowly restore it through countless tribulations and lucky chances. But, these tribulations and lucky chances might not necessarily be able to be replicated by others.

"Are you prepared?"

Ink and Clear looked towards the many Empyreans and True Divinities.

Their expressions showed that they were already prepared for anything.

"Then let us begin!"

As Ink and Clear spoke, runes began to ripple out beneath their feet...

………..

Even though Lin Ming was deep in seclusion, he was still keenly aware of everything that was occurring outside.

His seclusion had entered its final and also its most crucial stage!

In order to increase the rate of fusion as much as possible, Lin Ming had already become recklessly desperate!

Because of the powerful impacts of energy against his body, his muscles had torn and his hair had scattered. He looked just like a rakshasa that had crawled up from the pits of hell!

"Faster! Just a little bit faster!"

Lin Ming shouted, burning with impatience. That month he spoke of was only an approximation. Currently, he was doing everything to hasten his cultivation and hopefully reduce this time!

Ever since the Asura Road Master blocked the final strike of the Demon God's Tomb Master, he had fallen into a deep silence. Lin Ming didn't know what happened to the Asura Road Master nor could he care about it right now.

He only knew that he had to complete his seclusion as fast as possible, otherwise everyone outside would die.

His family, his friends, his wives, even all those fellow comrades of the 33 Heavens who were fighting that gruesome battle up above.

He could not allow these people to die. If he were the only one left alive, then what would be the point of all this?

"Little Black, give me your strength!"

In front of Lin Ming, there was a black dragon that had already shrunk itself to the size of a tiger.

Originally, Lin Ming's seclusion required 10,000 years. In order to shorten the time needed, Lin Ming had summoned Little Black to the Amethyst Heavenly Palace.

Little Black shared the same roots with Lin Ming, and the energies within Little Black were also inherited from Lin Ming. Between the man and dragon, their energies were completely intertwined.

Thus, for these past years, Little Black had been absorbing energy within the Amethyst Heavenly Palace and then using itself as the medium to transfer this energy to Lin Ming.

If Lin Ming were to absorb energy by himself it would naturally be somewhat slow. But with man and dragon working in tandem, even if Little Black absorbed energy at a rate far slower than Lin Ming, it would still hasten Lin Ming's speed.

Everything was supposed to happen along a prescribed and orderly path, but now Lin Ming had become desperate.

He reached out a hand and pressed it against Little Black's chest. His fingers nearly dug into Little Black's flesh and blood.

Bang!

The energy within Little Black seemed to explode!

Powerful energy flowed out with blood from Little Black's chest, gushing towards Lin Ming like a dam that had burst open.

"Awu..."

Little Black emitted a low growl of pain. This crazy and wild outpour of energy nearly caused its body to blow up. But, Little Black knew that Lin Ming had entered the most critical period of his seclusion. Let alone pain, even if Little Black were to die here and turn into a mass of flesh and blood on the floor, it would still persist until his final breath to help Lin Ming complete his cultivation.

"Little Black, bear with me!"

Seeing Little Black's appearance, Lin Ming's heart was pained. But at this time just what was pain?

Energy wildly broke into Lin Ming's body. Within this independent world, a powerful attraction force erupted from him, causing the world strength all around him to form a great vortex. And the center of this vortex was Lin Ming.

In this brutal impact of energy, the pain that Lin Ming withstood was no less than Little Black's. His skin and blood vessels began to crack open as if his body would implode at any moment!

If this were a normal martial artist they would have long since been too scared to continue and would have done everything in their power to stop their cultivation, lest their body explode.

But Lin Ming crazily absorbed energy. He only hated that he couldn't absorb even more energy at an even faster pace!

"Almost, just a little bit more! Fuse!"

Lin Ming roared out in his heart. His comprehension of Laws was high enough, but in order to completely fuse these two great worlds together what he required was a massive amount of energy.

This energy boiled together, brewing towards the peak of possibility. At this time in the world outside, the earth began to shake.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Mountains toppled over and rivers collapsed. In the nearly dried up Asura Sea, massive cracks began to appear in the seabed. These cracks were fathomless, as if the entire Asura Road would be torn apart.

"This is..."

The martial artists of the 33 Heavens naturally noticed the changes occurring to the Asura Road.

Could this world-breaking scene be related to Lin Ming?

Xiao Moxian's breath quickened. She looked towards the place where Lin Ming was in seclusion, her eyes unblinking. She prayed in her heart that Lin Ming could pass this final hurdle and leave seclusion!

However, high in the air, the abyssals also saw these changes. They decided to push forwards regardless of the cost.

"Is this all because of that brat Lin Ming?"

"I don't know, but it doesn't matter what it is. We must attack now to prevent any future nightmares!"

In the brief battle just now, the abyssals had consumed a great deal of strength. Their original plan was to recuperate a bit before attacking again, but now they couldn't attend to such things.

The Great Flood Demon Kingdom's Imperial Scholar crushed a token in his hand. The instant this token crumbled, the eyes of dozens of higher abyssals suddenly turned blood red, just like those eight True Divinities that had blown themselves up.

They were also completely controlled by the Demon God's Tomb Master. During this raid to kill Lin Ming, the Demon God's Tomb Master had done everything in his power to ensure the mission would go smoothly. He had sent over a hundred loyal servants here, including 10 True Divinities and dozens of Empyreans.

And now, these servants had lost their ability to act and were then swallowed up by 'Evil'!

Dozens of Empyrean level abyssals were swallowed up by Evil!

Seeing this scene, Ink and Clear didn't dare to delay any further. They didn't know if the changes occurring within the Asura Road were related to Lin Ming or not. If they were, then it might mean Lin Ming had entered the most critical period of his seclusion and they would have to prevent these abyssals from disturbing Lin Ming no matter the cost.

"Begin!"

Ink and Clear shouted out in unison. Their burned all the energy within their bodies, and their life source and blood essence seethed within them.

Around Ink and Clear, the 50 Empyreans and three True Divinities also offered their life energies without hesitation. They could all feel their strength rapidly fading away, but the power of life that gathered became increasingly intense!

MW Chapter 2248

Chapter 2248 – Lin Ming Leaves Seclusion

…

…

…

The sky seemed to droop downwards, filled with divine light, and the earth was cracked open. The seas had dried up and the entire Asura Road seemed on the verge of destruction, as if the end of times had arrived.

Ink and Clear gathered the many martial artists of the 33 Heavens into an array formation, gathering their boundless life energy and combusting it like a blinding sun. Beams of multi-hued light flew out from the array formation, crossing through the skies like rainbows as they flew deep into the Great Desolate.

At the Great Desolate's Red Moon Canyon, the Forsaken Mortal Tomb that had been sealed for 10 billion years was split open!

Giant bronze coffins opened and ancient god kings flew out from their resting place.

These god kings had already slept for countless years. They had long since lost their wisdom, lost all memories. All they remembered was to slaughter and kill atop the blood-drenched battlefield!

Before their death, they had withstood excruciating pain to be made into corpse puppets and sealed away into deep slumber for innumerable years. And all of that was for this one moment!

They were people that should already have died. Now, with Ink and Clear utilizing a grand array formation to awaken them, their lives could only be maintained for a short three days.

But these three days were already enough.

Roars spread out like a tide, breaking through the universe. Hundreds of ancient god kings savagely burst into the ranks of the abyssal army!

These ancient god kings had all been True Divinities before their death. After dying they were made into puppets and sealed away for 10 billion years, causing their cultivations to plummet precipitously. Even so, the worst amongst them had strength equal to an upper Empyrean!

Among them were powerhouses that possessed the combat strength of lower and middle True Divinities!

“What!?”

“This is…”

Seeing this crowd of ancient god kings rush towards them, the abyssals were shocked. They had no idea where these reinforcements had come from.

These ancient god kings of the 33 Heavens were already withered and dried up, as thin as firewood. Their corpses were wrapped in chains and they held rusty and stained weapons that had lost their luster. Some of them even rode on skeletal mounts, like a legion of the undead that poured forth from hell!

Roar!

The undead army of ancient god kings brutally collided with the abyssals!

One of the ancient god kings leading their force grasped a large flag and plunged it into the head of Evil!

Kacha!

Bones shattered. Evil was enraged. It glared at this ancient god king who appeared in front of it. Although this ancient god king had a thin and withered body, one could still vaguely make out the outlines of his face and his once youthful and handsome appearance. When this ancient god king died, he had likely been extremely young!

10 billion years ago he must have been majestic and glorious, a shining jewel amongst the primal god race, one of their indomitably proud and peerlessly arrogant elites!

Even after being made into a puppet, even after death, even after being sealed away for 10 billion years, he still retained the strength of a middle True Divinity. It was hard to imagine just how powerful he must have been in the past!

Evil opened its great maw to swallow up this ancient elite warrior!

But, just before Evil could swallow this ancient elite genius, the ancient elite genius revolved the energy within him without hesitation and exploded!

Bang!

Divine light soared through the heavens. Evil cried out in pain and its massive body was sent tumbling backwards. Its maw was filled with blood and its chin had nearly been torn off!

“Kill them! Kill them all!”

The Great Flood Demon Kingdom Imperial Scholar was incensed. This undead army fought without any fear of death!

As for them, they had already consumed a great deal of strength because of their continuous battle with the 33 Heavens. Before they could fully restore themselves, the army of ancient elites had come hurtling towards them.

“Just be destroyed!”

The Great Flood Demon Kingdom Imperial Scholar slammed out his palm, completely crushing two ancient elites, ripping apart their meridians and shattering all their organs!

However, the moment before they died, they exploded their bodies without hesitation!

The Great Flood Demon Kingdom Imperial Scholar was able to rely on his profound cultivation to avoid the explosion of those two ancient elites, but the seven or eight

Empyrean abyssals around him weren’t so lucky. They were directly sucked into the vortex of energy where they suffered gruesome deaths.

“Damn it!”

The high level figures within the abyssal army were infuriated. Because they had been caught off guard and also because they had used up too much energy, they simply didn’t have enough time to form a battle array before the ancient god kings of the 33 Heavens broke into their ranks.

These ancient god kings completely lacked any concept of death. Once they realized they were soon about to die, they would grab onto the nearest abyssal and blow themselves up!

Their reckless method of fighting caused the abyssals to suffer heavy losses!

“Withdraw! Tighten up the formation!”

Deep King Road’s Sovereign yelled. The demon army was too scattered and this allowed the ancient army of god kings to utilize their suicidal attacks to the maximum effect. But once they could shrink back and recognize their formation then their losses could be minimized.

The disparity was still a disparity. Even though army of ancient elites didn’t fear death, the strongest amongst them still had the strength of six or seven middle True Divinities and the rest of them had the strength of lower True Divinities and Empyreans; they were still far short of being able to compare with the abyssal army.

With the direction of the high level abyssals, the demon army started to retreat as they fought. More and more ancient elites of the 33 Heavens were killed, and because of the increasing distance, they couldn’t cause much damage even if they blew themselves up.

“This is bad…”

Seeing the battle situation in the distance, the martial artists within the Heaven and Man Array frowned. If this continued then it wouldn’t be two hours before all those ancient elites were destroyed.

At that time, the abyssal army would simply meditate and restore themselves for some time before restarting their attack against the Heaven and Man Array. After that, what awaited the 33 Heavens was utter annihilation.

“Let’s rush out and fight with them!”

“That’s right, we cannot allow the elites of ancient times to die in vain for us!”

The martial artists who spoke were already boiling with fighting spirit. At this time, there was no one that feared death. All they wanted was one last valiant war!

They believed that with by using the protection of the ancient elites, they could rush out and surely cause deep losses to the abyssals!

“No… we will stand back and take advantage of this time to meditate and recover.”

Divine Dream immediately rejected the offer, leaving the martial artists around her confused.

“Our goal is not to cause heavy losses to the abyssals but to defend Lin Ming.”

Divine Dream shook her head. Even if they joined forces with the ancient elites they still wouldn’t be a match for the abyssal army. Just that Evil alone could contend with at least two or three upper True Divinities.

And with those four upper True Divinity Demon Kings added on, how could they possibly fight like that?

If they all rushed out, even if they managed to slaughter their enemies for a day, they would eventually be destroyed. At that time, who would be left to defend Lin Ming?

But if they stayed in the Heaven and Man Array to restore their strength and used the array formation to struggle with the wounded abyssal army, they could at least delay for another five to six days.

At that time, Lin Ming might leave seclusion!

In the skies, the slaughter became increasingly brutal and violent. The ancient elites were nearly all killed off but the abyssal army lost 700-800 Empyreans and over a dozen True Divinities.

When added with the eight True Divinities that had blown themselves up previously and those that had been swallowed up by Evil, there were not many lower True Divinities left among the abyssals.

In terms of quantity, the abyssals didn’t have many more True Divinities than the 33 Heavens. However, of the abyssal True Divinities that survived, most were at the middle True Divinity realm and above. With 700-800 more Empyrean masters supporting them, their strength still far surpassed the 33 Heavens’.

“These damned wretches!”

The four demon kings had thought that their offensive would be an overwhelming victory, but after suffering setback after setback, they were now incomparably enraged.

Even though their opponents were clearly much weaker, they had still managed to drag things out until the present!

"The Lord Demon God gave us 20 days to finish this mission, and now 20 days have passed. We cannot delay anymore, otherwise the Lord Demon God will punish us!"

Upon mentioning the punishment of the Demon God's Tomb Master, the complexions of the higher abyssals all turned ugly. The Demon God's Tomb Master had many methods of torture that were far worse than death.

"Break through that array no matter the cost, even if it's a suicidal attack!"

"Good! We can no longer wait!"

The high level abyssals glanced at each other. If necessary, they could even sacrifice Evil.

Evil was a quasi-totem level abyssal created by the Demon God's Tomb Master using hasty methods and an upper True Divinity abyssal as the foundation. In truth, the Demon God's Tomb Master had branched out a portion of his energy to create this killing beast, and his spiritual sea had been tampered with so that Evil would show absolute loyalty to the Demon God's Tomb Master. If necessary, Evil would sacrifice itself!

"You plan on… sacrificing Evil to blow up the grand array?"

"That is the final method left to us, otherwise there is no alternate way for us to complete this mission!"

Several abyssals discussed their next plan of action. But then, just as they were about to take action, the vibrations passing through the Asura Road became far fiercer!

In the last battle the Asura Road had already been shaking. However, because the abyssals were busy fighting, they simply weren't able to care about such things. But now the trembling through the Asura Road had become far too intense, so intense that the four demon kings couldn't help but frown.

Beneath their feet, the earth began to break open.

The cracking of the earth continued at a horrifying speed. Fathomless fissures formed in the earth, recklessly spreading outwards to the end of the world. Just the width of a single fissure alone was several hundred miles, and they might even be millions or tens of millions of miles long!

"Is the Asura Road being destroyed?"

The abyssals were stunned. There was no excitement in their hearts. Rather, they had a faint foreboding feeling. And at this time, beneath the martial artists of the 33 Heavens where Lin Ming was in seclusion within the void, a dazzling light began to shine out, as if a burning sun were being born in the earth!

The abyssals were all panic-stricken. The unease in their hearts became increasingly strong.

And within the Heaven and Man Array, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens held their breath. They stared unblinkingly in the direction of that divine light.

“Could it be...”

Xiao Moxian shivered. Her heart began to race. In that moment, she could sense Lin Ming’s aura, and this aura was becoming increasingly intense!

Lin Ming... was leaving seclusion!?

MW Chapter 2249

Chapter 2249 – Lin Ming Leaves Seclusion

…

…

…

“His Majesty the Human Sovereign! The Human Sovereign has left seclusion?”

At this time, many martial artists of the 33 Heavens started to realize this possibility. The great earthquakes occurring throughout the Asura Road might be an indicator of Lin Ming leaving his seclusion.

That was right… everyone had heard that the Human Sovereign had to fuse with the Asura Road and Akashic Dream Universe. Although they didn’t understand how this could occur or the specifics, if the Asura Road was fused by Lin Ming then perhaps it disintegrating because he left seclusion was possible…

“These wretches, just what are they babbling about!”

On the side of the abyssal army, the four demon kings all had incredibly ugly complexions. At this time they also realized that the most likely possibility was that Lin Ming had emerged!

“Don’t panic!”

At this time, several upper True Divinity abyssals barely managed to maintain their calm. “Although Lin Ming has left seclusion, he might not have stepped Beyond Divinity. Don’t forget – he has been wounded by the Lord Demon God!”

“Right, that’s right.”

As the abyssals spoke amongst themselves, the earth began to continually crack. Divine light shot out and a pair of massive black wings stretched out, covering the entire bed of the Asura Sea like titanic black clouds!

These were the wings of a black dragon!

Ao - !

A resonant dragon's cry pierced into the highest heavens. Within the storm of energy, two cold lights shot out like a divine sword, thrusting into the skies and leaving the mind shaking.

Lin Ming had most likely left seclusion!

And those two cold lights were his burning gaze!

"Lin Ming!"

"Lin Ming!!"

The moment that Lin Ming appeared, the four demon kings stepped back in the skies, their pupils shrinking.

This fear came from Lin Ming's aura!

The aura was from the countless victories that Lin Ming had accumulated, from the countless powerhouses that had been felled by his hand, from the blood of all the proud sons of heaven who he had slain, this was an emperor's majesty that Lin Ming had cast himself!

The four demon kings were awed and horrified. They drew back again and again, a cold chill running down their backs. None of them were able to summon the courage to face Lin Ming!

There were too many legends concerning Lin Ming. Moreover, he was an opponent that even the Demon God's Tomb Master somewhat feared. Before they even fought, they were already terrified in the depths of their hearts!

The storm of energy faded away. A thousand mile long black dragon stood above the ruined earth, and Lin Ming stood alone above the dragon's head, a spear in his hands!

His body was straight and tall but his appearance left one startled.

He no longer appeared youthful and majestic, shining like a jade sculpture. Instead, his body was thin and his skin was charred black as if he had exhausted his blood vitality.

When the Demon God's Tomb Master's final strike destroyed the Amethyst Heavenly Palace, it had also caused Lin Ming to appear in everyone's vision for a brief period of time. Back then, he still had this burnt appearance and it had left everyone worried. Would Lin Ming have received some sort of irrecoverable wound?

Now that his seclusion had ended and he emerged, everyone thought that he would be restored to the appearance of his peak state. But his body was still like before…

Not only was Lin Ming's figure thin and withered but his long hair lay scattered across his head like chopped grass. This spirit treasure clothing he wore had been torn to pieces, leaving nothing but rags hanging off his body.

With Lin Ming's current appearance, all of the martial artists of the 33 Heavens were left with heavy hearts. Did Lin Ming complete his fusion of heaven and man? Had he been severely wounded? If so, then how much combat strength would he have remaining?

"Hehe! I thought that you completed your seclusion and stepped Beyond Divinity, but you are nothing but a dried up well, a lamp that has lost all oil!"

Seeing Lin Ming's appearance, Deep King Road's Sovereign laughed out loud, seeming to have found his courage again.

That was right. The Lord Demon God's attack had been horrifying. In order to send out an attack of such strength, the Lord Demon God had sacrificed strength that he had accumulated for many years. Lin Ming had been forced to withstand that attack so how could he not be injured?

And even the Asura Road Master likely had his soul turned to ashes! Otherwise, why would he have disappeared?

Lin Ming was strong, but no matter how strong he was could he be stronger than the Lord Demon God?

“Stop with the act. Did you think we wouldn’t know that your seclusion needed 10,000 years to complete, and even if you were given 10,000 years you still might not be able to succeed? Now, only 9900 years have passed, so how could you have finished?”

The Great Flood Demon Kingdom Imperial Scholar tamped down the fear in his heart and stepped forwards towards Lin Ming.

“Your seclusion was interrupted by the Lord Demon God and you suffered a backlash. Now, you are likely suffering from a deficiency in blood vitality and even if your aura is like this, just how much combat strength do you truly have left over? The reason you forcefully left seclusion now is because you know that not leaving is only a road to death. So, how is it? How does it feel to fail right before you reach the end?”

The four demon kings all spoke one after another and agreed with each other. The more they spoke, the more they suspected that their words were correct. Not only did Lin Ming’s cultivation not rise but his strength fell instead!

And on the side of the 33 Heavens, all the martial artists held their breath. They were worried for Lin Ming, and seeing the abyssals forcing their way forwards once more, they subconsciously moved in front of Lin Ming and continued to activate the Heaven and Man Array.

At this time, not even Xiao Moxian, Lin Huang, or Jiu'er, knew what Lin Ming was thinking. He was like a mass of dense fog, leaving one completely unable to understand him.

Then the black dragon whipped its wings and flew into the skies.

Lin Ming stood on top of the dragon, flying closer and closer to the abyssals!

Seeing Lin Ming fly towards them, the four demon kings were horrified. Although they had all spoken rampant and arrogant words, the truth was that it was merely a front and they were actually afraid in their hearts. They actually had no idea just how injured Lin Ming was.

"Attack him, destroy him!" A demon king gnashed out.

They had no other choice. Even if they didn't want to face Lin Ming, he has already left seclusion. So, would they even be able to escape?

Moreover, even if they managed to escape from Lin Ming's grasp, even if they returned to the Dark Abyss the Lord Demon God would likely punish them with a fate worse than death.

"Evil, rush forwards!"

The four demon kings came to a tacit understanding with each other. At this time, none of them dared to attack themselves. Rather, they activated the seal planted within Evil's soul, taking control of it and sending it into a suicidal explosion against Lin Ming; this was the safest method to deal with him.

But the total amount of energy within Evil was terrifying. If it were to explode, it would be no different from a supernova, destroying all!

With its soul seal activated, Evil was completely controlled. Its eyes turned blood red and with a loud roar it rushed towards Lin Ming.

"Just die. With so many of our people being buried with you and even a totem level abyssal dying with you, you should be more than content!"

"Someone like you should have lived a glorious and heroic life, but what a pity you encountered the Lord Demon God and are doomed to be destroyed!"

Several demon kings roared out loud, trying to convince themselves and pump up their courage. They crazily poured their energies into Evil, and Evil began to rapidly expand like a balloon!

At this time, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens were able to see Evil about to explode. If such a giant totem level abyssal were to explode, the force behind that would be unimaginable.

But Lin Ming's complexion remained as calm and serene as before. Facing the menacing Evil whose body ballooned more and more, Lin Ming simply reached out a hand and gently and slowly grasped the void!

"Ahhhh!"

The four demon kings that were pouring their energies into Evil suddenly cried out in alarm. In that instant they were able to feel their energy and divine sense severed by a terrifying strength. Then, they stared helplessly on as the planet-sized Evil seemed to be grasped by a giant invisible hand and compressed!

Peng!

After Evil's head was squeezed to the limit, it directly blasted open!

Evil's flesh and blood also scattered in all directions as its entire body disintegrated!

This was not an explosion of energy but an explosion of pure flesh and blood. The moment Lin Ming reached out his hand, all of the energies within Evil's body had been controlled by Lin Ming and it was left unable to explode itself at all!

Blood gushed out like an erupting volcano, recklessly falling all over the skies. Evil’s flesh and blood was crushed to goo as it started to flow out from its broken body. Sounds of Evil’s cracking skull filled the world.

This was a horrifying sound, one left that one’s scalp tingling with fear!

The four demon kings all stared at this scene with wide eyes, their palms wet with sweat. Turbulent waves rose up in their hearts!

They already expected that Lin Ming was strong, likely very strong, but they never imagined he could make such an attack.

The massive planet-sized Evil that had such a hard skull protecting it was actually… pinched to death?

MW Chapter 2250

Chapter 2250 – World Destruction Spear

…

…

…

When it came to Evil being killed by Lin Ming, the truth was that the abyssals weren’t shocked. Before the attack began they had already planned for the worst case scenario.

If Evil couldn’t severely wound Lin Ming by self-explosion and simply died, then that wouldn’t be strange. Evil could be pierced through by Lin Ming’s spear or even overwhelmed with an even greater amount of energy. There were all sorts of possibilities for how Lin Ming could defeat Evil.

But, they never thought that the massive, planet-sized Evil would actually be pinched to death by Lin Ming no differently from a frog!

Just what kind of abnormal strength was this!?

Now it seemed that Lin Ming had likely completed his seclusion.

In other words, he had stepped into the realm Beyond Divinity!

When one's strength reached the peak of True Divinity and when one's Laws simultaneously reached perfection, then one would be able to step into this boundary. This was the same boundary that the Asura Road Master, Immortal Sovereign, and Demon God stood upon!

"What do we do?" The higher abyssals turned to the four demon kings, all of them panicked as they searched for help. But, the four demon kings were also left at a loss for what to do. Facing Lin Ming, they were no different from a bunch of ants in front of a lion!

"How could he have left seclusion so early? He had to withstand several attacks from the Lord Demon God, so how could he possibly have completed his seclusion!?"

A demon king roared out in unwillingness. But no matter how much he roared, it was all meaningless; Lin Ming was already rushing towards them!

Or, it was more accurate to say that he only took a single step forwards to instantaneously teleport in front of the abyssal army. His figure was relatively smaller compared to the abyssals', but for the abyssals right now, the Lin Ming in front of them was no different from a god that stood upon the highest heavens!

The four demon kings all held their breath.

The pressure emitting from Lin Ming was simply too great, so heavy that it left them gasping for breath. Their hands and feet turned cold and their shoulders seemed to carry a weight so immense that they couldn't help but kneel down in the air.

They had already lost all courage to resist Lin Ming.

"Wait… don't attack us, I will recognize you as my lord and master…"

An abyssal grit out from between clenched teeth, unable to resist the pressure. He hoped that there was some glimmer of a chance that Lin Ming could let him be and simply plant a slave seal in his body.

For martial artists, living with a slave seal planted within them was a fate worse than death. The four demon kings were certainly unwillingly to exchange their lives to live on as slaves, but now, it was likely that Lin Ming would fight the Demon God's Tomb Master in a final battle.

If Lin Ming controlled them and was killed by the Demon God's Tomb Master later, then wouldn't their freedom also be restored?

Hearing the cunning suggestions of these abyssals, Lin Ming only smiled. He reached out a hand. The many abyssals sucked in a breath as they saw this, unsure what Lin Ming was planning to do.

Would he plant a slave seal in them? Or would he kill them?

Facing this dark star Lin Ming that could even pinch Evil to death, none of them dared to escape. Thinking about it, Lin Ming only needed to open a force field to completely trap them like flies in a spider's web, unable to escape at all.

From the heavens and earth of the universe, infinite energy began to condense in Lin Ming's hand, becoming increasingly strong!

This terrifying amount of energy left the abyssals stunned. Just what was Lin Ming planning to do?

When Lin Ming killed Evil he had simply needed to reach out his hand and grasp the air. He hadn't condensed energy at all. To kill the abyssals, he didn't need such extravagant motions.

It wasn't just the abyssal demons, but even the martial artists of the 33 Heavens were left puzzled. As Lin Ming gathered more and more strength in his hand, the Asura Road beneath their feet began to disintegrate at an increasing pace!

A crack of unprecedented size began to race through the middle of the Asura Road!

The Asura Road was long and linear, just like a straight road. This was where its name had come from. And now, a massive lengthwise fissure was spreading through the Asura Road!

This fissure was millions of miles wide and countless billions of miles long. From start to end, the entire Asura Road was cracked open!

The Asura Road had been divided in two!

Magma started to gush out from deep underground, forming turbulent waves that rose up into the skies. The void collapsed and disappeared. Massive mineral lodes broke apart, turned into the purest form of energy that was absorbed by some unknown existence. The various mystic lands that dotted the landscape, the innumerable danger zones, all of them fell apart!

The Asura Road was being destroyed!

This was true destruction!

This level of destruction left everyone stunned. “This is…”

"Look below!"

Someone suddenly cried out in alarm. They discovered that the fissure that had broken through the Asura Road wasn't fathomless at all. Rather, deep deep down, one could see something shimmering with an icy cold light.

There was actually a giant cylinder buried deep in the Asura Road.

This cylinder shined with a metallic luster and was abnormally long. If one used the divine sense of a True Divinity to probe this cylinder, they would discover that it extended from one end of the Asura Road to the other!

"What is that!?"

"This is..."

Everyone, whether they were abyssals or martial artists of the 33 Heavens, were all shocked speechless. Beneath the earth of the Asura Road, there was actually a giant metal cylinder!

Could this giant metal cylinder by the reason for the Asura Road's shape?

The Asura Road was indeed formed in an extremely strange shape. Normally, when one formed their own world it would be in the shape of a square or circle, giving it an overall comprehensive and whole feel, unlike the long ‘road’ that was the Asura Road.

The earth completely disintegrated and countless mountains and rivers broke apart into dust and ashes. The sea vanished into mist and the entire Asura Road finally and completely shattered, placing the metal cylinder in full view of all.

It was unimaginably huge, like a divine pillar that supported the entirety of the 33 Heavens. And at the end of this divine pillar was an icy sharp edge, one that was dark and glossy, fierce and horrible, like a peerless weapon!

...Weapon?

Could it be...

This thought suddenly lit up in everyone’s mind. This giant cylinder was actually a pole, a spear that had been enlarged countless times over!

“Heavens!”

People couldn’t help but cry out in alarm. The divine spear that could pierce through the cosmos had been buried beneath the Asura Road!

It was even possible that the Asura Road itself was formed by this divine spear. Or, it could be that the Asura Road Master’s ultimate goal in creating the Asura Road was to utilize the infinite destiny and resources accumulated over 10 billion years, to use the blood of all those outstanding elites that had sprinkled upon the earth, to forge this divine spear!

This was the reason for the Asura Road’s strange shape!

The spear began to shrink and shrink again. Lin Ming looked towards this ultimate divine weapon that floated in the void.

This was a spear capable of destroying a world!

And what he wanted to destroy was the world of the Demon God’s Tomb.

To use a world as a weapon to destroy another world!

Just what sort of crazy idea was this!?

However, for Lin Ming, this weapon was still incomplete. He began to condense energy once more. Through the countless layers of space, the already refined Akashic Dream Universe also began to disintegrate!

The Akashic Dream Universe was created by Immortal Sovereign. It was originally an incomparably massive spiritual world without any true physically substantive life inside. And when Lin Ming began to refine the Akashic Dream Universe, the spiritas had already severed their spiritual connection with the world.

The giant Akashic Dream Universe began to shrink and shrink again.

In the boundless sea of stars, the Akashic Dream Universe finally turned into the phantom of a great spiritual god. Its body was hazy and dim, completely blurry, simply unable to be seen clearly.

This spiritual god phantom passed through layers of the universe, stepping through space until finally arriving in front of Lin Ming!

This phantom seemed to be Lin Ming’s own incarnation. At this moment, Lin Ming seemed to have become a true and legitimate god, wielding the Heavenly Dao and controlling the cycle of samsara.

The Akashic Dream Universe had disintegrated and turned into this divine phantom?

Whether it was the abyssals or martial artists of the 33 Heavens, they were all shocked. This divine phantom was…

As everyone was lost in shock and awe, that giant divine phantom turned into a flow of light that fused into the World Destruction Spear!

Divine light burned like a conflagration of flames. The endless starlight in the universe seemed to converge at this moment, all of it swallowed up by that pitch black spear. This feeling was as if this spear had sucked out all the energy in the universe!

“That divine phantom is…”

The voices of the four demon kings shivered. They wanted to flee, but beneath the immense pressure they couldn’t even move their bodies. Moreover, they felt as if the energy within their bodies would be drawn out by this demonic spear.

This divine phantom finally fused together perfectly with the World Destruction Spear.

This caused everyone to recall something…

“Is that… an artifact spirit!?”

This thought flashed through Divine Dream's mind. To use the Asura Road to forge the body and then cast in the artifact spirit with the Akashic Dream Universe!

Were all of these things arranged earlier, or was it done by Lin Ming himself?

Or, could it be that this was the Asura Road Master's original plan, and after Lin Ming fused together the highest Laws of heaven and man, he had finally managed to complete the last step!

To thoroughly refine two great worlds and use these two worlds as the main source to forge his own life weapon, this was the method Lin Ming used to refine these worlds!

"Since ancient times, ever since a peerless divine weapon has been born it must drink blood. On this day, I forge this spear and bring it into existence. All of you shall be its blood sacrifice!"

Lin Ming said, indifferently looking at the thousands of abyssals before him as well as the 30 some abyssal True Divinities.

Lin Ming's gaze seemed to overlook all of existence, bringing with it a pressure that could not be defied!

"Ahhh!"

The abyssals were frightened beyond compare. Using their final ounce of strength, they scattered in all directions in hopes of escape. But beneath the force field and pressure, how could they possibly escape?

The long spear broke through the void, piercing through the heavens. Screams sounded out one after another. The thousands of abyssals began to explode beneath the pressure of the terrifying strength, their blood blooming like flowers in the sky!

Even the four demon kings were unable to resist. In the end, they also suffered the fate of a cruel death.

These were enchanting blooms of blood formed from thousands of abyssals dying in unison. Such a scene shocked the heart and mind!

It had to be known that every splash of blood came from a peerless abyssal master!

Such a scene hadn't even occurred in the ancient war 10 billion years ago!

All of the blood, even Evil's flesh and blood, was all absorbed by the World Destruction Spear.

In that originally pitch black spear, a faint red luster appeared!

With the Asura Road as the spear body and the Akashic Dream Universe as the spear soul, this was a weapon that had been refined for 10 billion years and cast using the two highest Laws.

With the blood sacrifice of 8000 Empyreans and 30 some True Divinities, Lin Ming used his Beyond Divinity strength to wield this World Destruction Spear!

Pa!

It finally shrank into a normal-sized spear that fell into Lin Ming's hand!

Lin Ming slowly turned around, his eyes like cold arcs of electricity. He looked at a place deep in the void, fighting spirit gushing out from him like a burning star.

MW Chapter 2251

Chapter 2251 – Your Era Has Been Ended

…

…

…

At this moment, Lin Ming could feel his body filled with endless strength. The World Destruction Spear in his hands could be called a weapon, but in truth it was no different from a part of his body. It was as close to him as his flesh and blood, and whether it was his aura, divine soul, inner world, life wave fluctuations, spirit mark, everything that made him was cast as one with this spear, completely inalienable!

With a thought, Lin Ming's body directly integrated into the World Destruction Spear.

Lin Ming vanished; man and spear had become one!

Rumble rumble rumble!

At the point of the World Destruction Spear, thunder and flame wildly gushed out. Endless fog appeared in the void and a black hole-like space channel appeared in front of the World Destruction Spear.

Storms howled through the void. The World Destruction Spear suddenly flew out, passing through the world, tearing through stars.

As it vanished through the space channel, it seemed to carry away all the energy in the universe.

“Lin Ming...”

Looking at the direction that Lin Ming disappeared in, the martial artists of the 33 Heavens held their breath.

At this time, they had already guessed just what Lin Ming was planning to do. Lin Ming wanted to engage the Demon God’s Tomb Master in a final showdown. This would be the last battle, one whose result would determinate the future of the 33 Heavens!

For Lin Ming, the layers of space existed in name only. As he passed through space, distance lost all meaning. He shattered through space barriers again and again. The God Lamenting Wall isolated out the different Heavens of the 33 Heavens, and this was a barrier that even True Divinities found difficult to overcome. But to Lin Ming, the God Lamenting Wall was as frail as glass!

He quickly flew from the Asura Road, through the ancient universe, and into the skies above the Dark Abyss!

Infinite killing intent burst out from their eyes. The World Destruction Spear came crashing down!

Kacha!

The World Destruction Spear pierced through the skies of the Dark Abyss, flew through the world and plummeted into the black earth!

This spear was like a coiling dragon column that fell down from the highest nine heavens. It broke through all barriers, an unstoppable force. The heavy black earth was pierced through by the divine spear, and the first level of the Dark Abyss was forcefully ripped open!

The Dark Abyss was formed by 18 independent spaces superimposed upon each other. The earth of the first level was the skies of the second.

As the World Destruction Spear tore through the earth of the first level, it also ripped open the heavens of the second.

Because of the massive opening, endless world strength began to flow out. For Lin Ming who had cultivated the inner and outer universes to the extreme, who comprehended the highest Laws and who had also reached the boundary of fusing together heaven and man, absorbing the world strength that leaked out from the Dark Abyss was no problem at all!

Thus, while the World Destruction Spear pierced through the first level of the Dark Abyss, the waves of energy winded backwards, and all the endless energy that flowed forth from the Dark Abyss's first level was absorbed by the World Destruction Spear!

The earth cracked apart, skies turned dark gray, and the seas dried up. The entire Dark Abyss seemed to have all of its spiritual energy completely siphoned away.

After absorbing this strength, the World Destruction Spear became increasingly powerful. Without slowing in the least, it broke into the seas of the Dark Abyss's second level!

The seas were sundered and massive 10,000 mile waves rose up. The Dark Abyss's second level was also pierced through!

By absorbing the world strength, the World Destruction Spear became increasingly fierce, increasingly powerful!

Thunderclaps rolled through the world. Storms swept across the void. Layer after layer of the Dark Abyss was broken open. Lin Ming fused together with World Destruction Spear, fusing together infinite strength in this strike. Finally, he pierced through the Dark Abyss's 17th layer and arrived at the space of the Demon God's Tomb!

Lin Ming clearly remembered the warning that Immortal Sovereign had given him before he left the Demon God's Tomb – the Demon God's Tomb Master was able to control everything within the Demon God's Tomb, and was the absolute ruler of that land. He must never fight the Demon God's Tomb Master within the Demon God's Tomb, unless he had the ability to break apart the world of the Demon God's Tomb!

Just how firm was the Demon God's Tomb? This was a world that had survived the great Shattering of the last universe.

But today, Lin Ming would pierce through it!

Lin Ming's spear was named the World Destruction Spear, and the world it would destroy was the world of the Demon God's Tomb!

The Demon God's Tomb Master had fused together with the Demon God's Tomb. As long as this world was destroyed then the foundation of his strength would also be ruined. This was the best and only method to defeat the Demon God's Tomb Master!

"Break!"

Lin Ming gave a deep roar, his voice echoing straight into the Dark Abyss's 18th level!

The totality of Lin Ming's strength was condensed into this strike. He had poured the entirety of his lifetime of Laws and all of his cultivation into this attack!

Bang!

The point of the World Destruction Spear thoroughly pierced through the world barrier of the Demon God's Tomb. A beam of divine light passed through the world, as if the sword of a spiritual god was breaking it apart.

Energy scattered outwards, forming horrifyingly large explosions. It was like the great Shattering of the universe had arrived early. Endlessly energy storms swept out, completely disintegrating the 18th layer of the Dark Abyss!

The Demon God's Tomb was torn apart by Lin Ming.

Today, this world that was said to be indestructible was actually broken apart by Lin Ming!

In that moment, a powerful impact of energy rushed out from the Demon God's Tomb, causing Lin Ming's body to shake and nearly vomit out a mouthful of blood.

Rich world strength burned all around Lin Ming. Fused together as one with the World Destruction Spear, he was like a burning meteor as he crashed down into the boundless earth, pounding open a terrifying pit that was millions of miles deep!

Rumble rumble rumble –

The vault of heaven collapsed and the earth caved in. This apocalyptic scene was like the end of times had arrived.

As the world began to break apart, the originally indestructible Demon God's Tomb suddenly became frail.

Lin Ming shot out from the massive pit. As he rose up with his scattered hair, he was like a newly born war god!

Pa pa pa!

Burnt black skin cracked and fell off from Lin Ming's body, rustling down all around him.

Lin Ming lifted the World Destruction Spear, stepping forwards one step at a time. His originally dried and withered mortal body began to shine after the old skin fell off, becoming as glorious and beautiful as jade.

“You’re done for! You have lived for far too long. Your era has been ended, by me!”

Lin Ming looked at the surging energy in front of him – this was… the Emperor Bone Sea!

Dense infernal energy and death energy gushed out from the Emperor Bone Sea, recklessly filling the air.

Lin Ming could clearly feel the pained cries of ancient souls as well as that abyssal’s demonic aura!

Death energy became increasingly rich before turning into black smoke that was visible to the naked eye. The black smoke began to rise up like an inferno.

An old man with a head of sparse white hair emerged from the black smoke. His body was as thin as a skeleton and his eyes were filthy. His complexion was that of a dying man, of fading embers.

He was like a dried corpse that had been slumbering in a grave for 100 billion years. Step by step, he moved towards Lin Ming, his movements stiff and awkward.

As this old man saw Lin Ming, dreadful waves of killing intent flashed out from his filthy eyes!

Seeing this hideous and grotesque Demon God, Lin Ming coldly smiled. “It looks like… in the end you were unable to achieve eternal life. You had fused together with the Demon God’s Tomb, but unfortunately, the Demon God’s Tomb has been destroyed by me. Because the universal system here has collapsed, the energy that was bound by it has also escaped. With your life forcing having been drained, you can no longer fuse with the Demon God’s Tomb. You are done for!”

“Jejejeje!” The Demon God bizarrely cackled, as if he had gone completely insane. “If I kill you and swallow you alive I can still make up for all the vitality I lost! I can still repair the Demon God’s Tomb! Now die!”

MW Chapter 2252

Chapter 2252 – The Memories of a Lifetime

…

…

…

Kacha!

Kacha!

The Demon God's Tomb continued to collapse upon itself, disintegrating!

At this time the Demon God was like a wild beast. His hair spread down his head like withered grass and his thin hands had turned into grisly claws. A faint trace of blood red light shimmered in his filthy eyes.

He needed to swallow Lin Ming now, otherwise he would slowly weaken due to the collapse of the Demon God's Tomb, eventually becoming a lamp that lost all oil!

"Sheng Mei! Where is she?"

Lin Ming coldly asked. 10,000 years ago his spiritual connection with Sheng Mei had been severed and he had no idea what had happened to her.

At that time, Lin Ming had been unable to leave the Asura Road nor was he able to help rescue her. His strength was far from being enough – if he were to meet the Soul Emperor then it would have been a sure death for him.

He knew that his wife was in a great danger but there was nothing he could do. The pain and guilt he felt could be imagined!

In these past years, Lin Ming would periodically worry over Sheng Mei. And although he knew that the Demon God wouldn't answer him, he still couldn't help but ask this question.

"Sheng Mei!?" The Demon God diabolically cackled. "That whore was used as a blood sacrifice by me, otherwise how would I have been able to open up the Eternal Wall? Jejeje!"

Seeing the Demon God wildly laugh, Lin Ming's eyes flashed with thick killing intent. He didn't believe the Demon God because at the time he felt that Sheng Mei hadn't died but had instead been isolated out by some sort of mysterious strength.

Moreover, what was without doubt was that the Soul Emperor's plan to use Sheng Mei as a blood sacrifice had failed, otherwise the Soul Emperor wouldn't have dragged out time for so long before managing to open the Eternal Wall.

But no matter what the reason was, the chief culprit behind Sheng Mei's troubles was the Demon God in front of him!

Lin Ming grasped the World Destruction Spear and was about to attack. But then, his thoughts shook. "This is..."

A weak yet marvelous connection touched Lin Ming's heart. It came from a far, far off place...

This sort of connection was like the reunion of old friends or family, leaving one recalling fond memories.

Could it be...

Lin Ming's thoughts changed course. Without spending any time bothering with the Demon God, his figure flashed and he flew out from the giant crack in the Demon God's Tomb!

"You want to run!?"

As the Demon God saw Lin Ming run away, he fiercely grit his teeth and chased after him!

The truth was that he also feared Lin Ming but he had no choice but to chase after him. This was because the Demon God's Tomb had broken to pieces and if he wanted to repair it he required a massive amount of energy!

Currently, all of the powerful abyssals had been slain by Lin Ming. Like this, the Demon God had no other source of nourishment. If Lin Ming didn't die then the Demon God would be unable to repair the Demon God's Tomb.

And because the Demon God's Tomb was broken open, the world strength within would continuously leak out. This would cause the world of the Demon God's Tomb to become increasingly fragile until it was the same as any other ordinary great world.

Once this happened, destroying the Demon God's Tomb would be easy.

How could the Demon God simply sit idly back and watch this happen? He raced out of the Demon God's Tomb through the gap, feeling the world strength gushing out from the world in a storm all around him. As he felt this strength dissipate into the void he felt his heart drip blood.

Lin Ming's speed was incredibly quick but the Demon God followed right behind!

The two raced through layers of space boundaries one after another. In front of Lin Ming and the Demon God, all of these barriers were like doors that were opened wide, none of them able to stop them.

The further Lin Ming flew, the closer the sense of connection in his heart became. Finally, he flew to somewhere in the void and reached out his hand.

Shua!

Space tore apart. Lin Ming reached his hand into the space slit and fished out a gray cube.

This was the Magic Cube!

Considering the time within the time enchantment, Lin Ming had already been separated from the Magic Cube for tens of thousands of years. But now, as he felt this connection humming in his blood, he was overjoyed!

The Magic Cube was not only a divine tool to Lin Ming. It was his memories, his past, something that had carried far too many burdens with him.

The Magic Cube had followed Lin Ming during his travels. The Magic Cube had watched as Lin Ming began from nothing and slowly stepped onto the road of martial arts, becoming a young elite, a proud son of heaven, and finally taking that final step Beyond Divinity!

Although the Magic Cube was only an item, Lin Ming's feeling towards the Magic Cube were far more profound.

Unfortunately, even though Lin Ming found the Magic Cube he still hadn't found any information about Sheng Mei; it was like she had completely disappeared from the world.

With Lin Ming's current strength and the power of his divine sense, even if Sheng Mei were layers of universes way he would still be able to find her. But, for his sense not to reach her, that was actually strange.

Lin Ming sighed, his thoughts filled with worry.

Whoosh!

Close behind Lin Ming, the Demon God came flying straight in!

The Demon God suddenly came to a screeching halt. He stared at the Magic Cube in Lin Ming's hand and his complexion turned horrendously ugly!

"That thing... just how..."

The Demon God was left speechless for some time. But as Lin Ming saw the Demon God's reaction, he roughly understood just why the Magic Cube was here.

Lin Ming originally thought that the Magic Cube had been wrested away by the Demon God. But, he never imagined that Immortal Sovereign would actually have such methods to send it away.

Thinking about it, this was also reasonable. When Immortal Sovereign joined forces with the highest Demon Lord and also had the help of the numerous ancient demons in the Emperor Bone Sea, that allowed him to control the Demon God's Tomb to a certain degree. With such control, sending away the Magic Cube wouldn't have been difficult at all!

Immortal Sovereign used the Magic Cube to control the Emperor Bone Sea, but that was only in order to create trouble for the Demon God; he hadn't thought that he would be able to kill the Demon God.

Immortal Sovereign clearly knew that he wouldn't be able to resist the Demon God afterwards, so when he realized that his time was near, he sent the Magic Cube away!

Wanting to defend the Magic Cube was impossible, but hiding it would be far simpler.

Moreover, the Demon God likely didn't know that Lin Ming had given the Magic Cube to Immortal Sovereign. He probably assumed that Immortal Sovereign had some hidden ace up his sleeve that he had used to control the Emperor Bone Sea.

With how the situation was back then, the Demon God was likely in a hurry to quickly refine the Demon God's Tomb, so how could he spend energy and time on searching for something like the Magic Cube that may or may not have existed?

And when Lin Ming had given the Magic Cube to Immortal in the past, Immortal had recorded Sheng Mei and his own spirit mark in the Magic Cube. As long as he felt this aura it would be easy to find it.

"Senior Immortal, thank you..."

Lin Ming quietly said, feeling heartfelt gratitude and admiration towards Immortal Sovereign. Immortal was truly an extraordinary character. Even after his death, his methods were still transcendent!

If the Magic Cube had fallen into the Demon God's hands, Lin Ming would still be able to take it back. But, he wouldn't have been able to tolerate the Demon God destroying the bloodline connection that he had formed with the Magic Cube through their life and death tribulations.

"The Stone of Eternal Life... what a wonderful method..." The Demon God mumbled, clenching his jaws.

Lin Ming narrowed his eyes, his gaze burning as he stared at the Demon God. He knew that Immortal Sovereign had likely been thoroughly destroyed by the Demon God, and not even his remnant soul would have been left over.

To Immortal, this might have been freedom. But as Lin Ming thought of this, he still felt a knife twisting into his heart.

The grudges of Immortal, the grudges of Sheng Mei, the grudges of all the elites of the 33 Heavens, the grudges of the primal god race, the grudges of the countless lives that died...

All these blood debts could be paid by the Demon God's death, paid with his blood!

MW Chapter 2253

Chapter 2253 – The End

…

…

…

The skies above the Dark Abyss had already completely darkened. The stars and moon were all swallowed up by the inky darkness and if one reached out their hand they couldn't even see their five fingers. The riotous heaven and earth origin energy became increasingly fierce, as if the entire Dark Abyss would collapse in on itself!

The Demon God's Tomb was the foundation of the Dark Abyss. With the Demon God's Tomb pierced through by Lin Ming, the foundations of the Dark Abyss itself were shaken!

Lin Ming grasped the spear in his hands and started to gather his strength. In front of him, the old and withered Demon God fiendishly grinned. Suddenly his bent body began to shrink down; his dried up flesh started to rot and decay, rapidly turning into a pool of slimy flesh and blood.

Bang!

A massive amount of world strength descended from above, all of it pouring into this decayed flesh and blood!

The Demon God's Tomb had been sundered and the strength it had accumulated for over 100 billion years dissipated with it. But, this strength could be used by the Demon God.

Wu wu wu –

In this frenzied storm of energy, the pained howls of countless abyssal souls rang out. There were even living abyssals that were sucked into this storm. They all exploded within, turning into a bloody mist that was absorbed by the Demon God.

These living abyssals all came from the Dark Abyss. They were forcefully sucked in by the wild storm of world strength and turned into the Demon God's nourishment.

A cold light flashed in Lin Ming's eyes. How could he stare idly on as the Demon God increased his own strength?

"If you had fused with the Demon God's Tomb then I might have feared you. But since your fusion failed, you are no longer my match!"

With a great shout, the World Destruction Spear turned into a 10,000 foot long spear light. This was a divine spear capable of annihilating a world. In Lin Ming's hands without any special techniques, without any cultivation methods, it was already able to display the pinnacle of strength!

Ca!

Cold spear light flashed. The mass of pulpy flesh and blood that the Demon God turned into was blown up, sent flying in all directions!

Not only did this strike disintegrate the Soul Emperor, it even disintegrated the void!

Massive space cracks split through the universe, continuing for millions of miles. Dark gray mist gushed out from these space cracks.

Lin Ming simply didn't care about this at all. As he was about to destroy everything in front of him, a vague figure suddenly appeared from the gray mist…

This figure wore black clothes and was slender and sublime, as if they were the source of all darkness in the universe.

Lin Ming froze. The World Destruction Spear in his hands froze. A familiar feeling swelled up in his heart, causing his mind to tremble.

How could this be…?

Lin Ming was stunned. In front of him, an elegant woman was stepping towards him, slowly emerging from the space crack. Her jade-soft hands held up her long dress as she carefully walked forwards, like a beautiful village lady wading through a puddle-filled road.

As Lin Ming saw this woman’s appearance, he felt as if he were seeing things from a lifetime ago.

Sheng Mei!?

How was this possible?

Sheng Mei raised her head and looked at Lin Ming. Her pitch black eyes seemed to contain thousands and millions of words. But, she didn’t say anything at all and instead slowly walked towards Lin Ming…

Lin Ming was dazed for a good period of time.

Finally, he let out a deep sigh. The shock and anguish in his eyes began to gradually fade away, instead replaced by an icy cold killing intent!

Without any warning, Lin Ming attacked. His spear thrust towards Sheng Mei's head!

"Ahh!"

Sheng Mei's beautiful face paled and her eyes seemed to fill with infinite grievances and sorrow. But, Lin Ming's spear didn't slow down at all; it would soon pierce through Sheng Mei!

At this time, Sheng Mei's aura suddenly changed. Her gorgeous face twisted up, turning hideous and fierce. Her hands turned into razor-sharp claws that thrust towards Lin Ming!

Peng!

Sheng Mei collided with the World Destruction Spear and cried out in pain, turning into a fountain of light that faded away.

Lin Ming knew that everything he saw just now had been an illusion. It was an extremely adept spiritual attack.

Whether it was the Demon God's Tomb Master's Soul Emperor avatar or his main form as a world spirit, he was someone that had reached perfection in soul and mental attacks.

Even an upper True Divinity level martial artist would be completely unable to resist this attack. Their mind would fall into illusion and their spiritual sea would eventually dry up, leading to death!

Everyone had heart demons; Lin Ming was also the same. But, Lin Ming's soul was far stronger. No matter how fantastic and profound the Soul Emperor's heart demon attacks were, Lin Ming would still be able to retain his rationality and sanity.

Between him and Sheng Mei there existed an inexplicable spiritual connection. But, this 'Sheng Mei' that appeared before him clearly didn't have this connection with Lin Ming. Although she appeared completely lifelike and possessed both Sheng Mei's appearance and aura, she was nothing but a beautiful puppet to Lin Ming.

To kill this illusion still caused pain in Lin Ming's heart. Although he knew that this was only an illusion of Sheng Mei, Lin Ming still felt uncomfortable in his heart, because Sheng Mei truly had disappeared and her fate was unknown!

"You actually saw through me!"

A deep and hollow voice whipped into Lin Ming's ear. Immediately, Lin Ming felt his spiritual sea invaded. The moment that Lin Ming killed off the illusion of Sheng Mei, the Demon God's Tomb Master had plummeted into his spiritual sea!

The Demon God's Tomb Master knew that because the world of the Demon God's Tomb had disintegrated, he was no longer Lin Ming's match. The Demon God had lost the support of a world and on the other hand, Lin Ming had managed to fuse two great worlds together and also comprehend the highest of Laws. There was a simply insurmountable disparity between the two right now.

The Demon God's only way out was to swallow Lin Ming's spiritual sea and seize his body.

His first target was the Magic Cube. He planned to take advantage of the brief moment when Lin Ming's spiritual sea had fallen into illusion to wrest away control of the Magic Cube.

However, the Demon God never thought that Lin Ming would see through his illusion attack in just several breaths of time and completely wipe it out.

This left the Demon God floundering in panic.

Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, the Demon God had already transformed back into the appearance of his true form. It was a pitch black figure, one that was incomparably large and formed of utter chaos. It had no fixed form at all except for a giant maw.

Seeing the Demon God's true form, Lin Ming finally understood why abyssals that successfully passed the abyssal ritual in the Demon God's Tomb would have such a drastically different appearance from other ordinary abyssals.

In other words, these totem level abyssals had inherited a part of the Demon God, thus they also took on the appearance of this giant monster.

Lin Ming could sense the Demon God's soul force already spreading its tendrils towards the Magic Cube, wanting to erase his spirit mark within it.

Lin Ming revealed a cold smile. "Since you came here, you might as well stay. Your body will turn into the purest soul energy and be taken by me!"

Ever since the shattering of the Demon God's Tomb, the Demon God had lost his strength as well as his very foundation. The disparity of strength between him and Lin Ming had been pulled wide open, and the only place where the Demon God had any chance of contesting with Lin Ming was a battle within their spiritual seas!

In Lin Ming's inner world, the Magic Cube also whipped up a giant soul vortex. At the same time, the World Destruction Spear fused into Lin Ming's body and appeared in the skies above his spiritual sea!

"It's always been me swallowing others, but you want to swallow me?"

The Demon God was enraged. However, his voice clearly lacked energy and it was even tinted with a bit of fear.

"Those who walk the road of death should always expect that there will be a day when they too might be killed. You wanted to swallow all of existence to achieve eternal life, but in the end you are the one that will be swallowed!"

Lin Ming held the World Destruction Spear in his right hand and the Stone of Eternal Life in his left hand. Millions of golden rays shot out from his body in brilliant splendor. Within Lin Ming's spiritual sea, thunder and flame wildly surged outwards. Endless world strength was drawn from all directions, even from layers of universes away, all of it swelling into Lin Ming's body!

"Die!"

The Demon God emitted a heart-rending roar. By now his body was already ruined. The damage to the Demon God's Tomb had caused his strength to rapidly fade away. He had already lost all reasoning and the only thought left in his mind was to kill Lin Ming!

He opened his great maw, wanting to swallow Lin Ming whole!

From his mouth, countless tortured souls flew out. They swept towards Lin Ming like a howling storm.

At this time Lin Ming also attacked. His body turned into a flow of light that fused into the World Destruction Spear, merging together as one. The divine spear rose up with the Magic Cube, both of them shooting forwards!

The energy storm all around suddenly converged upon itself, turning into divine light that pierced into the Demon God’s mouth!

Time came to a standstill. The Demon God completely froze. His body stiffened, his eyes began to darken, and his appearance glazed over…

Life force rapidly faded away from the Demon God’s body as if he had turned into stone. Then, cracks began to appear along his body. Beams of golden light shot out from the cracks, shining into the highest heavens like swords of a divine god.

These cracks slowly spread out until they covered the entirety of the Demon God. Like this, the Demon God that lost all vitality slowly sank into Lin Ming’s spiritual sea…

Weng!

The Magic Cube crashed into the Demon God's head. The giant Demon God instantly disintegrated and at the same time a black vortex swirled up around the Magic Cube, completely absorbing all of the Demon God's source memories!

This was a massive amount of memories that spanned a period of 100 billion years. In addition with all the ancient abyssals that the Demon God had swallowed in its lifetime, the total quantity of memories had reached an unfathomable degree. Even for Lin Ming, wanting to digest all of these memories was impossible.

However, Lin Ming only wanted to seek out a very small and specific part of these memories. He soon found what he was looking for…

He saw the Soul Emperor wanting to turn Sheng Mei into a blood sacrifice. He saw Sheng Mei being sucked into the Eternal Wall, saw the endless void shatter, saw a purple crystal card forcefully break through the storm of energy that was the Soul Emperor's attack and fly into the void…

"This is…"

Lin Ming was shocked. Sheng Mei, Fishy, and also the Amethyst Origin Crystal had fallen into a space crack that suddenly appeared?

Just what was that space crack?

Lin Ming spread out his divine sense, searching the entire Demon God's Tomb. With his current level of strength, his divine sense could cover the near entirety of the 33 Heavens. There were no space barriers capable of blocking his sense, but at this time he still didn't manage to find anything…

It was as if this space crack had never existed.

Lin Ming even went to the space where the Eternal Wall had originally been. After a careful period of searching, he still wasn't able to find anything.

He frowned. This sort of situation had surpassed his understanding. Could it be that beyond the 33 Heavens there was actually a world that existed parallel to it?

Lin Ming didn't know how to go to this world. At least… he hadn't found a method yet…

He shook his head, not thinking about this for the time being. He knew that his martial arts cultivation had yet to reach the peak.

The time he had been cultivating for was far too short. Even with all the time he spent in time enchantments, he had only cultivated for around 40,000-50,000 years. Compared to the Demon God who had lived for 100 billion years or the Asura Road Master who had lived for 10 billion years, it was simply unworthy of mention.

Perhaps there would come a day when he could find out all the secrets in the universe and truly control the samsara of the Heavenly Dao!

At that time, he should definitely be able to go anywhere in the universe. He might even be able to reverse the cycle of life, reviving people from death…

The road of martial arts knew no boundary. Lin Ming didn’t know where he would end up, but he would continue walking forwards no matter what.

And now, Lin Ming had to return to the 33 Heavens.

He knew that his wives, his children, as well as the innumerable heroes of the 33 Heavens were all waiting for him, worried…

MW Chapter 2254

Chapter 2254 – Epilogue (1)

…

…

…

In the 33 Heavens, at the intersection point between the Divine Realm and Saint Convocation Heavens, there existed a newly established great world.

This world had a history of a mere 200,000 years so far and was called the Human Sovereign World.

It was a world created by the Human Sovereign Lin Ming. It was made using his total lifetime of studies, his Laws of heaven and man, as well as the infinite essence energy gathered from the 33 Heavens and Dark Abyss.

This world was even broader than the Asura Road of the past. It was a holy land which every genius of the 33 Heavens yearned to visit!

In the Human Sovereign World there were many precious cultivating training areas as well as many popular trial lands that people chased after in packs. When Lin Ming established the system of rules in this world, he included the wonderful mysteries of the Asura Road as well as the spiritual spaces of the Akashic Dream Universe.

Many geniuses sharpened their weapons and hearts, putting forth every effort and thought into struggling to obtain a single spot to enter the smelting trials of the Human Sovereign World.

This was a world created by that god-like existence of the 33 Heavens. He was a character who had climbed to the highest Laws of martial arts, and the trial spaces he created held all sorts of lucky chances and unbelievable treasures. It was so rich in resources that it was hard for the average man to imagine them.

If one could obtain just a tiny bit of these treasures then it would be an inestimable benefit to a martial artist's future road of cultivation.

Not to mention the geniuses of the younger generation, even Empyreans and True Divinities wished to obtain certain inheritances.

However, quotas for the Human Sovereign World's trials were extremely rare. Although the Human Sovereign World was incredibly broad the number of trial lands was limited. Within the 33 Heavens, there was humanity, the saints, the spiritas, as well as the ancient races. With all the various races added together there was a countless number of races and wanting to bloom brightly amongst them was easier said than done!

“I finally did it... I finally obtained a Human Sovereign Token!”

Within a large city in the Human Sovereign World, three youths were excitedly chatting with each other. All of them wore the uniform clothing of a sect.

After entering the Human Sovereign World, there were many trials and tests that one could take, and once one’s results reached a certain degree they could obtain a Human Sovereign Token!

With a Human Sovereign Token, one could enter the Human Sovereign Pagoda. The Human Sovereign Pagoda was the final trial land that Lin Ming created, and it was similar to the Asura Road’s final trial of the past.

The Asura Road’s final trial utilized the completion percentage as a tool for evaluation, and the Human Sovereign Pagoda was also the same.

When Lin Ming created the Human Sovereign World, he emulated many settings and rules that were once in the Asura Road; this was all done in commemoration of the Asura Road Master.

A great deal of energy and time had been spent in creating this world. One reason he did this was to obtain an even more perfect boundary of Heaven and Man by observing the process of creating a world. Another reason was to create more opportunities and allow the younger generation of the 33 Heavens to grow.

Through the many years that Lin Ming cultivated the martial path he had obtained many comprehensions into martial arts and also learned of far too many cultivation methods. All of these things were precious treasures.

Lin Ming didn't plan to discriminate against anyone. As long as one possessed the talent and will, they could obtain these inheritances!

Inheritances were far too important. If one had to investigate the reason as to why the great calamity 200,000 years ago had been so brutal and tragic, the main reason would be because of the vast difference in strength between the Dark Abyss and the races of the 33 Heavens. If it weren't for Lin Ming being able to turn the tides of the war just in time, then the 33 Heavens would surely have been destroyed.

Thus, Lin Ming wanted to restore the martial arts civilization of the 33 Heavens to the level that it reached 10 billion years ago, or even surpass that standard.

If the martial world was bright and strong then masters would pour forth from the ranks of the 33 Heavens. Like this, Lin Ming would have no need to take action himself; the 33 Heavens would have the ability to resist other unknown calamities in the future.

Because of this, Lin Ming had spared no effort when he created the Human Sovereign World. In particular when he was making the final Human Sovereign Pagoda, Lin Ming had come up with all possible means to create all sorts of exquisite tests and trials and also laid down rich rewards without hesitation.

This was why the Human Sovereign Pagoda became the ultimate smelting trial that countless elites fervently wished for. There were all sorts of incomparably precious cultivation methods and heavenly materials inside that could make one’s eyes go red with jealousy. Not just that, but if one’s completion percentage was high enough then they could listen to that person give a lecture about the Laws, or there was even a chance to become that person’s secret disciple!

Compared to mere treasures, becoming that person’s secret disciple was a lucky chance that one couldn’t even imagine dreaming of.

Treasures could be used for a while, but becoming that person’s secret disciple was a glory that could be enjoyed for a lifetime.

Whether one was a common martial artist or whether one was a proud son of heaven that came from a large sect, nothing mattered in front of that person. One’s past status was utterly meaningless, because that person stood at far too high a height. Compared to a towering mountain, a speck of sand was not much different from a tiny piece of gravel.

As long as one could become that person’s secret disciple then they could leap to the heavens in a single jump!

However, these three young disciples that just managed to obtain a Human Sovereign Token clearly didn’t entertain these fanciful dreams. They had already exerted themselves to their limit in order to obtain a single qualification token to enter the Human Sovereign Pagoda, and wanting to become that person’s disciple with their talent was no different from a moron babbling nonsense.

“Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, how high do you think our completion percentage will be?” A disciple excitedly said, his face filled with anticipation.

“Fifty something percent. It will be hard to reach any higher…”

The Elder Senior-apprentice Brother shook his head. His words left the other two stunned. “Only fifty some percent? Would it really be that low?”

The three of them were famous figures from their native great world. Although they didn’t have much hope of grabbing the spotlight once they reached the Human Sovereign World, 50 some percent seemed a bit too low…

“It should be around that much.” The Elder Senior-apprentice Brother shrugged. “Cloudmoon should know…”

“I naturally know.”

Cloudmoon came from the same great world as these three disciples. She was a proud daughter of heaven from that great world, and compared to these three disciples, she surpassed them in strength and talent. Even her looks were like those of a fairy maiden.

With all of these factors combined together, Cloudmoon’s fame in her native great world far outstripped these three disciples.

“Cloudmoon just barely managed to obtain a 60 percent completion rate. The rules of the Human Sovereign World state that one needs to obtain a completion rate above 90 in order to become a disciple of His Majesty the Human Sovereign. Those that obtain a completion rate above 85 can become his secret disciple, and those that obtain a completion rate above 70 can listen to His Majesty the Human Sovereign lecture about the Dao once. Further down from that, there aren’t any more rewards… Cloudmoon’s goal is also to enter the Human Sovereign Palace and listen to that person speak of the Dao.”

“That is…” Listening to their senior-apprentice brother’s words, the two other disciples were left dispirited.

This was far too difficult!

“It is that difficult. Even if one obtains a completion rate of 70, being able to listen to His Majesty the human Sovereign lecture about the Dao isn’t easy at all. I hear that His Majesty hasn’t given a lecture about the Dao for the last 200 years...”

“Oh? Why is that?” The two disciples were left speechless. To hold a single discussion once every 200 or so years, that was far too infrequent.

“His Majesty must cultivate... I heard that he has recently gone into seclusion...”

“Cultivate?”

The two disciples glanced at each other, puzzled. They both felt this was a bit unbelievable. “His Majesty the Human Sovereign already became the number one figure in the universe 200,000 years ago. Even the Demon God was slain by His Majesty. In the heavens and earth, there is no one whose strength can compare to even a single percent of His Majesty. So, why is he still desperately cultivating?”

“Mm... the road of martial arts diverges in myriad paths without any end. It isn’t some secret that His Majesty the Human Sovereign has been bitterly cultivating all this time. It is said that His Majesty has two wishes and with his current strength he cannot fulfill these two wishes...”

“Even His Majesty cannot fulfill these two wishes?”

The two disciples were left stunned. Just what sort of wishes were these that even that god-like character wouldn’t be able to complete them?

MW Chapter 2255

Chapter 2255 – Epilogue (2)

…

…

…

Today was the day when the Human Sovereign of the 33 Heavens would give a lecture about the Dao.

There were no set times for these lectures. Sometimes they would occur two or three times every hundred years, and sometimes they would occur every several hundred years.

Each time these lectures occurred, it would be a grand occasion for the entire 33 Heavens!

When the day arrived, throughout the 33 Heavens, great masters would arrive from all the various True Divinity sects and Empyreans sects, converging upon the Human Sovereign World.

Generally speaking, during True Divinity longevity feasts and large-scale ceremonies of True Divinity influences, these types of events would draw many True Divinity sects to gather and celebrate.

But during these types of events, even though many influences came to pay their respects, they would at most send messengers.

But when Lin Ming was about to lecture about the Dao, those that arrived would be the true rulers of all these large influences! This was also a day that many masters would look forwards to with deep anticipation!

In the 33 Heavens, there was no True Divinity or Empyrean that would miss out on such a chance.

Even powerhouses that were deep in seclusion would quickly emerge when they heard that the Human Sovereign was about to give a lecture on the Dao, and would quickly hurry to the Human Sovereign World.

In the eyes of ordinary martial artists, Great World Kings were already mighty overlords that governed over them. But even these people, and even half-step Empyreans, didn’t necessarily have the qualifications to listen to the Human Sovereign speak of the Dao.

Every time these lectures of the Dao occurred, Human Sovereign Lin Ming would be frank and outspoken, not hiding anything about the Dao and speaking until he was finished. However, the Heavenly Dao was faint and ethereal and the Laws that Lin Ming cultivated could not be expressed with words alone. How much one could comprehend would depend on their talent and good fortune.

Besides the rulers of True Divinity influences and Empyrean influences, there were also extraordinary geniuses amongst the younger generation that had obtained the necessary qualifications through the Human Sovereign Pagoda that could also attend these lectures.

At this time at Human Sovereign Mountain, there was already a giant array formation that had been laid out, one that stretched out for thousands of miles. Only those with an Empyrean level cultivation and above, or those who possessed a Human Sovereign Token that recorded a completion rate of 70% or above could enter the array formation and listen to the Human Sovereign's lecture.

Although the requirements were harsh, the 33 Heavens were simply far too large. There was no lack of people who possessed the requirements. Thus, within the array formation, numerous figures shuttled back and forth in the skies. Any one of these people would be one of the most peak characters of the 33 Heavens, and if any one of them stood out they could shock and awe a great world.

But on Human Sovereign Mountain, all of these people maintained incredibly respectful manners and decorum. As they arrived outside the array formation, everyone would slow down, hop off their mounts, or disembark from their spirit boats, and this was true whether they were True Divinities, Empyreans, or peerless geniuses. All of this was a sign of respect for Human Sovereign Lin Ming.

"It's been over 200 years already. His Majesty the Human Sovereign has finally emerged from seclusion to speak of the Dao once more."

"After all this time there are even more people who earned the qualifications to listen to that person speak of the Dao; this is why it's even livelier than before. But unfortunately, we do not have the qualifications to enter."

The three disciples from before who had just managed to obtain their Human Sovereign Token discussed amongst themselves. They arrived outside the array formation and looked onwards with respect and envy in their eyes, staring at the elites of the 33 Heavens who flew through the skies above them.

Although they didn't have the qualifications to enter the array formation, being able to bear witness to one of the grandest occasions of the 33 Heavens was still a sight they'd never forget.

"What a splendid sight. If possible I would love to be able to listen to His Majesty the Human Sovereign speak of the Dao just once. I hear that those who can listen to His Majesty speak of the Dao often gain considerable lucky chances. There were even some people who were suddenly enlightened and managed to make a breakthrough in their cultivations; I wonder if this is real or just an exaggeration."

"It's true. When His Majesty the Human Sovereign lectures about the Dao, he isn't only speaking about truths of the Dao. In fact, just by sitting there, a dao field will form around His Majesty. His Majesty's boundary is far too high, and if ordinary elite geniuses were to sit in this dao field, they would be able to withstand a baptism of the Heavenly Dao Laws in their meridians. To them, this is already the greatest advantage! Even if one doesn't understand His Majesty's lecture of the Dao, just sitting in this dao field itself is a great lucky chance!"

The Elder Senior-apprentice Brother of the three disciples explained. He was the one who understood Lin Ming's lectures of the Dao the most, and his words caused his two junior-apprentice brothers to boil over with excitement. Such a regaling tale, such an opportunity, left them fascinated to the extreme!

"Don't think about such useless thoughts. The likes of us should try our best to earn the qualifications to enter. Otherwise, even if we were able to go in now we still wouldn't be able to obtain much. Without current strength we simply wouldn't be able to understand the Dao truths that His Majesty the Human Sovereign speaks of, and we might not even be able to withstand His Majesty's dao field. If we fainted because we couldn't withstand the dao field and had to leave midway then that would just be far too great a shame."

Lin Ming's lecture of the Dao was a lucky chance but also a test.

When Lin Ming spoke of the Dao, the Laws around him naturally revealed themselves and fused together with the surrounding space.

The Laws that Lin Ming cultivated originally were the fusion of Heaven and Man. When the body became one with the universe, his Dao understandings would dissipate around him and form an independent universe in the surrounding space. And, the pressure of this independent universe wasn't something that everyone could withstand.

Thus, for those martial artists of the 33 Heavens who lacked talent or strength, even if they were able to listen to Lin Ming's lecture of the Dao they still wouldn't be able to last through it.

"Elder Senior-apprentice Brother, you said that His Majesty the Human Sovereign is deep in seclusion when he isn't giving a lecture on the Dao and he never stops in his cultivation, and this is all in order to complete two wishes he still has. What are those two wishes then?"

The two junior-apprentice brothers humbly asked. The Elder Senior-apprentice Brother looked into the far off distance and slowly said, "It is said that His Majesty has two wishes. One is to control the samsara of life and death and extricate himself from the coil of existence and nothingness. 200,000 years ago, the great calamity of the 33 Heavens was far too brutal and tragic. Everyone suffered. Humanity, saints, spiritas, the ancient races, countless powerhouses sacrificed themselves, and this included many peerless characters and heroes, such as Immortal Sovereign, Jun Bluemoon, Empyrean Vast Universe, Empyrean Divine Mist...

"Of these people, many were His Majesty's friends and even his teachers. Yet, they died in battle to protect His Majesty the Human Sovereign!

“And besides these people, there is also His Majesty’s most important teacher – the Asura Road Master. Because of the last war, the Asura Road Master overdrew his life and fell into a deep slumber. Even now he hasn’t yet awakened.

“His Majesty the Human Sovereign created a second Emperor Bone Sea within the Human Sovereign World and he sealed in the souls of many of those who sacrificed themselves in the totem towers. He hopes that one day he will be able to rule the Heavenly Dao and reverse the cycle of life and death, reviving those who perished!”

The Elder Senior-apprentice Brother’s words left the two junior-apprentice brothers shocked. “Those that died can still be revived? Is that even possible?”

“There is always a possibility. His Majesty the Human Sovereign might not have stepped onto the peak of martial arts but he has likely touched that peak. Since His Majesty is trying so hard to strive for this goal, he should have some assurances...”

“I see...” The two junior-apprentice brothers glanced at each other, not sure what to say or feel. This had already surpassed their realm of understanding.

“Then there is still one more wish. What is it?”

“The second wish involves His Majesty the Human Sovereign’s beloved wife, Soul Empress Sheng Mei, as well as someone who once followed His Majesty, a little girl called

Fishy. It is said that because of some unknown reason they entered a strange world and have yet to be found!

“As for what this world is like, no one knows. His Majesty the Human Sovereign’s second wish is to understand every secret of the universe and uncover every corner to find this different world that Soul Empress Sheng Mei and Fishy disappeared to!”

“Besides the 33 Heavens, there is still another, different world?” The two junior-apprentice brothers asked, shocked.

“That’s right. It sounds unbelievable, but there are some who say that… this other world might be as vast as the 33 Heavens…”

Afterword

A message from Hyorinmaru:

Martial World has finally ended! I would like to thank all the Linmaniacs out there for supporting our efforts for such a long time and also venturing through the 33 Heavens and Dark Abyss with us and Lin Ming. It has been a great adventure, but though this one has ended a new one will surely begin.

A message from Jaspaaar: Here we are at last, after over three years of work! It's going to feel really odd to no longer be reading about Lin Ming's journey as part of my daily routine, but I hope you've enjoyed it as much as I have. It's amazing to look back at those early chapters and realise how far we've come. I'd like to thank Hyorinmaru for bearing with me all this time, as well as all of you for making this translation possible! And, if any of you are still here, a special thanks to our original readers from back on our Wordpress blog. Reading all of your comments each day and talking to you guys was so much fun, and helped motivate us to continue. And I mustn't forget all of the people who've spotted errors I've missed – thank you! If you've got questions for me or anything to say, you can always reach me directly via the Wuxiaworld Discord server (linked to right at the bottom of the page). Please continue to support us in our next project!

If interested, please join us in our upcoming new novel translation project, Martial Star Ocean!